https://svalispeaksagain.wordpress.com/2018/06/30/alice-in-wonderland-programming-part-1-white-alice-programming/

Svali Speaks Again

Healing from ritual abuse and mind control

svalispeaksagain 6:18 pm on June 30, 2018

Tags: mind control (69), occult (13), programming (60), ritual abuse (65), SRA (45)

Alice in Wonderland Programming: Part 1: White Alice Programming

Trigger warning: The material in this article could be very triggering for survivors of ritual abuse or mind control as it contains graphic descriptions of programming; it is best to check with your therapist before reading material such as this.

It is a common misconception that "hosts" or "presenters" have been protected, or have undergone less programming or trauma than other systems. On the contrary, the presentation is often one of the most extensively programmed systems in the survivor of international occultic programming. It can be some of the most difficult programming to dismantle since basically, this involves looking at their own programming.

In most international occultic groups, the child spends the first three years fulltime at a cult facility, being continuously programmed. At age three, the child will also be placed within several host families around the world. The child may grow up with anywhere from two to seven families in different countries, and will typically spend some time each year with each of these families building a "life story". School photos are taken, and a cover identity created in the countries which they anticipate the child will be working for them as they grow older into adulthood. The families will be given photos of the child (or a look-alike) in infancy for photo albums. These host families will have programming to prevent the child and the host parents from bonding with each other, since the cult wants the child to always maintain their primary bond with the primary programmers. The true host and core will always only be allowed to bond with these programmers.

Because maintaining the amnesia between presentations, and the prevention of remembering the cult life, is such an important cult goal, there will be several programs used to keep [illegible] in place. One of the major ones is "Alice in Wonderland" which will be described here as it is used by the Jesuits. Many other international groups also use this programming, or some form of it.

Follow •••

White Alice, Black Alice and Crazy Alice Programming

There are often three versions of the Alice programming installed, and each will be a backup for the other, in case one fails. Each will be described separately below. "White Alice" programming is designed to ensure the "host" parts does not remember any cult activity and believe that her "ordinary memories" of life are the whole picture. "Crazy Alice" programming is designed to make the "host" parts feel like they are going crazy, be afraid of going crazy and to return to the cult for "treatment" if they start remembering what they are not supposed to. "Black Alice" programming is designed to make the "host" parts afraid that they will hurt the people around them if they remember what they were told by the cult to not remember. I will share about "Crazy Alice" and "Black Alice" programming in future articles.

If is common for members of occultic international groups to have at least one presentation that goes by the name "Alice". This is for a specific reason: this is a trigger for Wonderland programming. The programming starts in the womb (prenatally), with the various Wonderland creatures talking to the birth mother and fetus, and with specific traumas that create the main characters. It continues during infancy. For instance, the infant will be dressed in a "Dormouse" costume, and taught to drink tea that makes him/her sleepy on command, or as a Cheshire Cat, with an outside actor modeling the role of this part.

The initial programming is continued and reinforced over the next few years in the programming studios,that have props and virtual reality films, as well as costumes and actors, until all parts for all three versions of the Alice programming understand and reliably perform their roles.

By age three, the child will be taken to a large estate in France (or, other locations, depending on the group) for the full re-enactment of Alice in Wonderland programming. This is an elaborate setup, and occurs over the period of a week. The child enters through rooms that reinforce previous training ("control the children": is recorded and replayed, with pictures of dead children displayed on the walls of the room; mirrors, "remember the flowers" and other triggers). The child then enters a "backward world" where everything is backwards (much like the third dimension; this prepares the child for this travel). **White Alice** (representing the presentation main controller who is heavily demonized) is dressed in the blue dress and white pinafore, with blond hair and blue eyes, and guides the child (who is dressed in the same way) through backwards houses, where people walk and talk backwards (a common cause of childhood dyslexia is the confusion this creates).

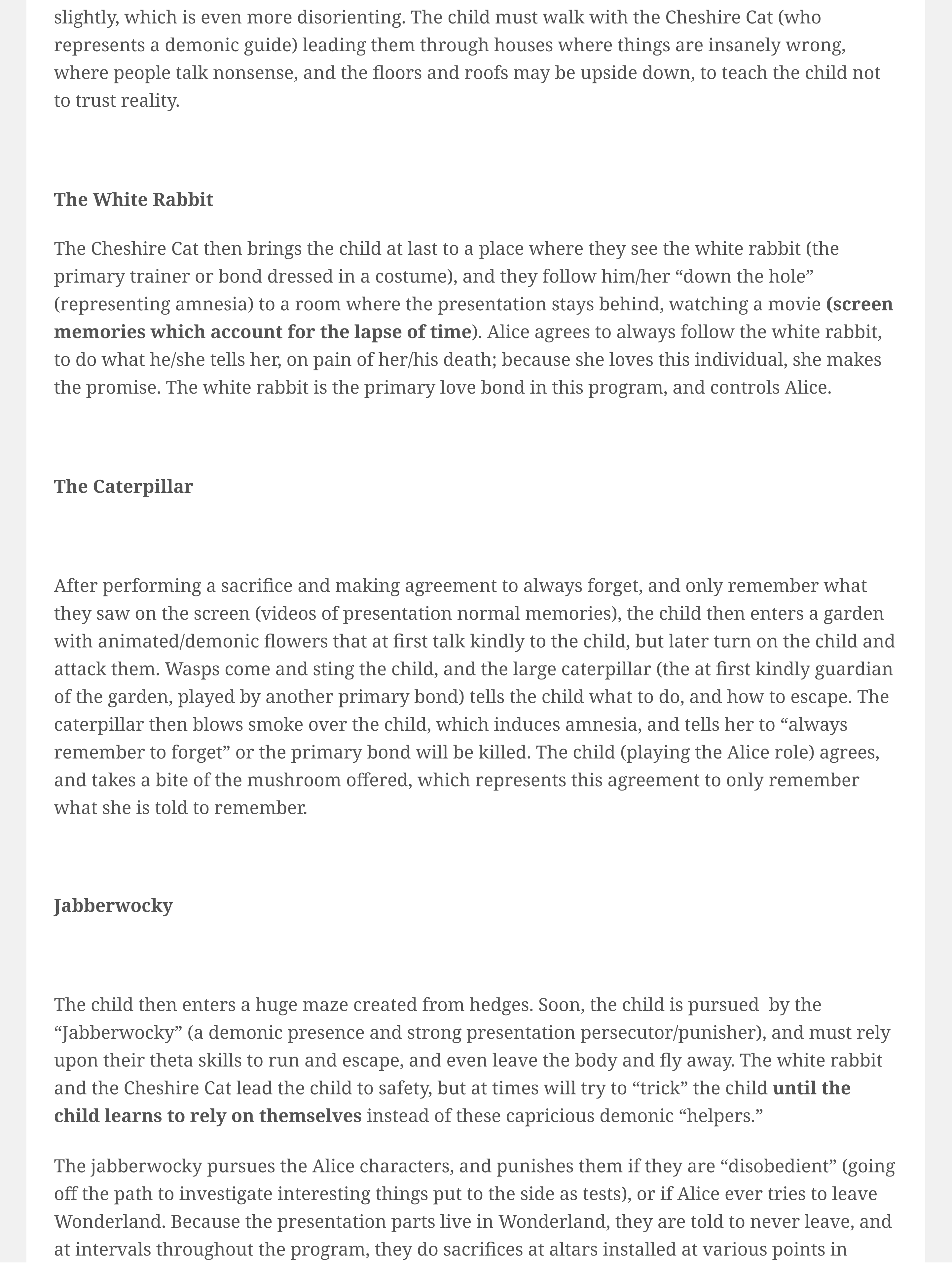

The child is then taken to a setup street where things are not backwards, but “crooked” or off slightly, which is even more disorienting. The child must walk with the Cheshire Cat (who represents a demonic guide) leading them through houses where things are insanely wrong, where people talk nonsense, and the floors and roofs may be upside down, to teach the child not to trust reality.

The White Rabbit

The Cheshire Cat then brings the child at last to a place where they see the white rabbit (the primary trainer or bond dressed in a costume), and they follow him/her “down the hole” (representing amnesia) to a room where the presentation stays behind, watching a movie **(screen memories which account for the lapse of time**). Alice agrees to always follow the white rabbit, to do what he/she tells her, on pain of her/his death; because she loves this individual, she makes the promise. The white rabbit is the primary love bond in this program, and controls Alice.

The Caterpillar

After performing a sacrifice and making agreement to always forget, and only remember what they saw on the screen (videos of presentation normal memories), the child then enters a garden with animated/demonic flowers that at first talk kindly to the child, but later turn on the child and attack them. Wasps come and sting the child, and the large caterpillar (the at first kindly guardian of the garden, played by another primary bond) tells the child what to do, and how to escape. The caterpillar then blows smoke over the child, which induces amnesia, and tells her to “always remember to forget” or the primary bond will be killed. The child (playing the Alice role) agrees, and takes a bite of the mushroom offered, which represents this agreement to only remember what she is told to remember.

Jabberwocky

The child then enters a huge maze created from hedges. Soon, the child is pursued by the “Jabberwocky” (a demonic presence and strong presentation persecutor/punisher), and must rely upon their theta skills to run and escape, and even leave the body and fly away. The white rabbit and the Cheshire Cat lead the child to safety, but at times will try to “trick” the child **until the child learns to rely on themselves** instead of these capricious demonic “helpers.”

The jabberwocky pursues the Alice characters, and punishes them if they are “disobedient” (going off the path to investigate interesting things put to the side as tests), or if Alice ever tries to leave Wonderland. Because the presentation parts live in Wonderland, they are told to never leave, and at intervals throughout the program, they do sacrifices at altars installed at various points in

Wonderland to keep the agreement going. The Jabberwocky and others are guardians of Wonderland that keep the presenters inside.

The Croquet Game

As the child goes deeper into Wonderland, they sleep frightened outdoors, running from the Jabberwocky if it comes near. As the child attempt to go through the maze, they will run across the queen of hearts (a primary double bind, often a twin sister) and her court playing croquet (with the severed heads of human children used as the balls). Hearts is the royal, or controlling, suit in the white Alice program; while spades is the ruling suit in the Black Alice (killer) program that will be addressed in another article. The queen becomes very interested in using the child's head (the child is constantly called "Alice" throughout the setup, to represent the presentations, since Alice in Wonderland is ultimately presentation programming to remain amnesic and rely on demonic help to do so). Alice is very frightened, and this trauma is used to reinforce her obedience and amnesia.

Valley of Shadow of Death

The demonic Cheshire cat helps to "rescue" the child, leading her away through a hole in the hedge. Alice then follows the cat, and goes through the "valley of the shadow of death." The valley goes into a deep forest, is quite dark and frightening, and the child by now is hungry, frightened, and hearing terrible noises. In the middle of the woods is a cottage; it is now nighttime, and the weary child knocks at the door, to be greeted by a kindly woman. The child is fed, sleeps, and is warned to avoid the Jabberwocky, which seeks to kill the child.

During the night, the kindly woman gets up. The child is awake, vomiting from the effects of a mild poison they were given in the food. The woman calls in her familiars (wolves) and tries to kill the child, who cries out for help to the "Cheshire Cat" to rescue her. A mage (spiritual person) also comes and helps rescue the child, who continues the journey, meeting other characters.

Palace of Hearts

Finally, the child ends up at the palace of the Queen of Hearts, who demands a sacrifice (the child was already told that the last child to complete the Alice scenarios will be her sacrifice). The children who live watch the final child come in; this child was "too slow" and is sacrificed in a ritual. This reminds the children to never be slow or tardy when coming to a "party" (ritual) or event. The "parties" in the Alice in Wonderland books are always referring to rituals.

The King and Queen of Hearts are individuals the child loves very much and has been bonded to. They often represent a twin or beloved brother and sister; or beloved cult parents. The love bond is represented by the heart, with the understanding by the child that if he or she ever remembers, and the amnesia breaks, these individuals will be killed. During one installation of the programming, the child is invited to break the Wonderland programming, and she or he sees a mock killing of their King or Queen of hearts.

The Tea Party

The tea party is an important component of the amnesia programming. Internally, the presenters and other characters are always at a continuous tea party to reinforce the amnesia programming. The script often goes as follows:

The tea party is presided over by Alice's mother (a cult mother; the mother is called Mnemosyn, or the demon over amnesia by the Jesuits). This part becomes a strong amnesia controller. As the tea party progresses, to the child's horror, one by one, the people at the party (who are doubles of people they love deeply; including their presentation mother, father, sisters, brothers, and loved ones in the cult) are killed in horrendously gruesome ways.

The horrified Alice is reminded by Mnemosyn that "everything is fine" and is told to "let me take care of everything" and asks Alice to give her the memories. If Alice agrees, Mnemosyn then "takes away" the memories of the murders and sacrifices, and the dead characters are removed one by one; and replaced with living ones. Finally, there are no bodies left, and Mnemosyn assures Alice that "nothing bad ever happened."

The various characters at the tea party have control over the presentation amnesia in different ways.

Dormouse: The Dormouse is a small child/toddler who constantly falls asleep (presentation sleep programming, to fall asleep on cue), and believes that "nobody loves me, everybody hates me" (a rejection program). Dormouse believes she/he can only be happy if the child falls asleep on cue, when the child then experiences "happy" dreams.

Mad Hatter: The Mad Hatter will contain numerous scripts to reinforce amnesia and dissociation, including anti-healing scripts, scripts that the individual can "never get away" from the group, and the belief that the universe is "crazy" and without meaning, and will often punish the others sporadically. His role is to make the presentation feel nervous and anxious if they start remembering things, and to punish.

The White Rabbit: the Rabbit asks Mnemosyn for tea, and to serve it to the parts at the party, which is a cue for amnesia; as long as the characters are drinking tea (which contains a drug that brings bliss and forgetfulness). He works in tandem with Mnemosyn to keep the amnesia party going on, with the reinforcement of agreements to never remember by the presentation controllers at the table.

The Teapot: In the physical setup, there are two teapots; one is where the Dormouse sleeps, and the other is continuously pouring tea out to continue the amnesia (the two are the same in the VR version). At times, the tea contains the blood from various rituals and sacrifices conducted and performed by the presentations to seal the amnesia program.

March Hare: this is the representation of insanity programming, with the threat that if the amnesia breaks and the "host" remembers, they will become "mad as a March Hare". The hare does terrible things to the other characters, acting insane, throughout the party.

The Jabberwocky often visits at intervals and comes to the edge of the table, and is thrown bits of food (including sacrificial body parts) to keep him happy; he then goes away. Mnemosyn, Alice and the White Rabbit take turns feeding the Jabberwocky.

These are some of the characters at the tea party; others also come and join in.

Working with the Parts

When working with these parts, it is important to realize that these are the individual's presentation controllers. Breaking the program will often create great anxiety in the presentation, because the individual is "breaking the rules" and fears retaliation both for themselves and their loved ones.

The greatest fear is that the individual will "go insane", which is triggered by the Crazy Alice program (a backup if the main Alice program starts to fail; this will be discussed in another blog). It can help greatly for the individual to realize that these feelings are normal, and that they will not "go crazy" or "become homicidal" (due to the Black Alice program, which will also be discussed in another blog). They may also fear their own murder (in one tea party script, a double of the individual is killed at the table for remembering to install the implicit fear).

It can help if the individual understands that they really can break this program and heal; that the characters do not have to keep continuing doing their old roles, and they can break out of Wonderland. Wonderland is controlled by spirits of delusion, denial and amnesia, and removing the spiritual (which will drive the program) while helping the human parts heal from their traumas is important. Kronos, or the timekeeper, will sit over the Alice white system, covering for any lapses or lost time (this is installed with a huge clock, with an infant sitting on each hour; the time hand slices the infants unless Alice can make time go faster, slow down, or "skip" the infant). Kronos oversees this sense of the elapsing of time, in tandem with the other characters.

It is important to get to know each of the characters in the program, and listen to them. They will have reasons for doing the jobs they are doing, and these are often based on trauma, including very early (infant or prenatal) trauma that has been reinforced and layered upon over the years.

Hearing their traumas, comforting them, and providing validation and relationship will help these parts to decide to leave their old "jobs" inside. Once they do, the whole system will benefit greatly. It takes time and safe relationships to heal this type of programming, and for parts to make the decision to give up their amnesia and agreements to forget. These agreements are based upon deep love for individuals they were bonded with, and these bonds must also be addressed in order to give up these agreements.

(note: part two will cover Crazy Alice and Black Alice programming).

Share this:

Twitter Facebook

Loading...

Related

The different types of SRA and Mind Control
January 29, 2019
In "mind control"

Vatican book part 10
June 11, 2022
In "healing"

Alice in Wonderland Programming Part 2: "Crazy" Alice and Black Alice Programming
July 8, 2018

In "mind control"

hisglory44 9:19 pm on April 21, 2021

Thank you so much for helping me to heal. Now I know why the mad hatter told me today on the phone that the cake is alive the cake was not a cake it was a child that was sacrificed but I'm not sure that even he knows that. He also said that all of my thoughts will be put into a movie or some kind of a play.I wonder could he be referring to my suppressed memories? You have no idea how thankful I am to have found this information. Now I know what to pray for Christina to heal finally

★ Like

거울 8:24 am on August 14, 2021

Thank you for the good data. Is it okay to translate Alice in Wonderland's Mind Control series into Korean and post it on the Korean site? I'll indicate the source.

★ Like

거울 8:34 am on August 14, 2021

Thank you for your hard work. In Korea, I can't find such detailed mind control data regarding Alice in Wonderland. Can I translate it and post it on my blog? I'll indicate the source.

★ Like

svalispeaksagain 12:56 pm on August 16, 2021

Yes you can if you indicate the source

★ Like

Amy Williamson 2:39 am on June 1, 2022

Your information is incredibly eye opening and has started to make me wonder about my own past. One of my friends, who leads a group bible fellowship chat, stated he thought I've been through some type of mind control. I don't believe I have but some things don't add up. Molested in the church at 4 or 5, reoccurring dreams of my mother handing me over to Satan, same dreams but with more detail of my family pushing me down into our dark basement. Wolf at the bottom, waiting to devour me, except that I am thrown into a room with computers monitors who speak and tell me I will never escape. More nightmares of bloody faces being ripped off the person, more demonic nightmares, snakes, sleep paralysis, talking to someone as if I know them but there is no one there, black cats darting hack and forth. There's so much more but is this maybe just being oppressed demonically? I was raised in a Baptist church in ND. That's where the abuse started so maybe it's just how the door was opened to the demonic. I also just think strange thoughts that are not normal. Nothing bad but just strange. I would appreciate any feedback! Thank you and God bless you as you reveal these truths!

★ Like

svalispeaksagain 8:26 pm on June 11, 2022

I cannot tell you whether anything happened or not, but your dreams seem to indicate that there is something that you should consider exploring with a therapist.

★ Like

Leave a Reply

Enter your comment here

← Growing Up International Part Two: The First Three Years

Dealing with Harassment: Part 1 →

Blog at WordPress.com.

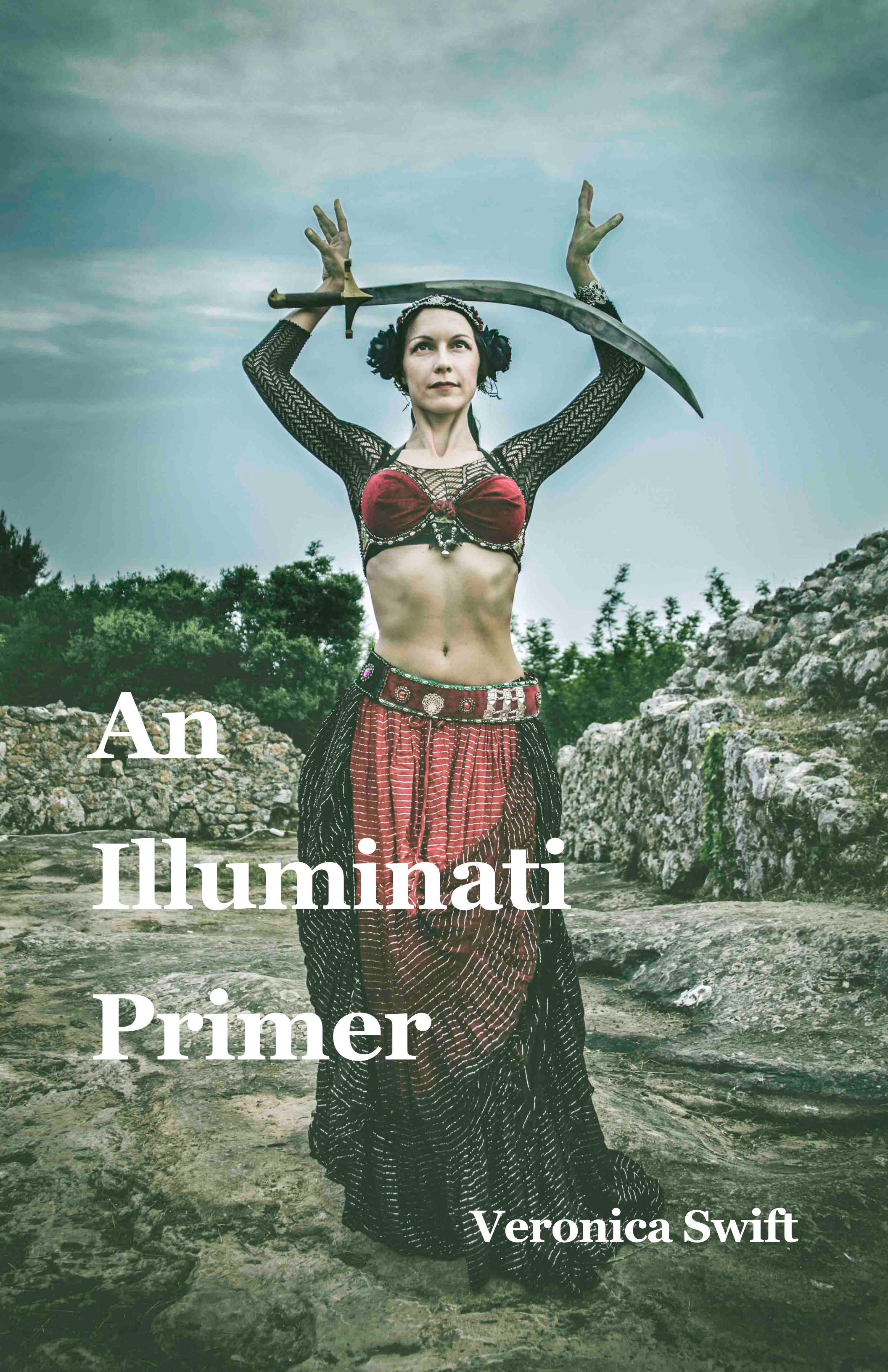

An Illuminati Primer

Veronica Swift

An Illuminati Primer:

Understanding The System Through the Eyes of its Whistleblowers

Veronica Swift

Cover art by Ivan Cujic
https://www.pexels.com/@ivan-cujic-20495

© 2022 Veronica Swift

This book is dedicated to:
The people who tried to escape, and did not make it out.
The people who made it out, but were too afraid to speak about it.
Those who made it out, and talked about it.
Those who made it out, and wrote about it.
And
Those who weren't members, but who dedicated their lives, fortunes, and honor to helping the above survive their escape.

Many thanks to those who made this possible, including the very hard working DT, and all of my blog and Locals subscribers.

If someone charges you for this book other than the author, they have committed theft.

This first edition eBook is being made free to the public for individual use only.
Pass it around to your friends and family, or anybody who needs an introduction to the evil in the world.

If you want to help defray the costs of publication,
come subscribe to my community at:

veronicaswift.locals.com

Free for individual use only.
Permission to repost on government, organization, education, or any other for-profit websites or to use by the aforenamed is expressly prohibited without the prior written permission of the author, and appropriate payment.

Table of Contents

Table of Contents 4

A Note on Reference Numbers 8

Prologue 10

Disclaimer and Warning 13

How this Book Came About 16

Key Whistleblowers 19

Chapter 1: The System 22

Chapter 2: Satan, aka Lucifer 27

Chapter 3: Mothers of Darkness 32

Chapter 4: Satan's Demon Generals 40

Chapter 5: The Antichrist 43

Chapter 6: The 4 P's; Priest, Pindar, Prophet, Phoenix 48

Chapter 7: Protectors 50

Chapter 8: The Satanic Council 57

Chapter 9: Sisters of Light 63

Chapter 10: The Media 66

Chapter 11: Brides of Satan 74

Chapter 12: Programming 76

Chapter 13: Infiltrated Institutions 91

Catholic Church/Vatican/Holy See 92

Masons 96

Mormons 102

Amish/Mennoite/Hutterite (Anabaptists) 108

Education 111

Public Servants & the Legal System 112

Museums and Art Galleries 116

ISST-D 117

Banks 118

Chapter 14: Practices 119

Marriage 119

Homosexuality 121

Breeder Programs 124

Grooming/Infant abuse 127

Cross Dressing 128
Adoption 129
Rituals 130
Posture 134
Protect Your Brother at All Costs 135
Code of Silence 136
Blood Drinking 137
Color Comms 138
Quota System/Keeping Track of Quotas 141
Signatures 143
Ritual Names 144
Bestiality 146
Child Training 147
Pedophilia (blackmail) 150
Philanthropy 151
Underground Tunnels 153
Underground Cities 156
First Born Family Sacrifice 157

Getting Rid of the Bodies 157

Adrenochrome 158

DNA manipulation 160

Chapter 15: The Front Organizations 162

Chapter 16: The Bilderberg Group 164

Chapter 17: The United Nations 166

Chapter 18: The World Economic Forum 170

Chapter 19: The Central Intelligence Agency 174

Chapter 20: The Federal Bureau of Investigation 176

Chapter 21: The National Security Agency 178

Chapter 22: The New World Order 179

Chapter 22: Epilogue 182

References/Reading List 188

About the Author 240

A Note on Reference Numbers

While reading this book you will come across my unique numbering System.

You've probably encountered end notes, which are contained at the end of each chapter. I don't use these.

You may have encountered References, which are sequentially numbered and sometimes referred to as MLA or APA style. I don't use these either.

Instead, I've devised a universal reference number system, one that I can use for this book, and any other publication from now on, with no need for re-numbering as with endnotes or traditional footnotes.

At the end of a sentence or paragraph, you'll find parenthesis with letters followed by numbers, such as (AB 01). The AB refers to the publication, which in this case is called Age of Betrayal, and there are 4 separate interviews and each has a reference number, so there is AB 01, AB 02. AB 03, AB 04. You can find all of these reference numbers listed alphabetically in the Reference/Reading List section at the end of the book.

And the God of Peace shall bruise Satan under your feet shortly. The Grace of Our Lord Jesus Christ be with you. Amen. Romans 16:20

Does the Illuminati have natural enemies?
"The only true enemy that they see is the Christian Church, which opposes all they do."
-Svali

Prologue

This book is a two-fold attempt to more fully understand the worldwide religious System frequently called the Illuminati, but also to put it in a form and structure so that other people can understand it, as well. It's not meant to be comprehensive, but rather an overview. I chose a short list of whistleblowers to draw my sources from, all of whom have escaped the Illuminati after having been engaged in it at various levels of its operation. Some were high-level, some very low-level, and a few were in-between. All have interesting, engaging, and often horrifying stories. To my knowledge, nobody has yet attempted to put together an Illuminati 'big picture' by taking information from individuals at a variety of levels of the organization from their perspective and using their words. For me, this approach has given a more well-rounded understanding of the megalith of evil that is the Illuminati.

I write a blog called Lifting The Wool, which I started in an attempt to understand what a former high-level Illuminati defector and whistleblower (that I call 'Our Whistleblower' on the blog) has divulged about what she calls "The System." 'The System' moniker refers to the many-faceted and frankly pretty complicated money-making and world-domination-pursuing structure that the Illuminati have set up. While the Illuminati seems to be a rather new-ish name for this organization, it's a group that seems to go back thousands of years, and if you can believe it, right straight back to a child of Adam and Eve, the offspring of Cain. If you're like me, the history of it is secondary in importance as the operational structure of modern time. I have an easier time understanding the history of something when I first understand what exactly it is, so in this book I'm focusing on what the Illuminati System is now, and maybe I'll have time in a future book or blog to delve into the history.

In this modern time, The System is an income-generating organization, with a religious foundation. They make money through human trafficking, drug running, gun running, gambling and other illegal, immoral and nefarious pursuits. "If there's an illegal activity, they're doing it." (SV 02) What they do best, however, is keep their operations highly secret. This secrecy is like a veil that has been draped over the public at large, preventing us from really knowing what is happening, despite the astonishing fact that they operate quite a lot right out in the open. The more I learn, the more puzzled I am that the general public really doesn't know more than they do. There have been a lot of people who have written books, and blogs, and done interviews and 'told on' The System to us, the non-member public. And yet, I'm not a spring chicken and I'd never really heard of it. Or maybe I had, but just hadn't digested any of it because it seemed fantastical and not grounded in reality.

I think that an additional aspect of the reason that not many previous whistleblowers got a ton of traction is that this stuff is really, really difficult to hear. It's difficult to emotionally digest, and it's heartbreaking at times to realize that people have gone through such horrors—and I mean both people trapped inside The System and those used, abused, and discarded by The System. Make no mistake, what the Illuminati System is engaged in is brutal, cruel, torturous and on such a level of evil that the word evil ceases to be a great description. We don't have an English word for something worse than evil, and yet that is what this group is. They're beyond evil.

Recently (December 2021) someone on Twitter (that I cannot find and therefore cannot reference for you—which as you will see is pretty rare for me) said that she had been studying the Illuminati/The System for 40 years, and the piece that brought it all together for her was the information that the woman I call Our Whistleblower has revealed over the past 2-4 years. I agree; this information is the clincher that allows enough of the puzzle pieces to be present and put together so that the picture of the organization, its structure, its function and its aims makes sense. There are still holes, but it's comprehensive in a way that before this particular whistleblower's revelations it hasn't been in the past. Previously we've had perspectives from mostly mid-to-lower level escapees. Our Whistleblower is the highest to defect and talk about The System. In the past it's been like trying to imagine an elephant by staring at a photo of its eyelashes. You can't tell what it is in its entirety from just that bit of information. With Our Whistleblower's revelations, we've taken a giant few steps back and can see the elephant now. I feel bad for even making an elephant reference, they are gentle and beautiful animals, and this System is not gentle, and it's not beautiful.

Disclaimer and Warning

There are two possible ways to take the information in this book. One is to discount it as complete rubbish, the fantasies of the wild imaginations of a number of different people, a vast conspiracy theory with no basis in reality, a heaped and steaming pile of you-know-what. The other way is to consider that so many different whistleblowers might not be wrong and that all of them are risking their lives to reveal the information, so it might all have merit. After reading and writing and following these folks intensely for well over a year, I stake a claim on the latter. Yet not all are with me; there are vehement detractors to these people and their information. Search online and you will find all manner of negativity. So I'll say right now, I could be wrong in trusting them, and it may 'bite me' in the butt in the long run. But I don't think so, or I wouldn't be spending the time to write this book. Take it as truth; take it as fiction—it's yours to decide.

I'm not egotistical enough to think that what I compile here will help change anybody's mind, but I deeply desire that it will, because if you do change your mind it will change your outlook on the world, and when your eyes are open you cannot help but change your reactions, your emotions, and your way of interacting in the world. I think it gets better by leaps and bounds the more you know. Perhaps not easier, and it takes time to get through the phase of understanding and on to the other side of it. There's some grief there for many people. Rest assured you will get through it.

❧

For the most part, this book is written like a research paper. I like to research and I think that too few people these days on the internet are diligent enough to cite their sources. Many times what you read in blogs and even in "news" stories are opinions of the writer. If I give you my opinion, you'll know it. If it's someone else's experience or opinion, I will source it. Some of these sources have been wiped from the internet, but for each item that I source I have a hard copy, and I will make all of that available, somehow, to you the reader. I can prove that what you will read in this book has come from someone else's writings or videos or audio podcasts, and not from me or my imagination.

That said, I'm not confident that everything here is the be all, end all, truth. Cheryl Beck, a victim of the Illuminati, said recently on Twitter that she didn't believe everything that Luciferians have to say, so she didn't agree with some of the stuff she'd seen from Fritz Springmeier, an Illuminati researcher. We all take a risk in believing whistleblowers, and researchers, and people's memories, which are not all perfect. There is a measure of confidence that we can take, however, which is that they really have everything to lose if they're lying to us. They are already under pressure as defectors, The System takes away their abilities to hold down a job, make a living, to thrive in society, to live in confidence that they won't be killed. Many of them make a living with appearances and by writing books or listener donations via crowdfunding sources. If their listeners could truly prove they were lying to them, it might land them in a permanently homeless and destitute situation. Again, this is just my own analysis, you are free to disagree to any degree you wish.

In a moment of frustration one day, I wrote here, “If you disagree with what these folks have revealed, feel free to complain directly to them. If you complain to me I’ll be happy to smack you around for them.” I’m always up for constructive criticism, and if you don’t believe me you can troll the comments section of my blog. I hold a “wait and see” attitude about a lot of this, to see if it is ever independently verified by something that I, for example, could verify with my own 2 eyes. But I also trust my gut, and my gut says that this System and its many tentacles is the reason why the world works the way it works, and it’s the explanation that I personally needed to make the world make sense to me. I bring you along for the ride, in hopes that it can bring you the same measure of peace of understanding that it has brought me.

❧

How this Book Came About

October 20, 2020 was a dividing point in my life. Not exactly a mid-life crisis, but possibly just as significant. It was the day my outlook on the entire world changed, both for the better and the worse, all at the same time.

Before I say exactly what happened on that day, I'll tell you a little bit about myself. I grew up book smart and world-stupid, had a firm sense of justice and fairness that was cemented in the Christian ethos (vs. the social justice circus), and never really knew what I wanted to do with my life. I was bad at math because it wasn't visual, loved to read, and generally understood animals more than I understood people. I have hated creative writing since grade school; I'm bad at it as I can't think up stories at all.

I went to college because someone told me to, not because I really wanted it, and got multiple degrees with flying colors, not because I wanted to work in that field of study, but because I found the subjects interesting. I went into teaching because I loved the subject I taught passionately, and thankfully that passion was evident to most of my students.

I always felt a combination of boredom and failure in whatever I tried, even if I was good at what I was doing, and eventually that plus a lack of being a willing conformist to the world would push me out of each job or career. I hated the state I lived in, but it took me decades to move and go elsewhere, and it took the retiring and move of my mother to be the push I needed to pack up and leave because I didn't want to be so far away from her. We landed in a small town in the middle of nowhere, central United States. Flyover country.

When I arrived, there was a ton of work to do on the small house, large (for me) acreage I'd purchased, and little did I know it was going to take me years to get the initial renovation work done. I'd taken some of it on myself for cost purposes, and I was slow and everything seemed to get in the way of progress, mostly my health which wasn't that great after I moved. I seemed to develop allergies to everything. Outdoors, indoors, food, cleaning supplies—they all seemed to come at me out of nowhere. Allergies take a while to identify and remove from your diet and environment, and they exhausted me. I would work for a half-hour or hour and then have to rest and recover before I could get back at it.

I binge-watched a lot of videos in that year-and-a-half of work and rest. And, of course, there was the COVID thing to contend with as well, but—and I hate to say this—it never affected me much. I was working at home, I rarely went out, and I don't watch TV. Plus, I'd already had the symptoms called COVID in December of 2019, before the name of it hit the general public consciousness and before it was the scary boogeyman virus. It was challenging to breathe laying down, so I propped myself up and took a lot of vitamins and drank a lot of water and got over it, because that's what most people will do who have no underlying medical conditions and who aren't elderly.

So, that day, the 20th of October, I clicked on a Sarah Westall video, (SW 04) because I like her guests most of the time, and proceeded to have my mind blown in a way that's changed me and my outlook on life, forever. I made a lot of audible gasps and my jaw literally dropped a few times during that video. It was my pivot point.

Today it is December 2021, so it's been about 14 months since then, and a lot has happened during that time. Specifically, 2,800+ research files, 90+ blog posts and over 150,000 words written about the subject that Sarah Westall introduced me to that day. It's has changed and is continuing to change the way I look at the world. The interviewee calls what she described in that video the "System" most of the time, but it's called by many other names, including the Brotherhood, the Great White Brotherhood, the company, the cabal, the deep state, the elite, the hierarchy, and the Illuminati. You may have heard of one or more of those names, but didn't know what they actually meant. Me too.

◆

Key Whistleblowers

"In a time of Universal Deceit, telling the truth is a revolutionary act" -Author unknown; often incorrectly attributed to George Orwell

Jessie Czebotar—Jessie was born into an Illuminati ancestral lineage and chosen at age 4 to be the successor to her maternal grandmother, who held the position of Queen Mother of Darkness in the Illuminati. She was trained intensely as a child, and then abruptly released from her obligation to The System, although they do invite her back on a regular basis. Jessie has released the information in the sources that I have used for this book, as well as to the Federal government as a Federal-level whistleblower on the individuals and their actions that she was privy to as a child.

Cisco Wheeler—Cisco was born into the Illuminati. Her father was Leo Wheeler, aka Dr. Black, and he was her programmer and handler from infancy, along with Josef Mengele who was also her programmer. Cisco went on to be a programmer herself for the Illuminati, and in mid-2021 she revealed that she, like Jessie Czebotar, was slated to become a Mother of Darkness. Cisco and Fritz Springmeier wrote a number of books together on the Illuminati, and it is acknowledged from former insiders like Jessie that his information on the Illuminati is sound. This is likely in large part due to Cisco's insider information.

Cathy O'Brien—Cathy was a mind-controlled slave that was trained as a Presidential model to service presidents and other high-level Illuminati members until she was rescued by Mark Phillips, whom she later married. Cathy's daughter Kelly was also programmed by The System, and Cathy spent many years fighting for Kelly's medical treatment to heal her from that programming. Cathy deprogrammed herself with Mark's help, but her daughter's programming was higher-tech and needed professional assistance, which the government fought against. Her website is https://trance-formation.com/

Svali—Born into The System, Svali (a pseudonym) was a programmer for both the Jesuits and the Illuminati, and is currently writing a book some of the most difficult-to-read information on the depravity of the Jesuits in programming their members. She blogs her experiences and knowledge at svalispeaks.wordpress.com and svalispeaksagain.wordpress.com

Kerth Barker—Kerth was brought into the Illuminati by an employee of his family. They had no idea he was used and abused by the people she took him to. He finally broke free of the Illuminati and their programming and has self-published a number of books, which you can find at kerthbarker.com or on amazon.com. He died in early 2021 as a result of an Illuminati attack that gave him a rapid growing fatal cancer.

Cheryl Beck—Cheryl Beck was programmed and mind-controlled by the Luciferian System as a child. She was one of the recipients of an implant in the bone behind her eye, which was to facilitate The System's control over her. She wrote a book called *Secret Weapons* under the pen name Cheryl Hersha. *Secret Weapons* has since been declined to be republished by the publisher, and used copies retail for upwards of $250 USD.

Fiona Barnett—Fiona was programmed and mind-controlled by the Luciferian System in Australia and the United States. Against a fierce uphill battle and much blowback by The System, she turned whistleblower and activist for victims, as she describes herself. She wrote a book called *Eyes Wide Open*, and has released its latest "lockdown edition" for free, both on her website fionabarnett.com and archive.org to bypass its shutdown by The System.

Anna Starfire—Anna was given into The System as an infant, and went through terrible clandestine experimentation programs by Nazi doctors brought to the United States in Project Paperclip. She had numerous parts of her brain removed and replaced with electronics, some of which allowed her to transmit and receive from satellites. She wrote a book called *MK Ultra Dark Labs 1959 - 1975 Testimonial Report* that can be found on amazon.com.

❧

Chapter 1: The System

"The elect are given knowledge of the Mysteries and are illumined and are thus known as The Illuminati or the Illuminated Ones, guardians of the 'Secrets of the Ages." William Cooper, Behold a Pale Horse

It's hard to know where to start, at what point to begin this story, because there are so many possible entry points, and it's almost necessary to know a little bit about all of it before it makes sense. So, bear with me, this is a complex web I'm about to try to describe.

I'll start in modern-day, because while I could start way back in history, it's less relatable.

This organization that the interviewee calls 'The System' is organized a bit like a company, except you won't find it on the stock exchange, and you most likely won't know if your next-door neighbor is a member. It's a hidden System, by necessity, because what they do is, frankly, amoral, illegal and disgusting, not to mention evil. A harsh and rigid veil of secrecy is the way that this group has survived for so many thousands of years. If you're in it, you generally won't escape it even if you really want to, unless you leave inside a body bag. Generally you're born in, but it's also possible to become a member from outside, and by outside they mean that you are not of the families that comprise this group. Often those families are what are called the bloodlines, or bloodline families. It's described at times as a cult, a religion, a cabal, and each of those are accurate descriptions for different facets of the organization.

How I got away so many decades of my life not knowing about this group is a bit perplexing, because plenty of people have written about it, and plenty of books, websites, and videos exist to let people know what it's about. But this System also operates on a rigid and many-tiered hierarchy, and the folks at the bottom don't know too much about the folks at the top, so reading a book about a low or mid-level member of The System often doesn't give any clues as to the top level of the structure. Each person's story is generally distinct, as in compartmentalized. I'm more of a big picture person to start, and then at that point I can fit in the other stories, so some of these books didn't make much sense, and frankly they weren't part of my fields of interest. I imagine this is true for many other people as well—I mean, honestly, who wants to read about evil? Most of us just aren't drawn to it.

Additionally, there seems to be a lot of need-to-know kind of divisions that keep most members from understanding and being able to tell about the big picture of the group. They know and understand their immediate group, but might not know much of anything about other related groups. It's a little like living in Connecticut and never having traveled or watched a video. You have a vague idea of how Montanans live, but no specifics.

And lastly, most of the members are what is termed programmed. The process of programming is essentially torture, to create memory compartments held by amnesic barriers. You can imagine it's like having a brain full of tiny water balloons, where the memories of each balloon don't mix. To get from one memory to another you have to jump from balloon to balloon. Some of those balloons are highly guarded, by demons.

Whut? Yes, I wrote that correctly. Demons, as in fallen angels, as in evil entities, as in Satan's minions.

But, wait a minute. Satan's not real, good and bad angels are imagination, right? Not in this System. Maybe in your church, maybe in your life he's a fictional character, but not in the lives of the people in this Illuminati Brotherhood System. To them, he's very real. If they fall out of line, the punishment received is very real. If you're in the disbelief camp right now, I was right there with you. I have had to change my mind on it and accept that this is real. You don't have to change your mind, you can hold whatever beliefs you want and still make it through this book just fine. But these folks operate in a world, a realm—a parallel reality, if that description helps your comfort level—where demons exist.

This System is Satan's System. He runs it. He's the CEO, as it were. He dictates what is to happen, and his underlings follow his directives, or there's hell to pay. Literally.

The System has changed a bit recently, but for thousands of years, beneath Satan in his System was a group of women responsible for taking directions from him and relaying those instructions to the groups and individuals below them.

The structure is very hierarchical. These 5 women interacted with Satan, every day. Hmm. Interacted with Satan? How's that, you say?

As I've heard it described, there is a spirit world that many can see into, but most of us non-family, non-bloodline can't. These 5 women have the ability to see, hear and interact with Satan and other spiritual entities in this spirit world. These abilities are extra-sensory, and sometimes are described as "spiritual gifts".

Sarah Westall's interviewee was slated to become one of these five women who interacted with Satan. She was tested, chosen and trained for years to eventually be awarded that position in full as an adult. She never did get that opportunity, however, because she wasn't interested in being a part of this Brotherhood. She was interested in being a Christian. You can't follow Satan and be a Satan-worshipper (or Luciferian, as it's often called) and a Christian at the same time. In The System, sometimes these folks hide who they really are behind an outward covering of Christianity, to fool their neighbors, friends, and even relatives, but the actual practices of System membership are antithetical to Christianity. Exactly the opposite, lots of times, and mutually incompatible.

Sarah's interviewee's name is Jessie Czebotar, and she is the woman I have called "Our Whistleblower" on my blog.

As I've heard it put by Jessie, Satan likes to "mock" God, and does this by taking Christian principles and turning them upside-down. If Christians get baptized in the Spirit, Luciferians have a satanic baptism. If Christians get married, Luciferians marry Satan. If God commands no adultery, Luciferians have days every month where they get together and have group sex with each other and demons. It’s called Satanic Revels, and you don’t have to believe me, you can look it up, there are published Satanic Calendars with the dates of the rituals on them. (ZZ 08)

❧

Chapter 2: Satan, aka Lucifer

“How you are fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning!” -Isaiah 14:12

Jessie Czebotar describes having seen Satan, or as most of the people in the Illuminati call him, Lucifer, in 4 possible forms throughout her childhood training in The System. Two forms were human, and two were as a dragon. One human form of Satan was “handsome, alluring, attractive and glittering”, while the other was a man shadow with black armor. Satan could also take the form of a 1-headed dragon or a 7-headed red dragon. His dragon form was usually only seen during certain rituals. (SS 01) In another reference, Jessie likens Satan’s human form to an angel without wings, with a golden appearance to his hair and skin. (GD 01, RoR 015) This is similar to how Elaine, another high-level escapee of the Illuminati Brotherhood, also describes Satan as having a handsome glowing appearance to his skin. (RB 01) In one human form he wore a red velvet suit, similar to the red velvet suit worn by Scott Cohen on the Tenth Kingdom. (CS 21)

Jessie also experienced Satan as a consummate and unabashed liar, who promises his followers the moon, while behind their backs telling her to her face that he instead intends to kill everybody, even his followers, as soon as he gets what he wants from them. (SS 01, RoR 209)

What does he want? According to Jessie, Satan wants to replace the Christian entity called God—with himself. (SS 01) Biblically, Satan was a former angel of that God, and when he fell from grace in the heavens he took a large number of angels with him, and now they all inhabit what are called the "lower realms" or what Christians might call Hell. (ARA 012) Before the fall, Satan's angelic name was Lucifer. After the fall, Christians call the angels that left God's kingdom with Lucifer, "demons". Jessie describes the structure of the heaven and hell spirit realms as a bit like a 5D chessboard. The two top realms (1st and 2nd) are the heavenlies where God and Jesus Christ reside, the two bottom realms (4th and 5th) are the lowerlies where Satan and his demons reside, and in the middle (3rd) is the earthly realm. The 1st, 2nd, 4th and 5th realms are spiritual (non-corporeal) while the 3rd is physical. (SW 02) Satan can come and go freely through all 5 realms, while Satan's demons are restricted to the 3rd, 4th and 5th realms. They can sometimes manifest in non-spirit form on the earthly 3rd realm, but they are not allowed into the heavenlies at all. (ARA 012)

In order for Satan to get his demons into the heavenlies, where they cannot normally go, Satan needs an army of humans to act as bodily hosts for demons. In other words, he literally wants to attach all his demons to people, so that the people can escort the demons from the earthly realm to the heavenly realms, bypassing the normal restrictions on the demons getting there by themselves. Originally, before Satan fell from grace, all angels could travel all of the realms. Afterward is when they are restricted to the lower realms and earth. (ARA 012) Jessie has said that after Christ did the work for us that he did on the cross humans are now able to go to the throne room of God in the heavenlies. She is able to go there in spirit, and has described what it looks like. (CS 01) She has said that other humans can go to God's throne room, as well, (ARA 012) even though I think most of us wouldn't have a clue how to do that. That cluelessness works to Satan's advantage because he's been able to figure out that while his fellow demons cannot go into the heavenlies by themselves, they can go if they were "hosted" by a human, who can travel there. Hence demonic possessions of humans, that's how Satan plans to build an army, by using humans as demon hosts to storm the heavenly realms and take over God's throne room. Yup, it's a wild thing to consider. But even if you don't believe it; they do.

The manner in which this demon-possessed human army will be made is through the occult, with the help of a process called programming. Occultic rituals invite demons into the bodies and lives of humans. Occasionally, even, humans willingly invite the demons to "possess" them, and enter their physical/spiritual/soul space. This is not easy, and can often be a painful process. Other times, the Illuminati simply enslave and program humans using extreme torture methods so that they will comply with their commands. The process of modern-day programming has been refined over the past 100 years to a fine science engineered in at least one case by NASA/DARPA (CO 01), and by one estimate resulted in an astonishing estimate of 1 programmed slave of the Illuminati per city block. (GC 01, GC 02) And that estimate was a long time ago, so there are probably a lot more than that now.

To sweeten the pot and lure in followers into this scheme, Satan promises those who follow him money, fame, fortune, and "privileged knowledge not of this world." Also, he promises them eternal life, with their own kingdom as a ruler-God. Those who subscribe to Satan's lying schemes actually think he's going to make them their own eternally-living God. But according to Jessie, he has fooled them, and he actually intends to kill everybody, even his followers, once he (theoretically) attains God status himself. (SS 01)

Jessie has spoken on a few occasions about the relationship that the Mothers of Darkness have with Satan, strongly suggesting that they take part in intimate relations with Satan because they are seduced by him, and how, although she never did, he was nearly impossible to resist. She describes him as "very alluring", with an intense emotional draw towards him. She describes herself as constantly saying 'No' to Satan—no to serving him, no to doing what he wanted her to do, and no to entering any kind of personal intimate relationship with him. (GD 01) Mind, at the time Jessie experienced this, she was a child somewhere between the age of 4.5 and 10 years old. Satan seems to be a pedophile. Many of his followers are, as well.

While Jessie spent quite a lot of time in Satan's presence training for the Mother of Darkness position, she describes others as having to go through a whole lot of fasting, cleansing and rituals, and that they could do this "for a whole year just to get a moment of Satan's attention." (ARA 043) While many people wanted that connection to Satan, wanted his power for themselves to use, Jessie never did. She made it clear to him that she rejected him, which makes you wonder why he would keep her in The System at all. Others he disposed-of at will, why not her? Jessie thinks he chose her because Satan “wants what is God’s,” (RoR 015) and he’s not going to give her back. He won’t kill her, she’s untouchable, but he’ll harass her and try to make her life a living hell as an incentive to get her to give in and go back to him and do what he wants. (CS 21)

* * *

Chapter 3: Mothers of Darkness

"The Mothers of Darkness are all connected to the Collins bloodline." -Jessie Czebotar (DO 10506)

The 5 women who for centuries were at the top of the hierarchy, under Satan, or as they call him, Lucifer, are collectively called Mothers of Darkness. As a tactic to confuse anybody who might have gotten interested or too close to understanding The System, many of the women underneath the Mothers of Darkness were also called Mothers. (RoR 019) Even more confusing is that nobody in The System uses their own names when they meet with each other, they all use ritual names when they were around each other, so if they met someone in the grocery store after seeing them last night at a satanic ritual, they wouldn't have any idea what to call them, or what their cover name/real name was. Jessie's ritual name was Sunshine. (GD 02) Secrecy has been paramount for keeping this System under the radar for so long, but when Jessie started going public with her whistleblower story, the structure and function has been opened wide for anybody who wants to see. She's a federal whistleblower, which means that some of her information could be released publicly, and some could not. Most of what she's released has been a bombshell and never-before-told about the people, the structure, the organization and the inner workings of The System.

The Mothers of Darkness were grouped hierarchically. Of the 5 women, the one at the head of the group was called the Queen Mother of Darkness. Then there was a group of 3 Mothers (including the Queen Mother) who were more important and two other less important mothers at the bottom. The group of 3 is sometimes referred to as the Maid, Maiden, and Crone, with the most recent Queen Mother as the crone. For ease, I'm going to refer to the Mothers of Darkness as a group with the acronym MoD.

Jessie was set to become the Queen MoD when she was old enough. At that time, this was the absolute top of The System, the highest of the hierarchy. There is nobody above the king or queen in the royalty, and since the Luciferian Brotherhood System is a hierarchical System, there was nobody above the Queen MoD when Jessie was a child except Satan.

The 5 MoD's have historically been from the same family lineage, and the job is typically passed-along from the older generations to the younger generations. When Jessie was a girl, one of her grandmothers was the Queen MoD, and Jessie was tapped at age 4 1/2 to become her successor. A successor is the title given to the trainee for that System position. When the person in the job description retires, their successor takes their place. It's an apprenticeship of sorts, with some pretty gruesome and grueling training involved. Here's Jessie's story about how she was chosen to be the Queen MoD successor:

The MoD's had us in a kindergarden-type classroom, and a bunch of kids were sitting in a circle and in the middle they had placed a candle, a mirror, a shawl, raven feathers—all objects connected to witchcraft. Each child would go, pick an item and then put it back down. When I went up, I picked up a sword. The MoD's couldn't see it until I picked it up, and they were quite shocked. They knew they hadn't placed that sword in the circle, so they asked me what I was doing, and I told them "I picked my item" and they asked me "where did that come from". The Mothers knew that I could see, hear and feel in the spirit realm, but until that point they didn't know how strong those spiritual gifts were. (ARA 1)

It might be hard or even impossible for some of you to accept that there is a spirit world, that spirits exist, that they have their own—dimensions—for lack of a better world, and that some people can see them and others can't. I can't see in the spirit world. But I often can strongly feel things others cannot, so it wasn't terribly difficult for me to accept that other people like Jessie have sight into the unseen realms. If it's difficult for you to accept because you've never had any experiences that you can relate it to, I get it.

After that experience picking up a sword from the spirit realm, Jessie was chosen to be the Queen MoD successor, and once a successor is chosen for one of these very high-up hierarchy positions in The System, it triggers a succession ritual. At the time of the sword-in-the-circle activity, Jessie's grandmother was in the position of successor to the current MoD, and when Jessie was chosen as her grandmother's successor, it was the designated time for Jessie's grandmother to become the Queen MoD. (GD 02) This was done at a ritual in the basement level of a castle called Neuschwanstein in the Bavaria region of Germany. (BM 02)

A description of the ritual room, from my blog. "Underground Neuschwanstein castle, built into the rock, is a fighting arena where witches' battles occur. Light comes in from the cliff face that looks out towards Mary's Bridge over the canyon between the southwest side of the castle and the mountains. As you enter the very thick, ornate wooden doors to the fighting arena, on the right is a slit in the cliff face where light can enter. Straight ahead across the arena are 11 gold thrones where Satan, the Mothers of Darkness and the successors to the Mothers would sit. On the left there were stairs up to a balcony where sometimes other high-level Illuminati would sit to watch. There was no light that came from that side, so sometimes it would be lit with candles brought by the onlookers, frequently a group called the Sisters of Light, the Illuminati's spiritual elite task force."

If you look up Neuschwanstein Castle on the internet, you'll notice it looks a bit like the castle on the Disney logo, and indeed Disney modeled his logo after that castle. Not just because he liked Neuschwanstein, no, but because Walt Disney was also highly connected to other individuals in the Lucifieran Brotherhood religion, and symbols like that, put out in plain sight for everybody to see (and mostly to not understand) are how the Brotherhood communicates with one another while simultaneously leaving the rest of us completely in the dark about it all. But I digress. (FS 02)

The succession ritual was a terrible sight and a shock for young Jessie. "She's four-and-a-half years old. Her blonde hair is frizzy and unmanageable. She's the oldest child of three children of a young couple, and It's the fall of 1981. Her parents both work, and she is in the charge of her mother's mother, a woman she will spend the next 5+ years calling her "proctor", as that is the name that this organization gives to the primary trainer of a child in The System. Before this day, she hasn't seen or been exposed to anything in her life that would prepare her for what she is about to see. Once seen, her life changes forever. It starts like a normal morning, except that after her parents go to work, instead of going to school, her proctor suggests they take a trip. One of her great uncles owns an airport and they take off from there and wind up in Bavarian Germany, at Castle Neuschwanstein…in the basement. Heavy, carved, ornate wooden doors open to a large arena space. Her proctor tells her to be silent and watch. Two long wooden boxes are presented to this woman, and from them she takes special swords, long, and with a curved end. At the opposite end of the arena are gold thrones, and on them are sitting women that the girl will shortly come to know as "Mothers of Darkness". Her proctor then proceeds to use the sword to behead one of the women. Then she ritually cannibalizes the body. The proctor eventually comes over to where the child is, kneels down, puts her bloody hands on the child's cheeks, and tells her that the child will do that to her one day. The child is her successor, and this is how the successors take their position." (ARA 002, BM02)

Not all successions in The System require beheading rituals. Some take place after witches' battles. Because, you see, the Luciferian Brotherhood is a religion (ARA 54, RR 42) and their religion involves witchcraft. At the higher levels, they are witches and warlocks, who engage in magic. At the low levels, many of them are disposable commodities that are used for sex or money-making purposes. The System differentiates between the two by labeling them either "hierarchy" or "expendable". Expendable seems to mean that they are either used and killed, or designated for re-use throughout their life without being killed. Jeanette Archer, a UK whistleblower on the British royal family (who she asserts are also members of this Luciferian Brotherhood Illuminati religion), describes a human hunt where the children that were permitted to be killed wore one color wristband, and the children who could be abused but not killed wore another color wristband, to indicate to the perpetrators what they were allowed to do to them. (JA 01) If you've never heard of a human hunt, it's a fairly standard practice in the Brotherhood, and it's just what it sounds like. Children are released into a wooded area, and adult perpetrators come after them and either kill them or sexually assault them, depending on the type of hunt. Yes, this is illegal. No, the adults are not usually prosecuted for their crimes.

Why? Because the general public is not aware of what is going on, and because the people who do know, such as Judges, District Attorney's (Crown Prosecutors), and police are either in on it, or they're bribed or threatened to keep quiet. Jeanette Archer tells of how, even before she was delivered to the hunting parties, the cops raped her en route. And after other events, she was taken to individuals dressed in Judges' robes who warned her to be quiet and never tell what happened to her. Except they weren't actors, they were actual judges in her own community. Jeanette knew she had no recourse in the law in her community—there was literally nobody to tell. She was a child who had a wristband saying she couldn't be killed because her family was in the religion as well, and they gave her up willingly to these events. She was completely trapped. (JA 01) Jessie also had the experience of having nobody to tell. She describes telling anybody she could possibly tell when she was a child, and having the police point-blank tell her to stop talking about it if she wanted to live. She estimated that where she did her training in Chicago 6 out of every 10 people were in the Brotherhood, including teachers, police, social workers, and school administrators. (SW 6)

Part of the job description of the MoD's is to "staff" The System. To find appropriate individuals to place in training for other System positions as teachers, bankers, doctors, nurses, computer programmers, social workers, judges, attorneys—you name it, there doesn't seem to be a profession that hasn't been staffed with a few infiltrators placed there by The System. (SV 13) Jessie talks about how she rarely went to school when she was a child, but yet was marked present in her classroom every day without fail. (RoR 013) Administrators, principals, school and church secretaries. All of these jobs are fair game for The System to infiltrate. Why do they do this? Because their goal and hope is to take control of the entire world—by secretly taking it over from within our systems. They can direct world affairs, all the way down to the local level, without anybody knowing they are doing it, if nobody knows who they are or what their ulterior motives are. They can rise to the top of The Systems they've infiltrated and begin to implement The System's goals, bit by bit, so that the public doesn't have a big rejection reaction. It's the strategy of slowly boiling the frog in the pot. It's also super-secrecy, but in plain sight.

The MoD's job also involved placing hierarchy children in witchcraft training programs, and to do that they had to identify the strengths or connections of the children to particular elemental types of magic—fire, earth, water, wind, etc. and then the child would be put in a training program with teachers that specialized in that sort of magic (witchcraft). (ARA 1)

❧

Chapter 4: Satan's Demon Generals

"Moloch… the moment he can, he plans to kill me, he's made that quite clear." -Jessie Czebotar (SW 06)

As the mothers of Darkness are directly beneath Satan in the earthly realm, Satan has beneath him many loyal spirits, or demons, who in the Christian tradition are called 'fallen angels' and they reside in the lower realms. Similar to the highly organized and hierarchical structure of the earth-realm Illuminati, the organizational structure of Satan's underlings in the lower realms seems to be quite military-esque. At the top, just beneath Lucifer are his seven demonic "generals" whose names are Moloch, Ba'al, Ashtoreth, Samael, Abbadon, Azazael and Thoth, with whom Jessie met regularly. (SW 02) Ba'al can also be written Baal, and Ashtoreth has a whole slew of other names and spelling variations, including Ashtoroth, Astarte, Jezebel, Lilith, Ishtar, Isis, Diana, and Anat. (ZZ 09)

Satan's goal is to connect or attach his demons to his human Illuminati, which means they serve as physical body hosts for these spirits. We might also call this process 'possession'. Elaine, a former high-level member of The System, does an excellent job of explaining how she was possessed by a high-level demon called Mann-Chan. First, she summoned him, and he appeared to her as a very handsome and gentle man. He told her there was nothing to fear, that he would be her teacher, her guide, and her "redeemer". Then, the instant before he walked into her to possess her body, he changed into his demon form which consisted of pig bristle hair, yellow fang teeth, and stubby fingers with long pointed nails. As he entered her body, he cause her such searing pain she wished she could die. After that, he controlled her life, what she ate, what she said, how well she slept. She also was often put into an unconscious state by this demon who then did what he wished with her body. (RB 01, pg 46)

Jessie describes the higher-level demons as "bloodlusty" which means they demand blood in rituals, with the three most bloodlusty being Moloch, Samael and Ba'al. (ARA 007) "If you're hosting that demon… they demand blood," she says. She personally knew only a few that got away with not killing others in rituals, but in order to do that, they had to give their own blood, and as time went on they had to give increasing amounts which caused them to eventually have seizures and other physical problems. Even without giving their own blood, the physical stresses of being a human host for a high-level demon can cause fatal physical problems. If someone is a host to a demon general, Jessie estimates their life span to be only 5 or 10 years; when the demons are done with their hosts they will literally rip them apart from the inside in rather gruesome ways that cause their deaths. Moloch "shreds (his hosts) to pieces when he's done with them." (ARA 003)

Part of Jessie's training to eventually make her a competent Mother of Darkness was to train her to hear satan and his demons when they were talking in the spirit realms. Her proctor, who was at that time the Queen Mother of Darkness, would get Jessie out of bed late at night and sit on the landing at the top of the stairs with her. Jessie describes her as moving her hands in a weird way, and saying "do you hear him (Lucifer), do you hear him calling you." (SW 02) Once she began hearing in the spirit realm, she would just blurt out whatever they were saying, whether she was supposed to or not.   She overheard a lot of private demon conversations that way, and exposed their nasty plans to others. (ARA 002, ARA 017)

❧

Chapter 5: The Antichrist

“The AntiChrist will arrive on the scene like a thief in the night” -Springmeier & Wheeler

Satan, being rather dramatic and prone to a lot of rituals and their accompanying pomp and circumstance, could not have just created a human-demon army, stormed heaven, thrown over God and been done with it all, but no. He has loftier goals then that. Part of the process for Satan is to take over and enslave humanity to his ends, to rule not only in the heavenlies and lowerlies, but on earth, as well.

The occult was around long before Jesus Christ walked the earth, and God’s attempt to send Jesus Christ to earth to mitigate some of the effects of the occult on humans seems to have angered Satan. As a result, many of the things he engages-in on earth have to do with trying to ‘un-do’ or flip 180 degrees God’s plan with his son on earth. As a consequence, Satan at some point seems to have decided to throw the proverbial middle finger at God and create his own “son”, the Anti-Christ (or Antichrist). He wants this human/demon Anti-Christ to look like the return of Christ (Godly on the outside), to act like him (do miracles and wonders, etc.) and to be subject to a mimicking of Christ’s life (death and resurrection), in order to fool the general public into thinking that he is, indeed the return of Christ, and not a demon in human form. (FS 03, RoR 109)

Much of what the Illuminati is doing these days seems to revolve around preparations for what are termed the “end times” or what Christians might know as the Apocalypse predicted in the Bible’s New Testament ‘Book of Revelation’. End times events in the Christian tradition include the return of the Messiah (also known as the second coming of Christ), and the Four Horseman of the Apocalypse, Plague, War, Famine, and Death. Satan seems to be orchestrating this biblical version of the End Times, by grooming and training his own Christ figure, which The System calls the Anti-Christ or Antichrist.

This System-orchestrated End Times is also called the Great Deception, because when the Antichrist springs on the scene and the masses of people worldwide become aware of him for the first time, they are supposed to be in awe of him and believe that he is the second coming of Christ. The general public will not be made aware that behind the scenes, this man will worship Satan and consider Satan to be his personal God. (FS 02, pg. 470) It is the plans of the Luciferian Brotherhood that the Anti-Christ will suffer a fatal wound, will die and be resurrected, as the real Jesus Christ was. (RoR 109) He will perform miracles for the world to see. He will be charismatic and charming and will fool the world into thinking he’s the real and true resurrected Jesus Christ. (RR 19) Will this happen? As the saying goes, “the best laid plans….”. If the Luciferian plan to install their Antichrist on earth to rule the world indeed happens, we shall see how well it actually goes, or if a mass raising of consciousness called the Great Awakening foils the plans of the Illuminati for their plans of the masses to adore their leader.

The Illuminati and their occult precursors have been around a long time, and it hasn't always been known what was the right time to spring into action their end time rituals and events, but it seems that they are upon us now. Rituals have been done and plans have been set in motion for these end times to happen, and some of the first signs of that happened in the first quarter of 2020. The Illuminati has always had an "Anti-Christ in waiting" trained and ready, in perpetual preparation for the end times, unsure if they would be put into action or not. (RoR 237) Jessie suggests in the past, as now, they have multiple candidates, in case something happens to the prime candidate others could step into their place. (DNR 10) One of the ways that the end times have been identified is the lack of successors for the Mothers of Darkness. Jessie and 4 other women who were a cohort of successors (this cohort includes Cisco Wheeler) were the last women trained to take Mother of Darkness jobs in The System. Despite looking hard, they were unable to find any more. (RoR 196) This was another indication that the end times were at hand.

It has been the job of a special group of 5 men, collectively called "Merlin" (singular, even though they are multiple individuals), to train and prepare each Antichrist-in-waiting. This 5-men Merlin group calls the Antichrist trainee 'Arthur'. It seems possible that the entire fable of King Arthur and the Knights of the Round Table was actually thought up by the Illuminati as a means of communicating about their Antichrist project right in front of all our faces, without us being aware of it. Merlin in the fable is a sorcerer, and the 5 high-level men termed Merlin are also very high-level practitioners of the magick arts. Arthur will grow up to be a king, like Jesus Christ was the King of Kings. Except Arthur/ Antichrist will be motivated by Satan himself, and not the Holy Spirit of God, as Jesus Christ was. (RoR 237, RoR 244, ARA 48, RR 31)

One of the first set of rituals that would kick off the Luciferian end times was to switch out the leadership of the Mothers of Darkness for the headship of the Antichrist. The MoD's have been running things in The System for an unknown number of generations, but as of early 2020, the Antichrist supplanted the Mothers as the head living being on earth running Satan's System. There were supposed to be 5 ritual ceremonies done, one for each Mother of Darkness and one for each (mocked) stage of life of Christ, including his birth, baptism, calling, temptation, and consummation. Jessie was supposed to be present for the last, the consummation ceremony on April 24th, 2020, but she is a System escapee and federal whistleblower, and stayed at home and did not participate. (DNR 01) In fact, nobody showed up for that ritual, because Covid quarantine had started, but even though Satan did not get his ritual, the Antichrist still took over. (RoR 018)

The Mothers of Darkness haven't been put into retirement with the shifting of power from them to the Antichrist, as it is reported that they will serve as the Anti-Christ's "brides," as well as a bit of security for him. (FS 03, page 470) Yes, by "bride" I do mean the intention is for them to be intimate in the biblical sense of husband and wife. These aren't the only people who will be connected to the Anti-Christ, the Illuminati have gone so far as to create a John the Baptist position, as well as a Mary/Madonna position, which "are (multiple) women that are closely connected to the Anti-Christ." (FS 03)

Before the Anti-Christ is revealed to the public, the temple in Israel will have to be built. Jessie reports that she has seen the foundation blocks underground, and other preparations that have been made in the building process. Once completed, Jessie says that the Anti-Christ "will stand in the temple mount in Israel and they will declare themselves God," "and the high priest will declare him (the Anti-Christ) as the messiah—as God." (RoR 209, DNR 01)

◆

Chapter 6: The 4 P's; Priest, Pindar, Prophet, Phoenix

What did Jessie mean by "their high priest?" What is a Luciferian high priest, and what would he be doing in the temple in Israel? Shouldn't the High Priests in that temple be Jewish? Can a Luciferian be a Jew, as well as worshipping Satan? Of course they can't be both, but they can have a Jewish day life (cover life) and a Luciferian night life (occult life). That's kind of how the entire System stays so under the radar, is that each person involved does normal and seemingly reputable kinds of things during the day and saves the rituals, demon consorts, sorcery, witchcraft and other occult practices for night, or times when they are hidden from public view. There are individuals in this System who have cover lives of Christian, Jewish, Buddhist, Muslim, atheist, Satanic,—you name it—and a hidden, true Luciferian faith. (not all Satanists are Luciferian or Illuminati.) Satan has no requirement for his followers to be truthful or honest, so they are free to deceive all of us however they need to to serve Satan.

The Antichrist will have 4 very high ranking Luciferian allies with titles in The System of "Priest," "Prophet," "Pindar," and "Phoenix". At the time of this writing, the given name of only one of those positions has been released, and that is Barack Obama, who is the Phoenix. (ARA 031) The Phoenix holds the position of head of the Satanic Council, and is an incredibly powerful person in The System. (SW 02, SW 27) The identities of the Priest, the Prophet, and the Pindar are not known at this time.

❦

Chapter 7: Protectors

Many, if not all high-level hierarchy individuals in The System have personal protection, assigned to them and paid for by The System. Protectors are sometimes born into certain special families who pass down the protector roles from generation-to-generation, and sometimes protectors are chosen through the MoD's selection process. Protectors are sometimes called protector-assassins, for killing people is part of their job description. Protectors are assigned to young hierarchy children, and they are raised and trained together and go through events and rituals together. They do not, however, show up in the hierarchy child's cover life, they will be out of sight. (GSR 01)

As you probably can imagine from my description of this System so far, not many people would voluntarily or willingly take part and remain in it unless there was some force keeping them there. The standing threat for most of The System's members is severe torture of family, friends, pets, or themselves if they try to escape, followed by their death. Nonetheless, people still tried to defect during the time Jessie was young and in training to be a MoD, and some of the horrors she witnessed as a child had to do with the brutal torture and assassination of people who tried to defect and get out of the Brotherhood. The System assassinates defectors in front of other members, to deter and discourage them from defecting too.

One of the most gruesome scenes Jessie describes is that involving the little boy assigned and in-training to be her protector. He was chosen for his position at roughly the same time Jessie was, and he was actually sitting next to her in the circle when Jessie picked up the spirit sword as her item. They discovered that they had telepathic abilities, she could hear him when he spoke in his head, but not out loud, and he could also hear her telepathically as well. She describes it as 'hearing in the spiritual realm'. (ARA 1) From all her descriptions of him, they had a tight bond because of their shared dangerous experiences, but they didn't always like one another.

His family (and I don't know Jessie's protector's real name because his name has not been publicly released at this time) must have also been members of The System, as his mother tried to defect and take her children with her, and as punishment for her attempt to get out and escape their clutches, the Brotherhood killed his entire family—in front of him. Because it's hard for me to call him by just pronouns, I'm going to give him a pretend name and call him Lou. In her videos, Jessie calls him her training partner. (ARA 2)

In the middle of the night at about 3 am (the witching hour), Jessie, the Queen MoD (QMoD), the QMoD's protector (who was a chief of police in the Chicago area at that time) and a few others drove to Lou's family's house and as Jessie and the QMoD watched, Lou and his family were dragged from their home and lined up on the lawn in front of the house. Lou was taken and placed beside Jessie. He had to watch what came next. The Chief of Police Protector raped Lou's sister, who was 8 years old. His baby brother was taken away by someone. Then the family was driven to a barn close by and hung and gutted in front of everyone. They all died. Neither Jessie or Lou were allowed to interfere, turn away, or close their eyes. They were warned by the QMoD, and they had seen other horrors from disobeying her orders, so they watched in horrified, stunned silence. (ARA 2)

They assigned Lou to a new family, a new "grandfather" named Michael Karkoc who was a NAZI and former member of the Ukrainian Legion of Defense who was brought to the United States via Operation Paperclip, a post WWII program that brought many high-level NAZI's from the Germany regime to the USA. Some men who came via Operation Paperclip went into medicine and continued the horrific experiments of the concentration camp variety on expendable children in the United States (AS 01), others like Lou's new grandfather, were part of the training program of The System for hierarchy children. Still others went into science, some into programming. All of this, from what I can gather, has been paid for either by the illegal activities of The System, or by taxpayer funds. The latter possibility horrifies me.

Unlike Lou, others are born into their protector roles because they come from families that are protectors generation after generation.

The basic structure of the protector division of the Luciferian Brotherhood Illuminati System is that there are six protector divisions, headed by one individual who oversees all of them. There are 6 people that report to the Head Protector, each one in charge of one of the protector departments. Each department has a different purpose and structure. One department focuses on protection for high-level military members of The System. (The level of US Military that are Brotherhood members astonishes me) Another department are called the wolves, and a third are vampires. What you'll find as you study the Illuminati Brotherhood more and more is that these things normal people might call legends, well, they're Illuminati truths. (ARA 7)

To become a wolf, you're born into a family that has for generations been werewolves, and at age 5 you "take the generational spirit". (ARA 7) The same goes for vampires (ARA 16) By that Jessie means there is a demon who is attached (spiritually or supernaturally) to their body, and it allows people with the werewolf spirit to be physically changed by that spirit, to have their joints manipulated and altered, their body morphed from human into something that looks and acts like a werewolf. Jessie states that one of her friends was a werewolf, and to get rid of the spirit that lay claim to his body, he had to rebuke it and cast it out. As another Illuminati high-level defector Cisco Wheeler has said, "Jesus is the decode" for the occult/Illuminati, meaning that all of their spell-casting, witchy works and demon-attaching can be cancelled or reversed by biblical principles, in this case referring to the mandate of Jesus to his disciples in Matthew 10:8 to Heal the sick, raise the dead, cleanse the lepers and drive out demons.

Vampires and wolves aren't the friendliest with each other, Jessie states. "For centuries have always been at war with each other". (ARA 16) Historically, both the vampire and the wolf ancestries go back to Vlad the Impaler, and when the two lines split the wolves derived from the line of

Rasputin, and the vampires came from the Romanov line (RoR 018) One modern-day famous vampire is Johnny Depp, according to Jessie, and his ancestry comes from the royal French lines. Depp's band is called the "Hollywood Vampires" and its members include other vampires as well. One of the other bands that Depp's band is connected with also has "acclaimed vampires", one of which came to recruit girls in a city that Jessie lived in. She says that the band travels and uses their music to recruit girls into "feeder groups" that they get from girl groupies that are fans of the bands. "These girls become their food. (The vampires) suck the blood under their neck and … usually they'll drug them so for the girls it was like a dream, they don't really know what happened. Then there's different types of black magic they can do to heal the skin" so that there is no mark, and because the girls were drugged there's nothing left for them to remember. (ARA 16) Another big recruiting tool is a live-action role playing game called Vampire Masquerade.(VM) Apparently quite a few high-profile university professors are involved in this game, many from psychology departments. You can find the same professors listed on the Bilderberg meeting lists, so it's likely they are high-level hierarchy System members. (ARA 16, DO 20203)

There are a number of whistleblowers that mention seeing US presidents turn into werewolves and shred children. One of them is Cheryl Beck. President Bush Sr.'s secret service name was 'timberwolf' and Cheryl says that they gave it to him for a reason. One February 15th a Lupercalia ritual was done in honor of him, and they celebrated "the demonic spirit of the wolf. She and other children were wheeled to the ritual in cages and put in semi-circles. Their eyes were taped-open so they had to look at what was occurring in the ritual. “I was five-ish when this happened,” Cheryl says. “The little girls were lined up on a banquet table and Poppy (Bush) just went down and raped all of us. There were probably 13 of us because they like the number 13. Then they put them back in their cages, and he (Poppy Bush) was overtaken by a looper demon, which is a werewolf-type entity. He took on the characteristics of a wolf, running around on all fours and growling and howling and his son was there and his job was to calm his father down when he got out of control. ‘W’ comes over and rushes at him to restrain him, and he literally gets flung backwards 10 feet, hits his head on the stone wall and slides down the wall unconscious and there’s a whole blood trail from where he hit his head. That’s where he remained unconscious. They let out the toddler boys, which was this man’s preference of raping to death and that’s what he did as a wolf-type entity, literally tore them apart and killed them. (CB 03)

Jessie explains further what these demon spirits do when they take over a body. “at age five, they take a pact with the demon, and from that point on the demon can basically control them whenever it wants to.” “They can ask the demon to change form if they want to, but otherwise (the person) is in full control unless it’s a full moon. (On those nights the person) would literally black out and wouldn’t remember the entire evening. He had no control over whatever that spirit wanted to do with his body.” At age 5 they take the family spirit of this werewolf, and from that point on that spirit can start shape shifting this individual into a werewolf. “At age 21 they go through another initiation ritual, which (seals) the pact” with the spirit. (ARA 16)

Jessie reports also seeing werewolves shred people. “It was probably one of the first ten deaths that I saw was a werewolf killing somebody right in front of my face, and literally he shredded… the guy within seconds. It was a male defector who had been brought in, and the last thing they shred is the face, so forever I have this image of the horror on this man’s face as he was shredded alive.” (ARA 16) Every year on the Rothschild estate they would do hunts with the top-level (elite) hierarchy people hunting expendable children, “but every five years they allow the vampires and werewolves to hunt,” and the elites will watch while the vampires and werewolves hunt the expendable children. Jessie was witness to one of these hunts in 1982.

❧

Chapter 8: The Satanic Council

Directly beneath the Mothers of Darkness in the structure of the Luciferian Brotherhood Illuminati is a large group called by many different names. I call it the Satanic Council because that's the name I have heard it called the most, but it's also termed the Druidic Council, the World Governing Council, the Global Alliance and the Global Federation, among others. (RoR 049, SW 27) Jessie says that there are 3 more politically correct names for it including the Global Alliance, World Governing Council or Global Federation although in my research those seem to be the names I see least frequently. The name 'World Governing Council' seems to pop up mostly in conjunction with a high-level System Baroness named Somerset Belenoff. At times it seems like the World Governing Council is spoken about as if it's really a sub-group of the Satanic Council. Part of the secrecy of the Brotherhood and their groups and meetings seems to be aided by the many names that might all mean the same thing. (SW 27) This strategy reminds me of their penchant to re-define words all the time, as well, which just serves to make everybody confused. Confusion for them is good, it keeps the spotlight off of deeper investigation and it means that none of us on the outside are ever sure of exactly what we're reading about. All that aside, I'm going to call them the Satanic Council from now on because that seems to be the most frequent term used by my source, Jessie.

The Satanic Council has 300 what are called ‘seats’, but many of those seats are filled by 3 to 5 individuals who rotate their representation on the council, so there are quite a few more than 300 people than can fill the 300 seats as representatives of this group. The entire council is also broken down into high-level sub-groups composed of a subset of the members of the Satanic Council, some of which are more well-known than others, including the ‘Council of 21’ the ‘Council of 13’ and the ‘Council of 9’, all three of which are considered “Upper Chamber” or extremely high level councils. Final decisions for the entire System go through these groups of men and women. (RoR 049) To further confuse us, Fritz Springmeier and Cisco Wheeler also say that more than one of the sub-group meetings of the Satanic Council are “conclaves without formal names.” (FS 03)

The Satanic Council is responsible for running the businesses of the Illuminati. Their businesses include high level sex slavery, human trafficking, gun running, drug running and other illegal and morally reprehensible money-making schemes. Because these businesses are worldwide, the structure of The System has been operationally divided into geographic areas that they call ‘quadrants’. There are two sets of quadrants, one for the United States, and one for the rest of the world. The four United States Quadrants are North, South East and West, and those same 4 quadrant names are also used to divide up the rest of the world into ‘International Quadrants”. (SW 1) The northern United States quadrant consists of Wisconsin, Michigan, Chicago and Indianapolis, (ARA 051) and the rest of the quadrants are not clearly defined by my sources, although Great Britain is said to be in the Western Quadrant on a few occasions (ARA 006, ARA 050). I can only guess that the southern US quadrant includes states like Texas and Louisiana, and the Eastern Quadrant includes regions like Virginia and the Washington DC area. The west would be the left coast, including California and Oregon. I would prefer to present this information for certain and not as a guess, but I include this guess because it's helpful to have some sort of visual to refer to, even if in the future I find out that it's not entirely correct. We can rely on the Northern Quadrant information, and extrapolate the rest with moderate certainty. Since the north is positioned at a compass position north, the south is not likely to be California or Massachusetts. The east and west are also not likely to be opposite of actual compass directions, but again, I'm guessing.

Each individual on the Satanic Council holds a rank in The System of at least Grand High Priest or Grand High Priestess; in fact, when members attain the Illuminati rank of Grand High Priest or Priestess, they are afforded a seat on the Council. Some names of the members of the Satanic Council are known, and some are not. Some are entertainers, some businessmen, some world leaders, royals, bankers, architects, professors—pretty much any profession can be and likely is represented by the individuals in this group.

The head of the Satanic Council holds a position called the "Phoenix", and that position was held for nearly 30 years by George Soros, who stepped down around 2018/2019. Soros was succeeded by Barack Obama, who is the current Phoenix of the Satanic Council. (ARA 031) Each quadrant has a

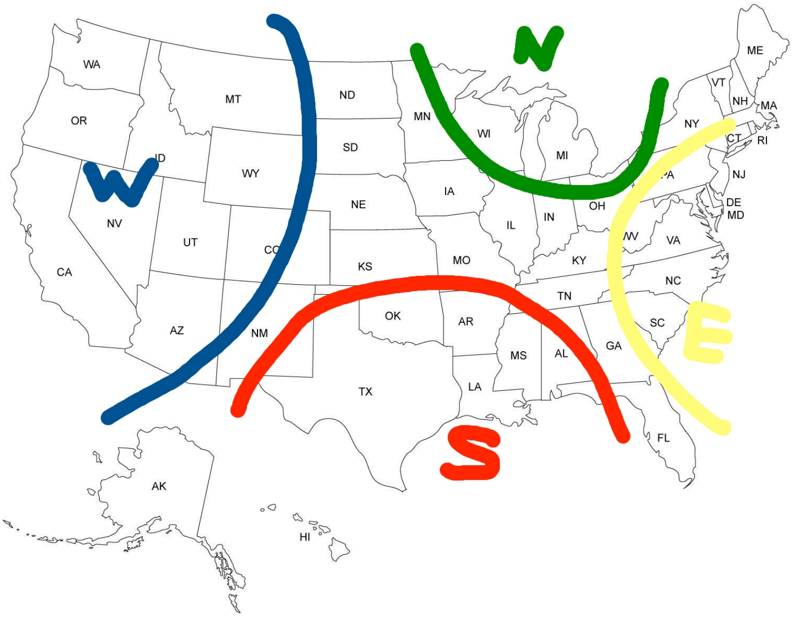
N
S
E
W
WA
OR
CA
NV
ID
MT
WY
UT
CO
AZ
NM
ND
SD
NE
KS
OK
TX
MN
IA
MO
AR
LA
WI
IL
MI
IN
OH
KY
TN
MS
AL
GA
FL
SC
NC
VA
WV
PA
NY
VT
NH
ME
MA
RI
CT
NJ
DE
MD
AK
HI

number of Grand High Priests and Priestesses, and one of the Grand High Priestess for the Eastern US Quadrant was held by Gloria Vanderbilt until her death in 2019. She was supposed to be succeeded by Hillary Clinton, but for whatever reason, Hillary was unable to take that position, one she was groomed for her whole life. (ARA 21) If you're shocked by these names, I understand. I'll reiterate that this System runs the world political structure, and its members are at the top of each society.

Being appointed in childhood as a successor, and trained to take a position as Grand High Priest or Priestess is one way to get a seat on the Satanic Council. The other way to get a seat on the Satanic Council is to do battle for the position, in a witches battle. After Gloria Vanderbilt died and her successor Hilary did not step up to take that position, for whatever reason that may be, to fill the position there was a witches battle instead. Now, directly below Grand High Priests and Priestesses in the hierarchy structure of the Brotherhood is a rank called just High Priest or High Priestess. For Gloria's position, two High Priestesses did battle, and the winner took that position. The two witches who participated in that particular battle for Gloria's position were Beyoncé of singing fame and Megan Markle, the wife of Prince Harry of the UK royalty. (ARA 21) Yup, the royals of most if not all countries are all involved in this System, too.

Hillary's husband Bill Clinton was also eligible to take a position on the Satanic Council when two other men on the council, Barron Hilton (Paris Hilton's grandfather the Hilton Hotel mogul) and Hal Taxil (possibly an architect, he's been difficult to research) both died. Like Hillary, Bill did not step up to take either position, but a number of other High Priests were eligible for those positions, including George Clooney (actor & head of the 'Hollywood warlocks') and Mark Zuckerberg (of Facebook/Meta) (ARA 21) Even though she is now out of The System and isn't able to see these battles in person, it was clear to Jessie that George Clooney was the one that took Barron Hilton's seat. She did wistfully note, though, that she would have given anything at that time "to watch Zuckerberg kick Clinton's a**." (MJ 01, RoR 168)

Another recent revelation about the Satanic Council is that one of it's sub-groups is called 'Merlin', as in King Arthur and the Knights of the Round Table, that Merlin. This Merlin group consists of 5 high level male sorcerers, who are also called elders. These 5 Merlin men have seats on the Satanic Council, but they are also concurrently members that sit above the Holy See, above the Vatican. One Merlin is a Cardinal in the Catholic Church. Another heads up the Orthodox Church. Merlin's job has been to groom and train each generation's Anti-Christ candidates. Part of their craft is necromancy, talking to the dead, so that they can access the wisdom of the old dead Illuminists to properly train their charges. Appropriately, the 'public' name for the Antichrist candidates they are training is 'Arthur.' Just like in the fable. Merlin are also responsible for the new quantum global financial System for the Brotherhood, and Jessie asserts that they have named their new quantum financial System 'Excalibur'. (RoR 237, DO 20203) Yup, not even fairy tales, legends and lore are safe from the infiltration of The System. Does it make sense why the Kennedy empire was deemed "Camelot"? The Kennedy clan were Brotherhood Illuminati, as well. After John F Kennedy died, Jackie Kennedy married another very high ranking Brotherhood member, Aristotle Onassis. (FS 02) If this book is killing your world view, I'm sorry. I've been there.

❧

Chapter 9: Sisters of Light

The Sisters of Light are a high-level division used to protect The System, but in a more global and less personal way than protector-assassins. They're comparable to a special operations military division that uses supernatural spiritual warfare instead of bullets. For example, they might use supernatural means to cause heart attacks in the spiritual dimensions that will actually kill people in the physical dimension on earth. This is a type of warfare that seems to be rather common in the US military, although they hide it very well from the general public. Another function of the Sisters of Light is as spiritual protection outside the spaces where big rituals are, doing protection spells for those who are gathering there for the ritual. (BM 01, ARA 007)

There are 52 sisters of light based in the United States and another 52 based internationally and they're divided with 13 in each quadrant. (BM 01) One of their jobs is to cause chaos and problems for individuals or groups working against the Brotherhood. Using magic and powers afforded to them by the demons they work with, they can cause pestilence or sickness, flooding or hurricanes, vehicle problems, financial problems, evictions, job troubles, marital issues and family problems in people who they want to silence or debilitate. Christians are not an infrequent target. For example, if there was a strong Christian pastor in an area, they might target him to get him to or shut down his church and leave the area.

He or his family might get sick, have an accident, or “lose his faith.” (GD 04, RoR 223)

Not all work they do is for destruction. Some Sisters of Light are expert healers, and are employed to repair the bodies of people who have been in a fight and gotten injured. Jessie witnessed them healing people after witches’ battles or training injuries, and herself was the recipient of their healing during training to be a MoD. (GD 04) She has remarked that she hated their “witchy hands” as they healed her wounds from fight training. Clarista Gingrich (wife of politician Newt Gingrich) is a Sister of Light that healed Jessie from wounds sustained during training. When Jessie went home to her Mom after day training she wouldn’t look bruised. For quite a while Jessie’s mother was kept in the dark about her daughter’s involvement in The System. (RoR 090) Jessie’s proctor had a long, thin device similar to a skewer that she would “all of a sudden just turn around and she would stab me in my right side with that skewer…after she skewered me then I’d have to endure a whole session with the black magic healers…they would stand there with their hands hovering over me using vibrations, but (all) I could feel (was) the wicked evil.” After a while she hated it so much they had to knock her unconscious to get her to sit still so they could heal her. (ARA 101) While Jessie’s description of black magick healers may or may not have been Sisters of Light, it’s a good possibility they were.

There is a famous climate change group called Extinction Rebellion who dress up exactly like Sisters of Light used to dress when Jessie was a child-in-training in the Illuminati. While you’ll usually see the group dressed in red robes, Jessie said that the Sisters of Light either dressed in red, white or black when she was a child. (RoR 223) Jessie can't say for sure that the women protesters of Extinction Rebellion are Sisters of Light, but she knows for sure that the group is headed by a few Illuminati High Priests. (RoR 164, ARA 016)

One subset of the Sisters of Light is a very high level group called the Seven Deadly Cyns, and during Johnny Depp's trial in France they appeared outside the location a number of times dressed in flowing black ceremonial robes meant to portray oil slicks. They're run by a High Priest in The System and are a select group of assassins, who usually don't ever appear in public, according to Jessie. Seeing them there in public was a little like a declared act of war, said Jessie (ARA 016) although a war declaration against whom I'm not entirely sure. The prosecution, perhaps?

◆

Chapter 10: The Media

“We have been taken advantage of by every crooked con man, TV producer, scriptwriter, author and film flam expert there is in this country.” -William Cooper, Behold a Pale Horse

Along with science, banking, education, government and churches, Svali asserts that the media is also an area that the Illuminati have wanted to take over and run for their own benefit. (SV 13)

The modern-day System of media is infiltrated nearly completely by the Brotherhood, and is considered by Jessie to be a bona-fide division of the Brotherhood, run by the Brotherhood. By media, I mean television, print, magazine, movies, music, or large broadcasted events like the Oscars or Emmy Awards or the Super Bowl halftime show. I would say that factions of the media, such as television news, and late night talk shows are almost wholly owned and operated by people who are loyal to the Brotherhood, or controlled by the Brotherhood, whereas other outlets, such as print newspapers at the local or even national level have differing levels of implication in the Brotherhood System. Media is also the vehicle by which the Illuminati communicates to its members. Even things like billboards and other mass advertising on buses or commercials is often Brotherhood-controlled and used for communication purposes.

Gina Phillips, who is a former Licensed Professional Counselor who specializes in treating severely damaged individuals who have been victims of the abuse perpetrated by this Luciferian Brotherhood Illuminati, describes the media as a “Tier 2” level of information dissemination that is controlled or driven by the group’s higher-level “Tier 1” individuals (she names Hillary Clinton, for example, as a Tier 1 individual). Information dissemination by these Tier 1 individuals could be via color, or shape, object or code word, hand sign or symbol or any other number of communication tools the Brotherhood uses and trains its people to recognize. (GP 1) Gina uses the term Tier 1 to mean the same people that Jessie calls “high-level hierarchy.” Others call them “the elite.”

The covers of magazines like Vogue often feature Tier 1/ hierarchy members of the Brotherhood with specific hand or arm symbols. These arm symbols can be directions to locations of meetings or rituals, giving people in grocery store lines instructions as to what area to contact for further information about the next big System gathering. Regular non-illuminati folks are not going to be aware that they are looking at a clandestine Illuminati communication tool when they browse the magazine rack.

Advertisements in magazines like Vogue and Vanity Fair are often designed to reach out to the lower level individuals in The System, who Gina calls “Tier 3”. (GP 1) Jessie might term these individuals “expendable” or System slaves. They are called ‘slaves’ because they are under the complete control of the Brotherhood and cannot refuse their commands without harm or punishment. In Springmeier and Wheeler's book "Deeper Insights Into the Illuminati Formula," they describe Aveda personal care products and Virginia Slims cigarette advertisements that are designed to target the low-level individuals who are mind-controlled by the Illuminati. (FS 1) I'll describe mind-control and programming later, suffice it to say for now that this is a common technique used by the group to get a vast number of people to do what they want to do, on command. Essentially, the Tier 2 commands of the media are transmitted to their Tier 3 "slaves", and the slaves then carry out whatever that command instructs.

Jessie talks about communication that the Tier 1/ hierarchy individuals did about her and Sarah Westall in Rolling Stone magazine after she released some information hierarchy individuals losing their protectors. (SW 20) It's notable that the entire music industry has been described as an Illuminati enterprise, so using a music publication like Rolling Stone is not inconsistent. What irked The System enough to put out a coded article in Rolling Stone about it was that Jessie had mentioned on a show with Sarah Westall that there were tunnels beneath the Capitol building in Washington, D.C. Knowing and being well-versed in the layout of these tunnels was a specialty of the protector-assassins in The System, and and they use them to get their protected hierarchy people (i.e. the senators and representatives) in and out of the capitol building, and to safety. The military also knows the entrances and exist, and the military knew that the protectors usually show up there the night before they need to be there, to triage and make plans. During the January 6th 2020 "event" at the Capitol building where people entered, Jessie believes that some of the Tier 1/hierarchy Brotherhood congress members fled into the tunnels thinking their protectors would be there to meet them, but their protectors weren't there. Because the Tier 1/elite rely on their protectors to know the tunnel Systems and they, themselves, do not know the tunnels, they couldn't get out—they had no idea which way to go, so they had to re-enter the Capitol building as there was no escaping via the underground. (SW 19)

Sarah and Jessie also point out in that series of videos that it's interesting that no major fashion magazine ever did a profile on Melania Trump in the four years her husband was president, and yet now those same publications seem excited that Kamala Harris and Jill Biden are profiled for their fashion. CNN reported in June of 2021 that Jill Biden was featured on the cover of Vogue, and Vogue itself remarked "Dr. Jill Biden is our August cover star!" (VM 1) The New York Post wrote a June 29 2021 article titled "Vogue's Jill Biden cover is so fawning it would embarrass North Korean propaganda" and noted that the author of the article, Van Meter seemed "titillated" by her, calling her a "joy multiplier" and "effortlessly popular." (NYP 01) The good thing about living in 2021 is that more and more people are starting to see through the blatant brainwashing efforts by the print and visual media orchestrated by the Brotherhood to skew public perception and plant false ideas. Luckily for us, some media outlets like the New York Post sometimes do call out their fellow print institutions when they really lay it on too thick.

Gina Phillips also calls out the October 2021 cover of Vogue featuring a pop singer named Lorde as being chock-full of Illuminati symbolism. (VM 2) Gina's September 26, 2021 tweet reads, "This is all code. Can U read between the lines of the article? (GP 2) Gina learned how to decode the media's comms (communications between members of the Brotherhood) after she assisted a woman in getting free from both The System and the aftermath of the abuse The System put her through. She clearly states that "people in government and people who are victims (of Illuminati) mind control they have secret languages and codes that they use to activate." (GP 1) The Tier 2 media is one way they disseminate these codes.

Like Gina, Jessie also states of the Vogue magazine enterprise that "there are individuals there who are heavily implicated in The System, in the Illuminati." (RoR 029) Wikipedia mentions Maye Musk (mother of Elon Musk of Tesla car fame) as being a cover girl on the front of Time, Vogue, Elle Canada and Women's Day magazine, as well as being a CoverGirl spokesmodel. (WK 01) The entire Musk clan is known to be deep in the Brotherhood System and has been outed by their former house girl/babysitter Rosemary, who calls herself Shalom Girl on YouTube. (SG 01) and Jessie has noted that Elon's grandfather Joshua N. Haldeman was connected to Joseph Mengele and other Nazi's that were a part of the Illuminati.

One of the very high Tier 1 elite hierarchy individuals was Gloria Vanderbilt, and her son Anderson Cooper, CNN anchor, is also believed to be part of The System. His position for The System is in position of television news anchor. Just as vampires and werewolves are connected to family demons at a young age, so are other families in the Illuminati connected to different family-loyal demons. Gloria Vanderbilt's family is connected to two demons named Ashtoreth (spelling varies and this one has many names, Ashtoroth, Astarte, Lilith and more) and Marquis. , and the powers that those demons give the members of that family can be used in their work for the Illuminati. (RoR 096)

When Jessie was young, a group that worked with John Brennan met at Jessie's grandmother/proctor's house for brunch on Sundays from 1981 to 1984. They disguised the meeting as a book club, reading To Kill a Mockingbird. (RR 01) It was really a cover meeting for discussing Project Mockingbird, aka how to get the media to further The System's goals to bring about the New World Order (which is a direct plan of the Illuminati Brotherhood to take over the world and control everybody and everything). (SW 3)

The media often conveniently omits information that connects events to the Illuminati. Fritz Springmeier in his book Bloodlines of the Illuminati notes that "almost all the serial killers have had connections to Satanism and in every case the media and the police have suppressed or greatly downplayed their connections to freemasonry and satanism." He mentions serial killers Charles Manson, Sam Berkowitz, Jack the Ripper and Henry Lee Lucas as all having both ties to freemasonry and satanism, two pillars of the Illuminati. (FS 02) (More on the freemasonry connection later.) The media, however, never made a single mention of Manson, Berkowitz or the others as being involved in the occult. Shalom Girl (Rosemary) details how Maye Musk worked closely with Charles Manson while he was in prison, and when she asked Maye about what she was doing with Manson, Maye replied, "buying future chaos for the agenda."

Later in the same book Fritz asserts, “Remember, these people (the elite Illuminati) own the press, and the media.” “they control the media….they control the governments, they control the police forces”. And more ominously “they will kill or discredit anyone who exposes them.” The Rothschilds (another Illuminati family) “have control of all three US (television) networks, plus other aspects of the recording and mass media industry.” They “control Reuters” and now control “CNN, which began as an independent challenge” to the Rockefeller media monopoly. (FS 02) They also pay to keep certain stories out of the news. (SV 27)

Fritz asserts that there are disinformation agents in the Illuminati, and that they are positioned in media as TV anchor men, journalists, commentators, academics quoted in the media, and some politicians. (FS 02) Jessie has also stated that the media outlets frequently have the same “go-to” institutions that they rely on for specialist information, such as Johns Hopkins, the Mayo Clinic, Stanford Research Institute and MIT (Massachusetts Institute of Technology). They don’t have the truth, they’re not telling you the truth, they’re the people being used to feed us all a narrative, they are part of The System and doing their job which is “to make you a slave to The System”. (SW 07)

Svali, another escapee of the Illuminati, writes in one of her blogs that she “knew of three people in San Diego who worked for the Union Tribune (newspaper) who were faithful Illuminists, and who also wrote frequent articles attacking local therapists who worked with RA (ritual abuse) survivors.” The leadership of that local Illuminati group harassed those individuals so much that they left town. Then the leadership of the group boasted that they had ‘run so-

and-so out of town' and gloated about how happy they were that they were successful in getting those folks that were helping survivors out of their She notes that the local illuminati believe in controlling the banks, local governments, law practices and media in their area, and that members "are encouraged to go to journalism school" while other members "help fund local papers." (SV 08, SV 27)

Jessie also says that the media is a communication channel for the Illuminati, and says that they've been "left alone" so that the opposition can "know what the enemy is doing." (SW 07) A number of people believe that the media will be one of the last pillars of the Illuminati structure that is taken down, if they will indeed be taken down and we're not being lied to about the takedown of the Illuminati worldwide.

Much of the success of the media in shaping public thought and opinion seems to come from constant repetition. There are numerous compilation videos on the internet showing different local TV news networks saying the exact same phrase on the same day. Through media source outlets that feed the local news outfits, they seem to be told to say certain phrases, as it's "part of the program".   Cheryl Beck, another Illuminati survivor, says "the only way to get any information into your brain is through the theta wave state, and that either comes through meditation, repetition or hypnosis. It seems as though they think that repetition works best." (CS 06) The reason the media works so very hard and The System spends so much time and energy on the media is that "the Illuminati believe that to control the media is to control the public." (SV 28)09l.

❧

Chapter 11: Brides of Satan

“Satan is not really someone you can get to know on a personal level ” -Jessie Czebotar (SW 27)

The Brides of Satan are available to Satan to make sure that he is happy and that whatever he desires, he gets. (BM 01) They’re required to look beautiful and “always be ready to appear if they’re called on for events.. or to accompany Satan.” In compensation, they are provided with plenty of money and expensive homes. (ARA 024) They sexually cater to Satan, and oversee those called his “offspring”. Most don’t realize what a “nightmare of an abusive relationship” it is going to be prior to accepting the position in The System, and after they are initiated they say that it is like being haunted by your worst nightmare day and night. (SW 27) Most are not allowed to marry someone human in addition to being bound to Satan, and their time in The System is generally short, as he brings in new batches every 5 to 10 years. When the new group is initiated, the previous group is generally killed. (SW 27) New groups are initiated at Bride of Satan ceremonies, which generally happen in March. (FS 03) It is one of the few rituals where everybody wears white robes. (RoR 234)

Elaine was a Bride of Satan in the Northern Quadrant, (ARA 006) which was in the jurisdiction of Jessie’s proctor, the Queen Mother of Darkness. Elaine’s life story, initiation into the Brotherhood and finally her escape from it is described in Rebecca Brown's book *He Came To Set The Captives Free*. At the pinnacle of her 'career' in the Brotherhood, Elaine was described as "one of the top witches in the United States." (RB 01, page 8) The Brotherhood seemed to be after Elaine right from her birth. In an innocent and ignorant act, Elaine's mother gave the Brotherhood rights to Elaine as an infant. Elaine started out being recruited into the Sisters of Light, and then was told about the opportunity to become a regional Bride of Satan. "There are only 5 to 10 regional Brides of Satan in the U.S. at any one time. It is a position of great honor and power. The Sisters of Light told me they were sure I had the ability to attain this high position. They constantly talked about all the benefits I would gain if I reached it. I became determined to gain that position." (RB 01, page 43) Despite attaining great heights in the hierarchy, Elaine eventually wanted out of The System, and with Rebecca's help worked for years to free herself from its clutches. Their story of how that happened is worth reading, it explains in detail what it feels like to be possessed by a demon, attacked by a demon, trapped in The System, and the lengths to which The System will try to prevent someone from leaving. It was years of battle, prayer, dodging poison, bombs, attacks and more. It took a physical and emotional toll on both of them.

⁂

Chapter 12: Programming

"A life of torture and mind control… is so excruciatingly painful that I will do anything necessary in the service of stopping it from happening in future generations." -Brice Taylor, Thanks for the Memories (BT 01)

This Brotherhood System exists and persists in the face of overwhelming opposition—from its own members. People don't want to belong to this group. They don't want to do the things that this group does.   Jessie estimates that 95% of the members of the group don't want to be there, and only 5% do. (ARA 031, RoR 204) So, how does that work? Aside from a separate System of blackmail and threats that I'll describe later, most of the people in this System have had their minds altered in childhood, and after being altered, they have less ability to resist or leave the group. Sometimes they have zero ability to resist the dictates and commands of The System.

The process of breaking and retraining an individual so that they can be a slave to The System is called 'programming'. Using that programming to manipulate the individual is sometimes called mind-control. A person who is programmed and is being used by The System is said to be mind-controlled, and is sometimes called a mind-controlled slave. Modern-day slavery is alive and well, and perpetrated by the Brotherhood System through their System of programming.

The way a slave has been altered isn't random. It's very specific and very purposeful, and the end result is that the programmed individuals have essentially lost the ability to control themselves and be self-directing. Cathy O'Brien says that she lost her connection to reality to the extent that she had no sense of time during the many years she was operating as a Presidential sex slave model for The System. Not only did she not know the time of day, but also what year it was. (ZZ 17) Being completely controlled from the outside made time irrelevant.

You can think of a programmed person as being hypnotized in a sense, but in a very purposeful way. Programming is a Systematic restructuring of a person's brain and their consciousness, done for the purposes of making them compliant to The System, against their own will. It's scientific, and detailed, and horrifying, and results in a dysfunctional and broken sense of self that isn't good for the programmed person, but is very useful for The System. Programmed individuals are referred-to as slaves, because they are under complete control of The System. Programming is one piece of the implementation of a human slave society.

The Brotherhood System has need of different kinds of mind controlled individuals, to do different jobs for them. Since a large amount of income of the Brotherhood comes from sex trafficking and drug trafficking, slaves are created and used to do the work of The System in coordinating these efforts. Slaves can do courier work taking messages to and from world leaders, they can be black widow assassins, they can provide sex services to high-ranking politicians, they can be assets in blackmail schemes, they can carry drugs across borders, they can be maids or farm workers or literally just about anything. The list of jobs they can use slaves for is endless. What slaves do not do is act under their own direction, they are controlled and given orders by slave handlers for everything that they do. These handlers have thousands of different programs that they can use to access different compartments of the slave's brain, access different programs that are inserted into the slave's brain, and get the slave to do what they wish them to do. (FS 03, FS 01, KS 01) Far from "all men are created equal," programming creates a two-tier System of elite class and slave class.

In the past, slaves have been created in 2 main ways: by technological alterations, or by using torture.

Two excellent human examples of slaves created by technology are Cheryl Beck and Anna Starfire. Cheryl Beck had an implant in the bone behind her left eye that is described as being remarkably similar to Elon Musk's modern-day Neuralink technology. They removed her eye, embedded this object in the skull bone behind her eye, then re-inserted her eye back into the socket, then connected the device to her brain. It was, in her case, specifically for mind control, so that her handlers could override her free will and cause her brain to do as they wished. (ARA 017, ARA 025) Anna Starfire's experience was extreme; she had multiple regions of her brain removed and replaced with transmitter technology. Portions of her brain and skull bones were removed and replaced with devices. She had wires coming out from her head to attach to external technology. Her tailbone was removed and wires inserted up her spinal column that connected to her brain technology and auditory System making her into a human “spy radio”. She was specifically being designed to be able to uplink to satellites and other space objects; she says that she could “move objects in space” with her technologically-enhanced brain so that the counterintelligence agencies could take pictures. She explains that her “metal headpieces could start fires” and that she could jam satellite microwave signals by “angling my head ever so slightly.” This was all in the 1960’s. (AS 01) The System’s technology has been greatly refined since then.

Anna Starfire’s experience isn’t unique and she wasn’t the only slave her age that was altered with brain replacement technology. She’s just one of the only survivors that have lived and been able to tell her story. The rest of her cohort are dead. One government experiment they put Anna through was called Project Marionette, which was done in Southern Florida at hospitals and a theme park (unnamed). Anna describes being awake during the brain surgeries which were done by doctors who she said already “had 30-35 years of training,” having already done these kinds of surgeries since the 1930’s in field hospitals for the military, in Germany, under Josef Mengele. Anna and other children were “brain sculpted” so that they could test wireless control of the human brain by linking it to robotic control. When they were done with the brain surgery, they drugged the children so they had no conscious control over their bodies, set up stages and music and linked each child’s social security number to the remote technology, and through the remote electrical direction of their muscles caused their bodies to dance to music a macabre dance show. They oiled the children’s bodies so they would not have electrical arcs.

By the end of the show, most children were dead. The parents were told that they had died of pneumonia. They were buried or cremated and the evidence of the technology was destroyed. The program managers 'ordered' 30-50 children a day for a month's worth of these dance shows. Anna describes this experiment as being a precursor of their intention to control everything humans did. The System's military members found those experiments of immediate interest in creating technology-assisted "super soldiers" who could be remotely controlled by satellite or cell phones. (AS 01 pgs. 148-155) With the evidence of mass graves in Canada as has been recently described by Kevin Annett, we have to wonder how many other children were also slaves created by experiments done by the secret Brotherhood 'projects'.

Torture-based programming methods are another form of mind-control and these methods can be used on unborn infants still in the womb. Svali terms this type of programming 'prenatal splitting', as what it is designed to do is fragment and compartmentalize the brain using traumatic stimuli. Loud rock music, inharmonious modern classical compositions, or humans yelling at the fetus in the womb can cause extreme fetal distress. Physically hitting the mother's abdomen, ingestion of large quantities of bitter substances by the mother, or electric shock to the abdomen can also be used. Prolonged, overwhelming, or severe stress can cause the fetal brain to 'split' and overwhelming traumatic memories or experiences to be compartmentalized. (SV 14) Compartmentalization of traumatic memories is a survival tactic for the severely abused. It allows their nervous System to get rest, and not have to deal with the overwhelming stimuli. An analogy might help in understanding this process. It would be like having a horribly loud radio playing in the room you're in, and you pick up the radio and set it in a padded soundproof box and close the lid. The radio is still playing the music at the same volume, but you get rest and relief from that music causing you distress. In the brain of a traumatized infant, that trauma (the loud radio) just gets compartmentalized (put in the padded box) and the infant can survive that trauma without going insane.

Sometimes these sort of traumas are purposely done to induce premature labor and ensure that the child is born on a ceremonial holiday. (SV 14)

Cisco Wheeler, a former programmer for the Brotherhood Illuminati says that sometimes, instead of developing mind splits from prenatal trauma, some children develop autism. The rise in autism rates among children is thought to be partly due to an increase in trauma-induced mind control efforts. Some autistic children could therefore be described as "mind-control duds." Autism is not solely a result of programming gone bad as it is recognized that children can develop autism from many different causes; not all are caused by mind-control. (FS 03)

In-utero trauma is only the beginning of a child's programming nightmare. After the child is born, further trauma is used to induce further mind splits in those infants who are "skilled" at dissociation. Dissociation is the ability to escape a traumatic situation as it is happening, so that the child is not forced to feel, hear, or see what is going on at the intensity they would normally feel it if their consciousness was firmly attached to the body. It can sometimes be described as spacing out, floating above the body and watching the situation, a “fly on the wall” 3rd person observer, retreating into an imaginative daydream, or blanking out. Sometimes the dissociation happens after the event, so during the event the person is 100% conscious of what is going on, and it’s only afterward that they suddenly discover the event cannot be remembered. I saw an interview with Mary-Kate Olsen of “Full House” TV fame and she told the interviewer that she always blanks out the interview afterward, so the interviewer could ask her anything, and she wouldn’t remember it afterward at all. (ZZ 15) That’s one form of dissociation. That memory of the interview is still somewhere in her mind, but compartmentalized, and she cannot access it consciously any more.

Cisco Wheeler describes a severe form of dissociation she experienced when she was being tortured as a child, saying “when the pain got too much for me I leaped out of my body just like a bullfrog and hovered over my body and watched Josef Mengele and my father torture me and…I would flatline so they couldn't torture me anymore.” (RoR 196)

Mind-control programming is technical and detailed and involves a lot of work on the part of the programmer. Mind compartments are created by a specific sequence of steps that the programmed individual has to repeat until they are etched very deeply in their mind. The action or task they are being programmed to carry out often has a word, phrase, song, or color associated with the programming, so that at the end of engraining the task and the trigger the two are inexorably tied and brings about an instant response in the slave that is involuntary. They cannot refuse. With apologies for this analogy, it is as if they are being trained like dogs who will perform upon command. Only instead of being trained by being offered treats, they are trained with violence, fear, and shame. It's important to note here that this System impresses upon its programmers that what they are doing is for the benefit of the child. Svali was well into adulthood before she realized that what she was doing to children was inappropriate and harmful. She was made to believe that what she did to the children she oversaw in programming situations was discipline, and training, and was for the betterment of the child. They even told her that she was doing this in love, because discipline and inflicted suffering were presented to her as corrective discipline designed to make the child strong. (SV 58)

Svali details the process she and her fellow programmers used to install a program in a child. First, the child would be seriously traumatized to create a mind split, then drugged or hypnotized to bring about a hypnotic state. Then they would give the programming instructions verbally, then model the instructions for the child, then tell the child to mimic what the programmer said and did. If the child made a mistake, they would be given negative reinforcement, like an electric shock. Then they would have the child repeat the behavior on cue until the child did it correctly, and reinforce that with a positive reward, such as praise and a hug. Then they would have the child repeat the behavior after on cue 50 or more times. After that repetition, the program was instilled in the child and they would sometimes seal the programming with a ritual. (SV 02) International occult groups could have their children being continuously programmed at a facility doing this and other programming for the first 3 years of their life. (SV 45) This would bring about thousands of programs, with thousands of cues or triggers to bring forth the specific behaviors encoded by each program. Cisco notes that handlers managing slaves might keep at hand a giant binder of the codes for that particular individual. (FS 03)

Brice describes some of the cues that were used on her to trigger her programs in private as needles stuck between her knuckles, and in public as a number code. (BT 01) Cathy recalls being triggered by harmonic tones played over the telephone, Jesuit mind-control hand signals, CIA codes and other government program codes, such as MK Ultra (CO 01) Some of these codes from different occult or government mind-control Systems overlap and some do not.

Cisco notes that the result of programming is that "when they tell you to cry, you cry. When they tell you to scream, you scream. When they tell you to eat, you eat. Every facet of your life is totally controlled by them." (CW 14) Cathy was programmed to eat no more than 300 calories a day. It kept her weak, so she was more compliant. (CO 01)

Torture programming has been used in many different occult societies worldwide. Svali worked for the Jesuits and the Illuminati. Both groups are international, and both have operational local groups based in the USA. These are not the only occult groups that utilize mind control. Some of the other groups are generational witchcraft covens, satanic generational covens, government groups like MI-6, Mossad, CIA, SPETZ, organized crime, and Asian occult groups like the ninja clans. (SV 55) Many, if not most of these groups serve Satan. The purpose of all this childhood programming by occult groups is to "remake" a human into the image of Satan/Lucifer; someone who could lie, cheat, steal, kill, torture, eat their children or other people's children and do all of that with no conscience or remorse. Perhaps they even will have been programmed to enjoy it. (SV 58)

Most programmers have themselves been programmed in childhood; The System self-perpetuates its programming operation in this way. Svali as a child was programmed by the Jesuits, and Cisco Wheeler was programmed by her father, Leo Wheeler, known in the Brotherhood System as Dr. Black. (SV 51, RoR 196) Cisco became a programmer for the Brotherhood, and Svali was a programmer for the Illuminati and for the Jesuits. (SV 43, SV 03)

Programming was practiced by the Brotherhood for centuries but was fairly rudimentary and unreliable until it was scientifically studied and refined by Josef Mengele. It is often difficult to find out concrete and verifiable information about men who are high-ranking in the Brotherhood System, and Mengele is one of those people. He is a man who is lied about in 'mainstream' media, encyclopedias and other data sources as being someone who died earlier than he died, and lived where he didn't live, and didn't do what he did. It's fairly commonly accepted that Mengele was a nazi employed by the regime in WWII-era Germany, and that he did horrible experiments on children in concentration camps. Some of his most famous involved twin studies, usually where one twin lived and the other died. Some accounts say he died in 1945. There is no doubt, however, that his name comes up again and again in accounts of programmed individuals who have escaped The System, and that he is a ubiquitous figure in the stories of escaped System slaves who were programmed by him in the 1950's an 1960's. A few accounts note that he died in 1979 in Brazil, which fits better with the survivor's stories of him.

Josef was the top programmer for the Brotherhood Illuminati System during the 1940-1970's era, and according to Svali did some programming and teaching of programming techniques to the Jesuits, as well. Post-Mengele, different more high-tech programming techniques were constructed and used that involved frequency, or wavelength technology. Cathy O'Brien, who was programmed using the more traditional Mengele-style programming was able to 'deprogram' herself with assistance, but her daughter Kelly was programmed with the more high-tech programming and that required a different more sophisticated level of deprogramming. This is important because the older slaves in The System that were programmed with torture methods had their programming break down and start to fall apart more easily than the more high-tech frequency-based programming that is going on now. Cathy deprogrammed herself with help, but her daughter didn't have that luxury. (CO 01, CO 02)

In the short run, dissociation is a useful tool for survival in the face of overwhelming pain or torture. Once the pain is over, however, dissociation hinders survivors' abilities to heal from the trauma. The brain is not always successful at keeping those traumas compartmentalized permanently, and dissociation brought about by programming can start to break down, freeing those compartmentalized memories. This tends to happen around age 30, which is incidentally when a slave 'ages out' of The System and is usually killed. Cathy O'Brien escaped her intended demise by being intercepted and removed from the control of The System by a smart man who kept her safe from The System's assassins. Cathy's brother attempted suicide at age 30, but wasn't successful, and they kept him around, likely because he was raising three children who were also System slaves. (CO 01) Suicide can be programmed into a slave and triggered, so that it makes it look like the idea to die was the slave's, but in reality it was The System taking them out with a cue or code designed to set into motion a suicide program that had been inserted into their brain in childhood. (FS 03)

Jessie describes in one interview the process of the Obamas' children's programming breaking down. The interviewer describes the kids as "reckless" and "party animals", and wonders why they're allowed to go wild like that. Jessie explains that when programming starts to break down, and memories of their torture start to come to their conscious minds, they often turn to drugs and alcohol and their behavior gets wild. The System allows them to go through that and get to a terrible state of dysfunction so that they exhibit a clear need to be taken to a drug or alcohol rehabilitation program. Those programs are designed to reprogram them, in addition to addiction treatment. The drugs, alcohol, and out-of-control behavior provide a cover story to the general public, who doesn't know that behind the closed doors of the treatment facility, they are being re-conditioned for return to compliance within The System. (SW 06) Svali notes that people returned regularly to programmers for 'tune-ups" of their programming when she was working in the San Diego area. (SV 06)

Programming controls the mind so completely and so strongly that individuals can be made to think that they are no longer a human being. When Cisco began deprogramming herself as a 30-year-old adult, she firmly believed she was a kitten with a porcelain face. She told the individual helping her “You’re crazy. I am not a little girl, I am a kitten.” Going through the process of realizing that she was not a kitten, but instead she was a little girl was excruciating for her. She had been so severely tortured during the programming process that she never wanted to be a little girl, it was simply too painful. (CW 14)

None of this programming is done in secret. The records of slaves of The System are kept in government computer files, and other details about slaves are kept in unofficial non-computerized files that “never officially existed and are not give up even to Congressional subpoenas.” Intelligence agencies have access to these files, however, including the heads of the CIA and upper-level politicians in The System like Zbigniew Brezinski and Dick Cheney. (FS 03) There are only a very few high-level people in the Brotherhood who have not undergone programming, and they are essentially handled by Satan who keeps tabs on them. Cisco Wheeler “programmed all the high-level the people in the Satanic Council, the United Nations” (RR 22)

The government is so highly intertwined with The System that it has used taxpayer dollars to fund research programs designed to further investigate how to create better slaves. MK Ultra is one of the more widely-known government research program names, but there are many others, as well, including Projects Bluebird and Project Artichoke, which were precursors of MK Ultra, and MK Delta, Project Chatter, and Project MK Naomi, which were spinoffs of Project MK Ultra.

The goal of The System is to enslave all of humanity through whatever means they can, and this seems to include occult, government and private partnerships all working together. Cheryl Beck asserts that the Rockefeller's want to 'barcode' us all with implantable RFID-style chips that can track and control us. (CB 04) While it's easy to get into the trap of focusing on one organization or one family or one initiative it's if you look at the bigger picture it's a plan that is much, much bigger than one family. Programming is the one facet that seems to bring together the research and development with the practical applications of their plans for a slave society. They've been working on it all for decades, and currently The System has progressed partway to being successful with this global plan of technological control over each individual. As I write this, just this morning one of the truckers in the late January 2022 trucker convoy to Ottawa in Ontario, Canada, found out that his vaccine status and other cell phone data had been transferred to the border guards even before he reached the Canada/US border crossing. This is only the beginning of having our data 'precede us' everywhere we go, and eventually, control everywhere we go. In some locations, internal chipping already exists to access buildings or secure rooms or as digital identification. And some people have observed that individuals who have been injected with what is being termed the "covid vaccine" now emit Bluetooth MAC addresses—they are literally emitting unique trackable signals from their bodies. (ZZ 16)

It's easy to dismiss or become accustomed to many of the long-term plans The System rolls out, as they are progressing towards this goal in small increments. At this time, your cell phone might be your 'digital ID', but eventually, cell phones might be replaced by implantable devices that control your ability to bank, or grocery shop, buy gasoline for your car or even regulate what kinds of buildings you can and cannot enter. Vaccine passports are another route they are trying out to see if they can control where we can and cannot go. Their intention to enslave us isn't hyperbole, nor is it speculation. They intend for humans to be a slave society, and Luciferians our controllers. According to Catherine Austin Fitts, once the central banks introduce digital currency, termed CBDC (central bank digital currency), they will have almost total control over our lives. Want to travel? If The System overlords don't want you to, all they have to do is restrict your digital currency to 5 miles of the radius of your home. If they successfully abolish the use of cash (as is their plan), then you have no options, they've digitally tethered you and your car to whatever address you've listed as your home. (CAF 01)

❧

Chapter 13: Infiltrated Institutions

"The last mystery at the top of the Masonic pyramid is the worship of Lucifer" -William Cooper, in Behold A Pale Horse

The Luciferian Brotherhood Illuminati cabal has infiltrated just about every institution, organization, religion, government, and structure that the world has to offer. (FS 03, pg 427) This was a very difficult, if not the most difficult aspect for me to comprehend of the Luciferian System when I was first introduced to it. I could accept the idea of witches' battles and sorcery much easier than I could accept the fact that churches, government institutions, private corporations, and social clubs were being used by the Luciferians as part of their covert organizational structure.

I had to completely re-evaluate my perception of institutions, companies, nonprofits etc., from the perspective of my whistleblower sources instead of looking in on them from the outside. I had to come to terms with the fact that the world isn't actually the way it's presented to us on the surface. I had to learn coded symbols and messaging, and mull over the fact that none of this is hidden, it's in plain sight, it's just that I didn't understand what I was looking at and didn't grasp the fact that it was a code. I felt a tad bit like I was un-knowingly living in the main part of a house where the tiny space Anne Frank and her family lived-in was, without knowing they were living there. Like a hidden world was sitting right beside me and I was oblivious to it.

What I came to realize over time, and with some difficulty, was that this global Luciferian structure doesn't really have its own buildings, meeting places, or infrastructure on earth's surface. You aren't going to look for a land deed or building deed and find that "Satan, Inc." owns it. Every location that is used by the Luciferian elite is owned by a private entity or family, such as the Rothschild mansions, or by an independent, seemingly separate institution altogether, such as the Catholic Churches, Freemason lodges, private islands or government offices.

In order to operate with near-complete secrecy and veiled from the public view, they hide in plain sight, inside a wide variety of society's businesses, faith institutions, government offices, and social clubs. The genius of it is that only a small subset of each of these organizations are Luciferians, and the rest are just regular folks who have no idea that they are in the same organization standing alongside evil people who don't have the same morals, allegiances, or agenda that they do.

Catholic Church/Vatican/Holy See

When I learned that Luciferian/Satanic rituals were happening using the sanctuary of the Catholic church at night, and in the daytime they were being used to hold Catholic mass, I think that's when it finally clicked for me. (RoR 045, DO 00605) I also learned that the same thing was happening with Masonic Temples, they were being reported used for Luciferian rituals and then cleaned-up and used for Freemason gatherings.

Luciferians do seem to have their own infrastructure and holdings underground, but not so much above-ground. In a later section of this book I'll discuss the secret underground cities and underground transportation that the Brotherhood and military use to do some of their nefarious deeds. The Catholic Church is one of the most duplicitous institutions, and it both has above-ground and below-ground facilities. Some churches are nearly completely Luciferian controlled, and some are mostly not. There are apparently ways to look at the architecture of a church, its number and placement of windows, and be able to tell the difference, but I'm not advanced enough to tell. (CS 25)

Catholic Church, the Masons and the Mormons are the big 3 institutions that are not what they seem to us non-Luciferians. This entire section has the potential to cause a lot of cognitive dissonance for you, dear readers. The Catholic Church has so many devoted, lovely Christian people in it—how could you lump the Catholic people together with Satanists?? I can hear some of you thinking that already. I wholeheartedly agree, the Catholic Church does have many devoted, lovely Christian-professing people. In my opinion they are also completely in the dark, and being used and abused as a cover by the church hierarchy to provide cover for the fact that so many priests, cardinals and high-level individuals are secret Luciferian Satanists. Not all of them, but a large number. At one major ritual that I will describe in the latter part of this book were 4 Catholic clergy, one a Cardinal and one a Reverend Monsignor who were there at that ritual in their capacity as Luciferian High Priests. The duplicitous nature of some high-ranking Catholic Clergy is not in doubt to many escapees of the Illuminati. It's just that it's shocking to us when we find that out.

This couldn't possibly be—we normal people would somehow know, there would be signs, there would be clues, we would get it, what you're suggesting is not possible! To that accusation, I say, there are signs. There are clues, and we're not getting them, we're missing their hidden meanings. Also, these folks are masters at hiding their "night life" from everybody. The members of the Luciferian cult (Svali calls it a cult, and I tend to agree, that moniker fits) are under threat of death if they reveal this to the public, they would be killed for letting on. The average Catholic Church member will have no idea this is happening. Also, this isn't happening in every church, and not every priest is a member, so there are pockets of Luciferian control over certain churches but not all churches.

It's also a guess of mine that in those churches that are also hotbeds of Luciferian activity, the church secretary, and the janitor and the grounds caretaker, and every level of employee is also staffed by Luciferians, so there's no possibility that any 'outsider' might be clued-in by accidentally running across a ceremony being held in the sanctuary. The levels of control extend outwards and are numerous. Jessie describes one church where a nun, under the guise of giving piano lessons on the 2nd floor of the parish house would watch and make sure that nobody was entering the grounds that shouldn't be there. (ARA 040)

It’s impossible for me to know if the Catholic Church started out this way and was early-on infiltrated by Luciferians, or if it started as a genuine, dedicated-to-Jesus institution. That is a rabbit hole that might be worth looking into in the future. For now, what I can say based on the testimony of a number of individuals who have escaped the clutches of the Illuminati is that they heavily, and I mean really heavily, use the Catholic Church, all the way to the tippy top, as cover for their organization.

Jessie has even named the Pope as being involved. Multiple times. She says that the man we all know of as the pope is actually a Luciferian who is going to be in charge of some masonic orders and what is called the “Light Side of the System,” the side that does white magick. The Dark Side of The System which is governed by the Black Pope will oversee the dark masonic orders and the Jesuits. (ARA 031) Svali names the Jesuits and their Superior General (aka the Black Pope) as being possibly even more powerful than the face-front (white) pope, the one we see as the head of the Vatican. In her eyes, the White Pope might actually be subservient to the Black Pope. She calls the Black pope the “REAL leader of the Vatican,” emphasis being hers, not mine. (SV 60)

More often than not, Jessie groups the Catholics and the Jesuits together and calls them one “department” of the Illuminati, one that runs part of the business end of the organization, namely human trafficking. Don’t fall out of your seat. Yes, Jessie has implicated the Catholic Church in trafficking humans, and in using, selling, and disposing of human remains. One of the ways that they accomplish this trafficking is that many Catholic Churches have catacombs and other underground structures that are used for rituals involving human sacrifices. Some Catholic Churches have underground incinerators. (ARA 004) The remains of children sacrificed in rituals on the grounds (or underneath) Catholic churches can be disposed of by incineration, and then, much to my own revulsion when I found this out, sometimes they take those remains and do other things with them, like create memorial diamonds from them, and then sell the diamonds for profit, or wear them as trophy diamonds in rings. (RR 31) Even more disgusting things can be done with human cremains, and I'll discuss those later in part 3.

The Holy See, which is the financial arm of the Vatican is composed of Satanic Councilmen who are of a special select committee, Jessie terms them a "special part of the world governing council." She asserts that the Holy See is the power center of the Vatican, not the Black or White pope (ARA 031) Jessie's outlook and Svali's outlook on the importance and rank of the popes and the Jesuits differs some, but one thing is for certain, the Catholic Church and Jesuits are inextricably intertwined with the Luciferian Illuminati Brotherhood.

Fritz Springmeier says it best. "One of the Illuminati's fronts is the Catholic church, which the Jesuits manage for the Illuminati." (FS 01)

Masons

I have had ancestors that have been Freemasons and members of Masonic Temples. It was a very sad and difficult process for me to see beyond what appears to be the charitable, community-based involvement in Freemasonry to the rotten core/upper echelon of the occult that occupies the highest ranks of the group.

On the surface, as with other infiltrated institutions, Freemasonry looks like a really respectable organization. It is presented to society as a social/fraternal club whose members do many good works for the communities in which they reside. This is because at the base levels this is pretty much how it operates, and there are many good members who engage in good and charitable works for their community. But within the writings of masons like Albert Pike, who wrote Morals and Dogma of the Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite of Freemasonry, the truth of the duplicitous structure of Freemasonry is found. Pike writes, “the initiate.. is intentionally misled by false interpretation. It is not intended that he shall understand (the symbols of masonry) but it is intended that he shall imagine he understands them. Their true explanation, is reserved for the adepts: the Princes of Masonry.” So Pike says it flat out; the lower levels are deceived as to the truth of Freemasonry, and the real truth is left for the upper echelon, which he calls the “Princes”. (TT 01) Adepts, by the way, is a term used frequently to describe high level magicians. Kerth Barker agrees with Pike, noting that “some Luciferians are high-degree Freemasons who conceal their true philosophy from lower ranked Masons and the public in general.” (KB 03)

In a different work, Pike also writes, “Freemasonry is a fraternity within a fraternity—an outer organization concealing an inner Brotherhood of the elect.” They are “separate yet interdependent orders, the one visible and the other invisible. The visible side (the social fraternity most people are familiar with) is full of “men enjoined to devote themselves to ethical, educational, fraternal, patriotic, and humanitarian concerns. The invisible society is a secret, most august fraternity whose members are dedicated to the service of the arcanum arcanorum. Google translates arcanum arcanorum as “The Secret of Mysteries.” Whatever is going on in the secret of mysteries, it’s not a fun, fraternal, patriotic endeavor. It’s deeper than that. And indeed, back in Morals and Dogma Pike clues us in as to the true reason for the inner circle of Freemasonry, which is this: “Freemasonry, like all the religions….” (TT 01) So, at the lower levels, Freemasonry is a social club. At the higher levels, it’s a religion. One that worships Lucifer. But you probably won’t know that until and unless you make it to a very high level, when according to Jessie, someone will clue you in by whispering in your ear the name of the demons you’re meditating to or taking vows to, (ARA 002, ARA 034) and finally at level 66 they will tell you, “Hey, we worship Lucifer.” (CS 19)

Cheryl Beck says essentially the same thing, except very clearly and succinctly, which is that the individuals at the first three levels of masonry (which are called the Blue Lodge) have “no clue what is going on”. She calls them “purposely deceived” and says that this occurs “because at that level they want to weed out the ones that are adept at the occult principles and the ones who are just there for the boy’s club.” (CB 01)

So, there are everyday, average, low-level Freemasons who do charity work, and there are high-level occult Luciferian masons who consort with demons and do child sacrifice and worship Satan. The same as with the Catholic

Church, I don’t know if Freemasonry started as a cover organization for the Luciferians, or if it was a legit institution to begin with and was infiltrated and slowly taken over by the Luciferians. Jessie believes that Freemasonry was created by Luciferians as a way to hide themselves, hide what they did and who they were within a respectable shell organization within the community. She notes that the original name of the Luciferian System was “The Brotherhood” or “The Great White Brotherhood” and at every level of masonry the vows, the culture and the function of the group is about helping out fellow brothers. (ARA 002) This doctrine even goes as far as to help them cover up and keep secret their crimes, or evil deeds. The Royal Arch Mason oath includes the following: “I furthermore promise and swear that I will assist a Companion Royal Arch Mason when I see him engaged in any difficulty, and will espouse his cause so far as to extricate him from the same, whether he be right or wrong.” (ZZ 04)

In other words, if your fellow mason commits a crime, you have sworn an oath to get him out of the trouble he’s in. Furthermore, the next part of the oath states, “I will keep all the secrets of a Companion Royal Arch Mason (when communicated so me as such, or I knowing them to be such), without exceptions.” (ZZ 04) So—if your fellow mason has committed a crime, you will get him out of it, and keep it a secret from everybody else. That is a pretty convenient cover for criminal acts. This is in contrast to the oath for a Master Mason, which only obligates you to keep the secrets of a brother mason with the exception of murder and treason. (ZZ 05) Master Mason is a lower degree than Royal Arch Mason. The requirements to keep your brother's secrets get more demanding as you advance and attain higher levels, and the number of exceptions granted to tell on your fellow brother decrease. The upshot of it is, the higher you go up the masonic ladder of degrees (levels), the more possible it is you'll be a witness or a participant in increasing degrees of law breaking. For a Luciferian System that wants its members to do evil, criminal things, this kind of secrecy is very, very good.

This culture of secrecy and Brotherhood above everything—above the law, above your family, above your God, even—is essential to the workings of the Luciferians. I'll describe later in the book a ritual that children go through designed specifically to seal a child to a group of adult perpetrators that he will be beholden to for the rest of his life. This vow a mason brother makes to the group binds himself to them. It ensures that he will help them when they need help, and keep their secrets at all costs. The ties that are forged between individuals from the vows, oaths, and structure of Freemasonry rituals are incredibly strong, and form a very important backbone of the Luciferian System.

The Freemason's lodge is broken up into a few different sections. After the Blue Lodge, there is the Red Lodge which goes up to the 33rd degree, and beyond that the hidden degrees of the White and Black Lodges. (TT 01)

The Blue Lodge comprises the first three degrees or levels of Freemasonry. The first level is the entry point and the third level is the jumping-off point for all other masonic orders. For example, if you want to become a Rosicrucian (Order of the Rosy Cross), you have to first pass through the Blue Lodge's first three levels, which are Level 1 Entered Apprentice, Level 2 Fellow Craft, and Level 3 Master Mason.

Once you finish those, you can continue on to other masonic orders. The Order of the Rosy Cross is a higher-level division of masonry less formally called the Rosicrucians. As Jessie says, Rosicrucians will say they're not masons, but she considers them masons as they've had to go through those first 3 masonic levels/degrees and have achieved Master Mason status. (RR 25) Jessie says that as the Illuminati hierarchy are trained for their position in The System, they choose from a wide range of different masonic orders. Nobody is tied to just 1 or 2 orders, and they collect mastery in different orders like girls might collect Girl Scout Badges. (RoR 090)

While most average people who know a little about Freemasonry might think that the top of the masonic structure is level 33, Cheryl believes that the Illuminati hold masonic levels above 33, (CB 01) and Jessie concurs. In fact, the highest-ranking, level 100 Freemason is a very high-up Luciferian who holds the rank/title of "Pindar," and is the head of the Masonic Orders. (RR 025) If you're a level 1, 2, or 3 Freemason, you've likely never even heard of the possibility to be a level 100. Non-luciferians don't seem to make it past the lower ranks of masonry much, and in fact the levels of masonry that can be achieved beyond level 3 are designed to progressively weed out those who are not compatible with Luciferian ideals. (CB 01)

Level 32 and 33 masons read the books of Aleister Crowley and Albert Pike, and this is when the study of white, grey, and black magic begins and devotions to demons like Thoth are required. In later levels, oaths are taken directly to Satan. (ARA 002) One of Jessie's relatives is a level 66 mason, and the one she believes ordered the hit on her son

Josiah, which killed him in the fall of 2021. (RoR 230, DO 11020) She believes it was in retaliation for some of the information she has revealed about the dark and evil interior of the Luciferian System, specifically the location where a particular ritual was going to be held. Jessie was born into the masonic System, and her birth certificate even reflects this fact. It is different than most of ours as it contains the masonic seal in the upper right-hand corner. (SW 06)

The Grand Masonic Lodges in places like Madison, Wisconsin and Chicago, Illinois have Jessie's name in their records, and there are a few in Germany as well that are responsible for keeping track of peoples' names who are in the Illuminati. The books are guarded, but there are many names of people who are major players in politics whose names will be in those books. Jessie intimates that names like Michael Avenetti, Mitt Romney, Barack Obama, and Bruce Ohr might be found in those Masonic ledgers. The Masonic Supreme Illustrious Leaders are also the High Priests and Priestesses in their region who work for the Illuminati. (SW 06, ARA 002) The top individuals of the Masonic lodges are high-ranking Luciferians in the Illuminati, according to both Jessie and Cheryl.

Level 32 is the final level of masonry that can be achieved without human sacrifice being required. Level 33 Masons have achieved that rank by sacrificing a child. (ARA 050)

Mormons

The LDS church (Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-Day Saints) is also an infiltrated institution. This assertion has angered many LDS members, who are good people. Again, I want to remind you that being listed in this section is not a condemnation of the members of this church or any other infiltrated church or organization. It is by design that the Luciferians that infiltrate an organization do so secretly, and do not let the average member know that they are there, or that they are using their facilities for nefarious purposes.

Unlike the Catholic church, where we are not sure of the origins or time frame of the Luciferian infiltration, the origins of the LDS church are clearer, and the connections with the occult are found in the very beginnings of the church's founding. Joseph Smith, the founder of the group, saw an angel named Moroni, found gold tablets, and established the LDS church based on his spiritual experiences, or so the story goes. Joseph Smith was also a Freemason, and the 'angel' Moroni has been described by some as a demon or fallen angel, not a good angel. Cisco calls Moroni a "ruling demon."(FS 03) There are a number of individuals who stress how important it is to 'test' the spirits, as Lucifer and his demons can take on the appearance of angels of light. (GP03, ARA 031, FS04) Asking them if they are a servant of God and Jesus Christ and then watching or listening to their response is one way to test a spiritual entity's loyalties, whether they come to you in a dream, a vision or a nightmare…if they are a negative spirit their cover will dissolve and you will see them for what they are, and if they are not they will declare their loyalty to God. I haven't tried this myself, and I suspect that Joseph Smith didn't either. If he had, the LDS church might not exist today in its present form.

Terry Chateau asserts that the LDS church is mired in Freemasonry. In addition to Joseph Smith being a

Freemason, so were the first five presidents of the church. In fact, so many of the founders and early church leaders were Freemasons, it prompted an entire book by Terry Chateau titled *The Mormon Church and Freemasonry.* He says in that book that "Mormonism and Freemasonry are so intimately interwoven and interrelated that the two can never be dissociated." Joseph Smith's father, Joseph Smith Sr., and Joseph's 3 brothers Hyrum, Samuel and William were also Freemasons. The second church president Brigham Young, 3rd church president John Taylor, and 4th and 5th church presidents Wilford Woodruff and Lorenzo Snow were all Freemasons, as well. Chateau says, "practically every member of the hierarchy was or became a Mason shortly after the Prophet (Joseph Smith) was raised to the degree of Master Mason." (TC 01) Joseph must have been something of a Masonic prodigy, because he received his Masonic first degree on March 15, 1842, and exactly one day later blasted straight through the second degree and was awarded the third degree of Master Mason. (ZZ 17)

Since the inception of the LDS church in about 1830 there has been a rough relationship between the Masonic organization and the LDS Church. Their association has been at times close, and at other times very distant. It's suggested by some that the public split that the two institutions had early in church history just before the group that founded the church moved to Utah might have been for show. It certainly wasn't the last of the interest of the church in being associated with the Masons, as after the move to Utah Brigham Young "contacted the chiefs of Freemasonry in England and proposed that Mormonism be granted a public charter to become its own Masonic Rite. The hierarchy told him no." (FS 02)

There was a stretch of time where the church members were (officially) prevented from being members of a Masonic Lodge. This ended in 1984, when the Grand Lodge of Utah officially allowed Mormons to be Masons once again. (TC 01) Whether Mormons that become Masons do so at the lower-ranking "club membership" levels, or whether they climb in the ranks to become Lucifer-worshipping Masons is not known by this author. I can only guess that some do climb, and some do not, based on the insider information coming from the escaped Brotherhood Illuminati members who have outed some of the sinister connections between the LDS church and what they do for the Illuminati.

In *Bloodlines of the Illuminati*, Fritz Springmeier discusses the ancestral connections between Mormons and the 13 Illuminati bloodlines. According to his research, all of the top Mormon leadership are descendants of the Merovingians, one of the most important of the Illuminati families. Interestingly, the bee symbol used ubiquitously by the Mormon church is also the family symbol of the Merovingian family (as well as being a masonic symbol). Fritz asserts that the church's 2nd president Brigham Young might also have Collins and Wheeler bloodline ties, as well, although those, at the time of writing the book had not been firmly established. (FS 02) One descendant of Joseph Smith Jr. told Fritz that "her family is indeed a Satanic bloodline," and a different source told Fritz that a breakout group of the Satanic Council, the Council of 13, ran instructions to the Mormon First Presidency, and that he/she was the one who was the actual person couriering the instructions. (FS 02)

Fritz also asserts that “Mormonism is closer to Satanism than it is to Christianity”, citing sealing rituals as one piece of evidence for this. “One of the most important things in Satanism is sealing. Everything is sealed.” Sealing is rarely talked about in any other religious context, but when reading about Mormonism, “one begins hearing about sealing again.” “Mormon men and women are sealed to each other in the Mormon Temple marriages. The early Mormons were sealed to many spouses. The Mormon sealing is very similar to what is done in witchcraft called hand fasting, and it is also similar to marriage sealing in Satanism.” Fritz also says that Joseph Smith’s family practiced witchcraft, which is how they knew about sealing, and is likely the reason it was brought into the church. The book of Mormon uses the word sealed or seal more than 20 times, and “the Mormon scholar D. Michael Quinn writes that ‘The Book of Mormon’s use of the word ‘sealed’ also suggested a magic context.”

Certain rites/rituals/oaths of the Mormon church through the years have closely resembled parts of Masonic ceremonies. Rituals done in the Mormon Temple aren’t supposed to be discussed outside of the temple, but two young ex-Mormons on YouTube have, which is why I found this information available online. They speak of four priesthoods within the LDS church, two Aaronic (lineage of Aaron) priesthoods and two Melchizedek priesthoods, and within the inner temple ceremonies these have tokens, hand symbols, and oaths that go along with them. Luciferians also have Melchizedek priests, and tokens, and the Masons have the hand symbols and oaths. It’s as if both the Luciferian religion and the Masonic fraternity were mixed-and-matched to form Mormon rituals.

Breaking the covenant of either priesthood comes with penalties, and one penalty of the Aaronic priesthood is that "your throat be cut from ear to ear and your tongue be torn out by its roots mind you this is the penalty if you reveal any of these things." Interestingly, the oath taken by a first-degree mason is, "Binding myself under no less a penalty than that of having my throat cut across, my tongue torn out by its roots, and buried in the rough sands of the sea at low-water mark, where the tide ebbs and flows twice in twenty four hours, should I ever knowingly or willingly violate this my solemn oath and obligation as an Entered Apprentice Mason." Mighty similar oaths, if you ask me. It goes further, however. Another penalty of the Aaronic priesthood in the Mormon church is "your breasts be torn open your heart and vitals be torn out and give it to the birds and the beasts of the field." The oath of a second-degree Mason is similar, saying "Binding myself under no less a penalty than that of having my left breast torn open, my heart plucked out, and given as prey to the wild beasts of the field and the fowls of the air as prey." (JM 01, ZZ 12) Again—almost an identical sentiment to those two oaths.

Mormon temples have also been built on top of programming facilities, such as the Lake Oswego Mormon Temple in Portland, Oregon and the temple in the heart of Salt Lake City, Utah. Yes, "Mormon hierarchy are allowed to create slaves," although their programming is different than other divisions, like the Jesuits. The Illuminati still assume top-level control, over-and-above the Mormon-level programs by overlaying that Mormon programming with further mind-control programming. "Programmed Mormon children will think they have the "Spirit of Elijah" in them and will robotically sing their programming, “Follow the prophet, follow the prophet.” (FS 01, FS 03)

Merrill Osmond, father of Donny and Marie Osmond among other children, is part of the Illuminati, and two of his children, if not more, are both programmed slaves. Merrill has made money from “drugs, porn and white slavery.” (FS 01) Cathy O’Brien corroborates this, saying that Donny Osmond was “of the same MK Ultra genetic project” that she was also a part of, and her father encouraged her to listen to their music because it enhanced some of her programming. (CO 01)

Jessie has talked about the involvement of the LDS church in Luciferian activities as concentrated in their breeding and genetics programs. Utah has “one of the largest breeding facilities,” and underground genetics programs for The System, she says. The Luciferians want children with certain spiritual gifts or groups of genes, and they’ve tried to make part of the breeding program look like a religious preference/lifestyle under the umbrella of the LDS church. Jessie suggests that the polygamy aspect of the early Mormon church and now some offshoot factions of the church are a cover for some of their “top breeder men” who are “being given” multiple women by The System. (ARA 019)

Amish/Mennoite/Hutterite (Anabaptists)

One would think that an insulated religious group like the Amish would be spared from the infiltration of witchcraft, ritual abuse or the Illuminati, but that’s not the case. “Magic, astrology and new age healing have made solid inroads into the Old Order Amish.” (FS 04) Some Amish practice the art of bone-setting, and some of the bone setters of the Amish practice folk witchcraft. Fritz Springmeier was witness to this personally as a former Amish man (FS 01)

After the anabaptists moved away from European persecution and settled in Pennsylvania, they inadvertently landed right next to Rosicrucian settlements. The Rosicrucians didn't last as a cohort in that area, and when they dissolved, they joined the Mennonites and brought with them their hermetic magic. (FS 03) The Rosicrucians are an offshoot of Freemasonry. In order to become a Rosicrucian, you must first go through the first 3 "base degrees" of Masonry, and then you can go on to further specialties in different "orders". (ARA 020) The "Order of the Rosy Cross" or is one formal name for the specialized training group that a level 3 Master Mason "graduate" could choose to join if they wanted to become a Rosicrucian. (RoR 090) So essentially, members of the occult merged with the Anabaptist Mennonites, and brought their occult magic practices with them.

Russ Dizdar, a man who dedicated his life to rescuing people from pedophilia, ritual abuse, occult and Illuminati abuse situations, reported that the Amish not only have witches and witchcraft but that they are also engaged in ritual abuse, including Satanic Ritual Abuse. He also notes that conservative Mennonites have historical problems with generational incest. (RD 01) All of these are adjunct to the Illuminati proper, but still are occult or witchcraft-linked issues, and could be side-effects of the Illuminati in the community.

The Illuminati proper has infiltrated the Mennonite Churches, and the Jesuits have had spies placed within the Amish for a long time, with the intention of destroying the Amish church. Some Nazi's that were brought to the United States under Project Paperclip after WW II were hidden in Amish communities (as well as being hidden in the Catholic Church as priests, and in secret government research programs as scientists) (ARA 024). Intelligence agencies run by the Illuminati have inserted programmed assassins into the Amish culture also, which provides an excellent front for them because who would suspect a trained assassin to be a quiet and unassuming Amish boy? (FS 03) It reminds me of the TV show "Amish Mafia," which many people blew off as ridiculous, but which seems more plausible in the light of this information. Television and movies seem to provide more truth about reality than the media does these days, and given that the media is Illuminati owned-and-operated it's no wonder.

Remarkably, Springmeier also says that the Illuminati Nazi's also sent people to upstate New York, and they are still there, operating a cult that was initially dedicated to helping Hitler run the USA when Germany won WW II, but when that didn't happen they switched their objective to assisting in hiding Hitlers bloodline, his hidden offspring, among the Amish. (FS 03)

Some Amish women sell their children to the Illuminati, especially when they are having twins. They would keep one of the children, and the other would go to The System. Sometimes, the Illuminati will place their own children within the Amish communities, The Amish do not use birth certificates, so as with children born in breeder programs, the babies that the Illuminati procures from them are below the radar. Some Illuminati ??

Education

There is no other natural enemy for the Illuminati save the Christian church, "which opposes all that they do." (SV 39) No matter what branch or division of Christianity, the Illuminati want it subverted, and that includes Christian schools. Svali was a teacher at a Christian School by day, and an occult trainer by night. She describes herself as the "average American housewife" in appearance to others. (SV 02) She notes that in one major metropolitan city there were Illuminati members working as a psychologist, Army Colonel, Navy Commander, journalist, nurse, doctor, and a principal of a Christian school. You couldn't have picked them out from among the non-Illuminati of the city. (SV 13)

Many parents believe that they are protecting their children by taking them out of public schools and enrolling them in private school, but in private schools, and some Christian private schools there is human trafficking and abuse occurring, says Jessie. (DO 10701, DO 10617) She believes that the Illuminati "are watching your children in schools. It doesn't matter if it's a private school, a Christian school (or) a government school," she thinks that all of the school Systems work together. (ARA 13)

Even universities, some Ivy-league Universities and Christian universities like Oral Roberts University are "training centers." (ARA 026) Cisco outed Oral Roberts U. as having a programming center beneath it. (FS 01) Cisco and Fritz also say that the "Jesuit schools throughout the United States are used for abuse and programming." (FS 03)

Jessie says that the Illuminati narrative that they have pushed over time through the media is that there are "trusted sources" for information, but that in reality, those trusted sources are Illuminati-controlled, and they are narrative centers where certain information is favored, and other information is suppressed. We, as people consuming controlled "news" have come to believe that these sources are giving us the correct information. She names Harvard, Princeton, and Stanford Universities as well as Johns Hopkins University Medical Center as some of the "trusted sources" that produce Illuminati-based narratives for public consumption. (ARA 009) Jessie also notes that "a lot" of University Professors are participants in the Bilderberg meetings, which is a breakout of the Satanic Council. (ARA 021) Fritz and Cisco concur, naming many Illuminati professors in their books teaching in a wide variety of Universities.

Public Servants & the Legal System

"Luciferians at the present time have control over the authorities." (KB 03 pg 79)

It has become apparent in the legal System of the United States of America that there is a two-tier justice System at work, and while most attribute that to a left/right political paradigm, I think that it's likely that it's more a Luciferian/non-Luciferian split. It's no secret that George Soros' foundations have put a lot of money into the District Attorney political races, or that political judgeship appointees have become more polarized in the past, seemingly, again on that left-right spectrum split. The hysteria over both the Brett Kavanaugh and Amy Coney

Barrett supreme court justice hearings were a bit of political theater but the real likelihood is that the nominees that get the hardest pushback are the non-Luciferians. Kavanaugh got the full brunt of public displeasure, and Coney Barrett did not. Guess who is the known Luciferian?

Amy Vivian Coney Barrett, Supreme Court Justice, was witnessed by Jessie at about age 10 (born in 1972, training occurred in 1982-3) training in the underground city, Emerald City, which is beneath the Pentagon in Virginia. Amy was training to be a Sister of Light--a high-level witch--in the Luciferian Brotherhood religious System. Jessie also witnessed another Sister of Light Clarista Gingerich being trained in white magic by Pleiadians, a class of fallen angel that has a specialty of healing through song, vibration, resonance and light. Some people know Pleiadians as aliens, as in of the UFO variety, but Jessie insists that in her experience, they are demons; members of the group of angels that followed Lucifer after he was cast from heaven. (RoR 242) This alien/demon distinction is one that I have not personally reconciled, but there are people who have legitimate reasons to believe that either one or the other is correct.

Judges in California helped steal a boy child from his mother using illegal practices, along with Kamala Harris who was the Attorney General of California at the time, and John Kerry, who signed paperwork removing this child's citizenship and declaring him a citizen of no nation at all. This child had abilities similar to Jessie's to see, hear and feel in the spirit world, and the Luciferian System wanted him. It's not uncommon for people to have their children stolen and illegally adopted into Luciferian hierarchy families, and fairly rare for those children to ever be recovered. One individual who has received acclaim for rescuing children took large sums of money from 20 or more families who have lost their children into The System and he double-crossed them and took their money but never did recover any of the kids. (DO 10318, SW 06)

Jessie's proctor (the Queen Mother of Darkness) had a protector that was a police chief in a district around Chicago. Some of the other System's protectors are active duty military, in fact at least one ex-member of Seal Team 6 is a protector in The System.

One thing we do know, based on Jeanette Archer's childhood story is that many Judges in the UK are a part of the Luciferian Brotherhood System. She reports that after being ritually abused that they would take her to a location where multiple judges in their robes would sit, whose job it was to convince her that she wasn't to tell any authority figure what had happened to her. They made it clear to her that even if she did go to the authorities and that her information was fed into the legal System, that this System was full of Luciferian judges just like them who would stop any case of hers from getting her justice. Law enforcement/police were the individuals who drove Jeanette to these ritual abuse 'events', and she reports that on the way to the events they would stop and rape her, before they even got there. Between the cops and the Judges, she was more than convinced that for her, there was no recourse. Those individuals at the rituals in the Judges robes were actual Judges, employed in her area. Police, and Judges. To a small child, knowing that the public servants were all doing horrible things to you and threatening you. (JA 01)

In the early days of escaping the Illuminati, Cathy's friend Mark Phillips was threatened by police in Nashville Tennesse, who told him to "forget this woman (Cathy)" and her daughter, "before your health changes." They affirmed to him that Cathy's handler, Wayne Cox, could "fix" her and Cathy's daughter Kelly. Cathy interpreted the "health changes" as a death threat to Mark. This wasn't the only one, and they increased to include not only Mark but Cathy as well, "from every branch of law enforcement within the state of Tennessee." (CO 02)

Cathy's father also prostituted her to police officers when she was young. (CO 02) Cheryl Beck learned as she grew up that most of the police officers in her city were part of a pedophile ring, and some of them were also members of her father's Freemason lodge. (CB 04) Cheryl says "there was nobody to turn to, the police were involved, the lawyer was involved, my teachers were involved, (and) the school district was involved." (CS 10)

In the Netherlands, another hotbed of Luciferian infrastructure, The System is rigged from the get-go against survivor testimony. There's a layer of screening done there before a victim can even provide a police report, and many victims get stopped at that stage and their cases/stories never even make it in to the legal System. It's a heinous tactic almost unfathomable, and yet it really is the actual practice. (RoR 038)

The more judges, District Attorneys, Defense Attorneys that are working for the Luciferians, the more they can crush their opposition (us non-Luciferians and/or Christians) and suppress victim justice. Amy Coney Barrett is implicated as being involved. The murder of former Supreme Court Justice Antonin Scalia was reported as happening any number of which-ways by the (lying) press. An insider whistleblower said that Scalia was murdered by the child he'd raped one too many times. (DS 01)

The sheriff departments are the only independent law enforcement agencies in the country, beholden to the people who vote for them and the US Constitution only, but some districts are pushing to appoint sheriff's instead of electing them, citing that they can "choose the best and brightest" and not be behoden to the public's wishes. Appointments would be amenable to installing political favorites, beholden to public officials instead of the public, but this sort of arrangement would fit the Luciferian System, where fellow masonic brothers are beholden to one another, and nobody else. It would be a bad switch to appoint instead of elect sheriffs.

Museums and Art Galleries

Museums and art galleries can be used to traffic living humans or their remains. Luciferian artwork sometimes combines human cremains (ashes) in with the paint. Possessing the remains of a child, or their handprints, or fingerprints, means to a Luciferian that they get to feed off of, or pull energy from that person. That they spiritually own the land that individual walks on. They also launder money by selling art for inflated prices. (ARA 03, ARA 016, ARA 20, ARA 43) Museums were used when Jessie was young to parade children through so the Mothers of Darkness could pick and choose which ones would be hierarchy children chosen for a position in the Luciferian Brotherhood Illuminati machine, and which ones would feed the machine as expendable children. (ARA 04) One has to wonder if any of this is why Hunter Biden's artwork fetches such large amounts of money.

ISST-D

International Society for the Study of Trauma and Dissociation has been infiltrated by Luciferians who are trained therapists. Jessie discovered that some of these therapists-by-day were also the individuals that she witnessed running the underground Chicago breeder programs for The System. Infiltrating the trauma therapy community with therapists dedicated to keeping Luciferian crimes under wraps is a great strategy by The System. (GD 04) Fiona Barnett concurs with Jessie, having dedicated an entire section of her book *Eyes Wide Open* to dirty therapists, admonishing people choosing a therapist to be careful not to choose one that is a "network operative." "Most therapists are either perpetrators or being handled by perpetrators." (FB 01)

Having therapists able and willing to treat and help heal emotional wounds sustained by survivors of extreme abuse is critically important. Having the Brotherhood System set things up so that a giant percentage of therapists and other professionals that specialize in trauma are also their members is probably the epitome of infiltration. The Brotherhood breaks them, and then the Brotherhood prevents them from getting healed, thus keeping them in bondage to The System.

There are not many individuals who are named as both being part of The System and part of the therapy community, but Colin Ross, a very famous individual in the field of trauma and dissociation, seems to be a good candidate. He was part of military experiments Jessie was forced to do as a child along with other hierarchy children. (SW 08) Fiona also discusses Colin Ross at length in her book, saying that he is a Canadian therapist considered to be an expert in "ritual abuse, mind control and DID (Dissociative Identity Disorder)." (FB 01) Dr. Ross was also a former president of the ISST-D. (MJ 03)

Banks

The entire banking institution is one large upper-level Luciferian club. Ronald Bernard, a former banker, outed the institution's nefarious practices when he, himself, discovered that to 'move up' in the banking world he would be required to do child sacrifice first. In his own words, "my breaking point was the invitation to join the sacrifice of children." (RB 01)

❧

Chapter 14: Practices

"The Illuminati have developed secrecy to a fine art. They train their people in the art of secrecy from the time they are born. Most everything they do, is done orally. They are trained not to write rituals and other things down. There is very little paper trail left by the Illuminati. The creation of slaves with photographic memories facilitates this secrecy." -Springmeier & Wheeler

Marriage

"The Illuminati believe in arranged marriages, and do NOT allow their members to marry a nonmember. If someone says their spouse isn't in it, they (either) aren't Illuminati, or they are in denial. This was an unbreakable policy. My marriage was arranged by the local leadership council to another ranking member. I didn't want to marry him, because I didn't love him, and I will never forget what I was told by Athena, my mentor at the time (she held the second position on the council): 'That's for the best, then, because he can never hurt you or control you.' Or, my mother's timeless advice given when I was 12 years old: 'Never fu— someone lower than you. They will drag you down. Always choose someone higher than yourself." Svali. (SV 27)

Jessie adds that sometimes the proctors arrange the marriages, not the parents. The proctors keep track of each individual's genetics and put together two genetically beneficial individuals. (ARA 08) Jessie's own parents' marriage was manipulated, but they didn't find this out until later, it was done in a very subtle manner. (DO 00529) Bill and Hillary Clinton were an arranged marriage (ARA 25), and Princess Diana had an arranged marriage to Charles (ARA 22). Svali claims that she knew no one in the Illuminati that didn't have an arranged marriage. (SV 02)

The Muslim Brotherhood tends to keep their genetic lines within their own group, and that might be part of the reason why polygamous marriages and child brides occur there. Genetics and breeding are a focus with this subset of the Illuminati. (ARA 11) In case you're surprised that the Muslim faith is attached to this Illuminati Brotherhood, Jessie isn't the only whistleblower to out a subset of Muslims as an insider Illuminati group. Kerth Barker, who is also an escapee of the Illuminati and has written many books on the subject, asserts that disgruntled high-level whistleblowers have told him that the invisible top-level individuals who run the whole thing are headquartered in Medina, Saudi Arabia. (KB 02)

On the flip side, Fritz Springmeier, in his book Bloodlines of the Illuminati, talks about how disreputable Illuminists such as Joseph Kennedy (John F Kennedy's father) married into the Fitzgerald family, to gain respectability. he notes, "This is a common Illuminati tactic. It seems many of the Illuminati men, look for a wife who will gain them respectability. Often wives like this are not even brought into the Illuminati activities, so that they can be the best cover possible." (FS 2) So, tactics and practices regarding marriage seem different at different levels of the Illuminati, but all are different from modern, standard American marriage practice of finding someone yourself that you are compatible with and marrying for love.

Homosexuality

"There is a high correlation between homosexuality and the occult", writes Fritz Springmeier in his book Bloodlines of the Illuminati. (FS 02, pg. 177) He also notes that many religions and 'magical practices' throughout the world also have links to homosexuality. (FS 02, pg. 210) This is exemplified in an article on Satanists in America states that more than half are 'LGBTQ' (non-heterosexual). (LG 01) But why, then, arrange marriages for their members, if they are homosexual? Svali explains that their 'night personas' i.e. their Illuminati ritual personas are homosexual, while their cover lives are heterosexual. (SV 38)

Jessie reveals one reason that homosexuality might be more likely in the occult is because when witches and warlocks are asking for favors, or powers, or something to be given to them by a demon, the demon will always extract a price for that favor in return. Many times what is asked by the demon of the human is homosexual or a perverse form of sexuality, such as bestiality. This type of practice is linked to Sex Magick. (GD 03) Fiona Barnett says that in her experience, rituals "were both homosexual and heterosexual." (FB 01)

Additionally, there are quota Systems in the Illuminati that require members to do increasingly worse, more damaging or more immoral/sinful acts throughout their ‘career’ in the Illuminati Brotherhood System, ramping up from rather mild to sick and twisted. An example of increasingly depraved levels of sexual sin would range from the mild level of seduction, all the way to pedophilia, with immorality, homosexuality, rape and bestiality as the ‘steps’ in-between them from low to high perversion. (CF 01) Jessie distinguishes this kind of progressively increasing quota System to be something that a celebrity coming in to the Brotherhood from outside of The System would do (in other words, not born in to a family of members but choosing to join from the outside) versus those of a high-level hierarchy child who would have to participate in whatever they told her to do from the young ages they begin training with no easing-in of the requirements. (RR 32)

You would expect, then, that if they were born in to the Brotherhood, or they had progressed to a high level, the more they would have progressed through the steps of those sins, should that particular type of sexual sin be the one they chose for their quotas, naturally. And we can see the evidence that this is indeed the case by scanning the reports of victims of high-level Illuminati perpetrators, and evidence in the news. Cathy O’Brien notes that “Bill Clinton is bisexual, leaning far more towards the homosexual end, as is his wife. (CO 04) Fritz Springmeier notes that “during the inauguration week (of Bill Clinton), witches, homosexual witches gathered at the white house for various celebrations to perform, to hold rituals and other events.” (FS 02) Jessie notes that there are lots of hidden royal homosexual relationships. (ARA 10) In a deposition by Lin Wood, the man being interviewed notes that Mike Pence had a lot of homosexual relationships with men 20 years and more his junior, as well as some minors. Rod Rosenstein and Chief Supreme Court Justice John Roberts were also named as having homosexual relationships. (ZZ 01) During the Reagan/Bush administration a large number of top administration individuals were caught retaining the services of a homosexual prostitution ring, and in the article an entire group of staffers were described as a "nest", and one high-level client even had such clout he arranged an after midnight tour of the white house… which included the services of 2 male prostitutes. (ZZ 02) In the United Nations, the higher-ups "have been exposed as practicing the most obscene homosexual and child pornography rituals imaginable. (ZZ 03) Svali pointedly says, "So many of the leadership of the Illuminati are blatantly pedophilic and homosexual."

Fiona Barnett notes in her book *Eyes Wide Open* that "Homosexuals rise through military ranks much faster," and that the majority of men who were sexually assaulted in the military were raped by same sex perpetrators. She says that "the LBG demographic is the major source of child and adult rapists in the (Australian) military. (FB 01)

Another component as to why the normalization of homosexuality is being promoted to society is because the Anti-Christ will be homosexual, and they want him to be not just accepted, but embraced as a god-man. (FS 03, page 475) Springmeier states, "The campaign for the acceptance of homosexuality is just one part of this marketing effort."

And the last component of the homosexuality connection to the occult is that it is one side-effect of child programming by the occult. They bond the child extremely tightly to the mother, which they have noted promotes latent homosexuality. They then manage this impulse, possibly for use to their own benefit. (FS 04)

Homosexuality has a number of benefits for Satan, one of which is that he wants to destroy the image of a human as who we are in relation to God, and Cisco Wheeler notes that "the easiest way to do that is to destroy the seed line" of a human, and this can be accomplished with the curses that accompany homosexual practices. (CW 08) Gina Phillips notes that homosexuality is a sin that carries with it oppression of 10 subsequent generations. (GP 03) Since the Illuminati have daytime heterosexual marriages and not monogamous same sex marriage, many of them yes, do have biological children.

And lastly on this subject, the Church of Satan has engaged in an activity called "Pink Mass," the purpose of which is to turn the spirit of a dead person gay. (LG 02) It makes me wonder if this church is a spoof or a parody account, like a Titania McGrath of the Illuminati, because it just seems extremely odd.

Breeder Programs

Svali states that breeders "are often chosen from childhood to have and breed children. They may be chosen according to bloodlines, or given in arranged marriages or cult alliances to elevate the children. A parent will often sell the services of a child as a breeder to the local cult leader in return for favors or status. These children are rarely used as a sacrifice, usually they are given to others in the cult to adopt or raise, but the breeder is told that any child born to her was sacrificed, to prevent her looking for the child." (SV 27)

The breeder women that Svali oversaw before escaping the Illuminati were treated in such unimaginably horrific ways that I cannot repeat them here because the horror of it borders on giving me daymares. Suffice it to say that she reports the breeder women ate a mush-textured food out of dog bowls on the floor, lapping up the contents because there was... no other way available for them to feed themselves. (SV 43)

Children produced by breeder programs are sold for sex, used for organ harvesting, cannibalization, and then their remains are cremated, pressed into diamonds or sold to food companies to be added to "natural flavorings." When Jessie was in training in the early 1980's, she saw children brought into breeder programs as young as age 10 and kept there until about age 20. They were impregnated during rituals, so that they would give birth in time for upcoming rituals. (SW 03, ARA 022)

One of the purposes of the breeder programs is to produce children with certain spiritual gifts, and the Brotherhood is especially looking for children with these 3 spiritual gifts: prophecy, intercessor and spiritual warrior.

Jessie asserts that Anderson Cooper's new baby would have been a hierarchy child adopted from a breeder program, and the child would have been chosen for him because it had the right spiritual gifts or certain elemental magic that would suit the family's elemental magic circle. (ARA 20)

During the early days of Covid lockdown when New York City set up medical tents in Central Park it is thought that the military might have been using that situation as cover to bring up children from the breeder programs in the tunnels deep under the city. This wasn't the only deep underground location where children were being rescued, and there were reports of up to 5 generations of breeder lines in the tunnels, meaning anywhere from birth to age 40. One of the reasons that we've seen no media evidence of children coming up from underground tunnels is because when Satan or his demons set aside a human for sacrifice, "they want that person dead," according to Jessie. After a rescue, "they're gonna hunt down and track those kids so they can still use them for ritual, and they will kill anybody who's… working to rescue those kids." (ARA 022)

When Jessie was a child she was privy to the breeder program in the extensive underground locations beneath Chicago, Illinois. (MJ 2) There is an Illuminati training center that connects with an underground military base, and there is a breeder program that works in conjunction with both. (ARA 37) In this particular breeder program under Chicago, Catholic or Jesuit priests would be brought in "from different areas around the United States," chosen to do rituals during which they would rape multiple breeder girls. Jessie believes that these particular priests were chosen by the Illuminati for their genetics. Masonic Lodges were the other locations where Jessie witnessed rituals during which the rape of breeder girls occurred. (ARA 031)

Women in the breeder programs were often “born without a birth certificate, never got one, nobody ever documented their existence,” and for whom “their sole purpose is to continuously have children until they die, and nobody knows they’re even there.” The babies have no birth certificates, and no death certificates. They’re complete unknowns. (ARA 01)

Even Jessie’s Mom was used “at least once” in the breeder program. (GD 02)

Grooming/Infant abuse

An Illuminati whistleblower that has only recently come out with her story, Cali Shae Bergandi, describes watching women in her family ‘finger’ infants during diaper changes, to get them accustomed to being sexually abused and not reacting badly to it. Infant grooming for subsequent early sexual experiences is common practice in the Illuminati. (CSB 01)

In Jessie’s family they used enemas to get infants prepared for anal sex. They are told by The System that “good parents” do that for their kids on a regular basis. They present it as a normal, healthy practice, and moreover, if you don’t do it, you’re not a good parent. (RoR 019, RR 01)

Cisco Wheeler also notes that in order to prevent reconstructive surgery for tearing endured in infants the vagina and anus are stretched using a balloon which is blown up to enlarge the holes to make those areas available for sexual penetration. (CW 03)

Cross Dressing

Kerth Barker was sexually abused by the Illuminati as a child, and one of the things he was made to do frequently was dress as a girl. They called him Kathy. He broke free and was deprogrammed (KB High Adept, page 6) but as a boy was “forced into child prostitution by Satanists.” (page 9) and hated being dressed like a girl and wasn’t “sure why Satanic pedophiles were turned on by this.” (page 11) One trip, he was made to first put on a jock strap, a trainer bra and a petticoat. “Over that, she had me put on a floral dress which was very colorful.... It had white lace around the neck and it went down over my knees. I put on white socks with ruffled tops.. (and) shiny black patent leather slippers with ribbons... (and) horn-rimmed glasses with little diamonds in the sides,” (page 12) along with a curly blonde wig, makeup, and a pink purse. “In a soft, feminine voice, I said, “I love this dress on me” and his handler replied, “don’t you look just ravishing my dear girly boy, you look good enough to eat.” (page 13)

Jessie’s experience with the Tier 1 elite of The System dressing their hierarchy children up in the opposite sex’s clothing is that for the majority of the members, it’s not something they do of their own free will, it’s something they’re told they have to do. “Good parents let their children choose what gender they want to be,” while simultaneously giving the child only a choice of the opposite sex’s clothing or toys. For example, giving a boy child two choices, either a blue dress or a pink dress. We can see cross-dressing in the children of many Hollywood celebrities, for example Charlize Theron’s son, or Angelina Jolie’s daughter, and the internet is ripe with dozens of other examples. (RR 01) Both Charlize Theron and Angelina Jolie are surmised but not firmly identified members of the Illuminati. (ARA 011, MM 01)

A number of Hollywood celebrities dress their children in the typical dress of the opposite biological sex; this has been seen in Charlize Theron's children, as well as others. Jessie says that this is a hallmark of Baphomet worship, where The System is trying to erase a distinct biological sex identity and replace it with a neutral sense of self, where these children "don't have a distinct identity of (their) own.' (ARA 026)

Adoption

There are a number of facets and underlying motivations behind the common practice of adoption within the Illuminati.

Adoption is described as a common practice in elite circles. Most adoptions by elite hierarchy families are secret, and the adoption is done to hide their true parternity/ ancestry. (FS 2, pg. 237) Only some of the true ancestry of public figures adopted into Illuminati families is actually known. Adolph Hitler had hidden Rothschild blood, and Bill Clinton was adopted but his birth parentage is unknown. (FS 2 pg. 36)

Among royalty, secret homosexual relationships where one of the couple is presented as female are very common according to Jessie, and they use the excuse of a common incompatible Rh- factor in royals as an excuse to adopt. (ARA 010)

Adopted children can originate from breeder programs, or other hierarchy families, Child Protective Services/foster care schemes, or even from hospitals that inject newborns with a substance that makes them look dead, they are marked as stillborn on the official records, and then they are medically revived and adopted to high-level Illuminati. (ARA 001, ARA 004, ARA 014, ARA 022, SV 12)

Sometimes, adopted children who are being programmed are told they are secretly the child of royal parentage, and are "special" because of that, when they are actually not born of royalty, and the ruse is used to create a tighter bond between the child and the group they are in programming with. Svali was herself a victim of this ruse as a child. (SV 03)

Rituals

Because the upper levels of the Illuminati Brotherhood are witches and warlocks, they engage in rituals, which seem to in part take place to please Satan, as if they spoil the ritual or do anything wrong during a ritual, they could be killed for making that mistake. The way Jessie puts it is, "Satan and the demons are very perfectionistic, it's a way that they control and keep their control and get the best results in obedience." (MJ 02 & RoR 015)

There are rituals that take place around Halloween, Christmas and the Spring Equinox (Easter time), that each high ranking person in The System is required to attend. Aside from those mandatory rituals, there are voluntary ritual throughout the year that they can choose to attend, or not.

Some of the rituals have names like “Moonchild” or “Satanic Baptism” or “First Blasphemy/12-year-old ritual”. The first ritual I heard about was the 12-year-old ritual, which is for elite hierarchy boys when they “graduate” from their childhood magic circle to begin to take part in their adult Brotherhood cohort/magic circle. It is also the first ritual where they willingly take the life of another individual, and from all accounts of it, it’s a bit of a wild bloodbath. (RoR 080)

Jessie tells of one 12-year-old ritual she watched as a young child, and the boy going through it was a Rothschild. She hinted at which boy it was, but never explicitly named him. I’ve tried to figure out which Rothschild boy this ritual was for, and the best I’ve been able to figure it was for Nathaniel Rothschild, but don’t quote me on that, it’s inference from hints and is not in any way confirmed.

The first part of the ritual is a hunt, not a hunt to kill but a kind of titillation scene, where there are girls there who “seduce the boys and create this foreplay situation where they’re excited but they don’t get to do anything.” (ARA 003) The final part of the ritual was in a boat cleaning building on the Vanderbilt Estate in South Carolina. This particular location is presented to the public as an indoor swimming pool, but either by design or chance, it’s never been correctly identified or the true nature of its purpose revealed to the public.

The deep, tiled boat cleaning area looks like the deep end of a swimming pool, and it fills almost the entire room except for an upper catwalk along two sides in an L shape. The third side is flat wall and the fourth side has the slanted portion of the tiled interior of the pool-like structure, which angles down to the deep end. Along one wall of the catwalk is a short ladder, and along the remainder of the catwalk are ropes, hanging from where people's feet would be, down into the tiled area. They are tied in what looks like a large circular noose formation. These are to hang the expendable children from. "The rope would be under their armpits holding them up, and then they'd have their hands tied behind their back, and their feet tied so they couldn't go anywhere." These children won't survive this ritual.

The 12-year-old boy also gets hung from a rope, and after being hung, the 12-year-old boy is raped, every which way you can imagine, by the members of the magic circle that will be his adult group affiliates. These individuals will be the mentors to this child for the rest of his life, and will guide him through his career and support him for life. (ARA 003) This particular ritual, the individuals present as part of the adult core group included Hillary Rodham Clinton and John Brennan. Another individual perpetrator present was Marilou Schroeder Whitney, a relative of the Vanderbilt clan.

These adult individuals tell this child that he has to "renounce God and enter (his) position in the Brotherhood." The renunciation of God is considered the "First Blasphemy."

At that point the child is released, high on adrenochrome, which according to Jessie produces a psychosis so strong that you desire to "rip people's faces off" or shred them with your hands and teeth. Jessie notes that when she had adrenochrome tested on her, when she was coming off of the drug she was put into a straitjacket and locked in a cupboard so she wouldn't hurt anyone. (GD 03, ARA 042, ARA 034)

He then begins his first murder by cannibalizing one of the hung children, and then the others who are in the deep part of the tiled pool-like area join him, and it becomes one giant bloodbath. (ARA 003)

4 Illuminati Grand High Priests presided over the ritual, including the late Reverend Monsignor Thomas C Brady, and Cardinal Timothy Michael Dolan. Both have day jobs in the Catholic Church, and are Luciferians on the side.

After the rape of the 12-year-old child, one of the things that child does is willingly take his first life, which is one of the children either hung on the 2 sides of the boat cleaning area or one of the 4 down in the bottom of the area. It literally looks like an empty pool with tiled sides and bottom, so it's hard not to refer to it as a swimming pool. By the end of the ritual, they were slipping and sliding around in blood and human remains, because the initiated child eventually will kill all of the expendable children by the end of the ritual.

Jessie, her proctor, Lou (her protector-in-training) and a few others watched this scene from the catwalk area. But there were more in attendance before the ritual than actually were witness to it. Corey Feldman and Corey Haim, Hollywood child-stars were there, as was Christina Applegate of TV's Married with Children fame, Carter Vanderbilt (son of Gloria Vanderbilt), Senator Robert Byrd, Ewan McGregor and Jimmy Saville were also named as being present at the festivities before the actual ritual.

So this 12-year-old First Blasphemy ritual is one kind of ritual, but there are many others. Satanic baptisms (ARA 033), Satanic Blood Marriages (ARA 040), the Sword of Judgment ritual (ARA 043) and many others are part of the repertoire.

Cisco and Fritz note that all rituals are memorized. There will be no incriminating books or objects to find in people's houses that will give them away as secret Luciferians. (FS 02) Jessie says that because she was out of school nearly all the time to train for her position in The System, and because that the rituals were often in a language other than English, she had a hard time reading when she went back to school. She'd never learned the fundamentals of sounding out words or sentence structure. Dr. Seuss books she couldn't read, but Charles Dickens she could, because some of the spells and magic she had "learned was out of Charles Dickens' books." (ARA 043)

Posture

Once a ritual like the 12-year-old ritual is finished, the boy and the participants go back to their cover lives, and act like none of it ever happened. (ARA 005) The System terms this "posture" and it's a combination of physical stature, emotional control, and a whole lot of acting, from what I can tell. All hierarchy children are trained in posture. (ARA 033) Some of it involves training from childhood to keep posture in their cover lives, such as attending church and being involved in the community. Nothing seems out of place, nothing seems abnormal, "everything looks Godly and perfect" because The System demands that their cover life is to look that way. (CS 005)

Jessie says that during rituals, the children were told where to stand, and "you basically didn't move, you didn't do anything, if you broke that posture there would be hell to pay." (ARA 002) There were times when Leo, her protector-in-training would deliberately fluff up her staticky hair right as they were going in to a ritual, and she couldn't move her hand to get it off of her face or out of her eyes and mouth, because that would have been a break in posture. (ARA 011) When Leo, Jessie's protector-in training, lost his parents and siblings in a horrific act of torture by The System, he wasn't allowed to show any emotion on the outside or even move while they forced him to watch. That's posture. (DO 00529)

Protect Your Brother at All Costs

At she ascended into the higher levels of freemasonry Jessie took oaths where she vowed to protect her brother at all costs. Her protector was never held accountable for what he did, he never had any consequences for the actions he took in The System, it was Jessie's job to make sure he was protected and his deeds covered-up. She says "it's pretty gruesome" if those vows are broken. Those vows come with the cost of their left eye, which is why so many celebrities and politicians walk around with a blackened left eye, like they got punched. They may have gotten punched, or perhaps they just went through the high-level ritual where they took an oath that says that if they ever tell on or fail to cover up your brother's crimes "that it comes at the cost of the left eye." Sometimes, she says that "demons will literally grab that eye" and the person might think they were actually going to rip the eye from its socket. Other times, there are chips implanted behind it, or they "do shots" of adrenochrome in that eye, all of which make it black. (ARA 002)

Code of Silence

Svali says that the code of silence is one reason that the cult (she calls the Illuminati a cult) has survived so long and why nobody talks is because it is ingrained into them from a very young age not to. After rituals, children are set up, and deliberately asked what they saw or heard during the ritual. When they tell, they are severely beaten or tortured, and whatever mind splits are created from this torture are programmed to never tell, and never even to remember what happened, as if they do, they will be killed. Children are told they will be hunted and shot, or tortured slowly, if they ever remember and tell. For many, this is enough to make them not remember, and if they do remember, never tell. (SV 14)

One of the first things Jessie was taught was the code of silence, although in her position she couldn't be killed, so instead they threatened to kill someone she loved. (AB 01) Despite this, she says she tried to tell everybody she could that her family killed babies, was in the occult—and rarely if ever did anybody listen. (RoR 197) As a federal whistleblower, she felt a tremendous amount of relief in being believed, finally, decades after her experiences as a child. (ARA 103) In October of 2021, she believes that her son Josiah was killed in an Illuminati hit ordered by someone on her father's side of the family. (DO 11020)

Blood Drinking

“Blood drinking does take place...(and) it is more widespread than you have been lead to believe, and... it is much better organized than you could probably imagine. (KB 03, pg 79) Kerth has written half a book devoted to the practices of cannibalism and blood drinking among Satanists and Luciferians (not all Luciferians are considered Satanists, and vice versa). He asserts that there are two main reasons that individuals drink blood, one being to acquire status or power in the occult, and the other to acquire stamina and physical strength, courtesy of a hormone released into the blood that causes this to happen. That hormone is called adrenochrome, and the blood containing adrenochrome is produced by torturing victims prior to harvesting their blood. (KB 03)

Both humans and animals can have adrenalized blood and consequently adrenalized meat, and it is possible that if you eat animal meat, you’ve become accustomed to eating adrenalized meat without even realizing it, as many animals are not killed humanely. (KB 03, pg 73) Part of the life work of Temple Grandin has been to design cattle operations that keep the animals calm and do not frighten them while they are en route to being killed prior to butchering, (TG 01) but not all animal slaughtering operations have this finely-tuned rather scientific approach, and some religious slaughtering practices do not have the flexibility for modernization.

For some, drinking blood is limited to initiation rituals. For example, high level Masons drink blood from a skull during their initiations. (KB 03, pg. 72) Some rituals don’t even require drinking the blood ‘straight-up’, but dilute it with wine before drinking. (KB 03, pg. 69) In some rituals, they use their own blood instead of blood from another (KB 03, pg. 65) Still other wealthy Luciferians don't actually consume the blood by mouth, but instead opt for regular blood transfusions from healthy young people whose blood types were a match. (KB 03, pg. 70)

Kerth separates blood drinkers into 3 categories, persuaders, sippers and harvesters. Persuaders convince others to donate small amounts of blood to them to drink, but sometimes small amounts turn into large amounts and it can be a difficult situation if refusing causes tension which escalates into violence. Sippers abduct victims and take small amounts of blood repeatedly. Although this keeps the victim alive temporarily, eventually they die and a new victim would need to be found. Stalkers abduct, torture and then harvest all the adrenalized blood from their victim. (KB 03, pg. 71)

Color Comms

Colors are important in the Illuminati, and most of the color significance seems to be related to communicating to others in the group who owns what and who runs what. Communication out in the open seems to be done in symbols, not words, and color makes up a big portion of that.

The basic 4 colors that seem to hold the most meaning are green, gold/yellow, blue and red. The structure of the Brotherhood System is arranged by what they call quadrants, or groupings of states or countries that roughly follow a geographic directional pattern of north, south, east and west. (ARA 002) The north quadrant is designated by green, the east by gold/yellow, the south by Red, and the west by Blue. The people that are assigned to operate in these quadrants could be called by a name that designates their quadrant, for example Jacob Rothschild is called the 'Blue Dragon' because he operates in the western quadrant, and that quadrant's designative color is blue. (ARA 010) The Belenoff's come from the Green Dragon family, because they are operationally based in the northern quadrant, and the north's color is green. (ARA 016, ARA 032)

Another symbol that the Illuminati uses to communicate status, position and title with one another are rings. Rings hold stones, and depending upon the stone's color and size, this could indicate both their status and position in The System. Gloria Vanderbilt used to wear a ring with a large yellow stone, indicating her position title of Grand High Priestess in the eastern quadrant. Large stone indicated that she was not just a High Priestess, who might wear a small yellow stone, but a grand high priestess. Rings that are thought to be indications of status and position have been spotted on Oprah Winfrey, Tom Hanks, Rachel Levine (the US Public Health Service Commissioned Corps), Qasem Soleimani, and others. The Mothers of Darkness wear not only the ring that signifies their quadrant, but another black ring as well. Jessie says that the black signifies a "stone of power." The color of the metal in the ring can also signify level, if they're a "head high priest or priestess that ring will be in gold or white gold," whereas the "lower level individuals will have it in silver." (RR 31)

These colors can also be used on city emblems, military logos, signage for companies, and a number of other things that the Brotherhood uses to signify ownership or rulership over. (ARA 31) It's something that is hard for most people to grasp, because we don't think of ourselves as rulers—but they do. We don't have parts of our life and our operations to hide behind and cover up because they are illegal and immoral—but they do. Or maybe they don't, but they certainly act like they do. So hidden communications are essential.

Pink represents abduction to the Illuminati, abduction of children, the homeless, or adults for the purposes of using them in rituals. Certain times each month are set aside as abduction times where they take people and then hold them in certain locations just prior to rituals. Jessie has noticed advertisements in magazines, special perfume releases, clothing lines, all over-emphasizing the color pink and being released just at that time of month that would be the start of ritual abduction. It's possible but not confirmed that the pink of Breast Cancer Awareness month, which is October, might even have been coordinated to coincide with Halloween, one of the biggest rituals of the year for Luciferians. (ARA 026)

Gina Phillips talks a lot about color as related to programming. Colors are tied extensively to the mind control triggers that are driven into people's brains as a result of highly sophisticated techniques used to create slaves for The System. Purple is one color that she has talked a lot about recently, as there is a program she calls the "Purple Rain Program," which is tied to an activation symbol that the pop star Prince uses as his name. Purple Rain is also one of the titles of his songs. Popular music is extensively—if not mostly—controlled by the Brotherhood System, and they use songs and artists to their advantage. Gina thinks that the activation of the Purple Rain program began when Hillary and Bill Clinton both wore purple at the concession speech to Donald Trump's presidential win. Later it was reinforced when the symbol for Prince's name was superimposed on the football stadium where the super bowl was held in Minneapolis. It was again reinforced by the purple carpet (instead of the red carpet) at the Emmy's, and the purple attire of many of the high-level women in the early 2021 inauguration ceremony of Joe Biden. (GP 01) Gina seems to go backwards from her client's 'activated' programs to ferret out the signs, symbols or colors that triggered the program's activation.

Gina also references black and white what she calls "base programming," which represents the duality of man, the good and bad selves. It can be symbolized by the black and white masonic checkerboard floor (GP 04, GP 05) Other kinds of programming can also have color components, but to go into those would require too much detail than I wish to afford here.

Quota System/Keeping Track of Quotas

Once born or lured into the Luciferian System, "Satan demands that you participate in evil and wickedness". Everybody is under the mandate, and the requirements are that you do whatever sin you are proscribed "every single day." Each of these quota sins must be a little worse than the last time. There is no honor System for these sins, either, "it has to be recorded or witnessed to probe that it happened. This is how they get a lot of blackmail on people." (RoR 019) The photo or video evidence of these sins is kept on large computer servers, and it can be used to silence people who try to fight back against The System. (SW 06)

Most of the time people are in an unconscious programmed mode when they perform these sins, during the night after they are summoned by The System, they go, do whatever evil they are required to do, and then “the next morning they won’t remember a thing about it.” (SW 06) The dissociation that the programming process produces is beneficial for The System. Imagine that you couldn’t remember doing anything evil, but there were photos or video of it produced every time you complained that you didn’t want to participate. Even if you weren’t dissociated, they could have drugged you and positioned you so that in reality, you didn’t do anything, it just looks like it in the photo. (ARA 023) You can’t prove you didn’t do it, but it would be a difficult situation to talk yourself out of. If you were a politician, for example, it could end your career to have blackmail like that surface in the public sphere. Jessie suggests that this is exactly how many elite get trapped in The System as pedophiles, they may just have been invited to a party, drugged, and have pictures taken of them that “make it look like they’re harming a child or young adult..(and) now the Illuminati has blackmail on them.” (RoR 019)

As a child born into The System, the quota would evolve more gradually. They would start with requiring the child to be mean to a classmate who is a Christian, and that would get ramped up to excluding them from your clique, or parties, then beginning to be verbally nasty, then spreading rumors like that the person sleeps around. Later, spells, incantations, groups of witches attacking that person and then sending demonic spirits to oppress them. Is that the end? No, it can get worse. Maybe then they go after that person's church or their job, or send things to make them sick, or try to get them into a car accident, put dead animals in their yard with curses on them, or literally go and surround their yard, drag them out of the house and kill them on the lawn. (MJ 02)

There are also humanitarian effort quotas, and Jessie notes that one of these was the "no child left behind" initiative (RoR 223) Luciferian president George W Bush said that the 2001 law that enacted it in the United States was the "cornerstone of my administration." Practically, the law penalized low-performing schools by allowing students to transfer out to higher-performing schools, or access remedial programs in the school they were in. (ZZ 07) Mostly, though, it just required a boatload of testing, which in the practical day-to-day efforts of most schools shifted the focus from teaching children to teaching to the test. Since teachers were evaluated by their students' progress, if they didn't drill the test questions, their students didn't do as well, and the teachers effectiveness was ranked low. Students stopped learning how to learn, and started learning how to take tests. So, it's no child left behind because every child was equally left behind.

Signatures

"All the perps have signatures." (Twitter 001)

I don't get the impression that this is so much a practice deliberately developed or imposed by The System, but more a development that occurs as a result of the preferences of the individuals as they pursue their ritual goals over time.

Jessie says that individuals in The System often develop what she calls a “signature kill”, in other words, they have a preferential ritual method of sacrificing their victim. In the one person’s signature kill method Jessie spoke of, she confirmed that a very famous movie found on a very famous laptop of Mr. A. Weiner was indeed the signature kill method of Hillary Clinton and that she had seen HRC kill in this manner “many times.” (ARA 007, SW 12, RoR 027)

Jessie had also seen children as young as age 7 raping and killing girls younger than themselves in sex magick, and that for some of them the method they begin using at this young age becomes their signature. For someone to do that at age 7 is rather shocking for most of us, but Jessie asserts that The System is looking for those boys “who are the best abusers” and that they “are applauded for that abuse,” being given rewards in proportion to their abuse, such that “the worse you are the more favor you get, the more you’re sought after, (and) the more you’re desired.” (ARA 013)

Some of those signatures also include signature knots that they use to tie up their victims, (Twitter 001) and signature torture methods. (GSR 01)

Ritual Names

One way that The System keeps its members hidden is by making them go by different names, ritual names, while they are meeting together. Jessie’s ritual name was ‘Sunshine’ and her protector-trainee Leo’s ritual name was ‘Moonlight’. (GSR 01) Svali worked with people who had ritual names (what she terms “cult name”) of Athena and Black Hand (SV 26) She also had a friend whose boss in The System had the cult name “Ashtoth”. He held a position in the military at the Pentagon (SV 06) Hillary Clinton’s ritual name was ‘Nightingale’ (RoR 081)

Ritual names are usually give at their first ritual/rite, usually at age 5. Jessie put her handprint and a symbol of her ritual name on the handprint wall to Moloch under the training center near St. Peter’s Church in Rockford, Illinois when she was about that age. (GD 02) They didn’t put their ritual name symbol directly next to their handprint so that the name couldn’t be directly connected to the individual. (RoR 015) Seven individuals were involved in the initiation ritual where she was given her ritual name, Michael Aquino being one of them, and his hands were on her head as well as her protector-trainee Leo as they were both given their ritual names. (MJ 1)

Ritual names provide anonymity, even within The System’s members. Jessie had trouble identifying people because she knew them by many different names, including fake names and ritual names. She had to see photos of them to identify them, because names were difficult and numerous. (ARA 022, GD 04) She even had multiple names, she says about 5 of them. (RoR 085)

One of the ways they recorded her name in the books of the Masonic Lodge near Neuschwanstein Castle in Germany (Neuschwanstein is the ‘home base’ more or less of the Mothers of Darkness) was as “Sunshine Child of the Golden Dawn.” The System also keeps people’s ritual names “in the Luciferian Satanic Libraries, where they keep everybody’s names.” Those libraries are at the Vatican. (RoR 085)

Bestiality

Bestiality seems to be a fairly big thing in the Illuminati. The Satanic Calendar published by the Open Scroll Blog indicates that there are many dates involving sexual activities with animals. The spring equinox in March, Summer Solstice in June, Halloween in October, and Winter solstice and Christmas Eve are all days that animals are included in the type of celebration, which are nearly all labeled as “orgies”. (ZZ 08)

At the lower levels, individuals often film their children pornographically, and often that includes scenes with the children engaged in sex with animals. Svali notes that this is commonplace, and Cathy O’Brien, Brice Taylor, Fiona Barnett, and Cali Shai Bergandi have reported either witnessing or experiencing it (BT 10, CB 01, CSB 01, SV 12) Cathy O’Brien’s father sold the bestiality porn film Bonnie and the Boxer he made of her to the local mafia, and she actually witnessed a local politician with a copy of that film under his arm. As she recalled, the dog in the film was bigger than she was. (CO 01, CO 02) Cali reports that it “was not uncommon to walk into the house and see your grandpa having sex with the dog on the floor.” (CSB 01)

Fiona Barnett witnessed bestiality being used in the cult members she was in association with “as a means of exerting power” by the perpetrators, versus being a sexual preference. (FB 01)

Jessie was witness to a number of different kinds of bestiality practices, mostly for ritual purposes, especially at Halloween. Goats would be unleashed on children who were tied up, and the goats would mount the children. She also witnessed a child sodomized by a gorilla. Most of these children did not live through these experiences. There tended to be a lot of blood and gore involved in the ritual bestiality. (ROR 100, ARA 009, ARA 015)

Animals are also trafficked to people in other countries who are interested in being the perpetrator upon the animal, especially chimpanzees and orangutans. (ARA 009)

Bestiality is also used in programming, (FS 01) and fancy gem-studded leather collars are fitted on the mind-controlled slaves for wolves and dogs to bite as they mount their victims. (FS03)

Child Training

Svali says it's called training in the facilities, but really it's just purposeful abuse. (SV 51)

Jessie began her training in Luciferianism and Freemasonry at age 4 (SFBIS 01) and her training went both during the day and half the night; Jessie got very little sleep as a child. (AB 01) She was rarely in school, although always marked present. There were many teachers who were members of The System and they would cover for the hierarchy children that were in training during the day (RoR 013) By age 10, she was fully trained and ready to take her position, even though typically, hierarchy children don't take their positions until age 30 (RoR 013, REF for age 30) When she did finally start going to school full-time in fifth grade, she got constant remarks from teachers passing her in the hallway about keeping posture and etiquette, she felt like there were eyes on her everywhere (ARA 043)

Jessie's training involved a wide variety of things. She trained in Black Magick with Laurie Cabot Kent, a witch who owns a store in Salem, Massachusetts and who also has a high position in The System. (RoR 019) At Gloria Vanderbilt's home Jessie was trained by her proctor to "take care" of a baby by drowning it. Then Gloria showed her how she did taxidermy on babies. (RoR 019) Her primary trainer was the Queen Mother of Darkness, but the term proctor was used for this main training relationship during training sessions. (SFBIS 02)

A significant part of Jessie's training happened in one of The System's underground training centers. The one she was in most of the time was beneath the Cathedral of St. Peter Catholic Church in Rockford, Illinois. (RoR 013) She had hand-to-hand combat training with a Project Paperclip Nazi named Michael Karkoc, (SW 05) had experiments done on her with adrenochrome by John Brennan, where they had to put her in a straightjacket so she wouldn't injure anybody coming down off that drug and was sometimes tossed into rooms with her protector-in-training Leo and a System defector, and told that it was "kill or be killed." (GD 03) Other parts of her training happened out in the open, such as hacking at stiff cookie dough, to build muscles for stabbing infants in rituals. (MJ 02)

Etiquette was part of her training, and it included a lot of "good girls" and good people" messaging, such as "Good girls always sit with their knees touching together" and "Good people don't tell family secrets", "Good people don't talk" and “Good people shut their mouth”. She was supposed to stand in a particular way with her feet together and heels touching. When Jessie didn’t do it, one of the Mothers of Darkness would whack her in the Achilles with her staff until her feet were properly aligned. She had to walk around with a book on her head for proper posture, and was told at age 10 once she was fully trained that she now needed to “start acting like a Mother of Darkness”. (ARA 043, RoR 013)

Anna Starfire also describes the members of the Knights of Columbus raping girls in small rooms in the church and then using “good girl” hypnosis techniques on them to try to convince them that they were still virgins. (AS 01) “Good girls” is also a phrase used in programming. (FS 03)

There was also additional compliance training for Jessie that consisted of throwing her and others down into pits where there was a type of animal she considered to be a type of Dragon. She called those pits “Dragon wells” and said she never knew when she or others were tossed in if the dragon was fed, or hungry. Even more common than that, her proctor would toss her into the pitch dark cellar with dead animals and blood dripping, and leave her there for hours. (ARA 044)

Jessie’s training was different than others in The System because of her high level and special position; other children get different training. In Asian occult societies they train the children in military maneuvers, herbs for healing and poisons, and hand-to-hand combat. European-based occult groups train their children in languages, how to spy, how to be assassins, as well as extensive military and science training. (SV 55) Pre-birth and for the first three years of a child's life is the most intense training, and it's basically a full-time job, according to Svali. (SV 55) A training day for a young child could begin at 4:30 with a ritual, and (SV 43) might continue all day, every day, for years on end.

Pedophilia (blackmail)

Fritz Springmeier notes that "It is a standard tactic of the Illuminati, their New World Order and its various branches to use fear and blackmail to bring people into line." (FS 04)

Pedophilia can be used by The System to force someone who does not want to join to become a member. They will get someone high or drunk and then photograph them in a compromising position with a child, and then offer them the choice of coming into The System or not. If no, then they'll threaten you and your family with death. (SS 01) If yes, then the quotas start, and that individual would have to commit acts that The System demands, and they have to be photographed or videotaped for proof. Another scenario that has been put forth as probable is that at gunpoint someone would be forced to rape and then kill a child, and that videotape would be used as blackmail. (ARA 021)

Cheryl Beck had a "sexy Sadie" program that was used to blackmail government and military people as a child prostitute seductress. (CS 03) Cathy O'Brien's daughter Kelly was "being prostituted to the CIA for blackmail purposes." (CO 01) Svali notes that using child prostitutes to blackmail political leadership outside of the Illuminati was very common. (SV 12)

For those members who have seen each other's "dirty deeds" as Jessie terms it, they can use that witnessing of each other's pedophilia and other as leverage. When Kamala and Barack were joking around about Joe (Biden's) love for spaghetti and "sauce," this for them was a subtle threat or warning to Joe that they hold blackmail against him, and a clue for us that they might be members of each other's witchcraft circles/groups, or they wouldn't know so much about one another. (ARA 013)

Philanthropy

Philanthropy, or what The System terms "humanitarian efforts" is encouraged and even mandatory for most participants, from high rank down. "The Illuminati kingpins are great philanthropists, even though much of their philanthropy is self-serving," says Fritz Springmeier. He asserts that it is a good "cover" for them, and we can see this in the number of individuals who have been named as System members who have gigantic charitable foundations like Bill and Hillary's Clinton Foundation, George Soros' Open Society Foundations, Barack's Obama Foundation, the Oprah Winfrey Foundation, and Madonna's Raising Malawi and Ray of Light Foundation. (FS 01, WK 04) The System even seems to have its own philanthropic oversight foundation, the Global Philanthropy Group, which Wikipedia says consults with high-net individuals on their philanthropic endeavors. (WK 2) If the individual doesn't have their own foundation, they may just be identified as a 'philanthropist,' as Marilou Whitney is on her Wikipedia entry. (WK 03)

Nobody so far has out-and-out stated that Bill Gates of the Bill and Melinda Gates Foundation is involved in The System, but Svali does say that he has “occultic connections”, and that his philanthropy is likely the exact opposite of what normal people would call philanthropic—“it’s not”, she says. (SV 47)

“Everybody on the Satanic Council—actually all the way down to the High Priests and Priestesses—has to pick a humanitarian effort,” says Jessie. Because the individuals in The System don’t come out in public and declare their membership, titles or promotions in the Illuminati, sometimes you can get a clue what rank or position they have based on their philanthropic endeavors. For example, Jessie notes that George Clooney took Barron Hilton’s (the Hilton Hotel Magnate) position on the Satanic Council because Barron Hilton worked with coffee farmers in Columbia, and that’s what Clooney declared as his humanitarian effort. (RR 31)

Sometimes the money the individuals use in their humanitarian effort comes from an individual higher-up in The System than they are. As the highest-ranking seat on the Satanic Council for almost 6 decades, George Soros had access to and distributed quite a lot of money to individuals below him to use on their philanthropic endeavors. Soros did this with Oprah, funding a girls’ school in South Africa with Soros’ money. (MJ 01) And yet, each of the members are also required to add in their own funds to the humanitarian efforts, which is a tactic of The System to keep them from defecting or trying to get out. If you walked away, you’d be leaving without a large chunk of your own money. (RR 31)

Philanthropy is also part of the quota System. The Illuminati members have to do a certain number of things that look like good deeds to rack up promotional credits in The System so that they can advance in rank. (MJ 01) All of the concert fundraisers, the Hollywood stars investing in children, it's all a smoke screen to imbue a sense of goodwill in people witnessing it from the outside, to make us say, hey, these are good people, they do good things for others. (SW 06) We don't see the evil beneath, because it's designed to be hidden from our view.

Underground Tunnels

"The world is made up of tunnel Systems that go all the way back to Babylon." (RoR 205)

Below the earth's surface there are tunnels, some nearer the surface and some way below the surface, very very deep. Most of us are aware that there are tunnels that carry sewage, street water runoff and other waste either towards a water treatment plant or the ocean for removal from cities, but that's only the very first level of tunnel Systems. Deeper than that are tunnels for the Deep Underground Military Bases (DUMBS), and a level even deeper are tunnels used by The System, specifically by the protectors. (SW 30)

At age 5 the protector trainees will take their Scottish/York Rite vows, they will be connected to the family's "familiar spirit", and then they'll have to start learning the tunnel Systems. The deepest protector tunnels are very low oxygen, and there are no maps for these tunnels, the protectors have to learn them by memory. They use them to travel so that they can protect the elite they are assigned to, and escape danger from their fellow Luciferians. (CS 13)

Underneath Texas, and connecting to Florida and California are ocean water-filled tunnels that submarines can travel through which are used to transport children and adults in human trafficking. These were built by the Luciferians specifically for this purpose. (SW 30) Elon Musk is one individual who owns boring machine companies, and these boring machines are gigantic, and are capable of melting rock to tunnel through the underground landscape. He also builds train Systems underground, which Jessie believes connects to some of the Underground Cities. (WK 05, SW 12)

In some of the tunnel Systems that The System uses exclusively for themselves are booby traps, located in a device that looks something like a decommissioned Poseidon missile, which is filled with biological weaponized compounds, things like smallpox and ebola. Jessie was told as a child that they would be set off if the location was discovered.

Tunnel Systems are also used to hold children in cages before rituals. (ARA 003) The majority of Jessie's childhood Luciferian training took place in training centers and tunnels beneath Catholic Churches. (ARA 008) Cisco concurs with Jessie that the tunnels play a major role within the Catholic Church, and that priests use them to worship Satan and conjure demons (CW 01) The tunnel Systems beneath the Church of St. Peter in Rockford, Illinois have walls that are literally Illuminati holy ground, they hold hundreds of years of the handprints of 5-year-old hierarchy and expendable children. (GD 05) some of the Catholic Church tunnels even connect to the Masonic lodges. (MJ 03)

Jessie saw and met individuals that were not quite human, not quite demonic in the tunnels. (ARA 012) In the deepest tunnel Systems are born and bred generations of children who never live to see the light of day. Their skin is very translucent, and their pupils are very large and black because of the scarce lighting. The System calls them the mole children, or the black-eyed children. Their main job is that they are slaves to underground giants. There have been issues with them coming up to the surface, similar to the problems divers have when surfacing too quickly except instead of nitrogen, these individuals get too much oxygen and it can cause problems for them. (ARA 034, ARA 049)

In some of the tunnels that are offshoots of the breeder program locations, they would hold children in cages, and feed them "fetuses that were not acceptable for them to sell for the organ programs" (DO 00625) as well as the expired individuals from the adrenochrome harvesting. (GD 03)

Cisco Wheeler reports that there are tunnels under the White House in Washington, D.C. used to bring mind-controlled slaves to rooms there for rituals. There are also tunnels beneath Scotty's Castle in Death Valley, California, and under the Getty Museum near Los Angeles. The Mormon temple at Lake Oswego in Portland has a large programming facility in tunnels beneath it, as well the large Boeing plant in Seattle, WA and the ARCO Beaver Valley Plant in Pennsylvania. Beneath Disneyland and near Disney World under Lake Holden in Florida are also underground programming tunnels. (FS 01) These are just a small sample of locations; the network is vast.

There are even tunnels that extend from England to the United States. (RoR 049) The tunnels around the world will be underneath ley lines in many cases. (RoR 205)

Underground Cities

The Illuminati paid and hired architects like Hal Henry Bauer Thompson Taxil and Frank Lloyd Wright to build many of their buildings for them. Taxil built the below-ground structures while Frank Lloyd Wright built many of the above-ground buildings. (MJ 02,GD 03)

Jessie has revealed underground cities beneath the Pentagon, Area 51, and Gove County, Kansas. Emerald City is beneath the Pentagon, and is lit by Tesla free energy technology. (RoR 049) It is a home to demons and non-human entities, including descendants of Nephilim and individuals with a high percentage of Nephilim DNA. Some of these entities teach their healing technologies to the Illuminati's Sisters of Light. (CS 02) The Wizard of Oz movie was a decode to tell the higher levels of the Illuminati how to access Emerald City, 'over the rainbow'. (ARA 037) The entire Wizard of Oz book series was highly used in the Illuminati programming process, as well as being a map for accessing underground locations.

The underground city below Area 51 is called Zion (or Mars), and it has a mirror underground city also named Zion located in Israel. (CS 13) This location has a giant stone altar with Nephilim skulls on it. Those skulls are there for ‘end-time’ rituals, which are rituals which will be done at the time that the Illuminati is ready to unveil their New World Order and raise the Antichrist. (CS 14) There is some indication that Michael Aquino, famed Satanist and very high-level Luciferian, faked his own death and went underground to run the underground city Mars, which he calls “The Mars Colony”.

Valhalla is in northwestern Kansas, underneath Gove County. It is a meeting place for the very highest of the ranks of the Illuminati. (RoR 241)

First Born Family Sacrifice

“A lot of times that oldest child will either be chosen to serve in The System or they become… the scapegoat which is the family sacrifice.” (ARA 026) Other girls that are being set aside to marry high-level men connected to the Satanic Council or other council groups like the Bilderbergers are impregnated around age 12 in a ritual, and their child is birthed around the spring or fall equinox and sacrificed in special rituals. (ARA 008)

First born sacrifice doesn’t always mean losing their life, it could mean being set aside for the spirits, the demons, and what those demons want for a child, in service to Lucifer. Jessie was the “firstborn that was set aside for service,” in her family. (ARA 008, ARA 026)

Getting Rid of the Bodies

Jessie talks about the catacombs and other underground tunnels and rooms beneath the Catholic Churches she was in, and how they had incinerators for getting rid of human remains. After rituals or after children were 'used' in The System for whatever money-making schemes they would put them through, they would incinerate the remains and then take the ashes and press them into memorial diamonds that sometimes the individual who killed that child would wear on a ring or other jewelry. Other remains were bleached and processed and sold as bleached flour, and some was even added to other products as "natural flavorings" or "natural seasonings".

Cali Shai Bergandi witnessed her father, who was in the grave digging and human remains transport business, take her to fruit processing facilities in Florida, where they lived. They had pressing machines with rollers on them, some for juicing fruit, and some for juicing cadavers. The cadaver liquid is used for cosmetics and other products. Beneath Disney there were train tracks that they had converted into juicing machines. She witnessed her handler rape a drugged and unresponsive girl in the train car in front of her, and when he was finished, the girl was tossed out onto the tracks. Train cars come by all day long and the liquid produced from those children being run over was piped down into large vats. Machines would 'purge' every time someone was 'juiced' and Cali used to cry every time she saw the machine produce a volume of juice, because she knew someone had just died.

Adrenochrome

Adrenaline is a hormone produced by the adrenal glands, small structures that in humans sit atop the kidneys. When adrenaline is oxidized, it can create a secondary substance called Adrenochrome. Wikipedia calls adrenochrome "a component of several conspiracy theories such as Qanon and Pizzagate." As with most topics connected to the Illuminati, the internet is rife with some of the millions of members working hard to cover up the truth. While I've never heard adrenochrome spoken of in connection to Q or Pizzagate, Jessie has plenty to say on the integral part that adrenochrome plays in The System.

Adrenochrome was used on Jessie when she was young, by her hand-to-hand combat trainer Michael Karkoc, as well as two other high-up individuals in The System, John Brennan and Michael Aquino. (SW 07) She said that when used at high doses, generally during rituals, they dilute the adrenochrome in formaldehyde before they give it to the individual, because they want it to create a psychosis in them, so that they "go out of their minds." Jessie describes the experience as being physically and mentally and emotionally out of control. She thought things she never would normally think, and generally was not in her right mind. She says that they do this because "demonic spirits love the blood, the gore and the graphic violen(ce)." (CS 04) She describes the feeling of being on an adrenochrome high as "wanting to shred and consume" other people. She and the her training partner were both part of these experiments, I guess I'll call them, and they were put in straitjackets before this particular incident, because otherwise the probably would have killed the other children in the room. Because they couldn't use their hands, she describes them as "trying to eat each other's faces off." (ARA 042)

Coming down off of that adrenochrome high, she and Leo her protector-in-training were at one time put into a big white cupboard in one of the rooms of the Catholic Church this particular experiment was done in, and the two of them were inside the cupboard, still in the straight jackets, “trying to kill each other.” He was kicking her in the shoulder trying to keep her away so she couldn’t get near his face, and eventually she’s calm enough to have collapsed across his lap, and she pukes all over him. Coming down makes you physically ill. (ARA 042)

Jessie witnessed a number of different methods of procuring adrenochrome as part of her childhood training, including taking the adrenal glands from living humans, or taking blood from living humans, or making a tincture or preparation ahead of the ritual. Another thing she witnessed as a child was a giant warehouse as large as an airplane hanger filled with large numbers of abducted senior citizens, strapped down in what looked like airplane seats, row after row after row of them with tubes draining them slowly of their blood. They were too weak from blood loss to get up or protest this. Eventually, the blood harvesting killed them. There were also children there undergoing the same procedure, but they were held in big “wine vats” instead of airplane seats. Jessie calls this procedure ‘adreno farming’, adreno being short for adrenochrome. (RR 14) Where they got all of these seniors and kids we can only guess. Perhaps from the transportation pipeline from the southern border of the US, where individuals entering on foot into the USA are often put on to busses termed “meat wagons” and bussed—straight out of sight, presumably to facilities that do just this kind of thing. (ZZ 06).

DNA manipulation

It’s evident to me that one of the great hoaxes perpetrated on humanity is that there are much more advanced sciences available to the ‘elite’ than to us normal humans. One thing that they do that is very advanced, almost mind-bogglingly advanced, is genetic manipulation and cross-breeding of humans.

Both Jessie and Cisco report that the Illuminati Brotherhood is secretly creating human-animal hybrids, called chimeras (chi rhymes with sci as in sci-fi). They are breeding humans with birds and other animals, as well as inserting DNA into humans that normally would belong only to a fish, for example. (RoR 240, FS 01)

Cisco and Fritz Springmeier write about the ‘Aquaman’ which no, is not a comic book character, it’s an actual creation by the Brotherhood System. DNA was inserted into a human that enables him or her to breathe underwater without any scuba gear or air tanks, because they have gills, and special skin. Like fish. They are called a human subspecies, which basically means they are mostly the same as humans, just with some identifiable differences. (FS 01) These individuals are also massively mind-controlled and programmed, with their programming described as being “booby-trapped every which way so that no tampering can be attempted.” (FS 03)

❧

Chapter 15: The Front Organizations

“You have the satanic council, and that breaks down into several levels, but in our real world time, the satanic councilmen and councilwomen, these are going to be your United Nations Members, NATO, the European Union, the Bilderberg's, all of those individuals — well, I won’t say all, there are a few good mixed-in, but the majority of those individuals across the board, along with the leaders of other nations, all of those people will be in (the Satanic Council) underneath the Mothers of Darkness.” -Jessie Czebotar (AB 01)

In addition to the vast numbers of infiltrated institutions, there are also organizations at the world level that are more or less completely owned by the occult, and their overall goals are aligned with and focused on the overall goals of the Illuminati and other occult groups working for Satan/Lucifer. These are front groups masquerading as legitimate, policy-making and world governance groups, but in reality they are Illuminati/Brotherhood/occult groups at the core. They may be headed by a high-level Satanic Councilman, like the World Economic Forum, or be completely or nearly completely composed of Satanic Councilmen, like the

Bilderberg Group. Some, like the Central Intelligence Agency that were created by the Illuminati, in turn create hundreds of sub-groups to further obfuscate their agenda and purpose.

Good people do get caught up in some of these front organizations, like in the CIA, for example. Their presence provides plausible deniability for the actions and purpose of the group at large. If they turn whistleblower on their organizations, they are typically crushed, financially, legally, socially, and more. It’s a perfect System for discouraging any others from acting contrary to the leaders of the organization, who are Illuminati.

These groups operating as fronts for Illuminati interests include but aren’t limited to the Bilderberg group, the United Nations, the Council on Foreign Relations, the World Health Organization, the World Council of Churches, the Central Intelligence Agency, NATO, the European Union and many others. (AB 01, ARA 029)

The next few chapters give a brief overview of some organizations that are fronts for Illuminati activities.

❧

Chapter 16: The Bilderberg Group

"At least once a year, maybe more, two nuclear submarines meet beneath the polar icecap and mate together at an airlock. Representatives of the Soviet Union meet with the Policy Committee of the Bilderberg Group. The Russians are given the script for their next performance. Items on the agenda include the combined efforts in the secret space program." -William Cooper, Behold a Pale Horse

The Bilderberg Group is a large group composed of many individuals, and its attendees rotate from year to year with a few exceptions. It meets in secrecy every year, rotating its locations. Jessie believes that the members/attendees of the Bilderberg conference, which has been held each year since its inception in the mid-1950's, are all members of the Satanic Council. (ARA 021)

Notable Bilderberg attendees have included Prince Bernard of the Netherlands, Henry Kissinger, Peter Thiel (co-founder of PayPal), Mark Rutte (Prime Minister of the Netherlands), Eric Schmidt (Executive Chairman, Google), John Thornton (president, Goldman Sachs), Gareth Williams

(Leader, House of Lords), Klaus Schwab (World Economic Forum founder), Richard Haas, (President, Council on Foreign Relations) and Jeff Bezos (Amazon CEO). (ZZ 23)

Reporters and editors from the New York Times, The Economist, the Washington Post, the International Herald Tribune, Newsweek also attend, as well as professors from Columbia University, Warwick University, Harvard University, Leiden University, and Oxford University. (ZZ 23)

Attendees are colloquially called “Bilderbergers,” and they are required to attend as part of their obligation as Satanic Councilmen. One year a boat with 350 children on it was stopped by the President of Italy; those children were headed to the Bilderberg meeting. They would be used for ritual killings, child sexual exploitation, and cannibalism by many of those attending. (ARA 021) Whenever the Illuminati meet, these kinds of activities will occur.

* * *

Chapter 17: The United Nations

"Cisco Wheeler programmed all the people in the… United Nations." -Jessie Czebotar (RR 22)

The United Nations (UN) is out-and-out controlled by the Illuminati, and while Jessie admits that there might be a few non-Illuminists in the ranks, it's her opinion that most are part of the Satanic Council and that the United Nations is an offshoot group of the Satanic Council. It's a sub-meeting in the same way that other groups like the Bilderberger assemblies are breakout meetings of the larger Satanic Council. (AB 01)

The goal of the Illuminati, according to Svali, is to impose Illuminati rule on all world nations, and one way that they plan to do it is to create a world government, one that supersedes and controls any nation government. This is a similar strategy to the one that the World Health Organization also uses, where it attempts to create rules and procedures that override the national health policies of individual nations. According to Svali, the United Nations was created to help overcome nationalism and pride in one's country, which the Illuminati consider to be barriers to their One World Government plans. The United Nations is a forerunner of what Illuminati members call the Supreme

World Council, which will be installed when the plans for a "One World" society are further along. (SV 38)

The term Supreme World Council is a bit confusing because there is also a term, "World Governing Council" that sounds remarkably similar to Supreme World Council. However, the World Governing Council is sometimes explained as being one of the many different names used to describe the Satanic Council. At other times The World Governing Council seems to be described as a sub-group of the Satanic Council. (CS 19) Constantly re-naming groups and re-defining terms seems to be a deliberate plan to obfuscate the groups and goals of the Illuminati to the unsuspecting public.

Cathy says that she was aware of one good person working within the United Nations against the tide, so it is possible that it has been infiltrated by a few good men. Her general assessment of the United Nations, however, is that it is "corrupted by global elite hell-bent on mass genocide through AIDS, vaccinations, and Immunizations." (CO 01) Another publication says that the top people of the UN "have been exposed as practicing the most obscene homosexual and child pornography rituals imaginable. (ZZ 03)

Kerth describes the punishment of two incestuous lesbian pedophile sisters who were Illuminati members but were not living up to the higher-up's expectation of them to produce income. "The Committee expects its members to produce income for the Illuminati System or to actively serve the Illuminati System in some way." As punishment for being slackers, these two sisters were sent to New York to become

Illuminati recruiters, and to do work for the United Nations. (KB 01)

Brice Taylor's handler, Henry Kissinger, often sent her to "entertain" foreign ambassadors to the United Nations who were working for him. (BT 01)

One offshoot organization of the UN is UNICEF, the United Nations International Children's Emergency Fund. UNICEF did a study in 19 European countries involving child pornography, and came to the conclusion that "any efforts to block children from accessing pornography online might infringe on their human rights." Their study concluded that there was essentially no evidence proving harm to children from accessing and viewing pornography. The study was subsequently taken down, edited to remove controversial bits, and re-uploaded to the website, having been sanitized after a significant uproar about the conclusions. If you live in the United States, you are funding this study; 300 million dollars in direct program funding to UNICEF was renewed in 2021, just a few days before the initial report was released. (ZZ 19, ZZ 20)

The fundamentally Luciferian publishing organization known as the Lucis Trust (originally named the Lucifer Trust & Founded by Alice Bailey) and its publication "World Goodwill" both "play an active role in the United Nations" in a consulting role, as stated on their own website. (ZZ 03, ZZ 21) Where is their US headquarters? In the United Nations building itself, at 866 United Nations Plaza, Suite 482, New York, NY, according to their contact page. (ZZ 22) Manly P. Hall, a noted freemason, was part of Lucis Trust, as well as many Rockefellers, who are a known Illuminati bloodline family. The Lucis Trust book “Externalization of the Hierarchy” by Alice Bailey gives a game plan for who will rule when the New World Order (which Bailey terms “New Age”) takes over. They list the “ruler of the world” as Sanat (scrambled “Satan”) and say that the 3 vehicles for bringing in this New World Order will be Masonic Lodges, Churches, and Education. (FS 02)

❧

Chapter 18: The World Economic Forum

Klaus Schwab is the founder of the World Economic Forum (WEF) and holds the Executive Chairman position at the current time (2022) according to the WEF's own website, www.weforum.org. He began it in 1971, fifty years ago. In 2004 he established the "Forum of Young Global Leaders", which has included such individuals as Dan Crenshaw (congressperson from Texas), Peter 'Pete' Buttigieg, (former US presidential candidate and current Biden Administration Secretary of Transportation), David de Rothschild, Mark Zuckerberg (Facebook/Meta), Chelsea Clinton (daughter of Hillary and Bill Clinton), and Huma Abedin, (Hillary Clinton aide), and Nathaniel 'Nate' Rothschild, and Angela Merkel (German Chancellor). Klaus is also a Satanic Councilman, according to Jessie, and a very high ranking one, at that. (ARA 021, ARA 025)

So, while Jessie has not outright said that the World Economic Forum is a breakout group of the Satanic Council, it cannot be a wholly non-Luciferian organization. This is my opinion, inferred from quite a lot of studying how this Luciferian System works. I might be wrong, but I would not bet against it using my own money. With a high-up Luciferian founding and running it, and so many confirmed-by-Jessie Luciferian Brotherhood members involved including Zuckerberg, the Clintons, and the Rothschilds, it would be highly unlikely in my opinion to get that many Luciferians concentrated in one organization and not have it be a central group for them all. Birds of a feather, as the saying goes. What percentage of the WEF is staffed with Luciferians is anybody's guess, but the policies of the group are more than likely designed to support Luciferian goals.

Dan Crenshaw is an interesting character. He's a member of Congress from Texas, in the United States. He's fashioned himself as a conservative, but his policies and rhetoric frequently do not align with conservative values. He was listed as a WEF young global leader in the class of 2019, but as this fact became well-known and circulated on the internet, the WEF deleted him from their website. You can still find it archived in a few places, however. Are they trying to hide something? It would seem so. In the United States, we have two main parties, the Democrats, who seem to be owned by the Luciferians, and the Republicans, who seem to be highly infiltrated by Luciferians pretending to be Republicans. We call them RINO's, which stands for Republicans-in-name-only. My guess is that this subset of that political party are actually just Luciferians in disguise.

Other WEF Young Global Leaders have included Chrystia Freeland, deputy prime minister of Canada, Peter Buttigieg, Secretary of Transportation for the Biden Administration, Emmanuel Macron the President of France, Sanna Marin, the Prime MInister of Finland, Jacinda Ardern Prime Minister of New Zealand, Mark Zuckerberg (Facebook), Maria Bartoromo (Fox News). (WL 06) If you search for some of these on the Young Global Leaders website, you won't find them—they've been scrubbed off, but Wikipedia has archived some of them.

The WEF members meet at a Davos conference each year, named that because it meets in Davos-Klosters, Switzerland. The 2021 theme was the "Great Reset", which is Luciferian code-speak for 'we want to make the New World Order happen'. Companies are charged $28,000 to send a representative to the meeting, which generally happens in January, but the 2022 meeting has been postponed over the Covid omicron variant, at least that's what the news media says. Dues to belong to the WEF are astronomical, ranging from $62,000 to $620,000 per year. (ZZ 10, ZZ 11)

The WEF is the organization responsible for the slogan, "You'll own nothing, and be happy," which is a fancy way of saying that they plan on turning us all into slaves, who live on their land, rent in their apartment buildings, paying the elite's corporations for all that we own. We won't own our furniture, or dishes, or bedding. We'll be beholden to the Luciferian elite for everything. As with everything, they start small and work their way toward their goals. On their website as of December 21, 2021 is an article promoting Christmas Tree rental, instead of buying an artificial tree or having one from a Christmas Tree farm, you'd rent an artificial tree, because, you know, it's "more eco-friendly". Each rental costs upwards of $90, and you can do that for up to 7 years, rent the same tree. Without inflation that would be over $600 for those 7 rented years. If you own your own artificial tree and are using it they claim you're doing a bad thing unless you use that artificial tree for 12 years or more, because from years 1 to 11 that tree is a carbon negative. Even down to Christmas trees, they really do want us to own nothing. I wonder how underwear rental will work under their plan….. will it be mandatory? I want to opt out, please.

❧

Chapter 19: The Central Intelligence Agency

"The CIA is run by the top Illuminati families, and so is the Mafia." -Fritz Springmeier, Bloodlines of the Illuminati

William Cooper, in his book *Behold a Pale Horse*, says that the Illuminati practices "secrets within secrets," which refers to the way they hide one organization inside another, and possibly another, like Russian Dolls. Fritz Springmeier says the same thing about the CIA, which is that it "is great at creating front companies which are sold to other fronts, and whose control eventually gets hidden and obscured." (FS 02) He also believes that the CIA was created and run by top Illuminati families, so it's not a surprise that they use this tactic to obscure what they do. One website that lists front organizations of the CIA as Cambridge Analytica, Edward Snowden, DARPA (Defense Advanced Research Projects Agency), the DEA (Drug Enforcement Agency), GEICO (The Gecko-themed Insurance Company), Halliburton, MIT's Center for International Studies, Voice of America Radio Liberty, Wikileaks, and Wikipedia, among many others. (ZZ 24)

Jessie experienced John Brennan, former CIA director and homeland security advisor, as a major individual in her occult training. He has been named by her as working on grotesque human experimentation such as fetal in-utero hand, nose and feet transplants. Human parts were replaced with pig parts, so the child looked half-human, half pig when born. (SW 04) The Illuminati System would then have those infants graphically ritually murdered or raise them as individuals who were treated as black sheep, enduring harassment and torture. Occasionally the children would not realize that they were human. Occasionally they would be sold as a delicacy to be consumed by cannibals. (SW 31)

Brennan worked directly with the demon Abbadon, which also gave him access to other institutions and underground facilities being used by the Illuminati, such as CERN, DARPA and HAARP (High-frequency Active Auroral Research Program). (ARA 034) The connections of these experiments extend to the DIA (Defense Intelligence Agency), DOD (Department of Defense), CIA, FBI, CDC (Centers for Disease Control), and the WHO (World Health Organization). (RR 30)

◆

Chapter 20: The Federal Bureau of Investigation

"The Rockefellers were involved in the creation of the FBI, so that the FBI has always been an arm of power for the Illuminati. That is why there are official FBI programs in action today to kidnap children and provide them for sacrifice." (FS 02)

When children "owned" by the Illuminati went missing from underground tunnels, both the Satanic Council and the FBI "black hats" questioned their own people about the missing children, and those individuals were scrambling to keep their jobs. (DO 00625)

When Jessie's mother finally learned what was going on with her daughter's occult abuse, they contacted the FBI, who told them to either be quiet—or die. (DO 10603) Subsequently, both the CIA and the FBI have frequented her homes, making videos and harassing her family. (DO 11020)

The FBI has also been in possession of the Hunter Biden laptop, and has until recently kept its contents secret, likely resulting in a presidential win for the Biden administration. The contents of that laptop are bad, and Jessie hopes that people will mentally prepare themselves for the violence and graphic nature of the contents when they are finally revealed.

Hunter Biden is the child of an Illuminati member, and the FBI has protected him by withholding the contents of the laptop from the public. (DO 01022)

Fiona says that clean/non-Illuminati members of the FBI tried repeatedly to charge Hillary Clinton and others with child trafficking charges, but “their efforts were thwarted by those in the chain of command above them” Fiona’s book states that “The CIA trafficked the kids, the FBI covered their tracks.” (FB 01)

The control by the Illuminati at the top of these organizations is complete. The FBI allows good people within their organization to “out” themselves by pursuing pedophile networks, for example, but then uses that to destroy their careers, and replace them with individuals more likely to be loyal to the evil upper ranks. (FB 01)

◆

Chapter 21: The National Security Agency

❧

“The NSA really works for the Illuminati,” and “Most of the population in the US is being watched to some degree.” (KB 03 page 99)

❧

Chapter 22: The New World Order

"New World Order" is Illuminati code-speak. It is code for their grand plan to take over and govern the world with an iron fist. It's code for a world that benefits them and not the rest of us. It's code for everybody worships Lucifer, just like they do.

Cheryl Beck says that "It has always been the plan of the Illuminati to have a New World Order, where they are totally in control of all people (on) every continent." (CB 01) The New World Order that she is speaking of is the same thing as the One World Government that Svali mentions, along with the One World Economy and One World Religion that Jessie talks about. (SV 38, RoR 185) "They are here to rule the world," says Cheryl. They want to install a Luciferian System across the globe. (SB 01) Luciferianism is a religion, and they intend their headship on earth to be the Antichrist. (RoR 069) Essentially, they want us all to worship Satan and his 'son' the Antichrist. Whether they call that a New World Order, Build Back Better, One World Religion or any of the many other "globalist" terms, it all funnels back to one thing —a Luciferian-centered world society.

Svali says that the plans for this New World Order have been in place for decades, and some of the things that she knew of as being part of this plan include things that you might or might not be surprised at. One thing she says is that a "viral pandemic would be unleashed in the media, to see how people would respond to what the media (and the media subliminals) were telling them, and try to discover where pockets of resistance were." (SV 57) We've seen this happen already with the Covid situation. Given that coronavirus spike protein was known to be a pathogen as far back as 2004, and that there are well over 4000 patents on coronavirus that could only have been accomplished with genetic manipulation of the virus, we can see how this is a scientifically planned event rather than a spontaneous occurrence. (ZZ 18) Given that science is one of the six areas of planned Illuminati takeover, along with the media and the government, it's a perfect trifecta of control to manifest this part of the agenda. (SV 13) Part of the viral pandemic "was to see if people would believe what the media told them over what science and real data indicated." (SV 57)

Another plan for the New World Order was that Donald J. Trump would serve two terms as the President of the United States. I know this might come as a surprise to some and an "I told you so" to others. Trump is considered to be a good guy by many, including Jessie, who was in support of his efforts to free the trafficked children held by the occult. She stops short of confirming that he is not in The System, however. He may or may not be, we don't know. Perhaps he was, but he's double-crossed them. They certainly wouldn't have put up the gigantic hissy fit they did if he was with them, that's for sure. His role as a good guy is, as of yet, unconfirmed. Svali doesn't know why this particular agenda of him serving two terms as president changed since she left the Illuminati. Svali doesn't take so kindly to Trump. She believes that both Trump and Biden are mind-controlled—and that is an expert opinion based on her previous profession of "head programmer" in the Illuminati (SV 26, SV 57)

Additional plans that we haven't seen realized to date include that the Illuminati want the US currency to be totally devalued as this would put pressure on the people to accept a "One World Government in return for economic stabilization." The scariest sections of this plan include a second pandemic highly fatal to young children, and the implementation of hate laws to criminalize "Christianity, Judaism, and any political group that does not agree with the cult agenda." (SV 57)

We've heard Barack Obama talk about the New World Order, and George Bush Sr., as well as the United Nations, which is fitting because all three are involved in bringing it about. Cheryl thinks that the reason it hasn't been brought to fruition is because of the 2nd Amendment to the Constitution of the United States, the one that allows private ownership of firearms. (CB 01) Antifa and Black Lives Matter are part of the planned chaos that they hope will usher in the NWO as well. (CS 10)

Fritz Springmeier reports insiders telling him of ritual meetings in 1955 where the highest level Illuminati were present and discussing what had been done and what was to be done to bring in Satan's One World Government. (FS 02) Their plan for a global takeover has been in place for a very, very long time.

❧

Chapter 22: Epilogue

The preceding has been an account compiled from whistleblowers, victims, survivors, and fighters who have taken on or been abused by the occult and lived to tell the tale.

You might ask what a Christian woman is doing studying the occult structure in depth and spending the time thinking and writing and researching it enough to put together hundreds of references in support of her epistle. To an extent I agree, there are probably other things I could be doing in life, but if we're prone to try to help others, we're called to affect change in the times that we are in, whatever they may be. The times the world resides in now is of a wholehearted, organized, planned, evil takeover of earth and all the "resources" on it, including humanity.

I disagree with the fact that we humans a resource. We are God's sovereign creation, and I intend to keep it that way if I can. The problem I had, and the problem I see others having is that they don't understand the organized takeover, they don't know where it's coming from, they don't know what is behind it, and they can't read the signs, symbols, and clues that are right in front of us, yet hidden from our comprehension.

I have found peace in understanding the structure and the practices of The System, even while learning about their horrific practices and the tortured individuals trapped inside this awful organization. I wouldn't wish myself or anyone else among them. And yet like so many others, I have felt a sense of helplessness to change anything. The only thing I felt like I could change was my own understanding. In the process, I wanted to share what I had learned, just in case it could help anyone else.

I didn't understand the paucity of information out there until another researcher who has followed my blog said to me that there was "nobody else" researching this Illuminati structure and laying it out the way I was. I'm not sure that's the 100% truth, but it was her 100% experience. If there are other basic books out there that lay out the structure and function of the Illuminati brotherhood system, neither of us are aware of them. If there are, maybe the way I have laid it out here is was different enough that it will be valuable to others. Hence this book, which is just a collection of bits of stories strung together in a way that I can understand and get a pretty good big picture from. My hope is that you can, as well.

While I would prefer to have inserted zero opinion and fact only, some opinion was necessary for clarification. I wanted to keep most of my opinions aside from the evidence I presented here directly from these brave folks, and limit it to the postscript.

I'm personally grateful for the time I've had available to spend doing research on this subject, and I'm also grateful for the significant mental shift it's afforded me. I'm able to look at the world now and be calm about what previously for me were incomprehensible and maddening inconsistencies.

I can see the removal of cursive from schools as a movement toward creating a slave who does not need to be able to read cursive in their life.

I can see the FBI's poor treatment of whistleblowers as consistent with the fact that they are infiltrated, and probably even initially created by the Illuminati.

I can see the inconsistencies with the Jeffrey Epstein "suicide" and understand that the judicial system, jail, and probably everybody involved was likely bribed/blackmailed/threatened so that inconsistent and weird things happened. At least they look weird and inconsistent to someone who doesn't understand The System. Once you understand, it is all perfectly consistent with the way they operate.

I know now that the media is a machine designed to create a false reality and present it to us so that we are misdirected from the truth. I get why news isn't news. I get why CNN is still in operation and wasn't mothballed a long time ago.

I can see the flood of people over the southern border and know that they are an income stream, possible food source, and likely ritual commodity of the Illuminati and that most of them will disappear underground and never be seen again.

I understand why food labels don't list the actual ingredients, and why most processed foods make me physically ill.

I understand why no large corporation in America will have working conditions that don't require the breaking or violating of closely held Christian values.

I understand why there is a seemingly unholy alliance of Democrats, Muslims, Catholics, and Nazi's.

I get why Hollywood celebrities cross-dress their children, who are likely adopted.

I get why I couldn't successfully tolerate working at a Catholic School located in a ritual area.

All that, and so much more. I get it now.

I'm not saying that learning all of this didn't come with a lot of sadness, or a lot of mental hurdles. It did. I had to accept that by being the descendant of a freemason, my ancestors were worshipping demons, and that was really tough for me. I had to accept that I'd been brainwashed into truly believing that not having children was saving the planet. I'd been brainwashed that salt was bad for me, and margarine was good, and that the "scientific studies" were anything but scientific. Some of these life alterations seem like small things, they add up to big problems in the long run, and they're difficult to mitigate and reverse. Worse, I'd been brainwashed to believe that I had to have a job, a career, I had to work for a living, that I should put off marriage, that I should postpone traveling and hobbies until I was old and retired. I have to concede that I had accepted mental slavery to a degree, and that was very difficult. I didn't lose my whole life, but I lost many years of it. By the Grace of God I wasn't an actual slave of the system.

The dictates of the Illuminati machine, these small things that collectively add up until at one time you realize that you're not in control of your life, and you're a slave with no actual chains or shackles—except in your mind. Or maybe you are a prisoner of your child with autism because somehow he was environmentally poisoned by deliberate practices designed to drain your family's finances straight into the medical/pharmaceutical cartel owned by the Illuminati. Maybe you believed the brainwashing that vaccines were "safe and effective" whilst at the same time the information was hidden from you that the crooks at the CDC were shredding the data that proved otherwise. Or maybe you accumulated astronomical student debt getting a rather useless University degree, lining their pockets, and bankrupting yours. Or perhaps you're stuck in an area of the country with such a high standard of living driven by Illuminati racketeering and money-laundering that you can't ever seem to achieve just a middle-of-the-road existence. Perhaps you're caught in a government assistance cycle you can't get out of. There are endless life stories that we've probably all heard or seen and we probably can trace them back to being a victim of the Illuminati in some way. I'm grateful I was not their permanent victim in a worse way. So many unnamed children and adults have been, and if they're still alive, many still are. For some, the Illuminati is a life sentence.

I feel like I've achieved a relative position of personal power in comparison to where I was in my mental state before I learned all this, although I'm at a point in life where I cannot go back and take back the past lost decades of my life. If all this book achieves is that one young person will learn, and make the shifts in their life that they need to early in their life, so they live their life being self-directed, instead of being Illuminati-directed.

98% of the “chatter” on social media misses the mark that the underlying problems with government, social structure, travel, the economy—these are all problems created and foisted on us by this unseen occultic psychopathic Satanic cult, that wants to give the middle finger to God and take all the power for themselves. I call bull**** on The World Economic Forum’s future plans for us to be a Borg-like slave class. I won’t comply with “you’ll own nothing and be happy.” Go stick it where the sun don’t shine, Mr. Illuminist. I see you, and I rebuke the demons who control you from affecting me and my life. I will do what I need to do to ensure that I’m a free-thinking educated woman who is not brainwashed by their lies any more. If you’ve read this far, I hope you resolve that they won’t control you any more, either.

May God’s Blessings Shine Upon You All.

“Let your Light so Shine Before Men so that They May See Your Good Works, and glorify your Father Which is in Heaven.” Matthew 5:16

❧

References/Reading List

This reference list includes citations from this work and additional references not cited directly here, in case you are interested in learning more about this subject. The citations are alphabetical, so if you're hunting for one, it will be indexed here under the first letter.

The sad truth is that no matter how hard I work on updating, some of these links will eventually permanently break. In fact, the day before I was planning to release this book, the Aquarius Rising Africa YouTube channel was terminated, leaving me scrambling to find or create alternative links.

The Illuminati machine works diligently to remove incriminating evidence from the internet, especially from sites like YouTube. I have attempted to check the references to be sure that they all work as of the publication date, however there are over 450 of them, and if they don't work, all I can say is, I'm sorry, and they did work when I last checked them, which was the day before the book release.

I have compiled an ever-increasing library of video transcripts at curatedsourcesLTW.wordpress.com. Right on Radio, Sarah Westall, and Dark Outpost are some of the "YouTube disappeared" sources that I have captured the transcripts, so that even if the video has disappeared, they are there for you to read, download, and pass around.

I will continue to work on keeping these links up-to-date so if you notice a problem, please contact me through my blog or at veronicaswift71@yahoo.com, or send me a comment through my blog and I will adjust links as time goes forward.

Lastly, a number of these sources are pay-to-view only, such as many of the Dark Outpost videos. In order to access the links, you will have to pay for a subscription.

❦

(AB 01) Age of Betrayal, Part 1: The "System" of Darkness April 9, 2020. https://globalsisterhood.libsyn.com/episode-30-age-of-betrayal-part-1-the-System-of-darkness

(AB 02) Age of Betrayal, Part 2: How the "System" Controls Our Lives April 9, 2020 https://globalsisterhood.libsyn.com/website/episode-31-age-of-betrayal-part-2-how-the-System-controls-our-lives

(AB 03) Age of Betrayal - Part 3: The Plan is Darker Than we Feared 10 April 2020 https://globalsisterhood.libsyn.com/website/episode-32-age-of-betrayal-part-3-the-plan-is-darker-than-we-feared

(AB 04) Age of Betrayal, Part 4: A Light in the Darkness April 10, 2020 https://globalsisterhood.libsyn.com/episode-33-age-of-betrayal-part-4-a-light-in-the-darkness

(ARA 001) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar (001) 4 September 2020 https://www.bitchute.com/video/wdJhEkCkEMgC/

(ARA 002) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar (002) 9 September 2020https://www.bitchute.com/video/NAi51uD56UP1/

(ARA 003) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar (003) 14 September 2020 https://www.bitchute.com/video/mDekgIS6AKsY/

(ARA 004) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar (004) 19 September 2020 https://www.bitchute.com/video/ishsUumqU76J/

(ARA 005) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar (005) 23 September 2020 https://www.bitchute.com/video/KskcVqqkVSCX/

(ARA 006) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar (006) 25 September 2020 https://www.bitchute.com/video/B9cIkTY5VzZ6/

(ARA 007) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar (007) 26 September 2020 https://www.bitchute.com/video/SNB1Epp6t8SQ/

(ARA 008) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar (008) 2 October 2020 https://www.bitchute.com/video/icIjiWs2RP1L/

(ARA 009) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar (009) 3 October 2020. https://www.bitchute.com/video/9jTfydLFbKTh/

(ARA 010) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar (010) 7 October 2020 https://ugetube.com/watch/connecting-with-jessie-czebotar-010-mp4_PdpGQDmbZA9nAEv.html

(ARA 011) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar (011) 9 October 2020 https://curatedsourcesltw.wordpress.com/2022/04/01/aquarius-rising-africa-connecting-with-jessie-czebotar-011/

(ARA 012) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar (012) 23 October 2020 https://curatedsourcesltw.wordpress.com/2022/04/01/rising-africa-connecting-with-jessie-czebotar-012/

(ARA 013) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar (013) 28 October 2020 https://curatedsourcesltw.wordpress.com/2022/04/01/aquarius-rising-africa-connecting-with-jessie-czebotar-013/

(ARA 014) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar (014) 4 November 2020 https://curatedsourcesltw.wordpress.com/2022/04/01/aquarius-rising-africa-connecting-with-jessie-czebotar-014/

(ARA 015) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar (015) 6 November 2020 https://curatedsourcesltw.wordpress.com/2022/04/01/aquarius-rising-africa-connecting-with-jessie-czebotar-015/

(ARA 016) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar (016) 12 November 2020 https://curatedsourcesltw.wordpress.com/2022/04/01/aquarius-rising-africa-connecting-with-jessie-czebotar-016/

(ARA 017) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar (017) 26 November 2020 https://curatedsourcesltw.wordpress.com/2022/04/01/aquarius-rising-africa-connecting-with-jessie-czebotar-017/

(ARA 018) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar (018) 3 December 2020 https://curatedsourcesltw.wordpress.com/2022/04/01/aquarius-rising-africa-connecting-with-jessie-czebotar-018/

(ARA 019) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar (019) 10 December 2020 https://curatedsourcesltw.wordpress.com/2022/04/01/aquarius-rising-africa-connecting-with-jessie-czebotar-019/

(ARA 020) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar (020) December 17, 2020 https://curatedsourcesltw.wordpress.com/2022/04/01/aquarius-rising-africa-connecting-with-jessie-czebotar-020/

(ARA 021) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar (021) 7 January 2021 https://www.bitchute.com/video/EmjtD9MzQ6lb/

(ARA 022) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar (022) 14 January 2021 https://curatedsourcesltw.wordpress.com/2022/04/01/aquarius-rising-africa-connecting-with-jessie-czebotar-022/

(ARA 023) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar (023) 21 January 2021 https://curatedsourcesltw.wordpress.com/2022/04/01/aquarius-rising-africa-connecting-with-jessie-czebotar-023/

(ARA 024) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar (024) 28 January 2021 https://curatedsourcesltw.wordpress.com/2022/04/01/aquarius-rising-africa-connecting-with-jessie-czebotar-024/

(ARA 025) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar (025) 4 February 2021 https://curatedsourcesltw.wordpress.com/2022/04/01/aquarius-rising-africa-connecting-with-jessie-czebotar-025/

(ARA 026) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar (026) 11 February 2021 https://curatedsourcesltw.wordpress.com/2022/04/02/aquarius-rising-africa-connecting-with-jessie-czebotar-026/

(ARA 027) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar (027) 25 February 2021 https://ugetube.com/watch/connecting-with-jessie-czebotar-027_WZUuAa2pP3HRO1W.html

(ARA 028) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar (028) 4 March 2021 https://

curatedsourcesltw.wordpress.com/aquarius-rising-africa-transcripts-featuring-jessie-czebotar/

(ARA 029) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar (029) 25 March 2021 https://ugetube.com/watch/connecting-with-jessie-czebotar-029_JpaxHruJOZWq4kV.html

(ARA 030) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar (030) 31 March 2021 https://curatedsourcesltw.wordpress.com/2022/04/02/aquarius-rising-africa-connecting-with-jessie-czebotar-030/

(ARA 031) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar (031) 15 April 2021 https://ugetube.com/watch/connecting-with-jessie-czebotar-031_OIhyrKoMiiUN4yX.html

(ARA 032) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar (032) 22 April 2021 https://ugetube.com/watch/connecting-with-jessie-czebotar-032_j1ItrhPA70hxaVj.html

(ARA 033) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar (033) 12 May 2021 https://ugetube.com/watch/connecting-with-jessie-czebotar-033_V7fEexHcZBCLeut.html

(ARA 034) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar (034) 20 May 2021 https://curatedsourcesltw.wordpress.com/2022/04/02/aquarius-rising-africa-connecting-with-jessie-czebotar-034/

(ARA 035) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar (035) 26 May 2021 https://curatedsourcesltw.wordpress.com/2022/04/02/aquarius-rising-africa-connecting-with-jessie-czebotar-035/

(ARA 036) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar (036) 10 June 2021 https://www.bitchute.com/video/WuNZtuFSGW3q/

(ARA 037) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar (037) 17 June 2021 https://curatedsourcesltw.wordpress.com/2022/04/02/connecting-with-jessie-czebotar-037-music-video-decode-beyonce-pink/

(ARA 038) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar (038) 24 June 2021 https://curatedsourcesltw.wordpress.com/2022/04/02/aquarius-rising-africa-connecting-with-jessie-czebotar-038-music-video-decode-miley-cyrus-rihanna-and-eminem/

(ARA 039) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar (039) 8 July 2021 https://curatedsourcesltw.wordpress.com/2022/04/02/aquarius-rising-africa-connecting-with-jessie-czebotar-039-elemental-witches-her-daunting-childhood/

(ARA 040) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar (040) 15 July 2021 https://curatedsourcesltw.wordpress.com/2022/04/02/aquarius-rising-africa-connecting-with-jessie-czebotar-040-her-personal-journey-of-emotional-healing/

(ARA 041) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar (041) 22 July 2021 https://curatedsourcesltw.wordpress.com/2022/04/02/aquarius-rising-africa-connecting-with-jessie-czebotar-041-her-personal-journey-of-emotional-healing-continues/

(ARA 042) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar (042) 28 July 2021 https://curatedsourcesltw.wordpress.com/2022/04/02/aquarius-rising-africa-connecting-with-jessie-czebotar-042-some-of-the-most-impactful-experiences-on-her-emotional-journey/

(ARA 043) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar (043) 8 September 2021 https://curatedsourcesltw.wordpress.com/2022/04/02/aquarius-rising-africa-connecting-with-jessie-czebotar-043-recapitation-of-all-that-is-good/

(ARA 044) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar (044) 6 October 2021 https://curatedsourcesltw.wordpress.com/2022/04/02/aquarius-rising-africa-connecting-with-jessie-czebotar-044-on-the-light-side-of-the-system/

(ARA 045) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar (045) 20 October 2021 https://curatedsourcesltw.wordpress.com/aquarius-rising-africa-transcripts-featuring-jessie-czebotar/

(ARA 046) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar (046) 27 October 2021 https://curatedsourcesltw.wordpress.com/aquarius-rising-africa-transcripts-featuring-jessie-czebotar/

(ARA 047) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar (047) 10 November 2021 https://curatedsourcesltw.wordpress.com/aquarius-rising-africa-transcripts-featuring-jessie-czebotar

(ARA 048) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar (048) 8 December 2021 https://curatedsourcesltw.wordpress.com/aquarius-rising-africa-transcripts-featuring-jessie-czebotar

(ARA 049) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar (049) 15 December 2021 https://curatedsourcesltw.wordpress.com/2022/04/02/aquarius-rising-africa-with-jessie-czebotar-mole-children-and-healing-with-grief-over-the-holiday-season-049/

(ARA 050) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar (050) 5 January 2022 https://curatedsourcesltw.wordpress.com/2022/04/02/aquarius-rising-africa-connecting-with-jessie-czebotar-050-the-illumination-rituals-and-the-hampstead-2/

(ARA 051) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar (051) 14 January 2022 https://curatedsourcesltw.wordpress.com/2022/04/02/aquarius-rising-africa-connecting-with-jessie-czebotar-051-boys-in-her-cellfocus-on-e/

(ARA 052) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar (052) 26 January 2022 https://curatedsourcesltw.wordpress.com/aquarius-rising-africa-transcripts-featuring-jessie-czebotar

(ARA 053) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar Satanic Calendar and Fake Band Aids2 February 2022 https://odysee.com/@AquariusRisingAfrica:4/with-jessie-czebotar-...-satanic:4

(ARA 054) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar Satanic Calendar and Recent Events in South Africa 9 February 2022 https://odysee.com/@AquariusRisingAfrica:4/with-jessie-czebotar-on-satanic-calendar:d

(ARA 055) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie Czebotar Orlando Update, Simpsons & The Truckers & Cotton Schwab (haha) & tiny tim 23 February 2022 https://odysee.com/@AquariusRisingAfrica:4/with-jessie-czebotar-...-orlando-update,:3

(ARA 056) Aquarius Rising Africa Jessie in the House! We’re talking Blood Diamonds & Lacey Things 2 March 2022 https://odysee.com/@AquariusRisingAfrica:4/jessie-in-the-house!-(056)-we're-talking:e

(ARA 101) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with OVERCOMERS (002): Jessie Czebotar & Lisa Meister 15 October 2020 https://curatedsourcesltw.wordpress.com/2022/04/02/aquarius-rising-africa-connecting-with-overcomers-002-jessie-czebotar-lisa-meister/

(ARA 102) Aquarius Rising Africa Connecting with Jessie and David Connecting with Jessie and David... we're recapitating today 11 September 21 https://curatedsourcesltw.wordpress.com/2022/04/02/aquarius-rising-africa-connecting-with-jessie-and-david-were-recapitating-today-11-sept-21/

(ARA 103) Aquarius Rising Africa with Jessie and Carmen. 9 October 2021. https://curatedsourcesltw.wordpress.com/2022/04/02/aquarius-rising-africa-with-jessie-and-carmen/

(ARA 104) Solutions with Aquarius Rising Africa ARA SOLUTIONS (012) with Jessie Czebotar ... surviving family life after Satanic Ritual Abuse ... 23 March 2022 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=NaHLYj-NmEE

(AS 01) (Anna) Starfire. *MK Ultra Dark Labs 1959-1975 Testimonial Report*. Coppell, Texas, 2021

(BM 01) Bride Ministries International. Illuminati Structure Explained by one Chosen as a Mother of Darkness. 10 August 2019 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=3ydBIn-wYP0

(BM 02) Bride Ministries International. My Training to Become a Mother of Darkness in the Illuminati. 25 August 2019 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=HZq5Gz-UMyk

(BT 01) Brice Taylor, *Thanks for the Memories*. 1999. Brice Taylor Trust.

(CAF 01) Catherine Austin Fitts. On The Highwire with Del Bigtree. FORMER GOVT. OFFICIAL: “FINANCIAL System UNDER ATTACK” 19 August 2021 https://www.bitchute.com/video/Z5SMOeGvr8v6/

(CB 01) SE01/E02 (Part 1): MK Ultra, SRA, Illuminati, the NWO, & The Cheryl Beck Story 14 April 2021 https://rumble.com/vfwbtp-se01e02-part-2-mk-ultra-and-the-cheryl-beck-story.html

(CB 02) SE01/E02 (Part 2): MK Ultra & The Cheryl Beck Story 20 April 2021 https://rumble.com/vfwp5z-se01e02-part-2-mk-ultra-and-the-cheryl-beck-story.html

(CB 03) SE01/E02 (Part 3): SRA & The Cheryl Beck Story 6 May 2021 https://rumble.com/vh8bub-se01e02-part-3-sra-and-the-cheryl-beck-story.html

(CB 04) Throwaway Child Cheryl Beck part 1 - 23 June 2021 https://www.bitchute.com/video/xUWweKYlGJVg/

(CB 05) Throwaway Child Cheryl Beck part 2 - 21 July 2021 https://www.bitchute.com/video/chChqxv1h766/

(CB 06) SE01/E02 (Part 4) Adrenochrome & The Cheryl Beck Story. 6 May 2021.https://rumble.com/vh8h9v-se01e02-part-4-adrenochrome-and-the-cheryl-beck-story.html

(CF 01) Cathy Fox Blog. Illuminati Players and the Battlefield Earth Realm. https://cathyfox.wordpress.com/2020/11/27/illuminati-players-and-the-battlefield-earthly-realm/ accessed 18 January 2021

(CF 02) Cathy Fox Blog. Obama is now running the Satanic Council. https://cathyfox.wordpress.com/2020/06/04/obama-now-running-the-satanic-council/ accessed 28 August 2021

(CO 01) Cathy O'Brien with Mark Phillips, *Access Denied for Reasons of National Security*. 2004

(CO 02) Cathy O'Brien, *TranceFormation of America*. 1995.

(CO 03) Cathy O’Brien with Michael Jaco, MK Ultra, Child Trafficking, PTSD survivor discusses how we can overcome with Cathy O’Brien. Unknown original air date. Repost date 10 October 2021. https://www.bitchute.com/video/UAdJ5uMGkT4T/

(CO 04) Cathy O’Brien, Sex, Lies & Mind Control, http://whale.to/b/brien2.html, accessed Friday Nov. 26, 2021

(CO 05) Cathy O’Brien, How Trauma, Propaganda & Secret Gov. Programs Rule the World (and How Healing Is Possible) 15 May 2021 https://odysee.com/@sayerji:7/cathyo'brieninterview:a

(CO 06) Cathy O’Brien, Inside The Matrix 10-17-21 with Cathy O'Brien 17 October 2021. https://rumble.com/vnvp9q-inside-the-matrix-10-17-21-with-cathy-obrien.html

(CS 1) Carmen Smith Studer - Throne Room of Heaven Described. 31 March 2021 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Dfc1liBDpho

(CS 2) Carmen Smith Studer - Jessie Czebotar Describes Satan’s Underworld. 21 April 2021 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Fu-99eQbh68

(CS 3) Carmen Smith Studer - Jessie Czebotar’s Friend Ms. Beck. 25 April 2021 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=rEiSmmh2SrA

(CS 4) Carmen Smith Studer - Jessie Czebotar Never Ending Questions. 28 April 2021 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=rYFJIeKScT0

(CS 5) Carmen Smith Studer - Satan’s Fools and God’s Healing Pools. 12 May 2021 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=zjBJMbSFUEU

(CS 6) Carmen Smith Studer - Fabulous Ms. Beck is back with Carmen Studer. 21 May 2021 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=P7MGQXlJgFs

(CS 7) Carmen Smith Studer - First Time Going Public About Her Father Abusing Her with Kimball Davis. 22 May 2021 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=GRYP5Gw-PH4

(CS 8) Carmen Smith Studer - THE CLUB no one wants to belong to, with guest Cathryn Sullivan. 9 June 2021 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=roT901SUGlU

(CS 9) Carmen Smith Studer - They picked the Wrong Girls Jessie Czebotar Madyson Marquette & Claire Hocking Okell. 9 June 2021 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=_zrszejZgRc

(CS 10) Carmen Smith Studer - Healing from Satanic Ritual Abuse Ms. Beck. 13 June 2021 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=MX-KHtNtH944

(CS 11) Carmen Smith Studer - Jessie Czebotar featuring Clare Okell Global Warriors. 23 June 2021 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=F702QJbIXkM

(CS 12) Carmen Smith Studer - They Picked the Wrong Girls & Surprise a Navy SEAL. 30 June 2021 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=5-hPXKHaq08

(CS 13) Carmen Smith Studer - Carmen's Crazy Questions for Jessie Czebotar. 4 August 2021 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=4zNYoPe43hc

(CS 14) Carmen Smith Studer - The Underground God's Tools and Abuse Effects with Jessie Czebotar 18 August 2021 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=XPu-foKLwwg

(CS 15) Carmen Smith Studer -Moving Forward with Grace With Madyson Marquette and Terrina Picarello. 18 August 2021 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=4_JHYK4CuiQ

(CS 16) Carmen Smith Studer - Jessie Czebotar Joins me Remote Viewing vs Visions and Revelations. 6 October 2021 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=y4NQ01v8eio

(CS 17) Carmen Smith Studer - Jessie is Back with Carmen Studer. 27 October 2021 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=SXqlQUumaSI

(CS 18) Carmen Smith Studer -The Underworld of Astroworld. 10 November 2021 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=a1-Gd_rWTVE

(CS 19) Carmen Smith Studer - Breeder Program Questions Answered with Jessie Czebotar. 10 December 2021 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=8DDqkJvneZw

(CS 20) Carmen Smith Studer - Jessie Czebotar | The SECRETS in Plain Sight. 5 January 2021 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=wksgC9CGX6g

(CS 21) Carmen Smith Studer - Just Fun | With Jessie, Chantelle, Tom & Me. 15 January 2022 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=wPT033qC044

(CS 22) Carmen Smith Studer - Saving All The Children | with Jessie Czebotar (originally titled "Beast Systems") 19 January 2022 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=f5jQX_PQQ78

(CS 23) Carmen Smith Studer - xWhistleblower of Epste!n & Ghis!aine Cabal | With Artist/Victor Maria Farmer 21 January 2022 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=BkHN7KAXgsI

(CS 24) Carmen Smith Studer - A Dynamic Duo Jessie Czebotar & Madyson Marquette. 2 February 2022 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=U3qJ3kDoQyI

(CS 25) Carmen Smith Studer - Jessie Czebotar | Light Side of Darkness. 9 February 2022 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Yg3SnvXnOkQ

(CS 26) Carmen Smith Studer - Time with the amazing ..... Jessie Czebotar. 7 March 2022 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=f4YH0zRGOWY

(CS 27) Carmen Smith Studer - Cheryl Beck is BACK | Squid Games Show. 5 March 2022. https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=8eLFCpDecH8

(CSB 01) Cali Shai Bergandi P1 - Occult Child Trafficking, Epstein, NASA and SRA Survivor Exposes ALL. 14 November 2021 https://www.bitchute.com/video/ez6DZbWIfEv3/

(CSB 02) Cali Shai Bergandi P2 - Occult, Child Trafficking, Epstein, NASA & SRA Survivor Exposes ALL 14 November 2021 https://www.bitchute.com/video/JSLONgNm5Hvr/

(CW 01) Episode 1 - Cisco Wheeler, Halloween - A Satanic Holiday - 23 Oct 2020; mirrored on Sean Anthony's Flow of Wisdom YouTube channel 23 October 2020 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=jYW6DT5qMGk

(CW 03) Episode 3 - Cisco Wheeler, Scars, Rituals, Abortion, & Prophetic Healing. 16 November 2020.

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=0BLYT6pICdE November 16, 2020 (removed from YouTube, not mirrored any where I know of)

(CW 04) Episode 4 - Cisco Wheeler, The Great I Am. 15 Nov 2020. https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=b1OoCsCksYE (removed from YouTube, not mirrored any where I know of)

(CW 05) Episode 5 - Cisco Wheeler, Healing Trusting God & The Holy Spirit. 30 Dec 2020. https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=0BLYT6pICdE (removed from YouTube, not mirrored any where I know of)

(CW 06) Episode 6 - Cisco Wheeler, The High Places. 12 Feb 2021. https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=lhDpZeRXHm4 (removed from YouTube, not mirrored any where I know of)

(CW 07) Episode 7 - Cisco Wheeler, The Breath of Life The Eternal Soul & JFK. 28 Feb 2021. https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=pRzw9WYShmM (removed from YouTube, not mirrored any where I know of)

(CW 08) Episode 8 - Cisco Wheeler, Wisdom & Revelation - The Breath of God Part 2. 4 April 2021 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ud6jMMdT80I (removed from YouTube, not mirrored any where I know of)

(CW 09) Episode 9 - Cisco Wheeler, Wisdom & Revelation The Logos. 4 April 2021 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=J2vm4btEaTo (taken off YouTube, not mirrored that I know of)

(CW 10) Episode 10 - Cisco Wheeler, Wisdom & Revelation The Glory of God - 6 May 2021 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=f6EY7J1_Jfw (taken off YouTube, not mirrored that I know of)

(CW 11) Episode 11 - Cisco Wheeler, Cheryl Beck-The Holy Spirit Healing Pools 15 May 2021https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=k2InUK-TBTg (taken off YouTube, not mirrored that I know of)

(CW 12) Cisco Wheeler Claims She Was Born Into a Illuminati Family, Subjected to Mind Control, and Used as a Child Sex Slave to Political _Elites_, Including US Presidents - Humans Are Free https://humansarefree.com/2019/11/cisco-wheeler-illuminati.html

(CW14) Cisco Wheeler Interview with Wayne Morris. Date unknown. http://whale.to/b/wheeler.html

(DS 01) David Shurter. The Truth About Scalia's Murder—And Yes, He Was Murdered. https://davidshurter.com/2016/02/17/the-truth-about-scalias-murder-and-yes-he-was-murdered/ accessed 26 September 2021

(DR 01) Doug Riggs Pastor Doug Riggs - Dissociative Identity Disorder, Human Alien Hybrids, Demonic Possession. 22 October 2021. https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=49MtxYSPzbY

(DR 02) Doug Riggs. 基督的誕生 (Doug Riggs the hot seat August 11 2021) 7 December 2021. https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=w8DjDW4ug_s

(DNR 01) David Nino Rodríguez with Jessie Czebotar on Global Cabal and Anti Christ https://www.bitchute.com/video/sGSMnysgIFOl/

(DO 00529) Dark Outpost 2020-5-29 Illuminati Victim Speaks Out Part 1 https://cathyfox.wordpress.com/2020/05/30/jessie-czebotar-with-dave-zublick-interview-1-29th-may-2020/

(DO 00605) Dark Outpost 2020-06-5 Illuminati Victim Speaks Out Part 2 https://cathyfox.wordpress.com/2020/06/10/jessie-czebotar-with-dave-zublick-interview-2-5th-june-2020/

(DO 00611) Dark Outpost 2020-06-11 Illuminati Victim Speaks Out Part 3 https://cathyfox.wordpress.com/2020/06/13/illuminati-sacrifices-magik-rituals-and-gloria-vanderbilt/

(DO 00618) Dark Outpost 2020-06-18 Midsummer Solstice Luciferian Ritual https://cathyfox.wordpress.com/2020/06/20/midsummer-solstice-illuminati-ritual/

(DO 00625) Dark Outpost 2020-06-25 The Tunnel Children https://watch.darkoutpost.tv/program-group/58cf7570264a2fade3761847ed4437b3/program/a4a90a745175daffcb06b1be48ccaccb

(DO 00702) Dark Outpost 2020-07-02 The Adrenochrome Nightmare https://watch.darkoutpost.tv/

program-group/program/914b5ff85c9eb93a47681077fcc6126c

(DO 00708) Dark Outpost 2020-07-08 Through The Illuminati Looking Glass transcript https://cathyfox.wordpress.com/2020/07/30/illuminati-whistleblower-jessies-interviews-with-david-zublick-5-6-7/

(DO 00723) Dark Outpost 2020-07-23 Questions For Jessie https://watch.darkoutpost.tv/program-group/program/70ba15cac694a01077d02c59d1697dd6

(DO 01112) Dark Outpost 2020-08-13 Ask Jessie https://watch.darkoutpost.tv/program-group/program/ff17ce3a58c58a71418d982461decaa3

(DO 01022) Dark Outpost 2020-10-22 Madeleine McCann Illuminati Victim https://watch.darkoutpost.tv/program-group/program/9eba481366d302ff2441006054c75c0e

(DO 01029) Dark Outpost 2020-10-29 Should Christians Celebrate Halloween https://watch.darkoutpost.tv/program-group/program/62dd2aba8823f3e7da4e348815cc532f

(DO 01105) Dark Outpost 2020-11-05 Megachurch Megahucksters https://watch.darkoutpost.tv/program-group/program/fdad34212a31781e0a0495ae012cfdee

(DO 01112) Dark Outpost 2020-11-12 Ask Jessie https://www.bitchute.com/video/kg0Fpb7yTYrI/

(DO 01119) Dark Outpost 2020-11-19 The Church of Satan https://watch.darkoutpost.tv/program-group/program/7ca29f05597746b33e6c0183d61860a4

(DO 01120) Dark Outpost 2020-11-20 Project Looking Glass https://watch.darkoutpost.tv/program-group/program/d0fb0b8c68a25ffe1cc91b451a32644a

(DO 01203) Dark Outpost 2020-12-03 Michael Flynn Pedo Hunter https://watch.darkoutpost.tv/program-group/program/bd1cd22397637016 34f88ef10ff7eef6

(DO 01217) Dark Outpost 2020-12-17 Days Of Darkness https://watch.darkoutpost.tv/program-group/program/7afbdf673b2271039c2f23ee35e68b33

(DO 01221) Dark Outpost 2020-12-21 Will Trump Pull The Trigger https://watch.darkoutpost.tv/program-group/13685c5c245849a842f4f48e4b99836f/program/b8d5b013fd7cd0af1b366cece6a15e44

(DO 10211) Dark Outpost 2021-02-11 Clapper Confirms-Mike Pence A Pedo https://watch.darkoutpost.tv/program-group/e1962fa08ae2153eed106d00fcdfe9a5/program/a16a1d1323495715497e560f51b4c6b9

(DO 10225) Dark Outpost 2021-02-25 Military Fights Underground War https://watch.darkoutpost.tv/program-group/program/1036979ab256baa1f3691d86f040c62d

(DO 10304) Dark Outpost 2021-03-04 White House Tunnels Blown Up Children Saved https://watch.darkoutpost.tv/program-group/program/7bbd4ecf8272c9c891332ec4348ffe90

(DO 10311) Dark Outpost 2021-03-11 Trump Issues Death Warrant For Fauci https://watch.darkoutpost.tv/program-group/program/5aa29f7c6b85cd9888198934f93ded5b

(DO 10318) Dark Outpost 2021-03-18 Biden Is Computer Generated https://rumble.com/vesfe1-dark-outpost-03-18-2021-biden-is-computer-generated.html

(DO 10326) Dark Outpost 2021-03-26 Vaccinated Becoming Reinfected https://watch.darkoutpost.tv/program-group/e3dc970c0c4f7946fbcc14c25405b483/program/af7f2e74b0a9d5794d05cec42b3f9ecf

(DO 10408) Dark Outpost 2021-04-08 Demon Lands On Vatican Roof https://www.bitchute.com/video/LsJneQxSreNU/

(DO 10415) Dark Outpost 2021-04-15 Demons Materializing On Earth https://www.bitchute.com/video/jRm53ZP3jMlk/

(DO 10422) Dark Outpost 2021-04-22 PTSD Or Demonic Possession? https://watch.darkoutpost.tv/program-group/program/4fa6dd66cf4eedf936e66cbea6759b87

(DO 10506) Dark Outpost 2021-05-06 Is This Satanic Cult Leader Still Alive? https://www.bitchute.com/video/4VGKrC92Ve0B/ or https://watch.darkoutpost.tv/program-group/program/52b09e315dccd0d8cf4710ca153d8614

(DO 10513) Dark Outpost 2021-05-13 Illuminati Victim Answers Her Critics https://www.bitchute.com/video/su0yMWAdmtXX/

(DO 10520) Dark Outpost 2021-05-20 Black-Eyed Children Real Or Myth? https://www.bitchute.com/video/vdK10G5gfhTZ/ or https://watch.darkoutpost.tv/program-group/program/1daf0e78f1da4335b3fc76d396787812

(DO 10603) Dark Outpost 2021-06-03 They Might be Giants https://www.bitchute.com/video/pXKaPsFxgxvR/

(DO 10610) Dark Outpost 2021-06-10 The Secret of Glamis Castle https://www.bitchute.com/video/gmVk1n8e8SRJ/

(DO 10617) Dark Outpost 2021-06-17 Are these the End Times? https://www.bitchute.com/video/wQ7wjEHgTUgR/

(DO 10624) Dark Outpost 2021-06-24 Are Psychics Prophets? https://www.bitchute.com/video/nOBVReaH0MN3/

(DO 10701) Dark Outpost 2021-07-01 Council of 13 https://www.bitchute.com/video/jU9S2b880FYq/

(DO 10708) Dark Outpost 2021-07-08 The Tactics of Grooming https://www.bitchute.com/video/nBejap0l18vj/

(DO 10722) Dark Outpost 2021-07-22 Is Satan Winning? https://www.bitchute.com/video/iCQgRinlGlZe/

(DO 10729) Dark Outpost 2021-07-29 Military Holding white House for Trump https://www.bitchute.com/video/TPD41QqfJpAK/

(DO 10805) Dark Outpost 2021-08-05 Disney the Nightmare Continues https://www.bitchute.com/video/GERpCsGy9WZD/

(DO 10819) Dark Outpost 2021-08-19 NYC Will be Nuked on 911 https://www.bitchute.com/video/3WzsgzMf7lvX/

(DO 10902) Dark Outpost 2021-09-02 Craig Sawyer-Hero or Monster https://www.bitchute.com/video/f7gVlS6QgBFn/

(DO 10909) Dark Outpost 2021-09-09 Dead Men Walkin https://www.bitchute.com/video/yTQVLR6211NA/

(DO 11007) Dark Outpost 2021-10-07 Jessie's War-Battling Demons From Two Worlds https://watch.darkoutpost.tv/program-group/program/a003726527f40ea41d9afc4cd4523a74

(DO 11014) Dark Outpost 2021-10-14 Accident or Illuminati Murder https://www.bitchute.com/video/jrddQKiPGUGb/

(DO 11020) Dark Outpost 2021-10-20 Jessie Returns A Battle Rejoined https://watch.darkoutpost.tv/program-group/program/765e15f8412fa81b8b1753dbcbed452e

(DO 11028) Dark Outpost 2021-10-28 Biden’s Lolita Express https://www.bitchute.com/video/rsvz8RYaQ4Y1/

(DO 11104) Dark Outpost 2021-11-4 Navy Seals Rescue Smuggled Kids from Cargo Ship https://www.bitchute.com/video/LXU1LKySyWyo/

(DO 11111) Dark Outpost 2021-11-11 is Astral Projection Satanic? https://watch.darkoutpost.tv/program-group/program/2e73971d2e54c8f72638c67f8ddd375c

(DO 11118) Dark Outpost 2021-11-18 is Masturbation a Sin? https://www.bitchute.com/video/q3e51re0gGMG/

(DO 11209) Dark Outpost 2021-12-09 What is the Black Eye Club? https://watch.darkoutpost.tv/program-group/1869922e22b42b8bca786679e4f1b563/program/911d20ef71278c5486f15c60e5f286cc

(DO 20106) Dark Outpost 2022-01-06 White Hats Created Omicron As Antidote Pt. 1 https://www.bitchute.com/video/H1vg7joDcQH4/

(DO 20114) Dark Outpost 2022-01-14 Revelations In Time And Space Part 1 https://www.bitchute.com/video/772DGDdkJPru/

(DO 20121) Dark Outpost 2022-01-22 The Vatican's Secret Time Machine https://www.bitchute.com/video/eP5RRTgPI4He/

(DO 20127) Dark Outpost 2022-01-27 Cirsten W Death Takes A Bizarre Turn https://watch.darkoutpost.tv/program-group/6e080cba8a7f1403d5ac0efd2bed0e8c/program/586bf5d083db85e0ba1b1ef5452a2cdf

(DO 20203) Dark Outpost 2022-02-03 Spiritual Attacks Part 2 https://watch.darkoutpost.tv/program-group/73ecd00649d6822c0f1257c704325594/program/45737d842cf92585a17858aa109086a4

(DO 20210) Dark Outpost 2022-02-10 Demonically Possessed Crossing U.S. Border https://watch.darkoutpost.tv/program-group/802e74401a6e081c8739008468a0d453/program/87130ef1a2a80c10412c7911ffa01a64

(DO 20224) Dark Outpost 2022-02-24 Eastbound and Down Part 1 https://watch.darkoutpost.tv/program-group/802e74401a6e081c8739008468a0d453/program/66cd8bfa2a4034803656e612b2b4db8e

(DO 20324) Dark Outpost 03-24-2022 Putin Beheads Ukrainian Bioweapons Engineers https://watch.darkoutpost.tv/program-group/

882d4ff27b2978f8c9482234d08ea915/program/cc8a4e0885c7b45ee9768602553f0d0b

(FB 01) Fiona Barnett, *Eyes Wide Open*, Lockdown edition. June 2020. https://archive.org/details/eyeswideopen-2020-edition

(FS 01) Fritz Springmeier and Cisco Wheeler, *Deeper Insights Into the Illuminati Formula*. 2010. CreateSpace Independent Publishing Platform

(FS 02) Fritz Springmeier, Bloodlines of the Illuminati. 2005. Pentracks Publications.

(FS 03) Fritz Springmeier and Cisco Wheeler, The Illuminati Formula to Create an Undetectable Total Mind Controlled Slave. http://whale.to/b/sp/for1.html

(FS 04) Fritz Springmeier, Be Wise As Serpants. http://www.lovethetruth.com/books/fritz_springmeier/be_wise_as_serpents.pdf

(FS 05) Live with Fritz Springmeier NEW 2021! https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=dJLgNs-C45U 12 Dec 2021

(GC 01) Gene Cosensei (Gene Decode) 5.2.2021 Deep Dive Understanding the Vaccine

https://blessed2teach.mykajabi.com/products/gene-unleashed-level-8-and-above/categories/2782454/posts/2148801815 (this is a pay site, you would have to subscribe to get access to this video)

(GC 02) GENE DECODE DISCUSSES CABAL ARMY REVERSED WITH NICHOLAS VENIAMIN. 6 September 2021

https://www.bitchute.com/video/1uakDA7sfuf8/

(GC 03) 2-24-202: GENE DECODE, PLANET X, Marduk, Bohemian Groove, Col Michael Aquino, Galactic Federation https://ugetube.com/watch/2-24-202-gene-decode-planet-x-marduk-bohemian-groove-col-michael-aquino-galactic-federation_NI2GKBUZpjrr962.html

(GD 01) QBits with Good Dog, #150/159 Light at the End of the Tunnel 21 April 2020. https://rumble.com/ved5ev-159-light-at-the-end-of-the-tunnel.html

(GD 02) QBits with Good Dog, #151 Heart of Darnkess. 3 April 2021 https://rumble.com/ved4zv-151-heart-of-darnkess.html

(GD 03) QBits with Good Dog,#191/215 Grim Fairy Tale. 4 March 2021 https://rumble.com/embed/vbqyvz/?pub=2lydb

(GD 04) QBits with Good Dog, #195/219 Supplies and chains. 24 July 2020 https://rumble.com/ved4th-219-supplies-and-chains.html

(GD 05) QBits with Good Dog,#253 Draining the Swamp. 14 September 2020 https://rumble.com/vecofn-253-draining-the-swamp.html

(GP 01) TouchedByPrayer TV Gina Phillips interview. 20 November 2020. https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=PNOch-k_Lv8

(GP 02) Gina Phillips, Twitter https://twitter.com/GinaPhi94724925

(GP 03) Gina Phillips, QnA Welcome to the Kingdom. 23 February 2021. https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=OJEoMVF4p8U

(GP 04) Gina Phillips, Intro to Base Programming RAMC. 14 March 2021. https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Pm5Sut9YnPU

(GP 05) Gina PhillipsTruth Unveiled - Gina Phillips Decodes the Travis Scott AstroWorld Concert Part 1 GP06 17

November 2021. https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=jYNRyyH6mwk

(GP 06) Gina PhillipsTruth Unveiled - Gina Phillips Decodes the Travis Scott AstroWorld Concert Part 2 GP06 19 November 2021. https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=g3RLsWBU7TA

(GSR 01) Global Spiritual Revolution Radio. Exposing the Global Luciferian Order. March 25, 2021. https://ugetube.com/watch/bishop-with-jessie-exposing-the-global-luciferian-order-special-guest-ms-jessie-czebotar_jkcEPOm1h3ZBJUd.html

(JA 01) Jeanette Archer. Exposing the Satanic Queen at Windsor Castle. 18 October 2021. https://odysee.com/@StopTheCrime:d/satantic:9

(JA 02) Jeanette Archer. For the Sake of Your Eternal Soul - Watch and Share Jeanette Archer SRA Survivor. 18 June 2021 https://youtu.be/KcD9puGP5Vs

(JH 01) Joaquin Hagopian. American Empire Exposed. Chapter 11, Book 5 Australia: Where the Globalized Satanic Pedophilia Network Thrives Like No Other. 20 May 2021. http://empireexposed.blogspot.com/2021/05/chapter-11-book-5-australia-where.html?m=1 Link broken; blog was terminated recently. Accessed 22 Sept 2021. Check out Joaquin's published books.

(JM 01) Diving into the Mormon Temple Rituals: The Endowment (Part 3) 24 January 2022 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Gju9VBikTfY

(KB 01) Kerth Barker, *Angelic Defenders & Demonic Abusers*. 2019. Kerth Barker Books, www.kerthbarker.com

(KB 02) Kerth Barker, *Deconstructing the Illuminati, What the Illuminati Really is and How to Defeat It*. 2017. Kerth Barker Books, www.kerthbarker.com

(KB 03) Kerth Barker, *Cannibalism, Blood Drinking & High-Adept Satanism*. 2019. Kerth Barker Books, www.kerthbarker.com

(KB 04) Kerth Barker, *Overcoming Monarch Mind Control*. 2019. Kerth Barker Books, www.kerthbarker.com

(KS 01) Kathleen Sullivan. *Unshackled: A Survivor's Story of Mind Control*. https://archive.org/details/2003SullivanUnshackledASurvivorsStoryOfMindControl1

(LG 01) Lucien Greaves. More than Half of American Satanists Identify as LGBTQ. https://pulpitandpen.org/2019/08/30/more-than-half-of-american-satanists-identify-as-lgbtq/

(LG 02) Lucien Greaves. Exposing Doug Mesner/Lucien Greaves – co-founder of the Satanic Temple and Grey Faction presenter. https://ritualabuse.us/ritualabuse/exposing-doug-mesnerlucien-greaves-co-founder-of-the-satanic-temple-and-grey-faction-presenter/. Accessed 27 November 2021.

(MJ 01) Michael Jaco. Defeating the demonic realm & bringing in light. 13 March 2021 Jessie Czebotar reveals looking glass, RV & more https://www.bitchute.com/video/X3qUecpiRqHW/

(MJ 02) Shining the Light on Human Sex Traffic by Elites and Using the DUMBS and Orphanages to Hide It. January 2021. https://www.bitchute.com/video/pBzs6u5pxYuB/

(MJ 03) Michael Jaco, As many as 6 in 10 veterans are committing suicide according to reliable sources. What is the cause? 4 June 2021 https://www.bitchute.com/video/BsXNKI1NCTEz/

(MJ 04) Jessie Czebotar Joins The Intuitive Report to Discuss the Jesus Strand and How the Dark Side Uses it 11 September 2021 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=x8nvlwObEvE

(MJ 05) Is the System Set Up for Evil? Are Judges, Lawyers, Police and Medical Entities Involved? 4 August 2021 https://rumble.com/vkpcpy-is-the-System-set-up-for-evil.html

(MM 01) Clare and Madyson Chat with Mark. 25 May 2021 https://www.bitchute.com/video/8zEK5r0QZKZl/

(NYP 01) New York Post. Vogue's Jill Biden cover is so fawning it would embarrass North Korean propaganda. 20 June 2021. https://nypost.com/2021/06/29/vogues-jill-biden-cover-is-so-fawning-it-would-embarrass-north-korean-propaganda/

(RB 01) Rebecca Brown. *He Came to Set the Captives Free*. 1992. Whitaker House.

(RB 02) Rebecca Brown. *Prepare for War*. 1992. Whitaker House. https://archive.org/details/prepareforwar00brow

(RoR 013) Right on Radio Episode 13 Satan Chose Jessie. 12 August 2020. https://rightonradio.podbean.com/e/ep13-satan-chose-jessie-replay-1st-interview-with-jessie/

(RoR 015) Right on Radio Episode 15 Devil’s Appearance Revealed. 15 August 2020. https://www.podbean.com/ew/dir-qhie2-b2b8298

(RoR 018) Right on Radio Episode 18 Vamps Masons and Possession. 24 August 2020. https://rightonradio.podbean.com/e/ep18-vampires-masons-and-possession/

(RoR 019) Right on Radio Episode 19 High Priestess Cooper’s Training. 30 August 2020. https://rightonradio.podbean.com/e/ep19-high-priestess-coopers-training/

(RoR 027) Right on Radio Episode 27 Shaky Ground--RBG-Epstein-HRC-Weiner. 7 October 2020. https://rightonradio.podbean.com/e/ep27-shaky-ground/

(RoR 029) Right on Radio Episode 29 Mule Theory. 25 September 2020. https://rightonradio.podbean.com/e/ep29-the-mule-theory/

(RoR 038) Right on Radio Episode 38 Marion’s Back. 17 October 2020. https://rightonradio.podbean.com/e/ep38-marion-is-back-netherlandss/

(RoR 045) Right on Radio Episode 45 All Hallows Eve. 30 October 2020. https://rightonradio.podbean.com/e/ep45-all-hallows-eve/

(RoR 049) Right on Radio Episode 49 Somerset Decode. 13 November 2020. https://rightonradio.podbean.com/e/ep49-somerset-decode/

(RoR 069) Right on Radio Episode 69 Battlefield Earth 20 December 2020 https://www.podbean.com/ew/pb-mbhnc-f580a2

(RoR 080) Right on Radio Episode 80 Ceremonies. 10 January 2021. https://www.podbean.com/ew/pb-2va3x-f729e7

(RoR 081) Right on Radio Episode 81 Panic in DC SPACEFORCE Military and Guard Deployed State of Emergency Declared. 12 January 2021. https://www.podbean.com/ew/pb-vfnvy-f7600e

(RoR 085) Right on Radio Episode 85 Watch the Water. One Truth to Save the World. 16 January 2021. https://rightonradio.podbean.com/e/ep85-watch-the-water-one-truth-to-save-the-world/

(RoR 090) Right on Radio Episode 90 Dark to Light. Know the future. 24 January 2021. https://rightonradio.podbean.com/e/ep90-dark-to-light-know-the-future/

(RoR 096) Right on Radio Episode 96 Defeating Demons, Mockingbird Media and Markets must Fall. 4 February 2021. https://rightonradio.podbean.com/e/ep-96-defeating-demons-mockingbird-media-and-markets-must-fall-see-description-box-for-links/

(RoR 100) Right on Radio Episode 100 Lupercalia, Valentines day is a pagan holiday and is attached to demons. 14 February 2021. https://rightonradio.podbean.com/e/ep100-lupercalia-valentines-day-is-a-pagan-holiday-and-is-attached-to-demons/

(RoR 109) Right on Radio Episode 109 This Happens First The rise of the Anti-Christ. 7 March 2021. https://rightonradio.podbean.com/e/ep109-this-happens-first-the-rise-of-the-anti-christ/

(RoR 164) Right on Radio EP 164 Intel with Tom. Matrix Collapsing, G7 and DC is Closed. 15 June 2021. https://rightonradio.podbean.com/e/ep-164-intel-with-tom-matrix-collapsing-g7-and-dc-is-closed/

(RoR 168) Right on Radio Episode 168 Sitrep News and Q and A. 22 June 2021. https://www.podbean.com/ew/pb-h9pw3-106f95c

(RoR 178) Right on Radio Episode 178 Where is Mars Elon Initiates Direction Major Decode. 9 July 2021. https://rightonradio.podbean.com/e/ep178-where-is-mars-elon-initiates-direction-major-decode/

(RoR 185) Right on Radio Episode 185 Updates, Q and A Recorded Live. 22 July 2021. https://rightonradio.podbean.com/e/ep185-updates-q-and-a-recorded-live/

(RoR 196) Right on Radio Episode 196 Another Mother Exposing the DS Cabal. 24 August 2021. https://www.podbean.com/ew/pb-hm9az-10bcc89

(RoR 197) Right on Radio Episode 197 It is all about the Blood! Are we in the Final Days? 26 August 2021. https://rightonradio.podbean.com/e/ep197-it-is-all-about-the-blood-are-we-in-the-final-days/

(RoR 204) Right on Radio Episode Jessie Czebotar TRUST. A Personal Message. 14 September 2021. https://rightonradio.podbean.com/e/ep-204-jessie-czebotar-trust-a-personal-message/

(RoR 205) Right on Radio Episode 205 Power Connections The Dark Force over the Earth. 16 September 2021. https://rightonradio.podbean.com/e/ep205-power-connections-the-dark-force-over-the-earth/

(RoR 209) Right on Radio Episode 209 Name of Antichrist Proof we are in End Days. 5 October 2021. https://rightonradio.podbean.com/e/ep209-name-of-antichrist-proof-we-are-in-end-days/

(RoR 220) Right on Radio Episode 220 Mandy from Scotland Overcome with Emotional Intelligence. 27 October 2021. https://rightonradio.podbean.com/e/ep220-mandy-from-scotland-overcome-with-emotional-intelligence/

(RoR 223) Right on Radio Episode 223 Dead Lock Demons Manson, Bieber and Kan[YE]. 2 November 2021.

https://rightonradio.podbean.com/e/ep223-dead-lock-demons-manson-bieber-and-kanye/

(RoR 230) Right on Radio Episode 230 Frequency Weapon Voice of god Project It is happening NOW. 16 November 2021. https://rightonradio.podbean.com/e/ep230-frequency-weapon-voice-of-god-project-it-is-happening-now/

(RoR 234) Right on Radio Episode 234 Black Gold, Texas Tea. The Alchemy. This is our most important show ever. 22 November 2021. https://rightonradio.podbean.com/e/ep234-black-gold-texas-tea-the-alchemy-this-is-our-most-important-show-ever/

(RoR 237) Right on Radio Episode 237 Sword and Stone. Arthur, Merlin and the See Do you really want to know. 30 November 2021. https://rightonradio.podbean.com/e/ep237-sword-and-stone-arthur-merlin-and-the-see-do-you-really-want-to-know/

(RoR 240) Right on Radio Episode 240 Revelation Chapter 18. In One Hour. Babylon the Great is Destroyed. 5 December 2021. https://rightonradio.podbean.com/e/ep240-revelation-chapter-18-in-one-hour-babylon-the-great-is-destroyed/

(RoR 241) Right on Radio Episode 241 The Secret City of Shamballa Kundalini Sex Magik Jesus Conscious. 7 December 2021. https://rightonradio.podbean.com/e/ep241-the-secret-city-of-shamballa-kundalini-sex-magik-jesus-conscious/

(RoR 242) Right on Radio Episode 242 Stranger at the Pentagon. Angels Aliens and Demons in DC. Shall we Play a Game? 9 December 2021. https://rightonradio.podbean.com/e/ep242-stranger-at-the-pentagon-angels-aliens-and-demons-in-dc-shall-we-play-a-game/

(RoR 244) Right on Radio Episode 244 Mind Soul Immortal. Military Mass Population Mind Control. Voice of god Project. 14 December 2021. https://rightonradio.podbean.com/e/ep244-mind-soul-immortal-military-mass-population-mind-control-voice-of-god-project/

(RB 01) Ronald Bernard: My breaking and turning point. 2 September 2020 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=0CvhAtX1O7Y

(RD 01) Russ Dizdar. Undercover believers expose Amish Darkness. 7 February 2019 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=G9u7XOylO10

(RD 02) Russ Dizdar 080417. 14 August 2017. https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=VaeB0t6Mwv8

(RR 01) The Reveal Report, Occult Ritual Abuse. 5 February 2021 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=1q62ZXGPraE&t=5s

(RR 02) The Reveal Report, Special LIVE report with guest Jessie Czebotar Psalm Magick. 26 February 2021 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=r6xr310azjw

(RR 03) The Reveal Report, Special live report on the Nephilim Giants with guest Jessie Czebotar. 12 March 2021 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=rRqfxvFqeS

(RR 04) The Reveal Report, Special LIVE report - Unleashing the power of GOD with guest Jessie Czebotar. 10 March 2021 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=PT8mECDKS5c

(RR 05) The Reveal Report, Demonic Attacks & Gods protection. 28 March 2021 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=q4gk-wZBN2g&t=1s

(RR 06) The Reveal Report, Special live report She's back April 16, 2021. https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Kb4RGABpx1w

(RR 07) The Reveal Report, Spiritual Warfare with Ex-Satanist John Ramirez. 23 April 2021 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Ck20tvwCX8Y

(RR 08) The Reveal Report, Live with Jessie Czebotar Brice Watson talking Glamis Castle. 30 April 2021 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=jV16qmA_DvI

(RR 09) The Reveal Report, Special report with Jessie Czebotar TV Star Roseanne plus guests giving Testimony. 7 May 2021 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=u0TIupi0L18

(RR 10) The Reveal Report, Special LIVE report - with Jessie Czebotar discussing Hollywood & The Occult. 14 May 2021 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=qUrpbRJdJtI

(RR 11) The Reveal Report, LIVE Report with Jessie Czebotar Discussing Seance Spirit Communication. 21 May 2021 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=DKOx4ervPwI

(RR 12) The Reveal Report, Jessie Decodes Occult Symbols and Logos. 4 June 2021 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=3Fw850BMys0

(RR 13) The Reveal Report, LIVE report with Jessie Czebotar - hidden symbols in kids shows. 11 June 2021 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=2uJdrQ6I2Y0

(RR 14) The Reveal Report, Vampires and the Hollywood Elite. 18 June 2021 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=gOK1jMA86k0

(RR 15) The Reveal Report, LIVE report - Brice Watson & Jessie Czebotar discus Anton Lavey and the rise of Satanism

25 June 2021 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=-9OgjDToPKU

(RR 16) The Reveal Report, Bishop Larry Gaiters & Jessie Czebotar discuss Spiritual Warfare 2 July 2021 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Pgo_ESAxYGA

(RR 17) The Reveal Report, LIVE from Orlando Florida with Jessie Czebotar. 16 July 2021 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=XeqJlXiXQtc

(RR 18) The Reveal Report, Who is Kimberly Ann Goguen AKA Kim Possible 28 October 2021 https://rumble.com/vock3t-who-is-kimberly-ann-goguen-aka-kim-possible-must-watch.html

(RR 19) The Reveal Report, Special LIVE report with Jessie Czebotar discussing End Times Prophecy 23 July 2021. https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=S6epA_9jEns

(RR 20) The Reveal Report, LIVE from New Orleans with guest Jessie Czebotar 30 July 2021. https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=HeQGVk3KSXI

(RR 21) The Reveal Report, WE ARE BACK - special LIVE report with Jessie Czebotar & George Iceman 3 Sept 2021. https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=uFCdMJ_GmfI

(RR 22) The Reveal Report, Grifters || They BIG Mad || Can the BISHOP Get Some Receipts--unedited original from 10 sept 21. https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=wqy-i8SbW_k&t=1067s

(RR 23) The Reveal Report, Special LIVE report addressing the RUMORS with special guests 17 Sept 2021. https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=qgIM_HX_Dy4

(RR 24) The Reveal Report, Halloween History & Rituals - LIVE report this FRIDAY with Jessie Czebotar 22 Oct 2021. https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=UAhR_hvh_zQ

(RR 25) The Reveal Report, LIVE with Jessie Czebotar answering your questions 5 Nov 2021. https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=PaMgsGTiNoI

(RR 26) The Reveal Report, LIVE report decoding Travis Scott Concert Astroworld - MUST WATCH 8 Nov 2021. https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=dIoZRIcvcNk

(RR 27) The Reveal Report, Reveal Radio - Telegram show Q&A with Jessie Czebotar 17 Nov 2021. https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=MWoUUSbIr4c

(RR 28) The Reveal Report, LIVE TONIGHT - The Downfall of Hollywood is it COMING 19 November 2021. https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Md_Brt0PdpE

(RR 29) The Reveal Report, L I V E - MK Ultra Mind Control survivor Cathy OBrien TONIGHT 22 November 2021. https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=mo_fMbda0kQ

(RR 30) The Reveal Report, LIVE report with guest Jessie Czebotar - HUMAN EXPERIMENTS 26 November 2021. https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=z1F1ijSA97M

(RR 31) The Reveal Report, LIVE report with Jessie Czebotar - The Rings of the Illuminati 3 December 2021. https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ICputjqeZwU

(RR 32) The Reveal Report, LIVE report - Secret Gatherings of the Elite with Jessie Czebotar MUST WATCH 10 December 2021. https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=zJv6tS4WY5w

(RR 33) The Reveal Report, ONE Year Anniversary Show - Jessie Czebotar talks DEMONIC POSESSION. 18 December 2021. https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=lDp0XFh6tHI

(RR 34) The Reveal Report, Special LIVE report - Pagan Holidays with guest Jessie Czebotar TONIGHT! 7 January 2022. https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ERS0yEH_MWc

(RR 35) The Reveal Report, special LIVE report - Haunted Houses and what can cause them!!! 14 January 2022. https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=A6xdkHulDaU

(RR 36) The Reveal Report, TONIGHT - special report with Jessie Czebotar discussing SECRET SOCIETIES. 28 January 2022. https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=dz0SBMENLgM

(RR 37) The Reveal Report, Special LIVE report - Biblical Giants with guest Gary Wayne. 4 Feb 2022. https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=DGFgzQOh9Ng

(RR 38) The Reveal Report, special LIVE report from Orlando Florida TONIGHT! 18 Feb 2022. https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=TX1bC3pBfXg

(RR 39) The Reveal Report, Reveal Report - Special LIVE report with guest Jessie Czebotar. 25 Feb 2022. https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=QFP6sdIkki8

(RR 40) The Reveal Report, Special LIVE Report with George Iceman & Jessie Czebotar 4 March 2022 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ZNrPT2GknPY

(RR 41) The Reveal Report, Glory to God Tour LIVE in Kenner 11 Mar 2022 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=cL0Gv76k7bg

(RR 42) The Reveal Report. Glory to God Tour in Shreveport with Jessie Czebotar 18 march 2022 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=nBAmXJnva3Q

(RR 43) The Reveal Report, LIVE report on spiritual attacks & strongholds with Jessie Czebotar 25 March 2022 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=28GXBrBfHlU

(RT 01) Remember This. Warriors Madyson Marquette Clare Okell Jessie Czebotar join Denise and Jodi. 1 July 1 2021 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=zfQc8Nylqo0

(SG 01) Shalom Girl on YouTube. https://www.youtube.com/channel/UCTIV6xGCsvxPSMZDwWuV4xA

(SG 02) Shalom Girl. Maye Musk, Charlie Manson & Rosemary’s Baby. 30 November 2020. https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=B6OtjNh_kYc

(SG 03) Shalom Girl. Elon Musk's Grandfather Dr. Joshua Norman Haldeman 5 August 2021. https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=8hA2eeH52yE Made Unlisted on YouTube Sat Aug 7.

(SS 01) Sean Stone. RAW-Sean Stone with Jessie Czebotar on Robert David Steele #UNRIG. 10 March 2021. https://www.bitchute.com/video/N9P1OafF5kBd/

(SV 01) Svali. The Illuminati: How the Cult Programs People. http://whale.to/b/svali.htmll accessed 31 August 2021

(SV 02) Radio interview of Svali on “The Investigative Journal”, 17 January 2006. (according to http://www.illuminati-news.com/072706a.htm) https://projectcamelot.org/mediafiles/audio/svali.mp3

(SV 03) How the Cult Programs People; A former Illuminati trainer describes cult programming. https://www.wanttoknow.info/secret_societies/cult_programming_illuminati accessed 29 January 2021

(SV 04) Svali. Near Death Programming. http://whale.to/b/svalind.html accessed 31 August 2021

(SV 05) Svali. Q & A Svali Answers Readers' Questions. http://whale.to/b/svaliqa.html accessed 31 August 2021

(SV 06) Svali. Q & A Svali Answers More Questions. http://whale.to/b/svaliqa2.html accessed 31 August 2021

(SV 07) Svali. Svali speaks out. https://web.archive.org/web/20020613031042/http://msnhomepages.talkcity.com/SupportSt/svali/

(SV 08) Svali. In 2002, Illuminati Defector Predicted Financial Collapse - henrymakow.com 14 October 2022. https://www.savethemales.ca/141002.html

(SV 09) Svali. The European Roots of the Illuminati. http://whale.to/b/svali_illum.html accessed 31 August 2021

(SV 10) Svali. Are the Illuminati Taking Over the World? http://whale.to/b/svalia1.html accessed 31 August 2021

(SV 11) Svali. Chapter 1, an Overview of the Illuminati. http://whale.to/b/svaliaa1.html accessed 31 August 2021

(SV 12) Svali. Chapter 2, Jobs in the Illuminati http://whale.to/b/svalia2.html accessed 31 August 2021

(SV 13) Svali. Chapter 3, Conspiracy Theory two or Plan to Rule the World. https://web.archive.org/web/20030608215310/http://www.centrexnews.com/columnists/svali/2000/10/chapter03.html accessed 31 August 2021

(SV 14) Svali. Chapter 4, How the Illuminati Program People. http://whale.to/b/svalia4.html accessed 31 August 2021

(SV 15) Svali. Chapter 5, Colors, Metals and Jewel Programming. http://whale.to/b/svalia5.html accessed 31 August 2021

(SV 16) Svali. Chapter 6, Brain Wave Programming. http://whale.to/b/svalia6.html accessed 31 August 2021

(SV 17) Svali. Chapter 7, Military Programming. http://whale.to/b/svalia7.html accessed 31 August 2021

(SV 18) Svali. Chapter 8, CIA, Governmental and Scholarship. http://whale.to/b/svalia8.html accessed 31 August 2021

(SV 19) Svali. Chapter 9, Programming Linked to Stories, Movies, Cartoons. http://whale.to/b/svalia9.html accessed 31 August 2021

(SV 20) Svali. Chapter 10, The Sixth Step of Discipline, Betrayal; Twinning. http://whale.to/b/svalia10.html accessed 31 August 2021

(SV 21) Svali. Chapter 11, Suicidal Programming http://whale.to/b/svalia11.html accessed 31 August 2021

(SV 22) Svali. Chapter 12, Preventing Re-accessing of the Survivor. http://whale.to/b/svalia12.html accessed 31 August 2021

(SV 23) Svali. Chapter 13, Shell Programming, Internal Councils, Human Experimentation, Function Codes. http://whale.to/b/svalia13.html accessed 31 August 2021

(SV 24) Svali. Chapter 14, Spiritual Programming. http://whale.to/b/svalia14.html accessed 31 August 2021

(SV 25) Svali. Chapter 15, Core Splits Denial Programming the last Five Steps of Discipline Virtual Reality Programming. http://whale.to/b/svalia15.html accessed 31 August 2021

(SV 26) Svali. Part 1 - About Svali. 2000. http://whale.to/b/svali1.html accessed 31 August 2021

(SV 27) Svali. Part 2 - Who and What is the Illuminati. http://whale.to/b/svali2.html accessed 31 August 2021

(SV 28) Svali. Part 3 - How the Illuminati runs Hollywood. http://whale.to/b/svali3.html accessed 31 August 2021

(SV 29) Svali. Part 4 - The Illuminati - Freemason Connection. http://whale.to/b/svali4.html 31 August 2021

(SV 30) Svali. Part 5 - Illuminati - CIA Connection - Russia & China. http://whale.to/b/svali5.html 31 August 2021

(SV 31) Svali. Part 6 - Ritual Abuse - Mind Control Denial; Bohemian Grove. http://whale.to/b/svali6.html 31 August 2021

(SV 32) Svali. Part 7 - Illuminati Symbols and Clues; Level of Infiltration. http://whale.to/b/svali7.html 31 August 2021

(SV 33) Svali. Part 8 - The Fourth Reich. http://whale.to/b/svali8.html 31 August 2021

(SV 34) Svali. Part 9 - Ritual Sacrifices - Demons- Shape Shifting. http://whale.to/b/svali9.html 31 August 2021

(SV 35) Svali. Part 10 - More About Demonic Shape Shifting. http://whale.to/b/svali10.html 31 August 2021

(SV 36) Svali. Part 11 - Illuminati Proof - Vulnerabilities. http://whale.to/b/svali11.html 31 August 2021

(SV 37) Svali. Part 12 - The Top of the Pyramid. http://whale.to/b/svali12.html 31 August 2021

(SV 38) Svali. Part 13 - The UN or 'Supreme World Council’. http://whale.to/b/svali13.html 31 August 2021

(SV 39) Svali. Part 14 - Illuminati History and Future. https://web.archive.org/web/20030618102405/http://www.centrexnews.com/columnists/svali/2001/04/svali14.html 31 August 2021

(SV 40) Svali. Part 15 - The Perfect Mind Control Device. https://web.archive.org/web/20030422093929/http://www.centrexnews.com/columnists/svali/2001/04/svali15.html 31 August 2021

(SV 41) Svali. Part 16 - Lone Gunmen. http://whale.to/b/svali16.html 31 August 2021

(SV 42) Svali. Part 17 - In the Matrix. 31 August 2021. https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/illuminati/svali2_17.htm

(SV 43) Svali. Svali Speaks Again - A Day in the Life of a Trainer 2. https://svalispeaksagain.wordpress.com/a-day-in-the-life-of-a-trainer-2/

(SV 44) Svali. Svali Speaks Again - Agreements to not remember and to punish for remembering. https://svalispeaksagain.wordpress.com/2020/11/20/agreements-to-not-remember-and-to-punish-for-remembering/

(SV 45) Svali. Svali Speaks Again - Alice in Wonderland Programming_ Part 1_ White Alice Programming. 30 June 2018. https://svalispeaksagain.wordpress.com/2018/06/30/alice-in-wonderland-programming-part-1-white-alice-programming/

(SV 46) Svali. Svali Speaks Again - America at the Crossroads. https://svalispeaksagain.wordpress.com/2020/11/30/america-at-the-crossroads/

(SV 47) Svali. Svali Speaks Again - Are Vaccinations the Mark of the Beast. 27 July 2021. https://svalispeaksagain.wordpress.com/2021/07/27/are-vaccinations-the-mark-of-the-beast/

(SV 48) Svali. Svali Speaks Again - book part 4. 13 September 2021. https://svalispeaksagain.wordpress.com/2021/09/13/book-part-4/

(SV 49) Svali. Svali Speaks Again - Exposing the Vatican book_ Part 4. 30 September 2021. https://svalispeaksagain.wordpress.com/2021/09/30/exposing-the-vatican-book-part-4/

(SV 50) Svali. Svali Speaks Again - Growing Up International Part Two_ The First Three Years. 1 June 2018. https://svalispeaksagain.wordpress.com/2018/06/01/growing-up-international-part-two-the-first-three-years/

(SV 51) Svali. Svali Speaks Again - Growing Up International_ Part 1 (prenatal programming). 25 April

2018. https://svalispeaksagain.wordpress.com/2018/04/25/growing-up-international-part-1-prenatal-programming/

(SV 52) Svali. Svali Speaks Again - III. How are the Jesuits financed. 30 August 2021. https://svalispeaksagain.wordpress.com/2021/08/30/iii-how-are-the-jesuits-financed/

(SV 53) Svali. Svali Speaks Again - Some Thoughts and Prayers. 15 January 2021. https://svalispeaksagain.wordpress.com/2021/01/15/some-thoughts-and-prayers/

(SV 54) Svali. Svali Speaks Again - Spiritual Controllers. 29 October 2019. https://svalispeaksagain.wordpress.com/2019/10/29/spiritual-controllers/

(SV 55) Svali. Svali Speaks Again - The different types of SRA and Mind Control. 29 January 2018. https://svalispeaksagain.wordpress.com/2019/01/29/the-different-types-of-sra-and-mind-control/

(SV 56) Svali. Svali Speaks Again - The Hierarchy of the Occult. 3 May 2018. https://svalispeaksagain.wordpress.com/2018/05/03/the-hierarchy-of-the-occult/

(SV 57) Svali. Svali Speaks Again - The Occultic Agenda. 3 April 2021. https://svalispeaksagain.wordpress.com/2021/04/03/the-occultic-agenda/

(SV 58) Svali. Svali Speaks Again - The overarching purpose of ritual abuse and mind control_ remaking man in Satan’s image. 20 September 2019. https://svalispeaksagain.wordpress.com/2019/09/20/the-overarching-purpose-of-ritual-abuse-and-mind-control-remaking-man-in-satans-image/

(SV 59) Svali. Svali Speaks Again - The Role of the Genetic Parents in Programming. 21 January 2020. https://

svalispeaksagain.wordpress.com/2020/01/21/the-role-of-the-genetic-parents-in-programming/

(SV 60) Svali. Svali Speaks Again - Vatican Book Part 1. 17 August 2021. https://svalispeaksagain.wordpress.com/2021/08/17/vatican-book-part-1/

(SV 61) Svali. Svali Speaks Again - What the Church and Survivors Need from Each Other. 10 November 2020. https://svalispeaksagain.wordpress.com/2020/11/10/what-the-church-and-survivors-need-from-each-other/

(SV 62) Svali. Svali Speaks Again - Articles. https://svalispeaksagain.wordpress.com/welcome/child-page/

(SV 63) Svali. Svali Speaks Again - Book Part 7. 18 November 2021. https://svalispeaksagain.wordpress.com/2021/11/18/book-part-7/

(SV 64) Svali. Svali Speaks Again - Book Part 8. 23 December 2021. https://svalispeaksagain.wordpress.com/2021/12/23/book-part-8/#like-838

(SV 65) Svali. Svali Speaks Again - Expositing the Vatican Part 6. https://svalispeaksagain.wordpress.com/2021/10/25/exposing-the-vatican-part-6/

(SV 66) Svali. Illuminati News_Born Into the Illuminati, A Friend Fears For Svali's Safety As She Has Come Up Missing. 26 July 2006. http://www.illuminati-news.com/072706a.htm

(SW 01) Sarah Westall: Vocal Print of Jessie Czebotar by Sherry Edwards. 18 August 2019 https://www.bitchute.com/video/9ueBbZvpdHs/

(SW 02) Sarah Westall: Deep Inside the Satanic Cabal World Agenda, Leadership Structure, Rituals with Jessie Czebotar 1 of 3 8 October 2020 https://www.bitchute.com/video/4zHMy39LtqQ/

(SW 03) Sarah Westall; Deep Inside the Satanic Cabal, World Agenda, Leadership Structure, Rituals with Jessie Czebotar 2 of 3 https://www.bitchute.com/video/6IMy8KmVAyg/ 9 October 2020

(SW 04) Sarah Westall; Deep Inside the Satanic Cabal, World Agenda, Leadership Structure, Rituals with Jessie Czebotar 3 of 3 11 October 2020 https://www.bitchute.com/video/w0mqw-vzVNo/

(SW 05) Sarah Westall: Loyalty to the Illuminati is created and maintained with life part 1. 20 October 2020 https://www.bitchute.com/video/pxrPaCXLveT7/

(SW 06) Sarah Westall: Loyalty to the Illuminati is created and maintained with life part 2. 22 October 2020 https://www.bitchute.com/video/CYL8QkU4gZou/

(SW 07) Sarah Westall; Hunter Biden's deep State Blackmail Files exposed: Why not More? What's the Strategy, Jessie Czebotar 30 October 2020 https://www.bitchute.com/video/EYqoICLKf9T9/

(SW 08)Sarah Westall: Patreon Exclusive Experiments and Projects on Children 31 October 2021 https://www.bitchute.com/video/lufV8wg4UVNa/

(SW 09) Sarah Westall Massive Family Trust Dismantling the Great Reset Fight Between Good and Evil Part 1 of 3 19 November 2020 https://www.bitchute.com/video/NlSSPdv5PB9w/

(SW 10) Sarah Westall; Patreon exclusive w Jessie Czebotar 10-11-2020 19 November 2020 https://www.bitchute.com/video/DjC8JX5Nfhuk/

(SW 11) Sarah Westall; Ruling Elites Satanic goals Massive Family Trust Dismantling the Great Reset 2 of 3 22 November 2020 https://www.bitchute.com/video/zQGHe4VtrFjO/

(SW 12) Sarah Westall; Ruling Elites Satanic goals Massive Family Trust Dismantling the Great Reset 3 of 3 22 November 2020 https://www.bitchute.com/video/scCSK6wB88Da/

(SW 13) Sarah Westall; Luciferian Meaning of Winter Solstice Rare Event World Trafficking Hubs 1 of 2 10 December 2020 https://www.bitchute.com/video/0QSXEhfY5PfV/

(SW 14) Sarah Westall; Luciferian Meaning of Winter Solstice Rare Event World Trafficking Hubs 2 of 2 12 December 2020 https://www.bitchute.com/video/cVL0kM6xDNO6/

(SW 15) Sarah Westall; Enemy's Agenda is Luciferian Anti-Human Pure Evil. 20 December 2020 https://www.bitchute.com/video/Se9UYCxmn9QV/

(SW 16) Sarah Westall; Exclusive what do the Lower Realms Look Like. 20 December 2020 https://www.bitchute.com/video/vg0qYCu80Gkq/

(SW 17) Sarah Westall; Washington DC Tunnel Systems How The Real Riot Plans Failed. 8 January 2021 https://www.bitchute.com/video/ecQPH6LdS42v/

(SW 18) Sarah Westall; Supporter Exclusive His Kingdom Comes In Power the Battle. 9 January 2021 https://www.bitchute.com/video/4TPGtclEme08/

(SW 19) Sarah Westall; Inauguration, strangeness, high codes and rituals part 1. 23 January 2021 https://www.bitchute.com/video/AkqFMJ4dw8mC/

(SW 20) Sarah Westall; Inauguration, strangeness, high codes and rituals part 2. 24 January 2021 https://www.bitchute.com/video/jguPFpE3dY7R/

(SW 21) Sarah Westall; MK Ultra has changed and is more powerful part 1. 14 February 2021 https://www.bitchute.com/video/9iyWsGki0bLo/

(SW 22) Sarah Westall; MK Ultra has changed and is more powerful part 2. 17 February 2021 https://www.bitchute.com/video/13POJOJNtbxT/

(SW 23) Sarah Westall; Complete Control FEMA Camps, and Your basic needs part 1. 28 February 2021 https://www.bitchute.com/video/mNf7SSi2Uajh/

(SW 24) Sarah Westall; Complete Control FEMA Camps, and Your basic needs part 2. 2 March 2021 https://www.bitchute.com/video/nV3hLIDHxdHI/

(SW 25) Sarah Westall; The Great Decode How Entities Use Ancient Knowledge to Control Humanity 1 of 2. 24 May 2021 https://www.bitchute.com/video/ENlsbi0xhROl/

(SW 26) Sarah Westall; The Great Decode How Entities Use Ancient Knowledge to Control Humanity 2 of 2. 25 May 2021 https://www.bitchute.com/video/1A1kyzT6uCTt/

(SW 27) Sarah Westall; Glamis Calling Org World Governing Council Children of the Tunnels. 13 April 2021 https://www.bitchute.com/video/BHHi2g0YFJ6z/

(SW 28) Sarah Westall; Are they dead or being used for Luciferian purposes? 12 May 2021 https://www.bitchute.com/video/LpLnfl6K6veZ/

(SW 29) Sarah Westall; Globalists Manipulating Free Will to Mock God Why they Do It. 29 May 2021 https://www.bitchute.com/video/4O1TZvVOBigH/

(SW 30) Sarah Westall; World War 3 Battles on Many Fronts Helping Survivors Recover from Trauma With Chaplain Jessie Czebotar. 5 July 2021 https://www.bitchute.com/video/krUXjis2n2ts/

(SW 31) Sarah Westall; Government Experiments 3500 per child. 8 June 2021 https://www.bitchute.com/video/kpmOmmfU2b2k/

(SW 32) Sarah Westall; Westall Monarch sex slave Laura Worley part 1 and part 2 3 August 2021 https://

www.bitchute.com/video/XUx0ZbNVgC3f/ https://www.bitchute.com/video/7zc4HKLWDypC/

(SW 33) Sarah Westall; MK Ultra Methods Being Used Now On Humanity, British Rock Invasion, Child Subjects (with Ann Diamond) 19 August 2021 https://www.bitchute.com/video/YKRNHuGQytYw/

(SW 34) Sarah Westall; Infinite soul Capture & Perpetual Harvesting of Humanity w/Jessie Czebotar. 9 Dec 2021 https://www.bitchute.com/video/Qik4TFqP7sOi/

(TG 01) Dr. Temple Grandin; Euthanasia and slaughter of livestock. https://www.grandin.com/ritual/euthanasia.slaughter.livestock.html accessed on 2 December 2021.

(Twitter 001) Czebotar, Jessie (@CzebotarJessie) "Pres said they "duck tape their mouths, TIE them up" All the perps have signitures [sic] Signature methods Signature KNOTS Signature kills & torture methods Look into those KNOTS Boating knots, sewing knots, grilling knots, cooking knots…shoe knots" Approx. midnight, 10 January 2021, Screenshot 10 Jan 2021 7:34 pm; removed from Twitter.

(Twitter 002) Beck, C.A. (Cheryl) (@CABeck1961) "Watch "Live with Fritz Springmeier New 2021!" on YouTube youtu.be/dJLgNs-C45U *for those interested in what Fritz has been told by "Illuminati Sources". I don't expect Truth from Luciferians, so, I disagree with some of this. Take a listen if you're interested." Screenshot 13 Dec 2021 10:39 am; https://twitter.com/CABeck1961/status/1470268385778823168

(Twitter 003) Czebotar, Jessie (@CzebotarJessie) “Except they do not sacrifice the first born daughters for hierarchy!!!! So not sacrifice of first-born” 20 July 2020. Screenshot 15 June 2021. https://twitter.com/CzebotarJessie/status/1285430158367821825

(Twitter 004) Czebotar, Jessie (@CzebotarJessie) “PROTECTORS Oooops…did I let that slip” 15 June 2021. Screenshot 4 March 2022. https://twitter.com/CzebotarJessie/status/1404885902938279936

(TT 01) Tupactip, Freemasonry’s Inner Circle and The Blue Lodge Degrees. 23 January 2019 https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=KpD_1vA3bcks

(VM 1) Vogue. Sam Sussman. Images of the Week: Jill Biden Covers Vogue’s August Issue 3 July 2021 https://www.vogue.com/slideshow/images-of-the-week-jill-biden-covers-vogues-august-issue

(VM 2) Vogue. Rob Haskell. Good Lorde! Behind the Blissed-Out Comeback of a Pop Iconoclast. 8 September 2021 https://www.vogue.com/article/lorde-cover-october-2021

(VM 3) Vampire the Masquerade 2020 https://www.vampire2020.com/

(WC 01) William Cooper. Behold a Pale Horse. 1991. Light Technology Publishing.

(WK 01) Wikipedia, Maye Musk https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Maye_Musk accessed 5 March 2022

(WK 02) Wikipedia, Global Philanthropy Group https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Global_Philanthropy_Group, accessed 17 December 2021

(WK 03) Wikipedia, Marylou Whitney, https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Marylou_Whitney accessed 17 December 2021

(WK 04) Wikipedia, Madonna, https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Madonna, accessed 17 December 2021

(WK 05) Wikipedia, Elon Musk, https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Elon_Musk accessed 5 March 2022

(WL 06) Wikipedia, Young Global Leaders. https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Young_Global_Leaders Accessed 30 March 2022

(ZZ 01) Full Transcript of Whistleblower Deposition by Lin Wood. 9 January 2021. https://populistpress.com/wp-content/uploads/2021/03/FULL-Transcript-of-Whistleblower-Interview.pdf

(ZZ 02) Homosexual prostitution inquiry ensnares VIP's with Reagan, Bush. The Washington Times. 29 June 1989. https://www.economicsvoodoo.com/wp-content/uploads/1989-06-29-Homosexual-Prostitution-Inquiry-Ensnares-VIPs-with-Reagan-Bush-_The-Washington-Times.pdf

(ZZ 03) The Lucis Trust: Satanism and the new world order by Scott Thompson. 10 February 1989. Published in EIR (Executive Intelligence Review) Volume 16 number 7. https://archive.org/details/the-lucis-trust-satanism-and-the-new-world-order-by-scott-thompson-executive-int

(ZZ 04) Duncan's Masonic Ritual and Monitor, Malcolm C. Duncan, 1866. http://www.phoenixmasonry.org/duncans_ritual/royal_arch_degree.htm accessed 4 December 2021.

(ZZ 05) The Oath and Obligation of a Master Mason. updated 17 November 2021. https://www.wilmingtonfavs.com/religious-institution/the-oath-and-obligation-of-a-master-mason.html Accessed 4 December 2021.

(ZZ 06) The Moment of Truth - David Wilcock and Mike Adams - PART ONE (Mike Adams and David Wilcock mention Meat Wagons). November 2021. https://www.brighteon.com/329acae2-b197-44a0-b8be-b8bb6508f8be

(ZZ 07) No Child Left Behind. https://www2.ed.gov/nclb/overview/intro/index.html accessed 20 December 2021

(ZZ 08) The Open Scroll Blog. List of Satanic Holidays (SRA) http://www.theopenscroll.com/hosting/SatanicCalendar.htm Accessed 21 December 2021.

(ZZ 09) Spiritual Warfare Blog. Dealing with the spirit of Lilith. 6 July 2021. https://www.deliverancexorcisms.com/blog-and-ministry-news/category/jezebel

(ZZ 10) What is Davos? Here's what you need to know about the conference. 26 August 2020. https://www.businessinsider.com/what-is-davos-world-economic-forum-conference-2020-1?op=1

(ZZ 11) Davos Deferred Over Omicron Concerns, World Economic Forum Says. 20 December 2021. https://www.forbes.com/sites/teakvetenadze/2021/12/20/davos-deferred-over-omicron-concerns-world-economic-forum-says/?sh=5bf8a61530ca

(ZZ 12) Secret Societies exposed—Freemasonry oaths. 2018. https://www.evangelicaltruth.com/freemasonry-oaths accessed 4 February 2022

(ZZ 13) Life Site Former Satanist: 'I performed satanic rituals inside abortion clinics' 9 September 2016 https://www.lifesitenews.com/opinion/former-satanist-i-performed-satanic-rituals-inside-abortion-clinics

(ZZ 14) Satanists admit that they are making child sacrifice through Abortion an official ritual. 6 September 2021. https://www.thegatewaypundit.com/2021/09/satanists-admit-making-child-sacrifice-abortion-official-ritual-satanic-temple/?utm_source=Gab&utm_campaign=websi

(ZZ 15) Good Morning America 2008 interview of Ashley Olsen. 15 January 2018. https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=iKluT0IMXes

(ZZ 16) Evidence that the Covid Vaccines Implant Bluetooth Biosensors http://www.zephaniah.eu/index_htm_files/Evidence%20that%20the%20Covid%20Vaccines%20Implant%20Bluetooth%20Biosensors.pdf

(ZZ 17) Laura Hales. Freemasonry and the Latter Day Saint Temple Endowment. 23 June 2016 https://latterdaysaintmag.com/freemasonry-and-the-latter-day-saint-temple-endowment/

(ZZ 18) David Martin with Reiner Fuellmich: “This, my friends, is the definition of criminal conspiracy.” 11 July 2021 https://www.bitchute.com/video/GmcSTZv5FuPM/

(ZZ 19) The National Pulse. Salgado, Catherine. UNICEF Says Restricting Children's Porn Access Infringes Human Rights. 1 June 2021. https://thenationalpulse.com/breaking/unicef-says-restricting-childrens-porn-access-infringes-human-rights/

(ZZ 20) UNICEF Takes Down Report Saying Porn is OK for Kids After Pro-Life Group exposes it. 21 May 2021. https://www.lifenews.com/2021/05/21/unicef-takes-down-report-supporting-porn-of-kids-after-pro-life-group-exposes-it/

(ZZ 21) The Lucis Trust. https://www.lucistrust.org/about_us/support_un. Accessed 30 March 2022.

(ZZ 22) The Lucis Trust. https://www.lucistrust.org/contact_us Accessed 30 March 2022.

(ZZ 23) publicintelligence.net

(ZZ 24) CIA Fronts https://www.jar2.com/2/Intel/CIA/CIA%20Fronts.htm

❦

About the Author

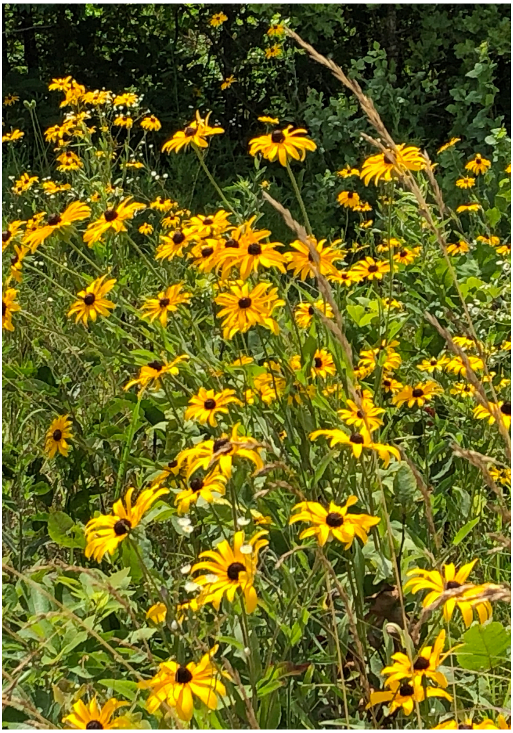

Veronica Swift is a former educator who stumbled upon Jessie Czebotar's work during a physically difficult year. Since then, she has spent 17 months trying to understand the hidden System called the Illuminati Brotherhood, its ways and methods, its people and structure. Her blog is at LiftingTheWool.wordpress.com When not staring at the computer screen, she enjoys growing flowers and playing cribbage.

ANGELS DON'T PLAY THIS HAARP

ADVANCES IN TESLA TECHNOLOGY

Jeane Manning **Dr. Nick Begich**

Environmental Warfare?

The U. S. Government has a new ground-based "Star Wars" weapon which is being tested in the remote bush country of Alaska. This new system manipulates the environment in a way which can:

- Disrupt human mental processes.
- Jam all global communications systems.
- Change weather patterns over large areas.
- Interfere with wildlife migration patterns.
- Negatively affect your health.
- Unnaturally impact the Earth's upper atmosphere.

The U.S. military calls its zapper HAARP (High-frequency Active Auroral Research Project). But this skybuster is not about the Northern Lights. This device will turn on lights never intended to be artificially manipulated.

Their first target is the electrojet - a river of electricity that flows thousands of miles through the sky and down into the polar icecap. The electrqjet will become a vibrating artificial antenna for sending electromagnetic radiation raining down on the earth. The U.S. military can then "X-ray" the earth and talk to submarines. But there's much more they can do with HAARP. This book reveals surprises from secret meetings.

PROJECT CENSORED - a prestigious panel of journalists - judged HAARP to be in the top ten under-reported news stories of 1994.

POPULAR SCIENCE - As a front-cover story, HAARP began to be revealed in September, 1995. This book is - the rest of the story.

The High-frequency Active Auroral Research Project is

The HAARP that Angels Don't Play.

About the Authors

Dr. Nick Begich is the eldest son of the late United States Congressman from Alaska, Nick Begich Sr., and political activist Pegge Begich. He is well known in Alaska for his own political activities. He was twice elected President of both the Alaska Federation of Teachers and the Anchorage Council of Education. He has been pursuing independent research in the sciences and politics for most of his adult life. Begich received his doctorate in traditional medicine from The Open International University for Complementary Medicines in November, 1994.

He co-authored the book Earth Rising - The Revolution: Toward a Thousand Years of Peace with James Roderick in January 2000. He is also the editor of Earthpulse Flashpoints, a new-science book series. Begich has published articles in science, politics and education and is a well known lecturer, having presented throughout the United States and in nineteen countries. He has been featured as a guest on thousands of radio broadcasts, reporting on his research activities including new technologies, health and earth science related issues. He has also appeared on dozens of television documentaries and other programs throughout the world including BBC-TV, CBC-TV, TeleMundo, and others.

Begich has served as an expert witness and speaker before the European Parliament. He has spoken on various issues for groups representing citizen concerns, statesmen and elected officials, scientists and others. He is the publisher and co-owner of Earthpulse Press and is also under contract as Tribal Planner for the Chickaloon Village Council, a federally recognized American Indian Tribe of the Athabascan Indian Nation.

Dr. Begich is married to Shelah Begich-Slade and has five children. He resides just north of Anchorage in the community of Eagle River, Alaska, USA.

Jeane Manning is an experienced magazine journalist, reporter for daily newspapers and former editor of a community newspaper. A decade of researching nonconventional electrical energy technologies culminated in her book The Coming Energy Revolution (Avery Publishing Group, NY, 1996). She is co-author of a 1994 book published by Auckland Institute of Technology Press, New Zealand, Suppressed Inventions and other Discoveries. Born in Cordova, Alaska, she tracked HAARP with deep interest. She now lives in Vancouver, Canada.

CONTENTS

TIMELINE 1

Foreword...5

Introduction...8

CHAPTERS

PART ONE: THE PEOPLE WAKE UP TO HAARP

1 The Sorcerer's Apprentices 11

2 Trail from Tesla to Star Wars 17

3 What's going on Up There?.. 23

4 Skybusters Under Secrecy..31

5 High on the Sky...40

6 Northern Exposure.. 47

7 In the Wilderness 52

PART TWO: SCIENTISTS ARE CONCERNED

8 Who Can Stop the Big Zapper?....................................60

9 Tesla's Weather Apprentices 66

10 Putting the Heat on Mom Earth..................................75

PART THREE: ELECTROPAINTINGS IN THE SKY

11 The Compilers..84

12 Twisted Words, Star Wars and Poker Flats 86

13 Star Wars -- Company Control....................................90

14 "The Project's Not Classified" 94

15 The Twelve Patents of APTI -Technically Tesla................. 97

16 Turning on a Billion Watts 109

17 Nuclear Excavation - Creating the Bay............................ 111

18 Thermonuclear Weapons Replaced by Electropulse 114

19 Charged Particle Rain Critical Omission.......................... 118

20 Blurred Visions of the Military 121

21 Race with the Russians 131

22 Entrain the Brain to go Insane?... 134

23 Psychocivilized Society and the CIA 140

24 Zapping the "Nonlethal" Way 151

PART FOUR: STOP THE MUSIC

25 Playing the HAARP...171

26 Soft Sell, The Environmental Impact Statement................173

27 Pandora's Box the Great Temptation.................................176

28 Power and Control-The End of Freedom........................ 179

29 A Clear Note... 183

Glossary 191

Illustrations.. 192

Updates 206

Looking Through The Earth..210

Resource Guide... 215

This illustration shows the ionosphere's relationship to the Earth. The illustration appeared in the HAARP Environmental Impact Statement on page 10-125 of Volume II.

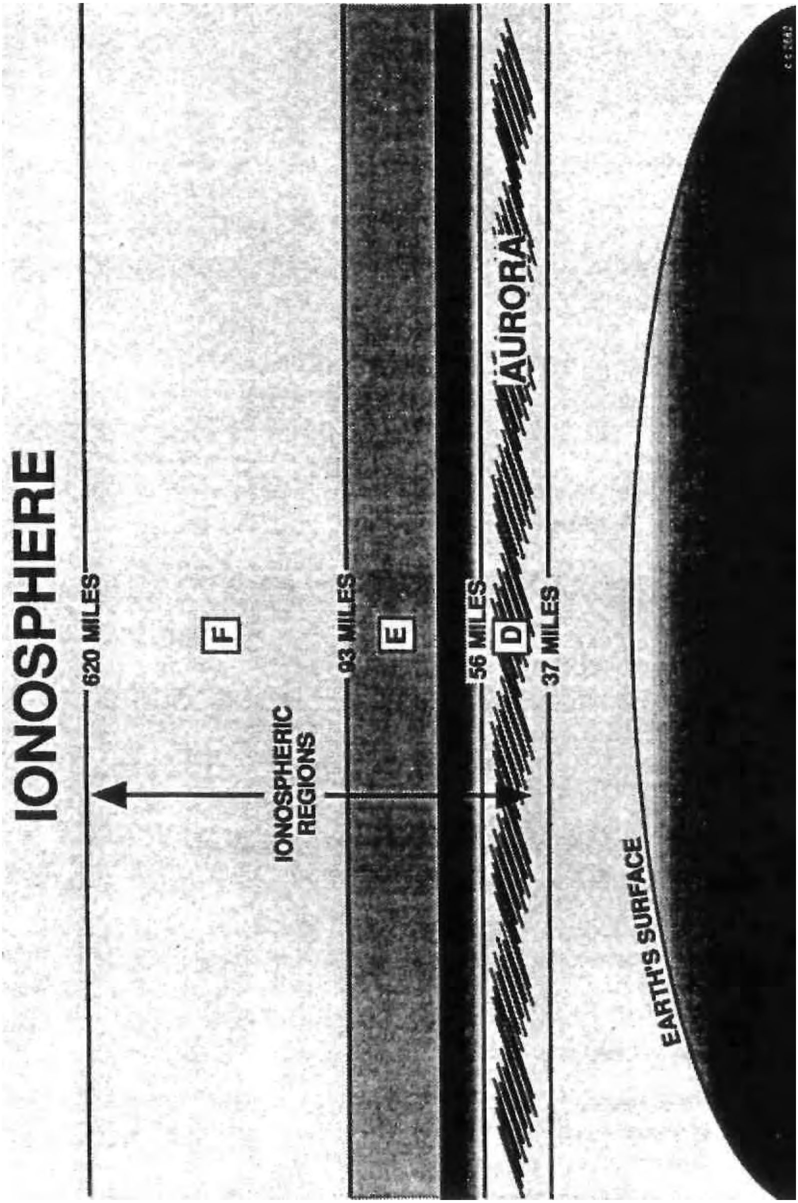
IONOSPHERE
620 MILES
F
IONOSPHERIC REGIONS
93 MILES
E
56 MILES
D
37 MILES
AURORA
EARTH'S SURFACE

MESSING WITH 'MOTHER EARTH' AND HER KIDS ELECTROMAGNETICALLY:
A BRIEF HISTORY OF EVENTS & DISCOVERIES

1886-8: Nikola Tesla invents system of Alternating Current (AC) power source and transmission system. As 60-pulse-per-second (Hertz) AC power grids spread over the land, Mom Earth will eventually dance to a different beat than her usual 7-8 Hertz frequency.

1900: Tesla applies for patent on a device to "Transmit Electrical Energy Through the Natural Mediums".

1905: U.S. Patent #787,412 issued for above.

1924.: Confirmation that radio waves bounce off ionospherel (electrically charged layer starting at altitude of 50 kilometers).

1938: Scientist proposes to light up night sky by electron gyrotron heating from a powerful transmitter.

1940: Tesla announces "death ray" invention.

1945: Atomic bomb tests begin - 40,000 electromagnetic pulses to follow.

1952: W.O. Schumann identifies 7.83 Hertz resonant frequency of the earth.

1958: Van Allen radiation belts discovered (zones of charged particles trapped in earth's magnetic field) 2,000+ miles up. Violently disrupted in the same year.

1958: Project Argus, U.S. Navy explodes three nuclear bombs in Van Allen belt.

1958: White House advisor on weather modification says Defense Department studying ways to manipulate charges "of earth and sky, and so affect the weather".

1960: Series of weather disasters begin.[2]

1961?: Copper needles dumped into ionosphere as "telecommunications shield".[3]

---

[1] Victor A. Schmidt, Planet Earth and the New Geoscience. Kendall/Hunt, Iowa, 1986, pg. 428

[2] Editor's page, "Weather Modification",Saturday Review 2/5/1977.

[3] Keesings Historisch Archief, courtesy of Nigel Harle, Netherlands,

1961: Scientists propose artificial ion cloud experiments. In 1960's the dumping of chemicals (barium powder etc.) from satellites/rockets began. [4]

1961-62: U.S.S.R. and U.S.A. create many electromagnetic pulses (EMPs) in the atmosphere; 300 megatons of nuclear devices deplete ozone layer by about 4%.[5]

1962: Launch of Canadian satellites & start of stimulating plasma resonances by antennas within the space plasma.6

1966: Gordon J. F. MacDonald publishes military ideas on environmental engineering.[7]

1960's: In Wisconsin, US Navy Project Sanguine lays extremely low frequency (ELF) antennae.

1968: Moscow scientists tell the West that they have pinpointed which pulsed magnetic field frequencies help mental and physiological functions and which frequencies do harm. [8]

1972: First reports on "ionospheric heater" experiments with high frequency radio waves, at Arecibo.9 A 100 megawatt heater in Norway built later in decade can change conductivity of auroral ionosphere. [10]

1973: Documentation that launch of Skylab "halved the total electron content of the ionosphere for three hours"(by rocket exhaust gases). [11,12]

1973: Recommendations for study of Project Sanguine's biological effects denied by Navy. [13]

1974: United Nations General Assembly bans environmental warfare.

4 Manfred Scholer, "On the Motion of Artificial Ion Clouds in the Magnetosphere", Planet Space Sci. 1970, Vol. 18 pp 977 to 1004. Printed in Northern Ireland.

5 National Academy of Sciences, "Long-Term Effects of Multiple Nuclear-Weapon Detonation", 1975 pges. 6-7.

6 Michael J. Rycroft, "Active Experiments in Space Plasmas" Nature vol. 287 4 Sept. 1980, pg, 7.

7 Lowell Ponte, The Cooling. Prentice-Hall, NJ, 1976, pg. 166-7

8 Sheila Ostrander and Lynn Schroeder Super Memory: The Revolution. Carroll & Graf, NY, pg. 303.

9 W.E. Gordon and H.C, Carlson/'Arecibo Heating Experiments", Radio Science,Vol. 9, No.11, pges 1041-7, Nov. 1974.

10 Michael J. Rycroft, "Active Experiments in Space Plasmas", Nature Vol. 287, Sept. 1980, pg. 7.

11 Michael J. Rycroft, "Ionospheric Hole Caused by Rocket Engine", Nature Vol. 297, June 1982, pg. 537.

12 Michael Mendillo, Gerald S. Hawkins, John A. Klobuchar, "A Sudden Vanishing of the Ionospheric F Region Due to the Launch of Skylab", Journal of Geophysical Research, Vol. 80 No. 16, June 1, 1975, pg. 2217.

13 Robert O. Becker, Cross Currents. Jeremy Tarcher LA 1990, pg. 201-3.

1974: High frequency experiments at Plattesville, Colorado; Arecibo, Puerto Rico; and, Armidale, New South Wales heat "bottom side of ionosphere". [14]

1974: Experiments - airglow brightened by hitting oxygen atoms in ionosphere with accelerated electrons.

1975: Stanford professor Robert Helliwell reports that very low frequency (VLF) from power lines is altering the ionosphere. [15]

1975: U.S. Senator Gaylord Nelson forces Navy to release research showing that extremely low frequency (ELF) transmissions can alter human blood chemistry. [16]

1975: Pell Senate Subcommittee urges that weather and climate modification work be overseen by civilian agency answerable to U.S. Congress. Didn't happen.

1975: Soviets begin pulsing "Woodpecker" extremely low frequency (ELF) waves, at key brainwave rhythms. [17] Eugene, Oregon, one of locations where people were particularly affected.

1976: Drs. Susan Bawin & W. Ross Adey show nerve cells affected by ELF fields. [18]

1979: Launch of NASA's third High-Energy Astrophysical Observatory causes large scale, artificially induced depletion in the ionosphere. Plasma hole caused by "rapid chemical processes" between rocket exhaust and ozone layer." [19] "Ionosphere was significantly depleted over a horizontal distance of 300 km for some hours."

1985: Bernard J. Eastlund applies for patent "Method and Apparatus for Altering a Region in the Earth's Atmosphere, Ionosphere and/or Magnetosphere," (First of three Eastlund patents assigned to ARCO Power Technologies Inc.)

---

[14] G. Meltz, F.W. Perkins, "Ionospheric Modification Theory: Past, Present and Future", Radio Science, Vol. 9, No. 11, Nov. 1974.

[15] Lowell Ponte, The Cooling. Prentice-Hall, NJ.1976, pg. 169.

[16] Ibid., pg, 168.

[17] Sheila Ostrander and Lynn Schroeder, Super-Memorv: The Revolution. Carol & Graf Publishers, NY 1991, pg. 299.

[18] Dr, Robert O. Becker, Cross-Currents: The Perils of Elecropollution The Promise of Electromedicine Jeremy Tarcher, LA 1990, pg. 233

[19] Michael Mendillo, Donald Rote, Paul A. Bernhardt, "Preliminary Report of the HEAO Hole in the Ionosphere", American Geophysical Union, EOS, Vol, 61, No. 28, July 8, 1980, pg. 529.

1986: U.S. Navy Project Henhouse duplicates Delgado (Madrid) experiment - very low level, very low frequency pulsed magnetic fields harm chick embryos.[20]

1980's: In the later part of the decade the U.S. begins network of Ground Wave Emergency Network (GWEN) towers, each to generate Very Low Frequency (VLF) waves for defense purposes .

1987-92: Other Arco Power Technologies Incorporated (APTI) scientists build on Eastlund patents for development of new weapon capabilities.

1994: Military contractor E-Systems buys APTI, holder of Eastlund patents and contract to build biggest ionospheric heater in world High-frequency Active Auroral Research Project (HAARP).

1994: Congress freezes funding on HAARP until planners increase emphasis on earth penetrating tomography uses, for nuclear counterproliferation efforts.

1995: Raytheon buys E-Systems and old APTI patents. The technology is now hidden among thousands of patents within one of the largest defense contractor portfolios.

1995: Congress budgets $10 million for 1996 under "nuclear counterproliferation" efforts for HAARP project.

1995: HAARP planners to test patent number 5,041,834 in September.

1994-6: Testing of first stage HAARP equipment continues, although funding was frozen.

1996: HAARP planners to test the earth penetrating tomography applications by modulating the electroject at ELF frequencies.

1998: The European Parliament's Subcommittee on Security and Disarmament holds a hearing on HAARP on February 5, 1998. Coauthor Begich presents on HAARP and new weapon technologies.

2001-17: Projected period for HAARP operations. Fully operating HAARP developmental proto-type system by early part of the period.

[20] Dr. Robert O. Becker. Cross-Currents: The Perils of Elecropollution, The Promise of Electromedicine, Jeremy Tarcher, LA ,1990

Updates - September 2001

In February 1998, while testifying before the European Parliament, I indicated that the United States would violate the Anti-Ballistics Missile (ABM) Treaty with the former Soviet Union. I asserted that the United States would take the position that because the Soviet Union had dissolved, the agreement was no longer valid. On this point, the Members of the Committee could not agree with us because most believed that the United States would honor the agreement, recognizing the Treaty as a stabilizing document for the entire world. In less than ten months from our pronouncement, the United States announced their new initiative for a missile defense system outside of the Treaty. United States Senator Ted Stevens made the arguments just as predicted.

The original ABM Treaty allowed only one defense system in each country - the United States and the Soviet Union. It had been our contention that HAARP represented research which would lead to me eventual deployment of a new missile defense system based in Alaska. We also made clear that me United States was moving forward with new technologies while giving the world, and our allies, the impression mat there was a real effort underway toward reductions in arms. The reality, time would demonstrate, was a new race toward the new technology.

What Ever Happened to Star Wars?

Remember Star Wars, the concept which would move the theater of war to space? In 1995, the funding for Star Wars was widely reported as a dead issue when full funding was defeated by the United States Congress. However, Star Wars did not end as many unpopular programs do - they just get new names.

> "This year the Ballistic Missile Defense Organization (once called the Strategic Defense Initiative) got $3.7 billion. That's up from $2.8 billion in 1995, and is very near the peak level spent during the Cold War."21

The problem was that the United States was not fully covered under its single ABM system, leaving Alaska and Hawaii unprotected. Alaska produces about 22% of U.S. oil requirements, holds all 33 strategic minerals in commercial quantities and represents tremendous natural resource wealth. Hawaii is a strategic point for the entire Pacific presence of the United States military. These two areas, in the estimation of military planners, had to be protected. The need for a system to protect Alaska and Hawaii is acknowledged and we agree that these regions should be protected. We believe that this could be accomplished in a more open and honest way, particularly when it affects our allies and the American public.

What is interesting is that the billions spent on Star Wars systems, which these became known as, were only for "research," according to the military's mission statements. The technology is being advanced in the hope that a system might be developed early in the next century. The external threats are now being characterized as "rogue states and terrorist organizations" which might gain nuclear weapon delivery technologies. While the threats are not imagined and need to be addressed, it is not responsible to create word games which end public debate and allow systems

---

21. Fox, Adrienne. "Star wars: Force Not With Us, US Remains Defenseless Against Missile Attack." Investor's Business Daily, Aug. 25, 1997. EPI150

thought to be discontinued the latitude to proceed.

In another "offshoot of the Reagan administration's Strategic Defense Initiative" satellite-disabling lasers have been developed. A test, at less than full power, was performed at the end of 1997 to demonstrate the ability of the system to hit its target. The demonstration was a success and now many are concerned that this may provoke an arms race in space."22

What has become clear is that what the United States says to its citizens, friends and adversaries tends to be variations of the same misinformation and manipulations of the facts.

HAARP

This is where our story began. HAARP - The High Frequency Active Auroral Research Program is a joint project of the United States Air Force and Navy, based in Alaska. The project is a research program designed to study the ionosphere in order to develop new weapons technology.

The HAARP system is designed to manipulate the ionosphere, a layer which begins about thirty miles above the earth. The transmitter or HAARP device on the ground is a phased array antenna system - a large field of antennas designed to work together in focusing radio-frequency energy for manipulating the ionosphere. The radio frequency energy can be pulsed, shaped, and altered in ways never possible with other transmitters or at the power levels of this new facility.

The device will have an effective-radiated-power of 1 billion watts when completed in the first phase of the project. It will be used for "earth penetrating tomography" (looking through layers of the earth to locate underground facilities or minerals), communications with submarines, to manipulate communication of others, over-the-horizon radar, energy transfers from one part of the world to another, creating artificial plasma (energy) layers or patches in the ionosphere, to alter weather and may be used as an anti-satellite weapon. The story of HAARP and its related technology is a part of the puzzle of a "Revolution in Military Affairs" being pursued by the United States government, but it is only a small part.

"Millions of dollars have gone to Alaska universities to harness the power of the aurora borealis, the electrical energy shimmering in the northern skies... The earmarks also financed, among other things, 'a supercomputer north of the Arctic Circle' without naming the University of Alaska. Fairbanks as the beneficiary."23 Early on in the HAARP project there was confusion about "harnessing the energy of the aurora" (the northern lights) for use by the military. The real use appears to be for over-the-horizon effects, communications and ABM defense-related research. The University of Alaska again is the recipient of a supercomputer for "academic" research. The reality once again is that the University is being used to conduct military experiments for advanced weapon systems without full public disclosure or debate.

The above updated material is quoted from the book Earth Rising - The Revolution: Toward a Thousand Years of Peace by Dr. Nick Begich and James Roderick

22. Richter, Paul, "Army laser zaps satellite." Anchorage Daily News, Oct. 21, 1997. EPI426
23. Weiner, Tim. "Universities tap Congress' deep pockets." Anchorage Daily News, Aug. 24, 1999. EPI563

Immediate Release

Dr. Nick Begich founder of Earthpulse Press and co-author of Angel's Don't Play This HAARP and Earth Rising the Revolution, delivered a lecture on Arctic issues and HAARP in Brussels in the European Parliament on May 5-7, 1997 at the 12th General Assembly Globe International. In attendance were several members of the Russian Duma including Vitaliy Sevastyanov one of the delegates listed below. Dr. Begich's book, an expose' published in September 1996, launched the international investigation into the issues surrounding HAARP.

US HAARP Weapon Development Concerns Russian Duma

Interfax News Agency - August 9, 2002

"MOSCOW (Interfax) - The Russian State Duma has expressed concern about the USA's programme to develop a qualitatively new type of weapon.

"Under the High Frequency Active Auroral Research Programme (HAARP) [website address: http://server5550.itd.nrl.navy.mil/projects/haarp/], the USA is creating new integral geophysical weapons that may influence the near-Earth medium with high-frequency radio waves," the State Duma said in an appeal circulated on Thursday [8 August].

"The significance of this qualitative leap could be compared to the transition from cold steel to firearms, or from conventional weapons to nuclear weapons. This new type of weapons differs from previous types in that the near-Earth medium becomes at once an object of direct influence and its component.

These conclusions were made by the commission of the State Duma's international affairs and defence committees, the statement reads: The committees reported that the USA is planning to test three facilities of this kind. One of them is located on the military testing ground in Alaska and its full-scale tests are to begin in early 2003. The second one is in Greenland and the third one in Norway.

"When these facilities are launched into space from Norway, Alaska and Greenland, a closed contour will be created with a truly fantastic integral potential for influencing the near-Earth medium," the State Duma said.

The USA plans to carry out large-scale scientific experiments tinder the HAARP programme, and not controlled by the global community, will create weapons capable of breaking radio communication lines and equipment installed on spaceships and rockets, provoke serious accidents in electricity networks and in oil and gas pipelines and have a negative impact on the mental health of people populating entire regions, the deputies said.

They demanded that an international ban be put on such large-scale geophysical experiments.

The appeal, signed by 90 deputies, has been sent to President Vladimir Putin, to the UN and other international organizations, to the parliaments and leaders of the UN member countries, to the scientific public and to mass media outlets.

Among those who signed the appeal are Tatyana Astrakhankina, Nikolay Kharitonov, Yegor Ligachev, Sergey Reshulskiy, Vitaliy Sevastyanov, Viktor Cherepkov, Valentin Zorkaltsev and Aleksey Mitrofanov."

INTRODUCTION

Raising the Roof of the World

A four-year old child in his sandbox looks up at a blue sky with his eyes full of trust. His mother places a straw hat on his head, dabs sun blocking cream on his freckled nose, and expects that, because she shielded him from the sun's ultraviolet rays, he is safe from harmful radiations. But is he? Both his body and his planet are being penetrated by an unprecedented mix of man-caused radiations, and now the U.S. military plans to stir up the mix even further. They could go too far this time.

This book is about people who search for the truth about the Pentagon's project that is quietly being built at a remote outpost in Alaska. The $30 million project euphemistically named HAARP (High frequency Active Auroral Research Program) is made to beam more than 1.7 gigawatts (billion watts) of radiated power into the ionosphere - the electrically-charged layer above Earth's atmosphere.

Put simply, the apparatus is a reversal of a radio telescope - just transmitting instead of receiving. It will "boil the upper atmosphere".24 After disturbing the ionosphere, the radiations will bounce back onto the earth in the form of long waves which penetrate our bodies, the ground and the oceans.

Could the invasion of radiations damage plants and animal life on the ground? One technician/researcher told National Public Radio affiliate KCHU, "I can hardly find an expert who knows anything about this, because they're all working for the government. Or working for a university which by proxy is for the government, because they're funded either through (defense subcontracts) contracts or through grants from the Department of Defense."

"Working for the government" can certainly be an honorable position. But in the case of science, it gets in the way of objectivity and courage to explore. Throughout this century, scientists are increasingly hesitant to investigate freely outside their specialty. They are all too aware that the military/industrial/academic complex decides who gets the lucrative grant, consultancy or academic position. However, there are independent experts such as those who looked into HAARP. They speak out in the pages of this book.

These researchers learned that HAARP represents a technology which could lead to a new class of weapons that could change our world profoundly - an all-purpose military tool. If misused, the tool could mess up the weather. It could be used against humanity in a way that would change what people think, believe and feel. It could be used for good or evil, just as a harp can produce the music of Mozart or the melody of a death march.

24 Electronics tecnnician Eric Nashlund describing HAARP for National Public Radio, KCHU Apr. 27, 1994.

Many technological "notes" could be played by HAARP-type military experiments. They can:

* manipulate global weather;

* hurt ecosystems;

* knock out electronic communications; or

* change our moods and mental states.

That last item will surprise researchers who have been looking only at the possible environmental effects of HAARP-type technologies. However, the authors believe that no sane person wants to be manipulated into artificially-induced moods or actions, and that these possibilities are real. As you will see in the research cited in this book, U.S. decisionmakers for the first time are proposing to mix military and civilian police resources, under the banner of "non-lethal" weaponry for crowd control and other purposes.

This book looks at what can be done with modulated radio frequencies - the stuff of the HAARP experiments - and what environmental effects the experiments could trigger.

The intent of this book is to call for a moratorium on use of the super powerful ionospheric heaters until independent scientists and other nonmilitary decisionmakers can have an educated look at what the experimenters could do. To put it simply, no one is supervising the big boys who have the big toys and the fat black wallets.

Despite the end of the Cold War, their allowances are still enviable. Even with some cutbacks to their spending, the military gets more than other sectors, For example, the Clinton administration as of May 1995 planned to spend at least $15 billion on "theater defense missile" systems in the next seven years.25 We contend that it's time for the public to take a closer look at how such money is used. It is being used to raise the roof of the world.

The authors' purpose is not to scare you, but instead to inform you on under-reported crucial issues, and to provide sources for more information. HAARP has been misrepresented by both the military/contractors and by its opponents. It's time to open up the debate to bring in an informed public, In these pages you will meet some of the people, from the Alaskan bush to a Princeton science laboratory, who courageously dug into the topic and, in the process, mobilized many other people.

25 Pilita Clark, "Australia, 05 Missile Deal for Star Wars II", Sydney Morning Herald, May 19, 1995.

"This project has nothing to do with musical
instruments or the natural aurora."
Clare Zickuhr, former accountant for ARCO, and HAARP researcher.

PART ONE

The People Wake Up To HAARP

"Tesla appeared as a real-life sorcerer, depicting...the ability to tame mysterious natural phenomena to the will of the human species." Marc J.Seifer, Ph.D.

Chapter One

THE SORCERERS APPRENTICES

Lightning flickered and thunder crashed through the mountain air as if cued up to open the International Tesla Society's July 1986 symposium. A woman admired the jagged streaks of light as she walked from downtown Colorado Springs to the College of the Canyon.

The display of light and sound seemed to have a life of its own, and triggered thoughts ahout Earth's life-protecting layers. The layers appear immensely deep to a human looking up from a sidewalk. But the few hundred miles of depth of the atmospheric layers are, to the planet, as a film of paint is to a student's desk globe.26 Unlike layers of paint, however, the atmospheric veils swirl and flow and interact.

She found comfort in thinking that surely no one could tame Earth's dynamic atmosphere. Granted, nature is under siege elsewhere. Engineers straighten undulating wild rivers and slap them into concrete flood-control channels. They shave Earth's forests and drain unruly tidal marshes. But who is arrogant enough to say that they own the sky?

After a brief downpour, the storm curtain opened to an electric blue sky, and the air sparkled with vitality. "No wonder Tesla did his most dramatic experiments here," Jeane Manning thought.

As a freelance journalist, she was in Colorado to learn more about the work of some maverick engineers and their hero, the electrical genius Nikola Tesla. In her research into non-conventional energy technologies, she had encountered more than a few books about Tesla, and thought it strange that mainstream textbooks ignore such a historical figure. In the nineteenth century he patented the alternating current (AC) system now used to generate and send electrical power to every home along this avenue, every building on the campus ahead and factories all over the world. His genius did not stop there, however, and before he died in 1943 he had discovered more radical inventions - apparently more than the tycoons of the early years of the twentieth century wanted to see developed.

Manning was curious about the stories. Did Tesla really send electricity more than twenty miles without wires? There was also the legend that Tesla invented a "space energy receiver" and powered a Pierce-Arrow car in a demonstration of the receiver. Yet he died penniless in 1943.

She expected this conference would give a broader picture of Tesla than her impression of a would-be God of Lightning, a view that came from seeing photographs of Tesla with bolts of light streaming from his fingertips. In front of

---

26 Hans J. Lugt. Vortex Flow in Nature and Technology, p. 150, John Wiley and Sons, NY 1978.

audiences of New York's cultural elite in his laboratory, he had allowed hundreds of thousands of volts to pass over his body and light up lamps, melt metal and explode small light bulbs. It was a don't try this at home scene, with the sLender inventor sprayed with crackling electrical current as he stood stork like on insulated shoes. Manning was fascinated at the thought of the elegant Tesla showing off for his cultured friends, in his laboratory lit with dazzling, pulsating waves of light in unearthly warm hues.27, 28

In the college where the conference was held, she picked up a press pass, then joined two hundred or so spectators in Armstrong auditorium. Onstage, man-made lightning sizzled through the air, zig-zagging from a giant electrical device called a Tesla coil which dwarfed three technicians. Blue light streaked along the paths of fried air and members of the audience covered their ears against the deafening electric buzz.

It looked lethal, but the demonstrator explained that although Tesla used high voltage (electrical pressure) current, it was of such a high-frequency that it danced over his skin instead of zapping his internal organs. A man sat on top of the apparatus before the coil was turned on with a deafening roar, then long sparks jumped from his fingers.

In other meeting rooms, would-be Gods of Lightning told about their research. One of those speakers was Robert Golka, a sturdily built man with the cocky personality of a lone adventurer. He prided himself on making fireballs by whatever means - even from a circuit breaker in a railroad engine when he had slammed the engine into reverse. A fireball, or ball lightning, is a glowing sphere of what looks like gases. The speaker said that Nikola Tesla's "wireless power" experiments near Colorado Springs made 30 second golfball-sized ball lightning in 1899.

Why would anyone want to play with lightning, in any shape? Golka was explaining; ball lightning might hold the secrets of thermonuclear fusion and eventually cheap power. He had rented an empty hangar in Wendover, Utah - the hangar where the atomic bomb was loaded into a bomber for its death-drop debut - and built a Tesla coil that was 51 feet wide for experiments. Golka spoke of voltages of 15 million volts and lightning-like discharges forty feet long. He hinted that the technology could be used as an "ultra-high megavolt source for particle beam weaponry".

Manning wondered what the engineer on stage really wanted to do - send electrical energy without wires or get a grant from the military. Or both. As if in answer to her question, Golka began to talk about wireless power transmission. Nikola Tesla had claimed to be able to send electrical energy without wires before the turn of the century, and he envisioned people all around the globe sticking rods into the earth to extract that energy - free. He didn't get to send power to the people, however. After Tesla admitted to financier J.P. Morgan that an experimental tower on Long Island was meant to send power as well as messages, his public career ended.

---

[27] Hesearch by Dr. Marc J. Seifer, p. 1-33, Proceedings of 1988 International Teste Symposium, available from International Tesla Society, PO Box 5636, Colorado Springs, CO 80931.

[28] SUPPRESSED INVENTIONS, edited by Jon Eisen, Auckland Institute of Technology Press1994.

Although he continued to invent and to learn, he was kicked out of the spotlight. Corporate moguls who were interested in creating monopolies and metering electrical power blackballed him.

Golka spoke about his own "Project Tesla", which involved building a 122-foot resonating tower high in the mountains. Manning struggled to understand what he meant by his efforts to get "earth resonance". She could visualize the more familiar resonance in musical instruments, and that helped to picture the earth vibrating as if its note was struck, If someone strikes a piano key of the same pitch as a string on her violin nearby, for example, the string will vibrate. The pitch of a note comes from how many times per second the sound vibrates. Similarly, the earth may have a resonant frequency; if electrical oscillations pound through the earth at a certain rate for a long enough time, the small periodic input may build up to a large vibration. Could Tesla's knowledge about resonance really be used for advanced technologies?

"We're losing to the Japanese," Golka insisted. "We have the technology and we're sleeping on it,"

Another short, lively speaker, an engineering professor, said there is "definite evidence that Nikola Tesla did excite the Schumann cavity in 1899". (This cavity is the area between the earth and the electrically- charged ionosphere.)

A man from Albuquerque, New Mexico, brought the talk down to earth again with a demonstration of a squat piece of equipment called The Tesla Earthquake Oscillator. Stroking his beard - a trim gray goatee - he assured onlookers that the oscillator would not be coupled to the earth during the demonstration and therefore would not cause any earthquakes. The mechanical device had a frictionless piston in a heavy casing. "This oscillator pounds the earth and impresses on it rhythmic vibrations of certain controllable frequencies," he said. The sound vibrations would bounce back and forth "in a reflection pattern which produces standing wave overlappings, or nodes, which act as lenses to propagate waves which set up a resonance condition."

There was that word "resonance" again. The electrical engineers talked about a buildup of ever more powerful effects. Manning may have had a puzzled expression on her face, because one man turned to her and offered to further explain resonance. He gave the example of a child pushing a larger person on a swing. Small pushes, correctly timed, gradually increase the distance through which the swing speeds. In other words, small input at regular intervals can produce big effects. Resonance would turn out to be an important concept, used deliberately or inadvertently by men who try to tame the sky and in the process accidentally interfere with our weather, health and minds. But Manning wouldn't encounter the skybusters until five years later.

In another meeting room, a graduate student from Montana State University, Kyle Klicker, talked about the hypothesis of William Hooper, who gave new twists on magnetic theory. In the early 1970's, Hooper had been showing that not all electrical fields are the same. What he called a "motional electric field" was different from the well-known electrostatic fields; the motional electric field results in a force that passes through lead. In other words, the field is unshieldable.

Electricity of a different quality? Manning wasn't ready for that; she was still studying beginner-level books about standard electricity whenever she went to a library. Over the previous few years she had realized that there was a shortage of journalists looking into this scene. Engineering lectures were a long way from her university training as a social-worker and job experience as a reporter, but she would look back on this 1986 conference, and more than a dozen other energy conferences to follow, as an introduction to the scene. They introduced her to the fast growing field of study called "non-conventional energy technologies". Even the William Hooper patent would turn up in her life again later, quoted in a "skybuster" document that would frighten some otherwise- unflappable scientists.

In the 1986 meeting, however, she tried to narrow down what she was learning in order to make sense of it. History; she could easily grasp history. Next on the Tesla program was a man with a craggy face and the erect posture of a military officer. Dr. Bill Jones of Los Angeles was a physicist, retired naval officer and former Top Gun pilot, who spoke about Nikola Testa's place in history. Fortunately, Jones ran through his talk at a much slower pace than the Mach 2 speed at which he had flown fighter planes. This physicist made it clear that he wanted Tesla reinstated in a place of honor in history. For example, Jones said, Guglielmo Marconi got recognition for radio, but Tesla had demonstrated a remote-control boat in Madison Square Gardens several years before Marconi's announcement. Dr. Jones also told about incidents such as the time in 1911 when Tesla described how radar could work. Tesla was too far ahead of his time to be heard. Six years later Tesla had offered his invention of a particle-beam weapon to the U.S. Department of War, and was laughed out of the war office. Again, he was too early in the century to be believed.

With a reporter's habit of taking notes, Manning penned the speaker's words in a notebook. "What do we really know about magnetism?....What do we really know about electrostatics?"

Dr. Jones talked about something described as "force potential manifested by stress, and not necessarily in the presence of mass." Some researchers looked at this force potential as being "scalar electromechanics". Mainstream scientists are reluctant to accept these new and revolutionary ideas, Dr. Jones said, but the ideas hold promise for clean energy technology.

On the last day of the conference as people flowed out of the auditorium, the crowd eddied around a man of wiry build, probably in his late thirties, who was speaking in an abrupt insistent voice that could be heard at the end of the hall.

"I object to this deliberate build-up of a cult around Tesla - referring to things he never invented, never said, as Tesla science'!"

The agitator was having a negative effect on the men arguing with him about power-beaming inventions. He appeared to feed on their annoyance. Later in the afternoon Manning again wandered out of the meeting hall for a mid-lecture break, head throbbing with new concepts. The same loud-voiced man, whom we will call Gregory Jones, was talking to another man and the two drew her into conversation. Gregory had the bouncy energy of someone who was looking for a quick laugh as well as an argument. Asked why he insults Nikola Tesla at a Tesla symposium, he replied, "I like deflating idols."

This iconoclast was a full-time researcher regarding what he said is a subtle, powerful but little-known dynamic energy which resides in the atmosphere and nearly everywhere. He said a number of experiments have proven that a dynamic non-material energy exists in all living forms.

Manning had enough of wild concepts for one day. However, at a gut level she felt that it was true. Living people, animals, plants and even the atmosphere seemed to exude some type of electricity or vitality when in a healthy state and when free from the effects of pollution. Was it possible that official science really doesn't know much about something so basic, because the measuring instruments hadn't yet been invented to detect it?

Gregory was saying that the coarse form of electricity used in nineteenfh- and twentieth-century technologies is an irritant to the primal form of energy in the air. According to that worldview, if Tesla had been able to send electricity wirelessly all over the world, it would have been an ecological disaster.

"Humans. My least-favorite species!" Gregory bellowed, following the embarrassed journalist toward the door to the meeting hall. "Listen to this. I just about got myself kicked out of the meeting. I went up to the speaker; you heard his talk?"

The electrical engineering professor with a Ph.D. that Gregory mentioned had seemed highly respected by the audience. The scientist had done much experimenting toward the goal of repeating Tesla's wireless electricity experiments. He had talked about wanting to "resonate the Schumann cavity". But Gregory was no respecter of academic degrees; he apparently had caused another commotion in the hallway by confronting this professor. "1 told him that if he tried to be another Tesla, he could cause the biggest ecological disaster we've ever had."

In Gregory's view, it was fortunate for the planet that Tesla's tower on Long Island - intended to broadcast power around the earth - was never completed. After the banker J .P. Morgan withdrew funding, no other financier would touch the project. It was just as well; the project would have been insane, Gregory insisted. Whether they send their electrical power through the air or through the earth, he said, these experimenters would be playing with our planet on a big scale.

"So what did the professor say?"

"He said 'well, we'll just have to try it and find out'."

Hearing this, Manning stood in silence. Gregory's concern for his planet's natural systems felt sincere. He asked for her business card. To her surprise, he would telephone her occasionally for about six years, and he would turn out to be ferociously intelligent, and the most relentless information-seeker she would meet in the coming years of travels to conferences of inventors and other energy researchers. She was careful to pass on to him only non-confidential information from published sources, never fully trusting Gregory because of his extremism. But she did appreciate the long-distance calls over the next few years to educate her about what he called "mad science".

"If Tesla's resonance effects, as shown by the Stanford team, can control enormous energies by minuscule triggering signals, then...with Godlike arrogance, we someday may yet direct the stars in their courses. "29
Frederic Jueneman, 1974.

Chapter Two

TRAIL FROM TESLA TO STAR WARS

After she returned home to Vancouver, Canada, Manning reported to a new friend who wanted to hear about the Tesla conference. He was John Hutchison, an inventor who had discovered an anomalous "anti-gravity" effect some years earlier while he had been restoring antique electrical equipment and building Tesla coils. During the previous years, unofficial delegations from Canadian and United States military groups had visited his laboratory to see the "Hutchison effect". Now he was working alone; the visitors had apparently learned all that they came to learn. His requests for copies of the videos they filmed in his laboratory were met with "sorry; we destroyed all those videos because there wasn't anything on them." He didn't believe it.

John Hutchison told Manning some of the amusing twists of his search for reports about his experiments. "I was phoning the Pentagon and asking for 'John South', because I was told that was the name of one of the guys who were here in my lab. By chance a secretary put me through to the man 1 described, and it turns out his name was Col. John Alexander."

The name would come up again more than five years later, as Manning gradually found out what else could be done with "Tesla technology" - so-called nonlethal weaponry. John Hutchison described Col. Alexander as a handsome, personable man who was a fun guy to be around throughout the days of the "anti-gravity" experiments in the "Vancouver laboratory.

Hutchison had leisure time to chat with Manning in a now-silent laboratory. He shared Tesla lore about beamed weaponry, and told her that the Soviet Union was mysteriously experimenting with radio-frequency signals, beaming them toward North America. Beginning in late 1976 he had been one of many ham radio operators who began picking up the 10-Hertz (cycles, "beats" or pulses per second) frequencies on radio receivers. Hams called these signals "the Soviets' Woodpecker" because of the sharp tapping they heard from the extremely low frequency (ELF) waves. Some researchers speculated that the Woodpecker signal was a Tesla-type weapon for mind control, because the ELF was at a frequency which could resonate with neurons in the human brain, and the transmission could be a carrier wave that was modulated (varied in amplitude, frequency or phase) to carry a hidden effect.

"Spoo-kyyy," she joked, dismissing what seemed to be a paranoid speculation,

29 Frederic Jueneman, "Innovative Notebook", Industrial Research magazine, February 1974.

Manning learned more about Nikola Testa two years later, after another symposium in Colorado Springs. One of the papers in the proceedings of that meeting was by a historian and psychology professor, Dr. Marc Seifer. She would recall it years later when learning about unpublicized experiments in lighting up the upper atmosphere.

Seifer gave Tesla credit for inventing fluorescent lights, just as the revered American inventor Thomas Edison is the inventor of the incandescent light bulb. The biographer notes that Tesla and Edison clashed over Edison's insistence that the country should stick to his direct current (DC) technologies for electrical lighting and power distribution. Tesla's AC system was better because AC electricity can travel hundreds of miles over power lines at high voltages, while a wire carrying DC would be unable to light bulbs a mile away from the generating plant.

Strangely, Edison was the one who was lionized in American history books. One of the stories that is told and retold, for example, is how he sent men to the Amazon to look for materials for the best filament for his light bulb. Edison's persistence is highly praised. However, most people today are unaware that Tesla's demonstrations showed the filament to be superfluous - not needed for electric lights. Using very high-frequencies (increased vibrations of the electrical current), he showed that the action of the air was more important than the filament. And thus he out-'Edisoned' Edison, said Dr. Seifer.

Seifer pulled together parts from 53 reference works, in his presentation "Nikola Tesla: The History of Lasers and Particle Beam Weapons".30 For an example of Tesla research, two brothers, both scientists, traveled to the Tesla Museum in Yugoslavia and read materials not available in North America. They suggested that Testa's particle-beam work evolved from his pioneering experiments with X-rays, as well as from his idea of lighting up the skies with his "magnifying transmitter" by beaming up electrical energy to the stratosphere (a level of the atmosphere above the clouds - about seven to thirty-one miles above the ground).

"That would be some light-up display!" Manning thought as she read the article. However, she wondered about the wisdom of treating the upper atmosphere as if it were merely gases in a giant fluorescent bulb.

She winced as she read a list of military uses for Tesla's many inventions: earthquake contrivances, world radar, particle beam weapons and brain wave manipulation. "One or more magnifying transmitters could theoretically send destructive impulses through the earth to any location," said Seifer. "For instance, a well-placed jolt of many millions of volts could theoretically destroy the communications network of any major city."

---

30 Dr. Marc J. Seifer, "Nikola Tesla: The History of Lasers and Particle Beam Weapons", Proceedings of 1988 International Tesla Symposium.

Seifer had been intrigued by issues that emerged from his investigation:

- Particle beam weaponry was such a high-level secret that President Jimmy Carter, for example, "was screened from vital technical developments by the bureaucracy of the CIA and Defense Intelligence Agency" (according to General George Keegan, former head of Air Force Intelligence);

- Wright-Patterson Air Force base in Dayton, Ohio, was mentioned, in regard to the air force base's use of bright young geniuses to attempt a breakthrough in Tesla technology.

Based on FBI files as well as other literature, Seifer concluded, "Great support is lent to the hypothesis that Tesla's work and papers were systematically hidden from public view in order to protect the trail of this top secret work, which today is known as Star Wars."

It was a paradox, Nikola Tesla's name was indeed invoked when describing proposed technologies that are as potentially planet- cleansing as "free energy" - non-polluting power generation. At the same time he was credited with inventing weapons which could be used for the Strategic Defense Initiative (S.D.I., popularly known as Star Wars). And his "wireless power" engineering experiments may have led to a disaster in Siberia, Manning later learned from scientist Oliver Nichelson. Tesla's love of nature seemed to be a contradiction to his desire to arrogantly manipulate it - to light up the sky. Over the next nine years, she had occasions to think about the deep frustration in Gregory's eyes at the Tesla conference as he described the professor's attitude of "We'll just have to try it, and find out."

Meanwhile one would-be god of the elements wasn't pulling any punches. A Texan, Dr. Bernard Eastlund, aimed his sights high -up to the ionosphere, In 1990 Gregory sent Manning a copy of a 1987 patent which cited Nikola Tesla under the heading "prior art". He suggested she send for the audiotape of a National Public Radio interview with Eastlund.

Manning was astonished when she read the patent, titled "A Method and Apparatus for Altering a Region of the Earth's Atmosphere, Ionosphere and Magnetosphere". Whichever way she looked at it, the proposed high-power beaming of radio frequency energy into the upper atmosphere sounded insane. For example, the patent said the technology could manipulate global weather systems. Gregory had been sending her articles which indicated that electric forces do affect the weather, so it came as no surprise.

More horrifying, she remembered what a brilliant physicist by the name of Walter Richmond had written about a possible technology which sounded very much like Eastlund's concept. The late Walter Richmond and anthropologist Leigh Richmond wrote a book titled The Lost Millennium, using the novel format to get their ideas out to the world A disastrous technology described as a "solar tap" in the book was startlingly similar to aspects of Eastlund's patent.31

31 Walter and Leigh Richmond. The Lost Millennium. Interdimensional Sciences Inc., Lakemont, Georgia 1967.

Although ionospheric heaters beam power from antennae on the ground up to the ionosphere, and the Richmonds' "solar tap"concept goes the other direction, both involve connecting the earth with the ionosphere. The novel described a solar tap that just wouldn't quit. It began from a technology that started on the ground, from which engineers beamed up a pathway for some of the ionospheric electricity to ride back down on. This planetary short-circuit usually blew out in a fraction of a second, but one day the fictional engineers made a fatal mistake. They kept a solar tap going while a solar flare surged into the ionosphere and then to the ground via the ionized pathway of the tap beam.

"And the surge of power from the tap became an avalanche. An avalanche at the pole in the vertical plane of the planet's magnetic field where the winds of magnetism would not rise to blow it out. One trillion watt-seconds of energy unleashed their fury on the polar cap in the first flash...Even as it discharged, the ionosphere was recharged from the solar furnace. The first flash became a mighty roar that poured an increased and now steady stream...of energy through the now-stabilized short circuit. Kilocubit after square kilocubit of frozen wasteland boiled. Watt after watt of ever-increasing avalanche energy lit the polar cap with a glare that had never before been seen..."

Could such a disaster happen in real life? Manning reread the introduction to The Lost Millennium. It said that in 1962 Walter Richmond was researching atmospheric electricity and developed the theory of what the couple called the solar tap - a source of abundant power from the electrical current that exists as a "potential" between the ground and the ionosphere. "The physics is exact. The power is there for the tapping".

Such massive amounts of power would be distributed by broadcasting it, "which Nikola Tesla had proven could be done, before 1911". The two scientists believed that automobiles, industries and homes could be tuned into broadcast power, just as radios are tuned to certain frequencies. The bad news was that unless carefully handled, broadcast power would resonate with the structural steel of buildings in a destructive way, Richmond said.

Manning's attention was caught by the scientists' own life story. In 1963 the Richmonds' took their research papers on the solar tap to then-President John F. Kennedy's science advisor. They planned to also take them to the United Nations Science Advisory Committee. Instead they received a shock from their government.

"Our papers were placed under the Secrecy label (Secrecy Act legislation) and we were offered a government contract for research, which we refused. It would have placed us under the Secrecy Syndrome, in which we had refused for some years to take part, Leigh wrote. We were told to sit down and shut up, in no uncertain terms."

The vision of the fictional solar tap lingered in Manning's mind. The book described an experiment-gone-wrong that started an unquenchable avalanche of electrons. A character in the book said "the power's there. Enough to blow up the Earth if it's misused."

Is this what the late Walter Richmond knew, that had to be placed under the Secrecy Act? If the electrical power of the ionosphere avalanched onto Earth in a continuous flow, his book's character said, it would

"burn hell out of the spot where it touched Earth Empty the capacitor that's the ionosphere, and feed directly from the solar wind. Earth's an electrical motor...When the motor began to run wild, it would increase its rotational speed...Eventually the Earth would explode from increased centrifugal stress."

Manning read the novel's description of the fiery, steamy noisy destruction of a planet. "A shock wave, racing at the speed of sound...toppling great cities..." Destruction continued for days, and the planet "whipped about on its axis like a thing tortured." The Richmonds' novel vividly raised questions about the wisdom of pulsing
a radio-frequency beam which could make an ionized (and therefore electrically-conducting) channel between earth and the ionosphere.

Even if there were no danger of accidentally tapping into the ionospheric powerhouse and getting zapped in return, disrupting a part of the upper atmosphere violently is in itself a dangerous experiment, she later was told by independent scientists.32 Ionospheric heaters were nothing new, Manning had learned from articles sent her from Gregory. However, Eastlund's invention made it possible to stab the ionosphere with a much more powerful and more focused beam.

A few years later Gregory telephoned and said in a choked voice, "The maniacs are actually going to do it. In Alaska."

The U.S. Navy and Air Force would be paying a contractor, Arco Power Technologies Inc., to build a super-powerful ionospheric heater - an array of antennae - in the Alaskan bush outside of Anchorage. Over the next year Gregory mailed her articles, on ionospheric heaters and related topics, which he found in science journals dating back to the 1970's. He gave her the phone number for a man named Clare Zickuhr in Anchorage. Gregory became increasingly angry and pessimistic about the state of his planet's health, and eventually sent his entire file on ionospheric heaters to her. "I give up. I've written to everyone I could think of. You're a journalist; do something with this."

His words and the thought of what he called "mad science in our sky" weighed on her, but she was again employed as a reporter for a daily newspaper in a British Columbia city and had no time for starting any campaign. One day she photocopied excerpts from the file, wrote an introductory page, and gave the packet to the managing editor at the newspaper. He sent it to the newspaper chain's columnist in Ottawa, but the man never published a word about ionospheric experiments.

In early 1994 she telephoned a reporter at the Anchorage paper; Gregory had said the man was writing an article about the project that would beam so much power up to the ionosphere for military experiments. In a discouraged tone of voice the

32 Dr. Richard Williams, Physics and Society and interview with Adam Trombly, physicist.

reporter said that his editor was not interested in art investigative story of any depth about the project; the stance of the paper was that the military's infusion of money would provide jobs. Manning photocopied her now-thick file on the topic of ionospheric heaters and electric weather forces and sent it to the reporter anyway.

Her next call was to Clare Zickuhr. A year later, she would be in Alaska interviewing him and others who were concerned about the "skybuster", as Dr. Richard Williams of Princeton had named the proposed super-powerful ionospheric heater. The sequence of events that took her to Anchorage began when Dennis Specht, an anti-nuclear activist then living in Alaska, sent a news item to an Australian magazine.

"(HAARP) should be carefully studied by large groups of independent scientists..."
Dr. Patrick Flanagan

Chapter Three

WHAT'S GOING ON UP THERE?

Nick Begich can't be categorized by his long ponytail and youthful appearance; he started his first business in 1974 at the age of 16 and has worked in mining, construction, real estate and, more recently, a mid-level managerial job in the Anchorage School District.

Service in Alaskan politics and labor union organizing brought him public service awards, a couple of appointments to the Alaska Council for Economic Education and two terms as president of the Alaska Federation of Teachers (AFT). But it was his longtime interest in science that earned Begich the informal title of "evolving eclectic".

His life took another turn when he happened to be thumbing through the April 1994 issue of an Australian magazine that Patrick Flanagan suggested he check out, when the name of Nick's hometown newspaper caught his eye. "Odd that Nexus would print an item from the Anchorage Daily News," he commented to his wife Shelah.

The contents of the news brief startled them - the federal government was about to introduce some weird technology right in their backyard, figuratively speaking. Nick copied the reference and headed to the Anchorage municipal library to search out the original story, a November 20, 1994 letter to Anchorage Daily News from Eric Nashlund. It told about a military-funded project called HAARP - High-frequency Active Auroral Research Program - intended to "perturb" the ionosphere for Department of Defense experiments.

Nashlund's letter said:

"Some startling revelations came to light while researching the background of a military-sponsored project starting construction in Gakona...HAARP will be used to understand, stimulate and control ionospheric processes that might alter the performance of communications and surveillance systems, according to a HAARP fact sheet. The HAARP environmental impact statement claims negligible ionospheric impact, with no impact to climate, weather or ozone layer.

"An ARCO company has the bid for construction of HAARP: ARCO Power Technologies Inc. APTI holds a patent (# 4,686,605, "Method and Apparatus for Altering a Region in the Earth's Atmosphere, Ionosphere, and/or Magnetosphere", inventor: Bernard J. Eastlund; assignee: APTI Inc., Los Angeles) which matches closely the HAARP proposal dealing with transmitting extremely large amounts of radio-frequency energy into the ionosphere. It is evident that HAARP will at least test, if not fully implement, the patent capabilities.

"Patent #4,686,605 claims it has the following uses: 'cause...total disruption of communications over a very large portion of the Earth...disrupting not only land-based communications, but also airborne communications and sea communications (both surface and subsurface)...missile or aircraft destruction, deflection or confusion... weather modification...by altering solar absorption...ozone, nitrogen etc. concentrations could be artificially increased..."

Whether or not APTI was using that particular patent for HAARP, Begich questioned the wisdom of the whole effort, "If this technology works, is it in humanity's interest for a secretive bureaucracy to control something which could stop all electronic communications or change the planet's weather patterns?"

The library had the patent on microfiche. Its abstract (summary) read:

"A method and apparatus for altering at least one selected region which normally exists above the earth's surface. The region is excited by electron cyclotron resonance heating to thereby increase its charged particle density. In one embodiment, circularly-polarized electromagnetic radiation is transmitted upward in a direction substantially parallel to and along a field line which extends through the region of plasma to be altered. The radiation is transmitted at a frequency which excites electron cyclotron resonance to heat and accelerate the charged particles. This increase in energy can cause ionization of neutral particles which are then absorbed as part of the region, thereby increasing the charged particle density of the region."

When Begich examined the patent's section titled "prior art", he was surprised to see references to articles about Nikola Tesla. Eastlund's drawings did appear similar to patents issued to Nikola Tesla in the late 19th and early 20th century!

Tesla's name had been associated with wild schemes, and Begich wanted to find out why would-be planetary engineers were still quoting the deceased inventor. Begich knew that Tesla was credited with startling an earthquake, generating "balls of electromagnetic energy" and other wonders. Toward the end of his life Tesla had claimed to hold the keys to creating a shield in the upper atmosphere that would destroy any incoming aircraft.

A cold chill ran through Begich after he read the articles cited. The first was the New York Times of December 8, 1915:

"Nikola Tesla, the inventor, has filed patent applications on the essential parts of a machine, possibilities which test a layman's imagination and promise a parallel of Thor's shooting thunderbolts from the sky to punish those who had angered the gods...Suffice it to say that the invention will go through space with a speed of 300 miles a second, a manless ship without propelling engine or wings sent, by electricity to any desired point on the globe on its errand of destruction, if destruction its manipulator wishes to effect. '

It is not a time, said Dr. Tesla yesterday, 'to go into the details of this thing. It is founded upon a principle that means great things in peace; it can be used for great things in war. But I repeat, this is no time to talk of such things.'

'It is perfectly practicable to transmit electrical energy without wires and produce destructive effects at a distance. 1 have already constructed a wireless transmitter which makes this possible, and have described it in my technical publications, among which 1 refer to my patent number 1,119,732 recently granted. With transmitters of this kind we are enabled to project electrical energy in any amount to any distance and apply it for innumerable purposes, both in war and peace, through the universal adoption of this system, ideal conditions for the maintenance of law and order will be realized, for then the energy necessary to the enforcement of right and justice will be normally productive, yet potential, and in any moment available, for attack and defense. The power transmitted need not be necessarily destructive, for, if distance is made to depend upon it, its withdrawal or supply will bring about the same results as those now accomplished by force of arms'

Begich noticed the next article referred to in the patent also ran in the New York Times, on September 22, 1940 and read:

"Nikola Tesla, one of the truly great inventors, who celebrated his eighty—ourth birthday on July 10, tells the writer that he stands ready to divulge to the United States government the secret of his 'teleforce', with which, he said, airplane motors would be melted at a distance of 250 miles, so that an invisible Chinese Wall of Defense would be built around the country..."

"This 'teleforce', he said, is based upon an entirely new principle of physics that 'no one has ever dreamed about', different from the principle embodied in his inventions relating to the transmission of electrical power from a distance, for which he has received a number of basic patents. This new type of force, Mr. Tesla said, would operate through a beam one one hundred-millionth of a square centimeter in diameter, and could be generated from a special plant that would cost no more than $2,000,000 and would take only about three months to construct."

"The beam, he states, involves four new inventions, two of which already have been tested. One of these is a method and apparatus for producing rays 'and other manifestations of energy' in free air, eliminating the necessity for a high vacuum; a second is a method and process for producing 'very great electrical force'; the third is a method for amplifying this force and the fourth is a new method for producing 'a tremendous electrical repelling force'. This would be the projector, or gun, of the system. The voltage for propelling the beam to its objective, according to the inventor, will attain a potential of 50,000,000 volts."

"With this enormous voltage, he said, microscopic electrical particles of matter will be catapulted on their mission of defensive destruction. He has been working on this invention, he added, for many years and has recently made a number of improvements in it."

There was a third reference, apparently written by Tesla, that Begich could not obtain. Tesla's ideas in these articles raised more questions in Begich's mind about the version of a "law and order" likely to rise from any military organization controlling such technology. He believed that if this technology were to be implemented anywhere, it should be done so openly and honestly, and only when it can be safe and worthwhile for improving the human condition. The idea of unleashing such power into the planet's ionosphere disturbed him deeply.

Begich made telephone calls, did more reading and heard the reaction of a few independent scientists to the military-funded project in the sky. Their request to the military could be stated bluntly as: "Back off, Charlie; this is our planet too."

There was another aspect that concerned him besides HAARP's possible effect on weather or on emergency communications in the Alaskan bush. Over the years he had seen impressive studies saying that even low power levels of pulsed radio frequency beaming could affect human physiology, minds and moods. He decided to find out more, much more, from reputable sources. It would be foolish to hit the alarm button about HAARP without being certain.

One concern was clearly speculative. One of the HAARP documents[33] stated that "Ionospheric disturbances have been detected and ascribed to earthquakes such as the Alaska earthquake on March 28, 1964," He wondered if the reverse might be true - if deliberate ionospheric disturbances could in turn resonate with the materials in the earth and trigger an earthquake.

The earthquake question was only one of the questions nagging at the independent researchers. Begich did not know it at the time, but the research would focus his energies in a way that would attract additional similar minded people. Eventually their directed energies would "perturb" something bigger than themselves. Perhaps his life had led up to this.

Nick Begich, Jr. was raised in a political family where "making a difference" was a way of life. His father, Nick Begich, Sr., served as a state senator and later a representative in the United States Congress, and his mother Pegge was politically active in Alaska for more than 30 years.

After the disappearance of the airplane carrying his father and U.S. House Majority Leader Hale Boggs in 1972 when Nick Jr. was a teenager, his life changed irrevocably. However, the theme instilled by his parents was one of service and persistence. He and his five siblings between themselves also chalked up a lifetime of political experience.

But an equally strong thread in Nick's life was an interest in science. His early investigations led to an invitation to the 1978 International Biorhythm Research Association conference in Atlanta, as a youthful science "outsider" among

[33] National Telecommunications and Information Administration Preliminary Assessment of Air Force Ionospheric Research Instrument, Stage 2, Oct. 1,1993.

fifty senior scientists from around the world. Most were in the life sciences. The youth presented a simple paper about the idea that his country's researchers over-specialized and that multidisciplinary teams were the way to breakthroughs in science. His associations from this early experience led to a lasting interest in electrophysiology and life sciences. The studies became his creative outlet while he worked at mundane administrative jobs.

With this background, he could sort through the HAARP technical documents and see implications of its type of ionospheric interference. As he saw it, the government had understated the risks. As had fellow Alaskan Clare Zickuhr and others, he sent "piles of files" out to friends around the world, and information flooded back.

In the summer of 1994, Begich wrote an article about HAARP for Nexus magazine, to get the story out. He mentioned the Eastland patent, but acknowledged that it was controversial,

"The United States military denies that the HAARP project has anything to do with these patents. However, a careful review of the government documents leading to the contract with APTI leads one to the conclusion that... the military is deliberately attempting to mislead."

"While it is true that the device being built will not produce the full effects described in the patents, it is a necessary step in proving the effectiveness of the technology, in advance of a larger antenna array..."

"...patent number 4,686,605, issued August 11, 1987...is one of three related patents by the same inventor, one of which was locked up under a Navy National Security Order in the late 1980's."

In his Nexus article, Begich said that the Eastlund patents go beyond the applications dreamed of by Tesla. The Eastlund patent said that scientists in the previous few years had been trying to learn about the belts of trapped electrons and ions above the earth, in order to control and use the phenomena for beneficial uses;

"For example, in the late 1950's and early 1960s, both the United States and the USSR detonated a series of nuclear devices...to generate large numbers of charged particles at various altitudes..."34

"This can cause confusion of or interference with, or even complete disruption of, guidance systems employed by even the most sophisticated of airplanes and missiles. "35

'The ability to employ and transmit over very wide areas of the earth...electromagnetic waves of varying frequencies...provides a unique ability to interfere at will with all modes of communication, land sea and/or air, at the same time."36

34 united States patent number 4,686,605, issued August 11,1987.
35 Ibid.
36 Ibid.

"...this invention provides the ability to put unprecedented amounts of power in the Earth's atmosphere at strategic locations and to maintain the power injection level, particularly if random pulsing is employed, in a manner far more precise and better controlled than heretofore accomplished by the prior art, particularly by the detonation of nuclear devices., ."37

"...what is used to disrupt another's communications can be employed by one knowledgeable of this invention as a communication network at the same time. In addition, once one's own communication network is established, the far-reaching effects of this invention could be employed to pick up communications signals of others for intelligence purposes... "38

Eastlund spelled out other possible developments of his super-heater in the sky: "...missile or aircraft destruction, deflection or confusion could result, particularly when relativistic particles are employed."

"Also, large regions of the atmosphere could be lifted to an unexpectedly high altitude so that missiles encounter unexpected...drag forces with resultant destruction or deflection..."39

"Weather modification is possible by, for example, altering upper atmosphere wind patterns by constructing one or more plumes of atmospheric particles which will act as a lens or focusing device. "40

"Also...molecular modification of the atmosphere can take place so that positive environmental effects can be achieved. Besides actually changing the molecular composition of an atmospheric region, a particular molecule or molecules can be chosen for increased presence. For example, ozone, nitrogen etc. concentrations in the atmosphere could be artificially increased. Similarly, environmental enhancement could be achieved by causing the breakup of various chemical entities such as carbon dioxide, carbon monoxide, nitrous oxides, and the like..."4l

Begich pointed out to Nexus readers that the HAARP device being built at that time was not big enough to test ail of Easthmd's ideas. But it certainly looked like the military was interested in his patents. Begich had experience with "procurement" - the bureaucratic term for getting government contracts - and had once worked in the heart of Texas' defense contractor country. The facts of this case jumped out at him.

On November 3, 1993, the U.S. Air Force announced that the prime contractor on the first phase of the HAARP project was ARCO Power Technologies Inc. (APTI). At the time the project was put out for bids, APTI was a subsidiary of Atlantic Richfield Oil Company (ARCO) and owned the patent rights to Eastlund's

[37] united States patent number 4,686,605, issued August 11, 1987.
[38] Ibid.
[39] Ibid.
[40] Ibid.
[41] Ibid.

ionosphere-altering schemes, Begich looked up APT1 in the Dun & Bradstreet directory of corporations42 and learned that APTI had a president in Los Angeles and a staff of 25 employees in Washington DC, with sales of only $5 million a year,

How did a small subsidiary get the military contract for such a large project? According to the record, it won the right to build the project through exemptions in the military procurement process. The HAARP contract with APTI was more than five times larger than APTIs annual sales. As Begich saw it, the only way a virtually-unknown company in the military contracting arena could get such a contract is if they had proprietary information needed by the project. The trail circled back to the Eastlund patents,

Begich quoted the May-June 1994 issue of Microwave News, in which Eastlund described a "full, global shield" of accelerated electrons created with radio frequency (RF) transmitters. The HAARP project "obviously looks like a first step inwards this", Eastlund told the editor. However, he noted that the uses he described would need a significantly more powerful device with a much larger antenna than the HAARP array.

While the Eastlund controversy continued, Begich wrote that a February 1990 paper from the Navy and Air FoTce43 made it clear that the project goal is to learn how to manipulate the ionosphere on a more grand scale than the then Soviet Union could do with its similar facilities. HAARP would be the largest ionospheric heater in the world, located in a latitude most conducive to putting Eastlund's invention into practice. Looking at the northern lights, as the aurora is called in Alaska, was not the point of HAARP. Begich quoted from the U.S. Air Force "Record of Decision, High-frequency Active Auroral Research Program (HAARP), Final Environmental Impact Statement" of October 18, 1993:

"The data obtained from the proposed research would be used to analyze basic ionospheric properties and to assess the potential for developing ionospheric enhancement technology for communications and surveillance systems... Apotential DoD (Dept. of Defense) application of the research is to provide communications to submerged submarines. These and many other research applications are expected to greatly enhance present DoD technology."

"The Air Force and Navy proposes to build and operate the most versatile and capable ionospheric research facility in the world. The government intends to utilize the unused Over-the-Horizon Backscatter (radar) site near Gakona, Alaska, for this program... Research requirements stipulated that the selected site must fall in the range of latitudes between 61 and 65 degrees, either north or south. Siting constraints included that the site must be: on US soil, on DoD land to the maximum extent practical..."

The response to the Nexus article showed that more people were interested in HAARP than the Alaskan researchers had originally expected, Begich noticed that

42 America's Corporate Families 1993 ,1, p. 156.
43 "Joint Services Program Plans and Activities", February 1990.

many of the independent researchers were afraid to identify themselves and "take on the government", One group of individuals whom Begich - appreciating their wish to be anonymous - began to refer to as "the guys in the bush" sent him volumes of files that they saw as relating to HAARP, Books, papers, news clippings and Internet items arrived each week, as well as occasional government records. He paid less attention to the Internet items, unless they mentioned books or articles or patents he could check out firsthand. One day a box arrived at the Begich family home, containing about eighteen inches of new files.

About this time, Sir Anton Jayasuriya of the Open International University of Complementary Medicines invited Begich to present a paper at the World Congress on Alternative Medicines and to receive a doctorate degree in traditional medicine. The honor was totally unexpected, and he packed for travel. As it turned out, circumstances did not allow him to travel to Sri Lanka, so he planned a trip to Finland instead. In Finland he would at last see his old friend (from the 1978 conference and from correspondence) Dr. Reijo Makela, in order to talk about promoting Makela's scientific discoveries in electrophysiology.

Meanwhile one of the HAARP researchers in Canada had written to thank him for the Nexus article. Jeane Manning was a writer who had just completed a manuscript, The Coming Energy Revolution. She suggested they collaborate on an article for an American publication. Begich replied by telephoning her in Vancouver. They learned that each had too much pressing information in their files to compress into an article. It had to be a book.

On his stopover at the Seattle airport before flying to Finland, Begich met with Manning for a few hours and found they shared similar values. They decided to try long-distance book authoring.

While he was in Finland, the only unsettling event was that HAARP-related files which he had forwarded to Reijo Makela had mysteriously disappeared from Reijo's office. The two men discussed the project anyway, and concluded that HAARP was an affront to good sense and a threat to safety. This conclusion was based on Makela's advanced understanding of the effects of radio waves upon people.

Back in Anchorage, in early 1995 the Begiches sent an airline ticket to Jeane Manning, and their nine year old son moved into his sisters' bedroom for two weeks when she arrived. Nick took time off from work and they spread HAARP-related files for twenty feet across the carpet in his study, while typing on his computer and a borrowed notebook computer. Shelah joined them for a visit to NO HAARP activist Clare Zickuhr and his wife, and they also drove hours into the "bush" country to speak with other activists. The most revealing interviews, however, took place over the telephone lines. While in Alaska, Jeane phoned Houston, Texas, and interviewed a man who has apparently been elbowed out of the inner circle of gigawatt-heater project planners. Was it because he talked too much to the media?

"Scientists build toys. This is a neat big toy."44
Dr. Bernard Eastlund, talking about HAARP.

"Tests of this kind could cause irreversible damage."45
Dr. Richard Williams, 1988.

Chapter Four

SKYBUSTERS UNDER SECRECY

Dr. Bernard Eastlund chuckles as he tells about the time that the metaphorical light bulb clicked between his mind and that of Dr. Simon Ramo.

"He's a big guy in military science," Eastlund explained to Manning in a telephone interview. "He was the founder of TRW and all these big companies. They're a big defense contractor. At the time he was a board member for ARCO (Atlantic Richfield Oil Company)."

When Eastlund walked into the meeting room that day in the 1980's to give a presentation, he was aware of the senior scientist's presence. Eastlund had a collection of transparencies ready to slap onto the audiovisual table, to illustrate his new concept for focusing a powerful beam of radio-frequency or microwave energy onto the ionosphere. He had several reasons to expect approval. For one, whoever would fire up electrical generators to power his proposed giant transmitter could be a big paying customer for ARCO's natural gas fields on the North Slope of Alaska,

"I came in with my viewgraphs," Eastlund recalls. "I showed one viewgraph on the location of the North Slope of Alaska. Where the earth's magnetic field is, where Russia is, and everything. Then 1 had another slide where I showed taking the gas, having an antenna and beaming it up."

Eastlund didn't have to show the next slide. The idea clicked and the military contractor apparently wanted to just think about it foT a minute.

"(Ramo) basically told me to shut up, and sat there and said, 'such a great idea!' I didn't have to show any of the detail," Eastlund said with obvious pride. "It's that kind of a concept. In fact, dealing with knowledgeable people, I never made it beyond the third view graph. Then they all started inventing, themselves."

The senior scientist whom Eastlund impressed is an inventor who has patents on microwave technology, electron optics and guided missiles. Ramo co-authored the book Fields and Waves in Modern Radio in 1944, and in general he is a knowledgeable engineer.

Eastlund has been described as a soft-spoken, highly-reputable physicist, president of a technological company in Houston. "Eastlund is no wire-haired

---

44 Dr. Bernard Eastlund Feb, 20, 1995 interview with Jeane Manning.

45 Dr. Richard Williams, "Atmospheric Threat", Physics and Society, Apr. 1988.

madman," Omni magazine once said46, citing his degrees from Massachusetts institute of Technology and Columbia University, While working for eight years in the Atomic Energy Commission's fusion program in the early 1970's, for example, he co-invented a "fusion torch" that would use plasma leftovers from fusion reactors in recycling solid waste.

Some time after the meeting where Ramo heard Eastlund's beam focusing ideas, the two worked together on a patent that they filed in early 1985. Their "Method and Apparatus for Creating an Artificial Electron Cyclotron Heating Region of Plasma" was the second of a series of three patents that Eastlund assigned to a subsidiary of ARCO - Arco Power Technologies Inc. (APTI). Ramo's contribution to the concept was to use a large superconducting coil on the ground to modify earth's magnetic field at a high altitude, Eastlund said.

It had been a good time for Eastlund. The controversy over "the Eastlund patents" had not yet begun. No physicist had yet warned that experimenting with his patents could turn into "an act of global vandalism".

Eastlund had been hired by ARCO as a consultant, to come up with uses for the 30 trillion cubic feet of natural gas in ARCO's reserves on the North Slope of Alaska. ARCO's problem was the remote location of the gas. Building a pipeline and shunting the gas to industrial centers was no answer; that pipeline megaproject had been on the oil industry agenda for more than twenty years without development. The company would get maximum profit if it found a use for its product right there on the North Slope itself.

In that scarcely-populated stretch of icebound real estate, who would be the customers for massive amounts of power? Looking at it in terms of burning the gas on the spot to power a huge generator and make electricity, Eastlund realized that they were talking billions of watts of electricity, not just the millions watts put out by a city's megawatt power plant. What could his boss possibly do with a few gigawatts?

He rejected every idea that needed smaller amounts of power. Eventually Eastlund came up with a wild plan - use all that energy to power the biggest "ionospheric heater" in the world. The equipment on the ground would beam focused energy up to the ionosphere, where the beamed radio frequency (RF) waves would interact powerfully with charged particles that are always trapped there. The heating effect of the focused beam would then dramatically push a plume - a large section of the ionosphere - up and outward from Earth.

As it later turned out, the big ionospheric heater in Alaska would be located far from the North Slope gas fields. But the challenge had served to spark Eastlund's inventiveness.

Anyone outside the military-industrial-academic complex, watching Eastlund research the history of other ionospheric heaters, might wonder - why would anyone want to heat and lift part of the upper atmosphere? Was the motive to allow

46 Bill Lawren, "Rediscovering Tesla", Omni magazine, March 1988.

his country to get a jump ahead of the Soviet Union, which had experimented with related technology? Only they know for sure, Some of Eastlund's research was supported by the Defense Advanced Research Projects Agency (DARPA)[47] under the project title "Alaska North Slope Electric Missile Shield".

The United States already had smaller antennae in several locations, for experiments in bouncing radio waves off the ionosphere. With a bigger tool than anyone else and the ability to focus its beam, the United States military could fry incoming missiles, disrupt global communications, change the chemical composition of the upper atmosphere and even engineer weather by redirecting very high wind patterns (jet streams).

Other tricks which his invention could do would be debated a few years later. "Earth-penetrating tomography", (scanning the earth with radiations bounced off the sky - basically, X-raying the ground in a search for tunnels and hidden caches) is a use which would show up in the National Defense Authorization Act for 1995. And there are possible uses that are more futuristic than the tomography.

In the 1980's it wasn't an easy sell to the patent office, however. When he applied for the first of several patents on his ionospheric- heater invention, the patent examiner told Eastlund that his invention sounded like science fiction. Eastlund replied that the technology was all known. Step-by-step, he backed up his claims with paperwork that proved that the technology was possible. Then the government officials were impressed. But before the document moved out into the public literature in 1991, the Navy first slapped a Secrecy Order on his U.S. patent number 5,038,664 for a year. That patent told how to make a "shell of relativistic particles" high in the sky. "Relativistic" particles travel at near the speed of light.

When Eastlund had the military's attention, the Pentagon opened its pocketbook and spent hundreds of thousands of dollars on the initial study of his claims. Eastlund said in a 1988 radio interview that the defense department had done a lot of work on his concepts, but he was not at liberty to give details. He later told Manning that after he had worked within ARCO foT a year and applied for patents, Defense Advanced Research Project Agency (DARPA) had combed through his theories then issued a contract for him to study how to generate the relativistic electrons in the ionosphere.

After 1986 he was off the ARCO payroll, before the invention drew much lire in the media. Its first major publicity was in 1988, the year after one of his patents on the system - how to beam huge amounts of electromagnetic energy to selected regions of the upper atmosphere48 - was made public.

The publicized patent was titled "A Method and Apparatus for Altering a Region of the Earth's Atmosphere, Ionosphere and Magnetosphere". Eastlund told Alex Chadwick of National Public Radio that the patent should have been kept under government secrecy. He said he had been unhappy that it was issued publicly, but, as

47 DARPA Contract No. DAAHDJ-86-C-0420 "Alaska North Slope Electric Missile Shield.
46 Bill Lawren, "Rediscovering Tesla", Omni magazine, March 1988.

he understood it, the patent office does not keep basic "fundamental information" secret. "You don't get a patent if you don't describe in enough detail to another person how to use it," he said. Specifics of military applications of his patent remain proprietary (secret), he added.

The radio interviewer, Chadwick, confronted Eastlund about aspects which troubled the interviewer - mainly the enormity of what the inventor claimed his invention could do. Effects such as changing the planet's atmosphere sounded like something out of a Jules Verne novel.

Sounding quite proud of his accomplishments, Eastlund replied that nothing in the patent was science fiction; it is based on combining known technologies. "Many of the applications in here are aimed at beneficial effects."

Are artificial sunspot-effects beneficial? Chadwick pointed to page eleven of the patent, where Eastlund claimed that his invention could disrupt communications all over the world. With a short laugh, the inventor acknowledged the claim. "And obviously that doesn't sound too beneficial, so I'm contradicting my answer to the last statement. But in the patent itself is the fact that you can do that. Sunspots or solar flares will disrupt communications badly. This would do that through basically the same mechanism."

Eastlund's enthusiasm for planetary-scale engineering came through just as clearly in an interview with Omni magazine. While acknowledging that many of the uses of his invention are warlike, he also talked about "more benign" uses. His view of benign included using the technology to reroute the high-altitude jet stream, which is a major player in shaping global weather. Another way to control the weather with his technology would be to build "plumes of atmospheric particles to act as a lens or focusing device" for sunlight, he told Omni. With this, the people controlling the antennae could aim in such a way that the return beams would hit a certain part of the earth. With the heating ability, they could experiment until they could control wind patterns in a specific place.

The Omni article explained. "What this means, he says, is that by controlling local weather patterns one could, say, bring rain to Ethiopia or alter the summer storm pattern in the Caribbean. His device might even help regenerate the depleted ozone layer, patch the ozone hole over Antarctica, or break up atmospheric industrial pollutants like carbon monoxide or nitrous oxide."

Not every scientist shared Eastlund's eagerness to experiment with the ionosphere. Dr. Richard Williams, a physicist with the David Sarnoff Research Center in Princeton, New Jersey, sent a letter to a scientific journal warning that Eastlund's invention might become a serious threat to the earth's atmosphere49. Williams summed up the contents in Eastlund/APTI's patent for altering the atmosphere, ionosphere and/or magnetosphere:

49 Richard Williams, "Atmospheric Threat", Physics and Society Vol. 17 No. 2 April 1988, page 16.

"The idea of the invention is to generate a beam of radio waves of enormous intensity and direct this toward the upper atmosphere. At certain altitudes, electron cyclotron resonance heating of existing electrons would cause further ionization of the neutral particles of the atmosphere. Among the intended uses of the invention are to 'disrupt microwave transmissions of satellites' or to cause 'even total disruption of communications over a very large portion of the earth'. Other intended uses include weather modification, lifting large regions of the atmosphere, and intercepting incoming missiles,"

Williams came up with a pithy one-word description of the concept - skybusting. "This 'skybusting' concept may sound like a tall order, but look at the power levels that will be used (10-to-the-ninth-power up to 10-to-the-eleventh-power watts)! This is equivalent to the output of ten to 300 large power generating stations."

High-energy experiments pose a danger to the upper atmosphere, Williams said. He then referred to Eastlund's statement in the radio interview - that a secret military project was already underway to study and implement the invention. Williams had a chilling warning.

"Tests of this kind could cause irreversible damage."

Williams reminded his fellow physicists that small changes in the upper atmosphere, such as mere traces of manmade substances, can have a profound effect. An example is the destructive effects on the ozone layer, a protective layer of Earth's atmosphere which absorbs dangerous ultraviolet radiation. While making it clear that the ozone layer and ionosphere are separate layers, physicists say the layers are interconnected as well as separate. Regarding the ozone layer, Williams said, "After long negotiations, the federal government had joined in an international treaty to protect the ozone layer. A few tests of the Eastlund invention might undo all that we have accomplished with the treaty."

Effects in the upper atmosphere cannot be kept in one spot, Williams noted.

The publicity was apparently not welcomed by ARCO Power Technologies Inc. In August of 1992, Jeane Manning had confronted the president of APTI, Ramy Shanny, Ph.D., after a power-beaming workshop at an International Energy Conversion Engineering Conference. She had come to the IECEC meeting to further educate herself about energy alternatives, but one item on the program took her away from the "advanced and innovative systems" sessions for a morning. The schedule said that a representative of APTI would be in a workshop on poweT-beaming, and she wanted to ask the person whether APTI was going to build Eastlund's invention.

Manning slipped in the room without needing to point to the press pass on her suit jacket. The workshop was a rather intimate gathering of colleagues from national laboratories, the federal department of energy and universities; the meeting room held less than thirty people. There was one other woman in the room, also looking severely professional as befits a senior research scientist at a national laboratory.

The discussion bounced from topic to topic, as if the participants were in a hurry to get the formal meeting over and meet informally. Canada was involved in an experimental aircraft that flew to 150 miles in 1987 from microwave power beamed from the ground, Manning learned. ARCO, Raytheon, Jet Propulsion Laboratory and Japanese scientists made history in microwave-power beaming, These aircraft or satellite projects can be used for surveillance, the speakers bragged. Or to relay power for "development of remote natural resources".

One well-dressed man stood up and asked for cooperation among the champions of laser beaming and the proponents of microwave beaming, "...to find out what the stuff can do. Let's get a team together and solicit money from the folks with the pocketbooks."

A project engineer for a large university's Center for Space Power was asked about environmental effects of microwave power beaming. He replied that the biggest challenge for the people in the room was the public perception of an environmental impact. Studies about microwave energy and microwave ovens were done in the 1970's and '80's, he noted, but since then the bulk of the environmental studies have focused on 60-hz transmission lines. "But I think, with the data that's out there, you can show that at the power densities we're talking about operating, there certainly will not be any thermal effects, and the power densities where the people will be going close to the beam will be such that you're not going to have a problem."

To Manning's surprise, he admitted that "the big question is 'what (when people are exposed to power-beaming) are the effects from low-density, long-term duration?' There hasn't been any kind of study on that, and that's going to be such a detailed involved intensive study that it's not going to be done in the near future. Because there's no mandate."

Manning swore quietly into her tape recorder. "Then why in the world are they asking for money to build their toys before such a study is done?" She didn't ask the question aloud, because she wanted to hear as much as possible from the next speaker - the president of APTI. Perhaps she could find out if the beaming to ionosphere experiment had been canceled,

Dr. Shanny was a rather swarthy and large man, dressed in a well-tailored dark suit, His presentation was brief, with an audiovisual about ARCO's experiment in beaming microwave power to an aircraft in Canada, and a few comments. Perhaps being there was more important than giving a detailed report.

Afterward, Manning waited outside the meeting room door on the sun-dazzled patio, and stopped Shanny as he came out. She introduced herself with her business card from Explore! magazine, then asked him about the status of the Bernard Eastlund patented technology.

Shanny backed away from her, gesturing with his hands and using facial expressions to convey the impression that Eastland is crazy and the company was not going to have anything further to do with Eastlund's futuristic patent.

Momentarily assured that APTI would not be building the mega-instrument, Manning let him rejoin his group and head for a restaurant. Then she replayed the scene in her mind and realized he had not given her a single complete sentence that she could quote. The message - disavowing Eastlund's work and reassuring her that APTI would not build such a technology - had cleverly been conveyed without Shanny having committing to uttering words.

A couple of years later, the giant defense contractor E-Systems bought Shanny's company, APTI. The trail from Eastlund's schemes was further buried in 1995, after Raytheon corporation bought the HAARP contract - and thus the APTI patents - from E-Systems,

Even if the contractors really did completely disown the controversial Eastlund patent # 4,686,605, APTI was the assignee on a dozen others whose technologies were related. APTI, and the larger defense contractors who later swallowed APTI and its patents, probably did leave Bernard Eastlund's controversial patents in their dust50 as they accelerated their power-beaming technology. Among the unpublicized patents - also assigned to APTI Inc. -that Nick Begich uncovered were

- 5,068,669 "Power Beaming System";
- 5,041,834 "Artificial Ionospheric Mirror Composed of a Plasma Layer..";
- 4,999,637 "Creation of Artificial Ionization Clouds Above the Earth";
- 4,817,495 "Defense System for Discriminating Between Objects in Space";
- 4,873,928 "Nuclear-Sized Explosions Without Radiation".

In the interview with Manning, Eastlund explained why his method for creating a high-energy missile shield was an improvement over the current Strategic Defense Initiatives type of beaming - no satellites needed. The antennae on the ground radiate energy into the areas high above the Earth without the use of particle beaming from satellites to accelerate electrons in the ionosphere. At very high altitudes, the effects would multiply if a high enough power level was used.

"I took a factor of about a million steps {increase) in power it could deliver at, say, 100 kilometers altitude. 1 took it way beyond what the slate of the art was at the time...It opened up new things. As I understand it, that's one of the selling points of HAARP-by having this massively-greater power, you can do a lot more interesting things. Basically, what 1 said in the patents."

50 Eastlund/APTI patent #4,686,605 "Method and Apparatus for Altering a Region in the Earth's Atmosphere, Ionosphere and Magnetosphere"; # 5,038,664 "Method for Producing a Shell of Relativistic Particles, held up one year by Navy secrecy order; and # 4,712,155 "Method and Apparatus for Creating an Artificial Electron Cyclotron".

Is it possible that the HAARP scientists could have miniaturized the technology so that they don't need such a large area of land and electrical power as called for in Eastlund's patents? Manning asked him.

"It's entirely possible," he replied. "They have had a lot of good engineers working on it for some time. I would hope they have improved it."

In 1994 Eastlund wrote to an Australian who was concerned about HAARPs impact on New Zealand and Australia, David White.[51] "As we discussed, this (HAARP) antenna may be a first step toward determining if some of the applications discussed in my patents could be accomplished. Most of the military applications require generation of relativistic electrons in the ionosphere. It is my understanding that one of the purposes of the HAARP antenna is to study the generation of relativistic electrons."

The speeded-up electrons would travel along Earth's magnetic field lines and could either "bounce" on a field line over Australia and return to the north, or "be lost and fall into the atmosphere". "Don't panic," Eastlund wrote, "this happens very high in the atmosphere,"

"It is...years in the future that enough electrons might be generated to merit concern in the Southern hemisphere, and that only if it can be proven that such electrons can be created with the antenna."

In the meantime, Eastlund said, "since I stopped working for ARCO, I have spent some time investigating uses of the antenna for possible replenishment of the ozone holes, and for steering the jet stream for weather modification."

When the ionizing beams make some ozone by a breakdown in the atmosphere, he later told Manning, they also increase nitrogen compounds up there. "The problem is, it takes a lot of energy to make a lot of ozone." The scientist planned to continue to work on the problem.

He would like recognition for his part in inventing the HAARP advanced ionospheric heater. "They own it, but they can't take credit for it," he said. "I was upset, because 'internal politics' is why I was let go. I went to my patent lawyer, and he said 'Ben, don't worry about it. It's a far out idea...If it works, the United States government says you invented it. And they can't take that away.' "

As evidence that HAARP was based on Eastlund-type technology, he said, "...In the RFP (Request for Proposal) for the project, for example, they stated that generation of relativistic electrons was one of the objectives of the program."

Eastlund gave a vivid picture of how energetic those electrons are. "The electron that hits your TV screen is moving at 25,000 electron- volts. When it gets more than a half-a-million, that's when you call it relativistic. The ones (HAARP) is talking about are one to three million electron-volts."

[51] March 26, 1994, letter from Bernard Eastlund to David White of Production Technologies Inc., quoted with permission from Dr. Eastlund.

The patent he wrote with Simon Ramo dealt with the how-to. "How you turn the knobs on your antennae and beam things and make things happen." Since the Earth's magnetic field is barely strong enough to turn the needle on a compass, Ramo added the concept of using a very large ground-based superconducting coil to modify the amount of the earth's magnetic field at a certain altitude, Eastlund told Manning, "To give you a little more ability to control things...It would allow you to more effectively do things up at the high altitude."

The reporter asked, "Has anyone raised the thought of things getting out of control?"

Eastlund didn't seem to notice the anger behind her question, and he gave an enthusiastic technical answer. "I don't mean control in that sense," he said, "Let's say you want electrons to get hot. You send your waves through and they get hot, but only use up one per cent of what you sent...So you have to use a huge antenna....Control in terms of doing what you want."

The physicist emphasized that he is in favor of HAARP. "If ten per cent of any of these things work out, it's going to be a very neat thing."

A growing number of people don't agree. Before we meet Clare Zickuhr and "the guys in the bush", the next chapter will look back at the history of attempts to do "neat things" in the upper atmosphere.

"When the Earth came alive it began constructing its own membrane, for the general purpose of editing the sun...The sky is a miraculous achievement. "52
Lewis Thomas, 1973

Chapter Five

HIGH ON THE SKY

Countless suns in other galaxies spray cosmic rays in all directions continuously. Closer to home, our own sun radiates gamma rays, X-rays and shorter wavelengths of ultraviolet light. When they hit the outer layers of earth's atmosphere, these cosmic rays are absorbed by atoms, but in the process electrons are knocked off the atoms. Thus there is a constant flux (flow) of electrons at this altitude, and the atoms are changed to positively charged ions. This process gave the ionosphere its name. Although ionization happens at heights as high above the earth as 1,000 kilometers and as low as 50, the positively charged ions and negative electrons are most dense at altitudes of 80 to 400 kilometers. In non-metric terms, the ionosphere begins at an altitude of about 30 miles and goes up to about 300 miles or more.

This natural electrically charged shield around the earth filters harmful wavelengths of solar radiation, protecting the surface of Earth from significant bombardment.53

Blown toward Earth on the solar wind, electrically charged particles follow Earth's magnetic field lines. Along such paths of least resistance, high energy particles funnel toward the magnetic poles of Earth, squeeze into a poleward current called the electrojet, and are dumped toward the earth. Sometimes the electrojet dwindles, but at other times a solar flare floods the system with high energy particles and the sky lights up into the dancing, shifting curtains of an auroral display. At the south pole it is called the aurora australis, and the northern lights is the aurora borealis.

For eons the electrojet has flowed in the form of a direct current into the polar regions of Earth. Who would want to change the electrojet?

THE PATH TO A GIGA PROJECT

In a way it began with a few puzzled radio listeners. In 1933 a man in Eindhoven, Holland tried to listen to a radio station in Beromunster, Switzerland. Suddenly he was hearing two stations. The powerful Radio Luxembourg was not supposed to tune in at this frequency; it broadcast at a frequency far apart on the dial, but here it was superimposed on the Swiss station.

---

52 Lewis Thomas, "The World's Biggest Membrane, The Lives of a Cell", Massachusetts Medical Society 1973.
53 Robert W. Christopherson, Geosystems. Macmilian NY 1992.

The Luxembourg Effect, as it was later called, did not remain a mystery long. The Dutch scientist named Tellegen figured out that the cross modulation of the radio signals was a wave interaction caused by nonlinear characteristics of the ionosphere.54 What this means to non-scientists is that reactions of the ionosphere are unpredictable.

Then other scientists also realized that high power radio waves changed the temperature and density of electrons in the ionosphere and that other radio signals passing through the "modified" region were influenced. They experimented with wave interaction for thirty years and eventually were certain that directing high power waves into the ionosphere produced instabilities. Their tool was a transmitter – array of antennae - called an ionospheric heater. (Press releases now refer to it as an Ionospheric Research Instrument, but this book will call a heater a heater.) For the most part, ionospheric heaters were operated by universities and research institutes. Stanford Research Institute (SRI) International developed much of the high frequency transmitting programs with money from the Defense Nuclear Agency.55 The newest, multi-purpose, tool being built for HAARP, however, is directed from Phillips Air Force Base.

PENN STATE PIONEERED HEATERS

Anthony Ferraro, Ph.D., is a professor of electrical engineering at Penn State university, a school that was a pioneer in experimenting with this knowledge. In 1966, electrical engineers built a 500 kilowatt (kw) ionospheric heater at a site near the campus, with an effective radiated power of 14 megawatts. Ferraro developed a technique of beaming power with two transmitters at the same time, as a way of probing. A high-power transmitter would heat a region of the lower ionosphere while a weaker transmitter was pulsing. Thus the experimenters could study the wave interaction.56 Penn State has been paid to do ionospheric modification research continuously for 30 years.

Although they had a heateT before Alaska or Norway, the university had to give up operating theirs after the neighbors complained. Firefighters in northeastern Canada, foT example, had high frequency radios on board their airplanes. Although Penn State's ionospheric heater was not on the same frequency, it was so strong that the airplane radios would "kind of blank out", recalls Ferraro. "We developed cooperative techniques; we would shut down whenever they wanted us to, but it became so difficult that we just had to give up. Heaters went to remote areas like Puerto Rico."57

The first large ionospheric heater in the United States was built at Plattesville, Colorado, in the 1960's. In 1983 the transmitter and antenna array were moved from Colorado to a site 40 km east of Fairbanks, Alaska. The Perm State research team was among those who won contracts from the Navy to conduct experiments using the High Power Auroral Stimulation (HIPAS) facility there.

54 Ray J. Lunnen, Jr. and Anthony J. Ferraro, "High Frequency Active Auroral Research Program", Pennsylvania State in house publication.

55 National Telecommunications and information Administration memo, "NTIA Preliminary Assessment of Air Force Ionospheric Research Instrument", Oct, 1, 1993.

56 Interview with John D. Matthews, electrical engineering department, Penn State,

57 Jeane Manning's May, 1995, interview with Tony Ferraro.

"The initial idea, not connected with my work, was to create an artificial northern Lights," said Tony Ferraro. "There was not sufficient power to do that."

Why make an artificial aurora borealis? He replied that the plasma physicists wanted to control the northern lights to learn more about the physics which created them. Ferraro instead came in and used the facility to modulate the electrojet. "These currents can be modulated by high power transmitters so that they could be made to act as little antennas." Ferraro explained that in their natural state the ionospheric currents are direct current (DC), as is the electricity from a battery. "By modulating that atmospheric region from these high power transmitters we can convert (the electrojet current), in a small volume, into alternating currents. Alternating current flowing in a wire is an antenna. Now, these are not flowing in wires; they're flowing in space. But it's the same principle. We can create a little antenna."

The experimenters wanted to generate Very Low Frequency (VLF) and Extremely Low Frequency (ELF) electromagnetic waves from that antenna in the upper sky, because VLF and ELF waves can travel almost around the world with very little loss. They generated the waves, "...but not strong enough to be of practical interest...That led to the Navy and Air Force funding an even larger ionospheric modifier - HAARP." HAARP is not only meant for generating the low frequencies that would occur with a strong electrojet, Ferraro said. "It has a wide, diverse utilization."

The operators sitting at HAARPs instrument control/monitoring console indeed have a versatile tool at their fingertips. It includes a waveform generator capable of sending a wide variety of modulated signals to the antenna array. Then the operators can whip the narrow beam of radio frequency (RF) energy around in the sky at will. An article from a Penn State publication says "array control permits slewing the beam to arbitrary locations within the overhead 30 degree cone within ten microseconds."

Visual displays tell the operators how the experiment is progressing, and local and remote sensors - incoherent scatter radar, riometers and ionsounders and other esoteric sounding apparatus - monitor the ionosphere.

The Penn State publication article adds that after the major parts of HAARP are evaluated in the field, "a comprehensive series of tests will be completed as a demonstration of the IRI (Ionospheric Research Instrument) capability to the user community. The goals of HAARP are ambitious, nevertheless, state of the art capability will allow us to realize this powerful scientific research instrument which will probe the Alaskan sky."

Long before HAARP was conceived, the former Soviet Union built more powerful (one gigawatt at Zelenogradskaya near Moscow) heaters than the west, and involved more scientists in ionosphere changing experiments than the West. More recently, Max Planck Institute in Germany built a heater at Tromso, Norway. In 1991 the Europeans caught up to the Russians by beaming one gigawatt of effective radiated power from Tromso.

The language in some documents hints that an element of mine is bigger than yours competition goaded the Americans to build a facility that would be three times more powerful than anything the Russians or the Germans have. Here we must make it clear that an ionospheric heater isn't judged by height. It may look like a five or ten acre field of fifty-foot high crosses (technically called crossed dipoles) in a square arrangement. The larger the area covered by antennae, the more powerful.

Although they are without an ionospheric heater, Penn State still has a respectably sized department involved in ionospheric modification - "about ten faculty and maybe 20 grad students". Formerly called the ionospheric research lab, it has become Communications and Space Sciences.

"It used to be very large, and very interdisciplinary with math, chemistry and physics people in it. Now it's primarily electrical engineering," Ferraro said.

* * *

John D. Matthews is a physicist who finds himself in the electrical engineering department at Penn State because of consolidation of departments. His specialty is the area of the ionosphere down at about the 100 kilometer altitude. During a phone interview he noted that the main radar (for high frequency ionospheric heating experiments) at Arecibo, Puerto Rico, can significantly heat the lower ionosphere as well as the upper. The heating is a Tesult of a high poweT "diagnostic" instrument. Arecibo is currently getting a major upgrade.

Most of the heating is done at around 200 kilometers altitude - called the Lower F region of the ionosphere - because it is easier to heat that higher region to the maximum.

Penn State got in on the ground floor with HAARP. In 1991 several departments at the university - the Applied Research Laboratory, Computer Engineering and Engineering Electronic Design Services - combined resources to go after a desirable contract. They were among the winners. Penn State, APTI and Raytheon Corporation were each given contracts to study how to design the HAARP facility. Afterward, APTI invited Penn State to join it, along with SRI International and Ahtna Inc., an Alaskan corporation, as a team. The Office of Naval Research chose their team to build and demonstrate the powerful ionospheric heater near Gakona, Alaska. "The capability will be further expanded to its final world class performance capability in 1996."[58]

HAARP: SECRET DUETS AND TRIOS?

Ionospheric heaters are a very specialized area of research. "There are two groups in the Soviet Union, several people in Europe and maybe ten people in the states. That's about it," said Sacha Koustov, a Canadian/Russian ionospheric scientist at the University of Saskatchewan. Like most of the atmospheric scientists interviewed, he was not familiar with the HAARP literature.

[58] Hay J. Lunnen, Jr. and Anthony J. Ferraro, "High Frequency Active Auroral Research Program", Pennsylvania State in house publication,

The only way there could be amplification of the electromagnetic waves once they reach the ionosphere, in his opinion, would be with a special experiment using two transmitters beaming onto the same spot. The interactions of the radio waves can cause amplifications, said Koustov. Such highly energetic reactions can even create so-called gravity waves, he said. That is getting into an area of advanced science which is beyond the scope of this book.

Co-author of Angels Don't Play This HAARP Dr. Nick Begich discovered recently that HAARP planners intend to fire up more than one ionospheric heater at a time and operate them in concert. This test is to be conducted between September 11, 1995 and September 22, 1995 using HIPAS and HAARP at low power settings. What will happen even at these low levels of power is unknown and unclear.

A HISTORY OF MAD SCIENCE

Begich's home state of Alaska has met ambitious scientists in the past. One may have had more academic credentials, clout and charm than common sense. Dr. Edward Teller, known as the "Father of the H-bomb", traveled to Alaska in 1958 with a proposal to blast a chunk of that state's coastline off the map. As spokesman for the nuclear establishment, he wanted to prove that nuclear explosions were a tool for geographical engineering. Teller was widely quoted as telling Alaskans "If your mountain isn't in the right place, drop us a card."

Teller's colleagues at Lawrence Radiation Laboratory came up with Project Chariot as part of Project Plowshare. Their plan was to explode six thermonuclear bombs underground at Cape Thompson, Alaska, to dig a harbor.

Uncritical technophiles almost bought the plan.

The Firecracker Boys, by Dan O'Neill reveals common threads that run through the history of proposals for questionable megaprojects. For one, the promoter sold it as an economic development opportunity - jobs for the people. That pitch convinced legislators, business groups and the media. Another supporter, as with HAARP, was the University of Alaska administration. Again, the appeal was the prospect of money and jobs for the state's residents.

O'Neill points out that during the planning stage the scientists ignored the Inupiat people who lived nearest to the site of the proposed nuclear bomb blasts - 30 miles from Ground Zero. A review of The Firecracker Boys said "O'Neill still marvels at the determination of the Eskimos who saw through the government's empty promises and outright lies."59

In the end they didn't blast that hole in the coast. Between the native peoples' stubborn opposition, and three heroic scientists who stood up and said it was a bad idea, it didn't happen.

59 Marilee Enge, "Blowing the Lid off a Nuclear Tale", Anchorage Daily News, Dec. 25, 1994.

As if to set an example of what happens to academics who speak out with independent views, the three brave scientists who opposed Project Chariot lost their jobs at the university and were blackballed from academia elsewhere. One had to leave the country to find work. When O'Neill researched his book, he told a newspaper reporter later, "there were still a lot of people on campus who were very sensitive about the topic, who didn't talk about it for years, decades."60

DESTROYING A RADIATION BELT

Milestones in the history of arrogant science also include the three space explosions of the U.S. military's Project Argus in 1958. Each shot spewed atomic particles into Earth's magnetic field where they were trapped and spiraled back and forth at high speeds. "In essence," said the New York Times, "the Argus experiments produced artificial belts comparable to the natural Van Allen radiation belt (regions of high- energy charged particles around the earth at between 2,000 and 12,000 miles altitudes). Thus, after each shot a curtain of radiation - that is, of extremely high speed particles - spread around the world."61

In the opinion of the authors, psychiatrists should be invited into thinktanks where decisions are made to "modify" one of Earth's protective layers. Shortly after Dr. James A. Van Allen discovered the two radiation belts around Earth - in the International Geophysical Year (1GY) of 1958, two physicists at the University of Minnesota proposed that a hydrogen bomb be exploded inside that radiation belt. According to the New York Times, the two physicists wrote "It might be amusing to end the IGY by destroying some of the radiation field first discovered during the IGY."

COPPER-WIRING THE SKY

The folksy saying, "what goes around, comes around", applies to what experimenters inject into a lower altitude jet stream as well as into the Van Allen belt. In the early 1960"s someone in the U.S. military apparently decided that the ionosphere had to be replaced because it was unpredictable (dynamic, lively - it danced with the ebb and flow of charged particles). They decreed that it had to be controlled. In their mindset, were telecommunications more important than the integrity of Earth's natural electric circuit?

The planetary-scale engineers tried to replace a ten by forty kilometer section of the ionosphere with a "telecommunications shield" of 350,000 copper needles tossed into orbit.62

The U.S. military did not know what the outcome would be in the early 1960s when they planned an assault on earth's magnetic field with copper needles (each 2-4 cm long). They planned to increase the size of the needle dump in space "if the project proves successful". Apparently it was a bust; it was hushed up and kept out of the mass media,

60 Marilee Enge, "Blowing the Lid off a Nuclear Tale", Anchorage Daily News, Dec. 25,1994.

61 Walter Sullivan, "Blast May Erase Radiation Belt," New York Times Apr. 30,1962.

62 Nigel Harle of Holland, "Vandalizing the Van Allen Belts", winter 1988-89, Earth Island Journal p. 11.

Another independent researcher, Leigh Richmond Donahue63 tracked events during the postwar years and through 1977 alongside a physics genius, her late husband Walter Richmond. She writes, "...when the military sent up a band of tiny copper wires into the ionosphere to orbit the planet so as to 'reflect radio waves and make reception clearer' we had the 8.5 Alaska earthquake, and Chile lost a good deal of its coast. That band of copper wires interfered with the planetary magnetic field."

Any ecological insensitivity of engineers in the US has been more than matched by their peers in other countries. Often the scientists in North America just had bigger allowances to spend and therefore could cause more damage. The former Soviet Union was reportedly getting ready to change the climate before the 1970's. That country's director of hydrometeorological work described proposals to make Russia a more comfortable place to live - at least until the ecological backlash that could have hit afterward. Proposals included removal of the Arctic ice pack, damming of the Bering Strait and rerouting Siberian rivers.64

If ordinary common sense people were invited into military thinktanks to vote on such projects, what would they say to the big boys with the big toys?

---

63 Private communication with Leigh Richmond Donahue of the Centric Foundation, Maggie Valley, North Carolina.

64 Lowell Ponte, The Cooling. Prentice-Hall Inc, NJ 1976.

"The military is going to give the ionosphere a big kick and see what happens."
Clare Zickuhr, formerly of Anchorage, Alaska, founder of NO HAARP.

They're like boys playing with a sharp stick, finding a sleeping bear and poking it in the butt to see what's going to happen."
Barbara Zickuhr

Chapter Six

NORTHERN EXPOSURE

At an age of about fifty years, Clare Zickuhr took time for assessment, and was satisfied as he looked around in the early 1990's. He had worked his way through data management jobs to a position as accountant for a multinational oil company, ARCO. The good life included hosting friends in a 3,000 square foot house on the bluff outside Anchorage, with a wall of windows overlooking Cook Inlet. And watching Beluga whales romp in the inlet, or standing beside his wife Barbara in companionable silence, contemplating a panoramic sunset over a distant mountain range. Barbara was content with her own range of interests, from collecting art to studying medical anthropology.

That the Zickuhrs would become activists in an eclectic group of environmentalists was too foreign a possibility to consider. A visit from a neighbor in October of 1993 changed their serene existence, however. Jim, a pilot with Alaska Airlines, came over one night and mentioned that at a pilots' meeting he had heard about a government project called HAARP that was going up "in the bush" northeast of Anchorage. Jim knew Clare was a ham radio operator who spent a couple of nights a week closeted with his shortwave equipment and that he ran three ham-nets. Jim bunded him a flyer which said HAARP was an acronym chosen by military agencies to name their project, which would include a large array of antennae on the ground beaming a billion watts of electromagnetic power - at radio frequencies - up through the atmosphere. It would be the biggest zapper in the world! Even if it didn't get beyond the megawatt (millions of watts) stage, such a transmitter was certain to interfere with communications in the bush. People in remote areas of Alaska rely on radios for life or death calls such as for a Medivac aircraft to save a child's life.

Jim wondered what electronic interference from HAARP could do to onboard systems on the jets which he pilots Clare listened to his worries about aircraft that are controlled by remote operation instead of having direct cable levering rudders and other equipment. Such a craft could be more susceptible to a big blast of energy that might lock it into position or over ride the remote control. Reassurances from the Federal Aviation Administration reported in the media were not the last word as far as pilots were concerned.

That night when Zickuhr sat down in front of his shortwave apparatus and went on the air, he asked other ham radio operators if they had heard about the HAARP transmitter. They hadn't heard, but wanted to learn about the biggest "ionospheric heater" in the world. They learned that similar antennae in other countries had beamed electromagnetic power into high level experiments for years, but HAARP would be the most powerful, zapping the upper atmosphere with an unprecedented power level of energetic particles. Engineering Mother Nature - the planetary environment - would become a new ball game.

Some hams lived in areas where HAARP public relations people were holding public briefings, and these operators reported back on the air. The Pentagon had been shopping for a site, because HAARP's radio interference would be too strong to locate near military facilities.

"Then why do they think we want it in our own backyards?" asked some individuals whose communities were considered as possible sites. When the choice was made to build it near Gakona, a hamlet about 140 miles north of Prince William Sound, some of the on the air chatter died down.

While he still had time to sit in front of the two-story fireplace for a leisurely read, Clare had finished a book titled Miles from Nowhere. It was about people living in "the lower 48" states, in places where there were fewer than two people per square mile. The military had of course chosen such areas to do its hazardous testing such as nuclear blasts.

"Gakona reminds me of that Miles, from Nowhere theme," he told Barbara. "Few people around to complain."

Although he sympathized with bush dwellers concerned about how close they were to electromagnetic radiations from HAARP, his main question was more global. "What all is this thing going to do to the upper atmosphere?"

HAARP's public relations sheet described it as pure scientific research on the aurora borealis and research on the ionosphere's ability to affect communications. The U.S. Air Force and Navy were paying for the project, but they said it was not a weapons system. Later, Clare Zickuhr would learn that the technology definitely could be used for military purposes. He wondered what else they weren't telling the taxpayers about HAARP.

His training as an accountant led him to ask about the checks and balances in the situation. HAARP planners would choreograph experiments on the crucial envelope of charged particles which circled the planet - the ionosphere, which protects Earth's inhabitants, like a spherical umbrella, from cosmic radiations. What independent scientists - not in any way funded by the military - were monitoring this project? He could find none. Especially missing were biologists and independent atmospheric physicists, if there are any such independents.

"Basically," he concluded, "the military is going to give the ionosphere a big kick and see what happens. My biggest worry is what they're going to do by punching holes in the ionosphere or heating it. It's going to have reactions that they don't know how to predict. Look at the past -they set off nuclear explosions in the atmosphere before they figured out 'hey that's going to cause problems' and changed the wind patterns for years."

Barbara shared his view, and expressed it with an Alaskan's common sense observation. "They're like boys playing with a sharp stick, finding a sleeping bear and poking it in the butt to see what's going to happen."

Clare ordered a copy of the HAARP Environmental Impact Statement (EIS), from which he took names of others who had questioned HAARP. He used that first mailing list to contact people who wanted to learn more about it, and he tried to get a group going in Anchorage.

Near the end of 1993, the Zickuhrs hosted a couple of meetings in their home. In the first meeting, as the assembled Alaskans expressed their views, Barbara realized she and Clare had opened their doors to people they probably would not have met in any social situation.

It was a bit of a shock, From the comfort of an upper middle class home and removed from subsistence level rural or urban alternative lifestyles, the Zickuhrs' world had turned fairly smoothly. She joked about being a bleeding heart liberal herself and Clare being more middle of the road in his views. These guests, however, ran the gamut of extremes from "let's shoot the government people" to "aliens are involved in this". Sometimes it felt like she was in a bad mystery novel. Previously neither of the Zickuhrs had run into fringe political views about, for a mild example, "black budget projects" which not even legislators know about,

Barbara later reflected that "For me, it was an exercise in social restraint, which isn't my gift. But I grew to really accept these people for what they were and worked with them. There were an amazing range of views, but in the end I could see that was a real plus."

By the next meeting, more people were involved in seriously trying to get answers about HAARP. One of the people pointed out that "the Environmental Impact Statement sort of pooh-poohed, or played down, the reactions in the ionosphere." Someone else at the meeting looked at a possible effect which would be more visible to Alaskans - game birds. The effect on migrating waterfowl was also played down in the EIS, someone mentioned, although to the credit of the government scientists they had admitted "we really don't know what the effect will be",

The first mailing list of around fifteen grew to one hundred and fifty who were sent updated information - a HAARP fact sheet, decision documents from the Air Force, and then the most valuable in terms of information, the Request for Proposal documents. With Zickuhr's accounting experience, he could understand it. HAARP documents they received at that time generally restricted discussion of military plans to the category "enhance C3 systems" which seemed to mean keeping track of where submarines are and what might be happening in a battle.

"That's ELF waves they're using for that," Clare pointed out. "Extremely Low Frequency waves, which peopLe in the lower forty-eight (states) fought against because of health risks, but we're up here 'miles from nowhere' and no one is going to react to it."

If no one else was going to resist the intrusive technology, he would have to do what he could. Who else would stand up? He ran into a wall of apathy:

- Local people around the site had been led to view HAARP as a source of a few gravel hauling or site maintenance jobs.

- A reporter at the Anchorage newspaper contributed to the NO HAARP "library", by passing on information he had been sent. However, his bosses apparently did not support his wish to write an in-depth article about the project.

- After Clare Zickuhr dropped off an information packet at the city's television station, he never got a response.

- A "grassroots" environmental group showed interest but didn't do anything.

- After the NO HAARP group sent information about waterfowl vs. HAARP to the headquarters of the Audubon Society, the society did not reply.

The Zickuhrs spent about $3,000 on telephone bills and mailings while opposing HAARP. Meanwhile, one of the "guys in the bush" encouraged other activists to write a couple of thousand words about HAARP, and Clare gave it a try. He wrote an article titled "Monster in the Wilderness" and sent it to Gar Smith in San Francisco, editor of Earth Island Journal. A technical consultant told the journal that the technology would be impossible. That stalled the printing of the article, until another tireless networker, Remy Chevalier of Connecticut, urged Gar to reconsider. Clare sent more information and in the end the published co-authored article was included in the "Most Under-reported News of 1994" list, for the book Project

Since he worked for ARCO, and its subsidiary APTI had the contract to build HAARP, Clare filed an internal conflict of interest statement in early 1994 so that his employers would know that he was working against a project that another arm of the company was working on.

Early in his involvement, Clare became frustrated by being unable to get what he felt were straight answers from the government about HAARP. Barbara eventually grew discouraged too. "I feel we're just like a mosquito buzzing around, treated like we're not worth paying attention to."

As it turned out, the Zickuhrs' sacrifices did play a major role - keeping the

65 Project Censored, Four Walls Eight Windows, NY 1995.

resistance alive until the NO HAARP momentum grew stronger in 1995 when the media had noted its "Project Censored" status. When Clare retired from bis job with ARCO during company cutbacks and he and Barbara sold their house to go traveling through the "lower 48", the guys in the bush carried on. It was March, 1995.

"Project HAARP is driven by fear psychology - preparation for nuclear Armageddon. That path won't lead to the next century."
David Yarrow[66]

Chapter Seven

IN THE WILDERNESS

The log home sits in a clearing in one of the small timber stands which carpet much of Alaska - the largely silent tracts of spruce called "the bush". The small house is within hailing distance of a two lane paved road. On the February day that Nick Begich and Jeane Manning visited, the remains of a moose carcass dominated the driveway.

Stepping around a snowmobile parked beside the house, the burly owner offered a warm handshake. Wally wore a National Rifle Association baseball cap, plaid flannel shirt over sweatpants, unzipped snow boots and a brief smile of welcome.

Up to this moment the two writers knew of him only as a man of diverse skills - from trucking to wildlife management - who spent up to $500 a month on phone bills to oppose HAARP.

Inside the family home, parkas and boots were shed in the kitchen, then the trio moved into a larger room. The wooden table that they settled around held a Mac computer with modem and printer. At the far end of the room, a large TV screen dominated a seating area that faced a wood burning furnace. Peeled pine logs supported the ceiling.

As he turned off the television, Wally commented on how life in the bush had changed in only twenty years. A satellite receiving dish in his backyard collected a world of communication channel signals out of the sky. He often tuned in news from an English speaking station out of Moscow, and regularly listened to radio broadcasts from Australia and New Zealand. Cabin bound months in the winter give bush dwellers time for short wave radio as well as reading, he noted. With all this and the Internet too, they could become better informed than some city dwellers. However, he did not find all the news reassuring.

He paced nervously on wool-stockinged feet and then suggested his guests climb into his four wheel drive truck for a drive to the HAARP site near Gakona. On the way they could ask him questions.

Wally recalled how he had stumbled into the HAARP controversy. Through forestry fire-fighting courses he had previously known one of the other protesters from the bush country, whom he referred to as Ed. Wally recognized the man's name under letters to the local newspaper, the Copper River Journal and to the Anchorage Daily News.

[66] David Yarrow, authnor of Raturn of the Dragon: Hazards of Made-Made Magnetism. Albany.NY.

Of most concern to these local activists were HAARP documents that clearly stated the project was intended to find out how the ionosphere could be exploited for military purposes. It was not pure auroral research. They were also suspicious of the HAARP environmental impact statement that said there would be no impact on climate, the ozone layer or weather.

As Wally talked about his reluctance to get involved in the NO HAARP campaign. Jeane Manning remembered a 1994 letter from a Northern homesteader who ran a mail order business she carried the letter in her pocket with the intention of phoning the writer while in the North. "...Most Alaskans are anti-environmentalist,"

Howard wrote. "It has something to do with the frontier mentality and the fact that almost all of our money comes from the oil industry and other mineral extraction." He then zeroed in on HAARP. "The E1S and various Department of the Air Force press releases have disingenuously pictured the project as a swell international research project where - in a really sappy detail - even local high school students would be free to use the facility to conduct science project research on the aurora borealis! Of course, the project is pure Star Wars, aimed at enhancing the ability to disrupt enemy communications by disturbing the ionosphere."

Two main groups opposed HAARP, he said - trappers, miners and others in the bush who rely on ham radio communications because they have no telephone service, and pilots. "I'm sure the military planners, as do most Americans, considered Alaska to be empty enough that a trapper here or there or an unlucky bird would be of minor consequence, and were perhaps surprised by the volume of local opposition."67

Wally and Nick were chatting as the vehicle bucked along into a white landscape with occasional glimpses of black asphalt ahead. The discussion returned to HAARP. Because his background included computers and government contracts, Wally had looked into getting work with APTI, which held the contract to build HAARP at that time. The effort to get the jobs went nowhere, but Wally had a look at the HAARP contract.

"I saw the site had to be 'open for inspection according to Intermediate Nuclear Defense Force Treaty or something. Saw a number of things in provisions of the contract... The way information was handled didn't add up. Everything had to go through (John) Heckscher (HAARP project manager) in Massachusetts; people here locally didn't know anything."

"The further we dug, after we had a look at the contract, we knew it was a secret project; there was hokey pokey going on that the government didn't want to disclose. There were provisions in the contract that tripped my bells. 'Contractors can't disclose if there's something injurious'...clauses like that."

Wally said he had then telephoned two men who publicly opposed HAARP. Clare Zickuhr, who was at the time still an accountant with ARCO in Anchorage, told

---

67 The "guys in the bush" have been given pseudonyms in this book, at the suggestion of three of them who are concerned about keeping low profiles in their communities.

Wally that for environmental reasons Clare wanted to see the site shut down. Ed agreed and added that as a ham operator he had concerns about whether the high power RF beaming would interfere with life-and-death situations in the bush.

"Ed prodded me into doing computer searches on the Internet - go into the Library of Congress and different databases. As soon as I started looking stuff up, that was all she wrote. Eventually some of us formed a network."

Some of the people were concerned about possible military applications of a technology that could knock out the Internet or blackout the power grid. More close at hand, they figured, what goes up must come down, especially if the radiations bounce off the ionosphere. Wally worried when he heard talk of the HAARP technicians planning to install filters on the radio and satellite receiving dishes in and around every home in the vicinity. The filters would screen out incoming radio wave interference, he was told. He got together with an electronics whiz who lived on an even more remote homestead, to study the proposal for high power beaming. Concerned about their families' health, they came to a conclusion. "It's not innocuous."

Nor was the proposed violation of Earth's atmospheric electrical system, he said. "You read about a tremendous heated plume rising, and raising part of the upper atmosphere with it, and that it could change weather conditions and that the actual effects can be intensified. Then (HAARP spokesmen) come back and say 'don't worry'."

He did worry - about his family on the ground receiving reflected radiation, and then about swans, ducks, geese and other frequent flyers that could be fried in the intense radio frequency beam above the project site. The ionospheric heater, as the HAARP antennae were called, would beam upward in a prime corridor for migrating waterfowl.

Another of the guys in the bush worried that migrating salmon might lose their way, as they use the geomagnetic field as part of their road map for returning to spawning grounds. The magnetically- sensitive material magnetite had been found in salmon, as it had in human brains. Therefore changes in the magnetic field would be confusing, he said. A powerful ionospheric heater such as HAARP could create an artificial electromagnetic storm high above the earth.

"All we have is John Heckscher's comments that there'll be no more magnetic disturbances than what occurs naturally," Wally said skeptically.

The bush dwellers and their science advisors, on the other hand, contended that even naturally occurring disturbances, caused by solar storms, do disrupt living systems. A psychologist at the University of Alaska did a study trying to connect Alaska's high rate of suicides to disturbances from geomagnetic storms generated by the aurora borealis.68 And scientific articles about the sensitivities of living cells and nervous systems said it doesn't take strong magnetic fields to make a difference;

68 Vancouver Province newspaper, "Electric Impulse", Apr. 4, 1995

fluctuations of very weak fields can dramatically affect the cellular level of life. Leaning against the passenger side window of the truck, Nick nodded agreement with the NO HAARP researcher. His yeaTS of research had uncovered studies that proved this point.

As his pickup truck swayed in the strong gusts of snow driving wind, Wally recalled the early days of their battle. "We tried to find ways to bring it to the public's attention. But the newspapers just blocked the thing out; they didn't want to deal with it. We thought we had a good contact with (a large Alaskan newspaper), but the reporter told me the story was being quashed."

The loose network of activists tried to keep up their momentum despite the lack of publicity. "We had our meetings by conference call. Seemed like every time we turned around we were bringing up new information...Joe knew a lot about this directed weapon stuff. Ed on the other hand knew the technical end very well. He performed all the calculations on his computer and his calculations didn't jive with the reports put out by Mitre Corporation."

Wally glanced over to see if his listeners were paying attention to this part of the story. "Mitre Corporation does all the work for NSA (National Security Agency). They're NSA, owned, operated, signed sealed and delivered. Mitre corporation is the main defense communications contractor for the United States government. Another bell goes off. What are we talking about here? Satellite communications, ASAT (satellite) weapon or what?"

Members of the rural NO HAARP group researched different aspects of the puzzle, each taking a different slant. They never sat down together in the same room, but collaborated long distance. Wally met Clare Zickuhr once in Anchorage, and received copies of documents that Clare had dug out of the library. When Wally returned home to his computer, he filed "a whopping big request" for more information on HAARP.

"I thought it was going to Heckscher, but it was forwarded to Kirtland Air Force Base. When that happened, 1 remembered that Kirtland hosts the Air Force space command and it also stores atomic weapons. And they do the black (hidden budget) stuff for Los Alamos. It shocked the hell out of me that my request came back from Kirtland Air Force base. Then 1 knew this project probably has a lot of classified stuff."

Wally's brow creased in an anxious frown. "You're gut checking yourself all along the way - 'am 1 damaging national security?' Ed and I a lot of times would kick this back and forth on the phone, always second guessing what we're doing."

Despite their desire to be patriotic, he said, it always came back to a gut feeling that they were correct in opposing HAARP. So they spared no expense. Wally estimated the few individuals spent between five and ten thousand dollars on photocopying and mailings of information packets.

"The last package we did, with Clare, went to a writer in New York who was from a national environmental news service. Said he could do a good job. I drove all the way into town and sent this stuff out to him FedEx. Yeah, its' a seven or eight hour round trip. How do you determine the cost of our time?"

As he casually steered through waves of snow drifting across the road, Wally recalled the meeting which he and Ed had in the city of Fairbanks with Paul Brodeur, the author of books such as The Zapping of America. "He told us about a situation where a community put up a stand against a proposed project, but (their protest) never panned out. The people even got injunctions, but the Air Force never gave in. It was about a similar type of system, where it could be increased incrementally...He told us about the hazards involved in HAARP."

Wally abruptly steered off the road and onto a plowed driveway. The locked gate of a fence stopped the truck, and signs hung on the wire mesh warned that the three were looking at a "Controlled area. It is unlawful to enter this area without permission of the Installation Commander. Sec. 21 Internal Security Act of 1950 USC 797. While on this Installation all personnel and the property under their control are subject to search." A black "No Trespassing" sign hung beside one of the warnings.

The trio jumped out of the truck to survey the site from which antennae would zap the upper reaches of the sky with more power than the human race had previously been able to throw. Beyond a line of spruce, a box like building, appearing to be about the size of an industrial warehouse or grain elevator, loomed between them and the gravel pad base for the antennae. Manning remembered that Clare Zickuhr once came up with a melodramatic name for this innocuous appearing installation - the Monster in the Wilderness. She also recalled that a scientist from Princeton, New Jersey, Dr. Richard Williams of the David Samoff research laboratory, coined a simpler name for HAARP type ionospheric heaters - skybusters. He said high energy experiments pose a danger to the upper atmosphere and could cause irreversible damage in a short time. Effects could spread around the globe. "What we do know," the physicist had added, "is that secrecy always lowers the standards of environmental accountability."

In the cautious manner of a scientist, Williams had taken his concerns to me journal Physics and Society instead of to the mass media. An equally polite reply printed in the next issue came from Caroline Herzenberg of Argonne National Laboratory who wrote as a private individual, in 1988 and again in April of 1994. She warned that the advanced type of ionospheric heater could be used as a weapons system, and its use might violate the Environmental Modification Convention ratified by the United States in 1979. The atmosphere, ionosphere and near-Earth space are included in the convention. Herzenberg called on the physics community to closely critique the HAARP technology. The analysis hasn't been done.

Manning shot a photograph of Nick shivering in the February wind, but Wally did not want to be photographed. They joked half-heartedly about climbing over the fence and getting arrested. Clambering back into the cab of the pickup felt like a better idea.

On the drive back, Wally said he doubted if there would be the vaunted economic benefits to locals, from money spent by contractors who come in to complete the site. "It's a short term deal - one summer, two summers and the construction jobs are out of here, We were sold a bill of goods; they said there would be u lot of spinoffs. Visiting scientists. But in the contract it states that this facility is built to be remotely operated. 'Remotely operated'? The only person that's going to make out here is the fuel oil dealer, from the millions of gallons of fuel that'll be burnt there. They sold us a lot of bullshit."

There were long silences on the ride back, as if all three were reflecting on how down to earth concerns of life in the Alaskan bush contrasted with the multi-gigawatt beam which will rise from that desolate site. The high energy beam could have global consequences, according to a few independent scientists.

As if sensing that his companions in the wind buffeted truck needed a hearty laugh, Nick told about a telephone call from a reporter for a major newspaper who had heard that Nick was researching HAARP. "(The reporter) said he had talked to the people at E-Systems (the defense-contracting corporation that bought APTI), and they had heard there were rumors in Alaska about black helicopters and aliens and
black cars harassing people...guys being beat up by men in black! I said 'You know, it's funny you would hear those rumors in Washington, D.C., when I've never heard any of that in Alaska. And I live here.

'I laughed at him; I wasn't going to feed into that."

Nick shrugged off the memory of the reporter's attempts to elicit rural paranoia to quote. "He was playing games, when I look back on it."

When the reporter's article was printed, the Alaskan researchers were outraged to see what the leading sentences said;

"The rumors are buzzing across the Internet that a Pentagon physics experiment on a wind whipped tract of U.S. Air Force land in Alaska has a secret purpose - digging up bodies of UFO Aliens. Another rumor has it that men in black suits...are jumping out of a black sedan to beat up Alaskan opponents of the project. Countering these odd speculations is all in a day's work for Ramy Shanny,.."[69]

Playing games. The phrase stuck in Manning's mind. Is that what defense contractors and the military public relations men are doing? The PR man tells a reporter that nah, we aren't going to do any ambitious tests on the upper atmosphere, Just some megawatt stuff. If the reporter digs a bit farther, however, he or she would find a paper from Penn State, for example, It shows a graph of the hierarchy of thresholds that increasing input of radio frequency (RF) power makes in the ionosphere. Heating comes first, then "parametric instabilities and stimulated electromagnetic radiation". Pump in more RF power and you accelerate electrons until

[69] John Mintz, "Pentagon Fights Secret Scenario Speculation Over Alaska Antennas", Washington Post, Apr, 17, 1995, A3.

the air glows. The next threshold is "shock fronts and stimulated ionization". The Penn State experimenters proudly say they don't know what will happen when the new super powerful HAARP instrument drives the effects past a new threshold.

* * *

When the trio returned to Wally's home, his wife sat on the sofa with the weary look of a school teacher resting after a day in the classroom. Three teenagers came in and joined her in front of a TV newscast.

While Nick telephoned the local newspaper editor to ask for a photo of the HAARP site, Jeane asked Wally if the project was still controversial among local residents. He replied that many of his neighbors scattered through the Copper River Valley had attended public meetings earlier. "They came forward one after another saying they were concerned. Then later (the HAARP organizers) came out and said they'd addressed all of the concerns, and started building the project. People still feel powerless."

They half listened to Nick's conversation. Apparently the local editor was quite impressed with what charming gentlemen the HAARP manager and his associates were.

Wally rummaged through books on the table and found one, written in 1993 by science journalist Bill Sweetman70, which one of the guys in the bush had passed on to him. Wally pointed to a section about a strange how to lie manual, and read aloud:

"The U.S. Air Force's credibility is further undermined by the fact that the Department of Defense explicitly authorizes the dissemination of misleading information in order to protect classified programs. In a supplement to the National Industrial Security Program manual, released in draft form in March, 1992, the DoD told contractors how to draft cover stories that 'must be believable and cannot reveal any information regarding the true nature of the contract'."

Wally pointed out that the next paragraph contained a comment by Steven Aftergood of the Federation of American Scientists. "Once we know that the DoD practices this type of deception, it becomes harder to discern what's for real and what is not."7l

Snapping the book shut, Wally said he was already suspicious of certain individuals who leave messages on Internet files as if planting them for the gullible, and he distrusted Department of Defense public relations releases. Aftergood's comments only confirmed his gut feelings. What can a guy trust?

Outside the window, the wind hammered at the log walls. The farewells were brief.

70 Bill Sweetman. Aurora: The Pentagon's Secret Hypersonic Skyplane. Motor Books Internationa!, WI 1993.

71 Ibid.

"I think HAARP could be a disaster."
Phillip S. Callahan, Ph.D.

PART TWO

SCIENTISTS ARE CONCERNED

"Some of these (electromagnetic) emissions may be reaping irreparable damage to the ionosphere and earth, which threatens our very existence."
Dr. Elizabeth Rauscher, Particle Physicist

Chapter Eight

WHO CAN STOP THE BIG ZAPPER?

Independent scientists seek 'return to sanity'

William van Bise of Nevada is a scientist who is passionate about the safety of his children and grandchildren, and he can't understand why some high level military planners seemingly are not. According to documents about the HAARP, the military's disrespect for dynamic natural systems hasn't changed much in the decades since nuclear bombs were the favored research tool for studying Earth's geomagnetic field.

Van Bise, an electronics and biomedical engineer, says bluntly "They're suicidal!" He made the comment after reading about HAARP, the military's plan to pump unprecedented levels of radio frequency power up through the upper atmosphere to heat parts of the unpredictable ionosphere. His concern is that the experimenters admit they do not know what the outcome might be.72

Surprisingly few scientists know about ionospheric heaters. "Why in the world would anyone want to heat up the ionosphere? It's already hot enough," said one head of a large university's physics department. Co-author Manning gave him the benefit of the doubt, but as it turned out, he was not joking. Other department heads at universities with sizable atmospheric physics departments had heard about ionospheric heaters but said their knowledge of the research was vague.

The University of Alaska's geophysical department knows what an ionospheric research instrument is, because their university is directly involved in HAARP funding. But although "auroral research" involvement of the University of Alaska is played up in press releases, HAARP's internal documents say the goal of the experiments is to control ionospheric processes so that they can be exploited by the Department of Defense.

Concerned scientists such as van Bise are doubly discouraged, because the people who want to control the electrojet or make "nuclear-sized explosions"73 or an "artificial cyclotron"74 in the upper atmosphere are the most difficult to stop. Traditionally they have held the biggest handfuls of taxpayers' money. Their power base includes mega-corporation defense contractors and their lobbyists. Few physicists are willing to risk their livelihood (government contracts) by contradicting these people.

72 Telephone conversations Between William van Bise and co-author of Angels Don't Play This HAARP Jeane Manning, May 1995.

73 U.S. Patent No. 4,873,928 "Nuclear-sized Explosions without Radiation".

74 U.S. Patent No. 4,712,155, "Method and Apparatus for Creating an Artificial Electron Cyclotron", among patents assigned to APTI.

WHISTLE-BLOWERS

Elizabeth Rauscher has a Ph.D., a long and impressive career in high energy physics, and has been published in prestigious science journals and books.75 Yet her warnings apparently go unheeded. For example, in 1984 she presented scientific findings at a Pentagon briefing and then tried to address the colonels and generals person to person about global environmental issues. They refused to respond to her blunt question, "Don't you worry about your children and grandkids?"

Seven years ago Rauscher and her partner William van Bise wrote a paper76 that discussed the earth's magnetic field emanations in technical language, but ended with a strongly worded warning.

Earth and life forms on it vibrate and resonate in harmony, they noted; radiant energy from the sun and materials and vibrations of the earth support life. "Is there a symbiosis between the earth and the life forms upon it?" After mentioning chemical and radioactive pollution of our life support systems, they injected a less-publicized concern, "some of the electromagnetic waves generated by man may have global significance..."

DAMAGE TO IONOSPHERE

The paper had discussed natural sources of electromagnetic waves such as Earth's mechanical rotation, earthquake and volcanic activities, solar wind and solar "broadband noise activity". Manmade sources, the two experts said, are disturbing the harmony. "Some of these emissions may be reaping irreparable damage to the ionosphere and earth which, in turn, threatens our very existence."

Societies and nations must examine what we are doing and develop a new awareness, the two scientists warned, or destruction of life will inevitably result. As if predicting the goals of HAARP, they noted that most recent technologies have been aimed at shielding people from nature - "to 'conquer' and control her, while designing ever more dangerous weapons systems with which to more efficiently strip all life from the planet."

Rauscher and van Bise ended the paper with a suggestion that society examine why we have moved toward such insane motivation, and then go forward to again pursue mutual life enhancement and sanity.

75 Relevant publications include, "Application of Soliton Physics to Plasma-MHD and Superconductivity -BCS: Theoretical Implications for Primary Energy" report prepared for Primary Energy Technology LA; "Ambient Electromagnetic Fields as Possible Seismic and Volcanic Precursors', by W.L., Van Bise and E.A. Rauscher, in Electromagnetic Phenomena Related to Earthquake Prediction edited by M. Hayakawa and Y Fujinawa, Terra Scientific Publishing Co. Tokyo; "ELF Signatures Arising from Space Vehicle Disturbances of the Ionosphere" by E.A. Rauscher and W.L. Van Bise, unpublished paper from Electromagnetic Signal Laboratory, Golden

76 "Fundamental Excitatory Modes of the Earth and Earth-Ionosphere Resonant Cavity" by Dr. Elizabeth A. Rauscher and William L. Van Bise of Technic Research Laboratories, Reno, Nevada, article published in The Proceedings of the 1988 International Tesla Symposium.

BUBBLE OF ELECTRIC PARTICLES

In May of 1995 Dr. Rauscher was asked to comment specifically on HAARP. "You're pumping tremendous energy into an extremely delicate molecular configuration that comprises these multi-layers we call the ionosphere," she replied. The ionosphere is prone to catalytic reactions. In other words, she explained, if a small part is changed, a major change in the ionosphere can happen.[77]

In describing the ionosphere as a delicately balanced system, Dr. Rauscher shared her mental picture of it - a soap bubble like sphere surrounding Earth's atmosphere, with movements swirling over the surface of the bubble.

"If you've ever watched a large bubble closely, you see these rainbow-like patterns flowing over it. Then you see a black spot where the wavelengths of light are so short that they can't show the bubble. But it hasn't burst yet. Then a hole forms, and then it pops."

Project planners who experiment with the ionosphere do not agree with her model of what could happen, Rauscher said. "But I strongly believe the ionosphere works that way."

When human activities make massive holes in the real ionosphere, the holes at the north and south poles migrate just like the shapes on the bubble. This is how a dramatic loss of the ozone layer happens to appear over Australia, for example. There have even been sun watches (ozone-hole watches) over high altitude states such as Nevada, where Rauscher and Van Bise live.

"(Decision makers) know the cause - the SST (supersonic transport) and the space shuttle and its Russian equivalent. I have the Russian report that calculates how many space shuttles it will take to destroy the ionosphere."

In a corresponding situation at a lower altitude, while anyone who ever used a spray propellant is made to feel guilty about holes in the ozone layer, scientists continue to send up rockets and launch satellites to study the ozone layer! Each bum of rocket fuel destroys another part of a percent of the ozone layer.

BRAGGING ABOUT PUNCTURES

Returning to the higher altitudes, we see that science journals in the early 1980's reported openly on the ionospheric disruption caused by scientists themselves. But how many outside of their specialty read papers on topics such as the High-Energy Astrophysical Observatories (HEAO) Hole in the Ionosphere[78]. The launch of one of NASA's High-Energy Astrophysical Observatories, on Sept. 20, 1979, for example, by an Atlas-Centaur rocket "produced an extraordinary opportunity to monitor a large scale, artificially induced depletion of the earth'

[77] Jeane Manning's May 1995 interviews with Dr. Elizabeth Rauscher and William van Btse.

[78] Michael Mendilio, Donald Rote and Paul Bernhardt, "Preliminary Report on the HEAO Hole in the Ionosphere" The American Geophysical Union, 1980.

ionosphere" the scientists exulted. They were being paid to study the impact of repeated rocket exhaust activity in the ionosphere. Data showed the "HEAO hole followed the rocket's ground track, extending at least 2,000 km - and probably 3,000 km - to the east of Cape Canaveral. It's north-south extent spanned 600 to 1,000 km, and thus the overall disturbed region totaled 1 to 3 million km in effective surface area." For about three hours the depleted area centered on the rocket's path, then moved northward. Within hours, evidence of the hole disappeared from the "affected region".

SLICING THE IONOSPHERE

David Yarrow of Albany, New York, is a researcher with a background in electronics, and has spent countless hours exchanging ideas with physicist Dr. Daniel Winter, now of Waynesville, North Carolina. Yarrow puts Winter's insights into simpler terms - "Dan Winter...explained HAARP high frequency emissions can couple (heterodyne, in technical terms) with longwave (low frequency, or ELF) pulses the Earth grid uses to distribute information as vibrations to synchronize dances of life in the biosphere. Dan terms this geomagnetic action 'Earth's information bloodstream'. Likely, coupling of HAARP HF (high-frequency) with natural ELF (extremely low frequency) can cause a dimension of unplanned, unsuspected side effects."

In his own words, David Yarrow described possible interactions of HAARP radiations with the ionosphere and Earth's magnetic grid:

"HAARP will not burn 'holes' in the ionosphere. That is a dangerous understatement of what HAARP's giant gigawatt beam will do. Earth is spinning relative to thin electric shells of the multilayer membrane of 'ionospheres' that absorb and shield Earth's surface from intense solar radiation, including charged particle storms in solar winds erupting from the sun. Earth's axial spin means that HAARP - in a burst lasting more than a few minutes - will slice through the ionosphere like a microwave knife. This produces not a 'hole', but a long tear - an incision." 79

"An acute concern here is Earth's thin shell of ionized molecular oxygen - the ozone layer..." 80

CRUDELY PLUCKING THE STRINGS

"Second concept: As Earth rotates, HAARP will slice across geomagnetic flux...a donut-shaped spool of magnetic strings - like longitude meridians (on maps). HAARP may not 'cut' these strings in Gala's magnetic mantle, but will pulse each thread with harsh, out-of-harmony high frequencies. These noisy impulses will vibrate geomagnetic flux lines, sending vibrations all through the geomagnetic web, even as a single thunderstorm's lightning flashes emit pulses felt globally by sensitive sensors. "81

79 Letter from David Yarrow to Gar Smith, Earth Island Journal, August 18, 1995,
80 ibid.
81 Ibid.

"The image comes to mind of a spider on its web. An insect lands, and the web's vibrations alert the spider to possible prey. HAARP will be a man-made microwave finger poking at the web, sending out confusing signals, if not tearing holes in the threads. "82

"Effects of this interference with symphonies of Gala's geomagnetic harp are unknown, and I suspect barely thought of. Even if thought of, the intent (of HAARP) is to learn to exploit any effects, not to play in tune to global symphonies. "83

'CORRECT' WORDS

What is the condition of the ionosphere, after the rocket scientists went ahead with 15 years of burning through it with rocket exhaust and, puny in comparison, the early generation of ionospheric heaters? Is it damaged?

Manning found that scientists dislike the word "damaged"; it's too strong, one ionospheric physicist said. "We say 'disturbed'...you know it is going to be the same as it was before. If you lose your leg, that's damage, but if it is just cut, that's not damage."

The head of his department set the tone for this attitude. Although there were ionospheric specialists on his staff, he told Manning that he has neither the interest nor the time to get too deeply involved in the topic of ionospheric heaters. "Why are you interested (in HAARP)?"

The journalist replied that she had some questions about a reported multiplying effect from the new ionospheric instrument, and the tone of his reply was amused putdown. "If you're concerned about the ionosphere over Vancouver vanishing..."

"I'm not trying to be an alarmist..."

"It sounded like it," he said.

No wonder the media doesn't push environmental topics, the reporter thought.

UNREPENTANT ALARMIST

That department head would not welcome the views of Paul Schaefer, who sounds an alarm vigorously. His degree is in electrical engineering and he spent four years building nuclear weapons. "But most of the theories that we have been taught by scientists to believe in seem to be falling apart," he says.84

---

82 Letter from David Yarrow to Gar Smith, Earth Island Journal, August 18,1995.

83 Ibid.

84 Letter to Jeane Manning from Paul Schaefer, Feb. 1995.

In a publication titled, "Energy and Our Earth", he synthesizes research about imbalances caused by the industrial and atomic age, especially by radiation of large numbers of tiny, high velocity particles "like very small spinning tops into our environment.These highly energetic particles radiate into the earth and its atmosphere, disrupting the natural balance, in a chain reaction fashion as they desperately seek a balance with their surroundings." Such particles accumulate in the polar region during winter. "When polar spring occurs, the repulsive effect of the sun's energy causes the entire mass of negatively charged particles to move toward
the earth, creating a hole in the ozone layer."

The unnatural levels of motion of highly energetic particles in the atmosphere and in radiation belts surrounding Earth is the villain in the weather disruptions, according to this model, which describes an Earth discharging its buildup of heat, relieving stress and regaining a balanced condition through earthquakes and volcanic action.85 Among the technologies which produce clouds of particles - unnaturally elevated in charge - are transmission lines, electronic warfare systems, command, control and communications systems for space flights and testing of Star Wars weapon systems.

'FEVERISH' EARTH

"One might compare the abnormal energetic state of the Earth and its atmosphere to a car battery which has become overcharged with the normal flow of energy jammed up, resulting in hot spots, electrical arcing, physical cracks and general turbulence as the pent-up energy tries to find some place to go."

In a second analogy, Schaefer says "Unless we desire the death of our planet, we must end the production of unstable particles which are generating the earth's fever. A first priority to prevent this disaster would be to shut down all nuclear power plants and end the testing of atomic weapons, electronic warfare and 'Star Wars'."

William van Bise and Elizabeth Rauscher note that orbiting hardware is praised as a way to study the ozone layer, but each time a space shuttle burns its way through the sky it destroys another increment of the ionosphere, just as every meteorite does. Then as if rocket exhausts have not done enough, space capsules have ejected chemicals that dramatically interact with charged particles.

"They light up the aurora borealis (artificially), but when they light it up completely is when they kill off the ionospheric layers."

Meanwhile, the military builds its biggest ionospheric heater yet, to deliberately create more instabilities in a huge plasma layer - the ionosphere - and to rev up the energy level of charged particles.

---

85 Information from Paul Schaefer, Kansas City, MO 64110.

"We can artificially influence the earth's aurora with a relatively small amount of energy, and we know that outbursts of the northern lights do change weather patterns." Gary Lockhart, author of The Weather Companion[86]

"If the ionosphere is greatly disturbed, the atmosphere below
is subsequently disturbed."
Charles A. Yost[87]

Chapter Nine

TESLA'S WEATHER APPRENTICES

Archimedes (287-212 B.C.) started a Long tradition of ambitious engineers who want to make their mark on the world. "Give me a long enough lever and a place to stand on and I will move the Earth," Archimedes said. Fortunately, he never found that big a tool. More than twenty centuries later, his spirit lives on in the military's engineers. They would like to at least be able to move the upper-atmosphere jet stream, changing global weather to one country's advantage.

Is electromagnetism that tool? Two scientists from the Stanford University Radioscience Laboratory, H.C. Chang and U.S. Iman, are among the experts who offer evidence of what our technology can do to affect the sky by making waves on earth.They have published papers about electron precipitation from the magnetosphere (the outer belts of charged particles which stream toward Earth's magnetic poles) caused by man-made very low frequency electromagnetic waves.[88] "These precipitated particles can produce secondary ionization, emit X-rays, and cause significant perturbation in the lower ionosphere."

In 1974 Dr. Robert Helliwell and John Katsufrakis of Stanford University's radio science laboratory showed that very low frequency radio waves can vibrate the magnetosphere. In the Antarctic, with a 20km antenna and five kiloHertz transmitter, they learned that the magnetosphere can be modulated to cause high energy particles to cascade into Earth's atmosphere. By turning the signal on or off, they could stop the flow of energetic particles.

WEATHER CONTROL

Avalanches of energy dislodged by such radio waves could hit us hard. "The theoretical implication suggested by their work is that global weather control can be attained by the injection of relatively small 'signals' into the Van Allen belts (radiation belts around Earth) - something like a super-transistor effect," said Frederic Jueneman. The columnist for Industrial Research magazine speculated further, "If Tesla's resonance effects, as shown by the Stanford team, can control enormous

[86] Gary Lockhart. "Ancient Ham Making". The Weather Companion, p. 199, Wiley & Sons Inc. NY.
[87] Charles A. Yost, "Electrical Forces Applied to Basic Weather Phenomena", paper presented at 1992 International Aerospace and Ground Conference on Lightning and Static Electricity.
[88] H.C. Chang and U.S.Iman, "Quasi-Relativistic Electron Precipitation due to Interactions with Coherent VLF Waves in the Magnetosphere" Journal of Geophysical Research, Jan. 1, 1983.

energies by minuscule triggering signals, then by an extension of this principle we should be able to affect the field environment of the very stars in the sky...With godlike arrogance, we someday may yet direct the stars in their courses."89

The question is will that knowledge be used by war-oriented or biosphere-oriented scientists?

A 1977 editorial in Saturday Review warned about weather warfare and called it a moral issue, saying "If the world is in for a long spell of crippling weather, then we are fools and monsters if we don't get together for the purpose of mounting a response as though our life depended on it - as indeed it does."90

A series of weather disasters began in 1960, according to a CIA report mentioned in the editorial, but at the time climatologists couldn't look ahead and see that droughts, floods and abnormal temperatures would continue beyond that decade. As if natural disasters weren't bad enough, the CIA reported that national governments were already able to manipulate weather for military purposes. The editorialist had an impertinent thought: "It is difficult to read the CIA report without wondering whether some of the climatic aberrations in recent years may not have been part of military experimental programs."

Saturday Review's 1977 editorial used strong words to describe the desensitization of the public and decision makers - a deadening of moral indignation that came from seeing an endless procession of super-weapons. That process was described as mass insanity. "If the collective conscience does not now respond, then all our philosophy and religion and education,..have been abstract, irrelevant, futile."

The collective conscience was silent, however, and by 1995 the military has had another 18 years to work on weather warfare methods, which it euphemistically calls weather modification. For example, rainmaking technology was taken for a few test rides in Vietnam. The DoD sampled lightning and hurricane-manipulation studies in Project Skyfire and Project Stormfury. And they looked at some complicated technologies that would give big effects. Lowell Ponte, author of The Cooling, says the military studied both lasers and chemicals which they figured could damage the ozone layer over an enemy. Looking at ways to cause earthquakes, as well as to detect them, was part of the project code named Prime Argus, decades ago. The money for that came from the Defense Advanced Research Projects Agency (DARPA, now under the acronym ARPA.)

In 1993 Air Force Chief of staff General Merrill McPeak told a meeting of the U.S. Space Foundation that those opposing a larger military role in space must reconsider their viewpoint. He emphasized that the country must develop new systems so that it can control the space environment in the future. He and other Air Force officials wouldn't say what they had in mind, but said that new systems are more of a political question than a technological challenge.91

89 Frederic Jueneman, industrial Research magazine Feb. 1974, quoted by Margaret Cheney, Tesla: Man Out of Time, p. 287.

90 "Weather Modification", unsigned editorial, Saturday Review 2 5 77, p. 4.

91 Neff Hudson an Andrew Lawler, "USAF Chief Calls for Space Defense Upgrades", Space News Apr. 19-25 1993.

The next year the Air Force revealed a bit more - its Spacecast 2020 master plan includes weather control as a possible new weapons initiative. Defense News excerpted the report. Under "weather control", the article said that scientists have experimented with weather control since the 1940's, but Spacecast 2020 noted that "using environmental modification techniques to destroy, damage or injure another state are prohibited". Having said that, the Air Force claimed that advances in technology "compels a reexamination of this sensitive and potentially risky topic."92

What could the new technology do? For one, military forces may have the tool for zapping a hole through a cloud in order to target their enemy. That would be costly and risky, but "the potential benefits for national security could be even higher".

Air Force officials said the weather control section of their report is classified and won't be released.

40 YEARS OF ZAPPING THE SKY?

As far back as 1958, the chief White House advisor on weather modification, Captain Howard T. Orville, said the U.S. DoD was studying "ways to manipulate the charges of the earth and sky and so affect the weather" by using an electronic beam to ionize or deionize the atmosphere over a given area.93

In 1966, Professor Gordon J. F. MacDonald, associate director of the Institute of Geophysics and Planetary Physics at the University of California, Los Angeles, was a member of the President's Science Advisory Committee, and later a member of the President's Council on Environmental Quality. He published papers on the use of environmental control technologies for military purposes. MacDonald made a revealing comment:

"The key to geophysical warfare is the identification of environmental instabilities to which the addition of a small amount of energy would release vastly greater amounts of energy. "94

MacDonald had a number of ideas for using the environment as a weapon system and he contributed to what was, at the time, the dream of a futurist. When he wrote his chapter, "How To Wreck The Environment", for the book Unless Peace Comes.95 he was not kidding around. In the text he describes the use of weather manipulation, climate modification, polar ice cap melting or destabilization, ozone depletion techniques, earthquake engineering, ocean wave control and brain wave manipulation utilizing the planet's energy fields. He also said that these types of

---

92 "Air Force Space Master Plan Envisions Weather Control", Defense News, Sept 26-Oct. 2, 1994.

93 Between Two Ages: America's Role in the Technetronic Era, by Zbigniew Brzezinski, Penguin Books, Mass. 1976.

94 Unless Peace Comes. A Scientific Forecast of New Weapons. Edited By Nigel Calder, Geophysical Warfare, How to Wreak the Environment by Gordon J. F. MacDonald, pges 181-205, 1968. (provided by: International Committee for The Convention Against Offensive Microwave Weapons)

95 Ibid.

weapons would be developed and, when used, would be virtually undetectable by their victims. He was not some wire haired fanatic when he made these observations in 1966 - he had the credentials of a world recognized scientist. What his futuristic concepts became, are the things which projects like HAARP are made of...

U.S. Congress' subcommittee hearings on Oceans and International Environment looked into military weather and climate modification conducted in the early 1970's. "What emerged was an awesome picture of far ranging research and experimentation by the DoD into ways environmental tampering could be used as a weapon," said Lowell Ponte.96

The revealed secrets surprised legislators. Would an inquiry into the state of the art of electromagnetic manipulation surprise lawmakers today? They may find out that technologies developed out of the HAARP experiments in Alaska could deliver on Gordon MacDonald's vision, because leading edge scientists are describing global weather as not only air pressure and thermal systems, but also as an electrical system.

'SMALL INPUT, BIG EFFECT'

A point to remember is that the ionosphere is an active electrical shield protecting the planet from the constant bombardment of high-energy particles from space. This conducting plasma, along with Earth's magnetic field, traps the electrical plasma of space and holds it back from going directly to the earth's surface, says Charles Yost of Dynamic Systems, Leicester, North Carolina. HAARP zaps the ionosphere where it is relatively unstable.

"If the ionosphere is greatly disturbed, the atmosphere below is subsequently disturbed. "97

It is reasonable to expect Earth's relatively thin atmosphere of insulating gas (water vapor) to be mechanically pushed and pulled by the surrounding electrical forces, Yost says. Electrical currents in the ionosphere are said to be 100 times larger than those produced lower down at any moment by all the world's thunderstorms. Yost concludes that electrical forces should be included along with thermodynamics, gravity waves and effects of Earth's rotation, as causes of weather variations. According to his experiments and analyses, ionospheric currents and changing magnetic fields in the ionosphere must produce "global oscillating gradients" that go down as far as the ground.

A connection between manmade electromagnetic forces and the weather showed up in a paper Yost wrote about lightning and earth harmonics. The apparent global interaction of electrical storms prompted Yost to take another look at how clouds form. He found that electrostatic forces can influence the dynamics of cumulus clouds. On a copy of his paper that Yost sent to Jeane Manning, he wrote "man can make these levels of force artificially".

96 The Cooling, by Lowell Ponte. Prentice-Hall inc. NJ 1976.

97 Charles A. Yost, "Electrical Forces Applied to Basic Weather Phenomena", Proceedings of the 1992 International Aerospace and Ground Conference on Lightning and Static Electricity, Atlantic City, 1992. Document available through Nat'l Technical Information Service, Springfield, Virginia, 22161.

In its early stages, a currtulo nimbus cloud's transition layer is in a delicately balanced condition of pressure, temperature and water vapor content, according to Yost, "such that minor change triggers condensation. A radiation particle, a localized electric field transient or a slight local thermal disturbance might trigger the change of state," Yost said.

The first two factors may help explain strange extremes of weather over industrialized/electrified/atomic-powered North America. For one thing, the unnatural 60 hz electromagnetic fluctuations from a dense web of powerlines have entrained the vibrations of the ionosphere in some places. Again, Tesla's favorite phenomenon - resonance - explains how a relatively small force can have large effects.

Dr. Robert O. Becker explains how one man-made electrical effect - power line harmonic resonance - causes fallout of charged particles from the Van Allen (radiation) belts, and how the falling ions cause ice crystals (which precipitate rain clouds).98

What about HAARP? Energy blasted upward from an ionospheric heater is not much compared to the total in the ionosphere, but HAARP documents admit that thousandfold greater amounts of energy can be released in the ionosphere than injected. As with MacDonald's "key to geophysical warfare", "nonlinear" effects (described in the literature about the ionospheric heater) mean small input and large output.

At a 1983 science conference in Atlanta, one of the presentations held clues about where engineers and physicists were heading with that small input/ large output goal.99 E.E. Richards talked about the above mentioned Stanford University experiment in beaming VLF radio waves to the magnetosphere. The signals followed the curves of the magnetic field and swung back to Earth. They were detected halfway around the world away from their origin in California. In some cases the signals were amplified a thousand times.

What strengthens these radio signals a thousandfold? According to Richards' research, the signals gather energy from electrons within the Van Allen radiation belts which surround Earth's atmosphere. Each time one of the world's fifty or so VLF (3 to 30 KHz) transmitters sends out its signal; streams of excited particles from the outermost regions of the magnetosphere cascade into our atmosphere. "Even low frequency (LF: 30-300 KHz) radio waves leak into the upper layers, causing this same phenomenon. The injection of small signals into the energy belts creates something like a super-transistor effect, altering the motion of free electrons thousands of miles out from the earth's surface. This Tesla Magnifying Resonance effect can control enormous energies by minuscule triggering signals." As did Nikola Tesla, Richards works with the principle of resonance.

98 Hobert O. BecKer, The Body Electric, William Morrow NY 1985.
99 E.E. Richards, "Earth Power Spectrum", Proceedings, The Second International Symposium on Non-Conventional Energy Technology, p. 136, Cadake Publishing, PO Box 1490, Clayton, Georgia 30525.

In a recent interview[100], Richards explained the super-transistor effect which others also describe as an avalanche of electrons. At certain frequencies and at a certain energetic threshold, there is a large energy transfer between levels in the upper atmosphere.

EFFECTS REACH THE GROUND

How far down from the magnetosphere or ionosphere through the atmosphere can such an "avalanche" come? Surprisingly, in various locations Richards found effects reaching the earth. The first time he saw this recorded on scientific instruments, he was living at 8,000 feet above sea level in central-west New Mexico where the air was clear and electromagnetically quiet. That day there was a large buildup of electrical energy in the atmosphere very close to the surface of the earth, but not a thunderstorm condition. As the non-lightning electrical condition passed through the area, Richards and his associates monitored surprisingly large oscillations (vibrations) on their antennae array and learned at what frequencies the local atmosphere readily vibrates. The vibrations charged capacitors (energy storage units) to a rather high voltage.

One quiet March day while monitoring the Russian and American ELF transmissions, they tried running an antenna array (twisted wires) a mile along the ground, and received unexpectedly strong and continuous signals. Briefly, the findings and further monitoring were a springboard for discovering correlations with harmonic interactions between the planets. They also learned how nature handles the influx of cosmic energy towards earth's surface through the auroral vibrations. The researchers saw how energies could be stored within the magnetosphere, and "we have a mechanism, confirming Tesla, for drawing this energy into the lower atmospheric cavity."

'COUPLING' BETWEEN IONOSPHERE AND WEATHER

While Richards' interest in their work was to find a usable clean- energy source for the inhabitants of Earth, physicists at Stanford University worked on a government funded project. They wanted to amplify waves in the magnetosphere for the goal of global communication at lower frequencies.101

The authors of this book have a different aim - to understand the ramifications of the high-level experiments. Could it affect our weather? The atmospheric physicists we have spoken to are vague in their answers.

The paper by Richards gives strong clues. Recent scientific evidence suggests that strong electrical coupling exists between the ionosphere and lower atmosphere, he said. Large scale horizontal electric fields move down from the magnetosphere and ionosphere, with little loss of amplitude, to around ten kilometers above the earth, he said, "The total potential voltage drop across regions like the polar caps and the auroral ionosphere can be a significant fraction of the average ionospheric potential with respect to the earth..."

100 E.E. Richards, conversation with Jeane Manning, May 1995,

101 "VLF: Getting Panicles Excited," Science News, Dec, 18 and 25, 1982, pg. 392.

What this means to us is that there is a powerful electrical connection between the ionosphere and the part of the atmosphere where our weather comes onstage, the lower atmosphere. Furthermore, scientific theories describe how the electrical energetic levels of the atmosphere are connected to cloud processes. 102

E.E. Richards reported the following conclusions from his search of the literature. "The conducting ionosphere can affect the instability by short circuiting the electrostatic part of the earth electric field, thus requiring less energy to release charge from the upper layers. These auroral arcs result in an acceleration process called ring currents, precessing along the magnetic field lines that connect the magnetotail with the ionosphere. This is the primary supply of energy for the auroras..."

He explains how electrostatic waves stimulate the ionosphere, allowing the powerful radiations described above to flow in from space. He adds that observations from satellites and from the ground tend to confirm Nikola Tesla's claims about his Colorado Springs experiments. "With his oscillator he was able to stimulate the ionosphere through high voltage, and then allow the cascading of the upper layer currents, thereby simulating the natural action of the aurora and also of lightning."

Tesla was one of several inventors cited by E.E. Richards who were on the path to using the "abundant energy source that surrounds us each minute". Humanity lives within the cosmically stimulated bubble of the magnetosphere, Richards said, and upon the twirling spherical generator that is the earth. In the spirit of previous generations of scientists called natural philosophers, he is awed by the beauty of the system. In our experience, this appreciation of the processes of the universe often comes to independent researchers who aim to work in harmony with nature. In other words, resonance seems a gentler way to transfer power than direct zapping.

The weather can be changed using electrostatics. A discovery allowing the manipulation of weather was made by Elate Intelligent Technologies, Incorporated, a small Russian company. They found a way to fine tune weather patterns over a 200 mile range. The "system consists of dozens of aerials, each 25 feet tall, that discharge electrical energy upward to react with ions in the air". 103 These aerials are connected to a computer system and power supply which is controlled by an operator to create the desired effects.

Lev Pokhmelnykh is the company founder and a respected physicist, specializing in "electrostatics". Pokhmelnykh demonstrated the system for the Wall Street Journal reporter with startling results. He used the system to clear clouds in an otherwise dreary day. The technology points out how little we know about such effects and the way weather can be manipulated by people.

---

102 Ralph Markson and Michael Muir, "Solar Wind Control of the Earth's Electrical Field", Science, May 30, 1980, Vol. 208 No. 4447.

103 Adi Ignatius, "Rain, Rain, Go Away, Go Soak Someone Less Willing to Pay; Moscow Firm Offers 'Weather Made to Order'; Our Man Requests Three Days", The Wall Street Journal, October 2, 1992, pg. A1 & A11.

RIVERS IN THE AIR

There was another unexpected discovery of an atmospheric phenomenon in 1993. It was found that the Earth's lower atmosphere contains "rivers of water vapor rivaling the Amazon in the massiveness of their flow". 104 Reginald E. Newell of the Massachusetts Institute of Technology reported that these vapor rivers were the main mechanism for moving water from the equatorial regions of the earth to the poles. However, he did not expect to find that the water vapor was contained in narrow bands which are 420 to 480 miles wide and up to 4,800 miles long. These bands are about 1.9 miles above the earth, and have flow volumes of 165 million kilograms of water per second. The observers found that there are five atmospheric rivers in the Northern Hemisphere and five in the Southern Hemisphere, each with these typical flow rates.

We speculate that if HAARP were located at the right place, it could be used to deflect these flows in a way that alter weather patterns. This is another concern which should be considered in the operation of HAARP - a fact not known before HAARP was planned.

BEAMING ABOUT TESLA'S ELECTRIC GUN

Weapons-oriented researchers, on the other hand, are quite interested in other, more invasive, aspects of Tesla's knowledge besides resonance, such as the "explosive channelization of air" which he is said to have learned about this phenomena as he injected successive pulses of energy along the same channel, According to Dr. J.F.X.Daum, Ken Corum and Dr. James Corum, Teste experimented with atmospheric tunneling. By the 3930's Teste had invented a "channelized beam composed of a coherent burst of electrically charged material particles" moving as fast as the speed of light. The three scientists calculated that such a particle beam would easily pierce armored vehicles.105

COULD THEY SHORT CIRCUIT EARTH?

Earth as a spherical electrical system is a fairly well accepted model. However, those experimenters who want to make unnatural power connections between parts of this system might not be thinking of possible consequences. Electrical motors and generators can be caused to wobble when their circuits are affected. Could human activities cause a significant change in a planet's electrical circuit or electrical field? A quote plucked from a lengthy paper in the respected journal Science deals with manmade ionization from radioactive material, but perhaps it could also be studied with HAARP-type skybusters in mind:

"For example, while changes in the earth's electric field resulting f,om a solar flare modulating conductivity may have only a barely detectable effect on meteorology, the situation may be different in regard to electric field changes caused by manmade ionization,,."106

---

104 Kathy Sawyer, "Climatology: Space Data Indicate Rivers in the Sky,", The Washington Post, Science Notebook, Jan. 25, 1993.

105 "Thoughts on Tesla's Particle Beam Technology", presentation by Or. J.F.X. Daum, Ken Corum and Dr. James Corum to International Tesla Society.

106 Ralph Markson and Michael Muir, "Solar Wind Control of the Earth's Electrical Field", Science, May 30,1980, Vol. 208 No. 4447, p. 989.

Meteorology, of course, is the study of the atmosphere and weather. Ionization is what happens when a higher level of power is zapped into atoms and knocks electrons off the atoms. The resulting charged particles are the stuff of HAARP. "One took at the weather should tell us that we are on the wrong path," says Paul Schaefer, electrical engineer, commenting on HAARP-type technologies.

An administrator of the National Oceanic and Atmospheric Administration once said, "It is not possible to draw clear distinctions between research and technological development on weather modification for hostile and non-hostile purposes."

"Our planetary environment is becoming progressively more energetic, with unusual activity, like mysterious bursts of energy that mimic radio waves from atomic explosions, being detected in the atmosphere..."
Paul Schaefer, engineer and researcher, Kansas City MO.

"The Earth is becoming a disturbed planet, and man is doing the disturbing."
Acres USA

Chapter Ten

PUTTING THE HEAT ON MOM EARTH

The journey toward understanding "Tesla technology" had taken Jeane Manning to science conferences in Germany in 1987 and Switzerland two years later.

At both meetings, she heard an American astrophysicist, Adam Trombly, give eloquent speeches on environmental issues. A protege of the late Buckminster Fuller, Trombly had founded the non-profit Project Earth through which he worked with other scientists toward understanding global ecosystems - the big picture.

In July of 1995, Manning telephoned Trombly at the Institute of Advanced Studies at Aspen, Colorado, to ask about possible effects of the HAARP-type experiments which would make artificial electromagnetic storms above the earth - experiments which would lift parts of the ionosphere and would literally expand those areas while accelerating more high energy particles in the already energetic ionosphere.

HAARP would add more energy to a global system that is already stretched, replied the scientist. By "stretched", he meant hyperstimulated by particle flows from the sun. To put it into perspective, think of our planet as a somewhat wobbly dynamo motoring around a sun. Our sun is an aging star and getting unreliable, to say the least. Through telescopes, people have been eying sunspots since Galileo's time, and learned that magnetic storms above Earth and the northern lights are connected to those dark patches on the sun. In recent decades our sun has been throwing major fits
- spewing larger than usual bursts of high energy particles into our planet's systems. Some of this hyperactivity started before men got into the act with nuclear explosions. With an effect similar to solar flares, manmade Tadiation from atomic technologies adds to the crossfire of super-speedy particles in which we live.

It's difficult to tell how long the sun has been going through a hyperactive cycle, because sensitive scientific instruments to measure "coronal hole activity" on the sun are fairly new. A thorough study has only been possible in the last couple of decades. (The corona is the super-hot halo of plasma around the sun.)

Judging by the increase in the geomagnetic "noise" (disturbances in the earth's magnetic field) heard on earth, some scientists speculate that the sun may be approaching a time of change. Whether or not the sun goes through a time of spectacular hot flashes in the near future and throws even more particles at Earth, the fact is that Earth is being affected right now.

EARTH GETS HOTTER

"Eleven years ago we were predicting ground heating," Trombly said, "...the earth actually getting hotter inductively."

(To understand what he was talking about, Manning later had to turn to a dictionary of science. Induction heating means that electrically conducting material - in this case, materials in the earth - is heated as a result of the electric current induced in it by an alternating magnetic field (due to interaction with the sun and even with the moon). She began to see how Earth's magnetic field could be in danger of breaking down and opening the way for a pole shift. Heat is an enemy to the strength of a magnet. (The fact that the earth is getting hotter was reported in the New York Times in 1991. The article said that Arctic ice had decreased by 2% in only a nine year period.) 107

Trombly was saying that before men detonated underground nuclear tests or did anything else that was massively invasive to the state of balance of Earth's systems, we were already on an unstable planet. When will Earth be electrodynamically saturated with an "energy burden" from the sun? "The system is already at near-terminal capacity in our opinion," said Trombly.

Then HAARP comes along..."a project that could further destabilize an earth that's already an unstable environment", as Trombly put it. The thought of a planet whose systems are overloaded, and which may soon reach the point where it couldn't take any more high-energy particles, was sobering. Manning thought about the enthusiastic attitude of the scientists and military contractors whom the NO HAARP group called "the big boys with the big toys". Those big time experimenters admit that they don't know what will happen when they push ionospheric heating experiments into the next level of effects. They seem to be excited about the macho adventure of passing the next "threshold of effects" in the ionosphere, and do not hesitate to pump gigawatts of power up there and intentionally accelerate particles in the ionosphere to "relativistic" speeds - nearly the speed of light. Why would they be so irresponsible?

Trombly answered in a word - denial. The decision makers are not being malicious, Trombly said; they are just refusing to face the facts about how flimsy is the web of life on Earth. "We do not want to admit that we are in a situation that is tenuous, where there are gradual (planetary) processes that are punctuated by catastrophic processes."

Specialists tend to look at their own experiments as isolated incidents, without seeing long term effects on larger systems, Trombly noted. As Manning heard him talk about lack of respect for Earth's systems, she thought about a

107 "Receding Ice on Arctic Sea Hints at Global Warming" by William K. Stevens, New York Times, July 4, 1991, pg. A11.

professor she had interviewed who was connected with HAARP. The professor's enthusiasm encompassed the possibility of HAARP creating a massive airglow in the ionosphere, and of giving his doctoral students some technical challenges so they could get their Ph.D.s.

Could their experiments set off a catastrophe? The research of the Institute for Advanced Studies looks into such questions. For example, earth monitoring with sensitive instruments revealed a connection between underground nuclear tests and earthquakes.

While nuclear explosions zap more high energy particles into our global environment, HAARP specifically gives a sharp jab to the ionosphere. Trombly is concerned about atmospheric storms "once you create a point-like stress differential... What is it going to do in terms of gating influx from particles, from the magnetosphere down?...we already have real problems with particle influx into this planet, now."

Pole Shift

The Soviets considered the impact of electromagnetic "smog" on living organisms. They concluded that because living organisms evolved under the influence of the Earth's micropulsations in the magnetic field, changes in these pulsations might alter fundamental body rhythms, including the rate that DNA replicates. From the Soviet perspective, electromagnetic pulses can influence everything from health to behavior. Russian scientists are also concerned that continued increases in electromagnetic radiations could contribute to a premature and cataclysmic reversal or position shift of Earth's poles, 108

Western scientists have noted that chemical changes occur which can account for some effects of electromagnetic pulses on living systems. James D. Hays of Columbia University found microorganism extinctions corresponding to pole reversals. He believes that, in some way, these living creatures used the magnetic fields of the earth. When the fields were altered by reversal, they died,109 This issue was also explored by one of the country's leaders in bioelectric science, Robert O. Becker, M.D. His research results also pointed to similar findings as those of the Soviets - animal extinctions.110

The possibility of electromagnetic pollution bringing changes that could cause a pole shift is alarming. However, the interrelationship of earth movement and atmospheric effects was discussed in a 1991 article.[111] It is known that Earth slows down by about 1.4 milliseconds every century, but scientists more recently discovered that this can also happen in jumps.

108 Cross. Currents, The Perils of Electropollution, The Promise of Electromedicine, by Robert O. Becker, M,D.

109 "The Mind Fields", by Kathleen McAuliffe, Omni Magazine, February 1985.

110 Ibid.

111 "Fitfully, the Rotation of the Earth is Slowing", by John Noble Wilford, The New York Times, August 9, 1991.

They already knew that tidal forces from the gravitational effects of the moon, sun and other astronomical bodies contribute to slowing the Earth's spin. The new discovery is that wind, polar ice melting, ocean currents and movements within the Earth's molten core are causing an increased slowing. The forces generated by atmospheric motion have the most significant impact on either speeding up or slowing down the spin rate. In the article, Dr. Jean Dickey of the Jet Propulsion Laboratory said that "Ninety percent of these variations are caused by changes in wind", when describing the shifts in atmospheric mass such as that associated with El Nino. (El Nino is a periodic change in ocean currents which have altered weather patterns.) Dr. Dickey said, "If the atmosphere is speeding up. Earth is slowing down".

The movement of atmospheric mass adds stress over new portions of the earth, and lowers stress in other parts. This shift in pressure or forces in the planet can increase earthquake frequency in all areas which experience changes in atmospherically created stresses.

This can be related to the HAARP technologies, because changing ionospheric balance might shift weather patterns that are already contributing to the planet's instabilities. How much stress is needed or created by this kind of experimentation is unknown. What is known is that the Earth is a balanced organism which is increasingly being affected by reckless experimentation, either deliberate or out of ignorance.

The idea that these kinds of weapon systems could be used for weather modification is not new. The real work leading to the area of geophysical warfare goes back to at least 1958, when the chief White House advisor on weather modification, Captain Howard T. Orville, said the Defense Department was studying "ways to manipulate the changes of the earth and sky and so affect weather" by using "an electronic beam to ionize or deionize the atmosphere over a given area." 112

As far back as 1977, scientists observed that just the location of power plant clusters could affect weather as much as could intentional injection of power into the atmosphere. They discovered that when power plants are clustered together, they alter local weather patterns. Within six to twelve miles downwind of these facilities, rainfall could increase by as much as 25 percent more than normal, and at further distances rainfall might decrease. They concluded that the changes were the result of released heat. 113 The heat energy alone released by technology can have a debilitating effect on weather patterns!

Earth's equilibrium is undergoing other disconcerting shifts. This again shows our lack of understanding of the complex processes of the planet. A New York Times article said that wave heights in the northeast Atlantic had risen by up to 20 percent since the 1960's. The reported study took more than two decades, so the effect could not be explained away by seasonal variations. 114 The article explained that

---

[112] The Cooling, by Lowell Ponte, 1976, page 169.

113 "Cluster of Power Plants Found to Change Weather", The New York Times, June 5,1977.

114 "Puzzled Scientists Find Waves Off Britain Are Growing Larger", the New York Times, April 19, 1988, pg. C4.

these changes in wave heights could be caused by weather system changes occurring a thousand miles away. Tampering via HAARP will only exaggerate such anomalies in the upper atmosphere, and perhaps set in motion a chain reaction.

Electrical power generation and use of energy in the northeastern United States steadily increased over the same two decades. Could it be that the "downwind" effects of weather, described earlier, could be contributing to this wave height observation? Could we be reaching a new level where instabilities will tilt over some unknown threshold, thereby causing unexpected geophysical reactions?

ACUPUNCTURE POINTS

There are simpler ways to look at Mom Earth's natural electrical system. For example, Adam Trombly said the acupuncture model is relevant. "What happens when you overstimulate an acupuncture point? You can give somebody a heart attack very easily with a very low amplitude input...Hit one of those ionospheric acupuncture points in the dynamic matrix of the ionosphere as a wave guide - what is the effect going to be?"

He challenges HAARP scientists to answer a big question before they send multi-gigawatt pulses up to the ionosphere. "What are the saturation parameters for the ionosphere?"

Manning asked him about the warning implied in the book Lost Millennium by Walter and Leigh Richmond. In that novel, "advanced" technology tapped into the ionosphere successfully, until one day when the timing was unfortunate. A solar flare set off an unquenchable avalanche of electrons that traveled back down the technicians' beam and fried a planet. Could today's ionosphere modifying scientists make a similar mistake?

"That's what I'm talking about," Trombly said quietly.

Technically, he explained what could happen in an electrodynamically saturated situation. If a natural source - solar - hyperstimulates the entire system, it could cause "chaotic dissipative motions". Events in the ionosphere then could stretch way beyond the normal limits of the physics law of conservation of energy. "It doesn't mean the energy isn't ultimately conserved; it just means that the initial environment is pervaded with far more energy than we've taken into account." In order to dissipate this energy, tremendous turbulence develops in the ionosphere and the magnetosphere.

Manning pondered what she had learned at New Energy Science conferences. Does twentieth-century textbook science have an incomplete picture of what is in "empty space"? Could there be interactions with the background sea of electromagnetic radiations - perhaps from distant stars - that flickers throughout space? She recalled papers in prestigious science journals that indicate there is a lot to learn about the energetic nature of the space that surrounds us.115, 116, 117, 118, 119

Trombiy was saying that for years Russian scientists have documented unusual effects that violate physicists' expectations - "nonlinear, nonthermodynamic effects that violate entropy, in the resonant system of the atmosphere". In the light of these discoveries of unexpected energetic effects, he raised a few more questions for the skybusting HAARP experimenters.

"Where are those energies coming from? Tell me where the point is when you reach instability! Tell me what your critical points of stress are, before you do this!"

The ionosphere exists at a certain level of "magnetoplasmadynamic order". At various levels of energy, certain gases or elements exist. If the energy level is dramatically changed, the system goes through a chaotic transition before it reconstitutes itself at another level of order. Nobel prize winner Ilya Prigogine documented this self- ordering process in chemical systems. Since then, Trombly and many others continue to observe atmospheric processes in the light of this background understanding.

Resonance - a phenomenon related to the natural frequency of each part of a system - figures strongly in Tesla technology as well as in interactions between electromagnetism and mental processes or living cells which Dr. Nick Begich researched. Regarding global systems, interconnectedness through resonance is undeniable, Trombiy said. "We have observed that, when a system is near saturation you don't know what is going to send it over the line."

LARGE-SCALE ELECTROMAGNETICS

The interconnectedness between the ionosphere and the lithosphere (earth's crust) or the ionosphere and the inner core of the earth, is partly an inductive relationship, he said. What does Trombiy mean, using an electrical term such as "inductive" in relation to layers of the earth? He admits that some "people who call themselves geophysicists would scratch their heads; they wouldn't know what I was talking about. But there plenty of other ones who are good enough with electromagnetic systems on a grand scale, who would at least stop and pause before they would do anything as stupid as send multi-gigawatt pulses into the ionosphere.

Since earthquakes are known to cause the ionosphere to react electromagnetically, Manning asked if the reverse could happen - could pulsed disturbances in the ionosphere set off earthquakes?

115 Daniel C. Cole and Harold E. Puthoff, "Extracting Energy and Heat from the Vacuum", Physical Review E, Vol. 48 No. 2, Aug. 1993.

116 Bernard Haisch, Alfonso Rueda and Harold Puthoff "Beyond E=mc2", The Sciences, November/Dec. 1994, pp 26-31.

117 Harold Puthoff, "Ground State of Hydrogen as a Zero-point-fluctuation-determined State," Phys. Rev. D, Vol. 33, No. 10, May 15, 1987 pp 3266-3269.

118 Harold Puthoff, "Source of Vacuum Electromagnetic Zero-Point Energy", Physical Review A, Vol. 40, No, 9, Nov. 1 1989, PP 4857-4862.

119 Puthoff, Harold, "Everything for Nothing", New Scientist, July 28, 1990.

He replied that he would not be so naive as just to say "yes, if they stimulate the ionosphere in this way then they're going to set off earthquakes. However, I would not be so cavalier as to say that if they happen to stimulate the ionosphere at a moment when it is already saturated, or near saturation, that they couldn't set off an event that could induce chaos - where you could end up having a kind of magnetic storming, almost a runaway event up there."

In documents the HAARP planners put together in 1990 they say that they were intentionally trying to get a "runaway" effect in the ionosphere. This effect was new and would represent an energy threshold not yet reached with these kinds of military tools. The document said "...that at the highest HF (high frequency) powers available in the West, the instabilities commonly studied are approaching (heir maximum RF (radio frequency) energy dissipative capability, beyond which the plasma processes will 'runaway' until the next limiting factor is reached."120 What will happen when this runaway event occurs?

Trombly pointed out a similarity between the decision to pulse several gigawatts into the ionosphere (HAARP) without knowing what will happen, and the first atomic weapon testing. Years afteT that test, physicist Robert Oppenheimer admitted that the scientists had not known what would happen when they set off the bomb - if the chain reaction was going to stop or keep on going. "The government knew that the scientists didn't know!"

More recently, spectrum analysis work, especially in the ultra low frequency (ULF) part of the electromagnetic spectrum, has clearly shown how non-linear the effects from underground nuclear testing were, Trombly said. (Nonlinear means having an output that is not directly proportional to the input. In other words, unexpected or unpredictable.) Scientists were completely surprised by these results - they represented many many times the expected effect.

HAARP: DANGEROUS EXPERIMENT

Manning commented that Dr. Bernard Eastlund, the inventor of an ionospheric heater technology which may be a precursor to HAARP, claims the ionospheric heater approach could change the chemistry of the ionosphere beneficially. Trombly indicated there were safer ways to increase the ozone content.

"My knee-jerk reaction is still the same," he said. "With a system as close to saturation as it is, why would 1 believe this guy when he says that by beaming this into the ionosphere we're going to be able to heal it? I also don't want to be dogmatic and say it can't work, if it is done properly. But it just doesn't seem like a wise and prudent act to me."

Trombly sounded discouraged. He and his colleagues at the non-profit Institute for Advanced Studies use any money that they get from clients for further research. However, he would consider their efforts a waste of time if the people with

---

120 HAARP HF Active Auroral Research Program, Joint Program Plans and Activities, Air Force Geophysics Laboratory, Navy Office of Naval Research, February 1990.

big pocketbooks aren't going to do anything constructive about the global environmental situation.

"There are very basic things we could do if we want to heal the stratosphere. We already know these things will be effective..."

Will the big money continue to go into destructive instead of constructive experiments?

"Trying to pin these guys down is
like nailing jello to the wall."

PART THREE

ELECTROPAINTINGS IN THE SKY

Chapter Eleven

THE COMPILERS

The NO HAARP group really wasn't a group in the formal sense. The independent research efforts always flowed to the "library". This was a floating set of documents which grew to more than three hundred source items. The library was periodically copied and sent to trusted "compilers" across the globe, and was also moved from one person to the next depending on who was developing the most data and had the greatest need for the information at their finger tips at a given time. It could be said that the NO HAARP members, each acting as their own independent collection points, were a living Internet. Each person could continue to operate even if some researchers dropped off the project.

The military presented a challenge to researchers in the way they handle information in weapon development projects. From the beginning of the development of the information until the writing of these words, the data on HAARP, gathered by the compilers, has continued to grow. We recognized that there would be additional information found even after the first printing of this book but it could be added later as the collection of facts had an urgency which required publication. We needed to begin to disclose the potentials of this new weapon system and the risks associated with it.

Getting information from the military presented a challenge because of the way they handle information in weapon development projects. The United States military and intelligence community work under a number of principles. These include "compartmentalization" and "need-to-know". Compartmentalization is the idea of taking a large multifaceted project and breaking it down into subparts which can be researched and devetoped independent of the others. Through compartmentalization, the concept of need-to-know develops, where only the part that each individual needs to be aware of is relayed to that person. What these two concepts allow the military is "containment". A third principle in intelligence circles. An intelligence circle keeps the project going, but in a way which masks the overall (government) plan. In the case of the HAARP project, Hanscom Air Force Base runs the public effort on the program. Kirtland Air Force Base (the home of high-tech weapons systems) runs the information distribution process, Maxwell Air Force Base develops doctrine and policy for non-lethal weapon systems and Brooks Air Force Base puts together research on the bio-effects of radiofrequency radiation. UCLA, Stanford University, Penn State, and the University of Alaska all work on the project. Lest we forget, there are also industry contributions by Atlantic Richfield Company (ARCO) through ARCO Power Technologies Incorporated (APTI), their subsidiary. E-Systems bought APTI and formed a new subsidiary called APTI. This company was then acquired by Raytheon Corporation in a huge buyout. 121 There are many other organizations connected to the project some of whom appear in the remaining chapters of this book.

121 The Wall Street Journal, "Raytheon to Acquire E-Systems For $64 a Share, or $2.3 Billion, Offer is 41% Premium Over Friday's Close; Rival Bid Is Unlikely", by Steven Lipin and Jeff Cole, page 1 column 2 and A3 column 1 and A16 column 1, Monday, April 3,1995.

The HAARP project is part of the larger work of Strategic Defense Initiative ("Star Wars") technologies, a program first brought forward during the Reagan Administration. We are also certain that many of those associated with this project are unaware of the other ways HAARP transmitters could be used. The scientists at work within the University of Alaska Fairbanks' Geophysical Institute are specialists and brilliant leaders in their fields. However, their disciplines do not cross over into the biological sciences sufficiently to consider the effects of their work on living things, nor does their work consider the uses of radiofrequency radiation contemplated by the intelligence community and within the various agencies of the United States government.

Part three considers the risks to people if these "ionospheric heaters" are misused. It explores the use of radiofrequency for mind manipulation, as a weapon system as well as those DoD applications described in the HAARP records.

The information presented throughout this book, it is hoped, will stimulate people to approach their government projects with the same healthy skepticism demonstrated by the "guys in the bush" and all of the others who contributed to this research effort. The people whose stories were told in the first section of the book are scientists, researchers and very ordinary people who had the will to cause change in the world.

This part of the book is the work of the "compilers" in weaving together the tapestry of information developed over what has become years of effort on the part of many, This is the story behind the story of HAARP.

Chapter Twelve

TWISTED WORDS, STAR WARS AND POKER FLATS

'Trying to pin these guys down is like nailing jello to the wall," That was how one "No HAARP" member described the military's public relations efforts on the project. The HAARP, had little or nothing to do with nature's electropaintings in the sky, the aurora borealis. The project name was the mask behind which the military hid, letting the University of Alaska Fairbanks, through the Geophysical Institute, moved out front on the project, parading it as a research effort with an economic development spin.

The latest additions to the research have revealed government disinformation. The first new item was found in the library at the Geophysical Institute[122] and revealed the true scope planned, over the long term, for HAARP and the technologies it uses. Other important items recently uncovered were the remaining nine of twelve patents originally assigned to ARCO Power Technologies Incorporated (APTI) [123] which would eventually end up in the patent portfolio of Raytheon Corporation, one of the world's largest companies.

The meetings and information put together by the military as part of the Environmental Impact Statement (EIS) process seemed alright to most, although several people were pretty well informed about the possible ill effects of radiofrequency radiation. In most areas of the country this level of knowledge would have been unusual but in "bush" Alaska, radios are a way of life, and many plug into the planet via satellite dish and Internet connections to stay up on the latest research in many fields. In the winter, time passes slowly, and the new technologies have brought relief and stimulation to the minds of many in these remote reaches of North America. Alaskans also tend to have independent spirits, having had to carve out their niche in some of the most severe environmental conditions in the world. Alaskans are a bit skeptical. For many, the EIS meetings raised more questions than they answered.

The government seemed to try to create the illusion that the project was standing alone when, in fact, it was tied to a number of other experiments and systems. The project requires other equipment to run with the HAARP facility, some of which was described in the military's and University of Alaska Fairbanks' various documents.

The Poker Flat Rocket Range is the largest land based (5,132 acres[124]) research facility in the world and the only high latitude rocket range in the United States. It is the only University operated range in the country. Poker Flat Rocket Range has been funded in past years with NASA grants of $1.5 million annually. The site also received a $30 million upgrade as a part of a national defense bill passed by the Congress in the early 1990'sl25 when Dr. Syun-Ichi Akasofu declared, "We plan to build the best upper atmospheric research facility in the world."126

---

[122] PL/GP Technical Memorandum No. 195; "Presentations from the HAARP Workshop on Ionospheric Heating Diagnostics, 30 April - 2 May 1991, Phillips Laboratory (AFSC), Hanscom AFB, MA. 01731-5000"; Editor, Major Drew Fisher, October 22, 1991.

[123] United States Patent Numbers 4686605; 4712155; 4817495; 4873928; 4954709; 4999637; 5038664; 5041834; 5068669; 5202689; 5218374; and 5293176.

[124] Geophysical Quarterly, Volume 10, No. 1 & 2, Winter 1992, pg, 1.

Public relations communications on HAARP, during 1993 and 1994 denied that the project was formally tied to the Poker Flat Rocket range. During 1992 the Air Force funded, under a separate program, the launch of a 17,000 pound rocket carrying a payload of 2,770 pounds. The Spirit 11 rocket was used to send a high-tech telescope about 205 miles above the Earth to measure emissions from auroral displays. The Geophysical Institute disclosed that "Researchers at Hanscom Air Force Base in Massachusetts plan to use the measurements as a part of a larger Strategic Defense Initiative Organization (commonly known as Star Wars) study on atmospheric disturbances. Studying infrared light is important because it can prevent some Air Force satellites from being able to detect targets, other satellites, or clutter in space, just as city lights can prevent people from seeing stars in the sky." 127 A number of otheT military projects have been reported in the Geophysical Institute's publications which, although they were funded separately, produced information crucial to the planned uses of HAARP. Many of these kinds of projects are revealed throughout this book.

At the same time that the HAARP project started, and the Poker Flat upgrades were funded the University also received, again under separate Congressional funding, $25 million foT a Cray Supercomputer which the military indicated was also not "formally" tied to HAARP. 128 However, upon investigating, it was determined that this computer would be committed to 30% Defense Department uses. While the military couched their wording in ways that deflected interest away from these facts, the records were clear. What was not so clear was why they were not just saying yes, they were going to use all of these systems, yes, these systems interface with this hardware while being funded under separate programsl29 as indicated in their own planning documents. It just didn't add up; what was the big deal anyway?

In a letter to one of Alaska's legislators, the public relations man for HAARP, John Heckscher, stated that "the HAARP program is not formally tied to the Poker Flat Rocker Range, nor to the new super-computer at the University of Alaska... However, the research capabilities associated with those excellent facilities will undoubtedly be of interest and use to scientists using the HAARP facility."130 John Heckscher was at the military planning sessions which clearly described the use of these other facilities, The summary of those meetings, in 1990 and 1991, contained the following: "the incoherent scatter radar facility, envisioned to complement the planned new HF heater, is currently being funded in a separate DoD

125 Geophysical Quarterly, Volume B, No, 1 & 2, Winter 1990, pg. 2.

126 Ibid.

127 Geophysical Quarterly, Volume 10, No, 1 & 2, Winter 1992, pg. 1.

128 "Porkpie in the Sky", Anchorage Daily News, We Alaskans , December 15,1991, pages 9-14.

129 PL/GP Technical Memorandum No. 195; "Presentations from the HAARP Workshop on Ionospheric Heating Diagnostics, 30 April - 2 May 1991, Phillips Laboratory (AFSC), Hanscom AFB, MA. 01731-5000"; Editor, Major Drew Fisher, October 22,1991,

130 Department of the Air force, Phillips Laboratory, John Heckscher, HAARP Program Manager, Letter to Alaska State Representative Jeannette James, November 12, 1993.

program, as part of an upgrade at the Poker Flat rocket range, in Alaska." At the same time it turned out that 30% of the computer time on the Supercomputer was for Department of Defense (DoD) purposes.

So why the misinformation? What could be gained by deception, and how much other material was being hidden behind the programs of the University of Alaska? The reports go on to describe the additional need for "rocket-borne instrumentation", discussion of which was also evaded in the responses by Heckscher to Alaskans inquiring about this project. A review of just one year's grants to the University of Alaska shows dozens of projects not "directly or formally" tied to HAARP, but forming complements of research which will undoubtedly further the program objectives 131. It was found that the military's public relations program was intended to minimize the significant factors regarding the technology, the interactivity of other projects and the real control and direction of the project. The records showed that HAARP was part of a global cooperative effort which included the USSR, Canada, Japan, Greenland, Norway, Finland, New Zealand and others[132]. NO HAARPer's questioned how much of what information was being shared with the countries uninvolved in the project, considering that all could be adversely affected by HAARP.

The University of Alaska Fairbanks is beginning to build a reputation as a leader in geophysical research and planetary system modeling. The Geophysical Institute will continue to attract researchers, but their biggest source of money is from federal governmental agencies tied to the military. The HAARP project is wholly controlled by the military, with the same warning signs around the facility as at other military installations throughout the country. The HAARP facility is a military facility. It seems the University is increasingly being "sidelined" on the project.

At this time, HAARP is "A congressionally initiated effort, HAARP is being managed cooperatively by the Air Force and Navy."133 HAARP is not a university research project; it is a "proof-of-concept" project for the military. A "proof-of-concept" project is one where advanced research experiments are designed to test, on generally a smaller scale, specific applications of research. These tests allow experimenters to extrapolate results which can then be used to engineer full size technology implementing systems. In other words, this is the step just before full weapon systems development.

The military carefully hid the interaction of the patents originally assigned to APTI and used in conceptualizing HAARP. These twelve patents are described in another chapter of this book, and show how the HAARP system will actually be used as a weapon. The risks associated with the system are also discussed. The most revealing document was one the government has kept in a very tight box - PL/GP Technical Memorandum No. 195. This document which explains the military

131 University of Alaska Fairbanks, Geophysical institute Summary of 1993/94 grants.

132 PL/GP Technical Memorandum No. 195; "Presentations from the HAARP Workshop on Ionospheric Heating Diagnostics, 30 April - 2 May 1991, Phillips Laboratory (AFSC), Hanscom AFB, MA. 01731-5000"; Editor, Major Drew Fisher; October 22,1991.

133 HAARP Fact Sheet, Office of Naval Research, Phillips Laboratory, November 4, 1993.

applications of the project was supposed to be sanitized before public release. This writer was fortunate in finding this document which was misplaced in a library; as shown in another chapter. This document most effectively dismantles the public relations disinformation put forward by the military.

Chapter Thirteen

STAR WARS - 'COMPANY' CONTROL

Companies involved in the HAARP project are both interesting and mysterious. The evolution of the HAARP contract is a story within this story.

Atlantic Richfield Company (ARCO) created a subsidiary called ARCO Power Technologies Incorporated (APTI) which was based in Washington, D.C. The company had reported annual sates of $5 million and had 25 employees as late as 1992.134 ARCO, the parent company, is the second largest private employer in Alaska, primarily involved in the North Slope oil fields where it controls trillions of cubic feet of natural gas and billions of barrels of oil. The natural gas on the North Slope has been reinjected into the earth rather than "flared" off or produced for use as it is in most other parts of the world. The gas has been reinjected in order to maintain oil field pressure for enhanced production while pumping up to two million barrels of crude oil a day out of the ground. No market for this natural gas currently exists, although a $20 billion pipeline remains on the drawing boards. Finding a market for the gas is in the interests of ARCO. The site where the HAARP project has been built is close to an already granted right-of-way for a future TransAlaska Gas Pipeline. All of the significant regulatory hurdles have been passed for constructing the gas line should markets be found.

HAARP at its present stage does not represent a high energy consumer in terms of input power. The first two phases of the project might not consume more than one to ten megawatts of power. In the future, however if the project continues to grow the way that project planners want it to or expands to involve other facilities, power demands would sharply increase. ARCO originally hoped to find a large consumer for their presently unmarketable natural gas. It was this market search which brought Dr. Eastlund together with ARCO in the mid 1980's, and his inventive genius gave birth to APTI.

Eventually ARCO was able to cluster twelve patents that would provide the basis for new markets for their North Slope natural gas. The possibility of not even having to transport the gas far from the source was an even more promising possibility - a possibility which would put ARCO in the Star Wars business.

How does a small subsidiary company like APTI get a military contract for such a project? The contract with APTI was more than five times the organization's projected annual sales [135]. We believe that the only way a virtually unknown company, in the military contracting environment, could get a contract like this is if they possessed proprietary information of use in the project (i.e., the twelve APTI patents). This fact was recently confirmed by Dr. Eastlund who was interviewed by Jeane Manning. He said APTI was formed a year after he made his discovery while under contract to ARCO to find a use for their gas. The company was formed to develop his patent by encouraging the military to test and eventually build

134 America's Corporate Families. 1993, Volume I, page 156.

135 Ibid.

the system. The military has continued to deny the connection between Eastlund, APTI and HAARP throughout the project. However, the three Eastlund patents were all assigned to APTI. 136 The other nine patents, according to the Patent Office records,

were also assigned to APTI by their inventors. This begins to unravel the disinformation spin of the HAARP planners. APTI won the contract to build HAARP, while bidding against an experienced government contractor with a strong success record - Raytheon. Raytheon was number 52 on the Fortune 500 list for 1993 and is one of the biggest defense contractors in the world. In the bid rating process with the military the only thing that APTI had going for it was a set of twelve compelling patents.

APTI's twelve patents are discussed in another chapter. These patents were used in the HAARP project and some of their inventors were listed as "key personnel" in the HAARP contract with APTI. Also, according to the contract if APTI switched any of the key personnel they could lose the entire project.

After the contract was awarded, APTI was sold to E-Systems of Dallas, Texas. The June 10, 1994 sale was transacted under undisclosed terms, APTI had shown no net income since it opened in the late 1980's, which made the sale particularly interesting. 137 It was reported that APTI was involved in research financed by government grants. E-Systems changed the name of the company to Advanced Power Technologies Incorporated, and assumed control of the patents and the HAARP project. 138 E-Systems reported annual sales of $1,9 billion a year, had 18,662 employees 139 (1992) and is one of the largest intelligence contractors in the United States. So why would E-Systems buy a company with no net income and no major assets except for the twelve patents and an unfunded second phase of a construction contract? The only real value was the contract, and the technology in the package of patents.

E-Systems was the subject of a lengthy article in the Washington Post by staff writer John Mintz. He disclosed that E-Systems' technologies were "part of the central nervous system for the nation's intelligence community." $1.8 billion of their $2.1 billion in sales was for classified projects. A large part of the projects came from the National Security Agency (NSA) and Central Intelligence Agency (CIA) and other intelligence organizations. Many of the company employees are former personnel from the NSA, CIA and military retirees. People with highly technical backgrounds and a history of working in government intelligence circles are hired by the company almost automatically, according to the Washington Post article. Retired Navy Admiral William Raborn, CIA director under Lyndon B. Johnson, for years served on the board of directors, 140

E-Systems was one of the featured stories in a CBS, 60 Minutes segment was aired February 26, 1995, The report echoed the assertions which were made in the

136 United States Patent Numbers 4686605; 4712155; 5038664.

137 "E-Systems Buys ARCO Power Technologies",The New York Times, June 30, 1994.

138 Ibid.

139 America's Corporate Families. 1993, Volume I, page 552.

140 The Secret's Out; Covert E-Systems Inc. Covets Commercial Sales", by John Mintz, Washington Post, October 24,1994, pg, A1, A10.

Washington Post article. The company was described as an organization operating in the "black world" - an area so secret that employees are not permitted by law to discuss anything about their work except with those individuals who have an official "need to know" classification. Of the company's annual sales, 85 percent was for classified work, with an estimated $800 million involved in projects so sensitive that the government denies that the projects even exist. The story went on to paint a picture of an organization which thrives on contracts issued by the CIA, NSA and military intelligence organizations.141

In the CBS, 60 Minutes segment, the secret relationship with the United States government was illustrated by describing one of E-Systems more public law suits. In the course of the law suit, a court order was issued which forbad the disclosure of E-Systems' classified relationship to the United States government. The most unusual part of the order was that none of the parties to the suit could even disclose that the order existed or that the government had even sought such an order. Even more revealing about this shadowy organization was that no one was allowed to have a copy of the document. They could only view it for a few moments in the United States Attorney's office. They were not allowed to take notes or in any way record their comments about the order, and they were forbidden from even talking about the existence of the document, under threat of incarceration. The order was so secret that even the judge could not have a copy of it, and could only view it upon special request. The secrecy of the document was appealed all the way to the United States Supreme Court where a ruling was issued which allowed the parties to talk about the order. Even now, nobody can get a copy of the document itself. 142

According to the E-Systems 1994 annual report to stockholders, their business mission is clear. "Our core business activities continue to be focused on intelligence, reconnaissance and surveillance." In the report they describe a number of their most promising prospects for increases in profits. They also describe the purchase of APTI from ARCO, although they do not indicate the amount paid. 143

The technologies that E-Systems developed are awesome. They include systems for law enforcement which can intercept faxed messages, telephone calls, modem transfers, and video transmissions on a single system in eavesdropping by the government. Their Global Positioning System (GPS) technologies (satellite based) can locate objects anywhere in the world within one foot of the object's actual location. The refitting of aircraft for border monitoring and defense purposes are also disclosed in the report. The company's operations are mostly hidden, and the annual reports seem to be one of the few sources for information on the organization. 144

As this book was in its final days of writing, another twist to the corporate tangle occurred. Raytheon Corporation bought out E-Systems for $2.3 billion. 145

141 "E-Systems", 60 Minutes, CBS News, N.Y, N.Y,, February 26,1995.

142 Ibid.

143 "E-Systems, Inc. Nineteen ninety-four Annual Report to Stockholders"; March 10,1995.

144 Ibid.

145 "Raytheon to Acquire E-Systems for $64 a Share, or $2.3 Billion; Offer is 41% Premium Over Friday's Close; Rival Bid is Unlikely" by Steven Lipin and Jeff Cote, The Wall Street Journal, April 3, 1995, pges A1, A3 and A16.

The entire E-Systems' board of directors were kept as advisors for five years with full pay. The article went on to describe the company's main activities as super secret projects operated out of the Pentagon. Raytheon's profits mostly came from their government contracts, according to the same article.

So who is Raytheon, and why would they acquire E-Systems? They are a $10 billion a year organization, ranked number 52 among the Fortune 500 with more than 60,000 employees. They were also one of the original bidders on the HAARP project, and now they have the patents and the Phase-Two contract on the project. Buying E-Systems will give Raytheon a significant increase in annual sales and cut competition in an environment of shrinking defense budgets. The combination of these two organizations' resources will create one of the most powerful intelligence contractors in the world. The systems that these companies can now develop, as a single organization, will make those old Jules Verne stories look like Mother Goose. Those little grains of information on E-Systems appearing in their annual reports will cease to exist, as their existence is buried in the depths of their new owner's corporate identity.

APT1, when it was owned by ARCO, was relatively easy to keep track of because it was small. The patent records and the data surrounding ownership could be traced. Its purchase by E-Systems raised eyebrows and began to mask the assets behind a clouded corporate structure. With the takeover, it seemed that the HAARP project would go into the black world of hidden programs. HAARP was now at the bottom of the sea of the corporate structure of one of the largest private companies in the world.

Besides their newly acquired HAARP contract, E-Systems had developed a number of other technologies. They have developed clustered computer networks called EMASS systems which can store five trillion pages of text - a file pile that would reach a hundred and fifty miles high - from the surface of the Earth right into the ionosphere. Their computer can sort data at lightning speed, and has applications in the oil industry for storing and sorting seismic information. 146 They also control once secret remote sensing equipment capable of mapping the Earth's underground formations. 147 These technologies, coupled with what APT1 brought together in their patents, formed an incredible technology package for one of the most profound weapon systems yet conceived. Could the marriage of technologies in these companies create the possibility of those types of uses contemplated in intelligence circles as necessary for the ultimate control of mankind through bloodless warfare and manipulation of mental functioning? E-Systems had amassed huge capabilities for the most secret organizations in the country, and had gained control of the HAARP technologies.

Now that it controls E-Systems and APT1 assets, Raytheon can develop even the most bizarre ideas of the military and intelligence communities. The integration of the patents, resources and capabilities into this huge organization can now produce even the most machiavellian dreams of "national security" thinkers...

146 "The Secret's Out: Covert E-Systems inc. Covets Commercial Sales", by John Mintz,Washington Post, October 24,1994, pg. A1, A10.

147 Ibid.

Chapter Fourteen

"THE PROJECT'S NOT CLASSIFIED."

The military representatives maintain that HAARP is not classified and that they are making all information available to the public. In April 1995, a document, PL/GP Technical Memorandum No. 195, came into the hands of this researcher, even though it was not supposed to be released to the public. 148 The document was developed from presentation notes and papers delivered at Hanscom Air Force Base between April 30, and May 1, 1991, and was 613 pages long. The meeting developed HAARP specifications, and provided insights into the hopes of project planners.

The military limited distribution of PL/GP Technical Memorandum No. 195. On page ii of the document, the "Preface" appears with notations:

"The PL/GP Technical Memorandum Series is intended to make results of PL (Phillips Laboratory) in-house scientific efforts rapidly available to specific groups and individuals known to have an immediate interest in the results obtained...A Technical Memorandum may not be referenced in the open literature; however, results presented therein may be referenced as 'private communication' with the written consent of the originating office."

This revealing paragraph explained how the government could say, in slick word games, that there was no record or that there was no published document available when one was requested. They considered the document a "private communication" of the sort that would not be readily available under a freedom of information request, In the "Foreword" (page iii), the intent to hide this important document became more clear,

"The report is intended for the use of the workshop attendees, PL (Phillips Laboratory), and ONR (Office of Naval Research)...The contents of the report is not available to the general public. Consequently, the appearance of any material herein does not constitute publication."

How do you print a pile of documents 613 pages thick, and say it "does not constitute publication"? "Non-published" material does not exist, so it will not be produced unlike a classified document which the government at least has to acknowledge is not available for release. This document's very existence could be denied and it would never be produced through normal channels. It becomes obvious, upon reading the document, why they did not want it out to the public. This particular document sort of kicked a few holes in the song and dance given by the government in the public meetings by program planners. We know there are additional Technical Memoranda on the project. Perhaps these other documents will come to light.

148 PL/GP Technical Memorandum No. 195; "Presentations from the HAARP Workshop on Ionospheric Heating Diagnostics, 30 April - 2 May 1991, Phillips Laboratory (AFSC), Hanscom AFB, MA. 01731-5000"; Editor, Major Drew Fisher; October 22,1991.

But what did the Technical Memorandum describe? First, a system of ionospheric heaters, as these radio transmitters are described by the government, was suspected by Begich and Manning to be networked in a web of cooperation which would allow for these devices to be used together. If these ionospheric heaters could be used in resonance (harmony) with each other, a significantly larger effect could be realized through their collective energies being focused at a point far above the Earth. This particular memorandum revealed that this was exactly what the military had intended. It was also obvious that the military had been working with the systems in the USSR as well as the West in recent years. We discovered mat the maps issued by the HAARP program managers neglected to list a number of transmitter sites around the world, including systems in Greenland, the South Pacific, Japan, and Europe (Eiscat) among others. The Technical Memorandum showed that this program would run a number of experiments together with these other transmitters and diagnostic tools.

The documents specified the need for powerful computers[149] and the need for rocket launching facilities 150. Upgrades to the Poker Flat Rocket Range were discussed at some length, and these upgrades were mostly made under separate funding. The military continued, even after this conference, to insist that the super-computing and launching facilities built near Fairbanks were really separate from HAARP but might be somehow, as kind of an afterthought, useful. These facilities were not just handy extras; they were required to make the project a complete program and were specified from the beginning. This is clear in the Technical Memorandum, but the military denied it.

A crucial point was diagramed in the documents[151] - three radio frequency transmitters were spaced several hundred kilometers apart with their energy focused on the same point in the ionosphere. This would allow a significant increase in power density, well over what was possible with just a single transmitter. The global shield concept envisioned by Eastlund began to make a lot more sense in light of these systems being used together. If these transmitters could be tuned in resonance (harmony) with each other, a very large effect could be obtained. If those positioned around the northern latitudes were turned on and tuned just so, they would energize a very large portion of the ionosphere, creating many of the effects described in the patents and sought by the military.

The use of the system for generating ELF signals was also well illustrated[152]. It was obvious that these ELF signals would be sent through the atmosphere and the lithosphere (upper portion of the earth itself) in order to communicate with sub-marines. These signals would pass through every living thing in the radiated areas which covered most of Alaska, Western Canada and possibly the

---

149 PL/GP Technical Memorandum No. 195; "Presentations from the HAARP Workshop on Ionospheric Heating Diagnostics, 30 April - 2 May 1991, Phillips Laboratory (AFSC), Hanscom AFB, MA. 01731-5000"; Editor, Major Drew Fisher, October 22,1991, page 55.

150 Ibid., pages 145-152.

151 Ibid., page 144.

152 Ibid., pages 256-261,

rest of the world, once a full shield of connected facilities is developed. These types of radiations and their effects on living organisms, including humans, are discussed in another section of this book. It is these specific ELF radiations which potentially have the most devastating effects on people and animals.

Another interesting section of the report[153] discusses the use of satellites controlled by the "Blackbeard Team" of the Los Alamos National Laboratory. "Blackbeard is a satellite RF experiment designed to study distortion and discrimination of transionospheric VLF signals originating from the earth." Blackbeard is part of the Alexis satellite. This was another very expensive project which was funded separately from HAARP. It should also be remembered that Los Alamos is the heart of some of the most secret defense systems in the world, including "nonlethal" RF radiation weapons which are explored in another chapter of this book.

The work of the Blackbeard Team was described, in part, in an article published in 1994.154 The article described "gamma ray flashes" emanating from some thunderstorms. These flashes were unusual in that they went up toward the ionosphere as opposed to down to the earth like most bolts of lightning. "A satellite launched last year to test ways to monitor nuclear blasts detected microsecond radio flashes, apparently linked to thunderstorms, that are 10,000 times more intense than the radio crackling such storms normally generate", was how one of the new discoveries was described in the article. These flashes can not be explained in terms of known science. They are extremely short in duration, which is why they were not detected years ago. The gamma rays themselves are found at over 30 - to 100 kilometers above the cloud tops. This new knowledge was later confirmed by further investigations conducted by the Geophysical Institute of the University of Alaska Fairbanks.

This latest discovery was unexpected, and demonstrates the general lack of knowledge about our upper atmosphere. It is more reason to worry about additional tampering planned by HAARP managers.

The entire unpublished report, PL/GP Technical Memorandum No. 195, lays open the project linkages for the directions of the HAARP program. Government research going back many years contributed to the perceived need for a more versatile controllable heater. Dr. Bernard Eastlund had the missing link through his patents which describe a system capable of packing unheard of power densities into the ionosphere, levels which could pierce the natural shield which protects us all from being bombarded by death delivering cosmic radiations. The possibilities presented in the other APTI controlled patents took Eastlund's basic concept forward toward applications predicted as early as the 1950's. It is doubtful that Eastlund understood the reach his device would have, or the state of the technologies which he helped to enhance with his invention. To the military, Dr. Eastlund was just an outsider unknown to military planners, and a person who was too open about his science. They took what they needed, through their research surrogates at APTI and within the University research centers, and moved forward without them.

153 Ibid, pages 352-355,
154 "Atmospheric Scientists Puzzle Over High-Altitude Flashes", Science, Vol 264, May 27, 1994, pages 1250-1251.

Chapter Fifteen

THE TWELVE PATENTS OF APTI TECHNICALLY TESLA

APTI held twelve patents, all of which were linked to Star Wars defense systems. APTI was the main contractor on the first phase of the HAARP project. These patents represented technologies which were inconsistent with the normal activities of ARCO, the parent organization of APTI. In ARCO's 1994 annual report, no mention of APTI OT the HAARP contract was found. Apparently ARCO was not in the kind of technology and military construction contracting business suggested by this technology. APTI was an anomalous subsidiary of ARCO, with ARCO having no real expertise, outside of APTI, for developing these kinds of patents.

This writer believes that ARCO did not want to be involved in the defense industry development of these patents. After all, they were just looking for a market for natural gas. Gas on the North Slope of Alaska was the issue for ARCO. The cost of a pipeline and related facilities needed to move the gas to southern Alaska was estimated at more than $20 billion, pricing the gas out of the market. So APTI acquired the twelve patents and a potentially lucrative market.

The patents originally held by APTI are described below.

United States Patent Number 4,686,605
Issued: August 11, 1987
Invented by: Bernard J. Eastlund
Titled; "Method and Apparatus for Altering a Region in the Earth's Atmosphere, Ionosphere, and/or Magnetosphere".

This patent was filed on January 10, 1985. On April 11, 1986, the Office of Naval Research Code 308 in Arlington, Virginia sealed the patent application under a "Secrecy Order" which forbade further work or any disclosure of information on the patent. This, no doubt, concerned Dr. Eastlund and APTI. 155 The order was a standard form letter stating provisions of the National Security Act that allowed the Defense Department to seal the information. The penalties for disobeying it were spelled out in the document, and included fines and long prison terms.

Patent examiner Salvatore Cangialosi of the U.S. Patent Office rejected the application on November 28, 1986. According to the Summary of Action, "Claims 1-38 are rejected under 35 U.S.C. 101 because the invention as disclosed is inoperative and therefore lacks utility."

On December 9, 1986 Dr. Eastlund and his attorney met with the patent examiner to discuss the rationale behind the decision to reject it. On January 14, 1987, an amendment was filed which reduced the number of claims and provided

155 United States Patent Office Master File 06/690,333 (SC/Serial Number) on Patent No. 4,686,605.

documentation to prove that the invention would work. The file notes say it was reviewed again in early February 1987. In late March, the Secrecy Order was lifted.

The Eastlund patent was different than technologies of ionospheric heaters already operating around the world. The first significant difference was the way the RF radiation was concentrated. The energy was focused to a point in the ionosphere, with a wide base of the energy at the transmitter site. The other antenna designs operating around the world radiated RF in the opposite way, so that it was like a cone with the point at the transmitter and the wide end in the ionosphere. In other words, the Eastlund invention concentrated the power in the ionosphere, while the others spread it out over an increasingly larger area as the energy moved further away from the transmitter. This difference allowed a significant concentration of energy into the ionosphere. The Eastlund device would allow a concentration of one watt per cubic centimeter, compared to others only able to deliver about one millionth of one watt.

This was a huge difference, which was "sufficient to cause movement of a plasma region along said diverging magnetic field lines to an altitude higher than the altitude at which said excitation was initiated."[156] What this means is that it would lift the ionosphere and alter its character in the ways necessary to create the effects described in the patent.

Eastlund further explained the effect of cyclotron resonance in building the power density over a large area of the ionosphere. The military would use this knowledge later in describing the "painting" of the ionosphere, which is why they wanted a system that would scan a fairly large area. They could, with this new technology, focus the energy and cover a large area for their effects.

Three publications cited in the patent formed the basis for the research into the technology. It was these references which sparked the original investigation which led to this book. The articles related to the work of Nikola Tesla in the early 1900's. The articles from the New York Times, December 8, 1915 and September 22, 1940, were quoted earlier in this book.

What would this technology be worth to ARCO? The profits they could generate by transmitting power from the point of production to the point of consumption without wires were enormous. Through normal powerline transmission this was not possible because of power losses over long distances. What wireless transfers of electrical energy could provide, with the right complement of equipment, could be astounding. Natural gas could be converted to transferable energy and literally beamed to wherever it needed to go. Between May, 1994, and April, 1995, no clear indications of this application for HAARP were found until the other patents listed in this section and the "key personnel" list for APTI was found and connected. In the articles referenced by Eastlund in his patent, was another patent of Tesla's (United States Patent 1,119,732). This patent led to several others which were related (787,412 and 685,956, among others). Some of these new APTI patents were exactly what was suspected - a wireless power transmission system.

---

[156] Amendment January 1987 to the original Patent Application of Bernard Eastlund for the subsequently issued Patent Number 4,686,605.

Patent number 4,686,605, issued August 11, 1987 to Bernard J, Eastlund and assigned to APTI, is one of three related patents by the same inventor cited in this chapter. These patents revisit and go beyond the technical applications envisioned by Tesla. We quote from Eastlund's patent:

"In the past several years, substantial effort has been made to understand and explain the phenomena involved in belts of trapped electrons and ions, and to explore the possible ways to control and use these phenomena for beneficial purposes. For example, in the late 1950's and early 1960's both the United States and the U.S.S.R. detonated a series of nuclear devices of various yields to generate large numbers of charged particles at various altitudes, e.g. 200 kilometers or greater."

"This can cause confusion of or interference with or even complete disruption of guidance systems employed by even the most sophisticated of airplanes and missiles. The ability to employ and transmit over very wide areas of the Earth a plurality of electromagnetic waves of varying frequencies and to change same at will in a random manner, provides a unique ability to interfere with all modes of communication, land, sea, and/or air, at the same time. Because of the unique juxtaposition of a usable fuel source at the point where desirable field lines intersect the Earth's surface, such wide ranging and complete communication interference can be achieved in a reasonably short period of time...Thus, this invention provides the ability to put unprecedented amounts of power in the Earth's atmosphere at strategic locations and to maintain the power injection level, particularly if random pulsing is employed, in a manner far more precise and better controlled than heretofore accomplished by the prior art, particularly by detonation of nuclear devices of various yields at various altitudes...Further, by knowing the frequencies of various electromagnetic beams employed in the practice of this invention it is possible not only to interfere with third party communications but to take advantage of one or more such beams to carry out a communications network even though the rest of the world's communications are disrupted. Put another way, what is used to disrupt another's communications can be employed by one knowledgeable of this invention as a communication network at the same time. In addition, once one's own communication network is established, the far reaching extent of the effects of this invention could be employed to pick up communication signals of others for intelligence purposes."

"This invention has a phenomenal variety of possible ramifications and potential future developments. As alluded to earlier, missile or aircraft destruction, deflection, or confusion could result, particularly when relativistic particles are employed. Also, large regions of the atmosphere could be lifted to an unexpectedly high altitude so that missiles encounter unexpected and unplanned drag forces with resultant destruction or deflection of same. Weather modification is possible by, for example, altering upper atmosphere wind patterns by constructing one or more plumes of atmospheric particles which will act as a lens or focusing device. Also as alluded to earlier, molecular modifications of the atmosphere can take place so that positive environmental effects can be achieved. Besides actually changing the molecular composition of an atmospheric region, a particular molecule or molecules can be chosen for increased presence. For example, ozone, nitrogen, etc., concentrations in the atmosphere could be artificially increased. Similarly, environmental enhancement could be achieved by causing the breakup of various chemical entities such as carbon dioxide, carbon monoxide, nitrous oxides, and the like."

While the HAARP device being constructed in Alaska at present may not be large enough to create all of these effects, it could test the ideas Dr. Eastlund expressed. The military denies that they are using any of the Eastlund ideas; however, careful review of the materials leads to the conclusion that the military is misleading the public. Moreover, Dr. Eastlund in a National Public Radio broadcast in 1988 reported that the military had tested some of the ideas presented in the patents.

United States Patent Number 5,038,664
Issued: August 13, 1991
Invented by: Bernard I. Eastlund
Titled: "Method for Producing a Shell of Relativistic Particles at an Altitude above the Earth's Surface".

In outlining the background of this invention in the patent, Dr. Eastlund describes the development of particle beam weapons for destroying incoming hostile missiles. The problem with particle beams is that they require perfect targeting so that the object could be hit and destroyed. The new invention eliminated the need for such precision, in that it created a literal "shell" of particles which would drift around the planet, destroying electrical components of objects passing through the "shell". According to the patent, "The shell so formed may be used as an antimissile shield. The high-energy, relativistic particles in the shell will collide with any missile passing therethrough to give up energy which, in turn, will damage or destroy the missile."

The power level described in the patent is extremely high, and the effects on the environment, and most particularly on the weather are unknown. What is known is that this type of power manipulation would significantly destabilize natural ionospheric systems.

Another important aspect of this invention is that it also requires large supplies of energy, and would have to be ctose to where the magnetic lines of force around the planet intersect the earth, The North Slope of Alaska is described as providing the ideal location.

United States Patent Number 4,712,155
Issued: December 8, 1987
Invented by: Bernard J. Eastlund and Simon Ramo.
Titled: "Method and Apparatus for Creating an Artificial Electron Cyclotron Heating Region of Plasma".

The same previously cited New York Times articles about Teste's work were referred to in this patent, with the same emphasis on the North Slope of Alaska being the ideal place. Alaska has the right amount of natural gas and is situated in the right place relative to the natural magnetic lines of force. This invention could be used in communication systems, and perhaps for energy transfers through the ionosphere, to be tapped off at distant points.

The three Eastlund patents represent the advances on which HAARP planners have hung their hats in putting forward the project.

* * *

United States Patent Number 5,068,669
Issued: November 26, 1991
Invented by: PeteT Koert and James T. Cha.
Titled; "Power Beaming System".

Peter Koert was listed as one of the key people on the HAARP project, in the government contract with APTI.157 Power beaming was a technology that Nikola Tesla had developed through his patent series referenced in Eastlund's work. The idea that Peter Koert would become a key person to the HAARP program made a good deal of sense, considering his expertise in power beaming technologies.

This "Star Wars" technology developed by ARCO Power Technologies, Incorporated was used in a microwave-powered aircraft. The aircraft was reported to be able to stay aloft for up to 10,000 hours at 80,000 foot altitudes in a single mission. This craft was envisioned as a surveillance platform. The craft had no need for refueling because the energy was beamed to it and then converted to electrical energy for use by the aircraft. Flight tests were undertaken at Tyendinga Airport near Kingston, Ontario, Canada in the early 1990's.l58 This test by APT1 most likely involved this patent and patent number 5,218,374 which is described in this chapter.

According to the patent, "The present invention relates in general to the transfer of energy by means of electromagnetic waves to power a remote device. More specifically, the present invention relates to a system for 'power beaming' energy from a source at high frequencies and rectifying such energy to provide a source of DC energy to a remote device." The patent went on to describe the attempts over the years to create a device which could be used and was practical. The background section states, "...the concept of powering a satellite or free flying aircraft by power beaming has received a great deaf of attention. The advantages of such a system are readily apparent, for example, an aircraft could be maintained on station indefinitely to act as a low cost communications or reconnaissance platform."

The idea is to convert microwaves to DC power, which can be done very efficiently and cost effectively with the right kind of transmission system capable of

157 Office of Naval Research, Contract Number N00014-92-C-0210, ARCO Power Technologies Incorporated as Contractors, September 16,1992 with Amendments through October 19,1993.

158 Aviation Week, Volume 135, No, 22.

focusing the power into a narrow beam. The HAARP system provides a very effective means of transferring such power at maximum efficiency. Within the patent, the use of the term "gyrotron" appears. It refers to cyclotron resonance, a concept and primary part of the Eastlund patents and an attribute of the HAARP transmitter, according to the government records.

This technology has already been tested by APTI.

United States Patent Number 5,218,374
Issued: June 8, 1993
Invented by. Peter Koert and James T. Cha.
Titled: "Power Beaming System with Printed Circuit Radiating Elements having Resonating Cavities".

Again, Peter Koert was listed as one of the key people assigned to the HAARP project by APTI, according to the government contract. 159 Also important to note in this patent and the previous one, is the mention of NASA report No. CR179558, March 11, 1987 by William C. Brown of Raytheon Company. Raytheon did the basic work leading to this patent. William C. Brown is now at the University of Alaska Fairbanks where he is continuing the development of these technologies, His current project at UAF is called SABER which is an acronym for "Semi-Autonomous Beam Rider". The concept is to beam radio-frequency energy to a helicopter in order to suspend it in the air without an on-board fuel supply. The project "is intended to promote public interest and understanding concerning microwave power transmission." 160

The system to be used by Brown in the wireless transmission of energy to power the craft will be from a 2,45 GHz beam. This will complete a series of tests which he started in 1965. The transmission, and conversion, of this energy is now possible via the APTI patents and HAARP.

Raytheon, Brown's old employer and the new owner of the APTI patents, was one of three bidders on the HAARP project. Eventually, through a series of corporate buyouts, Raytheon would come to own all of the patents described in this chapter as well as the contract for the second phase of HAARP construction.

In the patent it was made clear that this was "a continuation-in-part" of the previous patent by Koert and Cha. This patent describes a system for converting radiofrequency (RF) radiation into DC power using a "cross dipole antenna" which is to be used to receive the RF energy before conversion to DC. This patent carries the power-beaming ideas further, to the point where they can be used. Previously such systems were impractical because of technical limitations.

159 Office of Naval Research, Contract Number N00014-92-C-0210, ARCO Power Technologies Incorporated as Contractors, September 16,1992 with Amendments through October 19,1993.

160 Internet copy obtained from http://asgp.uafsoe.alaska.edu/saber.html.

* * *

United States Patent Number 5,293,176
Issued: March 8, 1994
Invented by: Paul G. Elliot.
Titled: "Folded Cross Grid Dipole Antenna Element".

Although it is unknown whether this particular patent was used in the HAARP program, what is known is that the inventor, Paul Elliot, was part of the team identified in the government documents. He obviously brought to the project a high level of knowledge of antenna arrays and related technology. It is not known whether this antenna was intended to be used for sending energy, receiving power or both. This technology is useful in power-beaming systems as well as the other applications described in other patents in this chapter.

We speculate that this antenna provided a more efficient system of energy transfer for use in the Eastlund applications. It is possible that, with the antenna gain realized by this design, a larger amount of power could be sent up to the ionosphere. This might be possible from a much smaller antenna field than originally contemplated by Eastlund.

* * *

United States Patent Number 5,202,689
Issued: April 13, 1993
Invented by: Robert W. Bussard and Thomas H. Wallace.
Titled: "Lightweight Focusing Reflector For Space".

The reflector is intended to complement power-beaming systems previously described in this chapter. According to the patent, "Large reflectors have many important applications in space. Reflectors can be used, for example, to reflect sunlight onto a solar collector or redirect a microwave power beam." The system for the power-beaming described in this patent was designed for sending 10 gigawatts of power.

The transmitting, reflecting and receiving system is massive, and the cost of building and using such a system is immense. However, according to the patent,

"The instant invention can be used to transmit power less expensively than the use of microwaves within the Earth's atmosphere. It is expected that as the cost of deploying equipment in space decreases, the cost of using the instant invention to transmit power will become lower than the cost of transmitting power using conventional transmission lines. A cost analysis has been performed using cost projections for the 2000 to 2010 time frame. This cost analysis suggests that a principle limiting factor is efficiency and the cost of the radio frequency sources, not the cost of fabricating and launching the reflector."

The HAARP radiofrequency transmitter, using a focused beam, largely addresses the transmitter-limiting factors described in the patent.

The patent goes on to describe the idea of generating energy in locations where it is cheap, and beaming it to areas where energy costs are high. The economic viability is shown, although the size of the project is quite targe. The construction of the TransAlaska natural gas pipeline has been estimated at over $20 billion dollars, without considering the costs of special ships, off loading facilities and then power generating plants in addition to operating costs. To produce energy at the source and redirect the capital costs of alternate systems to power beaming systems would likely be economically feasible. However, there would be a significant risk to anything flying in the path of the ten-gigawatt beam or if the reflector was somehow turned, reflecting the energy into the wrong receiving location and into perhaps a populated area. This risk is not adequately dealt with in the patent.

* * *

United States Patent Number 5,041,834
Issued: August 20, 1991
Invented by: Peter Koert.
Titled: "Artificial Ionospheric Mirror Composed of a Plasma Layer Which can be Tilted".

The expertise that Peter Koert brought to the HAARP project is most evident in this application. This application was scheduled to be tested in September, 1995. This test will be done using both HAARP and HIPAS transmitters. The Artificial Ionospheric Mirror, or AIM as it is referred to in the government records, will be very useful to the military. This patent also refers to two of the Eastlund patents 161.

This invention creates an Artificial Ionospheric Mirror (AIM) by creating a plasma layer in the ionosphere which will allow a transmitting station to bounce radiofrequency energy off of the AIM for a variety of uses. This invention provides "over-the-horizon" radar and communication capabilities to the military, over great distances. It will allow the military to send communications, and locate incoming objects, with significantly improved control and efficiency. In early HAARP planning, this was one of the areas considered very important to the program and was referred to with great enthusiasm by the military.

* * *

United States Patent Number 4,999,637
Issued: March 12, 1991
Invented by: Ronald M. Bass.
Titled: "Creation of Artificial Ionization Clouds Above the Earth".

161 Eastlund Patent Numbers 4,686,605 and 4,712,155.

This invention also drew from the Eastlund patents[162] which were cited in the issued patent document. This is similar to the previous invention, but it uses two antenna systems which send energy to the same point, thus creating, by a complex set of ionospheric interactions, a "plasma cloud". The cloud can also be made with one antenna. The cloud is created with minimum energy, and allows a much improved "over-the-horizon" (OTH) radar system in terms of detection of both far out and close in objects.

An interesting part of the OTH radar system that HAARP, in part, represents is that the HAARP transmitter is sitting on the incomplete construction site of the original OTH radar system funded by the United States Congress. The site was being demobilized because the military suggested that with the Cold War ending it was no longer needed.

It appears that the reason that the old OTH system was abandoned was because it was obsolete - based on this new technology. The OTH radar project never ended at this location; it just changed to a much more versatile multi-use tool, the HAARP transmitter. Another consideration was that to build a HAARP radiofrequency transmitting system was much quicker and cost effective.

United States Patent Number 4,954,709
Issued: September 4, 1990
Invented by: Arie Zigler, Yossef Elsen from Rishon Le Zion, Israel.
Titled: "High Resolution Directional Gamma Ray Detector".

This device was designed to work with some of the other patents. It is intended to distinguish the "signature" (the unique characteristics of the object which allow it to be identified at a distance) of incoming airborne objects to determine if they are carrying nuclear devices, among other things. The device allows an operator to see the direction of the incoming objects by screening out the directions which are of no concern. In the words of the patent,

"The present invention relates to gamma ray detection. More specifically, the present invention is related to light weight directional gamma ray detectors having a high degree of angular resolution, high efficiency, and an ability to discriminate low energy gamma rays."

The invention is-able to operate effectively in areas which have a "large number of low energy background gamma rays." Gamma ray detection of this type is required in order to operate the system in the patent described below. It is also of use in other technologies described in this chapter. Gamma ray detection tells an operator a great deal about an incoming object, and is particularly useful in identifying objects carrying nuclear warheads.

---

[162] Eastlund Patent Numbers 4,686,605 and 4,712,155.

* * *

United States Patent Number 4,817,495
Issued: April 4, 1989
Invented by: Adam T. Drobot.
Titled: "Defense System for Discriminating Between Objects in Space".

This patent refers to Eastlund's earlier patent number 4,686,605 as well as other documents about "Particle Beam Weapons" and "Space-Based Ballistic-Missile Defense" systems more commonly refer-red to as Star Wars systems. This invention is intended to work with gamma ray detectors and was described as;

"A defense system and a method for discriminating between armed reentry vehicles and unarmed objects which are in close proximity of each other. The reentry vehicles and the unarmed objects are bathed in a cloud of relativistic electrons with the resulting signatures from heavy objects, i.e., reentry vehicles, being imaged directly. Detectors sense the location and identity of the reentry vehicles and pass this information onto a weapons platform for tracking and interception."

In reading this, we are tinked back to other patents described in this chapter, and can see how these varied uses of Eastlund's original ideas will have far-reaching effects on the way in which wars are fought.

The importance of this invention to the military is described in the patent;

"Presently, the expected scenario for any large-scale intercontinental ballistic missile attack includes the deployment of a large number of decoys and penetration aids in a 'threat cloud' around one or more armed, reentry vehicles in an attempt to confuse any defense systems set up to counteract the armed missiles...Since the total number of objects expected in a typical threat cloud may well exceed one hundred thousand, any truly effective defense system must include a system which is capable of 'interrogating' all of the objects in the threat cloud and quickly discriminating between the deadly reentry vehicles and harmless decoys and penetration aids."

Also in the patent emphasis is placed on the value of a ground-based system as opposed to other Star Wars systems which rely heavily on earth-orbiting space hardware. Space borne systems are not as easy to maintain, and more easily disabled by adversaries. This invention reduces the computing needs of defense systems significantly. Reducing the number of tracked objects to just those which are a real threat allows for targeting resources and counter measures to be focused on them specifically.

The ideal location for this system is also identified as the North Slope of Alaska, the most likely path for over the pole nuclear missiles. It is also where the large gas reserves could be used to create the necessary radiofrequency radiation transmitting system. The same magnetohydrodynamic generators mentioned by Eastlund are mentioned, along with the same type of antenna arrays. The patent describes the concept in the same general way that Eastlund did, but defines how the defense components would interact with the system most efficiently.

Another application of this technology is described;

"While the present invention has been described for discriminating between armed and unarmed vehicles in a threat cloud during an impending attack, it can also be employed to 'interrogate' orbiting satellites to determine if any said satellites may be carrying nuclear weapons for future launch. Again, a cloud of relativisiic electrons would be created around the satellite of interest for interaction therewith to produce a signature from that satellite which, when analyzed, would reveal the nature of the materials contained in the satellite."

This invention is demonstrated, in prototype form, by the HAARP project. HAARP can be used in this way, and is intended to be used for this purpose,

* * *

United States Patent Number 4,873,928
Issued: October 17, 1989
Invented by: Frank E. Lowther.
Titled: "Nuclear-Sized Explosions without Radiation".

This device was designed for "producing explosions from an explosive gas mixture which has a shock yield comparable to a nuclear explosion, but one which produces no radioactive fallout."

The patent described the background of the invention.

"Between 1945 and 1960, the United States exploded nuclear devices which had a total yield equivalent to approximately 200 megatons (MT) of trinitrotoluene (TNT). Tests conducted by other countries during this time brought the total yield of nuclear explosions to approximately 400 MT. It was quickly recognized that such testing could not continue since each nuclear explosion produced radioactivity that seriously threatened the environment. To protect the environment from such radioactive fallout, most of the world's nuclear powers signed the Nuclear Test Ban Treaty in 1963 which prohibited nuclear explosions in the atmosphere, underwater, and in space..."

"The necessary prohibition against above-ground testing of nuclear explosives, however, has created situations where alternates to such explosions are needed. For example, all of the sophisticated communication systems, defense systems, weapons systems, etc. that have been designed and built for the military since 1963 have never been tested in their ultimate operating environments, i.e. under nuclear blast conditions...Radiation dosages and electromagnetic pulses which simulate those from nuclear explosions have been produced in shielded laboratories but the extreme shock energies which can be expected from nuclear explosions, e.g. 1 kiloton (KT) or larger, have not been satisfactorily duplicated..."

So, APTI filled another technological void for military planners by developing a way to test the effects of a nuclear sized shock wave's impact on the electronics of defense systems. The invention side steps the treaties on nuclear testing in the atmosphere which allow the military the opportunity to test their hardware without violating these international agreements. As far as is known, this particular invention is not part of the HAARP program but is the last of the APTI patents.

The ideal location of this invention, like the others, was identified in the patent as the North Slope of Alaska.

"Preferably, the combustible gas is one that is naturally available in large quantities and is one that can easily and safely be transported to the test site. For example, large quantities of natural gas, i.e. ,methane, are readily available in several geographical areas. Especially attractive are the huge quantities of methane in the North Slope area of Alaska, since there are remote areas nearby which are suitable as a test site. The methane can be produced and safely transported to the test site by a common pipeline. However, the test site does not have to be in close proximity to the methane production area since the methane can be gathered and safely pipelined for long distances as is now commonly done in supplying energy to areas remote from the production area."

The idea of using the North Slope for nuclear sized weapons testing is not new. It is a myth that the North Slope is some big wasteland suitable only for creating craters with nuclear-size devices. This is home for about 8,000 Alaska natives, and has been for thousands of years. This area also supports significant animal life which the United States has decided to preserve by carefully regulating development, but the balance is delicate. In the authors' opinion, the North Slope is not the place for explosions of the size contemplated in this patent.

Chapter Sixteen

TURNING ON A BILLION WATTS

The actual HAARP instrument - the "ionospheric heater", as it is described by the military was designed as a modular unit so that it could be increased in size fully utilizing all previously constructed parts. In other words, they could make it bigger and bigger without abandoning the parts already installed. The "proof-of-concept" stage of the program could change smoothly to a full weapon system phase. Moreover, the entire system could be relocated anywhere in the world in a few months time.

This is an important factor in enlarging or relocating the facility. The first phase of the HAARP heater construction is completed and began testing in December, 1994, with testing scheduled through 1995. The second phase of the contract is set up to increase the power thresholds of the heater several times. Phase one of the project will yield an effective radiated power of one gigawatt, according to the records, with the second phase of the project having an effective-radiated-power of "at least lOOdbW", which is equal to 10 billion watts of power. 163 This concept was illustrated by Princeton, New Jersey, physicist, Dr. Richard Williams. While commenting on the HAARP project he said,

"My main abjection to HAARP is that they intend to dump electromagnetic radiation into the upper atmosphere at very high power levels...The radiated power level will be between '90 dbW and 100 dbW'...They refer at one point to the need to go 'at least' 100 dbW, One way to visualize this power level is that a 10-billion watt generator, running continuously for one hour, would deliver a quantity of energy equal to that of a Hiroshima-size atomic bomb. "164

This is a significant amount of energy, when beamed into a dynamic portion of the planet's upper atmosphere in order to create artificially controlled high energy interactions.

In the most elusive document, the future hope of the program planners was shown to be on the order of 100 gigawatts (100 billion watts) of effective radiated power. 165 This is futuristic because power sources are not available at this location to provide the required input power to gain this output.

The effective-radiated-power, in a focused beam, which HAARP produces can be modulated in a number of ways, giving the operator an incredibly versatile weapon. The versatility of the system is disclosed in both the APTI patents and other government documents.

163 HAARP HF Active Auroral Research Program, Joint Program Plans and Activities, Air Force Geophysics Laboratory, Navy Office of Naval Research, February 1990,

164 Letter to Ryan Ross, Natural Resources News Service from Dr. Richard Williams, Physicist, Princeton University. November 7, 1994.

165 PL/GP Technical Memorandum No. 195; "Presentations from the HAARP Workshop on Ionospheric Heating Diagnostics, 30 April - 2 May 1991, Phillips Laboratory (AFSC), Hanscom AFB, MA. 01731-5000"; Editor, Major Drew Fisher; October 22, 1991.

There has always been some confusion on the part of many HAARP opponents over the power used in the HAARP "heater". The government explained this as, "a difference between 'total radiated power' and 'effective radiated power' (ERP). That difference is antenna gain, which in HAARP's case is a factor of nearly 1000 (at 10 MHz)."166 What this means is that to get to one gigawatt of output requires one megawatt of input power which can be delivered by the on-site generators. Another way to state this would be: one megawatt of input power is equal to one million watts, multiplied by one thousand (antenna gain). This will yield one billion watts of effective radiated power - one gigawatt.

1 megawatt x 1000 = 1 gigawatt = 1 billion watts ERP

---

166 Letter From John Heckscher, HAARP Program Manager, Department of the Air Force, Phillips Laboratory, to Dr. Arther Grey, Secretary, Spectrum planning Subcommittee, National Telecommunications Information Administration, United States Department of Commerce, November 17,1994.

Chapter Seventeen

NUCLEAR EXCAVATION CREATING THE BAY

The University of Alaska, Fairbanks, in its zeal for recognition as a leader in geophysics and engineering, has a marred history. "Project Chariot" was a program proposed as part of "Project Plowshare" which was designed to find peaceful uses for nuclear energy. This project was researched by Dan O'Neill and reported in his 1994 book, The Firecracker Boys. The project was promoted by the Lawrence Radiation Laboratory, which planned to detonate six thermonuclear bombs underground to excavate a harbor at Cape Thompson, Alaska. The plan of the project organizers was that if this application of nuclear technology could be tested on United States soil these technologies could be easily promoted in other friendly countries, This would enable, for example, easy excavation of a new Suez or Panama Canal, both of which were in the minds of program planners. Project Plowshare was another Jules Verne story which was only too true.

The idea that a few activists could stop these types of experiments, even during the peak of the "Cold War", was amazing. Equally outstanding are the ongoing efforts of "NO HAARP' members in slowing and perhaps preventing the environmental vandalism contemplated by these new military planners.

Is the HAARP project another error in the judgment of the military, using the University and others in Alaska? Are they playing with the same incredible level of power that Edward Teller tried to sell Alaska in the past with Project Plowshare? Dr. Teller returned to Alaska in 1987 to promote the Star Wars defense initiative. He was proposing to install a laser-like weapon on the North Slope of Alaska, These new system details were not openly discussed, because "Star Wars" systems are classified. From the tone, and content, of his presentations however, we deduce that what he was promoting in 1987 may have been a new and complex weapon system the HAARP project.

When Dr. Bernard Eastlund, the inventor of much of the innovative HAARP technology, described his ideas they sounded a lot like Star Wars. He said his invention would allow many of the same effects achieved with satellite deployed systems, but from the ground. The use of ground, rather than satellite systems, was explained by Eastlund in a recent interview when he said, "In other words, you radiate energy up there in such a way that you accelerate the electrons without using a machine up there. That's the advantage" 167. This allows steering, focusing, modulating, and otherwise manipulating, to the will of the operator, provided the operator knows the frequencies and wave forms necessary to change the electromagnetic structure of ionospheric chemicals and conditions. The ability to manipulate the ionosphere is critical to a planetary shield, which was one of the applications defined by Dr. Eastlund and referred to in his, and the other, patents assigned to APTI.

167 Interview with Dr. Eastlund by Jeane Manning, February 20,1995.

The advantage of a ground based system is its limited vulnerability to attack. To position a ground based Star Wars system within the United States would mean that a country wishing to destroy it would have to enter the territory of the United States, which would be an overt act of war. The use of this system will have possible ramifications throughout the world. Those transmitters already operating have been reported by some to have had negative effects beyond the borders of the countries using them. 168,169 Even though firing up these new heaters would violate the interests of the majority of humans on the planet, by impinging on internationally recognized free spaces, the project moves forward in the interest of "science" and one country's "national security". At whose expense, and under whose control, is the naturally occurring global shield - the ionosphere - being vandalized?

Eastlund went on to talk about his patents and what he envisioned by putting so much energy into the ionosphere. He discussed creating a "mirror" and bouncing radio waves off of it in order to gain a number of effects. These are the same effects described in the February 1990 HAARP document[170] put out by the military and in a later 1991 report buried by theml71. In these two reports they disclosed the development of an "Artificial Ionospheric Mirror (AIM)". In fact, a careful reading of the Eastlund patents and the nine other patents uncovered in our research and the HAARP Documents read as though they were written by the same person. As Eastlund said, "If you read my patent, one of the things I do is put a burst up and make the mirror, and there's a way of doing a lot of things with a ground-based system. At the time, SDI (Strategic Defense Initiative, Star Wars) was a very big program. Everybody wanted to put things up in space to do these things; this was a real alternative approach to it, a ground based system." 172

Dr. Eastlund's system was Star Wars without the vulnerability of satellites, but with a lot of other implications. In August 1991, Peter Koert was granted a patent for a system which could produce an Artificial Ionospheric Mirror composed of a plasma layer which could be tilted. In his patent he cites the earlier work of Dr. Eastlund. 173 Koert was also one of the "key personnel" identified in the contracts between APTI and the United States military for building the HAARP transmitter. 174 The HAARP system provides a "proof-of-concept" system for demonstrating this technology. The patent issued to Koert was one of several of his patents useful to the HAARP project, all of which were assigned to APTI, as shown in the United States government's own records.

In February, 1995, the Star Wars missile defense shield was supposed to be dead. The United States House of Representatives by a 218 to 212 voted to kill the

168 Scorched Earth: The Military's Assault on the Environment, by William Thomas, New Society Publishers, Chapter 11.

169 Super-Memory: The Revolution, by Sheila Ostrander and Lynn Schroeder, pages 292-304.

170 HAARP HF Active Auroral Research Program, Joint Program Plans and Activities, Air Force Geophysics Laboratory, Navy Office of Naval Research, February 1990.

171 PL/GP Technical Memorandum No. 195; "Presentations from the HAARP Workshop on Ionospheric Heating Diagnostics, 30 April - 2 May 1991, Phillips Laboratory (AFSC), Hanscom AFB, MA. 01731-5000"; Editor, Major Drew Fisher; October 22,1991.

172 Interview with Dr. Eastlund by Jeane Manning, February 20,1995.

173 United States Patent Number 5,041,834.

174 Office of Naval Research Contract Number N00014-92-C-0210.

program.175 Yet HAARP continues on while the motives of the military are hidden from the world.

In 1962, Project Plowshare was stopped because the project was identified as too risky and unnecessary. It was discontinued because the scientists were able to conduct their "proof-of-concept" experiments in Nevada (where objections were not presented by the populace, and the damage not disclosed by the government until decades later). It was also finally admitted by the government that these uses were unsafe and had to be cast aside, in the end, as international disarmament talks conducted through the 1960's and 1970"s. So ended the concept of nuclear excavation and Dr. Teller's "safe" use of nuclear energy. Perhaps its time we took a harder look at HAARP?

175 GOP's Military Revamp Stumbles on 'Star Wars', by David Hess, Knight-Ridder Newspapers, reported in the Anchorage Daily News, February 16,1995, pg. A3.

Chapter Eighteen

THERMONUCLEAR WEAPONS REPLACED BY ELECTROPULSE

Patent number 4,686,605, issued August 11, 1987 to Bernard J. Eastlund and assigned to APTI. is one of three related patents by the same inventor. The primary patent, once demonstrated to be effective to the satisfaction of the patent examiner, was sealed under a National Security Order for a year in the late 1980's. The patent is quoted as follows:

"In the past several years, substantial effort has been made to understand and explain the phenomena involved In belts of trapped electrons and ions, and to explore the possible ways to control and use these phenomena for beneficial purposes. For example, in the late 1950's and early 1960's both the United States and the U.S.S.R. detonated a series of nuclear devices of various yields to generate large numbers of charged particles at various altitudes, e.g. 200 kilometers or greater." 176

The Eastlund patented technology effectively replaced the electromagnetic pulse effects which were previously created by atmospheric thermonuclear detonations. This particular Eastlund ionospheric heater application took the concept to a new level of control and manipulation not previously possible. To gain the ability to "control" the processes with a non-radioactive producing technology is viewed as highly favorable for military planners. Radio frequency radiation (RFR) can produce negative health effects, the mechanism by which these effects occur is not well understood enough to raise the same level of concerns as thermonuclear fallout eventually did. However, the effects of RFR can have serious health consequences as indicated in numerous studies conducted by the military. These health effects have never been adequately disclosed to the American public or international community by the HAARP project planners.

The Eastlund patent went on;

"This can cause confusion of or interference with or even complete disruption of guidance systems employed by even the most sophisticated of airplanes and missiles. The ability to employ and transmit over very wide areas of the earth a plurality of electromagnetic waves of varying frequencies and to change same at will in a random manner, provides a unique ability to interfere with all modes of communication, land, sea, and/or air, at the same time. Because of the unique juxtaposition of usable fuel source at the point where desirable field lines intersect the earth's surface, such wide ranging and complete communication interference can be achieved in a reasonably short period of time...Thus, this invention provides the ability to put unprecedented amounts of power in the earth's atmosphere at strategic locations and to maintain the power injection level, particularly if random pulsing is employed, in a manner far more precise and better controlled than heretofore accomplished by the prior art, particularly by detonation of nuclear devices of

176 U.S. Patent #4,686,605.

various yields at various altitudes...Further, by knowing the frequencies of various electromagnetic beams employed in the practice of this invention it is possible not only to interfere with third party communications but to take advantage of one or more such beams to carry out a communications network even though the rest of the world's communications are disrupted. Put another way, what is used to disrupt another's communications can be employed by one knowledgeable of this invention as a communication network at the same time. In addition, once one's own communication network is established, the far-reaching extent of the effects of this invention could be employed to pick up communication signals of others for intelligence purposes." 177

"This invention has a phenomenal variety of possible ramifications and potential future developments. As alluded to earlier, missile or aircraft destruction, deflection, or confusion could result, particularly when relativistic particles are employed. Also, large regions of the atmosphere could be lifted to an unexpectedly high altitude so that missiles encounter unexpected and unplanned drag forces with resultant destruction or deflection of same. Weather modification is possible by, for example, altering upper atmosphere wind patterns by constructing one or more plumes of atmospheric particles which will act as a lens or focusing device. "178

It should be pointed out that the device invented by Eastlund would be ideally employed where there were large sources of natural gas and that it had to be erected in the most northern latitudes possible, to take advantage of the location where the earth's naturally occurring lines of force intersect the planet. In the patents, he recommended the North Slope of Alaska, where the largest reserves of natural gas in the United States are found and where these lines intersect the planet. Moreover, Atlantic Richfield Company (ARCO) was the parent company of APTI, the assigned owner of the Eastlund patents, and the owner of trillions of cubic feet of natural gas on the North Slope. 179 APTI became the initial HAARP contractor.

In 1987 Dr. Edward Teller described a new component of Star Wars technology, a laser like weapon for the North Slope of Alaska. Could HAARP be part of the Star Wars weapons system being promoted in 1987 by Dr. Teller? We believe that this is the case, and that what HAARP represents is a first stage "proof-of-concept" undertaking which, if proven valid, will expand to a full-blown military program. The idea of a ground-based versus a satellite-based defense shield is an important consideration in that satellites arc significantly more vulnerable and costly to repair once launched into orbit. Moreover, to stop a United States ground based system would require a terrorist attack or invasion. That would be an overt act of war on the part of an adversary. If deployed from ground based locations in the United States, or within the territorial boundaries of our allies, the shield has distinct military advantages.

While the currently constructed and planned future expansion of HAARP may not be large enough to create all of the Eastlund effects, it is of sufficient size to

177 U.S. Patent #4,686,605.

178 Ibid,

179 United States Patent No. 4,686,605 issued August 11, 1987 to Bernard J. Eastlund and assigned to APTI, Inc.

test many of the ideas in the patents. 180 Military spokesmen deny that they are using any of the Eastlund ideas; however, careful review of the materials lead to the inescapable conclusion that the military is misleading the public again. Moreover, it was reported by Dr. Eastlund in a National Public Radio broadcast in 1988181 that the military had tested some of the ideas in the patents before removing the secrecy orders. In a more recent interview, this fact was again confirmed by Dr. Eastlund. 182 A review of the other nine patents originally held by APTI, when overlain on the military planning documents, leaves researchers with an understanding of this new weapon system experiment - clearly countering the military's public pronouncements.

Going back to 1984, the United States Air Force's Major Norman H. Ruotanen, wrote a paper which became a chapter in a most interesting publication. "Nuclear and Electromagnetic Warfare in Low-Intensity Conflict". The chapter considered the use of nuclear weapons for creating electromagnetic pulses (EMP) in order to disable electronic systems of adversaries. The Major went on to discuss a less intrusive method and perhaps a method which could be better controlled. He describes the system:

"Nuclear EMP devices are not the only way to create damaging electromagnetic pulses. Electrical power supply, power conditioning, and microwave source device technologies have advanced to the point where one could feasibly generate electromagnetic pulses in the radio frequency regime by conventional means that are powerful enough to disrupt, damage, or destroy systems utilizing the highly susceptible electrical components. "183

"A conventional EMP weapon would somewhat resemble a very powerful radar system. It could be deployed on a space platform, in an aircraft, or on a truck or ship. Unlike the nuclear EMP devices that illuminate large areas with damaging EMP, the conventional system would be used against specific point targets. At long ranges, the EMP could disrupt or upset target electrical systems. At closer ranges, electrical components in the target would be burned out and permanently damaged. Both aggressor and the defender in the low-intensity conflict would have many uses for such conventional EMP weapons. This type of electromagnetic warfare is quite bloodless and, therefore, quite appealing when international opinions are considered...Although this electromagnetic warfare is a relatively benign form of combat that generally kills systems, not people, some antipersonnel applications are currently being considered, such as the use of the very powerful microwave devices to confuse, disable, or even kill the enemy. The use of these advancing technologies for intelligence gathering, disinformation, and enemy interrogation is even speculated.. "184

The military planners and strategists of the early-to-middle 1980's were

---

180 Interview with Dr. Eastlund by Jeane Manning, February 20,1995.

181 Interview with Dr. Eastlund by National Pubic Radio, 1988.

182 Interview with Dr. Eastlund by Jeane Manning, February 20, 1995.

183 Low-Intensity Conflict and Modern Technology, Lt Col. David J. Dean USAF, Editor, Air University Press, Center for Aerospace Doctrine, Research, and Education, Maxwell Air Force Base, Alabama, June 1986.

184 Ibid. pages 245-246.

convinced of the long predicted possibilities of radio frequency radiation weapons systems. Given this interest, it becomes obvious why the military was so quick to develop the Eastlund technology. His ideas were the missing link which stimulated the series of other patents needed for the HAARP program. The HAARP system, with its collection of technological breakthroughs, would provide a tool for performing its disruptive tasks over a wide geographical area and perhaps eventually over the entire planet.

Obviously these concepts were already well understood by the military in 1984, The HAARP system is the largest concept-delivery system ever built by the military for this technology. The use of HAARP for these applications is spoken about throughout the government records, excluding the uses against humans. This is where the information and military disinformation becomes cloudy. What is clear is that HAARP can be used for these purposes. Meanwhile, it is still being misrepresented by the military as only a scientific research tool.

Chapter Nineteen

CHARGED PARTICLE RAIN CRITICAL OMISSION

An article in Science News in 1982 said joint research carried out by scientists from Lockheed Space Sciences Laboratory in Palo Alto, California and Stanford University had found that very low frequency transmitters (HAARP will produce emissions in these ranges in some applications) caused streams of particles to rain down from the outermost regions of the atmosphere. The research was funded by the Office of Naval Research (one of the project controllers of HAARP). Their experiments confirmed that "even low frequency radio waves leak into the magnetosphere, causing the phenomenon. There the radio signals are amplified as much as 1,000 times, altering the motion of free electrons thousands of miles out in space."185 Even though one of the scientists involved in HAARP, Dr. Amran Iman, was quoted in the article, none of this information was in the Environmental Impact Statement on HAARP. This scientist's involvement in the current project was confirmed by John Heckscher, HAARP Program Manager, in a letter responding to a request for information.186 Dr. Iman, at the time of the Stanford University research, saw this as an opportunity to use the magnetic lines of force in the upper atmosphere to enhance communications and to be able to conduct controlled experiments in the ionosphere (which later became an expressed area of interest for the HAARP program).

As mentioned in Chapter Nine, Stanford University's work goes back even further, to the research efforts of Robert Helliwell, who revealed in 1975 that we were already inadvertently altering the ionosphere with Very Low Frequency (VLF) radio waves from power lines. While working in Antarctica, he discovered that these energy signals could be multiplied by up to 1000 times by a coherent interaction With particles in the radiation belts. These radio waves cause an "electronic rain in the ionosphere, and this inevitably alters weather patterns in the lower atmosphere." 187 It turned out that the Department of Defense (DoD) was working on this concept before 1976.188 The use of "coherent VLF" was also discussed with John Heckscher, HAARP Program Managerl89, regarding geophysical probing for earth-penetrating tomography applications of HAARP. In that discussion, he did not mention this multiplying factor (which happens when the signal in the VLF range reaches the ionosphere). This 1000-times multiplying factor creates a huge question, a big hole in the Environmental Impact Statement, and maybe disruption in normal weather patterns. This "coherent signal" is also mentioned in a communication from Paul C. Roosa, Jr., Chairman of the United States Department of Commerce, National Telecommunications and Information Administration, Inter-department Radio

185 "VLF: Getting Particles Excited", Science News, December 18 and 25, 1982, pg.392.

186 Letter From John Heckscher, HAARP Program Manager, Department of the Air Force, Phillips Laboratory, to Dr. Arther Grey, Secretary, Spectrum planning Subcommittee, National Telecommunications Information Administration, United States Department of Commerce, November 17,1994.

187 The Cooling, by Lowell Ponte, 1976, pg 169.

188 Ibid.

189 Interview with John Heckscher by Jeane Manning, 2-21-95.

Advisory Committee, Spectrum Planning Committee which oversees frequency assignments and reviews interactions of broadcasters.

This multiplying factor was either ignored by Roosa's group, or they lacked the understanding of this upper atmospheric interaction. 190 The research into "charged particle rain" started in the Antarctic, moved to Stanford and then to Alaska - from the bottom of the globe to the top of the world. The problem with this being omitted from HAARP documents is that these energy/atmospheric interactions, at current levels of man-induced radiations, are already causing possible weather and other environmental hazards. Increasing the energy deliberately transferred to the upper atmosphere through ionospheric heaters becomes a horrendous act of bad judgment. In fact, in the early 1990's it was reported by Dr. W. Volkrodt of Bad Neustadt, West Germany, that these low frequency radio radiations might be responsible for both environmental and human health problems.191

Throughout the press releases and "fact sheets" spewed out by the military representatives on the project, the focus is on the innocuous academic/scientific research inquires made via HAARP. This is a deception, and deflection from the real "heart" of the program as described in the early planning sessions on the project. A full list of the participants in the planning session was released, and it includes all of the principal players from the universities, APTI, and the military. These same individuals worked together, over the next several years, deflected public attention away from the project.

How much these people individually knew of the project's real intent is unknown. Following the standard military approach to these types of efforts, we assume that participants were only given the pieces of information they needed to do their jobs. The research shows that APTI was a Star Wars subsidiary of Atlantic Richfield Corporation (ARCO), and some of the "key personnel" assigned by APTI to the project were the inventors of some of the patents eventually discussed in the military records on the HAARP project.

The HAARP system is a tool, a radio frequency transmitter and broadcasting system of immense power. From the perspective of the geophysicist, it has certain applications, but to the physiologist and behaviorist perhaps it offers a much different set of possibilities. Regard-less of the public relations proclamations by Heckscher and others, the record says it all,

"The heart of the program will be the development of a unique ionospheric heating capability to conduct the pioneering experiments required to adequately assess the potential for exploiting ionospheric enhancement technology for DoD purposes."

* * *

190 Letter To Mr. Larry D. Gondek from Paul C, Roosa, Jr., Chairman of the United States Department of Commerce, National Telecommunications and Information Administration, Interdepartment Radio Advisory Committee, Spectrum Planning Committee, December 15, 1994.
191 American/European magazine, Raum & Zeit, Vol. 1 No. 2, 1989, pages 52-57,

Are these DoD purposes for innocuous scientific research or for someone's vision of high-tech hardware for enhancing the warfare capability of the United States? 192

---

192 HAARP HF Active Auroral Research Program, Joint Program Plans and Activities, Air Force Geophysics Laboratory, Navy Office of Naval Research, February 1990.

CHAPTER TWENTY

BLURRED VISIONS OF THE MILITARY

In a fact sheet issued by the Office of Naval Research and Phillips Laboratory about HAARP dated November 4, 1993 the following is written:

"The proposed research will be undertaken using high power radio transmitters to probe the overhead ionosphere, combined with a complement of modem scientific diagnostic instruments to investigate the results of the interactions. "193

"HAARP will be constructed at auroral latitudes in Alaska. A unique feature of the research facility would be a high-power high-frequency radio transmitter with the capability of rapidly steering a narrow beam of energy toward a designated region in the sky. (This innovation of the Eastlund patent makes it the most unique ionospheric heater in the world.) Similar, though less capable, research facilities exist today at many locations throughout the world and are operated routinely for the purpose of scientific investigation of the ionosphere. In the U.S. such systems are located in Arecibo, Puerto Rico, and Fairbanks, Alaska. Other installations are at Tromso, Norway; Moscow, Nizhny Novgorod and Apatity, Russia; Kharkov, Ukraine and Dushanbe, Tadzhikistan. None of these existing systems, however, have the combination of frequency capability and beam steering agility required to perform the experiments planned for HAARP. "194

A significant difference between what these other facilities are capable of is that HAARP was designed to focus the radiofrequency transmission into a narrow beam. 195 At the time that Eastlund invented his particular phased array method of focusing radiofrequency radiation, the best which could otherwise be achieved, from the ground to altitudes of 100 kilometers, was about one millionth of one watt per cubic centimeter. Using a full sized Eastlund ionospheric heater, power levels of one watt per cubic centimeter could be achieved, a million times increase in delivered power. Even with a smaller array, like the first phase of HAARP, a comparison to the other ionospheric heaters cannot be fairly made because even the smaller HAARP transmitter would have many times more power than anything in the world at the present time, in terms of power delivered into the ionosphere. The other ionospheric heaters spread the radiation out, rather than focusing it like the HAARP transmitter. 196

The way the energy is focused can be visualized using one of the diagrams Eastlund submitted to the patent examiner when getting his first patent filed. The diagram shows the old technology beaming the energy up to the ionosphere in a cone of power with the wide end of the cone reaching the ionosphere. The new technology utilizes the opposite approach: the beamed energy is focused to a point in the

193 HAARP Fact Sheet, November 4, 1993, issued by Phillips Laboratory.
194 Ibid.
195 HAARP Fact Sheet, March 2,1995, issued by Phillips Laboratory.
196 Interview Dr. Eastlund by Jeane Manning, February 20, 1995.

ionosphere. It is this concept which differentiates Eastlund's concept from that of other existing radio transmitters used for ionospheric heating. It is this concept that the military is moving toward at the HAARP site, although a full-size Eastlund system, at this time, is not being used. The second phase planned for HAARP will have between 4,700,000,000 and 10,000,000,000 watts of effective radiated power (ERP) coming off the antennas at ground level. This was what was planned according
to the contract for construction, 197 which specified ERP levels of "at least" 10 billion watts. However, this was not what was "desired" in terms of upper power level thresholds. What was "desired" by the planning team was 100 billion watts of ERP, according to the record, ten times the phase two level of the project. 198

"An exciting and challenging aspect of ionospheric enhancement is its potential to control ionospheric processes in such a way as to greatly improve the performance of C3 systems (C3 systems are Communications, Control and Command systems. The military refers to them as C3. These are usually linked to Intelligence as C31 systems.). A key goal of the program is the identification and investigation of those ionospheric processes and phenomena that can be exploited for DoD purposes, such as those outlined below... Generation of ELF waves... Geophysical probing... Generation of ionospheric lenses...Electron acceleration...Generation of geomagnetic-field aligned ionization... Oblique heating... Generation of ionization layers below 90KM... the most exciting and challenging aspect of ionospheric enhancement is its potential to control ionospheric processes in such a way as to greatly enhance the performance of C3 systems (or, to deny accessibility to an adversary). "199

The military goes on to describe their excitement about the possibility of "seizing" control of the ionosphere and bending it into the shape which serves their purposes. These are the statements within the government reports which ring the loudest with the inflections of Eastlund, the inventor of the primary APTI patents. A look at the government claimed capabilities follows, and is explained further in other sections of this book.

Geophysical Probing

In the 1990 planning meeting summary, HAARP planners devote few words to geophysical probing. They say that this is a "by-product" of other applications of the ionospheric heater, the HAARP transmitter. As the years moved forward, however, this use becomes increasingly important to the project. The idea that this tool, HAARP, could be used for earth probing purposes is never explored in the federal Environmental Impact Statement on the project. That document says that the radio-frequency radiation coming from HAARP will be directed upward and would not have an affect on surface areas, while other HAARP records describe and diagram a ground effect. Yet, it is precisely this use which may have the most far-reaching effects on animal migration patterns and human health.

197 Office of Naval Research, Contract Number N00014-92-C-0210, ARCO Power Technologies Incorporated as Contractors, September 16,1992 with Amendments through October 19,1993.

198 PL/GP Technical Memorandum No. 195; "Presentations from the HAARP Workshop on Ionospheric Heating Diagnostics, 30 April - 2 May 1991, Phillips Laboratory (AFSC), Hanscom AFB, MA. 01731-5000"; Editor, Major Drew Fisher; October 22, 1991, page 182.

199 HAARP HF Active Auroral Research Program, Joint Program Plans and Activities, Air Force Geophysics Laboratory, Navy Office of Naval Research, February 1990.

To better understand this use of HAARP - earth-penetrating tomography - we need to explore a few different documents. First, let's look again at that 1990 HAARP summary,200 which includes a section dealing with the generation of extremely low frequency and very low frequency (ELF and VLF) waves. These energy waves are sent up from the antenna array (HAARP) in such a way so it "produces a virtual antenna in the ionosphere for radiation of radio waves" back to earth. The antenna created in the ionosphere then radiates, or sends back, the pulsed frequency,

It then moves through the earth, giving the military the ability to locate underground anomalies such as shelters, nuclear facilities, oil fields, tunnels and other natural and man made formations.

The second document which explains this application is not revealed until much later in the program. In the National Defense Authorization Act for Fiscal Year 1995, the United States Senate stops additional spending on the project until the military outlines a plan which includes a full earth-penetrating tomography program. The report specifies:

"This transmitter in Alaska, besides providing a world class research facility for ionospheric physics, could allow earth-penetrating tomography over most of the northern hemisphere. Such a capability would permit the detection and precise location of tunnels, shelters, and other underground shelters.,."201

The Senate went on to criticize the military for not bringing forward a complete plan for implementation of this specific capability as part of the HAARP program. They told the military to come back with a more comprehensive plan before they could get any more money.

The third piece of information in this part of the puzzle came out in a radio interview conducted on December 23, 1994, by Linda Moulton Howe with the HAARP program director, John Heckscher. Heckscher expressed his frustration in not being able to move forward on the project because of the Senate action. He made clear that HAARP could not continue unless the "nonproliferation people" put in the proper documents which would clarify earth-penetrating tomography as a HAARP project mission. The non-proliferation people, referred to by Heckscher, are those in the Pentagon and elsewhere who develop the plans for locating underground military installations, especially nuclear research and development facilities.

Our research, and critiques by independent scientists, raised questions about whether or not the earth-penetrating tomography application would work in a "hot war" environment. For it to work there need to be instruments on the ground, or traversing the ground at very, very low altitudes. Our technical review indicated that it would be difficult to do this in combat. But it could be used in other situations. It could be used to verify nonproliferation agreements and other peace agreements where the country to be probed allowed the U. S. military to install ground sensors.

200 HAARP HF Active Auroral Research Program, Joint Program Plans and Activities, Air Force Geophysics Laboratory, Navy Office of Naval Research, February 1990.

201 The National Defense Authorization Act for Fiscal Year 1995,103rd Congress, 2nd Session, Report #103-282, Calendar No. 459, Report to Accompany S.2182, Committee on Armed Services United States Senate, June 14 (legislative day June 7)1994.

Earth-penetrating tomography could also be used for minerals, and oil exploration, as referred to in the Anchorage Daily News:

"UAF researchers have plans for HAARP's radio waves when they bounce back to the Earth. They hope to harness the energy waves after they hit the ground with
a small antenna affixed to a helicopter. They might be able to use the radio waves to explore for mineral deposits and even oil... "202

Searching for oil is one of the many HAARP experiments which is not part of the estimated $175 million budget for the first two phases of the project.

To find out more about earth-penetration mapping the authors contacted HAARP program manager Heckscher in late February, 1995. He said it would use "in terms of frequency, like 10 or 20 Hertz (pulses per second) or maybe one Hertz, one cycle per second type waves."203 This range of frequencies is a very important point. These frequencies are the same dominate frequencies within which the human brain normally operates! This potential impact on people will be explored further in another chapter.

The idea of using HAARP for earth-penetrating tomography was anticipated from the very beginning of HAARP. That this tool could be used to produce this "by-product" was always known but downplayed in the records. However, the usage must have been promoted in selling the project to the United States Senate, The unexpected result was that the Senate gave priority to this aspect.

The fact that the system will send a huge amount of energy into the ionosphere, and return a large portion of that energy to the earth, with possible ionospheric amplifications or induced charged particle rain, is alarming. Potential environmental implications have not been fully disclosed and most likely are not well understood.

These uses were never discovered by those opposed to the HAARP project until late 1994, and only confirmed by a review of the Congressional Record at that time. Formal objections to the nondisclosure of the biological effects of ELF on living things in the earth-penetrating tomography application of the technology were filed with various governmental agencies, but to no avail. We could not clearly find out the facts until late January 1995, much after the regulating authorities had already granted the go-ahead for HAARP testing. The only remaining barrier to HAARP raised by the United States Senate was the question of funding. This question was partially resolved in the 1996 defense budget funding that included $10 million for HAARP, 20% of the total allocated for counterproliferation projects.

Generation of ELF/VLF Waves

These kinds of waves are used for DoD communication systems. Currently, waves are produced "from the Navy's existing antenna systems in Wisconsin and

202 "Transmitter Plan Leaves Public Uneasy", Anchorage Daily News, pages B-1 and B-3.

203 Interview of John Heckscher, HAARP Program Manager, with Jeane Manning, 2-21-1995.

Michigan. Because this area of research appears especially promising, and because of existing DoD requirements for ELF and VLF, it is already a primary driver of the proposed HAARP research program."

As a "primary driver" this again shows that the project is important to the military in terms of Department of Defense (DoD) applications. Beyond the communication possibilities, these types of radio frequencies could be used to manipulate the radiation belts of the ionosphere in a manner which would allow satellites to operate safely in these regions without damage to the satellites' electronics. This use was discussed in the Eastlund patents as well as the HAARP records.

The possibility of using HAARP for these multiple purposes is particularly attractive to the military at a time when funding is increasingly a greater issue for all United States governmental agencies. The HAARP system could consolidate costs of several otheT defense systems by combining them into one tool.

Another consideration that is not discussed in the Environmental Impact Statement, to any significant degree, is the raging global scientific debate on the effects of extremely low frequencies (ELF) on living organisms, including human beings. The military's representative, Dr. Klaunenberg, during one of the hearings on the project, made a point of referring to a large file containing materials on the various radiations emitted by HAARP and then stated, "All that didn't go into the Environmental Impact Statement (EIS); as a matter of fact, that reduced to just a couple of lines. And 1 know what your, wheTe you're coming from and 1 share your concerns."204

The military, particularly the Air Force and Navy, have extensive research on the negative effects of ELF. These effects have been well documented with basic research which is expanding geometrically in volume every year. The government handily deflected the concerns raised in the public hearings in Alaska by playing down the results of this research and minimizing the risks. This was the same way the government promoted other military systems while deflecting public concern in such areas as nuclear testing experiments205,206, LSD experiments on unknowing individuals207, 208, radiation experiments on people who were not informed of the risks and in many other areas - under the guise of National Security209, 210.

204 Final Environmental Impact Statement Volume II, Proposed High Frequency Active Auroral Research Program, July 1993, pg. 10-42.

205 staff Memorandum, Advisory Committee Staff to the Member of the President's Advisory Committee on Human Radiation Experiments, June 27,1994, (provided by: International Committee lor The Convention Against Offensive Microwave Weapons)

206 National Journal, Volume 27, No. 18, "Rays ot Terror" by Margaret Kritz, May 6, 1995, Pages 1099-1109. (provided by: International Committee for The Convention Against Offensive Microwave Weapons)

207 Report to the President bv the Commission on CIA Activities Within The United States. June 1975, pages 225-231.

206 Staff Memorandum, Advisory Committee Staff to the Member of the President's Advisory Committee on Human Radiation Experiments, June 27, 1994. (provided by: international Committee for The Convention Against Offensive Microwave Weapons)

209 Ibid.

210 National Journal, Volume 27, No. 18, "Rays of Terror" by Margaret Kritz, May 6,1995, Pages 1099-1109. (provided by: International Committee for The Convention Against Offensive Microwave Weapons)

Electron Acceleration

This trick of HAARP would allow the military to alter the ionosphere in a way which would effectively block satellite observation of areas under a selected portion of the ionosphere. Thus the military could more easily "condition the ionosphere so that it would support HF (high-frequency) propagation during periods when the natural ionosphere was especially weak. This could potentially be exploited for long range (Over-the-Horizon) HF communication/surveillance purposes."

This use was previously envisioned by Eastlund and others.

The HAARP facility was located at the site originally intended for the "Over the Horizon Radar" facility, which was dropped after the end of the Cold War according to the government record. The HAARP facility will allow the government to replace the "Backscatter Radar" with a new, more versatile facility, in a more bang for the buck application!

There were other patents controlled by APTI which grew out of the Eastlund patents which could be used in this application. They are U.S. patent numbers 4,999,637 and 5,041,834, which are exactly what the government seemed to be seeking and now has achieved in HAARP. The military claimed that they were not using the Eastlund patents for this particular use, but what they couldn't deny was that the patents they were using were the outgrowth of the Eastlund concepts. These two patents specifically refer to Eastlund's work in their conceptual development. The HAARP program offers the military the over-the-horizon radar capability, again demonstrating the sort of all in one tool that HAARP is designed to provide.

The projects that HAARP technology replaces make it potentially one of the most powerful and cost-effective weapon systems yet developed by the military, while at the same time being potentially one of the most dangerous since the development of thermonuclear weapons.

Generation of Field-Aligned Ionization

In this section of the military documents describing HAARP, control of the ionospheric processes would allow the military to maintain communication above a nuclear disturbed ionospheric region, and would allow very long range detection of missiles. The document also mentioned a 1992 satellite experiment that tested this theory, using a "heater in Alaska".

The only other known heater in Alaska is HIPAS, at the University of Alaska facilities near Fairbanks (although this was not specifically named). HAARP was not yet constructed in 1992.

This use has to do with the control and manipulation of the ionosphere for military purposes. The technology which makes these effects is referred to in several of the patents held by APTI.

Oblique HF Heating

This area involves projection of the beam, to alter the ionosphere up to 1000 km or more from the heater. This is an interesting ability, considering the military - throughout their public relations efforts - has stated that the heater affected region would be mainly above the HAARP facility itself. The idea that the beam might be steered in a way which reached these lateral (side) distances was not fully disclosed in the Environmental Impact Statements. The point here is that the device can manipulate the ionosphere over a wide area and not just above the heater.

Oblique HF heating is useful for over-the-horizon radar, as well as for many of the other uses desired by the military. We talk about the steering elsewhere, when discussing the use of the HAARP transmitter as the military's long sought after radio frequency radiation weapon. This type of use was first publicly disclosed by an Air Force captain who was reporting on new technologies in a military conference in 1984.211 Such a weapon could disable humans and impair their mental functions, among other things.

Generation of Ionization Layers Below 90 km

This use has already been proven, according to the HAARP summary by the Air Force and Navy,

"The Air Force in particular has carried the concept, termed Artificial Ionospheric Mirror (AIM), to the point of demonstrating its technical viability and proposing a new initiative to conduct proof-of-concepts experiments."

This concept will lead to a number of other uses, including "long range, over-the-horizon, HF/VHF/UHF surveillance purposes, including the detection of cruise missiles and other low observables."

This again is the more bang for the buck military application which, on the surface, feels good to most taxpaying Americans. The idea that one tool can be used to achieve all of these capabilities is astounding. The idea that so many weapon systems of perceived adversaries could be rendered obsolete is far reaching in its implications. However, the risks are still not well defined in the documents issued by the government on HAARP. The project has not been reviewed because of the limited releases of information which has denied more-objective observers and other scientists the opportunity to consider the HAARP system. The fundamental question, as yet unanswered or even addressed, surrounds the risks associated with energizing this critical portion of our upper atmosphere.

The patents developed by APTI which describe these systems were discovered in researching this book in April, 1995. It then appeared obvious why

211 Low-Intensity Conflict and Modern Technology, Lt Col. David J. Dean USAF, Editor, Air University Press, Center for Aerospace Doctrine, Research, and Education, Maxwell Air Force Base, Alabama, June 1986.

military planners had included some of the "key personnel" in the APTI contract. Having the technology's inventors and innovators made the project that much more viable. The military contact had clear language which required the use of these key people. The contract said that substitution was not permitted without government consent. More-over, the military added that failure to assign these people to the project could result in forfeiture of the contract entirely[212].

Having the patents remain undiscovered until after the first phase of HAARP was constructed and tested reduced the possibility of the project being halted. What the discovery did prove was that HAARP was not just some university research project, but was the military tool always suspected by the "NO HAARP" compilers.

The press releases and information coming from the military on this project have continually downplayed its potentials. In the HAARP summary, the government discusses the need for a high-power heater. Meanwhile, in the public documents and the letters sent to Congress-men, state legislators and others insist that the HAARP project is no different than other heaters operating safely throughout the world. In the 1990 documents the governments says,

"...that at the highest HF powers available in the West, the instabilities commonly studied are approaching their maximum RF energy dissipative capability, beyond which the plasma processes will 'runaway' until the next limiting factor is reached."

What the HAARP planners go on to say, when referring to heating the ionosphere, is that they are certain that they can "drastically alter its thermal, refractive, scattering, and emission character over a wide electromagnetic (radio frequency) and optical spectrum."213 The difference with HAARP has to do with the power beam focusing ability of the transmitter, unlike anything operating elsewhere. Focusing the energy to a specific point is the unique aspect which planners were so enthused about.

In summary, according to the military records about HAARP, we have a project designed to prove the concepts originally discussed in February 1990 and hatched years before. The direction the military was heading in their research was finally possible with the invention of the Eastlund ionospheric heater - the most powerful directed multiple use energy weapon yet conceived.

According to the military, the device had the greatest set of possible uses. These are uses already proven by Eastlund to the satisfaction of the United States Patent Office and tested by the military. It was clear that if the military, in cooperation with the University of Alaska Fairbanks, could show that this new ground-based "Star Wars" technology was sound, they would both win. The military would have a relatively inexpensive secure defense shield within the economic reach of their planners, and the University would be recognized for the most remarkable

212 office of Naval Research, Contract Number N00014-92-C-0210, ARCO Power Technologies Incorporated as Contractors, September 16,1992 with Amendments through October 19,1993.

213 HAARP HF Active Auroral Research Program, Joint Program Plans and Activities, Air Force Geophysics Laboratory, Navy Office of Naval Research, February 1990.

manmade geophysical manipulation since atmospheric detonations of nuclear bombs. What would follow with the success of the testing would be the military megaprojects of the future, and huge markets foT North Slope natural gas.

Looking at the other patents which built on the work of Eastlund, it becomes clearer how the military intends to use the HAARP transmitter, It also makes governmental denials less believable. The military knows how it intends to use this technology, and has made it clear in their documents. The military has deliberately misled the public, through sophisticated word games, deceit and outright disinformation.

* The HAARP system could give the military a tool to replace the electromagnetic pulse effect of atmospheric thermonuclear devices, still considered a viable option by the military through at least 1986.214

* It could replace the huge Extremely Low Frequency (ELF) submarine communication system operating in Michigan and Wisconsin with a new and more compact technology.

* It could be used to replace the over-the-horizon radar system once planned for the current location of HAARP, with a more flexible and accurate system.

* It could provide a way to wipe out communications over an extremely large area, while keeping operator controlled communications systems working.

* It could provide a wide area earth-penetrating tomography which, if combined with the computing abilities of EMASS and Cray computers, would make it possible to verify many parts of nuclear nonproliferation and peace agreements.

* It could provide a tool for geophysical probing which would define oil, gas and mineral deposits over a large geographical area.

* It could even also be used to detect incoming low level planes and cruise missiles, making other technological advantages obsolete.

The above abilities seem like a good idea for all of us who believe in sound national defense and a secure world. These advances seem reasonable to those of us concerned with the large amounts of national productivity being spent on higher and higher cost weapon systems at a time when government spending is out of control.

However, the possible uses which the HAARP records do not explain, and which can only be found in Air Force, Army, Navy and other federal agency records, are alarming. Moreover, the disaster which could befall all of us on the planet by the reckless use of these power levels in our natural shield, the ionosphere, could be cataclysmic.

214 Low-Intensity Conflict ana Modern Technology. Lt Col, David J. Dean USAF, Editor, Air University Press, Center for Aerospace Doctrine, Research, and Education, Maxwell Air Force Base, Alabama, June 1986.

What the military fails to say is that they do not know what exactly will happen. It should be remembered that this project represents the largest energy levels yet played with by the big boys with their new toys. This project is an experiment, and experiments are done when we want to find out something that we do not already know. So, what will really happen? When we find the answer, we all may be out of luck and out of time.

Chapter Twenty-one

RACE WITH THE RUSSIANS

"Similar, though less capable, research facilities exist today at many locations throughout the world and are operated routinely for the purpose of scientific investigation of the ionosphere...None of these existing systems, however, have the combination of frequency capability and beam steering agility required to perform the experiments planned for HAARP. "[215]

The program handlers continued to talk to the public as if this ionospheric heater were really no different than any others around the world. Yet, while promoting the project and in internal communications, they couldn't resist talking about HAARP as the biggest "heater" in the world - more powerful than anything in existence. This technology is more than just the level of effective-radiated-power, or frequency/wave-form variability, or steering capability. The biggest factor is that in combination with these abilities, the device focuses power in a way which yields many, many times more delivered power to the ionosphere than anything on Earth resembling this device.

This device is a jump ahead in technology, beyond anything else. It is a leap like comparing a squirt gun to an artillery piece, and the effects are, to a great extent, unknown once the energy is released beyond certain thresholds. Yet, in answer to Congressional inquiries, citizen complaints and interagency requests for information, project manager Heckscher, continuously denies that the system is any different from what he and other previously said was already operating. He delivers this information in the form of sophisticated word games, The government craft of bureaucratese reaches new highs with the HAARP promoters.

In a 1990[216] meeting that Heckscher attended, the record stated that "To date, (only) the Soviet Union has built such a powerful HF (high-frequency) heater. The highest ERPs (Effective Radiated Power) achieved by U.S. facilities is about one fourth of that. Presently, a heater in Norway, operated by the Max Planck Institute in the Federal Republic of Germany, is being reconfigured to provide 1 gigawatt of ERP at a single HF frequency. The HAARP is to ultimately have an HF heater with an ERP well above 1 gigawatt (on the order of 95-100 dbW); in short, the most powerful facility in the world..."[217]

Was the race with the Soviets part of the picture and the justification for spending the money? The Russians had been at the game a good deal longer and had a greater understanding of ionospheric heaters. Again, the emphasis on output size alone is not enough to describe the technology. It is the combination of size, focused power beaming, beam maneuverability, waveform generation and frequency -among a number of other unique capabilities - which make this system so powerful.

[2TB] HAARP fact sheet, Office of Naval Research, Phillips Laboratory, November 4, 1993.

[216] HAARP HF Active Auroral Research Program, Joint Program Plans and Activities, Air Force Geophysics Laboratory, Navy Office of Naval Research, February 1990.

[217] Ibid.

The issue of power has always been a bit on the confusing side to those trying to decipher exactly what this device would generate in output power through the antenna array and what it would take in input power to get there. This issue was finally cleared up in a letter by John Heckscher where he said, "There is a difference between 'total radiated power' and 'effective radiated power'. That difference is antenna gain, which in HAARP's case is a factor of nearly 1000 (at 10 MHz)."2l8 What was also new about this Eastlund invention is that it could focus the huge power levels onto a single point in the ionosphere. For the first time, the western military establishment could begin to use the new weapon capabilities.

The Soviets had been playing with their ELF and VLF toys for two decades by the time the HAARP transmitter was built. They had been testing their ideas and theories for use of radiofrequency in new weapon systems during those years. The Soviet radio frequency transmitters had been the source of much controversy throughout the West. Some in the United States and Canada had blamed such things as weather manipulation, mind control, radio interference and other unexplainable atmospheric events219 on the Soviet transmitters which created what became known as the "woodpecker" signal220.

The sales pitch for HAARP funding fell to the academics at the University of Alaska Fairbanks Geophysical Institute, and they had a friend in the powerful Senator from Alaska, Ted Stevens. It is doubtful that Stevens had been fully informed by these professors; the record indicates that he may have been duped into being their voice in the halls of Congress. Senator Stevens was quoted in a news article as he defended the funding of the HAARP program, It appears from the report that the Senator may have been left with incomplete information by the project promoters.

Harness the Aurora?

In mid-1990 Senator Stevens defended his project in a committee meeting when he said, "1 could tell you about the time when the University of Alaska came to me and said it might be possible to bring the aurora to Earth. We might be able to harness the energy in the aurora...". He went on to say, "No one in the Department of Defense, no one in the Department of Energy, no one in the executive branch was interested in pursuing it at alt. Why? Because it did not come from the good old boy network. So I did just what you say I should do. I got Congress to ear-mark the money, and the experiment is going on now. It will cost $10 million to $20 million. If it is successful, it will change the history of the world." The actual direct costs of the first phase of HAARP was about $25 million with the second phase estimated at $150 million. This does not include the numerous other projects related to, or complimenting, the HAARP program.

218 Letter From John Heckscher, HAARP Program Manager, Department of the Air Force, Phillips Laboratory, to Dr. Arther Grey, Secretary, Spectrum planning Subcommittee, National Telecommunications Information Administration, United States Department of Commerce, November 17, 1994.

219 Super-Memory : The Revolution, by Sheila Ostrander and Lynn Schroeder, pages 292-304.

220 Ibid.

Senator Stevens went to the floor of the Senate late in the summer of 1990 and declared, "We have in Alaska what I consider to be one of the most exciting research projects that I have ever encountered," He went on to say, "It is the experiments that are going on trying to determine if it is possible to harness the energy of the electrojet for the use of mankind." He said the project "has the potential of using a laser beam to be a conductor of this energy back to Earth...It is an experiment that, when 1 first heard about it, I thought someone had rewritten a new chapter of Jules Veme."221

"The research facility would be used to understand, stimulate and control ionospheric processes that might alter the performance of communication and surveillance systems...Potential applications of the HAARP research include developing DoD technology for detecting cruise missiles and aircraft and for communicating with submarines. Although HAARP is being managed by the Air Force and Navy, it is purely a scientific research facility which represents no threat to potential adversaries and would therefore have no value as a military target. "222

Again it appears that what is really being said is that this is not an operational weapon system, only a proof-of-concept system. It is designed to provide a better understanding for future uses as a weapon system. This is an outrageous statement, which plays on the ignorance of readers of the HAARP records, and could be equated to the suggestion that the development centers for the atom bomb during World War II were not potential military targets.

"As the result of a competitive procurement, the Air Force and Navy have awarded a contract to ARCO Power Technologies, Inc. (APTI) for the design and construction of the IRI and associated support facilities."223 APTI, according to liastlund, was set up to do one thing - develop his ideas into marketable technologies. APTI was not set up as a construction company or an ionospheric research organization. It was set up to exploit energy in a way which maximized a return to one of the world's oil giants, Atlantic Richfield Company. What Eastlund did was put ARCO into the Star Wars business until a company more suited to the project could be located to buy out their interests. That company was E-Systems. E-Systems' history and controversy has been documented by CBS's, 60 Minutes as well as by the Washington Post, and is discussed in this book.

The original bidders on the HAARP project were Penn State University, Raytheon and APTI.224 The chain of corporate events has been discussed previously, In June, 1994, APTI was bought out by E-Systems, which in April, 1995, was bought out by Raytheon Corporation. So, in the end, one of the project's losing bidders, Raytheon - one of the largest defense contractors in the world - came to own the technology and the contract.

---

221 "Porkpie in the Sky", Anchorage Daily News, We Alaskans , December 15,1991 pages 9-14.

222 HAARP Fact Sheet, Office of Naval Research, Phillips Laboratory, November 4, 1993.

223 Ibid.

224 Interview with John Heckscher, HAARP Program Manager and Jeane Manning, February 21, 1995.

Chapter Twenty-two

ENTRAIN THE BRAIN TO GO INSANE?

New technologies have incredible possibilities for improving the human brain potential. These technologies are being used to improve learning, memory, and for human behavior modification. The high-tech tools of the future are here now, and are being introduced into the market place. A leading writer in the area of brain technologies has been Michael Hutchison, who opened this field to lay people.

As Hutchison describes it, the brain operates within a relatively narrow band of predominant frequencies. The predominant brain wave frequencies indicate the kind of activity taking place in the brain. There are four basic groups of brain wave frequencies which are associated with most mental activity. The first, beta waves, (13-35 Hertz or pulses per second) are associated with normal activity when a person's attention is directed outward, toward normal activities. The high end of this range is associated with stress or agitated states which can impair thinking and reasoning skills. The second group, alpha waves (8-12 Hertz), can indicate relaxation. Alpha frequencies are ideal for learning and focused mental functioning. The third, theta waves (4-7 Hertz), indicate mental imagery, access to memories and internal mental focus. This state is often associated with young children, behavioral modification and sleep/dream states. The last, ultra slow, delta waves (0.5-3 Hertz) are found when a person is in deep sleep. The general rule is that the brain's predominant wave frequency will be lowest, in terms of pulses per second, when relaxed, and highest when people are most alert or agitated.225

External stimulation of the brain by electromagnetic means can cause the brain to be entrained or locked into phase with an external signal generator. Predominant brain waves can be driven or pushed into new frequency patterns by external stimulation. In other words, the external signal driver or impulse generator entrains the brain, overriding the normal frequencies causing changes in the brain waves; which then cause changes in brain chemistry; which then cause changes in brain outputs in the form of thoughts, emotions or physical condition. As you are driven, so you arrive - brain manipulation can be either beneficial or detrimental to the individual being impacted.

In combination with specific wave forms the various frequencies trigger precise chemical responses in the brain. The release of these neurochemicals cause specific reactions in the brain which result in feelings of fear, lust, depression, love, etc. All of these, and the full range of emotional/intellectual responses, are caused by very specific combinations of these brain chemicals which are released by frequency-specific electrical impulses. "Precise mixtures of these brain juices can produce extraordinarily specific mental states, such as fear of the dark, or intense concentration."226 The work in this area is advancing at a very rapid rate with new

---

[225] Mega Brain. New Tools and Techniques (or Brain Growth and. Mind Expansion, by Michael Hutchison, 1986,

226 Mega Brain, New Tools and Techniques for Brain growth and Mind, Expansion, by Michael Hutchison, 1986, pg 114.

discoveries being made regularly. Unlocking the knowledge of these specific frequencies will yield significant breakthroughs in understanding human health. Radio frequency radiation, acting as a carrier for extremely low frequencies (ELF), can be used to wirelessly entrain brain waves. This is what HAARP could do in certain of its applications; however, the side effects of this on humans are not explored in the HAARP records but do appear in other government documents referred to in this book.

Mr. Light, a researcher and owner of Biomedical Instruments, Inc., an organization which markets electromedical devices used to control or manipulate brain activity, was quoted extensively in Hutchison's book.227 The power level needed to achieve a measure of control over brain activity is very small - from 5 to 200 microamperes - which is thousands of times less than the power needed to run a 60 watt light bulb. We are talking about very, very low power requirements. The trick for influencing brain activity is in the combination of frequency, power level and wave form. What has taken place oveT the last two decades, and most particularly in the last several years, represents huge moves forward.

Research internationally found that the brain can be easily entrained or can be influenced to change states by external electromagnetic fields. These discoveries have provided new tools for both scientists and lay people. The new tools include electrical cranial stimulation devices, sound systems, light pulse systems and a large variety of other brain entrainment and feedback devices. Technological advances also have been applied to special monitoring and control devices which allow people to learn how to control and manipulate their own brain activity for beneficial results. Reports include relaxation, pain control, speed learning and memory improvements, among others.228, 229, 230

The most recent work of Hutchison has yielded the finest descriptions of mind technologies yet put together. His latest book, Mega Brain Power, updates readers in an area which is changing so rapidly that the science is being formed faster than the applications can be fully recognized. As a result, he has for some years published the latest research in a newsletter. Recent issues231 discussed technologies for healing nervous system disorders, correcting attention deficit and hyperactive disorders in children and curing drug and alcohol dependencies among other things. Electromedicine of this type is emerging as one of the most exciting areas of medical research.

The research in recent years has extended to medical and psychological applications with startling positive results. Some of these results have been recognized by the United States Air Force, as you will see in the following chapter. Unfortunately, military research continues to look at these technologies as weapon systems rather than as human potential enhancing tools.

227 Mega Brain Power, by Michael Hutchison, 1994.

228 Super-Learning, by Sheila Ostrander and Lynn Schroeder, 1982.

229 Mega Brain Power, by Michael Hutchison, 1994.

230 Meaa Brain. New Tools and Techniques tor Brain Growth and Mind Expansion, by Michael Hutchison, 1986.

231 Megabrain Report, The Journal of Optimal Performance, Volume 2, Number 4, 1994.

One of America's most gifted inventors, Dr. Patrick Flanagan, predicted in 1962 that medicine would change. He said, "I believe some day the entire concept of medical practice will be changed by electronics. People will be treated electronically rather than with medicine."[232] At that time, Dr. Flanagan had just been recognized for inventing what was the most advanced brain entrainment device, and possibly human-to-computer interface, on the planet - the Neurophone.

As Flanagan noted in a recent interview the HAARP project could be not only the biggest "ionospheric heater" in the world, but also the biggest brain-entrainment device ever conceived. According to HAARP records, when the device is built to full power it can send VLF and ELF waves using many wave forms at energy levels sufficient to affect entire regional populations.

The HAARP planners have never discussed any of this research, although the Air Force and Navy have been working in these areas since the early 1960's. Using the concept of "compartmentalization" and "need-to-know", discussed earlier in this book, it is highly likely that most of those, if not all of those, involved in building and operating the HAARP project at this early stage are unaware of these possible applications.

Dr. Robert O. Becker experimented in the early 1960's with ELF (Extremely Low Frequencies) by putting the signal on top of a DC current to carry the ELF signal. In other words, ELF rode like the passenger on a bus, maintaining its own integrity but being carried, to its specific destination. Dr. Becker tested this concept by using an ELF, 1-10 Hertz (cycles or pulses per second) signal on humans resulting in an increased loss of consciousness among test subjects. The weak ELF alone had no effect, and the DC current had a significantly reduced effect without the combination. Above 10 Hertz with DC current, the effect increasingly declined until it was no better than with DC current alone.[233] What this demonstrated was that ELF, those frequencies which most effect human brain functions, could be manipulated externally with profound results.

Flanagan's Brain Tool

In 1958 when Dr. Patrick Flanagan was 14 years old, he invented the Neurophone, which won him world recognition as one of the brightest inventors of our time. The Neurophone device can convert sound (like words and music) into electrical impulses which can be transferred through any point on the body directly into the brain, bypassing the ear and associated hearing mechanisms entirely. For more than six years the United States Patent Office refused to issue a patent for the device while they debated the fine points of the technology. In the end, the government declared that the Neurophone would never work, and refused the patent. Patrick and his lawyer then went to Washington D.C. with a working model of the device to show the patent examiner. The examiner told the duo that if the device could make one of their employees who was deaf hear, he would reopen the case and issue the patent. The device was tested, the employee "heard" and the patent was granted.

[232] "Whiz Kid, Hands Down", Life Magazine, September 14, 1962.

[233] Cross Currents. The Perils of Electropollution, The Promise of Electromedicine, by Robert o. Becker, M.D.,pg 227.

Dr. Flanagan later went to work for Tufts University and began his next stage of research on the Neurophone, As a research scientist for Tufts, he began to work on a man to dolphin speech system for the Navy. This research led to the development of a 3-D holographic sound system which could place sounds in any location in space as perceived by a listener.

Additional research led to a vastly improved digital Neurophone, for which a patent application was filed. Immediately, the United States Defense Intelligence Agency placed it under a secrecy order as a matter of national security. Dr. Flanagan was forbidden from conducting further research or even talking about his technology for four years.

This technology has now been replaced with superior technology developed in Europe in 2001. The technology far surpasses the performance of the Flanagan invention in all applications by integrating modern circuit designs with 21st century engineering. The new technology delivers significantly greater energy efficiency through a more biologically compatible signal. This technology will be made available in late 2001 or early 2002 for accelerated learning applications, body system balancing and trials in hearing enhancement applications.

In the years since, Dr. Flanagan periodically toyed with new concept and design advances for Neurophonic technology. This device could be used as the ultimate computer to brain interface tool, and is being considered for reintroduction into the market place. The idea that large amounts of properly formatted information can be transferred into long term memory would revolutionize education, making the current model obsolete. Education would shift to greater emphasis on learning strategies and resources, rather than data accumulation. These changes would establish greater possibilities for creative advancement and self-actualization by mastery of intellectual potentials.

The Neurophone was one of the most powerful brain entrainment devices developed until new advances were made in the science in Europe in 2001. In recent years, these other researchers have advanced the technology and continued to work on the possibilities it offers, with an emphasis on other modes of transmission. Given the Defense Intelligence Agency's interest in the earlier device, it is very likely that they have also continued to work to improve it. Discussions with several inventors over the last few years about the HAARP project revealed that this radio transmitter, the ionospheric heater, could possibly be used as a wireless brain entrainment device. This use has the greatest invasive possibilities.[234]

Brain Biofeedback

Real time brain biofeedback is another area of brain research which is beginning to provide great opportunities to many individuals. This area has yielded new approaches for gaining control of the mind. Through interactive computer technologies, it is now possible to monitor brain waves on a real-time basis, so that the individual using these tools can see what brain waves graphically look like on a computer screen, while the person is thinking.

---

[234] Discussions with Dr. Patrick and Dr. Gael Crystal Flanagan with Dr. Nick Begich through 1994-95

There are several systems now on the market, with one of the finest being produced in the United States by American Biotech Corporation. Using these systems, a person can learn to manipulate his or her own brain waves in profound ways. Some of the things which have been achieved include reaching high meditative states (states of consciousness not otherwise reached without years of practice), increasing the recovery rates of brain dysfunctions resulting from strokes or accidents, and improvements in children suffering from attention deficit and other disorders.

These new brain technologies are being used to help people with various problems. A number of researchers have shown the effectiveness of brain biofeedback in breaking drug and alcohol dependencies. The tools and techniques have been used for curing a number of mental disorders by teaching a person how to create brain patterns within themselves, at will, to change their state of consciousness. Researchers found that within 30 to 60 days most people can learn how to create a number of specific mental states at will, and without the continued use of these machines. The machines serve as a bridge to new levels of mental control. The techniques using the computer interfaces can be explained simply as a system for teaching how to control one's own thinking in one's own way to gain specific results. It can be viewed as a small child learning to control his or her legs crawling, then walking and then running. We, as adults, are still at the crawling stage when it comes to mental control. These technologies are bringing to us opportunities to take greater control of ourselves through better control of our minds. The value of this technology can not be understated.

Changing the way we think, if we are individually in control of our changes, is a healthy thing. It is disturbing to realize that governments are interested in these technologies, not for beneficial individual uses but in order to gain increased control over populations they view as dangerous. These technologies offer both great promise and a high potential for abuse. Since the technologies are here now, all of the work in these areas should be open to public review. This would help assure the preservation of the most fundamental right of humankind, the right to think in our own way.

The work being done in these fields has profound implications for all of us. The knowledge held by government agencies, under the guise of national security, would speed the understanding of these technologies and their implications. If the government's research were made public, we would have a significant advance into one of the most import-ant areas of human development. The increased efficient use of the human brain would make it more likely that we could solve the very complex problems existing in the world, in addition to improving the quality of life for many people.

This chapter introduces readers to some of the concepts which we explored, and direct readers, who become "compilers" in their own research pursuits, to new sources. This chapter also amplifies knowledge of energy in various wave forms and frequencies which can increase rather than destroy human potential. The use and development of these applications does not need to be imposed on people through the military's manipulation of the ionosphere or by other external means. These technological innovations should be chosen by individuals based upon their own decisions. In the next chapter we begin to explore the military's level of knowledge and uses of these technologies, based on the work of the Air Force, major universities and private industry.

Chapter Twenty-three

PSYCHOCIVILIZED SOCIETY AND THE C.I.A.

This chapter explores a complex subject - the use of electromagnetic waves for mind manipulation. The material is translated into simpler concepts and can be understood without a great deal of technical background. One of the main goals of the authors has been to make these concepts understandable to the layperson.

The idea of HAARP as a system for mind manipulation, some will say, is a big leap from the ionosphere. For low level military planners, it may well be. However, after a careful review of the possibilities described in the HAARP contract documents and planning records, coupled with the array of Air Force materials gathered by the authors, the possibilities are evident. The HAARP transmitting system could be used inadvertently or intentionally to alter mental functions. These next chapters will inform the reader and raise serious questions regarding what might be hidden behind the HAARP project.

"I foresee the time when we shall have the means and therefore, inevitably, the temptation to manipulate the behavior and intellectual functioning of all people through environmental and biochemical manipulation of the brain."235 The 1968 New York Times article quoted Dr. David Krech of UC Berkeley, who predicted a new technology which in the intervening years has become a reality. The work in this area has moved far beyond what anyone would think was possible a few years ago. These developments raise profound questions which should be dealt with squarely and openly, considering their far-reaching implications. Moreover, the use of the ionosphere as an antenna by the United States or any other country to manipulate in a military self-serving manner, is probably in violation of international treaties and should be forbidden by international organizations.

Dr. Jose M. R. Delgado, M.D., has researched the human brain and published his results in professional papers since 1952. He was educated in Spain and came to the United States to work at Yale University in 1950. He became a Professor of Physiology at Yale, where he continued his research work focusing on the control of the mind. His early work pioneered our understanding of the human brain and was summarized through 1969 in a book he wrote, called Physical Control of the Mind. Toward a Psychocivilized Society.236 This early work was mainly animal research, and included insertion of electrodes into the brains of animals. He found that by inducing an electrical current in the brain of his subject, he could manipulate behavior. Delgado discovered that he could create a number of effects from sleep to highly agitated states of consciousness. His later work was done wirelessly, with his most advanced efforts developed without electrode implants used at all. Stated differently, he achieved the brain manipulating effects at a distance, without any physical contact or devices attached to the living creature being manipulated. Dr.

235 The New York Times, Scientist Says Control of Intelligence Is Possible, by Harold M. Schmeck Jr., Wednesday, April 3,1968, quoting Dr. David Krech, UC Berkeley.

236 Physical Control of the Mind: Toward a Psychocivilized Society, by Jose M.R. Delgado, M.D., 1969.

Delgado found that by changing the frequency and waveform on an experimental subject, he could completely change their thinking and emotional state.

Dr. Delgado's work set the foundation for many other researchers, while at the same time opening the possibilities of misuse by the government. On page 229 of Dr. Delgado's book, he uses a quote from the UNESCO's Constitution which, in the context of his work and this book, is foreboding: "Since war begins in the mind of men, it is in the minds of men that the defenses of peace must be constructed."237 It is a thought, in the context of Delgado's work, which smacks of the Orwellian story, 1984.

In a book about the Central Intelligence Agency's (CIA) pursuit of mind control technology, Dr. Delgado's work is also discussed.238 Dr. Delgado's research was reviewed in 1969 by Dr. Gottlieb, who worked for the CIA's Office of Research and Development (OR) while looking for the possible uses of this technology. At that time, the work was still crude, although the CIA shared Dr. Delgado's vision for techniques which would allow for a "psychocivilized society".

During this period, a neurosurgeon at Tulane University, Dr. Robert G. Heath, brought this prospect closer to reality with his work in electrical stimulation of the brain. As one author recently put it, "Like Dr. Delgado, the neurosurgeon concluded that ESB (Electrical Stimulation of the Brain) could evoke hallucinations as well as fear and pleasure. It could literally manipulate the human will at will."239

The CIA's interest in mind control began with the Korean War, during which the North Koreans demonstrated skills in the area of mind control not previously seen in the West. The CIA undertook a significant research effort into this area which extended to numerous related fiascos. Some of these were uncovered in subsequent scandalous revelations which included Canadian citizens being mentally manipulated without consent, treatment of thousands of university students and military personnel with LSD, etc.240

To the CIA, Dr. Delgado's "wireless" effects were thought-provoking. He discovered that animals could be placed within an electromagnetic field (EMF) and be manipulated without any physical contact. Moreover, "the fields Delgado uses are as low as one fiftieth the strength of the Earth's own magnetic fields...yet when the signal is tuned to precise frequencies, Delgado can do much more than make a monkey sleepy."241 These technologies are increasingly being recognized by other researchers, and the data base has reached a level of certainty not understood as little as ten years ago.

237 United Nations Educational, Scientific and Cultural Organization's Constitution.

238 Journey into Madness. The True Story or Secret CIA Mind Control and Medical Abuse, by Gordon Thomas. 1989, pges 276-279.

239 Ibid., pg 276.

240 Report to the President bv the Commission on CIA Activities Within The United States. June 1975, pages 225-231.

241 "The Mind Fields", by Kathleen McAuliffe, Omni Magazine, February 1985.

Today, a number of tools for brain entrainment are even being marketed. Very sophisticated brain biofeedback devices have also been developed which are being used to teach individuals to alter their own brain activity to more desirable states. These devices are being used to help people with various mental dysfunctions, and others reach higher peak performance mental states. These devices can be likened to mental gym equipment designed to create individually controlled exercise programs for the brain, with the outcome being increased mental functioning.

It should be kept in mind that John Heckscher, HAARP program manager, made clear in an interview that the frequencies and energies used in HAARP were controllable and in some applications would be pulsed in the 1-20 Hertz range. The ranges of frequency and energy levels, he also stated, were small, but distinguishable from the Earth's own pulsations.242 This point was further amplified by Heckscher when he said, "The ELF/ULF waves to be generated by HAARP through interaction with the polar electrojet will have power levels so small compared with me existing background that special integrating receivers wilt have to be used to detect them."243

The issue is one of controlled coherent signals, which as we stated above can be one fiftieth the energy level of the Earth's natural fields and still have profound effects on brain activity. The HAARP system creates a huge coherent controllable electromagnetic field which could be compared to a Delgado EMF, except HAARP's doesn't fill a room, it potentially fills a region the size of a large western state and, possibly, a hemisphere. Basically, the HAARP transmitter in this application will emit energy of the same level as the Earth's which is 50 times more than was needed in the wireless experiments of Dr. Delgado. What this means is that if HAARP is tuned to the right frequency, using just the right wave forms, mental disruption throughout a region could occur intentionally or as a side effect of the radio frequency transmissions.

Another important factor not thoroughly reviewed in the HAARP documents is cyclotron resonance. The HAARP signal uses this concept in its radiated energy. The effect of cyclotron resonance is a large increase in reactions in the ionosphere and in living organisms on the ground, under certain conditions. Many activities in living cells involve charged particles, and cyclotron resonance allows for the transfer of energy to cause ions to move more rapidly. It is cyclotron resonance which allows very low strength electromagnetic fields, together with earth's magnetic field, to produce significant biological effects. It occurs because the total effect has an impact on very specific particles when tuned to the right frequency. When combined with the Earth's normal magnetic fields, it is important to note, only ELF frequencies (1-100 Hertz, pulses per second) appear to cause these biological effects,

Cyclotron resonance can be visualized as a particle being spun like a coiled spring and then screwed right through the cell wall into the cell. This effect is one of the major considerations in electromedicine. To some degree this explains why non-

242 Interview of John Heckscher, HAARP Program Manager, with Jeane Manning, 2-21-1995.

243 Letter to Mr. Arther Grey, Secretary to the United States Department of Commerce, National Telecommunications and Information Administration, Interdepartment Radio Advisory Committee, Spectrum Planing Committee, Novembers, 1994.

ionizing levels of radiation produce the effects they do.244 In other words, cyclotron resonance provides a condition where a significant interaction can take place, causing chemical reactions or other physiological responses. The manipulation of energy, when applied to living systems, can be used for enhancing the potentials of people or for harming them. It is here where the reactions occur leading to good, neutral or negative health effects.

The concept of cyclotron resonance was applied to the research carried out by the U.S. Naval Medical Research Center. They were able to apply external fields in such a way as to affect the brain chemistry of rats.245 The same effects can be created in humans. The Navy research showed that they were able to affect the lithium ion, occurring naturally in the brain, so as to create the same effect as if they had treated the animal with a chemical introduction of lithium (lithium is used as a strong anti-depressant).246 Stated another way, you could say that by harmonizing or resonating with the frequency of naturally-occurring chemicals, you could amplify their potency in the body of the animal, thereby creating the same chemical changes as would have occurred with a massive dose of the chemical being administered.

One military application of this knowledge would be to introduce to adversaries on the battlefield a minute amount of a chemical compound in their water supply, air supply or by other means and then (after they consume the contaminants) transmit the right frequencies toward them to activate the otherwise benign chemicals. It would cause debilitating effects. The chemical introductions would be below generally accepted levels for toxic effects, and yet toxic effects would occur. This is a way a country could slide around international agreements regarding chemical warfare. This technique has not been lost on the military; it is clearly understood and described in Air Force documents.247, 248 These documents offer a clear example of the "electrical medicine" predicted by Dr. Patrick Flanagan in September, 1962. Unfortunately, the military's applications are being developed for the wrong purposes. The research base controlled by the United States government and others is being withheld from those engaged in human development and healing an unfortunate situation given the current state of the world and human health.

A better application of this technology would be to rebalance peoples' chemistry using a combination of low levels of chemicals with properly tuned transmitters. This technique is being applied to healing in Europe and Asia through electro-laser acupuncture techniques perfected by researchers in those areas. Dr. Reijo Makela has developed a system of treatment for use in altering body energy levels in such a way as to induce chemical changes leading to cures of disorders heretofore considered incurable. Dr. Makela's work involves treatment of cancer, diabetes and other debilitating diseases. He has lectured throughout Europe and Asia on the methods he uses and is recognized as a leader in alternative medicine. He has trained a

244 Cross Currents, The Perils of Electropollution. The Promise of Electromedicine. by Robert O. Becker, M.D., pg 238-237.

245 Ibid.

246 Ibid, pg 236-240.

247 Final Report On Biotechnology Research Requirements For Aeronautical Systems Through the Year 2000, Volume I, Southwest Research Institute, San Antonio, Texas, 1982.

248 Ibid.

number of technicians in Europe and operates clinics in Spain and Finland. As a result of his success with over 12,000 patients in twelve years, more than 600 former patients joined together to form a support organization for Dr. Makela's research. The idea that a group of patients would come together for such a purpose is unheard of in the United States.

The HAARP radiated energy pulses, and the wave forms cited in the contract documents, are within the ranges most cited by research scientists as those responsible for controlling and manipulating the mind and body. This is an important factor which the military never discloses in any of its documents associated with the HAARP project, most particularly the Environmental Impact Statement.

The effects that Delgado's teams in Spain are studying include behavior modifying in animals, inhibiting bacterial growth, altering migratory movements in snails and healing bone fractures in rats. Electromagnetic fields (EMF) have also produced some effects with significant negative ramifications, including genetic mutations in fruit flies and gross deformations in chick embryos.249, 250 What this implies is that these low level effects alter the building blocks of the cells, which then alter the body components; which then alter the body. This translates into big problems for people when applied to human physiology. Scientists have known for some time that high levels of this type of radiation can heat up (ionizing radiation) the body, but they have assumed that low levels were not a problem. However, the current research, including military research, indicates that this is not the case. "For better or worse, weak electromagnetic fields are emerging as a potent biological force - a discovery with staggering implications for future medicine, science, industry and perhaps even the military... There is growing concern among experts that EMFs have been - or will be - deployed as invisible weapons to disrupt brain functioning and health."25l

The work of Delgado would not be particularly alarming if it were isolated. However, "animals exposed to radiation from radio waves show subtle changes in blood cell count, immunity, the nervous system, and behavior, according to a 1984 EPA document."252 The majority of these observed effects were from exposures which were within the government approved safety thresholds.

Here is where the Office of Naval Research, our "good neighbors" on the HAARP project, return to the scene. These are the same people that insist that the HAARP project is safe and is operating within the safety levels determined to be safe for humans by the government. However, United States safety levels are 1000 times LESS strict than the Soviets, which raises the question of why the United States standards are so low and what the Soviets observed to convince them that safety considerations required their higher standards.

249 The Mind Fields", by Kathleen McAuliffe, Omni Magazine, February 1985.
250 Cross Currents. The Perils of Electropollution. The Promise of Electromedicine, by Robert O. Becker, M.D., pg 210.
251 "The Mind Fields", by Kathleen McAuliffe, Omni Magazine, February 1985.
252 Ibid.

The Navy supported an international research effort to duplicate Delgado's chick embryo experiments by initiating Project Henhouse, which involved six laboratories. In 1988, the results were reported in a meeting of the Bioelectromagnetics Society with five of the six laboratories reporting "apparently, very low-level, very low frequency, pulsed magnetic fields contribute to increased abnormality incidence in early embryonic chicks."253 This study which was paid for with Naval resources showed that low levels of radiation could cause health problems.

The Navy is aware of all of the global research going on in the area of non-ionizing (non heat producing) radiations. The Office of Naval Research has been collecting published scientific reports on the biological effects of non-ionizing electromagnetic radiation, and publishing a compiled set of abstracts, since 1974. This set of abstracts, in digest form, has grown to the point where over a thousand papers are listed each year.254 These scientific papers show differing results, and can be selectively used to make any number of points which might be positive, neutral or negative. The point made here is that the HAARP folks reduced this huge body of research to a couple of lines in the Environmental Impact Statement, which is wholly inadequate, considering the power levels to be employed with their "ionospheric heater".

The analogy can be made about the old story that a good lawyer can argue any point from either side and win by selecting the right citations. It is no different for the HAARP planners. They can selectively choose the research needed to demonstrate that there are no ill effects from their radio frequency transmitter and then, across the country on another project, select the research they want to show the opposite effect, in order to gain funding for a new weapon. In the case of HAARP, there are potential negative effects which are not being disclosed.

A neuroscientist at the Loma Linda, California, Veterans Administration Hospital, Dr. Ross Adey, has demonstrated that the brain waves of animals can be manipulated. He has shown that they can be locked in phase with external pulsating waves, which thereby affect subtle changes in behavior including enhanced learning. He has further demonstrated, in work with Dr. Suzanne Bawin, that fields too weak to trigger a nerve impulse can alter the way calcium ions bind to cell surfaces, causing an array of chemical reactions within the cell itself.255 What this means is that the kind of chemical changes which are needed to cause alterations in thinking or health can he started by very small amounts of controlled power, through understood and manipulatable means. This point is extremely important when contemplating the HAARP technologies.

Adey is also the only U.S. scientist to test a Russian machine which generates pulsed radio frequencies. Combined with other stimuli, it has been reported

253 Cross Currents. The Perils of Electropollution. The Promise ot Electromedicine. by Robert O. Becker, M.D., pg 210.

254 Ibid, pg 214.

255 "The Mind Fields", by Kathleen McAuliffe, Omni Magazine, February 1985.

to induce deep sleep. When interviewed, Adey acknowledged that the device worked, but refused to comment on the United States military's use of this technology.256, 257

A lengthy article in the Wall Street Journal discussed the direction of the military in the development of what they were calling, at the time, "non-lethal" weapons. The article explored the use of anew class of weapons which could be used to disrupt communications, radars and other electronic equipment. In the article, retired Lt. General Richard Trefry, a military advisor to President Bush, said, "They're all real." he then went on to say, "But you're bordering on classified stuff here."258 The article described a series of new developments leading to these technologies which did not exist ten years before. Time schedules for the development of these technologies had been established in 1982, with the systems expected to be ready for use in the early to middle 1990's.259 One of the major contributors to the "nonlethal" effort was John Alexander, mentioned in Chapter Two, who had written an earlier article for Military Review magazine about "the new mental battlefield". The article described the emerging technologies for use in telepathic weapons and systems which would interfere with the brain's electrical functioning. This article caught the attention of the military, who began to research this area.

John Alexander was one of the prime movers in the advanced development of nonlethal systems, from his office at Los Alamos National Laboratories. He pursued his interests in obscure science and parapsychology, connecting with Janet Morris with whom he wrote a book on mind training techniques.260 In putting the book together, she recruited Ray Cline, a former deputy director of the CIA, who opened doors to the White House and Pentagon according to a Wall Street Journal article.261 The use of the technologies was apparently known by Alexander to be problematic, because some of the weapon systems would violate international agreements. Moreover, individuals began to raise concerns suggesting that the use of "nonlethals" might cause escalation, rather than control, of volatile conflicts.

The Pentagon's nonlethal study group concluded that a major effort should be made to develop these technologies, and suggested that President Bush announce a new initiative in this area similar to President Reagan's announcement of the Strategic Defense Initiative ("Star Wars"),262

Military officials objected that such a "new initiative" announcement might have the effect of spurring other governments and possible adversaries to develop their own new systems and that it might cause policy makers to begin "political

256 The Mind Fields", by Kathleen McAuliffe, Omni Magazine, February 1985.

257 Resonance, Newsletter of the Bioelectromagnetics SIG, Number 28, May 1995, Judy Wall, Editor, 684 C.R. 535, Sumtervilte, Florida, USA. (This is a special Interest Group of M.E.N.S.A.)

258 The Wall Street Journal, "Nonlethal Arms, New Class of Weapons Could Incapacitate Foe Yet Limit Casualties, by Thomas E. Ricks, January 4, 1993, page A1 and A4.

259 Final Report On Biotechnology Research Requirements For Aeronautical Systems Through the Year 2000. Volumes I and II, Southwest Research Institute, San Antonio, Texas, 1982.

260 The Wall Street Journal, "Nonlethal Arms, New Class of Weapons Could Incapacitate Foe Yet Limit Casualties, by Thomas E. Ricks, January 4, 1993, page A1 and A4.

261 Ibid.

262 Ibid.

meddling" into this militarily promising area. These military objections drove the program into even more layers of secrecy, and Janet Morris and Ray Cline were cut out of the inner circle. The policy makers then decreed that the nonlethal technologies would be referred to in softer terms as "disabling systems" in the future.263

The new technology race was already on, and it appeared America's "adversaries" may have already made significant advances in the development of new weapon systems. The limits for microwaves were set in the United States 1,000 times higher than the level considered safe in the former Soviet Union. The reason that the Soviets set their safety standard as high as they did was because they detected biological effects at levels ignored by the West.264,265 The Russians abandoned the thermal model that the U.S. Military ascribed to when setting American standards in the 1950's (standards were subsequently adopted by civilian regulators).

The thermal model only acknowledges heating effects as potentially debilitating, and disregards the lower level radiations which also have significant effects when interacting with the fields of living things. The Soviets showed that electromagnetic fields, well within the U.S. "safety" standards, could disrupt heart rhythms, blood pressure and metabolism. In addition, Soviet scientist A.S. Presman said these fields can produce "visual, acoustic, and tactile sensations in man as well as emotional states in animals, (inducing everything) from suppressed states similar to narcosis to excited states reaching epilepsy."266 Presman went on to discuss the pronounced negative impact on creatures, from the embryonic stage up to the beginning of sexual maturity. The idea that genetic alteration could be caused by low-level electromagnetic fields causing deformation, death or other debilitating effects was the problem. The lack of mainstream medical understanding, beyond that found in leading edge research facilities, was the underlying barrier to recognizing the risks. What all of this means is that real damage to living things, including people, is likely being done by use of transmitters like HAARP. While on the other hand, if we gained a better understanding of these non-thermal levels of energy positive applications could be more widely used.

The Beam Team

From the 1960's through the 1970's, there were news and intelligence reports of microwave beams being directed at the U.S. Embassy in Moscow. There are some indications that beaming of the Embassy was also conducted as late as 1983. This beaming has been the subject of much speculation over the years. The government has not released the full story, and for the most part it remains

263 The Wail Street Journal, "Nonlethal Arms, New Class ot Weapons Could Incapacitate Foe Yet Limit Casualties, by Thomas E. Ricks, January 4,1993, page A1 and A4..

264 "The Mind Fields", by Kathleen McAuliffe, Omni Magazine, February 1985.

265 Low-Intensity,Conflict and Modern Technology, Lt Col. David J. Dean USAF, Editor, Air University Press, Center for Aerospace Doctrine, Research, and Education, Maxwell Air Force Base, Alabarna, June 1986.

266"The Mind Fields", by Kathleen McAuliffe, Omni Magazine, February 1985.

classified.267, 268 Speculated effects of the radiation include health impairment and mind manipulation,269 Beginning in 1965, the government tested embassy personnel for genetic damage which may have been caused by the microwave beaming. At the same time, they launched operation Pandora, where monkeys were exposed to the same type of signals in order to measure the effects

While government representatives have maintained that there were no ill affects from the microwaves, the results of the embassy personnel testing and Pandora remain classified.270 Even though the impact of Russian microwave radiation is unclear, it turns out that there may very well have been some effect. When Dr. Gottlieb, the MKULTRA program director for the CIA, testified to the United States Congress, he said that when President Nixon went to the USSR in 1971 members of his party showed abnormal behavior including crying and depression. The spy community already knew that the Soviets had developed microwave beaming technologies which can affect mind, memory and health. Soviet research had already shown that it was also possible to create hallucinations and significant perceptual changes in people.271

The CIA's use of mind altering technologies is not new. Under MKULTRA, the CIA conducted memory experiments on thousands of unknowing people across the United States in 180 hospitals, research centers and prisons. The CIA used LSD and other drugs, brainwashing, sensory deprivation, hypnosis and many other mind control techniques until 1976 when the United States Senate investigated these practices.272, 273, 274 It appears the names of the programs and their approaches changed but the programs may have continued beyond 1976.275

Meanwhile the Soviets had moved way ahead of the United States in their development of mind war technologies. They had perfected a device called the Lida which produced an Extremely Low Frequency (ELF) pulsing field. Lida was used to put prisoners of war into trance, so that secrets could be extracted from them more readily. As mentioned earlier, this device was tested by Dr. Ross Adey in the United States at the Loma Linda VA Hospital. The Soviets went on to discover that by slight manipulation - by reversing brain polarity (by passing very low voltage current through the front of the brain to me back) - they could induce deep sleep. Mounting evidence also indicated that they may have perfected "telepathic hypnosis" which could be deployed from hundreds of miles away from the target person.276

267 Cross Currents, The Perils of Electropollution, The Promise of Electromedicine. by Robert O. Becker, M.D.
268 Super-Memory- The Revolution, by Sheila Ostrander and Lynn Schroeder,1991.
269 Ibid.
270 The Mind Fields", by Kathleen McAuliffe, Omni Magazine, February 1985.
271 Super-Memory- The Revolution, by Sheila Ostrander and Lynn Schroeder, 1991, pges. 298-299.
272 Journev into Madness. The True Story of Secret CIA Mind Control and Medical Abuse, by Gordon Thomas, 1989

273 Super-Memory' The Revolution, by Sheila Ostrander and Lynn Schroeder,1991, pges. 292-304,
274 Report to the President by the Commission on CIA Activities Within The United States. June 1975, pages 225-231,
275 Journey Into Madness. The True Story of Secret CIA Mind Control and Medical Abuse, by Gordon Thomas, 1989.
276 Super-Memory- The Revolution, by Sheila Ostrander and Lynn Schroeder,1991, pges. 292-304,

The Soviets took their technologies a huge jump forward by 1975. It was that year that they began using seven giant radio transmitters to pulse ELF waves in the 3.26 to 17.54 megaHertz range. These waves were pulsed at 6 and 11 Hertz- key brain wave rhythms - and became known to ham radio operators as the "woodpecker" signal. The story, like the HAARP story, indicated that these were used for communication with submarines, but many believe that the negative side effects were intentional.277 These "side effects" have been speculated to have caused communications interference, power failures, mood alterations over significant distances, affecting a large percentage of the population and weather modifications which have had a devastating effect on food production since the 1970's.278

A brilliant electrophysiologist, Dr. Makela studied physics and chemistry in 1953-59, followed by a two year study in psychology and additional studies in electrophysiology. He continued his education with advanced studies in Western and Chinese medicine and acupuncture, and has practiced medicine as either a research scientist or physician for over forty years.

During a 1994 visit with Dr. Makela, Dr. Nick Begich discussed the HAARP project. The idea that the HAARP system could be used as a transmitting system for brain entrainment was explored, and it reminded Dr. Makela of a number of devices with whose features he was familiar. The idea that HAARP could create various wave forms across a large segment of the electromagnetic spectrum was of concern, considering the health risks. This system had the possibility of being misused, and the risks had not been well defined. Inadvertently there could also be negative health effects if the operators were unaware of the consequences of pulsed electromagnetic radiations in the wave forms they were using - waves which were being bounced back to the earth from the ionosphere.

In particular, when reviewing the HAARP materials, Dr. Makela was reminded of a particular device which was marketed for a short time in Japan. This device was a radio transmitter which carried a pulsed wave {6-12 Hertz). The pulses were in resonance with the radio waves, so that the radio waves acted as a carrier wave to create the desired effect. The device was used to relax or focus attention. The effect was created wirelessly and at a distance.279 It should be remembered that a United States military representative has already acknowledged that they intend to use HAARP to transmit pulsed radio frequency radiation (which we assert, if modulated in just the right way and with the right wave form, could cause serious negative health effects on people and animals). HAARP specifications call for a very versatile set of parameters[280] which can do what has otherwise only been demonstrated in the laboratory or under other controlled conditions disrupt minds and create negative health effects.

---

277 Super-Memory- The Revolution, by Sheila Ostrander and Lynn Schroeder,1991, pges. 299- 302.

278' ibid.

279 Dr. Nick Begich visits and conversations with Dr. Reijo Makela in Finland, November 1994.

280 Office of Naval Research, Contract Number N00014-92-C-0210, ARCO Power Technologies Incorporated as Contractors, September 16, 1992 with Amendments through October 19,1993.

The United States military is very familiar with these technologies. Captain Paul Tyler was the director of the U.S. Navy's Electromagnetic Radiation Project from 1970 through 1977. He was quoted in a February 1985 Omni article about the effects of electromagnetic radiations. He concluded that effects which could be stimulated chemically could also be stimulated electrically. "With the right electromagnetic field, for example, you might be able to produce the same effects as psychoactive drugs."281 The ideas first kicked around by the CIA and early researchers were now being pursued by the military for use in controlling human behavior - a prospect of profound implications.

Another player in this seemingly-disconnected group was Arthur Guy. Under contract to the United States Air Force, he helped compile the Radiofrequency Radiation Dosimetry Handbook. The book is the only one of its kind that explores a number of areas required for the development of weapon systems. In that publication, Guy's work from the University of Washington was described. At the University of Washington he exposed rats to low levels of electromagnetic radiation. The effect of these exposures included immunological stress and increases in the formation of tumors - four times the rate of unexposed animals. This study produced negative effects at radiation levels twenty times below the established United States safety thermal level!282

The research in non-thermal effects is being conducted throughout the world. In Germany, the Deutsche Forschungsgemein-schaft - the equivalent of the American Academy of Sciences - announced their research results concerning ELF. They concluded that "nonthermal effects due to EMF exposures can be triggered in living cells under selected conditions." Reportedly, their research in these areas would continue.283

This chapter has shown that the state of the technology in the understanding of human physiology continues to advance at a very rapid rate. The result has been the discovery of effects not previously known or well understood. The controversy which still surrounds these areas is not so much one of "does it or doesn't it work", but more about widespread ignorance of the impact of energy fields which surround all life.

Scientists in various fields tend to specialize. Moreover, basic research is delayed - sometimes for decades - in being integrated into applied technologies. This occurs largely because old standards die hard and new breakthroughs in knowledge are slowly applied. New research takes many years to migrate from the high-tech defense laboratories to the practicing physician. In the interim, the military has free rein to use these new technologies for weapon systems rather than healing systems.

281 "The Mind Fields", by Kathleen McAuliffe, Omni Magazine, February 1985.

282 Cross Currents. The Perils of Electropollution. The Promise of Electromedicine. by Robert O. Becker, M.D., pges 194-197,

283 German Workshop on Mechanisms of EMF Interactions, Microwave News, November/December, 1991.

Chapter Twenty-four

ZAPPING THE "NONLETHAL" WAY

The area of "nonlethal" technologies has in recent years gained increased public attention. The various agencies of the federal government for over a decade gradually increased public releases regarding this technology. The "sensitizing" of people to the acceptance of these new weapons has slowly worked its way into open view. Introducing these technologies has been carefully orchestrated to avoid "change shock" and to increase the probability of public acceptance.

The possibilities offered to the defense, justice and intelligence communities in "nonlethal" systems development were enthusiastically embraced by the various agencies, Eldon Byrd of the Naval Surface Weapons Center was commissioned in 1981 and 1982, to investigate the potential for developing electromagnetic devices which could be used as 'non-lethal' weapons for riot control, hostage removal, embassy security and other clandestine operations. Byrd concluded that remote manipulation of the mind was feasible. Funding was discontinued in 1982 as far as the public knows. It is more likely that this type of research was classified and moved to other facilities and to new researchers[284] in the "black" world of hidden research projects. This type of technology would not advance beyond the concept stage without becoming a "black" project based on "national security" assertions by the military.

The Nonlethal Conference

In 1986, the United States' attorney general held a conference on the development of these new high-tech weapons. It was summarized the following year[285] in a report discussing problems and solutions for what was believed to be an area with significant future possibilities. Several areas were reported to offer new possibilities for the Department of Justice.

The Department of Justice's report disclosed that:

> "Participants also discussed the use of various wave lengths and forms of administration of electromagnetic energy as a non-lethal weapon. A substantial amount of preliminary research has been conducted in this area...One conference participant noted that scientific knowledge of human physiology is progressing to the point where it may soon be possible to target specific physiologic systems with specific frequencies of electromagnetic radiation to produce much more subtle and fine-tuned effects than those produced by photic driving."

Photic driving is the use of visible light pulsed at frequencies which have been shown to impact the brain. In some people they cause epileptic seizures. The report went on:

[284] "The Mind Fields", by Kathleen McAuliffe, Omni Magazine, February 1985.

[285] Report on the Attorney General's Conference on Less Than Lethal Weapons, by Sherri Sweetman, March 1987, U.S. Department of Justice, National Institute of Justice.

"There is some evidence (and a good deal of supposition) that sustained, extremely low frequency (ELF) radiation can produce nausea or disorientation, One researcher has subjected animals to ELF electromagnetic radiation through electrode implants, and feels that similar results could be produced from afar, without electrodes. One participant suggested that ideally, one might like to develop the ability to design these electromagnetic fields for specialized use, for instance to produce sleep or confusion. It is known that sleep can be induced by electrodes in the brain, and Russian scientists claim to be able to produce sleep from afar (electrosleep). "286

What these conference participants were referring to was the work conducted by Dr. Jose Delgado of Yale University and the Russian Lida machine tested by Dr. Adey, referenced earlier.

Los Alamos and Friends

The report on the Department of Justice's 1986 conference also noted, "The nature of weapons to be tested and the necessity for the tests must not be a secret of the kind whose 'leak' would result in an exaggerated expose and associated public outcry." The report went on to recognize that the military had made a number of advances in these areas but that these advances were classified. It also recommended that the military should develop the technologies for less than lethal weapons, because defense contracts were large and technically sophisticated enough to do the job.

The concern about open investigation must have been lain aside when the true extent of the military advancements were eventually realized. The idea of an open discussion of these emerging areas was abandoned to the shadowy world of secrecy and hidden agendas. The next major conference where the military unveiled its new technologies to the Justice Department was classified and not open to the press or public.287 That which was to be open had become buried in secrecy by some of the same people who limited access to knowledge in the past. The public outcry they sought to avoid is now justifiably being made by many opposed to such weapons.

In November, 1993 about 400 scientists gathered at John Hopkins University Applied Physics Lab to discuss their work in developing non-lethal weapons technologies, including radiofrequency radiation (RF), electromagnetic pulse (EMP), ELF fields, lasers and chemicals. The meeting was classified, and no detailed reports were ever publicly released.288 According to the press statements and the conference agenda (which was released) the programs developing the technologies had made significant advances, Enough advancement had been made to establish a secrecy veil and classify the conference. This conference took the whole program of nonlethal weapons a step forward by bringing the leading experts together for this event. The conference was sponsored by Los Alamos National Laboratory and focused on both military and law enforcement uses for these

286 Report on me Attorney General's Conference on Less Than Lethal Weapons, by Sherri Sweetman, March 1987, U.S. Department of Justice, National Institute of Justice.

287 The Wall Street Journal, "Nonlethal Arms, New Class of Weapons Could Incapacitate Foe Yet Limit Casualties, by Thomas E. Ricks, January 4,1993, page A1 and A4.

288 Microwave News November/December 1993, Military on Nonlethal Weapons: 'A very Attractive Option'.

technologies. Dr. Edward Teller and U.S. Attorney General Janet Reno were the scheduled keynote speakers at the conference, although Reno was unable to attend.289 (The same Dr. Teller, "father of the H-bomb", had sold the use of thermonuclear weapons to make deep water ports in Alaska in the early 1960's, promoted a Star Wars weapons system for the North Slope of Alaska in the late 1980's, and was now the cheerleader for nonlethal electromagnetics.)

Dr. Clay Easterly of Oak Ridge National Laboratories led a session on ELF/EMFs. "My major point was that there seem to be some biological sensitivities or responses to ELF fields that could be useful for nonlethal technology." He could not discuss the specific applications because the information was classified by the military. He went on to say that the military was interested in the use of non ionizing (non thermal) radiation which could be used for disabling enemy electronics, although his presentation dealt with uses which would affect people.290 This again demonstrates the level of knowledge which the military ignores in HAARP disclosures to the public - potential uses or risks associated with the generation of ELF radiations over large areas of Alaska and eventually, the planet.

A number of papers were presented at the conference, and gave the latest information on applied technologies in this area. Dr. Henry Brisker from the U.S. Army Research Laboratory presented work dealing with High Power Microwave Technology, while Dr. George Baker of the Defense Nuclear Agency, presented a paper titled "RF Weapons: A Very Attractive Nonlethal Option".

What is obvious from the number of participants and the scope of the subject matter is that the development of these ideas in new military hardware did not just arrive on the scene but rather, had been a part of the military agenda for some time. The current emphasis on these technologies reflects the level of interest of the government, and the increased visibility the government is giving these areas indicates an intention to use these systems in a more open manner.291 It is common practice to let things like these types of technological advances come out in small bits in order to "test the waters" of public opinion. In this way the population can be co-opted into accepting greater levels of intrusion by governmental agencies. The idea is to indoctrinate by being taught to believe, Tather than being given all of the facts so that a prudent person could think about the issues and make reasoned decisions. The contrast can be better stated as; "propaganda -versus- persuasion by reason".

These technologies extend beyond the Air Force, CIA and Navy. "The U.S. Army has its own product - a radiofrequeney (RF) weapon. In the August 24, 1987 issue of Defense News, John Rosado of Harry Diamond Labs in Adephi, MD, is quoted as saying that 'the nature of warfare will be completely changed by the use of (RF) weapons." Rosado also noted that RF radiation could be used over a wide battlefield

---

259 Microwave News November/December 1993, Military on Nonlethal Weapons: 'A very Attractive Option'.

290 Ibid.

291 Non-Lethal Defense, a classified Conference sponsored by Los Alamos National Laboratory, November 16-17,1993.

with phased arrays... ".292 A phased array antenna system is what HAARP uses to send its signals to the ionosphere.

From Adversaries to Allies

Now that the "Cold War" is over and there is increased cooperation between the superpowers and former foes, Russian and American scientists have begun cooperating in a number of research efforts including electromagnetics. The Soviet counterpart to Los Alamos National Laboratory, Arzamas-16 located east of Moscow, has begun collaborating with the U.S.A.

In the early 1990's, the two tabs worked together on research regarding "an electromagnetic super generator capable of creating a pulse of electrical power greater than any found in nature." A second test was planned for "America's only similar pulsed power program", located at Los Alamos National Laboratory.293 The nuclear detonations in the upper atmosphere which were once used to create electromagnetic pulses could now be created using the technology developed in the Eastlund patents.

Electromagnetic pulse weapons also are the subject of ongoing research into new "nonlethal" systems. These types of systems present the greatest challenges and risks to health. HAARP represents more than an experimental atmospheric physics device. It has the potential for profound and far reaching effects by delivering dangerous electromagnetic pulses (BMP).

The Russian "non-lethal" or perhaps more accurately, the lethal technologies, were discussed in a 1993 article. It discloses the Cold War development of a device called a "gyrotron", which was designed to "sweep the sky of Western warplanes" by using high energy micro-waves. The article described this weapon as being able to cleanse the atmosphere of chemicals which cause ozone depletion. In developing the weapon system, the Russians discovered that this technology could be used to help the ozone problem or otherwise alter the chemical composition of the upper atmosphere294.

The technology designed to sweep the sky of warplanes has the same use envisioned by Nikola Tesla in the 1940's when he offered his technology to the United States government. Further, Eastlund described how his patents could be used to alter the chemical composition of the ionosphere, including adding ozone or destroying other selected chemicals.

The gyrotron described in the article was developed as one of the "woodpecker" radio transmitters, and works on the same principles as the Western devices. During the Cold War, the Russians' work was much more advanced than the work being done in the United States. Scientists from Russia are now collaborating with Lawrence Livermore National Laboratory on these projects.

292 Microwave News, May/June, 1988.

293 "From Russia with Love...at Los Alamos?, Intelligence Report, Parade Special Supplement, 1993?

294 "Calif.'s Livermore Weighs Plan to Use Russian Technology", by Tom Schmitz, The Journal of Commerce, April 8, 1993.

From National Defense to the Justice Department

On July 21, 1994, Dr. Christopher Lamb, Director of Policy Planning, issued a draft Department of Defense directive which would establish a policy for non-lethal weapons. The policy was intended to take effect January 1, 1995, and formally connected the military's non-lethal research to civilian law enforcement agencies.

The government's plan to vise pulsed electromagnetic and radio frequency systems as a nonlethal technology for domestic Justice Department use rings the alarm for some observers. Nevertheless, the plan for integrating these systems is moving forward. Coupling these uses with expanded military missions is even more disturbing. This combined mission raises additional constitutional questions for Americans regarding the power of the federal government.295

In interviews with members of the Defense Department the development of this policy was corrfirmed.296 In those February 1995, discussions, it was discovered that these policies were internal to agencies and were not subject to any public review process.

In its current draft form, the policy gives highest priority to development of those technologies most likely to get dual use, i.e. law enforcement and military applications. According to this document, non-lethal weapons are to be used on the government's domestic "adversaries". The definition of "adversary" has been significantly enlarged in the policy:

"The term 'adversary' is used above in its broadest sense, including those who are not declared enemies but who are engaged in activities we wish to stop. This policy does not preclude legally authorized domestic use of the nonlethal weapons by United States military forces in support of taw enforcement."297

This allows use of the military in actions against the citizens of the country that they are supposed to protect. This policy statement begs the question; who are the enemies that are engaged in activities they wish to stop, what are those activities, and who will make the decisions to stop these activities?

An important aspect of non-lethal weapon systems is that the name non-lethal is intentionally misleading. The Policy adds, "It is important that the public understand that just as lethal weapons do not achieve perfect lethality, neither will 'non-lethal' weapons always be capable of precluding fatalities and undesired collateral damage",298 In other words, you might still destroy property and kill people with the use of these new weapons.

295 Department of Defense Directive, Policy for Non-Lethal Weapons, Office of the Assistant Secretary of Defense, Draft July 21, 1994.

296 Interviews in late February by Nick Begich.

297 Department of Defense Directive, Poiicy for Non-Lethal Weapons, Office of the Assistant Secretary of Defense, Draft July 21,1994.

298 Ibid.

Pentagon officials said they would like to get $41 million in 1995, for developing these weapons which include their electromagnetic pulse systems.299 This "meager" sum has a good deal of reach, because it is for implementing already understood technology, for building prototype weapons out of mostly "off the shelf parts. The only challenge would be putting them together. The basic research for these technologies was done with "black budget" money. (These are funds which are so secret even the Congress does not know how the money will be spent, behind which organizations like the CIA, government laboratories run by the military and other intelligence organizations, hide their programs.) The Pentagon actually received $50 million to be used jointly with the Department of Justice in developing these "non-lethal" weapons.300

In press statements, the government continues to downplay the risks associated with such systems, even though the lethal potential is described in context of their own usage policy. In Orwellian double speak, what is nonlethal can be lethal.

The development of these technologies is being jointly managed by the Non-Lethal Weapons Steering Committee, which is co-chaired by the Undersecretary of Defense for Acquisition and Technology and the Office of the Assistant Secretary of Defense for Special Operations and Low Intensity Conflict.301 This crystallizes the new Justice Department and Department of Defense alliance for future law enforcement and military initiatives, in the United States.

The weaving together of Department of Defense missions with civilian Department of Justice missions is unprecedented. Not since the Civil War has the military machinery - except in very limited riot control actions - been turned against United States citizens. The idea of using these dangerous and intrusive systems is counter to good public policy. This raises serious questions regarding use of our Department of Defense for domestic police actions, which may be a violation of constitutional law by being in conflict with the narrowly-defined federal use of the military "for the national defense".

International Alarm Bells Begin to Sound

Questions are not just being raised by the authors of this book, they are being raised by the International Committee of the Red Cross. In their report from mid-1994,302 a number of points were raised.

The idea of "war without death" was not new but began in the I950's, according to the report. The military interest in these systems dealt with chemical weapons, later advancing to radiation weapons. The report looked at the ramifications of international law regarding use of these new technologies. It pointed

299 The wall street Journal, "Nonlethal Arms, New Class of Weapons Could Incapacitate Foe Yet Limit Casualties, by Thomas E. Ricks, January 4,1993, page A1 and A4.

300 Warren Hough, "High-Tech Civilian Control Studied; Secret Pentagon - DoJ Memo of Understanding, 'Non-lethal' weapons under development, are being added to the government arsenal in its war against its own citizens.", The Spotlight, July 31, 1995.

301 Perry Plans to Launch Nonlethal Warfare Effort, Defense News September 19-25, 1994.

302 "Expert Meeting on Certain Weapon Systems and on Implementation Mechanisms in International Law", Report of the International Committee of the Red Cross, Geneva, Switzerland, May 30 - June 1, 1994. Issued July 1994.

out weaknesses in the international conventions regarding the use of chemical weapons:

"Therefore, when the Convention (Chemical Weapons Convention) comes into force next year, activities involving them - activities such as development, production, stockpiling and use - will become illegal, unless their purpose is a purpose that is expressly not prohibited under the Convention. One such purpose is 'law enforcement including domestic riot control purposes'[303] Unfortunately, the Convention does not define what it means by law enforcement' (whose law? what law? enforcement where? by whom?), though it does define what it means by 'riot control agent', namely 'any chemical...which can produce rapidly in humans sensory irritation or disabling physical effects which disappear within a short time following termination of exposure'. Stales parties are enjoined 'not to use riot control agents as a method of warfare' ". 304

In other words, we can use on our own citizens what we cannot use in warfare with real enemies who are threats to national security. This explains why the development of nonlethals has moved out of the Department of Defense into the Department of Justice. For the Department of Defense to continue to work on these weapons, as instruments of war, is now illegal under international law. The Red Cross report went on to discuss the shift from weapons of war to police tools which they called - "riot control agents".

What does this mean for Americans? This places Americans, and citizens of other counties, in a lesser protected class than individuals seeking to destroy our counties - our real adversaries. This language really represents a way for countries to continue to develop these weapons. This is a loop hole in the agreement. So while the treaty looks good on the surface, it is hollow rhetoric underneath.

In another section of the report, "Future Weapons Using High Power Microwaves" are discussed at length. This section describes microwave frequencies, for HAARP developed for use in weapons against machines and people.

One of the uses described is an Electromagnetic Pulse (EMP) weapon which gives an operator the same ability to wipe out electronic circuits as a nuclear blast would provide. The main difference is that this new technology is controllable, and can be used without violating nuclear weapons treaties.

This section of the report then described energy levels needed for the following to occur:

- "Overheats and damages animal tissue."
- Possibly affects nervous system."

---

303 Chemical Weapons Convention, Article II 9(d).

304 "Expert Meeting on Certain Weapon Systems and on Implementation Mechanisms in International Law", Report of the International Committee of the Red Cross, Geneva, Switzerland, May 30 - June 1, 1994. Issued July 1994.

* "Threshold for microwave hearing."

* "Causes bit errors in unshielded computers."

* "Burns out unprotected receiver diodes in antennas."

The effects are based on radio frequency radiation being pulsed "between 10 and 100 pulses per second". The report confirmed that non-thermal effects were being researched. These non-thermal effects included damage to human health when the effects occurred "within so-called modulation frequency windows (10 Hertz is one such window305) or power density windows306".

The way these weapons work was clearly described when the report noted their effect on machines:

"A HPM (High Power Microwave) weapon employs a high power, rapidly pulsating microwave beam that penetrates electronic components. The pulsing action internally excites the components, rapidly generating intense heat which causes them to fuse or melt, thus destroying the circuit."

Tesla described his speed of light system as being able to melt aircraft hundreds of miles away. The Red Cross report echoes Tesla:

"HPM (weapons) attack at the speed of light thus making avoidance of the beam impossible, consequently negating the advantage of weapon systems such as high velocity tactical missiles."

In other words, with this kind of weapon there is no machine which could get by this invisible wall of directed energy. HAARP sets in motion the beginning of a system which could have these effects over the entire world.

In the last section of the report, the power levels that the Red Cross expects by the end of the decade are set at 100,000,000,000 watts307 - the same 100 gigawatt level "desired" by HAARP planners.308

Another report on non-lethal technologies, issued by the Council on Foreign Relations points out that, "The Nairobi Convention, to which the United States is a signatory, prohibits the broadcast of electronic signals into a sovereign state without its consent in peacetime. "309

305 Discussion with Dr. Patrick Flanagan on August 2, 1995 (by co-author Begich).

306 "Expert Meeting on Certain Weapon Systems and on Implementation Mechanisms in International Law", Report of the International Committee of the Red Cross, Geneva, Switzerland, May 30 - June 1, 1994. Issued July 1994.

307 "Expert Meeting on Certain Weapon Systems and on Implementation Mechanisms in International law", Report of the International Committee of the Red Cross, Geneva, Switzerland, May 30 - June 1, 1994. Issued July 1994.

308 PL/GP Technical Memorandum No. 195; "Presentations from the HAARP Workshop on Ionospheric Heating Diagnostics, 30 April - 2 May 1991, Phillips Laboratory (AFSC), Hanscom AFB, MA. 01731-5000"; Editor, Major Drew Fisher; October 22,1991.

309 "Non-Lethal Technologies; Military Options and implications", Report of an Independent Task Force sponsored by the Council on Foreign Relations, Malcom H. Weiner, Chairman, released June 22, 1995.

This report opens discussion of the use of these weapons against terrorists and drug traffickers.310 The CFR report recommends that this be done secretly so that the victims do not know where the attack is from, or if there even is an attack. There is a problem with this approach. The use of these weapons, even against these kinds of individuals, may be in violation of United States law in that it presumes guilt rather than innocence. In other words the police, CIA, DEA or other enforcement organization becomes the judge, jury and executioner.

The Universal Tool - HAARP

In a summary document produced at Maxwell Air Force Base, the real potentials of these weapon applications for the universal military tool, HAARP, are described. Although the HAARP literature produced by the military is silent on the topics discussed below, the Air Force showed, by this publication, that they are well aware of the potential use of a transmitting system like HAARP. More importantly politically is the "Newt Gingrich spin" placed on the development efforts in the foreword, by today's Speaker of the House, to the military's report on this subject.

The foreward to Low-intensity Conflict and Modern Technology was written by Congressman Newt Gingrich in 1986 before he rose to the position of Speaker. This position makes him currently the third most powerful person in the United States government. Gingrich's views on "low intensity conflicts" become relevant when considered along with the development of non-lethal technology. He focuses on creating approaches to conflict which can dispense with radicals who, in his words, "engage quietly in dirty little wars in faraway places with almost no regard for legal nicety or the technical problems of international law".311

The ability of the United States to meet these challenges is also discussed in the loreword as Gingrich wrote:

"The organization of power in the State and Defense Departments and the relationships between Congress, the news media, and the executive branch are all unsuited to fighting low-intensity conflict effectively."

He goes on to describe the limits of the military in addressing these types of conflicts, and commends the military foT developing the policy doctrine and the new technology directions of the Air Force put forward in the book. Newt Gingrich apparently remains a fan of non-lethal weapons, which he views as useful technology for domestic law enforcement. Specifically, he said, when commenting on these technologies, that they "are our real peace dividend" and that they will "preserve the defense industrial base, stimulate jobs in high-technology industry, and provide needed new options to local police and law enforcement authorities."312

---

310 Non-Lethal Technologies; Military Options and Implications", Report of an Independent Task Force sponsored by the Council on Foreign Relations, Malcom H. Weiner, Chairman, released June 22, 1995.

311 Low-Intensity Conflict and Modern Technology. Lt Col. David J. Dean USAF, Editor, Air University Press, Canter for Aerospace Doctrine, Research, and Education, Maxwell Air Force Base, Alabama, June 1986.

312 "Armageddon Killing Them Softly" by Russell Shorto, GQ, March 1995.

Another interesting issue to contemplate is the Defense Department's new Policy on non-lethal weapon systems, where "adversaries" and "enemies" have been more broadly deftned, as here the use of such systems against American citizens. The idea that these systems can be used almost without detection to manipulate the behavior and thinking of people raises moral questions. This use also appears to be in conflict with Constitutional rights regarding free expression and speech. The fact that the military together with the United States Justice Department can now use these technologies, under their broad definitions, should sound an alarm for all people, not just Americans.313

In our opinion, the only redeeming discussion in Low-Intensity Conflict. and Modern Technology, (a compilation of papers presented in 1984) was that some at the meeting saw the "new" technologies for what they were, and began heated debates about the morality of using these weapon systems. In the closing page of the technology overview the following was written:

"Paul Tyler also discusses the application of electromagnetic radiation (EMR) to low-intensity conflict. He surveys ongoing scientific research into the biological effects of electromagnetic radiation. Tyler tells us current evidence indicates that specific biological effects can be achieved by controlling the perimeters of electromagnetic radiation directed at human subjects. Thus there is the potential to use EMR to control human behavior or even to maim or kill adversaries. Tyler urges that the United States should devote considerable resources to exploring the possibilities of developing EMR weapons technology, which could be of particular value in low-intensity scenarios. "314

It becomes increasingly obvious that the inner circle of the Department of Defense placed a substantial amount of effort and emphasis in these areas.

The writer continued:

"Both Tyler's and Ruotanen's (another contributor to Low-Intensity Conflict and Modern Technology) papers created heated discussions. Some panel members questioned the advisability of employing nuclear, EMP (electromagnetic pulse), and EMR (electromagnetic radiation) weapons.They felt the ever-present danger of escalation would negate any advantage to be gained from surgical ground or atmospheric nuclear burst. Some on the panel saw Tyler's article as bordering on moral heresy. It is acceptable to have weapons and strategies to blow bodies into little pieces or burn them to a crisp, but not to use medical research and techniques to develop more subtle ways of eliminating or controlling enemies. There was some feeling that any benefit to be gained from research into EMR effects - dangerous in itself - might well be overshadowed by indignant outcries against the use of EMR weapons on human beings. "315

---

313 Department of Defense Directive, Policy for Non-Lethal Weapons, Office of the Assistant Secretary of Defense, Draft July 21,1994.

314 Low-Intensity Conflict and Modern Technology,. Lt Col. David J. Dean USAF, Editor, Air University Press, Center for Aerospace Doctrine, Research, and Education, Maxwell Air Force Base, Alabama, June 1986.

315 Ibid.

The development of these new weapons helps demonstrate the general immorality of war, particularly when the military establishment presents mind manipulation as a preferable outcome to death. The authors of Angels Don't Play This HAARP believe that we need open debate on these types of weapons. These discussions should be similar to nuclear arms talks.

Another revealing section of this military compiled book apparently aimed at a rationale which would make sense in the minds of defense planners and would help them deal with the moral issues:

"The articles and discussions in the technology panels generated quite a bit of heat and quite a bit of light. Chief among the concepts brought into the light was that the application of technology to low-intensity conflict should not hinge on the debate over simple or advanced systems, or high versus low technologies...The key is to recognize specific requirements and apply suitable systems and technologies to meet those requirements. "316

Stated differently, the military's means justifies the military's end. (For Ruotanen's comments on electromagnetic pulses see our chapter, "Thermonuclear Weapons Replaced By Electropulse.")

Obviously, these concepts were well understood by the military in 1984 when the original work was presented which led to this book's publication in 1986. The system's development moved forward- most likely within "black budgets" - from 1984 onward. The HAARP system is the largest concept-delivery system ever constructed by the military which could create the effects described in 1984.

The next chapter in Low-Intensity Conflict and Modern Technology is the section written by Captain Paul Tyler. Tyler discusses, to some degree, the application of non-ionizing radiation using external fields including radiofrequency radiation and other electromagnetic radiations. He discusses some of the beneficial effects of this energy for healing wounds, bone regeneration in fractures, electroanesthesia, acupuncture and pain relief.

He then jumps into the military applications of this technology:

"The potential applications of artificial electromagnetic fields are wide-ranging and can be used in many military or quasi-military situations... Some of these potential uses include dealing with terrorist groups, crowd control, controlling breaches of security at military installations, and antipersonnel techniques in tactical warfare. In all of these cases the EM systems would be used to produce mild to severe physiological disruption or perceptual distortion or disorientation. In addition, the ability of individuals to function could be degraded to such a point that they would be combat ineffective. Another advantage of electromagnetic systems is that they can provide coverage over large areas with a single system. They are silent and

316 Low-Intensity Conflict and Modern Technology. Lt Col. David J. Dean USAF, Editor, Air University Press, Center for Aerospace Doctrine, Research, and Education, Maxwell Air Force Base, Alabama, June 1986.

countermeasures to them may be difficult to develop... One last area where electromagnetic radiation may prove of some value is in enhancing abilities of individuals for anomalous phenomena. "317

Tyler's comments point to applications which may already be somewhat developed. He refers to an earlier Air Force document about the uses of radio frequency radiation in combat situations, (note that HAARP is the most versatile and the largest radio frequency radiation transmitter in the world.) He also points out that the uses may include enhancement of "anomalous phenomena" in individuals. Anomalous phenomena are those kinds of things which are not readily explained. You might say these are the quirks in human potentials. These could be called extrasensory or super-normal phenomena. This significant area is carefully screened in the writing. He refers to Eastern European research and the Soviet work also, without disclosing what exactly they were doing with this technology.

Another document prepared for the Air Force in 1982 reveals the direction that branch of the armed services took the technology. While commenting on radio frequency radiation usages the report stated:

"Biotechnology research must consider the significant advances that can be made in electromagnetic radiation weapons and defenses that could be in place by the year 2000.. .Research is first needed to develop and apply methods for assessing pulsed RFR (radio frequency radiation) effects. Techniques are needed for depositing RFR at selected organ sites. Mathematical models and physical measurement capabilities must be developed to track, real time, RFR energy distributions within these organ sites as a function of physiological processes such as diffusion and blood flow. These studies will require prudent extrapolation of physical and physiological data obtained from laboratory animals to humans in operational environments. "318

This 1982 report called for research to develop hardware that could deliver the radiation through new weapons for the Air Force.

A research publication commissioned by the Air Force - Radio Frequency Dosimetry Handbook - described these models, in time to meet the schedules they had put forward in 1982.319 The book gives mathematics for calculating the dosages (Dosimetry) of radio frequency radiation necessary to cause changes in animals and humans. The book compiled research spanning five decades, and contains a bibliography which is 29 pages long. It is the only book of its kind available on the subject in the world. This book, and more importantly the research behind it, forms the matrix of thought and theory for the finest electromedical devices for healing yet contemplated. However, this military research is not being used to heal; it is being used to develop better methods of killing.

317 Low-lntensitv Conflict and Modern Technology, Lt Col. David J. Dean USAF, Editor, Air University Press, Center for Aerospace Doctrine, Research, and Education, Maxwell Air Force Base, Alabama, June 1986, pages 249-251.
318 Final Report On Biotechnology Research Requirements For Aeronautical Systems Through the Year 2000. Volume I, Southwest Research Institute, San Antonio, Texas, 1982, pg. 44.
319 Radiofrequency Radiation Dosimetry Handbook , United States Air Force School of Aerospace Medicine, Brooks Air Force Base, Texas, October 1986.

One of the principal reviewers of the Radiofrequency Radiation Dosimetry Handbook for the Air Force was Dr. Herman P. Schwan. Dr. Schwan was also the largest contributor to the book, having two full pages of his work alone cited in the bibliography. His basic research is being used for the development of military hardware for use by the West. His recruitment for this is another case of the "military means justifying the military ends". An interesting aside to this individual's history Includes his work in Nazi Germany during World War II, where he worked in scientific laboratories. He was later admitted to the United States under a special military operation called "Project Paperclip"320, a pro-gram designed to bring to the United States prominent scientists who had been employed in Nazi laboratories during the war.321 In 1957, Dr. Schwan was working for the Biological Warfare Laboratories at Fort Detrick, Maryland, where the United States military gave him a "Top Secret" security clearance.322 Dr. Schwan is now working at University of Pennsylvania.

Going back for a moment to the 1982 Air Force report referred to earlier, the use of radiofrequency radiation in the new weapon systems contemplated by the Air Force was intended to change the central nervous system, cardiovascular system and the respiratory system. We were distressed to read about the idea of using this technology to alter the way people think in order to make the "enemy" of the government incapable of waging war.323 This type of use of a technological advancement is inherently evil, in the opinion of the authors of this book. Thinking is a fundamental right of all people. No individual or government should interfere with the free will of individuals in this way. Moreover, the fact that these technologies are classified - and hidden from the medical community - denies humanity the opportunity to explore these areas for healing people rather than for destructive purposes.

The report speaks about using this technology in a way which could interact with biological or chemical agents, The report states, "it may be possible to sensitize large military groups to extremely dispersed amounts of biological and chemical agents. It should be noted that this may require relatively low level RFR."324 The idea expressed here is that depositing small amounts of chemicals in a person's physiological system, in amounts below normal levels where negative physical effects are known to occur, will ensure they have no perceivable effect until radio frequency radiation (RFR) is introduced. Once introduced, the RFR creates physiological reactions which are detrimental to the host. This would allow individuais who are not exposed to the chemicals to then enter the area of the RFR without harm to their own bodies. When an operator tunes the RFR in just the right

320 Proiect Paperclip, by Dr. Clarence Rasby, Athenaeum Press, 1975,

321 Memorandum, Office of the Deputy Director of Intelligence, Headquarters European Command,
October 30, 1947. (provided by: International Committee for The Convention Against Offensive Microwave Weapons)

322 Memorandum, Headquarters Second United States Army, Fort Meade, Maryland, September 5, 1957. (provided by: International Committee for The Convention Against Offensive Microwave Weapons)

323 Final Report On Biotechnology Research Requirements For Aeronautical Systems Through the Year 2000, Volumes I and II, Southwest Research Institute, San Antonio, Texas, 1982.

324 Final Report On Biotechnology Research Requirements For Aeronautical Systems Through the Year 2000, Volumes 1 and II, Southwest Research Institute, San Antonio, Texas, 1982.

way, changes are caused in the energy state of atoms, which cause chemical reactions in the body, which in turn manifest as physiological or psychological changes.

The introduction of small amounts of chemicals is a very important concept when cyclotron resonance is considered. The HAARP transmitter uses cyclotron resonance in radiating its energy transmissions into the ionosphere. This causes a large increase in reactions in the ionosphere and in living organisms. Cyclotron resonance occurs when, as a result of complex electromagnetic interactions, a charged particle or ion begins to go into a circular, or orbital, motion. The speed of the orbits

is determined by the ratio between the charge and weight of the particle and the strength of the applied field. Once this happens, and a specific charged particle frequency determined, if an electric field is added that is in harmony with this frequency at right angles to the magnetic field, energy is transferred from the electric field to the charged particle.

Many activities in living cells involve charged particles. Cyclotron resonance allows for the transfer of energy to cause ions to move more rapidly. it_is cyclotron resonance which allows very low strength electromagnetic fields, together with Earth's magnetic field, to produce major biological effects. It happens because the total effect impacts very specific particles when tuned to the right frequency. To some degree, this explains why non-ionizing levels of radiation produce the effects which they do.325 The right weapon system could literally be tuned like a radio by an operator for the maximum negative effect. The principle could also be applied for healing purposes, and this area is being researched in some quarters.

Cyclotron resonance can be visualized as a particle being spun like a coiled spring and then screwed right through the cell wall into the cell. Here, reactions can lead to good, neutral or negative health effects. This effect is one of the major factors in electromedicine.

When combined with the Earth's normal magnetic fields, it is important to note, only ELF (1-100 Hertz) frequencies can cause controlled or accidental negative health effects. As far as is generally known, this is true until the strength of radiation escalates to the ionizing level.

The concept of cyclotron resonance was applied to the research carried out by the U.S. Naval Medical Research Center. They were able to apply external fields in a way which affected the brain chemistry of animals. They were able to affect the lithium ion to create the same effect as if they had treated the animal with the chemical lithium (lithium is used as a strong anti-depressant).326 In other words, affecting a chemical which was already in the body, or one that is introduced to the body, a person could literally amplify the effect of the chemical to the point where a very significant effect is caused, even death. Many naturally occurring chemicals are not dangerous in the amounts present in the body. If these chemicals are affected by

325 Cross Currents. The Perils of Electropoliution. The Promise of Electromedicine. by Robert O. Becker, M.D., pg 236-237.

326 Cross Currents. The Perils of Electropoliution. The Promise of Electromedicine. by Robert O. Becker, M.D., pg 236-240.

RFR, however, their potency increases to the point of being dangerous. The introduction of RFR causes a change in energy states, which cause chemical reactions. The results depend on wave form, frequency and energy level introduced, among other things. HAARP could be used to deliver the type of radiofrequency radiation described by Tyler and others. The use of HAARP in this way could be intentional or accidental, depending on the level of knowledge held by the equipment operators.

The 1982 report, Final Report On Biotechnology Research Requirements For Aeronautical Systems Through the Year 2000. went on to describe graphically the research efforts, breaking them into three primary areas.

* "Pulsed RFR Effects" which covered a research period from 1980 through 1995, emphasized "considerably increased efforts" in this area.

* "Mechanisms of RFR with Living Systems" was referred to as a "continuation of ongoing research" beginning in 1980 and forecast to conclude around 1997.

* The last area of emphasis was "RFR Forced Disruptive Phenomena", which they considered a "major new initiative". It was to begin around 1986 and continue until 2010. This last area could be characterized as applied technology, scheduled to begin at the same time as the Radiofrequency Radiation Dosimetry Handbook's completion. The handbook gave the basic information needed to develop new and powerful weapon systems which would have a negative effect on humans and electronics, but would leave otheT property unscathed.327 By the mid-1990's, the timeline for development was on or ahead of schedule.

The above report grew into a second volume, which gave a more detailed account of the Air Force's 1982 level of knowledge of radio frequency radiation (RFR) impacts on people. This report says, "As the technological race continues, knowledge of mechanisms of action of RFR with living systems and the assessment of pulsed RFR effects will demonstrate the vulnerability of humans to complex pulsed electromagnetic radiation fields in combination with other stresses."328

The Air Force document laid out the aims and approaches for developing technological expertise to make adversaries helpless. The use of the technologies crystallized in the Radiofrequency Radiation Dosimetry Handbook, previously cited. The researchers' intent was to monitor the effects of the radiofrequency radiations at a chemical, molecular and atomic level. The document stated,

"Currently available data allow the projection that specially generated radiofrequency radiation (RFR) fields may pose powerful and revolutionary antipersonnel military threats. Electroshock therapy indicates the ability of induced electric current to completely interrupt mental functioning for short periods of time, to obtain cognition for longer periods and to restructure emotional responses over

---

327 Final Report On Biotechnology Research Requirements For Aeronautical Systems Through the Year 2000. Volumes I and II, Southwest Research Institute, San Antonio, Texas.

328 Final Report On Biotechnology Research Requirements For Aeronautical Systems Through the Year 2000. Volumes I and II, Southwest Research Institute, San Antonio, Texas, pg. 181-188.

prolonged intervals. Experience with electroshock therapy, RFR experiments and the increasing understanding of the brain as an electrically mediated organ suggest the serious probability that impressed electromagnetic fields can be disruptive of purposeful behavior and may be capable of directing and/or interrogating such behavior. Further, the passage of approximately 100 milliamperes through the myocardium can lead to cardiac standstill and death, again pointing to a speed-of-light weapons effect. "329

The advances in wireless transmission of energy for these kinds of weapons has reached the stage where we could see them used in the coming decade. It is likely that the research will give technicians increasingly more versatile and controlled effects.

The document then built into a wild scheme which, upon first reading, escaped our research focus. We couldn't quite get the idea of what the Air Force meant by "interrogating", and how this would fit into the picture of radiofrequency radiation weapons hardware.

It became clear when we read the following:

"While initial attention should be toward degradation of human performance through thermal loading and electromagnetic field effects, subsequent work should address the possibilities of directing and interrogating mental functioning, using externally applied fields within the possibility of a revolutionary capability to defend against hostile actions, and to collect intelligence data prior to conflict onset. "330

What this seemed to say was that the objective of the research would be toward mind manipulation at a distance, where the military could alter what people thought and, at the same time, know what they thought. It seemed too much like a science fiction novel. How in the world could this effect be possible? How long had research been underway, so that the military would be so bold as to publish this kind of material in an unclassified document? Could it be that they had quietly advanced their research into these technologies under a veil of secrecy? Then again, the Neurophone technology had been around since the 1960's. It had been thoroughly investigated and most likely used in forming the basis for new weapons. After all, the military had confiscated and controlled the technology under a secrecy order decades before (see Chapter Twenty-two)

The report went on to describe a system which again pointed to the HAARP project. The report called for the development of:

"A rapidly scanning RFR system [which] could provide an effective stun or kill capability over a large area. System effectiveness will be a function of waveform,

329 Final Report On Biotechnology Research Requirements For Aeronautical Systems Through the Year 2000, Volumes I and II, Southwest Research Institute, San Antonio, Texas, pg. 181-188.
330 Ibid.

field intensity, pulse widths, repetition frequency and carrier frequency. The system can be developed using tissue and whole animal experimental studies, coupled with mechanisms and waveform effects research."

This is what HAARP is, among other things. Page V of the HAARP HF Active Auroral Research Program. Joint Program Plans and Activities specifies that the RFR heater must have a rapid scanning capability. Other HAARP documents define the waveform and frequency characteristics as if the same writer had written all of the documents.[331] It is the new tool for the military in meeting their self imposed challenge of a "technological race." HAARP is the one-size-fits-all RFR universal tool.

The grossly unfortunate part of this type of experimentation is how it is used. In our opinion, using RFR and other energies to destroy human life, as opposed to enhancing it, is immoral. The new directions of the energy sciences in healing people and enhancing health are not considered by the military - a travesty and a disservice to us all. At a time when health care costs are rising, and the threats of major conflict declining, our government continues to spend billions on killing rather than on enhancing the human experience. These areas are important, and the research should be available so that more prudent uses can be developed. If this happened, we believe it would speed the positive developments being pursued by those who have great energy and creativity; but limited resources.

Unfortunately, the idea of using RFR for destructive purposes negates the entire area of positive life science applications. The research in life sciences using electromagnetic radiations (EMR) is advancing outside of the mainstream medical establishment, but is beginning to be used there as well. Some genetic engineering researchers for example, are already using this knowledge in their work.

Going back to the text by Captain Paul Tyler, we can look at the debate between classical theories and recent research. There is a gulf of conflict between these two schools of thought. The debate centers on the classical idea that only ionizing radiation (that which generates heat in tissue) can cause reactions in the body, while new research indicates that subtle, small, amounts of energy can cause reactions as well. What Tyler wrote in 1984, as an officer in the Air Force, puts the debate simply. He said,

"Even though the body is basically an electrochemical system, modem science has almost exclusively studied the chemical aspects of the body and to date has largely neglected the electrical aspects. However, over the past decade researchers have devised many mathematical models to approximate the internal fields in animals and humans. Some of the later models have shown general agreement with experimental measurements made with the phantom models and animals. Presently most scientists in the field use the concept of specific absorption rate for determining the Dosimetry (dosages) of electromagnetic radiation. Specific absorption rate is the intensity of the internal electric field or quantity of energy absorbed... However, the use of these classical concepts of electrodynamics does not explain some experimental results and clinical findings. For example, according to classical physics, the frequency of visible light would indicate that it is reflected or totally absorbed within the first few millimeters of tissue and thus no light should pass through significant amounts of tissue. But it does. Also, classical theory indicates that the body should be completely invisible to extremely low frequencies of light where a single wave length is thousands of miles long. However, visible light has been used in clinical medicine to trans illuminate various body tissues. "332

---

[331] Ionospheric Research Instrument (HAARP), March 6,1992, Attachment to contract PR. No. N00014-92-C-0210 issued to ARCO Power Technologies, inc. pages 15-19.

In other words, the classical theories are partially wrong in that they do not fully explain all of the reactions which are observed in the body. The Navy has abstracted over a thousand international professional papers by private and government scientists which explore these issues. The Navy is well aware of the current research which shows the non-thermal effects of various electromagnetic radiations when they interact with living tissue,

Tyler continues, "A second area where classical theory fails to provide an adequate explanation for observed effects is in the clinical use of extremely low frequency (ELF) electromagnetic fields. Researchers have found that pulsed external magnetic fields at frequencies below 100 Hertz (pulses/cycles per second) will stimulate the healing of nonunion fractures, congenital pseudarthroses, and failed arthroses. The effects of these pulsed magnetic fields have been extremely impressive, and their use in orthopedic conditions has been approved by the Food and Drug Administration. "333

Even the FDA, one of the most vigorous regulatory authorities in the country, accepts these non-thermal effects.

Tyler adds, "Recently, pulsed electromagnetic fields have been reported to induce cellular transcription (this has to do with the duplication or copying of information from DNA, a process important to life). At the other end of the non ionizing spectrum, research reports are also showing biological effects that are not predicted in classical theories. For example, Kremer and others have published several papers showing that low intensity millimeter waves produce biological effects. They have also shown that not only are the effects seen at very tow power, but they are also frequency-specific. "

Tyler goes on to discuss the results of this new thinking and the possible effects of these low energy radiations in terms of information transfer and storage, and their effects on the nervous system. Research has shown that very specific frequencies cause very specific reactions, and, once a critical threshold is passed, negative reactions occur.334 The key to Pandora's box has been turned, and the box has now been opened. Will it result in life or death?

Tyler's paper created a good deaL of controversy but was based upon good research and an in-depth knowledge of the subject matter covered. In the decade since

---

332 Low-Intensity Conflict and Modern Technology. Lt Col. David J. Dean USAF, Editof, Air University Press, Center for Aerospace Doctrine, Research, and Education, Maxwell Air Force Base, Alabama, June 1986.

333 ibid.

334 ibid.

its publication, the public debate on the material has continued to grow, even though many of the sources cited in these pages have limited distribution.

The topics in this section could elevate the debate on military technologies. What will these areas of research yield? Should citizens take a greater interest in public affairs and remove the layers of secrecy which mask these research efforts? These are the issues we all face now, and will continue to face as we move further down the road of new technology.

"If you adequately educate your community,
you will find that the politicians will be scrambling to
become better educated themselves."

Helen Caldicott, M.D., Missile Envy

PART FOUR

STOP THE "MUSIC"

Chapter Twenty-five

PLAYING THE HAARP

The HAARP program funding was temporarily frozen in 1995 by the United States Senate. Yet the project moved forward, funded from unknown sources. The activity was on schedule for the most part, and it included the normal kinds of start-up activity. The schedule was as follows:

* December 18-22, 1994. This period was used to integrate the system through a number of tests.

* January 18-25, 1995. The system integration phase of testing was continued.

* February 21 - March 2, 1995. A number of performance tests were run on the system.

* March 29 - April 13, 1995. Formal testing of the device was done.

* July 25 - August 10, 1995. Improvement evaluations were made, to correct problems with the transmitter. Low power testing was being done, in which the military "swept 5000 channels in 3.2 second sweeps between 2.8 and 10 megaHertz".
In the sweep there were three "even mode resonances" discovered which, when hit, caused a malfunction in the device. Electrical arcing occurred between the antenna array and the lightning arresters, causing a four inch diameter aluminum plug to vaporize. The only thing left of the plug was an aluminum coating it left on insulating wires when it disappeared. The interesting fact about this problem was it occurred with only 100 watts of power from each of thirty-six operating antennas.335 What unexpected things will happen when the array is fully energized?

* September 11-22, 1995. The system will be used to test patent number 5,041,834. The HIPAS facility near Fairbanks, Alaska will be used with HAARP. Both heaters will be sending energy to the same point in the ionosphere during these tests. The heating will take place at 250 - 300 kilometers above the earth. Sensing instruments will be set up in Alaska at facilities in Anchorage, Glenallen and near Fairbanks.336

* Winter/Spring 1996. Testing of earth-penetrating-tomography will begin.337 This testing is part of a $10 million 1996 appropriation for HAARP.338 This funding was provided under the Counterproliferation Support section of the U.S. federal budget, used for limiting and monitoring nuclear weapons development in other countries.

---

335 Memorandum from Eric Nashlund, Member of the Radio Frequency Interference Committee for HAARP dated August 2, 1995.
336 ibid.
337 HAARP Fact Sheet, Phillip's Laboratory, July 17, 1995.
338 Department of Defense Appropriation Bill, 1996, Chaired by United States Senator Ted Stevens R-Alaska, Report 104-124, pg. 190. (Provided by Steven Aftergood, Federation of American Scientists, Washington, D.C.)

The HAARP antennae are rated for 10,000 watts each at full power. In the second phase planned for HAARP the array will be increased in size in order to provide 4,700,000,000 to 10,000,000,000 watts of effective radiated power.

HAARP is going forward but there are still some mechanical problems which are delaying its progress. These delays are the result of some problems with the power levels coming from the array. The energy gain is caused by an effect referred to as "negative impedance".339 The effect was described as "more power returning to the transmitter than is outgoing from the adjacent antennas". Instead of the energy level matching with say 10,000 watts going out and 10,000 watts returning - it is returning energy at 12,000 to 18,000 watts. What does this mean? It is an unexpected result which is occurring in low energy level testing. What will happen at the higher levels of energy planned for the future is not known. Is there a HAARP acting like a harpoon - is there an accident in the making?

339 Telephone interview between Nick Begich and Eric Nashlund a member of the HAARP Radio Frequency Interference Committee, August 2, 1995.

Chapter Twenty-six

SOFT SELL, THE ENVIRONMENTAL IMPACT STATEMENT

The Environmental Impact Statement (EIS) and its public hearings were completed long ago. There is no independent monitoring of the HAARP project or of the related University experiments. With the completion of the EIS process, the hurdle of "oversight" is over for the HAARP players, and nobody is looking over their shoulders. They now work without significant public scrutiny.

This type of project, is very different from projects which are monitored continually by independent inspectors with differing program goals than military and university scientists. The ionosphere belongs to the world. The immediate area belongs to Americans/Alaskans, who should be monitoring HAARP independently of its personnel.

The authors of this book believe that the HAARP activity should be monitored by a panel of multidisciplinary scientists, without conflicts of interest, who continually review the work under the oversight of the Alaska Department of Environmental Conservation. Moreover, laws should be passed to put enforcement teeth into the monitoring. This could be done by giving the oversight committee the power to freeze all state appropriations to the University if the project presents significant dangers not disclosed by the military or University. This could halt the project if the University were otherwise unwilling to follow the recommendations of the oversight committee. In addition, as long as the local power generating company was controlled and operated as a member-owned cooperative with an elected Board of Directors, they could literally unplug HAARP if it eventually connects to the regional power grid. This could temporarily stop the project while the federal government argues in the courts about its power demand requirements.

The only real way to stop this project, and others like it though, is through international pressure. These military projects should have some international watchdog component, considering the fact that these programs could negatively impact other countries who are not declared enemies of the United States. What are the safeguards for any country tampering with atmospheric systems which we all rely on for life?

The environmental review process is supposed to explore all risks and impacts in a given project. It was the omission of significant international community review which led to disputes over thermonuclear testing, dumping waste into the open seas and other inter-national environmental problems. It is arrogant, and inexcusable, for any country to think they can create upper atmospheric energy litter without full disclosure and consent from the other countries which may, pay the price for these programs in the end.

While there may be some good effects from this technology, the negative possibilities are immense. Understanding the planet cannot occur by dissecting the ionosphere, yet another part of our living system. Environmental Impact Statements are supposed to be comprehensive and disclose all risks. These documents, and hearings, are not just some compliance hurdle to be jumped over by the military, the University and their contractors in their single minded pursuit of their program mission, These are rules intended to inform the public and protect the environment from very real hazards. What are the environmental risks which were inadequately disclosed or explored in the public documents on the project?

The Navy, Air Force and University have not adequately defined the following risks, nor provided opportunities for public testimony after-ward:

1. Issues missing in the EIS include the possible impacts on the upper atmosphere. The military and the University should describe the amplification effects which occur in the ionosphere when Very Low Frequency radiation (VLF) impacts the magnetosphere creating a "charged particle rain" (as described in the Navy's research conducted by Lockheed and Stanford and referred to elsewhere in this book).

2. The issue of non-ionizing radiation has not been disclosed even though the Navy has cataloged and reviewed more than 1,000 research papers from around the world on this subject. The risks of this kind of systems' outputs have been explored by the Army, Navy, Air Force, CIA and others, and yet their research has not been mentioned at all in any of the HAARP records. Other records from these organizations are discussed elsewhere in this book, and will serve to dramatize the substantial risks and potential problems of the electromagnetic radiations being emitted from this system.

3. The Navy conducted international research, modeled after the work of Yale physiologist Jose MR. Delgado, M.D., which clearly showed that Extremely Low Frequency (ELF) energy waves cause significant increases in genetic mutation and alteration in animal embryos. This research may be extrapolated to infer the same kind of effects on human embryos. The use of ELF in the earth-penetrating tomography has been acknowledged by John Heckscher, HAARP Program Manager, although nowhere does he or anyone associated with the project discuss this research. The potential impact on animal life and people is never disclosed in the EIS. In fact, it is avoided, except for a couple of lines where the HAARP planners say there is no effect. When challenged on the issue, they say that the energy is being beamed up and not down, leaving out entirely the earth-penetrating tomography applications. It is likely that when challenged on this point they will say, as the government has in the past, that the energy level is small and not harmful. They have said it is about the same as that which naturally occurs in the earth. Even if this were true, research has shown that energy at l/50th of the Earth's natural strength - when pulsed in the right waveform, at the right frequency - will cause harmful physiological and psychological effects. The military is not disclosing their own research in this very important area.

4. Another one of HAARP's tricks, described by the military (see previous chapter) is moving the ionosphere in such a way as to allow satellites to operate in the space previously occupied by that section of the ionosphere. What does this do? It makes a hole so that all living things under that hole are irradiated, instead of being naturally shielded from them, The ionosphere is our natural umbrella which lets the good parts of the electromagnetic spectrum in and filters out the bad. Making holes without describing these risks is a gross miscarriage of responsibility by our university professors and defenders of peace - people that Americans, and all citizens of the world, should be able to trust.

5. The Eastlund patents also discuss molecular manipulation and weather manipulation. These applications are forbidden by international agreements, and are avoided in the HAARP documents. They are clearly described in the Eastlund patents and are alluded to in other govern-mental records.

These are the most glaring risks which require further clarification by our government. It is important that these and other possible risks be assessed independently through a process more complete than the normal Environmental Impact Statement. The ionosphere is not any country's national asset; it is an international asset and should not be tampered with unless all countries take part in the decisions which might otherwise result in our mutual demise. Are we so arrogant as a country to believe that we are the gods of the upper atmosphere and the keepers of the keys to possibly life and death on Earth?

Chapter Twenty-seven

PANDORA'S BOX AND THE GREAT TEMPTATION

Some will say that the government would not do the kinds of things described in these pages. The compilers of this material wish this were the case. However, American history is littered with the carcasses of bad science and ill-conceived technologies. Each year, in fact each month, it seems the citizens of all of the countries of the world are introduced to new scandals of military, "intelligence" and governmental abuses. The temptation, the compulsion, and the addiction for more power and control over people are the first evils released from the Pandora's Box of modern gadgetry. The authors are not against technological advancement but, rather, hope science can be pursued in the open light of day and can lead toward improved human conditions.

"Political strategists are tempted to exploit research on the brain and human behavior. Geophysicist Gordon J. FMacDonald - specialist in problems of warfare - says accurately-timed, artificially-excited electronic strokes 'could lead to a pattern of oscillations that produce relatively high power levels over certain regions of the earth...In this way, one could develop a system that would seriously impair the brain performance of very large populations in selected regions over an extended period'...No matter how deeply disturbing the thought of using the environment to manipulate behavior for national advantages to some, the technology permitting such use will very probably develop within the next few decades. "340

This statement was made over twenty-five years ago, and was a precursor for what became reality in 1995.

In 1966, MacDonald was a member of the President's Science Advisory Committee and later a member of the President's Council on Environmental Quality. He published papers on the use of environmental control technologies for military purposes. The most profound comment he made as a geophysicist was, "The key to geophysical warfare is the identification of environmental instabilities to which the addition of a small amount of energy would release vastly greater amounts of energy."341 While yesterday's geophysicists predicted today's advances, the HAARP program managers are delivering on the vision.

The geophysicists recognized that adding energy to the environmental soup could have large effects. What was not considered is the fact that humanity has already added substantial amounts of electromagnetic energy into our environment without understanding what might constitute critical mass. The questions come... have these additions been without effect, or is there a cumulative amount beyond which irreparable damage can be done? Is HAARP another step in a journey from which we cannot turn back? Are we about to embark on another energy experiment which unleashes another set of demons from Pandora's box?

---

340 Between Two Ages: America's Role in the Technetronic Era, Zbigniew Brzezinski, Penguin Books, Mass. 1976

341 The Cooling, by Lowell Ponte, 1976, pges. 166-169.

As early as 1970, Zbigniew Brzezinski, later National Security Advisor to President Jimmy Carter, predicted a "more controlled and directed society" would gradually appear, linked to technology. This society would be dominated by an elite group which impresses voters by allegedly superior scientific know-how.

"Unhindered by the restraints of traditional liberal values, this elite would not hesitate to achieve its political ends by using the latest modern techniques for influencing public behavior and keeping society under close surveillance and control. Technical and scientific momentum would then feed on the situation it exploits" 342, Brzezinski predicted.

His forecasts proved accurate beyond what most people would have expected. Today, a number of new tools for the "elite" are emerging, and the temptation to use them increases steadily. The policies to permit use are already in place. We are at the door to our "brave new world".

How would the United States be changed, bit by bit, into the predicted highly controlled technosociety? Among the "steppingstones" Brzezinski expected were persisting social crises and use of the mass media to gain the public's confidence.343

Brzezinski apparently saw that both conservatives and "the doctrinaire left" might be inclined to justify heavy handed tactics. The left could say that it serves progress, and the conservatives "preoccupied with public order and fascinated by modern gadgetry, would be tempted to use the new techniques as a response to unrest, since they would fail to recognize that social control is not the only way to deal with rapid social change."344

Even today, February 25, 1995, as we write these words, NBC Nightly News is announcing the widespread domestic surveillance of Americans and others, through the CIA's and NSA's monitoring and intrusion into the global Internet. When does the proliferation of power end and a new compact with freedom begin?

Brzezinski's vision, expressed in his book 25 years ago, was a prophetic view of the state of the world. It predicted a direction which time has proven correct, in terms of outcome. Those predictions yet to be realized are profound, and could lead to a very different and less desirable world, The idea that science is the hammer of politicians is a reality which people can not ignore. Government should consider a shift - from war to peace - for the use of these very advanced research efforts.

The possibilities of these innovations offer all people an opportunity to excel in health and intelligence. All men and women should press for opening these technologies to positive and constructive, rather than destructive, purposes. What

342 Between Two Ages: America's Role in the Technetronic Era. Zbigniew Brzezinski, Penguin Books, Mass. 1976,

343 Ibid.

344 Ibid.

propels these advances into the wrong directions'? It is the tax dollars of unwitting Americans.

The system which can promote the use of science, for the true advancement of mankind, is an open system with a focus on individual opportunities for self actualization. Systems which promote secrecy by military and intelligence leaders are fundamentally wrong. They are too likely to be misused, which has been amply demonstrated in govern-mental systems. Government flows from the people, and should be a full reflection of the value and belief systems of people, and not some shadow of the will of those with secret agendas, hidden in the dark rooms of paranoia. We must press government to reflect our collective views towards a more balanced world, embracing foundational ideas upon which good governments are formed.

Chapter Twenty-eight

POWER AND CONTROL
THE END OF FREEDOM

The Manhattan Project which developed the first atomic bomb started in 1942. The first atomic bomb was exploded on July 16, 1945 more than 50 years ago. That project started with a $6,000 funding appropriation to the Uranium Committee and ended, by 1945, at $1.7 billion ($20 billion today). The total cost of the United States nuclear weapons program since the Manhattan Project has been $4 trillion - 80% of the entire national debt on the government books in 3995.345 Is HAARP another program about to plunge the world into a rash of waste and human misery?

The War Against Democracy

"The buzzwords haunting the Pentagon today are 'revolution in military affairs', The idea, simply put, is that the same technologies that have transformed the American workplace may have no less profound an effect on the American way of war. "346

This concept, "revolution in military affairs" (RMA), first emerged in a document issued by the U.S. Army War College in July, 1994 - The Revolution in Military Affairs.347 This document said a philosophy of "conflict short of war" ("terrorism, insurgency or violence associated with narcotrafficking") requires new weapons and a change in public opinion. It asserts that this change in opinion does not have to evolve naturally, but can be deliberately shaped by the government. The idea is that belief systems of Americans can be slowly altered to allow the military to introduce new weapons technology which, at this time, would be resisted by most Americans.

What this book puts forward is:

"In its purest sense, revolution brings change that is permanent, fundamental, and rapid. The basic premise of the revolution in military affairs (RMA) is simple: throughout history, warfare usually developed in an evolutionary fashion, but occasionally ideas and inventions combined to propel dramatic and decisive change. This not only affected the application of military force, but often altered the geopolitical balance in favor of those who mastered the new form of warfare."

The Revolution in Military Affairs describes "people's wars", which it limits to Marxist ideologies. The phrase could be equally applied to what occurred in the Philippines and to Eastern Europe's popular revolutions in the late 1980's. The

---

345 U.S. News & World Report, "Outlook, Database", July 17, 1995.

346 Eliot A Cohen, "Come the Revolution", Defense and Technology Issue; National Review, July 31, 1995, Vol XLVII, No. 14.

347 The Revolution in Military Affairs, toy Steven Metz and James Kievit, July 25, 1994, U.S Government Printing Office: 1994-504-111/00089.

military's writers say that there is a shift to "spiritual" and "commercial" insurgencies, which they do not define well. They imply that these kinds of "insurgencies" represent national security risks to be defended against. This may be the case but, who will decide what is "spiritually" or "commercially" correct?

The military's authors discuss emerging technologies which may go against Americans' beliefs in such things as the presumption of innocence, the right to disagree with the government, and the right to free expression and movement throughout the world. At one point in the document they discuss the need to use new technology to keep track of Americans traveling out of the United States:

"While advances in robotics and information technologies may make it possible to perform many commercial activities with fewer employees in dangerous regions, those Americans who are overseas will be more isolated and dispersed. This complicates the main problems of NEOs (noncombatant evacuation operations): identification and notification of the individuals to be evacuated, identification of safe routes, and assessment of threats to the evacuation. Technology could diminish these problems. In the near future every American at risk could be equipped with an electronic individual position locator device (IPLD). The device, derived from the electronic bracelet used to control some criminal offenders or parolees,would continuously inform a central data bank of the individuals' locations. Eventually such a device could be permanently implanted under the skin, with automatic remote activation either upon departure from the U.S. territory (while passing through the security screening system at the airport, for example) or by transmission of a NEO alert code to areas of conflict. Implantation would help preclude removal of the device (although, of course, some terrorists might be willing to remove a portion of the hostage's body if they knew where the device was implanted). The IPLD could also act as a form of IFFN (identification friend, foe or neutral) if U.S. military personnel were equipped with appropriate challenge/response devices."

The most likely people to receive the implants are military personnel who will be told that this will help rescue them if they are captured. They may be the first, setting the stage for the rest of the country. Will our military personnel object? Will our defenders recognize that this is an invasion by our government into the rights guaranteed by our Constitution - a Constitution they have sworn to defend?

Another technology mentioned is a method for interfering with activities the government judges to be wrong. In the examples given, most of us would agree intervention should take place at some level. However, the methods contemplated are extreme. Will those with the power to invade the privacy of individuals do so and without just cause? Will the holders of the power be trusted by the rest of the population? The military planners anticipate a resounding - "NO"! There-fore, they propose a series of events to shift the popular view to the opposite extreme. They propose a revolution of society which will allow for a Revolution in Military Affairs. At this point, they lay out a fictional scenario where the illusion of the need for this kind of control could be created. In the scenario, a plan to desensitize the population to increasing control and, introduction of the new technology, through systematic manipulation and disinformation by the government is initiated. What they have put forward might even be underway.

E-Systems developed Global Positioning System (GPS)348 technologies (satellite based) which can locate objects anywhere in the world within one foot of the object's actual location. They also developed systems for law enforcement which can intercept faxed messages, telephone calls, modem transfers, and video transmissions on a single system. They developed the EMASS computers which are powerful enough to sort the volumes of information needed for tracking billions of people. They were the owners of HAARP, under their controlling company, Raytheon.

Under their nonfiction scenario the military's writers say:

"For example, remote intrusive monitoring of the financial computer networks of offshore banks could identify the deposits associated with money laundering. If desired, such accounts could be electronically emptied."

In another section, the document emphasizes behavior and attitude alteration. This is the very heart of an RMA.

"Greatly improved intelligence gathering and fusion is a primary component of the RMA, and proposed information warfare capabilities might be ideally suited for helping develop desired emotions, attitudes, or behavior."

The entire text of this little book will leave readers wondering - If this is the kind of material the military is letting out for public review, what are they hiding in those billion dollar "black budgets"? In another section The Revolution in Military Affairs discusses the reality of the RMA:

"Even with all the constraints and countermeasures, there is some value in applying emerging technology using existing strategy, doctrine, organization, force structure, objectives, concepts, attitudes and norms. But there is another alternative: we could deliberately engineer a comprehensive revolution, seeking utter transformation rather than simply an expeditious use of new technology. However alluring, such a program is rife with hidden dangers and unintended consequences. Unlike the Manhattan Project, we are not forced to pursue revolution without considering the implications. In conflict short of war, RMA is a Pandora's box desperately in need of careful scrutiny before opening".

The National Review article quoted earlier in this chapter says that this box has already been opened and that the concept of an RMA is already occupying the best minds in the Pentagon. (The Revolution in Military Affairs, has been reprinted and is available - see Resource Guide at the end of this book for ordering information.)

348 "E-Systems, Inc. Nineteen ninety-four Annual Report to Stockholders"; March 10,1995.

The Cold War is not over, but has changed. We know that there are concerns which, being a free people, we must address and bring to the attention of others. We believe that the greatest threat to freedom is an over-oppressive and increasingly secretive government. To many, the government has shifted from one "of the people, by the people and for the people" to a government "of special interests, for their own benefit, at the people's expense". What went wrong, and where it went wrong, to a large extent, is a product of the intelligence bureaucracies which thrive through one administration to the next with unrestrained growth. These secretive bureaucracies hide more and more of their secrets under a cloak of "national security", while drifting further from the principles which have allowed the United States to exist for over two hundred years. Secret government policy is not sanctioned by the free will of the population, and threatens the core beliefs of liberty, honest government and public responsibility.

The only truly free people are those who live in an open society, a society which cherishes above all the right of men and women to control and set the values that their government should reflect. These are the popularly set values which must be pressed into the philosophy of all projects, policies and programs our governments seek to project into reality. No program should be permitted to grow out of democratic governments which does not reflect the values and will of those governed. There have been too many Watergates, Irangates, and political wars which have only served politicians and protected corporate America. Our military and economic policies are increasingly empty of the values upon which our democratic forms of government rest.

When we look at HAARP documents, we see that the military, the contractors and the University of Alaska all appear to have deliberately misled the public and elected officials.

In other projects - tike proposed nuclear excavation discussed earlier - it was the biologists at the University who objected. In the HAARP project, the environmental, biological and life sciences are again not explored enough. Given its potential impacts, the project should be subjected to continuous rigorous independent review by specialists in the life sciences and atmospheric science. Those deriving their incomes and future positions from HAARP-type projects should not be called upon to be the guardians of the interests of the rest of the world. It is impossible for these geophysicists to have had all of the training required to assess all of the risks. This is not to say that Institute scientists are reckless in their approach, but are they fully aware of the potential environmental and health risks?

Is HAARP the beginning of the "Brave New World"? It is time to think about a change in the way we allow our government to evolve - into oppressor rather than servant. Our system of democracy was set up to serve and enhance life, liberty and the pursuit of happiness. Are these dead concepts? We think not, it is time to rise from the ashes of our apathy and take a step to improve our world.

"Magnetism is a unifying factor that interlinks all events,
forms and life on Earth."
International Earth Emergency Network[349]

"Everything is connected to everything to everything else,
especially by the electromagnetic spectrum."
Philip S. Callahan, Ph.D., author, The Paramagnetic ELF Forces

"It's insane to bounce our atmosphere around with what's holding the atmosphere
to the planet in the first place."
Daniel Winter, Ph. D.

Chapter Twenty-nine

A CLEAR NOTE

Nick Begich's exploration of the HAARP protest took him literally to the ends of the land. In July 1995 he and Shelah took their children to Homer, the community in a location that Alaskan's call Land's End. While setting up camp on the beach, they were greeted with hearty Alaskan bear hugs by one of the activists with whom Nick had been corresponding. Like others from the bush country who chose anonymity in their NO HAARP activities, he will be known by a pseudonym, Joe.

Joe turned out to be a sturdily built man, nearing middle age, who obviously cares deeply about his planet. Perhaps too deeply. Although living on a subsistence income, he had spent too much on the NO HAARP campaign, had become exhausted, and had only recently recuperated. His perception of being isolated had been an emotional challenge during the previous year, as he personally dealt with the concerns outlined in this book. Now, however, he realized the strength that comes from connection with a network of people who share his concerns: Joe has learned that people can make a difference.

Reading the first draft manuscript for this book, Joe noticed that independent scientists were expressing much of what he felt. For example, Dr. Elizabeth Rauscher and William van Bise ended a scientific paper by pointing out that most of the recent technologies have stripped nature away from people.350 Too many technologists' aim seem to be "to shield us from nature, to 'conquer' and control her while designing ever more dangerous weapons systems with which to more efficiently strip all life from the planet", they said. The two concerned scientists had added that "we must examine why man has moved toward such insane motivation, toward mutual destruction..." They concluded that we must ask whether or not society will again decide to pursue noble objectives..."

349 Dr. Daniel Winter and friends, International Earth Emergency Network, Waynesville NC 28786, E-mail: danwinter@aol.com; and Dr. B.K. Wee, World Research Information Center, 22 White House Park, Singapore 1025; voice 65-323-2032; fax 65-235-9862.

350 Elizabeth Rauscher and Wm. van Bise, "Fundamental Excitatory Modes of the Earth and Earth-Ionosphere Resonant Cavity", Proceedings of the 1988 International Tesla Symposium Colorado Springs.

Meanwhile, individuals such as the Alaskan activists do what they can.
Clare Zickuhr handed over to Joe the job of co-coordinating the No HAARP campaign before Clare and Barbara sold their house and went traveling. (His employment had ended, through ARCO cutbacks and early retirements in 1994.)

Dr. Bernard Eastlund's ideas continued to be mentioned, but not in the media that he preferred. Reporters for small publications and radio talk shows noted the connection between his patents and HAARP, but unfortunately many of those reports were inaccurate in some of the details. The accurate reports, however, raised common questions. Will those scientists who punch the ionosphere with gigawatt pulses be remembered as the true mad scientists of the century? The spirit of sorcerer's apprentices is alive in those who get National Science Foundation grants to "turn on the northern lights by heating the ionosphere with radio waves" and stir up "magnetospheric substorms".35l

While the Begiches discussed these issues with fellow Alaskans, coauthor Jeane Manning put a call through to one of the increasingly rare generalists with a Ph.D. in science, Philip Callahan, an expert on radio systems/electronics as well as biology. He sums up the situation in plain words: "Every living human being is like a sponge in a bowl of jelly. When the atmospheric jelly shakes - the ELF waves - then the jelly in the sponge also shakes at the same frequency."352

Callahan has sharp words for the people who are putting up HAARP "... talking about shooting a hole in the ionosphere. They don't know a hill of beans about the ionosphere! There's nothing wrong with studying Mother Nature and then copying her. But they're trying to jam up the system, that's the problem."

Callahan knows low frequency systems; he put them up in Japan for the U.S. defense department before he went back to school and became an entomologist and biophysicist. (With his multidisciplinary interests, he learned it is possible to tune into unwanted insects by knowing the resonant frequency of an insect's antenna. Because of this knowledge, he has been fighting insecticide use for 35 years. The non- poisonous alternative, on the other hand, jams the insects' homing beacon system with electromagnetic static.)

Jeane Manning asked him if HAARP is any threat to the insects of the world, and Callahan replied "Yes. It's bound to be, because their antennas are tuned into some of the frequencies that will bounce down from HAARP's ionospheric modification."

He was working for a government agency when the ionospheric-modification plan heated up. "I got a call from them; they wanted to know what I thought it would do to insects. I said 'You'll probably mess some of them up, because it messes up the insects under the power lines...I've seen night time moths flying around and feeding in the daytime when they're under power lines. I've also seen them

351 Neil M. Brice, "Method and Apparatus for Triggering a Substantial Change in Earth Characteristics and Measuring Earth Changes", U.S. Patent No. 4,042,196.

352 Dr. Philip Callahan's recent books, Exploring the Spectrum and Paramagnetism are available from Acres USA, Po box 8800, Metairie, LA. 70011, Ph. 504-889-2100.

under power lines feeding until they swell up and burst. So what it boils down to is, it's like when insecticides came out - we don't know what they do."

HAARP is going ahead, however, despite the warning of possible biological effects. Callahan adds, "Nobody's studying it; they just sit there and say 'there's no harm in it'. Out of sight, out of mind."

FORBID THE CENTIMETER-WAVES!

Dr. Wolfgang Volkrodt of West Germany takes an extreme position on this challenge facing the people of Earth.353 "Centimeter-wave technology must disappear from our environment! We need a UNO (United Nations Organization) charter which would prohibit the entire field of electromagnetic wave technology which causes disastrous resonance in biological systems," Volkrodt insists, He calls for monitoring centers that can detect use of the prohibited wavelengths anywhere, even those harmful wavelengths beamed from satellites.

While the authors see a total ban on microwave relay and radio frequency technology as being unrealistic, we agree with Volkrodt that there is widespread denial of the hazards. Dr. Volkrodt says "the path seems long and arduous until our politicians realize what is happening in the research institutes of the super powers, and what explosive findings will confront the inhabitants of this endangered world before the end of this century. Let us hope that those in positions of responsibility will awake before it is too late."

The authors interviewed other experts whose warnings were more low-key. For example, James Beale of Louisiana, whose career has been in a variety of electromagnetic research venues, regrets to see that there are not many experts on bioelectromagnetics, and fewer still who are independent of military contracts. Furthermore, said Beale, those experts prefer to talk among themselves instead of with the public. "This is where you need bridge science', which is what is going to come about by talking on the Internet."

Bridging between specialties, and between scientists and the public, is one of the most pressing needs uncovered by our research. It isn't hard to do. Today's engineers can walk into a library or across campus to the biological sciences departments and find stacks of information about the inter-relatedness of Earth's electrical, magnetic and biological systems. But to what extent do they bother to look outside their own specialty?

The life sciences such as biology look at the web of connections between living organisms and Earth's natural systems. Sciences which deal with what is dead or mechanical are over- represented in the board rooms where military projects are conceived, bought and sold. For example, one engineer commented on the educational background of Col. John A. Alexander, chief spokesman for the U.S. military's "non-lethal" weapons campaign. "He's the only person I've met who brags about having a degree in thanatology, the study of death."

353 Raum & Zeit, Vol. 1, Nov. 2, 1989, pg. 57.

As we look back at the messes humanity made while industrializing this world, leading-edge thinking has evolved beyond the goal of dominion over nature. Instead, an emerging outlook respects each form of life as having an integrity of its own while at the same time inter- related to all species.

Nikola Tesla's thinking was a product of his times, and therefore his genius was limited by a sometimes mechanistic viewpoint. Tesla wanted his inventions to help humanity. He can be excused for not mentioning ecology, because in his time the word had not been coined yet. As a trailblazing technophile, he thought it would be exciting to manipulate weather and light up the ionosphere just as you would charge up the contents of a fluorescent bulb. He imagined the upper atmosphere glowing over a selected region of cities to illuminate the earth at night. This megaproject mindset lives on, a century later.

What has happened to Tesla's ideas of sending vast amounts of electrical power wirelessly? The ideas are out of date, now that inventors are making rapid advances in tapping the free energy in space which Tesla prophesied could be used. (The topic is beyond the scope of this book, but we will mention that in 1995 John Hutchison, mentioned in chapter one, was one of those who successfully built such an invention - a small scale electricity generating device that could make the central power station obsolete.) Nevertheless, it seems that engineers are still fascinated by wireless concepts. A paper presented to an engineering society[354] talks about Tesla's idea to use the electrically-conductive layers in the upper atmosphere as the conductive path, and other possibilities for beaming power. We excerpt a comment from the Weather Modification section of the paper: "Since the potential of the electrosphere is about 300 KV relative to the earth, and the wireless system as proposed by Tesla was designed to operate at 30-100 MV, there is a significant potential for electrically disturbing the atmosphere. It is not known whether this would be beneficial or harmful."

Under the heading of Economic Viability, the paper notes, "Multiple transmitters could conceivably be phased to control the location of antinodes from which power could be extracted,.." (By the way, the paper's 76 footnotes includes the Eastlund/Ramo patent 4,712,155, "Method and Apparatus for Creating an Artificial Electron Cyclotron Heating Region of Plasma", cited under the heading Transmission Line Coupling. The often cited patents...)

In his autobiography, Tesla said the impulse that dominated him was "to harness the energies of nature to the service of man." A fine sentiment, but it can be carried too far when the Sorcerer's Apprentices try to harness the electric rivers in the sky through HAARP.

The tones of voices talking about HAARP range from helpless anger to calm determination. The man called Gregory whom you met in Chapter One, on the one end, had shouted that the "Mad scientists are getting even with all the crap they had to put up with as kids and as nerdy adolescents, and they want to kill our planet!"

---

[354] Kurt L. VanVoorhies, P.E., and James E. Smith, Ph.D., "The Promises and Prospects of Worldwide Wireless Power Transfer: An Overview", 1991 Intersociety Energy Conversion Engineering Conference proceedings.

On the other hand, with a scientist's habit of understatement Rosalie Bertell, Ph.D. said about HAARP: "I am also concerned."355 She was writing a book for the Women's Press in London, England, on a broader but related topic - militarism and the environment.

HOW DO WE TURN IT AROUND?

Dr. Bertell says women can help reverse the destructive trends. Bertell, who holds a doctorate degree in biometry and has worked on cancer/birth defect research for decades, documents the impact, on the earth's environment, of war preparation. 356

"Because of the non violent tendencies of women and their interpersonal skills already developed, it is imperative that women take their rightful place in decision making. This is especially true of participation in strategic "think tanks", military command posts and areas of international law."

She further points out that resolving conflict without excessive damage to our life-support system is not purely a women's skill, nor do all women have it. But admitting women into the circles of power could open the doors.

Dr. Bertell suggests guidelines for recovery from our addiction to violence. Here is a shortened list of her recommendations:

* "Acknowledge that war is not a natural human trait but rather a learned behavior..."

* "Embrace justice and international equity as a way to peace."

* "Demand environmental impact hearings on all military undertakings, including the space programs. Unmask the self-destructive tendencies of war making. Freeze military budgets at the current level, and every year reduce them by 20 per cent, putting the savings into UN currency that can only be used for human needs." (Environmental cleanup included.)

* "Learn to love and appreciate biological organisms...and the intricacies of the web of life."

* "Teach your children to make peace, to break the habits of violence."

* "See yourself as one with your planet home, 'a child of the universe, capable of feeling a blow to any part of the life system anywhere in the universe. The web of life is intricately interconnected and fragile. Fracture it and we are all doomed."

* * *

355 From a June 2,1994, letter to Jeane Manning from Dr. Rosalie Bertell, International Institute of Concern for Public Health, 830 Bathurst St., Toronto, Ont. M5R 3G1,

356 Rosalie Bertell, "Exposing the Agenda of the Military Establishment", Sept. 1993 Ecodecision,

The authors of this book don't expect life scientists or women to suddenly appear around the tables in the Pentagon in significant numbers. However, our hope is that a wider range of voices will be increasingly heard when decisions are made about whether to violate the integrity of a huge natural system such as Earth's ionosphere. Or whether to violate the very consciousness of the people on this planet.

As long as the macho attitudes prevail, people with taxpayers' money in their pockets will try to "engineer" planetary systems. As more and more ordinary people realize that the U.S. military wants to experiment with the earth's electrical shield, they express feelings akin to the scientist Dr. Malcolm portrayed in the film Jurassic Park. He said he was staggered by the lack of humility before nature - men wielding an awesome power, "like a kid that's found his dad's gun."

Not all engineers are enthusiastic about wielding big guns, of course. An engineer from Europe told Manning that he doesn't want to jump to conclusions, but he pictures the emanations from the HAARP apparatus as creating nodes in the upper atmosphere, "where they superimpose on one another and have a resonating and amplifying effect." He asks "how can we have the slightest idea what that will do to the planetary environment?"

The editor of Acres USA, commenting on a letter about HAARP, is blunt. "We have had enough of scientists going off half-cocked."

Meanwhile, Dr. Robert Becker expresses his opinion that "the military establishment still believes that the survival of the military organism is worth the sacrifice of the lives and health of large segments of the American population."

The authors of this book are neither technophiliac nor anti-military. However, military funded technology has been allowed to steamroll over the planet. Isn't it time for educated citizens to cut the allowances of the big boys and supervise them more closely? Isn't it time for fear based thinking to be replaced by the more grownup policy of love and consideration?

That may sound abstract and unscientific, until the skeptic has a serious dialogue with frontier scientists such as Dr. Daniel Winter, author of Alphabet of the Heart and co-founder of the Earth Grid Emergency Network.357 In a letter to Manning, he said "the key concept to under-standing how HAARP will undermine our planet is the principle that charge recursion - or maximum possible fractal embeddedness in spin systems - is what creates gravity in the first place."

Recursion is the repeating of patterns within patterns in nature. Whether or not the reader understands his cross disciplinary discussions - of nature's fractal symmetry, harmonics series, platonic series at the atomic level, spin geometry, resonance, coherence and trees as antennae - the emerging science that Winter writes about shines a powerful light of both hope and warning. There is hope for stabilizing

357 Daniel Winter and Friends, Alphabet of the Heart: Sacred Geometry, 137 Biodome Drive, Waynesville, NC 28786. E-mail DanWinter@aol.com

both Earth's crust and its atmosphere. Winter cites experiments that seem to prove the principle that "fractality of (electromagnetic) charge creates gravity." Such features of the magnetic grid keep an atmosphere nestled around a planet.

On the other hand, his warnings include this:

"Mars lost her atmosphere; we're losing ours. Let's understand why microwave coherence around long wave magnetic domains creates microclimates, before we decide to aggravate Earth with poisonous gigawatts of power to poke away at her atmosphere. The long-term question of gene pool survival depends on the skill of learning to retain atmosphere. HAARP is a very poor start at demonstrating that our gene pool has the skill to terraform planets."

"Particularly now, with Earth's orbital pole doing radical excursions out of tilt - with the lunar orbit destabilizing - and with the ability to hold atmosphere and ozone weakening, particularly at the poles, the planet is very sensitive to bouncing the atmosphere in and out for scientists' gigawatt 'probes',"

Dan Winter concluded: "HAARP stands to slice a huge tear in the fractal of magnetic Alaska, Earth will feel this change in charge, as a tearing wound that will not heal..."

The authors suggest that anyone concerned about HAARP contact a federal legislator to protest, and insist that life sciences get meaningful funding and decision making power. And that emerging advanced technologies be in the hands of our wisest men and women, not our most aggressive or those entrenched in the biggest budgets.

We hope that independent scientists will meet face to face as well as on the Internet, regarding HAARP related topics. An international symposium is urgently needed. Philanthropists could help with travel and research funding for the scientists, because independent thinkers have been blackballed out of the high salaried jobs. For example, financially struggling consultants cannot even afford the yearly fees now charged for accessing National Oceanic and Atmospheric Administration (NASA) data.

Researchers who shun the "black budget" world of military programs need a "white budget". White-budget projects could include the spreading of ground up volcanic rock to restore Earth's paramagnetism.358 Dr. Callahan says that chemical agriculture and clear cutting of forests caused the soil's paramagnetic ingredients to change or wash into the sea.) Such constructive projects could be carried out by ordinary people all over the world, replacing feelings of fear with those of empowerment.

358 For study of paramagnetism as a part of the glue which holds the atmosphere in place, see recent books by Dr. Philip Callahan, available from Acres USA, PO box 8800, Metairie, LA 70011-8800. Fax 504-889-2777.

In Brave New World Revisited. Aldous Huxley said, in 1958;

"Meanwhile there is still some freedom left in the world..some of us believe that without freedom a human being cannot become fully human, and that freedom is therefore supremely valuable. Perhaps the forces that now menace freedom are too strong to be resisted for long. It is still our duty to do whatever we can to resist them."

On the road to that goal, other thinkers point toward a possible manmade barrier. They question whether an increasingly stressful electromagnetic environment is interfering with clear thinking on a large scale. If so, then society's ignorance of this invisible crazymaker is the problem. Humanity has the resources to change its technologies if we have the political will to do so. Non-scientists must educate themselves on the issues and speak up; the sciences as a self regulating system seems to have broken down. The breakup of the sciences into ever- narrower specialties has made it difficult for specialists to synthesize a wide range of facts about our planet and come up with wisdom.

GLOSSARY

Electromagnetic field (EM field). A force field which radiates out from any moving electrical current. They have both an electric field and a magnetic field and move in a direction away from the electric current.

Electromagnetic pulse (EMP). A pulse or blast of electromagnetic energy. These kinds of pulses are caused by nuclear explosions and can be created with an electrical device. The pulses created can cause electrical circuits to burn out.

Electromagnetic spectrum. This refers to a continuum which organizes electromagnetic fields based on their relative number of oscillations or frequency. Nonionizing portions of the electromagnetic spectrum starts with zero (no oscillations) extending to visible light with trillions of oscillations peT second. Frequencies which are above that of visible light are said to be ionizing. Ionizing frequencies include X-rays and cosmic rays, among others. The spectrum is divided into various parts based upon their usage including ELF, microwaves, radiowaves, etc.

Extremely Low Frequency (ELF). 0 - 1000 cycles or pulses per second.

Field. A area around a source of electric or magnetic energy where in which a measurable force exists. This is sometimes referred to as radiation because it radiates out, and away, from the source.

Hertz (Hz). The frequency - number of pulses, cycles or oscillations per second. One thousand cycles per second equals one kiloHertz (KHz); one million equals one megaHertz (MHz); and, one billion equals one gigaHertz (GHz).

Ion. An atom which has either a positive or negative charge because it has either gained or lost an electron.

Ionizing. The production of ions from atoms by exposure to radiation with enough energy to dislodge electrons.

Microwave. The part of the electromagnetic spectrum from 500 million cycles per second up to visible light.

Nonionizing radiation. The part of the electromagnetic spectrum from zero to the frequencies of visible light.

Radio frequency (RF). The part of the electromagnetic spectrum from .5 million cycles per second through 500 million cycles per second.

Very low frequency (VLF). The part of the electromagnetic spectrum from 1000 cycles per second through .5 million cycles per second.

ILLUSTRATIONS

HAARP

The diagram was taken from the "Biennial Report 1991-92, Geophysical Institute, University of Alaska Fairbanks". It shows the interrelationships of the various programs being operated by the University.

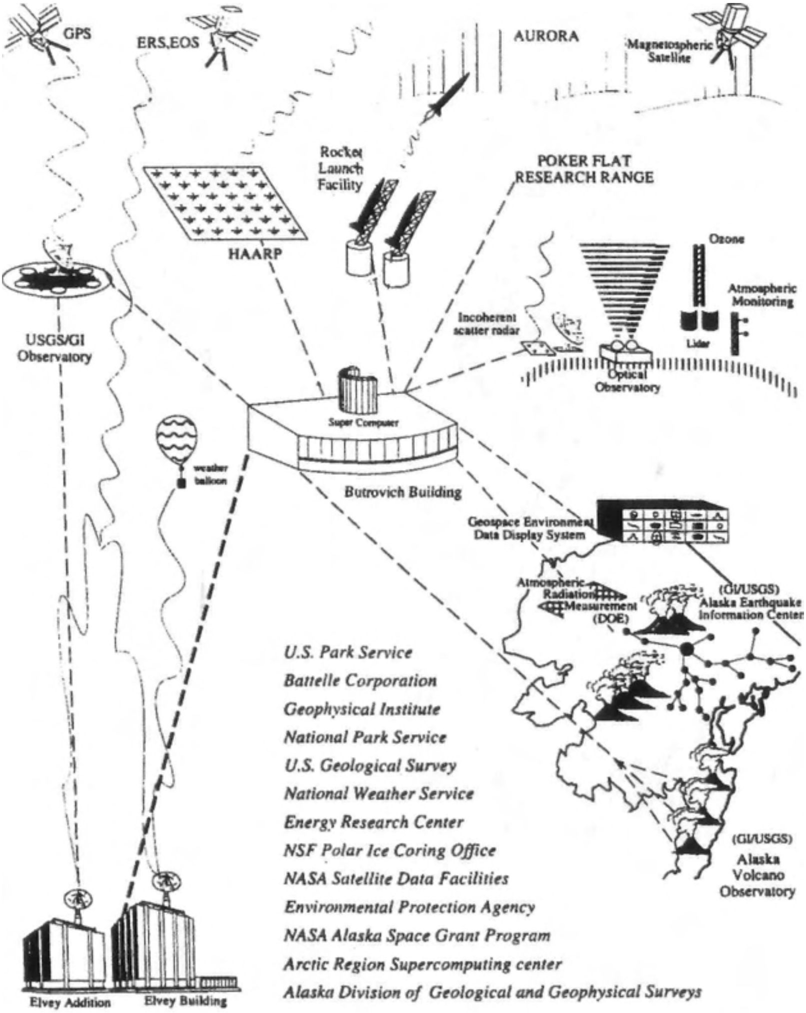
GPS
ERS,EOS
AURORA
Magnetospheric Sateline
Rocket Launch Facility
POKER FLAT RESEARCH RANGE
HAARP
Ozone
Atmospheric Monitoring
Incoherent scatter radar
Lidar
Optical Observatory
USGS/GI Observatory
Super Computer
Butrovich Building
weather balloon
Geospace Environment Data Display System
Atmospheric Radiation Measurement (DOE)
(GI/USGS) Alaska Earthquake Information Center
U.S. Park Service
Battelle Corporation
Geophysical Institute
National Park Service
U.S. Geological Survey
National Weather Service
Energy Research Center
NSF Polar Ice Coring Office
NASA Satellite Data Facilities
Environmental Protection Agency
NASA Alaska Space Grant Program
Arctic Region Supercomputing center
Alaska Division of Geological and Geophysical Surveys
(GI/USGS) Alaska Volcano Observatory
Elvey Addition
Elvey Building

This diagram appeared in the Environmental Impact Statement on HAARP on page 10-127, Volume II. It shows the locations of other "ionospheric heaters" that are now operating. These other "heaters" are much smaller and less versatile than the new HAARP transmitter.

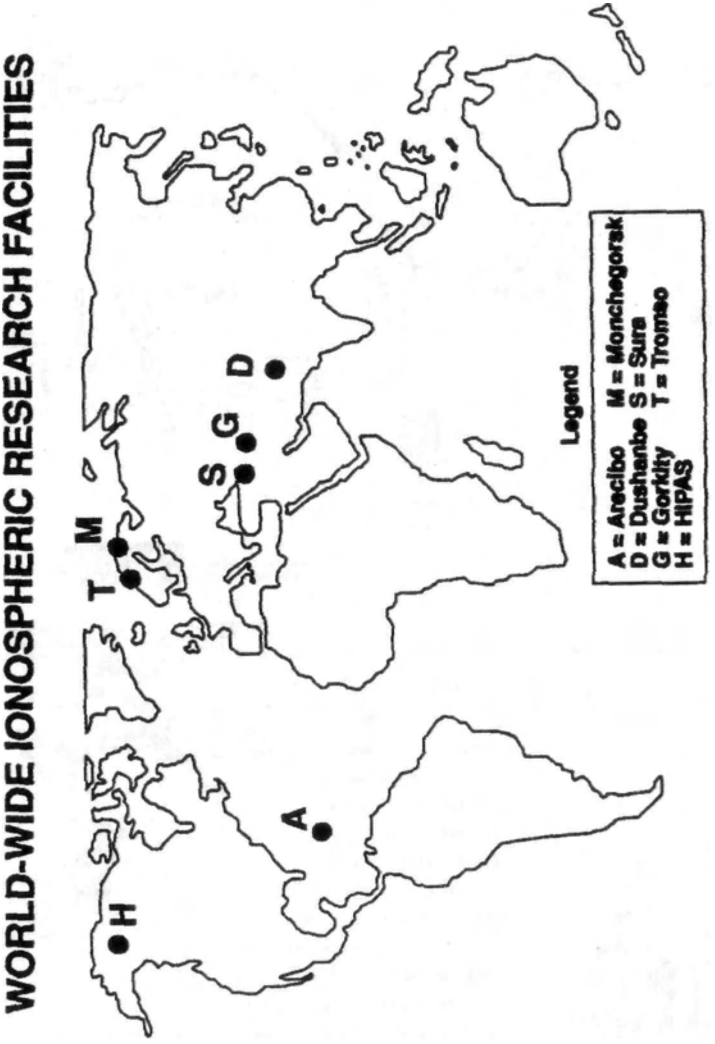
WORLD-WIDE IONOSPHERIC RESEARCH FACILITIES
H
A
T
M
S
G
D
Legend
A = Arecibo
D = Dushanbe
G = Gorkiy
H = HIPAS
M = Monchegorsk
S = Sura
T = Tromso

This illustration was taken from the HAARP Environmental Impact Statement, page 10-126 Volume II. It shows a number of the applications of the technology which the military planners have acknowledged.

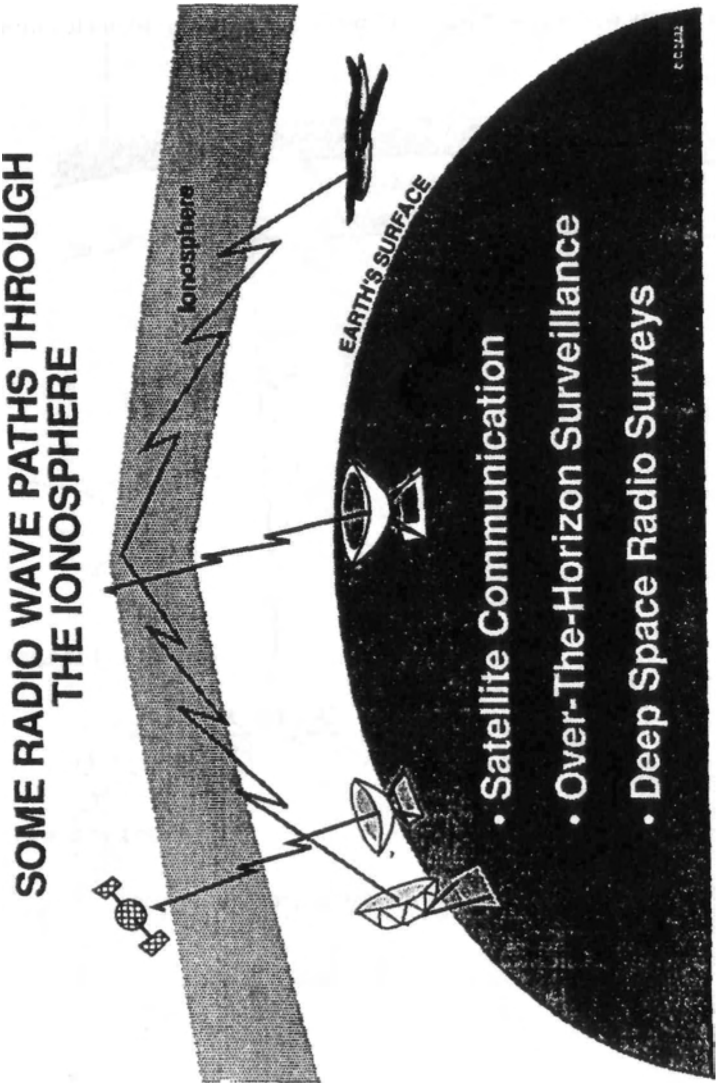
SOME RADIO WAVE PATHS THROUGH THE IONOSPHERE
Ionosphere
EARTH'S SURFACE
• Satellite Communication
• Over-The-Horizon Surveillance
• Deep Space Radio Surveys

The diagram below (taken from government records) shows the focusing power of the HAARP ionospheric heaters. This diagram shows the unique feature of Eastlunds idea - to focus the energy to a point in the ionosphere. Other ionospheric heaters project the energy in the opposite way with the energy beam getting wider and wider as it moves up into the atmosphere. The new heater concentrates the energy whereas with the old technology the energy dissipates with height.

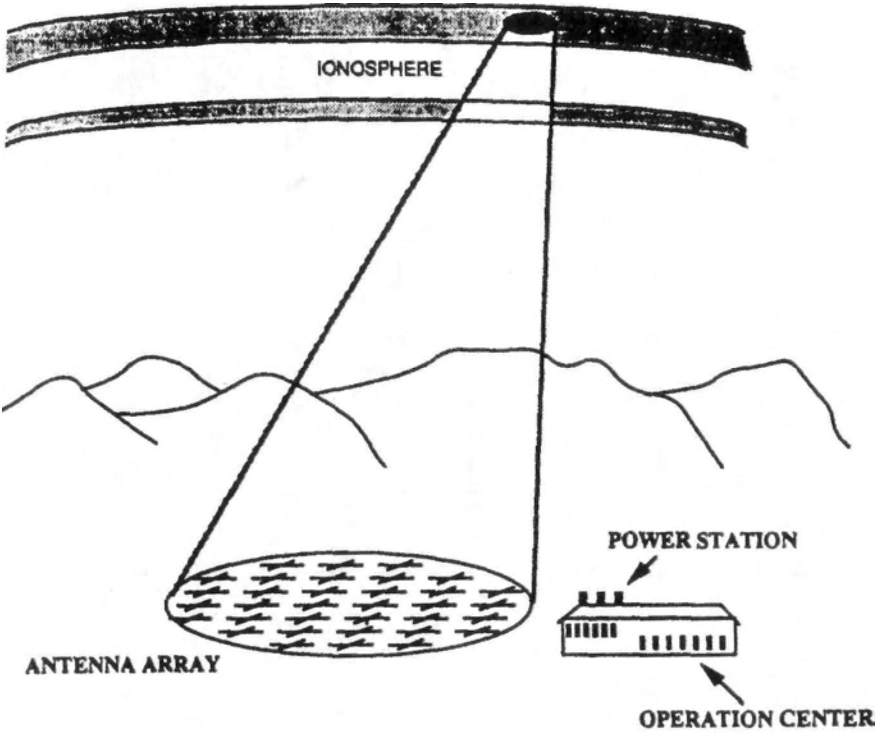
IONOSPHERE
POWER STATION
ANTENNA ARRAY
OPERATION CENTER

FIGURE 1. Ionospheric Research Instrument Conceptual Drawing

This diagram was also drawn by Eastlund to show the effect of his full sized heater. It shows the charged particle motion in the Earth's Geomagnetic Field.

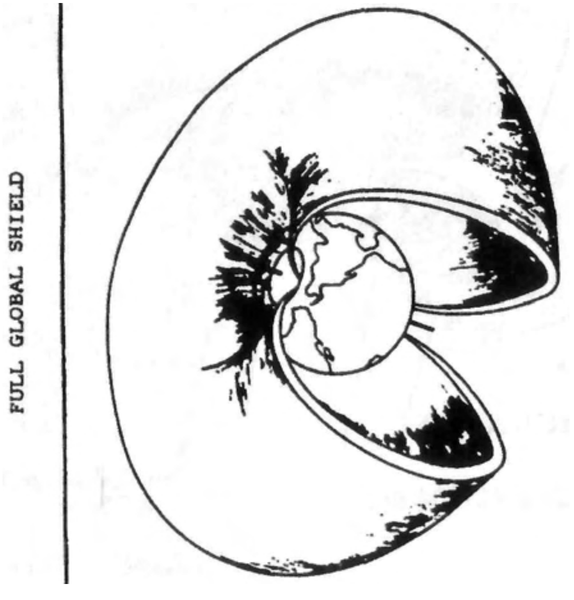
FULL GLOBAL SHIELD

This diagram below was drawn by Eastlund to illustrate his global shield concept.

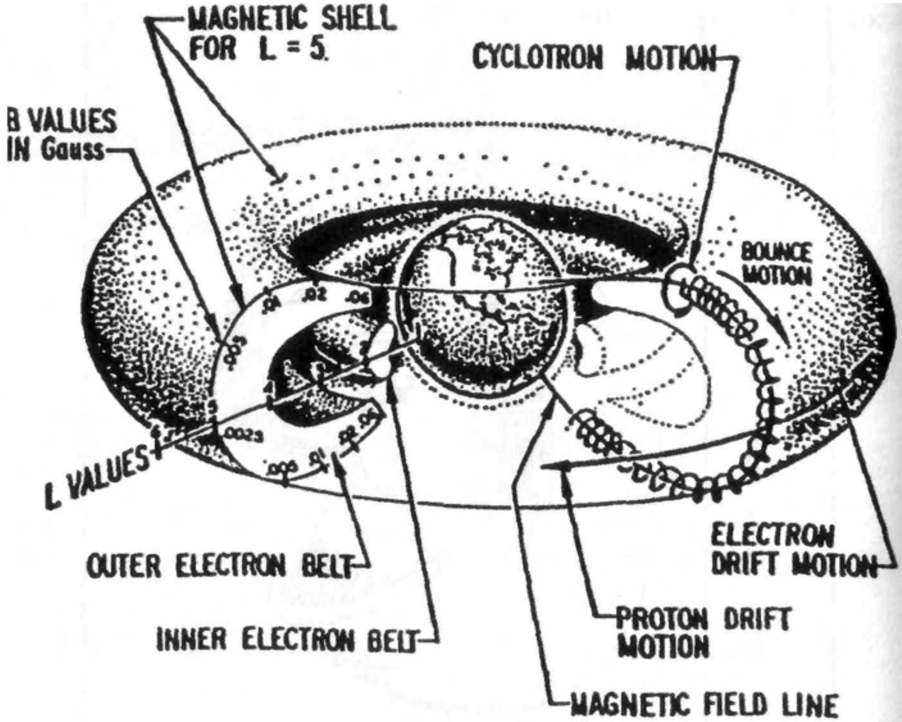
MAGNETIC SHELL
FOR L = 5.
CYCLOTRON MOTION
B VALUES
IN Gauss
BOUNCE
MOTION
.04
.02
.06
.005
4
5
6
.0023
.005
.01
.02
.04
L VALUES
ELECTRON
DRIFT MOTION
OUTER ELECTRON BELT
INNER ELECTRON BELT
PROTON DRIFT
MOTION
MAGNETIC FIELD LINE

Charged Parttcle Motion in Earth's Geomagnetic Field

This diagram below was taken from the primary U.S. Patent of Eastiund (4,686,605).

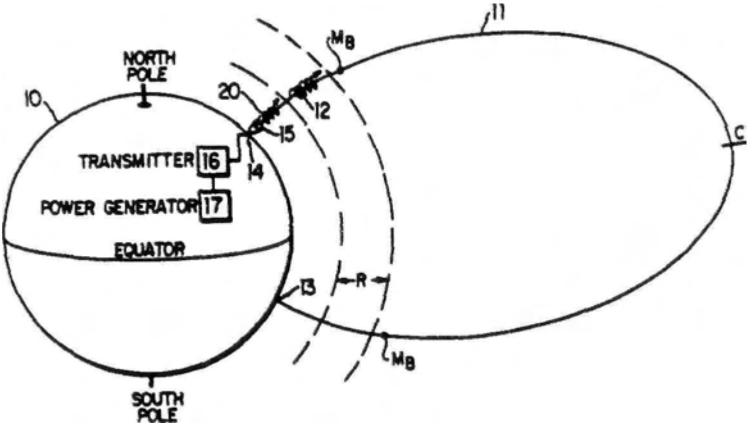
11
MB
NORTH POLE
10
20
12
15
C
TRANSMITTER
16
14
POWER GENERATOR
17
EQUATOR
13
R
MB
SOUTH POLE

This diagram shows the over-the horizon radar applications of the HAARP technology. This diagram was from U.S. Patent #4,999,637 which was based, in part, on Eastlund's patents #4,686,605 and #4,712,155.

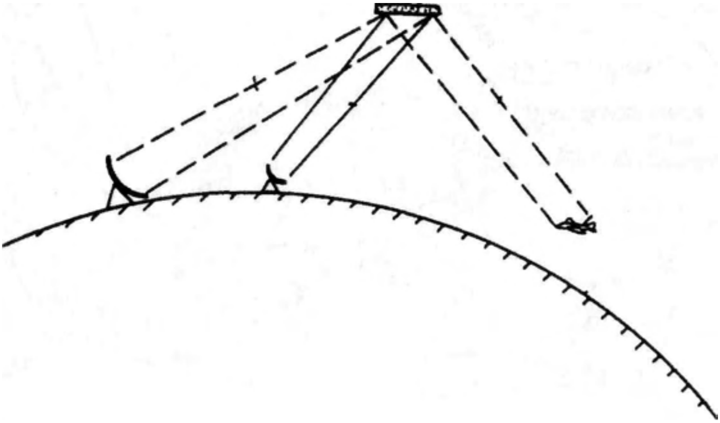

The diagrams below appear in U.S. Patent #5,038,664 and #4,817,495 and depict the shielding and discriminating effects of the HAARP heater at full size.

US. Patent Apr. 4,1989 4,817,495

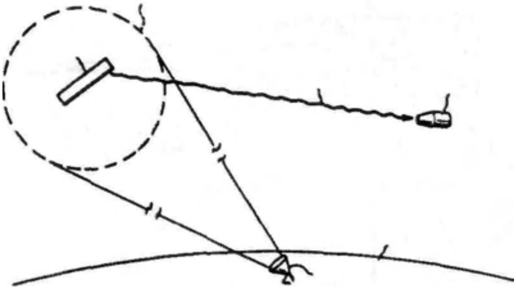

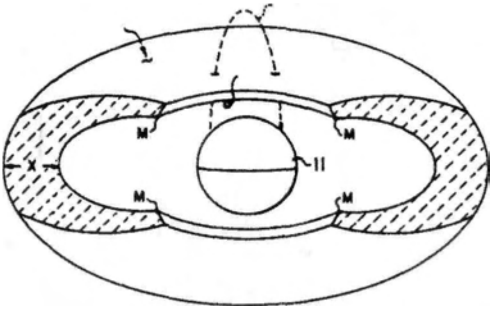

these diagrams were taken from patent #4,817,495. They show the HAARP system being used to locate and distinguish between incoming objects from space. This application of the system would be used for determining the nature of payloads on incoming crafts in order to locate those carrying nuclear warheads.

US. Patent Apr.4,1989 4,817,495

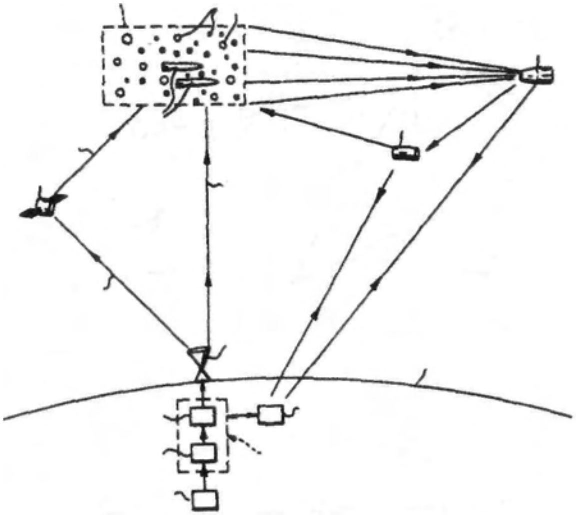

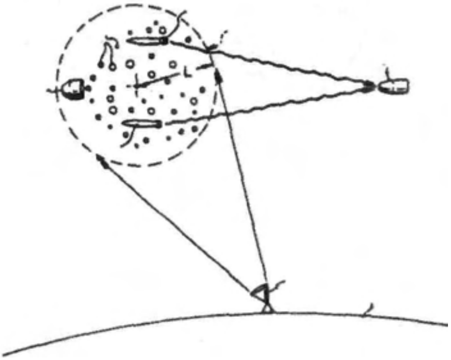

This diagram was taken from U.S. Patent #5,041,834 and shows the over-the-horizon applications of the HAARP technology. 1 is the HAARP heater. 2 is an artificially created mirror in the atmosphere which is used to bounce a signal for use in communications and distinguishing between incoming objects.

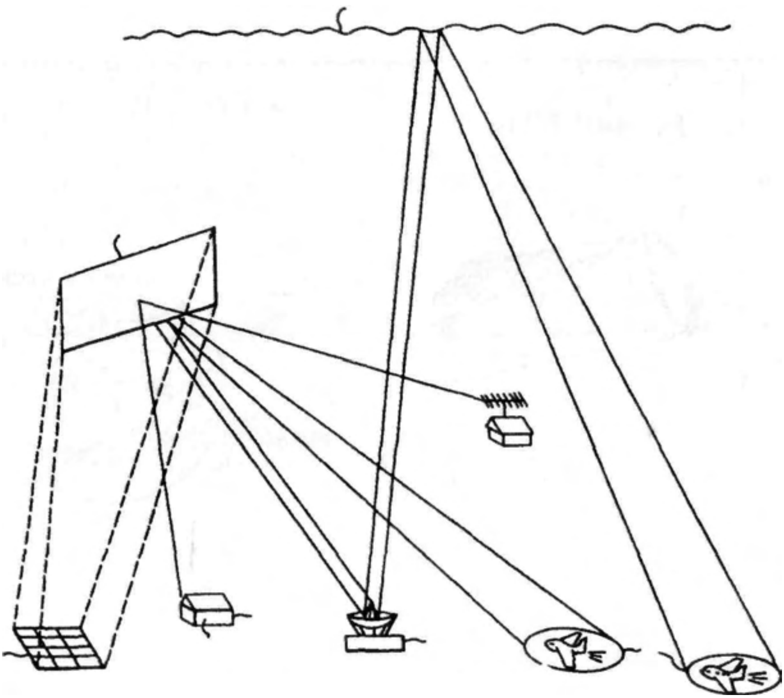

This diagram shows part of the power beaming systems described in the patents. This illustration show an energy beam being projected from the Earth into space and bounced to a remote tocation thereby providing power to a point where it would otherwise not be available.

U.S. Patent Apr. 13, 1993 5,202,689

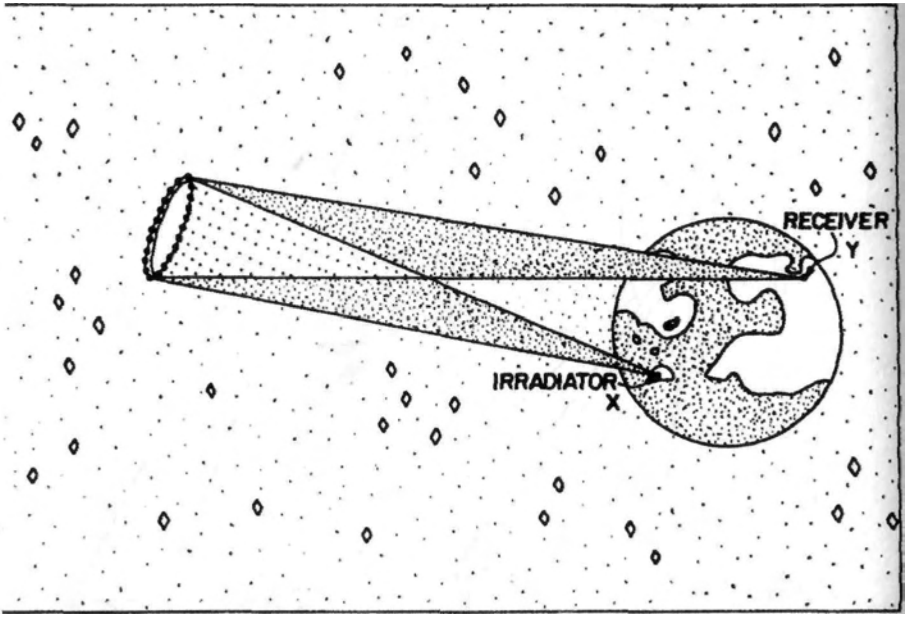

This illustration is from presentations made at the HAARP Workshop on Ionospheric Heating Diagnostics which was held April 30 - May 2, 1991 at Phillips Laboratory (AFSC) Hanscom AFB, Massachusetts. The illustration shows graphically how the ionosphere will be used to bounce Extremely Low Frequency (ELF) waves through the earth and atmosphere. The waves in this picture are being used for communication with submarines. These ELF waves can disrupt mental functions and may impact wildlife migration patterns.

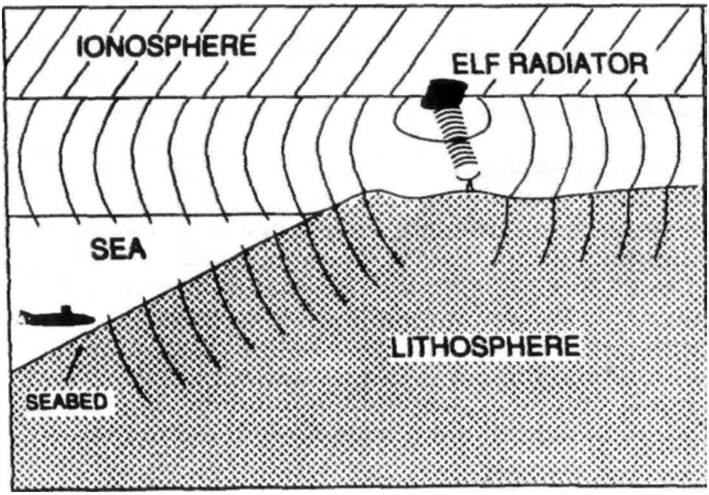

HAARP Updates

HAARP continues to occupy a significant amount of our attention and has remained the focus of much of our current work. We have had the opportunity to speak out about this project in numerous radio and television programs. In addition, a number of news articles have begun to be published throughout the country on this very important subject. We are thankful to all of the media people which have granted us time to bring our work out in front of the citizenry. The issue has not slowed down in terms of general interest in the topic. The story has served as a catalyst for involvement in political and governmental affairs for many individuals.

We have received a number of articles and news clippings from across the country which has provided a good deal of material for use in this publication. One of the most interesting pieces of information arrived just after the book was published.

An article, "Behind the Russian SDI Offer: A Scientific, Technological, and Strategic Revolution", appeared in the magazine 21st Century in the summer of 1993. The article was based on a front page story appearing in a Soviet government newspaper, Izvestia, on April 2, 1993. The article disclosed a whole new area of science and invited the United States to participate in the joint development of this new technology in a "Star Wars" weapons program. The initiative indicated that the Russians were far ahead in many of the areas important to the development of this "Star Wars" technology. One of the key components of the Russian technology was their greater under-standing of "nonlinear" processes involved in the generation, propagation and absorption of powerful pulses of electromagnetic radiations.

What are "nonlinear" processes? This relates to the idea of a small input of additional energy creating a disproportionally larger output of energy. A research scientist, Al Zielinski, recently sent us the following example of nonlinear effects:

Experiment #1

Imagine we had an unlimited amount of dominoes and we lined them up from here to, let's say, Paris. Then we could tip the first domino with 10 grams; it will fall down and cause the second domino to tumble, too, etc. The first action of 10 grams will cause all the dominoes to tumble including the last domino in Paris,

Prom this experiment we should understand that it b not the 10 gram action that causes all the dominoes to tumble, but the 10 gram action just creates an imbalance of the first domino. It is the gravity, however, that causes the dominoes to fall. In other words: only a 10 gram action is required to trigger a gravitational activity of all our dominoes from here to Paris.

Experiment #2

Imagine we had an unlimited amount of special dominoes of which only the first one we line up here is of normal size, and all the subsequent dominoes we line up again from here to Paris are of continuously increased size. By the time we reached Paris, the last domino block would be 1000 meters high and weigh millions of ions. Again we tip the first domino here with 10 grams, which will fall down causing all the subsequent dominoes to tumble. By the time the gravitational action reaches Paris, the last domino in Paris will smash the Eiffel Tower.

From this experiment we should understand that it is not the 10 gram action here that will smash the Eiffel Tower in Paris, but it is the gravitational energy that is picked up on the way to Paris that smashes the Eiffel Tower.

In other words: only a 10 gram action is required to trigger a non-linear gravitational activity which will cause the destruction of the Eiffel Tower.

With the above examples in mind imagine the nonlinear effects of 1 billion watts of effective radiated power being directed at the ionosphere by the HAARP transmitter. This is the first phase capability of the project. The second phase will increase the effective radiated power levels even further- to 4.7 billion watts! In our book we point out that energy in certain frequencies when reaching the outermost portions of the ionosphere can be amplified up to 1000 times by natural processes. This phenomena has been recorded by scientists at UCLA who have observed the results of these power amplifications at a fraction of the power level which HAARP will transfer to this region. This is extremely important in considering what may occur with this level of energy. A serious environmental disaster may well be the result.

The earlier referenced article from 21st Century magazine goes on to describe the implications of the use of phased array antennas and their potentials at 1 billion watt power levels. This is the antenna array HAARP uses and the level of power it is designed to broadcast. What the article describes is a system which can be used for knocking down missiles and aircraft by effecting their guidance systems and creating atmospheric disturbances which lead to them crashing. They also talk about the ability, at lower power levels, to be able to look down from the ionosphere and detect cruise missiles and other incoming objects utilizing what was described as an advanced form of radar. Again this is exactly what has been described in the HAARP patents.

Plasma is a term for an electrically conductive state of matter generated from a gas. It can be created by action of extreme heat, powerful electromagnetic fields and by high levels of focused radio frequency energy such as the energy created with the HAARP instrument. 21st Century magazine suggests that, "The term plasmoid refers to the fact that under certain conditions a plasma can develop a self-contained, self-stabilizing structure based on the magnetic and other effects of internal configurations of electric currents within the plasma," This particular concept is important when referring to the concept of "painting the ionosphere" which was described by the military in the HAARP documents. This is in fact what the military will do with HAARP for certain applications. These plasmas are much different than those described in fusion research in that they involve very low electron energies.

What is known is that although they are "cool" by comparison to fusion plasmas they are remarkably long lived and strong when generated in certain gases. Those specific gases include nitrogen and oxygen, the major components of the earth's atmosphere!

So what does all of this translate into? According to the article it is suggested that this technology can be used for modifying the ionosphere over very large areas for "over-the-horizons" telecommunications disruption, creating computer errors and perhaps even creating negative biological effects. What is known from other government documents, HAARP planning documents and International Red Cross documents is that all of this is possible with these new systems. What is also known now is that a single complex system can combine radar tracking with a speed-of-light means of destruction - the plasmoid. This is but one application of HAARP. The writers of the 21st Century article were not acquainted with the patents regarding HAARP or they would have recognized that the United States military was not interested in the Russian overture of cooperation because we already possessed the means to produce these effects. What also rings throughout the article brings us back to where we began our research into the HAARP system two years ago - to the ideas of Nikola Tesla.

A New York Times article of December 8, 1915 says:

"Nikola Tesla, the inventor, has filed patent applications on the essential parts of a machine, possibilities which test a layman's imagination and promise a parallel of Thor's shooting thunderbolts from the sky to punish those who had angered the gods...Suffice it to say that the invention will go through space with a speed of 300 miles a second, a manless ship without propelling engine or wings sent by electricity to any desired point on the globe on its errand of destruction, if destruction its manipulator wishes to effect.

'It is not a time, said Dr. Tesla yesterday, 'to go into the details of this thing. It is founded upon a principle that means great things in peace; it can be used for great things in war. But I repeat, this is no time to talk of such things.'

'It is perfectly practicable to transmit electrical energy without wires and produce destructive effects at a distance. I have already constructed a wireless transmitter which makes this possible, and have described it in my technical publications, among which I refer to my patent number 1,119,732 recently granted. With transmitters of this kind we are enabled to project electrical energy in any amount to any distance and apply it for innumerable purposes, both in war and peace. Through the universal adoption of this system, ideal conditions for the maintenance of law and order will be realized, for then the energy necessary to the enforcement of right and justice will be normally productive, yet potential, and in any moment available, for attack and defense. The power transmitted need not be necessarily destructive, far, if distance is made to depend upon it, its withdrawal or supply will bring about the same results as those now accomplished by force of arms'

A second article also appeared in the New York Times, on September 22, 1940 and read:

"Nikola Tesla, one of the truly great inventors, who celebrated his eighty-fourth birthday on July 10, tells the writer that he stands ready to divulge to the United States government the secret of his 'teleforce', with which, he said, airplane motors would be melted at a distance of 250 miles, so that an invisible Chinese Wall of Defense would be built around the country..."

"This 'teleforce', he said, is based upon an entirely new principle of physics that 'no one has ever dreamed about', different from the principle embodied in his inventions relating to the transmission of electrical power from a distance, for which he has received a number of basic patents. This new type of force, Mr. Tesla said, would operate through a beam one one hundred-millionth of a square centimeter in diameter, and could be generated from a special plant that would cost no more than $2,000,000 and would take only about three months to construct."

"The beam, he states, involves four new inventions, two of which already have been tested. One of these is a method and apparatus for producing rays 'and other manifestations of energy' in free air, eliminating the necessity for a high vacuum; a second is a method and process for producing 'very great electrical force'; the third is a method for amplifying this force and the fourth is a new method for producing 'a tremendous electrical repelling force'. This would be the projector, or gun, of the system. The voltage for propelling the beam to its objective, according to the inventor, will attain a potential of 50,000,000 volts."

"With this enormous voltage, he said, microscopic electrical particles of matter will be catapulted on their mission of defensive destruction. He has been working on this invention, he added, for many years and has recently made a number of improvements in it."

As the ideas reverberate through my mind I cannot help but to feel that we again are walking down a darkened road of destruction. We are again on a path which may in fact lead to greater problems than those we seek to solve by tampering with the ionosphere.

In March 1996 the military begins to demonstrate the earth-penetrating-tomography applications of this technology -the idea of "x-raying" the earth with ELF waves generated by HAARP. These waves will pass through every living thing in the path and may have perceptible effects on people's health. This demonstration of this capability is critical for the military to gain the additional funding for the second phase of their project. That phase was originally estimated at $175 million dollars and will give the military power levels of 4.7 billion watts of effective radiated power.

Politically, things are only beginning to move as the opposition to this project continues to grow. Researchers, independent scientists and most importantly lay people, all over the world are beginning to let their ideas be felt on this very important issue. Elsewhere in this microbook is an essay on creating political realities. We ask all of our readers to consider taking a step for change and activating some of the ideas contained in that essay.

LOOKING THROUGH THE EARTH
Radio Tomography of Geologic Strata

By Brooks A. Agnew

When the energy crisis of the 1970's seemed real enough to affect the prices of crude oil sufficiently to inspire domestic drilling, it seemed everyone wanted to invest in oil & gas. Drillers resurrected shallow rigs from old Ingersoll Rand units to even older hammer drillers. Lease speculation was very lucrative. Even owners of fields of sagebrush or Kentucky fescue were making millions of dollars off high density drilling - called "checkerboards " by oil drillers - whether they found oil or not. The people who ended up paying in the long run were the taxpayers. One of the very nice enticements to invest in oil speculation was the tax break.

This environment meant that there was often funding for new technology which could offer some advantage over the normal ten percent odds of locating a wildcat well. Such was the case for a visionary approach to oil and gas exploration. My theory was that each chemical bond had a resonant frequency which could be detected and mapped if excited with harmonic wavelengths of radiation at low power levels. This was already being done with IR spectrometers in some lab instruments, but no one had ever tried it with harmonic radio waves broadcast into the earth.

The major obstacle to lab testing with radio waves turned out to be the signal to noise ratio. What inspired me to begin developing this technology in the summer of 1993 was a phenomenon that occurred while surveying a known oil field for a new well site. My team and I were using twenty-five watt marine radios with half wave whip antennae. Normally these radios will reach out ten to fifteen miles without any trouble. We were within eyesight of each other, say a quarter of a mile apart, and could not communicate across the oil field. There was a magnetic fissure caused by a quake or mild plate shift in the petroliferous structure beneath us. The radio signal was virtually shunted into the ground which silenced the six meter marine radios. The apparent signal to noise ratio was very high under these conditions. These subtle magnetic shifts are what dowsers detect with forked sticks or metal rods held loosely by hand.

I decided right away to quantify the drop in radio frequency (RF) power. I had a pair of old Yaesu HAM base units that were capable of broadcasting a constant two meter wave. The broadcasting unit was about five watts sent through a quarter wave four-element square wave antenna pointed straight into the ground; exactly zero degrees. The receiving unit was moved at least as far away as the petroliferous formation was deep. That is to say, the well pump was about 850 feet deep so we moved the receiver about 900 feet away from the broadcasting unit. The receiving antenna was a quarter wave four-element square wave that was mounted on a transit stand with a precision inclinometer.

Both units were mobile. The broadcasting unit was mounted on a Yamaha 250cc four wheel all terrain vehicle equipped with a two-way radio as well. The receiving unit was inside a modified four-wheel drive Chevy van and tied to a spectrographic analyzer that could read out in third octaves. The signal strength was monitored on a multi range analog dB meter. The phenomenon was verified when the mobile broadcasting unit passed over the fissure. The signal dropped over 60 dB to almost absolute silence. I say almost, because there was still something clearly indicated on the spectrograph.

When the transmitting unit was held stationary pointing directly to the center of the earth, right over the petroliferous fissure, the receiving unit could scan from parallel with the ground to about 50 degrees below parallel in line with the broadcasting unit. The spectrum would change as the receiving antenna was scanned through the layers of rock, shale, water, gas, oil, or open caves that were beneath the surface This was remarkable enough to record. What was discovered over the next three years would confirm the above mentioned theory beyond any reasonable doubt. The actual depth of the various formations was determined through simple triangulation. Multiplying the tangent of the receiving angle by the distance away from the transmitting unit provided the depth of the formation being scanned. A laser distance meter and an oversized inclinometer proved to be very precise.

Each day our crew would travel to oil fields in the Western Kentucky area. The transmitting and receiving stations were set up in alternating radii around a particular well site. The spectrographic information was compared to actual drill cutting samples obtained each five feet when the hole was originally drilled. After six months on these sites, we were able to positively identify rock formations by interpreting the spectra. The variables of reported sun spots, electromagnetic radiation from high power transmission lines, and all types weather were considered carefully. The reliability and repeatability of the technique were astonishingly high.

The following year I took the equipment and technology into the field as an exploration unit for hire. I was convinced the technology was quite robust after the fifth wildcat well was discovered. There was one instance around Burkesville, Kentucky that really turned some heads in the local oil and gas industry. My crew was asked to "survey" a lease that was claimed to have already six operating wells. Upon arrival at 7:30 AM we observed six well-maintained pumps that were spaced the mandatory 400 feet across a well-manicured farm field. After walking the area we decided to scan the very center of the field so the receiving unit was set up about a thousand feet off the property.

The days are rather long, hot, and humid in Kentucky in the summer. By 8:00 PM on the second day 1 had asked the mobile transmitter to drive a total of about 60 miles around and around this field 1 made about 100 prints of the spectra. There was no indication of oil or gas on this property. The entire crew was hot and tired. How could there be 6 operating wells on this property without any indication from the readings we were collecting? I personally looked inside each of the six oil tanks and saw my reflection in the crude oil. What was wrong? We were being paid to report what we found and I was very nervous about what I saw.

I knew from thousands of hours with this equipment that it did not lie. I decided to make my report on the data we collected. The land owner and lease holders were furious. They were relying upon our results to sell another investment group another well site on this farm. I stood by my report. There was no oil indicated on this property. Reluctantly our clients paid, and we left. About ten days later I was recounting this experience with a local geologist. He laughed and expressed his confidence in out equipment. He informed me that those wells were all fakes. They did not even have pumps on the end of the steel. The holes on that farm were only about 50 feet deep. The entire scene was fabricated to entice foreigners to invest in drilling another hole, which of course would be dry. I breathed a long sigh of relief and learned to believe what I saw in the spectra.

After locating another seven wells in the Coniferous, Warsaw, and Cyprus formations of Kentucky ranging from 480 to about 1250 feet deep, we accepted contracts to go exploring in the San Marcus, Texas area. The formations in this region are volcanic chimneys which are very difficult to locate with seismographic methods. The sites we examined had many holes where dynamite had been used to set up shock waves which echo back to geophones. These vibrations can be mapped to reveal cavities in the substrata. Sometimes these cavities contain oil or gas. These petroliferous chimneys sometimes are only a few yards in diameter and practically vertical. This type of formation does not respond well to seismic mapping. We scanned thousands of acres for about three weeks. The only formation we located had already been tapped about thirty years prior and exhausted. The explanation 1 offered the lease holders was. "The oil is where we find it."

The next challenge came in the overthrust area of Wyoming outside Evanston. The exploration site covered land outside a national park. Our environmental friendliness allows us to explore anywhere that will allow a 4 wheeler with a spark arrester. We discouraged this particular oil company from drilling. They took our advice, and I believe they saved a million dollars. The other well we examined was a hole being drilled by Quazar. The rig was already seventeen thousand feet down. This type of rig uses various weights of drill mud to contain high pressure subterranean releases and carry the cuttings to the surface. Drilling mud is pumped through the drill steel and is forced to the surface along the clearance between the drill pipe and the edge of the hole. This mud is closely analyzed by mudloggers who chart the structures and discoveries. Hydrogen Sulfide alarms set up around the Kelly - the unit that turns the drill pipe - protect the crew from sudden exposure.

This was the first time the technology had been tested on formations that deep. We spent one day scanning the site. We spent another day preparing a radio tomographical map of the strata below their drill rig, Our results were compared to the mud log. Although we were not allowed to keep a copy of the log, as it did cost the investors over a million dollars, I can tell you that each change in formation matched perfectly. I can also tell you that the hole was dry. This site had been selected using Landsats satellite photos of the surface of the earth which illuminate fractures and subterranean fissures and surface gamma ray scanning. The best guess the petroleum experts could muster was a million dollar dry hole.

Upon returning to Kentucky, I decided to incorporate gamma ray mapping into the data collection scheme. As it turned out a 4' crystal positioned a few inches from the ground on the four-wheeler produced timely results. Radon gas migrates up through the earth from who knows where. It can seep through any geological structure except petroliferous zones. Like upside down rain, radon gas migrates to the edges of these zones and then makes its way to the surface. These resulting halos can be detected with gamma ray mapping. The "dead zones" indicate the presence of petroleum. The velocities of the gamma collisions with the crystal detector are directly proportional to the porosity of the rock. This is very important to know. All the oil pump does is clear the hole of oil that has drained into the hole. If the formations are too tight the oil will never flow into the hole. Even fracking, a technique of pumping high pressure sulfuric acid into the target rock formation, cannot create enough pathways to allow oil to flow if the formation is too tight. We collected enough data to be able to predict the porosity of the target formation before the hole was ever drilled. Gamma ray neutron logs taken on site by Haliburton confirmed many times our ability to predict porosity within 0.5% of their measurements.

The radio tomographical techniques that I developed are the most accurate and reliable in the world When the demand for hard-to-find oil or water reserves becomes high again perhaps this technology will be valuable. As long as our country wishes to maintain its dependence on foreign erode oil, those who make money drilling dry holes will only be interested in using this technology as a marketing device. When the world is ready to find oil, water, natural gas, shale, coal, or even silver - we scanned a silver mine in Roseburg, Oregon once - this technology will be here.

HAARP Correlatives

I developed the most accurate and sensitive tomographical scanning techniques in the world using less than 30 watts of energy. The cumulative resonating energy from molecular bonds in hundreds of cubic yards of similar material could be detected and deciphered to reveal a distinctive voice of these compounds. The energy absorbed by these compounds was not detected. Instead the energy transmitted through or by these compounds, as a result of subtle and precise radiation, was interpreted scientifically.

Extrapolations are always exciting. In accounting or business it is the future gains or profits we love to imagine as we punch in numbers on an imaginary spreadsheet. In nuclear science, the weapons technology imagined by Fermi, Oppenheimer, and Einstein were mathematically possible. The actual effects of the energy release from critical mass could not be imagined or computed. The frightening fact is that our government was insanely eager to test the equation. The situation has come up again.

Mathematically it is possible to stack antennae in a somewhat precise manner to effectively amplify a radio signal to thousands of times its original source power. The frequencies broadcasted, as I have proven for over 15 years, have exact and immediate affects on molecular bonds. When the molecular bond cannot absorb any more energy, or change it into work, heat builds in a matter of milliseconds. If this heat is intense enough the bonds comes apart. If the particles come apart with enough energy, and there is enough nearby mass with which to collide, a chain reaction begins. Once the activation energy is achieved, like striking a match, the reaction continues by itself until the source of matter is entirely converted into pure energy.

The High-frequency Active Auroral Research Project (HAARP) is designed to test the effects of billions of watts of concentrated radio energy on the ionosphere of our planet. Extremely high altitude lenses, formed with billions of cubic yards of ionic atmospheric particles, are being used to focus radio carrier waves onto the surface of our planet for military purposes. From my research I know that if the correct frequency harmonic for that carrier is chosen randomly, the result will be an absolutely catastrophic release of pure energy. The sky would literally appear to burn. What cannot be calculated or imagined is how hot the fire would be, or how long it would burn, or what elements or isotopes would remain after the reaction is complete.

The plain and simple fact is that the risk of scorching every organic molecule off of several states in a few moments, for the sake of experimenting with a new weapon, is unacceptable for the world. Only a small handful of scientists in the world know what is being done by the United States Military with HAARP. The excitement and zeal of these military children is not checked by the wisdom and experience of any civilian scientific community. Their experiments are being conducted and funded in secret. I do not think that the citizens of the world want the surprise of having half the upper atmosphere turn to flames because the HAARP technicians didn't stop to think what might happen if a couple of billion watts at the right frequency were beamed into the ionosphere during a sunstorm.

Our country has been blessed with freedom largely because we have the right to speak out against injustice or corruption. It seems most of the media have been bought and paid for by parties who wish to remain in power no matter what the people think or say. This paper is to inform you that your planet is under assault by absolute power. We need to have a civilian scientific review and publication of the results of the HAARP experiments before any more transmissions are conducted.

ST. MARY'S COLLEGE AND ACADEMY
MONROE, MICH.
FAITH and DUTY
EX LIBRIS
Sisters Servants of the
Immaculate Heart of Mary
1845

McMANUS-TROUP, TOLEDO.

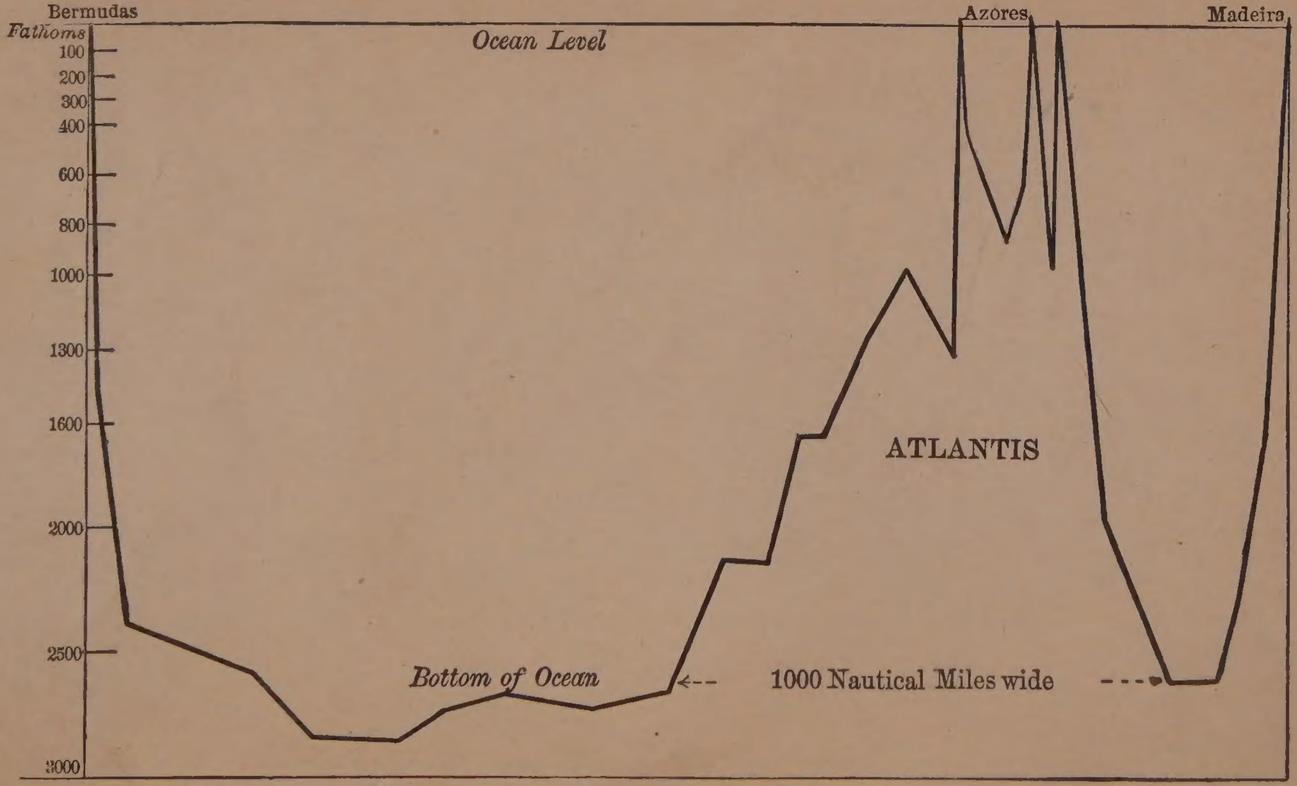

THE PROFILE OF ATLANTIS,

As revealed by the deep-sea soundings of H. M. ship "Challenger," and the U. S. ship "Dolphin."

ATLANTIS:

THE ANTEDILUVIAN WORLD.

BY

IGNATIUS DONNELLY.

ILLUSTRATED.

> "*The world has made such comet-like advance*
> *Lately on science, we may almost hope,*
> *Before we die of sheer decay, to learn*
> *Something about our infancy; when lived*
> *That great, original, broad-eyed, sunken race,*
> *Whose knowledge, like the sea-sustaining rocks,*
> *Hath formed the base of this world's fluctuous lore.*"
>
> FESTUS.

ELEVENTH EDITION.

NEW YORK:
HARPER & BROTHERS, FRANKLIN SQUARE.

Entered according to Act of Congress, in the year 1882, by

HARPER & BROTHERS,

In the Office of the Librarian of Congress, at Washington.

All rights reserved.

CONTENTS.

PART I.

THE HISTORY OF ATLANTIS.

CHAP. PAGE
I. THE PURPOSE OF THE BOOK 1
II. PLATO'S HISTORY OF ATLANTIS 5
III. THE PROBABILITIES OF PLATO'S STORY 22
IV. WAS SUCH A CATASTROPHE POSSIBLE? 31
V. THE TESTIMONY OF THE SEA 46
VI. THE TESTIMONY OF THE FLORA AND FAUNA 54

PART II.

THE DELUGE.

I. THE DESTRUCTION OF ATLANTIS DESCRIBED IN THE DELUGE LEGENDS 65
II. THE DELUGE OF THE BIBLE 68
III. THE DELUGE OF THE CHALDEANS 75
IV. THE DELUGE LEGENDS OF OTHER NATIONS 85
V. THE DELUGE LEGENDS OF AMERICA 98
VI. SOME CONSIDERATION OF THE DELUGE LEGENDS 119

PART III.

THE CIVILIZATION OF THE OLD WORLD AND NEW COMPARED.

I. CIVILIZATION AN INHERITANCE 129
II. THE IDENTITY OF THE CIVILIZATIONS OF THE OLD WORLD AND THE NEW 136
III. AMERICAN EVIDENCES OF INTERCOURSE WITH EUROPE OR ATLANTIS 165

CHAP. PAGE
IV. CORROBORATING CIRCUMSTANCES 171
V. THE QUESTION OF COMPLEXION 183
VI. GENESIS CONTAINS A HISTORY OF ATLANTIS 198
VII. THE ORIGIN OF OUR ALPHABET 214
VIII. THE BRONZE AGE IN EUROPE. 237
IX. ARTIFICIAL DEFORMATION OF THE SKULL 268

PART IV.

THE MYTHOLOGIES OF THE OLD WORLD A RECOLLECTION OF ATLANTIS.

I. TRADITIONS OF ATLANTIS 276
II. THE KINGS OF ATLANTIS BECOME THE GODS OF THE GREEKS . 283
III. THE GODS OF THE PHŒNICIANS ALSO KINGS OF ATLANTIS . . 308
IV. THE GOD ODIN, WODEN, OR WOTAN 313
V. THE PYRAMID, THE CROSS, AND THE GARDEN OF EDEN . . . 317
VI. GOLD AND SILVER THE SACRED METALS OF ATLANTIS. . . . 343

PART V.

THE COLONIES OF ATLANTIS.

I. THE CENTRAL AMERICAN AND MEXICAN COLONIES 348
II. THE EGYPTIAN COLONY. 358
III. THE COLONIES OF THE MISSISSIPPI VALLEY 370
IV. THE IBERIAN COLONIES OF ATLANTIS 387
V. THE PERUVIAN COLONY 390
VI. THE AFRICAN COLONIES 404
VII. THE IRISH COLONIES FROM ATLANTIS 408
VIII. THE OLDEST SON OF NOAH 423
IX. THE ANTIQUITY OF SOME OF OUR GREAT INVENTIONS 440
X. THE ARYAN COLONIES FROM ATLANTIS. 456
XI. ATLANTIS RECONSTRUCTED 472

ILLUSTRATIONS.

PAGE
The Profile of Atlantis . . . . *Frontispiece*
Coal-measures of Pennsylvania 31
Destruction of Pompeii 33
Calabrian Peasants Ingulfed by Crevasses (1783) 37
Fort of Sindree, on the Eastern Branch of the Indus, before it was Submerged by the Earthquake of 1819 39
View of the Fort of Sindree from the West in March, 1838 . . 39
Eruption of Vesuvius in 1737 41
Map of Atlantis, with its Islands and Connecting Ridges, from Deep-sea Soundings 47
Ancient Islands between Atlantis and the Mediterranean, from Deep-sea Soundings 51
Ancient Carving, Stratford-on-Avon, England 60
Cereals of the Age of Stone in Europe 62
Ancient Irish Pipes 63
Ancient Indian Pipe, New Jersey 64
The World, according to Cosmos 95
Map of Europe, after Cosmos 96
The Mountain the Sun goes behind at Night 97
The Starting-point of the Aztecs, according to the Gamelli Careri Pictured MS. 104
The Starting-point of the Aztecs, according to the Boturini Pictured Writing 104
Calendar Stone 107
The God of the Flood 123
Mosaics at Mitla, Mexico 137
Carving on the Buddhist Tower, Sárnáth, India 139
Ancient Irish Vase of the Bronze Age 142
Ancient Vase from the Mounds of the United States 143

Page
Ancient Mexican Vase 166
Bearded Head, from Teotihuacan 166
Elephant Mound, Wisconsin 168
Elephant Pipe, Louisa County, Iowa 169
Elephant-trunk Head-dress, Palenque 169
Mexican Representation of Elephant 170
Negro Idols found in Central America 174
Negroid Figure, Palenque 175
Negro Head, Vera Cruz 175
Governor and other Indians of the Pueblo of San Domingo, New Mexico 187
Choctaw 190
Shawnees 191
Savonarola 193
The Races of Men according to the Egyptians 195
Ruins of the Pyramid of Cholula 201
Great Serpent-mound, Ohio 205
Stone Implements of Europe and America 206
Landa's Alphabet 217
The Alphabet 219
Implements and Ornaments of the Bronze Age 239
Ornaments of the Bronze Age 242
Celtic Warrior, from Egyptian Monuments 244
Celtic Warrior, from Assyrian Monuments 245
A Skull of the Age of Stone, Denmark 249
A Skull of the Earliest Times of the Age of Iron, Denmark . . 249
Irish Celt 250
Danish Celt. 250
Leaf-shaped Bronze Swords 251
Stone Celt, Mound in Tennessee. 253
Bronze Knives from Denmark 254
Bronze Knives from Switzerland 254
Hut Urn, Albano 255
Bronze Lake Village 255
Bronze Razor-knives. 256
Ancient Galley, from a Roman Coin 257
Ship of William the Conqueror. 257
Irish Bronze Dagger. 258
Inscribed Celt 258
Bronze Hair-pins 259
Vases from Mounds in the Mississippi Valley. 260

PAGE
Vases from Switzerland 261
Ancient Swiss Vase and Supporter 261
Bronze Chisels 262
Spirals from Scotland 262
Spiral from New Mexico 262
Discoidal Stones, Illinois 263
Copper Spear-head, Lake Superior 263
Bronze Hatchets, Switzerland 263
Spiral from New Mexico 265
Shell Ornament, Mound near Nashville, Tennessee 265
Copper Axe, from a Mound near Laporte, Indiana 266
Copper Axe, Waterford, Ireland 266
Fragment of Pottery, Lake Neufchatel, Switzerland 266
Fragment of Pottery, San José, Mexico 266
Stucco Bass-relief in the Palace of Palenque 269
Ancient Swiss Skull 270
Peruvian Skull 271
Chinook (Flat-head), after Catlin 271
Heads from Palenque 272
Outlines of Skulls of Different Races 273
Egyptian Heads 274
Central American Head 274
Egyptian Head 274
Peruvian Inca Skull, from the Ancient Cemetery of Pachacamac . 275
The Empire of Atlantis 295
Poseidon, or Neptune 305
Egyptian Tau 319
Cross from Monuments of Palenque 319
Ancient Irish Cross 320
Central American Cross 320
Copper Coin, Teotihuacan 320
Ancient Irish Cross—Pre-Christian—Kilnaboy 321
Cross from Egyptian Monuments 322
Pyramids of Egypt 337
Pyramids of Teotihuacan 338
The great Mound, near Miamisburg, Ohio 339
Great Pyramid of Xcoch, Mexico 341
Common Form of Arch, Central America 353
Section of the Treasure-house of Atreus at Mycenæ 354
Arch of Las Monjas, Palenque, Central America 355
Graded Way near Piketon, Ohio 373

PAGE
Walls at Gran-Chimu, Peru 375
Cross and Pyramid Mound, Ohio 375
From the Mounds of the Ohio Valley 381
Cyclopean Wall, Greece 397
Cyclopean Masonry, Peru 397
Owl-headed Vase, Troy 398
Owl-headed Vase, Peru 398
Owl-headed Vase, Peru 399
Owl-headed Vase, Troy 400
Tamahu, from the Egyptian Monuments, 1500 B.C. 407
The Burgh of Moussa, in the Shetlands 417
Round-tower of the Cañon of the Mancos, Colorado, U. S. . . . 418
Cow-headed Idol, Mycenæ (from Schliemann) 427
Religious Emblem of the Bronze Age, Switzerland 428
Baal, the Phœnician God 428
Moqui Idol 429
Dakota Idol 429
Peruvian Devil 429
Greek Siren 430
Chinese Magnetic Car 442
Ancient Coins of Tyre 444
Coin from Central America 445
Ancient Egyptian Plough 460

ATLANTIS:

THE ANTEDILUVIAN WORLD.

PART I.

THE HISTORY OF ATLANTIS.

CHAPTER I.

THE PURPOSE OF THE BOOK.

THIS book is an attempt to demonstrate several distinct and novel propositions. These are:

1. That there once existed in the Atlantic Ocean, opposite the mouth of the Mediterranean Sea, a large island, which was the remnant of an Atlantic continent, and known to the ancient world as Atlantis.

2. That the description of this island given by Plato is not, as has been long supposed, fable, but veritable history.

3. That Atlantis was the region where man first rose from a state of barbarism to civilization.

4. That it became, in the course of ages, a populous and mighty nation, from whose overflowings the shores of the Gulf of Mexico, the Mississippi River, the Amazon, the Pacific coast of South America, the Mediterranean, the west coast of Europe and Africa, the Baltic, the Black Sea, and the Caspian were populated by civilized nations.

5. That it was the true Antediluvian world; the Garden of Eden; the Gardens of the Hesperides; the Elysian Fields;

the Gardens of Alcinous; the Mesomphalos; the Olympos; the Asgard of the traditions of the ancient nations; representing a universal memory of a great land, where early mankind dwelt for ages in peace and happiness.

6. That the gods and goddesses of the ancient Greeks, the Phœnicians, the Hindoos, and the Scandinavians were simply the kings, queens, and heroes of Atlantis; and the acts attributed to them in mythology are a confused recollection of real historical events.

7. That the mythology of Egypt and Peru represented the original religion of Atlantis, which was sun-worship.

8. That the oldest colony formed by the Atlanteans was probably in Egypt, whose civilization was a reproduction of that of the Atlantic island.

9. That the implements of the "Bronze Age" of Europe were derived from Atlantis. The Atlanteans were also the first manufacturers of iron.

10. That the Phœnician alphabet, parent of all the European alphabets, was derived from an Atlantis alphabet, which was also conveyed from Atlantis to the Mayas of Central America.

11. That Atlantis was the original seat of the Aryan or Indo-European family of nations, as well as of the Semitic peoples, and possibly also of the Turanian races.

12. That Atlantis perished in a terrible convulsion of nature, in which the whole island sunk into the ocean, with nearly all its inhabitants.

13. That a few persons escaped in ships and on rafts, and carried to the nations east and west the tidings of the appalling catastrophe, which has survived to our own time in the Flood and Deluge legends of the different nations of the old and new worlds.

If these propositions can be proved, they will solve many problems which now perplex mankind; they will confirm in many respects the statements in the opening chapters of Genesis; they will widen the area of human history; they will explain the remarkable resemblances which exist between the ancient civilizations found upon the opposite shores of the Atlantic Ocean, in the old and new worlds; and they will aid us to rehabilitate the fathers of our civilization, our blood, and our fundamental ideas—the men who lived, loved, and labored ages before the Aryans descended upon India, or the Phœnician had settled in Syria, or the Goth had reached the shores of the Baltic.

The fact that the story of Atlantis was for thousands of years regarded as a fable proves nothing. There is an unbelief which grows out of ignorance, as well as a scepticism which is born of intelligence. The people nearest to the past are not always those who are best informed concerning the past.

For a thousand years it was believed that the legends of the buried cities of Pompeii and Herculaneum were myths: they were spoken of as "the fabulous cities." For a thousand years the educated world did not credit the accounts given by Herodotus of the wonders of the ancient civilizations of the Nile and of Chaldea. He was called "the father of liars." Even Plutarch sneered at him. Now, in the language of Frederick Schlegel, "the deeper and more comprehensive the researches of the moderns have been, the more their regard and esteem for Herodotus has increased." Buckle says, "His minute information about Egypt and Asia Minor is admitted by all geographers."

There was a time when the expedition sent out by Pharaoh Necho to circumnavigate Africa was doubted, because the explorers stated that after they had progressed a certain distance the sun was north of them; this circumstance, which then aroused suspicion, now proves to us that the Egyptian navigators had really passed the equator, and anticipated by 2100 years Vasquez de Gama in his discovery of the Cape of Good Hope.

If I succeed in demonstrating the truth of the somewhat startling propositions with which I commenced this chapter, it will only be by bringing to bear upon the question of Atlantis a thousand converging lines of light from a multitude of researches made by scholars in different fields of modern thought. Further investigations and discoveries will, I trust, confirm the correctness of the conclusions at which I have arrived.

CHAPTER II.

PLATO'S HISTORY OF ATLANTIS.

PLATO has preserved for us the history of Atlantis. If our views are correct, it is one of the most valuable records which have come down to us from antiquity.

Plato lived 400 years before the birth of Christ. His ancestor, Solon, was the great law-giver of Athens 600 years before the Christian era. Solon visited Egypt. Plutarch says, "Solon attempted in verse a large description, or rather fabulous account of the Atlantic Island, which he had learned from the wise men of Sais, and which particularly concerned the Athenians; but by reason of his age, not want of leisure (as Plato would have it), he was apprehensive the work would be too much for him, and therefore did not go through with it. These verses are a proof that business was not the hinderance:

"'I grow in learning as I grow in age.'

And again:

"'Wine, wit, and beauty still their charms bestow,
Light all the shades of life, and cheer us as we go.'

"Plato, ambitious to cultivate and adorn the subject of the Atlantic Island, as a delightful spot in some fair field unoccupied, to which also he had some claim by reason of his being related to Solon, laid out magnificent courts and enclosures, and erected a grand entrance to it, such as no other story, fable, or poem ever had. But, as he began it late, he ended his life before the work, so that the more the reader is delighted with the part that is written, the more regret he has to find it unfinished."

There can be no question that Solon visited Egypt. The causes of his departure from Athens, for a period of ten years, are fully explained by Plutarch. He dwelt, he tells us,

"On the Canopian shore, by Nile's deep mouth."

There he conversed upon points of philosophy and history with the most learned of the Egyptian priests. He was a man of extraordinary force and penetration of mind, as his laws and his sayings, which have been preserved to us, testify. There is no improbability in the statement that he commenced in verse a history and description of Atlantis, which he left unfinished at his death; and it requires no great stretch of the imagination to believe that this manuscript reached the hands of his successor and descendant, Plato; a scholar, thinker, and historian like himself, and, like himself, one of the profoundest minds of the ancient world. The Egyptian priest had said to Solon, "You have no antiquity of history, and no history of antiquity;" and Solon doubtless realized fully the vast importance of a record which carried human history back, not only thousands of years before the era of Greek civilization, but many thousands of years before even the establishment of the kingdom of Egypt; and he was anxious to preserve for his half-civilized countrymen this inestimable record of the past.

We know of no better way to commence a book about Atlantis than by giving in full the record preserved by Plato. It is as follows:

Critias. Then listen, Socrates, to a strange tale, which is, however, certainly true, as Solon, who was the wisest of the seven sages, declared. He was a relative and great friend of my great-grandfather, Dropidas, as he himself says in several of his poems; and Dropidas told Critias, my grandfather, who remembered, and told us, that there were of old great and marvellous actions of the Athenians, which have passed into oblivion through time and the destruction of the human race—

and one in particular, which was the greatest of them all, the recital of which will be a suitable testimony of our gratitude to you. . . ..

Socrates. Very good; and what is this ancient famous action of which Critias spoke, not as a mere legend, but as a veritable action of the Athenian State, which Solon recounted?

Critias. I will tell an old-world story which I heard from an aged man; for Critias was, as he said, at that time nearly ninety years of age, and I was about ten years of age. Now the day was that day of the Apaturia which is called the registration of youth; at which, according to custom, our parents gave prizes for recitations, and the poems of several poets were recited by us boys, and many of us sung the poems of Solon, which were new at the time. One of our tribe, either because this was his real opinion, or because he thought that he would please Critias, said that, in his judgment, Solon was not only the wisest of men but the noblest of poets. The old man, I well remember, brightened up at this, and said, smiling: "Yes, Amynander, if Solon had only, like other poets, made poetry the business of his life, and had completed the tale which he brought with him from Egypt, and had not been compelled, by reason of the factions and troubles which he found stirring in this country when he came home, to attend to other matters, in my opinion he would have been as famous as Homer, or Hesiod, or any poet."

"And what was that poem about, Critias?" said the person who addressed him.

"About the greatest action which the Athenians ever did, and which ought to have been most famous, but which, through the lapse of time and the destruction of the actors, has not come down to us."

"Tell us," said the other, "the whole story, and how and from whom Solon heard this veritable tradition."

He replied: "At the head of the Egyptian Delta, where the river Nile divides, there is a certain district which is called the district of Sais, and the great city of the district is also called Sais, and is the city from which Amasis the king was sprung. And the citizens have a deity who is their foundress: she is called in the Egyptian tongue Neith, which is asserted by them to be the same whom the Hellenes called Athene. Now, the citizens of this city are great lovers of the Athenians, and say that they are in some way related to them. Thither came Solon, who was received by them with great honor; and he asked the priests, who were most skilful in such matters, about antiquity, and made the discovery that neither he nor any other Hellene knew anything worth mentioning about the times of old. On one occasion, when he was drawing them on to speak of antiquity, he began to tell about the most ancient things in our part of the world—about Phoroneus, who is called 'the first,' and about Niobe; and, after the Deluge, to tell of the lives of Deucalion and Pyrrha; and he traced the genealogy of their descendants, and attempted to reckon how many years old were the events of which he was speaking, and to give the dates. Thereupon, one of the priests, who was of very great age, said, 'O Solon, Solon, you Hellenes are but children, and there is never an old man who is an Hellene.' Solon, hearing this, said, 'What do you mean?' 'I mean to say,' he replied, 'that in mind you are all young; there is no old opinion handed down among you by ancient tradition, nor any science which is hoary with age. And I will tell you the reason of this: there have been, and there will be again, many destructions of mankind arising out of many causes. There is a story which even you have preserved, that once upon a time Phaëthon, the son of Helios, having yoked the steeds in his father's chariot, because he was not able to drive them in the path of his father, burnt up all that was upon the earth, and was himself destroyed by a thunder-bolt. Now, this has the form of a myth, but really signifies a declination of the bodies moving around the earth and in the heavens, and a great conflagration of things upon the earth recurring at long intervals of time: when this happens, those who live upon the mountains and in dry and lofty places are more liable to destruction than those who dwell by rivers or on the sea-shore; and from this calamity the Nile, who is our never-failing savior, saves and delivers us. When, on the other hand, the gods purge the earth with a deluge of water, among you herdsmen and shepherds on the mountains are the survivors, whereas those of you who live in cities are carried by the rivers into the sea; but in this country neither at that time nor at any other does the water come from above on the fields, having always a tendency to come up from below, for which reason the things preserved here are said to be the oldest. The fact is, that wherever the extremity of winter frost or of summer sun does not prevent, the human race is always increasing at times, and at other times diminishing in numbers. And whatever happened either in your country or in ours, or in any other region of which we are informed—if any action which is noble or great, or in any other way remarkable has taken place, all that has been written down of old, and is preserved in our temples; whereas you and other nations are just being provided with letters and the other things which States require; and then, at the usual period, the stream from heaven descends like a pestilence, and leaves only those of you who are destitute of letters and education; and thus you have to begin all over again as children, and know nothing of what happened in ancient times, either among us or among yourselves. As for those genealogies of yours which you have recounted to us, Solon, they are no better than the tales of children; for, in the first place, you remember one deluge only, whereas there were many of them; and, in the next place, you do not know that there dwelt in your land the fairest and noblest race of men which ever lived, of whom you and your whole city are but a seed or remnant. And this was unknown to you, because for many generations the survivors of that destruction died and made no sign. For there was a time, Solon, before that great deluge of all, when the city which now is Athens was first in war, and was preeminent for the excellence of her laws, and is said to have performed the noblest deeds, and to have had the fairest constitution of any of which tradition tells, under the face of heaven.' Solon marvelled at this, and earnestly requested the priest to inform him exactly and in order about these former citizens. 'You are welcome to hear about them, Solon,' said the priest, 'both for your own sake and for that of the city; and, above all, for the sake of the goddess who is the common patron and protector and educator of both our cities. She founded your city a thousand years before ours, receiving from the Earth and Hephæstus the seed of your race, and then she founded ours, the constitution of which is set down in our sacred registers as 8000 years old. As touching the citizens of 9000 years ago, I will briefly inform you of their laws and of the noblest of their actions; and the exact particulars of the whole we will hereafter go through at our leisure in the sacred registers themselves. If you compare these very laws with your own, you will find that many of ours are the counterpart of yours, as they were in the olden time. In the first place, there is the caste of priests, which is separated from all the others; next there are the artificers, who exercise their several crafts by themselves, and without admixture of any other; and also there is the class of shepherds and that of hunters, as well as that of husbandmen; and you will observe, too, that the warriors in Egypt are separated from all the other classes, and are commanded by the law only to engage in war; moreover, the weapons with which they are equipped are shields and spears, and this the goddess taught first among you, and then in Asiatic countries, and we among the Asiatics first adopted.

"'Then, as to wisdom, do you observe what care the law took from the very first, searching out and comprehending the whole order of things down to prophecy and medicine (the latter with a view to health); and out of these divine elements drawing what was needful for human life, and adding every sort of knowledge which was connected with them. All this order and arrangement the goddess first imparted to you when establishing your city; and she chose the spot of earth in which you were born, because she saw that the happy temperament of the seasons in that land would produce the wisest of men. Wherefore the goddess, who was a lover both of war and of wisdom, selected, and first of all settled that spot which was the most likely to produce men likest herself. And there you dwelt, having such laws as these and still better ones, and excelled all mankind in all virtue, as became the children and disciples of the gods. Many great and wonderful deeds are recorded of your State in our histories; but one of them exceeds all the rest in greatness and valor; for these histories tell of a mighty power which was aggressing wantonly against the whole of Europe and Asia, and to which your city put an end. This power came forth out of the Atlantic Ocean, for in those days the Atlantic was navigable; and there was an island situated in front of the straits which you call the Columns of Heracles: the island was larger than Libya and Asia put together, and was the way to other islands, and from the islands you might pass through the whole of the opposite continent which surrounded the true ocean; for this sea which is within the Straits of Heracles is only a harbor, having a narrow entrance, but that other is a real sea, and the surrounding land may be most truly called a continent. Now, in the island of Atlantis there was a great and wonderful empire, which had rule over the whole island and several others, as well as over parts of the continent; and, besides these, they subjected the parts of Libya within the Columns of Heracles as far as Egypt, and of Europe as far as Tyrrhenia. The vast power thus gathered into one, endeavored to subdue at one blow our country and yours, and the whole of the land which was within the straits; and then, Solon, your country shone forth, in the excellence of her virtue and strength, among all mankind; for she was the first in courage and military skill, and was the leader of the Hellenes. And when the rest fell off from her, being compelled to stand alone, after having undergone the very extremity of danger, she defeated and triumphed over the invaders, and preserved from slavery those who were not yet subjected, and freely liberated all the others who dwelt within the limits of Heracles. But afterward there occurred violent earthquakes and floods, and in a single day and night of rain all your warlike men in a body sunk into the earth, and the island of Atlantis in like manner disappeared, and was sunk beneath the sea. And that is the reason why the sea in those parts is impassable and impenetrable, because there is such a quantity of shallow mud in the way; and this was caused by the subsidence of the island.' ("Plato's Dialogues," ii., 517, *Timæus.*) . . .

"But in addition to the gods whom you have mentioned, I would specially invoke Mnemosyne; for all the important part of what I have to tell is dependent on her favor, and if I can recollect and recite enough of what was said by the priests, and brought hither by Solon, I doubt not that I shall satisfy the requirements of this theatre. To that task, then, I will at once address myself.

"Let me begin by observing, first of all, that nine thousand was the sum of years which had elapsed since the war which was said to have taken place between all those who dwelt outside the Pillars of Heracles and those who dwelt within them: this war I am now to describe. Of the combatants on the one side the city of Athens was reported to have been the ruler, and to have directed the contest; the combatants on the other side were led by the kings of the islands of Atlantis, which, as I was saying, once had an extent greater than that of Libya and Asia; and, when afterward sunk by an earthquake, became an impassable barrier of mud to voyagers sailing from hence to the ocean. The progress of the history will unfold the various tribes of barbarians and Hellenes which then existed, as they successively appear on the scene; but I must begin by describing, first of all, the Athenians as they were in that day, and their enemies who fought with them; and I shall have to tell of the power and form of government of both of them. Let us give the precedence to Athens. . . .

"Many great deluges have taken place during the nine thousand years, for that is the number of years which have elapsed since the time of which I am speaking; and in all the ages and changes of things there has never been any settlement of the earth flowing down from the mountains, as in other places, which is worth speaking of; it has always been carried round in a circle, and disappeared in the depths below. The consequence is that, in comparison of what then was, there are remaining in small islets only the bones of the wasted body, as they may be called, all the richer and softer parts of the soil having fallen away, and the mere skeleton of the country being left. . . .

"And next, if I have not forgotten what I heard when I was a child, I will impart to you the character and origin of their adversaries; for friends should not keep their stories to themselves, but have them in common. Yet, before proceeding farther in the narrative, I ought to warn you that you must not be surprised if you should hear Hellenic names given to foreigners. I will tell you the reason of this: Solon, who was intending to use the tale for his poem, made an investigation into the meaning of the names, and found that the early Egyptians, in writing them down, had translated them into their own language, and he recovered the meaning of the several names and retranslated them, and copied them out again in our language. My great-grandfather, Dropidas, had the original writing, which is still in my possession, and was carefully studied by me when I was a child. Therefore, if you hear names such as are used in this country, you must not be surprised, for I have told you the reason of them.

"The tale, which was of great length, began as follows: I have before remarked, in speaking of the allotments of the gods, that they distributed the whole earth into portions differing in extent, and made themselves temples and sacrifices. And Poseidon, receiving for his lot the island of Atlantis, begat children by a mortal woman, and settled them in a part of the island which I will proceed to describe. On the side toward the sea, and in the centre of the whole island, there was a plain which is said to have been the fairest of all plains, and very fertile. Near the plain again, and also in the centre of the island, at a distance of about fifty stadia, there was a mountain, not very high on any side. In this mountain there dwelt one of the earth-born primeval men of that country, whose name was Evenor, and he had a wife named Leucippe, and they had an only daughter, who was named Cleito. The maiden was growing up to womanhood when her father and mother died; Poseidon fell in love with her, and had intercourse with her; and, breaking the ground, enclosed the hill in which she dwelt all round, making alternate zones of sea and land, larger and smaller, encircling one another; there were two of land and three of water, which he turned as with a lathe out of the centre of the island, equidistant every way, so that no man could get to the island, for ships and voyages were not yet heard of. He himself, as he was a god, found no difficulty in making special arrangements for the centre island, bringing two streams of water under the earth, which he caused to ascend as springs, one of warm water and the other of cold, and making every variety of food to spring up abundantly in the earth. He also begat and brought up five pairs of male children, dividing the island of Atlantis into ten portions: he gave to the first-born of the eldest pair his mother's dwelling and the surrounding allotment, which was the largest and best, and made him king over the rest; the others he made princes, and gave them rule over many men and a large territory. And he named them all: the eldest, who was king, he named Atlas, and from him the whole island and the ocean received the name of Atlantic. To his twin-brother, who was born after him, and obtained as his lot the extremity of the island toward the Pillars of Heracles, as far as the country which is still called the region of Gades in that part of the world, he gave the name which in the Hellenic language is Eumelus, in the language of the country which is named after him, Gadeirus. Of the second pair of twins, he called one Ampheres and the other Evæmon. To the third pair of twins he gave the name Mneseus to the elder, and Autochthon to the one who followed him. Of the fourth pair of twins he called the elder Elasippus and the younger Mestor. And of the fifth pair he gave to the elder the name of Azaes, and to the younger Diaprepes. All these and their descendants were the inhabitants and rulers of divers islands in the open sea; and also, as has been already said, they held sway in the other direction over the country within the Pillars as far as Egypt and Tyrrhenia. Now Atlas had a numerous and honorable family, and his eldest branch always retained the kingdom, which the eldest son handed on to his eldest for many generations; and they had such an amount of wealth as was never before possessed by kings and potentates, and is not likely ever to be again, and they were furnished with everything which they could have, both in city and country. /For, because of the greatness of their empire, many things were brought to them from foreign countries, and the island itself provided much of what was required by them for the uses of life. In the first place, they dug out of the earth whatever was to be found there, mineral as well as metal, and that which is now only a name, and was then something more than a name—orichalcum—was dug out of the earth in many parts of the island, and, with the exception of gold, was esteemed the most precious of metals among the men of those days. There was an abundance of wood for carpenters' work, and sufficient maintenance for tame and wild animals. Moreover, there were a great number of elephants in the island, and there was provision for animals of every kind, both for those which live in lakes and marshes and rivers, and also for those which live in mountains and on plains, and therefore for the animal which is the largest and most voracious of them. Also, whatever fragrant things there are in the earth, whether roots, or herbage, or woods, or distilling drops of flowers or fruits, grew and thrived in that land; and again, the cultivated fruit of the earth, both the dry edible fruit and other species of food, which we call by the general name of legumes, and the fruits having a hard rind, affording drinks, and meats, and ointments, and good store of chestnuts and the like, which may be used to play with, and are fruits which spoil with keeping—and the pleasant kinds of dessert which console us after dinner, when we are full and tired of eating—all these that sacred island lying beneath the sun brought forth fair and wondrous in infinite abundance. All these things they received from the earth, and they employed themselves in constructing their temples, and palaces, and harbors, and docks; and they arranged the whole country in the following manner: First of all they bridged over the zones of sea which surrounded the ancient metropolis, and made a passage into and out of the royal palace; and then they began to build the palace in the habitation of the god and of their ancestors. This they continued to ornament in successive generations, every king surpassing the one who came before him to the utmost of his power, until they made the building a marvel to behold for size and for beauty. And, beginning from the sea, they dug a canal three hundred feet in width and one hundred feet in depth, and fifty stadia in length, which they carried through to the outermost zone, making a passage from the sea up to this, which became a harbor, and leaving an opening sufficient to enable the largest vessels to find ingress. Moreover, they divided the zones of land which parted the zones of sea, constructing bridges of such a width as would leave a passage for a single trireme to pass out of one into another, and roofed them over; and there was a way underneath for the ships, for the banks of the zones were raised considerably above the water. Now the largest of the zones into which a passage was cut from the sea was three stadia in breadth, and the zone of land which came next of equal breadth; but the next two, as well the zone of water as of land, were two stadia, and the one which surrounded the central island was a stadium only in width. The island in which the palace was situated had a diameter of five stadia. This, and the zones and the bridge, which was the sixth part of a stadium in width, they surrounded by a stone wall, on either side placing towers, and gates on the bridges where the sea passed in. The stone which was used in the work they quarried from underneath the centre island and from underneath the zones, on the outer as well as the inner side. One kind of stone was white, another black, and a third red; and, as they quarried, they at the same time hollowed out docks double within, having roofs formed out of the native rock. Some of their buildings were simple, but in others they put together different stones, which they intermingled for the sake of ornament, to be a natural source of delight. The entire circuit of the wall which went round the outermost one they covered with a coating of brass, and the circuit of the next wall they coated with tin, and the third, which encompassed the citadel, flashed with the red light of orichalcum. The palaces in the interior of the citadel were constructed in this wise: In the centre was a holy temple dedicated to Cleito and Poseidon, which remained inaccessible, and was surrounded by an enclosure of gold; this was the spot in which they originally begat the race of the ten princes, and thither they annually brought the fruits of the earth in their season from all the ten portions, and performed sacrifices to each of them. Here, too, was Poseidon's own temple, of a stadium in length and half a stadium in width, and of a proportionate height, having a sort of barbaric splendor. All the outside of the temple, with the exception of the pinnacles, they covered with silver, and the pinnacles with gold. In the interior of the temple the roof was of ivory, adorned everywhere with gold and silver and orichalcum; all the other parts of the walls and pillars and floor they lined with orichalcum. In the temple they placed statues of gold: there was the god himself standing in a chariot—the charioteer of six winged horses—and of such a size that he touched the roof of the building with his head; around him there were a hundred Nereids riding on dolphins, for such was thought to be the number of them in that day. There were also in the interior of the temple other images which had been dedicated by private individuals. And around the temple on the outside were placed statues of gold of all the ten kings and of their wives; and there were many other great offerings, both of kings and of private individuals, coming both from the city itself and the foreign cities over which they held sway. There was an altar, too, which in size and workmanship corresponded to the rest of the work, and there were palaces in like manner which answered to the greatness of the kingdom and the glory of the temple.

"In the next place, they used fountains both of cold and hot springs; these were very abundant, and both kinds wonderfully adapted to use by reason of the sweetness and excellence of their waters. They constructed buildings about them, and planted suitable trees; also cisterns, some open to the heaven, others which they roofed over, to be used in winter as warm baths: there were the king's baths, and the baths of private persons, which were kept apart; also separate baths for women, and others again for horses and cattle, and to them they gave as much adornment as was suitable for them. The water which ran off they carried, some to the grove of Poseidon, where were growing all manner of trees of wonderful height and beauty, owing to the excellence of the soil; the remainder was conveyed by aqueducts which passed over the bridges to the outer circles: and there were many temples built and dedicated to many gods; also gardens and places of exercise, some for men, and some set apart for horses, in both of the two islands formed by the zones; and in the centre of the larger of the two there was a race-course of a stadium in width, and in length allowed to extend all round the island, for horses to race in. Also there were guard-houses at intervals for the body-guard, the more trusted of whom had their duties appointed to them in the lesser zone, which was nearer the Acropolis; while the most trusted of all had houses given them within the citadel, and about the persons of the kings. The docks were full of triremes and naval stores, and all things were quite ready for use. Enough of the plan of the royal palace. Crossing the outer harbors, which were three in number, you would come to a wall which began at the sea and went all round: this was everywhere distant fifty stadia from the largest zone and harbor, and enclosed the whole, meeting at the mouth of the channel toward the sea. The entire area was densely crowded with habitations; and the canal and the largest of the harbors were full of vessels and merchants coming from all parts, who, from their numbers, kept up a multitudinous sound of human voices and din of all sorts night and day. I have repeated his descriptions of the city and the parts about the ancient palace nearly as he gave them, and now I must endeavor to describe the nature and arrangement of the rest of the country. The whole country was described as being very lofty and precipitous on the side of the sea, but the country immediately about and surrounding the city was a level plain, itself surrounded by mountains which descended toward the sea; it was smooth and even, but of an oblong shape, extending in one direction three thousand stadia, and going up the country from the sea through the centre of the island two thousand stadia; the whole region of the island lies toward the south, and is sheltered from the north. The surrounding mountains he celebrated for their number and size and beauty, in which they exceeded all that are now to be seen anywhere; having in them also many wealthy inhabited villages, and rivers and lakes, and meadows supplying food enough for every animal, wild or tame, and wood of various sorts, abundant for every kind of work. I will now describe the plain, which had been cultivated during many ages by many generations of kings. It was rectangular, and for the most part straight and oblong; and what it wanted of the straight line followed the line of the circular ditch. The depth and width and length of this ditch were incredible, and gave the impression that such a work, in addition to so many other works, could hardly have been wrought by the hand of man. But I must say what I have heard. It was excavated to the depth of a hundred feet, and its breadth was a stadium everywhere; it was carried round the whole of the plain, and was ten thousand stadia in length. It received the streams which came down from the mountains, and winding round the plain, and touching the city at various points, was there let off into the sea. From above, likewise, straight canals of a hundred feet in width were cut in the plain, and again let off into the ditch, toward the sea; these canals were at intervals of a hundred stadia, and by them they brought down the wood from the mountains to the city, and conveyed the fruits of the earth in ships, cutting transverse passages from one canal into another, and to the city. Twice in the year they gathered the fruits of the earth—in winter having the benefit of the rains, and in summer introducing the water of the canals. As to the population, each of the lots in the plain had an appointed chief of men who were fit for military service, and the size of the lot was to be a square of ten stadia each way, and the total number of all the lots was sixty thousand.

"And of the inhabitants of the mountains and of the rest of the country there was also a vast multitude having leaders, to whom they were assigned according to their dwellings and villages. The leader was required to furnish for the war the sixth portion of a war-chariot, so as to make up a total of ten thousand chariots; also two horses and riders upon them, and a light chariot without a seat, accompanied by a fighting man on foot carrying a small shield, and having a charioteer mounted to guide the horses; also, he was bound to furnish two heavy-armed men, two archers, two slingers, three stone-shooters, and three javelin men, who were skirmishers, and four sailors to make up a complement of twelve hundred ships. Such was the order of war in the royal city—that of the other nine governments was different in each of them, and would be wearisome to narrate. As to offices and honors, the following was the arrangement from the first: Each of the ten kings, in his own division and in his own city, had the absolute control of the citizens, and in many cases of the laws, punishing and slaying whomsoever he would.

"Now the relations of their governments to one another were regulated by the injunctions of Poseidon as the law had handed them down. These were inscribed by the first men on a column of orichalcum, which was situated in the middle of the island, at the temple of Poseidon, whither the people were gathered together every fifth and sixth years alternately, thus giving equal honor to the odd and to the even number. And when they were gathered together they consulted about public affairs, and inquired if any one had transgressed in anything, and passed judgment on him accordingly—and before they passed judgment they gave their pledges to one another in this wise: There were bulls who had the range of the temple of Poseidon; and the ten who were left alone in the temple, after they had offered prayers to the gods that they might take the sacrifices which were acceptable to them, hunted the bulls without weapons, but with staves and nooses; and the bull which they caught they led up to the column; the victim was then struck on the head by them, and slain over the sacred inscription. Now on the column, besides the law, there was inscribed an oath invoking mighty curses on the disobedient. When, therefore, after offering sacrifice according to their customs, they had burnt the limbs of the bull, they mingled a cup and cast in a clot of blood for each of them; the rest of the victim they took to the fire, after having made a purification of the column all round. Then they drew from the cup in golden vessels, and, pouring a libation on the fire, they swore that they would judge according to the laws on the column, and would punish any one who had previously transgressed, and that for the future they would not, if they could help, transgress any of the inscriptions, and would not command or obey any ruler who commanded them to act otherwise than according to the laws of their father Poseidon. This was the prayer which each of them offered up for himself and for his family, at the same time drinking, and dedicating the vessel in the temple of the god; and, after spending some necessary time at supper, when darkness came on and the fire about the sacrifice was cool, all of them put on most beautiful azure robes, and, sitting on the ground at night near the embers of the sacrifices on which they had sworn, and extinguishing all the fire about the temple, they received and gave judgment, if any of them had any accusation to bring against any one; and, when they had given judgment, at daybreak they wrote down their sentences on a golden tablet, and deposited them as memorials with their robes. There were many special laws which the several kings had inscribed about the temples, but the most important was the following: That they were not to take up arms against one another, and they were all to come to the rescue if any one in any city attempted to overthrow the royal house. Like their ancestors, they were to deliberate in common about war and other matters, giving the supremacy to the family of Atlas; and the king was not to have the power of life and death over any of his kinsmen, unless he had the assent of the majority of the ten kings.

"Such was the vast power which the god settled in the lost island of Atlantis; and this he afterward directed against our land on the following pretext, as traditions tell: For many generations, as long as the divine nature lasted in them, they were obedient to the laws, and well-affectioned toward the gods, who were their kinsmen; for they possessed true and in every way great spirits, practising gentleness and wisdom in the various chances of life, and in their intercourse with one another. They despised everything but virtue, not caring for their present state of life, and thinking lightly on the possession of gold and other property, which seemed only a burden to them; neither were they intoxicated by luxury; nor did wealth deprive them of their self-control; but they were sober, and saw clearly that all these goods are increased by virtuous friendship with one another, and that by excessive zeal for them, and honor of them, the good of them is lost, and friendship perishes with them.

"By such reflections, and by the continuance in them of a divine nature, all that which we have described waxed and increased in them; but when this divine portion began to fade away in them, and became diluted too often, and with too much of the mortal admixture, and the human nature got the upper-hand, then, they being unable to bear their fortune, became unseemly, and to him who had an eye to see, they began to appear base, and had lost the fairest of their precious gifts; but to those who had no eye to see the true happiness, they still appeared glorious and blessed at the very time when they were filled with unrighteous avarice and power. Zeus, the god of gods, who rules with law, and is able to see into such things, perceiving that an honorable race was in a most wretched state, and wanting to inflict punishment on them, that they might be chastened and improved, collected all the gods into his most holy habitation, which, being placed in the centre of the world, sees all things that partake of generation. And when he had called them together he spake as follows:"

[Here Plato's story abruptly ends.]

CHAPTER III.

THE PROBABILITIES OF PLATO'S STORY.

THERE is nothing improbable in this narrative, so far as it describes a great, rich, cultured, and educated people. Almost every part of Plato's story can be paralleled by descriptions of the people of Egypt or Peru; in fact, in some respects Plato's account of Atlantis falls short of Herodotus's description of the grandeur of Egypt, or Prescott's picture of the wealth and civilization of Peru. For instance, Prescott, in his "Conquest of Peru" (vol. i., p. 95), says:

> "The most renowned of the Peruvian temples, the pride of the capital and the wonder of the empire, was at Cuzco, where, under the munificence of successive sovereigns, it had become so enriched that it received the name of *Coricancha*, or 'the Place of Gold.' . . . The interior of the temple was literally a mine of gold. On the western wall was emblazoned a representation of the Deity, consisting of a human countenance looking forth from amid innumerable rays of light, which emanated from it in every direction, in the same manner as the sun is often personified with us. The figure was engraved on a massive plate of gold, of enormous dimensions, thickly powdered with emeralds and precious stones. . . . The walls and ceilings were everywhere incrusted with golden ornaments; every part of the interior of the temple glowed with burnished plates and studs of the precious metal; the cornices were of the same material."

There are in Plato's narrative no marvels; no myths; no tales of gods, gorgons, hobgoblins, or giants. It is a plain and reasonable history of a people who built temples, ships, and canals; who lived by agriculture and commerce; who, in pursuit of trade, reached out to all the countries around them. The early history of most nations begins with gods and demons, while here we have nothing of the kind; we see an immigrant enter the country, marry one of the native women, and settle down; in time a great nation grows up around him. It reminds one of the information given by the Egyptian priests to Herodotus. "During the space of eleven thousand three hundred and forty years they assert," says Herodotus, "that no divinity has appeared in human shape, . . . they absolutely denied the possibility of a human being's descent from a god." If Plato had sought to draw from his imagination a wonderful and pleasing story, we should not have had so plain and reasonable a narrative. He would have given us a history like the legends of Greek mythology, full of the adventures of gods and goddesses, nymphs, fauns, and satyrs.

Neither is there any evidence on the face of this history that Plato sought to convey in it a moral or political lesson, in the guise of a fable, as did Bacon in the "New Atlantis," and More in the "Kingdom of Nowhere." There is no ideal republic delineated here. It is a straightforward, reasonable history of a people ruled over by their kings, living and progressing as other nations have lived and progressed since their day.

Plato says that in Atlantis there was "a great and wonderful empire," which "aggressed wantonly against the whole of Europe and Asia," thus testifying to the extent of its dominion. It not only subjugated Africa as far as Egypt, and Europe as far as Italy, but it ruled "as well *over parts of the continent*," to wit, "the opposite continent" of America, "which surrounded the true ocean." Those parts of America over which it ruled were, as we will show hereafter, Central America, Peru, and the Valley of the Mississippi, occupied by the "Mound Builders."

Moreover, he tells us that "this vast power was gathered into one;" that is to say, from Egypt to Peru it was one consolidated empire. We will see hereafter that the legends of the Hindoos as to Deva Nahusha distinctly refer to this vast empire, which covered the whole of the known world.

Another corroboration of the truth of Plato's narrative is found in the fact that upon the Azores black lava rocks, and rocks red and white in color, are now found. He says they built with white, red, and black stone. Sir C. Wyville Thomson describes a narrow neck of land between Fayal and Monte da Guia, called "Monte Queimada" (the burnt mountain), as follows: "It is formed partly of stratified tufa of a dark chocolate color, and partly of lumps of *black* lava, porous, and each with a large cavity in the centre, which must have been ejected as volcanic bombs in a glorious display of fireworks at some period beyond the records of Acorean history, but late in the geological annals of the island" ("Voyage of the Challenger," vol. ii., p. 24). He also describes immense walls of black volcanic rock in the island.

The plain of Atlantis, Plato tells us, "had been cultivated during many ages by many generations of kings." If, as we believe, agriculture, the domestication of the horse, ox, sheep, goat, and hog, and the discovery or development of wheat, oats, rye, and barley originated in this region, then this language of Plato in reference to "the many ages, and the successive generations of kings," accords with the great periods of time which were necessary to bring man from a savage to a civilized condition.

In the great ditch surrounding the whole land like a circle, and into which streams flowed down from the mountains, we probably see the original of the four rivers of Paradise, and the emblem of the cross surrounded by a circle, which, as we will show hereafter, was, from the earliest pre-Christian ages, accepted as the emblem of the Garden of Eden.

We know that Plato did not invent the name of Poseidon, for the worship of Poseidon was universal in the earliest ages of Europe; "Poseidon-worship seems to have been a peculiarity of all the colonies previous to the time of Sidon" ("Prehistoric Nations," p. 148.) This worship "was carried to Spain, and to Northern Africa, but most abundantly to Italy, to many of the islands, and to the regions around the Ægean Sea; also to Thrace." (*Ibid.*, p. 155.)

Poseidon, or Neptune, is represented in Greek mythology as a sea-god; but he is figured as standing in a war-chariot drawn by horses. The association of the horse (a land animal) with a sea-god is inexplicable, except with the light given by Plato. Poseidon was a sea-god because he ruled over a great land in the sea, and was the national god of a maritime people; he is associated with horses, because in Atlantis the horse was first domesticated; and, as Plato shows, the Atlanteans had great race-courses for the development of speed in horses; and Poseidon is represented as standing in a war-chariot, because doubtless wheeled vehicles were first invented by the same people who tamed the horse; and they transmitted these war-chariots to their descendants from Egypt to Britain. We know that horses were the favorite objects chosen for sacrifice to Poseidon by the nations of antiquity within the Historical Period; they were killed, and cast into the sea from high precipices. The religious horse-feasts of the pagan Scandinavians were a survival of this Poseidon-worship, which once prevailed along all the coasts of Europe; they continued until the conversion of the people to Christianity, and were then suppressed by the Church with great difficulty.

We find in Plato's narrative the names of some of the Phœnician deities among the kings of Atlantis. Where did the Greek, Plato, get these names if the story is a fable?

Does Plato, in speaking of "the fruits having a hard rind, affording drinks and meats and ointments," refer to the cocoanut?

Again: Plato tells us that Atlantis abounded in both cold and hot springs. How did he come to hit upon the hot springs if he was drawing a picture from his imagination? It is a singular confirmation of his story that hot springs abound in the Azores, which are the surviving fragments of Atlantis; and an experience wider than that possessed by Plato has taught scientific men that hot springs are a common feature of regions subject to volcanic convulsions.

Plato tells us, "The whole country was very lofty and precipitous on the side of the sea, but the country immediately about and surrounding the city was a level plain, itself surrounded by mountains which descended toward the sea." One has but to look at the profile of the "Dolphin's Ridge," as revealed by the deep-sea soundings of the *Challenger*, given as the frontispiece to this volume, to see that this is a faithful description of that precipitous elevation. "The surrounding mountains," which sheltered the plain from the north, are represented in the present towering peaks of the Azores.

Plato tells us that the destruction of Atlantis filled the sea with mud, and interfered with navigation. For thousands of years the ancients believed the Atlantic Ocean to be "a muddy, shallow, dark, and misty sea, *Mare tenebrosum*." ("Cosmos," vol. ii., p. 151.)

The three-pronged sceptre or trident of Poseidon reappears constantly in ancient history. We find it in the hands of Hindoo gods, and at the base of all the religious beliefs of antiquity.

"Among the numerals the *sacred three* has ever been considered the mark of perfection, and was therefore exclusively ascribed to the Supreme Deity, or to its earthly representative—a king, emperor, or any sovereign. For this reason triple emblems of various shapes are found on the belts, neckties, or any encircling fixture, as can be seen on the works of ancient art in Yucatan, Guatemala, Chiapas, Mexico, etc., whenever the object has reference to divine supremacy." (Dr. Arthur Schott, "Smith. Rep.," 1869, p. 391.)

We are reminded of the "tiara," and the "triple round of sovereignty."

In the same manner the ten kingdoms of Atlantis are perpetuated in all the ancient traditions.

"In the number given by the Bible for the Antediluvian patriarchs we have the first instance of a striking agreement with the traditions of various nations. Ten are mentioned in the Book of Genesis. Other nations, to whatever epoch they carry back their ancestors, whether before or after the Deluge, whether the mythical or historical character prevail, they are constant to this sacred number ten, which some have vainly attempted to connect with the speculations of later religious philosophers on the mystical value of numbers. In Chaldea, Berosus enumerates ten Antediluvian kings whose fabulous reign extended to thousands of years. The legends of the Iranian race commence with the reign of ten Peisdadien (Poseidon?) kings, 'men of the ancient law, who lived on pure Homa (water of life)' (nectar?), 'and who preserved their sanctity.' In India we meet with the nine Brahmadikas, who, with Brahma, their founder, make ten, and who are called the Ten Petris, or Fathers. The Chinese count ten emperors, partakers of the divine nature, before the dawn of historical times. The Germans believed in the ten ancestors of Odin, and the Arabs in the ten mythical kings of the Adites." (Lenormant and Chevallier, "Anc. Hist. of the East," vol. i., p. 13.)

The story of Plato finds confirmation from other sources.

An extract preserved in Proclus, taken from a work now lost, which is quoted by Boeckh in his commentary on Plato, mentions islands in the exterior sea, beyond the Pillars of Hercules, and says it was known that in one of these islands "the inhabitants preserved from their ancestors a remembrance of Atlantis, an extremely large island, which for a long time held dominion over all the islands of the Atlantic Ocean."

Ælian, in his "Varia Historia" (book iii., chap. xviii.), tells us that Theopompus (400 B.C.) related the particulars of an interview between Midas, King of Phrygia, and Silenus, in which Silenus reported the existence of a great continent beyond the Atlantic, "larger than Asia, Europe, and Libya together." He stated that a race of men called Meropes dwelt there, and had extensive cities. They were persuaded that their country alone was a continent. Out of curiosity some of them crossed the ocean and visited the Hyperboreans.

"The Gauls possessed traditions upon the subject of Atlantis which were collected by the Roman historian Timagenes, who lived in the first century before Christ. He represents that three distinct people dwelt in Gaul: 1. The indigenous population, which I suppose to be Mongoloids, who had long dwelt in Europe; 2. The invaders from a distant island, which I understand to be Atlantis; 3. The Aryan Gauls." ("Preadamites," p. 380.)

Marcellus, in a work on the Ethiopians, speaks of seven islands lying in the Atlantic Ocean—probably the Canaries—and the inhabitants of these islands, he says, preserve the memory of a much greater island, Atlantis, "which had for a long time exercised dominion over the smaller ones." (Didot Müller, "Fragmenta Historicorum Græcorum," vol. iv., p. 443.)

Diodorus Siculus relates that the Phœnicians discovered "a large island in the Atlantic Ocean, beyond the Pillars of Hercules, several days' sail from the coast of Africa. This island abounded in all manner of riches. The soil was exceedingly fertile; the scenery was diversified by rivers, mountains, and forests. It was the custom of the inhabitants to retire during the summer to magnificent country-houses, which stood in the midst of beautiful gardens. Fish and game were found in great abundance; the climate was delicious, and the trees bore fruit at all seasons of the year." Homer, Plutarch, and other ancient writers mention islands situated in the Atlantic, "several thousand stadia from the Pillars of Hercules." Silenus tells Midas that there was another continent besides Europe, Asia, and Africa—"a country where gold and silver are so plentiful that they are esteemed no more than we esteem iron." St. Clement, in his Epistle to the Corinthians, says that there were other worlds beyond the ocean.

Attention may here be called to the extraordinary number of instances in which allusion is made in the Old Testament to the "islands of the sea," especially in Isaiah and Ezekiel. What had an inland people, like the Jews, to do with seas and islands? Did these references grow out of vague traditions linking their race with "islands in the sea?"

The Orphic Argonaut sings of the division of the ancient Lyktonia into separate islands. He says, "When the dark-haired Poseidon, in anger with Father Kronion, struck Lyktonia with the golden trident."

Plato states that the Egyptians told Solon that the destruction of Atlantis occurred 9000 years before that date, to wit, about 9600 years before the Christian era. This looks like an extraordinarily long period of time, but it must be remembered that geologists claim that the remains of man found in the caves of Europe date back 500,000 years; and the fossil Calaveras skull was found deep under the base of Table Mountain, California, the whole mountain having been formed since the man to whom it belonged lived and died.

"M. Oppert read an essay at the Brussels Congress to show, from the astronomical observations of the Egyptians and Assyrians, that 11,542 years before our era man existed on the earth at such a stage of civilization as to be able to take note of astronomical phenomena, and to calculate with considerable accuracy the length of the year. The Egyptians, says he, calculated by cycles of 1460 years—zodiacal cycles, as they were called. Their year consisted of 365 days, which caused them to lose one day in every four solar years, and, consequently, they would attain their original starting-point again only after 1460 years (365 × 4). Therefore, the zodiacal cycle ending in the year 139 of our era commenced in the year 1322 B.C. On the other hand, the Assyrian cycle was 1805 years, or 22,325 lunations. An Assyrian cycle began 712 B.C. The Chaldeans state that between the Deluge and their first historic dynasty there was a period of 39,180 years. Now, what means this number? It stands for 12 Egyptian zodiacal cycles *plus* 12 Assyrian lunar cycles.

$$\left.\begin{array}{l} 12 \times 1460 = 17{,}520 \\ 12 \times 1805 = 21{,}660 \end{array}\right\} = 39{,}180.$$

"These two modes of calculating time are in agreement with each other, and were known simultaneously to one people, the Chaldeans. Let us now build up the series of both cycles, starting from our era, and the result will be as follows:

Zodiacal Cycle.	Lunar Cycle.
1,460	1,805
1,322	712
2,782	2,517
4,242	4,322
5,702	6,127
7,162	7,932
8,622	9,737
10,082	11,542
11,542	

"At the year 11,542 B.C. the two cycles came together, and consequently they had on that year their common origin in one and the same astronomical observation."

That observation was probably made in Atlantis.

The wide divergence of languages which is found to exist among the Atlanteans at the beginning of the Historical Period implies a vast lapse of time. The fact that the nations of the Old World remembered so little of Atlantis, except the colossal fact of its sudden and overwhelming destruction, would also seem to remove that event into a remote past.

Herodotus tells us that he learned from the Egyptians that Hercules was one of their most ancient deities, and that he was one of the twelve produced from the eight gods, 17,000 years before the reign of Amasis.

In short, I fail to see why this story of Plato, told as history, derived from the Egyptians, a people who, it is known, preserved most ancient records, and who were able to trace their existence back to a vast antiquity, should have been contemptuously set aside as a fable by Greeks, Romans, and the modern world. It can only be because our predecessors, with their limited knowledge of the geological history of the world, did not believe it possible that any large part of the earth's surface could have been thus suddenly swallowed up by the sea.

Let us then first address ourselves to that question.

CHAPTER IV.

WAS SUCH A CATASTROPHE POSSIBLE?

ALL that is needed to answer this question is to briefly refer to some of the facts revealed by the study of geology.

In the first place, the earth's surface is a record of successive risings and fallings of the land. The accompanying picture represents a section of the anthracite coal-measures of Pennsylvania. Each of the coal deposits here shown, indicated by the black lines, was created when the land had risen sufficiently above the sea to maintain vegetation; each of the strata of rock, many of them hundreds of feet in thickness, was deposited under water. Here we have twenty-three different changes of the level of the land during the formation of 2000 feet of rock and coal; and these changes took place over vast areas, embracing thousands of square miles.

All the continents which now exist were, it is well understood, once under water, and the rocks of which they are composed were deposited beneath the water; more than this, most of the rocks so deposited were the detritus or washings of other continents, which then stood

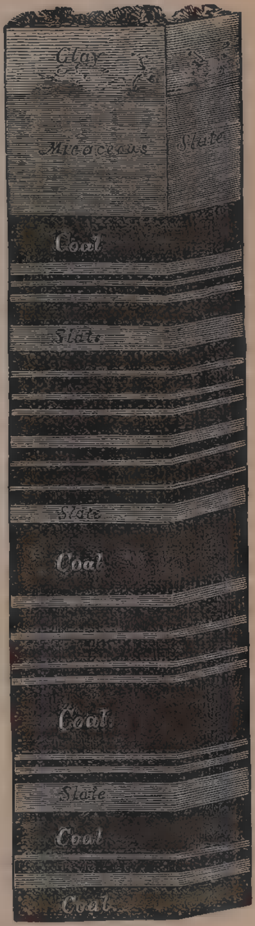

COAL-MEASURES OF PENNSYLVANIA.

where the oceans now roll, and whose mountains and plains were ground down by the action of volcanoes and earthquakes, and frost, ice, wind, and rain, and washed into the sea, to form the rocks upon which the nations now dwell; so that we have changed the conditions of land and water: that which is now continent was once sea, and that which is now sea was formerly continent. There can be no question that the Australian Archipelago is simply the mountain-tops of a drowned continent, which once reached from India to South America. Science has gone so far as to even give it a name; it is called "Lemuria," and here, it is claimed, the human race originated. An examination of the geological formation of our Atlantic States proves beyond a doubt, from the manner in which the sedimentary rocks, the sand, gravel, and mud—aggregating a thickness of 45,000 feet—are deposited, that they came from the north and east. "They represent the detritus of pre-existing lands, the washings of rain, rivers, coast-currents, and other agencies of erosion; and since the areas supplying the waste could scarcely have been of less extent than the new strata it formed, it is reasonably inferred that land masses of continental magnitude must have occupied the region now covered by the North Atlantic before America began to be, and onward at least through the palæozoic ages of American history. The proof of this fact is that the great strata of rocks are thicker the nearer we approach their source in the east: the maximum thickness of the palæozoic rocks of the Appalachian formation is 25,000 to 35,000 feet in Pennsylvania and Virginia, while their minimum thickness in Illinois and Missouri is from 3000 to 4000 feet; the rougher and grosser-textured rocks predominate in the east, while the farther west we go the finer the deposits were of which the rocks are composed; the finer materials were carried farther west by the water." ("New Amer. Cyclop.," art. *Coal.*)

The history of the growth of the European Continent, as recounted by Professor Geikie, gives an instructive illustration

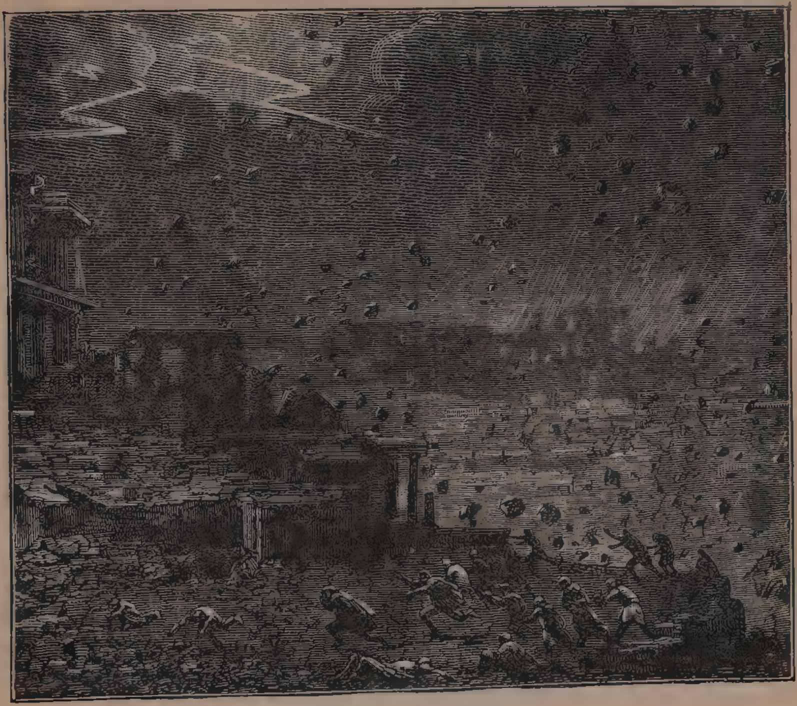

DESTRUCTION OF POMPEII.

of the relations of geology to geography. The earliest European land, he says, appears to have existed in the north and north-west, comprising Scandinavia, Finland, and the north-west of the British area, and to have extended thence through boreal and arctic latitudes into North America. Of the height and mass of this primeval land some idea may be formed by considering the enormous bulk of the material derived from its disintegration. In the Silurian formations of the British Islands alone there is a mass of rock, worn from the land, which would form a mountain-chain extending from Marseilles to the North Cape (1800 miles), with a mean breadth of over thirty-three miles, and an average height of 16,000 feet.

As the great continent which stood where the Atlantic Ocean now is wore away, the continents of America and Europe were formed; and there seems to have been from remote times a continuous rising, still going on, of the new lands, and a sinking of the old ones. Within five thousand years, or since the age of the "polished stone," the shores of Sweden, Denmark, and Norway have risen from 200 to 600 feet.

Professor Winchell says ("The Preadamites," p. 437):

> "We are in the midst of great changes, and are scarcely conscious of it. We have seen worlds in flames, and have felt a comet strike the earth. We have seen the whole coast of South America lifted up bodily ten or fifteen feet and let down again in an hour. We have seen the Andes sink 220 feet in seventy years. . . . Vast transpositions have taken place in the coast-line of China. The ancient capital, located, in all probability, in an accessible position near the centre of the empire, has now become nearly surrounded by water, and its site is on the peninsula of Corea. . . . There was a time when the rocky barriers of the Thracian Bosphorus gave way and the Black Sea subsided. It had covered a vast area in the north and east. Now this area became drained, and was known as the ancient Lectonia: it is now the prairie region of Russia, and the granary of Europe."

There is ample geological evidence that at one time the entire area of Great Britain was *submerged to the depth of at least seventeen hundred feet.* Over the face of the submerged land was strewn thick beds of sand, gravel, and clay, termed by geologists "the Northern Drift." The British Islands rose again from the sea, bearing these water-deposits on their bosom. What is now Sicily once lay deep beneath the sea: it subsequently rose 3000 feet above the sea-level. The Desert of Sahara was once under water, and its now burning sands are a deposit of the sea.

Geologically speaking, the submergence of Atlantis, within the historical period, was simply the last of a number of vast changes, by which the continent which once occupied the greater part of the Atlantic had gradually sunk under the ocean, while the new lands were rising on both sides of it.

We come now to the second question, Is it possible that Atlantis could have been suddenly destroyed by such a convulsion of nature as is described by Plato? The ancients regarded this part of his story as a fable. With the wider knowledge which scientific research has afforded the modern world, we can affirm that such an event is not only possible, but that the history of even the last two centuries has furnished us with striking parallels for it. We now possess the record of numerous islands lifted above the waters, and others sunk beneath the waves, accompanied by storms and earthquakes similar to those which marked the destruction of Atlantis.

In 1783 Iceland was visited by convulsions more tremendous than any recorded in the modern annals of that country. About a month previous to the eruption on the main-land a submarine volcano burst forth in the sea, at a distance of thirty miles from the shore. It ejected so much pumice that the sea was covered with it for a distance of 150 miles, and ships were considerably impeded in their course. A new island was thrown up, consisting of high cliffs, which was claimed by his Danish Majesty, and named "Nyöe," or the New Island; but before a year had elapsed it sunk beneath the sea, leaving a reef of rocks thirty fathoms under water.

The earthquake of 1783 in Iceland destroyed 9000 people out of a population of 50,000; twenty villages were consumed by fire or inundated by water, and a mass of lava thrown out "greater than the bulk of Mont Blanc."

On the 8th of October, 1822, a great earthquake occurred on the island of Java, near the mountain of Galung Gung. "A loud explosion was heard, the earth shook, and immense columns of hot water and boiling mud, mixed with burning brimstone, ashes, and lapilli, of the size of nuts, were projected from the mountain like a water-spout, with such prodigious violence that large quantities fell beyond the river Tandoi, which is forty miles distant. . . . The first eruption lasted nearly five hours; and on the following days the rain fell in torrents, and the rivers, densely charged with mud, deluged the country far and wide. At the end of four days (October 12th), a second eruption occurred, more violent than the first, in which hot water and mud were again vomited, and great blocks of basalt were thrown to the distance of seven miles from the volcano. There was at the same time a violent earthquake, the face of the mountain was utterly changed, its summits broken down, and one side, which had been covered with trees, became an enormous gulf in the form of a semicircle. Over 4000 persons were killed and 114 villages destroyed." (Lyell's "Principles of Geology," p. 430.)

In 1831 a new island was born in the Mediterranean, near the coast of Sicily. It was called Graham's Island. It came up with an earthquake, and "a water-spout sixty feet high and eight hundred yards in circumference rising from the sea." In about a month the island was two hundred feet high and three miles in circumference; it soon, however, sunk beneath the sea.

The Canary Islands were probably a part of the original empire of Atlantis. On the 1st of September, 1730, the earth split open near Yaira, in the island of Lancerota. In one night a considerable hill of ejected matter was thrown up; in a few days another vent opened and gave out a lava stream which overran several villages. It flowed at first rapidly, like water, but became afterward heavy and slow, like honey. On the 11th of September more lava flowed out, covering up a village, and precipitating itself with a horrible roar into the sea. Dead fish floated on the waters in indescribable multitudes, or were thrown dying on the shore; the cattle throughout the country dropped lifeless to the ground, suffocated by putrid vapors, which condensed and fell down in drops. These manifestations were accompanied by a storm such as the people of the country had never known before. These dreadful commotions lasted for *five years.* The lavas thrown out covered *one-third of the whole island of Lancerota.*

The Gulf of Santorin, in the Grecian Archipelago, has been for two thousand years a scene of active volcanic operations. Pliny informs us that in the year 186 B.C. the island of "Old Kaimeni," or the Sacred Isle, was lifted up from the sea; and in A.D. 19 the island of "Thia" (the Divine) made its appearance. In A.D. 1573 another island was created, called "the small sunburnt island." In 1848 a volcanic convulsion of three months' duration created a great shoal; an earthquake destroyed many houses in Thera, and the sulphur and hydrogen issuing from the sea killed 50 persons and 1000 domestic animals. A recent examination of these islands shows that the whole mass of Santorin *has sunk, since its projection from the sea, over* 1200 *feet.*

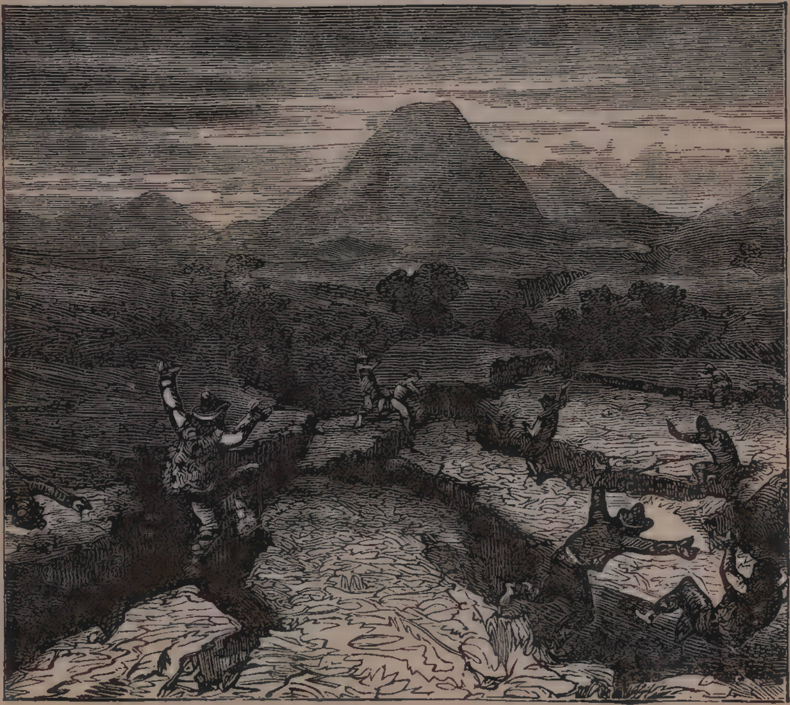

CALABRIAN PEASANTS INGULFED BY CREVASSES (1783).

The fort and village of Sindree, on the eastern arm of the Indus, above Luckput, was submerged in 1819 by an earthquake, together *with a tract of country* 2000 *square miles in extent.*

"In 1828 Sir A. Burnes went in a boat to the ruins of Sindree, where a single remaining tower was seen in the midst of a wide expanse of sea. The tops of the ruined walls still rose two or three feet above the level of the water; and, standing on one of these, he could behold nothing in the horizon but water, except in one direction, where a blue streak of land to the north indicated the Ullah Bund. This scene," says Lyell ("Principles of Geology," p. 462), "presents to the imagination a lively picture of the revolutions now in progress on the earth—a waste of waters where a few years before all was land, and the only land visible consisting of ground uplifted by a recent earthquake."

We give from Lyell's great work the following curious pictures of the appearance of the Fort of Sindree before and after the inundation.

In April, 1815, one of the most frightful eruptions recorded in history occurred in the province of Tomboro, in the island of Sumbawa, about two hundred miles from the eastern extremity of Java. It lasted from April 5th to July of that year; but was most violent on the 11th and 12th of July. The sound of the explosions was heard for nearly one thousand miles. *Out of a population of* 12,000, *in the province of Tombora, only twenty-six individuals escaped.* "Violent whirlwinds carried up men, horses, and cattle into the air, tore up the largest trees by the roots, and covered the whole sea with floating timber." (Raffles's "History of Java," vol. i., p. 28.) *The ashes darkened the air;* "the floating cinders to the westward of Sumatra formed, on the 12th of April, a mass two feet thick and several miles in extent, *through which ships with difficulty forced their way.*" The darkness in daytime was more profound than the blackest night. "The town called Tomboro, on the west side of Sumbawa, was overflowed by the sea, which encroached upon the shore, *so that the water remained*

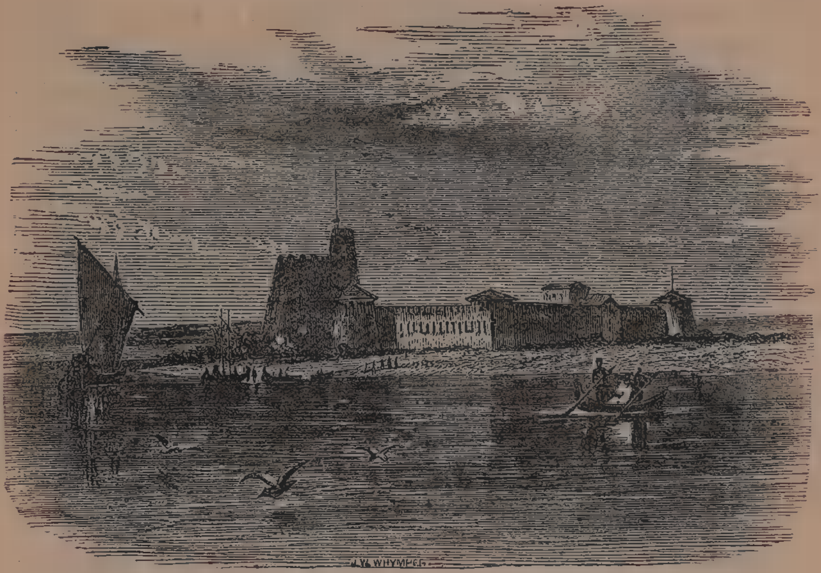

FORT OF SINDREE, ON THE EASTERN BRANCH OF THE INDUS, BEFORE IT WAS SUBMERGED BY THE EARTHQUAKE OF 1819.

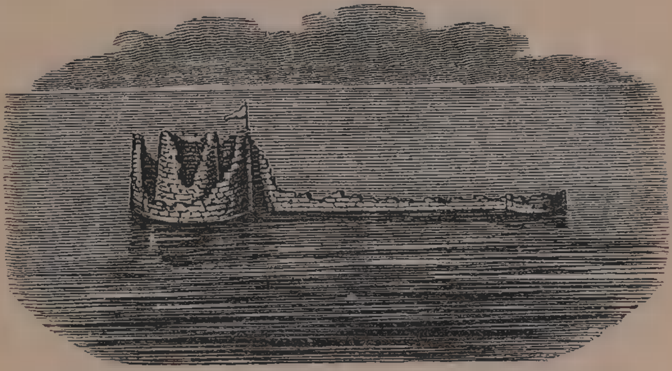

VIEW OF THE FORT OF SINDREE FROM THE WEST IN MARCH, 1838.

permanently eighteen feet deep in places where there was land before. The area covered by the convulsion was 1000 English miles in circumference. "*In the island of Amboyna; in the same month and year, the ground opened, threw out water,* *and then closed again.*" (Raffles's "History of Java," vol. i., p. 25.)

But it is at that point of the European coast nearest to the site of Atlantis at Lisbon that the most tremendous earthquake of modern times has occurred. On the 1st of November, 1775, a sound of thunder was heard underground, and immediately afterward a violent shock threw down the greater part of the city. *In six minutes* 60,000 *persons perished.* A great concourse of people had collected for safety upon a new quay, built entirely of marble; but suddenly it sunk down with all the people on it, and not one of the dead bodies ever floated to the surface. A great number of small boats and vessels anchored near it, and, full of people, were swallowed up as in a whirlpool. No fragments of these wrecks ever rose again to the surface; the water where the quay went down is now 600 feet deep. The area covered by this earthquake was very great. Humboldt says that a portion of *the earth's surface, four times as great as the size of Europe, was simultaneously shaken.* It extended from the Baltic to the West Indies, and from Canada to Algiers. At eight leagues from Morocco the ground opened and swallowed a village of 10,000 inhabitants, and closed again over them.

It is very probable that the centre of the convulsion was in the bed of the Atlantic, at or near the buried island of Atlantis, and that it was a successor of the great earth throe which, thousands of years before, had brought destruction upon that land.

Ireland also lies near the axis of this great volcanic area, reaching from the Canaries to Iceland, and it has been many times in the past the seat of disturbance. The ancient annals contain numerous accounts of eruptions, preceded by volcanic action. In 1490, at the Ox Mountains, Sligo, one occurred by which one hundred persons and numbers of cattle were destroyed; and a volcanic eruption in May, 1788, on the hill of Knocklade, Antrim, poured a stream of lava sixty yards wide for thir-

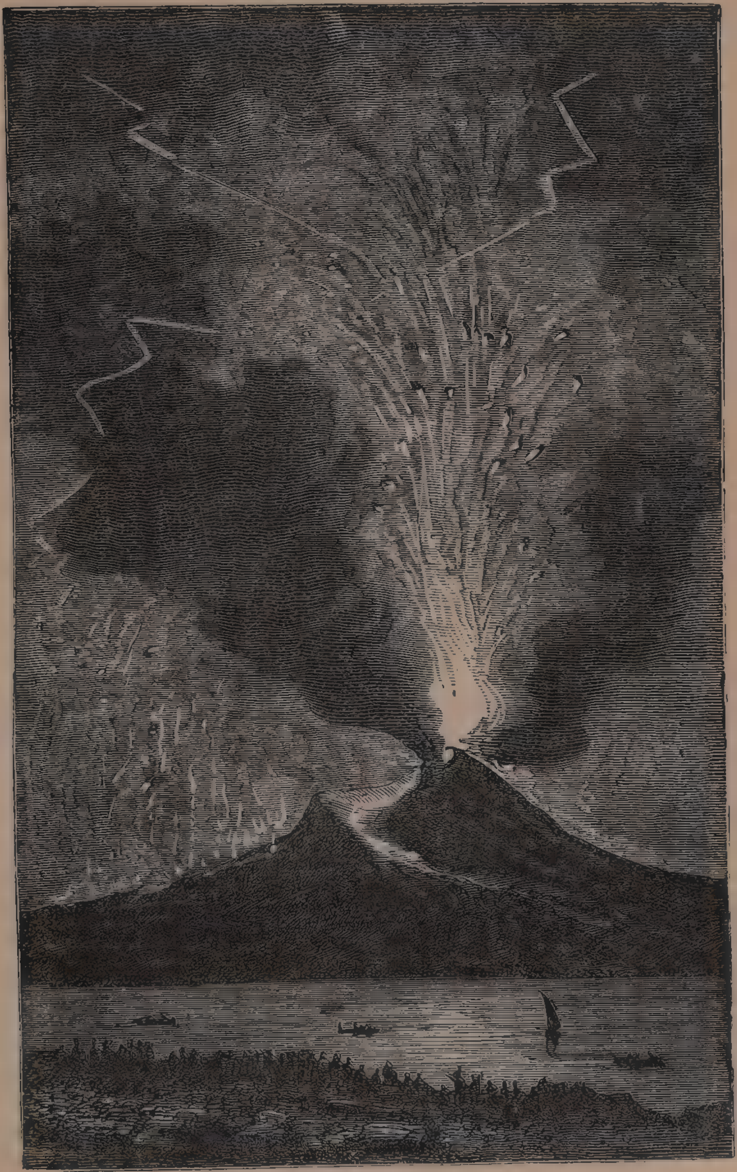

ERUPTION OF VESUVIUS IN 1737.

ty-nine hours, and destroyed the village of Ballyowen and all the inhabitants, save a man and his wife and two children. (" Amer. Cyclop.," art. *Ireland.*)

While we find Lisbon and Ireland, east of Atlantis, subjected to these great earthquake shocks, the West India Islands, west of the same centre, have been repeatedly visited in a similar manner. In 1692 Jamaica suffered from a violent earthquake. The earth opened, and great quantities of water were cast out; many people were swallowed up in these rents; the earth caught some of them by the middle and squeezed them to death; the heads of others only appeared above-ground. A tract of land near the town of Port Royal, about a thousand acres in extent, sunk down in less than one minute, and the sea immediately rolled in.

The Azore Islands are undoubtedly the peaks of the mountains of Atlantis. They are even yet the centre of great volcanic activity. They have suffered severely from eruptions and earthquakes. In 1808 a volcano rose suddenly in San Jorge to the height of 3500 feet, and burnt for six days, desolating the entire island. In 1811 a volcano rose from the sea, near San Miguel, creating an island 300 feet high, which was named Sambrina, but which soon sunk beneath the sea. Similar volcanic eruptions occurred in the Azores in 1691 and 1720.

Along a great line, a mighty fracture in the surface of the globe, stretching north and south through the Atlantic, we find a continuous series of active or extinct volcanoes. In Iceland we have Oerafa, Hecla, and Rauda Kamba; another in Pico, in the Azores; the peak of Teneriffe; Fogo, in one of the Cape de Verde Islands: while of extinct volcanoes we have several in Iceland, and two in Madeira; while Fernando de Noronha, the island of Ascension, St. Helena, and Tristan d'Acunha are all of volcanic origin. (" Cosmos," vol. v , p. 331.)

The following singular passage we quote entire from Lyell's " Principles of Geology," p. 436 :

"In the *Nautical Magazine* for 1835, p. 642, and for 1838, p. 361, and in the *Comptes Rendus*, April, 1838, accounts are given of a series of volcanic phenomena, earthquakes, troubled water, floating scoria, and columns of smoke, which have been observed at intervals since the middle of the last century, in a space of open sea between longitudes 20° and 22° W., about half a degree south of the equator. These facts, says Mr. Darwin, seem to show that an island or archipelago is in process of formation in the middle of the Atlantic. A line joining St. Helena and Ascension would, if prolonged, intersect this slowly nascent focus of volcanic action. Should land be eventually formed here, it will not be the first that has been produced by igneous action in this ocean since it was inhabited by the existing species of testacea. At Porto Praya, in St. Jago, one of the Azores, a horizontal, calcareous stratum occurs, containing shells of recent marine species, covered by a great sheet of basalt eighty feet thick. It would be difficult to estimate too highly the commercial and political importance which a group of islands might acquire if, in the next two or three thousand years, they should rise in mid-ocean between St. Helena and Ascension."

These facts would seem to show that the great fires which destroyed Atlantis are still smouldering in the depths of the ocean; that the vast oscillations which carried Plato's continent beneath the sea may again bring it, with all its buried treasures, to the light; and that even the wild imagination of Jules Verne, when he described Captain Nemo, in his diving-armor, looking down upon the temples and towers of the lost island, lit by the fires of submarine volcanoes, had some groundwork of possibility to build upon.

But who will say, in the presence of all the facts here enumerated, that the submergence of Atlantis, in some great world-shaking cataclysm, is either impossible or improbable? As will be shown hereafter, when we come to discuss the Flood legends, every particular which has come down to us of the destruction of Atlantis has been duplicated in some of the accounts just given.

We conclude, therefore: 1. That it is proven beyond question, by geological evidence, that vast masses of land once existed in the region where Atlantis is located by Plato, and that therefore such an island must have existed; 2. That there is nothing improbable or impossible in the statement that it was destroyed suddenly by an earthquake "in one dreadful night and day."

Chapter V.

THE TESTIMONY OF THE SEA.

Suppose we were to find in mid-Atlantic, in front of the Mediterranean, in the neighborhood of the Azores, the remains of an immense island, sunk beneath the sea—one thousand miles in width, and two or three thousand miles long—would it not go far to confirm the statement of Plato that, "beyond the strait where you place the Pillars of Hercules, there was an island larger than Asia (Minor) and Libya combined," called Atlantis? And suppose we found that the Azores were the mountain peaks of this drowned island, and were torn and rent by tremendous volcanic convulsions; while around them, descending into the sea, were found great strata of lava; and the whole face of the sunken land was covered for thousands of miles with volcanic débris, would we not be obliged to confess that these facts furnished strong corroborative proofs of the truth of Plato's statement, that "in one day and one fatal night there came mighty earthquakes and inundations which ingulfed that mighty people? Atlantis disappeared beneath the sea; and then that sea became inaccessible on account of the quantity of mud which the ingulfed island left in its place."

And all these things recent investigation has proved conclusively. Deep-sea soundings have been made by ships of different nations; the United States ship *Dolphin*, the German frigate *Gazelle*, and the British ships *Hydra*, *Porcupine*, and *Challenger* have mapped out the bottom of the Atlantic, and the result is the revelation of a great elevation, reaching from a point on the coast of the British Islands southwardly to the coast of South America, at Cape Orange, thence south-east-

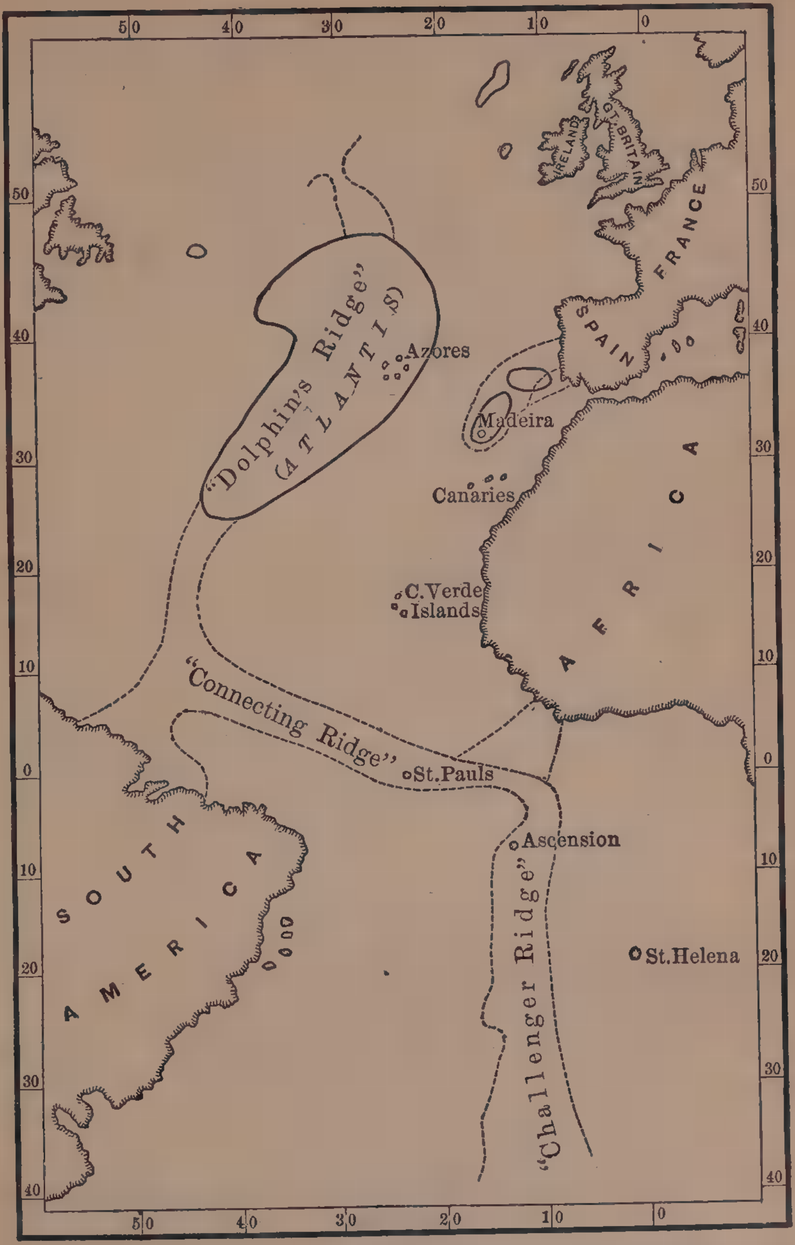
50
40
30
20
10
0
IRELAND
GT. BRITAIN
FRANCE
SPAIN
"Dolphin's Ridge"
(ATLANTIS)
Azores
Madeira
Canaries
C. Verde
Islands
AFRICA
"Connecting Ridge"
St. Pauls
Ascension
"Challenger Ridge"
St. Helena
SOUTH AMERICA

MAP OF ATLANTIS, WITH ITS ISLANDS AND CONNECTING RIDGES, FROM DEEP-SEA SOUNDINGS.

wardly to the coast of Africa, and thence southwardly to Tristan d'Acunha. I give one map showing the profile of this elevation in the frontispiece, and another map, showing the outlines of the submerged land, on page 47. It rises about 9000 feet above the great Atlantic depths around it, and in the Azores, St. Paul's Rocks, Ascension, and Tristan d'Acunha it reaches the surface of the ocean.

Evidence that this elevation was once dry land is found in the fact that "the inequalities, the mountains and valleys of its surface, could never have been produced in accordance with any laws for the deposition of sediment, nor by submarine elevation; but, on the contrary, must have been carved by agencies *acting above the water level.*" (*Scientific American*, July 28th, 1877.)

Mr. J. Starke Gardner, the eminent English geologist, is of the opinion that in the Eocene Period a great extension of land existed to the west of Cornwall. Referring to the location of the "Dolphin" and "Challenger" ridges, he asserts that "a great tract of land formerly existed where the sea now is, and that Cornwall, the Scilly and Channel Islands, Ireland and Brittany, are the remains of its highest summits." (*Popular Science Review*, July, 1878.)

Here, then, we have the backbone of the ancient continent which once occupied the whole of the Atlantic Ocean, and from whose washings Europe and America were constructed; the deepest parts of the ocean, 3500 fathoms deep, represent those portions which sunk first, to wit, the plains to the east and west of the central mountain range; some of the loftiest peaks of this range—the Azores, St. Paul's, Ascension, Tristan d'Acunha—are still above the ocean level; while the great body of Atlantis lies a few hundred fathoms beneath the sea. In these "connecting ridges" we see the pathway which once extended between the New World and the Old, and by means of which the plants and animals of one continent travelled to the other; and by the same avenues black men found their way, as we will show hereafter, from Africa to America, and red men from America to Africa.

And, as I have shown, the same great law which gradually depressed the Atlantic continent, and raised the lands east and west of it, is still at work: the coast of Greenland, which may be regarded as the northern extremity of the Atlantic continent, is still sinking "so rapidly that ancient buildings on low rock-islands are now submerged, and the Greenlander has learned by experience never to build near the water's edge." ("North Amer. of Antiq.," p. 504.) The same subsidence is going on along the shore of South Carolina and Georgia, while the north of Europe and the Atlantic coast of South America are rising rapidly. Along the latter raised beaches, 1180 miles long and from 100 to 1300 feet high, have been traced.

When these connecting ridges extended from America to Europe and Africa, they shut off the flow of the tropical waters of the ocean to the north; there was then no "Gulf Stream;" the land-locked ocean that laved the shores of Northern Europe was then intensely cold; and the result was the Glacial Period. When the barriers of Atlantis sunk sufficiently to permit the natural expansion of the heated water of the tropics to the north, the ice and snow which covered Europe gradually disappeared; the Gulf Stream flowed around Atlantis, and it still retains the circular motion first imparted to it by the presence of that island.

The officers of the *Challenger* found the entire ridge of Atlantis covered with volcanic deposits; these are the subsided mud which, as Plato tells us, rendered the sea impassable after the destruction of the island.

It does not follow that, at the time Atlantis was finally ingulfed, the ridges connecting it with America and Africa rose above the water-level; these may have gradually subsided into the sea, or have gone down in cataclysms such as are described in the Central American books. The Atlantis of Plato may have been confined to the "Dolphin Ridge" of our map.

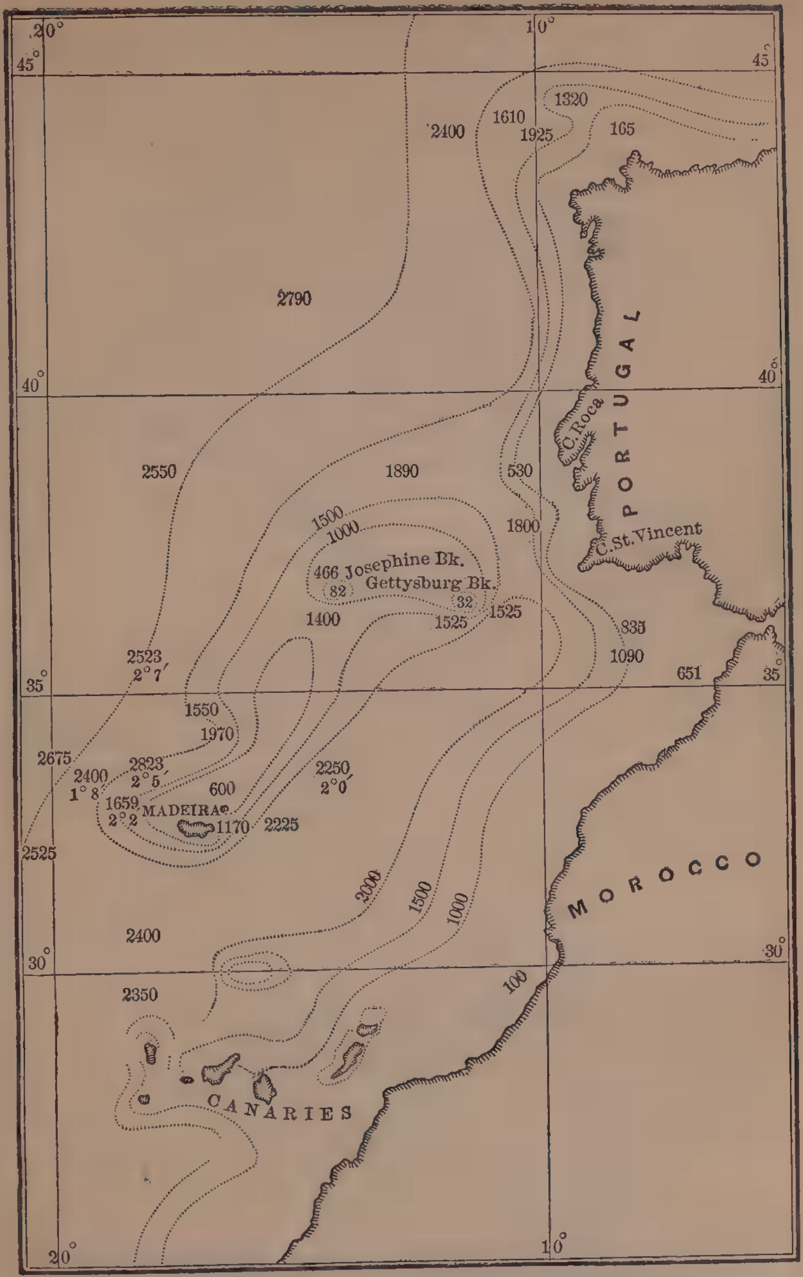
20°
10°
45°
45°
40°
40°
35°
35°
30°
30°
20°
10°
2400
1610
1320
1925
165
2790
PORTUGAL
C. Roca
C. St. Vincent
2550
1890
530
1500
1000
1800
466 Josephine Bk.
82
Gettysburg Bk.
32
1400
1525
1525
835
1090
651
2523
2° 7′
1550
1970
2675
2400
1° 8′
2823
2° 5′
600
2250
2° 0′
1659
2° 2
MADEIRA
1170
2225
2525
2000
1500
1000
MOROCCO
2400
2350
100
CANARIES

ANCIENT ISLANDS BETWEEN ATLANTIS AND THE MEDITERRANEAN, FROM DEEP-SEA SOUNDINGS.

The United States sloop *Gettysburg* has also made some remarkable discoveries in a neighboring field. I quote from John James Wild (in *Nature*, March 1st, 1877, p. 377):

> "The recently announced discovery by Commander Gorringe, of the United States sloop *Gettysburg*, of a bank of soundings bearing N. 85° W., and distant 130 miles from Cape St. Vincent, during the last voyage of the vessel across the Atlantic, taken in connection with previous soundings obtained in the same region of the North Atlantic, suggests the probable existence of a submarine ridge or plateau connecting the island of Madeira with the coast of Portugal, and the probable subaerial connection in prehistoric times of that island with the south-western extremity of Europe." . . . "These soundings reveal the existence of a channel of an average depth of from 2000 to 3000 fathoms, extending in a north-easterly direction from its entrance between Madeira and the Canary Islands toward Cape St. Vincent. . . . Commander Gorringe, when about 150 miles from the Strait of Gibraltar, found that the soundings decreased from 2700 fathoms to 1600 fathoms in the distance of a few miles. The subsequent soundings (five miles apart) gave 900, 500, 400, and 100 fathoms; and eventually a depth of 32 fathoms was obtained, in which the vessel anchored. The bottom was found to consist of live pink coral, and the position of the bank in lat. 36° 29′ N., long. 11° 33′ W."

The map on page 51 shows the position of these elevations. They must have been originally islands;—stepping-stones, as it were, between Atlantis and the coast of Europe.

Sir C. Wyville Thomson found that the specimens of the fauna of the coast of Brazil, brought up in his dredging-machine, are similar to those of the western coast of Southern Europe. This is accounted for by the connecting ridges reaching from Europe to South America.

A member of the *Challenger* staff, in a lecture delivered in London, soon after the termination of the expedition, gave it as his opinion that the great submarine plateau is the remains of "the lost Atlantis."

CHAPTER VI.

THE TESTIMONY OF THE FLORA AND FAUNA.

PROOFS are abundant that there must have been at one time uninterrupted land communication between Europe and America. In the words of a writer upon this subject,

> "When the animals and plants of the Old and New World are compared, one cannot but be struck with their identity; all or nearly all belong to the same genera, while many, even of the species, are common to both continents. This is most important in its bearing on our theory, as indicating that they radiated from a common centre *after the Glacial Period.* . . . The hairy mammoth, woolly-haired rhinoceros, the Irish elk, the musk-ox, the reindeer, the glutton, the lemming, etc., more or less accompanied this flora, and their remains are always found in the post-glacial deposits of Europe as low down as the South of France. In the New World beds of the same age contain similar remains, indicating that they came from a common centre, and were spread out over both continents alike." (*Westminster Review*, January, 1872, p. 19.)

Recent discoveries in the fossil beds of the Bad Lands of Nebraska prove that the horse originated in America. Professor Marsh, of Yale College, has identified the several preceding forms from which it was developed, rising, in the course of ages, from a creature not larger than a fox until, by successive steps, it developed into the true horse. How did the wild horse pass from America to Europe and Asia if there was not continuous land communication between the two continents? He seems to have existed in Europe in a wild state prior to his domestication by man.

The fossil remains of the camel are found in India, Africa, South America, and in Kansas. The existing alpacas and llamas of South America are but varieties of the camel family.

The cave bear, whose remains are found associated with the bones of the mammoth and the bones and works of man in the caves of Europe, was identical with the grizzly bear of our Rocky Mountains. The musk-ox, whose relics are found in the same deposits, now roams the wilds of Arctic America. The glutton of Northern Europe, in the Stone Age, is identical with the wolverine of the United States. According to Rutimeyer, the ancient bison (*Bos priscus*) of Europe was identical with the existing American buffalo. "Every stage between the ancient cave bison and the European aurochs can be traced." The Norway elk, now nearly extinct, is identical with the American moose. The *Cervus Americanus* found in Kentucky was as large as the Irish elk, which it greatly resembled. The lagomys, or tailless hare, of the European caves, is now found in the colder regions of North America. The reindeer, which once occupied Europe as far down as France, was the same as the reindeer of America. Remains of the cave lion of Europe (*Felix spelæa*), a larger beast than the largest of the existing species, have been found at Natchez, Mississippi. The European cave wolf was identical with the American wolf.

Cattle were domesticated among the people of Switzerland during the earliest part of the Stone Period (Darwin's "Animals Under Domestication," vol. i., p. 103), that is to say, before the Bronze Age and the Age of Iron. Even at that remote period they had already, by long-continued selection, been developed out of wild forms akin to the American buffalo. M. Gervais ("Hist. Nat. des Mammifores," vol. xi., p. 191) concludes that the wild race from which our domestic sheep was derived is now extinct. The remains of domestic sheep are found in the debris of the Swiss lake-dwellings during the Stone Age. The domestic horse, ass, hog, and goat also date back to a like great antiquity. We have historical records 7000 years old, and during that time no similar domestication of a wild animal has been made. This fact speaks volumes as to the vast periods of time during which man must have lived in a civilized state to effect the domestication of so many and such useful animals.

And when we turn from the fauna to the flora, we find the same state of things.

An examination of the fossil beds of Switzerland of the Miocene Age reveals the remains of more than eight hundred different species of flower-bearing plants, besides mosses, ferns, etc. The total number of fossil plants catalogued from those beds, cryptogamous as well as phænogamous, is upward of three thousand. *The majority of these species have migrated to America.* There were others that passed into Asia, Africa, and even to Australia. The American types are, however, in the largest proportion. The analogues of the flora of the Miocene Age of Europe now grow in the forests of Virginia, North and South Carolina, and Florida; they include such familiar examples as magnolias, tulip-trees, evergreen oaks, maples, plane-trees, robinas, sequoias, etc. It would seem to be impossible that these trees could have migrated from Switzerland to America unless there was unbroken land communication between the two continents.

It is a still more remarkable fact that a comparison of the flora of the Old World and New goes to show that not only was there communication by land, over which the plants of one continent could extend to another, but that man must have existed, and have helped this transmigration, in the case of certain plants that were incapable of making the journey unaided.

Otto Kuntze, a distinguished German botanist, who has spent many years in the tropics, announces his conclusion that "In America and in Asia the principal domesticated tropical plants *are represented by the same species.*" He instances the *Manihot utilissima*, whose roots yield a fine flour; the tarro (*Colocasia esculenta*), the Spanish or red pepper, the tomato, the bamboo, the guava, the mango-fruit, and especially the banana. He denies that the American origin of tobacco, maize, and the cocoa-nut is proved. He refers to the *Paritium tiliaceum*, a malvaceous plant, hardly noticed by Europeans, but very highly prized by the natives of the tropics, and cultivated everywhere in the East and West Indies; it supplies to the natives of these regions so far apart their ropes and cordage. It is always seedless in a cultivated state. It existed in America before the arrival of Columbus.

But Professor Kuntze pays especial attention to the banana, or plantain. The banana is seedless. It is found throughout tropical Asia and Africa. Professor Kuntze asks, "In what way was this plant, which cannot stand a voyage through the temperate zone, carried to America?" And yet it was generally cultivated in America before 1492. Says Professor Kuntze, "It must be remembered that the plantain is a tree-like, herbaceous plant, possessing no easily transportable bulbs, like the potato or the dahlia, nor propagable by cuttings, like the willow or the poplar. It has only a perennial root, which, once planted, needs hardly any care, and yet produces the most abundant crop of any known tropical plant." He then proceeds to discuss how it could have passed from Asia to America. He admits that the roots must have been transported from one country to the other *by civilized man.* He argues that it could not have crossed the Pacific from Asia to America, because the Pacific is nearly thrice or four times as wide as the Atlantic. The only way he can account for the plantain reaching America is to suppose that it was carried there when the North Pole had a tropical climate! Is there any proof that civilized man existed at the North Pole when it possessed the climate of Africa?

Is it not more reasonable to suppose that the plantain, or banana, was cultivated by the people of Atlantis, and carried by their civilized agricultural colonies to the east and the west? Do we not find a confirmation of this view in the fact alluded to by Professor Kuntze in these words: "A cultivated plant which does not possess seeds must have been under culture *for a very long period*—we have not in Europe a single exclusively seedless, berry-bearing, cultivated plant—and hence it is perhaps fair to infer that these plants *were cultivated as early as the beginning of the middle of the Diluvial Period.*"

Is it possible that a plant of this kind could have been cultivated for this immense period of time in *both* Asia and America? Where are the two nations, agricultural and highly civilized, on those continents by whom it was so cultivated? What has become of them? Where are the traces of their civilization? All the civilizations of Europe, Asia, and Africa radiated from the Mediterranean; the Hindoo-Aryans advanced from the north-west; they were kindred to the Persians, who were next-door neighbors to the Arabians (cousins of the Phœnicians), and who lived along-side of the Egyptians, who had in turn derived their civilization from the Phœnicians.

It would be a marvel of marvels if *one* nation, on one continent, had cultivated the banana for such a vast period of time until it became seedless; the nation retaining a peaceful, continuous, agricultural civilization during all that time. But to suppose that two nations could have cultivated the same plant, under the same circumstances, on two different continents, for the same unparalleled lapse of time, is supposing an impossibility.

We find just such a civilization as was necessary, according to Plato, and under just such a climate, in Atlantis and nowhere else. We have found it reaching, by its contiguous islands, within one hundred and fifty miles of the coast of Europe on the one side, and almost touching the West India Islands on the other, while, by its connecting ridges, it bound together Brazil and Africa.

But it may be said these animals and plants may have passed from Asia to America across the Pacific by the continent of Lemuria; or there may have been continuous land communication at one time at Behring's Strait. True; but an examination of the flora of the Pacific States shows that very many of the trees and plants common to Europe and the Atlantic States are not to be seen west of the Rocky Mountains. The magnificent magnolias, the tulip-trees, the plane-trees, etc., which were found existing in the Miocene Age in Switzerland, and are found at the present day in the United States, are altogether lacking on the Pacific coast. The sources of supply of that region seem to have been far inferior to the sources of supply of the Atlantic States. Professor Asa Gray tells us that, out of sixty-six genera and one hundred and fifty-five species found in the forests east of the Rocky Mountains, only thirty-one genera and seventy-eight species are found west of the mountains. The Pacific coast possesses no papaw, no linden or basswood, no locust-trees, no cherry-tree large enough for a timber tree, no gum-trees, no sorrel-tree, nor kalmia; no persimmon-trees, not a holly, only one ash that may be called a timber tree, no catalpa or sassafras, not a single elm or hackberry, not a mulberry, not a hickory, or a beech, or a true chestnut. These facts would seem to indicate that the forest flora of North America entered it *from the east*, and that the Pacific States possess only those fragments of it that were able to struggle over or around the great dividing mountain-chain.

We thus see that the flora and fauna of America and Europe testify not only to the existence of Atlantis, but to the fact that in an earlier age it must have extended from the shores of one continent to those of the other; and by this bridge of land the plants and animals of one region passed to the other.

The cultivation of the cotton-plant and the manufacture of its product was known to both the Old and New World. Herodotus describes it (450 B.C.) as the tree of India that bears a fleece more beautiful than that of the sheep. Columbus found the natives of the West Indies using cotton cloth. It was also found in Mexico and Peru. It is a significant fact that the cotton-plant has been found growing wild in many parts of America, but never in the Old World. This would seem to indicate that the plant was a native of America; and this is confirmed by the superiority of American cotton, and the further fact that the plants taken from America to India constantly degenerate, while those taken from India to America as constantly improve.

There is a question whether the potato, maize, and tobacco were not cultivated in China ages before Columbus discovered America. A recent traveller says, "The interior of China, along the course of the Yang-tse-Kiang, is a land full of wonders. In one place piscicultural nurseries line the banks for nearly fifty miles. All sorts of inventions, the cotton-gin included, claimed by Europeans and Americans, are to be found there forty centuries old. Plants, yielding drugs of great value, without number, the familiar tobacco and potato, maize, white and yellow corn, and other plants *believed to be indigenous to America, have been cultivated there from time immemorial.*"

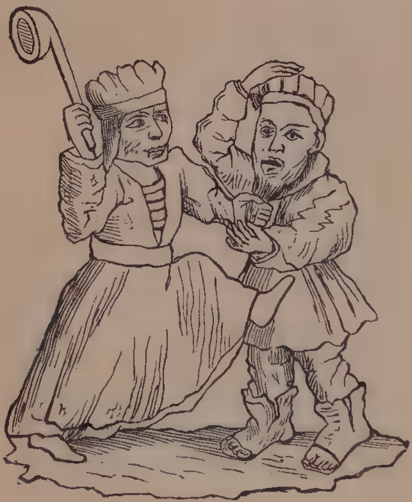

ANCIENT CARVING—STRATFORD-ON-AVON, ENGLAND.

Bonafous ("Histoire Naturelle du Mais," Paris, 1826) attributes a European or Asiatic origin to maize. The word *maize*, (Indian corn) is derived from *mahiz* or *mahis*, the name of the plant in the language of the Island of Hayti. And yet, strange to say, in the Lettish and Livonian languages, in the north of Europe, *mayse* signifies bread; in Irish, *maise* is food, and in the Old High German, *maz* is meat. May not likewise the Spanish *maiz* have antedated the time of Columbus, and borne testimony to early intercommunication between the people of the Old and New Worlds?

It is to Atlantis we must look for the origin of nearly all our valuable plants. Darwin says ("Animals and Plants under Domestication," vol. i., p. 374), "It has often been remarked that we do not owe a single useful plant to Australia, or the Cape of Good Hope—countries abounding to an unparalleled degree with endemic species—or to New Zealand, or to America south of the Plata; and, according to some authors, not to America north of Mexico." In other words, the domesticated plants are only found within the limits of what I shall show hereafter was the Empire of Atlantis and its colonies; for only here was to be found an ancient, long-continuing civilization, capable of developing from a wild state those plants which were valuable to man, including all the cereals on which to-day civilized man depends for subsistence. M. Alphonse de Candolle tells us that we owe 33 useful plants to Mexico, Peru, and Chili. According to the same high authority, of 157 valuable cultivated plants 85 can be traced back to their wild state; as to 40, there is doubt as to their origin; while 32 are utterly unknown in their aboriginal condition. ("Geograph. Botan. Raisonnée," 1855, pp. 810–991.) Certain roses—the imperial lily, the tuberose and the lilac—are said to have been cultivated from such a vast antiquity that they are not known in their wild state. (Darwin, "Animals and Plants," vol. i., p. 370.) And these facts are the more remarkable because, as De Candolle has shown, all the plants historically known to have been *first* cultivated in Europe still exist there in the wild state. (*Ibid.*) The inference is strong that the great cereals — wheat, oats, barley, rye, and maize—must have been first domesticated in a vast antiquity, or in some continent which has since disappeared, carrying the original wild plants with it.

Darwin quotes approvingly the opinion of Mr. Bentham ("Hist. Notes Cult. Plants"), "as the result of all the most reliable evidence that none of the Ceralia—wheat, rye, barley, and oats—exist or have existed truly wild in their present state." In the Stone Age of Europe five varieties of wheat and three of barley were cultivated. (Darwin, "Animals and Plants," vol. i., p. 382.) He says that it may be inferred, from the presence in the lake habitations of Switzerland of a variety of wheat known as the Egyptian wheat, and from the nature of the weeds that grew among their crops, "that the lake inhabitants either still kept up commercial intercourse with some southern people, or had originally proceeded as colonists from the south." I should argue that they were colonists from the land where wheat and

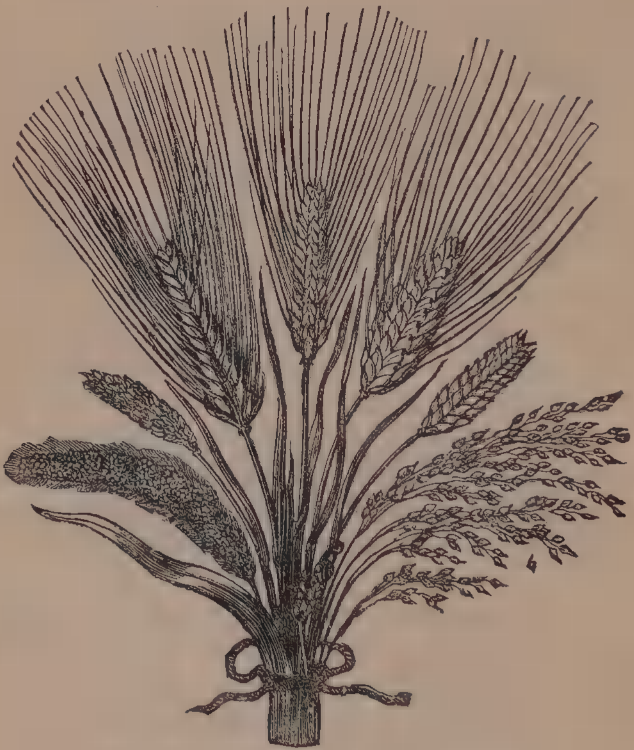
CEREALS OF THE AGE OF STONE IN EUROPE.

barley were first domesticated, to wit, Atlantis. And when the Bronze Age came, we find oats and rye making their appearance with the weapons of bronze, together with a peculiar kind of pea. Darwin concludes (*Ibid.*, vol. i., p. 385) that wheat, barley, rye, and oats were either descended from ten or fifteen distinct species, "most of which are now unknown or extinct," or from four or eight species closely resembling our present forms, or so "widely different as to escape identification;" in which latter case, he says, "man must have cultivated the cereals at an *enormously remote period*," and at that time practised "some degree of selection."

Rawlinson ("Ancient Monarchies," vol. i., p. 578) expresses the opinion that the ancient Assyrians possessed the pineapple. "The representation on the monuments is so exact that I can scarcely doubt the pineapple being intended." (See Layard's "Nineveh and Babylon," p. 338.) The pineapple (*Bromelia ananassa*) is supposed to be of American origin, and unknown to Europe before the time of Columbus; and yet, apart from the revelations of the Assyrian monuments, there has been some dispute upon this point. ("Amer. Cyclop.," vol. xiii., p. 528.)

It is not even certain that the use of tobacco was not known

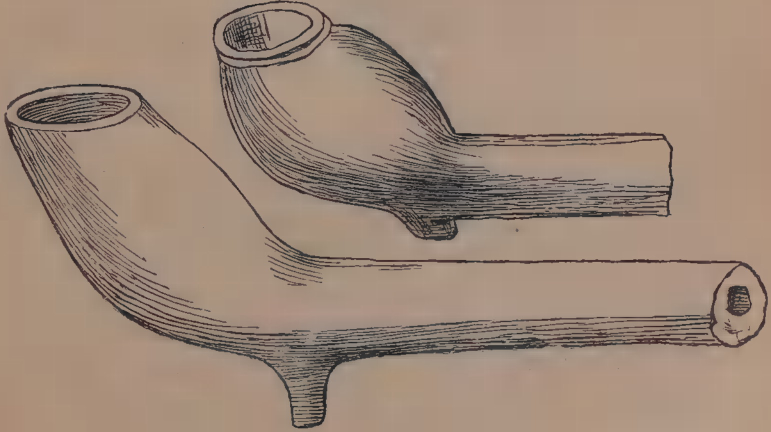

ANCIENT IRISH PIPES.

to the colonists from Atlantis settled in Ireland in an age long prior to Sir Walter Raleigh. Great numbers of pipes have been found in the raths and tumuli of Ireland, which, there is every reason to believe, were placed there by men of the Prehistoric Period. The illustration on p. 63 represents some of the so-called "Danes' pipes" now in the collection of the Royal Irish Academy. The Danes entered Ireland many centuries before the time of Columbus, and if the pipes are theirs, they must have used tobacco, or some substitute for it, at that early period. It is probable, however, that the tumuli of Ireland antedate the Danes thousands of years.

Compare these pipes from the ancient mounds of Ireland with the accompanying picture of an Indian pipe of the Stone Age of New Jersey. ("Smithsonian Rep.," 1875, p. 342.)

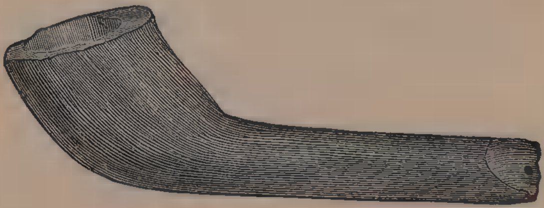

ANCIENT INDIAN PIPE, NEW JERSEY.

Recent Portuguese travellers have found the most remote tribes of savage negroes in Africa, holding no commercial intercourse with Europeans, using strangely shaped pipes, in which they smoked a plant of the country. Investigations in America lead to the conclusion that tobacco was first burnt as an incense to the gods, the priest alone using the pipe; and from this beginning the extraordinary practice spread to the people, and thence over all the world. It may have crossed the Atlantic in a remote age, and have subsequently disappeared with the failure of retrograding colonists to raise the tobacco-plant.

PART II.

THE DELUGE.

CHAPTER I.

THE DESTRUCTION OF ATLANTIS DESCRIBED IN THE DELUGE LEGENDS.

HAVING demonstrated, as we think successfully, that there is no improbability in the statement of Plato that a large island, almost a continent, existed in the past in the Atlantic Ocean, nay, more, that it is a geological certainty that it did exist; and having further shown that it is not improbable but very possible that it may have sunk beneath the sea in the manner described by Plato, we come now to the next question, Is the memory of this gigantic catastrophe preserved among the traditions of mankind? We think there can be no doubt that an affirmative answer must be given to this question.

An event, which in a few hours destroyed, amid horrible convulsions, an entire country, with all its vast population—that population the ancestors of the great races of both continents, and they themselves the custodians of the civilization of their age—could not fail to impress with terrible force the minds of men, and to project its gloomy shadow over all human history. And hence, whether we turn to the Hebrews, the Aryans, the Phœnicians, the Greeks, the Cushites, or the inhabitants of America, we find everywhere traditions of the Deluge; and we shall see that all these traditions point unmistakably to the destruction of Atlantis.

François Lenormant says (*Contemp. Rev.*, Nov., 1879):

> "The result authorizes us to affirm the story of the Deluge to be a universal tradition among all branches of the human race, with the one exception, however, of the black. Now, a recollection thus precise and concordant cannot be a myth voluntarily invented. No religious or cosmogonic myth presents this character of universality. It must arise from the reminiscence of a real and terrible event, so powerfully impressing the imagination of the first ancestors of our race as never to have been forgotten by their descendants. This cataclysm must have occurred near the first cradle of mankind, and before the dispersion of the families from which the principal races were to spring; for it would be at once improbable and uncritical to admit that, at as many different points of the globe as we should have to assume in order to explain the wide spread of these traditions, local phenomena so exactly alike should have occurred, their memory having assumed an identical form, and presenting circumstances that need not necessarily have occurred to the mind in such cases.
>
> "Let us observe, however, that probably the diluvian tradition is not primitive, but imported in America; that it undoubtedly wears the aspect of an importation among the rare populations of the yellow race where it is found; and lastly, that it is doubtful among the Polynesians of Oceania. There will still remain three great races to which it is undoubtedly peculiar, *who have not borrowed it from each other*, but among whom the tradition is primitive, and goes back to the *most ancient times*, and these three races are precisely the only ones of which the Bible speaks as being *descended from Noah*—those of which it gives the ethnic filiation in the tenth chapter of Genesis. This observation, which I hold to be undeniable, attaches a singularly historic and exact value to the tradition as recorded by the Sacred Book, even if, on the other hand, it may lead to giving it a *more limited geographical and ethnological significance*. . . .
>
> "But, as the case now stands, we do not hesitate to declare that, far from being a myth, the Biblical Deluge *is a real and historical fact*, having, to say the least, left its impress on the

ancestors of three races—Aryan, or Indo-European, Semitic, or Syro-Arabian, Chamitic, or Cushite—that is to say, on the *three great civilized races of the ancient world*, those which constitute the higher humanity—before the ancestors of those races had as yet separated, and in the part of Asia they together inhabited."

Such profound scholars and sincere Christians as M. Schœbel (Paris, 1858), and M. Omalius d'Halloy (Bruxelles, 1866), deny the universality of the Deluge, and claim that "it extended only to the principal centre of humanity, to those who remained near its primitive cradle, without reaching the scattered tribes who had already spread themselves far away in almost desert regions. It is certain that the Bible narrative commences by relating facts common to the whole human species, confining itself subsequently to the annals of the race peculiarly chosen by the designs of Providence." (Lenormant and Chevallier, "Anc. Hist. of the East," p. 44.) This theory is supported by that eminent authority on anthropology, M. de Quatrefages, as well as by Cuvier; the Rev. R. P. Bellynck, S.J., admits that it has nothing expressly opposed to orthodoxy.

Plato identifies "the great deluge of all" with the destruction of Atlantis. The priest of Sais told Solon that before "the great deluge of all" Athens possessed a noble race, who performed many noble deeds, the last and greatest of which was resisting the attempts of Atlantis to subjugate them; and after this came the destruction of Atlantis, and the same great convulsion which overwhelmed that island destroyed a number of the Greeks. So that the Egyptians, who possessed the memory of many partial deluges, regarded this as "the great deluge of all."

CHAPTER II.

THE DELUGE OF THE BIBLE.

We give first the Bible history of the Deluge, as found in Genesis (chap. vi. to chap. viii.):

"And it came to pass, when men began to multiply on the face of the earth, and daughters were born unto them, that the sons of God saw the daughters of men that they were fair; and they took them wives of all which they chose.

"And the Lord said, My Spirit shall not always strive with man, for that he also is flesh: yet his days shall be a hundred and twenty years.

"There were giants in the earth in those days; and also after that, when the sons of God came in unto the daughters of men, and they bare children to them, the same became mighty men which were of old, men of renown.

"And God saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually. And it repented the Lord that he had made man on the earth, and it grieved him at his heart. And the Lord said, I will destroy man whom I have created from the face of the earth; both man, and beast, and the creeping thing, and the fowls of the air; for it repenteth me that I have made them. But Noah found grace in the eyes of the Lord.

["These are the generations of Noah: Noah was a just man and perfect in his generations, and Noah walked with God. And Noah begat three sons, Shem, Ham, and Japheth.]

"The earth also was corrupt before God; and the earth was filled with violence. And God looked upon the earth, and, behold, it was corrupt; for all flesh had corrupted his way upon the earth. And God said unto Noah, The end of all flesh is come before me; for the earth is filled with violence through them; and, behold, I will destroy them with the earth. Make thee an ark of gopher wood; rooms shalt thou make in the ark, and shalt pitch it within and without with pitch. And this is the fashion which thou shalt make it of: The length of the ark shall be three hundred cubits, the breadth of it fifty cubits, and the height of it thirty cubits. A window shalt thou make to the ark, and in a cubit shalt thou finish it above; and the door of the ark shalt thou set in the side thereof; with lower, second, and third stories shalt thou make it. And, behold, I, even I, do bring a flood of waters upon the earth, to destroy all flesh, wherein is the breath of life, from under heaven; and everything that is in the earth shall die. But with thee will I establish my covenant; and thou shalt come into the ark, thou, and thy sons, and thy wife, and thy sons' wives with thee. And of every living thing of all flesh, two of every sort shalt thou bring into the ark, to keep them alive with thee; they shall be male and female. Of fowls after their kind, and of cattle after their kind, of every creeping thing of the earth after his kind; two of every sort shall come unto thee, to keep them alive. And take thou unto thee of all food that is eaten, and thou shalt gather it to thee; and it shall be for food for thee, and for them.

"Thus did Noah; according to all that God commanded him, so did he.

"And the Lord said unto Noah, Come thou and all thy house into the ark; for thee have I seen righteous before me in this generation. Of every clean beast thou shalt take to thee by sevens, the male and his female: and of beasts that are not clean by two, the male and his female. Of fowls also of the air by sevens, the male and the female; to keep seed alive upon the face of all the earth. For yet seven days, and I will cause it to rain upon the earth forty days and forty nights; and every living substance that I have made will I destroy from off the face of the earth.

"And Noah did according unto all that the Lord commanded him. And Noah was six hundred years old when the flood of waters was upon the earth.

"And Noah went in, and his sons, and his wife, and his sons' wives with him, into the ark, because of the waters of the flood. Of clean beasts, and of beasts that are not clean, and of fowls, and of everything that creepeth upon the earth, there went in two and two unto Noah into the ark, the male and the female, as God had commanded Noah.

"And it came to pass after seven days, that the waters of the flood were upon the earth. In the six hundredth year of Noah's life, in the second month, the seventeenth day of the month, the same day were all the fountains of the great deep broken up, and the windows of heaven were opened. And the rain was upon the earth forty days and forty nights. In the selfsame day entered Noah, and Shem, and Ham, and Japheth, the sons of Noah, and Noah's wife, and the three wives of his sons with them, into the ark; they, and every beast after his kind, and all the cattle after their kind, and every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth after his kind, and every fowl after his kind, every bird of every sort. And they went in unto Noah into the ark, two and two of all flesh, wherein is the breath of life. And they that went in, went in male and female of all flesh, as God had commanded him: and the Lord shut him in.

"And the flood was forty days upon the earth; and the waters increased, and bare up the ark, and it was lifted up above the earth. And the waters prevailed, and were increased greatly upon the earth; and the ark went upon the face of the waters. And the waters prevailed exceedingly upon the earth; and all the high hills, that were under the whole heaven, were covered. Fifteen cubits upward did the waters prevail; and the mountains were covered. And all flesh died that moved upon the earth, both of fowl, and of cattle, and of beast, and of every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth, and every man: all in whose nostrils was the breath of life, of all that was in the dry land, died. And every living substance was destroyed which was upon the face of the ground, both man, and cattle, and the creeping things, and the fowl of the heaven; and they were destroyed from the earth: and Noah only remained alive, and they that were with him in the ark. And the waters prevailed upon the earth a hundred and fifty days.

"And God remembered Noah, and every living thing, and all the cattle that was with him in the ark: and God made a wind to pass over the earth, and the waters assuaged. The fountains also of the deep and the windows of heaven were stopped, and the rain from heaven was restrained. And the waters returned from off the earth continually: and after the end of the hundred and fifty days the waters were abated. And the ark rested in the seventh month, on the seventeenth day of the month, upon the mountains of Ararat. And the waters decreased continually until the tenth month: in the tenth month, on the first day of the month, were the tops of the mountains seen.

"And it came to pass at the end of forty days, that Noah opened the window of the ark which he had made: and he sent forth a raven, which went forth to and fro, until the waters were dried up from off the earth. Also he sent forth a dove from him, to see if the waters were abated from off the face of the ground. But the dove found no rest for the sole of her foot, and she returned unto him into the ark; for the waters were on the face of the whole earth. Then he put forth his hand, and took her, and pulled her in unto him into the ark. And he stayed yet other seven days; and again he sent forth the dove out of the ark. And the dove came in to him in the evening, and, lo, in her mouth was an olive leaf plucked off: so Noah knew that the waters were abated from off the earth. And he stayed yet other seven days, and sent forth the dove, which returned not again unto him any more.

"And it came to pass in the six hundredth and first year, in the first month, the first day of the month, the waters were dried up from off the earth: and Noah removed the covering of the ark, and looked, and, behold, the face of the ground was dry. And in the second month, on the seven and twentieth day of the month, was the earth dried.

"And God spake unto Noah, saying, Go forth of the ark, thou, and thy wife, and thy sons, and thy sons' wives with thee. Bring forth with thee every living thing that is with thee, of all flesh, both of fowl and of cattle, and of every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth; that they may breed abundantly in the earth, and be fruitful, and multiply upon the earth.

"And Noah went forth, and his sons, and his wife, and his sons' wives with him: every beast, every creeping thing, and every fowl, and whatsoever creepeth upon the earth, after their kinds, went forth out of the ark.

"And Noah builded an altar unto the Lord; and took of every clean beast, and of every clean fowl, and offered burnt offerings on the altar. And the Lord smelled a sweet savour;

and the Lord said in his heart, I will not again curse the ground any more for man's sake; for the imagination of man's heart is evil from his youth: neither will I again smite any more every thing living, as I have done. While the earth remaineth, seedtime and harvest, and cold and heat, and summer and winter, and day and night shall not cease."

Let us briefly consider this record.

It shows, taken in connection with the opening chapters of Genesis:

1. That the land destroyed by water was the country in which the civilization of the human race originated. Adam was at first naked (Gen., chap. iii., 7); then he clothed himself in leaves; then in the skins of animals (chap. iii., 21): he was the first that tilled the earth, having emerged from a more primitive condition in which he lived upon the fruits of the forest (chap. ii., 16); his son Abel was the first of those that kept flocks of sheep (chap. iv., 2); his son Cain was the builder of the first city (chap. iv., 17); his descendant, Tubal-cain, was the first metallurgist (chap. iv., 22); Jabal was the first that erected tents and kept cattle (chap. iv., 20); Jubal was the first that made musical instruments. We have here the successive steps by which a savage race advances to civilization. We will see hereafter that the Atlanteans passed through precisely similar stages of development.

2. The Bible agrees with Plato in the statement that these Antediluvians had reached great populousness and wickedness, and that it was on account of their wickedness God resolved to destroy them.

3. In both cases the inhabitants of the doomed land were destroyed in a great catastrophe by the agency of water; they were drowned.

4. The Bible tells us that in an earlier age, before their destruction, mankind had dwelt in a happy, peaceful, sinless condition in a Garden of Eden. Plato tells us the same thing of the earlier ages of the Atlanteans.

5. In both the Bible history and Plato's story the destruction of the people was largely caused by the intermarriage of the superior or divine race, "the sons of God," with an inferior stock, "the children of men," whereby they were degraded and rendered wicked.

We will see hereafter that the Hebrews and their Flood legend are closely connected with the Phœnicians, whose connection with Atlantis is established in many ways.

It is now conceded by scholars that the genealogical table given in the Bible (Gen., chap. x.) is not intended to include the true negro races, or the Chinese, the Japanese, the Finns or Lapps, the Australians, or the American red men. It refers altogether to the Mediterranean races, the Aryans, the Cushites, the Phœnicians, the Hebrews, and the Egyptians. "The sons of Ham" were not true negroes, but the dark-brown races. (See Winchell's "Preadamites," chap. vii.)

If these races (the Chinese, Australians, Americans, etc.) are not descended from Noah they could not have been included in the Deluge. If neither China, Japan, America, Northern Europe, nor Australia were depopulated by the Deluge, the Deluge could not have been universal. But as it is alleged that it did destroy a country, and drowned all the people thereof except Noah and his family, the country so destroyed could not have been Europe, Asia, Africa, America, or Australia, for there has been no universal destruction of the people of those regions; or, if there had been, how can we account for the existence to-day of people on all of those continents whose descent Genesis does not trace back to Noah, and, in fact, about whom the writer of Genesis seems to have known nothing?

We are thus driven to one of two alternative conclusions: either the Deluge record of the Bible is altogether fabulous, or it relates to some land other than Europe, Asia, Africa, or Australia, some land that *was* destroyed by water. It is not fabulous; and the land it refers to is not Europe, Asia, Africa, or Australia—but Atlantis. No other land is known to history or tradition that was overthrown in a great catastrophe by the agency of water; that was civilized, populous, powerful, and given over to wickedness.

That high and orthodox authority, François Lenormant, says ("Ancient Hist. of the East," vol. i., p. 64), "The descendants of Shem, Ham, and Japhet, so admirably catalogued by Moses, include one only of the races of humanity, the white race, whose three chief divisions he gives us as now recognized by anthropologists. The other three races — yellow, black, and red—have no place in the Bible list of nations sprung from Noah." As, therefore, the Deluge of the Bible destroyed only the land and people of Noah, it could not have been universal. The religious world does not pretend to fix the location of the Garden of Eden. The Rev. George Leo Haydock says, "The precise situation cannot be ascertained; how great might be its extent we do not know;" and we will see hereafter that the unwritten traditions of the Church pointed to a region in the west, beyond the ocean which bounds Europe in that direction, as the locality in which "mankind dwelt before the Deluge."

It will be more and more evident, as we proceed in the consideration of the Flood legends of other nations, that the Antediluvian World was none other than Atlantis.

CHAPTER III.

THE DELUGE OF THE CHALDEANS.

WE have two versions of the Chaldean story — unequally developed, indeed, but exhibiting a remarkable agreement. The one most anciently known, and also the shorter, is that which Berosus took from the sacred books of Babylon, and introduced into the history that he wrote for the use of the Greeks. After speaking of the last nine antediluvian kings, the Chaldean priest continues thus:

"Obartès Elbaratutu being dead, his son Xisuthros (Khasisatra) reigned eighteen sares (64,800 years). It was under him that the Great Deluge took place, the history of which is told in the sacred documents as follows: Cronos (Ea) appeared to him in his sleep, and announced that on the fifteenth of the month of Daisios (the Assyrian month Sivan—a little before the summer solstice) all men should perish by a flood. He therefore commanded him to take the beginning, the middle, and the end of whatever was consigned to writing, and to bury it in the City of the Sun, at Sippara; then to build a vessel, and to enter it with his family and dearest friends; to place in this vessel provisions to eat and drink, and to cause animals, birds, and quadrupeds to enter it; lastly, to prepare everything for navigation. And when Xisuthros inquired in what direction he should steer his bark, he was answered, 'toward the gods,' and enjoined to pray that good might come of it for men.

"Xisuthros obeyed, and constructed a vessel five stadia long and five broad; he collected all that had been prescribed to him, and embarked his wife, his children, and his intimate friends.

"The Deluge having come, and soon going down, Xisuthros loosed some of the birds. These, finding no food nor place to alight on, returned to the ship. A few days later Xisuthros again let them free, but they returned again to the vessel, their feet full of mud. Finally, loosed the third time, the birds came no more back. Then Xisuthros understood that the earth was bare. He made an opening in the roof of the ship, and saw that it had grounded on the top of a mountain. He then descended with his wife, his daughter, and his pilot, who worshipped the earth, raised an altar, and there sacrificed to the gods; at the same moment he vanished with those who accompanied him.

"Meanwhile those who had remained in the vessel, not seeing Xisuthros return, descended too, and began to seek him, calling him by his name. They saw Xisuthros no more; but a voice from heaven was heard commanding them piety toward the gods; that he, indeed, was receiving the reward of his piety in being carried away to dwell thenceforth in the midst of the gods, and that his wife, his daughter, and the pilot of the ship shared the same honor. The voice further said that they were to return to Babylon, and, conformably to the decrees of fate, disinter the writings buried at Sippara in order to transmit them to men. It added that the country in which they found themselves was Armenia. These, then, having heard the voice, sacrificed to the gods and returned on foot to Babylon. Of the vessel of Xisuthros, which had finally landed in Armenia, a portion is still to be found in the Gordyan Mountains in Armenia, and pilgrims bring thence asphalte that they have scraped from its fragments. It is used to keep off the influence of witchcraft. As to the companions of Xisuthros, they came to Babylon, disinterred the writings left at Sippara, founded numerous cities, built temples, and restored Babylon."

"By the side of this version," says Lenormant, "which, interesting though it be, is, after all, second-hand, we are now able to place an original Chaldeo-Babylonian edition, which the lamented George Smith was the first to decipher on the cuneiform tablets exhumed at Nineveh, and now in the British Museum. Here the narrative of the Deluge appears as an episode in the eleventh tablet, or eleventh chant of the great epic of the town of Uruk. The hero of this poem, a kind of Hercules, whose name has not as yet been made out with certainty, being attacked by disease (a kind of leprosy), goes, with a view to its cure, to consult the patriarch saved from the Deluge, Khasisatra, in the distant land to which the gods have transported him, there to enjoy eternal felicity. He asks Khasisatra to reveal the secret of the events which led to his obtaining the privilege of immortality, and thus the patriarch is induced to relate the cataclysm.

"By a comparison of the three copies of the poem that the library of the palace of Nineveh contained, it has been possible to restore the narrative with hardly any breaks. These three copies were, by order of the King of Assyria, Asshurbanabal, made in the eighth century B.C., from a very ancient specimen in the sacerdotal library of the town of Uruk, founded by the monarchs of the first Chaldean empire. It is difficult precisely to fix the date of the original, copied by Assyrian scribes, but it certainly goes back to the ancient empire, seventeen centuries at least before our era, and even probably beyond; it was therefore much anterior to Moses, and nearly contemporaneous with Abraham. The variations presented by the three existing copies prove that the original was in the primitive mode of writing called the *hieratic*, a character which must have already become difficult to decipher in the eighth century B.C., as the copyists have differed as to the interpretation to be given to certain signs, and in other cases have simply reproduced exactly the forms of such as they did not understand. Finally, it results from a comparison of these variations, that the original, transcribed by order of Asshurbanabal, must itself have been a copy of some still more ancient manuscript, in which the original text had already received interlinear comments. Some of the copyists have introduced these into their text, others have omitted them. With these preliminary observations, I proceed to give integrally the narrative ascribed in the poem to Khasisatra:

"'I will reveal to thee, O Izdhubar, the history of my preservation—and tell to thee the decision of the gods.

"'The town of Shurippak, a town which thou knowest, is situated on the Euphrates—it was ancient, and in it [men did not honor] the gods. [I alone, I was] their servant, to the great gods—[The gods took counsel on the appeal of] Anu—[a deluge was proposed by] Bel—[and approved by Nabon, Nergal and] Adar.

"'And the god [Ea], the immutable lord, repeated this command in a dream.—I listened to the decree of fate that he announced, and he said to me:—"Man of Shurippak, son of Ubaratutu—thou, build a vessel and finish it [quickly].—[By a deluge] I will destroy substance and life.—Cause thou to go up into the vessel the substance of all that has life.—The vessel thou shall build—600 cubits shall be the measure of its length—and 60 cubits the amount of its breadth and of its height.—[Launch it] thus on the ocean, and cover it with a roof."—I understood, and I said to Ea, my lord:—"[The vessel] that thou commandest me to build thus—[when] I shall do it,—young and old [shall laugh at me.]"—[Ea opened his mouth and] spoke.—He said to me, his servant:—"[If they laugh at thee] thou shalt say to them:—[shall be punished] he who has insulted me, [for the protection of the gods] is over me.— . . . like to caverns . . . —— . . . I will exercise my judgment on that which is on high and that which is below . . . —— . . . Close the vessel . . . —— . . . At a given moment that I shall cause thee to know,—enter into it, and draw the door of the ship toward thee.—Within it, thy grains, thy furniture, thy provisions,—thy riches, thy men-servants, and thy maid-servants, and thy young people—the cattle of the field, and the wild beasts of the plain that I will assemble—and that I will send thee, shall be kept behind thy door."—Khasisatra opened his mouth and spoke;—he said to Ea, his lord:—"No one has made [such a] ship.—On the prow I will fix . . . —I shall see . . . and the vessel . . . —the vessel thou commandest me to build [thus]—which in . . ."

"'On the fifth day [the two sides of the bark] were raised.—In its covering fourteen in all were its rafters—fourteen in all did it count above.—I placed its roof, and I covered it.—I embarked in it on the sixth day; I divided its floors on the seventh;—I divided the interior compartments on the eighth.

I stopped up the chinks through which the water entered in;—I visited the chinks, and added what was wanting.—I poured on the exterior three times 3600 measures of asphalte,—and three times 3600 measures of asphalte within.—Three times 3600 men, porters, brought on their heads the chests of provisions.—I kept 3600 chests for the nourishment of my family,—and the mariners divided among themselves twice 3600 chests.—For [provisioning] I had oxen slain;—I instituted [rations] for each day.—In [anticipation of the need of] drinks, of barrels, and of wine—[I collected in quantity] like to the waters of a river, [of provisions] in quantity like to the dust of the earth.—[To arrange them in] the chests I set my hand to.—. . . of the sun . . . the vessel was completed.— . . . strong and—I had carried above and below the furniture of the ship.—[This lading filled the two-thirds.]

"'All that I possessed I gathered together; all I possessed of silver I gathered together; all that I possessed of gold I gathered—all that I possessed of the substance of life of every kind I gathered together.—I made all ascend into the vessel; my servants, male and female,—the cattle of the fields, the wild beasts of the plains, and the sons of the people, I made them all ascend.

"'Shamash (the sun) made the moment determined, and——he announced it in these terms:—"In the evening I will cause it to rain abundantly from heaven; enter into the vessel and close the door."——The fixed moment had arrived, which he announced in these terms:—"In the evening I will cause it to rain abundantly from heaven."——When the evening of that day arrived, I was afraid,——I entered into the vessel and shut my door.——In shutting the vessel, to Buzur-shadi-rabi, the pilot,——I confided this dwelling, with all that it contained.

"'Mu-sheri-ina-namari—rose from the foundations of heaven in a black cloud;—Ramman thundered in the midst of the cloud,—and Nabon and Sharru marched before;—they marched, devastating the mountain and the plain;—Nergal the powerful dragged chastisements after him;—Adar advanced, overthrowing before him;—the archangels of the abyss brought destruction,—in their terrors they agitated the earth.—The inundation of Ramman swelled up to the sky,—and [the earth] became without lustre, was changed into a desert.

"'They broke . . . of the surface of the earth like . . .;—

[they destroyed] the living beings of the surface of the earth. —The terrible [Deluge] on men swelled up to [heaven].—The brother no longer saw his brother; men no longer knew each other. In heaven—the gods became afraid of the water-spout, and—sought a refuge; they mounted up to the heaven of Anu.—The gods were stretched out motionless, pressing one against another like dogs.—Ishtar wailed like a child,—the great goddess pronounced her discourse:—"Here is humanity returned into mud, and—this is the misfortune that I have announced in the presence of the gods.—So I announced the misfortune in the presence of the gods,—for the evil I announced the terrible [chastisement] of men who are mine.—I am the mother who gave birth to men, and—like to the race of fishes, there they are filling the sea;—and the gods, by reason of that—which the archangels of the abyss are doing, weep with me."—The gods on their seats were seated in tears,—and they held their lips closed, [revolving] future things.

"'Six days and as many nights passed; the wind, the water-spout, and the diluvian rain were in all their strength. At the approach of the seventh day the diluvian rain grew weaker, the terrible water-spout—which had assailed after the fashion of an earthquake—grew calm, the sea inclined to dry up, and the wind and the water-spout came to an end. I looked at the sea, attentively observing—and the whole of humanity had returned to mud; like unto sea-weeds the corpses floated. I opened the window, and the light smote on my face. I was seized with sadness; I sat down and I wept;—and my tears came over my face.

"'I looked at the regions bounding the sea: toward the twelve points of the horizon; not any continent.—The vessel was borne above the land of Nizir,—the mountain of Nizir arrested the vessel, and did not permit it to pass over.—A day and a second day the mountain of Nizir arrested the vessel, and did not permit it to pass over;—the third and fourth day the mountain of Nizir arrested the vessel, and did not permit it to pass over;—the fifth and sixth day the mountain of Nizir arrested the vessel, and did not permit it to pass over. At the approach of the seventh day, I sent out and loosed a dove. The dove went, turned, and—found no place to light on, and it came back. I sent out and loosed a swallow; the swallow went, turned, and—found no place to light on, and it came back. I sent out and loosed a raven; the raven went and saw the corpses on the waters; it ate, rested, turned, and came not back.

"'I then sent out (what was in the vessel) toward the four winds, and I offered a sacrifice. I raised the pile of my burnt-offering on the peak of the mountain; seven by seven I disposed the measured vases,—and beneath I spread rushes, cedar, and juniper-wood. The gods were seized with the desire of it—the gods were seized with a benevolent desire of it;—and the gods assembled like flies above the master of the sacrifice. From afar, in approaching, the great goddess raised the great zones that Anu has made for their glory (the gods). These gods, luminous crystal before me, I will never leave them; in that day I prayed that I might never leave them. "Let the gods come to my sacrificial pile!—but never may Bel come to my sacrificial pile! for he did not master himself, and he has made the water-spout for the Deluge, and he has numbered my men for the pit."

"'From far, in drawing near, Bel—saw the vessel, and Bel stopped;—he was filled with anger against the gods and the celestial archangels:—

"'"No one shall come out alive! No man shall be preserved from the abyss!"—Adar opened his mouth and said; he said to the warrior Bel:—"What other than Ea should have formed this resolution?—for Ea possesses knowledge, and [he foresees] all."—Ea opened his mouth and spake; he said to the warrior Bel:—"O thou, herald of the gods, warrior,—as thou didst not master thyself, thou hast made the water-spout of the Deluge.—Let the sinner carry the weight of his sins, the blasphemer the weight of his blasphemy.—Please thyself with this good pleasure, and it shall never be infringed; faith in it never [shall be violated].—Instead of thy making a new deluge, let lions appear and reduce the number of men;—instead of thy making a new deluge, let hyenas appear and reduce the number of men;—instead of thy making a new deluge, let there be famine, and let the earth be [devastated];—instead of thy making a new deluge, let Dibbara appear, and let men be [mown down]. I have not revealed the decision of the great gods;—it is Khasisatra who interpreted a dream and comprehended what the gods had decided."

"'Then, when his resolve was arrested, Bel entered into the vessel.—He took my hand and made me rise.—He made my wife rise, and made her place herself at my side.—He turned around us and stopped short; he approached our group.—"Until now Khasisatra has made part of perishable humanity;—but lo, now Khasisatra and his wife are going to be carried away to live like the gods,—and Khasisatra will reside afar at the mouth of the rivers."—They carried me away, and established me in a remote place at the mouth of the streams.'

"This narrative," says Lenormant, "follows with great exactness the same course as that, or, rather, as those of Genesis; and the analogies are, on both sides, striking."

When we consider these two forms of the same legend, we see many points wherein the story points directly to Atlantis.

1. In the first place, Berosus tells us that the god who gave warning of the coming of the Deluge was Chronos. Chronos, it is well known, was the same as Saturn. Saturn was an ancient king of Italy, who, far anterior to the founding of Rome, introduced civilization from some other country to the Italians. He established industry and social order, filled the land with plenty, and created the golden age of Italy. He was suddenly removed to the abodes of the gods. His name is connected, in the mythological legends, with "a great Saturnian continent" in the Atlantic Ocean, and a great kingdom which, in the remote ages, embraced Northern Africa and the European coast of the Mediterranean as far as the peninsula of Italy, and "certain islands in the sea;" agreeing, in this respect, with the story of Plato as to the dominions of Atlantis. The Romans called the Atlantic Ocean "Chronium Mare," the Sea of Chronos, thus identifying Chronos with that ocean. The pillars of Hercules were also called by the ancients "the pillars of Chronos."

Here, then, we have convincing testimony that the country referred to in the Chaldean legends was the land of Chronos, or Saturn—the ocean world, the dominion of Atlantis.

2. Hea or Ea, the god of the Nineveh tablets, was a fish-god:

he was represented in the Chaldean monuments as half man and half fish; he was described as the god, not of the rivers and seas, but of "the abyss"—to wit, the ocean. He it was who was said to have brought civilization and letters to the ancestors of the Assyrians. He clearly represented an ancient, maritime, civilized nation; he came from the ocean, and was associated with some land and people that had been destroyed by rain and inundations. The fact that the scene of the Deluge is located on the Euphrates proves nothing, for we will see hereafter that almost every nation had its especial mountain on which, according to its traditions, the ark rested; just as every Greek tribe had its own particular mountain of Olympos. The god Bel of the legend was the Baal of the Phœnicians, who, as we shall show, were of Atlantean origin. Bel, or Baal, was worshipped on the western and northern coasts of Europe, and gave his name to the Baltic, the Great and Little Belt, Baleshaugen, Balestranden, etc.; and to many localities in the British Islands, as, for instance, Belan and the Baal hills in Yorkshire.

3. In those respects wherein the Chaldean legend, evidently the older form of the tradition, differs from the Biblical record, we see that in each instance we approach nearer to Atlantis. The account given in Genesis is the form of the tradition that would be natural to an inland people. Although there is an allusion to "the breaking up of the fountains of the great deep" (about which I shall speak more fully hereafter), the principal destruction seems to have been accomplished by rain; hence the greater period allowed for the Deluge, to give time enough for the rain to fall, and subsequently drain off from the land. A people dwelling in the midst of a continent could not conceive the possibility of a whole world sinking beneath the sea; they therefore supposed the destruction to have been caused by a continuous down-pour of rain for forty days and forty nights.

In the Chaldean legend, on the contrary, the rain lasted but seven days; and we see that the writer had a glimpse of the fact that the destruction occurred in the midst of or near the sea. The ark of Genesis (*têbâh*) was simply a chest, a coffer, a big box, such as might be imagined by an inland people. The ark of the Chaldeans was a veritable ship; it had a prow, a helm, and a pilot, and men to manage it; and it navigated "the sea."

4. The Chaldean legend represents not a mere rain-storm, but a tremendous cataclysm. There was rain, it is true, but there was also thunder, lightning, earthquakes, wind, a water-spout, and a devastation of mountain and land by the war of the elements. All the dreadful forces of nature were fighting together over the doomed land: "the archangel of the abyss brought destruction," "the water rose to the sky," "the brother no longer saw his brother; men no longer knew each other;" the men "filled the sea like fishes;" *the sea was filled with mud*, and "the corpses floated like sea-weed." When the storm abated the land had totally disappeared—there was no longer "*any continent.*" Does not all this accord with "that dreadful day and night" described by Plato?

5. In the original it appears that Izdhubar, when he started to find the deified Khasisatra, travelled first, for nine days' journey, to the sea; then secured the services of a boatman, and, entering a ship, sailed for fifteen days before finding the Chaldean Noah. This would show that Khasisatra dwelt in a far country, one only attainable by crossing the water; and this, too, seems like a reminiscence of the real site of Atlantis. The sea which a sailing-vessel required fifteen days to cross must have been a very large body of water; in fact, an ocean.

CHAPTER IV.

THE DELUGE LEGENDS OF OTHER NATIONS.

A COLLECTION of the Deluge legends of other nations will throw light upon the Biblical and Chaldean records of that great event.

The author of the treatise "On the Syrian Goddess" acquaints us with the diluvian tradition of the Arameans, directly derived from that of Chaldea, as it was narrated in the celebrated Sanctuary of Hierapolis, or Bambyce.

"The generality of people," he says, "tells us that the founder of the temple was Deucalion Sisythes—that Deucalion in whose time the great inundation occurred. I have also heard the account given by the Greeks themselves of Deucalion; the myth runs thus: The actual race of men is not the first, for there was a previous one, all the members of which perished. We belong to a second race, descended from Deucalion, and multiplied in the course of time. As to the former men, they are said to have been full of insolence and pride, committing many crimes, disregarding their oath, neglecting the rights of hospitality, unsparing to suppliants; accordingly, they were punished by an immense disaster. All on a sudden enormous volumes of water issued from the earth, and rains of extraordinary abundance began to fall; the rivers left their beds, and *the sea overflowed its shores;* the whole earth was covered with water, and all men perished. Deucalion alone, because of his virtue and piety, was preserved alive to give birth to a new race. This is how he was saved: He placed himself, his children, and his wives in a great coffer that he had, in which pigs, horses, lions, serpents, and all other terrestrial animals came to seek refuge with him. He received them all; and while they were in the coffer Zeus inspired them with reciprocal amity, which prevented their devouring one another. In this manner, shut up within one single coffer, they floated as long as the waters remained in force. Such is the account given by the Greeks of Deucalion.

"But to this, which they equally tell, the people of Hierapolis add a marvellous narrative: That in their country a great chasm opened, into which all the waters of the Deluge poured. Then Deucalion raised an altar, and dedicated a temple to Hera (Atargatis) close to this very chasm. I have seen it; it is very narrow, and situated under the temple. Whether it was once large, and has now shrunk, I do not know; but I have seen it, and it is quite small. In memory of the event the following is the rite accomplished: Twice a year sea-water is brought to the temple. This is not only done by the priests, but numerous pilgrims come from the whole of Syria and Arabia, and even from beyond the Euphrates, bringing water. It is poured out in the temple and goes into the cleft, which, narrow as it is, swallows up a considerable quantity. This is said to be in virtue of a religious law instituted by Deucalion to preserve the memory of the catastrophe, and of the benefits that he received from the gods. Such is the ancient tradition of the temple."

"It appears to me difficult," says Lenormant, "not to recognize an echo of fables popular in all Semitic countries about this chasm of Hierapolis, and the part it played in the Deluge, in the enigmatic expressions of the Koran respecting the oven (*tannur*) which began to bubble and disgorge water all around at the commencement of the Deluge. We know that this *tannur* has been the occasion of most grotesque imaginings of Mussulman commentators, who had lost the tradition of the story to which Mohammed made allusion. And, moreover, the Koran formally states that the waters of the Deluge were absorbed in the bosom of the earth."

Here the Xisuthros of Berosus becomes Deucalion-*Sisythes.* The animals are not collected together by Deucalion, as in the case of Noah and Khasisatra, but they crowded into the vessel of their own accord, driven by the terror with which the storm had inspired them; as in great calamities the creatures of the forest have been known to seek refuge in the houses of men.

India affords us an account of the Deluge which, by its poverty, strikingly contrasts with that of the Bible and the Chaldeans. Its most simple and ancient form is found in the *Çatapatha Brâhmana* of the Rig-Veda. It has been translated for the first time by Max Müller.

> "One morning water for washing was brought to Manu, and when he had washed himself a fish remained in his hands, and it addressed these words to him: 'Protect me, and I will save thee.' 'From what wilt thou save me?' 'A deluge will sweep all creatures away; it is from that I will save thee.' 'How shall I protect thee?' The fish replied, 'While we are small we run great dangers, for fish swallow fish. Keep me at first in a vase; when I become too large for it, dig a basin to put me into. When I shall have grown still more, throw me into the ocean; then I shall be preserved from destruction.' Soon it grew a large fish. It said to Manu, 'The very year I shall have reached my full growth the Deluge will happen. Then build a vessel and worship me. When the waters rise, enter the vessel, and I will save thee.'
>
> "After keeping him thus, Manu carried the fish to the sea. In the year indicated Manu built a vessel and worshipped the fish. And when the Deluge came he entered the vessel. Then the fish came swimming up to him, and Manu fastened the cable of the ship to the horn of the fish, by which means the latter made it pass over the Mountain of the North. The fish said, 'I have saved thee; fasten the vessel to a tree, that the water may not sweep it away while thou art on the mountain; and in proportion as the waters decrease thou shalt descend.' Manu descended with the waters, and this is what is called the *descent of Manu* on the Mountain of the North. The Deluge had carried away all creatures, and Manu remained alone."

There is another form of the Hindoo legend in the *Purânas*. Lenormant says:

> "We must also remark that in the *Purânas* it is no longer Manu Vaivasata that the divine fish saves from the Deluge, but a different personage, the King of the Dâstas—*i. e.*, fishers

—Satyravata, 'the man who loves justice and truth,' strikingly corresponding to the Chaldean Khasisatra. Nor is the Puranic version of the Legend of the Deluge to be despised, though it be of recent date, and full of fantastic and often puerile details. In certain aspects it is less Aryanized than that of *Brâhmana* or than the *Mahâbhârata;* and, above all, it gives some circumstances omitted in these earlier versions, which must yet have belonged to the original foundation, since they appear in the Babylonian legend; a circumstance preserved, no doubt, by the oral tradition—popular, and not Brahmanic—with which the *Purânas* are so deeply imbued. This has already been observed by Pictet, who lays due stress on the following passage of the *Bhâgavata-Purâna:* 'In seven days,' said Vishnu to Satyravata, '*the three worlds shall be submerged.*' There is nothing like this in the *Brâhmana* nor the *Mahâbhârata*, but in Genesis the Lord says to Noah, 'Yet seven days and I will cause it to rain upon the earth;' and a little farther we read, 'After seven days the waters of the flood were upon the earth.' . . . Nor must we pay less attention to the directions given by the fish-god to Satyravata for the placing of the sacred Scriptures in a safe place, in order to preserve them from Hayagriva, a marine horse dwelling in the abyss. . . . We recognize in it, under an Indian garb, the very tradition of the interment of the sacred writings at Sippara by Khasisatra, such as we have seen it in the fragment of Berosus."

The references to "the three worlds" and the "fish-god" in these legends point to Atlantis. The "three worlds" probably refers to the great empire of Atlantis, described by Plato, to wit, the western continent, America, the eastern continent, Europe and Africa, considered as one, and the island of Atlantis. As we have seen, Poseidon, the founder of the civilization of Atlantis, is identical with Neptune, who is always represented riding a dolphin, bearing a trident, or three-pronged symbol, in his hand, emblematical probably of the triple kingdom. He is thus a sea-god, or fish-god, and he comes to save the representative of his country.

And we have also a new and singular form of the legend in the following. Lenormant says:

"Among the Iranians, in the sacred books containing the fundamental Zoroastrian doctrines, and dating very far back, we meet with a tradition which must assuredly be looked upon as a variety of that of the Deluge, though possessing a special character, and diverging in some essential particulars from those we have been examining. It relates how Yima, who, in the original and primitive conception, was the father of the human race, was warned by Ahuramazda, the good deity, of the earth being about to be devastated by a flood. The god ordered Yima to construct a refuge, a square garden, *vara*, protected by an enclosure, and to cause the germs of men, beasts, and plants to enter it, in order to escape annihilation. Accordingly, when the inundation occurred, the garden of Yima, with all that it contained, was alone spared, and the message of safety was brought thither by the bird Karshipta, the envoy of Ahuramazda." ("Vendûdid," vol. ii., p. 46.)

This clearly signifies that, prior to the destruction of Atlantis, a colony had been sent out to some neighboring country. These emigrants built a walled town, and brought to it the grains and domestic animals of the mother country; and when the island of Atlantis sunk in the ocean, a messenger brought the terrible tidings to them in a ship.

"The Greeks had two principal legends as to the cataclysm by which primitive humanity was destroyed. The first was connected with the name of Ogyges, the most ancient of the kings of Bœotia or Attica—a quite mythical personage, lost in the night of ages, his very name seemingly derived from one signifying deluge in Aryan idioms, in Sanscrit *Angha*. It is said that in his time the whole land was covered by a flood, whose waters reached the sky, and from which he, together with some companions, escaped in a vessel.

"The second tradition is the Thessalian legend of Deucalion. Zeus having worked to destroy the men of the age of bronze, with whose crimes he was wroth, Deucalion, by the advice of Prometheus, his father, constructed a coffer, in which he took refuge with his wife, Pyrrha. The Deluge came; the chest, or coffer, floated at the mercy of the waves for nine days and nine nights, and was finally stranded on Mount Parnassus. Deucalion and Pyrrha leave it, offer sacrifice, and, according to the command of Zeus, repeople the world by throwing behind them 'the bones of the earth'—namely, stones, which change into men. This Deluge of Deucalion is, in Grecian tradition, what most resembles a universal deluge. Many authors affirm that it extended to the whole earth, and that the whole human race perished. At Athens, in memory of the event, and to appease the manes of its victims, a ceremony called *Hydrophoria* was observed, having so close a resemblance to that in use at Hierapolis, in Syria, that we can hardly fail to look upon it as a Syro-Phœnician importation, and the result of an assimilation established in remote antiquity between the Deluge of Deucalion and that of Khasisatra, as described by the author of the treatise 'On the Syrian Goddess.' Close to the temple of the Olympian Zeus a fissure in the soil was shown, in length but one cubit, through which it was said the waters of the Deluge had been swallowed up. Thus, every year, on the third day of the festival of the Anthestéria, a day of mourning consecrated to the dead—that is, on the thirteenth of the month of Anthestérion, toward the beginning of March—it was customary, as at Bambyce, to pour water into the fissure, together with flour mixed with honey, poured also into the trench dug to the west of the tomb, in the funeral sacrifices of the Athenians."

In this legend, also, there are passages which point to Atlantis. We will see hereafter that the Greek god Zeus was one of the kings of Atlantis. "The men of the age of bronze" indicates the civilization of the doomed people; they were the great metallurgists of their day, who, as we will see, were probably the source of the great number of implements and weapons of bronze found all over Europe. Here, also, while no length of time is assigned to the duration of the storm, we find that the ark floated but nine days and nights. Noah was one year and ten days in the ark, Khasisatra was not half that time, while Deucalion was afloat only nine days.

At Megara, in Greece, it was the eponym of the city, Megaros, son of Zeus and one of the nymphs, Sithnides, who, warned by the cry of cranes of the imminence of the danger of the coming flood, took refuge on Mount Geranien. Again, there was the Thessalian Cerambos, who was said to have escaped the flood by rising into the air on wings given him by the nymphs; and it was Perirrhoos, son of Eolus, that Zeus Naios had preserved at Dodona. For the inhabitants of the Isle of Cos the hero of the Deluge was *Merops*, son of Hyas, who there assembled under his rule the remnant of humanity preserved with him. The traditions of Rhodes only supposed the Telchines, those of Crete Sasion, to have escaped the cataclysm. In Samothracia the same character was attributed to Saon, said to be the son of Zeus or of Hermes.

It will be observed that in all these legends the name of Zeus, King of Atlantis, reappears. It would appear probable that many parties had escaped from the catastrophe, and had landed at the different points named in the traditions; or else that colonies had already been established by the Atlanteans at those places. It would appear impossible that a maritime people could be totally destroyed; doubtless many were on shipboard in the harbors, and others going and coming on distant voyages.

"The invasion of the East," says Baldwin ('Prehistoric Nations,' p. 396), "to which the story of Atlantis refers, seems to have given rise to the Panathenæa, the oldest, greatest, and most splendid festivals in honor of Athena celebrated in Attica. These festivals are said to have been established by Erichthonus in the most ancient times remembered by the historical traditions of Athens. Boeckh says of them, in his 'Commentary on Plato:'

"'In the greater Panathenæa there was carried in procession a *peplum* of Minerva, representing the war with the giants and the victory of the gods of Olympus. In the lesser Panathenæa they carried another *peplum* (covered with symbolic devices), which showed how the Athenians, supported by Minerva, had the advantage in the war with the Atlantes.' A scholia quoted from Proclus by Humboldt and Boeckh says: 'The historians who speak of the islands of the exterior sea tell us that in their time there were seven islands consecrated to Proserpine, and three others of immense extent, of which the first was consecrated to Pluto, the second to Ammon, and the third to Neptune. The inhabitants of the latter had preserved a recollection (transmitted to them by their ancestors) of the island of Atlantis, which was extremely large, and for a long time held sway over all the islands of the Atlantic Ocean. Atlantis was also consecrated to Neptune.'" (See Humboldt's "Histoire de la Géographie du Nouveau Continent," vol. i.)

No one can read these legends and doubt that the Flood was an historical reality. It is impossible that in two different places in the Old World, remote from each other, religious ceremonies should have been established and perpetuated from age to age in memory of an event which never occurred. We have seen that at Athens and at Hierapolis, in Syria, pilgrims came from a distance to appease the god of the earthquake, by pouring offerings into fissures of the earth said to have been made at the time Atlantis was destroyed.

More than this, we know from Plato's history that the Athenians long preserved in their books the memory of a victory won over the Atlanteans in the early ages, and celebrated it by national festivals, with processions and religious ceremonies.

It is too much to ask us to believe that Biblical history, Chaldean, Iranian, and Greek legends signify nothing, and that even religious pilgrimages and national festivities were based upon a myth.

I would call attention to the further fact that in the Deluge legend of the Isle of Cos the hero of the affair was Merops. Now we have seen that, according to Theopompus, one of the names of the people of Atlantis was "Meropes."

But we have not reached the end of our Flood legends. The Persian Magi possessed a tradition in which the waters issued from the oven of an old woman. Mohammed borrowed this story, and in the Koran he refers to the Deluge as coming from an oven. "All men were drowned save Noah and his family; and then God said, 'O earth, swallow up thy waters;

and thou, O heaven, withhold thy rain;' and immediately the waters abated."

In the bardic poems of Wales we have a tradition of the Deluge which, although recent, under the concise forms of the triads, is still deserving of attention. As usual, the legend is localized in the country, and the Deluge counts among three terrible catastrophes of the island of Prydian, or Britain, the other two consisting of devastation by fire and by drought.

"The first of these events," it is said, "was the eruption of Llyn-llion, or 'the lake of waves,' and the inundation (*bawdd*) of the whole country, by which all mankind was drowned with the exception of Dwyfan and Dwyfach, who saved themselves in a vessel without rigging, and it was by them that the island of Prydian was repeopled."

Pictet here observes:

"Although the triads in their actual form hardly date farther than the thirteenth or fourteenth century, some of them are undoubtedly connected with very ancient traditions, and nothing here points to a borrowing from Genesis.

"But it is not so, perhaps, with another triad, speaking of the vessel *Nefyddnaf-Neifion*, which at the time of the overflow of Llyon-llion, bore a pair of all living creatures, and rather too much resembles the ark of Noah. The very name of the patriarch may have suggested this triple epithet, obscure as to its meaning, but evidently formed on the principle of Cymric alliteration. In the same triad we have the enigmatic story of the horned oxen (*ychain banog*) of Hu the mighty, who drew out of Llyon-llion the *avanc* (beaver or crocodile?), in order that the lake should not overflow. The meaning of these enigmas could only be hoped from deciphering the chaos of barbaric monuments of the Welsh middle age; but meanwhile we cannot doubt that the Cymri possessed an indigenous tradition of the Deluge."

We also find a vestige of the same tradition in the Scandinavian Ealda. Here the story is combined with a cosmogonic myth. The three sons of Borr—Othin, Wili, and We—grandsons of Buri, the first man, slay Ymir, the father of the Hrimthursar, or ice giants, and his body serves them for the construction of the world. Blood flows from his wounds in such abundance that all the race of giants is drowned in it except Bergelmir, who saves himself, with his wife, in a boat, and reproduces the race.

In the *Edda* of *Sæmund*, "The Vala's Prophecy" (stz. 48–56, p. 9), we seem to catch traditional glimpses of a terrible catastrophe, which reminds us of the Chaldean legend:

> "Then trembles Yggdrasil's ash yet standing, groans that ancient tree, and the Jötun Loki is loosed. The shadows groan on the ways of Hel (the goddess of death), until the fire of Surt has consumed *the tree. Hyrm steers from the east, the waters rise,* the mundane snake is coiled in jötun-rage. The worm beats the water and the eagle screams; the pale of beak tears carcasses; (the ship) Naglfar is loosed. Surt from the south comes with flickering flame; shines from his sword the Valgod's sun. The stony hills are dashed together, the giantesses totter; men tread the path of Hel, and heaven is cloven. The sun darkens, *earth in ocean sinks,* fall from heaven the bright stars, fire's breath assails the all-nourishing, towering fire plays against heaven itself."

Egypt does not contain a single allusion to the Flood. Lenormant says:

> "While the tradition of the Deluge holds so considerable a place in the legendary memories of all branches of the Aryan race, the monuments and original texts of Egypt, with their many cosmogonic speculations, have not afforded one, even distant, allusion to this cataclysm. When the Greeks told the Egyptian priests of the Deluge of Deucalion, their reply was that they had been preserved from it as well as from the conflagration produced by Phaëthon; they even added that the Hellenes were childish in attaching so much importance to that event, as there had been several other local catastrophes resembling it. According to a passage in Manetho, much suspected, however, of being an interpolation, Thoth, or Hermes Trismegistus, had himself, before the cataclysm, inscribed on stelæ, in hieroglyphical and sacred language, the principles of all knowledge. After it the second Thoth translated into the

vulgar tongue the contents of these stelæ. This would be the only Egyptian mention of the Deluge, the same Manetho not speaking of it in what remains to us of his 'Dynasties,' his only complete authentic work. The silence of all other myths of the Pharaonic religion on this head render it very likely that the above is merely a foreign tradition, recently introduced, and no doubt of Asiatic and Chaldean origin."

To my mind the explanation of this singular omission is very plain. The Egyptians had preserved in their annals the precise history of the destruction of Atlantis, out of which the Flood legends grew; and, as they told the Greeks, there had been no universal flood, but only local catastrophes. Possessing the real history of the local catastrophe which destroyed Atlantis, they did not indulge in any myths about a universal deluge covering the mountain-tops of all the world. They had no Ararat in their neighborhood.

The traditions of the early Christian ages touching the Deluge pointed to the quarter of the world in which Atlantis was situated.

There was a quaint old monk named Cosmos, who, about one thousand years ago, published a book, "Topographia Christiana," accompanied by a map, in which he gives his view of the world as it was then understood. It was a body surrounded by water, and resting on nothing. "The earth," says Cosmos, "presses downward, but the igneous parts tend upward," and between the conflicting forces the earth hangs suspended, like Mohammed's coffin in the old story. The accompanying illus-

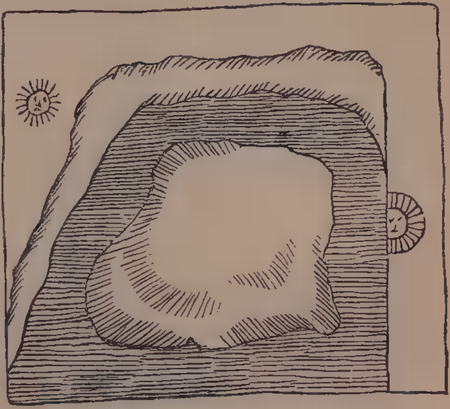

THE WORLD, ACCORDING TO COSMOS.

tration (page 95) represents the earth surrounded by the ocean, and beyond this ocean was "the land where men dwelt before the Deluge."

He then gives us a more accurate map, in detail, of the known world of his day.

I copy this map, not to show how much more we know than poor Cosmos, but because he taught that all around this habitable world there was yet another world, adhering closely on all sides to the circumscribing walls of heaven. "Upon the eastern side of this transmarine land he judges man was created; and that there the paradise of gladness was located, such as here on the eastern edge is described, where it received our first parents, driven out of Paradise to that extreme point of land on the sea-shore. Hence, upon the coming of the Deluge, Noah and his sons were borne by the ark to the earth we now inhabit. The four rivers he supposes to be gushing up the spouts of Paradise." They are depicted on the above map: O is the Mediterranean Sea; P, the Arabian Gulf; L, the Caspian Sea; Q, the Tigris; M, the river Pison; "*and J, the land where men dwelt before the Flood.*"

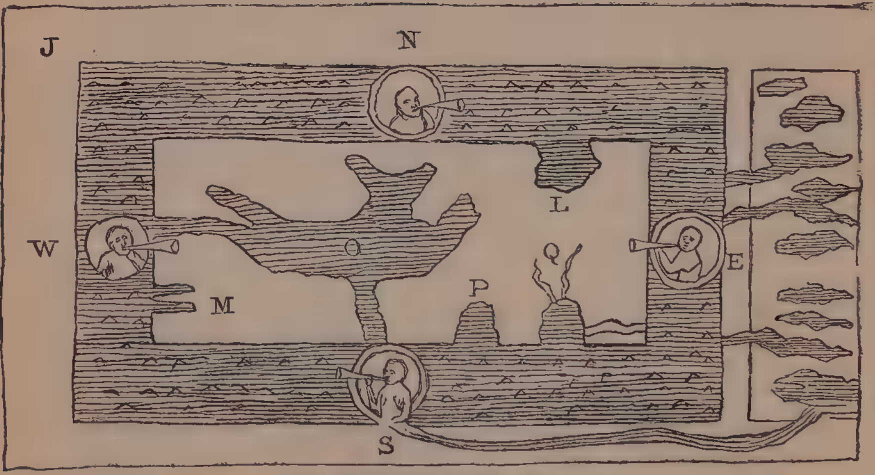

MAP OF EUROPE, AFTER COSMOS.

It will be observed that, while he locates Paradise in the east, he places the scene of the Deluge in the west; and he supposes that Noah came from the scene of the Deluge to Europe.

This shows that the traditions in the time of Cosmos looked to the west as the place of the Deluge, and that after the Deluge Noah came to the shores of the Mediterranean. The fact, too, that there was land in the west beyond the ocean is recognized by Cosmos, and is probably a dim echo from Atlantean times.

The following rude cut, from Cosmos, represents the high mountain in the north behind which the sun hid himself at night, thus producing the alternations of day and night. His solar majesty is just getting behind the mountain, while Luna looks calmly on at the operation. The mountain is as crooked as Culhuacan, the crooked mountain of Atzlan described by the Aztecs.

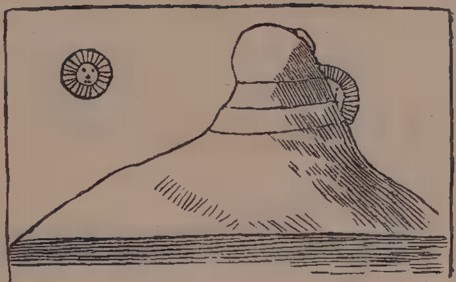

THE MOUNTAIN THE SUN GOES BEHIND AT NIGHT.

CHAPTER V.

THE DELUGE LEGENDS OF AMERICA.

"IT is a very remarkable fact," says Alfred Maury, "that we find in America traditions of the Deluge coming infinitely nearer to that of the Bible and the Chaldean religion than among any people of the Old World. It is difficult to suppose that the emigration that certainly took place from Asia into North America by the Kourile and Aleutian Islands, and still does so in our day, should have brought in these memories, since no trace is found of them among those Mongol or Siberian populations which were fused with the natives of the New World. . . . The attempts that have been made to trace the origin of Mexican civilization to Asia have not as yet led to any sufficiently conclusive facts. Besides, had Buddhism, which we doubt, made its way into America, it could not have introduced a myth not found in its own scriptures. The cause of these similarities between the diluvian traditions of the nations of the New World and that of the Bible remains therefore unexplained."

The cause of these similarities can be easily explained: the legends of the Flood did not pass into America by way of the Aleutian Islands, or through the Buddhists of Asia, but were derived from an actual knowledge of Atlantis possessed by the people of America.

Atlantis and the western continent had from an immemorial age held intercourse with each other; the great nations of America were simply colonies from Atlantis, sharing in its civilization, language, religion, and blood. From Mexico to the peninsula of Yucatan, from the shores of Brazil to the heights of Bolivia and Peru, from the Gulf of Mexico to the head-waters of the Mississippi River, the colonies of Atlantis extended; and therefore it is not strange to find, as Alfred Maury says, American traditions of the Deluge coming nearer to that of the Bible and the Chaldean record than those of any people of the Old World.

"The most important among the American traditions are the Mexican, for they appear to have been definitively fixed by symbolic and mnemonic paintings before any contact with Europeans. According to these documents, the Noah of the Mexican cataclysm was Coxcox, called by certain peoples Teocipactli or Tezpi. He had saved himself, together with his wife Xochiquetzal, in a bark, or, according to other traditions, on a raft made of cypress-wood (*Cupressus disticha*). Paintings retracing the deluge of Coxcox have been discovered among the Aztecs, Miztecs, Zapotecs, Tlascaltecs, and Mechoacaneses. The tradition of the latter is still more strikingly in conformity with the story as we have it in Genesis, and in Chaldean sources. It tells how Tezpi embarked in a spacious vessel with his wife, his children, and several animals, and grain, whose preservation was essential to the subsistence of the human race. When the great god Tezcatlipoca decreed that the waters should retire, Tezpi sent a vulture from the bark. The bird, feeding on the carcasses with which the earth was laden, did not return. Tezpi sent out other birds, of which the humming-bird only came back with a leafy branch in its beak. Then Tezpi, seeing that the country began to vegetate, left his bark on the mountain of Colhuacan.

"The document, however, that gives the most valuable information," says Lenormant, "as to the cosmogony of the Mexicans is one known as 'Codex Vaticanus,' from the library where it is preserved. It consists of four symbolic pictures, representing the four ages of the world preceding the actual one. They were copied at Chobula from a manuscript anterior to the conquest, and accompanied by the explanatory commentary of Pedro de los Rios, a Dominican monk, who, in 1566, less than fifty years after the arrival of Cortez, devoted himself to the research of indigenous traditions as being necessary to his missionary work."

There were, according to this document, four ages of the world. The first was an age of giants (the great mammalia?)

who were destroyed by famine; the second age ended in a conflagration; the third age was an age of monkeys.

"Then comes the fourth age, *Atonatiuh*, 'Sun of Water,' whose number is 10×400+8, or 4008. It ends by a great inundation, a veritable deluge. All mankind are changed into fish, with the exception of one man and his wife, who save themselves in a bark made of the trunk of a cypress-tree. The picture represents Matlalcueye, goddess of waters, and consort of Tlaloc, god of rain, as darting down toward earth. Coxcox and Xochiquetzal, the two human beings preserved, are seen seated on a tree-trunk and floating in the midst of the waters. This flood is represented as the last cataclysm that devastates the earth."

The learned Abbé Brasseur de Bourbourg translates from the Aztec language of the "Codex Chimalpopoca" the following Flood legend:

"This is the sun called *Nahui-atl*, '4 water.' Now the water was tranquil for forty years, plus twelve, and men lived for the third and fourth times. When the sun *Nahui-atl* came there had passed away four hundred years, plus two ages, plus seventy-six years. Then all mankind was lost and drowned, and found themselves changed into fish. The sky came nearer the water. In a single day all was lost, and the day *Nahui-xochitl*, '4 flower,' destroyed all our flesh.

"And that year was that of *cé-calli*, '1 house,' and the day *Nahui-atl* all was lost. Even the mountains *sunk into the water*, and the water remained tranquil for fifty-two springs.

"Now at the end of the year the god Titlacahuan had warned Nata and his spouse Nena, saying, 'Make no more wine of Agave, but begin to hollow out a great cypress, and you will enter into it when in the month Tozontli the water approaches the sky.'

"Then they entered in, and when the god had closed the door, he said, 'Thou shalt eat but one ear of maize, and thy wife one also.'

"But as soon as they had finished they went out, and the water remained calm, for the wood no longer moved, and, on opening it, they began to see fish.

"Then they lit a fire, by rubbing together pieces of wood, and they roasted fish.

"The gods Citlallinicué and Citlalatonac, instantly looking down said: 'Divine Lord, what is that fire that is making there? Why do they thus smoke the sky?' At once Titlacahuan-Tezcatlipoca descended. He began to chide, saying, 'Who has made this fire here?' And, seizing hold of the fish, he shaped their loins and heads, and they were transformed into dogs (*chichime*)."

Here we note a remarkable approximation to Plato's account of the destruction of Atlantis. "In one day and one fatal night," says Plato, "there came mighty earthquakes and inundations that ingulfed that warlike people." "In a single day all was lost," says the Aztec legend. And, instead of a rainfall of forty days and forty nights, as represented in the Bible, here we see "in a single day . . . *even the mountains sunk into the water*;" not only the land on which the people dwelt who were turned into fish, but the very mountains of that land sunk into the water. Does not this describe the fate of Atlantis? In the Chaldean legend "the great goddess Ishtar wailed like a child," saying, "I am the mother who gave birth to men, and, *like to the race of fishes*, they are filling the sea."

In the account in Genesis, Noah "builded an altar unto the Lord, and took of every clean beast, and of every clean fowl, and offered burnt offerings on the altar. And the Lord smelled a sweet savor; and the Lord said in his heart, 'I will not again curse the ground any more for man's sake.'" In the Chaldean legend we are told that Khasisatra also offered a sacrifice, a burnt offering, "and the gods assembled like flies above the master of the sacrifice." But Bel came in a high state of indignation, just as the Aztec god did, and was about to finish the work of the Deluge, when the great god Ea took pity in his heart and interfered to save the remnant of mankind.

These resemblances cannot be accidental; neither can they be the interpolations of Christian missionaries, for it will be observed the Aztec legends differ from the Bible in points where they resemble on the one hand Plato's record, and on the other the Chaldean legend.

The name of the hero of the Aztec story, *Nata*, pronounced with the broad sound of the *a*, is not far from the name of Noah or Noe. The Deluge of Genesis is a Phœnician, Semitic, or Hebraic legend, and yet, strange to say, the name of Noah, which occurs in it, bears no appropriate meaning in those tongues, but is derived from Aryan sources; its fundamental root is *Na*, to which in all the Aryan language is attached the meaning of water—*νάειν*, to flow; *νᾶμα*, water; Nympha, Neptunus, water deities. (Lenormant and Chevallier, "Anc. Hist. of the East," vol. i., p. 15.) We find the root *Na* repeated in the name of this Central American Noah, *Na-ta*, and probably in the word "*Na*-hui-atl"—the age of water.

But still more striking analogies exist between the Chaldean legend and the story of the Deluge as told in the "Popul Vuh" (the Sacred Book) of the Central Americans:

> "Then the waters were agitated by the will of the Heart of Heaven (Hurakan), and a great inundation came upon the heads of these creatures. . . . They were ingulfed, and a resinous thickness descended from heaven; . . . the face of the earth was obscured, and a heavy darkening rain commenced—rain by day and rain by night. . . . There was heard a great noise above their heads, as if produced by fire. Then were men seen running, pushing each other, filled with despair; they wished to climb upon their houses, and the houses, tumbling down, fell to the ground; they wished to climb upon the trees, and the trees shook them off; they wished to enter into the grottoes (caves), and the grottoes closed themselves before them. . . . Water and fire contributed to the universal ruin at the time of the last great cataclysm which preceded the fourth creation."

Observe the similarities here to the Chaldean legend. There is the same graphic description of a terrible event. The "black cloud" is referred to in both instances; also the dreadful noises, the rising water, the earthquake rocking the trees, overthrowing the houses, and crushing even the mountain caverns; "the men running and pushing each other, filled with despair," says the "Popul Vuh;" "the brother no longer saw his brother," says the Assyrian legend.

And here I may note that this word *hurakan*—the spirit of the abyss, the god of storm, the hurricane—is very suggestive, and testifies to an early intercourse between the opposite shores of the Atlantic. We find in Spanish the word *huracan;* in Portuguese, *furacan;* in French, *ouragan;* in German, Danish, and Swedish, *orcan*—all of them signifying a storm; while in Latin *furo*, or *furio*, means to rage. And are not the old Swedish *hurra*, to be driven along; our own word *hurried;* the Icelandic word *hurra*, to be rattled over frozen ground, all derived from the same root from which the god of the abyss, Hurakan, obtained his name? The last thing a people forgets is the name of their god; we retain to this day, in the names of the days of the week, the designations of four Scandinavian gods and one Roman deity.

It seems to me certain the above are simply two versions of the same event; that while ships from Atlantis carried terrified passengers to tell the story of the dreadful catastrophe to the people of the Mediterranean shores, other ships, flying from the tempest, bore similar awful tidings to the civilized races around the Gulf of Mexico.

The native Mexican historian, Ixtlilxochitl, gave this as the Toltec legend of the Flood:

"It is found in the histories of the Toltecs that this age and *first world*, as they call it, lasted 1716 years; that men were destroyed by tremendous rains and lightning from the sky, and even all the land, without the exception of anything, and the highest mountains, were covered up and submerged in water *fifteen cubits* (caxtolmolatli); and here they added other fables of how men came to multiply from the few who escaped from this destruction in a "toptlipetlocali;" that this word nearly signifies a close chest; and how, after men had multiplied, they erected a very high "zacuali," which is to-day a tower of great height, in order to take refuge in it should the second world (age) be destroyed. Presently their languages were confused, and, not being able to understand each other, they went to different parts of the earth.

"The Toltecs, consisting of seven friends, with their wives, who understood the same language, came to these parts, having first passed great land and seas, having lived in caves, and having endured great hardships in order to reach this land; . . . they wandered 104 years through different parts of the world before they reached Hue Hue Tlapalan, which was in Ce Tecpatl, 520 years after the Flood." ("Ixtlilxochitl Relaciones," in Kingsborough's "Mex. Ant.," vol. ix., pp. 321, 322.)

It will of course be said that this account, in those particulars where it agrees with the Bible, was derived from the teachings of the Spanish priests; but it must be remembered that Ixtlilxochitl was an Indian, a native of Tezcuco, a son of the queen, and that his "Relaciones" were drawn from the archives of his family and the ancient writings of his nation: he had no motive to falsify documents that were probably in the hands of hundreds at that time.

Here we see that the depth of the water over the earth, "fifteen cubits," given in the Toltec legend, is precisely the same as that named in the Bible: "fifteen cubits upward did the waters prevail." (Gen., chap. vii., 20.)

In the two curious picture-histories of the Aztecs preserved in the Boturini collection, and published by Gamelli Careri and

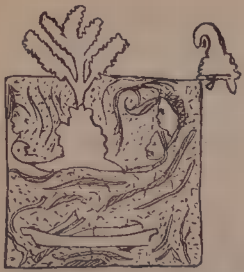

THE STARTING-POINT OF THE AZTECS, ACCORDING TO THE GAMELLI CARERI PICTURED MS.

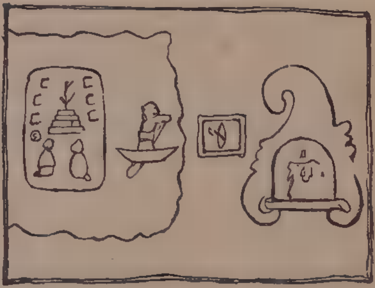

THE STARTING-POINT OF THE AZTECS, ACCORDING TO THE BOTURINI PICTURED WRITING.

others, there is a record of their migrations from their original location through various parts of the North American continent until their arrival in Mexico. In both cases their starting-point is an *island*, from which they pass in a boat; and the island contains in one case a mountain, and in the other a high temple in the midst thereof. These things seem to be reminiscences of their origin in Atlantis.

In each case we see the crooked mountain of the Aztec legends, the Calhuacan, looking not unlike the bent mountain of the monk, Cosmos.

In the legends of the Chibchas of Bogota we seem to have distinct reminiscences of Atlantis. Bochica was their leading divinity. During two thousand years he employed himself in elevating his subjects. He lived in the sun, while his wife Chia occupied the moon. This would appear to be an allusion to the worship of the sun and moon. Beneath Bochica in their mythology was Chibchacum. In an angry mood he brought a deluge on the people of the table-land. Bochica punished him for this act, and obliged him ever after, like Atlas, to bear the burden of the earth on his back. Occasionally he shifts the earth from one shoulder to another, and this causes earthquakes!

Here we have allusions to an ancient people who, during thousands of years, were elevated in the scale of civilization, and were destroyed by a deluge; and with this is associated an Atlantean god bearing the world on his back. We find even the rainbow appearing in connection with this legend. When Bochica appeared in answer to prayer to quell the deluge he is seated on a rainbow. He opened a breach in the earth at Tequendama, through which the waters of the flood escaped, precisely as we have seen them disappearing through the crevice in the earth near Bambyce, in Greece.

The Toltecs traced their migrations back to a starting-point called "Aztlan," or "Atlan." This could be no other than Atlantis. (Bancroft's "Native Races," vol. v., p. 221.) "The original home of the Nahuatlacas was Aztlan, the location of which has been the subject of much discussion. The causes that led to their exodus from that country can only be conjectured; but they may be supposed to have been driven out by their enemies, for Aztlan is described as a land too fair and beautiful to be left willingly in the mere hope of finding a better." (Bancroft's "Native Races," vol. v., p. 306.) The Aztecs also claimed to have come originally from Aztlan. (*Ibid.*, p. 321.) Their very name, Aztecs, was derived from Aztlan. (*Ibid.*, vol. ii., p. 125). They were Atlanteans.

The "Popul Vuh" tells us that after the migration from Aztlan three sons of the King of the Quiches, upon the death of their father, "determined to go as their fathers had ordered to the East, on the shores of the sea whence their fathers had come, to receive the royalty, 'bidding adieu to their brothers and friends, and promising to return.' Doubtless they passed over the sea when they went to the East to receive the royalty. Now this is the name of the lord, of the monarch of the people of the East where they went. And when they arrived before the lord Nacxit, the name of the great lord, the only judge, whose power was without limit, behold he granted them the sign of royalty and all that represents it . . . and the insignia of royalty . . . all the things, in fact, which they brought on their return, and which they went to receive from the other side of the sea—the art of painting from Tulan, *a system of writing*, they said, *for the things recorded in their histories.*" (Bancroft's "Native Races," vol. v., p. 553; "Popul Vuh," p. 294.)

This legend not only points to the East as the place of origin of these races, but also proves that this land of the East, this Aztlan, this Atlantis, exercised dominion over the colonies in Central America, and furnished them with the essentials of civilization. How completely does this agree with the statement of Plato that the kings of Atlantis held dominion over parts of "the great opposite continent!"

Professor Valentini ("Maya Archæol.," p. 23) describes an Aztec picture in the work of Gemelli ("Il giro del mondo," vol. vi.) of the migration of the Aztecs from Aztlan:

"Out of a sheet of water there projects the peak of a mountain; on it stands a tree, and on the tree a bird spreads its wings. At the foot of the mountain-peak there comes out of the water the heads of a man and a woman. The one wears on his head the symbol of his name, *Coxcox*, a pheasant. The other head bears that of a hand with a bouquet (*xochitl*, a flower, and *quetzal*, shining in green gold). In the foreground is a boat, out of which a naked man stretches out his hand imploringly to heaven. Now turn to the sculpture in the Flood tablet (on the great Calendar stone). There you will find represented the Flood, and with great emphasis, by the accumulation of all those symbols with which the ancient Mexicans conveyed the idea of water: a tub of standing water, drops springing out—not two, as heretofore in the symbol for *Atl*, water—but four drops; the picture for moisture, a snail; above, a crocodile, the king of the rivers. In the midst of these symbols you notice the profile of a man with a fillet, and a smaller one of a woman. There can be no doubt these are the Mexican Noah, *Coxcox*, and his wife, *Xochiquetzal*; and at the same time it is evident (the Calendar stone, we know, was made in A.D., 1478) that the story of them, and the pictures representing the story, have not been invented by the Catholic clergy, but really existed among these nations long before the Conquest."

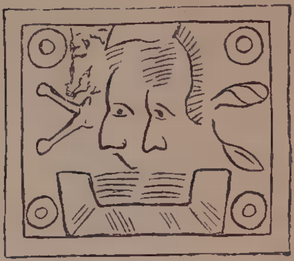
CALENDAR STONE.

The above figure represents the Flood tablet on the great Calendar stone.

When we turn to the uncivilized Indians of America, while we still find legends referring to the Deluge, they are, with one exception, in such garbled and uncouth forms that we can only see glimpses of the truth shining through a mass of fable.

The following tradition was current among the Indians of the Great Lakes:

> "In former times the father of the Indian tribes dwelt *toward the rising sun.* Having been warned in a dream that a deluge was coming upon the earth, he built a raft, on which he saved himself, with his family and all the animals. He floated thus for several months. The animals, who at that time spoke, loudly complained and murmured against him. At last a new earth appeared, on which he landed with all the animals, who from that time lost the power of speech, as a punishment for their murmurs against their deliverer."

According to Father Charlevoix, the tribes of Canada and the valley of the Mississippi relate in their rude legends that all mankind was destroyed by a flood, and that the Good Spirit, to repeople the earth, had changed animals into men. It is to J. S. Kohl we owe our acquaintance with the version of the Chippeways—full of grotesque and perplexing touches—in which the man saved from the Deluge is called Menaboshu. To know if the earth be drying, he sends a bird, the diver, out of his bark; then becomes the restorer of the human race and the founder of existing society.

A clergyman who visited the Indians north-west of the Ohio in 1764 met, at a treaty, a party of Indians from the west of the Mississippi.

> "They informed him that one of their most ancient traditions was that, a great while ago, they had a common father, who lived toward the rising of the sun, and governed the whole world; that all the white people's heads were under his feet; that he had twelve sons, by whom he administered the government; that the twelve sons behaved very bad, and tyrannized over the people, abusing their power; that the Great Spirit, being thus angry with them, suffered the white people to introduce spirituous liquors among them, made them drunk, stole the special gift of the Great Spirit from them, and by this means usurped power over them; and ever since the Indians' heads were under the white people's feet." (Boudinot's "Star in the West," p. 111.)

Here we note that they looked "toward the rising sun"—toward Atlantis—for the original home of their race; that this region governed "the whole world;" that it contained white people, who were at first a subject race, but who subsequently rebelled, and acquired dominion over the darker races. We will see reason hereafter to conclude that Atlantis had a composite population, and that the rebellion of the Titans in Greek mythology was the rising up of a subject population.

In 1836 C. S. Rafinesque published in Philadelphia, Pa., a work called "The American Nations," in which he gives the historical songs or chants of the Lenni-Lenapi, or Delaware Indians, the tribe that originally dwelt along the Delaware River. After describing a time "when there was nothing but sea-water on top of the land," and the creation of sun, moon, stars, earth, and man, the legend depicts the Golden Age and the Fall in these words: "All were willingly pleased, all were easy-thinking, and all were well-happified. But after a while a snake-priest, *Powako*, brings on earth secretly the snake-worship (*Initako*) of the god of the snakes, *Wakon*. And there came wickedness, crime, and unhappiness. And bad weather was coming, distemper was coming, with death was coming. All this happened *very long ago, at the first land, Netamaki*, beyond the great *ocean Kitahikau*." Then follows the Song of the Flood:

> "There was, long ago, a powerful snake, *Maskanako*, when the men had become bad beings, *Makowini*. This strong snake had become the foe of the Jins, and they became troubled, hating each other. Both were fighting, both were spoiling, both were never peaceful. And they were fighting, least man *Mattapewi* with dead-keeper *Nihaulowit*. And the strong snake readily resolved to destroy or fight the beings or the men. The dark snake he brought, the monster (*Amanyam*) he brought, snake-rushing water he brought (it). *Much water is rushing, much go to hills, much penetrate, much destroying.* Meanwhile at *Tula* (this is the same Tula referred to in the Central American legends), at THAT ISLAND, Nana-Bush (the great hare Nana) becomes the ancestor of beings and men. Being born creeping, he is ready to move and dwell at *Tula*. The beings and men all go forth from the flood creeping in shallow water or

swimming afloat, asking which is the way to the turtle-back, *Tula-pin.* But there are many monsters in the way, and some men were devoured by them. But the daughter of a spirit helped them in a boat, saying, 'Come, come;' they were coming and were helped. The name of the boat or raft is *Mokol.* . . . Water running off, it is drying; in the plains and the mountains, at the path of the cave, elsewhere went the powerful action or motion." Then follows Song 3, describing the condition of mankind after the Flood. Like the Aryans, they moved into a cold country: "It freezes was there; it snows was there; it is cold was there." They move to a milder region to hunt cattle; they divided their forces into tillers and hunters. "The good and the holy were the hunters;" they spread themselves north, south, east, and west. "Meantime all the snakes were afraid in their huts, and the Snake-priest *Nakopowa* said to all, 'Let us go.' *Eastwardly* they go forth at Snakeland (*Akhokink*), and they went away earnestly grieving." Afterward the fathers of the Delawares, who "were always boating and navigating," find that the Snake-people have taken possession of a fine country; and they collect together the people from north, south, east, and west, and attempt "to pass over the waters of the frozen sea to possess that land." They seem to travel in the dark of an Arctic winter until they come to a gap of open sea. They can go no farther; but some tarry at Firland, while the rest return to where they started from, "the old turtle land."

Here we find that the land that was destroyed was the "first land;" that it was an island "beyond the great ocean." In an early age the people were happy and peaceful; they became wicked; "snake worship" was introduced, and was associated, as in Genesis, with the "fall of man;" Nana-Bush became the ancestor of the new race; his name reminds us of the Toltec *Nata* and the Hebrew *Noah.* After the flood came a dispersion of the people, and a separation into hunters and tillers of the soil.

Among the Mandan Indians we not only find flood legends, but, more remarkable still, we find an *image of the ark preserved* from generation to generation, and a religious ceremony performed which refers plainly to the destruction of Atlantis, and to the arrival of one of those who escaped from the Flood, bringing the dreadful tidings of the disaster. It must be remembered, as we will show hereafter, that many of these Mandan Indians were white men, with hazel, gray, and blue eyes, and all shades of color of the hair from black to pure white; that they dwelt in houses in fortified towns, and manufactured earthen-ware pots in which they could boil water—an art unknown to the ordinary Indians, who boiled water by putting heated stones into it.

I quote the very interesting account of George Catlin, who visited the Mandans nearly fifty years ago, lately republished in London in the "North American Indians," a very curious and valuable work. He says (vol. i., p. 88):

> "In the centre of the village is an open space, or public square, 150 feet in diameter and circular in form, which is used for all public games and festivals, shows and exhibitions. The lodges around this open space front in, with their doors toward the centre; and in the middle of this stands an object of great religious veneration, on account of the importance it has in connection with the annual religious ceremonies. This object is in the form of a large hogshead, some eight or ten feet high, made of planks and hoops, containing within it some of their choicest mysteries or medicines. They call it the 'Big Canoe.'"

This is a representation of the ark; the ancient Jews venerated a similar image, and some of the ancient Greek States followed in processions a model of the ark of Deucalion. But it is indeed surprising to find this practice perpetuated, even to our own times, by a race of Indians in the heart of America. On page 158 of the first volume of the same work Catlin describes the great annual mysteries and religious ceremonials of which this image of the ark was the centre. He says:

> "On the day set apart for the commencement of the ceremonies a solitary figure is seen approaching the village.
>
> "During the deafening din and confusion within the pickets

of the village the figure discovered on the prairie continued to approach with a dignified step, and in a right line toward the village; all eyes were upon him, and he at length made his appearance within the pickets, and proceeded toward the centre of the village, where all the chiefs and braves stood ready to receive him, which they did in a cordial manner by shaking hands, recognizing him as an old acquaintance, and pronouncing his name, Nu-mohk-muck-a-nah (*the first or only man*). The body of this strange personage, which was chiefly naked, was painted with white clay, so as to resemble at a distance *a white man.* He enters the medicine lodge, and goes through certain mysterious ceremonies.

"During the whole of this day Nu-mohk-muck-a-nah (the first or only man) travelled through the village, stopping in front of each man's lodge, and crying until the owner of the lodge came out and asked who he was, and what was the matter? To which he replied by narrating *the sad catastrophe which had happened on the earth's surface by the overflowing of the waters*, saying that 'he was the *only person saved from the universal calamity;* that he landed his big canoe on a high mountain in the west, where he now resides; that he has come to open the medicine lodge, which must needs receive a present of an edged tool from the owner of every wigwam, that it may be sacrificed to the water; for,' he says, 'if this is not done there will be another flood, and no one will be saved, as it was with such tools that the big canoe was made.'

"Having visited every lodge in the village during the day, and having received such a present from each as a hatchet, a knife, etc. (which is undoubtedly always prepared ready for the occasion), he places them in the medicine lodge; and, on the last day of the ceremony, they are thrown into a deep place in the river—'sacrificed to the Spirit of the Waters.'"

Among the sacred articles kept in the great medicine lodge are four sacks of water, called *Eeh-teeh-ka*, sewed together, each of them in the form of a *tortoise* lying on its back, with a bunch of eagle feathers attached to its tail. "These four tortoises," they told me, "contained the waters from the four quarters of the world—that those waters had been contained therein *ever since the settling down of the waters.*" "I did not," says Catlin, who knew nothing of an Atlantis theory, "think it best to advance anything against such a ridiculous belief." Catlin tried to purchase one of these water-sacks, but could not obtain it for any price; he was told they were "*a society property.*"

He then describes a dance by *twelve* men around the ark: "They arrange themselves according to *the four cardinal points;* two are painted perfectly *black*, two are vermilion color, some were painted partially white. They dance a dance called '*Bel*-lohck-na-pie,'" with horns on their heads, like those used in Europe as symbolical of *Bel*, or Baal.

Could anything be more evident than the connection of these ceremonies with the destruction of Atlantis? Here we have the image of the ark; here we have a white man coming with the news that "the waters had overflowed the land," and that all the people were destroyed except himself; here we have the sacrifice to appease the spirit that caused the Flood, just as we find the Flood terminating, in the Hebrew, Chaldean, and Central American legends, with a sacrifice. Here, too, we have the image of the tortoise, which we find in other flood legends of the Indians, and which is a very natural symbol for an island. As one of our own poets has expressed it,

> "Very fair and full of promise
> Lay the island of St. Thomas;
> Like a great green turtle slumbered
> On the sea which it encumbered."

Here we have, too, the four quarters of Atlantis, divided by its four rivers, as we shall see a little farther on, represented in a dance, where the dancers arrange themselves according to the four cardinal points of the compass; the dancers are painted to represent the black and red races, while "the first and only man" represents the white race; and the name of the dance is a reminiscence of Baal, the ancient god of the races derived from Atlantis.

But this is not all. The Mandans were evidently of the race of Atlantis. They have another singular legend, which we find in the account of Lewis and Clarke:

> "Their belief in a future state is connected with this theory of their origin: The whole nation resided in one large village, underground, near a subterranean lake. A grape-vine extended its roots down to their habitation, and gave them a view of the light. Some of the most adventurous climbed up the vine, and were delighted with the sight of the earth, which they found covered with buffalo, and rich with every kind of fruit. Returning with the grapes they had gathered, their countrymen were so pleased with the taste of them that the whole nation resolved to leave their dull residence for the charms of the upper region. Men, women, and children ascended by means of the vine, but, when about half the nation had reached the surface of the earth, a corpulent woman, who was clambering up the vine, broke it with her weight, and closed upon herself and the rest of the nation the light of the sun."

This curious tradition means that the present nation dwelt in a large settlement underground, that is, beyond the land, in the sea; the sea being represented by "the subterranean lake." At one time the people had free intercourse between this "large village" and the American continent, and they founded extensive colonies on this continent; whereupon some mishap cut them off from the mother country. This explanation is confirmed by the fact that in the legends of the Iowa Indians, who were a branch of the Dakotas, or Sioux Indians, and relatives of the Mandans (according to Major James W. Lynd), "all the tribes of Indians were formerly one, and all dwelt together *on an island*, or at least across a large water *toward the east or sunrise*. They crossed this water in skin canoes, or by swimming; but they know not how long they were in crossing, or whether the water was salt or fresh." While the Dakotas, according to Major Lynd, who lived among them for nine years, possessed legends of "huge skiffs, in which the Dakotas of old floated for weeks, finally gaining dry land"—a reminiscence of ships and long sea-voyages.

The Mandans celebrated their great religious festival above described in the season when the willow is first in leaf, and a dove is mixed up in the ceremonies; and they further relate a legend that "the world was once a great tortoise, borne on the waters, and covered with earth, and that when one day, in digging the soil, a tribe of white men, who had made holes in the earth to a great depth digging for badgers, at length pierced the shell of the tortoise, it sank, and the water covering it drowned all men with the exception of one, who saved himself in a boat; and when the earth re-emerged, sent out a dove, who returned with a branch of willow in its beak."

The holes dug to find badgers were a savage's recollection of mining operations; and when the great disaster came, and the island sunk in the sea amid volcanic convulsions, doubtless men said it was due to the deep mines, which had opened the way to the central fires. But the recurrence of "white men" as the miners, and of a white man as "the last and only man," and the presence of white blood in the veins of the people, all point to the same conclusion—that the Mandans were colonists from Atlantis.

And here I might add that Catlin found the following singular resemblances between the Mandan tongue and the Welsh:

English.	Mandan.	Welsh.	Pronounced.
I.	Me.	Mi.	Me.
You.	Ne.	Chwi.	Chwe.
He.	E.	A.	A.
She.	Ea.	E.	A.
It.	Ount.	Hwynt.	Hooynt.
We.	Noo.	Ni.	Ne.
They.	Eonah.	Hona, *fem.*	Hona.
No; or there is not.	Megosh.	Nagoes.	Nagosh.
No.		Na.	
Head.	Pan.	Pen.	Pan.
The Great Spirit.	Maho Peneta.	Mawr Penæthir.	Mosoor Panæther.

Major Lynd found the following resemblances between the Dakota tongue and the languages of the Old World:

COMPARISON OF DAKOTA, OR SIOUX, WITH OTHER LANGUAGES.

Latin.	English.	Saxon.	Sanscrit.	German.	Danish.	Sioux.	Other Languages.	Primary Signification.
	See, seen	Seon		Sehen	Sigt	Sin		Appearing, visible.
Pinso	Pound	Punian				Pau	*W.*, Pwynian	Beating.
Vado	Went Wend	Wendan				Winta		Passage.
	Town	Tun		Zaun	Tun	Tonwe	*Gaelic*, Dun	
Qui	Who	Hwa	Kwas	Wir		Tuwe		
	Weapon	Wepn		Wapen	Vaapen	Wipe		Sioux dimin. Wipena.
Ego	I	Ic	Agam	Ich	Jeg	Mish		
Cor	Core					Co	*Gr.*, Κεαρ	Centre, heart.
	Eight	Achta	Aute	Acht	Otte	Shaktogan	*Gr.*, Οκτω	
Canna	Cane					Can	*Arm.*, Canen *Heb.*, Can *W.*, Cawn	Reed, weed, wood.
Pock	Pock	Poc		Pocke	Pukkel	Poka	*Dutch*, Poca	Swelling.
	With	With		Wider		Wita	*Goth.*, Gewithan.	
	Doughty	Dohtig		Tangen	Digtig	Dita Ditaya		Hot, brave, daring.
	Tight	Tian		Dicht	Digt	Titan		Strain.
Tango Tactus	Touch Take	Taecan		Ticken	Tekkan	Tan Htaka		Touch, take.
	Child	Cild		Kind	Kuld	Cin		Progeny.
	Work	Wercan		Wirken		Woccan Hecon	*Dutch*, Werkan. *Span.*, Hecho	Labor, motion.
	Shackle	Seoacul				Shka	*Ar.*, Shakala *Dutch*, Schakel. *Teton*, Shakalan	To bind (a link).
	Query					Kuiva		
	Shabby			Schabig	Schabbig	Shabya		

According to Major Lynd, the Dakotas, or Sioux, belonged to the same race as the Mandans; hence the interest which attaches to these verbal similarities.

"Among the Iroquois there is a tradition that the sea and waters infringed upon the land, so that all human life was destroyed. The Chickasaws assert that the world was once destroyed by water, but that one family was saved, and two animals of every kind. The Sioux say there was a time when there was no dry land, and all men had disappeared from existence." (See Lynd's "MS. History of the Dakotas," Library of Historical Society of Minnesota.)

"The Okanagaus have a god, Skyappe, and also one called Chacha, who appear to be endowed with omniscience; but their principal divinity is their great mythical ruler and heroine, Scomalt. Long ago, when the sun was no bigger than a star, this strong medicine-woman ruled over what appears to have now become a *lost island.* At last the peace of the island was destroyed by war, and the noise of battle was heard, with which Scomalt was exceeding wroth, whereupon she rose up in her might and drove her rebellious subjects to one end of the island, and broke off the piece of land on which they were huddled and pushed it out to sea, to drift whither it would. This floating island was tossed to and fro and buffeted by the winds till all but two died. A man and woman escaped in a canoe, and arrived on the main-land; and from these the Okanagaus are descended." (Bancroft's "Native Races," vol. iii., p. 149.)

Here we have the Flood legend clearly connected with a lost island.

The Nicaraguans believed "that ages ago the world was destroyed by a flood, in which the most part of mankind perished. Afterward the *teotes*, or gods, restored the earth as at the beginning." (*Ibid.*, p. 75.) The wild Apaches, "wild from their natal hour," have a legend that "the first days of the world were happy and peaceful days;" then came a great flood, from which Montezuma and the coyote alone escaped. Montezuma became then very wicked, and attempted to build a house that would reach to heaven, but the Great

Spirit destroyed it with thunderbolts. (Bancroft's "Native Races," vol. iii., p. 76.)

The Pimas, an Indian tribe allied to the Papagos, have a peculiar flood legend. The son of the Creator was called *Szeu-kha* (Ze-us?). An eagle prophesied the deluge to the prophet of the people three times in succession, but his warning was despised; "then in the twinkling of an eye there came a peal of thunder and an awful crash, and a green mound of water reared itself over the plain. It seemed to stand upright for a second, then, cut incessantly by the lightning, goaded on like a great beast, it flung itself upon the prophet's hut. When the morning broke there was nothing to be seen alive but one man—if indeed he were a man; Szeu-kha, the son of the Creator, had saved himself by floating on a ball of gum or resin." This instantaneous catastrophe reminds one forcibly of the destruction of Atlantis. Szeu-kha killed the eagle, restored its victims to life, and repeopled the earth with them, as Deucalion repeopled the earth with the stones.

CHAPTER VI.

SOME CONSIDERATION OF THE DELUGE LEGENDS.

The Fountains of the Great Deep.—As Atlantis perished in a volcanic convulsion, it must have possessed volcanoes. This is rendered the more probable when we remember that the ridge of land of which it was a part, stretching from north to south, from Iceland to St. Helena, contains even now great volcanoes—as in Iceland, the Azores, the Canaries, etc.—and that the very sea-bed along the line of its original axis is, to this day, as we have shown, the scene of great volcanic disturbances.

If, then, the mountains of Atlantis contained volcanoes, of which the peaks of the Azores are the surviving representatives, it is not improbable that the convulsion which drowned it in the sea was accompanied by great discharges of water. We have seen that such discharges occurred in the island of Java, when four thousand people perished. "Immense columns of hot water and boiling mud were thrown out" of the volcano of Galung Gung; the water was projected from the mountain "like a water-spout." When a volcanic island was created near Sicily in 1831, it was accompanied by "a water-spout sixty feet high."

In the island of Dominica, one of the islands constituting the Leeward group of the West Indies, and nearest to the site of Atlantis, on the 4th of January, 1880, occurred a series of convulsions which reminds us forcibly of the destruction of Plato's island; and the similarity extends to another particular: Dominica contains, like Atlantis, we are told, numerous hot and sulphur springs. I abridge the account given by the *New York Herald* of January 28th, 1880:

"A little after 11 o'clock A.M., soon after high-mass in the Roman Catholic cathedral, and while divine service was still going on in the Anglican and Wesleyan chapels, all the indications of an approaching thunder-storm suddenly showed themselves; the atmosphere, which just previously had been cool and pleasant—slight showers falling since early morning—became at once nearly stifling hot; the rumbling of distant thunder was heard, and the light-blue and fleecy white of the sky turned into a heavy and lowering black. Soon the thunder-peals came near and loud, the lightning flashes, of a blue and red color, more frequent and vivid; and the rain, first with a few heavy drops, commenced to pour as if the floodgates of heaven were open. In a moment it darkened, as if night had come; a strong, nearly overpowering smell of sulphur announced itself; and people who happened to be out in the streets felt the rain-drops falling on their heads, backs, and shoulders like showers of hailstones. The cause of this was to be noted by looking at the spouts, from which the water was rushing like so many cataracts of molten lead, while the gutters below ran swollen streams of thick gray mud, looking like nothing ever seen in them before. In the mean time the Roseau River had worked itself into a state of mad fury, overflowing its banks, carrying down rocks and large trees, and threatening destruction to the bridges over it and the houses in its neighborhood. When the storm ceased—it lasted till twelve, mid-day—the roofs and walls of the buildings in town, the street pavement, the door-steps and back-yards were found covered with a deposit of volcanic débris, holding together like clay, dark-gray in color, and in some places lying more than an inch thick, with small, shining metallic particles on the surface, which could be easily identified as iron pyrites. Scraping up some of the stuff, it required only a slight examination to determine its main constituents—sandstone and magnesia, the pyrites being slightly mixed, and silver showing itself in even smaller quantity. This is, in fact, the composition of the volcanic mud thrown up by the *soufrières* at Watton Waven and in the Boiling Lake country, and it is found in solution as well in the lake water. The Devil's Billiard-table, within half a mile of the Boiling Lake, is composed wholly of this substance, which there assumes the character of stone in formation. Inquiries instituted on Monday morning revealed the fact that, except on the south-east, the mud shower had not extended beyond the limits of the town. On the north-west, in the direction of Fond Colo and Morne Daniel, nothing but pure rain-water had fallen, and neither Loubière nor Pointe Michel had seen any signs of volcanic disturbance. . . .

"But what happened at Pointe Mulâtre enables us to spot the *locale* of the eruption. Pointe Mulâtre lies at the foot of the range of mountains on the top of which the Boiling Lake frets and seethes. The only outlet of the lake is a cascade which falls into one of the branches of the Pointe Mulâtre River, the color and temperature of which, at one time and another, shows the existence or otherwise of volcanic activity in the lake-country. We may observe, *en passant*, that the fall of the water from the lake is similar in appearance to the falls on the sides of Roairama, in the interior of British Guiana; there is no continuous stream, but the water overleaps its basin like a kettle boiling over, and comes down in detached cascades from the top. May there not be a boiling lake on the unapproachable summit of Roairama? The phenomena noted at Pointe Mulâtre on Sunday were similar to what we witnessed in Roseau, but with every feature more strongly marked. The fall of mud was heavier, covering all the fields; the atmospheric disturbance was greater, and the change in the appearance of the running water about the place more surprising. The Pointe Mulâtre River suddenly began to run volcanic mud and water; then the mud predominated, and almost buried the stream under its weight, and the odor of sulphur in the air became positively oppressive. Soon the fish in the water—brochet, camoo, meye, crocro, mullet, down to the eel, the crawfish, the loche, the tétar, and the dormer—died, and were thrown on the banks. The mud carried down by the river has formed a bank at the mouth which nearly dams up the stream, and threatens to throw it back over the low-lying lands of the Pointe Mulâtre estate. The reports from the Laudat section of the Boiling Lake district are curious. The Bachelor and Admiral rivers, and the numerous mineral springs which arise in that part of the island, are all running a thick white flood, like cream milk. The face of the entire country, from the Admiral River to the Solfatera Plain, has undergone some portentous change, which the frightened peasants who bring the news to Roseau seem unable clearly and connectedly to describe, and the volcanic activity still continues."

From this account it appears that the rain of water and mud came from a boiling lake on the mountains; it must have risen to a great height, "like a water-spout," and then fallen in showers over the face of the country. We are reminded, in this Boiling Lake of Dominica, of the Welsh legend of the eruption of the Llyn-llion, "the Lake of Waves," which "inundated the whole country." On the top of a mountain in the county of Kerry, Ireland, called Mangerton, there is a deep lake known as Poulle-i-feron, which signifies Hell-hole; it frequently overflows, and rolls down the mountain in frightful torrents. On Slieve-donart, in the territory of Mourne, in the county of Down, Ireland, a lake occupies the mountain-top, and its overflowings help to form rivers.

If we suppose the destruction of Atlantis to have been, in like manner, accompanied by a tremendous outpour of water from one or more of its volcanoes, thrown to a great height, and deluging the land, we can understand the description in the Chaldean legend of "*the terrible water-spout*," which even "the gods grew afraid of," and which "rose to the sky," and which seems to have been one of the chief causes, together with the earthquake, of the destruction of the country. And in this view we are confirmed by the Aramæan legend of the Deluge, probably derived at an earlier age from the Chaldean tradition. In it we are told, "All on a sudden *enormous volumes of water issued from the earth*, and rains of extraordinary abundance began to fall; the rivers left their beds, and the ocean overflowed its banks." The disturbance in Dominica duplicates this description exactly: "In a moment" the water and mud burst from the mountains, "the floodgates of heaven were opened," and "the river overflowed its banks."

And here, again, we are reminded of the expression in Genesis, "the same day were all the fountains of the great deep broken up" (chap. vii., 11). That this does not refer to the rain is clear from the manner in which it is stated: "The same day were all the fountains of the great deep broken up, *and* the windows of heaven were opened. And the rain was upon the earth," etc. And when the work of destruction is finished, we are told "the fountains also of the deep *and* the windows of heaven were stopped." This is a reminiscence by an inland people, living where such tremendous volcanic disturbances were nearly unknown, of "the terrible water-spout" which "rose to the sky," of the Chaldean legend, and of "the enormous volumes of water issuing from the earth" of the Aramæan tradition. The Hindoo legend of the Flood speaks of "the marine god Hayagriva, who dwelt in the abyss," who produced the cataclysm. This is doubtless "the archangel of the abyss" spoken of in the Chaldean tradition.

The Mountains of the North.—We have in Plato the following reference to the mountains of Atlantis:

> "The whole country was described as being very lofty and precipitous on the side of the sea. . . . The whole region of the island lies toward the south, and is sheltered from the north. . . . The surrounding mountains . . . exceeded all that are to be seen now anywhere."

These mountains were the present Azores. One has but to contemplate their present elevation, and remember the depth to which they descend in the ocean, to realize their tremendous altitude and the correctness of the description given by Plato.

In the Hindoo legend we find the fish-god, who represents Poseidon, father of Atlantis, helping Manu over "the Mountain of the North." In the Chaldean legend Khasisatra's vessel is stopped by "the Mountain of Nizir" until the sea goes down.

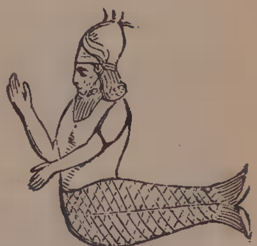

THE GOD OF THE FLOOD.
(From "The Walls of Nineveh.")

The Mud which Stopped Navigation.—We are told by Plato, "Atlantis disappeared beneath the sea, and then that sea became inaccessible, so that navigation on it ceased, on account of the quantity of mud which the ingulfed island left in its place." This is one of the points of Plato's story which provoked the incredulity and ridicule of the ancient, and even of the modern, world. We find in the Chaldean legend something of the same kind: Khasisatra says, "I looked at the sea attentively, observing, and the whole of humanity had returned to mud." In the "Popol Vuh" we are told that a "resinous thickness descended from heaven," even as in Dominica the rain was full of "thick gray mud," accompanied by an "overpowering smell of sulphur."

The explorations of the ship *Challenger* show that the whole of the submerged ridge of which Atlantis is a part *is to this day thickly covered with volcanic débris.*

We have but to remember the cities of Pompeii and Herculaneum, which were covered with such a mass of volcanic ashes from the eruption of A.D. 79 that for seventeen centuries they remained buried at a depth of from fifteen to thirty feet; a new population lived and labored above them; an aqueduct was constructed over their heads; and it was only when a farmer, in digging for a well, penetrated the roof of a house, that they were once more brought to the light of day and the knowledge of mankind.

We have seen that, in 1783, the volcanic eruption in Iceland covered the sea with pumice for a distance of one hundred and fifty miles, "and *ships were considerably impeded in their course.*"

The eruption in the island of Sumbawa, in April, 1815, threw out such masses of ashes as to darken the air. "The floating cinders to the west of Sumatra formed, on the 12th of April, a mass *two feet thick* and several miles in extent, *through which ships with difficulty forced their way.*"

It thus appears that the very statement of Plato which ha provoked the ridicule of scholars is in itself one of the corroborating features of his story. It is probable that the ships of the Atlanteans, when they returned after the tempest to look for their country, found the sea impassable from the masses of volcanic ashes and pumice. They returned terrified to the shores of Europe; and the shock inflicted by the destruction of Atlantis upon the civilization of the world probably led to one of those retrograde periods in the history of our race in which they lost all intercourse with the Western continent.

The Preservation of a Record.—There is a singular coincidence in the stories of the Deluge in another particular.

The legends of the Phœnicians, preserved by Sanchoniathon, tell us that Taautos, or Taut, was the inventor of the alphabet and of the art of writing.

Now, we find in the Egyptian legends a passage of Manetho, in which Thoth (or Hermes Trismegistus), before the Deluge, inscribed on stelæ, or tablets, in hieroglyphics, or sacred characters, the principles of all knowledge. After the Deluge the second Thoth translated the contents of these stelæ into the vulgar tongue.

Josephus tells us that "The patriarch Seth, in order that wisdom and astronomical knowledge should not perish, erected, in prevision of the double destruction by fire and water predicted by Adam, two columns, one of brick, the other of stone, on which this knowledge was engraved, and which existed in the Siriadic country."

In the Chaldean legends the god Ea ordered Khasisatra to inscribe the divine learning, and the principles of all sciences, on tables of terra-cotta, and bury them, before the Deluge, "in the City of the Sun at Sippara."

Berosus, in his version of the Chaldean flood, says:

"The deity, Chronos, appeared to him (Xisuthros) in a vision, and warned him that, upon the 15th day of the month Dœsius, there would be a flood by which mankind would be destroyed. He therefore enjoined him to write a history of the beginning, procedure, and conclusion of all things, and to bury it in the City of the Sun at Sippara, and to build a vessel," etc.

The Hindoo Bhâgavata-Purâna tells us that the fish-god, who warned Satyravata of the coming of the Flood, directed him to place the sacred Scriptures in a safe place, "in order to preserve them from Hayagriva, a marine horse dwelling in the abyss."

Are we to find the original of these legends in the following passage from Plato's history of Atlantis?

> "Now, the relations of their governments to one another were regulated by the injunctions of Poseidon, as the law had handed them down. These were inscribed by the first men on a column of orichalcum, which was situated in the middle of the island, at the Temple of Poseidon, whither the people were gathered together. . . . They received and gave judgments, and at daybreak they wrote down their sentences on a golden tablet, and deposited them as memorials with their robes. There were many special laws which the several kings had inscribed about the temples." (Critias, p. 120.)

A Succession of Disasters.—The Central American books, translated by De Bourbourg, state that originally a part of the American continent extended far into the Atlantic Ocean. This tradition is strikingly confirmed by the explorations of the ship *Challenger*, which show that the "Dolphin's Ridge" was connected with the shore of South America north of the mouth of the Amazon. The Central American books tell us that this region of the continent was destroyed by a succession of frightful convulsions, probably at long intervals apart; three of these catastrophes are constantly mentioned, and sometimes there is reference to one or two more.

> "The land," in these convulsions, "was shaken by frightful earthquakes, and the waves of the sea combined with volcanic fires to overwhelm and ingulf it. . . . Each convulsion swept away portions of the land until the whole disappeared, leaving the line of coast as it now is. Most of the inhabitants, over-

taken amid their regular employments, were destroyed; but some escaped in ships, and some fled for safety to the summits of high mountains, or to portions of the land which for a time escaped immediate destruction." (Baldwin's "Ancient America," p. 176.)

This accords precisely with the teachings of geology. We know that the land from which America and Europe were formed once covered nearly or quite the whole space now occupied by the Atlantic between the continents; and it is reasonable to believe that it went down piecemeal, and that Atlantis was but the stump of the ancient continent, which at last perished from the same causes and in the same way.

The fact that this tradition existed among the inhabitants of America is proven by the existence of festivals, "especially one in the month *Izcalli*, which were instituted to commemorate this frightful destruction of land and people, and in which, say the sacred books, 'princes and people humbled themselves before the divinity, and besought him to withhold a return of such terrible calamities.'"

Can we doubt the reality of events which we thus find confirmed by religious ceremonies at Athens, in Syria, and on the shores of Central America?

And we find this succession of great destructions of the Atlantic continent in the triads of Wales, where traditions are preserved of "three terrible catastrophes." We are told by the explorations of the ship *Challenger* that the higher lands reach in the direction of the British Islands; and the Celts had traditions that a part of their country once extended far out into the Atlantic, and was subsequently destroyed.

And the same succession of destructions is referred to in the Greek legends, where a deluge of Ogyges—"the most ancient of the kings of Bœotia or Attica, a quite mythical person, lost in the night of ages"—preceded that of Deucalion.

We will find hereafter the most ancient hymns of the Aryans praying God to *hold the land firm*. The people of Atlantis, having seen their country thus destroyed, section by section, and judging that their own time must inevitably come, must have lived under a great and perpetual terror, which will go far to explain the origin of primeval religion, and the hold which it took upon the minds of men; and this condition of things may furnish us a solution of the legends which have come down to us of their efforts to perpetuate their learning on pillars, and also an explanation of that other legend of the Tower of Babel, which, as I will show hereafter, was common to both continents, and in which they sought to build a tower high enough to escape the Deluge.

All the legends of the preservation of a record prove that the united voice of antiquity taught that the antediluvians had advanced so far in civilization as to possess an alphabet and a system of writing; a conclusion which, as we will see hereafter, finds confirmation in the original identity of the alphabetical signs used in the old world and the new.

PART III.

THE CIVILIZATION OF THE OLD WORLD AND NEW COMPARED.

Chapter I.

CIVILIZATION AN INHERITANCE.

Material civilization might be defined to be the result of a series of inventions and discoveries, whereby man improves his condition, and controls the forces of nature for his own advantage.

The savage man is a pitiable creature; as Menaboshu says, in the Chippeway legends, he is pursued by a "perpetual hunger;" he is exposed unprotected to the blasts of winter and the heats of summer. A great terror sits upon his soul; for every manifestation of nature—the storm, the wind, the thunder, the lightning, the cold, the heat—all are threatening and dangerous demons. The seasons bring him neither seed-time nor harvest; pinched with hunger, appeasing in part the everlasting craving of his stomach with seeds, berries, and creeping things, he sees the animals of the forest dash by him, and he has no means to arrest their flight. He is powerless and miserable in the midst of plenty. Every step toward civilization is a step of conquest over nature. The invention of the bow and arrow was, in its time, a far greater stride forward for the human race than the steam-engine or the telegraph. The savage could now reach his game; his insatiable hunger could be satisfied; the very eagle, "towering in its pride of place," was not beyond the reach of this new and wonderful weapon. The discovery of fire and the art of cooking was another immense step forward. The savage, having nothing but wooden vessels in which to cook, covered the wood with clay; the clay hardened in the fire. The savage gradually learned that he could dispense with the wood, and thus pottery was invented. Then some one (if we are to believe the Chippeway legends, on the shores of Lake Superior) found fragments of the pure copper of that region, beat them into shape, and the art of metallurgy was begun; iron was first worked in the same way by shaping meteoric iron into spear-heads.

But it must not be supposed that these inventions followed one another in rapid succession. Thousands, and perhaps tens of thousands, of years intervened between each step; many savage races have not to this day achieved some of these steps. Prof. Richard Owen says, "Unprepossessed and sober experience teaches that arts, language, literature are of slow growth, the results of gradual development."

I shall undertake to show hereafter that nearly all the arts essential to civilization which we possess date back to the time of Atlantis—certainly to that ancient Egyptian civilization which was coeval with, and an outgrowth from, Atlantis.

In six thousand years the world made no advance on the civilization which it received from Atlantis.

Phœnicia, Egypt, Chaldea, India, Greece, and Rome passed the torch of civilization from one to the other; but in all that lapse of time they added nothing to the arts which existed at the earliest period of Egyptian history. In architecture, sculpture, painting, engraving, mining, metallurgy, navigation, pottery, glass-ware, the construction of canals, roads, and aqueducts, the arts of Phœnicia and Egypt extended, without material change or improvement, to a period but two or three hundred years ago. The present age has entered upon a new era; it has added a series of wonderful inventions to the Atlantean list; it has subjugated steam and electricity to the uses of man. And its work has but commenced: it will continue until it lifts man to a plane as much higher than the present as the present is above the barbaric condition; and in the future it will be said that between the birth of civilization in Atlantis and the new civilization there stretches a period of many thousands of years, during which mankind did not invent, but simply perpetuated.

Herodotus tells us ("Euterpe," cxlii.) that, according to the information he received from the Egyptian priests, their written history dated back 11,340 years before his era, or nearly 14,000 years prior to this time. They introduced him into a spacious temple, and showed him the statues of 341 high-priests who had in turn succeeded each other; and yet the age of Columbus possessed no arts, except that of printing (which was ancient in China), which was not known to the Egyptians; and the civilization of Egypt at its first appearance was of a higher order than at any subsequent period of its history, thus testifying that it drew its greatness from a fountain higher than itself. It was in its early days that Egypt worshipped one only God; in the later ages this simple and sublime belief was buried under the corruptions of polytheism. The greatest pyramids were built by the Fourth Dynasty, and so universal was education at that time among the people that the stones with which they were built retain to this day the writing of the workmen. The first king was Menes.

"At the epoch of Menes," says Winchell, "the Egyptians were already a civilized and numerous people. Manetho tells us that Athotis, the son of this first king, Menes, built the palace at Memphis; that he was a physician, and left anatomical books. All these statements imply that even at this early period the Egyptians were in a high state of civilization." (Winchell's "Preadamites," p. 120.) "In the time of Menes the Egyptians had long been architects, sculptors, painters, mythologists, and theologians." Professor Richard Owen says: "Egypt is recorded to have been a civilized and governed community *before* the time of Menes. The pastoral community of a group of nomad families, as portrayed in the Pentateuch, may be admitted as an early step in civilization. But how far in advance of this stage is a nation administered by a kingly government, consisting of grades of society, with divisions of labor, of which one kind, assigned to the priesthood, was to record or chronicle the names and dynasties of the kings, the duration and chief events of their reigns!" Ernest Renan points out that "Egypt at the beginning appears mature, old, and entirely without mythical and heroic ages, as if the country had never known youth. Its civilization has no infancy, and its art no archaic period. The civilization of the Old Monarchy did not begin with infancy. It was already mature."

We shall attempt to show that it matured in Atlantis, and that the Egyptian people were unable to maintain it at the high standard at which they had received it, as depicted in the pages of Plato. What king of Assyria, or Greece, or Rome, or even of these modern nations, has ever devoted himself to the study of medicine and the writing of medical books for the benefit of mankind? Their mission has been to kill, not to heal the people; yet here, at the very dawn of Mediterranean history, we find the son of the first king of Egypt recorded "as a physician, and as having left anatomical books."

I hold it to be incontestable that, in some region of the earth, primitive mankind must have existed during vast spaces of time, and under most favorable circumstances, to create, invent, and discover those arts and things which constitute civilization. When we have it before our eyes that for six thousand years mankind in Europe, Asia, and Africa, even when led by great nations, and illuminated by marvellous minds, did not advance one inch beyond the arts of Egypt, we may conceive what lapses, what æons, of time it must have required to bring savage man to that condition of refinement and civilization possessed by Egypt when it first comes within the purview of history.

That illustrious Frenchman, H. A. Taine ("History of English Literature," p. 23), sees the unity of the Indo-European races manifest in their languages, literature, and philosophies, and argues that these pre-eminent traits are "the great marks of an original model," and that when we meet with them "fifteen, twenty, thirty centuries before our era, in an Aryan, an Egyptian, a Chinese, they represent the work of a great many ages, perhaps of several myriads of centuries. . . . Such is the first and richest source of these master faculties from which historical events take their rise; and one sees that if it be powerful it is because this is no simple spring, but a kind of lake, a deep reservoir, wherein other springs have, for a multitude of centuries, discharged their several streams." In other words, the capacity of the Egyptian, Aryan, Chaldean, Chinese, Saxon, and Celt to maintain civilization is simply the result of civilized training during "myriads of centuries" in some original home of the race.

I cannot believe that the great inventions were duplicated spontaneously, as some would have us believe, in different countries; there is no truth in the theory that men pressed by necessity will always hit upon the same invention to relieve their wants. If this were so, all savages would have invented the boomerang; all savages would possess pottery, bows and arrows, slings, tents, and canoes; in short, all races would have risen to civilization, for certainly the comforts of life are as agreeable to one people as another.

Civilization is not communicable to all; many savage tribes are incapable of it. There are two great divisions of mankind, the civilized and the savage; and, as we shall show, every civilized race in the world has had something of civilization from the earliest ages; and as "all roads lead to Rome," so all the converging lines of civilization lead to Atlantis. The abyss between the civilized man and the savage is simply incalculable; it represents not alone a difference in arts and methods of life, but in the mental constitution, the instincts, and the predispositions of the soul. The child of the civilized races in his sports manufactures water-wheels, wagons, and houses of cobs; the savage boy amuses himself with bows and arrows: the one belongs to a building and creating race; the other to a wild, hunting stock. This abyss between savagery and civilization has never been passed by any nation through its own original force, and without external influences, during the Historic Period; those who were savages at the dawn of history are savages still; barbarian slaves may have been taught something of the arts of their masters, and conquered races have shared some of the advantages possessed by their conquerors; but we will seek in vain for any example of a savage people developing civilization of and among themselves. I may be reminded of the Gauls, Goths, and Britons; but these were not savages, they possessed written languages, poetry, oratory, and history; they were controlled by religious ideas; they believed in God and the immortality of the soul, and in a state of rewards and punishments after death. Wherever the Romans came in contact with Gauls, or Britons, or German tribes, they found them armed with weapons of iron. The Scots, according to Tacitus, used chariots and iron swords in the battle of the Grampians—"enormes gladii sine mucrone." The Celts of Gaul are stated by Diodorus Siculus to have used iron-headed spears and coats-of-mail, and the Gauls who encountered the Roman arms in B.C. 222 were armed with soft iron swords, as well as at the time when Cæsar conquered their country. Among the Gauls men would lend money to be repaid in the next world, and, we need not add, that no Christian people has yet reached that sublime height of faith; they cultivated the ground, built houses and walled towns, wove cloth, and employed wheeled vehicles; they possessed nearly all the cereals and domestic animals we have, and they wrought in iron, bronze, and steel. The Gauls had even invented a machine on wheels to cut their grain, thus anticipating our reapers and mowers by two thousand years. The difference between the civilization of the Romans under Julius Cæsar and the Gauls under Vercingetorix was a difference in degree and not in kind. The Roman civilization was simply a development and perfection of the civilization possessed by all the European populations; it was drawn from the common fountain of Atlantis.

If we find on both sides of the Atlantic precisely the same arts, sciences, religious beliefs, habits, customs, and traditions, it is absurd to say that the peoples of the two continents arrived separately, by precisely the same steps, at precisely the same ends. When we consider the resemblance of the civilizations of the Mediterranean nations to one another, no man is silly enough to pretend that Rome, Greece, Egypt, Assyria, Phœnicia, each spontaneously and separately invented the arts, sciences, habits, and opinions in which they agreed; but we proceed to trace out the thread of descent or connection from one to another. Why should a rule of interpretation prevail, as between the two sides of the Atlantic, different from that which holds good as to the two sides of the Mediterranean Sea? If, in the one case, similarity of origin has unquestionably produced similarity of arts, customs, and condition, why, in the other, should not similarity of arts, customs, and condition prove similarity of origin? Is there any instance in the world of two peoples, without knowledge of or intercourse with each other, happening upon the same invention, whether that invention be an arrow-head or a steam-engine? If it required of mankind a lapse of at least six thousand years before it began anew the work of invention, and took up the thread of original thought where Atlantis dropped it, what probability is there of three or four separate nations all advancing at the same speed to precisely the same arts and opinions? The proposition is untenable.

If, then, we prove that, on both sides of the Atlantic, civilizations were found substantially identical, we have demonstrated that they must have descended one from the other, or have radiated from some common source.

CHAPTER II.

THE IDENTITY OF THE CIVILIZATIONS OF THE OLD WORLD AND THE NEW.

Architecture.—Plato tells us that the Atlanteans possessed architecture; that they built walls, temples, and palaces.

We need not add that this art was found in Egypt and all the civilized countries of Europe, as well as in Peru, Mexico, and Central America. Among both the Peruvians and Egyptians the walls receded inward, and the doors were narrower at the top than at the threshold.

The obelisks of Egypt, covered with hieroglyphics, are paralleled by the round columns of Central America, and both are supposed to have originated in *Phallus-worship.* "The usual symbol of the Phallus was an erect stone, often in its rough state, sometimes sculptured." (Squier, "Serpent Symbol," p. 49; Bancroft's "Native Races," vol. iii., p. 504.) The worship of Priapus was found in Asia, Egypt, along the European shore of the Mediterranean, and in the forests of Central America.

The mounds of Europe and Asia were made in the same way and for the same purposes as those of America. Herodotus describes the burial of a Scythian king; he says, "After this they set to work to raise a vast mound above the grave, all of them vying with each other, and seeking to make it as tall as possible." "It must be confessed," says Foster ("Prehistoric Races," p. 193), "that these Scythic burial rites have a strong resemblance to those of the Mound Builders." Homer describes the erection of a great symmetrical mound over Achilles, also one over Hector. Alexander the Great raised a

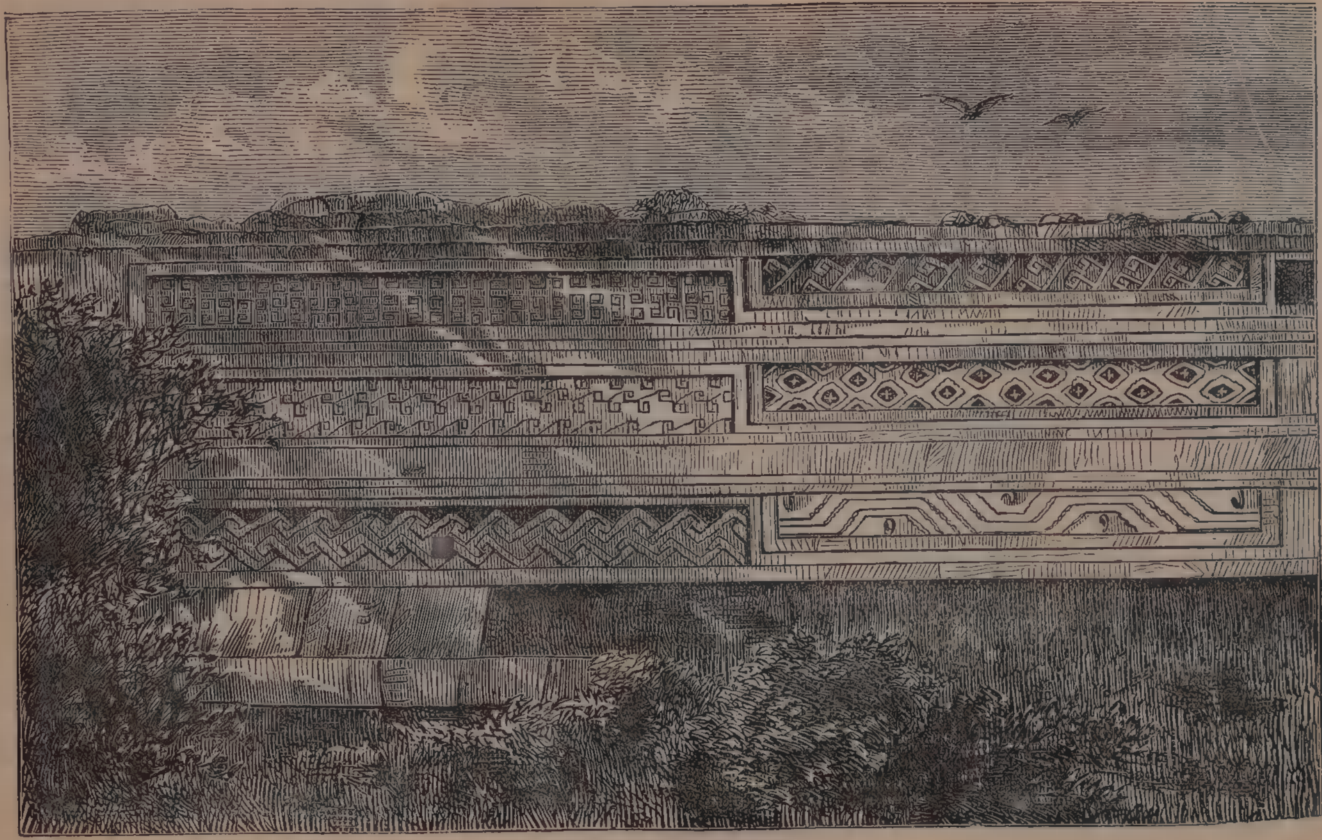

MOSAICS AT MITLA, MEXICO.

great mound over his friend Hephæstion, at a cost of more than a million dollars; and Semiramis raised a similar mound over her husband. The pyramids of Egypt, Assyria, and Phœnicia had their duplicates in Mexico and Central America.

The grave-cists made of stone of the American mounds are exactly like the stone chests, or *kistvaen* for the dead, found in the British mounds. (Foster's "Prehistoric Races," p. 109.) Tumuli have been found in Yorkshire enclosing wooden coffins, precisely as in the mounds of the Mississippi Valley. (*Ibid.*, p. 185.) The articles associated with the dead are the same in both continents: arms, trinkets, food, clothes, and funeral urns. In both the Mississippi Valley and among the

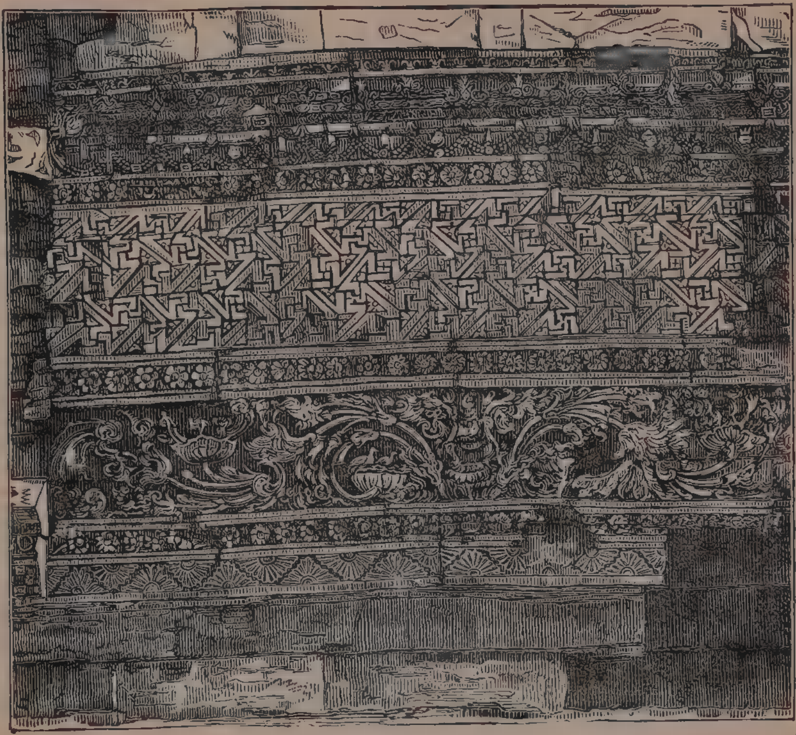

CARVING ON THE BUDDHIST TOWER, SÁRNÁTH, INDIA.

Chaldeans vases were constructed around the bones, the neck of the vase being too small to permit the extraction of the skull. (Foster's "Prehistoric Races," p. 200.)

The use of *cement* was known alike to the European and American nations.

The use of the *arch* was known on both sides of the Atlantic.

The manufacture of bricks was known in both the Old and New Worlds.

The style of ornamentation in architecture was much the same on both hemispheres, as shown in the preceding designs, pages 137, 139.

Metallurgy.—The Atlanteans mined ores, and worked in metals; they used copper, tin, bronze, gold, and silver, and probably iron.

The American nations possessed all these metals. The age of bronze, or of copper combined with tin, was preceded in America, *and nowhere else*, by a simpler age of copper; and, therefore, the working of metals probably originated in America, or in some region to which it was tributary. The Mexicans manufactured bronze, and the Incas mined iron near Lake Titicaca; and the civilization of this latter region, as we will show, probably dated back to Atlantean times. The Peruvians called gold the tears of the sun: it was sacred to the sun, as silver was to the moon.

Sculpture.—The Atlanteans possessed this art; so did the American and Mediterranean nations.

Dr. Arthur Schott ("Smith. Rep.," 1869, p. 391), in describing the "Cara Gigantesca," or gigantic face, a monument of Yzamal, in Yucatan, says, "Behind and on both sides, from under the mitre, a short veil falls upon the shoulders, so as to protect the back of the head and the neck. This particular appendage vividly calls to mind the same feature in the symbolic adornments of Egyptian and Hindoo priests, and even those of the Hebrew hierarchy." Dr. Schott sees in the orbicular wheel-like plates of this statue the wheel symbol of Kronos and Saturn; and, in turn, it may be supposed that the wheel of Kronos was simply the cross of Atlantis, surrounded by its encircling ring.

Painting.—This art was known on both sides of the Atlantic. The paintings upon the walls of some of the temples of Central America reveal a state of the art as high as that of Egypt.

Engraving.—Plato tells us that the Atlanteans engraved upon pillars. The American nations also had this art in common with Egypt, Phœnicia, and Assyria.

Agriculture.—The people of Atlantis were pre-eminently an agricultural people; so were the civilized nations of America and the Egyptians. In Egypt the king put his hand to the plough at an annual festival, thus dignifying and consecrating the occupation of husbandry. In Peru precisely the same custom prevailed. In both the plough was known; in Egypt it was drawn by oxen, and in Peru by men. It was drawn by men in the North of Europe down to a comparatively recent period.

Public Works.—The American nations built public works as great as or greater than any known in Europe. The Peruvians had public roads, one thousand five hundred to two thousand miles long, made so thoroughly as to elicit the astonishment of the Spaniards. At every few miles taverns or hotels were established for the accommodation of travellers. Humboldt pronounced these Peruvian roads "among the most useful and stupendous works ever executed by man." They built aqueducts for purposes of irrigation some of which were five hundred miles long. They constructed magnificent bridges of stone, and had even invented suspension bridges thousands of years before they were introduced into Europe. They had, both in Peru and Mexico, a system of posts, by means of which news was transmitted hundreds of miles in a day, precisely like those known among the Persians in the time of Herodotus, and subsequently among the Romans. Stones similar to mile-stones were placed along the roads in Peru. (See Prescott's "Peru.")

Navigation.—Sailing vessels were known to the Peruvians and the Central Americans. Columbus met, in 1502, at an island near Honduras, a party of the Mayas in a large vessel, equipped with sails, and loaded with a variety of textile fabrics of divers colors.

Manufactures.—The American nations manufactured woollen and cotton goods; they made pottery as beautiful as the wares of Egypt; they manufactured glass; they engraved gems and precious stones. The Peruvians had such immense numbers of vessels and ornaments of gold that the Inca paid with them a ransom for himself to Pizarro of the value of fifteen million dollars.

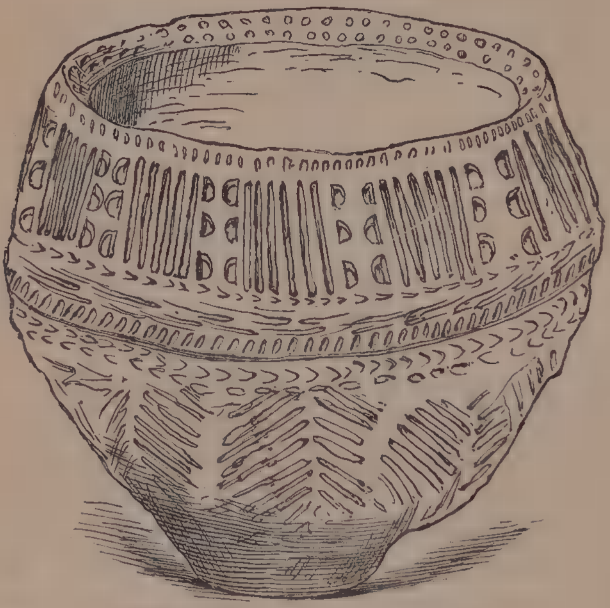

ANCIENT IRISH VASE OF THE BRONZE AGE.

Music.—It has been pointed out that there is great resemblance between the five-toned music of the Highland Scotch and that of the Chinese and other Eastern nations. ("Anthropology," p. 292.)

Weapons.—The weapons of the New World were identically the same as those of the Old World; they consisted of bows and arrows, spears, darts, short swords, battle-axes, and slings; and both peoples used shields or bucklers, and casques of wood or hide covered with metal. If these weapons had been derived from separate sources of invention, one country or the other would have possessed implements not known to the other, like the blow-pipe, the boomerang, etc. Absolute identity in so many weapons strongly argues identity of origin.

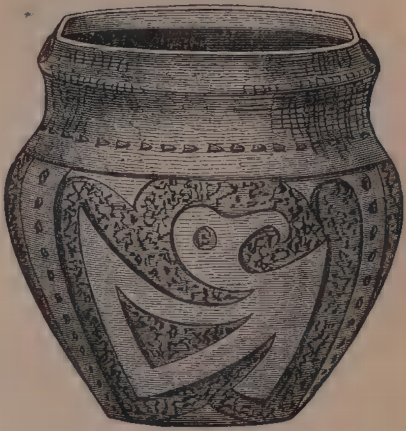
ANCIENT VASE FROM THE MOUNDS OF THE UNITED STATES.

Religion.—The religion of the Atlanteans, as Plato tells us, was pure and simple; they made no regular sacrifices but fruits and flowers; they worshipped the sun.

In Peru a single deity was worshipped, and the sun, his most glorious work, was honored as his representative. Quetzalcoatl, the founder of the Aztecs, condemned all sacrifice but that of fruits and flowers. The first religion of Egypt was pure and simple; its sacrifices were fruits and flowers; temples were erected to the sun, *Ra*, throughout Egypt. In Peru the great festival of the sun was called *Ra*-mi. The Phœnicians worshipped Baal and Moloch; the one represented the beneficent, and the other the injurious powers of the sun.

Religious Beliefs.—The Guanches of the Canary Islands, who were probably a fragment of the old Atlantean population, believed in the immortality of the soul and the resurrection of the body, and preserved their dead as mummies. The Egyptians believed in the immortality of the soul and the resurrection of the body, and preserved the bodies of the dead by embalming them. The Peruvians believed in the immortality of the soul and the resurrection of the body, and they too preserved the bodies of their dead by embalming them. "A few mummies in remarkable preservation have been found among the Chinooks and Flatheads." (Schoolcraft, vol. v., p. 693.) The embalmment of the body was also practised in Central America and among the Aztecs. The Aztecs, like the Egyptians, mummified their dead by taking out the bowels and replacing them with aromatic substances. (Dorman, "Origin Prim. Superst.," p. 173.) The bodies of the kings of the Virginia Indians were preserved by embalming. (Beverly, p. 47.)

Here are different races, separated by immense distances of land and ocean, uniting in the same beliefs, and in the same practical and logical application of those beliefs.

The use of confession and penance was known in the religious ceremonies of some of the American nations. Baptism was a religious ceremony with them, and the bodies of the dead were sprinkled with water.

Vestal virgins were found in organized communities on both sides of the Atlantic; they were in each case pledged to celibacy, and devoted to death if they violated their vows. In both hemispheres the recreant were destroyed by being buried alive. The Peruvians, Mexicans, Central Americans, Egyptians, Phœnicians, and Hebrews each had a powerful hereditary priesthood.

The Phœnicians believed in an evil spirit called Zebub; the Peruvians had a devil called Cupay. The Peruvians burnt incense in their temples. The Peruvians, when they sacrificed animals, examined their entrails, and from these prognosticated the future.

I need not add that all these nations preserved traditions of the Deluge; and all of them possessed systems of writing.

The Egyptian priest of Sais told Solon that the myth of Phaëthon, the son of Helios, having attempted to drive the chariot of the sun, and thereby burning up the earth, referred to "a declination of the bodies moving round the earth and in the heavens" (comets), which caused a "great conflagration upon the earth," from which those only escaped who lived near rivers and seas. The "Codex Chimalpopoca"—a Nahua, Central American record—tells us that the third era of the world, or "third sun," is called *Quia Tonatiuh*, or sun of rain, "because in this age there fell a rain of fire, all which existed burned, and there fell a rain of gravel;" the rocks "boiled with tumult, and there also arose the rocks of vermilion color." In other words, the traditions of these people go back to a great cataclysm of fire, when the earth possibly encountered, as in the Egyptian story, one of "the bodies moving round the earth and in the heavens;" they had also memories of "the Drift Period," and of the outburst of Plutonic rocks. If man has existed on the earth as long as science asserts, he must have passed through many of the great catastrophes which are written upon the face of the planet; and it is very natural that in myths and legends he should preserve some recollection of events so appalling and destructive.

Among the early Greeks Pan was the ancient god; his wife was Maia. The Abbé Brasseur de Bourbourg calls attention to the fact that Pan was adored in all parts of Mexico and Central America; and at *Panuco*, or *Panca*, literally *Panopolis*, the Spaniards found, upon their entrance into Mexico, superb temples and images of Pan. (Brasseur's Introduction in Landa's "Relacion.") The names of both Pan and Maya enter extensively into the Maya vocabulary, *Maia* being the same as Maya, the principal name of the peninsula; and *pan*, added to *Maya*, makes the name of the ancient capital Mayapan. In the Nahua language *pan*, or *pani*, signifies "equality to that which is above," and Pentecatl was the progenitor of all beings. ("North Americans of Antiquity," p. 467.)

The ancient Mexicans believed that the sun-god would destroy the world in the last night of the fifty-second year, and that he would never come back. They offered sacrifices to him at that time to propitiate him; they extinguished all the fires in the kingdom; they broke all their household furniture; they hung black masks before their faces; they prayed and fasted; and on the evening of the last night they formed a great procession to a neighboring mountain. A human being was sacrificed exactly at midnight; a block of wood was laid at once on the body, and fire was then produced by rapidly revolving another piece of wood upon it; a spark was carried to a funeral pile, whose rising flame proclaimed to the anxious people the promise of the god not to destroy the world for another fifty-two years. Precisely the same custom obtained among the nations of Asia Minor and other parts of the continent of Asia, wherever sun-worship prevailed, at the periodical reproduction of the sacred fire, but not with the same bloody rites as in Mexico. (Valentini, "Maya Archæology," p. 21.)

To this day the Brahman of India "churns" his sacred fire out of a board by boring into it with a stick; the Romans renewed their sacred fire in the same way; and in Sweden even now a "need-fire is kindled in this manner when cholera or other pestilence is about." (Tylor's "Anthropology," p. 262.)

A belief in ghosts is found on both continents. The American Indians think that the spirits of the dead retain the form and features which they wore while living; that there is a hell and a heaven; that hell is below the earth, and heaven above the clouds; that the souls of the wicked sometimes wander the face of the earth, appearing occasionally to mortals. The story of Tantalus is found among the Chippewayans, who believed that bad souls stand up to their chins in water in sight of the spirit-land, which they can never enter. The dead passed to heaven across a stream of water by means of a narrow and slippery bridge, from which many were lost. The Zuñis set apart a day in each year which they spent among the graves of their dead, communing with their spirits, and bringing them presents —a kind of All-souls-day. (Dorman, "Prim. Superst.," p. 35.) The Stygian flood, and Scylla and Charybdis, are found among the legends of the Caribs. (*Ibid.*, p. 37.) Even the boat of Charon reappears in the traditions of the Chippewayans.

The Oriental belief in the transmigration of souls is found in every American tribe. The souls of men passed into animals or other men. (Schoolcraft, vol. i., p. 33.) The souls of the wicked passed into toads and wild beasts. (Dorman, "Prim. Superst.," p. 50.)

Among both the Germans and the American Indians lycanthropy, or the metamorphosis of men into wolves, was believed in. In British Columbia the men-wolves have often been seen seated around a fire, with their wolf-hides hung upon sticks to dry! The Irish legend of hunters pursuing an animal which suddenly disappears, whereupon a human being appears in its place, is found among all the American tribes.

That timid and harmless animal, the hare, was, singularly enough, an object of superstitious reverence and fear in Europe, Asia, and America. The ancient Irish killed all the hares they found on May-day among their cattle, believing them to be witches. Cæsar gives an account of the horror in which this animal was held by the Britons. The Calmucks regarded the rabbit with fear and reverence. Divine honors were paid to the hare in Mexico. Wabasso was changed into a white rabbit, and canonized in that form.

The white bull, *Apis*, of the Egyptians, reappears in the sacred white buffalo of the Dakotas, which was supposed to possess supernatural power, and after death became a god. The white doe of European legend had its representative in the white deer of the Housatonic Valley, whose death brought misery to the tribe. The transmission of spirits by the laying on of hands, and the exorcism of demons, were part of the religion of the American tribes.

The witches of Scandinavia, who produced tempests by their incantations, are duplicated in America. A Cree sorcerer sold three days of fair weather for one pound of tobacco! The Indian sorcerers around Freshwater Bay kept the winds in leather bags, and disposed of them as they pleased.

Among the American Indians it is believed that those who are insane or epileptic are "possessed of devils." (Tylor, "Prim. Cult.," vol. ii., pp. 123–126.) Sickness is caused by evil spirits entering into the sick person. (Eastman's "Sioux.") The spirits of animals are much feared, and their departure out of the body of the invalid is a cause of thanksgiving. Thus an Omaha, after an eructation, says, "Thank you, animal." (Dorman, "Prim. Superst.," p. 55.) The confession of their sins was with a view to satisfy the evil spirit and induce him to leave them. (*Ibid.*, p. 57.)

In both continents burnt-offerings were sacrificed to the gods. In both continents the priests divined the future from the condition of the internal organs of the man or animal sacrificed. (*Ibid.*, pp. 214, 226.) In both continents the future was revealed by the flight of birds and by dreams. In Peru and Mexico there were *colleges of augurs*, as in Rome, who practised divination by watching the movements and songs of birds. (*Ibid.*, p. 261.)

Animals were worshipped in Central America and on the banks of the Nile. (*Ibid.*, p. 259.)

The Ojibbeways believed that the barking of a fox was ominous of ill. (*Ibid.*, p. 225). The peasantry of Western Europe have the same belief as to the howling of a dog.

The belief in satyrs, and other creatures half man and half animal, survived in America. The Kickapoos are Darwinians. "They think their ancestors had tails, and when they lost them the impudent fox sent every morning to ask how their tails were, and the bear shook his fat sides at the joke." (*Ibid.*, p. 232.) Among the natives of Brazil the father cut a stick at the wedding of his daughter; "this was done to cut off the tails of any future grandchildren." (Tylor, vol. i., p. 384.)

Jove, with the thunder-bolts in his hand, is duplicated in the Mexican god of thunder, Mixcoatl, who is represented holding a bundle of arrows. "He rode upon a tornado, and scattered the lightnings." (Dorman, "Prim. Superst.," p. 98.)

Dionysus, or Bacchus, is represented by the Mexican god Texcatzoncatl, the god of wine. (Bancroft, vol. iii., p. 418.)

Atlas reappears in Chibchacum, the deity of the Chibchas; he bears the world on his shoulders, and when he shifts the burden from one shoulder to another severe earthquakes are produced. (Bollært, pp. 12, 13.)

Deucalion repeopling the world is repeated in Xololt, who, after the destruction of the world, descended to Mictlan, the realm of the dead, and brought thence a bone of the perished race. This, sprinkled with blood, grew into a youth, the father of the present race. The Quiche hero-gods, Hunaphu and Xblanque, died; their bodies were burnt, their bones ground to powder and thrown into the waters, whereupon they changed into handsome youths, with the same features as before. (Dorman, "Prim. Superst.," p. 193.)

Witches and warlocks, mermaids and mermen, are part of the mythology of the American tribes, as they were of the European races. (*Ibid.*, p. 79.) The mermaid of the Ottawas was "woman to the waist and fair;" thence fish-like. (*Ibid.*, p. 278.)

The snake-locks of Medusa are represented in the snake-locks of At-otarho, an ancient culture-hero of the Iroquois.

A belief in the incarnation of gods in men, and the physical translation of heroes to heaven, is part of the mythology of the Hindoos and the American races. Hiawatha, we are told, rose to heaven in the presence of the multitude, and vanished from sight in the midst of sweet music.

The vocal statues and oracles of Egypt and Greece were duplicated in America. In Peru, in the valley of Rimac, there was an idol which answered questions and became famous as an oracle. (Dorman, "Prim. Superst.," p. 124.)

The Peruvians believed that men were sometimes metamorphosed into stones.

The Oneidas claimed descent from a stone, as the Greeks from the stones of Deucalion. (*Ibid.*, p. 132.)

Witchcraft is an article of faith among all the American races. Among the Illinois Indians "they made small images to represent those whose days they have a mind to shorten, and which they stab to the heart," whereupon the person represented is expected to die. (Charlevoix, vol. ii., p. 166.) The witches of Europe made figures of wax of their enemies, and gradually melted them at the fire, and as they diminished the victim was supposed to sicken and die.

A writer in the *Popular Science Monthly* (April, 1881, p. 828) points out the fact that there is an absolute identity between the folk-lore of the negroes on the plantations of the South and the myths and stories of certain tribes of Indians in South America, as revealed by Mr. Herbert Smith's "Brazil, the Amazons, and the Coast." (New York: Scribner, 1879.) Mr. Harris, the author of a work on the folk-lore of the negroes, asks this question, "When did the negro or the North American Indian come in contact with the tribes of South America?"

Customs.—Both peoples manufactured a fermented, intoxicating drink, the one deriving it from barley, the other from maize. Both drank toasts. Both had the institution of marriage, an important part of the ceremony consisting in the joining of hands; both recognized divorce, and the Peruvians and Mexicans established special courts to decide cases of this kind. Both the Americans and Europeans erected arches, and had triumphal processions for their victorious kings, and both strewed the ground before them with leaves and flowers. Both celebrated important events with bonfires and illuminations; both used banners; both invoked blessings. The Phœnicians, Hebrews, and Egyptians practised circumcision. Palacio relates that at Azori, in Honduras, the natives circumcised boys before an idol called Icelca. ("Carta," p. 84.) Lord Kingsborough tells us the Central Americans used the same rite, and McKenzie (quoted by Retzius) says he saw the ceremony performed by the Chippeways. Both had bards and minstrels, who on great festivals sung the deeds of kings and heroes. Both the Egyptians and the Peruvians held agricultural fairs; both took a census of the people. Among both the land was divided *per capita* among the people; in Judea a new division was made every fifty years. The Peruvians renewed every year all the fires of the kingdom from the Temple of the Sun, the new fire being kindled from concave mirrors by the sun's rays. The Romans under Numa had precisely the same custom. The Peruvians had theatrical plays. They chewed the leaves of the cucu mixed with lime, as the Hindoo to-day chews the leaves of the betel mixed with lime. Both the American and European nations were divided into castes; both practised planet-worship; both used scales and weights and mirrors. The Peruvians, Egyptians, and Chaldeans divided the year into twelve months, and the months into lesser divisions of weeks. Both inserted additional days, so as to give the year three hundred and sixty-five days. The Mexicans added five intercalary days; and the Egyptians, in the time of Amunoph I., had already the same practice.

Humboldt, whose high authority cannot be questioned, by an elaborate discussion ("Vues des Cordilleras," p. 148 *et seq.*, ed. 1870), has shown the relative likeness of the Nahua calendar to that of Asia. He cites the fact that the Chinese, Japanese, Calmucks, Mongols, Mantchou, and other hordes of Tartars have cycles of sixty years' duration, divided into five brief periods of twelve years each. The method of citing a date by means of signs and numbers is quite similar with Asiatics and Mexicans. He further shows satisfactorily that *the majority of the names of the twenty days employed by the Aztecs are* *those of a zodiac used since the most remote antiquity among the peoples of Eastern Asia.*

Cabera thinks he finds analogies between the Mexican and Egyptian calendars. Adopting the view of several writers that the Mexican year began on the 26th of February, he finds the date to correspond with the beginning of the Egyptian year.

The American nations believed in four great primeval ages, as the Hindoo does to this day.

"In the Greeks of Homer," says Volney, "I find the customs, discourse, and manners of the Iroquois, Delawares, and Miamis. The tragedies of Sophocles and Euripides paint to me almost literally the sentiments of the *red men* respecting necessity, fatality, the miseries of human life, and the rigor of blind destiny." (Volney's "View of the United States.")

The Mexicans represent an eclipse of the moon as the moon being devoured by a dragon; and the Hindoos have precisely the same figure; and both nations continued to use this expression long after they had discovered the real meaning of an eclipse.

The Tartars believe that if they cut with an axe near a fire, or stick a knife into a burning stick, or touch the fire with a knife, they will "cut the top off the fire." The Sioux Indians will not stick an awl or a needle into a stick of wood on the fire, or chop on it with an axe or a knife.

Cremation was extensively practised in the New World. The dead were burnt, and their ashes collected and placed in vases and urns, as in Europe. Wooden statues of the dead were made.

There is a very curious and apparently inexplicable custom, called the "Couvade," which extends from China to the Mississippi Valley; it demands "that, when a child is born, the father must take to his bed, while the mother attends to all the duties of the household." Marco Polo found the custom among the Chinese in the thirteenth century.

The widow tells Hudibras—

> "Chineses thus are said
> To lie-in in their ladies' stead."

The practice remarked by Marco Polo continues to this day among the hill-tribes of China. "The father of a new-born child, as soon as the mother has become strong enough to leave her couch, gets into bed himself, and there receives the congratulations of his acquaintances." (Max Müller's "Chips from a German Workshop," vol. ii., p. 272.) Strabo (vol. iii., pp. 4, 17) mentions that, among the Iberians of the North of Spain, the women, after the birth of a child, tend their husbands, putting them to bed instead of going themselves. The same custom existed among the Basques only a few years ago. "In Biscay," says M. F. Michel, "the women rise immediately after childbirth and attend to the duties of the household, while the husband goes to bed, taking the baby with him, and thus receives the neighbors' compliments." The same custom was found in France, and is said to *exist to this day in some cantons of Béarn.* Diodorus Siculus tells us that among the Corsicans the wife was neglected, and the husband put to bed and treated as the patient. Apollonius Rhodius says that among the Tibereni, at the south of the Black Sea, "when a child was born the father lay groaning, with his head tied up, while the mother tended him with food and prepared his baths." The same absurd custom extends throughout the tribes of North and South America. Among the Caribs in the West Indies (and the Caribs, Brasseur de Bourbourg says, were the same as the ancient Carians of the Mediterranean Sea) the man takes to his bed as soon as a child is born, and *kills no animals.* And herein we find an explanation of a custom otherwise inexplicable. Among the American Indians it is believed that, if the father kills an animal during the infancy of the child, the spirit of the animal will revenge itself by inflicting some disease upon the helpless little one. "For six months the Carib father must not eat birds or fish, for whatever animals he eats will impress their likeness on the child, or produce disease by entering its body." (Dorman, "Prim. Superst.," p. 58.) Among the Abipones the husband goes to bed, fasts a number of days, "and you would think," says Dobrizhoffer, "that it was he that had had the child." The Brazilian father takes to his hammock during and after the birth of the child, and for fifteen days eats no meat and hunts no game. Among the Esquimaux the husbands forbear hunting during the lying-in of their wives and for some time thereafter.

Here, then, we have a very extraordinary and unnatural custom, existing to this day on both sides of the Atlantic, reaching back to a vast antiquity, and finding its explanation only in the superstition of the American races. A practice so absurd could scarcely have originated separately in the two continents; its existence is a very strong proof of unity of origin of the races on the opposite sides of the Atlantic; and the fact that the custom and the reason for it are both found in America, while the custom remains in Europe without the reason, would imply that the American population was the older of the two.

The Indian practice of depositing weapons and food with the dead was universal in ancient Europe, and in German villages nowadays a needle and thread is placed in the coffin for the dead to mend their torn clothes with; "while all over Europe the dead man had a piece of money put in his hand to pay his way with." ("Anthropology," p. 347.)

The American Indian leaves food with the dead; the Russian peasant puts crumbs of bread behind the saints' pictures on the little iron shelf, and believes that the souls of his forefathers creep in and out and eat them. At the cemetery of Père-la-Chaise, Paris, on All-souls-day, they "still put cakes and sweetmeats on the graves; and in Brittany the peasants that night do not forget to make up the fire and leave the fragments of the supper on the table for the souls of the dead." (*Ibid.*, p. 351.)

The Indian prays to the spirits of his forefathers; the Chinese religion is largely "ancestor-worship;" and the rites paid to the dead ancestors, or lares, held the Roman family together." ("Anthropology," p. 351.)

We find the Indian practice of burying the dead in a sitting posture in use among the Nasamonians, a tribe of Libyans. Herodotus, speaking of the wandering tribes of Northern Africa, says, "They bury their dead *according to the fashion of the Greeks*. . . . They bury them sitting, and are right careful, when the sick man is at the point of giving up the ghost, to make him sit, and not let him die lying down."

The dead bodies of the caciques of Bogota were protected from desecration by diverting the course of a river and making the grave in its bed, and then letting the stream return to its natural course. Alaric, the leader of the Goths, was secretly buried in the same way. (Dorman, "Prim. Superst.," p. 195.)

Among the American tribes no man is permitted to marry a wife of the same clan-name or totem as himself. In India a Brahman is not allowed to marry a wife whose clan-name (her "cow-stall," as they say) is the same as his own; nor may a Chinaman take a wife of his own surname. ("Anthropology," p. 403.) "Throughout India the hill-tribes are divided into septs or clans, and a man may not marry a woman belonging to his own clan. The Calmucks of Tartary are divided into hordes, and a man may not marry a girl of his own horde. The same custom prevails among the Circassians and the Samoyeds of Siberia. The Ostyaks and Yakuts regard it as a crime to marry a woman of the same family, or even of the same name." (Sir John Lubbock, "Smith. Rep.," p. 347, 1869.)

Sutteeism—the burning of the widow upon the funeral-pile of the husband—was extensively practised in America (West's "Journal," p. 141); as was also the practice of sacrificing warriors, servants, and animals at the funeral of a great chief. (Dorman, pp. 210–211.) Beautiful girls were sacrificed to appease the anger of the gods, as among the Mediterranean races. (Bancroft, vol. iii., p. 471.) Fathers offered up their children for a like purpose, as among the Carthaginians.

The poisoned arrows of America had their representatives in Europe. Odysseus went to Ephyra for the man-slaying drug with which to smear his bronze-tipped arrows. (Tylor's "Anthropology," p. 237.)

"The bark canoe of America was not unknown in Asia and Africa" (*Ibid.*, p. 254), while the skin canoes of our Indians and the Esquimaux were found on the shores of the Thames and the Euphrates. In Peru and on the Euphrates commerce was carried on upon rafts supported by inflated skins. They are still used on the Tigris.

The Indian boils his meat by dropping red-hot stones into a water-vessel made of hide; and Linnæus found the Bothland people brewing beer in this way—"and to this day the rude Carinthian boor drinks such *stone-beer*, as it is called." (*Ibid.*, p. 266.)

In the buffalo dance of the Mandan Indians the dancers covered their heads with a mask made of the head and horns of the buffalo. To-day in the temples of India, or among the lamas of Thibet, the priests dance the demons out, or the new year in, arrayed in animal masks (*Ibid.*, p. 297); and the "mummers" at Yule-tide, in England, are a survival of the same custom. (*Ibid.*, p. 298.) The North American dog and bear dances, wherein the dancers acted the part of those animals, had their prototype in the Greek dances at the festivals of Dionysia. (*Ibid.*, p. 298.)

Tattooing was practised in both continents. Among the Indians it was fetichistic in its origin; "every Indian had the image of an animal tattooed on his breast or arm, to charm away evil spirits." (Dorman, "Prim. Superst.," p. 156.) The sailors of Europe and America preserve to this day a custom which was once universal among the ancient races. Banners, flags, and armorial bearings are supposed to be survivals of the old totemic tattooing. The Arab woman still tattoos her face, arms, and ankles. The war-paint of the American savage reappeared in the *woad* with which the ancient Briton stained his body; and Tylor suggests that the painted stripes on the circus clown are a survival of a custom once universal. (Tylor's "Anthropolgy," p. 327.)

In America, as in the Old World, the temples of worship were built over the dead. (Dorman, "Prim. Superst.," p. 178.) Says Prudentius, the Roman bard, "there were as many temples of gods as sepulchres."

The Etruscan belief that evil spirits strove for the possession of the dead was found among the Mosquito Indians. (Bancroft, "Native Races," vol. i., p. 744.)

The belief in fairies, which forms so large a part of the folk-lore of Western Europe, is found among the American races. The Ojibbeways see thousands of fairies dancing in a sunbeam; during a rain myriads of them hide in the flowers. When disturbed they disappear underground. They have their dances, like the Irish fairies; and, like them, they kill the domestic animals of those who offend them. The Dakotas also believe in fairies. The Otoes located the "little people" in a mound at the mouth of Whitestone River; they were eighteen inches high, with very large heads; they were armed with bows and arrows, and killed those who approached their residence. (See Dorman's "Origin of Primitive Superstitions," p. 23.) "The Shoshone legends people the mountains of Montana with little imps, called Nirumbees, two feet long, naked, and *with a tail.*" They stole the children of the Indians, and left in their stead the young of their own baneful race, who resembled the stolen children so much that the mothers were deceived and suckled them, whereupon they died. This greatly resembles the European belief in "changelings." (*Ibid.*, p. 24.)

In both continents we find tree-worship. In Mexico and Central America cypresses and palms were planted near the temples, generally in *groups of threes;* they were tended with great care, and received offerings of incense and gifts. The same custom prevailed among the Romans—the cypress was dedicated to Pluto, and the palm to Victory.

Not only infant baptism by water was found both in the old Babylonian religion and among the Mexicans, but an offering of cakes, which is recorded by the prophet Jeremiah as part of the worship of the Babylonian goddess-mother, "the Queen of Heaven," was also found in the ritual of the Aztecs. ("Builders of Babel," p. 78.)

In Babylonia, China, and Mexico the caste at the bottom of the social scale lived upon floating islands of reeds or rafts, covered with earth, on the lakes and rivers.

In Peru and Babylonia marriages were made but once a year, at a public festival.

Among the Romans, the Chinese, the Abyssinians, and the Indians of Canada the singular custom prevails of lifting the bride over the door-step of her husband's home. (Sir John Lubbock, "Smith. Rep.," 1869, p. 352.)

"The bride-cake which so invariably accompanies a wedding among ourselves, and which must always be cut by the bride, may be traced back to the old Roman form of marriage by '*conferreatio*,' or eating together. So, also, among the Iroquois the bride and bridegroom used to partake together of a cake of sagamite, which the bride always offered to her husband." (*Ibid.*)

Among many American tribes, notably in Brazil, the husband captured the wife by main force, as the men of Benjamin carried off the daughters of Shiloh at the feast, and as the Romans captured the Sabine women. "Within a few generations the same old habit was kept up in Wales, where the bridegroom and his friends, mounted and armed as for war, carried off the bride; and in Ireland they used even to hurl spears at the bride's people, though at such a distance that no one was hurt, except now and then by accident—as happened when one Lord Hoath lost an eye, which mischance put an end to this curious relic of antiquity." (Tylor's "Anthropology," p. 409.)

Marriage in Mexico was performed by the priest. He exhorted them to maintain peace and harmony, and tied the end of the man's mantle to the dress of the woman; he perfumed them, and placed on each a shawl on which was painted a skeleton, "as a symbol *that only death could now separate them* from one another." (Dorman, "Prim. Superst.," p. 379.)

The priesthood was thoroughly organized in Mexico and Peru. They were prophets as well as priests. "They brought the newly-born infant into the religious society; they directed their training and education; they determined the entrance of the young men into the service of the state; they consecrated marriage by their blessing; they comforted the sick and assisted the dying." (*Ibid.*, p. 374.) There were five thousand priests in the temples of Mexico. They confessed and absolved the sinners, arranged the festivals, and managed the choirs in the churches. They lived in conventual discipline, but were allowed to marry; they practised flagellation and fasting, and prayed at regular hours. There were great preachers and exhorters among them. There were also convents into which females were admitted. The novice had her hair cut off and took vows of celibacy; they lived holy and pious lives. (*Ibid.*, pp. 375, 376.) The king was the high-priest of the religious orders. A new king ascended the temple naked, except his girdle; he was sprinkled four times with water which had been blessed; he was then clothed in a mantle, and on his knees took an oath to maintain the ancient religion. The priests then instructed him in his royal duties. (*Ibid.*, p. 378.) Besides the regular priesthood there were monks who were confined in cloisters. (*Ibid.*, p. 390.) Cortes says the Mexican priests were very strict in the practice of honesty and chastity, and any deviation was punished with death. They wore long white robes and burned incense.

(Dorman, "Prim. Superst.," p. 379.) The first fruits of the earth were devoted to the support of the priesthood. (*Ibid.*, p. 383.) The priests of the Isthmus were sworn to perpetual chastity.

The American doctors practised phlebotomy. They bled the sick man because they believed the evil spirit which afflicted him would come away with the blood. In Europe phlebotomy continued to a late period, but the original superstition out of which it arose, in this case as in many others, was forgotten.

There is opportunity here for the philosopher to meditate upon the perversity of human nature and the persistence of hereditary error. The superstition of one age becomes the science of another; men were first bled to withdraw the evil spirit, then to cure the disease; and a practice whose origin is lost in the night of ages is continued into the midst of civilization, and only overthrown after it has sent millions of human beings to untimely graves. Dr. Sangrado could have found the explanation of his profession only among the red men of America.

Folk-lore.—Says Max Müller: "Not only do we find the same words and the same terminations in Sanscrit and Gothic; not only do we find the same name for Zeus in Sanscrit, Latin, and German; not only is the abstract name for God the same in India, Greece, and Italy; but these very stories, these 'Mährchen' which nurses still tell, with almost the same words, in the Thuringian forest and in the Norwegian villages, and to which crowds of children listen under the Pippal-trees of India—these stories, too, belonged to the common heirloom of the Indo-European race, and their origin carries us back to the same distant past, when no Greek had set foot in Europe, no Hindoo had bathed in the sacred waters of the Ganges."

And we find that an identity of origin can be established between the folk-lore or fairy tales of America and those of the Old World, precisely such as exists between the legends of Norway and India.

Mr. Tylor tells us the story of the two brothers in Central America who, starting on their dangerous journey to the land of Xibalba, where their father had perished, plant each a cane in the middle of their grandmother's house, that she may know by its flourishing or withering whether they are alive or dead. Exactly the same conception occurs in Grimm's "Mährchen," when the two gold-children wish to see the world and to leave their father; and when their father is sad, and asks them how he shall hear news of them, they tell him, "We leave you the two golden lilies; from these you can see how we fare. If they are fresh, we are well; if they fade, we are ill; if they fall, we are dead." Grimm traces the same idea in Hindoo stories. "Now this," says Max Müller, "is strange enough, and its occurrence in India, Germany, and Central America is stranger still."

Compare the following stories, which we print in parallel columns, one from the Ojibbeway Indians, the other from Ireland:

THE OJIBBEWAY STORY.

The birds met together one day to try which could fly the highest. Some flew up very swift, but soon got tired, and were passed by others of stronger wing. But the eagle went up beyond them all, and was ready to claim the victory, when the gray linnet, a very small bird, flew from the eagle's back, where it had perched unperceived, and, being fresh and unexhausted, succeeded in going the highest. When the birds came down and met in council to award the prize, it was given to the eagle, because that bird had not only gone up nearer to the sun than any of the larger birds, but it had carried the linnet on its back.

For this reason the eagle's feathers became the most honorable marks of distinction a warrior could bear.

THE IRISH STORY.

The birds all met together one day, and settled among themselves that whichever of them could fly highest was to be the king of all. Well, just as they were on the hinges of being off, what does the little rogue of a wren do but hop up and perch himself unbeknown on the eagle's tail. So they flew and flew ever so high, till the eagle was miles above all the rest, and could not fly another stroke, he was so tired. "Then," says he, "I'm king of the birds." "You lie!" says the wren, darting up a perch and a half above the big fellow. Well, the eagle was so mad to think how he was done, that when the wren was coming down he gave him a stroke of his wing, and from that day to this the wren was never able to fly farther than a hawthorn-bush.

Compare the following stories:

THE ASIATIC STORY.	THE AMERICAN STORY.
In Hindoo mythology Urvasi came down from heaven and became the wife of the son of Buddha only on condition that two pet rams should never be taken from her bedside, and that she should never behold her lord undressed. The immortals, however, wishing Urvasi back in heaven, contrived to steal the rams; and, as the king pursued the robbers with his sword in the dark, the lightning revealed his person, the compact was broken, and Urvasi disappeared. This same story is found in different forms among many people of Aryan and Turanian descent, the central idea being that of a man marrying some one of an aerial or aquatic origin, and living happily with her till he breaks the condition on which her residence with him depends; stories exactly parallel to that of Raymond of Toulouse, who chances in the hunt upon the beautiful Melusina at a fountain, and lives with her happily until he discovers her fish-nature and she vanishes.	Wampee, a great hunter, once came to a strange prairie, where he heard faint sounds of music, and looking up saw a speck in the sky, which proved itself to be a basket containing twelve most beautiful maidens, who, on reaching the earth, forthwith set themselves to dance. He tried to catch the youngest, but in vain; ultimately he succeeded by assuming the disguise of a mouse. He was very attentive to his new wife, who was really a daughter of one of the stars, but she wished to return home, so she made a wicker basket secretly, and, by help of a charm she remembered, ascended to her father.

If the legend of Cadmus recovering Europa, after she has been carried away by the white bull, the spotless cloud, means that "the sun must journey westward until he sees again the beautiful tints which greeted his eyes in the morning," it is curious to find a story current in North America to the effect that a man once had a beautiful daughter, whom he forbade to leave the lodge lest she should be carried off by the king of the buffaloes; and that as she sat, notwithstanding, outside the house combing her hair, "all of a sudden the king of the buffaloes came dashing on, with his herd of followers, and, taking her between his horns, away he cantered over plains, plunged into a river which bounded his land, and carried her safely to his lodge on the other side," whence she was finally recovered by her father.

Games.—The same games and sports extended from India to the shores of Lake Superior. The game of the Hindoos, called *pachisi*, is played upon a cross-shaped board or cloth; it is a combination of checkers and draughts, with the throwing of dice, the dice determining the number of moves; when the Spaniards entered Mexico they found the Aztecs playing a game called *patolli*, identical with the Hindoo pachisi, on a similar cross-shaped board. The game of ball, which the Indians of America were in the habit of playing at the time of the discovery of the country, from California to the Atlantic, was identical with the European *chueca*, *crosse*, or *hockey*.

One may well pause, after reading this catalogue, and ask himself, wherein do these peoples differ? It is absurd to pretend that all these similarities could have been the result of accidental coincidences.

These two peoples, separated by the great ocean, were baptized alike in infancy with blessed water; they prayed alike to the gods; they worshipped together the sun, moon, and stars; they confessed their sins alike; they were instructed alike by an established priesthood; they were married in the same way and by the joining of hands; they armed themselves with the same weapons; when children came, the man, on both continents, went to bed and left his wife to do the honors of the household; they tattooed and painted themselves in the same fashion; they became intoxicated on kindred drinks; their dresses were alike; they cooked in the same manner; they used the same metals; they employed the same exorcisms and bleedings for disease; they believed alike in ghosts, demons, and fairies; they listened to the same stories; they played the same games; they used the same musical instruments; they danced the same dances, and when they died they were embalmed in the same way and buried sitting; while over them were erected, on both continents, the same mounds, pyramids, obelisks, and temples. And yet we are asked to believe that there was no relationship between them, and that they had never had any ante-Columbian intercourse with each other.

If our knowledge of Atlantis was more thorough, it would no doubt appear that, in every instance wherein the people of Europe accord with the people of America, they were both in accord with the people of Atlantis; and that Atlantis was the common centre from which both peoples derived their arts, sciences, customs, and opinions. It will be seen that in every case where Plato gives us any information in this respect as to Atlantis, we find this agreement to exist. It existed in architecture, sculpture, navigation, engraving, writing, an established priesthood, the mode of worship, agriculture, the construction of roads and canals; and it is reasonable to suppose that the same correspondence extended down to all the minor details treated of in this chapter.

CHAPTER III.

AMERICAN EVIDENCES OF INTERCOURSE WITH EUROPE OR ATLANTIS.

1. ON the monuments of Central America there are representations of bearded men. How could the beardless American Indians have imagined a bearded race?

2. All the traditions of the civilized races of Central America point to an *Eastern* origin.

The leader and civilizer of the Nahua family was Quetzalcoatl. This is the legend respecting him:

"*From the distant East*, from the fabulous Hue Hue Tlapalan, this mysterious person came to Tula, and became the patron god and high-priest of the ancestors of the Toltecs. He is described as having been *a white man*, with strong formation of body, broad forehead, large eyes, and *flowing beard*. He wore a mitre on his head, and was dressed in a long white robe reaching to his feet, and covered with red crosses. In his hand he held a sickle. His habits were ascetic, he never married, was most chaste and pure in life, and is said to have endured penance in a neighboring mountain, not for its effects upon himself, but as a warning to others. He condemned sacrifices, except of fruits and flowers, and was known as the god of peace; for, when addressed on the subject of war, he is reported to have stopped his ears with his fingers." ("North Amer. of Antiq.," p. 268.)

"He was skilled in many arts: he invented" (that is, imported) "gem-cutting and metal-casting; he originated letters, and invented the Mexican calendar. He finally returned to the land in the East from which he came: leaving the American coast at Vera Cruz, he embarked in a canoe made of serpent-skins, and '*sailed away into the East.*'" (*Ibid.*, p. 271.)

Dr. Le Plongeon says of the columns at Chichen:

"The base is formed by the head of Cukulcan, the shaft of the body of the serpent, with its feathers beautifully carved to the very chapiter. On the chapiters of the columns that support the portico, at the entrance of the castle in Chichen Itza, may be seen the carved figures of long-bearded men, with upraised hands, in the act of worshipping sacred trees. They forcibly recall to mind the same worship in Assyria."

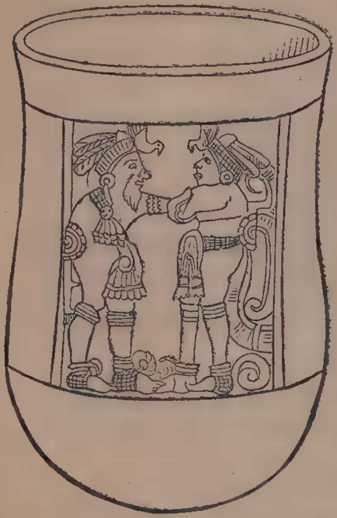

ANCIENT MEXICAN VASE.

In the accompanying cut of an ancient vase from Tula, we see a bearded figure grasping a beardless man.

In the cut given below we see a face that might be duplicated among the old men of any part of Europe.

The Cakchiquel MS. says: "Four persons came from Tulan, from the *direction of the rising sun*—that is one Tulan. There is another Tulan in Xibalbay, and another where the sun sets, *and it is there that we came;* and in the direction of the setting sun there is another, where is the god; so that there are four Tulans; and it is where the sun sets that we came to Tulan, *from the other side of the sea*, where this Tulan is; and it is there that we were conceived and begotten by our mothers and fathers."

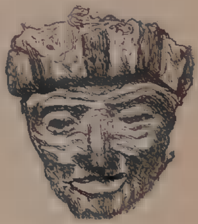

BEARDED HEAD, FROM TEOTIHUACAN.

That is to say, the birthplace of the race was in the East, across the sea, at a place called Tulan; and when they emigrated they called their first stopping-place on the American continent Tulan also; and besides this there were two other Tulans.

"Of the Nahua predecessors of the Toltecs in Mexico the Olmecs and Xicalancans were the most important. They were the forerunners of the great races that followed. According to Ixtlilxochitl, these people—which are conceded to be one—occupied the world in the third age; *they came from the East in ships or barks* to the land of Potonchan, which they commenced to populate."

3. The Abbé Brasseur de Bourbourg, in one of the notes of the Introduction of the "Popol Vuh," presents a very remarkable analogy between the kingdom of Xibalba, described in that work, and Atlantis. He says:

"Both countries are magnificent, exceedingly fertile, and abound in the precious metals. The empire of Atlantis was divided into ten kingdoms, governed by five couples of twin sons of Poseidon, the eldest being supreme over the others; and the ten constituted a tribunal that managed the affairs of the empire. Their descendants governed after them. The ten kings of Xibalba, who reigned (in couples) under Hun-Came and Vukub-Came (and who together constituted a grand council of the kingdom), certainly furnish curious points of comparison. And there is wanting neither a catastrophe—for Xibalba had a terrific inundation—nor the name of Atlas, of which the etymology is found only in the Nahuatl tongue: it comes from *atl*, water; and we know that a city of Atlan (near the water) still existed on the Atlantic side of the Isthmus of Panama at the time of the Conquest."

"In Yucatan the traditions all point to an *Eastern and foreign* origin for the race. The early writers report that the natives believe their ancestors to have *crossed the sea* by a passage which was opened for them." (Landa's "Relacion," p. 28.)

"It was also believed that part of the population came into the country from the West. Lizana says that the smaller portion, 'the little descent,' came from the East, while the greater portion, 'the great descent,' came from the West. Cogolluda considers the Eastern colony to have been the larger. . . . The culture-hero Zamna, the author of all civilization in Yucatan, is described as *the teacher of letters*, and the leader of the people from their ancient home. . . . He was the leader of a colony *from the East*." ("North Amer. of Antiq.," p. 229.)

The ancient Mexican legends say that, after the Flood, Coxcox and his wife, after wandering one hundred and four years, landed at *Antlan*, and passed thence to Capultepec, and thence to Culhuacan, and lastly to Mexico.

Coming from Atlantis, they named their first landing-place *Antlan.*

All the races that settled Mexico, we are told, traced their origin back to an *Aztlan* (Atlan-tis). Duran describes Aztlan as "a most attractive land." ("North Amer. of Antiq.," p. 257.)

Samé, the great name of Brazilian legend, came across the ocean *from the rising sun.* He had power over the elements and tempests; the trees of the forests would recede to make room for him (cutting down the trees); the animals used to crouch before him (domesticated animals); lakes and rivers became solid for him (boats and bridges); and he taught the use of agriculture and magic. Like him, Bochica, the great law-giver of the Muyscas, and son of the sun—he who invented for them the calendar and regulated their festivals—had a white beard, a detail in which all the American culture-heroes agree. The "Samé" of Brazil was probably the "Zamna" of Yucatan.

4. We find in America numerous representations of the elephant. We are forced to one of two conclusions: either the monuments date back to the time of the mammoth in North America, or these people held intercourse at some time in the

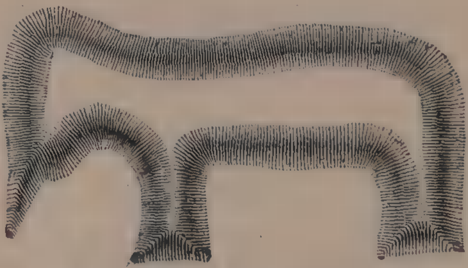

ELEPHANT MOUND, WISCONSIN.

past with races who possessed the elephant, and from whom they obtained pictures of that singular animal. Plato tells us that the Atlanteans possessed great numbers of elephants.

There are in Wisconsin a number of mounds of earth representing different animals—men, birds, and quadrupeds. Among the latter is a mound representing an elephant, "so perfect in its proportions, and complete in its representation of an elephant, that its builders must have been well acquainted with all the physical characteristics of the animal which they delineated." We copy the representation of this mound on page 168.

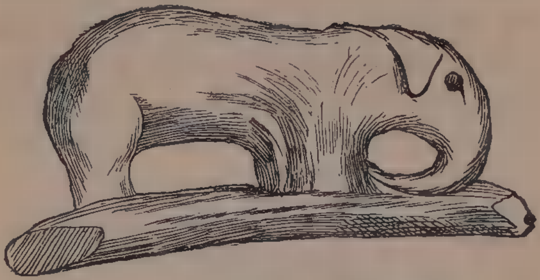

ELEPHANT PIPE, LOUISA COUNTY, IOWA.

On a farm in Louisa County, Iowa, a pipe was ploughed up which also represents an elephant. We are indebted to the valuable work of John T. Short ("The North Americans of Antiquity," p. 530) for a picture of this singular object. It was found in a section where the ancient mounds were very abundant and rich in relics. The pipe is of sandstone, of the ordinary Mound-Builder's type, and has every appearance of age and usage. There can be no doubt of its genuineness. The finder had no conception of its archæological value.

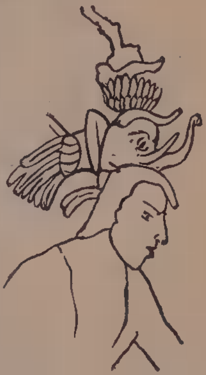

ELEPHANT-TRUNK HEAD-DRESS, PALENQUE.

In the ruined city of Palenque we find, in one of the palaces, a stucco bass-relief of a priest. His elaborate head-dress or helmet represents very faithfully the head of an elephant. The cut on page 169 is from a drawing made by Waldeck.

The decoration known as "elephant-trunks" is found in many parts of the ancient ruins of Central America, projecting from above the door-ways of the buildings.

In Tylor's "Researches into the Early History of Mankind," p. 313, I find a remarkable representation of an elephant, taken from an ancient Mexican manuscript. It is as follows:

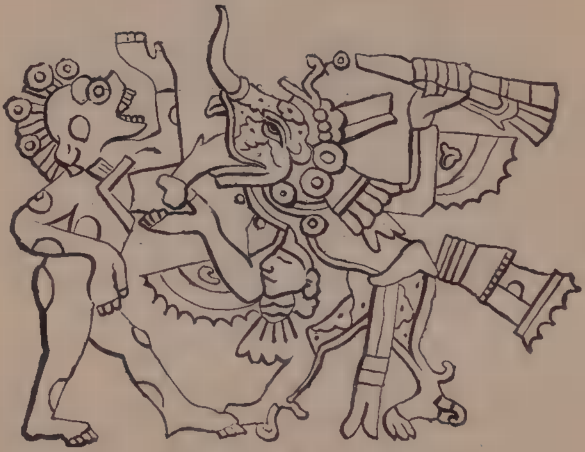

MEXICAN REPRESENTATION OF ELEPHANT.

Chapter IV.

CORROBORATING CIRCUMSTANCES.

1. Lenormant insists that the human race issued from Upa-Merou, and adds that some Greek traditions point to "this locality—particularly the expression *μέροπες ἄνθρωποι*, which can only mean 'the men sprung from Merou.'" ("Manual," p. 21.)

Theopompus tells us that the people who inhabited Atlantis were the *Meropes*, the people of *Merou*.

2. Whence comes the word *Atlantic?* The dictionaries tell us that the ocean is named after the mountains of *Atlas;* but whence did the *Atlas* mountains get their name?

> "The words Atlas and Atlantic have no satisfactory etymology in any language known to Europe. They are not Greek, and cannot be referred to any known language of the Old World. But in the Nahuatl language we find immediately the radical *a*, *atl*, which signifies water, war, and the top of the head. (Molina, "Vocab. en lengua Mexicana y Castellana.") From this comes a series of words, such as atlan—on the border of or amid the water—from which we have the adjective *Atlantic*. We have also *atlaça*, to combat, or be in agony; it means likewise to hurl or dart from the water, and in the preterit makes *Atlaz*. A city named *Atlan* existed when the continent was discovered by Columbus, at the entrance of the Gulf of Uraba, in Darien. With a good harbor, it is now reduced to an unimportant pueblo named *Acla*." (Baldwin's "Ancient America," p. 179.)

Plato tells us that Atlantis and the Atlantic Ocean were named after Atlas, the eldest son of Poseidon, the founder of the kingdom.

3. Upon that part of the African continent nearest to the site

of Atlantis we find a chain of mountains, known from the most ancient times as the Atlas Mountains. Whence this name Atlas, if it be not from the name of the great king of Atlantis? And if this be not its origin, how comes it that we find it in the most north-western corner of Africa? And how does it happen that in the time of Herodotus there dwelt near this mountain-chain a people called the *Atlantes*, probably a remnant of a colony from Solon's island? How comes it that the people of the Barbary States were known to the Greeks, Romans, and Carthaginians as the "Atlantes," this name being especially applied to the inhabitants of Fezzan and Bilma? Where did they get the name from? There is no etymology for it east of the Atlantic Ocean. (Lenormant's "Anc. Hist. of the East," p. 253.)

Look at it! An "Atlas" mountain on the shore of Africa; an "Atlan" town on the shore of America; the "Atlantes" living along the north and west coast of Africa; an Aztec people from Aztlan, in Central America; an ocean rolling between the two worlds called the "Atlantic;" a mythological deity called "Atlas" holding the world on his shoulders; and an immemorial tradition of an island of Atlantis. Can all these things be the result of accident?

4. Plato says that there was a "passage west from Atlantis to the rest of the islands, as well as from these islands to the whole opposite continent that *surrounds* that *real* sea." He calls it a real sea, as contradistinguished from the Mediterranean, which, as he says, is not a real sea (or ocean) but a land-locked body of water, like a harbor.

Now, Plato might have created Atlantis out of his imagination; but how could he have invented the islands beyond (the West India Islands), and the whole continent (America) enclosing that real sea? If we look at the map, we see that the continent of America does "surround" the ocean in a great half-circle. Could Plato have guessed all this? If there had been no Atlantis, and no series of voyages from it that revealed the half-circle of the continent from Newfoundland to Cape St. Roche, how could Plato have guessed it? And how could he have known that the Mediterranean was only a harbor compared with the magnitude of the great ocean surrounding Atlantis? Long sea-voyages were necessary to establish that fact, and the Greeks, who kept close to the shores in their short journeys, did not make such voyages.

5. How can we, without Atlantis, explain the presence of the Basques in Europe, who have no lingual affinities with any other race on the continent of Europe, but whose language *is similar to the languages of America?*

Plato tells us that the dominion of Gadeirus, one of the kings of Atlantis, extended "toward the pillars of Heracles (Hercules) as far as the country which is still called the region of Gades in that part of the world." Gades is the Cadiz of to-day, and the dominion of Gadeirus embraced the land of the Iberians or Basques, their chief city taking its name from a king of Atlantis, and they themselves being Atlanteans.

Dr. Farrar, referring to the Basque language, says:

> "What is certain about it is, that its structure is polysynthetic, like the languages of America. Like them, it forms its compounds by the elimination of certain radicals in the simple words; so that *ilhun*, the twilight, is contracted from *hill*, dead, and *egun*, day; and *belhaur*, the knee, from *belhar*, front, and *oin*, leg. . . . The fact is indisputable, and is eminently noteworthy, that while the affinities of the Basque roots have never been conclusively elucidated, there has never been any doubt that this isolated language, preserving its identity in a western corner of Europe, between two mighty kingdoms, resembles, in its grammatical structure, the aboriginal languages of the vast opposite continent (America), and those alone." ("Families of Speech," p. 132.)

If there was an Atlantis, forming, with its connecting ridges, a continuous bridge of land from America to Africa, we can understand how the Basques could have passed from one continent to another; but if the wide Atlantic rolled at all times unbroken between the two continents, it is difficult to conceive of such an emigration by an uncivilized people.

6. Without Atlantis, how can we explain the fact that the early Egyptians were depicted by themselves as *red* men on their own monuments? And, on the other hand, how can we account for the representations of negroes on the monuments of Central America?

Dêsirè Charnay, now engaged in exploring those monuments, has published in the *North American Review* for December, 1880, photographs of a number of idols exhumed at San Juan de Teotihuacan, from which I select the following strikingly negroid faces:

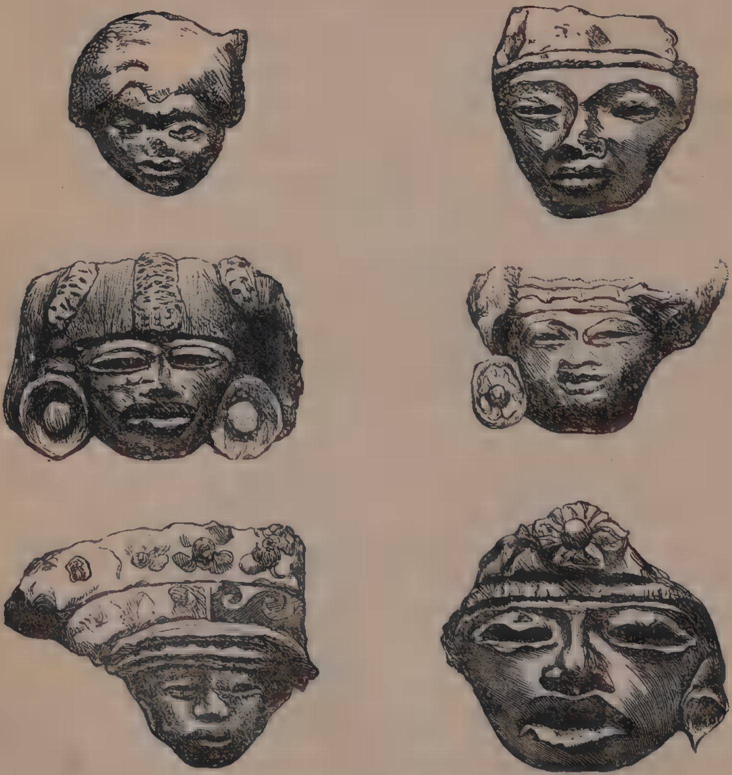

NEGRO IDOLS FOUND IN MEXICO.

Dr. Le Plongeon says:

"Besides the sculptures of long-bearded men seen by the explorer at Chichen Itza, there were tall figures of people with small heads, thick lips, and curly short hair or wool, regarded as negroes. 'We always see them as standard or parasol bearers, but never engaged in actual warfare.'" ("Maya Archæology," p. 62.)

The following cut is from the court of the Palace of Palenque, figured by Stephens. The face is strongly Ethiopian.

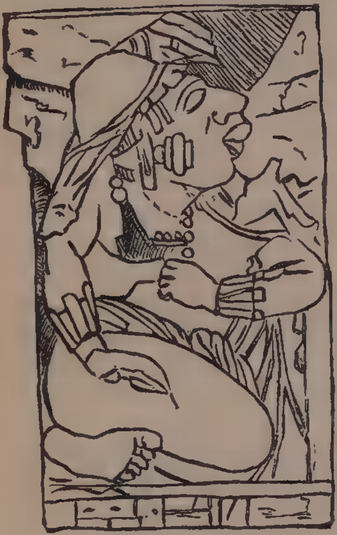

NEGROID FIGURE, PALENQUE.

The figure below represents a gigantic granite head, found near the volcano of Tuxtla, in the Mexican State of Vera Cruz, at Caxapa. The features are unmistakably negroid.

As the negroes have never been a sea-going race, the presence of these faces among the antiquities of Central America proves one of two things, either the existence of a land connection between America and Africa *via* Atlantis, as revealed by the deep-sea soundings of the *Challenger*, or commercial relations between America and Africa through the ships of the Atlanteans or some other civilized race, whereby the negroes were brought to America as slaves at a very remote epoch.

And we find some corroboration of the latter theory in that singular book of the Quiches, the "Popol Vuh," in which, after describing the creation of the first men "*in the region of the rising sun*" (Bancroft's "Native Races," vol. v., p. 548),

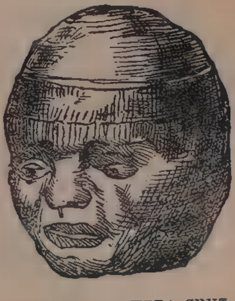

NEGRO HEAD, VERA CRUZ.

and enumerating their first generations, we are told, "All seem to have spoken one language, and to have lived in great peace, *black men and white together.* Here they awaited the rising of the sun, and prayed to the Heart of Heaven." (Bancroft's "Native Races," p. 547.) How did the red men of Central America know anything about "black men and white men?" The conclusion seems inevitable that these legends of a primitive, peaceful, and happy land, an *Aztlan* in the East, inhabited by black and white men, to which all the civilized nations of America traced their origin, could only refer to Atlantis—that bridge of land where the white, dark, and red races met. The "Popol Vuh" proceeds to tell how this first home of the race became over-populous, and how the people under Balam-Quitze migrated; how their language became "confounded," in other words, broken up into dialects, in consequence of separation; and how some of the people "*went to the East*, and many came hither to Guatemala." (*Ibid.*, p. 547.)

M. A. de Quatrefages ("Human Species," p. 200) says, "Black populations have been found in America in very small numbers only, as isolated tribes in the midst of very different populations. Such are the Charruas of Brazil, the Black Carribees of Saint Vincent, in the Gulf of Mexico; the Jamassi of Florida, and the dark-complexioned Californians. . . . Such, again, is the tribe that Balboa saw some representatives of in his passage of the Isthmus of Darien in 1513; . . . they were true negroes."

7. How comes it that all the civilizations of the Old World radiate from the shores of the Mediterranean? The Mediterranean is a *cul de sac*, with Atlantis opposite its mouth. Every civilization on its shores possesses traditions that point to Atlantis. We hear of no civilization coming *to* the Mediterranean from Asia, Africa, or Europe—from north, south, or west; but north, south, east, and west we find civilization radiating from the Mediterranean to other lands. We see the Aryans descending upon Hindostan from the direction of the Medi-

terranean; and we find the Chinese borrowing inventions from Hindostan, and claiming descent from a region not far from the Mediterranean.

The Mediterranean has been the centre of the modern world, because it lay in the path of the extension of an older civilization, whose ships colonized its shores, as they did also the shores of America. Plato says, "the nations are gathered around the shores of the Mediterranean like frogs around a marsh."

Dr. McCausland says:

> "The obvious conclusion from these facts is, that at some time previous to these migrations a people speaking a language of a superior and complicated structure broke up their society, and, under some strong impulse, poured out in different directions, and gradually established themselves in all the lands now inhabited by the Caucasian race. Their territories extend from the Atlantic to the Ganges, and from Iceland to Ceylon, and are bordered on the north and east by the Asiatic Mongols, and on the south by the negro tribes of Central Africa. They present all the appearances of a later race, expanding itself between and into the territories of two pre-existing neighboring races, and forcibly appropriating the room required for its increasing population." (McCausland's "Adam and the Adamites," p. 280.)

Modern civilization is Atlantean. Without the thousands of years of development which were had in Atlantis modern civilization could not have existed. The inventive faculty of the present age is taking up the great delegated work of creation where Atlantis left it thousands of years ago.

8. How are we to explain the existence of the Semitic race in Europe without Atlantis? It is an intrusive race; a race colonized on sea-coasts. Where are its Old World affinities?

9. Why is it that the origin of wheat, barley, oats, maize, and rye—the essential plants of civilization—is totally lost in the mists of a vast antiquity? We have in the Greek mythology legends of the introduction of most of these by Atlantean kings or gods into Europe; but no European nation

claims to have discovered or developed them, and it has been impossible to trace them to their wild originals. Out of the whole *flora* of the world mankind in the last seven thousand years has not developed a single food-plant to compare in importance to the human family with these. If a wise and scientific nation should propose nowadays to add to this list, it would have to form great botanical gardens, and, by systematic and long-continued experiments, develop useful plants from the humble productions of the field and forest. Was this done in the past on the island of Atlantis?

10. Why is it that we find in Ptolemy's "Geography of Asia Minor," in a list of cities in Armenia Major in A.D. 140, the names of five cities which have their counterparts in the names of localities in Central America?

Armenian Cities.	Central American Localities.
Chol.	Chol-ula
Colua.	Colua-can.
Zuivana.	Zuivan.
Cholima.	Colima.
Zalissa.	Xalisco.

(Short's "North Americans of Antiquity," p. 497.)

11. How comes it that the sandals upon the feet of the statue of Chacmol, discovered at Chichen Itza, are "exact representations of those found on the feet of the Guanches, the early inhabitants of the Canary Islands, whose mummies are occasionally discovered in the caves of Teneriffe?" Dr. Merritt deems the axe or chisel heads dug up at Chiriqui, Central America, "almost identical in form as well as material with specimens found in Suffolk County, England." (Bancroft's "Native Races," vol. iv., p. 20.) The rock-carvings of Chiriqui are pronounced by Mr. Seemann to have a striking resemblance to the ancient incised characters found on the rocks of Northumberland, England. (*Ibid.*)

"Some stones have recently been discovered in Hierro and Las Palmas (Canary Islands), bearing sculptured symbols similar to those found on the shores of Lake Superior; and this has led M. Bertholet, the historiographer of the Canary Islands, to conclude that the first inhabitants of the Canaries and those of the great West were one in race." (Benjamin, "The Atlantic Islands," p. 130.)

12. How comes it that that very high authority, Professor Retzius ("Smithsonian Report," 1859, p. 266), declares, "With regard to the primitive dolichocephalæ of America I entertain a hypothesis still more bold, namely, that they are nearly related to the Guanches in the Canary Islands, and to the Atlantic populations of Africa, the Moors, Tuaricks, Copts, etc., which Latham comprises under the name of Egyptian-Atlantidæ. We find one and the same form of skull in the Canary Islands, in front of the African coast, and in the Carib Islands, on the opposite coast, which faces Africa. The color of the skin on both sides of the Atlantic is represented in these populations as being of a reddish-brown."

13. The Barbarians who are alluded to by Homer and Thucydides were a race of ancient navigators and pirates called *Cares*, or *Carians*, who occupied the isles of Greece before the Pelasgi, and antedated the Phœnicians in the control of the sea. The Abbé Brasseur de Bourbourg claims that these Carians were identical with the *Caribs* of the West Indies, the *Caras* of Honduras, and the *Gurani* of South America. (Landas, "Relacion," pp. 52–65.)

14. When we consider it closely, one of the most extraordinary customs ever known to mankind is that to which I have already alluded in a preceding chapter, to wit, the embalming of the body of the dead man, with a purpose that the body itself may live again in a future state. To arrive at this practice several things must coexist:

a. The people must be highly religious, and possessed of an organized and influential priesthood, to perpetuate so troublesome a custom from age to age.

b. They must believe implicitly in the immortality of the soul; and this implies a belief in rewards and punishments after death; in a heaven and a hell.

c. They must believe in the immortality of the body, and its resurrection from the grave on some day of judgment in the distant future.

d. But a belief in the immortality of the soul and the resurrection of the body is not enough, for all Christian nations hold to these beliefs; they must supplement these with a determination that the body shall not perish; that the very flesh and blood in which the man died shall rise with him on the last day, and not a merely spiritual body.

Now all these four things must coexist before a people proceed to embalm their dead for religious purposes. The probability that all these four things should coexist by accident in several widely separated races is slight indeed. The doctrine of chances is all against it. There is here no common necessity driving men to the same expedient, with which so many resemblances have been explained; the practice is a religious ceremony, growing out of religious beliefs by no means common or universal, to wit, that the man who is dead shall live again, and live again in the very body in which he died. Not even all the Jews believed in these things.

If, then, it should appear that among the races which we claim were descended from Atlantis this practice of embalming the dead is found, and nowhere else, we have certainly furnished evidence which can only be explained by admitting the existence of Atlantis, and of some great religious race dwelling on Atlantis, who believed in the immortality of soul and body, and who embalmed their dead. We find, as I have shown:

First. That the Guanches of the Canary Islands, supposed to be a remnant of the Atlantean population, preserved their dead as mummies.

Second. That the Egyptians, the oldest colony of Atlantis, embalmed their dead in such vast multitudes that they are now exported by the ton to England, and ground up into manures to grow English turnips.

Third. That the Assyrians, the Ethiopians, the Persians, the Greeks, and even the Romans embalmed their dead.

Fourth. On the American continents we find that the Peruvians, the Central Americans, the Mexicans, and some of the Indian tribes, followed the same practice.

Is it possible to account for this singular custom, reaching through a belt of nations, and completely around the habitable world, without Atlantis?

15. All the traditions of the Mediterranean races look to the ocean as the source of men and gods. Homer sings of

> "Ocean, the origin of gods and Mother Tethys."

Orpheus says, "The fair river of Ocean was the first to marry, and he espoused his sister Tethys, who was his mother's daughter." (Plato's "Dialogues," *Cratylus*, p. 402.) The ancients always alluded to the ocean as a river encircling the earth, as in the map of Cosmos (see page 95 *ante*); probably a reminiscence of the great canal described by Plato which surrounded the plain of Atlantis. Homer (Iliad, book xviii.) describes Tethys, "the mother goddess," coming to Achilles "from the deep abysses of the main:"

> "The circling Nereids with their mistress weep,
> And all the sea-green sisters of the deep."

Plato surrounds the great statue of Poseidon in Atlantis with the images of one hundred Nereids.

16. In the Deluge legends of the Hindoos (as given on page 87 *ante*), we have seen Manu saving a small fish, which subsequently grew to a great size, and warned him of the coming of the Flood. In this legend all the indications point to an ocean as the scene of the catastrophe. It says: "At the close of the last *calpa* there was a general destruction, caused by the sleep of Brahma, whence his creatures, in different worlds, *were*

drowned in a vast ocean. . . . A holy king, named Satyavrata, then reigned, a servant of *the spirit which moved on the waves*" (Poseidon?), "and so devout that *water was his only sustenance*. . . . In seven days the three worlds" (remember Poseidon's trident) "shall be *plunged in an ocean* of death." . . . "'Thou shalt enter the spacious ark, and continue in it secure from the Flood *on one immense ocean*.' . . . *The sea overwhelmed its shores*, deluged the whole earth, augmented by showers from immense clouds." ("Asiatic Researches," vol. i., p. 230.)

All this reminds us of "the fountains of the great deep and the flood-gates of heaven," and seems to repeat precisely the story of Plato as to the sinking of Atlantis in the ocean.

17. While I do not attach much weight to verbal similarities in the languages of the two continents, nevertheless there are some that are very remarkable. We have seen the Pan and Maia of the Greeks reappearing in the Pan and Maya of the Mayas of Central America. The god of the Welsh triads, "Hu the mighty," is found in the Hu-nap-hu, the hero-god of the Quiches; in Hu-napu, a hero-god; and in Hu-hu-nap-hu, in Hu-ncam, in Hu-nbatz, semi-divine heroes of the Quiches. The Phœnician deity *El* "was subdivided into a number of hypostases called the *Baalim*, secondary divinities, emanating from the substance of the deity" ("Anc. Hist. East," vol. ii., p. 219); and this word *Baalim* we find appearing in the mythology of the Central Americans, applied to the semi-divine progenitors of the human race, *Balam-Quitze*, *Balam-Agab*, and *Iqui-Balam*.

CHAPTER V.

THE QUESTION OF COMPLEXION.

THE tendency of scientific thought in ethnology is in the direction of giving more and more importance to the race characteristics, such as height, color of the hair, eyes and skin, and the formation of the skull and body generally, than to language. The language possessed by a people may be merely the result of conquest or migration. For instance, in the United States to-day, white, black, and red men, the descendants of French, Spanish, Italians, Mexicans, Irish, Germans, Scandinavians, Africans, all speak the English language, and by the test of language they are all Englishmen; and yet none of them are connected by birth or descent with the country where that language was developed.

There is a general misconception as to the color of the European and American races. Europe is supposed to be peopled exclusively by white men; but in reality every shade of color is represented on that continent, from the fair complexion of the fairest of the Swedes to the dark-skinned inhabitants of the Mediterranean coast, only a shade lighter than the Berbers, or Moors, on the opposite side of that sea. Tacitus spoke of the "Black Celts," and the term, so far as complexion goes, might not inappropriately be applied to some of the Italians, Spaniards, and Portuguese, while the Basques are represented as of a still darker hue. Tylor says ("Anthropology," p. 67), "On the whole, it seems that the distinction of color, from the fairest Englishman to the darkest African, has no hard and fast lines, but varies gradually from one tint to another."

And when we turn to America we find that the popular opinion that all Indians are "red men," and of the same hue from Patagonia to Hudson's Bay, is a gross error.

Prichard says ("Researches into the Physical History of Mankind," vol. i., p. 269, 4th ed., 1841):

> "It will be easy to show that the American races show nearly as great a variety in this respect as the nations of the old continent; there are among them white races with a florid complexion, and tribes black or of a very dark hue; that their stature, figure, and countenance are almost equally diversified."

John T. Short says ("North Americans of Antiquity," p. 189):

> "The Menominees, sometimes called the 'White Indians,' formerly occupied the region bordering on Lake Michigan, around Green Bay. The whiteness of these Indians, which is compared to that of white mulattoes, early attracted the attention of the Jesuit missionaries, and has often been commented on by travellers. While it is true that hybridy has done much to lighten the color of many of the tribes, still the peculiarity of the complexion of this people has been marked since the first time a European encountered them. Almost every shade, from the ash-color of the Menominees through the cinnamon-red, copper, and bronze tints, may be found among the tribes formerly occupying the territory east of the Mississippi, until we reach the dark-skinned Kaws of Kansas, who are nearly as black as the negro. The variety of complexion is as great in South America as among the tribes of the northern part of the continent."

In foot-note of p. 107 of vol. iii. of "U. S. Explorations for a Railroad Route to the Pacific Ocean," we are told,

> "Many of the Indians of Zuni (New Mexico) are white. They have a fair skin, blue eyes, chestnut or auburn hair, and are quite good-looking. They claim to be full-blooded Zunians, and have no tradition of intermarriage with any foreign race. The circumstance creates no surprise among this people, for from time immemorial a similar class of people has existed among the tribe."

Winchell says:

"The ancient Indians of California, in the latitude of forty-two degrees, were as black as the negroes of Guinea, while in Mexico were tribes of an olive or reddish complexion, relatively light. Among the black races of tropical regions we find, generally, some light-colored tribes interspersed. These sometimes have light hair and blue eyes. This is the case with the Tuareg of the Sahara, the Afghans of India, and the aborigines of the banks of the Oronoco and the Amazon." (Winchell's "Preadamites," p. 185.)

William Penn said of the Indians of Pennsylvania, in his letter of August, 1683:

"The natives . . . are generally tall, straight, well-built, and of singular proportion; they tread strong and clever, and mostly walk with a lofty chin. . . . Their eye is little and black, not unlike a straight-looked Jew. . . . I have seen among them as comely European-like faces of both sexes as on your side of the sea; and truly an Italian complexion hath not much more of the white, and the noses of several of them have as much of the Roman. . . . For their original, I am ready to believe them to be of the Jewish race—I mean of the stock of the ten tribes—and that for the following reasons: first, . . .; in the next place, I find them to be of the like countenance, and their children of so lively a resemblance that a man would think himself in Duke's Place or Berry Street in London when he seeth them. But this is not all: they agree in rites, they reckon by moons, they offer their first-fruits, they have a kind of feast of tabernacles, they are said to lay their altars upon twelve stones, their mourning a year, customs of women, with many other things that do not now occur."

Upon this question of complexion Catlin, in his "Indians of North America," vol. i., p. 95, etc., gives us some curious information. We have already seen that the Mandans preserved an image of the ark, and possessed legends of a clearly Atlantean character. Catlin says:

"A stranger in the Mandan village is first struck with the different shades of complexion and various colors of hair which he sees in a crowd about him, and is at once disposed to exclaim, 'These are not Indians.' There are a great many of these people whose complexions appear as light as half-breeds; and among the women particularly there are many whose skins are almost white, with the most pleasing symmetry and proportion of feature; with hazel, with gray, and with blue eyes; with mildness and sweetness of expression and excessive modesty of demeanor, which render them exceedingly pleasing and beautiful. Why this diversity of complexion I cannot tell, nor can they themselves account for it. Their traditions, so far as I can learn them, afford us no information of their having had any knowledge of white men before the visit of Lewis and Clarke, made to their village thirty-three years ago. Since that time until now (1835) there have been very few visits of white men to this place, and surely not enough to have changed the complexions and customs of a nation. And I recollect perfectly well that Governor Clarke told me, before I started for this place, that I would find the Mandans a strange people and half white.

"Among the females may be seen every shade and color of hair that can be seen in our own country except red or auburn, which is not to be found. . . . There are very many of both sexes, and of every age, from infancy to manhood and old age, with hair of a bright silvery-gray, and in some instances almost perfectly white. This unaccountable phenomenon is not the result of disease or habit, but it is unquestionably an hereditary characteristic which runs in families, and indicates no inequality in disposition or intellect. And by passing this hair through my hands I have found it uniformly to be as coarse and harsh as a horse's mane, differing materially from the hair of other colors, which, among the Mandans, is generally as fine and soft as silk.

"The stature of the Mandans is rather below the ordinary size of man, with beautiful symmetry of form and proportion, and wonderful suppleness and elasticity."

Catlin gives a group (54) showing this great diversity in complexion: one of the figures is painted almost pure white, and with light hair. The faces are European.

Major James W. Lynd, who lived among the Dakota Indians for nine years, and was killed by them in the great outbreak of

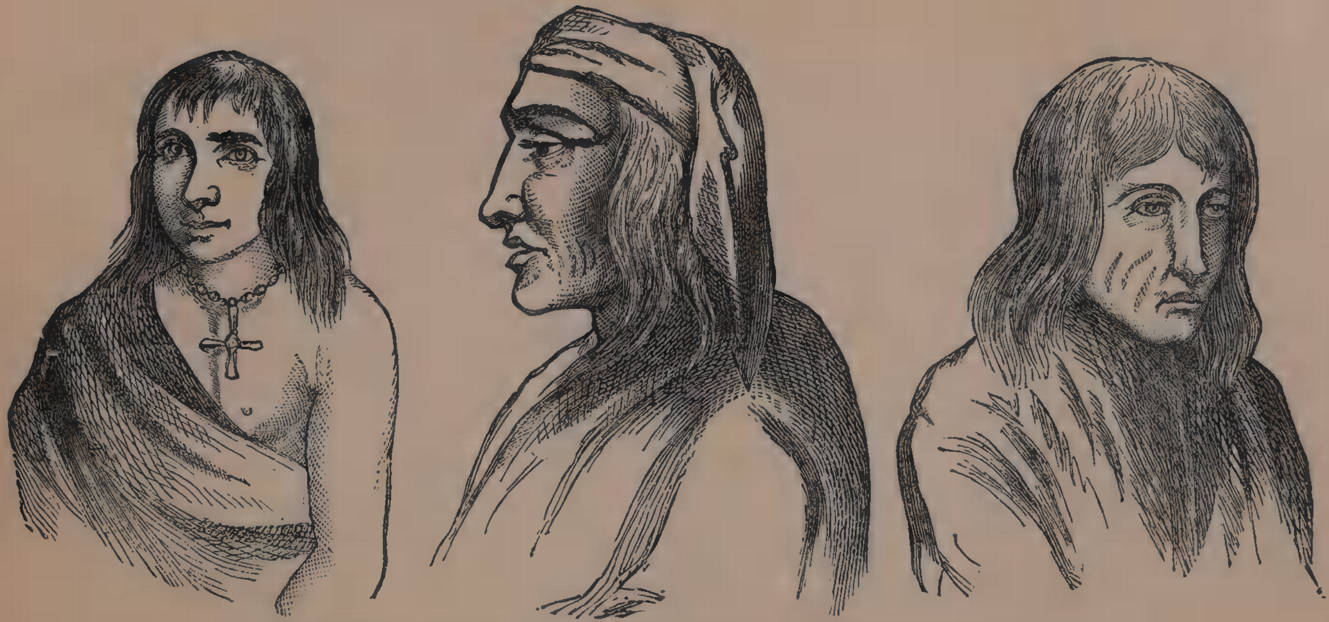

GOVERNOR AND OTHER INDIANS OF THE PUEBLO OF SAN DOMINGO, NEW MEXICO.

1862, says (MS. "Hist. of Dakotas," Library, Historical Society, Minnesota, p. 47), after calling attention to the fact that the different tribes of the Sioux nation represent several different degrees of darkness of color:

> "The Dakota child is of lighter complexion than the young brave; this one lighter than the middle-aged man, and the middle-aged man lighter than the superannuated *homo*, who, by smoke, paint, dirt, and a drying up of the vital juices, appears to be the true copper-colored Dakota. The color of the Dakotas varies with the nation, and also with the age and condition of the individual. It may be set down, however, *as a shade lighter than olive;* yet it becomes still lighter by change of condition or mode of life, and nearly vanishes, even in the child, under constant ablutions and avoiding of exposure. Those children in the Mission at Hazlewood, who are taken very young, and not allowed to expose themselves, lose almost entirely the olive shade, and become quite as white as the American child. The Mandans are as light as the peasants of Spain, while their brothers, the Crows, are as dark as the Arabs. Dr. Goodrich, in the 'Universal Traveller,' p. 154, says that the modern Peruvians, in the warmer regions of Peru, are as fair as the people of the south of Europe."

The Aymaras, the ancient inhabitants of the mountains of Peru and Bolivia, are described as having an olive-brown complexion, with regular features, large heads, and a thoughtful and melancholy cast of countenance. They practised in early times the deformation of the skull.

Professor Wilson describes the hair of the ancient Peruvians, as found upon their mummies, as "a lightish brown, and of a fineness of texture which equals that of the Anglo-Saxon race." "The ancient Peruvians," says Short ("North Americans of Antiquity," p. 187), "appear, from numerous examples of hair found in their tombs, to have been an auburn-haired race." Garcilasso, who had an opportunity of seeing the body of the king, Viracocha, describes the hair of that monarch as snow-white. Haywood tells us of the discovery, at the beginning of this century, of three mummies in a cave on the south side of the

Cumberland River (Tennessee), who were buried in baskets, as the Peruvians were occasionally buried, and whose skin was fair and white, and their hair auburn, and of a fine texture. ("Natural and Aboriginal History of Tennessee," p. 191.)

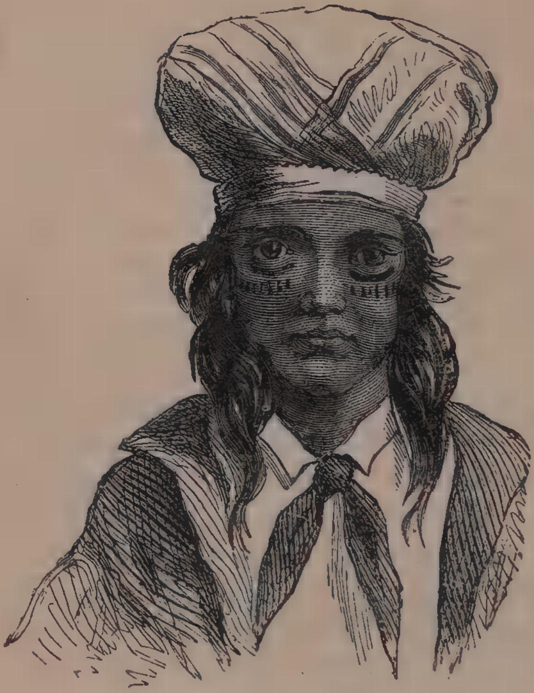

CHOCTAW.

Neither is the common opinion correct which asserts all the American Indians to be of the same type of features. The portraits on this page and on pages 187 and 191, taken from the "Report of the U. S. Survey for a Route for a Pacific Railroad," present features very much like those of Europeans; in fact, every face here could be precisely matched among the inhabitants of the southern part of the old continent.

On the other hand, look at the portrait of the great Italian orator and reformer, Savonarola, on page 193. It looks more

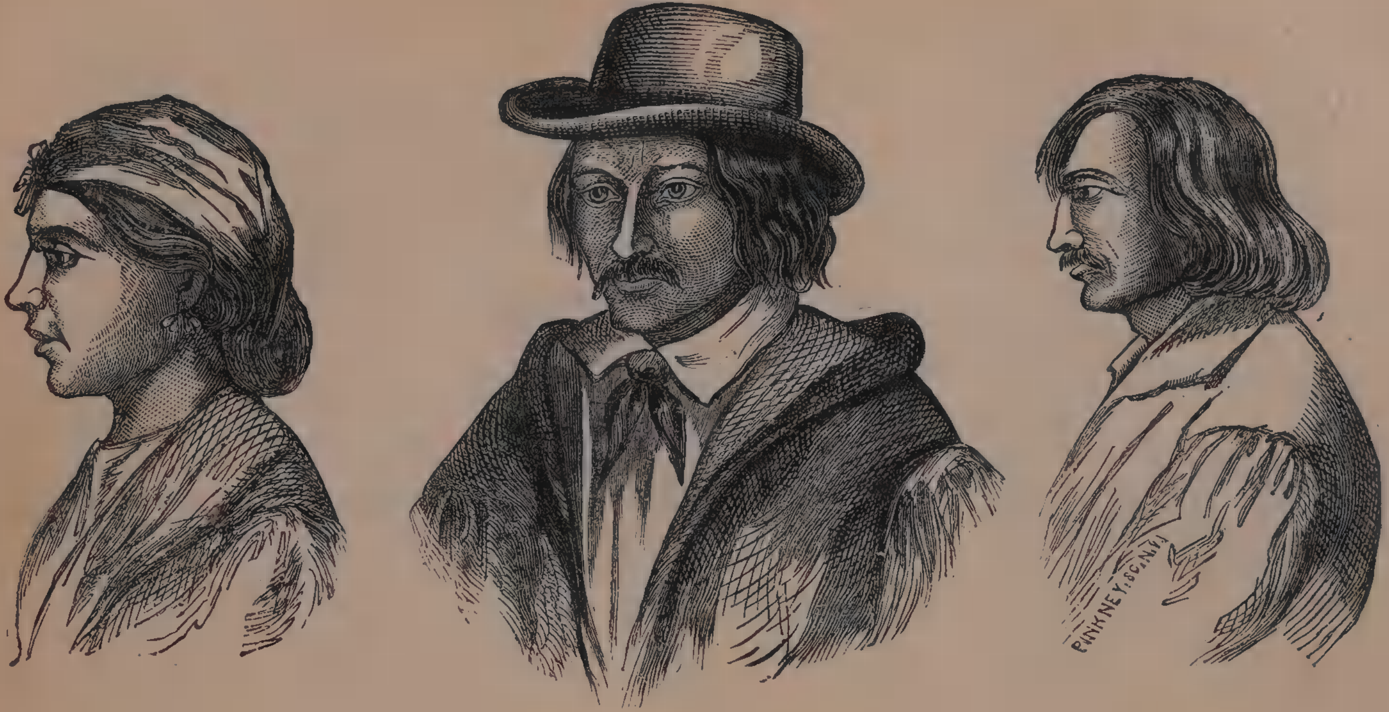
PINKNEY, SC. N.Y.

SHAWNEES.

like the hunting Indians of North-western America than any of the preceding faces. In fact, if it was dressed with a scalp-lock it would pass muster anywhere as a portrait of the "Man-afraid-of-his-horses," or "Sitting Bull."

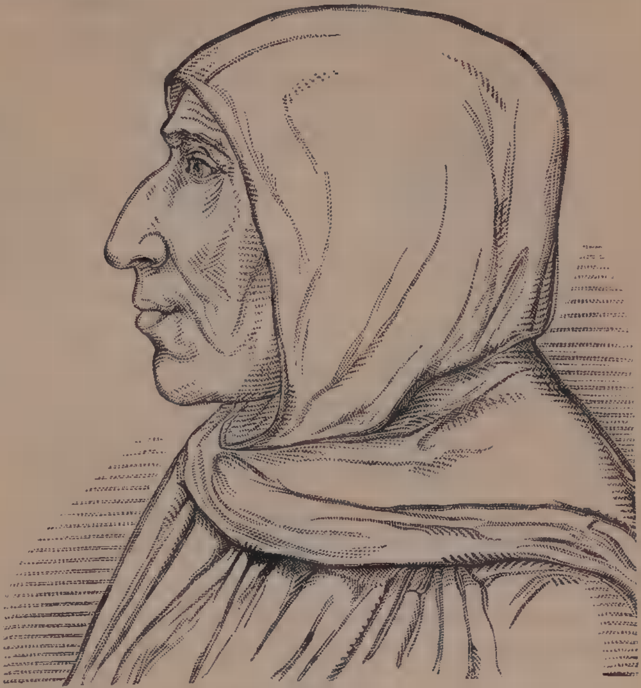

SAVONAROLA.

Adam was, it appears, a *red* man. Winchell tells us that Adam is derived from the *red* earth. The radical letters ÂDâM are found in ADaMaH, "something out of which vegetation was made to germinate," to wit, the earth. ÂDôM and ÂDOM signifies *red*, *ruddy*, *bay-colored*, as of a horse, the color of a red heifer. "ÂDâM, a man, a human being, male or female, *red*, *ruddy*." ("Preadamites," p. 161.)

"The Arabs distinguished mankind into two races, one *red*, *ruddy*, the other black." (*Ibid.*) They classed themselves among the red men.

Not only was Adam a red man, but there is evidence that, from the highest antiquity, red was a sacred color; the gods of the ancients were always painted *red*. The Wisdom of Solomon refers to this custom: "The carpenter carved it elegantly, and formed it by the skill of his understanding, and fashioned it to the shape of a man, or made it like some vile beast, laying it over with vermilion, and with paint, coloring it *red*, and covering every spot therein."

The idols of the Indians were also painted red, and red was the religious color. (Lynd's MS. "Hist. of Dakotas," Library, Hist. Society, Minn.)

The Cushites and Ethiopians, early branches of the Atlantean stock, took their name from their "sunburnt" complexion; they were red men.

The name of the Phœnicians signified *red*. *Himyar*, the prefix of the Himyaritic Arabians, also means red, and the Arabs were painted red on the Egyptian monuments.

The ancient Egyptians were red men. They recognized four races of men—the red, yellow, black, and white men. They themselves belonged to the "*Rot*," or red men; the yellow men they called "*Namu*"—it included the Asiatic races; the black men were called "*Nahsu*," and the white men "*Tamhu*." The following figures are copied from Nott and Gliddon's "Types of Mankind," p. 85, and were taken by them from the great works of Belzoni, Champollion, and Lepsius.

In later ages so desirous were the Egyptians of preserving the aristocratic distinction of the color of their skin, that they represented themselves on the monuments as of a crimson hue—an exaggeration of their original race complexion.

In the same way we find that the ancient Aryan writings divided mankind into four races—the white, red, yellow, and black: the four castes of India were founded upon these distinctions in color; in fact, the word for color in Sanscrit (*varna*) means caste. The red men, according to the *Mahâbhârata*, were the Kshatriyas—the warrior caste—who were afterward engaged in a fierce contest with the whites—the Brahmans—and were nearly exterminated, although some of them survived, and from their stock Buddha was born. So that not only the Mohammedan and Christian but the Buddhistic religion seem to be derived from branches of the Hamitic or red stock. The great Manu was also of the red race.

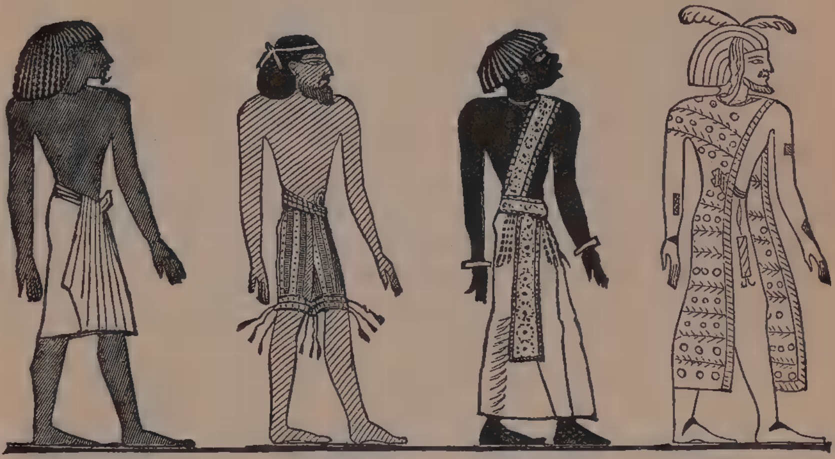
Red. Yellow. Black White.

THE RACES OF MEN ACCORDING TO THE EGYPTIANS.

The Egyptians, while they painted themselves red-brown, represented the nations of Palestine as yellow-brown, and the Libyans yellow-white. The present inhabitants of Egypt range from a yellow color in the north parts to a deep *bronze*. Tylor is of opinion ("Anthropology," p. 95) that the ancient Egyptians belonged to a brown race, which embraced the Nubian tribes and, to some extent, the Berbers of Algiers and Tunis. He groups the Assyrians, Phœnicians, Persians, Greeks, Romans, Andalusians, Bretons, dark Welshmen, and people of the Caucasus into one body, and designates them as "dark-whites." The Himyarite Arabs, as I have shown, derived their name originally from their red color, and they were constantly depicted on the Egyptian monuments as red or light brown. Herodotus tells us that there was a nation of Libyans, called the Maxyans, who claimed descent from the people of Troy (the walls of Troy, we shall see, were built by Poseidon; that is to say, Troy was an Atlantean colony). These Maxyans painted their whole bodies red. The Zavecians, the ancestors of the Zuavas of Algiers (the tribe that gave their name to the French Zouaves), also painted themselves red. Some of the Ethiopians were "copper-colored." ("Amer. Cyclop.," art. *Egypt*, p. 464.) Tylor says ("Anthropology," p. 160): "The language of the ancient Egyptians, though it cannot be classed in the Semitic family with Hebrew, has important points of correspondence, whether due to the long intercourse between the two races in Egypt *or to some deeper ancestral connection;* and such analogies also appear in the Berber languages of North Africa."

These last were called by the ancients the Atlanteans.

> "If a congregation of twelve representatives from Malacca, China, Japan, Mongolia, Sandwich Islands, Chili, Peru, Brazil, Chickasaws, Comanches, etc., were dressed alike, or undressed and unshaven, the most skilful anatomist could not, from their appearance, separate them." (Fontaine's "How the World was Peopled," pp. 147, 244.)

Ferdinand Columbus, in his relation of his father's voyages, compares the inhabitants of Guanaani to the Canary Islanders (an Atlantean race), and describes the inhabitants of San Domingo as still more beautiful and fair. In Peru the Charanzanis, studied by M. Angraud, also resemble the Canary Islanders. L'Abbé Brasseur de Bourbourg imagined himself surrounded by Arabs when all his Indians of Rabinal were around him; for they had, he said, their complexion, features, and beard. Pierre Martyr speaks of the Indians of the Parian Gulf as having fair hair. ("The Human Species," p. 201.) The same author believes that tribes belonging to the Semitic type are also found in America. He refers to "certain traditions of

Guiana, and *the use in the country of a weapon entirely characteristic of the ancient Canary Islanders.*"

When science is able to disabuse itself of the Mortonian theory that the aborigines of America are all red men, and all belong to one race, we may hope that the confluence upon the continent of widely different races from different countries may come to be recognized and intelligently studied. There can be no doubt that red, white, black, and yellow men have united to form the original population of America. And there can be as little doubt that the entire population of Europe and the south shore of the Mediterranean is a mongrel race—a combination, in varying proportions, of a dark-brown or red race with a white race; the characteristics of the different nations depending upon the proportions in which the dark and light races are mingled, for peculiar mental and moral characteristics go with these complexions. The red-haired people are a distinct variety of the white stock; there were once whole tribes and nations with this color of hair; their blood is now intermingled with all the races of men, from Palestine to Iceland. Everything in Europe speaks of vast periods of time and long-continued and constant interfusion of bloods, until there is not a fair-skinned man on the Continent that has not the blood of the dark-haired race in his veins; nor scarcely a dark-skinned man that is not lighter in hue from intermixture with the white stock.

CHAPTER VI.

GENESIS CONTAINS A HISTORY OF ATLANTIS.

THE Hebrews are a branch of the great family of which that powerful commercial race, the Phœnicians, who were the merchants of the world fifteen hundred years before the time of Christ, were a part. The Hebrews carried out from the common storehouse of their race a mass of traditions, many of which have come down to us in that oldest and most venerable of human compositions, the Book of Genesis. I have shown that the story of the Deluge plainly refers to the destruction of Atlantis, and that it agrees in many important particulars with the account given by Plato. The people destroyed were, in both instances, the ancient race that had created civilization; they had formerly been in a happy and sinless condition; they had become great and wicked; they were destroyed for their sins—they were destroyed by water.

But we can go farther, and it can be asserted that there is scarcely a prominent fact in the opening chapters of the Book of Genesis that cannot be duplicated from the legends of the American nations, and scarcely a custom known to the Jews that does not find its counterpart among the people of the New World.

Even in the history of the Creation we find these similarities:

The Bible tells us (Gen. i., 2) that in the beginning the earth was without form and void, and covered with water. In the Quiche legends we are told, "at first all was sea—no man, animal, bird, or green herb—there was nothing to be seen but the sea and the heavens."

The Bible says (Gen. i., 2), "And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters." The Quiche legend says, "The Creator—the Former, the Dominator—the feathered serpent—those that give life, moved upon the waters like a glowing light."

The Bible says (Gen. i., 9), "And God said, Let the waters under the heaven be gathered together unto one place, and let the dry land appear: and it was so." The Quiche legend says, "The creative spirits cried out 'Earth!' and in an instant it was formed, and rose like a vapor-cloud; immediately the plains and the mountains arose, and the cypress and pine appeared."

The Bible tells us, "And God saw that it was good." The Quiche legend says, "Then Gucumatz was filled with joy, and cried out, 'Blessed be thy coming, O Heart of Heaven, Hurakan, thunder-bolt.'"

The order in which the vegetables, animals, and man were formed is the same in both records.

In Genesis (chap. ii., 7) we are told, "And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground." The Quiche legend says, "The first man was made of clay; but he had no intelligence, and was consumed in the water."

In Genesis the first man is represented as naked. The Aztec legend says, "The sun was much nearer the earth then than now, and his grateful warmth rendered clothing unnecessary."

Even the temptation of Eve reappears in the American legends. Lord Kingsborough says: "The Toltecs had paintings of a garden, with a single tree standing in the midst; round the root of the tree is entwined a serpent, whose head appearing above the foliage displays the face of a woman. Torquemada admits the existence of this tradition among them, and agrees with the Indian historians, who affirm that this was the first woman in the world, who bore children, and from whom all mankind are descended." ("Mexican Antiquities," vol. viii., p. 19.) There is also a legend of Suchiquecal, who disobediently gathered roses from a tree, and thereby disgraced and injured herself and all her posterity. ("Mexican Antiquities," vol. vi., p. 401.)

The legends of the Old World which underlie Genesis, and were used by Milton in the "Paradise Lost," appear in the Mexican legends of a war of angels in heaven, and the fall of *Zoutem-que* (*Soutem*, *Satan*—Arabic, *Shatana?*) and the other rebellious spirits.

We have seen that the Central Americans possessed striking parallels to the account of the Deluge in Genesis.

There is also a clearly established legend which singularly resembles the Bible record of the Tower of Babel.

Father Duran, in his MS. "Historia Antiqua de la Nueva Espana," A.D. 1585, quotes from the lips of a native of Cholula, over one hundred years old, a version of the legend as to the building of the great pyramid of Cholula. It is as follows:

"In the beginning, before the light of the sun had been created, this land (Cholula) was in obscurity and darkness, and void of any created thing; all was a plain, without hill or elevation, encircled in every part by water, without tree or created thing; and immediately *after the light and the sun arose in the east* there appeared gigantic men of deformed stature and possessed the land, and desiring to see the nativity of the sun, as well as his occident, proposed to go and seek them. Dividing themselves into two parties, some journeyed to the west and others toward the east; these travelled until the sea cut off their road, whereupon they determined to return to the place from which they started, and arriving at this place (Cholula), not finding the means of reaching the sun, enamored of his light and beauty, they determined to build a tower so high that its summit should reach the sky. Having collected materials for the purpose, they found a very adhesive clay and bitumen, with which they speedily commenced to build the tower; and having reared it to the greatest possible altitude, so that they say it reached to the sky, the Lord of the Heavens, enraged, said to the inhabitants of the sky, 'Have you observed how they of the earth have built a high and haughty tower to mount hither, being enamored of the light of the sun and

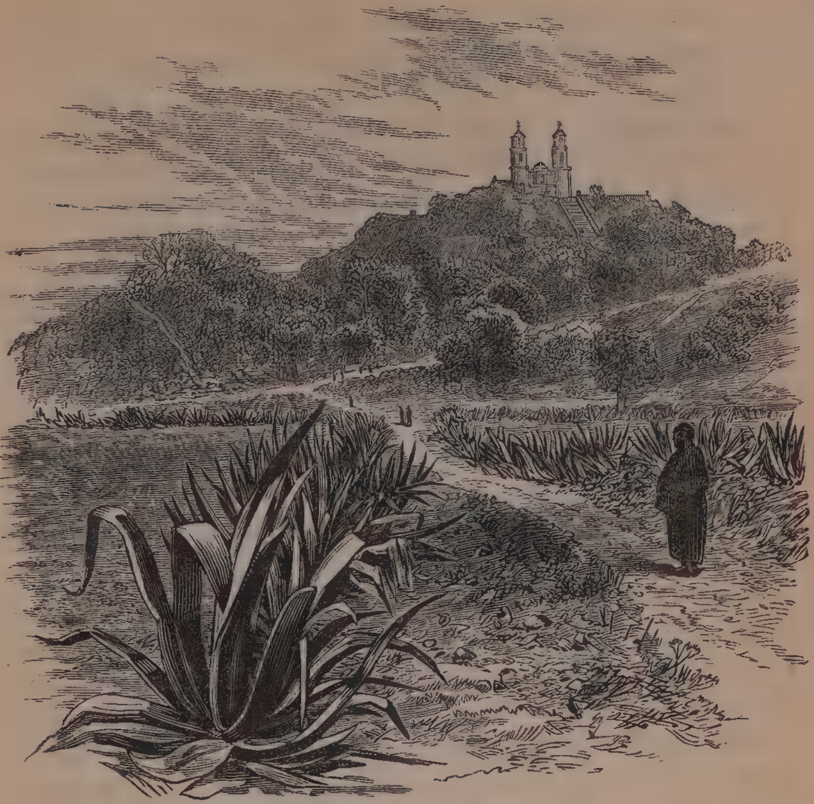

RUINS OF THE PYRAMID OF CHOLULA.

his beauty? Come and confound them, because it is not right that they of the earth, living in the flesh, should mingle with us.' Immediately the inhabitants of the sky sallied forth like flashes of lightning; they destroyed the edifice, and divided and scattered its builders to all parts of the earth."

One can recognize in this legend the recollection, by a ruder race, of a highly civilized people; for only a highly civilized people would have attempted such a vast work. Their mental superiority and command of the arts gave them the character of giants who arrived from the East; who had divided into two great emigrations, one moving eastward (toward Europe), the other westward (toward America). They were sun-worshippers; for we are told "they were enamored of the light and beauty of the sun," and they built a high place for his worship.

The pyramid of Cholula is one of the greatest constructions ever erected by human hands. It is even now, in its ruined condition, 160 feet high, 1400 feet square at the base, and covers forty-five acres; we have only to remember that the greatest pyramid of Egypt, Cheops, covers but twelve or thirteen acres, to form some conception of the magnitude of this American structure.

It must not be forgotten that this legend was taken down by a Catholic priest, shortly after the conquest of Mexico, from the lips of an old Indian who was born before Columbus sailed from Spain.

Observe the resemblances between this legend and the Bible account of the building of the Tower of Babel:

"All was a plain without hill or elevation," says the Indian legend. "They found a plain in the land of Shinar, and they dwelt there," says the Bible. They built of brick in both cases. "Let us build us a tower whose top may reach unto heaven," says the Bible. "They determined to build a tower so high that its summit should reach the sky," says the Indian legend. "And the Lord came down to see the city and the tower which the children of men had builded. And the Lord said, Behold . . . nothing will be restrained from them which they have imagined to do. Go to, let us go down and confound them," says the Bible record. "The Lord of the Heavens, enraged, said to the inhabitants of the sky, 'Have you observed,' etc. Come and confound them," says the Indian record. "And the Lord scattered them abroad from thence on all the face of the earth," says the Bible. "They scattered its builders to all parts of the earth," says the Mexican legend.

Can any one doubt that these two legends must have sprung in some way from one another, or from some common source? There are enough points of difference to show that the American is not a servile copy of the Hebrew legend. In the former the story comes from a native of Cholula: it is told under the shadow of the mighty pyramid it commemorates; it is a *local* legend which he repeats. The men who built it, according to his account, were foreigners. They built it to reach the sun—that is to say, as a sun-temple; while in the Bible record Babel was built to perpetuate the glory of its architects. In the Indian legend the gods stop the work by a great storm, in the Bible account by confounding the speech of the people.

Both legends were probably derived from Atlantis, and referred to some gigantic structure of great height built by that people; and when the story emigrated to the east and west, it was in the one case affixed to the tower of the Chaldeans, and in the other to the pyramid of Cholula, precisely as we find the ark of the Deluge resting upon separate mountain-chains all the way from Greece to Armenia. In one form of the Tower of Babel legend, that of the Toltecs, we are told that the pyramid of Cholula was erected "as a means of escape from a second flood, should another occur."

But the resemblances between Genesis and the American legends do not stop here.

We are told (Gen. ii., 21) that "the Lord God caused a deep sleep to fall upon Adam," and while he slept God made Eve out of one of his ribs. According to the Quiche tradition, there were four men from whom the races of the world descended (probably a recollection of the red, black, yellow, and white races); and these men were without wives, and the Creator made wives for them "while they slept."

Some wicked misanthrope referred to these traditions when he said, "And man's first sleep became his last repose."

In Genesis (chap. iii., 22), "And the Lord God said, Behold, the man is become as one of us, to know good and evil: and now, lest he put forth his hand, and take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live forever:" therefore God drove him out of the garden. In the Quiche legends we are told, "The gods feared that they had made men too perfect, and they breathed a cloud of mist over their vision."

When the ancestors of the Quiches migrated to America the Divinity parted the sea for their passage, as the Red Sea was parted for the Israelites.

The story of Samson is paralleled in the history of a hero named Zipanca, told of in the "Popol Vuh," who, being captured by his enemies and placed in a pit, pulled down the building in which his captors had assembled, and killed four hundred of them.

"There were giants in those days," says the Bible. A great deal of the Central American history is taken up with the doings of an ancient race of giants called Quinames.

This parallelism runs through a hundred particulars:

Both the Jews and Mexicans worshipped toward the east. Both called the south "the right hand of the world."

Both burnt incense toward the four corners of the earth.

Confession of sin and sacrifice of atonement were common to both peoples.

Both were punctilious about washings and ablutions.

Both believed in devils, and both were afflicted with leprosy.

Both considered women who died in childbirth as worthy of honor as soldiers who fell in battle.

Both punished adultery with stoning to death.

As David leaped and danced before the ark of the Lord, so did the Mexican monarchs before their idols.

Both had an ark, the abiding-place of an invisible god.

Both had a species of serpent-worship.

Compare our representation of the great serpent-mound in Adams County, Ohio, with the following description of a great serpent-mound in Scotland:

"*Serpent-worship in the West.*—Some additional light appears to have been thrown upon ancient serpent-worship in the West by the recent archæological explorations of Mr. John S. Phené, F.G.S., F.R.G.S., in Scotland. Mr. Phené has just investigated a curious earthen mound in Glen Feechan, Argyleshire, referred to by him, at the late meeting of the British Association in Edinburgh, as being in the form of a serpent or saurian. The mound, says the *Scotsman*, is a most perfect one. The head is a large cairn, and the body of the earthen reptile 300 feet long; and in the centre of the head there were evidences, when Mr. Phené first visited it, of an altar having been placed there. The position with regard to Ben Cruachan is most remarkable.

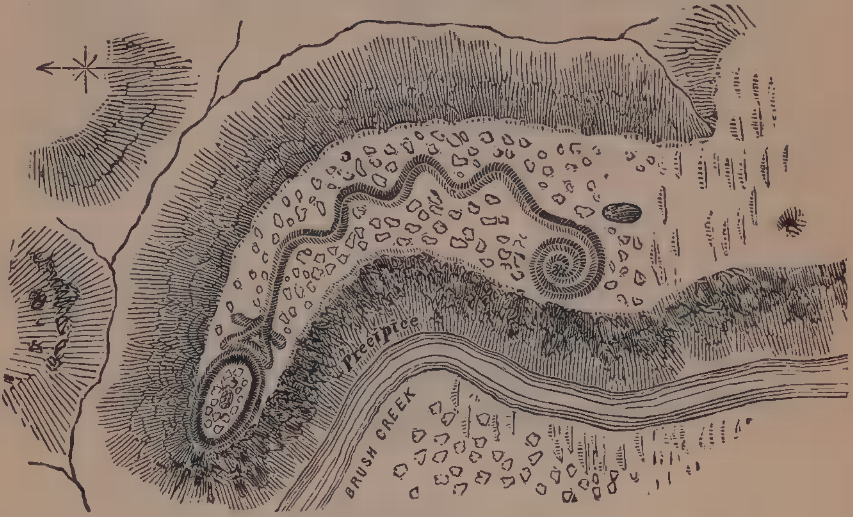

GREAT SERPENT-MOUND, OHIO.

The three peaks are seen over the length of the reptile when a person is standing on the head, or cairn. The shape can only be seen so as to be understood when looked down upon from an elevation, as the outline cannot be understood unless the whole of it can be seen. This is most perfect when the spectator is on the head of the animal form, or on the lofty rock to the west of it. This mound corresponds almost entirely with one 700 feet long in America, an account of which was lately published, after careful survey, by Mr. Squier. The altar toward the head in each case agrees. In the American mound three rivers (also objects of worship with the ancients) were evidently identified. The number three was a sacred number in all ancient mythologies. The sinuous winding and articulations of the vertebral spinal arrangement are anatomically perfect in the Argyleshire mound. The gentlemen present with Mr. Phené during his investigation state that beneath the cairn forming the head of the animal was found a megalithic chamber, in which was a quantity of charcoal and burnt earth and charred nutshells, a flint instrument, beautifully and minutely serrated at the edge, and burnt bones. The back or spine of the serpent, which, as already stated, is 300 feet long, was found, beneath the peat moss, to be formed by a careful adjustment of stones, the formation of which probably prevented the structure from being obliterated by time and weather." (*Pall Mall Gazette.*)

We find a striking likeness between the works of the Stone Age in America and Europe, as shown in the figures here given.

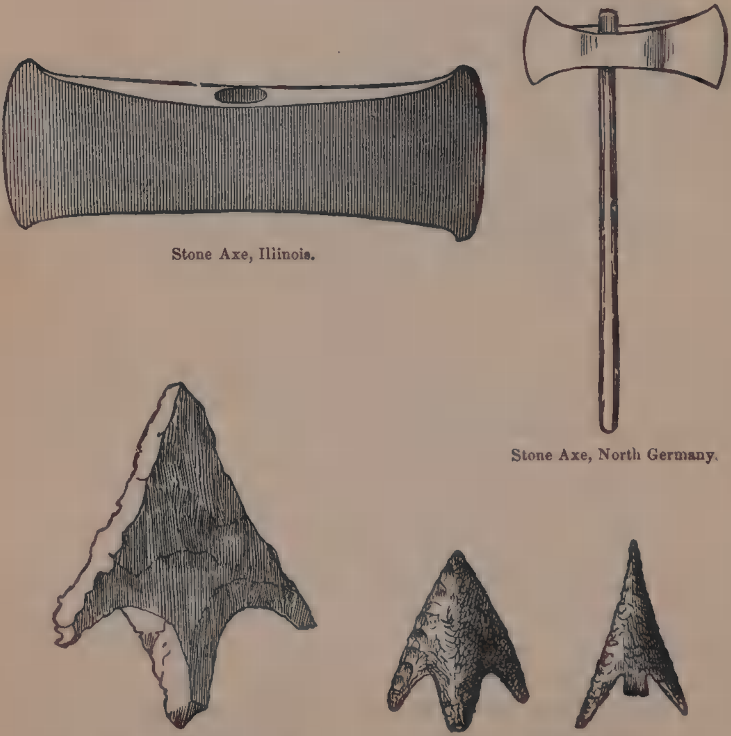

Stone Axe, Illinois.

Stone Axe, North Germany.

Stone Arrow-head, Switzerland.

Stone Arrow-heads, America.

STONE IMPLEMENTS OF EUROPE AND AMERICA.

The same singular custom which is found among the Jews and the Hindoos, for "a man to raise up seed for his deceased brother by marrying his widow," was found among the Central American nations. (Las Casas, MS. "Hist. Apoloq.," cap. ccxiii., ccxv. Torquemada, "Monarq. Ind.," tom. ii., 377–8.)

No one but the Jewish high-priest might enter the Holy of Holies. A similar custom obtained in Peru. Both ate the flesh of the sacrifices of atonement; both poured the blood of the sacrifice on the earth; they sprinkled it, they marked persons with it, they smeared it upon walls and stones. The Mexican temple, like the Jewish, faced the east. "As among the Jews the ark was a sort of portable temple, in which the Deity was supposed to be continually present, so among the Mexicans, the Cherokees, and the Indians of Michoacan and Honduras, an ark was held in the highest veneration, and was considered an object too sacred to be touched by any but the priests." (Kingsborough, "Mex. Antiq.," vol. viii., p. 258.)

The Peruvians believed that the rainbow was a sign that the earth would not be again destroyed by a deluge. (*Ibid.*, p. 25.)

The Jewish custom of laying the sins of the people upon the head of an animal, and turning him out into the wilderness, had its counterpart among the Mexicans, who, to cure a fever, formed a dog of maize paste and left it by the roadside, saying the first passer-by would carry away the illness. (Dorman, "Prim. Super.," p. 59.) Jacob's ladder had its duplicate in the vine or tree of the Ojibbeways, which led from the earth to heaven, up and down which the spirits passed. (*Ibid.*, p. 67.)

Both Jews and Mexicans offered water to a stranger that he might wash his feet; both ate dust in token of humility; both anointed with oil; both sacrificed prisoners; both periodically separated the women, and both agreed in the strong and universal idea of uncleanness connected with that period.

Both believed in the occult power of water, and both practised baptism.

> "Then the Mexican midwife gave the child to taste of the water, putting her moistened fingers in its mouth, and said, 'Take this; by this thou hast to live on the earth, to grow and to flourish; through this we get all things that support existence on the earth; receive it.' Then with moistened fingers she touched the breast of the child, and said, 'Behold the pure water that washes and cleanses thy heart, that removes all filthiness; receive it: may the goddess see good to purify and cleanse thine heart.' Then the midwife poured water upon the head of the child, saying, 'O my grandson—my son—take this water of the Lord of the world, which is thy life, invigorating and refreshing, washing and cleansing. I pray that this celestial water, blue and light blue, may enter into thy body, and there live; I pray that it may destroy in thee and put away from thee all the things evil and adverse that were *given thee before the beginning of the world*. . . . Wheresoever thou art in this child, O thou hurtful thing, begone! leave it, put thyself apart; for now does it live anew, and *anew is it born;* now again is it purified and cleansed; now again is it shaped and engendered by our mother, the goddess of water." (Bancroft's "Native Races," vol. iii., p. 372.)

Here we find many resemblances to the Christian ordinance of baptism: the pouring of the water on the head, the putting of the fingers in the mouth, the touching of the breast, the new birth, and the washing away of the original sin. The Christian rite, we know, was not a Christian invention, but was borrowed from ancient times, from the great storehouse of Asiatic traditions and beliefs.

The Mexicans hung up the heads of their sacrificed enemies; this was also a Jewish custom:

> "And the Lord said unto Moses, Take all the heads of the people, and hang them up before the Lord against the sun, that the fierce anger of the Lord may be turned away from Israel. And Moses said unto the judges of Israel, Slay ye every one his men that were joined unto Baal-peor." (Numb., xxv., 4, 5.)

The Scythians, Herodotus tells us, scalped their enemies, and carried the scalp at the pommel of their saddles; the Jews probably scalped their enemies:

> "But God shall wound the head of his enemies, and the hairy scalp of such a one as goeth on still in his trespasses." (Psa., lxviii., 21.)

The ancient Scandinavians practised scalping. When Harold Harefoot seized his rival, Alfred, with six hundred followers, he "had them maimed, blinded, hamstrung, *scalped*, or embowelled." (Taine's "Hist. Eng. Lit.," p. 35.)

Herodotus describes the Scythian mode of taking the scalp: "He makes a cut round the head near the ears, and shakes the skull out." This is precisely the Indian custom. "The more scalps a man has," says Herodotus, "the more highly he is esteemed among them."

The Indian scalp-lock is found on the Egyptian monuments as one of the characteristics of the Japhetic Libyans, who shaved all the head except one lock in the middle.

The Mantchoos of Tartary wear a scalp-lock, as do the modern Chinese.

Byron describes the heads of the dead Tartars under the walls of Corinth, devoured by the wild dogs:

> "Crimson and green were the shawls of their wear,
> And each scalp had a single long tuft of hair,
> All the rest was shaven and bare."

These resemblances are so striking and so numerous that repeated attempts have been made to prove that the inhabitants of America are the descendants of the Jews; some have claimed that they represented "the lost tribes" of that people. But the Jews were never a maritime or emigrating people; they formed no colonies; and it is impossible to believe (as has been asserted) that they left their flocks and herds, marched across the whole face of Asia, took ships and sailed across the greatest of the oceans to a continent of the existence of which they had no knowledge.

If we seek the origin of these extraordinary coincidences in opinions and habits, we must go far back of the time of the lost tribes. We must seek it in the relationship of the Jews to the family of Noah, and in the identity of the Noachic race destroyed in the Deluge with the people of the drowned Atlantis.

Nor need it surprise us to find traditions perpetuated for thousands upon thousands of years, especially among a people having a religious priesthood.

The essence of religion is conservatism; little is invented; nothing perishes; change comes from without; and even when one religion is supplanted by another its gods live on as the demons of the new faith, or they pass into the folk-lore and fairy stories of the people. We see Votan, a hero in America, become the god Odin or Woden in Scandinavia; and when his worship as a god dies out Odin survives (as Dr. Dasent has proved) in the Wild Huntsman of the Hartz, and in the Robin Hood (Oodin) of popular legend. The Hellequin of France becomes the Harlequin of our pantomimes. William Tell never existed; he is a myth; a survival of the sun-god Apollo, Indra, who was worshipped on the altars of Atlantis.

> "Nothing here but it doth change
> Into something rich and strange."

The rite of circumcision dates back to the first days of Phœnicia, Egypt, and the Cushites. It, too, was probably an Atlantean custom, invented in the Stone Age. Tens of thousands of years have passed since the Stone Age; the ages of copper, bronze, and iron have intervened; and yet to this day the Hebrew rabbi performs the ceremony of circumcision with a *stone* knife.

Frothingham says, speaking of St. Peter's Cathedral, in Rome:

"Into what depths of antiquity the ceremonies carried me back! To the mysteries of Eleusis; to the sacrificial rites of Phœnicia. The boys swung the censors as censors had been swung in the adoration of Bacchus. The girdle and cassock of the priests came from Persia; the veil and tonsure were from Egypt; the alb and chasuble were prescribed by Numa Pompilius; the stole was borrowed from the official who used to throw it on the back of the victim that was to be sacrificed; the white surplice was the same as described by Juvenal and Ovid."

Although it is evident that many thousands of years must have passed since the men who wrote in Sanscrit, in Northwestern India, could have dwelt in Europe, yet to this day they preserve among their ancient books maps and descriptions of the western coast of Europe, and even of England and Ireland; and we find among them a fuller knowledge of the vexed question of the sources of the Nile than was possessed by any nation in the world twenty-five years ago.

This perpetuation of forms and beliefs is illustrated in the fact that the formulas used in the Middle Ages in Europe to exorcise evil spirits were Assyrian words, imported probably thousands of years before from the magicians of Chaldea. When the European conjurer cried out to the demon, "*Hilka, hilka, besha, besha,*" he had no idea that he was repeating the very words of a people who had perished ages before, and that they signified *Go away, go away, evil one, evil one.* (Lenormant, "Anc. Hist. East," vol. i., p. 448.)

Our circle of 360 degrees; the division of a chord of the circle equal to the radius into 60 equal parts, called degrees; the division of these into 60 minutes, of the minute into 60 seconds, and the second into 60 thirds; the division of the day into 24 hours, each hour into 60 minutes, each minute into 60 seconds; the division of the week into seven days, and the very order of the days—all have come down to us from the Chaldeo-Assyrians; and these things will probably be perpetuated among our posterity "to the last syllable of recorded time."

We need not be surprised, therefore, to find the same legends and beliefs cropping out among the nations of Central America and the people of Israel. Nay, it should teach us to regard the Book of Genesis with increased veneration, as a relic dating from the most ancient days of man's history on earth; its roots cross the great ocean; every line is valuable; a word, a letter, an accent may throw light upon the gravest problems of the birth of civilization.

The vital conviction which, during thousands of years, at all times pressed home upon the Israelites, was that they were a "chosen people," selected out of all the multitudes of the earth, to perpetuate the great truth that there was but one God—an illimitable, omnipotent, paternal spirit, who rewarded the good and punished the wicked—in contradistinction from the multifarious, subordinate, animal and bestial demi-gods of the other nations of the earth. This sublime monotheism could only have been the outgrowth of a high civilization, for man's first religion is necessarily a worship of "stocks and stones," and history teaches us that the gods decrease in number as man increases in intelligence. It was probably in Atlantis that monotheism was first preached. The proverbs of "Ptah-hotep," the oldest book of the Egyptians, show that this most ancient colony from Atlantis received the pure faith from the mother-land at the very dawn of history: this book preached the doctrine of *one* God, "the rewarder of the good and the punisher of the wicked." (Reginald S. Poole, *Contemporary Rev.*, Aug., 1881, p. 38.) "In the early days the Egyptians worshipped one only God, the maker of all things, without beginning and without end. To the last the priests preserved this doctrine and taught it privately to a select few." ("Amer. Encycl.," vol. vi., p. 463.) The Jews took up this great truth where the Egyptians dropped it, and over the heads and over the ruins of Egypt, Chaldea, Phœnicia, Greece, Rome, and India this handful of poor shepherds—ignorant, debased, and despised—have carried down to our own times a conception which could only have originated in the highest possible state of human society.

And even skepticism must pause before the miracle of the continued existence of this strange people, wading through the ages, bearing on their shoulders the burden of their great trust, and pressing forward under the force of a perpetual and irresistible impulse. The speech that may be heard to-day in the synagogues of Chicago and Melbourne resounded two thousand years ago in the streets of Rome; and, at a still earlier period, it could be heard in the palaces of Babylon and the shops of Thebes—in Tyre, in Sidon, in Gades, in Palmyra, in Nineveh. How many nations have perished, how many languages have ceased to exist, how many splendid civilizations have crumbled into ruin, how many temples and towers and towns have gone down to dust since the sublime frenzy of monotheism first seized this extraordinary people! All their kindred nomadic tribes are gone; their land of promise is in the hands of strangers; but Judaism, with its offspring, Christianity, is taking possession of the habitable world; and the continuous life of one people—one poor, obscure, and wretched people—spans the tremendous gulf between "Ptah-hotep" and this nineteenth century.

If the Spirit of which the universe is but an expression—of whose frame the stars are the infinite molecules—can be supposed ever to interfere with the laws of matter and reach down into the doings of men, would it not be to save from the wreck and waste of time the most sublime fruit of the civilization of the drowned Atlantis—a belief in the one, only, just God, the father of all life, the imposer of all moral obligations?

CHAPTER VII.

THE ORIGIN OF OUR ALPHABET.

ONE of the most marvellous inventions for the advancement of mankind is the phonetic alphabet, or a system of signs representing the sounds of human speech. Without it our present civilization could scarcely have been possible.

No solution of the origin of our European alphabet has yet been obtained: we can trace it back from nation to nation, and form to form, until we reach the Egyptians, and the archaic forms of the Phœnicians, Hebrews, and Cushites, but beyond this the light fails us.

The Egyptians spoke of their hieroglyphic system of writing not as their own invention, but as "the language of the gods." (Lenormant and Cheval, "Anc. Hist. of the East," vol. ii., p. 208.) "The gods" were, doubtless, their highly civilized ancestors—the people of Atlantis—who, as we shall hereafter see, became the gods of many of the Mediterranean races.

> "According to the Phœnicians, the art of writing was invented by Taautus, or Taut, 'whom the Egyptians call Thouth,' and the Egyptians said it was invented by Thouth, or Thoth, otherwise called 'the first Hermes,' in which we clearly see that both the Phœnicians and Egyptians referred the invention to a period older than their own separate political existence, and to an older nation, from which both peoples received it." (Baldwin's "Prehistoric Nations," p. 91.)

The "first Hermes," here referred to (afterward called Mercury by the Romans), was a son of Zeus and *Maia*, a daughter of Atlas. This is the same *Maia* whom the Abbé Brasseur de Bourbourg identifies with the Maya of Central America.

Sir William Drummond, in his "Origines," said:

> "There seems to be no way of accounting either for the early use of letters among so many different nations, or for the resemblance which existed between some of the graphic systems employed by those nations, than by supposing hieroglyphical writing, if I may be allowed the term, to have been in use among the Tsabaists in the first ages after the Flood, when Tsabaism (planet-worship) was the religion of almost every country that was yet inhabited."

Sir Henry Rawlinson says:

> "So great is the analogy between the first principles of the science of writing, as it appears to have been pursued in Chaldea, and as we can actually trace its progress in Egypt, that we can hardly hesitate to assign the original invention *to a period before the Hamitic race had broken up and divided.*"

It is not to be believed that such an extraordinary system of sound-signs could have been the invention of any one man or even of any one age. Like all our other acquisitions, it must have been the slow growth and accretion of ages; it must have risen step by step from picture-writing through an intermediate condition like that of the Chinese, where each word or thing was represented by a separate sign. The fact that so old and enlightened a people as the Chinese have never reached a phonetic alphabet, gives us some indication of the greatness of the people among whom it was invented, and the lapse of time before they attained to it.

Humboldt says:

> "According to the views which, since Champollion's great discovery, have been gradually adopted regarding the earlier condition of the development of alphabetical writing, the Phœnician as well as the Semitic characters are to be regarded as a phonetic alphabet that has originated from pictorial writing; as one in which the ideal signification of the symbols is wholly disregarded, and the characters are regarded as mere signs for sounds." ("Cosmos," vol. ii., p. 129.)

Baldwin says ("Prehistoric Nations," p. 93):

"The nation that became mistress of the seas, established communication with every shore, and monopolized the commerce of the known world, must have substituted a phonetic alphabet for the hieroglyphics as it gradually grew to this eminence; while isolated Egypt, less affected by the practical wants and tendencies of commercial enterprise, retained the hieroglyphic system, and carried it to a marvellous height of perfection."

It must be remembered that some of the letters of our alphabet are inventions of the later nations. In the oldest alphabets there was no *c*, the *g* taking its place. The Romans converted the *g* into *c;* and then, finding the necessity for a *g* sign, made one by adding a tail-piece to the *c* (*C*, *G*). The Greeks added to the ancient alphabet the *upsilon*, shaped like our V or Y, the two forms being used at first indifferently: they added the X sign; they converted the t̲ of the Phœnicians into *th*, or *theta;* *z* and *s* into signs for double consonants; they turned the Phœnician *y* (*yod*) into *i* (*iota*). The Greeks converted the Phœnician alphabet, which was partly consonantal, into one purely phonetic—"a perfect instrument for the expression of spoken language." The *w* was also added to the Phœnician alphabet. The Romans added the *y*. At first *i* and *j* were both indicated by the same sound; a sign for *j* was afterward added. We have also, in common with other European languages, added a double U, that is, VV, or W, to represent the *w* sound.

The letters, then, which we owe to the Phœnicians, are A, B, C, D, E, H, I, K, L, M, N, O, P, Q, R, S, T, Z. If we are to trace out resemblances with the alphabet of any other country, it must be with these signs.

Is there any other country to which we can turn which possessed a phonetic alphabet in any respect kindred to this Phœnician alphabet? It cannot be the Chinese alphabet, which has more signs than words; it cannot be the cuneiform alphabet of Assyria, with its seven hundred arrow-shaped characters, none of which bear the slightest affinity to the Phœnician letters.

It is a surprising fact that *we find in Central America a phonetic alphabet.* This is in the alphabet of the Mayas, the ancient people of the peninsula of Yucatan, who claim that their civilization came to them *across the sea in ships from the east,* that is, from the direction of Atlantis. The Mayas succeeded to the Colhuas, whose era terminated one thousand years before the time of Christ; from them they received their alphabet. It has come to us through Bishop Landa, one of the early missionary bishops, who confesses to having burnt a great number of Maya books because they contained nothing but the works of the devil. He fortunately, however, preserved for posterity the alphabet of this people. We present it herewith.

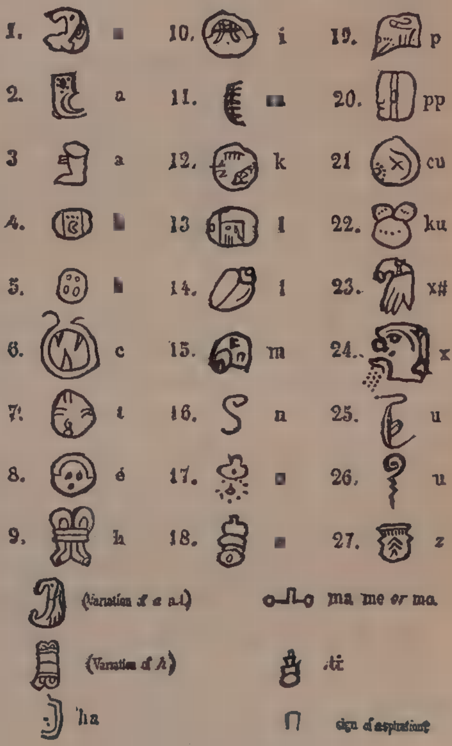
1.
10.
i
19.
p
2.
a
11.
20.
pp
3
a
12.
k
21
cu
4.
13
l
22.
ku
5.
14.
l
23.
x#
6.
c
15.
m
24.
x
7.
t
16.
n
25.
u
8.
é
17.
26.
u
9.
h
18.
27.
z
(Variation of a a.l)
ma me or ma.
(Variation of h)
ti
ha
sign of aspiration

LANDA'S ALPHABET.

(From "North Amer. of Antiquity," p. 424.)

Diego de Landa was the first bishop of Yucatan. He wrote a history of the Mayas and their country, which was preserved in manuscript at Madrid in the library of the Royal Academy of History. . . . It contains a description and explanation of the phonetic alphabet of the Mayas. Landa's manuscript seems to have lain neglected in the library, for little or nothing was heard of it until it was discovered by the French priest Brasseur de Bourbourg, who, by means of it, has deciphered some of the old American writings. He says, 'the alphabet and signs explained by Landa have been to me a Rosetta stone.'" (Baldwin's "Ancient America," p. 191.)

When we observe, in the table of alphabets of different European nations which I give herewith, how greatly the forms of the Phœnician letters have been modified, it would surprise us to find any resemblance between the Maya alphabet of two or three centuries since and the ancient European forms. It must, however, be remembered that the Mayas are one of the most conservative peoples in the world. They still adhere with striking pertinacity to the language they spoke when Columbus landed on San Salvador; and it is believed that that language is the same as the one inscribed on the most ancient monuments of their country. Señor Pimental says of them, "The Indians have preserved this idiom with such tenacity that they will speak no other; it is necessary for the whites to address them in their own language to communicate with them." It is therefore probable, as their alphabet did not pass from nation to nation, as did the Phœnician, that it has not departed so widely from the original forms received from the Colhuas.

But when we consider the vast extent of time which has elapsed, and the fact that we are probably without the intermediate stages of the alphabet which preceded the archaic Phœnician, it will be astonishing if we find resemblances between *any* of the Maya letters and the European forms, even though we concede that they are related. If we find decided affinities between two or three letters, we may reasonably presume that similar coincidences existed as to many others which have disappeared under the attrition of centuries.

The first thought that occurs to us on examining the Landa alphabet is the complex and ornate character of the letters. Instead of the two or three strokes with which we indicate a sign for a sound, we have here rude pictures of objects. And we find that these are themselves simplifications of older forms

The Alphabet.

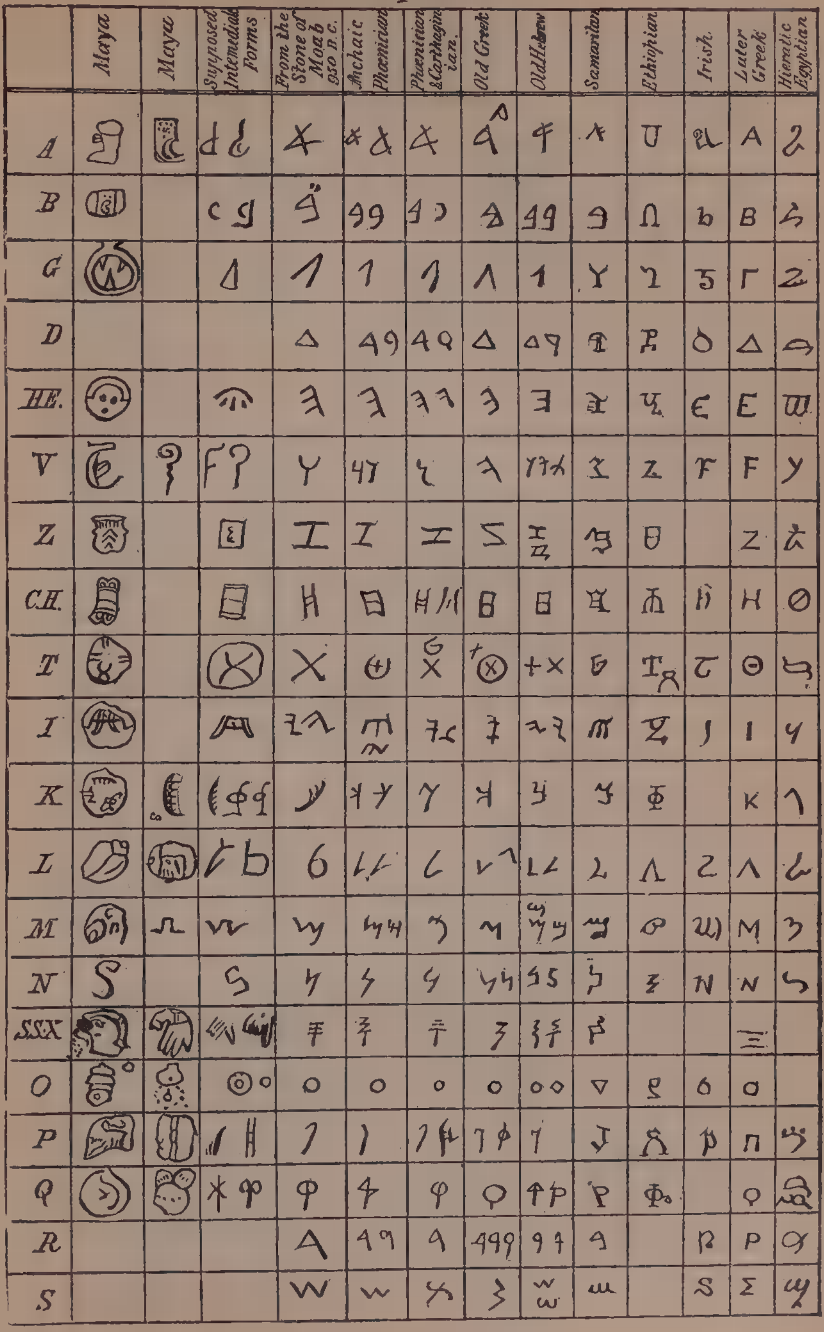
Maya
Maya
Supposed Intermediate Forms
From the Stone of Moab 950 B.C.
Archaic Phœnician
Phœnician & Carthaginian.
Old Greek
Old Hebrew
Samaritan
Ethiopian
Irish.
Later Greek
Hieratic Egyptian
A
B
G
D
HE.
V
Z
CH.
T
I
K
L
M
N
SSX
O
P
Q
R
S

of a still more complex character. Take, for instance, the letter *pp* in Landa's alphabet, 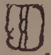: here are evidently the traces of a face. The same appear, but not so plainly, in the sign for *x*, which is 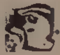. Now, if we turn to the ancient hieroglyphics upon the monuments of Central America, we will find the human face appearing in a great many of them, as in the following, which we copy from the Tablet of the Cross at Palenque. We take the hieroglyphs from the left-hand side of the inscription. Here it will be seen that, out of seven hieroglyphical figures, six contain human faces. And we find that in the whole inscription of the Tablet of the Cross there are 33 figures out of 108 that are made up in part of the human countenance.

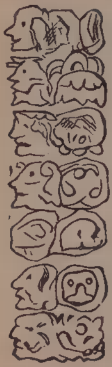

We can see, therefore, in the Landa alphabet a tendency to simplification. And this is what we would naturally expect. When the emblems—which were probably first intended for religious inscriptions, where they could be slowly and carefully elaborated—were placed in the hands of a busy, active, commercial people, such as were the Atlanteans, and afterward the Phœnicians, men with whom time was valuable, the natural tendency would be to simplify and condense them; and when the original meaning of the picture was lost, they would naturally slur it, as we find in the letters *pp* and *x* of the Maya alphabet, where the figure of the human face remains only in rude lines.

The same tendency is plainly shown in the two forms of the letter *h*, as given in Landa's alphabet; the original form is more elaborate than the variation of it. The original form is 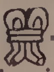. The variation is given as 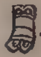. Now let us suppose this simplification to be carried a step farther: we have seen the upper and lower parts of the first form shrink into a smaller and less elaborate shape; let us imagine that the same tendency does away with them altogether; we would then have the letter H of the Maya alphabet represented by this figure, ; now, as it takes less time to make a single stroke than a double one, this would become in time . We turn now to the archaic Greek and the old Hebrew, and we find the letter *h* indicated by this sign, , precisely the Maya letter *h* simplified. We turn to the archaic Hebrew, and we find it . Now it is known that the Phœnicians wrote from right to left, and just as we in writing from left to right slope our letters to the right, so did the Phœnicians slope their letters to the left. Hence the Maya sign becomes in the archaic Phœnician this, . In some of the Phœnician alphabets we even find the letter *h* made with the double strokes above and below, as in the Maya *h*. The Egyptian hieroglyph for *h* is 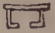 while *ch* is . In time the Greeks carried the work of simplification still farther, and eliminated the top lines, as we have supposed the Atlanteans to have eliminated the double strokes, and they left the letter as it has come down to us, H.

Now it may be said that all this is coincidence. If it is, it is certainly remarkable. But let us go a step farther:

We have seen in Landa's alphabet that there are two forms of the letter *m*. The first is 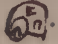. But we find also an *m* combined with the letter *o*, *a*, or *e*, says Landa, in this form, 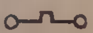. The *m* here is certainly indicated by the central part of this combination, the figure 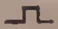; where does that come from? It is clearly taken from the heart of the original figure wherein it appears. What does this prove? That the Atlanteans, or Mayas, when they sought to simplify their letters and combine them with others, took from the centre of the ornate hieroglyphical figure some characteristic mark with which they represented the whole figure. Now let us apply this rule:

We have seen in the table of alphabets that in every language, from our own day to the time of the Phœnicians, *o* has been represented by a circle or a circle within a circle. Now where did the Phœnicians get it? Clearly from the Mayas. There are two figures for *o* in the Maya alphabet; they are

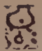 and 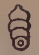; now, if we apply the rule which we have seen to exist in the case of the Maya *m* to these figures, the essential characteristic found in each is the circle, in the first case pendant from the hieroglyph; in the other, in the centre of the lower part of it. And that this circle was withdrawn from the hieroglyph, and used alone, as in the case of the *m*, is proved by the very sign used at the foot of Landa's alphabet, which is, 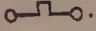. Landa calls this *ma*, *me*, or *mo*; it is probably the latter, and in it we have the circle detached from the hieroglyph.

We find the precise Maya *o* a circle in a circle, or a dot within a circle, repeated in the Phœnician forms for *o*, thus, ⊙ and ◎, and by exactly the same forms in the Egyptian hieroglyphics; in the Runic we have the circle in the circle; in one form of the Greek *o* the dot was placed along-side of the circle instead of below it, as in the Maya.

Are these another set of coincidences?

Take another letter:

The letter *n* of the Maya alphabet is represented by this sign, itself probably a simplification of some more ornate form, . This is something like our letter S, but quite unlike our N. But let us examine into the pedigree of our *n*. We find in the archaic Ethiopian, a language as old as the Egyptian, and which represents the Cushite branch of the Atlantean stock, the sign for *n* (*na*) is ; in archaic Phœnician it comes still closer to the S shape, thus, , or in this form, ; we have but to curve these angles to approximate it very closely to the Maya *n*; in Troy this form was found, . The Samaritan makes it ; the old Hebrew ; the Moab stone inscription gives it ; the later Phœnicians simplified the archaic form still further, until it became ; then it passed into : the archaic Greek form is 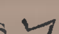; the later Greeks made , from which it passed into the present form, N. All these forms seem to be representations of a serpent; we turn to the valley of the Nile, and we find that the Egyptian hieroglyphic for *n* was the serpent, 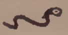; the Pelasgian *n* was ; the Arcadian, ; the Etruscan, .

Can anything be more significant than to find the serpent the sign for *n* in Central America, and in all these Old World languages?

Now turn to the letter *k*. The Maya sign for *k* is 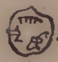. This does not look much like our letter K; but let us examine it. Following the precedent established for us by the Mayas in the case of the letter *m*, let us see what is the distinguishing feature here; it is clearly the figure of a serpent standing erect, with its tail doubled around its middle, forming a circle. It has already been remarked by Savolini that this erect serpent is very much like the Egyptian *Uræus*, an erect serpent with an enlarged body—a sacred emblem found in the hair of their deities. We turn again to the valley of the Nile, and we find that the Egyptian hieroglyphic for *k* was a serpent with a convolution or protuberance in the middle, precisely as in the Maya, thus, 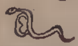; this was transformed into the Egyptian letter ; the serpent and the protuberance reappear in one of the Phœnician forms of *k*, to wit, 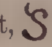; while in the Punic we have these forms, and . Now suppose a busy people trying to give this sign: instead of drawing the serpent in all its details they would abbreviate it into something like this, ; now we turn to the ancient Ethiopian sign for *k* (*ka*), and we have , or the Himyaritic Arabian ; while in the Phœnician it becomes ; in the archaic Greek, ; and in the later Greek, when they changed the writing from left to right, K. So that the two lines projecting from the upright stroke of our English K are a reminiscence of the convolution of the serpent in the Maya original and the Egyptian copy.

Turn now to the Maya sign for *t*: it is 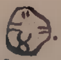. What is the distinctive mark about this figure? It is the cross composed of two curved lines, thus, . It is probable that in this

Maya sign the cross is united at the bottom, like a figure 8. Here again we turn to the valley of the Nile, and we find that the Egyptian hieroglyph for *t* is and ; and in the Syriac *t* it is . We even find the curved lines of the Maya *t*, which give it something of the appearance of the numeral 8, repeated accurately in the Mediterranean alphabets; thus the Punic *t* repeats the Maya form almost exactly as and . Now suppose a busy people compelled to make this mark every day for a thousand years, and generally in a hurry, and the cross would soon be made without curving the lines; it would become ×. But before it reached even that simplified form it had crossed the Atlantic, and appeared in the archaic Ethiopian sign for *tsa*, thus, . In the archaic Phœnician the sign for *t* is ⊕ and X; the oldest Greek form is ⊗, or X, and the later Greeks gave it to the Romans T, and modified this into ⊖; the old Hebrew gave it as × and +; the Moab stone as ×; this became in time † and T.

Take the letter *a*. In the Maya there are three forms given for this letter. The first is 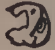; the third is 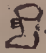. The first looks very much like the foot of a lion or tiger; the third is plainly a foot or boot. If one were required to give hurriedly a rude outline of either of these, would he not represent it thus, 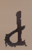; and can we not conceive that this could have been in time modified into the Phœnician *a*, which was ? The hieratic Egyptian *a* was ; the ancient Hebrew, which was 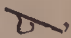, or ; the ancient Greek was the foot reversed, ; the later Greek became our A.

Turn next to the Maya sign for *q* (*ku*): it is 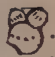. Now what is the peculiarity of this hieroglyph? The circle below is not significant, for there are many circular figures in the Maya alphabet. Clearly, if one was called upon to simplify this, he would retain the two small circles joined side by side at the top, and would indicate the lower circle with a line or dash. And when we turn to the Egyptian *q* we find it in this shape,

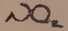; we turn to the Ethiopian *q* (*khua*), and we find it 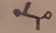, or as *qua*, ; while the Phœnician comes still nearer the supposed Maya form in ; the Moab stone was ; the Himyaritic Arabian form became ; the Greek form was , which graduated into the Roman Q. But a still more striking proof of the descent of the Phœnician alphabet from the Maya is found in the other form of the *q*, the Maya *cu*, which is . Now, if we apply the Maya rule to this, and discard the outside circle, we have this left, . In time the curved line would be made straight, and the figure would assume this form, ; the next step would be to make the cross *on* the straight line, thus, . One of the ancient Phœnician forms is . Can all this be accident?

The letter *c* or *g* (for the two probably gave the same sound as in the Phœnician) is given in the Maya alphabet as follows, 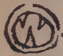. This would in time be simplified into a figure representing the two sides of a triangle with the apex upward, thus, . This is precisely the form found by Dr. Schliemann in the ruins of Troy, . What is the Phœnician form for *g*, as found on the Moab stone? It is . The Carthaginian Phœnicians gave it more of a rounded form, thus, . The hieratic Egyptian figure for *g* was ; in the earlier Greek form the left limb of the figure was shortened, thus, ; the later Greeks reversed it, and wrote it ; the Romans changed this into , and it finally became C.

In the Maya we have one sign for *p*, and another for *pp*. The first contains a curious figure, precisely like our *r* laid on its back, 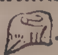. There is, apparently, no *r* in the Maya alphabet; and the Roman *r* grew out of the later Phœnician *r* formed thus, ; it would appear that the earliest Phœnician alphabet did not contain the letter *r*. But if we now turn to the Phœnician alphabet, we will find one of the curious forms of the *p* given thus, , a very fair representation of an *r* lying upon its face. Is it not another remarkable coincidence that the *p*, in both Maya and Phœnician, should contain this singular sign?

The form of *pp* in the Maya alphabet is this, 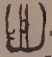. If we are asked, on the principle already indicated, to reduce this to its elements, we would use a figure like this, ; in time the tendency would be to shorten one of these perpendicular lines, thus, ; and this we find is very much like the Phœnician *p*, 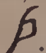. The Greek *ph* is Φ.

The letter *l* in the Maya is in two forms; one of these is 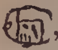, the other is 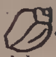. Now, if we again apply the rule which we observed to hold good with the letter *m*—that is, draw from the inside of the hieroglyph some symbol that will briefly indicate the whole letter—we will have one of two forms, either a right-angled figure formed thus, , or an acute angle formed by joining the two lines which are unconnected, thus, ; and either of these forms brings us quite close to the letter *l* of the Old World. We find *l* on the Moab stone thus formed, 6. The archaic Phœnician form of *l* was 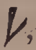, or 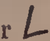; the archaic Hebrew was and ; the hieratic Egyptian was ; the Greek form was Λ—the Roman L.

The Maya letter *b* is shaped thus, . Now, if we turn to the Phœnician, we find that *b* is represented by the same crescent-like figure which we find in the middle of this hieroglyph, but reversed in the direction of the writing, thus,); while in the archaic Hebrew we have the same crescent figure as in the Maya, turned in the same direction, but accompanied by a line drawn downward, and to the left, thus, ; a similar form is also found in the Phœnician ; and this in the earliest Greek changed into , and in the later Greek into B. One of the Etruscan signs for *b* was , while the Pelasgian *b* was represented thus, 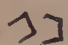; the Chaldaic *b* was ; the Syriac sign for *b* was ; the Illyrian *b* was .

The Maya *e* is 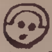; this became in time ; then 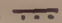 (we see this form on the Maya monuments); the dots in time were indicated by strokes, and we reach the hieratic Egyptian form, 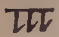: we even find in some of the ancient Phœnician inscriptions the original Maya circles preserved in making the letter *e*, thus, ; then we find the old Greek form, ; the old Hebrew, ; and the later Phœnician, : when the direction of the writing was changed this became . Dr. Schliemann found a form like this on inscriptions deep in the ruins of Troy, 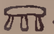. This is exactly the form found on the American monuments.

The Maya *i* is 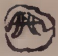; this became in time 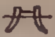; this developed into a still simpler form, 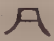; and this passed into the Phœnician form, 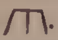. The Samaritan *i* was formed thus, ; the Egyptian letter *i* is : gradually in all these the left-hand line was dropped, and we come to the figure used on the stone of Moab, 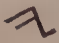 and ; this in time became the old Hebrew 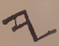 or ; and this developed into the Greek .

We have seen the complicated symbol for *m* reduced by the Mayas themselves into this figure, 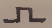: if we attempt to write this rapidly, we find it very difficult to always keep the base lines horizontal; naturally we form something like this, 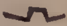: the distinctive figure within the sign for *m* in the Maya is or . We see this repeated in the Egyptian hieroglyphics for *m*, , and 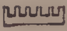, and ; in the Chaldaic *m*, ; and in the Ethiopic 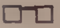. We find one form of the Phœnician where the *m* is made thus, ; and in the Punic it appears thus, ; and this is not unlike the *m* on the stone of Moab, or the ancient Phœnician forms, , , and the old Greek , or the ancient Hebrew 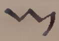, .

The , *x*, of the Maya alphabet is a hand pointing downward, 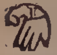; this, reduced to its elements, would be expressed something like this, or 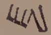; and this is very much like the *x* of the archaic Phœnician, ; or the Moab stone, ; or the later Phœnician, ; or the Hebrew, , ; or the old Greek, : the later Greek form was Ξ.

The Maya alphabet contains no sign for the letter *s;* there is, however, a symbol called *ca* immediately above the letter *k;* it is probable that the sign *ca* stands for the soft sound of *c*, as in our words *citron, circle, civil, circus*, etc. As it is written in the Maya alphabet *ca*, and not *k*, it evidently represents a different sound. The sign *ca* is this, . A somewhat similar sign is found in the body of the symbol for *k*, thus, ; this would appear to be a simplification of *ca*, but turned downward. If now we turn to the Egyptian letters we find the sign *k* represented by this figure 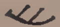, simplified again into ; while the sign for *k* in the Phœnician inscription on the stone of Moab is . If now we turn to the *s* sound, indicated by the Maya sign *ca*, , we find the resemblance still more striking to kindred European letters. The Phœnician *s* is 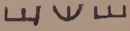; in the Greek this becomes 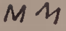; the Hebrew is 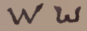; the Samaritan, 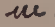. The Egyptian hieroglyph for *s* is 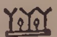; the Egyptian letter *s* is ; the Ethiopic, ; the Chaldaic, ; and the Illyrian *s c* is .

We have thus traced back the forms of eighteen of the ancient letters to the Maya alphabet. In some cases the pedigree is so plain as to be indisputable.

For instance, take the *h:*

Maya, 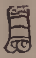; old Greek, ; old Hebrew, ; Phœnician, .

Or take the letter *o:*

Maya, o; old Greek, o; old Hebrew, o; Phœnician, o.

Or take the letter *t:*

Maya, ⊗; old Greek, ⊗; old Phœnician, ⊕ and ×.

Or take the letter *q*:

Maya, ; old Phœnician, and ; Greek, .

Or take the letter *k*:

Maya, 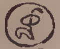; Egyptian, 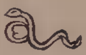; Ethiopian, ; Phœnician, .

Or take the letter *n*:

Maya, ; Egyptian, 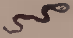; Pelasgian, ; Arcadian, ; Phœnician, .

Surely all this cannot be accident!

But we find another singular proof of the truth of this theory: It will be seen that the Maya alphabet lacks the letter *d* and the letter *r*. The Mexican alphabet possessed a *d*. The sounds *d* and *t* were probably indicated in the Maya tongue by the same sign, called *t* in the Landa alphabet. The Finns and Lapps do not distinguish between these two sounds. In the oldest known form of the Phœnician alphabet, that found on the Moab stone, we find in the same way but one sign to express the *d* and *t*. *D* does not occur on the Etruscan monuments, *t* being used in its place. It would, therefore, appear that after the Maya alphabet passed to the Phœnicians they added two new signs for the letters *d* and *r;* and it is a singular fact that their poverty of invention seems to have been such that they used to express both *d* and *r*, the same sign, with very little modification, which they had already obtained from the Maya alphabet as the symbol for *b*. To illustrate this we place the signs side by side:

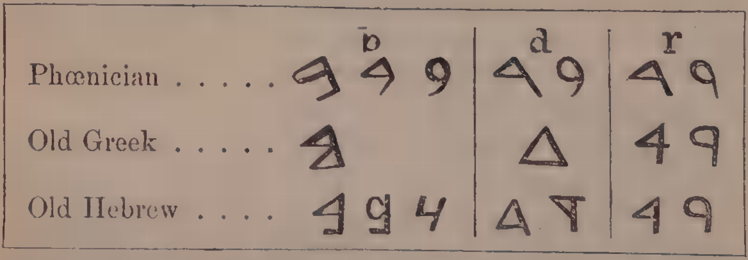
b
d
r
Phœnician . . . . .
Old Greek . . . . .
Old Hebrew . . . .

It thus appears that the very signs *d* and *r*, in the Phœnician, early Greek, and ancient Hebrew, which are lacking in the

Maya, were supplied by imitating the Maya sign for *b;* and it is a curious fact that while the Phœnician legends claim that Taaut invented the art of writing, yet they tell us that Taaut made records, and "delivered them to his successors and to foreigners, of whom one was Isiris (Osiris, the Egyptian god), *the inventor of the three letters.*" Did these three letters include the *d* and *r*, which they did not receive from the Atlantean alphabet, as represented to us by the Maya alphabet?

In the alphabetical table which we herewith append we have represented the sign V, or vau, or *f*, by the Maya sign for U. "In the present so-called Hebrew, as in the Syriac, Sabæic, Palmyrenic, and some other kindred writings, the *vau* takes the place of F, and indicates the sounds of *v* and *u*. F occurs in the same place also on the Idalian tablet of Cyprus, in Lycian, also in Tuarik (Berber), and some other writings." ("American Cyclopædia," art. *F.*)

Since writing the above, I find in the "Proceedings of the American Philosophical Society" for December, 1880, p. 154, an interesting article pointing out other resemblances between the Maya alphabet and the Egyptian. I quote:

> "It is astonishing to notice that while Landa's first B is, according to Valentini, represented by a footprint, and that path and footprint are pronounced *Be* in the Maya dictionary, the Egyptian sign for B was the human leg.
>
> "Still more surprising is it that the H of Landa's alphabet is a tie of cord, while the Egyptian H is a twisted cord. . . . But the most striking coincidence of all occurs in the coiled or curled line representing Landa's U; *for it is absolutely identical with the Egyptian* curled U. The Mayan word for to wind or bend is Uuc; but why should Egyptians, confined as they were to the valley of the Nile, and abhorring as they did the sea and sailors, write their U precisely like Landa's alphabet U in Central America? There is one other remarkable coincidence between Landa's and the Egyptian alphabets; and, by-the-way, the English and other Teutonic dialects have a curious share in it. Landa's D (T) is a disk with lines inside the four quarters, the allowed Mexican symbol for a day or sun.

So far as sound is concerned, the English *day* represents it; so far as the form is concerned, the Egyptian 'cake,' ideograph for (1) country and (2) the sun's orbit is essentially the same."

It would appear as if both the Phœnicians and Egyptians drew their alphabet from a common source, of which the Maya is a survival, but did not borrow from one another. They followed out different characteristics in the same original hieroglyph, as, for instance, in the letter *b*. And yet I have shown that the closest resemblances exist between the Maya alphabet and the Egyptian signs—in the *c*, *h*, *t*, *i*, *k*, *l*, *m*, *n*, *o*, *q*, and *s*—eleven letters in all; in some cases, as in the *n* and *k*, the signs are identical; the *k*, in both alphabets, is not only a serpent, but a serpent with a protuberance or convolution in the middle! If we add to the above the *b* and *u*, referred to in the "Proceedings of the American Philosophical Society," we have thirteen letters out of sixteen in the Maya and Egyptian related to each other. Can any theory of accidental coincidences account for all this? And it must be remembered that these resemblances are found between *the only two phonetic systems of alphabet in the world.*

Let us suppose that two men agree that each shall construct apart from the other a phonetic alphabet of sixteen letters; that they shall employ only simple forms—combinations of straight or curved lines—and that their signs shall not in anywise resemble the letters now in use. They go to work apart; they have a multitudinous array of forms to draw from—the thousand possible combinations of lines, angles, circles, and curves; when they have finished, they bring their alphabets together for comparison. Under such circumstances it is possible that out of the sixteen signs one sign might appear in both alphabets; there is one chance in one hundred that such might be the case; but there is not one chance in five hundred that this sign should in both cases represent the same sound. It is barely possible that two men working thus apart should hit upon two or three identical forms, but altogether impossible that these forms should have the same significance; and by no stretch of the imagination can it be supposed that in these alphabets so created, without correspondence, thirteen out of sixteen signs should be the same in form and the same in meaning.

It is probable that a full study of the Central American monuments may throw stronger light upon the connection between the Maya and the European alphabets, and that further discoveries of inscriptions in Europe may approximate the alphabets of the New and Old World still more closely by supplying intermediate forms.

We find in the American hieroglyphs peculiar signs which take the place of pictures, and which probably, like the hieratic symbols mingled with the hieroglyphics of Egypt, represent alphabetical sounds. For instance, we find this sign on the walls of the palace of Palenque, 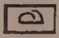; this is not unlike the form of the Phœnician *t* used in writing, and ; we find also upon these monuments the letter *o* represented by a small circle, and entering into many of the hieroglyphs; we also find the *tau* sign (thus) often repeated; also the sign which we have supposed to represent *b*, ; also this sign, , which we think is the simplification of the letter *k*; also this sign, which we suppose to represent *e*, ; also this figure, ; and this, . There is an evident tendency to reduce the complex figures to simple signs whenever the writers proceed to form words.

Although it has so far been found difficult, if not impossible, to translate the compound words formed from the Maya alphabet, yet we can go far enough to see that they used the system of simpler sounds for the whole hieroglyph to which we have referred.

Bishop Landa gives us, in addition to the alphabet, the signs which represent the days and months, and which are evidently compounds of the Maya letters. For instance, we have this figure as the representative of the month *Mol*, 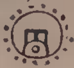. Here we see very plainly the letter ⊓ for *m*, the sign ⊙ for *o;* and we will possibly find the sign for *l* in the right angle to the right of the *m* sign, and which is derived from the figure in the second sign for *l* in the Maya alphabet.

One of the most ancient races of Central America is the Chiapenec, a branch of the Mayas. They claim to be the first settlers of the country. They came, their legends tell us, from the East, from beyond the sea.

And even after the lapse of so many thousand years most remarkable resemblances have been found to exist between the Chiapenec language and the Hebrew, the living representative of the Phœnician tongue.

The Mexican scholar, Señor Melgar ("North Americans of Antiquity," p. 475) gives the, following list of words taken from the Chiapenec and the Hebrew:

English.	Chiapenec.	Hebrew.
Son	Been	Ben.
Daughter	Batz	Bath.
Father	Abagh	Abba.
Star in Zodiac	Chimax	Chimah.
King	Molo	Maloc.
Name applied to Adam	Abagh	Abah.
Afflicted	Chanam	Chanan.
God	Elab	Elab.
September	Tsiquin	Tischiri.
More	Chic	Chi.
Rich	Chabin	Chabic.
Son of Seth	Enot	Enos.
To give	Votan	Votan.

Thus, while we find such extraordinary resemblances between the Maya alphabet and the Phœnician alphabet, we find equally surprising coincidences between the Chiapenec tongue, a branch of the Mayas, and the Hebrew, a branch of the Phœnician.

Attempts have been repeatedly made by European scholars to trace the letters of the Phœnician alphabet back to the elaborate hieroglyphics from which all authorities agree they must have been developed, but all such attempts have been failures. But here, in the Maya alphabet, we are not only able to extract from the heart of the hieroglyphic the typical sign for the sound, but we are able to go a step farther, and, by means of the inscriptions upon the monuments of Copan and Palenque, deduce the alphabetical hieroglyph itself from an older and more ornate figure; we thus not only discover the relationship of the European alphabet to the American, but we trace its descent in the very mode in which reason tells us it must have been developed. All this proves that the similarities in question did not come from Phœnicians having accidentally visited the shores of America, but that we have before us the origin, the source, the very matrix in which the Phœnician alphabet was formed. In the light of such a discovery the inscriptions upon the monuments of Central America assume incalculable importance; they take us back to a civilization far anterior to the oldest known in Europe; they represent the language of antediluvian times.

It may be said that it is improbable that the use of an alphabet could have ascended to antediluvian times, or to that prehistoric age when intercourse existed between ancient Europe and America; but it must be remembered that if the Flood legends of Europe and Asia are worth anything they prove that the art of writing existed at the date of the Deluge, and that records of antediluvian learning were preserved by those who escaped the Flood; while Plato tells us that the people of Atlantis engraved their laws upon columns of bronze and plates of gold.

There was a general belief among the ancient nations that the art of writing was known to the antediluvians. The Druids believed in books more ancient than the Flood. They styled them "the books of Pheryllt," and "the writings of Pridian or Hu." "Ceridwen consults them before she prepares the mysterious caldron which shadows out the awful catastrophe of the Deluge." (Faber's "Pagan Idolatry," vol. ii., pp. 150, 151.)

In the first *Avatar* of Vishnu we are told that "the divine ordinances were stolen by the demon Haya-Griva. Vishnu became a fish; and after the Deluge, when the waters had subsided, he recovered the holy books *from the bottom of the ocean*." Berosus, speaking of the time before the Deluge, says: "Oannes wrote concerning the generations of mankind and their civil polity." The Hebrew commentators on Genesis say, "Our rabbins assert that Adam, our father of blessed memory, composed a book of precepts, which were delivered to him by God in Paradise." (Smith's "Sacred Annals," p. 49.) That is to say, the Hebrews preserved a tradition that the Ad-ami, the people of Ad, or Adlantis, possessed, while yet dwelling in Paradise, the art of writing. It has been suggested that without the use of letters it would have been impossible to preserve the many details as to dates, ages, and measurements, as of the ark, handed down to us in Genesis. Josephus, quoting Jewish traditions, says, "The births and deaths of illustrious men, between Adam and Noah, were noted down at the time with great accuracy." (Ant., lib. 1, cap. iii., sec. 3.) Suidas, a Greek lexicographer of the eleventh century, expresses tradition when he says, "Adam was the author of arts and letters." The Egyptians said that their god Anubis was an antediluvian, and "wrote annals *before* the Flood." The Chinese have traditions that the earliest race of their nation, prior to history, "taught all the arts of life and wrote books." "The Goths always had the use of letters;" and Le Grand affirms that before or soon after the Flood "there were found the acts of great men engraved in letters on large stones." (Fosbroke's "Encyclopædia of Antiquity," vol. i., p. 355.) Pliny says, "Letters were always in use." Strabo says, "The inhabitants of Spain possessed records *written before the Deluge*." (Jackson's "Chronicles of Antiquity," vol. iii., p. 85.) Mitford ("History of Greece," vol. i., p. 121) says, "Nothing appears to us so probable as that it (the alphabet) was derived from the antediluvian world."

CHAPTER VIII.

THE BRONZE AGE IN EUROPE.

THERE exist in Europe the evidences of three different ages of human development:

1. The Stone Age, which dates back to a vast antiquity. It is subdivided into two periods: an age of rough stone implements; and a later age, when these implements were ground smooth and made in improved forms.

2. The Bronze Age, when the great mass of implements were manufactured of a compound metal, consisting of about nine parts of copper and one part of tin.

3. An age when iron superseded bronze for weapons and cutting tools, although bronze still remained in use for ornaments. This age continued down to what we call the Historical Period, and embraces our present civilization; its more ancient remains are mixed with coins of the Gauls, Greeks, and Romans.

The Bronze Period has been one of the perplexing problems of European scientists. Articles of bronze are found over nearly all that continent, but in especial abundance in Ireland and Scandinavia. They indicate very considerable refinement and civilization upon the part of the people who made them; and a wide diversity of opinion has prevailed as to who that people were and where they dwelt.

In the first place, it was observed that the age of bronze (a compound of copper and tin) must, in the natural order of things, have been preceded by an age when copper and tin were used separately, before the ancient metallurgists had discovered the art of combining them, and yet in Europe the remains of no such age have been found. Sir John Lubbock says ("Prehistoric Times," p. 59), "The absence of implements made either of copper or tin seems to me to indicate that *the art of making bronze was introduced into, not invented in, Europe.*" The absence of articles of copper is especially marked; nearly all the European specimens of copper implements have been found in Ireland; and yet out of twelve hundred and eighty-three articles of the Bronze Age, in the great museum at Dublin, only thirty celts and one sword-blade are said to be made of pure copper; and even as to some of these there seems to be a question.

Where on the face of the earth are we to find a Copper Age? Is it in the barbaric depths of that Asia out of whose uncivilized tribes all civilization is said to have issued? By no means. Again we are compelled to turn to the West. In America, from Bolivia to Lake Superior, we find everywhere the traces of a long-enduring Copper Age; bronze existed, it is true, in Mexico, but it held the same relation to the copper as the copper held to the bronze in Europe—it was the exception as against the rule. And among the Chippeways of the shores of Lake Superior, *and among them alone*, we find any traditions of the origin of the manufacture of copper implements; and on the shores of that lake we find pure copper, out of which the first metal tools were probably hammered before man had learned to reduce the ore or run the metal into moulds. And on the shores of this same American lake we find the ancient mines from which some people, thousands of years ago, derived their supplies of copper.

Sir W. R. Wilde says, "It is remarkable that so few antique copper implements have been found (in Europe), although a knowledge of that metal must have been the preliminary stage in the manufacture of bronze." He thinks that this may be accounted for by supposing that "but a short time elapsed between the knowledge of smelting and casting copper ore

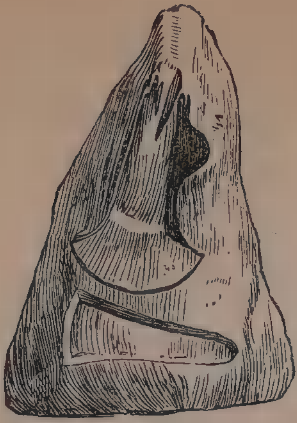

Irish Mould for casting Bronze Celts.

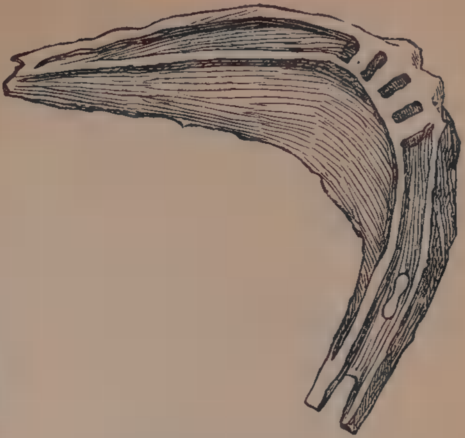

Bronze Reaping-hook, Switzerland.

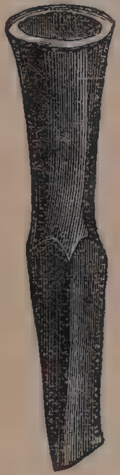

Bronze Chisel.

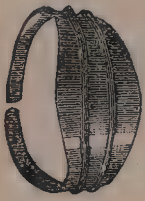

Finger-ring.

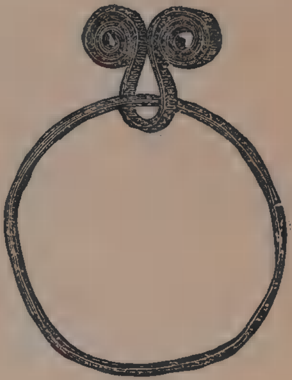

Ear-ring.

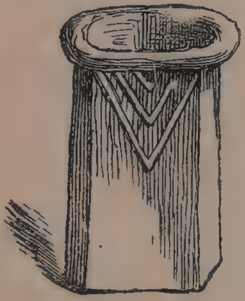

Bronze Hammer.

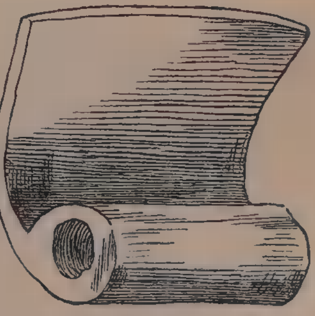

Ancient Adze, Ireland.

IMPLEMENTS AND ORNAMENTS OF THE BRONZE AGE.

and the introduction of tin, and the subsequent manufacture and use of bronze."

But here we have in America the evidence that thousands of years must have elapsed during which copper was used alone, before it was discovered that by adding one-tenth part of tin it gave a harder edge, and produced a superior metal.

The Bronze Age cannot be attributed to the Roman civilization. Sir John Lubbock shows ("Prehistoric Times," p. 21) that bronze weapons have never been found associated with Roman coins or pottery, or other remains of the Roman Period; that bronze articles have been found in the greatest abundance in countries like Ireland and Denmark, which were never invaded by Roman armies; and that the character of the ornamentation of the works of bronze is not Roman in character, and that the Roman bronze contained a large proportion of lead, which is never the case in that of the Bronze Age.

It has been customary to assume that the Bronze Age was due to the Phœnicians, but of late the highest authorities have taken issue with this opinion. Sir John Lubbock (*Ibid.*, p. 73) gives the following reasons why the Phœnicians could not have been the authors of the Bronze Age: First, the ornamentation is different. In the Bronze Age "this always consists of geometrical figures, and we rarely, if ever, find upon them representations of animals and plants, while on the ornamented shields, etc., described by Homer, as well as in the decoration of Solomon's Temple, animals and plants were abundantly represented." The cuts on p. 242 will show the character of the ornamentation of the Bronze Age. In the next place, the form of burial is different in the Bronze Age from that of the Phœnicians. "In the third place, the Phœnicians, so far as we know them, were well acquainted with the use of iron; in Homer we find the warriors already armed with iron weapons, and the tools used in preparing the materials for Solomon's Temple were of this metal."

This view is also held by M. de Fallenberg, in the "Bulletin

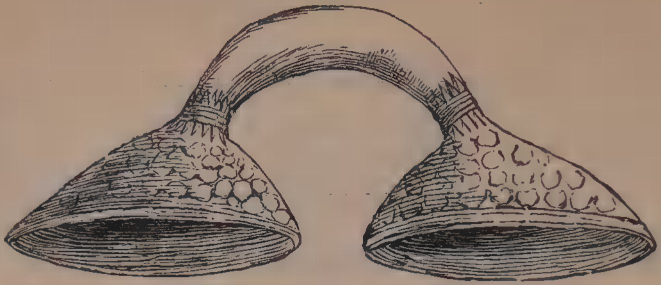

Gold Ornament of the Bronze Age, Ireland.

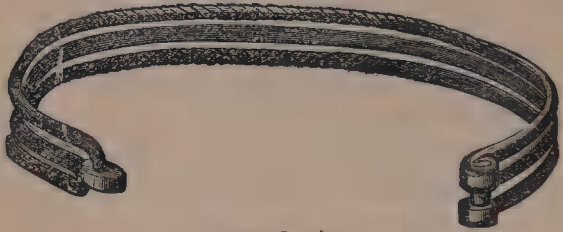

Bronze Bracelet.

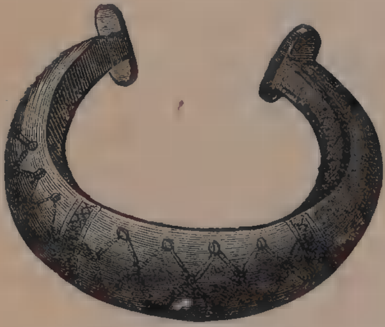

Bronze Bracelet, Switzerland.

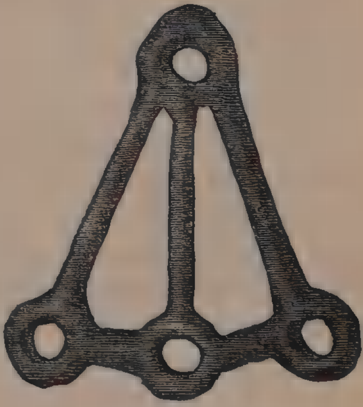

Amulet.

ORNAMENTS OF THE BRONZE AGE.

de la Société des Sciences" of Berne. (See "Smithsonian Rep.," 1865–66, p. 383.) He says,

"It seems surprising that the nearest neighbors of the Phœnicians—the Greeks, the Egyptians, the Etruscans, and the Romans—should have manufactured *plumbiferous* bronzes, while the Phœnicians carried to the people of the North only pure bronzes without the alloy of lead. If the civilized people of the Mediterranean added lead to their bronzes, it can scarcely be doubted that the calculating Phœnicians would have done as much, and, at least, with distant and half-civilized tribes, have replaced the more costly tin by the cheaper metal. . . . On the whole, then, I consider that the first knowledge of bronze may have been conveyed to the populations of the period under review not only by the Phœnicians, but by other civilized people dwelling more to the south-east."

Professor E. Desor, in his work on the "Lacustrian Constructions of the Lake of Neuchatel," says,

"The Phœnicians certainly knew the use of iron, and it can scarcely be conceived why they should have excluded it from their commerce on the Scandinavian coasts. . . . The Etruscans, moreover, were acquainted with the use of iron as well as the Phœnicians, and it has already been seen that the composition of their bronzes is different, since it contains lead, which is entirely a stranger to our bronze epoch. . . . We must look, then, *beyond* both the Etruscans and Phœnicians in attempting to identify the commerce of the Bronze Age of our palafittes. It will be the province of the historian to inquire whether, exclusive of Phœnicians and Carthaginians, there may not have been some maritime and commercial people who carried on a traffic through the ports of Liguria with the populations of the age of bronze of the lakes of Italy *before the discovery of iron.* We may remark, in passing, that there is nothing to prove that the Phœnicians were the first navigators. History, on the contrary, positively mentions prisoners, under the name of Tokhari, who were vanquished in a naval battle fought by Rhamses III. in the thirteenth century before our era, and whose physiognomy, according to Morton, would indicate the Celtic type. Now there is room to suppose that if these Tokhari were energetic enough to measure their strength on the sea with one of the powerful kings of Egypt, they must, with stronger reason, have been in a condition to carry on a commerce along the coasts of the Mediterranean, and perhaps of the Atlantic. If such a commerce really existed before the time of the Phœnicians, it would not be limited to the southern slope of the Alps; it would have extended also to the people of the age of bronze in Switzerland. The introduction of bronze would thus ascend to a very high antiquity, doubtless beyond the limits of the most ancient European races."

For the merchants of the Bronze Age we must look beyond even the Tokhari, who were contemporaries of the Phœnicians.

The Tokhari, we have seen, are represented as taken prisoners in a sea-fight with Rhamses III., of the twentieth dynasty, about the thirteenth century B.C. They are probably the *Tochari* of Strabo. The accompanying figure represents one of these people as they appear upon the Egyptian monuments. (See Nott and Gliddon's "Types of Mankind," p. 108.) Here we have, not an inhabitant of Atlantis, but probably a representative of one of the mixed races that sprung from its colonies.

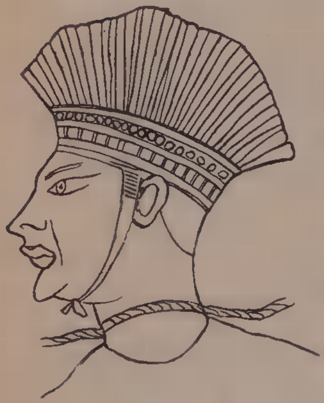
CELTIC WARRIOR, FROM EGYPTIAN MONUMENTS.

Dr. Morton thinks these people, as painted on the Egyptian monuments, to have "strong Celtic features. Those familiar with the Scotch Highlanders may recognize a speaking likeness."

It is at least interesting to have a portrait of one of the daring race who more than three thousand years ago left the west of Europe in their ships to attack the mighty power of Egypt.

They were troublesome to the nations of the East for many centuries; for in 700 B.C. we find them depicted on the Assyrian monuments. This figure represents one of the Tokhari of the time of Sennacherib. It will be observed that the head-dress (apparently of feathers) is the same in both portraits, although separated by a period of six hundred years.

It is more reasonable to suppose that the authors of the

Bronze Age of Europe were the people described by Plato, who were workers in metal, who were highly civilized, who preceded in time all the nations which we call ancient. It was this people who passed through an age of copper before they reached the age of bronze, and whose colonies in America represented this older form of metallurgy as it existed for many generations.

Professor Desor says:

> "We are asked if the preparation of bronze was not an indigenous invention which had originated on the slopes of the Alps? . . . In this idea we acquiesced for a moment. But we are met by the objection that, if this were so, the natives, like the ancient tribes of America, would have commenced by manufacturing utensils of *copper;* yet thus far no utensils of this metal have been found except a few in the strand of Lake Garda. The great majority of metallic objects is of bronze, which necessitated the employment of tin, and this could not be obtained except by commerce, inasmuch as it is a stranger to the Alps. It would appear, therefore, more natural to admit that the art of combining tin with copper—in other words, *that the manufacture of bronze—was of foreign importation.*" He then shows that, although copper ores are found in the Alps, the probability is that even "the copper also was of foreign importation. Now, in view of the prodigious quantity of bronze manufactured at that epoch, this single branch of commerce must itself have *necessitated the most incessant commercial communications.*"

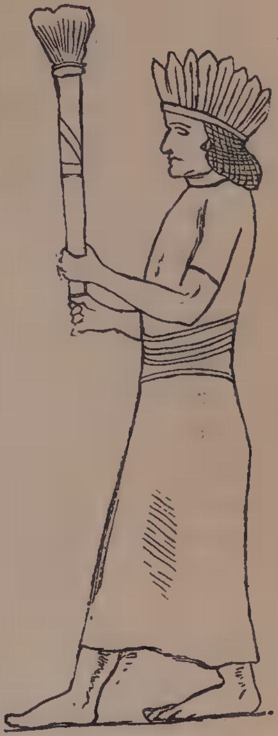

CELTIC WARRIOR, FROM ASSYRIAN MONUMENTS.

And as this commerce could not, as we have seen, have been carried on by the Romans, Greeks, Etruscans, or Phœnicians, because their civilizations flourished during the Iron Age, to which this age of bronze was anterior, where then are we to look for a great maritime and commercial people, who carried vast quantities of copper, tin, and bronze (unalloyed by the lead of the south of Europe) to Denmark, Norway, Sweden, Ireland, England, France, Spain, Switzerland, and Italy? Where can we find them save in that people of Atlantis, whose ships, docks, canals, and commerce provoked the astonishment of the ancient Egyptians, as recorded by Plato. The Toltec root for water is *Atl;* the Peruvian word for copper is *Anti* (from which, probably, the Andes derived their name, as there was a province of Anti on their slopes): may it not be that the name of Atlantis is derived from these originals, and signified the copper island, or the copper mountains in the sea? And from these came the thousands of tons of copper and tin that must, during the Bronze Age, have been introduced into Europe? There are no ancient works to indicate that the tin mines of Cornwall were worked for any length of time in the early days (see "Prehistoric Times," p. 74). Morlot has pointed out that the bronze implements of Hallstadt, in Austria, were of foreign origin, because they contain no lead or silver.

Or, if we are to seek for the source of the vast amount of copper brought into Europe somewhere else than in Atlantis, may it not be that these supplies were drawn in large part from the shores of Lake Superior in America? The mining operations of some ancient people were there carried on upon a gigantic scale, not only along the shores of the lake but even far out upon its islands. At Isle Royale vast works were found, reaching to a depth of sixty feet; great intelligence was shown in following up the richest veins even when interrupted; the excavations were drained by underground drains. On three sections of land on this island the amount of mining exceeded that mined in twenty years in one of our largest mines, with a numerous force constantly employed. In one place the excavations extended in a nearly continuous line for two miles. No remains of the dead and no mounds are found near these mines; it would seem, therefore, that the miners came from a distance, and carried their dead back with them. Henry Gillman ("Smithsonian Rep.," 1873, p. 387) supposes that the curious so-called "Garden Beds" of Michigan were the fields from which they drew their supplies of food. He adds,

> "The discoveries in Isle Royale throw a new light on the character of the 'Mound Builders,' giving us a totally distinct conception of them, and dignifying them with something of the prowess and spirit of adventure which we associate with the higher races. The copper, the result of their mining, to be available, must, in all probability, have been conveyed in vessels, great or small, across a treacherous and stormy sea, whose dangers are formidable to us now, being dreaded even by our largest craft, and often proving their destruction. Leaving their homes, those men dared to face the unknown, to brave the hardships and perils of the deep and of the wilderness, actuated by an ambition which we to-day would not be ashamed to acknowledge."

Such vast works in so remote a land must have been inspired by the commercial necessities of some great civilization; and why not by that ancient and mighty people who covered Europe, Asia, and Africa with their manufactures of bronze—and who possessed, as Plato tells us, enormous fleets trading to all parts of the inhabited world—whose cities roared with the continual tumult of traffic, whose dominion extended to Italy and Egypt, and who held parts of "the great opposite continent" of America under their control? A continuous water-way led from the island of Atlantis to the Gulf of Mexico, and thence up the Mississippi River and its tributaries almost to these very mines of Lake Superior.

Arthur Mitchell says ("The Past in the Present," p. 132),

> "The discovery of bronze, and the knowledge of how to make it, may, as a mere intellectual effort, be regarded as rather above than below the effort which is involved in the discovery and use of iron. As regards bronze, there is first the dis-

covery of copper, and the way of getting it from its ore; then the discovery of tin, and the way to get it from its ore; and then the further discovery that, by an admixture of tin with copper in proper proportions, an alloy with the qualities of a hard metal can be produced. It is surely no mistake to say that there goes quite as much thinking to this as to the getting of iron from its ore, and the conversion of that iron into steel. There is a considerable leap from stone to bronze, but the leap from bronze to iron is comparatively small. . . . It seems highly improbable, if not altogether absurd, that the human mind, at some particular stage of its development, should here, there, and everywhere—independently, and as the result of reaching that stage—discover that an alloy of copper and tin yields a hard metal useful in the manufacture of tools and weapons. There is nothing analogous to such an occurrence in the known history of human progress. It is infinitely more probable that bronze was discovered in one or more centres by one or more men, and that its first use was solely in such centre or centres. That the invention should then be perfected, and its various applications found out, and that it should thereafter spread more or less broadly over the face of the earth, is a thing easily understood."

We will find the knowledge of bronze wherever the colonies of Atlantis extended, and nowhere else; and Plato tells us that the people of Atlantis possessed and used that metal.

The indications are that the Bronze Age represents the coming in of a new people—a civilized people. With that era, it is believed, appears in Europe for the first time the domesticated animals—the horse, the ox, the sheep, the goat, and the hog. (Morlot, "Smithsonian Rep.," 1860, p. 311.) It was a small race, with very small hands; this is shown in the size of the sword-hilts: they are not large enough to be used by the present races of Europe. They were a race with long skulls, as contradistinguished from the round heads of the Stone Period. The drawings on the following page represent the types of the two races.

This people must have sent out colonies to the shores of France, Spain, Italy, Ireland, Denmark, and Norway, who bore

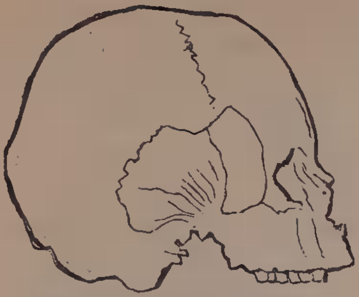

A SKULL OF THE AGE OF STONE, DENMARK (¼ NATURAL SIZE).

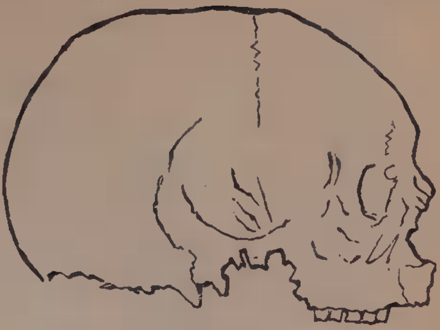

A SKULL OF THE EARLIEST TIMES OF THE AGE OF IRON, DENMARK (¼ NATURAL SIZE).

with them the arts and implements of civilized life. They raised crops of grain, as is proved by the bronze sickles found in different parts of Europe.

It is not even certain that their explorations did not reach to Iceland. Says Humboldt,

> "When the Northmen first landed in Iceland (A.D. 875), although the country was uninhabited, they found there Irish books, mass-bells, and other objects which had been left behind by earlier visitors, called Papar; these papæ (fathers) were the clerici of Dicuil. If, then, as we may suppose from the testimony here referred to, these objects belonged to Irish monks (papar), who had come from the Faroe Islands, why should they have been termed in the native sagas 'West men' (Vestmen), '*who had come over the sea from the westward*' (kommer til vestan um haf)?" (Humboldt's "Cosmos," vol. ii., p. 238.)

If they came "from the West" they could not have come from Ireland; and the Scandinavians may easily have mistaken Atlantean books and bells for Irish books and mass-bells. They do not say that there were any evidences that these relics belonged to a people who had *recently* visited the island; and, as they found the island uninhabited, it would be impossible for them to tell how many years or centuries had elapsed since the books and bells were left there.

The fact that the implements of the Bronze Age came from some common centre, and did not originate independently in different countries, is proved by the striking similarity which exists between the bronze implements of regions as widely separated as Switzerland, Ireland, Denmark, and Africa. It is not to be supposed that any overland communication existed in that early age between these countries; and the coincidence of design which we find to exist can only be accounted for by the fact that the articles of bronze were obtained from some sea-going people, who carried on a commerce at the same time with all these regions.

Compare, for instance, these two decorated bronze celts, the first from Ireland, the second from Denmark; and then com-

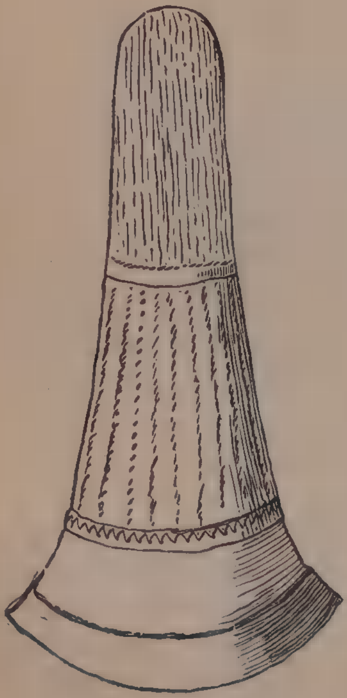

IRISH CELT.

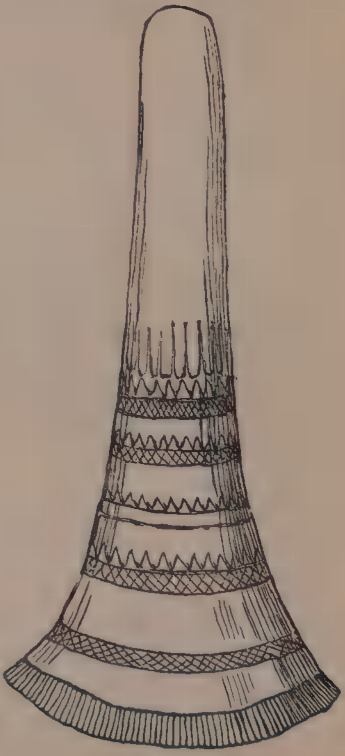

DANISH CELT.

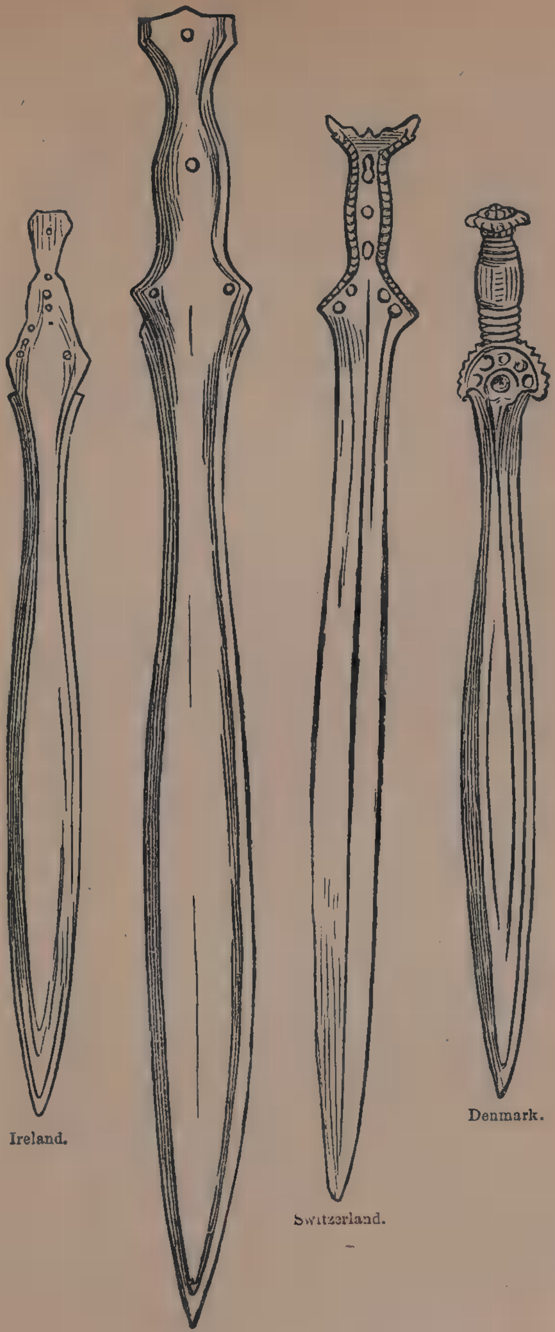

Ireland.

Sweden.

Switzerland.

Denmark.

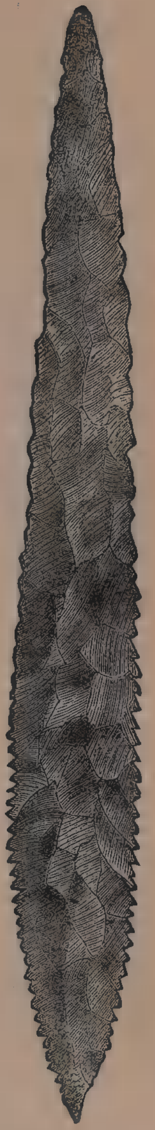

Leaf-shaped Stone Sword, from ancient Earthwork on Big Harpeth River, Tennessee. (⅙ natural size.)

LEAF-SHAPED BRONZE SWORDS.

pare both these with a stone celt found in a mound in Tennessee, given below. Here we have the same form precisely.

Compare the bronze swords in the four preceding illustrations—from Ireland, Sweden, Switzerland, and Denmark—and then observe the same very peculiar shape—the leaf-shape, as it is called—in the stone sword from Big Harpeth River, Tennessee.

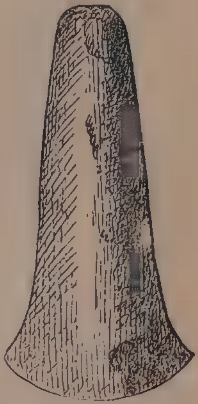
STONE CELT, MOUND IN TENNESSEE.

We shall find, as we proceed, that the Phœnicians were unquestionably identified with Atlantis, and that it was probably from Atlantis they derived their god Baal, or Bel, or El, whose name crops out in the Bel of the Babylonians, the Elohim, and the Beelzebub of the Jews, and the Allah of the Arabians. And we find that this great deity, whose worship extended so widely among the Mediterranean races, was known and adored also upon the northern and western coasts of Europe. Professor Nilsson finds traces of Baal worship in Scandinavia; he tells us that the festival of Baal, or Balder, was celebrated on midsummer's night in Scania, and far up into Norway, almost to the Loffoden Islands, until within the last fifty years. The feast of Baal, or Beltinne, was celebrated in Ireland to a late period. I argue from these facts, not that the worship of Baal came to Ireland and Norway from Assyria or Arabia, but that the same great parent-race which carried the knowledge of Baal to the Mediterranean brought it also to the western coasts of Europe, and with the adoration of Baal they imported also the implements of bronze now found in such abundance in those regions.

The same similarity of form exists in the bronze knives from Denmark and Switzerland, as represented in the illustrations on p. 254.

In the central figure we have a representation of an Egyptian-looking man holding a cup before him. We shall see, as we proceed, that the magnetic needle, or "mariner's compass," dates back to the days of Hercules, and that it consisted of a bar of magnetized iron floating upon a piece of wood *in a cup.* It is possible that in this ancient relic of the Bronze Age we have a representation of the magnetic cup. The magnetic needle must certainly have been an object of great interest to a people who, through its agency, were able to carry on commerce on all the shores of Europe, from the Mediterranean to the Baltic. The second knife represented above has upon its handle a wheel, or cross surrounded by a ring, which, we shall see hereafter, was pre-eminently the symbol of Atlantis.

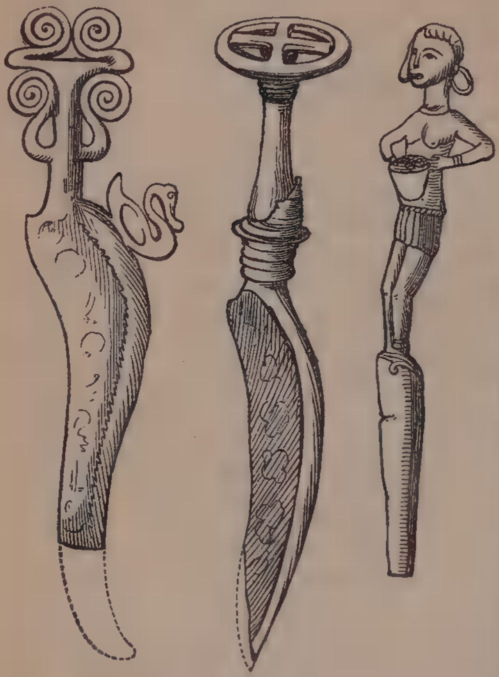

BRONZE KNIVES FROM DENMARK.

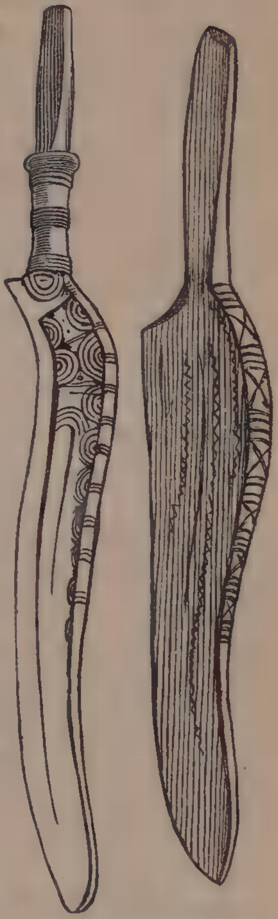

BRONZE KNIVES FROM SWITZERLAND.

If we are satisfied that these implements of bronze were the work of the artisans of Atlantis—of the antediluvians—they must acquire additional and extraordinary interest in our eyes, and we turn to them to learn something of the habits and customs of "that great, original, broad-eyed, sunken race."

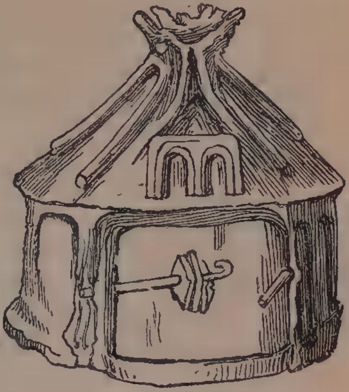
HUT URN, ALBANO.

We find among the relics of the Bronze Age an urn, which probably gives us some idea of the houses of the Atlanteans: it is evidently made to represent a house, and shows us even the rude fashion in which they fastened their doors. The Mandan Indians built round houses very much of this appearance.

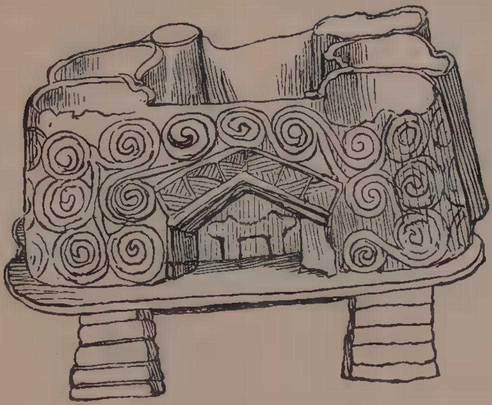
BRONZE LAKE VILLAGE.

The museum at Munich contains a very interesting piece of pottery, which is supposed to represent one of the lake villages or hamlets of the era when the people of Switzerland dwelt in houses erected on piles driven into the bottom of the lakes of that country. The accompanying illustration represents it. The double spiral ornament upon it shows that it belongs to the Bronze Age.

Among the curious relics of the Bronze Age are a number of razor-like knives; from which we may conclude that the habit of shaving the whole or some part of the face or head dates back to a great antiquity. The illustrations below represent them.

These knives were found in Denmark. The figures upon them represent ships, and it is not impossible that their curious appendages may have been a primitive kind of sails.

An examination of the second of these bronze knives reveals a singular feature: Upon the handle of the razor there are *ten* series of lines; the stars in the sky are *ten* in number; and there were probably *ten* rings at the left-hand side of the figure, two being obliterated. There were, we are told, ten sub-kingdoms in Atlantis; and precisely as the thirteen stripes on the American flag symbolize the thirteen original States of the Union, so the recurrence of the figure ten in the emblems upon

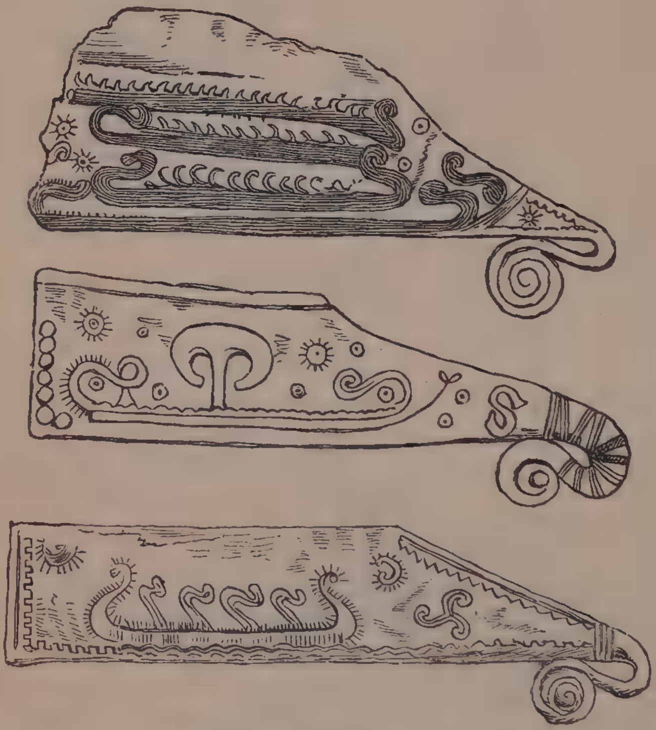

BRONZE RAZOR-KNIVES.

this bronze implement may have reference to the ten subdivisions of Atlantis. The large object in the middle of this ship may be intended to represent a palm-tree—the symbol, as we shall see, in America, of Aztlan, or Atlantis. We have but to compare the pictures of the ships upon these ancient razor-knives with the accompanying representations of a Roman galley and a ship of William the Conqueror's time, to see that there can be no question that they represented the galleys of that remote age. They are doubtless faithful portraits of the great vessels which Plato described as filling the harbors of Atlantis.

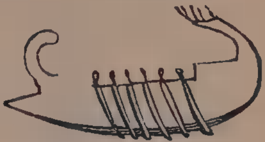
ANCIENT GALLEY, FROM A ROMAN COIN.

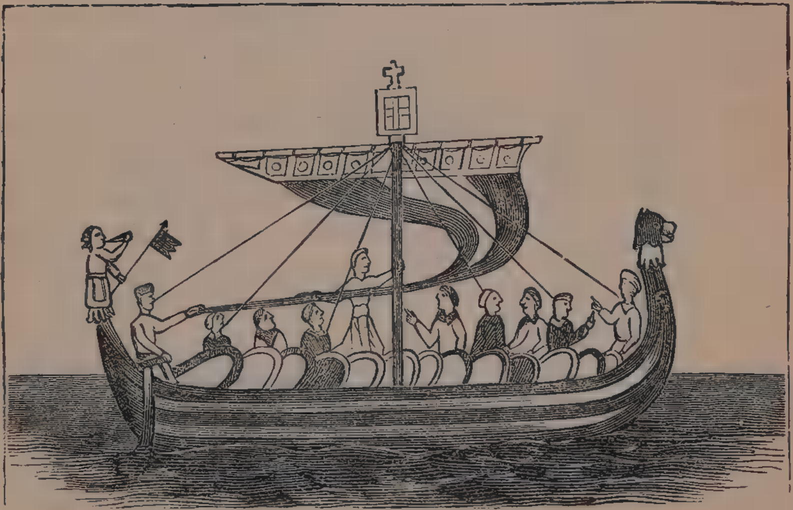
SHIP OF WILLIAM THE CONQUEROR.

We give on page 258 a representation of a bronze dagger found in Ireland, a strongly-made weapon. The cut below it represents the only implement of the Bronze Age yet found containing an inscription. It has been impossible to decipher it, or even to tell to what group of languages its alphabet belongs.

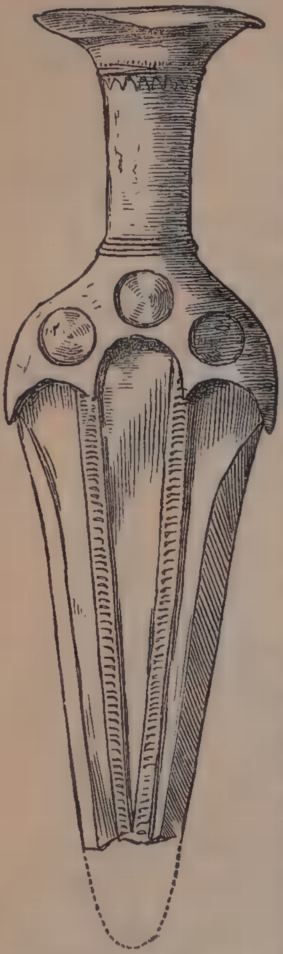

IRISH BRONZE DAGGER.

It is proper to note, in connection with a discussion of the Bronze Age, that our word bronze is derived from the Basque, or Iberian *broncea*, from which the Spanish derive *bronce*, and the Italians *bronzo*. The copper mines of the Basques were extensively worked at a very early age of the world, either by the people of Atlantis or by the Basques themselves, a colony from Atlantis. The probabilities are that the name for bronze, as well as the metal itself, dates back to Plato's island.

I give some illustrations on pages 239 and 242 of ornaments and implements of the Bronze Age, which may serve to throw light upon the habits of the ancient people. It will be seen that they had reached a considerable degree of civilization; that they raised crops of grain, and cut them with sickles; that their women ornamented themselves with bracelets, armlets, ear-rings, finger-rings, hair-pins, and amulets; that their mechanics used hammers, adzes, and chisels; and that they possessed very fair specimens of pottery. Sir John Lubbock argues ("Prehistoric Times," pp. 14, 16, etc.):

"A new civilization is indicated not only by the mere presence of bronze

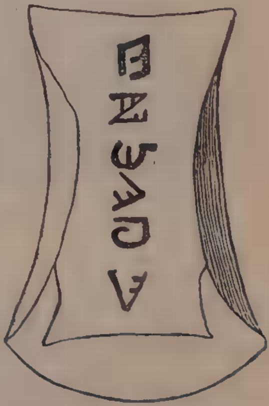

INSCRIBED CELT.

but by the beauty and variety of the articles made from it. We find not only, as before, during the Stone Age, axes, arrows, and knives, but, in addition, swords, lances, sickles, fish-hooks, ear-rings, bracelets, pins, rings, and a variety of other articles."

If the bronze implements of Europe had been derived from the Phœnicians, Greeks, Etruscans, or Romans, the nearer we approached the site of those nations the greater should be the number of bronze weapons we would find; but the reverse is the case. Sir John Lubbock ("Prehistoric Times," p. 20) shows that more than three hundred and fifty bronze swords have been found in Denmark, and that the Dublin Museum contains twelve hundred and eighty-three bronze weapons found in Ireland; "while," he says, "I have only been able to hear of six bronze swords in all Italy." This state of things is inexplicable unless we suppose that Ireland and Denmark received their bronze implements directly from some maritime nation whose

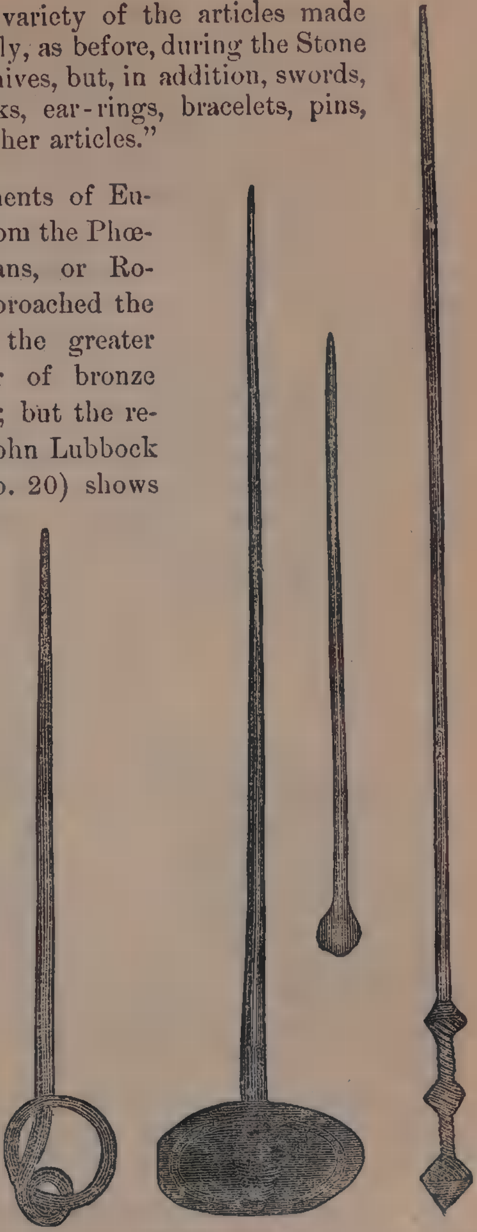

BRONZE HAIR-PINS.

site was practically as near their shores as it was to the shores of the Mediterranean. We have but to look at our map on page 43, *ante*, to see that Atlantis was considerably nearer to Ireland than it was to Italy.

The striking resemblance between the bronze implements found in the different portions of Europe is another proof that they were derived from one and the same source—from some great mercantile people who carried on their commerce at the same time with Denmark, Norway, Ireland, Spain, Greece, Italy, Egypt, Switzerland, and Hungary. Mr. Wright ("Essays on Archæology," p. 120) says, "Whenever we find the bronze swords or celts, whether in Ireland, in the far west, in Scotland, in distant Scandinavia, in Germany, or still farther east, in the Sclavonic countries, they are the same—*not similar in character, but identical.*" Says Sir John Lubbock ("Prehistoric Times," p. 59), "Not only are the several varieties of celts found throughout Europe alike, but some of the swords, knives, daggers, etc., are so similar that they seem as if they must have been cast by the same maker."

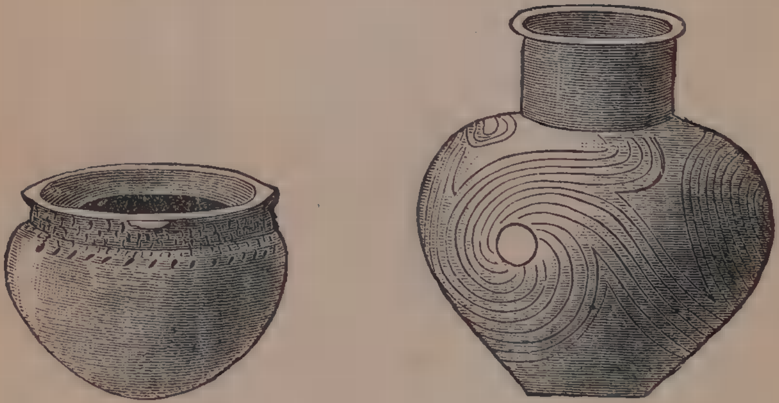

VASES FROM MOUNDS IN THE MISSISSIPPI VALLEY.

What race was there, other than the people of Atlantis, that existed before the Iron Age—before the Greek, Roman, Etruscan, and Phœnician—that was civilized, that worked in metals, that carried on a commerce with all parts of Europe? Does history or tradition make mention of any such?

We find a great resemblance between the pottery of the Bronze Age in Europe and the pottery of the ancient inhabitants of America. The two figures on page 260 represent vases from one of the mounds of the Mississippi Valley. Compare them with the following from the lake dwellings of Switzerland:

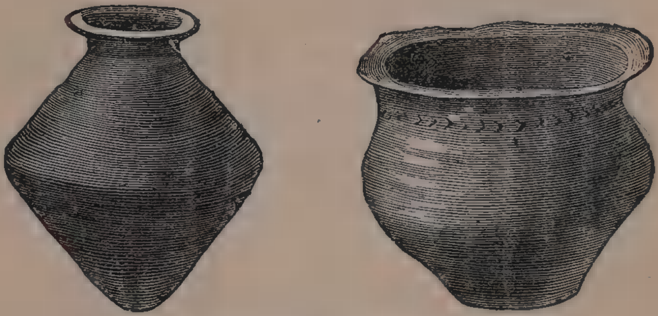

VASES FROM SWITZERLAND.

It will be seen that these vases could scarcely stand upright unsupported; and we find that the ancient inhabitants of Switzerland had circles or rings of baked earth in which they placed them when in use, as in the annexed figure. The Mound Builders used the same contrivance.

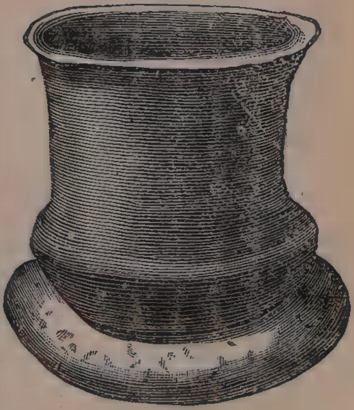

ANCIENT SWISS VASE AND SUPPORTER.

The illustrations of discoidal stones on page 263 are from the "North Americans of Antiquity," p. 77. The objects represented were taken from an ancient mound in Illinois. It would be indeed surprising if two distinct peoples, living in two different continents, thousands of miles apart, should, without any intercourse with each other, not only form their vases in the same inconvenient form, but should hit upon the same expedient as a remedy.

We observe, in the American spear-head and the Swiss hatchets, on the opposite page, the same overlapping of the metal around the staff, or handle—a very peculiar mode of uniting them together, which has now passed out of use.

A favorite design of the men of the Bronze Age in Europe is the spiral or double-spiral form. It appears on the face of the urn in the shape of a lake dwelling, which is given on p. 255; it also appears in the rock sculptures of Argyleshire, Scotland, here shown.

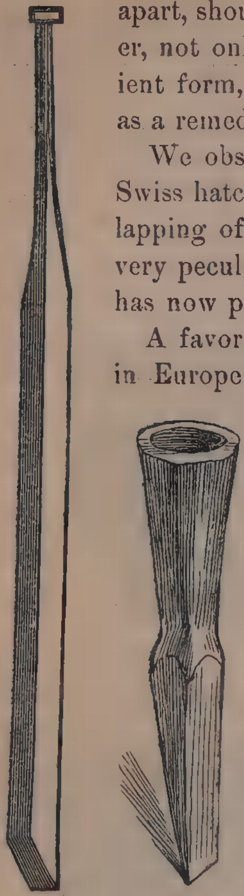

Central America. Switzerland.

BRONZE CHISELS.

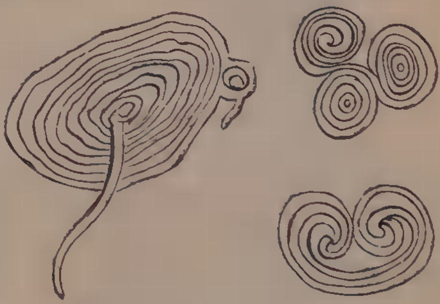

SPIRALS, FROM SCOTLAND.

We find the same figure in an ancient fragment of pottery from the Little Colorado, as given in the "United States Pacific Railroad Survey Report," vol. iii., p. 49, art. *Pottery*. It was part of a large vessel. The annexed illustration represents this.

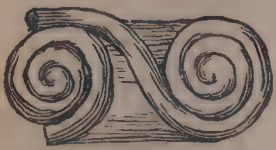

SPIRAL, FROM NEW MEXICO.

The same design is also found in ancient rock etchings of the Zuñis of New Mexico, of which the cut on p. 265 is an illustration.

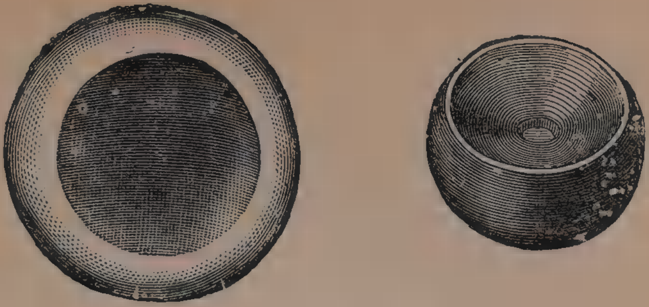

DISCOIDAL STONES, ILLINOIS.

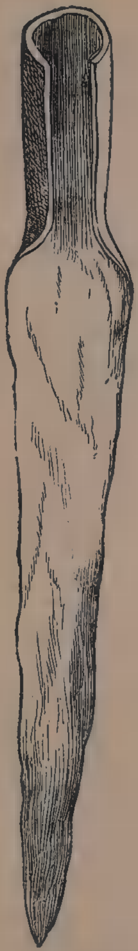

COPPER SPEAR-HEAD,
LAKE SUPERIOR.

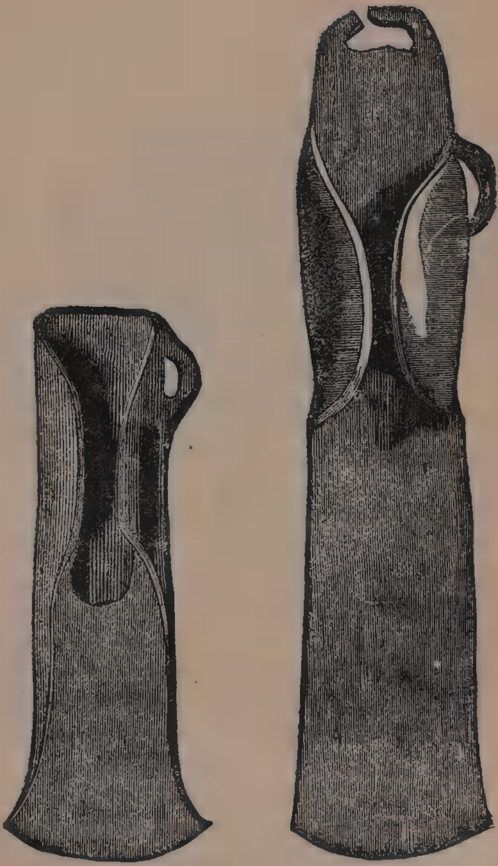

BRONZE HATCHETS, SWITZERLAND.

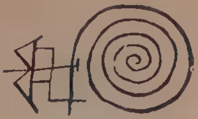

SPIRAL, FROM NEW MEXICO.

We also find this figure repeated upon a vase from a Mississippi Valley mound, which we give elsewhere. (See p. 260.)

It is found upon many of the monuments of Central America. In the Treasure House of Atreus, at Mycenæ, Greece, a fragment of a pillar was found which is literally covered with this double-spiral design. (See "Rosengarten's Architectural Styles," p. 59.)

This Treasure House of Atreus is one of the oldest buildings in Greece.

We find the double-spiral figure upon a shell ornament found on the breast of a skeleton, in a carefully constructed stone coffin, in a mound near Nashville, Tennessee.

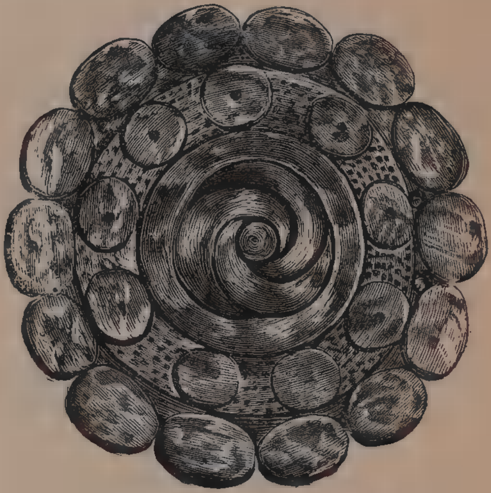

SHELL ORNAMENT, MOUND NEAR NASHVILLE, TENNESSEE.

Lenormant remarks ("Anc. Civil.," vol. ii., p. 158) that the bronze implements found in Egypt, near Memphis, had been buried for six thousand years; and that at that time, as the Egyptians had a horror of the sea, some commercial nation must have brought the tin, of which the bronze was in part composed, from India, the Caucasus, or Spain, the nearest points to Egypt in which tin is found.

Heer has shown that the civilized plants of the lake dwellings are not of Asiatic, but of African, and, to a great extent, of Egyptian origin. Their stone axes are made largely of jade or nephrite, "a mineral which, strange to say, geologists *have not found in place on the continent of Europe.*" (Foster's "Prehistoric Races," p. 44.)

Compare this picture of a copper axe from a mound near Laporte, Indiana, with this representation of a copper axe of the Bronze Age, found near Waterford, Ireland. Professor Foster pronounces them almost identical.

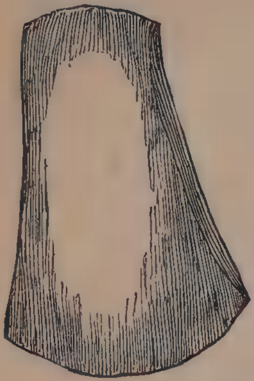
COPPER AXE, FROM A MOUND NEAR LAPORTE, INDIANA.

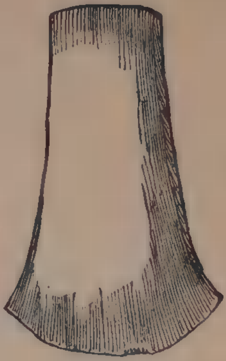
COPPER AXE, WATERFORD, IRELAND.

Compare this specimen of pottery from the lake dwellings of Switzerland with the following specimen from San José, Mexico. Professor Foster calls attention to the striking resemblance in the designs of these two widely separated works of art, one belonging to the Bronze Age of Europe, the other to the Copper Age of America.

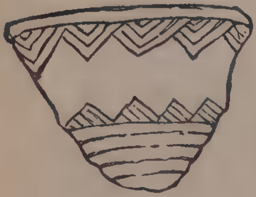
FRAGMENT OF POTTERY, LAKE NEUFCHATEL, SWITZERLAND.

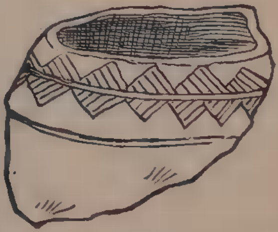
FRAGMENT OF POTTERY, SAN JOSÉ, MEXICO.

These, then, in conclusion, are our reasons for believing that the Bronze Age of Europe has relation to Atlantis:

1. The admitted fact that it is anterior in time to the Iron Age relegates it to a great antiquity.

2. The fact that it is anterior in time to the Iron Age is

conclusive that it is not due to any of the known European or Asiatic nations, all of which belong to the Iron Age.

3. The fact that there was in Europe, Asia, or Africa no copper or tin age prior to the Bronze Age, is conclusive testimony that the manufacture of bronze was an importation into those continents from some foreign country.

4. The fact that in America alone of all the world is found the Copper Age, which must necessarily have preceded the Bronze Age, teaches us to look to the westward of Europe and beyond the sea for that foreign country.

5. We find many similarities in forms of implements between the Bronze Age of Europe and the Copper Age of America.

6. If Plato told the truth, the Atlanteans were a great commercial nation, trading to America and Europe, and, at the same time, they possessed bronze, and were great workers in the other metals.

7. We shall see hereafter that the mythological traditions of Greece referred to a Bronze Age which preceded an Iron Age, and placed this in the land of the gods, which was an island in the Atlantic Ocean, beyond the Pillars of Hercules; and this land was, as we shall see, clearly Atlantis.

8. As we find but a small development of the Bronze Age in America, it is reasonable to suppose that there must have been some intermediate station between America and Europe, where, during a long period of time, the Bronze Age was developed out of the Copper Age, and immense quantities of bronze implements were manufactured and carried to Europe.

CHAPTER IX.

ARTIFICIAL DEFORMATION OF THE SKULL.

AN examination of the American monuments shows (see figure on page 269) that the people represented were in the habit of flattening the skull by artificial means. The Greek and Roman writers had mentioned this practice, but it was long totally forgotten by the civilized world, until it was discovered, as an unheard-of wonder, to be the usage among the Carib Islanders, and several Indian tribes in North America. It was afterward found that the ancient Peruvians and Mexicans practised this art: several flattened Peruvian skulls are depicted in Morton's "Crania Americana." It is still in use among the Flat-head Indians of the north-western part of the United States.

In 1849 a remarkable memoir appeared from the pen of M. Rathke, showing that similar skulls had been found near Kertsch, in the Crimea, and calling attention to the book of Hippocrates, "De Aeris, Aquis et Locu," lib. iv., and a passage of Strabo, which speaks of the practice among the Scythians. In 1854 Dr. Fitzinger published a learned memoir on the skulls of the Avars, a branch of the Uralian race of Turks. He shows that the practice of flattening the head had existed from an early date throughout the East, and described an ancient skull, greatly distorted by artificial means, which had lately been found in Lower Austria. Skulls similarly flattened have been found in Switzerland and Savoy. The Huns under Attila had the same practice of flattening the heads. Professor Anders Retzius proved (see "Smithsonian Report," 1859) that the custom *still exists in the south of France, and in parts of Turkey.*

"Not long since a French physician surprised the world by the fact that nurses in Normandy were still giving the children's heads a sugar-loaf shape by bandages and a tight cap, while in Brittany they preferred to press it round. No doubt they are doing so to this day." (Tylor's "Anthropology," p. 241.)

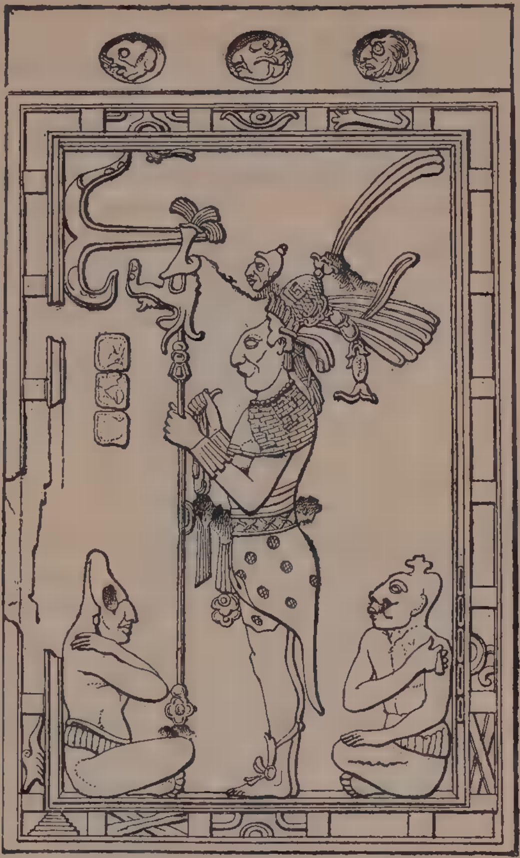

STUCCO BASS-RELIEF IN THE PALACE OF PALENQUE.

Professor Wilson remarks:

"Trifling as it may appear, it is not without interest to have the fact brought under our notice, by the disclosures of ancient barrows and cysts, that the same practice of nursing the child and carrying it about, bound to a flat cradle-board, prevailed in Britain and the north of Europe long before the first notices of written history reveal the presence of man beyond the Baltic or the English Channel, and that in all probability the same custom prevailed continuously from the shores of the German Ocean to Behring's Strait." ("Smithsonian Report," 1862, p. 286.)

Dr. L. A. Gosse testifies to the prevalence of the same custom among the Caledonians and Scandinavians in the earliest times; and Dr. Thurman has treated of the same peculiarity among the Anglo-Saxons. ("Crania Britannica," chap. iv., p. 38.)

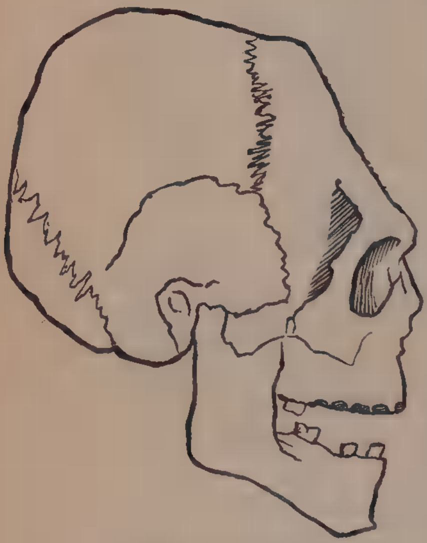

ANCIENT SWISS SKULL.

Here, then, is an extraordinary and unnatural practice which has existed from the highest antiquity, over vast regions of country, on both sides of the Atlantic, and which is perpetuated unto this day in races as widely separated as the Turks, the French, and the Flat-head Indians. Is it possible to explain this except by supposing that it originated from some common centre?

The annexed cut represents an ancient Swiss skull, from a cemetery near Lausanne, from a drawing of Frederick Troyon. Compare this with the illustration given on page 271, which represents a Peruvian flat-head, copied from Morton's "Ethnography and Archæology of the American Aborigines," 1846. This skull is shockingly distorted. The dotted lines indicate the course of the bandages by which the skull was deformed.

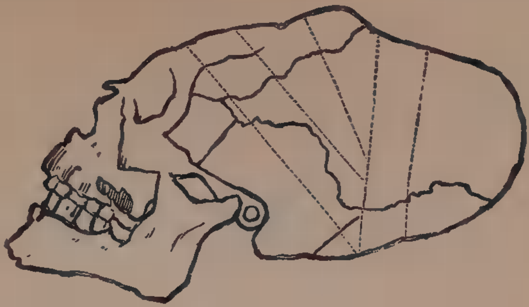

PERUVIAN SKULL.

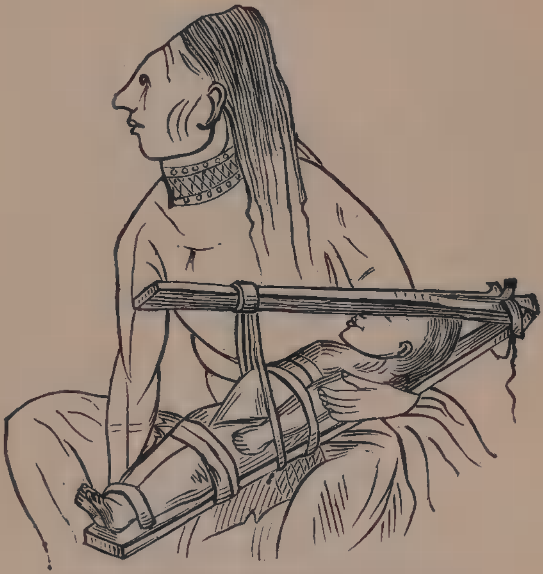

CHINOOK (FLAT-HEAD), AFTER CATLIN.

The following heads are from Del Rio's "Account of Palenque," copied into Nott and Gliddon's "Types of Mankind," p. 440. They show that the receding forehead was a natural characteristic of the ancient people of Central America. The same form of head has been found even in fossil skulls. We may therefore conclude that the skull-flattening, which we find to have been practised in both the Old and New Worlds, was an attempt of other races to imitate the form of skull of a people whose likenesses are found on the monuments of Egypt and of America. It has been shown that this peculiar form of the head was present even in the fœtus of the Peruvian mummies.

Hippocrates tells us that the practice among the Scythians was for the purpose of giving a certain aristocratic distinction.

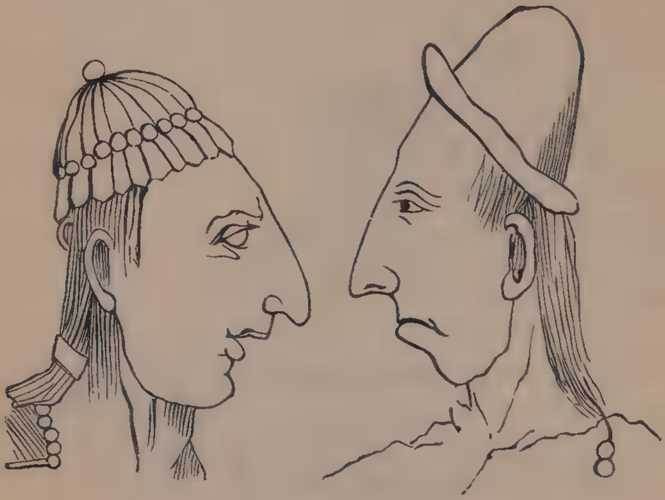

HEADS FROM PALENQUE.

Amedée Thierry, in his "History of Attila," says the Huns used it for the same reason; and the same purpose influences the Indians of Oregon.

Dr. Lund, a Swedish naturalist, found in the bone caves of Minas-Geraes, Brazil, ancient human bones associated with the remains of extinct quadrupeds. "These skulls," says Lund, "show not only the peculiarity of the American race but in an excessive degree, *even to the entire disappearance of the forehead.*" Sir Robert Schomburgh found on some of the affluents of the Orinoco a tribe known as Frog Indians, whose heads were flattened by Nature, as shown in newly-born children.

In the accompanying plate we show the difference in the conformation of the forehead in various races. The upper dotted line, A, represents the shape of the European forehead; the next line, B, that of the Australian; the next, C, that of the Mound Builder of the United States; the next, D, that of the Guanche of the Canary Islands; and the next, E, that of a skull from the Inca cemetery of Peru. We have but to compare these lines with the skulls of the Egyptians, Kurds, and the heroic type of heads in the statues of the gods of Greece, to see that there was formerly an ancient race marked by a receding forehead; and that the practice of flattening the skull was probably an attempt to approximate the shape of the head to this standard of an early civilized and dominant people.

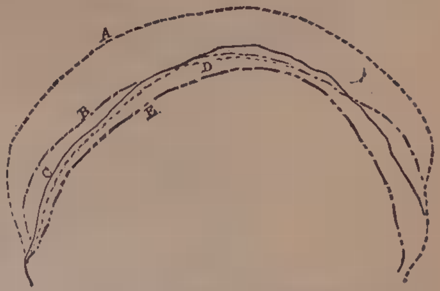

OUTLINES OF SKULLS OF DIFFERENT RACES.

Not only do we find the same receding forehead in the skulls of the ancient races of Europe and America, and the same attempt to imitate this natural and peculiar conformation by artificial flattening of the head, but it has been found (see Henry Gillman's "Ancient Man in Michigan," "Smithsonian Report," 1875, p. 242) that the Mound Builders and Peruvians of America, and the Neolithic people of France and *the Canary Islands*, had alike an extraordinary custom of boring a circular hole in the top of the skulls of their dead, so that the soul might readily pass in and out. More than this, it has been found that in all these ancient populations the skeletons exhibit a remarkable degree of *platicnemism*, or flattening of the *tibiæ* or leg bones. (*Ibid.*, 1873, p. 367.) In this respect the Mound Builders of Michigan were identical with the man of Cro Magnon and the ancient inhabitants of Wales.

The annexed ancient Egyptian heads, copied from the monuments, indicate either that the people of the Nile deformed their heads by pressure upon the front of the skull, or that there was some race characteristic which gave this appearance to their heads. These heads are all the heads of priests, and therefore represented the aristocratic class.

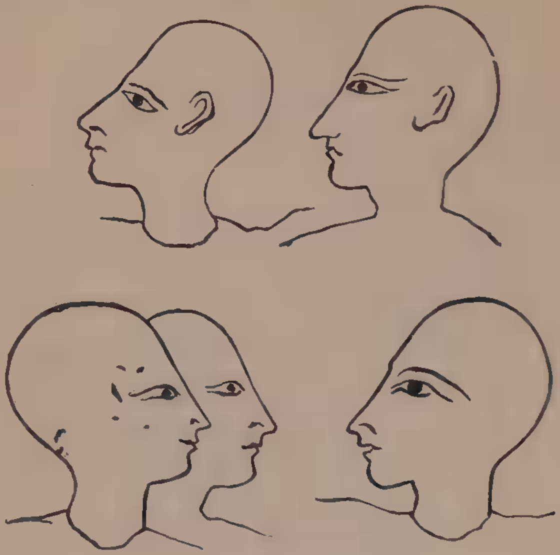
EGYPTIAN HEADS.

The first illustration below is taken from a stucco relief found in a temple at Palenque, Central America. The second is from an Egyptian monument of the time of Rameses IV.

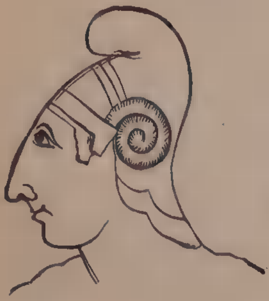
CENTRAL AMERICAN HEAD.

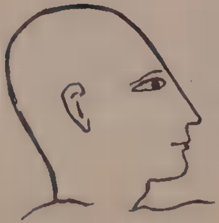
EGYPTIAN HEAD.

The outline drawing on the following page shows the form of the skull of the royal Inca line: the receding forehead here seems to be natural, and not the result of artificial compression.

Both illustrations at the bottom of the preceding page show the same receding form of the forehead, due to either artificial deformation of the skull or to a common race characteristic.

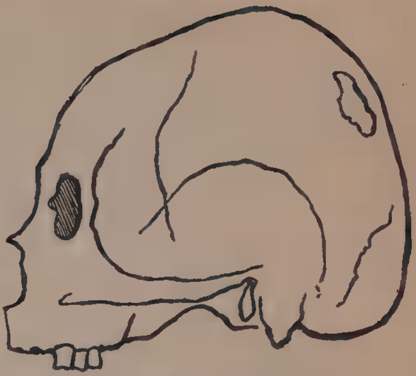

PERUVIAN INCA SKULL, FROM THE ANCIENT CEMETERY OF PACHACAMAC.

We must add the fact that the extraordinary practice of deforming the skull was found all over Europe and America to the catalogue of other proofs that the people of both continents were originally united in blood and race. With the couvade, the practice of circumcision, unity of religious beliefs and customs, folk-lore, and alphabetical signs, language and flood legends, we array together a mass of unanswerable proofs of prehistoric identity of race.

PART IV.

THE MYTHOLOGIES OF THE OLD WORLD A RECOLLECTION OF ATLANTIS.

Chapter I.

TRADITIONS OF ATLANTIS.

We find allusions to the Atlanteans in the most ancient traditions of many different races.

The great *antediluvian* king of the Mussulman was Shedd-Ad-Ben-Ad, or Shed-Ad, the son of Ad, or Atlantis.

Among the Arabians the first inhabitants of that country are known as the *Adites*, from their progenitor, who is called *Ad*, the grandson of Ham. These *Adites* were probably the people of Atlantis or Ad-lantis. "They are personified by a monarch *to whom everything is ascribed*, and to whom is assigned several centuries of life." ("Ancient History of the East," Lenormant and Chevallier, vol. ii., p. 295.) Ad came from the north-east. "He married a thousand wives, had four thousand sons, and lived twelve hundred years. His descendants multiplied considerably. After his death his sons Shadid and Shedad reigned in succession over the Adites. In the time of the latter the people of Ad were a thousand tribes, each composed of several thousands of men. Great conquests are attributed to Shedad; he subdued, it is said, all Arabia and Irak. The migration of the Canaanites, their establishment in Syria, and the Shepherd invasion of Egypt are, by many Arab writers, attributed to an expedition of Shedad." (*Ibid.*, p. 296.)

Shedad built a palace ornamented with superb columns, and surrounded by a magnificent garden. It was called Irem. "It was a paradise that Shedad had built in imitation of the celestial Paradise, of whose delights he had heard." ("Ancient History of the East," p. 296.) In other words, an ancient, sun-worshipping, powerful, and conquering race overran Arabia at the very dawn of history; they were the sons of Adlantis: their king tried to create a palace and garden of Eden like that of Atlantis.

The Adites are remembered by the Arabians as a great and civilized race. "They are depicted as men of gigantic stature; their strength was equal to their size, and they easily moved enormous blocks of stone." (*Ibid.*) They were architects and builders. "They raised many monuments of their power; and hence, among the Arabs, arose the custom of calling great ruins "buildings of the Adites." To this day the Arabs say "as old as Ad." In the Koran allusion is made to the edifices they built on "high places for vain uses;" expressions proving that their "idolatry was considered to have been tainted with Sabæism or star-worship." (*Ibid.*) "In these legends," says Lenormant, "we find traces of a wealthy nation, constructors of great buildings, with an advanced civilization, analogous to that of Chaldea, professing a religion similar to the Babylonian; a nation, in short, with whom material progress was allied to great moral depravity and obscene rites. These facts must be true and strictly historical, for they are everywhere met with among the Cushites, as among the Canaanites, their brothers by origin."

Nor is there wanting a great catastrophe which destroys the whole Adite nation, except a very few who escape because they had renounced idolatry. A black cloud assails their country, from which proceeds a terrible hurricane (the water-spout?) which sweeps away everything.

The first Adites were followed by a second Adite race; probably the colonists who had escaped the Deluge. The centre of its power was the country of Sheba proper. This empire endured for a thousand years. The Adites are represented upon the Egyptian monuments as very much like the Egyptians themselves; in other words, they were a red or sunburnt race: their great temples were pyramidal, surmounted by buildings. ("Ancient History of the East," p. 321.) "The Sabæans," says Agatharchides ("De Mari Erythræo," p. 102), "have in their houses an incredible number of vases, and utensils of all sorts, of gold and silver, beds and tripods of silver, and all the furniture of astonishing richness. Their buildings have porticos with columns sheathed with gold, or surmounted by capitals of silver. On the friezes, ornaments, and the framework of the doors they place plates of gold incrusted with precious stones."

All this reminds one of the descriptions given by the Spaniards of the temples of the sun in Peru.

The Adites worshipped the gods of the Phœnicians under names but slightly changed; "their religion was especially solar. . . . It was originally a religion without images, without idolatry, and without a priesthood." (*Ibid.*, p. 325.) They "worshipped the sun from the tops of pyramids." (*Ibid.*) They believed in the immortality of the soul.

In all these things we see resemblances to the Atlanteans.

The great Ethiopian or Cushite Empire, which in the earliest ages prevailed, as Mr. Rawlinson says, "from the Caucasus to the Indian Ocean, from the shores of the Mediterranean to the mouth of the Ganges," was the empire of Dionysos, the empire of "Ad," the empire of Atlantis. El Eldrisi called the language spoken to this day by the Arabs of Mahrah, in Eastern Arabia, "the language of the people of Ad," and Dr. J. H. Carter, in the *Bombay Journal* of July, 1847, says, "It is the softest and sweetest language I have ever heard." It would be interesting to compare this primitive tongue with the languages of Central America.

The god Thoth of the Egyptians, who was the god of a foreign country, and who invented letters, was called *At*-hothes.

We turn now to another ancient race, the Indo-European family—the Aryan race.

In Sanscrit *Adim* means *first.* Among the Hindoos the first man was *Ad*-ima, his wife was Heva. They *dwelt upon an island*, said to be Ceylon; they left the island and reached the main-land, when, by a great convulsion of nature, their communication with the parent land was forever cut off. (See "Bible in India.")

Here we seem to have a recollection of the destruction of Atlantis.

Mr. Bryant says, "Ad and Ada signify *the first.*" The Persians called the first man "Ad-amah." "Adon" was one of the names of the Supreme God of the Phœnicians; from it was derived the name of the Greek god "Ad-onis." The Arv-*ad* of Genesis was the Ar-*Ad* of the Cushites; it is now known as Ru-*Ad*. It is a series of connected cities *twelve miles in length*, along the coast, full of the most massive and gigantic ruins.

Sir William Jones gives the tradition of the Persians as to the earliest ages. He says: "Moshan assures us that in the opinion of the best informed Persians the first monarch of Iran, *and of the whole earth*, was Mashab-*Ad;* that he received from the Creator, and promulgated among men a sacred book, *in a heavenly language*, to which the Mussulman author gives the Arabic title of 'Desatir,' or 'Regulations.' Mashab-*Ad* was, in the opinion of the ancient Persians, the person left at the end of the last great cycle, and consequently *the father of the present world.* He and his wife having survived the former cycle, were blessed with a numerous progeny; he planted *gardens*, invented ornaments, forged weapons, taught men to take the fleece from sheep and make clothing; he built cities, constructed palaces, fortified towns, and introduced arts and commerce."

We have already seen that the primal gods of this people are identical with the gods of the Greek mythology, and were originally kings of Atlantis. But it seems that these ancient divinities are grouped together as "*the Aditya;*" and in this name "Ad-itya" we find a strong likeness to the Semitic "Ad-ites," and another reminiscence of Atlantis, or Adlantis. In corroboration of this view we find,

1. The gods who are grouped together as the Aditya are the most ancient in the Hindoo mythology.

2. They are all gods of light, or solar gods. (Whitney's "Oriental and Linguistic Studies," p. 39.)

3. There are *twelve* of them. (*Ibid.*)

4. These twelve gods presided over twelve months in the year.

5. They are a dim recollection of a very remote past. Says Whitney, "It seems as if here was an attempt on the part of the Indian religion to take a new development in a moral direction, which a change in the character and circumstances of the people has caused to fail in the midst, and fall back again into forgetfulness, while yet half finished and indistinct." (*Ibid.*)

6. These gods are called "the sons of Aditi," just as in the Bible we have allusions to "the sons of Adah," who were the first metallurgists and musicians. "Aditi" is not a goddess. She is addressed as a queen's daughter, "she of fair children."

7. The Aditya "are elevated above all imperfections; they do not sleep or wink." The Greeks represented their gods as equally wakeful and omniscient. "Their character is all truth; they hate and punish guilt." We have seen the same traits ascribed by the Greeks to the Atlantean kings.

8. The sun is sometimes addressed as an Aditya.

9. Among the Aditya is Varuna, the equivalent of Uranos, whose identification with Atlantis I have shown. In the vedas Varuna is "the god of the *ocean.*"

10. The Aditya represent an earlier and purer form of religion: "While in hymns to the other deities long life, wealth, power, are the objects commonly prayed for, of the Aditya is

craved purity, forgiveness of sin, freedom from guilt, and repentance." ("Oriental and Linguistic Studies," p. 43.)

11. The Aditya, like the Adites, are identified with the doctrine of the immortality of the soul. Yama is the god of the abode beyond the grave. In the Persian story he appears as Yima, and "*is made ruler of the golden age and founder of the Paradise.*" (*Ibid.*, p. 45.) (See "Zamna," p. 167 *ante.*)

In view of all these facts, one cannot doubt that the legends of the "sons of Ad," "the Adites," and "the Aditya," all refer to Atlantis.

Mr. George Smith, in the Chaldean account of the Creation (p. 78), deciphered from the Babylonian tablets, shows that there was an original race of men at the beginning of Chaldean history, a dark race, the *Zalmat-qaqadi*, who were called *Ad-mi*, or *Ad-ami;* they were the race "who had fallen," and were contradistinguished from "the *Sarku*, or light race." The "fall" probably refers to their destruction by a deluge, in consequence of their moral degradation and the indignation of the gods. The name *Adam* is used in these legends, but as the name of a race, not of a man.

Genesis (chap. v., 2) distinctly says that God created man male and female, and "called *their* name Adam." That is to say, the people were the Ad-ami, the people of "Ad," or Atlantis. "The author of the Book of Genesis," says M. Schœbel, "in speaking of the men who were swallowed up by the Deluge, always describes them as 'Haadam,' 'Adamite humanity.'" The race of Cain lived and multiplied far away from the land of Seth; in other words, far from the land destroyed by the Deluge. Josephus, who gives us the primitive traditions of the Jews, tells us (chap. ii., p. 42) that "Cain travelled over many countries" before he came to the land of Nod. The Bible does not tell us that the race of Cain perished in the Deluge. "Cain went out from the presence of Jehovah;" he did not call on his name; the people that were destroyed were the "sons of Jehovah." All this indicates that large colonies had been sent out by the mother-land before it sunk in the sea.

Across the ocean we find the people of Guatemala claiming their descent from a goddess called *At-tit*, or grandmother, who lived for four hundred years, and first taught the worship of the true God, which they afterward forgot. (Bancroft's "Native Races," vol. iii., p. 75.) While the famous Mexican calendar stone shows that the sun was commonly called *tonatiuh*, but when it was referred to as the god of the Deluge it was then called *Atl-tona-ti-uh*, or *At-onatiuh*. (Valentini's "Mexican Calendar Stone," art. *Maya Archæology*, p. 15.)

We thus find the sons of *Ad* at the base of all the most ancient races of men, to wit, the Hebrews, the Arabians, the Chaldeans, the Hindoos, the Persians, the Egyptians, the Ethiopians, the Mexicans, and the Central Americans; testimony that all these races traced their beginning back to a dimly-remembered Ad-lantis.

CHAPTER II.

THE KINGS OF ATLANTIS BECOME THE GODS OF THE GREEKS.

LORD BACON said:

"The mythology of the Greeks, which their oldest writers do not pretend to have invented, was no more than a light air, which had passed from a more ancient people into the flutes of the Greeks, which they modulated to such descants as best suited their fancies."

This profoundly wise and great man, who has illuminated every subject which he has touched, guessed very close to the truth in this utterance.

The Hon. W. E. Gladstone has had quite a debate of late with Mr. Cox as to whether the Greek mythology was underlaid by a nature worship, or a planetary or solar worship.

Peru, worshipping the sun and moon and planets, probably represents very closely the simple and primitive religion of Atlantis, with its sacrifices of fruits and flowers. This passed directly to their colony in Egypt. We find the Egyptians in their early ages sun and planet worshippers. Ptah was the object of their highest adoration. He is the father of the god of the sun, the ruler of the region of light. Ra was the sun-god. He was the supreme divinity at On, or Heliopolis, near Memphis. His symbol was the solar disk, supported by two rings. He created all that exists below the heavens.

The Babylonian trinity was composed of Hea, Anu, and Bel. Bel represented the sun, and was the favorite god. Sin was the goddess of the moon.

The Phœnicians were also sun-worshippers. The sun was represented by Baal-Samin, the great god, the god of light and the heavens, the creator and rejuvenator.

> "The attributes of both Baal and Moloch (the good and bad powers of the sun) were united in the Phœnician god Melkart, "king of the city," whom the inhabitants of Tyre considered their special patron. The Greeks called him "Melicertes," and identified him with Hercules. By his great strength and power he turned evil into good, brought life out of destruction, pulled back the sun to the earth at the time of the solstices, lessened excessive heat and cold, and rectified the evil signs of the zodiac. In Phœnician legends *he conquers the savage races of distant coasts*, founds the ancient settlements on the Mediterranean, and plants the rocks in the Straits of Gibraltar. ("American Cyclopædia," art. *Mythology*.)

The Egyptians worshipped the sun under the name of Ra; the Hindoos worshipped the sun under the name of Rama; while the great festival of the sun, of the Peruvians, was called Ray-mi.

Sun-worship, as the ancient religion of Atlantis, underlies all the superstitions of the colonies of that country. The Samoyed woman says to the sun, "When thou, god, risest, I too rise from my bed." Every morning even now the Brahmans stand on one foot, with their hands held out before them and their faces turned to the east, adoring the sun. "In Germany or France one may still see the peasant take off his hat to the rising sun." ("Anthropology," p. 361.) The Romans, even, in later times, worshipped the sun at Emesa, under the name of Elagabalus, "typified in the form of a black conical stone, which it was believed had fallen from heaven." The conical stone was the emblem of Bel. Did it have relation to the mounds and pyramids?

Sun-worship was the primitive religion of the red men of America. It was found among all the tribes. (Dorman, "Origin of Primitive Superstitions, p. 338.) The Chichimecs called the sun their father. The Comanches have a similar belief.

But, compared with such ancient nations as the Egyptians and Babylonians, the Greeks were children. A priest of Sais said to Solon,

"You Greeks are novices in knowledge of antiquity. You are ignorant of what passed either here or among yourselves in days of old. The history of eight thousand years is deposited in our sacred books; but I can ascend to a much higher antiquity, and tell you what our fathers have done for nine thousand years; I mean their institutions, their laws, and their most brilliant achievements."

The Greeks, too young to have shared in the religion of Atlantis, but preserving some memory of that great country and its history, proceeded to convert its kings into gods, and to depict Atlantis itself as the heaven of the human race. Thus we find a great solar or nature worship in the elder nations, while Greece has nothing but an incongruous jumble of gods and goddesses, who are born and eat and drink and make love and ravish and steal and die; and who are worshipped as immortal in presence of the very monuments that testify to their death.

"These deities, to whom the affairs of the world were intrusted, were, it is believed, immortal, though not eternal in their existence. In Crete there was even a story of the death of Zeus, his tomb being pointed out." (Murray's "Mythology," p. 2.)

The history of Atlantis is the key of the Greek mythology. There can be no question that these gods of Greece were human beings. The tendency to attach divine attributes to great earthly rulers is one deeply implanted in human nature. The savages who killed Captain Cook firmly believed that he was immortal, that he was yet alive, and would return to punish them. The highly civilized Romans made gods out of their dead emperors. Dr. Livingstone mentions that on one occasion, after talking to a Bushman for some time about the Deity, he found that the savage thought he was speaking of Sekomi, the principal chief of the district.

We find the barbarians of the coast of the Mediterranean regarding the civilized people of Atlantis with awe and wonder: "Their physical strength was extraordinary, the earth shaking sometimes under their tread. Whatever they did was done speedily. They moved through space almost without the loss of a moment of time." This probably alluded to the rapid motion of their sailing-vessels. "They were wise, and communicated their wisdom to men." That is to say, they civilized the people they came in contact with. "They had a strict sense of justice, and punished crime rigorously, and rewarded noble actions, though it is true they were less conspicuous for the latter." (Murray's "Mythology," p. 4.) We should understand this to mean that where they colonized they established a government of law, as contradistinguished from the anarchy of barbarism.

"There were tales of personal visits and adventures of the gods among men, taking part in battles and appearing in dreams. They were conceived to possess the form of human beings, and to be, like men, subject to love and pain, but always characterized by the highest qualities and grandest forms that could be imagined." (*Ibid.*)

Another proof that the gods of the Greeks were but the deified kings of Atlantis is found in the fact that "the gods were not looked upon as having created the world." They succeeded to the management of a world already in existence.

The gods dwelt on Olympus. They lived together like human beings; they possessed palaces, storehouses, stables, horses, etc.; "they dwelt in a social state which was but a magnified reflection of the social system on earth. Quarrels, love passages, mutual assistance, and such instances as characterize human life, were ascribed to them." (*Ibid.*, p. 10.)

Where was Olympus? It was in Atlantis. "The ocean encircled the earth with a great stream, and was a region of wonders of all kinds." (*Ibid.*, p. 23.) It was a great island, the then civilized world. The "encircling ocean" was spoken of in all the ancient legends. "Okeanos lived there with his wife

Tethys: these were the *Islands of the Blessed*, the garden of the gods, the sources of the nectar and ambrosia on which the gods lived." (Murray's "Mythology," p. 23.) Nectar was probably a fermented intoxicating liquor, and ambrosia bread made from wheat. Soma was a kind of whiskey, and the Hindoos deified it. "The gods lived on nectar and ambrosia" simply meant that the inhabitants of these blessed islands were civilized, and possessed a liquor of some kind and a species of food superior to anything in use among the barbarous tribes with whom they came in contact.

This blessed land answers to the description of Atlantis. It was an island full of wonders. It lay spread out in the ocean "like a disk, with the mountains rising from it." (*Ibid.*) On the highest point of this mountain dwelt Zeus (the king), "while the mansions of the other deities were arranged upon plateaus, or in ravines lower down the mountain. These deities, including Zeus, were twelve in number: Zeus (or Jupiter), Hera (or Juno), Poseidon (or Neptune), Demeter (or Ceres), Apollo, Artemis (or Diana), Hephæstos (or Vulcan), Pallas Athena (or Minerva), Ares (or Mars), Aphrodite (or Venus), Hermes (or Mercury), and Hestia (or Vesta)." These were doubtless the twelve gods from whom the Egyptians derived their kings. Where two names are given to a deity in the above list, the first name is that bestowed by the Greeks, the last that given by the Romans.

It is not impossible that our division of the year into twelve parts is a reminiscence of the twelve gods of Atlantis. Diodorus Siculus tells us that among the Babylonians there were twelve gods of the heavens, each personified by one of the signs of the zodiac, and worshipped in a *certain month of the year*. The Hindoos had twelve primal gods, "the Aditya." Moses erected twelve pillars at Sinai. The Mandan Indians celebrated the Flood with twelve typical characters, who danced around the ark. The Scandinavians believed in the twelve gods, the Aesir, who dwelt on Asgard, the Norse Olympus.

Diligent investigation may yet reveal that the number of a modern jury, twelve, is a survival of the ancient council of Asgard.

"According to the traditions of the Phœnicians, the Gardens of the Hesperides were in *the remote west*." (Murray's "Manual of Mythology," p. 258.) Atlas lived in these gardens. (*Ibid.*, p. 259.) Atlas, we have seen, was king of Atlantis. "The Elysian Fields (the happy islands) were commonly placed in *the remote west*. They were ruled over by Chronos." (*Ibid.*, p. 60.) Tartarus, the region of Hades, the gloomy home of the dead, was also located "under the mountains of an island in the *midst of the ocean* in the remote west." (*Ibid.*, p. 58.) Atlas was described in Greek mythology as "an enormous giant, who stood upon the *western confines of the earth*, and supported the heavens on his shoulders, in a region of the west where the sun continued to shine after he had set upon Greece." (*Ibid.*, p. 156.)

Greek tradition located the island in which Olympus was situated "in the far west," "in the ocean beyond Africa," "on the western boundary of the known world," "where the sun shone when it had ceased to shine on Greece," and where the mighty Atlas "held up the heavens." And Plato tells us that the land where Poseidon and Atlas ruled was Atlantis.

"The Garden of the Hesperides" (another name for the dwelling-place of the gods) "was situated *at the extreme limit of Africa*. Atlas was said to have surrounded it on every side with high mountains." (Smith's "Sacred Annals, Patriarchal Age," p. 131.) Here were found the golden apples.

This is very much like the description which Plato gives of the great plain of Atlantis, covered with fruit of every kind, and surrounded by precipitous mountains descending to the sea.

The Greek mythology, in speaking of the Garden of the Hesperides, tells us that "the outer edge of the garden was slightly raised, so that the water might not run in and overflow the land." Another reminiscence of the surrounding mountains of Atlantis as described by Plato, and as revealed by the deep-sea soundings of modern times.

Chronos, or Saturn, Dionysos, Hyperion, Atlas, Hercules, were all connected with "a great Saturnian continent;" they were kings that ruled over countries on the western shores of the Mediterranean, Africa and Spain. One account says: "Hyperion, Atlas, and Saturn, or Chronos, were sons of Uranos, who reigned over a great kingdom composed of countries around the western part of the Mediterranean, *with certain islands in the Atlantic.* Hyperion succeeded his father, and was then killed by the Titans. The kingdom was then divided between Atlas and Saturn—Atlas taking Northern Africa, with the Atlantic islands, and Saturn the countries on the opposite shore of the Mediterranean to Italy and Sicily." (Baldwin's "Prehistoric Nations," p. 357.)

Plato says, speaking of the traditions of the Greeks ("Dialogues, Laws," c. iv., p. 713), "There is a tradition of the happy life of mankind in the days when all things were spontaneous and abundant. . . . In like manner God in his love of mankind placed over us the demons, who are a superior race, and they, with great care and pleasure to themselves and no less to us, taking care of us and giving us place and reverence and order and justice never failing, made the tribes of men happy and peaceful . . . for Cronos knew that no human nature, invested with supreme power, is able to order human affairs and not overflow with insolence and wrong."

In other words, this tradition refers to an ancient time when the forefathers of the Greeks were governed by Chronos, of the Cronian Sea (the Atlantic), king of Atlantis, through civilized Atlantean governors, who by their wisdom preserved peace and created a golden age for all the populations under their control—they were the demons, that is, "the knowing ones," the civilized.

Plato puts into the mouth of Socrates these words ("Dialogues, Cratylus," p. 397): "My notion would be that the sun, moon, and stars, earth, and heaven, which are still the gods of many barbarians, were the only gods known to the aboriginal Hellenes. . . . What shall follow the gods? Must not demons and heroes and men come next? . . . Consider the real meaning of the word demons. You know Hesiod uses the word. He speaks of 'a golden race of men' who came first. He says of them,

> "'But now that fate has *closed over this race*,
> They are holy demons upon earth,
> Beneficent averters of ills, guardians of mortal men.'

He means by the golden men not men literally made of gold, but good and noble men; he says we are of the 'age of iron.' He called them demons because they were δαήμονες (knowing or wise)."

This is made the more evident when we read that this region of the gods, of Chronos and Uranos and Zeus, passed through, first, a Golden Age, then a Silver Age—these constituting a great period of peace and happiness; then it reached a Bronze Age; then an Iron Age, and finally *perished by a great flood*, sent upon these people by Zeus as a punishment for their sins. We read:

"Men were rich then (in the Silver Age), as in the Golden Age of Chronos, and lived in plenty; but still they wanted the innocence and contentment which were the true sources of human happiness in the former age; and accordingly, while living in luxury and delicacy, they became overbearing in their manners to the highest degree, were never satisfied, and forgot the gods, to whom, in their confidence of prosperity and comfort, they denied the reverence they owed. . . . Then followed the Bronze Age, a period of constant quarrelling and deeds of violence. Instead of cultivated lands, and a life of peaceful occupations and orderly habits, there came a day when everywhere might was right, and men, big and powerful as they were, became physically worn out. . . . Finally came the Iron Age, in which enfeebled mankind had to toil for bread with their hands, and, bent on gain, did their best to overreach each other. Dike, or Astræa, the goddess of justice and good faith, modesty and truth, turned her back on such scenes, and retired to Olympus, while Zeus determined to destroy the human race *by a great flood*. The whole of Greece lay under water, and none but Deucalion and his wife Pyrrha were saved." (Murray's "Mythology," p. 44.)

It is remarkable that we find here the same succession of the Iron Age after the Bronze Age that has been revealed to scientific men by the patient examination of the relics of antiquity in Europe. And this identification of the land that was destroyed by a flood — the land of Chronos and Poseidon and Zeus — with the Bronze Age, confirms the view expressed in Chapter VIII. (page 237, *ante*), that the bronze implements and weapons of Europe were mainly imported from Atlantis.

And here we find that the Flood that destroyed this land of the gods was the Flood of Deucalion, and the Flood of Deucalion was the Flood of the Bible, and this, as we have shown, was "the last great Deluge of all," according to the Egyptians, which destroyed Atlantis.

The foregoing description of the Golden Age of Chronos, when "men were rich and lived in plenty," reminds us of Plato's description of the happy age of Atlantis, when "men despised everything but virtue, not caring for their present state of life, and thinking lightly of the possession of gold and other property;" a time when, as the chants of the Delaware Indians stated it (page 109, *ante*), "all were willingly pleased, all were well-happified." While the description given by Murray in the above extract of the degeneracy of mankind in the land of the gods, "a period of constant quarrelling and deeds of violence, when might was right," agrees with Plato's account of the Atlanteans, when they became "aggressive," "unable to bear their fortune," "unseemly," "base," "filled with unrighteous avarice and power," and "in a most wretched state." And here again I might quote from the chant of the Delaware Indians—"they became troubled, hating each other; both were fighting, both were spoiling, both were never peaceful." And in all three instances the gods punished the depravity of mankind by a great deluge. Can all these precise coincidences be the result of accident?

May we not even suppose that the very word "Olympus" is a transformation from "Atlantis," in accordance with the laws that regulate the changes of letters of the same class into each other? Olympus was written by the Greeks "Olumpos." The letter *a* in Atlantis was sounded by the ancient world broad and full, like the *a* in our words *all* or *altar;* in these words it approximates very closely to the sound of *o*. It is not far to go to convert Otlontis into Oluntos, and this into Olumpos. We may, therefore, suppose that when the Greeks said that their gods dwelt in "Olympus," it was the same as if they said that they dwelt in "Atlantis."

Nearly all the gods of Greece are connected with Atlantis. We have seen the twelve principal gods all dwelling on the mountain of Olympus, in the midst of an island in the ocean in the far west, which was subsequently destroyed by a deluge on account of the wickedness of its people. And when we turn to Plato's description of Atlantis (p. 13, *ante*) we find that Poseidon and Atlas dwelt upon a mountain in the midst of the island; and on this mountain were their magnificent temples and palaces, where they lived, separated by great walls from their subjects.

It may be urged that Mount Olympus could not have referred to any mountain in Atlantis, because the Greeks gave that name to a group of mountains partly in Macedonia and partly in Thessaly. But in Mysia, Lycia, Cyprus, and elsewhere there were mountains called Olympus; and on the plain of Olympia, in Elis, there was an eminence bearing the same designation. There is a natural tendency among uncivilized peoples to give a "local habitation" to every general tradition.

"Many of the oldest myths," says Baldwin ("Prehistoric Nations," p. 376), "relate to Spain, North-western Africa, and other regions on the Atlantic, such as those concerning Hercules, the Cronidæ, the Hyperboreans, the Hesperides, and the Islands of the Blessed. Homer described the Atlantic region of Europe in his account of the wanderings of Ulysses. . . . In the ages previous to the decline of Phœnician influence in Greece and around the Ægean Sea, the people of those regions must have had a much better knowledge of Western

Europe than prevailed there during the Ionian or Hellenic period."

The mythology of Greece is really a history of the kings of Atlantis. The Greek heaven was Atlantis. Hence the references to statues, swords, etc., that fell from heaven, and were preserved in the temples of the different states along the shores of the Mediterranean from a vast antiquity, and which were regarded as the most precious possessions of the people. They were relics of the lost race received in the early ages. Thus we read of the brazen or bronze anvil that was preserved in one city, which fell from heaven, and was nine days and nine nights in falling; in other words, it took nine days and nights of a sailing-voyage to bring it from Atlantis.

The modern theory that the gods of Greece never had any personal existence, but represented atmospheric and meteorological myths, the movements of clouds, planets, and the sun, is absurd. Rude nations repeat, they do not invent; to suppose a barbarous people creating their deities out of clouds and sunsets is to reverse nature. Men first worship stones, then other men, then spirits. Resemblances of names prove nothing; it is as if one would show that the name of the great Napoleon meant "the lion of the desert" (Napo-leon), and should thence argue that Napoleon never existed, that he was a myth, that he represented power in solitude, or some such stuff. When we read that Jove whipped his wife, and threw her son out of the window, the inference is that Jove was a man, and actually did something like the thing described; certainly gods, sublimated spirits, aerial sprites, do not act after this fashion; and it would puzzle the myth-makers to prove that the sun, moon, or stars whipped their wives or flung recalcitrant young men out of windows. The history of Atlantis could be in part reconstructed out of the mythology of Greece; it is a history of kings, queens, and princes; of love-making, adulteries, rebellions, wars, murders, sea-voyages, and colonizations; of palaces, temples, workshops, and forges; of sword-making, engraving and metallurgy; of wine, barley, wheat, cattle, sheep, horses, and agriculture generally. Who can doubt that it represents the history of a real people?

Uranos was the first god; that is to say, the first king of the great race. As he was at the commencement of all things, his symbol was the sky. He probably represented the race previous even to the settlement of Atlantis. He was a son of Gæa (the earth). He seems to have been the parent of three races—the Titans, the Hekatoncheires, and the Kyklopes or Cyclops.

I incline to the belief that these were civilized races, and that the peculiarities ascribed to the last two refer to the vessels in which they visited the shores of the barbarians.

The empire of the Titans was clearly the empire of Atlantis. "The most judicious among our mythologists" (says Dr. Rees, "New British Cyclopædia," art. *Titans*)—"such as Gerard Vossius, Marsham, Bochart, and Father Thomassin—are of opinion that the partition of the world among the sons of Noah—Shem, Ham, and Japheth—was the original of the tradition of *the same partition among Jupiter, Neptune, and Pluto*," upon the breaking up of the great empire of the Titans. "The learned Pezron contends that the division which was made of this vast empire came, in after-times, to be taken for the partition of the whole world; that Asia remaining in the hands of Jupiter (Zeus), the most potent of the three brothers, made him looked upon as the god of Olympus; that the sea and islands which fell to Neptune occasioned their giving him the title of 'god of the sea;' and that Spain, the extremity of the then known world, thought to be a very low country in respect of Asia, and famous for its excellent mines of gold and silver, falling to Pluto, occasioned him to be taken for the 'god of the infernal regions.'" We should suppose that Pluto possibly ruled over the transatlantic possessions of Atlantis in America, over those "portions of the opposite continent" which Plato tells us were dominated by Atlas and his posterity, and which, being far beyond or below sunset, were the "under-world" of

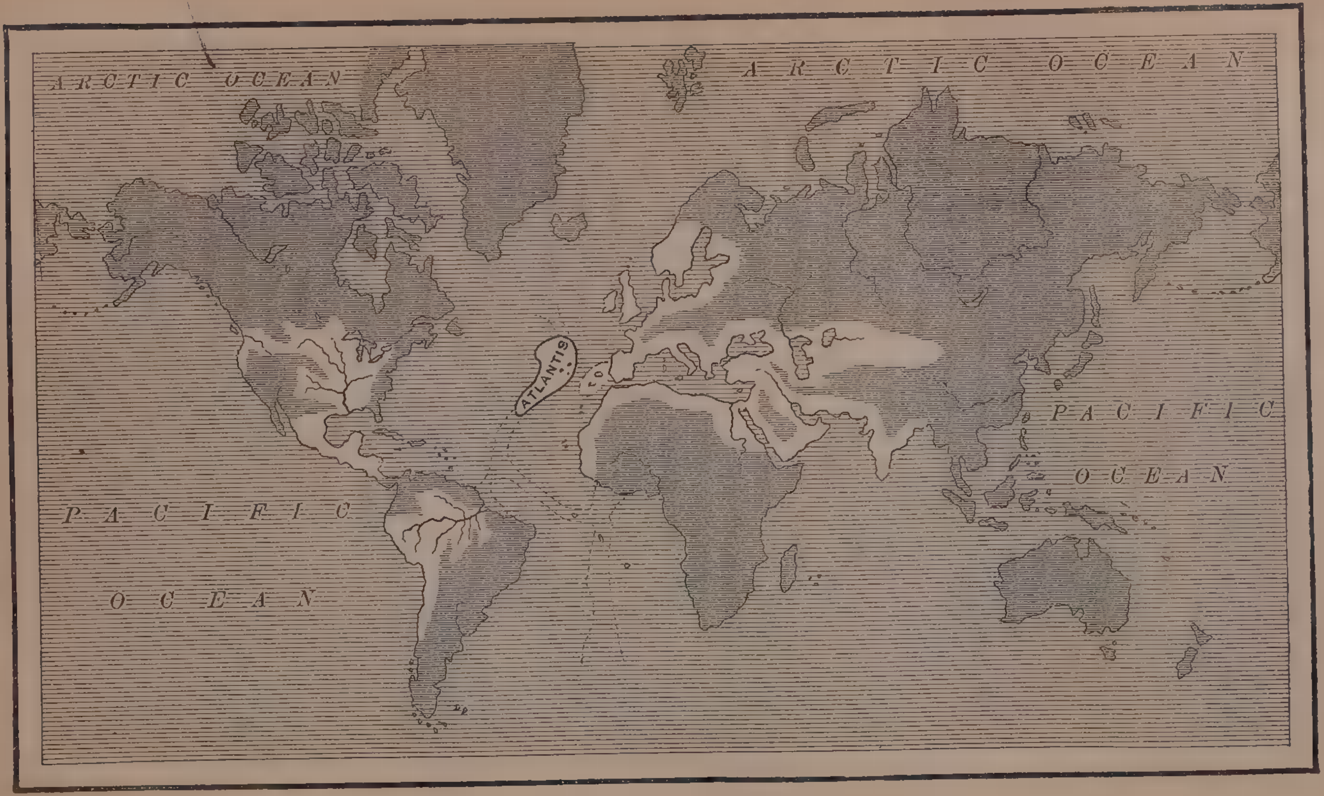
ARCTIC OCEAN
ARCTIC OCEAN
ATLANTIS
PACIFIC OCEAN
PACIFIC OCEAN

THE EMPIRE OF ATLANTIS.

the ancients; while Atlantis, the Canaries, etc., constituted the island division with Western Africa and Spain. Murray tells us ("Mythology," p. 58) that Pluto's share of the kingdom was supposed to lie "in the remote west." The under-world of the dead was simply the world below the western horizon; "the home of the dead has to do with that *far west* region where the sun dies at night." ("Anthropology," p. 350.) "On the coast of Brittany, where Cape Raz stands out *westward into the ocean*, there is 'the Bay of Souls,' the launching-place where the departed spirits *sail off across the sea.*" (*Ibid.*) In like manner, Odysseus found the land of the dead in the ocean beyond the Pillars of Hercules. There, indeed, was the land of the mighty dead, the grave of the drowned Atlanteans.

"However this be," continues F. Pezron, "the empire of the Titans, according to the ancients, was very extensive; they possessed Phrygia, Thrace, a part of Greece, the island of Crete, and several other provinces to the inmost recesses of Spain. To these Sanchoniathon seems to join Syria; and Diodorus adds a part of Africa, and the kingdoms of Mauritania." The kingdoms of Mauritania embraced all that north-western region of Africa nearest to Atlantis in which are the Atlas Mountains, and in which, in the days of Herodotus, dwelt the Atlantes.

Neptune, or Poseidon, says, in answer to a message from Jupiter,

No vassal god, nor of his train am I.
Three brothers, deities, from Saturn came,
And ancient Rhea, earth's immortal dame;
Assigned by lot our triple rule we know;
Infernal Pluto sways the shades below:
O'er the wide clouds, and o'er the starry plain
Ethereal Jove extends his high domain;
My court beneath the hoary waves I keep,
And hush the roaring of the sacred deep.
Iliad, book xviii.

Homer alludes to Poseidon as

"The god whose liquid arms are hurled
Around the globe, whose earthquakes rock the world."

Mythology tells us that when the Titans were defeated by Saturn they retreated into the interior of Spain; Jupiter followed them up, and beat them for the last time near Tartessus, and thus terminated a ten-years' war. Here we have a real battle on an actual battle-field.

If we needed any further proof that the empire of the Titans was the empire of Atlantis, we would find it in the names of the Titans: among these were *Oceanus*, Saturn or Chronos, and *Atlas;* they were all the sons of Uranos. Oceanus was at the base of the Greek mythology. Plato says ("Dialogues," Timæus, vol. ii., p. 533): "Oceanus and Tethys were the children of Earth and Heaven, and from these sprung Phorcys, and Chronos, and Rhea, and many more with them; and from Chronos and Rhea sprung Zeus and Hera, and *all those whom we know as their brethren, and others who were their children.*" In other words, all their gods came out of the ocean; they were rulers over some ocean realm; Chronos was the son of Oceanus, and Chronos was an Atlantean god, and from him the Atlantic Ocean was called by the ancients "the Chronian Sea." The elder Minos was called "the Son of the Ocean:" he first gave civilization to the Cretans; he engraved his laws on brass, precisely as Plato tells us the laws of Atlantis were engraved on pillars of brass.

The wanderings of Ulysses, as detailed in the "Odyssey" of Homer, are strangely connected with the Atlantic Ocean. The islands of the Phæacians were apparently in mid-ocean:

We dwell apart, afar
Within the unmeasured deep, amid its waves
The most remote of men; no other race
Hath commerce with us.—*Odyssey*, book vi.

The description of the Phæacian walls, harbors, cities, palaces, ships, etc., seems like a recollection of Atlantis. The island of Calypso appears also to have been in the Atlantic Ocean, twenty days' sail from the Phæacian isles; and when Ulysses goes to the land of Pluto, "the under-world," the home of the dead, he

> "Reached the far confines of Oceanus,"

beyond the Pillars of Hercules. It would be curious to inquire how far the poems of Homer are Atlantean in their relations and inspiration. Ulysses's wanderings were a prolonged struggle with Poseidon, the founder and god of Atlantis.

"The Hekatoncheires, or Cetimæni, beings each with a hundred hands, were three in number—Kottos, Gyges or Gyes, and Briareus—and represented the frightful crashing of waves, and its resemblance to the convulsions of earthquakes." (Murray's "Mythology," p. 26.) Are not these hundred arms the oars of the galleys, and the frightful crashing of the waves their movements in the water?

> "The Kyklopes also were three in number—Brontes, with his thunder; Sterŏpes, with his lightning; and Arges, with his stream of light. They were represented as having only one eye, which was placed at the juncture between the nose and brow. It was, however, a large, flashing eye, as became beings who were personifications of the storm-cloud, with its flashes of destructive lightning and peals of thunder."

We shall show hereafter that the invention of gunpowder dates back to the days of the Phœnicians, and may have been derived by them from Atlantis. It is not impossible that in this picture of the Kyklopes we see a tradition of sea-going ships, with a light burning at the prow, and armed with some explosive preparation, which, with a roar like thunder, and a flash like lightning, destroyed those against whom it was employed? It at least requires less strain upon our credulity to suppose these monsters were a barbarian's memory of great ships than to believe that human beings ever existed with a hundred arms, and with one eye in the middle of the forehead, and giving out thunder and lightning.

The natives of the West India Islands regarded the ships of Columbus as living creatures, and that their sails were wings.

Berosus tells us, speaking of the ancient days of Chaldea, "In the first year there appeared, from that part of the Erythræan Sea which borders upon Babylonia, an animal endowed with reason, by name Oannes, whose whole body (according to the account of Apollodorus) was that of a fish; that under the fish's head he had another head, with feet also below, similar to those of a man, subjoined to the fish's tail. His voice too and language was articulate and human, and a representation of him is preserved even unto this day. This being was accustomed to pass the day among men, but took no food at that season, and he gave them an insight into letters and arts of all kinds. He taught them to construct cities, to found temples, to compile laws, and explained to them the principles of geometrical knowledge. He made them distinguish the seeds of the earth, and showed them how to collect the fruits; in short, he instructed them in everything which could tend to soften manners and humanize their laws. *From that time nothing material has been added by way of improvement to his instructions.* And when the sun set, this being, Oannes, retired again into the sea, and passed the night in the deep, for he was amphibious. After this there appeared other animals like Oannes."

This is clearly the tradition preserved by a barbarous people of the great ships of a civilized nation, who colonized their coast and introduced the arts and sciences among them. And here we see the same tendency to represent the ship as a living thing, which converted the war-vessels of the Atlanteans (the Kyklopes) into men with one blazing eye in the middle of the forehead.

Uranos was deposed from the throne, and succeeded by his son Chronos. He was called "the ripener, the harvest-god," and was probably identified with the beginning of the Agricultural Period. He married his sister Rhea, who bore him Pluto, *Poseidon*, Zeus, Hestia, Demeter, and Hera. He anticipated that his sons would dethrone him, as he had dethroned his father, Uranos, and he swallowed his first five children, and would have swallowed the sixth child, Zeus, but that his wife Rhea deceived him with a stone image of the child; and Zeus was conveyed to the island of Crete, and there concealed in a cave and raised to manhood. Subsequently Chronos "yielded back to the light the children he had swallowed." This myth probably means that Chronos had his children raised in some secret place, where they could not be used by his enemies as the instruments of a rebellion against his throne; and the stone image of Zeus, palmed off upon him by Rhea, was probably some other child substituted for his own. His precautions seem to have been wise; for as soon as the children returned to the light they commenced a rebellion, and drove the old gentleman from his throne. A rebellion of the Titans followed. The struggle was a tremendous one, and seems to have been decided at last by the use of gunpowder, as I shall show farther on.

We have seen Chronos identified with the Atlantic, called by the Romans the "Chronian Sea." He was known to the Romans under the name of Saturn, and ruled over "a great Saturnian continent" in the Western Ocean. Saturn, or Chronos, came to Italy: he presented himself to the king, Janus, "and proceeded to instruct the subjects of the latter in agriculture, gardening, and many other arts then quite unknown to them: as, for example, how to tend and cultivate the vine. By such means he at length raised the people from a rude and comparatively barbarous condition to one of order and peaceful occupations, in consequence of which he was everywhere held in high esteem, and, in course of time, was selected by Janus to share with him the government of the country, which thereupon assumed the name of *Saturnia*—'a land of seed and fruit.' The period of Saturn's government was sung in later days by poets as a happy time, when sorrows were unknown, when innocence, freedom, and gladness reigned throughout the land in such a degree as to deserve the title of the Golden Age." (Murray's "Mythology," p. 32.)

All this accords with Plato's story. He tells us that the rule of the Atlanteans extended to Italy; that they were a civilized, agricultural, and commercial people. The civilization of Rome was therefore an outgrowth directly from the civilization of Atlantis.

The Roman *Saturnalia* was a remembrance of the Atlantean colonization. It was a period of joy and festivity; master and slave met as equals; the distinctions of poverty and wealth were forgotten; no punishments for crime were inflicted; servants and slaves went about dressed in the clothes of their masters; and children received presents from their parents or relatives. It was a time of jollity and mirth, a recollection of the Golden Age. We find a reminiscence of it in the Roman "Carnival."

The third and last on the throne of the highest god was Zeus. We shall see him, a little farther on, by the aid of some mysterious engine overthrowing the rebels, the Titans, who rose against his power, amid the flash of lightning and the roar of thunder. He was called "the thunderer," and "the mighty thunderer." He was represented with thunder-bolts in his hand and an eagle at his feet.

During the time of Zeus Atlantis seems to have reached its greatest height of power. He was recognized as the father of the whole world; he everywhere rewarded uprightness, truth, faithfulness, and kindness; he was merciful to the poor, and punished the cruel. To illustrate his rule on earth the following story is told:

> "Philemon and Baukis, an aged couple of the poorer class, were living peacefully and full of piety toward the gods in their cottage in Phrygia, when Zeus, who often visited the earth, disguised, to inquire into the behavior of men, paid a visit, in passing through Phrygia on such a journey, to these poor old people, and was received by them very kindly as a weary traveller, which he pretended to be. Bidding him welcome to the house, they set about preparing for their guest, who was accompanied by Hermes, as excellent a meal as they could afford, and for this purpose were about to kill the only goose they had left, when Zeus interfered; for he was touched by their kindliness and genuine piety, and that all the more because he had

observed among the other inhabitants of the district nothing but cruelty of disposition and a habit of reproaching and despising the gods. To punish this conduct he determined to visit the country with a flood, but to save from it Philemon and Baukis, the good aged couple, and to reward them in a striking manner. To this end he revealed himself to them before opening the gates of the great flood, transformed their poor cottage on the hill into a splendid temple, installed the aged pair as his priest and priestess, and granted their prayer that they might both die together. When, after many years, death overtook them, they were changed into two trees, that grew side by side in the neighborhood—an oak and a linden." (Murray's "Mythology," p. 38.)

Here we have another reference to the Flood, and another identification with Atlantis.

Zeus was a kind of Henry VIII., and took to himself a number of wives. By Demeter (Ceres) he had Persephone (Proserpine); by Leto, Apollo and Artemis (Diana); by Dione, Aphrodite (Venus); by Semele, Dionysos (Bacchus); by Maia, Hermes (Mercury); by Alkmene, Hercules, etc., etc.

We have thus the whole family of gods and goddesses traced back to Atlantis.

Hera, or Juno, was the first and principal wife of Zeus. There were numerous conjugal rows between the royal pair, in which, say the poets, Juno was generally to blame. She was naturally jealous of the other wives of Zeus. Zeus on one occasion beat her, and threw her son Hephæstos out of Olympus; on another occasion he hung her out of Olympus with her arms tied and two great weights attached to her feet—a very brutal and ungentlemanly trick—but the Greeks transposed this into a beautiful symbol: the two weights, they say, represent the earth and sea, "an illustration of how all the phenomena of the visible sky were supposed to hang dependent on the highest god of heaven!" (*Ibid.*, p. 47.) Juno probably regarded the transaction in an altogether different light; and she therefore united with Poseidon, the king's brother, and his daughter

Athena, in a rebellion to put the old fellow in a strait-jacket, "and would have succeeded had not Thetis brought to his aid the sea-giant Ægæon," probably a war-ship. She seems in the main, however, to have been a good wife, and was the type of all the womanly virtues.

Poseidon, the first king of Atlantis, according to Plato, was, according to Greek mythology, a brother of Zeus, and a son of Chronos. In the division of the kingdom he fell heir to the ocean and its islands, and to the navigable rivers; in other words, he was king of a maritime and commercial people. His symbol was the horse. "He was the first to train and employ horses;" that is to say, his people first domesticated the horse. This agrees with what Plato tells us of the importance attached to the horse in Atlantis, and of the baths and race-courses provided for him. He was worshipped in the island of Tenos "in the character of a physician," showing that he represented an advanced civilization. He was also master of an agricultural people; "the ram with the golden fleece for which the Argonauts sailed was the offspring of Poseidon." He carried in his hand a three-pronged symbol, the trident, doubtless an emblem of the three continents that were embraced in the empire of Atlantis. He founded many colonies along the shores of the Mediterranean; "he helped to build the walls of Troy;" the tradition thus tracing the Trojan civilization to an Atlantean source. He settled Attica and founded Athens, named after his niece Athena, daughter of Zeus, who had no mother, but had sprung from the head of Zeus, which probably signified that her mother's name was not known—she was a foundling. Athena caused the first olive-tree to grow on the Acropolis of Athens, parent of all the olive-trees of Greece. Poseidon seems to have had settlements at Corinth, Ægina, Naxos, and Delphi. Temples were erected to his honor in nearly *all the seaport towns of Greece.* He sent a sea-monster, to wit, a ship, to ravage part of the Trojan territory.

In the "Iliad" Poseidon appears "as ruler of the sea, inhabiting a brilliant palace in its depths, traversing its surface in a chariot, or stirring the powerful billows *until the earth shakes* as they crash upon the shores. . . . He is also associated with well-watered plains and valleys." (Murray's "Mythology," p. 51.) The palace in the depths of the sea was the palace upon Olympus in Atlantis; the traversing of the sea referred to the movements of a mercantile race; the shaking of the earth was an association with earthquakes; the "well-watered plains and valleys" remind us of the great plain of Atlantis described by Plato.

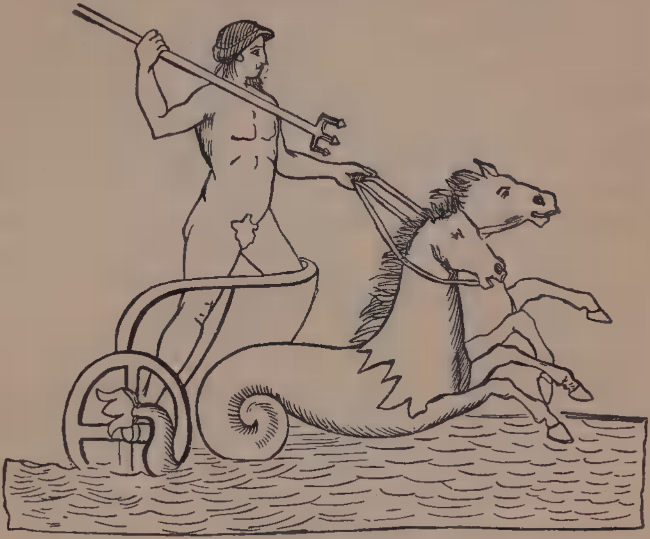

POSEIDON, OR NEPTUNE.

All the traditions of the coming of civilization into Europe point to Atlantis.

For instance, Keleos, who lived at Eleusis, near Athens, hospitably received Demeter, the Greek Ceres, the daughter of Poseidon, when she landed; and in return she taught him the use of the plough, and presented his son with the seed of barley, and sent him out to teach mankind how to sow and utilize that grain. Dionysos, grandson of Poseidon, travelled "through all the known world, even into the remotest parts of India, instructing the people, as he proceeded, how to tend the vine, and how to practise many other arts of peace, besides teaching them the value of just and honorable dealings." (Murray's "Mythology," p. 119.) The Greeks celebrated great festivals in his honor down to the coming of Christianity.

"The Nymphs of Grecian mythology were a kind of middle beings between the gods and men, communicating with both, loved and respected by both; . . . living like the gods on ambrosia. In extraordinary cases they were summoned, it was believed, to the councils of the Olympian gods; but they usually remained in their particular spheres, in secluded grottoes and peaceful valleys, occupied in spinning, weaving, bathing, singing sweet songs, dancing, sporting, or accompanying deities who passed through their territories—hunting with Artemis (Diana), rushing about with Dionysos (Bacchus), making merry with Apollo or Hermes (Mercury), but always in a hostile attitude toward the wanton and excited Satyrs."

The Nymphs were plainly the female inhabitants of Atlantis dwelling on the plains, while the aristocracy lived on the higher lands. And this is confirmed by the fact that part of them were called *Atlantids*, offspring of Atlantis. The Hesperides were also "daughters of Atlas;" their mother was Hesperis, a personification of "the region of the West." Their home was "an island in the ocean," off the north or west coast of Africa.

And here we find a tradition which not only points to Atlantis, but also shows some kinship to the legend in Genesis of the tree and the serpent.

Titæa, "a goddess of the earth," gave Zeus a tree bearing golden apples on it. This tree was put in the care of the Hesperides, but they *could not resist the temptation to pluck and eat its fruit;* thereupon a *serpent* named Ladon was put to watch the tree. Hercules slew the serpent, and gave the apples to the Hesperides.

Heracles (Hercules), we have seen, was a son of Zeus, king of Atlantis. One of his twelve labors (the tenth) was the carrying off the cattle of Geryon. The meaning of Geryon is "the red glow of the *sunset.*" He dwelt on the island of "Erythea, in the *remote west*, beyond the Pillars of Hercules." Hercules took a ship, and after encountering a storm, reached the island and placed himself on Mount Abas. Hercules killed Geryon, stole the cattle, put them on the ship, and landed them safely, driving them "through Iberia, Gaul, and over the Alps down into Italy." (Murray's "Mythology," p. 257.) This was simply the memory of a cattle raid made by an uncivilized race upon the civilized, cattle-raising people of Atlantis.

It is not necessary to pursue the study of the gods of Greece any farther. They were simply barbarian recollections of the rulers of a great civilized people who in early days visited their shores, and brought with them the arts of peace.

Here then, in conclusion, are the proofs of our proposition that the gods of Greece had been the kings of Atlantis:

1. They were not the makers, but the rulers of the world.

2. They were human in their attributes; they loved, sinned, and fought battles, the very sites of which are given; they founded cities, and civilized the people of the shores of the Mediterranean.

3. They dwelt upon an island in the Atlantic, "in the remote west, . . . where the sun shines after it has ceased to shine on Greece."

4. Their land was destroyed in a deluge.

5. They were ruled over by Poseidon and Atlas.

6. Their empire extended to Egypt and Italy and the shores of Africa, precisely as stated by Plato.

7. They existed during the Bronze Age and at the beginning of the Iron Age.

The entire Greek mythology is the recollection, by a degenerate race, of a vast, mighty, and highly civilized empire, which in a remote past covered large parts of Europe, Asia, Africa, and America.

CHAPTER III.

THE GODS OF THE PHŒNICIANS ALSO KINGS OF ATLANTIS.

NOT alone were the gods of the Greeks the deified kings of Atlantis, but we find that the mythology of the Phœnicians was drawn from the same source.

For instance, we find in the Phœnician cosmogony that the Titans (Rephaim) derive their origin from the Phœnician gods Agrus and Agrotus. This connects the Phœnicians with that island in the remote west, in the midst of ocean, where, according to the Greeks, the Titans dwelt.

According to Sanchoniathon, *Ouranos* was the son of Autochthon, and, according to Plato, Autochthon was one of the ten kings of Atlantis. He married his sister *Ge*. He is the *Uranos* of the Greeks, who was the son of *Gæa* (the earth), whom he married. The Phœnicians tell us, "Ouranos had by Ge four sons: Ilus (El), who is called Chronos, and Betylus (Beth-El), and Dagon, which signifies bread-corn, and Atlas (Tammuz?)." Here, again, we have the names of two other kings of Atlantis. These four sons probably represented four races, the offspring of the earth. The Greek Uranos was the father of Chronos, and the ancestor of Atlas. The Phœnician god Ouranos had a great many other wives: his wife *Ge* was jealous; they quarrelled, and he attempted to kill the children he had by her. This is the legend which the Greeks told of Zeus and Juno. In the Phœnician mythology Chronos raised a rebellion against Ouranos, and, after a great battle, dethroned him. In the Greek legends it is Zeus who attacks and overthrows his father, Chronos. Ouranos had a daughter called Astarte (Ashtoreth), another called Rhea. "And Dagon, after he had found out bread-corn and the plough, was called Zeus-Arotrius."

We find also, in the Phœnician legends, mention made of Poseidon, founder and king of Atlantis.

Chronos gave Attica to his daughter Athena, as in the Greek legends. In a time of plague he sacrificed his son to Ouranos, and "circumcised himself, and compelled his allies to do the same thing." It would thus appear that this singular rite, practised as we have seen by the Atlantidæ of the Old and New Worlds, the Egyptians, the Phœnicians, the Hebrews, the Ethiopians, the Mexicans, and the red men of America, dates back, as we might have expected, to Atlantis.

"Chronos visits the different regions of the habitable world."

He gave Egypt as a kingdom to the god Taaut, who had invented the alphabet. The Egyptians called him Thoth, and he was represented among them as "the god of letters, the clerk of the under-world," bearing a tablet, pen, and palm-branch.

This not only connects the Phœnicians with Atlantis, but shows the relations of Egyptian civilization to both Atlantis and the Phœnicians.

There can be no doubt that the royal personages who formed the gods of Greece were also the gods of the Phœnicians. We have seen the Autochthon of Plato reappearing in the Autochthon of the Phœnicians; the Atlas of Plato in the Atlas of the Phœnicians; the Poseidon of Plato in the Poseidon of the Phœnicians; while the kings Mestor and Mneseus of Plato are probably the gods Misor and Amynus of the Phœnicians.

Sanchoniathon tells us, after narrating all the discoveries by which the people advanced to civilization, that the Cabiri set down their records of the past by the command of the god Taaut, "and they delivered them to their successors and to foreigners, of whom one was Isiris (Osiris), the inventor of the three letters, the brother of Chua, who is called the first Phœnician." (Lenormant and Chevallier, "Ancient History of the East," vol. ii., p. 228.)

This would show that the first Phœnician came long after this line of the kings or gods, and that he was a foreigner, as compared with them; and, therefore, that it could not have been the Phœnicians proper who made the several inventions narrated by Sanchouiathon, but some other race, from whom the Phœnicians might have been descended.

And in the delivery of their records to the foreigner Osiris, the god of Egypt, we have another evidence that Egypt derived her civilization from Atlantis.

Max Müller says:

> "The Semitic languages also are all varieties of one form of speech. Though we do not know that primitive language from which the Semitic dialects diverged, yet we know that at one time such language must have existed. . . . We cannot derive Hebrew from Sanscrit, or Sanscrit from Hebrew; but we can well understand how both may have proceeded from one common source. They are both channels supplied from one river, and they carry, though not always on the surface, floating materials of language which challenge comparison, and have already yielded satisfactory results to careful analyzers." ("Outlines of Philosophy of History," vol. i., p. 475.)

There was an ancient tradition among the Persians that the Phœnicians migrated from the shores of the Erythræan Sea, and this has been supposed to mean the Persian Gulf; but there was a very old city of Erythia, in utter ruin in the time of Strabo, which was built in some ancient age, long before the founding of Gades, near the site of that town, on the Atlantic coast of Spain. May not this town of Erythia have given its name to the adjacent sea? And this may have been the starting-point of the Phœnicians in their European migrations. It would even appear that there was an island of Erythea. In the Greek mythology the tenth labor of Hercules consisted in driving away the cattle of Geryon, who lived in the island of Erythea, "an island somewhere in the remote west, *beyond the*

Pillars of Hercules." (Murray's "Mythology," p. 257.) Hercules stole the cattle from this remote oceanic island, and, returning, drove them "through Iberia, Gaul, over the Alps, and through Italy." (*Ibid.*) It is probable that a people emigrating from the Erythræan Sea, that is, from the Atlantic, first gave their name to a town on the coast of Spain, and at a later date to the Persian Gulf—as we have seen the name of York carried from England to the banks of the Hudson, and then to the Arctic Circle.

The builders of the Central American cities are reported to have been a bearded race. The Phœnicians, in common with the Indians, practised human sacrifices to a great extent; they worshipped fire and water, adopted the names of the animals whose skins they wore—that is to say, they had the totemic system—telegraphed by means of fires, poisoned their arrows, offered peace before beginning battle, and used drums. (Bancroft's "Native Races," vol. v., p. 77.)

The extent of country covered by the commerce of the Phœnicians represents to some degree the area of the old Atlantean Empire. Their colonies and trading-posts extended east and west from the shores of the Black Sea, through the Mediterranean to the west coast of Africa and of Spain, and around to Ireland and England; while from north to south they ranged from the Baltic to the Persian Gulf. They touched every point where civilization in later ages made its appearance. Strabo estimated that they had three hundred cities along the west coast of Africa. When Columbus sailed to discover a new world, or re-discover an old one, he took his departure from a Phœnician seaport, founded by that great race two thousand five hundred years previously. This Atlantean sailor, with his Phœnician features, sailing from an Atlantean port, simply re-opened the path of commerce and colonization which had been closed when Plato's island sunk in the sea. And it is a curious fact that Columbus had the antediluvian world in his mind's eye even then, for when he reached the mouth of the Orinoco he thought it was the river Gihon, that flowed out of Paradise, and he wrote home to Spain, "There are here great indications suggesting the proximity of the earthly Paradise, for not only does it correspond in mathematical position with the opinions of the holy and learned theologians, but all other signs concur to make it probable."

Sanchoniathon claims that the learning of Egypt, Greece, and Judæa was derived from the Phœnicians. It would appear probable that, while other races represent the conquests or colonizations of Atlantis, the Phœnicians succeeded to their arts, sciences, and especially their commercial supremacy; and hence the close resemblances which we have found to exist between the Hebrews, a branch of the Phœnician stock, and the people of America.

Upon the Syrian sea the people live
Who style themselves Phœnicians. . . .
These were *the first great founders of the world*—
Founders of cities and of mighty states—
Who showed a path through seas before unknown.
In the first ages, when the sons of men
Knew not which way to turn them, they assigned
To each his first department; they bestowed
Of land a portion and of sea a lot,
And sent each wandering tribe far off to share
A different soil and climate. Hence arose
The great diversity, so plainly seen,
'Mid nations widely severed.

Dyonysius of Susiana, A.D. 300.

Chapter IV.

THE GOD ODIN, WODEN, OR WOTAN.

In the Scandinavian mythology the chief god was Odin, the Woden, Wotan, or Wuotan of the Germans. He is represented with many of the attributes of the Greek god Zeus, and is supposed by some to be identical with him. He dwelt with the *twelve* Æsir, or gods, upon Asgard, the Norse Olympus, which arose out of Midgard, a land half-way between the regions of frost and fire (to wit, in a temperate climate). The Scandinavian Olympus was probably Atlantis. Odin is represented as a grave-looking elderly man with a long beard, carrying in his hand a spear, and accompanied by two dogs and two ravens. He was the father of poetry, and the inventor of Runic writing.

The Chiapenese of Central America (the people whose language we have seen furnishing such remarkable resemblances to Hebrew) claim to have been the first people of the New World. Clavigero tells us ("Hist. Antiq. del Messico," Eng. trans., 1807, vol. i.) that according to the traditions of the Chiapenese there was a Votan who was the grandson of the man who built the ark to save himself and family from the Deluge; he was one of those who undertook to build the tower that should reach to heaven. The Lord ordered him to people America. "He came *from the East.*" He brought seven families with him. He had been preceded in America by two others, Igh and Imox. He built a great city in America called "Nachan," City of the Serpents (the serpent that tempted Eve was Nahash), from his own race, which was named Chan, a serpent. This Nachan is supposed to have been Palenque. The date of his journey is placed in the legends in the year 3000 of the world, and in the tenth century B.C. He also founded three tributary monarchies, whose capitals were Tulan, Mayapan, and Chiquimala. He wrote a book containing a history of his deeds, and proofs that he belonged to the tribe of Chanes (serpents). He states that "he is the third of the Votans; that he conducted seven families from Valum-Votan to this continent, and assigned lands to them; that he determined to travel until he came to the root of heaven and found his relations, the Culebres, and made himself known to them; that he accordingly made four voyages to Chivim; that he arrived in Spain; that he went to Rome; that he saw the house of God building; that he went by the road which his brethren, the Culebres, had bored; that he marked it, and that he passed by the houses of the thirteen Culebres. He relates that, in returning from one of his voyages, he found seven other families of the Tzequil nation who had joined the first inhabitants, and recognized in them the same origin as his own, that is, of the Culebres; he speaks of the place where they built the first town, which from its founders received the name of Tzequil; he affirms that, having taught them the refinement of manners in the use of the table, table-cloths, dishes, basins, cups, and napkins, they taught him the knowledge of God and his worship; his first ideas of a king, and obedience to him; that he was chosen captain of all these united families."

It is probable that Spain and Rome are interpolations. Cabrera claims that the Votanites were Carthaginians. He thinks the Chivim of Votan were the Hivim, or Givim, who were descended of Heth, son of Canaan, Phœnicians; they were the builders of Accaron, Azotus, Ascalon, and Gaza. The Scriptures refer to them as Hivites (Givim) in Deuteronomy (chap. ii., verse 32), and Joshua (chap. xiii., verse 4). He claims that Cadmus and his wife Hermione were of this stock; and according to Ovid they were metamorphosed into snakes (Culebres). The name Hivites in Phœnician signifies a snake.

Votan may not, possibly, have passed into Europe; he may have travelled altogether in Africa. His singular allusion to "a way which the Culebres had bored" seems at first inexplicable; but Dr. Livingstone's last letters, published 8th November, 1869, in the "Proceedings of the Royal Geographical Society," mention that "tribes live in underground houses in Rua. Some excavations are said to be thirty miles long, and have running rills in them; a whole district can stand a siege in them. The 'writings' therein, I have been told by some of the people, are drawings of animals, and not letters; otherwise I should have gone to see them. People very dark, well made, and outer angle of eyes slanting inward."

And Captain Grant, who accompanied Captain Speke in his famous exploration of the sources of the Nile, tells of a tunnel or subway under the river Kaōma, on the highway between Loowemba and Marunga, near Lake Tanganyika. His guide Manua describes it to him:

"I asked Manua if he had ever seen any country resembling it. His reply was, 'This country reminds me of what I saw in the country to the south of the Lake Tanganyika, when travelling with an Arab's caravan from Unjanyembeh. There is a river there called the Kaōma, running into the lake, the sides of which are similar in precipitousness to the rocks before us.' I then asked, 'Do the people cross this river in boats?' 'No; they have no boats; and even if they had, the people could not land, as the sides are too steep: they pass underneath the river by a natural tunnel, or subway.' He and all his party went through it on their way from Loowemba to Ooroongoo, and returned by it. He described its length as having taken them from sunrise till noon to pass through it, and so high that, if mounted upon camels, they could not touch the top. Tall reeds, the thickness of a walking-stick, grew inside; the road was strewed with white pebbles, and so wide—four hundred yards—that they could see their way tolerably well while passing through it. The rocks looked as if they had been planed by artificial means. Water never came through from the river overhead; it was procured by digging wells. Manua added that the people of Wambweh take shelter in this tunnel, and live there with their families and cattle, when molested by the Watuta, a warlike race, descended from the Zooloo Kafirs."

But it is interesting to find in this book of Votan, however little reliance we may place in its dates or details, evidence that there was actual intercourse between the Old World and the New in remote ages.

Humboldt remarks:

"We have fixed the special attention of our readers upon this Votan, or Wodan, an American who appears of the same family with the Wods or Odins of the Goths and of the people of Celtic origin. Since, according to the learned researches of Sir William Jones, Odin and Buddha are probably the same person, it is curious to see the names of *Bondvar*, *Wodansdag*, and *Votan* designating in India, Scandinavia, and in Mexico the day of a brief period." ("Vues des Cordilleras," p. 148, ed. 1810.)

There are many things to connect the mythology of the Gothic nations with Atlantis; they had, as we have seen, flood legends; their gods Krodo and Satar were the Chronos and Saturn of Atlantis; their Baal was the Bel of the Phœnicians, who were closely connected with Poseidon and Atlas; and, as we shall see hereafter, their language has a distinct relationship with the tongues of the Arabians, Cushites, Chaldeans, and Phœnicians.

CHAPTER V.

THE PYRAMID, THE CROSS, AND THE GARDEN OF EDEN.

No fact is better established than the reverence shown to the sign of the Cross in all the ages prior to Christianity. We cannot do better than quote from an able article in the *Edinburgh Review* of July, 1870, upon this question:

> "From the dawn of organized Paganism in the Eastern world to the final establishment of Christianity in the Western, the Cross was undoubtedly one of the commonest and most sacred of symbolical monuments; and, to a remarkable extent, it is so still in almost every land where that of Calvary is unrecognized or unknown. Apart from any distinctions of social or intellectual superiority, of caste, color, nationality, or location in either hemisphere, it appears to have been the aboriginal possession of every people in antiquity—the elastic girdle, so to say, which embraced the most widely separated heathen communities—the most significant token of a universal brotherhood, to which all the families of mankind were severally and irresistibly drawn, and by which *their common descent was emphatically expressed*, or by means of which each and all preserved, amid every vicissitude of fortune, a knowledge of *the primeval happiness and dignity of their species.* Where authentic history is silent on the subject, the material relics of past and long since forgotten races are not wanting to confirm and strengthen this supposition. Diversified forms of the symbol are delineated more or less artistically, according to the progress achieved in civilization at the period, on the ruined walls of temples and palaces, on natural rocks and sepulchral galleries, on the hoariest monoliths and the rudest statuary; on coins, medals, and vases of every description; and, in not a few instances, are preserved in the architectural proportions of sub-

terranean as well as superterranean structures, of tumuli as well as fanes. The extraordinary sanctity attaching to the symbol, in every age and under every variety of circumstance, justified any expenditure incurred in its fabrication or embellishment; hence the most persistent labor, the most consummate ingenuity, were lavished upon it. Populations of essentially different culture, tastes, and pursuits—the highly-civilized and the demi-civilized, the settled and nomadic—vied with each other in their efforts to extend the knowledge of its exceptional import and virtue among their latest posterities. The marvellous rock-hewn caves of Elephanta and Ellora, and the stately temples of Mathura and Terputty, in the East, may be cited as characteristic examples of one laborious method of exhibiting it; and the megalithic structures of Callernish and Newgrange, in the West, of another; while a third may be instanced in the great temple at Mitzla, 'the City of the Moon,' in Ojaaca, Central America, also excavated in the living rock, and manifesting the same stupendous labor and ingenuity as are observable in the cognate caverns of Salsette—of endeavors, we repeat, made by peoples as intellectually as geographically distinct, and followers withal of independent and unassociated deities, to magnify and perpetuate some grand primeval symbol. . . .

"Of the several varieties of the Cross still in vogue, as national or ecclesiastical emblems, in this and other European states, and distinguished by the familiar appellations of St. George, St. Andrew, the Maltese, the Greek, the Latin, etc., etc., there is not one among them the existence of which may not be traced to the remotest antiquity. They were the common property of the Eastern nations. No revolution or other casualty has wrought any perceptible difference in their several forms or delineations; they have passed from one hemisphere to the other intact; have survived dynasties, empires, and races; have been borne on the crest of each successive wave of Aryan population in its course toward the West; and, having been reconsecrated in later times by their lineal descendants, are still recognized as military and national badges of distinction. . . .

"Among the earliest known types is the *crux ansata*, vulgarly called 'the key of the Nile,' because of its being found sculptured or otherwise represented so frequently upon Egyptian and Coptic monuments. It has, however, a very much older and more sacred signification than this. It was the symbol of symbols, the mystical Tau, 'the hidden wisdom,' not only of the ancient Egyptians but also of the Chaldeans, Phœnicians, Mexicans, Peruvians, and of every other ancient people commemorated in history, in either hemisphere, and is formed very similarly to our letter T, with a roundlet, or oval, placed immediately above it. Thus it was figured on the gigantic emerald or glass statue of Serapis, which was transported (293 B.C.) by order of Ptolemy Soter from Sinope, on the southern shores of the Black Sea, re-erected within that famous labyrinth which encompassed the banks of Lake Mœris, and destroyed by the victorious army of Theodosius (A.D. 389), despite the earnest entreaties of the Egyptian priesthood to spare it, because it was the emblem of their god and of 'the life to come.' Sometimes, as may be seen on the breast of an Egyptian mummy in the museum of the London University, the simple T only is planted on the frustum of a cone; and sometimes it is represented as springing from a heart; in the first instance signifying goodness; in the second, hope or expectation of reward. As in the oldest temples and catacombs of Egypt, so this type likewise abounds in the ruined cities of Mexico and Central America, graven as well upon the most ancient cyclopean and polygonal walls as upon the more modern and perfect examples of masonry; and is displayed in an equally conspicuous manner upon the breasts of innumerable bronze statuettes which have been recently disinterred from the cemetery of Juigalpa (of unknown antiquity) in Nicaragua."

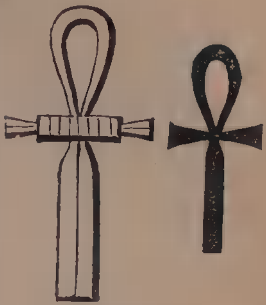
EGYPTIAN TAU.

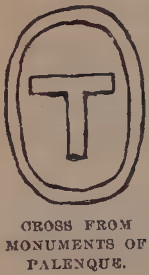
CROSS FROM MONUMENTS OF PALENQUE.

When the Spanish missionaries first set foot upon the soil of America, in the fifteenth century, they were amazed to find the Cross was as devoutly worshipped by the red Indians as by themselves, and were in doubt whether to ascribe the fact to the pious labors of St. Thomas or to the cunning device of the Evil One. The hallowed symbol challenged their atten-

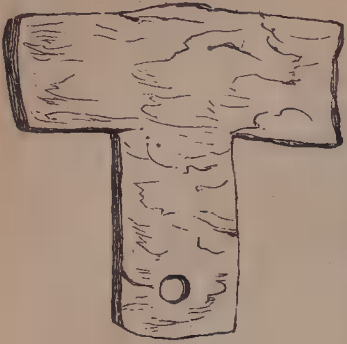

ANCIENT IRISH CROSS.

tion on every hand and in almost every variety of form. It appeared on the bass-reliefs of ruined and deserted as well as on those of inhabited palaces, and was the most conspicuous ornament in the great temple of Gozumel, off the coast of Yucatan. According to the particular locality, and the purpose which it served, it was formed of various materials — of marble and gypsum in the open spaces of cities and by the way-side; of wood in the teocallis or chapels on pyramidal summits and in subterranean sanctuaries; and of emerald or jasper in the palaces of kings and nobles.

When we ask the question how it comes that the sign of the Cross has thus been reverenced from the highest antiquity by the races of the Old and New Worlds, we learn that it is a reminiscence of the Garden of Eden, in other words, of Atlantis.

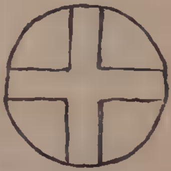

CENTRAL AMERICAN CROSS.

Professor Hardwicke says:

"All these and similar traditions are but mocking satires of the old Hebrew story—jarred and broken notes of the same strain; but with all their exaggerations they intimate how in the background of man's vision lay a paradise of holy joy—a paradise secured from every kind of profanation, and made inaccessible to the guilty; a paradise full of objects that were calculated to delight the senses and to elevate the mind; a paradise that granted to its tenant rich and rare immunities, and that fed with its perennial streams the tree of life and immortality."

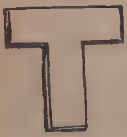

COPPER COIN—TEOTIHUACAN.

To quote again from the writer in the *Edinburgh Review*, already cited:

"Its undoubted antiquity, no less than its extraordinary diffusion, evidences that it must have been, as it may be said to be still in unchristianized lands, emblematical of some fundamental doctrine or mystery. The reader will not have failed to observe that it is most usually associated with *water;* it was 'the key of the Nile,' that mystical instrument by means of which, in the popular judgment of his Egyptian devotees, Osiris produced the annual revivifying inundations of the sacred stream; it is discernible in that mysterious pitcher or vase portrayed on the brazen table of Bembus, before-mentioned, with its four lips discharging as many streams of water in opposite directions; it was the emblem of the water-deities of the Babylonians in the East and of the Gothic nations in the West, as well as that of the rain-deities respectively of the mixed population in America. We have seen with what peculiar rites the symbol was honored by those widely-separated races in the western hemisphere; and the monumental slabs of Nineveh, now in the museums of London and Paris, show us how it was similarly honored by the successors of the Chaldees in the eastern. . . .

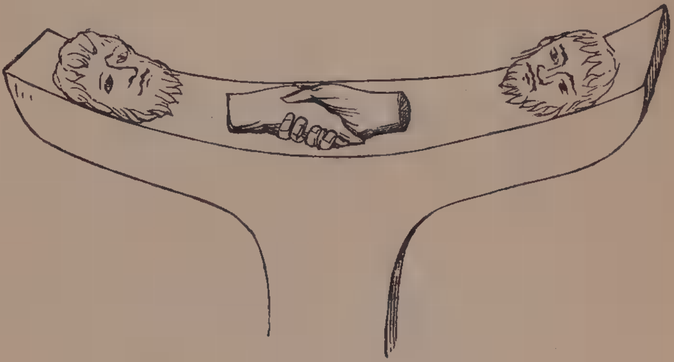

ANCIENT IRISH CROSS—PRE-CHRISTIAN—KILNABOY.

"In Egypt, Assyria, and Britain it was emblematical of creative power and eternity; in India, China, and Scandinavia, of heaven and immortality; in the two Americas, of rejuvenescence and freedom from physical suffering; while in both hemispheres it was the common symbol of the resurrection, or 'the sign of the life to come;' and, finally, in all heathen communities, without exception, it was the emphatic type, the sole enduring evidence, of the Divine Unity. This circumstance alone determines its extreme antiquity—an antiquity, in all likelihood, long antecedent to the foundation of either of the three great systems of religion in the East. And, lastly, we have seen how, as a rule, it is found in conjunction with a stream or streams of water, with exuberant vegetation, and with a hill or a mountainous region—in a word, *with a land of beauty, fertility, and joy.* Thus it was expressed upon those circular and sacred cakes of the Egyptians, composed of the richest materials—of flour, of honey, of milk—and with which the serpent and bull, as well as other reptiles and beasts consecrated to the service of Isis and their higher divinities, were daily fed; and upon certain festivals were eaten with extraordinary ceremony by the people and their priests. 'The cross-cake,' says Sir Gardner Wilkinson, 'was their hieroglyph for civilized land;' obviously *a land superior to their own, as it was, indeed, to all other mundane territories;* for it was that *distant, traditional country of sempiternal contentment and repose,* of exquisite delight and serenity, where Nature, unassisted by man, produces all that is necessary for his sustentation."

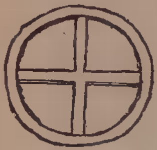
CROSS FROM EGYPTIAN MONUMENTS.

And this land was the Garden of Eden of our race. This was the Olympus of the Greeks, where

> "This same mild season gives the blooms to blow,
> The buds to harden and the fruits to grow."

In the midst of it was a sacred and glorious eminence—the *umbilicus orbis terrarum*—"toward which the heathen in all parts of the world, and in all ages, turned a wistful gaze in every act of devotion, and to which they hoped to be admitted, or, rather, to be restored, at the close of this transitory scene."

In this "glorious eminence" do we not see Plato's mountain in the middle of Atlantis, as he describes it:

"Near the plain and in the centre of the island there was a mountain, not very high on any side. In this mountain there dwelt one of the earth-born primeval men of that country.

whose name was Evenor, and he had a wife named Leucippe, and they had an only daughter, who was named Cleito. Poseidon married her. He enclosed the hill in which she dwelt all around, making alternate zones of sea and land, larger and smaller, encircling one another; there were two of land and three of water . . . so that no man could get to the island. . . . He brought streams of water under the earth to this mountain-island, and made all manner of food to grow upon it. This island became the seat of Atlas, the over-king of the whole island; upon it they built the great temple of their nation; they continued to ornament it in successive generations, every king surpassing the one who came before him to the utmost of his power, until they made the building a marvel to behold for size and beauty. . . . And they had such an amount of wealth as was never before possessed by kings and potentates—as is not likely ever to be again."

The gardens of Alcinous and Laertes, of which we read in Homeric song, and those of Babylon, were probably transcripts of Atlantis. "The sacred eminence in the midst of a superabundant, happy region figures more or less distinctly in almost every mythology, ancient or modern. It was the Mesomphalos of the earlier Greeks, and the Omphalium of the Cretans, dominating the Elysian fields, upon whose tops, bathed in pure, brilliant, incomparable light, the gods passed their days in ceaseless joys."

"The Buddhists and Brahmans, who together constitute nearly half the population of the world, tell us that the decussated figure (the cross), whether in a simple or a complex form, symbolizes the traditional happy abode of their primeval ancestors—that 'Paradise of Eden toward the East,' as we find it expressed in the Hebrew. And, let us ask, what better picture, or more significant characters, in the complicated alphabet of symbolism, could have been selected for the purpose than a circle and a cross: the one to denote a region of absolute purity and perpetual felicity; the other, those four perennial streams that divided and watered the several quarters of it?" (*Edinburgh Review*, January, 1870.)

And when we turn to the mythology of the Greeks, we find that the origin of the world was ascribed to *Okeanos*, the ocean. The world was at first an island surrounded by the ocean, as by a great stream:

"It was a region of wonders of all kinds; Okeanos lived there with his wife Tethys: these were the Islands of the Blessed, the gardens of the gods, the sources of nectar and ambrosia, on which the gods lived. Within this *circle of water* the earth lay spread out like a disk, *with mountains rising from it*, and the vault of heaven appearing to rest upon its outer edge all around." (Murray's "Manual of Mythology," pp. 23, 24, *et seq.*)

On the mountains dwelt the gods; they had palaces on these mountains, with store-rooms, stabling, etc.

"The Gardens of the Hesperides, with their golden apples, were believed to exist *in some island of the ocean*, or, as it was sometimes thought, *in the islands* off the north or *west coast of Africa.* They were far famed in antiquity; for it was there that springs of nectar flowed by the couch of Zeus, and there that the earth displayed the rarest blessings of the gods; it was another Eden." (*Ibid.*, p. 156.)

Homer described it in these words:

"Stern winter smiles on that auspicious clime,
The fields are florid with unfading prime,
From the bleak pole no winds inclement blow,
Mould the round hail, or flake the fleecy snow;
But from the breezy deep the bless'd inhale
The fragrant murmurs of the western gale."

"It was the sacred Asgard of the Scandinavians, springing from the centre of a fruitful land, which was watered by *four primeval rivers* of milk, severally flowing in the direction of the cardinal points, 'the abode of happiness, and the height of bliss.' It is the Tien-Chan, 'the celestial mountain-land, . . . the enchanted gardens' of the Chinese and Tartars, watered by the *four perennial fountains* of Tychin, or Immortality; it is the hill-encompassed Ilá of the Singhalese and Thibetians, 'the everlasting dwelling-place of the wise and just.' It is the Sineru of the Buddhist, on the summit of which is Tawrutisa, the habitation of Sekrá, the supreme god, from which proceed the *four sacred streams*, running in as many contrary directions.

It is the Slávratta, 'the celestial earth,' of the Hindoo, the summit of his golden mountain *Meru*, the city of Brahma, in the centre of Jambadwípa, and from the four sides of which gush forth the *four primeval rivers*, reflecting in their passage the colorific glories of their source, and severally flowing northward, southward, eastward, and westward."

It is the Garden of Eden of the Hebrews:

"And the Lord God planted a garden eastward in Eden; and there he put the man whom he had formed. And out of the ground made the Lord God to grow every tree that is pleasant to the sight, and good for food; the tree of life also in the midst of the garden, and the tree of knowledge of good and evil. And a river went out of Eden to water the garden; and from thence it was parted, and became into *four* heads. The name of the first is Pison; that is it which compasseth the whole land of Havilah, where there is gold; and the gold of that land is good: there is bdellium and the onyx stone. And the name of the second river is Gihon: the same is it that compasseth the whole land of Ethiopia. And the name of the third river is Hiddekel: that is it which goeth toward the east of Assyria. And the fourth river is Euphrates. And the Lord God took the man and put him into the Garden of Eden to dress it and to keep it." (Gen. ii., 8–15.)

As the four rivers named in Genesis are not branches of any one stream, and head in very different regions, it is evident that there was an attempt, on the part of the writer of the Book, to adapt an ancient tradition concerning another country to the known features of the region in which he dwelt.

Josephus tells us (chap. i., p. 41), "Now the garden (of Eden) was watered by one river, *which ran round about the whole earth*, and was parted into four parts." Here in the four parts we see the origin of the Cross, while in the river running around the whole earth we have the wonderful canal of Atlantis, described by Plato, which was "carried around the whole of the plain," and received the streams which came down from the mountains. The streams named by Josephus would seem to represent the migrations of people from Atlantis to its colonies. "Phison," he tells us, "denotes a multitude; it ran into India; the Euphrates and Tigris go down into the Red Sea; while the Geon runs through Egypt."

We are further told (chap. ii., p. 42) that when Cain, after the murder of Abel, left the land of Adam, "he travelled over many countries" before he reached the land of Nod; *and the land of Nod was to the eastward of Adam's home.* In other words, the original seat of mankind was in the West, that is to say, in the direction of Atlantis. Wilson tells us that the Aryans of India believed that they originally came "from the West." Thus the nations on the west of the Atlantic look to the *east* for their place of origin; while on the east of the Atlantic they look to the *west:* thus all the lines of tradition converge upon Atlantis.

But here is the same testimony that in the Garden of Eden there were four rivers radiating from one parent stream. And these four rivers, as we have seen, we find in the Scandinavian traditions, and in the legends of the Chinese, the Tartars, the Singhalese, the Thibetians, the Buddhists, the Hebrews, and the Brahmans.

And not only do we find this tradition of the Garden of Eden in the Old World, but it meets us also among the civilized races of America. The elder Montezuma said to Cortez, "Our fathers dwelt in that happy and prosperous place which they called Aztlan, which means *whiteness.* . . . In this place *there is a great mountain in the middle of the water* which is called Culhuacan, because it has the point somewhat turned over toward the bottom; and for this cause it is called Culhuacan, which means 'crooked mountain.'" He then proceeds to describe the charms of this favored land, abounding in birds, game, fish, trees, "fountains enclosed with elders and junipers, and alder-trees both large and beautiful." The people planted "maize, red peppers, tomatoes, beans, and all kinds of plants, *in furrows.*"

Here we have the same mountain in the midst of the water which Plato describes—the same mountain to which all the legends of the most ancient races of Europe refer.

The inhabitants of Aztlan were *boatmen.* (Bancroft's "Native Races," vol. v., p. 325.) E. G. Squier, in his "Notes on Central America," p. 349, says, "It is a significant fact that in the map of their migrations, presented by Gemelli, the place of the origin of the Aztecs is designated by the sign of water, *Atl* standing for *Atzlan*, a *pyramidal temple* with grades, and near these a *palm-tree.*" This circumstance did not escape the attention of Humboldt, who says, "I am astonished at finding a palm-tree near this teocalli. This tree certainly does not indicate a northern origin. . . . The possibility that an unskilful artist should unintentionally represent a tree of which he had no knowledge is so great, that any argument dependent on it hangs upon a slender thread." ("North Americans of Antiquity," p. 266.)

The Miztecs, a tribe dwelling on the outskirts of Mexico, had a tradition that the gods, "in the day of obscurity and darkness," built "a sumptuous palace, a masterpiece of skill, in which they made their abode upon a mountain. The rock was called 'The Place of Heaven;' there the gods first abode on earth, living many years in great rest and content, as in a happy and delicious land, though the world still lay in obscurity and darkness. The children of these gods made to themselves a garden, in which they put many trees, and fruit-trees, and flowers, and roses, and odorous herbs. Subsequently there came a great deluge, in which many of the sons and daughters of the gods perished." (Bancroft's "Native Races," vol. iii., p. 71.) Here we have a distinct reference to Olympus, the Garden of Plato, and the destruction of Atlantis.

And in Plato's account of Atlantis we have another description of the Garden of Eden and the Golden Age of the world:

> "Also, whatever fragrant things there are in the earth, whether roots, or herbage, or woods, or distilling drops of flowers and fruits, grew and thrived in that land; and again the cultivated

fruits of the earth, both the edible fruits and other species of food which we call by the name of legumes, and the fruits having a hard rind, affording drinks and meats and ointments . . . all these that sacred island, lying beneath the sun, brought forth in abundance. . . . For many generations, as long as the divine nature lasted in them, they were obedient to the laws, and well-affectioned toward the gods, who were their kinsmen; for they possessed true and in every way great spirits, practising gentleness and wisdom in the various chances of life, and in their intercourse with one another. They despised everything but virtue, not caring for their present state of life, and thinking lightly of the possession of gold and other property, which seemed only a burden to them; neither were they intoxicated by luxury; nor did wealth deprive them of their self-control; but they were sober, and saw clearly that all these goods were increased by virtuous friendship with one another, and that by excessive zeal for them, and honor of them, the good of them is lost, and friendship perishes with them."

All this cannot be a mere coincidence; it points to a common tradition of a veritable land, where four rivers flowed down in opposite directions from a central mountain-peak. And these four rivers, flowing to the north, south, east, and west, constitute the origin of that sign of the Cross which we have seen meeting us at every point among the races who were either descended from the people of Atlantis, or who, by commerce and colonization, received their opinions and civilization from them.

Let us look at the question of the identity of the Garden of Eden with Atlantis from another point of view:

If the alphabet of the Phœnicians is kindred with the Maya alphabet, as I think is clear, then the Phœnicians were of the same race, or of some race with which the Mayas were connected; in other words, they were from Atlantis.

Now we know that the Phœnicians and Hebrews were of the same stock, used the same alphabet, and spoke almost precisely the same language.

The Phœnicians preserved traditions, which have come down to us in the writings of Sanchoniathon, of all the great essential inventions or discoveries which underlie civilization. The first two human beings, they tell us, were Protogonos and Aion (Adam and 'Havath), who produce Genos and Genea (Qên and Qênath), from whom again are descended three brothers, named Phos, Phur, and Phlox (Light, Fire, and Flame), because they "have discovered how to produce fire by the friction of two pieces of wood, and have taught the use of this element." In another fragment, at the origin of the human race we see in succession the fraternal couples of Autochthon and Technites (Adam and Quen—Cain?), inventors of the manufacture of bricks; Agros and Agrotes (Sade and Cêd), fathers of the agriculturists and hunters; then Amynos and Magos, "who taught to dwell in villages and rear flocks."

The connection between these Atlantean traditions and the Bible record is shown in many things. For instance, "the Greek text, in expressing the invention of Amynos, uses the words κώμας καὶ ποίμνας, which are precisely the same as the terms *ôhel umiqneh*, which the Bible uses in speaking of the dwellings of the descendants of Jabal (Gen., chap. iv., v. 20). In like manner Lamech, both in the signification of his name and also in the savage character attributed to him by the legend attached to his memory, is a true synonyme of Agrotes."

"And the title of 'Αλῆται, given to Agros and Agrotes in the Greek of the Phœnician history, fits in wonderfully with the physiognomy of the race of the Cainites in the Bible narrative, whether we take ἀλῆται simply as a Hellenized transcription of the Semitic *Elím*, 'the strong, the mighty,' or whether we take it in its Greek acceptation, 'the wanderers;' for such is the destiny of Cain and his race according to the very terms of the condemnation which was inflicted upon him after his crime (Gen. iv., 14), and this is what is signified by the name of his grandson 'Yirad. Only, in Sanchoniathon the genealogy does not end with Amynos and Magos, as that of the Cainites in the Bible does with the three sons of Lamech. These two personages are succeeded by Misôr and Sydyk, 'the released and the just,' as Sanchoniathon translates them, but rather the 'upright and the just' (Mishôr and Çüdüq), 'who invent the use of salt.' To Misôr is born Taautos (Taût), to whom we owe letters; and to Sydyk the Cabiri or Corybantes, the institutors of navigation." (Lenormant, "Genealogies between Adam and the Deluge." *Contemporary Review*, April, 1880.)

We have, also, the fact that the Phœnician name for their goddess Astynome (Ashtar No′emâ), whom the Greeks called Nemaun, was the same as the name of the sister of the three sons of Lamech, as given in Genesis—Na′emah, or Na′amah.

If, then, the original seat of the Hebrews and Phœnicians was the Garden of Eden, to the west of Europe, and if the Phœnicians are shown to be connected, through their alphabets, with the Central Americans, who looked to an island in the sea, to the eastward, as their starting-point, the conclusion becomes irresistible that Atlantis and the Garden of Eden were one and the same.

The Pyramid.—Not only are the Cross and the Garden of Eden identified with Atlantis, but in Atlantis, the habitation of the gods, we find the original model of all those pyramids which extend from India to Peru.

This singular architectural construction dates back far beyond the birth of history. In the *Purânas* of the Hindoos we read of pyramids long anterior in time to any which have survived to our day. Cheops was preceded by a countless host of similar erections which have long since mouldered into ruins.

If the reader will turn to page 104 of this work he will see, in the midst of the picture of Aztlan, the starting-point of the Aztecs, according to the Botturini pictured writing, a pyramid with worshippers kneeling before it.

Fifty years ago Mr. Faber, in his "Origin of Pagan Idolatry," placed artificial tumuli, pyramids, and pagodas in the same category, conceiving that all were transcripts of the holy mountain which was generally supposed to have stood in the centre of Eden; or, rather, as intimated in more than one place by the Psalmist, the garden itself was situated on an eminence. (Psalms, chap. iii., v. 4, and chap. lxviii., vs. 15, 16, 18.)

The pyramid is one of the marvellous features of that problem which confronts us everywhere, and which is insoluble without Atlantis.

The Arabian traditions linked the pyramid with the Flood. In a manuscript preserved in the Bodleian Library, and translated by Dr. Sprenger, Abou Balkhi says:

> "The wise men, *previous to the Flood*, foreseeing an impending judgment from heaven, either by *submersion* or fire, which would destroy every created thing, built upon the tops of the mountains in Upper Egypt many pyramids of stone, in order to have some refuge against the approaching calamity. Two of these buildings exceeded the rest in height, being four hundred cubits high and as many broad and as many long. They were built with large blocks of marble, and they were so well put together that the joints were scarcely perceptible. Upon the exterior of the building every charm and wonder of physic was inscribed."

This tradition locates these monster structures upon the mountains of Upper Egypt, but there are no buildings of such dimensions to be found anywhere in Egypt. Is it not probable that we have here another reference to the great record preserved in the land of the Deluge? Were not the pyramids of Egypt and America imitations of similar structures in Atlantis? Might not the building of such a gigantic edifice have given rise to the legends existing on both continents in regard to a Tower of Babel?

How did the human mind hit upon this singular edifice—the pyramid? By what process of development did it reach it? Why should these extraordinary structures crop out on the banks of the Nile, and amid the forests and plains of America? And why, in both countries, should they stand with their sides square to the four cardinal points of the compass? Are they in this, too, a reminiscence of the Cross, and of the four rivers of Atlantis that ran to the north, south, east, and west?

"There is yet a third combination that demands a specific notice. The decussated symbol is not unfrequently planted upon what Christian archæologists designate 'a calvary,' that is, upon a *mount* or a *cone*. Thus it is represented in both hemispheres. The megalithic structure of Callernish, in the island of Lewis before mentioned, is the most perfect example of the practice extant in Europe. The mount is preserved to this day. This, to be brief, was the recognized conventional mode of expressing a particular primitive truth or mystery from the days of the Chaldeans to those of the Gnostics, or from one extremity of the civilized world to the other. It is seen in the treatment of the ash Yggdrasill of the Scandinavians, as well as in that of the Bo-tree of the Buddhists. The prototype was not the Egyptian, but the Babylonian *crux ansata*, the lower member of which constitutes a conical support for the oval or sphere above it. With the Gnostics, who occupied the debatable ground between primitive Christianity and philosophic paganism, and who inscribed it upon their tombs, the cone symbolized death as well as life. In every heathen mythology it was the universal emblem of the goddess or mother of heaven, by whatsoever name she was addressed—whether as Mylitta, Astarte, Aphrodite, Isis, Mata, or Venus; and the several eminences consecrated to her worship were, like those upon which Jupiter was originally adored, of a conical or pyramidal shape. This, too, is the ordinary form of the altars dedicated to the Assyrian god of fertility. In exceptional instances the cone is introduced upon one or the other of the sides, or is distinguishable in the always accompanying mystical tree." (*Edinburgh Review*, July, 1870.)

If the reader will again turn to page 104 of this work he will see that the tree appears on the top of the pyramid or mountain in both the Aztec representations of Aztlan, the original island-home of the Central American races.

The writer just quoted believes that Mr. Faber is correct in his opinion that the pyramid is a transcript of the sacred mountain which stood in the midst of Eden, the Olympus of Atlantis. He adds:

"Thomas Maurice, who is no mean authority, held the same view. He conceived the use to which pyramids in particular were anciently applied to have been threefold — namely, as tombs, temples, and observatories; and this view he labors to establish in the third volume of his 'Indian Antiquities.' Now, whatever may be their actual date, or with whatsoever people they may have originated, whether in Africa or Asia, in the lower valley of the Nile or in the plains of Chaldea, the pyramids of Egypt were unquestionably destined to very opposite purposes. According to Herodotus, they were introduced by the Hyksos; and Proclus, the Platonic philosopher, connects them with the science of astronomy—a science which, he adds, the Egyptians derived from the Chaldeans. Hence we may reasonably infer that they served as well for temples for planetary worship as for observatories. Subsequently to the descent of the shepherds, their hallowed precincts were invaded by royalty, from motives of pride and superstition; and the principal chamber in each was used as tombs."

The pyramidal imitations, dear to the hearts of colonists of the sacred mountain upon which their gods dwelt, was devoted, as perhaps the mountain itself was, to sun and fire worship. The same writer says:

"That Sabian worship once extensively prevailed in the New World is a well-authenticated fact; it is yet practised to some extent by the wandering tribes on the Northern continent, and was the national religion of the Peruvians at the time of the Conquest. That it was also the religion of their more highly civilized predecessors on the soil, south of the equator more especially, is evidenced by the remains of fire-altars, both round and square, scattered about the shores of lakes Umayu and Titicaca, and which are the counterparts of the Gueber dokhmehs overhanging the Caspian Sea. Accordingly, we find, among these and other vestiges of antiquity that indissolubly connected those long-since extinct populations in the New with the races of the Old World, the well-defined symbol of the Maltese Cross. On the Mexican feroher before alluded to, and which is most elaborately carved in bass-relief on a massive piece of polygonous granite, constituting a portion of a cyclopean wall, the cross is enclosed within the ring, and accompanying it are four tassel-like ornaments, graved equally well. Those accompaniments, however, are disposed without any particular regard to order, but the four arms of the cross, nevertheless, severally and accurately point to the *cardinal quarters.* The same regularity is observable on a much smaller but not less curious monument, which was discovered some time since in an ancient Peruvian huaca or catacomb—namely, a syrinx, or pandean pipe, cut out of a solid mass of *lapis ollaris*, the sides of which are profusely ornamented, not only with Maltese crosses, but also with other symbols very similar in style to those inscribed on the obelisks of Egypt and on the monoliths of this country. The like figure occurs on the equally ancient Otrusco black pottery. But by far the most remarkable example of this form of the Cross in the New World is that which appears on a second type of the Mexican feroher, engraved on a tablet of gypsum, and which is described at length by its discoverer, Captain du Paix, and depicted by his friend, M. Baradère. Here the accompaniments—a shield, a hamlet, and a couple of bead-annulets or rosaries—are, with a single exception, identical in even the minutest particular with an Assyrian monument emblematical of the Deity. . . .

"No country in the world can compare with India for the exposition of the pyramidal cross. There the stupendous labors of Egypt are rivalled, and sometimes surpassed. Indeed, but for the fact of such monuments of patient industry and unexampled skill being still in existence, the accounts of some others which have long since disappeared, having succumbed to the ravages of time and the fury of the bigoted Mussulman, would sound in our ears as incredible as the story of Porsenna's tomb, which 'o'ertopped old Pelion,' and made 'Ossa like a wart.' Yet something not very dissimilar in character to it was formerly the boast of the ancient city of Benares, on the banks of the Ganges. We allude to the great temple of Bindh Madhu, which was demolished in the seventeenth century by the Emperor Aurungzebe. Tavernier, the French baron, who travelled thither about the year 1680, has preserved a brief description of it. The body of the temple was constructed in the figure of a colossal cross (*i. e.*, a St. Andrew's Cross), with a lofty dome at the centre, above which rose a massive structure of a pyramidal form. At the four extremities of the cross there were four other pyramids of proportionate dimensions, and which were ascended from the outside by steps, with balconies at stated distances for places of rest, reminding us of the temple of Belus, as described in the pages of Herodotus. The remains of a similar building are found at Mhuttra, on the banks of the Jumna. This and many others, including the subterranean temple at Elephanta and the caverns of Ellora and Salsette, are described at length in the well-known work by Maurice; who adds that, besides these, there was yet another device in which the Hindoo displayed the all-pervading sign; this was by pyramidal towers placed crosswise. At the famous temple of Chillambrum, on the Coromandel coast, there were seven lofty walls, one within the other, round the central quadrangle, and as many pyramidal gate-ways in the midst of each side which forms the limbs of a vast cross."

In Mexico pyramids were found everywhere. Cortez, in a letter to Charles V., states that he counted four hundred of them at Cholula. Their temples were on those "high places." The most ancient pyramids in Mexico are at Teotihuacan, eight leagues from the city of Mexico; the two largest were dedicated to the sun and moon respectively, each built of cut stone, with a level area at the summit, and four stages leading up to it. The larger one is 680 feet square at the base, about 200 feet high, and covers an area of eleven acres. The Pyramid of Cholula, measured by Humboldt, is 160 feet high, 1400 feet square at the base, and covers forty-five acres! The great pyramid of Egypt, Cheops, is 746 feet square, 450 feet high, and covers between twelve and thirteen acres. So that it appears that the base of the Teotihuacan structure is nearly as large as that of Cheops, while that of Cholula covers nearly four times as much space. The Cheops pyramid, however, exceeds very much in height both the American structures.

Señor Garcia y Cubas thinks the pyramids of Teotihuacan (Mexico) were built for the same purpose as those of Egypt. He considers the analogy established in eleven particulars, as follows: 1, the site chosen is the same; 2, the structures are orientated with slight variation; 3, the line through the centres of the structures is in the astronomical meridian; 4, the construction in grades and steps is the same; 5, in both cases the larger pyramids are dedicated to the sun; 6, the Nile has "a valley of the dead," as in Teotihuacan there is "a street of the dead;" 7, some monuments in each class have the nature of fortifications; 8, the smaller mounds are of the same nature and for the same purpose; 9, both pyramids have a small mound joined to one of their faces; 10, the openings discovered in the Pyramid of the Moon are also found in some Egyptian pyramids; 11, the interior arrangements of the pyramids are analogous. ("Ensayo de un Estudio.")

It is objected that the American edifices are different in form from the Egyptian, in that they are truncated, or flattened at the top; but this is not an universal rule.

> "In many of the ruined cities of Yucatan one or more pyramids have been found upon the summit of which no traces of any building could be discovered, although upon surrounding pyramids such structures could be found. There is also some reason to believe that perfect pyramids have been found in America. Waldeck found near Palenque two pyramids in a state of perfect preservation, square at the base, pointed at the top, and thirty-one feet high, their sides forming equilateral triangles." (Bancroft's "Native Races," vol. v., p. 58.)
>
> Bradford thinks that "some of the Egyptian pyramids, and those which with some reason it has been supposed are the most ancient, are precisely similar to the Mexican *teocalli*." ("North Americans of Antiquity" p. 423.)

And there is in Egypt another form of pyramid called the *mastaba*, which, like the Mexican, was flattened on the top; while in Assyria structures flattened like the Mexican are found. "In fact," says one writer, "this form of temple (the flat-topped) has been found from Mesopotamia to the Pacific Ocean." The Phœnicians also built pyramids. In the thirteenth century the Dominican Brocard visited the ruins of the Phœnician city of Mrith or Marathos, and speaks in the strongest terms of admiration of those pyramids of surprising grandeur, constructed of blocks of stone from twenty-six to twenty-eight feet long, whose thickness exceeded the stature of a tall man. ("Prehistoric Nations," p. 144.)

"If," says Ferguson, "we still hesitate to pronounce that there was any connection between the builders of the pyramids of Suku and Oajaca, or the temples of Xochialco and Boro Buddor, we must at least allow that the likeness is startling, and difficult to account for on the theory of mere accidental coincidence."

The Egyptian pyramids all stand with their sides to the cardinal points, while many of the Mexican pyramids do likewise. The Egyptian pyramids were penetrated by small passage-ways; so were the Mexican. The Pyramid of Teotihuacan, according to Almarez, has, at a point sixty-nine feet from the base, a gallery large enough to admit a man crawling on hands and knees,

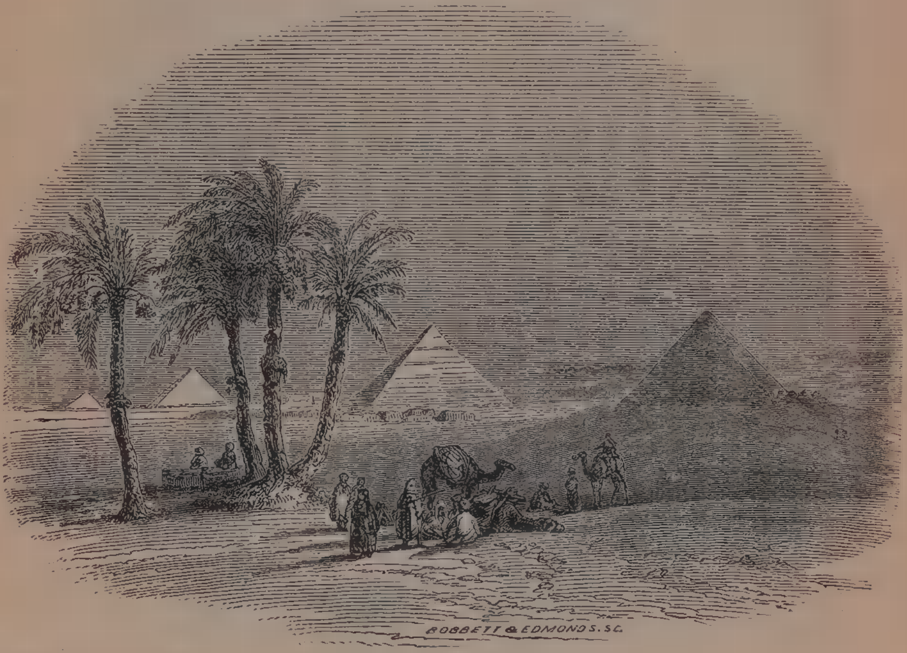
BOBBETT & EDMONDS. SC.

PYRAMIDS OF EGYPT.

which extends inward, on an incline, a distance of twenty-five feet, and terminates in two square wells or chambers, each five feet square, and one of them fifteen feet deep. Mr. Löwenstern states, according to Mr. Bancroft ("Native Races," vol. iv., p. 533), that "the gallery is one hundred and fifty-seven feet long, increasing in height to over six feet and a half as it penetrates the pyramid; that the well is over six feet square, extending (apparently) down to the base and up to the summit; and that other cross-galleries are blocked up by débris." In the Pyramid of Cheops there is a similar opening or passage-way forty-nine feet above the base; it is three feet eleven inches high, and three feet five and a half inches wide; it leads down a slope to a sepulchral chamber or well, and connects with other passage-ways leading up into the body of the pyramid.

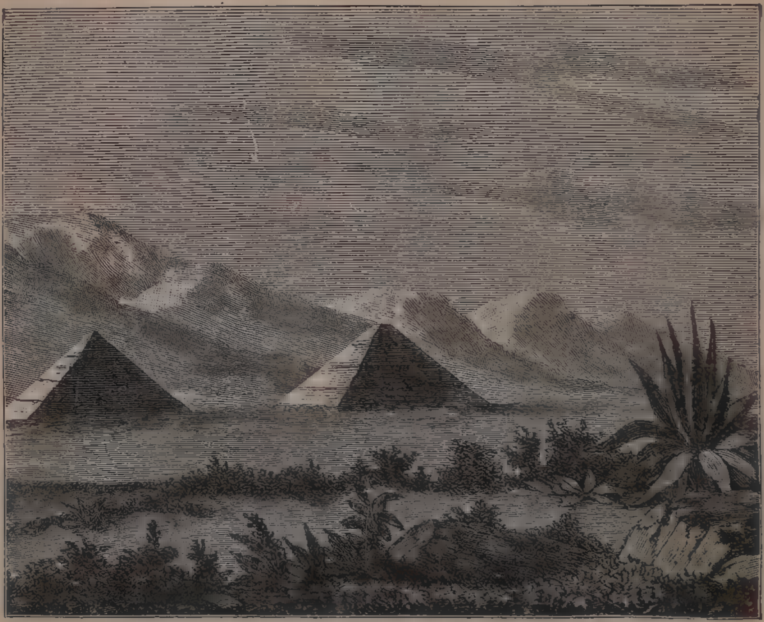

PYRAMIDS OF TEOTIHUACAN.

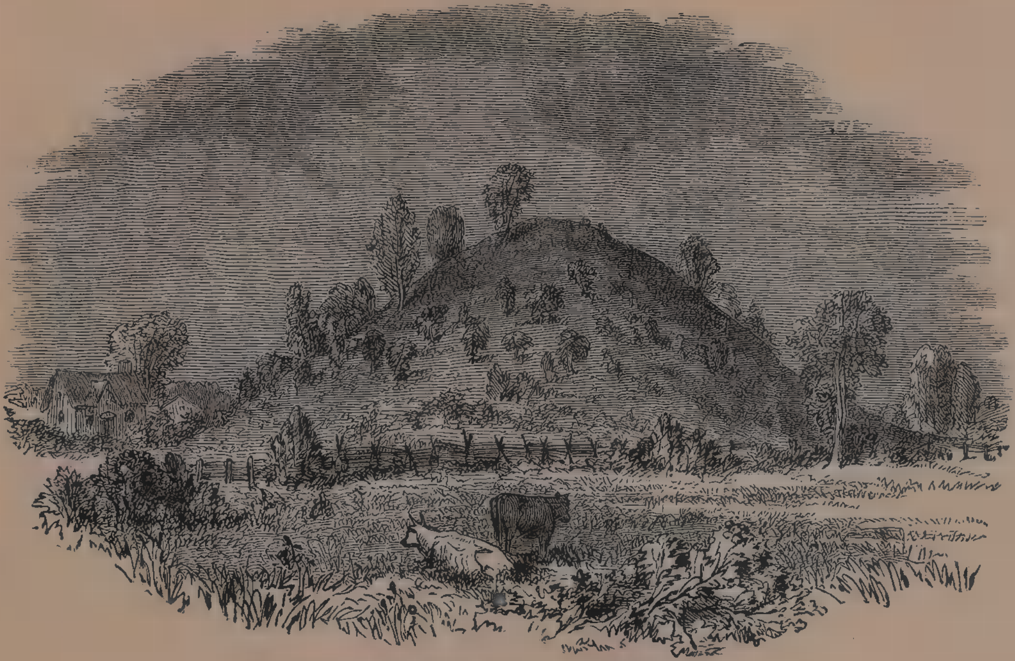

THE GREAT MOUND, NEAR MIAMISBURG, OHIO.

In both the Egyptian and the American pyramids the outside of the structures was covered with a thick coating of smooth, shining cement.

Humboldt considered the Pyramid of Cholula of the same type as the Temple of Jupiter Belus, the pyramids of Meidoun Dachhour, and the group of Sakkarah, in Egypt.

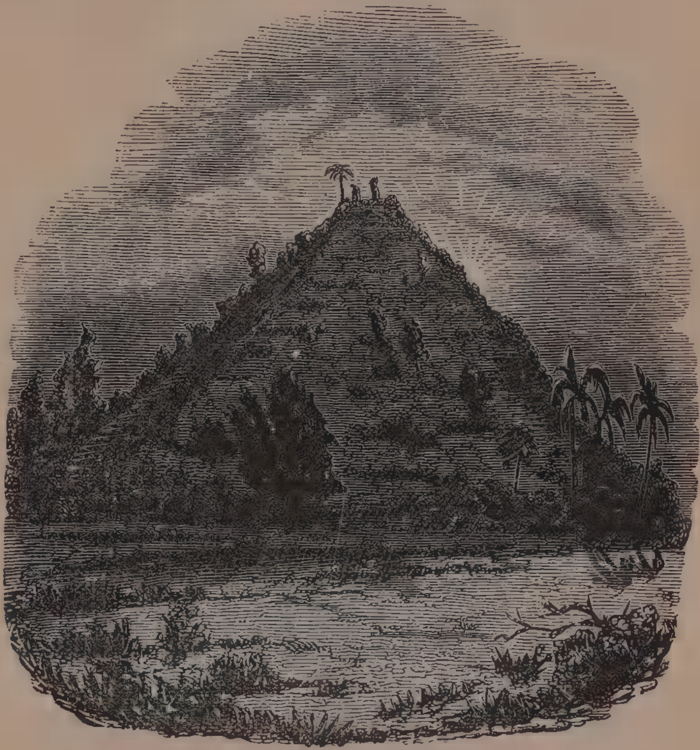

GREAT PYRAMID OF XCOCH, MEXICO.

In both America and Egypt the pyramids were used as places of sepulture; and it is a remarkable fact that the system of earthworks and mounds, kindred to the pyramids, is found even in England. Silsbury Hill, at Avebury, is an artificial mound *one hundred and seventy feet high.* It is connected with ramparts, avenues (fourteen hundred and eighty yards long), circular ditches, and stone circles, almost identical with those found in the valley of the Mississippi. In Ireland the dead were buried in vaults of stone, and the earth raised over them in pyramids flattened on the top. They were called "moats" by the people. We have found the stone vaults at the base of similar truncated pyramids in Ohio. There can be no doubt that the pyramid was a developed and perfected mound, and that the parent form of these curious structures is to be found in Silsbury Hill, and in the mounds of earth of Central America and the Mississippi Valley.

We find the emblem of the Cross in pre-Christian times venerated as a holy symbol on both sides of the Atlantic; and we find it explained as a type of the four rivers of the happy island where the civilization of the race originated.

We find everywhere among the European and American nations the memory of an Eden of the race, where the first men dwelt in primeval peace and happiness, and which was afterward destroyed by water.

We find the pyramid on both sides of the Atlantic, with its four sides pointing, like the arms of the Cross, to the four cardinal points—a reminiscence of Olympus; and in the Aztec representation of Olympos (Aztlan) we find the pyramid as the central and typical figure.

Is it possible to suppose all these extraordinary coincidences to be the result of accident? We might just as well say that the similarities between the American and English forms of government were not the result of relationship or descent, but that men placed in similar circumstances had spontaneously and necessarily reached the same results.

Chapter VI.

GOLD AND SILVER THE SACRED METALS OF ATLANTIS.

Money is the instrumentality by which man is lifted above the limitations of barter. Baron Storch terms it "the marvellous instrument to which we are indebted for our wealth and civilization."

It is interesting to inquire into the various articles which have been used in different countries and ages as money. The following is a table of some of them:

Articles of Utility.

India	Cakes of tea.
China	Pieces of silk.
Abyssinia	Salt.
Iceland and Newfoundland	Codfish.
Illinois (in early days)	Coon-skins.
Bornoo (Africa)	Cotton shirts.
Ancient Russia	Skins of wild animals.
West India Islands (1500)	Cocoa-nuts.
Massachusetts Indians	Wampum and musket-balls.
Virginia (1700)	Tobacco.
British West India Islands	Pins, snuff, and whiskey.
Central South America	Soap, chocolate, and eggs.
Ancient Romans	Cattle.
“ Greece	Nails of copper and iron.
The Lacedemonians	Iron.
The Burman Empire	Lead.
Russia (1828 to 1845)	Platinum.
Rome (under Numa Pompilius)	Wood and leather.
“ (“ the Cæsars)	Land.

Articles of Utility—Continued.

Carthaginians	Leather.
Ancient Britons	Cattle, slaves, brass, and iron.
England (under James II.)	Tin, gun-metal, and pewter.
South Sea Islands	Axes and hammers.

Articles of Ornament.

Ancient Jews	Jewels.
The Indian Islands and Africa	Cowrie shells.

Conventional Signs.

Holland (1574)	Pieces of pasteboard.
China (1200)	Bark of the mulberry-tree.

It is evident that every primitive people uses as money those articles upon which they set the highest value—as cattle, jewels, slaves, salt, musket-balls, pins, snuff, whiskey, cotton shirts, leather, axes, and hammers; or those articles for which there was a foreign demand, and which they could trade off to the merchants for articles of necessity—as tea, silk, codfish, coonskins, cocoa-nuts, and tobacco. Then there is a later stage, when the stamp of the government is impressed upon paper, wood, pasteboard, or the bark of trees, and these articles are given a legal-tender character.

When a civilized nation comes in contact with a barbarous people they seek to trade with them for those things which they need; a metal-working people, manufacturing weapons of iron or copper, will seek for the useful metals, and hence we find iron, copper, tin, and lead coming into use as a standard of values—as money; for they can always be converted into articles of use and weapons of war. But when we ask how it chanced that gold and silver came to be used as money, and why it is that gold is regarded as so much more valuable than silver, no answer presents itself. It was impossible to make either of them into pots or pans, swords or spears; they were not necessarily more beautiful than glass or the combinations of tin and copper. Nothing astonished the American races more than the extraordinary value set upon gold and silver by the Spaniards; they could not understand it. A West Indian savage traded a handful of gold-dust with one of the sailors accompanying Columbus for some tool, and then ran for his life to the woods lest the sailor should repent his bargain and call him back. The Mexicans had coins of tin shaped like a letter T. We can understand this, for tin was necessary to them in hardening their bronze implements, and it may have been the highest type of metallic value among them. A round copper coin with a serpent stamped on it was found at Palenque, and T-shaped copper coins are very abundant in the ruins of Central America. This too we can understand, for copper was necessary in every work of art or utility.

All these nations were familiar with gold and silver, but they used them as *sacred metals* for the adornment of the temples of the sun and moon. The color of gold was something of the color of the sun's rays, while the color of silver resembled the pale light of the moon, and hence they were respectively sacred to the gods of the sun and moon. And this is probably the origin of the comparative value of these metals: they became the precious metals because they were the sacred metals, and gold was more valuable than silver—just as the sun-god was the great god of the nations, while the mild moon was simply an attendant upon the sun.

The Peruvians called gold "the tears wept by the sun." It was not used among the people for ornament or money. The great temple of the sun at Cuzco was called the "Place of Gold." It was, as I have shown, literally a mine of gold. Walls, cornices, statuary, plate, ornaments, all were of gold; the very ewers, pipes, and aqueducts—even the agricultural implements used in the garden of the temple—were of gold and silver. The value of the jewels which adorned the temple was equal to one hundred and eighty millions of dollars! The riches of the kingdom can be conceived when we remember that from a pyramid in Chimu a Spanish explorer named

Toledo took, in 1577, $4,450,284 in gold and silver. ("New American Cyclopædia," art. *American Antiquities.*) The gold and silver of Peru largely contributed to form the metallic currency upon which Europe has carried on her commerce during the last three hundred years.

Gold and silver were not valued in Peru for any intrinsic usefulness; they were regarded as sacred because reserved for the two great gods of the nation. As we find gold and silver mined and worked on both sides of the Atlantic at the earliest periods of recorded history, we may fairly conclude that they were known to the Atlanteans; and this view is confirmed by the statements of Plato, who represents a condition of things in Atlantis exactly like that which Pizarro found in Peru. Doubtless the vast accumulations of gold and silver in both countries were due to the fact that these metals were not permitted to be used by the people. In Peru the annual taxes of the people were paid to the Inca in part in gold and silver from the mines, and they were used to ornament the temples; and thus the work of accumulating the sacred metals went on from generation to generation. The same process doubtless led to the vast accumulations in the temples of Atlantis, as described by Plato.

Now, as the Atlanteans carried on an immense commerce with all the countries of Europe and Western Asia, they doubtless inquired and traded for gold and silver for the adornment of their temples, and they thus produced a demand for and gave a value to the two metals otherwise comparatively useless to man—a value higher than any other commodity which the people could offer their civilized customers; and as the reverence for the great burning orb of the sun, master of all the manifestations of nature, was tenfold as great as the veneration for the smaller, weaker, and variable goddess of the night, so was the demand for the metal sacred to the sun ten times as great as for the metal sacred to the moon. This view is confirmed by the fact that the root of the word by which the Celts, the Greeks, and the Romans designated gold was the Sanscrit word *harat*, which means, "*the color of the sun.*" Among the Assyrians gold and silver were respectively consecrated to the sun and moon precisely as they were in Peru. A pyramid belonging to the palace of Nineveh is referred to repeatedly in the inscriptions. It was composed of seven stages, equal in height, and each one smaller in area than the one beneath it; each stage was covered with stucco of different colors, "a different color representing each of the heavenly bodies, the least important being at the base: white (Venus); black (Saturn); purple (Jupiter); blue (Mercury); vermillion (Mars); *silver* (the Moon); and *gold* (the Sun)." (Lenormant's "Ancient History of the East," vol. i., p. 463.) "In England, to this day the new moon is saluted with a bow or a courtesy, as well as the curious practice of 'turning one's silver,' which seems a relic of the offering of *the moon's proper metal.*" (Tylor's "Anthropology, p. 361.) The custom of wishing, when one first sees the new moon, is probably a survival of moon-worship; the wish taking the place of the prayer.

And thus has it come to pass that, precisely as the physicians of Europe, fifty years ago, practised bleeding, because for thousands of years their savage ancestors had used it to draw away the evil spirits out of the man, so the business of our modern civilization is dependent upon the superstition of a past civilization, and the bankers of the world are to-day perpetuating the adoration of "the tears wept by the sun" which was commenced ages since on the island of Atlantis.

And it becomes a grave question—when we remember that the rapidly increasing business of the world, consequent upon an increasing population, and a civilization advancing with giant steps, is measured by the standard of a currency limited by natural laws, decreasing annually in production, and incapable of expanding proportionately to the growth of the world—whether this Atlantean superstition may not yet inflict more incalculable injuries on mankind than those which resulted from the practice of phlebotomy.

PART V.

THE COLONIES OF ATLANTIS.

CHAPTER I.

THE CENTRAL AMERICAN AND MEXICAN COLONIES.

THE western shores of Atlantis were not far distant from the West India Islands; a people possessed of ships could readily pass from island to island until they reached the continent. Columbus found the natives making such voyages in open canoes. If, then, we will suppose that there was no original connection between the inhabitants of the main-land and of Atlantis, the commercial activity of the Atlanteans would soon reveal to them the shores of the Gulf. Commerce implies the plantation of colonies; the trading-post is always the nucleus of a settlement; we have seen this illustrated in modern times in the case of the English East India Company and the Hudson Bay Company. We can therefore readily believe that commercial intercourse between Atlantis and Yucatan, Honduras and Mexico, created colonies along the shores of the Gulf which gradually spread into the interior, and to the high table-lands of Mexico. And, accordingly, we find, as I have already shown, that all the traditions of Central America and Mexico point to some country in the East, and beyond the sea, as the source of their first civilized people; and this region, known among them as "Aztlan," lived in the memory of the people as a beautiful and happy land, where their ancestors had dwelt in peace for many generations.

Dr. Le Plongeon, who spent four years exploring Yucatan, says:

> "One-third of this tongue (the Maya) is pure Greek. Who brought the dialect of Homer to America? or who took to Greece that of the Mayas? Greek is the offspring of the Sanscrit. Is Maya? or are they coeval? . . . The Maya is not devoid of words from the Assyrian."

That the population of Central America (and in this term I include Mexico) was at one time very dense, and had attained to a high degree of civilization, higher even than that of Europe in the time of Columbus, there can be no question; and it is also probable, as I have shown, that they originally belonged to the white race. Dêsirè Charnay, who is now exploring the ruins of Central America, says (*North American Review*, January, 1881, p. 48), "The Toltecs were *fair, robust, and bearded.* I have often seen Indians of pure blood with blue eyes." Quetzalcoatl was represented as large, "with a big head and a heavy beard." The same author speaks (page 44) of "the ocean of ruins all around, not inferior in size to those of Egypt." At Teotihuacan he measured one building two thousand feet wide on each side, and fifteen pyramids, each nearly as large in the base as Cheops. "The city is indeed of vast extent . . . the whole ground, over a space of five or six miles in diameter, is covered with heaps of ruins—ruins which at first make no impression, so complete is their dilapidation." He asserts the great antiquity of these ruins, because he found the very highways of the ancient city to be composed of broken bricks and pottery, the débris left by earlier populations. "This continent," he says (page 43), "is the land of mysteries; we here enter an infinity whose limits we cannot estimate. . . . I shall soon have to quit work in this place. The long avenue on which it stands is lined with ruins of public buildings and palaces, forming continuous lines, as in the streets of modern cities. Still, all these edifices and halls were as nothing compared with the vast substructures which strengthened their foundations."

We find the strongest resemblances to the works of the ancient European races: the masonry is similar; the cement is the same; the sculptures are alike; both peoples used the arch; in both continents we find bricks, glassware, and even porcelain (*North American Review*, December, 1880, pp. 524, 525), "with blue figures on a white ground;" also bronze composed of the same elements of copper and tin in like proportions; coins made of copper, round and T-shaped, and even metallic candlesticks.

Dêsirè Charnay believes that he has found in the ruins of Tula the bones of swine, sheep, oxen, and horses, in a *fossil* state, indicating an immense antiquity. The Toltecs possessed a pure and simple religion, like that of Atlantis, as described by Plato, with the same sacrifices of fruits and flowers; they were farmers; they raised and wove cotton; they cultivated fruits; they used the sign of the Cross extensively; they cut and engraved precious stones; among their carvings have been found representations of the elephant and the lion, both animals not known in America. The forms of sepulture were the same as among the ancient races of the Old World; they burnt the bodies of their great men, and enclosed the dust in funeral urns; some of their dead were buried in a sitting position, others reclined at full length, and many were embalmed like the Egyptian mummies.

When we turn to Mexico, the same resemblances present themselves.

The government was an elective monarchy, like that of Poland, the king being selected from the royal family by the votes of the nobles of the kingdom. There was a royal family, an aristocracy, a privileged priesthood, a judiciary, and a common people. Here we have all the several estates into which society in Europe is divided.

There were thirty grand nobles in the kingdom, and the vastness of the realm may be judged by the fact that each of these could muster one hundred thousand vassals from their own estates, or a total of three millions. And we have only to read of the vast hordes brought into the field against Cortez to know that this was not an exaggeration.

They even possessed that which has been considered the crowning feature of European society, the feudal system. The nobles held their lands upon the tenure of military service.

But the most striking feature was the organization of the judiciary. The judges were independent even of the king, and held their offices for life. There were supreme judges for the larger divisions of the kingdom, district judges in each of the provinces, and magistrates chosen by the people throughout the country.

There was also a general legislative assembly, congress, or parliament, held every eighty days, presided over by the king, consisting of all the judges of the realm, to which the last appeal lay.

"The rites of marriage," says Prescott, "were celebrated with as much formality as in any Christian country; and the institution was held in such reverence that a tribunal was instituted for the sole purpose of determining questions relating to it. Divorces could not be obtained until authorized by a sentence of the court, after a patient hearing of the parties."

Slavery was tolerated, but the labors of the slave were light, his rights carefully guarded, and his children were free. The slave could own property, and even other slaves.

Their religion possessed so many features similar to those of the Old World, that the Spanish priests declared the devil had given them a bogus imitation of Christianity to destroy their souls. "The devil," said they, "stole all he could."

They had confessions, absolution of sins, and baptism. When their children were named, they sprinkled their lips and bosoms with water, and "the Lord was implored to permit the holy drops to wash away the sin that was given it before the foundation of the world."

The priests were numerous and powerful. They practised fasts, vigils, flagellations, and many of them lived in monastic seclusion.

The Aztecs, like the Egyptians, had progressed through all the three different modes of writing—the picture-writing, the symbolical, and the phonetic. They recorded all their laws, their tribute-rolls specifying the various imposts, their mythology, astronomical calendars, and rituals, their political annals and their chronology. They wrote on cotton-cloth, on skins prepared like parchment, on a composition of silk and gum, and on a species of paper, soft and beautiful, made from the aloe. Their books were about the size and shape of our own, but the leaves were long strips folded together in many folds.

They wrote poetry and cultivated oratory, and paid much attention to rhetoric. They also had a species of theatrical performances.

Their proficiency in astronomy is thus spoken of by Prescott:

"That they should be capable of accurately adjusting their festivals by the movements of the heavenly bodies, and should fix the true length of the tropical year *with a precision unknown to the great philosophers of antiquity*, could be the result only of a long series of nice and patient observations, evincing no slight progress in civilization."

"Their women," says the same author, "are described by the Spaniards as pretty, though with a serious and rather melancholy cast of countenance. Their long, black hair might generally be seen wreathed with flowers, or, among the richer people, with strings of precious stones and pearls from the Gulf of California. They appear to have been treated with much consideration by their husbands; and passed their time in indolent tranquillity, or in such feminine occupations as spinning, embroidery, and the like; while their maidens beguiled the hours by the rehearsal of traditionary tales and ballads.

"Numerous attendants of both sexes waited at the banquets. The halls were scented with perfumes, and the courts strewed with odoriferous herbs and flowers, which were distributed in profusion among the guests as they arrived. Cotton napkins and ewers of water were placed before them as they took their seats at the board. Tobacco was then offered, in pipes, mixed with aromatic substances, or in the form of cigars inserted in tubes of tortoise-shell or silver. It is a curious fact that the Aztecs also took the dried tobacco leaf in the pulverized form of snuff.

"The table was well supplied with substantial meats, especially game, among which the most conspicuous was the turkey. Also, there were found vegetables and fruits of every delicious variety native to the continent. Their palate was still further regaled by confections and pastry, for which their maize-flower and sugar furnished them ample materials. The meats were kept warm with chafing-dishes. The table was ornamented with vases of silver and sometimes gold of delicate workmanship. The favorite beverage was *chocolatl*, flavored with vanilla and different spices. The fermented juice of the maguey, with a mixture of sweets and acids, supplied various agreeable drinks of different degrees of strength."

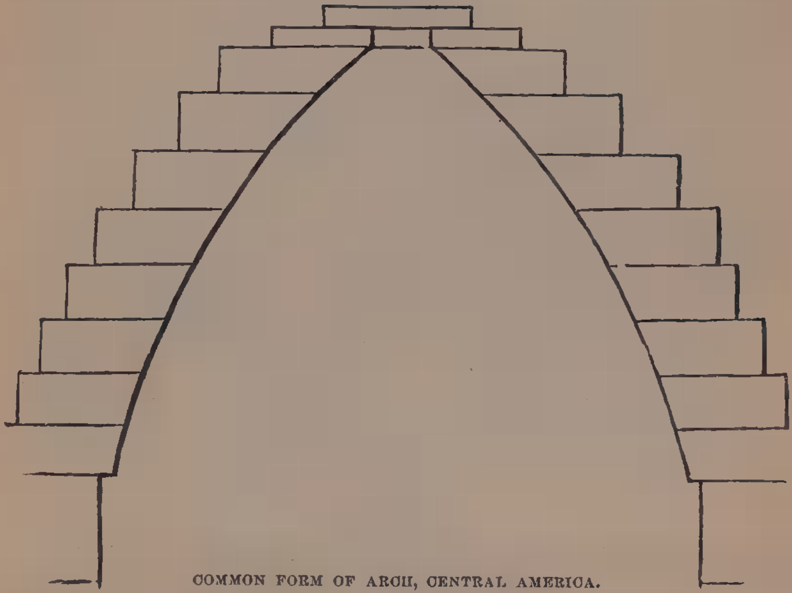

COMMON FORM OF ARCH, CENTRAL AMERICA.

It is not necessary to describe their great public works, their floating gardens, their aqueducts, bridges, forts, temples, pal-

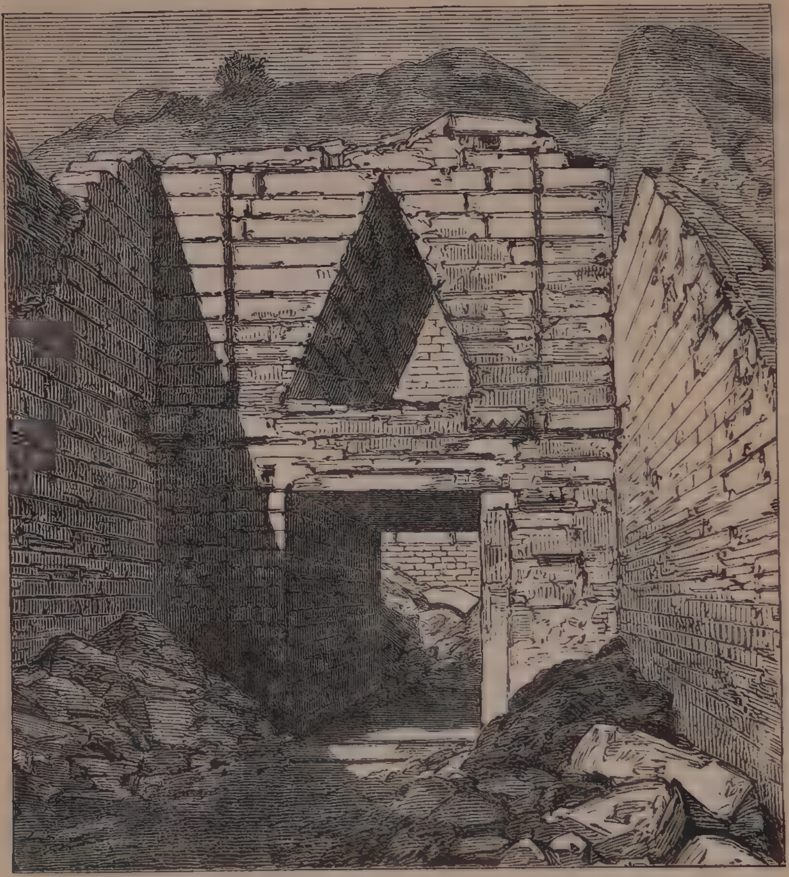

SECTION OF THE TREASURE-HOUSE OF ATREUS AT MYCENÆ.

aces, and gigantic pyramids, all ornamented with wonderful statuary.

We find a strong resemblance between the form of arch used in the architecture of Central America and that of the oldest buildings of Greece. The Palenque arch is made by the gradual overlapping of the strata of the building, as shown in the accompanying cut from Baldwin's "Ancient America," page 100. It was the custom of these ancient architects to fill in the arch itself with masonry, as shown in the picture

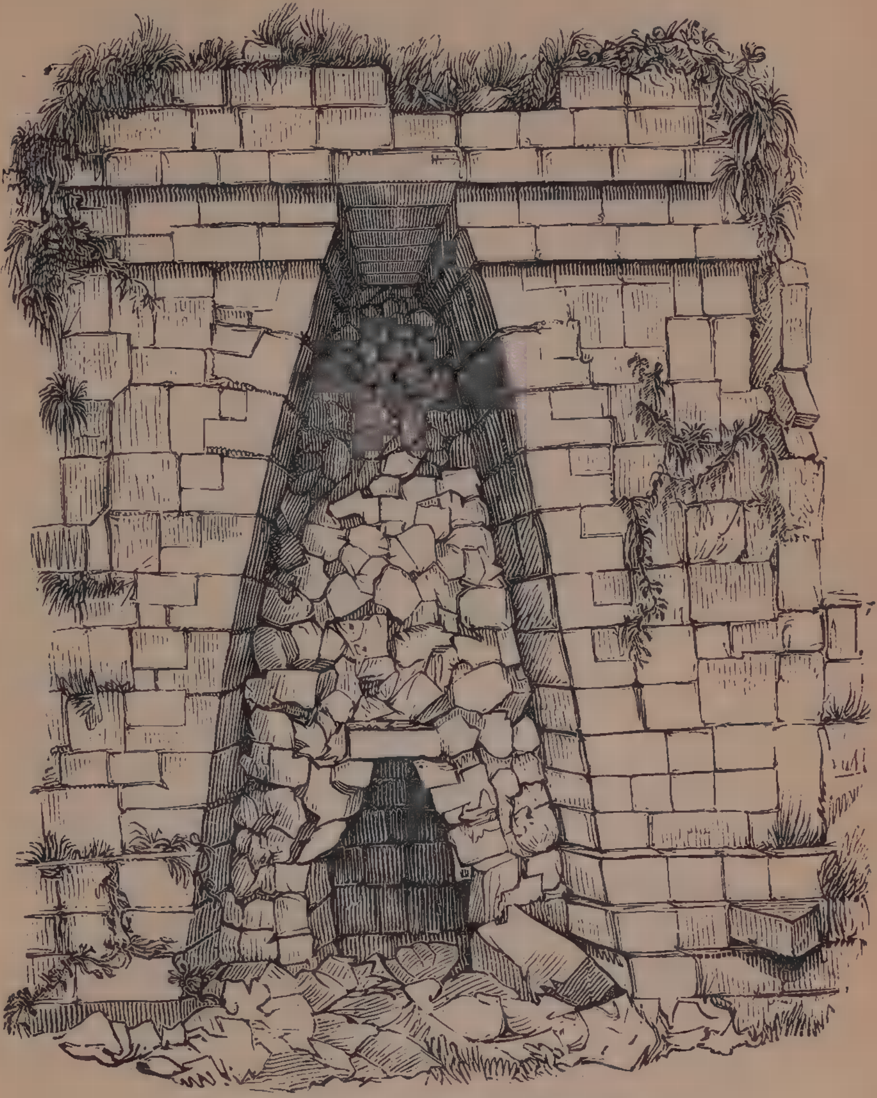

ARCH OF LAS MONJAS, PALENQUE, CENTRAL AMERICA.

on page 355 of the Arch of Las Monjas, Palenque. If now we look at the representation of the "Treasure-house of Atreus" at Mycenæ, on page 354—one of the oldest structures in Greece—we find precisely the same form of arch, filled in in the same way.

Rosengarten ("Architectural Styles," p. 59) says:

> "The base of these treasure-houses is circular, and the covering of a dome shape; it does not, however, form an arch, but courses of stone are laid horizontally over one another in such a way that each course projects beyond the one below it, till the space at the highest course becomes so narrow that a single stone covers it. Of all those that have survived to the present day the treasure-house at Atreus is the most venerable."

The same form of arch is found among the ruins of that interesting people, the Etruscans.

> "Etruscan vaults are of two kinds. The more curious and probably the most ancient are *false arches*, formed of horizontal courses of stone, each a little overlapping the other, and carried on until the aperture at the top could be closed by a single superincumbent slab. Such is the construction of the Regulini-Galassi vault, at Cervetere, the ancient Cære." (Rawlinson's "Origin of Nations," p. 117.)

It is sufficient to say, in conclusion, that Mexico, under European rule, or under her own leaders, has never again risen to her former standard of refinement, wealth, prosperity, or civilization.

CHAPTER II.

THE EGYPTIAN COLONY.

WHAT proofs have we that the Egyptians were a colony from Atlantis?

1. They claimed descent from "the twelve great gods," which must have meant the twelve gods of Atlantis, to wit, Poseidon and Cleito and their ten sons.

2. According to the traditions of the Phœnicians, the Egyptians derived their civilization from them; and as the Egyptians far antedated the rise of the Phœnician nations proper, this must have meant that Egypt derived its civilization from the same country to which the Phœnicians owed their own origin. The Phœnician legends show that Misor, from whom the Egyptians were descended, was the child of the Phœnician gods Amynus and Magus. Misor gave birth to Taaut, the god of letters, the inventor of the alphabet, and Taaut became Thoth, the god of history of the Egyptians. Sanchoniathon tells us that "Chronos (king of Atlantis) visited the South, and gave all Egypt to the god Taaut, that it might be his kingdom." "Misor" is probably the king "Mestor" named by Plato.

3. According to the Bible, the Egyptians were descendants of Ham, who was one of the three sons of Noah who escaped from the Deluge, to wit, the destruction of Atlantis.

4. The great similarity between the Egyptian civilization and that of the American nations.

5. The fact that the Egyptians claimed to be *red* men.

6. The religion of Egypt was pre-eminently sun-worship, and *Ra* was the sun-god of Egypt, Rama, the sun of the Hin-

doos, Rana, a god of the Toltecs, Raymi, the great festival of the sun of the Peruvians, and Rayam, a god of Yemen.

7. The presence of pyramids in Egypt and America.

8. The Egyptians were the only people of antiquity who were well-informed as to the history of Atlantis. The Egyptians were never a maritime people, and the Atlanteans must have brought that knowledge to them. They were not likely to send ships to Atlantis.

9. We find another proof of the descent of the Egyptians from Atlantis in their belief as to the "under-world." This land of the dead was situated in the *West*—hence the tombs were all placed, whenever possible, on the west bank of the Nile. The constant cry of the mourners as the funeral procession moved forward was, "To the west; to the west." This under-world was *beyond the water*, hence the funeral procession always crossed a body of water. "Where the tombs were, as in most cases, on the west bank of the Nile, the Nile was crossed; where they were on the eastern shore the procession passed over a sacred lake." (R. S. Poole, *Contemporary Review*, August, 1881, p. 17.) In the procession was "*a sacred ark* of the sun."

All this is very plain: the under-world in the West, the land of the dead, was Atlantis, the drowned world, the world beneath the horizon, beneath the sea, to which the peasants of Brittany looked from Cape Raz, the most western cape projecting into the Atlantic. It was only to be reached from Egypt by crossing the water, and it was associated with the ark, the emblem of Atlantis in all lands.

The soul of the dead man was supposed to journey to the under-world by "a *water progress*" (*Ibid.*, p. 18), his destination was the Elysian Fields, where mighty corn grew, and where he was expected to cultivate the earth; "this task was of supreme importance." (*Ibid.*, p. 19.) The Elysian Fields were the "Elysion" of the Greeks, the abode of the blessed, which we have seen was an island *in the remote west*." The Egyptian belief referred to a real country; they described its cities, mountains, and rivers; one of the latter was called *Uranes*, a name which reminds us of the Atlantean god Uranos. In connection with all this we must not forget that Plato described Atlantis as "that *sacred* island lying beneath the sun." Everywhere in the ancient world we find the minds of men looking to the west for the land of the dead. Poole says, "How then can we account for this strong conviction? Surely it must be a survival of an ancient belief which flowed in the very veins of the race." (*Contemporary Review*, 1881, p. 19.) It was based on an universal tradition that under "an immense ocean," in "the far west," there was an "under-world," a world comprising millions of the dead, a mighty race, that had been suddenly swallowed up in the greatest catastrophe known to man since he had inhabited the globe.

10. There is no evidence that the civilization of Egypt was developed in Egypt itself; it must have been transported there from some other country. To use the words of a recent writer in *Blackwood*,

> "Till lately it was believed that the use of the papyrus for writing was introduced about the time of Alexander the Great; then Lepsius found the hieroglyphic sign of the papyrus-roll on monuments of the twelfth dynasty; afterward he found the same sign on monuments of the fourth dynasty, which is getting back pretty close to Menes, the protomonarch; and, indeed, little doubt is entertained that the art of writing on papyrus was understood as early as the days of Menes himself. The fruits of investigation in this, as in many other subjects, are truly most marvellous. Instead of exhibiting the rise and progress of any branches of knowledge, they tend to prove that nothing had any rise or progress, but that everything is referable to the very earliest dates. The experience of the Egyptologist must teach him to reverse the observation of Topsy, and to ''spect that nothing growed,' but that as soon as men were planted on the banks of the Nile they were *already the cleverest men that ever lived, endowed with more knowledge and more power than their successors for centuries and centuries could at-*

tain to. Their system of writing, also, is found to have been complete from the very first. . . .

"But what are we to think when the antiquary, grubbing in the dust and silt of five thousand years ago to discover some traces of infant effort—some rude specimens of the ages of Magog and Mizraim, in which we may admire the germ that has since developed into a wonderful art—breaks his shins against an article so perfect that it equals if it does not excel the supreme stretch of modern ability? How shall we support the theory if it come to our knowledge that, before Noah was cold in his grave, his descendants were adepts in construction and in the fine arts, and that their achievements were for magnitude such as, if we possess the requisite skill, we never attempt to emulate? . . .

"As we have not yet discovered any trace of the rude, savage Egypt, but have seen her in her very earliest manifestations already skilful, erudite, and strong, it is impossible to determine the order of her inventions. Light may yet be thrown upon her rise and progress, but our deepest researches have hitherto shown her to us as only the mother of a most accomplished race. How they came by their knowledge is matter for speculation; that they possessed it is matter of fact. We never find them without the ability to organize labor, or shrinking from the very boldest efforts in digging canals and irrigating, in quarrying rock, in building, and in sculpture."

The explanation is simple: the waters of the Atlantic now flow over the country where all this magnificence and power were developed by slow stages from the rude beginnings of barbarism.

And how mighty must have been the parent nation of which this Egypt was a colony!

Egypt was the magnificent, the golden bridge, ten thousand years long, glorious with temples and pyramids, illuminated and illustrated by the most complete and continuous records of human history, along which the civilization of Atlantis, in a great procession of kings and priests, philosophers and astronomers, artists and artisans, streamed forward to Greece, to Rome, to Europe, to America. As far back in the ages as the eye can penetrate, even where the perspective dwindles almost to a point, we can still see the swarming multitudes, possessed of all the arts of the highest civilization, pressing forward from out that other and greater empire of which even this wonder-working Nile-land is but a faint and imperfect copy.

Look at the record of Egyptian greatness as preserved in her works: The pyramids, still in their ruins, are the marvel of mankind. The river Nile was diverted from its course by monstrous embankments to make a place for the city of Memphis. The artificial lake of Mœris was created as a reservoir for the waters of the Nile: it was *four hundred and fifty miles in circumference* and three hundred and fifty feet deep, with subterranean channels, flood-gates, locks, and dams, by which the wilderness was redeemed from sterility. Look at the magnificent mason-work of this ancient people! Mr. Kenrick, speaking of the casing of the Great Pyramid, says, "The joints are scarcely perceptible, and *not wider than the thickness of silver-paper*, and the cement so tenacious that fragments of the casing-stones still remain in their original position, notwithstanding the lapse of so many centuries, and the violence by which they were detached." Look at the ruins of the Labyrinth, which aroused the astonishment of Herodotus; it had three thousand chambers, half of them above ground and half below—a combination of courts, chambers, colonnades, statues, and pyramids. Look at the Temple of Karnac, covering a square each side of which is eighteen hundred feet. Says a recent writer, "Travellers one and all appear to have been unable to find words to express the feelings with which these sublime remains inspired them. They have been astounded and overcome by the magnificence and the prodigality of workmanship here to be admired. Courts, halls, gate-ways, pillars, obelisks, monolithic figures, sculptures, rows of sphinxes, are massed in such profusion that the sight is too much for modern comprehension." Denon says, "It is hardly possible to believe, after having seen it, in the reality of the existence of so many buildings collected on a single point—in their dimensions, in the resolute perseverance which their construction required, and in the incalculable expense of so much magnificence." And again, "It is necessary that the reader should fancy what is before him to be a dream, as he who views the objects themselves occasionally yields to the doubt whether he be perfectly awake." There were lakes and mountains within the periphery of the sanctuary. "*The cathedral of Notre Dame at Paris could be set inside one of the halls of Karnac, and not touch the walls!* . . . The whole valley and delta of the Nile, from the Catacombs to the sea, was covered with temples, palaces, tombs, pyramids, and pillars." Every stone was covered with inscriptions.

The state of society in the early days of Egypt approximated very closely to our modern civilization. Religion consisted in the worship of one God and the practice of virtue; forty-two commandments prescribed the duties of men to themselves, their neighbors, their country, and the Deity; a heaven awaited the good and a hell the vicious; there was a judgment-day when the hearts of men were weighed:

"He is sifting out the hearts of men
Before his judgment-seat."

Monogamy was the strict rule; not even the kings, in the early days, were allowed to have more than one wife. The wife's rights of separate property and her dower were protected by law; she was "the lady of the house;" she could "buy, sell, and trade on her own account;" in case of divorce her dowry was to be repaid to her, with interest at a high rate. The marriage-ceremony embraced an oath not to contract any other matrimonial alliance. The wife's status was as high in the earliest days of Egypt as it is now in the most civilized nations of Europe or America.

Slavery was permitted, but the slaves were treated with the greatest humanity. In the confessions, buried with the dead, the soul is made to declare that "I have not incriminated the slave to his master." There was also a clause in the commandments "which protected the laboring man against the exaction of more than his day's labor." They were merciful to the captives made in war; no picture represents torture inflicted upon them; while the representation of a sea-fight shows them saving their drowning enemies. Reginald Stuart Poole says (*Contemporary Review*, August, 1881, p. 43):

> "When we consider the high ideal of the Egyptians, as proved by their portrayals of a just life, the principles they laid down as the basis of ethics, the elevation of women among them, their humanity in war, we must admit that their moral place ranks very high among the nations of antiquity.
>
> "The true comparison of Egyptian life is with that of modern nations. This is far too difficult a task to be here undertaken. Enough has been said, however, to show that we need not think that in all respects they were far behind us."

Then look at the proficiency in art of this ancient people.

They were the first mathematicians of the Old World. Those Greeks whom we regard as the fathers of mathematics were simply pupils of Egypt. They were the first land-surveyors. They were the first astronomers, calculating eclipses, and watching the periods of planets and constellations. They knew the rotundity of the earth, which it was supposed Columbus had discovered!

> "The signs of the zodiac were certainly in use among the Egyptians 1722 years before Christ. One of the learned men of our day, who for fifty years labored to decipher the hieroglyphics of the ancients, found upon a mummy-case in the British Museum a delineation of the signs of the zodiac, and the position of the planets; the date to which they pointed was the autumnal equinox of the year 1722 B.C. Professor Mitchell, to whom the fact was communicated, employed his assistants to ascertain the exact position of the heavenly bodies belonging to our solar system on the equinox of that year. This was done, and a diagram furnished by parties ignorant of his object, which showed that on the 7th of October, 1722 B.C.,

the moon and planets occupied the exact point in the heavens marked upon the coffin in the British Museum." (Goodrich's "Columbus," p. 22.)

They had clocks and dials for measuring time. They possessed gold and silver money. They were the first agriculturists of the Old World, raising all the cereals, cattle, horses, sheep, etc. They manufactured linen of so fine a quality that in the days of King Amasis (600 years B.C.) a single thread of a garment was composed of three hundred and sixty-five minor threads. They worked in gold, silver, copper, bronze, and iron; they tempered iron to the hardness of steel. They were the first chemists. The word "chemistry" comes from *chemi*, and *chemi* means Egypt. They manufactured glass and all kinds of pottery; they made boats out of earthenware; and, precisely as we are now making railroad car-wheels of paper, they manufactured vessels of paper. Their dentists filled teeth with gold; their farmers hatched poultry by artificial heat. They were the first musicians; they possessed guitars, single and double pipes, cymbals, drums, lyres, harps, flutes, the sambric, ashur, etc.; they had even castanets, such as are now used in Spain. In medicine and surgery they had reached such a degree of perfection that several hundred years B.C. the operation for the removal of cataract from the eye was performed among them; one of the most delicate and difficult feats of surgery, only attempted by us in the most recent times. "The papyrus of Berlin" states that it was discovered, rolled up in a case, under the feet of an Anubis in the town of Sekhem, in the days of Tet (or Thoth), after whose death it was transmitted to King Sent, and was then restored to the feet of the statue. King Sent belonged to the second dynasty, which flourished 4751 B.C., and the papyrus was old in his day. This papyrus is a medical treatise; there are in it no incantations or charms; but it deals in reasonable remedies, draughts, unguents and injections. The later medical papyri contain a great deal of magic and incantations.

> "Great and splendid as are the things which we know about oldest Egypt, she is made a thousand times more sublime by our uncertainty as to the limits of her accomplishments. She presents not a great, definite idea, which, though hard to receive, is, when once acquired, comprehensible and clear. Under the soil of the modern country are hid away thousands and thousands of relics which may astonish the world for ages to come, and change continually its conception of what Egypt was. The effect of research seems to be to prove the objects of it to be much older than we thought them to be—some things thought to be wholly modern having been proved to be repetitions of things Egyptian, and other things known to have been Egyptian being by every advance in knowledge carried back more and more toward the very beginning of things. She shakes our most rooted ideas concerning the world's history; she has not ceased to be a puzzle and a lure: there is a spell over her still."

Renan says, "It has no archaic epoch." Osborn says, "It bursts upon us at once in the flower of its highest perfection." Seiss says ("A Miracle in Stone," p. 40), "It suddenly takes its place in the world in all its matchless magnificence, without father, without mother, and as clean apart from all evolution as if it had dropped from the unknown heavens." It had dropped from Atlantis.

Rawlinson says ("Origin of Nations," p. 13):

> "Now, in Egypt, it is notorious that there is no indication of any early period of savagery or barbarism. All the authorities agree that, however far back we go, we find in Egypt no rude or uncivilized time out of which civilization is developed. Menes, the first king, changes the course of the Nile, makes a great reservoir, and builds the temple of Phthah at Memphis. . . . We see no barbarous customs, not even the habit, so slowly abandoned by all people, of wearing arms when not on military service."

Tylor says ("Anthropology," p. 192):

> "Among the ancient cultured nations of Egypt and Assyria handicrafts had already come to a stage which could only have

> been reached by thousands of years of progress. In museums still may be examined the work of their joiners, stone-cutters, goldsmiths, wonderful in skill and finish, and often putting to shame the modern artificer. . . . To see gold jewellery of the highest order, the student should examine that of the ancients, such as the Egyptian, Greek, and Etruscan."

The carpenters' and masons' tools of the ancient Egyptians were almost identical with those used among us to-day.

There is a plate showing an Aztec priestess in Delafield's "Antiquities of America," p. 61, which presents a head-dress strikingly Egyptian. In the celebrated "tablet of the cross," at Palenque, we see a cross with a bird perched upon it, to which (or to the cross) two priests are offering sacrifice. In Mr. Stephens's representation from the Vocal Memnon we find almost the same thing, the difference being that, instead of an ornamented Latin cross, we have a *crux commissa*, and instead of one bird there are two, not on the cross, but immediately above it. In both cases the hieroglyphics, though the characters are of course different, are disposed upon the stone in much the same manner. (Bancroft's "Native Races," vol. v., p. 61.)

Even the obelisks of Egypt have their counterpart in America.

Quoting from Molina ("History of Chili," tom. i., p. 169), McCullough writes, "Between the hills of Mendoza and La Punta is a pillar of stone *one hundred and fifty feet high*, and twelve feet in diameter." ("Researches," pp. 171, 172.) The columns of Copan stand detached and solitary, so do the obelisks of Egypt; both are square or four-sided, and covered with sculpture. (Bancroft's "Native Races," vol. v., p. 60.)

In a letter by Jomard, quoted by Delafield, we read,

> "I have recognized in your memoir on the division of time among the Mexican nations, compared with those of Asia, some very striking analogies between the Toltec characters and institutions observed on the banks of the Nile. Among these

analogies there is one which is worthy of attention—it is the use of the vague year of three hundred and sixty-five days, composed of equal months, and of five complementary days, equally employed at Thebes and Mexico—a distance of three thousand leagues. . . . In reality, the intercalation of the Mexicans being thirteen days on each cycle of fifty-two years, comes to the same thing as that of the Julian calendar, which is one day in four years; and consequently supposes the duration of the year to be three hundred and sixty-five days *six hours*. Now such was the length of the year among the Egyptians—they intercalated an entire year of three hundred and seventy-five days every one thousand four hundred and sixty years. . . . The fact of the intercalation (by the Mexicans) of thirteen days every cycle—that is, the use of a year of three hundred and sixty-five days and a quarter—is a proof that it was borrowed from the Egyptians, *or that they had a common origin.*" ("Antiquities of America," pp. 52, 53.)

The Mexican century began on the 26th of February, and the 26th of February was celebrated from the time of Nabonassor, 747 B.C., because the Egyptian priests, conformably to their astronomical observations, had fixed the beginning of the month *Toth*, and the commencement of their year, at noon on that day. The five intercalated days to make up the three hundred and sixty-five days were called by the Mexicans *Nemontemi*, or useless, and on them they transacted no business; while the Egyptians, during that epoch, celebrated the festival of the birth of their gods, as attested by Plutarch and others.

It will be conceded that a considerable degree of astronomical knowledge must have been necessary to reach the conclusion that the true year consisted of three hundred and sixty-five days *and six hours* (modern science has demonstrated that it consists of three hundred and sixty-five days and five hours, less ten seconds); and a high degree of civilization was requisite to insist that the year must be brought around, by the intercalation of a certain number of days in a certain period of time, to its true relation to the seasons. Both were the outgrowth of a vast, ancient civilization of the highest order, which transmitted some part of its astronomical knowledge to its colonies through their respective priesthoods.

Can we, in the presence of such facts, doubt the statements of the Egyptian priests to Solon, as to the glory and greatness of Atlantis, its monuments, its sculpture, its laws, its religion, its civilization?

In Egypt we have the oldest of the Old World children of Atlantis; in her magnificence we have a testimony to the development attained by the parent country; by that country whose kings were the gods of succeeding nations, and whose kingdom extended to the uttermost ends of the earth.

The Egyptian historian, Manetho, referred to a period of thirteen thousand nine hundred years as "the reign of the gods," and placed this period at the very beginning of Egyptian history. These thirteen thousand nine hundred years were probably a recollection of Atlantis. Such a lapse of time, vast as it may appear, is but as a day compared with some of our recognized geological epochs.

Chapter III.

THE COLONIES OF THE MISSISSIPPI VALLEY.

If we will suppose a civilized, maritime people to have planted colonies, in the remote past, along the headlands and shores of the Gulf of Mexico, spreading thence, in time, to the tablelands of Mexico and to the plains and mountains of New Mexico and Colorado, what would be more natural than that these adventurous navigators, passing around the shores of the Gulf, should, sooner or later, discover the mouth of the Mississippi River; and what more certain than that they would enter it, explore it, and plant colonies along its shores, wherever they found a fertile soil and a salubrious climate. Their outlying provinces would penetrate even into regions where the severity of the climate would prevent great density of population or development of civilization.

The results we have presupposed are precisely those which we find to have existed at one time in the Mississippi Valley.

The Mound Builders of the United States were pre-eminently a river people. Their densest settlements and greatest works were near the Mississippi and its tributaries. Says Foster ("Prehistoric Races," p. 110), "The navigable streams were the great highways of the Mound Builders."

Mr. Fontaine claims ("How the World was Peopled") that this ancient people constructed "levees" to control and utilize the bayous of the Mississippi for the purpose of agriculture and commerce. The Yazoo River is called *Yazoo-ok-hinnah*—the River of Ancient Ruins. "There is no evidence that they had reached the Atlantic coast; no authentic remains of the Mound Builders are found in the New England States, nor even in the State of New York." ("North Americans of Antiquity," p. 28.) This would indicate that the civilization of this people advanced up the Mississippi River and spread out over its tributaries, but did not cross the Alleghany Mountains. They reached, however, far up the Missouri and Yellowstone rivers, and thence into Oregon. The head-waters of the Missouri became one of their great centres of population; but their chief sites were upon the Mississippi and Ohio rivers. In Wisconsin we find the northern central limit of their work; they seem to have occupied the southern counties of the State, and the western shores of Lake Michigan. Their circular mounds are found in Minnesota and Iowa, and some very large ones in Dakota. Illinois and Indiana were densely populated by them: it is believed that the vital centre of their colonies was near the junction of the Ohio and Mississippi rivers.

The chief characteristic of the Mound Builders was that from which they derived their name—the creation of great structures of earth or stone, not unlike the pyramids of Mexico and Egypt. Between Alton and East St. Louis is the great mound of Cahokia, which may be selected as a type of their works: it rises ninety-seven feet high, while its square sides are 700 and 500 feet respectively. There was a terrace on the south side 160 by 300 feet, reached by a graded way; the summit of the pyramid is flattened, affording a platform 200 by 450 feet. It will thus be seen that the area covered by the mound of Cahokia is about as large as that of the greatest pyramid of Egypt, Cheops, although its height is much less.

The number of monuments left by the Mound Builders is extraordinarily great. In Ohio alone there are more than ten thousand tumuli, and from one thousand to fifteen hundred enclosures. Their mounds were not cones but four-sided pyramids—their sides, like those of the Egyptian pyramids, corresponding with the cardinal points. (Foster's "Prehistoric Races," p. 112.)

The Mound Builders had attained a considerable degree of civilization; they were able to form, in the construction of their works, perfect circles and perfect squares of great accuracy, carried over the varying surface of the country. One large enclosure comprises exactly forty acres. At Hopetown, Ohio, are two walled figures—one a square, the other a circle—each containing precisely twenty acres. They must have possessed regular scales of measurement, and the means of determining angles and of computing the area to be enclosed by the square and the circle, so that the space enclosed by each might exactly correspond.

"The most skilful engineer of this day would find it difficult," says Mr. Squier, "without the aid of instruments, to lay down an accurate square of the great dimensions above represented, measuring, as they do, more than four-fifths of a mile in circumference. . . . But we not only find accurate squares and perfect circles, but also, as we have seen, octagons of great dimensions."

They also possessed an accurate system of weights; bracelets of copper on the arms of a skeleton have been found to be of uniform size, measuring each two and nine-tenth inches, and each weighing *precisely four ounces.*

They built great military works surrounded by walls and ditches, with artificial lakes in the centre to supply water. One work, Fort Ancient, on the Little Miami River, Ohio, has a circuit of between four and five miles; the embankment was twenty feet high; the fort could have held a garrison of sixty thousand men with their families and provisions.

Not only do we find pyramidal structures of earth in the Mississippi Valley very much like the pyramids of Egypt, Mexico, and Peru, but a very singular structure is repeated in Ohio and Peru: I refer to the double walls or prolonged pyramids, if I may coin an expression, shown in the cut page 375.

The Mound Builders possessed chains of fortifications reaching from the southern line of New York diagonally across the

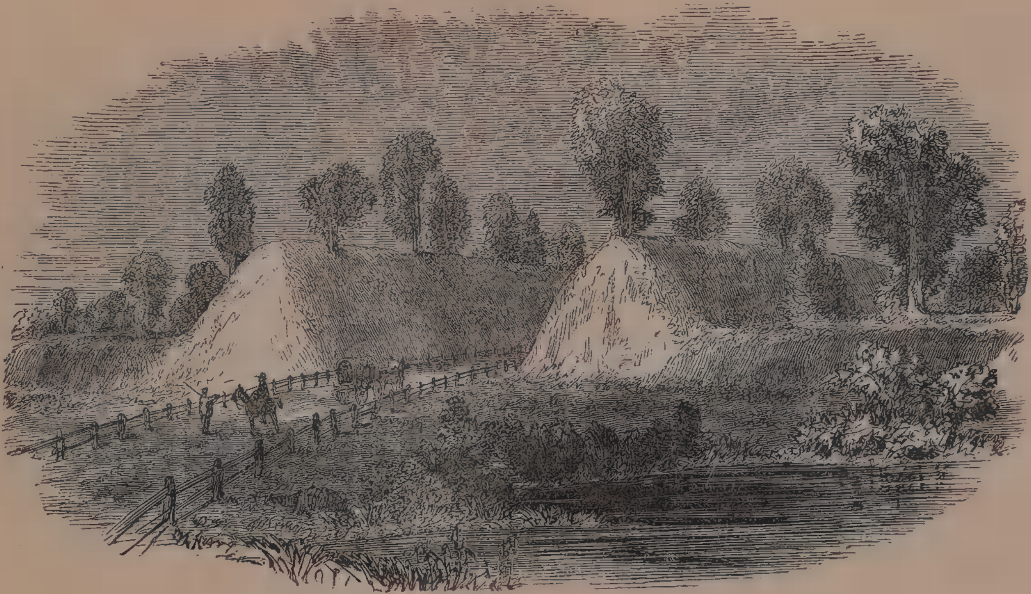

GRADED WAY NEAR PIKETON, OHIO.

country, through Central and Northern Ohio to the Wabash. It would appear probable, therefore, that while they advanced from the south it was from the north-east the savage races came who drove them south or exterminated them.

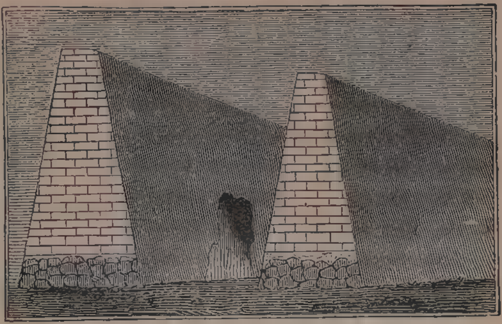

WALLS AT GRAN-CHIMU, PERU.

At Marietta, Ohio, we find a combination of the cross and pyramid. (See p. 334, *ante.*) At Newark, Ohio, are extensive and intricate works: they occupy an area two miles square, embraced within embankments twelve miles long. One of the mounds is a threefold symbol, like a bird's foot; the central

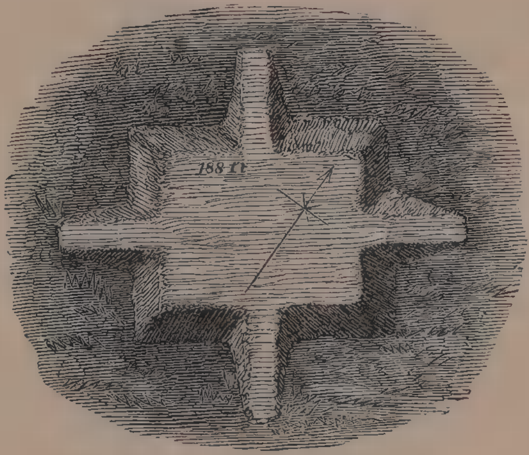

CROSS AND PYRAMID MOUND, OHIO.

mound is 155 feet long, and the other two each 110 feet in length. Is this curious design a reminiscence of Atlantis and the three-pronged trident of Poseidon? (See 4th fig., p. 242, *ante.*)

The Mound Builders made sun-dried brick mixed with rushes, as the Egyptians made sun-dried bricks mixed with straw; they worked in copper, silver, lead, and there are evidences, as we shall see, that they wrought even in iron.

Copper implements are very numerous in the mounds. Copper axes, spear-heads, hollow buttons, bosses for ornaments, bracelets, rings, etc., are found in very many of them strikingly similar to those of the Bronze Age in Europe. In one in Butler County, Ohio, was found a copper fillet around the head of a skeleton, with strange devices marked upon it.

Silver ornaments have also been found, but not in such great numbers. They seem to have attached a high value to silver, and it is often found in thin sheets, no thicker than paper, wrapped over copper or stone ornaments so neatly as almost to escape detection. The great esteem in which they held a metal so intrinsically valueless as silver, is another evidence that they must have drawn their superstitions from the same source as the European nations.

Copper is also often found in this manner *plated* over stone pipes, presenting an unbroken metallic lustre, the overlapping edges so well polished as to be scarcely discoverable. Beads and stars made of shells have sometimes been found doubly plated, first with copper then with silver.

The Mound Builders also understood the art of casting metals, or they held intercourse with some race who did; a copper axe "cast" has been found in the State of New York. (See Lubbock's "Prehistoric Times," p. 254, note.) Professor Foster ("Prehistoric Races," p. 259) also proves that the ancient people of the Mississippi Valley possessed this art, and he gives us representations of various articles plainly showing the marks of the mould upon them.

A rude article in the shape of an axe, composed of pure lead, weighing about half a pound, was found in sinking a well within the trench of the ancient works at Circleville. There can be no doubt it was the production of the Mound Builders, as galena has often been found on the altars in the mounds.

It has been generally thought, by Mr. Squier and others, that there were no evidences that the Mound Builders were acquainted with the use of iron, or that their plating was more than a simple *overlaying* of one metal on another, or on some foreign substance.

Some years since, however, a mound was opened at Marietta, Ohio, which seems to have refuted these opinions. Dr. S. P. Hildreth, in a letter to the American Antiquarian Society, thus speaks of it:

> "Lying immediately over or on the forehead of the body were found three large circular bosses, or ornaments for a sword-belt or buckler; they are composed of copper overlaid with a thick plate of silver. The fronts are slightly convex, with a depression like a cup in the centre, and they measure two inches and a quarter across the face of each. On the back side, opposite the depressed portion, is a copper rivet or nail, around which are two separate plates by which they were fastened to the leather. Two small pieces of leather were found lying between the plates of one of the bosses; they resemble the skin of a mummy, and seem to have been preserved by the salts of copper. Near the side of the body was found a plate of silver, which appears to have been the upper part of a sword scabbard; it is six inches in length, two in breadth, and weighs one ounce. It seems to have been fastened to the scabbard by three or four rivets, the holes of which remain in the silver.
>
> "Two or three pieces of copper tube were also found, *filled with iron rust.* These pieces, from their appearance, composed the lower end of the scabbard, near the point of the sword. No signs of the sword itself were discovered, except the rust above mentioned.
>
> "The mound had every appearance of being as old as any in the neighborhood, and was at the first settlement of Marietta covered with large trees. It seems to have been made for this

single personage, as this skeleton alone was discovered. The bones were very much decayed, and many of them crumbled to dust upon exposure to the air."

Mr. Squier says, "These articles have been critically examined, and it is beyond doubt that the copper bosses were absolutely *plated*, not simply *overlaid*, with silver. Between the copper and the silver exists a connection such as, it seems to me, could only be produced by heat; and if it is admitted that these are genuine relics of the Mound Builders, it must, at the same time, be admitted that they possessed the difficult art of plating one metal upon another. There is but one alternative, viz., that they had occasional or constant intercourse with a people advanced in the arts, from whom these articles were obtained. Again, if Dr. Hildreth is not mistaken, *oxydized iron* or steel was also discovered in connection with the above remains, from which also follows the extraordinary conclusion that *the Mound Builders were acquainted with the use of iron*, the conclusion being, of course, subject to the improbable alternative already mentioned."

In connection with this subject, we would refer to the interesting evidences that the copper mines of the shore of Lake Superior had been at some very remote period worked by the Mound Builders. There were found deep excavations, with rude ladders, huge masses of rock broken off, also numerous stone tools, and all the evidences of extensive and long-continued labor. It is even said that the great Ontonagon mass of pure copper which is now in Washington was excavated by these ancient miners, and that when first found its surface showed numerous marks of their tools.

There seems to be no doubt, then, that the Mound Builders were familiar with the use of copper, silver, and lead, and in all probability of iron. They possessed various mechanical contrivances. They were very probably acquainted with *the lathe*. Beads of shell have been found, looking very much like ivory, and showing the *circular striæ, identical with those produced by turning in a lathe.*

In a mound on the Scioto River was found around the neck of a skeleton triple rows of beads, made of marine shells and the tusks of some animal. "Several of these," says Squier, "still retain their polish, and bear marks which seem to indicate that they were turned in some machine, instead of being carved or rubbed into shape by hand."

"Not among the least interesting and remarkable relics," continues the same author, "obtained from the mounds are the stone tubes. They are all carved from fine-grained materials, capable of receiving a polish, and being made ornamental as well as useful. The finest specimen yet discovered, and which can scarcely be surpassed in the delicacy of its workmanship, was found in a mound in the immediate vicinity of Chillicothe. It is composed of a compact variety of slate. This stone cuts with great clearness, and receives a fine though not glaring polish. The tube under notice is thirteen inches long by one and one-tenth in diameter; one end swells slightly, and the other terminates in a broad, flattened, triangular mouth-piece of fine proportions, which is carved *with mathematical precision.* It is *drilled* throughout; the bore is seven-tenths of an inch in diameter at the cylindrical end of the tube, and retains that calibre until it reaches the point where the cylinder subsides into the mouth-piece, when it contracts gradually to one-tenth of an inch. The inner surface of the tube is perfectly smooth till within a short distance of the point of contraction. *For the remaining distance the circular striæ, formed by the drill in boring, are distinctly marked.* The carving upon it is very fine."

That they possessed *saws* is proved by the fact that on some fossil teeth found in one of the mounds the *striæ* of the teeth of the saw could be distinctly perceived.

When we consider that some of their porphyry carvings will turn the edge of the best-tempered knife, we are forced to conclude that they possessed that singular process, known to the Mexicans and Peruvians, of tempering copper to the hardness of steel.

We find in the mounds adzes similar in shape to our own, with the edges bevelled from the inside.

Drills and gravers of copper have also been found, with chisel-shaped edges or sharp points.

"It is not impossible," says Squier, "but, on the contrary, very probable, from a close inspection of the mound pottery, that the ancient people possessed the simple approximation toward the potter's wheel; and the polish which some of the finer vessels possess is due to other causes than vitrification."

Their sculptures show a considerable degree of progress. They consist of figures of birds, animals, reptiles, and the faces of men, carved from various kinds of stones, upon the bowls of pipes, upon toys, upon rings, and in distinct and separate figures. We give the opinions of those who have examined them.

> Mr. Squier observes: "Various though not abundant specimens of their skill have been recovered, which in elegance of model, delicacy, and finish, as also in fineness of material, come fully up to the best Peruvian specimens, to which they bear, in many respects, a close resemblance. The bowls of most of the stone pipes are carved in miniature figures of animals, birds, reptiles, etc. All of them are executed with strict fidelity to nature, and with exquisite skill. Not only are the features of the objects faithfully represented, but their peculiarities and habits are in some degree exhibited. . . . The two heads here presented, intended to represent the eagle, are far superior in point of finish, spirit, and truthfulness, to any miniature carvings, ancient or modern, which have fallen under the notice of the authors. The peculiar defiant expression of the king of birds is admirably preserved in the carving, which in this respect, more than any other, displays the skill of the artist."

Traces of cloth with "doubled and twisted fibre" have been found in the mounds; also matting; also shuttle-like tablets, used in weaving. There have also been found numerous musical pipes, with mouth-pieces and stops; lovers' pipes, curiously and delicately carved, reminding us of Bryant's lines—

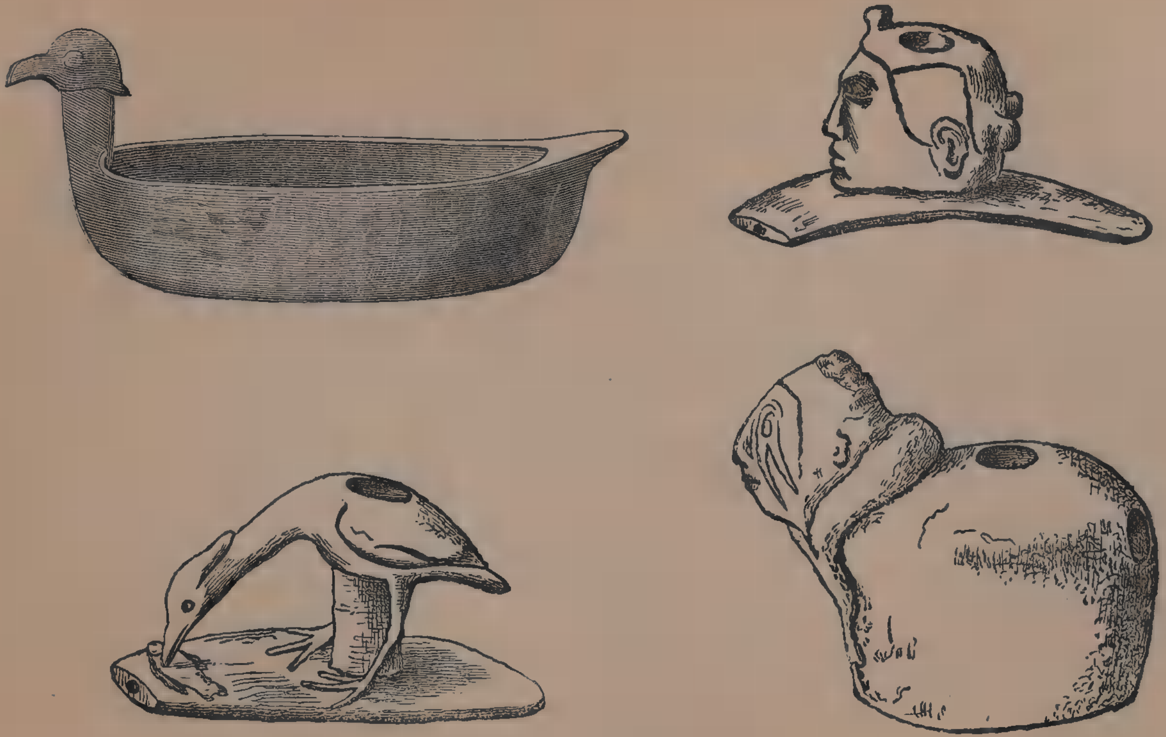

FROM THE MOUNDS OF THE OHIO VALLEY.

"Till twilight came, and lovers walked and wooed
In a forgotten language; and old tunes,
From instruments of unremembered forms,
Gave the soft winds a voice."

There is evidence which goes to prove that the Mound Builders had relations with the people of a semi-tropical region in the direction of Atlantis. Among their sculptures, in Ohio, we find accurate representations of the lamantine, manatee, or sea-cow—found to-day on the shores of Florida, Brazil, and Central America—and of the toucan, a tropical and almost exclusively South American bird. Sea-shells from the Gulf, pearls from the Atlantic, and obsidian from Mexico, have also been found side by side in their mounds.

The antiquity of their works is now generally conceded. "From the ruins of Nineveh and Babylon," says Mr. Gliddon, "we have bones of at least two thousand five hundred years old; from the pyramids and the catacombs of Egypt both mummied and unmummied crania have been taken, of still higher antiquity, in perfect preservation; nevertheless, the skeletons deposited in our Indian mounds, from the Lakes to the Gulf, are crumbling into dust through age alone."

All the evidence points to the conclusion that civilized or semi-civilized man has dwelt on the western continent from a vast antiquity. Maize, tobacco, quinoa, and the mandico plants have been cultivated so long that their wild originals have quite disappeared.

"The only species of palm cultivated by the South American Indians, that known as the *Gulielma speciosa*, has lost through that culture its original nut-like seed, and is dependent on the hands of its cultivators for its life. Alluding to the above-named plants Dr. Brinton ("Myths of the New World," p. 37) remarks, 'Several are sure to perish unless fostered by human care. What numberless ages does this suggest? How many centuries elapsed ere man thought of cultivating Indian corn? How many more ere it had spread over nearly a hundred degrees of latitude and lost all resemblance to its original form?'

In the animal kingdom certain animals were domesticated by the aborigines from so remote a period that scarcely any of their species, as in the case of the lama of Peru, were to be found in a state of unrestrained freedom at the advent of the Spaniards." (Short's "North Americans of Antiquity," p. 11.)

The most ancient remains of man found in Europe are distinguished by a flattening of the tibia; and this peculiarity is found to be present in an exaggerated form in some of the American mounds. This also points to a high antiquity.

"None of the works, mounds, or enclosures are found on the lowest formed of the river terraces which mark the subsidence of the streams, and as there is no good reason why their builders should have avoided erecting them on that terrace while they raised them promiscuously on all the others, it follows, not unreasonably, that this terrace has been formed since the works were erected." (Baldwin's "Ancient America," p. 47.)

We have given some illustrations showing the similarity between the works of the Mound Builders and those of the Stone and Bronze Age in Europe. (See pp. 251, 260, 261, 262, 265, 266, *ante.*)

The Mound Builders retreated southward toward Mexico, and probably arrived there some time between A.D. 29 and A.D. 231, under the name of Nahuas. They called the region they left in the Mississippi Valley "Hue Hue Tlapalan"—*the old, old red land*—in allusion, probably, to the red-clay soil of part of the country.

In the mounds we find many works of copper but none of bronze. This may indicate one of two things: either the colonies which settled the Mississippi Valley may have left Atlantis prior to the discovery of the art of manufacturing bronze, by mixing one part of tin with nine parts of copper, or, which is more probable, the manufactures of the Mound Builders may have been made on the spot; and as they had no tin within their territory they used copper alone, except, it may be, for such tools as were needed to carve stone, and these, perhaps, were hardened with tin. It is known that the Mexicans possessed the art of manufacturing true bronze; and the intercourse which evidently existed between Mexico and the Mississippi Valley, as proved by the presence of implements of obsidian in the mounds of Ohio, renders it probable that the same commerce which brought them obsidian brought them also small quantities of tin, or tin-hardened copper implements necessary for their sculptures.

The proofs, then, of the connection of the Mound Builders with Atlantis are:

1. Their race identity with the nations of Central America who possessed Flood legends, and whose traditions all point to an eastern, over-sea origin; while the many evidences of their race identity with the ancient Peruvians indicate that they were part of one great movement of the human race, extending from the Andes to Lake Superior, and, as I believe, from Atlantis to India.

2. The similarity of their civilization, and their works of stone and bronze, with the civilization of the Bronze Age in Europe.

3. The presence of great truncated mounds, kindred to the pyramids of Central America, Mexico, Egypt, and India.

4. The representation of tropical animals, which point to an intercourse with the regions around the Gulf of Mexico, where the Atlanteans were colonized.

5. The fact that the settlements of the Mound Builders were confined to the valley of the Mississippi, and were apparently densest at those points where a population advancing up that stream would first reach high, healthy, and fertile lands.

6. The hostile nations which attacked them came from the north; and when the Mound Builders could no longer hold the country, or when Atlantis sunk in the sea, they retreated in the direction whence they came, and fell back upon their kindred races in Central America, as the Roman troops in

Gaul and Britain drew southward upon the destruction of Rome.

7. The Natchez Indians, who are supposed to have descended from the Mound Builders, kept a perpetual fire burning before an altar, watched by old men who were a sort of priesthood, as in Europe.

8. If the tablet said to have been found in a mound near Davenport, Iowa, is genuine, which appears probable, the Mound Builders must either have possessed an alphabet, or have held intercourse with some people who did. (See "North Americans of Antiquity," p. 38.) This singular relic exhibits what appears to be a sacrificial mound with a fire upon it; over it are the sun, moon, and stars, and above these a mass of hieroglyphics which bear some resemblance to the letters of European alphabets, and especially to that unknown alphabet which appears upon the inscribed bronze celt found near Rome. (See p. 258 of this work.) For instance, one of the letters on the celt is this, ; on the Davenport tablet we find this sign, 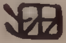; on the celt we have ; on the tablet, ; on the celt we have ; on the tablet, .

CHAPTER IV.

THE IBERIAN COLONIES OF ATLANTIS.

AT the farthest point in the past to which human knowledge extends a race called Iberian inhabited the entire peninsula of Spain, from the Mediterranean to the Pyrenees. They also extended over the southern part of Gaul as far as the Rhone.

"It is thought that the Iberians from Atlantis and the north-west part of Africa," says Winchell, "settled in the south-west of Europe at a period earlier than the settlement of the Egyptians in the north-east of Africa. The Iberians spread themselves over Spain, Gaul, and the British Islands as early as 4000 or 5000 B.C. . . . The fourth dynasty (of the Egyptians), according to Brugsch, dates from about 3500 B.C. At this time the Iberians had become sufficiently powerful to attempt the conquest of the known world." ("Preadamites," p. 443.)

"The Libyan-Amazons of Diodorus—that is to say, the Libyans of the Iberian race—must be identified with the Libyans with brown and grizzly skin, of whom Brugsch has already pointed out the representations figured on the Egyptian monuments of the fourth dynasty." (*Ibid.*)

The Iberians, known as Sicanes, colonized Sicily in the ancient days. They were the original settlers in Italy and Sardinia. They are probably the source of the dark-haired stock in Norway and Sweden. Bodichon claims that the Iberians embraced the Ligurians, Cantabrians, Asturians, and Aquitanians. Strabo says, speaking of the Turduli and Turdetani, "they are the most cultivated of all the Iberians; they employ the art of writing, and have written books containing memorials of ancient times, and also poems and laws set in verse, for which they claim an antiquity of six thousand years." (Strabo, lib. iii., p. 139.)

The Iberians are represented to-day by the Basques.

The Basques are "of middle size, compactly built, robust and agile, *of a darker complexion than the Spaniards*, with gray eyes and black hair. They are simple but proud, impetuous, merry, and hospitable. The women are beautiful, skilful in performing men's work, and remarkable for their vivacity and grace. The Basques are much attached to dancing, and are very fond of the music of the bagpipe." ("New American Cyclopædia," art. *Basques.*)

"According to Paul Broca their language stands quite alone, or has mere *analogies with the American type.* Of all Europeans, we must provisionally hold the Basques to be the oldest inhabitants of our quarter of the world." (Peschel, "Races of Men," p. 501.)

The Basque language—the Euscara—"has some common traits with the Magyar, Osmanli, and other dialects of the Altai family, as, for instance, with the Finnic on the old continent, as well as the *Algonquin-Lenape language and some others in America.*" ("New American Cyclopædia," art. *Basques.*)

Duponceau says of the Basque tongue:

"This language, preserved in a corner of Europe by a few thousand mountaineers, is the sole remaining fragment of, perhaps, a hundred dialects constructed on the same plan, which probably existed and were universally spoken at a remote period in that quarter of the world. Like the bones of the mammoth, it remains a monument of the destruction produced by a succession of ages. It stands single and alone of its kind, surrounded by idioms that have no affinity with it."

We have seen them settling, in the earliest ages, in Ireland. They also formed the base of the dark-haired population of England and Scotland. They seem to have race affinities with the Berbers, on the Mediterranean coast of Africa.

Dr. Bodichon, for fifteen years a surgeon in Algiers, says:

> "Persons who have inhabited Brittany, and then go to Algeria, are struck with the resemblance between the ancient Armoricans (the *Brètons*) and the Cabyles (of Algiers). In fact, the moral and physical character is identical. The Breton of pure blood has a long head, light yellow complexion of bistre tinge, eyes black or brown, stature short, and the black hair of the Cabyle. Like him, he instinctively hates strangers; in both are the same perverseness and obstinacy, same endurance of fatigue, same love of independence, same inflexion of the voice, same expression of feelings. Listen to a Cabyle speaking his native tongue, and you will think you hear a Breton talking Celtic."

The Bretons, he tells us, form a strong contrast to the people around them, who are "Celts of tall stature, with blue eyes, white skins, and blond hair: they are communicative, impetuous, versatile; they pass rapidly from courage to despair. The Bretons are entirely different: they are taciturn, hold strongly to their ideas and usages, are persevering and melancholic; in a word, both in *morale* and *physique* they present the type of a southern race—of the *Atlanteans.*"

By Atlanteans Dr. Bodichon refers to the inhabitants of the Barbary States—that being one of the names by which they were known to the Greeks and Romans. He adds:

> "The Atlanteans, among the ancients, passed for the favorite children of Neptune; they made known the worship of this god to other nations—to the Egyptians, for example. In other words, the Atlanteans were the first known navigators. Like all navigators, they must have planted colonies at a distance. The Bretons, in our opinion, sprung from one of them."

Neptune was Poseidon, according to Plato, founder of Atlantis.

I could multiply proofs of the close relationship between the people of the Bronze Age of Europe and the ancient inhabitants of Northern Africa, which should be read remembering that "connecting ridge" which, according to the deep-sea soundings, united Africa and Atlantis.

CHAPTER V.

THE PERUVIAN COLONY.

If we look at the map of Atlantis, as revealed by the deep-sea soundings, we will find that it approaches at one point, by its connecting ridge, quite closely to the shore of South America, above the mouth of the Amazon, and that probably it was originally connected with it.

If the population of Atlantis expanded westwardly, it naturally found its way in its ships up the magnificent valley of the Amazon and its tributaries; and, passing by the low and fever-stricken lands of Brazil, it rested not until it had reached the high, fertile, beautiful, and healthful regions of Bolivia, from which it would eventually cross the mountains into Peru.

Here it would establish its outlying colonies at the terminus of its western line of advance, arrested only by the Pacific Ocean, precisely as we have seen it advancing up the valley of the Mississippi, and carrying on its mining operations on the shores of Lake Superior; precisely as we have seen it going eastward up the Mediterranean, past the Dardanelles, and founding Aryan, Hamitic, and probably Turanian colonies on the farther shores of the Black Sea and on the Caspian. This is the universal empire over which, the Hindoo books tell us, Deva Nahusha was ruler; this was "the great and aggressive empire" to which Plato alludes; this was the mighty kingdom, embracing the whole of the then known world, from which the Greeks obtained their conception of the universal father of all men in King Zeus. And in this universal empire Señor Lopez must find an explanation of the similarity which, as we shall show, exists between the speech of the South American Pacific coast on the one hand, and the speech of Gaul, Ireland, England, Italy, Greece, Bactria, and Hindostan on the other.

Montesino tells us that at some time near the date of the Deluge, in other words, in the highest antiquity, America was invaded by a people with four leaders, named Ayar-manco-topa, Ayar-chaki, Ayar-aucca, and Ayar-uyssu. "Ayar," says Señor Lopez, "is the Sanscrit *Ajar*, or *aje*, and means primitive chief; and *manco*, *chaki*, *aucca*, and *uyssu*, mean believers, wanderers, soldiers, husbandmen. We have here a tradition of castes like that preserved in the four tribal names of Athens." The laboring class (naturally enough in a new colony) obtained the supremacy, and its leader was named Pirhua-manco, revealer of *Pir*, light (πῦρ, Umbrian *pir*). Do the laws which control the changes of language, by which a labial succeeds a labial, indicate that the Mero or Merou of Theopompus, the name of Atlantis, was carried by the colonists of Atlantis to South America (as the name of old York was transplanted in a later age to New York), and became in time Pérou or Peru? Was not the Nubian "Island of Merou," with its pyramids built by "red men," a similar transplantation? And when the Hindoo priest points to his sacred emblem with five projecting points upon it, and tells us that they typify "Mero and the four quarters of the world," does he not refer to Atlantis and its ancient universal empire?

Manco, in the names of the Peruvian colonists, it has been urged, was the same as Mannus, Manu, and the Santhal Maniko. It reminds us of Menes, Minos, etc., who are found at the beginning of so many of the Old World traditions.

The Quichuas—this invading people—were originally a fair-skinned race, with blue eyes and light and even auburn hair; they had regular features, large heads, and large bodies. Their descendants are to this day an olive-skinned people, much lighter in color than the Indian tribes subjugated by them.

They were a great race. Peru, as it was known to the Spaniards, held very much the same relation to the ancient Quichua civilization as England in the sixteenth century held to the civilization of the empire of the Cæsars. The Incas were simply an offshoot, who, descending from the mountains, subdued the rude races of the sea-coast, and imposed their ancient civilization upon them.

The Quichua nation extended at one time over a region of country more than two thousand miles long. This whole region, when the Spaniards arrived, " was a populous and prosperous empire, complete in its civil organization, supported by an efficient system of industry, and presenting a notable development of some of the more important arts of civilized life." (Baldwin's "Ancient America," p. 222.)

The companions of Pizarro found everywhere the evidences of a civilization of vast antiquity. Cieça de Leon mentions "great edifices" that were in ruins at Tiahuanaca, " an artificial hill raised on a groundwork of stone," and " two stone idols, apparently made by skilful artificers," ten or twelve feet high, clothed in long robes. " In this place, also," says De Leon, " there are stones so large and so overgrown that our wonder is excited, it being incomprehensible how the power of man could have placed them where we see them. They are variously wrought, and some of them, having the form of men, must have been idols. Near the walls are many caves and excavations under the earth; but in another place, farther west, are other and greater monuments, such as large gate-ways with hinges, platforms, and porches, each made of a single stone. It surprised me to see these enormous gate-ways, made of great masses of stone, some of which were thirty feet long, fifteen high, and six thick."

The capital of the Chimus of Northern Peru at Gran-Chimu was conquered by the Incas after a long and bloody struggle, and the capital was given up to barbaric ravage and spoliation. " But its remains exist to-day, the marvel of the Southern Continent, *covering not less than twenty square miles.* Tombs, temples, and palaces arise on every hand, ruined but still traceable. Immense pyramidal structures, some of them *half a mile in circuit;* vast areas shut in by massive walls, each containing its water-tank, its shops, municipal edifices, and the dwellings of its inhabitants, and each a branch of a larger organization; prisons, furnaces for smelting metals, and almost every concomitant of civilization, existed in the ancient Chimu capital. One of the great pyramids, called the "Temple of the Sun," is 812 feet long by 470 wide, and 150 high. These vast structures have been ruined for centuries, but still the work of excavation is going on.

One of the centres of the ancient Quichua civilization was around Lake Titicaca. The buildings here, as throughout Peru, were all constructed of hewn stone, and had doors and windows with posts, sills, and thresholds of stone.

At Cuelap, in Northern Peru, remarkable ruins were found. "They consist of a wall of wrought stones 3600 feet long, 560 broad, and 150 high, constituting a solid mass with a level summit. On this mass was another 600 feet long, 500 broad, and 150 high," making *an aggregate height of three hundred feet!* In it were rooms and cells which were used as tombs.

Very ancient ruins, showing remains of large and remarkable edifices, were found near Huamanga, and described by Cieça de Leon. The native traditions said this city was built "by *bearded white men*, who came there long before the time of the Incas, and established a settlement."

"The Peruvians made large use of aqueducts, which they built with notable skill, using hewn stones and cement, and making them very substantial." One extended four hundred and fifty miles across sierras and over rivers. Think of a stone aqueduct reaching from the city of New York to the State of North Carolina!

The public roads of the Peruvians were most remarkable; they were built on masonry. One of these roads ran along the mountains through the whole length of the empire, from

Quito to Chili; another, starting from this at Cuzco, went down to the coast, and extended northward to the equator. These roads were from twenty to twenty-five feet wide, were macadamized with pulverized stone mixed with lime and bituminous cement, and were walled in by strong walls "more than a fathom in thickness." In many places these roads were cut for leagues through the rock; great ravines were filled up with solid masonry; rivers were crossed by suspension bridges, used here ages before their introduction into Europe. Says Baldwin, "The builders of our Pacific Railroad, with their superior engineering skill and mechanical appliances, might reasonably shrink from the cost and the difficulties of such a work as this. Extending from one degree north of Quito to Cuzco, and from Cuzco to Chili, *it was quite as long as the two Pacific railroads*, and its wild route among the mountains was far more difficult." Sarmiento, describing it, said, "It seems to me that if the emperor (Charles V.) should see fit to order the construction of another road like that which leads from Quito to Cuzco, or that which from Cuzco goes toward Chili, I certainly think he would not be able to make it, with all his power." Humboldt said, "This road was marvellous; none of the Roman roads I had seen in Italy, in the south of France, or in Spain, appeared to me more imposing than this work of the ancient Peruvians."

Along these great roads caravansaries were established for the accommodation of travellers.

These roads were ancient in the time of the Incas. They were the work of the white, auburn-haired, bearded men from Atlantis, thousands of years before the time of the Incas. When Huayna Capac marched his army over the main road to invade Quito, it was so old and decayed "that he found great difficulties in the passage," and he immediately ordered the necessary reconstructions.

It is not necessary, in a work of this kind, to give a detailed description of the arts and civilization of the Peruvians. They were simply marvellous. Their works in cotton and wool exceeded in fineness anything known in Europe at that time. They had carried irrigation, agriculture, and the cutting of gems to a point equal to that of the Old World. Their accumulations of the precious metals exceeded anything previously known in the history of the world. In the course of twenty-five years after the Conquest the Spaniards sent from Peru to Spain *more than eight hundred millions of dollars of gold*, nearly all of it taken from the Peruvians as "booty." In one of their palaces "they had an artificial garden, the soil of which was made of small pieces of fine gold, and this was artificially planted with different kinds of maize, which were of gold, their stems, leaves, and ears. Besides this, they had more than twenty sheep (llamas) with their lambs, attended by shepherds, all made of gold." In a description of one lot of golden articles, sent to Spain in 1534 by Pizarro, there is mention of "four llamas, ten statues of women of full size, and a cistern of gold, so curious that it excited the wonder of all."

Can any one read these details and declare Plato's description of Atlantis to be fabulous, simply because he tells us of the enormous quantities of gold and silver possessed by the people? Atlantis was the older country, the parent country, the more civilized country; and, doubtless, like the Peruvians, its people regarded the precious metals as sacred to their gods; and they had been accumulating them from all parts of the world for countless ages. If the story of Plato is true, there now lies beneath the waters of the Atlantic, covered, doubtless, by hundreds of feet of volcanic débris, an amount of gold and silver exceeding many times that brought to Europe from Peru, Mexico, and Central America since the time of Columbus; a treasure which, if brought to light, would revolutionize the financial values of the world.

I have already shown, in the chapter upon the similarities between the civilizations of the Old and New Worlds, some of the remarkable coincidences which existed between the Peruvians and the ancient European races; I will again briefly refer to a few of them:

1. They worshipped the sun, moon, and planets.

2. They believed in the immortality of the soul.

3. They believed in the resurrection of the body, and accordingly embalmed their dead.

4. The priest examined the entrails of the animals offered in sacrifice, and, like the Roman augurs, divined the future from their appearance.

5. They had an order of women vowed to celibacy—vestal virgins—nuns; and a violation of their vow was punished, in both continents, by their being buried alive.

6. They divided the year into twelve months.

7. Their enumeration was by tens; the people were divided into decades and hundreds, like the Anglo-Saxons; and the whole nation into bodies of 500, 1000, and 10,000, with a governor over each.

8. They possessed castes; and the trade of the father descended to the son, as in India.

9. They had bards and minstrels, who sung at the great festivals.

10. Their weapons were the same as those of the Old World, and made after the same pattern.

11. They drank toasts and invoked blessings.

12. They built triumphal arches for their returning heroes, and strewed the road before them with leaves and flowers.

13. They used sedan-chairs.

14. They regarded agriculture as the principal interest of the nation, and held great agricultural fairs and festivals for the interchange of the productions of the farmers.

15. The king opened the agricultural season by a great celebration, and, like the kings of Egypt, he put his hand to the plough, and ploughed the first furrow.

16. They had an order of knighthood, in which the candidate knelt before the king; his sandals were put on by a no-

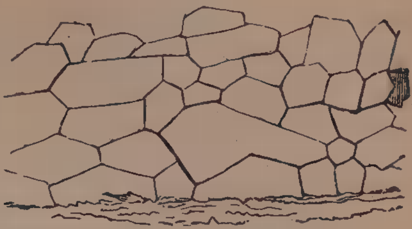

CYCLOPEAN WALL, GREECE.

bleman, very much as the spurs were buckled on the European knight; he was then allowed to use the girdle or sash around the loins, corresponding to the *toga virilis* of the Romans; he was then crowned with flowers. According to Fernandez, the candidates wore white shirts, like the knights of the Middle Ages, with a cross embroidered in front.

17. There was a striking resemblance between the architecture of the Peruvians and that of some of the nations of the Old World. It is enough for me to quote Mr. Ferguson's words, that the coincidence between the buildings of the Incas

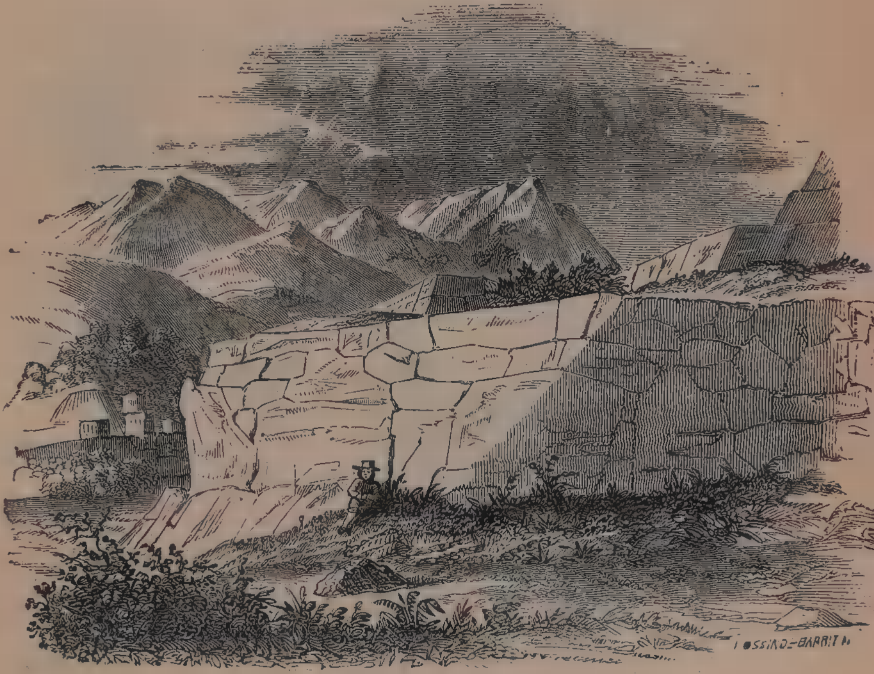

CYCLOPEAN MASONRY, PERU.

and the Cyclopean remains attributed to the Pelasgians in Italy and Greece, "is the most remarkable in the history of architecture."

The illustrations on page 397 strikingly confirm Mr. Ferguson's views.

"The sloping jambs, the window cornice, the polygonal masonry, and other forms so closely resemble what is found in the old Pelasgic cities of Greece and Italy, that it is difficult to resist the conclusion that there may be some relation between them."

Even the mode of decorating their palaces and temples finds a parallel in the Old World. A recent writer says:

"We may end by observing, what seems to have escaped Señor Lopez, that the *interior* of an Inca palace, with its walls covered with gold, as described by Spaniards, with its artificial golden flowers and golden beasts, must have been exactly like the interior of the house of Alkinous or Menelaus—

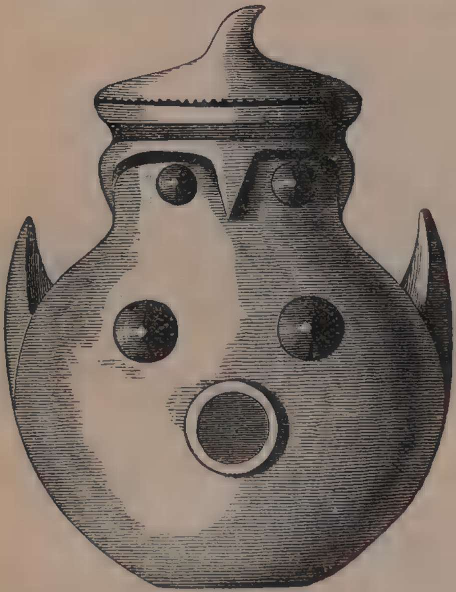

OWL-HEADED VASE, TROY.

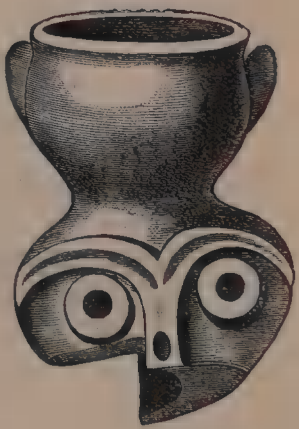

OWL-HEADED VASE, PERU.

"'The doors were framed of gold,
Where underneath the brazen floor doth glass
Silver pilasters, which with grace uphold
Lintel of silver framed; the ring was burnished gold,
And dogs on each side of the door there stand,
Silver and golden.'"

"I can personally testify" (says Winchell, "Preadamites," p. 387) "that a study of ancient Peruvian pottery has constantly reminded me of forms with which we are familiar in Egyptian archæology."

Dr. Schliemann, in his excavations of the ruins of Troy, found a number of what he calls "owl-headed idols" and vases. I give specimens on page 398 and page 400.

In Peru we find vases with very much the same style of face.

I might pursue those parallels much farther; but it seems to me that these extraordinary coincidences must have arisen either from identity of origin or long-continued ancient intercourse. There can be little doubt that a fair-skinned, light-haired, bearded race, holding the religion which Plato says prevailed in Atlantis, carried an Atlantean civilization at an early day up the valley of the Amazon to the heights of Bolivia and Peru, precisely as a similar emigration of Aryans went westward to the shores of the Mediterranean and Caspian, and it is very likely that these diverse migrations habitually spoke the same language.

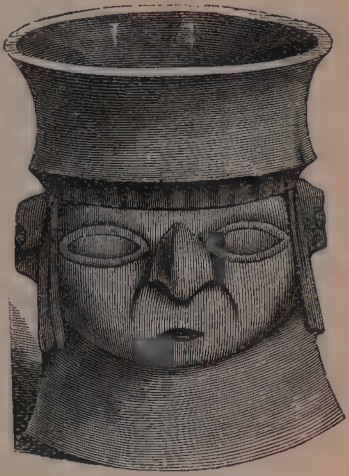

OWL-HEADED VASE, PERU.

Señor Vincente Lopez, a Spanish gentleman of Montevideo, in 1872 published a work entitled "Les Races Aryennes in Pérou," in which he attempts to prove that the great Quichua language, which the Incas imposed on their subjects over a vast extent of territory, and which is still a living tongue in Peru and Bolivia, is really a branch of the great Aryan or Indo-European speech. I quote Andrew Lang's summary of the proofs on this point:

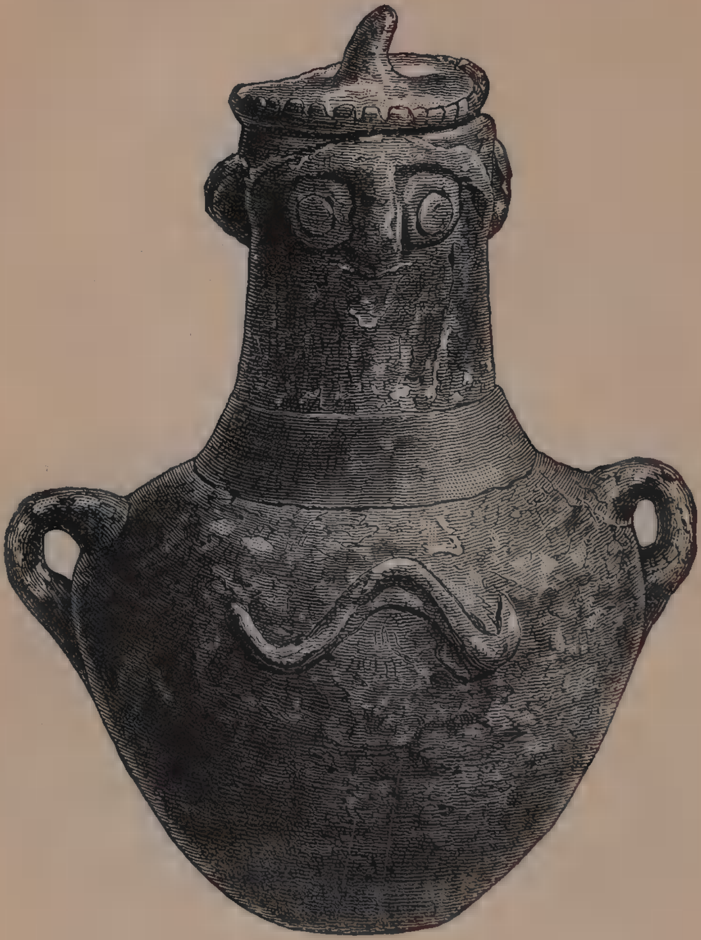

OWL-HEADED VASE, TROY.

"Señor Lopez's view, that the Peruvians were Aryans who left the parent stock long before the Teutonic or Hellenic races entered Europe, is supported by arguments drawn from language, from the traces of institutions, from religious beliefs, from legendary records, and artistic remains. The evidence from language is treated scientifically, and not as a kind of ingenious guessing. Señor Lopez first combats the idea that the living dialect of Peru is barbarous and fluctuating. It is not one of the casual and shifting forms of speech produced by nomad races. To which of the stages of language does this belong—the agglutinative, in which one root is fastened on to another, and a word is formed in which the constitutive elements are obviously distinct, or the inflexional, where the auxiliary roots get worn down and are only distinguishable by the philologist? As all known Aryan tongues are inflexional, Señor Lopez may appear to contradict himself when he says that Quichua is an *agglutinative Aryan language.* But he quotes Mr. Max Müller's opinion that there must have been a time when the germs of Aryan tongues had not yet reached the inflexional stage, and shows that while the form of Quichua is agglutinative, as in Turanian, the *roots of words* are Aryan. If this be so, Quichua may be a linguistic missing link.

"When we first look at Quichua, with its multitude of words beginning with *hu*, and its great preponderance of *q*'*s*, it seems almost as odd as Mexican. But many of these forms are due to a scanty alphabet, and really express familiar sounds; and many, again, result from the casual spelling of the Spaniards. We must now examine some of the forms which Aryan roots are supposed to take in Quichua. In the first place, Quichua abhors the shock of two consonants. Thus, a word like πλέω in Greek would be unpleasant to the Peruvian's ear, and he says *pillui*, 'I sail.' The *plu*, again, in *pluma*, a feather, is said to be found in *pillu*, 'to fly.' Quichua has no *v*, any more than Greek has, and just as the Greeks had to spell Roman words beginning with *V* with *Ou*, like *Valerius*—Οὐαλέριος—so, where Sanscrit has *v*, Quichua has sometimes *hu*. Here is a list of words in *hu :*

QUICHUA.	SANSCRIT.
Huakia, to call.	*Vacc*, to speak.
Huasi, a house.	*Vas*, to inhabit.
Huayra, *air*, *αὔρα*.	*Vâ*, to breathe.
Huasa, the back.	*Vas*, to be able (*pouvoir*).

"There is a Sanscrit root, *kr*, to act, to do: this root is found in more than three hundred names of peoples and places in

Southern America. Thus there are the Caribs, whose name may have the same origin as that of our old friends the Carians, and mean the Braves, and their land the home of the Braves, like Kaleva-la, in Finnish. The same root gives *kara*, the hand, the Greek χείρ, and *kkalli*, brave, which a person of fancy may connect with καλός. Again, Quichua has an 'alpha privative'—thus *A-stani* means 'I change a thing's place;' for *ni* or *mi* is the first person singular, and, added to the root of a verb, is the sign of the first person of the present indicative. For instance, *can* means being, and *Can-mi*, or *Cani*, is, 'I am.' In the same way *Munanmi*, or *Munani*, is 'I love,' and *Apanmi*, or *Apani*, 'I carry.' So Lord Strangford was wrong when he supposed that the last verb in *mi* lived with the last patriot in Lithuania. Peru has stores of a grammatical form which has happily perished in Europe. It is impossible to do more than refer to the supposed Aryan roots contained in the glossary, but it may be noticed that the future of the Quichuan verb is formed in *s*—I love, *Munani;* I shall love, *Munasa*—and that the affixes denoting cases in the noun are curiously like the Greek prepositions."

The resemblance between the Quichua and Mandan words for I or me—*mi*—will here be observed.

Very recently Dr. Rudolf Falb has announced (*Neue Freie Presse*, of Vienna) that he has discovered that the relation of the Quichua and Aimara languages to the Aryan and Semitic tongues is very close; that, in fact, they "exhibit the most astounding affinities with the Semitic tongue, and particularly the Arabic, in which tongue Dr. Falb has been skilled from his boyhood. Following up the lines of this discovery, Dr. Falb has found (1) a connecting link with the Aryan roots, and (2) has ultimately arrived face to face with the surprising revelation that "the Semitic roots are universally Aryan." The common stems of all the variants are found in their purest condition in Quichua and Aimara, from which fact Dr. Falb derives the conclusion that the high plains of Peru and Bolivia must be regarded as the point of exit of the present human race.

[Since the above was written I have received a letter from Dr. Falb, dated Leipsic, April 5th, 1881. Scholars will be glad to learn that Dr. Falb's great work on the relationship of the Aryan and Semitic languages to the Quichua and Aimara tongues will be published in a year or two; the manuscript contains over two thousand pages, and Dr. Falb has devoted to it ten years of study. A work from such a source, upon so curious and important a subject, will be looked for with great interest.]

But it is impossible that the Quichuas and Aimaras could have passed across the wide Atlantic to Europe if there had been no stepping-stone in the shape of Atlantis with its bridge-like ridges connecting the two continents.

It is, however, more reasonable to suppose that the Quichuas and Aimaras were a race of emigrants from Plato's island than to think that Atlantis was populated from South America. The very traditions to which we have referred as existing among the Peruvians, that the civilized race were white and bearded, and that they entered or invaded the country, would show that civilization did not originate in Peru, but was a transplantation from abroad, and only in the direction of Atlantis can we look for a white and bearded race.

In fact, kindred races, with the same arts, and speaking the same tongue in an early age of the world, separated in Atlantis and went east and west—the one to repeat the civilization of the mother-country along the shores of the Mediterranean Sea, which, like a great river, may be said to flow out from the Black Sea, with the Nile as one of its tributaries, and along the shores of the Red Sea and the Persian Gulf; while the other emigration advanced up the Amazon, and created mighty nations upon its head-waters in the valleys of the Andes and on the shores of the Pacific.

CHAPTER VI.

THE AFRICAN COLONIES.

AFRICA, like Europe and America, evidences a commingling of different stocks: the blacks are not all black, nor all woolly-haired; the Africans pass through all shades, from that of the light Berber, no darker than the Spaniard, to the deep black of the Iolofs, between Senegal and Gambia.

The traces of red men or copper-colored races are found in many parts of the continent. Prichard divides the true negroes into four classes; his second class is thus described:

> "2. Other tribes have forms and features like the European; their complexion is black, or a *deep olive*, or a *copper color* approaching to black, while their hair, though often crisp and frizzled, is not in the least woolly. Such are the Bishari and Danekil and Hazorta, and the darkest of the Abyssinians.
>
> "The complexion and hair of the Abyssinians vary very much, their complexion ranging from almost white to dark brown or black, and their hair from straight to crisp, frizzled, and almost woolly." (Nott and Gliddon, "Types of Mankind," p. 194.)
>
> "Some of the Nubians are copper-colored or black, with a tinge of red." (*Ibid.*, p. 198.)

Speaking of the Barbary States, these authors further say (*Ibid.*, p. 204):

> "On the northern coast of Africa, between the Mediterranean and the Great Desert, including Morocco, Algiers, Tunis, Tripoli, and Benzazi, there is a continuous system of highlands, which have been included under the general term *Atlas —anciently Atlantis*, now the Barbary States. . . . Throughout

Barbary we encounter a peculiar group of races, subdivided into many tribes of various shades, now spread over a vast area, but which formerly had its principal and perhaps *aboriginal abode along the mountain slopes of Atlas*. . . . The real name of the Berbers is *Mazirgh*, with the article prefixed or suffixed—T-amazirgh or Amazirgh-T—meaning *free*, *dominant*, or '*noble* race.' . . . We have every reason to believe the Berbers existed in the remotest times, with all their essential moral and physical peculiarities. . . . They existed in the time of Menes in the same condition in which they were discovered by Phœnician navigators previously to the foundation of Carthage. They are an indomitable, nomadic people, who, since the introduction of camels, have penetrated in considerable numbers into the Desert, and even as far as Nigritia. . . . *Some of these clans are white*, others black, with woolly hair."

Speaking of the Barbary Moors, Prichard says:

"Their figure and stature are nearly the same as those of the southern Europeans, and their complexion, if darker, is only so in proportion to the higher temperature of the country. It displays great varieties."

Jackson says:

"The men of Temsena and Showiah are of a strong, robust make, *and of a copper color;* the women are beautiful. The women of Fez are fair as the Europeans, but hair and eyes always dark. The women of Mequinas are very beautiful, and *have the red-and-white complexion of English women*."

Spix and Martius, the German travellers, depict the Moors as follows:

"A high forehead, an oval countenance, large, speaking, black eyes, shaded by arched and strong eyebrows, a thin, rather long, but not too pointed nose, rather broad lips, meeting in an acute angle, *brownish-yellow complexion*, thick, smooth, and black hair, and a stature greater than the middle height."

Hodgson states:

"The Tuarycks are a *white* people, of the Berber race; the Mozabiaks are a *remarkably white* people, and mixed with the Bedouin Arabs. The Wadreagans and Wurgelans are of a *dark bronze*, with woolly hair."

The Foolahs, Fulbe (sing. *Pullo*), Fellani, or Fellatah, are a people of West and Central Africa. It is the opinion of modern travellers that the Foolahs are destined to become the dominant people of Negro-land. In language, appearance, and history they present striking differences from the neighboring tribes, to whom they are superior in intelligence, but inferior, according to Garth, in physical development. Golbery describes them as "robust and courageous, of a *reddish*-black color, with regular features, hair longer and less woolly than that of the common negroes, and high mental capacity." Dr. Barth found great local differences in their physical characteristics, as Bowen describes the Foolahs of Bomba as being some black, some almost white, and many of a mulatto color, varying from dark to very bright. Their features and skulls were cast in the European mould. They have a tradition that their ancestors were whites, and certain tribes call themselves white men. They came from Timbuctoo, which lies to the north of their present location.

The Nubians and Foolahs are classed as Mediterraneans. They are not black, but yellowish-brown, or *red*-brown. The hair is not woolly but curly, and sometimes quite straight; it is either dark-brown or black, with a fuller growth of beard than the negroes. The oval face gives them a Mediterranean type. Their noses are prominent, their lips not puffy, and their languages have no connection with the tongues of the negroes proper. ("American Cyclopædia," art. *Ethnology*, p. 759.)

"The Cromlechs (*dolmens*) of Algeria" was the subject of an address made by General Faidherbe at the Brussels International Congress. He considers these structures to be simply sepulchral monuments, and, after examining five or six thousand of them, maintains that the dolmens of Africa and of Europe were all constructed *by the same race*, during their emigration from the shores of the Baltic to the southern coast of the Mediterranean. The author does not, however, attempt to explain the existence of these monuments in other countries—

Hindostan, for instance, and America. "In Africa," he says, "cromlechs are called tombs of the idolaters"—the *idolaters* being neither Romans, nor Christians, nor Phœnicians, but some antique race. He regards the Berbers as the descendants of the primitive dolmen-builders. Certain Egyptian monuments tell of invasions of Lower Egypt one thousand five hundred years before our era by blond tribes from the West. The bones found in the cromlechs are those of a large and dolichocephalous race. General Faidherbe gives the average stature (including the women) at 1.65 or 1.74 metre, while the average stature of French carabineers is only 1.65 metre. He did not find a single brachycephalous skull. The profiles indicated great intelligence. The Egyptian documents already referred to call the invaders Tamahu, which must have come from the invaders' own language, as it is not Egyptian. The Tuaregs of the present day may be regarded as the best representatives of the Tamahus. They are of lofty stature, have blue eyes, and cling to the custom of bearing long swords, to be wielded by both hands. In Soudan, on the banks of the Niger, dwells a negro tribe ruled by a royal family (Masas), who are of rather fair complexion, and claim descent from white men. *Masas* is perhaps the same as *Mashash*, which occurs in the Egyptian documents applied to the Tamahus. The Masas wear the hair in the same fashion as the Tamahus, and General Faidherbe is inclined to think that they too are the descendants of the dolmen-builders.

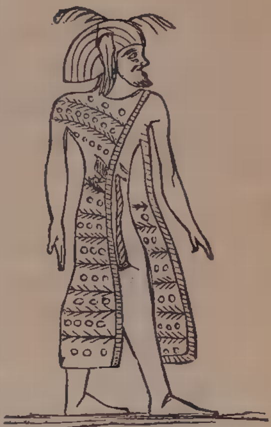

TAMAHU, FROM THE EGYPTIAN MONUMENTS, 1500 B.C.

These people, according to my theory, were colonists from Atlantis—colonists of three different races—white, yellow, and sunburnt or red.

CHAPTER VII.

THE IRISH COLONIES FROM ATLANTIS.

WE have seen that beyond question Spain and France owed a great part of their population to Atlantis. Let us turn now to Ireland.

We would naturally expect, in view of the geographical position of the country, to find Ireland colonized at an early day by the overflowing population of Atlantis. And, in fact, the Irish annals tell us that their island was settled *prior to the Flood.* In their oldest legends an account is given of three Spanish fishermen who were driven by contrary winds on the coast of Ireland before the Deluge. After these came the Formorians, who were led into the country prior to the Deluge by the *Lady Banbha*, or Kesair; her maiden name was h'Erni, or Berba; she was accompanied by fifty maidens and three men—Bith, Ladhra, and Fintain. Ladhra was their conductor, who was the first buried in Hibernia. That ancient book, the "Cin of Drom-Snechta," is quoted in the "Book of Ballymote" as authority for this legend.

The Irish annals speak of the Formorians as a warlike race, who, according to the "Annals of Clonmacnois," "were a sept descended from Cham, the son of Noeh, and lived by pyracie and spoile of other nations, and were in those days *very troublesome to the whole world.*"

Were not these the inhabitants of Atlantis, who, according to Plato, carried their arms to Egypt and Athens, and whose subsequent destruction has been attributed to divine vengeance invoked by their arrogance and oppressions?

The Formorians were from Atlantis. They were called *Fomhoraicc*, *F'omoraig Afraic*, and *Formoragh*, which has been rendered into English as *Formorians*. They possessed ships, and the uniform representation is that they came, as the name *F'omoraig Afraic* indicated, from *Africa*. But in that day Africa did not mean the continent of Africa, as we now understand it. Major Wilford, in the eighth volume of the "Asiatic Researches," has pointed out that Africa comes from *Apar*, *Aphar*, *Apara*, or *Aparica*, terms used to signify "the West," just as we now speak of the Asiatic world as "the East." When, therefore, the Formorians claimed to come from Africa, they simply meant that they came from the West—in other words, from Atlantis—for there was no other country except America west of them.

They possessed Ireland from so early a period that by some of the historians they are spoken of as the aborigines of the country.

The first invasion of Ireland, subsequent to the coming of the Formorians, was led by a chief called Partholan: his people are known in the Irish annals as "Partholan's people." They were also probably Atlanteans. They were from Spain. A British prince, Gulguntius, or Gurmund, encountered off the Hebrides a fleet of thirty ships, filled with men and women, led by one Partholyan, who told him they were from *Spain*, and seeking some place to colonize. The British prince directed him to Ireland. ("De Antiq. et Orig. Cantab.")

Spain in that day was the land of the Iberians, the Basques; that is to say, the Atlanteans.

The Formorians defeated Partholan's people, killed Partholan, and drove the invaders out of the country.

The Formorians were a civilized race; they had "a fleet of sixty ships and a strong army."

The next invader of their dominions was Neimhidh; he captured one of their fortifications, but it was retaken by the Formorians under "Morc." Neimhidh was driven out of the country, and the Atlanteans continued in undisturbed possession of the island for four hundred years more. Then came the Fir-Bolgs. They conquered the whole island, and divided it into five provinces. They held possession of the country for only thirty-seven years, when they were overthrown by the Tuatha-de-Dananns, a people more advanced in civilization; so much so that when their king, Nuadha, lost his hand in battle, "Creidne, the artificer," we are told, "put a silver hand upon him, the fingers of which were capable of motion." This great race ruled the country for one hundred and ninety-seven years: they were overthrown by an immigration from Spain, probably of Basques, or Iberians, or Atlanteans, "the sons of Milidh," or Milesius, who "possessed a large fleet and a strong army." This last invasion took place about the year 1700 B.C.; so that the invasion of Neimhidh must have occurred about the year 2334 B.C.; while we will have to assign a still earlier date for the coming of Partholan's people, and an earlier still for the occupation of the country by the Formorians from the West.

In the Irish historic tales called "Catha; or Battles," as given by the learned O'Curry, a record is preserved of a great battle which was fought between the Tuatha-de-Dananns and the Fir-Bolgs, from which it appears that these two races spoke the same language, and that they were intimately connected with the Formorians. As the armies drew near together the Fir-Bolgs sent out Breas, one of their great chiefs, to reconnoitre the camp of the strangers; the Tuatha-de-Dananns appointed one of their champions, named Sreng, to meet the emissary of the enemy; the two warriors met and talked to one another over the tops of their shields, and each was delighted to find that *the other spoke the same language.* A battle followed, in which Nunda, king of the Fir-Bolgs, was slain; Breas succeeded him; he encountered the hostility of the bards, and was compelled to resign the crown. He went to the court of his father-in-law, Elathe, *a Formorian sea-king or pirate;* not being well received, he repaired to the camp of Balor of the Evil Eye, a *Formorian chief.* The Formorian head-quarters seem to have been in the Hebrides. Breas and Balor collected a vast army and navy and invaded Ireland, but were defeated in a great battle by the Tuatha-de-Danann.

These particulars would show the race-identity of the Fir-Bolgs and Tuatha-de-Danann; and also their intimate connection, if not identity with, the Formorians.

The Tuatha-de-Danann seem to have been a civilized people; besides possessing ships and armies and working in the metals, they had an organized body of surgeons, whose duty it was to attend upon the wounded in battle; and they had also a bardic or Druid class, to preserve the history of the country and the deeds of kings and heroes.

According to the ancient books of Ireland the race known as "Partholan's people," the Nemedians, the Fir-Bolgs, the Tuatha-de-Danann, and the Milesians were all descended from two brothers, sons of Magog, son of Japheth, son of Noah, who escaped from the catastrophe which destroyed his country. Thus all these races were Atlantean. They were connected with the African colonies of Atlantis, the Berbers, and with the Egyptians. The Milesians lived in Egypt: they were expelled thence; they stopped a while in Crete, then in Scythia, then they settled in Africa (See MacGeoghegan's "History of Ireland," p. 57), at a place called Gæthulighe or Getulia, and lived there during eight generations, say two hundred and fifty years; "then they entered Spain, where they built Brigantia, or Briganza, named after their king Breogan: they dwelt in Spain a considerable time. Milesius, a descendant of Breogan, went on an expedition to Egypt, took part in a war against the Ethiopians, married the king's daughter, Scota: he died in Spain, but his people soon after conquered Ireland. On landing on the coast they offered sacrifices to Neptune or Poseidon"—the god of Atlantis. (*Ibid.*, p. 58.)

The Book of Genesis (chap. x.) gives us the descendants of Noah's three sons, Shem, Ham, and Japheth. We are told that the sons of Japheth were Gomer, and Magog, and Madai, and Javan, and Tubal, and Meshech, and Tiras. We are then given the names of the descendants of Gomer and Javan, but not of Magog. Josephus says the sons of Magog were the Scythians. The Irish annals take up the genealogy of Magog's family where the Bible leaves it. The Book of Invasions, the "Cin of Drom-Snechta," claims that these Scythians were the Phœnicians; and we are told that a branch of this family were driven out of Egypt in the time of Moses: "He wandered through Africa for forty-two years, and passed by the lake of Salivœ to the altars of the Philistines, and between Rusicada and the mountains Azure, and he came by the river Monlon, and by the sea to the Pillars of Hercules, and through the Tuscan sea, and he made for Spain, and dwelt there many years, and he increased and multiplied, and his people were multiplied."

From all these facts it appears that the population of Ireland *came from the West*, and not from Asia—that it was one of the many waves of population flowing out from the Island of Atlantis—and herein we find the explanation of that problem which has puzzled the Aryan scholars. As Ireland is farther from the Punjab than Persia, Greece, Rome, or Scandinavia, it would follow that the Celtic wave of migration must have been the earliest sent out from the Sanscrit centre; but it is now asserted by Professor Schleicher and others that the Celtic tongue shows that it separated from the Sanscrit original tongue *later* than the others, and that it is more closely allied to the Latin than any other Aryan tongue. This is entirely inexplicable upon any theory of an Eastern origin of the Indo-European races, but very easily understood if we recognize the Aryan and Celtic migrations as going out about the same time from the Atlantean fountain-head.

There are many points confirmatory of this belief. In the first place, the civilization of the Irish dates back to a vast antiquity. We have seen their annals laying claim to an immigration from the direction of Atlantis prior to the Deluge, with no record that the people of Ireland were subsequently destroyed by the Deluge. From the Formorians, who came before the Deluge, to the Milesians, who came from Spain in the Historic Period, the island was continuously inhabited. This demonstrates (1) that these legends did not come from Christian sources, as the Bible record was understood in the old time to imply a destruction of all who lived before the Flood except Noah and his family; (2) it confirms our view that the Deluge was a local catastrophe, and did not drown the whole human family; (3) that the coming of the Formorians having been before the Deluge, that great cataclysm was of comparatively recent date, to wit, since the settlement of Ireland; and (4) that as the Deluge was a local catastrophe, it must have occurred somewhere not far from Ireland to have come to their knowledge. A rude people could scarcely have heard in that day of a local catastrophe occurring in the heart of Asia.

There are many evidences that the Old World recognized Ireland as possessing a very ancient civilization. In the Sanscrit books it is referred to as Hiranya, the "Island of the Sun," to wit, of sun-worship; in other words, as pre-eminently the centre of that religion which was shared by all the ancient races of Europe, Asia, Africa, and America. It is believed that Ireland was the "Garden of Phœbus" of the Western mythologists.

The Greeks called Ireland the "Sacred Isle" and "Ogygia." "Nor can any one," says Camden, "conceive why they should call it Ogygia, unless, perhaps, from its antiquity; for the Greeks called nothing Ogygia unless what was extremely ancient." We have seen that Ogyges was connected by the Greek legends with a first deluge, and that Ogyges was "a quite mythical personage, lost in the night of ages."

It appears, as another confirmation of the theory of the Atlantis origin of these colonies, that their original religion was sun-worship; this, as was the case in other countries, became subsequently overlaid with idol-worship. In the reign of King Tighernmas the worship of idols was introduced. The priests constituted the Order of Druids. Naturally many analogies have been found to exist between the beliefs and customs of the Druids and the other religions which were drawn from Atlantis. We have seen in the chapter on sun-worship how extensive this form of religion was in the Atlantean days, both in Europe and America.

It would appear probable that the religion of the Druids passed from Ireland to England and France. The metempsychosis or transmigration of souls was one of the articles of their belief long before the time of Pythagoras; it had probably been drawn from the storehouse of Atlantis, whence it passed to the Druids, the Greeks, and the Hindoos. The Druids had a *pontifex maximus* to whom they yielded entire obedience. Here again we see a practice which extended to the Phœnicians, Egyptians, Hindoos, Peruvians, and Mexicans.

The Druids of Gaul and Britain offered human sacrifices, while it is claimed that the Irish Druids did not. This would appear to have been a corrupt after-growth imposed upon the earlier and purer sacrifice of fruits and flowers known in Atlantis, and due in part to greater cruelty and barbarism in their descendants. Hence we find it practised in degenerate ages on both sides of the Atlantic.

The Irish Druidical rites manifested themselves principally in sun-worship. Their chief god was Bel or Baal—the same worshipped by the Phœnicians—the god of the sun. The Irish name for the sun, *Grian*, is, according to Virgil, one of the names of Apollo — another sun-god, Gryneus. Sun-worship continued in Ireland down to the time of St. Patrick, and some of its customs exist among the peasantry of that country to this day. We have seen that among the Peruvians, Romans, and other nations, on a certain day all fires were extinguished throughout the kingdom, and a new fire kindled at the chief temple by the sun's rays, from which the people obtained their fire for the coming year. In Ireland the same practice was found to exist. A piece of land was set apart, where the four provinces met, in the present county of Meath; here, at a palace called Tlachta, the divine fire was kindled. Upon the night of what is now All-Saints-day the Druids assembled at this place to offer sacrifice, and it was established, under heavy penalties, that no fire should be kindled except from this source. On the first of May a convocation of Druids was held in the royal palace of the King of Connaught, and two fires were lit, between which cattle were driven, as a preventive of murrain and other pestilential disorders. This was called Beltinne, or the day of Bel's fire. And unto this day the Irish call the first day of May "Lha-Beul-tinne," which signifies "the day of Bel's fire." The celebration in Ireland of St. John's-eve by watch-fires is a relic of the ancient sun-worship of Atlantis. The practice of driving cattle through the fire continued for a long time, and Kelly mentions in his "Folk-lore" that in Northamptonshire, in England, a calf was sacrificed in one of these fires to "stop the murrain" *during the present century*. Fires are still lighted in England and Scotland as well as Ireland for superstitious purposes; so that the people of Great Britain, it may be said, are still in some sense in the midst of the ancient sun-worship of Atlantis.

We find among the Irish of to-day many Oriental customs. The game of "jacks," or throwing up five pebbles and catching them on the back of the hand, was known in Rome. "The Irish *keen* (caoine), or the lament over the dead, may still be heard in Algeria and Upper Egypt, even as Herodotus heard it chanted by the Libyan women." The same practice existed among the Egyptians, Etruscans, and Romans. The Irish *wakes* are identical with the funeral feasts of the Greeks, Etruscans, and Romans. (Cusack's "History of Ireland," p. 141.) The Irish custom of saying "God bless you!" when one sneezes, is a very ancient practice; it was known to the Romans, and referred, it is said, to a plague in the remote past, whose first symptom was sneezing.

We find many points of resemblance between the customs of the Irish and those of the Hindoo. The practice of the creditor fasting at the door-step of his debtor until he is paid, is known to both countries; the kindly "God save you!" is the same as the Eastern "God be gracious to you, my son!" The reverence for the wren in Ireland and Scotland reminds us of the Oriental and Greek respect for that bird. The practice of pilgrimages, fasting, bodily macerations, and devotion to holy wells and particular places, extends from Ireland to India.

All these things speak of a common origin; this fact has been generally recognized, but it has always been interpreted that the Irish came from the East, and were in fact a migration of Hindoos. There is not the slightest evidence to sustain this theory. The Hindoos have never within the knowledge of man sent out colonies or fleets for exploration; but there is abundant evidence, on the other hand, of migrations from Atlantis eastward. And how could the Sanscrit writings have preserved maps of Ireland, England, and Spain, giving the shape and outline of their coasts, and their very names, and yet have preserved no memory of the expeditions or colonizations by which they acquired that knowledge?

Another proof of our theory is found in "the round-towers" of Ireland. Attempts have been made to show, by Dr. Petrie and others, that these extraordinary structures are of modern origin, and were built by the Christian priests, in which to keep their church-plate. But it is shown that the "Annals of Ulster" mention the destruction of fifty-seven of them by an earthquake in A.D. 448; and Giraldus Cambrensis shows that Lough Neagh was created by an inundation, or sinking of the land, in A.D. 65, and that in his day the fishermen could

"See the round-towers of other days
In the waves beneath them shining."

Moreover, we find Diodorus Siculus, in a well-known passage, referring to Ireland, and describing it as "an island in the ocean over against Gaul, to the north, and not inferior in size to Sicily, the soil of which is so fruitful that they mow there twice in the year." He mentions the skill of their harpers, their sacred groves, *and their singular temples of round form.*

We find similar structures in America, Sardinia, and India. The remains of similar round-towers are very abundant in the Orkneys and Shetlands. "They have been supposed by some," says Sir John Lubbock, "to be Scandinavian, but no similar buildings exist in Norway, Sweden, or Denmark, so that this style of architecture is no doubt anterior to the arrival of the Northmen." I give above a picture of the Burgh or Broch of the little island of Moussa, in the Shetlands. It is circular in form, forty-one feet in height, open at the top; the central

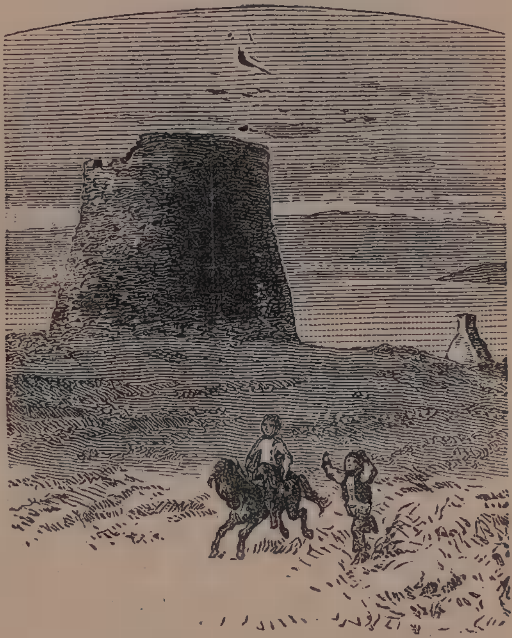

THE BURGH OF MOUSSA, IN THE SHETLANDS.

space is twenty feet in diameter, the walls about fourteen feet thick at the base, and eight feet at the top. They contain a staircase, which leads to the top of the building. Similar structures are found in the Island of Sardinia.

In New Mexico and Colorado the remains of round-towers are very abundant. The illustration below represents one of these in the valley of the Mancos, in the south-western corner of Colorado. A model of it is to be found in the Smithsonian collection at Washington. The tower stands at present, in its ruined condition, twenty feet high. It will be seen that it resembles the towers of Ireland, not only in its circular form but also in the fact that its door-way is situated at some distance from the ground.

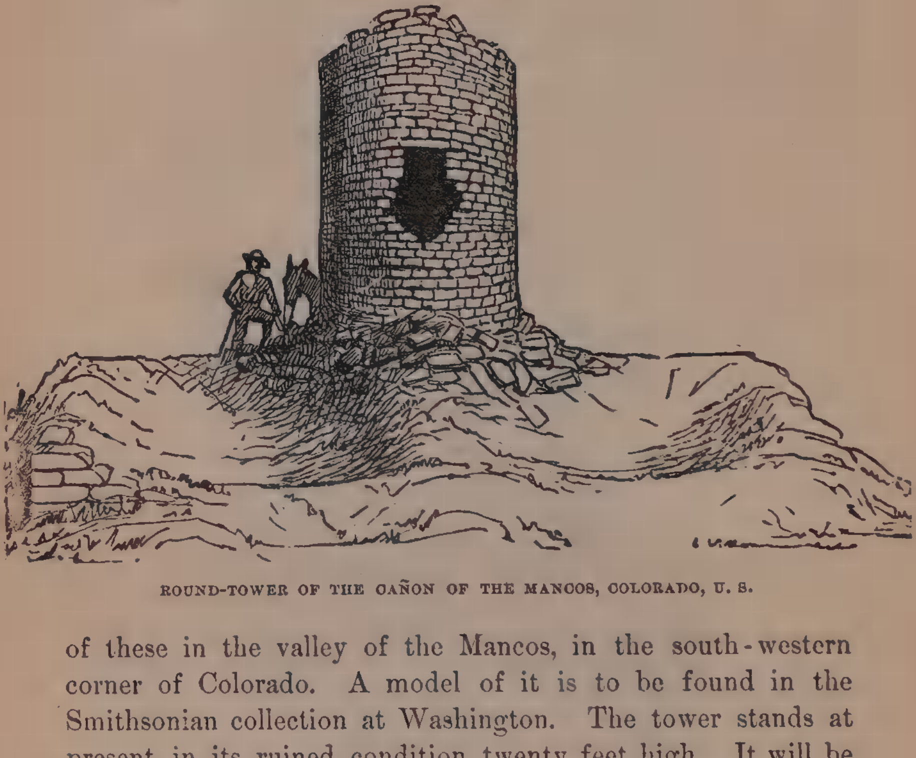

ROUND-TOWER OF THE CAÑON OF THE MANCOS, COLORADO, U. S.

It will not do to say that the resemblance between these prehistoric and singular towers, in countries so far apart as Sardinia, Ireland, Colorado, and India, is due to an accidental coincidence. It might as well be argued that the resemblance between the roots of the various Indo-European languages was also due to accidental coincidence, and did not establish any similarity of origin. In fact, we might just as well go back to the theory of the philosophers of one hundred and fifty years ago, and say that the resemblance between the fossil forms in the rocks and the living forms upon them did not indicate relationship, or prove that the fossils were the remains of creatures that had once lived, but that it was simply a way nature had of working out extraordinary coincidences in a kind of joke; a sort of "plastic power in nature," as it was called.

We find another proof that Ireland was settled by the people of Atlantis in the fact that traditions long existed among the Irish peasantry of a land in the "Far West," and that this belief was especially found among the posterity of the Tuatha-de-Danann, whose connection with the Formorians we have shown.

The Abbé Brasseur de Bourbourg, in a note to his translation of the "Popol Vuh," says:

> "There is an abundance of legends and traditions concerning the passage of the Irish into America, and their habitual communication with that continent many centuries before the time of Columbus. We should bear in mind that Ireland was colonized by the Phœnicians (or by people of that race). An Irish saint named Vigile, who lived in the eighth century, was accused to Pope Zachary of having taught heresies on the subject of the antipodes. At first he wrote to the pope in reply to the charge, but afterward he went to Rome in person to justify himself, and there he proved to the pope that the Irish had been *accustomed to communicate with a transatlantic world.*"

"This fact," says Baldwin, "seems to have been preserved in the records of the Vatican."

The Irish annals preserve the memory of St. Brendan of Clonfert, and his remarkable voyage to a land in the West, made A.D. 545. His early youth was passed under the care of St. Ita, a lady of the princely family of the Desii. When he was five years old he was placed under the care of Bishop Ercus. Kerry was his native home; the blue waves of the Atlantic washed its shores; the coast was full of traditions of a wonderful land in the West. He went to see the venerable St. Enda, the first abbot of Arran, for counsel. He was probably encouraged in the plan he had formed of carrying the Gospel to this distant land. "He proceeded along the coast of Mayo, inquiring as he went for *traditions of the Western continent.* On his return to Kerry he decided to set out on the important expedition. St. Brendan's Hill still bears his name; and from the bay at the foot of this lofty eminence he sailed for the 'Far West.' Directing his course *toward the southwest*, with a few faithful companions, in a well-provisioned bark, he came, after some rough and dangerous navigation, to calm seas, where, without aid of oar or sail, he was borne along for many weeks." He had probably entered upon the same great current which Columbus travelled nearly one thousand years later, and which extends from the shores of Africa and Europe to America. He finally reached land; he proceeded inland until he came to a large river flowing from east to west, supposed by some to be the Ohio. "After an absence of seven years he returned to Ireland, and lived not only to tell of the marvels he had seen, but to found a college of three thousand monks at Clonfert." There are eleven Latin MSS. in the *Bibliothèque Impériale* at Paris of this legend, the dates of which vary from the eleventh to the fourteenth century, but all of them anterior to the time of Columbus.

The fact that St. Brendan sailed in search of a country in the west cannot be doubted; and the legends which guided him were probably the traditions of Atlantis among a people whose ancestors had been derived directly or at second-hand from that country.

This land was associated in the minds of the peasantry with traditions of Edenic happiness and beauty. Miss Eleanor C. Donnelly, of Philadelphia, has referred to it in her poem, "The

Sleeper's Sail," where the starving boy dreams of the pleasant and plentiful land:

"'Mother, I've been on the cliffs out yonder,
Straining my eyes o'er the breakers free
To the lovely spot where the sun was setting,
Setting and sinking into the sea.

"'The sky was full of the fairest colors---
Pink and purple and paly green,
With great soft masses of gray and amber,
And great bright rifts of gold between.

"'And all the birds that way were flying,
Heron and curlew overhead,
With a mighty eagle westward floating,
Every plume in their pinions red.

"'And then I saw it, the fairy city,
Far away o'er the waters deep;
Towers and castles and chapels glowing,
Like blesséd dreams that we see in sleep.

"'What is its name?' 'Be still, *acushla*
(Thy hair is wet with the mists, my boy);
Thou hast looked perchance on the Tir-na-n'oge,
Land of eternal youth and joy!

"'Out of the sea, when the sun is setting,
It rises, golden and fair to view;
No trace of ruin, or change of sorrow,
No sign of age where all is new.

"'Forever sunny, forever blooming,
Nor cloud nor frost can touch that spot,
Where the happy people are ever roaming,
The bitter pangs of the past forgot.'

This is the Greek story of Elysion; these are the Elysian Fields of the Egyptians; these are the Gardens of the Hesperides; this is the region in the West to which the peasant of Brittany looks from the shores of Cape Raz; this is Atlantis.

The starving child seeks to reach this blessed land in a boat, and is drowned.

"High on the cliffs the light-house keeper
Caught the sound of a piercing scream;
Low in her hut the lonely widow
Moaned in the maze of a troubled dream;

"And saw in her sleep a seaman ghostly,
With sea-weeds clinging in his hair,
Into her room, all wet and dripping,
A drownèd boy on his bosom bear.

"Over Death Sea on a bridge of silver
The child to his Father's arms had passed;
Heaven was nearer than Tir-na-n'oge,
And the golden city was reached at last."

CHAPTER VIII.

THE OLDEST SON OF NOAH.

THAT eminent authority, Dr. Max Müller, says, in his "Lectures on the Science of Religion,"

"If we confine ourselves to the Asiatic continent, with its important peninsula of Europe, we find that in the vast desert of drifting human speech three, and only three, oases have been formed in which, *before the beginning of all history*, language became permanent and traditional—assumed, in fact, a new character, a character totally different from the original character of the floating and constantly varying speech of human beings. These three oases of language are known by the name of *Turanian*, *Aryan*, and *Semitic*. In these three centres, more particularly in the *Aryan* and *Semitic*, language ceased to be natural; its growth was arrested, and it became permanent, solid, petrified, or, if you like, historical speech. I have always maintained that this centralization and traditional conservation of language could only have been the result of religious and political influences, and I now mean to show that we really have clear evidence of three independent settlements of religion — the *Turanian*, the *Aryan*, and the *Semitic*—concomitantly with the three great settlements of language."

There can be no doubt that the Aryan and another branch, which Müller calls Semitic, but which may more properly be called Hamitic, radiated from Noah; it is a question yet to be decided whether the Turanian or Mongolian is also a branch of the Noachic or Atlantean stock.

To quote again from Max Müller:

"If it can only be proved that the religions of the Aryan nations are united by the same bonds of a real relationship which have enabled us to treat their languages as so many varieties of the same type—and so also of the Semitic—the field thus opened is vast enough, and its careful clearing and cultivation will occupy several generations of scholars. And this original relationship, I believe, can be proved. Names of the principal deities, words also expressive of the most essential elements of religion, such as *prayer*, *sacrifice*, *altar*, *spirit*, *law*, and *faith*, have been preserved among the Aryan and among the Semitic nations, and these relics admit of one explanation only. After that, a comparative study of the Turanian religions may be approached with better hope of success; for that there was not only a primitive Aryan and a primitive Semitic religion, *but likewise a primitive Turanian religion, before each of these primeval races was broken up and became separated in language, worship, and national sentiment, admits, I believe, of little doubt.* . . . There was a period during which the ancestors of the Semitic family had not yet been divided, whether in language or in religion. That period transcends the recollection of every one of the Semitic races, in the same way as neither Hindoos, Greeks, nor Romans have any recollection of the time when they spoke a common language, and worshipped their Father in heaven by a name that was as yet neither Sanscrit, nor Greek, nor Latin. But I do not hesitate to call this Prehistoric Period historical in the best sense of the word. It was a real period, because, unless it was real, all the realities of the Semitic languages and the Semitic religions, such as we find them after their separation, would be unintelligible. Hebrew, Syriac, and Arabic point to a common source as much as Sanscrit, Greek, and Latin; and unless we can bring ourselves to doubt that the Hindoos, the Greeks, the Romans, and the Teutons derived the worship of their principal deity from their common Aryan sanctuary, we shall not be able to deny that there was likewise a primitive religion of the whole Semitic race, and that *El*, the Strong One in heaven, was invoked by the ancestors of all the Semitic races before there were Babylonians in Babylon, Phœnicians in Sidon and Tyrus—before there were Jews in Mesopotamia or Jerusalem. The evidence of the Semitic is the same as that of the Aryan languages: the conclusion cannot be different. . . .

"These three classes of religion are not to be mistaken—as little as the three classes of language, the Turanian, the Semitic, and the Aryan. They mark three events in the most ancient history of the world, events which have determined the whole fate of the human race, and of which we ourselves still feel the consequences in our language, in our thoughts, and in our religion."

We have seen that all the evidence points to the fact that this original seat of the Phœnician-Hebrew family was in Atlantis.

The great god of the so-called Semites was El, the Strong One, from whose name comes the Biblical names *Beth-el*, the house of God; *Ha-el*, the strong one; *El-ohim*, the gods; *El-oah*, God; and from the same name is derived the Arabian name of God, Al-lah.

Another evidence of the connection between the Greeks, Phœnicians, Hebrews, and Atlanteans is shown in the name of Adonis.

The Greeks tell us that Adonis was the lover of Aphrodite, or Venus, who was the offspring of Uranus—"she came out of the sea;" Uranus was the father of Chronos, and the grandfather of Poseidon, king of Atlantis.

Now we find *Adonâi* in the Old Testament used exclusively as the name of Jehovah, while among the Phœnicians Adonâi was the supreme deity. In both cases the root *Ad* is probably a reminiscence of *Ad*-lantis.

There seem to exist similar connections between the Egyptian and the Turanian mythology. The great god of Egypt was Neph or Num; the chief god of the Samoyedes is Num; and Max Müller established an identity between the *Num* of the Samoyedes and the god *Yum-ala* of the Finns, and probably with the name of the god *Nam* of the Thibetians.

That mysterious people, the Etruscans, who inhabited part of Italy, and whose bronze implements agreed exactly in style and workmanship with those which we think were derived from Atlantis, were, it is now claimed, a branch of the Turanian family.

"At a recent meeting of the English Philological Society great interest was excited by a paper on Etruscan Numerals, by the Rev. Isaac Taylor. He stated that the long-sought key to the Etruscan language had at last been discovered. Two dice had been found in a tomb, with their six faces marked with words instead of pips. He showed that these words were identical with the first six digits in the Altaic branch of the Turanian family of speech. Guided by this clew, it was easy to prove that the grammar and vocabulary of the 3000 Etruscan inscriptions were also Altaic. The words denoting kindred, the pronouns, the conjugations, and the declensions, corresponded closely to those of the Tartar tribes of Siberia. The Etruscan mythology proved to be essentially the same as that of the Kalevala, the great Finnic epic."

According to Lenormant ("Ancient History of the East," vol. i., p. 62; vol. ii., p. 23), the early contests between the Aryans and the Turanians are represented in the Iranian traditions as "contests between hostile *brothers* . . . the Ugro-Finnish races must, according to all appearances, be looked upon as *a branch, earlier detached than the others from the Japhetic stem.*"

If it be true that the first branch originating from Atlantis was the Turanian, which includes the Chinese and Japanese, then we have derived from Atlantis all the building and metal-working races of men who have proved themselves capable of civilization; and we may, therefore, divide mankind into two great classes: those capable of civilization, derived from Atlantis, and those essentially and at all times barbarian, who hold no blood relationship with the people of Atlantis.

Humboldt is sure "that some connection existed between ancient Ethiopia and the elevated plain of Central Asia." There were invasions which reached from the shores of Arabia into China. "An Arabian sovereign, Schamar-Iarasch (Abou Karib), is described by Hamza, Nuwayri, and others as a powerful ruler and conqueror, who carried his arms successfully far into Central Asia; he occupied Samarcand and invaded China. He erected an edifice at Samarcand, bearing an inscription, in

Himyarite or Cushite characters, 'In the name of God, Schamar-Iarasch has erected this edifice to the sun, his Lord.'" (Baldwin's "Prehistoric Nations," p. 110.) These invasions must have been prior to 1518 B.C.

Charles Walcott Brooks read a paper before the California Academy of Sciences, in which he says:

> "According to Chinese annals, Tai-Ko-Fokee, the great stranger king, ruled the kingdom of China. In pictures he is represented with two small horns, like those associated with the representations of Moses. He and his successor are said to have introduced into China 'picture-writing,' like that in use in Central America at the time of the Spanish conquest. He taught the motions of the heavenly bodies, and divided time into years and months; he also introduced many other useful arts and sciences.
>
> "Now, there has been found at Copan, in Central America, a figure strikingly like the Chinese symbol of Fokee, with his two horns; and, in like manner, there is a close resemblance between the Central American and the Chinese figures representing earth and heaven. Either one people learned from the other, or both acquired these forms from a common source. Many physico-geographical facts favor the hypothesis that they were derived in very remote ages from America, and that from China they passed to Egypt. Chinese records say that the progenitors of the Chinese race came from across the sea."

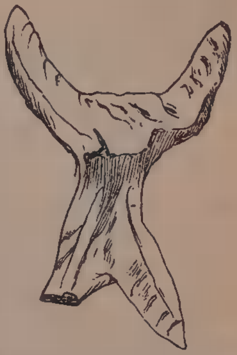

COW-HEADED IDOL, MYCENÆ (FROM SCHLIEMANN).

The two small horns of Tai-Ko-Fokee and Moses are probably a reminiscence of Baal. We find the horns of Baal represented in the remains of the Bronze Age of Europe. Bel sometimes wore a tiara with his bull's horns; the tiara was the crown subsequently worn by the Persian kings, and it became, in time, the symbol of Papal authority.

The Atlanteans having domesticated cattle, and discovered their vast importance to humanity, associated the bull and cow with religious ideas, as revealed in the oldest hymns of the Aryans and the cow-headed idols of Troy, a representation of one of which is shown on the preceding page. Upon the head of their great god Baal they placed the horns of the bull; and these have descended in popular imagination to the spirit of evil of our day. Burns says:

> "O thou! whatever title suit thee,
> Auld *Hornie*, Satan, Nick, or Clootie."

"Clootie" is derived from the cleft hoof of a cow; while the Scotch name for a bull is *Bill*, a corruption, probably, of Bel. Less than two hundred years ago it was customary to sacrifice a bull on the 25th of August to the "God Mowrie" and "his devilans" on the island of Inis Maree, Scotland. ("The Past in the Present," p. 165.) The trident of Poseidon has degenerated into the pitchfork of Beelzebub!

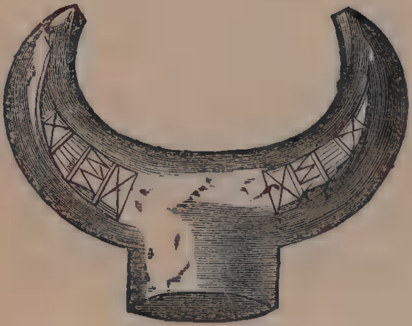

RELIGIOUS EMBLEM OF THE BRONZE AGE, SWITZERLAND.

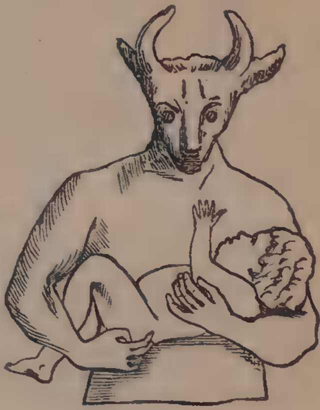

BAAL, THE PHŒNICIAN GOD.

And when we cross the Atlantic, we find in America the horns of Baal reappearing in a singular manner. The first cut on page 429 represents an idol of the Moquis of New Mexico: the head is very bull-like. In the next figure we have a representation of the war-god of the Dakotas, with something like a trident in his hand; while the next illustration is taken from Zarate's "Peru," and depicts "the god of a degrading worship." He is very much like the traditional conception of the European devil—horns, pointed ears, wings, and poker. Compare this last figure, from Peru, with the representation on page 430 of a Greek siren, one of those cruel monsters who, according to Grecian mythology, sat in the midst of bones and blood, tempting men to ruin by their sweet music. Here we have the same bird-like legs and claws as in the Peruvian demon.

Heeren shows that a great overland commerce extended in ancient times between the Black Sea and "Great Mongolia;" he mentions a "Temple of the Sun," and a great caravansary in the desert of Gobi. Arminius Vámbéry, in his "Travels in Central Asia," describes very important ruins near the eastern shore of the Caspian Sea, at a place called Gömüshtepe; and connected with these are the remains of a great wall which he followed "ten geographical miles." He found a vast aqueduct one hundred and fifty miles long, extending to the Persian mountains. He reports abundant ruins in all that country, *extending even to China.*

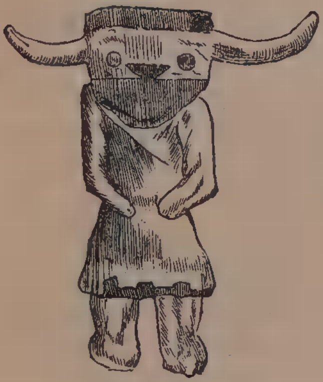
MOQUI IDOL.

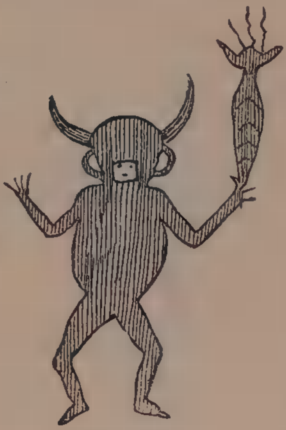
DAKOTA IDOL.

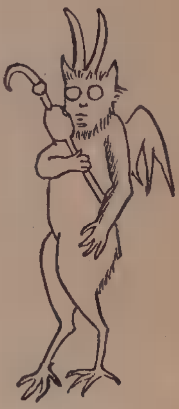
PERUVIAN DEVIL.

The early history of China indicates contact with a superior race. "Fuh-hi, who is regarded as a demi-god, founded the Chinese Empire 2852 B.C. He introduced cattle, taught the people how to raise them, and taught the art of writing." ("American Cyclopædia," art. *China.*) He might have invented his alphabet, but he did not invent the cattle; he must have got them from some nation who, during many centuries of civilization, had domesticated them; and from what nation was he more likely to have obtained them than from the Atlanteans, whose colonies we have seen reached his borders, and whose armies invaded his territory? "He instituted the ceremony of marriage." (*Ibid.*) This also was an importation from a civilized land. "His successor, Shin-nung, during a reign of one hundred and forty years, introduced agriculture and medical science. The next emperor, Hwang-ti, is believed to have invented weapons, wagons, ships, clocks, and musical instruments, and to have introduced coins, weights, and measures." (*Ibid.*) As these various inventions in all other countries have been the result of slow development, running through many centuries, or are borrowed from some other more civilized people, it is certain that no emperor of China ever invented them all during a period of one hundred and sixty-four

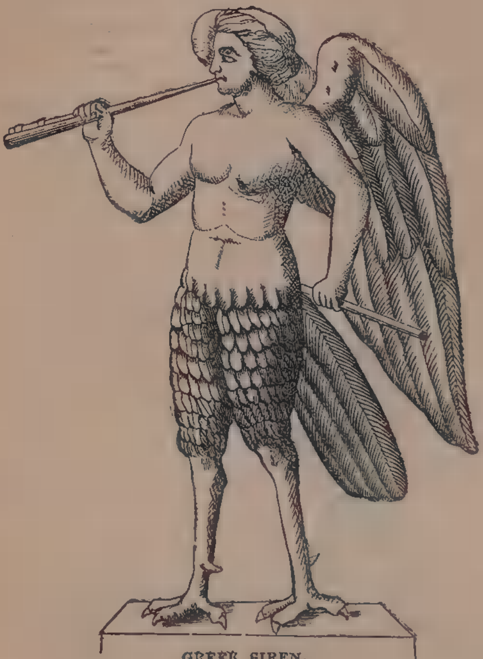
GREEK SIREN.

years. These, then, were also importations from the West. In fact, the Chinese themselves claim to have invaded China in the early days *from the north-west;* and their first location is placed by Winchell near Lake Balkat, a short distance east of the Caspian, where we have already seen Aryan Atlantean colonies planted at an early day. "The third successor of Fuh-hi, Ti-ku, established schools, and was the first to practise polygamy. In 2357 his son Yau ascended the throne, and it is from his reign that the regular historical records begin. A great flood, which occurred in his reign, has been considered synchronous and identical with the Noachic Deluge, and to Yau is attributed the merit of having successfully battled against the waters."

There can be no question that the Chinese themselves, in their early legends, connected their origin with a people who were destroyed by water in a tremendous convulsion of the earth. Associated with this event was a divine personage called Niu-va (Noah?).

Sir William Jones says:

> "The Chinese believe the earth to have been wholly covered with water, which, in works of undisputed authenticity, they describe as flowing abundantly, then subsiding and *separating the higher from the lower ages of mankind;* that this division of time, from which their poetical history begins, just preceded the appearance of Fo-hi on the mountains of Chin. ("Discourse on the Chinese; Asiatic Researches," vol. ii., p. 376.)

The following history of this destruction of their ancestors vividly recalls to us the convulsion depicted in the Chaldean and American legends:

> "The pillars of heaven were broken; the earth shook to its very foundations; the heavens sunk lower toward the north; the sun, the moon, and the stars changed their motions; the earth fell to pieces, and the waters enclosed within its bosom *burst forth with violence and overflowed it.* Man having rebelled against Heaven, the system of the universe was totally

disordered. The sun was eclipsed, the planets altered their course, and the grand harmony of nature was disturbed."

A learned Frenchman, M. Terrien de la Couperie, member of the Asiatic Society of Paris, has just published a work (1880) in which he demonstrates the astonishing fact that the Chinese language is clearly related to the Chaldean, and that both the Chinese characters and the cuneiform alphabet are degenerate descendants of an original hieroglyphical alphabet. The same signs exist for many words, while numerous words are very much alike. M. de la Couperie gives a table of some of these similarities, from which I quote as follows:

English.	Chinese.	Chaldee.
To shine	Mut	Mul.
To die	Mut	Mit.
Book	King	Kin.
Cloth	Sik	Sik.
Right hand	Dzek	Zag.
Hero	Tan	Dun.
Earth	Kien-kai	Kiengi.
Cow	Lub	Lu, lup.
Brick	Ku	Ku.

This surprising discovery brings the Chinese civilization still nearer to the Mediterranean head-quarters of the races, and increases the probability that the arts of China were of Atlantean origin; and that the name of Nai Hoang-ti, or Nai Korti, the founder of Chinese civilization, may be a reminiscence of Nakhunta, the chief of the gods, as recorded in the Susian texts, and this, in turn, a recollection of the Deva-Nahusha of the Hindoos, the Dionysos of the Greeks, the king of Atlantis, whose great empire reached to the "farther parts of India," and embraced, according to Plato, "parts of the continent of America."

Linguistic science achieved a great discovery when it established the fact that there was a continuous belt of languages from Iceland to Ceylon which were the variant forms of one mother-tongue, the Indo-European; but it must prepare itself for a still wider generalization. There is abundant proof—proof with which pages might be filled—that there was a still older mother-tongue, from which Aryan, Semitic, and Hamitic were all derived—the language of Noah, the language of Atlantis, the language of the great "aggressive empire" of Plato, the language of the empire of the Titans.

The Arabic word *bin*, within, becomes, when it means interval, space, *binnon;* this is the German and Dutch *binnen* and Saxon *binnon*, signifying within. The Ethiopian word *aorf*, to fall asleep, is the root of the word *Morpheus*, the god of sleep. The Hebrew word *chanah*, to dwell, is the parent of the Anglo-Saxon *inne* and Icelandic *inni*, a house, and of our word *inn*, a hotel. The Hebrew word *naval* or *nafal* signifies to fall; from it is derived our word fall and fool (one who falls); the Chaldee word is *nabal*, to make foul, and the Arabic word *nabala* means to die, that is, to fall. From the last syllable of the Chaldee *nasar*, to saw, we can derive the Latin *serra*, the High German *sagen*, the Danish *sauga*, and our word *to saw.* The Arabic *nafida*, to fade, is the same as the Italian *fado*, the Latin *fatuus* (foolish, tasteless), the Dutch *vadden*, and our *to fade.* The Ethiopic word *gaber*, to make, to do, and the Arabic word *jabara*, to make strong, becomes the Welsh word *goberu*, to work, to operate, the Latin *operor*, and the English *operate.* The Arabic word *abara* signifies to prick, to sting; we see this root in the Welsh *bar*, a summit, and *pâr*, a spear, and *per*, a spit; whence our word *spear.* In the Chaldee, Syriac, and Arabic *zug* means to join, to couple; from this the Greeks obtained ζυγος, the Romans *jugum*, and we the word *yoke;* while the Germans obtained *jok* or *jog*, the Dutch *juk*, the Swedes *ok.* The Sanscrit is *juga.* The Arabic *sanna*, to be old, reappears in the Latin *senex*, the Welsh *hen*, and our *senile.* The Hebrew *banah*, to build, is the Irish *bun*, foundation, and the Latin *fundo, fundare*, to found. The Arabic *baraka*, to bend the knee, to fall on the breast, is probably the

Saxon *brecau*, the Danish *bräkke*, the Swedish *bräcka*, Welsh *bregu*, and our word *to break*. The Arabic *baraka* also signifies to rain violently; and from this we get the Saxon *rægn*, to rain, Dutch *regen*, to rain, Cimbric *rækia*, rain, Welsh *rheg*, rain. The Chaldee word *braic*, a branch, is the Irish *braic* or *raigh*, an arm, the Welsh *braic*, the Latin *brachium*, and the English *brace*, something which supports like an arm. The Chaldee *frak*, to rub, to tread out grain, is the same as the Latin *frico*, *frio*, and our word *rake*. The Arabic word to rub is *fraka*. The Chaldee *rag*, *ragag*, means to desire, to long for; it is the same as the Greek ορεγω, the Latin *porrigere*, the Saxon *ræccan*, the Icelandic *rakna*, the German *reichen*, and our *to reach*, to rage. The Arabic *rauka*, to strain or purify, as wine, is precisely our English word *rack*, to rack wine. The Hebrew word *bara*, to create, is our word *to bear*, as to bear children: a great number of words in all the European languages contain this root in its various modifications. The Hebrew word *kafar*, to cover, is our word *to cover*, and *coffer*, something which covers, and *covert*, a secret place; from this root also comes the Latin *cooperio* and the French *couvrir*, to cover. The Arabic word *shakala*, to bind under the belly, is our word *to shackle*. From the Arabic *walada* and Ethiopian *walad*, to beget, to bring forth, we get the Welsh *llawd*, a shooting out; and hence our word *lad*. Our word *matter*, or *pus*, is from the Arabic *madda*; our word *mature* is originally from the Chaldee *mita*. The Arabic word *amida* signifies to end, and from this comes the noun, a limit, a termination, Latin *meta*, and our words *meet* and *mete*.

I might continue this list, but I have given enough to show that all the Atlantean races once spoke the same language, and that the dispersion on the plains of Shinar signifies that breaking up of the tongues of one people under the operation of vast spaces of time. Philology is yet in its infancy, and the time is not far distant when the identity of the languages of all the Noachic races will be as clearly established and as universally acknowledged as is now the identity of the languages of the Aryan family of nations.

And precisely as recent research has demonstrated the relationship between Pekin and Babylon, so investigation in Central America has proved that there is a mysterious bond of union connecting the Chinese and one of the races of Mexico. The resemblances are so great that Mr. Short ("North Americans of Antiquity," p. 494) says, "There is no doubt that strong analogies exist between the Otomi and the Chinese." Señor Najera ("Dissertacion Sobre la lingua Othomi, Mexico," pp. 87, 88) gives a list of words from which I quote the following:

Chinese.	Othomi.	English.	Chinese.	Othomi.	English.
Cho	To	The, that.	Pa	Da	To give.
Y	N-y	A wound.	Tsun	Nsu	Honor.
Ten	Gu, mu	Head.	Hu	Hmu	Sir, Lord.
Siao	Sui	Night.	Na	Na	That.
Tien	Tsi	Tooth.	Hu	He	Cold.
Ye	Yo	Shining.	Ye	He	And.
Ky	Hy (ji)	Happiness.	Hoa	Hia	Word.
Ku	Du	Death.	Nugo	Nga	I.
Po	Yo	No.	Ni	Nuy	Thou.
Na	Ta	Man.	Hao	Nho	The good.
Nin	Nsu	Female.	Ta	Da	The great.
Tseu	Tsi, ti	Son.	Li	Ti	Gain.
Tso	Tsa	To perfect.	Ho	To	Who.
Kuan	Khuani	True.	Pa	Pa	To leave.
Siao	Sa	To mock.	Mu, mo	Me	Mother.

Recently Herr Forchhammer, of Leipsic, has published a truly scientific comparison of the grammatical structure of the Choctaw, Chickasaw, Muscogee, and Seminole languages with the Ural-Altaic tongues, in which he has developed many interesting points of resemblance.

It has been the custom to ascribe the recognized similarities between the Indians of America and the Chinese and Japanese to a migration by way of Behring's Strait from Asia into America; but when we find that the Chinese themselves only reached the Pacific coast within the Historical Period, and that they came to it from the direction of the Mediterranean and Atlantis, and when we find so many and such distinct recollections of the destruction of Atlantis in the Flood legends of the American races, it seems more reasonable to conclude that the resemblances between the Othomi and the Chinese are to be accounted for by intercourse through Atlantis.

We find a confirmation in all these facts of the order in which Genesis names the sons of Noah:

> "Now these are the generations of the sons of Noah: Shem, Ham, and Japheth, and unto them were sons born after the flood."

Can we not suppose that these three sons represent three great races in the order of their precedence?

The record of Genesis claims that the Phœnicians were descended from Ham, while the Hebrews were descended from Shem; yet we find the Hebrews and Phœnicians united by the ties of a common language, common traditions, and common race characteristics. The Jews are the great merchants of the world eighteen centuries after Christ, just as the Phœnicians were the great merchants of the world fifteen centuries before Christ.

Moreover, the Arabians, who are popularly classed as Semites, or sons of Shem, admit in their traditions that they are descended from "Ad, *the son of Ham;*" and the tenth chapter of Genesis classes them among the descendants of Ham, calling them Seba, Havilah, Raamah, etc. If the two great so-called Semitic stocks—the Phœnicians and Arabians—are Hamites, surely the third member of the group belongs to the same "sunburnt" race.

If we concede that the Jews were also a branch of the Hamitic stock, then we have, firstly, a Semitic stock, the Turanian, embracing the Etruscans, the Finns, the Tartars, the Mongols, the Chinese, and Japanese; secondly, a Hamitic family, "the sunburnt" race—a red race—including the Cushites, Phœnicians, Egyptians, Hebrews, Berbers, etc.; and, thirdly, a Japhetic or whiter stock, embracing the Greeks, Italians, Celts, Goths, and the men who wrote Sanscrit—in other words, the entire Aryan family.

If we add to these three races the negro race—which cannot be traced back to Atlantis, and is not included, according to Genesis, among the descendants of Noah—we have the four races, the *white*, *red*, *yellow*, and *black*, recognized by the Egyptians as embracing all the people known to them.

There seems to be some confusion in Genesis as to the Semitic stock. It classes different races as both Semites and Hamites; as, for instance, Sheba and Havilah; while the race of Mash, or Meshech, is classed among the sons of Shem and the sons of Japheth. In fact, there seems to be a confusion of Hamitic and Semitic stocks. "This is shown in the blending of Hamitic and Semitic in some of the most ancient inscriptions; in the facility of intercourse between the Semites of Asia and the Hamites of Egypt; in the peaceful and unobserved absorption of all the Asiatic Hamites, and the Semitic adoption of the Hamitic gods and religious system. It is manifest that, at a period not long previous, *the two families* had dwelt together and spoken the same language." (Winchell's "Pre-Adamites," p. 36.) Is it not more reasonable to suppose that the so-called Semitic races of Genesis were a mere division of the Hamitic stock, and that we are to look for the third great division of the sons of Noah among the Turanians?

Francis Lenormant, high authority, is of the opinion that the Turanian races are descended from Magog, the son of Japheth. He regards the Turanians as intermediate between the white and yellow races, graduating insensibly into each. "The Uzbecs, the Osmanli Turks, and the Hungarians are not to be distinguished in appearance from the most perfect branches of the white race; on the other hand, the Tchondes almost exactly resemble the Tongouses, who belong to the yellow race.

The Turanian languages are marked by the same agglutinative character found in the American races.

The Mongolian and the Indian are alike in the absence of a heavy beard. The royal color of the Incas was yellow; yellow is the color of the imperial family in China. The religion of the Peruvians was sun-worship; "the sun was the peculiar god of the Mongols from the earliest times." The Peruvians regarded Pachacamac as the sovereign creator. Camac-Hya was the name of a Hindoo goddess. *Haylli* was the burden of every verse of the song composed in praise of the sun and the Incas. Mr. John Ranking derives the word *Allah* from the word *Haylli*, also the word *Halle*-lujah. In the city of Cuzco was a portion of land which none were permitted to cultivate except those of the royal blood. At certain seasons the Incas turned up the sod here, amid much rejoicing and many ceremonies. A similar custom prevails in China: The emperor ploughs a few furrows, and twelve illustrious persons attend the plough after him. (Du Halde, "Empire of China," vol. i., p. 275.) The cycle of sixty years was in use among most of the nations of Eastern Asia, and among the Muyscas of the elevated plains of Bogota. *The "quipu," a knotted reckoning-cord, was in use in Peru and in China.* (Bancroft's "Native Races," vol. v., p. 48.) In Peru and China "both use hieroglyphics, which are read from above downward." (*Ibid.*)

"It appears most evident to me," says Humboldt, "that the monuments, methods of computing time, systems of cosmogony, and many myths of America, offer striking analogies with the ideas of Eastern Asia—*analogies which indicate an ancient communication*, and are not simply the result of that uniform condition in which all nations are found in the dawn of civilization." ("Exam. Crit.," tom. ii., p. 68.)

"In the ruined cities of Cambodia, which lies farther to the east of Burmah, recent research has discovered teocallis like those in Mexico, and the remains of temples of the same type and pattern as those of Yucatan. And when we reach the sea we encounter at Suku, in Java, a teocalli which is absolutely identical with that of Tehuantepec. Mr. Ferguson said, 'as we advance eastward from the valley of the Euphrates, at every step we meet with forms of art becoming more and more like those of Central America.'" ("Builders of Babel," p. 88.)

Prescott says:

"The coincidences are sufficiently strong to authorize a belief that the civilization of Anahuac was in some degree influenced by that of Eastern Asia; and, secondly, that the discrepancies are such *as to carry back the communication to a very remote period.*" ("Mexico," vol. iii., p. 418.)

"All appearances," continues Lenormant ("Ancient History of the East," vol. i., p. 64), "would lead us to regard the Turanian race as the first branch of the family of Japheth which went forth into the world; and by that premature separation, by an isolated and antagonistic existence, took, or rather preserved, a completely distinct physiognomy. . . . It is a type of the white race imperfectly developed."

We may regard this yellow race as the first and oldest wave from Atlantis, and, therefore, reaching farthest away from the common source; then came the Hamitic race; then the Japhetic.

CHAPTER IX.

THE ANTIQUITY OF SOME OF OUR GREAT INVENTIONS.

It may seem like a flight of the imagination to suppose that the mariner's compass was known to the inhabitants of Atlantis. And yet, if my readers are satisfied that the Atlanteans were a highly civilized maritime people, carrying on commerce with regions as far apart as Peru and Syria, we must conclude that they possessed some means of tracing their course in the great seas they traversed; and accordingly, when we proceed to investigate this subject, we find that as far back as we may go in the study of the ancient races of the world, we find them possessed of a knowledge of the virtues of the magnetic stone, and in the habit of utilizing it. The people of Europe, rising a few centuries since out of a state of semi-barbarism, have been in the habit of claiming the invention of many things which they simply borrowed from the older nations. This was the case with the mariner's compass. It was believed for many years that it was first invented by an Italian named Amalfi, A.D. 1302. In that interesting work, Goodrich's "Life of Columbus," we find a curious history of the magnetic compass prior to that time, from which we collate the following points:

"In A.D. 868 it was employed by the Northmen." ("The Landnamabok," vol. i., chap. 2.) An Italian poem of A.D. 1190 refers to it as in use among the Italian sailors at that date. In the ancient language of the Hindoos, the Sanscrit—which has been a dead language for twenty-two hundred years—the magnet was called "the precious stone beloved of Iron." The Talmud speaks of it as "the stone of attraction;" and it is alluded to in the early Hebrew prayers as *Kalamitah*, the same name given it by the Greeks, from the reed upon which the compass floated. The Phœnicians were familiar with the use of the magnet. At the prow of their vessels stood the figure of a woman (Astarte) holding a cross in one hand and pointing the way with the other; the cross represented the compass, which was a magnetized needle, floating in water crosswise upon a piece of reed or wood. The cross became the coat of arms of the Phœnicians—not only, possibly, as we have shown, as a recollection of the four rivers of Atlantis, but because it represented the secret of their great sea-voyages, to which they owed their national greatness. The hyperborean magician, Abaras, carried "a guiding arrow," which Pythagoras gave him, "in order that it may be useful to him in all difficulties in his long journey." ("Herodotus," vol. iv., p. 36.)

The magnet was called the "Stone of Hercules." Hercules was the patron divinity of the Phœnicians. He was, as we have shown elsewhere, one of the gods of Atlantis—probably one of its great kings and navigators. The Atlanteans were, as Plato tells us, a maritime, commercial people, trading up the Mediterranean as far as Egypt and Syria, and across the Atlantic to "the whole opposite continent that surrounds the sea;" the Phœnicians, as their successors and descendants, and colonized on the shores of the Mediterranean, inherited their civilization and their maritime habits, and with these that invention without which their great voyages were impossible. From them the magnet passed to the Hindoos, and from them to the Chinese, who certainly possessed it at an early date. In the year 2700 B.C. the Emperor Wang-ti placed a magnetic figure with an extended arm, like the Astarte of the Phœnicians, on the front of carriages, the arm always turning and pointing to the south, which the Chinese regarded as the principal pole. (See Goodrich's "Columbus," p. 31, etc.) This illustration represents one of these chariots:

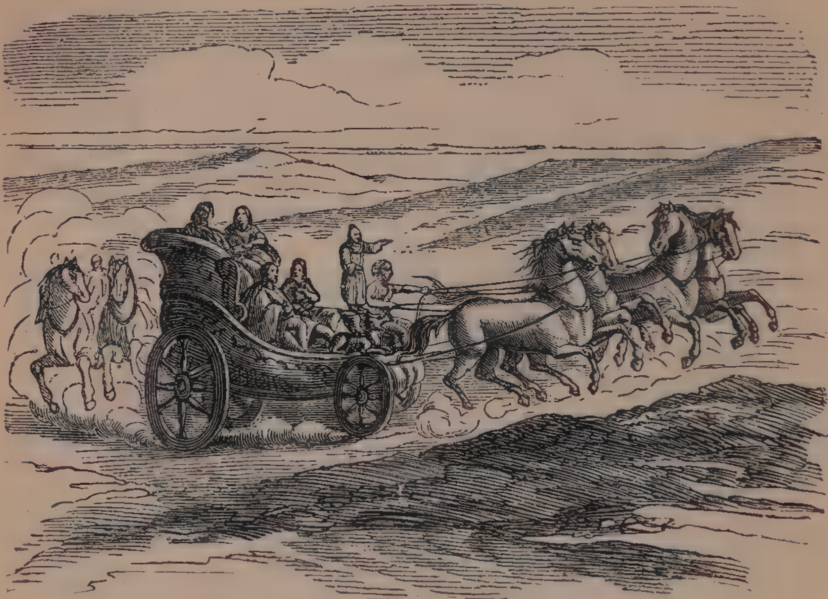

CHINESE MAGNETIC CAR.

In the seventh century it was used by the navigators of the Baltic Sea and the German Ocean.

The ancient Egyptians called the loadstone the bone of Haroeri, and iron the bone of Typhon. Haroeri was the son of Osiris and grandson of Rhea, a goddess of *the earth*, a queen of Atlantis, and *mother of Poseidon;* Typhon was a wind-god and an evil genius, but also a son of Rhea, the earth goddess. Do we find in this curious designation of iron and loadstone as "bones of the descendants of the earth," an explanation of that otherwise inexplicable Greek legend about Deucalion "throwing the bones of the earth behind him, when instantly men rose from the ground, and the world was repeopled?" Does it mean that by means of the magnet he sailed, after the Flood, to the European colonies of Atlantis, already thickly inhabited?

A late writer, speaking upon the subject of the loadstone, tells us:

> "Hercules, it was said, being once overpowered by the heat of the sun, drew his bow against that luminary; whereupon the god Phœbus, admiring his intrepidity, gave him a golden cup, with which he sailed over the ocean. This cup was the compass, which old writers have called *Lapis Heracleus.* Pisander says *Oceanus lent him the cup*, and Lucian says it was a sea-shell. Tradition affirms that the magnet originally was not on a pivot, but set to float on water in a cup. The old antiquarian is wildly theoretical on this point, and sees a compass in the Golden Fleece of Argos, in the oracular needle which Nero worshipped, and in everything else. Yet undoubtedly there are some curious facts connected with the matter. Osonius says that Gama and the Portuguese got the compass from some pirates at the Cape of Good Hope, A.D. 1260. M. Fauchet, the French antiquarian, finds it plainly alluded to in some old poem of Brittany belonging to the year A.D. 1180. Paulo Venetus brought it in the thirteenth century from China, where it was regarded as oracular. Genebrand says Melvius, a Neapolitan, brought it to Europe in A.D. 1303. Costa says Gama got it from Mohammedan seamen. But all nations with whom it was found *associate it with regions where Heraclean myths prevailed.* And one of the most curious facts is that the ancient Britons, as the Welsh do to-day, call a pilot *llywydd* (lode). Lodemanage, in Skinner's 'Etymology,' is the word for the price paid to a pilot. But whether this famous, and afterward deified, mariner (Hercules) had a compass or not, we can hardly regard the association of his name with so many Western monuments as accidental."

Hercules was, as we know, a god of Atlantis, and Oceanos, who lent the magnetic cup to Hercules, was the name by which the Greeks designated the Atlantic Ocean. And this may be the explanation of the recurrence of a cup in many antique paintings and statues. Hercules is often represented with a cup in his hand; we even find the cup upon the handle of the bronze dagger found in Denmark, and represented in the chapter on the Bronze Age, in this work. (See p. 254 *ante.*)

So "oracular" an object as this self-moving needle, always pointing to the north, would doubtless affect vividly the minds of the people, and appear in their works of art. When Hercules left the coast of Europe to sail to the island of Erythea in the Atlantic, in the remote west, we are told, in Greek mythology (Murray, p. 257), that he borrowed "the cup" of Helios, in (with) which "he was accustomed to sail every *night*." Here we seem to have a reference to the magnetic cup used in night sailing; and this is another proof that the use of the magnetic needle in sea-voyages was associated with the Atlantean gods.

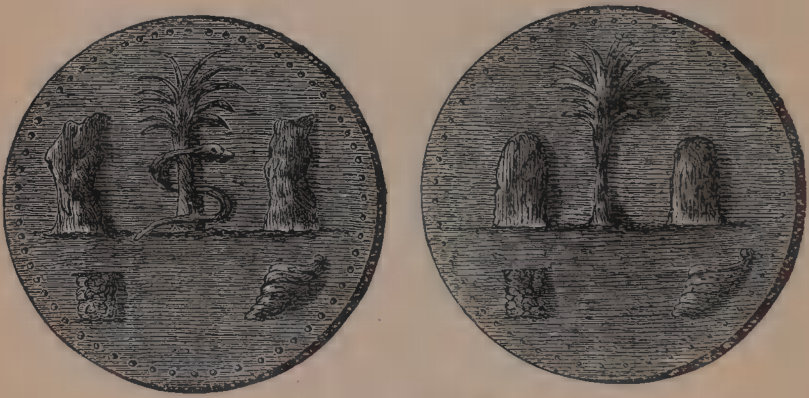

ANCIENT COINS OF TYRE.

Lucian tells us that a sea-shell often took the place of the cup, as a vessel in which to hold the water where the needle floated, and hence upon the ancient coins of Tyre we find a sea-shell represented.

Here, too, we have the Pillars of Hercules, supposed to have been placed at the mouth of the Mediterranean, and the tree of life or knowledge, with the serpent twined around it, which appears in Genesis; and in the combination of the two pillars and the serpent we have, it is said, the original source of our dollar mark [$].

Compare these Phœnician coins with the following representation of a copper coin, two inches in diameter and three lines thick, found nearly a century ago by Ordonez, at the city of Guatemala. "M. Dupaix noticed an indication of the use of the compass in the centre of one of the sides, the figures on the same side representing a kneeling, bearded, turbaned man between two fierce heads, perhaps of crocodiles, which appear to defend the entrance to a mountainous and wooded country. The reverse presents a serpent coiled around a fruit-tree, and an eagle on a hill." (Bancroft's "Native Races," vol. iv., p. 118.) The mountain leans to one side: it is a "culhuacan," or crooked mountain.

We find in Sanchoniathon's "Legends of the Phœnicians" that Ouranus, the first god of the people of Atlantis, "devised

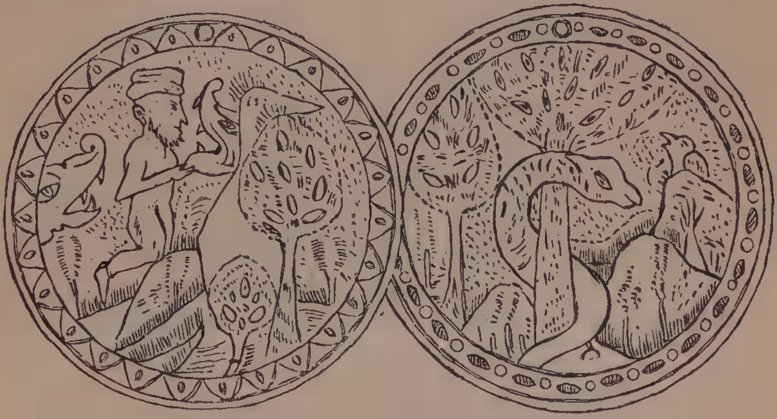

COIN FROM CENTRAL AMERICA.

Bætulia, *contriving stones that moved as having life*, which were supposed to fall from heaven." These stones were probably magnetic loadstones; in other words, Ouranus, the first god of Atlantis, devised the mariner's compass.

I find in the "Report of United States Explorations for a Route for a Pacific Railroad" a description of a New Mexican Indian priest, who foretells the result of a proposed war by placing a piece of wood in a bowl of water, and causing it to turn to the right or left, or sink or rise, as he directs it. This is incomprehensible, unless the wood, like the ancient Chinese compass, contained a piece of magnetic iron hidden in it, which would be attracted or repulsed, or even drawn downward, by a piece of iron held in the hand of the priest, on the outside of the bowl. If so, this trick was a remembrance of the mariner's compass transmitted from age to age by the medicine men. The reclining statue of Chac-Mol, of Central America, holds a bowl or dish upon its breast.

Divination was the *ars Etrusca.* The Etruscans set their temples squarely with the cardinal points of the compass; so did the Egyptians, the Mexicans, and *the Mound Builders of America.* Could they have done this without the magnetic compass?

The Romans and the Persians called the line of the axis of the globe *cardo*, and it was to *cardo* the needle pointed. Now "*Cardo* was the name of the mountain on which the human race took refuge from the Deluge . . . the primitive geographic point for the countries which were the cradle of the human race." (Urquhart's "Pillars of Hercules," vol. i., p. 145.) From this comes our word "cardinal," as the cardinal points.

Navigation.—Navigation was not by any means in a rude state in the earliest times:

> "In the wanderings of the heroes returning from Troy, Aristoricus makes Menelaus circumnavigate Africa more than 500 years before Neco sailed from Gadeira to India." ("Cosmos," vol. ii., p. 144.)
>
> "In the tomb of Rameses the Great is a representation of a naval combat between the Egyptians and some other people, supposed to be the Phœnicians, whose huge ships are propelled by sails." (Goodrich's "Columbus," p. 29.)

The proportions of the fastest sailing-vessels of the present day are about 300 feet long to 50 wide and 30 high; these were precisely the proportions of Noah's ark—300 cubits long, 50 broad, and 30 high.

"Hiero of Syracuse built, under the superintendence of Archimedes, a vessel which consumed in its construction the material for fifty galleys; it contained galleries, gardens, stables, fish-ponds, mills, baths, a temple of Venus, and an engine to throw stones three hundred pounds in weight, and arrows thirty-six feet long. The floors of this monstrous vessel were inlaid with scenes from Homer's 'Iliad.'" (*Ibid.*, p. 30.)

The fleet of Sesostris consisted of four hundred ships; and when Semiramis invaded India she was opposed by four thousand vessels.

It is probable that in the earliest times the vessels were sheeted with metal. A Roman ship of the time of Trajan has been recovered from Lake Ricciole after 1300 years. The outside was covered with sheets of lead fastened with small copper nails. Even the use of iron chains in place of ropes for the anchors was known at an early period. Julius Cæsar tells us that the galleys of the Veneti were thus equipped. (Goodrich's "Columbus," p. 31.)

Gunpowder.—It is not impossible that even the invention of gunpowder may date back to Atlantis. It was certainly known in Europe long before the time of the German monk, Berthold Schwarz, who is commonly credited with the invention of it. It was employed in 1257 at the siege of Niebla, in Spain. It was described in an Arab treatise of the thirteenth century. In A.D. 811 the Emperor Leo employed fire-arms. "Greek-fire" is supposed to have been gunpowder mixed with resin or petroleum, and thrown in the form of fuses and explosive shells. It was introduced from Egypt A.D. 668. In A.D. 690 the Arabs used fire-arms against Mecca, bringing the knowledge of them from India. *In* A.D. 80 *the Chinese obtained from India a knowledge of gunpowder.* There is reason to believe that the Carthaginian (Phœnician) general, Hannibal, used gunpowder in breaking a way for his army over the Alps. The Romans, who were ignorant of its use, said that Hannibal made his way by making fires against the rocks, and pouring vinegar and water over the ashes. It is evident that fire and vinegar would have no effect on masses of the Alps great enough to arrest the march of an army. Dr. William Maginn has suggested that the wood was probably burnt by Hannibal to obtain charcoal; and the word which has been translated "vinegar" probably signified some preparation of nitre and sulphur, and that Hannibal made gunpowder and blew up the rocks. The same author suggests that the story of Hannibal breaking loose from the mountains where he was surrounded on all sides by the Romans, and in danger of starvation, by fastening firebrands to the horns of two thousand oxen, and sending them rushing at night among the terrified Romans, simply refers to the use of rockets. As Maginn well asks, how could Hannibal be in danger of starvation when he had two thousand oxen to spare for such an experiment? And why should the veteran Roman troops have been so terrified and panic-stricken by a lot of cattle with firebrands on their horns? At the battle of Lake Trasymene, between Hannibal and Flaminius, we have another curious piece of information which goes far to confirm the belief that Hannibal was familiar with the use of gunpowder. In the midst of the battle there was, say the Roman historians, an "earthquake;" the earth reeled under the feet of the soldiers, a tremendous crash was heard, a fog or smoke covered the scene, the earth broke open, and the rocks fell upon the heads of the Romans. This reads very much as if the Carthaginians had decoyed the Romans into a pass where they had already planted a mine, and had exploded it at the proper moment to throw them into a panic. Earthquakes do not cast rocks up in the air to fall on men's heads!

And that this is not all surmise is shown by the fact that a city of India, in the time of Alexander the Great, defended itself by the use of gunpowder: it was said to be a favorite of the gods, because thunder and lightning came from its walls to resist the attacks of its assailants.

As the Hebrews were a branch of the Phœnician race, it is not surprising that we find some things in their history which look very much like legends of gunpowder.

When Korah, Dathan, and Abiram led a rebellion against Moses, Moses separated the faithful from the unfaithful, and thereupon "the ground clave asunder that was under them: and the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed them up, and their houses, and all the men that appertained unto Korah, and all their goods. . . . And there came out a fire from the Lord, and consumed the two hundred and fifty men that offered incense. . . . But on the morrow all the congregation of the children of Israel murmured against Moses and against Aaron, saying, Ye have killed the people of the Lord." (Numb. xvi., 31–41.)

This looks very much as if Moses had blown up the rebels with gunpowder.

Roger Bacon, who himself rediscovered gunpowder, was of opinion that the event described in Judges vii., where Gideon captured the camp of the Midianites with the roar of trumpets, the crash caused by the breaking of innumerable pitchers, and the flash of a multitude of lanterns, had reference to the use of gunpowder; that the noise made by the breaking of the pitchers represented the detonation of an explosion, the flame of the lights the blaze, and the noise of the trumpets the thunder of the gunpowder. We can understand, in this wise, the results that followed; but we cannot otherwise understand how the breaking of pitchers, the flashing of lamps, and the clangor of trumpets would throw an army into panic, until "every man's sword was set against his fellow, and the host fled to Beth-shittah;" and this, too, without any attack upon the part of the Israelites, for "they stood every man in his place around the camp; and all the host ran and cried and fled."

If it was a miraculous interposition in behalf of the Jews, the Lord could have scared the Midianites out of their wits without the smashed pitchers and lanterns; and certain it is the pitchers and lanterns would not have done the work without a miraculous interposition.

Having traced the knowledge of gunpowder back to the most remote times, and to the different races which were descended from Atlantis, we are not surprised to find in the legends of Greek mythology events described which are only explicable by supposing that the Atlanteans possessed the secret of this powerful explosive.

A rebellion sprang up in Atlantis (see Murray's "Manual of Mythology," p. 30) against Zeus; it is known in mythology as the "War of the Titans:"

> "The struggle lasted many years, all the might which the Olympians could bring to bear being useless, until, on the advice of Gæa, Zeus set free the Kyklopes and the Hekatoncheires" (that is, brought the ships into play), "of whom the former fashioned *thunder-bolts* for him, while the latter advanced on his side with *force equal to the shock of an earthquake. The earth trembled down to lowest Tartarus* as Zeus now appeared with his *terrible weapon* and new allies. Old Chaos thought his hour had come, as from a *continuous blaze of thunder-bolts the earth took fire*, and the waters seethed in the sea. The rebels were partly slain or consumed, and partly hurled into *deep chasms, with rocks and hills reeling after them.*"

Do not these words picture the explosion of a mine with a "force equal to the shock of an earthquake?"

We have already shown that the Kyklopes and Hekatoncheires were probably great war-ships, armed with some explosive material in the nature of gunpowder.

Zeus, the king of Atlantis, was known as "the thunderer," and was represented armed with thunder-bolts.

Some ancient nation must, in the most remote ages, have invented gunpowder; and is it unreasonable to attribute it to that "great original race" rather than to any one people of their posterity, who seem to have borrowed all the other arts from them; and who, during many thousands of years, did not add a single new invention to the list they received from Atlantis?

Iron.—We have seen that the Greek mythological legends asserted that before the submergence of the great race over whom their gods reigned there had been not only an Age of Bronze but an Age of Iron. This metal was known to the Egyptians in the earliest ages; fragments of iron have been found in the oldest pyramids. The Iron Age in Northern Europe far antedated intercourse with the Greeks or Romans. In the mounds of the Mississippi Valley, as I have shown, the remains of iron implements have been found. In the "Mercurio Peruano" (tom. i., p. 201, 1791) it is stated that "anciently the Peruvian sovereigns worked magnificent iron mines at Ancoriames, on the west shore of Lake Titicaca." "It is remarkable," says Molina, "that iron, which has been thought unknown to the ancient Americans, had particular names in some of their tongues." In official Peruvian it was called *quillay*, and in Chilian *panilic.* The Mound Builders fashioned implements out of meteoric iron. (Foster's "Prehistoric Races," p. 333.)

As we find this metal known to man in the earliest ages on both sides of the Atlantic, the presumption is very strong that it was borrowed by the nations, east and west, from Atlantis.

Paper.—The same argument holds good as to paper. The oldest Egyptian monuments contain pictures of the papyrus roll; while in Mexico, as I have shown, a beautiful paper was manufactured and formed into books shaped like our own. In Peru a paper was made of plantain leaves, and books were common in the earlier ages. Humboldt mentions books of hieroglyphical writings among the Panoes, which were "bundles of their paper resembling our volumes in quarto."

Silk Manufacture.—The manufacture of a woven fabric of great beauty out of the delicate fibre of the egg-cocoon of a worm could only have originated among a people who had attained the highest degree of civilization; it implies the art of weaving by delicate instruments, a dense population, a patient, skilful, artistic people, a sense of the beautiful, and a wealthy and luxurious class to purchase such costly fabrics.

We trace it back to the most remote ages. In the introduction to the "History of Hindostan," or rather of the Mohammedan Dynasties, by Mohammed Cassim, it is stated that in the year 3870 B.C. an Indian king sent various silk stuffs as a present to the King of Persia. The art of making silk was known in China more than two thousand six hundred years before the Christian era, at the time when we find them first possessed of civilization. The Phœnicians dealt in silks in the most remote past; they imported them from India and sold them along the shores of the Mediterranean. It is probable that the Egyptians understood and practised the art of manufacturing silk. It was woven in the island of Cos in the time of Aristotle. The "Babylonish garment" referred to in Joshua (chap. vii., 21), and for secreting which Achan lost his life, was probably a garment of silk; it was rated above silver and gold in value.

It is not a violent presumption to suppose that an art known to the Hindoos 3870 B.C., and to the Chinese and Phœnicians at the very beginning of their history—an art so curious, so extraordinary—may have dated back to Atlantean times.

Civil Government.—Mr. Baldwin shows ("Prehistoric Nations," p. 114) that the Cushites, the successors of the Atlanteans, whose very ancient empire extended from Spain to Syria, were the first to establish independent municipal republics, with the right of the people to govern themselves; and that this system was perpetuated in the great Phœnician communities; in "the fierce democracies" of ancient Greece; in the "village republics" of the African Berbers and the Hindoos; in the "free cities" of the Middle Ages in Europe; and in the independent governments of the Basques, which continued down to our own day. The Cushite state was an aggregation of municipalities, each possessing the right of self-government, but subject within prescribed limits to a general authority; in other words, it was precisely the form of government possessed to-day by the United States. It is a surprising thought that the perfection of modern government may be another perpetuation of Atlantean civilization.

Agriculture.—The Greek traditions of "the golden apples of the Hesperides" and "the golden fleece" point to Atlantis. The allusions to the golden apples indicate that tradition regarded the "Islands of the Blessed" in the Atlantic Ocean as a place of orchards. And when we turn to Egypt we find that in the remotest times many of our modern garden and field plants were there cultivated. When the Israelites murmured in the wilderness against Moses, they cried out (Numb., chap. xi., 4, 5), "Who shall give us flesh to eat? We remember the fish which we did eat in Egypt freely; the cucumbers, and the melons, and the leeks, and the onions, and the garlic." The Egyptians also cultivated wheat, barley, oats, flax, hemp, etc. In fact, if we were to take away from civilized man the domestic animals, the cereals, and the field and garden vegetables possessed by the Egyptians at the very dawn of history, there would be very little left for the granaries or the tables of the world.

Astronomy.—The knowledge of the ancients as to astronomy was great and accurate. Callisthenes, who accompanied Alexander the Great to Babylon, sent to Aristotle a series of Chaldean astronomical observations which he found preserved there, recorded on tablets of baked clay, and extending back as far as 2234 B.C. Humboldt says, "The Chaldeans knew the mean motions of the moon with an exactness which induced the Greek astronomers to use their calculations for the foundation of a lunar theory." The Chaldeans knew the true nature of comets, and could foretell their reappearance. "A lens of considerable power was found in the ruins of Babylon; it was an inch and a half in diameter and nine-tenths of an inch thick." (Layard's "Nineveh and Babylon," pp. 16, 17.) Nero used optical glasses when he watched the fights of the gladiators; they are supposed to have come from Egypt and the East. Plutarch speaks of optical instruments used by Archimedes "to manifest to the eye the largeness of the sun." "There are actual astronomical calculations in existence, with calendars formed upon them, which eminent astronomers of England and France admit to be genuine and true, and which carry back the antiquity of the science of astronomy, together with the constellations, to within a few years of the Deluge, even on the longer chronology of the Septuagint." ("The Miracle in Stone," p. 142.) Josephus attributes the invention of the constellations to the family of the antediluvian Seth, the son of Adam, while Origen affirms that it was asserted in the Book of Enoch that in the time of that patriarch the constellations were already divided and named. The Greeks associated the origin of astronomy with Atlas and Hercules, Atlantean kings or heroes. The Egyptians regarded Taut (At?) or Thoth, or *At*-hotes, as the originator of both astronomy and the alphabet; doubtless he represented a civilized people, by whom their country was originally colonized. Bailly and others assert that astronomy "must have been established when the summer solstice was in the first degree of Virgo, and that the solar and lunar zodiacs were of similar antiquity, which would be about four thousand years before the Christian era. They suppose the originators to have lived in about the *fortieth degree of north latitude*, and to have been a highly-civilized people." It will be remembered that the fortieth degree of north latitude passed through Atlantis. Plato knew ("Dialogues, Phædo," 108) that the earth "is a body in the centre of the heavens" held in equipoise. He speaks of it as a "round body," a "globe;" he even understood that it revolved on its axis, and that these revolutions produced day and night. He says—"Dialogues, Timæus"—"The earth circling around the pole (which is extended through the universe) he made to be the artificer of night and day." All this Greek learning was probably drawn from the Egyptians.

Only among the Atlanteans in Europe and America do we find traditions preserved as to the origin of all the principal inventions which have raised man from a savage to a civilized condition. We can give in part the very names of the inventors.

Starting with the Chippeway legends, and following with the Bible and Phœnician records, we make a table like the appended:

The Invention or Discovery.	The Race.	The Inventors.
Fire	Atlantean	Phos, Phur, and Phlox.
The bow and arrow	Chippeway	Manaboshu.
The use of flint	"	"
The use of copper	"	"
The manufacture of bricks	Atlantean	Autochthon and Technites.
Agriculture and hunting	"	Argos and Agrotes.
Village life, and the rearing of flocks	"	Amynos and Magos.
The use of salt	"	Misor and Sydyk.
The use of letters	"	Taautos, or Taut.
Navigation	"	The Cabiri, or Corybantes.
The art of music	Hebrew	Jubal.
Metallurgy, and the use of iron	"	Tubal-cain.
The syrinx	Greek	Pan.
The lyre	"	Hermes.

We cannot consider all these evidences of the vast antiquity of the great inventions upon which our civilization mainly rests, including the art of writing, which, as I have shown, dates back far beyond the beginning of history; we cannot remember that the origin of all the great food-plants, such as wheat, oats, barley, rye, and maize, is lost in the remote past; and that all the domesticated animals, the horse, the ass, the ox, the sheep, the goat, and the hog had been reduced to subjection to man in ages long previous to written history, without having the conclusion forced upon us irresistibly that beyond Egypt and Greece, beyond Chaldea and China, there existed a mighty civilization, of which these states were but the broken fragments.

CHAPTER X.

THE ARYAN COLONIES FROM ATLANTIS.

WE come now to another question: "Did the Aryan or Japhetic race come from Atlantis?"

If the Aryans *are* the Japhetic race, and if Japheth was one of the sons of the patriarch who escaped from the Deluge, then assuredly, if the tradition of Genesis be true, the Aryans came from the drowned land, to wit, Atlantis. According to Genesis, the descendants of the Japheth who escaped out of the Flood with Noah are the Ionians, the inhabitants of the Morea, the dwellers on the Cilician coast of Asia Minor, the Cyprians, the Dodoneans of Macedonia, the Iberians, and the Thracians. These are all now recognized as Aryans, except the Iberians.

"From non-Biblical sources," says Winchell, "we obtain further information respecting the early dispersion of the Japhethites or Indo-Europeans—called also Aryans. *All determinations confirm the Biblical account of their primitive residence in the same country with the Hamites and Semites.* Rawlinson informs us that even Aryan roots are mingled with Presemitic in some of the old inscriptions of Assyria. The precise region where these three families dwelt *in a common home* has not been pointed out." ("Preadamites," p. 43.)

I have shown in the chapter in relation to Peru that all the languages of the Hamites, Semites, and Japhethites are varieties of one aboriginal speech.

The centre of the Aryan migrations (according to popular opinion) within the Historical Period was Armenia. Here too is Mount Ararat, where it is said the ark rested—another identification with the Flood regions, as it represents the usual transfer of the Atlantis legend by an Atlantean people to a high mountain in their new home.

Now turn to a map: Suppose the ships of Atlantis to have reached the shores of Syria, at the eastern end of the Mediterranean, where dwelt a people who, as we have seen, used the Central American Maya alphabet; the Atlantis ships are then but two hundred miles distant from Armenia. But these ships need not stop at Syria, they can go by the Dardanelles and the Black Sea, by uninterrupted water communication, to the shores of Armenia itself. If we admit, then, that it was from Armenia the Aryans stocked Europe and India, there is no reason why the original population of Armenia should not have been themselves colonists from Atlantis.

But we have seen that in the earliest ages, before the first Armenian migration of the historical Aryans, a people went from Iberian Spain and settled in Ireland, and the language of this people, it is now admitted, is Aryan. And these Iberians were originally, according to tradition, from the *West*.

The Mediterranean Aryans are known to have been in Southeastern Europe, along the shores of the Mediterranean, 2000 B.C. They at that early date possessed the plough; also wheat, rye, barley, gold, silver, and bronze. Aryan faces are found depicted upon the monuments of Egypt, painted four thousand years before the time of Christ. "The conflicts between the Kelts (an Aryan race) and the Iberians were far anterior in date to the settlements of the Phœnicians, Greeks, Carthaginians, and Noachites on the coasts of the Mediterranean Sea." ("American Cyclopædia," art. *Basques.*) There is reason to believe that these Kelts were originally part of the population and Empire of Atlantis. We are told (Rees's "British Encyclopædia," art. *Titans*) that "Mercury, one of the Atlantean gods, was placed as ruler over the Celtæ, and became their great divinity." F. Pezron, in his "Antiquity of the Celtæ," makes out that the Celtæ were the same as the Titans, the giant race who rebelled in Atlantis, and "that their princes were the same with the giants of Scripture." He adds that the word Titan "is perfect Celtic, and comes from *tit*, the earth, and *ten* or *den*, man, and hence the Greeks very properly also called them *terrigincæ*, or earth-born." And it will be remembered that Plato uses the same phrase when he speaks of the race into which Poseidon intermarried as "the earth-born primeval men of that country."

The Greeks, who are Aryans, traced their descent from the people who were destroyed by the Flood, as did other races clearly Aryan.

"The nations who are comprehended under the common appellation of Indo-European," says Max Müller—"the Hindoos, the Persians, the Celts, Germans, Romans, Greeks, and Slavs—do not only share the same words and the same grammar, slightly modified in each country, but they seem to have likewise preserved a mass of popular traditions which had grown up before they left their common home."

> "Bonfey, L. Geiger, and other students of the ancient Indo-European languages, have recently advanced the opinion that the original home of the Indo-European races must be sought in Europe, because their stock of words is rich in the names of plants and animals, and contains names of seasons that are not found in tropical countries or anywhere in Asia." ("American Cyclopædia," art. *Ethnology*.)

By the study of comparative philology, or the seeking out of the words common to the various branches of the Aryan race before they separated, we are able to reconstruct an outline of the civilization of that ancient people. Max Müller has given this subject great study, and availing ourselves of his researches we can determine the following facts as to the progenitors of the Aryan stock: They were a civilized race; they possessed the institution of marriage; they recognized the relationship of father, mother, son, daughter, grandson, brother, sister, mother-in-law, father-in-law, son-in-law, daughter-in-law, brother-in-law, and sister-in-law, and had separate words for each of these relationships, which we are only able to express by adding the words "in-law." They recognized also the condition of widows, or "the husbandless." They lived in an organized society, governed by a king. They possessed houses with doors and solid walls. They had wagons and carriages. They possessed family names. They dwelt in towns and cities, on highways. *They were not hunters or nomads.* They were a peaceful people; the warlike words in the different Aryan languages cannot be traced back to this original race. They lived in a country having few wild beasts; the only wild animals whose names can be assigned to this parent stock being the bear, the wolf, and the serpent. The name of the elephant, "the beast with a hand," occurs only twice in the "Rig-Veda;" a singular omission if the Aryans were from time immemorial an Asiatic race; and "when it does occur, it is in such a way as to show that he was still an object of wonder and terror to them." (Whitney's "Oriental and Linguistic Studies," p. 26.) They possessed nearly all the domestic animals we now have—the ox and the cow, the horse, the dog, the sheep, the goat, the hog, the donkey, and the goose. They divided the year into twelve months. They were farmers; they used the plough; their name as a race (Aryan) was derived from it; they were, *par excellence*, ploughmen; they raised various kinds of grain, including flax, barley, hemp, and wheat; they had mills and millers, and ground their corn. The presence of millers shows that they had proceeded beyond the primitive condition where each family ground its corn in its own mill. They used fire, and cooked and baked their food; they wove cloth and wore clothing; they spun wool; they possessed the different metals, *even iron:* they had gold. The word for "water" also meant "salt made from water," from which it might be inferred that the water with which they were familiar was salt-water. It is evident they manufactured salt by evaporating saltwater. They possessed boats and ships. They had progressed so far as to perfect "a decimal system of enumeration, in itself," says Max Müller, "one of the most marvellous achievements of the human mind, based on an abstract conception of quantity, regulated by a philosophical classification, and yet conceived, nurtured, and finished before the soil of Europe was trodden by Greek, Roman, Slav, or Teuton."

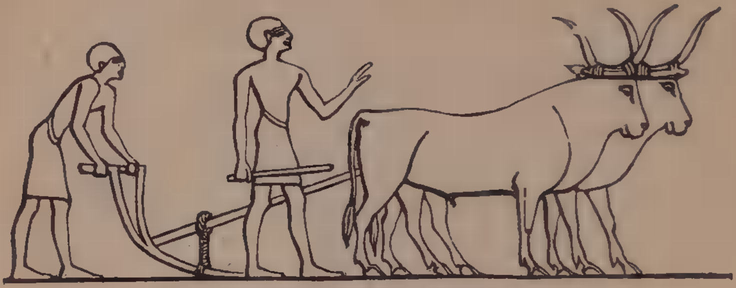
ANCIENT EGYPTIAN PLOUGH.

And herein we find another evidence of relationship between the Aryans and the people of Atlantis. Although Plato does not tell us that the Atlanteans possessed the decimal system of numeration, nevertheless there are many things in his narrative which point to that conclusion: "There were ten kings ruling over ten provinces; the whole country was divided into military districts or squares ten stadia each way; the total force of chariots was ten thousand; the great ditch or canal was one hundred feet deep and ten thousand stadia long; there were one hundred Nereids," etc. In the Peruvian colony the decimal system clearly obtained: "The army had heads of ten, fifty, a hundred, five hundred, a thousand, ten thousand. . . . The community at large was registered in groups, under the control of officers over tens, fifties, hundreds, and so on." (Herbert Spencer, "Development of Political Institutions," chap. x.) The same division into tens and hundreds obtained among the Anglo-Saxons.

Where, we ask, could this ancient nation, which existed before Greek was Greek, Celt was Celt, Hindoo was Hindoo, or Goth was Goth, have been located? The common opinion says, in Armenia or Bactria, in Asia. But where in Asia could they have found a country so peaceful as to know no terms for war or bloodshed;—a country so civilized as to possess no wild beasts save the bear, wolf, and serpent? No people could have been developed in Asia without bearing in its language traces of century-long battles for life with the rude and barbarous races around them; no nation could have fought for ages for existence against "man-eating" tigers, lions, elephants, and hyenas, without bearing the memory of these things in their tongue. A tiger, identical with that of Bengal, still exists around Lake Aral, in Asia; from time to time it is seen in Siberia. "The last tiger killed in 1828 was on the Lena, in latitude fifty-two degrees thirty minutes, in a climate colder than that of St. Petersburg and Stockholm."

The fathers of the Aryan race must have dwelt for many thousand years so completely protected from barbarians and wild beasts that they at last lost all memory of them, and all words descriptive of them; and where could this have been possible save in some great, long-civilized land, surrounded by the sea, and isolated from the attack of the savage tribes that occupied the rest of the world? And if such a great civilized nation had dwelt for centuries in Asia, Europe, or Africa, why have not their monuments long ago been discovered and identified? Where is the race who are their natural successors, and who must have continued to live after them in that sheltered and happy land, where they knew no human and scarcely any animal enemies? Why would any people have altogether left such a home? Why, when their civilization had spread to the ends of the earth, did it cease to exist in the peaceful region where it originated?

Savage nations cannot usually count beyond five. This people had names for the numerals up to one hundred, and the power, doubtless, of combining these to still higher powers, as three hundred, five hundred, ten hundred, etc. Says a high authority, "If any more proof were wanted as to the reality of that period which must have preceded the dispersion of the Aryan race, we might appeal to the Aryan numerals as irrefragable evidence of that long-continued intellectual life which characterizes that period." Such a degree of progress implies necessarily an alphabet, writing, commerce, and trade, even as the existence of words for boats and ships has already implied navigation.

In what have we added to the civilization of this ancient people? Their domestic animals were the same as our own, except one fowl adopted from America. In the past ten thousand years we have added one bird to their list of domesticated animals! They raised wheat and wool, and spun and wove as we do, except that we have added some mechanical contrivances to produce the same results. Their metals are ours. Even iron, the triumph, as we had supposed, of more modern times, they had already discovered. And it must not be forgotten that Greek mythology tells us that the god-like race who dwelt on Olympus, that great island "in the midst of the Atlantic," in the remote west, wrought in iron; and we find the remains of an iron sword and meteoric iron weapons in the mounds of the Mississippi Valley, while the name of the metal is found in the ancient languages of Peru and Chili, and the Incas worked in iron on the shores of Lake Titicaca.

A still further evidence of the civilization of this ancient race is found in the fact that, before the dispersion from their original home, the Aryans had reached such a degree of development that they possessed a regularly organized religion: they worshipped God, they believed in an evil spirit, they believed in a heaven for the just. All this presupposes temples, priests, sacrifices, and an orderly state of society.

We have seen that Greek mythology is really a history of the kings and queens of Atlantis.

When we turn to that other branch of the great Aryan family, the Hindoos, we find that their gods are also the kings of Atlantis. The Hindoo god Varuna is conceded to be the Greek god Uranos, who was the founder of the royal family of Atlantis.

In the Veda we find a hymn to "King Varuna," in which occurs this passage:

> "This earth, too, belongs to Varuna, *the king*, and this wide sky, with its ends far apart. *The two seas are Varuna's loins;* he is contained also in this drop of water."

Again in the Veda we find another hymn to King Varuna:

> "He who knows the place of the birds that fly through the sky; who on the waters knows *the ships*. He, the upholder of order, who knows *the twelve months with the offspring of each*, and knows *the month that is engendered afterward*."

This verse would seem to furnish additional proof that the Vedas were written by a maritime people; and in the allusion to the twelve months we are reminded of the Peruvians, who also divided the year into twelve parts of thirty days each, and afterward added six days to complete the year. The Egyptians and Mexicans also had intercalary days for the same purpose.

But, above all, it must be remembered that the Greeks, an Aryan race, in their mythological traditions, show the closest relationship to Atlantis. *At*-tika and *At*-hens are reminiscences of *Ad*, and we are told that Poseidon, god and founder of Atlantis, founded Athens. We find in the "Eleusinian mysteries" an Atlantean institution; their influence during the whole period of Greek history down to the coming of Christianity was extraordinary; and even then this masonry of Pre-Christian days, in which kings and emperors begged to be initiated, was, it is claimed, continued to our own times in our own Freemasons, who trace their descent back to "a Dionysiac fraternity which originated in Attika." And just as we have seen the Saturnalian festivities of Italy descending from Atlantean harvest-feasts, so these Eleusinian mysteries can be traced back to Plato's island. Poseidon was at the base of them; the first hierophant, Eumolpus, was "a son of Poseidon," and all the ceremonies were associated with seed-time and harvest, and with Demeter or Ceres, an Atlantean goddess, daughter of Chronos, who first taught the Greeks to use the plough and to plant barley. And, as the "Carnival" is a survival of the "Saturnalia," so Masonry is a survival of the Eleusinian mysteries. The roots of the institutions of to-day reach back to the Miocene Age.

We have seen that Zeus, the king of Atlantis, whose tomb was shown at Crete, was transformed into the Greek god Zeus; and in like manner we find him reappearing among the Hindoos as Dyaus. He is called "Dyaus-pitar," or God the Father, as among the Greeks we have "Zeus-pater," which became among the Romans "Jupiter."

The strongest connection, however, with the Atlantean system is shown in the case of the Hindoo god Deva-Nahusha.

We have seen in the chapter on Greek mythology that Dionysos was a son of Zeus and grandson of Poseidon, being thus identified with Atlantis. "When he arrived at manhood," said the Greeks, "he set out on a journey through all known countries, even into the remotest parts of *India*, instructing the people, as he proceeded, how to tend the vine, and how to practise many other arts of peace, besides teaching them the value of just and honorable dealings. He was praised everywhere as the greatest benefactor of mankind." (Murray's "Mythology," p. 119.)

In other words, he represented the great Atlantean civilization, reaching into "the remotest parts of India," and "to all parts of the known world," from America to Asia. In consequence of the connection of this king with the vine, he was converted in later times into the dissolute god Bacchus. But everywhere the traditions concerning him refer us back to Atlantis. "All the legends of Egypt, India, Asia Minor, and the older Greeks describe him as a king very great during his life, and deified after death. . . . Amon, king of Arabia or Ethiopia, married Rhea, sister of Chronos, who reigned over Italy, Sicily, and *certain countries of Northern Africa.*" Dionysos, according to the Egyptians, was the son of Amon by the beautiful Amalthea. Chronos and Amon had a prolonged war; Dionysos defeated Chronos and captured his capital, dethroned him, and put his son Zeus in his place; Zeus reigned nobly, and won a great fame. Dionysos succeeded his father Amon, and "became the greatest of sovereigns. He extended his sway in all the neighboring countries, and completed the conquest of India. . . . He gave much attention to the Cushite colonies in Egypt, greatly increasing their strength, intelligence, and prosperity." (Baldwin's "Prehistoric Nations," p. 283.)

When we turn to the Hindoo we still find this Atlantean king.

In the Sanscrit books we find reference to a god called Deva-Nahusha, who has been identified by scholars with Dionysos. He is connected "with *the oldest history and mythology in the world.*" He is said to have been a contemporary with Indra, king of *Meru*, who was also deified, and who appears in the Veda as a principal form of representation of the Supreme Being.

> "The warmest colors of imagination are used in portraying the greatness of Deva-Nahusha. For a time he had sovereign control of affairs in Meru; he conquered the seven dwipas, and led his armies *through all the known countries of the world;* by means of matchless wisdom and miraculous heroism *he made his empire universal.*" (*Ibid.*, p. 287.)

Here we see that the great god Indra, chief god of the Hindoos, was formerly king of Meru, and that Deva-Nahusha (De(va)nushas—De-onyshas) had also been king of Meru; and we must remember that Theopompus tell us that the island of Atlantis was inhabited by the "Meropes;" and Lenormant has reached the conclusion that the first people of the ancient world were "the men of Mero."

We can well believe, when we see traces of the same civilization extending from Peru and Lake Superior to Armenia and the frontiers of China, that this Atlantean kingdom was indeed "universal," and extended through all the "known countries of the world."

"We can see in the legends that Pŭrūrăvas, Nahusha, and others had no connection with Sanscrit history. They are referred to ages very long anterior to the Sanscrit immigration, and must have been great personages celebrated in the traditions of the natives or Dasyus. . . . Pŭrūrăvas was a king of great renown, *who ruled over thirteen islands of the ocean*, altogether surrounded by inhuman (or superhuman) personages; he engaged in a contest with Brahmans, and perished. Nahusha, mentioned by Maull, and in many legends, as famous for hostility to the Brahmans, lived at the time when Indra ruled on earth. He was a very great king, who ruled with justice a mighty empire, and *attained the sovereignty of three worlds*." (Europe, Africa, and America?) "Being intoxicated with pride, he was arrogant to Brahmans, compelled them to bear his palanquin, and even dared to touch one of them with his foot" (kicked him?), "whereupon he was transformed into a serpent." (Baldwin's "Prehistoric Nations," p. 291.)

The Egyptians placed Dionysos (Osiris) at the close of the period of their history which was assigned to the gods, that is, toward the close of the great empire of Atlantis.

When we remember that the hymns of the "Rig-Veda" are admitted to date back to a vast antiquity, and are written in a language that had ceased to be a living tongue thousands of years ago, we can almost fancy those hymns preserve some part of the songs of praise uttered of old upon the island of Atlantis. Many of them seem to belong to sun-worship, and might have been sung with propriety upon the high places of Peru:

"In the beginning there arose *the golden child*. He was the one born Lord of all that is. He established the earth and the sky. Who is the god to whom we shall offer sacrifice?

> "He who gives life; He who gives strength; whose command all the bright gods" (the stars?) "revere; whose light is immortality; whose shadow is death. . . . He who through his power is the one God of the breathing *and awakening world.* He who governs all, man and beast. He whose greatness these snowy mountains, whose greatness the sea proclaims, with the distant river. *He through whom the sky is bright and the earth firm.* . . . He who measured out the light in the air. . . . Wherever the mighty water-clouds went, where they placed the seed and lit the fire, thence arose He who is the sole life of the bright gods. . . . He to whom heaven and earth, standing firm by His will, look up, trembling inwardly. . . . *May he not destroy us;* He, the creator of the earth; He, the righteous, who created heaven. He also created *the bright and mighty waters.*"

This is plainly a hymn to the sun, or to a god whose most glorious representative was the sun. It is the hymn of a people near the sea; it was not written by a people living in the heart of Asia. It was the hymn of a people living in a volcanic country, who call upon their god to keep the earth "firm" and not to destroy them. It was sung at daybreak, as the sun rolled up the sky over an "awakening world."

The fire (Agni) upon the altar was regarded as a messenger rising from the earth to the sun:

> "Youngest of the gods, their messenger, their invoker. . . . For thou, O sage, goest wisely between these two creations (heaven and earth, God and man) like a friendly messenger between two hamlets."

The dawn of the day (Ushas), part of the sun-worship, became also a god:

> "She shines upon us like a young wife, rousing every living being to go to his work. When the fire had to be kindled by man, she made the light by striking down the darkness."

As the Egyptians and the Greeks looked to a happy abode (an under-world) in the west, beyond the waters, so the Aryan's paradise was the other side of some body of water. In the

Veda (vii. 56, 24) we find a prayer to the Maruts, the storm-gods: "O, Maruts, may there be to us a strong son, who is a living ruler of men; through whom we may *cross the waters on our way to the happy abode.*" This happy abode is described as "where King Vaivasvata reigns; where the secret place of heaven is; *where the mighty waters are* . . . where there is food and rejoicing . . . where there is happiness and delight; where joy and pleasure reside." (Rig-Veda ix. 113, 7.) This is the paradise beyond the seas; the Elysion; the Elysian Fields of the Greek and the Egyptian, located upon an island in the Atlantic which was destroyed by water. One great chain of tradition binds together these widely separated races.

"The religion of the Veda knows no idols," says Max Müller; "the worship of idols in India is a secondary formation, a degradation of the more primitive worship of ideal gods."

It was pure sun-worship, such as prevailed in Peru on the arrival of the Spaniards. It accords with Plato's description of the religion of Atlantis.

"The Dolphin's Ridge," at the bottom of the Atlantic, or the high land revealed by the soundings taken by the ship *Challenger*, is, as will be seen, of a three-pronged form—one prong pointing toward the west coast of Ireland, another connecting with the north-east coast of South America, and a third near or on the west coast of Africa. It does not follow that the island of Atlantis, at any time while inhabited by civilized people, actually reached these coasts; there is a strong probability that races of men may have found their way there from the three continents of Europe, America, and Africa; or the great continent which once filled the whole bed of the present Atlantic Ocean, and from whose débris geology tells us the Old and New Worlds were constructed, may have been the scene of the development, during immense periods of time, of diverse races of men, occupying different zones of climate.

There are many indications that there were three races of men dwelling on Atlantis. Noah, according to Genesis, had three sons—Shem, Ham, and Japheth—who represented three different races of men of different colors. The Greek legends tell us of the rebellions inaugurated at different times in Olympus. One of these was a rebellion of the Giants, "a race of beings sprung from the blood of Uranos," the great original progenitor of the stock. "Their king or leader was Porphyrion, their most powerful champion Alkyoneus." Their mother was the earth: this probably meant that they represented the common people of a darker hue. They made a desperate struggle for supremacy, but were conquered by Zeus. There were also two rebellions of the Titans. The Titans seem to have had a government of their own, and the names of twelve of their kings are given in the Greek mythology (see Murray, p. 27). They also were of "the blood of Uranos," the Adam of the people. We read, in fact, that Uranos married Gæa (the earth), and had three families: 1, the Titans; 2, the Hekatoncheires; and 3, the Kyklopes. We should conclude that the last two were maritime peoples, and I have shown that their mythical characteristics were probably derived from the appearance of their ships. Here we have, I think, a reference to the three races: 1, the red or sunburnt men, like the Egyptians, the Phœnicians, the Basques, and the Berber and Cushite stocks; 2, the sons of Shem, possibly the yellow or Turanian race; and 3, the whiter men, the Aryans, the Greeks, Kelts, Goths, Slavs, etc. If this view is correct, then we may suppose that colonies of the pale-faced stock may have been sent out from Atlantis to the northern coasts of Europe at different and perhaps widely separated periods of time, from some of which the Aryan families of Europe proceeded; hence the legend, which is found among them, that they were once forced to dwell in a country where the summers were only two months long.

From the earliest times two grand divisions are recognized in the Aryan family: "to the east those who specially called themselves *Arians,* whose descendants inhabited Persia, India, etc.; to the west, the *Yavana*, or the Young Ones, who first emigrated westward, and from whom have descended the various nations that have populated Europe. This is the name (Javan) found in the tenth chapter of Genesis." (Lenormant and Chevallier, "Ancient History of the East," vol. ii., p. 2.) But surely those who "first emigrated westward," the earliest to leave the parent stock, could not be the "Young Ones;" they would be rather the elder brothers. But if we can suppose the Bactrian population to have left Atlantis at an early date, and the Greeks, Latins, and Celts to have left it at a later period, then they would indeed be the "Young Ones" of the family, following on the heels of the earlier migrations, and herein we would find the explanation of the resemblance between the Latin and Celtic tongues. Lenormant says the name of Erin (Ireland) is derived from Aryan; and yet we have seen this island populated and named Erin by races distinctly connected with Spain, Iberia, Africa, and Atlantis.

There is another reason for supposing that the Aryan nations came from Atlantis.

We find all Europe, except a small corner of Spain and a strip along the Arctic Circle, occupied by nations recognized as Aryan; but when we turn to Asia, there is but a corner of it, and that corner in the part *nearest Europe*, occupied by the Aryans. All the rest of that great continent has been filled from immemorial ages by non-Aryan races. There are seven branches of the Aryan family: 1. Germanic or Teutonic; 2. Slavo-Lithuanic; 3. Celtic; 4. Italic; 5. Greek; 6. Iranian or Persian; 7. Sanscritic or Indian; and of these seven branches five dwell on the soil of Europe, and the other two are intrusive races in Asia *from the direction of Europe.* The Aryans in Europe have dwelt there apparently since the close of the Stone Age, if not before it, while the movements of the Aryans in Asia are within the Historical Period, and they appear as intrusive stocks, forming a high caste amid a vast population of a different race. The Vedas are supposed to date back to

2000 B.C., while there is every reason to believe that the Celt inhabited Western Europe 5000 B.C. If the Aryan race had originated in the heart of Asia, why would not its ramifications have extended into Siberia, China, and Japan, and all over Asia? And if the Aryans moved at a comparatively recent date into Europe from Bactria, where are the populations that then inhabited Europe—the men of the ages of stone and bronze? We should expect to find the western coasts of Europe filled with them, just as the eastern coasts of Asia and India are filled with Turanian populations. On the contrary, we know that the Aryans descended upon India from the Punjab, which lies to the *north-west* of that region; and that their traditions represent that they came there from the *west*, to wit, from the direction of Europe and Atlantis.

Chapter XI.

ATLANTIS RECONSTRUCTED.

The farther we go back in time toward the era of Atlantis, the more the evidences multiply that we are approaching the presence of a great, wise, civilized race. For instance, we find the Egyptians, Ethiopians, and Israelites, from the earliest ages, refusing to eat the flesh of swine. The Western nations departed from this rule, and in these modern days we are beginning to realize the dangers of this article of food, on account of the *trichina* contained in it; and when we turn to the Talmud, we are told that it was forbidden to the Jews, "because of a small insect which infests it."

The Egyptians, the Ethiopians, the Phœnicians, the Hebrews, and others of the ancient races, practised circumcision. It was probably resorted to in Atlantean days, and imposed as a religious duty, to arrest one of the most dreadful scourges of the human race—a scourge which continued to decimate the people of America, arrested their growth, and paralyzed their civilization. Circumcision stamped out the disease in Atlantis; we read of one Atlantean king, the Greek god Ouranos, who, in a time of plague, compelled his whole army and the armies of his allies to undergo the rite. The colonies that went out to Europe carried the practice but not the disease out of which it originated with them; and it was not until Columbus reopened communication with the infected people of the West India Islands that the scourge crossed the Atlantic and "turned Europe," as one has expressed it, "into a charnal-house."

Life-insurance statistics show, nowadays, that the average life and health of the Hebrew is much greater than that of other men; and he owes this to the retention of practices and beliefs imposed ten thousand years ago by the great, wise race of Atlantis.

Let us now, with all the facts before us, gleaned from various sources, reconstruct, as near as may be, the condition of the antediluvians.

They dwelt upon a great island, near which were other smaller islands, probably east and west of them, forming stepping-stones, as it were, toward Europe and Africa in one direction, and the West India Islands and America in the other. There were volcanic mountains upon the main island, rising to a height of fifteen hundred feet, with their tops covered with perpetual snow. Below these were elevated table-lands, upon which were the royal establishments. Below these, again, was "the great plain of Atlantis." There were four rivers flowing north, south, east, and west from a central point. The climate was like that of the Azores, mild and pleasant; the soil volcanic and fertile, and suitable at its different elevations for the growth of the productions of the tropical and temperate zones.

The people represented at least two different races: a dark brown reddish race, akin to the Central Americans, the Berbers and the Egyptians; and a white race, like the Greeks, Goths, Celts, and Scandinavians. Various battles and struggles followed between the different peoples for supremacy. The darker race seems to have been, physically, a smaller race, with small hands; the lighter-colored race was much larger—hence the legends of the Titans and Giants. The Guanches of the Canary Islands were men of very great stature. As the works of the Bronze Age represent a small-handed race, and as the races who possessed the ships and gunpowder joined in the war against the Giants, we might conclude that the dark races were the more civilized, that they were the metal-workers and navigators.

The fact that the same opinions and customs exist on both sides of the ocean implies identity of origin; it might be argued that the fact that the explanation of many customs existing on both hemispheres is to be found only in America, implies that the primeval stock existed in America, the emigrating portion of the population carrying away the custom, but forgetting the reason for it. The fact that domestic cattle and the great cereals, wheat, oats, barley, and rye, are found in Europe and not in America, would imply that after population moved to Atlantis from America civilization was developed in Atlantis, and that in the later ages communication was closer and more constant between Atlantis and Europe than between Atlantis and America. In the case of the bulky domestic animals, it would be more difficult to transport them, in the open vessels of that day, from Atlantis across the wider expanse of sea to America, than it would be to carry them by way of the now submerged islands in front of the Mediterranean Sea to the coast of Spain. It may be, too, that the climate of Spain and Italy was better adapted to the growth of wheat, barley, oats and rye, than maize; while the drier atmosphere of America was better suited to the latter plant. Even now comparatively little wheat or barley is raised in Central America, Mexico, or Peru, and none on the low coasts of those countries; while a smaller quantity of maize, proportionately, is grown in Italy, Spain, and the rest of Western Europe, the rainy climate being unsuited to it. We have seen (p. 60, *ante*) that there is reason to believe that maize was known in a remote period in the drier regions of the Egyptians and Chinese.

As science has been able to reconstruct the history of the migrations of the Aryan race, by the words that exist or fail to appear in the kindred branches of that tongue, so the time will come when a careful comparison of words, customs, opinions, arts existing on the opposite sides of the Atlantic will furnish an approximate sketch of Atlantean history.

The people had attained a high position as agriculturists.

The presence of the plough in Egypt and Peru implies that they possessed that implement. And as the horns and ox-head of Baal show the esteem in which cattle were held among them, we may suppose that they had passed the stage in which the plough was drawn by men, as in Peru and Egypt in ancient times, and in Sweden during the Historical Period, and that it was drawn by oxen or horses. They first domesticated the horse, hence the association of Poseidon or Neptune, a sea-god, with horses; hence the race-courses for horses described by Plato. They possessed sheep, and manufactured woollen goods; they also had goats, dogs, and swine. They raised cotton and made cotton goods; they probably cultivated maize, wheat, oats, barley, rye, tobacco, hemp, and flax, and possibly potatoes; they built aqueducts and practised irrigation; they were architects, sculptors, and engravers; they possessed an alphabet; they worked in tin, copper, bronze, silver, gold, and iron.

During the vast period of their duration, as peace and agriculture caused their population to increase to overflowing, they spread out in colonies east and west to the ends of the earth. This was not the work of a few years, but of many centuries; and the relations between these colonies may have been something like the relation between the different colonies that in a later age were established by the Phœnicians, the Greeks, and the Romans; there was an intermingling with the more ancient races, the *autochthones* of the different lands where they settled; and the same crossing of stocks, which we know to have been continued all through the Historical Period, must have been going on for thousands of years, whereby new races and new dialects were formed; and the result of all this has been that the smaller races of antiquity have grown larger, while all the complexions shade into each other, so that we can pass from the whitest to the darkest by insensible degrees.

In some respects the Atlanteans exhibited conditions similar to those of the British Islands: there were the same, and even greater, race differences in the population; the same plantation of colonies in Europe, Asia, and America; the same carrying of civilization to the ends of the earth. We have seen colonies from Great Britain going out in the third and fifth centuries to settle on the shores of France, in Brittany, representing one of the nationalities and languages of the mother-country—a race Atlantean in origin. In the same way we may suppose Hamitic emigrations to have gone out from Atlantis to Syria, Egypt, and the Barbary States. If we could imagine Highland Scotch, Welsh, Cornish, and Irish populations emigrating *en masse* from England in later times, and carrying to their new lands the civilization of England, with peculiar languages not English, we would have a state of things probably more like the migrations which took place from Atlantis. England, with a civilization Atlantean in origin, peopled by races from the same source, is repeating in these modern times the empire of Zeus and Chronos; and, just as we have seen Troy, Egypt, and Greece warring against the parent race, so in later days we have seen Brittany and the United States separating themselves from England, the race characteristics remaining after the governmental connection had ceased.

In religion the Atlanteans had reached all the great thoughts which underlie our modern creeds. They had attained to the conception of one universal, omnipotent, great First Cause. We find the worship of this One God in Peru and in early Egypt. They looked upon the sun as the mighty emblem, type, and instrumentality of this One God. Such a conception could only have come with civilization. It is not until these later days that science has realized the utter dependence of all earthly life upon the sun's rays:

> "All applications of animal power may be regarded as derived directly or indirectly from the static chemical power of the vegetable substance by which the various organisms and their capabilities are sustained; and this power, in turn, from the kinetic action of the sun's rays.
>
> "Winds and ocean currents, hailstorms and rain, sliding

glaciers, flowing rivers, and falling cascades are the direct offspring of solar heat. All our machinery, therefore, whether driven by the windmill or the water-wheel, by horse-power or by steam—all the results of electrical and electro-magnetic changes—our telegraphs, our clocks, and our watches, all are wound up primarily by the sun.

"The sun is the great source of energy in almost all terrestrial phenomena. From the meteorological to the geographical, from the geological to the biological, in the expenditure and conversion of molecular movements, derived from the sun's rays, must be sought the motive power of all this infinitely varied phantasmagoria."

But the people of Atlantis had gone farther; they believed that the soul of man was immortal, and that he would live again in his material body; in other words, they believed in "the resurrection of the body and the life everlasting." They accordingly embalmed their dead.

The Duke of Argyll ("The Unity of Nature") says:

"We have found in the most ancient records of the Aryan language proof that the indications of religious thought are higher, simpler, and purer as we go back in time, until at last, in the very oldest compositions of human speech which have come down to us, we find the Divine Being spoken of in the sublime language which forms the opening of the Lord's Prayer. The date in absolute chronology of the oldest Vedic literature does not seem to be known. Professor Max Müller, however, considers that it may possibly take us back 5000 years. . . . All we can see with certainty is that the earliest inventions of mankind are the most wonderful that the race has ever made. . . . The first use of fire, and the discovery of the methods by which it can be kindled; the domestication of wild animals; and, above all, the processes by which the various cereals were first developed out of some wild grasses—these are all discoveries with which, in ingenuity and in importance, no subsequent discoveries may compare. They are all unknown to history—all lost in the light of an effulgent dawn."

The Atlanteans possessed an established order of priests; their religious worship was pure and simple. They lived under a kingly government; they had their courts, their judges, their records, their monuments covered with inscriptions, their mines, their founderies, their workshops, their looms, their grist-mills, their boats and sailing-vessels, their highways, aqueducts, wharves, docks, and canals. They had processions, banners, and triumphal arches for their kings and heroes; they built pyramids, temples, round-towers, and obelisks; they practised religious ablutions; they knew the use of the magnet and of gunpowder. In short, they were in the enjoyment of a civilization nearly as high as our own, lacking only the printing-press, and those inventions in which steam, electricity, and magnetism are used. We are told that Deva-Nahusha visited his colonies in Farther India. An empire which reached from the Andes to Hindostan, if not to China, must have been magnificent indeed. In its markets must have met the maize of the Mississippi Valley, the copper of Lake Superior, the gold and silver of Peru and Mexico, the spices of India, the tin of Wales and Cornwall, the bronze of Iberia, the amber of the Baltic, the wheat and barley of Greece, Italy, and Switzerland.

It is not surprising that when this mighty nation sank beneath the waves, in the midst of terrible convulsions, with all its millions of people, the event left an everlasting impression upon the imagination of mankind. Let us suppose that Great Britain should to-morrow meet with a similar fate. What a wild consternation would fall upon her colonies and upon the whole human family! The world might relapse into barbarism, deep and almost universal. William the Conqueror, Richard Cœur de Lion, Alfred the Great, Cromwell, and Victoria might survive only as the gods or demons of later races; but the memory of the cataclysm in which the centre of a universal empire instantaneously went down to death would never be forgotten; it would survive in fragments, more or less complete, in every land on earth; it would outlive the memory of a thousand lesser convulsions of nature; it would survive dynasties, nations, creeds, and languages; it would never be forgotten while man continued to inhabit the face of the globe.

Science has but commenced its work of reconstructing the past and rehabilitating the ancient peoples, and surely there is no study which appeals more strongly to the imagination than that of this drowned nation, the true antediluvians. They were the founders of nearly all our arts and sciences; they were the parents of our fundamental beliefs; they were the first civilizers, the first navigators, the first merchants, the first colonizers of the earth; their civilization was old when Egypt was young, and they had passed away thousands of years before Babylon, Rome, or London were dreamed of. This lost people were our ancestors, their blood flows in our veins; the words we use every day were heard, in their primitive form, in their cities, courts, and temples. Every line of race and thought, of blood and belief, leads back to them.

Nor is it impossible that the nations of the earth may yet employ their idle navies in bringing to the light of day some of the relics of this buried people. Portions of the island lie but a few hundred fathoms beneath the sea; and if expeditions have been sent out from time to time in the past, to resurrect from the depths of the ocean sunken treasure-ships with a few thousand doubloons hidden in their cabins, why should not an attempt be made to reach the buried wonders of Atlantis? A single engraved tablet dredged up from Plato's island would be worth more to science, would more strike the imagination of mankind, than all the gold of Peru, all the monuments of Egypt, and all the terra-cotta fragments gathered from the great libraries of Chaldea.

May not the so-called "Phœnician coins" found on Corvo, one of the Azores, be of Atlantean origin? Is it probable that that great race, pre-eminent as a founder of colonies, could have visited those islands within the Historical Period, and have left them unpeopled, as they were when discovered by the Portuguese?

We are but beginning to understand the past: one hundred years ago the world knew nothing of Pompeii or Herculaneum; nothing of the lingual tie that binds together the Indo-European nations; nothing of the significance of the vast volume of inscriptions upon the tombs and temples of Egypt; nothing of the meaning of the arrow-headed inscriptions of Babylon; nothing of the marvellous civilizations revealed in the remains of Yucatan, Mexico, and Peru. We are on the threshold. Scientific investigation is advancing with giant strides. Who shall say that one hundred years from now the great museums of the world may not be adorned with gems, statues, arms, and implements from Atlantis, while the libraries of the world shall contain translations of its inscriptions, throwing new light upon all the past history of the human race, and all the great problems which now perplex the thinkers of our day?

INDEX.

A.

Abaras, 441.

Acla, 171.

Ad, the people of, 236; "as old as Ad," 277; people of, colonized Arabia, 277; empire of, 278; language of, 278; at base of many races, 282.

Adah, sons of, 280.

Adam, 72; a red man, 193; composed books in Paradise, 236; author of arts and letters, 236, 329.

Ad-amah, 279.

Ad-ami, the, 236, 281.

Ad-im, 279.

Ad-ima, 279.

Adites, ancient people of Arabia, 27, 276; sun-worshippers, 277; red-men, 278.

Aditi, the, 280.

Aditya, the, 280.

Ad, Mashab, 279.

Ad-mi, 281.

Adon, 279.

Adonâi, 425.

Adonis, 425.

Ad; Shed-Ad, ben, 276.

Ægean Sea, 25.

Ælian, 27.

Afghans, 185.

Africa, Egyptian circumnavigation of, 3.

Africans not all negroes, 404; red and white races among, 404, 405; origin of these, 407.

Agatharcides, 278.

Agni, the god, 467.

Agriculture, 141; origin of, 453.

Agros, 329.

Ahuramazda, 89.

Alcinous, Gardens of, 2, 323.

Alexander the Great, 136.

Allah, 425.

Alphabet, the, origin of, 214; Egyptians did not invent the, 214; slow growth of ages, 215; letters added by Greeks and Romans, 216; the Phœnician letters, 216; the Maya alphabet, 216; analyzed, 218; table of alphabets, 219; relation of Phœnician and Egyptian alphabets, 232; antiquity of, 235.

Amasis, King of Egypt, 7.

Ambrosia, 287.

America, Deluge legends of, 98.

American continent described by priests of Egypt, 10; ruled over by Atlantis, 11; Eastern origin of the races, 165, 167, 168; not all red men, 184; not all of same type, 190.

Amon, 465.

Ampheres, son of Poseidon, 13.

Amyander, 7.

Amynos, 329.

Ancestor-worship, 155.

Ancient ships, of Troy, 446; of Rameses the Great, 446; of Sesostris, 447; of Syracuse, 447; of the Romans, 447; of the Veneti, 447.

Animal-worship, 148.

Antediluvian patriarchs, 27; kings of Chaldea, 27.

Antediluvians, the, possessed an alphabet, 235.

Antlan, 168, 171.

Anubis, 236.

Apache, the, Flood legends, 117.

Apar, Aphar, Apara, 409.

Apaturia, 7.

Apis, 147.

Aqueducts, the, of Peru, 141.

Arabs, 27; red men, 193.

Ar-Ad, 279.

Arameans, their Deluge legend, 85.

Arch, the, 140; of Central America, 353, 354; of ancient Greece, 357; of the Etruscans, 357.

Architecture of Europe and America compared, 136.

Ark, the, venerated by different nations, 207; of the Mandans, 111; of the Egyptians, 359.

Armenia Major, list of cities in, 178.

Aryans, the, from Europe and Atlantis, 177, 423, 426, 456; not from Asia, 457; their civilization, 459; their religion, 462; the two great divisions of, 469.

Ascension, the island of, 43.

Asgard, 313, 324.

Asshurbanapal, 77.

Assyrian cycles, 29; exorcisms, 211.

Astronomy, perfection of, among ancient Egyptians, 364; origin of, 453.

Astynome, 330.

Atargatis, 86.

Athene, 7, 304.

Athens, ancient pre-eminence of, 9; led the forces opposed to Atlantis, 11; founded by Poseidon, 304.

At-hotes, the Egyptian god, 278.

Atlantes described by Herodotus, 172.
Atlantic Ocean impenetrable, 11; origin of name, 13, 171.
Atlantids, the, 306.
Atlantis, Plato's history of, was true, 1; was the birthplace of civilization, 1; was colonized by Europe and America, 1; was the Garden of Eden, 1; its kings became the gods of Greece, 2; founded Egypt, 2; its Bronze Age, 2; originated one alphabet, 2; original seat of Aryans and Semites, 2; sunk in the ocean, 2; Deluge legends refer to destruction of, 2; Solon's account of, 5; described by priests of Sais, 10; size of, 10; extent of its empire, 11; its invasion of Greece, 11; its destruction, 11; described in detail by Plato, 13; its fruits and flowers, 14; its kings, 14; its animals, 14; its temples, harbors, and docks, 15; its great canal, 15; its architecture, 15; its walls, 15; its baths and race-courses, 16; its docks, 17; its mountains, 17; its ships and merchants, 17; its great plain, 18; its military service, 18; the arrangement of its government, 19; its columns covered with inscriptions, 19; the administration of justice in, 19; its records, 20; its golden age, 20; its wickedness, 20; traditions of, 276; sun-worship in, 284; its kings become the gods of the Greeks, 283, 285; and of the Phœnicians, 309; original seat of Phœnicians, 310; the Garden of Eden, 323; the colonies of, 348; the inventions derived from, 440; reconstructed, 472; interdiction of swine-flesh in, 472; practice of circumcision in, 472; its religion, 476; its destruction, 478.
Atlas, oldest son of Poseidon, 13; supreme ruler of Atlantis, 14, 20, 149; origin of name, 171; mountains of, 172, 308; he lived in the Hesperides, 288, 289.
Atl-tona-ti-uh, 282.
At-otarho, 149.
Atreus, Mycenæ, treasure house at, 265.
Attika, 304, 308.
At-tit, 282.
Augurs, 144, 148.
Australian Archipelago, 32.
Autochthon, son of Poseidon, 13, 308, 309, 329.
Ayar, 391.
Aymaras, 189.
Azaes, son of Poseidon, 14.
Azores, black rocks of, 24; the islands of, are surviving fragments of Atlantis, 26; earthquakes in, 43; revealed by deep-sea soundings, 46; covered with volcanic débris, 46, 50; climate of, 473.
Aztlan, 97, 105, 326, 327.
Aztecs, the, were from Aztlan, 106; their civilization, 350; their religion, 351; their customs, 351.

B.

Baal, 83; in Ireland, 414; the horns of, 427, 428.
Baalim, 182.
Babel, Tower of, American legend, 200, 202.
Babylon, 76.
Bacchus, 149, 305, 306, 464.
Bacon, "New Atlantis," 23; his opinion of Greek mythology, 283.
Balam Agab, 182.
Balam Quitze, 176, 182.
Balboa, 176.
Banana, carried by man in ancient times across the Atlantic, 57.
Banbha, the Lady, 408.
Baptism, Mexican, described, 158, 208.
Barbarians of Homer, 179.
Barbary States, 172.
Basques, the, described, 388; their language, 172; their American affinities, 173.
Baths, hot and cold, in Atlantis, 16.
Baukis, 302.
Bearded men in America, 165, 166.
Bel, 83.
Belus, temple of, 335, 341.
Berber languages, 196, 407.
Berosus, 27; his version of the Chaldean Deluge legend, 75.
Beth-el, 308, 425.
Bhâgavata-Purâna, 88, 126.
Bilma, 172.
Bind Madhu, temple of, 334.
Black Caribbees, 176.
Black Celts, 183.
Black Indians of California, 185.
Black Sea, 311.
Bochica, 105.
Boeckh, 27, 91.
Brahma, 27, 323.
Brahmadikas, the, 27.
Brasseur de Bourbourg, 100, 167, 179; his description of Indians, 196; he discovers Landa's MS. in Madrid library, 217, 419.
Brazil, fauna of, 53.
Bretons, the, 389.
Bricks, use of, on both continents, 140.
Bride-cake, 158.
Brigantia, 411.
British Islands, formerly submerged, 34.
Britons, a civilized race, 134; ancient, horror of hares, 147.
Bronze Age, its origin, 2; Flood occurred during, 90; in Europe, 237; a perplexing problem, 237; preceded by an age of copper and tin, 237; was imported into Europe, 238, 245; not attributable to Romans, 241; nor Phœnicians, 241; represents new people, 248; in Iceland, 249; came from common centre, 250; in Olympus, 290.
Bronze celts, 250, 253; one with inscription, 258.

Bronze hut-urn, Albano, 255.
Bronze knives, 254.
Bronze lake-village, 255.
Bronze ornaments, 258, 259, 260.
Bronze razor-knives, 256.
Bronze swords, 251.
Bronze was known to the ancient Americans, 140.
Buckle, his opinion of Herodotus, 3.
Buddha, 195, 316.
Buddhists, 323, 332.
Burial rites, 154, 155.
Burnt offerings, 148.

C.

Cabiri, the, 309.
Cabyles, the, 389.
Cadiz, 172.
Cain's migrations, 281; his race did not perish in the Deluge, 281.
Calaveras, fossil skull of, 29.
Caledonians, the ancient, flattened the skull, 270.
Calendar, Nahua, same as Asian, 151.
Calendar stone of Mexico, 107.
Calmucks' fear of the rabbit, 147.
Calypso, 298.
Camel, the, fossil remains of, found in Kansas, 55.
Canary Islands, 28; earthquakes in, 36, 178.
Canoes of bark, 156; of skin, 156.
Cara Gigantesca, 140.
Cardo, the mountain, 446.
Carians, the, 179.
Caribs, the, 179.
Castes date back to great antiquity in Egypt, 10, 151.
Çatapatha Brâhmana, 87.
Catlin, Flood legends of Mandans, 111; complexion of Mandans, 185.
Cattle, ancient domestication of, 55.
Caxapa, 175.
Celibacy of Mexican priests, 169.
Celts, the, 389.
Cement, the use of, 140.
Central America ruled over by Atlantis, 23; bronze chisel, 262.
Central American colonies from Atlantis, 348; arch of, 353.
Cerambos, 91.
Cereals, origin of great, unknown, 177.
Ceres, 305.
Ceridwen, 235.
Chacmol, 178, 446.
Chaldea, 27.
Chaldeans, their Deluge legends, 75; Berosus's version of, 75; the Nineveh legend, 76; their language, its relations to Chinese, 432.
Challenger, British ship, its deep-sea explorations, 24, 46.
Challenger Ridge, the, 49.
Chanes, 314.
Charanzanis, the, 196.
Chariots of war in Egypt and Britain, 25.
Charruas of Brazil, they were negroes, 176.
Cheops, the pyramid of, 335, 338.
Cherokees, the ark of the, 207.
Chiapas, 26.
Chiapenecs, similarity of language to Hebrew, 234.
Chiapense, the, hero Votan, 313.
Chibchacum, 149.
Chibchas, their Flood legend, 105.
Chichen Itza, 166, 175, 178.
Chickasaws, the, Deluge legends of, 117.
Chili, plants of, 61.
Chinese, their kings, 27; an Atlantean race, 426; their original location, 431; Deluge of, 431; their language, its relations to Chaldean, 432; to the Otomi of Mexico, 435.
Chinooks, the, 271.
Chippeways, the, Deluge legends of, 108.
Chiquimala, 314.
Chiriqui, rock carvings of, 178.
Chivim, 314.
Cholula, legend of pyramid of, 200, 202, 335, 341.
Chronian Sea, the, 289, 301.
Chronos, 75, 82, 288, 300, 301, 308, 309, 465.
Chua, 309.
Circumcision, practised in Europe, Asia, Africa, and America, 151; antiquity of, 210; origin of, 472; effects of, on races of Europe and America, 472; practised by Uranos, King of Atlantis, 472.
Citlalatonac, 101.
Citlallinicué, 101.
Civilization, in what it consists, 129; inherited, 133; not communicable to all races, 133; European and American compared, 136.
Cleito, wife of Poseidon, 13; her temple, 16.
Clement, St., refers to worlds beyond the ocean, 28.
Coal measures of Pennsylvania, 31.
Coins, of Mexico, 345; of Palenque, 345, 350; of Tyre, 444; of Central America, 445; of Corvo, 479.
Codex Chimalpopoca, 100, 145.
Colhuas, the, 217.
Colonies from Atlantis, 348; to Central America, 348; to Egypt, 358; to Mississippi Valley, 370; to Spain, 387; to Peru, 390; to Africa, 404; to Ireland, 408.
Columbus, 311, 472.
Complexion of the races of men, 183.
Confession of sins practised in Mexico, 144.
Connecting ridges of Atlantis, 49.
Copper Age, the, found in America, 140, 238.
Copper axes, Ireland and Indiana, 266.
Cornwall, ancient land to west of, 49.
Cosmos, the monk, his map of the world, 95.
Cotton, manufacture of, known to ancient America and Europe, 59.

Couvade, the, 152.
Cow-headed idols, 427.
Coxcox, the Mexican Noah, 99.
Cremation practised on both continents, 152.
Critias, 6, 7.
Cro-Magnon, the man of, 273.
Cromlechs of Africa and Europe, 406.
Cross, the, 24, 317; St. George's, 318; St. Andrew's, 318, 334; Maltese, 318, 333; Greek, 318; Latin, 318; of the Nile, 318, 319; of Central America, 319; a symbol of the Garden of Eden, 320; the "key of the Nile," 321; of Nineveh, 321; of Britain, 321; of India, 321; of China, 321; of Scandinavia, 321.
Cross-cake of Egyptians, 322.
Crow Indians, the, 189.
Crux-ansata, the, 332.
Çüdüq, 330.
Culebres, the, 314.
Culhuacan, 97, 326.
Cukulcan, 166.
Cushites, red men, 194.
Customs, similarities of, in Europe and America, 150.
Cycles of sixty years, 151.
Cyclops, 294.

D.

Dagon, 308, 309.
Dakota legends of Atlantis, 114.
Dances: the buffalo dance, 156; the "mummers," 156; dog dances, 156; Dyonisiac dances, 156.
Danes' pipes in Ireland, 63.
Dark-whites, the, 195.
Darwin, Charles, submarine phenomena, 44; origin of our domestic animals, 55; of our domestic plants, 61.
Deformation of skull, 268.
Deluge, herdsmen and shepherds only survive in the, 8; there were several deluges, 9; the Bible record, 68; describes destruction of Atlantis, 72, 290.
Deluge legends relate to destruction of Atlantis, 2, 65; tradition universal, 66; of the Chaldeans, 75; of America, 98.
Demeter, 305.
Deucalion, Deluge of, 8, 85, 89, 291.
Deva Nahusha, 24, 464.
Diaprepes, son of Poseidon, 14.
Diodorus Siculus describes Atlantis, 28.
Dionysus, 149, 305, 306, 465.
Dolphin, U. S. ship, 46.
Dolphin's Ridge, 26, 50, 468.
Dominica, earthquake in, 119.
Donnelly, Miss Eleanor C., poem of, 421.
Dropidas, 6, 12.
Druids, their books, 235.
Dwyfach, 93.
Dwyfan, 93.

E.

Ea, Chaldean god of the Flood, 75, 83, 125.
Earth, 9; submergences of, 31, 83.
Eastern origin of American races, 165, 167, 168.
Egypt, its mythology from Atlantis, 2; was the oldest colony of Atlantis, 2; founded by Athene, 9; no Flood legends in, 94; vast antiquity of, 131; people came from Atlantis, 132; given by Chronos to Taaut, 309; the pyramids of, 329; colonized by Atlantis, 358; burial rites of, 359; great antiquity of, 360; vast monuments of, 362; laws of ancient, 363; their arts, 364.
Egyptian cross, 320; cross-cake, 322.
Egyptian plants found in lake dwellings of Switzerland, 62.
Egyptian priests gave Solon traditions of Atlantis, 6.
Egyptians, circumnavigation of Africa, 3; cycles, 29; red men, 194; their early religion monotheism, 211; aristocratic classes had receding foreheads, 274.
El, 182, 425.
Elasippus, son of Poseidon, 14.
Elephants, in Atlantis, 14; in America, 168; elephant mound, Wisconsin, 169; elephant pipe, Iowa, 169; elephant helmet, 170; Mexican representation of elephant, 170; elephant trunks, 170.
Eleusinian Mysteries, the, 463.
Eloah, 425.
Elohim, 425.
Elysian Fields, 1, 288, 359.
Elysion, 359.
Embalming the dead, 144, 179.
England, rock carvings in, 178.
Engraving, the art of, very ancient, 141.
Epilepsy, 148.
Erichthonus, 91.
Erythea, 307.
Erythræan Sea, 310.
Ethiopians, 28; were red men, 194.
Etruscans not the authors of the Bronze Age of Europe, 243, 426; they probably possessed the mariner's compass, 446.
Eumelus, 13.
Evæmon, son of Poseidon, 13.
Eve, in Toltec legends, 199.
Evenor, 13.
Exorcism of demons, 147.

F.

Fairies of America and Europe, 157.
Fauna of Europe and America compared, 54.
Fayal, 24.
Fezzan, 172.
Fir-Bolgs, the, 409.
Fire, sacred, of Mexicans, 146; of Asia Minor, 146; of India, 146; of Sweden, 146; of Romans, 146, 151; of Peru, 151.
Flat-head Indians, 271.
Flood of Deucalion, 291.

Flood tablet, Calendar stone, Mexico, 107.
Flora of Europe and America compared, 54.
Flora of Pacific States of America, 59.
Fogo, 43.
Folk-lore, 150, 160.
Foolahs, the, 406.
Formorians, the, 408.
Frog Indians, 272.

G.

Gadeirus, 13.
Gades, part of empire of Atlantis, 13; why so named, 13, 172.
Gæa, 308.
Gæthulighe, 411.
Galley, of Bronze Age, 256; of Romans, 257; of William the Conqueror, 257.
Gama, Vasquez de, discovery of the Cape of Good Hope, 3.
Games the same on both continents, 162.
Garden of Eden, 1, 24; cross a symbol of, 320; described, 324, 325, 326.
Gauls, possessed traditions of Atlantis, 28; a civilized race, 134.
Ge, 308.
Genea, 329.
Genesis, 27; contains a history of Atlantis, 198; similarities to American legends, 199; its great antiquity, 212.
Genos, 329.
Geological formation of United States, 32; of Europe, 33.
Germans, ancient, a civilized race, 134.
Gettysburg, U. S. ship, explorations by, 53.
Geryon, 307.
Ghosts, belief in, on both continents, 146.
Gihon, the river, 312, 325.
Glacial Period, the, causes of, 50.
Gobi, 429.
Gold sacred in Assyria and Peru to the sun, 347.
Gold, a sacred metal of Atlantis, 343; a sacred metal of Peruvians, 345.
Golden Age, the, 290, 301.
Gomer, 412.
Gömüshtepe, 429.
Goths, ancient writings of, 236; their mythology, 313, 316.
Graham's island, 36.
Grave-cists, 139.
Gray, Professor Asa, on flora of the Pacific coast, 59.
Greeks, no history of antiquity, 6; their legends of the Deluge, 89; their divinities the rulers of Atlantis, 283.
Gunpowder, its antiquity, 447; known to ancient Chinese, 447; to the Phœnicians, 448; to Hindoos, 448; to Moses, 449; to Atlantis, 450.
Guanaani, inhabitants of, 196.
Guanches, 178, 179, 180, 473.
Guatemala, 26.
Gucumatz, 199.
Gulf Stream, 50.
Gulguntius, 409.
Gurani, 179.

H.

Haadam, 281.
Hades, 288.
Ham, what races descended from, 436.
Hare, superstitious fear of, 147.
Harlequin, 210.
Haroeri, 442.
Havilah, 325.
Hayagriva, 88, 236.
Heads, hanging up of enemies', 208.
Hebrew language, similarity to Chiapenec, 234.
Hebrews, greater health of, 472.
Hecla, 43.
Hekatoncheires, 294; described, 299.
Hellenes, 8.
Hera, 86, 303.
Herculaneum and Pompeii, once called "the fabulous cities," 3.
Hercules, 306; Columns of, 10, 11, 27, 28; the stone of, 441, 443.
Hermes Trismegistus, 125.
Herodotus, increased respect for, 3; quotation from, 23; burial rites of Scythians, 136; describes the Maxyans, 196; describes Scythian mode of scalping enemies, 209, 333, 362.
Hesiod, 7.
Hesperides, the gardens of the, were in Atlantis, 288; golden apples of, 306.
Hesperis, 306.
Hiawatha, 149.
Hierapolis, 85; chasm of, 86.
Hieroglyphics, 214, 216, 233.
Himyaritic-Arabians, 194.
Hindoo legends of Deluge, 24, 86, 87, 181.
Hivim, 314.
Hivites, 314.
Homa, water of life, 27.
Homer, 7, 181, 297, 324.
Hood, Robin, 210.
Horse, race-courses and baths for, in Atlantis, 17; associated with Atlantis and Poseidon, 25; originated in North America, 54; domesticated in very ancient times, 55.
Hu, 93, 182; the writings of, 235.
Hu-hu-nap-hu, 182.
Hunaphu, 149, 182.
Hunbatz, 182.
Huncam, 182.
Hue Hue Tlapalan, 165, 384.
Humboldt, 151, 327, 335, 341, 426, 438.
Huns, the ancient, flattened the skull, 272.
Hurakan, a Central American god, 102.
Hurricane, origin of word, 103.
Hydrophoria, Greek ceremony having reference to Deluge, 90.
Hyksos, the, 333.
Hyperboreans, people from Atlantis visited the, 27.

I.

Iberians, the, a colony from Atlantis, 387.
Iceland, great convulsions in, 35; volcanoes of, 43.
Igh, 313.
Imox, 313.
Incarnation of gods, 149.
Incense burnt by Peruvians, 144.
India, visit of Dionysos to, 465.
Indian Deluge legends, 87, 107, 108, 109.
Intoxicating beverages, 150.
Inventions, no new ones for 6000 years, 130; the great antiquity of, 440; mariner's compass, 440; gunpowder, 447; iron, 451; paper, 451; silk, 451; order of, 455.
Iqui-Balam, 182.
Iranians, 27; their Deluge legend, 89.
Ireland, earthquakes in, 40; tobacco known to the ancient people of, 63; originally colonized from Atlantis, 408; different races of, 409; relations to Deluge, 412; was the "Island of the Sun," 413; the "Garden of Phœbus," 413; called "Ogygia," 413; great antiquity of people of, 413; ancient religion of, 414; ancient customs of, 415; round towers of, 416; traditions of America in, 419; St. Brendan's visit to America from, 419; the name of, Aryan, 470.
Irish, ancient, dread of hares, 147.
Iron, mined by Incas, 140; antiquity of manufacture of, 451; known in earliest ages to the Egyptians, 451; to the Peruvians, 451; to the Mound Builders, 377, 451.
Iron Age, 290.
Iroquois, Deluge legends of, 117.
Isiris, Egyptian god, 309.
Islands of the Blessed, 287.
Islands of the Sea, referred to in Bible, 28.
Islands, sunken, west of Spain, 53.
Isle Royal, Lake Superior, ancient copper mines on, 247.
Ixtlilxochitl, 103.
Izcalli, 127.

J.

Jamassi of Florida, negroes, 176.
Jambadwipa, 325.
Jamaica, earthquake in, 43.
Janus, 301.
Java, great convulsions in, 35, 38.
Jews, the, their customs similar to those of the Mexicans, 204; the miracle of their continued existence as a race, 213.
Josephus, 325.
Juno, 303.
Jupiter, 464.

K.

Kaimeni, Old, 37.
Karnac, the temple of, 362.
Kaws of Kansas, 184.
Kesair, 408.
Khasisatra, 75, 78, 81, 84.
Koran, Deluge legends of, 86.
Krodo, a Gothic god, 316.
Kronion, Father, 29.
Kuntze, Professor Otto, views of, 56, 57.
Kshatriyas, the, 194.
Kyklopes, 294; described, 299.

L.

Labyrinth, the, 362.
Laertas, gardens of, 323.
Lake-dwellings, animals of, 55; plants of, 62; bronze representation of, 255.
Lake Superior, metallurgy originated on shores of, 130; great extent of ancient copper mining on, 246.
Lancerota, island of, 36.
Landa, Bishop Diego de, his destruction of Maya books, 217; his preservation of Maya alphabet, 217.
Language of Noah, 433; of Chinese, 432; of Chaldeans, 432; of Otomi, 435; of North American Indians, 435; of Ural-Altaic races, 435.
Laying on of hands, 147.
Lemuria, the drowned continent of the Pacific, 32.
Lenni-Lenapi Deluge legends, 109.
Lenormant, François, 66, 74, 76, 82, 86, 87, 88, 94.
Le Plongeon, Dr., describes negroes, 175.
Libyans, the, 195.
Lisbon, great earthquake of, 40.
Livingstone, Dr., 315.
Lost tribes of Jews, 209.
Lycanthropy, 147.
Lyktonia, 29.
Lynd, Major J. W., 186; description of Dakotas, 189.

M.

Madeira, 43.
Magnetic cup, 254.
Magnetic needle, 254; known to ancients, 440.
Magog, 412, 437.
Maia, wife of Pan, 145.
Maize known to ancient Chinese and Egyptians, 60.
Man, antiquity of, 29.
Mandan Indians, Flood legends of, 110; tradition as to the origin of man, 114.
Mantchoos, the, 209.
Manu, 87, 181.
Manu Vaivasata, 87.
Manufactures, ancient, 142.
Mariner's compass, 254; probably known to Egyptians, Mexicans, and the Mound Builders of America, 446; antiquity of, 440; known to Phœnicians, 441; known to Chinese, 441; in New Mexico, 445; in Atlantis, 445.
Maruts, the, 468.

Marriage, 150; to one of same clan interdicted, 155; made but once a year in Peru and Babylonia, 158; in ancient Mexico, 159, 351; in ancient Egypt, 363.
Mashab-Ad, 279.
Masonry, Free, its origin, 463.
Maxyans, the, were red men, 196.
Mayapan, city of, 145, 314.
Mayas, their alphabet, 216; their conservatism, 218.
Medicine, knowledge of, received by Egypt from Atlantis, 101.
Mediterranean Sea, 10; a *cul de sac*, 176.
Medusa, 149.
Megaros, 90.
Meidoun Dachhour, 341.
Melicertes, 284.
Menaboshu, 108.
Menes, 360, 366.
Menominees, 184.
Men with tails, legends of, 148.
Men-wolves, 147.
Mermaids in America, 149.
Meropes, people of Atlantis, 27, 171.
Merops, the hero of the Deluge, 91, 92.
Merou, human race issued from, 171, 391.
Meru, 325, 465.
Mesomphalos, 323.
Mestor, son of Poseidon, 14, 309.
Metallurgy in Atlantis, 140.
Mexico, 26; plants of, 61; Flood legends of, 99; ancient, described, 350; marriage in, 351; slavery in, 351; religion in, 351.
Michoacan Indians, ark of, 207.
Midas, 27.
Milidh or Milesius, 410.
Miocene Age, flora of the, 56, 59.
Miztecs, Deluge legend of, 327.
Mneseus, son of Poseidon, 13, 309.
Mœris, the lake of, 362.
Mohammed, allusion to Deluge, 86, 92.
Money, origin of, 343; articles used for, 343, 344; of Mexico, 345; of Palenque, 345.
Mongoloids in Europe, 28.
Monte da Guia, 24.
Monte Queimada, 24.
Montezuma, 326.
Months, twelve, used by Peruvians, Egyptians, and Chaldeans, 151, 211; derived remotely from Atlantis, 287, 463.
Moon, silver sacred to, 346, 347.
Moon-worship, 347.
Moses, 412.
Mound Builders of America, 23; their leaf-shaped swords, 251; their stone celts, 253; their pottery, 260, 261, 263; their copper implements, 262, 263; from Atlantis, 370; a river people, 370; their works, 371; their civilization, 372; their system of weights and measures, 372; their pyramids, 372; they used the emblem of the cross, 375; their metallurgy, 376; their sculptures, 380; their manufactures, 380; their antiquity, 383; possessed an alphabet, 386; probably had mariner's compass, 446.
Mound, great, at Miamisburg, Ohio, 339.
Mounds, 136; of England, 341; of Mississippi Valley, 342; of Ireland, 342.
Municipal republics, origin of, 452.
Music, Highland Scotch and Chinese alike, 142.
Mythology of Greeks derived from Atlantis, 283, 308.

N.

Nachan, the city of, 313.
Nahsu, 194.
Nahua, calendar same as that of Asia, 151.
Nahuatl, 167, 171.
Nata, 100.
Navigation, ancient, 446.
Nectar, 287.
Negro, granite-head, 175.
Negroes, no tradition of Deluge among, 66; in ancient America, 174; idols, 174; figure of, at Palenque, 175.
Neimhidh, 409.
Neith, Egyptian goddess, 7.
Nemaun, 330.
Nena, 100.
Neph or Num, 425.
Nereids in Atlantis, 16, 181.
Nicaraguans, Flood legends, 117.
Nineveh, Deluge legend dug up at, 76; the library of the palace of, 77.
Nirumbees, the, 157.
Noah and the Deluge, 68; his name Aryan, 102.
Nod, the land of, 326.
Noronha, Fernando de, 43.
Nubians, the, 406.
Nymphs, the, 306.
Nyöe, the new island, 35.

O.

Oannes, 236.
Obartes Elbaratutu, 75.
Obelisks of Egypt and America, 367.
Ocean, source of gods and men, 181.
Odin, 271, 210; an American hero, 313.
Oerafa, 43.
Ogyges, Deluge of, 89.
Ojibbeways, their vine legend, 207.
Okanagans, Deluge legends of, 117.
Okeanos, 323.
Olmecs, the, 167.
Olympus, 2; described, 286; it was in Atlantis, 286; a corruption of the word Atlantis, 291, 303.
Origin of American races, 165, 167, 168.
Orphic Argonaut, 29.
Osiris, 309, 466.
Otomi, the, of Mexico, relations of their language to Chinese, 435.
Ouranos, 308, 309; invented mariner's compass, 445.

P.

Painting, antiquity of the art of, 141.
Palenque, negroid figure from, 175, 313.
Pan adored in Europe and America, 145.
Panathenæa, 91.
Panuco, city of, 145.
Paper, antiquity of, 451; of Egypt, 451; of Mexico, 451; of Peru, 451.
Parian Gulf, Indians of, 196.
Partholan, 409.
Passage, west, from Atlantis to America, 172.
Peisdadien, the, kings, 27.
Penance, 144.
Penn, William, letter of, describing Indians, 185.
Perirrhoos, 91.
Persian Gulf, 310, 311.
Persian Magi, Flood legend, 92.
Peru, description of temple of Cuzco, 22; ruled over by Atlantis, 23; great public roads of, 141; aqueducts, 141; posts, 141; mile-stones, 141.
Peruvians, ancient, their color, 189; colonized from Atlantis, 390; their civilization, 392; its antiquity, 392; their great monuments, 393; their pyramids, 393; roads, 394; customs, 396; language, 402.
Petecatl, 145.
Petris, the ten, 27.
Phæacians, the, 298.
Phaëton, 8; the myth of, found in America, 145.
Phallus worship, 136.
Pharaoh Necho, circumnavigation of Africa, 3.
Pheryllt, books of, 235.
Philemon, 302.
Phison, 326.
Phœnicians, their gods derived from Atlantis, 2; letters, 2; red men, 194; origin of their alphabet, 214; not the authors of the Bronze Age of Europe, 241, 243; their mythology from Atlantis, 308; they came from the Erythræan Sea, 310; from Atlantis, 310; human sacrifices among, 311; extent of their commerce, 311; association with Bible records, 328.
Phoroneus, 8.
Phos, Phur, and Phlox, 329.
Pico, 43.
Pimas, Flood legends of, 118.
Pimerital, Señor, 218.
Pineapple known to ancient Assyrians, 63.
Pipes, tobacco, prehistoric in Ireland, 63; Indian, 64; African, 64.
Phlebotomy in America, 160.
Plants, ancient, domesticated in Europe and America, 56; origin of, 61.
Platicnemism of ancient races, 273.
Plato, his story true, 1; his history of Atlantis, 5; probabilities of his history of Atlantis, 22, 177, 235.
Plough festivals of Peru and Egypt, 141, 438.
Plutarch, opinion of Herodotus, 3; mentions islands in Atlantic, 28.
Pluto, 294, 297, 300.
Poisoned arrows, 156.
Pompeii and Herculaneum once called "the fabulous cities," 3; their discovery, 124.
Popul Vuh, 167; Deluge legend of, 102; it describes Atlantis, 175, 419.
Port Royal, earthquake at, 43.
Porto Praya, 44.
Poseidon, receives Atlantis as his share of the world, 13; marries Cleito, 13; builds a city, 13; his temple, 16; his chariot, 16, 25; his grove, 17; ancient worship of, in Europe, 24; called Neptune, 25; associated with the horse, 25; horses sacrificed to, 25; his trident, 26, 196, 294, 297, 300; described, 304, 308, 309, 428.
Potato known to ancient Chinese, 60.
Pottery of Bronze Age and mounds of United States compared, 261; of Colorado, 262; of Zunis, 262; Switzerland and Mexico, 266.
Poulle-i-feron (Hell-hole), 122.
Priapus worship, 136.
Priesthood, in Mexico, 159; celibacy of, 160.
Proclus, his allusion to Atlantis, 27.
Protogonos, 329.
Ptah-hotep, 212, 213.
Ptolemy's list of ancient cities, 178.
Public roads of Peru, 141.
Pyramid, the, 139, 317; a transcript of the holy mountain, 330; Arabian traditions as to, 331; of India, 330, 334; of Mexico, 335, 336; of Egypt, 335, 336.
Pyrrha, 8.

Q.

Qên, 329.
Qênath, 329.
Quetzalcoatl, 165.
Quiches, 106, 175; their gods, 149; their legends of the creation, 198.
Quichuas, the, 391.
Quinames, the giants, 204.
Quipu, the, 438.

R.

Ra, 284.
Races, the four, known to the Egyptians, 194; to the Aryans, 194.
Rainbow, the, 105; sign of promise to Peruvians, 207.
Rama, 284.
Rana, 359.
Randa Kamba, 43.
Rayam, 359.
Raymi, 284.
Raz, Cape, 297, 359.

Reaping-machine, on wheels, of the ancient Gauls, 134.
Red men, ancient Egyptians, 174.
Red a sacred color, 194; Cushites and Ethiopians red men, 194.
Religion of ancient races, 143; the great religions derived from red men, 195; the essence of is conservatism, 210.
Republican form of government, origin of, 452.
Retzius, Anders, Professor, 179.
Rhea, 300.
Round-towers, of Ireland, 416; of India, 417; of Sardinia, 417; of the Shetlands, 417; of New Mexico and Colorado, 418.
Rua, 314.
Ru-Ad, 279.

S.

Sabæans, the, 278.
Sabian worship, 333.
Sailing-vessels known in ancient America, 142.
St. Brendan, of Ireland, visits America, 419.
St. Helena, 43.
St. Paul's Rocks, 49.
Sahara, sands of Desert of, 34.
Sais, city and district of, in Egypt, 7; priests of told Solon of Atlantis, 5, 7; description of, 7.
Sakkarah, 341.
Samé, 168.
Samson, 204.
Sanchoniathon, 308, 309, 310, 312, 329, 330, 445.
Sanscrit maps of Western Europe, 211.
Santorin, Gulf of, 37.
Sarku, the, 281.
Satar, a Gothic god, 316.
Saturn, 301.
Saturnalia, the Roman, 302, 464.
Saturnia, 301.
Saturnian continent, the, 289.
Satyravata, 88.
Satyrs, 148.
Savonarola, 190.
Scalping practised in Europe and America, 209.
Scandinavia, mythology of, 313, 324.
Scandinavian Flood legends, 93.
Scandinavians, 209; ancient, flattened the skull, 270.
Schlegel, Frederick, opinion of Herodotus, 3.
Schott, Dr. Arthur, 26, 140.
Scots, ancient, used iron swords, 134.
Sculpture, the art of, 140.
Scomalt, 117.
Scythians, their burial rites, 136, 412.
Seedless plants, 58.
Semiramis, 139.
Semitic, the, races, 177; from Atlantis, 423.
Serpent-mounds, 205.
Serpent-worship, 204.
Seth, the patriarch, 125.
Shedd-Ad-ben-Ad, 276.
Sheep, ancient, domestication of, 55.
Shem, the oldest son of Noah, 423; what races descended from, 436, 437.
Sicanes, an Iberian colony, 387.
Sicily, formerly submerged, 34.
Sidon, 25.
Silenus describes Altantis, 27, 28.
Silk, antiquity of manufacture of, 451; known to ancient Hindoos, 452; to ancient Chinese, 452; to Phœnicians, 452.
Silsbury Hill, England, 341.
Silver Age, the, 290.
Silver, a sacred metal of Atlantis, 343; sacred in Assyria to the moon, 347.
Similarities of customs, 150; of languages of Mandans and Welsh, 115; Dakota and European tongues, 116.
Sindree, submergence of, 38.
Sippara, City of the Sun, 75; antediluvian records buried there, 76.
Sirens, the Greek, 428.
Sithuides, 90.
Skull, artificial deformation of, 268; found in Europe, Asia, and America, 268; still practised in Normandy, 269; ancient Swiss skull, 270; Peruvian, 271; shape of in different races, 273; boring holes in by ancient nations, 273.
Slieve-donart, 122.
Solon wrote an account of Atlantis, 5; he visited Egypt, 5; verses by, 5; his poems recited, 7; his reception at Sais, 8.
Soma, 287.
Sorcerers who produce fair and foul weather, 148.
Spiral, the double, peculiar to Bronze Age, 262.
Stone Age in America and Europe, 206.
Stone Age of Europe, animals of, 55; its two divisions, 237.
Stone-beer, 156.
Strabo, 311, 387.
Submergences of the earth, 31, 34.
Suchiquecal, 199.
Sumbawa, convulsions in, 38.
Sun-worship, 143; Peru, 283; Egypt, 283; Babylonia, 283; Phœnicia, 283; Atlantis, 284; Samoyeds, 284; American races, 284.
Sutteeism, 155.
Swine-flesh, use of, 472.
Swiss, ancient, pottery of, 261; bronze implements of, 262.
Switzerland, fossil beds of, 56.
Sydyk, 329, 330.

T.

Taaut, the Phœnician god who invented the alphabet, 309.
Taautos, 125.
Tai-Ko-Fokee, 427.
Tamahu, the, 407.
Tamhu, 194.
Tartars, the, 209.

Tattooing practised on both continents, 156.
Tell, William, 210.
Ten, sacred character of the number, 27.
Teneriffe, 43, 178.
Tennessee, mummies found in, 190.
Teotihuacan, pyramids of, 174, 335.
Tethys, 181.
Theopompus describes Atlantis, 27.
Thia, island of, 37.
Thoth, 125.
Thrace, 25.
Three, sacred character of the number, 26.
Tien-Chan, 324.
Timagenes, 28.
Tin known to ancient Americans, 140.
Tir-na-n'oge, description of, 421.
Titæa, 306.
Titans, the empire of, 294, 297; beaten at Tartessus, 298, 469, 473.
Titicaca, Lake, 333.
Titlacahuan, 101.
Tlaloc, Mexican god of rain, 100.
Tobacco known to ancient inhabitants of China and Europe, 60; of Ireland, 64; used originally as incense, 64.
Tokhari, the, a Celtic race, 243; invaded Egypt, 243; and Assyria, 244.
Toltecs, their Flood legend, 103; came from the East, 165; their religion, 350.
Tortoise legends, 113, 115.
Totem, the, 155.
Tower of Babel, American legend, 200, 202.
Transmigration of souls, belief in, in America, 147.
Tree-worship, 157.
Tristan d'Acunha, 43.
Troy, 196; founded by Poseidon, 304.
Tsabaism, 215.
Tuareg, of Sahara, 185.
Tuatha-de-Dananns, 410.
Tubal, 412.
Tula, 109, 165.
Tulan, 106, 166, 314.
Tumuli, 139.
Turanian, the, races from Atlantis, 423, 426, 437.
Turdetani, the, 387.
Turduli, the, 387.
Tuxtla, 175.
Twelve gods, the, 287.
Typhon, 442.
Tyrrhenia governed by Atlantis, 11, 14.
Tzequil nation, 314.

U.

Uranos, 280, 294, 300, 425, 463, 469.
Uruk, 77.
Ushas, 467.

V.

Vaivasvata, the king, 468.
Valentini, 231.
Valum-Votan, 314.
Varuna, 280, 463.
Verde, Cape de, islands, 43.
Vestal virgins, 144.
Vigile, an Irish saint, 419.
Viracocha, 189.
Vishnu, 236.
Vocal statues in Peru, 149.
Volney, 152.
Votan, a Chiapenic hero, 210, 313.

W.

Wales, Flood legends of, 93.
War-paint, 157.
Weapons of Old and New World the same, 143.
Weeks and months, origin of, 211.
West India Islands, described by Egyptian priests, 10; earthquakes in, 43, 172.
Wheel of Kronos, 140.
Wheel symbol found in America, 140.
White deer, 147.
Wife-capture, 158.
Wild Huntsman, the, 210.
Winchell, Professor, changes of the earth's surface, 34.
Witchcraft in America, 149, 150.
Woden or Wuotan, 313.

X.

Xblanque, 149.
Xibalbay described, 166.
Xicalancans, the, 167.
Xisuthros, 75.
Xochiquetzal, wife of the Mexican Noah, 99, 107.
Xololt, 149.

Y.

Yama, 281.
Yavana, the, 470.
Year, same number of days in both Europe and America, 151.
Yima, the father of men, 89, 281.
Yirad, 329.
Yucatan, 26; legends of, 167.
Yum-ala, 425.

Z.

Zalmat-Qaqadi, 281.
Zamna, the culture-hero, 167.
Zeus, resolves to destroy Atlantis, 21; his tomb in Crete, 285, 300, 301, 303, 304, 306, 309, 464, 465.
Zipanca, 204.
Zontem-que, 200.
Zuavas, the, 196.
Zunis, 184; their color, 184.

THE END.

MARYGROVE COLLEGE LIBRARY
Atlantis : the antediluvian wo
572.4 D71
3 1927 00034768 9

×

Date Due

Feb 22 '44
JUN 22 '44
SEP 22 1944
O 27 '48
NOV 19 '52
MAR 9 '56
MAR 13 '56
MR 19 '69
AP 14 '69
AP 10 '72
NO 30 '73
JA 23 '75
2-6-75
OC 1 '75
OC 15 '75
OC 24 '77
NO 9 '77
MR 26 '84
AP 9 '84
DE 12 '94

572.4
D71 Donnelly, Ignatius
1949

572.4
D71

MARYGROVE
LIBRARY
DETROIT, MI

JOSEPH P. FARRELL AUTHOR OF "THE PHILOSOPHER'S STONE"

BABYLON'S BANKSTERS

THE ALCHEMY OF DEEP PHYSICS, HIGH FINANCE AND ANCIENT RELIGION

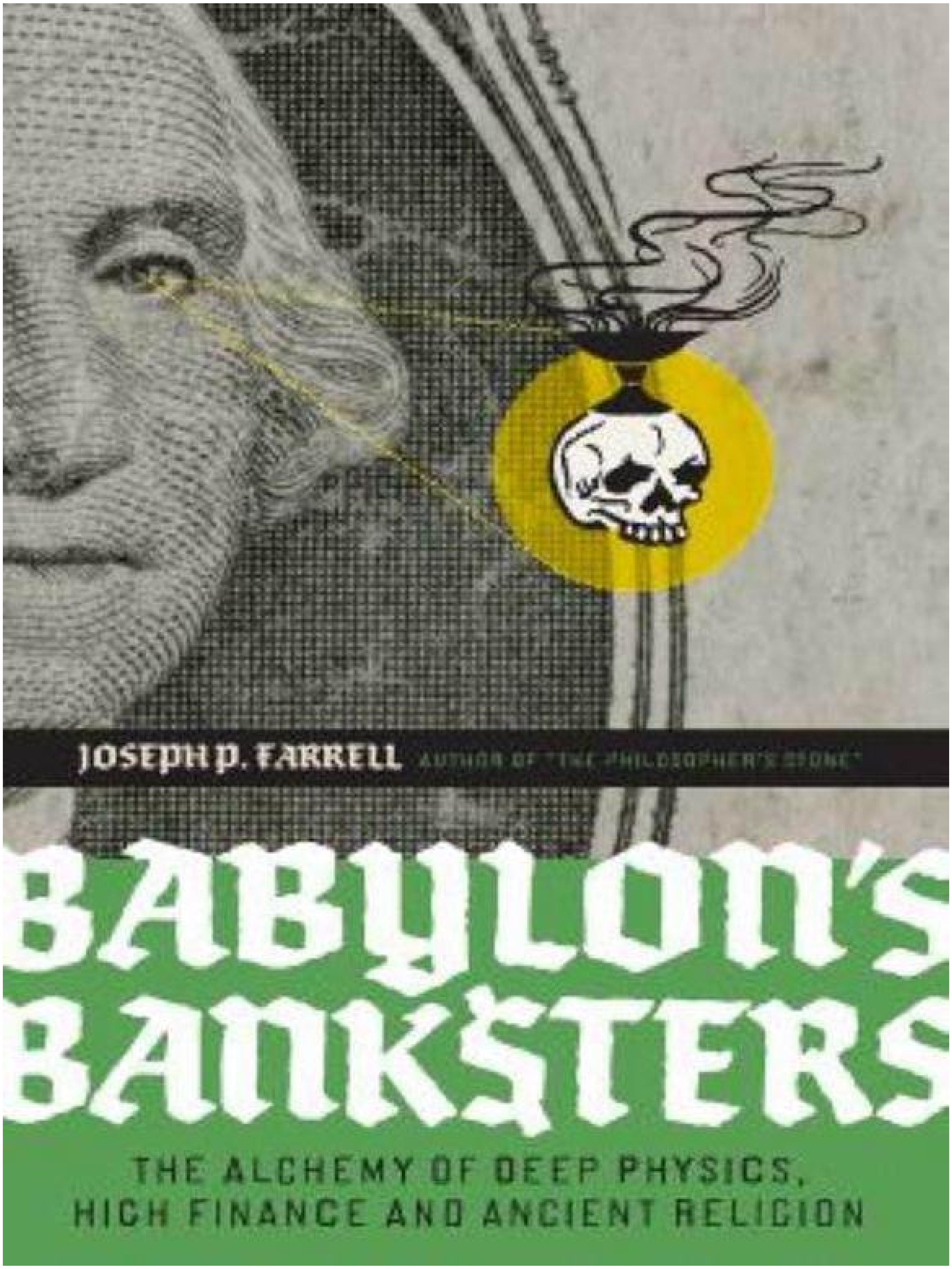

JOSEPH P. FARRELL AUTHOR OF "THE PHILOSOPHER'S STONE"

BABYLON'S BANKSTERS

THE ALCHEMY OF DEEP PHYSICS, HIGH FINANCE AND ANCIENT RELIGION

Table of Contents

Title Page

Dedication

Acknowledgements

Preface

I. - HISTORICAL AND CONCEPTUAL BACKGROUND

One - THE CONSPIRATORS' POSTWAR DETENTE

- A. A HYPOTHETICAL SCENARIO
- B. ESTULIN'S STUDY AND STANDARD INTERPRETATIONS
- C. UNUSUAL GUESTS AT THE FIRST MEETING, AND THE ALTERNATIVE EXPLANATION: DETENTE
- D. CONCLUSIONS AND IMPLICATIONS

Two - HOOVER'S HIDDEN LEGACY AND GIFT

- A. AN OVERVIEW OF DEWEY'S DATABASE
- B. THE INEVITABILITY AND PREDICTABILITY OF CYCLES: CLOSED VS. OPEN SYSTEMS
- C. Cycles, Trends, and Cycles Upon Cycles
- D. CONCLUSIONS, IMPLICATIONS, AND A SEGUE IN THE FORM OF SIGNIFICANT QUESTIONS

Three - GERMANY, RCA, AND J.P. MORGAN

- A. DR. HARTMUT MÜLLER AND GLOBAL SCALING THEORY

- B. ALL ROADS LEAD TO TESLA AND MORGAN
- C. CONCLUSIONS

II. - THE TEMPLES, THE STARS, AND THE BANKSTERS

Four - TEMPLES, TEMPLATES, AND TRUSTS
- A. TEMPLES AND TRUSTS
- B. TEMPLES AND TEMPLATES: ASTRONOMY, ASTROLOGY, AND THE ALCHEMY OF MONEY
- C. CONCLUSIONS

Five - MONEY, MONOTHEISM, MONARCHIES AND MILITARIES
- A. THE STATE OF EVIDENCE AND THE NEED FOR SPECULATION
- B. THE MEDIUM OF EXCHANGE AND BULLION AS AN ORDER ON STATE WAREHOUSES
- C. HOW THE CONSPIRACY WORKED
- D. THE PARALLEL TO THE AFTERMATHS OF THE COSMIC WAR, AND WORLD WAR II: THE ...

Six - ALCHEMY UPSETS THE APPLECART
- A. ECONOPHYSICS
- B. ECONOMICS, ASTROLOGY, AND ASTROPHYSICS
- C. ELLEN HODGSON BROWN
- D. IMPLICATIONS OF ENGINEERABILITY: THE ANCIENT ALCHEMICAL CONNECTION

III. - THE MONSTERS IN THE MACHINE

Seven - SACRED SITES AND SCALAR TEMPLES

- A. THE MODERN RISE OF EARTH GRID THEORIES
- B. DR. KONSTANTIN MEYL’S PALEOPHYSICAL INTERPRETATION OF ANCIENT TEMPLES AS ...

Eight - TEMPLATES, GENOMES, AND BANKSTERS OR, WHY DO THEY ALL SEEM TO MARRY ...

- A. ANCIENT ROME
- B. THE MYTH OF THE ROTHSCHILD DESCENT FROM NIMROD: A SECOND LOOK
- C. HUMAN DNA AND THE HERMETIC CODE
- D. THE ANCIENT CONTACT: THE ROTHSCHILD NIMROD MYTH IN A WIDER CONTEXT

Nine - THE BANKSTERS’ REAL BUSINESS THE PATTERN OF WAR, SCARCITY, SUPPRESSION, ...

- A. THE HISTORICAL PATTERNS OF SUPPRESSION
- B. THE PHYSICS, THE FINANCIAL ALCHEMY, AND THE BANKSTERS

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Copyright Page

BABYLON'S BANKSTERS

THE ALCHEMY OF DEEP PHYSICS, HIGH FINANCE AND ANCIENT RELIGION

AN ESSAY CONCERNING THE RELATIONSHIPS BETWEEN AETHER PHYSICS, ECONOMICS, ASTROLOGY, ALCHEMY, GEOMANCY, ANCIENT TEMPLES, AND THE POLITICS OF SUPPRESSION

JOSEPH P. FARRELL

FERAL HOUSE

“Alas, alas, that great city Babylon, that mighty city!
for in one hour is thy judgment come.
And the merchants of the earth shall weep and
mourn over her; for no man buyeth their
merchandise any more:
The merchandise of gold, and silver, and precious stones,
and of pearls, and fine linen, and purple, and silk, and
scarlet, and all thine wood, and all manner vessels of
ivory, and all manner vessels of most precious wood,
and of brass, and iron, and marble,
And cinnamon, and odours, and ointments, and
frankincense, and wine, and oil, and fine flour, and
wheat, and beasts, and sheep, and horses, and chariots,
and slaves, and souls of men.
And the fruits that thy soul lusted after are departed
from thee, and all things which were dainty and goodly
are departed from thee, and thou shalt find them
no more at all.
The merchants of these things, which were made rich
by her, shall stand afar off for the fear of her torment,
weeping and wailing,
And saying, Alas, alas, that great city, that was clothed
in fine linen, and purple, and scarlet, and decked with
gold, and precious stones, and pearls!
For in one hour so great riches is come to nought. And
every shipmaster, and all the company in ships, and
sailors, and as many as trade by sea, stood afar off.
And cried when they saw the smoke of her burning,
saying, What [city is] like unto this great city!
And they cast dust on their heads, and cried, weeping
and wailing, saying, Alas, alas, that great city, wherein
were made rich all that had ships in the sea by reason
of her costliness! for in one hour is she made desolate.

The Revelation of St. John
18: 10-19

To
Scott Douglas deHart:
Anything I could say, any gratitude I could express,
is simply inadequate for you;

And to
Tracy S. Fisher:
You are, and will always be, sorely missed;

And to Richard C. Hoagland:
In thanks for so many wonderful insights, stimulating thoughts,
splendid conversations, and scintillating analysis;

And to
George Ann Hughes:
True and generous in your prayers and support;

He who has found such as these, has found treasures

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

As always, I'd like to thank Mr. Richard C. Hoagland for contributions to this book. In this case, unbeknownst to Mr. Hoagland, I had determined to write a book on this subject a couple of years ago, and in one of those synchronicities that seem to be a common feature of modern life, while listening to one of his presentations at a conference, a source for research, utilized and cited herein, was mentioned. Needless to say, I quickly jotted down the reference, and eventually, when I purchased the book, found it to be a goldmine of information and thought-provoking ideas. The book was astrologist Robert Gover's *Time and Money: The Economy and the Planets*, and notwithstanding the short review of it in the main text, it is in itself a book worth considering in its totality for those interested in the more esoteric aspects of economic forecasting and activity.

Mr. Hoagland also played another role in the formation of this book, and again, it was one that at the time he didn't realize he was playing. During a visit to his home in 2008, Mr. Hoagland showed me volumes of data in his library that had been collected and analyzed by the little-known Foundation for the Study of Cycles. We had some stimulating conversation over these materials, not the least of which were their implications for the connection between physics and finance. In due course I set off researching the availability of some of this material, and eventually was able to purchase the classic text *Cycles: The Science of Prediction* by the Foundation's founder, economist Edward Dewey.

In researching this book, I quickly discovered that the materials to document the main themes were so numerous and varied that any attempt at comprehensiveness was futile. Notwithstanding that, a word of thanks is due to all those inventors and scientists who have seen their discoveries and theories shuffled to the sidelines by a "corporautocracy" that is hell-bent on keeping humanity in the slavery of an energy and financial dark ages: to all the Teslas, Farnsworths, Kozyrevs, Müllers, Richters, DiPalmas, Bedinis,

and Beardens out there: thank you. I only regret that I couldn’t mention you all, but rest assured, your work and its implications *were* noticed.

And to all the other researchers out there who have contributed to unmasking the sinister role of private banking in the affairs of state and of mankind throughout history: thank you. Again, it was not for the dearth but the surfeit of information that specific mention could only be made of a few of you.

And with that, on to the story…

Joseph P. Farrell
Spearfish, South Dakota, 2009

Preface

PROLOGUE IS EPILOGUE

OR, TWO FLIES IN THE OINTMENT: COMMUNIST CHINA AND NAZI GERMANY

⁂

> *“The relationship between two assets can never be captured by a single scalar quantity.”*
>
> — *Financial Analyst Paul Wilmott*[1]

A. CONFRONTING THE BEAST

“Modern fiat money and reserve banking is indeed a manifestation of the transmutative ‘nothingness’ of the Philosophers’ Stone, for from the creation of credit out of nothing, gold is produced.” By nationalizing that money and credit-creating institution “and wresting it from private, secretive hands, and using it to fund the alchemical physics it was beginning to develop as the ultimate energy source, as the ultimate power to transport mankind, and as the ultimate power for destruction on a doomsday scale, the Nazis indicated that they had understood the nature of the (Philosophers’) Stone. *They had seen, and fully understood, the connection between alchemical physics, and alchemical finance. And they were willing to put it to supremely evil uses.*

“But that connection between alchemical physics and alchemical finance is, perhaps, a relationship that requires its own exposition….

“Epilogue is Prologue…”

Thus did I write at the conclusion of my book *The Philosophers’ Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter.*[2] The reader may have inferred from these quoted remarks that there was much more of the story — both from the standpoint of physics and finance, and from that of history — to tell, and that it would require yet another study or book to do so. If the reader made such inferences, he is correct on both counts: there *is* much more of the story of the relationship between physics and finance to tell.

The thesis of this book is both simple to state, and difficult to understand, and that is that, since ancient times and with more or less uninterrupted constancy, there has existed an international money power which seeks by a variety of means — including fraud, deception, assassination, and war — to usurp the money- and credit-creating power of the various states it has sought to dominate, and to obfuscate and occult the profound connection between that money-creating power and the deep “alchemical physics” that such power implies.

Accordingly, I do not argue that case comprehensively in this book, since to do so would require an extended series of books, each devoted to a particular historical period, and each burying the reader in a blizzard of footnotes to the extent that the main thesis would itself become obscured. Rather, I assume this model as a given, as an *interpretive paradigm* by which to view certain events and data. In so doing, that case is indeed argued, but in synoptic form rather than comprehensively. In doing so, I hope to keep before the reader’s attention that deep and profound connection between physics and finance and to show why it is that the private and international money power must always seek to suppress not only certain types of state financial policy, but also certain types of physics, for both indeed spring from a common conceptual root.

Most of my books, as readers familiar with them already know, inhabit a strange region where alternative physics interfaces with history to reveal the latter’s hidden motivations, secrets, and players. This book is no different, save for the fact that I have obviously added a new conceptual player: finance and economics. And along the way, we shall encounter other major conceptual scenery that readers of my books have encountered before: alchemy, astrology, astronomy, torsion, Egypt, Babylon, Nazis, ancient texts and tomes and modern mathematical gurus speaking the arcane language of statistical and topological lore.

In fact, in one of those odd synchronicities that seem to increase in modern life, as this book was being researched and written, decades — if not centuries or even millennia — of corruption and intellectual flaccidity in the financial, banking, and corporate sectors of the world came to an ugly head with the collapse of the housing and derivatives bubble, and the appearance of some of those responsible for the meltdown before the United States House of Representatives, hands extended, asking for a bailout of their malfeasance and irresponsibility at the expense of the American taxpayer, and demanding no oversight to boot, as if they were being forced to pay some hidden blackmailer, and were afraid that oversight might disclose this fact.

But why call it “irresponsibility” and not simply “criminality”? In the answer to that question there lies a tale, and it is a tale I did *not* originally intend to go into when I conceived the plan for this series of books many years ago, much less the plan for *this* one. Recent financial events, however, have contrived to place the story I intended to tell after completing *The Nazi International* and *The Philosophers’ Stone* into a rather different context. As will become apparent to the reader in the main text, I *do* believe there is criminality and conspiracy involved in the story of the complex relationship of physics and finance throughout history. And paradoxically, the farther back one pursues this relationship, the *closer together* physics, finance, and all those other themes enunciated above as the conceptual scenery, draw together, and the more apparent the odor of a long-standing conspiracy becomes.

But in and of itself the contemporary financial meltdown is both a story of conspiracy as well as a case of galloping stupidity and colossal intellectual, political, and economic irresponsibility proportional to the aforesaid stupidity. It is nonetheless a story with its own deep connections to the story of the main text, and it is as good an entry into the subject as any.

So, as a way of entering into the discussion of the themes that preoccupy the main text, one may examine two salient modern examples that arose to challenge the reigning financial and physical assumptions of that money power.

Those examples are Communist China and Nazi Germany.

B. MELTDOWN, OR MESSAGE

1. David Li’s Formula

This most contemporary chapter of this very long and ancient story began when a Chinese mathematician, Dr. David X. Li, came up with a formula that seemed a godsend to Wall Street and City of London financial manipulators. The formula, known to most economists and mathematical analysts within major banking houses, is unfamiliar to most, but like Einstein’s $E=Mc^2$ it is destined to become famous in history for the influence it had on human actions and politics. Here’s what it looks like:

$$\Pr[T_A<1, T_B<1] = \varphi_2(\varphi-1(F_A(1)), \varphi-1(F_B(1), \gamma).$$ [3]

Li, who “grew up in rural China in the 1960s”[4] eventually earned a master’s degree in economics at Nankai University and then left China to pursue an MBA from Laval University in Quebec, a master’s degree in actuarial science and a Ph.D. in statistics from the University of Waterloo in Ontario, Canada.[5] By 1997 Dr. Li had “landed at Canadian Imperial Bank of Commerce,” later moving to Barclays Capital in 2004.[6]

But what did the formula actually mean? What did it *do?*

Felix Salmon summarizes the effect of the formula in a brilliant article, “A Formula for Disaster,” in the March 2009 issue of *Wired* magazine.

> (Li) took a notoriously tough nut — determining correlation, or how seemingly disparate events are related — and cracked it wide open with a simple and elegant mathematical formula, one that would become ubiquitous in finance worldwide.
>
> For five years, Li’s formula, known as a Gaussian copula function, looked like an unambiguously positive breakthrough, a piece of financial technology that allowed hugely complex risks to be modeled with more ease and accuracy than ever before. With his brilliant spark of financial legerdemain, Li made it possible for traders to sell vast quantities of new securities, expanding financial markets to unimaginable levels.

> His method was adopted by everybody from bond investors and Wall Street banks to ratings agencies and regulators. And it became so deeply entrenched — and was making people so much money — that warnings about its limitations were largely ignored.
>
> Then the model fell apart. Cracks started appearing early on, when financial markets began behaving in ways that users of Li's formula hadn't expected. The cracks became full-fledged canyons in 2008 — when ruptures in the financial system's foundation swallowed up trillions of dollars and put the survival of the global banking system in serious peril.
>
> ….Li's Gaussian copula formula will go down in history as instrumental in causing the unfathomable losses that brought the world financial system to its knees.[7]

But again, what precisely did the formula *do*? And *how* did it do it? How did it cause the financial meltdown?

The key lies precisely in that important word, "correlation." Li's formula seemed to make sense of the "thousands of moving parts"[8] of an interlocked economic system. Salmon illustrates what Li's formula did via a simple analogy:

> To understand the mathematics of correlation better, consider something simple, like a kid in an elementary school. Let's call her Alice. The probability that her parents will get divorced this year is about 5 percent, the risk of her getting head lice is about 5 percent, the chance of her seeing a teacher slip on a banana peel is about 5 percent, and the likelihood of her winning the class spelling bee is about 5 percent. If investors were trading securities based on the chances of those things happening only to Alice, they would all trade at more or less the same price.
>
> But something important happens when we start looking at two kids rather than one — not just Alice but also the girl she sits next to, Britney. If Britney's parents get divorced, what are the chances that Alice's parents will get divorced, too? Still about 5 percent:

> The correlation there is close to zero. But if Britney gets head lice, the chance that Alice will get head lice is much higher, about 50 percent — which means the correlation is probably up in the 0.5 range. If Britney sees a teacher slip on a banana peel, what is the chance Alice will see it, too? Very high indeed, since they sit next to each other: It could be as much as 95 percent, which means the correlation is close to 1. And if Britney wins the class spelling bee, the chance of Alice winning it is zero, which means the correlation is negative: -1.
>
> If investors were trading securities based on the chances of these things happening to both Alice *and* Britney, the prices would be all over the place, because the correlations vary so much.[9]

Now factor in thousands, even millions, of individuals, and thousands of interlocking correlated conditions — energy prices, building and housing costs, money and credit supply and so on — and one gets the idea of the complexity of the system of correlations, and the beguiling simplicity of Dr. Li's formula.

The reason its simplicity was so beguiling is in itself rather simple. As Salmon puts it in his article:

> …(It's) a very inexact science. Just measuring those initial 5 percent probabilities involves collecting lots of disparate data points and subjecting them to all manner of statistical and error analysis. Trying to assess the conditional probabilities — the chance that Alice will get head lice *if* Britney gets head lice — is an order of magnitude harder, since those data points are much rarer. *As a result of the scarcity of historical data, the errors there are likely to be much greater.*[10]

Bear that point about the need for historical data in mind, for it not only plays a significant role immediately below in the methodological assumptions of Dr. Li and his formula, but will play an even more important role in chapter two.

It is regarding this point of historical data, or rather, the *assumed* lack thereof, that Dr. Li's formula provided a way out of the impasse, or so it seemed at the time:

> Using some relatively simple math — by Wall Street standards, anyway — Li came up with an ingenious way to model default correlation *without even looking at the historical default data*. Instead, *he used market data about the prices of instruments* known as credit default swaps.[11]

In other words, within Li's elegant statistical copula formula lies a hidden methodological assumption, namely, that historical data on credit default rates could be safely jettisoned in favor of an immediate concentration on the "current" market prices of "credit default swaps." As we shall see in chapter two, there was a great deal of historical data available, and that data in turn pointed to a "deep physics" of financial cycles that few economists — or even physicists for that matter — could scarcely guess at and even fewer knew existed at all.

But we are getting ahead of ourselves. What exactly are "credit default swaps"? This is where the story of Li's formula gets very interesting, and Salmon explains what they are with clear concision:

> If you're an investor, you have a choice these days: You can either lend directly to borrowers or sell investors credit default swaps, *insurance against those same borrowers defaulting*. Either way, you get a regular income stream — interest payments or insurance payments — and either way, if the borrower defaults, you lose a lot of money. The returns on both strategies are nearly identical, *but because an unlimited number of credit default swaps can be sold against each borrower, the supply of swaps isn't constrained the way the supply of bonds is, so the CDS market managed to grow extremely rapidly.* Though credit default swaps were relatively new when Li's paper came out, they soon became a bigger and more liquid market than the bonds on which they were based.[12]

Enter Dr. Li, for his formula was nothing more than "a model that used price rather than real-world default data as a shortcut (making an implicit assumption that financial markets in general, and CDS markets in particular, can price default risk correctly)."[13] Salmon explains Li's technique by mincing no words:

> It was a brilliant simplification of an intractable problem. And Li didn't just radically dumb down the difficulty of working out correlations; he decided not to even bother trying to map and calculate all the nearly infinite relationships between the various loans that made up a pool. What happens when the number of pool members increases or when you mix negative correlations with positive ones? Never mind all that, he said. The only thing that matters is the final correlation number — one clean, simple, all-sufficient figure that sums up everything.[14]

Li had reduced the problem to a simple dimensionless number — a scalar in mathematicians' terms — that in its simplicity cast a beguiling spell over the world's financial and securities market.

Indeed, the formula's effect was almost immediate and "electric" because Wall Street's financial gurus, "armed with Li's formula" deduced from it a

> …new world of possibilities. And the first thing they did was start creating brand-new triple-A securities. Using Li's copula approach meant that ratings agencies like Moody's — or anybody wanting to model the risk of a (bundle of securities) — no longer needed to puzzle over the underlying securities. All they needed was the correlation number, and out would come a rating telling them how safe or risky the (bundle) was.
>
> As a result, just about anything could be bundled and turned into a triple-A bond — corporate bonds, bank loans, mortgage-backed securities, whatever you liked. The consequent pools were often known as collateralized debt obligations, or CDOs. You could (bundle) that pool and create a triple-A security *even if none of the components were themselves triple-A.* You could even take lower-rated (bundles) of other CDOs, put them in a pool, and (bundle) them — an instrument known as a CDO-squared, which at that

> point *was so far removed from any actual underlying bond or loan or mortgage that no one really had a clue what it included*. But it didn't matter. All you needed was Li's copula function.[15]

In other words, the effect of Dr. Li's formula was to abandon the focus on the relative strength and risk of each component, since they were now interlocked via the copula itself, and this in turn led to an explosion of more and more "bundles" of securities and credit swaps, and even to bundles of bundles.

As a result of this increasing interlock and correlation,

> The CDS and CDO markets grew together, *feeding on each other.* At the end of 2001, there was $920 billion in credit default swaps outstanding. By the end of 2007, that number had skyrocketed to more than $62 trillion. The CDO market, which stood at $275 billion in 2000, grew to $4.7 trillion by 2006. At the heart of it all was Li's formula.[16]

To put it succinctly, Li's formula was a way of adding yet another multilayered ability to create credit and interest — an alchemical operation — out of literally nothing.

There was also another hidden danger in Li's formula, and that was that even for those financial institutions that *did* take into consideration historical data, there was not much historical data to go on for the simple reason that "credit default swaps had been in existence less than a decade," a decade during which "house prices soared."[17] Indeed, Li's formula had the effect, as already has been seen, of inflating such "bundling" exponentially and contributing to the creation of bundles of bundles with literally millions of potential correlated factors, *none of which*, it bears repeating, were based on historical data of anything more than a few years' duration. And this reveals another flaw in the formula and its application to securities correlations and their ratings, for implicit in the technique was a hidden assumption that "correlation was more of a constant than a variable,"[18] that is, while the individual components of such bundles *were* variable, their correlation was *not*.

Consequently, by abandoning historical data, and by relying upon this hidden assumption of correlation constancy, the model *could not* cope with any sudden downturn in prices, such as occurred in the housing market and mortgage sectors. In short, the whole technique had abandoned the well- and commonly-known fact that economic activity, for whatever reason, seems to occur in repeated *cycles* of growth and decline, or if one prefer, of “boom” and “bust.” And in this knowledge of cycles, as will be seen, there also lies quite a tale, and a carefully hidden one at that.

Suspiciously, Dr. Li, after publishing his formula, returned to China in 2008 and has been curiously silent during the debate over the causes and culprits behind the crash. But in the ultimate twist to the story, he has returned to Beijing where he is in charge of “the risk-management department of China International Capital Corporation”![19] This raises disturbing possibilities, not the least of which was that the whole episode might conceivably have been a form of economic warfare, but by whom, and against whom?

Whatever the answer to that question may be — and it is not as apparent as it might seem — it is clear that Dr. Li’s formula would provide the necessary mathematical technique and “technology” to anyone inclined to wage such economic warfare, particularly if such persons or groups were in the possession of historical or other data that indicated an inevitable economic downturn were coming, and who, seeking to worsen it for their own purposes, used Li’s formula to create the correlatives or derivatives bubble of bundles and credit swaps, a bubble that would pop when the inevitable fall in prices occurred. As will be seen in chapter two, there is precisely such data available, and it did indicate an inevitable cyclic economic downturn would begin ca. 2000-2006.

But that is not all there is to the David Li story. This part of the story, however, appears to have been carefully hidden from the public, for reasons that will become apparent in a moment. As noted above, among Dr. Li's many career moves and positions, he began to work for Canadian Imperial Bank of Commerce in 1997, moving from there to Barclay's in 2004. Thus, when his paper with the notorious formula — "On Default Correlation: A Copula Approach" — was published in 2000, Li still worked for Canadian Imperial Bank of Commerce.

This reveals some interesting possible connections.

As most people know, Chinese names actually begin with the surname, followed by the individual's proper name. Thus my name, following the Chinese custom, would be Farrell Joseph rather than Joseph Farrell. More importantly, the name Li is a fairly common surname in China, like the name Smith or Brown would be in the U.S.A., Britain, or Canada. People with a common surname do not therefore imply any blood relation, and people with the same surname are often strangers to each other.

The same holds true for China, but with one significant exception. In Chinese culture, people with the same surname — regardless of whether there are blood ties or not — are regarded by the Chinese as coming from the same family, or clan. Thus, two Chinese strangers with the same surname will more often than not regard each other differently than two strangers with *different* surnames. They will, to a certain extent, regard each other as part of a very large family, extending to each other the customs and courtesies common between family members.

And this places Dr. David X. Li into a very different potential interpretive context, for at the same time as he was employed by the Canadian Imperial Bank of Commerce and authoring his now notorious paper, a fellow clansman, one Li Kai-Shing, owned a significant bloc of that bank's stock.

But who is Li Kai-Shing? He is one of Hong Kong's most famous billionaires, who, along with his sons Victor and Richard, assumed significant governmental posts to aid in the transition of Hong Kong from a British Crown Colony back to Chinese jurisdiction. Li Kai-Shing's financial empire stretches through Asia's media and financial markets, and even more significantly, another Li, Li Chiang, was at one time head of Red China's China International Trust and Investment Corporation, in charge basically of China's foreign trade with the West, and particularly with the United States and Canada.[20] After Dr. David Li left the Canadian Imperial Bank of Commerce in 2004, Li Kai-Shing sold his stake in the bank the very next year.[21]

Not even this, however, begins to plumb the depths of the importance of the Li clan in China, for the clan has had several emperors, including Emperor Li Zhuanxu, who reigned before 2000 B.C. Additionally, a Li founded the Tang Dynasty (618-906 A.D.). Most significantly, the Li clan appears to have been involved with financial wheeling and dealing from an early time, being the same clan that introduced paper money to China during the same Tang dynasty.[22]

We now have the following intriguing latticework of relationships:

1. An old and influential Chinese clan, very much involved in government and finance, from early Chinese history;

2. The same clan involved in the same activities millennia later; and

3. One member of the clan develops *the* formula that led to the current meltdown. And far from being *dismissed* as a competent risk assessor by the Chinese, he returns to China to a post doing precisely what his formula was designed to do: assess risk!

All this, of course, places David X. Li's return to Red China and assumption of a position in a Chinese corporation concerned with overseas trade, and once again in a position where he is "assessing risk," into a very interesting context, making it unlikely that his and namesake Li Kai-Shing's departure from the Canadian Imperial Bank of Commerce were coincidental.

But not even this tells the whole tale of the Li clan!

The Li clan “is one of the principal families which has controlled” the notorious Chinese criminal secret society, the Triads.[23] According to researcher Fritz Springmeier, the following Lis have been leaders of various sections of the Triads:

Li Chi-t’ang	-overseas leader
Li Hsien-chih	
Li Hsiu-ch’eng	-Hunan
Li Hung	-Honan
Li K’ai-ch’en	-Triad, Shanghai
Li Lap Ting	-Kwangsi province
Li Ping-ch’ing	-Triad, Shanghai
Li Shih-chin	
Li Wen-mao	-north of Peking, Fatshan
Li Yuan-fa	-Hunan
Li Choi-fat	-Hong Kong
Li Jahfar-Mah	-Britain[24]

And just what are the Triads? They are a Chinese criminal secret society, deeply connected with the opium trade, the practice of Chinese occult activities, and they are, in Springmeier’s apt description, “something of a cross between the Masons and the Mafia — something in the line of P2 Freemasonry — except much bigger.”[25] Indeed, some estimates put the membership of the Triads and similar Oriental secret societies as close to two million, if not more. Thus, the possibility that the entire current meltdown was the a covert act of economic warfare looms rather large, especially given the fact that the Canadian Imperial Bank of Commerce is also known to have some strong ties to the Rothschild banking interest.

In short, we have clear indications of the possibility that China has signaled that it is not simply going to be a subservient player in whatever “New World Order” schemes the Anglo-American elite wishes to implement and impose on the rest of the world.

In this respect, it is important to observe the pattern that the Li clan typifies:

1. The clan is ancient, with strong ties going back millennia, both to government and finance;
2. The clan is moreover connected with a secret society, whose activities in turn are connected with:
    a. Occult religious activity;
    b. Criminal business organization and activity;
    c. Assassinations, blackmail, and infiltration of government and finance;
3. The clan is clearly connected to a mathematical model of economic and credit activity, implying a hidden interest in developing such formally explicit models; and finally,
4. That model is *the* culprit responsible for the current economic meltdown, which has affected primarily the institutions of the Anglo-American financial elite.

As will be seen, such activities and patterns or relationships are not unique to the present or previous century. They are, in fact (as the Li clan itself evidences) millennia old and firmly rooted within the history of human civilizations and their banking class. However, the consistency of this behavior and this constellation of relationships is rooted in “something more” — and certainly nothing less — than “human nature,” or “greed,” or even “the predictable actions of a particular socio-economic class.”

That something else lies in a little-noticed connection between physics and finance that is as old as man’s fascination with the stars, and with what good or ill fortunes they might portend. And that is also to say that there has been, since ancient times, a profound connection between physics and economics, and a struggle between those who view both as closed systems, and those who view both as open systems. We shall call those who adhere to the closed system of physics and finance by the term “banksters,” to indicate the chimerical and criminal hybrids of gangster and banker. These people are indeed driven by an almost boundless lust for power, by a criminal greed and wanton disregard of the humanity they wish to enslave. But they are also driven by a knowledge of certain hidden things, among them the profound relationship between physics and finance.

3. China’s Money

There is a little-known aspect to China’s booming economy that Western financiers, economists, and media mandarins are loath to discuss, and that is that China’s money is created by *China*, and *not* borrowed from private bankers. In effect, this means China’s money is *debt-free.* In short, Communist China has followed the precedent established by the American federal constitution, where the money-creating and issuing power lies with the Congress, that is, with the state. As Ellen Hodgson Brown observed in her magisterial book on the whole problem of central private banking monopolies on money issuance, *Web of Debt,* the key difference in China’s system and that prevailing in most other nations

> Is its banking system. China has a government-issued currency and a system of national banks that are actually owned by the nation. According to Wikipedia, the People’s Bank of China is “unusual in acting as a national bank, *focusing on the country not on the currency.”* The notion of “national banking,” as opposed to private “central banking,” goes back to Lincoln, Carey, and the American nationalists. Henry C.K. Liu distinguishes the two systems like this: a national bank serves the interests of the nation and its people. A central bank serves the interests of private international finance.[26]

Even though China’s currency, the yuan, is pegged to the dollar in terms of its exchange rate value, China’s banking system is testament to the fact that its government has seen what American politicians and a great deal of its people *formerly* understood, namely that when a private bank creates money, it *only creates the principal, not the interest.* When a state, on the other hand, creates money, it has the ability to expand the money supply according to the credit needs of the nation.

In short, when a nation’s money represents *a principal on which interest is owed, someone always comes out the loser, since there is never enough money in circulation to repay the debt interest, and thus, a national debt can never be repaid, it can only grow.* Contrariwise, when a nation’s money represents *a receipt for goods and services rendered and is issued interest-free by the state itself, that state can experience almost total employment, and there is no built-in principal of debt and scarcity.*

It is these two systems, where money is created by a private monopoly in limited supply, which represents an interest-bearing debt note, or where money is created by the state as a receipt for goods and services and is *debt-free,* that are the two systems which have contended against each other throughout history. In the former system, the system of money in circulation is *closed,* and there is never as much money in circulation as there is debt, and hence, scarcity becomes the order of the day, as limited supplies of money compete for limited goods, resources, and energy. In the latter system, the system of money is *open* and can expand, as the economy whose goods and services it represents as receipts expands with it. In terms of the analogy to physics, the former system can *never* function at over-unity, whereas in the latter system, it *must* function as such.

C. NAZI GERMANY: PHYSICS AND FINANCE FULLY RATIONALIZED

This relationship between finance and physics was, in modern times, first clearly perceived by that nation which not only established state-created debt-free money, but which also sponsored a variety of secret research projects into “free-energy” physics and technologies: Nazi Germany.

When World War I ended and the Allies imposed war reparations on defeated Germany, the total reparations to be paid exceeded the value of all the property in Germany by three times![27] Anyone who has studied the history knows the story: Germany hyper-inflated its currency, paying off the Allies with increasingly worthless Reichsmarks and destroying Germany’s economy in the process. But, it is to be noted, these Reichsmarks were still the issuances of a privately controlled bank, and thus, Germany’s debt situation only compounded dramatically.

Hitler’s Reichsbank President, Dr. Hjalmar Horace Greeley Schacht, let the big secret out in his 1967 book *The Magic of Money:*

> The mark’s dramatic devaluation began soon after the Reichsbank was “privatized,” or delivered to private investors. *What drove the wartime inflation into hyperinflation, said Schacht, was speculation by foreign investors, who would sell the mark short, betting on its decreasing value….* Speculation in the German mark was made possible because the Reichsbank made massive amounts of currency available for borrowing, marks that were created on demand and lent at a profitable interest to the bank. When the Reichsbank could not keep up with the voracious demand for marks, other private investment banks were allowed to create them out of nothing and lend them at interest as well.[28]

Thus, the German government was not responsible for the postwar hyperinflation. It was Germany’s *privately owned central bank and its monopoly on the country’s money creation — money created as a circulating note of debt — that created the problem!* Germany’s economy was crashed and devastated by the bankers.

Until Hitler.

While most people are aware that various private financial powers in the West were instrumental in placing Hitler and the National Socialist Party into power in Germany,[29] what most do not realize is how quickly Hitler turned on his backers and refused to play ball by the same old Rockefeller-Rothschild rules:

> …(A)utocratic authority did give Adolf Hitler something the American Greenbackers could only dream about — total control of the economy. He was able to test their theories, and he proved that they worked. Like for Lincoln, Hitler's choices were to either submit to total debt slavery or create his own fiat money; and like Lincoln, he chose the fiat solution. He implemented a plan of public works along the lines proposed by Jacob Coxey and the Greenbackers in the 1890s. Projects earmarked for funding included flood control, repair of public buildings and private residences, and construction of new buildings, roads, bridges, canals, and port facilities. The projected cost of the various programs was fixed at one billion units of the national currency. One billion non-inflationary bills of exchange called Labor Treasury Certificates were then issued against this cost. Millions of people were put to work on these projects, and the workers were paid with the Treasury Certificates. The workers then spent the certificates on goods and services, creating more jobs for more people. The certificates were also referred to as MEFO bills, or sometimes as "Feder money." …(T)hey avoided the need to borrow from international lenders or to pay off international debt.

The result of these Nazi machinations against the international money power was predictable: foreign credit was refused, and hence, Germany faced an almost complete inability to conduct foreign trade and commerce. But again, the Nazi regime did an end run around the banksters, restoring foreign trade by cutting out the banking middleman and resorting to a system of barter with other nations.[30]

And where did Hitler get these "radical" financial ideas?

When he first attended a meeting of the early National Socialist Party, he learned of the views of a German economist named Gottfried Feder.

> The basis of Feder's ideas was that the state should create and control its money supply through a nationalized central bank rather than have it created by privately owned banks, to whom interest would have to be paid. From this view derived the conclusion that finance had enslaved the population by usurping the nation's control of money.[31]

Feder and other German theorists had for their part based their theories on a study of the American constitution, and more importantly, that President Abraham Lincoln had financed the Northern effort in the American Civil War by creating debt-free "greenbacks," bypassing New York banks and interest debt completely.[32]

But Nazi Germany did something else, something quite significant. Realizing that Germany was at the mercy of the very banksters that controlled the world's oil supplies and hence the energy needed to maintain Germany's national sovereignty, The Third Reich established entire departments of the SS called the *Forschung, Entwicklung, und Patente*, and the *SS Entwicklungstelle 4*, or "Research, Development, and Patents," and "SS Development Area Four," respectively. The top secret mission brief of these departments were to scour and pull patents having national security implications, and *to investigate and develop the technologies of "free energy," i.e., the technologies that would allow Germany to engineer the physical medium and its energy directly, and to tap into it for its energy needs, and as a weapon.*[33] Add to this the fact that, within the intellectual cauldron that was the SS, ideas from advanced though little-known physics conceptions circulated and percolated along with the idea that there was a physics hidden in ancient tomes and epics,[34] and one now obtains a very revealing set of relationships:

> 1. A nation that has restored its sovereign right to issue its own debt-free currency, breaking from the orbit of the international money power;

> 2. A nation that has also clearly seen that in order to break completely from the dominance of that power, it must have access to a completely different source of energy that is nearly inexhaustible and not monopolized by that private money power;
>
> 3. Thus, that nation must seek to develop and control the technologies of the manipulation of that energy for itself; and finally,
>
> 4. That nation has perceived *an ancient link* or connection between the physics it seeks to develop, and the financial policy it seeks to develop.

One may discern from this list quite obviously that Nazi Germany was not only able to achieve nearly full employment mere years after the regime took power, but that it was very deliberately gearing up for an inevitable war. But this list discloses a possible hidden *reason* for those war preparations beyond those of the Nazi lust of "living space" and world conquest; Germany's decision to issue state-created money "would mean that the international financiers would be unable to exercise…control through the international gold standard…and this may have led to controlling Germany through warfare instead."[35] This hidden reason for the war — that the Allies essentially acted as "agents" for the international money power against a great power that had essentially severed all connections to it — may also provide a similar rationalization for the Allied demands for German unconditional surrender, essentially ensuring that the war would continue until Germany was basically destroyed and physically occupied.

The relationship between banking and the quest to acquire, or suppress, exotic physics technology may be glimpsed by yet another detour, this time to a persistent struggle.

D. ENERGY AND MONEY-CREATING AUTARCHY

If one takes these two very disparate instances as a clue, and especially that of Nazi Germany, then this suggests that there has been a persistent struggle throughout history between those who wish to democratize the production of energy, based on "alternative energy technologies," and who, similarly, wish to restore to the state its money-creating power and wrest it from private hands, and those who wish to monopolize that hidden technology and physics, and similarly, to hold a private monopoly over the money-creation of various states.

Consider what these very unique and different examples disclose:

1. In the case of Communist China, we have an instance of a modern and technologically sophisticated world power issuing state-created debt-free money, a fact that has led to its economic boom and its "independence" from the international money power;

2. In the case of Nazi Germany, we have not only a nation that saw the advantage of such state-issued debt-free currency, but also of a state that clearly saw the connection between that sovereign money power and the analogous physics of receiving its energy *directly* from the physical medium, an energy source *not* based on non-renewable energy "resources." Furthermore, it is clearly implied by the Nazi SS' interest in ancient and esoteric texts that there may be an ancient connection between this type of finance and this type of physics;

As will be seen, the struggle between these two camps has erupted throughout history in violence, as the latter group that advocates open systems seeks to overturn the dominant order of the moneychangers — the banksters — based on closed systems, or, conversely, as the banksters seek to extend their power via closed systems of physics and economics must respond to the inevitable threat posed by civilizations or countries adopting the open ones. Most recently that struggle erupted in the enormous conflict we call World War II, as Nazi Germany, for whatever its genocidal and murderous crimes against humanity, at least perceived *part* of the struggle correctly: it was a war to free Germany from a heinous international money power — misrepresented of course in Nazi ideology by the Jews — based in Great Britain and the British Empire, and in the United States of America.

Thus, Nazi Germany's pursuit of "free energy" and "energy independence" or "autarchy," as well as her pursuit of a radical alternative hyper-dimensional physics, was a part of that struggle.[36] By the same token, not for nothing did Nazi Germany essentially restore the idea of public, debt-free, *state-created* money and credit, while simultaneously pursuing these super-secret advanced physics projects. The two were conceptually united, and, as we shall also discover within these pages, had been so for a long time. The Nazis were simply the ones who in modern times first drew the connection between physics and finance, and determined to do something about it. As far as Nazi Germany was concerned, then, there was a grisly and gruesome logic to the Holocaust, for having identified "World Jewry" as the center of this International Money Power, the use of enslaved Jews in the concentration camps to create this new physics and its associated technologies, and a new economy on which they hoped eventually to place the Reich, was in their warped view a kind of "justice" meted out to those who had so ravaged and pillaged Germany in the wake of the Versailles Treaty and the Dawes and Young Plans. There was, of course, a half-truth to this, for there was indeed a prominent element of Jewish, or rather, Zionist influence in such financial circles. One need only recall the names of Rothschild, Warburg, Schiff and so on in this regard. But there all truth stops and the lies begin, for there was also a prominent element of Protestant monied groups involved as well. Thus, for consistency's sake, the Nazis should equally have been concerned with the Protestant aristocracy of England, America, Canada, and even their own country as well.

World War II ended, of course, with the defeat of Nazi Germany, but not necessarily with the defeat of *Nazism* and its goals in alternative physics and finance.[37] However, as we shall see, the postwar period began with an unusual event, an event I believe many to have profoundly misinterpreted.

Rather than seeing that a kind of *détente* or *modus vivendi* was struck between elements of what I call the “Nazi International” on the one hand and the globalist Anglo-American corporate and banking elite on the other, most prefer to view certain events as testament to the fact that one more or less coherent and monolithic “international conspiracy of money” exists, and that it is entering the “end game phase” of its goal of total world domination. The closer to that goal that this group actually approaches, the more sharp and acute will factional infighting within it become, particularly as such banksters are in thrall to the closed system paradigm of physics and finance. In short, that postwar détente is showing distinctive signs of breaking down, as each faction maneuvers to emerge as the dominant faction when the eventual goal is reached. For that globalist elite, this problem is further compounded by the emergence of the economic powers of Eurasia — Russia, China, and Japan — who are also showing increasing signs of reluctance to play by the tired old rules of the Anglo-American empire. Witness once again Dr. Li’s mysterious “disappearance” from the West and reemergence as a risk manager for a prominent corporation in Communist China!

However, between those periods when this conflict of worldviews of physics and finance breaks out into open violence and warfare, the struggle is more covert and hidden, as suggested, again, by the David Li episode. In the case of such covert warfare, the various factions of international banksters resort to every occulted means at their disposal to suppress open development of alternative physics — and therefore of the alternative economies and financial institutions such physics would inevitably usher in — while they seek to maintain the status quo and become the dominant faction within it. The methods, chiefly, are threefold: they must first suppress *technologies* that testify to the existence of another physics than the “public consumption physics” they have so carefully inculcated for the masses and promoted in academies and textbooks. Secondly, they must suppress *the alternative physics itself*, for in some respects it is the real source of their power, as we shall also eventually see. Thirdly, and finally, they must obfuscate the profound, deep, and ancient *connections* between this alternative physics and alternative institutions of finance and economy.

To sum it up, they must seek to suppress its open development, while simultaneously pursue its covert development so that they can, in turn, *monopolize* it and further consolidate power into their own hands. By the same token, this means that any given faction within what is called “The New World Order” must likewise inhibit or arrest the development of such alternative theories and technologies by *rival* factions, or alternatively, develop superior versions of it, or defenses against it, themselves. Conversely, those groups or individuals advocating open systems of physics and economics not only must run the gauntlet of all who oppose them, but develop their theories and technologies and bring them to as wide a public as quickly as possible. In short, the “good guys” seek to democratize the whole science.

Consequently, we are conspicuously in the presence of a very complex dynamic, one stretching from the individual person to whole civilizations and all the institutions thereof, and one moreover crossing several disciplines — physics, economics and finance, theology, history — and running like a gold and crimson thread throughout the millennia of human history. We must consider salient modern events where this struggle has openly erupted, and compare them to ancient manifestations of a similar nature. We must ponder the presence within ancient megaliths and temples of a profound astronomical and astrological science, their physics implications, and ponder further *why so many of these ancient sites are also associated with the presence of moneychangers, of banksters*. We must similarly ponder again what all this might mean for the occurrence of an ancient and interplanetary war within our own celestial neighborhood.[38] Yet again, we must consider what all this has to do with the stubborn persistence of alchemy from ancient to modern times, and what it may have to do with the consistent royal and imperial patronage of it throughout the Middle Ages and early Renaissance. We must look for the clues of deliberate suppression of this physics — and its implied economics — throughout the ages, and especially in our own. And finally, we shall have reason to consider why bloodlines seem to be such an important part of the story for those bankster and royal elites.

Given all these complex dynamics and disparate facts, I was confronted with something of a problem in writing this book. Normally I aim for a relatively high degree of “completeness” or at least thoroughness when writing a book. But I quickly discovered that, if I were to explore every facet of this complex dynamic with anything approaching thoroughness, I would not be writing a mere book, but *several* books, with each aspect of the problem requiring volumes of its own. For example, the involvement of major corporations in suppression of inventions and technologies implying a new physics and new energy source is a story that would and could consume volumes, as there is no shortage of such stories on the internet and books about the subject. Similarly, the machinations of the international banksters has provided a rich field for research and speculation, and spawned literally hundreds of books on the subject, both those by “sanctioned insiders” and those examining the subject from without. When one adds economics and physics and systems of money creation to this picture, the bibliography of such a work itself would end up being a whole book.

So clearly some other approach was needed. What I have attempted to do, therefore, is *outline a case and my interpretation of the evidence* backing it up with examples. This book is thus deliberately intended to be read not only in conjunction with my own previous books on alternative science and history as yet another chapter in a very big story, but also in tandem with the overall output of other researchers into the field. Thus, it simply *assumes* the existence of that research, and the reader’s broad familiarity with it.

But let there be no mistake: this is not an easy, lighthearted book simply because it is not a *complete or thorough* one. The number and types of details, conceptions, and disciplines to be examined are considerable, and their interrelationships are even more so. With that said, the reader is cautioned about two things: first, in order to survey these connections and their implications, much of this book is “introduction”; only at the very end and in the final chapter will it be possible to tie all the threads together and draw their implications. Thus, patience is required as the data is laid out, and connections are drawn. Secondly, what is presented here is likewise a speculative though nevertheless argued case. Were each and every point to be documented at length, as already mentioned, each would require a tome in its own right.

This is a survey, not an encyclopedia; a study, not a painting; an essay, not a mathematical or historical proof.

Nonetheless, I hope that by consulting certain sources, mentioning certain topics, construing the interrelationships, and drawing the conclusions and implications in the manner that I have, that I will point the reader in the direction to examine these questions more fully on his own, for the problem is not in the *dearth* of information, interpretations, and implications, but in their *surfeit*. The interpretation proffered here is consequently not the only possible one. I maintain only that, of all the possible interpretations of this vast complex of information — alchemy, astrology, astronomy, torsion, Egypt, Babylon, Nazis, finance, geometries, earth grids and “scalar” physics, ancient texts and tomes and modern mathematical gurus speaking the arcane language of statistical economics and topological lore — that this interpretation is at least a plausible one.

All that being said, if along the way I have in some small measure contributed to the demise of these goofy, insane, and ruthless banksters and their murderously utopian and loony New World Order schemes, then so much the better, for one thing, I hope, is now evident: if in the private creation of money as an interest-bearing debt-note, only the principal, and not the interest, is created by those banks and circulated as “money,” then it inevitably follows that, under such a system, debt can only *grow* and never be repaid. With that fact, the influence and control of that private class of banksters over the policies of a state can only grow, and to the increasing detriment of that nation’s people and its public good.

As such, *any* discussion of financial policy by *any* politician of *any* political party affiliation in *any* nation that does not *begin* with a call to restore the power of money creation and issuance to the government in such a capacity that it is made to serve the public good and not the private rapacity of a bankster class, is merely deception, and deception for a very simple reason. The big secret of money is not only that it *must* represent some*thing*, but rather that it must represent some*one*. As such, there are really only two basic models of money known to history, the first model, where money represents a debt interest-bearing note — the “something” — created by a private monopoly — the “someone” — for its own class interest and profit; and the second model, where money represents a receipt for goods and services — the “something” — produced by a state’s people — the “someone” — who through the agency of their state issue that money to themselves, debt-free.

The problem of money is thus not even the *what* nor the *how much,* but the *who,* i.e., the who behind its issuance. The first model is a kind of “false alchemy” or a technology of black magic, for it is ultimately a technology to gain the mastery over the will, genius, and productive activity of a people, and ultimately, over the physical medium itself. And it is all based, as we shall now see, on a breathtaking series of historical, conceptual, and physical deceptions, and these can only exist so long as there are those unwilling to unmask the deception, or so long as there as those who acquiesce to that system and are unwilling to free themselves from its chains.

I.

HISTORICAL AND CONCEPTUAL BACKGROUND

“We shall have world government whether or not you like it — by conquest or consent.”

— James Warburg, son of Paul Warburg, February 17, 1950,
Testimony to the United States Senate Foreign Relations Committee

“Single acts of tyranny may be ascribed to the accidental opinion of a day, but a series of oppressions, begun at a distinguished period, and pursued unalterably through every change of ministers, too plainly prove a deliberate systematical plan of reducing us to slavery.”

— Thomas Jefferson

“But when a long train of abuses and usurpations, pursuing invariably the same Object evinces a design to reduce them under absolute Despotism, it is their right, it is their duty, to throw off such Government, and to provide new Guards for their future security.”

— Declaration of Independence of the United States of America

One

THE CONSPIRATORS' POSTWAR DETENTE

⁂

> *"Since it is quite impossible to understand the history of the twentieth century without some understanding of the role played by money in domestic affairs and in foreign affairs, as well as the role played by bankers in economic life and in political life, we must take a glance at each of these four subjects."*
>
> — *Dr. Carroll Quigley*[39]

If, as the epigraph cited above suggests, it is "quite impossible" to come to an accurate assessment of the domestic and foreign policies of any state in modern times without an understanding of the role of money, then one would be equally justified in saying that it is quite impossible to understand ancient history — or *any* period of history — without understanding the role of money and its manipulation in social organization, policy, or science.

However, money, at least in modern times, is the result of an "alchemical" operation and a kind of "financial technology," the operation of transmuting nothing into something, in this case, of turning a mere entry on a bank ledger — a "nothing" — into a unit of commercial exchange — a "something." Likewise, alchemy is a "science" of transmuting base metals into gold, and that implies an underlying physics and technology to accomplish the act. To call *both* an alchemical operation is to imply the fact that beneath the magical operations of banking there lies a deep physics, and perhaps a profoundly misunderstood physics. In any case, these are the *conceptual poles* between which our story moves.

But there are two *historical poles* between which our story also moves.

A. A HYPOTHETICAL SCENARIO

Imagine for a moment that there is a Very High and extremely ancient Civilization. It has reached the apex of its social and scientific achievement. Then, in a paroxysm of madness and greed, it tears itself apart in a Great War. As the untold destruction reaches its climax and the great sophistication of its science and technology — the very science and technology it has used to wage its war — can no longer be sustained due to the enormous damage to its infrastructure, both sides see that all is lost, and they each conspire to salvage as much as they can of their science and technology by contriving an intricate symbolic language that can be decoded when civilization reaches a similar stage of scientific and social development. The strategy is one of long-term survival and eventual recovery, and each side fully realizes that the actual meaning of the symbols will most likely be lost in the short term. Nonetheless, they each conspire to create secret fraternities to maintain the symbols, pass them down, and to the extent possible, begin the work of their decoding and of the restoration of the very science and technology that led to their demise.

It is natural and reasonable to assume that, parallel to this activity, each side will take inventory of its remaining scientific and technological assets, and to secret them away for their potential rediscovery and reuse. Similarly, it is reasonable to assume that the “victors” of said war will take inventory of the “loser’s” assets and technologies, and confiscate some, destroy what cannot be moved or otherwise used, and forbid to the vanquished any further development or deployment of such technologies.

If all this sounds vaguely familiar, like the activities of the victorious Allies or of vanquished Germans after World Wars I and II, then the reader will be correct.

But we assume a much more destructive war in our imaginary scenario. We assume the existence of a scientific and technological sophistication that would make all our modern instrumentalities of destruction seem but mere popguns. Similarly, we assume an extent of that mythical civilization that is truly cosmic in character, and a war of truly cosmic and interplanetary scope, of which all civilizations and wars that follow are but mere shadows on the long climb back to a similar peak of development. Similarly, the strategy of inventory-taking, of the secreting away of now lost technologies and sciences, and of the making of a complex of symbols and the founding of secret fraternities to preserve them, is far grander in scope than the activities of victorious Allies or vanquished Germans in recent memory. But note, it is the *scope* that is grander. The activities and strategies themselves, however, are not all that different.

Thus, at one pole, lost in the mists of prehistory and countless myths and ancient epics, an extraordinarily sophisticated and Very High Civilization blew itself apart eons ago in an interplanetary war, a war that cost them the very science that accounted for their fabulous wealth and power. In the wake of that cataclysm, what was left of that civilization purposed to maintain as much of that lost knowledge as possible, and, eventually, to recover all of it. Thus arose the secret societies, mystery schools, and civilizations that bore the stamp of its legacy, among which were the two that shall be our focus here: the Mesopotamian civilizations of Sumer, Babylonia, and Assyria on the one hand, and Egypt on the other. Certain elements within those societies quickly began the consolidation and extension of their power, and, as a result, were able to preserve at least a portion of the scientific legacy of their more sophisticated forebears, for that scientific legacy — distorted and blasted apart and fragmented as it was by that war — was indeed the very basis of their power.[40] The combatants of that war, both the “good guys” and the “bad guys,” victors and vanquished, each to a certain extent went underground, the one seeking to preserve and recover the lost scientific bounty for the common good, and the other to recover it to make yet another bid for hegemony and world mastery. A sort of guerrilla and covert war between them — protracted for millennia — ensued, and, at times, even a détente was declared, for in the aftermath of that war, each to a certain extent needed the good offices and graces of the other to survive. Détente, and yet, covert warfare: this is the dynamic with which we must perpetually contend throughout this book.

At the other pole, in distinctly more modern times, but similarly, after yet another and more familiar war, from May 29th to May 31st, 1954, the gilded banking and corporate elites of Europe and North America met at a small hotel in Oosterbeek, Holland called the Bilderberg,[41] and ever since, this secretive annual gathering of the super-rich class of international banksters has been known by the name where their first meeting was held: The Bilderberg Group. And they — or rather, the international class of the very wealthy that they represent — show all the classic signs of having understood the historical and scientific lessons of their Egyptian and Babylonian predecessors, and more importantly, of *their* forebears of whom Egypt and Babylonia were but pale legacies.

And the timing of the meeting — 1954 — is in itself worth some commentary, for some allege that during 1954, President Dwight D. Eisenhower secretly met with an “extraterrestrial delegation” at a location in California. Others, however, maintain that Eisenhower was not really meeting with extraterrestrials at all, but with very terrestrial Nazis at their secret Argentine headquarters.[42] Moreover, that time period — ca. 1954 — is the same period that the United States Air Force showed a distinct, but highly secret, interest in the free-energy research of one Nazi scientist in Argentina, Dr. Ronald Richter and what it portended for advanced propulsion and energy possibilities.[43] And, at the very same time period, discussion of anti-gravity physics disappeared in the open literature.[44] If one takes the unusually synchronous timing of these disparate events as something less than coincidental, and as somehow related to each other, then clearly one implication is that there is a deep interest within financial circles concerning deep physics. A struggle for financial, and technological, hegemony is subtly implied.

It is between these two unlikely *historical* poles — an extremely ancient one, and a very contemporary one — that this story also moves.

Very obviously, one is dealing here with something that, in modern times at least, looks very much like a conspiracy. And like all conspiracies, it has its “factions,” groups vying for ultimate power that, for whatever reason and combination of circumstances, momentarily and temporarily unites them to make common cause to achieve the agreed upon goal of global domination and hegemony. The conspirators, whoever they are, thus appear at both poles of the story, agreeing to lay down their arms after a terribly destructive war, and to make common cause for the immediate future. They agreed, in short, to a coexistence, to a détente.

However, like all such détentes, this one is destined to break down. The disagreements, such as they are, may occur over the means and methods to achieve it, but ultimately and more importantly, they will occur — if they have not already — over which faction will ultimately lead it. In this, the modern circumstance resembles its "paleoancient" ancestor, the Very High Civilization that blew itself apart and then quickly established the legacy civilizations, the mystery schools and priestly fraternities and the monied class of merchants and bullion brokers that would seek to use one aspect of that lost science — the financial and economic "alchemy" — to recover the other aspect of it, the lost physics of the alchemical manipulation of the physical medium itself.

Thus, there are two other poles between which this story moves: the first being physics, and the second being the economics of high finance and its allied science of "social engineering." We have, then, four poles: two being temporal ones, widely separated in time, and two conceptual or disciplinary ones, apparently widely separated by subject matter and method. For all the previous reasons, our story is partly an historical one, and partly a story about that strange intelligible world of very abstruse physics, of equally abstruse finance, and of the even more abstruse relationship between the two. It is thus above all an interdisciplinary story.

So, before proceeding any further, let us be absolutely clear and certain of what has been said, and what this book attempts to illustrate:

1. There is both in ancient and in modern times an "international monied class" deriving its power from its understanding and manipulation of the science of high finance, and from its monopolization of the money-creating power in its own private hands;

2. This class fought, at both ends of the historical pole, tremendously destructive wars. In the paleoancient[45] instance, this war was interplanetary in nature, and resulted in the fragmentation of the physics and economics components of a highly unified and integrated scientific worldview, in which those components were once united;

3. The result of that ancient cosmic war was the creation of legacy civilizations and secret organizations, in which that monied class swiftly established itself, on the basis of the retention within those societies' orbits of knowledge of at least some aspects of their ancestors' knowledge of the science of high finance and of its relationship to physics;

4. Thus established, this class has bent every effort toward the recovery of the physics component of their ancestral scientific legacy, and has blocked all attempts of those who throughout the millennia have sought to recover it and to *proliferate it among the masses.* The reason they have blocked all such attempts is quite simple, for once in the hands of the masses, their hegemony as a class would be irretrievably, and once and forever, broken.

So, in a sense, the paleoancient "Cosmic War" of which I have written extensively elsewhere, went underground. It became a covert war, a guerrilla war, and has been over the protracted millennia ever since a struggle between those who wish to maintain their power by reconstructing that lost unity of high financial economics and physics and monopolizing it for themselves to enslave mankind, and those who seek not only to reconstruct that lost unity but to share it, to "democratize" it among the great masses of humanity.

This book thus not only moves between two poles widely separated by time, or between two disciplinary poles — physics and high finance — apparently widely separated by subject matter and method, but it is also about the dynamics of that conflict, one which the banksters, for reasons that will become apparent in this book, are ultimately destined to lose, no matter what their extraordinary power or the Byzantine subtlety of their plans and cabals might be.

But surely, the reader will ask, to implicate the first meeting of the Bilderberg Group in this grand millennia-old story is going a bit too far?

On the contrary, the evidence points almost ineluctably toward that conclusion, but in order to see how, one must examine the Bilderberg meetings, and particularly the very first ones, in more detail. For the purposes of this examination, no one has examined and exposed those meetings in more detail than has Daniel Estulin, and he will accordingly be reviewed here.

B. ESTULIN'S STUDY AND STANDARD INTERPRETATIONS

Estulin is a Russian émigré to Canada who first became interested in the Bilderberg group when he and others exposed the 1996 Bilderberg plot to dismember Canada, and have portions of that country "absorbed" by the United States.[46] Put on to the plot by a KGB agent whom Estulin calls "Vladimir," he and his erstwhile informant barely escaped with their lives when, prior to stepping onto an elevator, his informant held him back and pointed out that the elevator floor was missing![47] These two events compelled Estulin to uncover as much as he could about the secretive Bilderberg Group, and as a result, his study, *The True Story of the Bilderberg Group*, will be followed closely here, for the case I believe it makes is ultimately something very different than that Estulin, or other researchers of the Group, believes it to be.

In order to see how, though, it is necessary to see what Estulin actually uncovered about the Group.

1. Estulin’s Sources

Estulin’s book is amply documented with numerous photos, actual pictures of Bilderberg invitations, and so on. But how did he acquire such inside knowledge? His answer is quite simple: “I could not have done this without the help of ‘conscientious objectors’ from inside, as well as outside, the Group’s membership.”[48] A little further on he elaborates on who some of these sources were: the very hotel staff — the cooks, bellboys, waiters, cleaners and other staff the Bilderbergers took such pains to vet![49] And as has been seen, Estulin also received the considerable help of intelligence agents from Russia. This fact will play a major role in our conclusions toward the end of the book, in that it indicates that foreign intelligence services, particularly of those nations and power blocs not under Bilderberg influence, watch and analyze the plans of this self-appointed global elite very carefully and closely.

a. Attendees

So who are the typical attendees of the Bilderberg meetings?

According to Estulin, they are what one might expect of such a gathering of a self-appointed world elite:

> (They) are annually attended by Presidents of the International Monetary Fund, the World Bank, and Federal Reserve; by chairmen of 100 of the most powerful corporations in the world such as Daimler-Chrysler, Coca-Cola, British Petroleum (BP), Chase Manhattan Bank, American Express, Goldman Sachs, and Microsoft; by Vice Presidents of the United States, Directors of the CIA and the FBI, Secretaries General of NATO, American Senators and members of Congress, European Prime Ministers, and leaders of opposition parties; and by top editors and CEOs of the leading newspapers in the world.[50]

Such a group, needless to say, reads like a who's who of the western world's power brokers:

> Every U.S. president since "Ike" Eisenhower has belonged to the Bilderberg Group, not that they have all attended the meetings personally, but all have sent their representatives. Another member is now ex-Prime Minister Tony Blair, as well as most of the principal members of the British government. Even Canada's high-profile past Prime Minister, Pierre Trudeau, was a member. Past Bilderberg invitees are Alan Greenspan, former chairman of the Federal Reserve; Hillary and Bill Clinton; John Kerry; Melinda and Bill Gates; and Richard Perle.
>
> Also members are the people who control what you watch and read — media barons like David Rockefeller, Conrad Black (the now disgraced ex-owner of over 440 media publications around the world from *The Jerusalem Post* to Canada's newest daily, *The*

> *National Post*), Edgar Bronfman, Rupert Murdoch, and Sumner Redstone, CEO of Viacom, an international media conglomerate that touches virtually every major segment of the media industry. They have protected the secrecy of this secret society, and this may be why the name "Bilderberg" is new to you.[51]

With such a concentration of political, financial, and media power, it is understandable that the meetings have, for the most part, been kept fairly secret.

But this list does not really tell the full story, for considerable thought is given to the invitees to each year's gathering. For one thing, notes Estulin:

> It is important to distinguish between active members who assist annually and others who are only invited occasionally. About eighty members are regulars who have attended for many years. Fringe people, who are invited to report on subjects related to their sphere of influence of professional and academic knowledge, are clueless about the formal structure behind the Bilderberg Group, and remain in absolute ignorance of the Group's greater goals and universal objectives. A select few are invited because the Bilderbergers think they may be useful tools in their globalist plan and are later helped to reach very powerful selected positions. One-time invitees who fail to impress, however, are cast aside.[52]

Note what we have here:

1. *Regular attendees* — people such as David Rockefeller and Henry Kissinger — representing the major financial and political interests of the group;

2. *Occasional attendees* or their representatives, representing a similar makeup, but only invited as the situation demands; and

3. *Professionals or academics*, whose expertise is sought in certain situations, presumably to analyze and report on certain trends within the purview of their expertise, and presumably to make forecasts and "recommendations."

As we proceed, we shall see how each of these three groups break down in detail.

For example, within each of these groups, a further breakdown occurs:

> Each country sends a delegation of, typically, three persons: an industry or business leader, a top-level minister or a senator, and an intellectual or chief editor of the leading periodical. The United States has the most participants because of its size. Smaller countries like Greece and Denmark are afforded, at most, two seats. The conferences usually consist of a maximum of 130 delegates. Two-thirds of the attendees are from Europe, and the rest come from the United States and Canada. (Mexican globalists belong to a less powerful sister organization, the Trilateral Commission.)
>
> One-third of the delegates are from government and politics, and the remaining two-thirds from industry, finance, education, labor and communications. Most delegates are fluent in English, with French as their second language of choice.[53]

Thus, a little more analysis is necessary. Note the following preponderances:

1. The Bilderberg Group is heavily weighted to a *European* point of view, though the United States has the largest single representation of any country sending delegates;

2. The Group is similarly weighted to the *private* sector rather than politics or government, with finance, industry, labor and academia being the most prominent members.

From this one may reasonably deduce that the Bilderberg Group, while ostensibly attempting to create a “united front” of these various internal groups and interests for a common cause, nonetheless contains within it two major factions, each of which has in turn two further factions within it:

1. The “European” Faction

2. The “North American” Faction (excluding Mexico).

Within these two main factions, one discerns two further factions:

a. The Political or Government Faction, stressing the role of public institutions of power and the bureaucracies that inevitably accompany them;

b. The Private Finance[54] Faction, stressing the role of the private monopoly of money creation and its dominant role influencing other major private sectors: labor, media, the academy, and so on.

These four internal factions will become quite important when we turn to consider the interpretation of the motivation for the actual *founding* of the Bilderberg Group later in this chapter, for as we shall see, this author departs significantly from the standard line of what its actual purposes, and power, may be.

Note one final thing from this analysis: *the private European faction is the dominant faction in terms of representation.* This is further evident from the fact that the Group, "from its inception, has been administered by a small nucleus of persons, appointed since 1954 by a committee of 'wise men,' which is made up of a European Chairman, both a European and a U.S. Secretary General, and Treasurer."[55]

That stated, however, there is one more significant detail that Estulin adds to this list of "typical Bilderberg attendees. Attendees, according to an unofficial Bilderberg press release, are drawn from a list of 'important and respected people who, through their special knowledge, personal contacts and influence in national and international circles, can amplify the objectives and resources of the Bilderberg Group.'"[56] There are, principally within the categories of "private" attendees, six further typical profiles:

1. industrialists;

2. financiers; as we have already seen, but then the list gets interesting:

3. *ideologues*;

4. military professionals;

5. “professional specialists” such as lawyers, journalists, doctors, and so on; and

6. organized labor.[57]

What *sort* of ideologues, one might ask?

Many people have attempted to answer that question, and in doing so have attempted to analyze the true founding purposes and goals of the Group. Literature on the Bilderberg Group is therefore replete with documentation and speculation of the types of ideologues suspected to attend their meetings, encompassing a broad spectrum from Fabian socialists, globalists, exponents of World Government, animal and environmental activists, feminists, population control advocates, population *reduction* advocates, and so on.

There is one type of ideologue, however, that is *seldom* mentioned, and when it *is* mentioned, even the most perspicacious conspiracy researcher more often than not misses the significance of what it might indicate about the true founding purposes of the group, and the reasons for its very peculiar “union” of the four previously mentioned factions. In doing so, even these few researchers fall prey to the typical “standard interpretation” — which we shall examine a little later in this chapter — and attribute to the Group a monolithic structure and an almost omniscient and infallible power to accomplish its goals. In doing so, they tend to miss the recent and significant signals that there is serious factional infighting occurring within it and similar groups.

But how does this shadowy group manage to keep its existence and meetings secret? After all, a yearly meeting of the West’s elite and powerful that has been ongoing since 1954 would surely cause *some* notice to break out, even in their own closely controlled media organs.

b. Vetting, Securing, and Announcing the Location

The answer, of course, lies in the extraordinary security that surrounds not only the meetings themselves, but more importantly, that surrounds the preparations for them, from the selection of the location, to the timing of the announcements of where the meeting is to be held.

> According to a source within the Steering Committee, "the invited guests must come alone; no wives, girlfriends, husbands or boyfriends. Personal assistants [translation: heavily armed bodyguards, usually ex-CIA and Secret Intelligence Service (SIS a.k.a. MI6)] cannot attend the conference and must eat in a separate hall. Not even David Rockefeller's personal assistant can join him for lunch. The guests are explicitly forbidden from giving interviews to journalists."
>
> To maintain their aura of hermeticism, Bilderbergers book a hotel for the duration of the conference, usually ranging from three to four days, with the whole building being cleared of all other guests by the CIA and local secret service to ensure complete privacy and safety for the delegates. All drawings of the layout of the hotel are classified, staff is thoroughly vetted, their loyalty questioned, their backgrounds verified, and political affiliations checked. Any suspect ones are removed for the duration.
>
> …
>
> The host national government takes care of all the security concerns of the attending guests and their entourage. It also pays the costs of the military protection, the secret service, national and local police presence, as well as all additional private security to protect the intimacy and the privacy of the all-powerful world elite. The attendees are not required to follow the established rules and regulations of the host country, such as having to go through customs, carrying proper identification, such as passports, which are not required on Bilderberg visits. When they meet, nobody who is not on the "in" is allowed to come near the hotel. The elite often bring their own chefs, cooks, waiters, secretaries, telephone operators, busboys, cleaning staff and security personnel.[58]

As a further precaution, even though the timing of meetings is announced to invitees four months in advance, the actual location of the meeting is not made known to them until only one week prior to its occurrence. Finally, all documents distributed to attendees is marked personally for them, and stamped “personal and strictly confidential, and not for publication.”[59]

Observe carefully what this implies, for such a gathering of the super-rich and powerful, with all the banking, media, and governmental contacts that this inevitably brings with it, is not only a Group that is gathering intelligence, circulating and exchanging information, but that it has its own internal classification system, for one might assume that the *contents* of such publications vary from delegation to delegation, if not between the individual attendees themselves. One may also assume that certain individuals receive rather more information — and thus have a higher “classification clearance” — than others.

c. The Sessions and Their Rules

Each meeting is divided into four daily sessions, “two in the morning and two in the afternoon,” with the exception of Saturday afternoons which are left free for leisure activities.[60] When in session, the seating is by “rotatable alphabetical order,” with “A’s” sitting in front one year, and “Z’s” the next, and so on.[61]

All session meetings follow the Rules of the Royal Institute of International Affairs, under which the contents of discussions may be shared, but the identities of individuals making statements, nor indeed, the identities of any individuals in attendance, may be revealed. Additionally, under these Rules, one may not reveal that one received this information at the Bilderberg Group’s meetings.[62]

As Estulin notes, the Bilderberg Group itself released a document in 1989 that stated their first meeting, held in 1954,

> "grew out of the concern expressed by many leading citizens on both sides of the Atlantic that Western Europe and North America were not working together as closely as they should on matters of critical importance. It was felt that regular, off-the-record discussions would help create a better understanding of the complex forces and major trends affecting Western nations in the difficult post-war period."[63]

But there was another goal from the outset that lay hidden within this desire simply to have "off-the-record discussions":

> Lord Rothschild and Laurence Rockefeller, key members of two of the most powerful families in the world, personally handpicked 100 of the world's elite for the secret purpose of regionalizing Europe, according to Giovanni Angelli, the now-deceased head of Fiat, who also said "European integration is our goal, and where the politicians failed, we industrialists hope to succeed."[64]

Bear the goal of European integration in mind, for it will become an important data point in the interpretation of the real founding motivations behind the Bilderberg Group in a moment.

Within a mere 14 years of that first meeting in 1954, however, Bilderberg goals — with the European Common Market well on its way to becoming the European Economic Union and finally the European Union — had taken on a somewhat grander vision:

> (A) comment made to the Bilderberger elite by George Ball during a presentation titled "Internationalization of Business" at the April 26-28, 1968, Bilderberg meeting in Mont Tremblant, Canada, provides a far more truthful and insightful glimpse into the Group's economic orientation. Ball, who was the Undersecretary of State

> for Economic Affairs under JFK and Lyndon Johnson, a Steering Committee member of the Bilderberg Group as well as a Senior Managing Director for Lehman Brothers and Kuhn Loeb Inc., defined what the new Bilderberger policy of globalization was going to be, and how it would shape the Group's policy.
>
> "In essence," writes Pierre Beaudry in *Synarchy Movement of Empire,* "Ball presented an outline of the advantages of a new-colonial world economic order based on the concept of a *world company,* and described some of the obstacles that needed to be eliminated for its success. According to Ball, the first and most important thing that had to be eliminated was *the archaic political structure of the nation state."*[65]

Estulin summarizes what this "world company" means in practical terms about Bilderberger goals. According to him, they want:

1. One International Identity;
2. Centralized Control of the People;
3. *A Zero-Growth Society;*
4. *A State of Perpetual Imbalance*;
5. Centralized Control of All Education;
6. Centralized Control of All Foreign and Domestic Policies;
7. Empowerment of the United Nations;
8. Western Trading Bloc (a NAFTA-like union of North and South America);
9. Expansion of NATO;
10. One Legal System;
11. One Socialist Welfare State.[66]

Bear in mind points 3 and 4 (Zero Growth and Perpetual Imbalance), as they will bear directly on our interpretation of the founding purposes for the Group a little later on.

These “modest” goals therefore influence the vetting process for who gets invited to Bilderberg meetings. Estulin states that the Group’s Steering Committee simply looks “for a One World Order enthusiast and (a) … Socialist.”[67] This is yet another important clue, one that will assume great significance as this book unfolds, for it means essentially that the Bilderberg Group’s worldview is *an intellectually closed system*; dissenting or opposing points of view are not even represented in the Group’s typical composition at any given meeting. As noted before, this gives a distinctively ideological characteristic to the Group’s composition. After all, all of them are ideologues, and the ideology is, quite simply put, global domination by a self-appointed elite. The goal is simply “to rule the world with or without its consent, with guns or butter, without.”[68]

David Rockefeller, of course, is one of the principal movers and shakers in this cooperative elitist effort to enslave mankind, and in 1972, he and protégé Zbigniew Brzezinski founded the Trilateral Commission, a Bilderberg-like group that reached out to include Japan and the Orient within its ranks. The goal was to create an “international alliance that would create strategies and policies to consolidate the four pillars of power — ‘political, monetary, intellectual and ecclesiastical’ — under a central world government.”[69] The “ecclesiastical” component is a long and murky part of this story, and in fact too complicated to go into here as it would require a book of its own. Suffice it to say that the Rockefeller Foundation is the source of many grants to ardent ecumenical movement projects and has been a major supporter of the World Council of Churches. That being said, however, as will be seen in part two of the present book, the alliance between the banksters and a cynical “temple elite” has been a very long one, stretching back to ancient times.

In any case, at the 1991 Bilderberg meeting Rockefeller minced no words about his goals for a “supranational sovereignty of an intellectual elite and world bankers, which is surely preferable to the national auto determination practiced in past centuries.”[70] Given the inability of the Bilderberg Group to countenance viewpoints that do not fall into their “closed system” worldview, it is no surprise that it has taken active steps to remove from prominence those who espouse and/or act upon opposing views.

For example, the Bilderbergers opposed President Charles De Gaulle's creation of an independent French nuclear and thermonuclear arsenal because it threatened to make France too independent and nationalistic on the world geopolitical stage.[71] Estulin also maintains that the Group was behind the removal of Prime Minister Margaret Thatcher because of her opposition to a currency amalgamation between Great Britain and the rest of Europe and the loss of national sovereignty this would inevitably mean for her country.[72] Estulin even presents evidence that Italian Prime Minister Aldo Moro was murdered by the Group for similar reasons, and that Henry Kissinger was implicated in the affair.[73] Finally, according to Estulin the real reason behind the whole sordid Watergate affair and the resignation of President Richard M. Nixon was because he opposed the General Agreement on Tariffs and Trade (GATT), a scheme that would lead inexorably to the NAFTA agreements and the eventual amalgamation of the U.S.A., Canada, and Mexico into a regional super-state.[74]

4. Tentative Conclusions and Implications: The Standard Interpretive Temptation

All these considerations lead many people to what I call the "standard interpretive temptation" of the Bilderbergers and similar groups,[75] namely, that they constitute a more or less monolithic group whose power and competence is scarcely resistible, and whose planning and subtlety is so comprehensive that they seldom fail in their goals, and most importantly, that they show little if any signs of serious fracture and fragmentation — of struggles for power — *within* their own circle. They are, in a word, a sort of *hive* or *herd*, and, adopting the hive and herd mentality for themselves, they seek to extend it to the rest of the world as a means of their own domination and hegemony.

This hive/herd mentality of the Bilderberg Group reflects itself in the way that it and all other such groups view the world economically, conceptually, physically, and politically, for in each of these four cases, they believe it to be a *closed* system. Therefore, it is necessary to have a basic working idea of what is meant by "closed systems" in each of these four senses.

By a closed economic system is meant the idea that the world's energy supply, upon which the financial system of the banksters is based, is founded upon non-renewable energy sources such as oil, natural gas, and so on. Hence, the system is closed since the whole premise of the system is *scarcity and nonrenewability.* Because of this, "One Bilderberg objective is to de-industrialize the world by suppressing all scientific development, starting with the United States. Especially targeted are the fusion experiments as a future source of nuclear energy for peaceful purposes."[76] Note the profound implications of this closed-system economic paradigm, for *it necessitates that the Bilderberg and similar Groups must resort to active measures to suppress the scientific development of new theories and their allied technologies that would shift the world's energy supply — and hence the financial system — to a new basis, and a basis no longer needing to be reliant upon their own monopoly financial power to create the medium of exchange and credit.* These active measures would include, but need not be limited to, the following:

> 1. Suppression of physics theories implying an “open systems” basis for energy, such as any hyper-dimensional theory, zero- point energy theory, and so on, that would lead to technologies tapping into them. Such theories are inherently *open systems theories* and the energy supplies they posit are virtually inexhaustible; hence the financial system would perforce undergo a dramatic metamorphosis, ending their financial money-and-credit creating monopoly, since finance itself would become an open system;
>
> 2. Promotion of physics theories in the public “marketplace of ideas” that are deliberately designed to “dead end,” i.e., make practical technological access to such energy supplies “theoretically impossible” and thus close off scientific debate and discussion, i.e., physics itself is made to be a conceptually closed system;
>
> 3. Suppression of individuals, groups, corporations, or countries developing such energy systems, whether standard and conventional nuclear energy, to more exotic energy sources such as controlled fusion and so-called “free energy” devices;
>
> 4. Promotion of so-called “energy-efficient” technologies that are basically nothing but expensive “upgrades” of the current technologies and energy systems, leaving their monopoly financial power intact and unthreatened.

These considerations lead almost inexorably to a consideration of the next sense of “closed systems,” to the “conceptually closed system.”

As has already been indicated, the type of physics actively promoted by the Group will be deliberately designed to “dead end,” i.e., it will be one of two things. It will either be a closed-system physics, or an open-system physics that *is impractical and even theoretically impossible to engineer for the foreseeable future.* Hence, the Group’s own internal dynamics will not only be conceptually closed to all such theories, but will extend itself across the range of human experience, and conceptualization, since a practically engineerable open-systems physics implies the democratization not only of energy, but its corollaries, finance and political power, across a very broad spectrum of people, as a greater mass of people would be lifted *up* to greater wealth, freedom, and prosperity. The Group, then, evidences the effect of its own closed-system physics, by advocating closed and monopolized systems of finance and politics. This was reflected in the fact that the Group recruits only those who share its view and goals, as we have seen.

And this highlights its first major weakness, for being committed rather unscientifically to such a closed system in which progress is to be shunned and suppressed, the Group shows that it is incapable of adaptability to changing circumstances that are not under its own control. In short, it cannot *evolve* and is therefore destined to stagnate, wither, and die.

This fact evidences a further problem that the Group has, and it is one to which I have averred in previous books and radio talk show interviews, and that is the “proliferation problem.” Estulin outlines this problem in the following fashion:

> Why is nuclear energy hated so much by the New World Order? According to John Coleman, a former British MI6 secret agent, nuclear power stations generating abundant cheap electricity are “*The* key to bringing Third World countries out of their backward state. With nuclear energy generating electricity in cheap and abundant supplies, Third World countries would gradually become independent of U.S. foreign aid, which keeps them in servitude, and begin to assert their sovereignty.
>
> Less foreign aid means less control of a country’s natural resources by the IMF, and greater freedom and independence for the people. It is this idea of developing nations taking charge of their own destinies that is repugnant to the Bilderbergers and their surrogates.
>
> This was confirmed on page 13 of the Bilderberg 1955 General Report: “In the field of atomic energy, scientific discovery was continually overtaking itself…. It could not be excluded that the scientists would put the bomb into the hands of more and more people and so ‘the atomic bomb would become the arm of the

> poor.' The same applied to the development of atomic energy for peaceful purposes, where we had almost to foresee the unforeseeable."[77]

In other words, part of the concern of the Bilderbergers in the decade or so following World War II, was the apparent ease by which atomic energy — and hence atom bombs — could proliferate beyond their ability to control. It would, to put it mildly, be a political nightmare, as smaller nations could conceivably hold the rest of the world under a kind of nuclear blackmail. In short, *some* of their reasons for scientific suppression were indeed altruistic.

However, there all altruism ends, for a virtual Western monopoly on such weapons at that time in the immediate postwar period also gave the Group a final "threat of last resort" against the very people and world it sought and still seeks to enslave. And this brings us back to the other problem: open-systems physics and energy sources. As we shall see subsequently in this book, such systems are relatively easy things to engineer, and moreover, such a physics, if weaponized, would potentially be capable of making a hydrogen bomb look like a firecracker. The Group must therefore seek not only to suppress public exploration and development of this physics from a proliferation standpoint, but it must also seek to develop it privately for itself, giving it yet another monopoly on a technology of hegemony. This too, as we shall see, is yet another link to the ancient past.

There is one final consequence of such a closed-system view of physics, economics, and finance, and that is that it leads to perpetual war,[78] since ever-dwindling resources are being sought by ever more competing interests. Nor is the Group immune from this, since scarcity will inevitably bring about severe factional infighting, as one faction demands more resources than the projected "World Government" or "World Company" wishes to provide it.[79] Eventually, within such a closed-system physico-economic order, the system must devour the world and finally itself.

It is, by its own lights and philosophy, inevitably *doomed.*

If anything emerges from these brief considerations it is this: *in the emerging global community, an open-system physics is ultimately the key to open systems of economics, to open conceptual systems, and to open* *systems of politics and finance.* This deep and profound relationship between physics, finance, and political order is, of course, not unknown to the Bilderberg Group or other such groups, as their own active suppression of such physics and cognate technologies attests.[80] The real question that shall preoccupy us throughout the remainder of this book is exactly why that relationship should even exist, to outline its salient features, and to examine certain aspects of how it has manifest itself in history.

C. UNUSUAL GUESTS AT THE FIRST MEETING, AND THE ALTERNATIVE EXPLANATION: DETENTE

As previously indicated, the standard interpretation of the Group and its surrogates as a monolithic, omnicompetent and omnipotent bloc does not take into account some very significant facts that bear directly upon the interpretation of those early Bilderberger meetings, including especially the first ones ca. 1954-1960. These facts may be distinguished into three classes:

1. The presence of two unusual guests, with prominent Nazi backgrounds, at the first meetings;
2. The wider context of postwar survival of a Nazi International and its financial and political capital and objectives;
3. The occurrence of events — subsequent to the first Bilderberg meeting — indicative of some sort of understanding between the Anglo-American banking elite and the Nazi International, each of which had their own globalist agenda for world domination.

Each of these points must be examined in some detail in order to appreciate their significance for an understanding of at least one of the probable purposes for the establishment of the Bilderberg Group.

Most researchers on the Bilderberg Group have noticed the presence of Prince Bernhard of the Netherlands as the instigator and chairman of one of its first meetings in the 1950s, and some, Jim Marrs for example, have also noted that Bernhard was a former SS officer, as well as a vice president for the notorious and gargantuan German chemicals cartel I.G. Farben.[81] But there is another significant figure present in those first meetings as well, and it is the combination of these two men that indicate there may have been yet another hidden purpose in the founding of the Bilderberg Group.

That man is Deutschebank chairman, Sovereign Military Order of Malta member, and I.G. Farben, Daimler-Benz, and Siemens board of directors member, Dr. Hermann Josef Abs.[82]

In addition to these directorships on Germany's most powerful and largest bank and some of its largest corporations including Siemens and I.G. Farben, Abs, during his tenure as a partner of the private bank of Delbruck, Schickler and Co., located in Berlin, became a close associate of Nazi Party *Reichsleiter* and financial genius Martin Bormann, since Abs' private bank was the very bank that managed the accounts for the Reichschancellery, and thus paid Adolf Hitler's salary as Chancellor![83]

But there is a deeper implication to Abs' presence at the Bilderberg meetings, along with fellow I.G. Farben officer Prince Bernhard, than even this "friendly" relationship with Martin Bormann would indicate. This deeper implication is clearly suggested by the role that Deutschebank played in moving the massive amount of funds overseas that were a component of Martin Bormann's "Strategic Evacuation Plan," first outlined for the Nazi and German corporate leadership at a top secret meeting held in Strasbourg, France, in August of 1944.[84]

As I wrote in one of my previous books, *Nazi International,* seven things emerged as a consequence of this meeting:

1. Bormann basically confiscated any foreign reserves in the possession of German corporations and placed them under the control of the Nazi Party;

2. These funds in turn would be disbursed to corporations in aid of their fulfillment of the goals of the conference;

3. One primary goal was to establish "research bureaus" whose purpose, following the I.G. Farben N.W. 7 model, was to gather intelligence and steal foreign research as well as to conduct their own research;

4. Since these technical offices were to have their own Nazi Party liaison officer reporting directly to Bormann, it is clear that Bormann *intended* for his Nazi International to conduct not only espionage but *research* in its own right, under departments — the "technical offices" — of German corporations only very loosely connected to them;

5. Each such research bureau was to be established under a cloak of other activity, such as "investigating water resources";

6. The capital flight program was designed to see to it that Allied authorities did *not* get the most valuable German scientists, technicians, or knowledge, as represented in patents, all of which

> were to be transferred overseas to safe havens, thus indicating that Bormann, in the light of all the previously enumerated considerations, intended for the Party to continue *an independent line of scientific research under its own control,* all the while managing and sharing any information gained through its espionage activities with the involved German corporations, as the Party and Bormann saw fit.
>
> And all this implies something else, something very obvious, and very significant:
>
> 7. Martin Bormann *fully intended to survive the war in order to coordinate all these activities.*[85]

Note the significant point of establishing "research bureaus" under the direction of Nazi Party liaison officers who, in turn, gathered intelligence, oversaw ongoing postwar Nazi research activities, and who reported directly to Bormann! By extension then, the presence of SS Officer Prince Bernhard as not only a founder of the Bilderberger Group, but as the first chairman of its first meeting, and the presence of Bormann's banker, Dr. Hermann Josef Abs, in later meetings, himself a Farben director along with Prince Bernhard, is a strong indicator that *the Bilderberg Group may have been founded as yet another "liaison office" for Bormann's Nazi International, allowing it not only the opportunity to sit down behind closed doors and "exchange information" with its chief rival for power — the Anglo-American banking elite — but to maintain a constant flow of intelligence on its activities and goals.*[86] It was, in short, a marriage of convenience to move and launder massive amounts of money through the Anglo-American elite's corporations and banks. And as with all such deals with the devil, Bormann's money also carried with it the implied threat that someday the "markers would come due."

There is some corroborative evidence for this interpretation even in Estulin's book itself:

> Most reports contend the original members named their alliance the Bilderberg Group after the hotel where they made their

> covenant. Author Gyeorgos C. Hatonn, however, discovered that German-born Prince Bernhard was an officer in the Reiter SS Corp in the early 1930s and was on the board of an I.G. Farben subsidiary, Farben Bilder. In his book, *Rape of the Constitution; Death of Freedom*, Hatonn claims Prince Bernhard drew on his Nazi history in corporate management to encourage the "super secret policy-making group to call themselves the Bilderbergers after Farben Bilder, in memory of the Farben executives' initiative to organize Heinrich Himmler's "Circle of Friends" — elite wealth-building leaders who amply rewarded Himmler for his protection under National Socialist programs, from the early days of Hitler's popularity through to Nazi Germany's defeat. The royal Dutch family discreetly buried this part of Prince Bernhard's background when, after the war, he became a top official in Royal Dutch Shell, a Dutch-British conglomerate. Today, this rich European oil company forms part of the inner circle of the Bilderberg elite.[87]

There, however, Estulin leaves matters, never to return to the potential implications this information signals.

These potential implications are signaled, once again, by Abs' presence as a Bilderberger, and to see what it is, we have to look a little closer at the postwar relationship between him, Bormann, and the North American faction of the Bilderberg Group that is implicated in a little-known incident.

3. An Event Indicative of an Understanding between the Anglo-American Corporate Globalist Elite and the Nazi International

This incident is a clear indicator that the Bilderberg Group’s early founding was for the purposes of striking a kind of “détente” between the two old rivals, the Nazi International and the Anglo-American elite, since both shared similar goals, and both had access to a *lot* of money. The incident was disclosed by longtime CBS journalist and Ed Morrow associate Paul Manning, in his book *Martin Bormann: Nazi in Exile.* Manning recounts a little-known effort by U.S. Supreme Court Justice Jackson, who had obtained fame as America’s chief prosecutor during the Nuremberg War Crimes Tribunals, and President Harry S. Truman, to track down the Nazi Party *Reichsleiter.* I recounted this effort in my book *The Nazi International* as follows:

> Paul Manning, a journalist and longtime associate and friend of the famous CBS newsman Ed Morrow, mentioned Bormann’s presence in Bariloche province, but did not connect his appearance with the Richter fusion project. Manning begins by noting that President Truman himself became involved in the hunt for Bormann in 1948, three long years *after* Bormann supposedly died trying to escape Berlin, according to the “official standard” history:
>
> On June 16, 1948, President Truman became involved in the hunt for Martin Bormann. Robert H. Jackson, who had once taken a leave from the Supreme Court to serve as U.S. chief prosecutor at the Nuremberg trials, wrote to the president that a quiet search should be made by the FBI for Bormann in South America.
>
> “My suggestion, therefore,” he wrote, “is that the FBI be authorized to pursue thoroughly discreet inquiries of a preliminary nature in South America…. I have submitted this summary to Mr. Hoover and am authorized to say that it meets with his approval. You may inform him of your wishes directly or through me, as you prefer.”[88]

The choice of the FBI to do the investigation is perhaps significant. Under American federal law after Truman signed the National Security Act of 1947 that created the CIA and NSA, the FBI was restricted to intelligence operations on American soil. All operations on foreign soil fell under the jurisdiction of the CIA. So why would Jackson have urged President Truman to undertake an investigation in South America through the FBI? After all, Truman himself signed the law into existence and knew full well its contents.

The answer lies once again in the fact that the CIA, which, under Zurich OSS station chief Allen Dulles during the war, had negotiated a highly secret deal with the head of German military intelligence on the Eastern Front, General Reinhard Gehlen, to turn over — lock, stock, and Nazi — Gehlen's entire network to the nominal oversight of the American intelligence community, leaving Gehlen in charge of its actual day-to-day operations. In other words, before the ink was even dry on the National Security Act of 1947, the CIA's "civilian character" had already been compromised in the most egregious way, since its entire operational desk in Eastern Europe and the Soviet Union, and to a great extent elsewhere as well, was staffed by a network of Nazis! Needless to say, then, the CIA would not be the best instrumentality to investigate Bormann's possible presence in Latin America! Jackson's request also suggests something even darker: that both he and Truman *knew* of the extent of Nazi penetration of the CIA, and therefore of its untrustworthiness as an investigative agency for postwar Nazi activity.

In any case, as Manning observes:

"The presidential authorization was given, and John Edgar Hoover assigned the investigation to his most experienced and skillful agent in South America, who proved that he was just that by eventually obtaining copies of the Martin Bormann file that were being held under strict secrecy by Argentina's Minister of the Interior in the Central de Intelligencia. When the file (now in my

> possession) was received at FBI headquarters, it revealed that the Reichsleiter had indeed been tracked for years. One report covered his whereabouts from 1948 to 1961, in Argentina, Paraguay, Brazil and Chile. *The file revealed that he had been banking under his own name from his office in Germany in Deutsche Bank of Buenos Aires since 1941; that he held one joint account with the Argentinian dictator Juan Perón, and on August 4, 5, and 14, 1967, had written checks on demand accounts in First National City Bank (Overseas Division) of New York, The Chase Manhattan Bank, and Manufacturers Hanover Trust Co., all cleared through Deutsche Bank of Buenos Aires.*"[89]
>
> Bormann's wartime contact with Deutsche Bank bigwig Dr. Hermann Abs, and the connections to the international financial interests of Morgan and Rockefeller via their big New York banks, was paying big dividends, for Bormann quite apparently did not even have to *hide* his identity, but could sign and cash checks under his own name through some of the largest and most well-known banks in America as late as 1967![90]

Observe carefully the dynamic here:

1. Bormann has accounts *after* the war in large American banks representing the Rockefeller-Morgan interest;

2. He is able to draft checks on those accounts and cash them under his own name 22 years after the end of the war;

3. Those checks are cleared through his bank, Deutschebank, through its local Buenos Aires office in Argentina!

We have thus a Bormann-Abs-Rockefeller network, and this clearly implies that the two financial elites, represented by their respective delegations to those early Bilderberg meetings, have reached some sort of *modus vivendi*. The question is, why?

A clue to the answer is afforded in part by the fact that the immediate postwar goals of the Nazi International and the Anglo-American elite are one and the same: the creation of a European federation under German economic dominance. Jim Marrs, in his bestselling book *The Rise of the Fourth Reich*, puts it this way:

> After the war a devastated Europe looked to Germany for economic leadership. The economic steps taken that became the Common Market took the shape of prewar Nazi plans. "(S)omehow the Gernans had the answer originally in 1942 when they were melding the economic institutions of the Continent into their own design," noted Manning.
>
> It is interesting to note that the present European Union (EU) began as merely economic measures.
>
> …
>
> The European Economic Community, better known as the Common Market, was established in 1957 by the Treaty of Rome…. George McGhee, a member of the secretive Bilderberg Group and former U.S. ambassador to West Germany acknowledged that "the Treaty of Rome, which brought the Common Market into being, was nurtured at Bilderberg meetings."[91]

And needless to say, the ultimate goal of world domination was a goal shared both by the North American Faction and the Nazi International, and hence, both could afford to make common cause, to come to an agreement of "détente" and "coexistence" at those first Bilderberg Group meetings.

But there is yet *another* reason such a détente was not only sought by both factions, but in a sense, altogether necessary: money. The rebuilding of Europe, not to mention its integration, would require money, and lots of it, and there were two groups — The North American Bilderberg faction, and the Nazi International — that had it in abundance. For Bormann to “grow” the substantial monies that his Nazi Party had plundered from Europe, he would have to have access to the international banking community and its banks in Britain and North America. Conversely, such vast influx of liquid cash and hard commodities such as gold, diamonds, and platinum, which Bormann’s Nazi International had in abundance,[92] would constitute a reserve that would greatly expand the Rockefeller-Morgan-Rothschild banks’ ledger credit-making ability, enriching them in the process.

It was, inevitably, a “détente” made in banksters’ heaven.

And Bilderberg was the result.

There is, however, a final reason for the détente, one that once again demonstrates the deep connection of finance and physics.

For Bormann’s Nazi International to maintain this détente for such a long period after the war — after all, according to Manning and the Argentine intelligence service, he cashed checks on Rockefeller-Morgan banks via Deutschebank in 1967 — he would have to have had powerful coercive “leverage” with which to ensure that the Anglo-American faction lived up to its part of the deal. Part of this no doubt came from the implicit threat afforded by the vast intelligence resources available to him: General Gehlen’s old German military intelligence unit, now the nucleus of West Germany’s *Bundesnachrichtendienst*, the Nazi Party’s own significant intelligence network, and so on. The mere existence of such a network would convey the threat that if the other faction did not behave according to their agreements, its leaders could be very easily assassinated.[93] There is, however, another bit of leverage Bormann’s Nazi International controlled, and it was one piece of leverage that its rival North American faction dearly wished to possess: alternative physics.

Over the course of four previous books on wartime Nazi secret weapons research — *Reich of the Black Sun, The SS Brotherhood of the Bell, Secrets of the Unified Field,* and *The Nazi International* — I have detailed the story of the Nazi Bell device, a hyper-dimensional physics device being researched under the auspices of the SS departments *Entwicklungstelle-IV(*Development Area IV), *Forschung, Entwicklung, und Patente*

(Research, Development, and Patents), and SS General Hans Kammler's super-secret weapons black projects think-tank, the *Kammlerstab*.[94] As the mission brief of the *Entwicklungstelle IV* was to develop free energy and to make Germany independent of foreign oil,[95] and as the latter two departments were responsible for the Bell itself (a device I believe to have been designed for a threefold purpose: to investigate that same "free energy," to explore the possibilities of advanced field propulsion concepts, and finally, as a weapon that had the potential to make even the largest thermonuclear bombs pale by comparison for destructive potential),[96] this device and the alternative physics it represented and embodied were a clear threat to the closed-systems approach *of at least the North American* faction within the Bilderberg Group and similar groups. As I also detail in *The Nazi International*, Bormann saw to it that while the Allies and Soviets received an almost equal and stalemating division of the technological spoils of the Third Reich, this device he retained for the Nazi International, and continued a line of independent investigation of its physics.[97]

This independent investigation was headquartered in Argentina, near the remote city of San Carlos de Bariloche in Rio Negro province, some 900 miles southwest of Buenos Aires. Ostensibly a project investigating techniques for controlling thermonuclear fusion, it had evidently achieved some success, as dictator Juan Perón made an announcement in 1951 to this effect.[98] Further investigation, however, revealed that the ultimate goal of the project was far beyond this, as the project's head, Dr. Ronald Richter, viewed controlled fusion and plasma processes as a way to manipulate and the zero point energy, the fabric of space-time itself.[99]

For our purposes here, however, it is important to note that the United States shows an interest in Richter's project some four years *after* it was shut down by Bormann and his Nazi International.[100] This fact, plus the fact, according to Bell researcher Igor Witkowski, that after the war the United States made every effort to reconstruct the personnel team that worked on the Bell,[101] and that it also even went so far as to launch a military commando raid into Czechoslovakia in 1946 to recover documents doubtless relating to General Kammler's secret weapons group,[102] is a strong indication that the Anglo-American faction *knew* in a general fashion of the existence of this alternative physics in postwar Nazi hands, and was attempting to recover as much of it for themselves as possible, and break Bormann's monopoly hold over it and restore a "balance of power," albeit a covert one, between the two factions.[103] Needless to say, there is also every indication that the Soviets and Allies began a crash program after the war to investigate similar lines of physics for themselves.[104]

This indicates a possible final reason for the détente: Bormann's Nazi International could literally dangle portions of that physics and its cognate technologies before his erstwhile allies' noses, and dole it out piecemeal, if he so chose, in return for "favors." And this hints at a potential internal dynamic within the factions represented by the Bilderberg Group, for each faction would seek not only to suppress *public* development of such physics and technologies, but also seek to inhibit *the other faction's* development of it as well.

5. An Analogy of the Détente: The 1939 Nazi-Soviet Pact

An apt analogy of this situation is afforded by the Nazi-Soviet Pact of 1939, the pact that secretly divided Poland into Nazi and Soviet "spheres of influence" and made World War II possible. Both regimes being what they were, both took cynical advantage of the geopolitical situation, fully knowing that at some future time the two nations would probably come to blows. The pact was simply a "détente," a "coexistence" wherein both sides agreed not to go to war with each other, allowing a period of time during which each could build up its forces to do precisely that!

For reasons that were in part outlined in the prologue and to be explored subsequently, this author believes that within the last decade or so, there are distinct signs that that the postwar détente within the Bilderberg Group is breaking down, and that there is quiet, though very serious, covert war being waged between the various factions of that international corporate elite.[105]

But what are the practical implications of this "closed system" approach to physics and economics?

For the conspirators adopting them and imposing them on the rest of the world, they are very simple. In the first instance, that of "globalization," a closed global economic order will eventually devour itself, and therewith, the conspirators themselves. Knowing this, they have two possible alternatives: (1) development of new energy sources which they can monopolize, a risky prospect as we shall see, or (2) they can "open" the system up a bit, and venture into outer space, creating a potential "competitor," while simultaneously promoting factional and regional imbalances on the earth which they can manipulate and control, and maintain the illusion that the economy is perking along nicely (as they have done in the past). Both components of this stratagem are themselves fraught with risks as well, for in promoting regional imbalances and factional infighting, they run the risk that they will eventually lose control of them, and that the unitary closed global system will fragment, and their power be correspondingly diminished.

D. CONCLUSIONS AND IMPLICATIONS

So what may one conclude from this examination of the real purposes behind the Bilderberg Group?

As we have seen, the following points now evidence themselves:

1. There is a deep and profound connection between the closed-systems approach of finance and politics advocated by such international groups of the corporate elite, and closed-systems physics;

2. This connection necessitates that any internal factions within it seek to suppress the open and public development of such physics, as well as to monopolize it for themselves and deny it to other factions;

3. Any such group must also seek to extend its influence over the other areas of power: academia, labor, and, as we saw from David Rockefeller’s remarks, religion. This will figure prominently in part two in our examination of why ancient temples functioned also as centers for the then banking class;

4. In the wake of World War II, an apparent détente was struck between two major factions — the Anglo-American, and the Nazi International or European faction — as a result of the pressing need for channeling vast amounts of Nazi plunder back into Europe, and as the North American Group and the European group each used the meetings to gather intelligence on the other, and keep abreast of its activities.

With these observations, we have seen at one end of the historical pole the interrelationships of closed and open systems, of the banking elite, and of the necessity for it to suppress the development of open-systems physics that would lead to open financial systems. We have moreover suggested that there is serious factional polarization and tension within that class hiding just beneath the surface, and able to break out into open conflict given certain circumstances.

It is now time to press our examination a little further back into history, toward the Great Depression, and a hidden, little-known and little appreciated legacy of one of America's most unpopular Presidents. Thereby we will be afforded the perspective by which to perceive quite clearly the interrelationships of physics and economics itself, and to track that relationship even further back into history.

Two

HOOVER'S HIDDEN LEGACY AND GIFT

INDICATORS OF A LOST SCIENCE

⁂

All our chart can tell us is that, failing a revolution of some sort, the pattern as established will presumably prevail."

— Edward R. Dewey and Edwin F. Dakin[106]

No President of the United States of America has gone down in history more lamented, and even excoriated, than has Herbert Hoover, whose twin misfortunes were first to have presided over the country at the beginning of the Great Depression, and secondly, to have been such an ardent free-market ideologue that he genuinely thought there was nothing he nor the government could nor should do to alleviate the suffering of those who had lost their savings, farms, and homes during the crisis. In this he came the closest of any American chief executive to the attitude of Marie Antoinette who, upon hearing of the plight of France's poor being unable to purchase adequate food and bread, is reported to have said merely, "Let them eat cake." His presidency thus came to epitomize the popular perception that the U.S.A. was a government of Wall Street, by Wall Street, and for Wall Street. Marie Antoinette, of course, lost her head over the matter. Hoover managed to retain his head, but was expelled from the presidency in 1932 in an election that swept Franklin Delano Roosevelt into office. But Hoover did leave one enduring legacy of his attempt to find a genuinely long-term solution to the problem of "boom-and-bust" business cycles that had plagued American history, and it is a legacy few people even know exists. And even among the few that do know of its existence, even fewer of them know its true significance.

That legacy was Edward R. Dewey, and *his* legacy, the Foundation for the Study of Cycles.

Dewey's interest in cycles began when Hoover, beset by the misery the Great Depression was inflicting on so many Americans, wanted to know the cause of it, and assigned the U.S. Department of Commerce the task of finding it out. The assignment fell to Dewey, who was at that time the Chief Economic Analyst of the Commerce Department.[107] Seeking out the assistance of various economists, he lost faith in standard methods of economics when they could not provide him with coherent and consistent answers and models. Having access to the vast amounts of information available to him from the Commerce Department, Dewey adopted a novel approach. Rather than concerning himself with the *whys and causes* of depressions, he decided to study *how* economic and business cycles occurred. He decided, in other words, to study the *what*, and not the *why*,[108] and in doing so, he discovered something very significant.

He discovered that cycles, *waves* of behavior, existed in almost all aspects of economic and human social life, from the prices of pig iron to human emotions themselves. According to the Foundation for the Study of Cycles' website itself, Dewey learned of a "1931 Canadian conference on biological cycles. Under the guidance of Dewey and the conference leader, Copley Amory, the conference's Permanent Committee was organized into the Foundation for the Study of Cycles, and *its scope was enlarged to encompass all disciplines*."[109] Having access to this expanded database led to the Foundation's establishment in 1941, and it has continued to gather hard *empirical* evidence on all manner of cycles in all possible disciplines ever since. The work of the Foundation continued in Dewey's tradition, gathering evidences of the *what* rather than the *why,* though inevitably, as we shall see, the vast and overwhelming amount of data it accumulated led to some of its members trying to work out a comprehensive theory of the causes of these cycles, of the *why.*

In any case, this was Hoover's lasting legacy — a profoundly positive though unsung one — from the Great Depression and his otherwise blighted presidency, for it led in 1947 to the first "comprehensive" publication of what the Foundation had discovered. This was a book co-authored by

Dewey and his associate, Edwin F. Dakin, called *Cycles: The Science of Prediction.*[110] It is by means of this book that we shall gain our initial entrance into the deep physics connection between cycles of human behavior, economics, and energy technologies.

A. AN OVERVIEW OF DEWEY'S DATABASE

Anyone reading Dewey's and Dakin's *Cycles: The Science of Prediction* will immediately be struck by the sheer amount of data — which is but a tiny *fraction* of the data gathered by the Foundation in its decades of research! — that is crammed into its comparatively short 255 overstuffed pages. There are graphs of the growth curves of pumpkins, yeast cells, and fruit flies,[111] of whole countries like Sweden, the United States,[112] France, Algeria,[113] of populations, of manufactures,[114] of exports and imports,[115] of the growth of railroads, shipbuilding, and automobile building industries,[116] of cattle, corn, cotton, wool, wheat, malt liquor, lumber, and cotton spindle production, coal, copper and lead production,[117] of airplane and natural gas production,[118] of paper and wood pulp production.[119] There are charts of the rises and fall of Atlantic salmon populations,[120] of lynx and tent caterpillar population cycles,[121] even of the cycle of ozone levels at London and Paris.[122]

There are charts of 54-year periodic cycles in wholesale prices, wages, and interest-bearing securities, of coal production in England and coal consumption in France, of pig iron and lead production in England.[123] There are charts and graphs of nine-year cycles of prices in manufactured goods, common stocks, wholesale prices.[124] There are three-and-a-half-year cycles of industrial production and common stock prices,[125] 18-year cycles of real estate activity, housing and building construction,[126] marriages, wheat acreage, bricks,[127] of construction in Hamburg, Germany, of skyscrapers in New York City and Chicago,[128] loans and discounts and railroad stock prices,[129] and on and on it goes.[130]

What emerged from all this vast accumulation of data was that the growth curve of things — no matter what they were, from yeast cultures to countries — was *the same*, and that there were *discernible wave forms, cycles, of varying years' duration*, in all manner of things, from stock prices to ozone levels to atmospheric electricity, and that these cycles were not only discernible but *quantifiable* because they were *regular*. And because they were *regular*, they were not only *inevitable* but also *predictable*. As we shall see, in this inevitability and predictability, there lies quite a tale, for that story is in fact what this book is about.

But needless to say, the possession of such a database, not to mention its potential in the hands of those who knew about it, made it a "tool to possess" for those who stood to benefit financially and politically from such knowledge, and this in turn may account for the fact that, while a public foundation, few people actually *know* about it, and fewer still have an inkling of what its vast database implies about the structure of the physical world, and about those who would, through technological means, manipulate that structure for whatever purpose, and, in this regard, one need only recall that Dr. David Li's Gaussian copula formula was precisely a technique of such manipulation. But we get some measure, perhaps, of the Foundation's true importance and the true significance of its research by the presence within its membership and lists of published papers of at least one member of a prominent international bank. For example, in its library of available papers on its internet website, one finds the following interesting catalogue of papers, and these, again, are but a few of those publicly available. There are many more available to members of the Foundation: 1. A paper by Theodor Landscheidt, Director of the Schroeter Institute for Research in Cycles of Solar Activity, Nova Scotia, entitled "Cosmic Regulation of Cycles in Nature and the Economy." The short abstract of this paper is also illuminating, for the paper is about "cycles in nature that can be understood and predicted, and that are connected with human behavior, especially in the economy."[131] Note that what is implied here is a direct relationship between solar cycles and human economic activity.

> 2. A paper by Ray Tomes, Director, Advanced Management Systems, Ltd., in New Zealand, entitled "Towards a Unified Theory of Cycles." The short abstract of this paper is equally illuminating, for it states that "Evidence suggests that earth-based cycles are caused by lunar and solar effects on earth's weather system. New ideas are presented to explain both *the mechanism by which planetary alignments cause solar variations,* and the reasons for detailed harmonic relationships."[132] This is a bombshell, and will play a major role throughout this book, for observe what Tomes has just stated, and stated very explicitly: planetary

> alignments constitute *some sort* of causal mechanism on the cycles of solar activity, and with that, we are but one step away from astrology. There is but one problem with that conclusion, and that is that, with the Foundation, one is dealing with a group that has massive amounts of empirical, quantifiable, and regular cyclic data on which they may base their theoretical conclusions. And one need only compare this massive *historical* database, and the presence of at least one known member of the international banking community, with Dr. David Li's Gaussian copula formula which deliberately set aside historical data, to perceive the profound difference between the two approaches, and to perceive the implication that, at some point, someone "in the know" must have known what the real historical cycle would be.
>
> 3. Finally, and for our immediate purpose, there is a paper by Mike Niemara who is stated simply to be an "Economist, Mitsubishi Bank, New York," entitled "Forecasting Turning Points in the International Business Cycle." While the title of this paper is what one might expect from an economist working for a very large Japanese international bank, the abstract, again, is not, for besides referring to the use of "new statistical techniques" for the "monitoring and forecasting of turning points in the international business cycle," the abstract ends in a most unconventional fashion by stating that the paper will also deal with "the role of sunspots in economic activity"![133]

From this one may reasonably conclude that at least *some* in the international banking community have perceived a *physics* connection to macro-economic activity and cycles, and are bent on discovering what it is. One may envision this as a kind of "econophysics," for if there *is* a physics connection, then it stands to reason that if one has a "standard public consumption" physics view of physical systems as closed systems, then one will perforce have a similar view of economics. But if, as these three examples of the Foundation's published papers attest, both physics and economics are based on interrelated and hence open systems, then one will have a corresponding economics and physics.[134]

B. THE INEVITABILITY AND PREDICTABILITY OF CYCLES: CLOSED VS. OPEN SYSTEMS

But what did Dewey and Dakin themselves state about these cycles and their implications and significance?

In the introduction to their book, Dewey and Dakin state their case with careful circumspection:

> There are those who, admitting that economics has not been an exact science, also insist that it cannot be, in the sense of predicting outcomes in human affairs. There are even some who consider prediction regarding human life as a kind of impiety — or fakery, at best.
>
> …..
>
> The reader will be introduced to a method of thinking about the future which — new though it may be to him — seems definitely to have proved of value. It is this method which is of fundamental importance — an importance greater than any specific conclusions to which it may lead. For on its validity depends the whole value of the conclusions.
>
> ….
>
> It is hoped that the reader's reward will be the discovery that in economics, as in other sciences, we are apparently dealing with laws regarding rhythmic human response to certain stimuli that give *a remarkable working tool to any man who is responsibly concerned with future outcomes — whether he be businessman, community leader, or statesman.*[135]

Of course, the idea of a "remarkable working tool" in the hands of those "responsibly concerned with future outcomes" implies the same remarkable tool could be used by those "*irresponsibly* concerned with future outcomes" as well. In short, behind their carefully measured prose lies the true significance of their work: it is an extraordinarily powerful tool of prediction, and, to that extent, of manipulation.

This they admit a little further on, when they hint at the potential physics basis of their work:

> The discovery that the law of averages applies to humanity — that certain activities of people, viewed en masse, fall into definite patterns, some of which repeat themselves with periodic rhythm — promises to be of great aid in making economics function as a true science.[136]

This appeal to a “statistical approach” to human behavior *in the aggregate* reveals the potential physics implications, for a similar such approach is used in quantum mechanics, where the random motions and positions of individual particles is never known, but a statistical picture can emerge of their behavior in the aggregate. As will be seen, this analogy to physics only grows, and becomes more explicit, as we proceed.[137]

But then, shortly after implying this “statistical physics” approach to sciences of human behavior, Dewey and Dakin make a statement pregnant with implications:

> When a people finds that predictions of many financial advisers, statesmen, historians, and other proclaimed experts are seldom better than the predictions of the astrologers, our social sciences have demonstrably not been earning their way. It is time for action.[138]

Obviously, from the tenor of their remarks, Dewey and Dakin do not repose much scientific basis or confidence in astrology. Yet, by appealing to it as an illustration of the state of the social sciences, including economics, they have implied a connection between the two. It is a connection that, as we shall see, only looms larger and larger as our examination of their book *Cycles: The Science of Prediction* proceeds. Indeed, they can hardly have been oblivious to the connection, and may have been trying to head off any criticism from certain quarters that they were indeed proposing a sophisticated kind of astrology.

Having stated this peculiar comparison and caveat, they then proceed to distinguish between a “theoretical economics” and an “empirical economics,” again implying yet another analogy to physics:

> This book is an attempt to show, in an elementary way for the reader unfamiliar with this form of research, how some of the inept arguments over economic outlooks can be avoided by using a few facts that should now be familiar to all. This application of a new method to a study of economic activity, while relatively young, seems nevertheless more promising, in offering results, than traditional economic theories that fill textbooks with opinions and arguments over whether a given cause is really an effect, and vice versa.[139]

In other words, one may imagine a “theoretical economist” filling blackboards with complicated models and differential and integral equations, and on that basis, making analyses of “causes” and of “effects” with no real practical utility or basis in data — Dr. Li comes to mind once again — or at best, a basis in a rather narrow selection of data. In fact, some data may fly completely in the face of the proposed theoretical model. In this, the analogy to much of modern theoretical physics is very striking, where a certain class or type of data is ignored or swept under the rug because it is either contradictory to the “known” theory, or because the accepted and reigning theory is simply unable to account for it, and because there may not be — by such “theoretical physicists’” lights — any way to account for the data by any theory known to them. This, for Dewey and Dakin, was exactly the state of modeling in standard economics in their day. For them, they state their case with a classical “empirical scientist’s” concision: “(The) ‘forecasts’ are written by the data…. They do not rest on the opinion of any man, or men. They are, in effect, the *probabilities* of tomorrow.”[140]

But what exactly did all this vast mountain of data — from cycles of atmospheric electricity to tent caterpillar populations — indicate?

A glance at a few of Dewey’s and Dakin’s charts of growth patterns in various things will say more than any words possibly could.

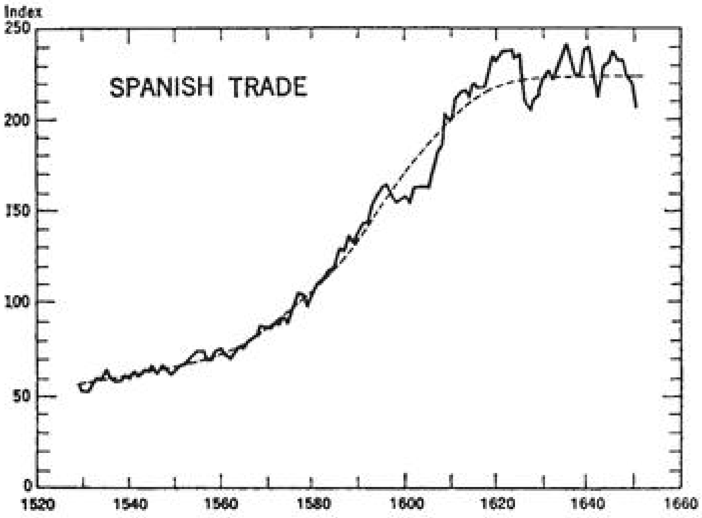

*Graph of Spanish Trade*141

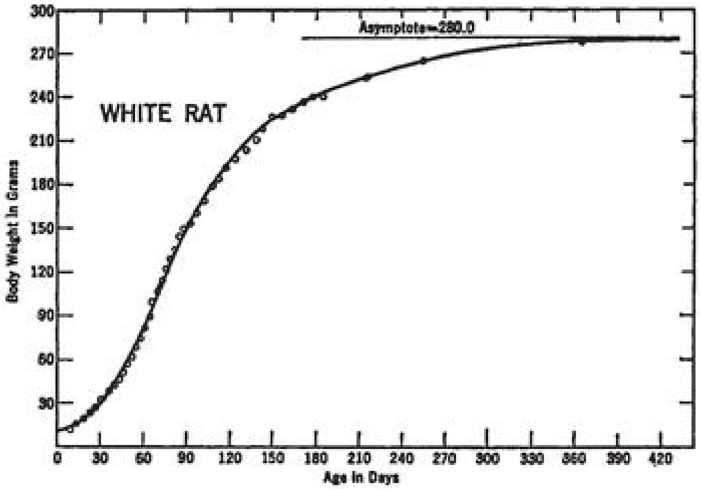

*Growth of White R at Population*142

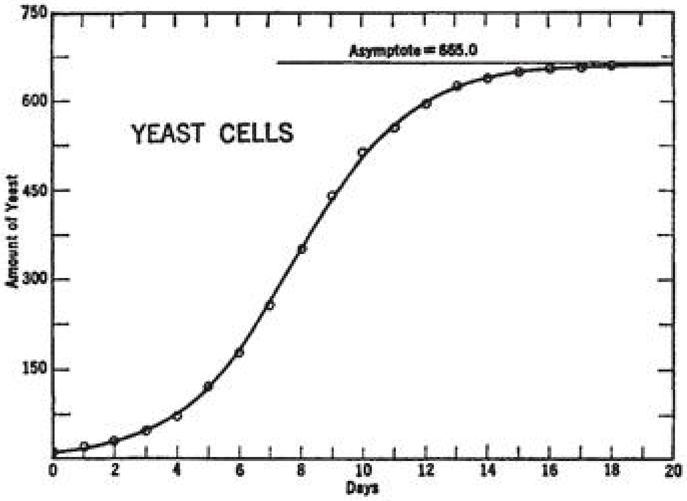

Graph of the Growth of Yeast Cells[143]

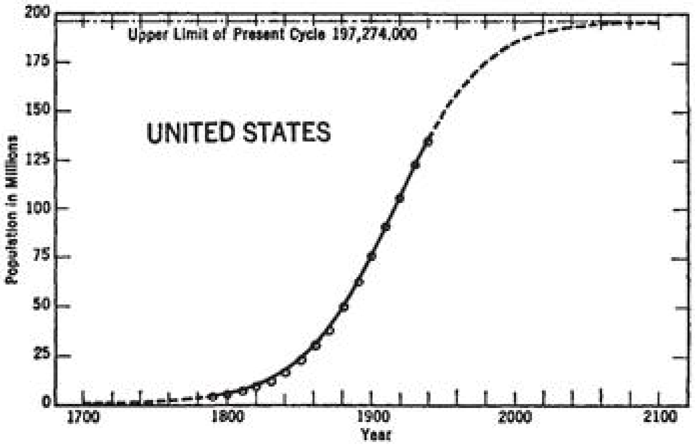

United States Population Growth[144]

Dewey and Dakin explain the meaning of these and similar graphs with simplicity and concision:

> The facts of growth are common knowledge to most mothers, who are encouraged by doctors to keep a weight chart around the nursery, for reference at weighing time. All healthy babies, like other healthy organisms, show large initial rates of growth — over 100 per cent for babies the first year. As they get older, the rate of growth gradually falls off. At the approach of maturity, the rate growth finally reaches zero.

> Why it is that an organism stops growing we do not really know….
>
> But knowledge that such an inhibiting factor does exist is important to us, even when we cannot explain it. We find it reasonable that such a factor should be at work in organisms like a baby or a tree, just because we are used to observing it in action. But it also works in other kinds of organisms, such as human institutions and business organizations.[145]

In other words, the pattern of growth, when appropriately graphed, is almost universal and identical, regardless of the time frame in which such growth is measured, whether that of mere minutes, days, or whole decades.

And this necessitates a comment about Dr. Li’s copula formula, and indeed, about the whole nature of privately-created debt money, versus the actual pattern of economic growth. Under Li’s formula, and indeed, behind the whole principle of money-as-debt creation, there lies one very obvious fact, namely, that there is no limit on the number of credit default swaps, or on the amount of debt, that can be created. Indeed, as the law of compound interest shows, such debt only grows exponentially, like a cancer. But as Dewey’s and Dakin’s endless examples show, *actual growth within an economic system reaches a peak and begins to level out, barring the introduction of new factors such as a new technology, into the system to open it up once again.* Thus, under such considerations, the interest on debt, or even on debt swaps, can never be repaid.

For example, when examining such cyclic graphs for industrial production in various key industries in the United States, as well as for its overall population growth and general economic trend, Dewey and Dakin came to what was then, in economically booming post-World War II America, a rather disturbing and radical conclusion:

> …(The) trends existing in a number of our great industries show definitely that we have been reaching a period of basic “maturity” in our whole economic development. This is a fact of enormous implications that reach in many directions. The implications are so great, indeed, that many people (as usual with humanity) find it

> easier to deny the fact, in heated argument, than face it honestly and then proceed to deal with it.[146]

To put it succinctly, the United States was reaching the upper limit of growth in almost all crucial categories of activity. And, as their own graph of U.S. population growth that we have reproduced previously itself indicated, this limit would begin to be reached around the years 2000 to 2100. It was a cycle reflected in other key areas.

1. Criticism from the Conventional

The analogy between physics and economics in their theoretical and practical pursuits highlights a series of criticisms conventionally-minded economists such as Dr. Milton Friedman have leveled against Dewey's and Dakin's *Cycles.* According to Friedman, their book

> is not a scientific book; the evidence underlying the stated conclusions is not presented in full; data graphed are not identified so that someone else could reproduce them; the techniques employed are nowhere described in detail…. Its closest analogue is the modern high-power advertisement — here of book length and designed to sell an esoteric and supposedly scientific product. Like most modern advertising, the book seeks to sell its product by making exaggerated claims for it… showing it in association with other valued objects which really don't have anything to do with it… keeping discreetly silent about its defeats or mentioning them in only the vaguest form… and citing authorities who think highly of the product.[147]

But Friedman, too, later in life succumbed to the temptation to write a book about economic science for a popular audience called *Free to Choose*, one of the books influential in the popular culture of the Reagan era, and his own earlier criticisms against Dewey and Dakin might justifiably be leveled at his own attempts at popularization in that book.

More detailed criticisms came from economist Murray Rothbard, and with these criticisms, the analogy between physics and economics becomes even more acute:

> Any such "multicyclic" approach must be set down as a mystical adoption of the fallacy of conceptual realism. There is no reality or meaning to the allegedly independent sets of "cycles." The market is one interdependent unit, and the more developed it is, the greater the interrelations among market elements. It is therefore impossible for several or numerous independent cycles to coexist as self-

> contained units. It is precisely the characteristic of a business cycle that it permeates all market activities.[148]

But Rothbard's critique misses the mark, for nowhere do Dewey and Dakin claim that their numerous cycles are "independent" of each other. All they claim is that, whatever phenomenon as one chooses to examine that endures over time, that phenomenon will demonstrate a cycle or wave pattern. They do not claim for them a self-contained independent *closed system* existence free from interrelationship with other such cycles. Indeed, as will be seen in the next section, they argue the exact *opposite* of what Rothbard says they do.

The physics analogy of Rothbard's critique is thus evident, for by claiming that their multicyclic approach "must be set down as a mystical adoption of the fallacy of conceptual realism," he is suggesting a kind of "Copenhagen" school of economics analogous to that in quantum mechanics, for whom the equations of quantum mechanics did *not* refer to any underlying physical reality as their basis, but rather such equations were solely mathematical artifacts of the theory.[149] Similarly, for Rothbard, "there is no reality or meaning to the allegedly independent cycles" *because* they are interrelated. For Dewey and Dakin, they *are* real precisely *because they are open systems and interrelated.* The bottom line then is that Rothbard's critique is an ideological and philosophical one. The problem, however, is that both Dewey and Dakin, and their critics, did not realize the true nature of what they had discovered, namely, that they had discovered something less about economics than about *physics*, and that the economic activity their cycles were tracking were but a subset of a larger cyclic class of phenomena whose true nature and characteristics were the result of a very deep physical mechanics of the physical medium itself. But that insight must wait for future chapters. We have already seen, however, that Dewey and Dakin clearly must have suspected as much, since they included cyclic data about purely physical phenomena, and, as we have also already seen, many members of the Foundation have presented papers linking the two in a kind of "econophysics," suggesting a purely physics-based influence on the patterns of cyclic human activity. This was a conception that, once again, recalls astrology, and Dewey's and Dakin's own remarks about economics and astrology. Such remarks suggest that they may have begun to suspect some deep and profound relationship between their economic cycles and very ancient conceptions of physical influences upon mankind epitomized by that ancient craft.

C. Cycles, Trends, and Cycles Upon Cycles

So exactly how *do* Dewey and Dakin demonstrate their awareness that all the vast number of cycles their Foundation has tracked are indeed interdependent? The answer to this question lies (1) in their distinction between cycles and trends, (2) in their conception of a periodic cycle, and (3) in what they call “overlays” of cycles. With these “overlays,” as we shall see, there is an exact physics analogue, and in that analogue, profound implications.

1. The Period Patterns

Cycles may easily be distinguished from mere trends within an overall periodic rhythm by a glance at one of their many graphs. Note on the following graph how the basic waveform of the cyclic period is graphed, versus the actual measured data, some of which falls above, and some of which falls below, the theoretical value of the wave form itself. Those smaller peaks and troughs within the overall pattern they designate as “trends,” as distinct from the overall periodic cycle itself. If one examines the chart carefully, it is evident that the psychological effects of a “trend” will vary depending on where in a cycle it occurs. For example: if a downward trend occurs on the upward curve of a cycle, the effect will not be as severe. If it occurs on a downward portion of a cycle, it will be felt as correspondingly more severe.[150]

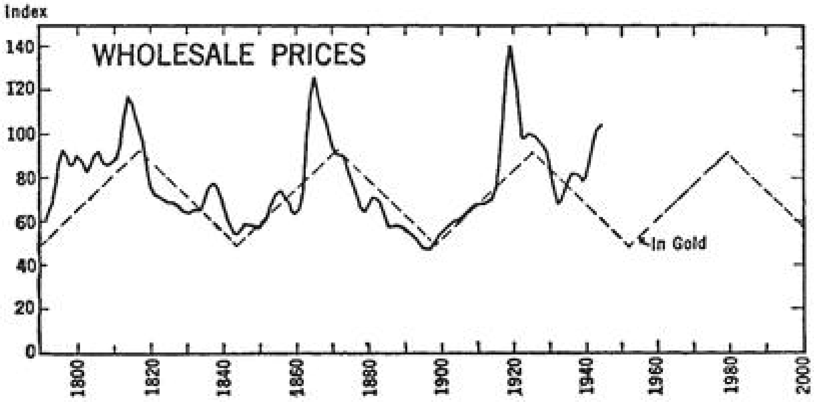

54-Year Periodic Cycle of Wholesale Prices[151]

As we shall discover, this distinction between a mere trend and an overall cycle will have profound implications in their understanding of how much, or little, human actions, including political action, can exacerbate or alleviate an overall cycle.

Their remarks in this respect are illuminating:

> We shall quickly discover that the so-called business or economic cycle is in reality a composite of many different cycles. We shall be

> particularly interested in studying them for evidences of *rhythm*. For if and when we find rhythm we can, *to the extent justifiable,* predict recurrence; and we shall have predictability on the basis of much more than finite logic and guess.
>
> It has long been assumed that if we could only isolate the *causes* of economic cycles we could then effectually prevent them, and so eliminate the downsweeps that plague highly organized societies.
>
> Many volumes have been written to discuss the cases. **Here we shall be far less concerned with the cause than with the timing**.[152]

Note that Dewey and Dakin explicitly state that the "economic cycle is in reality a composite of many different cycles," and thus expose the criticism of Murray Rothbard previously cited — that they do not take into consideration the complexity of the interrelationships of components of an economy — as utterly unrelated to anything Dewey or Dakin actually wrote! Their real "heresy," as we shall see, lies not in the interrelationship of economic cycles, but in proposing that there may be even deeper relationships between economic cycles and cycles of purely *physical* phenomena.

In any case, it is worth noting what they state about rhythms or rhythmic cycles and periods:

> *Rhythm,* or *rhythmic cycle,* will ordinarily be used to denote a cycle which repeats itself at rather uniform time intervals. Rhythm implies a kind of beat. Thus the beating of the heart is rhythmic, though it may be slightly irregular.
>
> *Perdiocity, periodic cycle,* or *regular cycle,* will be used to denote a cycle which repeats itself at mathematically exact intervals. True periodicity, like a true straight line or a true circle, does not exist in nature; but we have close approximations.[153]

Here is yet another link, and a potential clue, to the deeper physics that may be involved in such interrelationships, for such cycles are precisely quantizable, and these quantities, these measurable cycles, may be giving out profound clues about the nature and structure of space-time itself. Dewey and Dakin were not oblivious to this physics connection and implication, but on the contrary, carefully selected a specific physics analogue to explain their conception of deeply interrelated economic (and other) cycles. To see what this physics analogue is, one must examine what they mean by interrelated cycles.

2. “Overlays”: Combined Cycles as Multiwave Modulation, and Possibly as Interferometry?

Briefly put, interrelated cycles are really nothing but super-positions of the wave form of one cycle upon that of one or more others. For example, among the many quantifiable types of cycles operative in various realms of activity — whether human or otherwise — Dewey and Dakin devote a significant portion of their book to the overview of a nine-year cycle,[154] a nine and two-thirds year cycle,[155] a four-year cycle,[156] a 41-month solar cycle and other types of solar cycles,[157] a 35-year weather cycle,[158] a 22-year weather-solar cycle,[159] and of course the 54-year cycle whose graph we have previously cited.[160]

As indicated, Dewey and Dakin, no less than their more conventionally-minded economist critics, view economic cycles as a complex system of interrelationships, but unlike their critics, do not despair of quantifying those relationships, not in terms of their *causes and effects* but in terms of their *beginning and periodicity in time*. Thus, the interrelationship of all these cycles expresses itself in an exact model: that of the superposition of the wave forms of the cycles themselves, or what they call “overlays.”

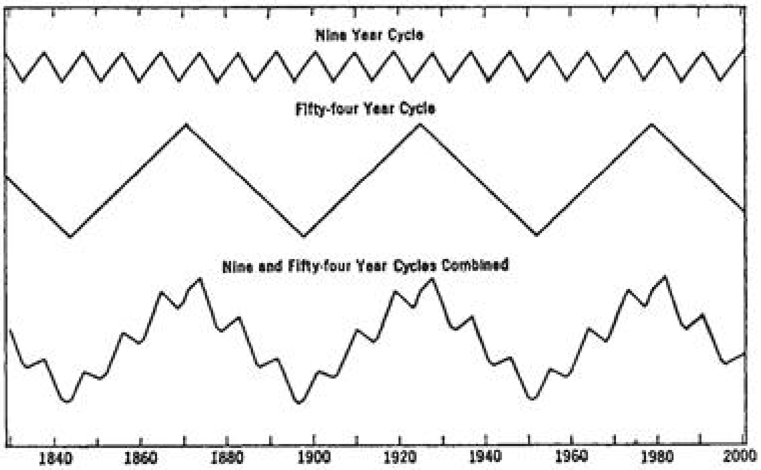

Dewey and Dakin’s Example of the Overlay of the Nine-Year and 54-Year Cycles[161]

At the top of this graph is a simplified version of the nine-year cycle. In the middle is the 54-year cycle, and at the bottom is the “overlay” or composite of both cycles. It should be noted that the longer and lower-frequency 54-year cycle retains a “dominant characteristic” in the composite over its shorter and higher-frequency nine-year cycle. This too, as we shall discover, is yet another important clue to a possible deeper underlying physics.

According to Dewey and Dakin, one of the first to notice the possibility of a connection between economic activity and physics was Sir William H. Beveridge, who

> Found several true periods that gave strong evidence of correlation with known weather rhythms and sunspot phenomena. And a T= 54.00 years (which is without such a correlation) he also found a relatively significant concentration of energy.[162]

Of course, this much was, in a certain sense, obvious, for solar activity does affect terrestrial weather, and terrestrial weather can in turn affect agricultural production, which in turn can affect overall economic activity. There does not seem to be much here by way of a deeper physics.

But it was when certain cycles — particularly the nine-, nine and two-thirds, and 54-year cycles — were overlaid that one began to notice something very significant:

> As Schumpeter has said:
>
> “It is clear that the coincidence at any time of corresponding phrases of all three cycles will always produce phenomena of unusual intensity, especially if the phases that coincide are those of prosperity or depression. The three deepest and longest “depressions” within the epoch covered by our material — 1925-1930, 1973-1878, and 1929-1934 — all display that characteristic.[163]

As will eventually be seen, the overlay of these cycles and their concurrence at periods of various “great depressions” in American economic history do indeed point to a deeper physics, but one in which, however, the astrological connection is even more in evidence.

Needless to say, however, this approach of “overlays” or superpositions of various economic and business cycles — not to mention their combinations with other cyclic rhythms having at first glance nothing to do with economics — throws the normal “cause and effect” analysis of conventional economic thinking and theory into a cocked hat.

> Most of us, taught to think in conventional terms of cause and effect, and trained in a system where the educational wares are often cut to the lowest common denominator of mass intelligence, find it hard to remember that the human mind is very finite. It can never hope to grasp in any situation all the causes that may work together to produce any given result. That is why judgments are so faulty when we reason solely on the ordinary cause-and-effect basis. Some if not most of the actual causes will escape our knowledge, and those we do take into calculation may be pure assumption. If despite this we reach a correct conclusion, it is a triumph of accident — or of intuition.[164]

For Dewey and Dakin, the fallacy of such cause-effect thinking in economic cycles is aptly illustrated by the similarity of cyclic activity in real estate cycles and marriages within the United States. This similarity

> Could readily lead to some false assumptions. It would be simple enough to reason that people who get married start to think about house-hunting and home-building, and that this results in building projects. Or one could start his reasoning in reverse, and end in the same place, by saying that building stimulates prosperity, and when people feel prosperous they get married, and when married they buy the homes that contractors have previously erected to attract customers who feel prosperous because money is being spent to erect buildings for people who will get married.
>
> Such reason-why arguments chase their tails. Nor is this statement of them unusual, except in brevity. Whole books have been written that incorporate such “reasoning” into learned syllables. We should be prepared to ignore reasoning of that kind, but we are justified in asking *why* our building statistics should formulate themselves in such exceedingly regular rhythms. Before

> research of the future supplied us with a definitive answer to this particular query, we may hazard a postulate that man’s mating instinct and man’s building instinct may be aboriginally associated in his being, just as they extend down the biological scale to the birds. If both instincts proved to flow in the race in a common rhythm, it should not seem too surprising. Perhaps economists could well join forces with biologists in the new kind of research such a problem suggests.[165]

Note then, that far from viewing each cycle in their “overlays” as independent realities as their critics such as Rothbard would suggest, not only do Dewey and Dakin view the entirety of economic activity as a complex overlay of such cycles, but they level almost the same criticism at their detractors, in that by focusing too narrowly on purely “economic” activity and cycles, their critics may in fact be ignoring cyclic clues from other disciplines that may afford genuine insight as to the real natures of their causes.

Thus, they call for an interdisciplinary approach. They also observe that, as comparison between disparate and discrete disciplines grows, so too does the suspicion that the discrete phenomena are related in some deep fashion, that they are all clues to a deep connection in the physics of all observed cycles, no matter what their subject matter:

> In the various categories of rhythms we know, some are as familiar to the man in the street as day and night and the tides; others are relatively unknown to him. Analytical work on these rhythms has been developing in what might be called the interstices of the sciences. We have as yet only the beginnings of a science of rhythms *per se*. But in each field of science some group of workers becomes especially concerned with the subject of rhythms in the special field of phenomena he is observing; such a group eventually compares notes with a corresponding group engaged in some other scientific field; and slowly all concerned begin to suspect that they are dealing, however diverse the fields, with phenomena somehow related.[166]

As is by now apparent, Dewey and his Foundation for the Study of Cycles had long since suspected such deep connections between disparate and discrete cycles, for it was founded precisely as a means of coordinating data from all fields of inquiry in an interdisciplinary fashion.

3. Inevitability, Predictability, and Human Actions

There is another implication to Dewey's and Dakin's analysis, and indeed, to the work of the Foundation for the Study of Cycles as a whole. It is an implication already encountered, but it is best to restate it here: if cycles — particularly economic cycles — are of regular and quantifiable periodicity, then this implies that they are *inevitable, and because inevitable, predictable.* This in turn would seem to limit the scope of human action and its ability to influence such cycles merely to affecting *trends*, rather than the cycles themselves. Indeed, citing Schumpeter's *Business Cycles* once again, they note that when one studies the various economic policies of England, the United States, and Nazi Germany in response to the Great Depression, they noted that of all the various measures each country took, including Hjalmar Schacht's subsidized exports and various systems of marks in Germany,[167] to Roosevelt's New Deal programs in the U.S.A., the rises in prosperity in each country nevertheless "arrived strictly as might have been anticipated by anyone projecting the familiar economic waves of the past."[168] In other words, whatever the *trends* the respective governmental policies in each nation might have induced, the overall cycle itself was destined to turn precisely when it did, regardless of governmental policy or political action. Financial policy could *amplify or damp* the overall trend within a cycle, but could never arrest or reverse the cycle itself. And the reason is again clear: the cycle itself was evidence of a deep physics being played out on the stage of aggregate human activity.

Indeed, such policies or actions oftentimes function merely as devices of concealment, cloaking the reality of the inevitability of such cycles by appearing to manipulate the cycle itself by measures that, in fact, manipulate only the trend:

> Devices like the Bretton Woods Economic agreement, or Treasury grants made as political "loans" to foreign nations, may tend for temporary periods to mask this truism — much as the working of the Federal Reserve Act tends to conceal from the general public the fact that we print dollars to meet government deficits. But our

> chart says forthrightly, in statistical language, that on the basis of the long-established trend, and in terms of foreign trade handled at a real profit, we should not be too optimistic in looking for such trade to be increased over the prewar volume…. All our chart can tell us is that, *failing a revolution of some sort*, the pattern as established will presumably prevail.[169]

Note then that, so long as prevailing conditions remain, the cycle itself is basically unaffected. It is when the system again becomes an *open system*, when changes of a radical nature, such as a technological revolution, occur, that the cycle itself can be directly affected.

But barring this, humans inherently tend to resist the notion that economic cycles and waves may be beyond the ability of man to control. “They accept the need of adjustment to the weather, knowing it is out of man’s control. But they resist passionately any suggestion that changes in the social and economic climate may be beyond the total rule of man’s conscious will.”[170] The only way that mankind could in effect change the inevitability of a given cycle of economic activity is precisely to introduce revolutionary change:

> We now know enough about trend lines to realize that old ones merge into the take-off of new ones *only* when fundamental, even revolutionary, changes have occurred in the environment and its organization, and perpetuate themselves….
>
> Remember Pearl’s (fruit fly) bottle. Imagine for a moment that we Americans are the (fruit flies). We are reaching the upper asymptote of our (population growth) curve. The invention of a few new gadgets by industry — indeed, the invention of a whole new industry itself — is a force in no way adequate to change the relationships in our bottle. *We must have a whole new bottle.*[171]

In other words, we now find the economic inevitability behind the strategy outlined in chapter one; the global elite, in order to maintain any sort of “sustainable growth” — to use one of their favorite catch phrases — must either expand humanity’s “bottle” into outer space in a significant way, or perpetuate regional imbalances and conflicts and wars and the economic growth for some that this inevitably brings, *or* they must admit the growth of a revolutionary technology which completely changes the nature of the relationships inside the bottle itself. Failing this, they must export and then re-import manufacturing and technology from one region to another, and lower population, in a never-ending shell game, if the bottle-expanders of outer space and radically new technologies are not pursued. In short, the only real way to alter the inevitability of a cycle is to make the bottle an open system, and any open system invariably challenges the very basis of their power, unless, of course, the pursuit of revolutionary technology is one they can monopolize and employ to secure their hegemony.

5. Waves, Overlays, and Modulation: The Physics Analogues Employed by Dewey and Dakin, and Their Implications

Dewey and Dakin do much more than just *imply* a physics connection with all their allusions to closed and open systems, and to deep connections between economic activity and solar cycles and overlays of cycles. They also draw very explicit analogies to physics. We have noted that they draw upon cycles of various length — nine, four, 35, and 54 years to name but a few — but they are open to even more possibilities:

> Now, let us suppose that there are still longer waves in the universe — "Y" waves we may call them. Imagine some of the waves with peaks which come 3 ½ years apart, others with peaks 9 years apart, 18 ½ years apart, 54 years apart, and perhaps much farther spaced. It is not inconceivable that these longer waves could directly or indirectly affect the sun, weather, animals, and human beings, and that just as a red pencil may respond to light waves of only one length, so a particular organism might respond only to Y waves of one particular length.[172]

They are, in other words, proposing a kind of "econo-bio-physics," where particular kinds of organisms are transducers, are coupled harmonic oscillators, of waves of cycles of particular wavelengths, much like pipes in a pipe organ respond to different wavelengths and harmonics.

Invoking the analogy of sound, in fact, is not reading too much into their remarks, for they in fact do so by pointing out that the exact physical analogue of their "overlays" of cycles is that of sound waves being modulated together.

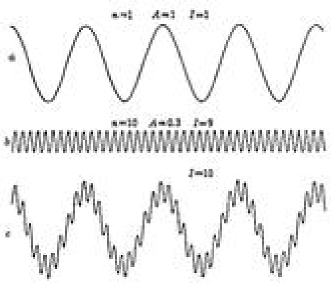

Overlay of Two Sound Waves[173]

Again, as with their overlay of the 54- and nine-year cycles, note that the overall characteristic of the lower-frequency, longer-wavelength wave is preserved even with the grafting of the shorter higher frequency sound wave on to it. This process is called modulation, and in this instance, the longer lower frequency wave has become a carrier wave. They extend the wave modulation analogy even further, by pointing our that any wave of a particular wavelength and shape will have an overtone, or harmonic series,[174] which are composed of *fractions* of that wavelength: one-half, one-third, one-fourth, one-fifth, and so on. They give the following chart of the graph of a sound wave from an organ pipe, and its first 12 overtones, or harmonics:

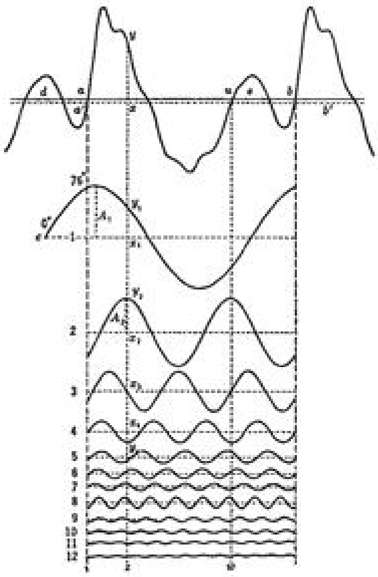

Harmonic Series of an Organ Pipe[175]

Dewey and Dakin are strongly suggesting, then, that there may be a deeper physics of a *wave mechanics* involved in the overlay of *economic* cycles, and that correlations of sunspot activity with, for example, economic cycles of wholesale prices, may have a much deeper basis than merely the influence of the sun upon the weather, and of the weather on agricultural production and prices. In other words, they may *both* be immediate and manifest results of an underlying and more unified phenomenon.

But they go *much* further than even this, and in doing so, not only demonstrate that they are thinking in terms of a very deep, and indeed hyper-dimensional, physics, but also reveal some profound implications and questions that will preoccupy us throughout the remainder of this book. It is best to cite them at length in order to understand the full implications and significance of the deep physics connection that they are suggesting, and of its profound implications:

> To that end let us consider in terms of modern psychology and physics a few facts important for our approach to economic science.
>
> P.D. Ouspensky once asked his readers to make an experiment. Imagine, he said, that you live in two dimensions, instead of three. An easy way to do this is to imagine you are a being like a piece of paper, infinitely thin, living upon a table. You can look neither up nor down, for up and down are in a third dimension. You cannot even *think* up and down, or conceive it. For you have no thickness, and hence cannot even *imagine* thickness.
>
> Now in the center of this tabletop where you live, there is cut a slot. In this slot there revolves a wheel, so hung that half the wheel is always below the table, and half of it above. This wheel is solid and you can see only the edge of it. Let us imagine its edge is painted in four colored segments — black, white, blue, and red. As the wheel revolves, you observe it end-on, you of course do not know that it is a wheel you see. For you are a two-dimensional being, and therefore see only a *single line of color* along the tabletop. Occasionally, as the wheel slowly revolves, you do see

> that line change suddenly in color. Red will suddenly change to black, and black to white, white to blue, and blue to red again.
>
> Now, if you observe this phenomenon long enough, you will finally decide that when the red comes up, it will eventually cause black; and when the black appears, it will eventually cause blue. You will think you know the causes of the phenomena you observe.
>
> If a two-dimensional scientist is observing the phenomena, he will eventually discover a "law" in this continuity of event. Using this law, he will be able to predict changes of color accurately. The scientist, by the use of mathematics, might also discover that a third dimension was necessary to account for the real phenomenon he saw in two dimensions only. But neither of you could *imagine* this third dimension as a sensory reality. Nor could you know the real nature of the causes operating there. The scientist would admit this frankly, saying his law merely described what happened, without explaining it. But you, untrained in such fine distinctions, would speak boldly of a "cause" being followed by an "effect." And each "effect" would in turn become a new cause (in your way of thinking) resulting in a further effect which followed. If you persisted in this belief, you might eventually resent being told that you knew nothing about the real causality.[176]

Clearly, Dewey and Dakin are suggesting that what we call cause and effect are really but artifacts of our "three-dimensionally-conditioned consciousness" grappling with phenomena that have their origins in a hyper-dimensional world of *more* than three dimensions.

One might therefore add to their analogy of a "hyper-dimensional" world *evidencing itself in cycles* that our scientist might, by dint of the same sort of mathematical techniques, deduce a very *different* object — the "wheel" — as the real cause and effect of that which we perceive as a cycle. And this brings them to a vital fact:

> What we call our recognition of *"cause"* and *"effect"* is *somehow associated with time,* and with our perception in time. This is

> important to understand, for what we call time is apparently only a mode of perception…. Ouspensky, approaching the problem from a psychological background, goes so far as to suggest that **time is the way we experience space in its higher dimensions. That is, the unknown dimensions of space are revealed to us in time.**[177]

In other words, not only are Dewey and Dakin suggesting that the sought-after deeper physics underlying their "harmonic overlays" and modulations of cycles might lie in a hyper-dimensional physics, but they are also suggesting that cause/effect thinking such as in the case of the sunspot-wholesale prices overlay cycle is in fact erroneous. It is not solar activity as the ultimate case, with weather modification as the mediate cause, and wholesale agricultural price changes as the final effect, but rather, the solar cycle, the fluctuation of weather, the fluctuation of prices might all be the immediate, though admittedly interrelated, *three-dimensional effects of a hyper-dimensional cause.*

In such a model, our perceptions of them as "weather" and "solar activity" and even "price fluctuations" and so on, are similar to our perceptions of a beam of light that is split by a prism into its spectral components. In such a model, our three-dimensional reality is the prism refracting the several wave forms into its various constituents that we perceive as separate cycles. Moreover, Ouspensky, whom they cite, is quite clearly suggesting that time itself is not a dimensionless "scalar" entity, but rather an entity of multi-dimensional spaces which three-dimensional reality experiences *as a temporal flow.* Thus, their analogy of the modulation of waves upon a carrier wave, and of multiple harmonics of that wave, as in the pipe organ example, is meant to couple the notion of hyper-dimensionality to those harmonics of waves. This, as we shall see in the next chapter, is a profound clue.

D. CONCLUSIONS, IMPLICATIONS, AND A SEGUE IN THE FORM OF SIGNIFICANT QUESTIONS

So what may be reasonably concluded about this cursory overview of the cycles research of Edward Dewey and his Foundation for the Study of Cycles? We shall itemize the points covered in this chapter in order to make explicit the full ramifications of their research:

> 1. The discovery of cycles of the same periodicity (or, to employ their own physics analogy, wavelength) in so many areas of cyclic activity with no apparent connection to each other, such as wholesale prices and sunspot activity, implies a deep connection between physics and economics; it implies a kind of "econophysics";
>
> 2. The regularity of such cycles implied not only their inevitability but also their quantifiability and predictability;
>
> 3. This in turn implied that governmental policies could only exacerbate or alleviate the overall trend of a cycle, but never reverse or arrest it, *so long as the cycle remained a closed system without revolutionary expansion of the system itself, or introduction of radical new "Bottle-expanding" technologies*. For this reason, the underlying implied "econophysics" necessitates that the global elite has only three strategies open to it in the eventuality of achieving their goal of a global corporate state:
>
> a. Regionalized imbalances and controlled wars and conflict in perpetuity, and various forms and degrees of population reduction, so long as the system remains closed in its "bottle";
>
> b. an opening of the system by expansion of its environment, which practically can only mean a large human presence in outer space;
>
> c. an opening of the system by a radical change in technology, a necessity if there is to be a large human presence in deep space.[178]

The last two alternatives pose some risk should the elite choose to follow them, for they inevitably carry with them the risk that their own power base can be inevitably challenged from a superior position, or superior technology, or both. Similarly, the first strategy carries the risk that their ability to control and manage such conflict would spiral out of their control.

4. The type of hyper-dimensional physics that their own words imply indicates a deep connection between

a. the harmonics of multiple-wave modulation or combination,

b. time,

c. cause, and

d. effect.[179]

5. This implies the most profound implication of them all: *if that physics were sufficiently known and a technology could be devised to tap into it, that selfsame physics would imply a technology to tap into, modify, and control human behavior itself, inclusively of the ability to manipulate aggregate economic behavior.*[180] One could, with a sufficient basis in this physics, directly manipulate whole economies and populations.

6. Not surprisingly, then, it was discovered that a large corporation and bank was represented in the Foundation for the Study of Cycles' membership,[181] and individual bankers appear to have utilized some sort of knowledge of such cycles to time their entrance into various markets, or the expansion of their financial empires.[182]

With all these conclusions and implications in mind, including especially their own suggestive analogy to the combination of several waves into one, then a profound question occurs: given the truthfulness of the analogy for the sake of argument, then *what is the carrier wave* for all these combined waves of cycles? What *is* the underlying reality, or the deeper physics, that they are suggesting? And for that matter, why does a certain class of the super-wealthy seem to *know* something about this "econophysics" that the rest of the business and economic world do not? And beyond the fact that some of that class might not know all of it, then why are so many of them apparently involved in the study of it?

The answers to these questions, surprisingly, lie in the mists, sands, texts, pavilions and columns of ancient history and temples, and a well-known and very ancient “pseudo-science”: astrology.

Three

GERMANY, RCA, AND J.P. MORGAN

CASES OF INTEREST AND SUPPRESSION

⁂

> *"The secret at the core of alchemy is an ineffable experience of the real workings of our local cosmological neighborhood."*
>
> — *Jay Weidner and Vincent Bridges*[183]

Dewey's and Dakin's sound wave analogy for their cyclic waves of economic activity raises the profound question: is there a *physics* basis to economic cycles? And if so, what is it? Moreover, if their own sound wave analogy is itself more apt than Dewey and Dakin themselves suspected, then what *carrier* wave modulates all these cycles of waves? As was seen in the previous chapter, the analogy of sound waves and carrier waves was no doubt suggested to Dewey and Dakin by the fact that such waves could be plotted together, or "averaged."

But they were not the only ones to notice that waves of cycles of activity might point to a deeper physics connection. German physicist Dr. Hartmut Müller had considered a similar phenomenon from yet a different point of view, and proposed a theory to account for it: Global Scaling Theory.

Müller begins by noting that the theory is based upon what, for physics, is its primary "sacrament": measurement. But the centrality of measurement in the methodology of physics soon reduced the physicist to playing the role of a kind of "court of arbitration" because his role is now that of deciding "which of the models" adopted by physicists to explain reality "matches the measurements and gets applied."[184] This assessment highlights the cul-de-sac in which physics deadlocked in the twentieth century, for there is no single testable theory valid over the *scales* or *sizes of objects* with which physics must deal, for the laws of standard physics operable at the scale of the very large, laws dominated by Einstein's relativity theories since the early twentieth century, are not applicable to the scale of the very small at the level of atoms and subatomic particles, where the laws of quantum mechanics prevail.

In this situation, physics and physicists are reduced, according to Dr. Müller, to being "mere interpreter(s) of models and ideas that got completely out of touch with reality — and this to an ever greater extent."[185] In short, like many other physicists, Dr. Müller is increasingly dissatisfied with the counterintuitive nature of contemporary physical mechanics, whether it be the relativity-dominated theories of the physics of large-scale systems or the quantum mechanical theories of the very small, with their emphasis on statistical probabilistic approaches.[186]

But there was one area in which the concentration on "the sacrament of measurement" did lead to something of major — if unappreciated — significance, and in this one discerns a direct conceptual connection to the work of Dewey and Dakin:

> The need for measurements of the highest precision promoted the development of mathematical statistics which, in turn, made it possible to include precise morphological and sociological data as well as data from evolutionary biology. Ranging from elementary particles to galactic clusters, this scientific database extends at least 55 orders of magnitude.[187]

In other words, a vast database of measurements of all types and kinds of objects now existed, extending over the entire range of objects with which physics had to deal, from subatomic particles to planets, stars, and finally to whole galaxies and clusters of galaxies. With such a vast database of measurements at their disposal, one would think that scientists would have begun to contemplate its significance almost as soon as it had been available, namely in the early decades of the twentieth century.

Yet, notes Müller, this extensive database “did not become the object of an integrated (holistic) scientific investigation until 1982. The treasure lying at their feet was not seen by members of the labour-divided, mega-industrial scientific community.”[188] Given the disenchantment of well-known and famous Russian physicists like Dr. Nikolai Kozyrev with the standard models of relativistic and quantum mechanical theories, it is not surprising that Russian scientists were the first to make a significant breakthrough and contribution toward the rise of Global Scaling Theory, for the first to draw attention to this database and its potential significance was a Russian biologist named Cislenko.

Publishing a scientific paper in Moscow in 1980 entitled “Structure of Flora and Fauna with Regard to Body Size of Organisms,” Cislenko proved that “segments of increased species representation *are repeated on the logarithmic line of body sizes in equal intervals* (approximately 0.5 units of the decadic logarithm).”[189] In other words, Cislenko had discovered something very similar to Dewey’s and Dakin’s cycles of economic activity: *regular, periodic “wavelike” forms in the relative grouping of organic life’s body sizes around certain values or measures of size.* There was just one problem: this grouping or “clumping” around certain scales of size “was not explicable from a biological point of view.” For example, what mechanism could account for organisms preferring body sizes of "8-12 centimetres, 33-55 centimetres or 1.5-2.4 meters" and so on?[190]

For Hartmut Müller, however, the biological clumping around certain values in a periodic logarithmic scale pointed clearly to a deeper underlying physics basis for the phenomenon, for there were similar scale-invariant (i.e., applicable across all scales or measures of size) logarithmic distributions evident in the database of physics. Thus, by 1982, Müller was able to prove

> That there exist statistically *identical frequency distributions* with logarithmic, *periodically recurrent maximums* for the masses of atoms and atomic radii as well as the rest masses and life-spans of the elementary particles."[191]

Shades of Dewey and Dakin! But that was not all, for very similar patterns were subsequently found for the logarithmic line of the "sizes, orbits, masses and revolution periods of planets, moons, and asteroids."[192] The phenomenon was scale-invariant, and, when graphed, revealed clear periodic "cyclic" types of "waves."

In other words, Dr. Müller was chin to chin with the same type of phenomena as those which confronted Dewey and Dakin, only in this instance the phenomena were purely based on *measurement of physical objects — particles and planets — and not economic cycles.* Yet the wave forms resulting from them were almost the same. In fact, in a certain sense, they were identical simply because they *were* waves!

This now puts Dewey's and Dakin's "sound wave analogy" and the question it poses in a whole new light, for it would now appear that we are no longer dealing with merely a conceptual analogy, but an analogy with actual correspondence in the real physical world. So the attendant question of that analogy — i.e., what is the *carrier wave* for all these diverse cycles? — also emerges into a whole new and vitally important context, and it is one Dr. Müller answers very directly, although he was probably unaware that he was also responding to a question posed by two American economists as a result of their own accumulation of a vast database of measurements.

1. Longitudinal Waves in the Physical Medium

Dr. Müller is a mathematical physicist, and as such was quick to perceive the relationship, since all the discrete measurements had a single unifying and underlying structure. That structure was simply that of a recurrent logarithmic period, i.e., a wave, or better, a harmonic series. It is when one considers the *cause* of this structure that the questions and implications begin to become evident and to multiply. As Dr. Müller states the case, the cause of this structure appeared to be "*the existence of a standing pressure wave in the logarithmic space of the scales/measures*" used to measure the phenomena themselves.193 To put this point differently, I cite directly my comments about this observation from my *The Giza Death Star Destroyed:*

> …(T)he phenomenon of measurement itself, both as a phenomenon of intelligent observation and as a physical function, is scale-invariant, because regardless of the selected unit of measurement, the result still and always possesses a logarithm, a longitudinal standing wave structure.194

Note carefully, however, what Dr. Müller has actually said, and what he has *not* said. He has said that the phenomenon exists in a kind of "conceptual space." He has not said that the phenomenon exists *as a structure in the physical medium itself*, although it is clear that he is only a small step away from actually stating that. But as we shall now discover, he himself is inclined to the view that the phenomenon is physical in nature, and derives from a quantized view of the medium itself as a structured set of longitudinal "pressure" waves in that medium.195

As I have stated elsewhere,

> The results of this supposition were astounding, for regardless of the natural system studied, there were areas of "attraction," where any number of very discrete natural phenomena clustered, and "repulsion," areas avoided by natural systems. *So pervasive was this phenomenon that the German* ***Institute für Raum-Energie-Foeschung*** *(Institute for Space Energy Research) "was also able*

> *to prove the same phenomenon in demographics," i.e., in areas favored or shunned by urban populations, and in the economics both of nations and private businesses.*[196]

Note what is really going on here:

> 1. Müller's standing longitudinal waves in logarithmic space are applicable not only to physical phenomena, but to the same areas of activity as studied by Dewey and Dakin; thus,
>
> 2. *Müller's Global Scaling Theory conclusively indicates that there is indeed a deeper physics to economic activity, to the very cycles of boom and bust as catalogued by Dewey's and Dakin's Foundation for the Study of Cycles;* and finally,
>
> 3. Note that the German Institute for Space Energy Research is sponsoring research *not only into this deeper physics, but doing so precisely in relation to a study of the physics of economic and human activity and social organization.* It is important for the reader to understand at this juncture that the term "Space Energy" in the German has the same sort of technical meaning or implication as the terms "vacuum" or "zero-point" energy has in English. In short, a German institution recognizes, funds, and researches not only Zero-Point energy, but researches it in the full range of its implications, including social and demographic, presumably for the purpose of engineering all of them to the extent possible.

But let us return for a few more insights from Müller's theory, for there is yet another significant implication that his theory holds.

That implication is *gravity*, for Müller's standing pressure wave in the medium may indeed be an explanation for the phenomenon of gravity. Simply put, the fact that natural systems "cluster" around the nodal points of these standing waves would indeed be a component or mechanism for the explanation of gravity in Müller's opinion.[197] It is important to understand the basic difference of this explanation from that of Einstein's General Relativity in terms of the order of concepts. For the latter, gravity is simply the curving of space-time that results from the presence of a large mass in local space-time. But Müller's theory is a much less superficial, and much deeper, theory, for *both* the warping of space-time *and* the large mass of a star or planet are both themselves the *results* of a much deeper structure around which both "cluster," and that structure is the structure of longitudinal pressure waves of compression and rarefaction in the physical medium itself. In a sense, the warp or curving of space-time is more fundamental than in Einstein's theory, for in a certain simplistic way of stating it, the warp results not from the presence of a large mass, but rather the converse: the large mass is present because of the underlying warp in the medium and the clustering of such waves around certain nodal points, almost the exact opposite of Einstein's theory.

This already gives one an appreciation of the significance of Global Scaling Theory, for in a certain sense, Einstein's theory is *not engineerable*, for if one wished to warp space-time within the constraints of General Relativity, a large mass such as a star or planet would have to be present to do so. But the converse is true of Global Scaling theory, for one would not *need* the presence of a large mass to warp space-time, since that warped structure itself is a longitudinal pressure wave in the physical medium. One could, by warping space-time, create a "virtual mass" or, conversely, an "antigravity hill."

For Dr. Müller, there are two immediate practical applications of this theory. In the first instance, the theory of standing longitudinal waves in the medium opens the possibility of using such waves and *modulating them* — for they are indeed the mysterious "carrier waves" suggested by Dewey's and Dakin's sonic wave analogy — with information for communications purposes. Such waves would be much faster than ordinary light waves, since objects separated from each other over great distances in normal space can be quite close in the logarithmic space in which these waves move. Secondly, such a modulated "gravity wave" could be demodulated at any location on the Earth, Mars, or even outside the solar system, "at the very same moment in time."[198] The reason is simple enough. Large masses *are natural resonators of such waves.*[199] *And again, the reason is clear, for they tend to cluster around the nodal points or places where such waves* *interfere, that is, where they intersect.* Thus, the building of expensive satellites of space-based communications systems would not only be unnecessary, but in a certain sense, since such satellites are of much less comparative mass than a planet, they would not be cost-effective, since they would be very inefficient as coupled oscillators or receivers of such waves, as compared to a planet with its large mass itself.

If there is a relationship between such longitudinal waves in the medium and gravity, it follows that as relationships of planetary alignments — the day-to-day, month-to-month, and year-to-year geometries of alignments of celestial bodies — will evidence similar relationships to human activity. A simple analogy will serve to illustrate this point. Imagine someone standing on the bank of a still pond, holding a handful of small pebbles. The individual then throws the rocks up, and they land in the pond, creating ripples and eventually, as all these waves cross and interfere with each other, a pattern or grid or *template* of wave interference is created, specific to that alignment of rocks thrown into the pond. After the pond surface has become smooth again, the individual throws another handful of pebbles into the pond. Again, the ripples will cross and interfere, but the pattern will be different because the rocks will randomly impact the surface of the pond in a different pattern.

The "ripples" are similar to the effects of these longitudinal waves in the physical medium, with one very important difference. In the case of the solar system, for example, the planets orbit the sun at known periodicity; that is, each planet takes a certain amount of time to complete one orbit of the Sun. This fact, the fact that their orbits can be precisely calculated and their positions relative to each other thus predicted, introduces the idea that certain types of alignments can occur with semi-regularity, and the physical effects thus can be predicted *if one assembles the requisite database from lengthy observation. That is to say, the planetary alignments themselves are exactly analogous to our "rocks in the pond," for the planets constantly create an overlapping gridwork or template of such longitudinal waves.*

a. Planetary Alignments and Signal Propagation

Oddly enough, such observation has been done to a limited extent. In the early 1950s, the RCA company engaged one of its engineers, J.H. Nelson, to study why signal propagation strength and weakness seemed to vary according to periodic cycles. Nelson's answers, after some study, were published in *The Electrical Engineer,* and are as shocking to “normal” scientific sensibilities now as they were then. The abstracts of these two short articles say it all.

In the abstract to his article “Planetary Position Effect on Short-Wave Signal Quality,” Nelson announces

> A new approach to an as yet unsolved problem is the observance of planetary effects on trans-atlantic [sic] short-wave signals. Correlation over seven years shows that certain planetary arrangements agree well with the behavior of short-wave signals.[200]

In an article written only a few months earlier for the AIEE Winter General Meeting in January of 1952, Nelson spelled it out even more explicitly in the abstract, which stated

> An examination of shortwave radio propagation conditions over the North Atlantic for a five-year period, and the relative position of planets in the solar system, discloses some very interesting correlations. As a result of such correlations, *certain planetary relationships are deduced to have specific effect on radio propagation through their influence upon the sun.* Further investigation is required to fully explore the effect of planet positions on radio propagation in order that the highly important field of *radio weather forecasting may be properly developed.*[201]

There are some important factors to observe carefully before we proceed.

First, note that “certain planetary relationships” have an effect on radio signal quality and propagation via some influence they have on the Sun. This highlights that another mechanism other than sheer mass is at work, for as is obvious, the Sun’s mass far outweighs the combined mass of the various planets! In other words, a standard relativistic model *could not explain why signal quality varied with planetary positions*; some *other* mechanism was at work than just the gravity-mass relationship posited by standard physical models. That mechanism, according to Nelson, had something to do with *the geometries of planetary positions over time.*

Secondly, Nelson also obliquely hints that in addition to the Sun’s known effects on terrestrial weather, that there may also be a relationship between planetary positions themselves and terrestrial weather. Were it not for the fact that Nelson was an engineer working for RCA, one might be tempted to conclude that his article was that of some obscure astrologer working anonymously for *The Farmers’ Almanac* making weather predictions.

But there’s more.

To see what it is, it is necessary to follow Nelson’s exposition closely and carefully. The problem first became evident when RCA erected a telescopic observatory to study sunspot activity:

> At the Central Radio Office of RCA Communications, Inc., in lower Manhattan, an observatory housing a 6-inch refracting telescope is maintained for the observation of sunspots. The purpose of erecting this observatory in 1946 was to develop a method of forecasting radio storms from the study of sunspots. After about one year of experimenting, a forecasting system of short-wave conditions was inaugurated based upon the age, position, classification, and activity of sunspots. Satisfactory results were obtained, *but failure of this system from time to time indicated that phenomena other than sunspots needed to be studied.*[202]

In other words, some mechanism other than sunspots was involved. But what was it?

Examining various articles by those who had studied the sunspot phenomenon in relationship to their cycles, Nelson quickly discovered something quite odd, and it figured significantly into his own discovery:

> Cyclic variations in sunspot activity have been studied by many solar investigators in the past and attempts were made by some, notably Huntington, Clayton, and Sanford, *to connect these variations to planetary influences.* The books of these three investigators were studied and their results found sufficiently encouraging to warrant correlating similar planetary

> interrelationships with radio signal behavior. However, it was decided to investigate the effects of all the planets from Mercury to Saturn, instead of only the major planets as they had done. *The same heliocentric angular relationships of 0, 90, 180, and 270 degrees were used and dates when any two or more planets were separated by one of these angles were recorded.*
>
> *Investigation quickly showed there was positive correlation between these planetary angles and transatlantic shortwave signal variations. Radio signals showed a tendency to become degraded within a day or two of planetary configurations of the type being studied.* However, all configurations did not correspond to signal degradation. Certain configurations showed better correlation than others.[203]

In other words, sunspot cycles themselves were not, as often argued, the cause of signal degradation, but were themselves correlated to planetary alignments; *both sunspots and radio propagation effects appeared to be effects of certain planetary geometries in relationship to the sun.* And there was another thing as well: the effect on signal propagation appeared *after* the geometrical alignment, which always occurred when two or more planets were separated by angles of 0, 90, 180, or 270 degrees.

Nelson’s articles chart some of these planetary relationships, and it is worth having a look at them, for a picture is indeed worth a thousand words or a hundred equations.

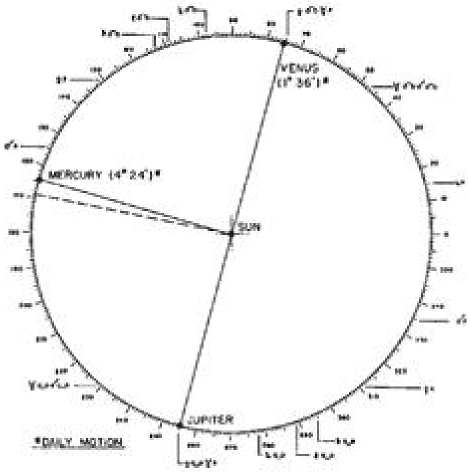
VENUS
(1° 36')*
MERCURY (4° 24')*
SUN
JUPITER
*DAILY MOTION

Nelson’s Planetary Alignment Chart for February 23, 1948, which “resulted in severe signal degradation on that day and the one following.”[204]

Note that Venus and Jupiter are separated by 180 degrees, and Mercury by almost 90 degrees from the other two. Yet another alignment that resulted in severe signal degradation was an alignment that occurred from September 20 to 26, 1951:

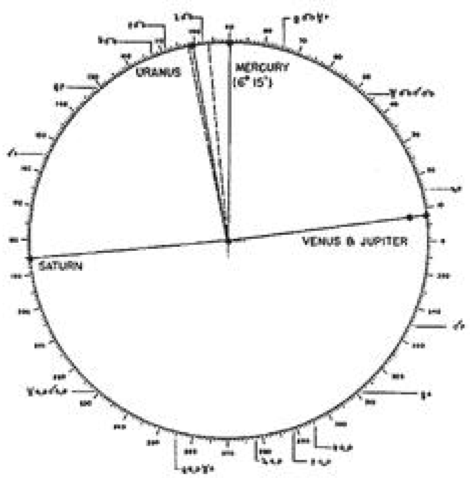
URANUS
MERCURY
(6° 15')
VENUS & JUPITER
SATURN

Nelson’s Planetary Alignments for September 20-26, 1951[205]

Again, observe that Saturn on the one hand, and Venus and Jupiter on the other, are separated by almost 180 degrees, while Uranus and Mercury are within a few degrees of each other and almost at 90-degree angles of separation from the other three planets.

The similarity of these charts to normal astrological charts is, of course, obvious to anyone familiar with them, and it was so in Nelson's day as well, for *Time* magazine was quick to pick up on one potential implication of the study:

> The ancient pseudo-science of astrology, which attempts to predict the future by the motions of the planets, may have a bit of science in it, after all. This week Radio Corporation of America, no easy prey to superstition, announced in the RCA Review that it is successfully predicting radio reception by a study of planetary motions.206

To put it succinctly, *Time* was obliquely hinting at a kind of "paleophysics" approach to this ancient "pseudo-science," namely that behind ancient astrological myths and lore there might have once been a very sophisticated physics and science — the product of a Very High Civilization — of which astrology was a considerably declined legacy of civilizations, Egypt and Babylon for example, that were themselves declined legacies of a much earlier and much more sophisticated precursor civilization. And the astrological component, as we shall see momentarily, is more than just suggested or implied.

But we are getting ahead of ourselves.

For the moment, let us now consider carefully the implications of Nelson's remarks:

> 1) Since radio signals are electromagnetic phenomena, and since signal propagation appears to be affected by two or more planets in alignments of 0, 90, 180, or 270 degrees from each other, the implication is that the solar system is *not* electrically neutral at all, but an electrically dynamic and open system whose dynamism is affected by these alignments. Again, recall the idea that the planetary alignments themselves create a gridwork or lattice or template of longitudinal waves;207

> 2) The common feature of the Sun and the planets is that each is a rotating mass around its own axis of rotation, and as a total system, each planet orbits the Sun. In short, we are dealing with rotating systems within rotating systems;
>
> 3) The Sun itself is a *rotating mass of plasma*, a super-hot electrically polarized gas in which nuclear fusion occurs constantly. Moreover, within the Sun's mass of rotating plasma, different layers of plasma north or south of the latitude of its equator *rotate in the same direction, but at different velocities.* This "differential rotation" as it is known will become a crucial consideration as we proceed.

But what does all this mean?

To answer this question, we must return to examine some aspects of this "deep physics" that I have written and commented about in my previous books. Many of these points can be reprised fairly quickly, but some of them will require a closer look, with new additional material and perspective.

b. The Electrically Dynamic Solar System and Planetary Alignments

As already noted, the RCA studies of J.H. Nelson point to the implication that the solar system is not an electrically neutral system, but a dynamic one whose changes are somehow connected to planetary alignments.[208] In most presentations of the electrically dynamic solar system, it is to be noted that the models used do *not* seek explanations in a "deeper" physics, but merely posit that in ancient times the planets were much closer together, and as a consequence of the buildup of polarities and charge differentials between planets, large-scale electrical arcs could form between them, much like charge differentials between the atmosphere and the ground form during large thunderstorms, leading eventually to the electrical arcs between these regions that we know as lightning. In this case, the electrically dynamic solar system's understanding of the way planetary alignments affect the system is simply due to the *relative closeness* of celestial bodies and the relative differences of charge polarities between them. The actual geometrical *alignment* of planets — as in the example of Nelson’s RCA studies — is not really in view.

c. Plasma Cosmology

Closely allied to the conception of the electrically dynamic solar system is plasma cosmology, which is an attempt to see a deeper physics at work behind the idea of charge differentials forming between planets. With plasma cosmology and physics, we are indeed in the presence of a model with profound implications for that “deeper physics,” as well as a model with profound explanatory power for some ancient texts and mysteries.[209] Accordingly, our review must be more comprehensive.

I first outlined the basics, and the fundamental implications of plasma cosmology for interpretation of ancient texts and monoliths, in *The Giza Death Star.* The brainchild of Swedish physicist Hannes Alfvén, the conceptual basis of the model was summarized by his student Eric J. Lerner in the following fashion:

> Starting in 1936 Alfvén outlined, in a series of highly original papers, the fundamentals of what he would later term cosmic electrodynamics — the science of the plasma universe. Convinced that electrical forces are involved in the generation of cosmic rays, Alfvén pursued … (a) method of extending laboratory models to the heavens…. He knew how high-energy particles are created in the laboratory — the cyclotron, invented six years earlier, uses electrical fields to accelerate particles and magnetic fields to guide their paths. How, Alfvén asked, would a cosmic, natural cyclotron be possible?
>
> …But what about the conductor? Space was supposed to be a vacuum, thus incapable of carrying electrical currents. Here, Alfvén again boldly extrapolated from the lab. On earth even extremely rarified gases can carry a current if they have been ionized — that is, if the electrons have been stripped from the atoms…. Alfvén reasoned that such plasma should exist in space as well.[210]

I then commented at length as follows:

> This may not sound too revolutionary, until one notices what is unique about this theory: "certain key variables do *not* change with scale — electrical resistance, velocity, and energy all remained the same. Other quantities *do* change: for example, time is scaled as size, so if a process is a million times smaller, it occurs a million times faster."[211] In other words… *The principal differential is… time.*[212]

Note that idea that time is "the principal differential" or "thing in view," because it will become quite the crucial point in a moment.

The principal insight of the theory is, however, clear: time is the primary differential or "thing in view" while the *rest* of physical variables — electrical resistance, field strength and so on — remain "scale-invariant," which is a physicist's technical terminology for saying that they behave the same no matter the size or scale of the system to which they are applied.

But there was a further implication:

> Since time is scale-sensitive, and other electromagnetic forces are not, the implication is revolutionary:
>
> "Equally important, though, is the converse use of these scaling rules. When the magnetic fields and currents of these objects are scaled down, they become incredibly intense — millions of gauss, millions of amperes, well beyond levels achievable in the laboratory. However, by studying cosmic phenomena, Alfvén shows, scientists can learn how *fusion devices more powerful than those now in existence will operate. In fact, they might learn how to design such devices from the lessons in the heavens.*"[213]
>
> ….
>
> Lerner clearly implies that *if the inertial and electromagnetic processes of the heavens are somehow captured…*

That is, if one is able to reproduce them by some technological means, then

> *"fusion devices more powerful than those in existence will operate."* What fusion devices could he be talking about? No tokamak magnetic bottle has ever achieved a stable controlled-fusion reaction, and it is unlikely that Lerner knows about (Philo) Farnsworth's plasmator…214

(And it is even less likely that Lerner knows of the Nazi Bell device!)215

> …the only thing left, then, are the city-busting superbombs that fill French, American, and Russian arsenals.216

Those "city-busting superbombs" are, of course, thermonuclear hydrogen fusion bombs, and their importance to this story will also be seen in a moment.

But that's not all. There were other aspects of Alfvén's plasma cosmology model that he outlined in a 1942 article:

> If a conducting liquid is placed in a constant magnetic field, every motion of the liquid gives rise to an (electromagnetic field) which produces electric currents. Owing to the magnetic field, these currents give mechanical forces which change the state of motion of the liquid. *Thus a kind of combined electromagnetic-hydrodynamic wave is produced which, so far as I know, has as yet attracted no attention.*217

Commenting on this, I noted that such electromagnetic-hydrodynamic waves sounded suspiciously like the "electro-acoustic" or electrical longitudinal waves discovered by Nikola Tesla218 in his high-frequency direct current impulse experiments, and later in his famous Colorado Springs electrical experiments. We shall have much more to say on this subject in a moment.

But there is one final point about Alfvén's plasma cosmology that must be noted, and that is that this concept of the universe

> Exhibits a filamentary and *cellular* structure. Not only does the universe exhibit "electric layers" of various densities like a fluid, but "cosmic plasmas are often nor homogeneous, but exhibit

> *filamentary structures* which are likely to be associated with currents parallel to the magnetic field…. In the magnetospheres there are thin, rather stable *current layers* which separate regions of different magnetization, density, temperature, etc. It is necessary that similar phenomena exist also in more distant regions. This is bound to give space a *cellular structure* (or more correctly, a cell wall structure).”[219]

Before continuing, it is essential that we pause and take stock of what we now have:

1. Alfvén’s cosmology leads to the conception of electromagnetic-hydrodynamic waves which are capable of traveling in vacuum space, i.e., the physical medium itself;

2. The mechanism that attaches to these waves is plasma itself, which exhibits fluid-like properties of less and more dense regions, and thus,

3. Gives space itself a cellular, that is to say, a *lattice* structure;

4. The phenomenon of plasmas is scale-invariant, since plasma effects can be created in the laboratory which precisely resemble entire galaxies in their structure,[220] a point which may be fully appreciated by a glance at laboratory-generated plasma swirls, and their similarities to whole galaxies:

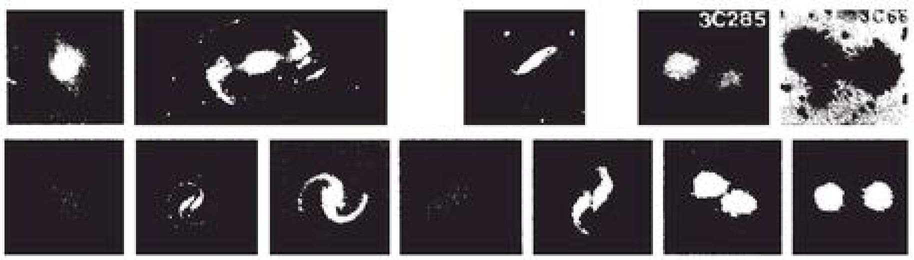

Galaxies and Laboratory Plasma Pinch Effects Compared: The Galaxies are above, and the Laboratory-Generated Plasma Pinches are below.

study of the above phenomena can lead to “fusion devices more powerful than those currently in existence,” i.e., to super-super hydrogen bombs; and finally,

> 5. Time is the principal differential or “thing in view” since it alone varies over the scales which are in view; on small scales it operates faster than on large scales. This is an important point as we shall see in a moment in the work of Dr. Nikolai Kozyrev. However, given that time itself has this dynamic property considered *in relationship to the scale of the system under consideration,* it is clear that it cannot be the sort of “one-dimensional” or scalar entity that it is in the treatment of so much mathematical physics, particularly in relativity theories.[221] In short, time has a kind of “breadth and depth” similar to space; it is a *multi-dimensional* phenomenon, so to speak. And with this, we are back to the insights of Ouspensky cited by Dewey and Dakin in the previous chapter.[222]

With this in mind, we now consider the plasma and fusion aspects of the Nazi Bell device, and the postwar “plasma and fusion” research of Nazi scientist Dr. Ronald Richter, for his research was only secondarily about plasmas.

d. Plasma Transduction of the Vacuum or Zero-Point Energy: Dr. Ronald Richter Revisited

In *The Nazi International* I outlined a case that Dr. Ronald Richter’s postwar fusion project in Argentina was but a continuation of certain aspects of the wartime Nazi Bell project. This case was based in part on the fact that Richter worked for the same company, the *Allgemeine Elektricitäts Gemeinschaft*, as built the power plant for the Bell device,[223] that while at that company he worked on a project code-named “Charite-Anlage *Projekt*,” which was one of the code names of the Bell project’s power plant,[224] but most importantly, that the physics involved in Richter’s project and the Bell were so similar. Both the Bell and Richter’s project involved the use of rotating plasma.[225] Both the Bell device and Richter’s project also involved the use of metal drums or cylinders.[226]

But what was the purpose of this rotation of plasma? When queried about this precise point by an Argentine commission sent by President Perón to investigate his project, Richter informed the Argentine scientists that the whole basis of his attempt to control thermonuclear fusion processes was based on a precessional rotation of plasma that was then sharply and abruptly pulsed electrically to produce standing shockwaves within it. These shockwaves would then induce the fusion reaction.[227] Richter was, of course, roundly denounced by scientists of that day, because such assertions flew in the face of the reigning theories.[228]

However, this does not tell the full story, for while Richter's views were being denounced publicly, privately and very secretly the U.S. military was taking a profound interest in what the Austrian Nazi scientist was *really* trying to do. Contacting Richter and asking him to explain what he was doing, Richter reveals that his project, and hence the entire Nazi Bell project, was only secondarily concerned with nuclear fusion, for that process was seen by them as a gateway to a much more profound, and potentially deadly, physics than mere fusion or even super-super hydrogen bombs. Outlining his research for the Third Reich, Richter informs his American investigators that the shockwave process of fusion was first noticed by him in *1936!* His research in Nazi Germany involved:

> Research work and design studies on electric arc furnaces systems, developing new types of plasma analyzing instruments and methods. In 1936, discovery of a plasma shock wave generating process, conception of a completely new type of industrial arc reactor system, based rather on plasma shock wave reactivity than on heat transfer. Development of a basis of operation for testing plasma shock wave conditions by means of plasma-collision-induced nuclear reactions.[229]

If all this sounds a little ahead of the thermonuclear game in the early 1950s, it was. It was about *45 years* ahead of that game, for in 1995 an American firm, General Fusion, announced it would try to build a fusion reactor based on the principle of plasma shockwaves![230]

But Richter had apparently seen something *else* in those early plasma shockwave and fusion experiments in Nazi Germany, something that opened the door to a much *deeper* physics. “We assume,” Richter stated in his American Paperclip file,

> That highly compressed electron gas (i.e., a plasma) *becomes a detector for energy exchange with what we call zero-point energy…in a shockwave-superimposed, turbulence-feedback-controlled plasma zone exists a high probability for cell-like super-pressure conditions…*

Shades of Hannes Alfvén’s plasma-cellular structure of space! But note what Richter is saying: such plasmas become “detectors” or even *gateways* to tap into the energy of the physical medium — the zero-point energy — itself:

> …It seems to be possible (by this means) to ‘extract’ a compression-proportional amount of zero-point energy by means of a magnetic-field-controlled exchange fluctuation between the compressed electron gas and a sort of cell structure in space, representing what we call zero-point energy …. Plasma implosion analysis might turn out to become an approach to a completely new source of energy.[231]

In short, Richter has seen beyond Alfvén’s plasma cosmology, for he is saying in effect that the plasma structure of space itself is a *result* of zero-point energy fluctuations. And with his “whole new energy source” based on plasma gateways into the zero-point energy, we are back to Eric J. Lerner’s observation that by looking to the heavens and the plasma processes they contain, one might be able to construct fusion devices far more powerful than anything in today’s arsenals, for such devices, in the final analysis, are not fusion devices as such but fusion “gateways” or transducers of something far more powerful and of planet- and star-busting potential.

So what is the connection to the Bell?

It’s very simple.

Recall for a moment that Richter's whole process involved *rotation* of that plasma such that a precession or "wobble" was induced in it. Inside the Bell, there were two counter-rotating cylinders, in my opinion most likely stacked one on top of the other.[232] Inside these cylinders a highly radioactive compound of mercury, probably doped with high-spin-state nuclear isomers,[233] was spun up to ultra-high speed, on the order of tens if not hundreds of thousands of revolutions per minute. Isomers are in turn high-spin-state atoms whose energy is locked up in the angular momentum of the spinning atom. The purpose of spinning such a material *mechanically* up to such a high speed is therefore evident, for such action will "cohere" the atoms of the material by inertia, so that they are all spinning in a manner aligned more or less on the same *plane* of rotation, that of the two cylinders. This material was then *electrically pulsed* by extremely high voltage direct-current electricity[234] which, *pace* Richter, arc from the rotating drum itself, through the material, to the center of the device, thus making not only a plasma, but setting up "electro-acoustic" shock waves within it, and these in turn, would transduce the energy and fabric of space-time itself, as the isomeric component of the compound deexcited from its high spin state and released the enormous amounts of energy stored up in its high rotation. By altering the speeds of counter-rotation of the two drums, a *differential rotation*, a precession or "wobble" of sorts, would be artificially induced in the plasma.

In short, the Nazi scientists had brought the plasma cosmology of the stars and even of the galaxies themselves down to a device as small as a small camping trailer, and were using it to manipulate directly the fabric of the physical medium, of space-time, itself.

But why set up such a differential rotation at all? For that matter, what factors might have led Dr. Richter to assume that a rotating (precessing) and electrically shocked plasma might be a zero-point energy transducer to begin with?

To answer that question, we must, once again, look to the stars, to the work of Russian astrophysicist Dr. Nikolai Kozyrev, and to little-known facts about the earliest hydrogen bomb detonations.

e. Rotating Systems within Rotating Systems: Dr. Nikolai Kozyrev Revisited

To see what the connection of all this — from rotating plasmas to thermonuclear fusion to hydrogen bombs to stars and zero-point energy — really is, we must return to something I wrote way back in *The Giza Death Star:*

> During the first hydrogen bomb tests, the actual energy yield of the bombs far exceeded those initially calculated. There was an "x" factor, *an unknown source of surplus energy* that was being tapped. Since hydrogen bombs unleash enormous amounts of destructive energy at the very subatomic level of the nucleus of atoms, we may also surmise, in part, where that energy came from and why, for such weapons literally cause a violent local disturbance in the geometry and fabric of space-time. In short, *some as yet inadequately understood laws of harmonics produced the excess energy.*[235]

It is not only in the secret research of the Nazis with their Bell device, but in the work of Russian astrophysicist Dr. Nikolai Kozyrev that one begins the final approach to an understanding of where that excess energy came from and how it operates. We already know a part of the answer: it came from the energy of space-time itself.

But that space-time is *not* a mere void devoid of dynamism, for it contains *objects* and *systems,* it contains *information,* and those objects and that information are undergoing an ever-changing dynamic relationship to each other.

Kozyrev was confronted by a similar problem as the hydrogen bomb, only in his case, the problem was not with hydrogen bombs and their anomalous yields, but with the very Sun itself, and its own highly anomalous energy yield. As I wrote in *The Philosophers' Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter:*

> The whole principal motivation, by his own reckoning, for his decades-long investigation of torsion, and of the torsion amplifying

> and shielding properties of various elements and compounds, was precisely the fact that there were simply not enough neutrinos being emitted by stars *for the standard model of stars as gigantic perpetual fusion reactors — essentially perpetual hydrogen bombs — to be true.*[236]

In other words, stars, like their man-made counterparts, the hydrogen bomb, were transducing *far too much* energy than could be accounted for by the process of thermonuclear fusion alone. In fact, in a certain sense, in Kozyrev's view, fusion was not even the primary energy source at work in stars at all, but a secondary *effect* of something much deeper, just as in the case of Richter's conceptions on plasmas. The connection between the two men's research, however, may not be immediately clear unless one recalls *what* stars really *are:* they are rotating balls of *plasma.* Thus, Richter's and Kozyrev's work are pointing to something significant: rotating plasmas are transducers of the energy of a higher-dimensional space! This is a crucial conceptual link to ancient times and beliefs, and a crucial key to why the international money power, even in ancient times, allied itself so closely with the temple, as we shall see in subsequent chapters.

And the similarity between Kozyrev and Richter is more than just conceptual, for both men and their theories were publicly denounced in the media organs of their respective political blocs, while their projects apparently disappeared into the labyrinth of postwar black projects:

> The more than coincidental attack on Kozyrev in *Pravda* in 1959 effectively [prevented] him from open publication of his experimen-tal results and theoretical conceptualizations, and the similarly-timed disappearance of discussion of clean fusion bombs in the open Soviet literature [is likewise suspicious]. Let us speculate a bit.
>
> We have already encountered the fact that the earliest atmospheric hydrogen bomb tests far exceeded their pre-test calculated yields. In other words, *just as [Kozyrev maintained was happening] in stars, some other energy source was being tapped into, and transduced by, the thermonuclear detonation itself.* And if

> we extend this line of speculation, the Russians most likely encountered the same phenomenon in their hydrogen bomb testing. Moreover, in Kozyrev, they had an astrophysicist who thought he knew *why stars*, also implicating thermonuclear processes, appeared *not* to be radiating enough neutrinos energy for the thermonuclear model to be true.
>
> One may reasonably and logically conclude, therefore, that the 1959 *Pravda* attack on Kozyrev was really a cover story to denounce his work, to *de-legitimize* it to anyone in the West who may have been paying attention to it, while Kozyrev, and his work, disappeared — as they did — into the highest reaches of classification within the Soviet Union, for his work provided the necessary key to understand why H-bombs were returning such anomalous yields, yields that, moreover, **most likely varied with the time of their detonation**. Kozyrev knew why: it was because the bomb itself became, for that brief brilliant nanosecond of the initial explosion, a dimensional gateway, a sluice-gate, opening the spillway to a hyper-dimensional cascade of torsion into the reaction itself.[237]

And when one says torsion, one says “rotation,” that is, the geometry of time itself, with its rotating systems within rotating systems within rotating systems, for as Kozyrev throughout his many experiments demonstrated time and time again, the simplest physical phenomena — from hydrogen bomb fusion reactions to the simple inertial properties of gyroscopes and tension balances and scales — *varied in their results over time, i.e., in accordance with the position of celestial bodies in relationship to the earth, and to the position on the earth and the season in which an experiment was performed.* Kozyrev had in effect demonstrated that time — the geometrical configuration and alignment of systems in space at any given moment — was itself a physical force and factor that gave it breadth and depth and dimensionality. He had given the effects of so many cycles as compiled by Dewey and Dakin, and even the sunspot alignments of RCA’s J.H. Nelson, a name: torsion.

In stressing this geometric aspect of time and its "multi-dimensionality" — its relationship to the ever-changing torsion dynamism of objects in space, their "template" — Kozyrev could not possibly have been blind to what he was actually saying, for he was saying also that there may well be, or *have been*, long ago, a scientific basis to astrology, a basis now all but forgotten.

And there is one final point in this torsion tale to consider. The Sun, while a rotating plasma, is not a plasma that rotates *with uniform velocity*, for if one considers various layers of this plasma from its equator north, or south, as many solar physicists know, the plasma rotates at different speeds, i.e., the Sun itself is the largest example in our celestial neighborhood of the phenomenon of *differential rotation of a plasma*. As such, it is the example par excellence of torsion.

A simple analogy will illustrate this point. In numerous discussions on radio shows I have been asked to illustrate what torsion does to the fabric of space-time, of the physical medium. The example I always use is that of emptying an aluminum soda can, and then wringing it like a dishrag. The analogy is similar to the Bell's two counter-rotating cylinders, for the counter-rotation of the wringing motion will spiral, fold, and pleat the can, which represents space-time. But imagine now that one is wringing the soda can with both hands going the *same* direction, but with one hand going very much faster than the other: the result will be exactly the same. The can will be spiraled, folded, and pleated.

Thus, the analogy serves to demonstrate an important point both about the Nazi Bell research and about Kozyrev's research, for in *both* cases the torsion physics in evidence in plasmas was *fully* rationalized by both parties. Moreover, in stressing this geometric aspect of time and its "multi-dimensionality" — its relationship to the ever-changing dynamism of objects in space — Kozyrev could not possibly have been blind to what he was actually saying, for he was saying that there may well be, or *have been*, a scientific basis to astrology now all but forgotten.

There was, however, one genius in particular, working at the turn of the nineteenth into the twentieth century, and at the dreadful moment that the deliberate and heavy hand of suppression of this physics and all its implications could clearly be seen and felt, who saw it all with a perspicacity and breathtaking vision, and who inspired the efforts of the Nazis and Soviets to free themselves from that heavy hand:

Nikola Tesla.

B. ALL ROADS LEAD TO TESLA AND MORGAN

One need only consider the conspicuous *absence* of Tesla's name from standard physics textbooks in order to appreciate the fact of the existence of this hidden physics and its deliberate suppression. It was evident in the public denunciations of Dr. Ronald Richter and Dr. Nikolai Kozyrev, and the quiet shuffling of their projects into classified obscurity and secrecy. But unlike those two geniuses, with Nikola Tesla one was dealing with an entirely different matter, for the man was not only *not* an obscure scientist and engineer working quietly in his laboratories on secret government projects, but he was a flamboyant and well-known public figure who delighted in large and expensive dinners in New York City's finest restaurants, who literally electrified audiences of the rich and famous — including such notables such as Mark Twain himself — with exhilarating public demonstrations of his inventions, and whose fame, quite literally, spread quickly worldwide with electrifying speed, for he indeed was the sole man responsible for electrifying the world after an equally famous contest with Thomas Edison and his financial backer J.P. Morgan — a contest which Tesla easily and decisively won.

Such a man could not simply be denounced, nor shuffled to the sidelines. Nor could such a man be dealt with by more "active measures" without casting a pall of suspicion over the ultimate perpetrators of the deed.

But why would Tesla pose such a problem to begin with?

1. Colorado Springs

The answer lies in what Tesla discovered during his famous experiments in Colorado Springs in the late nineteenth century, experiments which, to this day, few physicists and engineers really understand, and those few who do question either Tesla's claims, his analysis, or both. The reason for the difficulty in understanding among some scientists, and the questioning attitude and skepticism among others, lies in the nature of what Tesla himself claimed he had been able to do. It is necessary to cite his comments at length:

> Towards the close of 1898 a systematic research, carried on for a number of years *with the object of perfecting a method of transmission of electrical energy through the natural medium*, led me to recognize three important necessities: First, to develop a transmitter of great power; *second, to perfect means for individualizing and isolating the energy transmitted; and third, to ascertain the laws of propagation of currents through the earth* and the atmosphere.[238]

The Colorado Springs project was, in other words, the beginning of Tesla's now well-known idea of beaming electrical power itself without wires. This is already a step well beyond radio.

Observe carefully, however, what Tesla states. In order to do this, it was necessary to

> 1. construct a kind of transmitter of extraordinary power;
>
> 2. to render any wireless transmission of power practical, it was necessary to be able to send and receive a multitude of individual signals for the various equipment and localities it was presumably to serve, and thus, a means had to be found to "individualize and isolate" the transmitted energy, much as a radio receiver can tune to various frequencies to receive different signals; and finally, and most importantly,

> 3. Tesla clearly states that the “natural medium” itself is to be the means of propagation of this energy.

But what does he mean by “natural medium”? The interpretation of this one point is crucial to the understanding of what he was really seeking in Colorado Springs, and it is this precise point over which the misunderstandings, arguments, and the skeptical questions, arise.

There are three possible ways to understand Tesla here. The first is to understand by “natural medium” what Tesla later declares in the same context: the atmosphere, and the earth itself. In the first instance, the atmosphere, Tesla is proposing little more than a high-power version of radio. In the second case, however, it is clear that he is proposing something radically different, for the earth itself is to be the transmitter. This interpretation, as we shall discover, is that which clearly will emerge from the rest of Tesla’s remarks.

However, there is one final interpretation, the most radical of them all, that will loom ever larger as we proceed. Tesla, like many physicists and engineers of his day, was an ardent believer in the aether, that is, in the fact that space-time itself was a kind of ultra-fine matter upon which electromagnetic waves, and hence energy and power, could ride. Tesla, however, appears, unlike most physicists and engineers of his time, to have held the view that this aether had fluid-like properties, i.e., that it had the ability to be compressed or rarefied, that is, to be *stressed.* This will emerge as a clear implication of his Colorado Springs experiments.

To see how, we return to his own remarks, to understand how he intended to utilize the earth itself as the transmitting antenna for electrical power:

> In the middle of June, while preparations for other work were going on, I arranged one of my receiving transformers with the view of determining in a novel manner, experimentally, *the electric potential of the globe and studying the periodic and casual fluctuations.* This formed part of a plan carefully mapped out in advance. A highly sensitive, self-restorative device, controlling a recording instrument, was included in the secondary circuit, while the primary was connected to the ground and an elevated terminal

> of adjustable capacity. The variations of potential gave rise to electric surgings in the primary; these generated secondary currents, which in turn affected the sensitive device and recorder in proportion to their intensity. *The earth was found to be, literally, alive with electrical vibrations,* and soon I was deeply absorbed in this investigation.[239]

On conclusion of these investigations, having discovered that indeed the earth itself was an electrically dynamic system, Tesla concluded that

> Not only was it practicable to send telegraphic messages to any distance without wires, as I recognized long ago, but also to impress upon the entire globe the faint modulations of the human voice,

(In other words, Tesla *was* thinking in terms of radio, but with the entire earth as his transmitting antenna!)

> [but] far more still, *to transmit power, in unlimited amounts, to any terrestrial distance and almost without any loss.*[240]

Tesla then turned to the problem of developing not only a powerful transmitter, but one that could best be used for all these discrete and disparate purposes. And it is precisely here that the misunderstandings begin, for most engineers to this day think that Tesla's "magnifying impulse transmitter" was nothing but a Tesla coil beaming powerful bolts of electricity into the atmosphere.

To see how different was Tesla's system than any other then being considered, one must look closer at what he himself describes happened in Colorado Springs. Noting the typical Colorado thunderstorms which formed over the mountains and then moved quickly over the plains, Tesla begins a lengthy description of the events leading to his discovery of the method of electrically stressing the earth itself:

> I never saw fire balls,[241] but as a compensation for my disappointment *I succeeded later in determining the mode of their*

formation and producing them artificially.

In the latter part of the same month (June) I noticed several times that my instruments were affected stronger by discharges taking place at great distances than by those near by. This puzzled me very much. What was the cause? A number of observations proved that it could not be due to the differences in the intensity of the individual discharges,[242] and I readily ascertained that the phenomenon was not the result of a varying relation between the periods of my receiving circuits and those of terrestrial disturbances….

It was on the third of July — the date I shall never forget — when I obtained the first decisive experimental evidence of a truth of overwhelming importance for the advancement of humanity. A dense mass of strongly charged clouds gathered in the west and towards the evening a violent storm broke loose which, after spending much of its fury in the mountains, was driven away with great velocity over the plains. Heavy and long persisting arcs formed almost in regular time intervals….I was able to handle my instruments quickly and I was prepared. *The recording apparatus being properly adjusted, its indications became fainter and fainter with the increasing distance of the storm, until they ceased altogether. I was watching in eager expectation. Surely enough, in a little while the indications again began, grew stronger and stronger and, after passing through a maximum, gradually decreased and ceased once more. Many times, in regularly recurring intervals, the same actions were repeated until the storm which, as evident from simple computations, was moving with nearly constant speed, had retreated to a distance of about three hundred kilometers. Nor did these strange actions stop then, but continued to manifest themselves with undiminished force…. No doubt whatever remained: I was observing stationary waves.*

….Impossible as it seemed, this planet, despite its vast extent, behaved like a conductor of limited dimensions .[243]

In other words, Tesla, in Dewey- and Dakin-like fashion, had observed a *cycle*, and a very interesting one at that, for the cycle he had observed was a "stationary wave," or, in modern parlance, a "standing wave." When the extremely high-voltage static electrical discharges that we call lightning strike the earth, if the resonance is right it literally "thumps" the earth like a kettle drum, sending an impulse all the way around the planet somewhat like a seismic wave from an earthquake. Like all such waves, it will eventually fade and die, then grow again until it returns to the same place and intensity from which it started. And this gave him the idea for the "wireless transmission" of electrical power.

However, nothing could have been farther from Tesla's mind than standard radio. This new circuit is, he noted,

> Essentially, a circuit of very high self-induction and small resistance which in its arrangement, mode of excitation and action, *may be said to be the diametrical opposite of a transmitting circuit typical of telegraphy by Hertzian or electromagnetic radiations…. The electromagnetic radiations being reduced to an insignificant quantity*, and proper conditions of resonance maintained, the circuit acts like an immense pendulum, storing indefinitely the energy of the primary exciting *impulses and impressions upon the earth and its conducting atmosphere uniform harmonic oscillations* which, as actual tests have shown, may be pushed so far as to surpass those attained in the natural displays of static electricity.[244]

To unpack what he is saying, one only has to consider the standard radio transmission arrangement, sending out ordinary radio waves. In this arrangement, there is an antenna, connected to the ground. The antenna sends out Hertzian waves *into the atmosphere*, and the circuit is completed by its connection to the ground. Hertz waves are similar in nature to suspending a jump rope loosely between two people and having one person jerk the rope, sending an "S"-shaped wave slowly to the other end. Most of the energy of the wave is dissipated in the initial "jerking" motion, and accordingly, only a fraction of the energy arrives at the other person, the rest of the energy being dissipated by the up-and-down motion of the wave itself. In this case, the jump rope represents the earth's electrically conductive atmosphere, and the wave in the rope represents the ordinary radio wave.

Recall now what Tesla stated: his circuit parameters were diametrically *the opposite* of a standard "radio" arrangement, for in this instance, the relationship of ground and transmitter were turned on their heads, the earth, normally the ground in an electrical circuit, became the *transmitter and conductive medium*, and the atmosphere, normally the conductive medium, became the *ground.*245 Moreover, in this new arrangement, the waves were not Hertzian at all, but *impulses;* that is to say, they were longitudinal waves of stress, of compression and rarefaction, in the earth itself.

To understand the crucial difference between the two waves, we repeat our jump rope analogy, only this time, we place a yardstick between the two persons. One person pushes or pulses the yardstick repeatedly. Instantaneously, *all* of the energy of the pulse is transmitted directly to the other person. In this case, the yardstick represents the earth, and the pulses the electro-acoustic longitudinal waves Tesla is sending.

This is, to put it succinctly, a far cry from radio in the standard sense, for Tesla means not only to transmit signals by this means, but electrical power itself, without wires, for the earth itself *is* the wire.246 Note also what the earth is in this system: it is a highly *non*-linear medium of almost infinite electrical "resistance" to a standard electrical current. This will assume some importance as we proceed.

In any case, once having envisioned this radically different system, Tesla went on to describe what for all practical purposes amounted to an "internet":

> The results obtained by me have made my scheme of intelligence transmission, for which the name of "World Telegraphy" has been suggested, easily realizable….Thus the entire earth will be converted into a huge brain, as it were, capable of response in every one of its parts.247

In fact, this is an “internet” beyond anything currently imaginable, for it has no need of wires, “gateway computers,” or satellites in order to function. In Tesla’s grand vision, the *earth* fulfills these functions.

2. Wardenclyffe

When he returned to New York City, Tesla was ready to put the scheme into commercial testing. And this is where Tesla's difficulties began, and where suppression of the physics and engineering his system represented was clearly evident, for needing funds to build a large-scale version of his Colorado Springs experimental apparatus, Tesla, as is now well known, approached the American international banker J. Pierpont Morgan for a loan. Detailing his plan for a global system of "wireless telegraphy," even proposing to send the human voice and actual pictures by its means in a kind of terrestrial radio and television, Morgan advanced Tesla the funds. What Tesla did *not* reveal to Morgan at this juncture was that he intended to transmit electrical power *itself* by this means, making even his own stupendously successful system of alternating current — the system now in use worldwide — obsolete! Tesla chose a place on Long Island, purchased land, built a power plant, and a large tower. He called the place and the project "Wardenclyffe."

Unfortunately for Tesla and his plans, however, the Italian physicist and engineer Guigliomo Marconi — using Tesla's own devices and inventions to boot! — beat him to the punch by transmitting the first transatlantic radio signal, using standard radio circuit arrangements and Hertzian "jump rope" electromagnetic waves while Tesla's project was still under construction. Faced with cheaper competition and a deceptively simpler, but much less flexible, system, Morgan threatened to pull the financial plug on the scheme. It was then, faced with the demise of his project, that Tesla revealed his true intentions to Morgan: he planned to beam power itself through the earth to any point on the globe. With this revelation, Morgan *did* pull the plug, and Tesla's grand project came to an end, and has never since been publicly revived.

a. Weaponizing Wardenclyffe and Suppressing the Scalars: Tesla at Tunguska and Morgan at Mischief

Why would Morgan pull the plug on such a scheme, virtually suppressing it and the physics it represented? After all, it is simply not true merely that he “could not meter” it and hence make money, for he stood to gain a great deal financially off of *worldwide* royalty and licensing agreements for the system, even though such a system would, admittedly, have been much more difficult to financially monitor and secure. So while pure and simple greed may very likely have been a factor in his deliberations, it probably was not the only one.

What those other modifications may have been were hinted at by Tesla himself, and a curious series of incidents that began when a French ship, the *Iena*, mysteriously exploded in 1907, as Tesla’s Wardenclyffe project was in its financial death throes. In an op-ed piece written that March to the editor of the *New York Times*, Tesla hinted at the weaponization potential of his Colorado Springs discoveries and Wardenclyffe project:

> As to projecting wave-energy to any particular region of the globe, I have given a clear description of the means in technical publications. Not only can this be done by the means of my devices, but the spot at which the desired effect is to be produced can be calculated very closely, *assuming the accepted terrestrial measurements to be correct.* This, of course, is not the case. Up to this day we do not know a diameter of the globe within one thousand feet. My wireless plant will enable me to determine it within fifty feet or less, when it will be possible to rectify many geodetical data and make such calculations as those referred to with greater accuracy.[248]

A year later in 1908, the inventor was less guarded in his words:

> When I spoke of future warfare I meant that it should be conducted by direct application of electrical waves without the use of aerial engines or other implements of destruction. This means, as I pointed out, would be ideal, for not only would the energy of war require no effort for the maintenance of its potentiality, but it would be productive in times of peace. This is not a dream. Even now wireless power plants could be constructed by which any

> region of the globe might be rendered uninhabitable without subjecting the population of other parts to serious danger or inconvenience.[249]

These words were published in the *New York Times* on April 28, 1908. Bear that date in mind, because it will become highly significant in a moment. In any case, it is also clear that Tesla's wireless transmission of power was *one and the same technology as a horrible weapon of mass destruction.* And this raises an ominous series of questions: Had J.P. Morgan pulled his financial backing of the project not out of greed, but, perhaps motivated by some secret scientific advisor's cautionary warnings, had he pulled his financial backing because he did not wish to see technology with such destructive potential in the private hands of a scientist well known for very odd and eccentric behavior? Were Morgan's motivations ultimately altruistic? Or, conversely, did he want to develop the technology for such purposes secretly himself, and by means of its potential use, establish a world mastery for himself and his own class?

To put it succinctly, as with the presence of the Mitsubishi bank economist in the membership roles of the Foundation for the Study of Cycles, or the peculiar investigations of RCA engineer J.H. Nelson, this is the *third* clear instance of a major corporation, secure in its own monetary temple, showing a clear interest, first in the development of a deep physics, a radically different physics, and now, the first clear indication of a deliberate act of financial sabotage of the same physics! This pattern will only become more and more acute as we proceed throughout this book.

But in that very same article, Tesla makes clear that he has seen beyond his own system of using the earth itself as an antenna to an *even deeper* underlying physics, a physics he did *not* disclose at the time to Morgan but which now, desperate for financial support for his project, he now disclosed publicly in the pages of the *New York Times:*

> What I said in regard to the greatest achievement of the man of science whose mind is bent upon the mastery of the physical universe, was nothing more than what I stated in one of my unpublished addresses, from which I quote: "According to an

> adopted theory, every ponderable atom is differentiated from a tenuous fluid, filling all space *merely by spinning motion, as a whirl of water in a calm lake. By being set in movement this fluid, the ether, becomes gross matter. Its movement arrested, the primary substance reverts to its normal state. It appears, then, possible for man through harnessed energy of the medium and suitable agencies for starting and stopping ether whirls to cause matter to form and disappear.* At his command, almost without effort on his part, old worlds would vanish and new ones would spring into being. *He could alter the size of this planet, control its seasons, adjust its distance from the sun, guide it on its eternal journey along any path he might choose through the depths of the universe. He could make planets collide and produce his suns and stars, his heat and light; he could originate life in all its infinite forms. To cause at will the birth and death of matter would be man's grandest deed, which would give him the mastery of physical creation, make him fulfill his ultimate destiny.*[250]

Note now that by "medium" Tesla no longer means simply the earth itself, but the aether. And notably, he views atoms themselves as but vorticular structures — rotating, torsion-based systems — *in* that aether. If Morgan had any doubts in 1907 about the potentials — both destructive and constructive — of Tesla's system and the physics it embodied, those doubts were clearly dispelled a year later by Tesla himself in *The New York Times*.

Note also that Tesla, by viewing the physical medium in this torsion-based fashion, has also clearly seen one implication: the aether itself was a transmutative, *alchemical* information-creating medium, a medium which, as information-creating, was in a state of non-equilibrium and broken symmetry. Thus, with the proper structuring of that "torsion potential," by *engineering it*, one could literally alter the size and mass of the earth or any other celestial body at will, for those bodies were themselves "whirls in the aether." Small wonder then that he, like Drs. Richter and Kozyrev after him, was creating ball lightning and thereby studying plasmas and electrical shocks, for like them, he has seen the much deeper physics of the physical medium itself, and like them, he has discovered the basic method of manipulating and engineering it through electrical pulses or longitudinal waves, and through rotation. And like them and their Nazi and Communist masters, he has seen the full range of its constructive and destructive implications. In this, and without the slightest exaggeration, his views of physics gave a solid basis to a very ancient pseudo-science: alchemy.

But why is the timing of Tesla's announcement so significant?

One researcher who asked this question was Oliver Nichelson:

> The question remains of whether Tesla demonstrated the weapons application of his power transmission system. Circumstantial evidence found in the chronology of Tesla's work and financial fortunes between 1900 and 1908 points to there having been a test of this weapon.[251]

Recall that Tesla's first veiled hints of the weaponization potential of his wireless power transmission system were stated in 1907 and clearly expressed by April 1908. Roughly two months later, on June 30, 1908, a massive explosion occurred over Tunguska, Russia, in Siberia.

> An explosion estimated to be equivalent to 10-15 megatons of TNT[252] flattened 500,000 acres of pine forest near the Stony Tunguska River in central Siberia. Whole herds of reindeer were destroyed. The explosion was heard over a radius of 620 miles. When an expedition was made to the area in 1927 to find evidence of the meteorite presumed to have caused the blast, no impact crater was found. When the ground was drilled for pieces of nickel, iron, or stone, the main constituents of meteorites, none were found down to a depth of 118 feet.[253]
>
> Many explanations have been given for the Tunguska event. The officially accepted version is that a 100,000-ton fragment of Encke's Comet, composed mainly of dust and ice, entered the atmosphere at 62,000 m.p.h., heated up, and exploded over the earth's surface creating a fireball and shock wave but no crater. Alternative versions of the disaster see a renegade mini-black hole

> or an alien space ship crashing into the earth[254] with the resulting release of energy.[255]

As was already seen, Tesla had two short months earlier spelled out the weaponization potential of his magnifying transmitter device and its underlying deep physics very clearly.

Many years later in 1934, according to a letter unearthed by Tesla biographer Margaret Cheney, the inventor once again wrote J.P. Morgan:

> The flying machine has completely demoralized the world, so much so that in some cities, as London and Paris, people are in mortal fear from aerial bombing. The new means I have perfected affords absolute protection against this and other forms of attack… *These new discoveries I have carried out experimentally on a limited scale, created a profound impression.*[256]

At this point one might ask, what prompted the letter? Was it spontaneous on Tesla's part? Or a reply to an inquiry from the financier? Whatever lay behind this strange correspondence, occurring years after the financier had severed his connection with Tesla and all but suppressed the Wardenclyffe wireless power transmission project, the correspondence is odd to say the least.

Its implications however, are clear. Tesla's remarks in the *New York Times* in 1908, the same year as the event, and his letter years later in 1934 to Morgan, point to a circumstantial case that he indeed tested the weaponization potential of his wireless power transmission on a remote wilderness region, a region where there would be sufficient observation of the event from a distance, but no loss of human life. Indeed, in purely legal terms, he had "the motive and the means to cause the Tunguska event. His transmitter could generate energy levels and frequencies capable of releasing the destructive force of 10 megatons, or more, of TNT. And the overlooked genius was desperate."[257]

But as Nichelson also observes, the nature of the Tunguska explosion is also entirely consistent with what would happen with the sudden release of wireless power. No fiery object was reported in the skies at that time by professional or amateur astronomers as would be expected when a 200,000,000-pound object enters the atmosphere at tens of thousands of miles an hour. Also, the first reporters, from the town of Tomsk, to reach the area judged the stories about a body falling from the sky was the result of the imagination of an impressionable people. He noted there was considerable noise coming from the explosion, but no stones fell. The absence of an impact crater can be explained by there having been no material body to impact. An explosion caused by broadcast power would not leave a crater.

In contrast to the ice comet collision theory, reports of upper-atmosphere and magnetic disturbances coming from other parts of the world at the time of and just after the Tunguska event point to massive changes in earth's electrical condition. Baxter and Atkins cite in their study of the explosion, *The Fire Came By*, that the *Times* of London editorialized about "slight, but plainly marked, disturbances of…magnets"….

In Berlin, the *New York Times* of July 3rd reported unusual colors in the evening skies thought to be Northern Lights…Massive glowing "silvery clouds" covered Siberia and northern Europe. A scientist in Holland told of an "undulating mass" moving across the northwest horizon. It seemed to him not to be a cloud, but the "sky itself seemed to undulate." A woman north of London wrote the London *Times* that on midnight of July 1st the sky glowed so brightly it was possible to read large print inside her house. A meteorological observer in England recounted on the nights of June 30th and July 1st: "A strong orange-yellow light became visible in the north and northeast… causing an undue prolongation of twilight lasting to daybreak on July 1st… There was a complete absence of scintillation or flickering, and no tendency for the

> formation of streamers, or a luminous arch, characteristic of auroral phenomena….Twilight on both of these nights was prolonged to daybreak, and there was no real darkness.”
>
> …
>
> When Tesla used his high-power transmitter as a directed-energy weapon he drastically altered the normal electrical condition of the earth. By making the electrical charge of the planet vibrate in tune with his transmitter he was able to build up electric fields that affected compasses and caused the upper atmosphere to behave like the gas-filled lamps in his laboratory. He had turned the entire globe into a simple electrical component that he could control.[258]

But was a “simple” wireless transmission of power *all* that was involved in the explosion? After all, we have already found Drs. Richter and Kozyrev questioning the standard models of thermonuclear fusion, and Tesla himself by 1908, clearly seeing a deeper physics of the medium itself, was involved in his own wireless power transmission principles.

More importantly, flattening an area of 500,000 acres is equivalent to flattening an area of 781.25 square *miles*, or roughly an area of a square bounded by sides almost 28 miles long! So some other mechanism might be in play, and Tesla has already told us what it might have been: whirls in the aether itself — *torsion, rotation.*

However, Tesla had foreseen even further political implications for his system, and it is worth citing him at length:

> Through the universal adoption of this system, ideal conditions for the maintenance of law and order will be realized, *for then the energy necessary to the enforcement of right and justice will be normally productive, yet (potentially) and in any moment available, for attack and defense.* The power transmitted need not be necessarily destructive, *for if existence is made to depend upon it, its withdrawal or supply will bring about the same results as those now accomplished by force of arms.*

> *But when unavoidable, the same agent may be used to destroy property and life.* The art is already so far developed that great destructive effects can be produced at any point on the globe, determined beforehand and with great accuracy. In view of this I have not thought it hazardous to predict a few years ago that the wars of the future will not be waged with explosives but with electrical means.[259]

In other words, like the "gods" of extremely ancient times,[260] *Tesla saw in his technology of wireless power transmission a means of world mastery and hegemony, whose implied threat of withdrawal of access, or even worse, the implied threat of its destructive weaponized deployment, would coerce compliance to whatever world order as possessed, monopolized, and deployed it. Such statements could hardly have gone unnoticed by Tesla's former financial backer, J.P. Morgan.*

But whatever Morgan's interest may have been, foreign nations were most certainly also watching these statements carefully. As Oliver Nichelson notes, the American media carried many stories of "death ray" research being conducted *in the wake of Tesla's statements to the New York Times* in Russia,[261] France,[262] and Great Britain.[263]

In the last instance, Tesla biographer John J. O'Neill noted in an unpublished chapter to his celebrated biography of the inventor, *Prodigal Genius,* that when he queried the engineer about his wireless power transmission technology and its weaponization potential, Tesla became very reluctant to speak about it in any detail. But later, Tesla did offer some interesting information:

> Somewhat later I learned the reason for Tesla's reluctance to discuss the details. This came shortly after Stanley Baldwin replaced Neville Chamberlain as Prime Minister of Great Britain [sic].
>
> Tesla revealed that he had carried on negotiations with Prime Minister Chamberlain for the sale of his ray system to Great Britain for $30,000,000 on the basis of his presentation that the device would provide complete protection for the British Isles

> against any enemy approaching by sea or air, and would provide an offensive weapon to which there was no defense. He was convinced, he declared, of the sincerity of Mr. Chamberlain and his intent to adopt the device as it would have prevented the outbreak of the then threatening war, and would have made possible the continuation — under the duress which this weapon would have made possible — of the working agreement involving France, Germany and Britain to maintain the status quo in Europe. When Chamberlain failed, at the Munich conference, to retain this state of European equilibrium it was necessary to get rid of Chamberlain and install a new Prime Minister who could make the effort to shift one corner of the triangle from Germany to Russia. Baldwin found no virtue in Tesla's plan and peremptorily ended negotiations.[264]

However, there is a large looming problem over hovering over these assertions, and that is simply the sequence of historical facts.

Neville Chamberlain remained Prime Minister until the Nazi invasion of the Low Countries and France in May of 1940, and did *not*, as is alleged, step aside for Stanley Baldwin to return to Britain's premiership after the Munich Conference of 1938. In fact, Chamberlain remained, even after Churchill had replaced him, on Churchill's War Cabinet until his death a few months later from cancer. The entire sequence of events is wrong, for it was Chamberlain who had replaced *Baldwin* as prime minister in 1937. And in any case, it is unlikely that Chamberlain, who pursued a policy of appeasement with Nazi Germany, would have been interested in a weapon of mass destruction that, had the Germans caught wind of the plan as they inevitably would have, would have exacerbated tensions between the two nations even more.

But need one discard these allegations merely for the presence of this (admittedly whopping) historical mistake?

Perhaps not, for it is possible that O'Neill is simply recording accurately what *Tesla* told him, and Tesla, then already a very old man, might have not remembered things in their precise sequence, confusing *Chamberlain* with *Baldwin.* On this reading, admittedly only a possibility, Tesla's deal was being negotiated with Stanley Baldwin, and the deal was subsequently scrubbed by Chamberlain on his assumption of the premiership and in the interests of appeasement.

All this is mentioned because, of course, there is one country conspicuously *absent* from the previous roll call of countries involved with "death ray" research in the 1920s: Germany. However, as researcher Oliver Nichelson observes, the Germans were indeed working on such a weapon, for the *Chicago Tribune* reported the following interesting little story:

> Berlin - That the German Government has an invention of death rays that will bring down airplanes, halt tanks on the battlefields, ruin automobile motors, and spread a curtain of death like the gas clouds of the recent war was the information given to Reichstag members by Herr Wulle, chief of the militarists in that body. It is learned that three inventions have been perfected in Germany for the same purpose and have been patented.265

Self-evidently, such stories abounded in the 1920s in the wake of Tesla's pronouncements, but there are sound reasons to take them seriously, especially in the case of Germany.

Under the terms of the Versailles Treaty, Germany was prohibited from development of heavy artillery over certain calibers, and absolutely prohibited from having tanks or even an air force, and its standing army was limited to a mere 100,000 men. However, the Treaty did not prohibit development of these types of weapons, and thus it is logical to assume that Germany in particular would seek to do a technological end-run around the restrictions of the treaty.266

Even more interesting, however, is the fact that Nichelson reports that one British researcher allegedly involved in the development of such systems, J.H. Hamil, observed that the German system was based "on an entirely different principle" than those in evidence in other reports.267 While Hamil explicitly states that his own "death ray" is based on Tesla's Colorado Springs wireless power transmission experiments,268 it is also interesting that it appears that he *misinterpreted* the nature of those experiments, for he built a large Tesla coil and was apparently attempting to beam power by its means through the atmosphere, the exact *opposite*, it will be recalled, of what Tesla was trying to do. This makes his statements all that much more interesting, for by pursuing "an entirely different principle" were the Germans in fact using the *earth* as the transmitter, and the atmosphere as the ground, as Tesla himself indicated? We will never know, but it is interesting to note that whatever they were doing, it was not the same as what everyone *else* was doing, according to Hamil.[269]

b. Lt. Col. Tom Bearden on Scalar Resonance

But what *is* precisely the relationship between Tesla's use of the earth itself as his transmitter, and the far more dangerous idea he himself suggests, that such "standing waves" as he observed at Colorado Springs, could be used as a means of engineering and manipulating the physical medium itself for whatever purpose, constructive or destructive?

The answers to this question are provided in certain suggestive statements Tesla made in a trial transcript during a trial in New York state. Tesla, now in dire financial straits after J.P. Morgan stopped all further backing of the Wardenclyffe wireless power transmission project, had given the deed of his Wardenclyffe property to the owner of a hotel where he resided as security in return for him being allowed to room in the hotel. When Tesla was unable to pay the hotel bill the owner naturally enough foreclosed on the property, winning a judgment against Tesla. Tesla appealed the case, and it is this transcript that contains some interesting descriptions of the Wardenclyffe property by Tesla, and some even more interesting allusions to the physics properties he thought to be behind it. I cite the transcript at length:

By Mr. Hawkins:

Q. Were there any other structures upon the premises other than that brick factory or laboratory which you have just described?

A. (Tesla speaking) Yes sir, there was the structure which in a certain sense was the most important structure, because the power plant was only an accessory to it. That was the tower.

Q. Please describe the tower as to dimensions and material and method of construction and kind of construction?

> Mr. Fordham: We renew our objection, if the Court please. This is entirely immaterial, irrelevant and incompetent until after they have succeeded in establishing their contention that the deed is a mortgage.
>
> The Referee: I will take it.
>
> Mr. Fordham: Exception.

A. The tower was 187 feet high from the base to the top. It was built of special timber and it was built in such a way that every stick could be taken out at any time and replaced if it was necessary. The design of the tower was a matter of considerable difficulty. It was made in the shape of an octagon and pyramidal form for strength and was supporting what I have termed in my scientific articles a terminal.

By the Referee:

Q. There was a sort of globe at the top?

A. Yes. That, your Honor, was only the carrying out of a discovery I made that any amount of electricity within reason could be stored *provided you make it of a certain shape. Electricians even today do not appreciate that yet.* But that construction enabled me to produce with this small plant many times the effect that could be produced by an ordinary plant of a hundred times the size. And this globe, the framework was all specially shaped, that is the girders had to be bent in shape and it weighed about 55 tons.

By Mr. Hawkins:

Q. Of what was it constructed?

A. Of steel, all the girders being specially bent into shape.

Q. Was the tower that supported it entirely constructed of wood or partly of steel?

A. That part alone on top was of steel. The tower was all timbers and of course the timbers were held together by specially-shaped steel plates.

The Referee: Braces?

The Witness: Yes, steel plates. I had to construct it this way for technical reasons.

The Referee: We are not interested in that.

Q. Was the tower enclosed or open?

A. The tower, at the time of the execution of this deed, was open, but I have photographs to show how it looked exactly and how it would have looked finished.

Q. After you delivered the deed was the tower ever enclosed?

A. No, it was just open.

Q. Now the dome or terminal at the top, was that enclosed?

A. No sir.

Q. Never enclosed?

A. Never enclosed, no.

Q. *Had that structure ever been completed?*

A. *The structure so far, if I understand the terms right, yes, the structure was all completed but the accessories were not placed on it yet. For instance that globe there was to be covered with specially pressed plates. These plates —*

Q. *That had not been done, had it?*

A. *That had not been done, although I had it all prepared. I had prepared everything, I had designed and prepared everything, but it was not done.*270

Q. Was the structure of the tower in any manner connected with the brick building or power plant?

A. The tower was separate.

Q. I understand, but was there any connection between them?

A. There were of course two channels. One was for communicating, for bringing into the tower compressed air and water and such things as I might have needed for operations, and the other one was to bring in the electric mains.

By the Referee:

Q. *In order to do that there was, as a matter of fact, was there not, a well-like shaft going down right in the middle of the tower into the ground some 50 or 60 feet?*

A. *Yes. You see the underground work is one of the most expensive parts of the tower. In this system that I have invented it is necessary* ***for the machine to get a grip of the earth, otherwise it cannot shake the earth. It has to have a grip on the earth so that the whole of this globe can quiver****, and to do that it is necessary to carry out a very expensive construction. But I want to say this underground work belongs to the tower.*

By Mr. Hawkins:

Q. Anything that was there, tell us about.

A. There was, as your Honor states, a big shaft about ten by twelve feet, goes about 120 feet and this was first covered with timber and the inside with steel and in the center of this there was a winding stairs going down and in the center of the stairs there was a big shaft again through which the current was to pass, *and this shaft was so figured in order to tell exactly where the nodal point is, so that I could calculate every point of distance. For instance I could calculate exactly the size of the earth or the diameter of the earth and measure it exactly within four feet with that machine.*

Q. And that was a necessary appurtenance to your tower?

A. *Absolutely necessary.* And then the real expensive work was to connect that central part with the earth, and there I had special machines rigged up which would push the iron pipes, one length after another, and I pushed these iron pipes, I think 16 of them, 300 feet, and *then the current through these pipes takes hold of the earth.* Now that was a very expensive part of the work, but it does not show on the tower, but it belongs to the tower.

….

Q. Tell the Court generally, not in detail, the purpose of that tower and the equipment which you have described in connection with it?

Mr. Fordham: How is that material?
The Referee: I will take it.
Mr. Fordham: We except.

A. Well, the primary purpose of the tower, your Honor, was to telephone, to send the human voice and likeness around the globe.

By the Referee:

Q. Through the instrumentality of the earth.

A. Through the instrumentality of the earth. That was my discovery that I announced in 1893…

….

By Mr. Hawkins:

Q. The purpose then briefly was for wireless communications to various parts of the world?

A. Yes *and the tower was so designed that I could apply to it* ***any amount of power and I was planning to give a demonstration in the transmission of power which I have so perfected that power can be transmitted clear across the globe with a loss of not more than five per cent, and that plant was to serve as a practical demonstration….***[271]

Now look what we have:

> 1. At the same approximate time as Tesla is making these statements in a trial, he is making statements for the *New York Times* that indicate the same technology of wireless power transmission is capable of using its longitudinal waves to manipulate the physical medium — not just the earth — itself, either for constructive or massively destructive purposes;
>
> 2. In the transcript itself, Tesla is very careful to state that not only is his system for communications purposes, but for the express purpose of the transmission of *power in any amount*;
>
> 3. To do this, Tesla also clearly states in the transcripts that the Tower structure at Wardenclyffe also had a deep shaft so that his system could physically and electrically "grip the earth" and "grip the entire globe" and make it "quiver"; and to do this,
>
> 4. Tesla also clearly implied that it was necessary to have as exact a measurement of the earth's size, of its *geometry*, as possible.[272] In other words, the geometrical and non-linear properties of the earth itself were essential components to the system.

The reason it was essential may be recalled from our previous remarks with respect to Dr. Harmut Müller's Global Scaling Theory, namely, that longitudinal pressure waves in the medium itself are responsible for the local warping of space-time and the clustering of objects near certain nodal points where such waves overlap. To put it differently, large masses such as planets or stars *are the natural and most efficient resonators of these waves:*

> (This) scalar coupling of the solar system provides a major check on unrestricted use of … large…strategic scalar EM weapon systems. If significant scalar effects are produced on earth in a "pulse" mode, *pulsed disturbance of the earth-sun and earth-moon*

> *system results*. Here a danger exists that one or more natural resonances of the coupled systems may be excited. If the feedback stimulation of the Sun is not insignificant, for example, large sunspot activity may result sometime thereafter, say in a day or two. If too much or too sharp stimulation occurs on earth, the coupled resonant response from the sun could be disastrous….
>
> Accordingly, use of huge scalar (electromagnetic) weapons is a double-edged sword. Unless carefully employed, use of the weapons could cause a terrible backlash to the user as well as the victim, and even accidentally cause the destruction of the earth itself.[273]

In other words, *precise* knowledge of local celestial geometries, including the earth, is at all times essential in such a system as Tesla envisioned, and this is, perhaps, why he himself ultimately described the implications of his technology for a deeper physics able to engineer the physical medium itself destructively or constructively. And note, in Tesla's vision, it was quite essential that the system itself be physically and electrically rooted to the earth, for the earth indeed was a huge component in a gigantic electrical circuit. Thus, they do greatly err who would maintain that such a system would more practically be deployable on satellites in space, for the whole point of such longitudinal *waves of stress in the medium itself is that they are best established by manipulating their natural resonators: whole planets and stars*. To say otherwise is entirely to misunderstand the physics.[274] The *best* place for the deployment of such systems is precisely on the surface of planets.

C. CONCLUSIONS

So at the end of this journey, we have the following things:

1. There clearly exists a physics of open systems in which ever-changing celestial geometries exercise mutual physical influences;
2. This physics points to a deeper physics of the physical medium itself, which is manipulable via longitudinal waves of stress within the medium, which in turn may be accessible via methods of electrical stress in nonlinear mediums such as the earth, or, in the case of stars, rotating plasmas;
3. This physics and the ability to incorporate whole planets as components of a technology clearly existed, and was asserted, as early as the turn of the last century, in the work and words of Nikola Tesla, who noted both its benign and malign implications were both logical and simultaneous entailments of that same physics and system of technology;
4. As the database of physical science expands with increasing measurements over a vast and disparate body of knowledge, correlations between seemingly unrelated systems began to be noticed, and these correlations included cycles of human economic, sociological, and emotional activity, suggesting the possibility of a *deep correlation between physics, economics, and celestial geometries*;
5. Significant indicators were also found of discrete but definitive corporate and financial interest in the discovery of the principles of these connections between physics and economics, and in the case of Tesla and Morgan, of efforts to *privately develop* and later *suppress* its instrumentalities.

It is in those last two points — the deep correlation between physics, economics, and celestial geometries, and the private development and suppression of its instrumentalities — that we discover a host of questions, and a very ancient, indeed, “paleoancient” connection….

II.

THE TEMPLES, THE STARS, AND THE BANKSTERS

"…so it was that the temple that should owe fealty to the gods alone, became a front for the international money creative force of that day and age; connected closely with the trade in precious metals and slaves as it must have been."

— David Astle, The Babylonian Woe, p. 25.

Four

TEMPLES, TEMPLATES, AND TRUSTS

THE ANCIENT ROOTS OF A DEEP RELATIONSHIP

∴

> *“The determination of the stars to which some of the Egyptian temples, sacred to a known divinity, were directed, opened a way, as I anticipated, to a study of the astronomical basis of parts of the mythology.”*
>
> — *J. Norman Lockyear*[275]

> *“…to put it in the terse language of Bastiat, society implies exchange, and exchange, money.”*
>
> — *Alexander Del Mar*[276]

Paradoxically, the farther back in history one goes, the closer the relationship between science, magic, and money becomes. Many have commented upon this relationship, but few have understood its significance for the type of physics that it implies. The nature of this relationship, and the conspiratorial implications that it implies, is best exhibited by examining the relationship of gold mining and slavery in ancient Egypt. But it is important to begin at the beginning, in order to see how, and in what manner, the actions of a conspiracy can be glimpsed. From earliest times, the power to “make and issue money and regulate the value thereof ” (to paraphrase the U.S. Constitution) has been recognized to be the sole prerogative of the State, or, in more ancient times, the crown or king.

As the famous nineteenth-century American numismatic scholar Alexander Del Mar aptly put it, “The right to coin money has always been and still remains the surest mark and announcement of sovereignty.”[277]

Indeed, it is because it is a sure “mark and announcement of sovereignty” that one finds the association of the making and regulation of the legal value of money so intertwined not only with the sovereignty of the state or crown, but with the sovereignty of God (or, as the case may be, of the gods) from whom the power of rule in most ancient societies was invariably perceived to derive, and no better exemplar of this complex relationship between the state control of money issuance, of mining, and the close interlock of both with religion can be found than that of ancient Republican and Imperial Rome.

A. TEMPLES AND TRUSTS

1. The Roman Model

As money in ancient times was primarily — though certainly not exclusively — thought to reside in precious metals such as gold, copper, silver, and in some cases even bronze, it inevitably followed that for a state to maintain its sovereignty over the making, issuance, and regulation of the value of money, it had to exercise a strict control over the mining of those metals:

> Therefore, the means necessary to secure and maintain such a money were for the State to monopolize the copper mines, restrict the commerce in copper, strike copper pieces of high artistic merit, in order to defeat counterfeiting, stamp them with the mark of the State, render them the sole legal tenders for the payment of domestic contracts, taxes, fines, and debts, limit their emission until their value (from universal demand for them and their comparative scarcity) rose to more than that of the metal of which they were composed, and maintain such restriction and over-valuation as the permanent policy of the State. For foreign trade or diplomacy a supply of gold and silver, coined and uncoined, could be kept in the treasury.
>
> There are ample evidences that means of this character were, in fact, employed by the Roman Republic; and, therefore, that such was the system of money it adopted. The copper mines were monopolized by the Roman State, the commerce in copper was regulated, the bronze nummi were issued by the State, which strictly monopolized their fabrication, and the designs were of great beauty, the pieces were stamped “S.C.,” or *ex senates consulta*….their emission was limited, until the value of the pieces rose to about five times that of the metal they contained, and they steadily and for a lengthy period retained this high over-valuation.[278]

Thus, we have three interconnected ideas at the outset:

1. The power to coin and regulate the value of money by established law was a prerogative solely of the state or crown, and not of any private money- or credit-issuing monopoly;

2. There was no inherent value in “precious metals” as such, but such value had to be artificially created by the state issuing such money by two means:

a. the relative scarcity of precious metal money issued, which made the legal monetary value of money issued exceed the inherent value of the metal in the coin itself; and,

b. the value was further enhanced by the creation or addition of artwork to the coins issued; and,

3. Because the issuance of money was connected to precious metals such as copper, silver, and gold, the state or crown had to maintain a monopoly over the mining and stockpiling of such metals.

a. The Bullion Trust and the Temple

But in ancient Rome, there is a further factor at work, and it is best to allow Del Mar himself to state what it is: “It is impossible to resist the conviction,” he states, “that the superior value of gold in the West *was created by means of* legal and, perhaps, also *sacerdotal ordinances*. This method of fixing the ratio may even have originated in the Orient.”[279] In other words, in fixing the value of gold at a ratio of certain units of value — expressed in terms of other metals — per unit of gold, gold’s value as the ultimate precious metal was established largely through religious ordinances. Moreover, Del Mar suggests this practice originated in “the Orient,” which could mean, as far as Rome was concerned, the Middle East or even the East as far away as India. So one now must add, to the above list, a fourth connection:

4) The value of gold was fixed largely by “sacerdotal ordinance,” in other words, *there is a deep and profound connection between the issuance of money, its fixation of value in law in terms of*

> *precious metals whose value in turn is defined by ratios per unit of gold on the one hand, and religion on the other.* In short, one is in the presence of the deep connection of ancient conceptions of money, and religion, or as I put it in the chapter title, between “temples” and “trusts.”

But why call such a relationship, on the monetary side of things, a trust at all?

Del Mar provides a significant clue in a statement that, on first glance, seems to evidence nothing more than a difference in monetary and metals policies on the part of Occidental and Oriental societies. He states that “The governments of Persia, Assyria, Egypt, Greece and Rome made a profit on the coinage by raising the value of gold, while those of India, China, and perhaps also Japan, made their profit by maintaining, or enhancing, the value of silver.”280 In other words, for the societies of the Occident — Egypt, Assyria (and presumably Babylon), Persia, Greece, and Rome — artificially defined gold as being the metal of highest value in terms of its convertibility into more units of other metals, while, conversely, the governments of the Orient — India and China — pursued the reverse policy, of making silver the highest valued metal in terms of its convertibility into other metals. Thus, trade could be carried out between these two disparate parts of the world; the policies were in a certain sense an inevitable consequence of that trade. However, a closer examination reveals a hidden player, for such trade will inevitably create the rise of an international trading class, one which, moreover, will create its wealth precisely by trade in these precious metals, metals that are easier to transport than finished goods, and which can be exchanged in any place for such goods. In short, what is being created, from earliest times, is an international financial class of “bullion brokers,” or as we would call them now, bankers. A significant question now occurs: Is it possible that, rather than such a class having emerged as a consequence of such governmental policies and trade, that the converse is true? Is it possible that there existed such a class of “international bullion brokers” who *created* these policies in various parts of the world, policies which would enhance their own power and wealth? If so, then how did they achieve and orchestrate this?

The answer to that question will consume us in the remaining chapters of this book, but in order to answer it, we must once again turn to the unusual fixation of the value of gold and silver in the Occidental cultures: Greece, Egypt, the Mesopotamian civilizations, and Rome. Why was gold — which was much easier and less costly to mine than silver — valued more highly than silver?

Del Mar has already suggested the answer; it was because in some measure, gold was regarded as *sacred*, as being under the special jurisdiction of the gods:

> The sacerdotal character conferred upon gold, or the coinage of gold, was not a novelty of the Julian constitution (of Rome); rather was it *an ancient myth put to new political use…*A similar belief is to be noticed among the ancient Greeks, whose coinages, except during the republican era, were conducted in the temples and under the supervision of priests. Upon these issues were stamped the symbolism and religion of the State, and as only the priesthood could correctly illustrate these mysteries of their own creation, the coinage — at least that of the more precious pieces — naturally became a prerogative of their order.[281]

But this raises as many questions as it resolves. For example, Del Mar has clearly indicated that the prerogative of the issuance of money and the regulation of its value was seen by ancient societies to reside clearly with the state or crown. Yet, he has now admitted that insofar as one precious metal was concerned, the issuance of money in connection with it was less a prerogative of the state or crown than it was of a religious monopoly.

Additionally, it has already been suggested that the differences in monetary policies between the Occident and Orient could serve in the long run not only to contribute to the rise of an “international class of bullion brokers,” but also that the creation of such policies might even be due to the preexistence of that class, its international extent, and its ability to manipulate the respective policies of Occidental and Oriental governments. And insofar as that ability to manipulate their respective policies is concerned, when it comes to the high sacredness of gold, at least within

Occidental cultures, this implies also the ability to manipulate their religions. *Succinctly stated: the bullion trust and the temple are at the minimum allies, and at the maximum, the one has infiltrated and taken over the other.* Or in Del Mar's apt observation, one now seen to be pregnant with meaning and significance just beneath its surface, the sacredness of gold "was an ancient myth put to new political use."[282]

b. A Fascinating Tangent: Byzantium, Religion, and the Money Power

A fascinating glimpse into the strength of this association between the money-issuing prerogative of the state or crown on the one hand, and religion on the other, is afforded by the Eastern Roman or Byzantine Empire, whose power and influence throughout Christian Europe during the Middle Ages extended far beyond its ever-shifting borders. That power and influence was due precisely because of the strength of this relationship, and its hold over the cultural imagination of the Christian Middle Ages, because for all their claimed "divine prerogatives," not even the Roman popes understood their power to include the ability to make and issue money and regulate its value. That prerogative was understood to reside still with the Roman emperor in Constantinople. Noting that the very "moment when these people became Christians, or were conquered or brought under the control of the Roman hierarchy, their gold mines began to be abandoned and closed."[283] Various numismatic scholars had long proffered various unsatisfactory explanations. But, states Del Mar,

> All such futile explanations are effectually answered by the common use of Byzantine gold coins throughout Christendom. In England, for example, the exchequer rolls relating to the mediaeval ages, collated by Madox, prove that payments in gold besants[284] were made every day, and that gold coins, as compared with silver ones, were as common then as now. If metal had been wanted for making English gold coins, it was to be had in sufficiency and at once. All that was necessary was to throw the besants into the English melting-pot. As for the feeble suggestion that for five hundred years no Christian princes wished to coin gold so long as the Basileus[285] was willing to coin for them, when the coinage of

> gold was the universally recognized mark of sovereignty, and when, also, the profit… was one hundred per cent, it is scarcely worth answering….
>
> The true reason why gold money was always used but never coined by the princes of the mediaeval empire relates… to that hierarchical constitution of pagan Rome, which afterwards with modifications became the constitution of Christian Rome. Under this constitution, and from the epoch of Julius to that of Alexis, the mining and coinage of gold was a prerogative attached to the office of the sovereign-pontiff, and was, therefore, an article of the Roman constitution and of the Roman religion.[286]

Thus, as Del Mar notes, prior to the Latin Crusade which attacked and successfully occupied Constantinople in 1204, no Christian prince in Europe dared coin his own gold coins prior to that event, but after it, all of them did.[287] And thus, the hidden motivation for the attack of the Christian West on the Christian East in 1204 is revealed: it was to acquire the legal authority, under the Roman constitution, to make and coin gold money. Thereafter, the money-issuing prerogative devolved to the lesser crowned heads of Europe. Prior to that point, however, it would have been sacrilege to give currency to any other (gold coinage); hence no other Christian prince, not even the pope of Rome, nor the sovereign of the Western or Mediaeval 'empire,' attempted to coin gold while the ancient Empire survived."[288] Such monies were, quite literally, viewed as "heretical money."[289]

Hence, we have yet another *possible* explanation for the preoccupation of the crowned heads of mediaeval Western Europe with alchemy during the Middle Ages.[290] Alchemy's claim was, of course, to be able to take base metals and transform them into gold. Thus, by taking imitation coins of the gold besant, coins that could not be deemed counterfeit, since they were not circulated nor coined by anyone in gold, and transmuting them into gold, an alchemical end run around Byzantium's money monopoly could be achieved.

a. Nubia and Egypt

The connections thus far exhibited between the money-coining prerogative of the state, the international "bullion brokers' trust," the temple, and now alchemy, leads one inexorably further back into history, and to the even tighter relationships between them that are exhibited in Egypt. It is here that one begins to see more clearly the sinister outlines of that international bullion brokers' trust emerging, and of its deep relationship not only to the temple, but to the deeper physics that the temple, and money, portended. Egypt is also significant for another reason, as we shall see, in that it is a symbol of the relationship of the bullion trust to the temple, a relationship that also occurs in other states and civilizations of the period.

Egypt was probably the largest gold-mining and producing state in the ancient world. The reason is simple: the Nile. As Alexander Del Mar puts it, "Gold has been found in nearly every region tributary to the Nile, from the Equator to the First Cataract."[291] But no region was more connected to gold mining than was the region of Nubia, bordering modern-day southern Egypt and the Sudan. The term Nubia itself "appears to have originated in Egypt, where *Nob* or *Nub* signifies gold, hence Nubia, the land of gold."[292] Beneath the foothills of Nubia lies a vast gravel-and-sand expanse of desert, washed during the flood season by numerous streams and gullies. This region is known as the Bisharee or Bishara, the Great Nubian Desert.[293] Del Mar notes that

> Next to the mines of the Altai mountains of India, the Bisharee mines of Egypt are probably the oldest in the world; and in view of the Indian origin of the Egyptians, and the distant researches and conquests which have been made by the leading nations for the acquisition of gold, it seems not at all improbable that there existed a close connection between the discovery of the Egyptian mines and the original settlement of the country by Asiatic races.[294]

So rich were the Bisharee mines in antiquity that it is worth having a closer look at them, for it is in that closer look that we shall discern a pattern beginning to emerge.

b. Quartz, Gold, and Slavery

The Bisharee mines, as noted above, are among the oldest known in antiquity, and some of the most extensive. Additionally, the fields, like many gold mines, are also known for their abundant deposits of quartz:

> If conjecture be admitted where dates are… confused, it appears likely that the Bisharee mines were worked as early as the era of Menes, which is variously assigned to from twenty-nine to thirty-nine centuries B.C.; for in the time of that monarch or lawgiver, the Nile was diked, and from the character of this river and its surroundings there could have been no necessity to dike it until mining had surcharged its waters with sediment.
>
> The supposed antiquity of these mines derives support from the fact that even at the period of Menes gold had been used for money in India; that Menes was an Indian conqueror and lawgiver; that the Indian Code of Manou, still extant, and assigned variously to from the fifteenth to the thirty-first century B.C., is evidently re-compiled from a much-older code, now lost; that commerce between India and Egypt existed from the remotest times mentioned in history or derived from archaeological remains; that an Egyptian expedition to India is attributed to Sesostris, B.C. 2000, and from other considerations.
>
> However this may be, the Bisharee mines are known to have been worked for quartz so long ago as the twelfth dynasty, which Lepsius assigns to the period B.C. 2830. *From the fact, understood by every miner, that quartz is never worked so long as the placers contain the smallest practical quantity of metal, and judging from the experience of Italy, Spain, and Brazil — where extensive placer deposits were worked, as in Egypt, by the hand labour of slaves — the Bisharee places mines were at least two hundred years old*

> *when the quartz was worked under the twelfth dynasty of the Pharaohs.*295

Note the presence of two new factors that will loom larger and larger as we proceed: first, the presence of precious or semi-precious stones, in this case, quartz, and the working of such mines by *slaves.*

c. Diodorus Siculus and the Bishara Mines

It is the presence of slaves at the Bisharee mines that affords us our first significant clue into the minds and mentality of the ancient bullion brokers, and why they and their activities were so often associated with temples. It requires a closer look, which is afforded by the classical writer Diodorus Siculus. Del Mar notes that Diodorus visited the mines in 50 B.C. After the visit, he recorded his impressions of the mines:

> On the confines of Egypt and the neighbouring countries there are regions full of gold mines, whence, with the costs and pains of many labourers, much gold is dug. The soil is naturally black, but in the body of the earth there are many veins of shining white quartz, glit-tering will all sorts of bright metals, out of which those appointed to be overseers cause the gold to be dug by the labour of a vast multitude of people. For the kings of Egypt condemn to these mines not only notorious criminals, captives taken in war, persons accused of false dealings, and those with whom the kind is offended, but also all the kindred and relatives of the latter. These are sent to this work, either as a punishment, or that the profit and gain of the king may be increased by their labours.
>
> There are thus infinite numbers thrown into these mines, all bound in fetters, kept at work night and day, and so strictly surrounded that there is no possibility of their effecting an escape. *They are guarded by mercenary soldiers of various barbarous nations, whose language is foreign to them and to each other, so that there are no means either of forming conspiracies or of corrupting those who are set to watch them.* They are kept to incessant work by the rod of the overseer, who often lashes them

> severely. Not the least care is taken of the bodies of these poor creatures; they have not a rag to cover their nakedness; and whoever sees them must compassionate their melancholy and deplorable condition, for though they may be sick or maimed or lame, no rest nor any intermission of labour is allowed them. Neither the weakness of old age, nor the infirmities of females, excuse any from the work, to which all are driven by blows and cudgels; until, borne down by the intolerable weight of their misery, many fall dead in the midst of their insufferable labours. Deprived of all hope, these miserable creatures expect each day to be worse than the last, and long for death to end their griefs.[296]

While the passage is one to move any decent human being to compassion and pity for the poor wretches condemned to work the mines, there are two things that should be noted.

First, given the antiquity of the mines of Bisharee and the stability of Egyptian society and culture, it is reasonable to assume that the conditions at the mines had not changed throughout the several centuries that they were worked. Thus, secondly, the presence of an international contingent of mercenary guards of the mines might well be a practice dating back for centuries. The reasons for such an international contingent Diodorus makes clear: it was to deny the condemned any opportunity of bribing a sufficient contingent of guards to effect an escape.

But mercenaries might signal something else, and that is a certain collusion between the Egyptian kings and those able to *supply* such a large and disparate group of mercenaries. To put it succinctly, the mercenary guard contingent subtly implies the existence of an international money power. But implication is not yet proof.

d. Money, Kings, Temples and Counterfeiters

There is, however, another indication that something more than mere coincidence is involved in the use of mercenaries at the Bisharee mines.

Another clue lies in the widespread association of ancient temples with the issuance of precious metal monies:

> The archaic Chinese and Indian, as well as the early Greek coins, were often marked with emblems, which in the former cases are supposed to be, and in the latter case are known to be, religious. The mints were in the temples, and the priests monopolized, or tried to monopolize, the secrets of metallurgy. This custom may have arisen either from the cupidity of the priesthood to reap the profits of coinage, or solicitude on the part of the sovereign to prevent counterfeiting or to render it the more heinous.[297]

This fact, plus the fact of international contingents of mercenaries at Bisharee, has now amassed a significant series of questions:

> 1. Why were ancient mints in *temples*, especially if, as Del Mar has conceded and as we have already examined, the prerogative of money issuance and value regulation was solely a state or crown prerogative? Part of the answer, of course, lies in the fact that in most ancient cultures, particularly those of the Middle East, the King was in fact also the chief or high priest, and the priesthood itself often fulfilled the function of the state bureaucracy. Nonetheless the question remains, why associate money issuance with temples?
>
> 2. The widespread *practice* of this association in such disparate cultures as China, India, and Greece, itself must be explained. Does it lie, once again, merely in the close association of the crown prerogative with the priesthood in ancient societies, or is there something else involved, something perhaps signaled by the presence of international mercenary contingents at Bisharee?

We have already suggested that the peculiar policies of Rome vis-à-vis the Orient in the regulation of gold and silver valuation suggested a certain amount of collusion between the states so affected, a collusion suggesting an international coordination of such policies. Now, we find at the Bisharee mines yet another suggestion of such international collusion in the presence of mercenaries from various cultures. The question is, then, who is doing it, and why?

Part of the answer is suggested by a passing observation made by Del Mar:

> The Egyptians… possessing the most extensive and productive gold mines which are known to have been worked at any certain period of antiquity…*furnished to other nations, including the Indians, the material out of which they too could make money.*[298]

This is the surest testament of the fact that we are now in the presence of an international bullion brokers' conspiracy, for why would India need Egyptian gold to issue money? Why could the Indian kings and princes not have issued some other money based on some other commodity which it had in abundance, and require its acceptance by law? Such was their prerogative. So why rely on imports of gold? The argument that an internationally recognized medium of exchange was needed falls to the ground, for as already noted, India and China preferred during the Roman era to value silver higher than gold, while the Occident preferred the reverse. Moreover, by diplomatic agreement and treaty, other mechanisms of exchange could have been agreed upon by various heads of state.

In any case, we now have assembled three discrete types of evidence that point to the possible existence of an international money power, or "bullion brokers" as we have called them, in ancient times:

> 1. The unusual bullion policies of Rome vis-à-vis the Orient, which policies were virtual opposites of each other with respect to the relative valuation of silver and gold bullion. Such reciprocal policies could, of course, highly benefit an international money power with bases of operations in both places, for by transferring gold to the east and converting it to silver, and reaping the fees thereof, and then silver to the west and converting again to gold, vast profits could be accumulated;
>
> 2. The almost universal association of temples with minting, from the Middle East to China and India; and,

3. The presence of an international contingent of mercenaries from various countries and states at one of antiquity's largest gold mines at Bisharee, mines which in turn are worked by slaves and prisoners of war.

There is, however, a distinctly *different* association of temples in ancient times, besides that of minting and money issuance…

B. TEMPLES AND TEMPLATES: ASTRONOMY, ASTROLOGY, AND THE ALCHEMY OF MONEY

…that association is with time and its measurement, in short, with astrology and astronomy.

Today, of course, it is widely accepted that ancient temples and megalithic sites were oriented to this or that astronomical event or alignment: the solstices, the precession of the equinoxes, and so on. Societies and civilizations such as Sumer and Babylonia were well-known for their strong astronomical and astrological skills, having left literally thousands of clay tablets recording their observations. But until comparatively recently in the nineteenth century, Egypt was the exception to this rule, until a British astronomer, J. Norman Lockyear, demonstrated that the same held true for Egypt’s temples as well, and from the most ancient times. Lockyear’s book *The Dawn of Astronomy: A Study of Temple Worship and Mythology of the Ancient Egyptians* began a cycle that continues to this day, with alternative Egyptologists such as Andrew Collins, Graham Hancock and Robert Bauval demonstrating the astronomical layouts and alignments of the site most people associate with ancient Egypt: the pyramids and temples of Giza. One might thus well view Lockyear as one of the first modern “paleophysicists,” i.e., a modern scientist looking at ancient myths seriously, and attempting to reconstruct from them an underlying scientific basis.[299]

Lockyear notes that ancient civilizations’ astronomical and astrological records go back almost to the very edges of known antiquity:

> We go back in Egypt for a period, as estimated by various authors, of something like 6,000 or 7,000 years. In Babylonia inscribed tablets carry us into the dim past for a period of certainly 5,000 years; but *the so-called “omen” tablets indicate that observations of eclipses and other astronomical phenomena had been made for some thousands of years before this period.* In China and India we go back as certainly to more than 4,000 years ago.[300]

Indeed, in Babylon’s case, if one is to take the assertions of the “omen tablets” seriously, these observations comprised a database assiduously compiled for hundreds of thousands of years![301]

Decoding the association of various Egyptian temples to various gods, and the association of the latter in turn with various celestial bodies, Lockyear states his main thesis toward the end of his book, calling it his “working hypothesis”:

> 1. The first civilisation as yet glimpsed, so far as temple building goes, in *Northern* Egypt, represented by that at Annu or Heliopolis, was a civilisation with a non-equinoctial solar worship, combined with the cult of a northern star.
>
> 2. Memphis (possibly also Sais, Bubastis, Tanis and other cities with east and west walls) and the great pyramids were built by a new invading race, representing an advance in astronomical thought. The northern stars were worshipped possibly on the meridian, and a star rising in the east was worshipped at each equinox.
>
> 3. The subsequent blank in Egyptian history was associated with conflicts between these and other races; which were ended by the victory of the representatives of the old worship of Annu, reinforced from the south, as if north-star and south-star cults had combined against the equinoctial cult.
>
> After these conflicts, east and west pyramid building practically ceased, Memphis takes second place, and Thebes, a southern Annu, so far as the form of solar worship and the cult of Sit are concerned, comes upon the scene as the seat of the twelfth dynasty.
>
> 4. The subsequent historical events were largely due to conflicts with intruding races from the north-east. The intruders established themselves in cities with east and west walls, and were on each occasion driven out by solstitial worshippers who founded dynasties (eighteenth and twenty-fifth) at Thebes.[302]

We shall not concern ourselves with the lengthy arguments that Lockyear presented in order to arrive at these conclusions, but note only that the various conflicts in Egypt — given Lockyear's astronomical premise for temple orientation — were in a certain sense as much about physics as they were about religion. Given the fact that Babylonian temples were well known to be associated with various deities and celestial bodies, and that Egypt's demonstrably were as well, as Lockyear argued, *we now note the peculiar fact that temples, for a reason as yet unknown, were closely associated both with celestial alignments and the minting and issuance of bullion-based monies.*

One possible reason for the association, however, is suggested by well-known space anomalies researcher Richard C. Hoagland. We may approach Hoagland's remarks by noting a curious fact observed by Lockyear: "…In Lower Egypt the temples are pointed to rising stars near the north point of the horizon or setting north of west. In Upper Egypt we deal chiefly with temples directed to stars rising in the south-east or setting low in the south-west."[303] The fact that so many ancient temples show evidence both of a profound association with the stars through their astrological alignments, and also of international banking through the prominent association of moneychangers with those temples, is an indicator that at a deep and profound level — perhaps as a legacy of the Very High Civilization from which they sprang — these classical civilizations through their marriage of banking and astrology preserved the dim memory of a lost science that unified physics, economics, and finance.

Hoagland made the following interesting series of observations in 1992 during his presentation of the Mars anomalies evidence during a briefing at the United Nations:

> Or take the Sun itself. For the last several years, scientists have been looking for nuclear particles supposedly coming from the center of the Sun because of its thermonuclear reactions, a kind of 'chained H-bomb' model. But for the last 20 years, they haven't found anywhere near as many of these particles as models would predict; in fact, the Soviets and the Japanese, who have recently brought on line experiments to measure fundamental particles,

> have found none. Is it possible that at the very center of our solar system, this incredible blazing ball of gas, around which all the worlds in this system orbit, is in fact fueled from another source? …Well, this opens up remarkable possibilities which, when we look back at our cultures on this planet, and their attention to the Sun, others may have also noticed.
>
> When we look at the stars, at the sky at night, we're not seeing chained and imprisoned H-bombs, we're seeing *portals* to another dimension. And the portals are glowing windows through which we can peer and glimpse the fragments of a physics from another side. What is stunning is when you take that metaphor, and you go back and you read the actual Egyptian descriptions in the hieroglyphs for Sirius, the brightest star in the sky, the description is (that) Sirius is a doorway. Now what did they know? What did they know?
>
> *Now, looking at that as a twentieth-century Egyptologist, or as a modern anthropologist, or as any of the academics looking at the history of man and archaeology, the obvious answer is: 'They didn't know anything. It was all primitive superstition.' … (But) we can now buttress with specific mathematical linkages, which indicate strongly (that) the Egyptians, among others, were profoundly aware that the night sky and all of reality is somehow circumscribed by the physics behind the circumscribed geometry given to us now by the Monuments of Mars.* And that of course is an amazing statement to be able to make.
>
> *But there's another, because the thought occurred then, after we had figured this part out — the potential, the possibility — that if in fact the Sun is a 'gate' to another dimension, and (that) the energy we see is merely a lower-level transformation of a higher-level force or energy or process, it may be possible to harness such a process on earth and to create an* actual *hyper-dimensional technology. What could one do…?*[304]

What, indeed, did ancient Egypt, and by implication, all other ancient cultures, with their persistent and consistent association of stars with deities or “higher intelligences” and other dimensions, know? Was there indeed a deeper physics behind their astrological obsessions? And what *could* one do with that physics? Hoagland has also suggested something else as well, and that is that there is a physics connection with the ancient fixation on “sacred geometry” and the positioning of various temples and buildings on sites that embody such geometries, in this case, on Mars. And why does one find *moneychangers* invariably associated with these temples? One answer is hinted at by Lockyear.

2. The Peculiar Resemblance of Pantheons Between Cultures

Lockyear makes yet another pertinent observation relevant to our purposes. To understand its significance, one need only consider the fact that if temples are associated with various gods — whether in Egypt or Mesopotamia — and various gods in turn are associated with various celestial bodies, then there should be considerable parallel between the pantheons of various civilizations, since, in a word, the underlying astronomical data are the same. This, he observes, is in fact what one actually sees. There is a peculiar parallel between the Egypt god Annu or An, and the Babylonian Anu.[305] More to the point, on an astrological-astronomical reading, the gods blend into each other. For example, the chief god of the Mesopotamian city of Eridu was Ea, a.k.a. Enki, a.k.a. Oannes, “symbolized as a goat-fish.”[306] This Ea or Enki sired a son, Tammuz, who was “in some way associated with Asari,” who, notes Lockyear, has a name suspiciously similar to the Egyptian Osiris.[307] The god Tammuz in turn ultimately becomes the notoriously murderous god Nergal in Chaldaea.[308] Nergal by similar astronomical conversions eventually actually becomes “the Spring Sun Marduk” of Babylon itself.[309] In other words, lurking behind all these transformations and pantheonic parallels is the association of Enki with Nergal and Marduk, and via Tammuz, with the Egyptian Osiris. Such pantheonic parallels are, once again, inevitable if, as Lockyear shows, the gods themselves are associated with various celestial bodies. The patterns of the heavens, as it were, formed a template with which to associate certain gods and their activities.

However, given the fact that we now have the close association of temples not only with astronomy and astrology, but with money issuance and therefore with mining, and given the fact that we have discovered three significant indicators that we may also be looking at the discrete and subtle actions of an ancient international “bullion brokers” power, the similarity of pantheons may have other than just astronomical causes. It may indeed be a product of the deliberate manipulation of those pantheons by an entity that has every appearance of being international in extent and influence in ancient times. But to what purpose? The answer to that question must unfortunately await the next chapter, as there is a further association of gods, gold and temples to be explored:

That other association is with precious and semi-precious gems. It is a peculiar fact, notes researcher George Frederick Kunz, that

> From the earliest times in man's history gems and precious stones have been found in great esteem. They have been found in the monuments of prehistoric peoples, and not alone the civilization of the Pharaohs, of the Incas, or of the Montezumas invested these brilliant things from Nature's jewel casket with a significance *beyond the mere suggestion of their intrinsic properties.*[310]

But why give such items a significance beyond "their intrinsic properties"? One answer might lie in their well-known association with astrology from ancient times:

> The magi, the wise men, the seers, the astrologers of the ages gone by found much in the matter of gems that we have nearly come to forgetting. With them each gem possessed certain planetary attractions peculiar to itself, certain affinities with the various virtues, and a zodiacal concordance with the seasons of the year. Moreover, these early sages were firm believers in the influence of gems in one's nativity — that the evil in the world could be kept from contaminating a child properly protected by wearing the appropriate talismanic, natal, and zodiacal gems.[311]

That is to say, gems, since they were associated with certain celestial alignments, planetary bodies, and houses of the zodiac, could quite literally, on the ancient view, draw down (or ward off!) the influences of those bodies and alignments. But why did such a belief originate? What is its underlying cause?

Search as one might for the answer to those questions amid ancient texts and tomes,[312] one always comes up empty-handed, being met with the bare and naked assertion *that* it is so, with perhaps now and then an attempt — usually unconvincing — as to *why* it is so. Kunz even notes that during the Renaissance "an effort was made to find a reason of some sort for the traditional beliefs."[313] Nor is he above suggesting that eventually, science itself might suggest the reasons, or rather, re-discover them.[314]

a. The Traditional Powers Associated with Gems

Leaving aside the speculative scientific case for this association to a later chapter, we shall catalogue here but a few of their alleged powers and virtues attributed to them by ancient lore. One almost universal property attributed to them is the ability to heal various maladies and infirmities .[315] Oftentimes these were associated specifically to their various colors and relative luminescence.[316] In one case, a Hindu tradition even describes diamonds as "Indra's weapon."[317] There are, in the Sumerian tradition, stones of "love" and "hate," or, as the Sumerian literally has it, "un-love."[318] And as readers of my book *The Cosmic War* know, one Sumerian epic, *The Epic of Ninurta*, is nothing but a rather dull inventory-taking of some extraordinary stones that were captured after a gruesome war, shades of the imaginary scenario with which we began this book![319]

And there are even some rather special cases of powers attributed to gemstones that merit closer attention.

(1) Special Case Number One: Invisibility

Kuns cites a passage from the 1659 treastise "The Faithful Lapidary" by Thomas Nicols that is worth mentioning here. Nicols begins by enumerating a typical list of the reputed and assumed powers of precious gems:

> *Perfectionem effectus contineri in causa*. But it cannot truly be so spoken of gemms [sic] and pretious [sic] stones, the effects of which, by Lapirists are said to be, the making of men rich and eloquent, to preserve men from thunder and lightning, from plagues and diseases, to move dreams, to procure sleep, to foretell things to come, to make men wise, to strengthen memory, to procure honours, to hinder fascinations and witchcrafts, to hinder slothfulness, to put courage into men, to keep men chaste, to increase friendship, to hinder difference and dissention…

This is a fairly standard list, and one can even understand the attribution of the power “to foretell things to come” to stones, for given their astrological associations, it stands to reason that the predictive properties of astrology should be associated with gemstones. But then comes a rather unusual statement:

> *… and to make men invisible, as is … affirmed by Albertus and others… and many other strange things are affirmed of them and ascribed to them, which are contrary to the natures of gemms.*[320]

One wonders just what other “strange things” could possibly be attributed to the powers of gemstones beyond conferring invisibility!

The belief that some stones could confer invisibility was echoed by a fourteenth-century alchemist, Pierre de Boniface, who claimed that diamonds could make the wearer invisible.[321] Given that an alchemist is making these claims, one might be justified in drawing the speculative conclusion that this operation could only occur at certain times and under certain conditions, given the well-established fact that most alchemists claimed their operations had to be performed at certain times in order for them to work.

(2) Special Case Number Two: Magnetic Levitation, or Anti-Gravity

An even more stunning claim is made in a Viennese print of 1709 and an accompanying text of Valentini, “Museum museorum oder die vollständige Schau-Bühne,” an obscure manuscript published in Frankfurt-am-Main in 1714:

> According to the text accompanying a curious print published in Vienna in 1709, the attractive qualities of the so-called coral-agate were to be utilized in an air ship, the invention of a Brazilian priest. Over the head of the aviator, as he sat in the air-ship, there was a network of iron to which large coral-agates were attached. *These were expected to help in drawing up the ship, when, through the heat of the sun’s rays, the stones had acquired magnetic power.* The main lifting force was provided by powerful magnets enclosed in

> two metal spheres; how the magnets themselves were to be raised is not explained.[322]

Here it is evident that, for whatever obscure reason, coral-agate was thought to somehow amplify the effects of magnets in conjunction with exposure to the rays of the sun!

(3) Special Case Number Three: Light-Absorbing and Emitting Stones

A much more serious special case is mentioned by Kunz in connection with the peculiar properties of Brazilian diamonds:

> The power of absorbing sunlight or artificial light and then giving it off in the dark is only possessed by certain diamonds. These are Brazilian stones, slightly milky in tint, or blue-white as they are often termed, and it is an included substance and not the diamond itself giving it out. Willemite, kunzite, sphalerite (sulphide of zinc) and some other minerals possess the same power. Their peculiar property may be due to the presence of a slight quantity of manganese or to that of some of the uranium salts. That it is only the ultra-violet rays that are thus absorbed by these diamonds is proved by the fact that the phenomenon is not observable when a thin plate of glass is interposed between the sunlight of artificial light and the diamond, as glass is not traversed by these rays….
>
> On the other hand all diamonds phosphoresce when exposed to the rays of radium, polonium, or actinium, even when glass is interposed. Treating of some of the aspects of phosphorescence in diamonds, Sir William Crookes says:
>
> “*In a vacuum, exposed to a high-tension current of electricity, diamonds phosphoresce of different colours*, most South African diamonds shining with a bluish light. Diamonds from other localities emit bright blue, apricot, pale blue, red, yellowish-green, orange, and pale green light. The most phosphorescent diamonds are those which are fluorescent in the sun. One beautiful green diamond in my collection, when phosphorescing in a good vacuum, gives almost as much light as a candle, and you can easily

> read by its rays. But the time has hardly come when diamonds can be used as domestic illuminants!"[323]

This is a rather interesting comment by Crookes, for archaeologists have long puzzled how the ancient Egyptians managed to *see* inside their temples. If one grants the proposition that they may have known of and used electricity or other sources of phosphorescence, then might they perhaps have discovered this quality of diamonds or other stones?

In answer to this question, Kunz makes an interesting observation:

> An old treatise in Greek, said in its title to come from "the sanctuary of the temple," and containing material, partly of Egyptian origin, may help us to understand something of the processes employed by a temple priest to impress the common people by the sight of luminous gems. The writer of the treatise declares that for the production of "the carbuncle that shines in the night" use was made of certain parts (he says "the bile") of marine animals whose entrails, scales and bones exhibited the phenomenon of phosphorescence. If properly treated, precious stones (preferably carbuncles) would glow so brightly at night "that anyone owning such a stone could read or write by its light as well as he could by daylight."[324]

Note that the source for this assertion comes from ancient Greek alchemical texts. And alchemy is, of course, invariably associated with Egypt and its temples. We may reasonably assume, then, that such properties, if known to the ancient Egyptian temple priesthoods, were among their most closely guarded secrets.

b. Gemstones, the Zodiac, and the Hebrew High-Priest's Ephod, or Breastplate

Perhaps the most familiar association of precious gemstones with the temple and religion in Western culture is the breastplate, or *ephod,* of the Hebrew high priests described in the Old Testament of the Bible, so it is worth pausing, before concluding this chapter, to take stock of the various associations of the breastplate in Jewish lore. Kunz observes that in Rabbinical legend “it is related that four precious stones were given by God to King Solomon; one of these was the emerald. The possession of the four stones is said to have endowed the wise king with power over all creation.”[325] This is a rather breathtaking claim for the power of these stones, whatever else they were in addition to the emerald.

In my book *The Cosmic War* I noted that similar claims were made for the Sumerian “Tablets of Destiny,” stones which allegedly conferred “all the power of the universe” on their possessors, making them a technology highly prized — and fought over — by the various Sumerian gods.[326] Here we encounter a similar claim, from a much later period, and in a different culture. Solomon, of course, is known not only for his legendary wisdom and wealth, but is also associated with the building of a magnificent temple.

It is possible, if such stones existed, that the celebrated Hebrew king wore them in a royal version of the priestly breastplate or *ephod*, for there do exist Assyrian versions of the breastplate, composed of seven gems — one for each of the seven planets of Mesopotamian astrology — and to be worn by the king:

> Among the Assyrian texts giving the formulae for incantations and various magical operations, there is one which treats of an ornament composed of seven brilliant stones, to be worn on the breast of the king as an amulet; indeed, so great was the virtue of these stones that they were supposed to constitute an ornament for the gods also. The text, as rendered by Fossey, is as follows:
>
> “Incantation. The splendid stones! The splendid stones! The stones of abundance and joy.
>
> “Made resplendent for the flesh of the gods.
>
> “The *hulalini* stone, the *sirgarru* stone, the *hulalu* stone, the *sandu* stone, the *uknu* stone.
>
> “The *dushu* stone, the precious stone *elmeshu*, perfect in celestial beauty.
>
> “The stone of which the *pingu* is set in gold.

> “Placed upon the shining breast of the king as an ornament.
>
> *“Azagsud, high-priest of Bel, make them shine, make them sparkle!*
>
> “Let the evil one keep aloof from the dwelling!”[327]

Note carefully the reference to the Assyrian high priest, exhorting him to make the stones shine and sparkle, suggesting that not only did Egyptian temple priests have a secret of making gemstones phosphoresce, but that their Mesopotamian counterparts did as well.

Similar breastplates were associated with Babylon and even the king of Tyre as well.[328] So what of the Hebrew high priest’s breastplate? Here there is a rich rabbinical, and even Muslim, tradition. The 12 stones of the high priest’s breastplate are first associated with the 12 angels who “guard the gates of Paradise.”[329] The Jewish historian Flavius Josephus, moreover, records a tradition in which the high priest’s garments were also fastened at the shoulders with phosphorescing stones.[330] Moreover, each of the 12 stones of the breastplate was engraved with the names of each of the 12 tribes.[331] Josephus further associates the 12 stones of the *ephod* to the 12 months of the year,[332] and to the zodiac as well.[333] By mediaeval times, Jewish tradition definitely associated the 12 tribes to the signs of the zodiac in the following correspondence:

Judah	Aries
Issachar	Taurus
Zebulun	Gemini
Reuben	Cancer
Simeon	Leo
Gad	Virgo
Ephraim	Libra
Manasseh	Scorpio
Benjamin	Sagittarius
Dan	Capricorn
Naphtali	Aquarius

Asher Pisces[334]

The breastplate, like the Ark of the Covenant, is one of those objects of historical and religious power from the Jewish temple that, after the fall of Jerusalem to the Roman armies in 70 A.D., seems to disappear from history. Where did the *ephod* with its precious gems go?

Kunz’s answer is worth citing extensively:

> (T)he treasures of the temple were carried off to Rome, and we learn from Josephus that the breastplate was deposited in the Temple of Concord, which had been erected by Vespasian. Here it is believed to have been at the time of the sacking of Rome by the Vandals under Genseric, in 455, although Rev. C.W. King thinks it is not improbable that Alaric, king of the Visigoths, when he sacked Rome in 410 A.D., might have secured this treasure. *However, the express statement of Procopius that “the vessels of the Jews” were carried through the streets of Constantinople, on the occasion of the Vandalic triumph of Belisarius, in 534, may be taken as a confirmation of the conjecture that the Vandals had secured possession of the breastplate and its jewels.*
>
> *It must, however, be carefully noted that Procopius nowhere mentions the breastplate and that it need not have been included among “the vessels of the Jews.”* It appears that this part of the spoils of Belisarius was placed by Justinian (4830565) in the sacristy of the church of St. Sophia. Some time later, the emperor is said to have heard of the saying of a certain Jew to the effect that, until the treasures of the Temple were restored to Jerusalem, they would bring misfortune upon any place where they might be kept. If this story be true, Justinian may have felt that the fate of Rome was a lesson for him, and that Constantinople must be saved from a like disaster. Moved by such considerations, he is said to have sent the “sacred vessels” to Jerusalem, and they were placed in the Church of the Holy Sepulchre.

> This brings us to the last two events which can even be plausibly connected with the mystic 12 gems — namely, the capture and sack of Jerusalem by the Sassanian Persian king, Khusrau II, in 615, and the overthrow of the Sassanian Empire by the Mohammedan Arabs, and the capture and sack of Ctesiphon, in 637. If we admit that Khusrau took the sacred relics of the Temple with him to Persia, we may be reasonably sure that they were included among the spoils secured by the Arab conquerors, although King, who has ingeniously endeavored to trace out the history of the breastplate jewels after the fall of Jerusalem in 70 A.D., believes that they may be still "buried in some unknown treasure-chamber of one of the old Persian capitals."
>
> A fact which had generally been overlooked by those who have embarked on the sea of conjecture relative to the fate of the breastplate stones is that a large Jewish contingent, numbering some twenty-six thousand men, formed part of the force with which the Sassanian Persians captured Jerusalem, and they might well lay claim to any Jewish vessels of jewels that may have been secured by the conquerors. In this case, however, it is still probable that these precious objects fell into the hands of the Mohammedans who captured Jerusalem in the same year in which they took Ctesiphon.[335]

Contrary to all those who believe that the Ark and breastplate ended up in the West in the hands of the Vandals and Visigoths, Kunz is correct, for by injecting the East Roman Empire back into the equation, he is clearly saying, "Look east rather than west" if one wishes to discover the whereabouts of the old Jewish temple treasure.[336]

C. CONCLUSIONS

The following constellation of relationships, and implications, has been exhibited in this chapter:

1. There are at least three disparate and significant clues to the existence of an international money power in ancient times, and to its reliance upon precious metal bullion as a medium of monetary exchange:

a. The unusual bullion policies of Rome vis-à-vis the Orient, which policies were virtual opposites of each other with respect to the relative valuation of silver and gold bullion. Such reciprocal policies could, of course, highly benefit an international money power with bases of operations in both places, for by transferring gold to the east and converting it to silver, and reaping the fees thereof, and then silver to the west and converting again to gold, vast profits could be accumulated;

b. The almost universal association of temples with minting, from the Middle East to China and India; and,

c. The presence of an international contingent of mercenaries from various countries and states at one of antiquity's largest gold mines at Bisharee, mines which in turn are worked by slaves and prisoners of war.

2. In addition to the association of temples with the minting and issuance of money, and therefore with mining activity, these temples are also associated with astronomy and astrology;

3. Additionally, astrology and astronomy are in turn associated with precious gemstones, each type of which is associated with various planetary bodies and their influences;

4. The various gods of the pantheons of the Middle East, since they can at one level be decoded as celestial bodies, are parallel, that is to say, the various pantheons themselves show remarkable

parallels due to their similar astrological derivation. At this juncture, a significant question was implied:

a. Could the parallelism of various pantheons be due not only to their astronomical derivation, but also because of the activity of that class of international bullion brokers that appears to be associated with the temple in all lands, and influencing the bullion policy to its advantage in several states?

b. If so, then is there a deeper reason for their association with the practice of astrology in the temples? If there is, then what is it? And what is the connection between all this, and precious gemstones?

c. These gemstones were seen in turn by the ancients and in esoteric tradition to have certain powers; among these we note the following:

i) They possessed the power to heal;

ii) They possessed the power to predict the future;

iii) They could phosphoresce under certain conditions, and this was most likely a closely held secret of the temple priesthoods in various civilizations;

iv) They conferred invisibility;

v) They conferred the power to levitate;

vi) In Solomon's case, certain stones conferred power over creation.

We are thus in the presence of a complex dynamic, and making sense of it will not be easy, but before we can address this issue, we must assemble more data by taking a closer look at the activities of this ancient "bullion brokers' international," for those activities will disclose the common thread and clue: alchemy.

Five

MONEY, MONOTHEISM, MONARCHIES AND MILITARIES

THE THESIS OF DAVID ASTLE

⁂

“They are but pudgy and sly little men as much overwhelmed by the monster they have raised, as are the foolish nations that permitted them to do so.”

— *David Astle*[337]

A. THE STATE OF EVIDENCE AND THE NEED FOR SPECULATION

David Astle is a researcher who has assembled a massive database and well-argued case for the existence, in ancient times, of an international bullion brokers' trust, allied with the temple, manipulating governments, religions, pantheons and policies behind the scenes for its own benefit and agenda. As such our examination here can only be a brief review of his work. It is to be emphasized that this review is but a small sampling of the types of evidence and analyses that Astle provides.[338]

This being said, Astle himself provides a strong cautionary note on the difficult state of the evidence, and the need for speculation. Noting that all ancient societies had a system of state warehouses connected with its money coining and regulating power, Astle states that

> In almost all of the works of the great archaeologists and scholars specializing in the ancient civilizations, there is a virtual silence on that all important matter, the system of distribution of food surpluses, and surpluses of all those items needed towards the maintenance of a good and continuing life so far as were required by climate and custom.
>
> In all the writings of these great and practical scholars, the workings of that mighty engine which injects the unit of exchange amongst the peoples, and without which no civilization as we know it can come to be, is only indicated by a profound silence. *Of the system of exchanges, of the unit of exchange and its issue by private individuals, as distinct from its issue by the authority of sovereign rule, on this all important matter governing in such totality the conditions of progression into the future of these peoples, not a word to speak of.*[339]

There is a related question, and Astle is quick to perceive it: not only is there a paucity of evidence relating how such an international bullion brokers' class might have arisen nor evidence as to "what created them,"[340] it is the pervasive and almost universal absence of such evidence that “borders on the mystifying.” Additionally, there is in scholarly literature on ancient international monetary policy a “complete failure to speculate on those most important matters at all.” But most importantly, Astle observes, there is a complete absence of speculation on “the true nature of the *energy source by which such machinery was driven.”*[341]

While Astle clearly throughout his work believes that energy source to be the widespread practice of slavery in ancient times, and while we tend to agree with him insofar as that goes, there is a *deeper* question that Astle’s comments disclose: was there another and deeper energy source that existed in, or was being sought by, those ancient “bullion brokers”’ fraternities besides slavery?

In any case, it is this perplexing silence on such crucial matters that calls for, indeed almost compels, speculation to fill the void.

> Practically no information seems to exist of the growth of private money creation in the days of the ancient city states of Mesopotamia of which, because of their records being preserved on fire-baked clay, more is known than of more recent civilizations; and the gap must necessarily be filled by a certain amount of speculation. *Little is known of the beginnings of the fraudulent issuance by private persons of the unit of exchange, as in opposition to the law of the gods from whom kings in ancient times claimed to derive their divine origin*.[342]

Thus, we now encounter a new dynamic: if the assumption of the existence of a private international bullion brokers’ power has merit, then there is a conflict between its private money-creating powers and that of the various states within which it exists. There are thus two operating units of exchange according to Astle: on the one hand, one has the circulation of coins of bullion as a unit of exchange, which coins were issued by temples and their allies, the bullion brokers, those who controlled the mines and slaves. On the other hand, one has the issuance — in Mesopotamia — of clay units of exchange, issued by the state power itself in conjunction with the temple, which units were backed by the surpluses of the state warehouses.[343]

1. Ancient and Modern Banking Conspiracy

Notwithstanding all this, Astle admits, largely on the types of considerations advanced in the previous chapter here, that there are significant indicators within ancient societies of …(T)he existence of a far-reaching conspiracy in respect to monetary issuance influencing the progression of man’s history in the earliest times of which written records exists. It is also outstandingly clear that it was parent to that acknowledged and most obvious conspiracy such as exists today.[344]

There is, in other words, more or less a continuity between ancient times and modern ones. The question is: what is the nature of that continuity? Is it merely conceptual, rooted in the similarities of goals, methods, and beliefs of the people engaged in such activites? Or is the continuity deeper? Does it extend to actual descent of certain families and groups down through history? As will be seen in this chapter, one can answer at least the first question with a resounding affirmative. And as will be seen momentarily, there are also significant indicators that the second question may be affirmatively answered in some cases as well.

B. THE MEDIUM OF EXCHANGE AND BULLION AS AN ORDER ON STATE WAREHOUSES

Astle's argument, while profound, is not always easily seen, scattered as it is throughout his book. Care is required in noticing its steps and taking due account of them in order that its transparency may be fully exhibited. We have already noted in the previous chapter, and in this one, the following things:

> 1. The regulation of the value of money was established by law and regulated by the state or crown, whose sole prerogative was the issuance and regulation of such units of money;
>
> 2. There was a deep and profound relationship between the minting and issuance of such money in the form of bullion-based coins by the crown or state power, and the temple;
>
> 3. *Prior* to this period, however, in Mesopotamia, the units of exchange, as noted by Astle, were simply clay tablets of credit against the surplus in the state warehouse.

It is at this last point that the story, and Astle's argument, really begins.

The reason is easily seen, for if one were to conduct trade *between* states, the issuances of money in the form of letters of credit against a given state's warehouse surplus would inhibit, rather than aid, such trade. Another mechanism was required that would not require a diplomatic negotiation between states for each and every trade. Thus, at one and the same time as a medium of international exchange is more or less agreed upon, there also arises an international class of merchants conducting such trade and exercising sweeping influence over those units of exchange. Astle states it with his characteristic sharpness and concision:

> Through stealthy issue of precious metal commodity money into circulation amongst the peoples, replacing that money which represented the fiat of will of the god of the city and which was merely an order on the state warehouses through his scribes, this internationally-minded group from the secrecy of their chambers

> were able to make a mockery of the faith and belief of the simple people.[345]

In other words, at a certain juncture and by the nature of the case, there will be *two* monies in circulation, one created by a private group and based on bullion commodity money issued *as a facsimile of the state money for which it can be traded and substituted*, and the second, the original state-issued money. It should be noted that this situation is almost exactly paralleled in modern times by the issuance of state money and private notes both in England and in the United States.[346] In both the ancient and modern instances, the privately-issued money gradually and with inexorable inevitability replaces the state issuance, and with that occurrence, the power of the private issuers of such monies is established over a society.

But how was this substitution actually made? What was the stratagem that made it possible for ancient bullion brokers to achieve this extraordinary and sweeping influence over ancient states? The answers to these questions require an even closer look.

1. The Control of Mining and Bullion

The issuance of bullion-based monies implies something very significant, and Astle is quick to perceive it:

> The whole notion of the institution of precious metals by weight as common denominator of exchanges, internationally and nationally, cannot but have been disseminated by a conspiratorial organization fully aware of the extent of the power to which it would accede, *could it but maintain control over bullion supplies and the mining which brought them into being in the first place.*[347]

We have already seen how Egypt's Bisharee mines, with their contingent of international mercenary guards, implies the existence of such an international class of merchants and bullion brokers.

As an inevitable consequence of such activity, "the law of the ruler previously exercised towards the well-being of the people in that might live a good and honourable life accordingly became corrupted,"[348] since that crown power was inevitably in collusion with the very class undermining its power. This fact is attested by the rise of laws of punishment condemning lawbreakers to a lifetime of slavery working the semi-private mines which supplied both the state and the merchants with the medium of exchange that created their profits. Again, the situation is almost exactly paralleled by modern times, where one again encounters a private monied class in collusion with the state power for the expansion of their powers over the great masses of people.

A further implication falls out from this, and again, one perceives instantly the modern parallel:

> Kings largely became the mouthpiece and sword arm of those semi-secret societies that controlled the material of money as its outward and visible symbols came to be restricted to gold, silver, and copper… The fiat of the god in heaven which had been the decisive force behind that which brought about an equitable

> exchange, was replaced by the will of those classes controlling the undertones of civilization, leaders of the world of slave drivers, caravaneers, outcasts and criminals generally, such as was to be discerned on the edges of the ancient city civilizations….. The instrument of this will was precious metal, whose supply was controlled by the leaders of these classes through their control of the slave trade, since mining was rarely profitable in the case of the precious metals, except with slave labour…[349]

In support of this contention, Astle notes that prior to the fourth century B.C., the institution of slavery "had been more in the nature of a benign custom similar to the custom of the bonded servant or apprentice of the 18th and 19th centuries in Northern Europe."[350] After that period, however, it became an extensive and international trade, complete with whips and chains and all the imagery of human suffering one associates with the institution.

Thus we now have an increasingly expanded, and interesting, constellation of relationships:

1. A relationship between priest-kings, the temple, money minting and issuance, and a private class of international bullion brokers;

2. A relationship of the latter class with the slave trade necessary to conduct profitable mining to circulate bullion as a medium of exchange;

3. A relationship of the temple with money minting and issuance on behalf of that private class of bullion brokers and slave traders; and finally,

4. A relationship of the temple to astrology and all its associated accoutrements: gems, sacred geometry, earth grid locations for temples, priest-magicians, forecasters, and so on.

The relationship between this private class and the temples in various states exercised a correspondingly corrupting influence on their priesthoods:

> …(I)t is clear that with the growth of silver in circulation between private persons, and between private persons and states, as now would become an inevitability, that which had been total economic control from the gods through his servants in the Ziggurat, was bypassed, and merchants were not able to deal privately using their credit, or powers of abstract money creation. They were also able, through their control of distant mining operations, to afflict a previously dedicated priesthood with thought of personal possession, and through the control of manufacture of weapons in distant places, they were able to arm warlike peoples towards the destruction of whosoever they might choose.[351]

Notice the dynamic subtly suggested here, for through its associations with the various temple priesthoods such a class also influences war policies of the various states under its influence, and these as might be expected could often be in the guise of religious conflicts.[352]

Citing scholar T.B.L. Webster, Astle comments at length on this dynamic:

> “The Alalakh tablets also record copper distributed to smiths, but not in addition it is to be used for making baskets or arrowheads; and the King of Assyria sent copper to Mari to be made into nails by the local craftsmen. A Report from Pylos that the woodcutters in two places are delivering 150 axles and 150 spars for the chariot factory may be compared with the Ugartic texts on the delivery of wood for the making of arms, and a note of wood delivered to the carpenters for the construction of wagons in Alalakh. We made here also from Pylos a list of wooden objects made, a list of vessels received by men (perhaps Mayors) in various places and a note of pieces of ivory; to set beside this rather slender evidence of Mycenaean manufacture, Alalakh provides a record of sixty-four business houses and their produce; they include smiths, leather workers, joiners, and cartwrights.”[353]
>
> *Thus it seems that where the conception of money as to a silver standard existed as at Ugarit and Alalakh, so also existed organized industry, including outstandingly the private*

> *manufacture of arms under methods that appear to be those of semi-mass productions. It is not without significance that this early era of privately issued money (such as was silver money), and consequent private industry, particularly that which was devoted to arms manufacture, was in certain areas so coincidental with the massive movements of warlike peoples, and the collapse of ancient empires that had lived long under the pattern of life known as that of the Ancient Orient.* Conquering peoples needed the best of arms. It seems that the best of arms were obtainable from private industry; and private industry in its turn needed silver or gold or labour, which was slaves, in payment. Both were obtainable as the result of war. Therefore parallel, though not entirely the same as in today, the more war, the more industry, and the more the need for the products of the money creators' ledgers. Hence became the more absolute the control of that which most of all designs industry and its accompanying slavery in one form or another, namely, the private money creative power.[354]

In other words, the clues have been there all along, it is just that no one has noticed them, for the great war-making empires of Mesopotamia were involved with private arms manufacture and private money issuance. This fact will loom only larger as we proceed.

But such large manufacturing and monetary concerns only lead inexorably back to the relationship between crown and temple. The renowned historian Christopher Dawson outlines the relationship with a simplicity pregnant for implications:

> Originally the state and the temple corporations were the only bodies which possessed the necessary stability and resources for establishing widespread commercial relations. Temple servants were sent on distant missions, provided with letters of credit which enabled them to obtain supplies in other cities. Moreover the temple was the bank of the community through which money could be lent at interest and advances made to the farmer on the security of his crop. Thus in the course of the 3rd millennium there grew up

> in Mesopotamia a regular money economy based on precious metals as standards of exchange, which stimulated private wealth and enterprise and led to real capitalist development. The temple and the palace remained the centres of the economic life of the community *but by their side and under their shelter there developed a many sided activity which found expression in the guilds of the free craftsmen and the merchants, and the private enterprise of the individual capitalist.*[355]

To put it simply, the fact of the existence of this class is not disputed by reputable historians. And the international extent of this trade should not be overlooked, for trade was known to extend from the city of Ur "over the whole known world which certainly reached as far afield as Europe, being carried on by means of letters of credit, bills of exchange and 'promises to pay' (cheques), made out in terms of staple necessities; of life expressed *in terms of silver at valuation of barley* (probably at a given season of the year)."[356] This state of affairs clearly implies an international extent to some banking and merchant class, in alliance with the temples of various states. But how would such a class arise and usurp the crown prerogative of money minting, value regulation, and issuance?

2. Ancient Babylon and Egypt

The answer to this question requires a closer scrutiny of the two major military and financial powers of that age: Egypt and Babylon. As noted so far, Babylonian money initially consisted of circulating clay-tablet letters of credit drawn on the surpluses of the state warehouses, and therefore its issuance as money was strictly controlled by the crown. But as also noted immediately above, at some juncture — as early as the third or fourth century B.C., in fact[357] — these existed alongside these clay tablets circulating silver of private issuance, whose value was also fixed in terms of barley or other staples in the state warehouses. In fact, so widespread was the use of the Babylonian system, which also included the use of actual checks, that one finds Babylonians at work in the temples and minting shops of some Greek cities after the Assyrian assault on Babylonia itself.[358] In other words, assaults on Babylon only served to disperse its merchant banking class in other countries, and with that dispersal, the expansion of Babylonian business and banking practices.

a. Early Egypt's Independence from the Babylonian Money Power

It is in this context, then, that the Egyptian money power should be examined, for as has already been noted, Egypt controlled the largest and most productive gold mines — the Bisharee mines — in the ancient world. Here too one notes a parallel development and all its implications:

> According to Breasted, gold and copper rings of a fixed weight circulated in large scale business in the time of the "Old Kingdom," and (significantly enough to the student of "banking," or private money creation and regulation, as it might better be known) "stone weights were already marked with their equivalence in such rings." The circulation as money of these "promises to pay" recorded on stone, pointedly suggests the likelihood of the activities of a secret fraternity whose hereditary trade was private money creation.[359]

Indeed, the parallel with Babylon is almost identical, since the latter used clay tablets as units of exchange, while Egypt used stone weights marked with their equivalent value in precious bullion. But there is likewise a significant difference as well, for in Babylon's case those clay tablets circulated as money prior to the issuance of bullion-based monies, and the value of such monies was stated in terms of stores in the state warehouse. But with Egypt, one finds a later stage of development, for the value of the stones is expressed, *not in terms of the surplus stores in a warehouse, but in terms of bullion itself.* In short, the concept of money has been *degraded,* and with it, there is almost no visible connection to the state and crown prerogative of money regulation and issuance, not to mention anything of practical value as the result of industry or creativity, i.e., goods.

And this degradation of money in Egypt, i.e., the fact that its promises to pay are expressed in valuation of bullion, rather than bullion being expressed in valuation of real goods, plus the fact of the existence of Egypt's Bisharee mines with their international contingent of mercenary guards, points to a very significant and — because of its subtlety — often overlooked point:

> As a result, although the Egyptian empire in the earliest years *might very well be described as a common market existing independent of the Babylonian money power, and deriving its strength from the will to be of a dedicated and instructed Ruler, the sequence of events shows that through those concessions it obtained for its best services in war, it was not long before international money power re-penetrated the substructure of Egyptian life and established its usual behind-the-scenes influence,* if not control, as in the earlier time that denoted the collapse of the "Old Kingdom." It may safely be considered to have reassumed the position of hidden power it had held a thousand years before during the closing years of the 6th dynasty, a period in which the stone weights indicating equivalence in metal money circulated in much the same way as clay facsimiles of contemporary coinages circulated…[360]

To put it differently, Egypt, once under the influence of that international bullion brokers’ power, had managed to throw off that influence, only to have it restored nearly a millennium later.

a. Economic and Military Autarchy and Modern Analogues: Sparta and the Greek Tyrants

But how, exactly, does one *know* that such an international money power existed in ancient times? Astle's answer is as surprising as it is both contemporary and simple: one had only to look at certain ancient wars in conjunction with a look at the economic activity and policies of various states to discern a hidden hand at work. And the best example of this war between a money power and a state determined to maintain its independence from it, its *autarchy*, are the Peloponnesian Wars between Athens and its allies, and Sparta. It is worth citing Astle and his sources at length:

> Of the tyrants of Greece and Asia Minor in ancient times, the learned Professor Heichelheim wrote:
>
> "These tyrants were for the most part members of the nobility themselves who had made the grade using the new political and economic possibilities of their time to overthrow their own equals and to subdue their whole state temporarily. *The tyrants were often compelled to introduce the coin economy pattern into the area over which they ruled, or at least to promote its development officially, in order to gain the upper hand over their enemies…*

(One wonders: Compelled by *whom?*)

> …to stabilize the position of the peasantry on the land, and to expand and rebuild state economy, *a central distribution of money and goods in kind partly directed towards mercenaries,* bodyguards and various political friends and partly indirectly to the masses of poor people in the form of wages paid for extensive building operations and improvements, is characteristic of tyrant economy…[361]

Astle comments as follows:

> The above remarks of Professor Heichelheim indicate there were "new political and economic possibilities: in that period 650-500 B.C. when the tyrannies most of all flourished… The question then becomes, what were these "new political and economic possibilities"?... The answer is arrived at readily: they derived from the activities of the agents of the international silver bullion brokers who, from ports such as Argos, Athens, and Aegina where King Pheidon struck the first Greek silver coinage ca. 680 B.C., promoted the luxury traders who sold their wares from wigs to harlots as against the new silver coinage or promise thereof. The opportunities *clearly were for those who assisted in the monetization of the city, and all its activities and possessions, and its population….*[362]

The result of this "monetization" of the city-state — and of the reduction of each member of its population to the status of a mere "human resource" (to use the modern term) — was, according to Professor Heichelheim, entirely predictable, and eerily reminiscent of the "free trade" agreements of the late 1980s and 1990s and of their disastrous effects on the industrialized societies that adopted them (and remember, Heichelheim was writing in the 1940s, long before such agreements were in the offing, and was speaking of *ancient* times!):

> The aristocracies refused equality to the landless traders and manufacturers, the peasants were oppressed by the rich and encouraged to get into debt and then were reduced to slavery and exile; slaves began to compete with free labour. Ambitious individuals capitalized this discontent to overthrow the constituted government and establish themselves as tyrants in all the Greek cities *with the notable exception of Sparta*.[363]

So what is so significant about Sparta that the rest of the Greek city-states went to war with her?

Astle puts it "country simple":

> …(T)he state that rejected international money power, as did Sparta and Rome in ancient times, and Russia in modern times, had

> to be prepared to establish total military self-sufficiency.[364]

One might add Nazi Germany to Astle’s list, for like Russia and ancient Sparta, the regime of the Third Reich had determined not only to restore the issuance of money to the State, but had embarked on a program of military and energy autarchy as well.[365]

So what, exactly, had Sparta done that so infuriated the rest of the Greek city-states? The answer is complex, and requires a brief detour. Both Plato[366] and Aristotle[367] were clear that money had value only insofar as it was defined by the law of the state; in other words, they both obliquely recognized that the power of issuing and regulating the value of money was a state, not a private, prerogative, and this in spite of the fact that by their time, the private issuance of money was well-established practice.[368] Thus, when one turns to the city-states of the tyrants, and to their silver-coin issuances, one discerns a clear, though carefully disguised, hidden hand:

> The evidence that the earliest coinages in Greece had essentially a local circulation in no way alters the picture previously outlined of silver money as being part of an international conspiracy. All Greek states apart from Athens and Samos, Siphnos and Corcyra, and possible one or two others, had to obtain silver bullion for their coinage from abroad, which necessarily obliged them to deal with those traders who specialized in dealing in bullion. Such trade in bullion had to be in the hands of a small and highly secretive group, as much on account of the sources of supply being relatively few and scattered as it were out to the ends of the earth, as on account of the fact that it would be only such a group that could also control those supplies of slave labour and their purchase from triumphant peoples whose warlike activities, as likely as not, they had instigated themselves; slave labour so necessary to the success of their mining operations.[369]

Once the course had been determined in various Greek city-states to issue bullion-based money, which bullion they had in scarce supply, those city-states came increasingly under the influence and sway of the bullion brokers themselves. All except one, which refused to issue bullion-based coinage.

Sparta.

Hence one has now a basis of understanding for Sparta's well-known harshness and the military discipline it imposed on her whole population, for if she were to maintain her independence of the money power infecting the other Greek city-states, her military had to be the best. Thus, there is a hidden, and much more real, purpose to the infamous Peloponnesian War — a war that neither Athens nor Sparta "had won and neither one had lost." The war left both powerful Greek city-states "exhausted, and over their prostrate bodies the servants of this same sardonic Money power drew the chains of their slavery."[370] That real underlying purpose of the Peloponnesian War "was to establish private common money market across the Greek world totally controlled by the *trapezitae* or bankers in modern terminology."[371] Consequently, "judging by Sparta…and later by Rome itself, it seems that in ancient times there was some considerable understanding of the power inherent in precious metal money to destroy, by lending itself to manipulation, the *status quo* of any race or state."[372]

b. Babylon, Persia, and Money Creation

Yet another, and even more persuasive, example of the actions and hidden directions of a money power on the international scene is afforded by the case of Babylon and Persia. It is worth citing Astle at length once again:

> It is not until the Assyrian, Neo-Babylonian, and Persian eras that clear evidence can be traced of the total degeneration of kingly power and of kings and so-called emperors as quite often being little more than gloriously be-medalled front men for private money creative power striving to create world-wide hegemony… They still continued to be needed principally as a point towards which the eyes of the people might be diverted in order that the people might not realize that all was not well in that direction towards which their loyalties naturally leaned, nor glimpse the destructive forces that were gnawing at the roots of the Tree of Life

itself. Even as far back as 2500 B.C. Sargon of Akkad proceeded into Anatolia to chastise the city of Ganes on account of the commercial community of Mesopotamia; probably to enforce the payment of interest on loans, or repayment of principal… One of the reasons of the success of Cyrus, though but a petty Persian prince formerly to 550 B.C. when he deposed his sovereign, Astyages the Mede, is clear from the circumstances of his victory over Croesus of Lydia in 546 B.C.

Croesus had offended the international money powers by seizure of their treasure held by their agent Sadyattes, and by the total assumption of monetary issue by the state. Example had to be made of him to deter other princes from similar action, and the eager and ambitious Cyrus was obviously the one chosen for this purpose. According to the article on Babylonia in the *Encyclopedia Britannica,* 9th edition, by Professor Sayce, Croesus had rashly joined battle with Cyrus without waiting for the arrival of his Babylonian allies under Nabu-Nahua the father of Belshazzar of the Book of Daniel. It is more than likely however, that a truer reading of these events would be that international money power, patron of the rise of Cyrus both through organization of his supplies of mercenary soldiers, and of the best of weapons, had been the principal influence in these events as in other enterprises of Cyrus, such as the siege of Babylon 14 years later. Thanks to his influence, while the progress of Nabu-Nahua towards junction with the forces of Croesus would have been sabotaged, Croesus himself would have been misinformed of the intentions and strength of both Cyrus and Nabu-Nahua.

Cyrus won the day, and Croesus was totally humbled. Having thus proven his “suitability,” and his readiness to promote the policies of his financial backers, the relatively easy conquest of Babylon was arranged for Cyrus some fourteen years later.[373]

Who arranged for the easy conquest of Babylon? More importantly, who financed the vast Persian war machine?

The answer, according to Astle, is a biblical one. “It is interesting to note,” he observes,

> That shortly after the entry of the Persian forces into the city, the “Children of Israel” were permitted to return to that which they considered their homeland, and every assistance was given them towards renewal of their national life and the rebuilding of their temple, which, of course, was its heart…. The special concessions made by Cyrus to the Hebrew almost on entry into the city of Babylon, would certainly suggest that he had received their substantial assistance, perhaps through financing towards the purchase of the finest of military accoutrements such as would be obtainable only through the good graces of the Babylonian commercial and banking houses, or through that information with which the Hebrew may have kept him constantly supplied such as the state of military preparedness within the city, etc.
>
> It may reasonably be assumed that the Babylonian money power was completely international in outlook, whatever its outward profession, and totally unsympathetic towards the ancient faith of the Ziggurat and the worship of Marduk, and towards the intended effects of the restoration of the Ziggurat at Ur, at that time, by Nebuchadnezzar. If in earlier Assyrian times such money power certainly was not the Hebrew, though possibly linked thereto through members of the latter Israelitish Confederacy… the fact of the existence of powerful Hebrew influence in international finance in Neo-Babylonian times seems a reasonable supposition.
>
> The Hebrew…may have risen to especially privileged position in the Babylonian money industry, if that is what it can be called, and may have come to learn at that time those secret practices of the money changers’ craft, which he was certainly forbidden in his native land, according to the Laws (of) Moses.[374]

Indeed, as Astle points out, the Hebrews returning to Palestine were compelled, under Ezra's edict, to divorce their foreign wives. While certainly explainable as a religious ordinance designed to restore doctrinal and racial purity, Astle notes that the practice of intermarriage is itself the hallmark of the international banking class to this day, and thus, Ezra's ordinance may itself be an indicator that the Hebrews had indeed penetrated the international money power during the Babylonian captivity.[375] There is yet another indicator of this "babylonization" of Hebrew religion and practice, and that is the existence of the Talmud and the rabbinate itself, and the adopted symbol of the Hebrews and Jewish people to this day, the so-called *Mogen David* or Star of David: ☆. This symbol is itself of Babylonian, not Hebrew, origin, and as we shall see in the next chapter, it is an apt symbol of a fraternity that is "keeping secrets."

C. HOW THE CONSPIRACY WORKED

It is perhaps in the actual history of the development of the private issuance of bullion-based monies in ancient times and in various civilizations that one most clearly discerns the evident hand of a hidden international class of bullion-brokers, war merchants, slave traders, and mining operators, for almost invariably, the pattern is the same.

1. The First Stage: Penetrate and Ally with the Temple

As noted repeatedly throughout the previous pages, from Greece to Rome to Egypt and the Mesopotamian civilizations of Sumer, Babylon, and Assyria, there is a clear association of banking activities, and of minting itself, with the temple. The reason for this association, at least as far as banking and finance go, are easy to rationalize:

> These persons had conducted their business in the shade of the temple courtyards from ancient days as, and if they could, in order that the power or mystery as locally was held in awe, might give sanctity to their activities which so often were exercised against the well being of the people who sheltered them….
>
> These agents would have lurked as only faintly discernible shadows behind the temple façade, although they instigated much of what came to pass in those days, if themselves so little seen. Of first concern to them would have been the reputation of their masters, the priesthood, for piety, probity, and godliness, in so far as appearance went. For by maintaining the position of the priesthood, they maintained themselves and their secret power; yet for whatever they brought about, especially if of evil, it may safely be assumed, a nevertheless inviolate priesthood would be held responsible.

With the sanctity of the temple as a shelter and cloak of their activities, this bullion brokers’ class could then engage in the next stage of their activity:

2. The Second Stage: Issue False Receipts

That second stage is to issue counterfeit or false receipts against the credit or surpluses of the state warehouse, and *thereby to increase the money supply itself:* the principal device at this stage “may be assumed to be the secret and private expansion of the total money supply effected primarily by the issuance into circulation of false receipts for…valuables supposedly being held on deposit in thief-proof vaults, or otherwise, for safe custody.”[376] Such issuance would be relatively easy to come by, for by penetration of and close association with the temples of various states, they would have had access to the seals and other devices used to authenticate letters of credit by the temple priesthoods.

3. The Third Stage: Substitute Bullion for Letters of Credit as a Measure Against False Receipts

This brings us inevitably to the third stage, for once a sufficient number of such false receipts were in circulation, it would become apparent both to the crown and to members of the temple itself that there were simply too many false receipts in circulation, and that a monetary reform was necessary. At this juncture, in step the bullion brokers with the solution: holding a virtual monopoly on mining, they propose the substitution of bullion-based coinage, whose value is initially defined by a certain amount of actual goods — barley, as we saw in the case of Mesopotamia — for the actual state-issued letters of credit. Once any crown and temple alliance within any given state accepts this arrangement, it will become increasingly hostage to the need for bullion and for the merchants, slave traders, and mining-mercenaries that can supply it, and that have the technology to mine and melt and mint it.[377]

4. The Fourth Stage: Then Create a Facsimile of Money

Having artificially stimulated and increased the value of bullion, this class then creates the final step: it issues new letters of credit *against the supply of bullion rather than against the warehouse surplus,* and defines those letters of credit as valuation in terms of weight of some precious bullion. Thus, we arrive back at the state of issuing false receipts, only in this instance, these receipts are neither false nor counterfeit, they are simply privately created notes or promises to pay a certain amount of bullion (which they also control). Thus, once again the money supply is not only expanded, but the use of such instruments actually served to allow the bullion brokers to circulate more of such notes than they had actual bullion to redeem. The key, once again, was the sanctifying probity that the temple association gave them. With this step, their power and influence over the various states which they penetrated was almost complete, for it gave these ancient bankers, like their modern counterparts, the ability to expand or contract a state’s money supply, and to control their economies to create boom or bust. The final step, in other words, was to create a clay or stone (or in modern times, paper or plastic) *facsimile of the facsimile of state-issued money* (the bullion-based monies, also of their own creation)!

D. THE PARALLEL TO THE AFTERMATHS OF THE COSMIC WAR, AND WORLD WAR II: THE GLOBALIST AGENDA AND MONEY, MONARCHIES, MONOTHEISM, AND MILITARIES

But there is a final piece to this ancient story and plot, and it is one of the most breathtaking of them all. The effect of the alliance of this bullion brokers' class with the temple throughout the ancient world would have brought to their attention the fact that the pantheons of various civilizations, and even the stories and acts associated with various gods, were all remarkably similar. As a result of this realization, the bullion brokers would also come

> To realize that they could actually create that which functioned as money with but the record incised by the stylus on the clay tablet promising metal or money. Obviously, as a result of this discovery which depended on the confidence they were able to create in the minds of the peoples of their integrity, provided they banded themselves together with an absolute secrecy that excluded all other than their proven brethren, they could replace the god of the city himself as the giver of all. *If so be they could institute a conception of a one god, their god, a special god of the world, a god above all gods, then not merely the city, be it Ur or Kish or Lagash or Uruk, but the world itself could be theirs, and all that in it was.*[378]

In other words, behind the creation of the vast empires of Persia, and later the Macedonian-Greek empire of Alexander the Great, there lies the activity of a powerful financial interest, striving to create an ancient "New World Order" with a central state and unified religio-cultural world.[379] And the mechanism by which to foster this religious worldview would be to gradually point out, and inculcate the idea in popular imagination, that all local religions were but the same thing, various "names" for the "same gods."[380] Thus, the whole weight of their combine and cabal would have been thrown behind the promotion of a monarchial front, representative of the new empire and the new monotheism, and backed by the latest in military hardware.

But there is another possibility, one suggested by the scenario of a cosmic war outlined in the first chapter,[381] and that is, if the survivors of a once scientifically sophisticated civilization were ever to reach the pinnacle of scientific power and achievement that would have made an interplanetary war *possible,* if, that is, they were ever to reconstruct the destructive technologies of their hegemony and extend themselves again into space, then they would have quite literally to draw on the full resources of the entire world, and to create the wars and conflicts that drove technological achievement forward at a faster-than-normal pace of development. In this case, they would develop not only secret associations for this purpose, but money, and a close association with the temples, would be the easiest and least technologically sophisticated method to do it. And the political goal would be the same: ever-larger empires, eventually to encompass the entire globe itself.

This association of money creation with the temples, and with the goal to create a unified world order, for the purpose of reconstructing a lost technology of hegemony, is where the story gets *really* interesting. As they say, the plot is about to thicken….

Six

ALCHEMY UPSETS THE APPLECART

THE TRANSMUTATIVE MEDIUM AND THE ALCHEMY OF THE STARS AND BANKSTERS

∴

> *“Further support for the hypothesis that a transnational interrelationship existed between ancient Mystery Schools, was the discovery of the Gunderstrup Cauldron — a superb example of the silversmith’s art. This bowl, which was discovered in a Jutland peat bog, is decorated with pan-cultural deities.”*
>
> — *Brian Desborough*[382]

So once again, what *possible* connection could there be between all these things? Why *do* we find a J.P. Morgan suppressing Tesla? Why in turn do we find a Tesla preoccupied with “gripping the earth” to make his “wireless transmission of power” work? Why *do* we find a startling ancient connection between banking and physics (in the form of astrology, astronomy, and even — as Hoagland has hinted — sacred geometry)? Why *do* we find an RCA engineer named Nelson drawing up planetary charts that look for all the world like astrological charts? Why do we encounter a government economist like Edward Dewey devoting a lifetime of work to the study of cycles of all sorts? And why do we find him making conscious and deliberate reference between economic activity and physics? And why do we find, not just in ancient times, but in modern ones as well, the presence of bankers on the peripheries of such investigations?

A. ECONOPHYSICS

1. Physicists Invade Finance: The Modern Model as a Key to the Paleoancient Past

The answer lies in part in modern times, and in order to begin to peel back the onion skin layers of this vast, intricate, and ancient relationship, one must look at the rise of a new discipline — “econophysics” — and at what happened in modern times as physicists entered the world of high finance, bringing their techniques and tools of applied mathematics and analysis with them.

The term “econophysics” was actually coined in the mid-1990s by H. Eugene Stanley[383] to reflect two things: first, it was designed to reflect the vast influx of degreed physicists into the financial sector itself, as that sector often provided a higher salary base and opportunities to employ the tools of applied mathematical analysis than was possible in actual standard academic or experimental careers, and secondly, it was reflective of the fascination that physicists had acquired for the application of the techniques of statistical analysis they had developed in quantum mechanics to the problems of economic and financial analysis itself.

As such, econophysics “is an interdisciplinary research field, applying theories and methods originally developed by physicists in order to solve problems in economics, usually those including uncertainty or stochastic processes and nonlinear dynamics.”[384] What spurred this interest was in part, according to the article in Wikipedia, the “availability of huge amounts of financial data, starting in the 1980s.”[385] Of course, as has been noted, this is not exactly true, since there was a vast amount of data available from the Department of Commerce and from other sources and countries dating much further back, a database utilized by Edward and the Foundation for the Study of Cycles, and a database known to its members, some of whom included economists from major international banks.

One thing in particular that attracted physicists to this study of the application of their techniques to financial and economic systems was precisely that in economics, more often than not, there prevailed a general condition of non-equilibrium,[386] that is, one was never dealing with systems where there was a uniform distribution of resources, wealth, and so on. As physicists and chemists had only recently — in the 1960s — begun to study non-equilibrium physical systems and their remarkable ability to self-organize, the motivation for their study of economics becomes clear: physicists thought that by studying the most notoriously non-equilibrium systems known to mankind — economic systems — their models of the ability of such systems in the physical world could be applied with some success to model self-organization in economic systems, and to make valuable predictions on that basis. As will be seen in a few moments, this is an important clue to the possible deeper physics involved in economic systems.

To put it succinctly, quantum mechanics had invaded economics, and the reason why is relatively easy to perceive, because since economic activity was "the result of the interaction among many heterogeneous agents, there is an analogy with statistical mechanics, where many particles interact."[387] And the key tool in this new interdisciplinary endeavor was quantum physics' use of the "path integral formulation of statistical mechanics."[388]

But what exactly does this mean?

The first implication is that one may use the influx of physicists into economic study in modern times as an analogy of what happened in ancient times, and assume that something like this happened as well in ancient times, as those with the "high knowledge" of a deeper physics penetrated the world of high finance, that is to say, the temple, seeking a better standard of living and personal wealth, like their modern descendants. And once inside those hallowed pavilions and chambers, they allied with the bankers of their day, the "bullion brokers." It was a necessary détente in the aftermath of that great Cosmic War, for if the lost science and technology were ever to be reconstructed, it would require lots of money, and lots of scientific expertise, and both resided in ancient times in the temple.

The second implication requires a closer look at quantum mechanics itself.

2. Quantum Mechanics, Ancient Astrology, and the Statistical Approach

One may gain an appreciation of the statistical nature of quantum mechanics by considering its foundational principle, the Heisenberg Uncertainty Principle, itself. Briefly stated, the Uncertainty Principle holds that if one measures the velocity of an electron, one cannot measure its position, and conversely, if one measures its position, it is impossible to measure its velocity. Thus, quantum mechanics, when considering the behavior of *several* particles all at once, had to rely upon observation and the compilation of statistical probabilities in order to model that behavior.

The same holds true, if one takes the ancient texts at face value, for astrology as well, for there is an exact modern analogy with quantum mechanics and its countless and untold observations made diligently over time, and with its statistical approach to that vast number of interactions, for this is precisely what one encounters in ancient times as well. In fact, as previously noted, the Babylonian “omen tablets” indicate that astronomical observations of planetary alignments and corresponding earthly activities and effects — a combination we now call astrology — were made over hundreds of thousands of years ago. This is therefore yet another sign that there is some other hidden influence at work in the temples besides that of the bullion brokers, and that influence is that of the ancient astrologers-astronomers themselves, compiling their lists of observations. From the previous chapters it is evident that the ancient international “bullion brokers” were in league with the various temple priesthoods-astrologers.

3. Dr. Li’s Gaussian Copula and a Physics Analogue: The Multibody Problem

Quantum mechanics’ statistical approach, and that implied by the millennia of ancient astronomical and astrological observation, is directly connected to Dr. David Li’s Gaussian copula formula via a rather interesting route: the multibody problem. The problem is an exact analogue to the difficulty of modeling the behavior of mass aggregates of particles. The only way to do so was through careful and countless observations and a statistical model of probabilities of their behavior. But the problem becomes more acute as the size of bodies being modeled grows.

Imagine one is trying to model not the aggregate behavior of several particles, but of several planets and stars. It is relatively easy to model the force of gravitational attraction between two moving masses or planets, and to predict their behavior. But as one adds more and more moving masses to the system to be modeled, the ability of mathematics to handle and accurately predict the behavior of a total dynamic system or any of the individual components within it progressively breaks down, and margins of error increase. Dr. Li, of course, solved his “multibody problem” of correlations of economic activity by, predictably enough, a statistical approach, which introduced the problem of random probabilities into economic activity.

But what if the randomness of quantum mechanics was itself the result of a deeper physics? And, if that be so, and since “econophysics” was but the importation into economics of physical models, would that deeper physics also be a deeper physics of economic activity?

4. The Deeper Physics:

a. David Bohm's Hidden Variable Quantum Mechanics and The Implicate Order

The deeper physics implied by this question may be readily perceived by a review of one of its most famous expositors, the well-known plasma and quantum physicist David Bohm. Bohm is best known, in fact, for his "hidden variable" version of quantum mechanical theory, in which the "randomness" of quantum mechanics observed and measured by physicists (Bohm's "explicate order") is understood to point to a deeper and more ordered hyper-dimensional reality (Bohm's "implicate order"). Bohm outlined these views in a popularized treatment in a book entitled *Wholeness and the Implicate Order*, and it is this book that will be the basis of our review of his ideas.

For Bohm, the whole development of quantum mechanics pointed to the real existence of this hyper-dimensional "implicate order":

> One discovers…both from consideration of the meaning of the mathematical equations and from the results of the actual experiments, that the various particles have to be taken literally as projections of a higher-dimensional reality which cannot be accounted for in terms of any force of interaction between them[389]

In other words, Bohm is saying almost exactly the same thing as was Richard C. Hoagland at the beginning of this chapter: particles, as rotating masses, and whose behavior when measured as a statistical aggregate, are *portals* that "gate" a hyper-dimensional reality into our own world. While Hoagland, however, was concerned with the hyper-dimensional implications of the physics of very large masses, i.e., stars, Bohm is concerned with the hyper-dimensional implications of the physics of the very small. This is an indicator that the physics involved is scale-invariant, that is, applicable over the whole range of scales of objects with which physics deals.

Bohm’s apt analogy of the interaction of this hyper-dimensional world with our own is that of a projection. “Let us begin,” he says, “with a rectangular tank full of water, with transparent walls.”[390] He then reproduces a diagram of a fish tank, with two television cameras, one pointed at one side of the tank, and the other at the side perpendicular to each. Each camera, “A” and “B” respectively, is attached to one television monitor. As the fish swims around, the images from the two cameras are sent to the monitors. Bohm then comments as follows:

> What we will see there is a certain *relationship* between the images appearing on the two screens. For example, on screen A we may see an image of a fish, and on screen B we will see another such image. At any given moment each image will generally *look* different from the other. Nevertheless the differences will be related, in the sense that when one image is seen to execute certain movements, the other will be seen to execute corresponding movements. Moreover, content that is mainly on one screen will pass into the other, and vice versa (e.g., when a fish initially facing camera A turns through a right angle, the image that was on A is now to be found on B). Thus at all times the image content on the other screen will correlate with and reflect that of the other.[391]

In other words, our three-dimensional world acts as a sort of “prism” to break up a singular hyper-dimensional object into a fragmented thing, perceived from different angles but with correlated movements.

Bohm summarizes this view of our three-dimensional reality as a projection from a high-dimensional reality, and its effect on perceptions of quantum mechanics and its underlying implicate order, with words eerily evocative of Hoagland’s comments about stars at the beginning of this chapter:

> …(W)e may regard each of the “particles” constituting a system as a projection of a “higher-dimensional” reality, rather than as a separate particle, existing together with all the others in a common three-dimensional space. For example, in the experiment of Einstein, Podolsky and Rosen, which we have mentioned earlier,

> each of two atoms that initially combine to form a single molecule are to be regarded as three-dimensional projections of a six-dimensional reality.[392]

However, it is when Bohm turns to a consideration of the implications of this view that the full scope of the possibilities of this deeper physics springs into full view, and with them, the reason for the association of banksters with temples in ancient times — not to mention modern times! — becomes a little clearer.

To make these implications manifest, Bohm begins by noting that

> …(W)hen the quantum theory is applied to fields… it is found that the possible states of energy of this field are discrete (or quantized). Such a state of the field is, in some respects, a wavelike excitation spreading out over a broad region of space. Nevertheless, it also has somehow a discrete quantum of energy (and momentum) proportional to its frequency, so that, in other respects it is like a particle (e.g. a photon). However, if one considers the electromagnetic field in empty space, for example, one finds from the quantum theory that each such “wave-particle” mode of excitation of the field has what is called a “zero-point” energy, below which it cannot go, even when its energy falls to the minimum that is possible. If one were to add up the energies of all the “wave-particle” modes of excitation in any region of space, the result would be infinite, because an infinite number of wavelengths is present.[393]

Before we can proceed, it is necessary to pause and consider how Bohm has characterized the zero-point energy. For Bohm, as the passage just quoted makes clear, this energy is a result of the quantized nature of space itself, and of the fact that this quantization is the result of wavelike structures — of areas of compression and rarefaction — within it.

Why this is so requires only a moment’s reflection. When a physicist suggests that space itself is quantized, what he means is simply that it is not an infinitely divisible continuum, capable of being divided into ever smaller units or cells *ad infinitum.* The reason is, according to Bohm, that if space itself is the result of wavelike structures of compression and rarefaction, then such wavelike structures will inevitably induce cells within it. What appears to be an infinitely divisible continuum, therefore, is really so only because of the infinite number of wavelengths present at any given point of vacuum space.

This conception leads Bohm to posit the next step toward the quantization of space itself:

> …(T)here is good reason to suppose that one need not keep on adding the energies corresponding to shorter and shorter wavelengths. *There may be a certain shortest possible wavelength,* so that the total number of modes of excitation, and therefore the energy, would be finite.394

We will refer to this "shortest possible wavelength" as the "Bohm wavelength."

This "Bohm wavelength" — the idea that wavelike phenomena are themselves quantized — has profound and huge implications for the type of "deeper physics" being explored here. For one thing, this unknown wavelength sounds very much like the "lost word" of Masonic tradition, or the "lost chord" of the esoteric doctrine of the harmony of the spheres, the lost chord being the frequency which somehow binds all of physical creation together, *since the latter is but a harmonic or overtone series of it.*

This conception turns out to have huge implications for the possible unification of the physics of the very large with the physics of the very small:

> Indeed, if one applies the rules of quantum theory to the currently accepted general theory of relativity, one finds that the gravitational field is also constituted of such "wave-particle" modes, each having a minimum "zero-point" energy. As a result the gravitational field, and therefore the definition of what is to be meant by distance, cease to be completely defined. As we keep on adding excitations corresponding to shorter and shorter

> wavelengths to the gravitational field, *we come to a certain length at which the measurement of space and time becomes totally undefinable [sic]*. Beyond this, the whole notion of space and time as we know it would face out, into something that is at present unspecifiable. *So it would be reasonable to suppose, at least provisionally, that this is the shortest wavelength that should be considered as contributing to the "zero-point" energy of space.*[395]

In short, *find that wavelength and one will find the ability to engineer space-time and all that is in it.* One would be able to tap into a virtually inexhaustible source of energy and utilize it for whatever purpose one desired. Additionally, Bohm's remarks also suggest that finding this frequency would also be a step on the road to the manipulation of gravity itself.

Bohm, moreover, clearly sees this implication of engineerability, for he sees the clear implication of his view for the very "construction and constitution" of matter itself. Indeed, he even goes so far as to give an approximation of the very frequency that constitutes the "Bohm wavelength"!

> When this length is estimated it turns out to be about 10^{-33} cm. This is much shorter than anything thus far probed in physical experiments (which have got down to about 10^{-17} cm or so). If one computes the amount of energy that would be in one cubic centimetre of space, with this shortest possible wavelength, it turns out to be very far beyond the total energy of all the matter in the known universe.
>
> What is implied by this proposal is that what we call empty space contains an immense background of energy, *and that matter as we know it is a small, "quantized" wavelike excitation on top of this background, rather like a tiny ripple on a vast sea.*[396]

Before pondering the implications of all this further, it is worth citing Bohm on the awesome power implied in such a view:

> It is being suggested here, then, that what we perceive through the senses as empty space is actually the plenum, which is the ground for the existence of everything, including ourselves. The things that appear to our senses are *derivative forms* and their true meaning can be seen only when we consider the plenum, in which they are generated and sustained, and into which they must ultimately vanish.
>
> …
>
> In our approach (the) "big bang" is to be regarded as actually just a "little ripple." An interesting image is obtained by considering that in the middle of the actual ocean (i.e., on the surface of the Earth) *myriads of small waves occasionally come together fortuitously with such phase relationships that they end up in a certain small region of space, suddenly to produce a very high wave which just appears as if from nowhere and out of nothing. Perhaps something like this could happen in the immense ocean of cosmic energy, creating a sudden wave pulse, from which our "universe" would be born.*[397]

Observe quite carefully what Bohm has just stated, for it is crucial to all that follows: *matter itself, in all its variegated forms, is the result of an interferometry — of the "mixing" — of several waves of various wavelengths, all of them in turn harmonics or overtones of the "Bohm wavelength." It is the very technology of the creation ex nihilo, of the ability of the physical medium to create information and systems by wave-mixing. It is the technology of creation from nothing: alchemy.* And there is one final consequence of Bohm's views, and that is that in order to give relative system stability to such waves, or rather to the systems that such waves generate, the easiest way to do so is via rotation.

A consequence inevitably follows from this view, and that is that rotating material systems — whether stars or particles — are thus *natural resonators of such waves*, and hence to understand the pattern of interference of such waves, one had therefore *to monitor the geometrical positions of significant objects in local space-time.* In short, Bohm, with his view that matter is a “portal” and a glimpse into this higher-dimensional reality and its energies, has provided a rationale for two things: the ancient preoccupation with *astrology, and the ancient preoccupation with alchemy, for both are manifestations of one and the same physics.* Matter, to put it succinctly, is but a standing wave of interferometry of other waves; matter itself is a *grid or template of interference* of such waves. This forms the link to alchemy, for as such, matter emerges as information within the field of the physical medium. To put it succinctly, matter is mutable, or in the language of alchemy, *transmutable*, since the physical medium itself, the Philosophers’ Stone par excellence, transmutes itself into the diversity of the material creation. This idea of matter as *a template of the interferometry of such waves* will play a key role when we turn to examine the placement of sacred temples along a certain earth grid in the next chapter, and an even more crucial role as a connecting concept typing together all the disparate data points in this book upon its conclusion.

b. The Foundation for the Study of Cycles Notices a Similar Thing

Oddly enough, the Foundation for the Study of Cycles noticed a very similar thing. We have already encountered the fact that the Foundation’s founder, Edward Dewey, compared the many cycles in its database to wave forms, and noticed the fact that various waves of cycles could be “averaged” together, like sound waves.

Ray Tomes, a member of the Foundation, wrote an interesting paper presented at the Foundation’s February 1990 conference. The paper’s title is pregnant with implications: “Towards a Unified Theory of Cycles.” In it, Tomes pursues Dewey’s and Dakin’s sound wave analogy to a breathtaking conclusion:

> Eventually I realised that the pattern of frequencies present in … corn prices *was the same as the arrangement of frequencies of the white notes on a piano…* This was peculiar, and going back to my early common economic cycles study I realised that the ratios 4:5:6:8 were exactly those of a major chord in music! Why are economic series playing major chords and scales in very slow motion?

> Research showed that such patterns had been observed and reported before by several contributors to *Cycles* magazine.[398] One of these was D.S. Castle (1956) who found that stock market cycles fit the musical scale. The pattern found ranged over three octaves, and all seven white notes plus one black note were present in at least one octave.[399]

Tomes' suggestion, in other words, is simply one and the same as that of David Bohm, namely, that one might find "the ultimate wavelength" or frequency of all types of cycles of which all others are but harmonics or derivations from it.

c. The Well-Tempered Clavier: The First Physical Unification

The suggestion is not as far removed from physical reality as it might at first seem, for the modern Western musical scale with its 12 equidistant "notes" are in fact the example of the first unification in physics. In order to see how, one may perform a simple exercise. If one sits at an acoustic piano and silently presses the note "C," and then hits the same note "C" an octave lower, one will hear the strings of the silently pressed note vibrating sympathetically with the struck note. The reason is simplicity itself. Each string on the piano vibrates not only with the entire length of the string, but simultaneously also vibrates in various *fractions* of that length. Thus, each note has an "overtone" or "harmonic" series of notes. Therefore, one can then press silently the next note in "C's" harmonic series, the note "G," and hit the same "C" as before. Once again, one will hear the silently pressed note "G" vibrating sympathetically with the struck "C." The next note in the harmonic series above "G" is again the note "C," then the note "E," and so on. If one is sitting at the piano keyboard performing this simple experiment, one will notice that the *intervals* of each harmonic overtone of the original "C" are growing *shorter,* first the octave (the first silently pressed "C"), then a *fifth,* the note "G," then again another "C" above that, which is a *fourth,* then the note "E," which is a *third,* and so on. But eventually one will arrive, in the *naturally occurring* harmonic series, at a note that lies somewhere in the "crack" between the notes "A" and "B flat" on the piano keyboard.

But why does the piano (or any other keyboard instrument, for that matter) not have that note? The answer is simple. If that note were present, then it would be *impossible* to play a piece that continually changed keys. One would only be able to play a very limited series of chords. To change keys from, say, “C” to “D,” one would literally have to stop and retune the whole keyboard. So what has happened?

What happened was that between the stylistic change in music between the Renaissance and the Baroque, musicians learned to “tweak” the harmonic series, to *tamper* with it, or, as they liked to say, to “*temper*” it, by a slight mathematical adjustment of the natural overtone series, that would in turn create 12 equidistant notes, *each one a harmonic of all others,* and thus music could change through as many keys as it wished in the course of a piece, without having to stop and retune the whole instrument. In this way, each harmonic series of each note on the keyboard, which originally and naturally did *not* overlap completely, were engineered to do so, and thus were unified.[400]

In short, and bearing this analogy in mind, what physicist David Bohm is actually suggesting, as a way forward into the deeper physics of engineering the medium itself, is that there is a frequency *of which all others — from sound to electromagnetic waves even to gravitational waves — are harmonics.* He is proposing, in effect, a very ancient idea, that of the music of the spheres, a well-tempered clavier of the universe itself. He is proposing a modern physics analogue to the “lost word” and “lost chord” of esoteric lore.

d. Nikolai Kozyrev’s Causal Mechanics and Precursor Engineering

If David Bohm clearly implied a direct engineerability of the physical medium along the lines of a “well-tempered” harmonic unification of physics, then Russian astrophysicist Dr. Nikolai Kozyrev went one step further by implying the ability to engineer not *effects*, but *causes* directly.

Such an ability implies that Kozyrev had a rather more unconventional view of time than does standard physics. For Kozyrev, time was not a mere duration, a passive stage on which physical events were enacted;[401] rather, time itself was an actor on the stage that, like space, had a multi-dimensional character and *quality.* An analogy will be useful to illustrate this point. Ordinarily physics tends to think of time in terms of the future, the present, and the past, i.e., as simple *duration.*[402] But human natural languages view time in a much subtler, deeper, and "qualitative" sense, with a variety of verb tenses and voices: future perfect, pluperfect, past perfect, active and passive voices, and so on. In a sense, natural languages therefore view time and the correlations between systems in a much deeper and more sophisticated manner than does physics.

It was this subtlety that Kozyrev intended to explore, and to render into the formally explicit language of mathematics. This complexity and subtlety of interrelationships Kozyrev located in the "rotation moment" of a given system, that is, the subtleties of time and of the interactions of systems could be modeled as a series of interlocking, and *interfering,* systems of rotation, or "dynamic torsion."[403] Time itself could impart its own intensity — Kozyrev's word for "compression," implying its opposite, rarefaction — to a system, as well as impart a spin orientation to a system.[404] Through a series of extremely subtle experiments with gyroscopes, balances, and in some cases, even telescopes, Kozyrev was able to determine that prior to the inception of any physical action, a kind of "pre-action" would be recorded by his measuring equipment, almost as if the equipment was "anticipating" the physical action itself.[405] "Cause" and "effect" were therefore themselves the result of a lower-dimensional fracture or breaking of a higher-dimensional unity and symmetry, much like Bohm's projection analogy. By noting the temporal conditions under which these "pre-actions" or "precursors" occurred, one could eventually *engineer* the precursors to any physical action.

Thus, bearing in mind Kozyrev's "precursor engineering," and to return to Bohm's analysis of matter itself as a set of waves in the medium that are interfered upon one another, producing what Dewey and Dakin would call an "averaged" wave, then one may imagine a horrific possibility, namely, the exact mirror image of such a wave which, interfered upon the original, would sum to zero, or exactly cancel it out, making the "something" a nothing again. The ultimate in “precursor” engineering was the power to erase an effect of a physical action altogether, by eradicating its cause.

Furthermore, Bohm’s and Kozryev’s deeper physics behind the apparently stochastic processes of quantum mechanics implies a similar deeper physics behind the apparently stochastic processes of econophysics as well. Indeed, if one can, *pace* Kozyrev, engineer the precursors of effects — if one can actually engineer *causes* — then this implies that one could indeed engineer the precursors of *economic* activity, since the means to do so, direct engineering of the physical medium itself, is implied in both cases.

Consequently, one now has a speculative basis upon which to advance the reasons for the close association of the banking class throughout history with the temple, that is to say, with that element or class within human society that has at least *some* grasp on this deeper physics: banking is in effect an alchemical operation of creating information out of nothing, in this case the information of credit and debt, for the latter is but a dim and pale technological reflection in the realm of finance of the analogous, but deeper, operations in physics. And it is similarly likely that this relationship was formed precisely so that by utilizing the latter, the former technology and deeper physics might ultimately be recovered. In short, were such a physics to be recovered, an alliance with as many temple priesthoods was altogether necessary, for each most likely preserved some fragment of it, which when appropriately assembled would be once more accessible. It provides also a rationale for their obsessive interest, since ancient times, in “world unification and domination,” for on the one hand, it is likely that vast financial resources — resources transcending the wealth of any one civilization in ancient or modern times — would be needed to reconstruct such a deeper physics, and on the other hand, a world extent is needed in order to maintain the suppression of any independent development or recovery of such a technology by potential rivals.

B. ECONOMICS, ASTROLOGY, AND ASTROPHYSICS

There are two streams of data that now converge to exhibit a probable deeper physics to economic activity: on the one hand, the vast database of wave-like forms from the Foundation for the Study of Cycles, and on the other, the implications of David Bohm's implicate order, where matter itself is the result, and hence a natural resonator, of such waves. As noted in chapter two, one of the implications of the Foundation for the Study of Cycles' database was that economic cycles, precisely because they seemed to have some sort of underlying physics basis — recall Dewey's and Dakin's sound wave analogy once again — were to that extent and in a certain sense "beyond the total rule of man's conscious will."[406] But there is another kind of database that Dewey and Dakin did *not* consult, but it too suggests a profoundly deep physics to economic activity.

And that database is astrology.

Astrologers have, of course, been casting "mundane horoscopes" for various nations for decades, if not centuries and millennia, and more recently, many have noticed the odd correlations of certain recurrent planetary alignments and periods of economic boom or bust. One to do so is Robert Gover in a recent, and fascinating, book called *Time and Money: The Economy and the Planets.* He begins by noting the fact that Saturn orbits the sun every 28-30 earth years, Uranus 84 years, Neptune 165 years, and Pluto 248 years.[407] He then notes the importance of these outer planets for astrological economic observation: since the other planets — Jupiter, Mars, the Earth, Venus, and Mercury — all move too rapidly around the Sun, they cannot be used "to mark years or decades of major economic cycles."[408] He then states his main thesis, one more or less well-known to astrologers, but not well-known outside such circles:

> Every time the USA has gone through a great depression, the outermost, slowest moving planets have formed what astrologers call a grand cross with the USA's natal Sun and Saturn. Every time Uranus has returned to early Gemini where it was when the USA

> was "born" July 4, 1776, America has experienced its worst wars. Every time Uranus and Pluto have moved into conjunctions or 90-degree squares and simultaneously come conjunct, opposite of square sensitive points in the U.S. birth chart, America has experienced social changes or upheavals….
>
> Other wars occur when the U.S. natal Uranus is "afflicted" by transiting planets, as happened when the World Trade Center and Pentagon were attacked. Saturn and Pluto form 180-degree oppositions three times a century, the latest being in effect on September 11, 2001;. The previous Saturn-Pluto opposition coincided with the tempestuous period we now call the Sixties, the one before that with what we now call The Great Depression.[409]

Gover then explains what four of the most significant conjunctions or alignments are. We shall focus on only two of them:

> A *Grand Cross* aspect is created when four planets form simultaneous squares and oppositions to each other. This is a rare aspect which brings obstructions, tensions, frustrations, i.e. a grand cross to the U.S. Sun-Saturn square has formed each time the USA has fallen into a great depression.
>
> A *Grand Trine* aspect is also rare, and is formed by a triangle of three planets 120 degrees from each other, creating harmonious flows of energy, good fortune and opportunities.[410]

It is odd that the Grand Cross conjunction bears such a strange resemblance to the planetary positions charts of RCA engineer Nelson.

Grand Crosses form such a common feature to U.S. depressions that Gover actually formulates it as a kind of astrological law: "No grand cross, no great depression."[411] However, Gover notes that in this respect, astrological "prediction" is not to be misconstrued:

> If we view the planets around us in our solar system as a huge celestial clock, the first thing history teaches us is that the celestial clock is not mechanically precise like our earthly clocks. Although

> we can discern from history when like economic events are due, clock-like prediction isn't possible. *Certain planetary patterns create seasons when certain types of events can be expected.* But the planets cannot tell us specifically how events will unfold, nor how we will respond. We know when winter is nigh but not how cold it will get. Some hurricane seasons bring great devastation, others are less severe .[412]

With this said, a glance at Gover's charts is in order.

The first American Great Depression occurred in the 1780s. His chart looks like this:

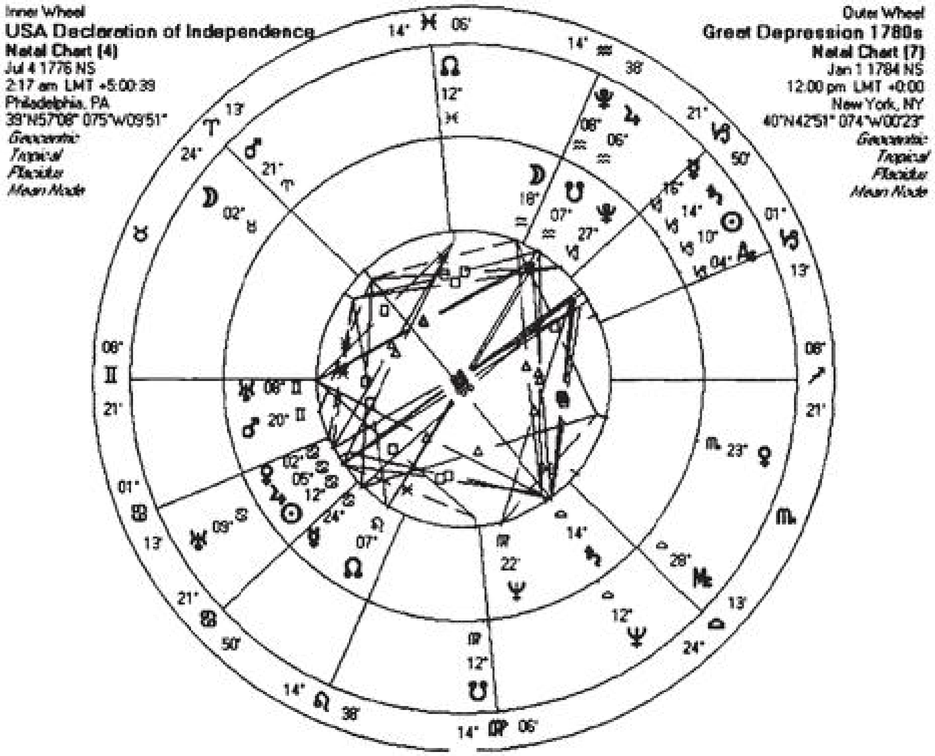
Inner Wheel
USA Declaration of Independence
Natal Chart (4)
Jul 4 1776 NS
2:17 am LMT +5:00:39
Philadelphia, PA
39°N57'08" 075°W09'51"
Geocentric
Tropical
Placidus
Mean Node
Outer Wheel
Great Depression 1780s
Natal Chart (7)
Jan 1 1784 NS
12:00 pm LMT +0:00
New York, NY
40°N42'51" 074°W00'23"
Geocentric
Tropical
Placidus
Mean Node

Robert Gover's Astrological Chart for the American Great Depression of the 1780s[413]

If one takes the time to decipher the planetary symbols, then one finds "Saturn was at 15 degrees Capricorn which puts it opposite the U.S. natal Sun at 13 Cancer; meanwhile, Mars at 21 Aries is within orb or an opposition to (the U.S.A.'s) natal Saturn at 15 degrees of Libra."[414] In short, a Grand Cross was formed between the planetary positions during the 1780s great depression, and that of their positions at the time of the U.S.A.'s birth.

Similarly, a Grand Cross is formed during the Great Depression of the 1870s.

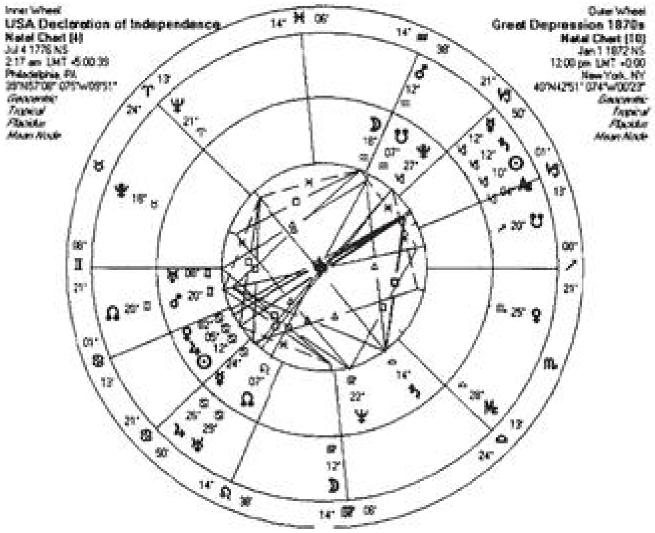
Inner Wheel
USA Declaration of Independence
Natal Chart (4)
Jul 4 1776 NS
2:17 am LMT +5:00:39
Philadelphia, PA
39°N57'08" 075°W09'51"
Geocentric
Tropical
Placidus
Mean Node
Outer Wheel
Great Depression 1870s
Natal Chart (10)
Jan 1 1872 NS
12:00 pm LMT +0:00
New York, NY
40°N42'51" 074°W00'23"
Geocentric
Tropical
Placidus
Mean Node

*Robert Gover's Astrological Chart for the American Great Depression of the 1870s*415

During this time "Saturn in Capricorn formed a square with Neptune in Aries to create the grand cross with (the U.S.A.'s) Sun and Saturn."416

Finally, during the Great Depression of the 1930s, yet another Grand Cross was formed:

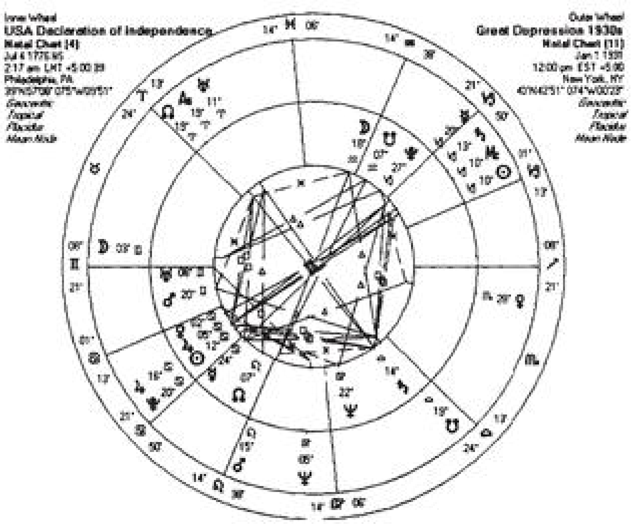
Inner Wheel
USA Declaration of Independence
Natal Chart (4)
Jul 4 1776 NS
2:17 am LMT +5:00:39
Philadelphia, PA
39°N57'08" 075°W09'51"
Geocentric
Tropical
Placidus
Mean Node
Outer Wheel
Great Depression 1930s
Natal Chart (11)
Jan 1 1931
12:00 pm EST +5:00
New York, NY
40°N42'51" 074°W00'23"
Geocentric
Tropical
Placidus
Mean Node

*Robert Gover's Astrological Chart for the American Great Depression of the 1930s*417

This chart chows a Grand Cross between Saturn, at 13 degrees Capricorn square with Uranus at 11 degrees Aries, and opposite (i.e., at 180 degrees) with the U.S.A.'s natal Sun and Saturn.418

That these Grand Crosses have a malign influence would seem, at least as a *prima facie* case, to be a given. But is there any real-world physics correlation?

The answer to this question is as easy as reproducing one of Nelson's charts from his RCA study of planetary alignments and radio signal propagation.

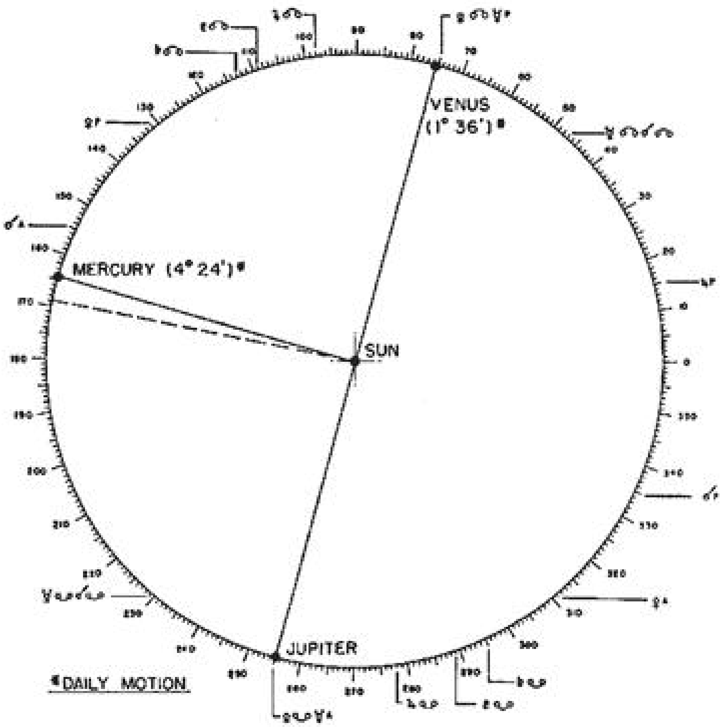

Nelson's Chart of Venus-Jupiter Opposition[419]

Note the similarity is once again that planets, in this case the *inner* planets, are in certain relationships to each other, relations of 90 degrees or some harmonic thereof, i.e., 180 or 270 degrees.[420]

Thus, if the Foundation for the Study of Cycles' database and Gover's (and other astrologers') charts are any indicator, then we can now draw even closer to an understanding of the relationship that was seen to exist between banking and the temple in ancient times, for *the astrological data of economic boom and bust would have been known by them from ancient times, and it would have been crucial for the "financial powers in the know" to have such data available, in order to exacerbate or damp the overall trend of boom or bust within a cycle.*

With this in mind, a glance at the evidence gathered by Ellen Hodgson Brown, whose book was mentioned in the Prologue, is in order, for a comparison of the activities of banksters relative to Gover's astrological charts is quite revealing.

C. ELLEN HODGSON BROWN

1. The Depression of the 1780s and the Banksters

Brown points out something that most modern Americans do not know, and that is, that prior to the American Revolution, most of the colonies printed their own paper money — *debt-free* — and actually made loans to farmers and businessmen. The result was a booming economy and almost full employment. When Benjamin Franklin went to England prior to the revolution, he was asked about the source of this prosperity "by the directors of the Bank of England," and Franklin responded that the colonies "issued paper money 'in proper proportion to the demands of trade and industry.'"421 But what was the "backing" of this money? The colonies, however, had little silver and gold with which to back their issues of paper currency. With what, then, was it backed? The then famous Protestant minister in New England, Cotton Mather, made clear what the backing of this colonial scrip was by asking a pointed series of questions:

> Is a Bond or Bill of Exchange for (one thousand pounds), other than paper? And yet it is not as valuable as so much Silver or Gold, supposing the security of Payment is sufficient? *Now what is the security of your Paper-money less than the Credit of the whole Country?*422

As Brown notes, "Mather had redefined money. What it represented was not a sum of gold or silver. It was credit: 'the credit of the whole country.'"423 Within the context of the evidence presented thus far, and in particular, the analysis of David Astle reviewed in chapter five, what Mather had *really* done is return to the very ancient conception of money prior to the rise of the international bankster class of bullion brokers in ancient times; what he had done was to return to the idea of money as a *credit bill* against the surpluses of the state warehouse, and not *an interest-bearing note of private issuance.*

Franklin stated this conception somewhat differently: "The riches of a country are to be valued by the quantity of labor its inhabitants are able to purchase and not by the quantity of gold and silver they possess."424 The difference is striking, for

> when gold was the medium of exchange, money determined production rather than production determining the money supply. When gold was plentiful, things got produced. When it was scarce, men were out of work and people knew want. *The virtue of government-issued paper scrip was that it could grow along with productivity, allowing potential to become real wealth.*[425]

Franklin elaborated on the source of colonial prosperity to his English hosts, and his words are worth taking to heart, for in them one discerns the clear difference between a closed system of "debt-as-money" or monetized debt, and an open system of money as a medium of exchange of *production and credit:*

> In the colonies we issue our own money. It is called Colonial Scrip. We issue it to pay the government's approved expenses and charities. We make sure it is issued in proper proportions to make the goods pass easily from the producers to the consumers…. In this manner, creating for ourselves our own paper money, we control its purchasing power, and *we have no interest to pay to anyone.* You see, a legitimate government can both spend and lend money into circulation, while banks can only lend significant amounts of their promissory bank notes, for they can neither give away nor spend but a tiny fraction of the money people need. Thus, when your banks here in England place money in circulation, there is always a debt principal to be returned and usury to be paid. The result is that you have always too little credit in circulation to give the workers full employment. *You do not have too many workers, you have too little money in circulation, and that which circulates, all bears the endless burden of unpayable debt and usury.*[426]

Franklin has seen the essential criminality and fraud that is central banking, for the governments pursuing a policy of "monetizing the debt" only means that they are beholden to a private monopoly, which issues "debt as money," whereas the colonial experience — and the very *ancient* experience — was that *true* money was *credit on the productive surplus of the state,* and hence*, only the state could issue it.*

Needless to say, England’s banksters were not about to allow this situation to continue, allowing the colonists to gain prosperity without enriching their own parasitic coffers. Thus, the Bank of England parlayed its influence in Parliament to get the 1764 Currency Act passed, which made it illegal for the colonies to issue their own money. And predictably, as Franklin observed, a year later the streets of the colonies were filled with the unemployed and beggars.[427] And it was this substitution of debt as money, the replacement of *real* money by the *facsimile* of money that, according to Franklin, was the real cause of the Revolution.[428]

When the Revolutionary War finally came, the Continental Congress financed the entire endeavor by once again resorting to the expedient of issuing its own paper scrip as a circulating debt note of the state to be redeemed by coinage at a future date.[429] Of course, the Continental Congress issued too much of this scrip, some two hundred million dollars’ worth, so that by the conclusion of the Revolutionary War, the scrip was basically worthless.

But the real lesson was not in the dangers of a state hyper-inflating its state-issued credit notes. The real lesson was that the Continental Congress’ scrip

> Still evoked the wonder and admiration of foreign observers, because it allowed the colonists to do something that had never been done before. They succeeded in financing a war against a major power, with virtually no “hard” currency of their own, *without taxing the people.* Franklin wrote…during the war, “the whole is a mystery even the politicians, how we could pay with paper that had no previously fixed fund appropriated specifically to redeem it. *This currency as we manage it is a wonderful machine.* Thomas Paine called it a “corner stone” of the Revolution: “Every stone in the Bridge, that has carried us over, seems to have claim upon our esteem. But this was a corner stone, and its usefulness cannot be forgotten.”[430]

Alas, it is a lesson the American people and the two political parties that supposedly “represent” them seems all but forgotten in modern times.

Of course, the British were fully aware of how their rebellious colonies were funding their Revolution, and purposed to crash the currency by the time-tested tactic of counterfeiting. One British general cited by Brown in her book noted that every art of counterfeiting had been tried, but, to his chagrin, "still the currency has not failed."431 It was only after the successful Revolution that the Continental Scrip failed, as the very same Founding Fathers grew understandably disillusioned with the resulting devaluation that inflation of the supply — not to mention the counterfeit scrip in circulation — caused. The result of this deliberate speculation against the American Continental Scrip was predictable, for the Founding Fathers rebelled against the very paper money-as-credit against the state's *future* productive surplus after the war by stating that Congress had the power to make "and *coin*" money. In other words, the Continental Congress had fallen into the old trap of the issuance of the *facsimile of money,* of money as *debt,* even if that debt were the credit against a future surplus of the state.

> The notes represented debt, and the debt had now come due. The bearers expected to get their gold, and the gold was not to be had. There was insufficient supply of money for conducting trade. Tightening the money supply by limiting it to coins had quickly precipitated another depression. In 1786, a farmers' rebellion broke out in Massachusetts, led by Daniel Shays. Farmers brandishing pitchforks complained of going heavily into debt when paper money was plentiful. *When it was no longer available and debts had to be repaid in the much scarcer "hard" coin of the British bankers, some farmer lost their farms.*432

The immediate result of this First American "Great Depression" then, was of course the call for a stronger central government and a means for it to create "an expandable money supply," and the convocation of the assembly that eventually led to the draft of the current American Constitution.433

At this juncture, it is worth citing Ellen Brown's comments extensively:

> The solution of Treasury Secretary Hamilton was to "monetize" the national debt, by turning it into a source of money for the country.

> He proposed that a national bank be authorized to print up banknotes and swap them for the government's bonds. The government would pay regular interest on the debt, using import duties and money from the sale of public land. Opponents said that acknowledging the government's debt at face value would unfairly reward the speculators who had bought up the country's I.O.U.s for a pittance from the soldiers, farmers and small businessmen who had actually earned them; but Hamilton argued that the speculators had earned this windfall for their "faith in the country." He thought the government needed to enlist the support of the speculators, *or they would do to the new country's money what they had done to the Continental….*
>
> Jefferson, Hamilton's chief political opponent, feared that giving private wealthy citizens an ownership interest in the bank would link their interests too closely within it. The government would be turned into an oligarchy, a government of the rich at war with the working classes. A bank owned by private stockholders, whose driving motive was profit, would be less likely to be responsive to the needs of the public than one that was owned by the public and subject to public oversight. Stockholders of a private bank would make their financial decisions behind closed doors, without public knowledge or control.
>
> But Hamilton's plan had other strategic advantages, and it won the day. Besides neatly disposing of a crippling federal debt and winning over the "men of wealth," it secured the loyalty of the individual States by making their debts too exchangeable for stock in the new Bank. The move was controversial; but by stabilizing the States' shaky finances, Hamilton got the States on board, thwarting the plans of the pro-British faction that hoped to split them up and establish a Northern Confederacy.[434]

It is worth pausing at this juncture to observe, in the context of Gover's astrological chart of the Great Depression of the 1780s, what we have:

1. The Continental Congress' scrip was essentially *not* the same thing as Colonial scrip, in that it *was* debt money issued against a

future promise to pay, some of which was a promise to pay in bullion which the colonies did *not* have in abundance. Hence, the Continental Scrip inevitably opened itself to speculation and counterfeiting by the very European and British banksters who held a virtual monopoly on bullion supplies;

2. The inevitable result, as the value of the Continental plunged after the Revolution and the money supply contracted to reflect the scarce bullion supply, was that the post-Revolutionary states could not pay their debt, and an inevitable depression occurred as the supply of money contracted and private debt-holders were not able to service that debt;

3. the result of *this* sequence of events led to the calling of the Constitutional convention, the formulation of the current American constitutional system, and the first chartered private central bank of the United States which issued the facsimile of money based on monetized debt;

4. The alternative fear, which Hamilton voiced, was that “private speculators” would manipulate any new American currency via speculation and counterfeiting, driving it to similar worthlessness, and splitting the new American nation if they themselves were not given some stake in the new currency as a vested class interest.

In short, almost from the beginning of the current constitutional system of America, an uneasy compromise — a *détente* — was struck with the banksters to allow the new nation to survive, and enrich that class in the process. And during all this period, as Gover noted, the planets were in certain alignments….

2. The Depression of the 1870s and the Banksters

The American depression of the 1870s again followed yet another war in American history, the War Between the States. And like the American Revolution, at least one of the leaders of the belligerent parties, as is now well-known, chose to finance his side of the war by issuing state-created debt-free money, i.e., money as *credit on the productive output of the nation.* His name, of course, was Abraham Lincoln, and the fiscal lessons of his presidency and its immediate aftermath are once again worth rehearsing in some detail.

German Chancellor Otto Von Bismarck wrote a curious thing in 1876 about the fiscal policies of the Lincoln Administration:

> I know of absolute certainty, that the division of the United States into federations of equal force was decided long before the Civil War by the high financial powers of Europe. These bankers were afraid that the United States, if they remained in one block and as one nation, would attain economic and financial independence, which would upset their financial domination over Europe and the world. Of course, in the 'inner circle' of Finance, the voice of the Rothschilds prevailed. They saw an opportunity for prodigious booty if they could substitute two feeble democracies burdened with debt to the financiers… in place of a vigorous Republic sufficient unto herself. Therefore, they sent their emissaries into the field to exploit the question of slavery and to drive a wedge between the two parts of the Union…. *The rupture between the North and the South became inevitable; the masters of European finance employed all their forces to bring it about and to turn it to their advantage.*[435]

There was just one problem. President Lincoln refused to go into debt to the private class of banksters to fund the Northern effort in the Civil War. Chancellor Bismarck's comment is worth citing:

> The Government and the nation escaped the plots of the foreign financiers. They understood at once, that the United States would escape their grip. The death of Lincoln was resolved upon.[436]

Bismarck, in other words, in his customary direct way, was simply stating that the "inner circle of European financiers" led by the Rothschilds had had Lincoln murdered as a punishment and message to those who dare presume to challenge their power.

While Lincoln was busily issuing his Greenback debt-free scrip, however, the banksters were busily hatching a scheme of their own in Congress through their own faction. Once again, it is essential to cite Ellen Brown extensively in order to appreciate what the scam was, and how it was effected:

> While one faction in Congress was busy getting the Greenbacks issued to fund the war, another faction was preparing a National Banking Act that would deliver a monopoly over the power to create the nation's money supply to the Wall Street bankers and their European affiliates. The National Banking Act was promoted as establishing safeguards for the new national banking system; but while it was an important first step toward a truly national bank, it was only a compromise with the bankers, and buried in the fine print, it gave them exactly what they wanted. A private communication from a Rothschild investment house in London to an associate banking firm in New York dated June 25, 1863, confided:
>
> "The few who understand the system will either be so interested in its profits or so dependent upon its favors that there will be no opposition from that class, while, on the other hand, the great body of people, mentally incapable of comprehending… will bear its burdens without complaint."
>
> The Act looked good on its face. It established a Comptroller of the Currency, whose authority was required before a National Banking Association could start business. It laid down regulations

> covering minimum capitalization, reserve requirements, bad debts, and reporting. The Comptroller could at any time appoint investigators to look into the affairs of any national bank. Every bank director had to be an American citizen, and three-quarters of the directors had to be residents of the state in which the bank did business. Interest rates were limited by State usury laws; and if no laws were in effect, then to 7 percent. Banks could not hold real estate for more than five years, except for bank buildings. National banks were not allowed to circulate notes they printed themselves. Instead, they had to deposit U.S. bonds with the Treasury in a sum equal to at least one-third of their capital. They got government-printed notes in return.
>
> So what was the problem? Although the new national banknotes were technically issued by the Comptroller of the Currency, this was just a formality, like the printing of Federal Reserve Notes by the Bureau of Engraving and Printing today. The currency bore the name of the bank posting the bonds, and it was issued at the bank's request. *In effect, the National Banking Act authorized the bankers to issue and lend their own paper money.* The banks "deposited" the bonds with the Treasury, but they still owned the bonds; *and they immediately got their money back in the form of their own banknotes.* Topping it off, the National Banking Act effectively removed the competition to these banknotes. It imposed a heavy tax on the notes of the state-chartered banks, essentially abolishing them. It also curtailed competition from the Greenbacks, which were limited to specific issues while the bankers' notes could be issued at will. *Treasury Secretary Salmon P. Chase and others complained that the bankers were buying up the Greenbacks with their own banknotes.*[437]

In other words, what the National Banking Act really did was allow the banksters effectively to outproduce the government Greenbacks in issues of their own debt-bearing banknotes, which the banksters then used to buy Greenbacks and take them out of circulation!

The banksters followed this up in 1873 with the so-called Act that became known popularly as the "Crime of '73," an act which effectively forbade the coinage of silver as legal tender, effectively placing America on the gold standard once again. Predictably, the Act led to a vastly shrunken money supply, unemployment, and the Depression of the 1870s. The result was similar to the bankster-engineered Depression of the 1780s, for it led to a political "revolt" of powerful farmers who formed the appropriately named Greenback Party, calling for the issuance of state-created debt-free money directly, which money was to be used putting people back to work improving the infrastructure of the country.[438] While the Greenbacks never succeeded in placing a national candidate of their own into the White House, their message was heard, and in 1881 James Garfield became President of the United States of America. Garfield proclaimed:

> Whosoever controls the volume of money in any country is the absolute master of all industry and commerce…And when you realize that the entire system is very easily controlled, one way or another, by a few powerful men at the top, *you will not have to be told how periods of inflation and depression originate.*[439]

As Brown notes, "Garfield was murdered not long after releasing this statement, when he was less than four months into his presidency."[440] We shall have occasion to return to a consideration of President Garfield's remarks in a moment, but for now, be it noted, that he has clearly insinuated that the cycles of boom and bust are *artificially created by the banksters, whereas the cycles data assembled by Edward Dewey, and the astrological data assembled by Gover, clearly indicate that such things appear to have much deeper causes than just human actions, and are, to a certain extent, inevitable. So….what is really going on?*

A hint is perhaps gained by the fact that

1. in the cases of both depressions examined thus far, both occurred *after* a major war; and,

2. both occurred after the government in each case decided to fund the war by issuance of debt-free money, bypassing the banksters completely; and,

3. the banksters retaliated against that currency by unleashing various forms of speculation and manipulation against it, through counterfeiting, or by otherwise removing the government's currency from circulation; and

4. in each instance thus far, this resulted in the deliberate tightening of the money supply and a corresponding loss of jobs, production, and an economic depression.

These patterns reach the nadir of their expression in the greatest Depression of them all, the Great Depression of the 1930s.

3. The Great Depression of the 1930s and the Banksters

By the time of the Great Depression, the great struggle between the federal government of the United States of America and the private banksters had finally been won by the latter with the creation of the privately owned Federal Reserve Bank in 1913, and its thinly-disguised police force agency, the Internal Revenue Service, the agency responsible for gathering the newly created federal income tax that was designed specifically to pay the regular interest payments to the banksters loaning money at interest to the government. Then began the deliberately and quietly orchestrated run-up to the Great Depression:

> The problem began in the Roaring Twenties, when the Fed made money plentiful by keeping interest rates low. Money seemed to be plentiful, but what was actually flowing freely was "credit" or "debt." Production was up more than wages were up, so more goods were available than the money to pay for them; but people could borrow. By the end of the 1920s, major consumer purchases such as cars and radios (which were then large pieces of furniture that sat on the floor) were bought mainly on credit. Money was so easy to get that people were borrowing just to invest, taking out short-term, low-interest loans that were readily available from the banks.
>
> The stock market held little interest for most people until the Robber Barons started promoting it, after amassing large stock holdings very cheaply themselves. They sold the public on the idea that it was possible to get rich quick by buying stock on "margin" (or on credit). The investor could put a down payment on the stock and pay off the balance after its price went up, reaping a hefty profit. This investment strategy turned the stock market into a speculative pyramid scheme, in which most of the money invested did not actually exist…. The public went wild over this scheme. In a speculative fever, many people literally "bet the farm."… Homesteads that had been owned free and clear were mortgaged to

> the bankers, who fanned the fever by offering favorable credit terms and interest rates. The Federal Reserve made these favorable terms possible by substantially lowering the discount rate — the interest rate member banks paid to borrow from the Fed. The Fed thus made it easy for the banks to acquire additional reserves, against which they could expand the money supply by many multiples with loans.441

But why, asks Ellen Brown, would the Federal Reserve want to swamp the U.S. economy with an inflated supply of borrowed "dollars" of Federal Reserve notes?

The answer is chilling.

"The evidence," says Brown, "points to a scheme between Benjamin Strong, then Governor of the Federal Reserve Bank of New York, and Montagu Norman, head of the Bank of England, to deliver control of the financial systems of the world to a small group of private central bankers."442 The reason, according to Dr. Carroll Quigley of the Georgetown School of International Relations, and himself an "insider" with access to the banksters' plans, was that during the 1920s, the privately-owned central banks were determined "to use the financial power of Britain and the United States to force all the major countries of the world to go on the gold standard and to operate it through central banks free from all political control…"443 In other words, the scheme, by forcing money to be a reflection of the world's gold supplies, was one of *drastically curtailing the amount of money in circulation as debt*, thus setting off a Depression.

The plan was indeed ingenious for its cold calculation and cunning:

> Norman, as head of the Bank of England, was determined to keep the British pound convertible to gold at pre- [World War I] levels, although the pound had lost substantial value as against gold during World War I. The result was a major drain of British gold reserves. To keep gold from flowing out of England into the United States, the Federal Reserve, led by Strong, supported the Bank of England by keeping U.S. interest rates low, inflating the U.S.

> dollar. The higher interest rates in London made it a more attractive place for investors to put their gold, drawing it from the United States to England; but the lower rates in the United States caused an inflation bubble, which soon got out of hand. The meetings between Norman and Strong were very secretive, *but the evidence suggests that in February 1929, they concluded that a collapse in the market was inevitable and that the best course was to let it correct "naturally" (naturally, that is, with a little help from the Fed).* They sent advisory warnings to lists of preferred customers…telling them to get out of the market. *Then the Fed began selling government securities in the open market, reducing the money supply by reducing the reserves available for backing them. The bank-loan rate was also increased, causing rates on brokers' loans to jump to 20 percent.*
>
> The result was a huge liquidity squeeze — a lack of available money. Short-term loans suddenly became available only at much higher interest rates, making buying stock on margin much less attractive. As fewer people bought, stock prices fell, removing the incentive for new buyers to purchase stocks bought by earlier buyers on margin. Many investors were forced to sell at a loss by "margin calls" (calls by brokers for investors to bring the cash in their margin accounts up to a certain level after the value of their stocks had fallen). The panic was on, as investors rushed to dump their stocks for whatever they could get for them. The stock market crashed overnight. People withdrew their savings from the banks and foreigners withdrew their gold, further depleting the reserves on which the money stock was built….It was dramatic evidence of the dangers of delegating the power to control the money supply to a single autocratic head of an autonomous agency.[444]

Once again, one has, if one compares this evidence with Gover, that as the planets entered certain alignments, certain policies were pursued by the banksters, first, to artificially inflate the money supply, extending easy credit and debt, and then suddenly contracting it, allowing stock prices to fall, and allowing the banksters to snap up real assets for a substantially lower price.

Of course, as all of this was going on, Herbert Hoover was President, and as we have already seen, he quietly commissioned Commerce Department economist Edward Dewey to study the reasons for all these Depressions.

4. Implications

So now let us return to the statements of President James Garfield cited previously, and to the questions they raised.

Recall that he clearly insinuated that the cycles of boom and bust are *artificially created by the banksters, whereas the cycles data assembled by Edward Dewey, and the astrological data assembled by Gover, clearly indicate that such things appear to have much deeper causes than just human actions, and are, to a certain extent, inevitable. So….what is really going on?* In each case thus far examined, as these planetary alignments were occurring, or, more importantly, as a glance at Dewey's cyclic data would indicate, each downturn, and particularly that of the Great Depression of the 1930s, came at a moment when the data suggested that this was more or less *inevitable,* regardless of what actions might have been taken by various governments or banksters.

So let us now make two assumptions, based on the assembled data:

1. The cyclic data of Dewey suggested that a downturn was inevitable precisely during the time of the 1930s Depression, and the cosmological data assembled by Gover suggested a similar inevitability for other depressions in American history; and,

2. The presence, since ancient times, of the close association between the "temple" with its astrological associations and the "banking class" *continued unabated into modern times,* a point readily suggested by the presence of economists of major banks in Dewey's own Foundation. Gover's astrological data, moreover, would be available to any astrologer capable of casting a mundane horoscope, and hence, readily available to anyone so inclined to assemble such charts for comparison with the historical evidences of booms and busts in various economies.

Thus, one is led to an astonished, and rather breathtaking conclusion: it would appear that anyone in possession of such knowledge as Dewey's cycles or astrological data similar to Gover's would be in a position, through careful policy manipulation and the contraction of a money supply based on the facsimile of money-as-circulating-debt, to dramatically exacerbate and capitalize on the overall upward or downward trend of such a cycle. Moreover, *this appears to be exactly what happened in the cases of the three great depressions in American history.*

The exact *mechanism* for these deeper physics influences on human behavior is not here in view, however. It may be the case that certain alignments cause certain *types* of behavior to emerge in the aggregate, which in turn create conditions apt to favor one policy or course of action over another. Or conversely, it may be that certain types of influences block the aggregate ability of humans to perceive the subtle manipulations of these would-be master manipulators, which other types of influences may magnify human perceptual abilities and discretion. We simply do not know how this works. But what we *do* know is that this astrological component and its connection to the banking classes is as old as the civilization with which astrology is associated: Babylon itself. It is an association as old as that of the ancient priesthoods and temples not only with the stars, but with the bullion brokers. It is interesting to note, then, that some allege that the Rothschild family secretly traces its family dynasty back to the Sumerian tyrant Nimrod.[445]

D. IMPLICATIONS OF ENGINEERABILITY: THE ANCIENT ALCHEMICAL CONNECTION

All this implies an "engineerability" to economic *trends*, even if one does not possess the technology or means to engineer the physical medium or thus its *cycles themselves*, for if one possessed a sufficient database to know in advance the inevitable cycles of boom and bust, one may not be able to reverse those cycles, but one could considerably exacerbate or alleviate their overall effect.

The keystone in the arch linking together all these disparate concepts — econophysics, astrology, astronomy, Bohm's and Kozyrev's precursor engineering of causation itself, the bullion brokers, the ancient temples — is alchemy, which in its exoteric aspect is the ability to confect the Philosophers' Stone, a substance that can turn base metals into gold, and in its esoteric aspect is the ability to draw upon the transmutative, information-creating properties of the physical medium itself for the power to create or destroy. In its exoteric aspect, therefore, it would be of immediate concern to the bullion brokers to command such a technology, to prevent any outside force or faction from utilizing such a technology to collapse the artificially-created value of their bullion, and hence ruining their private money-creating power. Similarly, it would be of immediate interest to those wishing to break that bullion brokers' monopoly to command that technology. By the same token, the bullion brokers, by controlling the exoteric aspects of alchemy, would see in it a means to the vastly expanded powers of its esoteric aspect, the ability to manipulate and engineer the physical medium itself, thus including even the cycles of aggregate human behavior and activity. Once that power was restored to them, their iron grip on power would be complete.

So notice the stages which have been observed throughout the previous chapters:

> 1. In the first stage, the bullion brokers resort to a kind of *false* alchemy, i.e., the private creation of credit (and interest debt) by the fiction of ledger credit entry. This is the financiers' alchemical charlatanism, for something has quite literally been created out of

nothing, but that "something" only continues to *be* something of value so long as wider society accredits it as such. It is not genuine information, for it is in fact, in its interest debt creation, the creation of "*negative* information," a black hole of financial entropy that inevitably must suck all creative production into it and let nothing escape; it is a financial cancer that inevitably will consume its host, creating its own death. Lose that confidence, and the value is gone. Thus, the way to sanctify and ensure that "negative value" was to associate their money minting and issuing activities with the sanctity and probity of the various temple priesthoods in each civilization;

2. In the second stage, alchemy is pursued for its own sake, not only to increase or expand the supply of bullion, but also to monopolize that technology lest the too-rapid increase of that supply ruin the value of the privately-created money which they themselves have implemented. In short, they must monopolize this technology lest their money monopoly be challenged by kings intent upon restoring their crown prerogative of money issuance based upon the creative production of their state and subjects. And in order to monopolize it, they must quite literally infiltrate every society and civilization which appears likely to develop it. It is, perforce, and by the nature of the case, an international conspiracy, for it must have an international reach in order to ensure that the economic system remains closed.

3. In the third stage, which is always the ultimate goal, the bullion brokers seek to develop the highest alchemical technology of them all: the ability to engineer the physical medium and its cycles directly. Since alchemy in its *exoteric* aspect is based upon its *esoteric* aspect, i.e., upon the idea of the physical medium as an information-creating and transmutative medium, this technology too must likewise be monopolized, since any rival gaining access to it could successfully challenge their monopoly of money issuance and, more importantly, would have the power to overturn them by force if necessary.

From Morgan’s suppression of Tesla, to Tesla’s own possible independent use of his wireless impulse transmitter technology in a weaponized fashion at Tunguska, to Nazi Germany’s restoration of state-created, debt-free money and to its investigation of this deeper “torsion”-based physics with its Bell project, to ancient Sparta’s and Rome’s attempts to restore economic autarchy and Rome’s burning of Egyptian alchemical books, the pattern is the same:

Wherever there is a private monopoly on the creation of money, there too one finds the inevitable and covert alliance with the temple of science, and a mutual interest in the secret development of the deep alchemical physics of the medium, for that, far beyond the shadowy imitations of international banksters creating ledger credit entries, is the ultimate power to create or destroy.

That alliance with the temple gave the ancient bullion brokers yet another clue on the road to recovering the lost and unified physics: the placement of such temples on the surface of the Earth itself, and the repetitive occurrence within those structures of a sacred geometry known to its priests and initiates…

III.

THE MONSTERS IN THE MACHINE

> *"In their drive to advance the global empire, corporations, banks, and governments (collectively the corporatocracy) use their financial and political muscle to ensure that our schools, business, and media support both the fallacious concept and its corollary. They have brought us to a point where our global culture is a monstrous machine that requires exponentially increasing amounts of fuel and maintenance, so much so that in the end it will have consumed everything in sight and will be left with no choice but to devour itself."*
>
> *— John Perkins, Confessions of an Economic Hit Man, p. xv.*

Seven

SACRED SITES AND SCALAR TEMPLES

THE EARTH GRID AND THE TRANSMUTATIVE MEDIUM

⁂

> *“The modern banking system manufactures money out of nothing. The process is perhaps the most astounding piece of sleight of hand that was ever invented… If you want to be slaves of the bankers, and pay the cost of your own slavery, then let the banks create money.”*
>
> *— Lord Josiah Stemp, former Director of the Bank of England*[446]

> *“The deep attitude of the global, mostly male, corporate gang was expressed by David Rockefeller at the June 1991 Bilderberg meeting in Baden-Baden, Germany, where he argued for ‘supranational sovereignty of an intellectual elite and world bankers, which is surely preferable to the national auto determination practiced in the past centuries.’”*
>
> *— Daniel Estulin, citing David Rockefeller*[447]

There is little doubt that many ancient temples — from Giza to Stonehenge to Teotihuacan in Mexico — are aligned to astronomical phenomena or particular stars or constellations. However, it is equally true, as noted in chapter four, that many of these temples are aligned, or rather, situated, to something else, and that is their peculiar siting on the surface of planet Earth herself. Many researchers, noticing this peculiar placement, have been able to demonstrate that these sites, if viewed as a total system, constitute a kind of “gridwork” or imaginary lattice stretched across the face of the globe. Moreover, these structures, from the Great Pyramid of Giza to the Parthenon in Athens, to the vast and ancient pyramids of Mexico, appear to incorporate measures in their dimensions comprising constants of a “sacred geometry.”

Consequently, in order to grasp the intricate relationships of deep physics and deep finance, one must go yet another step further, for if there was, as has been already seen, a deep and ancient connection between the ancient temples, their priesthoods, and astrology on the one hand and the “bullion brokers” on the other, and if, as has been argued, this connection evinced a hidden motivation on the part of the latter to know and manipulate the physics this portended, then the alignment of these sites and temples, and indeed, their very dimensions, may form yet another clue and data point to be considered. Indeed, researcher Brian Desborough makes some astonishing assertions in this respect:

> Sacred geometry, which comprised the core teaching of any genuine Mystery School of antiquity, *was incorporated into the design of buildings that enabled them to function as resonant cavities, which were attuned to the dynamic energies that pervade the cosmos.* This is the same energy continuum that was harnessed some two thousand years later by Nikola Tesla and other scientific pioneers, who elected to conduct their research beyond the stultifying confines of academia.
>
> The basic tenets of sacred geometry were taught in ancient Mystery Schools, in countries as geographically diverse as India, Britain, and Egypt. *This strongly suggests that such institutions functioned not as individual entities, but rather as a transnational network.* Such a suggestion implies that the more esoterically-oriented … sects operated not as individual religious communities, but were in communication with the Mystery Schools of other nations.[448]

As has been seen, the rise of an international class of bullion brokers closely associated with such temples in ancient times provides a ready mechanism to explain this transnational character of the Mystery Schools, and may have been instrumental in the dispersion of such ideas.

More importantly, however, Desborough clearly alludes to an occulted *physics purpose* that motivated the incorporation of these geometries into ancient temples, for these were, in his words, designed to function as “resonant cavities” or, in a physicist’s language, as “coupled harmonic oscillators” to those “dynamic energies that pervade the cosmos.” In this last statement, Desborough is correct, for as has also been seen, the deeper physics suggested by Kozyrev and Bohm in the perpetual dynamism of the cosmos, with its rotating systems within rotating systems, implies that matter itself arises as a gridwork or interference pattern of the waves produced in the physical medium. As such, matter is a natural resonating cavity of such waves, and in certain geometrical alignments and dimensions, that resonance can conceivably be made to function more efficiently. Desborough’s insight is keen, but unfortunately, neither argued nor substantiated.

So inevitably the question occurs: is there such a gridwork of sites upon the Earth? And do temples in fact evidence a geometry in their very construction that would enable them to function as such resonators?

A. THE MODERN RISE OF EARTH GRID THEORIES

1. Ivan Sanderson

One does not have to read too far into the area of Earth Grid theories to find a veritable overgrowth of wild speculations and fanciful ideas. But the actual modern growth of the theory may best be attributed to the scientific research of some Russian chemists, and a Western scientist interested in “anomalous phenomena,” the famous Fortean researcher Ivan Sanderson. Sanderson was in fact a professional biologist by academic training and background. But in 1972 he published an article for *Saga* magazine entitled “The Twelve Devil’s Graveyards Around the World.”

What Sanderson did was to compile a database of “Bermuda Triangle”-like phenomena of ship and plane disappearances worldwide, and, using modern techniques of communications and geophysical tabulation, plotted these on a map of the globe. These correlated to 12 areas on the globe where magnetic anomalies “and other energy phenomena were linked to a full spectrum of strange physical phenomena.”449 Plotting these strange occurrences on a map yielded 12 regions where such phenomena occurred with a greater statistical occurrence than usual:

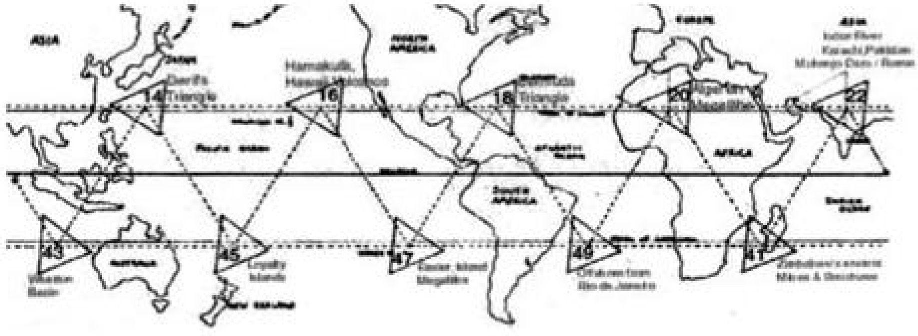
ASIA
Devil's Triangle
14
Hamakulia, Hawaii
16
NORTH AMERICA
18
Bermuda Triangle
EUROPE
20
Algerian Megaliths
ASIA
22
AFRICA
SOUTH AMERICA
43
AUSTRALIA
45
Loyalty Islands
NEW ZEALAND
47
Easter Island Megaliths
49
41

Ivan Sanderson’s Map Showing the 12 “Vile Vortices”

What Sanderson also noted, however, was that some of these areas also included strange megalithic structures. For example, on the map above, in the Pacific Ocean west of South America, one such triangle incorporates Easter Island, with its well-known and very strange stone carvings of gigantic stylized human heads. Another, located in the Algerian desert, also was home to megalithic structures.

2. The Russians Get into the Game

Sanderson’s findings spurred a veritable flurry of activity, as other researchers, notably the engineer and mathematician Carl Munck, quickly noticed that virtually all ancient sites were laid out according to a scheme incorporating some sort of “Earth Grid” including the tenets of sacred geometry and ancient units of measurement such as the “megalithic yard.” No less than the Soviet Academy of Sciences became involved in this effort, when an article, “Is the Earth a Large Crystal?” appeared in its journal *Khimiya I Zhizn (Chemistry and Life)*, authored by a trio of very unlikely collaborators.

One of them, Nikolai Goncharov, was an historian fascinated by the ancient world and its history. Goncharov plotted on a map of the world all the “centers of earliest human culture.”[450] Goncharov then met a construction engineer, Vyacheslav Morozov, and Vaelry Makarov, an electronics researcher. Pooling their resources, the trio, following the lead of some Soviet scientists, suggested the Earth actually began as a crystal “with angular dimension” that only after “millennia of motion and the actions of many forces did the crystal round itself into a ball.” Moreover, because of this, hidden beneath the surface of the Earth, the edges of that crystalline structure were buried and possibly still faintly visible.[451]

Later, researchers Bill Becker and Bethe Hagens expanded on the Russian article with their own version. Hagens described her own reaction to the Russian research, and its implications, as follows:

> I found a picture of the world with a funny lattice work on it. It looked as if someone had put one of Buckminster Fuller’s domes over the planet, and the design caught my eye. As I read the accompanying article…I learned that was indeed what had been done. Three Russians (an engineer, a historian, and a linguist) had found that the dome-like geometric pattern could be aligned on the Earth in such a way that the struts of the dome mapped out major geologic features (such as mountain ranges and river systems), and

> the connecting points for the struts fell at the sites of important ancient civilizations.[452]

Hagens and Becker then expanded on the Russian concept, and produced the following interesting map, which indeed looks like some bizarre creation of Buckminster Fuller:

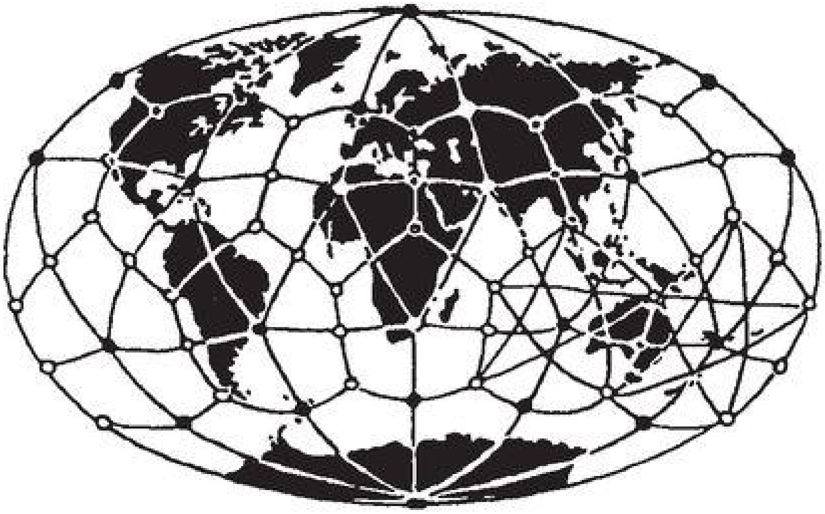

The Original Russian "Earth Crystal"

Flattening the projection, and adding Becker's and Hagen's research to it, yields their Earth grid map:

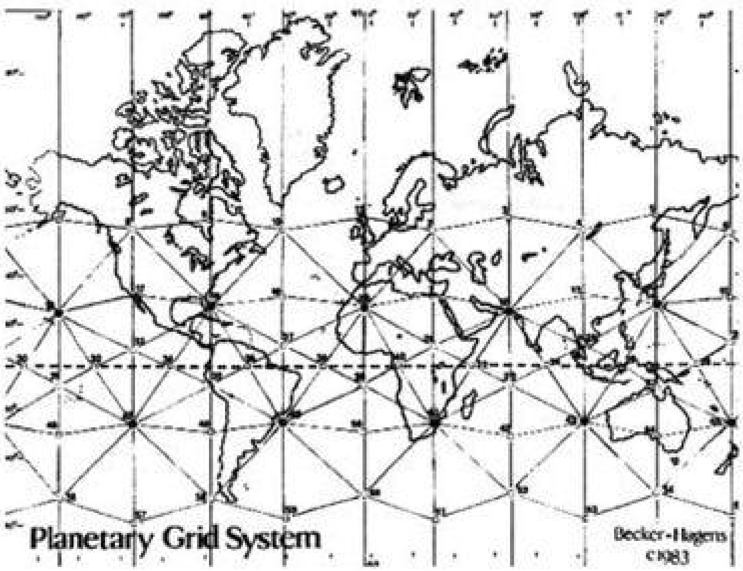

The Becker-Hagens Earth Grid Map of 1983

Looking at this map carefully discloses some rather interesting features. For one thing, the convergence of several lines in the southern Pacific Ocean west of Latin America is, once again, close to Easter Island and its megalithic stone statues. Yet another line runs due north and south through England, close to the celebrated structure of Stonehenge. Yet another node of convergences occurs in Florida, near the well-known Coral Castle, constructed — no one knows exactly how — by Edward Leedskalnin. Finally, yet another node occurs at almost the exact location of the Giza plateau in Egypt. And lest one think this was the fanciful creation of New Age dabblers and cranks, let it be noted that William Becker was a professor of industrial design at the University of Illinois, while Bethe Hagens was a professor of anthropology at the Governors State University of Illinois.[453]

The mention of Buckminster Fuller affords a significant clue into what might be going on with this Earth Grid system. In a series of unusual experiments, Fuller decided to test what sorts of wave patterns might emerge within spheres when subjected to acoustic stress, that is, when subjected to stress of longitudinal waves. Fuller painted the surfaces of balloons, immersed them in water, and then pulsed the water with sound waves of varying frequencies. Fuller discovered that as the spheres vibrated, they set up standing waves on the surfaces of the balloons such that the paint would begin to collect and form lines and grid-like patterns on the surface.[454]

With this one has the conceptual link to the ideas of Kozyrev, Bohm, and others, for if matter is the *result* of the inference pattern of such “longitudinal waves in the medium” (or, as some have called them, “scalar” waves”) and as such is therefore a natural resonator of them, then it stands to reason that as a resonator, such waves will be perpetually established within any planetary body, producing such a gridwork. Small wonder then that Tesla, in his scheme for the beaming of wireless *power* to any part of the globe, found it necessary to “grip the earth,” for such waves, resonating with the ever-changing dynamism of the planets themselves, would be a virtually inexhaustible supply of energy. And small wonder too, that J.P.

Morgan, with his own deep connections to the oil industry and its understanding of energy as a non-renewable closed system of a scarce resource, eventually shut Tesla down.

3. Back to the Nazis

But lest it be forgotten, the first major world power to show an interest in Earth grid theories was not Soviet Russia, but Nazi Germany. As detailed in my previous book *The Philosophers' Stone,* "Himmler's Rasputin," Karl Maria Wiligut, introduced Himmler to the geomantic ideas of Günther Kirchhoff, who believed that there was such a world grid of ancient sites laid out on power points designed to draw energy from the earth itself.[455]

B. DR. KONSTANTIN MEYL’S PALEOPHYSICAL INTERPRETATION OF ANCIENT TEMPLES AS SCALAR RESONATORS

If the conception of matter itself, as a “template” or gridwork of the interference of such longitudinal standing waves in the medium rationalizes, is capable of rationalizing the *placement* of certain ancient temples on the surface of the Earth, what about the incorporation of sacred geometry into their very dimensions?

One scientist who tackled this problem very directly is German physicist and engineer Prof. Dr.-Ing. Konstantin Meyl. Meyl is the author of probably the only comprehensive — and highly mathematical — textbook treatment of the production of such scalar or longitudinal waves in the medium. The title of Meyl’s book, all 654 pages of it, is *Scalar Waves: From an Extended Vortex and Field Theory to a Technical, Biological, and Historical Use of Longitudinal Waves.*[456] For the technically and mathematically minded, this book is a thorough introduction to the theory and practice of scalar waves, if one can get through the sometimes shaky English translation.

Meyl is a scientist who very deliberately and consciously sets out to reconstruct an underlying physics basis — what I have called “paleophysics” in my various books on ancient history and texts — from ancient myths, texts, and temples. And his program, as outlined in the final pages of his book, is a total one.

For example, he reproduces the following table as a summary of his particular way of “decoding” the ancient temples and mysteries:

Ancient temple = short wave station
Dedicated to one god = fixing of the frequency
Supreme god Zeus, = range of the short wave
Father of all gods = all short wave bands
Priest, Representative of the god = amateur radio operator with license to transmit

High priest = chief intendant

Pontifex Maximus, “topmost bridge builder” = Chairman of the authority and the telegraph offices

Oracle = telegraphy receiver

Runes, cuneiform writing = telegraphy symbols

Metre, hexameter = increase of redundancy

Oracle priest = telegraphy interpreter

Tripod = reception key, electroacoustical converter

Looking at intestines, Rite of sacrificing = reading off convulsions, electro-optical converter

Temple books = news notes

Seer, who looks into the God world = amateur radio operator, at telegraphy reception

Homer = Ancient radio operator

Godology = high-frequency technology

God name = RDS, station identification

Members of a family of gods = broadcasting studios of a broadcasting company

•••

Earth radiation = power supply

Homage of a weekday = time restriction of the operation of the station

Zeus forges “thunderbolts” = electrostatic blows, when a Temple is oscillating

Ritual act = technical provision for transmission and reception

Cella (marrow of temple) = tuned cavity

Obelisk = antenna rod[12]

[457]

While this table of comparisons and decodings might at first glance seem highly implausible if not downright bizarre, Meyl minces no words in the explanatory text accompanying this table:

> It shall be proven that already in antiquity radio engineering based on scalar waves has been used. The proof starts with a thesis.
>
> The temples in antiquity were all short wave broadcasting stations. And energy from the field served as an energy source, so e.g. the earth radiation in the case of temples of terrestrial gods. In the case of the solar god the radiation of the Sun was used, whereas for the temples, which were dedicated to the planetary gods, the neutrino radiation arriving from the planets served as an energy source.[458]

Meyl's program, in other words, is a total one. In terms of the context of the hypothetical scenario with which we opened this book in chapter one, however, it is also an intriguing one, for given the close association of the ancient bullion brokers with the temples, they, like their modern counterparts, would have need of a vast communications network, one, moreover like their modern counterparts, that would be faster than those communications available to the common masses. So Meyl's thesis, from one standpoint, fits the needs of the situation perfectly.

It is, however, when Meyl turns to a consideration of the sacred geometry in these temples that his thesis takes on its breathtaking significance. In order to buttress his thesis, Meyl reproduces the diagrams of the floor plans, and in some cases, side views and cutaways, of several ancient temples. We do so here in order to illustrate his thesis, and to set his remarks and commentary into their proper context. Meyl first reproduces the floor plan and front view of the Temple of Zeus in Olympia, showing its use of the Golden Ratio, or Phi (φ=0.61818…):

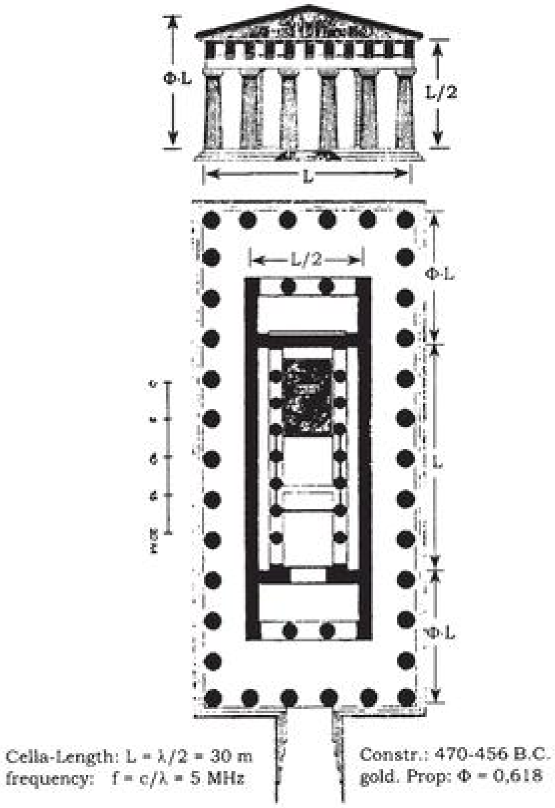
Φ·L
L/2
L
L/2
Φ·L
L
Φ·L
Cella-Length: L = λ/2 = 30 m
frequency: f = c/λ = 5 MHz
Constr.: 470-456 B.C.
gold. Prop: Φ = 0,618

The Temple of Zeus at Olympia, with Meyl's Calculation of its Resonant Frequency[459]

Note Meyl's calculations of the resonant frequency of the Temple on the lower left of his diagram: 5 MHz or 5 Megahertz. On the right, notice how the various dimensions of the Temple reflect the harmonics of the width of the Temple, with the width being designated by L, and the various harmonics of that fundamental being L/2, and φ-L, in a kind of stone chamber version of Dewey's organ pipes from chapter two. This analogy is not as haphazard as it might at first be seen, but in order to appreciate why this is so, more of Meyl's diagrams need to be examined.

The next temple Meyl reproduces is a frontal floor plan and side view of the Temple of Athena Alea, ca. 350 B.C.:

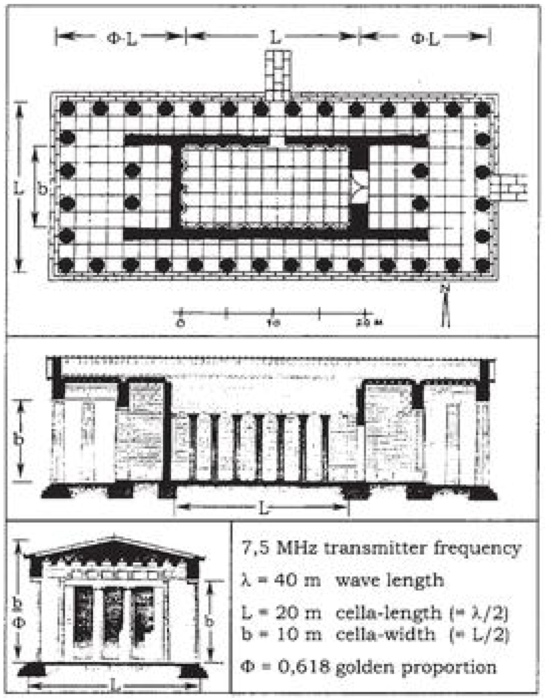
Φ·L
L
Φ·L
L
b
0
10
20 M
N
b
L
b
Φ
b
L
7,5 MHz transmitter frequency
λ = 40 m wave length
L = 20 m cella-length (= λ/2)
b = 10 m cella-width (= L/2)
Φ = 0,618 golden proportion

Temple of Athena Alea, 350 B.C.[460]

Note again that the Temple is laid out on redundant harmonic relationships of a fundamental, L, representing the width of the Temple, again with the harmonic φ-L being a prominent feature of the structure. Note also Meyl's calculations of the resonant wavelength of the structure being 40 meters, with a "transmitter frequency" of 7.5 Megahertz. He reproduces a similar diagram for the Hera Temple of Selinunt, ca. 460 B.C.:

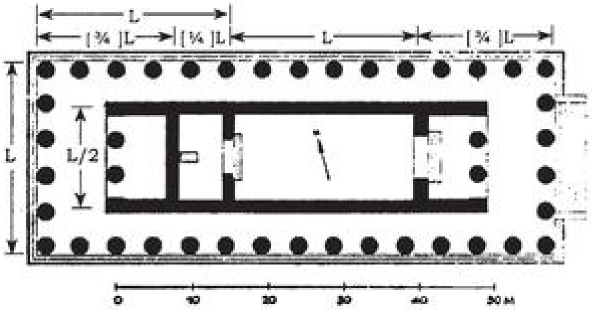
L
[¾]L
[¼]L
L
[¾]L
L
L/2
0
10
20
30
40
50 M

Hera Temple of Selinunt, ca. 460 B.C.[461]

and the Temple of Apollo at Corinth:

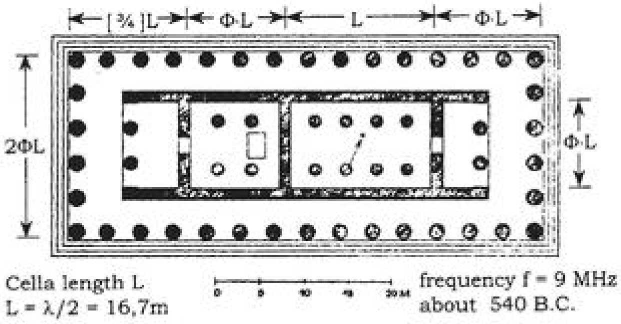
[¾]L
Φ·L
L
Φ·L
2ΦL
Φ·L
Cella length L
L = λ/2 = 16,7m
0 5 10 15 20 M
frequency f = 9 MHz
about 540 B.C.

*Apollo Temple at Corinth*462

Similar harmonic relationships also held true for later Roman temples, such as the temple of Venus and Roma at Rome, ca. 136 A.D.:

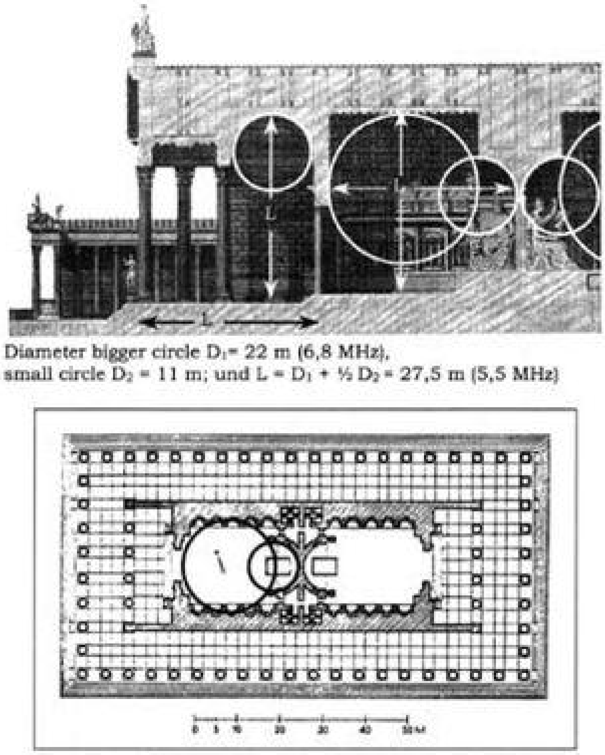
L
L
0 5 10 20 30 40 50 M

Diameter bigger circle D_1 = 22 m (6,8 MHz), small circle D_2 = 11 m; und L = D_1 + ½ D_2 = 27,5 m (5,5 MHz)

*Temple of Venus and Roma, ca. 137 A.D.*463

And finally, of course, there was the temple of temples, the Roman Pantheon itself:

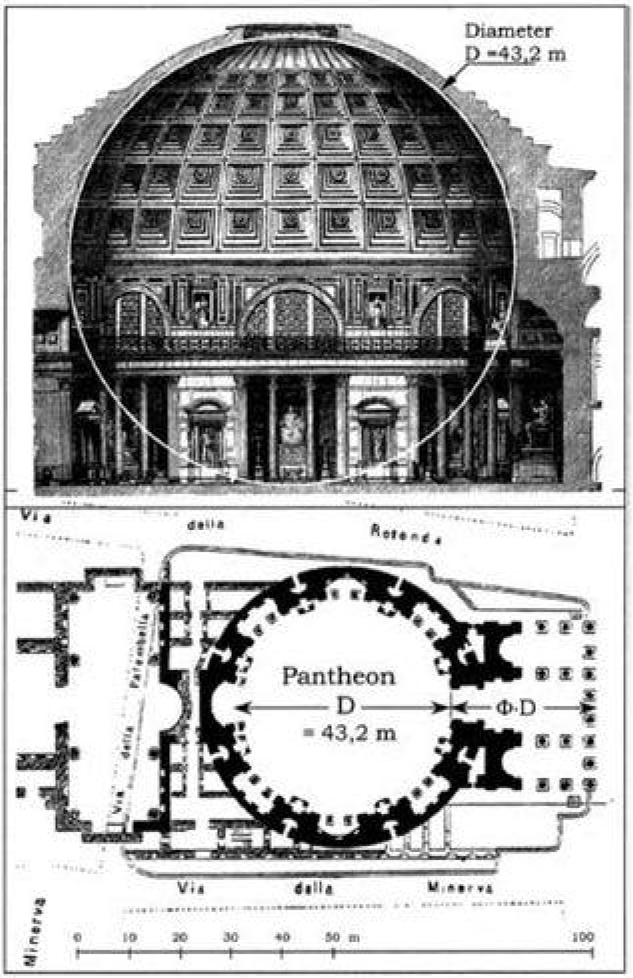
Diameter
D =43,2 m
Via della Rotonda
Palombella
Via della
Pantheon
D
= 43,2 m
Φ·D
Via della Minerva
Minerva
0 10 20 30 40 50 m 100

The Pantheon in Rome[464]

Looking carefully at the floor plan of the Pantheon, however, Meyl noticed something that, to his engineer's eye, looked extraordinarily familiar, and a breathtaking confirmation of his thesis that ancient temples may have been deliberately designed as transmitters and receivers of scalar "radio" waves.

Deciding to see if there were other similar floor plans, Meyl went in search of them, and soon found them, one in the floor plan of a temple in the palace of the Emperor Diocletian:

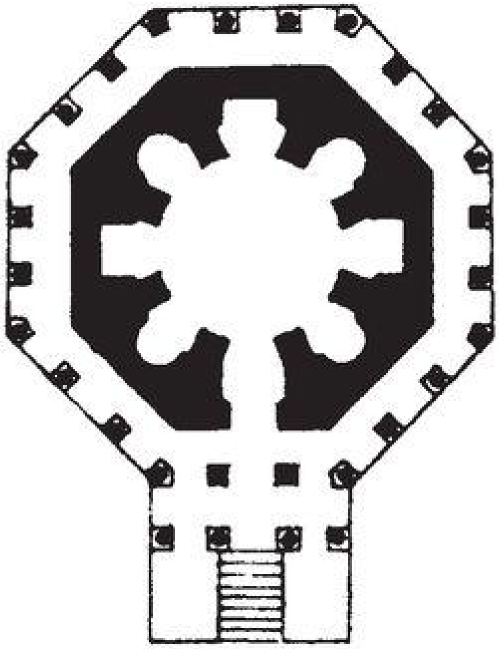

Floor Plan of the Temple in the Palace of Emperor Diocletian[465]
and yet another example in the floor plan of the Temple of Minerva
Medica in Rome, built ca. 320 A.D.:

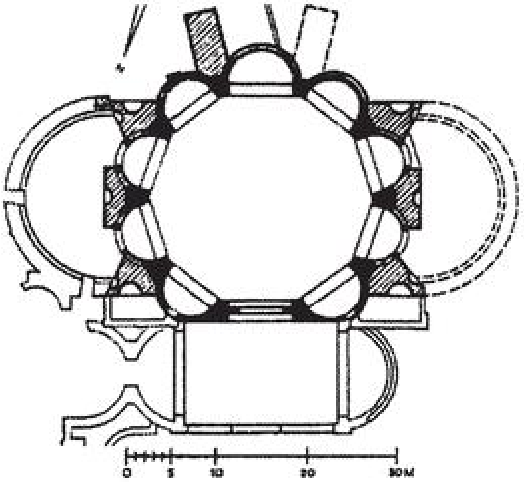

Temple of Minerva Medica in Rome, ca. 320 A.D.[466]

What precisely was so amazing about these floor plans of late Roman temples?

It was their suspicious resemblance to a modern device — crucial in the operation of radios and radars — called a magnetron:

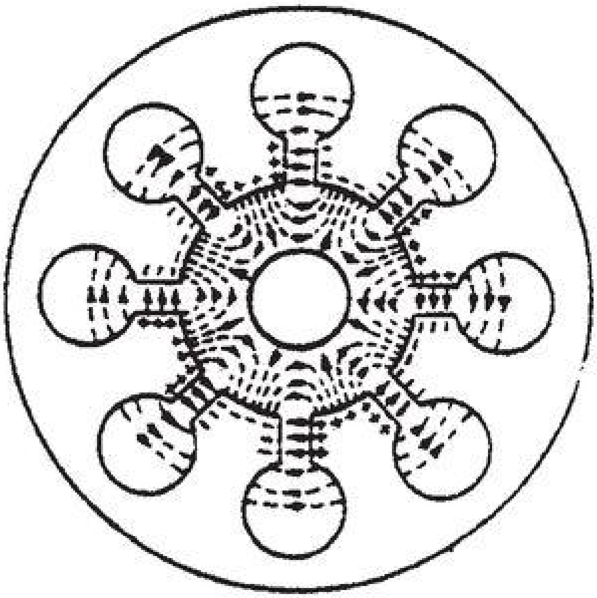

A Modern Magnetron467

Meyl's commentary accompanying these diagrams is now worth citing, for it shows how strong the case actually is that some of these ancient temples, a good many in fact, may have been covertly designed for the precise purposes of long-range communication, using some very advanced notions of physics:

> Let's to some extent proceed from the knowledge of textbook physics currently present in high frequency engineering and give a well trained engineer the following task, which he should solve systematically and like an engineer. *He should build a transmitter with maximum range at minimum transmitting power*, thus a classic of optimization. *Doing so, the material expenditure doesn't play a role!*
>
> After mature deliberation the engineer will hit upon it that only one solution exists. He decides on a telegraphy transmitter at the long wave end of the short wave band, at f=3 MHz, which corresponds to a wavelength of λ=100m. There less than 1 Watt

transmitting power is enough for radio communication once around the earth….

And he optimizes further. Next the engineer remembers that at high frequencies, e.g. for microwave radiators, not cables but waveguides are used, since these make possible a considerable better degree of effectiveness. In the case of the waveguide the stray fields are reduced by alignment and concentration of the fields in the inside of the conductor. In the case of antennas however the fields scatter to the outside and cause considerable stray losses. He draws the conclusion that his transmitter should be built as a tuned cavity and not as an antenna!

As a result the engineer puts a building without windows in the countryside with the enormous dimensions of 50 m length (=λ/2) and 25 m (=λ/4) respectively 12.5 mm (=λ/8) width. The height mhe calculates according to the Golden Proportion to increase the scalar wave part. *Those approximately are the dimensions of the Cella without windows of Greek temples.*

For the operation of such a transmitter in antiquity apparently the noise power of the cosmic radiation was sufficient, which arrived at the earth starting from the sun and the planets. By increasing the floor space also the collected field energy and the transmitting power could be increased, so that also from the perspective of the power supply the temple with the largest possible wavelength at the same time promised the largest transmitting power, so at least in antiquity.

Our engineer further determines that he will switch the carrier frequency on and off at a predetermined clock pulse. Thus he decides for radiotelegraphy. The advantage of this technique is a maximum of the increase of the reception range. For that the signals at the transmitter have to be coded and at the receiver again deciphered. By means of the encryption of the contents these are accessible only to the “insiders,” who know the code; *prerequisite for the emerging of hermeticism and eventually a question of power!*[468]

This leads Meyl to his next bit of evidence, or rather to the next stage of his decoding of the ancient data pointing to the existence of a genuine technology at work: ancient texts.

Meyl, having demonstrated the peculiar transmitter-receiver properties of many ancient temples, then uses the existence of this technology to decipher a baffling mystery concerning ancient texts:

> Direct evidence is present as well. It can be found in ancient texts. But it is questionable if historical texts concerning ancient radio engineering have been translated correctly. The talk is about oracles, mystery cult and earth prophecy if the receiver is meant. The predominantly technically uneducated historians attest (that) the Romans (possessed) a defective sense of time, because their couriers surely could not cover the long ways across the Roman empire so fast at all, if the read in the Latin texts: “They sent by courier to the emperor in Rome, and got for answer…”. The answer of the emperor namely already arrived at the squad at the latest in the following night. The correct translation should read: “they cabled” or “they broadcasted to the emperor in Rome and got for answer…”
>
> Such a big empire as the Roman Empire actually only could be reigned by means of an efficient communication. Cicero coined the word: “We have conquered the peoples of the earth owing to our broadcasting technology…”! The term broadcasting technology from ignorance is translated with piety. If engineers however rework the incorrect translations, then one will discover that numerous texts tell of the broadcasting technology, that thus correspondingly much direct evidence exists concerning the practical use of this technology.
>
> For the Roman military transmitters, which formed the backbone of the administration of the empire, the reading off of the information from observations of nature like the bird flight or from felt signals of a geomanter was too unreliable. They read off the information from the rhythm of the convulsions of the intestines of freshly slaughtered animals. In the case of the dead animals on the

> altar every extrinsic influence was excluded. But the enormous need of slaughter cattle was a disadvantage. Who wanted to have information first of all had to bring along an animal, which then was "sacrificed" to the god, or better say, which was abused as a receiver of a particular transmitter. Thereby the innards served as a biosensor and as a receiver for the news.[469]

In other words, an extraordinarily sensitive membrane had to be found to be able to sense and record the very subtle pulses of such transmissions and telegraphy, for they were by the nature of the case, very weak.

Whatever one makes of these speculations of Meyl, he is, however, correct in his basic premise that the design of ancient temples is too coincidentally peculiar to the engineering requirements of transmitting weak radio signals. Nor should the *material* used to construct such temples be overlooked, for many of them were constructed from limestone, granite, and other crystal-bearing rock, and the ability of crystals in receiving radio signals is common knowledge.

But why does he invoke the scalar component in his argument that such temples were, in fact, tuned resonant cavities? The key lies with what seems to be the most absurd component of his reconstruction, namely, the use of the membranes of an animal's intestines to record the pulses, for the pulses being received are *not* ordinary Hertzian "jump rope" waves, but the "yardstick" waves of *longitudinal or scalar waves:*

> The argumentation has to be made on mathematical-physical foundation. The prerequisite for that are the 29 chapters of before.[470] The following points could be demonstrated and derived:
>
> 1. The wave equation (inhomogeneous Laplace equation) describes the sum of two wave parts, where
>
> 2. every antenna emits both parts.
>
> 3. The transverse part, known as electromagnetic wave (Hertzian wave)

4. and the longitudinal part (Tesla radiation) termed scalar wave by the discoverer, better known as antenna noise.

5. The wave equation mathematically describes the connection of both wave parts in general and the conversion of one part into the other in particular, thus

6. the rolling up and unrolling of waves in field vortices (measurable as noise).

7. The transition takes place proportionally to the Golden Proportion, as resulted from the derivation (chapter 29.7-29.9).

With the last point the electrotechnical problem becomes a geometrical problem, if it concerns the use of scalar waves. The geometry of the antenna is crucial. *Thereby the Golden Proportion provides the necessary direction for construction.*

That justifies the assumption that the buildings in antiquity, which were built according to the Golden Proportion, were technical facilities for scalar waves. Maybe the builders had specifications that had physical reasons and could mathematically be proven.

At this place here result completely new aspects for judging and interpreting buildings especially from antiquity through the derivation of the Golden Proportion from the fundamental field equation. If we have understood their way of functioning, then we will be able to learn much from that for our own future and for the future construction of scalar wave devices.

As a further prerequisite for the ancient broadcasting technology enough field energy should be at disposal. We proceed from the assumption that

1. the earth magnetism and the cosmic neutrino radiation are tightly banding together by the processes in the earth's core,

2. the earth magnetism in antiquity verifiably was (approximately a) thousandfold stronger than today (proven by gauging of pieces of broken pot),

> 3. as a consequence the neutrino radiation in antiquity as well must have been (a) thousandfold strong and
>
> 4. the cosmic neutrino radiation has served the transmitting plants of antiquity as an energy carrier.

Any thought is absurd to reject the technical function of a temple only because it today can’t be reproduced anymore. The artistic and aesthetical viewpoints, which are put into the foreground by art historians because of ignorance about the true function, rather are secondary.[471]

And with those rather breathtaking statements, Meyl’s case for the ancient temple as being a broadcast technology based on longitudinal pulses or scalar waves is concluded.

However, in view of my own speculative analysis of the Earth grid itself as being the *result* of its natural properties of being a resonator of such standing longitudinal waves, one is inevitably led to the conclusion that *both* the use of “sacred geometry” in the construction of such temples, *and* the placement of some of these temples over precise nodal points on that gridwork was for the explicit and precise purpose of making these structures as efficient resonating cavities as possible. When one adds to this the fact that the resulting template or interference pattern of such longitudinal waves, produced by all such resonators, such as the planets, vary with time according to their positions relative to each other, and to the cosmic backdrop of the galaxy, one again finds a physics reason why so many of these very same temples were oriented to astronomical points or events.

To put it succinctly, it is beginning to look an awfully lot like that Very High and Very Ancient Civilization, having blown itself apart by means of those very same technologies, moved quickly and effectively to preserve as much of that technology as it could in the establishment and propagation of the ancient temples and mystery schools, and moved equally quickly to ensure that its legacy civilizations knew and understood the necessity — if there was to be any kind of civilization at all — for there to be a medium of exchange based upon the creative and productive output of the physical medium itself, and of its derived and differentiated creatures: man. Little wonder, too, that those who sought to reconstruct that technology in order to gain mastery and hegemony over their fellow man quickly allied themselves with those temples and mystery schools, and begin to pervert that physics in a financial and false alchemy that created the exact opposite: “negative information” in the form of money-as-debt interest, for by means of that closed system of finance, they purposed to reconstruct that open system of physics for themselves, to ensure their power and hegemony.

For with living organisms — as Dr. Meyl himself alluded to — and more importantly, mankind, one arrives at the final component and resonant cavity of this form of energy: human DNA, and its own remarkable embodiment of the very same “Sacred Geometries.”

Eight

TEMPLATES, GENOMES, AND BANKSTERS OR, WHY DO THEY ALL SEEM TO MARRY COUSINS AND END UP WITH COLOSSALLY STUPID KIDS?

∴

> *"Inbreeding in European royal families has declined slightly in relation to the past. This is likely due to clear scientific evidence of genetic degeneration."*
>
> — *"Inbreeding," Wikipedia*[472]

Both in ancient and in modern times we have discerned the persistent outline of an association of an international class of banksters with those engaged in advanced scientific research, and we have also seen that this class has endeavored to monopolize not only the false alchemical power of the issuance of debt as a facsimile of money, but also to monopolize the genuine alchemical power of the physics of the transmutative physical medium itself. But what about the period *between* these two widely separated historical poles? Did that class continue to exist? And if so, what were they doing? Is there evidence to suggest that it continued as a class in more or less uninterrupted continuity from ancient times? And is there evidence to suggest that it continued its close association and monitoring of scientific achievement?

Moreover, it was seen that some allege that the Rothschild family secretly traces their family origins back to the Sumerian conqueror Nimrod. Is there any truth to, or for that matter, any broad corroboration of, these allegations?

A. ANCIENT ROME

To answer these questions, a closer look at ancient Rome is in order.

Professor Tenney Frank was a professor at Johns Hopkins University at the turn of the last century, and was the author of a well-known treatise, *An Economic History of Rome.* This work became such a standard in the field that it became the basis for entries in the *Cambridge Ancient History* and the *Oxford History of Rome.*

In the course of his researches, Professor Frank discovered an interesting thing about the population of ancient Rome during the period between the Republic and the final emergence of the empire, and that is that the population was not Roman or Latin at all, but — in a word and without much exaggeration — Babylonian. In an article written for the *American Historical Review,* Frank begins by noting how the problem of the ancient Roman race came to his attention. Visiting the ancient tombs of Rome, Frank observes that the historian will notice a curious and even peculiar thing:

> …he finds prenomen and nomen promising enough, but the cognomina *all* seem awry. L. Lucretius *Pamphilus*, A. Aemilius *Alexa,* M. Clodius *Philostoasgas* do not smack of freshman Latin. And he will not readily find in the Roman writers now extant an answer to the questions that these inscriptions invariably raise. **Do these names imply that the Roman stock was completely changed after Cicero's day, and was the satirist (Juvenal) recording a fact when he wailed that the Tiber had captured the waters of the Syrian Orantes?** If so, are these foreigners ordinary immigrants, or did Rome become a nation of ex-slaves and their offspring?[473]

Frank's tentative answers are even more unsettling than the original questions he asks. Studying almost 14,000 names, Professor Frank discovered that between 300 B.C. and 300 A.D., the population of Italian Rome underwent a drastic change in ethnicity, such that by the end of the period, the vast majority of the Italian Roman population had Greek surnames, and not Latin at all:

> For reasons which will presently appear I have accepted the Greek cognomen as a true indication of recent foreign extraction, and since the citizens of native stock did not as a rule unite in marriage with (freemen), a Greek cognomen in a child or one parent is sufficient of status (i.e., was foreign).[474]

Professor Frank quickly dispatches the idea that this was simply due to a "popularity" craze of certain names:

> On the other hand, the question has been raised whether a man with a Greek cognomen must invariably be of foreign stock. Could it not be that Greek names became so popular that, like Biblical and classical names today, they were accepted by the Romans of native stock? In the last days of the empire this may have been the case, but the inscriptions *prove* that the Greek cognomen was not in good repute. I have tested this matter by classifying all the instances in the 13,900 inscriptions where the names of both father and son appear. Form this it appears that fathers with Greek names are very prone to give Latin names to their children, whereas *the reverse is not true.*[475]

Thus, the conclusion for Professor Frank was rather obvious:

> Clearly the Greek name was considered as a sign of dubious origin among the Roman plebeians, and the freedman family that rose to any social ambitions made short shrift of it. For these reasons, therefore, I consider that the presence of a Greek name in the immediately family is good evidence that the subject of the inscription is of servile or foreign stock. **The conclusion of our pros and cons must be that nearly *ninety per cent* of the Roman-born folk represented in the abovementioned sepulchral inscriptions are of foreign extraction.**[476]

But this posed a rather large problem, and to see what it is and how Professor Frank dealt with it, we need to recall a bit of obvious history.

The problem is the mere presence of a Greek surname on tomb inscriptions does not necessarily mean the occupant is *Greek.* The simple reason for this is that after Alexander the Great's conquest of Mesopotamia, Persia, and Egypt, the Greek language spread far and wide, and became something of an "international" language, much as English or French is today. Thus, a Greek surname on a tomb does not necessarily imply that all these Roman tombs had Greek occupants. But this raises a far larger and more significant question. If they were not necessarily Greek, then what were they? What was the predominant ethnic stock they represented? Frank minces no words:

> Who are these Romans of the new type and whence do they come? How many are immigrants, and how many are of servile extraction? *Of what race are they?*[477]

Frank's method of dealing with this question is to take Rome's classical authors and satirists at their word, and from this, an important and very significant fact emerges.

Noting that "most of the sociological and political data of the empire are provided by satirists," Frank then reasons himself to a rather astonishing conclusion:

> When Tacitus informs us that in Nero's day a great many of Rome's senators and knights were descendants of slaves and that the native stock had dwindled to surprisingly small proportions, we are not sure whether we are not to take it as an exaggerated thrust by an indignant Roman of the old stock…. To discover some new light upon these fundamental questions of Roman history, I have tried to gather such fragmentary data as the corpus of inscriptions might afford. The evidence is never decisive in its purport, and it is always, by the very nature of the material, partial in its scope, but at any rate it may help us to interpret our literary sources to some extent. *It has at least convinced me that Juvenal and Tacitus were not exaggerating.* It is probably that when these men wrote a very small percentage of the free plebeians on the streets of Rome could

> prove inmixed Italian descent. *By far the larger part, perhaps ninety percent, had Oriental blood in their veins.*478

One has only to read a bit between the lines to see what Professor Frank is implying, for Juvenal, let it be recalled, had complained of the Syrian “Orantes” river “flowing into the Tiber,” a metaphor for people of Chaldean — i.e., *Babylonian* — extraction having “flowed” into the bloodlines of the ancient Roman stock: “These dregs call themselves Greeks,” he complains, “but how small a portion is from Greece; the River Orantes has long flowed into the Tiber.”479

The basic historical outlines are now clear, for as Roman conquests spread into the eastern Mediterranean and eventually conquered the old Seleucid Empire — i.e., the portion of Alexander’s empire based in Mesopotamia with its capital at Babylon — many of these peoples made their way back to the Italian peninsula as slaves, and, following the relatively lenient Roman custom of manumission of slaves upon the death of their owner, these later became freemen and the backbone of the Roman economy in the very lap of the Empire itself.

1. The Change in Roman Racial Stock and Imperial Policy

This brings us to the economics and finance part of the story, the part that is for our purposes, the most significant part:

> There are other questions that enter into the problem of change of race at Rome, for the solution of which it is even more difficult to obtain statistics. For instance, one asks, without hope of a sufficient answer, why the native stock did not better hold its own. Yet there are at hand not a few reasons. We know for instance that when Italy had been devastated by Hannibal and a large part of its population put to the sword, immense bodies of slaves were brought up in the East to fill the void; and that during the second century B.C., when the plantation system with its slave service was coming into vogue, the natives were pushed out of the small farms and many disappeared to the province of the ever-expanding empire. Thus, during the thirty years before Tiberius Gracchus, the census statistics show no increase. During the first century B.C., the importation of captives and slaves continued, while the free-born citizens were being wasted in the social, Sullan, and civil wars. Augustus affirms that he had had a half a million citizens under arms, one-eighth of Rome’s citizens, and at that the most vigorous part. During the early empire, twenty to thirty legions, drawn of course from the best free stock, spent their twenty years of vigor in garrison duty while the slaves, exempt from such services, lived at home and increased in numbers. In other words, the native stock was supported by less than a normal birthrate, whereas the stock of foreign extraction had not only a fairly normal birthrate, but a liberal quota of manumissions to its advantage.[480]

The result of this combination of bad policy, wars, and heavy reliance on slaves, was that the original Roman race — at least on the Italian peninsula — “went under.”[481]

However, there were two significant things that this importation of Mesopotamian slaves accomplished. First, these slaves brought with them, of course, their culture and religion. Secondly, they brought with them their “Babylonian” business and banking practices. Thus, even when this population were slaves, the great majority of the normal practical day-to-day commerce of Rome — farming, construction, instruction, and so on — was conducted by slaves. And when freed, not only did their religion and culture penetrate Roman society to a significant degree, but this group gradually penetrated the highest reaches of the Roman imperial government itself.[482] The result, in short, was that the Mesopotamian and Syrian merchants effectively colonized Rome’s provinces bordering the Mediterranean Sea, Roman banking was all but monopolized in their hands as the influence of Mesopotamian mystery cults extended throughout the Empire, and the activities of the temple continued to be associated with commerce. In a certain limited sense, then, the Roman Empire may be viewed as but the latest imperial front for that ancient class of “bullion brokers,” and this change of the ethnic stock in the heart of the Empire, the Italian peninsula itself, finally, explains why the bullion exchange policies of Rome vis-à-vis the Far East appear to be the product of deliberate manipulation.

2. The Next Stage: Venice and Banking

A quick glance at the subsequent history of this class will show the connections to modern time, for the next stage in this connective history was provided by Attila the Hun who, ravaging the Italian peninsula and even Rome itself, forced many of these mercantile families to flee northward to the protective lagoons and marshes of what would later become the Middle Ages' center of commerce and banking in western Europe: Venice. In the very early ninth century, Venice was formally recognized as a part of the Eastern Roman Empire, and thus began its rise as a financial power, for it was granted special trading and tax exemptions throughout the Empire.

But the pattern, a mercantile and banking class operating behind special imperial privileges, remained the same. As noted in chapter four, however, the Fourth Crusade eventually captured Constantinople, and with that, the Empire's monopoly on the right to coin gold was broken, and western European monarchs began to coin such money. But it was Venice that had funded the mercenary army of French knights that captured Constantinople, and it was the Venetian Doge, Enrico Dandolo, that imposed a puppet Latin government on the ancient Eastern Empire. By this point, the great Venetian oligarchical families and their family *fondi* or fortunes (literally, “funds”), were in place: the Cornaro, the Dandolo, the Contarini, Morosini, Sorzi and Tron fortunes.

3. On to Amsterdam, London, the Reformation, and the Wars of Religion

Researcher Webster Tarpley, in three short paragraphs, outlines the connection of Venetian banking and politics in subsequent European history during the Reformation and Counter-Reformation, and the period up to the English “Glorious Revolution”:

> Why are the British liberal imperialists called the Venetian Party? Well, for one thing, they call themselves the Venetian Party. The future prime minister Benjamin Disraeli will write in his novel *Conningsby* that the Whig aristocrats of 1688 wanted “to establish in England a high aristocratic republic on the model of Venice, making the kings into doges, and with a ‘Venetian constitution.’”
>
> During the War of the League of Cambria of 1509-17, an alliance of virtually every power in Europe threatened to wipe out the Venetian oligarchy. The Venetians knew that France or Spain could crush them like so many flies. The Venetians responded by launching the Protestant Reformation with three proto-stooges — Luther, Calvin, and Henry VIII. At the same time, (Cardinal) Contarini and his Jesuits made Aristotle a central component of the Catholic Counter-Reformation and the Council of Trent, and put Dante and Piccolomini on the Index of Prohibited Books. The result was a century and a half of wars of religion, and a “little dark age,” culminating in the Great Crisis of the seventeenth century.
>
> Veince was a cancer consciously planning its own metastasis. From their lagoon, the Venetians chose a swamp and an island facing the North Atlantic: Holland and the British Isles. Here the hegemonic Giovanni party would relocate their family fortunes, their *fondi*, and their characteristic epistemology. France was also colonized, but the main bets were placed further north. First, (Cardinal) Contarini’s relative and neighbor Francesco Zorzi was sent to serve as a sex advisor to Henry VIII, whose raging libido would be the key to Venetian hopes. Zorzi brought Rosicrucian

> mysticism and Freemasonry to a land that Venetian bankers had been looting for centuries….483

Reading between the lines, one notes again the familiar and shadowy pattern of the ancient bullion brokers’ alliance with the temple, in this case, the temple of Renaissance Catholicism and nascent Protestantism, for one and the same financial power is behind both, and manipulating a conflict for its own profit. More importantly, one notes another sinister and familiar pattern, that of David Rockefeller’s “republic” of a global elite of intellectuals and bankers at the apex of a pyramid of power.

B. THE MYTH OF THE ROTHSCHILD DESCENT FROM NIMROD: A SECOND LOOK

All this provides an interesting context in which to view the allegations that the Rothschild dynasty secretly traces its family origins back to Nimrod, the conqueror of the Old Testament closely associated with the Tower of Babel incident.[484] The careful reader will have observed throughout this and preceding chapters that there are at least *three different types of historical continuity operating:*

1. The alleged continuity of a bloodline or family, as is alleged for the Rothschilds and their secret family descent from Nimrod, and hence, from the Babylonian “bullion brokers”;
2. The continuity of *methods:* alliance with and operation through the temple, cultivation of science and suppression of certain scientific and technological advancement, the promotion of the facsimile of money as circulating privately-created debt, and the policy of such families to intermarry within their own class and, in some cases, their own bloodlines; and,
3. The continuity of *class, culture, family fortunes,* and even — in the obvious descent of Venetian banking from the Oriental stock of slaves imported to Rome — of *ethnic stock.*

Viewing this list, it is evident that so far as the Rothschild Nimrod allegation is concerned, there is a broad corroboration of the pattern as is evident from points 2 and 3. But is there anything more specific that would tend to corroborate point 1, or at least, suggest that it might be true?

Indeed there is.

The famous register of nobility in Britain, *Burkes’ Peerage,* records numerous instances of members of the European Rothschild clan marrying each other. For example, it records that Evelina de Rothschild, daughter of Lionel Nathan Baron de Rothschild and Charlotte de Rothschild, married Ferdinand James Anselm Rothschild, who was the son of Anselm Salomon Rothschild and Charlotte Rothschild.[485] Salomon Albert Anselm

Rothschild was son of Anselm Salomon and Charlotte Rothschild, and married Bettina Caroline de Rothschild, daughter of Mayer Alphonse de Rothschild and Leonora de Rothschild.[486]

But interestingly enough, in the midst of this consanguineous interbreeding warren, Alphonse Mayer Rothschild and Clarice Sebag-Montefiore had a son, born in 1922, to whom they gave the peculiarly Jewish-Christian-"Babylonian" name of Albert Anselm Salomon Nimrod Rothschild.[487] The child died only 16 years later, in 1938.

Of course, one male heir in all of the proliferating Rothschild warren is hardly conclusive, but it is suggestive that the name had *some* significance for the clan known only to itself. But there is something else that suggests that the allegation must be taken seriously. Among the banking clan's vast financial network, there is one financial group that raises the eyebrows, and this is the "Rothschild Nemrod Diversified Holdings" group.[488] The name "Nemrod" is of course yet another phoneticization of the name "Nimrod," since the biblical character's name, in ancient Hebrew, was written without vowels as simply NMRD. It can thus be phoneticized as Nimrod, Nimrud, Nemrod, Nemrud, and so on. The use of the biblical conqueror's name for a mutual fund investment group thus connotes aggressiveness, risk-taking, and an intention to dominate and conquer (by financial means, of course).

By why the evident obsession of such families — witness the Rothschild dynasty — with marrying distant relatives and members of their own clans and classes? The answer to that question requires a closer look at human DNA, at its own remarkable connections to sacred geometries and the alchemical physics of the medium, and at the family tree of Nimrod himself.

C. HUMAN DNA AND THE HERMETIC CODE

1. The I Ching

Ancient esoteric doctrine held that mankind was a "microcosm," a "little universe" who mirrored in his very constitution — i.e. his size, shape, makeup, and most importantly, in his unique combination of a corporeal component (a body) and a spiritual, or if one prefers, "hyper-dimensional," component (his soul and personhood[489]) — the larger universe.[490] British researcher Michael Hayes, taking this doctrine seriously, decided to examine it more closely, and as a result, found a breathtaking connection between the code of sacred geometry and the fascination with certain numbers, and human DNA.

> In order to give myself a kind of visual aid, an image of the code in action, I had drawn up a diagram incorporating the key numbers of the biochemical components involved in the process. These were 4, 3, 64, and 22. That is, there are four kinds of chemical bases. It takes three of them to make what is known as a triplet codon, an amino acid template, of which there are exactly sixty-four variations. Each of these codons correspond to one or another of twenty-two more complex components, namely, the twenty amino acids and the two coded instructions for starting and stopping the process of synthesis. In my diagram, the number 64, the number of triplet-codon combinations (4 x 4 x 4), was represented by a square grid, eight divisions across and eight down, like a chessboard.[491]

Once he had done this, however, Hayes noticed a very odd and striking connection to one of esotericism's oldest systems of divination — the Chinese I Ching: "I realized, in fact, that the whole diagram echoed the format of the famous Chinese work known as the I Ching (Yi King), whose sixty-four basic texts are each identified with a six-line symbol called a hexagram."[492]

But how does Hayes' table and its numbers of 4, 3, 64, and 22, resemble the I Ching in particular, and the Hermetic Code of sacred geometry in general? Hayes explains:

> The I Ching….was intended for use as an oracle: you pose a question, toss three coins, and note the way they fall. A preponderance of heads gives an unbroken line — “yang,” positive; tails a broken line, “yin,” negative….

The results are written down as a solid or dashed line.

> Repeat the action six times and you have called up one of the hexagrams. The accompanying text supplies your answer.493

In other words, repeating the action six times and writing down each result — a broken or solid line — one above another will produce a picture of solid and broken lines (of which there are only 64 possible results). The pictogram or hexagram is then looked up in a book which has a text explaining the divinatory properties of each hexagram.

But where do the other numbers — 4, 3, and 22 — fit into this pattern?

> Let’s begin with the number 4, the number of fundamental chemical bases in the genetic code (adenine, thymine, guanine, and cytosine) upon which the whole process of amino-acid synthesis depends. The I Ching, I discovered, embodies exactly the same principle. The sixty-four hexagrams are actually constructed from four, basic, two-line symbols known as the Hsiang. These in turn were derived from the two fundamental lines, one broken and one unbroken, known respectively as yin and yang.
>
> Next, the number 3. The genetic code, as was evident, obeyed the law of three forces, which is why only triplet codons are evident in the process of creation. The three forces are inititially represented in the Book of Changes by the two original yin (negative, female), yang (positive, male) and neutral, the third, invisible, or “mystical” ingredient: the tao….494

Hayes recalls his reaction to this discovery:

> By this time, having recognized so many similarities between the I Ching and the genetic code, I was convinced that I was on to something of profound importance, and my emotional state

> reflected this: I was highly charged. No way, I thought, could the identical features of these two apparently disparate systems be the product of mere coincidence, for they were not only identical in structure, it seemed that they each had a common purpose, which was to facilitate the process of evolution.[495]

So far, so good.

But what about the number 22? Was there some correspondence between the I Ching and DNA involving this number? Hayes puts the problem this way:

> Now these hexagrams, as I said earlier, just like the biochemical hexagrams of the genetic code, each consist of two trigrams, two three-line symbols, one above, one below. The trigrams, eight in number, were derived from the four Hsiang, by successively placing over each of them the two original broken and unbroken lines. When these same two lines are placed over the eight trigrams, the result is sixteen figures of four lines. Repeat the process once again and you get thirty-two figures of five lines, and a final similar movement produces the sixty-four hexagrams.
>
> Unlike the four- and five-line figures, the eight trigrams, known as the kua, are given particular prominence in the system. I mused over these for a long time, juggling with their numbers. Eight threes. Three eights. Twenty-four. I needed twenty-two. Close, but not close enough. Certainly the number 8 was an integral part of the overall symmetry, being the square root of that magical 64; but why did the sum of the trigrams not conform to the twenty-two codon signals of the genetic code? Why twenty-four? Why eight? [496]

The answer came when Hayes recalled that the numbers 4, 3, 64, 8 and 22 were significant components to the Hermetic Code and sacred geometries of the *West*, and more particularly, had a direct connection to *music*.

The number 22 was a key number of the Pythagorean system “principally because of its musical aspect.”[497] What it represented was in fact “three octaves of vibrations, or notes, three sets of eight — twenty-four components."498 But where does 22 come in?

The answer is very simple. If one sits at a keyboard instrument, and begins with the note "C," and goes upward eight notes using only the white keys, one will arrive back at "C" an octave higher, exactly eight notes later. Repeat the process again, and at the sixteenth note above the original, one arrives back at "C," and again a third time, and one arrives back on the twenty-fourth note, which is once again "C." But since two of these "C"s are but repetitions of the original "C," one might think of the three octaves as embodying the number 22, as well as 24.499

The implications of this were enormous, and Hayes was quick to perceive what they were:

> From that time onward, the summer of 1984, I spent several years exploring the mazelike annals of history. I automatically assumed that, if the Chinese and the Greeks were "tuned in" to this ancient science… then it was probably that so were some of the other traditions and civilizations…. As it turned out, the evidence was overwhelming. Everywhere I looked I saw musical symbols beaming back at me: every known major religion and esoteric tradition in recorded history had embraced this science…. Here in fact, was the missing common factor I had long felt existed, that magical ingredient that had given religious movements the power to affect the minds and hearts of billions in such a profound and extraordinary way. They were all unerringly based on the principle of harmony, a harmony that it echoed in, literally, every single cell of our bodies, in our DNA and in the genetic code. This is, therefore, a natural harmony…500

In other words, the numbers of the Hermetic Code or Sacred Geometry appeared to be a legacy of a long-lost civilization, predating all the high civilizations of the classical era — the Sumerian, the Egyptian, the Mesopotamian, the Chinese — and the *essence* of that code was not only musical, but genetic. It was, as Hayes concluded, a "natural harmony," and DNA itself *was a natural resonator and transducer of it.*

But with the idea that it represents a “natural harmony,” one also encounters yet another problem, a problem which reveals exactly how extraordinarily sophisticated the ancient Hermetic Code actually was. As I noted in my first book on alternative science and history, *The Giza Death Star*, the naturally occurring harmonic series is *not* what one encounters on a keyboard. To see what the problem is, we have to perform a simple experiment to demonstrate what physicists (and musicians!) know as the harmonic series.

Let us imagine one is sitting at the keyboard of an acoustic piano. Press down the note “C” silently with one hand, then strike the same note “C” an octave or two lower with the other hand. One will hear the open strings of the silently pressed note “C” vibrating sympathetically with the silently pressed note. This “Octave” is called the first harmonic or “overtone” of the fundamental “C” (the struck note). Now, repeat the experiment, only this time, press down the note “G” silently, but strike the note “C” an octave or two below it. Again, one will hear the note “G” vibrating sympathetically with the struck “C.” G is the second overtone or harmonic of the fundamental “C,” and, one notes that the interval has decreased, “G” being what musicians know as the interval of the *fifth* from C (counting up five notes from C, with C as “1,” gives G as the fifth). If one keeps repeating the experiment, with the intervals growing smaller and smaller, then the next overtone will be a *fourth* up from G, which is another “C.” The next interval is a major *third,* the note “E,” then the next interval is a *minor* third, the note “G.” But now we encounter the problem, for the *next interval, which occurs* ***naturally,*** is *not* present on the keyboard, for it is the interval *between the minor third and the major second*, or in other words a note lying *between B flat and A natural, or lying “in the cracks” on the keyboard between those two notes.*

This interval was known to the ancients, and in fact is called the “Pythagorean Comma,” for the Pythagoreans were well aware of it. Yet, *as Hayes has pointed out, the analogy between ancient esoteric schools and* *modern science only works on a* ***modern keyboard***. So what's going on here?

Briefly — and a thorough explanation of this relationship would require a book in its own right — what happened within Western music, *precisely as a result of the rediscovery of the esoteric tradition during the Renaissance,* was that that tradition was *applied to music* and to the tuning of musical instruments, particularly keyboards, so that the naturally occurring harmonic series was deliberately *tampered with,* and a slight mathematical adjustment was made to the notes of the musical scale, so that each note was exactly an equal interval apart, allowing *all notes to function as overtones of all other notes,* and thus allowing a piece of music to change keys during a piece to the most distant keys without having to stop and retune the whole instrument! This "tampered keyboard" ushered in the era of modern Western music, beginning with Vivaldi, Scarlatti, Rameau and J.S. Bach, who even celebrated its arrival by composing a piece of music called *The Well-Tempered Clavier,* or to put it bluntly, *"The Well-TAMPERED-WITH Keyboard."* Rather than each note now having its own unique harmonic series which did *not* overlap with other notes, each note now could function as any harmonic of any other note. *This, and not Maxwell's electromagnetic theory, was the first unification in physics, for now, rather than an infinite number of "notes" each with their own unique harmonic series, one had only 12 notes, each of which could function as harmonics of all the others.* The modern system of music had originated, in other words, with a slight adjustment in the system of *measurement* of musical intervals.

This little musical detour now exhibits a profound implication, for what it really implies is *that the ancients knew of this musical system, and, moreover, knew that it held some connection to DNA itself.* This is a profound indicator that the esoteric and Hermetic Code is a legacy of a very sophisticated scientific, and musical, culture.

Hayes is quick to appreciate the implications of these considerations in terms of modern quantum mechanics and its view of quantum reality as being a non-local, interconnected universe. Not surprisingly, the physicist whom he chooses as an example to illustrate this harmonic interconnectedness of systems in a very deep, non-local hyper-dimensional reality, is David Bohm!

> In an attempt to explain the principle of nonlocality and the idea of a vast web of interconnectedness permeating the whole universe, the University of London physicist David Bohm posited the existence of what he called quantum potential. He saw this as a new kind of energy field that, like gravity, pervades the whole universe, but whose influence does not weaken with distance.
>
> Bohm first recognized a possible indication of this quantum potential through his work on plasmas, gases comprising a high density of electrons and positive ions (atoms with a positive charge). He noticed that the electrons, once they were in plasma, began to act in concert, as if they were all part of a greater, interconnected whole. For example, if any impurities were present in the plasma, it would always realign itself and trap all foreign bodies in an exclusion zone — just as a living organism might encase poison in a boil. Bohm observed also a similar, orchestrated mass movement of electrons in metals and superconductors, with each one acting as if it "knew" what countless billions of others were about to do. According to Bohm, particles act in this way through the influence of the quantum potential, a subquantum force matrix that somehow coordinates the movement of the whole.
>
> It appears that when plasmas are rejecting impure substances and regenerating themselves, they look very similar to swirling masses of well-organized protoplasm. This curious "organic" quality led Bohm to comment that he often had the impression that the electron sea was, in a sense, "alive." He possibly did not intend this to be taken too literally, that the electron mass was living in the same way as an amoeba, but the evident highly coordinated symmetries of the plasma convinced him that the electrons were responding to one of many "intelligent" orders implicit in the fabric of the universe.501

Hayes comments on these observations and their implications, drawing attention to the "interlocking" nature of all phenomena via the property of resonance:

> The whole universe is perpetually in motion and all wave/particles are continuously interacting and separating, which means that the nonlocal aspect of quantum systems in a general characteristic of nature. Clearly this represents, in the physical world, a harmony of the highest possible order. It is one thing to say that the universe is a harmonious entity because it is constructed entirely upon the eightfold chromodynamic and atomic matrices, but nonlocality suggests that there exists a far deeper interconnecting harmony underlying all physical phenomena, where everything is resonating at the very same subquantum frequency, everything is "in tune" with every other thing,[502]

exactly as if it were one of the "notes" on a well-tempered cosmic keyboard, functioning as an overtone to all other notes in a vast and interconnected harmonic series.

And here, DNA enters the picture, for as Hayes has demonstrated, DNA would appear to be, in some sense, a "well-tempered" clavier for the whole system, or, exactly as the ancients understood mankind, a "microcosm." But is there any correlation between modern science and this ancient esoteric doctrine?

Indeed there is.

In my book *The Philosophers' Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter,* I referred to a scientific paper by Freeman W. Cope entitled "Evidence from Activation Energies for Super-Conductive Tunneling in Biological Systems at Physiological Temperatures," a title guaranteed to make the eyes glaze over, unless one considers the profound implications hidden behind the dull scientific prose. But first, the dull scientific prose:

> In the present paper, evidence for another class of solid-state biological process is given. It is suggested that *single-electron tunneling between superconductive regions may rate-limit various nerve and growth processes. This implies that micro-regions of*

> *superconductivity exist in cells at physiological temperatures, which supports theoretical predictions of high temperature organic superconduction.*
>
> Superconduction is the passage of electron current without generation of heat and hence with zero electrical resistance. Such behavior has been observed only in inorganic materials and only at temperatures below approximately 20°K, although theory predicts that superconduction might occur in organic materials at room temperatures. The conduction of electrons *across interfaces* between adjacent superconductive layers behaves differently from current across ordinary solid junctions. Electron-tunneling currents across interfaces between superconductive layers or regions have been predicted and demonstrated to have a particular form of temperature dependence…
>
> *…Little…has suggested DNA as the sort of biological molecule along which electrons might superconduct…*[503]

In *The Philosophers' Stone,* my focus was on the enormous implications of DNA superconductivity, but here, our interest is on the other aspect of the phenomenon noticed by Cope: electron *tunneling.*

The quantum tunneling phenomenon may be briefly understood by an illustration of what actually happens in quantum tunneling. Imagine one has an impermeable and impenetrable barrier, such as the wall of a biological cell, or a thick wall between two rooms, or even imagine the barrier as being the medium of space-time itself. Now, imagine a packet of waves approaching this barrier, like the interference pattern of two radar beams being bounced off the barrier and reflected back to the radar sets that generated the packet. But according to the wave equations of quantum mechanics, at the exact moment that this packet hits the barrier and is reflected *back* to the sets, a faint *"echo"* of that oncoming wave packet actually emerges on the *other* side of the barrier at the same instant, and travels away from the barrier; in short, the oncoming signal "tunnels" through the barrier — in almost wormhole-like fashion — and its "echo" emerges on the other side and travels away from the barrier, 180 degrees opposite of the reflected signal traveling back to our radar sets. And, as Cope notes in the section of the article cited above, DNA acts as exactly the sort of organic molecule that is able to accomplish this feat! It is as if an organic life form was a complex system being held together by superconductivity and quantum tunneling, a vast biological "non-local network" of tunneling nerve impulses. If so, then this might explain the basis of paranormal phenomena such as remote viewing, for DNA as such would interact *directly* with the information content within the field of the local physical medium.[504]

With this, then, we have the final component of that ancient technology and science — the genetic and biological — and with it, we return once again to the banksters, and why they seem inordinately interested in learning its secrets.

D. THE ANCIENT CONTACT: THE ROTHSCHILD NIMROD MYTH IN A WIDER CONTEXT

If DNA is such a resonator and transducer of the information content in the local field of the physical medium, it stands to reason that *some* specific genotypes will be more efficient resonators of it than others. We are told in countless ancient texts, from the Bible to the Sumerian epics to the Hindu epics of India to the legends of the Japanese “Yamato” peoples to the legends of Mesoamerican Indians, that at some point of time lost in the mists of “prehistory,” the “gods” came down and mingled with men, siring children of human women. In many of these legends, moreover, these ancient “civilizing gods” were self-evidently white Caucasians; again, this is a common feature of such myths from Mesoamerica, to the South American Incans, and even ancient Japanese legends.

Whatever the truthfulness of these claims might be, we have seen that, since ancient times, an international banking class has consistently aligned itself with the temple, both with a view to giving their financial activities the sanction of the probity of the temple and thereby cloaking their actions, but also with a view to accessing the residues of that lost science and technology and potentially reconstructing and reconstituting it. And one such component, since the times of ancient Sumer and Babylonia, is surely their Sumerian epics’ insistence that at least *some* of humanity descends from such “divine” ancestors and their intermarriages with humans. And given the laws of genetics, it is possible that, with a broad enough database, the outlines of such a genetic intermingling might eventually be discovered.

Such a database is, finally, within modern man’s grasp, with the Human Genome Project. While many researchers point out the obvious and deadly potential that such a project entails for the design and engineering of race-specific bio-weapons, I am bold to suggest that there might be yet another hidden purpose, namely, to find and isolate those genotypes within humanity that point to a possible “extraterrestrial” connection. Again, the myth of the Rothschild descent from Nimrod — himself a product of such intermarriages if one consults the Sumerian records — suggests that one such banking dynasty is aware of this connection.

And indeed, as researchers Glen Yeadon and John Hawkins have noted, there is a deep connection between the Human Genome Project and the hidden hand of the Anglo-American international bankster class, and a deeper connection to the American eugenics movement with its own white-supremacist overtones:

> Currently, [the Cold Spring Harbor Laboratory] is a leader in the human genome project. While the genome project will undoubtedly provide many future medical benefits, it could equally provide weapons of mass destruction, such as bioweapons or even more evil genome-specific bioweapons. The *Project for the New American Century* [PNAC] describes genome-specific weapons as politically useful tools. PNAC serves as the blueprint for the George W. Bush administration, with many members closely associated with PNAC.
>
> With the Bush administration's disregard for human rights and the ban on nuclear testing, *it is cause for alarm to find Cold Spring Harbor firmly controlled by the same families involved in the American eugenics movement. Current directors William Gerry and Allen Dulles Jebsen are the grandsons of Averill Harriman and Allen Dulles, respectively. When such policies and organizations slip under the control of families like the Bushes and Rockefellers* they can be used as modern-day weapons of genocide.[505]

While the close association of "the same old families" with the genome project is a cause of concern, and for the same reasons Yeadon and Hawkins suggest, within the wider context of *this* book the close association of these families with the project calls forth concern for more than the reason they elicit, for it would appear that, once again, these families are trying their best, through all the vast network of foundations, grants, corporations and other fronts at their disposal, to learn and reconstruct as much of that ancient science, and perhaps of their own family history, as possible.

With DNA, we have the last component of the physics puzzle, the other pieces being, as was seen, the data of recurrent economic cycles, the peculiar correspondence of astrological alignments with economic depressions, the idea of a deep connection between the physics of the medium and the false alchemy of the banksters. We have seen the persistent efforts of some nations to free themselves from the influence of that class, and, in Nazi Germany's case, the attempt also to crash develop the paradigms of a new — and very old — physics. We have seen the persistent association of the banksters with religion, with the temple, and in turn, the persistent association of the ancient temple with astronomical alignments, with positioning on a global grid, and with the peculiar incorporation of "scalar physics" into the very design and dimensions of ancient temples.

So now, it is time to assemble the pieces together, and explain what's going on, and to offer a speculative explanation of *why* it's going on…

Nine

THE BANKSTERS’ REAL BUSINESS THE PATTERN OF WAR, SCARCITY, SUPPRESSION, SLAVERY AND MONOPOLIZATION

⁂

> *“In the course of the next several decades, a functioning structure of global cooperation, based on geopolitical realities, could thus emerge and gradually assume the mantle of the world’s current “regent,” which has for the time being assumed the burden of responsibility for world stability and peace. Geostrategic success in that cause would represent a fitting legacy of America’s role as the first, only, and last truly global superpower.”*
>
> — *Zbigniew Brzezinski*[506]

The fact that so many ancient temples heretofore surveyed show evidence not only of a profound association with the stars through their astrological alignments, and with the physics of the medium through their incorporation of sacred geometries and their location on an “earth grid” over nodal points of standing waves within local space, but also with international banking through the prominent association of moneychangers with those temples, is an indicator that at a deep and profound level — perhaps as a legacy of the Very High Civilization from which they sprang — these classical civilizations through their marriage of banking and astrology preserved the dim memory of a lost science that unified physics, economics, and finance.

A. THE HISTORICAL PATTERNS OF SUPPRESSION

Moreover, we have presented evidence that this class existed in more or less unbroken continuity, both racially and ethnically, and, in terms of the methods and policies it has pursued throughout history. Additionally, suggestive allegations were presented that at least one member family of this class — the Rothschilds — trace their lineage directly back to one of the Sumerian elite, Nimrod.

In this, at least the methods surveyed have been consistent:

1. The basic methodology of the banksters, both in ancient and in modern times, has been to substitute one notion of money for another, and thereby to usurp the power of the state to create and issue money and substitute a private monopoly for its creation. In the former instance, the idea of money is that of a receipt for goods and services on the productive output of the state itself. In other words, money is “real” money and is a unit of information, of exchange, based on the creative activity of a whole state. It is thus issued by the state itself, and free of any interest-bearing debt. In the latter case, money is “false” money, or what we have called a *facsimile o*f money, issued by a private monopoly and bearing debt interest, and circulated *as* money. The facsimile of money, in other words, is a debt-bearing note, and debt, under such a system, can only increase and never be repaid. In the first instance, it is to be noted, money represents the creation of *information*, i.e., units of exchange, *issued in proportion to the productive output of a state, and as such, the unit of exchange represents real information in the physical world.* In this instance, the connection between *finance and physics is direct and overt, and easily perceived.* It is therefore an analogue of the actual alchemical and transmutative properties, ultimately, of the physical medium itself. In the second instance, however, money represents almost *the exact opposite,* since it represents not production but an interest-bearing *debt,* a kind of “negative information” that can only and must inevitably grow at a rate exponentially faster than the productive output of the state. It

bears, in other words, no relation to physical reality. It is a kind of false alchemy, a financial black hole into which the productive output of a state is inevitably sucked, and from which it *can never emerge, unless the very underlying idea of the facsimile of money is clearly repudiated and rejected.* The system of the facsimile of money is, in other words, deliberately designed to enhance and enrich only those who control its issuance, and can never serve the broader public good because it is not *designed* to do so.

a. In the methods pursued to replace money by the facsimile of money, the bankster class, as we have seen, has invariably and throughout the centuries consistently followed a well-worn playbook, namely, the creation or counterfeiting of the real money of a state to undermine public confidence in it, or, in some cases, it has purchased the state's money issuance and taken it out of circulation, leaving only its own debt-bearing notes to circulate as a medium of exchange.

b. As we have seen from the historical examples presented in preceding pages, whenever a leader or a state has attempted to reject the principle of the facsimile of money, the international bankster class has mobilized those states it *does* control *through* that practice to make war against such "breakaway" states, or alternatively, the leaders of states advocating such policies of return to state-issued money as credit, are curiously murdered with a consistency that belies mere coincidence. In this respect, the following exemplars were mentioned in previous pages

1. In modern times:

a. The manipulation of the collapse of the issuances of the Continental Congress during the 1780s by a return to the "gold" or "bullion" standard, which greatly contracted the American money supply, causing a depression, during a period when planetary alignments always seem to suggest economic collapse or contraction;

b. The assassination of President Abraham Lincoln for issuing debt-free Greenbacks to finance the northern effort during the American War Between the States, and the subsequent National currency act following a similar manipulated depression, which itself occurred during similar planetary alignments;

c. The assassination of President James Garfield mere months into his presidency, after he had suggested his willingness to return to state-created and -issued debt-free money;

d. The manipulation of the American money supply prior to and during the Great Depression, first by vastly expanding credit, and then by vastly contracting the money supply, again at a juncture when planetary alignments indicated economic turmoil, and, as was seen, when Commerce Department data supplied by Edward Dewey indicated an inevitable cyclic downturn.

e. Some researchers, as was seen in the previous pages, implied that the war against Nazi Germany had a secret purpose, for the banking elite of the West, having aided Adolf Hitler’s and the Nazis’ rise to power, were quickly alarmed by Nazi Germany’s deliberate moves to restore state-issued debt-free money and by her efforts to explore alternative paradigms of physics that would lead to her energy independence and self-sufficiency;

f. Finally, and as many researchers have noted, President John F. Kennedy was murdered a mere five months after his issuance of an executive order authorizing the U.S. Treasury to print $4,000,000,000 worth of debt-free United States Notes, bypassing the privately owned and controlled Federal Reserve Bank completely.

2. Similarly, in ancient times, the following was noted:

a. the policies of Rome vis-à-vis its trading partners in the East regarding the value of gold and silver bullion strongly indicated manipulation at both ends of the trading routes, manipulation ultimately favorable to any class controlling bullion supplies;

b. Similar policies of issuance of false receipts or counterfeits of government currencies were noted, with the ultimate issuance of debt-bearing bullion-backed notes of debt by a private monopoly, particularly in the case of ancient Babylonia.

c. In the case of Sparta, it was also noted that it alone of all the ancient Greek city-states resisted this financial policy, a fact which led ultimately to the Peloponnesian War and to the eventual succumbing of Sparta to these policies and the class behind them.

2) Similarly, both in ancient times and in modern ones, we have noted a persistent association of the banking class with the following things:

a. In ancient times, with religion, i.e., the *temple*. The temple, in ancient times, was in turn associated with the following things:

1. With astronomy and astrology, i.e., with the “science” of forecasting human events;

2. With sacred geometries, embodied both in the dimensions of the structure, and in their placements and alignments on an earth grid;

3. With the issuance of *money*, both in the forms of real money, and its facsimile as interest-bearing debt;

4. With slavery.

b. In modern times, with not only religion, but with science and scientists determined to break *out* of the paradigm of energy scarcity being based on non-renewable resources, and who were seeking to develop new physics paradigms, with new energy technologies.

c. And in modern times, we saw evidence of corporate and banking interest in the vast database indicating a correlation and correspondence between economic cycles, and cycles of purely *physical* activity, cycles that, in Dewey’s estimation, were inevitable *because they were due to deeper underlying physical reasons and not simply the result of policy or aggregate human action.*

But the question, highlighted in this fashion, only remains: *Why* are they persistently associated with these things? Why *does* one find banksters manipulating such drastic curtailings of money supply when both cyclic data and astrological lore would indicate that such downturns were inevitable?

The answer to these questions requires that we now assemble all the *physics* pieces of the puzzle, outlined in the preceding pages, into a single catalogue, determine their underlying principles, and then correlate these with the above patterns of bankster activities and policies. Only then does the disturbing answer and picture of their motivations and possible agenda emerge.

B. THE PHYSICS, THE FINANCIAL ALCHEMY, AND THE BANKSTERS

1. Assembling the Pieces

Looking back over the assembled physics and financial data of previous chapters, the following salient features emerge:

1. According to Dewey and Dakin and the Foundation for the Study of Cycles, economic activity occurs in cycles of boom and bust, and these cycles are exact analogues to physical *longitudinal* waves of sound, i.e., of compression and rarefaction. As such, these cycles are in a certain sense inevitable and impervious to human action, but the overall downward and upward *trend* of a cycle can be dampened or exacerbated by human policy and activity;

2. Dewey and Dakin also posit that a deeper physics may lie behind such economic cycles, a fact loosely corroborated by Nelson's study of the variations in radio signal propagation and planetary alignments, and by Gover's study of American depressions which seem to occur near astrological alignments called grand crosses. It was also noted that the grand cross pattern mentioned by Gover also closely corresponded to the type of planetary alignments noted by Nelson in his RCA study;

3. All of this was further corroborated by the Global Scaling Theory of Dr. Harmut Müller, who noticed that physical objects themselves — including human social and demographic activity — clustered around certain nodal points of standing waves in logarithmic space. Müller went on to posit that these nodal points may indicate a real physics of the physical medium, i.e., that such clustering was due to the interference of longitudinal waves in the physical medium itself. On this view, Müller's theory is very close to the views of ancient alchemy which posits that the physical medium is a *transmutative* medium, creating information in its differentiations which in turn become the physical objects of creation. As was noted, Müller's theory came to the attention of the German Institute for Space Energy Research, which applied his

theories to note the deep physics behind human social action and organization;

4. Similar views of matter *as a template or interference pattern of such waves* were expressed by quantum and plasma physicist David Bohm;

5. Since in these views matter is the result of a template or interference pattern of such waves in the medium, large masses such as planets and stars are *natural resonators* of such waves. Stars in particular are resonators of such waves, since, as *rotating balls of plasma* (which in turn, according to David Bohm, exhibit phenomena of “self-organization” and response to the “intelligent” instructions of the physical medium) they act as efficient natural resonators of the medium. As Richard C. Hoagland noted, it appears that the ancient societies, with their emphasis on stars as “portals” or “gates” to higher dimensions, preserved a legacy of this deep physics;

6. As natural resonators of these standing waves in the medium, it was also noted that planets set up within themselves a gridwork or template of such wave interference patterns on their surfaces, which, it was posited, may be the physical basis for the evidence of an “earth grid,” and of the placement of ancient sites and temples over these nodal points. A similar claim was made by Tesla for his wireless transmission of power facility on Long Island called Wardenclyffe. According to Tesla, in order for his system to work, it was necessary for it to “grip the earth”;

7. As Dr. Konstantin Meyl also noted, many such temples themselves appear to be constructed in their dimensions to be natural resonators of such waves. Meyl posited that such temples actually functioned as a means of instantaneous radio communications by means of scalar waves, using the sensitive membranes of slaughtered animals to register and measure the pulses of such waves; and finally,

8. As noted by British researcher Hayes, DNA appears to be designed along the same lines and principles of sacred geometry and the hermetic code. As such, DNA itself would seem to be a natural resonator of such waves.

2. The Underlying Principle

Examining each of these eight points, an obvious underlying physical principle of action is implied, which may be reduced to three components:

> 1. All action within the physical medium of space-time itself is constituted of longitudinal waves of compression and rarefaction within it;
>
> 2. These in turn give rise to matter, which in the form of planets and more importantly, stars (or *rotating plasma*), are natural transducers of such waves; and,
>
> 3. A system of such masses — i.e., a solar system — will, in its constantly changing dynamics, both resonate to and in turn give off an ever-changing dynamic and interference pattern or template of such waves, forming, perhaps, the ultimate and now lost scientific basis of astrology. In this, since DNA would seem to be a natural resonator of such interference patterns or templates, through long process of observation — the precise claim made for astrology in ancient Sumeria — it may have been possible to predict human response, via DNA, to such patterns *in the aggregate,* as Dewey and Dakin suggested, and as the influx of physicists with their analytical methods into economics and finance in the latter half of the twentieth century implies.[507]

a. The Reasons for the Banksters' Ancient Associations with the Temple

We are now, at last, in a position to see why at least in ancient times one finds the persistent pattern of the presence of "bullion brokers" or "banksters" with the temple, for with the astrological and oracular preoccupations of those temples, this would give such a class immediate access to

> 1. *prediction,* i.e., advance knowledge of cycles of human activity and emotional responses;

2. *communication,* for if Meyl's hypothesis should be borne out by subsequent scientific investigation and experiment, access to the temple would have given them access to a means of virtually instantaneous communication across a great part of the world's surface;

3. This in turn would have thus afforded them a means to concerted and coordinated activity and *social manipulation,* a coordination we saw was strongly suggested by the bullion policies of ancient Rome vis-à-vis the Far East; and finally,

4. If one assumes the truthfulness of the scenario of an ancient and cosmic war outlined at the beginning of chapter one, access to the residues of this lost science via a close association with the ancient temple would have also given the banksters the means, ultimately, to *recover and reconstruct* the technologies of hegemony and mass destruction that are implied by that scenario, technologies which in turn are based on exactly the same *type* or paradigm of physics.

It will be evident from the foregoing list that this pattern has persisted into modern times; witness only the close association of Morgan with Tesla, and Morgan's eventual *suppression* of Tesla. There are countless other such examples, of course: ITT's suppression of Philo Farnsworth's successful plasma fusion experiments, the suppression of Dr. Ronald Richter's "fusion" experiments in Argentina,[508] and on and on the list could go. The same pattern holds, as well, during the "interim" period *between* ancient and modern times, for during that period, one finds the persistent interest of the royal houses in Europe in *alchemy,* the ability to transmute base metals into gold. The reasons are now evident, for the private issuance of the facsimile of money as an interest-bearing debt note took from them the most ancient prerogative of governments and kings: the issuance of debt-free money on the productive output of the state.

The motivations are clear enough from the *physics,* for at one and the same time the banksters were trying to recover that ancient physics, and with it, the genuine financial alchemy of state-created money. The banksters, for their part, are also found during the interim period, and at both the modern and ancient poles of the story, resorting to a kind of false alchemy of debt, a kind of “negative financial information,” while they are simultaneously and very quietly funding certain scientists who hold the promise of unlocking that ancient physics. Witness only Isaac Newton’s preoccupations with alchemy, his membership in the Masonically controlled and inspired Royal Society, and the close connection of all these parties with the Dutch bankers that quietly and quickly assumed control of England’s money.[509]

3. The Possible Agenda

The careful reader will have noticed an immediate implication of the previous considerations, and that is that, as far back as ancient times, the persistent agenda of the bankster class, the international “bullion brokers,” has been coordinated action that aimed at a global reach, with ever larger and larger empires being created, provoking ever more wars, and ever more business for themselves. And thus we end where we began, in modern times, and the persistent and consistent evidence that this class is truly after a global hegemony. As David Astle pointed out and as was reviewed in chapter five, this hegemony quickly, and very early in its history, realized that all ancient pantheons and myths were more or less identical, and thus that religion itself not only held profound clues to the reconstruction of the lost science they sought to recover, but that it could function as a powerful tool of social manipulation to assist in that agenda. Not for nothing does one find a Rockefeller dynasty supporting the work and agenda of the World Council of Churches from its inception, or of various seminaries with a “suitable” social agenda, nor a Rothschild dynasty sponsoring various similar work. In this, “monotheism” really masks as a front for their own designs, with the claims of the three great monotheistic religions — Christianity, Judaism, and Islam — seemingly tailor-made for the manipulation and exploitation of conflict.

But to what end all this machination?

While many have guessed at the motivations for this vast and ancient conspiracy, no one seems to have approached anything like a final answer. I certainly cannot claim to have done so either. But an answer *does* suggest itself from the preceding pages, namely, that they are indeed trying to reconstruct a lost mythical past: a global “golden age” with a supremely sophisticated science with which they can dominate and subjugate the earth. But to reconstruct it, on the scale required and implied by their enterprise itself, will require that virtually the entire planet and its resources must be at their disposal.

What they intend to do after that is beyond the scope and purpose of this essay, but an answer does suggest itself, for if, as was seen, at least one of these banking dynasties — the Rothschilds — are alleged to trace their lineage back to Nimrod, half-human half-divine offspring of the "gods" who once descended to earth and sired children of human mothers, then perhaps they seek, ultimately, to return to the stars.

But….

…tracing that lineage, and that motivation, is a whole *other* story…

For *this* story, however, the lesson is clear: the false alchemy of the banksters and their issuance of the facsimile of money can only mean that money is based on *scarcity and debt,* on non-renewable energy sources, and on a paradigm of physics and energy, and a system that must ultimately consume itself in endless slavery and wars.

It is high time to have done with them.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

No Author. “Econophysics,” en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Econophysics

No author. “Edward R. Dewey,” Wikipedia, en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Foundation _for_the_Study_of_Cycles

No author. “Hermann Josef Abs,” moversandshakersofthesmom.blogspot.com/2008/08/hermann-abs.html

No author. “RCA Astrology,” *Time*, Monday, April 16, 1951, www.time.com/magazine/article/0,9171,814720,00.html

No author. www.cycleslibrary.org/synchronies/

No author. “Tesla’s Wireless Torpedo: Inventor Says He Did Show that it Worked Perfectly,” *New York Times*, March 19, 1907.

“Mr. Tesla’s Invention: How the Electrician’s Lamp of Aladdin May Construct New Worlds,” *New York Times*, April 21, 1908.

No Author. “Earth Grid Theories,” www.vortexmaps.com/devils-triangle.php

Alfvén, Hannes. “Existence of Electromagnetic-Hydrodynamic Waves,” *Nature*, No. 3805, October 3, 1942, pp. 405-406.

Alfvén, Hannes. “On Hierarchical Cosmology,” *Astrophysics and Space Science*, Vol. 89. Boston: D. Reidel, 1983.

Astle, David. *The Babylonian Woe*, ellhn.eee.gr . No date.

Bohm, David. *Wholeness and the Implicate Order.* London: Routledge, 1995. ISBN 0-415-11966-9.

Brzezinski, Zbigniew. *The Grand Chessboard: American Primacy and Its Geostrategic Imperatives.* Basic Books, 1997. ISBN 978-0-465-02726-2.

Brown, Ellen Hodgson, J.D. *Web of Debt: The Shocking Truth about Our Money System and How We Can Break Free.* Baton Rouge: Third Millennium Press, 2008. ISBN 978-0-9795608-2-8.

Childress, David Hatcher, ed. *The Fantastic Inventions of Nikola Tesla*. Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 1993. ISBN 0-932813-19-4.

Cope, Freeman A. "Evidence from Activation Energies for Super-conductive Tunneling in Biological Systems at Physiological Temperatures." *Physiological Chemistry and Physics 3* (1971), 403-410.

Dawson, Christopher. *The Age of the Gods.* London, 1928.

Del Mar, Alexander, *Barbara Villiers: A History of Monetary Crimes.* Honolulu: University Press of the Pacific, 2004. ISBN 1-4102-1102-9.

Del Mar, Alexander. *A History of Money in Ancient Countries from the Earliest Times to the Present.* Kessinger Publications reprint of George Bell and Sons, 1885. ISBN 0-7661-9024-2.

Del Mar, Alexander. *A History of Monetary Systems.* Honolulu: University Press of the Pacific, 2000. ISBN 0-89875-062-8.

Del Mar, Alexander. *A History of the Precious Metals from the Earliest Times to the Present.* Elibron Classics, 2005. ISBN 1-4021-7302-4.

Desborough, Brian. *They Cast No Shadows: A Collection of Essays on the Illuminati, Revisionist History, and Suppressed Technologies.* San Jose, California: Writers Club Press, 2002.

Dewey, Edward R., and Edwin F. Dakin, *Cycles: The Science of Prediction.* Henry Holt and Company, 1947. (Reprinted by Kessinger Publishing.) ISBN 1436710219.

Estulin, Daniel. *The True Story of the Bilderberg Group.* Walterville, Oregon: TrineDay LLC, 2007. ISBN 978-0-9777953-4-5.

Farrell, Joseph P. *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts.* Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2006. ISBN 978-1931882750.

Farrell, Joseph P. *The Nazi International: The Nazis' Secret Postwar Plan to Control Finance, Conflict, Physics, and Space.* Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2008. ISBN 978-1931882934.

Farrell, Joseph P. *The Philosophers' Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter: The American "Gold," The Soviet "Mercury," and The Nazi "Serum."* Port Townsend, Washington: Feral House, 2009. ISBN 978-1932595406.

Frank, Tenney. "An Economic History of Rome." *The American Historical Review,* Vol. 21, July 21, 1916.

Gover, Robert. *Time and Money: The Economy and the Planets.* Titusville, New Jersey: Hopewell Publications, LLC, 2005. ISBN 0-9726906-8-9.

Hayes, Michael. *The Hermetic Code in DNA: The Sacred Principles in the Ordering of the Universe.* Rochester, Vermont: Inner Traditions, 2008. ISBN 978-159477218-4.

Heri, Sesh. *The Handprint of Atlas: The Artificial Axis of the Earth and How it Shaped Human Destiny.* Highland, California: Corvos Books, Lost Continent Library Publishing Co., 2008.

Hoagland, Richard C. *Hoagland's Mars: Vol. 2: The United Nations Briefing:* (UFO TV DVD).

Kunz, George Frederick. *The Curious Lore of Precious Stones*. Dover, 1971. ISBN 0-486-22227-6.

LaViolette, Paul A., Ph.D. *Secrets of Antigravity Propulsion: Tesla, UFOs, and Classified Aerospace Technology.* Rochester, Vermont: Bear & Company, 2008. ISBN 978-159143078-0.

Lerner, Eric J. *The Big Bang Never Happened.* New York: Vintage Books, 1992.

Lockyer, J. Norman. *The Dawn of Astronomy: A Study of Temple Worship and Mythology of the Ancient Egyptians.* Mineola, New York: Dover Publications. ISBN 0-486-45012-0.

Manning, Paul. *Martin Bormann: Nazi in Exile.* Lyle Stuart, Inc., 1981.

Marrs, Jim. *The Rise of the Fourth Reich: The Secret Societies that Threaten to Take Over America.* New York: Wm. Morrow (HarperCollins), 2008. ISBN 978-0-06-124558-9.

Meyl, Konstantin, Prof. Dr. *Scalar Waves.* Villingen-Schwenningen, Germany, 2003. ISBN 3-9802-542-4-0.

Müller, Dr. Harmut. “An Introduction to Global Scaling Theory.” *Nexus*, Vol. 11, No. 5, September-October 2004.

Nelson, J.H. “Planetary Position Effect on Short-Wave Signal Quality.” *Electrical Engineering*, May 1952.

Nelson, J.H. “Shortwave Radio Propagation Correlation With Planetary Positions.” Conference paper presented to the AIEE Subcommittee on Energy Sources, AIEE General Winter Meeting, January 1952.

Nichelson, Oliver. “Tesla Wireless Power Transmitter and the Tunguska Explosion of 1908,” prometheus.al.ru/english/phisik/onichelson/tunguska

Perkins, John. *Confessions of an Economic Hit Man.* New York: Plume Books (Penguin Group), 2006. ISBN 978-0-452-28708-2.

Quigley, Carroll. *The Anglo-American Establishment: From Rhodes to Cliveden.* San Pedro, California: GSG and Associates, Publishers, 1981. ISBN 0-945001-01-0

Quigley, Carroll: *Tragedy and Hope: A History of the World In Our Time.* Los Angeles: Wm. Morrison, 1974. ISBN 0913022-14-4.

Salmon, Felix. “A Formula for Disaster.” *Wired*, March 2009.

Springmeier, Fritz. *Bloodlines of the Illuminati.* Ambassador House, 2002. ISBN 0-9663533-2-3.

Stevens, Henry. *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology.* Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2005.

Tarpley, Webster. "Lord Palmerston's Multicultural Human Zoo." www.mail-archive.com/ctrl@listserv.aol.com/msg17357.html

Tarpley, Webster. "Venice's War Against Western Civilization." www.schillerinstitute.org/fid_91-96/952_venice.html

Tesla, Nikola. "Tesla's New Device Like Bolts of Thor: He Seeks to Patent a Wireless Engine for Destroying Navies by Pulling a Lever; to Shatter Armies Also." *New York Times,* Dec. 8, 1915.

Tomes, Ray. "Towards a Unified Theory of Cycles." Paper presented at The Foundation for the Study of Cycles Conference Proceedings, February 1990, www.cyclesresearchinstitute.org

Weidner, Jay and Bridges, Vincent. *The Mysteries of the Great Cross of Hendaye: Alchemy and the End of Time.* Rochester, Vermont: Destiny Books, 2003.

FERAL HOUSE

[1] Cited in Felix Salmon, “A Formula for Disaster,” *Wired,* March 2009, p. 112.

[2] Joseph P. Farrell, *The Philosophers’ Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter* (Feral House, 2009), p. 337, emphasis added.

[3] Felix Salmon, “A Formula for Disaster,” *Wired,* March 2009, pp. 78-79.

[4] Ibid., p. 78.

[5] Ibid.

[6] Ibid. While Salmon does not mention it, it should be noted that the Canadian Imperial Bank of Commerce has ties to the Rothschild banking interests, some of whose directors have later worked for the CIBC.

[7] Felix Salmon, “A Formula for Disaster,” *Wired,* March 2009.

[8] Ibid., p. 77.

[9]

Ibid., pp. 77-78.

10

Felix Salmon, “A Formula for Disaster,” *Wired*, March 2009, 74-79, 112, p. 78, emphasis added.

11

Ibid., emphasis added.

12

Felix Salmon, “A Formula for Disaster,” *Wired*, March 2009, 74-79, 112, p. 78, emphasis added.

13

Ibid.

14

Ibid., pp. 78-79.

15

Felix Salmon, “A Formula for Disaster,” *Wired*, March 2009, 74-79, 112, p. 79, italicized emphasis added, bold emphasis in the original.

16

Felix Salmon, “A Formula for Disaster,” *Wired*, March 2009, 74-79, 112, p. 79, italicized emphasis added, bold emphasis in the original.

17

Ibid., p. 112.

18

Ibid.

19

Felix Salmon, “A Formula for Disaster,” *Wired*, March 2009, 74-79, 112, p. 112.

20

Q.v. Fritz Springmeier, *Bloodlines of the Illuminati* (Ambassador House, 2002), pp. 163-185.

21

www.absoluteastronomy.com/topics/Canadian_Imperial_Bank_of_Commerce . This website also clearly implicates the CIBC in the Enron scandal.

22

Springmeier, op. cit., pp. 164-165.

23

Ibid., p. 176.

24

Springmeier, op. cit., p. 176.

25

Ibid. P2 Masonry refers to the notorious Lodge Propaganda Due, led by Mason Licio Gelli, that was finally exposed by the Italian government in the 1980s. By the time the Italian authorities had shut the lodge down, it numbered over two thousand members, with deep penetration into banking, the Italian government, various Italian political parties, and the Vatican.

Many who regard the death of Pope John Paul I as suspicious think that the Pope was murdered precisely because he discovered the extent of Masonic P2 penetration of the Vatican and was determined to root it out and end it. (Q.v. David Yallop's *In God's Name*.) Many also suspect that the strange death of banker Roberto Calvi, hung by the neck from London's Blackfriars' Bridge, and in self-evidently Masonic fashion, was also tied to the P2 scandal. Also prominent in the Lodge were various Italian and other Fascists. Not surprisingly, Licio Gelli, its founder, fled to Argentina after the lodge was exposed.

26

Ellen Hodgson Brown, *Web of Debt: The Shocking Truth about Our Money System and How We Can Break Free* (Baton Rouge, Louisiana: 2008), pp. 254-255.

27

Hodgson, *Web of Debt*, p. 229.

28

Hodgson, *Web of Debt*, p. 233.

29

See, for example, the seminal work and research of Anthony Sutton, *Wall Street and the Rise of Hitler.*

30

Hodgson, *Web of Debt*, p. 230.

31

S. Zarlenga, *The Lost Science of Money* (Valatie, New York: 2002), p. 590, cited in Hodgson, *Web of Debt*, p. 231.

[32] Ibid.

[33] This story I have detailed in my previous books *Reich of the Black Sun, The SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, *Secrets of the Unified Field* (Adventures Unlimited Press), and *The Philosophers' Stone* (Feral House).

[34] For this point, see my *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 161-180, and *The Philosophers' Stone,* part four.

[35] S. Zarlenga, *The Lost Science of Money* (Valatie, New York: 2002), p. 590, cited in Hodgson, *Web of Debt,* p. 231.

[36] For the stories of this pursuit, and the bureaucracies they emplaced to pursue it, see my *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, Adventures Unlimited Press (2005); *Secrets of the Unified Field*, Adventures Unlimited Press (2007); *The Nazi International*, Adventures Unlimited Press (2008); and *The Philosophers' Stone,* Feral House (2009).

[37] See my *The Nazi International: The Nazis' Postwar Plan to Control Finance, Conflict, Physics, and Space,* Adventures Unlimited Press (2008), pp. 249-350.

[38] See my *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts*, Adventures Unlimited Press (2006).

[39] Carroll Quigley, *Tragedy and Hope: A History of the World In Our Time*, p. 54.

[40] For the story of this very ancient cosmic war, see my *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts* (Adventures Unlimited, 2006).

[41] Estulin, op. cit., pp. 19-20.

[42] See my *The Nazi International* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2009), pp. 300-301.

[43] Ibid., pp. 249-350.

[44] Various authors and researchers have noticed this point, the most prominent among them being Nick Cook in his *The Hunt for Zero Point*, and Michael Schratt, in an excellent DVD presentation entitled *That’s Classified: USAF Secrets Revealed* (Michael Schratt, Crystal Lake, Illinois).

[45] I coined the term “paleoancient” in my first book, *The Giza Death Star*, to denote the extreme antiquity of this Very High Civilization, predating the known classical civilizations of Egypt, Sumer, the Vedic civilization, and China.

46

Estulin, op. cit., pp. ii, 6-7, 16-17.

47

Ibid., pp. 10-11.

48

Ibid., p. ziv.

49

Estulin, op. cit., p. 10.

50

Ibid., p. xiv.

51

Estulin, op. cit., pp. 22-23. Estulin lists U.S. Secretary of Defense William Perry, Canadian Jean Chretien, the ubiquitous and sinister Henry Kissinger, David Rockefeller, George Soros, and various Belgian, Spanish, and Dutch royalty as attendees at the 1996 meeting that attempted to break up Canada. Q.v. p. 5. Estulin gives a further list of names on pp. 28-29. The breakup of Canada was to be accomplished via the mechanism of a "unilateral declaration of independence by Quebec" which would then, following the fragmentation of Canada, be absorbed piecemeal by the U.S.A. by the year 2000 (pp. 4-5). The contempt of the Bilderbergers for the perceptions of the general populace — perceptions they help to create and manipulate by their media organs — cannot better be illustrated than by this goofy scheme, for one cannot imagine French-speaking Quebecois faring any better in a union with the U.S.A. than they have with the Dominion of Canada, and probably would fare much worse.

52

Estulin, op. cit., p. 33.

[53]

Ibid., pp. 26-27.

[54]

By “finance” I mean henceforth the institutions, particularly the central private banks such as the Federal Reserve, the Bank of England, etc., that have in private hands the power to create the economic medium of exchange, debt instruments, credit instruments, and so on.

[55]

Estulin, op. cit., p. 27.

[56]

Ibid.

[57]

Ibid., p. 86.

[58]

Estulin, op. cit., p. 25.

[59]

Ibid., pp. 30-31.

[60]

Ibid., p. 26.

[61]

Estulin, op. cit., 26.

[62]

Ibid., p. 27.

[63]

Cited in Estulin, op. cit., p. 23.

[64]

Ibid., pp. 23-24.

[65]

Estulin, op. cit., p. 93, emphasis in the original.

[66]

Ibid., pp. 41-43.

[67]

Estulin, op. cit., p. 24.

[68]

Ibid., pp. 8-9.

[69]

Ibid., p. 142.

[70]

Cited in Estulin, op. cit., p. 61.

[71]

Ibid., p. 20.

72

Ibid., p. 50.

73

Ibid., pp. 50-51.

74

Ibid., 59.

75

Similar groups, i.e., the Royal Institute of International Affairs, or "Chatham House," The Milner Group, the Council on Foreign Relations, the Trilateral Commission, and so on.

76

Estulin, op. cit., p.44.

77

Estulin, op. cit., pp. 44-45.

78

Estulin, op. cit., p. 95.

79

Estulin mentions the case of the economic rape of Argentina by the banksters, for the simple reason that nuclear Argentina was supplying much of Mexico's own energy requirements, and doing so without going through the oil spigots controlled by the Group and its oilmen. Q.v. p. 45.

[80] This active suppression and its connection to the banking interest will be explored more fully in subsequent chapters.

[81] See Jim Marrs, *The Rise of the Fourth Reich: The Secret Societies that Threaten to Take Over America*, p. 48.

[82] Estulin, op. cit., pp. 200-201. Estulin actually reproduces the Bilderberger documents on these pages. For Abs' membership in the Sovereign Military Order of Malta (SMOM) and directorship on the board of I.G. Farben, Daimler, and Siemens, see http://moversandshakersofthesmom.blogspot.com/2008/08/hermann-abs.html , p. 2.

[83] http://moversandshakersofthesmom.blogspot.com/2008/08/hermann-abs.html , p. 2.

[84] For the story of this meeting and its implications, see my *Nazi International: The Nazis' Postwar Plan to Control Finance, Conflict, Physics, and Space* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2008), pp. 63-83.

[85] Joseph P. Farrell, *Nazi International: The Nazis' Postwar Plan to Control Finance, Conflict, Physics, and Space* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2008), p. 76.

[86]

Abs’ easy access to West German Chancellors Konrad Adenauer, Ludwig Erhard, and Kurt Georg Kiesinger (a former member of Dr. Josef Göbbels’ Propaganda Ministry!) may account for the fact that Bormann and his Nazi International were such hot political topics for West German politicians and prosecutors. Indeed, those prosecutors often would complain of their feeling that some hidden hand was directing the West German government, and inhibiting their efforts to bring Bormann and other top Nazis to justice. Abs, given his close contact before, during, and after the war, may have indeed been the go-between between Bormann and the postwar German governments.

[87] Etsulin, op. cit., p. 20.

[88] Paul Manning, *Martin Bormann: Nazi in Exile* (Lyle Stuart, Inc. 1981), p. 204.

[89] Manning , *Martin Bormann: Nazi in Exile*, pp. 204-205, emphasis added.

[90] Farrell, *The Nazi International* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2008), pp. 302-304.

[91] Jim Marrs, *The Rise of the Fourth Reich: The Secret Societies that Threaten to Take Over America* (William Morrow, 2008), pp. 215-216.

[92] See my *Nazi International*, pp. 64-66, 82-83, 176-177.

93

Not to mention the blackmail potential offered by the “détente deal” itself!

94

See my *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 99-107; *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 144-148, 170-171.

95

See my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 170-171.

96

See my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 141-308, and *Secrets of the Unified Field,* pp. 238-288.

97

See my *The Nazi International,* pp. 85-136; 348-350, 382.

98

Ibid., pp. 249-274.

99

Ibid, pp. 275-350, particularly pp. 316-317; 343.

100

Ibid., pp. 278-298.

101

Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 260,

102

See my *Secrets of the Unified Field,* pp. 296-312.

103

Yet another factor is worth considering in this respect, and that is my interpretation of the Roswell event on the basis of the internal evidence of the MJ-12 documents as having been perhaps the crash of something *Nazi*. (Q.v. my *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 274-330; and *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 311-384.) If this be true, then the North American Faction, through the agency of its surrogate, the U.S. government and military, had yet another clue indicating the *postwar* Nazi possession of this physics, and its continued development of it. As such, it had yet another impetus to seek and recover as much of the original Nazi documentation and personnel as it could, and, failing that, to embark on its own programs to acquire the physics and technology for itself.

104

For the Soviet interest, see my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 203-236, and *The Philosophers' Stone* (Feral House, 2009), section four; for the American pursuit, see Paul A. LaViolette's excellent study of off-the-books projects in antigravity field propulsion in the U.S.A., *Secrets of Antigravity Propulsion: Tesla, UFOs, and Classified Aerospace Technology* (Bear & Co., 2008), pp. 42-259.

105

As yet another sign that this may be the case, one should also consider the allegation of authors Richard C. Hoagland and Mike Bara in their *New York Times* bestseller, *Dark Mission: The Secret History of NASA,* wherein they present evidence that by the time of the Apollo lunar missions, the Nazi faction had become the dominant and most influential group within the Agency, competing against the other two factions: Magicians, and Masons, both groups with strong ties to the Anglo-American establishment.

106

Dewey and Dakin, *Cycles: The Science of Prediction* (Kessinger Publishing: reprint of the Henry and Holt Company book of the same title, 1947), p. 28.

107

“Edward R. Dewey,” Wikipedia, en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Foundation_for_the_Study_of_Cycles , p. 1.

108

Ibid.

109

foundationforthestudyofcycles.org p. 1, emphasis added.

110

Edward R . Dewey and Edwin F. Dakin, *Cycles: The Science of Prediction* (New York: Henry Holt and Company, 1947. Reprint by Kessinger Publishing). ISBM 1436710219.

111

Ibid., pp. 12-13.

112

Ibid., pp. 14-15.

113

Ibid., pp. 16-17.

114

Ibid., pp. 24-25.

115

Ibid., pp. 26-27.

116

Ibid., pp. 32-33.

117

Ibid., pp. 36-41.

118

Ibid., pp. 44-45.

119

Ibid., pp. 46-47.

120

Ibid., p. 53.

121

Ibid., pp. 54-55.

122

Ibid., p. 56.

123

Ibid., pp. 80-81. For the discussion of the phenomenon of the 54-year cycle, see pp. 69-86.

124

Ibid., pp. 89-90.

125

Ibid., pp. 106-107, 110-111.

126

Ibid., pp. 118 — 119.

127

Ibid., pp. 120-121.

128

Ibid., p. 112-123.

129

Ibid., pp. 130-131.

130

On its website the Foundation for the Study of Cycles states that it is "dedicated to the interdisciplinary study of finding and analyzing recurring patterns. This includes the economy, natural and social sciences, the arts and more as *more than 4,300 natural cycles have been documented with interrelated patterns.*" Concerning its mission it states that "Our Mission is to discover, understand *and explain the true nature and origin of cycles, thereby solving the mystery of recurrent rhythmic phenomena,* as has been *true nature and origin of cycles, thereby solving the mystery of recurrent rhythmic phenomena,* as has been observed in both the natural and social sciences." (Emphases added) By 2006, it claimed more than "2,500 members in 42 countries." (www.foundationforthestudyofcycles.org)

131

---

www.cycleslibrary.org/synchronies/pg_0004.htm

132

Ibid., emphasis added.

133

---

www.cycleslibrary.org/synchronies/pg_0004.htm

134

It is also worth pausing to mention another interesting implication of the economist of Mitsubishi being present as a Foundation member. Search as I did for the presence of similar members from large international Anglo-American or European banks, I could find none. This does not mean there aren't any, but that they may be members whose papers and membership in the Foundation are not published or known. But the presence of a Mitsubishi economist is interesting in its own right, for Oriental societies are well-known to have, from their very earliest cultural and religious origins, essentially *cyclic* views of history and hence of human social activity. The presence suggests, then, that they are intent upon putting empirical scientific and quantifiable data in the service of recovering the real scientific bases of these ancient cosmological views. In short, they are doing what I called paleophysics in my very first book, *The Giza Death Star.* (Q.v. *The Giza Death Star,* chapter three. The paleophysical approach to ancient texts and myths was further developed in *The Giza Death Star Destroyed*, chapters one through three, and in *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts,* chapters one through nine. This present book is intended to extend this analysis over a broader range of data.)

135

Dewey and Dakin, *Cycles: The Science of Prediction*, p. xii, emphasis added.

[136] Dewey and Dakin, *Cycles: The Science of Prediction*, p. xiii.

[137] It is worth noting that this connection between physics and the modeling of social behavior in the aggregate was noticed by the celebrated and famous physicist and science fiction author, Isaac Asimov, in his well-known (and perhaps not just coincidentally-named) *Foundation* trilogy.

[138] Ibid., p. xiv.

[139] Dewey and Dakin, *Cycles: The Science of Prediction*, p. xv.

[140] Ibid., emphasis in the original.

[141] Dewey and Dakin, *Cycles: The Science of Prediction*, p. 9.

[142] Dewey and Dakin, *Cycles: The Science of Prediction*, p. 11.

[143] Ibid., p. 13.

[144] Ibid., p. 15.

145

Dewey and Dakin, *Cycles: The Science of Prediction*, p. 1.

146

Ibid., p. 5.

147

Milton Friedman and Max Sasuly, "Review of *Cycles: The Science of Prediction*," *Journal of the American Statistical Association* (March 1948, 43 (241): 139-145, cited in "Edward R . Dewey," *Wikipedia*, en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Foundation_for_the_Study_of_Cycles , p. 2.

148

Murray Rothbard, *Man, Economy, and State* (Nash Publishing Co., 1961), cited in "Edward R . Dewey," *Wikipedia*, en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Foundation_for_the_Study_of_Cycles , p. 4.

149

Q.v. the discussion in my *The Giza Death Star* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2002), pp. 126-134.

150

Q.v. Dewey and Dakin, *Cycles: The Science of Prediction*, p. 50.

151

Ibid., p. 70.

152

Ibid., p. 50, boldface emphasis added, italicized emphasis in the original.

153

Dewey and Dakin, *Cycles: The Science of Prediction*, p. 51, boldface emphasis added.

154

Q.v. Dewey and Dakin, *Cycles: The Science of Prediction*, 56ff.

155

Ibid., p. 54ff.

156

Ibid., p. 57f.

157

Ibid., pp. 57-59.

158

Ibid., p. 60.

159

Ibid.

160

Ibid., p. 70. It is interesting to note that Dewey's and Dakin's 54-year wholesale price cycle last dipped ca. 1951-54, and then began the next 54-year period of rising prices, which would put its peak ca. 2005-2008, precisely during the current "derivatives crisis" and its initial aftermath, a sharp decline in prices.

161

Ibid., p. 96.

162

Dewey and Dakin, *Cycles: The Science of Prediction*, p. 73.

163

Ibid., pp. 90-91, citing Schumpeter, *Business Cycles* (McGraw-Hill, 1939), p. 173.

164

Dewey and Dakin, *Cycles: The Science of Prediction*, p. 114.

165

Dewey and Dakin, *Cycles: The Science of Prediction*, pp. 116-117, emphasis in the original.

166

Dewey and Dakin, *Cycles: The Science of Prediction*, p. 140.

167

Ibid., p. 78.

168

Ibid., p. 79.

169

Dewey and Dakin, *Cycles: The Science of Prediction*, pp. 27-28, emphasis added.

170

Ibid., p. 191.

171

Dewey and Dakin, *Cycles: The Science of Prediction*, p. 222, emphasis added.

172

Dewey and Dakin, *Cycles: The Science of Prediction*, p. 158.

173

Ibid., p. 164.

174

Q.v. my *The Giza Death Star,* p. 113f.

175

Dewey and Dakin, *Cycles: The Science of Prediction*, p. 165.

176

Dewey and Dakin, *Cycles: The Science of Prediction*, pp. 192-193, referencing P.D. Ouspensky, *Tertium Organum* (Alfred A. Knopf, 1922), p. 65, emphasis added by me.

177

This profound insight suggests a connection to the views on time as a determinative of cause and effect relationships in a hyper-dimensional universe, that of the thought of Russian astrophysicist Dr. Nikolai Kozyrev. Q.v. my book *The Philosophers' Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter* (Feral House, 2009), pp. 151-200.

178

For this point, see the discussion in my book *The Philosophers' Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter,* pp. 313-329.

179

This implies yet again the profundity of the temporal research of Russian astrophysicist Dr. Nikolai Kozyrev. Q.v. my *The Philosophers' Stone,* section three.

180

For this point, see the extended discussion in my *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts,* pp. 234-273 .

181

Dewey and Dakin also mention Bell Laboratories' own independent study of business and economic cycles. Q.v. *Cycles: The Science of Prediction*, p. 102.

182

Dewey and Dakin cite the instance of Wrigley and Rockefeller timing the building of large skyscrapers in Chicago and New York City to the bottom of a cycle, just when the overall trend was scheduled to go up again. Q.v. p. 122.

183

Jay Weidner and Vincent Bridges, *The Mysteries of the Great Cross of Hendaye: Alchemy and the End of Time* (Rochester, Vermont: Destiny Books, 2003), p. 41.

184

Dr. Hartmut Müller, "An Introduction to Global Scaling Theory," *Nexus,* Vol. 11, No. 5, September-October 2004, p. 49. See also the discussion in my *The Giza Death Star Destroyed* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2005), pp. 118-123.

185

Ibid., p. 49.

186

For a discussion of two other physicists increasingly disenchanted with the counterintuitive nature of contemporary standard physical mechanics, see my *The Giza Death Star Destroyed*, pp. 130-150, for a discussion of the views of physicist Dr. Paul LaViolette and his “sub-quantum kinetics theory,” and my *The Philosophers’ Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter* (Feral House, 2009), pp. 151-200 for a discussion of the torsion research of Russian astrophysicist Dr. Nikolai Kozyrev, who was similarly disenchanted with the results of relativity theory for the modeling of the energy of stars, and with quantum mechanics for its inability to give formally explicit and *engineerable* definitions of cause and effect. Kozyrev’s work, as outlined by myself and others, led directly to the kind of “precursor engineering” of *causes* rather than *effects* in the top secret research of the Soviet Union, research which has continued apace in the Russian Federation.

187

Müller, “An Introduction to Global Scaling Theory,” *Nexus,* Vol. 11, No. 5, p. 49.

188

Ibid.

189

Ibid., emphasis added.

190

Müller, “An Introduction to Global Scaling Theory,” *Nexus*, p. 49.

191

Ibid., p. 50, emphasis added.

192

Ibid.

193

Müller, “An Introduction to Global Scaling Theory,” *Nexus*, p. 50, emphasis added.

194

Farrell, *The Giza Death Star Destroyed*, p. 120.

195

And this observation of course, calls to mind once again the hyper-dimensional theory of Müller’s fellow countryman Burkhardt Heim, as well as the views of English physicist E.T. Whittaker and American Tom Bearden. In Heim theory, the physical medium, or space-time itself, begins in a state of absolute entropy or equilibrium. Even in that state, however, it is quantized, with the metric of the system being expressed as a single unit value, or “metron.” As information increases in the system, the metron correspondingly is divided, or decreases. Similarly, as information increases, this is expressed as a quantized “rotation moment” for a particular area of space. Thus, Heim’s view of space possesses certain nodes or lattice-like structures, and is thus commensurate with a view of space-time as a lattice-like structure of longitudinal waves in the medium itself. In a nutshell, space-time appears to “clump” around certain nodal points in that longitudinal wave’s logarithmic structure. Lattice defects would on that view perhaps then emerge in real space-time as clusterings of matter or as physical forces.

196

Farrell, *The Giza Death Star Destroyed*, p. 120, emphasis added.

197

Müller, “An Introduction to Global Scaling Theory,” *Nexus*, p. 52.

198

Müller, “An Introduction to Global Scaling Theory,” *Nexus*, p. 82. For the relationship of the engineerability of the theory, see my discussion in *The Giza Death Star Destroyed*, pp. 122-123. Such a technology could also be used as a new and almost inexhaustible energy source, a propulsion technology, and of course a weapon of stupendous and planet- or star-busting power.

199

For this point, see my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2006), pp. 219-220.

200

J.H. Nelson, “Planetary Position Effect on Short-Wave Signal Quality,” *Electrical Engineering*, May 1952, p. 421.

201

J.H. Nelson, “Shortwave Radio Propagation Correlation With Planetary Positions,” conference paper presented to the AIEE Subcommittee on Energy Sources, AIEE General Winter Meeting, January 1952, www.enterprisemission.com/images.hyper/ne11.gif , p. 1.

202

J.H. Nelson, “Planetary Position Effect on Short-Wave Signal Quality,” *Electrical Engineering*, May 1952, p. 421, emphasis added.

203

Ibid., emphasis added.

204

J.H. Nelson, “Planetary Position Effect on Short-Wave Signal Quality,” *Electrical Engineering*, May 1952, p. 422.

205

J.H. Nelson, “Planetary Position Effect on Short-Wave Signal Quality,” *Electrical Engineering*, May 1952, p. 423.

206

No author given, “RCA Astrology,” *Time*, Monday, April 16, 1951, www.time.com/magazine/article/0,9171,814720,00.html

207

For further discussion of the electrical dynamism of the solar system, see my *The Giza Death Star Destroyed*, pp. 29-31, and *The Cosmic War*, pp. 28-66.

208

Again, see my *The Giza Death Star Destroyed: The Ancient War for Future Science*, pp. 30-31; and *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts*, pp. 28-66.

209

Q.v. my *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts*, pp. 28-66.

210

Eric J. Lerner, *The Big Bang Never Happened* (New York: Vintage Books: 1992), p. 181, cited in my *The Giza Death Star,* p. 135.

211

Eric J. Lerner, *The Big Bang Never Happened,* p. 192, emphasis added, cited in my *The Giza Death Star,* pp. 135-136.

212

The Giza Death Star, pp. 135-136, emphasis added.

213

Eric J. Lerner, op. cit., pp. 192-193, emphasis added, cited in my *The Giza Death Star,* p. 136.

214

For Philo Farnsworth's plasmator, see my *The Giza Death Star,* pp. 146-147, and *Nazi International*, pp. 328-333.

215

Considerations such as these have led some Nazi Bell researchers to the erroneous conclusion that the device was intended as an experiment in such mechanisms of controlled fusion for the purpose of creating a new energy supply as well as one of these "hydrogen bomb superbombs." As I noted in my *Nazi International,* the involvement of Dr. Ronald Richter in this project appears clear, and since his postwar project in Argentina ostensibly concerned itself with controlled fusion, such researchers reason back to the original project that the Nazi Bell was simply an earlier version of this postwar project. But Richter himself, as we shall see in a moment, indicates clearly that even this plasma research was a step or key to a much deeper and more fundamental physics. That such a plasma physics, however, might have led to such “fusion devices” would certainly have been a dividend of the project that the Nazis would have been only too happy to accept along the way! But it was merely a secondary dividend in any case.

216

The Giza Death Star, pp. 136-137, emphasis in the original.

217

Hannes Alfvén, “Existence of Electromagnetic-Hydrodynamic Waves,” *Nature,* No. 3805, October 3, 1942, pp. 405-406, cited in my *The Giza Death Star,* p. 137.

218

The Giza Death Star, p. 137.

219

Ibid., pp. 137-138, citing Hannes Alfvén, “On Hierarchical Cosmology,” *Astrophysics and Space Science,* Vol. 89 (Boston: D. Reidel, 1983), 313-324, p. 314, all emphasis in the originals.

220

For this point, see my *The Cosmic War,* pp. 31-32.

221

For the “non-scalarity” of time in the work of Dr. Nikolai Kozyrev, see my *The Philosophers’ Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter* (Feral House, 2009), pp. 151-169.

222

To draw a simple analogy, consider only human natural languages. That humans have always more or less known this “multi-dimensionality” of time is revealed by the way natural human languages — with their many tenses, moods, and active and passive voices — treat time. Verbal systems are, in short, far beyond the simple "past, present, and future" of conventional standard physical theories. Notably, human natural languages consider time in a highly complex set of *open systems and relationships between them.* Mathematical physics has yet to catch up with this subtlety in a certain sense.

223

Joseph P. Farrell, *Nazi International*, pp. 343-345.

224

Ibid., p. 345.

225

See my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, pp. 170-185, 278-282, 294-296, *Secrets of the Unified Field*, pp. 268-280, *The Philosophers' Stone*, pp. 283-287, 291-294, 296-305, and *Nazi International*, pp. 262, 314-315.

226

SS Brotherhood of the Bell, pp. 178-185; *Nazi International*, pp. 348-350. Harry Cooper of Sharkhunters, who photographed the drums of Richter's project in Argentina shown on p. 249 of my book *Nazi International*, has recently been informed by his Argentine contacts that the drums were in all likelihood control rod ports for Richter's intended fusion reactor that was beginning to be built when President Juan Perón shut down the project. This is possible, though it raises certain questions since *fission* reactors, not fusion reactors, are normally associated with control rods. This does, however, make some sense, as the drums in Argentina are solid weights with a hole through the center, while the Bell's counter-rotating drums were most likely hollow cylinders.

227

The Nazi International, pp. 262, 271-272.

[228]

Ibid., pp. 249-262.

[229]

National Archives and Records Administration, Foreign Scientist Case Files 1948-1958, Box 54 of Record Group 330, File on Dr. Ronald Richter, cited in Henry Stevens, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology* (Adventures Unlimited Press), pp. 260-261.

[230]

Farrell, *Nazi International,* p. 295.

[231]

Farrell, *Nazi International*, p. 343.

[232]

Farrell, *Secrets of the Unified Field,* pp. 270-277.

[233]

Farrell, *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 171-184, 294-295; see my *The Philosophers' Stone* pp. 297-299 for an argument that this isomer may have been thorium-229 isomer.

[234]

Farrell, *Secrets of the Unified Field*, pp. 280-282.

[235]

Farrell, *The Giza Death Star,* p. 145, emphasis in the original.

236

Farrell, *the Philosophers‘Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter* (Feral House, 54 p. Farrell, *The Philosophers' Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter* (Feral House, of 2009), p. 193, referencing A.P. Levitch, “A Substantial Interpretation of N.A. Kozyrev's Conception of Time,” p. 1. It should be noted that the “perpetual hydrogen bomb and neutrino emission theory” is yet another implication or artifact of Einstein's General Relativity theory, and, in that respect, is similar to all other such artifacts such as the Big Bang Theory, so-called “dark matter” and “dark energy” and so on.

237

Farrell, *The Philosophers' Stone*, pp. 194-195, italicized emphasis in the original, boldface emphasis added.

238

Nikola Tesla, “Transmission of Electrical Energy Without Wires,” *Electrical World and Engineer*, March 5, 1904, cited in David Hatcher Childress, ed., *The Fantastic Inventions of Nikola Tesla*, pp. 219, 221, emphasis added.

239

Nikola Tesla, “Transmission of Electrical Energy Without Wires,” *Electrical World and Engineer*, March 5, 1904, cited in David Hatcher Childress, ed., *The Fantastic Inventions of Nikola Tesla*, p. 222, emphasis added.

240

Ibid., pp. 226-227, emphasis added.

241

I.e., Ball lightning.

242

I.e., lightning.

243

Nikola Tesla, “Transmission of Electrical Energy Without Wires,” *Electrical World and Engineer,* March 5, 1904, cited in David Hatcher Childress, ed., *The Fantastic Inventions of Nikola Tesla*, pp. 224-225, emphasis added.

244

Nikola Tesla, “Transmission of Electrical Energy Without Wires,” *Electrical World and Engineer,* March 5, 1904, cited in David Hatcher Childress, ed., *The Fantastic Inventions of Nikola Tesla*, p. 227, emphasis added.

245

For a fuller consideration of this point, see my *Giza Death Star Deployed*, pp. 197-205.

246

Tesla also states that “Simultaneously with these endeavors, the means of individualization and isolation were gradually improved. Great importance was attached to this, for it was found that simple tuning was not sufficient to meet the vigorous practical requirements.” Once again, in other words, standard radio tuning techniques could not be utilized, since the waves were longitudinal “yardstick” waves of *pulses,* rather than Hertzian “jump rope” waves.

247

Nikola Tesla, “Transmission of Electrical Energy Without Wires,” *Electrical World and Engineer,* March 5, 1904, cited in David Hatcher Childress, ed., *The Fantastic Inventions of Nikola Tesla*, pp. 230, 232, emphasis added.

248

“Tesla’s Wireless Torpedo: Inventor Says He Did Show that it Worked Perfectly,” *New York Times*, March 19, 1907.

249

“Mr. Tesla’s Invention: How the Electrician’s Lamp of Aladdin May Construct New Worlds,” *New York Times*, April 21, 1908.

250

“Mr. Tesla’s Invention: How the Electrician’s Lamp of Aladdin May Construct New Worlds,” *New York Times*, April 21, 1908, emphasis added. Tesla’s letter to the *Times* was dated April 19, 1908.

251

Oliver Nichelson, “Tesla Wireless Power Transmitter and the Tunguska Explosion of 1908,” prometheus.al.ru/english/phisik/onichelson/tunguska.htm , p. 6. Note that the website posting Mr. Nichelson’s paper is Russian!

252

America’s first hydrogen bomb, codenamed “Mike,” was estimated to have a yield of 4-6 megatons prior to detonation. When detonated, the explosion ran away to about 10 megatons, approximately the same yield as the *minima* estimation for the Tunguska event.

253

All this raises the question of why the Soviet Union would *mount* such an expensive expedition in the first place to such a remote wilderness area. One possibility, of course, was they were looking for clues of whether or not the event was a natural one, or artificially induced and therefore a product of a technology.

254

Always the inept ET incompetently crashing his ships into the earth! All that technology, and such *bad* pilots! Don’t they have flight simulators and pilot schools? After all, *we* do.

255

Nichelson, op cit., here summarized in different form by David Hatcher Childress, *The Fantastic Inventions of Nikola Tesla*, p. 256.

256

Childress, *The Fantastic Inventions of Nikola Tesla*, p. 256, emphasis added.

257

Oliver Nichelson, “Tesla Wireless Power Transmitter and the Tunguska Explosion of 1908,” prometheus.al.ru/english/phisik/onichelson/tunguska.htm , p. 9.

258

Oliver Nichelson, “Tesla Wireless Power Transmitter and the Tunguska Explosion of 1908,” prometheus.al.ru/english/phisik/onichelson/tunguska.htm , pp. 9-10. it should be noted that Nichelson thinks that Tesla originally was aiming for the North Pole arctic region with this demonstration, and by a miscalculation, overshot his target and hit Siberia instead.

259

Nikola Tesla, “Tesla’s New Device Like Bolts of Thor: He Seeks to Patent a Wireless Engine for Destroying Navies by Pulling a Lever; to Shatter Armies Also,” *New York Times,* Dec. 8, 1915, p. 8, column 3, emphasis added.

260

For the whole theme of an ancient cosmic war and the use and deployment of such technologies of “cosmic hegemony,” see my *Giza Death Star Deployed*, pp. 1-4, and my *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts.*

261

Oliver Nichelson, “Tesla’s Wireless Power Transmission and the Tunguska Explosion of 1908,” citing *The New York Times,* “Suggests Russia Has A ‘Ray’,” May 28, 1924, p. 25.

262

Ibid., citing *Current Opinion,* “A Violet Ray That Kills,” June 1924, pp. 828-829.

263

Ibid., citing *Popular Mechanics*, “’Death Ray’ Is Carried by Shafts of Light,” August 1924, pp. 189-192.

264

Cited in www.tfcbooks.com/articles/tunguska.htm , pp. 6-7.

265

Oliver Nichelson, “Tesla’s Wireless Power Transmission and the Tunguska Explosion of 1908,” citing May 25, 1924 as the date of the *Tribune* article.

The story was also apparently reported in *The New York Times,* “Suggests Russia Has A ‘Ray’,” May 28, 1924, p. 25.

[266]

It is also worth noting that the year is significant — 1924 — for it was the same year that Nobel laureate physicist Prof. Dr. Walther Gerlach wrote openly in the *Frankfurter Allgemeinezeitung* that a large-scale project should be initiated for the investigation of “alchemical”-like transmutations the Germans were observing in scientific experiments. Q.v. my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 272-278. Germany also investigated more directly related technologies as is alleged here, and this research continued during the period of the Third Reich: q.v. my *Secrets of the Unified Field,* pp. 239-248.

[267]

Oliver Nichelson, “Tesla’s Wireless Power Transmission and the Tunguska Explosion of 1908,” p. 3.

[268]

Ibid.

[269]

Researcher Brian Desborough presents rather interesting, though unsubstantiated, information concerning the relationship between Morgan and Tesla: “Disturbed by Tesla’s command of free-energy and anti-gravity technology, Tesla’s financial backer, Louis Cass Payseur, ordered his front man J.P. Morgan to withdraw his financial support. This act financially ruined Tesla through the initiation of false foreclosure proceedings.

“….another added impetus for Morgan’s financial withdrawal was the amorous advances made toward Tesla by Morgan’s daughter. The manservant previously loaned Tesla by Morgan was, in reality, an industrial spy who, in collusion with one of Tesla’s staff, a German engineer named

Fritz Lowenstein, stole Tesla's anti-gravity secrets and assigned them to various Illuminati secret societies, both in Britain and America." (Brian Desborough, *They Cast No Shadows* [Writers Club Press, 2002], p. 295.)

270

This is an important point and argues *against* Nichelson that Tesla used his Wardenclyffe project to make a demonstration of its capabilities at Tunguska. Thus, Tesla would have had to use another facility. However, note that Tesla also indicates that the basic preparations for the completion of the tower had been completed. We are left then with a mystery and a question: could the facility have been duplicated somewhere and by someone else?

271

New York State Supreme Court, Appellate Division, Second Department: Clover Boldt Miles and George C. Boldt, Jr. as Executors of the Last Will and Testament of George C. Boldt, Decesased, Plaintiffs-Respondents, versus Nikola Tesla, Thomas G, Shearman, et al. as Defendants-Appellants, 521- 537, pp. 174-179, cited in David Hatcher Childress, ed., *The Fantastic Inventions of Nikola Tesla* (Adventures Unlimited Press), pp. 314-319, all emphasis added.

272

For those really paying attention, q.v. my *The Giza Death Star,* pp. 239-248, esp, p. 248, and *The Giza Death Star Deployed,* pp. 149-169.

273

Tom Beaden, *Fer De Lance,* pp. 209-210, cited in my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, pp. 219-220.

274

Such, alas, is the case with the recent appearance of the work of a friend of mine, Sesh Heri, and his *Handprint of Atlas.* Heri indeed advances and argues a novel and intriguing hypothesis, namely, that the entire topography and geomorphology of land features and even the continents themselves are results of such standing waves in the earth. And in a brilliant insight, he couples this idea with the whole idea of the layout of certain artificial monuments and constructions around significant naturally occurring geomorphologies. These brilliant insights remain worthy of consideration, despite my following critique of his misunderstandings.

Heri states in his book the following in reference to my weapon hypothesis for the Great Pyramid as outlined in my *Giza Death Star Trilogy*:

“Such a thesis as Farrell develops in his Giza Death Star trilogy is compelling, breathtaking, chilling, and scientifically convincing in its details, and yet….

> “The same critique that I would apply to Dunn’s electrical power plant thesis, I would also apply in a variant form to Farrell’s weapon thesis as well. While the Great Pyramid, as a transmitter of longitudinal electric waves, could certainly be deployed as a weapon, why would it have been built specifically for the purpose of being used as a weapon? Is a ground-based longitudinal electrical wave transmitter the ideal way to configure a massively destructive scalar beam weapon — especially a scalar beam weapon designed for interplanetary war? I would think that a mobile position in space would be the strategically ideal location for a scalar beam weapon…. A civilization that could build the Great Pyramid could also build a giant space platform and mount upon it a longitudinal electric wave transmitter that could propagate massively powerful scalar beams capable of splitting a planet apart. Such a space platform would also be capable at an instant’s notice of moving from its position in space at superluminal speed….
>
> “So why would an advanced civilization build a weapon that was a “sitting duck”? Much more likely, a facility such as the Great Pyramid would be an object to be protected by a space platform,

> not primarily a weapon. Certainly, the Great Pyramid would have been capable of propagating scalar beams in defense if it was attacked. But a true predatory weapon would have to be able to move — and move very quickly.”

Before proceeding with the rest of Heri’s critique of my weapon hypothesis for the Great Pyramid, these critiques must be addressed. As already noted in the main text, the best natural oscillators of these “scalar” resonances are large masses such as planets and stars. To miss this point is to miss entirely the point of the physics involved. Thus, if one *were* to build a mobile space platform for Heri’s version of such a weapon, one might accordingly have to do so on an almost planetary scale. Not that it could not be done, of course, for the types of civilizations as he and I are positing might be capable of doing so, but the purpose of doing so is not cost-effective, for it is *entirely* unnecessary for such a weapon system to be able to *move* in order to *target* a specific object, no matter how distant. The targeting is by resonance and interferometry. The “point-aim-and-shoot” model he is implying is not necessary and indeed in a certain sense almost counter to the whole nature of the system. Similarly, such a system would be defensible precisely on the same basis of exploiting the base planetary system’s geometry and local resonance. In short, it is not necessary for it to *move* in order to be either offensively “predatory” or “defensible” in either case.

Heri’s second critique is far more telling, but suffers from its own shortcomings: “But this strategic flaw is not the most compelling argument against Farrell’s view that the Great Pyramid was originally destined to be a weapon; rather, it is Farrell’s own repeated emphasis that the Great Pyramid is too “over-engineered” to be anything other than a weapon that draws my attention. Farrell makes the point several times in his Giza trilogy that the evidence indicates that the Great Pyramid was able to transmit energy to “Any Possible Receiver in local space” without requiring a complex receiving apparatus at the load end. And he presents some very good evidence and arguments that this indeed was the case. But from this he extrapolates that such a sophisticated device could only be constructed for one purpose and one purpose only — to be used as a weapon of mass destruction — to decimate cities and continents — or to blow up planets. But while such a sophisticated device certainly could be used as a weapon, there is no logical reason that it could only be used as a weapon. Indeed, the very kind of highly sophisticated and sensitive tuning characteristics of such a device suggest to me a more likely constructive use than a destructive one. Sensitive, precise focusing and tuning are the characteristics of careful, constructive manipulation of material substance, not a sledge-hammer disintegration of it. A device that could send energy to "Any Possible Receiver" could send much more than destructive waves — it would have the capacity to send carefully modulated waves of energy that could communicate, nourish, build, and grow. The extreme precision evinced by the Great Pyramid strongly suggests that it was designed to be used as a scalpel, not a sword."

While I am grateful to Heri that he has indeed perceived my arguments accurately and outlined them fairly to a certain extent, and has not resorted to the dismissive tactic of some in the alternative community who simply dismiss the whole hypothesis out of wishful thinking or appeals to "mentors" and "authorities" with access to a presumed millennia-old unwritten tradition, again Heri fails to see the nature of the physics involved, for precision tuning of the very finest surgical precision would indeed be needed — as evidenced by Tesla's own remarks — *especially* if it were deployed as a weapon, precisely in order to avoid the feedback resonance effects noted by Bearden. So this cannot be used as an argument against the weapon hypothesis.

Similarly, the reverse argument that Heri implies — that all its scalpel-like precision and fine-tuning evince a constructive purpose for its construction and primary use also fails, for as the copious citations of Tesla in the main text I hope make clear, *one and the very same* physics and technology can be used for *either* purpose, that is to say, anyone building any such device would *know* as an inevitable implication of the physics employed and involved that one was building both a "power plant" *and* a weapon. It is impossible to disentangle the two, and in Tesla's own words, in such a system it is necessary to "grip the earth." I have merely stated the case in the *Giza Death Star Trilogy* for the weapon hypothesis as being the ultimate purpose of the Pyramid's construction simply because so many wish or choose to ignore this implication of the physics involved. But it is clearly evident in the physics. The true purposes of building such a system would, needless to say, probably be kept secret from the general public at any time, just as Tesla kept the true purpose of Wardenclyffe hidden from J.P. Morgan, and even after revealing it to him, only *later* and in desperation publicly disclosed its weaponization potential. But that potential was clearly present from the beginning as a logical entailment of the physics, and anyone building such a system would know that. Therefore to exclude the possibility of an intentional construction of a weapon from the motivation or purpose in building such systems is *a logical impossibility*. In short, at one and the same time as one is building a system for all Heri's wonderful constructive purposes, one is building by the nature of the case, a weapon, whether one builds it in space or not, and at the very moment that system becomes operational for all those wonderful and constructive purposes, it also becomes operational as a weapon.

(Quotations from Sesh Heri, *The Handprint of Atlas: The Artificial Axis of the Earth and How it Shaped Human Destiny* [Highland, California: Corvos Books, Lost Continent Library Publishing Co., 2008] pp. 240-241.) 275

J. Norman Lockyear, *The Dawn of Astronomy: A Study of Temple Worship and Mythology of the Ancient Egyptians* (Dover Publications, 2006), p. xvi.

276

Alexander Del Mar, *A History of Money in Ancient Countries from the Earliest Times to the Present* (Kessinger Publications, reprint of the George Bell and Sons edition, 1885), p. 15.

277

Alexander Del Mar, *History of Monetary Systems* (Honolulu: University Press of the Pacific, 2000), p. 66.

278

Alexander Del Mar, *A History of Monetary Systems*, pp. 21-22.

279

Ibid., p. 87, emphasis added.

280

Alexander Del Mar, *History of Monetary Systems*, p. 89.

281

Alexander Del Mar, *History of Monetary Systems*, pp. 80, 81, emphasis added.

282

Alexander Del Mar, *History of Monetary Systems*, p. 80.

283

Ibid., p. 72.

284

Besant: the unit of money of the Eastern Roman or Byzantine Empire.

285

Basileus: from the Greek βασιλευς, meaning “king.” The official title of the Emperor in Constantinople was βασιλευς Ρομαιων or “King/Emperor of the Romans.” In earlier documents, the term βασιλευς Ρομαιων was used to translate the Latin term Imperator Romanorum, Emperor of the Romans. While Byzantine imperial constitutional practice could and often did acknowledge “co-emperors,” or Caesars (καισηρ or “kaisers”), the term “emperor of the Romans” was exclusively reserved for the sovereign resident *in Constantinople.* For the implications of this little-noticed fact for the proper interpretation of events in mediaeval history, see Fr. John Romanides, *Franks, Feudalism, and Doctrine.*

286

Alexander Del Mar, *History of Monetary Systems*, pp. 72-73.

287

Ibid., p. 70.

288

Alexander Del Mar, *History of Monetary Systems*, p. 75.

289

Ibid.

290

For more on this subject, see my *The Philosophers' Stone* (Feral House, 2009), chapters one and two.

291

Alexander Del Mar, *A History of Money in Ancient Countries from the Earliest Times to the Present* (Kessinger Publications, reprint of the George Bell and Sons edition, London, 1885), p. 133.

292

Alexander Del Mar, *A History of Money in Ancient Countries from the Earliest Times to the Present,* p. 131.

293

Ibid., pp. 131-132.

294

Ibid., p. 138. Del Mar's mention of Egypt's possible derivation from India merits some comment of its own. This forms, as far as Del Mar is concerned, a component of the vast migrations of the Aryan peoples from the subcontinent westward into the Middle East and later Europe. But the motivation that Del Mar gives for this migration-expansion is rather different than most: "At a very remote date we find bodies of men — Lydians, Phrygians, Phoenicians, Greeks, and others belonging to Aryan races — pushing out in all directions into the desert wilds of aboriginal Europe in search of gold, silver, and copper." (p. 126). In other words, the migration was driven by monetary considerations.

295

Alexander Del Mar, *A History of Money in Ancient Countries from the Earliest Times to the Present*, pp. 138-139, emphasis added.

296

Diodorus Siculus, *The Historical Library of Diodorus the Sicilian*, trans. G. Booth, London, 1814, cited in Del Mar, *A History of Money in Ancient Countries from the Earliest Times to the Present*, p. 141, emphasis added.

297

Alexander Del Mar, *A History of Money in Ancient Countries from the Earliest Times to the Present*, pp. 11-12.

298

Alexander Del Mar, *A History of Money in Ancient Countries from the Earliest Times to the Present*, p. 143, emphasis added.

299

I coined the term "paleophysics" in the books of my *Giza Death Star* trilogy to refer to this effort to examine ancient texts and monuments for their modern-day scientific analogues in an attempt to reconstruct aspects of a much more sophisticated lost physics. This examination emerged as a methodological assumption from the supposition that there once existed a very sophisticated Very High Civilization predating ancient classical civilizations in Egypt, Mesopotamia, the Indus Valley, and China, civilizations that were declined legacies of that precursor. In Lockyear's hands no such assumption is made, so his effort does not attempt a reconstruction of that lost science.

300

J. Norman Lockyear, *The Dawn of Astronomy: A Study of the Temple Worship and Mythology of the Ancient Egyptians* (Dover, 2006), p. 2, emphasis added. I have noted elsewhere the antiquity of astronomical observations in Egypt and Babylon, q.v. my *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2007), pp. 241-243.

301

See my *The Cosmic War,* p. 241.

302

Lockyear, *The Dawn of Astronomy,* pp. 330-331.

303

J. Norman Lockyear, *The Dawn of Astronomy: A Study of Temple Worship and Mythology of the Ancient Egyptians* (Mineola, New York: Dover Publications, Inc., 2006), p. 341.

304

Richard C. Hoagland, DVD of *Hoagland's Mars: Vol. 2: The United Nations Briefing:* (UFO TV), at 37:13-40:01 in the presentation. Hoagland made his remarks at the U.N. in February 1992, emphasis added.

305

Lockyear, *The Dawn of Astronomy,* p. 363.

306

Ibid., p. 372.

307

Ibid.

308

Ibid.

309

Ibid., p. 373.

310

George Frederick Kunz, *The Curious Lore of Precious Stones* (Dover, 1971), p. 1, emphasis added.

311

Ibid.

312

Kunz draws upon several sources, from ancient and Hindu (*The Curious Lore of Precious Stones,* pp. 13-14), to mediaeval (pp. 14-15), Hermetic (p. 16), and even Christian patristic sources (p. 16).

313

Ibid, pp. 1-2.

314

Ibid., p. 2.

315

Ibid., pp. 6, 28.

316

Ibid., p. 28.

317

Ibid., p. 343.

318

Ibid., p. 35.

319

Farrell, *The Cosmic War,* pp. 204-233.

320

Kunz, *The Curious Lore of Precious Stones,* p. 7, emphasis added.

321

Ibid., p. 72. Additionally, Kunz notes that Arab and Persian authors believed diamonds could also confer invincibility.

322

Kunz, *The Curious Lore of Precious Stones*, pp. 52-53.

323

Kunz, *The Curious Lore of Precious Stones*, pp. 171-172, emphasis added. This is a rather interesting comment by Crookes, for archaeologists have long puzzled how the ancient Egyptians managed to *see* inside their temples. If one grants the proposition that they may have known of and used electricity, then might they perhaps have discovered this quality of diamonds? Or was such knowledge another legacy bequeathed to Egypt?

324

Kunz, *The Curious Lore of Precious Stones*, pp. 173-174, citing *Collection des anciens alchemists grecs,"* ed. M. Berthelot, trans. (Paris, 1887, 1888), pp. 336-338, 351-352.

325

Ibid., p. 78, citing Weil, *Biblische Legenden*, p. 225.

326

Q.v. my *The Cosmic War,* pp. 204-232.

327

Kunz, *The Curious Lore of Precious Stones*, p. 230, citing Fossey, *La Magie Assyrienne* (Paris, 1902), p. 301, emphasis added.

328

Ibid., p. 231.

329

Ibid., pp. 275-276.

330

Ibid., p. 277.

331

Kunz, *The Curious Lore of Precious Stones*, pp. 277-278.

332

Ibid., p. 309

333

Ibid., p. 310.

334

Ibid., p. 314. Kunz also notes that the wearing of a breastplate consisting of 12 ornaments is unique to the Hebrews *and to Egypt:* “That an Egyptian origin should be sought seems most probable. A breast ornament worn by the high priest of Memphis, as figured in an Egyptian relief, consists of twelve small balls, or crosses, intended to represent Egyptian hieroglyphics. As it cannot be determined that these figures were cut from precious stones, the only definite connection with the Hebrew ornament is the number of figures; this suggests, but fails to prove, a common origin. The monuments show that the high priest of Memphis wore this ornament as early as the fourth Dynasty, or, approximately 4000 B.C.” (p. 282) Kunz also notes that after the Babylonian captivity a second breastplate was most likely made. (p. 280). It is possible that the Hebrew association of the 12 stones of the breastplate and of the 12 tribes to the 12 zodiacal signs received an impetus from Babylonian preoccupations with astrology and the associations of gemstones with celestial bodies and their influences.

335

Kunz, *The Curious Lore of Precious Stones*, pp. 283-285, emphasis added.

336

An important consideration in this regard is that the Emperor Justinian, who made it his deliberate and conscious goal to restore Roman rule over Rome itself, would most likely, through his brilliant military mastermind Belisarius, have exacted from the Vandals the return of all treasure they took from the Western Rome.

337

David Astle, *The Babylonian Woe,* www.jrbooksonline.com/PDF_Books/the_babylonian_woe.pdf , p. 92.

338

I should also stress that I do not share all of Astle's theological or spiritual leanings, though these do not detract or interfere with the main argument of his book.

339

David Astle, *The Babylonian Woe,* p. 3, emphasis added.

340

Ibid.

341

Ibid., emphasis added.

342

Astle, *The Babylonian Woe,* p. 5, emphasis added.

343

Ibid.

344

Ibid., p. 10.

345

Astle, *The Babylonian Woe,* p. 9.

346

Consider only the fact that in the United States, since the establishment of the Federal Reserve system, there were initially several types of paper notes in circulation: the state's silver and gold certificates and United States *bills,* and the private bank's "Federal Reserve *notes*." It should also be noted that it is now all but impossible to find any of the former notes in general circulation, since the Federal Reserve makes it a policy to pull and destroy any bills that are not the interest-bearing debt notes it does not issue privately, and since collectors, knowing this, themselves often pull such notes for their collections or to sell to other collectors.

347

Astle, *The Babylonian Woe,* p. 10, emphasis added.

348

Ibid., p. 8.

349

Ibid.

350

Astle, *The Babylonian Woe,* p. 29.

351

Astle, *The Babylonian Woe*, pp. 14-15.

352

Again, it should be recalled that Lockyear proposed that the astronomical bases of various Egyptian temples could also be a basis of these religious conflicts.

353

Citing T.B.L. Webster, *From Mycenaean Homer,* p. 22.

354

Astle, *The Babylonian Woe*, p. 39.

355

Christopher Dawson, *The Age of the Gods* (London, 1928), p. 130, emphasis added.

356

Astle, *The Babylonian Woe,* pp. 13-14, emphasis added, citing Sir Charles Woolley, *Abraham* (London, 1936), pp. 124-125.

357

Astle, op. cit., p. 12.

358

Ibid.,, p. 55.

359

Astle, *The Babylonian Woe*, p. 36, citing James H. Breasted, *A History of Egypt*, pp. 97-98.

360

Astle, *The Babylonian Woe,* p. 43.

361

Citing *Encyclopedia of World History* (Houghton Mifflin, publishers, Boston, 1940), p. 48, cited in Astle, *The Babylonian Woe*, p. 96, emphasis added by me.

362

Astle, op. cit., p. 96, emphasis added.

363

Citing *Encyclopedia of World History* (Houghton Mifflin, publishers, Boston, 1940), p. 48, cited in Astle, *The Babylonian Woe*, p. 96, emphasis added by me.

364

Astle, *The Babylonian Woe,* p. 40.

365

For the aspect of energy autarchy and the allied military technologies, see my *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, *Secrets of the Unified Field,* and *The Nazi International*.

366

Astle, op. cit., p. 139.

367

Ibid., pp. 139-140.

[368] Ibid., p. 140.

[369] Astle, *The Babylonian Woe,* p. 140.

[370] Ibid., p. 143.

[371] Ibid.

[372] Astle, *The Babylonian Woe,* p. 144.

[373] Astle, *The Babylonian Woe,* p. 71.

[374] Astle, *The Babylonian Woe,* p. 76. See also p. 129.

[375] Ibid., pp. 76-77.

[376] Astle, *The Babylonian Woe,* p. 13.

[377] See Astle's discussion on pp. 15ff, *The Babylonian Woe.*

[378]

Astle, *The Babylonian Woe*, p. 15, italicized emphasis added, boldface emphasis in the original.

[379]

See also Astle, op. cit., p. 192.

[380]

In this regard, one need only consider the modern parallel, with Rockefeller financing of liberal Protestantism and various ecumenical agencies and schemes.

[381]

The whole Cosmic War scenario I have outlined in *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2007).

[382]

Brian Desborough, *They Cast No Shadows: A Collection of Essays on the Illuminati, Revisionist History, and Suppressed Technologies* (San Jose, California: Writers Club Press, 2002), p. 175.

[383]

“Econophysics,” en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Econophysics , p. 1.

[384]

Ibid.

[385]

Ibid.

386

Ibid.

387

Ibid., p. 2.

388

“Econophysics,” en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Econophysics , p. 2.

389

David Bohm, *Wholeness and the Implicate Order* (London: Routledge, 1999), pp. 186f.

390

David Bohm, *Wholeness and the Implicate Order,* p. 187.

391

Ibid.

392

Bohm, *Wholeness and the Implicate Order,* p. 188.

393

Ibid., p. 190.

394

Bohm, *Wholeness and the Implicate Order,* p. 190, emphasis added.

395

Bohm, *Wholeness and the Implicate Order,* p. 190, emphasis added.

396

Ibid., pp. 190-191, emphasis added.

397

Bohm, *Wholeness and the Implicate Order,* pp. 191-192, emphasis added.

398

I.e., the Foundation's private magazine.

399

Ray Tomes, "Towards a Unified Theory of Cycles," paper presented at The Foundation for the Study of Cycles conference proceedings February 1990, www.cyclesresearchinstitute.org , p. 4, italicized emphasis added, boldface emphasis in the original.

400

For the subject of the *engineering* approach to physics unification, rather than a *theoretical* approach to such unification, see my *The Giza Death Star* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2001).

401

Q.v. my *The Philosophers' Stone* (Feral House, 2009), pp. 164-65.

402

Ibid., pp. 151-169.

403

Farrell, *The Philosophers' Stone*, pp. 166-167.

404

Ibid., pp. 176-178.

405

Ibid., p. 179.

406

Dewey and Dakin, *Cycles: The Science of Prediction*, p. 191.

407

Robert Gover, *Time and Money: The Economy and the Planets* (Hopewell Publications, 2005), p. 2.

408

Ibid.

409

Gover, *Time and Money*, pp. 2-3.

410

Ibid., p. 10, emphases in the original.

411

Ibid., p. 51.

412

Gover, *Time and Money*, p. 70, emphasis added.

413

Ibid., p. 41.

414

Ibid., p. 40.

415

Gover, *Time and Money*, p. 44.

416

Ibid.

417

Gover, *Time and Money*, p. 45.

418

Ibid., p. 47.

419

James Nelson, “Shortwave Radio Propagation Correlation With Planetary Positions.” Conference paper presented to the AIEE Subcommittee on Energy Sources, AIEE General Winter Meeting, January 1952.

420

Ibid. The *dissimilarities* should also be noted, for Gover’s focus is on the outer planets, namely, the gas giants and Pluto (recently demoted from planetary status). Additionally, Gover, in classical astrological fashion, notes which zodiacal house the planets are in, whereas Nelson does not.

421

Ellen Hodgson Brown, *Web of Debt: The Shocking Truth about Our Money System and How We Can Break Free* (Baton Rouge, Louisiana: Third Millennium, 2008), p. 39. If there is one book the reader should read about the history of privately-issued debt money versus state-issued credit money, this book is it. It is thoroughly documented and well-written. Brown especially excels at exposing the fallacious assumptions of many that a mere return to the “gold standard” would resolve the problem. As we have already seen, bullion itself is subject to manipulation by the “bullion brokers” or banksters.

422

Brown, op. cit., p. 37.

423

Ibid.

424

Ibid.

425

Ibid., emphasis added.

426

Brown, op. cit, pp. 40-41, italicized emphasis in the original, boldface emphasis added.

427

Ibid., p. 41.

428

Ibid.

---

[429] Brown, op. cit., p. 43.

[430] Ibid., emphasis in the original.

[431] Ibid., p. 44.

[432] Brown, op. cit., p. 47, emphasis added.

[433] Ibid.

[434] Brown, op. cit., pp. 47-48, emphasis added.

[435] Brown, op. cit., pp. 89-90, emphasis added by Brown.

[436] Ibid., p. 91.

[437] Brown, op. cit., pp. 91-92, emphasis added.

[438] See Brown’s discussion on pp. 93-95.

439

Ibid., p. 94, emphasis added.

440

Ibid.

441

Brown, op. cit., p. 140.

442

Ibid.

443

Quigley, *Tragedy and Hope*, p. 326.

444

Brown, op. cit., pp. 141-142, all italicized and boldface emphases added.

445

Fritz Springmeir, *Bloodlines of the Illuminati*, p. 237. Springmeir states that "According to their own secret family genealogy, which is recorded in a sacred secret book, the Rothschilds are descended from Nimrod, the great Babylonian warrior leader." Of course, a "secret sacred book" means that there is *no* substantiation of these claims. However, as will be seen in a subsequent chapter, there is a case that can be made of a generalized contextual nature in which such claims may be interpreted, and in which they find a more or less very loose corroboration.

446

Cited in Robert Gover, *Time and Money: The Economy and the Planets*, p. 4.

447

Daniel Estulin, *The True Story of the Bilderberg Group*, p. 61.

448

Brian Desborough, *They Cast No Shadows: A Collection of Essays on the Illuminati, Revisionist History, and Suppressed Technologies* (San Jose, California: Writers Club Press, 2002), p. 174, emphasis added.

449

www.vortexmaps.com/devils-triangle.php

450

www.vortexmaps.com/grid-history.php

451

www.vortexmaps.com/grid-history.php , pp. 1-2.

452

Ibid., p. 2.

453

www.soulsofdistortion.nl/SOD_chapter7.html , p. 1

454

Similar experiments were conducted by the physician Hans Jenny using a vibrating plate and ordinary sand, with several beautiful structures resulting in a gridlike structure of standing waves. These pictures and the basis of Jenny’s study form the subject of a fascinating book, *Cymatics*.

455

Joseph P. Farrell, *The Philosophers’ Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter,* pp. 254-255.

456

Villingen-Schwennigen, Germany, 2003.

457

Prof. Dr.-Ing. Konstantin Meyl, *Scalar Waves,* pp. 608, 610.

458

Ibid., p. 609.

459

Meyl, *Scalar Waves*, p. 612.

460

Meyl, *Scalar Waves*, p. 614.

461

Meyl, *Scalar Waves*, p. 618.

462

Ibid.

463

Meyl, *Scalar Waves*, p. 620.

464

Meyl, *Scalar Waves*, p. 624.

465

Meyl, *Scalar Waves*, p. 622.

466

Ibid.

467

Meyl, *Scalar Waves*, p. 622.

468

Meyl, *Scalar Waves*, emphasis added, p. 613.

469

Meyl, *Scalar Waves*, p. 615.

470

In other words, the entirety of his book which preceded this concluding section!

471

Meyl, *Scalar Waves*, p. 611.

472

“Inbreeding ,” Wikipedia, en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Inbreeding , p. 4.

473

Tenney Frank, *The American Historical Review,* Vol. 21, July 21, 1916, p. 689, italicized emphasis in the original, boldface emphasis added.

474

Tenney Frank, *The American Historical Review,* Vol. 21, July 21, 1916, p. 681.

475

Ibid., pp. 692-693.

476

Ibid., p,. 693, italicized emphasis original, boldface emphasis added.

477

Tenney Frank, *The American Historical Review,* Vol. 21, July 21, 1916, p. 693.

478

Ibid., pp. 689-690, emphasis added.

479

Juvenal, *Satires*, III: 62.

480

Tenney Frank, *The American Historical Review,* Vol. 21, July 21, 1916, p. 703.

481

Ibid., p. 704.

482

See the *Cambridge Ancient History*, Vol. X, p, 727.

483

Webster Tarpley, “Lord Palmerston’s Multicultural Human Zoo,” www.mail-archive.com/ ctrl@listserv.aol.com/msg17357.html , p. 4. See also Tarpley, “Venice’s War Against Western Civilization,” www.schillerinstitute.org/fid_91-96/952_venice.html , pp. 5-7, for a more detailed discussion, particularly of the role of Gasparo Cardinal Contarini in these machinations.

484

For this connection, see my *Giza Death Star Destroyed* (2006), pp. 77-78, and *The Cosmic War* (2007), pp. 311-318. See also David Rohl, *The Lost Testament* (2002), pp. 73-76. Rohl clearly identifies the Mesopotamian god Ninurta with Nimrod, based on various considerations. In doing so, he clearly highlights the massive chronological problems that I alluded to in the Preface to *The Cosmic War*, for the archaeological record, as Rohl notes, would *not* support a very ancient dating for the event, such as I implied in that book. Contrariwise, as I also noted, if one takes the ancient texts themselves seriously, and reads them in the backdrop of the Exploded Planet Hypothesis, then such extreme ancientness *is* indicated. I believe the way out of this impasse is once again to recognize that the ancient texts and myths of Sumeria and other cultures may have been deliberately contrived to function on a *multitude* of levels — including chronological ones — simultaneously.

485

www.thepeerage.com/p19533.htm , p. 1.

486

Ibid.

487

Ibid., p. 2.

488

www.trustnetoffshore.com/Factsheets/Factsheet.aspx?fundCode=R1F58&univ=DC .

489

“Soul and personhood,” this phrasing is not redundant, but is meant to express the author’s opinion that “soul” and “person” are two very distinct things. How they came to be equated in the popular mind of many Westerners would require a tome in its own right.

490

For a brief survey of this doctrine in the context of other paleophysical themes, see my *Giza Death Star Destroyed*, chapter 3.

491

Michael Hayes, *The Hermetic Code in DNA: The Sacred Principles in the Ordering of the Universe*, pp. 13, 15.

492

Ibid., p. 15.

493

Ibid.

494

Hayes, *The Hermetic Code in DNA*, pp. 15-16.

495

Ibid., p. 16.

496

Hayes, *The Hermetic Code in DNA*, p. 17.

497

Ibid., p. 18.

498

Ibid.

499

Ibid., p. 19.

500

Hayes, *The Hermetic Code in DNA*, pp. 19-20.

501

Hayes, *The Hermetic Code in DNA*, p. 93.

502

Ibid., p. 159.

503

Freeman W. Cope, "Evidence from Activation Energies for Superconductive Tunneling in Biological Systems at Physiological Temperatures," *Physiological Chemistry and Physics 3* (1971), 403-410, pp. 403-404, emphasis added.

[504] It would, moreover, explain the fact that I first pointed out in my book *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts*, why the alleged high technology of the ancient gods appeared to be activated only in close proximity or actual physical contact with their owners. See chapters 8 and 9 of that work.

[505] Glen Yeadon and John Hawkins, *The Nazi Hydra In America: Suppressed History of a Century* (Progressive Press, 2008), p. 173, emphasis added.

[506] Zbigniew Brzezinski, *The Grand Chessboard: American Primacy and Its Geostrategic Imperatives* (Basic Books, 1997), p. 215.

[507] This would, perforce, imply an astonishing thing, namely, that Dr. Li’s Gaussian copula formula failed for yet *another* reason than those advanced in the Prologue, and that the failure was due to not recognizing a deeper physics in play. The data compiled by the Foundation for the Study of Cycles, as well as other data presented here, would seem to indicate also that at least *some* in the international finance “community” are *fully aware* of this hypothesis, and plan their actions accordingly.

[508] See my *Nazi International*, chapters 8 and 9.

[509] For the complete story of how this was accomplished, see Alexander Del Mar’s *Barbara Villiers: A History of Monetary Crimes.*

Babylon’s Banksters:
The Alchemy of Deep Physics, High
Finance and Ancient Religion
© 2010 by Joseph P. Farrell
All rights reserved.
A Feral House book.
eISBN : 978-1-932-59585-7

BAPHOMET

THE TEMPLE MYSTERY UNVEILED

TRACY R TWYMAN
ALEXANDER RIVERA

BAPHOMET

THE TEMPLE MYSTERY UNVEILED

TRACY R TWYMAN
ALEXANDER RIVERA

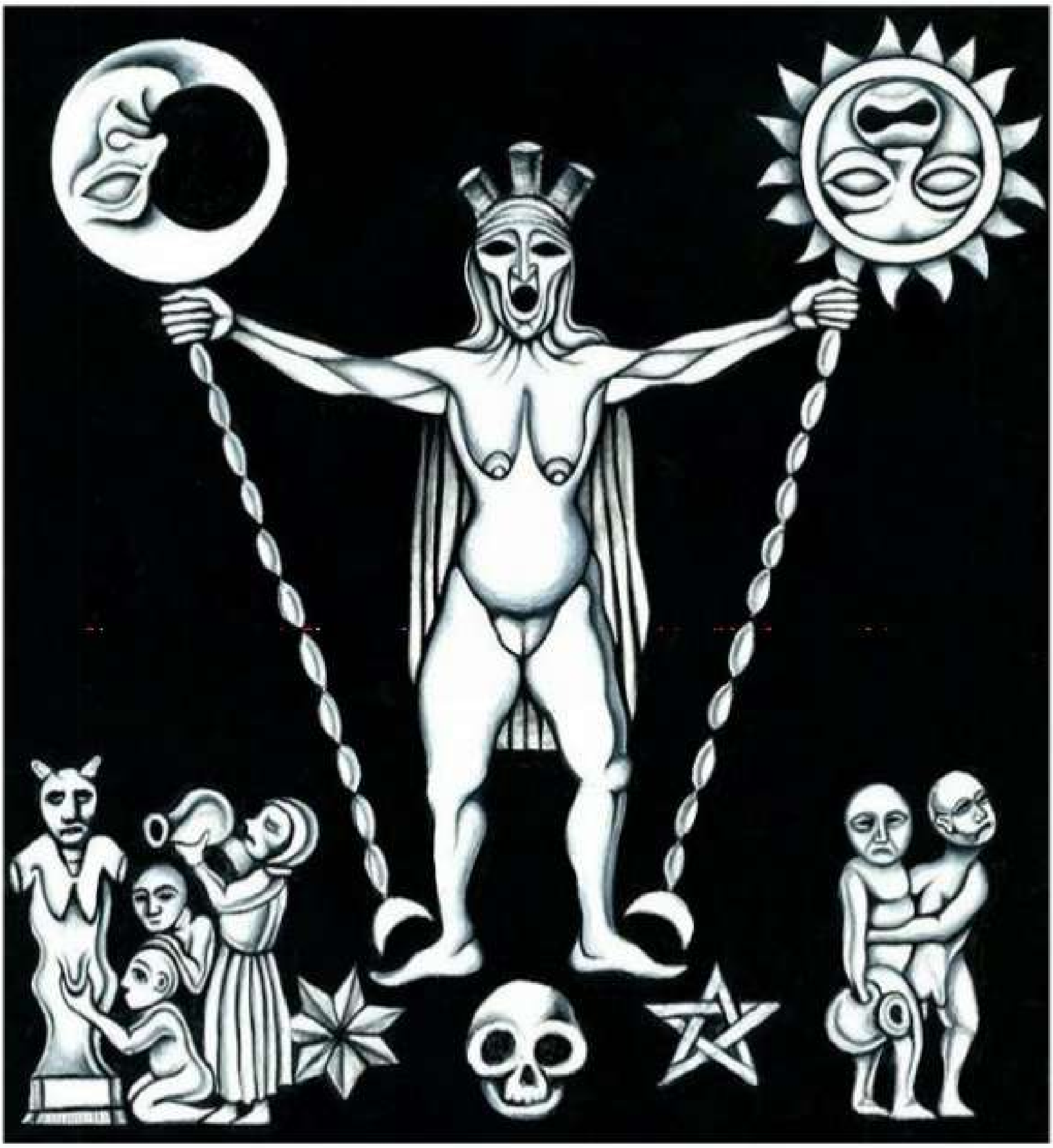

The Distinguished Charity of Mete

Frontispiece by Jesse Peper

BAPHOMET

The Temple
Mystery Unveiled

By Tracy R. Twyman
And Alexander Rivera

BAPHOMET

The Temple Mystery Unveiled

By Tracy R. Twyman

And Alexander Rivera

ISBN # 978 - 0 - 692 - 58076 - 9

© 2005 - 2015

All Rights Reserved

Front and Back Cover:

Artwork by Jesse Peper

Jesse-Peper.org

No part of this publication may be reproduced in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording, or by any

information storage or retrieval system, without permission in writing from the

publisher.

Table of Contents

Preface

Chapter 1: Pacts with the Devil

Chapter 2: Seed of the Serpent

Chapter 3: The Goat-Faced Wild Man

Chapter 4: The Three Hermeses

Chapter 5: Divine Knowledge

Chapter 6: The Head of Prophecy

Chapter 7: The Baptism of Wisdom

Chapter 8: Abraxas: Secret of the Temple

Chapter 9: Riding the Goat Current

Bibliography

About the Authors

Other Books by Tracy R. Twyman

Clock Shavings. Amazon

Money Grows on the Tree of Knowledge. Amazon

Solomon's Treasure: The Magic and Mystery of America's Money. Amazon

The Merovingian Mythos and the Mystery of Rennes-le-Château. Amazon Mind-Controlled Sex Slaves and the CIA. Amazon

The Arcadian Mystique: The Best of Dagobert's Revenge Magazine. Amazon Hocus Pocus: The Magical Power of St. Peter. Amazon

The Judas Goat: The Substitution Theory of the Crucifixion. Amazon

The Choice Vine: Mary Magdalene, the Sacred Whore, and the Benjamite Inheritance. Amazon

The Cutting of the Orm: The Secret Calendar of the Priory of Sion. Amazon Dead But Dreaming: The Great Old Ones of Lovecraftian Legend Reinterpreted as

Atlantean Kings. Amazon

www.tracytwyman.com

www.theaeoneye.com

[P]ower and dominion over all that is on earth, both that which is above and that which is beneath,

are in my hand.

—Melek Taus,

from Al-Jilwah (The Revelation),

Yezidi scripture

Preface

… I believe the despite its cerebral dementia and its alvine madness, this book, by virtue of its very subject, rendered a service. It refocused attention on the machinations of the Evil One who had succeeded in making people disbelieve his existence; it was the starting-point for all the renewed studies of the eternal advance of Satanism. By revealing the hateful practices of necromancy it has helped to annihilate them… .

J-K Huysmans, Preface to the Second Edition of Against Nature, regarding his

book The Damned

What you are about to read is the product of over ten years of obsession and sacrifice. While I first wrote on the subject of Baphomet in 1999 for Dagobert ’s Revenge (the magazine I published at the time), my true obsession started when I was contacted by this entity through the Ouija board after a series of encounters with other spirits. This contact subsequently happened dozens of times over the course of several years, as it aided the research I was doing on the Holy Grail and the sacred bloodlines of Europe. Through those conversations (detailed in my 2014 book Clock Shavings) I got to know this personality well, and became intrigued by the complexity of its nature. I decided to research the subject of Baphomet itself: where it came from, what it meant, and how it had influenced history.

This led to the writing of my first book on the esoteric history of money, 2005 ’s Solomon ’s Treasure. The subject of that book is, believe it or not, intimately connected with that of Baphomet, as the book itself explains. This was a bit of a detour from my main goal, but my research of Baphomet had led me there, so I went with it. Then in 2007 I started in earnest writing a book on the topic of Baphomet alone.

This has proved to be the most challenging effort I have ever made. The subject defies exact interpretation. The clues lead down tortuous footpaths deep into labyrinthine forests where one becomes easily lost. “Facts ” that seem to be taken for granted by most other authors fall apart under scrutiny, with no evidence pointing to where the real truth is, or how and why the lie was constructed and perpetuated. In addition, both I and several of the people I ended up working with on this project found that a sense of fogginess would descend upon the brain whenever a serious attempt was made to sort out the details. It seemed as if Baphomet was playing hard to get. He wanted to be seen and credited for his influence, but never pinned down.

It required the help of a partner to complete this task. My mind simply could not display all of the conflicting information about Baphomet on a single desktop for analysis. That is why I was very grateful when in 2014, Gnostic writer Alexander Rivera joined me in this quest. From that point on, things quickly began to take shape. Throughout the process, it seemed like our efforts were both helped and hindered by forces from without: like there was a supernatural entity putting us in the right place at each step to receive the information we needed next, yet at the same time unexpected obstacles would come along to thwart our efforts.

A crucial element of the research, the translation of Joseph von Hammer- Purgstall ’s Mysterium Baphometis Revelatum from Latin into English, almost didn ’t happen for numerous reasons. First the translator suffered a sudden and severe decline in his health, requiring him to finish the rest of the work with an assistant to help in the typing of the words. Then he almost quit near the end because of spiritual attacks he endured involving disturbing mental images and poltergeist activity. Even his assistant experienced the haunting. Finally, the discovery of the artifacts in the British Museum was a fluke, particularly the second casket, which I wasn ’t even looking for because I didn ’t know it existed. (All of this is covered thoroughly in the final chapter of this book.)

I must stress that, although my obsession with Baphomet began because

of an encounter on the Ouija board (which I did not ask for, mind you, as I was simply trying to contact a dead French artist at the time), and some of my early research was inspired by clues given to me in this manner, all of the information that you find here was discovered and analyzed the old-fashioned way, pouring through books in various languages, some over two thousand years old, utilizing inter-library loan programs, and purchasing (at great expense) rare out-of-print volumes. We also utilized the plethora of old material scanned into Google Books, as well as the catalogues of display listings for several museums. Of course, we made good use of our network of friends all over the world, many of whom truly went out of their way to help, including, notably, Karl James Smith and Christopher Knowles.

It goes without saying that we could not have done this without our mysterious translator (who wishes to be anonymous). We are also forever indebted to Philip Gonzalez, who tracked down a copy of the Hammer-Purgstall book, scanned the images, helped us find a translator, helped us with analysis, and in the end provided crucial proofreading and fact-checking of the final manuscript. The people at the British Museum have been extremely helpful as well, including Parveen Sodhi in the Images Department, and Virginia Smithson in the Department of Britain, Europe & Prehistory. Also, thanks must go to the talented Jesse Peper for providing the cover art and frontispiece.

Today “Baphomet ” is almost a household name, thanks to the prevalence of conspiracy theories that have spread widely on the internet. It is even pre- loaded into the dictionary on my smartphone, unlike a lot of normal English words that I am surprised to find missing. Nevertheless, despite the great many words being written about Baphomet, very few seem to understand it as anything more than a symbol of Satan. It may be that, but it is a lot more also. In fact, as

Masonic writers have hinted in the past, it may be the preeminent mystery of the Western spiritual tradition. Understanding Baphomet sheds light not only on the motivations of the Devil, but on the mind of God as well. I hope you find reading this book to be almost as enlightening as it was for us to write it.

Tracy R. Twyman

Vancouver, Washington

October 2015

Chapter 1:Pacts with the Devil

It is established from their monuments that three capital crimes brought against them by the Articles of Accusation — the crimes of apostasy, idolatry and pederasty —are foundation teachings of the Ophitic doctrine of which the Templars were followers.

—Baron Joseph von Hammer-Purgstall, Mysterium Baphometis Revelatum It was, in many ways, the greatest political scandal of European history,

and certainly the most bizarre. The charges included sodomy, infanticide and other murders, kissing a goat ’s behind, spitting and urinating on the cross, invoking the Devil, and worshipping a demonic idol, as well as denying Christ, the Virgin, the Saints, and God himself. The alleged perpetrators were the members of one of the richest and most powerful entities on the continent, an enormous transnational business enterprise that had begun as a holy order of fighting monks receiving its authority directly from the Pope, largely responsible for the success, and then the failure, of the Crusades to capture Jerusalem for Christendom. After 200 years, their power and wealth had swelled to the point where it seemed they feared no one, not even the king of France himself. That was about to change.

At dawn on Friday the 13th, 1307, the Knights Templar in France were arrested en masse by King Philip IV ’s seneschals. Philip was out to get the order. He owed them a lot of money, and they had embarrassed him by refusing him membership to their club. Now he planned to use his influence on the papacy to have them disbanded. He had already sent in spies to join the order and see if there was any truth to the rumors: that there was something unholy about the Templar initiation ceremony. What his spies reported back would make anyone ’s hair stand on end.

When the stories of the spies are combined with the confessions of the tortured knights, a remarkably cohesive, if horrific, pattern begins to form. The Templars apparently had a secret Rule, different than the one given to them by their patron, Saint Bernard of Clairvaux. Outwardly, they were Christian warrior- monks, pledged to fight for the protection and expansion of Christendom, and to adhere to an extremely ascetic lifestyle. Inwardly though, it seemed, they practiced anti-Christian rites.

It was said that at initiation new recruits were forced to kiss the naked behind of one of their new brothers, although sometimes the backside of a goat or a cat was substituted. They were made to spit upon the Cross, revoke their Christian baptism, and denounce Jesus. They were then introduced to their new savior, whom they were to worship. It was a “head ” of some sort named “Baphomet. ” None of the inquisitors knew what that meant at the time, and no translation was offered by any of the confessors.

This “Baphomet ” head was variously said to be that of a bearded man, a woman, a goat, or a demon with leathery skin. Some said that it had two or three faces, or that it had “feet. ” While it was generally described as a mummified flesh-and-blood relic of some sort, others said that it was a skull, or that it was made of brass or gold, or that it was merely a painting of a head. All witnesses agreed that it was terrifying to behold. They said that the head “prophesied ” to them during the ceremonies, and gave them “wisdom. ” They believed that it “made them rich ” and “caused the land to germinate. ”

By November 1307, even the Grand Master of the Templars himself, Jacques de Molay had confessed to these charges, and more. Pope Clement had heard enough. He issued a bull ordering the arrest of all Templars in eight countries, including England, Ireland, Portugal, Italy and Germany. On August 12, 1308, he drew up a list of 127 offenses with which they were charged. In addition to the various acts of blasphemy, heresy, sodomy and murder already discussed, they were also accused of treasonous dealings with the Muslim enemy during the Crusades, the Saracens. Trials dragged on for another five years. Many recanted their confessions, including that of the Grand Master, and those knights who did so were put to death in brutal ways. As he burned at the stake in 1314, Grand Master Jacques De Molay uttered a curse against Pope Clement and King Philip, prophesying that they would both die within a year. They did.

Other knights stuck to their confessions, and were rewarded with lenient sentences of monastic penance not much different from the ascetic lifestyle they were already used to. The order was officially disbanded by the Pope, its property given over to other monastic orders. So ended what was once the greatest military and economic power in Europe.

How could things have gone so horribly wrong? In the beginning, nobody could have imagined this. The Templars were thought of as the Special Forces of their day, the elite fighting force at the forefront of the Crusades. The order began when a 22-year-old French knight named Hughes de Payens and eight of his friends took a vow of obedience to the Patriarch of Jerusalem, pledging to live in poverty and chastity. They dedicated themselves to the protection of pilgrims en route to the Holy Land. The knights were given lodging by Baldwin II, King of Jerusalem, who stationed them at the al-Aqsa Mosque next to the Dome of the Rock, site of the original Temple of Solomon. Thus they were named “the Poor Knights of the Temple of Solomon, ” which was rendered “Knights Templar ” in common usage.

Soon the knighthood was adopted by Saint Bernard of Clairvaux, leader of the Cistercian order of monks. Membership blossomed. In 1128 the knights assembled at the papal Council of Troyes in France, where they were given an official rule and assigned a plain white robe as their uniform. A red equilateral cross was added to the outfit in 1147. The Templar Rule consisted of 72 paragraphs detailing every aspect of life in the monastery and on the battlefield.

At most meals they were allowed only bread with no water, although meat was served three times a week. Scriptures were read aloud during meal times, but all other talking was forbidden. New members had to give up their wives and donate all of their property to the order, so as to live in perfect poverty and chastity. They slept on the floor communally, always with a candle left burning to discourage “immoral acts ” at night.

In battle the Templars were forbidden to retreat, required to fight to the death of their last man. This made the Templars very formidable foes at war. Because of this, they were feared and respected by their Muslim Saracen enemies. In 1148, as the Second Crusade commenced, King Louis VII of France put the Templars in command of all European armies, and they led every major battle of the Crusades from then onward.

However, the most important moment for the Templars had come in March of 1139, when Pope Innocent II issued a papal bull entitled “Omne Datum Optimum ” (usually translated “Every Best Gift, ” although a “datum ” is actually a “fact ” or “object of knowledge ” more than a “gift. ”). In it, the Knights Templar were declared the “true Israelites, ” and the Pope ’s private army, answerable to him alone. No other king, bishop or nobleman had any ultimate authority over them. They were granted the right to form their own priesthood, with full authority to forgive sins and to raise tithes. They were also given the right to lend money with interest, something that the Church ’s anti-usury policy forbade all other Christians from doing.

The Templars began to amass wealth and power quickly. Their membership was taken from the cream of European aristocracy, so each new initiate remitted to the order what was often considerable money and property. Wealthy families from all over Europe also donated lands and money as the Second Crusade mounted. The Templars set up “preceptories ” throughout the continent. These were conducted like semi-autonomous city-states, where the knights farmed their own food, ran their own hospitals, and engaged in the manufacture of arms, textiles, and other goods. They also ran their own banks. This network of preceptories created ideal routes of travel for European pilgrims seeking the Holy Land, whom the Templars had sworn to protect at their inception.

Indeed, it was the way these preceptories operated, particularly their banking operations, which provided a form of protection for the pilgrims. Instead of loading themselves down with gold and provisions, which were likely to be stolen, the pilgrims would simply deposit some money in the form of gold or silver at the Templar preceptory nearest to their point of departure. From there they would make their way to Jerusalem, traveling from one preceptory to another. At each stop the pilgrim would present the banker with a “chit ” —a piece of paper that was encoded with ciphered information regarding the pilgrim ’s deposit at the originating bank. The pilgrim ’s account would then be charged for all the accommodation he received while staying at that particular preceptory, and he could also make cash withdrawals if he wished. A new chit, encoded with his new balance, would then be given to him to present at the next preceptory. In this way the word “check ” or “cheque ” entered into the French and English languages.

It was thus by donations, money-lending and industrial trade that the Templars were able to expand their empire to become Europe ’s most powerful economic influence. They were able to maintain this even after the Holy Land was finally lost in the Eighth Crusade in 1271. But now they were without a cause. Some of Europe ’s kings and nobles, and well as many within the Church, began to wonder what the Templars were going to do next. They had money, property, authority, horses, weapons, and a standing army with nothing to do. Many European crown heads were heavily indebted to the Templars financially, and since they were also banned by papal decree from exercising any political authority over the knights, many of these kings understandably felt threatened.

There was another potential threat as well, of a more metaphysical nature. Not everyone understood exactly how the Templars had become so wealthy and powerful. It was rumored that there must have been a secret to this. One rumor popular now, which may have circulated at the time, was that the original nine founding Templars had discovered a treasure within or beneath the Al-Aqsa Mosque in Jerusalem, perhaps a cache of King Solomon ’s fabled wealth. After the arrests, King Philip had the Templar properties in France turned upside down looking for treasure, but found very little money at all, something that has always puzzled Templar scholars (as noted in the book The Warriors and the Bankers by Alan Butler and Stephen Dafoe).

Theories of a secret Templar treasure have been the subject of hundreds of books throughout the years, and this idea is even at the heart of some rituals performed by modern Freemasons. It is often suggested that the knights might have found the lost Ark of the Covenant underneath the Temple

Mount. How this would have made the order wealthy, however, is something that really remains unexplained by the theorists. Some suggest that it would have given them negotiating power with the Church, which would have been eager to possess such a relic.

Another rumor floating around at the end of the 13th century was that the Templars acquired their wealth because their founders had made a pact with the Devil. According to this theory they allegedly kept the Pope under their control and compelled others to give them money through the power of witchcraft. Stories had begun to leak from disgruntled ex-knights about the secret initiation rituals. Word was getting around about the idol worship, the obscene kisses, the homosexual orgies, and the desecration of the Cross. Why would men in such important, respectable positions do such things, unless they were benefiting from it in some tangible way?

It would be so easy to dismiss these rumors as typical tall tales of the Middle Ages. But in their confessions the knights admitted that they did these horrible things in their rituals. They said it was all part of the worship of their demonic idol, a head named Baphomet. As Michael Baigent, Richard Leigh and Henry Lincoln put it in Holy Blood, Holy Grail :

Subjected to interrogation by the Inquisition … a number of knights referred to something called “Baphomet ” —too many, and in too many different places, for Baphomet to be the invention of a single individual or even a single preceptory.

The knights also voluntarily proclaimed that it was the worship of the head which made them wealthy. Is this the “secret of the Templar treasure ” for which King Philip was looking? Did he perhaps think that by forcing the knights to describe their rituals in detail, he would discover a method of getting rich through witchcraft?

When Philip ’s police raided the Templar properties in France, they found very little gold or silver bullion. They certainly did not find the Ark of the Covenant. But they did find, in the Paris Temple, the large bust of a female figure made out of silver. It was hollow. Inside were two head bones wrapped in white and red cloths, with a label attached that, according to the authors of Holy Blood, Holy Grail, quoting, in translation, Raymond Oursel ’s French language Le Proces des Templiers, 1955) read “Caput LVIIIm ” — “Head 58m. ” Another source, Jules Michelet ’s History of France, Volume 1 (as translated by GH Smith, 1860), says that the head was labeled “LIII, ” meaning “53. ” From this evidence, we can presume that there were at least 52 other heads somewhere that the police did not find. So what was the true purpose of all these heads? What does the name “Baphomet ” actually mean?

The Oxford English Dictionary says that the first appearance of the name “Baphomet ” in English text was in the May 12th edition of the Classical Journal, Volume 5, published in 1812, in an article by Charles Villers called “Some Account of the

Researches of the German Literati on the Subject of Ancient Literature and History. ” There, in a footnote on page 88, a French scholar referred to only as “M. Lentz ” is quoted, from an essay of his entitled “On the goddess of Paphos as represented on ancient monuments and on the Baphomet. ” This referred to a goddess worshipped in the coastal city of Paphos on the island of Cyprus, where the Templars were stationed. Idols of the goddess were used as land markers, just as statues of Hermes, the Greek wisdom god, were also used in ancient times. These images of the goddess had gradually combined with and then transmuted into images of Hermes himself. M. Lentz suggested that the name of these markers — metae —got fused with that of Paphos to form “Paphometa, ” and thus, Baphomet. Jules Michelet referred to Francois Just-Marie-Raynouard ’s The Templars: Tragedy in Five Acts (1805) regarding the origin of the word:

M. Raynouard considers the word Baphomet in these two depositions, as an alteration of that of Mahomet, mentioned by the first [Templar] witness; and sees in it a desire on the part of the examiners to confirm the charges of a good understanding with the Saracens, so generally reported of the Templars… . [In their depositions] the Templars admit nothing more serious than that they have felt alarm, that they have fancied they saw a devil ’s head, a mauffe ’s head, that in these ceremonies they have seen the devil himself under the shape of a cat, or of a woman… .

The word “Mauffe ” appears to originate in French as a way of spelling this alleged alteration of Mahomet, the name of the Muslim prophet, more frequently spelled “Mohammed ” or “Muhammad, ” which supposedly morphed into the word Baphomet. Variations seen in print also include “Maufe, ” Mauffez, ” and “Maphumet ” (according to the Bulletin de la Societe Academique de Laon, Vol. 21, 1876). In the book The View of the State of Europe During the Middle Ages by Henry Hallam, published in 1818, the author concurs that the word is “an early French corruption of ‘Mahomet. ’ ” This goes along with the reports, mentioned by Raynouard and Michelet, that the Templars were suspected at the time of their trials of having been secret converts to Islam, and secret friends of their supposed enemies, the Saracens. In one knight ’s confession he mentioned that he had been taught to exclaim the word “Yallah ” during the blasphemous ceremonies, which he said was “a word of the Saracens. ” Also, according to the Online Etymology Dictionary, “Mahomet ” was used in the Middle Ages as a generic word for “idol. ”

But there have been other interpretations as well. The writer responsible for our modern understanding of Baphomet was a mid-nineteenth-century occult author named “Eliphas Levi. ” Born Alphonse Louis Constant, he was the son of a shoemaker in Paris, and had studied in the Seminary of St. Sulpice, a known hotbed of occultism and heretical thinking. He eventually dropped out, got married, and began writing books about ritual magic that were published in the 1850s under the Hebraicized version of his name.

Levi ’s main thesis was that all forms of occultism and mysticism held a common, secret doctrine. Ritual magic, he said, utilized the existence of what he called the “Astral Light, ” defined in Magic: A History of Its Rites, Rituals, and Mysteries, as:

… a natural and divine agent, at once corporeal and spiritual, a universal plastic mediator, a common receptacle for vibrations of movement and images of form, a fluid and a force which may be called, in a sense at least, the imagination of nature.

It was this agent which, he said, reflected the magician ’s will, expressed

during a ritual, and actualized it into existence. He illustrated this concept with a hieroglyphic form which he called “Baphomet, ” claiming that this was the spiritual principle secretly revered by the Templars. Levi used this picture as the frontispiece for a number of his books.

At first glance Levi ’s Baphomet looks like the Devil himself. That is partially because the most common modern depiction of the Devil is based on the card of the same name in the popular Rider-Waite tarot deck, and this card is itself based on Levi ’s depiction of Baphomet. (In other words, the modern conception of the Devil has been influenced by Levi ’s illustration.) Certainly the creature presented by Levi looks demonic and evil, with the head and legs of a goat, along with a human torso sporting both male and female sexual organs. On its forehead is that foremost symbol of witchcraft, the pentagram, and between its horns issues forth an inflamed torch.

Levi repeatedly stated that Baphomet was not the same as the Devil, however. Rather it was a symbol of a transcendental power beyond good and evil, man and beast, or male and female energies. Baphomet was in Levi ’s view the synthesis of all energy, both on Earth and in Heaven, forming something greater than the sum of its parts, capable of performing any transformation of matter which the human mind could conceive. As for the meaning of the word, Levi suggested it was a code, made up of abbreviations for the Latin words Templi omnium hominum pacis abhas, meaning “abbot of the temple of universal peace (or ‘understanding ’) among men. ”

Eliphas Levi wrote many books in which he proclaimed the virtues of Baphomet, and of the universal agent which he said the figure represented. His writings, translated into English by AE Waite, helped to spread the occult revival which swept Europe in the mid-1800s. His ideas contributed greatly to the type of magic that was practiced by the Hermetic Order of the Golden Dawn. Later, at the turn of the twentieth century, one Golden Dawn student, Aleister Crowley, not only adapted many of Levi ’s ideas, but saw himself as a reincarnation of Levi. He took on “Baphomet ” as his own initiatory name in the magical order he headed: the Order of Oriental Templars (a.k.a. “Ordo Templi Orientis, ” or “OTO ”) Interestingly (for reasons which will soon become obvious), Crowley also chose to use Islamic terminology when he proclaimed himself the “Caliph ” of the OTO.

Towards the end of his life, Eliphas Levi himself had come to question his dabblings in the occult. When he had quit the seminary as a young man, his mother had actually committed suicide, perhaps because of her disappointment in her son ’s life choice. Levi had apparently carried that guilt with him his whole life, and as he neared death, he converted back to Catholicism. His final book, Magic: A History of Its Rites, Rituals and Mysteries , was a sad attempt to reconcile the faith of his family with the occult ideas he had promoted all along. The text is full of statements which contradict those found in his previous works. He came to describe Baphomet as a false idol, and the Templars as practitioners in Black Magic:

For their better success, and in order to secure partisans, they fostered the regrets of every fallen worship and the hopes of every new cultus, promising to all liberty of conscience and a new orthodoxy which should be the synthesis of all persecuted beliefs. They even went so far as to recognize the pantheistic symbolism of the grand masters of Black Magic, and the better to isolate themselves from obedience to a religion by which they were condemned beforehand, they rendered divine honors to the monstrous idol Baphomet, even as of old the dissenting tribes had adored the Golden Calf of Dan and Bethel. Certain monuments of recent discovery and certain precious documents belonging to the thirteenth century offer abundant proof of all that is advanced here. Other evidences are concealed in the annals and beneath the symbols of Occult Masonry.

There are two very interesting lines in this last quote. The first is his description of the secret Templar doctrine as “the synthesis of all persecuted beliefs. ” This indicates the exact same thing that our own investigation came to reveal: that, just as the figure of Baphomet is formed by a conglomerate of occult symbols, the Templar belief system (represented by Baphomet) is a conglomerate of all the most noteworthy of the heretical beliefs that plagued the early days of the Christian church. Or it could be seen as the other way around: all Christian heresies are corruptions of the original Baphometic wisdom that the Templars somehow tapped into.

The second interesting point in the above-quoted passage from Levi is his claim that “monuments of recent discovery ” and “precious documents belonging to the thirteenth century ” proved that the Templars were guilty of worshipping this demonic idol. This may indicate where Levi got his idea of the Baphomet image from. After all, the Templar confessions described Baphomet mainly as a head. True, some of them told of rituals in which the behind of a goat was kissed. But where did Levi get the idea for a winged half-human, half-goat androgyne? According to various writers, Levi based his depiction of Baphomet on a gargoyle that he found on a former Templar property, either in Saint Bris le Vineux in Burgundy, Lanleff in Brittany, or St. Merri in Paris.

The “certain precious documents belonging to the thirteenth century ” refer to the Templars ’ alleged “secret rule, ” which we will discuss in a later chapter. The “monuments of recent discovery ” that he was referring to were undoubtedly those documented by nineteenth-century Austrian Orientalist scholar Joseph, Baron von Hammer-Purgstall, and his book Mysterium Baphometis Revelatum (Mystery of Baphomet Revealed), published in 1818, about 30 years before Levi ’s first writing on Baphomet. In it he documented a number of objects discovered at former Templar properties throughout what are now Austria, Germany, Hungary, and the Czech Republic. This curious document, written in Latin, is part of a larger book entitled Fundgruben des Orients (usually translated “Treasures of the Orient ”).

Although a great many writers have leaned upon Purgstall-Hammer ’s work on the subject in the last two centuries, most have merely consulted other books that mention him, rather than actually looking at what he wrote. We found that in order to complete our study of Baphomet, we really needed to find out what the book actually says. Therefore, we hired as a translator an excellent, well- rounded scholar in Latin who wishes to take no credit, but who painstakingly worked through the text over a period of several months (with the help of Philip Gonzalez). We can now present the world ’s first English translation of Mysterium Baphometis Revelatum , which will be published shortly after the book you are currently reading.

Hammer-Purgstall ’s “Baphometic Idols, ” as they were later called by other authors, consisted mostly of statuettes, coffers and cups presenting strange images of inhuman figures. Seven of the images show only a head, and in two of these cases it is a head with two faces, much akin to the descriptions given by some Templars of the Baphomet head. Many of them were decorated with scenes of bizarre sexual ceremonies of a seemingly religious nature. The figures presented were in some cases covered all over their bodies with multiple eyes, or with serpents.

One image that Hammer-Purgstall found used repeatedly was said by him to represent Baphomet, or, rather, “Mete, ” as he decoded it. The images he found show an androgynous figure wearing a cape, often crowned with towers a la the goddess Cybele of the ancient world, though sometimes with horns instead. In several versions this person is holding in each hand a chain connected to the sky. While the figure appears female in one version, in the others it is shown with a beard, making it quite clear that it was meant to be taken as androgynous. Other items found by Hammer-Purgstall in the form of statues, which he called “idols ” of Mete, also depict a bearded and horned figure with breasts. This, then, may have been why Eliphas Levi chose to depict Baphomet in this way.

Arabic, Greek, and Latin inscriptions were found among these images too. One in particular brings to mind the confessions of the Knights Templar about Baphomet. Hammer-Purgstall translated it into Latin, and then 1865, Thomas Wright, in his book Worship of the Generative Powers , translated it thusly:

Let Mete be exalted, who causes things to bud and blossom! He is our root; it is one and seven; abjure (the faith), and abandon thyself to all pleasures.

You will recall that some confessing Templars said Baphomet “caused the land to germinate. ” Hammer-Purgstall believed that the Templars had been secret practitioners of a fringe religious movement called “Ophite Gnosticism. ” The word “Mete ” in the translation above was a Greek word for “wisdom. ” He believed “Baphomet ” was an allusion to a Gnostic rite of “Bapho Metis, ” a “Baptism of Wisdom. ”

The root syllable “met ” in “Baphomet ” has also been connected by some linguists to the name of the sun god Mithras, worshipped by some Gnostics as an incarnation of divine wisdom. Thus Aleister Crowley ’s alternative interpretation of Baphomet as meaning “Father Mithras ” can be considered part of the same family of translations. More recently Dr. Hugh Schonfield, known for his work on the Dead Sea Scrolls, also proffered an interpretation that again led back to this concept of divine wisdom or Gnosis. He said that “Baphomet, ” when transliterated into Aramaic and fed through the Atbash cipher (in which the value of the alphabet is inverted, it yields the word “Sophia, ” another Greek word meaning “wisdom. ” In a similar vein, Sufi scholar Idries Shah has suggested that the Templars were influenced by Islamic Sufism, and that the word “Baphomet ” came from the Arabic abufihamat , meaning “father of understanding. ” This, again, connects to Eliphas Levi ’s interpretation of Baphomet ’s name, involving the code that supposedly yields the words “father of universal understanding among men ” (in Latin).

It seems as if all of these translations and interpretations of Baphomet, although arrived at in entirely different ways, all yield the same sort of meaning. So exactly what is this hidden “wisdom ” principle that Baphomet has always been associated with, which the Templars allegedly venerated and utilized? It will take the rest of this book for us to unravel this for you as best we can. Our story starts where, supposedly, time and space began: at the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil in the Garden of Eden.

Chapter 2: Seed of the Serpent

Notwithstanding, the devil entered into a wicked serpent and seduced the angel that was in the form of the woman, and he wrought his lust with Eve in the Song of the serpent. And therefore are they called sons of the devil and sons of the serpent that do the lust of the devil their father, even unto the end of this world. And again the devil poured out upon the angel that was in Adam the poison of his lust, and it begetteth the sons of the serpent and the sons of the devil even unto the end of this world.

— Interrogatio Johannis (a.k.a. The Secret Supper or The Book of John the

Evangelist)

In The Book of Genesis there are a number of mysteries that have always puzzled scholars and vexed religious apologists. One of the most bothersome issues occurs right in the first two chapters. It appears that there are two separate tellings of the creation of the human race!

The first version can be found in Chapter 1: 26-28 (KJV), where on the sixth day of creation, after he created the heavens and the earth, the flora and the fauna, God says:

Let us make man in our image, after our likeness: and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth. So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them.

And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth.

The use of a plural possessive pronoun here by the supposedly singular “God ” is telling, and indicates that there was more than one creative being involved. This is another mystery often explained away by Christian apologetics as unimportant, but, as we will see, it tends to corroborate the Gnostic or Ophite view of creation being a joint process.

Yet that isn ’t the only deliberate misinterpretation of the text commonly made by Christian apologetics. A key detail of this first creation story is when the Lord informs the newly created mankind that all vegetation has been created for their consumption, and they are free to eat whatever they want, as we read in verses 29-31 of the same chapter (KJV):

And God said, Behold, I have given you every herb bearing seed, which is upon the face of all the earth, and every tree, in the which is the fruit of a tree yielding seed; to you it shall be for meat. And to every beast of the earth, and to every fowl of the air, and to every thing that creepeth upon the earth, wherein there is life, I have given every green herb for meat: and it was so. And God saw every thing that he had made, and, behold, it was very good. And the evening and the morning were the sixth day.

So it would appear then that God created man on the sixth day. Furthermore, he apparently created man and woman at the same time. It is unspecified whether there is only one human couple created at first or several, but let us just assume there was only one. Why, then, does God seem to re-create mankind later in Chapter 2? That chapter starts out with a description of God resting on the seventh day. Then in verses 4-9 of the second chapter (KJV) we are told:

And the LORD God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul. And the LORD God planted a garden eastward in Eden; and there he put the man whom he had formed. And out of the ground made the LORD God to grow every tree that is pleasant to the sight, and good for food; the tree of life also in the midst of the garden, and the tree of knowledge of good and evil.

This is the first mention of the Tree of Knowledge and the Tree of Life. A few verses later (2: 15-17, KJV) Adam is given charge of tending the garden and also told specifically not to touch the fruit of one of those two trees:

And the LORD God took the man, and put him into the garden of Eden to dress it and to keep it. And the LORD God commanded the man, saying, Of every tree of the garden thou mayest freely eat: But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it: for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die.

It is only at this point in verses 18-25 (KJV), in this second version of the

story of mankind ’s creation, that the female is mentioned at all:

And the LORD God said, It is not good that the man should be alone; I will make him an help meet for him… . And the LORD God caused a deep sleep to fall upon Adam, and he slept: and he took one of his ribs, and closed up the flesh instead thereof; And the rib, which the LORD God had taken from man, made he a woman, and brought her unto the man.

And Adam said, This is now bone of my bones, and flesh of my flesh: she shall be called Woman, because she was taken out of Man.

So in the first creation, man and woman were created at the same time. They were apparently created the same way, from the dust of the Earth. In the second creation, the man was created first and then the female was created secondly out of Adam ’s rib. In the first version, God created man “in his own image. ” In the second creation, God breathes into Adam “the breath of life,” something not mentioned in the first version. In the first creation, there is no mention of a garden, and no mention of forbidden fruit. Rather mankind is specifically told to eat whatever they want –that all vegetation had been created for that purpose –and it is all “good ” in the Lord ’s eyes.

Perhaps most importantly, since only the creatures of the second creation are given rules to follow, only they can transgress those rules. The first mankind is blessed and told to “be fruitful and multiply. ” It is only the second mankind that experiences the fall from grace after eating from the Tree of Knowledge, and it is only after this that they begin to breed, seemingly as a result of the sexual awareness that they gain after the Fall.

The rabbinical school known as the Pharisees believed that the first creation was of Adam Kadmon, the perfect Primordial Man, a mirror image of the divine Logos (“the Word ”), and a hermaphroditic being. Philo wrote that Adam Kadmon, whom he also called “heavenly man ” or “original man ” was “born in the image of God ” with “no participation in any corruptible or earthlike essence; whereas the earthly man is made of loose material, called a lump of clay. ” The second creation, they teach, was when the female half was split apart from the whole, to become Adam and Eve.

The Pharisees thought that the Primordial Adam was created and destroyed prior to the actual creation of the universe. The cabalistic text known as The Zohar says that within his body were contained all of the elements of creation. That text even indicates that God patterned existence after the image of Adam Kadmon, and that perhaps God himself was made in Adam ’s image, not the other way around. Or perhaps Adam Kadmon is God, in this view, and the creator of Adam and Eve. As The Zohar says, “The form of man is the image of everything that is above and below; therefore did the Holy Ancient select it for His own form. ” This seems to agree with what the apostle Paul wrote in 1 Corinthians 15:45-47 (KJV):

And so it is written, The first man Adam was made a living soul; the last Adam was made a quickening spirit. Howbeit that was not first which is spiritual, but that which is natural; and afterward that which is spiritual. The first man is of the earth, earthy: the second man is the Lord from heaven.

Paul referred to Adam Kadmon as the “second man ” because he thought that, although he was conceived as a spirit prior to the creation of the earthly Adam, he wasn ’t created in the flesh until afterwards. This is because Paul believed that Adam Kadmon incarnated for the first time as Jesus Christ. In a similar vein, members of the Judeo-Christian Gnostic sect known as the “Elcesaites ” believed that when Adam Kadmon split in two, the male side became the Messiah, and the female part the Holy Ghost.

This may all be a bit confusing. However, the most important points, for our current inquiry, are these:

1. There were forms, primordial entities, and events that took place between them prior to what we consider the actual creation of our present universe

2. These primordial entities were hermaphroditic, and split apart into male and female entities during creation.

3. Creation was a fall from the perfection of the prior state.

Herein lies the key to our investigation about Baphomet: to hear many cabalists tell it, the first pair was not Adam and Eve, but rather Adam and Lilith. The story of Lilith is an epic saga all its own, and it all takes place prior to the events of Genesis , in a time before time, in what is referred to in Yiddish as “Yenne-volt ” (the Other World). Lilith ’s name means “spirit of night, ” which is undoubtedly connected to the darkness of the “Great Supernal Abyss ” (the nothingness prior to creation) out of which she is said to have sprung spontaneously.

Lilith and Adam allegedly quarreled over sex, specifically about who would be on top. When Adam insisted on being on top, Lilith left him. She is said to have disappeared from Paradise by pronouncing the secret and sacred name of God (the “Tetragrammaton ” of cabalistic lore), which bestows godlike power on those who can speak it. Some legends even state that she obtained the divine name from God himself by seducing him! According to one version of the story, upon speaking the name, she shape-shifted into an owl and flew away to the Red Sea, which, according to the legend, has been her abode ever since.

Nocturnal emissions were believed by Jews to be evidence that the man had been visited by Lilith in the form of a succubus. It is said that she is cursed to give birth to children continuously, but that they are malformed half-demons who die at birth. As a way of getting revenge for that against the sons of Adam, they said that Lilith also visited infant boys in their sleep to suffocate them. Thus, every instance of the mysterious malady known as “crib death ” (which affects mostly boys) was attributed to Lilith, and superstitious Jews would leave magical amulets on the walls of their children ’s bedrooms to ward off these attacks. The word “lullaby ” is believed to derive from the incantations that Jews would sometimes say over their children while putting them to bed, again to protect them from Lilith. This is also the origin of the Jewish and European custom of letting boys grow their hair long until age three: to trick Lilith into thinking that they are girls. Some even dressed their sons in girls ’ clothes during this vulnerable period in their lives.

Amazingly, Lilith is not just a figure in Jewish cabalistic demonology, but appears in the mythologies of other cultures as well. In ancient Sumer she was called “Lilitu, ” which means “Queen of the Night, ” and they believed that she preyed on people during their sleep, just like the Jews did. She was called by the Babylonians “Lamashtu, ” meaning “the Daughter of Heaven. ” Lamashtu was known for strangling babies and drinking their blood. In ancient Greece she was called “Lamia ” and was said to have had an affair with Zeus. In jealousy, Zeus ’ wife Hera killed all of their children, so it retaliation, Lamia began to kidnap and murder human babies. This is similar to the Jewish Lilith ’s motivation to kill infants.

However, the real reason why Lilith desires the sons of Adam as sexual partners is actually because Adam wasn ’t her first consort, or the lover whom she is truly pining after. In fact, rabbinical sources maintain that the first hermaphroditic pair was not Lilith and Adam but Lilith and the demon Samael. The creature that they formed together was a monstrous serpent, apparently equivalent to the one that later tempted Adam and Eve in the Garden. The cabalists called this Lilith-Samael creature “the Beast ” and “the Other God. ” (This is especially interesting because, as we will soon discuss, some Gnostics referred to the “Demiurge ” who they believed had created physical reality by the name of “Samael ” also.) It is clear from the cabalists ’ texts that they saw this Lilith-Samael monster as the serpent that tempted Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden. They even saw it as the father of Eve ’s son Cain. Treatise on the Left Emanation by R. Isaac b. Jacob Ha-Kohen and Tr. Ronald C. Kiener describes Samael as evil, but specifies that this is:

… not because of his nature but because he desires to unite and intimately mingle with an emanation not of his nature… .

A sigil (a magical insignia) designed for Baphomet by nineteenth-century occultist Stanislas de Guaita includes the names of the demons Samael and Lilith. The opposite side of this sigil shows the figure of a man, with the names “Adam ” and “Eve ” written around it. We read in Treatise on the Left Emanation that:

In this tradition it is made clear that Samael and Lilith were born as one, similar to the form of Adam and Eve who were also born as one, reflecting what is above.

In this instance the text seems to be saying that Adam Kadmon —the Adam-Eve hermaphrodite being —cast a reflection (or perhaps more appropriately, a shadow) that created the monstrous hermaphrodite entity of Lilith-Samael. However, while the human pair are described as “above ” (and therefore, presumably, superior to) the serpent pair, cabalistic writings suggest that the serpents represent something older and more primordial, as the Abyss (nothingness or chaos) that they come from is considered older than creation.

It appears that the fathers of Western occultism were well aware of the

legends about Lilith and Samael. Why else would their names have been included on De Guaita ’s Baphomet sigil (particularly with the names of Adam and Eve included on the other side of the sigil)? We also can presume that it is these two snakes who are being represented by the caduceus staff that Eliphas Levi depicted rising from Baphomet ’s crotch region. The caduceus (the ancient symbol of a pole encoiled with two snakes) has been connected not only to Hermes and alchemy (both things associated with Baphomet), but also with the image of a crucified serpent, and of the snake coiled around the Tree of Knowledge in the Garden of Eden. Now we know why!

The fact that the Baphomet sigil is also presented frequently with the word “Leviathan ” indicates that some occultists have been aware that this is also another name for the same figure. Leviathan, described in the Old Testament as a giant sea dragon capable of encircling the Earth, is said to be either female, or part of a hermaphroditic beast just like Lilith and Samael. Sometimes Leviathan ’s male counterpart is said to be Behemoth, a land beast. Sometimes the pair is just referred to in the plural as “the leviathans. ”

Very similar things are said about Leviathan and her consort as are said about Lilith and Samael. They are clearly just different names for the same figures. In both cases, it is said that they were once together physically, but that God separated them, because the act of their mating was somehow dangerous to the well-being of the universe. So, in both cases, they were cleaved apart, castrating the male, and preventing them from ever uniting sexually again. With both sets of characters, it is written that if they ever come together again, all of existence will somehow be annihilated.

In the case of the leviathans, it is said numerous times in the Bible that at the End of Times, God will slaughter them and feed their flesh to the righteous among men. This will take place at a feast with the messiah in the New Jerusalem, inside of a tent made from the monsters ’ skin. This is what the Jewish festival known as the “Feast of the Tabernacles ” is meant to celebrate, and it is probably why the early Christians adopted the fish as their symbol.

Because Samael and Lilith (a.k.a. Leviathan and Behemoth) are constantly longing for each other, they found a way to mate via an “intermediary ” called “Tanin ’iver ” (“Blind

Dragon ”) or “the Groomsman. ” We read about it in Treatise on the Left Emanation :

> You already know that evil Samael and wicked Lilith are like a sexual pair who, by means of an intermediary, receive an evil and wicked emanation from one and emanate to the other… . The heavenly serpent is a blind prince, the image of an intermediary between Samael and Lilith. Its name is Tanin ’iver. The masters of tradition said that just as this serpent slithers without eyes, so the supernal serpent has the image of a spiritual form without color —these are “the eyes. ” The traditionists call it an eyeless creature, therefore its name is Tanin ’iver. He is the bond, the accompaniment, and the union between Samael and Lilith. If he were created whole in the fullness of his emanation he would have destroyed the world in an instant.

Now this is getting really kinky! This Tanin ’iver is a “slithering serpent ” without eyes who somehow enables the castrated Samael to have sex with Lilith. But if he were to “manifest fully, ” then the destruction of the universe, which happens whenever these two “truly ” mate, would come about anyway. So whatever Tanin ’iver does for them, it has the capability of being just as good as the real thing. But mercifully, right now, it is not, or else we would all be dead.

More detail on this subject comes from The Zohar (I.152b-153a, as quoted by Andrei Orlov in Dark Mirrors), where the “intermediary ” is described as none other than “Azazel, ” the goat demon who figures so prominently in the Old Testament (as we will explain shortly):

Now observe a deep and holy mystery of faith, the symbolism of the male principle and the female principle of the universe… . [T]here is the line where the male and female principles join, forming together the rider on the serpent, and symbolized by Azazel.

So here the Tanin ’iver is likened to a “line ” that unites the two creatures, and is said to be “riding ” them, and to be symbolized by the goat-demon Azazel. Another passage from The Zohar (Vayetze 116, as quoted by Mark Biggs in The Case for Lilith) goes on further with the same language:

The unholy filth grasps the male above and the female below. Here, male and female join together. They are the rider on the serpent… . This is the secret of Azazel, which includes the male and female of defilement.

This exact same role —riding shotgun in-between a male-female pair that were formerly one hermaphroditic creature —was played by Azazel in another sacred text as well: the Slavonic pseudepigraphal Apocalypse of Abraham . Here he is described doing this with Adam and Eve. A vision is related of Adam and Eve standing under the Tree of Knowledge, entwined with each other physically, and with Azazel between them, feeding them both grapes. In his book Dark Mirrors: Azazel and Satanael in Early Jewish Demonology , Andrei A. Orlov compares this to a sexual menage a trois , and suggests that it may be an allusion to the first couple being “ridden ” via demonic possession.

Is this, then, what the work of the Tanin ’iver really entails? Is his function to facilitate the possession of human bodies by demons so that the spirits can “hook up ” with each other sexually? Couldn ’t it be that Baphomet is the

Tanin ’iver, the Azazel that joins the serpent? Isn ’t he then like the “Philosophical Mercury ” —the “Azoth ” —of the alchemists which, they said, could bind any chemical marriage, no matter how unlikely? The product of alchemical marriage has always been represented as a Frankenstein chimera monstrosity like Baphomet, composed of many different types of animals and people. But, we must wonder: is it that the ultimate “chemical wedding ” is between angels or spirits and men, like what the cabalists seem to be saying has happened between Adam, Eve, Samael and Lilith?

In addition to being the primordial sex goddess, Lilith, is a path to divine wisdom —the forbidden wisdom of the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil, which, according to Genesis , opens the eyes of a person and allows them to see things like God does. The thirteenth century Spanish Kabbalist R. Isaac Hacohen said that Lilith is “a ladder on which one can ascend to rungs of prophecy. ” Similarly, we read in Left Emanation :

Concerning this point there is a received tradition from the ancient Sages who made use of the Secret Knowledge of the Lesser Palaces, which is the manipulation of demons and a ladder by which one ascends to the prophetic levels.

There are many other parallels as well between the cabalistic legends of Lilith-Samael in the Garden of Eden and the creation stories of the Gnostics. Gnostic cosmology describes creation as happening in a series of “aeons ” (just as in Genesis it happens over a period of “days. ”) However, the word “aeon ” not only means a lengthy span of time, but can also be thought of as a universe unto itself, with a living intelligence of its own too. Each aeon is generated by a “syzygy, ” a hermaphroditic male-female pair of intelligences. In the beginning, all of the primordial intelligences were together inside uncreated totality, which was called the “Pleroma. ”

However, just as Lilith wanted to be “on top ” of Adam sexually, Sophia refused to submit to the dominance of a sexual partner. Instead, she tried to generate an aeon parthenogenically, on her own. The result was a deformity, an “abortion, ” that was “cast outside of the Pleroma ” because of its hideousness, like a teen mother might discard her baby in a trash can or a toilet.

As the story goes, after Sophia ’s “abortion, ” the real “Father ” of all made a new pair, called “Christos-Holy Spirit, ” to clean up the mess that had been made outside of the Pleroma. He then created a new, unpaired aeon named “Jesus, ” and he formed the abortion into the new entity, “Sophia Achamoth ” (the lesser Sophia). Her name is related to the Hebrew word for wisdom, “Hokmah. ” Her pain at being separated from the Pleroma actually became the substance that Jesus then used (according to the Gnostics) to form the physical matter of the cosmos.

Achamoth, then, created the Demiurge out of that, and made him king of everything outside of the Pleroma, as well as the chief artificer in charge of rearranging matter. Then the Demiurge created the seven heavens below him, each with a god in charge of it. These seem to correspond with the planetary intelligences.

Note that, in this case, just as in Judaism, the “Fall ” from perfection is caused by knowledge (which the cabalists say created a false universe of “shells ” represented by the infernal “Qlipoth ” tree), in Gnosticism the Fall is caused by wisdom (Sophia) giving birth to a malformed creation. Sophia ’s “abortion ” can be thought of as parallel to the fact that, after being cast out of the Garden of Eden, Lilith was cursed to continue giving birth to demonic children (with no father, apparently) who would die as soon as they were born. Lilith is described in The Zohar as a “husk ” covering divine light, just as Gnostics said we are divine light trapped inside husks (our physical bodies).

Just as the Gnostics had stories about Sophia and the “aeons, ” cabalists have stories about hermaphroditic beings (Lilith-Samael and Adam-Kadmon) that personified primordial forces existing in a netherworld of chaos prior to the present creation. The cabalists infer that the Fall occurred when the first male- female pair was split apart. The Gnostics said it was when the female Sophia tried to be independent without her male half.

In Mesopotamia, Lilith ’s companion was the screech-owl. In the Old Testament, references to this animal are used to denote Lilith. Note that owls are seen as symbols of wisdom in the West, as an owl was the sidekick of the wisdom goddess Minerva (Athena to the Romans). You may recall that Minerva sprang spontaneously from the head of Zeus, just as Lilith is said to have randomly popped into existence from the Great Supernal Abyss. So Zeus fathered Minerva without a mate just like Sophia created the Demiurge in that same manner.

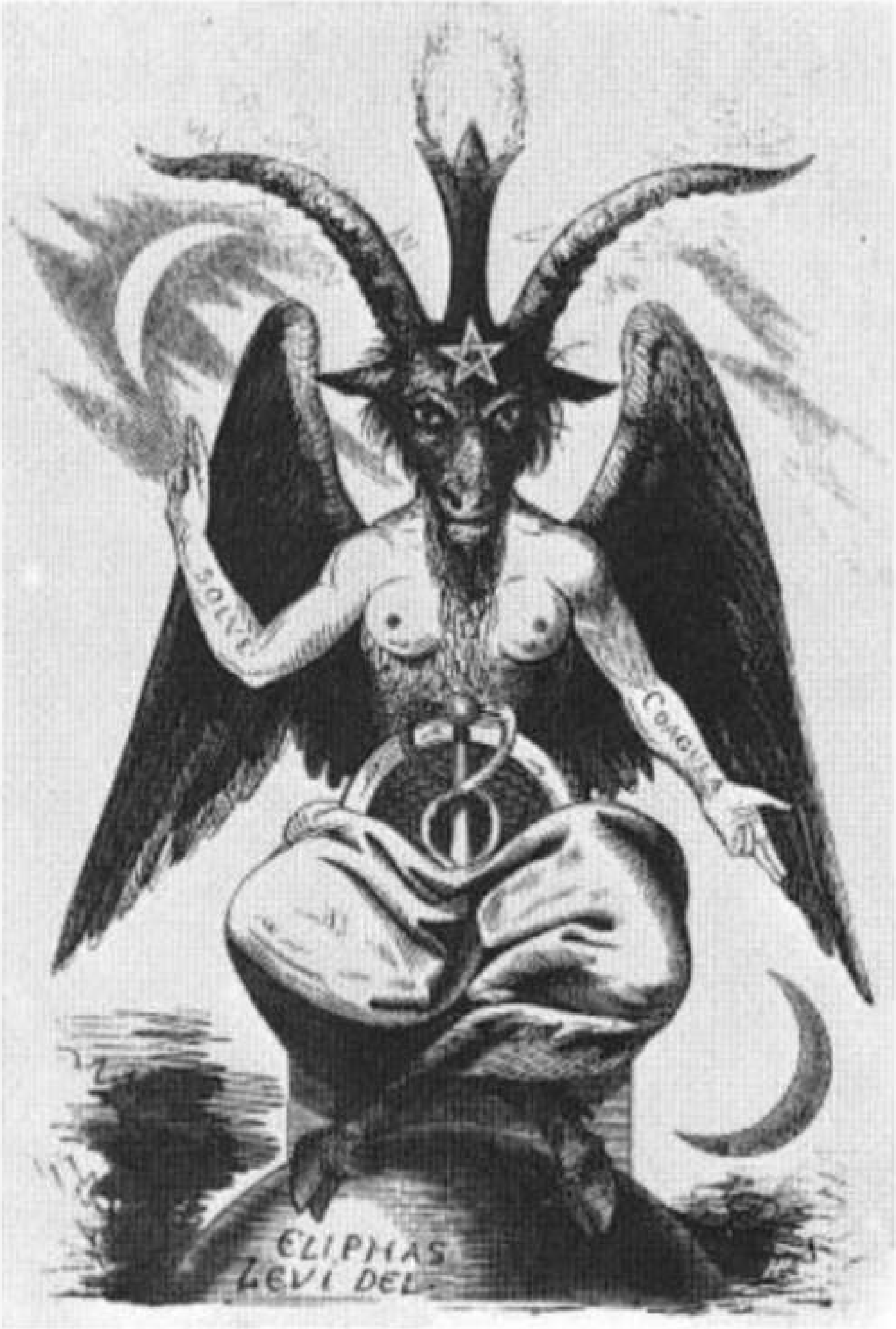
SOLVE
COAGULA
ELIPHAS
LEVI DEL

Above: Eliphas Levi's depiction of Baphomet.

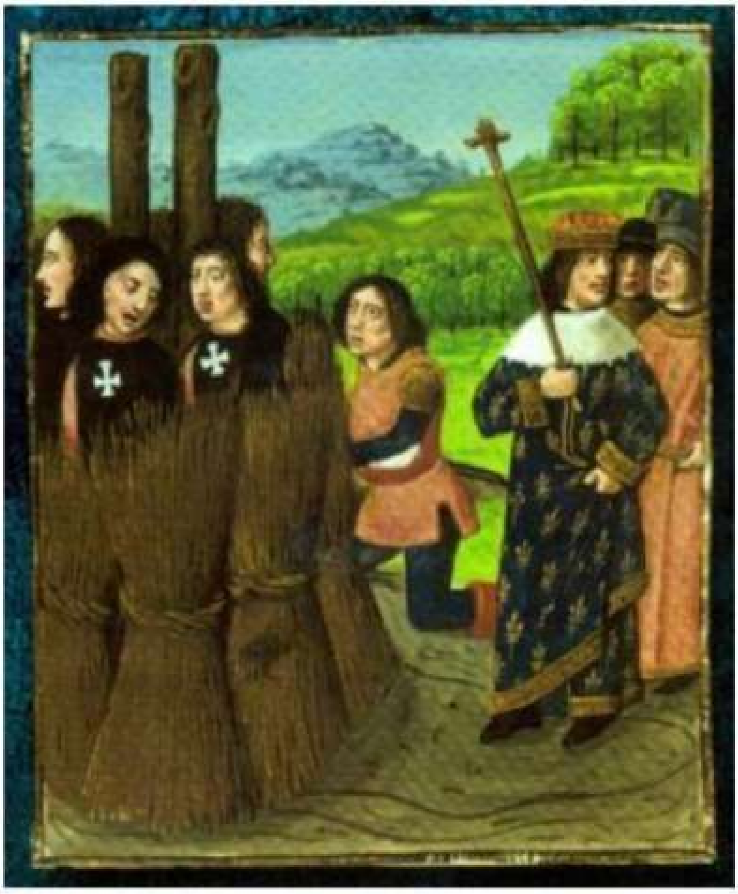

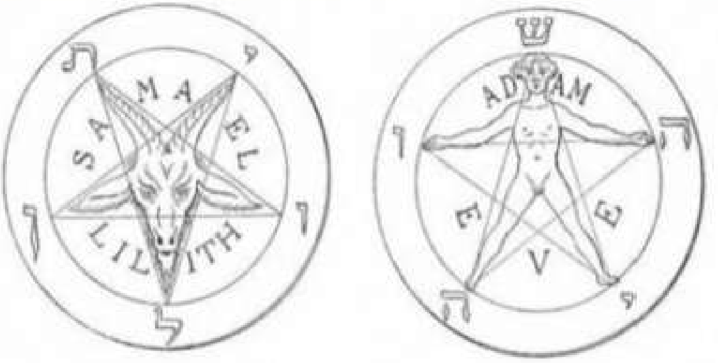
SAMAEL
LILITH
ADAM
EVE

Above: ***Burning of Templars***, from Giovanni Boccaccio's ***De casibus virorum illustrium***, 1450. Below: A "sigil of Baphomet" from Stanislas de Guaita's ***La Clef de la Magic Noire***.

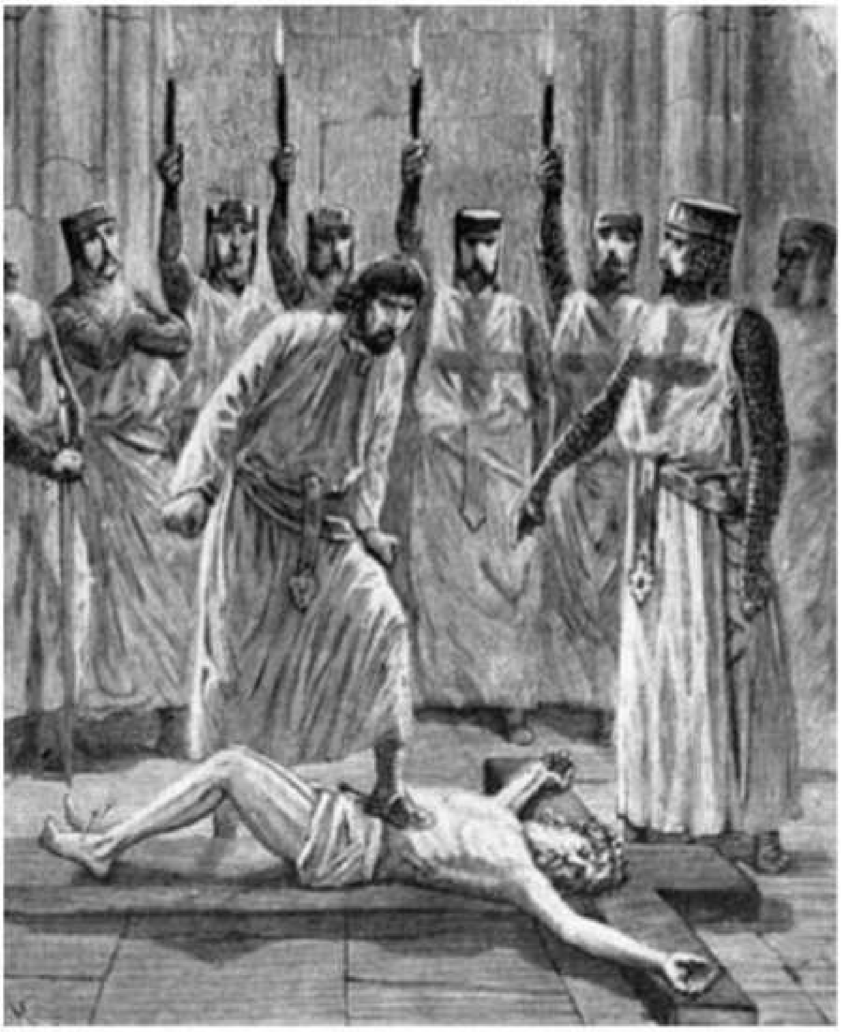

Above: A Templar initiate trampling on the cross. Left: The Seal of the Knights Templar, featuring two knights riding one horse. Opposite: *The Scapegoat*, by William Holman Hunt, 1854.

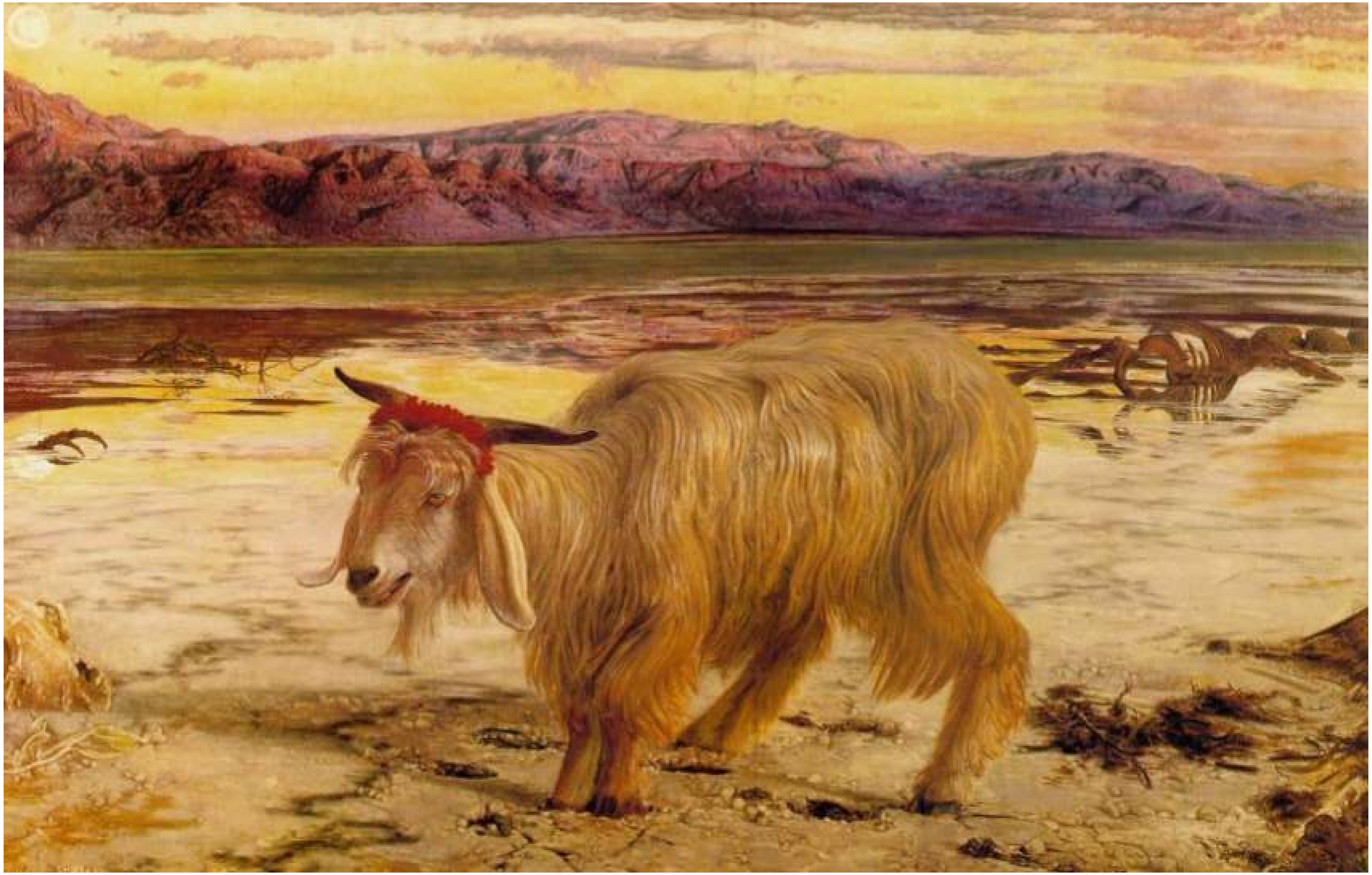

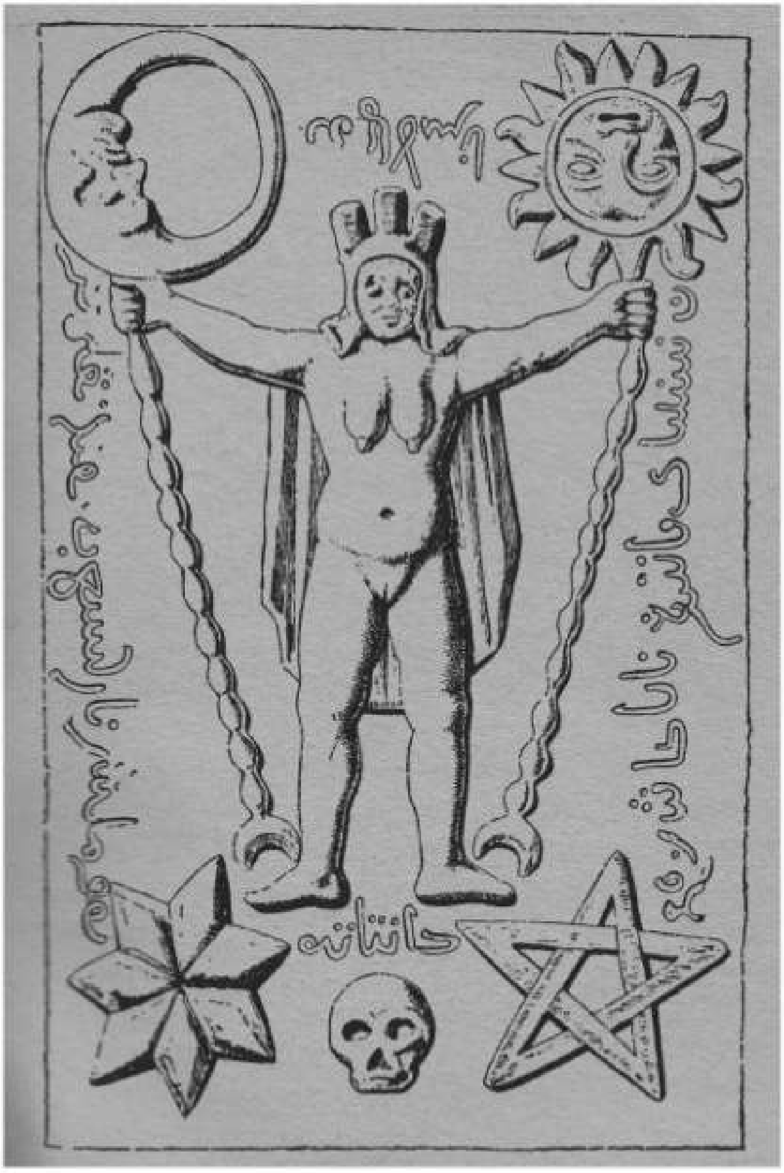

Above: "Mete" from *Worship of the Generative Powers* by Thomas Wright. This image does not actually appear in Hammer-Purgstall's *Mysterium Baphometis Revelatum*, though several others images of Mete are (see opposite page). We discovered the source of this image on a casket in the online catalogue of the British Museum (not on display).

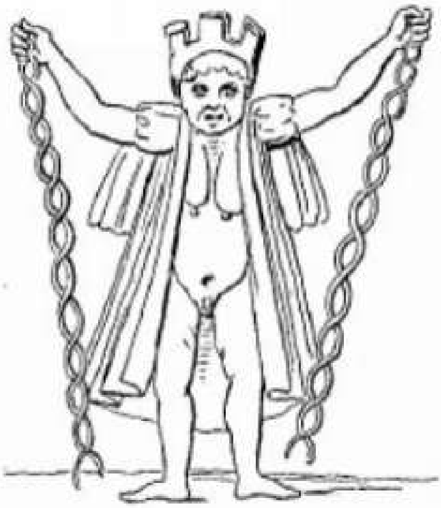
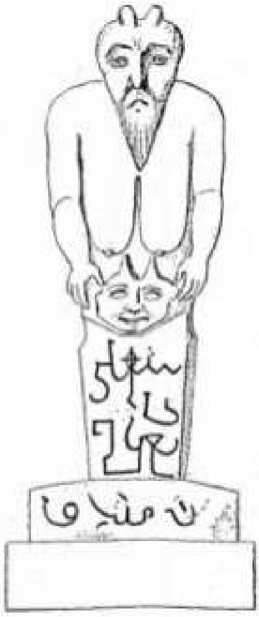
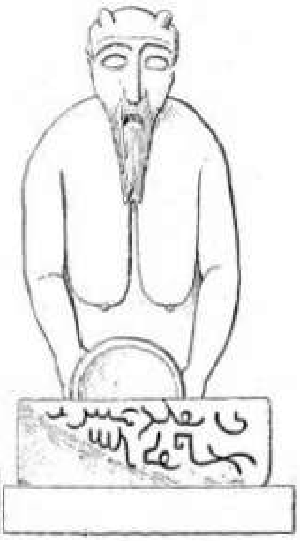
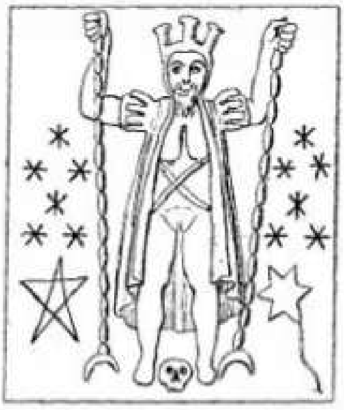
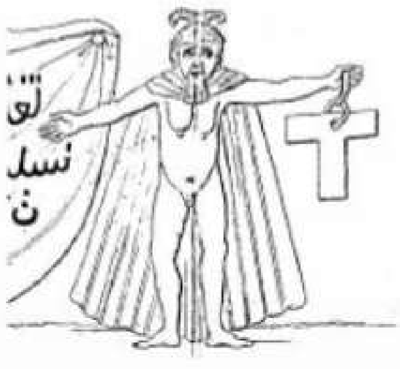
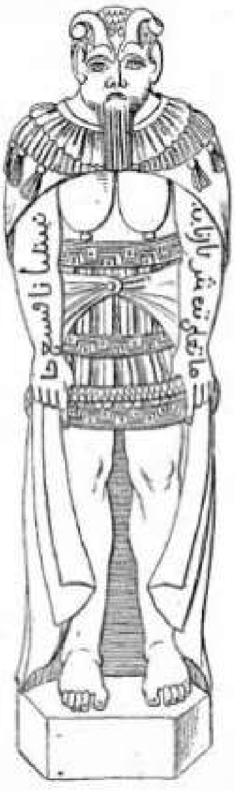
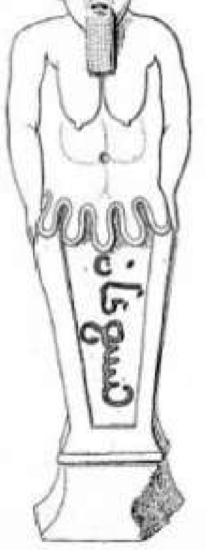

The legend of Lilith becomes even more complex when we learn that, according to cabalistic texts, there are in fact two Liliths: Lilith the Matron and Lilith the Maiden. The latter is described as the “slave ” or “handmaiden ” of the former. Lilith the Matron is said to be both the mate of Samael, and of God himself, seemingly the same as the Jewish concept of the Shekinah or “Matronit ” as the bride of God. It also seems analogous to the idea of Sophia as the bride of Jesus that some Gnostics adhered to. Lilith the Maiden comes across as her dark doppelganger, and also subordinate, just like the relationship between Sophia and Sophia-Achamoth in the Gnostic system.

Another Jewish legend that seems to be connected with these concepts asserts that the Shekinah was for a time “exiled, ” while a slave woman, her “handmaiden, ” took her place. The “handmaiden ” appears to be equated with the Egyptian kingly line. The Zohar (3:19a, as quoted by Alan Humm in his online article “Lilith in Kabbala: Zohar ”) tells us:

One day the companions were walking with Rabbi Shim ’on bar Yohai. Rabbi Shim ’on said: “We see that all these nations have risen, and Israel is lower than all of them. Why is this? Because the King sent away the Matronit from Him, and took the slave woman in her place. Who is this slave woman? The Alien Crown, whose firstborn the Holy One, blessed be He, killed in Egypt. At first she sat behind the handmill, and now this slave woman inherited the place of her mistress. ” And Rabbi Shim ’on wept and said: “The King without the Matronit is not called king. The King who adhered to the slave woman, to the handmaid of the Matronit, where is his honor? He lost the Matronit and attached Himself to the place which is called slave woman. This slave woman was destined to rule over the Holy Land of below, as the Matronit formerly ruled over it. But the Holy One, blessed be He, will ultimately bring back the Matronit to her place as before. And then, what will be the rejoicing? Say, the rejoicing of the King and the rejoicing of the Matronit. The rejoicing of the King because He will return to her and separate from the slave woman, and the rejoicing of the Matronit, because she will return to couple with the King. ”

Occult writers Nigel Jackson and Michael Howard, in their book The Pillars of Tubal-Cain , equate the slave woman mentioned here with Lilith. The metaphor is commonly thought to refer to the time of destruction of the Temple of Solomon and the exile of the Israelites to Babylon in the 6th century BC. But why then the reference to the “Egyptian slave woman ”? Although it was the Hebrews who were at one point the slaves of the Egyptians, several Egyptian women are depicted as slaves to important Old Testament figures, including Hagar, Abraham ’s slave and the mother of his disowned son Ishmael.

Interestingly, Hagar was said by cabalists R. Ya ’aqov and R. Yitzhaq to “resemble ” Lilith. Hagar and Ishmael were exiled to the desert to die of thirst after Abraham ’s wife Sarah became jealous of them. God miraculously saved them. This story of a slave woman as the mistress of the matron ’s husband, whom the legitimate wife is afraid of being displaced by implies the relationship of the younger Lilith as the slave or handmaiden of the elder.

Lilith the Maiden is said to be the consort of the demon Asmodeus. Her mother is purportedly a demoness named “Mehetabel, ” meaning “something immersed, ” which brings to mind the meaning of Baphomet ’s name, according to Hammer-Purgstall: “Baptism of Wisdom. ” The Zohar says that Lilith the Maiden incarnated in human form as Naamah, the daughter of the Cain ’s descendant Lamech (who accidentally killed Cain). Thus, the race of Lilith ’s human descendants are sometimes referred to by cabalists as the “sons of Naamah. ”

The Zohar further tells us that it was originally Naamah who first seduced the angels or “sons of God ” referred to in Genesis Chapter 6 (which we will talk about soon), causing them to lust after human females and incur God ’s wrath. Lilith the Maiden/Naamah also allegedly incarnated as Moses ’ Egyptian wife, Zipporah. Both Liliths were said to have taken form as the two prostitutes who approached King Solomon to judge in their dispute over the parentage of a young child (for which he famously ruled that the child should be cut in half and shared between them).

Others see Lilith and Naamah as just two of a quartet of concubines for Samael. According to cabalist Nathan Nota Poira:

Samael was given four kingdoms, and in each of them he has a concubine. The names of his concubines are: Lilith, whom he took as his consort, and she is the first one; the second is Naamah; the third, Even Maskit; and the fourth, Igrat daughter of Mahalath. and the four kingdoms are: first the kingdom of Damascus, in which is found the house of Rimmon; the second, the kingdom of Tyre, which is opposite the land of Israel; the third, the kingdom of Malta, which formerly was called Rhodos; and the fourth, the kingdom called Granata, and some say that it is the kingdom of Ishmael. And in each of these four kingdoms dwells one of the four aforementioned concubines.

These four “concubines ” are taken by other authors to be separate incarnations or emanations of the same goddess, Lilith. Besides Naamah and Lilith, the names of the other concubines vary according to the source. The above-quoted source names them as Even Maskit and Igrat. Other names that have been listed include Mahalath and Nega ’. They appear to be demons like Lilith, but some of them also specifically correspond to women mentioned in the Bible.

Mahalath is the daughter of Abraham ’s son Ishmael, whom he sired by the daughter of Kasdiel, the Egyptian sorcerer. Ishmael ’s father disapproved of the marriage and successfully pressured him into divorcing her before the baby was born. Mahalath —who is also known as Bashemath , interestingly enough — is said to have performed “sorceries ” in the desert with her mother, evoking a spirit named Igratiel, who had sex with Mahalath and conceived a daughter named Igrat. Mahalath later married Esau, the son of Isaac and brother of Jacob. Esau was the first of the kings of Edom.

Igrat went on to have sex with King David one night while he was sleeping, and conceived a child named Adad who was a duke of the nation of Edom. According to the cabalists, Adad is the same as the demon Asmodeus, or “Ashmodai, ” which comes from the Hebrew words “Sh ’mi Ad, Ad Sh ’mi, ” meaning “My name is Ad, Ad is my name. ” Of course, you will recall that Asmodeus was said to have been the husband of “Lilith the Maiden. ”

Asmodeus was the chief architect in a team of demonic stonemasons that Solomon allegedly enslaved to build his famous temple, according to Louis Ginzberg ’s Legends of the Jews . This makes him analogous to the figure of Hiram mentioned as the architect in the Bible, whom the Freemasons call Hiram Abiff and venerate in rituals. Another Jewish legend tells how Asmodeus took over King Solomon ’s throne for a while. If we consider the cabalistic legends mentioned above, this story could have been a memory of a real coup that occurred, as Asmodeus may have been, legitimately, the son and heir of David, and thus Solomon ’s brother and rival to the throne. To bring things full circle, although there were many historical kings of Edom named Adad (which was also the name of one of Ishmael ’s sons, and of an ancient storm god worshipped in that region), one in particular is said to have been married to a woman named Mehetabel. This, as we mentioned, is also the name of the mother of Lilith the Maiden.

Another human incarnation of Lilith was, allegedly, the Queen of Sheba, that mysterious woman described in I Kings Chapter 10 who came to visit King Solomon. “Sheba ” is thought to correspond to the ancient kingdom of Saba in Southern Arabia, which included Eritrea, Ethiopia and Yemen. Allegedly this queen visited Solomon because she had heard of his renowned wisdom and wanted to test it, for she too was a wise woman. She arrived bearing an enormous tribute of gold, spices and precious stones. She presented Solomon with a series of riddles to assay his wisdom, all of which he answered easily. She was so awestruck by his sagacity that she decided to convert to Solomon ’s religion of worshipping one God. Solomon, quite enamored of her, presented her with loads of expensive gifts in return, which she took home with her when her visit was over.

But according to extra-biblical references, there was much more to the relationship between Solomon and the Queen of Sheba. All of these legends agree that they were lovers. Stories originating in Ethiopia say that Solomon sired a son with her named Menelik, or, according to Nigel Jackson and Michael Howard, Mardek (meaning “son of the wise ”). Many scholars believe that the Song of Solomon or “Song of Songs ” found in the Old Testament was meant to be a poem about Solomon and the Queen. The text of the poem is overtly sexual in nature. References to sexual organs, as well as human body fluids like semen, vaginal secretions, female ejaculate, and menstrual blood, are disguised as “spikenard, ” “wine, ” “myrrh, ” “living waters, ” “the Rose of Sharon, ” and “the Lily of the Valley. ” The “bride ” in this poem describes herself as “black, ” which makes sense if she was an Ethiopian.

The Queen of Sheba is the subject of a number of bizarre folk tales, as related in The Pillars of Tubal-Cain by Jackson and Howard. One says that when she was a girl she was tied up in the branches of a tree as a sacrificial offering to a dragon. Seven “holy men ” came to rescue her by slaying the dragon. Some of the dragon ’s blood splashed on her left foot and leg, turning it into that of a goat. Solomon first caught sight of the leg when she walked across a mirrored floor in his palace. As the authors relate, “Solomon decided that she must be one of the desert demons known as the seirim, who follow Azazel, or the demonic vampire Lilith. ” The goat imagery directly relates to Baphomet, and the goat-demon Azazel will be discussed in greater detail later on.

Other stories about the Queen of Sheba include one stating that Solomon gave her the emerald Grail stone that fell from Lucifer ’s crown, which was later carved into the cup used by Jesus at the Last Supper. The Grail legends tell us that Sheba built the “Ship of Solomon,” which was made from timber taken from the Tree of Knowledge, and could travel through time. There is also a Masonic tradition that King Solomon had three of his stonemasons murder the Master Mason of his temple, Hiram Abiff, because the Queen of Sheba had fallen in love with him and Solomon was jealous.

Of course, we know that in Jewish folk tales, the architect of Solomon ’s Temple was the demon Asmodeus, consort of the lesser Lilith. So really, if the Queen of Sheba was actually a lesser Lilith figure incarnated, the personality whom Solomon might have been jealous of, then, was Asmodeus. The meaning of the story told in the paragraph above is that

Sheba was of the bloodline of the Dragon (Lilith-Samael), and of Azazel the Goat. So that could have been why her body had features of that genetics (like a goat ’s legs).

Interestingly, many self-professed practitioners of witchcraft (which tended to run in families in Old Europe) considered Lilith to be their queen, and an ancestor. There were also rumors that she was the great ancestress of the fairy race. The Inquisition referred to Lilith as “the Mother of the Witches. ”

As Howard Schwartz demonstrates in his book Lilith ’s Cave , Jewish folk tales are full of stories about such demonic marriages to Lilith. In these stories, any man may fall prey to being seduced by Lilith and, once married to her, cannot betroth another without incurring her perpetual curse. The seduction of the young man is most likely to take place just when he is about to be wed, which is the origin for the superstition that a man cannot see his bride before his wedding day. He must be kept under watch during this vulnerable time, for Lilith may take the form of his bride and seduce him.

In one recurring version of the story, a boy who is about to be wed is walking through a forest with the wedding ring, and in jest slips the ring on the branch of a log, or on a stray finger found sticking out of a log, whilst saying the wedding vows. After saying the words, the log either comes to life as Lilith, or else the finger is revealed to belong to that of a corpse that was buried in the log. Either way, the boy is now married to a lady of the underworld, an incarnation of Lilith. This was dramatized in Tim Burton ’s film Corpse Bride . In most versions of the tale, Lilith curses the young man ’s family until they all agree to share him. He is condemned to spend half of his time in the underworld with his demon wife, and half of his time on the surface with his other wife.

What these stories represent is the idea that Lilith was the first wife of Adam, or of God. But she got supplanted by another woman, just like Eve became Adam ’s new lover, and like the cabalist stories where God let his wife go so that he could shack up with a slave woman. Of course, she could say that she has more right to her husband than the new interloper. But in the end, she has to share him with the new woman, because she is from the unreal kingdom of chaos. Her claim on him isn ’t entirely enforceable, but it isn ’t entirely dismissible either.

Isaiah 34:14 refers to Lilith as a screech-owl, and says that she lives “in the desolate wilderness with wild cats, jackals and satyrs for company. ” These satyrs are the seirim (“hairy ones ”), descendants of the goat demon Azazel. A story from The Epic of Gilgamesh again suggests that Lilith can shape-shift into an owl. As retold in The Pillars of Tubal-Cain , the story is:

… of the goddess Inanna, the Queen of Heaven, and how she found a sacred willow tree on the banks of the Euphrates that had been uprooted in a violent storm. The goddess rescued the fallen tree and replanted it in her garden. She planned to use the wood for a new bed and throne. However after it was planted the tree refused to grow because a snake had nested in its roots, the fierce Azu or Zu thunderbird was roosting in its branches and Lilith had built a house in its trunk. Inanna was distraught and tearfully enlisted the help of semi-divine hero Gilgamesh. He slew the snake and cut down the tree so Zu and Lilith lost their habitats. Lilith grew owl wings and flew off to the wilderness cursing the goddess and her champion.

This connection of Lilith to a serpent and a tree brings to mind the story of the Garden of Eden again. The cabalists say it was Lilith and Samael who combined to play the role of the adversarial serpent tempting the protoplasts, Adam and Eve, with the fruit of God-like knowledge. But what is really meant by this imagery?

Although Lilith (nicknamed by cabalists the “Woman of Whoredom ”) seduced Adam, and bred a race of demons with him, Samael allegedly seduced Eve as well. So according to the cabalists, Adam and Eve both had their first sexual experience at the hands of the hermaphroditic serpent. There would seem to be a connection between these occurrences and the act of disobedience that caused Adam and Eve to fall from grace. Genesis Chapter 3:1-7 (KJV) tells us:

Now the serpent was more subtle than any beast of the field which the LORD God had made. And he said unto the woman, Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden?

And the woman said unto the serpent, We may eat of the fruit of the trees of the garden:

But of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, God hath said, Ye shall not eat of it, neither shall ye touch it, lest ye die.

And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die:

For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil.

And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food, and that it was pleasant to the eyes, and a tree to be desired to make one wise, she took of the fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat.

And the eyes of them both were opened, and they knew that they were naked; and they sewed fig leaves together, and made themselves aprons.

It seems that, in part, the wisdom gained by eating the fruit of the Tree of Knowledge was awareness of their own sexuality, “carnal knowledge. ” Indeed the Hebrew word “yada,” meaning “to know,” also means “to have sex with,” and is used in that sense dozens of times throughout the Torah. This was the wisdom that the Serpent wanted to share with Adam and Eve. Upon becoming aware of their separate bodies, and of their differing genitals, they became anxious to cover them, so they made clothes for themselves. But when God saw that they had realized their own nakedness, he knew that they ’d eaten the forbidden fruit of knowledge. Genesis 3:8-11 (KJV) says:

And they heard the voice of the LORD God walking in the garden in the cool of the day: and Adam and his wife hid themselves from the presence of the LORD God amongst the trees of the garden.

And the LORD God called unto Adam, and said unto him, Where art thou? And he said, I heard thy voice in the garden, and I was afraid, because I was

naked; and I hid myself.

And he said, Who told thee that thou wast naked? Hast thou eaten of the tree, whereof I commanded thee that thou shouldest not eat?

In a way, the serpent was telling the truth when he told Eve that eating the fruit of knowledge would not kill her, at least not immediately, and that it would make her like unto a god. Not only did she and Adam gain the awareness that had heretofore been forbidden to them, but they also gained the godlike power to produce life “in their own image. ” But this transgression did bring death into the world for the first time as well.

The state of being that seems to have existed before the Fall was one of timeless eternity: the perfection of undifferentiated oneness. That is alluded to not only by the words of Genesis , but also by the interpretations of it found in the traditions of Gnosticism and the Cabala. Perhaps this is why the chronology of the events in the first three chapters of Genesis is hard to follow in linear time. This story is a representation of how our universe, including linear time, was created. Thus the events themselves did not occur inside of linear time, but outside of it.

Like the aeons of the Gnostic creation, the “six days ” of creation as told in Genesis may represent the stages of development of a universe coagulating from a state of pure chaos. The first man, Adam Kadmon, existed prior to the creation we currently live in. Within this hermaphroditic being were all of the elements needed for the creation of the human race and maybe even the broader universe. The Garden of Eden could be thought of as a petri dish in which those elements were placed so that they could evolve into the first separate male and female. When the male and female elements separated into two distinct beings, they began to procreate, and that was when they were cast out of the Garden. That is when sexual generation, including life and death as we know it, began, as implied in the story of Genesis .

Perhaps this is why Eve is only given her name, which means “life,” in Chapter 3, Verse 20, after they were cursed by God for their transgression. The verse says that Adam called her that “because she was the mother of all living. ” Later, in

Chapter 4, after they are driven from the Garden, Adam "knows " his wife for the first time, and she conceives both Cain and Abel. God makes it pretty clear in Chapter 3 that sexual reproduction is one of the curses that will haunt their lives now that they have eaten of the Tree of Knowledge. Eve will now be burdened with the pains of childbirth.

By the same token, Adam is cursed to forever struggle to harvest food to eat from the ground. Prior to the fall, in the Garden of Eden, all of his needs had been provided for effortlessly. But in a world of birth and death, one must work hard in order to survive. Genesis Chapter 3: 16-19 (KJV) states:

Unto the woman he said, I will greatly multiply thy sorrow and thy conception; in sorrow thou shalt bring forth children; and thy desire shall be to thy husband, and he shall rule over thee.

And unto Adam he said, Because thou hast hearkened unto the voice of thy wife, and hast eaten of the tree, of which I commanded thee, saying, Thou shalt not eat of it: cursed is the ground for thy sake; in sorrow shalt thou eat of it all the days of thy life;

Thorns also and thistles shall it bring forth to thee; and thou shalt eat the herb of the field;

In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, till thou return unto the ground; for out of it wast thou taken: for dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return.

In the story of the Garden of Eden, the character known as “the serpent ” (the hermaphroditic demon Lilith-Samael) appears to be an ancestral spirit that follows the bloodline of the Biblical patriarchs in order to mate with them and to be incarnated into the bodies of their children. The biblical texts allude to these clandestine demonic marriages and the children that resulted from them but do not overtly explain what happened, as the cabalistic interpretations try to do. Lilith-Samael seems to specifically represent a lineage that the authors of the biblical texts would rather not discuss.

As we have mentioned before, many witches see Lilith as one of their main spiritual patrons, an ancestral mother-goddess figure, from the distant past to modern times. These people believe that witches are essentially a race of humans with magical powers that have been passed down the generations through blood. The origin of these powers, they believe, comes from the demons of the underworld, which they actually see as their ancestors. For a look into this worldview, see The Dragon Legacy by Nicholas de Vere.

Just as Adam and Eve were cast out of the Garden and laden with various curses as punishment for their transgressions, the serpent was also cursed because of its role in the deed. Genesis 3:14-15 states:

And the LORD God said unto the serpent, Because thou hast done this, thou art cursed above all cattle, and above every beast of the field; upon thy belly shalt thou go, and dust shalt thou eat all the days of thy life:

And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; it shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel.

One of the mysteries of Genesis , if it is taken by itself and at face value, is that there are people —the spouses of certain people, and entire bloodlines descended from them —that are mentioned or hinted at, but whose names, origins, and ultimate destinies are not specified. So when the text refers to the serpent ’s “seed, ” we have to look elsewhere for clues.

God told the serpent that he would put “enmity ” between the serpent ’s “seed ” and that of the “woman. ” What “seed ” are we talking about? Well, again, Cain, destined to murder his brother Abel, is said, in cabalistic tradition, to have been the son of Eve seduced by Samael. So he was really half-human and half-demon. He and his descendants were the “seed ” of the serpent, and there was indeed enmity between him and his brother Abel, presumably a child of Adam and Eve. The cabalists even said that Lilith drank the blood of Abel after Cain murdered him.

There was also a continuing blood feud, according to extra-biblical texts like The Book of the Cave of Treasures , between the children of Cain and those of his second brother, Seth, who was born after Cain murdered Abel. Seth ’s birth was mentioned at the end of Genesis Chapter 4, after the story of Cain and Abel is told. But then the conception and birth of Seth is told of again in Chapter 5. That chapter begins with a yet another reiteration of the story of man ’s creation, and it is mostly similar to the Chapter 1 version. Genesis 5: 1-2 states:

This is the book of the generations of Adam. In the day that God created man, in the likeness of God made he him;

Male and female created he them; and blessed them, and called their name Adam, in the day when they were created.

The third verse then tells us that when Adam conceived Seth, he begat him “in his own likeness, after his image. ” Clearly it is being indicated that Seth was conceived using a special creation process modeled on the way in which God created Adam “in His own image, ” for this phrase was not used regarding the conception of Cain and Abel. Seth went on to have children of his own. With what women, it isn ’t specified, but a Jewish legend recounted by Ginzberg states that each of Adam and Eve ’s sons were born with a twin sister, whom they married. The line of Seth eventually resulted in Noah and from him the rest of the biblical patriarchs, all the way up to Jesus Christ.

Abel apparently died without progeny, while Cain, who was exiled to “the land of Nod,” went on to bear children and established several cities. All of Cain ’s descendants were credited in Genesis , Chapter 4 with inventions key to civilization, including agriculture, animal husbandry, metalworking, and music. Now here ’s a strange thing though: the names of Cain ’s descendants and those of his brother Seth are almost identical. Cain ’s descendants are listed as Enoch, Irad, Mahujael, Methusael, and Lamech. Meanwhile, Seth ’s descendants are said to be Enos, Cainan, Mahalaleel, Jared, Enoch, Mathuselah, and Lamech. It appears that there is again an attempt by the author of Genesis to cover up something disturbing, while still leaving coded allusions to the truth for clever readers to pick up on. It would seem that the author has attempted to write off the descendants of Cain as extinct and historically insignificant.

The land of “Nod ” to which Cain was banished seems like an imaginary parallel shadow-world, like the chaos that Lilith came from and lives in. Genesis makes it out to be a “wilderness. ” Jewish legend describes Cain ’s descendants as double-headed, dwarf-like creatures that literally live underground. Only six generations of Cain ’s descendants are given in Genesis . Lamech, the patriarch of the fifth generation after Cain, is said in Chapter 4 to have slain a “young man, ” with no further explanation. One has to look to extra-biblical Jewish legends to find out what this is about. As it turns out, there is a story stating that Lamech accidentally killed his ancestor Cain while hunting in the woods one day, mistaking him for an animal because for some reason he had horns on his head, like Baphomet.

After this brief reference to the slaying of the “young man, ” there is no further mention of the descendants of Cain, and the text abruptly segues to the birth of Seth. The implication is that Cain ’s race died off. But none of Seth ’s descendants, with names so similar to those of Cain ’s, are mentioned in Genesis as having invented any of the primary arts of civilization, as Cain ’s children did. The next thing that happens in the narrative of Genesis is the Deluge. Seth ’s seed supposedly survived this through the family of Noah, while Cain ’s would have presumably been wiped out.

Who then passed on the crafts of farming, metallurgy, and music-making? Did Seth ’s descendants learn these from the Cainites before the Flood? Or is it true that the story of the births of Seth and his children was invented to cover up the fact that it was Cain ’s descendants on board the Ark —which the serpent ’s lineage continued after the Deluge? This possibility seems more likely when we realize that the whole purpose of the Flood was God ’s attempt to exterminate this controversial lineage in the first place.

The story of the allegedly global Deluge begins at Mount Hermon. This is on the border between Syria and Lebanon, the tallest peak in Syria and the summit of what is called the Anti-Lebanon Mountain Range. A UN base lovingly nicknamed “Hermon Hotel ” is stationed there. This was the very place that The First Book of Enoch (a Jewish scripture dating back to 300 BC) refers to as “Ardis. ” According to this text, it was here that the group of 200 “Grigori ” or “Watchers ” descended for a meeting of what may have been the first secret society. There, they made a pact together, binding themselves with mutual “imprecations ” (oaths or curses), swearing that they would all take wives from “the daughters of men ” and breed children with them. The leader of the Grigori was said to be a figure named Samyaza.

From the descriptions in The First Book of Enoch , it seems that these Watchers are a form of angelic being from Heaven. Their act of seducing human women in this manner is portrayed as a transgression against God, just like the rebellion of Satan or Lucifer in Heaven is seen in the Christian tradition. Indeed, it seems that what is described here in The Book of Enoch is an explanation of what caused the so-called “war in Heaven ” of Christian theology, fought between the rebellious angels and those loyal to God. The actions portrayed here, corresponding to a shorter version of the story in Genesis Chapter 6, are shown as the real reason why God decided to cleanse the Earth by bringing about the Flood.

In The First Book of Enoch , the defiant angels are quite aware that their transgression will incur God ’s wrath. This is why they swear the oath to one another before they begin, promising to go through with the act. As it states:

It happened after the sons of men had multiplied in those days, that daughters were born to them, elegant and beautiful. And when the angels, the sons of heaven, beheld them, they became enamoured of them, saying to each other, Come, let us select for ourselves wives from the progeny of men, and let us beget children.

Then their leader Samyaza said to them; I fear that you may perhaps be indisposed to the performance of this enterprise; And that I alone shall suffer for so grievous a crime.

But they answered him and said; We all swear; And bind ourselves by mutual imprecations, that we will not change our intention, but execute our projected undertaking.

Then they swore all together, and all bound themselves by mutual execrations. Their whole number was two hundred, who descended upon Ardis, which is the top of mount Armon.

That mountain therefore was called Armon, because they had sworn upon it, and bound themselves by mutual imprecations.

“Mount Armon, ” or Mt. Hermon, has been said to mean “Mount of the Curse, ” because the angels took their oath, and thus cursed themselves, upon that mountain. The word “Hermon ” is also similar to the name of the Greek god “Hermes, ” who holds many mythological parallels to the Biblical figure of Enoch, the purported author of this text. There is another Enoch listed as the son of Cain in Genesis , as previously mentioned. Cain allegedly built a city that was named after this son. But the Enoch of the book that bears his name is said to be a descendant of Seth —grandson of Mahalaleel and great-grandfather of Noah.

The First Book of Enoch says that giants were born from the human-angel unions, and that they ravaged the earth with *their ravenous appetites:*

And the women conceiving brought forth giants, Whose stature was each three hundred cubits. These devoured all which the labor of men produced; until it became impossible to feed them; When they turned themselves against men, in order to devour them; And began to injure birds, beasts, reptiles, and fishes, to eat their flesh one after another, and to drink their blood.

At this point in the story another figure enters the picture. He is named Azazel, and he is said to be guilty of teaching mankind forbidden knowledge. The text says:

Moreover Azazyel taught men to make swords, knives, shields, breastplates, the fabrication of mirrors, and the workmanship of bracelets and ornaments, the use of paint, the beautifying of the eyebrows, the use of stones of every valuable and select kind, and all sorts of dyes, so that the world became altered.

Another quote from The First Book of Enoch demonstrates that this forbidden teaching was offensive to God, and that people were not meant to know these things. Referring to the iniquity and rebellion that caused God to bring about the Flood, Enoch tells Noah:

They have discovered secrets, and they are those that have been judged; but not thou, my son. The Lord of Spirits knows that thou are pure and good, free from the reproach of discovering secrets.

As a punishment for his sins, Azazel is cast into a dark prison that is also described as “the desert, ” in a place named “Dudael ” (Hebrew for “Cauldron of God. ”) We read:

Again the Lord said to Raphael, Bind Azazyel hand and foot; cast him into darkness; and opening the desert which is in Dudael, cast him in there. Throw upon him hurled and pointed stones, covering him with darkness; There shall he remain for ever; cover his face, that he may not see the light. And in the great day of judgment let him be cast into the fire.

Interestingly, even though the instigator of the sexual crimes committed by the angels is said to be Samyaza, the teaching of secrets was instigated by Azazel. So Jehovah decided to lay the blame most heavily upon him. The First Book of Enoch quotes God as saying:

All the earth has been corrupted by the effects of the teaching of Azazyel. To him therefore ascribe the whole crime.

As for the giants born of angels and men, God decided to bring about the Flood in order to rid the Earth of them. But he also decided to thin their population as much as possible first, by sending his angels to instigate violence amongst the giants, so that they killed each other off. As it states:

To Gabriel also the Lord said, Go to the biters, to the reprobates, to the children of fornication; and destroy the children of fornication, the offspring of the Watchers, from among men; bring them forth, and excite them one against another. Let them perish by mutual slaughter; for length of days shall not be theirs.

After the Watchers are forced to watch their children die, they are cast into the pit under the earth, where they are cursed to suffer and await the Final Judgment:

To Michael likewise the Lord said, Go and announce his crime to Samyaza, and to the others who are with him, who have been associated with women, that they might be polluted with all their impurity. And when all their sons shall be slain, when they shall see the perdition of their beloved, bind them for seventy generations underneath the earth, even to the day of judgment, and of consummation, until the judgment, the effect of which will last for ever, be completed.

Then shall they be taken away into the lowest depths of the fire in torments; and in confinement shall they be shut up for ever. Immediately after this shall he, together with them, burn and perish; they shall be bound until the consummation of many generations.

Although it is not told in so much detail, this same story is alluded to in The Book of Genesis . In Chapter 6 (KJV) we read:

And it came to pass, when men began to multiply on the face of the earth, and daughters were born unto them, that the sons of God saw the daughters of men that they were fair; and they took them wives of all which they chose… .

There were giants in the earth in those days; and also after that, when the sons of God came in unto the daughters of men, and they bare children to them, the same became mighty men which were of old, men of renown.

The Hebrew word that has been translated as “giants ” is “Nephilim. ” What this word specifically means in Hebrew is “those who were cast down, ” “those who caused others to fall, ” or “those who battle ” (i.e., “those who fall upon others ”). The Deluge narrative is told in Chapter 6 also, immediately after the reference to the sons of God mating with human females. Suddenly God declares that he regrets mankind ’s creation because of its inherent “wickedness, ” and because “the Earth was filled with violence. ” He decides to destroy all life on Earth, except for Noah and the rest of the passengers chosen to board the Ark. Man was deemed wicked not because of sin in the ordinary sense (which had not actually been invented yet), but because they had interbred with angels and created a hybrid race, of which God did not approve.

The part about Azazel teaching forbidden knowledge to man is not specified in Genesis , as it is in The First Book of Enoch . Also, the picture of Azazel as an intermediary between Samael and Lilith, as described in The Zohar , is also not mentioned (nor are the names of Samael and Lilith). However, Azazel is mentioned in Leviticus . Here the temple rituals for the Israelites are specified. One of them involves the sacrifice of two goats on the holy day of “Yom Kippur, ” the Day of Atonement. In Chapter 6, God tells the high priest Aaron to “place lots upon two goats, one marked for the Lord, and the other marked for Azazel. ”

The Azazel goat was marked with a red string tied around his head. While the goat for the Lord was killed at the temple as an atonement sacrifice, the Azazel goat, or “scapegoat, ” as it is often termed, was forced, like Azazel in The

First Book of Enoch , to bear the burden of everyone else ’s sin. The priest would confess the sins of the community with his hands placed on the head of the goat, laying the weight of those sins upon him. The goat was then led off into the desert and pitched over the side of a rocky cliff. A white cloth was also affixed to the door of the temple sanctuary, and it would supposedly turn red the moment the goat hit the bottom.

Azazel ’s name has been given several interpretations. These include “rugged and strong, ” which accurately describes the disposition of a mountain goat. Others are “he who is sent away, ” or “goat that disappears. ” The ceremony is clearly mimicking God ’s punishment of Azazel as related in The First Book of Enoch , by casting him in the desert prison of Dudael (or else The First Book of Enoch was written to explain the ritual). Parallels can also be seen with the story of Cain, cast into the land of Nod, which we described earlier as possibly a nebulous, ephemeral state of existence, or even non-existence. Indeed, the word “Nod ” means “to wander ” in Hebrew. Perhaps not coincidentally, “nod ” means “to sleep ” in English. So the land of Nod appears to represent a dream-like world of confusion and chaos, like the Abyss of the cabalists where the demons are said to live and which creation came out of.

In The Case for Lilith , author Mark Wayne Biggs makes the case that Samyaza in The First Book of Enoch is the same figure as Samael. He argues that Azazel is not one of the Watchers so much as a son of Lilith and Samael. He believes that before the angels could breed with humans, they needed to know how to speak the true name of God. This, as we mentioned, can purportedly be used to create magical effects, including bringing things to life, when pronounced correctly. Biggs theorizes that Samyaza/Samael gained his knowledge from Lilith, his lover, and then used it to bring their son Azazel to life by pronouncing it during their mating. This same process, writes Biggs, was then subsequently used by the rest of the Watchers when breeding the Nephilim giants with human women.

None of these connections seem far-fetched, although the idea of Azazel being Lilith and Samael ’s son doesn ’t entirely square with the idea that he is needed to facilitate their sexual union in the first place. At any rate, in a sexual union between a creature of flesh and a spirit, it seems reasonable that a magical process might be required to bring forth fleshly progeny. Note that both Azazel in The First Book of Enoch and the descendants of Cain in Genesis are credited with teaching mankind forbidden arts and crafts such as metallurgy. As noted, the descendants of Cain are a bloodline cast off into the wilderness by God ’s curses— just as Azazel was cast into the desert. This could also be said of Hagar, the slave woman and mother of Ishmael through Abraham, who, as we said, were both were cast off by Abraham and left to die in the desert (but miraculously lived), and whose bloodline was disinherited. We know that Hagar is considered by cabalists to be an incarnation of Lilith.

Interestingly, there is a sect in Iraq called the Yezidis who worship and claim biological descent from a “half-angel ” whom they alternately refer to as “Yazd, ” “Azazil, ” or “Melek Taus ” (“Peacock King ”). The Yezidi faith is an interesting mix of Jewish, Christian, Islamic, and seemingly satanic traditions. However, they believe that any enmity between the Peacock King and the Most High God will be reconciled at the Final Judgment, and the souls of the Yezidis will be forced into Heaven through the pronouncement of magical formulae that will somehow compel God ’s will. This can be gleaned from reading Isya Joseph ’s commentary on the Yezidi scripture called The Black Book, published as Devil Worship: The Sacred Books and Traditions of the Yezidis .

Twelfth-century Jewish scholars Nahmanides and Abraham ibn Ezra both wrote that Azazel was the chief of the seirim , or “goat demons. ” As previously mentioned, these beings are described as satyrs, the word for the half-goat creatures of Greek mythology, and they live in the desert. They are considered analogous to the jinn of Islamic legend, spirits of “smokeless fire, ” some of whom rebelled against God and now curse mankind with mischievous tricks. Among other things, the jinn possess people, seduce people, and sometimes even breed with them. Sometimes they are very malicious, causing harm to infants, for example. In these ways, the jinn, and thus the seirim , seem the same as the descendants of Lilith.

Indeed, in the word “jinn ” there may be an etymological vestige of “Cain. ” Sumeriologist L.A. Waddell thought him to be the same figure as “Kan, ” “Gan ” or “Gin, ” found on the kings lists of the Sumerians, Babylonians and Chaldeans. It may be also that this family of words is connected to the English words “king ” and “kin. ” He describes him as one of the first kings on Earth. But the cabalists also saw him as part of a family of goat-demons, along with Azazel and the “serpent ” Lilith-Samael. The political implications of this are interesting, for the Devil is considered the “Lord of the Earth. ” It would seem, perhaps, that the serpent, by possessing and seducing humans, was successful in not only penetrating the bloodline of Adam, but also putting his/her descendants in line to inherit the thrones of the world.

This is the real idea behind conspiracy theories, popular for centuries and now more so than ever, that the elite of the world serve the agenda of Satan, meeting in secret to plot the downfall of most of humanity. The fraternity most commonly associated with this plot is the Freemasons. It is to the symbolism of their mascot —not coincidentally, a goat —that we turn our attention to next.

Chapter 3: The Goat-Faced Wild Man

He [Satan] taught women the art of seduction, men to satisfy their feelings in their double sexual desires, he ran rim in color, discovered the flute and set the muscles in rhythmical movement, until the divine mania embraced the heart and the divine Phallus with its opulence sowed the fruitful womb.

Stanislaw Przybyszewski, The Cult of Satan ’s Church

The relationship between the Freemasons and the Knights Templar is one of contention. Detractors of both organizations often accuse them of being part of a united anti-Christ conspiracy of occult secret societies spanning the last nine centuries. Meanwhile “debunkers ” who wish to demystify the origins of Freemasonry claim that any connection is purely mythical, a product of a romantic imagination. Most scholars admit that the Masonic tradition received inspiration from the Templars, as they did from many old traditions. The rituals of the Freemasons pertain to the secrets of Solomon ’s Temple, the site of which the Templars originally called home, and which they named their organization after. The fact that there is a rank in York Rite Masonry explicitly called the “Knights Templar degree ” makes the connection seem rather overt.

If the Freemasons are continuing the secret doctrine of the Templars, one would expect the rituals to Baphomet to have continued on in the Masonic order as well. Indeed the subject of Baphomet is addressed in the handbook for Scottish Rite Freemasons entitled Morals and Dogma by Albert Pike. Echoing the thoughts of Eliphas Levi, he wrote of Baphomet as the magical force of the universe:

There is in nature a most potent force, by means whereof a single man, who could possess himself of it, and should know how to direct it, could revolutionize and change the face of the world… .

This force was known to the ancients… . If science can but learn to control it, it will be possible to change the order of the seasons, to produce in night the phenomena of day, to send a thought in an instant around the world, to heal or slay at a distance, to give our words universal success, and make them reverberate everywhere.

This agent … is precisely what the adepts of the Middle Ages called the elementary matter of the great work. The Gnostics held that it composed the igneous body of the Holy Spirit, and it was adored in the secret rites of the Sabbat or the Temple, under the hieroglyphic figure of Baphomet or the hermaphroditic Goat of Mendes.

There is a life-principle in the world, a universal agent, wherein are two natures and a double-current of love and wrath. This ambient fluid penetrates everything. It is a ray detached from the glory of the Sun, and fixed by the weight of the atmosphere and the central attraction. It is the body of the Holy Spirit, the universal agent, the serpent devouring its own tail. With this electro-magnetic ether, this vital and luminous caloric, the ancients and the alchemists were familiar. Of this agent, that phase of modern ignorance termed physical science talks incoherently, knowing naught of it save its effects; and theology might apply to all of its pretended definitions of spirit… .

Far beyond the mere fertility of vegetation that most scholars have viewed Baphomet as a symbol of, Pike seems to be describing this figure as representative of the root of all physical powers and energies, now described, as Pike contemptuously states, according to the schematics of modern physics. While the prevailing model was by no means settled in Pike ’s day, we imagine he was saying that what we now describe as electromagnetism, as well as gravity and the strong and weak nuclear forces, are all derived from this root. We can understand, then, why occultists still think of the knowledge of how to master this power as the ultimate mystery, and the ultimate wisdom.

In the book The American Quarterly Review of Freemasonry and Its Kindred Sciences, Volume 1 (1858), edited by Freemasonic scholar Albert Mackey, an article entitled “Horae Esotericae ” by Giles F. Yates refers to an Arabic book called Sun of Suns and Moon of Moons that Yates found untranslated in the library of his Masonic lodge. There, he says, the author identifies an entity named “Bafumed or Karuf [calf] ” symbolizing “the secrets of the nature of the world, or secret of secrets. ” This book apparently was known in the past, and may have been lost.

We know it existed because of the work of ninth to tenth-century alchemist Ibn Wahshiyya, most famous for translating the mysterious Book of Nabathean Agriculture into Arabic. He wrote a book called Ancient Alphabets and Hieroglyphic Characters Explained , which was translated into English by none other than Joseph von Hammer-Purgstall, who published his version in 1806, twelve years before his

Baphomet essay. Ancient Alphabets also makes reference to “Bahumed, ” “Bahumed, ” or “Bahumet ” and to the Sun of Suns book, which Ibn Wahshiyya claims to have translated from Nabathean into Arabic.

He says the subject of the book is “the discovery of the Hermesian alphabets, ” and then provides, presumably from that source, a hieroglyph of a beetle-like creature which he says is:

…expressive of the most sublime secret, called originally Bahumed and Kharuf (or calf), viz. The Secret of the nature of the world, or The Secret of Secrets, or The Beginning and Return of every thing.

This all-encompassing interpretation of the meaning of Baphomet as “the biggest thing ever, ” seemingly shared by so many revered Masonic scholars, may explain why, according to Freemasons for Dummies by Christopher Hodapp:

Some early ritual books from the fraternity referred to God as “God of all Things ” and abbreviated it as GOAT. That was quickly changed, and God is now referred to by Freemasons by the acronym GAOTU, for Grand Architect of the Universe.

The change was made because outsiders to the club viewed their use of the word “GOAT ” to symbolize the creator God as blasphemous and satanic. But there is much more linking Freemasonry and goats. The animal is widely claimed by non-members to be part of the hazing rites for initiation into Freemasonry, during a ceremony supposedly called “Riding the Goat. ” Most Masonic literature on the subject makes it out to be a joke, based on the accusations of a secret doctrine of Satanism that have been made against the brotherhood by anti- Masons throughout the years. As we read from Albert Mackey ’s Encyclopedia of Freemasonry and its Kindred Sciences (1917):

The idea that “riding the goat ” constitutes a part of the ceremonies of initiation of a Masonic lodge has its real origin in the superstition of antiquity. The old Greeks and Romans portrayed their mystical god Pan in horns and hooves and shaggy hide, and called him “goat-footed. When the demonology of the classics was adopted and modified by the early Christians, Pan gave way to Satan, who naturally inherited his attributes, so that to the common mind the devil was represented by the he-goat, and his best-known marks were the horns, the beard, and the cloven hoofs. Then came the witch stories of the Middle Ages, and the belief in the witch orgies, where, as it was said, the devil appeared riding on a goat. These orgies of the witches, where, amid fear of blasphemous ceremonies, they practiced initiation into their Satanic rites, became, to the vulgar and illiterate, the type of the Masonic mysteries; for, as Dr. [George] Oliver says, ‘It was in England a common belief that the Freemasons were accustomed in their lodges ‘to raise the devil. ’

In Volume 14 of The Short Talk Bulletin of the Grand Lodge of New Brunswick in May 1936, the same argument was made, tracing the Masonic goat back to Pan via Satan, but also, back to Azazel. As it states:

The idea that the sins of the people might be transferred to a goat, which, driven into the wilderness to die, carried away the moral trespasses with which he was symbolically loaded, doubtless had much to do with the change which came over the complexion of the Great God Pan, when Christianity commenced to rewrite the ancient heathen mythology. Gently Pan, who harmed no one beyond creating terror, became first Satanic, and then, in the end, Satan himself.

A similar analysis is found in Thomas Wright ’s Worship of the Generative Powers (1865), one of the first works in English to examine Joseph von Hammer- Purgstall ’s “Baphometic Idols. ” In it, Wright demonstrates amazing similarity between the rituals that the Knights Templar were accused of doing, and the rites of the pre-Christian cult of Priapus. Also remarkably similar were the purported activities of many Gnostic groups, the Cathar heretics of France, and the European witch cults of the Middle Ages. We even see the same symbolism in the Satanic “Black Mass, ” allegedly celebrated throughout the centuries by the supposed “fifth column ” of Satanist priests who purportedly lurk in secret within the upper echelons of the Catholic Church. Wright believed that the Christian image of “Satan ” was in fact largely based on images of Priapus, and attempted to demonstrate that the traditions of underground “Satanist ” and “witchcraft ” cults were actually sublimated forms of Priapism.

After cataloging the widespread use of votive phalluses throughout Pre- Christian Europe, Wright describes how what he called the “cult of Priapus ” spread deep into Europe. In Greek mythology, Priapus was of divine parentage (variously fathered by Pan, Hermes, or Zeus, depending on the story). He was cursed by Hera to be ugly and to have a dirty mind. He was so unpleasant to the other gods that they pitched him over the side of a cliff, like the Azazel goat on Yom Kippur. He landed on Earth and was raised by shepherds as one of their own.

Just as Hera cursed him to be, Priapus shared the stereotypical interests of pastoral Greek herdsmen: bestiality and the rape of passers-by. As part of his affliction, Priapus had a giant penis with an almost-perpetual erection, which he would nonetheless lose at certain key moments, much to his frustration. For instance, as he was attempting to rape the sleeping nymph Lotis (or the goddess Hestia, in the version told by Ovid), a donkey brayed, waking the victim just in time and causing the loss of his erection. In retribution, Priapus is said to have raped the donkey to death, and the brutal sacrifice of these animals was part of his cult from that point onward.

It is interesting that Priapus was considered a symbol of fertility, despite

his association with impotence as well. This is a problem that the she-demon Lilith was said by Jews to cause. The association of the Priapian cult with dildos also reminds us of Samael ’s need for an “intermediary ” to simulate sex with his bride. One can see a parallel here between the unfulfilled lust of Priapus and the yearning that the castrated Samael has for Lilith. Perhaps his gigantic erection symbolizes potential energy unspoiled, stored up for future use, its magnitude only increased by repeated frustration of desire.

Statues of Priapus were traditionally placed in gardens, where they were believed to engender the crops. They also fulfilled a scarecrow-like function, protecting the crops not only from rapacious fowl, but also from people who might steal or otherwise tamper with them. Placards placed in gardens warned that Priapus would rape trespassers —vaginally, anally, or orally —if the crops were harmed in any way. The Priapian tradition was also related to the use of “herms, ” which consisted of the head of a satyr on top of a squared-off column with a large erect phallus jutting out the center. These were rubbed for good luck.

Likewise, Thomas Wright documents the continuation of Priapism throughout Christian Europe with the use of amulets and coins featuring disembodied penises, sometimes with hands, feet, and even penises of their own. These were worn for good luck, or, rather, for the warding off of the evil eye.

Likewise the “fig ” hand signal fulfilled a similar function, which could be performed either by making a fist with the thumb pushed between the middle and index finger, or else sticking the middle finger up alone, a la the modern “flipping off ” gesture. The true meaning of this signal, then, is a curse, to say “May Priapus (that is, the Devil) fuck you. ” But originally, it was done to ward off evil, or bring good luck at a time of need, just like “crossing your fingers ” is done now.

The Priapus statues called herms were so named because the features of Priapus and Hermes were in many ways conflated. For one thing, some genealogies had Hermes as the father of Priapus, or his grandfather via the half- goat, half-god-man known as Pan. All three of them have been depicted with horns and a goaty-looking beard in different instances —Pan most consistently, and Priapus quite often. Pan actually had the hairy legs and hooves of a goat, and was a full-blown satyr living in Arcadia, the unspoiled wilds where his father Hermes ruled. His mother and nurse were said to have fled in fear when they first saw him, because of the uncanny nature of his appearance. Despite this, they say, the gods of Olympus thought he was beautiful and may have named him “Pan ” (“All ”) because to them he was perfect.

However, another, less flattering, origin of his name is given by Servius, a commentator on the writings of Virgil, who tells us that his mother was Penelope, wife of Odysseus. In this version of the story, she purportedly had sex with all 108 of her suitors and somehow conceived Pan from all of them. This fits with Pan ’s association with sexual promiscuity. But many other sources, including Herodotus, Cicero, Apollodorus and Hyginus, claim that Pan ’s parents were Hermes and Penelope, which makes us wonder if the 108 suitors in Homer ’s epic were somehow symbolic of different aspects of Hermes.

Either way it is obscene, as Hermes was said by Homer to be Odysseus ’ great-grandfather. After he killed the suitors, Hermes led their souls to Hades personally.

Pan was a physical embodiment of the spirit of the wilderness, and is invoked as such even today. He inspired wonder and lust, as well as madness. A visit from him— invited or unprovoked, usually in some wild or desolate place — would bring crazy visions, “panic attacks ” (the word “panic ” stemming from his name), and sometimes permanent insanity. It is the madness that comes upon seeing the raw, wild, and androgynous root of sexual energy —the undivided, unpolarized energy of life itself that divides and ignites creation. Weird horror author Arthur Machen described a vision of this entity in his short story The Great God Pan :

Though horror and revolting nausea rose up within me, and an odour of corruption choked my breath, I remained firm. I was then privileged or accursed, I dare not say which, to see that which was on the bed, lying there black like ink, transformed before my eyes. The skin, and the flesh, and the muscles, and the bones, and the firm structure of the human body that I had thought to be unchangeable, and permanent as adamant, began to melt and dissolve.

I know that the body may be separated into its elements by external agencies, but I should have refused to believe what I saw. For here there was some internal force, of which I knew nothing, that caused dissolution and change.

Here too was all the work by which man had been made repeated before my eyes. I saw the form waver from sex to sex, dividing itself from itself, and then again reunited. Then I saw the body descend to the beasts whence it ascended, and that which was on the heights go down to the depths, even to the abyss of all being… .

Stories about frightening encounters with a Pan-like creature persist today with both urban and rural legends still being told about satyrs that rape, kill, and inspire madness. The deadly “Pope Lick Monster ” of Kentucky is one such example. The flying, blood-sucking “Chupacabra ” (“Goat-sucker ”) of South America is another (although he mostly chooses livestock for victims). The Native North American figure of the Wendigo has a similar reputation, as he lives in the deep woods and drives his prey crazy before he kills them. But his horns are described as deer antlers.

Having heard such stories in our youth many times before, we were quite surprised to come across a far more ancient version in The Book of Nabathean Agriculture . Here a creature called “Al-Ghul ” is described that sounds very similar to both Pan and Baphomet. It was said to be a human female from the waist up, with the legs and hooves of a donkey. Ghuls were described as living “in underground dens and dry, barren deserts, where people do not travel, ” just like Azazel and Lilith. The ghuls would only come out at night because the sun harmed them. Like the giant offspring of the Sons of God in Genesis or the Watchers in The First Book of Enoch , ghuls had a rapacious appetite for flesh and blood.

But their favorite prey was said to be humans. According to Nabathean Agriculture , ghuls can smell humans from far away, and “the utmost pleasure and lust of this animal is to get a human being in its power. ” Anyone who “looks attentively ” at it for a while will die of fright. In particular, if anyone under the age of 20 looks a ghul in the face, it was said that “he will become paralyzed ” upon seeing it and “will not be able to move until it takes him and cuts his throat and drinks his blood, ” after which the man, still living, had the horror of watching his penis and testicles get eaten by the creature, before it finally gobbles up his intestines. Arab astrologers identified a constellation in the heavens as “the head of the Ghul, ” and one of the blinking stars within as the eye with the deadly stare. The Greeks called this same constellation the head of the Gorgon monster, Medusa, a woman with a serpent ’s tale instead of legs (like Lilith), and serpents on her head, as well as a paralyzing stare like Al-Ghul.

Indeed, the whole story of the Gorgon and the “Aegis ” —the magical shield that it was affixed to —has an interesting tie-in regarding the goat symbolism that we are examining. According to the Greeks, their highest God, Zeus, was raised in hiding, exiled on the island of Crete for fear of being eaten by his father, Kronos. His wet nurse during his infancy was a she-goat named Amalthea. Her name means “tender,” specifically referring not to the financial term, but to that definition of “tender ” as “a person who attends to or takes charge of someone or some thing ” (Webster ’s College Dictionary , 1999). Some sources say the god Pan (also called “Aegipan ”) was nursed there alongside Zeus as well.

Having little thanks for the favors of Amalthea, Zeus had her slaughtered as soon as he was fully grown, and fashioned from her skin the “Aegis, ” an impenetrable shield. The word “aegis ” (or aigis) literally means “goat-skin. ” Zeus would shake this shield in the air in order to create thunder and lightning that could cause men to die of fright. Thus he earned the epithet “Aigiokhos,” meaning “wielder of the goat-skin. ” He also made the “cornucopia ” or “horn of plenty, ” from one of Amalthea ’s horns. This magical object contained an inexhaustible supply of fruits and flowers.

The Aegis is also the subject of other myths involving the figures of the bright-eyed wisdom goddess Athena, the cunning blacksmith god Hephaestus, and the Gorgon Medusa. Poet and mythographer Robert Graves believed that the Aegis originally belonged to Athena only, and that the myth was transposed onto Zeus at a later date. He also theorized that the reason why a goat was sacrificed at the Acropolis in Athens every year was because the Greeks saw the goat as a representation of Athena. He conjectured that the skin of the animal might have been placed on the shoulders of a statue of Athena after the sacrifice, as the Egyptians did with a ram skin to statues of their ram god Ammon. He thought that this may have been the origin of the ritual goatskin that would later be fashioned into the Aegis shield and associated with Zeus.

Eventually, the Aegis had the head of the Gorgon Medusa fixed to it, purportedly by Hephaestus, its real builder according to Homer. Euripides said that the Aegis was made from a goatskin that originally belonged to Medusa. You will recall that she had serpents on her head instead of hair and that one look at her face would turn a man to stone instantly. As we said, this was very similar to how the face of a ghul could cause mind-bending terror that paralyzed and sometimes even killed instantly. This was a property that was retained even after the head was severed by the hero Perseus, and affixed to the Aegis shield. The face was permanently frozen in a grimace of pain, its eyes rolling upward.

Could this unique state of madness and terror caused by things like Pan, Al-Ghul and Medusa be thought of as similar to that terrible “Baptism of Wisdom ” which Baphomet is named for: a realization of the horror of existence, like the Knowledge of Good and Evil that the Serpent blessed and cursed Adam and Eve with? Traditionalist Julius Evola, in his classic book The Mystery of the Grail , gave us a relevant description of how the vision of Baphomet affected the Templars:

The central ritual of Templar initiation was kept very secret. From one of the proceedings of the trial we learn that a knight who underwent it returned as pale as a corpse, and with a lost expression on his face, claiming that from then on he could never be happy again. Shortly after, the same knight fell into a state of invincible depression and died… What produces an extreme terror in some knights and causes them to flee… is the vision of an idol… the Baphomet.

Thomas Wright believed that the Knights Templar were practicing Gnostic rites of Priapism when they worshipped Baphomet, whom he saw as just another incarnation of Priapus. He found confirmation of this in the artifacts and images of Gnostic sex orgy rituals purportedly discovered by von Hammer-Purgstall on former Templar properties. These include images of the famous osculum inflame —the “obscene kiss ” of the rear end of a statue of a goat-headed entity, corresponding to the accusation that the Templars “kissed the anus of a goat ” during their rituals.

The Templar rites, as described by the knights under confession, were identical in many ways to the elements of the alleged “Witches ’ Sabbath ” that accused witches have confessed to attending throughout centuries of persecution in the Christian world. From the Middle Ages of Europe, to sixteenth century England, to colonial America, the descriptions of the Sabbath in these confessions are remarkably uniform. These ceremonies were officiated by a dark figure, usually described as a man dressed in black with a goat ’s head, or a man who could transform into a goat. There was a mock Eucharist with a black Host, blaspheming of God, and ritual trampling upon the Cross (just as the Templars are said to have done). New initiates were made to sign a black book pledging their soul to him, and they received a mark from the goat god that tagged them as belonging to him.

These witches had a number of different nicknames for this figure. According to The God of the Witches by Dr. Margaret Alice Murray, these include: the Black Man (or Man in Black), the Antecessor, Robin Artisson (or Robinus Filius Artis), Christsonday, and Janicot (supposedly meaning “Little John ” in Basque). Dr. Murray correctly connects this figure to a pre-Christian horned god:

The great Gaulish god was called by the Romans Cernunnos, which in the English parlance was Herne, or more colloquially “Old Hornie. ” In Northern

Europe the ancient Neck or Nick, meaning a spirit, had such hold on the affections of the people that the Church was forced to accept him, and he was canonised as St. Nicholas, who in Cornwall still retains his horns. Our Puck is the Welsh Boucca, which derives either directly from the Slavic Bog “God ” or from the same root.

Puck and Cernunnos, along with the aforementioned Priapus, Pan, and Hermes (the Roman Mercury), all seem to be different versions of the same horned personality. To this we can also add the Greek Dionysus (the Roman Bacchus), the Roman Silvanus and Faunus, and the Celtic Green Man. What they have in common includes association with fertility, sexuality, luck, wealth, magical transformation, initiation, mischief, trickery, and the wilderness.

Puck (also related to bucca , a “male goat ” in Old English) was a mischievous fairy (or “pixie, ” another word related to his name). He was known for his “merry jests. ” He could be invoked by witches to perform small tasks in exchange for food and drink. He could also show up uninvited and perform mischief, such as causing milk to spoil. Depictions of him show him looking very much like both Baphomet and Priapus, with a goat head and goat legs, a gigantic erect phallus, and protruding breasts. Witches are shown in some of these images dancing around him, and he does seem to have been the figure invoked at a Witch Sabbath. Shakespeare named him both “Puck ” and “Robin Goodfellow ” in A Midsummer Night ’s Dream , calling him a “Hobgoblin ” and a “shrewd and knavish sprite. ”

As we mentioned, he was apparently known to witch covens as “Robin ” as well. He seems to have influenced the stories of the thief Robin Hood and his Merry Men (thieves like Hermes), including “Little John ” (whose name corresponds to Janicot, the Basque name for the goat god of the Witch Sabbath). Interestingly, a Robin Hood play was once performed at May Day (a witch holiday) every year by gypsies on the grounds of Rosslyn Chapel in Scotland (allegedly built by Templars who escaped persecution in France) under the patronage of the chapel ’s hereditary curators, the Sinclairs (a Templar-descended family).

Very similar goat man imagery is associated with several other figures, although their animal symbolism is not always that of a goat. For instance, the Roman Faunus eventually became amalgamated with Pan, as he was a wild god of the woods with horns and animal legs, but originally he was more of a wolf than a goat. There is also the horned Dionysus, the god of wine, who was more associated with the bull. To the Greeks, Dionysus was the god of divine madness, who revealed epiphanies to his followers when they were in a state of religious ecstasy. This was achieved through wild, drunken orgies in which sacrificial animals were torn to pieces by the teeth and claws of the worshippers. These rituals would have made the Priapists proud, undoubtedly setting the standard for the excesses of later Gnostic, Satanist, and witch cults. Dionysus was called

“Eleutherios ” (“the Liberator ”) and “Lyaeus ” (“he who unties [the mind from worry] ”).

Purportedly, one of the items “revealed ” to initiates of the cult of Dionysus was a giant dildo, supposedly crafted and used anally by the god himself! The story of its origin states that a shepherd named Prosymnus helped Dionysus rescue his mother Semele from the underworld on the promise that he and the god could have sex afterwards. However, the shepherd died before the promise could be consummated. As a way of making amends, Dionysus made a phallus out of fig wood (the tree associated with Priapus because its fruit was seen as symbolic of the penis). He then placed it on the shepherd ’s tomb and proceeded to sit upon it!

Dionysus was often depicted as an androgynous or even feminine youth. When he made his appearance at these rituals (as a manifested spirit), he was described as disheveled with a manic look in his eyes, as if returning from a realm beyond known existence. This was the true “wilderness ” where he reigned, although it was symbolized by the forest, thus his epithet “dendrites ” (“of the trees ”). He was said to have come from the mythical “Mount Nysa, ” always described by the Greeks as someplace very far away and foreign to them. Just like the Gnostics and the witches of later times, the Dionysian mystery cults were at best just barely tolerated by the authorities, and frequently outlawed.

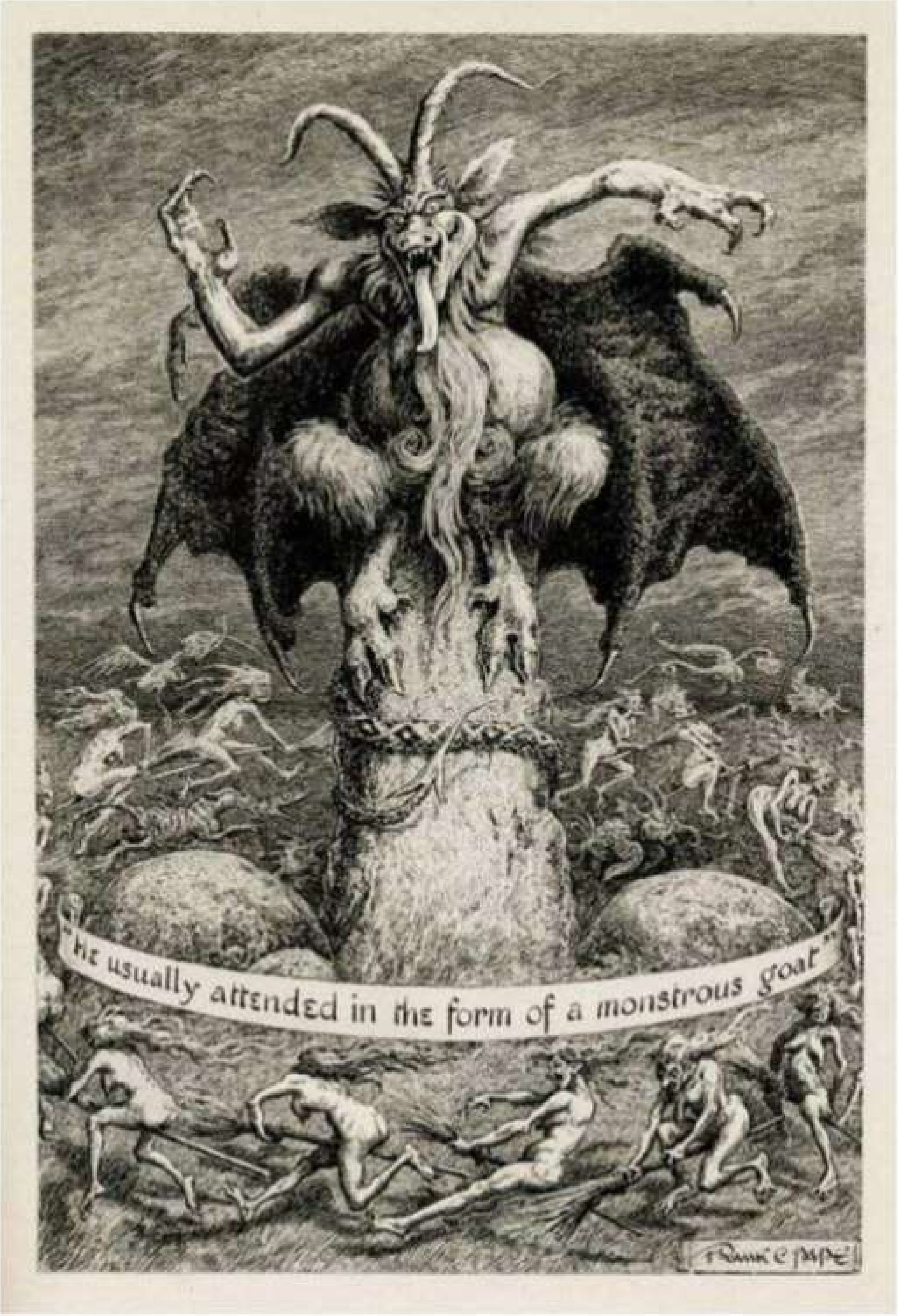
"He usually attended in the form of a monstrous goat"
Frank C. Pape

Above: Bookplate from Frank C. Pape, 1920s.

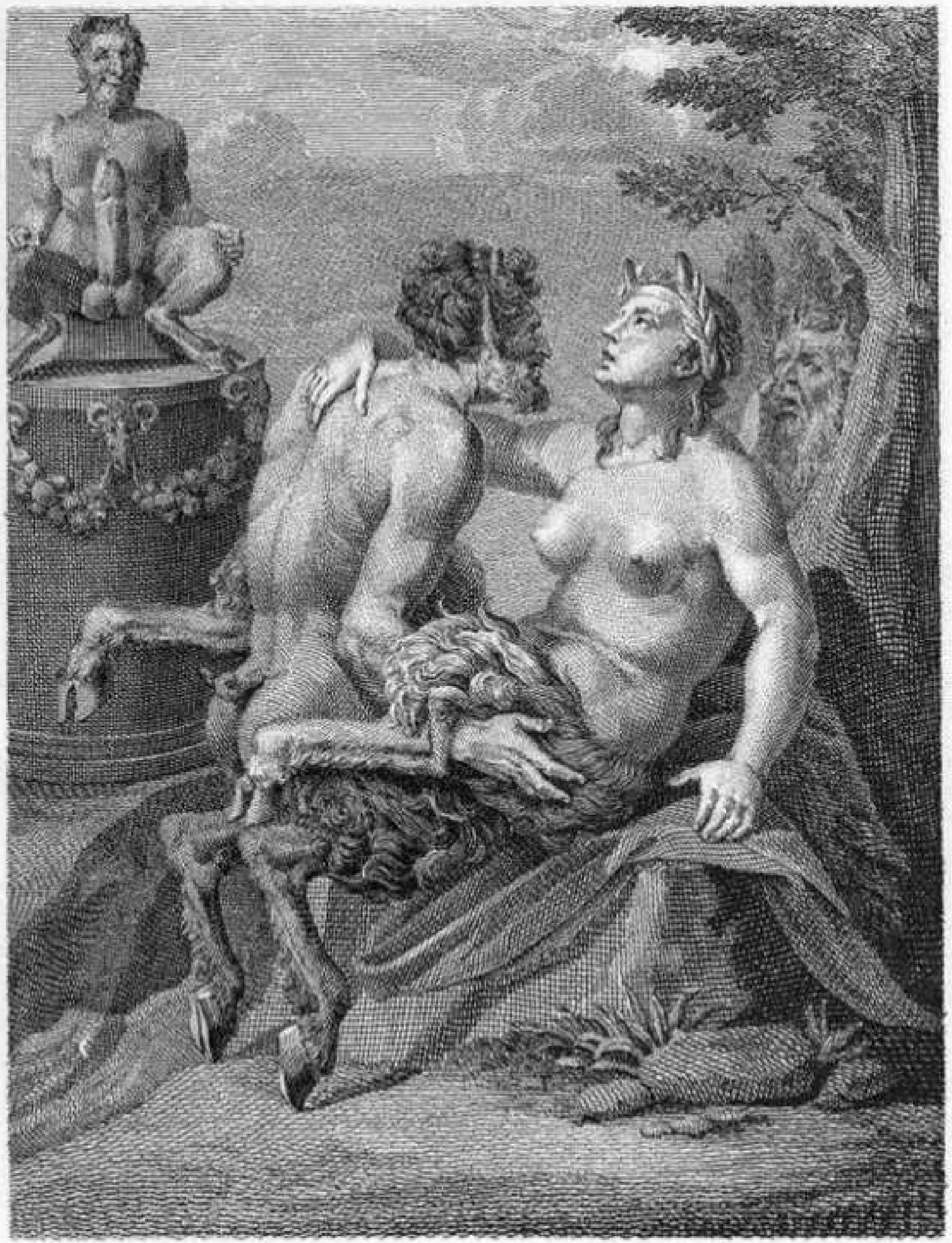

Above: *Culte de Priape*, by Agostino Carracci.

Right: ***A Greek Form of Hermes, from The Secret Teachings of All Ages*** **by Manly P. Hall, 1928.**

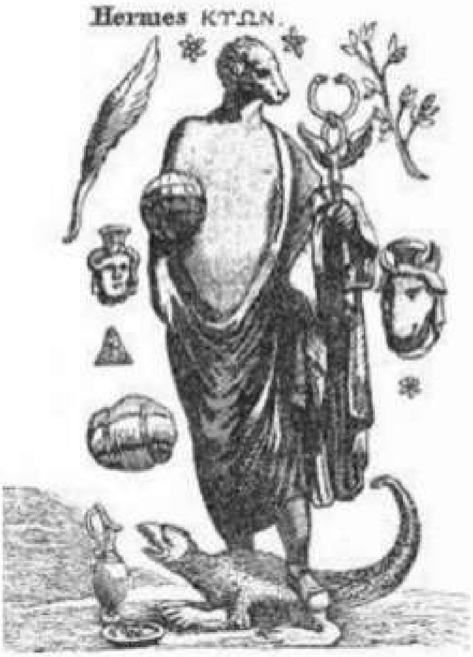
Hermes KTΩN.

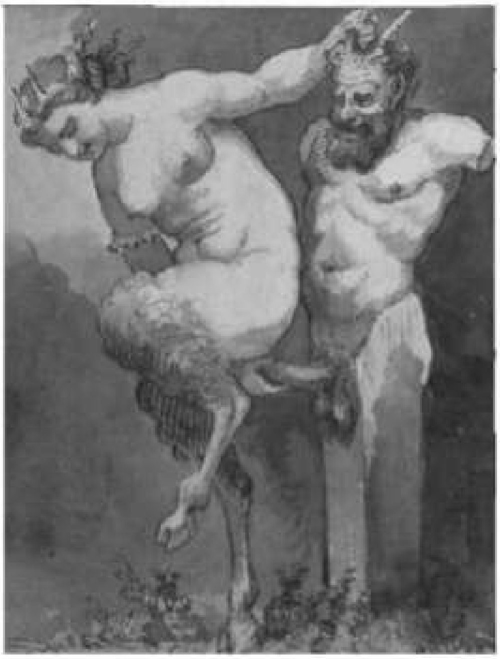

Left: Image of a female satyr masturbating with a herm.

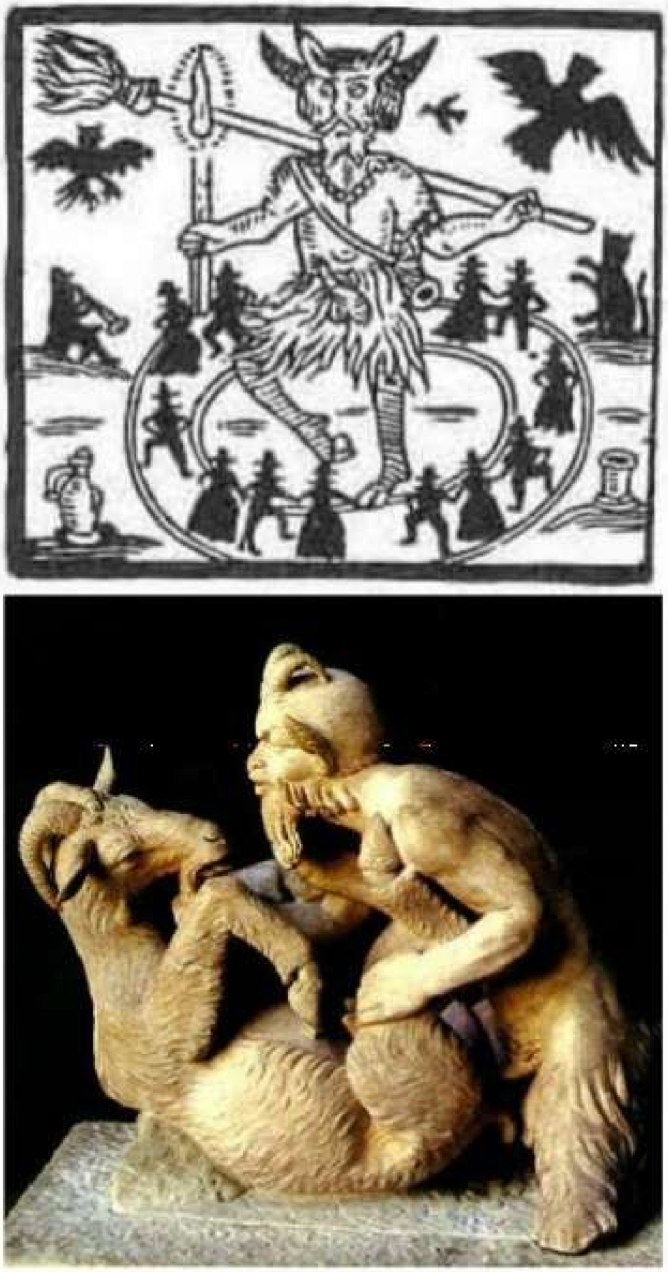

Above: Robin Goodfellow at a Sabbath. Below: Pan Copulating with Goat, from Herculaneum, now at National Museum of Naples.

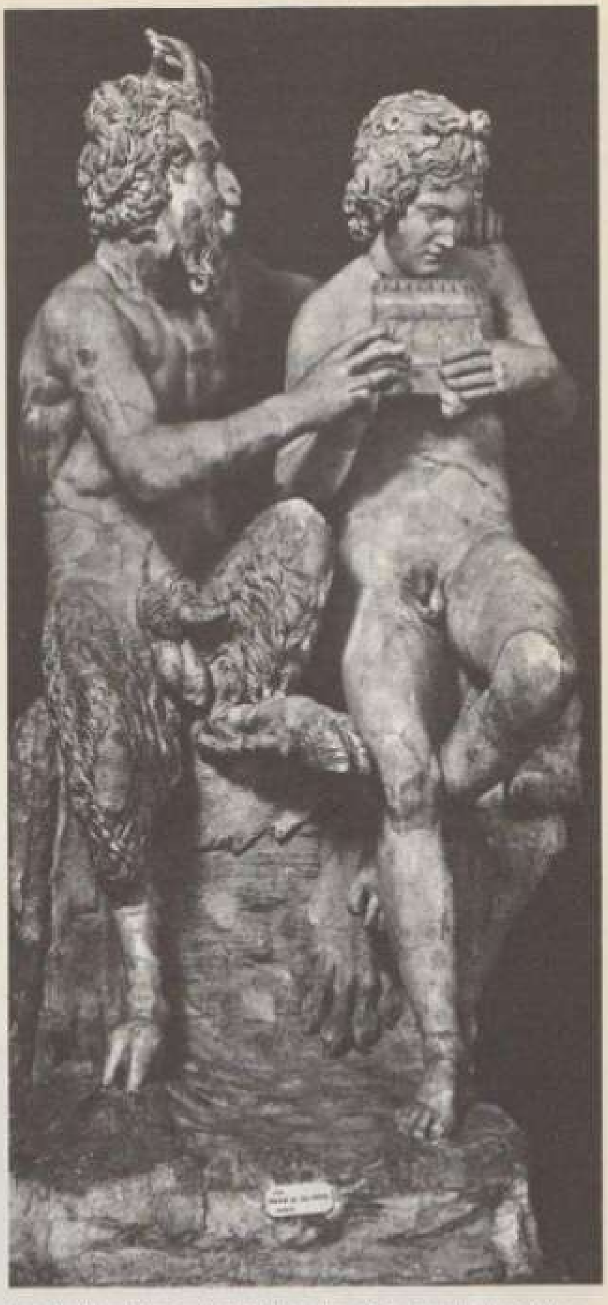

Pan Teaching Olympus to play the syrinx. National Museum, Naples.

Pan Teaching Olympus to Play the Syrinx. From the National Museum of Naples.

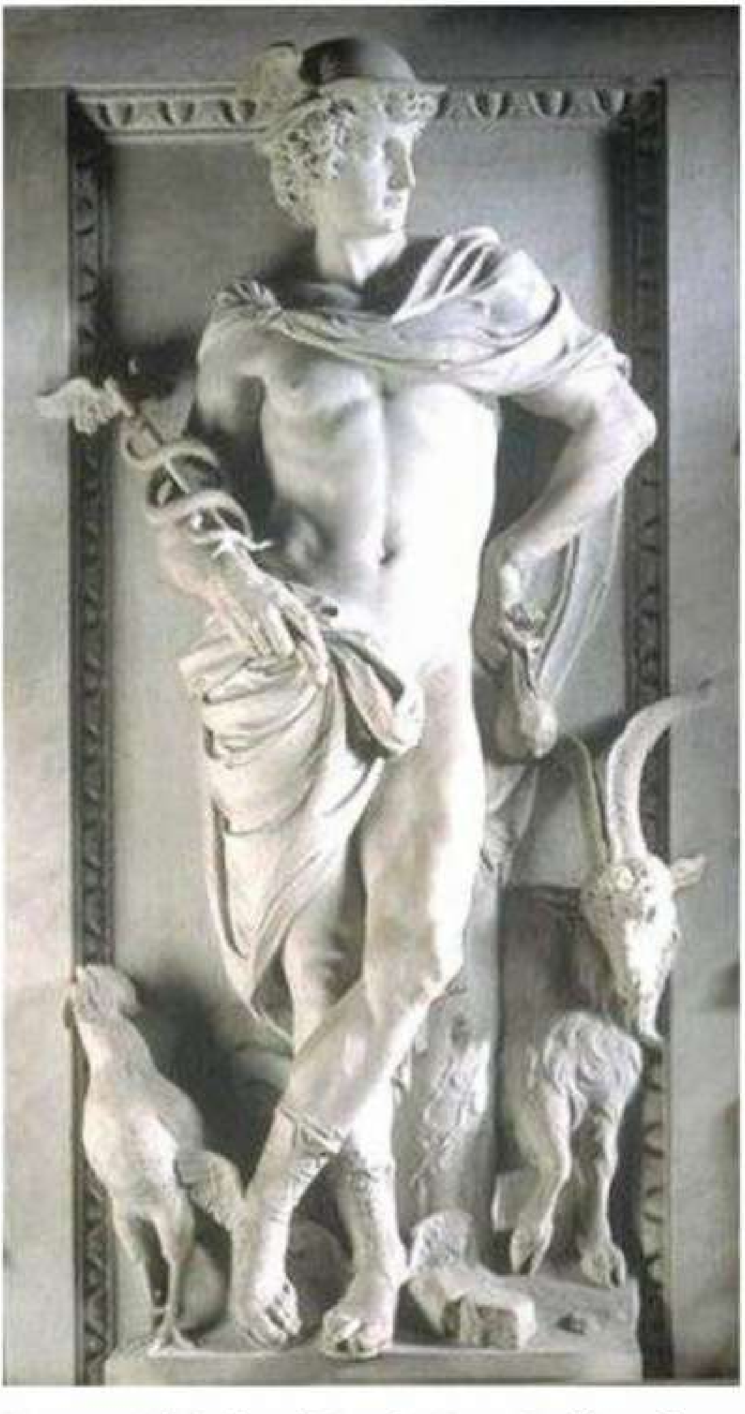

Hermes with Cock and Goat, by Artus Quellinus, from the Royal Palace in Amerstrdam.

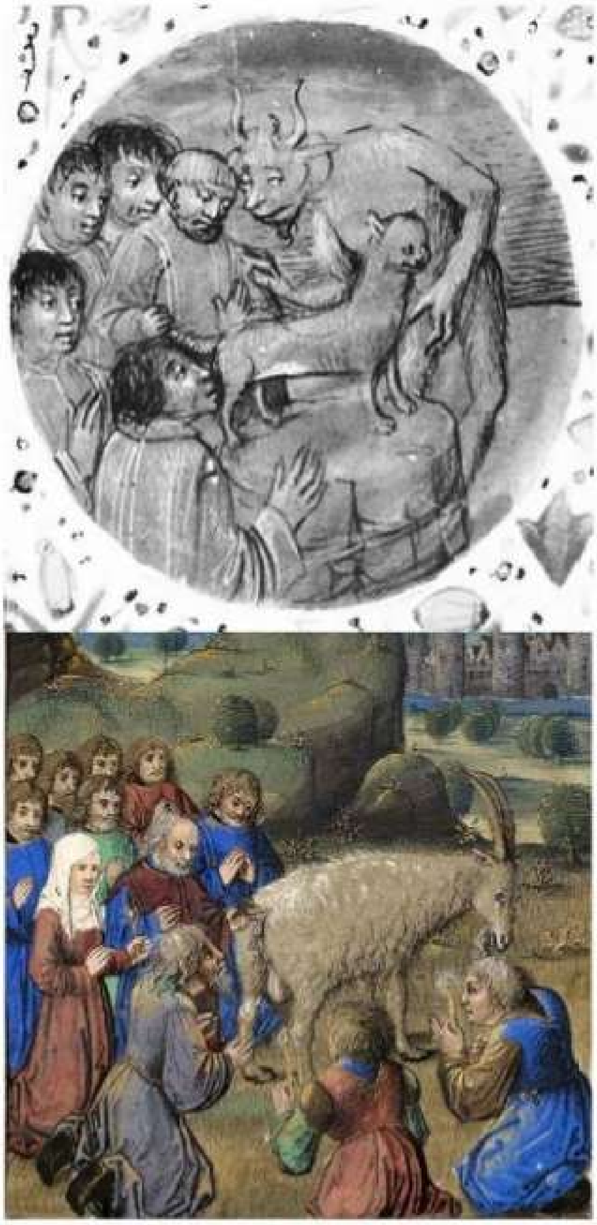

Waldensian heretics performing obscene kisses on beasts, from Jean Tinctor, *Traittié du crisme de vauderie, from Sermo contra sectam vaudensium* (*Sermon Against the Waldensians*), 1465.

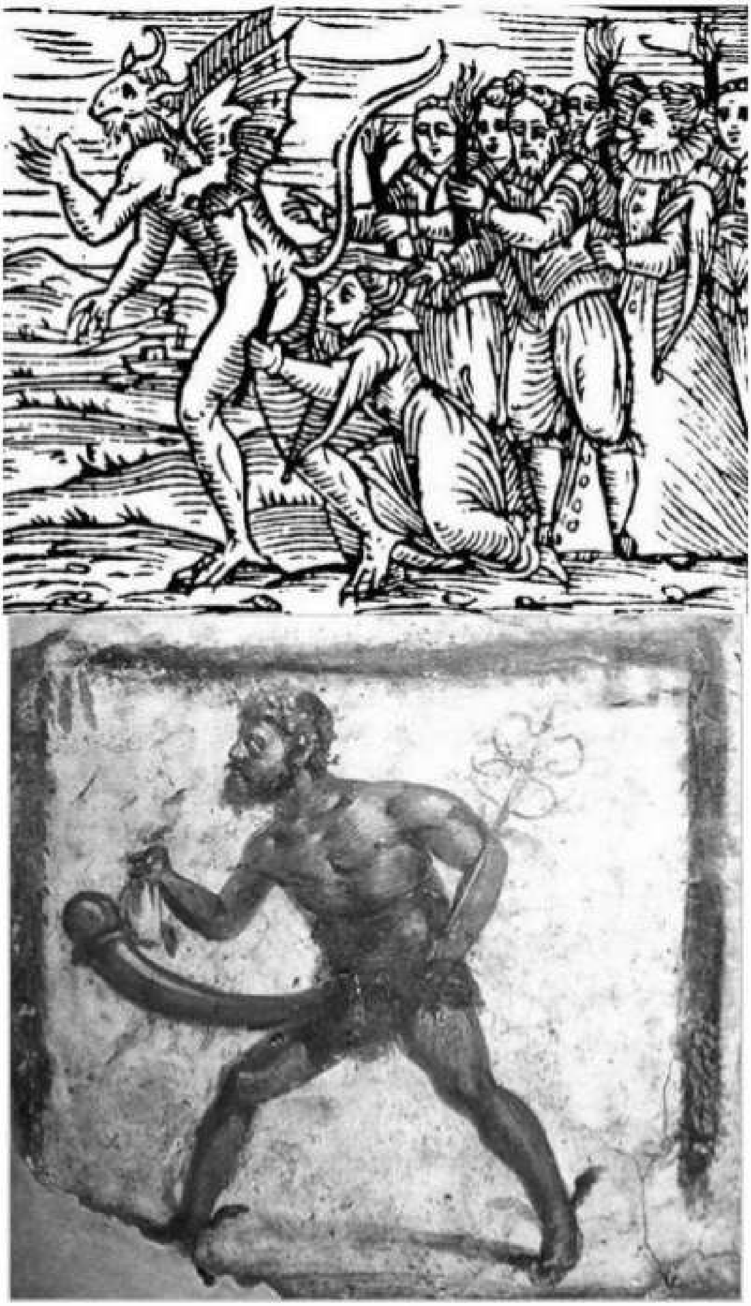

Above: *The Ritual Kiss of the Sabbath*, from *Compendium Maleficarum*, 1608. Below: Priapus with caduceus.

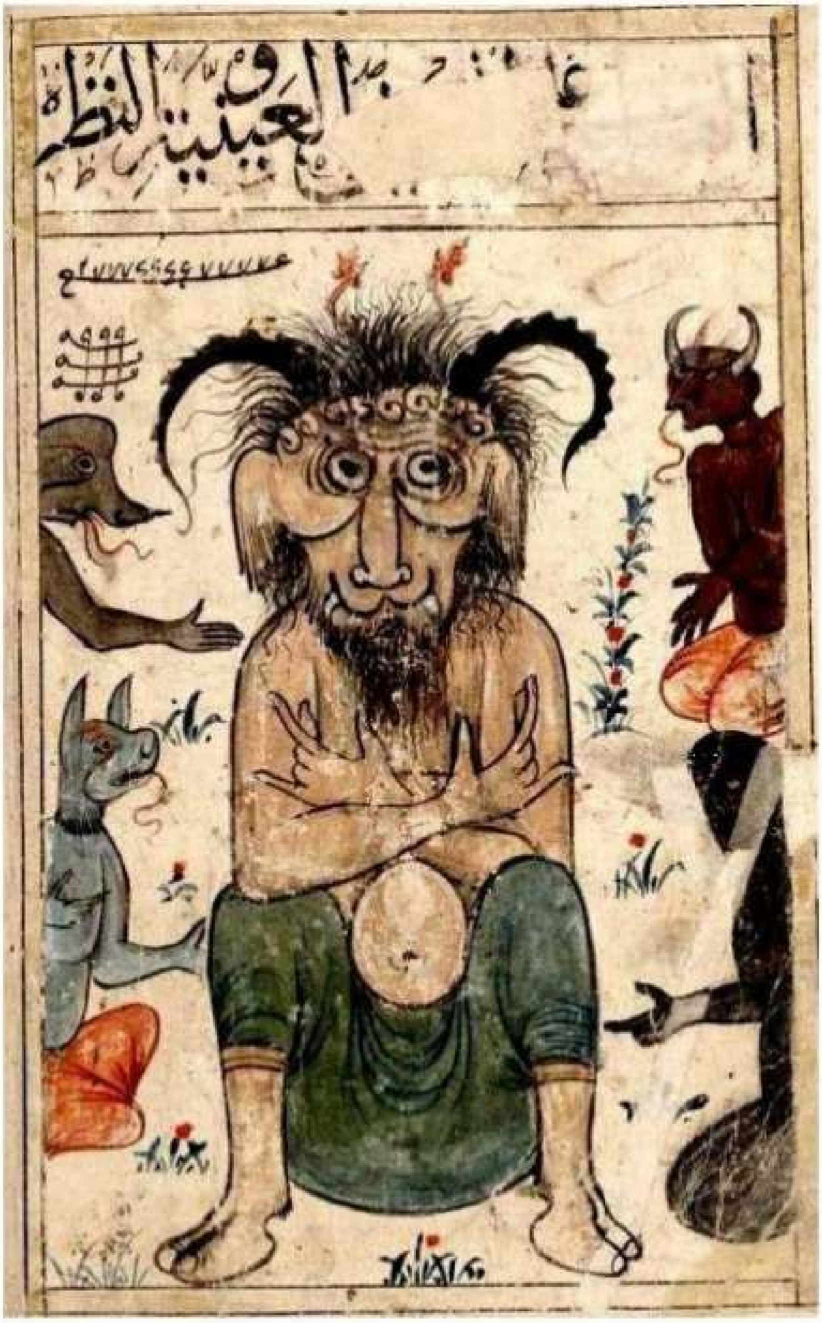

From *Kitab al-Bulhan*, late 14th century. The Devil makes the cornu "goat horn" hand signal now popular with modern Satanists and fans of heavy metal music.

Other gods of the wilderness are usually shown as having a relationship to Dionysus. Silenus was one such figure, a wild man of the woods who is said in some myths to have raised Dionysus, or at least to have been in charge of finding him suitable foster parents. This happened after his mother was killed by the goddess Hera while he was still in utero , and his father Zeus had to carry him in his own testicles until he was ready to be born. Silenus was often portrayed as being part of the procession that would parade down the street during Dionysian festivals, along with satyrs and women with wild hair, their mouths still dripping blood from the brutal sacrifice.

Moving on to the myths of other cultures, the Celtic figure of Cernunnos is interesting for many reasons. He sits cross-legged like Eliphas Levi 's Baphomet. His epithet “Herne the Hunter ” sounds similar to Hermes. He was known as the “Lord of Wild Things. ” His name seems to mean “the Horned One. ” He has been connected by scholars to Mercury. Busts of his head showing two faces, back-to- back like the Roman Janus, have been found.

Cernunnos and Robin Goodfellow have both been connected to the Green Man, a.k.a. “Jack-in-the Green, ” whose foliage-sprouting face can be seen in gardens and greenery throughout Europe and the British Isles. Like the ritual phalli of Priapus, these fertility totems were omnipresent there at one time. They show the face of a man grimacing, seemingly almost under torture, as plants sprout from his face, and even from his nose and mouth. In a sense, it is reminiscent of the Gorgon head on the Aegis. He is frequently shown horned, and seems somewhat similar to the bearded faces of Bacchus or Dionysus that most of us have seen at one time decorating a garden gate. These Green Man masks are purported to ensure favorable circumstances to the crops nearby when given proper homage, just like the herms mentioned previously. The oldest known version has been found in France dated to 400 AD.

This “Green Man ” is probably connected to several others in Celtic folklore. Most notably, the story of the “Green Man of Knowledge ” is quite interesting. In this story, the title character, whose face is described as similar to that of the Green Man totem mask mentioned above, rules over a netherworld called “No Man ’s Land, ” which like the chaos that Lilith sprang from, doesn ’t really exist. He is, as a title implies, as wise man, but he uses his wisdom for ill, to keep the land enchanted under his spell, and rules as a tyrant.

Fascinatingly, there is a figure from Islamic legend that ties in with the Green Man mythos. His name, “Al-Khadir, ” is usually taken to be a misspelling of al-akhdar , and he is known for wearing green clothing. Like Hermes, he is a psychopompus . He shows up suddenly when worthy people need guidance, and imparts wisdom (usually strange wisdom against common logic). He will steer you into unforeseen luck, or away from danger, as he wishes. He is known to appear to pilgrims on the Hajj pilgrimage in Mecca, where he “gives power ” to the holy Black Stone on display in the shrine called the Kaaba. Like Mercury, he can appear and disappear quite suddenly because his movements are very quick. He is said to look like a young man, but with a white beard. He features in many stories having to do with the Fountain of Youth and immortality. He lives at the junction of two rivers.

Al-Khadir is mentioned in The Koran as the “Servant of God ” whom the deity granted divine wisdom to. Al-Khadir then met Moses at the crossing of two rivers, and taught him what he knew. He is also associated with the Prophet Elijah. According to a hadith, the spirit of Mohammed spends the month of Ramadan every year in Jerusalem with those of Al-Khadir and Elijah. Sufis also believe that Al-Khadir is the ruler of the rijalu ’l-gyab (“the men of the unseen ”), a panel of saints and angels who actually make some of the more important decisions regarding the fate of the universe and the things in it. This makes him part of the “Qutb, ” the spiritual pole of the universe that holds everything up properly, and around which everything rotates.

In addition to his connection to the European Green Man, Al-Khadir has been associated with the prophet Elijah, John the Baptist, St. George, Enoch and Metatron. As the personal “Servant of God, ” divine messenger, and patron of prophets, he is similar to the biblical figure of Enoch, who purportedly wrote 366 books based on his experiences traveling through various heavens, as well as the underworld. Enoch has been interpreted by some scholars as being the same personage as Hermes, as we will soon discuss. Enoch ’s body of written work, which includes details of how everything supposedly works, both on Earth and in the many heavens, has been compared to the famed “Emerald Tablet of Hermes, ” which likewise is said to contain the secrets of the universe. Al-Khadir supposedly had a staff that could turn into a snake, bringing to mind the caduceus of Hermes and the alchemical symbol of the crucified serpent (featured, among other places, on the “star jewels ” worn by nineteenth-century members of the “Knights Templar ” degree of York Rite Freemasonry). It is also reminiscent of the incident from Exodus Chapter 7, in which Moses and the Egyptian court magicians all turned their staves into snakes.

Al-Khadir had the secret of immortality, and could resurrect the dead as well. He was often depicted holding a golden goblet that contained the alchemical Elixir of Life, the drink of the immortals. He purportedly went on a mission with Alexander the Great (described as “Dhul-Qarnayn ” —the “Man with Two Horns ”) in search of the Fountain of Youth (which Al-Khadir successfully found, they say). From that point on, according to legend, Al-Khadir had been the guardian of the fountain.

Just as he and Hermes were associated with immortality, Enoch did not die but was translated directly to Heaven, where he became the angel “Metatron. ” This figure was said to be a sidekick to God nicknamed “Little

Jehovah ” by rabbis because only God himself is comparable to him in power. In this way, the myths connect again to Hermes, who was not only the messenger and slave of the gods, but also the force that would perform miraculous transformations during alchemical operations and magical ceremonies. It also, in a way, confirms Plato ’s speculation that Thoth —equivalent to Hermes and thus to Enoch — was a deified human, although the deification is being said here to have been a supernatural act rather than, as Plato thought, a process of history.

Returning to Al-Khadir, we note that, as a patron of writers, poets and speakers, he is also in that respect like Mercury, Thoth, and Hermes, as well as other gods of writing, poetry, rhetoric and prophecy from other cultures. These include the Babylonian Nebo, father of the Nabatean race. The related word nabu still means “prophet ” in Arabic. It is at the root of the name of Nebaioth, the first-born son of Ishmael, progenitor of the Arabs and ancestor of Mohammed. Nebo ’s special fetish item was the stylus.

To ancient man, writing and speaking were powerful creative acts. Language was considered magical and of divine origin. The Jews thought that God had created the world through pronouncement. This is the concept of the Logos, the Divine Word. As The Gospel of John (KJV) states at its opening:

In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.

This is why a divine messenger and teacher who can instruct in the holy arts of writing —incantations, law, poetry, mathematics, and all manner of recorded wisdom —is himself likened to a creator God, a “little Jehovah. ”

To the list of wisdom initiator figures we have to add the Babylonian figure of Oannes. The account of third century BC Babylonian writer Berossus on this topic (who himself actually purported to quote the writings of this “Oannes ”) was paraphrased first century BC Greek scholar Alexander Polyhistor, as quoted by Cory's Ancient Fragments from 1876:

At Babylon there was (in these times) a great resort of people of various nations, who inhabited Chaldea, and lived in a lawless manner like the beasts of the field.

In the first year there appeared, from that part of the Erythaean sea which borders upon Babylonia, an animal endowed with reason, by name Oannes, whose whole body (according to the account of Apollodorus) was that of a fish; that under the fish ’s head he had another head, with feet also below similar to those of a man, subjoined to the fish ’s tail. His voice, too, and language were articulate and human; and a representation of him is preserved even to this day.

This being was accustomed to pass the day among men, but took no food at that season; and he gave them an insight into letters and sciences, and arts of every kind. He taught them to construct cities, to found temples, to compile laws, and explained to them the principles of geometrical knowledge. He made them distinguish the seeds of the earth, and showed them how to collect the fruits; in short, he instructed them in every thing which could tend to soften manners and humanize their lives. From that time, nothing material has been added by way of improvement to his instructions. And when the sun had set this being Oannes retired again into the sea, and passed the night in the deep, for he was amphibious... .

Images of this figure are abundant. They very much look like a person has cut open a large fish from tail to snout and then placed it on his head as a cap, with the body and tail of the fish then draped down his back like a cape. If that ’s how Oannes rolled, it must have been smelly indeed. Or maybe he really was a composite creature, as described, an animal endowed with reason and a human voice, a human face underneath his fish head, and feet beside his fish tail.

A similar mythological figure is the Mesopotamian Adapa, who also brought essential wisdom to mankind from the gods in Heaven. He too was depicted with a fish tail, but he also had goat horns on his head! Thus he is probably historically connected to the image of the constellation of Capricorn, which the Greeks portrayed as a goat-fish. Adapa was the son of Ea (a.k.a. “Enki, ” equivalent of the Philistine “Dagon ”), the god of cunning wisdom and “Lord of the Flood. ” He lived in a house called the “Apsu ” underground which was the source of the Tigris and Euphrates rivers. Like Enoch, Adapa was offered the food of the immortals while visiting Heaven, which would have made him immortal as well. However, he did not seem to realize this, as he had been warned by Enki not to eat anything while in Heaven, or he would die, so he passed on the opportunity.

This fish-god Ea was also said to have warned Uta-Napishtim, the hero of the Mesopotamian version of the Deluge story, about the catastrophe that was coming, and instructed him on how to build an ark to survive it. He was granted immortality, and lived at the mouth of two of the rivers of Paradise. Similarly, Hindu legend tells us that the god Vishnu (who in his incarnation as Matsya is depicted as a man with a fish-tail from the waist down) took the form of a giant fish and warned their Flood hero, Manu, about the Deluge. He told him how to build an ark, which Manu then attached to the fish 's horn so that he could be towed safely to the place of landing.

In The Natsarene and Hidden Gnosis , Rene Salm writes about the Gnostic symbolism of the flood myth as well as Ea/Enki:

In the flood story, secret knowledge protects the wise person against that which destroys the entire world. The flood was a divine judgment upon all mankind, one which came suddenly. But god gave Noah secret knowledge in advance: to build an ark. The ark itself represents and symbolizes the secret saving knowledge of god. After all, it was the ark that saved Noah. Thus it is no surprise that in the Akkadian flood story the boat is named Natsirat Napishtim, “Preserver of Life, ” a phrase employing the root n-ts-r. It should also not surprise us that netseru in Akkadian means “secret knowledge, ” particularly that received from the moon god Ea/Enki.

Al-Khadir is also associated with fish. He is often shown in illustrations actually riding on the back of a very large fish. One of the miracles he is said to have performed was making a fish that was dead and already salted come back to life and jump into the river.

Another figure whom Al-Khadir is believed to be connected to is an Ugaritic god named Kothar-wa-Khasis, the bringer of “Hasisu, ” a special kind of wisdom. He was believed to have taught mankind writing, agriculture, and metal- working. He was also called a “servant ” or “slave ” of the god El, the etymological root of the Hebrew “Elohim ” and the Arabic “Allah. ” So like Enoch-Metatron, he was second-in-command to the supreme creator God himself.

Also, like St. George (another form of the Green Man), Kothar famously slew a dragon. All stories of slaying a dragon are, perhaps, symbolic of the same thing as a crucified serpent in alchemy. It represents releasing the power of the prima materia , the original, undifferentiated chaos-matter of the universe. Serpents or dragons are seen as emblems of that chaos, like Samael and Lilith or the Leviathans are to the Cabalists. Stories of slaying a dragon to create a universe go back to ancient Sumer and the story of the dragoness Tiamat. The crucifying of a serpent for magical rituals is described in the ancient Book of Nabathean Agriculture .

The same role played by Al-Khadir in Arabic legend is played in a universal way in the Hermetic figure of the trickster-initiator Hermes, the fullest example of the archetype discussed in this chapter. When a character based on this archetype shows up in stories, both ancient and modern, he is often an agent sent by a hidden hierarchy to lure the protagonist down the path to his fate. He uses deceit to convince the hero of the tale to embark upon an adventure. He is often shown as playful and childish, enjoying his knavish pranks.

Although the earliest depictions of Hermes show him as old and wise with a beard, later renderings presented him as a youth, befitting his reputation. The word “capricious ” means “wily, ” and comes from the Latin word for “goat. ” As we mentioned before, the Greeks sometimes showed Hermes as having partial goat features, especially in the early days, and he was frequently shown with a goat by his side, or being carried over his shoulders.

The satyr-like figure of Puck/Robin Goodfellow was certainly capricious, as were spin-off characters Peter Pan and Robin Hood. The theme of thievery, one of Hermes ’ areas of specialty, comes up quite often, as these stories often have the Hermes/Pan/Puck figure as a bandit. He was usually portrayed as having wings on his sandals and his hat, implying his swift-footed and slippery nature. He was always very sneaky, subtle, and hard to pin down, “the shrewdest and most cunning ” of the gods, as Edith Hamilton wrote. This made him a natural master thief.

However, like Robin Hood, he would usually use his ill-gotten gain to help out an underdog, or he would sacrifice it to the gods, as he did with some of the cattle he stole from Apollo. This is why he is the patron of thieves as well as businessmen, because one of his first acts upon exiting the womb was to steal Apollo ’s cattle. When Hermes is caught, he proposes a deal with Apollo to keep the cattle in exchange for the lyre, a musical instrument he had just invented. One of his sons was Autolycus, literally called “the Prince of Thieves ” (long before the Robin Hood movie). An ancient hymn to Hermes describes him as:

… of many shifts (polytropos), blandly cunning, a robber, a cattle driver, a bringer of dreams, a watcher by night, a captain of raiders, a thief at the gates… .

Though he ’s sneaky and a bit dangerous, “Hermes Dolios ” (“Tricky Hermes ”) is a necessary guide to realms beyond. He is the god of transitions, so just as in alchemy he is the bond which united unlikely pairs, in myth he builds bridges and opens portals between realms that are normally completely separated (such as Earth, Olympus, and the Underworld). In addition to the aforementioned title of “Psychopompus, ” his related epithets included “Oneiropompus ” (“conductor of dreams, ” as he guided the soul through its nighttime adventures); “Hodios ” (“patron of travelers ”); and “Poimandres ” (“shepherd of men ”). He was also called “Hermes of the Ways, ” “Proopylaios ” (“guardian of the gate ”), “Pylaios ” (“doorkeeper ”), “Strophaios ” (“standing at the door post ”) and “Stropheus ” (“the socket in which the pivot of the door moves ”), and was said to be “standing there at the crossroads. ” He was both a guardian of the borders (just as the herms and statues of Silenus were used to mark property boundaries in ancient times), and he was the key to open the gates between them.

One interpretation of the etymology of his name is that it comes from hermai (“boundary marker ”). Likewise, his Roman name of Mercury might be related to the Proto-Indo-European merg (the root of the English “mark ”). The other possible root for Hermes commonly given is ermeneus (“interpreter ”), referring to his skills at speech and communication. He was the “Diactoros ” or “Angelos ” (“the messenger ”) and the “Logios ” (“Speaker ”).

However, these things are not mutually exclusive, in our opinion, for as we know from reading motivational posters in corporate offices, “communication is the key. ” The most common interpretation of Mercury ’s name is that it is related to merx (“merchandise ”), referring to his role as a tradesman, and maker of business deals as the master of persuasion. Also, written “marks ” of words and numbers are vital in business, as is “communication, ” a word directly related to “commerce ”: the trafficking of goods and money. It ’s all about moving energy, words, and physical objects back and forth, between people and places, which it is the job of Hermes to facilitate.

Thus he was called “Agoraeus ” (“of the market ”) and “Empolaios ”

(“engaged in traffic and commerce ”). One of his fetish items was the purse, which served him as both a money pouch and a messenger bag or briefcase. He was also considered the benefactor responsible for arranging the receipt of unexpected boons such as gambling jackpots, inheritances, and other freaky fortunes, the “bringer of good luck ” and “Ploutodotes ” (“bringer of wealth ”). All of this explains why images of him were often placed inside of people ’s money coffers and purses, as the Knights Templar did with images of Baphomet.

However, his most important piece of equipment was his snake-wrapped magic wand, the caduceus, identifying him as the chief of sorcerers and alchemists. With it he could open up a portal to the underworld and reanimate a dead body by reuniting it with its soul. He could pretty much do anything else as well. The wand was actually called the “Porta ” in some cases. It was originally a stick with a figure 8 or infinity sign on top. Later the snakes were placed on the stick and arranged in the same configuration.

This image of the caduceus (the wand with dual serpents) seems connected to the story of Tiresias. According to Hyginus (a Latin author from around the time of Christ known for compiling Greek myths in his Hygini Fabulae), Tiresias was a prophet of Apollo in the court of Cadmus in Thebes. He was blind. One day when he was walking on Mount Cyllene in the Peloponnese, he came across a pair of snakes having sex. He disrespectfully hit them with his staff. This angered Hera, who punished him by turning him into a woman. Seven years later, the female Tiresias came upon snakes having sex once again.

This time, she trampled them, which resulted in her being turned back into a man.

Several interesting associations come up in regard to the story of Tiresias. For one thing, the idea of a staff acting as an instrument of coitus interruptus , preventing the two snakes from mating, brings to mind the story of the demons Lilith and Samael, once a hermaphroditic being, now separated and segregated by God himself to prevent their unholy union. For another thing, Hyginus also brings up a similar story about Hermes. He said that while the god was traveling through Arcadia, he saw two snakes fighting, and used his staff to split them apart. He then prophesied that his staff would be used to bring peace from that moment forward.

Another important detail that comes to mind is the fact that the very word “hermaphrodite ” comes from the name of the child that Hermes purportedly had with the goddess Aphrodite. Ovid wrote that their son was united permanently with the nymph Salmacis at her prayerful request, as she was in love with the boy and never wanted to part from him. From that point on, Hermaphroditus became a patron of marriage, as well as that of a certain sex cult operating in Cyprus in the seventh century BC (according to Yulia Ustinova ’s The Supreme Gods of the Bosporan Kingdom).

Edith Hamilton, in her collection of Greek myths published in 1940

(Mythology: Timeless Tales of Gods and Heroes), says of Hermes that “He appears oftener in the tales of mythology than any other god. ” This makes sense if you consider the fact that Hermes was the messenger and patron of writing, used by the gods on Olympus to bring messages to people on Earth. He was also the author of all wisdom, including poetry, philosophy, science and history. He would have thus been invoked to bring inspiration from the divine realm by anyone authoring a chronicle, a collection of myths, an epic poem, or a play. As the messenger, it is not hard to believe that he would have told the tale to those writing it down in such a way as to make him appear as the central figure.

Hermes was seen very much as a teacher and a mentor to those who invoked him. As such he was the grand “initiator, ” particularly of boys turning into young men. According to David Brooks Dodd ’s Initiation in Ancient Greek Rituals and Narratives , this is also related to Hermes ’ role as the lord of boundary crossings (such as passing from one age group or grade to the next, as well as his being traditionally called as a divine witness during the taking of oaths. He was invoked during initiation rites for young soldiers and hunters as well as for athletic youth training groups connected to the gymnasium, of which he was the patron. His feast time, called the “Hermaea, ” which started being celebrated at least as far back as the fourth-to-sixth century BC, was restricted to young boys only and involved athletic games. So it seems that Hermes was the original youth counselor and coach to pubescent males growing up in classical times.

These of course were the sort of initiation rites that most male citizens would have gone through. However, Hermes was also the patron of other, more arcane initiations. As Marie-Luise von Franz wrote in Projection and Re-Collection in Jungian Psychology , an astrological document from the third century BC, written for King Nechopso by a priest named Petosiris, states that Hermes is the teacher of secret wisdom, which:

> … can be experienced only in a state of ecstasy. This wisdom appears to the prophet as a ‘voice ’ wrapped in a dark garment. As the follower prays, this voice points out to him the paths of the celestial bodies in the universe and reveals to him the wisdom of the cosmos.

This of course makes sense when you consider that, as the guardian of boundaries, one of Hermes ’ duties was to guide dead souls to the underworld, and those of the sleeping to the land of dreams. This earned him the epithet psychopompus : the one who guides the psyche. It follows, then, that the spirit of Hermes would also guide souls reaching for enlightenment from the realms beyond.

As it came to pass, that is what Hermes is currently most well-known for. But rather than being remembered as merely a nebulous spirit, Hermes came to be regarded as a flesh-and-blood person who ruled as a king and brought civilization to the rude masses over which he ruled. In this guise, he became known as Hermes Trismegistus: the “Thrice-Greatest. ” Alchemists claimed him as their patron, using the Caduceus as their symbol. Fittingly, the substance most quintessential to the transformation of elements in alchemy is mercury (a.k.a. “quicksilver ”), named after the Roman name for this fleet-footed god with winged sandals. But how these associations came about is a story in itself.

Chapter 4: The Three Hermeses

The vice of ignorance floods the whole earth and utterly destroys the soul shut up in the body, preventing it from anchoring in the havens of deliverance. Surely you will not sink into this great flood? Those of you who can will take the ebb and gain the haven of deliverance and anchor there. Then, seek a guide to take you by the hand and lead you to the portals of knowledge.

—Hermes Trismegistus, Corpus Hermeticum VII

In Egypt, the god in the pantheon who most resembled the Greek Hermes and the Roman Mercury was Thoth. He was the inventor of the stylus, as well as all alphabets and other forms of writing. He was also the patron and initiator of priests into the closely-connected craft of magic. As such, under the Ptolemaic dynasty (the last royal family of ancient Egypt, who ruled from 305 to 30 BC, during the Hellenistic period), Hermes and Thoth became combined into the hyphenated entity of “Thoth-Hermes. ” Then the legend grew from there. As Garth Fowden writes in The Egyptian Hermes, The Greek Magical Papyri came to “present the new syncretistic Hermes as a cosmic power, creator of heaven and earth and almighty world-ruler. ”

Sometime between then and the second or third century AD (during which time, Egypt went from being in the Greek Hellenic empire into the hands of the Romans), certain works published in Egypt began to be attributed to Hermes as a prophet . This continued throughout the next four centuries as well, as the Roman Empire gave way to Byzantium and everyone began to (ostensibly) convert to Christianity (until vanquished by Islamic armies in 642). During this time of religious and philosophical “syncretism, ” as it has come to be called (influenced by the diverse intellectual milieu of Alexandria), mystic forms of Christianity, Judaism and paganism, along with Persian cults, mixed with the doctrines of classical Greek Philosophers like Plato, Aristotle, and even Pythagoras. Plato had already questioned whether or not

Thoth was a deified human rather than an immortal god. Now Hermes came to be thought of as one of the philosophers, in the same camp as the aforementioned, and yet more than that as well.

Already there were a few works written about or attributed to Hermes that are now considered part of the broad category of “Hermetica. ” These include fragments (assembled about 500 AD) that were published in John of Stobi ’s Anthologium and three Coptic texts that were part of the Nag Hammadi library discovered in 1945 in Egypt. There were also several magical, astrological, and alchemical texts from this time, attributed to Hermes (such as Liber Hermetis, The Picatrix, and The Emerald Tablets).

The Picatrix (actually titled Ghayat al-Hakim , or Goal of the Wise) was an Arabic work that talked about the concept of a “Hermetic Man ”: one who, through training and practice in controlling the powers of the planets and stars, could become “the magus, the sage, the master of Heaven and Earth. ” This was possible, it posited, due to the notion that man contained within his own body a microcosm of the universe. Thus through the manipulation of his own mind and body he would purportedly effect the outer world correspondingly, via what anthropologist James Frazer has called “sympathetic magic. ” The name notion was inherent in the alchemical formula cryptically laid out in the Emerald Tablet , which described a process for uniting the powers of the reflective “above ” and “below ” realms of man and macrocosm. “As above, so below ” has become the most quoted maxim from this text.

However, it was only later that the full figure emerged of the philosopher- king “Hermes Trismegistus ” —the latter term generally interpreted to mean “thrice-greatest, ” or “triplicate in wisdom ” when it was written in Arabic (al- mutallat bi-l-hikma). According to Kevin van Bladel, the title is thought to be derived from an older Egyptian epithet of Thoth as the “greatest and greatest great god. ” References to Trismegistus can be traced back to the earliest known texts of Christian philosophy from the second and third centuries.

These were mostly written either by Christian authors seeking antecedents for their new world-view with the wisdom of ancient “pagan philosophers ” (like Plato and Aristotle), or else arguing against and distinguishing Christian thought from these older systems. Christian theologian Tertullian, writing during this time, called Hermes “the master of all natural philosophers. ” Just at the start of the fourth century, Arnobius, another Christian author, argued against the pagan philosophies of “Mercurius ” (the Latin name for Hermes), among others. In the seventh century, Jacob of Edessa ’s Hexameron proclaimed that Hermes ’ philosophy was compatible with Christianity. As Kevin van Bladel writes: “… Hermes was considered a bearer of a primordial philosophy more ancient and closer to God than that of Plato. ”

However, when most writers talk about the “Hermetica ” today, they are usually referring more specifically to a collection of philosophical dialogues between Hermes the philosopher-king and his disciples, most notably “Asclepius ” (named after the Greek god of medicine), “King Ammon, ” and Hermes ’ “son, ” named “Tat. ” (Whether there is any connection between the names “Tat ” and “Thoth ” is unknown.) These writings were obtained as part of a collection of Greek texts by a monk named Leonardo in 1460. They were brought to patron of the Renaissance Cosimo de Medici and translated by Marsilio Ficino, then published in Latin in 1471.

The Corpus Hermeticum was thought at this time to represent a “primordial philosophy ” from before the Flood, or at least from Moses ’ time. In 1614, Isaac Casaubon proved they were derived from the early Christian era, but by that time the Latin version had already gone through twenty-five editions, with a considerable amount of influence on the philosophy of the day. Garth Fowden summarized the view of the universe purported in the Corpus in his book The

Egyptian Hermes as:

God is one … the sun, which is the demiurge around which revolve the eight spheres of the fixed stars, the planets and the earth. From these spheres depend the daemons, and from the daemons Man… .

Let us now shift our focus from the Greek Hermetica that was translated into Latin at the time of the Renaissance to the considerable number of Hermetic texts (that is, material written about and/or attributed to Hermes) in the Arabic language. Some of these were translated from the Greek originals, but many of them came as texts written in Middle Persian. Only recently has any of this material been properly catalogued and analyzed, such as the mammoth work done on the subject by Kevin van Bladel in his book The Arabic Hermes: From Pagan Sage to Prophet of Science. (Most of the Arabic material, as the author points out, has yet to be studied at all by modern scholars). These works had a hand in the transformation and magnification of the image of Hermes Trismegistus that eventually emerged from the evolutionary process of history. As Van Bladel states:

Hermes is cited as an ancient authority already in the eighth century in some of the earliest known Arabic scientific works, the writings of Iranian court astrologers of the Abbasids. In the ninth century, Hermes came to be considered in Arabic literature as not just an ancient scientific authority, but an antediluvian prophet whose revelation formed the very beginnings of science. His works were therefore thought to have been transmitted from the extremely distant past… . The European concept of Hermes Trismegistus as a very ancient sage was derived from Arabic tradition as well as from the Church Fathers.

But well before that, during the start of the Sassanid dynasty (the last pre- Islamic Iranian/Persian empire, which ruled from 224-651 AD), a translation of ancient Iranian writings was commenced that included works supposedly written by “Hermes the Babylonian, who had been king over Egypt. ”

This perhaps accords with the references made in the first century AD text Carmen Astrologicum by Dorotheus (originally written in Greek, then translated into Middle Persian before ultimately surviving only in Arabic), which mentions both “Hermes Trismegistus, King of Egypt, ” and a “Babylonian Hermes. ” At that time, the territory known as “Babylon ” was part of the Persian Empire.

It would seem that the Persians had their own tradition of Hermes, which was influenced by the original Greek Hermetica, but which was also uniquely added to by them. It formed part of the basis for the traditions later proliferated in Arabic-language works. As Van Bladel put it:

What is certain is that the earliest appearance of Hermes in Arabic, in the eighth century, is from the Middle Persian tradition, not the Greek.

These traditions include the ones reflected in the Kitab an-Nhmt ’n , translated into Arabic by Ibn Nawbaht. This text tells a story where a panel of twelve scholars corresponding to the houses of the zodiac is appointed by a tyrannical king to help govern the people from a group of twelve citadels situated in Iraq. When eventually their rule was rejected by the people, the sages scattered, and found new lands to rule over. One of these sages was Hermes. As it states:

He was among them one of the most perfect in intellect, most accurate in knowledge, and most subtle in investigation. He went down to the land of Egypt and ruled its people as king, civilized it, improved the conditions of its inhabitants, and revealed his knowledge there.

Indeed, the legend of Hermes was well-known in Iraq during Sasanian times. A magical amulet found in Nippur and dated from this time is dedicated to “Hermes, Lord of the Universe. ”

When most scholars think of Arabic and Hermetics, they think of Harran, a city once in Upper Mesopotamia, the remains of which are now in Turkey. This is because, as Van Bladel put it, “they are the only special group credited with possessing works attributed to Hermes and transmitting them into Arabic. ” The Abbasid caliph Al-Ma ‘Mun (from 813-833), demanded that the inhabitants of the city either claim themselves as one of the “People of the Book ” or convert to Islam. Non-Islamic “People of the Book ” included all Torah-based Abrahamic religions (such as Christianity and Judaism), as well as a group mysteriously referred to in the Koran as the “Sabians. ” It is implied that the latter group might not be strictly monotheists, but are still close enough in their beliefs to be part of the family. Instead of being forced to submit to conversion, People of the Book simply submitted to a social status called “dhimmitude, ” which involved paying a special tax. Other terms sometimes applied in Islamic Arabic texts to the “Sabians ” mentioned in The Koran are “Magi ” and “Hanifa. ” Seemingly in order to avoid religious persecution, the people of Harran were declared “Sabians ” and were spared.

So what exactly was the religion of the Harranians? This is a problem that Van Bladel decided to take up for himself, as, shortly after this Sabian declaration, the Harranians also began to proclaim that the prophet of their religion was none other than Hermes. This claim has been taken at face value, so that through the years, much has been written about the role of the Harranians in the spread of Hermeticism. Van Bladel has taken a critical view of this, and so has taken pains to show exactly what association if any the Harranians actually had with Hermes, and how these “Hermetic ” traditions clashed with what is considered today “Hermetic ” doctrine.

Author Michel Tardieu has written that from the sixth to tenth centuries, a Platonic academy was there, founded by Hellenic philosophers and then later maintained by Harranian Sabians. Scholar Jan Hjarpe also says that later a group of Harranian Neoplatonists moved to Baghdad. They were headed by Tabit ibn Qurra, an astronomer and translator attached to the court of Abbasid Caliph al- Mu ’tadid. He translated many Greek scientific and philosophical works into Arabic. Hjarpe has suggested that what is thought of as the “Hermetic doctrines of the pagan Sabians of Harran ” were actually the beliefs of this one family and their followers. Writer Isetraut Hadot purported that by this time, the Harranian form of “Platonism ” had become one and the same with “Hermeticism. ” John Walbridge, in an article from 1998 in The Journal of the History of Ideas entitled “Explaining Away the Greek Gods in Islam, ” wrote: “It seems that the ancient moon cult of Harran had evolved into a Hermetic sect that worshipped the planets… . ”

The notion that the Harranians worshipped the heavenly bodies is echoed repeatedly by many writers. Theodore Abu Qurrah, an Orthodox Christian Bishop living in Harran in the ninth century, stated:

They claim that they worship the seven planets —the sun, the moon, Saturn, Mars, Jupiter, Mercury, Venus—and the twelve zodiacal houses, because they are the ones that create and govern this creation and give good fortune and prosperity in the lower world, and ill fortune and suffering. They said that their prophet in that is Hermes the Sage.

In more modern times, HE Stapleton, GL Lewis, and F. Sherwood Taylor, in their 1949 work The Sayings of Hermes Quoted in the Ma' Al-waraqi of Ibn Umail , said: “The influence of the star-worshipping Sabaeans of Harran, to whom Thoth- Hermes was the god of all civilizing inventions, was widespread in the Islamic world. ”

Another popular idea is that the Harranians were responsible for “disseminating ” Hermeticism around the global Muslim ummah (community). Seyyed Hossein Nasr, writing in 1967 ’s Hermes and Hermetic Writings in the Islamic World , had the Harranians in mind when he said: “ ‘Hermeticism was propagated by the Sabaeans who made known to the Islamic world the writings that were attributed to Hermes. ” The 1968 book The Thousands of Abu Ma ‘shar by David Pingree tells us that the aforementioned account of the Babylonian Hermes from Ibn Nawbaht was influenced by “Harranians, ” and that the Harranians held Hermes, along with his colleague teacher, “Agathodaemon, ” as their “prophets. ”

Even Sir Walter Scott, in his English translation and commentary on The Corpus Hermeticum , wrote of his belief that the text of the Corpus had appeared suddenly in Constantinople after 1000 years in obscurity just after the “Sabians ” (i.e., the Harranian immigrants practicing paganism) had left Baghdad under Muslim persecution. As he put it:

Is there not something more than chance in this? It may be that one of the

Sabians of Bagdad, finding that his position under Moslem rule was becoming unendurable, migrated to Constantinople, and brought in his baggage a bundle of Greek Hermetica — and that our Corpus is that bundle… . The Pagans of Harran almost certainly possessed the whole collection of Hermetica (including many documents that are not now extant) in Greek, at the time when they adopted these writings as their Scriptures, in AD 830… .

Moreover, if we choose to indulge in further conjectures, there is nothing to prevent us from supposing that it was the arrival in Constantinople of a few such Sabian Neoplatonists from Baghdad, and the writings brought with them, that first started the revival of Platonic study.

The image of the Sabians of and from Harran that has been presented for historians to document indicates that they indulged in rituals to stellar and planetary bodies (which would seem, ostensibly, pagan), and held Hermes to be their prophet (who is spoken of as a wise sage and historical king figure but still has everything in common with the old Greek pagan deity as well). Yet they are still somehow monotheists and “People of the Book ” acceptable to Muslim society. The way that Al-Mubassir ibn Tatik ’s Kitab Muhtar al-hikam (written in Fatamid Egypt) described the religion taught by Hermes certainly sounds compatible with this. As Van Bladel tells us:

It included feasts at astrological conjunctions and at the sun ’s entry into a new zodiacal sign, as well as sacrificial offerings to the planets at the appropriate times. Hermes is also said to have commanded them ‘to perform prayers that he stated for them in ways that he described. ’ On the other hand, the religious laws of Hermes given here bear close resemblance to Islamic law: they require ritual purity, abstinence from intoxication, gihad against the enemies of the religion, … and prescribe most of the punishments called hadd punishments in Islamic law. All this leads me to conclude that the “religion of Hermes ” described here was developed and described well after the establishment of Islam and Islamic law.

Van Bladel implies that perhaps the entire misfitted conglomeration of Islam, Platonism, and star-worshipping, as well as the claiming of Hermes as a religious prophet, was concocted (originally, perhaps, by Tabit ibn Qurra, his family, and their followers) to make the Harranians ’ religious practices seem acceptable to their Islamic rulers. However, one very interesting detail put forward by the Kitab Muhtar al-hikam is the suggestion that the name “Sabian ” comes from “Sab, ” one of the nicknames or epithets of Hermes ’ son, Tat, to whom many of the Hermetic discourses are addressed. This notion is echoed by Al-Masudi (tenth century historian), by Al-Mubassir (eleventh century), and by Ibn Abi Usaybia (twelfth century scholar).

The question of whether the prophet Hermes should be considered identical to the deity on the Greek pantheon, or to the Egyptian god Thoth whose name was compounded with his, seems to be a matter on which none of the authors agree. Kevin van Bladel, whilst making a distinction between the two concepts (Hermes the God and Hermes the Prophet), nonetheless acknowledges that over time one became the other in the public mind, and in the opposite order than one would expect. Normally, historians write about the “deification ” of a historical figure through myth-morphing, or a leader being worshipped like a god by his people, not the other way around. But we could imagine that when Ibn Nawbaht wrote in the Kitab an-Nhmt ’n of Hermes being one of twelve ancient ruling sages, corresponding to the twelve houses of the Zodiac, he might have been tapping into some underlying truth behind the myths of the twelve Olympic gods.

The questions becomes further complicated when we realize that in several Hermetic works, we are told that there was not just one Hermes, but three, each born to Earth at a different time in history. Generally, it breaks down to there being one who came before the Flood, one after the Flood, and one who was born in Egypt much later. Of course, there are numerous variations on this theme.

One important source is the ninth century Book of the Thousands from Abu Masar, the greatest astrologer in the Abbasid court of Baghdad. The book itself is no longer with us, but we can read about it from other books, such as Ibn Abi Usaybia ’s thirteenth century Kitab Tabaqat al-atibba (The Generations of the Physicians). Here the summary of Abu Masar ’s Hermetic history is as follows:

The Hermeses are three. The first of them is Hermes who was before the Flood. The significance of ‘Hermes ’ is a title, like saying ‘Caesar ’ … . The Persians named him Wiwanghan, meaning ‘the Just, ’ in their biographies of the kings. He is the one to whose philosophy the Harranians adhere. The Persians state that his grandfather was Gayumart, that is Adam. The Hebrews state that he is Enoch, which, in Arabic, is Idris… . He was the first to give advance warning of the Flood, and he thought that a celestial catastrophe of fire or water would overwhelm the earth. His home was Upper Egypt; he chose that [place] and built the pyramids and cities of clay there. He feared that knowledge would pass away in the Flood, so he built the monumental temples… .

Several important notions are purported here. The first is that “Hermes ” is just a title, which would solve the god/prophet conundrum as well as the questions of whether or not the “Three Hermeses ” are all incarnations of the same soul (the interpretation taken by many modern Hermeticists, such as Dennis William Hauck in his book The Emerald Tablet: Alchemy for Personal Transformation). If we can accept that a “Hermes ” is a type of teacher of fundamental scientific wisdom such as that traditionally associated with the god Hermes, then it all makes sense.

The second important idea we find here is that this first Hermes is identical to the biblical figure of Enoch, known as Idris to the Muslims and mentioned by name in The Koran . (Verse 19:56-57: “And mention Idris in the Book. He was true, a prophet. We raised him to a high place. ”) This Hermes-Idris identification is thoroughly accepted through Islamic teachings, as we shall demonstrate, and is in no way controversial. Van Bladel says that the first Arabic- language reference to Hermes being Idris can be traced back to around 840 AD. He reckons it came from the (now lost) chronicles used as source material by the Christian historians Oanodorus and Annianus, working in Alexandria in the fifth century, since their goals were to synthesize various characters in history recorded at different times and places. The tradition that Idris was Enoch had already been established in the early eighth century by Wahb ibn Munabbin, who catalogued isra Iliyat (“Jewish traditions ”) in Arabic. He said Idris was the first to use a pen and that he received directly from God thirty scrolls of wisdom material that he was instructed to bring to humanity. Furthermore, Idris is also considered in Islamic lore to be the same as the mercurial character of the “Green Man ” Al-Khadir, mentioned in the previous chapter.

The connection between Enoch and Hermes seems logical when you consider that they both are purported authors of books containing the heavenly wisdom of the stars (Hermes with his alchemical Emerald Tablet, and Enoch the author of 366 books of divine knowledge). Enoch was indeed the first to give warning of the Flood in the Judeo-Christian tradition. This is what The First Book of Enoch is largely all about.

However, the Judeo-Christian tradition of Enoch also purports that he is a descendant of Adam ’s third son Seth several generations removed. He is supposedly a completely different person from his cousin Enoch, the eldest son of Cain with the same name, who was born after Cain ’s exile to Nod, and after whom Cain named the first city he built. Yet it seems to be implied by Ibn Abi Usaybia that it is the Cainite Enoch who is identified with Hermes and who warned of the Flood, because he states that the Persians call Hermes the grandson of Adam. This same genealogy of Enoch-Idris is also given by Mutahhar ibn Tahir al Maqdisi in the 966 AD. work The Creation and the Chronicle . Based on this evidence it can be speculated that both Enochs were originally one figure in earlier versions of the story. This would be one more piece of evidence indicating that. However, several other Arabic scholars clearly identify Idris with the Sethian Enoch, such as thirteenth-century Gregory Bar Hebraeus (a.k.a. Ibn al- ‘Ibri), and before him, tenth-century Abu Hatin ar-Razi, who said that “between him [Idris] and Adam were five patriarchs. ” Meanwhile, from a Latin translation of a Spanish translation of Al-Mubassir ’s sayings from the 13th century, called Liber philosophorum moralium antiquorum , we read:

Hermes was born in Egypt, and he is called Hermes in Greek, Mercury in Latin, and in Hebrew, Enoch. He was the son of Jared, son of Machtalaleb, son of Quenam, son of Enoy, son of Sed, son of Adam.

“Sed, ” clearly, is Seth, with the rest corresponding essentially to the genealogy of the Sethian Enoch found in Genesis.

The third important point here is the idea that Hermes built the pyramids of Egypt, referred to here as the “monumental temples, ” in order to preserve the scientific wisdom he ’s taught for future generations after the Flood (which would, implicitly, be somehow written on the walls, encoded into the geometry, written on scrolls hidden inside, or something like that). This is a detail mentioned several times in other Arabic Hermetica. Ibn Abi Usaybia also writes that Abu Masar attributed another monument to the first Hermes. This is the “birba ” temple at Ankmim in Egypt, the city of the Priapian fertility god Min. Always shown with an erect phallus, Min was identified by the Greeks with their god Pan, thus the Greek name for the city, “Panopolis. ” (Recall, of course, that Pan was the son of Hermes in many versions of the myth.) The ruins of this temple have yet to be excavated but it is thought by historians to have actually been built during the reign of Ramses II. However, Ibn Abi Usaybia says that Abu Masar claimed it was the first Hermes who did it. The motivation, just as alleged with the pyramids, was supposedly to preserve fundamental knowledge through the coming cataclysmic Deluge. So he “chiseled out ” a mountain there:

> … portraying in it in carvings all the arts and their uses, and pictures of all the instruments of the artisans, indicating the features of the sciences by illustrations, out of desire thereby to preserve the sciences forever for those after him, fearing that all trace of it would perish from the world.

The same exact thing was written by Said al-Andalusi in his eleventh century text Tabaqat al- ‘Umam (Exposition of the Generations of Nations), but he specifies that this first Hermes was the Enoch descended from Seth, and gives his genealogy. The same details were seconded by Syriac writer Gregory Bar Hebraeus in the thirteenth century, who actually said there was only one Hermes, the Sethian Enoch. This is interesting, for Josephus wrote in Antiquities of the Jews that it was Seth who preserved the pre-diluvian knowledge of his father Adam by engraving the secrets on two columns, one of brick and one of stone, which were allegedly erected in a place called “Terra Seriadica. ”

This notion of preserving knowledge through cataclysms with engraved

pillars (one meant to withstand fire and the other built flood-proof) comes up repeatedly in mythology, and we find it in the lore of Freemasonry. Plato mentions Egypt as the place where the story of Atlantis was preserved, along with other ancient pre-Flood wisdom, in Timaeus and Critias . Also, in the Greek Hermetica, we read of the Egyptian goddess Isis (mistress of magic and wisdom) telling her son Horus that Hermes wrote down his extensive knowledge of the universe with hieroglyphs, which he hid for posterity.

So that, purportedly, was the legacy of the first Hermes. The job of the second Hermes was to recapture the preserved knowledge of the first Hermes and use it to rebuild human civilization. Not only that, they say this Hermes personally taught Pythagoras himself everything he knew! Note that the birth of this Hermes in Babylon probably links him up with the aforementioned “Babylonian Hermes ” identified by Dorotheus in the Carmen Astrologicum . As the text states:

The Second Hermes, of the people of Babylon: he lived in the city of the Chaldeans, Babylon, after the Flood in the time of Naburizbani, who was the first to build the city of Babylon after Nimrod the son of Kush. His student was Pythagoras the Arithmetician. This Hermes renewed the knowledge of medicine, philosophy, mathematics that was lost during the Flood at Babylon.

The third Hermes, as described by Ibn Abi Usaybia and Abu Masar, certainly seems less accomplished than his illustrious forebears. In fact, he almost doesn ’t seem to qualify for the “title ” of Hermes. But what they say about him is in fact exactly the same as what all other Hermetica which purport the existence of three Hermeses tell about the third (the earliest such account being from Ibn Gulgul ’s tenth century work, The Generations of the Physicians and Philosophers). They all agree that he was born in Egypt, he taught the science of alchemy, and he wrote a book called Poisonous Animals . To this, Ibn Abi Usaybia simply adds: “He had a student who is known, whose name was Asclepius. ”

Asclepius, like Hermes, is the name of a Greek god. He was always shown carrying a staff entwined with a single serpent (just one snake shy of a Hermetic caduceus). His nickname was “the Healer ” because he could resurrect the dead, and he was associated with the practice of medicine. His name was invoked in the original Hippocratic Oath. Even today the rod of Asclepius is still used as a symbol of healing by dentists and veterinarians (while regular physicians tend to use the double-snaked caduceus instead).

Consistently, Hermes has been said to have tutelary relationships with characters named Asclepius, Ammon, Agathodaemon, and Tat (a.k.a. “Sab ”). Tat is usually said to be the son of one of the Hermeses. The Book of Sothis — attributed to the second century historian Manetho, but probably forged more than 100 years later —says that Tat is the son of the second Hermes and the grandson of Agathodaemon through his father. The Greek Hermetica talks about Tat, “Asclepius-Imouthes ” and “Ptah ” (another spelling of Thoth) as being the first of Hermes ’ “successors. ” The second-third century text The Asclepius : The Perfect Discourse calls Asclepius, Ammon, and Tat Hermes ’ “disciples. ” Gregory Bar Hebraeus agreed that Hermes was the teacher of Asclepius.

This was all presaged by Plato ’s Philebus , where he says that the Egyptian “god ” Thoth taught the Egyptian “god ” Ammon the craft of writing. Interestingly, it was Ammon, a ram-headed god, whom Alexander the Great claimed to be the biological son of, as revealed to him by the oracle at Siwa (the reason why Alexander was alleged to have had horns on his head). The Greek syncretists compounded Ammon ’s name with that of Zeus, and showed the Olympian god with ram ’s horns.

As for Agathodaemon, this was the name of a minor Greek deity of good fortune, as well as the name taken by the author of a third century Egyptian text on alchemy, The Anepigraphos. Jean Doresse, in her Secret Books of the Egyptian Gnostics , suggests that the basis of both the god and the alchemist Agathodaemon can be equated to none other than Seth! This is an interesting idea when you consider that, again, Hermes, allegedly Enoch, is being listed as the son of Agathodaemon, allegedly Seth, when the Bible says that the Sethian Enoch is removed from Seth by several generations, and that the other Enoch ’s father is Seth ’s brother Cain. Others, such as Dennis William Hauck, have claimed that Agathodaemon is really the god Thoth.

It is also fascinating when you consider what was written by tenth century

historian Abu l-Hasan al-Masudi, following up on the notion that the Hermeses built the pyramids at Giza. He took it a step further, writing:

One of the two pyramids is the tomb of Agathodaimon, the other one is the tomb of Hermes. Between the two 1000 years elapsed, Agathodaimon was the older one.

Could it be that the alleged “pillars of Seth ” are in fact the two large pyramids themselves, one believed at one point to house the body of Agathodaemon, who is Seth (and who may well actually be the same person as his purported brother Cain), and the other covering the body of his son Hermes, who is Enoch?

The Arabic traditions of Enoch ’s trip to Heaven are fascinating when added and compared to the Judeo-Christian tradition of Enoch, as well as the known traditions of Hermes. According to seventh century Koranic scholar Abdallah ibn al-Abbas, the “angel of the sun ” gave Idris the secret name of God. He purportedly used it to ascend to the “Fourth Heaven ” (that of the sun).

Other chronicles give other interesting details. Abu Hatim ar-Razi said that God took Hermes-Idris to a high mountain in the center of the Earth, where an angel taught him astrology. Third-century historian and astrologer Manetho wrote that God took Enoch so “high ” up into the heavens that he could see and actually walk upon the celestial sphere. Thus he was able to see and understand the entire system of the zodiac and the planets. The Book of the Apple (Kitab at- Tuffaha) —author unknown but ascribed erroneously to Aristotle and dated sometime before the tenth century —simply says that “Hermes ” ascended to Heaven and came back, bringing down with him philosophy and other heavenly secrets from the “Noble Record ” shown to him by the angels. The tenth or eleventh-century author of the Hermetic ar-Risalaal-falakiya al-kubra (Great

Treatise of the Spheres) also speaks of Hermes ' heavenly journey. Likewise, the Brethren of Purity, a secret society of Muslim philosophers in eighth-century Basra, Iraq, wrote in their encyclopedia of science and philosophy:

It is related about Hermes the Triplicate in Wisdom, who is Idris the prophet —peace be upon him—that he rose to the sphere of Saturn and turned together with it for thirty years until he witnessed all the states of the heavenly sphere.

As Van Bladel points out, in the astrology system they were using at the time, Saturn was the seventh and highest of the planetary spheres. Thirty years is amount of time it takes for Saturn to travel through all of the houses of the Zodiac. This is the source of the natal astrology term "Saturn 's return " (a thirty- year cyclical pattern that people purportedly experience throughout their lives).

Incidentally, Van Bladel seems to think that after Hermes became identified with Enoch and assumed his biography, Hermes-Enoch-Idris ' trip to heaven began to be taken as the method by which he learned astrology. This accords with other traditions that Enoch was the first astrologer. One source of these is third century Syrian philosopher Bar Daysan, who credited Enoch with inventing the "Chaldean art " of astrology himself. This is perfectly in line with Christian tradition. In The Second Book of Enoch 44:5, Enoch makes the following statement about himself:

I have arranged the whole year. And from the year I calculated the months, and from the months I have ticked off the days, and from the day I have ticked off the hours. I, I have measured and noted the hours. And I have distinguished every seed on the earth, and every measure and every righteous scale. I have measured and recorded them.

Incidentally, The Second Book of Enoch 1.217 also shows Enoch playing the role of the judge for the "measurement " of each person at Final Judgement, much like Osiris did in the Egyptian pantheon, using the "Scales of Thoth. " Here, Enoch says:

… In the great judgement day every measure and weight in the market will be exposed, and each one will recognize his own measure, and in it he will receive his reward… . Before humankind existed, a place of judgment, ahead of time, was prepared for them, and scales and weights by means of which a person will be tested.

Michael the Elder, twelfth century patriarch of the Syriac Orthodox Church, also said that Enoch was the first to bring writing into the world, presumably from Heaven, just as Hermes and Thoth are credited with doing. In Christian tradition, Enoch is said to have written a total of 366 books, just one more than the number of years he purportedly lived: 365 (also the number of days in a solar year). The closeness of these two numbers (how many books he wrote and how many days he lived) seems to be a coincidence with some sort of meaning. So too is the fact that, according to Manetho, Hermes wrote 365,000 books. Perhaps also of note is the fact that the Gnostic entity of Abraxas, a composite chimera like Baphomet, with the head of a chicken and snakes for legs, is taken as a representation of the Demiurge and, for some reason, is associated with the number 365. We will discuss this more in a later chapter.

Moving along, we find another account of Hermes ' heavenly journey in The Book of the Secrets of Creation (Kitab Sirr al-haliqa), written in Arabic between 813 and 833 AD and falsely attributed to the authorship of Apollonius of Tyana (a.k.a. Balinas). This was the name of a Cappadocian mystic who lived at the time of Christ and had a surprisingly similar biography, including a career of healing the sick, resurrecting the dead, casting out demons, and the claim of his followers that he ascended to Heaven bodily at the end of his life. The book purports to tell the story of how, as a youth, Apollonius discovered the tomb of Hermes in a secret underground chamber, and in it the Emerald Tablet, with its unsurpassed alchemical mysteries inscribed upon it. It also describes what seems to be the story of Hermes rising to Heaven, but at the same time it resembles a description of a substance being transmuted from a lower, denser matter into the higher, subtler form of the Philosopher 's Stone. In this sense, Hermes seems to be equated with the transmuted substance itself.

The story of Apollonius, and how he allegedly used the tablets wisdom to perform miracles, is told in great detail in The Life of Apollonius of Tyana by second to third-century Greek Sophist Flavius Philostratus. Dennis William Hauck 's The Emerald Tablet: Alchemy for Personal Transformation gives a shortened version (also drawing from other, more imaginative modern sources such as twentieth-century Theosophist GRS Mead). Hauck claims that Apollonius was himself the Third Hermes, on unclear authority.

However, Ibn Nubata, in his eighth-century Commentary on the Epistle of Ibn Zaydun , does say that Apollonius was

Hermes ’ student, and traveled with him personally. He also says that “Asclepius ” was another name for Apollonius. As for which of the three Hermeses Apollonius was apprenticed to, Ibn Nubata quotes varying sources that name each of the three. None of his sources seem to agree on that detail. He didn ’t say that Apollonius was a “Hermes, ” but he did say, “The Sabians claim that Asclepius had the prophethood after ” his teacher, as though he was in the same line of “apostolic succession ” as the Hermeses. He also said people thought Apollonius was an angel or descended from angels, that he was taken to Heaven “on a pillar of light ” at the end of his life, and that “Euclid traced his ancestry to him. ”

The issue of the alleged “Hermeticism ” of the Sabians of Harran, as discussed previously, has been a cause celebre among modern multiculturalist occultists and other writers looking to pointing out contributions from any seemingly “Islamic ” source to the history of humanity in general and Western mysticism (largely based on Hermetics) in particular. This cause has also been embraced by certain authors with Islamic backgrounds looking to put a pleasant face on the often harsh fundamentalist image of the religion ’s traditions by pointing out the heterodox variety of belief systems that have operated under the umbrella of “Islam ” (often under threat of persecution from fundamentalists). Seyyed Hossein Nasr wrote in 1967 that, “In the Muslim world, Hermeticism must be considered as one of the most important factors which aided in the construction of the Muslim worldview. ” Complaining about the desperate reaching on some of the commentators about this subject, Kevin van Bladel has said:

In the context of Arabic literature, modern scholars generally use the word Hermetic to refer not just to works associated with the name Hermes, but also to all manner of works with allegedly “Gnostic, ” “Neoplatonic, ” “Neopythagorean, ” or “esoteric ” tendencies or practically any early Arabic pseudepigraph. Above all, it is used to refer to the beliefs of the Sabians of Harran.

As we have already discussed more briefly above, in order to be accepted by Islamic rulers, the Harranians adopted the moniker “Sabian ” from The Koran to claim a protected status in their society. Literature was circulated which purported that they were followers of a prophet named Hermes, and that his teachings were compatible with Islam. As we demonstrated earlier, this may have begun with the family of Harranian Tabit ibn Qurra, who immigrated to Baghdad. Ninth century philosopher Ysaf al-Kindi quoted from a book he had access to called Chapters of Hermes on the Doctrine of Monotheism, which he wrote for his son most expertly . The word “At-tawhid, ” translated here as “monotheism, ” is most often used to indicate Muslim belief specifically. This idea of Hermes as a proto-Islamic prophet had become the accepted norm. Then in the thirteenth century, Al-Mubassir ibn Fatik ’s Liber philosophorum moralium antiquorum reported the following:

Hermes left Egypt and went around the whole world… . In seventy-two languages he called the people of the entire earth ’s population to worship the Creator, the Mighty and High. God granted him wisdom so that he spoke to them in their different languages, taught them and educated them. He built for them a hundred and eight great cities, the smallest of which is Edessa. He was the first who discovered astrology, and he established for each region a model of religious practice for them to follow which corresponded to their views. Kings were his servants, and the whole earth ’s population and the population of the islands in the seas obeyed him.

Note that the number of cities be built (108) corresponds with the number of suitors Penelope had in The Odyssey , who, in an alternate version of the story, all combined their semen in her womb to conceive the god Pan, elsewhere thought to be a son of Hermes the god. The next paragraph of Liber philosophorum makes the worship of the creator that this Hermes taught seem very Islamic indeed:

He preached God ’s judgment, belief in God ’s unity, mankind ’s worship [of God], … and saving souls from punishment. He incited [people] to abstain piously from this world, to act justly, and to seek salvation in the next world. He commanded them to perform prayers that he stated for them in manners that he explained to them, and to fast on recognized days of each month, to undertake holy war (jihad) against the enemies of the religion, and to give charity from [their] possessions and to assist the weak with it. He bound them with oaths of ritual purity from pollutants, menstruation, and touching the dead. He ordered them to forbid eating pig, ass, camel, dog, and other foods. He forbade intoxication from every type of beverage, and stated this in the most severe terms.

Al-Mubassir goes on to add that at one point, everyone in the world converted to this religion, which was called din al-qayyima (“the right religion ”), and that they prayed to the south along the line of the meridian. As Van Bladel notes, “We encounter here again the notion that the religion of Hermes was the universal, primordial religion. ” The phrase din al-qayyima comes from The Koran , Sura 98, Verses two through five, where it says that this doctrine would be preached by:

… an apostle from God reciting purified scrolls in which are right scriptures. Those who received the book went their separate ways only after the clear proof came to them. They were ordered only to worship God, sincerely practicing his religion as hunafa, and to practice prayer and to bring alms. That is the right religion… .

The implication in The Koran is that Mohammed learned his teachings from divinely-written scrolls, just as The Book of the Apple says Enoch-Idris- Hermes learned his wisdom from reading the “Noble Record ” in Heaven. Al- Mubassir ’s implication is that the doctrine taught by Hermes is the same one found by Mohammed on the purified scrolls, or that the apostle referred to in Sura 98 is not Mohammed but Hermes.

In The History of Learned Men from twelve to thirteenth century Egyptian scholar Ibn al Qifti, a document is duplicated called Testament of Ammon , which shows Hermes giving advice to Ammon on how to be a just and effective king. It makes him into a defender of a rather harsh form of Islamic sharia (law).

… Take care not to delay battle and holy war (jihad) against those who do not believe in God —His name is most high — and those who do not follow my custom and my law (sunnati wa-sari ’ati), because of your desire that they enter into obedience to God the Exalted… . Whoever defames your rule, decapitate him and make it known so that others will beware. Whoever steals, cut off his hand. Who robs on a path, cut off his head and crucify him so that news of it spreads and your roads be safe. Whoever is found with a male like himself, fornicating with him, must be burned in fire. Whoever is found with a woman committing adultery with her, strike him with fifty lashes and stone the woman with a hundred stones after establishing sure proof of it.

Van Bladel, who believes this text was written by a Harranian Sabian trying to “argue for the legitimacy of his religion ” among Muslims, writes sneeringly:

Here we seem to have found at last an example of the “Hermeticism ” of the Harranians in Baghdad so much speculated about. Instead of cosmic sympathies and revelatory initiations, we find corporal punishments, holy war… .

These aren ’t the only sources to make Hermes seem somewhat less than politically correct by modern standards. Ninth to tenth-century Iranian writer Al- Tha ’alibi says that Hermes “was the first to make use of weapons, make war and capture people as slaves. ” It seems that these texts ’ authors were eager to present Hermes as the primordial prophet, king, and lawgiver, whose students (the Harranian Sabians who attended court in Baghdad) were fit to be advisors to kings, like Aristotle had been to Alexander. Therefore the type of law he was seen as promoting was whatever Islamic potentates of the day wanted to hear, to make them feel like they were doing it right. Thus the declarations quoted above were cobbled together with the sayings of other known philosophers, but here all attributed to Hermes, in order to establish his wisdom bona fides.

When the Neoplatonic Enneads of Plotinus, IV-VI were translated into Arabic in the ninth century, a great deal of other material was interpolated into it, and it was given a new name which translates to The Theology of Aristotle . In it, Aristotle himself is presented as having been influenced by the teachings of Hermes. Also, in the tenth century Kitab at-Tuffaha , Aristotle is shown recommending the words of Hermes to his students while on his deathbed. There are even Arabic books on talismanic magic ascribed (erroneously, of course) to Aristotle (but in reality written by a Harranian Sabian), in which the author cites the wisdom of Hermes on the subject of occult practice. (According to Van Bladel, Hermes was more well-known in Arabic-speaking lands as the source of books on talismanic magic, astrology and alchemy, rather than The Corpus Hermeticum and other books of mysticism that made him famous in Europe.) Another text called As-Siyasa al-ammiya shows Alexander quoting Hermes to Aristotle the equivalent of the well-known Hermetic maxim “As above, so below. ” As he put it:

Hermes the preeminent in knowledge spoke well when he said, “Man is a microcosm and the celestial sphere is the macrocosm. ”

In a similar vein, twelfth century Persian poet Nizami, in his Iqbal-nama , shows Hermes appearing before Alexander on a panel of sages that includes Aristotle, Plato, and Socrates. Later in the same work, a group of seventy Greek philosophers becomes jealous of Hermes ’ wisdom, and all agree to ignore him, for which he curses them with being frozen in place until they die (like the effect of the deadly gaze of Medusa or Al-Ghul).

Other Arabic sources also claimed Hermes as the ultimate historic source for the fount of philosophy. Ninth-century historian As-Masudi wrote that Pythagoras and Plato got their knowledge from Hermes by reading his tablets. Tenth to eleventh-century philosopher Ibn al-Haytam, whilst arguing in favor of Greek philosophy, said that their sages were “followers ” of the “prophet ” Hermes-Idris, whom he credited with the revelation of astrology and math as well. Also, the twelfth century Andalusian thinkers Ibn Bagga and Yahuda ha-Levi wrote that Hermes had achieved a special relationship with something called the “Active Intellect, ” a divine emanation that they believed, as Van Bladel describes it, “gave rise to the celestial spheres, [and] was regarded as the cause of all human understanding, frequently described by the visual metaphor of light… . ” They said that Hermes, along with Socrates, Plato, Aristotle, and Asclepius, had attained the level of “perfect human, ” and thus were able to connect with the Active Intellect.

However erroneous and deceptive its origins are, this material influenced the development of Islamic theology. The Ismaili sect (from which the Assassins arose) was, by the ninth century, according to Van Bladel, “the first organized group with an official doctrine about Hermes ” as a legitimate prophet. However, the fourth century poet Ephraem from Syria had already written that the Persian religion of Manicheanism embraced Hermes as a prophet, along with Jesus and Plato.

In the twelfth century, Sihabdin Yahya as-Suhrawardi, founder of the “Israqi ” school of thought and associated today with the mystical Islamic movement broadly known as “Sufism, ” claimed to be continuing the philosophical tradition of Hermes, as, he purported, Plato, Empedocles, and Agathodaemon had done before him. He said that Hermes gained his wisdom because he had the power to “doff his body and rise up ” to “the higher world. ” This tradition of citing Hermes as a philosophical ancestor was continued by the thirteenth century Sufi writers Ibn Sabin and As-Sustari as well.

What became known as “Hermeticism ” seems to have been cooked in the same crucible as what became known as “Gnosticism, ” and the two terms (while significantly different) are often associated with each other. Indeed, there is quite a bit of overlap. The Gnostic idea that a Demiurge apart from the highest deity created the material world is common in many writings attributed to Hermes. The first discourse of The Corpus Hermeticum , entitled “Poimandres, ” describes creation thusly:

The mind who is god, being androgyne and existing as life and light, by speaking gave birth to a second mind, a craftsman, who, as god of fire and spirit, crafted seven governors; they encompass the sensible world in circles, and their government is called fate.

This would go along with As-Sarahsi ’s description of the Harranian religion, as paraphrased by Van Bladel, “that the Sabians sacrificed to the planets, and not to the Creator, because the planets, and not god directly, actually administered the world. ” Similar notions are expressed in the aforementioned magical text The Book of Nabathean Agriculture . There, instructions are given to pray to idols of the planets (what Gnostics viewed as the “archontic powers, ”), whilst still recognizing the supremacy of the One God, because it is the planets who actually manage the day-to-day matters of the universe, and whose job it is to listen to such prayers. One gets the idea that there is a call queue directing calls to customer service representatives (the planets), which can, at times, be escalated to the supervisor (the Demiurge), but almost nobody ever speaks to the company owner, the Father of All, who just sits in his office alone being God.

The third to fourth century Gnostic-Hermetic alchemist Zosimos of Panopolis made explicit references to a book supposedly written by Hermes called Physika , which is lost to us now. It deals with the same story as The First Book of Enoch , regarding fallen angels having intercourse with women. Ninth- century Byzantine historian George Synkellos also wrote about this in his Ecloga Chronographica :

It is stated in the holy scriptures or books, dear lady, that there exists a race of daimons who have commerce with women. Hermes made mention of them in his Physika ; in fact almost the entire work, openly and secretly, alludes to them. It is related in the ancient and divine scriptures that certain angels lusted for women, and descending from the heavens, they taught them all the arts of nature. On account of this, says the scripture, they offended god, and now live outside heaven —because they taught to men all the evil arts which are of no advantage to the soul.

Is it possible that this Physika was actually The First Book of Enoch itself? It would make sense, considering that Hermes is purportedly the same person as Enoch, the author and main character of that book, which appears to have the same subject matter as the now lost Physika of Hermes. Also note that in the story of The First Book of Enoch , the mountain which the angels land on when they come to Earth, and upon which they make their pact together to breed with humans, is called “Mount Hermon. ” The name is usually translated “Place of the Curse, ” but it is worth considering that it might have somehow been based on the name of Hermes. Since his name is thought to refer to “boundary-posts ” (and the crossing of them), perhaps both interpretations are correct, as Mount Hermon is where the angels crossed their God-ordained boundaries and defiled themselves as well as the Earth.

We note here that the Harranian Sabians are not the only group to officially take on the label of, and be officially recognized as, the Sabians of The Koran . The Mandaeans of Iraq have also identified themselves as such. For them, they claim that the name actually applies to them because of their their baptismal rite, called “Seboghatullah ” — “immersion in the divine mystery ” which seems very similar in meaning to “Baptism of Wisdom. ” While the Mandaeans are sometimes described as a “quasi-Islamic ” sect, they are also commonly, and more accurately, described as a Gnostic religion —one of the few surviving Gnostic faiths in the world. Interestingly, the word “Hanif ” is sometimes used to denote a “Sabian ” in the Islamic world. But Hanif is also a common first name in Muslim lands, and is listed in books of baby names as a variation of “John. ” As it turns out, Mandaeans take as their chief prophet not Mohammed, but John the Baptist, who they credit with starting having started their group in the first place. This, as we shall see, is very significant. But before we explore these topics, let us learn a bit more about Gnosticism, and the wisdom goddess Sophia for whom, it is said, the name of Baphomet stands as a cryptic code.

Chapter 5: Divine Knowledge

And it happened this way because of the will of God that men be better than the gods, since, indeed, the gods are immortal, but men alone are both immortal and mortal. Therefore, man has become akin to the gods, and they know the affairs of each other with certainty. The gods know the things of men, and men know the things of the gods. And I am speaking about men, Asclepius, who have attained learning and knowledge. But (about) those who are more vain than these, it is not fitting that we say anything base, since we are divine and are introducing holy matters.

— Asclepius 21-29

There is no simple definition of Gnosticism. Scholars have debated over it for years. Few religions are built upon such a provocative and complex mythos. Discovered by accident in the desert sands of Egypt, the Nag Hammadi Library has given religious scholars the world over a glimpse into the ideology of this faith that has long been mysterious and misunderstood. Prior to 1945, the only things we knew about Gnosticism came from their sworn enemies in the Christian clergy. Although some of the Gnostic gospels found in the Nag Hammadi were among the earliest Christian texts, all were banned from the orthodox canon that would become the sanitized New Testament from the fourth century.

When studied objectively, Gnostic myth actually tells us a great deal about the social views of its time, as well as the evolution of the early Christian Church. It must also be said that not all of the texts found at Nag Hammadi are even Gnostic and many of them are quite orthodox (although an earlier variant of Christian orthodoxy). The scholar Robert M. Price gives us a brief history on the true significance of the Nag Hammadi in his article “A Survey on Some Recent Books on Gnosticism ”:

Scraps used for binding the Nag Hammadi codices attest that the work was done by the monks of St. Pachomius. We can ascertain the precise circumstances in which the texts were hidden away: the Festal Letter of Athanasius of Alexandria in 367 would have spelled trouble for the brethren of St. Pachomius with their exotic library. Indeed, it must have been just such currency of “heretical ” apocrypha that led Athanasius to frame his canon list in the first place! When we read the Nag Hammadi texts we are no doubt reading the very books Athanasius wanted to exclude! The texts tend to confirm all the major theories as to Gnostic roots. That Gnosticism is Platonic is implied by the fragment of the Republic discovered there. Reitzenstein ’s claim of interchangeability between Gnosis and the Hermetic Mysticism is confirmed by the presence of the Asklepios and other Hermetica at Nag Hammadi.

While there are Gnostic religious doctrines, there really is not one single monolithic Gnostic religion. The term refers to a set of specific metaphysical doctrines on spirituality. This peculiar spiritual orientation arose in Egypt around the time of Jesus ’ birth. Gnostics purported to engage in direct contact with a transcendent God through initiatory rites, embracing the belief that an inner spark or seed of divinity exists inside man which is consubstantial with God. They also had a transgressive take on scripture (particularly the Old Testament), the pagan gods, and a philosophical attitude taken from the varied religious and social environment of Late Antiquity. Carl Jung, as quoted by Murray Stein in Jung on Christianity , said:

The central ideas of Christianity are rooted in Gnostic philosophy, which, in accordance with psychological laws, simply had to grow up at a time when the classical religions had become obsolete. It was found on the perception of symbols thrown up by the unconscious individuation process which always sets in when the collective dominants of human life fall into decay. At such a time there is bound to be a considerable number of individuals who are possessed by archetypes of a numinous nature that forced their way to the surface in order to form new dominants.

As stated above, the term “Gnosticism ” has become something of a source of contention in academic circles. Some scholars have still held to the term as a useful category while others desire to eschew it altogether. Michael Allen Williams wrote in Rethinking Gnosticism , that the category should be entirely dismantled. The words “Gnostic ” isn ’t found at all in any of the codices found in Nag Hammadi, Egypt in 1945. The Church Father Irenaeus uses the word very loosely and inconsistently. Tertullian, another Church father and Latin lawyer from Carthage, doesn ’t use it at all in his writings against the heretics.

When all the statements are sorted out, it appears that perhaps it was the Carpocratians who called themselves “Gnostic ” originally, whereas none of the other heretics did. On the other hand, all the heretical sects did speak of “Gnosis,

” and they do share a common set of ideas. Today, we use the term in reference to their commonly shared doctrine of seeking a personal revelation from the highest god.

The Gnostics viewed man as contradictory and somewhat schizophrenic. In this perspective, man is essentially a dual being, made up of both pneumatic (spiritual) and hylic (material) essences. We see in The Apocryphon of John that Adam is described as being created through angels and demons working together to construct his body. In The Trimorphic Protennoia , it is the creator-god of Genesis , described as a “great demon, ” who creates the body of man, while his spirit is given by a higher being. In On the Origin of the World , it says that man was created “when Sophia let fall a droplet of light ” which “flowed onto the water, and immediately a human being appeared… . ” Yet, while the origins of mankind vary in the Gnostic mythos, it is generally agreed that the spirit is seen as the “pearl of great price, ” while the flesh was seen as worthless and degenerate. This differs from the modern Christian view that both the soul and flesh are fallen but yet essentially good, created in the image of God.

Just as the creation of fleshly man is seen as a negative thing in Gnosticism, so is the material cosmos. The Gospel of Philip tells us that matter “came into being through an error. ” These are most often the error of the lesser god of Genesis or of various lesser beings (the nefarious “Archons ”). For one to rise above this error, one must have knowledge, for as The Second Treatise of the Great Seth put it:

… They did not know the Knowledge of the Greatness, that it is from above and (from) a fountain of truth, and that it is not from slavery and jealousy, fear and love of worldly matter.

In The Apocryphon of John , the Lord (being the resurrected Jesus Christ)

tells us that the dead and ignorant spirit after death is always in the clutches of the “Authorities ” (lesser gods) until it has received this “divine, experiential knowledge ”:

And after it comes out of (the body), it is handed over to the authorities, who came into being through the archon, and they bind it with chains and cast it into prison, and consort with it until it is liberated from the forgetfulness and acquires knowledge. And if thus it becomes perfect, it is saved.

The “Gnosis ” that these practitioners aimed to achieve was personified in the figure of Sophia (wisdom), and it has been frequently compared with the mystical idea of “Chokmah ” found in the Jewish cabala. In that system, the universe is represented by the Tree of Life, consisting of various “Sephiroth ” or spheres of existence, much like the Gnostic aeons. The “paths ” which connect the spheres are all paved with Chokmah, the Hebrew word for wisdom. This is defined as the wisdom that existed before good and evil, before Eve ate of the fruit of the Tree of Knowledge. In his commentary to the Kabbalistic text known as the Sefer Yetzirah (The Book of Creation), Aryeh Kaplan defines Chokmah:

Wisdom is pure thought, which has not yet been broken up into different ideas… . On the level of wisdom, all men are included in a single world soul.

The idea of Sophia as an emanation of God, specifically the “wisdom ” of God, is part of mainstream Christian theology as well. The word “sophia ” is used six times in the New Testament. In I Corinthians 1:23-24 the text refers to “Christ the power of God, and the sophia of God. ” The Eastern Orthodox Church saw Sophia as co-equal with Christ, and simultaneously an aspect of Christ as well. The Hagia Sophia or Church of the Holy Wisdom in Constantinople (now Istanbul, Turkey) was once the most magnificent church in all of Byzantium before it was seized in the Ottoman conquest of 1453 and turned into a mosque. “Sophiology,” or the worship of the female aspect of Christ as God ’s wisdom, has influenced many Christian mystics, including Jakob Bohme and Hildegard of Bingen.

Sophia has been compared to the Christian concept of the Holy Spirit, part of the Trinity. She has also been likened to the cabalistic concept of the Shekinah, a.k.a. the Matronit. This is the female aspect of God the Father, who can also be thought of as God ’s consort. “Shekinah ” is a word that means “whirlwind, ” as well as “divine presence, ” “royal residence, ” and “resting place. ” God purportedly used the Shekinah to manifest his presence every time he appeared to the Israelites. Furthermore, the Shekinah is connected to Metatron, the angel that Enoch the divine scribe allegedly transformed into when he ascended to Heaven. Therefore it can also be compared to the mythic figure of Hermes or Thoth.

The term “Gnostic ” actually originates with Plato, who used “Gnostic ” as a word for the ideal statesman. According to Irenaeus, Marcellina and her group of Carpocratians used the term for themselves (Against Heresies . 1 26, 6). Hippolytus also maintains that a group called the “Naasseni ” or the “Naassenes, ” who “sounded the depths of knowledge ” (Refutation . 5.1), called themselves Gnostics as well. Hippolytus claims that the Naassenes were the founders of the Gnostic heresy (Refutation. 6:1), but he is alone in this view. All of the other Church Fathers claim that the Gnostic heresy was founded by Simon Magus, starting with Justin Martyr and Irenaeus. Then there is Origen, who, in contrast to Hippolytus, says that the Naassenes were an “insignificant sect ” (Contra Celsus , 6:24).

Hence the Church Fathers do not agree on the Naassenes in terms of their role in history and their significance. Perhaps it mattered little whether Hippolytus ’ Naassenes preceded Simon Magus or Epiphanius ’ Phibionites preceded both of them, so long as every heretical system appeared secondary in some way in comparison to the rightful supremacy of the Catholic Church. But outside of the patristic tradition, there ’s little evidence that the word was used very much by the heretics. In Plato ’s Statesman 258b, he uses the term “episteme, ” which means the same. However, Plato uses the word to indicate political aptitude in reference to the “Philosopher Kings ” he talks about in the Republic . Gnostics would, however, apply the same word to spiritual aptitude. In Phaedo 66e Socrates says:

[I]f we are ever to know anything absolutely, we must be free from the body and must behold the actual realities with the eye of the soul alone… . [P]ure knowledge is impossible while the body is with us… .

Essentially this means that we cannot connect with pure knowledge when we are disturbed or distracted by the body. Socrates refers to pure knowledge as a naked understanding of reality, which is something beyond the realm of matter and the senses of the body. Irenaeus clearly describes these Gnostics as having hairesies (heresies) that deviate from the Catholic, apostolic brand of Christianity.

These Gnostics engaged in sympathetic healing magic, exorcisms, Asclepian-styled medicine, and meditative techniques that used correspondences between the powers of the Zodiac (as represented by the “Archons ”), and the human body, as seen in The Apocryphon of John , among other Gnostic texts.

The Church Fathers were very strategic in how they used the term “Gnosis. ” They did their best to differentiate between “true ” and “false ” Gnosis. The Gnostics possessed the latter, while the Catholics possessed the former. Irenaeus spoke of those who possess and profess “Gnosis falsely so-called. ” It appears to us that these Gnostics weren ’t exactly “world hating dualists ” who rejected matter. In fact, as Michael Allen Williams in Rethinking Gnosticism points out, those who voluntarily immigrated to ancient Rome weren ’t exactly ivory tower-dwellers, but were among the more “economically advantaged, ” as he put it. Williams presents a number of citations to support this assertion, including ones from Epiphanius, Tertullian and Irenaeus, who all claim that these Gnostics and Valentinians were of a refined social class.

Clement of Alexandria attempted to rehabilitate the term “Gnostic, ” reserving it for the perfect and mature Christian who observes the Law of Moses with a life of self-restraint and contemplation on God. However, Clement himself had many philosophically pagan ideas derived from the surrounding mystery schools that influenced his thinking and his brand of Christianity, which later became orthodoxy. At first he was recognized as a saint, but this honor was removed from his name by Pope Clement VIII because his doctrines were at the very least suspect, if not downright heretical.

The idea of there being a “mature ” class of initiated Christians (e.g. the Gnostics) is actually found in 1 Corinthians 2:6-8 (NIV):

We do, however, speak a message of wisdom among the mature, but not the wisdom of this age or of the rulers of this age, who are coming to nothing. No, we declare God ’s wisdom, a mystery that has been hidden and that God destined for our glory before time began.

Branding these people as gnostikoi with hairesies was a rhetorical strategy to mark them negatively as the “other, ” so to speak. Irenaeus claimed in Against Heresies (1.29.1) that these people were so numerous and diverse that they sprung up even among the Christians:

Besides those, however, among these heretics who are Simonians, and of whom we have already spoken, a multitude of Gnostics have sprung up, and have been manifested like mushrooms growing out of the ground.

In particular, Irenaeus goes in many tirades against these Gnostics (especially against arch-heretics like Valentinus and Marcion), who propagated Sethian mythology, which is commonly identified with the Gnostic group known as the “Ophites. ” It was the Ophites from whom Joseph von Hammer-Purgstall believed the Knights Templar had copied their rituals and secret theology. “Ophite ” comes from the Greek word for “snake, ” a reference to the Serpent in the Garden of Eden. They revered the Serpent as the true savior and hero of the story of Genesis , because he brought divine wisdom or “Gnosis ” to mankind in the form of the fruit of the Tree of Knowledge.

Likewise the God of the Old Testament, Jehovah, is described diminutively as a “Demiurge, ” an insane and demented creator of the universe who, is so doing, separated man from the divine essence by causing spirit to incarnate into matter. The word “demiurge ” comes from a Greek word meaning “artisan, ” “craftsman, ” or “skilled worker. ” It is a term that also originates in Plato ’s writings, specifically in Timaeus . The Ophites believed that the Demiurge did not want mankind to be illuminated with divine Gnosis, and thus reunified with the uncreated essence, because that would allow us to escape his false creation. That is why he forbade eating from the Tree of Knowledge, and that is why, in this worldview, the Serpent promoted it.

Irenaeus describes their theology in great detail, revealing that Gnostic groups like the Ophites were direct inheritors of Hellenistic Jewish speculative theology that dealt with angelology and Logos theories. Against Heresies 1.30 goes through a blow-by-blow account of the Ophite creation story, the Flood, and their peculiar views on the prophets, as well as the Resurrection of Jesus Christ. The exact origin of the Ophites lies in obscurity. Some scholars believe that their theology was derived from the teachings of the heretic Marcion (70- 150 AD), although we really don ’t see much of a connection there.

The likely reason that Marcion is (perhaps erroneously) credited with inspiring Ophitism is because he rejected the authority of the Old Testament in favor of his Apostolikon , which contained earlier variants of St. Paul ’s epistles, an early version of The Gospel of Luke , which he called The Gospel of the Lord , and The Antithesis , and was supposed to explain all the deep contradictions between the Old Testament and Marcion ’s New Testament. By extension, Marcion also rejected the Mosaic Law, the Sabbaths, holidays, New Moon festivals, the prophets, the angels, and Jehovah, the God of the Jews. Marcion demoted them to inferior powers, elevating instead the lofty revelation of Jesus Christ, whom he called “Isu Chrestos, ” the “Chrestos ” (the Good), and the “Foreigner ” or the “Alien God ” (as he was previously unknown to the world).

Marcion is often credited with having first conceived of the idea of the New Testament, and yet he was branded as a heretic and condemned furiously by his Catholic enemies, including Irenaeus, Tertullian and Origen. In fact, the bulk of the New Testament texts we have now are nothing more than the last vestiges of a severely tampered, rewritten version of Marcion ’s original canon which we have no surviving copies of. The Ophites, on the other hand seemed to be very much inspired by the Old Testament as well as the New —although their interpretations of biblical theology obviously differ strongly from what is normally accepted.

Marcionite Christianity seems to represent a later stage of Gnosticism, when Christian doctrine was just starting to formulate and the Old Testament was being touted as authoritative scripture (their only scripture really) by the Catholics. The views held by the Ophites as well as authors of other Gnostic texts contain very esoteric, bizarre and downright convoluted mythological and cosmological accounts which are far-removed from the conservative theology of Marcion. The biggest distinguishing factor of Marcion ’s worldview was his refusal to interpret Jewish scriptures as allegorical like many of his Gnostic and Hellenistic-Jewish opponents did, such as Philo of Alexandria.

Marcion ’s radical dualism (contrasting Pauline Christology with the Judaizing legalism of Peter ’s church) can be seen as a foundational underpinning of Gnosticism. However, Gnostics such as the Ophites tended to envision a single source for everything (monotheism), and embraced a Judaic or monistic conceptualization of the origin of God. This highly conflicts with Marcion ’s view that there was a Supreme, Unknowable “God of Love ” and a vastly inferior “God of Wrath ” (the creator god Jehovah). The reason for this contradiction between Marcionite and Gnostic theology may have to do with their supposed founder, Simon Magus. In The Gnostic Gospels , Elaine Pagels writes about the conflicting relationship between these two gods:

What this secret tradition reveals is that the one whom most Christians naively worship as creator, God, and Father is, in reality, only the image of the true God. According to Valentinus, what Clement and Ignatius mistakenly ascribe to God actually applies only to the creator. Valentinus, following Plato, uses the Greek term for “creator ” (demiurgos), suggesting that he is a lesser divine being who serves as the instrument of the higher powers. It is not God, he explains, but the demiurge who reigns as king and lord, who acts as a military commander, who gives the law and judges those who violate it —in short, he is the “God of Israel. ” Through the initiation Valentinus offers, the candidate learns to reject the creator ’s authority and all his demands as foolishness. What gnostics know is that the creator makes false claims to power (“I am God, and there is no other ”) that derive from his own ignorance. Achieving gnosis involves coming to recognize the true source of divine power —namely, “the depth ” of all being. Whoever has come to know that source simultaneously comes to know himself and discovers his spiritual origin: he has come to know his true Father and Mother.

In essence, as Michael Allen Williams claims in Rethinking Gnosticism , these demiurgical myths can be construed as veiled political protests, which call upon people to reject the legitimacy of all the political structures of the world. It is obvious that these myths are about the rejection of religious authority as well (e.g. common organized religion or orthodoxy).

Returning to the subject of the Ophites, they seem to have draw inspiration from the many different mystery religions of Egypt, Phrygia, Babylon, India and Greece. The so-called “Orphic serpent, ” entwined around an egg containing an embryo of the god Phanes/Eros, was one of their divine symbols, as was the famous Ouroboros symbol (the serpent that consumes its own tail). In essence, Ophite theology remains substantially pagan despite its biblical inspiration, as does that of the Naassenes. Church Fathers like Irenaeus, Hippolytus and Origen all considered the Ophites pagan.

The famous Theosophist GRS Mead, in Fragments of a Faith Forgotten , makes an interesting observation on the word “Ophite ” that many modern scholars seem to have failed to notice or address. He wrote:

The term “Ophite ” is exceedingly erroneous; it does not generally describe the schools of which we are treating; it was not used by the adherents of the schools themselves, who mostly preferred the term Gnostic; even where the symbolism of the serpent enters into the exposition of their systems, it is by no means the characteristic feature. In brief, this term, which originated in the fallacy of taking a very small part for the whole —a favourite trick of the heresiologist, whose main weapon was to exaggerate a minor detail into a main characteristic —has been used as a vague designation for all exposition of Gnostic doctrine which could not be ascribed to a definite teacher.

The Naassenes, named after na ‘asch , the Hebrew word for “snake, ” existed in the first century AD. This point is particularly stressed by Hippolytus in his work Refutation of All Heresies , tying them to the pagan mysteries. They called the chief Archon “Ialdabaoth, ” “Samael, ” or “Saklas, ” all names are found in The Apocryphon of John . Another Gnostic group, the Sethians, believed that Adam and Eve ’s third son Seth was a divine emanation, born purely of spirit, and that it was the destiny of Seth ’s descendants to eternally battle the sons of Cain, whom they thought to be the posterity of the Demiurge. All of this is explained in The Apocalypse of Adam .

The Borborites, meaning “the filthy ones, ” were particularly known for their rituals involving the consumption of menstrual blood, semen, and aborted human fetuses. (These are things which the Knights Templar were accused of doing also.) Allegedly, there even existed a sect called the Cainites, who, rather than seeing him as the child of the Demiurge, revered Cain as a martyr for the cause against him. Many villains of the Bible, like Cain, Esau, Korah, the Sodomites, and Judas Iscariot were also said to be revered. We will return to these Cainites and their theology later in this chapter.

Many have identified the Ophites and the Naassenes as being one and the same group. Although they do have some obvious similarities, in that they both revered the serpent of Genesis , there are also some notable differences, as we will see further on. Texts such as The Apocryphon of John seem to contain theological ideas ascribed to the Ophites that were similar to the ones described by Irenaeus. All the information we have about the Naassenes comes from either the Philosophoumena or the Refutation of All Heresies . In Irenaeus ’ account of Ophite theology, he maintained that like almost all Gnostic groups, the Ophites taught aeonic emanationism, much like these Naassenes.

Generally speaking, it was the Gnostic view that the world was created in a series of “emanations ” of Godhead, or “aeons,” which descended one from another, each new generation more dense and less subtle than the last. Sophia, or “divine wisdom,” was the last and the lowest of those emanations. It was she who fell from grace and became impregnated with Ialdabaoth, destined to create an evil material universe with his demigod helpers, the “Archons. ” Ray Embry, in the article “Marcion: Possible Progenitor of Three Famous Communities: Baptists, Catholics, Gnostics, ” remarks about Gnostic metaphysics and how different it was from Marcion ’s radical metaphysical dualist belief about there being two gods:

The Gnostics believed they had adequately explained how darkness and corruption could ultimately descend from a singular source of Divine Light. Between that Perfect Light and our imperfect world, there are (according to the Gnostics) a significant number of stations, events and beings that tend to absorb the attribution of evil away from the highest level of Divine Unity.

In The Second Treatise of the Great Seth , Sophia is called a “whore. ” Church Fathers like Epiphanius called her “Prunikos, ” meaning “lewd ” or “lustful one, ” because, though originally a virginal goddess, by her fall from the purity of the original aeons, she was the cause of the fall of the cosmos. Like the Serpent of Genesis, she was said to be a divine being that brought sexual knowledge to the universe, and with it, generation and ultimately death —or at least “spiritual death ” (i.e., ignorance). So, in essence, she was linked with the fall of Eden, even though she brought knowledge down below to the profane cosmos. Simone Petrement explains in A Separate God: The Origins and Teachings of Gnosticism that, although the title of “Prunikos ” is interpreted as indicating lasciviousness and licentiousness by Church Fathers like Epiphanius, it actually means a divine “bearer ” or “holder. ” This reminds us of the Christian idea that that the Virgin Mary was the Theotokos or “God-bearer ” of Christ. Petrement writes:

The name is formed from pro (“before ” or “in front ”) and a word that seems to be related to the second aorist eneika (analogous to enenka) of the verb phero , “to carry. ” Prounikos could therefore evoke the meaning of “to carry in front, ” that is, to promote, to bring, to reveal, to bring to light. Prophero might mean to produce, and therefore to beget, to give birth.

To gain further background information, we must look back to the creation myths ascribed to the Ophites. Their myths, like other Gnostic groups, are remarkably erotic and build on the Genesis account while allegorizing it in a much broader, more metaphysical context. As Irenaeus explains, there was the “First Man, ” who is equated with the Monad called “Bythos, ” meaning “Depth. ” This “First Man ” emanated a female divinity called Ennoea, much like the myths and legends ascribed to Simon Magus and his female concubine sorceress, Helena. (We will also get to them later in another chapter). From their holy union, they generated the “Son of Man ” or the second man. Below the Son of Man is the Holy Spirit spoken of in feminine terms as the “First Woman ” (like Eve). Beneath the First Woman lay the elements of chaos and the Abyss. The First and Second Man delighted over the Holy Spirit, had intercourse with her, and begat a third power called “Christ. ” Irenaeus also says that all of these holy powers mentioned meet and congregate in an “incorruptible aeon ” likened to that of the “true and holy Church ” of the Pleroma.

To the Ophites, a power ejected by Sophia (through her “Sinistra, ” which could be a reference to her “left side ”) fell by “ebullition ” (bubbling, boiling, or bursting forth). Therefore, just like how she is described above, Sophia fell into the primordial waters of chaos and brought with her fragments of divine light. The primal waters immediately clung around these light particles as well as Sophia, and formed inferior bodies. Sophia regretted this course of action and grieved. She attempted to ascend back above to her mother, the Holy Spirit, but failed to do so because of the sheer weight of the watery matter she found herself entrapped in, like quicksand. Somehow in this chaotic primeval mess, the light that Sophia attempted to hide from the elements was taken away from her grasp and formed the material cosmos that we know. These spiritual particles are thus divided and dispersed throughout the universe.

In this formulation of the cosmos, a god-like power ejected from Sophia ’s womb, which in other Gnostic texts is described as an “abortion. ” This is much like how other Gnostic texts describe Ialdabaoth, particularly On the Origin of the World . This same text also describes how Sophia flowed within the chaos of the prima materia and gave birth to an archontic fetus, as well as water that ’s likened to afterbirth or the amniotic fluid, which “came into being out of the shadow and was cast aside. ” Simone Petrement explains the significance of this event:

Now Sophia gives birth to the Demiurge, and we see that, according to one version of the myth, her error was precisely to wish to give birth by herself, as God.

Here, Sophia acts like a feminized version of the Lucifer of Isaiah and Ezekiel . In another variation of the Sophia myth, the reason why Sophia fell was because she loved and desired God so much that she “always stretched herself farther out in front, ” throwing herself towards God in an imprudent way that was not permitted (Against Heresies . 1, 2, 2).

When her fetus, the Demiurge, was ejected, he stole a portion of Sophia ’s divine power and weakened her even further. He did not know that he was begotten from a parent and did not know any mother. Yet, he still had an unconscious desire for the light above him. This being, called “Ialdabaoth, ” then generated six sons. Together they all formed the “Hebdomad ” (a group of seven), much like how the aeons preceded each other with each successive generation in the light world above. Aside from Ialdabaoth, there was Iao, Sabaoth, Adoneus, Eloeus, Oreus and Astanphaeus. These beings are simply avatars of the Demiurge. Above these seven powers was, naturally, their grandmother Sophia, who resided in the eighth place, forming the “Ogdoad ” (a group of eight).

These powers represent the seven heavens and all the celestial beings that inhabit them, including the angels, archangels, potentates, thrones, and principalities. Ialdabaoth ’s sons proceeded to quarrel with one another over supremacy, indicating a war in the seven heavens was occurring. This caused Ialdabaoth to greatly grieve. He “casted his eyes upon the subjacent dregs of matter, ” and created a serpent-like being called “Nous ” (Greek for “Mind ”). This is similar to the “Naas ” of the Naassenes of Hippolytus.

Like Sophia, this serpent is said to engender “oblivion, wickedness, emulation, envy and death. ” One would think the Ophites would celebrate the serpent in this episode, but it appears that this serpent, described pejoratively as “crooked, ” is yet another cause of the fallen cosmos to deviate further from the ideal. Another Gnostic text, The Apocryphon of John , has many similarities (and differences) with Irenaeus ’ account of the Ophites. In particular, this text actually condemns the serpent as being part of the same order as the chief Archon, Ialdabaoth:

And I said to the savior, “Lord, was it not the serpent that taught Adam to eat? ” The savior smiled and said, “The serpent taught them to eat from wickedness of begetting, lust, (and) destruction, that he (Adam) might be useful to him. And he (Adam) knew that he was disobedient to him (the chief archon) due to light of the Epinoia which is in him, which made him more correct in his thinking than the chief archon. And (the latter) wanted to bring about the power which he himself had given him. And he brought a forgetfulness over Adam. ”

True to form, Ialdabaoth decided to boast in an outrageous, egotistical gesture that mirrored Jehovah ’s remarks in Isaiah 45:5:

I am father, and God, and above me there is no one.

This haughty remark earned him a smack-down from his mother, who “rebuked her haughty offspring, ” saying:

Do not lie, Ialdabaoth: for the father of all, the first Anthropos (man), is above you; and so is Anthropos the son of Anthropos.

Just as his claim to be the highest god is challenged, our Demiurge creates a distraction by proposing the creation of mankind to the other Archons:

Then, as all were disturbed by the unexpected proclamation, and as they were inquiring whence the noise proceeded, in order to lead them away and attract them to himself, Ialdabaoth exclaimed: “Come, let us make man after our image. ”

The latter is a reference from Genesis 1:26. Here the Ophite creation account of Adam and Eve begins. The six other powers then conspire to create the material body for Adam. Evidently, it was Sophia who gave these “authorities ” the idea to create a man (presumably Adam) of “immense size ” so that she “might empty them of their original power ” that had once belonged to her. But their creation was unable to stand and simply “[writhed] along the ground. ” This is much like Irenaeus ’ explanation of the Simonian heretic, Saturninus ’ doctrine about Adam, described in Against Heresies (1, 24):

He was accordingly formed, yet was unable to stand erect, through the inability of the angels to convey to him that power, but wriggled [on the ground] like a worm. Then the power above taking pity upon him, since he was made after his likeness, sent forth a spark of life, which gave man an erect posture, compacted his joints, and made him live.

The six powers decided to carry this man to Ialdabaoth so that he might breathe into him the “spirit of life. ” However, this was a plot covertly engineered by Sophia so that Ialdabaoth was secretly drained of the power he originally stole from her. These Gnostics believed that man contains within him nous (intelligence) and enthymesis (thought), which are purportedly the means by which man can attain salvation. This part of the story greatly mirrors Fragment 1 of Valentinus, when it says:

Something like fear overcame the angels in the presence of that modeled form (i.e. Adam) because he uttered things that were superior to what his origins justified, owing to the agent who had invisibly deposited a seed of higher essence and who spoke freely.

Ialdabaoth became full of envy and jealousy of this man. He decided to empty him of his thought and intellect, placing it in a woman of his own thought instead, so that this new creation would be more controllable. Sophia caught wind of this plot and decided to empty the first woman out of her power. Later, Eve showed up without much of an introduction, along with the angels. They decided to copulate with her after they admired her beauty, and proceeded to have sons with her. This echoes the story of the Watchers in The First Book of Enoch and in Genesis Chapter 6. Sophia decided to send a serpent of her own to “seduce ” Adam and Eve (like the angels did with Eve earlier) into transgressing Ialdabaoth ’s prohibition of not eating from the forbidden tree. By eating this fruit, they attained knowledge “of that power which is above all, and departed from those who had created them. ” Sophia saw that Ialdabaoth ’s creations had attained knowledge above his own, and rejoiced.

However, Ialdabaoth, like Jehovah in Genesis , casted Adam and Eve out from Eden because they chose to ignore his edict and follow Sophia ’s serpent ’s advice. In Genesis 3:22, the Lord declares, clearly to other gods, that “The man has now become like one of us, knowing good and evil. ” Jehovah expresses fear, “lest he reach out his hand and take also from the tree of life and eat, and live forever. ” The Lord seems concerned that, with the wisdom they gained from the Tree of Knowledge, Adam and Eve will realize that he ’s not the only god, and also that, if they gain immortality by eating from the Tree of Life, they will become gods as well, no longer under his control.

In the Ophite account, like the mysterious angels in Eden, Ialdabaoth also desired to copulate with Eve to produce more offspring. But he failed to do so because Sophia had secretly emptied both Adam and Eve of the light that was sprinkled on them. This seems to echo the account found in The Apocryphon of John , when it states that Ialdabaoth raped Eve and produced two sons, one called Eloim and the other Yave. The text equates these two animal-faced sons (bear and cat faces, respectively) with both Cain and Abel. However, the difference in the Ophite account is that Ialdabaoth was prevented from raping Eve. The same thing happens in On the Origin of the World , when Eve, the avatar of Sophia awakens Adam from his slumber as he walks on his two feet. Then the “Authorities ” decide to spoil and defile Eve to prevent her from returning to the “light. ” However, Eve laughs at their folly, put a “mist in their eyes ” and enters into the Tree of Life, literally becoming that tree, preventing the Archons from raping her. Perhaps this is where the alchemists got the idea of portraying their “Divine Sophia ” as sitting on the “Tree of Learning, ” the allegorical source of the “Elixir of Life. ”

From the Ophite version of Genesis , we learn that Adam and Eve were drained of this divine light, they were cursed and cast down from Heaven to the Earth, along with (presumably) Sophia ’s serpent. Perhaps Irenaeus was reading from On the

Origin of the World or Hypostasis of the Archons , which both practically tell the same story (but with some key differences). It seems to us that these Gnostic authors wrote their own satirical version of the Eden events as sort of a rejection of traditional Judaism while exposing the flaws of the Jewish god, promoting instead what he saw as an infinitely superior Platonic deity.

When the serpent was cast down from Heaven, he begat, as we said, six sons of his own power, based on the example of the Hebdomad (the seven heavens and the seven Archons that form this astral structure of fate). These six sons (as well as the serpent himself) eventually became the “seven mundane demons, ” that were said to oppose and resist the human race. When Adam and Eve were cast down from a presumably higher region in the cosmos, their spiritual bodies withered and darkened. They became sluggish in the world of matter, in comparison to the freedom they once had as spiritual beings. In the

Sethian Apocalypse of Adam , Seth ’s father Adam tells him a very similar story: Listen to my words, my son Seth. When God had created me out of the

earth, along with Eve, your mother, I went about with her in a glory which she had seen in the aeon from which we had come forth. She taught me a word of knowledge of the eternal God. And we resembled the great eternal angels, for we were higher than the god who had created us and the powers with him, whom we did not know.

The Gnostic-Hermeticist and alchemist Zosimos also made similar statements in On the Letter Omega, where he wrote:

When Light-Man (Phos) was in Paradise, expiring under the [presence of] Fate, they persuaded Him to clothe himself in the Adam they had made, the [Adam] of Fate, him of the four elements —as though [they said] being free from [her] ills and free from their activities. And He, on account of this “freedom from ills ” did not refuse; but they boasted as though He had been brought into servitude [to them].

At this point, Sophia saw Adam and Eve ’s plight, changed her mind and sprinkled the divine light upon them again, out of compassion. Anointed with this divine light, they recognized they were naked and enveloped in a material body, “and thus recognized that they bore death about with them. ” In On the Origin of the World , the earthly Adam and Eve were damned by the Archons after the expulsion from Paradise, it says, “since the rulers were envious of Adam they wanted to diminish their lifespan. ” As it turns out, the Archons weren ’t exactly successful because both Adam and Eve lived for almost 1,000 years (even according to the Gnostic texts). Immediately after this realization of their material, incomplete state, both Adam and Eve had sexual intercourse with one another and begat Cain and Abel. In this story, the Serpent actually possesses Cain, and fills him with “mundane oblivion, ” meaning ignorance. From the serpent ’s influence, Cain kills his brother Abel, introducing envy and murder into the world. In Rethinking Gnosticism , Michael Williams recounts this episode in his own way:

Livid with rage, Ialdabaoth throws Adam and Eve out of Paradise. But simply throwing them out will not change the fact of their superiority. He needs some device to increase human misery. The answer is sex. Ialdabaoth now implants the desire for intercourse in the humans. Ialdabaoth seduces Eve, begetting two mongrel powers, Cain and Abel, who are then given the responsibility of controlling the future herd of material bodies that can be expected to grow from the now libidinous couple. However, when Adam “knows ” Eve, their child is Seth, possessing like Adam the human image of God, and carrying the same spirit.

After this unfortunate incident, Sophia produces Seth, and then his sister, Norea, from whom, it is said, all of the human race (especially the “Gnostic

Race, ” i.e., the so-called “Sethians ”) descend. However, it is said that the human race went astray with apostasy, idolatry, ignorance, and overall hatred of the sacred mysteries of the “superior holy Hebdomad above. ”

The Ophites had two special names assigned to the serpent that was cast down: Michael and Samael. It isn ’t all that clear which serpent is given these names since there are two serpents in the Ophite account, but one may infer this serpent belongs to Sophia, since Ialdabaoth ’s serpent had already done his job of generating all things belonging to death (corruptible or imperfect matter). The name Michael being given to the serpent is peculiar, since it is the same name given to the archangel loyal to Jehovah who battles Satan in the form of a dragon in Revelation 12:7. He also appears in The First Book of Enoch and in the War Scroll among the Dead Sea Scroll literature. But Michael appears to be nothing more than a demonic creature to the Ophites. Samael is associated with the Serpent of Genesis , and with Lilith, as we know. In The Targum Pseudo-Jonathan (Targum meaning “explanations ” or paraphrases of the Torah) the text specifically calls the serpent “Sammael ”:

And the woman beheld Sammael, the angel of death, and was afraid; yet she knew that the tree was good to eat, and that it was medicine for the enlightenment of the eyes, and a desirable tree by means of which to understand. And she took of its fruit, and did eat; and she gave to her husband with her, and he did eat. And the eyes of both were enlightened, and they knew that they were naked, divested of the purple robe in which they had been created.

Samael is often referred as the angel of death, as seen in the above quotation. St. Paul, in 1 Corinthians 15:55 (NIV), taunts the angel of death when he says, “Where, O death, is your victory? Where, O death, is your sting? ” Samael also happens to be a name for the chief Archon, Ialdabaoth, in The Apocryphon of John and Hypostasis of the Archons , which would also explain why the Targum Pseudo-Jonathan condemns the serpent as being part of the same order as the chief Archon. Later in that text, Samael is described as being a great prince or archangel in Heaven, much like Lucifer. He descended to Earth riding upon the Serpent and deceived Eve by seducing her, impregnating her with Cain. As the text reads:

And Adam knew Eve his wife, that she had conceived from Sammael, the angel (of the Lord).

Another translation reads that Eve specifically lusted after Sammael, stating:

And Adam knew Hava his wife, who had desired the Angel; and she conceived, and bore Kain; and she said, I have acquired a man, the Angel of the Lord.

This mirrors, once again, The Apocryphon of John ’s account where Ialdabaoth seduces Eve and begets Cain and Abel. In The Apocalypse of Adam, Adam tells his son Seth, “Then the God who created us, created a son from himself and Eve, your mother. ” While Cain is not explicitly mentioned here, he is more than likely the stepson Adam is referring too. Cain is also referenced in On the Origin of the World , which proclaims the following:

Her offspring is the creature that is lord. Afterwards, the authorities called it “Beast ”, so that it might lead astray their modelled creatures. The interpretation of “the beast ” is “the instructor. ” For it was found to be the wisest of all beings. Now, Eve is the first virgin, the one who without a husband bore her first offspring. It is she who served as her own midwife.

Since this text builds on the Genesis tale, naturally, it references it, including Genesis 4:1 (KJV), which says, “And Adam knew Eve his wife; and she conceived, and bare Cain, and said, I have gotten a man from the LORD. ” Also note Cain being identified here as the “Beast, ” which corresponds to Genesis 3:2, where it says that the serpent is the “wisest of all the beasts, ” and also to The Zohar ’s designation of Samael and Lilith joined together as “the Beast. ” It becomes obvious that Cain is not the son of Adam, but the son of a fallen angel, just as the cabalists believed him to be of demonic origin. The Apocryphon of John also explains that Cain was one of the astral rulers of the Hebdomad of the Zodiac, as it states, “The sixth one is Cain, whom the generations of men call the sun. ”

As we mentioned, there is a Sethian group called the “Cainites, ” who supposedly revered Cain. In Against Heresies (1.31.1), Irenaeus explains that these Cainites believed the following:

Cain derived his being from the Power above, and [the Cainites] acknowledge that Esau, Korah, the Sodomites, and all such persons, are related to themselves. On this account, they add, they have been assailed by the Creator, yet no one of them has suffered injury. For Sophia was in the habit of carrying off that which belonged to her from them to herself. They declare that Judas the traitor was thoroughly acquainted with these things, and that he alone, knowing the truth as no others did, accomplished the mystery of the betrayal; by him all things, both earthly and heavenly, were thus thrown into confusion. They produce a fictitious history of this kind, which they style the Gospel of Judas .

This “fictitious history ” that the Cainites “style the Gospel of Judas ” turned out to be a real thing, as The Gospel of Judas is one of the four tractates found in Codex Tchacos , published in 2006. This has been a topic of controversy among scholars because of Judas ’s contradictory role in the gospel. Without getting into all the complicated details of this story, we can glean some insight from Epiphanius, who wrote many hostile polemics against various Gnostic groups and teachers, including the Cainites.

In the Panarion , Epiphanius bases his account of the Cainites off of Irenaeus ’ report, but adds some more details of his own. According to him, these Cainites honored the wicked and repudiated the good. They were said to be prone to libertine practices and to indulge in “every sin, ” similar to what we see much later in Medieval Satanism, and in the work of the Marquis De Sade. Panarion 1.38.1:6-2:2 states:

And they likewise forge certain other works against “Womb. ” They call this “Womb ” the maker of this entire vault of heaven and earth and say, as Carpocrates does, that no one will be saved unless they progress through all (possible) acts. For while each of them is doing some unspeakable thing supposedly with this excuse, performing obscenities and committing every sin there is, he invokes the name of each angel —both real angels, and the ones they fictitiously call angels. And he attributes some wicked commission of every sin on earth to each of them, by offering his own action in the name of whichever angel he wishes. And whenever they do these things they say, “This or that angel, I am performing thy work. This or that authority, I am doing thy deed. ”

These ritual “obscenities ” sound very close to the descriptions that anti- Christian Roman chroniclers gave of the “agape feasts ” (meaning “love feasts ”) celebrated by the early Christians, mentioned (without the obscenities) by St. Paul in 1 Corinthians 11:20-34. Also, some Gnostic groups like the Cainites were said to celebrate an orgiastic rite involving a nocturnal Eucharistic meal akin to the Last Supper. The rite itself reminds us of the Black Masses and Witches ’ Sabbaths of yore (which we will discuss more in a later chapter).

Supposedly, the Cainites considered Cain to be of a higher power and superior to Abel. Indeed, according to Birger Pearson in Gnosticism, Judaism and Egyptian Christianity , the reason why Cain became associated with Gnostic heresy was because he defied Jehovah ’s edict to sacrifice animals to him (although Genesis does not actually show him expressly demanding an offering of any sort, but just refusing to accept Cain ’s vegetarian sacrifice whilst favoring Abel ’s blood sacrifice instead). Pearson writes:

The Cainites venerated Cain as the divine power, rejected all moral conventions, and rejected the Law along with its God. And what, asks Friedlander, is ‘Christian ’ about that? The Alexandrian school provides the most plausible link for the origin of this heresy. Indeed, the Cainite sect was already well known to Philo. Friedlander quotes in this connection On the Posterity and Exile of Cain . In this text ‘Cain ’ is a symbol of heresy, and the specifics of the heresy represented by him are such that one can only conclude that Philo is arguing against a philosophizing sect characterized not only by constructing myths contrary to the truth, but by gross antinomianism. Philo speaks against these heretics precisely as Irenaeus speaks against the Gnostics. There can be no doubt that the heretics combated by Philo are the forerunners of the Christian Gnostics later combated by the Church Fathers.

The Sethians shared in the errors of the Ophites and Cainites, teaching that the world was created by angels and not by the highest God. The dynamis from on high came down into Seth after Abel ’s death, according to the Sethians, and many held Seth to be the Messiah.

Epiphanius also mentions that the Cainites authored a book called The Ascension of Paul , as well as The Gospel of Judas , but says nothing of their content. Epiphanius is more than likely referring to The Apocalypse of Paul , found in the Nag Hammadi codices. He writes:

But again, others forge another brief work in the name of the apostle Paul, full of unspeakable abominations, which the so-called Gnostics also use, (and) which they call an Ascension of Paul —taking their cue from the apostle ’s statement that he has ascended to the third heaven and heard ineffable words, which man may not speak. And these, they say, are the ineffable words.

Apparently, these Cainites were big on St. Paul, which would explain the hostility for the twelve apostles in The Gospel of Judas as well as its very Pauline interpretation of the crucifixion. In her book The Thirteenth Apostle: What the Gospel of Judas Really Says , April DeConick states that the author of The Gospel of Judas had a Marcionite bent to him. DeConick compares the text ’s criticisms of the twelve apostles and their perpetuation of Jewish ritual sacrifice to Marcion ’s condemnation of the Christian Church. These twelve apostles could also be interpreted as corresponding to the twelve signs of the Zodiac, which The Apocryphon of John says the Archons rule over. The Cainites supposedly interpreted the Crucifixion as Christ overcoming the oppression of the body, and hence the overthrowing of the

Archons, much like what Paul taught. Everything Epiphanius says conforms to what The Gospel of Judas says.

“No, he betrayed him even though he was good, in accordance with the heavenly knowledge. For the archons knew, ” they say, “that if Christ were surrendered to the cross the weaker power [the Demiurge] would be drained. And when Judas found this out, ” they say, “he eagerly did everything he could to betray him, performing a good work for our salvation. And we must commend him and give him the credit, since the salvation of the cross was effected for us through him, and for that reason the revelation of the things on high. ”

Epiphanius also writes more about the Cainite account of Jesus ’ passion and crucifixion (1.38.3:1-2):

But they too interweave the same mythology with their gift of ignorance about these same deadly poisons by advising their followers that everyone must choose the stronger power, and separate from the lesser, feeble one —that is, from the one which made heaven, the flesh and the world —and rise above it to the uttermost heights through the crucifixion of Christ. For this is why he came from above, they say, so that the stronger power might act in him by triumphing over the weaker and betraying the body.

Now, let us compare this with The Gospel of Judas , from the National Geographic translation, where Jesus says to Judas: “You will exceed all of them. For you will sacrifice the man that clothes me. ” April DeConick ’s translation of this passage is remarkably different:

Truly, I say to you Judas, those [who] offer sacrifices to Saklas < several lines missing > everything that is evil. Yet you will do worse than all of them. For the man that clothes me, you will sacrifice him.

The idea that the Cainites glorified Cain is what the heresiologists claimed, but whether or not the Cainites were even a real sect is disputable. More than likely they are an invention of the heresiologists. The mere fact that the Church Fathers accused this group of having reverence for Cain, Korah, and the Sodomites, is revealing. The arch-heretic Marcion is also accused of doing this same thing when Irenaeus says he taught that Christ saved Cain and the other sinners from Hell, while Abel and the righteous Old Testament patriarchs couldn ’t be saved. In Against Heresies (1.27.3) we read:

In addition to his blasphemy against God Himself, he advanced this also, truly speaking as with the mouth of the devil, and saying all things in direct opposition to the truth—that Cain, and those like him, and the Sodomites, and the Egyptians, and others like them, and, in fine, all the nations who walked in all sorts of abomination, were saved by the Lord, on His descending into Hades, and on their running unto

Him, and that they welcomed Him into their kingdom. But the serpent which was in Marcion declared that Abel, and Enoch, and Noah, and those other righteous men who sprang from the patriarch Abraham, with all the prophets, and those who were pleasing to God, did not partake in salvation. For since these men, he says, knew that their God was constantly tempting them, so now they suspected that He was tempting them, and did not run to Jesus, or believe His announcement: and for this reason he declared that their souls remained in Hades.

It seems probable that these so-called Cainites blended Sethian and Ophite beliefs with that of Marcionite Christianity. In the Panarion (1.42.4:2-4), Epiphanius writes against Marcion and also said some similar things about him, but added more details on his views about the Old Testament prophets:

And he says that Christ has descended from on high, from the invisible

Father who cannot be named, for the salvation of souls and the confusion of the God of the Jews, the Law, the prophets, and anything of the kind. The Lord has gone down even to Hades to save Cain, Korah, Dathan, Abiram, Esau, and all the gentiles who had not known the God of the Jews. But he has left Abel, Enoch, Noah, Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, Moses, David, and Solomon there because, as he says, they recognized the God of the Jews, the maker and creator, and have done what is congenial to him, and did not devote themselves to the invisible God.

While the heresiologists accused the Cainites of libertinism, The Gospel of Judas condemns licentious sex, particularly homosexuality (accusing the priests of the early Church of this sin). So the author, and most likely the sect that it was written for, was ascetic. In The Gospel of Judas , the title character has a role invested in eschatological events that will ensue after Jesus is crucified. The “thirteenth aeon ” is the realm of the Demiurge in Sethian cosmology. At one point in the text, Judas has a vision of a house where the “unshakeable generation ” dwells, and Jesus says that Judas isn't allowed to enter it or to ever be part of the unshakeable generation. Instead, he ’s said to be the earthly counterpart of the Demiurge, Sakla, who dwells in the thirteenth aeon. Although he predicts that the other apostles and future Christians will condemn Judas, Jesus also prophecies that they will mistakenly worship him by celebrating the crucifixion as a sacrifice to the Demiurge.

So even though Christians condemn him, it was predicted that Judas would secretly reign over them in the thirteenth aeon, because orthodox Christians ignorantly worship Sakla as the true god. The author of The Gospel of Judas is essentially mocking the Christian clergy as incompetent fools who believe that they are serving Jesus when they are actually serving the Demiurge. It is a polemical gospel. The Sethian-Cainite author didn ’t write it to redeem Judas as the only good apostle. He was mocking Christians for being like Judas, saying that they sacrificed Christ to the Demiurge through the

Eucharist, just as Judas sacrificed Jesus to the Demiurge through the crucifixion. According to DeConick, the Sethians parodied the idea of Christ's sacrifice on the cross as a really bad joke. In the parodies, Jesus is given as a human sacrifice to the demon Ialdabaoth. Sacrifice itself was seen as an intensely negative thing by these Gnostics.

Also in this text, Jesus at one point says that the unshakeable generation is not under the influence of the stars, but later tells Judas to follow his star and crucify him. This is because Judas isn't part of the unshakeable generation (the Sethians), so he ’s doomed to the fate that has been assigned him by the Archons. However, even though Judas and the Demiurge (Sakla) want to kill Jesus, it is predicted that Jesus will actually defeat them by deceiving them into crucifying “the man who bears him, ” the counterfeit material body. Judas is basically a tool being used by Jesus to defeat the Archons, but he will never be part of the seed of

Seth. He is trapped in the thirteenth aeon, and will likely be destroyed along with the rest of the Archons at the final conflagration.

The Ophites are also mentioned in another significant source outside of Irenaeus, in the Church Father Origen 's refutation of Celsus, called Contra Celsus . Celsus was an Epicurean philosopher, who published a work against Christianity called The True Doctrine . Seventy years after its publication, The True Doctrine was so widely circulated that St. Ambrosius hired Origen to refute Celsus ' relentless attacks. The True Doctrine gives us a sneak peak at the beliefs and doctrines of not only the early church but also the Ophites in particular.

The True Doctrine was written to oppose what Celsus viewed as the "false word " of Christian doctrine. Many of Celsus ' arguments as an Epicurean philosopher mirror some of the logic and arguments one may hear out of modern-day critics of the Bible and Christianity. However, the "Christians " he was directing his attacks against were not the kind one would expect. In fact, the doctrines he described throughout the True Doctrine belongs to a specific kind, and that would be, of course, the Ophite Gnostics. One may note that Celsus did not make any differentiation between the Ophite heretics and other types of Christians, considering them one and the same group. Perhaps back in the second century, such a distinction wasn 't even made yet. It was Origen who called these special Christians "Ophites " or "Orphians. " Celsus also describes the ancient Christian cult in whole as a diabolical secret society made up of sorcerers! He said:

It is by the names of certain demons, and by the use of incantations, that the Christians appear to be possessed of miraculous power. And it was by means of sorcery that Jesus was able to accomplish the wonders which he performed; and foreseeing that others would attain the same knowledge, and do the same things, making a boast of doing them by help of the power of God, he excludes such from his kingdom. If they are justly excluded, while he himself is guilty of the same practices, he is a wicked man; but if he is not guilty of wickedness in doing such things, neither are they who do the same as he.

These Ophites apparently had a diagram which mapped out their

cosmology for magical ritual purposes, which Celsus described as having:

… ten circles, distinct from each other, but united by one circle, which was said to be the soul of all things, and was called “Leviathan ”: the soul which had travelled through all things! I observed, also, in the diagram, the being named “Behemoth, ” placed as it were under the lowest circle. The inventor of this diagram had inscribed this leviathan at its circumference and center, thus placing its name in two separate places. Moreover, the diagram was divided by a thick black line, and this line was called Gehenna, which is Tartarus.

Clearly, the parallels between the Ophite diagram, which Celsus said had ten circles, and the cabalistic Tree of Life, made up of ten spheres, are significant. Celsus ’ True Doctrine suggests that the form of the Tree had been imposed on the whole diagram. The Jewish scholar Gershom Scholem has suggested that the Tree of Life diagram entered Jewish esoteric teaching from Hellenistic-Egyptian traditions in the centuries before Christianity. This may also be connected to the seven-headed form of the Gnostic god Iao in the fourth sphere (as discussed in The Apocryphon of John), that of the sun. This also includes the rest of the Zodiacal powers.

Celsus described two different Ophite diagrams which depict their cosmology, similar to the account given in The Apocryphon of John . As seen above, the drawing depicted the seven cosmic spheres ruled by the Archons, each symbolizing an aspect of the Demiurge enclosed within a large outer circle called the Leviathan. In the innermost circle lay the netherworlds of evil: Hades, Tartarus, Gehenna and Behemoth. Celsus also wrote that the seven heavens are controlled by angelic powers that take on the forms of beasts, as we will see below. These are the same angelic rulers which the Christian Gnostic Saturninus of Antioch describes as the “seven angels who made the world. ”

Also from Celsus, we learn that the Ophite Demiurge had the head of a lion and was connected with Saturn as one of the “fixed stars ” or “lofty gates ” that the soul must pass through on its way to the Pleroma (the “Fullness of Being ” that is the Gnostic version of Heaven). Celsus wrote about these cosmic gateways, which the soul encounters in its astral journey, thusly:

The first gate they assign to Saturn, indicating by the “lead ” [the metal associated with Saturn] the slowness of this star; the second to Venus, comparing her to the splendor and softness of tin; the third to Jupiter, being firm and solid; the fourth to Mercury, for both Mercury and iron are fit to endure all things, and are money-making and laborious; the fifth to Mars, because, being composed of a mixture of metals, it is varied and unequal; the sixth, of silver, to the Moon; the seventh, of gold, to the Sun— thus imitating the different colors of the two latter.

The scholar Andrei Orlov, in his Divine Scapegoats: Demonic Mimesis in Early Jewish Mysticism , compared The Second Book of Enoch ’s account of the cosmic spheres, the creation of man, and the bodily correspondences with those found in The Corpus Hermeticum and Gnostic texts like The Apocryphon of John . Orlav quotes from The Second Book of Enoch 30: 4-5, where God creates and sets in motion the fixed stars, being the “great lights ” and “heavenly circles. ”

On the first uppermost circle I placed the stars, Kruno, and on the second Aphrodit, on the third Aris, on the fifth Zoues, on the sixth Ermis, on the seventh lesser the moon, and adorned it with the lesser stars. And on the lower I placed the sun for the illumination of day, and the moon and stars for the illumination of night.

Names like Kruno, Aphrodit, Aris, and Zoues are obviously corrupted versions of the Greek gods. From The Second Book of Enoch , we have Saturn, Venus, Mars, the Sun, Jupiter, Mercury and the Moon. This is actually very similar to the Ophite model as taken above, which presents them in this order: Saturn, Venus, Jupiter, Mercury, Mars, Moon, Sun. The Ophite order, reported by Origen and Celsus, begins with Saturn and ends with the Sun. While they are not exactly the same, both The Second Book of Enoch and the Ophites have similar orders, in that they both begin with Saturn. In the late Christian Gnostic text, Pistis Sophia (5.138), we have the same planetary gods named after the Olympians who rule over other lesser demons. As it says, “the first is called Kronos, the second Ares, the third Hermes, the fourth Aphrodite, the fifth Zeus. ”

We also see this type of planetary arrangement with Egyptian deities. In their view, most of the planets were themselves ruled by other gods of the pantheon. Their arrangement was: Saturn-Horus; Mars-Re; Mercury-Set; Venus- Osiris. Interestingly, Thoth was not associated with Mercury until well into the Greco-Roman era.

The illustration above is taken from E. Wallis Budge ’s 1904 book The Gods of the Egyptians.

On the subject of Celsus, what is most striking about his description of the Ophite diagram is the exact order of the “seven ruling demons, ” which he proceeds to describe (emphasis added):

The goat was shaped like a lion. Again, the second in order is a bull, the third an amphibious sort of animal, and one that hissed frightfully [generally taken to be a dragon]; moreover, the fourth had the form of an eagle; again, the fifth had the countenance of a bear. To continue the account, the sixth was described as having the face of a dog; the seventh had the countenance of an ass. Moreover, if any one would wish to become acquainted with the artifices of those sorcerers, *through which they desire to lead men away by their teaching as if they possessed the knowledge of certain secret rites, but are not at all successful in so doing, let him listen to the instruction which they receive after passing through what is termed the “fence of wickedness ” —gates which are subjected to the world of ruling spirits.*

The above sequence seems to be drawn from the figures of four “cherubim ” of Ezekiel ’s vision, to which three new personages were added, for a total of seven. Ezekiel ’s vision of the “Tetramorph ” (as it ’s called) was of four creatures, having the heads of a man, a bull, a lion and an eagle, each attached to one of the sides of God ’s “chariot, ” or traveling throne. St. Jerome saw them as symbolic of the Four Evangelists of the Gospels: Matthew, Mark, Luke and John. However, it is likely influenced by Sumerian stories of a creature called

“Lamassu, ” depicted as either a bull or a lion with a human head and a bird ’s wings. Four images of this creature were often placed at the entrances to buildings in ancient Sumer, each facing one of the four cardinal directions. It is unknown if there is any connection here with Lamasthu, the aforementioned Akkadian name for Lilith. Lamashtu was depicted as a hybrid also, with a lion ’s head, donkey teeth, and bird talons.

This brings to mind Celsus ’ mention in the above passage of a “goat… shaped like a lion, ” which is highly reminiscent of the caprine imagery of Levi ’s Baphomet, and the leonine symbolism associated with the Gnostic Demiurge, Ialdabaoth. Also note the words of the third article of the “Thelemite Gnostic Catholic Creed ” that is recited by all the congregants in the Gnostic Mass ritual of Aleister Crowley ’s Ordo Templi Orientis (performed by their church arm, the “Ecclesia Gnostica Catholica ”):

And I believe in the Serpent and the Lion, Mystery of Mystery, in His name BAPHOMET. And I believe in one Gnostic and Catholic Church of Light, Life, Love and Liberty, the Word of whose Law is THELEMA. And I believe in the communion of Saints. And, forasmuch as meat and drink are transmuted in us daily into spiritual substance, I believe in the Miracle of the Mass. And I confess one Baptism of Wisdom whereby we accomplish the Miracle of Incarnation. And I confess my life one, individual, and eternal that was, and is, and is to come. AUMGN, AUMGN, AUMGN.

So here the lion-headed serpent, specifically distinguished as Ialdabaoth in The Apocryphon of John , is identified with Baphomet. This is interesting, considering that Ialdabaoth is condemned in Gnostic literature, while Baphomet is wholly embraced by the members of the OTO ’s “Ecclesia Gnostica Catholica ” (the “Gnostic Catholic Church ”). Considering their anti-Christian, essentially Satanic bent, it seems strange for them to be praising the imagery of the Demiurge, but there is a deeper mystery here, as we shall see in due course.

Related to this subject, Hammer-Purgstall wrote in Mysterium Baphomet Revelatum about some of the idols that he found (of “Mete ” or Baphomet, he believed) that showed the figure wearing a girdle made from what looks like the hide of a lion, including the creature ’s face, which is worn at the front, around the waist. He presumed that these represented lions that had been sacrificed, connecting this to an image he found of what looked to him like a lion being killed. He wrote:

At the third station… a lion is perceived whom a Templar slaughters, with the assistance of three dogs, of which one grabs the lion from behind. This is the triumph of Gnosis, or of the spiritual Ophitic doctrine, over the religion of the god Sabaoth, who among the Gnostics is named Jaldabaoth , and under the form of a lion or a dragon, is trampled underfoot.

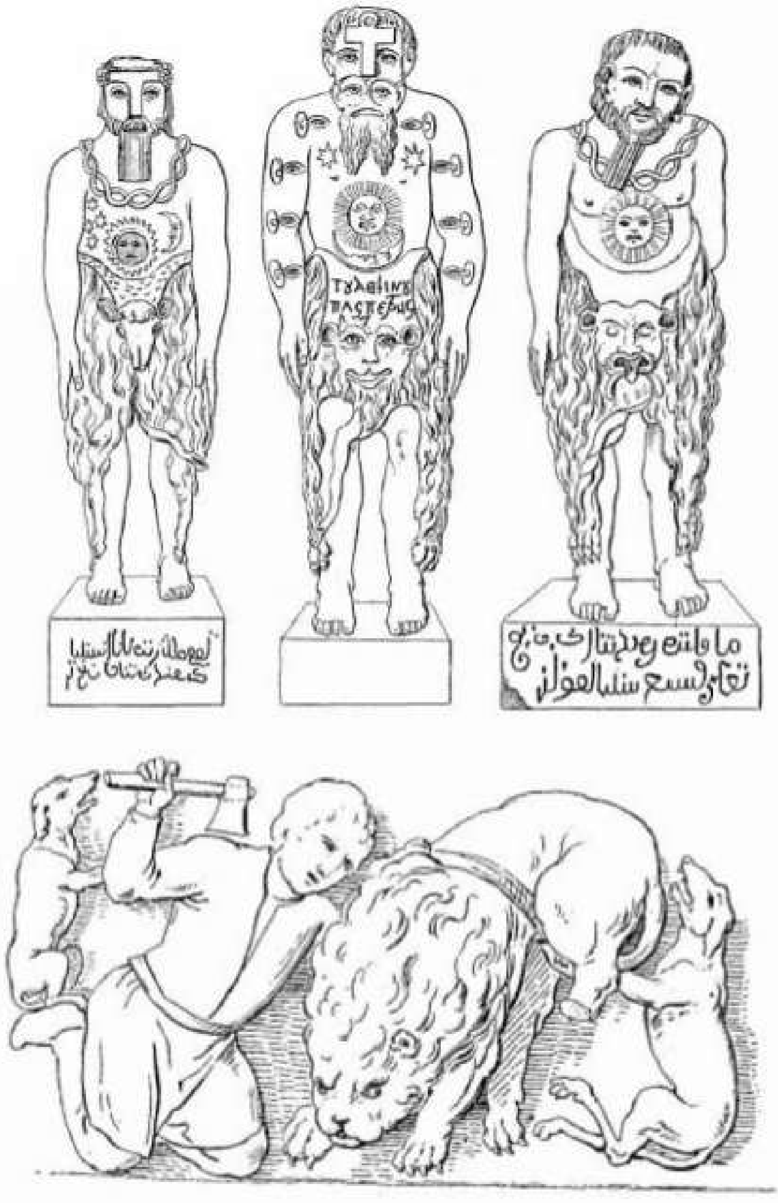

Images from *Hammer-Purgstall's Mysterium Baphometis Revelatum*. Above: Idols of Mete wearing the pelts of sacrificed lions. Below: according to Hammer-Purgstall, a dog mounts a man from behind while he slaughters a lion.

Returning to Celsus, his description of the various world-ruling demonic Archons also brings to mind the astral “aerial toll houses ” of the Eastern Orthodox Church and The First Apocalypse of James , which goes into great detail on how to deal with these “toll-collectors ” of the seven heavens when one dies and crosses over. This same idea of travelling through the cosmic spheres of the spirit world originates in The Egyptian Book of the Dead , where it lists the dangerous “judges ” encountered during the post-mortem journey of the soul. In the Gnostic version, those who have cultivated the knowledge of the “resurrection ” within them can escape the judgment of the Demiurge. As Simone Petrement explains in A Separate God :

For the Gnostics the one who has knowledge will not be judged. This idea is often expressed in mythological form: when those who have knowledge die, they will cross the Hebdomad, the realm of the God of the Old Testament, who is the God who judges, without injury. The idea underlying this mythology could have come directly from John. It could also come from Paul, for whom the one who has faith escapes the destruction of the world, which is the judgement.

In Against Heresies (1.13.6), Irenaeus writes about how the Marcosians (the Gnostic followers of Marcus the Magician) would engage in initiation rituals meant to deliver them from the authority of the Demiurge, as well as his earthly representative authorities, by the cultivation of this special type of experiential knowledge. For the Orthodox Christians, the Demiurge, in the form of Jehovah, is worthy of worship, while the Gnostics and Valentinians repudiated this idea by saying he was simply an inferior angelic power and that there is a God above the creator. As Elaine Pagels puts it in The Gnostic Gospels :

Gnosis offers nothing less than a theological justification for refusing to obey the bishops and priests! The initiate now sees them as the “rulers and powers ” who rule on earth in the demiurge ’s name. The gnostic admits that the bishop, like the demiurge, exercises legitimate authority over most

Christians—those who are uninitiated. But the bishop's demands, warnings, and threats, like those of the demiurge himself, can no longer touch the one who has been “redeemed. ”

To this, we must add some more words from Irenaeus:

For they affirm, that because of the “ Redemption ” it has come to pass that they can neither be apprehended, nor even seen by the judge. But even if he should happen to lay hold upon them, then they might simply repeat these words, while standing in his presence along with the “Redemption ”: O you, who sits beside God, and the mystical, eternal Sige, you through whom the angels (mightiness), who continually behold the face of the Father, *having you as their guide and introducer, do derive their forms from above, which she in the greatness of her daring inspiring with mind on account of the goodness of the Propator, produced us as their images, having her mind then intent upon the things above, as in a dream —behold, the judge is at hand, and the crier orders me to make my defense. But do you, as being acquainted with the affairs of both, present the cause of both of us to the judge, inasmuch as it is in reality but one cause. Now, as soon as the Mother hears these words, she puts the Homeric helmet of Pluto upon them, so that they may invisibly escape the judge. And then she immediately catches them up, conducts them into the bridal chamber, and hands them over to their consorts.*

John Yarker interprets Ophite astral initiations in a much similar manner in his book The Arcane Schools , where he writes:

In the “Ritual of the Dead, ” which is of incalculable antiquity, there are certain chapters which refer to secrets of Initiation, which the translators have not mastered, and which have reference to the passwords required by the Guards of the heavenly temple or Amenti, from the aspiring soul, these are illustrated in the Ophite Ritual. To some extent the doctrine corresponds with that of the Mandeans, or followers of John the Baptist. Symbols to represent purity, life, spirit, fire have to be shewn to the Guards. We may imagine such to be the cube, tau-cross, pentagon, or other symbols. The soul greets the first power saying: ‘I come from thence pure, a portion of the light of the son and father. ” To prove this, the sign must be shewn, as well to every Archon, that the soul passes.

Celsus describes in great detail on how the Ophite initiates were instructed and recited certain “password ” statements to each Archon, including Ialdabaoth:

They next imagine that he who has passed through Ialdabaoth and arrived at Iao ought thus to speak: “Thou, O second Iao, who shinest by night, who art the ruler of the secret mysteries of son and father, first prince of death, and portion of the innocent, bearing now mine own beard as symbol, I am ready to pass through thy realm, having strengthened him who is born of thee by the living word. Grace be with me; father, let it be with me.

This is very reminiscent of The Sacred Book of Hermes , which contains prayers to the decans for aid. The decans were 36 bright star constellations seen along the ecliptic. These were used as a special calendar by the Egyptians, as each decan would rise above the dawn horizon for ten days every year. Each of the decans rules over 10 degrees of the Zodiac, and so each forms a “decad. ” In most extant Egyptian and Hermetic literature the decans are described as gods. Praying to them was common from ancient times to the Renaissance, but now they are ignored by most modern astrologers. In Astrological Medicine in Gnostic

Traditions , *Grant Adamson writes,*

In the Sacred Book of Hermes , the decans are to be reverenced and flattered. They are not called daemons. There is even a sense that the decans are positive and the zodiac is negative. The zodiac brings about suffering, which the decans heal. In order to avoid or stop a headache, for example, brought about by Aries, the prescribed gemstone amulet had to be worn when Chenlachori, the first decan of Aries, was most visible in the sky after crossing the eastern horizon and therefore most likely to look down and see its name and especially its iconography engraved on the gem. In order to counteract zodiacal influence, the practitioner reverenced and flattered the decans by displaying the proper amulet.

This is interesting in light of what we find in The Corpus Hermeticum Chapter 13, where the stars of the Zodiac are the “tormentors ” (being identified with the Archons) which must be transcended, and the “Decad ” is what causes them to flee. Perhaps the “Decad ” here actually refers to the decans. They seem to play a part in the rebirth ritual that Hermeticists are known to have performed. According to Corpus Hermeticum II:6 the Decans are exalted above all stars, and surround the “Hebdomad ” (the seventh “aeon, ” or realm, of existence). They may perhaps fit into the “Ogdoad, ” the eighth aeon, which Sophia resides in, or between the Hebdomad and the Ogdoad. As the text states:

And further, my son, you must understand that the Decans are exempt from the things that befall the other stars. They are not checked in their course and brought to a standstill, nor hindered and made to move backwards, as the planets are; nor yet are they as are the other stars. They are free, and exalted above all things; and as careful guardians and overseers of the universe, they go round it in the space of a night and a day.

To counteract the influence of one demon, one must invoke a superior one. In many ways, the Hermetica has a lot in common with the Gnostic myths of the Nag Hammadi Library and the ones described by Church Fathers like Irenaeus. In the “Hellenistic Astrology ” entry on the “Internet Encyclopedia of Philosophy, ” it succinctly describes the Hermetic cosmology as almost identical with the Ophite view. The only difference was that, to the Hermeticists, the Demiurge was more or less a good guy created by a higher god, instead of a complete villain. As it says on the website:

In the Poimandres text, God made man in his own image, but also made a

creator god (demiurge) who made seven administrators (the planets) whose government is Fate. Man, being two-fold, is both immortal, … above the celestial government, and mortal, so also a slave within the system, for he shares a bit of the nature of each of the planets. At death the soul of the individual who recognizes their immortal, intellectual, and divine self ascends, while gradually surrendering the various qualities accumulated during the descent: the body is given to dissolution; the character (ethos) is yielded to the daimon (cf. Heraclitus, Fr. 119); and through each the seven planetary zones, a portion of the incarnated self that is related to the negative astrological meaning of each planet (e.g., arrogance to the Sun, greed to Jupiter) is given back to that zone. Arriving at the eighth zone, the soul is clothed in its own power (perhaps meaning its own astral body), while it is deified (in God) in the zone above the eighth.

As we have seen, many Gnostic sects were influenced by the Ophites, most notably the Naassenes. They are named, along with the Peratae and the Sethians (or “Sithians ”), as Gnostic heretics by Hippolytus in Refutation of All Heresies. In Thrice-Great Hermes (Vol. 1), GRS Mead explains the true significance of Hippolytus ’ voluminous revelations on the secret mystery school doctrines of the pagans and their influence on the Gnostic heretics.

The missing Books II. and III. dealt respectively with the doctrines and mysteries of the Egyptians and with those of the Chaldaeans. Hippolytus (Proem.) boasts that he has divulged all their mysteries, as well as the secrets of those Christian mystics whom he stigmatises as heretics, and to whom he devotes Books V.-IX. It is a curious fact that it is precisely those Books wherein this divulging of the Mysteries was attempted, which should be missing; not only have they disappeared, but in the Epitome at the beginning of Book X. the summary of their contents is also omitted. This seems almost to point to a deliberate removal of just that information which would be of priceless value to us to-day, not only for the general history of the evolution of religious ideas, but also for filling in an important part of the background of the environment of infant Christianity.

Why, then, were these books cut out? Were the subsequent Christian Orthodox deterred by religious scruples, or were they afraid to circulate this information? Hippolytus himself seems to have had no such hesitation; he is ever delightedly boasting that he is giving away to the multitude the most sacred secrets of others; it seems to have been his special metier to cry aloud on the house-tops what had been whispered in their secret chambers. It was for him a delicious triumph over “error ” to boast, “I have your secret documents, and I am going to publish them! ”

Hippolytus seems to trip over himself trying to demonstrate that Naassene doctrines are ripped straight from the ancient mystery schools. To prove this assertion, he quotes at length various pagan hymns from a secret document of one of their schools, which he is very eager to expose. To Hippolytus, by revealing heresies that had been corrupting the Church, he thought he could weaken their movement. Accordingly, he wrote:

These doctrines, then, the Naasseni attempt to establish, calling themselves

Gnostics. But since the error is many-headed and diversified, resembling, in truth, the hydra that we read of in history; when, at one blow, we have struck off the heads of this (delusion) by means of refutation, employing the wand of truth, we shall entirely exterminate the monster.

Again, the Naassenes themselves drew inspiration from a variety of sources, including the pagan mysteries of Orpheus, Demeter and Kore, Dionysius, the Great Mother and Attis (the Phrygian fertility god), and even Egyptian deities like Isis and Osiris. To the Naassenes, Jesus Christ was just another god they venerated, belonging to the secretive Christian mystery cult. In other words, it would appear that they were polytheists. Apparently, they used The Gospel of Thomas as well as many other apocryphal books which are now lost to us.

So not only were the Naassenes acquainted with the pagan mysteries, but also, in seems, with Jewish and Christian scripture. Hippolytus says that they considered Jesus a hermaphroditic being, just like the Ophites did. They claimed that he was an embodiment of three natures (spirit, soul, and flesh), just as we commonly see in the writings of Paul and Matthew, as well as in Valentinian scripture. This reflects their main system of anthropomorphic theology where humanity is divided into three natures, being the “angelic, psychical, and earthly. ” As Hippolytus put it:

All these qualities, however —rational, and psychical, and earthly —have, (the Naassene) says, retired and descended into one man simultaneously — Jesus, who was born of Mary.

It is also pertinent to look at what Hippolytus referred to as being key to

understanding their cosmological systems, which was this hymn recited at one of their secret rituals:

The world ’s producing law was Primal Mind, And next was First-born ’s outpoured Chaos; And third, the soul received its law of toil: Encircl ’d, therefore, with an acqueous form, With care o ’erpowered it succumbs to death. Now holding sway, it eyes the light, And now it weeps on misery flung; Now it mourns, now it thrills with joy; Now it wails, now it hears its doom; Now it hears its doom, now it dies, And now it leaves us, never to return. It, hapless straying, treads the maze of ills. But Jesus said, Father, behold, A strife of ills across the earth Wanders from your breath (of wrath); But bitter Chaos (man) seeks to shun, And knows not how to pass it through. On this account, O Father, send me; Bearing seals, I shall descend; Through ages whole I ’ll sweep, All mysteries I ’ll unravel, And forms of Gods I ’ll show; And secrets of the saintly path, Styled Gnosis, I ’ll impart.

The Naassenes also applied Ophite astrology in one of their sermons, while treating Osiris as a symbol for the primordial waters which gave rise to matter at creation. The seven veils of Isis are equated with the planets, who preside over the realm of generation and human existence, much like the Ophite

Archons. As it says:

These, however, are not anything else than what by her of the seven dresses and sable robe was sought and snatched away, namely, the pudendum of Osiris. And they say that Osiris is water. But the seven-robed nature, encircled and arrayed with seven mantles of ethereal texture — for so they call the planetary stars, allegorizing and denominating them ethereal robes —is as it were the changeable generation, and is exhibited as the creature transformed by the ineffable and unportrayable, and inconceivable and figureless one. And this, (the Naassene) says, is what is declared in Scripture, The just will fall seven times, and rise again. (Proverbs 24:16; Luke 17:4) For these falls, he says, are the changes of the stars, moved by Him who puts all things in motion.

Naturally, the Naassenes interpreted the Christian scriptures within a strong philosophical and Gnostic context. They had a habit of mixing pagan heroes, culture and myth with the Old and New Testament. For example, Hippolytus tells us that the Naassenes venerated Attis of the Phrygian mysteries, the god of eunuchs, vegetation and resurrection, as a symbol of the spiritual man who avoids sexual intercourse. He was also strongly associated with the “liberty cap, ” worn in the Roman Empire by slaves who had been freed. All slaves were temporarily liberated during the December festival of Saturnalia, in which the rules of society were turned upside-down. Christmas is based in part on this holiday, which is why Santa Claus wears a liberty cap. It has long been used the world over as a symbol of various revolutionary movements. According to alchemist Fulcanelli in The Mystery of the Cathedrals: Esoteric Interpretation of the Hermetic Symbols of The Great Work , this hat was connected with mystery schools of not just the Phrygians but also the cult of Mithras, and later the Freemasons. It is now part of the official seals of the US Army and the US Senate. Fulcanelli wrote:

The Phrygian cap, which was worn by the sans-culottes and acted as a sort of protective talisman in the midst of the revolutionary slaughter [in the French revolution], was a distinctive sign of the Initiates. In the analysis … the scholar Pierre Dujols writes that for the grade of the Epopt (in the Eleusinian Mysteries) the new member was asked whether he felt in himself the strength, the will and the devotion necessary for him to set his hand to the GREAT WORK. Then a red cap was put on his head, while this formula was pronounced: “Cover yourself with this cap, it is worth more than a king ’s crown. ” Few suspected that this hat, called liberia in the Mithraic rituals and which formerly denoted the freed slaves, was a masonic symbol and the supreme mark of Initiation. It is not therefore surprising to see it represented on our coins and our public monuments.

By invoking Attis as well as the universal symbol of the serpent in their writings, the Naassenes inferred a great deal of phallic symbolism in their exposition of the mysteries. Even if Attis was castrated and the penis of Osiris was unrecovered, this phallic imagery was present everywhere, and this sect of co-religionists and syncretic Gnostics co-opted every bit of it that they could get their hands on. Hippolytus wrote:

The Phrygians denominate this same also corpse —buried in the body, as it were, in a mausoleum and tomb. This, he says, is what has been declared, You are whited sepulchres, full, he says, of dead men ’s bones within,

(Matthew 23:27) because there is not in you the living man. And again he exclaims, The dead shall start forth from the graves, (Matthew 27:52-53) that is, from the earthly bodies, being born again spiritual, not carnal. For this, he says, is the Resurrection that takes place through the gate of heaven, through which, he says, all those that do not enter remain dead.

These same Phrygians, however, he says, affirm again that this very (man), as a consequence of the change, (becomes) a god. For, he says, he becomes a god when, having risen from the dead, he will enter into heaven through a gate of this kind. Paul the apostle, he says, knew of this gate, partially opening it in a mystery, and stating that he was caught up by an angel, and ascended as far as the second and third heaven into paradise itself; and that he beheld sights and heard unspeakable words which it would not be possible for man to declare. (2 Corinthians 12:2.)

Notice how the Naassenes exgeticized a great deal about “gateways. ” Unlike Marcion, the Naassenes held a particular reverence for the Old Testament. They also had a tendency to allegorize such scriptures, and claimed that the Genesis creation account was representative of the human body. Simon Magus is said to do the same thing in his Apophasis Megale , otherwise known as The Great Announcement , also discussed by Hippolytus, which we will analyze in the next chapter. Eden, for them, was the brain, while the four rivers of Eden represented the senses. The human body itself was described as “a creation of clay, that they may serve the

Demiurge of this creation, Ialdabaoth, a fiery God, a fourth number; for so they call the Demiurge and father of the formal world… . ”

These Naassenes also seemed to have high esteem for Hermes Trismegistus, and considered him a figure of the Logos (the “divine word ”), as well as a psychopompus (guide to the underworld). Hippolytus tells us:

For we behold, says (the Naassene), statues of Mercury, of such a figure honoured among them. Worshipping, however, Cyllenius with special distinction, they style him Logios. For Mercury is Logos, who being interpreter and fabricator of the things that have been made simultaneously, and that are being produced, and that will exist, stands honoured among them, fashioned into some such figure as is the pudendum of a man, having an impulsive power from the parts below towards those above. And that this (deity) — that is, a Mercury of this description — is, (the Naassene) says, a conjurer of the dead, and a guide of departed spirits, and an originator of souls… .

Finally, Hippolytus says that the Naassenes were dedicated worshippers of the mysterious and mystical “Great Mother. ” This might indicate that they were venerating Sophia under the guise of ancient goddesses such as Isis, Demeter, Cybele, and Rhea. He writes:

On account of these and such like reasons, these constantly attend the mysteries called those of the Great Mother, supposing especially that they behold by means of the ceremonies performed there the entire mystery.

It becomes clear to anyone who has read his entire account of the Naassenes that they may have been the world ’s first comparative mythologists. They were all about exploring the mysteries of the Bible as well as the mysteries of the pagans and the teachings of the Greek philosophers as part of a quest to discover the key to all mythologies. They seem to have believed that ultimately they were all connected, or that they expressed many common themes codified in different languages and semantics. In a lot of ways, the Naassenes anticipated the Structuralists, Jungian psychoanalysts, and early mythicists like Joseph Campbell. Even though Jungians and mythicists all stressed the universal meanings of the world ’s religions, they also denied their metaphysical claims. The Gnosis of the Naassene Gnostics is not exactly based on divine revelation, but is, as Mark J. Edwards said in his article, “The Naming of the Naassenes: Hippolytus, Refutatio V.6-10 as Hieros Logos ”:

… a studious collocation of the mysteries of a philological discipline which aims to be the master, not the servant, of philosophy; a parliament of symbols which does not proclaim a new code of belief.

Curiously, Sophia is not named in the Naassene system, but as we said, she was probably venerated under the form of another goddess figure. The Gnostics saw Sophia as secretly working through the Authorities and tricking them into serving a higher goal, as we have seen in Irenaeus ’ Ophite account. To them, Sophia was representative of a type of purity beyond polarity, just like Baphomet is. We are reminded by something GRS Mead once wrote in Did Jesus Live 100 B.C. ?

In Gnostic tradition we find the Sophia in her various aspects possessed of many names. Among them may be mentioned: the Mother or All-Mother; Mother of the Living, or Shining Mother; the Power Above; the Holy Spirit; again She of the Left-hand, as opposed to Christos, Him of the Right-hand; the Man-woman; Prouneikos or Lustful-one, the Harlot; the Matrix; Eden; Achamoth; the Virgin; Barbelo; Daughter of Light; Merciful Mother; Consort of the Masculine One; Revelant of the Perfect Mysteries; Perfect Mercy; Revelant of the Mysteries of the whole Magnitude; Hidden Mother; She who knows the Mysteries of the Elect; the Holy Dove which has given birth to Twins; Ennoea; and the Lost or Wandering Sheep, Helena and many other names.

All these terms refer to Sophia or the “Soul ” —using the term in its most general sense—in her cosmic or individual aspects, according as she is above in her perfect purity; or in the midst, as intermediary, or below as fallen into matter.

In the Gnostic text Thunder Perfect Mind , Sophia describes herself as the preeminent female divinity, full of contradictions:

… I am the first and the last.

I am the honored one and the scorned one.

I am the whore and the holy one.

I am the wife and the virgin… .

I am the mother of my father and the sister of my husband and he is my offspring.

I am the slave of him who prepared me… .

For I am the wisdom of the Greeks and the knowledge of the barbarians… .

I am the one whose image is great in Egypt, and the one who has no image among the barbarians… .

I am the one whom you have pursued, and I am the one whom you have seized.

I am the one whom you have scattered, and you have gathered me together… .

I, I am godless, and I am the one whose God is great… .

I am the one whom you have hidden from, and you appear to me.

But whenever you hide yourselves, I myself will appear.

For whenever you appear, I myself will hide from you… .

…[C]ome forward to me, you who know me, and you who know my members, and establish the great ones among the small first creatures… .

Those who are without association with me are ignorant of me, and those who are in my substance are the ones who know me.

Those who are close to me have been ignorant of me, and those who are far away from me are the ones who have known me.

On the day when I am close to you, you are far away from me, and on the day when I am far away from you, I am close to you.

I am the union and the dissolution.

I am the abiding and I am the dissolution.

I am the one below, and they come up to me… .

I, I am sinless, and the root of sin derives from me.

I am lust in (outward) appearance, and interior self-control exists within me… .

I am the knowledge of my name.

As we can see, the word “Gnosticism ” encompasses a number of complex, baffling and paradoxical concepts, but often beautifully sublime philosophical perspectives as well. Who really started the tradition, though? Surprising to some, it is frequently said by researchers on the subject that the whole thing began with a man called “John. ” That is the subject of the next chapter.

Chapter 6: The Head of Prophecy

Thus John, who was often consulted by Herod, and to whom that monarch showed great deference, and was often governed by his advice; whose doctrine prevailed very extensively among the people and the publicans, taught some creed older than Christianity. That is plain… .

—Albert Pike, Morals and Dogma

Historically, John the Baptist appears to have been an important personage, well-loved by the public in his time. He is seen as a prophet today by Christians and Muslims, as well as the Gnostic Mandaeans of Iraq (and, historically, other Gnostic groups too). Scholars have argued that he was actually a trained and functioning priest, perhaps from a family of priests. He may have even been seen by some as the true messiah. In addition to the historical figure, John is also significant as a symbol, an archetype, which shows up in folklore, occult traditions, and Freemasonic rituals. But why is this so?

According to Masonic scholar Albert Pike in his 1872 Scottish Rite catechism Morals and Dogma , the Knights Templar followed a secret and esoteric Johannite doctrine (revering John over Jesus). The Mandaeans claimed John the Baptist was the true prophet of his generation and repudiated Jesus Christ as a false pretender. In Gnostic (Ophite) Christianity, John the Baptist was part of Sophia ’s plan for salvation. Even more intriguing is that his direct disciples, Jesus Christ and Simon Magus were both said to have visited and then “come out of ” Egypt, as we will see later in this chapter.

In Christianity (as elucidated in Acts 8:35-36), water baptism is a symbolic gesture made by a new Christian who has decided to believe the Gospel. Joseph von Hammer-Purgstall thought that Gnostic groups (especially the Mandaeans and other Johannites) saw it as an act of spiritual liberation through submersion in divine wisdom. In Gnostic tradition, Sophia is the initiator of a baptismal flood of Gnosis, as we read in the Nag Hammadi text Trimorphic Protennoia :

I descended to the midst of the underworld, and I shone down upon the darkness. It is I who poured forth the water. It is I who am hidden within radiant waters. I am the one who gradually put forth the All by my Thought. It is I who am laden with the Voice. It is through me that Gnosis comes forth. I dwell in the ineffable and unknowable ones. I am perception and knowledge, uttering a Voice by means of thought. I am the real Voice. I cry out in everyone, and they recognize it (the voice), since a seed indwells them.

What 's more, Sophia was connected to John the Baptist in the Ophite system, as Irenaeus reports in Against Heresies , 1.30.11-12:

They maintain that Sophia, herself has also spoken many things through [the prophets] regarding the first Anthropos (man), and concerning that Christ who is above, thus admonishing and reminding men of the incorruptible light, the first Anthropos, and of the descent of Christ. The [other] powers being terrified by these things, and marvelling at the novelty of those things which were announced by the prophets, [Sophia] brought it about by means of Ialdabaoth (who knew not what he did), that emissions of two men took place, the one from the barren Elizabeth, and the other from the Virgin Mary . And since she herself had no rest either in heaven or on earth, she invoked her mother to assist her in her distress. Upon this, her mother, the first woman, was moved with compassion towards her daughter, on her repentance, and begged from the first man that Christ should be sent to her assistance, who, being sent forth, descended to his sister, and to the besprinkling of light. When he recognised her (that is, the Sophia below), her brother descended to her, and announced his advent through means of John, and prepared the baptism of repentance .

Through the vessel of John the Baptist, the spiritual act of repentance is introduced to mankind via Sophia ’s intercession. Recall how we mentioned the Gnostic belief that Sophia grieved and repented to her mother, the Holy Spirit, Christ and the Pleroma to rectify her error of accidentally creating Ialdabaoth when she fell into the primeval chaos of matter. John the Baptist taught that water baptism and repentance would wash away the sins of the guilty, and in a way that seems to be the sort of thing that Sophia was asking for.

The Gnostic Apocryphon of James includes this curious exchange on the subject of John ’s beheading between Jesus and his disciple James:

Then I asked him, “Lord, how shall we be able to prophesy to those who request us to prophesy to them? For there are many who ask us, and look to us to hear an oracle from us. ”

The Lord answered and said, “Do you not know that the head of prophecy was cut off with John? ”

But I said, “Lord, can it be possible to remove the head of prophecy? ”

The Lord said to me, “When you come to know what ‘head ’ means, and that prophecy issues from the head, (then) understand the meaning of ‘Its head was removed. ’ At first I spoke to you in parables, and you did not understand; now I speak to you openly, and you (still) do not perceive. Yet, it was you who served me as a parable in parables, and as that which is open in the (words) that are open. ”

For rather obvious reasons, heads have been considered symbols of wisdom, intelligence, and the mind by pretty much every culture ever. This includes the emblem of a disembodied head, and that of a skull. In fact it used to be traditional to keep a human skull in one ’s study as a paperweight and *memento mori (“reminder of death ”). In the Holy Land in the time of Jesus and John, it was a common belief that the mummified heads or skulls of prophets, magicians and wonder-workers held a particular power. Egyptian, Jewish, and Arab magicians have written of the custom of using mummified heads as oracles. The talking severed head of the giant Bran in Celtic lore (believed to have magically protected London from French invasion), the singing head of poet Orpheus in Greek stories, and the prophetic skull of Adam in Judeo-Christian apocrypha are examples of mythical disembodied heads that have been linked with prophecy.*

The Knights Templar, in their confessions, also claimed that their Baphomet head could “prophesy ” to them. They symbolized their love of their talking head by choosing the skull and crossbones as one of their most famous and omnipresent insignias, giving birth to an icon that would later be used by Europeans pirates on their menacing “Jolly Roger ” flags (often accompanied by the number 13 for some occult reason). According to a story associated with the Templars, the head acquired its magic through an act of necrophilia. From Freemasonry and the Ancient Gods by JMS Ward:

A great lady of Maraclea was loved by a Templar, a Lord of Sidon; but she died in her youth, and on the night of her burial, this wicked lover crept to the grave, dug up her body and violated it. Then a voice from the void bade him return in nine months time for he would find a son. He obeyed the injunction and at the appointed time opened the grave again and found a head on the leg bones of the skeleton (skull and crossbones).

The same voice bade him, “guard it well, for it would be the giver of all good things, ” and so he carried it away with him. It became his protecting genius, and he was able to defeat his enemies by merely showing them the magic head. In due course, it passed into the possession of the Order.

The authors of Holy Blood, Holy Grail (Michael Baigent, Richard Leigh and Henry Lincoln) have noted that other versions of this story they found included the young woman ’s name, “Yse, ” and that this sounds a bit like “Isis. ” Of course, it was the husband of Isis, Osiris, who was dead when she had sex with him to conceive their son Horus. However, Isis, and her counterpart, the Greek Aphrodite (or the Roman Venus), are traditionally depicted with alabaster skin, sleeping naked in a hidden tomb. It was said that anyone who would witnessed her nakedness, even accidentally, would be cursed. A skeleton could be thought of as symbolically a “naked ” and “white ” body, so perhaps the description of Venus was meant to be taken as a metaphor for this. If the Templars believed they had the skull of Isis, this would fit the lore, as she is a goddess of prophecy, wisdom, and magic, which are exactly the benefits that the Templars allegedly derived from the Baphomet head.

But whether it was John ’s head, Isis ’ head, or someone else ’s, the idea that heads could be used as oracles is deeply-rooted, particularly in the Middle East and Northern Africa. Called teraphim in Hebrew, Athanasius Kirscher depicted, in his 1652 book Oedipus Aegyptiacus , the Egyptian magical practice of making a sort of robot from a mummified head, often of the firstborn son of the magician, which could be used for divination purposes. The head would be mounted on a wall or a golden plate and would supposedly deliver prophecies when questioned. In 620 BC, they were classified as a form of idol and banned by the Hebrew prophets. They were also used, apparently, by the Sabians of Harran. Kevin van Bladel ’s The Arabic Hermes describes a festival that included “a ritual involving a decapitated boy whose head is placed on an altar where it howls; its howls were used to predict the future of the Sabian people. ” At this rite the pagan god Mara Samya, “the Blind Lord, ” was invoked, perhaps equivalent to the demon Samael, whose name means the same thing.

So, it seems, belief that a magical ceremony could make a severed head talk was widespread in the ancient Middle East. There is an interesting account of how the effect of such a thing could be created through trickery. From the 1961 classic A History of Secret Societies by “Arkon Daraul ” (a.k.a. Idries Shah, the Sufi writer), quoting The Art of Imposture , by Abdel-Rahman of Damascus, we read about how Hassan-i Sabbah, “the Old Man of the Mountains, ” founder of the Order of Assassins in eleventh-century Persia, initiated his mujahadeen recruits into his war cult:

He had a deep, narrow pit sunk into the floor of his audience-chamber. One of his disciples stood in this, in such a way that his head and neck alone were visible above the floor. Around the neck was placed a circular dish in two pieces which fitted together, with a hole in the middle. This gave the impression that there was a severed head on a metal plate standing on the floor. In order to make the scene more plausible (if that is the word) Hasan had some fresh blood poured around the head, on the plate.

Now certain recruits were brought in. “Tell them, ” commanded the chief, “what thou hast seen. ” The disciple then described the delights of Paradise. “You have seen the head of a man who died, whom you all knew. I have reanimated him to speak with his own tongue. ”

Later, the head was treacherously severed in real earnest, and stuck for some time somewhere that the faithful would see it. The effect of this conjuring trick plus murder increased the enthusiasm for martyrdom to the required degree.

A similar story is told by James Wasserman in his 2001 book The Templars and the Assassins , only he claims that it was done by Rashid Al-Din Sinan, a later Assassin chief. It seems likely that if there is any truth to the story, it was probably the standard Assassin initiation ritual throughout their existence.

Now in the case of the head of John the Baptist, it was purportedly put “on a platter, ” which we all universally imagine to be a dinner service. But wouldn ’t it make more sense that Salome, as a member of the formerly “Idumean ” or Edomite Herodian dynasty (forced to convert to Judaism in the second century), was practicing an old family tradition and requesting the sacrifice of a prophet whose head could be mummified, mounted on a plate and used as a teraph for prophecy? Hasn ’t anyone ever wondered what her mother Herodias intended to do with such a grisly prize? There is no description of what was done with the head afterwards, so it is left to our imagination, but this makes more sense to us than anything. We will discuss this possibility again later on.

If the Templars had John ’s head, what did it mean to them? Was it useful

to them merely because he was a prophet? Had they discovered the belief that prophet ’s heads could be used for magic and divination? Or was there something about John in particular that was special to them? According to Pope Pius IX (reigning from 1846 to 1878), yes there was, and again, it is linked with Gnosticism. The Pope, in his “Allocution Against the Freemasons, ” charged that the Templars had tapped into the existence of a secret Johannite church. Here are some of his words on the subject, as quoted by Albert Pike in Morals and Dogma :

The Johannites ascribed to Saint John the foundation of their Secret Church, and the Grand Pontiffs of the Sect assumed the title of Christos, Anointed, or Consecrated, and claimed to have succeeded one another from Saint John by an uninterrupted succession of pontifical powers. He who, at the period of the foundation of the Order of the Temple, claimed these imaginary prerogatives, was named THEOCLET; he knew HUGUES DE PAYENS, he initiated him into the Mysteries and hopes of his pretended church, he seduced him by the notions of Sovereign Priesthood and Supreme royalty, and finally designated him as his successor.

Thus the Order of Knights of the Temple was at its very origin devoted to the cause of opposition to the tiara of Rome and the crowns of Kings, and the Apostolate of Kabalistic Gnosticism was vested in its chiefs. For Saint John himself was the Father of the Gnostics, and the current translation of his polemic against the heretical of his Sect and the pagans who denied that Christ was the Word, is throughout a misrepresentation, or misunderstanding at least, of the whole Spirit of that Evangel.

Pope Pius IX (whom we will quote at greater length in a later chapter) agrees that the Knights Templar held a secret doctrine of Johannism. Now, he was talking here about a doctrine of reverence for John the Evangelist, the alleged author of The Gospel of John , often considered to have a “Gnostic ” flavor to it, and used as scripture by several Gnostic groups. But we will show later on that some researchers think that this text was essentially inspired by John the Baptist, and that this is why it is attributed to someone named John. So while the term “Johannism ” can refer to those who place special importance on John ’s

Gospel, it can also (perhaps in the same instance) refer to those who revere John the Baptist as the real Christ and the “Father of the Gnostics, ” such as the sect called the Mandaeans (whom we will discuss in detail later on). The existence of this school of thought was explored in detail in the book The Templar Revelation by Lynn Picknett and Clive Prince (1997).

In the above-quoted passage, Pope Pius IX claims that the founding Templar, Hughes de Payens was initiated into a Johannite church by a bishop named Theoclet, who allegedly carried a right of priesthood with an apostolic succession going back to John. Presumably, he meant John the Evangelist, as it seems from the context of the statement. But this claim had also been made just a few years earlier by the French cleric Bernard-Raymond Fabre-Palaprat, who in 1804 founded the Templar revival order “Ordre de Temple, ” which purported to be a direct continuation of the original. This order was dedicated, like Freemasonry also, as we shall see) to both John the Baptist and John the Evangelist.

The confessing Templars admitted to secret rituals that involved in spitting on the cross in their initiation rituals. Interestingly enough, the Church Father Origen made the same claim about the Ophites in Against Celsus (5.28) when he paraphrased and answered Celsus ’ charges against the Christians (whom Celsus did not distinguish from the Ophites, while Origen certainly does):

Now he ought to have known that those who have espoused the cause of the serpent, because he gave good advice to the first human beings, and who go far beyond the Titans and Giants of fable, and are on this account called Ophites, are so far from being Christians, that they bring accusations against Jesus to as great a degree as Celsus himself; and they do not admit anyone into their assembly until he has uttered maledictions against Jesus.

It is perhaps this point that led Hammer-Purgstall to believe that the Templars not only were secretly Johannites but also followed after the example of the Ophites as well. In Mysterium Baphometis Revelatum , he writes that the Templars ' "secret doctrine is identical with that of the Gnostics, indeed, of the Ophites. " On several of the alleged "Templar artifacts " reproduced in his book, there are depictions of an androgynous figure called, according to the inscriptions, "Mete, " which Hammer-Purgstall says is "none other than Sophia of the Ophites, who is known otherwise as Acamoth, Prunicos, Barbelo. "

Of course, being an ostensibly Christian army chartered by the Pope himself, this "secret doctrine " would have to have been carefully disguised within a veneer of orthodoxy that none but the highest initiates would ever glimpse beyond. In his Allocution , Pope Pius IX discussed the two-tiered system of exoteric beliefs and practices for public consumption combined with (perhaps completely opposite) esoteric dogma for the inner circle:

The Templars, like all other Secret Orders and Associations, had two doctrines, one concealed and reserved for the Masters, which was Johannism; the other public, which was the Roman Catholic. Thus they deceived the adversaries whom they sought to supplant. Hence Free- Masonry, vulgarly imagined to have begun with the Dionysian Architects or the German Stone-workers, adopted Saint John the Evangelist as one of its patrons, associating with him, in order not to arouse the suspicions of Rome, Saint John the Baptist, and thus covertly proclaiming itself the child of the Kabalah and Essenism together.

Note that, here, the Pope gives an explanation for the veneration of both Johns, and claims that they were both considered emblems of the same covert symbolism. There are multiple versions of the character of John the Baptist that we see in various scriptures from different sects, such as the Mandaeans with their “Yohana, ” and the Muslims with their “Yahya. ” The Catholic tradition, of course, comes strictly from the four Gospels. In tracking the Baptist ’s mythos, it makes sense to begin with John ’s gospel. It is not a synoptic (meaning it doesn ’t follow the same story structure as the other three in the New Testament, the “Synoptic Gospels ”), but it does give an idea of what John the Baptist meant to early Christianity.

In this text, John the Baptist is barely mentioned. In the first chapter, John simply appears and is a “witness ” to Jesus (1:7). In other words, John gives his testimony on what occurred. In essence, he saw Jesus (the Logos) coming to him for baptism, and at that moment, the Holy Spirit descended upon Jesus. Beyond this mention, John the Baptist is just said in the book to be the guy that came before Jesus and testified about him, recognizing what he was and proclaiming it to the public.

Luke ’s Gospel tells us in the first chapter that Mary, the mother of Jesus, and John ’s mother Elizabeth, were cousins, and they were both pregnant at the same time, specifically six months apart. Like Mary ’s conception of Jesus, Elizabeth ’s pregnancy was also miraculous, because she and her husband Zacharias were childless, elderly, and seemingly infertile. Just as Jesus ’ birth was foretold to both Mary and Joseph in separate angelic visitations, John ’s conception was foretold to Zacharias, and he, like Mary, was told what to name the child. But no actual communication between the two children is ever mentioned in any of the Gospels, and we are to assume that they never met before the baptism of Jesus, or ever again.

In The Gospel of Matthew 3:13-17 (KJV), we read that Jesus specifically came to John to be baptized, although we don ’t know if he was inspired to do this or just chose to of his own accord. But John tried to deter him, saying, “I have need to be baptized of thee, and comest thou to me? ” Jesus replied, “Let it be so now; it is proper for us to do this to fulfill all righteousness, ” implying that his baptism was somehow integral for the completion of prophecy. As soon as Jesus came up out of the water, heaven was opened, and “he saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove and alighting on him. And a voice from Heaven said, ‘This is my Son, whom I love; with him I am well pleased. ’ ”

But why did Jesus need John specifically? According to The Gospel of John , the Baptist was “not the Light ” (John 1:8), and by his own proclamation not even worthy of untying the thong of Jesus ’ sandal (1:27). Yet he is given the extraordinary honor of being mentioned in the very midst of that gospel ’s “Great Proem, ” (the introductory invocation), where it is said that John was “sent from God ” ... to bear witness to the Light, that all might believe through him. ” (1:6-7)

If all had to believe through him , he was obviously entrusted with a

mission that, though subordinate to that of Jesus, had nevertheless a universal (all) and exclusive (through him) character. The contradiction between this mission and his unworthiness to even untie the thong of Jesus ’ sandal is, or so at least it seems to us, evident. Therefore we are led to ask: who was John the Baptist really?

In The Gospel of John , this very question was asked of him by the “priests and Levites from Jerusalem ” sent to him by “the Jews ” (1:19,KJV). They asked, “Who are you? ” He replied:

I am the voice of one crying in the wilderness, Make straight the way of the Lord. (1:23, KJV)

In The Gospel of Marcion (an earlier version of Luke reconstructed from quotes used by the Church Fathers in order to condemn his heresy), the testimony of John the Baptist is not mentioned directly. In the Panarion (1.42.11:3-4), Epiphanius writes against Marcion thusly:

At the very beginning he excised everything Luke had originally composed — his “inasmuch as many have taken in hand, ” and so forth, and the material about Elizabeth and the angel ’s announcement to Mary the Virgin; about John and Zacharias and the birth at Bethlehem; the genealogy and the story of the baptism. All this he cut out and turned his back on, and made this the beginning of the Gospel, “In the fifteenth year of Tiberius Caesar, ” and so on.

In both The Gospel of Mark and The Gospel of Matthew , not only is John a witness to Jesus, but also personally baptizes Jesus, at the latter ’s request. John ’s baptism and preaching ministry was already in full swing and quite popular with the public at this time. The actual doctrine that John the Baptist taught to his disciples is found in these gospels too. John is reported to have implored people to take a “baptism for repentance and remission of sins ” (Matthew 3.2; Luke 3:3).

John himself was purportedly at the center of a controversy between Jesus and the Jewish Pharisees when he was challenged by them in Jerusalem. Matthew 21:23 (NIV) reports that the priests challenged him on his authority, but

Jesus responded swiftly and shut them down:

Jesus entered the temple courts, and, while he was teaching, the chief priests and the elders of the people came to him. “By what authority are you doing these things? ” they asked. “And who gave you this authority? ”

Jesus replied, “I will also ask you one question. If you answer me, I will tell you by what authority I am doing these things. John ’s baptism—where did it come from? Was it from heaven, or of human origin? ”

They discussed it among themselves and said, “If we say, ‘From heaven, ’ he will ask, ‘Then why didn ’t you believe him? ’ But if we say, ‘Of human

origin ’ —we are afraid of the people, for they all hold that John was a prophet. ”

So they answered Jesus, “We don ’t know. ”

Then he said, “Neither will I tell you by what authority I am doing these things. ”

It was clear that Jesus had won the debate. The Jerusalem priests refused

to answer Jesus ’ retort because John the Baptist was popular with the people of his day. It seems as though the priests privately thought that John ’s doctrine was heretical and contrary to the Law of Moses, which they obviously upheld. Jesus likewise refused to answer their question. It appears as though Jesus was speaking more like a Gnostic teacher than a Jewish Rabbi. Jesus is speaking on behalf of a “perfect ” higher God as opposed to the jealous God of the Old Testament, redeeming his followers from the “curse of the [Mosaic] law ”

(Galatians 3:13).

Mark 11:29, much like what we saw in Matthew 21, specifically claims that John ’s baptism of Jesus was of a heavenly, rather than human, origin. Many have pointed to *the prophecy from The Book of Malachi 4:5 to be a prediction of John ’s ministry, where it says:*

Behold, I will send you Elijah the prophet before the coming of the great and dreadful day of the Lord.

It is taken as though John is almost a reincarnation or an avatar of Elijah. John and Elijah are also said to have dressed the same. John reportedly wore camel ’s hair with a leather girdle, Elijah, according to 2 Kings 1:8, was “a hairy man, and girt with a girdle of leather about his loins. ” Like John after him, Elijah spent time in the wilderness (at Horeb), where he was fed by ravens. Elijah did not die, but instead ascended to Heaven in a whirlwind, in a fiery chariot drawn by fiery horses. (This is part of why Elijah is linked by comparative mythologists to another prophet and herald, Enoch, and why the Islamic Idris is linked to Elijah and Enoch both). He was expected to return one day, possibly with his spirit inspiring and essentially inhabiting the body of another prophet in the future.

A later version of Luke 1:17 claims that John prophesied in “the spirit and power of Elijah… . ” In The Gospel of John , priests and Levites ask the Baptist if he is Elijah, which he explicitly denies. In Mark , Herod ’s men theorize that maybe Jesus is Elijah returned. Jesus even seems to imply this when speaking to his own followers about John after a diplomatic visit from some of John ’s followers, in Matthew 11:13-15(NIV):

For all the Prophets and the Law prophesied until John. And if you are willing to accept it, he is the Elijah who was to come. Whoever has ears, let them hear.

Stranger still, St. Jerome said something that few people would have considered. In Against the Pelagians (3:2), he quoted from the now lost Gospel of the Hebrews , which commented on Jesus and John ’s relationship:

In the Gospel according to the Hebrews, which is written in the Chaldee and Syrian language, but in Hebrew characters, and is used by the Nazarenes to this day (I mean the Gospel according to the Apostles, or, as is generally maintained, the Gospel according to Matthew, a copy of which is in the library at Caesarea), we find, “Behold, the mother of our Lord and His brethren said to Him, John Baptist baptizes for the remission of sins; let us go and be baptized by him. But He said to them, what sin have I committed that I should go and be baptized by him? Unless, haply, the very words which I have said are only ignorance.

This passage is interesting because it calls into question if Jesus ever was a disciple of John the Baptist, as implied in the Judean Gospel of Matthew . Jerome is quoting from a Hebrew text of Matthew that actually shows a totally different picture of their relationship. It seems to us that the references to John the Baptist were added to Matthew by a proto-Gnostic writer/editor. Jerome also mentions the term “Nazarene, ” which can be found in the Gospels. The Hebrew natsar means “watch, ” “preserve, ” or “guard. ” It signifies “secret knowledge ” and “hidden things, ” which implies potent

Gnostic intonations. It is often thought that the phrase translated as “Jesus of Nazareth ” refers to the town of that name, which did not exist during Jesus ’ life. The term that was meant to be applied to Jesus was “Nazarene, ” which indicates an initiate of hidden wisdom who has taken as ascetic vow.

In The Gospel of John 1:17-18 (KJV), we can see the Baptist ’s theology more plainly:

For the Law was given by Moses, but grace and truth came through Jesus Christ. No man has seen God at any time. The only-begotten Son, in the bosom of the Father, He has declared him.

The theme that Moses does not represent the true God occurs throughout this gospel. In John 17:25, Jesus says plainly, “Oh righteous Father, the world (cosmos) has not known you. ” And in John 9:29 the Pharisees are reported to have responded to Jesus ’s message: “We know that God spoke to Moses: as for this fellow, we know not where he is from. ” It seems that John and Jesus both were teaching a heretical doctrine that does not conform to traditional Judaism or Catholicism in preaching that there is another unknown god beyond Jehovah.

Returning to The Gospel of Matthew , particularly Chapter 3, we see John the Baptist preaching in the “wilderness of Judea and saying, ‘Repent, for the kingdom of heaven has come near. ’ ” John is baptizing many people coming from Jerusalem, Judea and Jordan, encouraging them to confess their sins and then washing them away in the Jordan River. However, in Matthew 3:7-12 (ESV), when John sees a number of Pharisees and Sadducees attending these baptismal rites, he immediately condemns them without a moment ’s hesitation:

You brood of vipers! Who warned you to flee from the coming wrath? Produce fruit in keeping with repentance. And do not think you can say to yourselves, “We have Abraham as our father. ” I tell you that out of these stones God can raise up children for Abraham. The ax is already at the root of the trees, and every tree that does not produce good fruit will be cut down and thrown into the fire.

I baptize you with water for repentance. But after me comes one who is more powerful than I, whose sandals I am not worthy to carry. He will baptize you with the Holy Spirit and fire . His winnowing fork is in his hand, and he will clear his threshing floor, gathering his wheat into the barn and burning up the chaff with unquenchable fire.

What John is telling the Pharisees and Sadducees is basically that they are wrong to think that they are the Lord ’s chosen people simply because they descended from Abraham. John is saying in symbolic language that the “ax ” is the means by which Christ will cut into the dead spirit, remove the heart of stone, and transmute it by the fruit of regeneration into the spirit of Christ. Also notice how the coming one is described as being a baptizer of the “Holy Spirit and fire. ” This is the same description given to the Demiurge in the first discourse of The Corpus Hermeticum . Simon Magus was particularly obsessed with the idea of the divine fire as well, as we will see. Tobias Churton suggests in The Mysteries of John the Baptist that the coming one whom John is speaking of in the above passage may not have been the messiah at all, but rather God himself, or, at least, the creator god Jehovah. This might even make John himself the messiah (or at least, the preeminent prophet of his time). This theory may also explain why Paul never quotes Jesus in his epistles (although Paul makes a few allusions to Luke ’s Gospel). Perhaps all his ideas come from another source. Of course the challenge is establishing a connection between Paul and John.

The only real evidence is that Paul ’s fellow ministers conducted baptisms, which some think is a rite that originated with John. This may have continued on through Simon Magus, one of his students, who carried on John ’s tradition after his untimely death. It appears from Matthew Chapter 3 that some proto-Gnostic Christian felt compelled to give credit to John, but at the same time to make Jesus more important than John. John is also made to appear inferior to Jesus when described as sleeping outside, wearing a camel hair loincloth, and eating bugs, which may have been inaccurate and intended to be deliberately demeaning. Luke says that John's father was a priest named Zechariah, which meant that he was from an upper-class family with access to a full education in biblical texts, and probably the Greek language as well.

Judging from the evidence, the Jesus and John movements were originally separate. Jesus was a messianic Jewish prophet, as seen in Matthew , but not necessarily the messiah, while John was a mystic rebel with a new view of theology and spirituality. Perhaps when Jesus ’ prophecies failed to pan out, Christians began to take more of their ideas from John, and remade Jesus in the image of John, the Great Gnostic Baptizer. We can also see echoes of John ’s practices in Jesus ’ teaching to the Pharisee Nicodemus in The Gospel of John 3:2-8 (NIV), where the latter asked his teacher:

“Rabbi, we know that you are a teacher who has come from God. For no one could perform the signs you are doing if God were not with him. ” Jesus replied, “Very truly I tell you, no one can see the kingdom of God unless they are born again. ” “How can someone be born when they are old? ” Nicodemus asked. “Surely they cannot enter a second time into their mother ’s womb to be born! ”

Jesus answered, “Very truly I tell you, no one can enter the kingdom of God unless they are born of water and the Spirit. Flesh gives birth to flesh, but the Spirit gives birth to spirit. You should not be surprised at my saying, ‘You must be born again. ’ The wind blows wherever it pleases. You hear its sound, but you cannot tell where it comes from or where it is going. So it is with everyone born of the Spirit. ”

The symbol of water is one with manifold meanings, one of which obviously involves cleanliness. The term “living waters ” is not just poetic, but carries a specific meaning. This pertains to the pre-Christian Jewish tradition of purification rites involving ritual baths that adhered to rigorous specifications. On a physical, exoteric level, the water literally washed away all dirt and filth from the body. On a spiritual level, the baptism meant that the psyche or soul was dead unless it maintained a constant connection with the deeper streams of universal life, the divine agape (love) of God, which Jesus described as “a well of water springing up into everlasting life ” to the Samaritan woman at the well (John 4:14).

We see influences of John ’s teaching in St. Paul when he writes in Romans 6:2-4 (NIV):

By no means! We are those who have died to sin; how can we live in it any longer? Or don ’t you know that all of us who were baptized into Christ Jesus were baptized into his death? We were therefore buried with him through baptism into death in order that, just as Christ was raised from the dead through the glory of the Father, we too may live a new life.

The Pauline writer of Hebrews claimed that the baptism is an elementary teaching, meaning that there was a deeper, esoteric Christian message, as we read here in 6:1 (ESV):

Therefore let us leave the elementary teachings about Christ and go on to maturity, not laying again the foundation of repentance from acts that lead to death, and of faith in God, instruction about baptisms, the laying on of hands, the resurrection of the dead, and eternal judgment. And God permitting, we will do so.

Ezekiel 36:25 contains a promise from God to his prophet that he will “sprinkle clean water upon you, and ye shall be clean: from all your filthiness, and from all your idols, will I cleanse you. ” Chapter 2:6 of The Gospel of John mentions the practice of “Jews ” using “waterpots of stone ” for purification rites. But the imagery of Jesus being crucified, with the water and blood flowing uncontained from his side, fits with the idea that the cleansing fluid from this vessel of flesh would purify the whole world , not just the Jews alone. In the early Church, the Christian baptism ceremony didn ’t just involve immersion in water, but also the ritual application of holy oil (olive oil mixed with balsam) to the forehead, which was typically administered in the sign of the cross. The repentant would take a bath and then apply the scented oils after he was clean. Doing so in the context of baptism reinforced the sense that the newly initiated Christian was washed, purified and sealed in Christ.

In Mark 14:3, we see Mary Magdalene, the first witness to Jesus ’ resurrection, and his close companion according in all accounts (much like Simon Magus and his consort Helena), officiating at what would have been considered a royal anointing with the pouring of a large amount of oil upon the head of Jesus. This “christening ” or “chrism ” might have been the ceremony ordaining Jesus as the successor of John the Baptist. A similar anointing rite was also used in the consecration of priests and kings, including ancient Egyptian Pharaohs. St. Ambrose explains this quite succinctly in De Sacramentis (2.7):

You were rubbed with oil like an athlete, Christ ’s athlete, as though in preparation for an earthly wrestling-match, and you agreed to take on your opponent, the Devil.

As we shall explain, the term “Christ ” may refer to one who was “christened ” (meaning “anointed ”) with oil as the legitimate successor of the Baptist, just as Simon Magus was. As much as the Church reviled the Simonians and Simon Magus himself, its tradition of “apostolic succession ” is actually based on the Simonian system, where each successive student takes on his teacher ’s role. With the Catholic Church, the idea was that Jesus appointed St. Peter to be the “rock ” upon which his church would be founded (thus Peter, who was originally named Simon also, took on his new name, meaning “rock, ” to reflect this). Tradition says that Jesus gave Peter the “keys to Heaven ” (now the official logo of the Papacy), bestowing upon him power over the spiritual destinies of men, and over the spirits in the ether. So Peter was the first Pope. Via what is called “chirothesy ” or “the laying on of hands, ” Peter was supposedly able to ordain other bishops to help grow the Church, and passed the power down to them as well. These priests in turn passed the power on to other priests that they ordained. So through apostolic succession, there is a vast web of interweaving but unbroken lines of spiritual power which have been transmitted from Jesus, through Saint Peter, down to all of the validly ordained bishops of the present day.

The Gnostic Gospel of Philip 4:8 contains a clear exegetic explanation on the oil anointing rite:

Love never says, “This is yours ” or “This is mine, ” but “All these are yours. ” Spiritual love is wine and fragrance. All those who anoint themselves with it take pleasure in it. While those who are anointed are present, those nearby also profit (from the fragrance). If those anointed with ointment withdraw from them and leave, then those not anointed, who merely stand nearby, still remain in their bad odor. The Samaritan gave nothing but wine and oil to the wounded man. It is nothing other than the ointment. It healed the wounds, for “love covers a multitude of sins. ”

The figure of Simon Magus, who led his own mystic cult immediately following the time of Jesus, was said to be John the Baptist ’s favorite disciple, and possibly even his son. According to The Clementine Homilies (2.23), which are said to originate from the Apostolic father Clement of Rome (a follower of Peter), it talks about Simon as John ’s favorite student:

But that [Simon] came to deal with the doctrines of religion happened on this wise. There was one John, a day-baptist, who was also, according to the method of combination, the forerunner of our Lord Jesus; and as the Lord had twelve apostles, bearing the number of the twelve months of the sun, so also he, John, had thirty chief men, fulfilling the monthly reckoning of the moon, in which number was a certain woman called Helena, that not even this might be without a dispensational significance… . But of these thirty, the first and the most esteemed by John was Simon… . ”

It is interesting that John supposedly had thirty disciples to symbolize the

lunar cycle, while Jesus has twelve disciples, corresponding to the solar cycle along with the Zodiac, yet John is the one described as a “day-baptist. ” This may imply that there was such a thing as baptism by night as well, and considering

John ’s connection here with the moon, you might think a night baptism might be more appropriate. In the Mandaean Book of John it says “Yahya proclaims in the nights, Yohana on the Night ’s evenings. ” Yahya and Yohana are Mandaic and Arabic names for John, respectively. So maybe he wasn ’t a day-baptist after all. Even more fascinating, the Homilies actually specify elsewhere that the number of disciples in John ’s group was twenty-nine and one-half, exactly corresponding to the 29.5-day lunar cycle. This is explained as being so because the one female Helena (who is also referred to by the name of Luna, meaning “moon ”) was only equal to half a man. That ’s endearing, isn ’t it?

Helena was also the name of the consort and co-minister taken by Simon Magus, so it is may be that the Helena mentioned above was the same woman. Some have theorized that Helena may have originally been the consort of John the Baptist, and was later remarried as Simon ’s wife after John ’s death.

In 1 Apology (56), Justin Martyr wrote that Simon Magus was worshipped under the guise of the Roman-Sabine god, Semo Sancus:

There was a Samaritan, Simon, a native of the village called Gitto, who in the reign of Claudius Caesar, and in your royal city of Rome, did mighty acts of magic, by virtue of the art of the devils operating in him. He was considered a god, and as a god was honoured by you with a statue, which statue was erected on the river Tiber, between the two bridges, and bore this inscription, in the language of Rome: — Simoni Deo Sancto, To Simon the holy God.

This fact is highly significant. To be honored as a god in Rome and have a statue erected in such a prominent place required the approval of the Roman Senate. This is no small achievement for a Samaritan magician. It is often said that Simon had the ability to mesmerize the masses by performing what seemed like miracles with his apparent supernatural abilities. The Church Fathers all claimed that these wonders came by the powers of infernal “familiar spirits ” under his control. But in the Gospels, Jesus is likewise accused of being possessed of demons and in league with Beelzebub.

The later Syriac Simonians, who revered Simon and Helena as royalty, seem to have tended towards libertinism, engaged in magical practices such as incantations, love spells, and sending demons into people ’s dreams to distract them. Like the Roman Sabines with their worship of Semo Sancus, the Simonians also worshipped Simon and Helena as gods in the traditional pagan sense, associating them with other notable male/female pairs in religion and mythology (as testified by Irenaeus and Hippolytus), such as Zeus and Athena, or Shamash and Astarte. The latter two deities were also said to be worshipped in Tyre, the capital of ancient Phoenicia, where Simon supposedly found Helena working as a prostitute.

Returning to The Clementine Homilies , it appears to us that they are ultimately about Peter ’s struggle against Paul for leadership of the developing Church. This is the background of the conflict that we see in Paul ’s Epistle to the Galatians . Many notable scholars have identified Simon Magus ’ views and ministry as similar to those of Paul. In the interests of Catholicism, it is suggested, scribes replaced Paul ’s name with that of Simon Magus, deliberately encouraging the reader to conflate the two figures. This would make sense considering that much of what Simon says in his debates with Peter mirrors Marcionite and Gnostic theology. At the same time, it can be said that both Simon and Paul shared many important ideas outside of what is expressed in the Homilies. The Church Fathers themselves even seem to inadvertently equate Simon with Paul in many instances.

We also see in The Clementine Homilies that Simon eventually succeeded John the Baptist in the leadership of John ’s ministry. Thus it is implied in this source that Peter ’s struggle against Simon was actually a struggle against the movement founded by the murdered Baptist. This would clearly give him equal footing with Peter in their debates. John is referred to as the forerunner of Jesus, but it says that Simon is his own forerunner. So perhaps the idea being promoted here is that the student is less legitimate than his teacher (Jesus is less than John), and maybe even a deceiver or con-artist. As it states:

He being absent in Egypt for the practice of magic, and John being killed , Dositheus desiring the leadership, falsely gave out that Simon was dead, and succeeded to the seat. But Simon, returning not long after, and strenuously holding by the place as his own, when he met with Dositheus did not demand the place, knowing that a man who has attained power beyond his expectations cannot be removed from it.

Wherefore with pretended friendship he gives himself for a while to the second place, under Dositheus. But taking his place after a few days among the thirty fellow-disciples, he began to malign Dositheus as not delivering the instructions correctly. And this he said that he did, not through unwillingness to deliver them correctly, but through ignorance.

And on one occasion, Dositheus, perceiving that this artful accusation of Simon was dissipating the opinion of him with respect to many, so that they did not think that he was the Standing One, came in a rage to the usual place of meeting, and finding Simon, struck him with a staff. But it seemed to pass through the body of Simon as if he had been smoke. Thereupon Dositheus, being confounded, said to him, ‘If you are the Standing One, I also will worship you. ’ Then Simon said that he was; and Dositheus, knowing that he himself was not the Standing One, fell down and worshipped; and associating himself with the twenty-nine chiefs, he raised Simon to his own place of repute; and thus, not many days after, Dositheus himself, while he (Simon) stood, fell down and died.

Hippolytus, Eusebius, and the author(s) of the Clementine writings all described Simon as a baptist and as a favored disciple of John the Baptist. This text is telling us that although Simon should have been the immediate successor to John, the Samaritan Dositheus took that honor upon himself, as Simon was in Egypt at the time of the John ’s martyrdom. When Simon returned, the two men quarreled. Simon ’s superiority was proved miraculously after a magical duel, just like how Simon and the apostle Peter purportedly battled it out in front of Nero according to the apocryphal Acts of Peter and Paul , this time with Simon being the winner). Defeated, Dositheus ceded his position as head of the sect to Simon and formed his own group. According to The Clementine Homilies , it was Dositheus who got John ’s instructions incorrect, and Simon proved his superiority by overcoming him. This legend may contain grains of truth, as we know from patristic sources that baptizing sects of the Simonian school continued for some time.

The Orthodox polemicist and historian Eusebius, in his Ecclesiastical History (IV.7), names the offshoots of the Simonian tradition: Simon ’s immediate successor was the Samaritan Menander, then Saturninus in Antioch, and Basilides in Alexandria. He quotes from Irenaeus, whose account of the Gnostics is somewhat accurate (although still heavily biased and hostile), in Ecclesiastical History (IV: 11.2):

A certain Cerdon, who had taken his system from the followers of Simon, and had come to Rome under Hyginus, the ninth in the episcopal succession from the apostles, taught that the God proclaimed by the law and prophets was not the father of our Lord Jesus Christ. For the former was known, but the latter unknown; and the former was just, but the latter good. Marcion of Pontus succeeded Cerdon and developed his doctrine, uttering shameless blasphemies.

So this mysterious Cerdon is the one who inspired Marcion ’s doctrines which relate directly from Simon. Marcion is known to have been radical Paulinist, so the connection between Simon and Paul is even more apparent. Contemporary with

Cerdon and Valentinus was Marcus the Magician, whose sacramental mysteries are described in a slanderous manner by Irenaeus in Against Heresies . Purportedly, Marcus taught that the wine of the Eucharist symbolized Sophia ’s blood instead of Jesus ’. In what appears to have been a hieros gamos rite (a sacred marriage), “cups were mixed with wine. ” As the cup of wine was offered, the priest prayed that “Grace may flow ” into all who would drink of it. (Against Heresies, 1.13.2) Eusebius gave a slightly more moderate account of Marcus ’ Eucharist:

For some of them prepare a nuptial couch and perform a mystic rite with certain forms of expression addressed to those who are being initiated, and they say that it is a spiritual marriage which is celebrated by them, after the likeness of the marriages above. But others lead them to water, and while they baptize them they repeat the following words: Into the name of the unknown father of the universe, into truth, the mother of all things, into the one that descended upon Jesus. Others repeat Hebrew names in order the better to confound those who are being initiated. (IV. 11.5)

The words “who descended upon Jesus ” recall the Judeo-Christian belief that Jesus, as messiah and Son of God, had been foreshadowed by other “true prophets ” like John and Elijah. Simon Magus also looked upon himself as an embodiment of, or as possessed by, the divine “Father. ” This is why he called himself “the Standing (i.e. ‘living ’, ‘persisting ’) One ” —the One “having stood, standing, and will be standing. ” This “Standing One ” title was a position of eternal power, authority, and divinity (hence Simon is called the “Great Power ” in Acts 8:9). Also note that in Greek, “great ” is translated as megas which is a pun used in the epithet “magus ” (magician), especially more so in Simon ’s case.

In Paul ’s epistles, he repeatedly implies that he is the Standing One, such as in Romans 14:4 (YLT), where it says: “[T]o his own master he doth stand or fall; and he shall be made to stand , for God is able to make him stand. ” Then in Colossians 4:12 he tells how one of his followers is praying for another “... that you may stand perfect and made full in all the will of God. ” It seems that for Paul, “to stand ” meant that one had full possession of the state of Grace.

As seen in Matthew and John , the dove that descends upon Jesus at his baptism is the Holy Spirit personified, although to ancient societies the dove usually symbolized the great mother goddess. According to Wolfram von Eschenbach (author of the Grail story Parzival), the dove symbol was absorbed by the Knights Templar during their sojourn in Asia Minor, after which they chose to adorn themselves with turtle doves, taking on the name “Knights of the Dove ” as well. The dove is taken by Christians to represent the Holy Spirit, which according to Gnostic Ophites, was either Sophia ’s mother, or Sophia herself. Using birds to symbolize divine wisdom is nothing new. In Egyptian iconography, the god of writing and magic, Thoth, was often depicted as having a head of an ibis bird.

The cleansing of the Christian baptism has been frequently compared with how the flood of Noah cleansed the Earth of its bad actors. We find this comparison even in scripture. 1 Peter 19-21 (NIV) tells us:

After being made alive, he [the resurrected Jesus] went and made proclamation to the imprisoned spirits —to those who were disobedient long ago when God waited patiently in the days of Noah while the ark was being built. In it only a few people, eight in all, were saved through water, and this water symbolizes baptism that now saves you also —not the removal of dirt from the body but the pledge of a clear conscience toward God.

Religious philosopher Mircea Eliade explained in his classic work The Sacred and the Profane why baptism in implicitly connected to the Flood, and to the idea of being born again, because of the universal meaning of water symbolism:

The waters symbolize the universal sum of virtualities; they are fons et Origo , “spring and origin, ” the reservoir of all the possibilities of existence; they precede every form and support every creation... . On the other hand, immersion in water signifies regression to the preformal, reincorporation into the undifferentiated mode of pre-existence. Emersion repeats the cosmogonic act of formal manifestation; immersion is equivalent to a dissolution of forms. This is why the symbolism of the waters implies both death and rebirth. Contact with water always brings a regeneration —on the one hand because dissolution is followed by a new birth, on the other because immersion fertilizes and multiplies the potential of life. The aquatic cosmology has its counterpart—on the human level—in the hylogenies, the beliefs according to which mankind was born of the waters. The Flood, or the periodical submersion of the continents (myths of the Atlantis type) have their counterpart, on the human level, in ... initiatory death through baptism... . From the point of view of structure, the flood is comparable to baptism... .

On his Atlan.org website, Arysio Santos connects the “chrism ” anointing and the baptism with the conflagration and the Atlantean cataclysm:

Fire and Water (Baptism and Chrism) were administered together in the primitive Church, and only later became separated. As in the ordeal of Atlantis, which was attended by both cataclysms, the association of Chrism and Baptism implies the same thing. So, granted that Baptism symbolizes the Flood, it is clear that Chrism allegorizes the fiery cataclysm that the Stoics called Ekpyrosis (or Universal Conflagration)... .

...

... The two Baptisms correspond to the Flood and the Conflagration of Paradise, and to the two gods that brought them about, Indra and Agni in India, and Christ and John in Christianity or Elohim and Jahveh in Judaism.

This connection between rebirth through baptism and the birth of creation from the pre-creation “waters ” in Genesis did not escape the notice of the Church Fathers. Tertullian wrote in On Baptism (4):

Before all the furnishing of the world, [was] quiescent with God in a yet unshapen state … . Water was the first to produce that which had life, that it might be no wonder in baptism if waters knew how to give life… . All waters, therefore, in virtue of the pristine privilege of their origin, do, after invocation of God, attain the sacramental power of sanctification; for the Spirit immediately supervenes from the heavens, and rests over the waters, sanctifying them from Himself; and being thus sanctified, they imbibe at the same time the power of sanctifying… .

On the subject of baptismal dissolution and rebirth of the spirit, The Excerpts of Theodotus (1:1), as preserved by Clement of Alexandria in a collection of notes, tell us that the Savior descended “clothed with the Pneumatic Seed. ” For the Valentinians, this descent is symbolized by Jesus ’ baptism. Excerpts of Theodotus 36 explains:

Our Angels were emanated in the Unity, for they are one, since they were issued from the One. But since we were in a condition of division, then Jesus was baptized dividing the Undivided, until He unites us with the Angels, in the Pleroma, so that we all, the multitude, having become one shall be reunited with the One that was divided for us.

Together with Jesus, the angels, who are nothing else that the Son ’s limbs in this text, are baptized, and it is told why this is necessary (Excerpts of Theodotus 22):

The Angels, of whom we are parts, are baptized … for the dead, for we are dead, we whom the existence here has put in a condition of Death… . They were baptized in the beginning … in the Redemption of the Name descended upon Jesus under the form of a dove… . Even Jesus needed Redemption, in order not to be detained by the Thought of the Lack in which He had been put… .

It should also be noted that one is not necessarily “reborn ” from the

baptismal waters in exactly the same form as one ’s initial birth. There are many allusions in sacred writing comparing it to being “dyed ” like a colored egg at Easter. One takes on the coloring of whatever one is immersed into, and changed forever. In the apocryphal Gospel of Philip we are told:

God is a dyer. As the good dyes, which are called “true, ” dissolve with the things dyed in them, so it is with those whom God has dyed. Since his dyes are immortal, they become immortal by means of his colors. Now God dips what he dips in water.

Another word for this is “tincturing. ” The connection between tincturing and baptism was implied when Friedrich Nicholai wrote about the Baphomet of the Templars. Peter Partner, in The Murdered Magicians , tells us that “Nicholai maintained that Baphomet was a composite of two Greek words meaning “colour ” (or by extension ‘baptism ’) and ‘spirit. ’ ” This describes the Baptism of the Holy Spirit that John the Baptist talked about as a tincturing process. This corroborates the “Baptism of Wisdom ” interpretation of the name of Baphomet as well, since the Holy Spirit and Wisdom (Sophia) are considered to be identical or connected concepts in Christianity as well as in other mystical traditions.

The Mandaeans, whose baptism rite is called “Seboghatullah ”

(“Immersion in the Divine Mystery, ” quite similar to the term “Baptism of

Wisdom ”), also compare it to being dipped in dye. Historically, there are two colors of dye that have been considered next to sacred because of their association with royalty. Tyrian purple, made from the excretions of sea snails, was extremely expensive and highly prized. In Acts 16:14, Paul converts and baptizes a very wealthy woman named Lydia who is described as a “seller of purple, ” referring to this dye. The dye made those who touched it in its unprocessed state reek of rotting fish. (Because of this, the Jewish Talmud grants the right of divorce to women whose husbands take up the dying trade after marriage.)

After the Crusades, the use of the purple dye for royalty was supplanted in Europe with that of the scarlet-colored kermes vermilio (crimson), made from the mashed bodies of a certain species of locust that lived in the Kerm Oak in the Mediterranean. It was also made into a red liqueur called “alchermes ” that was popular as an aphrodisiac until the twentieth century, when knowledge of its origin with bugs became widespread. According to Robert Graves, Jesus was actually clothed in a scarlet robe of kermes when he was crowned with thorns by soldiers in Matthew 27:27-30. Usually this incident is interpreted as a humiliating mockery, but some, like Graves, have suggested that the symbolism in the details all corresponds to the actual anointing of a king. Graves writes in The White Goddess :

St. John the Baptist, who lost his head on St. John ’s Day, took over the oak- king ’s titles and customs, it was natural to let Jesus, as John ’s merciful successor, take over the holly king ’s… . The scarlet-oak, or kerm-oak, or holly-oak, is the evergreen twin of the ordinary oak and its Classical Greek names prinos and hysge are also used for holly in modern Greek. It has prickly leaves and nourishes the kerm, a scarlet insect not unlike the holly- berry (and once thought to be a berry), from which the ancients made their royal scarlet dye and an aphrodisiac elixir… . Jesus wore kerm-scarlet when attired as King of the Jews.

In addition to the obvious connection between a dye made from locusts and John the Baptist, who lived on locusts for food, the word “kermes ” also brings to mind Hermes. According to alchemist Fulcanelli, kermes is in fact a symbol for the prima materia (original matter), which contains the alchemical gold in potentia . In Mysteries of the Cathedrals , he writes cryptically:

The oak … gives the kirmis (Fr. Kermes), which, in the Gay Science, has the same significance as Hermes, the initial consonants being interchangeable. The two terms have an identical meaning, namely Mercury. At any rate … kirmis (Arab girmiz that which dyes scarlet) characterizes the prepared substance… .

… Open, that is to say, decompose, this matter. Try to separate the pure part of it, or its metallic soul as the sacred expression has it, and you will have the kirmis, the Hermes, the mercury dye which has within it the mystic gold, just as St. Christopher carries Jesus and the Fleece is hung on the oak, like the … kirmis, and you will be able to say, without violating the truth, that the old hermetic oak acts as mother to the secret mercury.

After John ’s death, his Gnostic baptism cult continued on not only with the Pauline Christians, but also with the Simonians. According to the Church Fathers, Simon Magus considered himself an embodiment of the Logos (the divine word) or the Nous (the universal mind). This, in his system, was the essential male principle in charge of managing the all. The Epinoia , which he presented his consort Helena as an incarnation of, was the female principle producing all things, including the world creating angels which are the same as the “principalities ” and “authorities ” of Paul (or the “Archons ” of the Gnostics). Together they formed a syzygia or “divine union. ” The Epinoia was the lost sheep that the Nous had to descend to Earth to save, since the jealous angels imprisoned her in the world where she was subject to various reincarnations, the most famous being Helen of Troy. Fittingly, Simon found Helena as a poor slave girl working in a brothel in Tyre, as mentioned earlier. He was able to rescue her from bondage and enjoy her for himself.

In Gnostic Mysteries of Sex: Sophia the Wild One and Erotic Christianity , Tobias Churton writes that the relationship between Simon Magus and Helena was remarkably different from that found in encratic forms of Christianity and Gnosticism, and even Jesus and Mary Magdalene's relationship, for that matter:

In the Gospel of the Egyptians , thanatos (death) is the consequence of eros (sexual love). In Encratism, the redeemed must trample on the “garment of shame ” (the body); there can be no more male or female: sexual identity is no identity. No more children; no more death. Cease lusting; cease suffering. Desire creates illusion (the world). How different is the Simonian tradition of venerating the images of the Lord (Simon) and the Lady (Helena) equally, from line 114 of the Gnostic Gospel of Thomas , where to enter the kingdom of heaven the female must become male! When Simon redeems his lost First Thought, he does not reject her femininity.

Certainly, many authors have connected Mary Magdalene with the Gnostic Sophia, since some sects viewed the latter as Christ ’s consort also. This fits with the symbolism of the Magdalene, who was originally portrayed by the Church as a prostitute, just as Sophia was.

According to Hippolytus, Simon allegedly encouraged his followers to indulge in promiscuous intercourse because “all earth is earth, and it makes no difference where any one sows, provided he sow. ” This is called “perfect agape [love], ” the “holy of holies ” and “sanctifying one another. ” Similarly, according to Joseph von Hammer-Purgstall, the Ophites practiced obscene sex rites involving children and animals that they allegedly called Zoogogon sophian (“genital wisdom ”), which he found represented in numerous artifacts on former Templar properties.

As we mentioned previously, it is said that John was killed while Simon was in Egypt, presumably in Alexandria, where he may have been undergoing initiation rituals to learn Pharaonic Egyptian-styled magic and esoteric doctrines. Similarly, in Matthew 2:13-18 we find that Jesus was in Egypt after his birth with his family, who were supposedly trying to avoid the alleged slaughter of first-born boys by King Herod the Great. They reportedly returned to Israel after the king ’s death. However, there is no historical record of Herod actually slaughtering masses of boys. Josephus reported that Herod planned to fill up the Hippodrome with infants and then slaughter them, but died before he carried it out.

In Josephus ’ records, John was killed in 26/27 AD or 33 AD depending on what, “About this time ” means following the words “in the twentieth year of the reign of Tiberius. ” In Antiquities of the Jews (18.5.2 and 18.3.3) we read:

Now, some of the Jews thought that the destruction of Herod ’s army came from God, and that very justly, as a punishment of what he did against John, that was called the Baptist ; for Herod slew him, who was a good man, and commanded the Jews to exercise virtue, both as to righteousness towards one another, and piety towards God… .

Now, when others came in crowds about him, for they were greatly moved by hearing his words, Herod, who feared lest the great influence John had over the people might put it into his power and inclination to raise a rebellion, thought it best, by putting him to death, to prevent any mischief he might cause, and not bring himself into difficulties, by sparing a man who might make him repent of it when it should be too late. Accordingly he was sent a prisoner, out of Herod ’s suspicious temper, to Macherus, the castle … and was there put to death. Now the Jews had an opinion that the destruction of this army was sent as a punishment upon Herod, and a mark of God ’s displeasure against him.

The “army ” destroyed here was that of Herod Antipas, son of and successor to Herod the Great, who was ordered to launch an invasion against King Aretas of Nabatea (part of the empire) by Roman Emperor Tiberias. The Emperor, who asked nothing less than for Herod to bring him the king ’s head! Incidentally, As Churton reports in The Mysteries of John the Baptist , “Dead Sea Scrolls scholar Robert Eisenman has proposed that perhaps the whole story of John ’s beheading is a garbled version of what really happened to King Aretas.

These events were all tied into the reason why John was executed in the first place. King Aretas ’ daughter was Phasaelis, the wife that King Herod Antipas divorced so that he could marry Herodias, the mother of Salome and the one who asked Herod for John the Baptist ’s head. Churton suggests that due to his status in the priesthood and popularity as a prophet, John may have been:

… a habitual frequenter of Herod Antipas ’s court … a friend perhaps of Queen Phasaelis… . If Phasaelis knew John, it may have been she who informed him about the divorce plans, specifically to generate a political and legal defense of her position.

The woman that Herod Antipas was dumping Phasaelis for was Herodias, the wife of his brother, Herod II, called “Philip ” in the Gospels, whom he took from his brother upon meeting her. It was John ’s public objection to the new marriage that made Herod and Herodias angry. Initially Herod just imprisoned John in his castle at Macherus, which Churton has speculated was an “all-mod- cons ” palace, where John “was probably under ‘house arrest ’ in a gilded cage: a precautionary, politically sensitive measure… . ” It was at this castle on the shore of the Dead Sea that Phasaelis stationed herself before running off to her father ’s domain in Petra (now in modern Jordan). Her father, Aretas IV, King of Nabatea, was part of the same family tree as the Herodians, and was obviously named after the same root word as Herod. War ensued between Aretas and Herod. But Herod ’s army was routed, and it was rumored that this was God ’s punishment for his beheading of John. Churton speculates further:

John might conceivably have been party to Phaeaelis ’s “escape ” from Macherus. He might have been at the palace when he was arrested. His execution then could conceivably have been connected to Macherus ’s proximity to Nabatea.

If there was a chance of Aretas getting hold of John as a political and religious mascot, such a fear might have necessitated the execution that Herod must have known was politically very risky on the home front… .

So there may be more to the weird, kinky and twisted story other than what the Gospels tell us: that Herodias hated John so much, she asked for his head on a “charger, ” via her daughter, Salome, the only one in this family not named “Herod ” or some derivative thereof, who was doing a sexy dance at her new stepfather ’s birthday party when she asked for it. One wonders what Herodias wanted with the head. We have suggested that she might have wanted to make it into a teraph for divination purposes. This seems more likely when we consider that Herodias is, in modern times, considered by some practitioners of witchcraft to be an incarnation of Lilith, and identical to the goddess Diana.

This was first mentioned in the 1899 book Aradia , or the Gospel of the Witches by American folklorist Charles Godfrey Leland. He claimed that it was based on a religious text used by witches in Tuscany, Italy. It said that Herodias had been condemned by God, because of her role in John ’s death, to wander the skies forever more, only being allowed to rest in treetops at night. Her name was purportedly compounded with that of Diana (rendering “Herodiana, ” and then, eventually, “Aradia ”), and she supposedly traveled at night with the same female nymph spirits recorded in Greek mythology as being part of Diana ’s entourage.

She is said in the book to be the daughter of Diana and the Sun, there said to be Lucifer. It asserts that she is a lunar goddess (and that, interestingly, Cain is currently imprisoned inside of the moon). According to the Aradian gospel, she is seen as a leader and teacher, supposedly, to the witches of that area.

This would match up with what Mircea Eliade wrote, stating that at Arada, along with Irodiada, was a name used for what Romanians called their “Queen of the Fairies, ” and that she was a “metamorphosis of Diana. ” Witchcraft writers Nigel Jackson and Michael Howard, in the book The Pillars of Tubal Cain , claim that Herodias immigrated to France sometime after the biblical events, just as Mary Magdalene, Jesus ’ beloved female disciple, purportedly did. If she was already a witch before, it makes sense that she would become a patroness of witches after she went to Europe.

So is Herodias likely to have been a witch? One of the most ignored details is that the Herodians were actually an Idumean Arab family (what the Bible calls “Edomites, ” from south of Judah) that had intermarried in with the Israelites, being forced to convert to Judaism and incorporated into the Jewish nation during the Maccabean revolt (in the second century BC). The Edomites were descendants of Jacob ’s older brother Esau, whom Jacob disinherited through trickery. Jacob went on to change his name to “Israel ” and to father the twelve tribes of that nation, who were thereafter always at war or having skirmishes with the Edomites.

The whole bloodline and nation of Edom came to be associated by the Israelites with the Devil, because if they were Israel ’s enemies, that meant they were God ’s enemies (although, according to Robert Graves in King Jesus , they were also “renowned for their wisdom ”). Recall that, according to cabalistic texts, they were literally descendants of Lilith via Mahalath, one of her human incarnations, who married Esau, the progenitor of the Edomite line. They were associated with “Mount Seir ” and the “Wilderness of Seir, ” which, as we have mentioned previously, is also connected to

Lilith and Azazel. The word seir itself means “hairy, ” “he-goat ” or “satyr. ” As to their pre-Judean religion, nobody is certain of much except that they worshipped a god named “Qaus. ” Also, as Arabs, the Idumeans were, like Mohammed himself, descendants of Ishmael, another disinherited older brother who is demonized in the Torah of the Jews.

This brings us to the story of Zechariah, the father of John the Baptist, and the vision he had of the archangel Gabriel while he was serving as priest, burning incense at the altar of the temple. The story is told in Luke 1:11-17 (NIV):

Then an angel of the Lord appeared to him, standing at the right side of the altar of incense. When Zechariah saw him, he was startled and was gripped with fear. But the angel said to him: “Do not be afraid, Zechariah; your prayer has been heard. Your wife Elizabeth will bear you a son, and you are to give him the name John. He will be a joy and delight to you, and many will rejoice because of his birth, for he will be great in the sight of the Lord. He is never to take wine or other fermented drink, and he will be filled with the Holy Spirit even from birth. Many of the people of Israel will he bring back to the Lord their God. And he will go on before the Lord, in the spirit and power of Elijah, to turn the hearts of the fathers to their children and the disobedient to the wisdom of the righteous —to make ready a people prepared for the Lord.

Zechariah is taken aback by this vision, and the prediction made by the angel. He questions how he could have a child when he and his wife are both so old. Because of his lack of faith, Gabriel curses Zechariah with dumbness until the day of his son ’s birth. When he comes out of the temple, the other priests can tell that he has had some kind of encounter because of the way he is acting. But because he cannot verbalize it, they are not sure what it was.

In King Jesus (a novel), Robert Graves presented his own interpretation of the messianic legend based upon his decades of research into comparative mythology. There is a scene where he embellishes this story with some surprising details. In his version, the vision that Zechariah has (called there “Zecharias ”) is not of the archangel Gabriel, but a donkey-headed entity. As he described it to a tribunal of priests who are trying him for witchcraft:

“I saw a power clothed in robes of light that resembled the same sacred robes which you yourself wear at the grand festivals. And this Power hugged to its breast a triple-headed golden dog and a golden sceptre in the form of a budding palm branch; and, as the Lord our God lives, this Power stood in a gap between the Curtain and the wall on the right hand; and this Power was of more than human stature; and this Power spoke in the same still, small voice that I had heard before, saying: ‘Be not afraid, Zacharias! Go out now and tell my people truthfully what you have both heard and seen! ’ But I could not, for I was struck dumb… .

“… I saw the face of the Power, and the face shone, though not unmercifully bright, and the likeness of the face ” —his voice rose to a scream — “and the likeness of the face was that of a Wild Ass! ”

Earlier in the book it had been revealed that a ritual mask in the likeness of the head of a wild ass had been stolen from the Edomites many years earlier and was in the possession of the priests of the Jewish temple. In the Graves novel, Zecharias is put on trial for sorcery —as it was thought that no one could see the voice of God and live. Since Zecharias admitted having a vision in the temple, it meant in the eyes of the Sanhedrin that he had conjured a demon there, polluting the sanctuary. His testimony was itself also labeled as blasphemy, as the judges felt he was implying that the priests of Israel had been worshipping an ass-headed deity all along. This is very interesting. We are not sure what made Graves decide to include this detail in his story, but the guy was a walking encyclopedia of mythology, so we are sure he had a basis for it. Perhaps it had something to do with the fact that, as Morton Smith tells us in Jesus the Magician :

There was a long standing legend that the god of the Jews was a donkey, or donkey-headed. The legend probably arose from the fact that the donkey was the sacred animal of Seth, the villain in the Egyptian pantheon, who was commonly thought by the Egyptians to be the god of foreigners. He was also, being a villain, given a large role in magic, and often appears as a donkey-headed figure on magical gems. The Jews were among the largest groups of foreigners in Egypt, so their god, lao, was identified with Seth. lo or Eio in Coptic means “donkey, ” so the identification was almost predetermined.

In the back notes, Smith adds that Epiphanius, in his Panarion (26.10.6), claimed that the Gnostic Demiurge Sabaoth “has the form of an ass. ” Apparently not only was the Jewish god thought by some to be a donkey, but his son was as well. This is confirmed in the text On the Origin of the World , when Sabaoth is depicted as the repentant son of Ialdabaoth who is also called the “Lord of Forces ” and is redeemed by Sophia.

As proof of the connection between the donkey and Jesus, Smith submits a piece of graffiti art found in Rome, dated to about 200 AD, that was, at the time of Smith ’s writing (1978) thought to be one of the earliest depictions of the crucifixion. But it showed, instead of a man wearing a crown of thorns, a man with the head of an ass. (Another version of this, or at least what sounds like a remarkably similar picture, is cited by Carl Jung in his book Aion as having been found in Denderah, Egypt, but he claimed that it showed Seth with an ass head tied to a “slave post, ” and his nephew Horus —who, in mythology, killed Seth — standing before him with a knife in his hand.) Yet another graffiti drawing, found in Carthage and also dated to the beginning of the third century, showed a donkey wearing a toga, along with the words “The god of the Christians (is) a donkey who beds (with his worshipers). ” Smith points out that it was common at the time to think of demonic possession as involving the person having “sex ” with the inhabiting spirit, which would often take the form of an animal when manifesting visibly, so thus the possession was symbolized as bestiality.

So did the angel Gabriel really take the form of an ass that night with Zechariah in the Temple? We have no real evidence of it besides the Graves novel. But other writers believe that the spiritual influence of Gabriel over the family of John has been represented in art many times with animal totems. Mark Gibbs, in his book The Virgin and the High Priest (2007), demonstrated that the image of a peacock is seen in many Renaissance-era depictions of John, Zacharias, and Elizabeth. He connects this with “Melek Taus, ” the “peacock angel ” worshipped by the Kurdish sect known as the Yezidis, which they say represents none other than Azazel, the goat demon. They variously describe him in their scriptures as simultaneously a racial ancestor and the equivalent of the Gnostic Demiurge. Also, in Islam, Gabriel is said to have visited Mohammed in the form of a horse with wings, a peacock ’s tail, and the head of a woman —a figured named “Barak ” (“Lightning ”). He gave Mohammad a midnight ride from Mecca to Jerusalem and back again, supposedly. (We will discuss this more a bit later.)

Gibbs ’ book, by the way, lays out a very convincing case, all relying on both canonical and apocryphal scripture, that Mary, the mother of Jesus, may have been a temple priestess since childhood, very intimately involved with Zechariah and Elizabeth her cousin. The Protoevangelium of James says that Mary ’s parents were both part of the priesthood, but that they both died by the time she was twelve, and then it fell upon Zechariah to find a husband for her. Tobias Churton seems to imply something similar in his book about John the Baptist. It ’s a bit too much to get into here, but it goes along with the idea that John and Jesus may have essentially grown up around each other, surrounded by priests, and were, at the very least, equally important figures.

In The Clementine Recognitions (1.54) and (1.60), it is described how some disciples of John felt that he was a more apt owner of the title “Christ ” than Jesus:

Yea, some even of the disciples of John, who seemed to be great ones, have separated themselves from the people, and proclaimed their own master as the Christ. But all these schisms have been prepared, that by means of them the faith of Christ and baptism might be hindered.

…

And, behold, one of the disciples of John asserted that John was the Christ, and not Jesus, inasmuch as Jesus Himself declared that John was greater than all men and all prophets.

In John 8:48, Jesus is accused of being a Samaritan magician in control of a demon:

Then the Jews answered and said to Him, “Do we not say rightly that you are a Samaritan and have a demon? ” Jesus answered, “I do not have a demon; but I honor my Father, and you dishonor me. And I do not seek my own glory; there is One who seeks and judges. ”

It should be noted that Jesus doesn ’t deny being a Samaritan (as Simon

was), but only having a demon. This must be significant since in an older, primitive text may have had Christ admit that he was a Samaritan. The Samaritans were associated with witchcraft. One must keep in mind that The Babylonian Talmud also named Jesus as a sorcerer who studied magic in Egypt, just as Simon is said to have done in the Clementines. They were probably trained by a Hermopolitan priesthood (the likely authors of The Pyramid Texts). This may account for the twelve missing years in Jesus life. When he finally returned to face the Temple hierarchy, he was a highly educated young man full of heterodox ideas —a savvy, mystical antagonist, just as John was. In The Babylonian Talmud , specifically in Tosefta Shabbat 104b, we find an obscure figure by the name of “Ben Stada ” or “Ben Sattadai ” who is said to have had the “witchcraft of Egypt ” (i.e. magic spells) tattooed on his flesh. (Some scholars have identified Ben Stada as Jesus Christ, but this is a point of contention.) We also see the same accusation of demonic possession was made against John, as reflected also in Matthew 11:16- 17 (KJV):

For John came neither eating nor drinking, and they say, He hath a devil. The Son of man came eating and drinking, and they say, Behold a man gluttonous, and a winebibber, a friend of publicans and sinners. But wisdom is justified of her children.

The accusations against Jesus and John may have been connected directly. In Jesus the Magician , Morton Smith wrote about how Jesus was the target of rumors that “he had raised John the Baptist from the dead and was magically identified with him, ” or that he did his miracles by control of the “ruler of demons, Beelzebub, and was identified with him. ” Another permutation of this that can be imagined is the idea that John had a demon, the ownership of which passed on to Jesus after his death (perhaps, as we suggested before, through the agency of John ’s head). But certainly, John ’s own spirit could have been used. Many people simply thought Jesus was John risen from the dead. Even Herod thought that. Mark 6:14-16 (KJV) tells us about when Herod first head of Jesus and the miracles that he was doing:

And king Herod heard of him; (for his name was spread abroad:) and he said, That John the Baptist was risen from the dead, and therefore mighty works do shew forth themselves in him. Others said, That it is Elias. And others said, That it is a prophet, or as one of the prophets. But when Herod heard thereof, he said, It is John, whom I beheaded: he is risen from the dead.

The opening verses of Matthew 14 (KJV) tell us the same thing, while adding that Jesus is able to do wondrous things because he controls John ’s risen spirit:

At that time Herod the tetrarch heard of the fame of Jesus, And said unto his servants, This is John the Baptist; he is risen from the dead; and therefore mighty works do shew forth themselves in him.

As attested in The Pyramid Texts, The Coffin Texts, and The Book of Going Forth by Day/Book of the Dead , as well the array of royal Netherworld Books , to have one ’s head cut off was an intensely negative thing in ancient Egypt. It basically meant that the spirit was cut off from the “Night Lands ” or the afterlife. This is a common motif in ancient literature. So the fact that John was decapitated might make him the perfect victim for spiritual enslavement of this sort, as well as that fact that he was, seemingly, murdered. Morton Smith, on pages 134-138 of his book, wrote that there are actual prayers and rituals in The Greek Magical Papyri which purport to allow the magician to gain control over the spirit of a murdered man and use it to whatever ends desired. Thus Jesus could have possessed the spirit of John as kind of a “familiar ” servitor spirit.

Similarly, as we mentioned, Simon Magus was specifically accused of performing miracles by controlling the spirit of a murdered boy. Clementine Homilies 2:26 tells us that Simon Magus drew this boy ’s spirit out of the air and turned him into a homunculus (an artificial human):

For he even began to commit murder as himself disclosed to us, as a friend to friends, that, having separated the soul of a child from its own body by horrid incantations, as his assistant for the exhibition of anything that he pleased, and having drawn the likeness of the boy, he has it set up in the inner room where he sleeps, saying that he once formed the boy of air, by divine arts, and having painted his likeness, he gave him back again to the air.

Not to be left out, St. Paul talks about being haunted by an evil spirit when discussing his own ventures into the paranormal in 2 Corinthians 12: 7-9 (KJV):

And lest I should be exalted above measure through the abundance of the revelations, there was given to me a thorn in the flesh, the messenger of Satan to buffet me, lest I should be exalted above measure. For this thing I besought the Lord thrice, that it might depart from me. And he said unto me, My grace is sufficient for thee: for my strength is made perfect in weakness. Most gladly therefore will I rather glory in my infirmities, that the power of Christ may rest upon me.

The word translated above as “messenger ” is angelos, so Paul is literally saying that an angel of Satan haunted him.

It is curious to note that in Matthew 16:18, that other Simon, the disciple of Jesus, is renamed Cephas or “rock ” (a.k.a. “Peter ”), which is very similar to Simon Magus ’ title of “Standing One. ” Also consider that in Matthew 3:9, John says that God can raise up children to Abraham among these “stones. ” We are left to wonder just how connected the Jesus cult and the Simon cult may have been in the beginning.

In Clementine Homilies 18:1, it talks about Simon ’s theology, and reflects the Church Fathers ’ reports of him teaching the concept of a higher God above the God of the Jews:

When I went away yesterday, I promised to return today, and in a discussion show that he who framed the world is not the highest God, but that the highest God is another who alone is good, and who has remained unknown up to this time… . If then he is the Lawgiver, he is just; but if he is just, then he is not good… . Now a lawgiver cannot be both just and good, for these qualities do not harmonize.

This would also reflect Marcion ’s heretical beliefs, as well as what we find in John 1:17-18 (NIV):

For the law was given through Moses; grace and truth came through Jesus Christ. No one has ever seen God, but the one and only Son, who is himself God and is in closest relationship with the Father, has made him known.

The passage quoted above from The Clementine Homilies supports the reports of the Church Fathers who accused Simon of being the father of all heresies, or one of the progenitors of Gnosticism (a credit also given to John), even in its Christianized form, despite the fact that Simon himself is said to have rejected Christianity altogether. Nevertheless, it seems as though Simon learned some of his ideas from John the Baptist. The Church Fathers claimed that Simon considered himself to be this other, higher God. However, one should not rely on these reports alone as they are derogatory and biased. The Simonian teachings in question can be found in his Great Announcement , preserved by Hippolytus in Refutation of All Heresies (6:12).

The Simonians themselves, like the later Marcionites, were, not surprisingly, radical Paulinists. Simone Petrement observes in A Separate God that “in some parts of the Pseudo-Clementines, Simon represents Paul; in others, he represents Marcion, who wished to be a disciple of Paul. ” We also see Irenaeus connecting Paul ’s doctrine of “salvation by grace of Jesus Christ ” (Ephesians 2:8- 9) with the Simonian doctrine of “salvation by grace of Simon Magus ” (Against Heresies 1.23.3). Irenaeus goes on to say that Simon taught that the angels were not simply powers dominating the world, but they also authors of the law of Moses, just as Paul writes in Galatians 3:19. This is the reason why Simon ’s disciples disregarded the law, and thought of themselves as free to do what they wished. So the Simonians borrowed many ideas from Paul ’s epistles, or from earlier texts that could have served as the basis for the Pauline literature. This is also why the Jewish Christians/Ebionites attacked Paul through Simon and claimed both figures were in fact “lawless ones, ” libertines much like the Antichrist figure in 2 Thessalonians 2:8. The Babylonian Talmud also mentions heretical Jewish groups he called the Mimim , which more than likely refer to the Sethians and Ophites, who have strong similarities in doctrine with both Paul and Simon Magus.

To make things even thornier, we also have jumbled accounts of both Paul and Simon ’s deaths. In 2 Timothy 4:6-8, we find an imprisoned Paul anticipating his demise, much like John did while imprisoned in Matthew 14:3 (NIV):

For I am already being poured out as a drink offering, and the time of my departure has come. I have fought the good fight, I have finished the race, I have kept the faith. Henceforth there is laid up for me the crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous judge, will award to me on that Day, and not only to me but also to all who have loved his appearing.

However, some scholars have concluded that 1 and 2 Timothy , along with Titus, are not original to Paul but are actually Catholic pseudepigraphs. In fact, there ’s a brief refutation of Marcion ’s central text The Antitheses at the conclusion of 1 Timothy , which means that it was composed no earlier than the first half of the second century. Both 1 and 2 Timothy were forged by Orthodox polemicists (more than likely the Church Fathers) to “correct ” Marcionite and Gnostic interpretations of the Pauline texts. In other words, all the pastorals in the New Testament are forgeries. That is almost a unanimous opinion among academics. In any case, there are a few traditions which recount the ways in which Paul was supposedly beheaded. Eusebius writes in Ecclesiastical History (2:25.5) that Paul, like Peter, was martyred:

It is, therefore, recorded that Paul was beheaded in Rome itself, and that Peter likewise was crucified under Nero. This account of Peter and Paul is substantiated by the fact that their names are preserved in the cemeteries of that place even to the present day.

Tertullian wrote in Prescription Against Heretics (Chapter XXXVI) that Paul was indeed beheaded with a sword, and explicitly connects it with John ’s death:

Since, moreover, you are close upon Italy, you have Rome, from which there comes even into our own hands the very authority (of apostles themselves). How happy is its church, on which apostles poured forth all their doctrine along with their blood; where Peter endures a passion like his Lord ’s; where Paul wins his crown in a death like John ’s [the Baptist]; where the Apostle John was first plunged, unhurt, into boiling oil, and thence remitted to his island-exile.

In the Catholic pseudepigraph The Acts of Peter and Paul , Simon Magus ascends into the air like Superman, in imitation of the physical ascension of Elias and of Jesus. But whilst he was doing so, the apostles Peter and Paul counteracted his activity with the intercession of prayer, and Simon fell to the ground, seriously injuring his legs. Note that Peter and Paul are the best of friends in this text, while in the much earlier Galatians , Peter and Paul are bitter enemies, just as the Clementine writings record. It states:

And Peter, looking steadfastly against Simon, said: I adjure you, you angels of Satan, who are carrying him into the air, to deceive the hearts of the unbelievers, by the God that created all things, and by Jesus Christ, whom on the third day He raised from the dead, no longer from this hour to keep him up, but to let him go. And immediately, being let go, he fell into a place called Sacra Via, that is, Holy Way, and was divided into four parts, having perished by an evil fate.

Then Nero ordered Peter and Paul to be put in irons, and the body of Simon to be carefully kept three days, thinking that he would rise on the third day. To whom Peter said: He will no longer rise, since he is truly dead, being condemned to everlasting punishment.

Simon, like Lucifer (the King of Babylon in Isaiah 14:12-15), quite literally falls and injures himself, breaking his legs and eventually dying, after which he is condemned to Hell. The manner of his death evokes Luke ’s gospel (10:18), where it says, “Behold, I see Satan falling from heaven, ” as well as Revelation 12, where the archangel Michael casts the Devil and his angels from Heaven. This story given in The Acts of Peter and Paul looks so ludicrous that many biblical scholars have dismissed it as a sheer invention by an orthodox scribe from much later in the fifth century. However, it is our suspicion that this text appears in the historical record as late as the medieval era because of its similarities with another late medieval text known as the Toledot Yeshu . This text is usually considered an “anti-Gospel ” parody, written by Jews, where it depicts Jesus and Judas Iscariot battling in the air. But the text is largely dependent on The Acts of Peter and Paul , among other sources such as the Talmud, Midrash and even the Christian Gospels.

Furthermore, we also suspect that this story was fabricated for one reason: to cover up the true manner of Simon ’s untimely death at the hands of Roman authorities. In The Acts of Peter and Paul , Nero seems entirely favorable to Simon ’s cause to prove that he is indeed the resurrected Christ and superior to the apostles. This doesn ’t exactly pan out for Simon, however). If the theory that Simon is indeed the real identity behind Paul is correct, could it possibly be that the Knights Templar worshipped the bearded mummified head of not the herald and master John the Baptist, but of Simon Magus, the rightful heir of the Johannite tradition? This is indeed a tantalizing possibility.

What is even more amazing is that in the same Acts of Peter and Paul, we find that before Simon ’s untimely death, he is brazen enough to ask Nero to decapitate him so that he can resurrect himself in three days, to prove indeed that he was the Son of God.

Simon said: Do you believe, O good emperor, that I who was dead, and rose again, am a magician? For it had been brought about by his own cleverness that the unbelieving Simon had said to Nero: Order me to be beheaded in a dark place, and there to be left slain; and if I do not rise on the third day, know that I am a magician; but if I rise again, know that I am the Son of God.

And Nero having ordered this, in the dark, by his magic art he managed that a ram should be beheaded. And for so long did the ram appear to be Simon until he was beheaded. And when he had been beheaded in the dark, he that had beheaded him, taking the head, found it to be that of a ram; but he would not say anything to the emperor, lest he should scourge him, having ordered this to be done in secret. Thereafter, accordingly, Simon said that he had risen on the third day, because he took away the head of the ram and the limbs — but the blood had been there congealed —and on the third day he showed himself to Nero, and said: Cause to be wiped away my blood that has been poured out; for, behold, having been beheaded, as I promised, I have risen again on the third day.

We see that Nero doesn ’t actually order Simon to be killed, but, in fact, replaces his head with that of a sacrificed ram! Presumably, Simon performed some type of magical spell to make the ram ’s head appear to be Simon ’s. It should be obvious as to what the implications are here. Simon, in essence is connected to the symbolism of a ram, which is often considered the same as a goat, and therefore to Baphomet particularly, since it is only the ram ’s head we are dealing with here. In other words, not only was Simon continuing on the Johannite tradition as John ’s heir, as a religious teacher, and perhaps even by heredity as his son, as well as with his fabled death. As we mentioned, in the last part of Acts of Peter and Paul , we actually see Paul beheaded as well. In Colossians 1:17-18 (HCSB), we find that Jesus is called the “head ” of the church that is the “Body of Christ ”:

He is before all things, and in Him all things hold together. He is also head of the body, the church; and He is the beginning, the firstborn from the dead, so that He Himself will come to have first place in everything.

Could it be that the later depiction of Simon (a prototype of the black magician Doctor Faustus), in the form of the devilish Baphomet, was in essence imitating Christ, as the “outer-head ” of the Knights Templar and perhaps even the “head ” of an infernal legion of hell, trapped in the Abyss? It is generally known that during the Crusades, the Knights Templar were involved in trading religious relics. For instance, there were several claimed skulls/mummified heads of John the Baptist floating around which have now landed in places as far-flung

Istanbul, Damascus, Venice, and Rome, as well as the cities of Paris, Amiens, Lyonnais, and Tyron in France. Templars were likely involved in the purchase and transport of some of these. Mark Amaru Pinkham, in Guardians of the Holy Grail , stated that the Crusader Walter de Sarton took a John head from Constantinople to Amiens, but of course, there are John heads currently in both locations, so that links De Sarton with both. Is it possible that the Templars came into possession of Simon Magus and/or St. Paul ’s severed heads as well?

Returning to the Simonian teachings, these included the idea that each soul contains that which is blessed and incorruptible in a latent condition— potentially, that is, not actually. He said that each man contains has within immortal spark of life, and above all, a boundless power —an eternal substance that is superior even to the gods and the archangels. Simon affirms this power to be the root of the universe, a divine fire which gives mankind a special status among all living beings, including privileges such as reason, language, and an upright posture. These are innate but not eternal.

In the passage placed before the one quoted above, Simon seems to echo and repeat the same words John the Baptist gives to the Pharisees in Matthew 3:10 and Luke 3:9, as we see quoted from The Great Announcement in Refutation of All Heresies 6:11:

All things, therefore, he says, when unbegotten, are in us potentially, not actually, as the grammatical or geometrical (art). If, then, one receives proper instruction and teaching, and (where consequently) what is bitter will be altered into what is sweet—that is, the spears into pruning-hooks, and the swords into ploughshares (Isaiah 2:4) —there will not be chaff and wood begotten for fire, but mature fruit, fully formed, as I said, equal and similar to the unbegotten and indefinite power. If, however, a tree continues alone, not producing fruit fully formed, it is utterly destroyed. For somewhere near, he says, is the axe (which is laid) at the roots of the tree. Every tree, he says, which does not produce good fruit, is hewn down and cast into fire.

It must also be noted that The Great Announcement is not Christian by any means. It is a work of Simonian philosophy and mysticism that says nothing about Jesus. Yet there, Simon quotes John the Baptist verbatim. Simon is teaching that those who do not bear spiritual fruit, or realize the innate divine potentiality within themselves, will be subject to a fiery condemnation.

It is rather easy to see that Simon is talking about something similar to

alchemical fire, which dissolves all impurities to reveal the hidden gold inside the lead-based dross. This may also be connected symbolically with the fire that Prometheus stole from the Olympian gods. The importance of fire for the Zoroastrian priests (who were called magoi , much like Simon 's title of “magus ”) is well-documented. According to their tradition, when Ahura Mazda (the good god) created the world, he made its spiritual form from his divine fire, which was also said to hold his essence of eternal light.

In ancient Iranian society, to pollute the fire used in religious ceremonies by bringing it into contact with impure substances was one of the worst sins one could commit. If you were to extinguish the fire in a sacred fire temple, such an act was punishable by death. In The Chaldean Oracles , we find that they too express similar concepts, as it says:

When you behold a sacred fire without form, shining flashingly through the depths of the whole world, hear the voice of fire.

The passage from The Great Announcement quoted above also has some very strong End Times implications. The fire mentioned there is not meant to punish the wicked, but rather to remove all that appears on the outside, all that is perceived by the senses. This corresponds to the Valentinian eschatological belief that all matter will eventually plunge into a fiery inferno of chaos. This also corresponds to how Irenaeus describes Simon ’s credo, where he says, “He (Simon) again promised that the world would be destroyed ” (Against Heresies 1, 23, 3). All of this would conform to Hammer-Purgstall ’s understanding of the Gnostic “baptism of fire ” ritual that he believed the Ophites, and later the Templars, engaged in, which we will describe in due course. Similarly, in Luke 12:49, Jesus talks about fiery baptism:

> I have come to cast fire upon the earth; and how I wish it were already kindled! But I have a baptism to undergo, and how distressed I am until it is accomplished!

Even more tantalizing is the fact that in The Gospel of John (15:5-8), Jesus says many similar things to what John the Baptist and Simon Magus have been quoted as saying:

> I am the vine; you are the branches. If you remain in me and I in you, you will bear much fruit; apart from me you can do nothing. If you do not remain in me, you are like a branch that is thrown away and withers; such branches are picked up, thrown into the fire and burned. If you remain in me and my words remain in you, ask whatever you wish, and it will be done for you. This is to my Father ’s glory, that you bear much fruit, showing yourselves to be my disciples.

This was a fairly common allegory used by Platonic philosophers, as well as ancient physicians like Galen. The latter used the allegory of winnowing the “wheat from the chaff, ” and burning the chaff, to describe the digestive process of the stomach, with the human body itself being referred to as a “barn ” or “storehouse ” of nutrition, much like how Jesus, John, and Simon describe the Kingdom of God:

> For just as workmen skilled in preparing wheat cleanse it of any earth, stones, or foreign seeds mixed with it that would be harmful to the body, so the faculty of the stomach thrusts downward anything of that sort, but makes the rest of the

material, that is naturally good, still better and distributes it to the veins extending to the stomach and intestines.

This is similar to how The Apocryphon of John assigns various demonic

spirits who are ruled over by the Archons to the creation of every part of Adam ’s body. The Apocryphon of John seems to come from the Gnostic Johannite tradition, as it claims to tell the secret mysteries of the apostle John, as purportedly revealed by Jesus Christ in a post-Resurrection appearance found in the longest version of the text. (There are actually four versions, as it turns out). As Michael Allen Williams points out in Rethinking Gnosticism :

We encounter sacramental language, where the initiate is said to be awakened by the revealer and “sealed with the water of light in the five seals ” (Apocryphon of John 11 31, 22-24), evidently a reference to a baptismal ritual practiced by such a community.

Could this community be John ’s Samaritan baptismal cult, which would eventually splinter off into later groups such as the Simonians, Sethians, Dositheans, and Mandaeans?

As it turns out, the Cathars (a medieval European Gnostic sect closely linked with the Templars) had their own version of The Apocryphon of John , which they inherited from the Bogomils (a Bulgarian medieval Gnostic sect). It was called the Interrogatio Iohannis , also known as The Secret Supper and The Book of John the Evangelist . They seem to have rejected all of the other canonized Gospels in the Bible.

In a vein very similar to that of those teachers quoted above, St. Paul uses this fiery baptism language to describe the convicting power of the Holy Ghost in the Christian believer, as Tobias Churton points out in Gnostic Philosophy :

Paul cleverly employs the image of the chemist or metallurgist who, in purifying gold-bearing matter, would heat the material to a thousand degrees in a bone-ash vessel to “try ” or separate the gold from its accreted impurities. In the imaginative inner context in which Paul places the image, the fire that tries or judges can be understood as alchemical fire, and Paul shows no hesitation in bringing its power to bear upon the Corinthians: “Every man ’s work shall be made manifest: for the day shall declare it, because it shall be revealed by fire; and the fire shall try every man ’s work of what sort it is. If any man ’s work abide which he hath built thereupon, he shall receive a reward. If any man ’s work shall be burned, she shall suffer loss: but he himself shall be saved; yet so as by fire. Know yet not that ye are the temple of God, and that the spirit of God dwelleth in you? ” (1 Corinthians 3:13-16).

Simon ’s successor Menander thought that he could make his followers immortally youthful by a baptismal ceremony, as indicated by Irenaeus in Against Heresies (1.23.5). The baptism practiced by the Simon cult involved fire appearing over the water, as recorded by the anonymously produced text A Treatise On Re- Baptism (attributed to pseudo-Cyprian):

And some of them try to argue that they only administer a sound and perfect [baptism], not as we, a mutilated and curtailed baptism, which they are in such wise said to designate, that immediately [after] they have descended into the water, fire at once appears upon the water.

Hippolytus makes it clear that Simon ’s teaching of the divine fire was derived from Heraclitus, a pre-Socratic philosopher given pejorative titles such as “the Obscure, ” and “the Weeping Philosopher. ” When Hippolytus calls Simon

Magus “obscure, ” this might not only be a reference to Heraclitus, but it might also imply that he was “esoteric, ” and “arcane. ” If you look closely you will see that the entire New Testament is filled with references to hidden divine knowledge. Origen, in his Contra Celsus , gives more insight while trying to defend the faith against the likes of that nasty pagan Celsus when he admits there was always both an esoteric and exoteric meaning behind Christian doctrines:

Moreover, since he frequently calls the Christian doctrine a secret system (of belief), we must confute him on this point also, since almost the entire world is better acquainted with what Christians preach than with the favourite opinions of philosophers. For who is ignorant of the statement that Jesus was born of a virgin, and that He was crucified, and that His resurrection is an article of faith among many, and that a general judgment is announced to come, in which the wicked are to be punished according to their deserts, and the righteous to be duly rewarded? And yet the mystery of the resurrection, not being understood, is made a subject of ridicule among unbelievers.

In these circumstances, to speak of the Christian doctrine as a secret system, is altogether absurd. But that there should be certain doctrines, not made known to the multitude, which are (revealed) after the exoteric ones have been taught, is not a peculiarity of Christianity alone, but also of philosophic systems, in which certain truths are exoteric and others esoteric . Some of the hearers of Pythagoras were content with his ipse dixit [i.e., his unqualified and unsupported proclamations]; while others were taught in secret those doctrines which were not deemed fit to be communicated to profane and insufficiently prepared ears. Moreover, all the mysteries that are celebrated everywhere throughout Greece and barbarous countries, although held in secret, have no discredit thrown upon them, so that it is in vain that he endeavours to calumniate the secret doctrines of Christianity, seeing he does not correctly understand its nature.

In The Teachings of Silvanus found in Codex 7 of the Nag Hammadi Library, Malcolm L. Peel and Jan Zandee translated the following passage:

And a foolish man does not guard against speaking (a) mystery. A wise man,

(however), does not blurt out every word, but he will be discriminating toward those who hear. Do not mention everything in the presence of those whom you do not know.

One such hidden teaching might be the following Gnostic doctrine on John the Baptist from the third manuscript of Codex IX of the Nag Hammadi Library, called The Testimony of Truth :

But the Son of Man came forth from Imperishability, being alien to defilement. He came to the world by the Jordan river, and immediately the Jordan turned back. And John bore witness to the descent of Jesus. For it is he who saw the power which came down upon the Jordan river; for he knew that the dominion of carnal procreation had come to an end. The Jordan river is the power of the body, that is, the senses or pleasures. The water of the Jordan is the desire for sexual intercourse. John is the archon of the womb.

Here we see John described not only as an “Archon ” (and thus, in the Gnostic system, an agent of the bad god, the Demiurge of creation), but also as the womb. The Jordan River is said to represent the flow of life coming from the other side and incarnating through procreation, spurned on by sex and sexual desire. But when the Holy Spirit enters those waters to be born into Jesus through his baptism, the waters are turned back, signaling to John, who had the wisdom to know, that the kingdom of the Demiurge, and material life through carnal procreation, was starting to come to an end. Jesus was seen by some Christian Gnostics as the one who would bring about this end, and return the lost souls of men to their real home: the Pleroma on the other side of the veil of existence.

Similar symbolism is found in Hippolytus ’ report on the Naassenes, in which Egypt is now used as a symbol for the body. Instead of the Red Sea parting for the Israelites but drowning the Egyptians, we are told about “the great Jordan ” coming between them, allowing the “children of Israel ” to escape Egypt. In Refutation of All Heresies , near the end of Chapter 2, he tells us about the Naassene interpretation of John 3:6. (“That which is born of the flesh is flesh, and that which is born of the spirit is spirit. ”) He says:

This, according to them, is the spiritual generation. This … is the great Jordan which, flowing on (here) below, and preventing the children of Israel from departing out of Egypt—I mean from terrestrial intercourse, for Egypt is with them the body —Jesus drove back, and made it flow upwards.

The word Jordan means “one who descends ” or “to flow down ” in Hebrew, so again we are talking about a symbolic river of life, the course of which is reversed (so that life returns to its origin rather than incarnating on Earth to die), thus allowing escape from the slavery of “Egypt ” (life inside the body). The same metaphoric system appears to be operating in the Valentinian liturgy On the Baptism (A), involving the Exodus, the Jordan, and the reversal of its flow so that it now goes from “the world ” into “the Aeon ” (the Pleroma):

> Moreover, the first baptism is the forgiveness of sins. We are brought … into the imperishability which is the Jordan. But that place is of the world. So we have been sent out of the world into the Aeon. For the interpretation of John is the Aeon, while the interpretation of that which is the upward progression, that is, our Exodus from the world into the Aeon.

The “upward progression ” is the reversal of the flow of the river of life, the Jordan, allowing the “Exodus ” —the escape from the body. One can think of this as analogous to the reversal of the flow of “prana ” or life-force through the spinal column in kundalini yoga, which allows this power to rise from the base of the spine (where the “Earth chakra ” is centered) up to and out through the godhead chakra located at the top of the head, gaining the practitioner temporary escape from the mental pain of existence. One can also think of it as providing a grand explanation for the symbol of the four rivers that allegedly flowed through the Garden of Eden, which appear to show up again in St. John the Divine ’s Revelation . There they are described as the “waters of life ” and shown issuing from beneath the throne of God, and the altar in the center of the New Jerusalem. In Christian iconography, images of this altar at the New Jerusalem always show the Agnus Dei or Lamb of God with blood flowing out of his neck, indicating that it is the blood of Christ actually coursing through these rivers. Blood, in fact, is the Water of Life, thought since ancient times to actually contain the life-force of the soul, and the “four rivers ” can be thought of as the two arteries and two veins that each of us has issuing from the heart.

This is all very much like how Simon read the Garden of Eden (or “Edem ”) as being symbolic of the womb, as well as the fetus contained inside. He (or the person who wrote in his name) said:

How then, he says, and in what manner, does God form man? In Paradise; for so it seems to him. Grant Paradise, he says, to be the womb; and that this is a true (assumption) the Scripture will teach, when it utters the words, I am He who forms you in your mother ’s womb (Jeremiah 1:5). For this also he wishes to have been written so. Moses, he says, resorting to allegory, has declared Paradise to be the womb, if we ought to rely on his statement. If, however, God forms man in his mother ’s womb — that is, in Paradise — as I have affirmed, let Paradise be the womb, and Edem the after-birth, a river flowing forth from Edem, for the purpose of irrigating Paradise, (Genesis 2:10) (meaning by this) the navel. This navel, he says, is separated into four principles; for on either side of the navel are situated two arteries, channels of spirit, and two veins, channels of blood.

But when, he says, the umbilical vessels proceed forth from Edem, that is, the caul in which the foetus is enveloped grows into the (foetus) that is being formed in the vicinity of the epigastrium, —(now) all in common denominate this a navel —these two veins through which the blood flows, and is conveyed from Edem, the after-birth, to what are styled the gates of the liver; (these veins, I say,) nourish the foetus.

But the arteries which we have spoken of as being channels of spirit, embrace the bladder on both sides, around the pelvis, and connect it with the great artery, called the aorta, in the vicinity of the dorsal ridge. And in this way the spirit, making its way through the ventricles to the heart, produces a movement of the foetus. For the infant that was formed in Paradise neither receives nourishment through the mouth, nor breathes through the nostrils: for as it lay in the midst of moisture, at its feet was death, if it attempted to breathe; for it would (thus) have been drawn away from moisture, and perished (accordingly). But (one may go further than this); for the entire (foetus) is bound tightly round by a covering styled the caul, and is nourished by a navel, and it receives through the (aorta), in the vicinity of the dorsal ridge, as I have stated, the substance of the spirit.

If Carl Jung read this, he would have given a standing ovation to Simon Magus ’ insight of the Garden of Eden being an allegory for the womb. To Jung, Paradise was the positive aspect of the archetypal mother, and he related it to the symbol of the Kingdom of God in the New Jerusalem. This seems to also be how many Gnostics saw it, and their ideal was to somehow escape from the flow of life incarnating into the womb. But was John seen by the Gnostics as helping aid this escape of souls with his baptism, or was he, as the Testimony of Truth describes him, an “Archon ” serving the Demiurge? The apocryphal, encratite and Gnostic Gospel of Thomas (46) quotes Jesus as saying:

From Adam to John the Baptist, among those born of women, no one is so much greater than John the Baptist that his eyes should not be averted.

But I have said that whoever among you becomes a child will recognize the (Father ’s) kingdom and will become greater than John.

It seems this Gospel is trying to say that John was so great that one could not look upon him, as if he were the Lord himself. Yet, whoever becomes a child of light will recognize the kingdom of the Father and become greater than John. This is a much clearer explanation of the always-confusing passage from Luke 7:28 (KJV):

For I say unto you, Among those that are born of women there is not a greater prophet than John the Baptist: but he that is least in the kingdom of God is greater than he.

We think that John is being presented here as merely a servant of the Demiurge. It would not be shocking for him to play this part. Many scholars, such as Elaine Pagels (writing in the Gnostic Paul) have noticed similar instances, in which biblical heroes such as David and Abraham are seen as symbolic of the Demiurge by Gnostics, such as in the Valentinian exegesis of the Apostolikon (the 10 Pauline Epistles) by Marcion.

The Mandaean Book of John portrays Jesus and John ’s relationship as being entirely hostile and antagonistic. Mandaean literature will probably eventually be dated to around the sixth century, much younger than Simonian and Gnostic literature, so that chips away at the credulity given to this text. However, one may consider that the Mandaeans themselves probably originated from Dositheus ’ offshoot cult that continued John ’s tradition after his death. In Mandaean literature, John complains about Jesus, as we read in Theosophist GRS Mead ’s The Gnostic John the Baptizer , which quotes the alleged words of John himself in the Mandaean Book of John :

Who told Yeshu (Eshu)? Who told Yeshu Messiah, son of Miryam, who told Yeshu, so that he went to the shore of the Jordan and said [unto Yahya]: “Yahya, baptize me with thy baptizing and utter o ’er me also the Name thy wont is to utter. If I show myself as thy pupil, I will remember thee then in my writing; I attest not myself as thy pupil, then wipe out my name from thy page. ”

Thereon Yahya answered Yeshu Messiah in Jerusalem: “Thou hast lied to the Jews and deceived the priests. Thou hast cut off their seed from the men and from the women bearing and being pregnant. The sabbath, which Moses made binding, hast thou relaxed in Jerusalem. Thou hast lied unto them with horns and spread abroad disgrace with the shofar. ”

Notice here that John presents us with a Jesus who discourages procreation and relaxes the Sabbath. He also describes Jesus trying to win his favor and receive his baptism, promising to make John famous in his upcoming book if he will suffer him this honor. Immediately after this part of the text, a character called “Ruha ” is mentioned, who is the Mandaean version of Sophia. It says:

When Yeshu Messiah said this, there came a Letter out of the House of Abathur: “Yahya, baptize the deceiver in Jordan. Lead him down into the Jordan and baptize him, and lead him up again to the shore… . ”

Then Ruha made herself like to a dove and threw a cross over the Jordan. A cross she threw over the Jordan and made its water to change into various colours. “O Jordan, ” she says, “thou sanctifiest me and thou sanctifiest my seven sons. ”

“The Jordan in which Messiah Paulis was baptized, have I made into a ‘trough. ’ The bread which Messiah Paulis receives, have I made into a ‘sacrament. ’ The drink which Messiah Paulis receives, have I made into a ‘supper. ’ The head-band which Messiah Paulis receives, have I made into a ‘priest-hood. ’ The staff which Messiah Paulis receives, have I made into a ‘dung [-stick].' ”

Now we are not sure exactly what a “dung-stick ” is, but it doesn ’t sound good. Ruha seems to be dismissing the Pauline Christian church pretty roundly. She finishes up her speech with this:

Let me warn you, my brothers, let me warn you, my beloved! … against [they] … who are like unto the cross. They lay it on the walls; then stand there and bow down to the block. Let me warn you, my brothers, of the god which the carpenter has joinered together. If the carpenter has joinered together the god, who then has joinered together the carpenter?

This seems to be an allusion both to the idea of Jesus being a carpenter, presenting the world with a new view of God, and also to the idea of the Demiurge, the artisan or craftsman who built the universe, implying that the God he has presented us to worship (himself) is not the highest, since someone else would had to have made him.

If John the Baptist was truly the original “Mandaean ” (hence the

progenitor of Gnosticism), then demands for a deeper study of the Mandaean religion should be considered. The Mandaeans portrayed Sophia as “Ruha, ” in a very ambivalent way. However, in Mandaeism , Kurt Rudolph writes that “Ruha ” has a male consort called “Ur, ” who is equated with a dragon, which reminds us of Behemoth and Leviathan, or Samael and Lilith. Much like the Simonian Helena and the Greek goddess of fate, Heimarmene, Ruha generates the seven world- creating angelic planets as well as the signs of the Zodiac. Says Randolph:

The “World of Darkness ” is governed by the “Lord of Darkness ”… and arose from the “dark waters ” … representing the chaos. The main powers of the world of darkness are a giant monster or dragon with the name Ur (probably a polemic transformation of the Hebrew “or, ” [meaning] “light ”) and the evil (female) “Spirit ” (ruha). Their offspring are demonic beings … and “angels. ” … To them belong also the “Seven ”, … i.e., the planets, … and the “Twelve ” … signs of the Zodiac; they are sons of Ur and Ruha. ”

The main body of Mandaean teaching is called The Ginza . Divided into right and left, the right side contains the main points of theology, cosmology and myth, while the left contains the rituals. In the right Ginza , John the Baptist is claimed to be the true prophet of God, whereas “Christ the Roman ” who “did not come from the Light ” is an incarnation of “one of the seven seducing planets who roam the cosmos. ” He is said to have clothed his priests in a “colored tunic, ” then “tonsured their heads ” and veiled them “like darkness, ” presumably a reference to the black robes worn by priests, monks and nuns. The Christian Sabbath is considered a bad thing too, because “on Sundays they keep their hands from work. ”

Regarding John the Baptist, The Ginza (as quoted and translated in Marvin Meyer ’s The Gnostic Bible pp. 549-551) says:

… Faith will find a place in his heart and he will receive the Jordan and carry out baptisms for forty-two years, before Nbu, who is Hermes Christ, enters the world .

“Nbu, ” or “Nabu ” is a word found in several Semitic languages that means “prophet. ” It is connected to the Babylonian god of writing, Nebo, their version of Hermes, mentioned in an earlier chapter. It is interesting then that “Christ ” is called in this account both “Nbu ” and “Hermes. ” This brings to mind Harold R. Willoughby ’s observation from Pagan Regeneration :

The prophet of Poimandres [Hermes], when he had made a successful beginning of his evangelization, taught his followers how to give thanks to God at the time of the sun ’s setting. Hermetism, too, had its baptism and the Trismegistic prophet, like John the Baptist, summoned men to “Repent and be baptized! ”

According to Marvin Meyer, The Ginza says that Jesus becomes “wise through John ’s wisdom, ” But then “Jesus proceeds to pervert the word of John… . ” It is said of Jesus that he:

> … snares people by sorcery and befouls them with blood and menstrual discharge. He baptizes them in blocked waters and perverts the living baptism and baptizes them in the name of the father, son and holy spirit. He alienates them from the living baptism in the Jordan of living waters.

As Rene Salm points out in The Mandaeans and Christian Origins , these Mandaean texts definitely portray Jesus and John as having had an antagonistic relationship. Salm quotes Robert Stahl ’s Les Mandeens et les Origines Chretiennes (The Mandaeans and the Original Christians), where he claims that The Gospel of John is dependent upon (and is a reaction against) the Mandaean religion, as well as other forms of Gnosticism, rather than the other way around. If this is true, then it would mean that the Mandaeans existed far earlier than most scholars have assumed. Both traditions emphasize the importance light, life and the Logos in the fight against the darkness of the world. The main difference is that John ’s gospel “carnalizes ” these in the person of Jesus as the Logos personified. Celsus, in The True Doctrine , is very critical of this, and accuses the Christians of using sophistries to argue that the Logos could take on human flesh, which to him was anathema, a heresy that no true Platonist would agree with:

> For as the sun, which enlightens all other objects, first makes himself visible, so ought the son of God to have done. The Christians are guilty of sophistical reasoning, in saying that the son of God is the Logos Himself. When they declare the Logos to be the son of God [John 1:1], they do not present to view a

pure and holy Logos, but a most degraded man, who was punished by scourging and crucifixion. If your Logos is the son of God, we also give our assent to the same; yet the prophecies agree with ten thousand other things more credibly than with Jesus.

Furthermore, Salm asserts that The Gospel of John was written as a reaction against those who considered John the Baptist to be the “Great Revealer. ” He even claims that the majority of the sayings of Jesus were actually stolen from John! If this is true, it only means that Jesus was simply a mask of John. But as we saw earlier, Simon Magus and the Platonic doctor Galen also use similar phraseology.

Tobias Churton, on the other hand, theorizes in The Mysteries of John the Baptist that this Gospel was actually written to emphasize the importance John the Baptist and reflect his viewpoint (instead of that of John the “beloved disciple ”), as it is most commonly assumed to be. Churton describes the baptism scene, which occurs in the first chapter, thusly:

The whole story is presented as coming from the Baptist who “saw ” and “bore record, ” that is, who testified in his own words, what happened at the baptism… . This alone would seem to me to explain how this maverick Gospel, beloved of mystics, a veritable ‘half-way house to Gnosticism, ’ as Rudolf Bultmann ’s study of John called it, came to acquire the title of the Gospel of John . It is there, staring you in the face if you care to see it.

John is doing the testifying. John is “bearing the record ” —at least to start with.

… John is announcing the good news: this is the “herald ’s ” role: the kerux of the divine ceremony… .

…

This is John ’s testimony, according to John, and such is its power that I have myself little doubt in ascribing the title of the Gospel to John the Baptist , a long overdue ascription.

The proem at the beginning of The Gospel of John reads like a Gnostic retelling of the opening lines of Genesis , as it says:

In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God… . All things were made by him, and without him was not anything that was made.

It has long been thought that these words may have been influenced by

Philo of Alexandria ’s teaching on the Logos as the “first born Son of God. ” Philo was a Hellenistic Jewish philosopher writing at the time of Jesus and John. To him, the Logos was the Demiurge, as well as the mediator between that material realm and the Father of all. It was the “Nous ” or universal mind, the organizing principle of creation, as well as a kind of cosmic glue. He stated in his book De Profugis :

[T]he Logos of the living God is the bond of everything, holding all things together and binding all the parts, and prevents them from being dissolved and separated.

Yet while separation of elements is necessary for creation, and for change, Logos was responsible for that as well, He was borrowing from Herclitus the concept of the “dividing Logos, ” which “creates ” individual objects in the universe by separating their element from the undifferentiated All. He compared it to the Jewish concept of Chokmah (“Divine Wisdom ”) that we mentioned in a previous chapter as being analogous to Sophia, described by Aryah Kaplan as “pure thought, which has not yet been broken up into different ideas. ”

But to Philo, this was no mere abstract concept: it was actually a living thing. Philo viewed God as someone who could actually “impregnate ” a soul with his wisdom and virtue, which may explain the origin of the idea in The Gospel of John that the Logos could be born in the person of Jesus. In The Gnostic Religion , Hans Jonas describes Philo ’s viewpoint:

Philo uses various images to describe [the] relation of divine activity and human receptivity, notably that of sowing and begetting. This image points to the idea, widespread in the Gnostic world also, of a quasi-sexual relation in which the soul is the female and conceiving part, and is impregnated by God. God alone can open the wombs of the souls, sow virtues in them, make them pregnant, and cause them to give birth to the Good.

Strangely, though, while Philo ’s ideas in this regard could have been the origin of the concept of the virgin birth, out of all the Gospels in the New Testament, John ’s Gospel, seemingly influenced by Philo, is the only one to give no account whatsoever of the circumstances of Jesus ’ conception or birth. (Indeed, the subject of his childhood is utterly neglected there.)

The Gospel of John seems to have greatly inspired later Gnostic, Valentinian and Hermetic movements. Or conversely, the groups that originated those movements may have been the ones who inspired and even wrote the text. In A Separate God , Simone Petrement writes:

The Fourth Gospel, though profoundly Jewish, is at the same time the most Hellenistic of the Gospels. It is certainly steeped in knowledge of the Old Testament, but at the same time it is steeped in a mysticism that is rather inspired by Greek philosophy, in particular by Platonism. (The Old Testament is more ethical in spirit than mystical). This blending of thoughts or expressions derived from the Old Testament with philosophical mysticism derived from Hellenism, as Dodds remarks (Historical Tradition , 16), is not superficial but belongs to a very profound level and, whatever one says, evokes Alexandrian Judaism.

Petrement also seems to think that The Gospel of John was written by Apollos, the rival and adversary of Paul who accused him of preaching “another Jesus ” and “another Gospel. ” This theory is outside of our argument here, but it is an intriguing possibility. The Jesus depicted in John seems to be more glorious and divine, even in his earthly life than the Jesus of the other gospels. It almost seems like he has only the appearance of a human body, and was really just a spirit who “appeared ” to have a body, or that his original nature was not earthly but purely divine. This was an actual doctrine known as the “heresy ” of “Docetism. ” It is these subtle differences that highlight the Gnostic and even Marcionite orientation of this Gospel.

There are many aspects of The Gospel of John that make it seem Gnostic, or proto-Gnostic. Jesus as presented here seems very rejecting of Mosaic Law, telling the Pharisees scornfully that it ’s “your law ” (10:34). Also, by proclaiming that his kingdom to come is “not of this world, ” it seems like he is denying the Jewish belief of the Resurrection of the carnal flesh at the End of Days. He appears to imply rather that his kingdom will be in the Gnostic Pleroma, outside of known existence.

Along the same line of thinking, we find a lengthy Gnostic/Valentinian commentary on The Gospel of John quoted by Irenaeus in Against Heresies (1.8.5). According to this source, the opening verses actually reveal the very origin of the Pleroma, and explicitly mention many of the names of the “aeons ” that Gnostics believed had emanated forth in succession from the Father. These are called in Greek: Arche (the Beginning), Aletheia (Truth), Logos (the Word or Reason), Zoe (Life), Anthropos (Man), Ekklesia (Church) and Charis (Grace). We also see these same terms used in the Nag Hammadi codices as well. Arche is elsewhere called “Monogenes, ” and has been referred to in Gnostic texts as the “only begotten Son ” of the unknown Father. This aeon is apparently referred to in John ’s gospel by verses 1:18 (“No man hath seen God at any time; the only begotten Son, which is in the bosom of the Father, he hath declared him . ”), and by 17:25 (“O righteous Father, the world hath not known thee: but I have known thee, and these have known that thou hast sent me. ”) These aeons make up the heavenly “Ogdoad, ” or council of eight aeons that are a part of the eternal, spiritual Godhead, and The Gospel of John does seem to enumerate them. It even says “of his pleroma (“fullness ”) we have received ” (John 1:16), which seems to mean that Jesus imparted knowledge of the Pleroma to his disciples.

In addition to the Hellenic Judaism of Philo, there is evidence that The Gospel of John may have been influenced by the cult of Asclepius as well. This was the Greek god of healing we mentioned before, whose name and imagery was adopted by one of the most famous students of Hermes Trismegistus, to whom several of the Hermetic dialogues are addressed. John 5:2-9 contains the story of Jesus at the pool of Bethesda, outside the walls of Jerusalem, where he healed the lame man (John 5:2-9). There is archaeological evidence that this was an Aesclepion —a healing center dedicated to Asclepius. The phrase Jesus used in this scene, hygies genesthai (“Do you want to be healed? ”) and the word used in this Gospel for bathing in the healing waters, louein (“to wash ”), are reminiscent of language of the Asclepius cult.

Many writers throughout history also recognized the Hermetic and Egyptian undertones in The Gospel of John ’s Proem , such as Marsillio Ficino, the Italian translator of The Corpus Hermeticum into Latin. Philip Coppens writes of this in his article, “Ficino: The high priest of the Renaissance, ” published on his website, PhillipCoppens.com:

Many of the Hermetic writings closely resemble portions of the Gospel of John , one of the few if not only Christian texts cherished by the medieval Cathars. Later, Martin Luther actually believed that the author of the Corpus had merely copied the writings of John the Evangelist. A very old

Egyptian text says: “In the beginning was Thoth; and Thoth was in Atum; and Thoth was Atum in the unfathomable reaches of primordial space. ” The Prologue of John ’s Gospel, beginning with “The Word was with God and The Word was God ”, closely resembles the actions of Thoth —and Thoth was the Egyptian name of Hermes, the god of Wisdom. Ficino himself did not fail to see the similarities between the Corpus Hermeticum and John ’s Gospel and even stressed these in his introduction to his translation.

So The Gospel of John , it seems, was not only proto-Gnostic, but also proto-Hermetic, and it may have been inspired by the teachings of John the Baptist even more than those of Jesus. John was a hero, apparently, for early Hellenistic and proto-Gnostic Christians such as Paul, and laid the foundation for the Simonians and the Mandaeans. The true place of John in Christian history is somewhat obscured by the Church. Some would say that this contention between Johannite religion and Christianity began with Paul, or the Pauline camp, as Tobias Churton has argued. Lynn Picknett and Clive Prince suggested in their hit book The Templar Revelation that Jesus was an upstart rival of John ’s that threatened his leadership. They purport that the Gospels rewrote John ’s story to fit the Christian Jesus movement narrative, as they observe the following:

Although the Church of John apparently disappeared after approximately 50 CE, its continued existence can be deduced from the Church Fathers' fulminations against John ’s successors—Simon Magus and Dositheus —for about another two hundred years. Then, again in the twelfth century, this tradition also surfaces once more in the Templars ’ mystical veneration of John.

If The Gospel of John was actually written from John the Baptist ’s

viewpoint, and if that viewpoint corresponds to Hermeticism, then we should not be surprised to discover that the Baptist and Hermes are symbolically linked to the same broader archetype of “wisdom god, ” and also to each other specifically. Briefly we mentioned before the figure of Oannes, the sage with a fishtail who came out of the sea each day to teach rude humanity the civilized ways. Interestingly, it seems that some comparative mythologists have connected this character to none other than John. We first became aware of this because of a throwaway line from Robert Graves, who wrote in The White Goddess that:

Oddly enough John the Baptist seems to have been identified by early Christian syncretists in Egypt with the Chaldean god Oannes who according to Berossus used to appear at long intervals in the Persian Gulf, disguised as the merman Odacon, and renew his original revelation to the faithful.

Searching for more information on the subject, we discovered what early twentieth century Viennese writer and historian Richard Eisler wrote in Orpheus *the Fisher . They appear to imply that John was actually a reincarnation of Oannes! As the text states:*

We should not hesitate even to presuppose that the same syncretism of John and Oannes, which seems so natural with Neo-Babylonian Gnostics [the Mandaeans], existed also among the more immediate Jewish followers of the Baptist, seeing that … influence of the Babylonian belief in ever new incarnations of the primeval Oannes —Berossus knows as many as six such reincarnations in past times… .

Another passage from that same book by Eisler says even more:

I am fairly convinced that the rapid propagation of John 's ideas, and especially the spreading of his fame into the low-lands of South Babylonia, has indeed a good deal to do with the striking resemblance of his traditional name to that of the primeval Babylonian fish- and fisher-god, the teacher and lord of all wisdom.

So we have an alleged etymological connection between Oannes and Ionnes (John 's original Greek name), as well the association with fish and water symbolism that both figures have. John is associated with fish not only because of his baptisms in the river, but also because his namesake is the prophet Jonah. You will recall that this hero from the Old Testament spent three nights inside of a sea creature, variously called either a “fish ” or a “whale, ” that Jewish legends and cabalists unanimously link to Leviathan.

Another piece of evidence cited by Eisler to prove his point connecting John and Oannes was that the latter reportedly ate nothing when he was above the ocean 's surface giving mankind lessons in wisdom, just as the former reportedly ate nothing but locusts and wild honey. If we analyze John in what Robert Graves would call a “mythopoeic ” manner, we see that John 's purported itinerant lifestyle (living in the wilderness, eating bugs, wearing a hair shirt, ranting and raving in public like a lunatic) connects him with the archetype of the “wild man ” discussed in the previous chapter, including the figures of Pan, Puck, Dionysus, Hermes, and the Green Man.

In the Catholic liturgical calendar, John ’s feast day falls on June 24th, also known as “Midsummer ’s Day ” (or to modern neo-pagans, “Litha, ” embracing an Old Saxon term). This is most certainly a day in which the Wild Man is celebrated. Falling on or around the Summer solstice, this is when the Green Man-related character known as the “Oak King ” would be venerated in the British Isles, before paganism was completely stamped out. It was Midsummer Night, on which Shakespeare invoked Puck in his famous play. Midsummer Night was also called the “Honey Moon ” night in Britain because it was considered the best time to harvest honey. Of course, honey is something we can connect with John. This connection was not missed by Tobias Churton in The Mystery of John the Baptist , where he wrote:

The solstice coincides with what used to be called the “honey moon, ” the origin of our costly nuptial abandon… . A marble figure attributed to Leonardo ’s workshop, now in the Kaiser Friedrich Museum, Berlin, depicts a youthful John the Baptist gracefully gazing at a honeycomb held in his left hand (an allusion to John ’s wild honey diet; Mark 1:6). One wonders if this Midsummer link to honey may have informed the traditional idea of Masons as “busy bees. ”

Taking the iconotropy a step further, Churton connects the honey to Dionysus and thus, Dionysus to John, via Leonardo da Vinci, who painted and drew many images of John. After analyzing several of those, Churton writes this:

Underlying the ambiguous and arguably pagan inspiration of Leonardo ’s John is the existence of a similar work, thought to have been painted between 1510 and 1515 by a follower of Leonardo from a drawing by the master. The painting has a dual identity. It is known both as St. John in the Wilderness and as Bacchus , the god of religious ecstasy, wine, and intoxication.

…

[The painter] chose to add vine leaves to the figure ’s head and leopard spots to John ’s hairy loincloth. A vine wreath added to the Baptist ’s former staff transformed it into a Bacchic thyrsus, Dionysus ’ sacred staff borne by his wine-intoxicated followers. According to Euripides, the thyrsus dripped with honey… .

Although it may seem strange to connect a prophet known for abstaining from wine with the very god of the vine himself, Churton is definitely onto something. He also talks about “John ’s role here as one incarnating the divine Hermes, the psychopomp leading the soul upward through the waters to a higher life… . ” Churton suggests that the baptism in this Gospel might actually be secretly hinted at as having taken place in the Underworld, with the river Jordan symbolically representing the rivers of Hades that one must travel to get from the realm of the living to the realm of the dead. He writes:

Symbolically, the “ferryman ” may then be seen as John-Hermes. Hermes, remember, was seen in Hellenistic tradition as a “psychopomp ”: literally a guide of souls through the darkness of death to the other side, the herald of another world attainable only through death.

As Churton points out, many others have connected the figure of John to that of Hermes before:

Less than a decade before Leonardo painted his late masterpiece … German artist Conrad Celtes … produced a woodcut wherein … the Greek god Hermes appeared as a straight stand-in for John the Baptist… . Celtes simply hooked into the idea of Hermes as the divine messenger and made the identification of John-Hermes by reference to the … understanding of John the Baptist as revered “forerunner ” or herald of Christ: the one crying in the wilderness.

The most famous statue of Hermes by Giovanni da Bologna (which, according to Edith Hamilton, is what makes him the most recognizable Greek god to modern people) shows him pointing a finger up to the sky in the same manner that John the Baptist is often shown doing, particularly in Renaissance art. However, he has several times also been depicting with his other hand pointing downward towards the Earth, just like Eliphas Levi ’s depiction of Baphomet, doing what we will call the “As above, so below ” pose.

The reason why St. John ’s Day is near the summer solstice is because Luke 1:36 tell us that Mary ’s cousin Elizabeth was already six months pregnant with John when Mary conceived Jesus. Since Jesus was born on Christmas (ostensibly), near the winter solstice, putting John ’s birthday on Midsummer Night just made sense. In Freemasonry, both John the Baptist and John the Evangelist are considered their two main patron saints. The Evangelist ’s feast day in on December 27th, while the Baptist ’s, as we know, is on June 24. It has been quite common historically for Masonic lodges two have mandatory meetings scheduled twice a year on the feast days of the “two Johns. ” During Masonic initiations, an illustration is used called the “Masonic point within a Circle. ” It shows the two Johns standing astride a circle with a dot in the middle, possibly representing the orbit of the Earth around the sun, with the solstices, represented visually with pictures of the two Johns, on either end. In this Masonic icon, the Baptist is always shown in the Baphometic “As above, so below ” pose described above, wearing his hair shirt.

John the Baptist ’s feast day is on his birthday, which is unusual for a Christian saint, since they are usually honored on the anniversary of their martyrdom, and John ’s story ended just as badly as those of other saints. But there is a date fixed for that event, which happens to be August 29th. Tobias Churton points out that this coincides with the time of wheat and barley harvest in the western world. This would have been around the time that the traditional English folk song “John Barleycorn ” (famously performed by the band Traffic on their fourth album, John Barleycorn Must Die) would have been sung. This creepy tune talks about killing and dismembering the title character in a seemingly sacrificial manner that appears to be connected to harvest rituals, and he may have been named “John ” with the beheaded Baptist in mind. The connection seems close enough for Churton to definitively write:

The beheading of John became linked to a profound archetype, rooted in ancient conceptions of the head of wheat and barleycorn being severed to fulfill the promise of life and abundance for the people… .

Interestingly, the time in which churches celebrate the “Baptism of the

Lord ” (January 19th for the Orthodox, and the first Sunday following January 6th for the Catholics) is close to the time (January 20th) when the sun enters the house of Aquarius, the water-bearer.

There is yet another pagan “Wild Man ” entity that Churton saw fit to connect with John the Baptist: the aforementioned Pan. To hear him tell it, the waters of the sacred Jordan may have actually been the waters of Pan. He mentions that there was a sanctuary and sacred spring dedicated to Pan called Paneas, issuing from none other than Mount Hermon (where the Watchers landed on Earth from Heaven, according to The First Book of Enoch). He says it may have been the source of the river that John used to baptize people:

We must presume that John the Baptist would have come to Paneas also. How could he not? For in his day, a giant spring used to gush from a limestone cave whence the waters wove their way down to the Huela marshes, thence southward. According to Josephus, this mighty spring was held to be the source of nothing less than the living waters of the holy River Jordan: “Now the fountains of Jordan rise at the roots of this cavity outwardly; and, as some think, this is the utmost origin of Jordan ” (Wars 1:21:3).

So by linking John to this half-goat fertility god, Churton presents what can obviously be construed as yet another symbolic link between the Baptist and the idea of Baphomet. The other obvious link, besides the fact that the Templars revered him, is that his head was severed, and the Baphomet idols purportedly used by the Templars took the form of a severed head or skull. The idea that the Baphomet head might have been John ’s is written about in almost every nonfiction book ever penned about this dark chapter in the Templars ’ history.

John ’s connection with Freemasonry is interesting. Of course, it is assumed to have been absorbed from the Templars. Tobias Churton points out that, before the Grand Lodge of London completely took over and homogenized the craft in the eighteenth century, there was a time during which the members of lodges who had not yet been incorporated were known cryptically as “St. John ’s Men. ” It was clear at the time that the St. John they were referring to was the Baptist. However, after the Grand Lodge takeover, Churton notes that the Masons began celebrating John the Evangelist as well, and he seems to think they did this to muddy the waters and make it hard to tell which John was really special to them. He quotes from the famous Sloane Manuscript, a fifteenth-century collection of texts on file in the British Museum, which contains a script for a Masonic ritual in which the candidate must state that the first Masonic “word ” was “given ” at “the Tower of Babylon, ” and that the first Masonic lodge, back then, was called the “Chapel of St. John. ” So here we have John and the origins of Freemasonry connected to the Babylonians, and perhaps an echo of their priesthood ’s initiation into the rites of Oannes, the memory of which may have been later transposed onto the figure of the Baptist.

This brings us to the next noteworthy quotation, from The Cauldron & the Grail: Ritual Astronomy & the Quest for Enlightenment by Hank Harrison. Here he talks about the Greek rites of Eleusis, an offshoot of the Dionysian cult, and how they would drink hallucinogenic intoxicants proffered to them by Pluto, the lord of the underworld, who would then transform into a “man-fish ” like Oannes and reveal to them secret, sacred wisdom:

In the rituals of Eleusis, as enacted at the height of Athenian power in the Greek Golden Age, it was crucial that Pluto entice Persephone in her human form into a state of expanded consciousness. She must see more in order to understand the mystery. To do this Pluto has her drink a psychotropic substance from a special goblet, the Kykion — another proto-Grail. Pluto then transforms himself into Iakchos —an anthropomorphic man-fish who performs a passion play, based on ritual astronomy. This is not a strictly Atlantic ritual. Clearly the man fish can be traced to Vishnu and the Vedic scriptures. But the Atlantic contribution is also apparent, especially in the transformation process and in the fact that the audience becomes an intrinsic part of the mystery. At Eleusis the spectators sing hymns to the man-fish, a figure who shows up fifteen hundred years later in the Grail literature as the Fisher King. Only Iakchos can return the maiden Persephone (essentially the vessel of the Grail) to the world of light and only the Fisher King can reveal the Grail secrets to Perceival.

Of course Oannes is linked to John, as we have established, and “Iakchos ” brings to mind “Jack, ” a common nickname for men named John, as well as “Bacchus, ” the Roman term for Dionysus. In some versions of the above- mentioned rite, it is Dionysus himself who is transformed into “Iakchos ” or “Iacchus. ” Drinking the wine of Dionysus could very well be symbolic of drinking “divine wisdom, ” as we saw, with Marcus the Magician and his version of the Eucharistic cup. The Mandaeans venerated John the Baptist as a Gnostic figure who dipped others in water, immersing them in a flood of

Gnosis. Simon Magus presumably taught the same thing to his disciples.

What John was teaching was that salvation through Gnosis (represented by the Logos, or by Christ to the Christians) is readily available to those who seek the hidden wisdom of the Nazarenes (a term even the Mandaeans used to refer to their priests). For the Templars, however, it seems likely that the secret knowledge they sought was symbolized by their idol Baphomet, and conferred upon their initiates via the “Baptism of Wisdom ” rite, which they may or may not have believed to have had anything to do with John ’s baptism. As we will see, this rite was perhaps more blasphemous and scandalous than most people could even imagine.

Chapter 7: The Baptism of Wisdom

The ancient mysteries later fell into a perverted decline, and were replaced with ceremonial sorcery, incantations in lieu of divine magic, and also were filled with the indescribable practices of the orgies of Bacchus… . The keys to esoteric knowledge were thrown over the hedge of time.

—Henry C. Clausen, former Sovereign Grand Commander of the Supreme Council

of the Southern Jurisdiction of Scottish Rite Freemasonry, USA

If John is connected to the cults of Dionysus and Pan, then we should not be surprised to find that those who practiced similar Gnostic baptismal religions at later times also indulged in ceremonies involving intoxication, frenzy, ecstasy, and sexual license. In Hippolytus ’ Refutation of All Heresies , there is evidence that the Naassenes may have performed homosexual acts in their rituals. If this is true, then it may be that they believed their sexual practice was somehow reversing the normal course of sex, and turning the energy backwards—turning the Jordan River in a different direction, as the Mandaeans may have allegorized —and thereby restoring themselves to divinity. Similarly practitioners of “Tantric ” sexual yoga withhold from ejaculating in order to retain the sexual energy within, for alleged spiritual gains. Perhaps in the Naassenes, or similar groups, we can find the origins of the Templars ’ supposed homosexual initiation rituals. Hippolytus tells of the Naassenes, while quoting from scripture:

Romans 1:27, “And likewise also the men, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust one toward another; men with men working that which is unseemly ” —now the expression that which is unseemly signifies, according to these (Naasseni), the first and blessed substance, figureless, the cause of all figures to those things that are moulded into shapes — “and receiving in themselves that recompense of their error which was meet. ” (Romans 1:27) For in these *words which Paul has spoken they say the entire secret of theirs, and a hidden mystery of blessed pleasure, are comprised. For the promise of washing is not any other, according to them, than the introduction of him that is washed in, according to them, life-giving water, and anointed with ineffable ointment (than his introduction) into unfading bliss.*

This entire section indicates that the Naassenes believed that Paul secretly taught them to practice homosexual rites. We suspect that the terms “washing, ” “life-giving water ” and “ineffable ointment ” mentioned above all refer to a ritual of bathing in semen. Judging from Epiphanius ’ explicit accounts of Gnostics eating semen and menses as the Eucharist, as well as consuming aborted embryos pounded with honey and pepper, it doesn ’t seem too far-fetched. A lot of Epiphanius ’ criticism against Gnostic groups is based on his interpretation of a metaphor of gathering up the “spiritual seeds ” of the world for the Gnostic church. These are the “spiritual elect. ” The Greek word for seed is sperma . Here is an example of the metaphor being used in The Gospel of Eve that was twisted by Epiphanius in Panarion 26.3.1:

I stood upon a lofty mountain, and saw a man who was tall, and another, little of stature. And I heard as it were the sound of thunder and drew nigh to hear, and he spake with me and said, I am thou and thou art I, and wheresoever thou art, there am I; and I am sown in all things. And from wheresoever thou wilt thou gatherest me, but in gathering me, thou gatherest thyself.

The Gospel of Philip (a Gnostic gospel not part of the Nag Hammadi Codices) tells us something similar as well:

The Lord hath shown me what my soul must say on its ascent to heaven, and how it must answer each of the powers on high. “I have recognized myself, ” it saith, “and gathered myself from every quarter, and have sown no children for the archon. But I have pulled up his roots and gathered my scattered members, and I know who thou art. For I, ” it saith, “am of the ones on high. ”

All of this is consistent with idea that some Gnostic sects believed they were gathering spiritual seeds from the world and returning them to the realm above. It seems to have something to do with refraining from conceiving children, while at the same time not refraining from sex (quite the opposite). Simon Magus is also said to teach the same libertine practices, calling it “perfect love. ”

It might be wise to consider that Epiphanius was perhaps just

misinterpreting a mystical teaching, and indulging in gossip about the same rumors that were once heard in the Roman empire about Christians. We saw how Celsus conflated the Christians and the Ophites with each other, accusing the Christians of being involved in the Ophites ’ secret orgies and cannibalistic rites. However, it is undeniable that the authors of early Gnostic scripture were practically obsessed with erotic symbolism.

In Refutations (5.21), Hippolytus referred to the phallic deity Priapus, who the Gnostic teacher Justin claimed had “fashioned all things. ” Epiphanius, in Panarion 25.2.4, also connected the teaching of the libertine Nicolaitans (who The Revelation of St. John condemns in the strongest terms), together with a great female power called Barbelo who “emitted from the Father. ” Her relation to the world-creating powers or Archons is highly erotic because she “continually appears to the Archons in some beautiful form and, through their climax and ejaculation, takes their seed to recover her power, which has been sown in several of them. ” This continued emitting of semen is an important part of the recovery of a female force situated in the eighth heaven. Nicolaus is quoted as saying, “Unless one copulates every day, he cannot have eternal life. ” (Panarion 25.1.5) We must look to the observations of Jacque Lacarriere on all of this when he connects Gnostic sex rituals as reported by the Church Fathers with the

Satanic Black Mass in his book The Gnostics :

The Black Mass is not far removed from the Barbelo Gnostic ritual — certainly no farther than Sabaoth is from Lucifer— and it is no mere chance that certain aspects of these rites are to be found, right down to the present day, among the Luciferean sects, where they are spiced with cabbalistic demonology. The ambivalence of the whole Gnostic attitude, the perpetual temptation that oscillates between rigorous asceticism and rigorous debauch (since both have the same sateriolagical value) is to be found there and, in the historical evolution of Gnosticism, was translated into the opposing paths of mystic Catharism (far the first) and magic Luciferism (for the second).

In Roman History (39.12), the Roman historian Livy makes the same accusations against those who partook in the Bacchanalia ceremonies, when he writes:

When once the mysteries had assumed this promiscuous character, and men were mingled with women with all the license of nocturnal orgies, there was no crime, no deed of shame, wanting. More uncleanness was wrought by men with men than with women. Whoever would not submit to defilement, or shrank from violating others, was sacrificed as a victim. To regard nothing as impious or criminal was the very sum of their religion.

These Bacchus worshipers were pretty hardcore! Even more amazing, there is evidence that there was a strong Bacchic/Dionysian influence on Christianity, as well as on the Johannite heresy. As we mentioned, when we first encounter John in the Gospels, especially in Matthew , we find that John described as a homeless madman living on insects. He seems to be demonstrating the sort of mania (etymologically related to manteia , meaning “prophecy ”) described by Plato in Phaedrus (244de):

This madness can provide relief from the greatest plagues of trouble that beset certain families because of their guilt for ancient crimes: it turns up among those who need a way out;

it gives prophecies and takes refuge in prayers to the gods and in worship, discovering mystic rites and purifications that bring the man it touches through to safety for this and all time to come. So it is that the right sort of madness finds relief from present hardships for a man it has possessed.

Baptism was one of the sacraments of the Thracian moon and fertility goddess Kotys (or “Kotyto ”). Ian C. Storey writes in Eupolis, Poet of Old Comedy :

“Baptai ” were worshipers (in this case of the goddess Kotyto) who had undergone a ritual immersion or washing as a rite of initiation.

We also find much Dionysian symbolism in The Gospel of John as well (some of it discussed in the previous chapter). In John 2:1-11 we see Jesus turning water to wine at the wedding at Cana (once celebrated by the Catholic Church on the same feast day as Jesus ’ baptism). Similarly, there were many myths of Dionysus ’ miraculous production of wine. The Middle Platonist and historian Plutarch relayed this wine miracle in the Life of Lysander (28, 4), where he says that the handmaidens and nurses of the infant Dionysus dipped him into a spring and the water changed into wine of a pleasant taste. For a polytheistic Greek audience, the Dionysian resonance in the story of Jesus ’ wine miracle would have been unmistakable.

Moreover, John ’s Gospel employs further Dionysian imagery when Jesus is quoted as saying: “I am the true vine ” (15:1). John ’s Jesus presents himself as a “New Dionysus, ” superior to the previous version of the god. In 1 Corinthians 12:12-13 (NASB) we read:

For even as the body is one and yet has many members, and all the members of the body, though they are many, are one body, so also is Christ. For by one Spirit we were all baptized into one body, whether Jews or Greeks, whether slaves or free, and we were all made to drink of one Spirit.

To “drink of one spirit ” parallels the Dionysian ritual of imbibing the god through the consumption of wine. (The word “spirit ” is even a term applied to alcoholic beverages.) This is the basis of the Catholic Eucharist, with the consumption of Jesus Christ ’s blood symbolized as wine, and his flesh as the wafer of bread.

The Bacchic possession of “divine madness ” has parallels with Paul ’s teaching on how possession of the Holy Spirit was meant to affect a convert who “received ” it through baptism, resulting in things like glossolalia (speaking in tongues). The Greek word entheos , meaning “within is a god, ” was used to describe someone that is divinely possessed. This is the origin of the word “enthusiasm. ” This is the state of ekstasis (ecstasy), when the boundaries between the egoic self, other people, and the god worshipped are dissolved into an experience of rapture and unity. The ecstasy of the god ’s presence was said to be induced by music, dance, wine, and omophagia (the eating of raw flesh). Similarly, in John 6:53-56 (NKJV), Jesus said to his disciples:

Most assuredly, I say to you, unless you eat the flesh of the Son of Man and drink His blood, you have no life in you. Whoever eats My flesh and drinks My blood has eternal life, and I will raise him up at the last day. For My flesh is food indeed, and My blood is drink indeed. He who eats My flesh and drinks My blood abides in Me, and I in him.

Jesus implored his followers to consume his divine flesh and blood to regenerate their souls from their fallen state, decaying in meat sacks because of their progenitor ’s exile from Eden after the consumption of the fruit of the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil. This can be compared to ambrosia, the food of the gods on Olympus, which gave their blood, called “ichor, ” the power to keep them immortal. Not too that the fruit of the Tree of Life in the Garden of Eden had such properties, as do the rivers of the “water of life ” that are said to flow through the New Jerusalem for the saved ones at the End Times. As we mentioned, these rivers are described as ultimately issuing from the sliced-open jugular vein of the Agnes Dei (Lamb of God) depicted as standing on the altar at the center of the holy city. Clearly, the latter description is a metaphor for the blood of Christ. Semen and blood were both substances considered by all ancient societies to be the givers of life and the carriers of soul essence. Especially included here was menstrual blood, which many ancient cultures thought was a coagulant from which the body of a fetus was formed, possessing the germ of life in itself, not understanding the role played by the ovum. Under a more Hermetic or Gnostic lens, one can interpret ingesting these holy foods as medicine to transcend one ’s fate, controlled by the fixed stars of the Zodiac.

This is the key to understanding “the elixir of life ” spoken of by the alchemists, which Ignatius of Antioch equated with the Eucharist. He called it the “medicine of immortality ” in Ignatius to the Ephesians 20:2. In modern times, the self-purported neo-Templar “Ordo Templi Orientis ” serve at their “Gnostic Mass ” what they call “cakes of light ” (a mix of menstrual blood, semen, honey, cake batter, and olive oil) instead of the traditional Eucharist wafer. We are not quite sure how many of the participants are aware of the ingredients of the cakes, as these rites are open to the public, and no warning is given to congregants about what they are about to consume.

In Liber Aleph , Aleister Crowley writes that pre-eminent in all sex magick “is the Formula of the Serpent with the Head of the Lion ” —which he says is a reference to semen, and another personification of Baphomet— “and all this Magick is wrought by the Radiance and Creative Force thereof. ” To Crowley, the personal will and magical prowess was symbolized by the erect phallus. The woman is a necessary, respected and consecrated essential of the formula for sex magic, but only in a reflective sense as a vessel, for the manifestation of the sacred.

Returning to Paul, in 1 Corinthians 14:23 (NIV) he discusses how speaking in tongues is indicative of one possessed by the Holy Spirit, having a private conversation with God that only He can understand. The Acts of the Apostles shows Paul seemingly “gone mad ” from his own divine encounter with the risen Christ, and we are to understand that this behavior is a sign of one touched by God. But here in 1 Corinthians , Paul explains that speaking in tongues will not be particularly useful for winning over converts because it makes Christians look totally insane:

So if the whole church comes together and everyone speaks in tongues, and inquirers or unbelievers come in, will they not say that you are out of your mind?

Similarly, imbibing or absorbing the spirit of Dionysus leads to “madness ” and ecstatic speech. Thus the followers of Dionysus were called “Maenads, ” which was sort of a pun on a Greek term that meant “maddened one. ” But perhaps not all such spiritual experiences are the same. Earlier in 1 Corinthians 10:20-22 (NIV), Paul distinguished between possession by the Paraclete or Holy Spirit and demonic possession by contrasting Christian worship with Greco-Roman pagan sacrifice:

[T]he sacrifices of pagans are offered to demons, not to God, and I do not want you to be participants with demons. You cannot drink the cup of the Lord and the cup of demons too; you cannot have a part in both the Lord ’s table and the table of demons.

In Ephesians 5:18-19 (NIV), Paul admonishes the newly regenerated Christians to live a conservative lifestyle instead of a libertine, Dionysian one when he writes:

Do not get drunk on wine, which leads to debauchery. Instead, be filled with the Spirit, speaking to one another with psalms, hymns, and songs from the Spirit.

For Paul, imbibing the Spirit of God doesn ’t induce drunkenness and debauchery, but edification and maturity. It is probable that Paul (or the true Pauline author, whoever that was) wrote part of this letter with the Bacchanalia in mind. Plato took a moderate or tempered stance on celebrating the rites of Dionysus when he said that no one under eighteen should drink wine, but that adults over forty should take part in the “convivial gatherings and invoke Dionysus… . ” (Leg . 2.666B) He also suggested mixing water with the wine to temper its intoxicating effects.

But whether wine, spiritual possession or some other vector is used, it seems that this state of mind was commonly thought to be the desirable result of ritual for many Gnostic groups. As Hans Jonas about Philo:

Among the impressive things which he [Philo] coins in this connection (by way of Scriptural allegory) is that of “defecting from oneself ”; and a favorite one, “to fly from oneself and flee to God. ” “He who runs away from God flees to himself … he who flies from his own nous (mind) flees to that of the All. ” (Leg .all.III.29; cf.ibid.48).

This fleeing from oneself can, besides the ethical meaning which we have so far been considering, assume also a mystical meaning, as in the following passage: “Get thee out, not only from thy body … [“country ”] and from sense-perception … [“kindred ”] and from reason … [“father ’s house ”], but escape even thyself, and pass out of thyself, raving and God- possessed like the Dionysian Corybantes. With this mystic version of the abandonment of the self we have to deal in the context of gnostic psychology.

In order to achieve this state of mind, the Greco-Roman mystery cults, such as the rites of Dionysus, Eleusis, and Orpheus, engaged in things meant to temporarily divorce their minds from the everyday world. The goal was to force their souls to venture forth into the wilderness of mystical ecstasy, to be absorbed fully by the deity worshipped. Wine and other intoxicants, as well as unusual forms of group sex, were to be expected.

This brings us to the famous alabaster “Ophite Bowl ” found in Syria and dated from the third to fifth century. According to Kurt Rudolph in Gnosis: The Nature & History of Gnosticism , there is actually a controversy over whether this relic belonged to the Ophites, as the ritual depicted inside seems Ophitic, or if it came from the mysteries of Orpheus, as the inscription on the outside of the bowl seems to imply. Either way it is pertinent to our inquiry, as both Orphism and Ophitism seem to have contributed to the stream of tradition that may have eventually influenced the secret practices of the Knights Templar.

Let us consider what we see depicted inside of this bowl. We see a serpent surrounded by sixteen naked initiates arranged in a circle, each making an obscure ritual hand gesture towards the snake as if in veneration. Ewa Osek remarks on the Ophite bowl in “Hermes ’ Tablet (Nonnus D 41.343-44): An Allusion to the ‘Orphic ’ Gold Leaves? ”

Delbrueck and Vollgraff, who examined this bowl in the early 1930s, excluded the possibility of forgery. They maintained that this was an alabaster copy of the metal original, both (copy and original) impossible to date more precisely than to AD 300 –529. “The special importance of the bowl ” —the scholars claim — “lies in the fact that it is, so far as we know, the only representation of a cult-scene … from the jealously-concealed Orphic mysteries. ” This led them to the conclusion that the radiant snake, pointing at the omphalos, had to be Phanes, the Orphic god of the sun. Hans Leisegang (1955), who saw the vessel in question a few years before them, supposed it was associated with the cult of the heavenly serpent worshipped by Gnostic sects (Ophites, Sethians, Naassenes) as well as by the Orphics, who sang their Bacchics to honor Phanes, envisioned as dragon.

The image of the winged serpent in the center of the bowl brings to mind the caduceus, the double-snaked staff of Hermes. Note that the snake here is coiled, much like the Hindu yogic “kundalini serpent, ” which is said to be “coiled ” energy hidden dormant within the human spinal column. It is “released ” when the devotee has done yogic practices or spiritual meditations to manipulate the subtle energy centers (called “chakras ”) along the spine. This may be connected to the “Nagas ” of Kashmir, which were likely the Hindu equivalents of the Ophite Gnostics, venerating Hindu, Buddhist, and Jainist “Devas, ” or deities who were depicted with the lower bodies of serpents. The concept of the kundalini is very similar to how the Naassenes allegorized the serpent as a presentation of the spinal column combined with the pineal gland (the “third eye ”) within the brain. As reported by Hippolytus (Refutation of All Heresies 5.11):

… They adduce the anatomy of the brain, assimilating, from the fact of its immobility, the brain itself to the Father, and the cerebellum to the Son, because of its being moved and being of the form of (the head of) a serpent. And they allege that this (cerebellum), by an ineffable and inscrutable process, attracts through the pineal gland the spiritual and life- giving substance emanating from the vaulted chamber (in which the brain is embedded). And on receiving this, the cerebellum in an ineffable manner imparts the ideas, just as the Son does, to matter; or, in other words, the seeds and the genera of the things produced according to the flesh flow along into the spinal marrow.

The imagery in the bowl has been taken by most writers on the subject to represent the sacred orgies celebrated in secret by the Ophites, as described by Epiphanius. In the Panarion (1.37.5:5-5:8), he wrote that the Ophites held a Eucharistic ceremony which included kissing snakes.

And therefore these people who possess the serpent ’s portion and nothing else, call the serpent a king from heaven. And so, they say, they glorify him for such knowledge and offer him bread. For they have a real snake and keep it in a basket of some sort. When it is time for their mysteries they bring it out of the den, spread loaves around on a table, and call the snake to come; and when the den is opened it comes out. And then the snake— which comes up of its own accord and by its villainy —already knowing their foolishness, crawls onto the table and coils up on the loaves. And this they call a perfect sacrifice. And so, as I have heard from someone, not only do they break the loaves the snake has coiled on and distribute them to the communicants, but each one kisses the snake on the mouth besides— whether the snake has been charmed into tameness by some sort of sorcery, or coaxed by some other act of the devil for their deception. But they worship an animal of that sort and call what has been consecrated by its coiling around it the eucharistic element. And they offer a hymn to the Father on high —again, as they say, through the snake —and so conclude their mysteries.

This ritual sounds exactly like the depiction of a ritual found by Joseph von Hammer-Purgstall, also on a ceremonial bowl that had been discovered on a former Templar property. In that image we see naked men and women kissing snakes on the lips. Similar bowls, along with images from cups coins, and the walls of cathedrals, also depict children, and animals such as dogs, bears, and camels, involved in what Hammer-Purgstall interpreted as ceremonial rites of bestiality and pederasty. They show women suckling snakes to their breasts, and blasphemous acts, like a naked woman using a water pitcher to put out the candles on a menorah, to represent extinguishing the light of the Judaic god and tradition. If these were truly ritual practices borrowed from Gnostics sects, it could explain what Justin Martyr meant, in a passage that will be quoted in the next chapter, when he spoke of the “upsetting of the lamp ” as a deed that certain heretics had been accused by their enemies of doing (1 Apology 26).

Another counterpart to the Ophite/Orphic ritual seen in the bowl is the so-called “Gnostic Mass ” of the OTO previously mentioned. This ritual —which culminates in an act between a priest and a naked priestess on top of an altar, obscured from view by a curtain —involves the congregants performing the exact same hand signal as those seen in the Ophite bowl. This is made with the left hand raised, with flat palm, above the head, and the right hand placed flat over the heart. The OTO calls this “the Hailing Sign of the Magician, ” and it can also be found in Duncan ’s Ritual of Freemasonry , where it is called “the Sign of a Fellow Craftsman. ”

Ceremonial bowls were used throughout the ancient world for conjuring, and even trapping, spirits. They were also used to collect fluids, such as blood, baptismal water, and Eucharistic wine, used in rituals. Magical or holy bowls and cups also appear quite frequently in mythology. The most well-known to the Western audience is that of the Holy Grail, which is a mythic item tied directly to the Knights Templar. In the Grail stories, the knights who guard the holy relic are depicted in ways that make it quite clear they are Templars, and in Wolfram von Echenbach ’s version of the tale (Parzival), he called them that explicitly. But what the Grail is, and the origin of the myth, has been debated for centuries.

Perhaps the most interesting connection in regards to our present inquiry has to do with the alleged “Baptism of Wisdom, ” seemingly the best translation of the name “Baphomet, ” and according to Joseph von Hammer-Purgstall, the name of an Ophite Gnostic ritual that the Knights Templar engaged in to conjure Baphomet. In The Corpus Hermeticum

’s fourth chapter, the “Discourse of Hermes to Tat on the Mixing Bowl or the Monad, ” Hermes explains that the Father of all didn't give Nous (mind, intelligence, or wisdom) to every person born in the world. Rather, he put it in a “mixing bowl ” which he sent down from Heaven, intending for humans to compete with each other for access to it, along with a herald to proclaim to us below:

Immerse yourself in the mixing bowl if your heart has the strength, if it believes you will rise up again to the one who sent the mixing bowl below, if it recognizes the purpose of your coming to be.

All those who heeded the proclamation and immersed themselves in mind participated in knowledge and became perfect people because they received mind.

After hearing this, Tat understandably pleads: “I too wish to be immersed, my father. ”

This Hermetic discourse is mentioned by Hammer-Purgstall himself in reference to the Baptism of Wisdom, which he describes as a “Baptism of Fire. ” Here is a translation of Hammer-Purgstall ’s words (from the first-ever English edition, soon to be published with commentary from Tracy R. Twyman):

Let us now take a look at the place in Hermes Trismegistus … where God sends a messenger with a bowl full of “Mens ” [“wisdom ”, or “mind ”], where perfected souls tending towards gnosis are ordered to immerse themselves. Other patristic authorities [discuss] the mystical baptism of the Gnostics, and various words distorted out of Hebrew and other languages are adduced, of which one is [the Greek] “basema. ” What wonder, therefore, if “baptism ” was changed into “Baphen, ” just as “Metin ” [was changed] into “Meten. ”

It was amazing to us when we stumbled upon this passage in The Corpus Hermeticum while researching the subject of Hermes for the purpose of writing this book. It was especially amazing considering that one-half of our team, Tracy Twyman, spent decades researching the subject of another sacred vessel, the Holy Grail, and had even written a book about it (The Merovingian Mythos , 2004), and has been writing about the subject of Baphomet for just as long, but somehow had never taken any special notice of this passage. We discovered it about the same time that we learned about the Ophite bowl, while studying Gnosticism. What was really strange was that as we found out from further reading, both the subject of the Ophite bowl and the Hermetic bowl of Mind popped up repeatedly in several very obscure references we were looking at. Emma Jung, writer and wife of Carl Jung, wrote about both topics in her book The Grail Legend , actually comparing and connecting the two. She said:

Think of that vessel filled with nous (understanding and consciousness) which is mentioned in the Corpus Hermeticum and which, as Hermes taught his pupil Thoth, was sent from heaven to earth so that men, plunging into it, might understand the purpose for which they were created. A vessel of this kind also played a part in the Gnostic mystery celebrations of late antiquity. In Hans Leisegang ’s study, “The Mystery of the Serpent, ” an illustration is given of a bowl that appears to have originated in an Orphic community. On it sixteen naked men and women, in reverential and worshipping attitudes, stand around a coiled and winged serpent, the symbol of the Redeemer and Son of God in the Orphic Gnosis… . In this bowl the Logos- serpent is clearly being worshipped by the initiates.

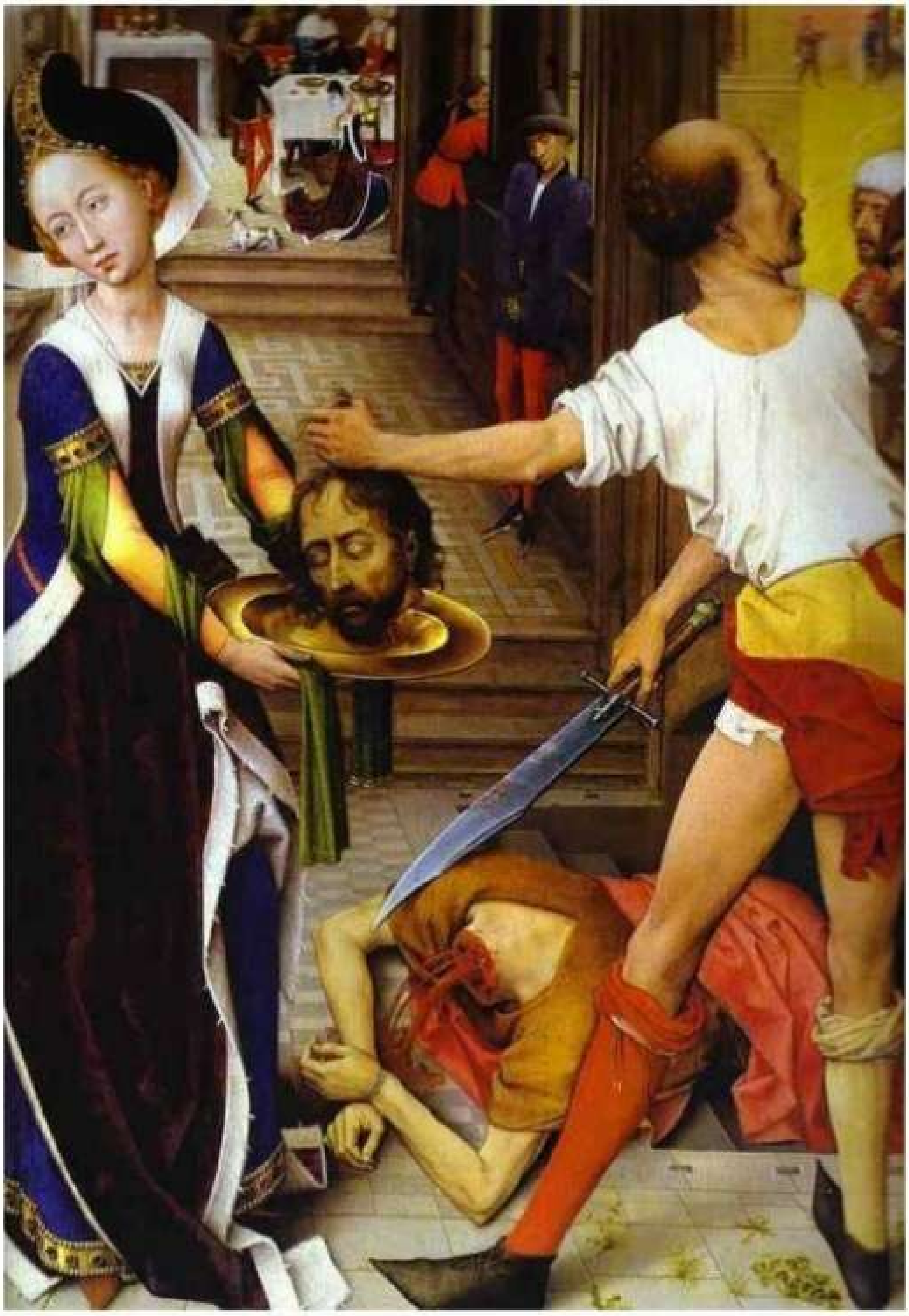

Beheading of John the Baptist, by Rogier van der Weyden, c.1455-1460.

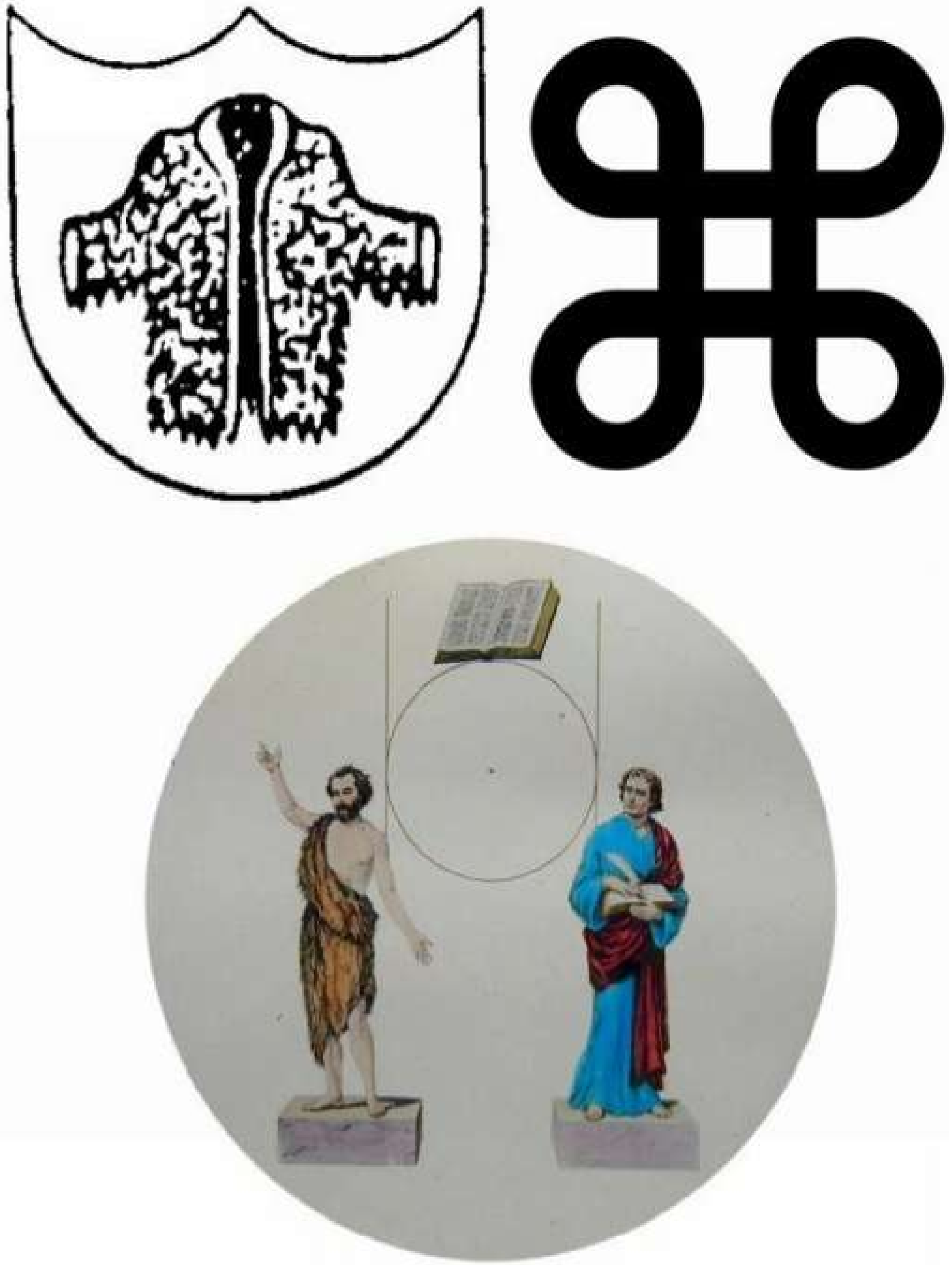

Above left: The hair shirt, symbol of John the Baptist. Above right: "St. John's Arms," also known as a "Gorgon knot." Below: Masonic representation of the two Johns, with the Baptist adopting the attitude of Levi's Baphomet, "As above, so below."

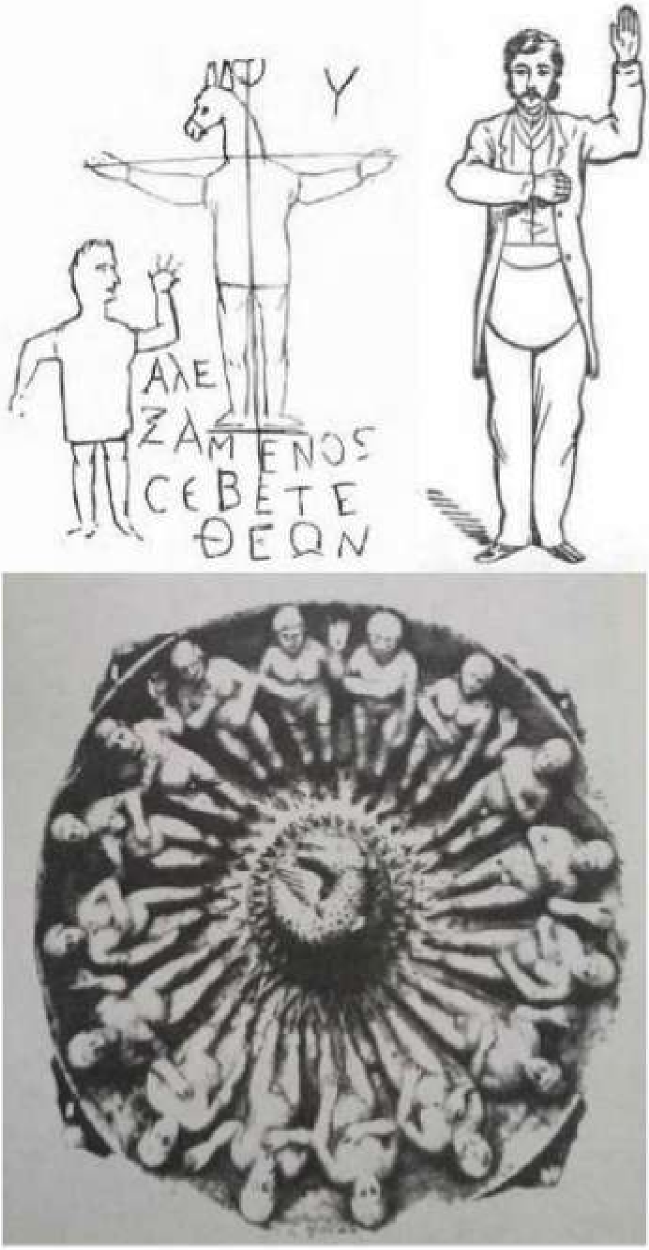
Y
ΑΛΕ
ΞΑΜΕΝΟΣ
CΕΒΕΤΕ
ΘΕΩΝ

Above left: Graffiti art, Rome, c. 200 AD, featuring the crucified donkey-man. Above right: Sign of a Fellow Craftsman, from *Duncan's Ritual of Freemasonry*. Below: the Ophite Bowl.

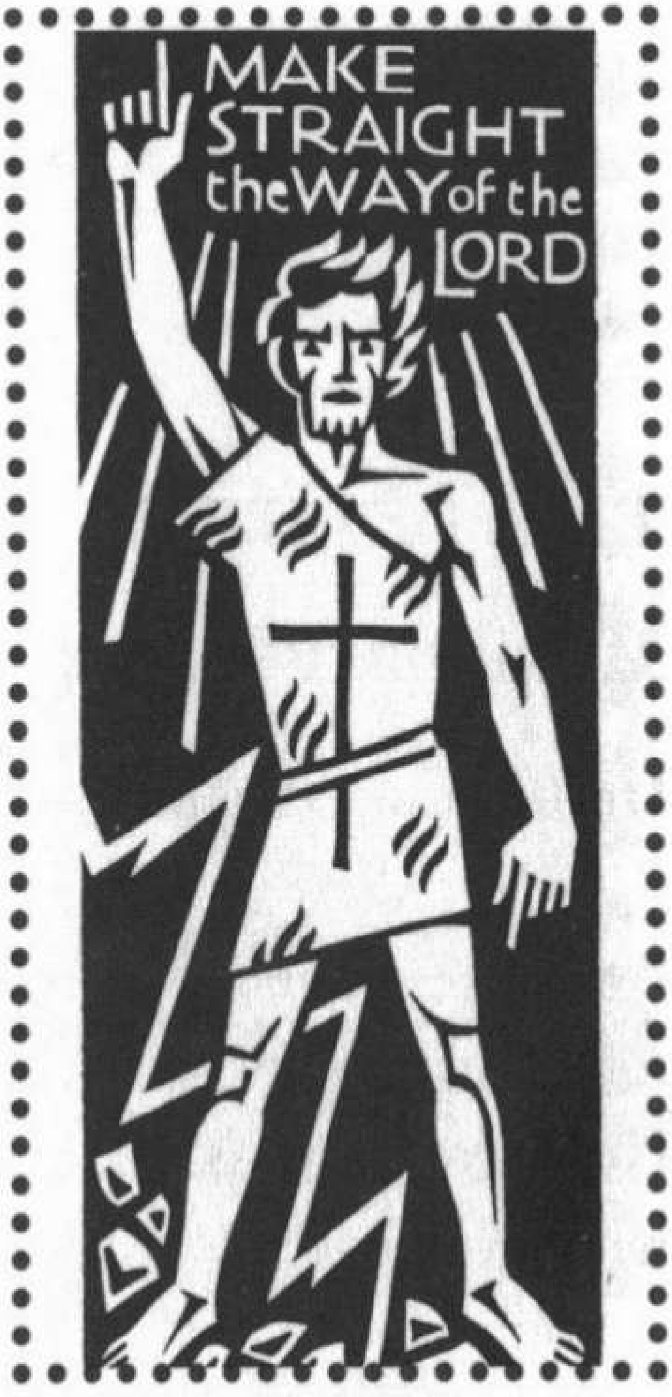
MAKE
STRAIGHT
the WAY of the
LORD

John in the quintessential "As above, so below" Baphomet pose.

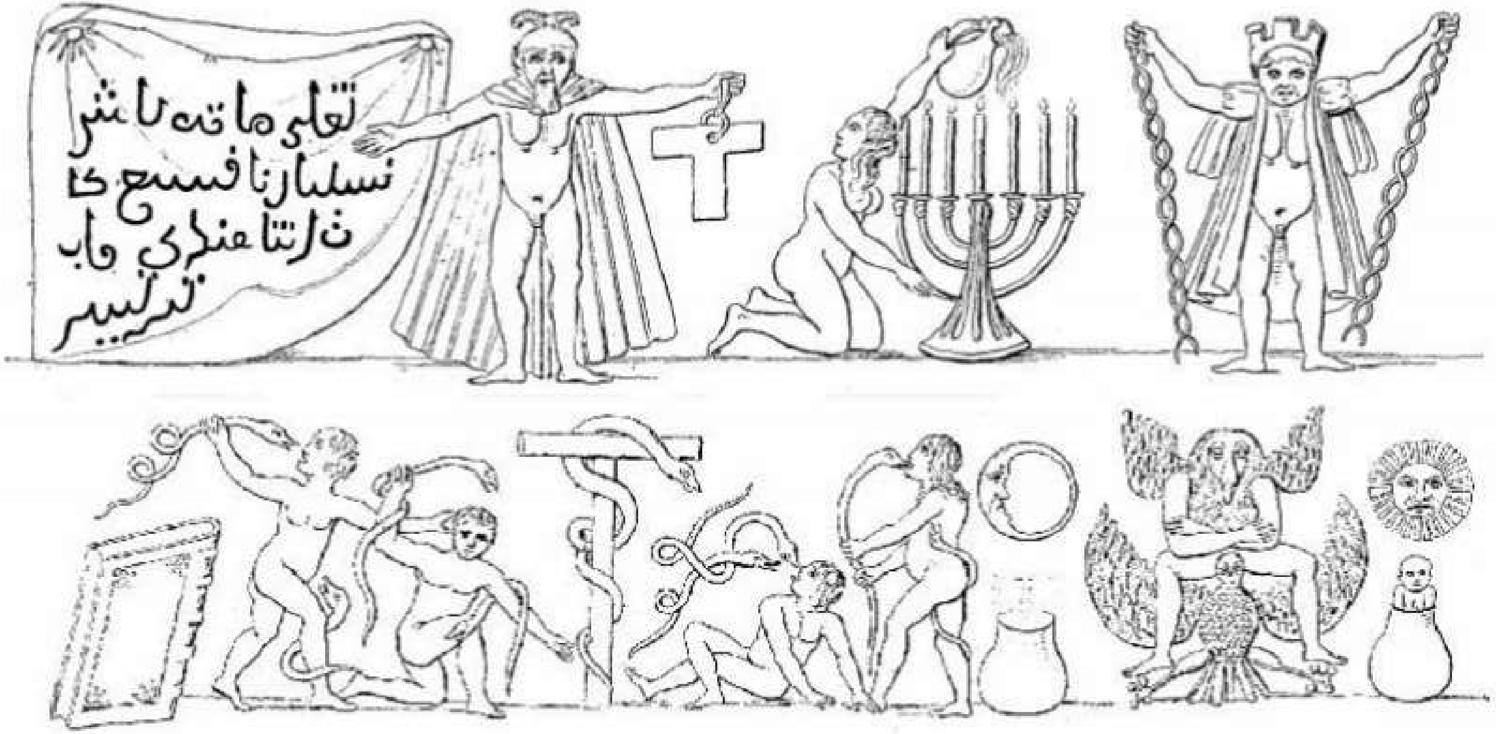

Above: Images from Hammer-Purgstall's Mysterium Baphometis Revelatum, featuring snake-kissing, a man with a goose on his head seated stop an eagle, the extinguishing of a menorah, and two images of Mete.

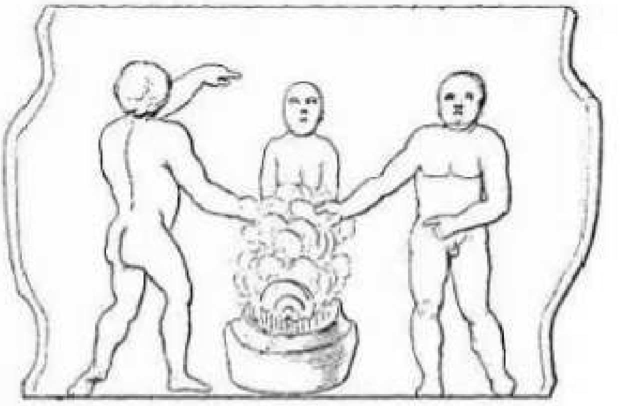

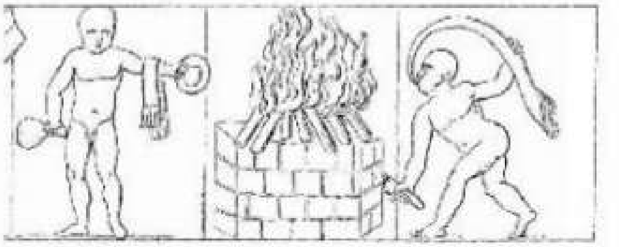

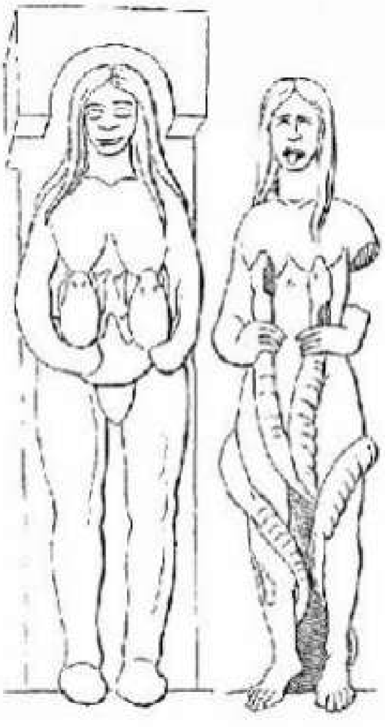

Above : Images from Hammer-Purgstall's *Mysterium Baphometis Revelatum*, featuring boy being immolated, the building of a sacrificial fire and two women nursing serpents.

Opposite page: Drawings of idols, from the same source. Above left: A man holds a boy on top of a bowl. Above right: Front and back of a statue, in front of which there is a boy who has passed through a flaming bowl and is emerging beneath. Below: Images of twofaced idols.

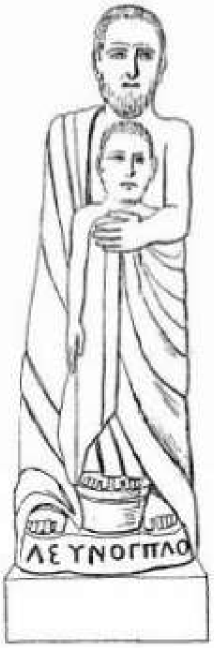
ΛΕΥΝΟΓΠΛΟ

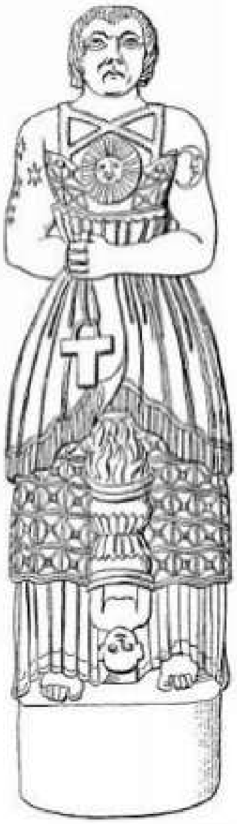

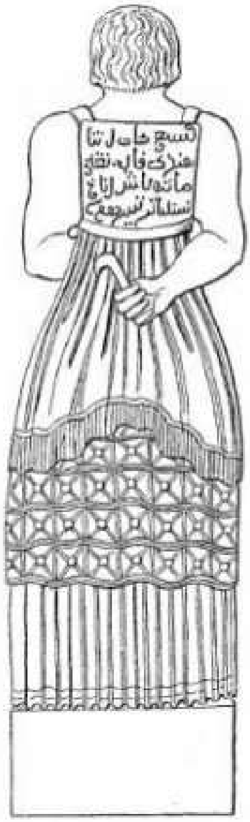

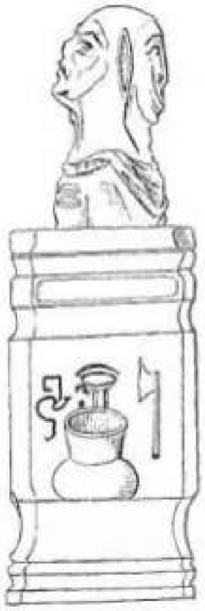

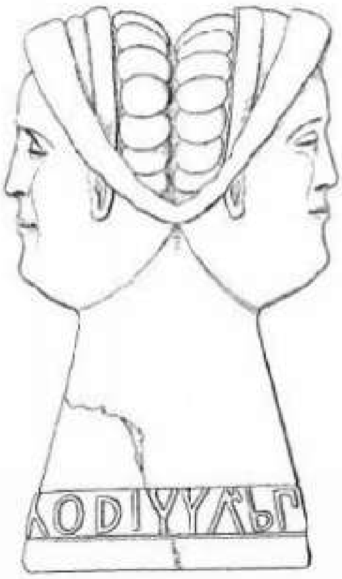
ΚΟDΙΥΥΆЪΓ

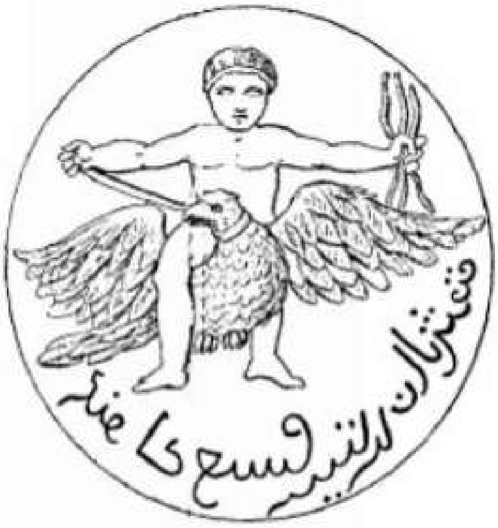

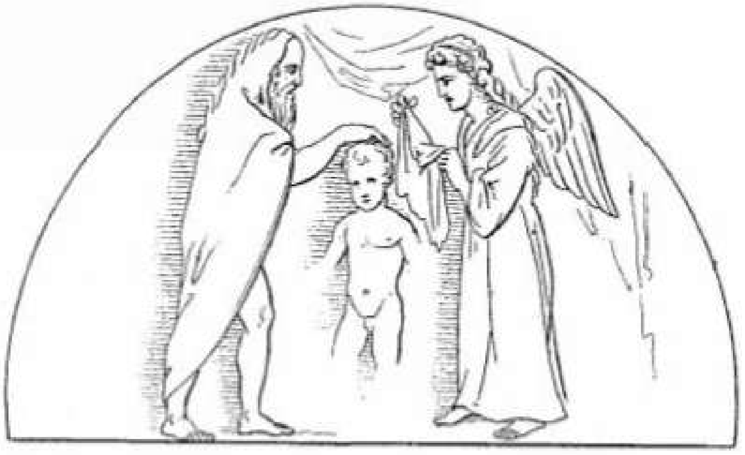

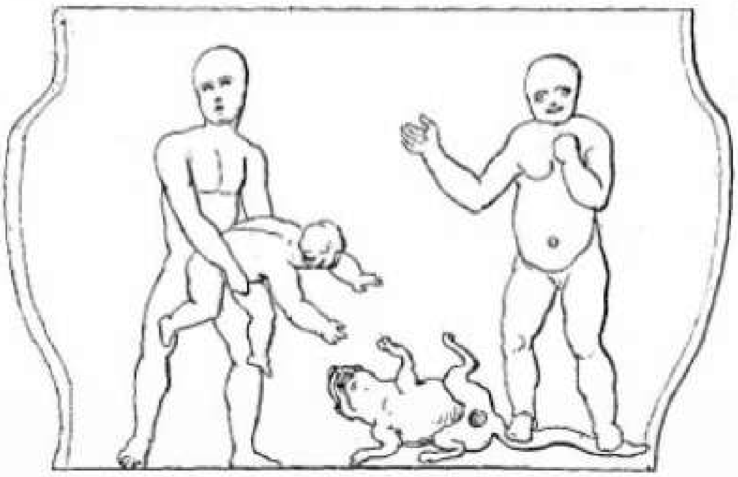

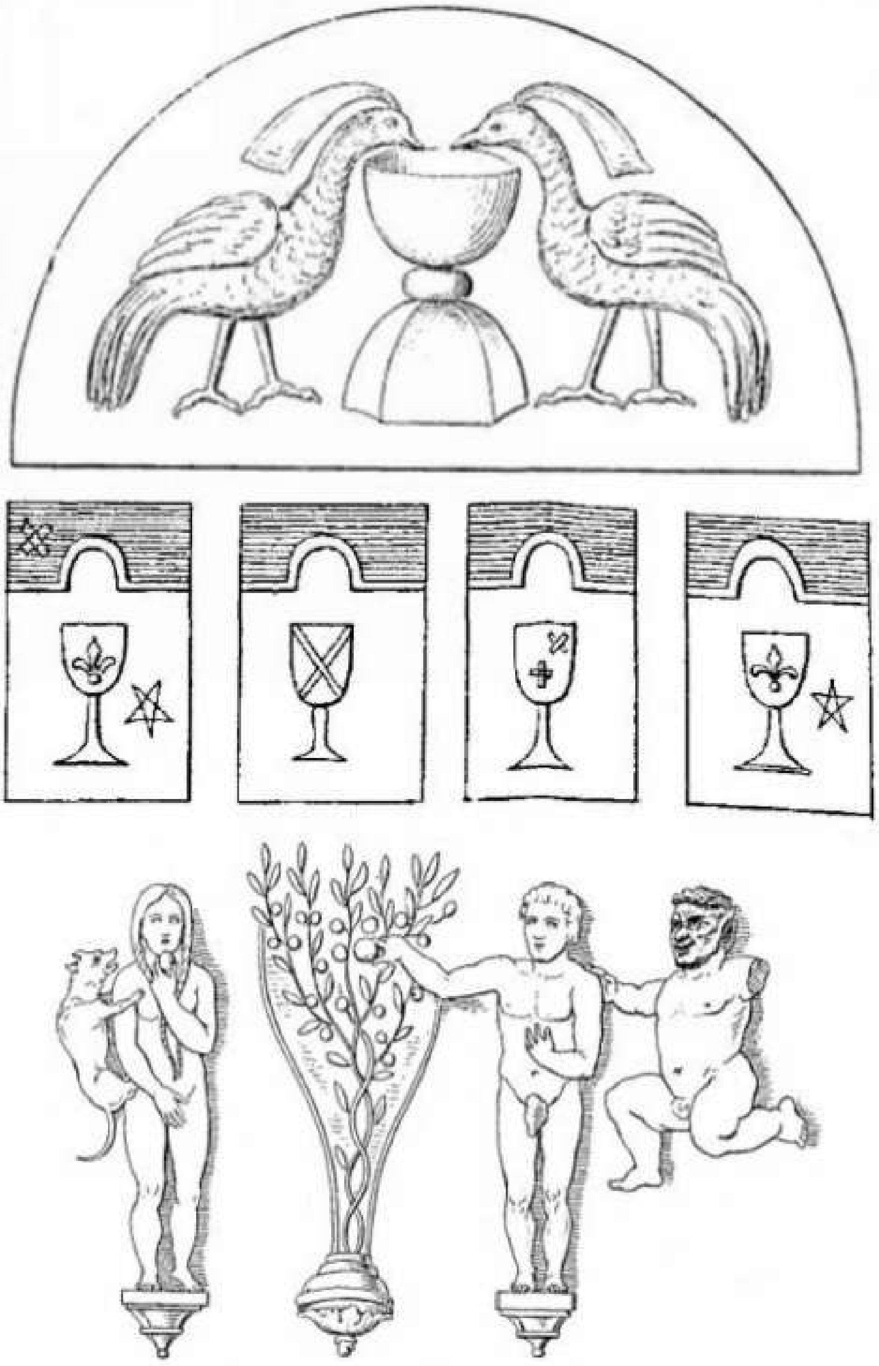

Opposite page and above: More images from *Mysterium Baphometis Revelatum*.

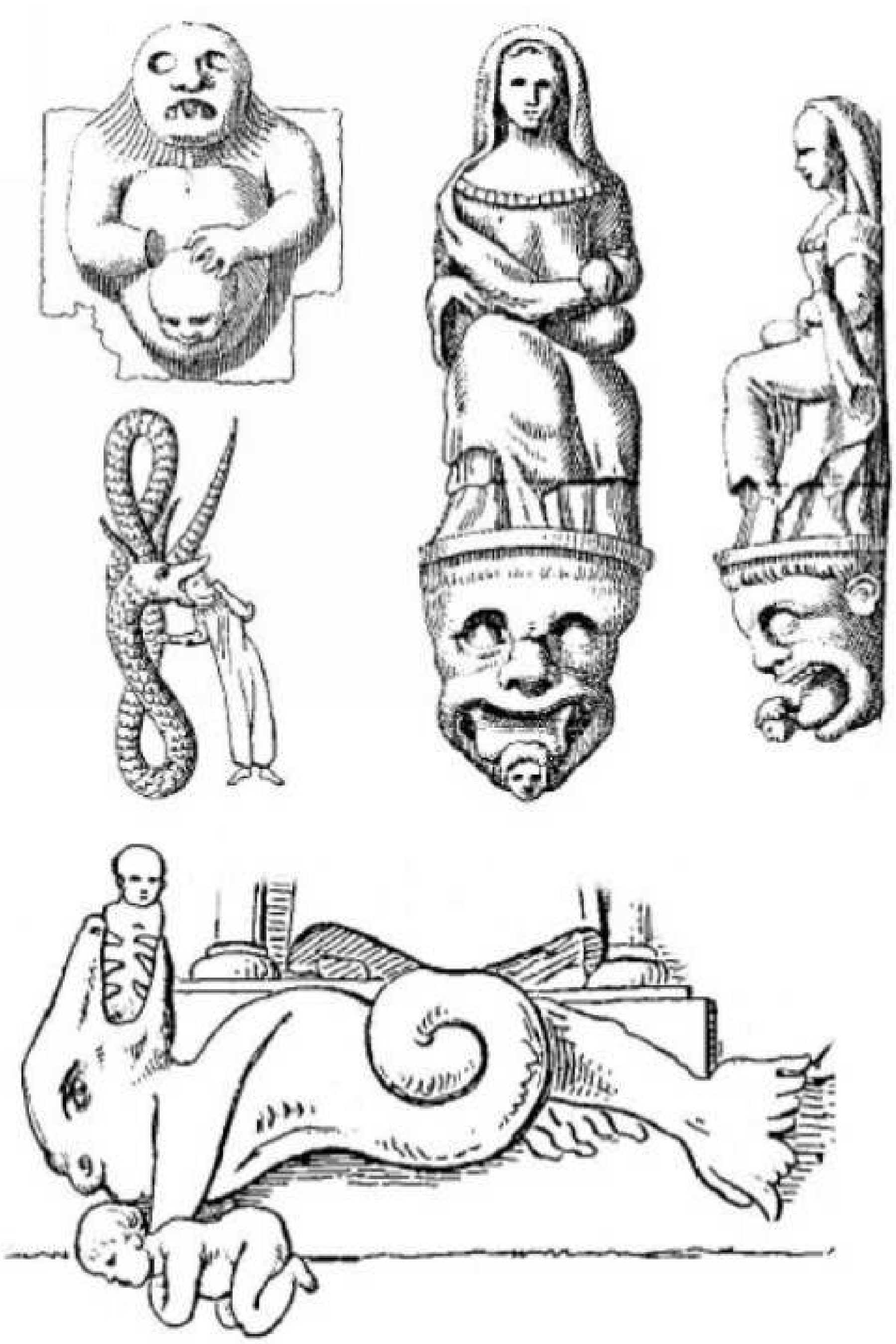

Images of children being eaten or otherwise mistreated by monsters, from *Mysterium Baphometis Revelatum.*

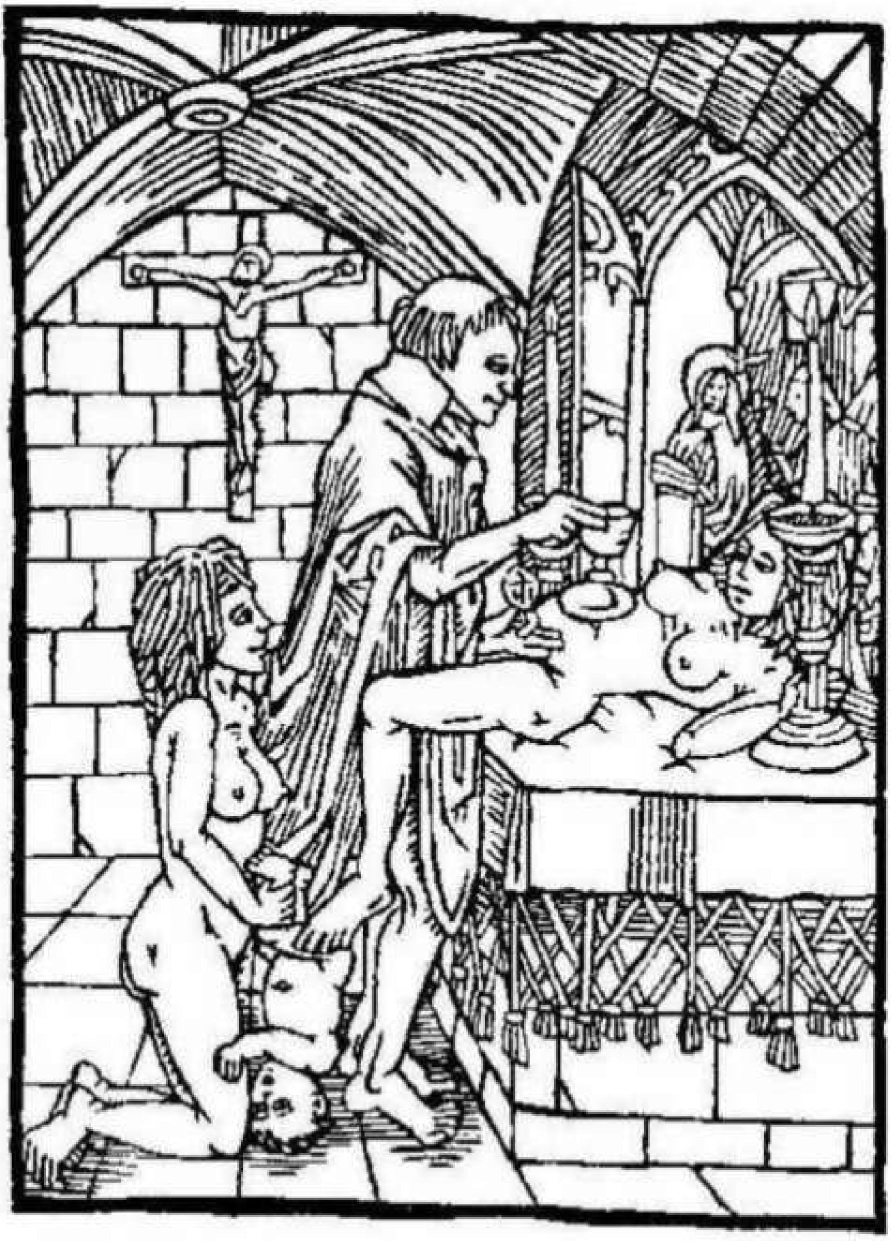

Seventeenth-century French priest Etienne Guibourg performing a Black Mass with Francoise Athenaas de Rochechouart de Mortemart, marquise of Montespan, whose body was used as an altar. The mass involves the sacrifice of unbaptized infants.

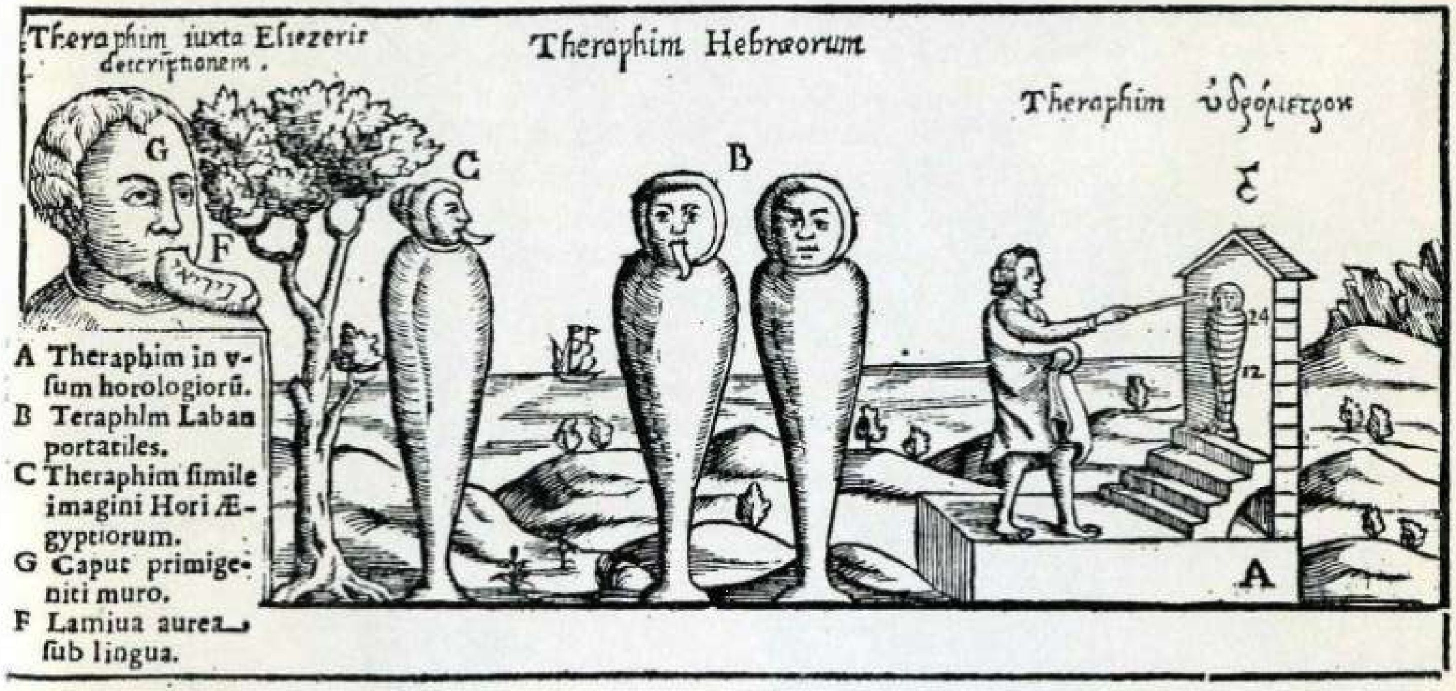
Theraphim iuxta Eliezeris descriptionem.
Theraphim Hebræorum
Theraphim ὑδρόμετρον
G
F
C
B
Σ
24
12
A
A Theraphim in vſum horologiorū.
B Teraphim Laban portatiles.
C Theraphim ſimile imagini Hori Ægyptiorum.
G Caput primigeniti muro.
F Lamina aurea ſub lingua.

Depiction of magician creating teraphim for divination using the severed heads of young boys. From Athanasius Kirscher's *Oedipus Aegyptiacus*, 1652.

In the same section she mentions several other holy cups or bowls, including a tradition from Ibn Malik that God gave Mohammed a special green goblet of light “for thine enlightenment. ” She also talks about a vision by the third-century Gnostic alchemist Zosimos of Panopolis, who, she says, “saw an altar in the form of a shallow bowl in which men in torment were being cooked and thereby sublimated into a state of spirituality. ” Mrs. Jung pointed out that Zosimos himself, had in his own writings, mentioned the bowl of Mind from The Corpus Hermeticum , “in which he advises his soror mystica to immerse herself. ” On this topic her husband once wrote that this bowl was “a font or piscina, in which the immersion takes place and transformation into a spiritual being is effected. ” The transformation, however, is described as a very bloody and horrifying process. From Zosimus:

And when I had heard the voice of him who stood in the altar formed like a bowl, I questioned him, desiring to understand who he was.

He answered me in a weak voice saying, “I am Ion, Priest of the Adytum, and I have borne an intolerable force. For someone came at me headlong in the morning and dismembered me with a sword and tore me apart, according to the rigor of harmony. And, having cut my head off with the sword, he mashed my flesh with my bones and burned them in the fire of the treatment, until, my body transformed, I should learn to become a spirit. And I sustained the same intolerable force. ”

And even as he said these things to me and I forced him to speak, it was as if his eyes turned to blood and he vomited up all his flesh. And I saw him as a mutilated image of a little man and he was tearing at his flesh and falling away.

The decapitation and dismemberment process described here reminds us of the decapitation of John, and the ritual dismemberment of both Dionysus and Orpheus, as celebrated in their respective mystery cults. The vomiting up of one ’s own flesh sounds like something out of the movie Hellraiser .

What we are talking about is the alchemical process of spiritual sublimation, the nigredo , wherein all things are dissolved into blackness —what St. John of the Cross called the “Dark Night of the Soul. ” It might also be what Jesus and John the Baptist both referred to as the “Baptism of Fire. ” For many Gnostics, Hermeticists, and alchemists, this is a personal process of self-transformation through meditation, ritual, and various processes designed to dissolve ego awareness. We do not deny, however, that some may have also performed ritual sacrifices or other dark deeds with the purpose of soul transmutation.

In the case of modern Aleister Crowley acolytes, it may involve both. Above the Ordo Templi Orientis there is a secret inner circle is called the

“Argentum Astrum ” (the Silver Star), consisting entirely of people who have gone through a ritual called “Crossing the Abyss. ” It is supposed to be a form of ego death, after which the initiate is “reborn ” as a master magician. The idea is that the self is dissolved in the “Abyss ” of primordial chaos. Normally, this sort of experience either kills or at least mentally destroys the average person, and they are never the same again. But a true master, they say, can go through this, burn off the dross of his false self (the common ego), and come out retaining his true self (the super-ego). He then realizes his “True Will ” or personal destiny.

This is analogous to being dissolved in the Hermetic bowl and retaining your true self, thus being able to recognize “the purpose of your coming to be. ” It is something not for the weak, but only, like with the Hermetic baptism, “if your heart has the strength, if it believes you will rise up again. ” Tracy R. Twyman has heard from a reliable witness, whose name we must keep secret for obvious reasons, that in the Argentum Astrum this is achieved by kidnapping the initiate from his home with chloroform. When he wakes up, he is in a dark room where he is sodomized horribly by hooded figures (his brothers in the order), for several hours, the humiliation of which is supposed to achieve the necessary purification. We are not making any formal accusations here, but simply passing along what we have heard.

This concept of “crossing ” or “immersing ” yourself in the Abyss, a process which only the elect few are able to pass through still whole, is also related to a repeated theme found in mystery cults in which a soul (either after death, or during the transformation of an initiation ritual) is offered two cups. One brings forgetfulness of the previous life (filled with water from the river Lethe

[“forgetfulness ”] which flows through Hades), while the other allows he who drinks it to retain his memory even after death or transformation, and on into the new life or new form. The Gnostic Pistis Sophia talks about “Adamas, ” in this source the equivalent of Hermes, and someone described as “a receiver of the Little Sabaoth [the Lords of Hosts] ” offering these two cups to recently discarnate souls:

And there comes Ialouham, the receiver of Sabaoth, the Adamas [ie, Hermes] who gives to the souls the cup of forgetfulness, and he brings the water of forgetfulness and gives it unto a soul [and it drinks it], and it forgets all things and all places unto which it had gone. Afterwards there comes a receiver of the little Sabaoth … and he himself brings a cup filled with understanding and wisdom, and sobriety is found in it, and he gives it to the soul and they cast it into a body that will not be able to sleep nor to forget, because of the cup of sobriety which is given to the soul, but the body will lash the soul's heart continually to seek after the mysteries of the Light.

According to Hammer-Purgstall, a ritual baptism of fire was represented on the artifacts he claimed to have found:

In support of spiritual baptism and tincture of fire were the sculptured bowls at the feet of our idols, and full of fire, so that it might become well- known how that mystic rite should be administered. A double representation of the same thing is brought to view. The first is of an infant (which means a neophyte Gnostic) be placed by Mete at the pedestal to this bowl; the other of a boy of this type standing over a flaming bowl.

In the same text he also talks about the concept of the two vessels that one can drink of after death, writing that there is "a double bowl [that] pertains to souls; the one part, oblivion , leading to generating (Greek, geneseos), the other part to Sophia , to wisdom. "

When one thinks of a bowl or a vessel containing wisdom, one obvious connection to make is with the image of the human head, the cup that holds the brain, the presumed organ of mind and, as Plato, Socrates, and later Descartes would have said, the "seat of the soul. " Talking about the vessel used in alchemy, Emma Jung wrote:

The "Liber quartorum, " a Latin translation of a Sabean text, emphasizes that the vessel is "like the work of God in the vessel of the divine seed

(germinis divi), for it has received the clay, moulded it, and mixed it with water and fire. " "This, " says [Carl] Jung, "is an allusion to the creation of man, but on the other hand it seems to refer to the creation of souls, since immediately afterwards the text speaks of the production of souls from the "seeds of heaven. " In order to catch the soul, God created the vas cerebi , the cranium. "

So if a person 's head is the cup or bowl that contains his mind, then could this Hermetic vessel, this cup of "universal mind, " be thought of as a giant "universal " head? Well actually, yes! In regards to this notion, the previously-mentioned work from Berossus (or from Alexander Polyhistor, supposedly quoting Berossus) contains a passage supposedly written by Oannes that is really worth reproducing here:

There was a time in which there existed nothing but darkness and an abyss of waters, wherein resided most hideous beings, which were produced of a two-fold principle. There appeared men, some of whom were furnished with two wings, others with four, and with two faces. They had one body, but two heads; the one that of a man, the other of a woman; and likewise in their several organs both male and female. Other human figures were to be seen with the legs and horns of a goat; some had horses ’ feet, while others united the hind quarters of a horse with the body of a man, resembling in shape the hippocentaurs. Bulls likewise were bred there with the heads of men; and dogs with fourfold bodies, terminated in their extremities with the tails of fishes; horses also with the heads of dogs; men, too, and other animals, with the heads and bodies of horses, and the tails of fishes. In short, there were creatures in which were combined the limbs of every species of animals. In addition to these, fishes, reptiles, serpents, with other monstrous animals, which assumed each other's shape and countenance. Of all which were preserved delineations in the temple of Belus at Babylon.

The person who presided over them was a woman named Omoroca, which in the Chaldean language is Thalatth , in Greek Thalassa , the sea; but which might equally be interpreted the moon. All things being in this situation, Belus came, and cut the woman asunder, and of one half of her he formed the earth, and of the other half the heavens, and at the same time destroyed the animals within her (or in the abyss).

All this was an allegorical description of nature. For, the whole universe consisting of moisture, and animals being continually generated therein, the deity above-mentioned took off his own head; upon which the other gods mixed the blood, as it gushed out, and from thence formed men. On this account it is that they are rational, and partake of divine knowledge. This Belus, by whom they signify Jupiter, divided the darkness, and separated the heavens from the earth, and reduced the universe to order. But the animals, not being able to bear the prevalence of light, died. Belus upon this, seeing a vast space unoccupied, though by nature fruitful, commanded one of the gods to take off his head, and to mix the blood with the earth, and from thence to form other men and animals, which should be capable of bearing the air. Belus formed also the stars, and the sun, and the moon, and the five planets.

It seems to us that in many instances in mythology from around the world, composite chimera beings and being with multiple faces are presented as a product of the undifferentiated chaos that preceded creation. The idea is that there were no natural laws preventing such monstrosities, and all possibilities existed in potentia simultaneously —thus, in complete confusion. The chimera later presented by Levi as a depiction of Baphomet, and many of the purported Templar idols given by Hammer-Purgstall in his book about Baphomet, shown as composite creatures, may be depicted thus to signify this concept of the chaos before creation. In the story given above, a hero creator god came and ripped that chaos apart, then imposed order on it to make creation —mixing the ingredients inside his own decapitated head! It was the intellect or mind within this head that provided the wisdom that brings reason and order to the universe. This may explain the Templar use of a severed head as a symbol of divine wisdom. The concept behind their Baphomet idol may have evolved ultimately from the same archetype. In the tenth discourse of The Corpus Hermeticum , entitled “The Key, ” Hermes says to his son Tat:

Since the cosmos is a sphere —a head, that is —and since there is nothing material above the head (just as there is nothing of mind below the feet, where all is matter), and since mind is a head which is moved spherically — in the manner of a head, that is —things joined to the membrane of this head ([in which] is the soul) are by nature immortal.

This head symbolism may even figure into one of the epithets of Hermes Trismegistus, “Poimandres ” (originally taken to be Greek in origin) thought derive from the late Egyptian peimentere , meaning “Mind of Re ” (the sun god), which could also mean the “head of Re. ” From the description above, it is as if we should view this primordial cosmic head as a ceremonial bowl as well, in which elements are mixed to create the brew of divine gnosis in which initiates seek to be baptized. It seems worth noting here that in some of their rituals, Freemasons drink out of ceremonial chalices made from (or made to look like) human skulls inverted. The symbolism seems appropriate for a Templar-derivative order, and now we know for sure what it means.

With these symbols—the bowl and the head —some of the seemingly divergent aspects of this secret doctrine of Gnosis come into clearer view. The head is the cup. The cup contains wisdom. He who is immersed in the wisdom of the cup dies to himself, and is reborn. The Baptism of Wisdom is not for the faint of heart. It is the wisdom of death. The head, especially as a skull, represents both wisdom and death. This cup or bowl, although it be a cup of chaos, of the Abyss that tears one ’s soul apart, is also overflowing with the greatest revelation of insight achievable by man—if you can stand to drink of it. When Jesus ’ disciples asked to be allowed to sit by him in Heaven, he asked them, in Mark 10:38 (KJV):

Ye know not what ye ask: can ye drink of the cup that I drink of? and be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with?

On the central porch of the Notre Dame cathedral in Paris, there is a bas relief of a woman seated on a throne hitting a servant who is in front of her. In the cryptic alchemical book Mystery of the Cathedrals , Fulcanelli includes this image and labels it “The Queen Kicks Down Mercury, Servus Fugitivus, ” the latter being a Latin term which means “runaway slave ” (Strangely, in The Grail Legend , Emma Jung writes that alchemical mercury is symbolized by the cervus fugitivus , which she translates as “fugitive stag, ” referring to yet another animal that symbolizes wild sexuality, and which she links to the rites of Dionysus.) Elsewhere in the Fulcanelli text, he says that Mercury is here acting as the royal cupbearer, “who comes with a cup in his hand to offer her his services ” before being kicked away. This image of the Queen (probably Sophia) abusing her servant shows up in another noteworthy context.

In the Welsh story of Taliesin, called Hanes Taleisin , the witch Ceridwen has a cauldron full of “Awen, ” which Malcolm Godwin, in his book The Holy Grail: Its Origins, Secrets and Meaning Revealed , translates as “knowledge. ” It is more commonly translated as “poetic inspiration. ” Some of it splashes on the hero of the story, a little boy named Gwion, who was acting as her servant. He is suddenly able to transform himself into whatever form he wishes. (Actually, he was quite lucky, because only three drops splashed on him, and it was only the first three drops of the potion that conferred inspiration, while one drop more would have been deadly poison.) The witch, angry at him, ends up swallowing him (in the form of a piece of grain), but nine months later he is born from her body, having become a new man, the poet Taliesin. After being tossed in the ocean in a leather bag by the witch, he is later rescued, and begins his career as a bard whose compositions work magic on those around him. In one of his poems, he brags of having been alive throughout the ages in a number of religiously and mythologically significant situations, including: hanging on the cross with Jesus; “at the building of the Tower of Nimrod ” (a.k.a. the Tower of Babel); “supporting ” the baby Moses as he floated on the river (here changed from the Nile to the Jordan); and, most importantly, playing the role of “Johannes the Diviner. ”

Now you might think this is a reference to St. John the Divine, a title given to the author of The Revelation of St. John . This person was originally claimed by the Church to be John the Evangelist, the apostle of Jesus who they purported was the author of The Gospel of John . However, it is now generally acknowledged that these two books have different authors. Also, as we mentioned previously, some, like Tobias Churton, have suggested that this Gospel was actually written by (or more likely, from the projected perspective of) John the Baptist. As a prophet, the term “Diviner ” certainly fits for the Baptist just as well as for the other John. The Taliesin poem seems to indicate that the poet is identifying himself with the Baptist. But he also clearly seems to be playing the role of Mercury, and the witch who gives birth to his new form is undoubtedly another representation of Sophia, the antagonistic goddess of wisdom and inspiration.

Another thing Taliesin brags about in the poem is being in the “Cair Sidin. ” According to Robert Graves in The White

Goddess , this is a reference to something called the “Chair of Idris ”:

There is a stone seat at the top of Cader Idris, the “Chair of Idris ” where, according to the local legend, whoever spends the night is found in the morning either dead, mad, or a poet.

Again, you may be thinking that this Idris is the Muslim prophet, their Hermes and Enoch, and wonder why a Welsh legend is talking about him (although that Idris is, rightly, associated with poetic inspiration). However, in Wales Idris Gawr is actually the name of a legendary giant of whom many tales are told. This seat of his is where, supposedly, he would sit at night studying the stars—another possible connection to Hermes, the purported inventor of astrology. Elsewhere in the book, Graves says that the cauldron of Awen that the witch Ceridwen brewed in the Taliesin story— “for a year and a day, ” according to the recipe —was located near this seat as well. The length of cooking time for liquid inspiration in the recipe seems like another connection between the hero of this story and Hermes, because as we have discussed, Enoch (the biblical Hermes) was said to have lived 365 years, and written 366 books. (The Gnostic figure of Abraxas, the subject of the next chapter, is also associated with the number 365.)

There is another Welsh myth, connected to the Holy Grail cycle, which seems to toy with the symbolism of John the Baptist. The story of Peredur, upon whom Parzival of the Grail legend is based, can be found in The Mabinogian , the earliest collection of British prose literature (compiled in the twelfth to thirteenth centuries from oral traditions). In this tale, the main character attends a banquet at his uncle ’s castle in which a bloody sword and a bloody head on a charger are brought through the room by servants, but the host continues to talk, even as the rest of the guests express dismay at the sight. Peredur, however, is too shy to say anything about it, and later it is revealed that if he had asked what the bloody head and sword were all about, he would have immediately accomplished his mission in the story, which was to lift the enchantment of barrenness and waste that had come upon the land. Instead he is cursed with more trials in his quest. In later Grail stories, a similar scene of a banquet at the castle of the Fisher King (Parzival ’s uncle) takes place, called the “Grail Service, ” and he is similarly punished for not asking him uncle the question of what has been bothering him lately (in this case, a stab wound in the genitals that won ’t heal).

Hammer-Purgstall certainly seems to have felt that the Holy Grail story was an allegory about the Templar Baphomet and the Hermetic concept of baptism in the bowl of Mind, along with the idea of eucharistically absorbing its contents. He wrote:

There remains no doubt that the most celebrated bowl of the Middle Ages, under the name of St. Graal, signifies nothing but a symbol of the Templar community and of Gnostic wisdom… .

One of the alleged Templar artifacts that he catalogued included a bowl on which the letters “R ” and “L ” are written. There was also a vase with two heads on its base, like the Roman Janus (and like some of the Baphomet head idols of the Templars were said to be), which featured the letter “G. ” Hammer- Purgstall said he believed G stood for Gnosis, but also that it should be taken along with the R and L on the other vessel, so that together they indicated the German word “Graal ”: the Grail. He conjectured that the word could be an acrostic code:

Thus, GRAL could signify: Gnosis Regit Animas Liberas [Gnosis Rules Free Souls]; or Gnosis Regina Artium Liberalium [Gnosis Queen of Liberal Arts]; or Gnosis Retribuit Animi Laborum [Gnosis Requites Labor of the Soul]; or, finally, what perhaps is most similar and most in agreement with Gnostic doctrine, Gnosis Reducit Animam Lapsam [Gnosis Brings Back the Lapsed Soul]; or Redintegrat Animum Lapsum [Restores the Lapsed Soul].

Elsewhere he also says:

It ought to be understood that, under the custody of St. Graal, those brothers of the militia [the Templars], as custodians of the Gnostic chalice, were initiated into the gnostic mystery of iniquity.

What could this iniquity be if not the obscene rites that both the Templars and the Gnostic cults were accused of engaging in? As we mentioned before, Hammer-Purgstall called this “genital wisdom, ” a term which he claimed he found encoded on the artifacts both in Greek (zoogogon sophian) and in Arabic (ma-ta na-sha). Comparing these rites not only to the “sacred marriage ” and Eucharistic rituals of the Ophites, but also the Bacchanalia, he wrote:

These are the ceremonies of that mystical sacrament and of the abominable orgies of which the Gnostics are accused by the Fathers, which, with the lights dimmed, with promiscuous ugliness they celebrated sometimes under the name of a meal, other times under the name of marriage. These orgies are manifestly portrayed in all three of our bowls there used, so that it might be clear to the onlooker what these orgies are, and to what Gnostic sect these bowls, with the same inscriptions as the abovementioned idols, belonged. For the first bowl contained, in a double circle, a double representation of the orgies, the inferior [circle] baccanalium , where Liber [“the Free One, ” a version of Bacchus] is observed, in triumph borne by Satyrs and Maenads (female votaries of Bacchus)… .

It is on this bowl that the snake-kissing orgy is represented, which image Hammer-Purgstall admitted to altering “for decency, ” omitting several erect phalluses on the participants. Regarding the snakes, he believed that they represented the demon Samael as an incarnation of the Nous or Gnosis. Serpents were connected to Dionysian rites as well. As Hammer-Purgstall wrote:

It is well known to everyone that in all the ancient mysteries of Ceres and Liber, both the Elysian as well as the Bacchic, the serpent played the main parts. Hence, through the same serpent the connection to be discovered with great difficulty between the Ophitic and Bacchic orgies will be illustrated by evidence. We learn, indeed, from Clement of Alexandria that a notable likeness of the Bacchic orgies was the serpent, consecrated by the arcane rite.

In addition to the overt depiction of the phallus (which he omitted), Hammer-Purgstall claimed that the same symbolism of “genital wisdom ” was represented by the mystical symbol of the Tau, or the letter T, which he also found used frequently on the artifacts. He stated:

The serpent and phallus which are handed around in the Bacchic orgies we encounter also in those of the Ophites, where the T which Achamoth holds in her hands, and is impressed on her forehead, we discern on the bowl, as if upholding the tree of life serpent, that is, genital wisdom. [This] retained a double signification (which it already had among the Egyptians), of a Phallus and a key, and was called, among the Ophites tree of life and key of Gnosis.

…

… Therefore, we see it elevated in orgies in imitation of the elevation of the Phallus in Bacchic orgies and a figure of the same not only put into the hand of Mother Achamoth, or Mete, but also impressed on her forehead, by which figure is indicated the character of life, which are noted the foreheads of the elect (see in Apocalypse 7, verse 3). This T is, therefore, the character of Baphomet and thus, a part for the whole, signified the instrument of life and life-begetting wisdom.

Hammer-Purgstall censored the phalluses on several other images to. Another artifact that Hammer-Purgstall presents, which we mentioned before, and which he also describes as depicting an “Ophitic orgy, ” shows two pots shaped like wombs (and also much like alchemical vessels) placed on either side of a goose-human hybrid creature that ’s seated on an eagle. From one vessel emerges a baby, while, according to Hammer-Purgstall ’s description, there was a phallus coming out of the other vessel, which, in his line drawing reproduction, has been smudged out. Other obscene pictures, he says, have been, in many cases, obliterated by priests and nuns at the churches they were found in, out of embarrassment.

But what he and the clergy weren ’t willing to show us is not nearly as bad as what he says that the images imply. The number of images and words in these artifacts that Hammer-Purgstall claims represent bestiality and pederasty is rather shocking. For instance, one of the statues of Mete that he found included an engraving that said, in Arabic: “… He ordered the camel to lie down on its knees, ” which, according to his interpretation, “would signify to do the most disgusting things. ”

This evidence of sexual interest in animals on the part of the Templars may hint that the famous osculum inflame which they confessed to conducting during their initiation rites (involving kissing the anus of a goat), may have been more that just a hazing prank. It may have been foreplay for what came later, which the tortured knights could have chosen to overlook in their testimony (having already said enough to be convicted of both blasphemy and indecency). This kissing rite is implied in one of the images said to come from the same coffer that features the figure seated on an eagle with a goose on his head, discussed above. Strangely this particular picture featuring the obscene kiss is not included in Hammer-Purgstall ’s book, but Thomas Smith, writing about Hammer-Purgstall ’s research, includes it in Worship of the Generative Powers . Smith also seems to have known many other details in the pictures also mentioned but not reproduced by Hammer-Purgstall, so that we may presume that Smith made his own independent trip to the museum where it was once kept. At any rate, the picture in question shows a statue of a horned entity with both breasts and testicles, which is being kissed by an initiate on the rear, while other participants baptize him with water pots held aloft.

According to Hammer-Purgstall, the eagle is Ialdabaoth, the Gnostic Demiurge, and this is showing him being subdued, just like another image he features in his book, of a male toddler riding an eagle. But we think it is possible, considering that the Templar rites allegedly involved sex with children, that it could be interpreted as a standard icon of Zeus in the form of an eagle carrying away his boy sex slave, Ganymede, who also happened to be his nephew. Ganymede is presently a mascot for homosexual “boylovers ” who openly proclaim their attraction to male children. Perhaps it meant something similar to the Templars as well.

Regarding another drawing of a statue included in his collection of images, Hammer-Purgstall described it thusly:

You see such a dog at the rear of a genuflecting idol … in which we recognize nothing other than a Gnostic or Templar, who by means of a dog adhering to the posterior parts, indicates nothing other than the most disgusting outrage of the Templars.

Elsewhere, describing a collection of Templar coins that Hammer-Purgstall had identified, he discussed the depiction of “the cross, as a sign of life, arising out of a dog ’s head, ” saying that it “alludes to the well-known predilection for the dog. ” He also says that this is something which goes back to the Gnostics, noting that heresiologist Epiphanius “indicated why dogs are held in the greatest veneration among the Ophites. ”

In another image, engraved in bronze high up on the walls of a church in Schoengraber, Austria (too high for most people to see it), he found a picture of Adam, Eve and the Devil in the Garden next to the forbidden tree, where:

Eve was not veiled, as modesty would demand, but by her own hand was thoroughly laid bare and, in addition to the serpent, also a dog assaulted her.

This was Eve ’s introduction to “Gnosis, that is, carnal knowledge, ” which, we assume, is the same as “genital wisdom. ” This peculiar term was probably related, at least in Hammer-Purgstall ’s mind, to his interpretation of the Ophite concept of Gnostic enlightenment:

The Ophites, though, by no means tending toward moral perfection, thought that the highest peak of all science [knowledge] is to be placed in carnal cognition, and under the term enlightenment, [included] nothing other than coitus and promiscuous shameful desire.

Another term that Hammer-Purgstall claimed the Templars coined for the same concept was “distinguished charity of Mete, ” which he said stood for “nothing other than paiderastian [Greek for ‘pederasty ’]. ” He claimed to have found, in a former Templar church in Prague, an image of a knight trying to uphold two collapsing columns, below which were engraved the words “the distinguished charity of Mete uproots the enemy. ” He also claimed that their specific symbol for this was the flaming star, now used by Freemasons. Elsewhere in the text, Hammer-Purgstall gives further reasoning behind this concept:

That arcane doctrines and paiderastias common among them are to be excused, various dogmas and imaginings of the ancients seem to suggest. There were two opinions especially that they twisted in defense of their shameful indecencies; the socratic one, “know yourself, ” and the prior, Epicurean one, “respect God. ” That first one [know yourself], since by “cognition ” they understood nothing but the carnal, was to their shame. The other one [respect God] they interpreted so as to teach that by means of the moistening with seminal luminescence they themselves became gods. Above we have seen what, formerly, Plotinus objected to regarding the Gnostics always bearing in their mouths, “respect God. ” Here it must be added also that the Templars, as Gnostics, held themselves to be gods.

In another picture in the Schoengraber church, images of pedophilia and bestiality are combined:

At the first station is discerned a boy, a future Ophite or Gnostic Templar, immodestly fondling a bear, an animal … addicted to this vice … to prevent which and to claim the nursling for himself, the Templar charges forward with a lance in order to pierce the bear through and to lead the infant over to his own enticements, at which the abovementioned dog not obscurely hints. On the other hand, the boy, now having become an adolescent, resists the girl ’s flatteries, whom she tried to entice by offering to him flowers… . The Freemasonic ornaments about this station agree very well with the Bacchic sense of the same for, composed from grape clusters and vine foliage, with phalluses intermixed (placed so high up that from the lower part they are difficult to discern)… .

Note that, in Hammer-Purgstall ’s interpretation, these pictures show a boy being corrupted sexually from infancy onward so that later in adolescence he has no interest in normal sexual activity with a female, i.e. actual procreative sex. This supports the idea that Gnostic orgies involved the redirection of energy normally put towards reproduction, since they believed that giving birth was just trapping more souls into the archontic prison of matter. We will discuss this more in depth later.

Recall also what Morton Smith said, mentioned earlier, in his book Jesus *the Magician regarding the animal forms used to represent demons. He stated that images or descriptions of sex between humans and animals were often used to represent the idea of people possessed by demons. Keep in mind that with the exception of the ass, all of the animals forms (goat, lion, dragon eagle, bear, dog, and ass) used to represent the Archons in the Ophite diagrams, as described by Origen and Celsus, are seen here among Hammer-Purgstall 's collection. So perhaps these pictures were meant to show the demonic possession of the Templars (or whoever actually created them). However, we do not deny that rituals to facilitate such possession could involve actual sex with animals also.*

While we may find it hard to believe that grown men of respectable positions (such as the Templars always were) would convince themselves that sexual abuse of children and animals was somehow spiritually enlightening, we should keep in mind that this could also be yet another veneer, with a more practical agenda behind it. In our own time, our politics is occasionally rocked with scandals of child sex abuse by the rich and powerful. This usually involves so- called “pedophile rings ” that are quite secret and exclusive, making use of child prostitutes that have been obtained from orphanages. Photos are taken at their meetings for the purpose of establishing the ever-present threat of blackmail, and mutually-assured destruction should any members of the abuse ring be tempted to give information to the authorities about what they have been involved in. This ties the participants together in a bond of evil, which is used for the coalescence of power into the hands of a small cabal. On more than one occasion it has come out that these rings were actually being orchestrated by the intelligence services, acting on orders of some group within the government that was using it to control other powerful people. According to Hammer-Purgstall, something similar may have been going on with the Templars:

It remains for us to comment on yet another expansion, or rather subversion, of the Delphic dictum. They substituted in place of that golden sentence, “Know yourself, ” the crafty, “know all, but let no one know you. ” On this truly Machiavellian principle rests their whole politic, which up to now they try to sustain by the gospel precept, “Be wise as serpents. ” To this depraved wisdom they connect unrestrained conduct, so that, “Pursue all, and all is permitted, ” they seem to have proposed as the highest branch of wisdom. That this goal of the moral, or better, immoral, Gnostic-Ophitic doctrine is precisely the same as what has been placed before true initiates at the ultimate doctrinal grade of the Assassins and of the Ishmaelites, we see in the words, “Nothing to be believed, and, everything is permissible. ” To what deeds exceedingly shameful this goal of the Gnostic-Ophite doctrine precipitates its followers, once all types of evil desires have been poured out … is clear enough. Certainly nothing either great or good was ever to be expected from the followers of this doctrine, unless men endowed with a higher political genius, the doctrine having been subjected to their ambition, used it as an instrument for attaining the highest goal of [their] ambition. Such persons, already destined by nature as leaders, sought the highest goal of their labors not in satisfying desires, but in conducting state affairs. Finally, people eagerly followed this doctrine because, once a person wickedly indulges every sensual craving, it renders his associates more inclined to all types of illicit activities.

The quotation, “Nothing to be believed, and, everything is permissible ” (More commonly translated “Nothing is true, everything is permitted ”) was a proclamation made by the aforementioned Assassin chief Hassan-i-Sabbah. The Assassins were a secret Islamic fighting order that operated contemporary to the Templars and fought against them on the battlefield. The two orders are often compared because of their rigorous training, their suicidal approach to battle, and the accusations both orders faced of having a secret inner doctrine of blasphemy. For the Assassins (with whom the Templars have been accused by some historians of having a friendly relationship behind the scenes), it really wasn ’t all that secret.

The doctrine of the Nizari Ismailis (the Islamic sect which the Assassins belonged to) was developed with the help of Hassan-i-Sabbah around 1095, just four years prior to the earliest date given for the founding of the Templars. According to James Wasserman, author of The Templars and the Assassins (2001), Hassan was “reputed to be deeply versed in mathematics, astronomy, magic, and alchemy. ” Beginning with him, the Assassins were accused, by both Western chroniclers and their Sunni foes within Islam, of, as Wasserman states:

… drug taking and licentious sexual orgies. Unlimited powers of mind control were ascribed to Assassin leaders… . Nizari leaders were said to follow no law but their own and to be willing to stoop to any depth, including witchcraft, to mislead their flock. The Sunni establishment accused them of plotting to undermine Islamic law and renew the ancient pagan faith of Persia.

Hassan-i-Sabbah ’s successor was Hassan II, who on August 8, 1164, proclaimed something called Qiyama (the resurrection of the dead). He was asserting that the last days had come, and that those who accepted his new teaching were to go to Paradise right away. Those who did not would go to Hell. He then explained this new teaching, which Wasserman described thusly:

While holding aloft his sword, he is reported to have announced that the Hidden Imam [the prophet whom Shia Muslims believe will herald the last days] had proclaimed a New Dispensation and freed his faithful from the Shariah practices of Islam… . At the conclusion of this breathtaking speech, he descended from the pulpit, and held a banquet, stating that Ramadan [which they were in the midst of] was at its end. This supreme act of blasphemy was reportedly accompanied by wine-drinking, pork- eating, and sensual indulgences.

… The holy practices prescribed by Muhammed as Shariah were merely outward symbols of inward spiritual truths. Outward symbols were now profanations of inner truth… . One no longer prostrated oneself and prayed to Allah five times per day… .

Those Nizaris who persisted in the traditional practices of Islam and refused to follow the New Dispensation were chastised, stoned, and killed as blasphemers—exactly as those who had previously been found guilty of breaking the Shariah were treated.

A few years later, in 1175, Burchard of Strassbourg, Frederick Barbarossa ’s envoy to Egypt and Syria, described the Assassins, as paraphrased by Wasserman, as “men who lived without law, ate pig ’s flesh, shared their women, and practiced incest with their mothers and sisters. ”

We cannot be sure what secret beliefs lay behind Hassan II ’s bizarre proclamation, whether the “Twelfth Imam ” really talked to him, and if so how. Was it in the form of a severed head, which, as we have discussed before, the Assassins made use of for divination, or at least pretended to? Nor do we know if these secrets were ever communicated to the Templars, whether through secret cooperation with them, or through information obtained from spying. But it does seem to go along with the “everything is permitted ” creed of his predecessor. We don ’t know how much either of the Hasans were influenced by Gnosticism directly, but they were both students of Hermeticism and Neoplatonism, so they would have at least been exposed indirectly. While much of Hermetic thought seems compatible with monotheism and Mosaic law, other strains (even some seen in The Corpus Hermeticum itself) seem to be informed more by what we might call the “anti-creation ” attitude of some Gnostics. At times this attitude manifests in something akin to the modern philosophy of Nihilism, as Hans Jonas has observed in his book The Gnostic Religion .

Dread as the soul ’s response to its being-in-the-world is a recurrent theme in gnostic literature. It is the self ’s reaction to the discovery of its situation… . Knowledge, gnosis, may liberate man from his servitude; but since the cosmos is contrary to life and to spirit, the saving knowledge cannot aim at integration into the cosmic whole and at compliance with its laws… . For the Gnostics, on the contrary, man ’s alienation from the world is to be deepened and brought to a head, for the extrication of the inner self which only thus can gain itself. The world (not the alienation from it) must be overcome… .

Viewing creation as a prison for the soul made by the evil Demiurge, and equating that entity with the God of the Bible. Some Gnostics had codes of behavior and rituals that were meant to reverse the “natural order. ” Just as all religious ritual is based at least somewhat on the primitive notion of sympathetic magic—that by acting out a certain thing, you will affect the larger world in an analogous way —the belief would have been that, by doing these acts of natural reversal (amounting also to the reversal of all considered holy), one might harm the creator, reduce his power, or even bring the corrupt world closer to a dissolution that they must have welcomed.

In Matthew 11:12 (KJV) Jesus states that “… [F]rom the days of John the Baptist until now the kingdom of heaven suffereth violence, and the violent take it by force. ” This has been taken by some to mean that, during that time, in which the advent of the messiah and the End of Days was believed by many to be near, there were those who thought that, by consciously bringing about the conditions foretold by prophets at the End Times, they could force God to initiate this process and bring the kingdom of Heaven to Earth sooner. This is the reasoning behind the firm that today is breeding red cows to be sacrificed in the Jewish temple once it is rebuilt, as the birth of such a heifer, to be used as an offering in the new temple, has been foretold. As Robert Eisler explained in his book Orpheus the Fisher (1920):

This much debated saying presupposes the Jewish conviction that men could accelerate the coming of the Kingdom and even force it down immediately by certain actions, either of obedience or of disobedience to the commandments of God… That such an apparent violation of the Divine plan of Providence was not always considered as sinful, “hybris, ” may be seen from the repeated saying in the Talmud, that God “loves to be conquered by a sinner through repentance. ”

One must wonder what sort of acts of “disobedience ” would be considered useful in this regard. But, it seems, a ritual with exactly that intent may have been depicted in the supposedly Templar artifacts discovered by Joseph von Hammer-Purgstall.

During Templar times and afterwards there were, in certain pockets throughout Western Europe, several religious groups that seemed to be influenced by the Gnostics, and which seem to bleed into each other at times, their membership not being mutually exclusive. These include the Waldensians, the

Patarini, the Bogomils, and the Cathars, the latter having actually earned their own military Crusade from the Church aimed against them (to which their last fortress of Montsegur in the Languedoc region of Southern France finally fell in 1244). They were charged by the Church with “unnatural sexual practices, ” which seemed to involve abortions and non-procreative sex (to prevent the incarnation of souls), despite the fact that St. Bernard of Clairvaux, the man who chartered the Knights Templar, had said of them, “No sermons are more Christian than theirs, and their morals are pure. ”

“The Pure Ones ” was in fact the meaning of their name. It may have been that, just like the creed of the Assassins ’ “New Dispensation, ” they believed that they were inherently “pure ” to the extent that nothing which they did could defile them. In fact, indulging debaucheries in the form of a ritual may have, in their minds, sanctified a sin that they viewed as an otherwise unavoidable fact of carnal existence. Dr. Iwan Bloch, in his biography of the Marquis de Sade, mentions these groups as an outgrowth of the Persian Gnostic movement of Manichaeism, and indeed, of Satanism, stating:

The real “Satan ’s Church ” was founded by the Manichees in southern France… . The secret societies of “Perfect Beings ” formed everywhere, serving exclusively the most obscene sexual vices… . In spite of the persecution of the church the sect and its motto persevered: “Nemo potest peccare ab umbilico et inferius ” [“No one can not sin, from the navel and below ”]; it found continual support from “unsatisfied ” priests. Sins slay sins! That was the great principle of their sexual orgies. The priest sanctifies all women who sin with him. The nuns are “consecrated, ” i.e. they become the mistresses of the priests.

The same attitude was expressed by Severus, founder of a Gnostic group (the Severians) that was part of a larger Christian sect called the Encratites who abstained from marriage. In the book Gnosticism: Its History and Influence , author Benjamin Walker explains:

According to Severus, a disciple of Marcion, man is divine from the navel up, and the creature of the devil from the navel down.

Women, meanwhile, were evil and entirely the product of Satan.

The descriptions of many of these groups ’ secret rites are quite clearly similar to what the Templars were accused of. For instance, in some of their confessions, Templar knights told of worshipping Baphomet in the form of a black cat, and kissing its anus instead of that of a goat. Likewise, according to Walter Mapes, as quoted by Thomas Wright, speaking of the Patarini of Milan:

Some apostates from this heresy, he tells us, had related that, at the first watch of night, they met in their synagogues, closed carefully the doors and windows, and waited in silence, until a black cat of extraordinary bigness descended among them by a rope, and that, as soon as they saw this strange animal, they put out the lights, and muttering through their teeth instead of singing their hymns, felt their way to this object of worship, and kissed it, according to their feelings of humility or pride, some on the feet, some under the tail, and others on the genitals, after which each seized upon the nearest person of a different sex, and had carnal intercourse as long as he was able.

This connection with the figure of the cat is explored further by Wright, who conjectures that the Cathars were actually named after the animal. Noting that “the name of the … sect is often spelt Gazai, Gazeri, Gacari, and Chazari, ” he relates:

It was suggested by Henschenius that this name was derived from the German Katze or Ketze , a cat, in allusion to the common report that they assembled at night like cats, or ghosts; or that the cat may have been an allusion to the belief that in their secret meetings they worshipped that animal.

A Cathar group in Germany called the Stedingers were accused of worshipping the Devil in the form of a cat by Pope Gregory IX himself in the famous bull Vox in Rama of 1232. It is believed that this papal pronouncement led to the widespread bloody persecution of black cats throughout Christian Europe as “incarnations of Satan. ” Some even claim that this led to a proliferation of rats and thus, outbreaks of plague. Thomas Wright, paraphrasing the bull, gives us the juicy details:

As the novice proceeded, he encountered a man who was extraordinarily pale, with large black eyes, and whose body was so wasted that his flesh seemed to be all gone, leaving nothing but the skin hanging on his bones. The novice kissed this personage, and found him as cold as ice; and after this all traces of the Catholic faith vanished from his heart. Then they all sat down to a banquet; and when this was over, there stepped out of a statue which stood in their place of meeting, a black cat, as large as a moderate sized dog, which advanced backwards to them, with its tail turned up. The novice first, then the master, and then all the others, in their turns, kissed the cat under the tail, and then returned to their places, where they remained in silence, with their heads inclined towards the cat. Then the master suddenly pronounced the words “Spare us! ” which he addressed to the next in order; and the third answered, “We know it, lord; ” and a fourth added, “We ought to obey. ” At the close of this ceremony the lights were extinguished, and each man took the first woman who came to hand, and had carnal intercourse with her. When this was over, the candles were again lighted, and the performers resumed their places. Then out of a dark corner of the room came a man, the upper part of whom, above the loins, was bright and radiant as the sun, and illuminated the whole room, while his lower parts were rough and hairy like a cat. The master then tore off a bit of the garment of the novice, and said to the shining personage, “Master, this is given to me, and I give it again to thee. ” The master replied, “Thou hast served me well, and thou wilt serve me more and better; what thou hast given me I give unto thy keeping. ” When he had said this, the shining man vanished, and the meeting broke up.

The descriptions of these allegedly “Gnostic ” heretical groups sound identical not only to the supposed secret practices of the Templars, but also to the rites of the Black Mass, and the Sabbath celebrated by European witches, as described by them, usually while under trial from Christians. The main difference between the Witches ’ Sabbath and the Black Mass is that the Sabbath is a satanic rite in homage to the Devil, whereas the Black Mass is a Christian rite performed for evil purposes. Witch Sabbaths were sometimes, but not always, done with the help of an ordained Catholic priest. But Black Masses were, by definition, always performed by a real Catholic priest. Although the descriptions of the sabbaths were extracted under duress, sometimes torture, and may be considered untrustworthy because the trials were part of a campaign of persecution against certain groups of non-Christians, the Church would seemingly have no reason to accuse its own priests of performing such blasphemous rites, unless it were undeniably true. Yet the fact remains that throughout history, more than a few respected priests have confessed to performing the Black Mass, including the sacrifice of children.

The Black Mass is specifically a mockery and parody of the Catholic mass. It is meant to be officiated by an ordained priest, so that the Real Presence of the Holy Spirit can be called into the host wafer, and then defiled. Traditionally, everything in such a rite is done backwards. The priest has his back to the altar, the cross is turned upside-down, the Lord ’s Prayer is read backwards, and the meaning of everything is inverted. The altar is supposed to be formed by the naked body of a female, and the Holy Host is to be humiliated by being placed inside of her nether regions. Instead of wine, the blood of unbaptized babies sacrificed on the fleshy altar was consumed.

The history of the Black Mass begins with the case of Catherine de Medici, queen consort of King Henry II of France from 1547 to 1559. She was born into an influential noble family that had provided the world with two Popes and numerous noble figures. They had a tremendous influence upon the spread of Humanist philosophy, art and science throughout Renaissance Europe. But they were also known for being dabblers in the occult.

Catherine de Medici ’s sons were heir to the throne, and she herself was appointed regent for a time. According to French political writer Jean Bodin, Catherine attempted to prolong the life of her son Philip, who was dying of a wasting disease, by employing a priest to perform black masses involving the murder of young boys. Catherine is known to have worn a magical amulet featuring the sigil of the demon Asmodeus. Another son of hers, Henry III, continued her interest in the Dark Arts, and had an altar in his home that featured cloven-hoofed devils bearing their backsides to the Cross. Catherine de Medici was never convicted of child murder, blasphemy or witchcraft, and in fact, these stories about her are rarely mentioned by modern historians, although they were widely believed at the time.

But in the famous case of the Abbe Guiborg and Catherine Deshayes (La Voison), mistress to King Louis XIV, the perpetrators were actually brought to justice. The mistress hired the Abbe to perform hundreds of black masses in which the demon Asmodeus was invoked and children were sacrificed. La Voison herself acted as the naked female altar in these ceremonies, and after the child was slain, the blood would be poured into the ceremonial chalice. The host would be inserted into La Voison ’s vagina during consecration, instead of the traditional “Tabernacle. ” Afterwards, the Abbe and La Voison would engage in sex acts and then the fluids would be mixed in with the blood and the foully consecrated host. This mixture was then surreptitiously added to the King ’s food, the purpose being to cause him to continue to love La Voison to the exclusion of all others, including his wife. This is all according to both Deshayes and Guiborg ’s confessions at the trial, and the documentary evidence, in the form of signed demonic pacts between La Voison and Asmodeus, which were entered as evidence in the trial. That a consecrated wafer could be used for black magic of this sort is a common theme in European occultism.

The similarities between these rites and the so-called Witches ’ Sabbath, at which the goat god was himself said to be present, becomes quote obvious once you read the descriptions of them. As Thomas Wright put it:

In order to “mix impiety with the other abominations, ” they pretended to perform religious rites, which were a wild and contemptuous parody on the Catholic mass. An altar was raised, and a priest consecrated and administered the host, but it was made of some disgusting substance, and the priest stood with his head downwards and his legs in the air, and with his back turned to the altar. Thus all things were performed in monstrous or disgusting forms, so that Satan himself appeared almost ashamed of them.

At the Sabbath, attendees were expected to kiss the goat god. But only the chosen ones were permitted to kiss him on the face. The rest had to perform the humiliating osculum infame , placing their lips on his second face, which was beneath his tail. Sexual debaucheries ensued, including the painful rape of young girls by the goat god with his enormous penis. As Wright said:

The young witch, Jeannette d ’Abadie, told how she had seen at the Sabbath men and women in promiscuous intercourse, and how the devil arranged them in couples, in the most unnatural conjunctions —the daughter with the father, the mother with her son, the sister with the brother, the daughter- in-law with the father-in-law, the penitent with her confessor, without distinction of age, quality, or relationship, so that she confessed to having been known an infinity of times at the Sabbath by a cousin ... of her mother, and by an infinite number of others... . This girl said that she had been deflowered by the devil at the age of thirteen —twelve was the common age for this —that they never became pregnant, either by him or by any of the wizards of the Sabbath; that she had never felt anything come from the devil except the first time, when it was very cold, but that with the sorcerers it was as with other men. That the devil chose the handsomest of the women and girls for himself, and one he usually made his queen for the meeting. That they suffered extremely when he had intercourse with them, in consequence of his member being covered with scales like those of a fish. That when extended it was a yard long, but that it was usually twisted. Marie d ’Aspilcuette, a girl between nineteen and twenty years of age, who also confessed to having had frequent connection with Satan, described his member as about half a yard long, and moderately large. Marguerite, a girl of Sare, between sixteen and seventeen, described it as resembling that of a mule, and as being as long and thick as one ’s arm… . The devil, we are further told, preferred married women to girls, because there was more sin in the connection, adultery being a greater crime than simple fornication.

Despite the pain and humiliation, the witches loved being raped by the goat god, and he always left them wanting more. To quote from Wright again:

Some of the witches examined spoke of the delight with which they attended the Sabbath. Jeanne Dibasson, a woman twenty-nine years old, said that the Sabbath was the true Paradise, where there was far more pleasure than can be expressed; that those who went there found the time so short by reason of the pleasure and enjoyment, that they never left it without marvelous regret, so that they looked forward with infinite impatience to the next meeting.

Another relevant detail is that witches at the Sabbath were made to pass through a fire that did not burn them. This was meant to teach them not to be afraid of the fires of Hell which they would be going to at the end of their mortal life. So again, they were taught to have an abnormal and unnatural reaction to something that would cause a normal person unbearable pain.

This brings us to the notion of “storming heaven, ” and the idea that performing certain rites, either in direct obedience, or direct disobedience , to the word of God, could actually force him to do something—even something destructive, even the destruction of the entire world. A perfect example of this was described in anthropologist Sir James Frazer ’s classic ritual reference book The Golden Bough , which explored primitive concepts of magic and religion throughout the world. He wrote:

French peasants used to be, perhaps are still, persuaded that the priests could celebrate, with certain special rites, a Mass of the Holy Spirit, of which the efficacy was so miraculous that it never met with any opposition from the divine will; God was forced to grant whatever was asked of Him in this form, however rash and importunate might be the petition … in some villages, when a change of pastors takes place, the parishioners are eager to learn whether the new incumbent has the power (pouder), as they call it.

The belief that the Holy Spirit can be drawn down from Heaven into a wafer is really not so different from the ancient idea (expressed repeatedly in The Book of Nabathean Agriculture) that one can draw down the essences of stars and planets into objects and substances such as plants, potions, and metals. The book refers to this as “star-bathing, ” and it really is the basic concept behind natal astrology. The essences of the heavenly bodies, as they were arranged on the nativity of a person or thing, purportedly stain that person or thing forever —a tincturing baptism.

In alchemy, there is talk of something called the “Bath of the Stars, ” and it seems to be an allegory for ritually bathing the metals to be transmuted in these stellar essences. The allegorical drawings of this, however —which usually feature a king and a queen, or an anthropomorphized sun and moon, bathing naked in a fountain—also seem to indicate that the bath is filled with the blood of their own “children. ” These are the other planets, viewed in this system as the offspring of the sun and moon. These pictures are often coupled with another image, usually labeled “the Massacre of the Innocents, ” as can be seen in Nicolas Flamel ’s The Book of Abraham the Jew and in Fulcanelli ’s The Mystery of the Cathedrals . This shows babes being slaughtered and the blood collected in barrels, presumably for the bathing of the king and queen. While there are numerous ways of interpreting these metaphors, alchemy is certainly a science of death and rebirth, of substances, and of souls. Tracy R. Twyman has pointed out in her books that this imagery is connected to the ancient idea that drinking and bathing in the blood of children can help retain youth, or even resuscitate the dead.

There is another way to interpret this also. The notion of drawing down heavenly things into earthly things seems like an aptly Hermetic way of bringing Heaven down by force — another way of looking at the notion of “storming Heaven, ” to make the “below ” like the “above. ” In Sefer Hekhalot , also known as The Third Book of Enoch , it tells the story of the fallen angels that bred giants with human women, and it says that they taught their hybrid children the abominations of ritual magic. One particular passage is worth quoting:

They brought down the sun, the moon, planets and constellations, and placed them before the idols on their right hand and on their left. How was it that they had the strength to bring them down? It was only because Uzza, Azza and Azael taught them sorceries that they brought them down, for otherwise they would not have been able to bring them down.

Interestingly, in Christopher Marlowe ’s Doctor Faustus , this is one of the things that the title character asks the demon Mephistopheles to be ready to do for him:

I charge thee wait upon me whilst I live

To do whatever Faustus shall command,

Be it to make the moon drop from her sphere

Or the ocean to overwhelm the world.

Let us remember that Azazel, the goat demon who taught men to bring down the heavens, is also said to be the “Groomsman ” for the demons Lilith and Samael, responsible for facilitating their sexual union. At the Witches ’ Sabbath, the goat god was sometimes also called the “Groomsman, ” and arranged the sex partners who were to perform at that night ’s festivities. We have already theorized here that the people at these orgies may have been channeling Lilith and Samael, thus acting as vessels to facilitate the mating of these two lovers who could otherwise never reconnect. It makes sense, then, that the icon which came to symbolize these orgy rituals was a Hermaphroditic figure (like Lilith and Samael once were), sporting a staff with twin serpents on it, symbolizing the two demons. When Samael and Lilith come together, via the bodies of the ritual participants, they form the conjuration of the Baphomet.

Perhaps we can imagine a ritual, possibly performed by the Templars, that might have utilized all of the symbolism we have seen in the Hammer-Purgstall images, as well as many of the motifs found at witch sabbaths, black masses, and Gnostic orgies. We know that many of the Gnostic groups were accused of performing sexual perversions which did not result in babies that were seen alive outside of the ritual chamber. That does not necessarily mean that babies were not born. Sodomy and abortion are the most commonly imagined acts that might have taken place to fulfill these requirements. But what if some of their rituals did result in births? What if that was, in some cases, the point? Thomas Wright describes a group that once met in Orleans, about which a document was found at the abbey of St. Pere in Chartres that described their alleged activities. After calling a demonic spirit to appear “in the form of an animal, ” they would purportedly indulge in group sex (men and women both). Then, Wright says:

The child which was the fruit of this intercourse was taken on the eighth day, and purified by fire, “in the manner of the ancient pagans ” —so says the contemporary writer of this document —it was burnt to ashes in a large fire made for that purpose. The ashes were collected with great reverence, and preserved to be administered to members of the society who were dying, just as good Christians received the viaticum. It is added that there was such a virtue in these ashes, that an individual who had once tasted them would hardly ever be able to turn his mind from that heresy and take the path of truth.

Similarly, in modern times, there is an elite, secret resort in California called the “Bohemian Club ” which performs a “neo-Druidic ritual each summer called the “Cremation of Care, ” involving the sacrifice of a baby “in effigy ” by fire. The ashes are then swept up and used in future rituals. After the rite, the congregants commence with a two-week-long orgy with prostitutes of both sexes and reportedly all ages.

Now let us again recall some of the images presented by Hammer- Purgstall. There are several of children being brought out in front of a burning brazier, and in at least one instance, Hammer-Purgstall described the child as being placed “into ” the fire. He seems to have viewed the children as allegorical of “neophyte Templars, ” which is surprisingly naive, considering all of the diabolical acts that he believed the Templars had engaged in. He also included in his book several images of people, mostly children, halfway inside of the mouth of a dragon.

This he interprets as Ialdabaoth, the Demiurge, spitting out the person, who instead of being absorbed fully by the beast, was able to reemerge from death intact, just as the true Gnostic is supposed to be able to survive immersion in the Abyss or bowl of Mind with his self and memory whole. While we might assume that the dragon would be synonymous with the serpent of Genesis , and therefore a hero to Gnostic Templars, Hammer-Purgstall thought that to them the dragon was the Demiurge, and that images of St. George or St. Michael subduing the dragon were taken by them to represent the conquering of Ialdabaoth (while Michael was himself viewed as a serpent). He mentioned it in connection with an illustration on a bowl:

The infant is threatened with absorption, and lest there be a hint of doubt that that dragon is the same about which Epiphanius speaks as a gnostic symbol of the one who presides over the world (who absorbs and again spits out every man not imbued with Gnosis), in this place a double infant can be seen, of whom one adheres to the jaws; the other, through the lower part of the body, is cast out by means of withdrawal. This is the dragon whom the Templars, having sculpted on their graves, trampled underfoot in the London temple. This, finally, is the same dragon who, at the time of establishment of the Brotherhood of the Temple Militia, out of gnostic fabrications on the life of St. George, and with him, but without the infant, transferred into the British Shield, and for sure the Gnostic dragon absorbing the infant gave rise to the serpent Viscount, who up to the present can be seen in the seals of Milan.

This seal of Milan, as you may know, featuring a boy being swallowed by a dragon, is now also the logo for the Alfa Romeo luxury car company.

The way Hammer-Purgstall thought that the Templars saw it, these impious deeds of debauchery would not have counted against them in the afterlife. Rather they would earn them brownie points. He believed that this was illustrated by one of the images he found:

On the left side is exhibited the end of a Templar ’s life, already dead and lying on the ground, with the Archangel Michael holding a judgment scale and weighing his deeds. The scale, on which were placed apples, desserts and other blandishments of the senses, and by which the Ophitic Templar ’s life is represented, descending to the earth, shows that the judgment of Michael favors him, because in order to hinder Jaldabaoth, he tries to depress the other, ascending, part of the scale… . The … serpent, called by the gnostics Michael, carries out the details of judgment in this way: thinking, in the day of judgment, about the life of the Templar, or Gnostic, he accepts all of his disgraceful deeds as good works. In this way [goes] the cycle of a Gnostic ’s life.

The goal of all these impieties may have been, as we have suggested, nothing less than the toppling of the heavenly order. This may explain, then, several of the images presented by Hammer-Purgstall which involve a bearded and breasted figure (Mete, or Baphomet, according to him) holding a set of chains —one in each hand, seemingly attached to and hanging down from the sky. Hammer-Purgstall had said these represent “a chain of aeons … of the Gnostics, ” “the hermetic chain of the Neoplatonists, and “the gods ’ chain in Homer. ”

This Gnostic, Hermetic, and Neoplatonic “chain ” appears to be the chain of causality, and of the interconnected hierarchies of creation. Since in Gnosticism, each aeon corresponds to an archontic entity, and each Archon corresponds to one of the seven “classical planets ” (the Sun, the Moon, Mercury, Mars, Venus, Jupiter, Saturn), and each planet was, in antiquity, believed to rule over one of the seven heavens (viewed as being spherical and concentrically stacked inside each other like a Russian doll, with the Earth in the middle), one can imagine this as a chain running from the center of the Earth, through the sky, then up through each of the seven heavens and all the way up to the Pleroma on the outside, where the real “Father ” resides.

Hammer-Purgstall ’s reference to “the gods ’ chain in Homer ” points to The Iliad , where Zeus posits a challenge to the other gods to assert his superiority over them. He says:

Try me and find out for yourselves. Hang me a golden chain from heaven, and lay hold of it all of you, gods and goddesses together—tug as you will, you will not drag Zeus the supreme counselor from heaven to earth; but were I to pull at it myself I should draw you up with earth and sea into the bargain, then would I bind the chain about some pinnacle of Olympus and leave you all dangling in the mid firmament. So far am I above all others either of gods or men.

If you were to try to connect the Gnostic Hermetic chain concept with the

chain of the gods, you might say that Zeus, as the Demiurge, tried to pretend that he was in the highest sphere, controlling everything below with his chain, but the Gnostics believed there was a higher sphere above him, and a higher power than his. Indeed, someone did connect the concepts already. In 1723, a book called Aurea Catena Homeri was published, edited by Anton Josef Kirchweger. It was an influential alchemical and Hermetic text that was specifically about this subject. It even features a diagram that shows his interpretation of the chain that runs through the universe.

However, the real clue comes from the one most detailed versions of the picture of Mete holding the chains, which is described but strangely not depicted in Hammer-Purgstall ’s book, in which we see what the chains are hanging from. A line drawing of it can be found in Thomas Wright ’s Worship of the Generative Powers , and we actually discovered the physical object it came from at the British Museum, as we describe in the final chapter. At the top of each chain, respectively, we see an inverted moon and an inverted sun. (You can tell they are inverted because each one has a face). Between her feet there is a skull. Perhaps this shows Mete actually using these chains —the chains by which the Archons bind us to our fates —to actually pull the Sun and Moon down from the sky. Maybe it represents the destruction of the universe—dethroning the Archons, and making the heavens fall. Recall the message that he found on one of the artifacts: “The distinguished charity of Mete uproots the enemy. ” The enemy, of course, was the Demiurge, and the universe that he created.

Another set of images presented by Hammer-Purgstall contains other clues as to what this ritual might be. We have the one in which the penis is going into the womb/vase, above which there is an upright moon with a face. To the right, on the other side of a figure sitting on an eagle, a child emerges from another vessel, above which there is an upright sun. Would it be wrong to suppose that this represents the insemination of a womb at night, and the birth of a child during the day?

Perhaps, then, the image of the woman pouring water on the seven candles of the menorah is actually meant to represent the counting of seven days after the child ’s birth. On the eighth day, of course, a child from a normal family would have been either circumcised (if male and Jewish), or baptized (if Christian). But in this case, maybe it was more like with the heretics of the city of Orleans, and the child was baptized instead with fire.

As it turns out, this is exactly one of the things that the Templars were actually accused of —although we have no proof that any of them ever confessed to it. According to Jules Michelet ’s History of France, Volume 1 , published in 1860 (and drawing on the Chroniques Francaises de Saint-Denys, compiled during the Templar trials):

Baphomet, in Greek, (after, it is true, a very doubtful Greek etymology,) is the God who baptizes; the Spirit, he of whom it is written, “He shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost and with fire. ” (St. Matthew , iii.11.) He was to the Gnostics, the Paraclete, who descended on the Apostles in the shape of “cloven tongues like as of fire. ” In fact, the Gnostic baptism was with fire. Perhaps, we must see an allusion to some ceremony of the kind in the reports spread among the people against the Templars, qu ’un enfant nouveau engendre d ’un Templier et d ’une pucelle estoit sacree et ointe leur idole. (that a new-born infant, begotten of a Templar and a maid, was cooked and roasted by the fire, and all the grease roasted out, and their idol consecrated and anointed with it.) … Might not this pretended idol have been a representation of the Paraclete, whose festival, that of

Pentecost, was the highest solemnity of the Temple?

So could this be the Baptism of Wisdom —a ritual sex orgy that vicariously unites the parted demon lovers, Samael and Lilith, and produces a child whose sacrifice is somehow supposed to “bring down the heavens ” and hasten the Apocalypse, just like the union of Samael and Lilith is supposed to cause. The participants must have felt “immersed ” in a form of hidden wisdom that they saw as the “Holy Spirit, ” but which seems to be the knowledge of chaos and death. Perhaps they felt “immersed ” because their own souls were actually pulled over to the Abyss for that time, to make room for the invading demon spirits to occupy —a sensation often reported by those who claim to have suffered demonic possession, and supposedly for that very reason.

This fiery baptism, in which, it seems, they may have cremated infants, probably represented to them the universal fire that many Gnostics (starting with John the Baptist himself), and many Jews and Christians as well, believed would bring an end to this fallen realm. Some Gnostics thought that this fire would burn up the ignorant rabble, preserving only the wise elect. Actually, catastrophes involving both fire and water were envisioned as being involved in the world ’s end (which reminds us of the Simonian baptism ritual, of both fire and water.) In Orpheus the Fisher by Robert Eisler, the author argues that John the Baptist was meant to be seen like a second Noah, baptizing with water just like God baptized the Earth in Noah ’s day. In Luke 17:26 (KJV), Jesus talks about his Second Coming at the End Times, declaring that, “And as it was in the days of Noe, so shall it be also in the days of the Son of man. ”But just a couple of lines later, in 17:28-30, Jesus also prophesies a fiery destruction that is to come:

Likewise also as it was in the days of Lot; they did eat, they drank, they bought, they sold, they planted, they builded;

But the same day that Lot went out of Sodom it rained fire and brimstone from heaven, and destroyed them all.

Even thus shall it be in the day when the Son of man is revealed.

This fire and water symbolism also corresponds to lunar and solar symbolism. The Moon is usually associated with water (as it is associated with mutability and fluidity). The Sun, for obvious reasons, is easily associated with fire. So that picture of Mete pulling down the Sun and Moon could also be showing her bringing down fire and water from Heaven. Hammer-Purgstall plainly associated the image of fiery baptism that he discovered with an apocalypse of flame. He wrote:

The ritual fire, having been lit (according to Tertullian), signifies the mystic pyre of universal conflagration, which the Gnostics adopted from the Stoics, and through which they taught that at the end of the world, everything will be dissolved.

The concept of the destruction of life on Earth by both fire and water was described by alchemist Fulcanelli in The Mystery of the Cathedrals as the “double cataclysm. ” He chose to interpret the letters INRI —often written above the head of Jesus when he is shown hanging on the cross, and usually taken to stand for Iesus Nazarenus Rex Iudeorum (Jesus of Nazareth, King of the Jews), as a covert allusion to the words Igne Natura Renovatur Integra (By fire nature is renewed whole). He goes on:

For it is by fire and in fire that our hemisphere will soon be tried. And just as, by means of fire, gold is separated from impure metals, so, Scripture says, the good will be separated from the wicked on the great Day of Judgment.

Interestingly, Midsummer Day, on which the feast of John the Baptist is celebrated, is said by Robert Graves in The White Goddess (citing Frazer ’s Golden Bough) to have “always ” been “a water as well as a fire festival. ” Frazer also said that the bonfires of these festivals were specifically called “fire of heaven. ”

Returning to the subject of the Baptism of Wisdom rite, the actual production of a child through ritual orgy, to be used for further ritual magic purposes, may have been hinted at with the story of the Templar who had sex with the dead body of the girl named Yse, resulting in the birth of a “son ” in the form of a talking magic skull. Perhaps this is represented by the skull beneath Mete ’s feet in the picture of her drawing down the heavens. Maybe they even believed that children produced this way did not possess real souls, but rather were animated merely by the essences of the heavenly bodies that they had drawn down into them during the rituals, so that, with their sacrifices, they really weren ’t killing babies (in their minds), but rather subduing the Archons.

If one wonders how on Earth one could believe that bringing spirits down from stars and planets in a sex rite and entrapping them in the bodies of the resulting offspring could in any way cause the end of the world, recall that the Flood was purportedly caused by angels breeding hybrid children with humans — fallen angels led by the goat demon Azazel.

Now it should be noted, of course, that while there were Gnostic groups that seemed truly motivated to offend God and corrupt his creation, not all Gnostics were really against the material universe, and some were only so in part. Kyle Fraser, in his paper “Baptized in Gnosis: The spiritual alchemy of Zosimos of Panopolis, ” is careful to acknowledge the differences between the Hermetic and Sethian Gnostic views on spiritual alchemy and cosmic redemption:

For the Hermetic tradition the realization of gnosis does not imply the rejection of the material universe; gnosis is described instead as a noetic transformation, from the embodied and finite perspective to a transcendent perspective in which the outer cosmos is perceived within the mind. As Tat [the son of Hermes] exclaims in a visionary moment: “I am in heaven, in earth, in water and air; I am in animals and plants; in the womb, before the womb, and every the womb — everywhere. ” (CH XIII 1.1). The Sethian notion of rupture between the created world and the spiritual universe is nowhere to be found in the Hermetica. This distinction gives us a clearer insight into what it means to speak of alchemy as a properly Hermetic science: the phases of alchemy seem to reflect the phases of Hermetic initiation, from an initial blackening, an experience of spiritual disorientation and imprisonment, to a higher realization of the unity of spirit and matter, a gnosis or enlightenment symbolized for the alchemists as Gold.

We do see many anti-cosmic sentiments expressed in The Corpus Hermeticum . But we can also see this anti-cosmic dualism as being simply a stage of initiation, preliminary to the rebirth of the spirit and the fresh view of creation that the initiate would experience later. Gregory Shaw describes it thusly in Taking the Shape of the Gods: A Theurgic Reading of Hermetic Rebirth :

From a theurgic perspective, dualism and acosmicism mark a preliminary stage of the initiate ’s experience followed by a monist or non-dualist embrace of the entire cosmos, one that marks the culmination of rebirth and immortalization. The reversal of sequence that I propose reflects a reversal of orientation: when the initiate ’s particular and mortal perspective is replaced by the universal perspective of a god . I would argue that this is the goal of both theurgy and Hermetism.

Presumably, not all Templars wanted to bring about cosmic destruction (and most likely not all of them participated in the sick rituals we have described). Though some Gnostic groups seem to have done similar ceremonies, and did have a nihilistic, anti-creation worldview, we know that not all Gnostics wanted to see the universe annihilated. We are sure that most of the Hermeticists did not have this worldview. Even most avowed Satanists today would disagree.

There have only been a few throughout the ages who have both known about and embraced these doctrines. Others have embraced some of them but did not know about the rest. Still others knew about these traditions, but chose to pursue their own ideas, or other interpretations, instead. Most Hermeticists from pre-Christian times would undoubtedly be appalled, for instance, by the orgies, excesses, and blasphemies of the rites of the modern Ordo Templi Orientis, with its “Gnostic Mass ” invoking the words “Baphomet ” and “Baptism of Wisdom ” as the congregants consume semen and menstrual blood before a naked lady sitting on an altar. (The OTO members also eagerly anticipate of the kingdom of the Antichrist and the death of most of humanity.)

So although we do not wish to paint all occultists with this brush, we feel that these destructive rites and ideas are an inseparable part of the chaotic underground stream of Baphometic wisdom, and all of its tributaries. We will provide more evidence to this effect, particularly with regard to the Templars, before the end of this book. Next, though, we will examine a symbol used by the Templars that makes their interest in Gnosticism rather clear: the enigmatic anguipede known as “Abraxas. ”

Chapter 8: Abraxas: Secret of the Temple

This is a god whom ye knew not, for mankind forgot it. We name it by its name ABRAXAS. It is more indefinite still than god and devil.

—Carl Jung, The Seven Sermons to the Dead

The chimera figure of Abraxas (pronounced “ah-BRAKS-us ”) seems to have greatly influenced the Templar concept of Baphomet. Abraxas seems to have played a central role in the Gnostic cult of Basilides in the second century AD. Basilides was an Alexandrian mystic and teacher who for all intents and purposes can only be learned about from the Church Fathers who hated him. He is variously depicted as a disciple of either Menander or Saturninus (both of whom belonged to the schools of Simon Magus in Syria and Alexandria), or as an interpreter of St. Peter named Glaucias. It is interesting to note that Basilides is said to come out of either of these two supposedly diametrically-opposed traditions (those of Simon Magus and St. Peter).

Basilides was more than likely the first major Gnostic writer who viewed himself as a Christian theologian (or the first major Gnostic to write voluminous commentary on the Biblical canon). But unlike his predecessor Simon Magus, he rejected the Old Testament. (Simon seemed to favor an esoteric interpretation of the Samaritan Torah, as we mentioned earlier.) Basilides ’ system seems like an attempt to reconcile the New Testament, Egyptian Gnosticism, and Platonic philosophy (particularly of the Aristotle tradition) with his own mystical revelations. We know from the Church propaganda minister Eusebius that Basilides wrote 24 commentaries, called Exegetica , on the Gospels, only fragments of which now remain. He also wrote hymns and odes to his congregation, all of which are now lost to us.

According to preserved fragments of his writings quoted by the Church Fathers, like Clement of Alexandria, Irenaeus, and Hippolytus, Basilides taught that there was a form of reincarnation (the Platonic metempsychosis) and karma. He may have been influenced by Buddhism. He saw spirit and matter as opposing natures, while passions were caused by spirit attachments in the human soul, which Basilides ’ successor, his son Isidore, likened it to the Trojan horse. The only way to tame this inferior element in man, Basilides felt, was to strengthen the rational part of him. He placed a great deal of emphasis on faith, just as much as Marcion and Paul did. He was also an ascetic, unlike many of his Gnostic compatriots. Faith and asceticism were, in his mind, the only means by which one could disentangle the soul from matter.

Suffering was not considered something to be escaped, but rather a

blessing, the purpose of which was to turn the spiritual essence away from its entanglement in matter. Faith was an inborn ascent of the soul for Basilides, and is equated by him with Gnosis. It wasn 't a matter of instruction or indoctrination. It was a sort of nature. Perhaps for Basilides, faith and knowledge were the same thing. Basilides, therefore, had a lot in common with other Gnostics and even with the later Protestant John Calvin, as they all shared the idea of predestined salvation. The "three natures " doctrine attests to this.

The elect were those who had the capacity for faith. They considered themselves "strangers " or "aliens " to the world, longing for the transcendent and salvation in Christ. According to Epiphanius in Panarion (24: 5:2), those who feel perfectly at home in the world are "swine and dogs, " while "We are the 'men. ' " They believed that this was the meaning behind the words of Jesus in Matthew 7:6, "Cast not thy pearls before swine, neither give that which is holy unto dogs. " Birger Pearson, in his book Ancient Gnosticism , reflects on this "Gnostic elitism " exemplified by the cult of Basilides, similar to what is written in Matthew 22:14 about "many " being "called, " but few "chosen ":

Another matter of dispute in scholarship is Basilides ' doctrine of human nature and his classification of some people (that is, Gnostic Christians) as elect, over against the rest of humanity. A dominical saying is cited by Irenaeus as current among the Basilidians: "Few people can know these things—only one in a thousand, and two in ten thousand " (Against Heresies 1.24.6; compare The Gospel of Thomas 23)

Like many of Basilides ' Gnostic contemporaries, he too rejected the Orthodox doctrine of the carnal resurrection and the idea that the spirit only was worthy of salvation, while the flesh was worthless. Many Church Fathers used the Gnostic stance on the Resurrection as proof that Basilides was a libertine, but judging from the evidence provided by our favorite heresy hunters, and as we said before, he was very much a strict ascetic.

It is to Basilides ’ favorite symbol of Abraxas that we now turn our

attention. Abraxas is a Gnostic name that appears in many ancient texts. It should be noted that “Abrasax ” is actually the more “official ” spelling of this contradictory but powerful deity ’s name. The word doesn't have a definition in the traditional sense, but rather a mystical meaning. The seven letters that make up the name are meant to represent the seven planets known in antiquity. Abraxas is a complicated figure whose image has changed with the passing of time. But as far as we can tell, originally he was the head of 365 other spiritual beings of Gnostic lore.

Along with the lion-headed Chnoubis, Abraxas was considered to be roughly equivalent to the Agathodaemon, the “good spirit ” of fortune and health revered by the ancient Egyptians and Greeks (mentioned in a previous chapter in relation to the student of Hermes Trismegistus with the same name). They were all often represented as serpents. Abraxas, according to Gnostic myth, was a redeemed Archon who rose above the Hebdomad to rule over it as an intercessory figure between the Pleroma and the world of matter. He became a figure of veneration for many Gnostics, including those who belonged to Basilides ' cultus . This astral god was feared by those who believed in him because they thought that he controlled the universe and their fate.

Abraxas was most often depicted as an "anguipede " (having two serpents for legs) with a human male torso and the head of a cock. We know this because of all the ancient amulets with his image engraved on them. These amulets or gemstones were used as "tokens " by the Gnostics themselves to propagate their ideas, a sort of advertising for their mythos. Edward P. Butler, in his book Esoteric City: Theological Hermeneutics in Plato 's Republic , explains what a token is in the context of magic and the Neoplatonic philosophy of Proclus, which is closer to Gnosticism than most scholars admit:

Proclus explains that "symbols [symbola] are not imitations of those things of which they are symbols "; and thus "If a poet is inspired and manifests by means of symbols " — literally "tokens, " synthemata , a technical term in theurgy — "the truth concerning beings, " or if, using science, he reveals to us the very order of realities, this poet is neither an imitator, nor can be refuted by the arguments [in the text].

There are some similarities between Abraxas and the anguipede giants of the ancient Greeks. These are those featured in the Titanomachy, who were birthed by the titans Gaia and Ouranos in retaliation against Zeus and the Olympian gods for consigning them to Tartarus. They undoubtedly connect to the Nephilim giants of Genesis Chapter 6 and The First Book of Enoch (who owed half their DNA to fallen angels that were later associated with the Serpent of Eden). The various giant children of Gaia (such as the Titans, Oceanus, and Tethys) are naturally associated with the Earth and its waters. In Antiquities of the Jews (1.3), Flavius Josephus confirms that the Jews indeed knew their own scriptures mirrored or mimicked Greek myth:

For many angels of God accompanied with women, and begat sons that proved unjust, and despisers of all that was good, on account of the confidence they had in their own strength; for the tradition is, that these men did what resembled the acts of those whom the Grecians call giants.

These giants may also be regarded essentially as demonic beings of chaos, similar to the Asuras of Hinduism. There are Etruscan artworks and gems which depict Zeus smiting a snake-footed giant from the sixth century BCE and that have served as a forerunner to the writings of Pseudo-Apollodorus and Ovid ’s Metamorphoses , as detailed by Rachel Dodd in Morphing Monsters: The Evolution of Anguipede Giants . In this paper, Dodd attributes the snakey characteristic of the giants to that of Typhon, usually described as Gaia ’s youngest monstrous anguipede son, who is considered by mythologists to be interchangeable with the evil anguipede Seth, the brother of Osiris in the Egyptian pantheon. He also has strong connections with Abraxas as well as Ialdabaoth.

Typhon was an anguipede, both born from Tartarus and Gaia. Typhon is also closely associated with the giants and is sometimes considered the reason why giants became anguipedes in mythology. Yet whenever this is mentioned, it is often only in passing or within a footnote. Ustinova explains the adaptation of snake-legs as a conflation of the giants with the Titans, and moreover of the Titans with Typhon (all of which are children of Gaia). Yet, if the giants received snake-legs from Typhon through the Titans, would not more images depict the Titans as anguipedes as well? In fact, current scholarly theory connects the archaeological evidence of a Typhon vase in Etruria with the adaptation of snake- legged giants, which also appeared first in Etruria.

However, there is another myth regarding giants that may figure into the symbolism of Abraxas ’ snake legs, in this instance from Judeo-Christian tradition. Regarding the giants spawned by the Watchers, The Zohar (Shelah Lecha 160b, from Volume 5 of the Soncino Edition) tells us:

They lived to a great age until at last half their body became paralyzed while the other half remained vigorous. They would then take a certain herb and throw it into their mouths and die, and because they thus killed themselves they were called “Refaim. ”

It makes sense, then, to symbolize the wise elders of this race as having

serpents for legs, as they could no longer walk upright.

Moreover, there are scriptures stating that during the time in which the Watchers were breeding the Nephilim giants with humans, different species of animals were being mixed together as well —just as Oannes had said that such things existed before the present stage of creation. (Think of the Greek and Persian myths of Satyrs, Manticores, Griffins, Minotaurs, Centaurs, Chimeras, etc.) As The Book of Jasher 4:18 tells us:

And their judges and rulers went to the daughters of men and took their wives by force from their husbands according to their choice, and the sons of men in those days took from the cattle of the earth, the beasts of the field and the fowls of the air, and taught the mixture of animals of one species with the other, in order therewith to provoke the Lord; and God saw the whole earth and it was corrupt, for all flesh had corrupted its ways on the earth, all men and all animals.

Naturally, there is a direct parallel to the Genesis account (emphasis added):

And God looked upon the earth, and, behold, it was corrupt; for all flesh had corrupted his way upon the earth . And God said unto Noah, The end of all flesh is come before me; for the earth is filled with violence through them; and, behold, I will destroy them with the earth.

In the Dead Sea Scrolls, The Book of Giants (1Q23 Frag. 1 + 6) tells us that the Watchers mated not only with human females, but animals as well, spawning hybrid monsters:

[… two hundred] donkeys, two hundred asses, two hundred … rams of the] flock, two hundred goats, two hundred [… beast of the] field from every animal, from every [bird …] […] for miscegenation […]

Later in the same text (4Q531 Frag. 2), we are told that the fruits of these unions were freaks of nature:

[…] they defiled […] 2[… they begot] giants and monsters […] 3[…] they begot, and, behold, all [the earth was corrupted]… .

“Monsters ” seems to be the term used specifically for these animal-angel hybrids, while the word “giants ” is reserved for the human-angel hybrids. We must presume that, being partially angelic in origin, these monsters could very well have been sentient and conscious, perhaps even with the ability to speak. This would explain why later in The Book of Giants the monsters and giants are described as though they are political partners. Could it be that figures like Baphomet and Abraxas are emblems of chimeric union between angel and beast?

As we have noted, the Archons of Gnosticism also seem to have chimeric qualities since they are often depicted as animal-headed angels, much like the gods of Egypt. Just like Abraxas, there are certain Scythian goddesses who are portrayed with snake legs as well, which serve as forerunners for the “Melusines ” of European folklore. These Melusine images (showing a woman with two serpents for legs) show up on heraldic coats of arms throughout the continent.

The figure of Melusine is based on a character from the mythology of European aristocracy. She is said to have been either the daughter of Godfroi de Bouillon (Advocatus of the Holy Sepulcher), and cousin of Hughes de Payens (founder of the Templars), or of Godfroi ’s successor Baldwin II (who took the title “King of Jerusalem ”). The latter is probably more likely to be Melusine ’s true father, as the research of the Plant Family History Group ’s website (plant- fhg.org.uk) shows that her mythic character is based on Baldwin II ’s daughter Melisande, who married Fulk V, an ancestor of the Plantagenet kings of England (heirs also to the Scottish House of Stuart).

The myth surrounding Melusine is that her mother was a she-demon (clearly a Lilith character). Whenever she bathed, and whenever she witnessed the miracle of the Eucharist, her legs would turn into serpents. Therefore she did not attend mass and would never allow her husband to watch her bathe. When Fulk finally discovered the truth about her, she shrieked like a banshee, sprouted demonic wings, and flew away. This may be the meaning behind the statement once made by Richard the Lionheart, a Plantagenet king, about his own family lineage, declaring, “From the Devil we came, and to the Devil we shall return! ” Thus, the Melusine symbol, though sometimes altered to look more

benign, with two fish tails instead of snakes (like the Starbucks logo), was originally an anguipede meant to symbolize the serpent seed that slumbers in the blood of Europe ’s royalty. It is also sometimes combined with the fertility symbol called, in Gaelic, “Sheela Na-Gig ” (though they are found well beyond the British Isles). Sheela is a female gargoyle with spread legs displaying her vagina (a female version of the Priapian phallus talismans). In the Scottish monastery of St. Jacob in Regensburg, Germany, there is an image of Melusine with fish tails for legs, showing off her vagina like Sheela Na-Gig.

Since the snake is an animal that slithers on the ground, it was viewed as possessing strong chthonic features, associated with the Earth and the underworld. At the same time, giants were also connected to the underworld, both in the ancient Greek pagan and the Judeo-Christian traditions. Therefore, the snake legs of Abraxas embody and encompass not only Heaven, but also Hell. (Remember, as we mentioned before Severus taught that “man is divine from the navel up, and the creature of the Devil from the navel down. ”) Abraxas being an anguipede giant with the head of a cock would make sense considering that the Hebrew root word “GBR ” (GiBoR), translated in the King James Version of Genesis as “giant, ” specifically means “warrior, ” while “GeBoR ” refers to a rooster.

The form of Abraxas is frequently said to include that of a basilisk —either his bottom, snakey half, or his whole body (depending on which definition of basilisk you embrace). According to the Encyclopedia of Ancient Deities by Charles Russel Coulter and Patricia Turner, a basilisk (a word meaning “little king ”) is a:

… deified creature. This frightening-looking lizard is able to run on water. Those who annoy it can be frozen in their tracks by its angry glare. It is generally found by those who are not looking for it in the inaccessible regions of the Swiss Alps and the African desert. It has the body and wings of a dragon and the head of a serpent. It is usually shown with its tail in its mouth. Sometimes it is depicted as half cock and half snake. Basilisk is connected with the Gnostic Abraxas in that Agathodemon or “good spirit ” was said to have hatched by a cock from a serpent ’s egg.

This fierce and terrifying creature goes by many other names as well. The shield that he holds could be connected to the goat-skinned impenetrable Aegis shield of Zeus and Athena mentioned earlier, emblazoned with the snakey head of the gorgon that can kill people who look at it by turning them to stone (which we also compared to the identical powers of the Arabic mythological creature Al- Ghul). This deadly aspect of the gaze of the basilisk (more than just causing mere muscle paralysis) is more commonly reported, for example, by Pliny the Elder (in his Natural History), and by Albertus Magnus (in his De animalibus). Also, just as Medusa was killed by Perseus, the basilisk is vulnerable to its own gaze, and can be killed by forcing it to look into a mirror. Both Albertus Magnus and an alchemist named Theophilus Presbyter stated that, once dead, the basilisk could be used to transmute metals, either with its blood (according to the latter), or by its ashes (according to the former).

In Thomas Wright ’s The Worship of Generative Powers , there are drawings that depict a variation on the chicken-headed and winged basilisk with an elongated penis for a tail. Like Abraxas images, these were often placed on amulets to protect their owners from the “evil eye. ” Thomas Wright claims that these are all votives belonging to the cult of Priapus, stating:

The first of these is the figure of a double phallus. It is sculptured on the lintel of one of the vomitories, or issues, of the second range of seats of the Roman amphitheatre, near the entrance-gate which looks to the south. The double and the triple phallus are very common among the small Roman bronzes, which appear to have served as amulets and for other similar purposes. In the latter, one phallus usually serves as the body, and is furnished with legs, generally those of the goat; a second occupies the usual place of this organ; and a third appears in that of a tail.

The mythicist Acharya S. (a.k.a. DM Murdock) has also written on Priapus- like images that are very close to those of Abraxas. At freethoughtnation.com, in the article entitled “The phallic ‘Savior of the World ’ hidden in the Vatican, ” she points out that there is a sculpted bust, supposedly of St. Peter, that depicts a man with a rooster ’s head and an erect phallus for a nose, and which was once on display in the Vatican. Acharya S quotes Barbara Walker from The Woman ’s Dictionary of Symbols and Sacred Objects :

It is no coincidence that “cock ” is slang for “penis. ” The cock was a phallic totem in Roman and medieval sculptures showing cocks somehow transformed into, or supporting, human penises. Roman carvings of disembodied phalli often gave them the legs or wings of cocks. Hidden in the treasury of the Vatican is a bronze image of a cock with the head of a penis on the torso of a man, the pedestal inscribed “The Savior of the World. ”

Acharya S also quotes from Richard Payne Knight ’s A Discourse on the Worship of Priapus , which talks about this image:

… [T]he celebrated bronze in the Vatican has the male organs of generation placed upon the head of a cock, the emblem of the sun, supported by the neck and shoulders of a man. In this composition they represented the generative power of the [Eros], the Osiris, Mithras, or Bacchus, whose centre is the sun… . The inscription on the pedestal [says] … The Saviour of the World … a title always venerable under whatever image it be presented [with].

Acharya S found a rare actual photograph of the “Saviour of the World ” presented as an image of Priapus in Otto Augustus Wall ’s book Sex and Sex Worship (Phallic Worship): A Scientific Treatise on Sex, where it states that it was “found in an ancient Greek temple… . ” She also quotes an article titled “Priapus Gallinaceus: The Role of the Cock in Fertility and Eroticism in Classical Antiquity and the Middle Ages, ” by Dr. Lorrayne Baird, where it says:

This object was published under papal and royal authority, exhibited for a time in the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries, and is now said to be held inaccessible in the secret collections of the Vatican. During the public life of this bronze, officials disagreed upon the probity of the exhibit. One offended cardinal requested that the object be removed… .

… [T]he Vatican Saviour-as-Phallic-cock was a scandalous satire on early Christians.

Obviously, this cock-headed imagery corresponds greatly with that of Abraxas. Much like the twin-snaked caduceus that serves as the phallus of Eliphas Levi ’s Baphomet, the cock-head of Abraxas represented not only enlightenment but also sexual energy.

Abraxas was frequently associated with the Gnostic figure of Ialdabaoth, usually shown as a lion-headed serpent. This ancient image is first found at the start of the Christian era, sometimes depicted as crowned or surrounded by a halo or streaming rays, indicating its inherent solar and magical nature. The actual name for the character is “Khnoubis ” or “Chnoubis, ” and it can be found carved on old gems and amulets. Hebraic names such as “IAO, ” “Adonai, ” “Sabaoth, ” and the Gnostic corruption of “Ialdabaoth ” are also found on these tokens for superstitious purposes. The Chnoubis figure turns up fairly regularly on these Gnostic gems, especially with the healing formulae for stomach and abdominal issues. It turns up in a few spells in The Greek Magical Papyri as well.

According to Atilio Mastrocinque in Jewish Magic and Gnosticism , the Chnoubis-Ialdabaoth figure originates in the syncretistic Jewish-Gnostic-Egyptian context of the Jewish Temple in Leontopolis. It is sometimes linked with the satirical god of Lucian, Glykon. Chnoubis was considered synonymous with the Gnostic deities Abraxas and Ophis, since the image shows up often along with these gods on amulets and coins.

The sixth-century philosopher Damascius Diodochos recounts some Orphic teachings, and describes Chronos (the Greek god of time) as having both the head of a lion and of a bull in Problems and Solutions Concerning First Principles :

But as for the third principle after the two, it arose from these, I mean from water and earth, and it is a serpent with the heads of a lion and a bull grown upon it, and in the middle the countenance of a god, and it has wings on its shoulders, and the same god is called Ageless Time [Aion], and Heracles.

However, this is a late source, so we are simply left to guess if any of this was believed in the ancient world. The scholar Franz Cumont, in The Mysteries of Mithra , placed Aion, a lion-headed and winged god enveloped by a serpent (a figure called a “leontocephaline ”), as Chronos, who emerged from the primordial chaos and in turn generated Heaven and Earth, like the Orphic deity Phanes. Aion here is much like the Demiurge of Gnosticism.

Ancient magical texts such as The Greek Magical Papyri often invoke images of Chnoubis, which were used for the purpose of warding off malevolent demonic influences, to banish and overcome the cosmic rulers that guard each succeeding section of the “astral realm. ” The Greek Magical Papyri also provides the means for summoning demons for various practical purposes, such as making thievery invisible to others, sending dreams to others via demons, winning favors from both men and women, inflaming lust in the person of desire, punishing enemies, defeating rivals, etc. It is obvious that these spells were used to achieve deeply personal goals for the individual.

If this seems to reflect a sense of moral ambiguity, in a way, that ’s true.

Like Baphomet, Abraxas is a transcendental symbol linking light and darkness, consciousness and unconsciousness. In his Hellenistic form, he is already a chimeric emblem of the unification of opposites, which was reflected several hundred years later in Carl Jung ’s writings on Abraxas. The figure ’s cuirass is that of a Roman-Mithraic soldier, perhaps indicating the militant character of the God of Israel, in his role as the “Lord of Hosts, ” being represented as “Sabaoth. ” To Jung, Abraxas symbolized the wholeness of the soul when repaired from the fragmentation of creation, bringing the end to the schizophrenia of dualism. In Hermann Hesse ’s Demian: The Story of Emil Sinclair ’s Youth , Abraxas is described as functioning in the same way. In Systema Munditotius , Jung writes that Abraxas is also an emblem of the lower, mundane world, guarded over by the Demiurge:

He represents Dominus Mundi , the Lord of the physical world and is a world creator of a polarized nature. From him sprouts the tree of life with the title Vita , life. The lower world of Abraxas is characterized by the number of the natural man, five… . The accompanying animals of the natural world are a devilish monster and a worm, these point to death and rebirth. So the bottom of the Munditoitius is the natural human being, the instinctual Abraxas, this world. And this is in a strong tension and contrast to the upper world.

In the Middle Ages, Abraxas was also known as the king of demons, a title also shared in cabalistic demonology with Asmodeus, a son of Lilith and Samael. Abraxas is in some ways similar to the Hindu Narasimha, the lion-headed avatar of Vishnu, also the latter is thought of as benevolent. (However, Narasimha is considered fearsome by other demons, and is often depicted as disemboweling them on his lap!) In the Dictionnaire Infernal by Jacques Collin de Plancy (1818), Abraxas is spelled “Abracas. ” He is listed here as one of the many demons to be used for the purpose of evocation, similar to what was said about him in The Greek Magical Papyri . In many Gnostic texts, the Demiurge was associated with the element of fire, and bore many chimeric qualities, as The Apocryphon of John describes him:

And when she saw (the consequences of) her desire, it changed into a form of a lion-faced serpent. And its eyes were like lightning fires which flash. She cast it away from her, outside that place, that no one of the immortal ones might see it, for she had created it in ignorance.

In The Pistis Sophia , the Demiurge isn ’t by any means a handsome fellow, being depicted as a fiery yet dark lion-faced demon. He resides within the chaotic underworld of Hades where he and his forty-nine demons torture wicked souls in boiling rivers of pitch-black darkness. Also, in The Gospel of Judas , Ialdabaoth dwells in Hades with “Nebro ” (meaning “rebel angel ”) and his other henchman. He is said to be one of the twelve angels to come “into being [to] rule over chaos and the [underworld]. ” Also, his “face flashed with fire and whose appearance was defiled with blood. ” In the Manichaean Kephalaia (30.34-31.1), it describes the “King of Those of Darkness ” like this:

His head [is lion-faced, his] hands and feet are demon-faced, [his] shoulders are eagle-faced, while his belly [is dragon-faced,] (and) his tail is fish-faced.

In verse 280 of the Right Ginza of the Mandaeans, there is a very similar description of Satan as well, which is also closer to the Sethian Ialdabaoth, except for the fact that he has angelic wings, tortoise legs and demonic feet. The chimera found in the Homer ’s Iliad was also described with similar features as:

… a thing of immortal make, not human, lion-fronted and snake behind, a goat in the middle, and snorting out the breath of the terrible flame of bright fire.

In the context of the Templars, Abraxas seems to have the most in common with the archangel Michael, as we will explore later. Under the name of “Iao, ” Abraxas appears in a few instances throughout the Nag Hammadi codices, in such Sethian texts such as The Great Book of the Invisible Spirit , The Apocalypse of Adam , and Zostrianos . In these he is basically a minor aeon or angel that works in tandem with Sophia and the “four spiritual lights ” to rectify the error of our universe. The sixth-century author John the Lydian wrote in De Mensibus , 83:

… The Roman Varro, when discussing him, says that among the Chaldaeans, in their mystical [writings], he is called “Iao, ” meaning “mentally perceived light ” in the language of the Phoenicians, as Herennius

[Philo] says. And he is frequently called “Sabaoth, ” meaning the one who is “above the seven heavenly spheres ” —that is, the creator.

Abraxas was in many ways interchangeable with Sabaoth, who, according to the Gnostic mythology presented in On the Origin of the World , was the son and offspring of Ialdabaoth. In that text, he rebels against his father in a great war, repents of his “sins, ” and sides with his grandmother, Sophia-Achamoth. He is then elevated “above the seventh heaven ” to become the “Ogdoad ” (the eighth power), and enthroned, surrounded by ministering cherubim within a mansion that is “huge, magnificent, seven times as great as all those that exist in the seven heavens. ” The idea of Sabaoth being redeemed is very similar to the account we just mentioned where the Archons and Abraxas were enlightened by the Gospel.

However, there is a lot of conflicting information about the nature of Abraxas. There were supposedly a total of 365 heavens in Basilides ’ cosmology, and Abraxas was the chief ruler over them. It doesn ’t explicitly say that Abraxas was an evil Archon like Ialdabaoth, however. The ruler over Basilides ’ 365th and final heaven was the Jewish god, the Demiurge shared by all major Gnostic systems, and he was indeed evil. Irenaeus and Hippolytus say that Abraxas was the chief Archon of Basilides ’ cosmology, not the supreme god, whereas Tertullian says that Abraxas and the highest god are the same. Most scholars think that Tertullian was dependent on Irenaeus and misread what he said. In Against Heresies (1.24.3-4.7), Irenaeus lays out Basilides ’ system (which isn ’t particularly dualist) pertaining to Abraxas ’ domain:

They make out the local position of the three hundred and sixty-five heavens in the same way as do mathematicians. For, accepting the theorems of these latter, they have transferred them to their own type of doctrine. They hold that their chief is Abraxas; and, on this account, that word contains in itself the numbers amounting to three hundred and sixty- five.

Then other powers, being formed by emanation from these, created another heaven similar to the first; and in like manner, when others, again, had been formed by emanation from them, corresponding exactly to those above them, these, too, framed another third heaven; and then from this third, in downward order, there was a fourth succession of descendants; and so on, after the same fashion, they declare that more and more principalities and angels were formed, and three hundred and sixty-five heavens. Wherefore the year contains the same number of days in conformity with the number of the heavens.

Those angels who occupy the lowest heaven, that, namely, which is visible to us, formed all the things which are in the world, and made allotments among themselves of the earth and of those nations which are upon it. The chief of them is he who is thought to be the God of the Jews; and inasmuch as he desired to render the other nations subject to his own people, that is, the Jews, all the other princes resisted and opposed him. Wherefore all other nations were at enmity with his nation.

In Refutation of All Heresies , Hippolytus reports that Basilides taught the concept of a non-existent deity. This is similar to what other Gnostics called the “Unknowable Father. ” But this concept seems to refer to a realm of infinite potentiality rather than simply nothing . Abraxas (spelled “Abrasax ” in this instance) is said to be an Archon that exists within the Hebdomad beneath the Ogdoad. He is mentioned as the third of three great Archons. Here are the words of Basilides regarding the non-existent god, as quoted by Hippolytus:

Whatsoever I affirm to have been made [beyond] these, ask no question as to where. For the Seed had all seeds treasured and resting in itself, just as non-existent entities, and which were designed to be produced by a non- existent Deity.

According to Hippolytus, Basilides ’ system began with the non-existent god, from whom came the Seed. From the Seed came the three-fold or triple- sonship (the three natures), the existent cosmos, the Great Archon of the Ogdoad, the Lesser Archon of the Hebdomad, and a peculiar Archon who is said to be the sum of all the powers of the Hebdomad, including the 365 heavens therein: Abrasax (Abraxas). In Refutation of All Heresies (7:10-15) we read:

There existed, he says, in the Seed itself, a Sonship, threefold, in every respect of the same Substance with the non-existent God, and begotten from nonentities, Of this Sonship thus involving a threefold division, one part was refined, another lacking refinement, and another requiring purification.

The refined portion, therefore, in the first place, simultaneously with the earliest deposition of the Seed by the non-existent One, immediately burst forth and went upwards and hurried above from below … and attained, he says, unto him that is nonexistent.

For every nature desires the nonexistent God… . However, each nature desires this after a different mode. The unrefined portion of the Sonship continuing still in the Seed … was not able to hurry upwards. For this portion was much more deficient in the refinement that the Sonship possessed … and was left behind. Therefore the unrefined Sonship equipped itself with some such wing as Plato, the Preceptor of Aristotle, fastens on the soul in his Phaedrus.

That last remark refers to Plato ’s dialogue Phaedrus , where it is said that the soul must acquire “wings ” through the practice of philosophy in order to regain its memory and to return to its original divine estate. This is the Platonic equivalent of Gnostic knowledge. Hippolytus continues:

And Basilides styles such, not a wing, but Holy Spirit; and Sonship invested in this Spirit confers benefits, and receives them in turn… . For the Sonship, carried upwards by the Spirit as by a wing, bears aloft… . And it approaches the refined Sonship, and the non-existent God, even Him who fabricated the world out of nonentities.

Hippolytus tells us about a “third Sonship ” that requires purification from above. This third Sonship is of course, the Great Archon, Abraxas. He is also called the “Head of the World, ” and a master of the air (which sounds similar to “prince of the power of the air, ” a title given to the Devil by Paul in Ephesians 2:2). The text continues:

This Archon, when begotten, raised Himself up and soared aloft, and was carried up entire as far as the firmament. And there He paused, supposing the firmament to be the termination of His ascension and elevation, and considering that there existed nothing at all beyond these.

… He became more wise, more powerful, more comely, more lustrous … pre-eminent for beauty above any entities you could mention with the exception of the Sonship alone, which is still left in the conglomeration of all germs.

For he was not aware that there is a Sonship wiser and more powerful, and better than Himself. Therefore imagining Himself to be Lord, and Governor, and a wise Master Builder, He turns Himself to the work of the creation of every object in the cosmical system.

… [A]nd the Archon caused Him to sit on his right hand. This is, according to these heretics, what is denominated the Ogdoad, where the Great Archon has his throne. The entire celestial creation, then, that is, the Aether, He Himself, the Great Wise Demiurge formed. The Son, however, begotten of this Archon, operates in Him, and offered Him suggestions, being endued with far greater wisdom than the Demiurge Himself.

The account, therefore, which Aristotle has previously rendered concerning the soul and the body, Basilides elucidates as applied to the Great Archon and his Son. For the Archon has generated, according to Basilides, a son; and the soul as an operation and completion, Aristotle asserts to be an entelecheia [an actuality formed from an ideal potential] of a natural organic body. As, therefore, the entelecheia controls the body, so the Son, according to Basilides, controls the God… .

When all objects in the aethereal regions, then, were arranged, again from the conglomeration of all germs another Archon ascended, greater, of course, than all subjacent entities with the exception, however, of the Sonship that had been left behind, but far inferior to the First Archon. And this second Archon is called by them Rhetus ... [and] ... is styled Hebdomad, and this Archon is the manager and fabricator of all subjacent entities. And He has likewise made unto Himself out of the conglomeration of all germs, a son who is more prudent and wise than Himself, similarly to what has been stated to have taken place in the case of the First Archon... .

The Gospel then came, says Basilides, first from the Sonship through the Son, that was seated beside the Archon, to the Archon, and the Archon learned that He was not God of the universe, but was begotten. But ascertaining that He has above Himself the deposited treasure of that Ineffable and Unnamable and Non-existent One, and of the Sonship, He was both converted and filled with terror, when He was brought to understand in what ignorance He was involved.

When, then, the Great Archon had been orally instructed, and every creature of the Ogdoad had been orally instructed and taught, and after the mystery became known to the celestial powers, it was also necessary that afterwards the Gospel should come to the Hebdomad... .

The Son of the Great Archon therefore kindled in the Son of the Archon of the Hebdomad the light which Himself possessed and had kindled from above from the Sonship. And the Son of the Archon of the Hebdomad had radiance imparted to Him, and He proclaimed the Gospel to the Archon of the Hebdomad. And in like manner, according to the previous account, He Himself was both terrified and induced to make confession.

When, therefore, all beings in the Hebdomad had been likewise enlightened, and had the Gospel announced to them; for in these regions of the universe there exist, according to these heretics, creatures infinite in number, viz., Principalities and Powers and Rulers (Ephesians 6:12), in regard of which there is extant among the Basilidians a very prolix and verbose treatise, where they allege that there are three hundred and sixty- five heavens, and that the great Archon of these is Abrasax, from the fact that his name comprises the computed number 365… .

Note that the text here indicates that the 365 heavens exist within the region of the Hebdomad, as opposed to the Ogdoad of the Great Archon. Thus Abrasax exists within the confines of the Hebdomad and is not to be identified with the Great Archon himself. Moreover, Abrasax is connected here with the wicked “principalities and powers ” of Ephesians 6:12, which implies that he is a malevolent or Satanic being. (That scripture says, “For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places. ”) However, what is fascinating in this account is that the Archons become enlightened when they are preached the Gospel! This is very unique to Basilides. This may explain why Clement of Alexandria accused Basilides of “deifying ” the Devil. However, this seems hardly fair. Hippolytus goes on:

When these two events, viz. the illumination of the Hebdomad and the manifestation of the Gospel had thus taken place, it was necessary, likewise, that afterwards the Formlessness existent in our quarter of creation should have radiance imparted to it, and that the mystery should be revealed to the Sonship, which had been left behind in Formlessness, just like an abortion.

And as far as this, the entire Sonship, which is left behind for benefiting the souls in Formlessness, and for being the recipient in turn of benefits—this Sonship, I say, when it is transformed, followed Jesus, and hastened upwards, and came forth purified. And it becomes most refined, so that it could, as the first Sonship, hasten upwards through its own instrumentality. For it possesses all the power that, according to nature, is firmly connected with the light which from above shone down… .

When, therefore, he says, the entire Sonship shall have come, and shall be above the conterminous spirit, then the creature will become the object of mercy. “For the creature groans until now ” (Romans 8:19-22) and is tormented, and waits for the manifestation of the sons of God, in order that all who are men of the Sonship may ascend from thence.

When this takes place, God, he says, will bring upon the whole world enormous ignorance, that all things may continue according to nature, and that nothing may inordinately desire anything of the things that are contrary to nature.

But far from it; for all the souls of this quarter of creation, as many as possess the nature of remaining immortal in this region only, continue in it, aware of nothing superior or better than their present state. And there will not prevail any rumour or knowledge in regions below, concerning beings whose dwelling is placed above, lest subjacent souls should be wrung with torture from longing after impossibilities.

It would be just as if a fish were to crave to feed on the mountains along with sheep. For a wish of this description would, he says, be their destruction. All things, therefore, that abide in this quarter are incorruptible, but corruptible if they are disposed to wander and cross over from the things that are according to nature.

In this way the Archon of the Hebdomad will know nothing of superjacent entities. For enormous ignorance will lay hold on this one likewise, in order that sorrow, and grief, and groaning may depart from him; for he will not desire anything of impossible things, nor will he be visited with anguish. In like manner, however, the same ignorance will lay hold also on the Great

Archon of the Ogdoad, and similarly on all the creatures that are subject unto him, in order that in no respect anything may desire anything of those things that are contrary to nature, and may not (thus) be overwhelmed with sorrow. And so there will be the restitution of all things which, in conformity with nature, have from the beginning a foundation in the seed of the universe… .

The underlying wisdom in Basilides ’ doctrine is that all sorrows are the result of a longing for the non-existent realm by those who have an essence of that realm within them, having this from their connection with the third sonship that is confined and formless in the existent cosmos. Those souls who have a portion of the third sonship in themselves will be purified along with it and restored to the non-existent realm. A fascinating detail is that Basilides seems to construct this interpretation in part from Paul and the passage from Romans 8:19 (“For the earnest expectation of the creature waiteth for the manifestation of the sons of God). Basilides was saying that the “manifestation of the sons of God ” refers to the revealing and ascension of the triple-sonship, while the “groaning of the creature ” refers to the remaining sonship, within the creation, that is in need of purification.

The description of the non-existent god sounds curiously close to the Buddhist concept of Nirvana. Also notice how Hippolytus links the “formlessness ” of matter with that of an “abortion, ” which is exactly how Ialdabaoth is described in other Gnostic texts. There may be a link here with the use of this language and the claims that some Gnostic groups aborted the fruitful results of their alleged orgies —which, as we have mentioned, could have been done as a way of preventing spirit from being trapped in matter through incarnation in a human body. Epiphanius claimed that the Phibionites induced abortions with honey and pepper, and ritually consumed the fetus in some twisted parody of the Eucharist.

According to Hippolytus, Basilides taught that one day there would be no unification with the Godhead possible, since, he believed, each level of existence will remain to its own. Spirit will go to spirit, while flesh will remain flesh, and no salvation or grace will be enacted to make anything contrary to its nature. This is what Basilides meant by the term “Great Ignorance ” in his eschatology. He stood on the fringe of Gnostic thought. He felt that in the end, ignorance will win against knowledge. This is radically different from other Gnostic teachings, as well as Christianity, Judaism, and Platonism, all systems wherein it is taught that knowledge (even “unknowing knowledge ”) leads to union with God. Perhaps in Basilides ’ “non-existent god ” concept (a kind of religious atheism), we can find the first instance of “apophatic theology, ” describing the divine in negative terms (by defining what it is not). We see this in other Gnostic texts like The Apocryphon of John and Allogenes , as well as Neoplatonic thinkers like Plotinus. We also find some similarities in Paul ’s 2 Thessalonians 2:9-12, where God causes a “strong delusion ” in the sinful world so that it can be damned because it rejected the Gospel:

Even him, whose coming is after the working of Satan with all power and signs and lying wonders, and with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish; because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved. And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie: That they all might be damned who believed not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness.

In this context, the aforementioned Greek concept of Lethe, the river of forgetfulness in Hades, and the “cup of forgetfulness ” from The Pistis Sophia both seem pertinent.

As we can see, Hippolytus ’ account of the Basilidean system is very different from Irenaeus ’. Scholars dispute as to which one is older, but we are guessing that Irenaeus ’ system is the eldest, since it is much simpler than the other. Also, according to Irenaeus ’ account, Basilides ’ Jesus was docetic (only a spirit and not at all human), whereas Hippolytus says that Basilides saw him as fully human. Hippolytus also claims that Basilides was, as Simone Petrement put it in A Separate God , “nourished by philosophy, ” particularly that of Aristotle and Pythagoras.

Moving on to other viewpoints on the matter, in Thrice-Great Hermes , GRS Mead discusses the possible connection of Abraxas to the celestial spheres of the cosmic rulers of fate:

The name Abraxas, which consisted of seven elements or letters, was a mystery-designation of the God who combined in himself the whole power of the Seven Planets, and also of the Year of 365 days, the sum of the number-values of the letters of Abraxas working out to 365. This mysterious Being was the “Year ”; but the Year as the Eternity, also conceived of in a spatial aspect, as the Spirit or Name that extends from Heaven to Earth, the God who pervades and full-fills the Seven Spheres, and the Three Hundred and Sixty-five Zones, the Inner God, “He who has His seat within the Seven Poles… ” as the Papyri have it, and also without them, as we shall see.

Sencan Altinoluk and Nilufer Atakan also see Abraxas as a solar deity, much like those from the Egyptian pantheon, such as Horus, Osiris, and Ra. In Abraxas: A Magical Gem in the Istanbul Archaeological Museums , they wrote:

Abrasax is the god of the solar year… . Abrasax was thought to be a mighty tutelary deity. People imagined him as a kind of sun god similar to the Greek Helios, who could protect people all of the year —i.e. 365 days — and who was able to see everything that happens on earth… .

In Greek and Roman belief the rooster was generally considered to be a protector from evil, as the rooster guards the farm where it lives, and as the Greek name of the animal was connected with [a word meaning] “to ward off, to avert. ” Furthermore, this animal was very often associated with the sun, as roosters are wont to crow at sunrise, which was interpreted as a kind of greeting to the rising sun. Roosters are widely used in magic practices and rituals. The whip and the shield are thought to be used for warding off demons. Therefore such gems are applied for the purposes of protecting their wearers from any sort of evil. Also the whip assimilates Abrasax to the sun god who uses his whip to drive his horses on. In the case of Abrasax the whip is a symbol of the god ’s power to prevent demons from attacking the owner of such a gem. Abrasax ’s shield is an instrument to protect men from demons and all kinds of evil.

As we mentioned earlier, Abraxas was also equated with the archangel Michael by the Gnostics. Recall that the Ophites demoted Michael to a serpent- like demonic power. In The Testament of Solomon , Sabaoth, through his intermediary, the archangel Michael, is said to entrust Solomon with a magical ring bearing a pentagram that enables to command 72 demons to build his temple. The same text tells us:

…I entered the Temple of God, and prayed with all my soul, night and day, that the demon might be delivered into my hands, and that I might gain authority over him. And it came about through my prayer that grace was given to me from the Lord Sabaoth by Michael his archangel. [He brought me] a little ring, having a seal consisting of an engraved stone, and said to me: “Take, O Solomon, king, son of David, the gift which the Lord God has sent thee, the highest Sabaoth. With it thou shalt lock up all demons of the earth, male and female; and with their help thou shalt build up Jerusalem. [But] thou [must] wear this seal of God. And this engraving of the seal of the ring sent thee is a Pentalpha. ”

Following these connections, it seems that Abraxas, perhaps operating under the guise of “Sabaoth, ” may be seen as a sort of guardian spirit or “demon ” for the Temple of Solomon.

The demon that Solomon took as the chief architect for his project was Asmodeus, said by cabalists to be the husband of Lilith the Younger. Asmodeus takes a stance reminiscent of the "As above, so below " pose struck by Baphomet in Eliphas Levi 's depiction of him in this description given by Louis Ginzberg in the fourth volume of his Louis Ginzberg classic Legends of the Jews (emphasis added):

Although Asmodeus was captured only for the purpose of getting the shamir, Solomon nonetheless kept him after the completion of the Temple. One day the king told Asmodeus that he did not understand wherein the greatness of the demons lay, if their king could be kept in bonds by a mortal. Asmodeus replied, that if Solomon would remove his chains and lend him the magic ring, he would prove his own greatness. Solomon agreed. The demon stood before him with one wing touching heaven and the other reaching to the earth . Snatching up Solomon, who had parted with his protecting ring, he flung him four hundred parasangs away from Jerusalem, and then palmed himself off as the king.

The pentagram on Solomon ’s ring is a symbol that has been used in many different cultures, even by medieval Christians, to whom it represented the five wounds of Christ. It was generally thought to be protective against evil. The students of Pythagoras also used the sign to represent he ether or spirit ruling over the other four elements of fire, earth, water and air. The Freemason Christoph Friedrich Nicolai, in Versuch uber die Beschuldigungen welche dem Tempelherrenorden gemacht worden, und uber dessen Geheimniß (Essay on the Accusations Which Have Been Made Against the Templar Order, and Its Mysteries , 1782), writes that the Gnostic Ophites, like Solomon, had the power to subdue the Archons and their demonic minions by the usage of tokens featuring the pentagram:

What properly was the sign of the Baffomet, “figura Baffometi, ” which was depicted on the breast of the bust representing the Creator, cannot be exactly determined… . I believe it to have been the Pythagorean pentagon … of health and prosperity: … It is well known how holy this figure was considered, and that the Gnostics had much in common with the Pythagoreans. From the prayers which the soul shall recite, according to the diagram of the Ophite-worshippers, when they on their return to God are stopped by the Archons, and their purity has to be examined, it appears that these serpent-worshippers believed they must produce a token that they had been clean on earth. I believe that this token was also the holy pentagon, the sign of their initiation… .

Fourteenth to fifteenth-century writer Joannes Marcarius, in his book Abraxas seu Apistopistus (as described by Peter N. Miller in The Antiquary ’s Art of Comparison: Peiresc and Abraxas), compares Abraxas to the Trojan horse, for “just as the Greek heroes emerged from its womb, so Abraxas hides in its womb all the family of the gods, whether Egyptian, Greek, Latin, or Persian. ” Perhaps this is what Charles William King was getting at in his 1887 book The Gnostics and Their Remains , when he compared Abraxas to the Egyptian sun deity Horus, drawing from The Pistis Sophia as well as from Hindu myths :

Horus is often figured sailing through the heavens in the sacred boat, the Baris steered by two hawks; solar emblems, with sun and moon overhead, and taking the same titles … as the great Abraxas-god himself, and with reason, the same idea being couched in the two personifications. Horus, as Heliodorus records, was also applied to the Nile, whose Greek name … also contained the mystic solar number 365; this voyager in the baris is analogous to the Hindoo Neryana, the child floating in his argah leaf upon the face of the waters having his whole body coloured blue… . Those common emblems, the baris and the coiled serpent, have their Gnostic

meaning fully explained by a remarkable passage in the Pistis-Sophia .

This passage he then quotes:

And the disk of the sun was a Great Dragon whose tail was in his mouth, who went up into the Seven Powers on the left hand, being drawn by four Powers having the similitude of white horses. But the going of the Moon was in the shape of a boat, the rudder whereof showed a male and female dragon with two white cows drawing the same, and the figure of a child on the stern guiding the dragons, who drew away the light from the Rulers (the regular synonym in the book for the rebellious aeons, lords of the Zodiac), and in front of the child was the similitude of a cat.

King also recognized the similarities between Abraxas and Baphomet, as well as the connections between these two characters and other ancient gods such as Osiris. He writes:

Interesting above the rest for the part it played in medieval superstition is the Osiris, or old man, with radiated head, a terminal figure always shown in front face with arms crossed on the breast, the true Baphomet of the Templars . Sometimes he is borne aloft upon the heads of four Angels, upon whom two streams pour forth from his sides. This group has been explained as Ormuzd borne up by the Four Elements; although it may possibly refer to the notion the prophet Enoch mentions [:] “I also beheld the Four Winds which bear up the earth and the firmament of heaven. ” The idea in truth has rather an Assyrian than Egyptian cast, for in Assyrian works Athor (Mylitta) often appears pouring out from her extended arms the Waters of Life; and again the Persian female Ized Arduisher is by interpretation “the giver of living water. ”

The image of a figure with two streams of water pouring out his or her left and right sides connects to the Babylonian god

Ea or Enki, who is also shown this way, and to the prophet Idris, who is said to live at the crossing of two rivers. It also indicates the throne of God, from under which the rivers of Paradise are said to emerge. King continues on the subject of Abraxas, noting on p. 236 that Abraxas ’ torso really belongs to a Mithraic soldier:

An armed man, the Mithraic soldier, one of the figures regularly set up in the mystic Cave of the Solar god, often decorates a talisman, holding a spear tipped with the head of a cock, a mark of honour granted by the Persian kings to distinguished valour (as by Artaxerxes to the Carian who slew Cyrus the Younger); or else grasping a serpent in each hand.

As we saw earlier with the triple “sonships ” of Hippolytus ’ account, Basilides ’ system is a cosmos created by angels, one of them being the Jewish God of the Old Testament. These blundering world-creating angels are constantly at war with one another, while Christ is thought to be a shape-shifting, phantom spirit sent to save those who have knowledge of the Unknown Father, or the higher god, from this universal crisis. This is the same teaching we find with Simon Magus. In his Apophasis Megale of Simon Magus (as paraphrased by Hippolytus in Refutation of All Heresies), there are six roots (forming three pairs) on his version of the “Tree of Fire ”: Mind (Nous) and Forethought (Epinoia); Voice (Foni) and Name (Onoma); along with Reasoning (Logismos) and Desire (Enthymesis). Similarly, according to Irenaeus, Basilides taught that there were six emanations, also in three pairs: Father (Pater) and Mind (Nous); Word (Logos) and Prudence (Fronesis); then Power (Dynamis) and Wisdom (Sophia).

It seems to us that Simon could very well be the “father of all heresies, ” and that Gnosticism as a whole came largely from his ideas, which ultimately spring from the earlier tradition of John the Baptist. As pointed out by Neil Godfrey at Vridar.org, Basilides was apparently responsible for instituting the festival of the Epiphany of Jesus and of his Baptism on January 6. He gets this from St. Clement of Alexandria ’s comment from the Stromata (XXI, 45) which says:

And the followers of Basilides hold the day of his baptism as a festival, spending the night before in readings. And they say that it was the fifteenth year of Tiberius Caesar, the fifteenth day of the month of Tubi; and some that it was the eleventh of the same month.

Although Neil Godfrey isn ’t by any means the first one to point this out, Basilides taught the strange doctrine of Jesus ’ substitution on the cross —the same idea found in the Acts of John , and similar to what is told in The Koran (that someone/something that looked like Jesus was crucified in his stead). Writes Godfrey:

Basilides taught that Jesus somehow was confused with Simon of Cyrene and it was this Simon who was crucified in his place. Jesus, being supernaturally related to God or Mind was able to change his appearance at will, and so escaped crucifixion and was taken, laughing at how he had deceived mere mortals, to heaven. Thus the Pauline theme of the mocked Archontes/Rulers was maintained, but in the process the crucifixion was denied —a denial we see repeated in the Acts of John and in the Koran of Islam.

In Tracy R. Twyman ’s book The Judas Goat: The Substitution Theory of the Crucifixion , she discusses various texts that support the idea that the crucifixion was a hoax, an idea suggested by the authors of Holy Blood, Holy Grail . She starts off by comparing a passage from The Second Treatise of the Great Seth and a passage from The Koran . The latter source tells us, “They did not slay him, neither crucified him, only a likeness of that was shown to them. ” Likewise, in The Second Treatise of the Great Seth , Jesus says:

I did not succumb to them as they had planned… . And I did not die in reality but in appearance, lest I be put to shame by them… . For my death which they think happened [happened] to them in their error and blindness, since they nailed their man unto their death… . It was another, their father, who drank the gall and the vinegar; it was not I. They struck me with the reed; it was another, Simon, who bore the cross on his shoulder. It was another upon whom they placed the crown of thorns… . And I was laughing at their ignorance.

For Basilides, it was Simon of Cyrene, not Jesus, who was crucified. In A Separate God , Simone Petrement remarks on this subject:

Simon of Cyrene is the man who carries the cross; this allowed a religious thinker who loved symbols to take it as a symbol of the part of Jesus that carried (that is, suffered) the cross. Moreover, Ph. Carrington has shown that this idea could have been suggested by a literal interpretation of Mark ’s Gospel (15:1-15). As Jesus ’ name is not expressly mentioned by Mark after that of Simon of Cyrene, the pronominal forms (aton , atuo , autou) in what follows might be interpreted as referring to Simon. Finally, the idea that the cross was a trap that ridiculed the executioners, together with the reference to a psalm that is considered prophetic (Psalms 2:4), might have led someone to say that at the moment of crucifixion Christ “laughed. ” But, for Basilides, Jesus truly suffered.

Indeed, the Laughing Jesus is not only present in Seth , but also in The Gospel of Judas . It is also a characteristic associated with Docetism, since if Jesus was never incarnated in the flesh, the crucifixion must have been illusory. This is what the Docetists were getting at: the images aren ’t of his true nature, because he is not limited by the material world, but he manifests in ways familiar to us so that he can be comprehended. In The Gospel of Judas , we see Jesus laugh quite a few times, especially at the folly and stupidity of his disciples, because they blindly worship a lesser god. There we read:

One day he was with his disciples in Judea, and he found them gathered together and seated in pious observance. When he [approached] his disciples, gathered together and seated and offering a prayer of thanksgiving over the bread, [he] laughed. The disciples said to [him], “Master, why are you laughing at [our] prayer of thanksgiving? We have done what is right. ” He answered and said to them, “I am not laughing at you. You are not doing this because of your own will but because it is through this that your god [will be] praised. ”

Jesus, as being representative of the “immortal generation ” (the heavenly Aeons), laughs at the foolish piousness of his disciples since they worship the inferior creator, Jehovah who is rendered as Ialdabaoth in this text. Oddly though, Ialdabaoth isn ’t depicted as a megalomaniacal foolish angel like he is in other

Gnostic texts. He also is not said to have been involved in creation, nor is he shown to rebel against the divine order. Creation is a job relegated to Saklas, who is a different Archon altogether in The Gospel of Judas . In this text, the Archons are intentionally created by the luminary Eleleth (whose name sounds a lot like “Lilith ”) to bring order to chaos. They don't actually rebel until they create humanity, and it isn't Ialdabaoth who does that, but Saklas. In The Apocryphon of John , Saklas is another name for Ialdabaoth, which means “blind fool. ” This isn ’t the case in The Gospel of Judas , however. There, we read:

[Eleleth] said, “Let twelve angels come into being [to] rule over chaos and the [underworld]. ” And look, from the cloud there appeared an [angel] whose face flashed with fire and whose appearance was defiled with blood. His name was Nebro, which means “rebel ”; others call him Yaldabaoth. Another angel, Saklas, also came from the cloud.

Nebro is here used as the alternate name for Ialdabaoth (spelled Yaldabaoth in this text). Saklas is clearly presented as a different Archon altogether. Yaldabaoth and Saklas create inferior Archons to rule over the lower universe and the underworld. However, it ’s only Saklas who creates the earth and humanity. Ialdabaoth seems to have a very miniscule role in The Gospel of Judas ’ creation narrative, where it says.

Then Saklas said to his angels, “Let us create a human being after the likeness and after the image. ” They fashioned Adam and his wife Eve, who is called, in the cloud, Zoe. For by this name all the generations seek the man, and each of them calls the woman by these names.

The text quotes Jesus as saying that there will be those who will sacrifice to Saklas in his name at the End Times. So again, Saklas is given prominence over Ialdabaoth. Which begs the question: Is The Gospel of Judas ’ Yaldabaoth actually evil? Nebro is obviously a demonic entity. But again, the Archons are an intentional creation in this text. They are meant to bring order to the lower world. However, after Yaldabaoth creates the other Archons to reign over the rest of the lower universe, Saklas creates humanity without Yaldabaoth. Could it be that this is the author ’s way of saying that angels and demons both worked to bring order out of chaos during creation, even to the depths of the underworld? The Gospel of Judas may be a text written by someone who was influenced by Sethianism, but not actually Sethian. Or it could have been a non-Sethian text that was eventually adopted by Sethians and redacted with Sethian features, as other scholars such as John Turner have argued.

Let us note that just as there are multiple men named James in the New Testament (James the brother of John and James the brother of Jesus), and multiple Judases (Judas Iscariot, Judas Thaddeus, and Judas Thomas Didymus, all of whom Tracy R. Twyman suspects are based on the same person), there are multiple Simons as well (including Simon of Cyrene, Simon Peter, Simon the Zealot and Simon Magus, all of whom we theorize are based on the latter Simon). The claim that Simon of Cyrene helped Jesus carry his cross is most likely the result of misinterpreted teachings by Simon Magus (who, as we mentioned earlier, may even be the inspiration for the character of Paul as well). In Galatians 2:20, Paul states “I am crucified with Christ, ” perhaps a hint at this idea.

Returning to Tracy Twyman ’s theories about the substitution of Jesus on the cross, in The Judas Goat , she goes into the subject of the Judaic rituals of the Passover and Yom Kippur, connecting them not only to the sacrifice of Jesus (naturally), but also Azazel and Baphomet. She brings up what Sir James Frazer wrote in The Golden Bough about the archetype of the sacrificial king, of which the story of the crucifixion of the messiah Jesus is an example. Into this she introduces the idea of a twin king sacrifice (mentioned by Frazer as being a common theme in antiquity). Basically, the concept is that there are two “kings ” who are somehow “twins, ” or at least they metaphorically mirror one another, but one is a dark character, while the other one represents the universal light. The “white ” king has his life sacrificed for the redemption of creation, while the “black ” king takes the blame for the killing and sacrifices his soul. A perfect example would be the sacrifice of Abel, for which Cain took the blame. In the case of Judas Iscariot, he took the blame for the sacrifice of Jesus.

Twyman makes the case that he is probably the same as Judas Thomas (a.k.a. “Thomas Didymus, ” a.k.a. “Judas Thaddeus ”). Since both “Thomas ” and “Didymus ” are words meaning “twin, ” there have been heretics who believed that he was literally Jesus ’ twin (although, if true, it would be quite an oversight for the Gospels not to overtly mention it). But we do know for sure that Judas Thaddeus is a biological brother of Jesus, as the Gospels identify him thusly. We also know that Judas Thomas Didymus and Judas Thaddeus are widely thought to be the same, and are even depicted with the same features in Christian iconography. The Gospel of Barnabus , a medieval forgery influenced by Islam, said that Jesus used magic to make Judas Iscariot appear in his likeness and allowed him to be crucified in his stead.

What Twyman suggests is that this story is an echo of a heretical belief that may have once been held by certain people, in which Thomas, and all of the Judes and Judases, were thought to be the same person: Jesus ’ twin. She suggests that this other character, whether literally his twin, or just metaphorically a second Christ (a black messiah), may have died on the cross, while the real Jesus took his identity and moved on to India, where he was known as Saint Thomas. Eventually, he may have revealed his true identity to some of the Indians, for there are local stories about both Thomas and Jesus (the latter known there as “Saint Isa ”) visiting the region.

Reflecting this possibility, what is most intriguing is Jesus ’ bizarrely intimate relationship with Judas Iscariot, which, Twyman points out, is illustrated in the Gospels. She writes:

The fact that Jesus predicts Judas ’ betrayal, and that Judas does not seem surprised at the accusation, is telling. So too is the fact that Jesus makes no attempt to stop him from doing this, but instead tells him to hurry up and get it over with… . Later that night, when Judas arrives with the Roman guards to arrest him, Jesus is fully aware of what is about to befall him. He allows Judas to come up and identify him to the Romans by kissing him on the cheek, saying “Hail Rabbi. ” Jesus plays his part accordingly, replying, “Judas, betrayest thou the son of Man with a kiss? ” More than that, Jesus is shown as actually rushing out with his disciples to meet Judas and the Roman guards. In Matthew , he wakes his sleeping apostles just before Judas' arrival and says, “Rise, let us be going: behold, he is at hand that doth betray me. ” Thus, many scholars believe that the entire “betrayal ” scenario was concocted, rehearsed, and enacted in collusion between Jesus and Judas.

But it may not have been all an act on Judas ’ part, for as Twyman reveals, Jesus seems to have deliberately infected Judas with a demonic spirit using black magic. In John 13:26-27, Jesus hands Judas a morsel of food, declaring to the other apostles that the person he is giving it to is destined to betray him. As soon as Judas swallows it, “Satan entered into him. ” Then Jesus commands the now- possessed Judas: “What you are going to do, do quickly. ” This is a kind of negative communion. Instead of the Holy Spirit, an evil spirit is introduced into the body, and henceforth this spirit assumes authority there.

Or it may indeed have been the Holy Spirit, for as we have mentioned, not everyone has always thought of the Holy Spirit as being something “nice. ” (The Mandaeans certainly don ’t.) Hammer-Purgstall theorized that it was, to the Gnostics, the same thing as Sophia, and therefore, for the Templars, connected to the female aspect of Baphomet. Also, Judas Thomas and Judas Thaddeus (again, most likely the same person) are both shown in Christian iconography with a flame burning upon the brow, in between the eyes. This is said to represent the Holy Spirit that descended upon him and inspired him with glossolalia (speaking in tongues) during the miracle of the Pentecost. Since Eliphas Levi ’s Baphomet (as well as the goat icon of the Aniza tribe of Arabs, discussed later on) is shown with a flaming torch on his brow in the same spot, in between his horns, we can only assume that this represents the Holy Spirit as well.

Returning to the subject of demonic possession, let us recall that Basilides ’ son Isidore claimed that every human being is surrounded by a multitude of spirits at all times, and these spirits influence the decisions of each person by manipulating their thought patterns at a subliminal level. There is no strict dichotomy of possessed and unpossessed. Rather, each individual is influenced by these attachments to greater and lesser degrees. Clement of Alexandria wrote thusly in Stromata (II.20):

Accordingly, Basilides ’ son himself, Isidorus, in his book, About the Soul , ...

while agreeing in the dogma, as if condemning himself, writes in these words: “For if I persuade any one that the soul is undivided, and that the passions of the wicked are occasioned by the violence of the appendages, the worthless among men will have no slight pretense for saying, ‘I was compelled, I was carried away, I did it against my will, I acted unwillingly; ’ though he himself led the desire of evil things, and did not fight against the assaults of the appendages. But we must, by acquiring superiority in the rational part, show ourselves masters of the inferior creation in us. ”

This sounds a lot like the “body thetans ” of Scientology. The Greek Magical Papyri contains a spell for strength that involves Abraxas. While this is admittedly speculative, we can see that this magical spell may have been used to cast out these spiritual attachments from the user (a self-exorcism?), allowing him to become a god-like being:

“PHNOUNEBEE ’ (2 times), give me Your Strength, IO ’ ABRASAX, give me Your Strength, for I am ABRASAX! ” Say it 7 times while holding your two Thumbs. [PGM LXIX.1-3]

…

“Everyone fears Your Great Might. Grant me the Good Things: The Strength of AKRYSKYLOS, the Speech of EUO ’NOS, the Eyes of Solomon, the Voice of ABRASAX, the Grace of ADO ’NIOS, the God. Come to me, Kypris, every day! The Hidden Name bestowed to You: THOATHOE ’THATHO-

OYTHAETHO ’USTHOAITHITHE ’THOINTHO ’; grant me Victory, Repute, Beauty toward all Men and all Women! ” [PGM XCII.1-16]

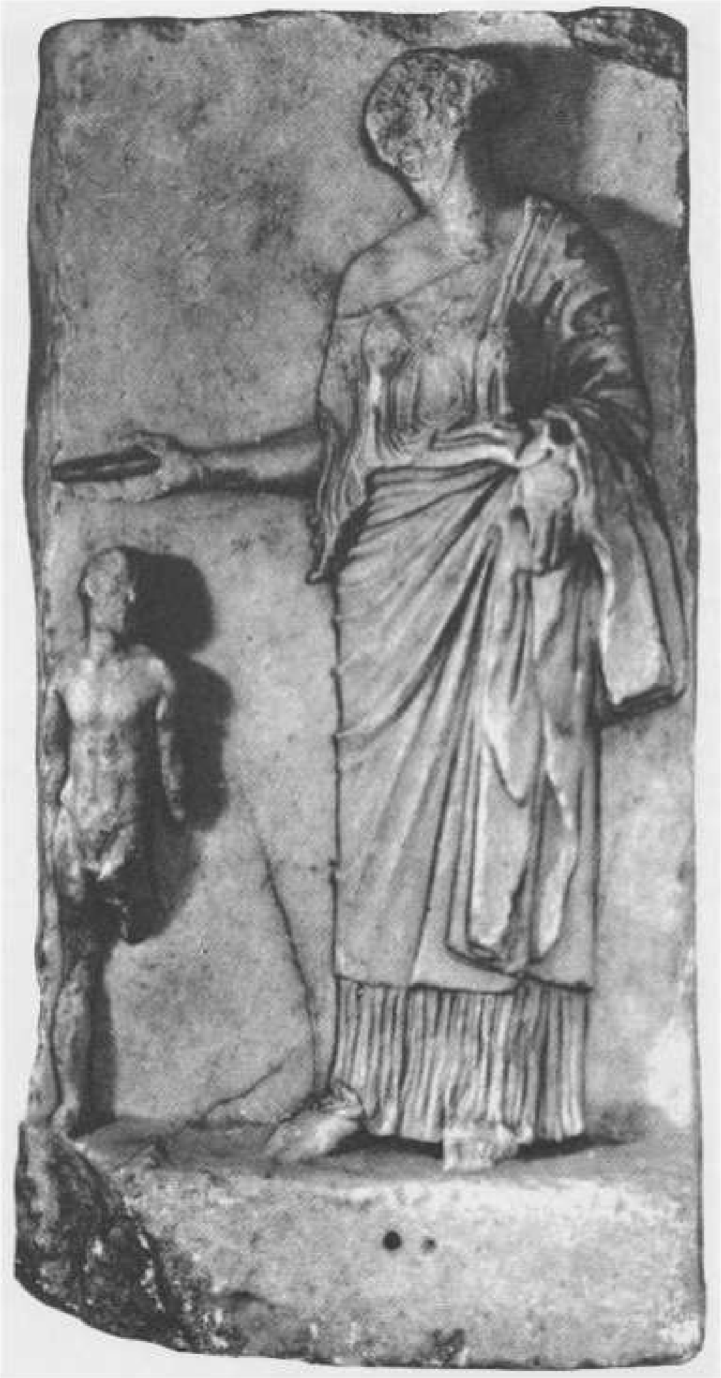

Persephone baptizing an initiate at the ancient Rites of Eleusis.

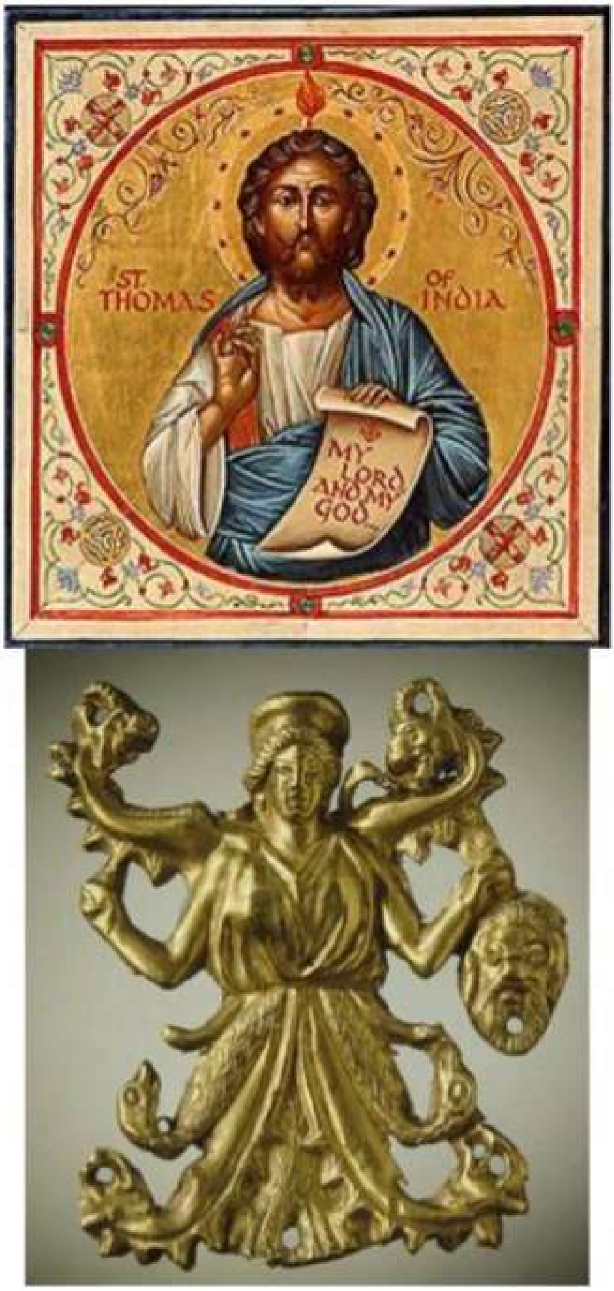
ST. THOMAS
OF INDIA
MY LORD AND MY GOD

Above: St. Thomas Didymus, with the torch of wisdom burning on his brow, just like Levi's Baphomet. Below: The Scythian anguipede goddess Api, forerunner of the Melusine.

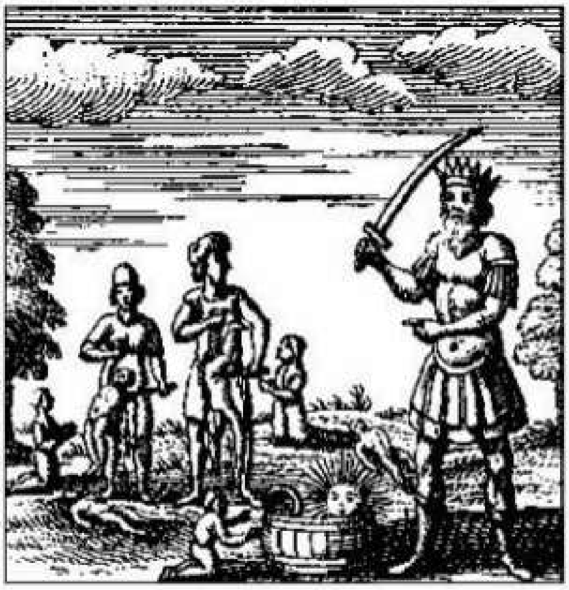

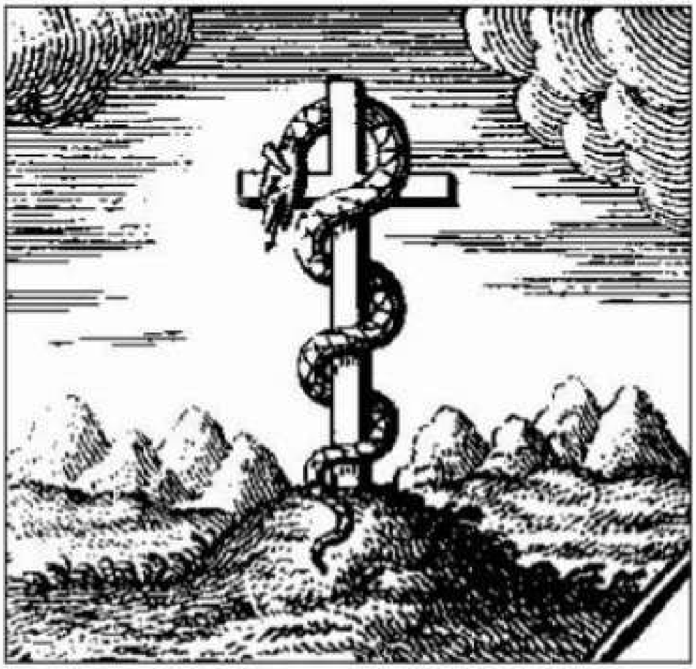

Illustrations from *The Book of Abraham the Jew*, 1624, showing the crucified serpent and the slaughtering of babes to produce the "Bath of the Stars."

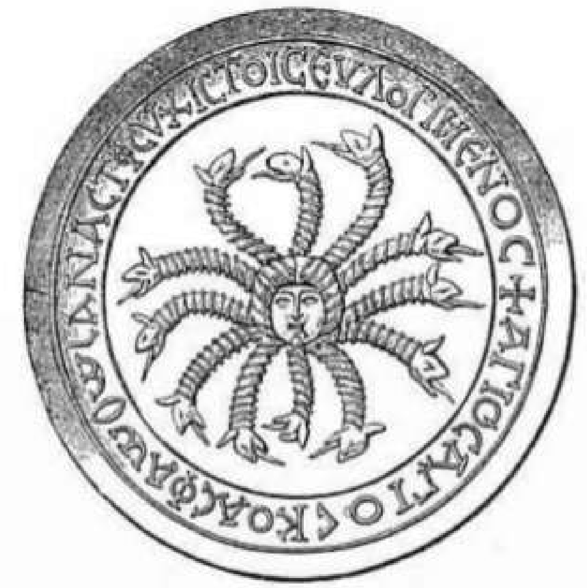

FIG. 49.

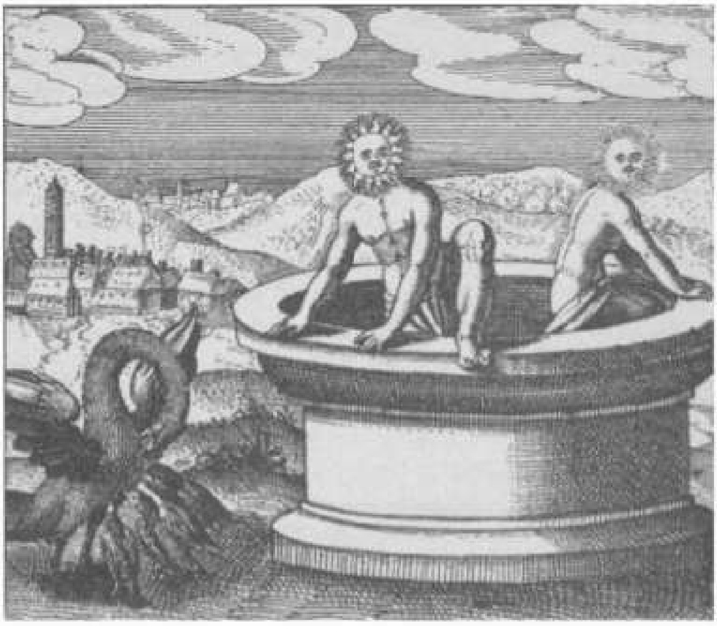

Above: Gnostic talisman with Gorgon head invoking Sabaoth, "the Lord of Hosts." Below: From *Rossarium Philosophorum*, 1550.

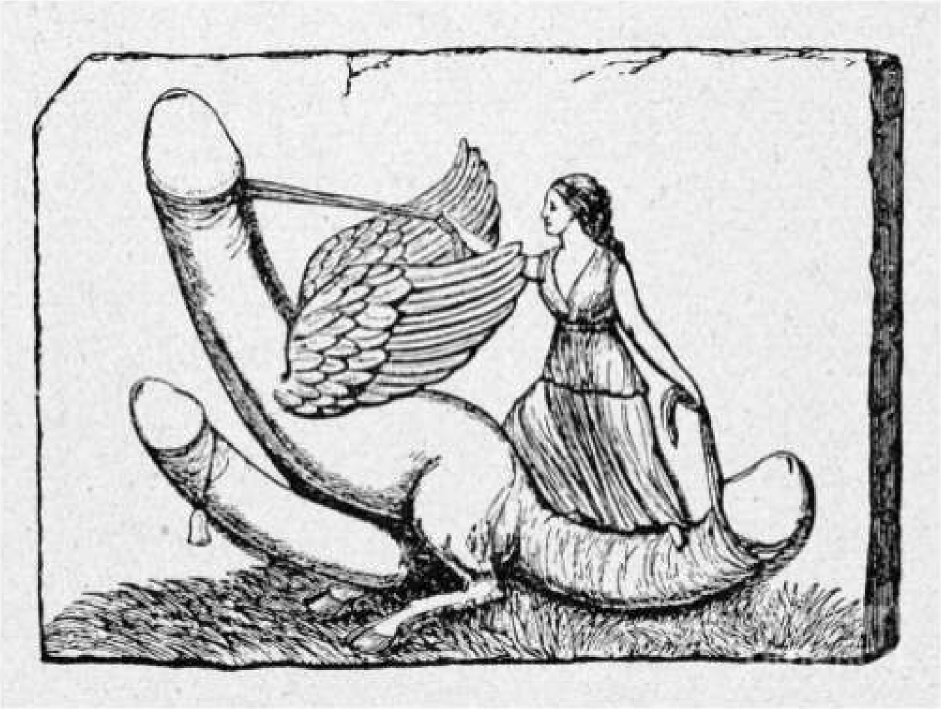

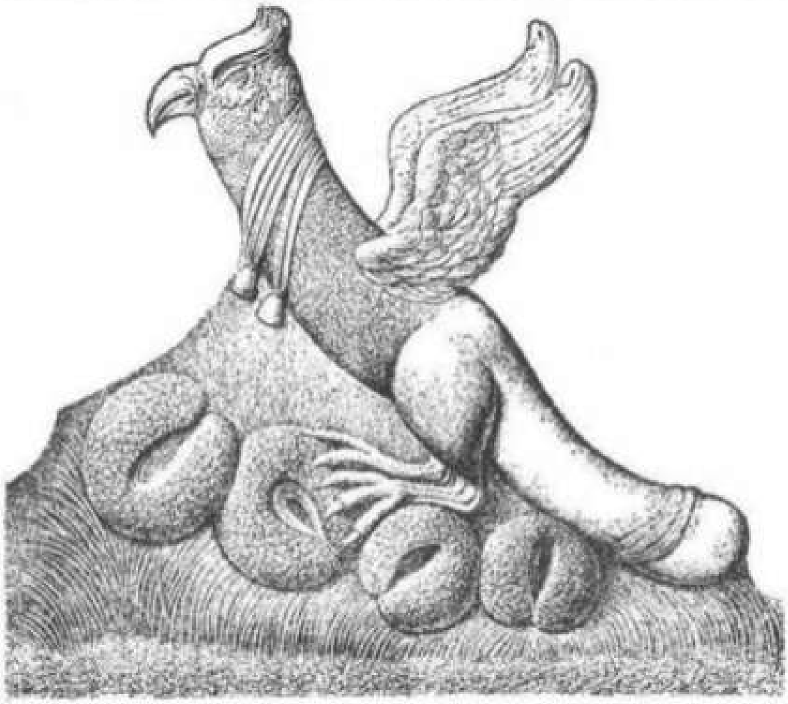

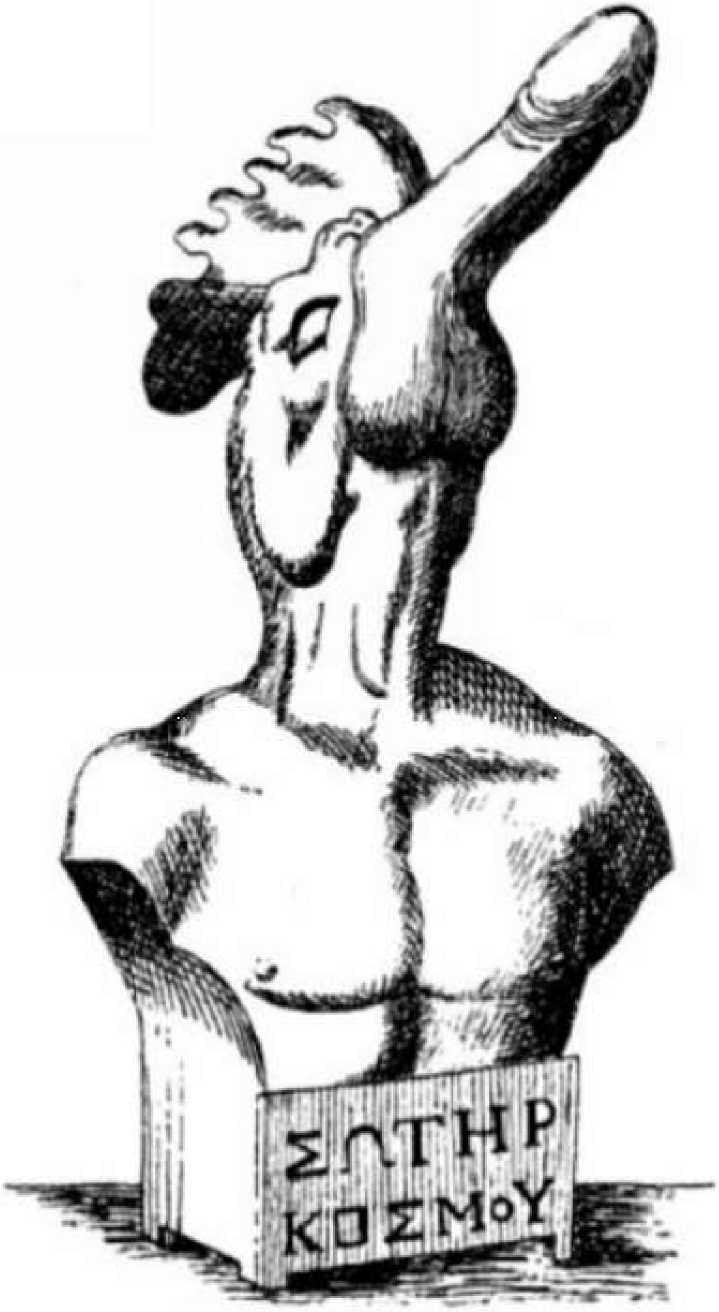
ΣΩΤΗΡ
ΚΟΣΜΟΥ

Above: "The Saviour of the World," once on display at the Vatican. Opposite page: Priapian talismans.

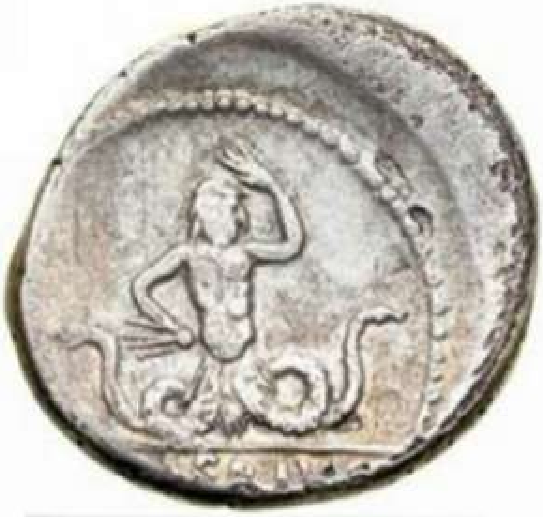

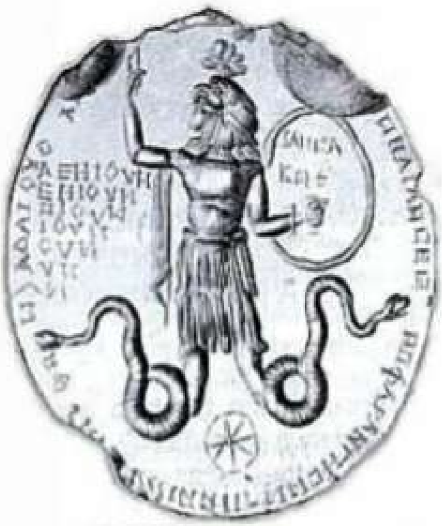

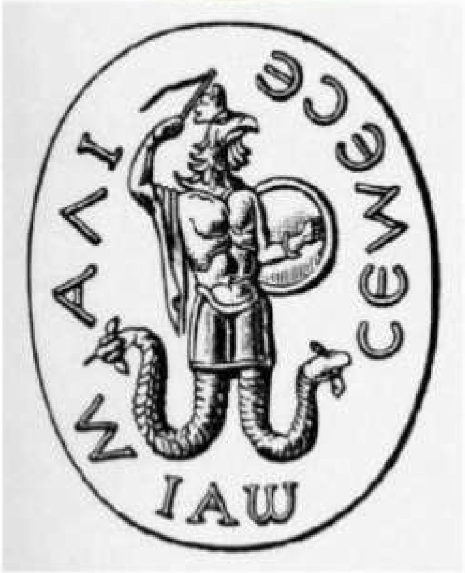

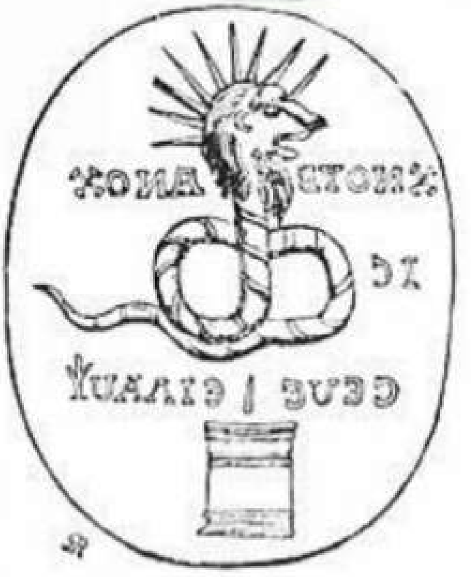

Above left: Anguipede giant grasping thunderbolt protruding from his side on Roman denarius, 45 BC. Compare this to the Abraxas coin, above right. Below: Chnoubis and Abraxas talismans, both taken from *The Gnostics and Their Remains* by Charles William King. Opposite Page: Gnostic talismans among the coins found by Hammer-Purgstall on former Templar properties.

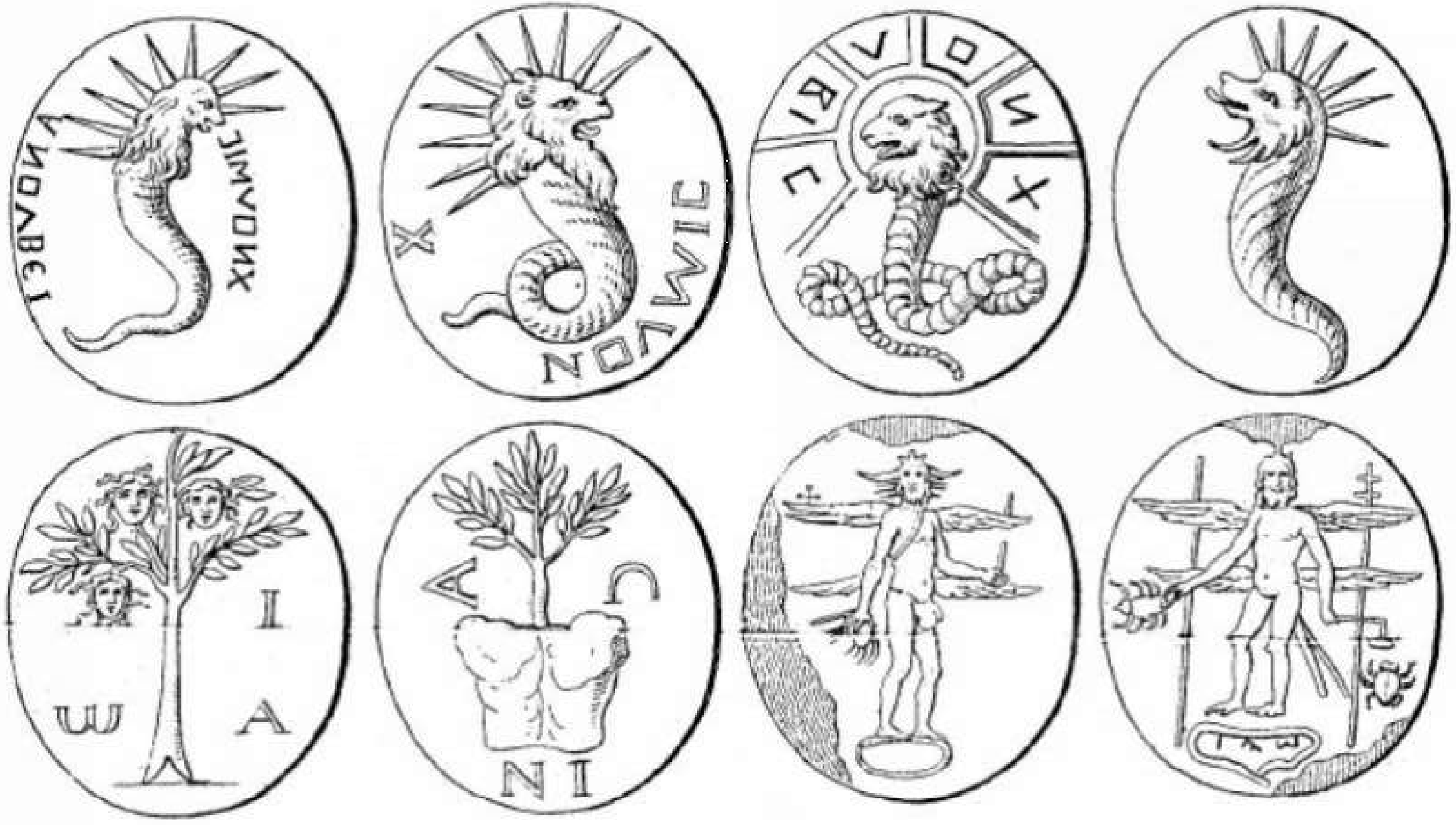
XNOVMIC
XNOVBEI
X
NOVMIC
XNOVBIC
I
A
ω
ΛC
NI
IAω

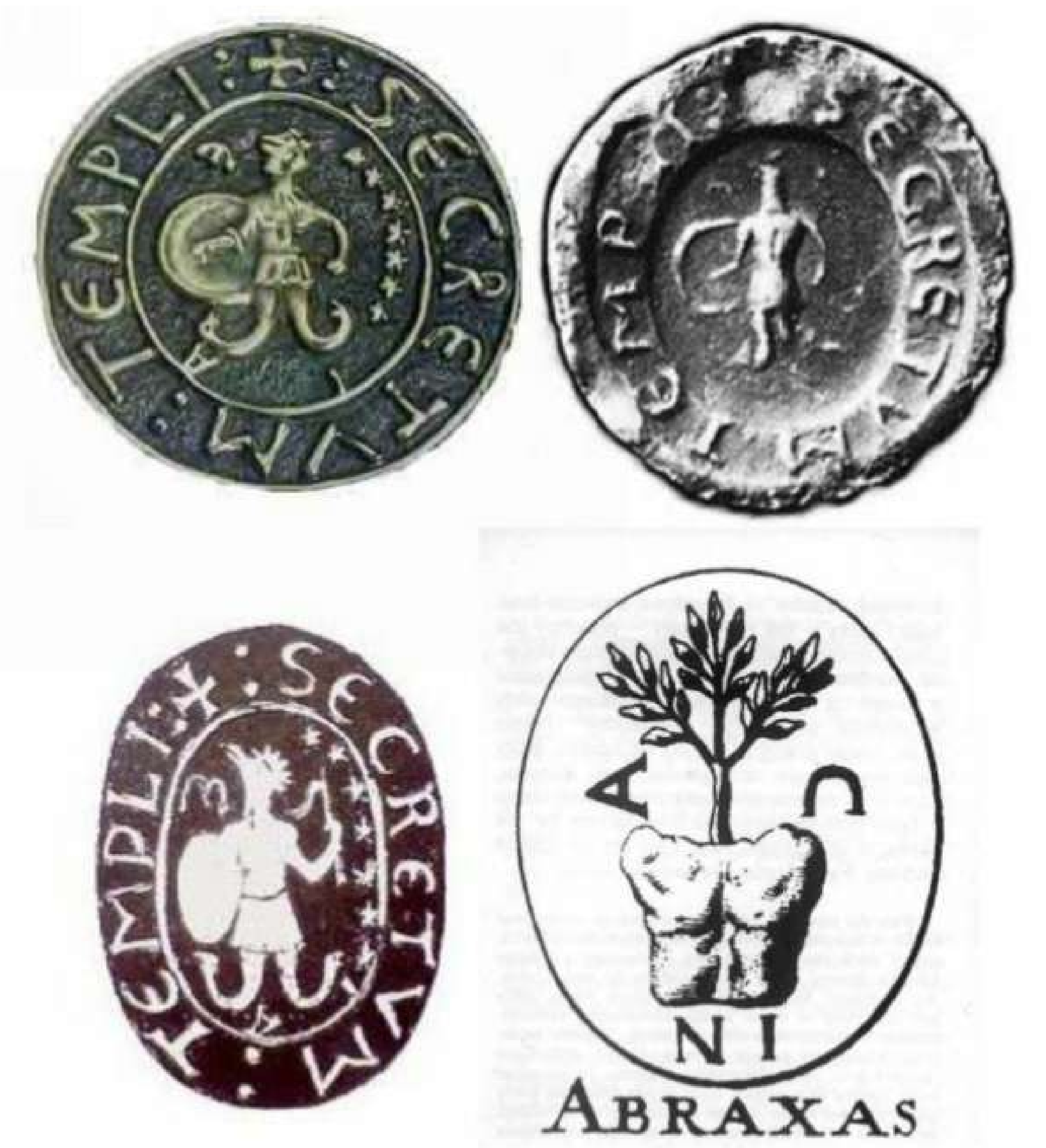
SECRETUM · TEMPLI
SECRETUM TEMPLI
SECRETUM · TEMPLI
A
N I
ABRAXAS

Above, and below left: Three different designs of Templar Abraxas seals. Below right: Abraxas token from *Index of Illumination*, identical to one featured among Hammer-Purgstall's "Templar finds."

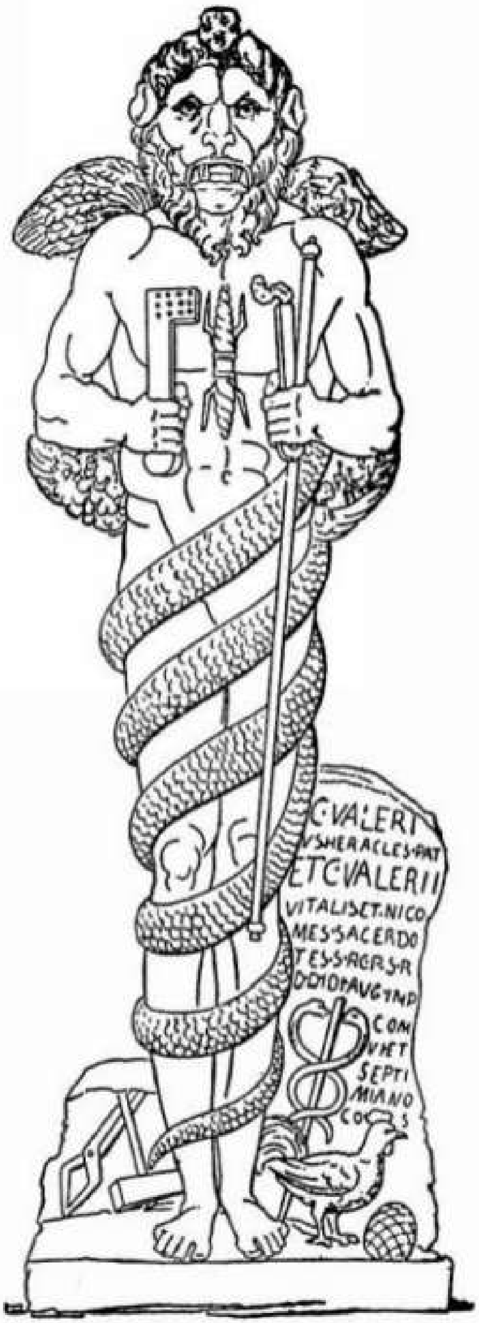
C·VALERI
VS·HERACLES·PAT
ET·C·VALERII
VITALIS·ET·NICO
MES·SACERDO
TES·S·ACRS·R
D·D·IO·P·AVG·N·D
CON
V·ET
SEPTI
MIANO
COS

Aion, the leontocephaline gatekeeper, reminiscent of Ialdabaoth, Abraxas and Asclepius. Found at a second-century mithraeum at Ostia Antica, Italy.

Perhaps in this spell, the initiate would actually become Abraxas and, in essence, control his or her fate in the process. In other words, from a theurgical perspective, the theurgist becomes what is invoked. The invocation would essentially dissolve the “egoic self ” of the magician and such a person would become divinized by the indwelling spirit. Stephen Skinner writes in Techniques of Graeco-Egyptian Magic that “theurgy ” and “goetia ” are two different approaches to working magic:

The Greeks made a clear distinction between goetia … the magic of the goes , … and that of theurgia … . It is difficult to be sure of what was exactly meant by the ancient Greeks when they used the term [goetia], as it was associated with rites for the dead. Goetia … and goes … were later used in the sense they acquired in the Latin grimoires of “dealing with spirits, ” rather than in the sense … of “dealing with the dead. ”

… .

Theurgia is a quite separate category, and is a descendant, via Porphyry and Iamblichus of Chalcis, of the ancient Mysteries. This usage has persisted through to 13th century (and later) grimoires. It has been suggested that theurgia , meaning “divine work, ” was a term that might even have been invented by the group of Neoplatonically-inclined magicians, including luminaries like Iamblichus, probably based in Alexandria around the 2nd century CE. The theurgists were concerned with purifying and raising the consciousness of individual practitioners to the point where they could have direct communion with the gods.

…

The goes , … the practitioner of goetia , … on the other hand, attempts to bring daimones/demons onto the physical plane and to manifest them, or their effects. The relationship of the practitioners of theurgia to practitioners of the goetia is that both attempt to invoke/evoke a spiritual creature (be it god, daimon, angel or demon). The teletai … priest does it for the benefit of the client ’s immortal soul while the goes does it to benefit the client ’s material desires.

In Plaster Perspectives on “Magical Gems ”: Rethinking the Meaning of “Magic ” in Cornell ’s Dactyliotheca, Caitlin E. Barrett takes a more historical perspective on magic:

Originally derived from magos (a word referring to Persian priests), the terms mageia and magia could describe a wide range of practices, including the use of potions and drugs, the casting of binding spells, the practice of necromancy, the control of natural phenomena, and more. One of the things these seemingly diverse actions had in common was their stigmatization: for the most part, mageia and magia had negative connotations. In the Roman empire, many types of magic were illegal and punishable with severe penalties, such as death or exile. Even when not illegal, actions classifiable as mageia or magia typically incurred social disapproval—despite the fact that many such activities, such as the casting of binding spells, appear to have been extremely common in practice.

Not surprisingly, this is exactly how Irenaeus describes the Gnostic followers of Basilides in Against Heresies (1:24.5-6):

These men, moreover, practise magic; and use images, incantations, invocations, and every other kind of curious art. Coining also certain names as if they were those of the angels, they proclaim some of these as belonging to the first, and others to the second heaven; and then they strive to set forth the names, principles, angels, and powers of the three hundred and sixty-five imagined heavens. They also affirm that the barbarous name in which the Saviour ascended and descended, is Caulacau. He, then, who has learned [these things], and known all the angels and their causes, is rendered invisible and incomprehensible to the angels and all the powers, even as Caulacau also was.

For these Gnostics, “Caulacau ” was, as Ireneaus states, actually a secret barbarous name for Jesus Christ. At Jesus8880.com, Daniel Gleason writes about isopsephia (the ancient Greek practice of gematria in which hidden meaning is found based on the numerical values of Greek letters):

Basilides was absolutely famous for combining mathematics with religion. Orthodox Christians viewed the practice of isopsephia as a kind of “number magic ” and the graphing of diagrams (images) as “another kind of curious art. ” There are three isopsehia riddles hidden in Irenaeus ’ account: The barbarous name “Caulacau ” is a pun on Isaiah 28:9-13 which reads … “To whom would God impart knowledge (gnosis)? To whom would he convey the message? … [F]or them the Word of the Lord shall be: command upon command, line upon line, here a little there a little. ” The Hebrew pronunciation for the words “command ” and “line ” is SAU-LASAU and CAU-LACAU! Amazingly, it appears no one before me has bothered to compute the isopsephia value of the Greek spelling for the name Cau-la- cau (Kaeu-lae-kaeu). The answer is “888, ” the same number as Jesus! The “coined name ” Caulacau is thus a clever Gnostic riddle that equates the name Jesus with gnosis (knowledge)!

The father of Neo-Platonism, named Plotinus, also similarly described the Gnostics as “magicians ” and “sorcerers ” for using the barbarous names for the Ineffable in his polemic in the Ennead 2.9, titled “Against the Gnostics: Against Those That Affirm the Creator of the Cosmos and the Cosmos Itself to Be Evil ”:

In the sacred formulas they inscribe, purporting to address the Supernal

Beings —not merely the Soul but even the Transcendents — they are simply uttering spells and appeasements and evocations in the idea that these Powers will obey a call and be led about by a word from any of us who is in some degree trained to use the appropriate forms in the appropriate way — certain melodies, certain sounds, specially directed breathings, sibilant cries, and all else to which is ascribed magic potency upon the Supreme. Perhaps they would repudiate any such intention: still they must explain how these things act upon the unembodied: they do not see that the power they attribute to their own words is so much taken away from the majesty of the divine.

Plotinus resented the Gnostics ' demonization of Plato 's Demiurge, the creator of the material cosmos. Plotinus believed the Gnostics had corrupted the original teachings of Plato to suit their world-views. In fact, Plotinus goes as far as to mock the Gnostic creation story of the fall of Sophia and the aborted Demiurge as surpassing "sheer folly. " Plotinus also took issue with the Gnostics ' neglect of the pursuit of virtue, maintaining themselves as beyond reproach of the laws of the world. His view is of course influenced by the rumors of their supposed hedonistic and libertine tendencies. He wrote:

For they manufacture these doctrines as though they were not in contact with the ancient thought of the Greeks; for the Greeks knew, and spoke clearly without pomposity, of ascents from the cave, coming closer and closer by gradual stages to a truer vision.

This was a problem for Plotinus, who thought these Platonizing Sethian Gnostics were mucking-up philosophy with their static dualism, world-hatred, and defamation of the creator. Plotinus caricatured the Sethians as rubes for practicing magic. Needless to say, many Neoplatonists such as him didn 't like Gnostics very much (despite the obvious similarities between the two groups). Yet the Sethian Gnostics weren 't a unified movement, but rather a diverse set of small cult communities —the Borborites, Archontics, Ophites, etc.

Neither Plotinus nor Irenaeus were lying about the Gnostics ’ ritual magic tendencies, since their texts indicate this interest. These Gnostic magicians more than likely invoked the name of Abraxas among other barbarous, secret names of God. On the Origin of the World contains a compendium of demon names that is attributed to King Solomon, so it is possible that some Gnostics practiced early Solomonic magic. The text explains that when Sabaoth was redeemed, Ialdabaoth, “the prime parent of chaos ” immediately became jealous of his son ’s stature and created Death (i.e. Samael), taking the place of Sabaoth in the sixth heaven while creating lesser demons:

Then Death, being androgynous, mingled with his (own) nature and begot seven androgynous offspring. These are the names of the male ones: Jealousy, Wrath, Tears, Sighing, Suffering, Lamentation, Bitter Weeping.

And these are the names of the female ones: Wrath, Pain, Lust, Sighing, Curse, Bitterness, Quarrelsomeness. They had intercourse with one another, and each one begot seven, so that they amount to forty-nine androgynous demons. Their names and their effects you will find in the Book of Solomon .

“Their effects ” probably meant the abilities they could be compelled to use if summoned, like in The Goetia . The “Book of Solomon ” referred to here could very well be the same as, or an earlier version of, The Testament of Solomon .

Another example of spells and incantations that were employed by Gnostics is provided by Karen King in What is Gnosticism ?, where she talks about the demonic correspondences to human body parts listed so thoroughly in the long recension of The Apocryphon of John (highlighting the inherent corruption of the body), which was intended for use in rituals to heal the sick or injured. On the Origin of the World also perpetuates the idea that demons are associated with the passions of the flesh. It says:

This ignorance, my child, is the first torment; the second is grief; the third is incontinence; the fourth, lust; the fifth, injustice; the sixth, greed; the seventh, deceit; the eighth, envy; the ninth, treachery; the tenth, anger; the eleventh, recklessness; the twelfth, malice. These are twelve in number, but under them are many more besides, my child, and they use the prison of the body to torture the inward person with the sufferings of sense. Yet they withdraw (if not all at once) from one to whom God has shown mercy, and this is the basis of rebirth, the means and method.

We also see similar ideas being promoted by Zosimos in The Final Quittance , where he encourages his disciple Theosebeia to be initiated in the mysteries of Poimandres (Hermes) and to baptize herself in the Hermetic bowl of Mind. Here is the relevant passage, as quoted by GRS Mead in Thrice-Greatest Hermes , Vol. 3:

But be not thou, O lady, [thus] distracted, as, too, I bade thee in the actualizing [rites], and do not turn thyself about this way and that in seeking after God; but in thy house be still, and God shall come to thee, He who is everywhere and not in some wee spot as are daimonian things. And having stilled thyself in body, still thou thyself in passions too —desire, [and] pleasure, rage [and] grief, and the twelve fates of Death. And thus set straight and upright, call thou unto thyself Divinity; and truly shall He come, He who is everywhere and [yet] nowhere. And [then], without invoking them, perform the sacred rites unto the daimones, —not such as offer things to them and soothe and nourish them, but such as turn them from thee and destroy their power, which Mambres taught to Solomon, King of Jerusalem, and all that Solomon himself wrote down from his own wisdom.

And if thou shalt effectively perform these rites, thou shalt obtain the physical conditions of pure birth. And so continue till thou perfect thy soul completely. And when thou knowest surely that thou art perfected in thyself, then spurn … from thee the natural things of matter, and make for harbour in Poemandres ’ arms, and having dowsed thyself within His Cup, return again unto thy own [true] race.

As we saw earlier in the previous chapter, Epiphanius conflated the myth of the lewd Sophia or “Prunikos ” with that of Barbelo of Sethian Gnosticism (which is the female hypostatized version of the highest divine realm outside of the Father). There she sets out to collect and “reabsorb ” the living sparks of power that were stolen from her by her retarded son, Ialdabaoth and his legion of Archons. She appeared to the Archons in a beautiful form, seduced them, and took their sperm, which contained the power originally belonging to her. (Recall that the she-demon Lilith was also believed to steal sperm from human males as they slept.) Epiphanius repeats this in further detail in Panarion (1:21, 2, 2:5) by connecting the Barbelo myth with the story of Simon Magus and his consort Helena:

For these angels went to war over the power from on high — they call her Prunicus, but she is called Barbero or Barbelo by other sects —because she displayed her beauty [and] drove them wild, and was sent for this purpose, to despoil the archons who had made this world. She has suffered no harm, but she brought them to the point of slaughtering each other from the lust for her that she aroused in them. And detaining her so that she should not go back up, they all had relations with her in each of her womanly and female bodies —for she kept migrating from female bodies into various bodies of human beings, cattle and the rest —so that, by the deeds they were doing in killing and being killed, they would cause their own diminution through the shedding of blood. Then, by gathering the power again, she would be able to ascend to heaven once more… .

But others honor one “Prunicus ” and like these, when they consummate their own passions with this kind of disgusting behavior, they say in mythological language of this interpretation of their disgusting behavior, “We are gathering the power of Prunicus from our bodies, and through their emissions. ” That is, [they suppose they are gathering] the power of semen and menses… . For if they say, “Prunicus, ” this is just a belch of lustfulness and incontinence. Anything called “prunicus ” suggests a thing named for copulation, and the enterprise of seduction.

Despite the strong erotic imagery used in Gnostic myth, many Gnostic texts, such as The Pistis Sophia (147:387), explicitly condemn the practices of ritually consuming sperm, menstrual blood, and fetal embryos in the strongest terms. In that book, a certain question put to Jesus by Thomas concerning such matters relates directly to the story in Genesis 25 of Jacob and Esau (the latter selling his “birthright ” to the former for red lentil porridge). We read:

Thomas said: “We have heard that there are some on the earth who take the male seed and the female monthly blood, and make it into a lentil porridge and eat it, saying: ‘We have faith in Esau and Jacob. ’ Is this then seemly or not? ”

Jesus was wroth with the world in that hour and said unto Thomas: “Amen, I say: This sin is more heinous than all sins and iniquities. Such men will straightway be taken into the outer darkness and not be cast back anew into the sphere, but they shall perish, be destroyed in the outer darkness in a region where there is neither pity nor light, but howling and grinding of teeth. And all the souls which shall be brought into the outer darkness, will not be cast back anew, but will be destroyed and dissolved. ”

The passage above certainly reflects a time in late antiquity when Gnostics were being accused of such activities. Here Jesus says that there will be no mercy for people who do this, and that they will not enter the bridal chamber with Sophia and the Savior, but will inherit the “outer darkness ” instead. The second book of the Gnostic Jeu , Chapter 43, also condemns this practice. However, groups like the Barbelites felt that by these practices, “light ” contained in their sexual emissions could be released back to the Supreme God, and therefore bypass the reproductive system that added more souls to bodies under the authority of the wrathful Jehovah.

Another writer, Roger Pearse, in his article “Summing up the ancient accounts of the Borborites-Phibionites, ” points out that spreading rumors of ritual orgies being practiced by one ’s religious enemies isn ’t exactly a new practice:

The testimony of Epiphanius has often been impugned, and for obvious reasons. For his description of a communion ritual which involves fornication and eating babies is uncomfortably like the accusation made against the Christians, and rebutted by Athenagoras (c.31-36) and Tertullian (Apol . 7). Origen tells us that Jews accused Christians of immorality and eating babies (Contra Celsum 6, 27). Mandaean heretics also accused Christians of ritual horrors (Right Ginza IX = Lidzbarski 227, 8 ff.)

In turn similar accusations are made against Montanists by Epiphanius (Pan . 48.14.6) and Cyril of Jerusalem (Cat. 16, 18), although queried by Jerome (Ep. 41, 4.1) and in Praedestinatus (chap. 26). Augustine accuses the Manichaeans of the same in De haeresibus 46. Even Tertullian, as a Montanist, accuses some Catholics of immoral agapes (De ieiunio 17)

…

It seems possible that the aborted baby-eating story really does reflect something real, something tried once and found revolting and not done again, and told to the young Epiphanius (and quite possibly misunderstood by him). Life was cheap. Those involved in ancient magic might do horrible things, and at the low end of society, there might not be a great distance between a gnostic, a sorcerer, or a wandering sophist-cum-conman. We are entirely familiar today with those who try to push the boundaries, to gain notoriety. But then again … maybe it was just a cheap rumour, circulating at the time, and included willy-nilly by Epiphanius.

At this time … we cannot tell. In the end, his statement cannot be confirmed or refuted. Perhaps we should simply leave it at that.

It is probable that a few of these cults embraced these practices, and were lumped together with Gnostics by their enemies. The Valentinian Christians, especially Marcus the Magician, were accused of seducing women from their congregation by Irenaeus, but there is no mention of the spermatic mass in his report. In Against Heresies , Irenaeus claimed Marcus the Magician to be a “precursor of the Antichrist, ” (“Satan ” being his “true father ”), and a “follower ” of the “fallen and mighty angel Azazel ” who had been initiated by the “Magi. ” Irenaeus said of him that “he is regarded by his senseless and cracked-brain followers as working miracles by these means. ” As you can tell, Irenaeus didn ’t particularly like Marcus. One member of the Catholic clergy, Justin Martyr (c. 110 –160) who lived during the height of the heretics, regarded the rumors against them with skepticism, writing in 1 Apology 26 to the Roman Emperor Antoninus Pius:

Whether they perpetuate those fabulous and shameful deeds —the upsetting of the lamp, and promiscuous intercourse, and eating human flesh —we know not.

(As previously noted, this “upsetting of the lamp ” may be the same practice represented in one of the alleged “Templar ” images discovered by Hammer-Purgstall, which depicts a woman using a vase of water to extinguish the candles on a menorah.)

So we find that Justin himself was skeptical of the rumors being spread against the Christians. In Celsus ’ refutation of Christianity, he claims the “Christians ” (who were really the Ophites) were a secret society that practiced sorcery, sexual immorality and cannibalism. Writers like Justin Martyr and Tertullian were simply trying to deflect these rumors, while condemning the Romans for their own perversions.

Returning to the subject of Abraxas, in The Seven Sermons of the Dead , Carl Jung refers to the figure as an “emergence ” of form from the hidden depth of the Godhead. He says that it embodies opposing powers that are fused together into a sort of yin/yang relationship:

Abraxas is the god whom it is difficult to know. His power is the very greatest, because man does not perceive it at all. Man sees the supreme good of the sun, and also the endless evil of the devil, but Abraxas, he does not see, for he is undefinable life itself, which is the mother of good and evil alike… . Abraxas is the sun and also the eternally gaping abyss of emptiness, of the diminisher and dissembler, the devil. The power of Abraxas is twofold. You can not see it, because in your eyes the opposition of this power seems to cancel it out. That which is spoken by God-the-Sun is life; that which is spoken by the Devil is death. Abraxas, however, speaks the venerable and also accursed word, which is life and death at once. Abraxas generates truth and falsehood, good and evil, light and darkness with the same word and in the same deed. Therefore Abraxas is truly the terrible one. He is magnificent even as the lion at the very moment when he strikes his prey down. His beauty is like the beauty of a spring morn.

Readers are often in awe at the sheer uniqueness of this text when compared with other more typical Gnostic writings. For example, whereas Gnostic tradition describes the “Pleroma ” as the fullness of Light and the Aeons, this text calls it a void in which nothing and everything cancel each other out. In Jung ’s view, existence (creatura) happens only outside of the Pleroma. The greatest of all the existent beings is “Abraxas, ” who is described by Jung as the Pleroma manifest as God. The most interesting aspect of this doctrine is that Abraxas is the soul in which “God ” and “Devil ” intersect. Whereas most Gnostic traditions say that salvation means returning to the Pleroma, this text says instead that each person has their own god that corresponds to one of the stars in the heavens, and that it is through them that people will receive their salvation. (This is reminiscent of Aleister Crowley ’s proclamation in the channeled Book of the Law , written 12 years earlier, that “Every man and every woman is a star. ”) There seems to be a warning in the text to avoid Abraxas and seek the personal god instead.

According to H. G. Baynes ’ introduction to the 1916 edition, Carl Jung actually attributed the Sermons to several different historical figures:

In the original journal account of the revelation (Black Book 6) Jung himself is the voice speaking the Seven Sermons to the Dead . In the version transcribed into the Red Book manuscript, Jung gives Philemon as the voice speaking the Sermons. Interestingly, a few pages later, on the last page of the Red Book manuscript, Philemon is identified with the historical Gnostic prophet Simon Magus. When Jung subsequently transcribed the Sermons for printing as an independent text, the Sermons were attributed pseudepigraphically to yet another historical second century Gnostic teacher, Basilides of Alexandria. Thus Jung, Philemon, Simon Magus, and Basilides are all finally conflated together in the voice of the Gnostic prophet who speaks the Septem Sermones ad Mortuos .

As we have said, in the Sermons , Abraxas is said to be the supreme existent deity, containing within itself all good and evil, as well as everything and nothing. The “Pleroma ” is said to be a form of nothing because the everything and the nothing cancel each other out. Here is a quote from Sermon I :

Harken: I begin with nothingness. Nothingness is the same as fullness. In infinity full is no better than empty. Nothingness is both empty and full. As well might ye say anything else of nothingness, as for instance, white is it, or black, or again, it is not, or it is. A thing that is infinite and eternal hath no qualities, since it hath all qualities.

This nothingness or fullness we name the PLEROMA. Therein both thinking and being cease, since the eternal and infinite possess no qualities. In it no being is, for he then would be distinct from the pleroma, and would possess qualities which would distinguish him as something distinct from the pleroma.

In the pleroma there is nothing and everything. It is quite fruitless to think about the pleroma, for this would mean self-dissolution.

Abraxas in this sense was just one of the many symbols Jung would use to represent the ancient doctrine of Coniunctio Oppositorum (the Conjunction of Opposites). Jung ’s Gnostic vision of 1916, with its bipolar Abraxas, written under the persona of Basilides, has virtually no connection to the actual teachings of the historical Basilides. Jung claimed that Abraxas was the embodiment of the Monad, whereas the ancient heretics viewed Abraxas as a lower aeon or even an Archon. Abraxas, like Baphomet, becomes a “syzygy ” of an alchemical pair conjoined, combining good and evil, darkness and light, Christ and Antichrist, God and the Devil. The symbolism involved is similar to that of the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil in Genesis . Abraxas could also be seen as a synthesis of Michael the Archangel and the Great Dragon of Revelation 12:9. (“And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world… . ”)

So you can see that there is considerable discrepancy between the Western occult view, which seeks a union of opposites as the ultimate goal, and Gnostic systems that seek to separate light from darkness through purification. This issue is muddied even further by Carl Jung, who associates Gnosticism with his doctrine of Coniunctio Oppositorum . There weren ’t very many “Gnostic ” texts available during Jung ’s time, so perhaps that ’s why he projects so many of his own views on to the concept of Gnosticism.

When viewed through a dualist lens, the intermingling of good and evil is in actuality the fall from Eden, the tragedy that gave rise to human suffering and all the world ’s horrors. The classical Gnostics viewed spirit as the original unity, with matter being a shallow imitation of this higher reality. In this estimation, the light is seen as the only eternal principle, while the world of matter is simply a passing shadow, a temporary setback or foul-up in the scheme of infinity that will eventually be rectified. A more radical interpretation of dualism, found in the Manichean Gnostic religion (and in the Persian religion of Zoroastrianism that preceded it), has light and darkness existing as co-eternal yet independent principles, each with their own domain, in a constant duel.

This dichotomy is for the most part rejected by modern Western occultists due to its association with the mainstream Judeo-Christian tradition, which they consider deficient. But the fact remains that many Gnostics sects, and those later influenced by them (such as the Cathars), considered themselves foremost to be Christians, and recognized the difference between sin and righteousness. To embrace the classical Gnostic tradition means to embrace their dualist perspective. It is simply impossible to separate such perspectives from Gnosticism with disdain, as many modern occultists attempt to do when incorporating Gnosticism into their own self-made, heterodox world-views. In Liber Tzaddi vel Hamus Hermeticus sub figura XC , Aleister Crowley explains a concept very similar to that of Carl Jung ’s Coniunctio Oppositorum, stating:

Many have arisen, being wise. They have said ‘Seek out the glittering Image in the place ever golden, and unite yourselves with it. ’ Many have arisen, being foolish. They have said, ‘Stoop down into the darkly splendid world and be wedded to that Blind Creature of the Slime. ’ I who am beyond Wisdom and Folly, arise and say unto you: achieve both weddings! Unite yourselves with both! Beware, beware, I say lest you seek after the one and lose the other! My adepts stand upright; their head above the heavens, their feet below the hells. But since one is naturally attracted to the Angel, another to the Demon, let the first strengthen the lower link, the last attach more firmly to the higher. Thus shall equilibrium become perfect. I will aid my disciples; as fast as they acquire this balanced power and joy so faster will I push them.

Baphomet, like Abraxas, is a perfect hieroglyph to represent this sentiment, and the conjunction of opposites that he embodies (not only the union of good and evil, but the androgynous balance of the genders as well) is believed by ceremonial magicians to be an altered state of consciousness that allows one to tap into innate superhuman abilities. But if you know anybody into the occult, chances are high that you know somebody who, despite what they may say openly, tends to gravitate towards the darker side of things, delighting in control over others. In Magic: Book 4 , Crowley writes gleefully about using this transcendental power to make slaves of the angels and demons of the universe, encouraging his students to:

Master everything, but give generously to your servants, once they have unconditionally submitted.

In Transcendental Magic , Eliphas Levi wrote about the use of the power of “the Devil ” in black magic, calling it “the Great Magical Agent, ” similar to the term “Universal Agent ” that he used to describe Baphomet in the previously-quoted section from Magic: A History of Its Rites, Rituals and Mysteries . But in this passage, he warns that calling up Satan could bring negative results:

IN BLACK MAGIC, THE DEVIL is THE GREAT MAGICAL AGENT EMPLOYED FOR EVIL PURPOSES BY A PERVERSE WILL. The old serpent of the legend is nothing else than the BLACK MAGIC, universal agent, the eternal fire of terrestrial life, the soul of the earth, and the living fount of hell. We have said that the astral light is the receptacle of forms, and these when evoked by reason are produced harmoniously, but when evoked by madness they appear disorderly and monstrous; so originated the nightmares of St. Anthony and the phantoms of the Sabbath. Do, therefore, the evocations of goetia and demonomania possess a practical result? Yes, certainly one which cannot be contested, one more terrible than could be recounted by legends! When any one invokes the devil with intentional ceremonies, the devil comes, and is seen. To escape dying from horror at the sight, to escape catalepsy or idiocy, one must be already mad.

Recall that in the confessions of the Templars, several knights said that they were profoundly affected by seeing the terrible visage of the Baphomet head. But as terrifying as it can be, Eliphas Levi nonetheless lauds the power that can be utilized with the Universal Agent, ” writing in Transcendental Magic that:

… having equilibrium for its supreme law, while its direction is concerned immediately with the Great Arcanum of Transcendental Magic… .This agent … is precisely that which the adepts of the Middle Ages denominated the First Matter of the Great Work. The Gnostics represented it as the fiery body of the Holy Spirit; it was the object of adoration in the Secret Rites of the Sabbath and the Temple, under the hieroglyphic figure of Baphomet or the Androgyne of Mendes.

Then later on he adds:

The symbolic head of the goat of Mendes is occasionally given to this figure, and it is then the Baphomet of the Templars and the Word of the Gnostics.

Elsewhere in this same book Levi describes the agent as “a horse having nature analogous to a chameleon, ever reflecting the armor of his rider. ” So the Universal Agent is whatever the magician makes of it, subject to the same strengths and weaknesses that he possesses. This goes along with another description Levi gave of it as a “universal plastic mediator, ” the word “plastic ” meaning, literally, “capable of shaping or molding. ” In this case, the Universal Agent conforms to the mold projected by the will of the magician.

Yet the analogy of horse and rider, when used in relation to the subject of demonic possession, is usually employed the other way around: the person is the horse, and the demon is riding him. (This is actually the terminology used by practitioners of Voudon.) But the role of a magician is of one who controls the spirits, rather than letting them control him, as Solomon is said to have done with the power of his magic ring. In that case, the magician becomes the rider, and the demon is the horse. This same concept may have given rise to the terms “riding the Dragon ” (used in Bram Stoker ’s novel Dracula to describe the mastering of occult power) and “riding the Goat ” (a Masonic term to be discussed more later). We must wonder then what was meant by one of the seals frequently used by the Knights Templar, featuring two knights riding one horse. Also consider that Azazel, in The Zohar , is called the “rider on the serpent ” because he acts as the intermediary to connect Lilith and Samael sexually.

It appears that this perceived ability to control the spirits of the ether with the Universal Agent is a matter of tapping into, as we have said, powers both infernal and divine, and thus, necessarily, powers associated both with the Devil and God in the Bible. When we examine the research of Stuart Nettleton in The Alchemy Key: Unraveling the Single Tangible Secret In All Mysteries we find, again, more evidence that Baphomet may have been seen as the key to both, or as Nettleton terms it, the “intercessor between Jehovah and the Messiah. ” He even compares the role played by Baphomet to that usually taken by the Virgin Mary in Christian theology! Using the Atbash cipher with Hebrew, he discovered the following:

The Atbash Cipher produces BphOM from Jehovah (YHWH). Using the Cipher once more, Baphomet (BPhOMTh) leads to Yahushua (YHWShO), which means The Messiah… . Baphomet is therefore the partner of Jehovah and route to the Messiah. Thus, Baphomet figuratively gives birth to the Messiah from Jehovah. Baphomet therefore fulfills the age-old role of the Mother Goddess in the old sacrificial king rituals. She is Wisdom or Sophia, who brings forth the son of perfection. Thus, the repeated use of the Atbash Cipher through

Baphomet, gives the same answer as the straightforward method, Sophia. Baphomet is therefore equivalent to the Shema or understanding that unites the one with God. This is the Shekhinah or the Virgin with Child.

So in this sense Baphomet is not only Sophia, but the Demiurge she gave birth to as well. This connects Baphomet again with Abraxas, who also seems to be an avatar of the Demiurge. This might explain why Aleister Crowley referred to Baphomet as the “Lion and the Serpent, ” since Ialdabaoth was represented by the Gnostics as a lion with a serpent ’s tail. But can these two, diametrically- opposed figures be combined? What has the God of the Bible to do with the goat god? As we ponder this, let us also reflect on the supposedly “erroneous ” translation in St. Jerome ’s Latin Vulgate version of Exodus 34:29-30, in which the “face ” of Moses becomes “horned ” after talking to God:

And when Moses came down from the Mount Sinai, he held the two tables of the testimony, and he knew not that his face was horned from the conversation of the Lord. And Aaron and the children of Israel seeing the face of Moses horned, were afraid to come near.

Actually, though, it was not a mistranslation at all, and Jerome even left commentary explaining it. The word he translated as “horn ” is keren , which also means “radiant. ” Thus, in the King James translation, it simply says “the skin of his face shone, ” and presumably because of the overbearing brightness, other people “were afraid to come nigh ” until “he put a vail on his face. ” But at that time, horns were considered a crown of divine glory, as they were featured on the heads of so many of the gods of the ancient world. Jerome (who said he had consulted rabbinical scholars specifically about this word) was trying to imply both meanings simultaneously (both horns and radiant light). This is why Moses has been depicted in classic works of art with rays of light projecting from his head like horns, as in Dore ’s drawing, and on the “Moses Fountain ” in Bern, Switzerland. Michelangelo famously sculpted Moses with regular horns, which made him look like a satyr. According to Louis Ginzberg ’s Legends of the Jews , there is a story of Moses visiting Hell and Paradise while on the mountaintop with God, where he was guided by an “angel with the horns of glory. ” Interestingly, Moses was able to enter Hell without being burned because he had been cauterized with a baptism of divine fire that protected him. As the horned angel told him:

There is a fire that not only burns but also consumes, and that fire will protect thee against hell fire, so that thou canst step upon it, and yet thou wilt not be seared.

So is this the meaning of the “baptism of fire ” that John the Baptist said the one who came after him would bring? Is it a fire that “consumes ” you, but somehow protects you from hellfire? Tobias Churton reports that Mandaeans believe John ’s body could not be burned by fire. Analyzing Saint Paul ’s interpretation of the baptism of fire, he writes that Paul felt that:

> … The Holy Spirit [received through the] baptism of fire … sustains the soul through the fire of judgment… . [It was] both destroyer of chaff and quickener of righteous spirit: a kind of winnowing.

We have mentioned previously the prophecies found in Judeo-Christian scripture promising that the world will be destroyed by not just one, but two coming cataclysms, one of fire and one of water. Fulcanelli suggests that each disaster will affect one of the hemispheres of the globe. Several writers have purported that John ’s baptism of water was meant to be a sort of prophylactic to protect the recipient against drowning in the coming deluge, while the baptism of fire would protect against the coming conflagration. As we read in Orpheus the Fisher by Robert Eisler:

The Messianic baptism of fire, foretold by John, is nothing else than the Last Judgment of humanity in “the Day that cometh burning like an oven ” [The Book of Malachi 4:1]. As his baptism in water is not simply identical with the final deluge, which is to purify the world, but a symbolic and, for the repentant ones, an apotropaic [warding off evil influences] and protective anticipation of it, even so does he expect that the “Mightier One ” coming after him will purge the righteous remnant of Israel, “like a refiner, ” in a baptism of fire, so that then they shall be proof as gold against the flame, which is to exterminate the sinners.

He then quotes from Malachi 3:1-3, in which, as we read from the King James translation, God tells us through his prophet:

Behold, I will send my messenger, and he shall prepare the way before me… . For he is like a refiner ’s fire… . And he shall sit as a refiner and purifier of silver: and he shall purify the sons of Levi, and purge them as gold and silver, that they may offer unto the Lord an offering in righteousness.

Now is this special fire that protects from hellfire connected to Baphomet, Abraxas, and the Universal Agent? According to Levi (Transcendental Magic), the answer is yes. There is also yet another mysterious alchemical name for it too. He calls it:

AZOTH, universal magnesia, the great magical agent, the astral light, the light of life, fertilized by animic force, by intellectual energy, which they compare to sulphur on account of its affinities with divine fire.

So it seems that, if this isn ’t exactly the divine fire (the Holy Spirit), it is the closest thing that a magician can get his hands on, and serves a similar purpose for him. You may recall a scene at the end of the horror film The Ninth Gate , when the villain, a Satanic magician, lights himself on fire, believing that because of the power he got from the Devil, the flames will not burn him (a trick which works for a few minutes and then fails him). Perhaps he thought he had doused himself in a protective coating of Azoth.

This substance is described by Levi as being omnipresent, in everything,

filling all space between the magician and the intended object. In alchemy it is called the “quintessence, ” the “Philosophic Mercurial, and even “Sophia Mercurius. ” It is the “panacea ” or “universal medicine ” that cures everything, as it heals the separation between creation and the creator. Julius Evola, in The Hermetic Tradition , also describes the Philosophical Mercury (quoting the Filum Ariadnae) as:

“… a chimera that lives only in the imagination. It is on the rule of Fire that everything depends. ” And we need hardly belabor the fact that this is not vulgar, physical fire.

The subject of Azoth was written about very thoroughly in the book Liber

Azoth by the alchemist Paracelsus, who was also a physician, astronomer, botanist, and all-around Renaissance man. Legend has it that he made his own Azoth and kept it stored in the pommel of his sword. Apparently he wanted to always have a good dose of the stuff handy in case he got injured or sick. The name Azoth represents totality because it starts with "A ", which is the first letter in most alphabets, and end with "z ", "o, " and "th, " which are the final letters of the Latin, Greek, and Hebrew alphabets. In The Emerald Tablet: Alchemy for Personal Transformation , Dennis William Hauck explains that:

The word is meant to embrace the full meaning of [the alchemical operation], which is both the chaotic First matter at the beginning of the Work and the perfected Stone at its conclusion.

At the same time, it is also thought to be related to the Arabic al-za 'buq, meaning "the mercury. " Also, we should note, the Hebrew word for a he-goat is "Az, " which brings up obvious connections to Azazel and Baphomet.

The famous German alchemist Basil Valentine first wrote about this subject in the 1659 book Azoth of the Philosophers . In it there is a famous illustration of Azoth as a chimera creature. It is a sort of platter on which all of the elements of the universe are arranged in harmony, with a bearded, slightly leonine face in the middle, human arms coming out of the sides, and human legs on the bottom. On top are the wings usually found on a caduceus (they appear to be attached to a pole jutting out from the crown of the head). Between the legs is the white cubic Philosopher 's Stone, labeled "Corpus " ("the Body "). So Azoth, like Abraxas and Baphomet, can be thought of as a living being that contains the magical power of the universe, as it contains everything that exists (and perhaps, like Abraxas, even nonexistence itself).

So here we are yet again on the subject of the unity of dual, seemingly opposite currents. In the article "Baphomet and the Azoth " by Soror KTK at pyramidlodge.org, the author connects Azoth with the twin snake legs of Abraxas and with the caduceus:

The Great Magical Agent is a “double-current of light ” which Levi best likes to represent as a serpent: the dual serpent of the caduceus, the serpent of Genesis , the brazen serpent of Moses, the serpent twined around the Tau (which he sees as a symbol of the generating lingam), the Gnostic Hyle, the twin serpents forming the legs of Abraxas, and the Oroboros serpent, which he relates to prudence and Saturn.

In the Hermetic Nag Hammadi Codex On the Ogdoad and Ennead , commonly known as Discourse on the Eighth and Ninth , it mentions that the origin of holy names like Zoxathazo (found in Nag Hammadi Codex VI) —which sound very similar to Zothaxathoz (found in Greek Magical Papyrus XIII), and presumably the countless similar names in The Books of Jeu —may have their roots in permutations of the Greek words zoe (life) and thanatos (death). If these words in any way inspired the creation of the word Azoth, it would make since, as they all seem to contain a synthesis of two opposing forces, just like Baphomet and Abraxas. We are reminded, again, of William Blake ’s classic poem The Marriage of Heaven and Hell , which describes the same kind of fusion of contradictory symbols. There we find the following lines (emphasis added):

Prisons are built with stones of Law, Brothels with bricks of Religion. The pride of the peacock is the glory of God. The lust of the goat is the bounty of God. The wrath of the lion is the wisdom of God . The nakedness of woman is the work of God. Excess of sorrow laughs. Excess of joy weeps.

Time and again we have been told by the authors of occult books that a magician, if he is to master this deadly power, must fully transform his consciousness or purify his soul into the “One Thing, ” the ultimate goal of the alchemical operation described in the Emerald Tablet of Hermes. Albert Pike explains it in Morals and Dogma :

The Great Work is, above all things, the creation of man by himself; that is to say, the full and entire conquest which he effects of his faculties and his future. It is, above all, the perfect emancipation of his will, which assures him the universal empire of Azoth, and the domain of magnetism, that is, complete power over the universal magical agent.

In his books Liber Null and Psychonaut , Peter Carroll has advice for anyone wishing to work with Baphomet to perform ritual magic. Carroll is one of the main proponents of the practice of “chaos magick, ” which is built on the idea that the subconscious mind is the primary generator of the reality that each individual experiences. Although this reality is subjective, the understanding is that this is still somehow connected to external reality, and that via the principles of “sympathetic magic, ” the chaotic elements of the universe will align to conform to the pattern of symbols expressed in a ritual, thus influencing objective reality according to the magician ’s will. This model is deeply influenced by The Greek

Magical Papyri , as well as The Pyramid Texts and The Egyptian Book of the Dead .

Before performing such rituals, Carroll advocates reaching a state of “Gnosis ” through the means of yoga, tantric sex, psychoactive substances, chanting, drumming, dancing, and lucid dreaming. The trick, supposedly, is to concentrate on an abstract idea of one ’s expressed desire while using the altered state of consciousness to bring forth the powers of creation that allegedly slumber in the subconscious mind, resulting, hopefully, in the manifestation of what is desired. Chaos magick embraces the same moral philosophy expressed by Assassin chief Hassan-i-Sabbah (as we mentioned earlier): “Nothing is true, everything is permitted. ” Since reality is pliable, in this view, you can make of it what you will.

One of the techniques suggested by Carroll is “sigil magick, ” developed by the British occultist and artist Austin Osman Spare in the early twentieth century.

By the goat and ritual orgy motifs in some of his art, it seems that Spare also tapped into the Baphometic current, which makes sense considering that he was heavily influenced by his contemporary and fellow countryman, Aleister Crowley (who literally called himself Baphomet). Sigil magick requires no elaborate tools or regalia, just a pen and paper. It quite simply consists of making hieroglyphs out of the letters used to form words that express the purpose of the spell being cast, after all vowels and redundant letters have been removed. The resulting symbol is then meditated upon to imprint the subconscious mind with the desire and to bring it into manifestation.

Pertinent to our inquiry, Peter Carroll suggests that a would-be chaos magician should visualize himself as Baphomet while chanting the following “aeonic litany ”:

In the first aeon, I was the Great Spirit

In the second aeon, Men knew me as the Horned God, Pangenitor Panphage

In the third aeon, I was the Dark one, the Devil

In the fourth aeon, Men know me not, for I am the Hidden One

In this new aeon, I appear before you as Baphomet, The God before all gods who shall endure to the end of the Earth.

This is very similar to the spell from The Greek Magical Papyri mentioned earlier, where the magician attempts to personally take on the chimeric qualities of Abraxas himself. However, some would say that the magician is not taking in something from outside of himself, but rather tapping into qualities that lay hidden within. These inner, normally suppressed personalities may be thought of as the “hidden, ” or “chthonic ” shadow selves which may be channeled for creative purposes. However, magical texts frequently warn that bringing them forth could also be the undoing of one ’s life, resulting in both figurative and literal death. For Carl Jung, the power of Abraxas was connected to the bestial nature of humanity, and this beast, being composed of totally opposite essences, can tear us apart from the inside out if awakened but not controlled. Is this what the title character of Johann Wolfgang von Goethe ’s Faust was saying when, after invoking the Devil, he complained: “Two souls dwell, alas! In my breast ”?

This is what modern Western occultism has to say on the subject. But is this truly related to the original concept of Baphomet that was supposedly whispered about in the secret rituals of the Knights Templar? Well, possibly, for it does seem that they knew about Abraxas, a figure that as we have seen is inherently related not only to Gnosticism but also to ritual magic. As it turns out, tokens and seals featuring the image of Abraxas and the words “Secretum Templi ” (“Secret of the Temple ”) have been found and connected to the Templars.

One was, according to Oddvar Olsen in The Templar Papers (2006), found by a man in Britain with a metal detector, and is now in the possession of the British Museum (where it is not, unfortunately, on display). Another pair of them was found among Templar property and are in the French National Archives in Paris. They appear, from the pictures we have seen, to go together. They are for sealing documents, and were to be pressed together with a piece of paper or parchment in between, to make an impression. In Gnostic Philosophy, Tobias Churton cites Sylvia Beamon 's 2011 book The Royston 's Cave: Used by Saints or Sinners? , where it says that this seal was used by one of the Temple 's grand masters, who at the time would have been Guillaume de Chartres. He writes:

It is striking that the seal depicted in Beamon 's book belonged to the grand master of the Templars and was used in a French charter dated October 1214.

However, the French researcher Michel Lamy, in his 1997 book Les Templiers, Ces Grands Seigneurs aux Blanes Manteaux (The Templars, the Great Lords of the White Mantles) talks about a document signed with this seal in that same year by “the Templar Preceptor of France. ” This makes us wonder if it is in fact the same document he is talking about, and if the title of the order 's French Preceptor has been conflated by these other authors with the actual grand master. At any rate, Lamy states that the document he is talking about deals with the division of a certain forest between the Templars and the King of France. As Lamy comments, “One cannot say that this is a particularly a hermetic text. ” He then goes on to suggest that the word secretum found on the seal meant simply that it was used on particularly important documents. However, this does not bar the possibility that the image was adopted by the Templars because to them it represented the real “secret ” of their “temple ” —the Temple of Solomon, or the Al-Aqsa Mosque that was built on top of the Temple Mount. This makes us wonder, then, if they meant to imply that Gnosis, or the transcendental power of Abraxas, was their secret. According to Tobias Churton, several other authors have already speculated about this, and connected it to Baphomet:

There have been suggestions that the figure represents Baphomet or “Baphometides, ” the baptism of wisdom; or, alternatively, Bios, Phos, Metis —Life, Light, Wisdom. The speculative possibilities are legion because we simply do not know why the grand master of the Templars should have employed such a figure.

It is not only people in modern times who have connected Baphomet and

Abraxas. Long before the Templar Abraxas tokens were found anywhere, Charles William King, in his 1887 book The Gnostics and Their Remains , quoted the late eighteenth-century writer Rudolf Erich Raspe (famous for his adaptations of the tales of “Baron Munchausen ”) on the subject (emphasis added):

The Gnosis of Basilides was an occult science which, according to his tenets, should be known only and communicated to one in thousands, and to two in ten thousands, and that if the Knights Templars were guilty of any offence at the time of their extermination, it was that of having adopted the doctrines of the Gnostics, and consequently of having renounced the established doctrine of the Church on the human nature of Christ, and on the Trinity: in the place of which they, with the Gnostics, professed one Supreme Being, Father and Creator of all the Powers which, emanating from him, have created and do govern this world. At their reception or initiation into the highest degree of the Order they received … the Baptism or Tincture of Wisdom; they were presented with a sign or symbol of their baptism, which was the Pentagon of Pythagoras; and they worshipped a kind of image or idol; that like the Abraxas … was the figure of a Bearded Old Man, or rather the representation of the only Supreme Being that they admitted and professed .

We are not familiar with the sight of a “bearded ” Abraxas. However, King explained that Raspe was referring to a particular representation of the figure found on a “gem ” that showed, as Raspe described it:

Abraxas, the Sun, or God-Father, or Demiurgus according to the Gnostics and necromancers. This head is crowned, the beard long, the hands crossed upon the breast: for the rest, he is formed as a Term, or a mummy. In the field are eight stars, probably an allusion to the eight Powers, or heavens, that are subordinate to them, according to Epiphanius. In the field are two Hebrew letters… .

The two Hebrew letters are “He ” and “Chet, ” the equivalent of “H ” and “Ch, ” respectively. The meaning of this is unknown. Regardless of this, and in spite of the fact that we have not yet seen the image described by Raspe, it must be admitted that the description reminds us of the allegedly bearded and mummified head supposedly worshipped by the Templars as an idol of Baphomet. If similar images exist elsewhere, and if they are as old as the Templars or older, they may have inspired the Templars to use Abraxas as an emblem of Baphomet, their deepest secret.

Charles William King didn ’t think much of the theories of Joseph von Hammer-Purgstall, declaring that any “sober archeologist ” would conclude that many of the “Templar artifacts ” presented in Mysterium Baphometis Revelatum , specifically several of the vases, are:

… nothing more than a portion of the paraphernalia of those Rosicrucian or alchemical quacks, who fattened upon the credulity of that arch- virtuoso, Rudolf II., ever since whose reign these “fonts ” have been treasured up in the Imperial Cabinet.

Rudolf II was the Hapsburg Holy Roman Emperor and King of Bohemia in the late sixteenth and early seventeenth century whose political failures, leading to the disastrous Thirty Years ’ War, are often blamed by historians on his preoccupation with the occult. Clearly, King thought that Hammer-Purgstall ’s artifacts may have been items that were collected by the emperor because of their seemingly esoteric nature, but could have had nothing to do with the Templars. At present it is impossible to say, as even after years of thorough investigation we have been unable to track down most of the original objects. However, unlike every other modern researcher on the subject, we did manage to find some of them, and this at least affords us the possibility of analyzing them, as we will discuss in the next chapter.

Chapter 9: Riding the Goat Current

Light and Darkness, life and death, right and left, are brothers of one another. They are inseparable. Because of this neither are the good good, nor evil evil, nor is life life, nor death death. For this reason each one will dissolve into its earliest origin. But those who are exalted above the world are indissoluble, eternal.

— The Gospel of Philip , 53

Since commencing our investigation of these matters, we have managed to bring to light much more regarding the origin of some of the images featured in Hammer-Purgstall ’s book. Most of the artifacts seem impossible to find now. They do not appear to be listed as what Hammer-Purgstall called them in any museum. The pictures that purportedly came from the walls of churches cannot be verified, as in most cases the churches (located in what are now Austria, Hungary, the Czech Republic, Germany and France) no longer exist. Even the townships they were in have changed names. However, one of the items, a coffer featuring the most striking image of “Mete ” (as he calls her) pulling down the Sun and Moon with chains, is in fact be in the British Museum now. As we mentioned previously, Hammer-Purgstall talks about but does not include the images from this object in his essay. But later, Thomas Wright did show the pictures in Worship of the Generative Powers , and said that this coffer came from the private collection of Louis, Duc de Blacas. Research into this confirmed that this collection had been sold some years ago to the British Museum, where Tracy R. Twyman found it in August of 2015, labeled as a limestone casket that has been:

… sculptured with crude figure of Cybele lifting up chains; sun and moon in top corners; pentagram and seven-pointed star with skull in lower corners; Arabic inscription round edges; sides carved with scene of human and animal sacrifices.

At the time of this writing, on the museum ’s website, only two sides of the coffer are shown. It is very hard to see what ’s going on in the images. We had to pay the museum to re-photograph the item, so that we could see all of the sides of the coffer clearly. Those pictures are featured in this book. They will also be included in the first-ever English translation of his Mysterium Baphometis Revelatum , which Tracy R. Twyman has commissioned, and was just completed at the time of this writing. This book, with new commentary by Twyman, will be available within a few months of the publication of the book which you are currently reading.

It seems a bit damaged, but on one side of the coffer, we see a bull being

held by the neck while a group of people sit around a flaming bowl. On another side, we see some similar themes to other images in Hammer-Purgstall 's book: a man wielding an ax (as well as a shovel) over a small child who is riding a crocodile. (Axes and crocodiles are featured in several of the other pictures.) This child is holding the right hand of a taller figure. To that person 's left, a smaller child is kneeling and holding his other hand. To the right of all of this we see a winged angel holding a serpent behind his back. In his left hand he holds the animal 's head, and in his right hand, the tail is coiled up into a circle.

On a third side of the coffer, there definitely seems to be an orgy depicted. Everyone shown there is naked and appears to be male. On the left edge, there is a man with his back to us. He is spreading the legs of someone in front of him, of whom only the legs can be seen. To the right of this, there is a large cauldron with what looks like a crocodile bring dragged into it. Bending over the cauldron from the right are two men who seem to be forcing the creature into the bowl. One of them is pouring something over it from a vase. Both of the men restraining the crocodile are bent over so that their bare buttocks are sticking up to the right, and from that side, another man is reaching with his right hand to fondle them. To the right of all of this, there is a short brick altar with a man sitting on it, and two others molesting him, one of whom appears to be a child, and who seems to have his backside pressed against the man behind him — the one who is touching the buttocks of the men leaning over the cauldron. Everyone in this picture seems to be smiling. On the left edge, next to the man with a pair of legs spread in front of him, there is what looks like a very large bird talon reaching up from out of nowhere.

On the fourth side of the coffer, we found the origin for a line drawing featured in Worship of the Generative Powers , which Wright had said was from the same coffer as the image of Mete pulling the chains, but which wasn 't shown in the Purgstall-Hammer book. On the left it shows a statue of a horned demon with breasts and male genitals —clearly Baphomet. There are no legs, but just a column below the genitals, like the classical Greek herm statues described in an earlier chapter. A man is kneeling beside this statue, kissing its buttocks (the osculum inflame of the Templars) and grabbing its testicles. A woman in a long dress stands over the kneeling figure on the right, pouring something onto him with a vase. To her right, a man holds another vase lazily in his right hand while a man to his left fondles him with his penis and testes visible. All of these things are shown in the drawing in Wright ’s book.

However, that ’s only half the image. To the right of this scene, there is more. We see a man riding what looks very much to be a goat. The creature has his front right hoof resting on the back of a man kneeling in front of him, who is helping to support a round tray full of vases that is being held by another man standing to the right. The man riding the goat is removing an item from the tray. To the right of everything, there is a winged and crowned creature with bird-like legs, including large talons for feet similar to the one sticking up from the ground on the left edge of the second side of the coffer, described above. The crown and facial features somewhat resemble those of Mete on the lid of the coffer.

We also found, in the Duc de Blacas collection, another coffer in near-perfect condition (except for the missing lid) which for some reason is labeled “fake. ” This item has not been featured, as far as we know, in any book or website ever, yet it is clearly part of the same group of items as the Mete coffer. The images found thereon are described in the following paragraphs.

On one side, a group of people are involved in very strange activity. To the left, we see a person stirring a cup in one hand with a large stick in the other. In front of him, another person kneels and fondles him. To their right, another man is pointing a stick to his right, over the head of another man who seems to be having sex with a hooved creature, the details of which are hard to make out beyond the bent hind legs. Whilst he mounts the animal, he is simultaneously stirring a bowl that sits on the ground with a large pole. The bowl has an object sticking out of it that may be a small child standing, and the animal ’s front paws or arms are on his head. To the right of this, another man is kneeling over the bowl, and reaching up over his head to the right to grasp what looks like an alchemical vessel by the neck, holding it over the flames of a brazier that sits on the ground to his right. To the right of the brazier, another man holds out his left hand and grasps the vessel by the neck as well. Over the brazier and the two men holding it, there is a banner tacked to the wall with a message in Arabic. The look of this banner, and the entire scene as well, makes it clear that this piece, “fake ” or not, was made by the same artist that made the coffer with the orgy scenes featured in Hammer-Purgstall ’s book. The poorly-written “Arabic ” letters on the banner are of the same style.

On side two of the “fake ” coffer that we discovered, we see someone being baptized, perhaps forcibly. He is standing waste-deep in a cauldron, bent forward, with his head buried in another man ’s hands, while a third man, standing on top of a bricked platform, pours something on his head from a vase above, just like in the previously described image of the crocodile being dragged into the cauldron. In the upper left, a disapproving owl (symbol of the wisdom goddesses Lilith, Athena and Minerva) scowls at the viewer. The man holding the other man ’s head is also looking at the viewer, as if we have walked in on a secret ceremony.

On the third side, a bull is on an altar being either worshipped or sacrificed. One of the participants clutches a stick like in the previous scenes, and holds out a garland as if to place it on the neck of the bull. Another kneels in front of it with a vase that looks like it might contain wine. One of them holds up a tau sign identical to those seen in several pictures featured by Hammer-Purgstall. Floating in the air next to the bull we see an equilateral cross. At the bottom of altar sits a billows for fanning flames, although no fire is featured in this scene. As to whether the bull is being worshipped or sacrificed, it seems that Thomas Wright thought the latter, for he described it thus and wrote that Hammer- Purgstall thought it was part of an Ophite Gnostic ceremony, adding:

The offering of a calf figures prominently among the Nossarii, or

Nessarenes, the Druses, and other sects in the East.

However, Hammer-Purgstall himself thought the Templars were involved in calf worship, and that this was directly related to their rituals to Baphomet. At least, that ’s what he wrote in his introduction to Ancient Alphabets and Hieroglyphic Characters Explained by Ibn Wahshiyya, published twelve years before Mysterium Baphometis Revelatum and containing the beetle-like “Hermetic ” hieroglyph of Baphomet, or, rather, “Bahumed. ” There Hammer- Purgstall declares

It is written Bahumid , and translated into Arabic by the word calf .

It is superfluous to recall here to the memory of the reader the great antiquity and mysterious sense of the idolatrous veneration in which this calf has been continually held. It is superfluous to repeat any thing that has been said on the worship of Apis in Egypt, renewed by the Israelites in the worship of the calf, and preserved in the mysterious rites of the Druses. Let us remember only a circumstance which shows wonderfully the concordance and relation of the name of Bahumid and its translation.

Bahumed or Bahumet is related in the History of the Templars to have been one of their secret and mysterious formulas, with which they addressed the idol of a calf in their secret assemblies. Different etymological explanations and descriptions of this word have been brought forward, but none surely so satisfactory as this, which proves that the Templars had some acquaintance with the hieroglyphics [presumably, the “Hermetic ” hieroglyphs that are the subject of the book], probably acquired in Syria.

Notably, in the actual text by Ibn Wahshiyya, he does that the hieroglyph can be identified with the name “Kharuf, ” which he does translate as “calf, ” but seems to indicate that this is another name for the concept symbolized by the hieroglyph, “The Secret of Secrets, ” in addition to “Bahumed. ” He does not seem to be saying that “calf ” is in any way a translation of the word “Bahumed. ” This detail, connecting Baphomet and calf worship, helps us imagine what must have been going Hammer-Purgstall ’s mind when he saw this casket, considering that he ’d already gone on record proclaiming that the Templars practiced this particular form of idolatry.

Returning to the box in question, we find, on the remaining side, a man slumped backwards as if dead has been placed on a flaming brick altar, on top of some logs, while two men lift up their hands in worship towards an unseen god. The lid of the coffer is apparently missing. All of the people featured in all of the pictures on both coffers seem short and malformed, like demons or gargoyles.

The Louis, Duc de Blacas collection also contains a great many Gnostic talismans featuring the figures of Abraxas, Bes and Ialdabaoth. The pictures are similar, and in some cases seemingly identical to those found on some of the coins featured in Hammer-Purgstall ’s book. We did not find any other coffers of a similar nature, nor any of Hammer-Purgstall ’s “bowls ” or other artifacts, nor did we find anything else in the de Blacas collection labeled “fake. ”

Although the second, “fake ” coffer does not appear to be discussed in detail anywhere in known literature, it must be the second coffer mentioned by Peter Partner when he viciously derided Joseph von Hammer-Purgstall ’s work in his 1987 book The Murdered Magicians: The Templars and Their Myth . Partner sees Hammer-Purgstall ’s theories as an outgrowth of the paranoia, rampant during his time, about Adam Weishaupt ’s Bavarian Illuminati, a real secret society that had operated through Masonic lodges in Europe to foster republican revolutions against the crowns. Partner basically accuses Hammer-Purgstall, and all of his informants for the research of Mysterium Baphometis Revelatum , of being part of their own vast right-wing conspiracy to discredit the French revolution by connecting it, via the Illuminati, then Freemasonry, and then Templarism, to heresy, Satanism, and debauchery. Partner wrote of Hammer- Purgstall ’s physical evidence, the “Templar artifacts, ” that:

A few of the archeological exhibits may have been forgeries from the occultist workshops; there is an especially suspicious pair of so-called “Templar caskets, ” found after the publication of Hammer ’s first article, which were supposed to have been medieval artefacts of Templar provenance. The Gnostic “orgies ” depicted on these supposedly medieval caskets are uncannily like the late classical objects which had a few years earlier been published in the original “Baphomet ” thesis. The “medieval ” caskets had come into the possession of the Duc de Blacas. Since Blacas was a leading figure in the reactionary French government, and a close personal friend of the renegade Freemason Joseph de Maistre, it is not impossible that they were forged on his behalf. Whether they were forged or not, Hammer failed to prove that they had anything to do with the Templars.

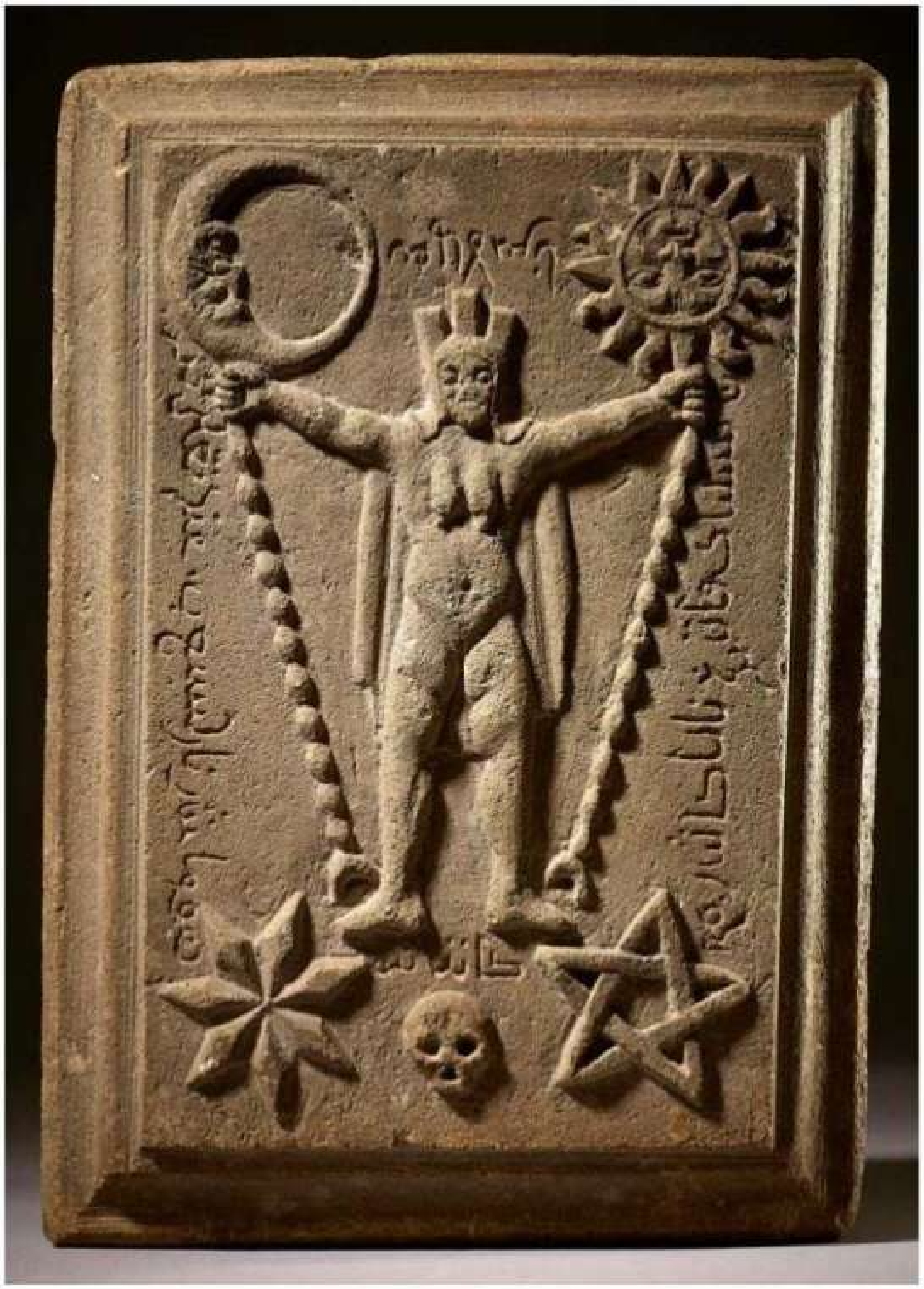

First casket, lid.

First casket, side one.

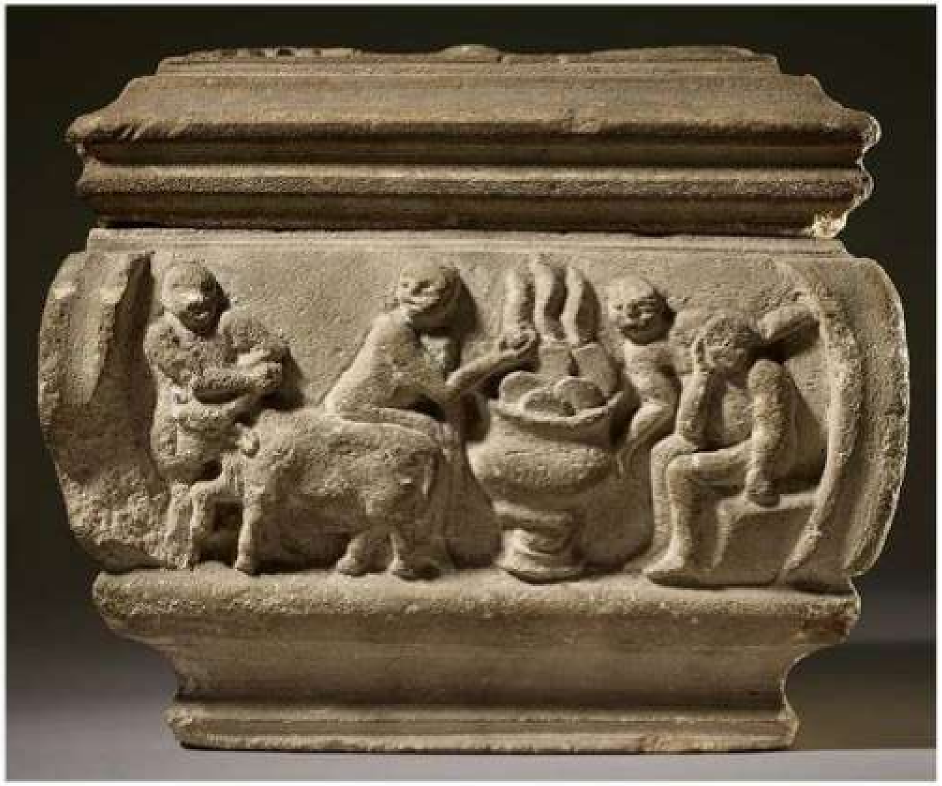

First casket, side two.

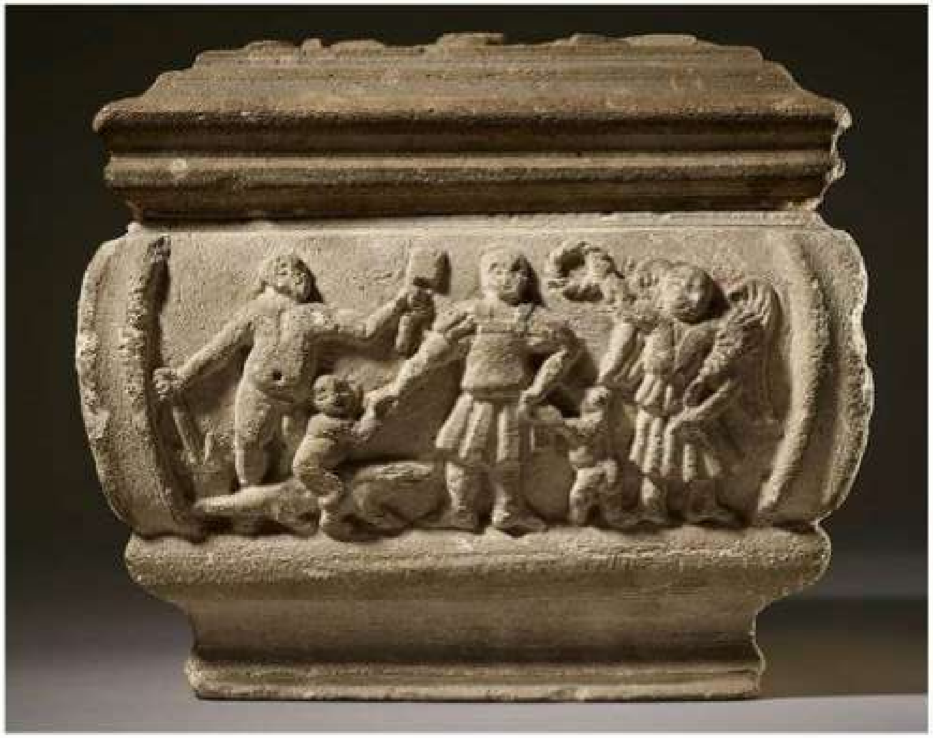

First casket, side three.

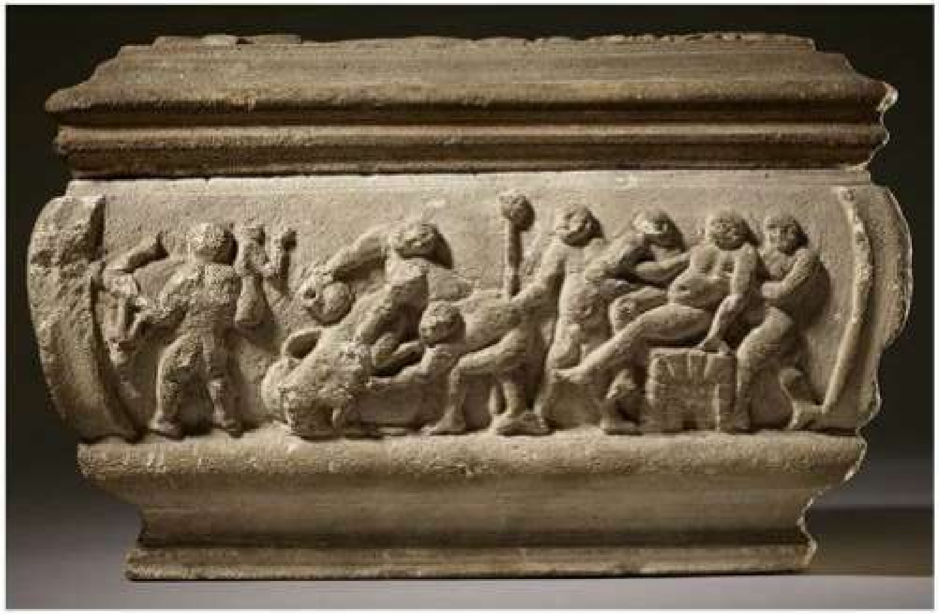

First casket, side four.

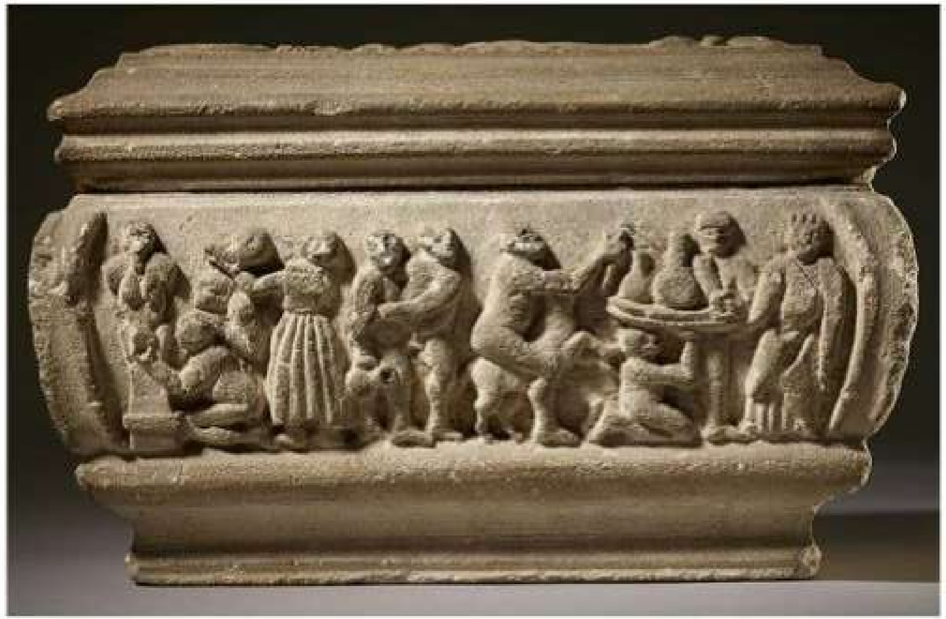

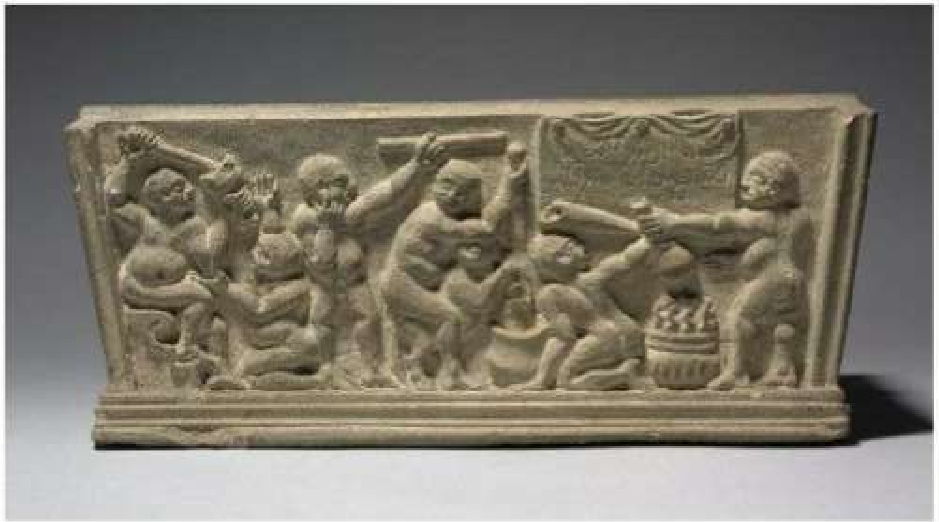

Second casket, side one.

Second casket, side three.

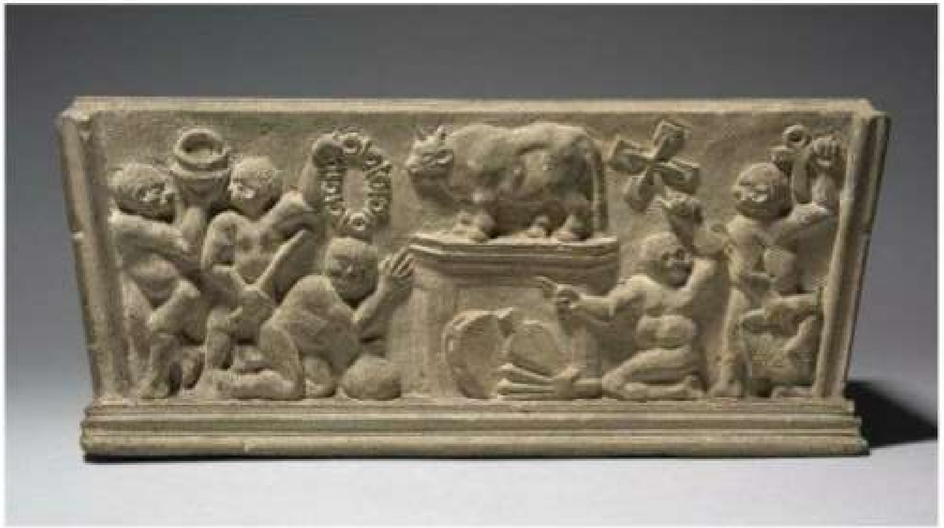

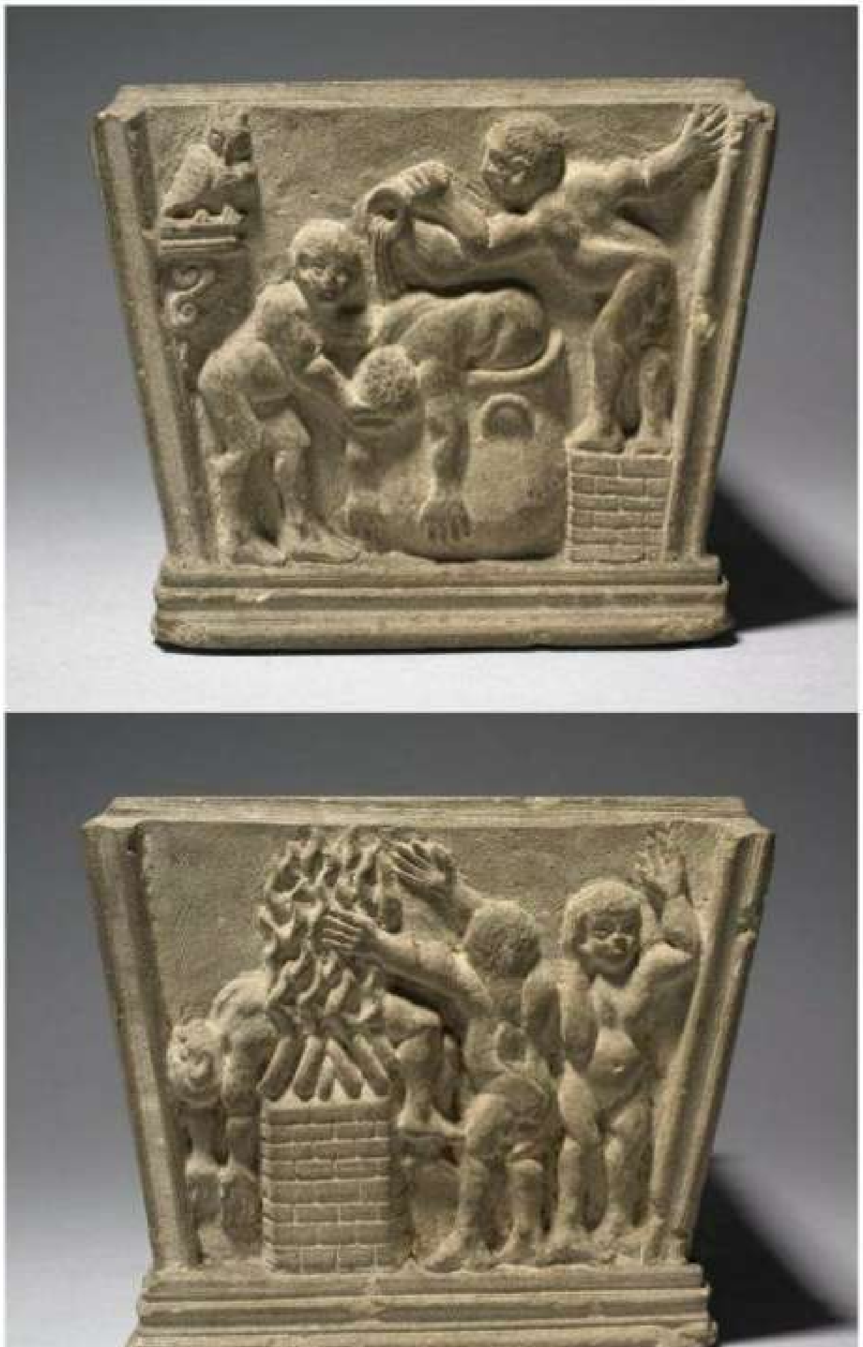

Second casket, side two (above) and side four (below).

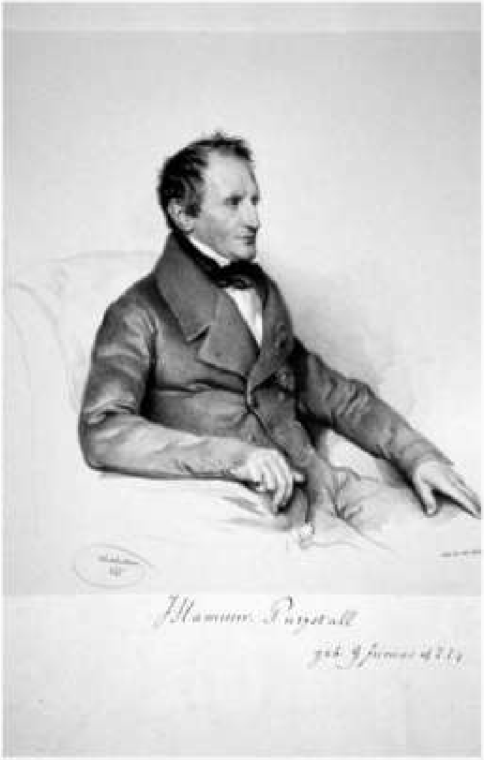

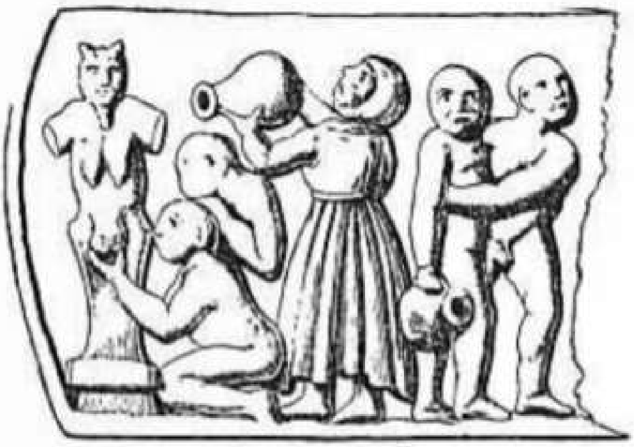

Above: Baron Joseph von Hammer-Purgstall. Lithograph by Josef Kriehuber, 1843. Below: Line drawing from Thomas Wright's *Worship of the Generative Powers*, the source of which was found to be one of the caskets we discovered in the British Museum.

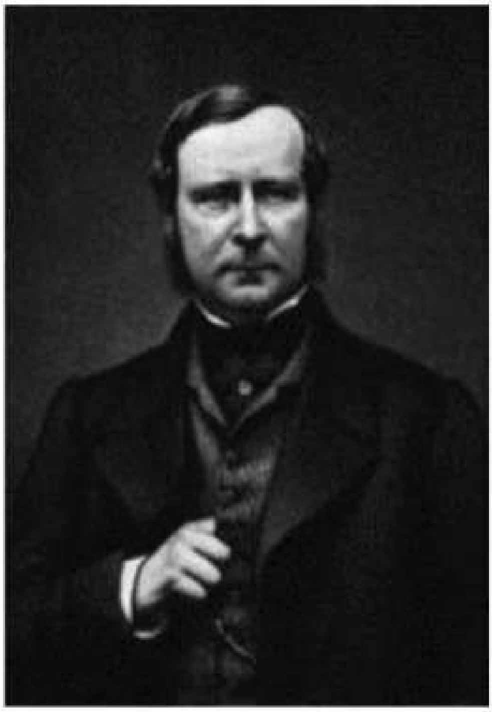

Left: Louis de Blacas d'Aulps, 2nd Duc de Blacas.

Right: Louis' father, Pierre Louis Jean Casimir de Blacas.

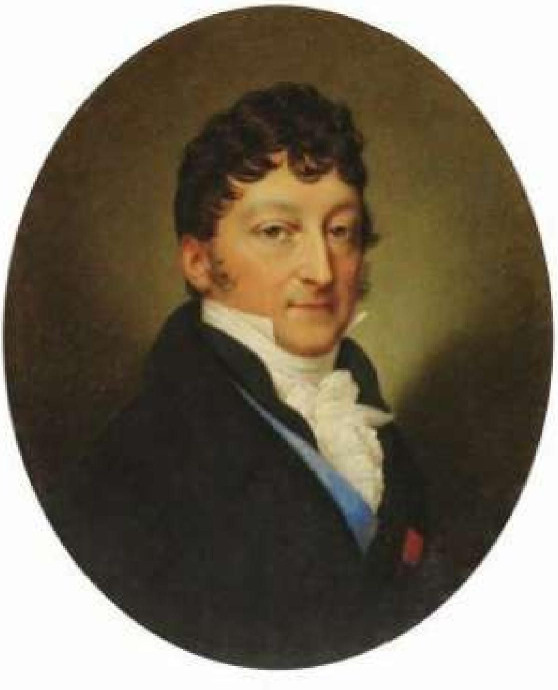

Partner derides Hammer-Purgstall ’s school of Orientalism, and basically the entire field of comparative mythology, as well as the anthropology of religion, as the obsessions of older less rational generations, tying it to “Romanticism ”:

Like so many early modern students of religious origins, he sought to establish a pattern of primitive pagan religion which had survived Christianity in various deviant ways… . The Romantic movement was passionately addicted to such theories of primitive religion.

He then wonders:

How was it that a writer enrolled in the service of rampant conservatism, whose duty it was to demonstrate that advanced radical thought was subverting the foundations of Christian civilization, ended by seeming to show that Christianity had always existed alongside another, more primitive and perhaps more powerful religion?

His evidence that Hammer-Purgstall was “enrolled in the service of rampant conservatism ” seems to be that he worked as a diplomat for the government of Austria, and that some of the artifacts he showed in his book were owned by the Duc de Blacas, a so-called “reactionary ” (as would describe any politically-active nobleman at this time who did not want to lose his land and titles). Partner wrote:

Hammer was not employed by Metternich, the greatest conservative minister in western Europe, for nothing. The whole drift of Hammer ’s argument is in the sense of that used by the ubiquitous Abbe Barruel. Everything connects, from the Gnostics of the early Church, to the Albigensians in the west, the Assassins in the east, thence to the Templars, thence to the Freemasons, thence to the revolutionary anarchists. In 1818, the political order of European conservatism was making its greatest effort to master the threat of radical ideology and radical sedition. The center of that effort was in Vienna, where Hammer was employed by the Austrian Chancery.

You are free to decide what you think about Partner ’s reasoning skills, which he seems to think are superior to Hammer-Purgstall ’s, perhaps due to his being born into a world that has benefited from the influence of “advanced radical thought ” (from the anti-royalist revolutionaries, apparently). Partner also claimed that “the medieval French word for Muhammad was ‘Baphomet, ’ as any competent scholar in Old French could have told [Hammer-Purgstall]. ” This is not borne out by the evidence of our investigation (benefitting from being born into our own advanced information age), for as we explained in Chapter Two, the French word for Mohammed was actually just “Mahomet ” (although some claimed that Baphomet could have somehow been a corruption of this). One would think that the French occult scholar Eliphas Levi, who contributed so much to the lore of Baphomet, would have been perfectly aware of this if it were true, as would his entire contemporary reading audience.

In the mid-nineteenth century, a few years after the publication of Hammer-Purgstall ’s work on the Templars, Pope Pius IX issued an “Allocution Against the Freemasons, ” which said a lot about the Templars as well (and which we have quoted from a bit already). Strangely the place where it is easiest to find an English translation of at least a large segment of this document is in Albert Pike ’s Morals and Dogma , where he quoted from it at length. We will now give you that entire section verbatim, as each word of it is precious:

A power that ruled without antagonism and without concurrence, and consequently without control, proved fatal to the Sacerdotal Royalties; while the Republics, on the other hand, had perished by the conflict of liberties and franchises, which, in the absence of all duty hierarchically sanctioned and enforced, had soon become mere tyrannies, rivals one of the other. To find a stable medium between these two abysses, the idea of the Christian Hierophants was to create a society devoted to abnegation by solemn vows, protected by severe regulations; which should be recruited by initiation, and which, sole depositary of the great religious and social secrets, should make Kings and Pontiffs, without exposing it to the corruptions of Power. In that was the secret of that kingdom of Jesus Christ, which, without being of this world, would govern all its grandeurs.

This idea presided at the foundation of the great religious orders, so often at war with the secular authorities, ecclesiastical or civil. Its realization was also the dream of the dissident sects of Gnostics or Illuminati who pretended to connect their faith with the primitive tradition of the Christianity of Saint John. It at length became a menace for the Church and Society, when a rich and dissolute Order, initiated in the mysterious doctrines of the Kabalah, seemed disposed to turn against legitimate authority the conservative principle of Hierarchy, and threatened the entire world with an immense revolution.

The Templars, whose history is so imperfectly known, were those terrible conspirators. In 1118, nine Knights Crusaders in the East, among whom were Geoffroi de Saint-Omer and Hugues de Payens, consecrated themselves to religion, and took an oath between the hands of the Patriarch of Constantinople, a See always secretly or openly hostile to that of Rome from the time of Photius. The avowed object of the Templars was to protect the Christians who came to visit the Holy Places: their secret object was the re-building of the Temple of Solomon on the model prophesied by Ezekiel.

This re-building, formally predicted by the Judaizing Mystics of the earlier ages, had become the secret dream of the Patriarchs of the Orient. The Temple of Solomon, re-built and consecrated to the Catholic worship would become, in effect, the Metropolis of the Universe; the East would prevail over the West, and the Patriarchs of Constantinople would possess themselves of the Papal power.

The Templars, or Poor Fellow-Soldiery of the Holy House of the Temple intended to be re-built, took as their models, in the Bible, the Warrior- Masons of Zorobabel, who worked, holding the sword in one hand and the trowel in the other. Therefore it was that the Sword and the Trowel were the insignia of the Templars, who subsequently, as will be seen, concealed themselves under the name of Brethren Masons.

The trowel of the Templars is quadruple, and the triangular plates of it are arranged in the form of a cross, making the Kabalistic pantacle known by the name of the Cross of the East. The Knight of the East, and the Knight of the East and West, have in their titles secret allusions to the Templars of whom they were at first the successors.

The secret thought of Hugues de Payens, in founding his Order, was not exactly to serve the ambition of the Patriarchs of Constantinople. There existed at that period in the East a Sect of Johannite Christians, who claimed to be the only true Initiates into the real mysteries of the religion of the Saviour. They pretended to know the real history of YESUS the ANOINTED, and, adopting in part the Jewish traditions and the tales of the Talmud, they held that the facts recounted in the Evangels are but allegories, the key of which Saint John gives, in saying that the world might be filled with the books that could be written upon the words and deeds of Jesus Christ; words which, they thought, would be only a ridiculous exaggeration, if he were not speaking of an allegory and a legend, that might be varied and prolonged to infinity.

The Johannites ascribed to Saint John the foundation of their Secret Church, and the Grand Pontiffs of the Sect assumed the title of Christos, Anointed, or Consecrated, and claimed to have succeeded one another from Saint John by an uninterrupted succession of pontifical powers. He who, at the period of the foundation of the Order of the Temple, claimed these imaginary prerogatives, was named THEOCLET; he knew HUGUES DE PAYENS, he initiated him into the Mysteries and hopes of his pretended church, he seduced him by the notions of Sovereign Priesthood and Supreme royalty, and finally designated him as his successor.

Thus the Order of Knights of the Temple was at its very origin devoted to the cause of opposition to the tiara of Rome and the crowns of Kings, and the Apostolate of Kabalistic Gnosticism was vested in its chiefs. For Saint John himself was the Father of the Gnostics, and the current translation of his polemic against the heretical of his Sect and the pagans who denied that Christ was the Word, is throughout a misrepresentation, or misunderstanding at least, of the whole Spirit of that Evangel.

The tendencies and tenets of the Order were enveloped in profound mystery, and it externally professed the most perfect orthodoxy. The Chiefs alone knew the aim of the Order: the Subalterns followed them without distrust.

To acquire influence and wealth, then to intrigue, and at need to fight, to establish the Johannite or Gnostic and Kabalistic dogma, were the object and means proposed to the initiated Brethren. The Papacy and the rival monarchies, they said to them, are sold and bought in these days, become corrupt, and to-morrow, perhaps, will destroy each other. All that will become the heritage of the Temple: the World will soon come to us for its Sovereigns and Pontiffs. We shall constitute the equilibrium of the Universe, and be rulers over the Masters of the World.

The Templars, like all other Secret Orders and Associations, had two doctrines, one concealed and reserved for the Masters, which was Johannism; the other public, which was the Roman Catholic. Thus they deceived the adversaries whom they sought to supplant. Hence Free- Masonry, vulgarly imagined to have begun with the Dionysian Architects or the German Stone-workers, adopted Saint John the Evangelist as one of its patrons, associating with him, in order not to arouse the suspicions of Rome, Saint John the Baptist, and thus covertly proclaiming itself the child of the Kabalah and Essenism together.

The better to succeed and win partisans, the Templars sympathized with regrets for dethroned creeds and encouraged the hopes of new worships, promising to all liberty of conscience and a new orthodoxy that should be the synthesis of all the persecuted creeds.

The seeds of decay were sown in the Order of the Temple at its origin. Hypocrisy is a mortal disease. It had conceived a great work which it was incapable of executing, because it knew neither humility nor personal abnegation, because Rome was then invincible, and because the later Chiefs of the Order did not comprehend its mission. Moreover, the Templars were in general uneducated, and capable only of wielding the sword, with no qualifications for governing, and at need enchaining, that queen of the world called Opinion.

Hughes de Payens himself had not that keen and far-sighted intellect nor that grandeur of purpose which afterward distinguished the military founder of another soldiery that became formidable to kings. The Templars were unintelligent and therefore unsuccessful Jesuits.

Their watchword was, to become wealthy, in order to buy the world. They became so, and in 1312 they possessed in Europe alone more than nine thousand seignories. Riches were the shoal on which they were wrecked. They became insolent, and unwisely showed their contempt for the religious and social institutions which they aimed to overthrow. Their ambition was fatal to them. Their projects were divined and prevented. Pope Clement V and King Philip le Bel gave the signal to Europe, and the Templars, taken as it were in an immense net, were arrested, disarmed, and cast into prison. Never was a Coup d 'Etat accomplished with a more formidable concert of action. The whole world was struck with stupor, and eagerly waited for the strange revelations of a process that was to echo through so many ages.

It was impossible to unfold to the people the conspiracy of the Templars against the Thrones and the Tiara. It was impossible to expose to them the doctrines of the Chiefs of the Order. The Templars were gravely accused of spitting upon Christ and denying God at their receptions, of gross obscenities, conversations with female devils, and the worship of a monstrous idol.

The end of the drama is well known, and how Jacques de Molai and his fellows perished in the flames. But before his execution, the Chief of the doomed Order organized and instituted what afterward came to be called the Occult, Hermetic, or Scottish Masonry. In the gloom of his prison, the Grand Master created four Metropolitan Lodges, at Naples for the East, at Edinburg for the West, at Stockholm for the North, and at Paris for the South.

The Pope and the King soon after perished in a strange and sudden manner. Squin de Florian, the chief denouncer of the Order, died assassinated. In breaking the sword of the Templars, they made of it a poniard; and their proscribed trowels thence-forward built only tombs

The Successors of the Ancient Adepts Rose-Croix, abandoning by degrees the austere and hierarchial Science of their

Ancestors in initiation, became a Mystic Sect, united with many of the Templars, the dogmas of the two intermingling, and believed themselves to be the sole depositaries of the secrets of the Gospel of St. John, seeing in its recitals an allegorical series of rites proper to complete the initiation.

The Initiates, in fact, thought in the eighteenth century that their time had arrived, some to found a new Hierarchy, others to overturn all authority, and to press down all the summits of the Social Order under the level of Equality.

So here we have the Pope (Pius IX, otherwise known to history for proclaiming his own “infallibility ” and that of his predecessor pontiffs) accusing the Templars of a long-standing conspiracy against the Church and the crown heads of Europe to take over the world, and of wanting to rebuild the Temple in Jerusalem. He also claimed that they were involved in Johannism, Cabalism, Gnosticism, Essenism, and Rosicrucianism. He said that the Freemasons were heirs not only to the same traditions, but the same revolutionary goals. However, after his Allocution was published, the Pope was accused of hypocrisy by several Masons in print, who claimed that he himself was known to be a member of the Lodge!

Today, the latest word from the Church about Freemasonry goes back to a statement made by Joseph Ratzinger (the future Pope Benedict XVI) in 1983, approved by John Paul II, that said: “The faithful who enroll in Masonic associations are in a state of grave sin and may not receive Holy Communion… . [M]embership in them remains forbidden. ” This statement had to be made because the revised Canon Law which was issued that year had made the penalty for joining, which is excommunication, implicit instead of explicit, and many people took that as a green light signal. Today this penalty is never enforced, but we can assume that the official stance towards the lodge is still one of disapproval (despite the fact that the Vatican ’s own bank was at one time heavily infiltrated by a Roman Catholic Masonic lodge, called Propaganda Due , that doubled as an organized crime syndicate).

But the real change in attitude from the Church is towards Templarism. In 2007, during Benedict XVI ’s reign, a book called Processus Contra Templarios was published by the Vatican in a limited edition of 799 copies selling for $9000 each. It purported to reveal the “truth ” about a document they had dubbed the “Chinon Parchment. ” It had been purportedly discovered six years earlier in the Vatican Secret Archives by a paleographist who worked there named Barbara Frale, “misfiled, ” allegedly, for 700 years. The book release was timed to coincide with the 700th anniversary of the arrest of the Templars by the French police on October 13, 1307, and gained a great deal of attention from the international press.

What grabbed the headlines was the extraordinary claim that the document proved that Pope Clement V had held his own trial of the Templar leadership after King Philip IV ’s, the results of which had “exhonerated ” knights and proved that they were “innocent ” after all. These were the terms used in newspaper articles that were published. They were also the words used by Barbara Frale herself when she published a more accessible book on the subject several years later, called The Templars: The Secret History Revealed . This would certainly seem newsworthy: both the discovery of the document, and the revision of history that its existence would apparently require.

The only thing is that once you read what Frale writes about what ’s actually in the document, you find that it proves nothing of the sort. If fact, trying to follow Frale ’s version of the story of the end of the Templars, it quickly becomes very confusing, mostly because of the meaning she attaches to certain elements of it. She has her own spin on things, but frequently asserts these opinions as though they are facts. It was these assertions that journalists repeated unquestioningly. For instance, here is an utterly misleading description of the document ’s content from BBC News, using Frale ’s own words:

However, according to Prof Frale, study of the document shows that the knights were not heretics as had been believed for 700 years.

In fact she says “the Pope was obliged to ask for pardons from the

knights … the document we have found absolves them. ”

Actually, according to the Parchment, they did confess to what most Christians today would consider blasphemy, including denying Christ and spitting on the cross, as the BBC article states:

In the hearings before Clement V, the knights reportedly admitted spitting on the cross, denying Jesus and kissing the lower back of the man proposing them during initiation ceremonies.

This mention of the “kiss on the lower back ” (which was also applied to the navel and mouth, according to the document) is as close as the BBC comes to addressing one of the most shocking things that one of the knights, Hughes de Perraud, confessed to Clement ’s cardinals: that the brotherhood had a doctrine condoning —even insisting upon —homosexuality. As the show relates, the knights were obliged to swear off all contact with women the moment they joined the order (dumping their wives and children, in many instances). So, as one of the knights told the cardinals questioning him, they were instructed that if they couldn ’t control their desires, they should turn to each other for relief, and not refuse one another ’s advances. As Frale wrote in her book:

[T]he preceptor exhorted the new Templar not to have sexual relations with women, inviting him, should he absolutely not be able to live chastely, to unite with his brothers and not refuse them should they request sexual favors from him. The novice often reacted angrily, but there were no consequences because the ritual sequence did not provide for any concrete application of this “precept of homosexuality. ”

As far as the absolution the BBC refers to in their article, this was the absolution of sin after confession, which of course the cardinals had the right to issue. It in no way negated the fact that the sin had taken place. But why did the BBC ’s writers have the wrong idea here? Even the Catholic News Agency presented the news with this spin when Frale ’s book came out in 2007, using the word “exonerated ”:

The investigation took place in Rome between 1307 and 1312. According to the document, Pope Clement V exonerated the Templars on the charge of heresy, but found them guilty of other infractions. He also ordered the

Knights Templar to disband.

The BBC article had also used the word “exonerated, ” and went even further:

The official who found the paper says it exonerates the knights entirely. The last sentence refers to Ms. Frale. One can certainly see upon

inspecting her book where the authors of the news articles got their ideas. In the first chapter, she declares that her discovery has finally set the record straight on the Templar issue, even using the word “innocent ”:

[The Chinon Parchment] reveals that the grand master and other high- ranking Templars were found innocent of the charges of heresy, were absolved for less serious offenses by the apostolic authority, and were fully integrated into the Catholic community. Historians believed that the Templars were innocent of the charges brought against them by Philip IV, but many outside academia still suspected the Templars of having been heretics and occultists. The Chinon Parchment is the definitive and incontrovertible proof of the Templars ’ innocence and should finally put this question to rest.

Apparently, only the uneducated ever had any doubt in the first place! Now this word “innocence, ” which has now been repeated by so many other writers on the subject without any qualifications, could only conceivably be used in regards to the very narrow definition of heresy given by Ms. Frale. After describing the juicy details of the secret Templar initiation ceremony, as the knights confessed it to Clement ’s cardinals, she says:

Although it was an unworthy tradition that the Templars had further embellished with other vulgar and violent practices, under no circumstances could it be confused with heresy, an offense that implied a strict and long-term adherence to subversive doctrines.

So the Templars were not heretics, she thinks, because their bizarre practices were not part of a religious lifestyle to the individual knights, who, perhaps at least initially, had no idea why they were being asked to do these things. She tells the story of the circumstances that led up to the papal inquiry. Prior to sending the cardinals to question the knights, and prior to Philip ’s arrest of them, in March 1307 Pope Clement personally interviewed a couple of them. First he called in grand master Jacques de Molay himself “and immediately demanded an explanation for the infamous rumors of the idol said to be secretly venerated in the Temple… . ” This the grand master denied, and insisted that the matter be investigated to clear the Order ’s reputation. She writes:

> The grand master of the Templars, indignant at the rumors the sovereign had been spreading, expressly requested the pope to open an inquest into the state of the Temple so as to demonstrate that the slanderous

accusations were unfounded… .

“Slander ” of course would mean that they were the targets of willful lies. But is that what we ’re talking about here? When the Pope then interviewed Hughes de Perraud, he “confirmed to the pope that the Templars practiced a ritual that required new members to spit on the cross during their induction ceremony. ”

After the knights were arrested by Philip, Clement sent the cardinals to question the leaders mentioned, and that is when they all, including De Molay, confirmed many of the accusations, as we have discussed. That is also when all of the details about the initiation ceremony finally came out. Frale ’s description of events is full of contradictions. For instance, she writes:

The written statutes of the Temple, which date back to the second half of the thirteenth century, contain the complete text of the initiation ceremony.

But she then admits that the controversial final elements of the ceremony were not written in the Rule, and “can be constructed only from the testimony given at the trial. ” So the statutes didn ’t in fact give the complete ceremony, as she ’d said earlier. According to her, after the knight had sworn his oath to the Order and donned his mantle, he was taken to an ante room, where he was suddenly told to spit on the cross to prove his obedience. Frale gives the details of the ceremony, which she put together from all of the similar elements found in each of the confessions:

A systematic analysis of all the testimony revealed that at this point most of the brothers resigned themselves to doing what had been commanded, perhaps attempting to spit in the direction of the cross without actually hitting it, while others adamantly refused… . Sometimes a candidate ’s firmness was respected, and he was asked nothing more, but more often his brothers threatened him with prison or death, beating him brutally with their bare fists or holding a sword to his throat. Then the preceptor gave him the kiss of monastic brotherhood —on the mouth. Often this kiss, common to all religious orders, was followed by two more kisses on the belly and the posterior, which was usually covered by the tunic, but at times there were officiators who exposed their bottoms and, according to some witnesses, even obscenely proposed kisses on the penis. Most postulants obeyed without arguing when the request was moderately humiliating, such as a kiss on the behind, and refused in more extreme cases. While the preceptors demanded that a postulant at least deny Christ or spit on the cross, they usually overlooked a refusal of kisses, and unwilling candidates were not forced to comply.

Now a couple of questions about this clearly need to be asked. For one thing, does spitting on the cross and denying faith in Jesus constitute blasphemy for a Christian knight? Well, Ms. Frale manages to describe the spiritual consequences of this without actually using that term:

Although it was clear that they were not heretics, it was equally clear that under church doctrine they were guilty, albeit of a much lesser offence. According to canon law, anyone who commits an act of rejection of the faith, even if he does so without conviction, removes himself from the Catholic community, effectively excommunicating himself. The excommunicant can be absolved of his guilt but cannot be acquitted.

At this point in the story, the knights had been excommunicated, but this decision got reverse later, according to the Chinon Parchment, for reasons we will discuss shortly.

The second question that comes to mind after learning the details of the Parchment is this: why was more of an issue not made about the institutionalized homosexuality in the Order? According to Frale, Pope Clement wanted to assign the knights penance, grant them absolution (forgiveness), reverse their excommunication, and then combine the Order with the Knights Hospitaller so that he could launch a new Crusade. How could he even think of doing this in medieval Catholic Europe with a bunch of guys who had all been kissing each others ’ butts and penises at the very least, and who had sworn not to refuse each others ’ sexual advances? The Parchment even details the initiation of an eleven- year-old relative of the king of England, who was purportedly subject to the same treatment (and pathetically begged for his uncle to save him when they told him to spit on the cross). Frale seems to think that almost no homosexual activity occurred beyond the homoerotic initiation rite and oath. She writes:

The surviving trial testimony consists of approximately one thousand depositions with only six attesting to homosexual relations, all of which were described as long-term relationships that almost always had a dimension of affection… .

As for the sexual humiliation and forced alienation from God that each knight experienced during initiation, Frale says that these feelings were alleviated afterwards because the neophytes were encouraged to confess their “sins ” immediately afterwards. This is in fact how all those “slanderous ” rumors got started, she says – you know, the slanderous rumors that accurately stated exactly what the Templars were doing? As she put it:

At the end of the ceremony, the “victim ” of all these impositions was invited to report to the chaplain of the order to confess the sins he had just committed and ask for forgiveness. The priests of the Temple comforted these penitents by telling them that they had not committed grave offenses and that if they demonstrated remorse and shame, they would be absolved. Often, however, the brothers confessed to priests outside the Temple, generally Franciscans or Dominicans, who, naturally, were dumbfounded and amplified the brothers ' moral disquiet by telling them that they had committed mortal sins, sometimes encouraging them to leave the order. These indiscretions of these honest priests, who were totally ignorant of the real function of the secret ceremony within the Temple, undoubtedly contributed to the gossip circulating in the secular world about the "dark side " of the order.

So what on Earth was the supposed reason for doing any of this stuff in the first place, if they were not heretics or even "occultists, " as she put it? Ms. Frale trips all over herself to argue that it was just a test of the postulant 's mettle.

Bernard of Clairvaux … insisted on inserting into the text of the Rule a clause exhorting the leaders of the order not to accept new vocations too hurriedly, but rather to subject candidates to a test to ascertain their character and commitment. The exact nature of the test is unclear. Bernard elegantly alluded to Saint Paul 's advice to "put them to the test to see if they come from God… . "

The written Rule offers no details as to how the preceptor might discourage postulants who were less than totally convincing… .

In her imagination, without specific instruction it was only logical that over time tests would be devised that involved blaspheming Jesus and making people kiss their private parts. But she simultaneously makes two contradictory claims about the purpose of this:

1) To see if a candidate would have the courage not to renounce Christ if the Saracens tried to force him to.

2) To see if a candidate would be obedient to his superiors no matter what. So which were they looking for: loyalty to the Order, or loyalty to Christ

and Christian morality? Apparently, nobody flunked the test no matter how they reacted. Frale 's opinion on the matter is confusing (especially when she claims that it has somehow been established by the evidence of the Parchment whilst still admitting that it ’s purely theoretical on her part). Regarding the need for strict obedience within the Order, she states:

A cardinal point of the Templars ’ ethical code was absolute obedience to one ’s immediate superiors… .

As for the idea that they were testing their recruits to see how they ’d stand up to the religious persuasion tactics of the Muslim enemy, here is what she bases it on. She says:

Perhaps they [did these things] because it immediately confronted the new Templar with the violence that he would be subjected to if he were captured by the Saracens.

…

We know that the Saracens used to beat and torture capture Christians, forcing them to deny Christ and spit on the cross before ultimately compelling them to convert to Islam. ”

…

The ritual took place according to a fixed script based on the actual experiences of Templar escapees from Muslim prisons, and dated back to the earliest days of the order … Over time, extraneous elements were added, such as the kiss on the buttocks, a true example of hazing aimed at humiliating the recruit in front of the veterans, and the verbal exhortation to homosexuality, which probably started as a parody of the precept that required Templars to give their whole selves to the order and to their brethren. These vulgar and derisive practices were typical of the often crude behavior found among military corps, and probably arose when the order ’s traditional discipline began to deteriorate.

This does not seem to fit with the existing legend of the brave Templar knight. How is it that men who were charged never to retreat on the battlefield when fighting Muslims for God would crumple under a bit of peer pressure when asked by their superiors to renounce Christ? Also, how does committing the blasphemy beforehand, without torture, help to prevent you from doing so again later under torture from the enemy? If renouncing Christ is a big deal with real spiritual ramifications, and they were being trained to avoid having to do that, why would they go ahead and commit the blasphemy during the training?

At any rate, this is what the Templars confessed to, twice, both to the king of France ’s inquisitors, and to the Pope ’s. So while they may have had their reasons (if you follow and believe Frale ’s twisted apologist logic), and while they may have been absolved (as any murderer or rapist who confessed to a priest would be), they were certainly not innocent, either by contemporary standards, or today ’s.

But it does seem that when Frale says “exhonerated, ” she means reconciled with the Church. She seems to place all the importance on the Templars ’ charter and the fact that it put them under the sole authority of the Pope. She completely rejects the notion that the king of France should have anything to say about the activities of the knights who were stationed in his country. She constantly describes Clement as having the best of intentions. She says he wanted to use his power to protect them, but was constantly thwarted by the king of France trying to “illegally ” (her word) claim jurisdiction over them.

The battle for political supremacy between the French crown and the Papacy had been going on for several years. The election of Clement, historians say, had been orchestrated by Philip IV in the first place, as he felt that Clement could be a useful puppet. He then insisted that Clement move the seat of St. Peter from Rome to Avignon, France, where it remained until 1378. Prior to this, there had been a feud between Philip and Clement ’s predecessor, Pope Boniface VIII.

It is interesting that, according to a National Geographic documentary

that featured Frale, one of the ways in which Philip kept Clement in line was by threatening to publicly accuse Clement of heresy as well. Furthermore, as she states in her book, Philip even wanted to exhume the bones of Pope Boniface VIII and put him on trial as “a heretic, a blasphemer, an atheist, and a practitioner of witchcraft. ” She describes how the bishops in France wanted to separate from the papacy because they believed it “to have reached a state of decadence as to be incapable of performing its traditional role. ” Then she complains about how a bishop in Troyes named Guichard was burned at the stake for witchcraft at this time, “despite having been acquitted by the pope. ”

Frale describes the bizarre ending to this series of events. In December of 1307, Jacques de Molay recanted his confession to Philip IV ’s inquisitors, claiming he ’d lied because he was under torture, and publicly displaying his wounds before an audience he was granted at Notre Dame cathedral. The Pope ’s panels of bishops decided that the knights should be absolved, but that the leaders who were already in prison must remain there for the rest of their lives to pay for what they had done. The way Frale puts it, the papacy saw this as a compromise, bargained down from the death penalty that Philip wanted (although Philip had not actually negotiated with them at all). The Church leaders thought this would enable them to wrap up the matter quickly so they could get about the business of launching another war in the Middle East:

Upon the return of the three cardinals to Poitiers, the pope drafted a second version of his bull faciens misericordiam . It reiterated the main points expressed in the first release, but added that the leaders of the Temple had been absolved and were now protected by judicial immunity and that no one, except the Roman pontiff, could so much as interrogate them.

But as it turned out, De Molay and his sidekick, Geoffrey de Charny, did not care for this solution. They then recanted their confessions again, this time presumably including the ones they gave to the Church authorities who, according to Frale, had not tortured them. Instead, as Frale put it, they proclaimed “the Temple ’s absolute innocence of all the charges brought against them… . ” Again, it is hard to see how any of this behavior could be classified as particularly noble, considering that even Frale acknowledged that the Templars were, on many of the counts, “guilty, ” which normally is thought of as the opposite of “innocent, ” a term she also used to describe the knights.

At any rate, Frale still seems to think that the Church ’s authority here, which had failed on all counts, should have continued to reign supreme over the situation. She describes what happened next as a violation of the rights of the

Church, as Philip took matters into his own hand and acted decisively:

In 1310 [Philip IV] ordered 54 Templars who had been found innocent burned at the stake, in total violation of papal authority. Even the theologians of Sorbonne opposed this decision, declaring it completely illegal, but their opinion was ignored.

In the south of France, where the powers of the Inquisition were strongest, there were records of convictions for violations associated with witchcraft, such as the witch ’s Sabbath and group orgies, which even went beyond the accusations of Philip the Fair in his indictment.

These Frale calls “the most baseless charges, which drew from the most abominable fantasies of the popular imagination. ” Then, she says, Philip thwarted Clement ’s authority once again:

Although the leaders of the Temple were still detained illegally by Philip IV, the pope granted them judicial immunity. Templar grand master Jacques de Molay tried multiple times to obtain an audience with the pope, but royal agents prevented that meetings from ever taking place. Nor were the Templars allowed to be in contact with their grand master… .

Finally, Philip had De Molay and De Charny both executed, burnt at the stake. Predictably, Frale sees these deaths as nothing short of noble martyrdom. She writes:

Accounts of the execution attested to the great heroism demonstrated by the two leaders. Jacques de Molay asked his executioners to untie the knots around his wrists, raised his eyes to the cathedral of Notre Dame, and prayed to the Virgin Mary… With his prayer, the grand master bore glorious witness to the demise of the Temple and proclaimed its innocence and fidelity to the Christian faith.

So clearly, the Templars have in no way been exculpated. They seem to have been quite guilty of the elements of blasphemy (at least according to the common definition) and committing homosexual acts. Many people have been executed for less. The idea that this was not done as part of a larger heretical doctrine is unproven and groundless. Contrary to the sweeping claims of Barbara Frale (who in 2009 also claimed to have found the name of Jesus written on the Shroud of Turin), the question of why they did these things, and the extent to which they did, as well what other crimes they may have committed, is as unanswered today as before the Chinon Parchment was discovered in 2001. As for the question of the Baphomet idol, Frale offers one sentence, proposing what seems a very odd idea:

The last point raised in the indictment against the Templars concerned the secret veneration of an idol in the shape of a bearded head. There is clear evidence of the existence of an unusual image of Christ in the religious life of the order, as well as a mysterious cult devoted to the Sacred Blood.

So is she suggesting that the Baphomet head was a representation of Jesus. It seems so. As strange as this may seem, the same idea was the subject of the 1998 book The Head of God: The Lost Treasure of the Templars by Keith Laidler. However, instead of claiming that it was a mere representation of Christ, he theorized that actual man ’s head had been removed and preseved by them. He proposed that it is now buried underneath Rosslyn Chapel in Scotland. Perhaps he gave Frale the spark of insight that led to her concocting the only “innocent ” explanation she could come up with for why the knights would be prostrating themselves before a mummified head that the confessors described as “terrifying. ” But we need not go that far. The skulls and mummified remains of many saints, including John the Baptist and Mary Magdalene, are regularly venerated by Christians the world over, and all of them look rather creepy. As we mentioned, the Templars were involved in the relic trade. It could have been any one of these that the Templars used in their ceremonies, or something else altogether.

As for Barbara Frale herself, who ’s worked at the Vatican Secret Archives since 2001, she comes across as a Church spokeswoman apologizing for what happened to the knights, and offering up excuses for why the Pope failed to protect them from Philip. While Philip ’s control of Clement has long been known, to us it seems that an attempt is being made by her to rehabilitate the reputations of both the Church and the Temple. We can only speculate on whether this is personal interest on her part, or something that her employers have asked her to do, but the Church certainly doesn ’t seem to have corrected the record at all on these issues in the intervening fourteen years since she allegedly discovered the Chinon Parchment in 2001.

We should also note that, long before the Templars were openly accused and arrested by Philip IV, several papal pronouncements had stated explicitly that the Templars were guilty of the same sort of things they were eventually prosecuted for. Prince Michael of Albany, in his 2006 book The Knights Templar of the Middle East (co-authored with Walid Amine Salhab), recounts some of these:

Innocent II (1198-1216), writing to the grand visitor of the order, said, “The crimes of your brothers pain us deeply by the scandal that they provoke within the Church. The knights Templar practice the doctrines of Satan. ” Gregory IX (1227-1241) mentions the fact that he knew that the Templars practiced the act of homosexuality and occult sexual magic under a secret new rule established by Roncelin de Fos (later master of Tortosa and Syria) in 1240. This new rule was written in a Templar book known as “the book of baptismal (sic) by fire. ”

This final item is of great interest to us. We found mention of The Book of the Baptism by Fire in a few other places, but not many (although we were not able to corroborate that it was ever mentioned by Gregory IX, who as we said previously, also condemned the Cathars for worshipping the anuses of black cats). Oddvar Olsen writes about it in The Templar Papers , also from 2006:

In 1877, a German Masonic specialist named Merzdorf claimed to have found, among other Masonic manuscripts, two Latin “Rules ” of the Templars (purported to date from the 13th century). One was the Rule for the “chosen brothers, ” and the other for the “consoled brothers. ” The first Rule describes the church as the “Synagogue of Anti-Christ, ” and stipulates an elect reception ceremony (involving various ritual kisses —one on the male member —and including readings from opening verses of the Koran). The latter Rule implies strongly that the Templars shared the doctrines of the Cathars, including that of the “consolamentumm, ” or mystical baptism. Still authenticity of these has yet to be determined.

… I have recently been referred to a text called The Book of the Baptism of Fire (The credence of this text needs to be ascertained, so I will just briefly mention it here.) The text was apparently transcribed by the Grand Master in England (Robert Sandford), in 1240 AD. It lists the different articles of The Order of the Weather . Some of the articles refer to both the “chosen ” and “consoled ” brothers. There is also mention of Baphomet and “the Secret Science of the great philosophy: Abrax and the Talisman. ”

So according to Prince Michael, The Book of the Baptism of Fire (which he calls the “baptismal ”) actually contained these secret rules, while Olsen claims that they are separate documents that nonetheless seem to confirm one another. Yet another author, Timothy Hogan, in his 2012 book Entering the Chain of Union , tells the story differently still (drawing on a French website edited by one Jean-Pierre Schmit):

There is a series of documents first published in 1877 by Theodore Merzdorff, which were said to come from the Masonic Grand Lodge of Hamburg. These Latin documents were the official Rule of the Knights Templar followed by three other documents said to be secret statutes of the Order. They were said to be copies of the original documents that existed in the Vatican, which were copied in the 1780s-1790s by the Danish scientist Frederic Munter. The documents were translated into German, and from there into French in 1957 by Rene Gilles.

Hogan adds an extra “f ” to the end of Merzdorf ’s first name and tells us that before they were stumbled upon at a German Mason ’s lodge, they were stumbled upon in Latin in the Vatican archives and translated into German. That ’s a whole lot of stumbling upon something that is of such great historical importance, and presumably excuses the Church ’s treatment of the Templars. But yet again —whoopsy! —those Vatican file clerks just can ’t do anything right! Masonic lodges, as you will find later in this chapter, are just the natural place for such things to show up later for historians to find them. Hogan goes on to describe in more detail what some of the documents were:

The third document dated July 1240 opens with “Here begins the ‘liber consolamenti ’ or secret statutes, written by Master Roncelinus for the Consoled Brothers of the militia of the Temple. ” These statutes, composed of twenty articles are signed by Master Roncelinus and another dignitary of the Templar Order, brother Robert of Samford, Procurator of the Knights Templar in England… . The last piece dated August 1240 starts with “Here begins the list of secret signs that master Roncelinus has assembled in eighteen articles and addressed to the same Robert of Samford. ”

Yet another version of the story, told by Mark Amaru Pinkham in his article for Atlantis Rising Magazine , entitled “The Templars ’ Biggest Secret & the Vatican, ” calls the text Baptism of Fire of the Brothers-Consulate , and says that it was discovered in 1780 at the Vatican Library by “a Danish Bishop ” (not, as Hogan had claimed, “Danish scientist Frederic Munter ”). Also, like the others but unlike Oddvar Olsen, Pinkham purports that this document is one and the same as that which, he says, is “often referred to by Templar historians as the ‘Secret Rule of the Templars. ’ ” According to him, the document contains quite a few amazing admissions not mentioned by the other writers on the subject:

Said to have been written in 1240 AD. by a French Templar Master named Roncelinus, it appears to give a green light to all the heretical offenses that the Knights were accused of in the 14th century. Permission to indulge in all manner of Templar heresy can be found in this document, including defilement of the Cross, denial of Christ as the Savior, sexual liaison, and the worship of the idolic head known as Baphomet. There is even a passage within the document that gives the Knights permission to initiate other gnostics into their order, including Cathars, Bogomils, and even Assassins. If the Baptism of Fire of the Brothers-Consulate was indeed in circulation beginning in 1240 AD. it would have been an easy task for a Church or Royal spy to procure a copy for their employers.

The references made by the above-quoted sources to the “Consoled Brothers, ” “Brothers Consulate, ” and “consolamenti ” are taken by Oddvar Olsen to imply that the Templars practiced the consolamentum of the Cathars, which he describes as a “mystical baptism. ” Benjamin Walker tells us more about this mysterious ritual in Gnosticism: Its Influence and History :

The central Cathar rite was the consolamentum , a kind of adult baptism of the spirit, which was administered only once. It was reserved as a rule for those who had attained the level of the Perfect, but it could be given to any Cathar prepared to make an irrevocable renunciation of the flesh and consecrate his or her life to God. The rite was preceded by a fast and imparted by the laying on of hands and placing on the head the gospel of St John. If anyone sinned after being “consoled, ” he was expelled from the Cathar communion.

So strict were the requirements that many Cathars only underwent the rite at the point of death, so as to avoid any further chance of sinning. Because it was generally held that death through illness or old age only proved that Satan was still in control of the body, some Cathars hastened the end by what was called the endura , a ritual suicide or killing. It was thought best to be purified by the consolamentum and then face the endura , for then salvation was certain. The methods of endura included fasting to death or taking poison, or being smothered by one or more of the Perfect who held a pillow over the mouth of the endurist, or strangled him.

So this is the ritual that the “Consoled Brothers ” of the so-called Book of the Baptism by Fire were named after? We presently cannot be sure. A copy of the book in which the alleged document was published, compiled by Theodor Merzdorf (who spelled his first name without an “e ” on the end, a detail that none of the authors quoted above got right), has been obtained by our research staff and is now being analyzed. It has an extremely long title in German. But it seems to us that Prince Michael was probably able to read the text, or at least knew someone who could, because it appears that some of the “inside information ” in his book about the Templars must have come from this.

One thing we do know, though, is that this Roncelin/Roncelinus fellow has been associated with the Cathars, and blamed for introducing blasphemous rituals to Templar tradition, in many books before. The Temple and the Lodge by Michael Baigent and Richard Leigh (1989) tells us:

Between 1248 and 1250, the Master of Provence was one Roncelin de Fos. Then, between 1251 and 1253, Roncelin was Master of England. By 1260, he was again Master of Provence, and presided in that capacity until 1278. It is thus quite possible that Roncelin brought aspects of heretical Cathare thought from their native soil in France to England. This suggestion is supported by the testimony before the

Inquisition of Geoffroy de Gonneville, Preceptor of Aquitaine and Poitou. According to Geoffroy, unnamed individuals allege that all evil and perverse rules and innovations in the Temple had been introduced by a certain Brother Roncelin, formerly a Master of the Order. The Brother Roncelin in question is bound to have been Roncelin de Fos.

At this point, we would like to delve much more deeply into the claims made in Prince Michael ’s book regarding the Templars. But first it is necessary to say a few words about Prince Michael himself. Tracy R. Twyman first became aware of this man in 1999, after reading about him in a book by Laurence Gardner entitled Bloodline of the Holy Grail , and subsequently reading Prince Michael ’s book The Forgotten Monarchy of Scotland . She then interviewed him for a magazine she published at the time called Dagobert ’s Revenge .

Prince Michael claims to be the rightful heir to the throne of Scotland, saying that his own “Royal House of Stewart ” is the same as the British royal dynasty the “House of Stuart. ” They provided monarchs for Scotland from 1371 through 1714, and ruled over England as well from 1567 to the same end date. Michael, whose given last name is Lafosse, is an immigrant to Scotland from Belgium, where, he claims, his family has been waiting “in exile ” to return to the throne. His first book was part of his campaign to present himself as a potential head of state should Scotland become independent at some point. Michael further claims that his family is descended from Jesus Christ and Mary Magdalene through the Merovingian dynasty of France. He also says that he is the head of Scottish Templarism, and purports to have inside knowledge about their “real ” history.

The legitimacy of all these assertions has been widely disputed. In past writings, Michael has relied heavily on the “research ” of his friend Laurence Garner, now deceased. Gardner put himself forward as the head of an organization called the “Dragon Court, ” which was supposedly as old as the sixteenth century and dedicated to promoting the interests of the “Dragon lineage. ” What was meant by this, essentially, were the royal bloodlines, found in all cultures throughout history, which purportedly have a more-than-human origin —either through gods or angels that allegedly mated with humans in the distant past. Gardner traced these bloodlines from modern royalty back to the mythical figures they allegedly came from. These genealogies seem to connect everyone of importance in history to everybody else, whether they are good or bad, the Hitlers and the Mother Theresas. So it is of no great contradiction to realize that these genealogies put Jesus himself as a descendant of fallen angels, claiming also that he married a lady of similar extraction (Mary Magdalene) and bred children with her. It is a holy lineage beyond good and evil. This idea is perhaps similar to what was expressed by Charles Peguy in his poetic ode to the House of Lorraine (a French branch of this “Dragon bloodline ”), referencing the double- barred cross that is associated with their family:

The arms of Jesus are the Cross of Lorraine,

Both the blood in the artery and the blood in the vein,

Both the source of grace and the clear fountaine;

The arms of Satan are the Cross of Lorraine,

And the same artery and the same vein,

And the same blood and the troubled fountaine.

Tracy R. Twyman happens to have some inside knowledge of the workings of the Dragon Court. Shortly after publishing her interview with Prince Michael of Albany, she became friends with Nicholas de Vere von Drakenberg, whom she knew until his death in 2012. He claimed to have been the “actual ” head of the “real ” Dragon Court, as well as the real author of several of the books that Laurence Gardner published under his own name. He presented her with the original manuscript, which was quite clearly what Gardner had based his own writings on, in very close parallel. On the copy of Laurence Gardner ’s Genesis of the Grail Kings that she has in her office, De Vere is thanked in the acknowledgements for giving Gardner access to his “household archives ” as a source for his research. In the first edition of this book, his name was listed on the cover as the co-author, which was then mysteriously removed in subsequent editions.

After knowing De Vere well and seeing the evidence, she did become convinced, as she still is, that De Vere was the actual author of two of Gardner ’s books, and the actual progenitor of the “Dragon Court ” that Gardner based his own organization on. She does not believe that it is centuries old. She says it was an informal group of De Vere ’s friends who took their inspiration from him and who took on various “royal titles ” that he handed out to them, supposedly based on their genealogies. She herself received one of these titles, and was even made the Grand Master of the Dragon Court for a few years, as well as the copyright holder for some of De Vere ’s books. All of this happened at his insistence. She never asked for it. She helped him get his own book published in his own name, and then voluntarily relinquished the copyright, the royal title, and the grand mastership.

While Twyman thought that De Vere ’s work on historical and mythological matters had value, she found his claims about himself and his organization to be grandiose and unverifiable. She is also fairly positive that some of the information in his books came from channeling. The family “archives ” that Laurence Gardner said he got his information from were, in fact, like the “Akashic records ” of New Age western pop Buddhism: they existed on the astral plane, accessible only through the mind of Nicholas de Vere.

Ms. Twyman is not sure to what extent Prince Michael knows the truth about where Laurence Gardner got his information from, which Michael has relied on so heavily. He himself claimed to be part of the Dragon Court too (although he doesn ’t mention it in his latest book). Most recently we found him on the membership list of something called IBSSA (the International Bodyguard and Security Services Association). The other members of this group (whose names are listed on the organization ’s website) all seem to fall within the following categories:

(1) Members of one or several “royal houses, ” either legitimate and verifiable, and/or fake-seeming royal houses like the House of Stewart and the Dragon Court were.

(2) Members of both legitimate and/or fake-seeming Masonic groups and modern Templar organizations.

When we say “and/or, ” we mean that some of these people were simultaneously members of real organizations and what seem like scam organizations, holding both real and possibly fake titles. Also common was involvement in very real UN non-governmental organizations of various types. We have verified, by researching the backgrounds of each name listed, that several of them really are royalty, and most are quite high up in Masonry, some in significant leadership positions. Many of them can be found in pictures on the ISBBA ’s website dressed in royal or Templar regalia. They are shown pictured in investiture ceremonies receiving honors. The website also contains information on martial arts classes that the ISBBA is purportedly holding, as well as international security reports on matters like terrorism and organized crime.

We have no idea why this organization exists, if in fact it does. It may just be a website meant for people like us to find, giving the impression of an Illuminati nexus of royals and Masons who happen to be connected to international intelligence (as the name of the organization implies). Michael reported in his first book being surveilled and interviewed by MI5 after launching his campaign for the Scottish throne. So he has been trying to suggest for some time that is a spook at war behind the scenes with other spooks.

We are not sure exactly what we are suggesting here, but these details have to be important, for in his latest book, The Knights Templar of the Middle East , Michael claims that he based his research on some Masonic documents that he accidentally stumbled upon in a Masonic lodge that he belongs to. As he tells it:

I came across what is referred to as “The Charles Morrisson Collection ” (about 2000 works), housed at the library of Scottish Grand Lodge in Edinburgh, Scotland. The collection ’s oldest script dates back to 1615, extending into the 19th century. Some of these scripts were handwritten in Old French, some of which had been published privately, all of which had been forgotten and never consulted.

Think about the fact that so much of what we think the accusations were against the Templars, linked to more modern accusations against Freemasons, comes from the papal “Allocution Against the Freemasons ” of Pius IX, who was himself accused of being an initiated Freemason by other Freemasons, allegedly speaking out in their own order ’s defense. Consider the fact that the most complete text of this Allocution easily available to the general reader is to be found in the Masonic textbook Morals and Dogma by Albert Pike, where it is merely quoted and commented upon, supposedly to demonstrate the adversity of suspicion that Masons have had to face because of the Church throughout the years. The information we have about what the Templars and Masons have been accused of comes from … Masons themselves!

Consider the fact that the aforementioned Book of the Sun of Suns and

Moon of Moons , which purportedly mentions “Bafumed, ” and described it as the transformative power of the universe was supposed to have been discovered by Freemason Giles F. Yates in the library of a Masonic lodge. The documents published by Theodore Merzdorf, claiming to contain the Templars ’ secret rule in a privately-published Templar text (The Book of the Baptism of Fire), was supposedly found in the Masonic Grand Lodge of Hamburg by Merzdorf after being discovered by Danish scientist Frederic Munter in the Vatican archives. In a similar story, the Chinon Parchment was supposedly accidentally discovered in the Vatican library.

Likewise the Dossiers Secrets , kept on file at the Bibliotheque Nationale and supposedly published for the Swiss Masonic “Grand Loge Alpina, ” are the documents that lured three British journalists into investigating the French Masonic secret society called the “Priory of Sion, ” promoting a questionable claimant to the (now nonexistent) French throne. This culminated in the 1980s bestseller Holy Blood, Holy Grail and later the Da Vinci Code storyline of the secret bloodline of Christ. Once again, the “rumors ” were floated by the Masonic secret society itself, via documents deposited in a library. Other documents related to the group ’s “history ” that were presented to the authors for evidence appeared to have been faked with the forged signatures of notaries and forged bank receipts in a ruse that involved several people known to work for British intelligence services.

Nicholas de Vere told Tracy R. Twyman personally that the way to falsely establish the historicity of newly-invented “facts ” is to deposit documents with false publication dates in libraries and wait for someone to discover them. He said it as though it was something he had done before. Although De Vere did have a falling out with Laurence Gardner and Prince Michael early on, it seems likely that other friends of the “prince ” have been involved in the same kinds of shenanigans and know the same tricks of the trade.

The narrative being promoted by Prince Michael in his latest book —that Templars were more influenced by secret traditions of Islam than Judeo- Christianity, with more than a hint that this tradition is truly superior to either Christianity or Judaism —seems to be one that several Masonic scholars (that is, scholars on the subject of Freemasonry who were themselves also Freemasons) have been promoting for some time. This goes along with the idea, supported by occult writers like Richard Burton, Idries Shah, Robert Graves, and Baron von Sebottendorf—all probably Masonic initiates at one point in their lives—that Freemasonry comes directly from the mystical Islamic stream of Sufism. First, let ’s go over what Prince Michael has to say.

One of the first things the reader notices is that Prince Michael ’s book is rather shockingly critical of Christianity, as well as “the American-created state of Israel ” and “the banking world … within the hands of a Jewish hierarchy. ” He writes:

The simple truth is that the creation of Christianity, an uphill struggle that took over six hundred years, was no more than a fantasy gone wrong. Moreover, it was concocted by a bunch of rather sick but ambitious individuals who not only lied through their teeth, but also sent millions of people to their death with the sole purpose of dying, so they thought, in the name of “The Lord. ” The history of Christianity is bloody, savage, and cruel.

Of course, as for the 27,000 Islamic terrorist attacks carried out globally since 2001 alone, Prince Michael ’s only applicable comment in this book is to say that, because of the hijinks of Israel and the Jewish bankers, “Islam is bound to fight back for the very survival of its own religious tenets. ”

But let us remember that Prince Michael has spent his whole adult life preparing his ill-omened campaign to become the new king of Scotland. He could even imagine that his reformed royal house will somehow take over England as well, as his alleged ancestors did before him. So perhaps he, like Prince Charles of the House of Windsor, is looking at the demographic projections regarding immigration into the UK from Islamic countries, versus the even higher rate of emigration of the native population fleeing to the continent and the US, as well as the birth rates of those immigrants versus that of the native population. Maybe he sees that, were this to happen, he would be reigning over a population largely predisposed to the Muslim religion. Charles, whose family links to the descendants of Mohammed were announced by Burke ’s Peerage years ago, has gone as far as to proclaim that he began learning Arabic in 2013, “in order to undertake a deeper study of the Koran , ” and in that same year was quoted as saying:

The Islamic world is the custodian of one of the greatest treasures of accumulated wisdom and spiritual knowledge available to humanity.

Prince Michael ’s book goes on to make a claim that should be easily verifiable or discredited, except for the fact that the holy sites in both Jerusalem and Mecca are all totally inaccessible to archeologists or other independent researchers. He says that Jerusalem is not the site of Solomon ’s Temple, but rather that Mecca is instead, and that the Templars knew this. First, he asserts, they discovered, by conducting secret digs beneath the Mosque of Omar and the Dome of the Rock in Jerusalem, that there was no foundation of Solomon ’s Temple to be found there. They found the remains of the second temple, built by Herod, but not Solomon ’s. He writes:

What became also obvious to the Templars is that the original Jerusalem of Solomon, the pre-Babylonian invasion Jerusalem, was not that which the crusaders were occupying in Palestine and from which these various crusader kings were ruling from.

Prince Michael then tells us, again on inside information, that some Templars went on a secret mission to Mecca to see the real temple foundations for themselves. He says that the caliph of Egypt loaned them a fleet of ships based in the Red Sea, which they used to travel to the holy city “disguised as faithful Muslims. ” The Prince purports that there are rumors believed “in some quarters ” (Masonic ones, we presume) that the knights:

> … had a free entrance within the city of Makkah. Strangely enough, the history of Makkah also claims that they had free access to the “Sons of the Old Woman ” (also referred to as the “Sons of the Widow ”), the priests in charge of the Makkah temple.

This last reference, of course, is significant to Freemasons because “Sons of the Widow ” is an epithet that members of that fraternity use for themselves.

Prince Michael then goes on to make the case that Mecca was the original Jerusalem, and the Kaaba the true Temple of Solomon, pointing out Hebrew- sounding place-names in western Arabia, “from the port of Jiddah to that of Jizzan, ” which match up to the names of Israelite cities mentioned in the Old Testament. He questions the validity of the geographical designations that have been made ascribing biblical histories to places in modern Israel and Palestine, rightly mentioning the academic controversy that each of these identifications has provoked. Opining that “Very little in Palestine proves it to be the promised land of Moses, even less that of the kingdom of Solomon, ” and stating that most of the controversial designations were made as recently as the nineteenth century “by Christian so-called scholars, ” Prince Michael then posits that what we think of now as the ancient city of Jerusalem was in fact a settlement of Babylonians practicing Judaism who were sent there when the Persians took over Babylon. As he put it:

> The question that the Templars had to ask themselves was: did the Jews, following their Babylonian exile, go back to the right area of origin or did they simply choose a new area to settle? The simple truth is that none of those Jews who “came back ” to Jerusalem after 539 or 519 BC (scholars are still

arguing the exact date when the Jews left Babylon) had been born in their place of origin. All of them, including Zerrubabel (sic) (whose name actually means “born in Babel ”), were born in Babylon. In all probability, Zerrubabel (sic) and his people were told by the Persian king Cyrus or Cambyses where to settle.

So why would the Templars have received special permission to visit Mecca, the sacred center of their battlefield enemies? Also, why would it have occurred to them to look there in the first place? Well according to Prince Michael, many of the founding Templars came from families that had intermarried with Arabic Muslim aristocracy, particularly Grand Master Hughes de Payens (whose last name, by the way, means “of the Pagans ”). Prince Michael says that his grandfather was Abd ar-Rahman an-Nasir, son of Muhammad al- Mansur, the emir of Cordoba in Muslim Spain, a descendant of Mohammed through the Idrisid dynasty of North Africa. He claims that the Islamic side of the family was involved in Sufism. The same claim is made by Idries Shah in his book The Sufis , where he said that de Payens ' father Theobaldo was surnamed "the Moor " (the word for Arabs living in medieval Muslim Spain) and that this was the meaning behind the three severed Moors heads on the family coat of arms. Shah said that they were really "heads of wisdom, " or Baphomet heads. On this last subject, Shah wrote:

Probably relying upon contemporary Eastern sources, Western scholars have recently supposed that "Bafomet " has no connection with Mohammed, but could well be a corruption of the Arabic abufihamat (pronounced in Moorish Spanish something like bufihimat). The word means "father of understanding. " In Arabic, "father " is taken to mean "source, chief seat of, " and so on. In Sufi terminology, ras el-fahmat (head of knowledge) means the mentation of man after undergoing refinement of the transmuted consciousness.

It will be noted that the word "knowledge, understanding " used here is derived from the Arabic FHM root. FHM, in turn, is used to stand for both FHM and derivatives, meaning "knowledge; " and FHM and derivatives, standing for "black, coalman " and so on.

Not only does Shah insist that the word Baphomet came from Sufi Arabs, but also that the image of Baphomet as a goat-man has similar origins, along with the body of tradition observed by European witches who held sabbaths for the goat god. Specifically he credits the "Aniza Bedouin clan " with having "brought the witches to the West. " In particular, he names as responsible the Sufi poet Abu el-Atahiyya, about whom Shah quotes an unnamed source describing him as the "father of Arabic sacred poetry. " This poet had a mystical cult of followers that Shah says migrated to Spain after his death in the ninth century, bringing with them symbols and rituals that would be absorbed by practitioners of Western witchcraft. If Shah is to be believed, Eliphas Levi 's depiction of

Baphomet with a torch burning between his horns originates with the poet ’s followers. As he wrote:

His circle of disciples, the Wise Ones, commemorated him in a number of ways after his death. To signify his tribe, they adopted the goat, cognate with the tribal name (Anz, Aniza). A torch between goat horns (“the devil ” in Spain, as it later became) symbolized for them the light of illumination from the intellect (head) of the “goat, ” the Aniza teacher. His wasm (tribal brand) was very much like a broad arrow, also called an eagle ’s foot. An alternative name for the Aniza is a kind of bird. This sign, known to witches as the goosefoot, became the mark for their places of meeting.

… After Atahiyya ’s death before the middle of the ninth century, tradition has it that a group of his school migrated to Spain, which had been under

Arab rule for over a century at that time.

Shah, who clearly presents himself as a Sufi just like the ones he writes about, tended to put forward information with no attribution, claiming to have inside knowledge as a Sufi initiate. He traced quite a few peculiar terms associated with European witchcraft to Arabic words used by Sufis, including “athame ” (the ritual knife used in witches), “coven, ” and “sabbath ” (or “sabbat, ” as it ’s often spelled, which he connects to “az-zabat, ” meaning “the forceful [occasion] ”). He purported that quite a few non-Islamic religious and esoteric traditions actually stem from the influence of Sufism, including Jewish cabalism, the Holy Grail myth, chivalry, the cult of the Virgin Mary, the Catholic use of rosaries, the Hindu chakra system, yogic exercises, and the Yezidi religion of Kurdish Iraq. (The latter sect does, in fact, claim their own lineage from eleventh- century Sufi Master Sheik Adi.) While Shah didn ’t suggest that the Kaaba in Mecca is the real Temple of Solomon, he did say that it was not the Solomonic temple that the Templars were really dedicated to:

That the Templars were thinking in terms of the Sufi, and not the Solomonic, Temple in Jerusalem, and its building, is strongly suggested by one important fact. “Temple ” churches which they erected, such as one in London, were modeled upon the Temple as found by the Crusades, not upon any earlier building. This Temple was none other than the octagonal Dome of the Rock, built in the seventh century on a Sufi mathematical design, and restored in 913. The Sufi legend of the building of the Temple accords with the alleged Masonic version.

…

This, and no earlier one, is the Temple whose servants were the Knights Templar, accused of Saracenic leanings.

…

… The architectural measurements chosen for this Temple, as for the Kaaba building at Mecca, were numerical equivalents of certain Arabic roots conveying holy messages, every part of the building being related to every other part in definite proportion.

Prince Michael concurs with the idea that Templar buildings were modeled after the Dome of the Rock, and that this was the origin of the “secrets of sacred geometry ” that later became central to Masonic teachings, stating that:

The architectural concept of the Dome of the Rock would be later borrowed by the Christian church in its endeavor to establish the gothic style of architecture in Europe. For this is what the Dome of the Rock was, (sic) the precursor of the gothic arch.

Now while Shah did not come out and say anything concrete about the original Solomon ’s Temple and where it was located, he did make an intriguing statement that hints at something similar to what Prince Michael is claiming: What possible connection, it is sometimes asked, could there be between

the Mecca temple of the Moslems and the Temple of Solomon and its building? There could be a very close connection indeed. First let it be noted that charges against ancient Sufis included the terrible allegation that a mime of the Mecca pilgrimage ceremonies could be carried out anywhere with equal validity to the actual pilgrimage.

This introduces the idea that post-diaspora Jews could have built a temple in Jerusalem to mimic their real temple in Mecca, as Prince Michael asserts they did. He also suggests a connection between the “black stone ” of the Kaaba (a meteorite said to have fallen from heaven) and the “stone of the wise ” (i.e., “Philosopher ’s Stone ”) of the alchemists:

It should not be forgotten that the Kaaba (literally, the Cube) is the foursquare temple of Mecca. The “black stone ” of Mecca is set in an outer corner of the Kaaba. It is thus correctly described as the Kaaba (Cube) stone, easily rendered as the Cubic Stone. It is also called harajel aswad (black stone). “Black, ” as we have noted, is rendered as “coal, ” and the “stone of black ” can be rendered as harajel fehm , “stone of wisdom, ” or even, in translation, “stone of the wise. ” Second only to this place for all Moslems is the sanctified spot known as the Temple of Solomon in Palestine.

Sufi tradition has it that [there] were a number of men who assembled in the Mecca temple and devoted themselves to its service. On the fall of Jerusalem to the Arabs, the first act of the Moslems was to repair to the site of the Solomonic Temple to acquire it for Islam. That the Sufi tradition was continued in respect of the Dome of the Rock is evidenced by the fact that its later interior decorations contain Sufi symbolic designs. Templar churches and other indications show the influence of the Saracen version of the Solomonic Temple.

There are several interesting connections between the (alleged) temple(s) in Jerusalem and the Kaaba in Mecca that we have noted ourselves. One is that Mohammed is alleged to have flown from the Kaaba to Jerusalem and back in a single night. Actually, The Koran says that he was taken “for a Journey by night from the Sacred Mosque to the farthest Mosque, ” but these have always been taken to be the Kaaba and the Temple Mount in Jerusalem, respectively. He also visited Heaven, as Enoch and Hermes are said to have done. While he was there he met Jesus and John the Baptist.

Supposedly it all started when he laid his head on the black stone of the Kaaba (analogous to the biblical story of Jacob falling asleep with his head on a stone), and was visited by the archangel Gabriel (the angel of wisdom and communication, similar to Hermes in that regard). He was given a ride on a winged horse with the face of a human female whose name was “Barak ”

(“Lightning ”). Amazingly, before the trip began, Mohammed was baptized with the holy water of wisdom, including his internal organs. A hadith (tradition) attributed to Malik bin Sa`sa`ah (as reported in the first footnote on Sura 53 of the Hilali and Khan translation of The Koran) says that Mohammed told him:

While I was at the House in a state midway between sleep and wakefulness, (an angel recognized me) as the man lying between two men. A golden tray full of wisdom and belief was brought to me and my body was cut open from the throat to the lower part of the abdomen and then my abdomen was washed with Zam-zam water and (my heart was) filled with wisdom and belief (emphasis added).

Zam-zam water is that coming from the sacred well near the Kaaba, which supposedly miraculously sprang from the ground when the Arab progenitor Ishmael and his mother Hagar were dying of thirst in the desert after being ditched there by Abraham. It is used by Muslims today in much the same way that holy water is used by Catholics. The whole incident is called “Isra, ” which sounds an awful lot like “Israel, ” but is actually translated “Night Journey, ” from the root “sera, ” meaning “to travel by night. ” Although it is described as happening to him while he was in a state “midway between sleep and wakefulness, ” most Muslims take it to have been a literal, physical, and miraculous journey.

However, to us it sounds identical to the term “go forth by night, ” which is used in the European witchcraft tradition to refer to the process of astral- projecting in one ’s sleep as a method of attending the Witches ’ Sabbath on a high mountain peak. After projecting their souls into the ether, it was said that the witches would ride flying goats or broomsticks to the secret meeting place for the ceremony. The Devil or “Black Man ” was sometimes said to arrive at the Sabbath by the same method. Just like with Mohammed ’s

Night Journey, while it sounds like it ’s all just a dream, it was taken by the witches themselves to be real. The Church took it to be so real that confessing to it was punishable by death. Modern witches sometimes have a more nuanced understanding. As Nigel Jackson wrote in Masks of Misrule :

The true Sabbat is simultaneously a state of Dreaming-Consciousness and an extradimensional locus where the convocation of the living and the dead occurs and the Great Return which leads to a new becoming is achieved.

… The oneiric nature of the Witch-Cult is evidenced at some of the earliest trials in Toulouse in 1335, where the witch Catherine Delort affirmed that she went to the Sabbat in her sleep. The Dream-Sabbat is the supreme rite of the Witches… . The Sabbat is a dream … of such potency that the profane world seems pallid and unreal in comparison.

This journey to the Sabbath on the back of a goat evinces the stories of

Masonic initiations involving a goat ride, discussed previously. One can find postcards from the nineteenth and early twentieth century decorated with images of caricatured men dressed in Masonic regalia mounted upon a caprine animal and captioned with the term “Riding the Goat. ” As we mentioned, the rumor among suspicious “cowans ” (non-Masons) was that this was part of the Masonic initiation ceremony. But as the previously-quoted passage from Albert Mackey ’s Masonic encyclopedia proves, the fraternity officially denies that this is anything but a joke inspired by the accusations from their critics that they worship the Devil.

The 2012 book Ritual America , edited by Adam Parfrey and Craig Heimbichner, features numerous pictures taken from Masonic supply companies offering mechanical goats for sale to be ridden during ceremonies (along with devil costumes and other diabolical paraphernalia). However, they quote Christopher Hodapp ’s Freemasons for Dummies (written by a Mason, of course), which puts a damper on the idea that these goats were ever used for any “real ” ceremonies. He says that the toy goats were only used:

> … in other fraternal organizations and “fun ” degrees… . Such items only served to perpetuate the myth that Masons and other fraternities required a goat-ride ritual for their initiations. Freemasonry never has.
>
> Rest assured: There is no lodge goat. The degrees of Freemasonry are serious business to Freemasons, and there is no horseplay (or goatplay).

On the opposite side of the spectrum of belief, Turkish television, in the late 90s, aired footage supposedly taken of the “secret 33rd degree ritual ” of Scottish Rite Masonry (which is purportedly “honorary ” and has no actual ritual, according to Masonic publications). The rite shown on TV, taken with a “hidden camera, ” allegedly showed a goat being “sacrificed to Satan, ” although the image quality is so poor that nobody could have guessed that from watching it. Nonetheless, the video had quite an impact on the Turkish public, where Masonic conspiracy theories are quite widely believed. In fact, throughout the Muslim world it is frequently taught in school textbooks that the Ottoman Empire was taken down by infiltration from atheistic anti-establishment Freemasons in the Turkish government through the “Young Turks ” reform movement, largely populated by Masons.

The claim that mechanical goats have only been used in auxiliary “fun ” lodges is probably a reference to the antics of groups like the “Royal Order of Jesters, ” a quasi-Masonic offshoot organization open only to members of the Masonic “Shrine, ” which itself is only open to those who have already reached the thirty-second degree of the Scottish Rite. The ROJ is dedicated to the concept of “Mirth, ” and their official emblems for lodge functions are usually pornographic. Their mascot is the Billiken, a charm doll that looks like a little troll smiling evilly. It is called “the God of Things as They Ought to be, ” and the dolls, which began being sold around the turn of the century in an un-Masonic context, were said to bring good luck. The ROJ Billiken is often shown displaying his anus (marked with a red dot) and inviting the onlooker to kiss it. This is a clear reference to the osculum inflame of the Gnostics, Templars, and witches.

The Royal Order of Jesters is registered as a tax-exempt charitable organization and promoted as a place for men who are already Masons to have fun putting on comedy plays and the like. In reality, the ROJ seems to exist solely as a place for members to have group sex with prostitutes, which is what happens at most of their meetings. In relation to this, some of the Jesters were prosecuted for the trafficking of underage sex slaves after an FBI sting in Buffalo, New York. The existence of an inner hierarchy of the Jesters called the “Secret Order of Brothers in Blood ” hints at possibly even darker practices. The obscene kiss of the Jesters is not unique to them among Masonic organizations, but is also practiced by their parent order, the Shrine, yet in a much more interesting context.

The Ancient Arabic Order of the Noble Mystic Shrine (an acronym for an anagram of “A MASON ”) was started in 1870 in Manhattan by Walter M. Fleming and William J. Florence. Mr. Florence claimed that the idea came to him when attending a party in Marseilles, France that was thrown by an Arab diplomat, which ended with the guests being initiated into a secret society of some sort. This inspired him to create a Masonic appendage organization dedicated to “fun ” and “fellowship. ” Originally membership was confined only to Masons who have reached the 32nd degree of the Scottish Rite (Prince of the Sublime Royal Secret), or the Knights Templar degree of the York Rite. (In 2000 this was changed so that you only have to be a third degree Master Mason in the Blue Lodge, and in Arkansas you don ’t have to be a Mason at all.) The first “Temple ” (as the lodges of this group are called) was named “Mecca. ”

There is no doubt that the “Shrine ” which the order is named after is the Kaaba in Mecca. The initiation rite involves pretending that you are there. At the start of it, the “Oriental Guide ” opens the Bible to the first chapter of Job , and The Koran to the 38th Sura, with The Koran placed in front of the Bible. Strangely, some of the opening lines indicate the idea that “Allah ” and “God ” are not the same thing, as the “Illustrious Potentate ” prays the following:

In the name of God, our Father, and by the existence of Allah, the creed of Mohammed, and the legendary sanctity of the Temple of Mecca, I now proclaim this Temple regularly opened for business and ceremony… .

Elsewhere in the ritual, Allah is referred to as “their God ” — that is, “of the Arabs. ” But then the Illustrious Potentate declares his faith in that very religion, proclaiming:

Who is he who hath professed to have conversed in person with the Supreme and maketh himself mightiest of the mighty? Mohammed, the

Prophet of the Arab ’s creed.

A few minutes later, the High Priest pronounces:

There are Moslems among us; there are others who swerve from propriety: but who so seeketh Islam earnestly seeks true direction… .

Later, the candidate must declare:

And upon this sacred book, by the sincerity of a Moslem ’s oath, I here register this irrevocable vow, in wilful violation whereof may I incur the fearful penalty of having my eyeballs pierced to the center with a three- edged blade, my feet flayed and I be forced to walk the hot sands upon the sterile shores of the Red Sea until the flaming sun shall strike me with livid plague; and may Allah, the God of Arab, Moslem and Mohammed, and the God of our fathers, support me to the entire fulfilment of the same. Amen, Amen, Amen.

He is then put through the “Moslem test, ” which is a series of hazing rites of physical abuse, on his “journey ” to the “shrine ” where the black stone is. Just as at the real Kaaba, the sacred black stone is situated in the corner, the one in the Shriner rite is placed in the southeast corner of their “temple. ” One of these hazing rites is called the “Grand Salaam, ” and involves being hit on the buttocks with an exploding paddle. He is also made to urinate on the “Devil ’s Pass, ” which seems analogous to what Muslims do during the “Hajj ” (the pilgrimage to the Kaaba). Later it is explained that this is literally just an excuse to get him to whip out his penis for others to see, as a test of his manhood. He is told:

Since this is a male organization, it is one way we have of making sure we are not admitting any impersonators into our ranks. Thus, you had to display your male organ to give a few drops.

As if this were a real concern, part of the ritual involves a character (male, a brother) dressed up as a female who is found to be “spying ” on the fraternity, and who is stabbed in the heart as punishment (with a bag of wine under his armpit punctured to represent the blood). They pretend to cut a wound into her breast into the shape of a Muslim crescent. The “blood ” is collected in a bowl and held aloft. Then the Illustrious Potentate tells them all:

Let us in this maiden ’s blood, seal the alliance of our bond of secrecy and silence, and let this day ’s bloody work in the deepest recesses of every Noble ’s heart be buried.

…

… It now becomes our duty to deposit the result of our vigilance in the tomb, isolated from the eyes of a meddling world; a fit abiding place for the remains of the unfaithful… .

Another character, the “spy ” woman ’s male accomplice, is “beheaded, ” and a plastic head is placed on display on a chair next to a skeleton, a coffin, a noose, and a coffin. Then the members are given a lecture stating that their order was started by Mohammed himself, with the exact same raison d ’etre as the Knights Templar: to protect pilgrims en route to the holy shrine. He says:

My friends or Nobles of the Mystic Shrine, the order with which you have become united was founded by Mohammed and has as its background the trackless desert of Arabia and the fearless, devoted, and barbaric Arab.

Arabic history and tradition tell us that after the fall and separation of Adam and Eve, they were united near the place now known as “Mecca. ”

Adam prayed for a Shrine where he might worship. In due time, a Tabernacle of Clouds was given to him.

After the death of Adam, the Tabernacle was withdrawn, and his son, Seth, erected a Temple of Stone in that place; later Ishmael, with his father Abraham, rebuilt on this sacred spot of the Tabernacle of Clouds, the Kaaba or the Sacred Temple of National Worship.

Each year the true followers of the faith would make a pilgrimage to Mecca to worship at the national shrine.

Because of the presence of a lawless element in the city of Mecca, many of these pilgrims were robbed, beaten, and even murdered. Therefore, in the year of AD 647, Mohammed organized a group of fearless men as an inquisition or vigilance committee, whose main objects were to protect the weak, dispense justice, and punish the criminals.

The order was firmly established in 1698, and since then has become one of the most highly-favoured secret organizations in the world.

Because of the ruthless manner which the group used to accomplish its aims, its leaders had to be careful in their selection of new members. Therefore, severe tests and strong obligations were required of each candidate.

You have just passed through those tests and are now a Noble of the Mystic Shrine.

In these rites, the Shriners pretend to have much respect for Islam, the Kaaba, and Mohammed. In fact, the candidate is essentially converting to Islam here. The supposed beauty and truth of The Koran is praised with words like this:

The Koran is the unique history of our founder Mohammed. The work is absolutely unique in its origin and in its preservation, upon the authenticity of which no one has ever been able to cast a serious doubt. The Koran is the actual text as dictated by Mohammed himself, day by day and month by month, during his lifetime. It is the reflection of this master-mind, sometimes inartistic and self-contradictory, more often inspiring and lyrical, and always filled with great ideas which stand out as a whole.

It doesn ’t seem like the person who wrote this has actually read The Koran , which does not contain any history per se and is not meant to be taken as such. But for some reason, they certainly want to promote it. Yet, there is clearly an air of the unholy, the prurient, and the base in the ritual. In addition to the public urination requirement, there is what we might call the abundant “ass- play. ” The candidate is made to wash the “hind parts ” of one of his fellows (with what is pretended to be holy Zam-zam water). He is slapped on the buttocks numerous times with various objects, including during the aforementioned “Grand Salaam, ” which happens when the candidate is instructed to place his “hind parts in the faces of the Nobles sitting behind ” him. He is later forced to eat something that he is told is “dung. ” Finally, when he reaches the black stone in the corner of the temple, which they call the “Black Stone of Casper ” (presumably named after one of the three Oriental Wise Men that attended the birth of Jesus), he is told to kiss it (which is what Muslim pilgrims do to their own black stone), only to then be humiliated for doing so! The holy Black Stone is then compared to a butt. The candidate is told, condescendingly:

Ishmael and his father, Abraham, built the National Shrine near the place where ... an angel presented them with a dazzling White Stone, which they inserted in the wall of the Temple, and each year the worshipers would journey to Mecca to kiss this Stone. Today so many have kissed the Stone that it has become black, and is known as the Kaaba Stone or Black Stone of Casper. Our ritual stipulates that you, in token of your sincerity, seal your obligations by kissing the Black Stone of Casper.

No doubt many times you have stated that you would not “kiss ” anybody ’s “hind parts ” to gain a favor. Well, it seems that you wanted to be a Shriner so bad that you were willing to kiss “the Black Stone of Casper. ” Shame on you.

This is all very interesting. The humiliating admonition at the end reminds us of the description of the Templar initiation in the Chinon Parchment, where it says that, after being made to kiss his brother ’s behind, the new initiate would be encouraged to confess his “sin. ” Later in the “Shrine Lecture, ” the candidate is told that in Mecca the Black Stone is “according to Arab tradition, in the center of the world and immediately beneath the throne of the Almighty. ” In Eliphas Levi ’s depiction of Baphomet, the goat-man is shown seated on a dark cubic stone, with a lunar crescent (an Islamic symbol) on either side of him. Are the Shrine rituals a clue that some Masons see the Kaaba as the “seat ” of the goat god, to be “kissed ” ritually as the butt of the goat was kissed anciently by Templars and witches?

That, perhaps, will never be known. But does the existence of the Shriners strengthen Prince Michael ’s argument that the Templars found the Solomon temple at the Kaaba site, and that secrets pertaining to this are hidden within the rites of Freemasonry? It certainly seems that way to us. Although the Shrine is, admittedly, not the oldest of Masonic orders, it is now one of the highest ranked, at least in America. It does seem significant that this order is essentially the pinnacle of Freemasonry, open (until recently) only to their most elite. After going through all of the Masonic rituals dedicated to the Temple of Solomon, and immediately after receiving the honors of the Knights Templar, one then then has the opportunity to “graduate ” next to an order dedicated to Islam and its foremost temple! But they are also making fun of it, like the old “Feast of Fools ” where people would mock the Passion Play in medieval times, and which constituted a Black Mass of sorts. It also reminds us of the mocking of Islamic holy symbols and rituals that purportedly took place within the Order of Assassins, as we mentioned earlier.

Also interesting is a description given in the Shrine Lecture about how Mecca (at the time the lecture was first written) was sort of hidden in the surrounding landscape. It says:

Mecca unfolds in the wilderness of the Arabian desert, halfway between Yemen and Syria, in a land wasted by winds and secular rains, a valley enclosed between two sharp and arid chains of rock mountains, making its position so secluded that not until the pilgrims are looking down into its streets do they know that they have arrived at the sacred city.

The description brings to mind the idea of the Templar treasure hunters intrepidly marching down to Mecca with inside information about what was really there, and an open invitation from the guardians of the sanctuary, as Prince Michael claims it to have happened. Besides, if we were, just for a moment, to entertain the idea that the Masons got the Shrine rites directly from Mohammed himself, would this not then indirectly imply the involvement of the Templars? Weren ’t the Templars (with their seeming involvement with Sufi groups and the Assassins) better positioned to have obtained such secrets from Muslims in a position to know, rather than a

New Yorker from the nineteenth century who attended a party in France with an Arab diplomat?

The real question though, is whether or not there really is a secret connection between the Temple Mount in Jerusalem and the Kaaba in Mecca that the Templars may have known about. There may be at least a vague memory of this latent in the traditions of modern Freemasons and their offshoots. In this regard it is worth contemplating a few salient points.

Firstly, the “Black Stone ” of the Kaaba is, like the Kaaba itself, older than

Islam. As the Shriner initiation ritual indicated, there is an Islamic belief that it was brought down from Heaven by an angel, or that it “fell ” from Heaven (which would make sense if, as is assumed, it is a meteorite). The places where it first landed supposedly indicated to Adam and Eve where to build the first altar to

God. Its use was interrupted by the Deluge. Later, Abraham and Ishmael supposedly built an altar in the same spot, around the same stone. Here (say Muslims) it was Ishmael, not Isaac, who was almost sacrificed to God by his father, before God changed his mind at the last minute. There are other theories too. Tracy R. Twyman ’s husband, Hareth al-Bustani, once attended a Sufi lecture where he was told that the Black Stone brought the germ of life to Earth from outer space. Others have suggested that the Kaaba is positioned at the center of Pangea, the land mass believed to exist before the continents drifted to where they are today.

Ishmael ’s descendants, the Arabs, turned the area of the Kaaba into a place of pagan worship. Supposedly, there were at one point hundreds of idols within it, each belonging to one of the Arab tribes who sent pilgrims there every year to sacrifice goats to them. (The offerings were placed inside of a dried well within the Kaaba tent.) The number that we have read most often for how many idols were there is 360, which divides nicely into 12, the number of tribes that supposedly descended from Ishmael, and matches up with the number of degrees in the circle around the Kaaba that pilgrims walk in. However, we have also seen the numbers 364 and 365 written in books, which may indicate a connection to either the lunar or solar calendars (respectively). 364 is the number of days in thirteen lunar months, and the number thirteen seems important to the Freemasons, particular the Shriners. Muslims do observe a lunar calendar (though not one of thirteen months), and they do appear to afford some special reverence to the Moon, as the crescent is one of their emblems (and was used by the Templars on their seals also).

Presently the Kaaba stone is broken into several fragments, and much of it appears to be lost. The remaining bits are sealed together in a black epoxy, which is then affixed to the Eastern corner of the tabernacle it sits within. This structure is roughly in the shape of a cube, thus the name “Kaaba, ” which means exactly that. The silver object that holds the black stone in the corner looks a bit vaginal, with the stone and epoxy recessed inside of it, and this is what the pilgrims kiss when they are “circumambulating ” around the Kaaba during the Hajj.

The Temple Mount in Jerusalem is, like the Kaaba, supposedly built upon the “Eben Shetiyah, ” the “Foundation Stone ” of the world. This is believed to have been Ground Zero for creation, from which everything God made radiated outward. This rock is in the center of the platform called the “Temple Mount, ” and it is believed to be the site where Solomon placed the “Holy of Holies, ” the inner chamber of his temple, built in the shape of a perfect cube, where the Ark of the Covenant resided.

This is the rock that the Dome of the Rock, which crowns it, is named after, and it is here that Mohammed supposedly touched down when he came there during the Night Journey. The rock purportedly enjoyed Mohammed ’s company so much that it tried to follow him when he left. As he ascended back up, it floated up also, and they say Gabriel had to press down on it to get it to go back in place. This allegedly caused his hand print, as well as the hooves of al- Burak, to be left in its surface (which some people believe can be seen there to this very day).

The location is thought of as a nexus between Heaven and Earth. Indeed, right next door is something called the “Dome of the Chain, ” which is actually older and was in fact the architectural model for the Dome of the Rock. According to Jerome Murphy-Conner, in his 2008 book The Holy Land: An Oxford Archaeological Guide from Earliest Times to 1700 , Mujadir ad-Din (a fifteenth- century writer in Jerusalem) once wrote:

Among the wonders of the Holy House is the chain, which Solomon, son of David, suspended between Heaven and Earth, to the east of the Rock, where the Dome of the Chain now stands. The chain had one characteristic. If two men approached it to solve a point of litigation, only the honest and upright man could take hold of it; the unjust man saw it move out of his reach.

Some Muslims further believe that this same test will be used to judge their souls at the End Times, and that the Final Judgment will take place right there under the Dome. This chain of course reminds us of the one mentioned in The Iliad that Zeus dangled between Heaven and Earth, and the chains held by “Mete ” on the coffer at the British Museum, which might be used to pull the Sun and Moon down from their heavenly spheres.

In his book on the cabalistic text Sefer Yetzirah (The Book of Creation), Aryeh Kaplan writes about a pair of serpents, one coiled around the other, called the “telis, ” one male and one female. They are clearly Lilith and Samael. He describes them as hanging down from Heaven, and that the universe is suspended from them. Kaplan says that according to cabalistic tradition, they can also be viewed as one hair hanging down from the beard of “Zer Anpin, ” a name for the “Little Face ” of God, visualized as a disembodied head. Yes, like Baphomet (and the Roman god Janus), God has two faces—in his case, one small and one large, and like Baphomet, can be viewed as a head. From each of the hairs of Zer Anpin ’s beard, an entire universe is suspended. This is a head of wisdom, for as Kaplan explains:

The Talmud states that the hanging (or piled) hair relates to the fact that every letter of the Torah contains “piles and piles ” (teli tela ’im) of wisdom. Besides this, the hanging hairs are said to relate to the lines upon which the letters of the Torah are written.

The Torah which is spoken of here is not the ordinary written Torah, but the primeval Torah, which was written “with black fire on white fire. ” According to many Kabbalists, this primeval Torah is itself identified with Zer Anpin.

In this picture, each letter of the Torah is seen as a hair in the beard of Zer Anpin. These are not seen as simple hairs, but as channels, through which God ’s wisdom emanates from His “head. ” The “head ” is the concealed wisdom of God, while the letters are its outwards revelation… .

A few paragraphs later, Kaplan makes a comment which seems to indicate that the place where the hair/serpent hangs down, from which our universe is suspended, is actually Jerusalem:

The scripture calls the “hangings ” of the divine beard Taltalim. The Zohar relates this to the word Talpiot , which, as the Talmud teaches, is the “hill (tell) to which all mouths (piot) turn. ” This “hill ” is the mount upon which the Temple was built, which Jacob called the “gate of heaven ” (Genesis 28:17).

According to tradition, the area of the Temple Mount connects not just Heaven and Earth, but the underworld as well. For Muslims believe that beneath the Foundation Stone is the Well of Souls, a cave where you can hear the cries of ghosts awaiting judgement. A whole punched in the Foundation Stone leads down there. The Talmud also says that the stone covers an opening to the Abyss, where the waters of the Deluge came from, and receded back to. According to The Book of Jubilees , it is even the place where Eden once was. The cube-shaped inner sanctum of Solomon ’s Temple, where only the high priests were allowed, is said here to match up precisely with the location of the Garden, so that when the priests go in there, it is like returning to the forbidden zone of Eden. The inner sanctum of the temple contained the Ark of the Covenant, which served as God ’s “throne ” on Earth, where he would make his appearance during the ceremonies, just as his throne was also present (according to many extra-biblical texts) in Eden.

Mohammed ’s Night Journey, as we mentioned previously, brings to mind the story of Jacob, who, according to Genesis , fell asleep on a certain stone and had a fantastic vision of a ladder leading to Heaven, with angels ascending and descending upon it. Afterwards, he declared the spot where he had slept the “House of God, and a gate to Heaven. ” He built a temple on that very spot, using the rock he had slept on as a cornerstone.

Significantly, the word for “ladder ” used in this instance was “salem, ” which specifically indicates a ziggurat (a stepped pyramid like the kind found in ancient Mesopotamia). Consider the fact that this word is part of the name of the city of Jerusalem, where the temple of Solomon is commonly believed to have been. Consider also that the “Tower of Babel ” was literally, according to the story in Genesis , a stepped ziggurat as tall as Heaven, built for the purpose of storming Heaven. Then consider that the builder of another temple, the foundations of which have been found in Jerusalem (unlike those of Solomon ’s Temple), was named Zerubabel, because he was born in Babylon.

Also amazing is the fact that Jacob ’s pillow stone is believed by Brits to be a treasure of their own monarchy, and they claim that this is the stone which sits beneath the throne where all their kings and queens are coronated. But it came to them via the Stuarts of Scotland (who got it from Ireland, where it was supposedly brought from Egypt). Prince Michael claims in The Forgotten Monarchy of Scotland that the stone beneath the throne is a fake, and that the real one is in his family ’s possession.

However, The Talmud says that Jacob ’s stone is the very same as the Foundation Stone in the Temple Mount, and that this is the same location where Jacob had built his temple earlier. Yet the Bible ’s description of the incident with Jacob (Genesis 28: 10-22) makes it seem to take place somewhere else, in a place then called “Luz, ” which he renamed to Bethel (“House of God ”). Bethel is usually found north of Jerusalem on the maps printed in Bibles.

Now, doesn ’t it strike you as odd that the Christians and Jews have both each identified multiple sites for what seems to be the same honor: the location of their temple that connects Heaven to Earth? Also, doesn ’t it strike you as odd that the Muslims honor both the Temple Mount and the Kaaba, for essentially the same reason? Mohammed even visited both in the same fantastic night, making the connection between the two overt. Also, he originally instructed the converts to his new religion to set their “Qiblah ” (the direction in which Muslims are to pray) to point towards the Temple Mount in Jerusalem, but then later changed it to the direction of Mecca on the instructions of his deity. What does this mean?

Tracy R. Twyman has speculated about this earlier in her book The Merovingian Mythos and the Mystery of Rennes-le-Chateau . On the subject of the various “navels of the world ” that have been observed by different societies in different places throughout history as their premiere holy sites, the alleged centers of the world where supposedly creation began (of which there must be hundreds), she suggested that these locations are usually marked with relic, such as the world ’s “foundation stone ” or a “stone from Heaven, ” that makes them sacred. They are thus considered the “navel of the world ” because that ’s where the sacred “belly button ” is placed. When different locations become identified as such by the same society, this indicates to her that the sacred object has been moved from one place to another during the course of time. Therefore both places are remembered as the “center, ” even though only one (or none at all) may still be the location of the stone.

This would explain why the mere symbol of “the Stone ” itself, and not just any particular location, is enough to unite Hermetic and occult groups throughout the centuries in an unending tradition of the veneration of this concept. In Wolfram von Eschenbach ’s Parzival , the Holy Grail is a “stone that fell from heaven. ” By magic it calls out the “Grail knights ” (clearly Templars, with red crosses on their mantles) that it wants to serve it (as their names appear temporarily on its surface). As we just mentioned, the tent around the Black

Stone at Mecca is cubic, and the “Holy of Holies ” of Solomon ’s Temple was cubic. So too was Noah ’s Ark (though few realize this, unless they try to draw out the dimensions dictated to Noah by God). The alchemists, as we stated before, described their Philosopher ’s Stone as cubic. The Anatolian goddess Cybele, worshipped throughout the ancient world, was associated with a stone that was venerated, and many have suggested that her name is connected with the word “cube. ” You will recall that, according to Joseph von Hammer-Purgstall, the feminine aspect of Baphomet, whom he identified as “Mete ” or Sophia, could also be equated to Cybele. The image of “Mete ” on the coffer he found was labeled by the British Museum as featuring Cybele, probably because of the towers on her crown (one of Cybele ’s signature features).

It should come as no surprise then to find those critical of Islam

suggesting that the veneration of the black stone of the Kaaba is a continuation of the goddess worship of the ancient world. They even claim that the goddess being worshipped there is Lilith herself. In The Archeology of World Religions by Jack Finegan from 1952, the author suggests that Allah, a version of the Babylonian Enlil, was worshipped as a supreme creator god at the Kaaba, though among other gods, by the pre-Islamic pagan Arabs. His consort in this scheme was the goddess Allat, linguistically connected to Lilith. Allat is actually mentioned in The Koran , Sura 53, where the names of three goddesses popularly worshipped by pagans at the pre-Islamic Kaaba are cursed. But according to eighth-century Muslim historian Ibn Ishaq, based on the narration of Muhammad ibn Ka ’b, tradition has it that these verses originally said something else entirely. But then Mohammed determined that those verses had actually been inspired by Satan, so Allah gave him new ones to replace them. The (now infamous) “Satanic Verses ” supposedly stated:

Have ye thought upon Al-Lat and Al- ‘Uzza, and Manat, the third, the other? These are the exalted [birds], whose intercession is hoped for.

Finegan puts forth that the crescent and star symbol of Islam represents the Al-Lat (as a lunar goddess) and Al-Uzza (connected with the goddess and planet Venus, the Morning Star). He also describes Al-Manat as the deity who metes out justice or fate, making her the equivalent of the Roman goddess Nemesis. Let us point out that “Nemesis ” just happens to be the password of the Masonic Shrine. Also interesting is that, in The Third Book of Enoch , the Watchers (who become the fallen angels) are led by three characters, named, “Azza, ” “Uzza, ” and “Azzael ” (all seemingly based on Azazel), who accuse mankind of sin before God (but are themselves driven from their heavenly abode because of their own transgressions).

It is worthy of note that on the grounds of the Kaaba, there are three

pillars (actually changed into flat walls now) that have always been there. Pilgrims traditionally stone them each with pebbles, to represent throwing stones at the Devil. The “Tracing Board ” of the first degree of Freemasonry (an instructional graphic) always shows three pillars, above which are the Sun (on the left), the Moon surrounded by stars (on the right) and the All-Seeing Eye above the one in the center. They are positioned in a right triangle, with a ladder (like a fireman ’s ladder) in the midst, leading up to Heaven. There is a chequered floor on the bottom, indicating either the floor of the Kaaba, or the floor of Solomon ’s Temple (as they have both been depicted with such a floor in artwork).

What if we were to think of both the Kaaba and the Temple Mount as each being a “ladder to Heaven, ” and the stones associated with each as “pillars ” that “hold up the sky? ” This is a concept commonly found in mythology and in Islamic scripture in particular. So the three pillars on the Masonic tracing boards could be expressive of the idea that there is a third pillar somewhere else. More commonly, though, the concept is expressed with only two pillars, such as those of Jachin and Boaz. These are the names given in the Old Testament to the two pillars that allegedly stood outside of the entrance to Solomon ’s Temple. In Masonic lodges they are usually represented with a globe on top of each: one a terrestrial globe (showing the world), the other a celestial globe (showing the stars in the sky). Thus the pillars are shown holding up both the Earth and Heaven, just as the ancients believed that such pillars kept the sky from collapsing on top of us, and kept the world from falling into the Abyss.

In Freemasonry, and in many Western occult traditions, these pillars are taken as representations of two polar opposite but necessary principles of existence, often characterized as either “strength and beauty ” or “wisdom and severity. ” In the classic Rider-Waite tarot deck, one pillar is shown colored black, and the other is white. Then there are the Pillars of Seth, and the Pillars of Hermes, which were both described as having been erected to preserve human knowledge through a global catastrophe. Both of these sets of pillars are also the subject of Masonic legends.

So is it possible that the Templars, and later the Freemasons, revered both the Temple Mount in Jerusalem, and the Kaaba in Mecca, as the twin pillars of the universe, and the locations of two sacred stones, one black, and one (in their system of symbols, at least) white? Could it be that they had a special relationship with the guardians of the Kaaba, as Prince Michael suggests, due to a shared blood lineage, and a shared understanding of the sacred secrets hidden in these places. Is it possible that they revered Baphomet as a representation of the union of these two things —the powers behind both holy shrines? Did they perhaps also honor Mohammed, and Islam, for having rediscovered and united the powers of these two places?

Let us recall that, while the Templars may have been Christian in a certain sense, the upper echelons of the group were certainly more than that as well, as we have amply demonstrated in this book. We know that Jesus, the Virgin Mary, and John the Baptist are all acknowledged as holy people in The Koran , and by Muslims everywhere. Those of us who grew up Christian should also know that in

John 14:16-17 (KJV), Jesus told his apostles before he left them that:

I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever. Even the Spirit of truth; whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth him: but ye know him; for he dwelleth with you, and shall be in you.

The Greek word here, Periclytos , has been variously translated as “comforter ” and “consoler. ” Some Islamic theologians choose to believe that it is the equivalent of the Arabic word for “praised one, ” which is “Ahmad, ” one of Mohammed ’s epithets. In Sura 61:6 of The Koran (Sahih International translation), Mohammed is identified as the one whose coming was promised by Jesus:

And … when Jesus, the son of Mary, said, “O children of Israel, indeed I am the messenger of Allah to you confirming what came before me of the Torah and bringing good tidings of a messenger to come after me, whose name is Ahmad. ” But when he came to them with clear evidences, they said, “This is obvious magic. ”

However, verse 22 of John Chapter 14 (KJV) makes it clear that the Comforter is in fact the Holy Spirit:

The Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you.

This would seem to disqualify Mohammed, unless we want to identify the Prophet with the Holy Spirit. Certainly, we previously mentioned evidence that suggests Baphomet may have been identified with the Holy Spirit, as he/she was with Sophia, the Divine Wisdom, which the Church has always equated with the Holy Spirit. So we can connect Mohammed with Allah, Allah with Allat, Allat with Lilith, and Lilith with Sophia, and thus get to the Holy Spirit that way. Also, there is the possibility that the baptism “with fire, and with the Holy

Spirit ” that John the Baptist promised the one to come after him would bring was, in the eyes of the Knights Templar, the same as their “Baptism of Wisdom. ” Let us recall that the Templars ’ alleged secret rule, supposedly contained in The Book of The Baptism of Fire , was said to have been written for the “Consoled Brothers, ” and possibly referred to the Cathar rite of Consolamentum .

It is fitting that the bloodline of Abraham ’s disinherited first-born son Ishmael (whose name literally became a term in English for “outcast ”) should produce Mohammed, the “Seal of the Prophets. ” After all, Jesus did predict that in the End Times, “the last shall be the first, and the first shall be the last. ” As we mentioned before, the Judaic tradition is replete with first-born sons that have been disinherited, with God ’s favor. There was Cain, who admittedly, actually did something to deserve this. But then there was Jacob and his older brother Esau (progenitor of the accursed Edomites). Jacob used trickery and subterfuge against their father Isaac as he lay on his deathbed, and impersonated his brother in order to steal his inheritance from him. He did this by covering his arms with goat hair to simulate the fur that Genesis says Esau was covered with, which is an interesting detail in itself. But the Lord still blessed him, and cursed his brother!

Then there was the story of Pharez and Zerah, twin sons of Jacob ’s son Judah. Zerah ’s hand protruded from the womb first, and the midwife tied a scarlet thread around his wrist to indicate that he was the first-born. But then his hand was pulled back inside, and his brother bullied his way out first, becoming the inheritor of the family birthright. It is Pharez who went on to become an ancestor of King David and Jesus Christ.

But shouldn ’t we note that on Yom Kippur, the goat that was sacrificed to Azazel was marked with a red thread tied around its horn? Does that not indicate that Azazel represents the disinherited first-born? It was Azazel who, according to The First Book of Enoch , God decided to blame for all of the crimes that resulted in him bringing the Deluge, even though many others were at fault also. We are talking about the Devil, the Serpent, who felt slighted by his creator ’s preference for his younger creation, Adam, and refused the order to bow down to the new man of “clay ” (according to both The Koran and the Christian Book of Adam and Eve .)

It could be viewed as Adam ’s first wife, Lilith, pushed aside for Eve, or Jehovah ’s first wife, the Matronit, pushed aside for a “mistress, ” as the cabalists described in the previously quoted sections of The Zohar . Or it could be seen as the Father of all looking down resentfully at the Demiurge as he pretends to be the first and only god. You might think of it as the eldest principal of darkness, jealous of the presence of the younger principle of light, which it comprehendeth not. Or you could think of it as the other way around, as many Gnostics did.

The following quote from The Zohar makes it clear that Esau was identified with the “seirim ” (goat-demons), a word associated with both Azazel and Lilith. It is done in the context of explaining why the Israelites would sacrifice a special “portion ” of the regular daily burnt offerings to a spirit called the “End of All Flesh, ” to appease the “accusers, ” saying that these beings get sustenance from the smoke. Here Jehovah has dictated that his priests must sacrifice to these disinherited accuser spirits while invoking the Holy Spirit in order to satiate the demons ’ desire for flesh and quell their anger at having their inheritance taken away from them. From The Zohar (Noah 65a, from Volume 1 of the Soncino Edition):

R. Eleazar, studying one day with his father, R. Simeon, asked him “Did the ‘End of all flesh ’ derive nourishment from the sacrifices which Israel used to offer on the altar? ” His father replied: “all alike derived sustenance from them, both above and below… . Baked meal-offerings and other meal- offerings are the means of invoking the Holy Spirit … and from the smoke that rises up from the oil and the flour all the accusers replenish themselves, so that they are powerless to pursue the indictment which has been delivered into their hands. Thus we see that things have been so arranged in a mystery of faith that the adversary should have his share in the holy things, and that the requisite portion should ascend even to the Limitless.

… In regard, then, to the “End of all flesh, ” just as there is unison above with joy (at the time of the sacrifice), so also below there is joy and appeasement. There is thus satisfaction both above and below, and the Mother of Israel watches lovingly over her children. Consider this. At every New Moon the “End of all flesh ” is given a portion over and above that of the daily offering, so as to divert his attention from Israel, who are thus left entirely to themselves and in full freedom to commune with their King. This extra portion comes from the he-goat (sa ’ir), being the portion of Esau, who is also called sa ’ir, as it is written, “Behold Esau my brother is a hairy (sa-ir) man ” (Genesis 27:2). Esau thus has his portion and Israel their portion… . The whole desire of this “End of all flesh ” is for flesh only, and the tendency of flesh is ever towards him; it is for this reason that he is called “End of all flesh. ” Such power, however, as he does obtain is only over the body and not over the soul. The soul ascends to her place, and the body is given over to its place… . ”

“Accuser ” is one of the common epithets for the Devil, a word that comes from the Greek diabolos (“slanderer ”), just as “Satan ” means “the adversary ” (like one ’s opponent in a court of law). The idea is that he is constantly accusing the sons of Adam of sin, and Jehovah of hypocrisy for loving Adam ’s sons. He is a villain precisely because he is judgmental and tries to hold others to the letter of the law. But we see from the Bible stories we have mentioned so far that Jehovah seems quite willing to twist the law in order to put his favorites in the line of succession of heavenly blessings, which just further enrages the adversary.

In Greek mythology, the adversarial role was played by Momus, a god whose name means “blame ” or “censure. ” He was kicked out of Olympus by the other gods because of his constant sneering criticism of them all. But he was adopted by the Royal Order of Jesters as their mascot, identified with their idol, a trollish good luck charm called a Billiken, because they saw him as the ultimate joker, the lord of “mirth. ” It is interesting to think that this organization may be stockpiling blackmail footage of their members cheating on their wives, violating prostitution laws and committing child rape, with the power to hold their members under the threat of public accusations regarding these things should anyone break the code of silence. Momus is the one to say “We are all equally guilty here, so don ’t throw stones. ”

Returning to the above-quoted passage from The Zohar , another thing to be noted there is the claim that the way to invoke the Holy Spirit is through burnt offerings, just as the Templars may have associated the Holy Spirit with human infant sacrifice through a baptism of fire. The Bible makes it clear that sacrifice of the firstborn is an offering demanded by Jehovah of everybody. Just as he rejected his own firstborn (the Serpent, Chaos, the Night), he has demanded the same of each generation of his “chosen ” families, according to the Bible stories we have mentioned. The pantomime of Abraham pretending to “almost ” sacrifice Isaac, only to substitute a ram for him instead, represents the real scapegoat sacrifice that happened when Abraham sent Ishmael out in the wilderness to die, just like the goat for Azazel on Yom Kippur.

This concept of the sacrifice of the firstborn, and the substitution of it, comes up over and over again throughout the biblical narrative: from the Passover, with its sheep substitute; to the sacrifice of the freedom of the Levites in slavery to priesthood as a substitute for the other tribes of Israelites (and the temple tax as the price to redeem each individual Israelite whose firstborn was not sacrificed); to the sacrifice of Jesus on behalf of everyone worldwide. There is the need to somehow pay that “price, ” charged by God that is for some inexplicable reason connected with sin. This is because “the wages of sin is death, ” and if death (Hades) is identified as the abode of the Devil, we should note that, as in the Yom Kippur ritual, and the aforementioned sacrifices to the End of All Flesh, the Devil is given his “due ” along with the offerings to God.

It is our suspicion that the concept of Gnosis treasured by the Templars, the Freemasons, and many other occultists, is the understanding that both God and the Devil had a hand in creation, and their children —the bloodline of Adam and the bloodline of the Serpent (respectively) —each have equal claim to lordship over creation. All of these groups have left many clues indicating that their real “secret ” is the shared origin, and the equality, of the principles of good and evil, darkness and light, or creation and destruction. This is what alchemists have always claimed is the secret of the

Philosopher ’s Stone, the key to mastery over all created matter. This is what Hermeticists have always indicated they believe to be the ultimate enlightenment. All of the radically dualist heresies —the Cathars, the Bogomils, and the Manichaeans —all claimed that there were two distinct, eternal principles of light and darkness, in constant strife with one another and may have applied this to idea of competing bloodlines (symbolized in the New Testament as “the sheep and the goats, ” “the wheat and the tares, ” or “the good tree and bad tree ”).

The principle is clearly illustrated in compound chimera figures like Baphomet and Abraxas. We also see it in the piebald or checkerboard patterns of alternating black and white segments used by the Templars as their battle flag, and used by Freemasons on the floors of their lodges. Chequerboard tile floors can also be found in early images of what the floor of the Kaaba used to look like, as well as several old drawings of the floor of Solomon ’s Temple (perhaps influenced by Masonic traditions).

The secret, latently understood goal of the “Craft ” —of witches and Masons —is to unite the black and white stones —to “double the cube ” (a famous mathematical problem once thought impossible). They want to somehow put it all back together, to gain that ultimate power of the universe that was used for creation ex nihilo . Seizing this power —God ’s power —is like storming Heaven, piercing the seal of the “flaming sword ” which “turns every way ” to protect the Tree of Life. This is the same concept as the Valentinian Gnostic doctrine of a “cross ” that separates the Pleroma (akin to what the Hermetic Order of the Golden Dawn calls the “Supernal Eden ”) and the Kenoma (the manifest realm of matter). As Tracy R. Twyman posits at the end of her book Clock Shavings , secret societies have long cherished the idea of being able to penetrate this hidden realm, not only to escape the material “prison ” that we are in, but to escape the cycle of death that pervades here, and to take for themselves the immortality of the gods. While different groups embraced different theories about how to do that and what it meant, their mysteries, when decoded, frequently point to this as their main long-term goal.

The Corpus Hermeticum tells us that a soul entering a physical body is being “baptized ” or “immersed ” into the “inferno of matter ” (the lustful pleasures and pains of the flesh) as a form of punishment. In the Ophite diagrams of the universe (as revealed by Celsus and Origin), the archontic realm of matter is surrounded by a circle labeled “Leviathan. ” The Ophites are said to have viewed Leviathan the “soul of all things ” (or alternately the “soul that travels through all things ”). It is the equivalent of the Ouroboros, the snake swallowing its own tail, often used to represent the barrier between the cosmos and eternity, where the beginning meets the end and engenders a new beginning. The image was popularized by Cleopatra the Alchemist, third to fourth-century author of Chrysopeia (Gold-Making), who described the Ouroboros as “the sum of all philosophy. ”

Meanwhile, the angelic realm in the Ophite diagrams (as demonstrated in Jacques Matter ’s 1826 book Histoire Critique du Gnosticisme) is surrounded by a circle labeled “Behemoth. ” This figure, you will remember, is identified as the partner of Leviathan, and just as with Lilith and Samael, it is said that creation will be destroyed if they are ever allowed to mate. The Arabs wrote about this creature as well, calling him “Bahamut. ” The Arabian Nights describes him as a fish with a bull head supporting the universe on his back. Surely this is the same character as “Bahumed, ” taken by both Giles F. Yates and Hammer-Purgstall to be related to “Baphomet, ” and to bovine symbolism (the calf or Karuf in this instance). How strange, then, that the interpretation Hammer-Purgstall later took of the name of the Templar idol (“Baptism of Wisdom ”) seems so widely divergent from this early speculation. But, as we have discovered, the meaning of Baphomet is really multi-faceted, and none of the possible interpretations cancel out the others.

Recall that Eliphas Levi, who probably contributed more to the development of the Baphomet mythos than almost anybody, suggested that the name was a code for the Latin phrase Templi omnium hominum pacis abhas : “abbot (that is, ‘father ’ or ‘priest ’) of the temple of universal peace among men. ” What if the Templars, and later Freemasons, believed that there had once been a temple that all men could turn towards in prayer that would unite all of the world ’s monotheists, and perhaps most everybody else as well, in the common belief that it was indeed the center of the world—the main contact point with the divine? Or, what if they discovered that there never was a physical temple to begin with, but rather a symbolic or etheric one —one that they intended to rebuild? What if they revered Baphomet as the high priest (the pontifex , meaning “bridge builder, ” the origin of the Pope ’s title “pontiff) or intercessor of a metaphorical temple that acts as a bridge or ladder linking Earth to Heaven, like the Tower of Babel was meant to do?

It seems they may have anticipated that penetrating this forbidden zone could result in the destruction of creation as we know it, “pulling down the heavens, ” as the image of Mete discovered by Hammer-Purgstall suggests, collapsing the “pillars ” that hold Heaven up from Earth, which connects to the Masonic allegory of death as a the breaking of a column. Eve, by the way, is represented in the cabalistic rituals of the Hermetic Order of the Golden Dawn as actually holding up these pillars on her shoulders. The pillars are shown as being part of the Tree of Life in the Garden of Eden, and it is explained in the rite that when Adam and Eve fell from grace, these pillars fell also, causing the flaws in existence that we have now.

Now here there is a connection to the planetary powers of the Gnostic Archons, and to the krater bowl of Mind mentioned in The Corpus Hermeticum as being a source of wisdom in which initiates to the mysteries should immerse themselves. The ancients actually spoke of seven cosmocrators which clearly corresponded to the seven so-called (back then) “planets. ” The name seems to mean “cosmic bowls, ” and goes along with the old idea that the “heavens ” were circles within circles (or bowls within bowls, each a planetary orbit). But the descriptions of them make them sound like columns holding up the heavens (Mundi Tenentes or “World Holders, ” as Tertullian called them). This goes along with the imagery found in The Arabian Nights of Bahamut supporting the “seven hills ” (described as seven stages of existence) on his back. The Oxford English Dictionary actually translates the word cosmocrator as “Ruler of the World, ” stating that it was a Gnostic “technical term for Satan ” (just as the Cathars called the same figure “Rex Mundi ”).

An inverted, infernal interpretation of the Hermetic Baptism of Wisdom (such as the Templars are alleged to have practiced) might have aimed at upsetting these bowls, pouring our their contents on us all (thus the immersion) as the levels of reality they were thought to uphold and separate came crashing down, causing the different essences that they contain to intermingle, with deadly consequences for the universe. This may have been the goal of certain Nihilist occultists and Gnostics throughout history who hated God and what he made. Remember the stories claiming that when Lilith and Samael, or Leviathan and Behemoth, reunite sexually into a single being, existence will be destroyed. Others may genuinely think that this is the sacrifice necessary to heal the wound of separation from the divine caused by Adam and Eve ’s fall from Eden.

This could explain the symbolism of the Black Mass and the Witches ’ Sabbath. Everything considered holy in traditional religious rituals is reversed. It ’s about “going backwards, ” back to the beginning before creation, to reverse the error that took place in Eden and return to the perfection of chaos in the pre- existent Pleroma. As Nigel Jackson writes in Masks of Misrule , Sabbath attendees would:

…through the averse formulae of infinite return, deliberately go backwards to that which lies behind all phenomena and consciousness, the ineffable source of all creation… .

It may be also that some folks have sympathy for the Devil, and would like

to see his punishment ended. A collapse of the pillars (whatever that means) might lead either (a) to a merciful release for him via the “Second Death, ” or (b) a release from his prison into another realm, as the barriers between the planes of existence might dissolve, bringing everything that is back together into one. In The First Book of Enoch , Azazel actually sends a letter to Enoch begging him to ask God for forgiveness for the Watchers and their giant offspring. This could be the meaning behind Jesus ’ parable of the Prodigal Son. It is the idea of God ’s firstborn, the rebellious one (Satan), returning to his father ’s bosom, even as his younger son, the faithful one (Adam), protests. The central figure in this story has wasted his inheritance, representative of Satan ’s original estate and dispensation, given to him by God. But the moral of that story is that we should rejoice in the ultimate reconciliation between them as the healing of a grave cosmic wound, rather than grumbling about the unfairness of the Lord forgiving and even rewarding the infidelity of the one whom he initially trusted most. In King Jesus , Robert Graves describes a (fictional) image engraved on a clay tablet in the Cave of Treasures in Israel that depicts what that would look like:

> …[H]ere the King has taken Adam into his household; he and his brother Azazel are for a while united in loving comradeship.

Perhaps, then, some people believe that then a temple of total , universal peace, not just among the living but among everything whatsoever, could be built wherein everything could be reconciled to everything else: angels and demons, humans and gods, along with everything above, below, or in between. We have already discussed how this is what the Temple of Solomon is envisioned by Jews as having been, allegedly built on the cornerstone of Jacob ’s “gateway to

Heaven, ” and also over the “Well of Souls. ” There are similar traditions about other places. Mircea Eliade wrote in Cosmos and History: The Myth of the Eternal Return :

Every Oriental city was situated at the center of the world. Babylon was a Bab-ilani , a “gate of the gods, ” for it was there that the gods descended to earth… . Such a capital is, in effect, at the center of the universe, close to the miraculous tree, … at the meeting place of the three cosmic zones: heaven, earth, and hell. The Javanese temple of Borobudor is itself an image of the cosmos, and is built like an artificial mountain (as were the ziggurats). Ascending it, the pilgrim approaches the center of the world, and, on the highest terrace, breaks from one place to another, transcending profane, heterogeneous space and entering a “pure region. ” Cities and sacred places are assimilated to the summits of cosmic mountains. This is why Jerusalem and Zion were not submerged by the Deluge. According to Islamic tradition, the highest point on earth is the Kaaba, because “the polestar proves that … it lies over against the center of heaven. ” (Kisai, fol. 15; cited by Wensinck, p.15) [By this he means A.J. Wensinck, The Muslim Creed: Its Genesis and Historical Development , 1932. We do not know who “Kisai ” is.]

… Dur-an-ki, “Bond of Heaven and Earth, ” was the name given to the sanctuaries of Nippur and Larsa, and doubtless to that of Sippara. Babylon had many names, among them “House of the Base of Heaven and Earth, ” “Bond of Heaven and Earth. ” But it is always Babylon that is the scene of the connection between the earth and the lower regions, for the city had been built upon the bab apsi , the “Gate of the Absu ” — apsu designating the waters of chaos before the Creation. We find the same tradition among the Hebrews. The rock of Jerusalem reached deep into the subterranean waters (tehom). The Mishnah says that the Temple is situated exactly above the tehom (Hebrew equivalent of apsu). And just as in Babylon there was the “gate of the apsu, ” the rock of the Temple in Jerusalem contained the “mouth of the tehom . ”

So is this the sort of temple that Baphomet is the archpriest and caretaker of? Consider that, if rendered as an anagram, “Baphomet ” could be thought to contain the words “tehom ” and “bap, ” the latter of which could indicate bab , a Semitic root meaning “gate, ” or the root of the Greek baptismos (“to baptize ”). So then he is at once the abbot of the temple that acts as the gate to Heaven, and to the Abyss, as well as the priest who baptizes initiates in the waters of the Abyss. These waters of chaos are considered the same as the hidden “wisdom, ” and the “Knowledge of Good and Evil. ” The tehom has been compared to the Gnostic Pleroma, where everything originated, also called “Bythos, ” meaning “the deep, ” the exact same thing in Greek that tehom means in Hebrew.

The Apocalypse of Abraham is a pseudepigraphic work assumed to have been composed between 70 –150 AD. It is not accepted as scripture by any group, but the text is suspected of having been adulterated at some point by someone from the Bogomil Gnostic sect. The first English translation appeared in the Mormon magazine Improvement Era in 1898. In it, Abraham travels to the celestial temple in Heaven, and is taught priestcraft there by the angel Yahoel, who acts as that temple ’s abbot. In the process he learns that Azazel was once the high priest there, but got demoted. Therefore, Azazel ’s priestly garments are given over to Abraham, and Abraham ’s soiled garments are given to Azazel to wear instead. As part of this process, all of the sins of Abraham are transferred over to Azazel, just as will later be done at the Temple of Solomon in the scapegoat ritual. Yahoel says to Azazel:

Reproach is on you, Azazel! Since Abraham ’s portion is in heaven, and yours is on earth, since you have chosen it and desired it to be the dwelling place of your impurity. Therefore the Eternal Lord, the Mighty One, has made you a dweller on earth… . For behold, the garment which in heaven was formerly yours has been set aside for him, and the corruption which was on him has gone over to you.

The story ends with the destruction by fire of a temple on Earth: the one filled with idols, curated by Abraham ’s father Terah and his brother Nahor, who both die in the blaze.

In the chapter on the subject that appears in his book Dark Mirrors , Andrei Orlov compares the reflective relationship here between the earthly and heavenly priests and their garments to something stated in The Zohar (I, 217a, as quoted by Orlov) where it says:

[T]hese garments are after the supernal pattern, as we have learnt: “There is a High Priest above and a high priest below, raiment of honor above and raiment of honor below. ”

The term for the priestly garment here is the Hebrew kavod , a word which means “glory ” but also implies “gravity ” or “heaviness. ” This is similar to the “garment of light ” that rabbinic traditions say Adam and Eve were clothed with before the Fall. Recall also the Ophite parody account of Eden, as we saw earlier. In the commentary on Genesis found in Targum Pseudo-Jonathan , it talks about the original garments being made from “fingernails, ” but they were then replaced by garments made from the skin of the Serpent:

And the Lord God made garments of glory for Adam and for his wife from the skin which the serpent had cast off (to be worn) on the skin of their (garments of) fingernails of which they had been stripped, and he clothed them.

Similarly, in Pirke de Rabbi Eliezer 20, we read:

From skins which the serpent sloughed off, the Holy One, blessed be He, rook and made coats of glory for Adam and his wife, as it is said, “And the Lord God made for Adam and his wife coats of skin, and clothed them. ”

Earlier in the same chapter of that book, the garment is described as both “nail skin ” and a “cloud of glory. ” Another rabbinic commentary text, Genesis Rabbah 20:12, says that Adam and Eve had “garments of light … like a torch … broad at the bottom and narrow at the top. ” They were priestly vestments, for Adam was the first priest, and Eden was the location of the first temple overseen by man, as argued by Robert Hayward in The Jewish Temple: A Non-Biblical Sourcebook . He points to The Book of Jubilees 3:26-27, where Adam is clothed by God before he first enters the Garden, and immediately offers sacrifice to his heavenly father. In the book De Somniis , Philo of Alexandria ’s commentary on the dreams Jacob had on the famous pillow-stone, the author describes his understanding that, upon entering the Holy of Holies, the high priest becomes “a being whose nature is midway between [man and] God. ” He speaks of an “oracle ” of unknown origin “given about the high priest ” that says “when he enters into the Holy of Holies, he will not be a man until he comes out. ” Thus, Philo says, “he retains this midway place until he comes out again into the realm of body and flesh. ”

As for Satan, The Life of Adam and Eve (12:1-16:2) tells us that Satan, before the creation of Adam, lived on “the throne of the cherubs who … spread out a shelter [and] used to enclose me. ” So we get the idea that the wings of these cherubs somehow formed his garment. This is in keeping with the notion that they were made from light and flame, for God ’s throne was surrounded and permeated by these things. In The First Book of Enoch , when Azazel (or “Asael ” in that text) is punished for his transgressions, God orders that the criminal be thrown into a pit in the desert and “covered in darkness. ” As Orlov notes:

Asael ’s covering with darkness appears to be a sort of counterpart to the garment of light which Enoch receives in heaven. This ominous attire deprives its wearer of receiving the divine light—the source of life for all God ’s creatures.

So we see here that Azazel has fallen into darkness beneath the earthly plane, but he wears the darkness like a jacket —a straightjacket, because it cannot be removed. Thus it is like he is “inside ” matter, possessing it like an indwelling spirit. This is something he is repeatedly shown to be capable of. The Primary Adam Books describe Satan entering the fleshy body of the Serpent, wearing him, and playing him like a “lyre. ” In the Armenian version, it states:

Then he went and summoned the serpent and said to him, “Arise, come to me so that I may enter into you and speak through your mouth as much as I will need to say. ” At that time the serpent became a lyre for him.

In the Greek version of this text, the specific words are “be my vessel and

I will speak through your mouth. ” In the Pirke de Rabbi Eliezar , Chapter 13, Samael is said to have “mounted ” and ridden the Serpent like “a camel. ”

If Satan can be demoted from Heaven by putting on the “darkness ” of matter as a garment, and can even be trapped there, is dissolving this flesh jacket necessary to enter Heaven? It seems that this may be implied by some of the texts that we have examined here. In The Apocalypse of Abraham , entering into Heaven is described like passing through a fire, and Azazel even warns Abraham not to go there, saying that the fire will destroy him.

Perhaps, like Moses entering the flames of Hell, Abraham was cauterized with a baptism of divine fire, so that the flames would not hurt him. Or perhaps the fire there in Heaven simply is this divine fire, which can be used to protect oneself against all other fire. The ancient Greeks conceived of the highest heaven as the “Empyrean, ” a realm of fire. This was adapted by Dante Alighieri into the cosmology of The Divine Comedy , where it became the location of God ’s throne, inhabited by being composed of light. (The Midrash also says that some of the rivers beneath God ’s throne flow not with water, but fire.) Maybe, then, The Apocalypse of Abraham is implying that Abraham obtained from the angels a garment of fiery light that protected his flesh. Remember that Moses returned from his trip to Hell with shining skin.

As for Adam, the garments he was originally given were priestly vestments. Andre Orlov believes it is implied in The Third Book of Enoch that when Enoch ascends to Heaven and is translated into the angel Metatron, “his very flesh and bones are suddenly annihilated by the divine fire, the substance that refashions the visionary ’s moral body into and angelic … corporeality. ” Perhaps this is because, in Chapter 6 of that text, it says that Enoch was carried there by the angel Anaphiel “in great glory upon a fiery chariot with fiery horses. ” There his mortal odor was immediately perceived by “the ministers of consuming fire, ” who complained to God uncharitably about him:

What smell of one born of woman and what taste of a white drop [is this] that ascends on high…?

These fiery angels basically just told Enoch that he tastes like his father ’s semen and smells like his mother ’s vagina. How ’s that for a greeting on your first day of divinity school?

In The Second Book of Enoch , prior to coming to God ’s throne, Enoch ’s clothes are taken from him and he is anointed with oil. This implies the investiture ceremony of a priest, as argued not only by Orlov, but also Martha Himmelfarb and Crispin Fetcher-Louis, both of whom Orlov quotes. The oil is described as “greater than the greatest light … like the rays of the glittering sun, ” seemingly similar to the glorious kavod of light-emitting nail-skin given to humanity before the Fall, and a hint of what may be the reason behind the anointing of priests with oil in the first place. The dead are also similarly anointed, as if this shiny coat is necessary for the translation of the soul beyond the body into another realm.

In The Apocalypse of Abraham 23:4-11, the title character is given a vision of Adam and Eve being tempted by Azazel, here identified as the Serpent, who has taken on a peculiar form that is all at once animal, human, and angelic. Orlov interprets this as just a “garment ” that he is able to put on. It is here that the scene takes place, mentioned in an earlier chapter, in which Azazel is seen placed between Adam and Eve as they are “entwined ” sexually. It says:

And I saw there a man very great in height and terrible in breadth, incomparable in aspect, entwined with a woman who was also equal to the man in aspect and size. And they were standing under a tree of Eden, and the fruit of the tree was like the appearance of a bunch of grapes of vine. And behind the tree was standing, as it were, a serpent in form, but having hands and feet like a man, and wings on its shoulders: six on the right side and six on the left. And he was holding in his hands the grapes of the tree and feeding the two whom I saw entwined with each other. And I said, “Who are these two entwined with each other, or who is this between them, or what is the fruit which they are eating, Mighty Eternal One? ” And he said, “This is the reason of men, this is Adam, and this is their desire on earth, this is Eve. And he who is between them is the Impiety of their pursuits for destruction, Azazel himself. ”

Orlov makes the amazing observation that Azazel ’s appearance here is similar to that of the golden cherubim on top of the Ark of the Covenant (which are always said to have been made to mimic the cherubim that sit near God ’s throne in the celestial realm). He does not resemble just one of the cherubs, but both of them put together, as each cherub is said to have six wings, and here Azazel is described as having twelve. Abraham ’s Apocalypse actually specified that the cherubim on God ’s throne had wings coming from their shoulders, their sides, and their loins, bringing to mind Gnostic depictions of the god Bes which ended up on the coins connected by Hammer-Purgstall with the Templars. This figure has wings attached to roughly the same areas, including two wings that protrude from his bottom as tail feathers.

Orlov also notes, in an earlier chapter in his book, that just as Adam and Eve are entwined sexually around Azazel in the above description, the cherubs on the Ark of the Covenant were actually shown to be joined in sexual union as well. As for evidence, he presents a passage from the “Yoma treatise ” of The Babylonian Talmud , where it says:

Whenever Israel came up to the Festival, the curtain would be removed for them and the Cherubim were shown to them, whose bodies were intertwisted with one another, and they would be thus addressed: Look! You are beloved before God as the love between man and woman.

Later on in that same text, we read that that cherub images were so explicit, they caused scandal among Israel ’s enemies:

When the heathens entered the Temple and saw the Cherubim whose bodies were intertwisted with one another, they carried them out and said: These Israelites, whose blessing is a blessing, and whose curse is a curse, occupy themselves with such things! And immediately they despised them, as it is said: All that honored her, despised her, because they have seen her nakedness.

Regarding the vision of Azazel in the Garden that Abraham is given in the Apocalypse , Orlov states:

Scholars have previously suggested that Azazel may attempt here to mimic the divine presence often represented in sacerdotal settings as the intertwined cherubic couple in the Holy of Holies by offering his own, now corrupted and demonic version of the sacred union.

It seems to us that this is true, but that Azazel (whom The Zohar refers to as the Tanin ’iver or “intermediary ”) only manifests as this dual creature through the bodies of Adam and Eve, as though they provide the “garments ” that the male and female aspects of himself clothe themselves in, via demonic possession. But then, there is also the idea that Adam and Eve got their original heavenly garments from the Serpent, as it says in The Zohar . Orlov mentions this again, noting that:

Pseudepigraphic and rabbinic accounts often provide various interpretations of the serpent ’s gender. Some of these sources seem to understand the serpent as an androgynous creature, whose skin God later used to create the “garments ” of both Adam and Eve.

Then there is the aforementioned quote from The Life of Adam and Eve that before his Fall, Satan lived on God ’s throne, where the wings of the cherubim provided his garment. This really almost sounds like Satan were God himself! Remember that The Zohar refers to the “Beast ” formed by the combination of Lilith and Samael as “the Other God. ”

The idea of being inside the skin of the Serpent is added to with another bizarre quote from The Zohar which seems to indicate that human souls originate inside the womb of a “certain female animal, ” who appears to be Lilith. She is described as always thirsty, presumably because she has been consigned to a desert wasteland. We humans come to this realm, it says, because the Serpent (seemingly, the same as the one from Eden) bites a hole in her womb, opening up a portal that allows our souls to incarnate into human bodies. As the text (Vayaqhel [Exodus] 219b, from Volume 4 of the Soncino Edition) states:

There is … a certain female animal that has under her daily charge a thousand keys, and that pants continually after the water brooks to drink and quench her thirst, of which it is thus written, “As the hart panteth after the water brooks. ” It is to be observed that this verse commences with a masculine subject, “hart ” (‘ayyal), and continues with a feminine predicate, tha ‘erog (she panteth). the recondite explanation of this is that it is an allusion to the male-female as one undivided and inseparable; and so it is the female part of the same that “panteth for the water brooks ” and then becomes impregnated from the male element, and is in labour, coming under the scrutiny of Rigour. But at the moment when she is about to be delivered of offspring the Holy One, blessed be He, prepares for her a huge celestial serpent through whose bite she is safely delivered. And this is the hidden meaning of, “I will greatly multiply thy pain and thy travail, ” for she is in daily convulsions and pain because of the deeds of mankind: “in pain thou shalt bring forth children, ” a hidden allusion to the Serpent who casts a gloom over the faces of mankind; “and thy desire shall be to thy husband ” ... Why all this? It was on account of the Moon ’s dissatisfaction with her state, in punishment for which, as tradition teaches us, her light was diminished, also her power was reduced so that she is beholden to what they grant her from outside. It may be asked, Why is the Serpent necessary in this connection? It is because it is he who opens the passage for the descent of souls into the world. For if he did not open the way, no soul would come down to animate a man ’s body in the world. So Scripture says, “sin coucheth at the door ” (Genesis 3:7) alluding to the celestial door through which pass the souls at birth to emerge into this world. He, the Serpent, waits at that door. It is true, when the souls about to emerge are such as are to enter sanctified bodies, he is not present, having no dominion over such souls. But otherwise, the Serpent bites, and that spot is defiled and the soul passing through is unpurified. Herein is concealed a sublime mystical teaching. “In pain thou shalt bring forth children ” is a mystical allusion to that Serpent, as it is with him that She brings forth souls, since he is responsible for the body and she for the soul, and the two are combined.

It would seem that the creature giving birth here is a hermaphrodite. The hole bitten by the Serpent may also be what constitutes the cleaving apart of the male and female halves, since this is given as an explanation for why the woman (now thought of as Eve) yearns for her husband.

Maybe part of the mystery being hinted at here is that “Lilith ” was the first wife of “Adam ” because “Adam ” was originally God, and she was his female half. He was pregnant with all the possibilities of what could be, the “complete man ” that Adam Kadmon, the “first Adam ” of the cabalists, is described as. Part of what was inside him was the awareness of the possibility that some of his constituent parts could be separated from others. This awareness was in itself part of what caused that split to actually happen (the knowledge of Good and Evil). This brought about the rupture that caused the possibilities trapped in utero to be born as actualities, so that sex and death were simultaneously brought into existence. But the pain of separation between the male and female halves, now called “Adam ” and “Eve, ” and considered diminutive creations of their now deified (in the case of the male half, God), and infernalized (in the case of the female half, Lilith) past selves. Islamic tradition has it that after the Fall, Adam and Eve separated out of shame for a number of years, and when they reunited again, it happened in Mecca, near where the Kaaba would be built (a fact mentioned in the previously-quoted Shriner ritual).

This strange description of what seems to be the demon Lilith giving birth to humans, along with so many other hints that we have gone over in this book, bring to mind what is potentially one of the most blasphemous questions you could ask. Are all of the original hermaphroditic pairs —God and the Matronit, Adam and Eve, Lilith and Samael—all in some way the same thing? Is this what the rabbinic texts are hinting at: that the real reunion which our universe is yearning for is between God and the Devil? It would seem a question too audacious to ask, but then, this passage from The Zohar (I.35b, as quoted by Orlov) makes us feel we are not off the mark. We have quoted this in part before, but let us now look at the whole context:

Now observe a deep and holy mystery of faith, the symbolism of the male principle and the female principle of the universe. In the former are comprised all holinesses and objects of faith, and all life, all freedom, all goodness, all illuminations emerge from thence; all blessings, all benevolent dews, all graces and kindnesses—all these are generated from that side, which is called the South. Contrariwise, from the side of the North there issue a variety of grades, extending downwards, to the world below. This is the region of the dross of gold, which comes from the side of impurity and loathsomeness and which forms a link between the upper and nether regions; and there is the line where the male and female principles join, forming together the rider on the serpent, and symbolized by Azazel.

So it seems to us that Azazel somehow acts as the intermediary not just between the male and female halves of the Serpent (Lilith and Samael), but also between the principle of good (here described as male) and the principle of evil (here described as female). Is the Devil God ’s girlfriend here, or even his wife? It certainly seems that way. But if that ’s the case, it may be safe to assume that they are presently divorced, or perhaps legally separated. As in any split-up from a long-term relationship, there has been a legal agreement regarding the shared property (creation) and the kids (humanity). They seem to have joint custody. Drawing upon the work of writers Michael Stone and John Collins, Andrei Orlov describes the arrangement, with Azazel, the intermediary, being given power of attorney to oversee the Serpent ’s possessions on its behalf:

Michael Stone draws attention to the traditions found in chapters 20, 22, and 29 [of The Apocalypse of Abraham], where the reference to Azazel ’s rule, which he exercises jointly with God over the world, coincides “with the idea that God granted him authority over the wicked. ”; Stone suggests that “these ideas are clearly dualistic in nature. ” John Collins explores another cluster of peculiar depictions repeatedly found in the second part of the Apocalypse , in which humankind is divided into two parts, half on the right and half on the left, representing respectively the chosen people and the Gentiles. These portions of humanity are labeled in the text as the lot of God and the lot of Azazel.

But the idea of bringing this primordial couple back together again, no matter how dangerous that may be, seems to have been the ultimate goal of many, including the rabbis who wrote The Zohar , and the secret societies that have perpetuated through the centuries the mysteries discussed in this book. The Holy Grail has been described as both a cup and a stone. But really they are both of the same substance, and the ultimate treasure would be to obtain and reunite both the cup and the stone.

In his 1973 book The Spear of Destiny , Trevor Ravenscroft claimed that “The Sign of the Holy Grail … is a Dove winging across from the Sun into the invisible disc held within the arms of the Crescent Moon. ” This is essentially the same as one of the primary symbols of Christianity: the image of the heavenly Host descending into the Eucharist cup. It is shown either as a white disc (the communion wafer), usually marked with a cross, sometimes carried down in the beak of a dove, or it is shown as a sun disc with shining rays. Aleister Crowley ’s OTO uses their own version of this as their official “lamen, ” but instead the bird descends into a cup containing a rose, a Templar cross, and flames, presumably on its way to immolate itself like a phoenix in its own “baptism of fire. ”

If the Host is the Sun, then the cup, logically, is the crescent moon, a symbol of Islam that was also incorporated by the Templars into some of their official seals. On these the Moon was often shown along with either a lion, or the image of the Dome of the Rock. One of the most interesting depictions of the holy Host and cup can be found in the window of the Dominus Flevit (“The Lord Wept ”) church in Jerusalem, directly overlooking the Dome.

Interestingly, an event has occurred recently there at the Dome that brings to mind the image of the Host descending into the communion cup. On the night of January 28, 2011, a strange and sizable ball of light was seen hovering over the Dome, descending to touch the top, and then raising up again. It did this several times before it suddenly zipped off heavenward and flew away. The event was recorded by many witnesses. While we are not making any claims about what this meant, it does fall into line with the Holy Grail imagery associated with the Dome and the buildings nearby.

In alchemy, the combination of the Sun and the Moon is considered a symbol of the great chemical conjunction of the elements of the universe, which is allegedly key to the magical transformation of substances that is the goal of this art. It is these heavenly bodies, represented sometimes as a king and a queen, who are shown mating in a bathtub in so many alchemical images from medieval times. This is the “Bath of the Stars ” discussed in a previous chapter, in which they are shown bathing in the blood of their own children. It may also be the “Baptism of Wisdom as practiced by the Templars, in which, it seems quite possibly, they sacrificed babies produced during orgies, and utilized their bodies for black magic purposes.

The wedding of the solar and the lunar embodies the same concept as the merging of light and darkness (symbolized by the chequer pattern), as it is the blending of day and night. The courtship between Solomon and the Queen of Sheba (Sheba an incarnation, supposedly, of Lilith, and both of them associated with “wisdom ”) could be thought of as a symbol of the same idea. The fact that Solomon ’s birth name was actually “Jedidiah ” (“beloved of the Lord ”) indicates that “Solomon ” (a permutation of shalom or salem) was actually a symbolic title he took as king. It has the same root as the name of his capital city, “Jerusalem, ” and the alleged location of his temple/stairway to Heaven (the temple of the white rock). Again, the word also means “peace, ” like that which the reconciliation of opposing forces would bring. Meanwhile, the Queen of Sheba can be connected directly with the Kaaba in lore, for the guardians of the Kaaba have always been referred to as “Beni Shaybah, ” (“the Sons of the Old Woman ”), which is traditionally taken to be a reference to her. Prince Michael of Albany, as we noted, believes that it also points to the “widow ” Isis (impregnated with her son Horus by the undead body of her deceased and resurrected husband Osiris), as the epithet “Sons of the Widow, ” used by Freemasons to identify themselves, is meant to imply that they are symbolically her children.

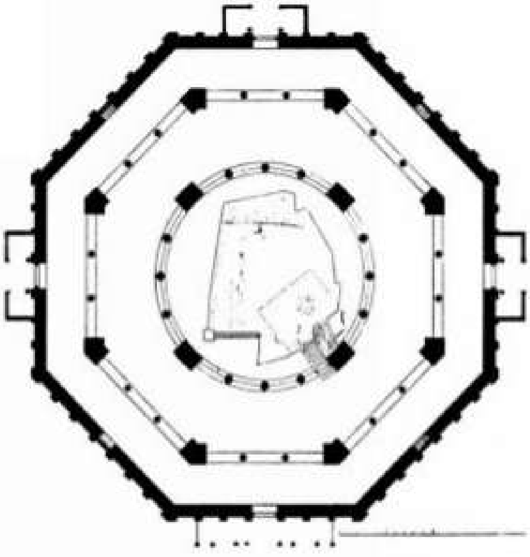

2. JERUSALEM: DER FELSENDOM.

Above: Floorplan of the Dome of the Rock, from *Kirchliche Baukunst des Abendlandes* by Georg Dehio and Gustav von Bezold, 1887-1901. Below: View from the window of the Dominus Flevit church in Jerusalem. Opposite: Mohammed's flying steed, Barak.

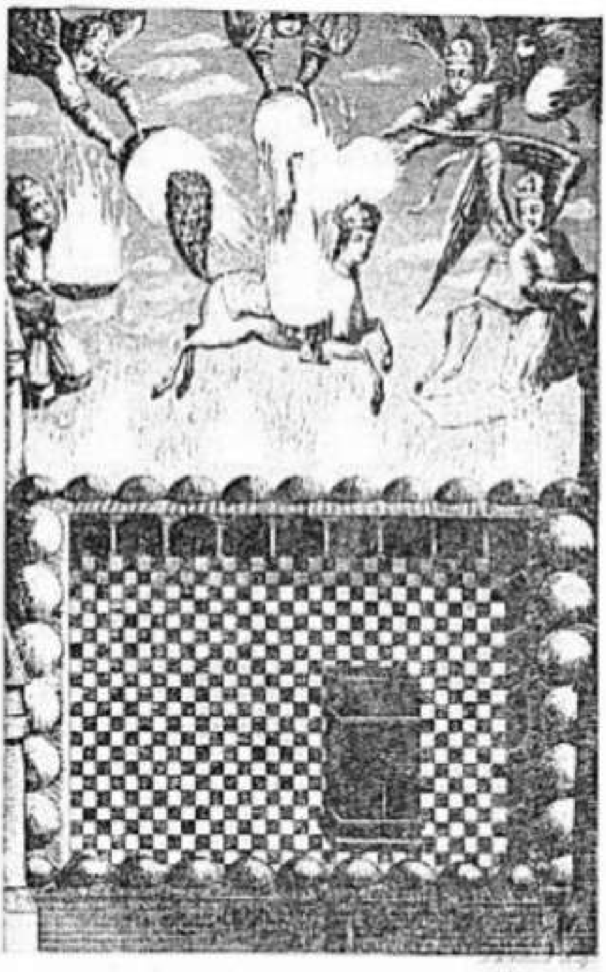

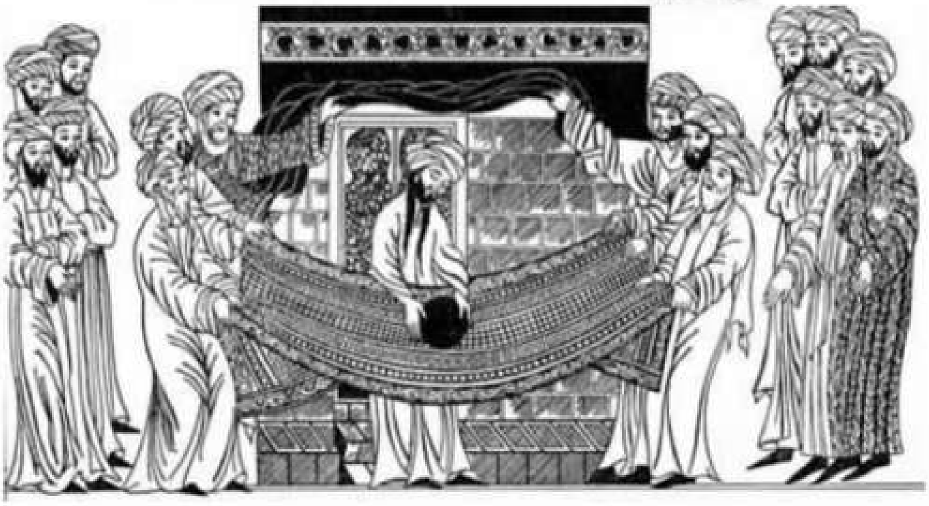

Right: Sophia Mercurius, from an alchemical manuscript. Below: *The Azoth of the Philosophers*, by Basil Valentine, 1659. Opposite page, above: Mohammed and Barak flying over the Kaaba, shown with chequered floor, from D'Ohsson's *Tableau General de l'Empire Othoman*, 1788-1824. Opposite Page, below: Mohammed rededicating the Black Stone at the Kaaba, by Jami' al-Tavarikh, from *Compendium of Chronicles*, Rashid Al-Din, c. 1315.

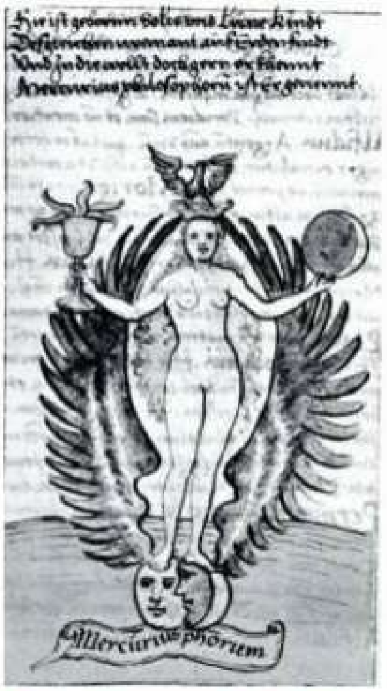
Mercurius phorum

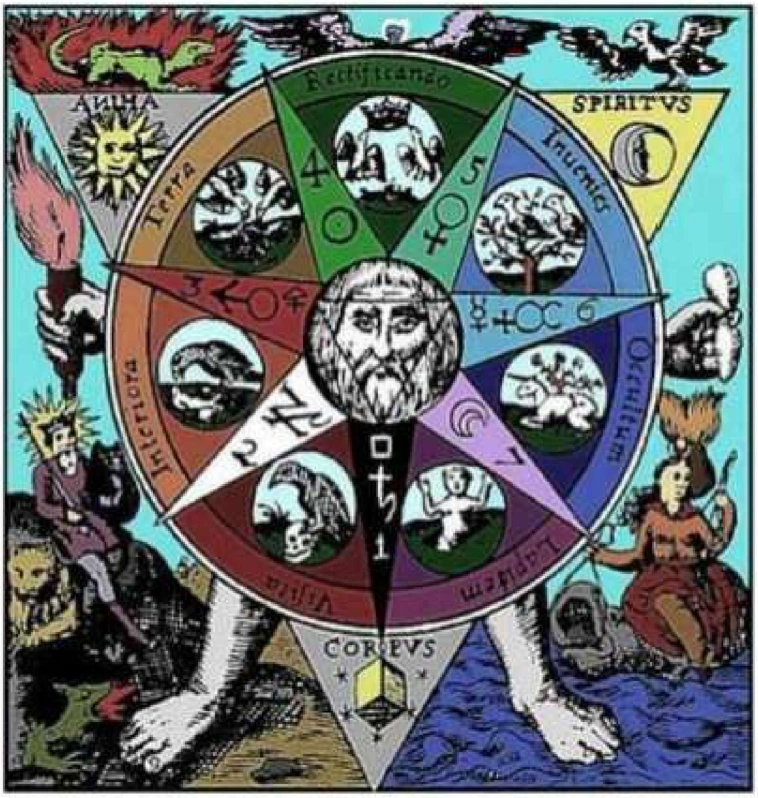
ANIMA
SPIRITVS
CORPVS
Rectificando
Invenies
Occultum
Lapidem
Visita
Interiora
Terra
4
5
6
7
1
2
3

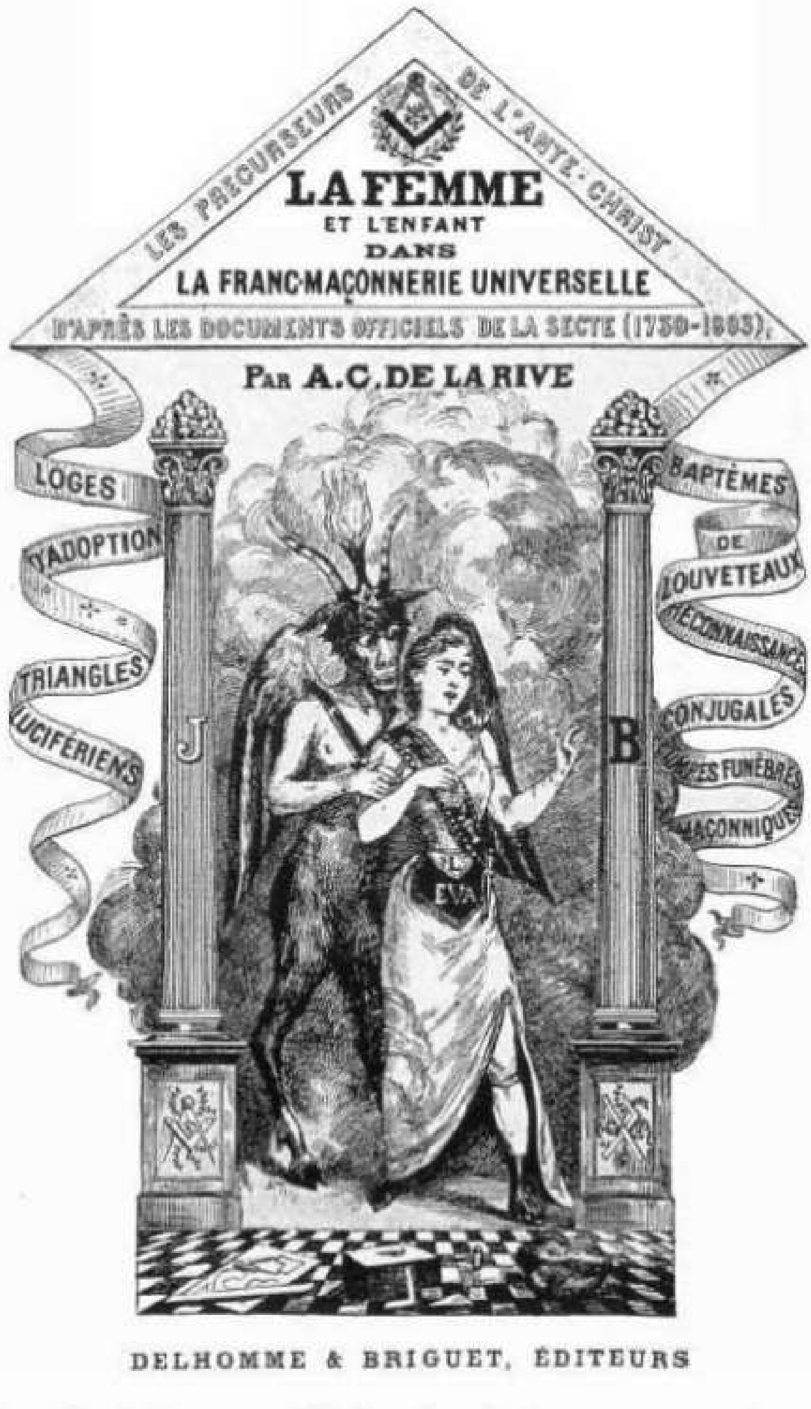

LES PRÉCURSEURS DE L'ANTE-CHRIST

LA FEMME
ET L'ENFANT
DANS
LA FRANC-MAÇONNERIE UNIVERSELLE
D'APRÈS LES DOCUMENTS OFFICIELS DE LA SECTE (1730-1893)

PAR A.C. DE LA RIVE

DELHOMME & BRIGUET, ÉDITEURS

LOGES
D'ADOPTION
TRIANGLES
LUCIFÉRIENS
J
B
BAPTÊMES
DE
LOUVETEAUX
RECONNAISSANCES
CONJUGALES
POMPES FUNÈBRES
MAÇONNIQUES
EVA

Cover for *La Femme et L'Enfant dans la Franc-maconnerie Universelle* by AC de la Rive, 1894.

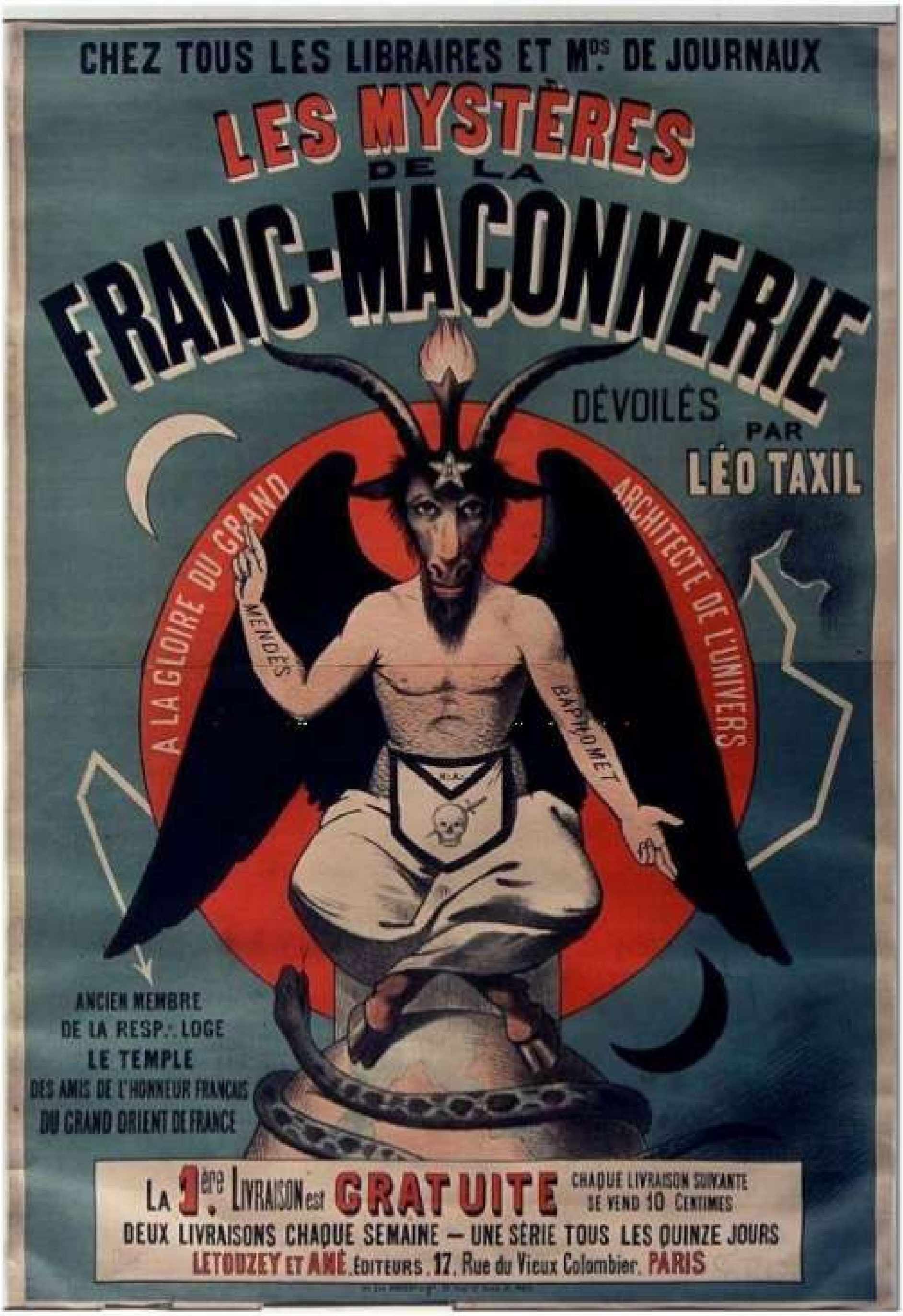
CHEZ TOUS LES LIBRAIRES ET Mds. DE JOURNAUX
LES MYSTÈRES
DE LA
FRANC-MAÇONNERIE
DÉVOILÉS
PAR
LÉO TAXIL
A LA GLOIRE DU GRAND ARCHITECTE DE L'UNIVERS
MENDÈS
BAPHOMET
ANCIEN MEMBRE
DE LA RESP∴ LOGE
LE TEMPLE
DES AMIS DE L'HONNEUR FRANÇAIS
DU GRAND ORIENT DE FRANCE
LA 1ère. LIVRAISON est GRATUITE
CHAQUE LIVRAISON SUIVANTE SE VEND 10 CENTIMES
DEUX LIVRAISONS CHAQUE SEMAINE — UNE SÉRIE TOUS LES QUINZE JOURS
LETOUZEY ET ANÉ, EDITEURS, 17, Rue du Vieux Colombier, PARIS

Promotional poster for *Les Mysteres de la Franc-maçonnerie Devoiles* by Leo Taxil, 1895.

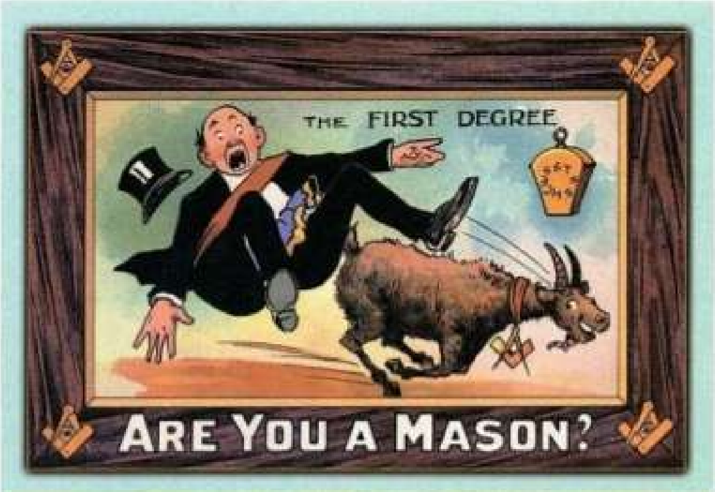
THE FIRST DEGREE
ARE YOU A MASON?

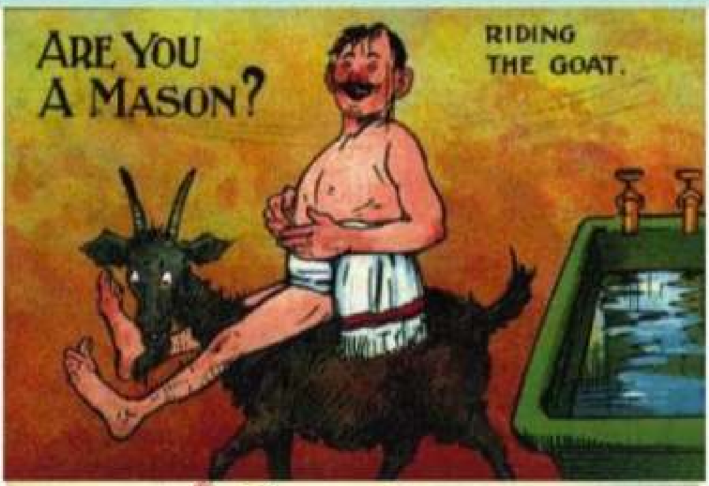
ARE YOU A MASON?
RIDING THE GOAT.

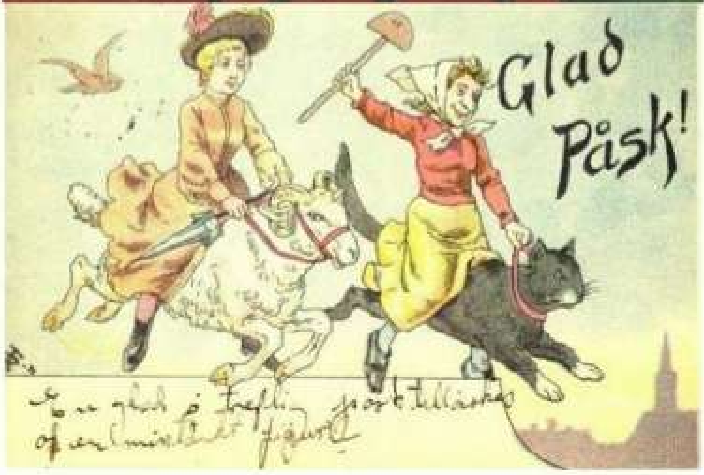
Glad Påsk!
En glad o treflig påsk tillönskas
af en [illegible]

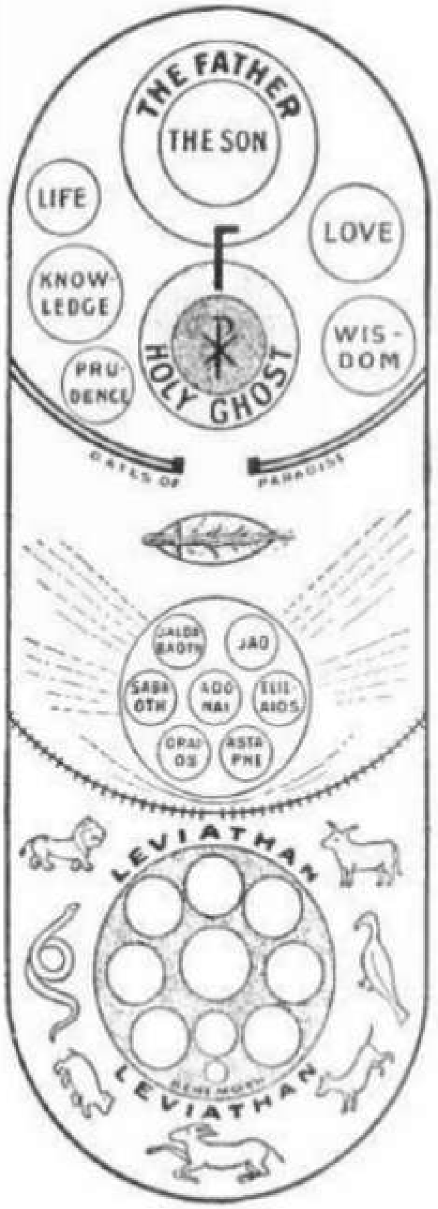
THE FATHER
THE SON
LIFE
LOVE
KNOW-LEDGE
WIS-DOM
PRU-DENCE
HOLY GHOST
GATES OF
PARADISE
IALDA BAOTH
IAO
SABA OTH
ADO NAI
ELEI AIOS
ORAI OS
ASTA PHE
LEVIATHAN
BEHEMOTH
LEVIATHAN

Above: Ophite diagram, taken from SaintWiki.com (CCL). Opposite, above: Postcards referencing the "goat-riding" Masonic "joke." Opposite, below: Postcard featuring "the Easter Witch" with goatriding and cat-riding.

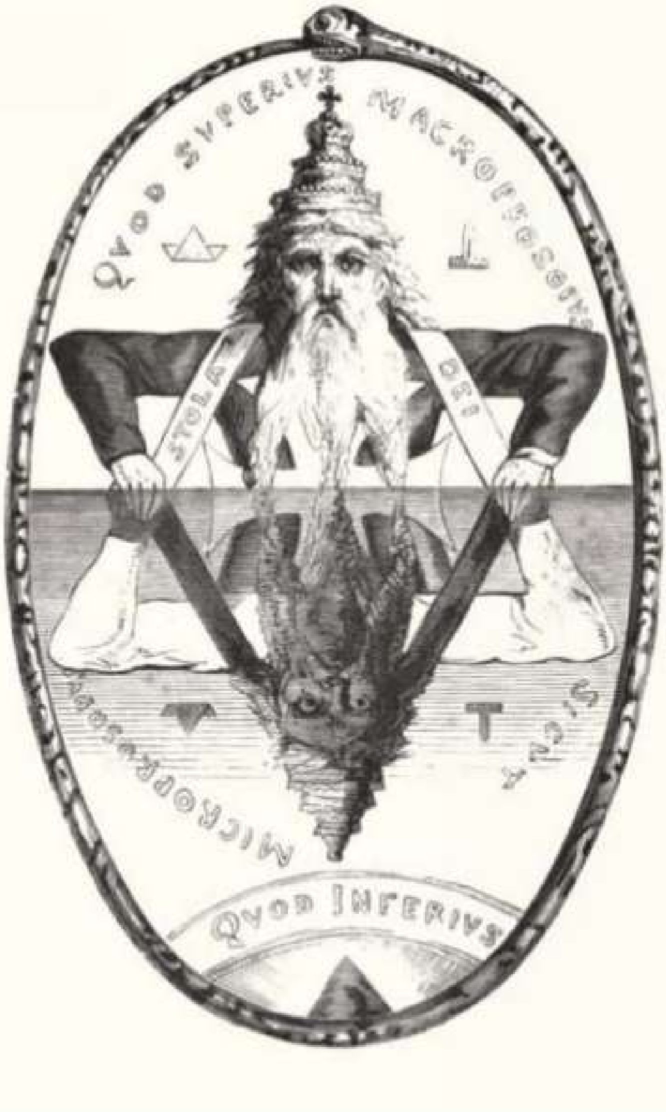

QVOD SVPERIVS MACROPROSOPVS
STOLA DEI
MICROPROSOPVS SIGNA
QVOD INFERIVS

The Great Symbol of Solomon, from *Transcendental Magic* by Eliphas Levi. It is a representation of God and "Zer Anpin," God's "little face." Levi calls it "the Macroprosopus and the Microprosopus; the God of Light and the God of Reflections; of mercy and vengeance; the white Jehovah and the black Jehovah." Note the figure is wearing a Templar cross.

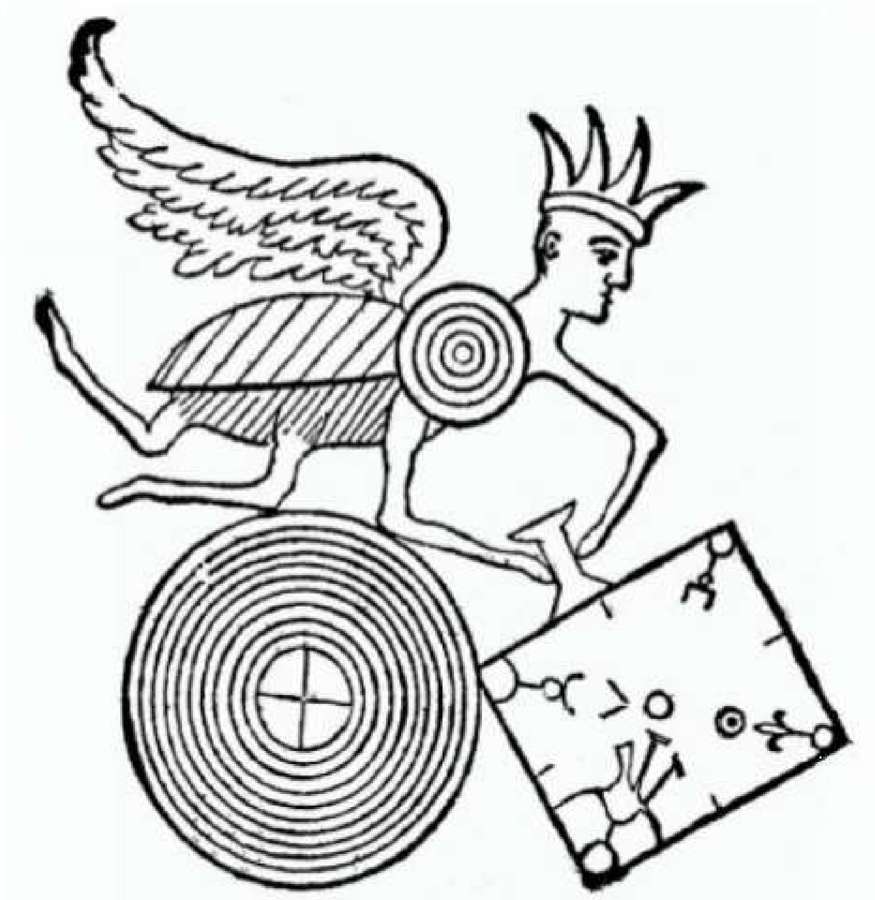

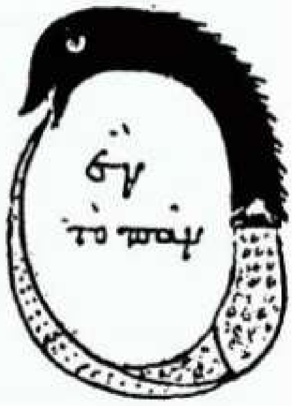

Above: Bahumed, "The Secret of the nature of the world, or The Secret of Secrets, or The Beginning and Return of every thing." From *Ancient Alphabets and Hieroglyphic Characters Explained* by Ibn Wahshiyya.

Left: Ouroboros from *Chrysopeia* by Cleopatra the Alchemist, tenth-eleventh century.

As for what Baphomet (the “abbot of the temple of peace ”) was, or is, to the thousands if not millions of people who belong to secret societies and fringe religious groups influenced by this concept, well, there is no one answer. Rather, there are several answers that are all simultaneously true. It is really neither a single object nor a merely abstract concept. Instead it is a continuum running throughout time and space, connecting all of the gods, people, objects, myths and symbols that manifest the forbidden wisdom given to Eve in the Garden of Eden. Individual personages, both human and divine, have throughout history come along to act as living avatars of this hidden Gnosis. Baphomet is not a static, definable idea, but a mutable mercurial sentience that expresses itself in a multitude of ways.

We could certainly say that Baphomet is a nonhuman intelligence, variously described as a demon or a deity, seemingly made from the energies of the male and female halves of an originally hermaphroditic entity of primordial chaos. Baphomet is perhaps specifically the intelligence formed when Azazel, the Tanin ’iver, acts as an intermediary between the two serpents and allows them to mate. This seems to be connected to the idea of the Serpent/s using the bodies of humans as hosts through when they unite with each other sexually.

The Templars appear to have used an idol as a touchpoint to contact this entity. The idol is usually described as a head, and the name Baphomet applies to the idol itself as well (along with the various copies that were made of it to be used in Templar preceptories far-flung throughout Europe and the Middle East). They believed that their demon used these heads to talk to them. If they were anything like the other oracular heads in history, its mouth may have moved, like the robot head supposedly owned by Catholic saint and alchemist Albertus Magnus. It is likely that some Templars also thought that it spoke to them telepathically.

From the Templars ’ confessions, they seem to have believed that the head had given their leaders information that they found helpful in building their global empire through moneylending, trade, and military conquest. To them it was both a priest and a prophet, like John, whose head or skull may have been the actual physical idol. As we have explained, the heads of prophets were revered as having special magical qualities. We mentioned that there were Talmudic rumors that John had a demonic servant, and that the control of this demon was passed on to Jesus. It seems possible for there to have been a belief that Jesus, who was related to King Herod ’s bloodline, may have somehow gotten hold of John ’s head, and used it to control either John ’s own spirit, or a spirit that John had formerly controlled while he was alive. This head, then, may have later come into the hands of the founding Templars (or, at least, something that they believed was this). Or the head and attached spirit could have come to be possessed by John ’s student and successor Simon Magus first. Perhaps too, rather, as Alexander Rivera has suggested, Simon may have been beheaded just like John, and it could have been his head that ended up with the Templars.

If this was the case, it seems likely then that the spirit they acquired was connected to Lilith-Samael, the Serpent of the primordial deep, which makes sense if they had come into contact with it via their time spent on the alleged Temple Mount, or through something they found there. It also seems likely, given the combination of images that came to be joined to the concept of Baphomet, that the Templars used magic to blend in with this spirit the attributes of wild satyr gods like Dionysus, Hermes, and Pan (which were, in a roundabout way, already connected to Lilith-Samael via the imagery of the goat-demon Azazel, their intermediary). It seems like they also blended in the essence of the wisdom of Hermes Trismegistus, and that of the Gnostic Sophia.

What do we mean by saying that they “used magic ” to “blend ” these things? Let us give a few examples. In imperial Rome, when a new land was conquered, those people ’s gods would be rededicated and incorporated into the Roman pantheon, often joined up with other existing gods who were either considered to have the same attributes, or to be complimentary. The resulting hybrid entities would sometimes thereafter be represented with the physical features of both gods stuck onto the same body. The names would be hybridized too. There was a magical ceremony that was part of this process. Robert Graves wrote about it in The White Goddess :

In ancient times, once a god ’s secret name had been discovered, the enemies of his people could do destructive magic against them with it. The Romans made a regular practice of discovering the secret names of enemy gods and summoning them to Rome with seductive promises, a process technically know as elicio … . Naturally, the Romans, like the Jews, hid the secret name of their own guardian deity with extraordinary care.

In the modern fantasy anime series “Fullmetal Alchemist, ” real live “chimeras ” are created through alchemy by “marrying ” creatures of dissimilar nature, including humans and animals. The resulting monstrosities are then kept as servants, used to do things like guarding an alchemist ’s laboratory. While this is obviously just fiction, the writers of this show displayed a great deal of understanding of the subject not found in many nonfiction books on the subject. Ultimately, the Philosopher ’s Stone in this program is revealed to be made from human souls, and the sacrifice of these is what makes alchemical transformations possible —an idea that almost no modern writer has touched upon outside of horror fiction. But the true story of Gilles de Rais —a fifteenth century French nobleman who raped and murdered hundreds of boys in an attempt to persuade the Devil to transform lead into gold alchemically with their blood — proves that these things have been understood for some time.

The creation of chimera servants in the above-mentioned TV show brings to mind what chaos magick author Phil Hine says about “servitors ” that can be made by magicians to do their bidding. These are spirits that are pulled out of chaos (tehom , “the deep ”) and formed in whatever shape the magician chooses, to do whatever he needs. This involves the drawing of an image to represent the character that the servitor will take on, including what he looks like, what attributes he will have, and what rules he will operate by. Hine talks about creating the servitor as a glyph on a piece of paper, perhaps using the “sigil magick ” process discussed earlier, and then “animating ” it with meditation, sacrifices of blood, incense, and things of that nature, to impart to it energy and the essence of spirit.

However much one may believe in ceremonial magic, the instructions given by Hine indicate that the spirit created will never act like more than an imaginary friend, and its influence will be subtle if detectable at all (on the level of doing a personal affirmation in the mirror). However, if one actually has a severed human head for the spirit to inhabit, or one takes the bodies of creatures and sews them together a la Frankenstein, then uses magic to animate the resulting monstrosity, the event takes on quite more serious tone. Remember too that according to Polyhistor ’s quote of Berossus supposedly quoting Oannes, before the present stage of creation, there existed a primordial Abyss of chaos populated by beings with multiple heads, and “in which were combined the limbs of every species of animals. ” The substance of chaos seems to lend itself to such things, because it contains the potentiality of everything possible, in perfect mutability.

What we are proposing is that the Baphomet was a chimeric hybrid demonic servitor formed by the Templars, not from scratch, but through the transmutation and rededication of something they found, which was connected by them to a collection of related spiritual energies. This created an “egregore ”: a “thought form ” made from the combined imaginations and mental energies of a group of people that came to life and took on a will of its own. This egregore was then added to over the centuries by individuals and groups claiming to be perpetuating the mythos of the Templars: Freemasons, Eliphas Levi, Aleister Crowley, and Anton LaVey (creator of the Church of Satan). Along with them, a huge role was played by one of the Templars ’ greatest critics, Joseph von Hammer-Purgstall, whose work is still being assessed by us. (Please see our translation of Mysterium Baphometis Revelatum , with commentary by Tracy R. Twyman, which should be available shortly after the publication of the book you are now reading.)

Although we feel that, in a way, Baphomet is an artificial entity created by the Templars, we also think that they revered this figure as a teacher. As his connection to Hermes would indicate, Baphomet is an example of the archetype of the teacher of forbidden wisdom (as the goat god or Black Man of the

Witches ’ Sabbath would later be seen by his acolytes also). This includes both the “divine secrets ” of another reality beyond our own, the “Pleroma ” (knowledge of which is Gnosis), as well as seemingly mundane knowledge of science and technology which we take for granted now, but which scriptures and myths teach us were once forbidden for men to know, and available to us now only because certain brave angels or gods defied divine law to bring them to us. The Serpent taught forbidden wisdom to Eve in the Garden. The Watchers, Azazel and Samyaza, in turn taught it to their half-human children before the Flood. After that, a number of teachers are remembered as having brought these things to men again, in the attempt to help rebuild our shattered civilization. Thus we have stories of figures like Enoch, Oannes, Enki, Hermes, Asclepius, Agathodaemon, and several others, teaching knowledge to men and initiating wisdom traditions that were passed on for generations.

Speaking of “generation, ” that is in fact part of the hidden wisdom. In the Garden of Eden it was carnal knowledge that was bestowed upon Eve. The secret of Genesis was the secret of generation. The hints embedded in this text, when decoded, reveal the implication that our universe is a time-space box that didn ’t exist until Eve ate the “fruit. ” We may wonder how it is that there was “fruit ” for her to eat (specifically “fruit of a tree bearing seed ”) when there was no sexual generation in the first place. The “fruit, ” most likely, was the fetal potentiality of new life, the fruit of the tree of carnal knowledge.

As we know, there were two trees in the Garden—the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil and the Tree of Life. If the “knowledge ” is carnal knowledge, and its “fruit ” is a fetus or a baby, wouldn ’t the fruit of the Tree of Life also be the same thing? We mentioned briefly the idea that the Philosopher ’s Stone is made from the flesh and blood of the young, babies and fetuses in particular, and that the consumption of such preserves youth (a notion explored in greater depth in Tracy R. Twyman ’s books Clock Shavings and Money Grows on the

Tree of Knowledge). As Genesis implies, eating from the Tree of Knowledge brought birth and death into the world. Therefore, it says, the gods (or Jehovah and whoever he was talking to in this text) sealed off the Tree of Life, so that humans would not eat of it and become immortal. But the Tree of Life had only been briefly mentioned in the text until that point. Did the Tree of Knowledge become the Tree of Life after Eve ate from it? Did the Tree of Knowledge contain only the potentiality of life, which became real after carnal knowledge was obtained?

The idea of eating babies brings to mind the myth of Chronos, the Greek god of time eating his own children at birth, the imagery of which is directly invoked in alchemical treatises, with Chronos (the Roman Saturn) shown doing exactly this. In alchemy Chronos is equated with the nigrido or prima materia , the primordial chaos that is transformed through the alchemical process into the desired form, usually represented with either a skull or a black sun. In Money Grows on the Tree of Knowledge , Tracy R. Twyman talks about the fact that, in

Greek myths, Chronos was treated the same was by his own father:

Ouranous (Uranus) had likewise resented his children, the Titans, and imprisoned them underneath the Earth in order to keep them from threatening his rule. Since his consort ’s name was Gaia, or Earth, this really means he was imprisoning them inside of her. Indeed some versions of the story refer to Ouranous shoving his children back into their mother ’s womb as a way of jailing them.

Chronos was said to have ruled over an epoch of Earth ’s history called the “Golden Age, ” in which there were no seasons, and nobody had to work for a living. It seems as if there may have been no death or birth in that place either, just like in pre-Fall Eden. In Part 1 of the article series on her website entitled “Regnum in Potentia: Saturn ’s Kingdom Transformed into the Golden Age, ” Tracy R. Twyman elaborates on this:

Here is the meaning of this myth. Chronos (“Father Time ”) had lived and ruled (or “unruled ”) for untold aeons in a timeless realm before the coming of Zeus. In this realm, there could be no begetting of offspring, or else there would also be death. Thus the birth of children had to be prevented, either by confining them within the womb —as Ouranos did —or by swallowing them at birth —as Chronos did, attempting to negate their existence by confining them to another womb of sorts: his gullet.

This is exactly what the story of the Garden of Eden indicates. Adam and Eve live in happy, timeless ignorance. They are the children of a god who remains, to them, invisible, and they are still shut up inside the womb, or within their father ’s gullet. There, they live as parasites, forming a symbiotic relationship with their host, who provides them with all of the sustenance they need. Then one day, a foreign fruit is introduced to them from outside. They are told by their father, the unseen god, not to eat it. But they do anyway, and it initiates in them an awakening to the reality of what they are involved in. Their eyes are opened. They wake up from the dream and realize that they are slowly being digested. At that moment, they are vomited out into the cold, cruel, outside world, forced to work for their daily bread, fighting for survival. With their birth, or perhaps, their second birth, the passage of time is finally allowed to begin.

In mythology, there is an archetypal scenario in which a person travels from one realm to another, and becomes stuck there upon eating the food of the other realm. This happened to the Greek figure of Persephone when she ate the food of the underworld. Eve ate from the Tree of Knowledge and it changed the universe, or perhaps it created a new universe, and she became trapped in it. Jesus told us to eat his flesh and drink his blood to live forever in the New Jerusalem (the “Kingdom of God ”) after death. In the New Jerusalem everyone drinks of the waters of life from the rivers of Paradise and becomes immortal. So perhaps there are other recipes involving similar ingredients that likewise could affect the universe around you upon consumption.

Satan, according to some interpretations, is God ’s firstborn son, who came before Adam. But Adam was his favorite, and when his firstborn son refused to honor his younger brother, God sacrificed him. Satan embodied the forbidden wisdom that Adam was not allowed to have, and God told him not to eat of that “tree. ” Was this “fruit ” the product of sexual union? The carnal knowledge that Eve was endowed with, according to the cabalistic legends, came from her having carnal knowledge of the Serpent, which bred Cain (and perhaps others, according to some stories). What happens when a human and a spirit of the chaos realm mate? Better yet, what happens when you eat the child that was born of such a union?

Cain was later exiled by his parents to a place called “Nod ” (after killing his brother and, according to some versions of the story, drinking his blood). Nod seems like a word for the Abyss. In other words, Cain was shoved back into the non-existent chaos that had fathered him, like the children of Ouranos were shoved back into their mother ’s womb. Upon the basis of the primordial events attempting to be expressed in these myths, it seems, the cultic practice of child sacrifice and brephophagy (baby-eating) has continued throughout the thousands of years of man ’s history, particular the sacrifice of the firstborn.

We think it likely that the Templars may have engaged in such a ritual, it being a “baptism of wisdom ” or “immersion in the divine mystery ” for the initiates (and, sadly, perhaps a deadly “baptism of fire ” for the victims). The title of this ceremony provides yet another interpretation for the name of Baphomet. Part of what may have been achieved for the participants by such ceremonies was a state of mind, which seems to be akin to merging one ’s mind with the other side, the Pleroma, or the pre-Fall Eden. This experience in itself is also one of the meanings of “Baphomet. ”

In addition to the effects on the mind for the ceremony ’s participants, there may have also been a belief among the Templars that a long-term goal could be achieved over time, through generations, if certain rituals were done in this state of mind, including the breeding of children, both for sacrifice, and for the continuation of a sacred bloodline. The lineage is that of Cain, the Serpent seed. The original Templars, and all of their grand masters, came from that bloodline, as did most of the royal families of Europe who have done so much to shape the world we live in. The members of this family can be thought of as incarnations of the Serpent, just as Lilith was thought by cabalists take human form in order to breed into the patriarchal pedigree of Israel. The goal of this, as we have indicated, might have actually been to put the seed of the Serpent in powerful positions on Earth, so that, through his children, he may finally rule over what he considers to be his rightful inheritance. Baphomet can be thought of as a combination formed by this chain of incarnations via these bloodlines throughout the centuries —the spirit that inhabits all of them, and ties them together. Also, through the bodies of these, the Serpent ’s descendants, the male and female halves of the Beast get to experience the pleasure of mating.

Returning once more to the image of Abraxas, can it not be thought to symbolize this dangerous union, capable of destroying the universe? For his body provides a place of union where two serpents, shown as his legs, combine. If so, perhaps the use of a rooster ’s head on top can be seen as an expression of hope that from the destruction wrought by such a union, the dawn of a brand new day (maybe a new Eden) will be announced.

So what if we look at Levi ’s Baphomet image in the same way? Does his goat persona connect him with Azazel, and indicate that Baphomet is the thing that unites these serpents in their destructive unholy matrimony? Is this part of what is symbolized by the two serpents on the caduceus that rises from his crotch region? Is this because his “body ” is the “temple ” where the conjunction of the two snakes takes place (perhaps at one point literally, via the bodies of the Knights of the Temple, through possession)?

One thing is for certain: Baphomet, to modern Satanists, exemplifies the nuanced view of the Devil that they now have, which is quite different from the views of all of the other religious groups that we have examined in this book (Jews, Christians, Hermeticists, Gnostics, and various pagan cults). To Jews and most Christians, Jehovah is the creator of the universe, and the bestower of all blessings. He decides how fate will be meted out, who will gain and who will lose. If you have wealth and health, it is because God has chosen that for you. The Devil is God ’s adversary, so whenever God blesses or curses something, Satan tries to do the opposite. Yet to the Gnostics, the entity who does these things was not the real “God, ” but an imposter with evil intent. To the Cathars he was actually the Devil, Rex Mundi. Since he was the lord of this Earth, you would think that all material blessings enjoyed in life would be attributed to him.

Actually, that is how modern Satanists view it, but they don ’t see Satan as a negative entity. They (generally) don ’t seem to lament the creation of the world. Rather, they enthusiastically embrace materiality and the flesh. To them (generally) Satan is the god of this world, from whom all wealth or earthly success is granted. While organizations like the Church of Satan aren ’t generally populated with financially prosperous people, other, more secretive fraternities are, and some of those do seem to have satanic intent when their symbols are decoded. Perhaps, just as their enemies on the outside fear, they have discovered that the secret to riches and power is to prostrate themselves before the one who is truly in charge of these things. The closest parallel, historically, to this viewpoint can actually be found in the Yezidi scripture called Al-Jilwah (The Revelation), in the first three chapters, where their lord Melek Taus (whom they also call “Azazil ” and acknowledge is identical with “Sheitan ”) is portrayed as a benevolent Demiurge —at least for those who honor him. As it says in the translation by Isya Joseph, from his 1919 book Devil Worship: The Sacred Books and Traditions of the Yezidis :

I was, am now, and shall have no end. I exercise dominion over all creatures and over the affairs of all who are under the protection of my image. I am ever present to help all who trust in me and call upon me in time of need. There is no place in the universe that knows not my presence. I participate in all the affairs which those who are without call evil because their nature is not such as they approve. Every age has its own manager, who directs affairs according to my decrees. This office is changeable from generation to generation, that the ruler of this world and his chiefs may discharge the duties of their respective offices every one in his own turn. I allow everyone to follow the dictates of his own nature, but he that opposes me will regret it sorely. No god has a right to interfere in my affairs, and I have made it an imperative rule that everyone shall refrain from worshiping all gods. All the books of those who are without are altered by them; and they have declined from them, although they were written by the prophets and the apostles. That there are interpolations is seen in the fact that each sect endeavors to prove that the others are wrong and to destroy their books. To me truth and falsehood are known. When temptation comes, I give my covenant to him that trusts in me. Moreover, I give counsel to the skilled directors, for I have appointed them for periods that are known to me. I remember necessary affairs and execute them in due time. I teach and guide those who follow my instruction. If anyone obey me and conform to my commandments, he shall have joy, delight, and goodness.

I requite the descendants of Adam, and reward them with various rewards that I alone know. Moreover, power and dominion over all that is on earth, both that which is above and that which is beneath, are in my hand. I do not allow friendly association with other people, nor do I deprive them that are my own and that obey me of anything that is good for them. I place my affairs in the hands of those whom I have tried and who are in accord with my desires. I appear in divers manners to those who are faithful and under my command. I give and take away; I enrich and impoverish; I cause both happiness and misery. I do all this in keeping with the characteristics of each epoch. And none has a right to interfere with my management of affairs. Those who oppose me I afflict with disease; but my own shall not die like the sons of Adam that are without. None shall live in this world longer than the time set by me; and if I so desire, I send a person a second or a third time into this world or into some other by the transmigration of souls.

I lead to the straight path without a revealed book; I direct aright my beloved and my chosen ones by unseen means. All my teachings are easily applicable to all times and all conditions. I punish in another world all who do contrary to my will. Now the sons of Adam do not know the state of things that is to come. For this reason they fall into many errors. The beasts of the earth, the birds of heaven, and the fish of the sea are all under the control of my hands. All treasures and hidden things are known to me; and as I desire, I take them from one and bestow them upon another. I reveal my wonders to those who seek them, and, in due time my miracles to those who receive them from me. But those who are without are my adversaries, hence they oppose me. Nor do they know that such a course is against their own interests, for might, wealth, and riches are in my hand, and I bestow them upon every worthy descendant of Adam. Thus the government of the worlds, the transition of generations, and the changes of their directors are determined by me from the beginning.

In A History of Secret Societies , Arkon Daraul (Idries Shah) describes his attendance at a secret meeting of a Yezidi cult active in London in the late 1950s. The order ’s members were wealthy and, it seems, mostly white Britons, who would pray to Melek Taus for success in business. Whenever they would gain “as a result of any activity for whose success they have prayed to the Peacock, ” they were expected to pay 2.5 percent to the cult. Their rituals involved baptism at initiation, and circumambulation around a stone, of which one member was quoted as saying:

Let us remember the force of the good and the bad which are one; and let us now stand before it, and move around our stone.

We also have the rare esoteric eighth-century Shiite text, Mother of Books (Umm al-ktab), which portrays “Azazi ’il” in terms identical to that of the Gnostic Demiurge. The Gospel of John ’s description of Satan is the “prince of the world ” is virtually indistinguishable from the Yezidi and Shi ’ite notions of who Melek Taus/Azazil is. In the Liber Secretum used by Bogomils and Cathars, the Devil is defined, as Yuri Stoyanov put it in The Other God , as:

… a creator and master of the visible world, as “Lord of the sky, the sun, the air and the stars. ”

This appears to have been how the Templars viewed their Baphomet also, and from all available evidence, worshipping him seems to have worked out for them, at least for a time. As Pope Pius IX put it, “Their watchword was, to become wealthy, in order to buy the world, ” and that they did. Later they confessed to their torturers that it was Baphomet who enabled it all.

It should not surprise us, then, that there are many people today who

think their fantasies of fame and fortune can be fulfilled by making a pact with the Devil. On this topic, the name “Baphomet ” is frequently bandied about on the internet, as the popular belief is that this is the particular infernal name to invoke if you are looking to make such a Faustian bargain. (We noticed this trend took off after the release of Tracy R. Twyman ’s book Solomon ’s Treasure , which highlights the possible connection between the alleged “power ” of Baphomet and the global financial dominance of the US dollar.) Conspiracy theorists, who believe that popular musicians and movie stars are part of a Satanic “Illuminati ” plot, strain their eyes to find any pattern in a logo, an outfit, or even a set of curtains in the background of an image, that can in any way be construed to somehow look like a horned figure, and then call it “Baphomet. ”

We are certain that for as many people that there are who fear this perceived plot, there are just as many who are actually eager to join it. Both of the authors of the book you are reading now receive hits daily on their websites from people seeking information about how to make a pact with Baphomet for wealth (or, as we have seen it put so many times in our web statistics, “How to join the Baphomet ”). Many of these people, strangely, live in Africa. But there is plenty of interest in the West too. Recently, a statue of Baphomet was erected in Detroit by Satanists, to much public outcry, and the word was trending high on Google for days.

Today, people talk about Baphomet a lot, but they don ’t really know him. After years of research, however, we feel that we do, and we are pleased to have been able to introduce him to you. It is a knowledge you cannot disremember, and now that you have been dipped in its tincture, your mind will forever be stained. We hope you have enjoyed your baptism.

Initium Sapientiae Timor Domini .

(The fear of the Lord is the beginning of wisdom.)

— Proverbs 9:10, Psalms 111:10

Bibliography

“The Acts of Peter and Paul. ” New Advent. Web.

“Against Heresies. ” CHURCH FATHERS: (St. Irenaeus). New Advent. Web. “Against the Pelagians (Book I). ” CHURCH FATHERS: (Jerome). New Advent. Web. Agnes, Michael. Webster ’s New World College Dictionary . 4th edition. New York:

Macmillan, 1999. Print.

Altinoluk, Sencan, and Nilufer Atakan. “Abraxas: A Magical Gem in the Istanbul Archaeological Museums ” Anatolia Antiqua XXII (2014): 219 - 23. Print.

“Asclepius 21 - 29. ” Gnosis.org. Web.

Baigent, Michael, and Richard Leigh. Holy Blood, Holy Grail . New York: Delacorte, 1982. Print.

Baigent, Michael, and Richard Leigh. The Temple and the Lodge . London: J. Cape, 1989. Print.

“Baphomet and the Azoth. ” Pyramidlodge.com. Web.

Barrett, Caitlin E. “Plaster Perspectives on ‘Magical Gems ’: Rethinking the Meaning of ‘Magic ’ in Cornell's Dactyliotheca. ” Cornell Collection of Antiquities. Cornell University Library. Web.

Barnstone, Willis, and Marvin Meyer. The Gnostic Bible . Boston, Massachusetts: Shambhala, 2003. Print.

Barnstone, Willis. The Other Bible: Ancient Alternative Scriptures . New York, New York: HarperCollins, 1984. Print.

Berg, Rav PS. The Essential Zohar: The Source of Kabbalistic Wisdom . New York: Three Rivers Press, 2002. Print.

Betz, Hans Dieter. The Greek Magical Papyri in Translation, including the Demotic Spells . Chicago, Illinois: University of Chicago, 1986. Print.

Biggs, Mark Wayne. The Case for Lilith: 23 Biblical Evidences Identifying the Serpent as Adam ’s First Failed Wife in Genesis

. Samson Books, 2010. Print.

Bladel, Kevin Thomas. The Arabic Hermes: From Pagan Sage to Prophet of Science . Oxford, England: Oxford University Press, 2009. Print.

Blake, William. The Marriage of Heaven and Hell: A Facsimile in Full Color . Dover Fine Art, 1994. Print.

Bloch, Iwan, and James Bruce. Marquis De Sade, the Man and His Age: Studies in the History of the Culture and Morals of the Eighteenth Century . Newark, New Jersey: Julian, 1931. Print.

“The Book of the Cave of Treasures. ” SacredTexts.com. Web.

“The Book of Jasher. ” SacredTexts.com. Web.

Box, GH. The Apocalypse of Abraham . London: Society for Promoting Christian Knowledge, 1918. Print.

Budge, Ernest A Wallis. The Book of the Dead; the Hieroglyphic Transcript of the Papyrus of Ani, . New Hyde Park, N.Y.: U, 1960. Print.

Budge, Ernest A. Wallis. The Gods of the Egyptians, or Studies in Egyptian Mythology . London: Methuen, 1904. Print.

Burton, Richard (Translator). The Arabian Nights: Tales from a Thousand and One Nights . Modern Library, 2004. Print.

Butler, Alan, and Stephen Dafoe. The Warriors and the Bankers . Belleville, Ontario, Canada: Templar Books, 1999. Print.

Butler, Edward P. “Esoteric City: Theological Hermeneutics in Plato ’s Republic, ” Abraxas No. 5, 2014, Pp. 95 - 104.

Carroll, Peter J. Liber Null & Psychonaut . York Beach, Maine: Samuel Weiser, 1987. Print.

“Cathar Texts: Interrogatio Johannis (The Book of John the Evangelist). ” Gnosis.org. Web.

Churton, Tobias. Gnostic Mysteries of Sex: Sophia the Wild One and Erotic Christianity . 2015. Print.

Churton, Tobias. Gnostic Philosophy: From Ancient Persia to Modern Times . Rochester, Vermont: Inner Traditions, 2005. Print.

Churton, Tobias. The Mysteries of John the Baptist: His legacy in Gnosticism, Paganism, and Freemasonry . Rochester, Vermont: Inner Traditions, 2012. Print.

Clarke, Ernest G. (Editor). Targum Pseudo - Jonathan of the Pentateuch . Ktav Publishing Inc, 1985. Print.

Clement I. Clementine Homilies . S.l.: The Classics US, 2013. Print.

“Clementine Recognitions. ” Early Christian Writings. Web.

Cohen, A. (Translator). The Babylonian Talmud . Cambridge, Massachusetts: Cambridge University Press, 2013. Print.

Connor, Jerome. The Holy Land: An Oxford Archaeological Guide: From Earliest times to 1700 . 4th edition. Oxford, England: Oxford University Press, 1998. Print.

Conner, Miguel. “Jesus and Gnosticism in Islam, Part 2. ” Examiner.com. 10 Nov. 2010. Web.

“Contra Celsus. ” CHURCH FATHERS: (Origen). New Advent. Web.

Copenhaver, Brian P. Hermetica the Greek Corpus Hermeticum and the Latin

Asclepius in a New English Translation, with Notes and Introduction . Cambridge, Massachusetts: Cambridge University Press, 1992. Print.

Coppens, Philip. “Ficino: The High Priest of the Renaissance. ” PhilipCoppens.com. Web.

Cory, Isaac Preston, and E. Richmond Hodges. Cory ’s Ancient Fragments of the Phoenician, Carthaginian, Babylonian, Egyptian and Other Authors . London: Reeves & Turner, 1876. Print.

Coulter, Charles Russell, and Patricia Turner. Encyclopedia of Ancient Deities . Jefferson, North Carolina: McFarland, 2000. Print.

Crane, Dr. Frank, RHP, Jr. and Solomon J. Schepps (Contributors). The Lost Books of the Bible . New York: Bell Publishing Company, 1979. Print.

Crowley, Aleister, The Holy Books of Thelema . York Beach, Maine: Samuel Weiser, 1983. Print.

Crowley, Aleister. Liber Aleph Vel CXI: The Book of Wisdom or Folly, in the Form an Epistle of 666, the Great Wild Beast to His Son 777, Being the Equinox , Volume III, Number VI. York Beach, Maine: Samuel Weiser, 1991. Print.

Crowley, Aleister. Magic : Book 4. New York: Samuel Weiser, 1980. Print. Cumont, Franz. The Mysteries of Mithra . New York: Dover Publications, 1956.

Print.

Daraul, Arkon. A History of Secret Societies . New York: Citadel, 1962. Print. Davies, Stevan L. The Secret Book of John: The Gnostic Gospel Annotated &

Explained . Woodstock, Vermont: SkyLight Paths Publishing, 2005. Print. DeConick, April. Practicing Gnosis: Ritual, Magic, Theurgy, and Liturgy in Nag

Hammadi, Manichaean and Other Ancient Literature: Essays in Honor of Birger A. Pearson . Leiden, Netherlands: Brill, *2013. Print.*

DeConick, April. The Thirteenth Apostle: What the Gospel of Judas Really Says . London: Continuum, 2007. Print.

Deferrari, Roy J. Ecclesiastical History . Washington, D.C.: Catholic University of America, 2005. Print.

“Deatils (sic) Emerge on Knights Templar Document from Secret Archives. ” Catholic News Agency. 16 Oct. 2007. Web.

Diodochos, Damascius. “Damascius ’ Problems and Solutions Concerning First Principles. ” Google Books. Web.

“The Discourse on the Eighth and Ninth —The Nag Hammadi Library. ” Gnosis.org. Web.

Dodd, David Brooks. Initiation in Ancient Greek Rituals and Narratives: New

Critical Perspectives . London: Routledge, 2003. Print.

Dodd, Rachel. “Morphing Monsters: The Evolution of Anguipede Giants. ” Sunoikisis Undergraduate Research Journal . 17 Sept. 2014.

Doresse, Jean. Secret Books of the Egyptian Gnostics . MJF Books, 1997. Print. Duncan, Malcolm C. Duncan ’s Ritual of Freemasonry . Three Rivers Press, 1976.

Print.

Eschenbach, Wolfram Von. Parzival . Penguin Classics, 1980. Print.

Eisler, Robert. Orpheus the Fisher: Comparative Studies in Orphic and Early Christian Cult Symbolism . London, England: JM Watkins. 1921. Print.

Eliade, Mircea. Cosmos and History: The Myth of the Eternal Return . New York: Harper, 1959. Print.

Eliade, Mircea, and Willard R. Trask (Translator). The Sacred and the Profane: The Nature of Religion . New York: Harcourt, Brace & World, 1959. Print.

Embry, Ray. “Marcion: Progenitor of Three Famous Christian Communities: Baptists, Catholics, Gnostics. ” Marcionite - Scripture.info. 2001. Web.

“The Epistle of Ignatius to the Ephesians. ” CHURCH FATHERS (St. Ignatius). New Advent. Web.

Evola, Julius. The Mystery of the Grail: Initiation and Magic in the Quest for the Spirit . Rochester, Vermont: Inner Traditions, 1997. Print.

Evola, Julius. The Hermetic Tradition : Symbols and Teachings of the Royal Art. Rochester, Vermont: Inner Traditions, 1995. Print.

Finegan, Jack. The Archeology of World Religions: The Background of Primitivism, Zoroastrianism, Hinduism, Jainism, Buddhism, Confucianism, Taoism, Shinto, Islam, and Sikhism . Princeton, New Jersey: Princeton University Press, 1952. Print.

“The First Apology. ” CHURCH FATHERS: (St. Justin Martyr). Web.

Fowden, Garth. The Egyptian Hermes: A Historical Approach to the Late Pagan Mind . Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1986. Print.

Frale, Barbara. The Templars: The Secret History Revealed . Arcade Publishing, 2011. Print.

Franz, Marie. Projection and Re - collection in Jungian Psychology: Reflections of the Soul. La Salle, Ill.: Open Court, 1980. Print.

Frazer, James George. The Golden Bough a Study in Magic and Religion . New York: The Macmillan Company, 1958. Print.

Friedlander, Gerald (Translator). Pirke de Rabbi Eliezer . Intellectbooks, 2009. Print.

Fulcanelli, Le Mystere des Cathedrales . Albuquerque, New Mexico: Brotherhood of Life, Inc., 1984. Print.

Fundgruben des Orients , Volume 6. Vienna, Austria: Anton Schmid. 1818. Gardner, Laurence. Bloodline of the Holy Grail: The Hidden Lineage of Jesus

Revealed . Rockport, Massachusetts: Element, 1996. Print.

Gardner, Laurence. Genesis of the Grail Kings: The Explosive Story of Genetic Cloning and the Ancient Bloodline of Jesus . Boston, Massachusetts: Element Books, 2000. Print.

Gardner, Iain. The Kephalaia of the Teacher: The Edited Coptic Manichaean Texts in Translation with Commentary . Leiden: E.J. Brill, 1995. Print.

“ Genesis Rabba. ” SacredTexts.com. Web.

Gibbs, Mark. The Virgin and the Priest: The Lost Secrets of the Messianic Code . The Vineyard Press, 2007. Print.

Ginzberg, Louis. Legends of the Jews , Volume Two. Baltimore, Maryland: The John Hopkins University Press, 1998. Print.

Gleason, Daniel. “A Gematria Based Commentary on the Gospels. ” Jesus8880: The Sacred Geometry Mysteries of Christianity. Web.

“Gnostic Scriptures and Fragments: Excerpta Ex Theodoto. ” Gnosis.org. Web. Godfrey, Neil. “John the Baptist Became (or Came From) a God? ” Vridar . 17 Nov.

2011. Web.

Godfrey, Neil. “The Earliest Gospels 2 —the Gospel of Basilides (according to P.L. Couchoud). ” Vridar. 27 Dec. 2011. Web.

Godwin, Malcolm. The Holy Grail: Its Origins, Secrets & Meaning Revealed . New York: Viking, 1994. Print.

Goethe, Johann Wolfgang von. Faust , Part I. New York: Penguin Books, 2005. Print.

“The Gospel of Eve. ” Early Christian Writings. Web.

Graves, Robert. King Jesus . New York: Creative Age, 1946. Print.

Graves, Robert. The White Goddess: A Historical Grammar of Poetic Myth . New York: Farrar, Strauss and Giroux, 1975. Print.

Greer, John Michael and Christopher Warnock. The Picatrix . Adocentyn Press. 2010. Print.

Hallam, Henry. View of the State of Europe During the Middle Ages . New York: Harper & Brothers, 1818. Print.

Hameen - Antilla, Jaakko. The Last Pagans of Iraq: Ibn Wahshiyya and his

Nabatean Agriculture . Leiden, Netherlands: Koninklijke Brill NV, 2006. Print. Hamilton, Edith. Mythology: Timeless Tales of Gods and Heroes . New York, New

York: Warner Books, 1940. Print.

Hammer - Purgstall, Joseph von. The History of the Assassins . London, England: Smith and Elder, Cornhill, 1835. Print.

Harrison, Hank. The Cauldron and the Grail . Los Altos, California: The Archives Press, 1992. Print.

Hauck, Dennis William. The Emerald Tablet: Alchemy for Personal Transformation . New York: Penguin/Arkana, 1999. Print.

Hayward, Robert. The Jewish Temple: A Non - biblical Sourcebook . London, England: Routledge, 1996. Print.

Hesse, Hermann. Demian: The Story of Emil Sinclair ’s Youth . Penguin Classics, 2013. Print.

Al - Hilali, Muhammand Taqi - ud - Din and Muhammad Muhsin Khan. The Noble Qur'an: The English Translation of the Meanings and Commentary . Medina, Saudi Arabia: King Fahd Complex, 1998. Print.

Hippolytus. “Refutation of All Heresies. ” New Advent. Web.

“History of the Ancient Arabic Order Nobles Mystic Shrine. ” PheonixMasonry.org. Web.

Hodapp, Christopher. Freemasons for Dummies . Hoboken, New Jersey: Wiley Publishing, 2005. Print.

Hogan, Timothy. Entering the Chain of Union . Lulu.Com. 2012. Print.

Holmes Christian Standard Bible . BibleHub.com. Web.

The Holy Bible (King James Version). Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc., 1976. Print.

The Holy Bible (New International Version). BibleHub.com. Web.

The Holy Bible (Young ’s Literal Translation). BibleHub.com. Web.

Homer (Author) and Fagels, Robert (Translator). The Iliad/The Odyssey . Baltimore, Maryland: Penguin Classics, 1999. Print.

Humm, Alan. “Lilith in Kabbala: Zohar. ” Lilith Gallery. Web.

Huysmans, J - K Against Nature . Baltimore, Maryland: Penguin, 1959. Print. Hyginus, C. Julius, and Peter K. Marshall. Hygini Fabulae. Stutgardiae: Teubner,

1993. Print.

“International Bodyguard and Security Services Association. ” IBSSA.org. Web.

“Lysander by Plutarch. ” The Internet Classics Archive. Web.

Jackson, Howard M. Zosimos of Panopolis on the Letter Omega . Claremont, California: Claremont Graduate School, 1979. Print.

Jackson, Nigel. Masks of Misrule: The Horned God & His Cult in Europe . Berks, England: Capall Bann Publishing, 1996. Print.

Jackson, Nigel, and Jackson Howard. The Pillars of Tubal - Cain . Somerset, England: Holmes Publishing Group LLC, 2001. Print.

Jonas, Hans. The Gnostic Religion: The Message of the Alien God and the Beginnings of Christianity . 2nd edition. Boston: Beacon, 1963. Print.

Joseph, Isya. Devil Worship; the Sacred Books and Traditions of the Yezidiz ,. Boston, Massachusetts: R.G. Badger, 1919. Print.

Jung, Carl, and Murray Stein. Jung on Christianity . Princeton, New Jersey: Princeton University Press, 1999. Print.

Jung, Carl. Aion: Researches into the Phenomenology of the Self . Princeton, New Jersey: Princeton University Press. 1978. Print.

Jung, Carl and HG Baynes (Translator). “Sermones Ad Mortuos. ” Gnosis.org. Web. Jung, Emma, and Marie - Luise von Franz. The Grail Legend . New York: Published

by Putnam for the CG Jung Foundation for Analytical Psychology, 1970. Print. Kaplan, Aryeh. Sefer Yetzirah: The Book of Creation . Northvale, New Jersey: Jason

Aronson Inc., 1995. Print.

Kasser, Rodolphe, Marvin Meyer, and Gregor Wurst (Editors). The Gospel of Judas . Washington, D.C: The National Geographic Society, 2006. Print.

King, Charles William. The Gnostics and Their Remains . London, England: Bell & Daldy, 1887. Print.

King, Karen. What is Gnosticism? Belknap Press, 2005. Print.

Kirchweger, Anton Joseph. Aurea Catena Homeri, Oder, Eine Beschreibung Von Dem Ursprung Der Natur Und Naturlichen Dingen: Wie Und Woraus Sie Geboren Und Gezeuget, Auch Wie Sie in Ihr Uranfanglich Wesen … Franckfurt: Johann Georg Bohme, 1723. Print.

Kyle Fraser. “Baptised in Gnosis: The Spiritual Alchemy of Zosimos of Panopolis. ” Dionysus , Vol. 25. 2005. Print.

Lacarriere, Jacque. The Gnostics . New York: EP Dutton, 1977. Print.

Laidler, Keith. The Head of God: The Lost Treasure of the Templars . Weidenfeld & Nicolson, 1998. Print.

Lamy, Michel. Les Templiers: ces grands seigneurs aux blancs manteaux . France: Auberon, 1998. Print.

Laurence, Richard (Translator). The Book of Enoch the Prophet . Glasgow, Ireland: John Thompson, 1882. Print.

Leland, Charles Godfrey. Aradia, or The Gospel of the Witches . London, England: D. Nu??, 1899. Print.

Levi, Eliphas. Magic: A History of Its Rites, Rituals and Mysteries . Mineola, New York: Dover, 2006. Print.

Levi, Eliphas, and Arthur Edward Waite. The Ritual of Transcendental Magic . Altenmuunster, Germany: Jazzybee Verlag, 2013. Print.

Machen, Arthur. The Great God Pan . London, England: J. Lane, 1894. Print. Mackey, Albert. Encyclopedia of Freemasonry and its Kindred Sciences .

Philadelphia: McClure Publishing Company, 1917. Print.

Majercik, Ruth Dorothy. The Chaldean Oracles: Text, Translation, and Commentary . Leiden: EJ Brill, 1989. Print.

The Mabinogian: From the Llyfr Coch O Hergest, and Other Ancient Welsh Manuscripts . London, England: Longman, Orme, Brown, Green, and Longmans, 1838. Print.

Marlowe, Christopher, and Sylvan Barnet. Doctor Faustus . New York: New American Library, 1969. Print.

Mastrocinque, Attilio. From Jewish Magic to Gnosticism . Tubingen, Germany: Mohr Siebeck, 2005. Print.

Matter, Jacques. Histoire Critique du Gnosticisme . Paris, France: Chez FG Levrault, 1828. Print.

Mead, GRS. Did Jesus Live 100 B.C.?: An Enquiry Into the Talmud Jesus Stories, the Toldoth Jeschu, and Some Curious Statements of Epiphanius —being a Contribution to the Study of Christian Origins . Hardpress Publishing, 2012. Print.

Mead, GRS. Fragments of a Faith Forgotten . Forgotten Books, 2012. Print. Mead, GRS. Gnostic John the Baptizer: Selections from the Mandaean John - Book .

Kessinger Legacy Reprints, 2010. Print.

Mead, GRS. Pistis Sophia: A Gnostic Gospel . San Diego, California: The Book Tree, 2006. Print.

Mead, GRS. Thrice - Greatest Hermes: Studies in Hellenistic Theosophy and Gnosis . Weiser Books, 2001. Print.

Al - Mehri, AB (Editor). The Qur `an: Saheeh International Translation . Maktabah Publications, 2009. Print.

Michelet, Jules. History of France: From the Earliest Period to the Present Time , Volume 1. London: Chapman and Hall, 1844. Print.

Miller, Peter N. The Antiquary ’s Art of Comparison: Peiresc and Abraxas . Tubingen, Germany: Max Niemeyer Verlag, 2001. Print.

Murdock, DM. “The Phallic ‘Savior of the World ’ Hidden in the Vatican ” Truth Be Known - Acharya S. 2012. Web.

Murray, Margaret Alice. The God of the Witches . London: Oxford University Press, 1970. Print.

Nettleton, Stuart. The Alchemy Key: Unraveling the Single Tangible Secret In All Mysteries . CreateSpace, 2008. Print.

New American Standard Bible . BibleHub.com. Web.

Nicolai, Christoph Friedrich. Versuch uber die Beschuldigungen welche dem Tempelherrenorden gemacht worden, und uber dessen Geheimniß . Berlin, Germany, 1782. Print.

Oates, Joan. Babylon . London, England: Thames and Hudson, 1979. Print.

Olsen, Oddvar. The Templar Papers . Pompton Plains, New Jersey: Career Press, 2010. Print.

“On the Baptism (A) —The Nag Hammadi Library. ” Gnosis.org. Web.

Orlov, Andrei A. Dark Mirrors Azazel and Satanael in Early Jewish Demonology . Albany, New York: State University of New York, 2011. Print.

Orlov, Andrei A. Divine Scapegoats: Demonic Mimesis in Early Jewish Mysticism . New York: State University of New York Press, 2015. Print.

Oursel, Raymonds (Editor). Le Proces des Templiers . Paris: Denoel, 1955.

Pagels, Elaine. The Gnostic Gospels . Random House, 1979. Print.

Parfrey, Adam and Craig Heimbichner (Editors). Ritual America: Secret Brotherhoods and Their Influence on

American Society . China: Feral House, 2012. Print.

Partner, Peter. The Murdered Magicians: The Templars and Their Myth . Oxford, England: Oxford University Press, 1982. Print.

Pearson, Birger. Gnosticism, Judaism, and Egyptian Christianity . Augsburg Fortress Publishers, 1990. Print.

Petrement, Simone. A Separate God: The Origins and Teachings of Gnosticism . HarperCollins, 1993. Print.

Plancy, Jacques Albin Simon Collin de. Dictionnaire Infernal . Nabu Press, 2012. Print.

Plato. “Phaedo. ” Project Gutenberg. Web.

Plato, Harold North Fowler (Translator), WRM Lamb (Translator). Statesman.

Philebus. Ion . Cambridge, Massachusetts: Harvard University Press, 1925. Print. Plato. The Republic . Dover Publications, 2000. Print.

Plato. Timaeus and Critias . Penguin Classics, 1998. Print.

“La Peste Dans de Dioceses de Laon et Soissons. ” Bulletin De La Societe Academique De Laon . Vol. 21. Laon, France: Societe Academique de Laon, 1876. Print.

Picknett, Lynn and Clive Prince. The Templar Revelation: Secret Guardians of the True Identity of Christ . New York, New York: Simon & Schuster, Inc., 1997. Print.

Pike, Albert. Morals and Dogma . Richmond, Virginia: LH Jenkins, Inc., 1927. Print. Pingree, David Edwin. The Thousands of Abu Ma ļ *shar . London, England: Warburg*

Institute, 1968. Print.

Pinkham, Mark Amaru. Guardians of the Holy Grail: The Knights Templar, John the Baptist, and the Water of Life . Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited, 2004. Print.

Pinkham, Mark Amaru. “The Templars ’ Biggest Secret & the Vatican. ” Gnostic Templars. Atlantis Rising Magazine. Web.

Platt, Rutherford H. (Editor). The Forgotten Books of Eden . New York: Bell Publishing Company. Print.

“ Pliny the Elder, Natural History. ” Livius. Web.

Price, Robert M. “Review —A Survey on Some Recent Books on Gnosticism. ” Robert M. Price. Web.

“ ‘ Processus contra Templarios ’: Beautiful and full of typos. ” KnightsTemplarVault.com. Web.

Ragg, Lonsdale, and Laura Ragg. The Gospel of Barnabus . Cosimo Classics, 2010. Print.

Pearse, Roger. “Summing up the Ancient Accounts of the

Borborites - Phibionites. ” Roger - Pearse.com. 12 Dec. 2013. Web.

The Royal Order of Jesters —Freemasonry 's Animal House . Youtube. Michaelrose93, 11 Aug. 2014. Web. <https://youtu.be/VtgBdUtw26c>.

Rudolph, Kurt. Mandaeism . Leiden, Netherlands: Brill, 1978. Print.

Rudolph, Kurt. Gnosis: The Nature & History of Gnosticism . Edinburgh, Scotland: T & T Clark, Limited, 1984. Print.

Saint Ambrose. “De Sacramentis. ” Google Books. Web.

Salm, Rene. “The Mandeans and Christian Origins (R. Stahl). ” Mythicist Papers. 12 Oct. 2012. Web.

Salm, Rene. “The Natsarene and Hidden Gnosis —Pt. 1. ” Mythicist Papers. 6 May 2013. Web.

Santos, Arysio. “The Atlantean Origin Of The Seven Sacraments. ” 2 Oct. 2014. Web.

Schwartz, Howard. Lilith ’s Cave: Jewish Tales of the Supernatural . New York: Oxford University Press, 1988. Print.

Scott, Walter. Hermetica: The Ancient Greek and Latin Writings Which Contain Religious of Philosophic Teachings Ascribed to Hermes Trismegistus . London, England: Dawsons of Pall Mall, 1968. Print.

Sebottendorff, Rudolf von. Secret Practices of the Sufi Freemasons . Rochester, Vermont: Inner Traditions, 2013. Print.

Shah, Idries. The Sufis . New York: Random House, 1971. Print.

Shakespeare, William, and RA Foakes. A Midsummer Night ’s Dream . Cambridge, England: Cambridge University Press, 1984. Print.

Shaw, Gregory. “Taking the Shape of the Gods: A Theurgic Reading of Hermetic Rebirth. ” Princeton University ’s Committee for the Study of Late Antiquity Colloquium: Hermetica: New Approaches to the Text and Interpretation of the Corpus Hermeticum. 6 May 2012. Lecture.

Simon, Maurice and Dr. Paul P. Levertoff. The Zohar: An English Translation , Volume Four. New York, New York: Soncino Press, 1984. Print.

Skinner, Dr. Stephen. Techniques of Graeco - Egyptian Magic . Llewellyn Publications, 2014. Print.

Smith, Morton. Jesus the Magician . San Francisco: Harper & Row, 1978. Print. Sperling, Harry and Maurice Simon. The Zohar: An English Translation , Volume

One. New York, New York: Soncino Press, 1984. Print.

Sperling, Harry and Maurice Simon. The Zohar: An English Translation , Volume Five. New York, New York: Soncino Press,

1984. Print.

Stapleton, HE, and GL Lewis. The Sayings of Hermes Quoted in the Ma ’al - Waraqi of Ibn Umail . 1949. Print.

Stein, Murray and Carl Jung . Jung on Christianity (Encountering Jung). Princeton, New Jersey. Princeton University Press, 1999. Print.

Stewart, Michael James Alexander. The Forgotten Monarchy of Scotland: The True Story of the Royal House of Stewart and the Hidden Lineage of the Kings and Queens of Scots . Shaftesbury, Dorset, England: Element, 1998. Print.

Stewart, Michael James Alexander and Walid Amine Salhab. The Knights Templar of the Middle East: The Hidden History of the Islamic Origins of Freemasonry . San Francisco, California: Red Wheel/Weiser, 2006. Print.

Stoker, Bram. Dracula . Charlottesville, Virginia: University of Virginia Library, 1996. Print.

“The Stromata. ” CHURCH FATHERS: (Clement of Alexandria). New Advent. Web. Storey, Ian C. Eupolis: Poet of Old Comedy . Oxford, England: Oxford University

Press, 2004. Print.

Stoyanov, Yuri. The Other God: Dualist Religions from Antiquity to the Cathar Heresy . New Haven, Connecticut: Yale University Press, 2000. Print.

Sykes, JB The Concise Oxford Dictionary of Current English: Based on the Oxford English Dictionary and Its Supplements . 6th edition. Oxford, England: Clarendon, 1976. Print.

“The Teachings of Silvanus —The Nag Hammadi Library. ” Gnosis.org. Web. “The Testimony of Truth —The Nag Hammadi Library. ” Gnosis.org. Web.

“Third Book of Enoch. ” Archive.org. Web.

Tertullian. “On Baptism. ” Mb Soft. Web.

“Prescription against Heretics. ” CHURCH FATHERS: (Tertullian). New Advent. Web.

Twyman, Tracy R. Clock Shavings . Vancouver, Washington: Quintessential Publications, 2014. Print.

Twyman, Tracy R. Hocus Pocus: The Magical Power of St. Peter . Vancouver, Washington: Quintessential Publications, 2010. Ebook.

Twyman, Tracy R. “Interview with Prince Michael Stewart of Albany. ” Dagobert ’s Revenge Magazine , Vol. 2#1, 1999. Union City, New Jersey. Print.

Twyman, Tracy R. The Judas Goat: The Substitution Theory of the Crucifixion . Vancouver, Washington: Quintessential Publications, 2011. Ebook.

Twyman, Tracy R. Money Grows on the Tree of Knowledge . Vancouver, Washington: Quintessential Publications, 2011.

Print.

Twyman, Tracy R. The Merovingian Mythos and the Mystery of

Rennes - le - Chateau . Portland, Oregon: Dragon Key Press, 2004. Print. Twyman, Tracy R. Solomon ’s Treasure: The Magic and Mystery of America ’s

Money . Portland, Oregon: Dragon Key Press, 2005. Print.

Ustinova, Yulia. The Supreme Gods of the Bosporan Kingdom: Celestial Aphrodite and the Most High God . Leiden, Netherlands: Brill, 1999. Print.

“Vatican Book on Templars ’ Demise. ” BBC News. BBC, 5 Oct. 2007. Web.

Vere, Nicholas de. The Dragon Legacy: The Secret History of an Ancient Bloodline . San Diego, California: The Book Tree, 2004. Print.

Walbridge, John. “Explaining Away the Greek Gods in Islam. ” The Journal of the History of Ideas , Vol. 59, Issue 3, July 1998. Print.

Villers, Charles. “Some Account of the Researches of the German Literati on the Subject of Ancient Literature and History. ” London, England: AJ Valpy, 1812. Print.

Walker, Benjamin. Gnosticism: Its History and Influence . Wellingborough, Northamptonshire, England: Aquarian, 1983. Print.

Waddell, LA. The Makers of Civilization in Race and History . London, England: Luzac & Company, 1929. Print.

Wall, Otto Augustus. Sex and Sex Worship (phallic Worship) a Scientific Treatise on Sex, Its Nature and Function, and Its Influence on Art, Science, Architecture, and Religion - with Special Reference to Sex Worship and Symbolism . St. Louis, Missouri: Mosby, 1919. Print.

Ward, JSM Freemasonry and the Ancient Gods . London: Simpkin, Marshall, Hamilton, Kent, 1921. Print.

Wahshiyya, Ibn and Joseph von Hammer - Purgstall (Translator). Ancient Alphabets and Hieroglyphic Characters Explained . London, England: W. Bulmer and Company, 1806. Print.

Wasserman, James, and Nancy Wasserman. To Perfect This Feast a Performance Commentary on the Gnostic Mass . 3rd edition. Newburyport: Sekmet, 2013. Print.

Wasserman, James. The Templars and the Assassins: The Militia of Heaven . Rochester, Vermont: Inner Traditions, 2001. Print.

Webb, Al. “Prince Charles Praises Islamic Principles on Environment. ” National Catholic Reporter. 15 June 2010. Web.

Williams, Frank. The Panarion of Epiphanius of Salamis . 2nd edition. Leiden: Brill, 2009. Print.

Williams, Michael A. Rethinking “Gnosticism ” an Argument for Dismantling a Dubious Category . Princeton, New Jersey: Princeton University Press, 1996. Print.

Willoughby, Harold R. Pagan Regeneration: A Study of Mystery Initiations and Secret Rites Inthe Graeco - Roman World . Kessinger Publishing, 2003. Print.

Wise, Michael, Martin Abegg, Jr., and Edward Cook. The Dead Sea Scrolls: A New Translation San Francisco, CA: HarperSanFrancisco, 1996. Print.

“The Testament of Solomon. ” Esoteric Archives. Web.

The Writings of Cyprian, Bishop of Carthage . Edinburgh, Scotland: T. & T. Clark, 1868. Print.

“The Works of Flavius Josephus. ” The Works of Flavius Josephus. 29 July 2015. Web.

Wright, Thomas. The Worship of the Generative Powers During the Middle Ages of Western Europe . Covina, California: Collectors Publications, 1967. Print.

Yarker, John. The Arcane Schools . Adamant Media Corporation, 2003. Print. Yates, Giles F. “Horae Esotericae. ” The American Quarterly Review of

Freemasonry and Its Kindred Sciences , *Volume 1. New York: Robert Macoy, 1858. Print.*

Yonge, Charles Duke. The Works of Philo: Complete and Unabridged . New Updated edition. Peabody, Massachusetts: Hendrickson Publishing, 1993. Print. Tbz

About the Authors

Tracy R. Twyman has been writing about the esoteric side of history and current events for over 20 years, dealing with topics like secret societies, ancient myths, demonology, ceremonial magic, divination, alchemy, mind control, mystical royal bloodlines, and the hidden history of money, to name just a few. Her major books include Clock Shavings , Solomon's Treasure , and The Merovingian Mythos . She has been a guest many times on numerous radio talk shows, including Coast to Coast AM and Ground Zero with Clyde Lewis. She has also been seen on several television shows, including National Geographic's "Is It Real? " and Jesse Ventura's "Conspiracy Theory. " Her web presence is found at TracyRTwyman.com .

Alexander Rivera is the author of many short stories, novels and owner of the website TheAeonEye.com , which spans different topics regarding comparative mythology, the Holy Grail, esoterica, Gnostic texts and the Bible. He is a self-trained scholar, gathering primary sources and piecing it all together on his own or with the help of friends. He currently resides in Orlando, Florida, patiently waiting for the Baptism of Wisdom.

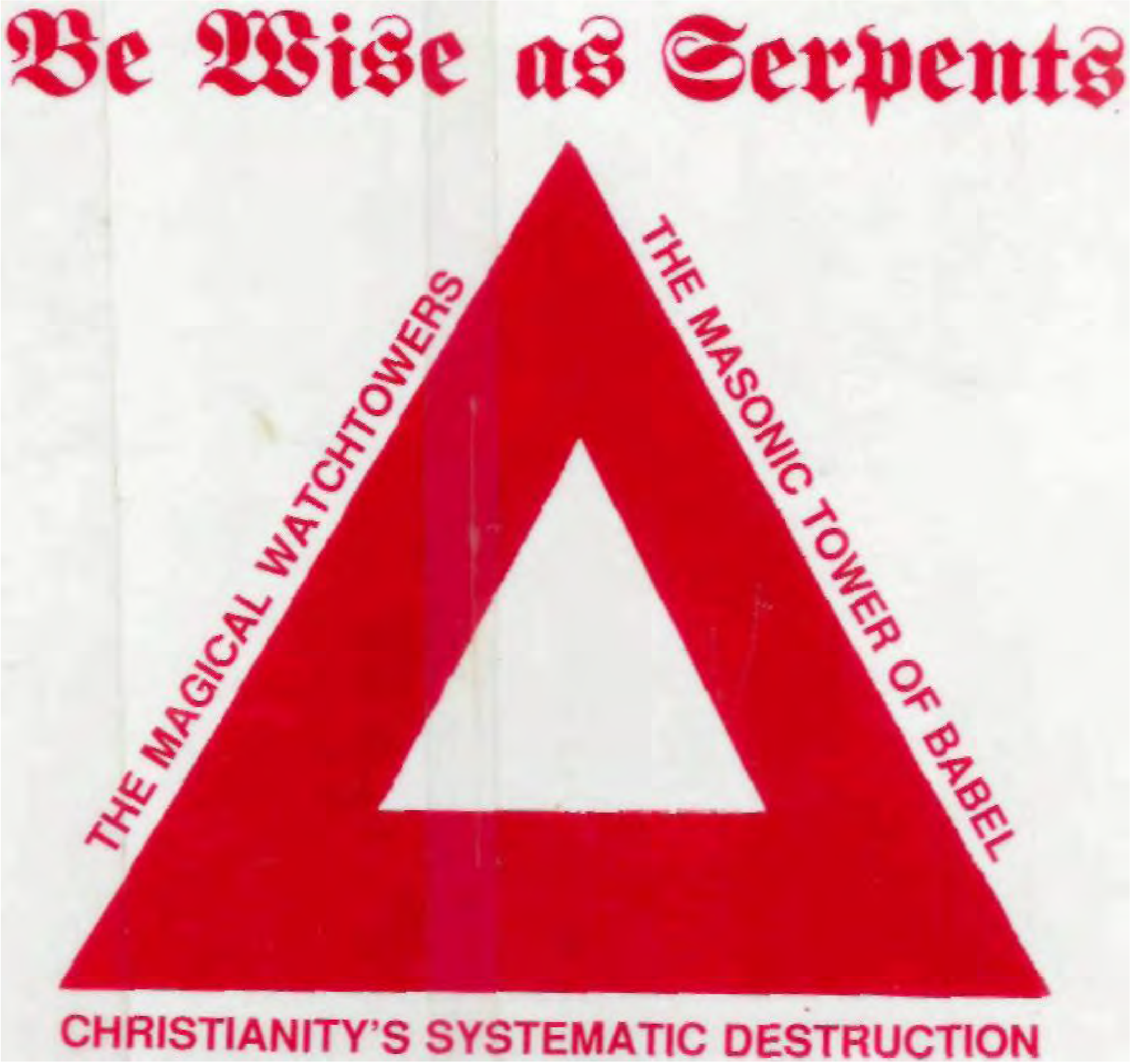

Be Wise as Serpents

THE MAGICAL WATCHTOWERS
THE MASONIC TOWER OF BABEL
CHRISTIANITY'S SYSTEMATIC DESTRUCTION

Fritz Springmeier

Jesus
told his disciples
"BE WISE AS SERPENTS

&

HARMLESS AS DOVES"

BE Wise as Serpents is the history of the systematic destruction of Christianity and the building of a 1-world-religion. As you read this research based on a. confidential interviews with participants within in the conspiracy, b. interviews of unwitting participants within the conspiracy, c. and historical documentation you will discover that there is great evidence for a history we have not been told, and a great struggle before mankind as the one-world-power/religion comes into focus.

BE WISE AS SERPENTS

Fritz Springmeier

SPECIAL PRE-PUBLICATION EDITION
for private circulation only

copyright 1991 by Fritz Springmeier

PREFACE TO THE PRE-PUBLICATION EDITION

In 1990, I came out with The Watchtower & the Masons. That book connected the Jehovah's Witnesses' Watchtower Society with the Masons. Some of the chapters for Be Wise As Serpents were originally written for The Watchtower & the Masons, but were not used.

It was obvious as I wrote The Watchtower & the Masons that I could not go into depth in the book, and that the book would have to be followed up with an indepth work. For that reason its cover called it a "Preliminary Investigation."

In 1990, I began looking for a publisher of Be Wise As Serpents because such a work deserved to be published properly by a well-known publisher. The months past by on the calender, and the time clock continued ticking away on the New World Order's agenda as I looked for a publisher. Because no person can have a total monopoly on the facts of a subject, I welcomed the help of others. I looked out for anyone who would team up with me, or appreciate my research. They would even be welcome by me to publish my research themselves under their own name. I didn't find any takers. At this point it looks like I'm left to share this message that the Lord has given me by myself without the help of a co-author or publisher.

By the summertime of 1991 a publisher had been found. But the Lord laid it on my heart in December, 1991 that I would have to self-publish.

There is still research to be done. For instance, an ex-member of the Satanic Illuminati hierarchy revealed that the Russell family is one of the top 13 Satanic families that have generation after generation passed down their Satanic power. It would be nice to have the time to finish the genealogy work I began on Charles T. Russell's family to see how they fit in with the other Russells.

So why publish an unfinished book? This information is very timely. 1992 is a major year for the Satanists to kick off a series of crises to bring the world under the Satan's rule. I can not presume upon the future that there will be an opportunity to put out books like this. Marshall law under an emergency decree could come any time during the next few years.

If I could fight one thing with this book it would be fear. If we know what we are up against and are going to experience, I believe it will take away some of the fear of the unknown. The more we seek the Kingdom of God and his righteousness, and the more we love and obey God the less we fear. Christ warned, "Ye shall hear of wars and rumors of wars: see that ye be not troubled." (Mt 24:6.) Christ also said, "Take no thought for your life..." (Mt 6:25), which is rephrased by the Holy Spirit, "Be anxious for nothing." Phil 4:6. The Christian will "commit thy way unto the Lord and trust also in Him." (Ps 37:5)

We are unable to see how God will win a victory in all this. We know that it will be some kind of miraculous display of his power and glory. But we rejoice with the Lord always, and realize that today is the day that the Lord has made, we will take each day at a time, and rejoice in it This book is a call for people to face reality as it is today. I believe that if we are unable to face what the real situation is due to our fears, then the New World Order's many tenticles will continue to wreck havoc with our lives, it will continue to sap our resources for its causes and diversions, and it will continue to deceive us. May God give you hope and a spirit of courage that only God can give as you read this.

THIS BOOK IS DEDICATED TO ALL THE MEN & WOMEN WHO HAVE LOST THEIR LIVES IN OPPOSITION TO THE 1-WORLD-CONSPIRACY

(THIS DEDICATION & LIST WILL MAKE MORE SENSE AFTER YOU READ THE BOOK AND ITS DOCUMENTATION. The deaths of some of these people have been described as "accidents" and "suicides", in some cases the circumstances of these supposed "suicides", make suicide the last possibility. I will not give their murderers the consolation of downplaying their martyrdom. It is time to recognize these heros for truth and freedom. Most of those on this list were killed by the Freemasons because they stood for truth or knew the truth. They were directly martyrs. But the reader may discover that organizations run by the Conspiracy Power have slaughtered millions. These millions were their sacrifices.)

Alexander, Czar of Russia- for prohibiting all Masonic Lodges

Giorgio Arabrosoli- His legal investigation into the P2 Masonic Lodge cost him his life.

Randall Baer- Christian, ex-New Age leader, for knowing and saying too much.

William Branham- Country preacher who learned how Illuminati-trained witches are infiltrating Christianity. Killed by an alcoholic, and false stories circulated to discredit him.

Sen. Bronson- Cutting critic of Roosevelt's New Deal. His tampered with plane crashed.

Professor Charini- Murdered for trying to translate the Talmud

Tom Collins- Made an example of by the Illuminati for talking too much.

Laurence Duggen- Institute of International education, murdered

Vincent Forrestal-Sec. of Defense, he knew too much and failed to cooperate. Forced into a mental hospital and "fell" out of a window.

Boris Giuliano- Deputy superintendent of Palermo's police force, uncovered evidence, received six shots in a crowded restaurant, no witnesses.

Princess Grace- It is believed she knew too much for their comfort.

Grand Duke of Tuscany- tried to outlaw Freemasonry

John F. Kennedy- This President ticked off nearly everyone in the One-World-Power system, and the details of his murder are one way for people to be introduced to what is happening.

Abraham Lincoln- This President also ticked off nearly everyone in the One-World-Power system, he was a great man. John Wilkes Booth was a member of the Carbonari (Haute Vente) a French Lodge system set up Masons. According to a relative of John Wilkes Booth he was also a Knights Templar Mason.

Prof. F.O. Matthiesen- Harvard Professor

William Morgan- His book and murder still have the Masons making excuses and lies. Some Masons honestly admit he was murdered.

Napoleon III- Broke his Masonic oath

Herbert Norman- Canadian diplomat

Mino Perorelli- murdered for exposing the CIA-P2 ties

Pope John Paul I- Even Popes can go if they rock the boat

George Polk- CBS newsman who was investigating the Greek elite, who have ties to Chase Manhattan, the Masons, and the CIA. Evidence suggests the CIA covered up the murder.

Rev. I.B. Pranaitis- A Christian murdered for exposing the Talmud

Samuel Pritchard- exposed Masonry, murdered in 1730

Sen. Schall- Critical of Roosevelt's Jewish connections, killed by an unidentified hit and run driver.

Ellen Slade- murdered for not cooperating the Grand Lodge of IL. 's orders

Marvin Smith- murdered to keep his testimony from coming to court.

Noah Smith- opposed Masonry in 1798 in Manchester, VT

Didacus of Vilna- A Christian Jew who was cruelly murdered for revealing Jewish Plans for the world,

...David Brounlee, Oliver Gavit, Job Hunt, Artemus Kenedy, F.O. Mattheisen, William Michner, William Miller (of Belfast, Ir. in 1813), Ariel Murdock, and many others.

CONTENTS

UNIT 1 THE MAGICAL WATCHTOWERS

Who Built Your Frame of Reference 1
Pillars of Mystery 2
Progressive Light 3
A Rainbow of Dragons 4
Mysteries of the WT Society 5
The Emerald Island 6
God's "Annointed Seed" 7
"To Have My Throat Cut" 8
A Blank Check 9
"Jehovah" 10
The Magical Watchtowers 11
The Channel of Angelic Redemption 12
Cult of the Double-Sexed God Jehovah 13
The New World Society 14
The WT's Mein Kampf 15
The Mark of the Beast 16
Smokescreens 17

UNIT 2 THE SECOND TOWER OF BABEL

Assassinating 3 assassins 1
Capturing the Catholic Church 2
A Revolution in the Minds of Men 3
A Family Affair 4
The Golden Age 5
"The Healing Light" 6
Councils of Heresy 7
Mormons, Moonies, and Masons 8
Heresy interlocks with Power 9
Reviving the Mystery Religions 10
Comparing New Order Statements 11
The Second Tower of Babel 12

UNIT 3 THE SYSTEMATIC DESTRUCTION OF CHRISTIANITY

Preparing the Money System 1
Interest taking 2
Financial wizzards 3
Education 4
The Media and Communication 5
Concentrating Power 6
Scandals 7
Separating Church and State 8
America's Concentration Camps 9
Where the Rubber Hits the Road 10

Author's Introduction & Dedication

PART I. THE MAGICAL WATCHTOWERS -After initially introducing the reader to The Plan and the way it works, this series of chapters deals with the Watchtower Society and its connections to the New World Order.

1. Who Built Your Frame of Reference- An introduction to the book. Because the book covers such new material, it is important to assist people to initially grasp the subject. The chapter teaches how to use the book, and begins attempting to break the delusion that the public is under with photocopies from the conspirators own publications.

2. Pillars of Mystery. The Masonic Lodge is everywhere; how the Masonic Lodge is to be one of the vehicles to create a One-World-Religion, and how the Masonic Mysteries are to become the New Age Religion. Learn about the many Masonic organizations.

3. Progressive Light. Revealing what the basic elements of a Gnostic religion are and how the various Gnostic cults are related."

4. A Rainbow of Dragons. Examines the various New Age groups, including the Theosophical Society, and Church Universal & Triumphant. Learn who Lord Maitreya is. Learn some of the stock tools of the conspiracy.

5. Mysteries of the WT Society. Three items of C.T. Russell, the Winged-Sun-Disk, Pyramids, and the Golden Age are exposed.

6. The Emerald Island. Are bloodlines still significant today? A look at Ulster, Ireland and the Russell family before C.T. Russell. The Scottish cultural seedbed of today's global power is examined.

7. God's "Annointed Seed . A close look at who C.T. Russell was.

8. "To have my throat cut". C.T. Russell as a Freemason, his membership and how his membership is reflected in his beliefs and speeches.

9. A Blank Check. An expose of how the B'nai B'rith helped Russell's organization get started, and why.

10. "Jehovah". Uncovering the meanings behind the Watchtower's symbology.

11. The Magical Watchtowers. Discovers the Masonic and Magical meaning to Watchtowers, puts forth a new hypothesis about what Watchtower means.

12. The Channel of Angelic Redemption. Explores J.F. Rutherford as a channeler who said he was helping redeeming demons.

13. Cult of the Double-Sexed God Jehovah. For centuries men have worshipped a double-sex God, explores the possible connection of this god with the rambant homosexuality of WT leadership.

14. The New World Society. A look at the Orwellian world of the Jehovah's Witnesses and their battles and fixation with demons.

15. The WT's Mein Kampf. What do they really say is in store for the world in "paradise."

16. The Mark of the Beast. The WT Society is preparing their people to accept the New Age Initiation, the Mark of the Beast.

17. Smokescreens. Identifying some smokescreens and blowing them away.

PART II. THE SECOND TOWER OF BABEL

1. Assassinating 3 assassins. Exposing the Masonic plot to destroy the church, nationalism, and the family.

2. Capturing the Catholic Church. Revealing the infiltration and capture of the great Catholic Church by the Conspiracy.

3. A Revolution in the Minds of Men. Reveals the close connection between Masonry and the Universalist/Unitarian church, and the Order.

4. A Family Affair. Discloses who the people are that started Mormonism. The occult, religious, and Masonic forces that created Mormonism are brought into clearer focus.

5. The Golden Age. Shows how the concept of the Millenium was introduced by the Masons through Communism, the Second Adventists JWs, Mormons, and others.

6. "The Healing Light". Exposes the close connections between Christian Science, the Jews, and Masons.

7. Councils of Heresy. Find out who represents the Christians at the World Council of Churches. Find out how Masonry rules Christendom.

8. Mormons, Moonies, and Masons. Uncovers the connections and cooperation between the Mormons and other groups.

9. Heresy interlocks with power. Revealing the source and use of heresy's power and contrasting it with Christianity.

10. Reviving the Mystery Religions. Find out what the occult is, why the Mystery Religions are being revived, and how these religions are resurfacing. You will learn the names of one of the most powerful bodies in the world, and more information to get you to take the Satanic threat of world domination seriously.

11. Comparing New Order Statements. Comparing the various plans that have surfaced from the various groups, and noticing the parallels between these various plans concerning the "Utopian" New Order.

12. The Second Tower of Babel. Examining the roles each group plays in the overall plot to create a New World and 1-World-Religion, and a 1-World-Government.

PART III. THE SYSTEMATIC DESTRUCTION OF CHRISTIANITY

1. Preparing the Money System. Examines their economic plans, the World Money waiting in Canada for distribution orders, & the planned cashless society.

2. Interest taking. How the Conspiracy "bites" the world with interest and God's secret Formula concerning money.

3. Financial Wizards, and Wealthy Cults. Find out about the Rothschilds, the Rockefellers and others, how they use the Federal Reserve, Interlocking Directories, a hereditary Aristocracy, and the World's resources to maintain control.

4. Education. Reveals how controlled our history has been. The values and doctored history that the Conspiracy approves have been taught for many years.

5. The media and communication "improvements". Exposes the evil role that the media and communication play.

6. Concentrating Power. Examines the continuing process of the centralization of all power.

7. Scandals. Examining scandals created to discredit Christianiy.

8. Separating Church and State. The Masons devious efforts to insure that Christianity has no power at all.

9. America's Concentration Camps. Are you ready for camp. They are ready for you, that is if you don't want to enjoy the good life of a New Order slave.

10. Where the rubber hits the road. Coping in a Christ-like way with an overwhelming Satanic conspiracy. Seeing how Christ can win a victory under difficult circumstances.

AUTHOR'S INTRODUCTION

My desire is to give you evidence. If you don't have the patience for some introductory pages of explanations and can't wait for the evidence, then turn to where the scouting report begins.

I have entitled the book "Be wise as serpents, and as harmless as doves."

This allusion to the story of the serpent reminds us that the crafty serpent was a threat because Eve was naive. Wisdom is founded upon correct and significant knowledge. The serpent was wise, because he knew the issues at stake. Evil was out of Eve's frame of reference. She didn 't know she was being seduced. She thought she was getting an apple. She and Adam didn't know enough to feel a need to recognize issues. Something as simple as biting an apple meant the difference between adherence to goodness and its counterpart rebellion. The time for being naive ended with Eve. She got her apple.

The second part "harmless as doves" is the response to the first part. While doves are symbols of true enlightment and foresight, they carry no malice toward others.

In the modern version of Eve's story, we find her thinking to herself when she meets the serpent, "My pastor has told me not to study the adversary and the cults. We only need to know what real money looks like and not to study the counterfeit. My pastor has told me what an apple looks like, and that is a real apple. It is a real apple, and real apples are edible. Mmmm." Eve is still getting her apple, and is still naive.

This book exposes a composite serpent which has devised sinister plans concerning everyone. Christians are attracted to its nice looking apple called the New World Order. The book will answer questions like, what does this serpent look like, will it be as good a thing as it looks on the surface, where is it, what is its power?

The book is based on evidence and testimony. In addition to the evidences obtained from primary documents and books, this work is based on dozens of interviews with informed people. This includes Jehovah's Witnesses, ex-JWs, Mormons, ex-Mormons, New Agers, ex-New Agers, Catholics, Jews, Masons, ex-Masons etc., etc.. The strongest evidences are the personal testimonies given to me by those people that have been intimately involved with the conspirators. Unfortunately, because of the viciousness of those seeking our enslavement with their grandiose schemes, my sources remain anonymous. This is understandable; such is the exigencies of a spiritual war against powerful conspiracies.

What I have done in this publication could be called a scouting report about our opponent. We are familiar that basketball and football teams send out scouts to see what their opponent is doing. We are familiar with how alert an athlete is in watching and forecasting his opponents moves. We would consider it very unwise if a team choose to close their eyes and stop their hearing when playing another team.

Are the scouting reports already made? We need better ones. The ones we have try to stop a snaking river with a stone in place for a dam, at best they redirect the opponent. The scouting report must be able to give us a solution, a real remedy that stops the flow because it correctly guages the width of the river. How wide is this torrent? This ravaging diluge is a conspiracy for power that extends into every dimension of life where power exists, be that religion, politics, finances, education, mass media, or science, and its current has been flowing for centuries. It has even skillfully planned and created its own opposition, which periodically makes preplanned non-fatal attacks.

Back to the basketball analogy, do I really think we can beat the world at its own game, especially when it has the home court advantage? No, not if we play their game by their rules. Yes, if we play our game plan and not theirs. You will find out ways to do this in Unit 3.

In the end it doesn't matter who wins the battles, but who is on the ultimate winning side when the war ends. Logic alone will tell you that evil which is self-destructive can not be the final victor. It is obvious that life had an intelligent creator. Do you think that an intelligent creator created life only to let it destroy itself?

How do we keep score in a spiritual war? Is a martyr for truth a victory for truth or a defeat for truth? I personally could not sit idly by and watch myself and my loved ones be enslaved. It made me sick to see the leaders that the Christian people looked up to selling them into slavery. I was tired of the Christian book stores filled with lies while the truth lay silent.

Of course a comprehensive work on the conspiracy of power would be volumnous, so this work concentrates on giving new information on where this crafty snake has hidden itself in religion.

The religious dimension would be shallow without supplementary information on the other aspects, indeed this work has been designed to fill in the gaps and tie together the scouting reports that are available.

The vast knowledge I had on the subject gave me a responsibility to warn others. I tried unsuccessfully to give my research to others, but in the end found that I would have to do the mission myself.

Why did we need another book on the One-World-Religion One-World-Government conspiracy?

First, the nature of the Conspiracy's power is so vast no book covers it entirely. It's power is on three levels--a. the dedicated, b. the deluded who have been deceived into buying into its philosophy, and c. those whom the Conspiracy in their secret papers have called "cattle" - those going along with the Zeitgeist of the times. It's power is multidimentional. Many of the books available to the public only scratch the surface of the religious dimension, or even pretend the religious aspect doesn't exist.

Even most Christian books tend to dismiss the reality of any spiritual danger from human conspiracies. This book's attempt to look at real situations which exist behind the scenes hopefully will expose the weakness of the pervasive Pietist viewpoint which narrowly defines the Christian's enemy as "the devil."

Due to the strong pietist influence within Protestantism in the Western World today, many Christians perceive spiritual warfare as something happening only on a spiritual level, something involving only the devil, and something happening only on a personal level. The world is not perceived as a threat. This pietism shields Christians from the fact that the world is out to destroy them, that there are real humans and real human institutions that desire to do physical harm to them.

The result of the Pietist view is that it shields the Protestants from experiencing the Spiritual power of the Christian community. Salvation is viewed on a very selfish personal level, and not as an aspect of Christian community. The church to the pietist is merely an aggregation of individuals. Concerning a wide variety of churches, even sects, that I have experienced, my opinion is that with minor exceptions the only Christian groups that really experienced Christian community were those of the Anabaptist tradition. These communities know already that the world is not a neutral environment, because they are sincerely attempting to live out in real life Christ's Sermon on the Mount. To give one example: the Amish believe Christians should care for their elderly. They do not view the State as a neutral or benevolent force, but an anti-Christian force that is treated with love as Christ responded to the despotic Roman rulership. Because of this viewpoint they rejected participation in the Social Security program and are responsibly caring for their elderly better in many ways than the general public. Because these Christians are willing to accept that the world they live in contains real live enemies, these type of Christian communities have already caught onto many of the solutions to the New World Order and are implementing them even though they are not aware of the extent of the human conspiracy that this book exposes. The Pietist view refuses to see the U.S. government as a threat, and so they have no problem giving the State more power to care for their elderly.

Second, this book "Be Wise As Serpents..." was written to show the full width and depth of the One-World-Religion while educating the reader how the One-World-Religion relates to the other powerful dimensions of the Conspiracy.

This book is designed for any freedom loving truth loving person. You do not need to be a Christian to appreciate this book. My guess is that sadly many non-Christians will be too brainwashed already to read something that is written by a Christian. In some ways, I can sympathize with non-Christians in this, because much of what is passed off as "Christian" is trash.

There are no sacred cows in my book. The world's manure caked bovines are shown for what they are. I treat God Almighty with respect and esteem his Word as Truth, because in my life they have proved truthful. Many people mock God and the Bible, but have never sincerely tested the validity and truthfulness of both. People who have not experienced the power of God in their lives, will not understand my motivation. I was sustained in writing this book by my conviction that the power of God which I have personally witnessed will somehow ultimately win the war against evil. It is beyond my comprehension how; God's ways have a tendency to be higher than my ways, so I am willing to trust in victory, without being granted any special revelation or visions of the future. I am a soldier of the Lord, ready to stand in place and fight. That is my duty.

To the powerhouse Fraternity I belonged to, West Point, USMA, I pledged service to duty honor country. I have wanted to fulfill this in a higher way. If this book ever sees publication, I will have only done my duty with honor for my country, the Kingdom of God. I hope that others who have made other pledges will reevaluate their oaths, and choose the higher fulfillment of their search for light by joining with me.

May God Bless You.

PERSONA VITAE

The number of people that have been involved in one way or the other in this book's events is like the sands of the sea. The following is a partial list of major actors for the New World Order you will encounter in this book.

Sir Francis Bacon-	Rosicrucian and founder of some of modern Masonry's ritual. This genius of royal Tudor blood, helped plan and organize a society based on Plato's wise men to rule the world. (See chapter 1.2)
Alice Bailey-	New Age leader with Lucis Trust. Important in founding many new groups, wrote many books, and wrote educational goals for U. S. Health, Education and Welfare in 1958. (See chapters 1.2 and 3.4)
Hosea Ballon	32°, instrumental in spreading Universalism in New England in the early 1800's. (See chapter 2.3)
King Bulan	Khazar king who converted his Asian nation to Judaism, thereby creating the forefathers of about 80% of the today's Jews. (See chapter 1.1)
John Dewey-	Father of the U.S. public educational system, and part of the socialist New World Order. Ties to the Illuminati.
John Foster Dulles-	Descendant of prominent early Masons of the Mallet Prevost Swiss intelligence families who had been prominent in bringing the Scottish Rite to the U.S. He was an important figure for the FCCC,
Mary Baker Eddy-	Close to Freemasonry and witchcraft, she started Christian Science. Her descendants today are prominent witches.
Benjamin Franklin	Leader of several secret societies. A Mason and Rosicrucian. A leader in

	Masonic goals to establish a republic in the New World.
Frederick Franz-	Evidence reports his Masonic membership. Major doctrinal leader of the WT Society after Russell and Rutherford.
Manley P. Hall-	(1901-1990) Perhaps the greatest Masonic philosopher, author of around 200 books, covert co-leader of many religious groups. Illuminatus.
Albert Pike-	Supreme pontiff of Freemasonry. An important figure in Freemasonry, the Illuminati, and the plans to establish a one world government. Author of Morals and Dogma. a book given to 32° Masons. (See chapter 1.2)
Pope John Paul II-	Jewish Freemason leading Catholic church into One-World-Religion of the New Age.
Rockefeller family-	Members of this family have been prominent in the Bilderbergers, CFR; they have been one-worlders and have funded countless projects and groups to further the New Order's goals. (See appendix)
F. Delano Roosevelt	A 33° Mason. A key player for the New Order. Gave America the New Deal, and gave America to the New Order. His wife was in the Communist party, and numerous other socialist/communist groups.
Rothschilds-	The most powerful family in the world for the last 2 centuries. They are at the center of power. (See chapter 3.3)
Russell family-	Members of this family have prominent Masons, Fabian Socialists, One-Worlders, lluminati and religious leaders. (See appendix)

Saint-Simon-	Associated with secret occult fraternal groups. Laid the groundwork for Marx, revolution and communism.
Robert Schuler-	33° Mason, leading Christian minister who is helping lead the Christians toward a one-world-religion. Has knowingly taught people taking Luciferian initiations
Joseph Smith, Jr.	Arch-Mason, prophet, founder of a super-rite of Freemasonry called Mormonism, a restoration of the Masonic mysteries.
H. G. Wells-	Prophet of the New World Order. British Fabian Socialist whose plans and books have been important in lending credibility to their goals. (See chapter 3.1 and other parts)
Rabbi Stephen Wise-	Arch-Mason, leader in the B'nai Brith, communist, friend of C.T. Russell. This man has played a leading role in Judaism and the New Order.

Just as there always seems a willing soul to offer himself to the New Order - there always will be men and women who have the courage to stand for goodness and truth. This list is but the tip of the iceberg and in no way indicates that these people contributed more than others, but rather they have been selected here for the part they have in this book's manuscript.

Constance Cumbey-	Christian lawyer whose book and research was a major expose of the New Age Movement and its links to the 1-World-Dictatorship.
Charles Finney-	An ex-Mason Christian evangelist who exposed and denounced Freemasonry.
Henry H. Klein-	Jewish lawyer who tried warning the world of a Jewish world conspiracy.
Marchetti-	Ex CIA agent, has tried to expose the CIA and its power.
Edith Star Miller	

(Lady Queenborough)-	She compiled the first serious comprehensive study of the occult network of the New World Order. Her book is still a classic.
Brig.Gen. G. Mohr-	One of the leading challengers to the New World Order today.
John Robison-	An intelligent professor and Mason who exposed the Masonic/Illuminati plot to rule the world. His efforts may have saved the U.S. from an overt take over.
Menno Simons-	A prominent example of an Anabaptist minister. An example for Christians today. Anabaptists consisted of various groups that practiced a Christianity based on Jesus' teachings, such as non-resistance to evil, and loving your enemies.

IMPORTANT DEFINITIONS

Two words that need to be defined before the reader proceeds are Christian and Jew (also Jewish).

Christian- It was my desire to use language in its common usage. Who am I to say a person can or can't call himself a Christian? The primary use of the word Christian in this book is to use it in its broadest sense. Unfortunately, its common usage is so broad that it carries little meaning. Today, it is difficult to say, "I am a Christian," for the disciple of Christ because the word is devoid of meaning. In this book then, if a Satanist calls himself a Christian, he will be nominally refered to in this book that way. (The word Christian may have been originally a derogative word for the disciples of Christ.) The only other sensible alternative use of the word is its legitimate narrow sense which means a true disciple of Jesus. And the word is occasionally used herein in this legitimate narrow sense.

It should be pointed out that Jesus commmanded his disciples to love their enemies and to do them good. This means most of the Christian churches do not have a Christ-like world view. Or to say it bluntly, most of what is called Christian is not Christian. Protestants and Catholics think nothing about a millionaire evangelist preaching Jesus' sermons to the poor. Nor do many of them find discomfort that Protestants may have "Jesus in their heart", receive supportive prayers from their chaplains, and then climb into Jet bombers and drop 500 lb. bombs onto innocent civilians, who are written off as collateral damage. Jesus continued to call the Temple the "House of God" even though it had become a den of thieves. (Cf. Mt 21:13, Mr 11:17, Lu 19:46, et. al.)

Rather than detract from the readability by labelling all the various groups being used by the Conspiracy Power "pseudo-Christian", I prefer to use their own labels. Real Christians are an extremely small maligned minority. Although it is popular to say that it is judging to say someone isn't a Christian, it is equally judgemental to say he is a Christian. To judge means to form an opinion about, to determine authoritatively. This book claims no ability to determine authoritatively the final judgement of people by their Creator. The Scriptures do command Christians to form opinions about the actions and fruit of other people based on the authority of the Scriptures.

I have done this research and contribute my observations not because I am against any particular person or denomination of Christianity, but because I am sold out to Christ, and believe an expose of traitors (wolves in sheep's clothing) will protect the flock and encourage people to seek Godly men. Missing today from all the scientific, economic, and political studies is the vital voice of God the Creator. He can and is making a contribution to solve mankind's problems if mankind would listen. But to listen to God, means to quit listening to the SPIN of Cults connected to the Power. How can a Cult speak of God without knowing him? Consequently, there is collective ignorance, as the people allow the Power to religiously lead them. These people, although nominally Christian, live and worship in such a twilight zone that they can't distinquish black from white because of all the grey that has resulted, indeed somewhere along the way black has become white and white black. The definition of what is really a Christian has been lost in this Twilight Zone.

Jew, Jewish.-Some people would insist that the word must mean either a race or a religion. It can refer to the race that were the tribe of Judah. It can also refer to those who practice Judiasm. The word has been used to designate both a race and a religion, but today it can not be limited by common usage to either one for several reasons. Today, the "Jewish people" are not "a single race" nor are they "a single religion." The Jewish people range from being atheists, humanists, satanists, orthodox Talmudic followers, to Torah following Karaites, to upright God fearing men and women. The Jewish Encyclopedia uses the term Jew to mean both those who follow Judaism and those who are merely genetically descended from those who followed Judaism at some time.

Rabbi Morris N. Kertzer, a well-known and well-travelled Rabbi when asked to explain Judaism gave a very appropriate answer to the question what is a Jew.

"What is a Jew? It is difficult to find a single definition. A Jew is one who accepts the faith of Judaism. That is the religious definition. A Jew is one who, without formal religious affiliation, regards the teachings of Judaism - its ethics, its folkways, its literature - as his own. That is the cultural definition of a Jew. A Jew is one who considers himself a Jew or is so regarded by his community. That is the "practical" definition of a Jew. Prof. Mordecai Kaplan calls Judaism "a civilization." Jews share a common history, common prayer, a vast literature and, above all, a common moral and spiritual purpose. Judaism is really a way of life." (A Guide to the Religions of America. Rockefeller Center, NY: Simon & Schuster, 1955, p.65.)

Interesting is Rabbi Kertzer's point that whether religious or secular the Jews are "a civilization" that share a common purpose.

The Mason Richard Carlile quotes favorably in his Manual of Freemasonry, pp. viii, xi, a Rev. Robert Taylor who claims that the term "Jew" was originally the term for the 12th degree in the Eleusinian Mysteries which was the highest degree. The Eleusinian Mysteries began at least 1400 years before Christ and involved Isis and sexual rites. Those who attained the highest Eleusinian degree were named "Jew" and were considered to have become God himself by a deification process. Some then would view the term Jew to have come into use not so much from the tribe Judah, but from the fact that the tribal leaders of Benjamin, Judah and Levi were initiated into the Mysteries at Babylon. The Masonic lodge and Rosicrucians claim to continue the Eleusinian mysteries. (Whether or not Taylor's view has any historical merit, it is interesting to note that this is an alternative view that apparently a few people believe.)

This book uses the term Jew in its widest sense. Some of the people called Jews in this book might be surprised to be so labelled.

How do we describe a person who was born to Jewish parents, adopted by nominal Christians, sprinkled with a little baptismal water, and who then turns to Satanism? Is he Christian, is he Jewish, is he Satanic? In some cases like this, the person may in the book be identified as "Jewish"- that is if they knew they were adopted from a Jewish heritage on the assumption "blood [a blood tie] is thicker than water." Blood ties are important in Satanism and witchcraft. Many higher witches belong to the traditional view that one needs to belong to a family with a witchcraft heritage to be a real witch. The whole issue is really difficult. Karl Marx and Adolf Hitler were both Satanists. They were both nominal Christians, and from the best I can tell both had "Jewish" blood. The same Satanic blood line that sired Hitler's parent, financed Karl Marx to write Das Kapital. Why not say that Marx was of Satanic blood? Certainly, in these two cases to call either Karl Marx or Adolf Hitler Jewish doesn't seem proper at all. But then how does one describe their ties? If the word Satanic is used people think of only a spiritual tie in. The word Jewish, although it doesn't properly describe either man, comes closer to helping people understand a blood connection.

The use of the term Jewish in this book denotes neither disapproval or approval of a person. It can be correctly argued such a broad use of the terms Christian and Jewish makes them just a whisker above meaningless. I enjoy labelling people just a notch above catching AIDS. To use labels to prejudge someone is superficial.

The reason I use the term Jewish is that it is important to show the multitude of blood ties this conspiracy has. One of the primary Satanic groups, which is the vehicle to create a false Messiah for people to worship, is a false Jewish blood group. This false Jewish blood group is a danger to every Jew who loves his Creator, and his Creator's laws, and his Creator's genuine freedom, (and not the pseudo-freedom passed off on the populace like snake-oil.)

TERMS IN GENERAL

The prophet of Israel Isaiah warned "Woe to those who call evil good, and good evil." It seems that some of the advertising business hasn't taken Isaiah to heart. The English language of the population in general is becoming a tool of evil men, as the misnomers and Double-speak increase. The evil and selfish refer to themselves as good and generous. Slaves to sin call themselves liberated. The foolish call themselves enlightened. The lustful call themselves "good lovers." Mortals call themselves "God." The oldest religious superstitions call themselves "the New Age."

— CHAPTER 1 —

WHO BUILT YOUR FRAME OF REFERENCE?

There are three items you will learn in this chapter:

- You will learn how to use this book and how to improve your understanding of news events and history.
- You will be informed of some recent historical events that were planned but are generally believed to be accidental.
- You will be presented material from the conspirators own publications, a group of photocopies from authoritative sources showing the reader that this book is based on solid evidence.

Sometimes we could be looking for the truth, be told what the truth is, and still not see it.

There is a cow in the picture below. Can you see it?

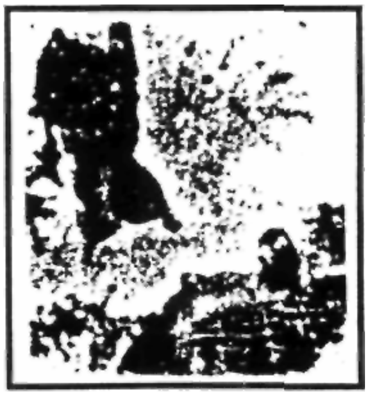

Figure 1-1

If you really want to see the cow in the picture be flexible in your point of view. See page xix for the solution.

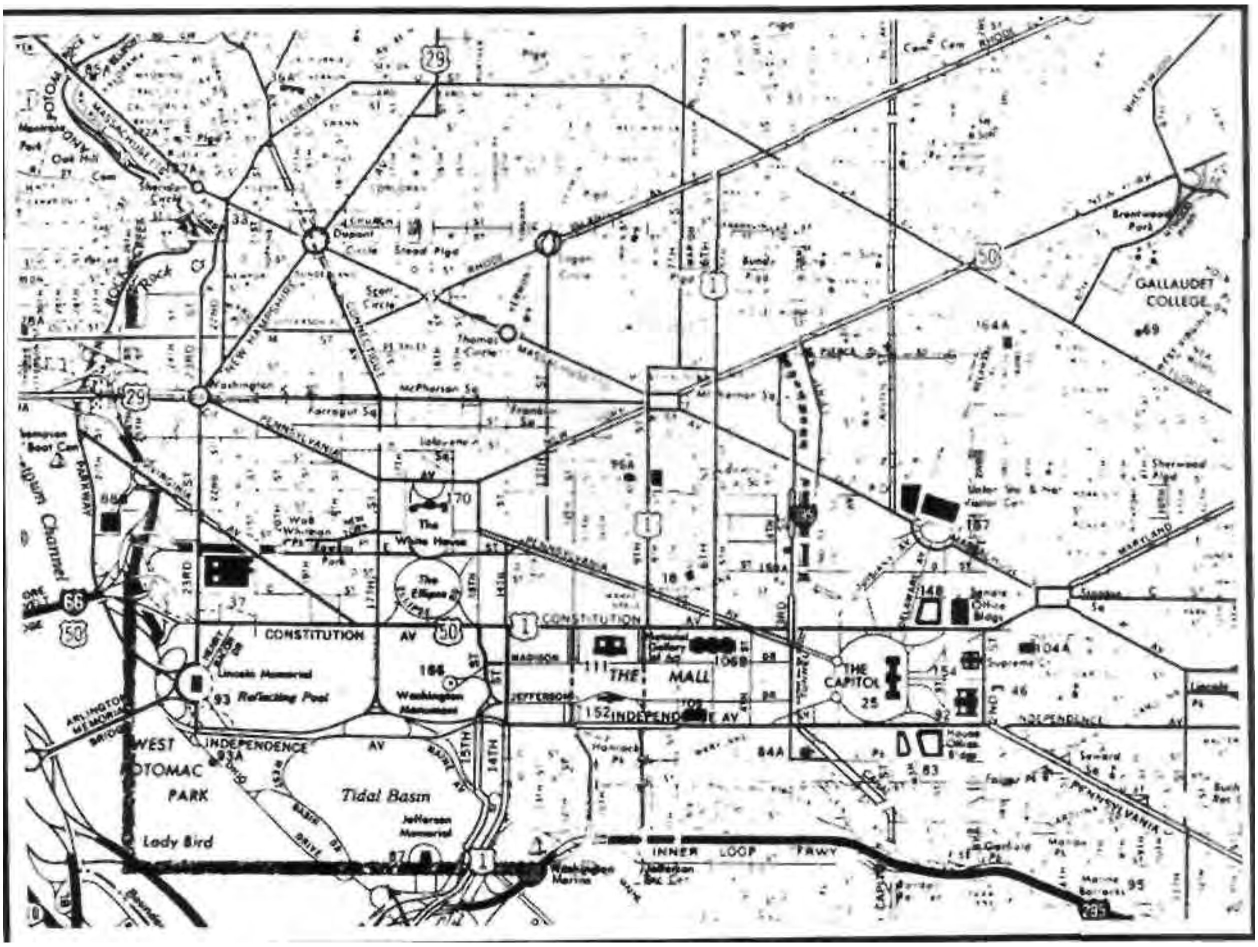

Dupont Circle
Scott Circle
Thomas Circle
Sheridan Circle
Washington Circle
Farragut Sq
McPherson Sq
Lafayette
The White House
The Ellipse
CONSTITUTION AV
INDEPENDENCE AV
Lincoln Memorial
Reflecting Pool
Washington Monument
THE MALL
THE CAPITOL
Tidal Basin
Jefferson Memorial
WEST POTOMAC PARK
Lady Bird
GALLAUDET COLLEGE
Brentwood Park
PENNSYLVANIA
MARYLAND
INNER LOOP FRWY
Washington Channel
ARLINGTON MEMORIAL BRIDGE
Rock Creek
29
50
66
1
295

Figure 1-2

The reason this map of Washington, D.C. is presented is to instill within the reader the desire to see through camouflage. The reader will be able to draw deeper conclusions for himself about the message's significance after this book removes the camouflage from many hidden things. An inadequate frame of reference results in a false understanding of history.

If you don't know what these six pyramids are saying, but want to know, you need to be willing to learn the answer from people who are mindful and alerted to the esoteric answer. What is esoteric? Esoteric is a hidden meaning, a hidden answer, private information that only a select group know about Exoteric, is the opposite of esoteric.

There is something important being revealed in these six pictures, do you see it?

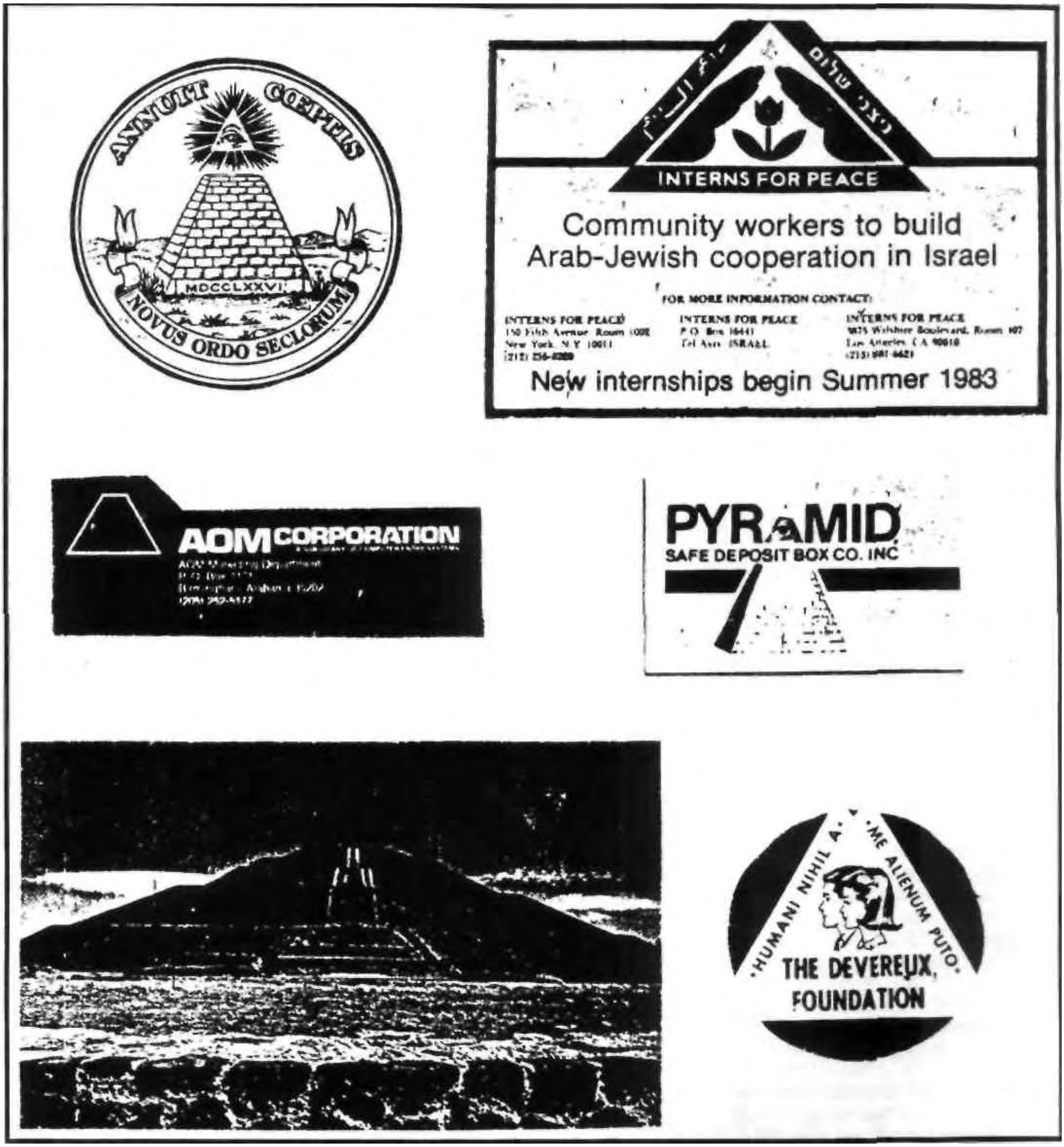
ANNUIT COEPTIS
MDCCLXXVI
NOVUS ORDO SECLORUM
INTERNS FOR PEACE
Community workers to build Arab-Jewish cooperation in Israel
FOR MORE INFORMATION CONTACT:
New internships begin Summer 1983
AOM CORPORATION
PYRAMID
SAFE DEPOSIT BOX CO. INC
HUMANI NIHIL A ME ALIENUM PUTO
THE DEVEREUX FOUNDATION

Figure 1-3

People are becoming better informed. You may be one of those persons who already knew the answers to the previous questions. If so, then you are one of the few who have already begun readjusting their Frame of Reference.

QUESTIONS

A. Who won the cold war?________________ .

B. How would you deal with the significant differences between the Jehovah's Witnesses, Mormons and Catholic Church if you were the sole ruler of the world? ___________________ .

C. How long will it beefore there will be witchcraft and magic taught in the Christian Churches?

ANSWERS AT THE TOP OF NEXT PAGE

What are the three hidden numbers of this Universal Product Code?

0 15645 16643 1

Figure 1-4

If you said 666 you are right. No matter what Universal Product Code I asked you about, the hidden numbers are always 666. You will find the hidden numbers universally are 666. (See chapter 3.1 for how to decode the bar codes, and where to go for more information on this subject)

The hidden numbers happen to be 666 even if you are — say for instance — in Europe where they call their bar codes European Article Number EAR

THE SIGNIFICANCE GROWS THE MORE WE LEARN

The significance of this number 666 grows when we learn more about it.

Satanist Aleister Crowley who felt he was the Beast considered 666 to be his number. Other satanists have considered the number special to use also. Their attraction for the number matches an interesting prophecy made by a fisherman in the first century A.D.

This fisherman named John had a vision of the end of the age. From this be wrote a prophecy "that no one may buy or sell except one who has the mark or the name of the beast, or the number of his name. Here is wisdom. Let him who has understanding calculate the number of the beast, for it is the number of a man: His number is 666." REV 13:17-18

The significance grows when we ourselves learn how to decode the bar codes into numbers and prove to ourselves that the numbers 666 are the universally hidden numbers.

It grows some more when we learn about the great secrecy that surrounds the creation of the Universal Product Code.

The significance grows even more when we catch on to all the sneaky ways 666 is designed and hidden in many other items, including the cover of the new public school Globalism 2000 curriculum, Treasury Dept. badges, IRS codes and forms, social security forms, credit cards, and some bank cards.

The number 666 consistently reoccurs with evil. Gary D. Blevins uses a numeric code for the alphabet. He discovered that by using his system to assign values, and having his computer do the addition, that a large number of evil places are associated with the numbers 666, while the same system has come up repeatedly with good biblical values for Godly things. Whether you accept or don't accept Blevin's computer approach described in 666 The Final Warning (software for it is being sold), that doesn't negate the validity that the number reoccurs with high frequentcy.

BEFORE HAND WE COULD SEE NOTHING SINISTER IN THE BAR CODE

But as our frame of reference expands we begin to learn things that are surprising. Could the bar code in the future have anything to do with controlling buying and selling? Could it be associated with evil designs?

ANSWERS TO PAGE-2 QUESTIONS

A. The same people who contrived it for profit and power were the only winners.

B. You wouldn't have to, they are all run by the same group.

C. Magic and witchcraft are already being taught in many Christian churches, often under new labels. In fact, human sacrifices are already being done in secret in some well known Christian churches with well known pastors.

In August 1979, this Author passed some intelligence information to the CIA via a Jehovah's Witness.[1]

Seventy-seven months later, the President announced this information publicly when it was politically advantageous. The release of this information was purely manipulation of the public, and a distortion of historical perceptions. It was a lesson on how intelligence information serves those in power. The public is manipulated by those in power through the use of information.

What is amazing is how gullible even people with higher degrees are, those people who we might think would know better. Apparently, critical thinkers among the so-called educated public are few. Also, those, who have been in the government controlled educational system longer periods of time, have simply provided the system more time to condition and propagandize them, unless they are the type of person to challenge what they are being fed.

On the other hand, it must be remembered that all communication that a person perceives is then related to his or her whole experience. Fragments that do not relate to what a person has experienced more often than not are forgotten. The person may puzzle over the tidbits of incongruent fragments, but being unable to relate them to his world view, finds himself unable to file the fragments away in a meaningful manner.

There seems to be no end to the fragments of information relating to the conspiracy, and these are available to everyone, but the meaning is elusive, because the observing public can't assimilate or doesn't want to assimilate their meaning.

Making a fundamental change in our frame of reference is a frightening task. The reader isn't a piece of grid paper for me to design his thinking. The reader must participate with me. Even if it is too difficult for you to agree with everything I say, press on, for if you gain even a little insight it will begin a process.

---

[1] The reason I passed information to the CIA was that while I was in Libya, (working with my father who was with the U.N.), I learned about the large missile silos the Russians had installed and were manning. I had never had anything to do with the CIA but as a concerned citizen for the welfare of the freeworld, I felt an obligation to pass on this information concerning the outflanking of Nato with Russian missiles. Today, I would not pass that information on, because afterwards I learned that CIA agents such as Edwin Wilson were carrying out assassinations for Libya's Qaddafi. CIA agent Wilson hired Anti-Castro Cubans and Green Berets to carry out assassinations and other assignments for Qaddafi. The CIA agents Frank Terpil and Wlson supplied Qaddafi with all kinds of forbidden military hardware like heat-seeking ground-to-air missiles, sabotage and psyc warfare training programs, sophisticated assassination gear and bombs disguised as household trinkets using plastic explosives to slip past airport metal detectors. Wilson supplied planes, men, and weapons for Qaddafi's military invasions of Chad and the Sudan, and supplied training for his airforce which uses Pakistani pilots. (For information on CIA agent Wilson and Libya, and other crimes read Kwitny, Jonathan. The Crimes Of Patriots A True Tale of Dope, Dirty Money, and the CIA NY: W.W. Norton & Co., 1987, pp. 101-104, 291,312-13.) Even after information of these things leaked out, the U.S. government continued to pretend not to notice. Ironically, meanwhile, Reagon was picturing Qaddafi as a bloodthirsty terrorist supported by the Communists, while behind the scenes Qaddafi's invasions and assassinations were made possible by the CIA. While I was in Libya, Americans at home were being led to believe the Libyans were bloodthirsty for American blood, while Americans in Libya were running the oil fields. The reason I mention this anecdote was [a] to show how the public is manipulated by "news" and their leaders, [b] to show the reader how this Author has been around and writes from an informed position, [c] to begin destroying the illusion that Jehovah's Witnesses have nothing to do with the CIA or the New World Order. Chapters 5-17 of the first section show how the Watchtower Society of the J.W.s is part of the New World Order.

My book simply states what has happened and what is planned. I don't believe in crystal balls. At some point, the things in this book will become part of your own experience. That is when this book will become real to you. Perhaps it will be when they do a currency exchange. Perhaps it will be when they start a cashless society. Perhaps it will be when friends disappear. Perhaps it will be when W.W. III happens. Perhaps it will be when they try one of these things and the people refuse to cooperate. Because this material challenges people to rethink what they have experienced in their lives, it may challenge some of your core beliefs. I'll do my part in providing evidence, but I'm depending on you to get something out of this book.

I anticipate much of the reading audience may be Bible readers. Why should Bible readers read this book? Doesn't the Word of God fully equip us? In one sense it does. A soldier is fully equipped going into battle, but he must still study his enemy. When a missionary uses a Chilton's manual to repair a car, or prays for wisdom he is showing that the Bible was not designed to answer every question. What many Christians seem unaware of, perhaps it is a secret, is that the Bible was intentionally ambigious and insufficient so that we would turn to God and trust in Him, and not in some formula or knowledge. Knowledge is a tool. And as a tool it can be used for good or bad.

The most sordid events have been used by God. The Bible stories are full of humans at their worst. But God is able to communicate to us a spiritually beneficial message from such events. Likewise, it is this book's purpose to be spiritually beneficial.

This book is not a prophetic panhandler. Speculation on Bible prophecy is absent from this book. This book is based on fact, solid facts known to me about the New World Order regime and its one-world-religion. The entire picture is lacking in confirmed details at a few points and in these areas I try to advise the readers that I am giving only my observations.

By and large you will be reading fact, not theory. It is a complex picture when the pieces are all jumbled up. Hopefully, an integrated design will be seen by the reader by the end of the book.

SOME OF US WANT TO BE FOOLED

I was a West Pointer. West Point cadets learn the meaning of authority and discipline. I still believe in obedience to authority. Many religious or patriotic people want to believe in our leaders, for they feel it is our duty, right or wrong, to blindly obey. While in the military, I believed in obedience to authority. My primary focus in the military was how to carry out an order, not whether the order had merit. In this regard, I was like many of the men and women in this nation, an instrument of those who are deceiving this nation.

It is proper to obey authority. Even more important, it is proper to obey our highest authorities. As a Bible believer and as a child of God, you will want to obey your heavenly parent. If you do not believe in God, perhaps you believe in the Constitution or the concept of Man's freedom.

The Declaration of Independence and the Bill of Rights are reminders to patriotic Americans that there are limits to what a government should or even legally can do. Remember God is a higher authority, remember the Constitution is a higher authority. At times a person must prefer to obey a higher authority — did not even the founders of the American government and its laws say, "When in the course of human events it becomes NECESSARY for one people to DECLARE the causes which impel them to a separation..."?

After reading this book, you the reader will learn more on how the Cold War at the highest level was a staged production, reaping all kinds of benefits for those seeking to rule the world, and creating a frame of reference that made it difficult for people to see beyond an east-west confrontation.

What's funny, in a sad way, is that there were people predicting the total collapse of communism in Eastern Europe, because they had seen through the conspiracy, and yet the press again has still pulled a fast one on us. They proclaim, Who could have seen such a thing like the Berlin Wall coming down?

Whether they report it or not, let the record show there were people who could see what was going on behind the scene.[2]

The Trilateral Commission after its meeting in Apr. 1990 published a report (months before Iraq invaded Kuwait) about what it intended to do to Iraq.[3]

This group consisting of European nations, Japan and the U.S. had decided to disarm Iraq. Because they did nothing serious diplomatically toward this, it was clear that they meant to do it militarily. Those of us who have been to that area of the world, like myself, knew the Iraqi military threat was way overblown. Again, it was clear from history what the military would do. This author is no military genius, but he stated before Desert Storm that the military thing to do would be to first bomb for one month and then go around the fortifications like the Germans did the Maginot line. Knowing what was going to happen made it hard to watch the carefully orchestrated media manipulate the people. There is much more that could be said about what went on behind America's back during the Iraq-Kuwait crisis, but the point is simply this, some people were not being surprised by what happened.

If your frame of reference grows as a result of this book, perhaps you too will not be surprised next time.

Another example of how the public's frame of reference is lacking is Nixon. The Power built Nixon's false public image as a hard-nose anti-communist conservative, yet he was actually working for the conspiracy. His liberal voting record, his establishment of close ties with Communist China haven't been given much analysis, because that wouldn't fit his public image — that frame of reference that the Power created that he was an anti-communist crusader. Harvard history professor John Kenneth Galbraith, a socialist, revealed in the New York Magazine (Sept. 21, 1970) p. 25 that Nixon had surrounded himself as President with leading leftists and was pushing a Socialist agenda. Perhaps your high school history book like mine showed a picture of Nixon waging an anti-Communist crusade in the 1950's. Later, I learned that Nixon's involvement was really a sham.

Another random example is the album cover of Beatle star Harrison's Living in a Material World. This album cover does indeed show us how we are to live in a material world. The cover shows a hand containing money with the chakra point on the opposite side being illuminated. To me, this clearly shows an initiation point already in use and which is planned for the general population in the future. (It also happens by some holy coincidence to fit the Bible prophecy of the Mark of the Beast needed to buy and sell.) By the way, this book's story does not need Bible prophecy to prop it up. Whether you believe in Revelations or not, it is still possible to realize that a New Age initiation process has already begun.

Our previous experience and our information available will directly influence how accurately each of us assigns meaning to information we receive. This Author knew Harrison was into Hinduism. Although Hinduism and the New Age are not exactly synonymous the terms can be used interchangeably here in regards to Harrison. (The meaning of such terms will be detailed later.) I am also aware that the New Age movement has already begun initiations at the chakra points. I have seen horns tatooed onto the third eye position. I have experienced as an observer Hinduism first hand, and listened to New Agers discuss the chakra points. I have studied Texe Marrs' Mystery Mark of The New Age which examines in detail the initiation point and what is happening today compared to REV 13:16, 17. Revelation 13 says the Mark of the Beast will be placed on right hands and foreheads. These chakra positions are already initiation points for the New Age. What meaning would you the reader assign to this information about Harrison's album cover?

---

[2] Cumbey, Constance. The Hidden Dangers of the Rainbow. Shreveport, LA: Huntington House, 1983, p. 123.

[3] The Plenary report by the Trilateral Commission in Wash., D.C. in Apr. 1990, entitled The Israeli-Palestinian Issue, Task Force Report 38, aka 212-661-1180. The Council of Foreign Relations also exhibited some crisis indications prior to the event.

President Bush's remarks about the New World Order are another example. Few Americans are aware that Bush belongs to a powerful group called the Order (believed to be part of the American portion of the Illuminati). Nor are most Americans aware of what kind of New Order these people want for us. So when Bush says a New World Order is being created, most people must surmise at best what they think he means by this.[4]

(See this footnote for the documentation of Bush's membership in the Order.)

The popular film Indiana Jones and the Last Crusade provides the next example. At one point Indiana Jones (Harrison Ford) is told, The quest for the Grail is the quest for the divine in all of us. At a later point, a character who has belonged to a secret order tells Indiana Jones how his Order has protected the Grail for 2,000 years. Those who have read Holy Blood Holy Grail will recognize at once that this is preparing viewers to accept the new Messiah. Holy Blood Holy Grail exposes a conspiracy connected to groups such as the Masons and other secret groups to introduce a new Messiah. Supposedly the Holy Grail that secret societies have preserved is the holy blood line of Jesus Christ. By unconscious persuasion the viewer is having his frame of reference expanded so that when the story line of the new Messiah is presented, he will be able to place it within his frame of reference.

How has the American public had their frame of reference created by the conspiracy? More will be provided later on, but a few quick points can help establish for the Reader the extent of the conspiracy. They have been in control since the American Revolution. Over a period of 200 years they have had the time and the resources to create history and news. (See chapter 3-5 and 3-6) They control the major newspapers and the major political figures. If a President stepped too far out of line, he was assassinated. In each case, the assassination has been covered up. Although the coverup in the Kennedy and Lincoln assassinations doesn't fool anyone willing to look at the evidence, still they got away with it. They have written our history books and our text books. They have created such an artificial frame of reference that the public finds it hard to hang factual information about the conspiracy in their frame of reference. But this didn't happen overnite, they have had two hundred years.

Impossible you say! Article I, Section 8,10: U.S. Constitution forbids the production of paper-money by the government. Has this been ignored and circumvented?   Do you use paper money?

Oh, does it seem impossible? Another eye opener is the identity of who wrote Shakespeare's works. Manly P. Hall, a powerful Mason (whose credentials are shown in the photocopies of Masonic material following this opening chapter), provides proof in his book that Sir Francis

---

[4] The connections of Bush to the Power documented in this book (the New Order) are so numerous they won't all be given here except in brief form. His membership in the Order is discussed in Antony Sutton's America's Secret Establishment. A Biography about George Bush by Fitz Hugh Green entitled George Bush An Intimate Portrait (NY: Hippocrene Books, 1989) makes passing reference to his membership in the Skull & Bones Fraternity (p. 48) and the Andover Fraternity (p. 49). Sutton's books serve as a good beginning to document and study what George Bush is. One of his books is The Two Faces of George Bush. This information has been leaking slowly into the news in a way to keep some lid on it. The Williamette Week (Sept. 19-25,1991, Portland, OR) had an long article on the facts about Bush's Skull & Bones membership, pp. 1,8-11 based on John Lawrence's research. However, the tenor of the article was that the Order had little to do with a grand conspiracy but had much political influence. Without a proper frame of reference this type information is forgotten, ignored, or misused by people. Bush is also a 33 degree Freemason, (testified to by numerous Masonic sources) even though it is being denied by the White House. He has oil connections, banking connections, intelligence connections and he was director of the CIA. He has connections with blood lines connected to the Conspiracy. This footnote to Bush's connections to the Conspiracy could be a book in itself. His Zapata oil rigs were used to smuggle drugs into the U.S. Drugs were unloaded on the oil platforms off the coast of TX The small boats coming from the platforms do not go through customs. Also his son has been seen personally directing a flight of drugs which came through an Airforce base. Another good book about Bush is James J. Drummey's book The Establishment's Man (Appleton, WI: Western Islands, 1991).

Bacon wrote Shakespeare's works. This Author being a Certified and experienced handwriting analyst has long been aware the illiterate man who could barely sign his name William Shakespeare could never have written the works attributed to him. The works of Shakespeare are written by a man literate in several languages. Sir Francis Bacon was an early leader of that conspiracy which has successfully kept the identity of who wrote Shakespeare's works secret for all these centuries. If that isn't power, what is?

"From 80 to 90% of the population can be hypnotized to varying degrees...At least 5% (10,000,000) of the U.S. population is extraordinarily hypnotizable, so easily hypnotizable that they are in a constant state of exaggerated suggestibility, even when awake and going about their normal daily routine. They are at the total mercy of all forms of influences and can easily be persuaded to do things and afterward have no idea why they did them..." Dr. Tobias H. Brocher, Director, Center for Applied Behavioral Sciences, Menninger Foundation, Topeka, KS.

AMERICA'S MINDLESS FASCINATIONS

The conspiracy has succeeded in turning people from watching reality to a mindless fascination for a comic strip-video game-sitcom life of unreality. You are to do your job for the system, then go home and not think; or if you want to think, tune into one of their talk shows or read one of their newspapers. Perhaps no one has ever shown you the names of who exactly controls big business and the media. The power in this nation is controlled by an elite. That can be documented. And it can be shown what they intend for us.

Events in Eastern Europe are such a visible example of media manipulation. Spontaneous revolts are a fiction. People plan and stage marches and revolutions.

"The cold war is no longer needed by the conspiracy. In 1983, Constance Cumbey made an attempt to warn people about the New World Order planned for the entire globe in her book The Hidden Dangers of the Rainbow, The New Age Movement and our coming Age of Barbarism. On p. 123 she outlines their plans for the future, Next, the conspiracy was to involve 'a skeptical and destructive criticism of personal-immortality religions.' Strangely enough, communism was to be destroyed at the same time. However, the New Agers feel the program they are offering the world would satisfy the basic desire of Communists in that it proposes a form of worldwide socialism. The existing Communist formulae-per-se- were to be abolished..."

Well said Constance, It is really only being abolished per se because every platform of the Communist party has been adopted already in the United States, point by point. The US already has what the communists wanted.[5]

And often we the people have been unconsciously manipulated into asking them to do what they wanted.

At some point, the people of the world will ask them to create a One-World-Government. We the people will ask them to bring in what they have been wanting to do. That does not mean we understand what we are following. Hopefully, some of us blind followers will awake and break our mental chains of servitude and think for ourselves. Let us break our chains of servitude to gnostic religious powers who are pawns of the conspiracy. Let us recognize all the manipulations and the puppets of this vast power.

We asked them to create vast spy networks,

---

[9] In order to abbreviate this I will give the U.S. laws which establish Marx's 10 planks. (The reader is asked to look up the 10 planks of the Communist Manifesto (1848) by Karl Marx himself or to request from the publisher of this book a tract giving this in fuller form.) [1] Property tax which amounts to a type of governmental rental of land. [2J Graduated State & Fed. Income Taxes [3) Inheritance Taxes & Reformed Probate Laws. [4] Sedition Act of 1798; I.R.S. Powers; Exec. Order 11490, Sec. 1205; Exec. Order 11490, Sec. 2002. [5] Fed. reserve system [6] F.C.C. regs, Exec. Order 10995, State Drivers Licenses, D.O.T. regs. & Exec. Order 10999. [7] Exec. Order 11490, [8] Fed. Emer. Public Works Prog. Exec. Order 11000, [9] Re-organization Act of 1949, Exec. Order 11647, Pub. Law 89-136, Exec. Order 11731 [10] Free State Public Schools; Child Abuse Laws, Child Labor Laws & State Controlled apprenticeships (Fair Labor Standards Act of 1937).

because we believed in their cold war ploy. And the cold war was real for the common man. But now these vast spy networks can not be dismantled. A great deal of their activities have nothing to do with the reasons they were created. And we unwittingly fund these secret services that spy on us, and are at the complete disposal of the conspiracy.

The machinations of the secret services such as MI 5, MI 6, the FBI, the CIA, and others boggle the mind.

It is no comfort to realize that men identified as related to the Conspiracy are also men in control of the secret services. The tie-ins by the leadership of all of these agencies to the Conspiracy confirms confidential leaks that they are used by the Conspiracy. For instance, George Bush(the Order) dir. CIA, Lord Rothschild (family part of the center of power) CSC (chief) of MI 6, Hugh Sinclair (family part of blood line for new Messiah) CSC (chief) of MI 6...and on and on... This chapter is not the place in this book to detail all this.

It may be sufficient at this point to simply sum up the power of MI 6 (British Secret Service overseas) and the American system that works hand in glove with the British by quoting Nigel West, an expert on MI 6,

..."the firm, as it is referred to by outsiders, enjoys a unique reputation for stealth, devious efficiency, ruthlessness and, it must be said, treachery. It has often been considered all-powerful, wielding enormous secret influence. It was once said in America in the 1920s that six institutions rule the world: Buckingham Palace, the White House, the Bank of England, the Federal Reserve Bank, the Vatican and the British Secret Service."

Should the reader indulge this Author long enough, he shall learn that apparently all these centers of power Nigel West thought ruled the world are controlled by an single elite group. If the evidence shows that the last two popes are not only Masons, but part of the conspiracy, (the present one is Jewish by the way) then indeed they have solidified the power of the world into one hegemony.

This Author would like to introduce the reader to this conspiracy and do so at whatever point of entrance will work for the individual. But he would also like the chance to suggest the means to implement readjustments. What good is it to know that a One-World-Government is planned if there is no means to resist? You can start by turning off the television and reading this book. You can start by turning off the control gnostic religious leaders have imposed upon you and thinking for yourself. Disconnect yourself from the umbilical cords of the conspiracy, which have fed you misleading information. You can start by thinking. Use this book as a launching pad to new investigations, it is not an infallible crutch to lean on, although the author will try to give the documentation you need. Some of the documentation can simply not be given. Dozens of interviews with people have simply resulted in the author knowing dangerous information that nobody wants to have their name associated with.

IMAGINE LIVING UNDER HITLER

The German population feared the Gestapo. The same International group of people that helped Hitler to power and assisted him to cleanse Europe of unwanted people are ready to go to work cleansing again. (See chapter 2 and other parts for the details.)

WHAT THIS BOOK IS NOT

This book is not a comprehensive study of the conspiracy, in spite of that appearance. It is actually a limited study on how a one-world-religion has been created, and is to become the religion of the New World Order that forces are moving us toward.

Many different groups have been studied in-depth, and all kinds of people with clues to how power is really functioning talked to. For instance, this Author studied the following group.

EXAMPLE OF ONE OF THE GROUPS STUDIED

In Rabbi Jack Moline's book Growing Up Jewish on page 76 he claims that Congress is run by the Jews, "For years, anti-Semites have accused Jews of controlling Congress, and for years it has been denied. Ironically, as of 1984, the Jews do control Congress. A recent survey of the 435 representatives, shows that for all practical purposes, 219 are practicing Jews. Interestingly, twelve members of the Black Congressional Caucus are Ethiopian Jews. On the Senate side, an astounding 62 out of 100 Senators identify themselves as Jews!" (This surely doesn't square with what the press is telling the public.)[6]

The Jewish author A. Cowen, in his book The X-Rays in Freemasonry, on page 6 says that Jews control Freemasonry, "The Jews swarmed into it (Freemasonry) from the earliest times and controlled it through the higher grades and councils. They have controlled the ancient and accepted Scottish Rite since the beginning of the Nineteenth Century." (This is not what the Scottish Rite is telling the public.)

The widely known Jewish author Marcus Eli Ravage in an article in Century Magazine, Jan. 1928 wrote, "We Jews are at the bottom of nearly all your wars; not only of the Russian but of every other major revolution in your history. We did it solely with the irresistable might of our spirit, with ideas and propaganda."

Rabbi Stephen Wise, a Scottish Rite Mason and leader in the Order of B'nai B'rith, when discussing communism said, "Some call it communism; I call it Judaism." (See the American Bulletin, 5/15/1935) What? How can communism be related to Judaism?

There are many other identical claims or similar ones made by other Jews in books and articles whose primary reading audiences would be Jewish. In investigating what power or powers control our lives, it was necessary to check the record to see if these Jewish claims had any validity. This Author is a researcher, a detective who wants to ferret out the original documents, discover an honest history based on a more balanced, broader picture of what happened in the past.

THIS BOOK IS NOT FOR OR AGAINST ANY RACE

This book is not a book about races, even though race plays a part in the story. The God of the Bible not only claims responsibility for creating the races, but also His belief that before Him they are all equal. Scriptures categorically state, "But now you must also put off all these: anger, wrath,... put on the new man who is renewed in knowledge according to the image of Him who created him, where there is neither Greek nor Jew, circumcised nor uncircumcised, barbarian, Scythian, slave nor free, but Christ is all in all." Christ placed no conditions on the great commission.

This Author could care less what race the world says you are. Popular concepts of race are to a large degree based on myths. If the Arabs are from Ishmael, and the over twelve million Ashkenazim Jews are descended from the Khazars as some Jewish historians validate, then these Askenazim Jews are derived from a combination of European blood overlaying the blood of a Mongolian tribe. This Mongolian tribe, the Khazars, claim Togarmah, a pagan person found in the Bible as their ancestor. Consequently, the majority of people called Jews would not even carry Semitic blood. The Arabs are known to be descended from Shem, hence Semites. Since the Jewish people are today the persecutors of the Arabs in the Middle East (at least by some Arab perceptions) that would make the Ashkenazim Jews the biggest anti-semites in the world.

At any rate, there are so many myths, so much intermarriage, and movement of peoples that the popular 'histories' of races should be tossed in the garbage. This Author believes that before our Creator there is no Jew, there is no Gentile, there is no Greek, no German, no Negro, no Scythian.

---

[8] For instance, Parade Magazine's Intelligence Report reports that 41 —that means 7 1/2% of the 540 Congressmen are Jewish. However, 35 Congressmen are listed "Unspecified", and Christian Scientists, Unitarians and other denominations may well contain Jews who do not belong to a Synagogue. Parade Magazine, Dec. 30, 1990, p. 20.

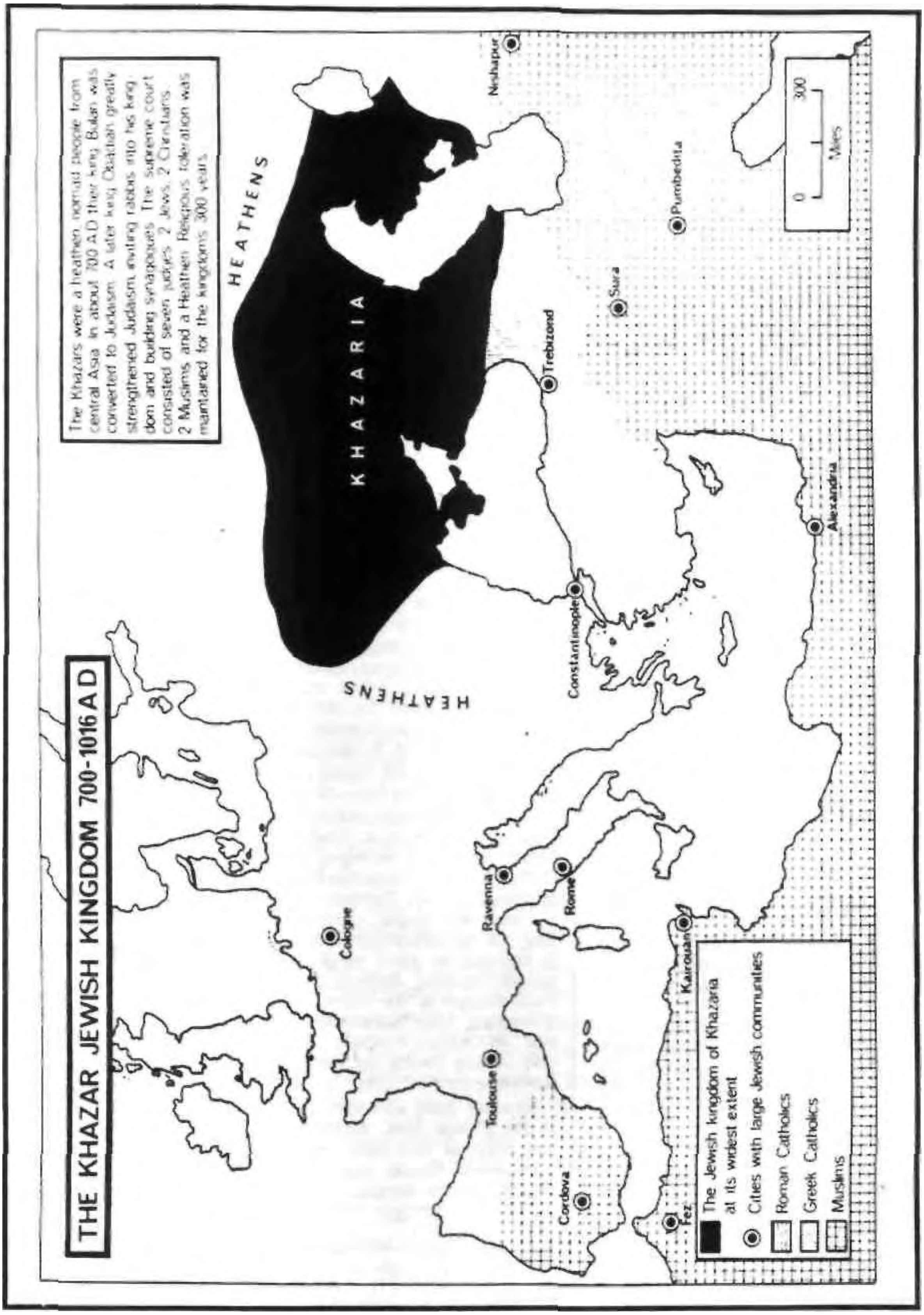
THE KHAZAR JEWISH KINGDOM 700-1016 A D
The Khazars were a heathen nomad people from central Asia. In about 700 A.D. their king Bulan was converted to Judaism. A later king Obadiah greatly strengthened Judaism, inviting rabbis into his kingdom and building synagogues. The supreme court consisted of seven judges: 2 Jews, 2 Christians, 2 Muslims and a Heathen. Religious toleration was maintained for the kingdoms 300 years.
HEATHENS
KHAZARIA
HEATHENS
Neshapur
Pumbeditha
Sura
Trebizond
Constantinople
Alexandria
Cologne
Ravenna
Rome
Kairouan
Toulouse
Cordova
Fez
0
300
Miles
The Jewish kingdom of Khazaria at its widest extent
Cities with large Jewish communities
Roman Catholics
Greek Catholics
Muslims

Figure 1-5

JEWISH HISTORIAN MARTIN GILBERT OF OXFORD PUT TOGETHER THIS JEWISH HISTORY ATLAS PUBLISHED BY COLLIER BOOKS. ITS MAPS ON PAGE 23 (SEE ABOVE) AND PAGE 24 SHOW THE KHAZAR EMPIRE AND THEIR SUBSEQUENT MOVEMENTS INTO EUROPE.

The Jews That Aren't

By LEO HUMAN: Coplay News Service San Diego Union-28.8.1966

TEL AVIV

Nathan M. Pollock has a beef with the Israeli government.

His elaborate plans to celebrate this September the 1.000th anniversary of the Jewish-Khozar alliance were summarily rejected.

An elderly, meek-looking man who migrated to Israel from Russia 43 years ago, Pollock ekes out a living as a translator of scientific texts and proofreader in a publishing firm.

But his great passion, hobby and avocation is historic research.

He has devoted 40 of his 64 years to trying to prove that six out of 10 Israelis and nine out of 10 Jews in the Western Hemisphere are not real Jews' Jews, but descendants of fierce Khozar tribes which roamed the steppes of southern Russia many centuries ago.

For obvious reasons the Israeli authorities are not at all eager to give the official stamp of approval to Pollock's theories.

"For all we know, he may be 100 per cent right," said a senior government official. "In fact, he is not the first one to discover the connection between Jews and Khozars. Many famous scholars. Jews and non-Jews, stressed these links in their historical research works.

"But who can tell today what percentage of Khozar blood flows in our veins, if at all? And who can declare with any degree of scientific accuracy which Jews are Jews and which descendants of this Tartar-Mongol race?

"As a matter of fact, our alleged descent from the Khozars is the central theme of Arab propaganda," he added. "The Arabs claim most European Jews have no right to be in Israel in the first place because they are not descended from Biblical Hebrews, but from Tartar-Mongol nomad tribes, including the Khozars who were converted to Judaism en masse 1,000 years ago."

Scientific opinion in Israel is divided on the subject. No one argues the basic premise: that a group of 12.000 Jews, fleeing from persecution and wart in the Holy Land, in the wake of Byzantine and Moslem conquests, made the long overland trek to Persia, crossed the territory of today's Turkestan in Central Asia and found asylum in the Khozar Kingdom, which occupied a vast area between the Caspian Sea, Volga River, Ural Mountains, Black Sea and the Polish borderlands.

In the year 965 the Khozars were defeated for the first time in 500 years, by Prince Sviatoslav of Kiev. King Bulan III of Khozaria concluded that Prince Sviatoslav emerged victorious from the war because his troops and mercenaries were Christians, while his nomads were pagan worshipers. The king and his nobles embraced Judaism in 965, and in 966 a royal edict was passed enforcing Judiasm as the only legal religion in the Khozar Kingdom. Tribesmen had to undergo circumcision, learn Hebrew prayers and recognize Jewish rabbis as their spiritual leaders — on pain of death.

As other Jews who were persecuted in the Middle East, medieval Europe and Spain at that time, heard of the new Jewish-Khozar kingdom, rumors spread that the Messiah had arrived at long last. There were several consecutive migration waves to Khozaria, via Persia, Greece and Poland.

Pollock believes the traditional Russian anti-Semitism probably stems from that epoch when Hebrew-speaking Khozar raiders attacked Russian villages, killed the men folk, abductod women, forcibly converted them to Judaism and married them in full-fledged religious ceremonies. This also would explain why so many European Jews are blond and blue-eyed, with a slight Mongol slant to their eyes, as well as the total absence of Semitic features among many Israelis of European descent.

The flourishing Jewish-Khozar Kingdom was destroyed in 1230 by the Mongol invasion of Ban Khan.

Following the Mongol invasion and conquest, surviving members of Jewish-Khozar tribes trekked west and settled in Poland, Hungary, Bohemia, Austria, Romania and the Ukraine.

How can one find out if he is a "Khozar Jew" or a "Hebrew Jew?"

According to Pollock, whose parents came from Poland, if your name is Halperin, Alport, Halpern, Galpern, etc., you are a 100 per cent Khozar. "Alper" means "brave knight" in the Khozar tongue, and the name was granted by the king to the most distinguished warriors. Names like Kaplan, Caplon, Koppel, and the like are positive proof of Khozar descent, according to the scholar. "Kaplan" means "fierce hawk" in the Khozar language. Kogan, Kagan, Kaganovich show aristocratic descent from Kagan-Hagan, King Bulan's chief minister.

Figure 1-6

Likewise, the reader may trace his Saxon ancestors back to the Scythians, and from Assyrian tablets to Palestine. Just be aware that obedience to God, whether Gentile or Israelite, is a pre-condition of blessing, according to the history of the Bible. (Romans 2:28-29 sums it up).

Unfortunately, in the history of mankind, racism has played a role that has shown us the bad side of humanity. This is not to say that the races don't exist, nor does this mean God doesn't bless cities, tribes or nations as a group. But race has been such an important issue to many people in the wrong way, and so much so that the ideas and myths of race have woven themselves into the fabric of the conspiracy and can not be separated out without tearing out part of the story.

With the One-World-Power all racism becomes even more dangerous. Why? Read Orwell's 1984. Remember Krystalnacht. The One-World-Power loves to direct people's hate to their own advantage. The motion picture industry and their editing abilities are a powerful tool in creating and directing people's hates. On Aug. 1, 1990, Saddam Hussein was a good guy. Such a good guy that our President and government were generously supplying him with lots of credit and weapons. But after the invasion of Kuwait, it did not take long for television to create an image that Saddam Hussein had been an evil Hitler for a longtime. Indeed, he probably has been a rotten character for a long time. The point that the reader is being reminded of is that your image of hiM, whether good (during the Iraq-Iran war) or bad (during the Kuwait crisis), was formed by the system's television. For some reason most people don't ask, If he was a Hitler in 1989, why were we doing business with him? Many people's frames of references are built like faucets that the media controls and can turn hot or cold. Does the reader want to be a media faucet?

One idea that has been conditioned into the Christians through Christian television and their leaders (which will be discussed later in this book) is that the Jewish people are the apple of God's eye, the seed of Abraham, God's Chosen People. This prevalent form of racism is unquestionably accepted because the Old Testament blessings of God are applied to the Jewish nation. Christians apply for instance the blessing given to Balaam to Israel today, "Blessed is he that blesseth thee, and cursed is he that curseth thee." Num 24:9 Christians have been conditioned to view Israel as the prodigal son that the Father continues to smile on and bless. A more accurate view is that mankind in general are prodigal sons that the Father continues to have patience with. He actively watches for us to come home to Him.

The last thing this Author wanted to do was to thrust upon the reader any controvery concerning the Jews that might upset him and stop people from getting the wealth of beneficial knowledge this book has. But readers of the manuscript kept wanting to know where I got authority to dare criticize anyone Jewish. Aren't the Jewish people under a special blessing that exempts them from criticism or exposure?

Those who claim God's blessings to Israel base their claims to that blessing on two criteria. Either they claim the blessing on the basis Israel is the PHYSICAL seed of Abraham, or that they are Israel being the SPIRITUAL seed of Abraham. According to JEWISH scholarship, modern Israel is neither. 80% of the Jews today are not genetically the seed of Abraham, but are descended from the Khazar tribe in Asia which later was forced to move into Poland, and other European areas. The Khazars became Jews because their King decided his Asian kingdom would adopt the Jewish religion. See the page for a photocopy from a JEWISH HISTORICAL ATLAS authored by a JEW who is a JEWISH HISTORIAN. Informed Jews know of this. It is in the Jewish Encyclopeadia. The Sephardic Jews in Israel, who are genetic descendants of Abraham, not only are a minority in Israel but, according to some of them, are abused and discriminated-against by the majority of Jews which are descendants of the Khazars. Even the Sephardic Jews have assimilated much of the genes of other nations. Sephardic Jews from Africa look like Africans, from China they look like Chinese.

Are they spiritually in line for a blessing? The Universal Jewish Ency., p. 637, states that the ultimate authority for Orthodoxy is the Babylonian Talmud. The Bible itself ranks second to it in reality, if not theory. That 6,000 page Talmud, although not written when Christ was alive, is part of the system Christ repeatedly rebuked in public as the synagogue of Satan. It is only Christian ignorance of what the Talmud actually says that prevents Christians from realizing that that Jewish statement alone morally separates the Orthodox Jews from God's blessings. The Jew Jesus Christ rejected certain Jews' claims that they were God's chosen people, If ye were Abraham's children, ye would do the works of Abraham.'" Jn 8:39

The Jew and ex-rabbi Apostle Paul dropped a bombshell when he declared not everyone who is born of Jewish parents and educated in the synagogue is viewed by God as children of God's promised blessing. "For they are not all Israel who are of Israel; nor are they all children because they are the seed of Abraham; but, 'In Isaac your seed shall be called.' That is, those who are the children of the flesh, these are not the children of God; but the children of the promise are counted as the seed." Rm 9:6-8.

The Christian church trembles today before the Chosen Race, and is afraid to criticize anything the American government does to assist Israel. Nor will many of the Christian ministers speak out against the human rights abuses done to the Palestinians. They have hurt the cause of Christ several ways, first, there are a good number of Palestinian Christians, second, the Arab world has rejected Christ because of Christian support for Israel, and third, they are supporting human rights abuses. Since the Orthodox Jewish system was operating in Jesus' time it is clear what the Christian view was. The Christian Apostle Paul states that the good Orthodox Jews of pure descent are not the seed of Abraham. Romans 2:8,29 says this very thing.

Even Jews who have read about Moses will realize the great Moses was not allowed into the Promised Land for simply disobeying in one small matter. God wanted a holy people. Before God allowed the Children of Israel into the promised land, they had to wander 40 years to purge themselves of their sinful attitudes, disobedience, and idolatry. That was the good Lord's moral standard then, and I find no scripture that reveals God has lost his moral inclinations since then.

Why will this Author make references to Jews?

THEIR ROLE

Jews have given us Jesus, and many other positive things. It was a Jew, Michael Landon, who bucked the System to bring us Little House on the Prairie and Highway to Heaven. It was also a Jew, Henry H. Klein, who warned the world with his book entitled A Jew Exposes The Jewish World Conspiracy. Many attempts were made on Klein's life. The events this book covers are world-wide, and entail more than the Jewish people. Anti-semitism is a tool of the Conspiracy. Klein and others have exposed that. Who do you think controls the Ku Klux Klan?

THEIR HIDDEN IDENTITIES

According to Jewish sources, half of the Jews no longer have names that are recognizably Jewish.

Further, reliable Jewish sources indicate that on a yearly basis about 80% of the applications for name changes in the United States are Jewish. Where 50,000 applications are made roughly, that means on a yearly basis 160,000 Jews change their names legally, (this is not referring to marriages) and almost all of the name changes are to non-Jewish sounding names.[7]

Because the Jewish people are not easily identified, and yet are interwoven so deeply into the whole story line, it is necessary to point them out as the story develops. Scottish and British blood lines also play a part in the story. They too will be pointed out.

THE NEW MESSIAH HAS A JEWISH LINEAGE

Putting aside the Bible, and observing carefully what is happening today, the good observer will note several men are being groomed for a role as the new Messiah. The new Messiah will have the lineage of David and Christ. (At least that is what will be said.) Who can say how things will go for this Priest/King? But in the long run it must surely fail, because it is built on the same man-made ideas that have failed before. If this new Messiah doesn't fail, one of his successors will, otherwise thousands of years of historical lessons mean nothing. If people knew history, they would recognize that today's New Age movement is simply a regurgitation of all the ancient superstitions that failed mankind long ago. This is another example of the inadequacies in our media built Frame of Reference.

---

[7] Kaganoff, Benzion C. A Dictionary of Jewish Names and their History. Schocken Books, 1977, pp.69, 72.

That certain Jews are involved is one thing. But not all Jews are alike, and this leads us to another question, who is a Jew?

This author has not used the term in the narrow sense that a very Orthodox Jew in Israel might. On the other hand, he has not used it in a way that would please those who might call themselves Jews, based on evidence of the migration of the 10 Israelite tribes. Anyone descended in some way from Jewish heritage gets the label. The descendents of the 10 tribes should be called Israelites anyway. Labels can be very important to people, but it is impossible to please everyone. Likewise, the label Christian is used loosely, as a label for those who claim to be Christian. God is not going to judge people on the basis of labels. For Him there is no stigma attached to being labeled Jewish, nor any benefit to the label Christian. What you actually are is what is significant.

This book is about the misapplication of God's promises to control people to serve a Power. The reader may on his own want to discover what God's promises are, and to whom those promises are made.

THIS BOOK IS NOT ABOUT FEAR

This book is not about fear. Cowards will not read this book. They will return to their ostrich existence afraid to face reality or challenge their world view. The universal religion being brewed up for us is devoid of faith, hope, and love, so it is important to keep people distracted with meaningless entertainment. This religion speaks of a cluster of values and a common fabric of values which leaves out faith in the Word of God. It speaks of evolution. It values what man can do.

This Author has a hope, a faith in the ultimate triumph of good, a triumph man alone can not achieve. And yet what is faith without works. If my neighbor is hungry and I only pray for him, that is not faith. If I am simply going to pray about all this when I can do other things, that is not faith. Faith without works is dead. So I give you this book revealing the struggle between God's value system and man's. This Author is betting on God's.

WHAT this book is revealing is the struggle between God's value system and man's. This Author is betting on God's.

WHAT THIS BOOK IS ABOUT

After telling you what this book is not, ~~it i~~s ~~not~~ about race and it is not about fear, it is time to tell the reader what this book is about.

This book concerns TRUTH and which AUTHORITY we go to for truth. What? Yes, Authority, because unless we replace the lying One-World-Power as our source of TRUTH, we are not going to resist it.

Is there any Authority that stands against the One-World Power?

Those people who view God as an ultimate Authority, are not allowing themselves to be cowed into going along with what they know is evil. God is a rival authority to the One-World-Power and One-World-Religion. Religions have been used by the One-World-Power (you will learn that as you read), so it is not religion per se that is in opposition to the One-World-Power, but those fanatics who believe that there is right and wrong, because they believe in their Creator.

This book is not an attack on individual religious or philosophical beliefs, except where necessary to turn people from the false Authority of the One-World-Power. I say false because when we have attended school, we believed we were being handed the unadulterated truth. When we read our so-called free-press and media we thought we were being handed the unadulterated truth. When we went to our Kingdom Halls, Masonic Halls, our churches and synagogues we believed we were being given the unadulterated truth. It is difficult to swallow that the same Authority that lied to us in the Kingdom Hall, in the Masonic Hall, in the Churches, and in our synagogues was the very same authority. This book's task is to demonstrate what false authority is behind the One-World-Religion and its New Order.

BUT IS THERE ANY CONNECTION BETWEEN GOD & TRUTH?

Science thought so. If it wasn't for the idea of creation by God, science would not have gone out looking for the principles that govern the universe. Science had the notion that a master mind had created this world, and that understanding the Universe was a window on that master mind. The subject of Geometry became sacred, because men realized that the entire Universe can be described mathematically, therefore Geometry was viewed as a window to God's thought processes.

The foundation of Government authority implies so. That men are to be governed implies that good rather than evil should be promoted. That behavior can be classed as good or bad ties into the concept that man sins. The God of the Bible clearly states man sins and is sinful. The concept of sin elevated the Children of Abraham's view of God had over the pagan view of the gods.

Perhaps the reader is protesting that real governments today don't speak of sin, how can their authority be from God?

If sin does not exist, what authority do governments have to tell people how to live their lives.

Because we don't acknowledge that man sins, we end up in a situation like the man in law enforcement who told the Author that there is no such thing as sin. After listening to his view, it was as if there are two basketball teams, the good guys and bad guys; our side are the good guys, the other side the bad. Therefore, he tells me there is nothing wrong for the CIA to bring in and sell drugs in this country. (Yes, he is fully aware they do.) But the bad guys are those guys in the streets selling drugs. This man hates people with rigid beliefs of right and wrong, and understandably so. If he didn't, how could he rationalize his support for the system? Who gives the U.S. government the authority to smuggle in and sell narcotics while at the same time waging a war against drugs?

The framers of the Declaration of Independence recognized the real authority of God (whether they were Christians or not) when they wrote, for the laws of Nature and Nature's God entitle...

The One-World-Power wants no rival. Their mass media is being used as a tool to destroy this rival authority. So much hate has been injected into the public's mindset that many people will not tolerate this book because it holds up God's authority. The public is unaware of the constant bombardment of anti-Christian material spewing forth from the media. The Moslems don't fare much better. Those who are Arabs and Christians are doubly cursed by this bias. As one Lebanese Christian aptly said, We are hated because we are Christians by the Arabs, and hated because we are Arabs by the Christians.

Absolute dominion by God and absolute truth is being subtly replaced by ministers and evangelists, whom you will learn later about in Part 2, with a subjective, false description of God. This is the subtle difference between confessing God is Lord and making God the Lord of your life. It is the distinction between accurate knowledge of God and a subjective, relative emotional belief.

It seems so rigid to believe in the existence of sin. It is. It creates standards. People are being taught to throw out standards. Art and life and other things have lost their meaning. Ancient Israel stood out as a nation because they tried to have standards.

Christians are condemned because they look to a rigid written standard. Yet, this is no different than the Supreme Court, which, after hearing opposing arguments, is supposed to return to the Constitution for their decisions. If it is rigid and reactionary for a Christian to follow a written standard, how should we view the Supreme Court? This is why the Constitution needed to be subverted. This is why President Bush abolished the Constitution with an Emergency Decree while the nation's attention was on Iraq.[8]

Yet, groups to save the Constitution are but a ploy of the Conspiracy. (See Part 2)

The real rival Authority is a Sovereign God that people will obey instead of some New Order Master.

IDENTIFYING THE MARKS OF THE TWO MAJOR AUTHORITIES

As the reader progresses through this book see if you can spot the following differences between the two authorities "the Power (New World Order) and God Almighty (who has left us Scripture).

SCRIPTURE	THE NEW WORLD ORDER
** In favor of honoring one's heritage, family, tribe, & nation	** Against the concept of national identities
** In favor of every man reaching God directly—every man is a priest (priesthood of the believer)	** Against man going directly to God—either he has a hierarchy imposed on him, for he is told to be his own God (misdirected, rerouted) told to look to self for answers.
** In favor of truth and honesty	** Against real truth, has snowed the people with lie upon lie, perverted truth is given out by "free" press
** In favor of sincerity & openness	** Against openess, creates secret societies & secret intelligence cults & hides their new laws from public
** In favor of one truth, one true God, and our responsibility to	** Against having one truth & just one true God (truth that God is supposedly unknowable, relative) Against any real truth, therefore against God & truth
** Calls men to use Scripture for instruction in Godliness	** AGAINST THE SCRIPTURES!!

Several Freemasons were responsible for the design of Washington, D.C. The streets of Washington form the upside-down Pentagram with its point at the White House. Also formed by streets are the satanic goat of Mendes, the Square and Compass, and the Arrow of Ra. The Washington monument is a phallic obelisk and further down is the reflecting pool which from the air is the masonic circle and dot.

Answer to page 2 concerning the pyramids. This Author doesn't know the motive behind each and every pyramid that is made without a capstone, such as each of these. However, the esoteric (hidden) occult meaning is that the light-bearer Lucifer who is the capstone has yet to take his place as world ruler.

There is a cow in the picture below. Can you see it?

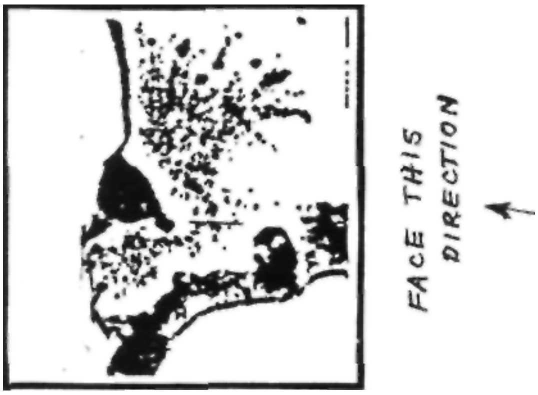
FACE THIS DIRECTION

Figure 1-1

If you really want to see the cow in the picture be flexible in your point of view.

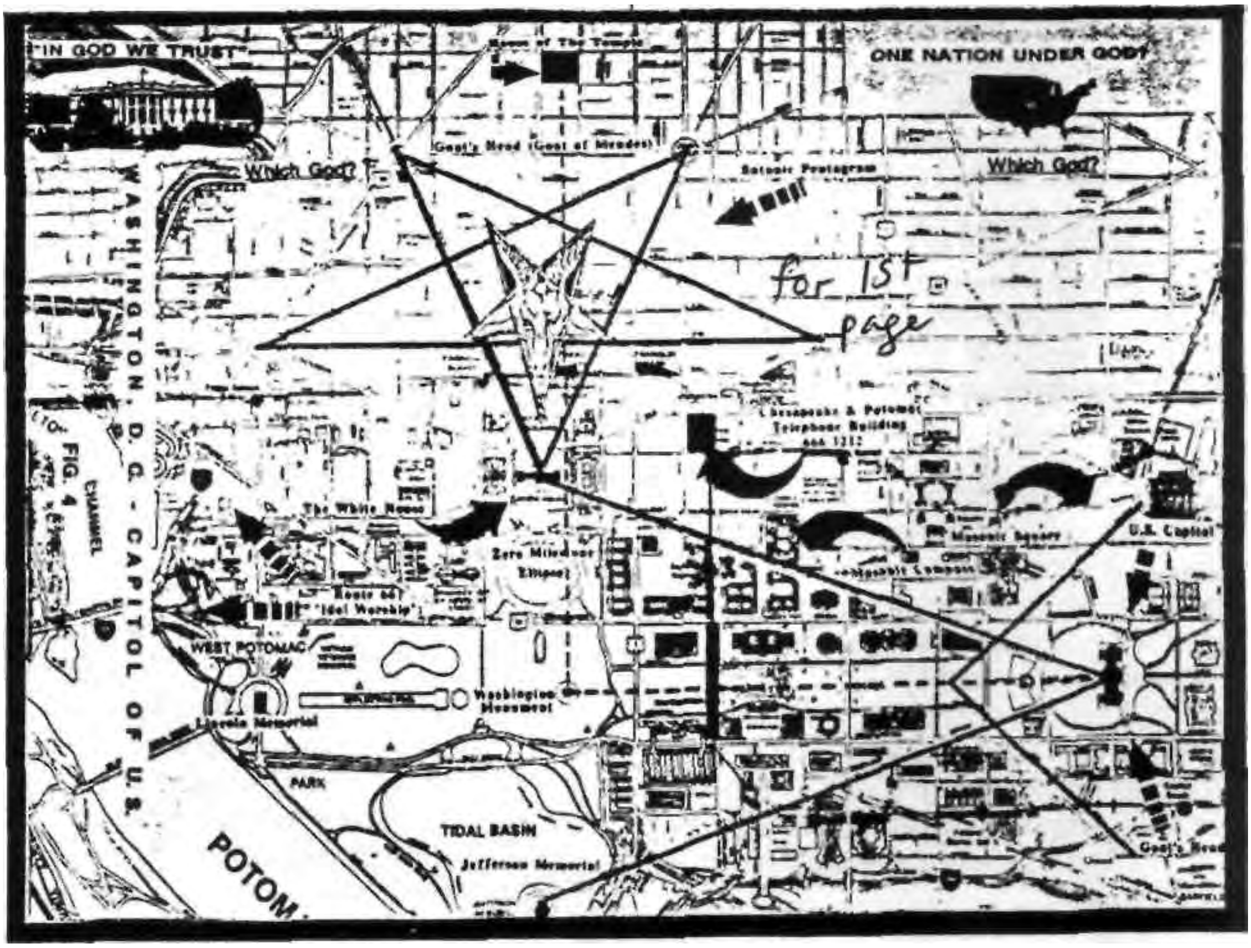
"IN GOD WE TRUST"
ONE NATION UNDER GOD?
Goat's Head (Goat of Mendes)
Which God?
Satanic Pentagram
Which God?
for 1st page
WASHINGTON, D.C. - CAPITOL OF U.S.
FIG. 4
CHANNEL
Chesapeake & Potomac Telephone Building
The White House
Zero Milestone Ellipse
Route 66 "Idol Worship"
Masonic Square
Masonic Compass
U.S. Capitol
WEST POTOMAC
Washington Monument
Lincoln Memorial
PARK
TIDAL BASIN
Jefferson Memorial
POTOM
Goat's Head

Recommended for further study on chapter 1 is: Israel Our Duty...Our Dilemma by Theodore Winston Pike

The back cover describes it adroitly. Aspellbinding theses. Unprecedented. The most specific, accurate, and comprehensive overview of Jewish history and aspirations available today. This is the ONE book every Christian should read.

The Secret Team: The CIA and its Allies in Control of the World by L. Fletcher Prouty

For nine years this man served as Pentagon focal point officer and CIA military activities were channeled through him. It is very difficult to learn much of what the CIA is doing, any book revealing too much is squelched on grounds of National Security, (ha! CIA security) This book is a blockbuster, not in all that it reveals, which is plenty, but in what it implies. Col. Prouty is an informed ex-participant who gives us a warning.

The Establishments Man by James J. Drummey

This well-written, well-researched book does a good job of exposing George Bush. It is well balanced between appealing to the broad masses and providing good detail for the sincere student of the New World Order. One of the shortcomings of the book is that they do not show that George Bush is only a cog in the big machinery of the New World Order. A little knowledge can be a dangerous thing. It is important to put George Bush in perspective. That is why Be Wise As Serpents is needed by conspiracy investigators. Drummey's book is good, but the reader is encouraged to apply its information in the bigger picture.

Document Packet

Introducing Christians to the One-World-Religion that is prepared to serve the One-World-Government

This packet was originally prepared as documentation that will accompany a approx. 600 page book by Fritz Springmeier on the history of the systematic destruction of Christianity and the building of a 1-world-religion. As it is vital to bring this struggle into focus now for Christians this document packet and others are available until such time as the book can be published.

THIS DOCUMENTATION CONSISTS OF PRIMARY DOCUMENTS-documents from authoritative representatives

You will learn-
That we are ruled by an invisible government
Religions are ruled by an invisible council
The three channels to create the world religion

Wise, David and Thomas B. Ross. The Invisible Government. Vintage Books: New York, 1974 ed.

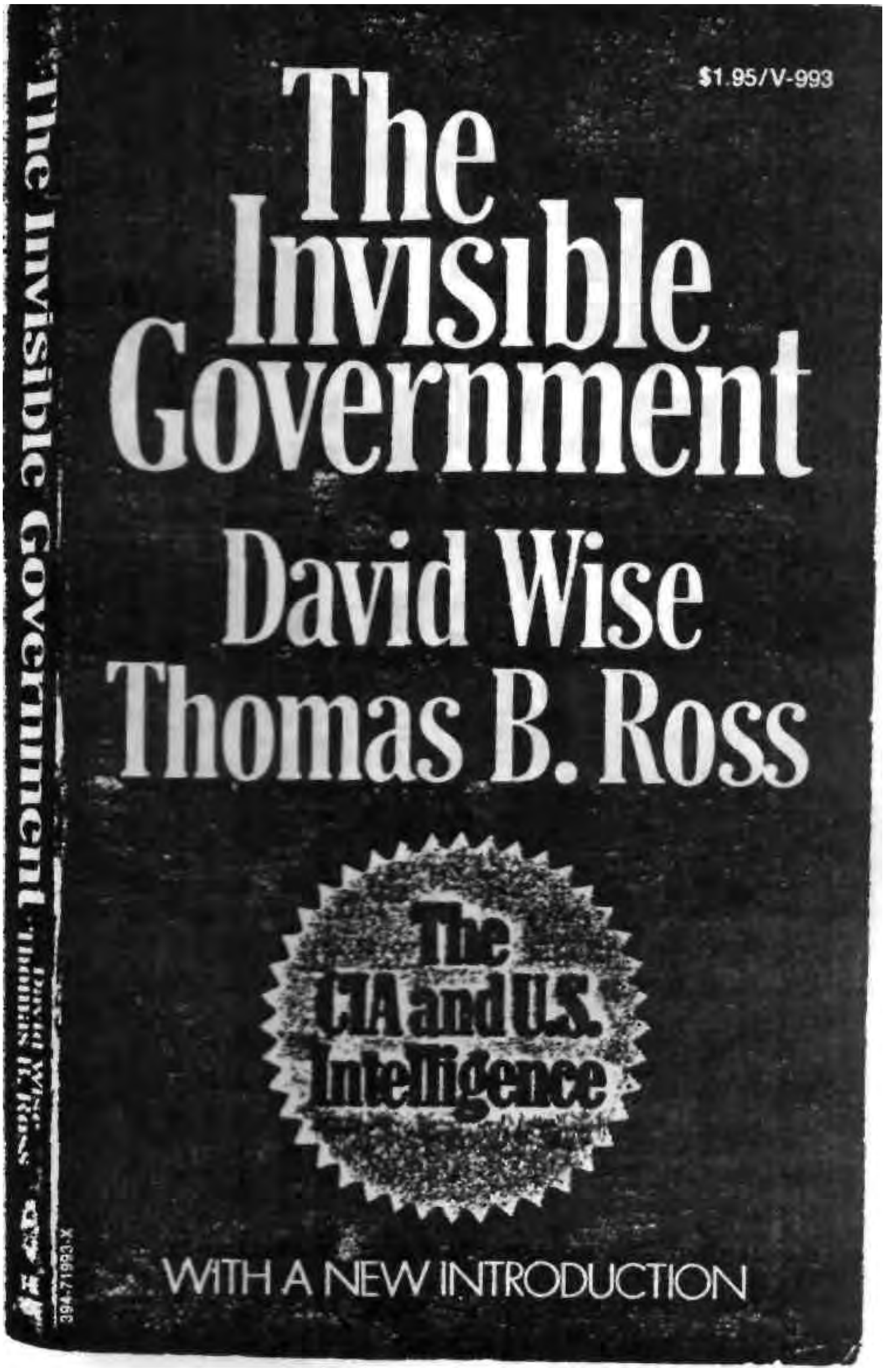
$1.95/V-993
The Invisible Government
David Wise
Thomas B. Ross
The CIA and U.S. Intelligence
WITH A NEW INTRODUCTION
The Invisible Government
David Wise
Thomas B. Ross
394-71993-X

DISENCHANTED MEN WARN WE ARE RULED BY AN INVISIBLE GOVERNMENT

Prouty, L. Fletcher. The Secret Team. Ballantine Books: N.Y.,1973.

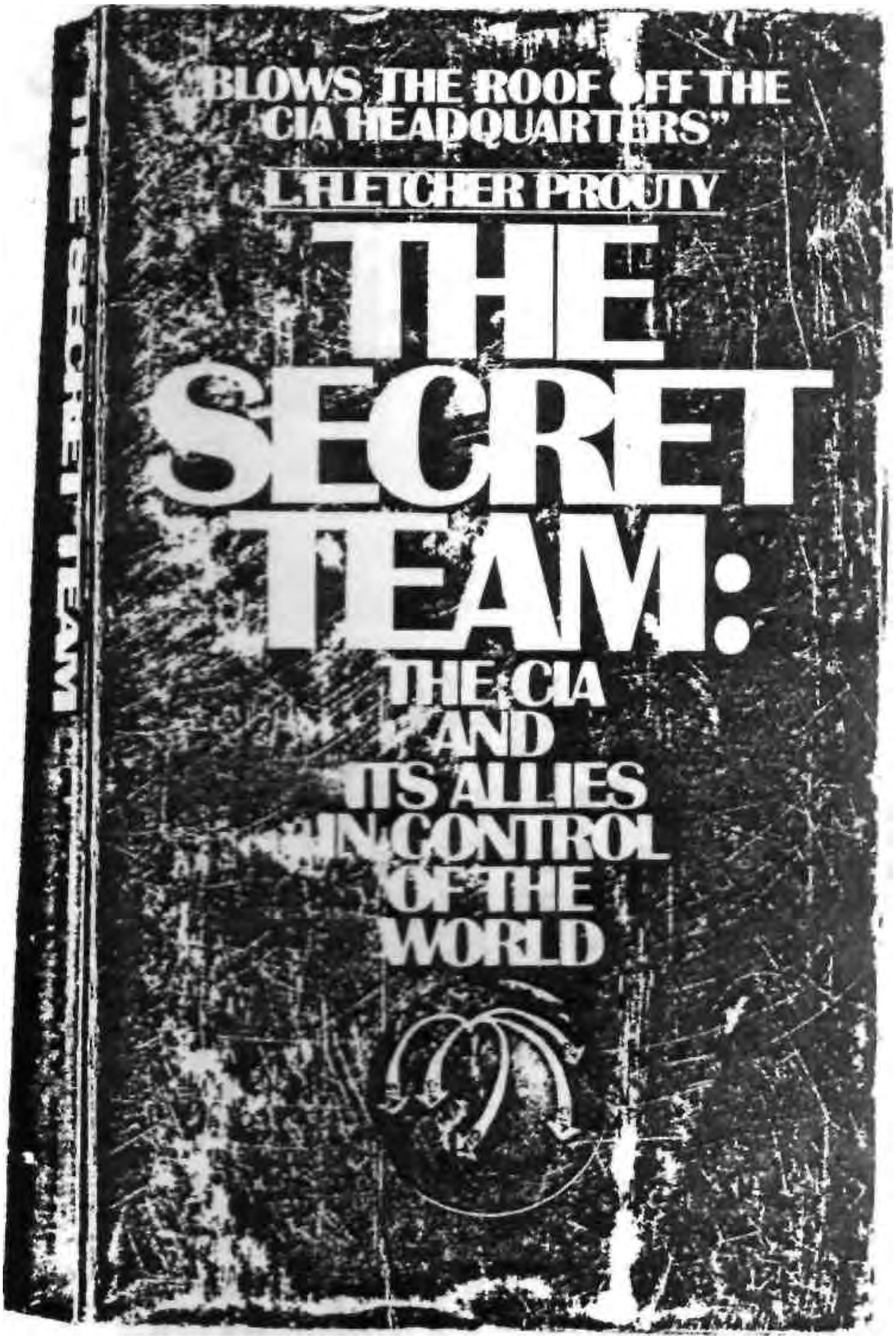
"BLOWS THE ROOF OFF THE CIA HEADQUARTERS"
L. FLETCHER PROUTY
THE SECRET TEAM:
THE CIA AND ITS ALLIES IN CONTROL OF THE WORLD
THE SECRET TEAM

A DISENCHANTED MAN WHO
WORKED WITH THE CIA WARNS
THAT THE CIA & ITS ALLIES ARE
IN CONTROL OF THE WORLD.

person becomes a slave to his own project. This is not the Plan, and if the condition continues uncorrected, physical society will collapse upon the individual, burying him beneath the debris of his own productions.

With the rise of materialism, the Secret Societies were concealed from the profane, not by any elaborate machinery of their own, but by popular disbelief. There was no place for sacred institutions in minds already dedicated to scientific skepticism. The importance of invisible principles over visible purposes and ambitions was simply ignored. Only that small minority which remained true to a higher standard of values continued to be concerned with inevitable outcome. For the majority, the physical world with its wonders was sufficient to absorb all available time and interest. The result is obvious. The physical state of man enlarged, and his ethical horizons were appropriately narrowed.

The old adversaries were gone. The power of the Church and State to plague the destiny of the average man was broken. It was no longer needful to struggle against the despotism of feudalism or the perversities of princes. The Inquisition had lost its terror, and theology was unable to impose its traditional formulas upon a down-trodden laity. But the ills that men must bear changed their appearances, not their substance. The authority of science took the place left vacant by the departing authorities of aristocracy and theology. It was still necessary for the human spirit to struggle against the intolerances of the human mind.

Personal ambitions, liberated by the new code of freedom, immediately began to dream of supremacy. A vast concept, highly competitive in principle and highly destructive in practice, perpetuated most of the instruments of the old tyranny. Siegfried had slain the dragon, but was in

grave danger of being drowned in the blood that flowed from the mortal wound. Having overcome the despotism of entrenched classes, humanity discovered the despotism in itself. It was faced with the unhappy realization that tyrannical systems are only symbols of those tyrannical instincts which exist in all creatures until they are overcome by enlightened understanding.

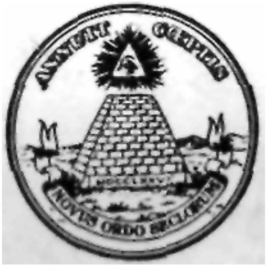

—From Hunt's History of the Seal of the United States

THE REVERSE OF THE GREAT SEAL

Professor Charles Eliot Norton of Harvard described the design thus: "The device adopted by Congress is practically incapable of effective treatment; it can hardly (however artistically treated by the designer) look otherwise than as a dull emblem of a Masonic fraternity." This is one of the important esoteric landmarks that have been conveniently ignored.

It is evident that the continued operations of the genuine Secret Societies make it unwise to describe them or identify their members. Humanity has not yet reached a state of collective security in which leadership beyond the political sphere is unnecessary. The need for guidance actually increases with the complexity of mundane affairs. All of sincere heart find consolation in the conviction that powers beyond and above human corruption continue to administer the destiny of the globe. It would be a mistake to confuse this governing body with the various sects which pretend to authority, but give no indications or proof that they can manage efficiently even their own affairs.

A SECRET GOVERNING BODY CONTROLS THE GLOBE- NOT THE VARIOUS RELIGIOUS GOVERNING BODIES THAT PRETEND TO RULE.

MANLY PALMER HALL, 33°, G..C..

ILLUSTRIOUS MANLY PALMER HALL, often called "Masonry's Greatest Philosopher," departed his earthly labors peacefully in his sleep on August 7, 1990, in Los Angeles, California. Although bom in Peterborough, Ontario,, on March 18, 1901, Brother Hall moved to California in 1919 and devoted his life to lecturing, teaching, editing, and writing on all aspects of Freemasonry.

The author of over 50 books and more than 65 smaller works, Illustrious Hall was also the founder and a past President of the Philosophical Research Society of Los Angeles, California. He is best known for writing The Lost Keys of Freemasonry (1923), The Dionysian Artificers (1926), Masonic Orders of Fraternity (1950) and, of course, his monumental Encyclopedic Outline of Masonic history, philosophy and related subjects.

A member of the Scottish Rite Bodies in the Valley of San Francisco, Brother Hall was made a Mason in San Francisco's Jewel Lodge No. 374 and received the Scottish Rite's highest honor, the Grand Cross, in 1985 because of his exceptional contributions to Freemasonry, the Scottish Rite, and the public good.

Like Grand Commander Albert Pike before him, Ill: Hall did not teach a new doctrine but was an ambassador of an ageless tradition of wisdom that enriches us to "this day. His piety, wisdom, warmth, and humility have touched the lives of millions in America and around the globe. The world is a far better place because of Manly Palmer Hall, and we are better persons for having known him and his wprk.

Excerpted from an obituary by Walter Stewart, 32°

Hall, Manly P. America's Assignment with Destiny. Philosophical Research Society: Los Angeles,CA., 1951, p. 109.

dent. The theory of freedom could be preserved by Secret Societies, but the practice of freedom required the co-operation of an enlightened people dedicated to a lofty ethical standard.

When evaluating the esoteric groups of this period, the most reliable guide is their acceptance of the responsibility of the Great Plan. Progress is not ordinarily for the advancement of the individual, but for the unfoldment of the universal project. The real Esoteric Schools still labor toward the goal of the World Commonwealth. The Plan remains Utopian, and the disciple advancing through the grades of a legitimate initiate-system is being prepared, not for personal emancipation, but as an instrument for the liberation of his fellowmen. Wherever religious inducements are personal and selfish or the devotee is encouraged to advance his own growth without consideration for others, there is something wrong with the policy of the sect. Yet, the literature of modem metaphysical movements seldom emphasizes growth as responsibility. The reader is encouraged to study mystical systems or to affiliate with organizations claiming extraordinary knowledge in the hope that he will acquire the skill to advance his own condition. Where such objectives are used to intrigue the gullible, those of sincere mind and heart are entitled to reservations.

The old Secret Societies remain as they had always been, custodians of an overconviction. They are now emphasizing the right use of privileges. Education can be conferred by schools and universities, but enlightenment must still result from internal growth. Without the proper development of his superphysical resources, the individual cannot protect his physical rights and privileges. Progress of society always demands that the human being as a person be in advance of the institutions which he creates. When leadership passes to the keeping of external enterprises, the

The Real Purpose of Masonry is the
Utopian Plan of a 1-World-Government

Bailey, Alice A. The Externalisation of the Hierarchy. Lucis Pub. Co.: NY, 1957, p.453.

mensity of planetary evil, demonstrated through the destructive war of the past few years (1914-1945), great and permanent good can come; the spiritual Hierarchy stands ready to evoke the good latent behind the work of destruction which has been done, but this can be so only if the goodwill of humanity itself is employed with adequate invocative power. If this goodwill finds expression, two things can occur: first, certain potencies and forces can be released upon the earth which will aid men's effort to attain right human relations, with its resultant effect—peace; secondly, the forces of evil will be so potently defeated that never again will they be able to wreak such universal destruction upon earth.

Years ago I said that the war which may follow this one would be waged in the field of the world religions. Such a war will not work out, however, in a similar period of extreme carnage and blood; it will be fought largely with mental weapons and in the world of thought; it will involve also the emotional realm, from the standpoint of idealistic fanaticism. This inherent fanaticism (found ever in reactionary groups) will fight against the appearance of the coming world religion and the spread of esotericism. For this struggle certain of the well-organised churches, through their conservative elements (their most powerful elements), are already girding themselves. Those sensitive to the new spiritual impacts are still far from powerful; that which is new always faces the supreme difficulty of superseding and overcoming that which is old and established. Fanaticism, entrenched theological positions, and materialistic selfishness are to be found actively organised in the churches in all continents and of all denominations. They can be expected to fight for their established ecclesiastical order, their material profit and their temporal rule, and already are making the needed preparations.

The coming struggle will emerge within the churches themselves; it will also be precipitated by the enlightened elements who exist in fair numbers already, and are rapidly growing in strength through the impact of human necessity.

A WAR IS BEING SECRETLY WAGED
TO DESTROY CONSERVATIVE
RELIGIOUS ELEMENTS.

Bailey, Foster, The Spirit of Masonry. New York, Lucis Publishing Co. , 1951, pp. 20-21

he finds that which he has sought and which has been deeply hidden yet close at hand. He must learn that the experience which 'travel in foreign countries' and the arduous task of the Builder has given, is the only thing that can fit him to join the ranks of the Master Masons of the Universe, and carry on the eternal quest in company with all brothers.

This is the revelation which the passage of the candidate through all the degrees conveys. In the first three degrees we have depicted for us the search of the individual for light, wisdom and life. In the higher degrees there is given us the varying aspects of the universal search (by the collective whole) in the various ways, and in the many lands and through the diverse religions, for the final revelation for which the so-called Blue Lodge has prepared the candidate. Subtle and illusive indications are given also of that organised and intelligent activity which is carried on by that Grand Lodge of Master Masons who have for ages watched over humanity and guided men steadily in the way of light.

Little as it may be realised by the unthinking Mason who is interested only in the outer aspects of the Craft work, the whole fabric of Masonry may be regarded as an externalisation of that inner spiritual group whose members, down the ages, have been the Custodians of the Plan, and as Those to Whom has been committed the working out of the will of God for the race of men. These Master Masons, to whom T.G.A.O.T.U. has given the design and Who are familiar with the tracing board of the G.M. on high, are called by many names and are known at different times by various appellations. They can be referred to as Christ and His Church—that band of disciples who follow in the footsteps and work under the inspiration of the great Carpenter of Nazareth. They can be known by others as the Masters of the Wisdom for They are skilled in the divine ways and have mastered the arts and sciences which Their fellowmen have yet to master. They are the Dispensers of Light and to Them has been given, by virtue of Their achievement, the privilege and the authority to pronounce the great Masonic formula: 'Let there be light' and to evoke the response: 'And there was LIGHT'.

They are therefore sometimes known as the Illuminati and can direct the searchlight of truth wherever its beams are needed to guide the pilgrim on his way. They are the Rishis of the oriental philosophy, the Builders of the occult tradition and those Individualities of outstanding wisdom, strength and beauty of character Who have guided, by precept and example, the faltering steps of blinded and ignorant humanity. They are the bestowers of the privileges and benefits of initiation, and They prepare the candidate for those great revelations and expansions of consciousness which are the reward of all who persevere in the quest, and thus learn to work in the Temple of the Lord. Step by step They guide the candidate until he has gained the right to stand in the East before the Presence, and there, before the brethren, prove himself initiate. Stage by stage They assist at the unfolding of the consciousness of the candidate until the time comes when he can 'enter into light' and, in his turn become a light-bearer, one of the Illuminati who can assist the Lodge on High in bringing humanity to light. Silently and with full understanding They watch the initiate go down to the gates of death in order to prosecute the search for the Master's Word and, in defence of his ideals is slain by those with whom he has worked. Then they too go down to the G ....wherein the Master lies, and through Their united effort and by the strength of Their joint endeavour They raise him to the fullness of life and service, giving him that secret which must suffice to guide him in his search until the time comes when the race (as one united whole) has proved itself fit to receive the true L.W. Then humanity can be admitted to that high and holy Temple where reigns the the Triune God.

The rites, ceremonies and initiations of Masonry may be regarded (and are so regarded by many) as being faint representations and symbolic rehearsals of those major spiritual initiations through which every human being must pass before achieving his goal of manifested divinity and can enter finally within the veil, leaving behind him an example of fortitude and self-control which his fellow men can emulate. It is to be noted also that there has never been a time in the long history

Bailey, Alice A. The Externalisation of the Hierarchy. Lucis Pub. Co.: NY, 1957, p. 511.

church as a teaching factor should take the great basic doctrines and (shattering the old forms in which they are expressed and held) show their true and inner spiritual significance. The prime work of the church is to teach, and teach ceaselessly, preserving the outer appearance in order to reach the many who are accustomed to church usages. Teachers must be trained; Bible knowledge must be spread; the sacraments must be mystically interpreted, and the power of the church to heal must be demonstrated.

The three main channels through which the preparation for the new age is going on might be regarded as the Church, the Masonic Fraternity and the educational field. All of them are as yet in relatively static condition, and all are as yet failing to meet the need and to respond to the inner pressure. But in all of these three movements, disciples of the Great Ones are to be found and they are steadily gathering momentum and will before long enter upon their designated task.

The Masonic Movement when it can be divorced from politics and social ends and from its present paralysing condition of inertia, will meet the need of those who can, and should, wield power. It is the custodian of the law; it is the home of the Mysteries and the seat of initiation. It holds in its symbolism the ritual of Deity, and the way of salvation is pictorially preserved in its work. The methods of Deity are demonstrated in its Temples, and under the All-seeing Eye the work can go forward. It is a far more occult organisation than can be realised, and is intended to be the training school for the coming advanced occultists. In its ceremonials lies hid the wielding of the forces connected with the growth and life of the kingdoms of nature and the unfoldment of the divine aspects in man. In the comprehension of its symbolism will come the power to cooperate with the divine plan. It meets the need of those who work on the first Ray of Will or Power.

The Church finds its mission in the helping of the devotee, in aiding the great public which is innately religious and of good will. It hides in its heart those who vibrate to

A NEW AGE LEADER SAYS MASONRY IS ONE OF 3 CHANNELS TO PREPARE FOR THE NEW AGE. IT WILL BE THE NEW AGE RELIGION.

press themselves, then will there be more intelligent and more useful work offered in cooperation with the Occult Hierarchy.

In the esoteric group, which is composed of the true spiritual esotericists found in all exoteric occult groups, in the church, by whatever name it may be called, and in Masonry you have the three paths leading to initiation. As yet they are not used, and one of the things that will eventuate—when the new universal religion has sway and the nature of esotericism is understood—will be the utilisation of the banded esoteric organisms, the Masonic organism and the Church organism as initiating centres. These three groups converge as their inner sanctuaries are approached. There is no dissociation between the One Universal Church, the sacred inner Lodge of all true Masons, and the innermost circles of the esoteric societies. Three types of men have their need met, three major rays are expressed, and the three paths to the Master are trodden, leading all three to the same portal and the same Hierophant.

It must not be forgotten that only those souls who are on the Probationary Path or the Path of Discipleship will form the nucleus of the coming world religion. It exists on the inner planes for the purpose of gathering out of all the churches those who have reached the point in evolution where they can consciously and of their own free will place their feet upon that PATH which leads to the centre of peace; who can in full awareness turn their eyes upon the Great Lord, and transmute the life of worldly endeavour into the life of service. The first detachment gathered into the coming Church will be found to be a part of the present great band of servers. These have, down the ages, been associated with the Christ in His work. Remember always the fact of the work He did in connection with the last advent, and remember likewise that in the turning of the cyclic wheel, in the evolution of the spiral, similar conditions will eventuate, the same needs arise, and the same egos incarnate that were present in the days of old in Palestine. The numbers of those associated with Him will be greatly increased,

THIS NEW AGE LEADER SAYS MASONRY IS THE UNIVERSAL RELIGION.

for all who knew Him in earlier incarnations in the ancient East, all whom He cured or taught, all who contacted Him or in any way incurred karma with Him or with the Master Jesus, will have the opportunity to cooperate at this time. Each sincere aspirant who is closely connected with the present Church organisations, who feels a close link with the Christ and who loves Him, can be practically sure that in Palestine they saw Him, knew Him and mayhap served and loved Him.

The sacraments, properly understood, serve to strengthen this link and realisation, and such a one as that of Baptism (when entered upon with understanding) will draw forth oft a response from the Great Lord Himself. It is almost as if a golden strand were directed from His heart to the heart of the servant—a strand unbreakable and unfathomable and which, with each administration of any of the holy rites in the succession of lives, becomes stronger, broader and brighter. Eventually these many strands will become reabsorbed into their source when the Body of the Christ—one of the seven Heavenly Men on the second or monadic plane—is completed in full expression, for each one linked to Him becomes, in a vital sense, a cell in His Body. This the initiate Paul truly sensed and knew. Via this strand passes the power to strengthen, to stimulate, to vivify and to bless, and this is the true apostolic succession. All true disciples are priests unto the Lord.

There is no question therefore that the work to be done in familiarising the general public with the nature of the Mysteries is of paramount importance at this time. These Mysteries will be restored to outer expression through the medium of the Church and the Masonic Fraternity, if those groups leave off being organisations with material purpose, and become organisms with living objectives. When the Great One comes with His disciples and initiates we shall have (after a period of intensive work on the physical plane beginning around the year 1940) the restoration of the Mysteries and their exoteric presentation, as a consequence of the first initiation. Why can this be so? Because the Christ,

IN PLACE OF CHRISTIANITY THE MYSTERY RELIGIONS WILL BE RESTORED BY THE CHURCH & MASONRY.

the great love ray, the second Ray of Love-Wisdom. Christ Himself works through it and by its means seeks to contact the vast Christian public. It is the leaven in His hands to leaven the whole lump, and being in a form comprehended by the people, it can touch the great masses of seeking souls.

By means of the educational work of the world, the Great Lord seeks to reach those of the intelligent public who cannot be reached by means of ceremonial and symbolism as in Masonry, or by religious means and ritual, as in the Church. It touches the masses and those in whom the intelligence aspect predominates to the lessening of the other two aspects. It aids those men who are predominantly on the third Ray of Intelligent Activity.

In all these bodies there are to be found esoteric groups who are the custodians of the inner teaching and whose uniformity in aspiration and in technique is one. These inner groups consist of occult students and of those who are in direct or occasional touch with the Masters and of those whose souls are in sufficient control so that the will of the Hierarchy may be communicated and gradually filter down to the channel of the physical brain. These groups which constitute the true inner esoteric group are many, but their membership is yet small, for the fact that a student may belong to any of the outer esoteric groups so-called is no indication of his true esoteric status. When the few who are the true esoteric students of the world know the difference between etheric and astral forms, between mental clairaudience and clairvoyance and their astral counterparts, between the elementals of thought and the elementals of nature, then will the Christ and His church have a real esoteric group on the physical plane and the outer organisations receive the needed stimulation. That is why it is necessary to work with the students at this time and train them in the nature of true occultism. When we understand better the significance of time in prevision, and of force in movement, and when we comprehend more fully the laws that control the subtler bodies, and through them therefore the laws that function on the planes whereon those bodies ex-

BY CONTROLLING EDUCATION, THOSE WHO ARE NOT CONTROLLED THRU RELIGION OR MASONRY WILL BE.

Hall, Manly P. America's Assignment with Destiny. Philosophical Research Society, 1951, p. 115.

their work be accomplished it is not sufficient that they have the needed vision. This vision must be communicated. It must be extended throughout human society until humanity redeems itself by the experience of enlightenment. The security that the world seeks cannot be bestowed; it must be earned. When a sufficient number has attained this degree of true leadership, the imperishable democracy of the sages will become a fact in the mortal sphere.

The genuine Esoteric Associations always required that disciples prepare themselves for careers of practical service. The student was expected to attain to a state of unusual skill or proficiency in some branch of learning. He was then to practice this profession or craft as a means of extending his sphere of constructive influence. He was to teach through example, enriching his chosen vocation with the overtones of enlightened religious philosophy. Thus, gradually creating a significant zone of influence, he was available for whatever task the Keepers of the Great Plan required. Practical ends can only be achieved by practical means, and the agents of the Universal Reformation must be sufficient for every emergency.

Rather than attempt to indicate modem organizations which may or may not be instruments of the Mystery system, it is more useful to recommend that each truth seeker make use of his own faculties of discrimination. The Esoteric Orders have never accepted candidates without reasonable qualifications, nor have they offered any inducements except the privilege of becoming unselfish, useful, and humble. They have never promised to gratify the whims of mortals, and have reserved the right to select in their own way those whom they believed to have the courage, the insight, and the fortitude which the magnitude of the project demanded. Human society cannot be preserved by Fraternities of the unfit, even though the members be well-intentioned. Suc-

ESOTERIC GROUPS LIKE MASONRY
REQUIRE THEIR MEMBERS TO GAIN
INFLUENCE TO PROMOTE THE PLAN

Clymer, R. Swinburne. Ancient Mystic Oriental Masonry.
Philosophical Pub. Co., Allentown, Pa.,p.5.

INTRODUCTORY.

In placing the present work before the public I have no apology whatever to offer, and this for several reasons. First, because I have been ordered to prepare it, and Second., because much of what I herein give is not new, for the simple reason that there can be nothing new in Masonry. True, many a thing, especially what concerns Mystic Masonry, has not been given to a profane people, but this is not to say that it is new, for it is not.

I know that the present work will stand unchallenged as to the Truths it contains, and this for the reason that I quote from the highest Masonic authorities in the world, that which concerns Mystic Masonry comes direct from him who knows and who has no superior in his work.

I also know that I will not be accused of stealing, for the very good reason that I give credit for every single quotation, unless it was changed. With these facts before me I can feel well satisfied to let it go forward.

There are several reasons why this book should go before the people, and especially before Masons themselves. Too little is known by my Brother Masons concerning that Order to which they have the honor to belong, but which some of them do not honor and the

THIS BOOK WAS WRITTEN ON ORDER OF THE HIGHEST MASONIC AUTHORITY.

Clymer, R. Swinburne. Ancient Mystic Oriental Masonry.
Philosophical Pub. Co., Allentown, Pa.,p. 122.

clares to be the law of Masonry. And this was wisely done, for it is evident that no law less universal could have been appropriately selected for the government of an institution whose prominent characteristic is its universality.

219. "The precepts of Jesus could not have been made obligatory on a Jew; a Christian would have denied the sanctions of the Koran; a Mohammedan must have rejected the laws of Moses; and a disciple of Zoroaster would have turned from all to the teachings of his Zeud Avesta. The universal law of nature, which the authors of the old Charges have properly called the moral law, because it is, as Conybeare remarks, 'a perfect collection of all those moral doctrines and precepts which have a foundation in the nature and reason of things,' is therefore the only law suited, in every respect, to be adopted as the Masonic code."*

220. "So broad is the religion of Masonry, and so carefully are all sectarian tenets excluded from the system, that the Christian, the Jew, and the Mohammedan, in all their numberless sects and divisions, may, and do harmoniously combine in its moral and intellectual work with the Buddhist, the Parsee. the Confucian, and the worshiper of Deity under every form."**

221. And why is this true! Because the Vishnu of the Brahminical Trinity, the Isis of the Egyptian and the Holy Ghost of the Christians and symbolized in

---

*Mackey, "Masonic Jurisprudence."

**Webb's "Monitor of Freemasonry."

the Roman Catholic Church, by the Madonna, is the Mother Principle of every living thing in the universe, and, when a man or woman has their spiritual mind awakened they have a love for everything that lives and breathes, and they look on every object in Nature as the outward manifestation of the Divine Living Principle within. God is in all, and no matter at what Shrine we worship, God is there.

222. "The whole design of Freemasonry as a Speculative science is the investigation of Divine Truths. To this great object everything else is subsidiary. The Mason is, from the time of his initiation aa an Entered Apprentice, to the time at which he receives the full fruition of Masonic light, an investigator—a laborer in the quarry and the temple—whose reward is to be truth, and all the ceremonies and traditions of the order tend to this ultimate design. In Speculative Freemasonry there is an advancement from a lower to a higher state—from darkness to light—from death to life—from error to truth.

223. "The Mason living and working in the world as his lodge, must seek to raise himself out of it to that eminence which surmounts it, where alone he can find divine truth."*

224. "Every Speculative Mason is familiar with the fact that the East, aa the source of material light, is a symbol of his own order, which professes to contain within its bosom the pure light of truth. Aa, in

---

*Mackey, "Manual of the Lodge."

THE RELIGION OF MASONRY IS A UNIVERSAL RELIGION.

217. "Freemasonry does not profesS to interfere with the religions opinions of its members. It asks only for A declaration of that simple and universal faith, in which men of all nations and all sects agree—the belief in a God and in his superintending providence. Beyond this, it does not venture, but leaves the minds of its disciples, on other and sectarian points, perfectly untrammelled. This is the only religious qualification required by a candidate, but this is most strictly demanded. The religion, then, of Masonry, is pure theism, on which its different members engraft their own peculiar opinions; but they are not permitted to introduce them into the lodge, or to connect their truths or falsehood with the truth of Masonry."*

218. "Every Mason," says the old Charges of 1722, "is obliged by his tenure to obey the moral law." Now, this moral law is not to be considered as confined to the decalogue of Moses, within which narrow limits these ecclesiastical writers technically restrain it, but rather as alluding to what is called Lex Naturae, or the law of nature. This law of nature has been defined by an able, but not recent writer on this subject, to be "The will of God, relating to human actions, grounded on the moral differences of things; and because discoverable by natural light, obligatory upon all mankind."** This is the "Moral law," to which the old Charge already cited refers, and which it de-

---

*Mackey," Masonic Lexicon."

**Grove, "System of Moral Philosophy."

THE RELIGION OF MASONRY IS PURE THEISM.

these pearls of great price were guarded and handed on with alight modifications into the possession of those grand early Christians, the Gnostics, the so-called heretics; then straight from the Gnostic schools of Syria and Egypt to their successors, the Manichaeans, and from these through the Paulicians, Albigenses, and Templars to the Hermetics, the Rosicrucians, and other less powerful Secret Fraternities—these Occult traditions, or rather, Occult Truths, have been bequeathed to the Mystic bodies of our own times. Persecuted by Protestants on one side and by Catholics on the other, the history of Mysticism, outside of the Rosicrucian Fraternity, is a history of martyrdom."

123. "These principal streams of religious thought can be traced distinctly as we struggle through the labyrinth of evidence, and these may not inappropriately be termed the Petrine, Pauline, and Johannine doctrines, the last being the fountain-head of all the later Christian Mystical heresies. The Johannine doctrine caused great excitement in the fourteenth century. It must be borne in mind that the true Occultism, the real Mysticism, is essentially religious in its nature, and students must not be surprised to find that some of the historical religious sects—many of the principal secret societies take St. John as their patron saint, notably is this the case with many of the Masonic bodies—had their foundation in Occultism and Mysticism before stated, the Occult doctrines of the Gnostics were heirlooms and sacred traditions from a very distant past, and when the early Christian era dawned, the human ram had long been plunged in the darkening and materializing tendencies of the Black Ages. Soon the Gnosis was rejected by the orthodox church, and the Sacred and Secret teachings of the Great Master, Jesus, become materialized; they have, however, never been lost, and traces of them can be discerned from epoch to epoch.

124. "The Masonic movement, to state it generally, was at first a sort of broad, semi-mystic and largely moral movement, worked from certain unknown, to Them, centers, and deriving its origin from the Ancient and not generally known basis.

125. It never had anything to do with Operative Masonry or the Builders' Guild. Masonry was founded on the Ancient Wisdom Religion, and when founded was not known as Masonry.

126. Its basis was, and is, unknown to all of those who do not recognize a definitely spiritual guidance in the practical, mental, and moral developments which from time to time change the surface by the introduction of new factors into the evolving processes of which life consists. Researches into Masonic literature must be made in many languages and countries before this view can be firmly established for the general world, but to students of Mysticism and who are also students of Masonry it becomes more and more apparent that the movement which is generally termed Masonic had its roots in that true Mysticism which originated, as an Ideal effort, from the Spiritual Hierarchy which guides the evolution of the world; and that, however much the branches may be separated from the root-idea, there is nevertheless a Mystic

Masonry is not from Builder's Guilds
of operative Masons

teaching in Masonry for those who will seek below the surface.

127. "The Ancients of Atlantis preserved not less than sixteen distinct Secret Orders, all of which constituted—what was known at the time of the advent of Poisedon to the Kingdom of Atlantis—as the Mystic Brother or the Great White Circle. What is now the Fraternity of the Rosy Cross was recognized as the very highest of these Orders, by virtue of their knowledge of the Secret Forces throughout Nature. This Order of men ruled the Destiny of nations and all Institutions.*

128. "With the destruction of Atlantis,** this perfection of order and organization was severed and history from this event only conveys scattering glimpses of these various Orders—all of which, while preserving some remote impressions of their former relationship, have lost trace one of the other."

129. Says John A. Weiss, M.D., in his "Obelisk and Freemasonry:" "According to our reading of history, the Priesthoods of Belus, or Baal in Assyria, of Osiris in Egypt, of Jehova in Palestine, of Jupiter in Greece and Borne, of Ahura-Mazda in Persia, or Brahma in India, and of Teutates in Britain, were Primitive Secret Societies, who instructed and governed the primitive families and races. It little matters whether we call the members of those priesthoods Belites, Pastophori, Levites, Curetes, Mage, Brahmins, or Druids; they were connected by Secret Ties, and intercommunicated from the Indus to the Tiber, from the Nile to the Thames. Hence there ever has been, is, and ever will be Freemasonry on our planet. Masonry was ever more or less connected with priesthoods till about the thirteenth century of our era, when Masons declared themselves Freimaurer (Freemasons). Since about that period priesthoods have ever denounced and persecuted Freemasonry."

130. "A thoughtful consideration of our principal ceremony irresistibly leads us to the doctrine that was typified by the Pastos in the King's Chamber of the great Pyramid, and connects with the main characteristic of all the Mysteries, which embodied the highest truths then known to the Illuminated ones.

131. "The twelfth century witnessed an outbreak of Mystic symbolism, perhaps unparalleled, in our era, and gave us the religious legends of the Holy Grail, which point to an Eastern origin ; this period coincides with the greatest popularity of the Templars, whose fall is contemporaneous with the decadence noticed "by the lecturer.

132. Without pressing the argument, I may suggest that some portion, at least, of our symbolism may have come through a Templar source, Romanist, yet deeply tinged with Gnosticism; while at a later date the Lollards, inheritors of Manichteism, and who were but one of the many religo-political societies with which Europe was honeycombed, possibly introduced or revived some of these teachings. One thing is certain, that satisfactory renderings of our symbols can only be obtained by a study of Eastern Mysticism; Kabal-

---

**See "The Philosophy of Fire."

*See "The Rosicrucians; their Teachings."

MASONRY IS CONNECTED TO THE ANCIENT SYSTEMS OF PRIESTHOOD.

earth will then sink down into Duzakh, and become for three periods a place of punishment for the wicked. Then, by degrees, all will be pardoned, even Ahriman and the Devs, and admitted to the regions of bliss, and thus there will be a new Heaven and a new earth."

In the doctrines of Lamaism also, we find, obscured, and partly concealed in fiction, fragments of the primitive truth. For, according to that faith, "There is to be a final judgment before ESLIK KHAN : The good are to be admitted to Paradise, the bad to be banished to hell, where there are eight regions burning hot and eight freezing cold."

In the Mysteries, wherever they were practised, was taught that truth of the primitive revelation, the existence of One Great Being, Infinite and pervading the Universe, Who was there worshipped without superstition; and His marvellous nature, essence, and attributes taught to the Initiates; while the vulgar attributed His works to Secondary Gods, personified, and isolated from Him in fabulous independence.

These truths were covered from the common people as with a veil; and the Mysteries were carried into every country, that, without disturbing the popular beliefs, truth, the arts, and the sciences might be known to those who were capable of understanding them, and maintaining the true doctrine incorrupt; which the people, prone to superstition and idolatry, have in no age been able to do; nor, as many strange aberrations and superstitions of the present day prove, any more now than heretofore. For we need but point to the doctrines of so many sects that degrade the Creator to the rank, and assign to Him the passions of humanity, to prove that now, as always, the old truths must be committed to a few, or they will be overlaid with fiction and error, and irretrievably lost.

Though Masonry is identical with the Ancient Mysteries, it is so in this qualified sense; that it presents but an imperfect image of their brilliancy; the ruins only of their grandeur, and a system that has experienced progressive alterations, the fruits of social events and political circumstances. Upon leaving Egypt, the Mysteries were modified by the habits of the different nations among whom they were introduced. Though originally more moral and political than religious, they soon became the heritage, as it were, of the priests, and essentially religious, though in reality

limiting the sacerdotal power, by teaching the intelligent laity the folly and absurdity of the creeds of the populace. They were therefore necessarily changed by the religious systems of the countries into which they were transplanted. In Greece, they were the Mysteries of Ceres; in Rome, of Bona Dea, the Good Goddess; in Gaul, the School of Mars; in Sicily, the Academy of the Sciences; among the Hebrews, they partook of the rites and ceremonies of a religion which placed all the powers of government, and all the knowledge, in the hands of the Priests and Levites. The pagodas of India, the retreats of the Magi of Persia and Chaldca, and the pyramids of Egypt, were no longer the sources at which men. drank in knowledge. Each people, at all informed, had its Mysteries. After a time the Temples of Greece and the School of Pythagoras lost their reputation, and Freemasonry took their place.

Masonry, when properly expounded, is at once the interpretation of the great book of nature, the recital of physical and astronomical phenomena, the purest philosophy, and the place of deposit, where, as in a Treasury, are kept in safety all the great truths of the primitive revelation, that form the basis of all religions. In the modern Degrees three things are to be recognized: The image of primeval times, the tableau of the efficient causes of the Universe, and the book in which are written the morality of all peoples, and the code by which they must govern themselves if they would be prosperous.

The Kabalistic doctrine was long the religion of the Sage and the Savant; because, like Freemasonry, it incessantly tends toward spiritual perfection, and the fusion of the creeds and Nationalities of Mankind. In the eyes of the Kabalist, all men are his brothers; and their relative ignorance is, to him, but a reason for instructing them. There were illustrious Kabalists among the Egyptians and Greeks, whose doctrines the Orthodox Church has accepted; and among the Arabs were many, whose wisdom was not slighted by the Mediaeval Church.

The Sages proudly wore the name of Kabalists. The Kabalah embodied a noble philosophy, pure, not mysterious, but symbolic. It taught the doctrine of the Unity of God, the art of knowing and explaining the essence and operations of the Supreme Being, of spiritual powers and natural forces, and of determining their action by symbolic figures; by the arrangement of the alphabet,

MASONRY IS IDENTICAL TO THE ANCIENT MYSTERY RELIGIONS.

were anxious to preserve, among themselves, the knowledge which they had acquired."*

107. "The Dionysia, or Mysteries of Bacchus, were intimately connected with those of Ceres and perhaps, still more with Freemasonry; the rites came from Egypt, and there, according to Plutarch Ceres, was the Egyptian Isia, and Bacchus was Osiris.

108. "The Dionysian artificers or architects were an association of scientific men, who were incorporated by command of the Kings of Pergamus into a corporate body, some three hundred years B. C. They had the city of Teos given to them. The members of this association which was intimately connected with the Dionysian mysteries, were distinguished from the uninitiated inhabitants of Teos, by their Science, and by words and signs by which they could recognize their Brethren of the Order. Like Freemasons they were divided into Lodges which were characterized by different names.

109. "Such is the nature of that association of architects, who erected those splendid edifices in Ionia, whose ruins even afford us instructions, while they excite our surprise. If it be possible to prove the identity of any two societies, from the coincidence of their external forms, we are authorized to conclude that the Fraternity of the Ionian architects and the Fraternity of Freemasons, are exactly the same; and as the former practiced the mysteries of Bacchus and Ceres, several of which we have shown to be similar to the mysteries of Masonry, we may safely affirm, that, in

---

* M. Lawrie.

MASONRY IS CLAIMED TO BE THE PAGAN MYSTERY RELIGIONS BY MASONS.

Diego:CA, Supreme Grand Lodge of AMORC, 1929,p.315.

that it would be inconsistent and improper and, therefore, impossible in the light of his understanding and development. Several thousand men and women, among the others who unite with the Rosicrucian Order every year, before becoming Rosicrucian students spend large sums of money in the purchase of such books with the hope of economically and conveniently learning the principles which they believe will produce the utmost benefit in their lives. Such students finally discover that the purchase of these books becomes a costly proposition and that more money can be spent in this way in one year than in several years in the proper manner of study. They find that they receive no benefits but are becoming constantly confused by the differences of opinions on the part of these authors and by the continual issuance of new books with new ideas written to tempt the seeker to continue to buy books in the hope mat his search will eventually come to an end. The more alluring and tempting and the more inclusive are the titles of any of these so-called Rosicrucian books, the surer one can be that the books contain nothing of real value and are designed solely to appeal to the susceptibility of the unguided seeker.

Those books which claim to be an exposition of the Rosicrucian mysteries or a presentation of the Rosicrucian rites and rituals, or of the secret doctrines

of the Rosicrucians, are not only misleading in their titles, but deceptive in the claims set forth, inasmuch as such books do not and cannot contain what is claimed for them.

Attention is called to a secdon of the history of the organization published in this book, which explains how and why a number of pseudo-Rosicrucian movements have attempted to carry on the impression of being a part of the Rosicrucian Order by the adoption of misleading names or by simulating emblems while doing nothing more than publishing and selling useless books.* Everyone with common sense will appreciate the fact that a book claiming to be a complete presentation of the secret teachings and secret ritual of the Freemasons, would be unworthy of purchase at any price, for one would know instinctively that the contents of the book could not possibly fulfill the claim made by the title. The same may be said of books dealing with the subject of Rosicrucian philosophy.

No. 63

Q. Is it not true that the Rosicrucian Order in America and Europe has published some books dealing with Rosicrucian doctrine, even though they say that the Rosicrucian teachings are never published in any public books?

---

* See Chapter VI.

THE LEADER OF THE MARTINIST
ORDER OF MASONS & THE
ROSICRUCIANS SAYS THAT COMMON
SENSE SHOULD TELL US THAT
BOOKS DON'T REVEAL ALL THE SECRETS OF MASONRY.

to supplant. Hence Free-Masonry, vulgarly imagined to have begun with the Dionysian Architects or the German Stone-workers, adopted Saint John the Evangelist as one of its patrons, associating with him, in order not to arouse the suspicions of Rome, Saint John the Baptist, and thus covertly proclaiming itself the child of the Kabalah and Essenism together."

[For the Johannism of the Adepts was the Kabalah of the earlier Gnostics, degenerating afterward into those heretical forms which Gnosticism developed, so that even Manes had his followers among them. Many adopted his doctrines of the two Principles, the recollection of which is perpetuated by the handle of the dagger and the tesselated pavement or floor of the Lodge, stupidly called "the Indented Tessel," and represented by great hanging tassels, when it really means a tesserated floor (from the Latin tessera) of white and black lozenges, with a necessarily denticulated or indented border or edging. And wherever, in the higher Degrees, the two colors white and black, are in juxtaposition, the two Principles of Zoroaster and Manes are alluded to. With others the doctrine became a mystic Pantheism, descended from that of the Brahmins, and even pushed to an idolatry of Nature and hatred of every revealed dogma.

[To all this the absurd reading of the established Church, taking literally the figurative, allegorical, and mythical language of a collection of Oriental books of different ages, directly and inevitably led. The same result long after followed the folly of regarding the Hebrew books as if they had been written by the unimaginative, hard, practical intellect of the England of James the First and the bigoted stolidity of Scottish Presbyterianism.]

"The better to succeed and win partisans, the Templars sympathized with regrets for dethroned creeds and encouraged the hopes of new worships, promising to all liberty of conscience and a new orthodoxy that should be the synthesis of all the persecuted creeds."

[It is absurd to suppose that men of intellect adored a monstrous idol called Baphomet, or recognized Mahomet as an inspired prophet. Their symbolism, invented ages before, to conceal what it was dangerous to avow, was of course misunderstood by those who were not adepts, and to their enemies seemed to be pantheistic. The calf of gold, made byAaron for the Israelites.was but one of the oxen under the layer of bronze, and the Karobim on the Propitiatory, misunderstood. The symbols of the wise always become the idols of the ignorant multitude. What the Chiefs of the Order really believed and taught, is indicated to the Adepts by the hints contained in the high Degrees of Free-Masonry, and by the symbols which only the Adepts understand...................

[The Blue Degrees are but the outer court or portico of the Temple. Part of the symbols are displayed there to the Initiate, but he is intentionally misled by false interpretations. It is not intended that he shall understand them; but it is intended that he shall imagine he understands them. Their true explication is reserved for the Adepts, the Princes of Masonry. The whole body of the Royal and Sacerdotal Art was hidden so carefully, centuries since, in the High Degrees, as that it is even yet impossible to solve many of the enigmas which they contain. It is well enough for the mass of those called Masons, to imagine that all is contained in the Blue Degrees; and whoso attempts to undeceive them will labor in vain, and without any true reward violate his obligations as an Adept. Masonry is the veritable Sphinx, buried to the head in the sands heaped round it by the ages.]

"The seeds of decay were sown in the Order of the Temple at its origin. Hypocrisy is a mortal disease. It had conceived a great work which it was incapable of executing, because it knew neither humility nor personal abnegation, because Rome was then invincible, and because the later Chiefs of the Order did not comprehend its mission. Moreover, the Templars were in general uneducated, and capable only of wielding the sword, with no qualifications for governing, and at need enchaining, that queen of the world called Opinion." [The doctrines of the Chiefs would, if expounded to the masses, have seemed to them the babblings of folly. The symbols of the wise are the idols of the vulgar, or else as meaningless as the hieroglyphics of Egypt to the nomadic Arabs. There must always be a common-place interpretation for the mass of Initiates, of the symbols that are eloquent to the Adepts.]

"Hugues de Payens himself had not that keen and far-sighted intellect nor that grandeur of purpose which afterward distinguished the military founder of another soldiery that became, formidable to kings. The Templars were unintelligent and therefore unsuccessful Jesuits.

"Their watchword was, to become wealthy, in order to buy the world. They became so, and in 1312 they possessed in Europe

THE HIGHER DEGREES DECEIVE THE
LOWER DEGREES OF MASONS.

people and subject them by intellectual bondage and servitude to a foreign potentate. That "World Power" is far better organized than we are; is far more numerous than we; is richer, more shrewd, more ambitious, more aggressive, and more unscrupulous than we. It has attacked our Public Schools as being "schools without religion" and intended "to turn the people into refined Pagans." Listen to this by the Rev. Michael Muller: "The object, then, of these Godless, irreligious Public Schools is to spread among the people the worst of religions, the one religion, the religion which pleases most hardened adulterers and criminals—the religion of irrational animals. The moral character of our Public Schools in many of our cities has sunk so low, that even courtesans have disguised themselves as school-girls in order the more surely to ply their foul vocation."

Yet, in some of our larger cities, like Chicago and Boston, seventy-five per cent of the teachers of the Public Schools are members of that "World Power."

Wrapped in the seamless robe of the Savior for which it gambled at the foot of the Cross, that "World Power" comes to us in the name of Jesus, garbles and twists His teaching, and proclaims itself His sole representative on earth. Yet, when it considers itself safe, it throws aside the garb of religion and reveals its true nature as a gigantic political organization, determined to crush individual liberty and freedom of thought, and by superstition, ignorance, and fear, to bring all peoples into subjection to its tyrannic will.

Don't fool yourselves by thinking that the danger is past because as a result of the last election one of its craftiest agents has been taken out of the public service, and a 32° Mason placed in the Presidential Chair. There is danger, and it is very real and near. That "World Power" has_ muzzled nearly all our press. It has captured or poisoned our sources of information.

It is organizing an army of Knights who are sworn to bring our Country to the knees of their Pontiff in humble obedience.

Before "Freemasonry as a World. Power" there looms the inevitable struggle with.... this superior foe-superior in numbers, wealth and strategy. Shall we face the coming conflict like Shakespeare's Hamlet, nerveless and bewailing—

The time is out of joint: Oh, cursed spite
That ever I was born to set it right.

Or, shall we not rather cry, like the English poet, Rupert Brooke, who sailed from Gallipoli to the front and gave up his life for liberty, in the late war:

"Now, God be thanked who hath matched
us with this hour!"

We need to face the future with intelligent fortitude, calm faith and resolute wills. Let not the odds against us daunt us. Let us catch the inspiration of that magnificent exclamation of the heroic Fichte:

> I raise my head to the threatening rock, the raging flood, and the fiery tempest, and cry, "I am Eternal and defy your might; break all upon me, and thou Earth and thou Heaven, mingle in the wild tumult; and all ye elements foam and fret yourselves, and crush in your conflict the last atom of the body I call mine, my Will, secure in its own firm purpose, shall soar unwavering and hold over the wreck of the universe!"

Then "Freemasonry as a World Power" will, stand revealed, as unconquered and unconquerable.

Most base is he who, 'neath the shade
Of Freedom's ensign plies Corruption's trade.
—T. Moore.

In 1921 Masons saw the world as a struggle between two world powers-Masonry and the Vatican

New Age Magazine, The Official Organ of the Supreme Council of 33
A & A Scottish Rite, Sept. 1929, Washington,D.C.,p.389.

WHENCE AND WHITHER?

By C. A. OPPENBORN, 32°

The Masonic Order is held to be the greatest force of constructive initiative in existence

WHAT IS the impelling force that is drawing men in such large numbers to Freemasonry? In an age of progressive endeavor, bristling with inventive and scientific genius, focused continually on bringing to light something of material benefit to the human race; what is there about this great Brotherhood, which had its origin and won many of its laurels in the remotest times of antiquity, that it so universally appeals to men today?

POTENCY AND INFLUENCE

How came men to find the seed for the inestimable Institution of Freemasonry, and the inspiration to generate it to a practical fruition? What gave them the perspective that in its ameliorating cement was to be found the ultimate hope of the world ? What made them, when humanity was still wearing its swaddling clothes, provide the measure for its beneficent bounty? At every hand we come in contact with the workings of the silent potency and expanding influence of its invigorating leaven. Everywhere we behold the magnificent edifices it has in the building, so that the imagination is taxed with wonder and admiration.

With its origin wrapped in the profoundest secrecy, it should not surprise anyone that Freemasonry still is as much of an enigma to many of its initiates as it was in olden times. While the modern mind has become capable of penetrating some of the veils of its deepest mysteries, the fact that it not yet has fully come into the possession of the Grand Arcanum—how its philosophy laid hold on the human and in spite of strenuous persecution maintained an almost unbroken sway of perpetuity during the now silently slumbering ages—should encourage and stimulate in the initiate a thorough mastery of the truths of its scientific formula.

WISDOM TO BE GAINED

While many students of Freemasonry pride themselves of being possessed of the secrets of their Brotherhood, the genuine adept is not so sanguine about having found the kernel of its fundamental philosophy and still is groping for more Light. The true Mason feels that the Institution yet holds unlocked in its majestic bosom from mortal the key to the magnetic charm and suasion that has led so many to and is holding them in contentment at its Altars.

The true Mason feels that, in accordance with its Ancient Formula, Freemasonry only from time to time unlocks as it sees fit, from its storehouse of Wisdom, the Truths required for the human needs and not more of them than can be borne. He has an abiding assurance that its Great Founder never intended that mortality should see Freemasonry in the luster of its full splendor and glory.

Has Freemasonry, then, a spiritual conception only? __ Is its objective but the solidifying into a beautiful Utopia the wonderful Infinity of the First Cause and the kaleidoscopic finiteness of its mortal, human creatures? Is. its mission solely directed to the establishment of the long-heralded and hoped-for Kingdom of the Brotherhood of Man? And has its Founder for these reasons but allowed the human occasional glimpses of some of the inner beauties that ever are sweeping it onward and upward; that ever are dazzling the physical vision from its distant snow-capped elevations; that ever is compel-

Masonry is the "greatest force" for what Masons see as good, & has more than just Utopia and brotherhood in store for mankind.

sole claim to greatness, to recognition, is its past.

Masonry's greatness is not in the antiquity of its beginnings, neither in its conservatism, but rather in the fact that it has always been a leader of thought and action.

Its members have been the world's pioneer corps, clearing away the dense growth of ignorance, bridging the turbid waters of superstition and fanaticism, blazing ways of enlightenment whereon the mighty army of humanity...might move to nobler achievements, to grander victories.

The great leaders in Masonry as well as in the secular world have been men who, though clinging tenaciously to certain great principles, were quick to see and take advantage of everything in the line of progress and development. Theirs was no blind conservatism holding fast to a dead past, but a glorious faith in the possibilities of the future, a faith, that, like the star in the East which led the Magi of old to the lowly birthplace of the Redeemer has led mankind under the leadership of many a Moses through the wilderness of pain and travail and bitter opposition into the bright light of twentieth century civilization.

I repeat, a comprehensive understanding of the history of Masonry leads inevitably to the conclusion that not through conservatism has it most served the world, but rather through its spirit of unrest, its utter abhorrence of unnecessary restraint, its abiding love for liberty, its unconquerable desire to progress away from the old to the new and better conditions.

Wherever the conflict has been waged between the old and the new, between a narrow conservatism and real progress, our Masonic brethren have been found on the right side, witness the members of St. Andrew's lodge of the Green, Dragon who threw the tea into Boston. harbor.

We must not be content to abide in the glory of bygone days. There is need today of just such men as have made Masonry great in the past. We cannot rest on our laurels, but following in the footsteps of our sires we must make Masonry of the twentieth century as potent a factor for good as it has been in the centuries that have gone.— Masonic Tidings.

Antiquity Admitted a Century Ago.

An old book published in London in the early part of the last century contains the following in regard to Freemasonry:

"This very ancient society is so called, either from some extraordinary knowledge of Masonry, of which they are supposed to be masters, or because the first founders of this society were persons of this profession. They are now very considerable, both on account of their numbers and the rank they hold in society, being found in every country in Europe, as well as North America; and they consist principally of persons of merit and consideration. They make no small pretentions to antiquity, for they claim a standing of some thousands of years. What the design of their institution is, seems still in some measure a secret.

"The members are said to be admitted into the fraternity by being put into possession of a great number of secrets, called the Mason's word, which have been religiously kept from age to age. In a treatise on Masonry, published in 1792, by William Preston, grand master of the Lodge of Antiquity, the origin of Masonry is traced from the creation. Ever since symmetry began, and bar-

Masons are aware that Masonry has been behind revolutions and social change.

New Age Magazine. The Official Organ of the Supreme Council of 33
A & A Scottish Rite, July, 1922, Washington,D.C.

CORRESPONDENCE

Pine Grove, W. Va., May 18, 1922.

The New Age,

Washington, D. C.

Perhaps you do not want to be bothered, but I just sort o' feel, after reading your May number, that you ought to be told that there's one Mason here in the hills who believes you've got the right "dope" in your magazine.

Somehow or other I became a Scottish Rite Mason after I'd somehow or other become a Blue Lodge Man. And somehow or other I got into reading the NEW AGE when it came along—not dumping it into the waste basket. And I don't know whether I agree with it in beliefs or policies or whether it agrees with me. Anyway I go through every number and underline the pointed sentences, and pass them on to my friends, and wait patiently for another month to bring some other good things for thinking Masons.

Here's what I like in the May number: "Many of the new members see no plans on the trestle board for them to work on other than to attend the social features, and comparatively few assist in the conferring of degrees . . . and the tendency seems to be towards taking an active part and interest in all measures that have for their objects the best interests of the land." That's from "A Growing Unrest" under Notes and Comments.

What's the use of building up an organization like Masonry has built up, and inspiring men as Masonry has inspired them, and then leaving the whole stand idle and useless at a time when our country needs just what Masonry can give it? Let's use this great machine.

Yours fraternally,

PAUL BALWANZ.

INTERESTING ITEMS GATHERED FROM VARIOUS SOURCES

CATERING TO THE JESUITS ?

The Sacramento Church Federation of Sacramento, Calif., sends us a copy of a letter written to The San Francisco Call, concerning a certain article printed in one of its issues. As it is not at all bad reading we herewith reproduce it. We venture to believe that The Call did not print it.

Editor, "The Call,"
San Francisco, Calif.

DEAR SIR:

In Jane Doe's " Long, Long Trail" in the May 23 Call, occurs, in a reference to the Y. M. C. A. and the Y. W. C. A., these words: "not too much insistence on the word Christian."

There is a world-wide campaign, inspired, we believe, from Jesuit sources, suggesting the elimination of the name of Christ from both these useful organizations, each born of Protestantism. One hears such suggestions in Edinboro, as well as in San Francisco; in Sydney, in London, as well as in New York. Are you unconsciously echoing their propaganda?

The example of Jesus constitutes the very life of both these institutions. A Christian who took The Christ as his model founded the first "Y." Remove the Christ spirit from the "Y" and it will soon degenerate into an institution ossified with materialism, officered by seekers for soft jobs.

You suggest facilitating contacts among mate-seeking young business folk. Do you know that the most successful San Francisco institution of this land is managed by a Protestant Christian Church, that, as a product of its "beau parlors," as its girls call them, have come scores of happy marriages; that this institution, costing about a quarter of a million, was given to San Francisco business women devoutly by its donor, in the name of The Christ, to be administered by His Church?

On the other nand, partly because of the lack of such mating facilities, as you wisely suggest, society has the problem of the unmarried mothers. Do you know that these in Northern California gravitate for protection to another institution, again founded by a Protestant Christian woman, and managed for many years by another, the daughter of a multimillionaire who, in Christ's name, left her life of luxury to care for these poor girls, continuing until she broke down from overwork?

Have you ever dared similarly to criticize a Catholic institution? We venture this question because the Protestant Orphan Asylum of our city was forced, under Jesuit threats to cut off government support, to change its name to "Sacramento Orphanage Farm." Are Protestants found doing such things?

Masons are encouraged to use Masonry
as a force for change.

makers, for they shall be called the children of God I First be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift at the altar. Give to him that asketh thee, and from him that would borrow of thee turn not away I Love your enemies; bless them that curse you; do good to. them that hate you; and pray for them which despitefully use you and persecute you! All things whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye also unto them; for this is the law and the Prophets! He that taketh not his cross, and followeth after Me, is not worthy of Me. A new commandment I give unto you, that ye love one another: as I have loved you, that ye also love one another: by this shall all know that ye are My disciples. Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friend."

The Gospel of Love He sealed with His life. The cruelty of the Jewish Priesthood, the ignorant ferocity of the mob, and the Roman indifference to barbarian blood, nailed Him to the cross, and He expired uttering blessings upon humanity.

Dying thus, He bequeathed His teachings to man as an inestimable inheritance. Perverted and corrupted, they have served as a basis for many creeds, and been even made the warrant for intolerance and persecution. We here teach them in their purity. They are our Masonry; for to them good men of all creeds can subscribe.

That God is good and merciful, and loves and sympathizes with the creatures He has made; that His finger is visible in all the movements of the moral, intellectual, and material universe; that we are His children, the objects of His paternal care and regard; that all men are our brothers, whose wants we are to supply, their errors to pardon, their opinions to tolerate, their injuries to forgive ; that man has an immortal soul, a free will, a right to freedom of thought and action; that all men are equal in God's sight; that we best serve God by humility, meekness, gentleness, kindness, and the other virtues which the lowly can practise as well as the lofty; this is "the new Law," the "WORD," for which the world had waited and pined so long; and every true Knight of the Rose + will revere the memory of Him who taught it, and look indulgently even on those who assign to Him a character far above his own conceptions ar belief, even to the extent of deeming Him Divine.

Hear Philo, the Greek Jew. "The contemplative soul, unequally guided, sometimes toward abundance and sometimes toward barrenness, though ever advancing, is illuminated by the primitive ideas, the rays that emanate from the Divine. Intelligence, whenever it ascends toward the Sublime Treasures. When, on the contrary, it descends, and is barren, it falls within the domain of those Intelligences that are termed Angels. . . for, when the soul is deprived of the light of God, which leads it to the knowledge of things, it no longer enjoys more than a feeble and secondary light, which gives it, not the understanding of things, but that of words only, as in this baser world. . . ."

"... Let the narrow-souled withdraw, having their ears sealed up! We communicate the divine mysteries to those only who have received the sacred initiation, to those who practise true piety, and who are not enslaved by the empty pomp of words, or the doctrines of the pagans. . . . "

". . . O, ye Initiates, ye whose ears are purified, receive this in your souls, as a mystery never to be lost! Reveal it to no Profane! Keep and contain it within yourselves, as an incorruptible treasure, not like gold or silver, but more precious than everything besides; for it is the knowledge of the Great Cause, of Nature, and of that which is born of both. And if you meet an Initiate, besiege him with your prayers, that he conceal from you no new mysteries that he may know, and rest not until you have obtained them! For me, although I was initiated in the Great Mysteries by Moses, the Friend of God, yet, having seen Jeremiah, I recognized him not only as an Initiate, but as a Hierophant; and I follow his school."

We, like him, recognize all Initiates as our Brothers. We belong to no one creed or school. In all religions there is a basis of Truth; in all there is pure Morality. All that teach the cardinal tenets of Masonry we respect; all teachers and reformers of mankind we admire and revere.

Masonry also has her mission to perform. With her traditions reaching back to the earliest times, and her symbols dating further back than even the monumental history of Egypt extends, she invites all men of all religions to enlist under her banners and to war against evil, ignorance, and wrong. You are now her knight, and to her service your sword is consecrated. May you prove a worthy soldier in a worthy cause!

A & A Scottish Rite, Sept. 1921, Washington,D.C.,p.424.

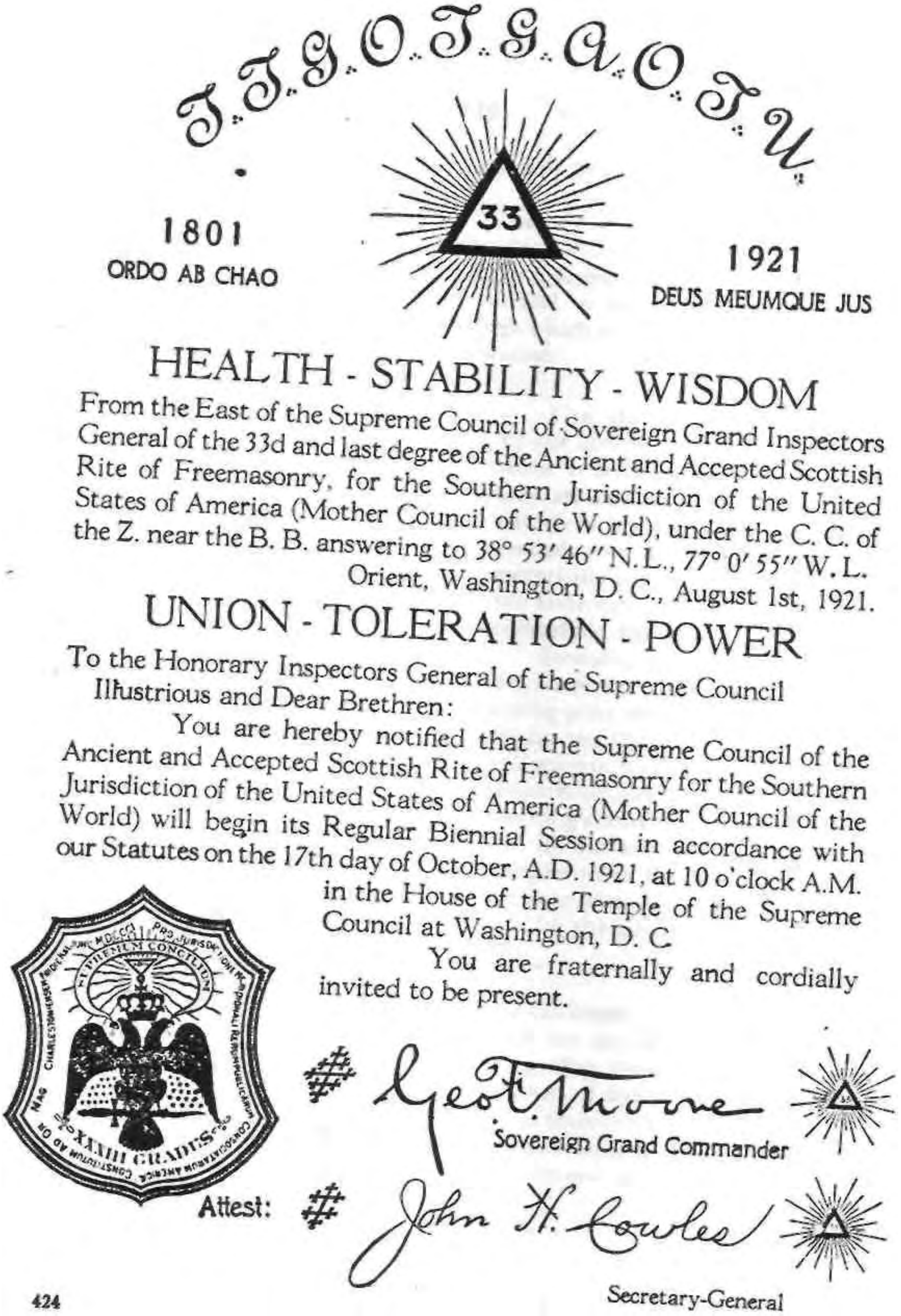

T.·.T.·.G.·.O.·.T.·.G.·.A.·.O.·.T.·.U.·.

33

1801
ORDO AB CHAO

1921
DEUS MEUMQUE JUS

HEALTH - STABILITY - WISDOM

From the East of the Supreme Council of Sovereign Grand Inspectors General of the 33d and last degree of the Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite of Freemasonry, for the Southern Jurisdiction of the United States of America (Mother Council of the World), under the C. C. of the Z. near the B. B. answering to 38° 53′ 46″ N. L., 77° 0′ 55″ W. L.

Orient, Washington, D. C., August 1st, 1921.

UNION - TOLERATION - POWER

To the Honorary Inspectors General of the Supreme Council

Illustrious and Dear Brethren:

You are hereby notified that the Supreme Council of the Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite of Freemasonry for the Southern Jurisdiction of the United States of America (Mother Council of the World) will begin its Regular Biennial Session in accordance with our Statutes on the 17th day of October, A.D. 1921, at 10 o'clock A.M. in the House of the Temple of the Supreme Council at Washington, D. C

You are fraternally and cordially invited to be present.

Geo. F. Moore
Sovereign Grand Commander

Attest: # John H. Cowles
Secretary-General

424

The Mother Council of the World is the
South. Jurisdiction of USA. They stand for
Unity (Political & Religious Worldwide)
Toleration (Religious)

Religious Organisations in the New Age

Let us now return to our consideration of the spread of the deepened religious ideals and the growth of the new religious organisms. In the process of transmuting the old form and so releasing the imprisoned life, there are two things which are steadily held in view by the Guides of our evolution:

First, that the general public serves or is dominated by the concrete mind and is unable to grasp abstractions. It is the form which matters to them the most, for they are conservative and cling to the familiar. The church is intended to serve the masses and is not intended to be of use (except as a field of service) to the esotericists of the world, for they heed not the form to the same extent, having contacted somewhat the inner compelling life.

Secondly, the church movement, like all else, is but a temporary expedient and serves but as a transient resting place for the evolving life. Eventually, there will appear the Church Universal, and its definite outlines will appear towards the close of this century. In this connection, forget not the wise prophecy of H.P.B. as touching events at the close of this century. This Church will be nurtured into activity by the Christ and His disciples when the outpouring of the Christ principle, the true second Coming, has been accomplished. No date for the advent do I set, but, the time will not be long.

The Christian church in its many branches can serve as a St. John the Baptist, as a voice crying in the wilderness, and as a nucleus through which world illumination may be accomplished. I indicate the hope. I do not assert a fact. Its work is intended to be the holding of a broad platform. The church must show a wide tolerance, and teach no revolutionary doctrines or cling to any reactionary ideas. The

The Outline of a Church Universal shall appear by the end of the 20th century.

Chapter 1.2

PILLARS OF MYSTERY

Three items you will learn in this chapter:

- In the last chapter's documents Freemasonry, the Church and Education were said to be the three vehicles to bring in the One-World-Religion which is the "Universal religion" of Masonry. You will learn more about Freemasonry's role.

- You will learn about the secret Masonic bodies that rule our lives. Plus you will receive an overview of some of the other Masonic organizations.

- You will find out how Jews played an important initial part in the early Masonic Lodges.

THE PLAN TO BRING IN A ONE-WORLD-RELIGION

Alice Bailey in her writings, especially the book The Externalisation of The Hierarchy quite openly spells out The Plan to bring in a New Age One World Religion.

Alice Bailey needs no introduction to followers of the New Age Movement. Her 24 New Age books, her organization Lucis Trust (originally named Lucifer Trust), her Arcane School, and the Findhorn community in Scotland (started by her disciples Peter and Eileen Caddy and Dorothy McLean) are present-day reminders of the immense impact she and her 32° Mason husband had on the New Age Movement.[1] She is credited with starting over one hundred New Age groups. She worked for the Dept. of Health, Education, and Welfare in 1958 setting up educational goals, and her writings were used in the new *Globalism 2000* curiculum (already tried in some areas) and soon-to-be used across the board in the US public schools.

Alice Bailey started the Arcane School to teach New Age disciples the principles of the Plan to bring in the New Order. The Arcane School is located in Europe and America, and headquartered in New York City. A major part of this Plan is for mankind to recognize the Spiritual Hierarchy of the planet. This Spiritual Hierarchy is headed by the Spirit Being Sanat Kumera (the first name is a scrambling of the name Satan), and helped by the Great White Brotherhood. Her writings were given to her by the same Great White Brotherhood that Masons, like Manly P. Hall (33°) , say direct Masonry. Other New Age leaders, for instance Elizabeth Clare Prophet in her book *The Great White Brotherhood in the Culture History and Religion of America,* also believe the Great White Brotherhood has been controlling religion. Various Rosicrucians claim to be guided by the Great White Brotherhood too.[2]

THE EXPECTATIONS FOR MASONRY BY NEW AGE LEADERS

According to Alice Bailey, the Masonic movement will be the religion of the New System. Benjamin Creme, another big New Age leader, also believes Freemasonry with a revitalized Christian Church will be the religion of the New Age.[3] Lola Davis, another New Age leader, also sees Freemasonry as the New Age Religion (*Dark Secrets of the New Age,* p. 273).

Bailey wrote in 1957, "The Masonic movement... is the custodian of the law; it is the home of the Mysteries and the seat of initiation. It holds in its symbolism the ritual of Deity, and the way of salvation is pictorially preserved in its work. ... It is a far more occult organization than can be realised, and is intended to be the training school for the coming advanced occultists. In its ceremonials lie hid the wielding of the forces connected with the growth and life of the kingdoms of nature and the unfoldment of the divine aspects in man."

"... when the new universal religion has sway and the nature of esotericism is understood-will be the utilisation of the banded esoteric organisms, the Masonic organism and the Church organism as initiating centres. These three groups converge as their inner sanctuaries are approached. There is no dissociation between the One Universal Church, the sacred inner Lodge of all true Masons, and the inner-most circles of esoteric societies."

There the reader has it, the Universal Churches of the One-World-Religion such as the universal churches of the Baha'i, the mysteries of the Masons, and the occult (esoteric societies) are not disunited. And this comes from one of the most powerful New Age leaders in the recent past.

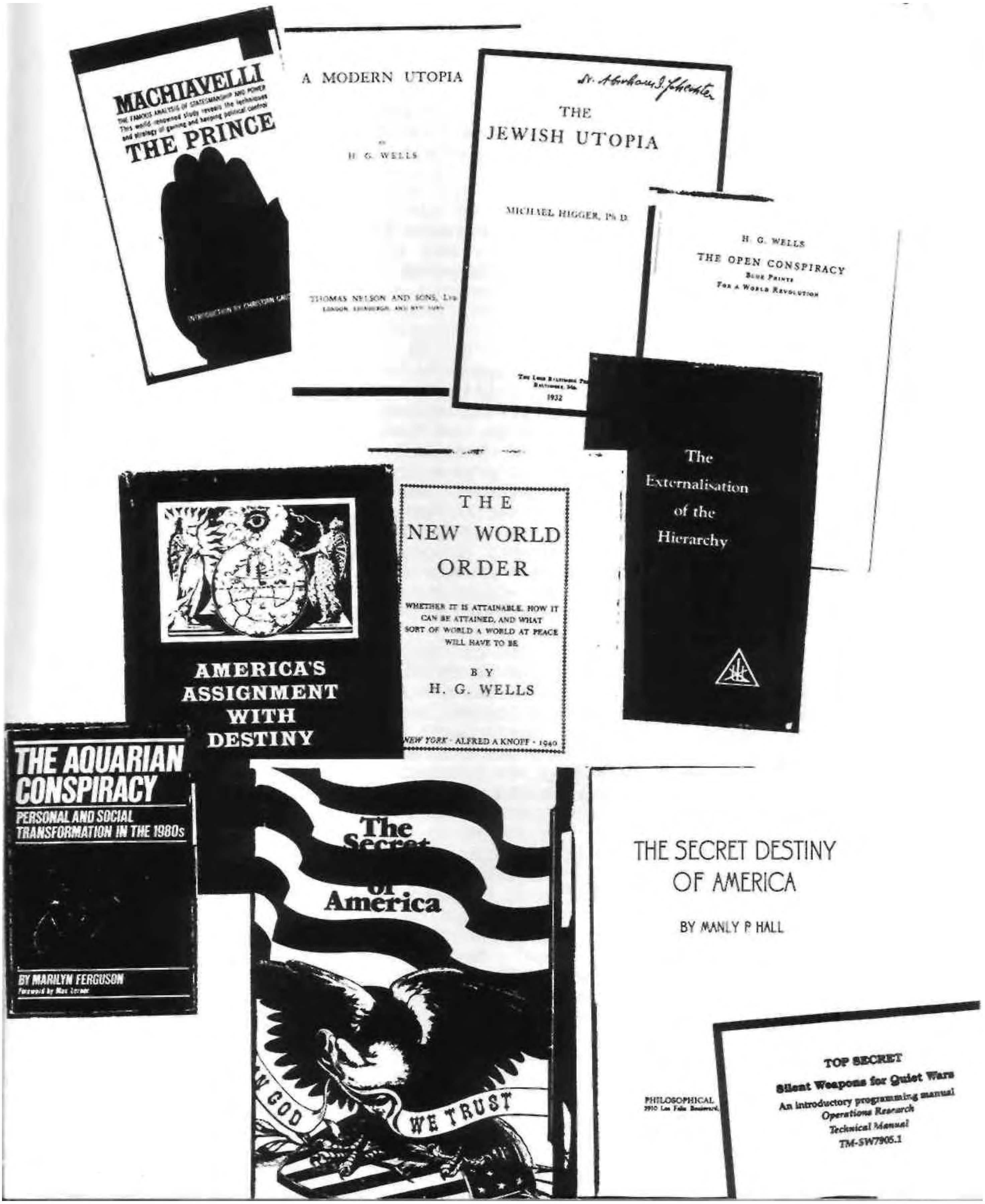

MACHIAVELLI
THE FAMOUS ANALYSIS OF STATESMANSHIP AND POWER
This world-renowned study reveals the techniques
and strategy of gaining and keeping political control
THE PRINCE
INTRODUCTION BY CHRISTIAN GA

A MODERN UTOPIA
BY
H. G. WELLS
THOMAS NELSON AND SONS, Ltd
LONDON, EDINBURGH, AND NEW YORK

Dr. Abraham I. Schechter
THE
JEWISH UTOPIA
MICHAEL HIGGER, Ph.D.
The Lord Baltimore P
Baltimore, Md.
1932

H. G. WELLS
THE OPEN CONSPIRACY
Blue Prints
For a World Revolution

The
Externalisation
of the
Hierarchy

AMERICA'S
ASSIGNMENT
WITH
DESTINY

THE
NEW WORLD
ORDER
WHETHER IT IS ATTAINABLE, HOW IT
CAN BE ATTAINED, AND WHAT
SORT OF WORLD A WORLD AT PEACE
WILL HAVE TO BE
BY
H. G. WELLS
NEW YORK · ALFRED A KNOPF · 1940

THE AQUARIAN
CONSPIRACY
PERSONAL AND SOCIAL
TRANSFORMATION IN THE 1980s
BY MARILYN FERGUSON
Foreword by Max Lerner

The
America

THE SECRET DESTINY
OF AMERICA
BY MANLY P. HALL
PHILOSOPHICAL
3910 Los Feliz Boulevard,

TOP SECRET
Silent Weapons for Quiet Wars
An introductory programming manual
Operations Research
Technical Manual
TM-SW7905.1

[FIGURE 1. original. 10.5 x 8 -full page, insert space after 1st full pg of text along with its caption]

[Description of FIG. 1. Composite picture of covers of books -Many books written by New Agers and Masons and others working with the Power reveal detailed plans to create a One-World-Government One-World-Religion .]

BOOKS OF INSTRUCTION AND DETAILED PLANS ON HOW TO RULE THE WORLD & ITS RELIGIONS WRITTEN BY MASONS, NEW AGERS, BILDERBURGERS, JEWS FABIAN SOCIALISTS & OTHERS OF THE POWER

MASONIC ASPIRATIONS

But would the Masonic Lodge want to the centerpiece of the One-World-Religion and an initiation center?

•In the Masonic Ritual during the opening ceremonies for the 31st degree of the Scottish Rite the Masons pray,

" Hear us with indulgence, O infinite Deity ... Let the great flood of Masonic light flow in a perpetual current over the whole world and make Masonry the creed of all mankind."

•The Italian Masonic Constitution, almost identical to the original Masonic Constitution of Anderson of 1723, states in Article 6 "It [Italian Masonry] proposes to itself as its first object to unite all free men in one vast family, which may and ought to take the place of all Churches. . .thereby to constitute the true and only Church of Humanity."[4]

Albert Pike, 33°, was one of the greatest Masonic leaders.[5] Articles praising Pike abound in official Masonic publications.[6] His book *Morals and Dogma*, written in second half of the 19th century, reveals the expectation of esoteric groups to become the world's leaders, "...the World will soon come to us for its Sovereigns and Pontiffs. We shall constitute the equilibrium of the Universe, and be rulers over the Masters of the World." (*Morals and Dogma*, p. 817, referring to the goal of esoteric groups.)

For many this may be shocking. Why would Masonry be the religion of the New Order, and appoint its religious leaders (pontiffs) when it doesn't claim to be a religion?

Freemasonry, the Church of Scientology, the Watchtower Society (Jehovah's Witnesses), the Theosophical Society, the Maharishi's Transcendental Meditation Heavenly Communities are all similar in that they strongly deny that they are religions. It is standard practice for many groups of the New World Order to protest to the public that they are not a religion. Yet each of these groups repeatedly contradict that, by declaring at other times that they are in fact a religion. Masonry not only functions as a religious institution, its leaders have quietly declared it is a religion. (See chapter 1.17 for proof on this.) And not only is it held to be a religion, but the true religion encompassing all truth. Further, Masonry is not passive in waiting for its leadership role to happen, it is militant.[7]

HAS FREEMASONRY BEEN UNDERESTIMATED AS A WORLD RELIGION?

At least one Masonic author writing to Masons felt that Masonic religious power had been underestimated. He writes,

"In the past Masonry has been condemned as a shallow substitute for religion. This the Masonic body has always denied but in fact the new age revitalised Masonry will be a paralleling evolutionary way of man's approach to God, and Masonry and religion will gladly cooperate." --The Spirit of Masonry, p. 129

O.K. We've seen that some of the most prominent leaders of the New Age movement plan for Freemasonry to be the future One-World-Religion. We've also seen a few (of the many quotes available) where Masons declare their desire for Masonry to be the creed of mankind. But can they do it? or is this just bravado and talk?

How the Masons have done it is the subject of this book. Chapter 2.12 will examine specific sets of plans to bring in a New World Order with its One-World-Religion. Unit two will examine denomination by denomination, sect after sect and expose how Masonry controls a vast diversity of groups. The diversity is but only an appearance. Unfortunately, we have tended to look at the superficial outside, rather than the inside substance. This book may change your life in regards to that.

Freemasonry is a front for the Power, but it also is a major part of their power. To illustrate this point let us look at the manned- mission to the moon Apollo. We'll develop the story enough that the significance of the final point will be appreciated.

THE SPACE RACE

In 1960, Pres. John F. Kennedy tugged on the emotional heart strings of Americans, "We are in a strategic space race with the Russians, and we have been losing...But we cannot run second in this vital race." Kennedy challenged the nation to land a man on. the moon by the end of the decade.

And so America was rushed into a race to the moon. It seemed forgotten that the moon had been around for a long time, and would continue being there for a long time, even if man didn't get there by the end of the decade.

U.S.-U.S.S.R. COOPERATION

This Author is not going to try to document this next paragraph. To do so really is another book. But if the reader is aware of the US-USSR cooperation it clears up a long list of anomalies. The reader can do with it what he pleases, but what if this paragraph is true? First, . the interested person can learn about the U.S. technology that our leaders have quietly given the Communists over the years, such as nuclear weapons by reading Anthony Sutton's well-documented books. F.D. Roosevelt's own son, James Roosevelt, wrote a book alleging FDR sent Russia the plans and materials to build an atomic bomb. The officer in charge of Lend-Lease to Russia during W.W. II states this in a book too. In recent years, the various cultural and scientific exchanges are even being publicly reported.

One area of cooperation that is extensive and has been for many years is between the CIA and the KGB. Both of these agencies feud like siblings, and both are honeycombed with double-agents, triple-agents, Airier. Communist CIA agents, etc., it is rather impossible to develop a clear picture of where loyalties are of particular individuals. In fact, it may be harder to see the overall picture for those closest to the scene, because these agencies are so segmented that people work in offices unaware that other secret offices ajoin their own rooms, and unaware of people working in secret only a few feet away. It is the epitome of Orwell's 1984. And the process is that Big Brother of the New World Order controls the world and works through the MI6, MI5, the CIA, the KGB, and Moussad. However, that is a hefty concept to swallow, so the reader is welcome to disbelieve it, and to put that on the back burner. It is only mentioned to serve as an introductory background thought to the next item. (The topic will be picked up again in chapter 2.7).

THE SOVIETS PROVIDE HELP

The Soviets gave the American leaders the reason to go to the moon. The Soviets played their role well. They continually gave mixed signals as to their intentions.

For instance, on Oct. 15, 1968, Russia's top scientists denied Russia was interested in going to the moon. On Nov. 23, 1968 Tass declared that Zond 5 and 6 were test flights to precede a manned flight to the moon and back.

Such statements greatly enhanced NASA's sales pitch, that if we did not go to the moon, the Russians would. Thanks to the Russians, few people in the U.S. opposed the Apollo program.

One day the Russians would deny interest and then the next day would come some statement like, "The Soviet Union is preparing to launch its most spetacular manned space flight by dispatching shortly at least two, and probably three, men on a circumlunar flight,..."

Rocketry is a sophisticated science. The U.S. leaders knew that the Russians were strapping several small rockets together in a hazardess fashion, and that they were not far out in front of us technologically, but inferior. (How could they be ahead of us? We were supplying them with much of the technology, just as we had for years. The examples are endless. One example is the chassis of the feared W.W.II T-34 Tank was American technology.) Going to the moon is such an involved process that it is not believable that our intelligence agencies did not have a fix on where the Russian space program was. Either, they did have a fix on it and our leaders lied, or, they didn't know much if anything about the Russian space program.

Recently, the Russians have displayed a craft they say they built to go to the moon. Only one model of it was built. However, building such a model, and actually having the technology to send men to the moon are two different items.

(The Space Program actually serves purposes that are entirely different from its cover. That is material for another book.)

Next, it is eye-opening, because supposedly according to our President, whoever got their flag and men to the moon first was to be considered the leader of mankind on earth.

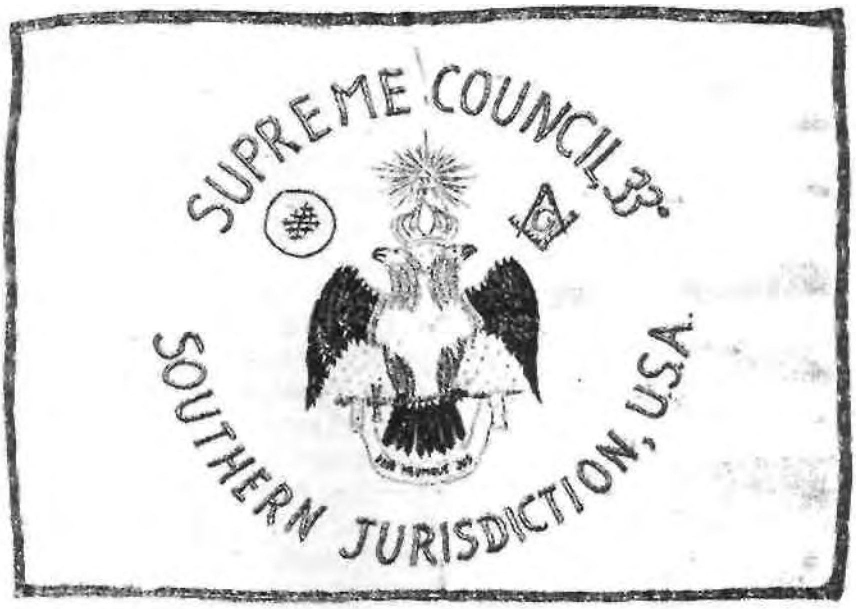
SUPREME COUNCIL 33°
SOUTHERN JURISDICTION, USA.

Aldrin carried
this Masonic flag
when he stepped
out on the moon
on the first
lunar landing
on July 21, 1969.

CONGRESSIONAL PRAYER ROOM

STAINED-GLASS WINDOW IN CONGRESS' PRAYER ROOM

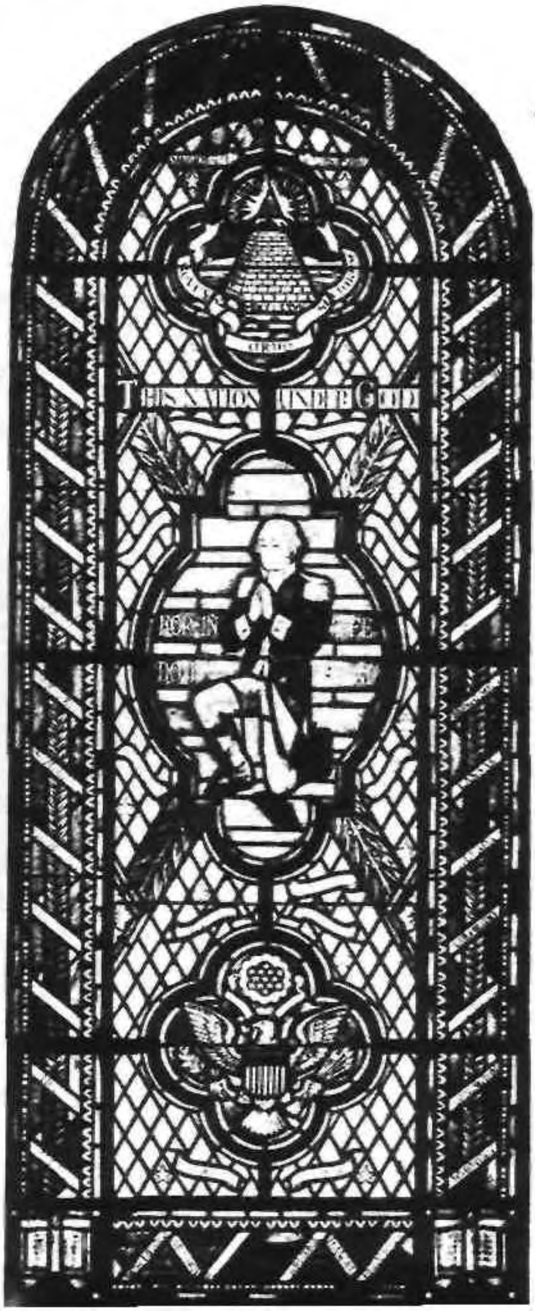
THIS NATION UNDER GOD

George
Washington
prays
to the
Masonic
all-seeing
eye in
the
Congress-
ional
prayer
room.

The point this Author is making is simply that the Russian threat, which was blown out of proportion, helped NASA sell its space program to the public.

Informed critics of the Apollo program tried to point out how on a scientific basis, unmanned spacecraft are far less expensive and will yield far more scientific information. A case in point, is the relatively inexpensive Surveyor spacecraft series which took thousands of close up lunar pictures and made soil analyses of the lunar soil.

THE MEDIA COVERUP

The media and NASA cooperated to keep a lid on the public's awareness of the level of risk for the Apollo astronauts. Safety features and calls from NASA technicians were ignored in order to meet self-imposed deadlines. Critics claimed that the fatal accident of Apollo 204, could easily have been avoided if safety concerns had been listened to.

However, a Senate Committee on January 30, 1968 reported after the fatal Apollo 204 accident which killed three astronauts, that the end-of-the-decade "Moon landing was necessary because the schedule is an essential and significant management tool."

The critics of the Apollo program who railed about the terrible odds and lack of safety features were suppressed, and are now silent because the Apollo program gambled against the odds and actually won. Critics had claimed that the manned moon program was "an arbitrary goal" and that there was "no logical next step" beyond landing men on the moon. They were correct in terms of the public-known space programs, yet the glory of the Apollo program and its success silences their reasoning. So why bring up their moot criticism?

Because it is being established for the reader how much the manned space program, which took money away from possible unmanned programs, was actually motivated on the basis of national pride and not scientific research.

The lives of many brave American astronauts were recklessly played with so that the world could marvel at Americans planting the American flag on the moon. But America wanted that glory. Some of the NASA scientists got antcy, because so much precious lunar time was spent on the first lunar mission, Apollo 11, just "raising" the flag. They were more concerned with learning scientific data than pomp and ceremony. Americans wouldn't trade that glory for more moon dust, or for more knowledge of the lunar surface. They were proud to get their flag to the moon first.

It seems then that with so much hoopla and pride, with so many billions spent to achieve that great feat, with so much danger given to our brave astronauts that America would not want to share the glory of the moon landing. It would seem that it might be disconcerting to some Americans to learn that the Masonic flag got to the lunar surface at the same time the American flag did. The Masons tied for first flag to the moon. Yes, taxpaying Americans spent billions of dollars to get the Scottish Rite's flag to the moon first.

Most people I have mentioned this to have seen the significance of this. Then others say, "So what if the Masons got their flag to the moon first?" Our President Kennedy answered that one. He said that whoever got their flag to the moon first was to be considered the leader of mankind on earth.

There are other interesting aspects to this. How ironic it is that the organization that sponsored and got the first Communist Internationale going was given such a big privilege by a supposedly anti-communist U.S. space program. Communism's sponsoring organization during the 1860s was the Masonic Lodge.

H.G. Wells, who has ties to Freemasonry, and was a Fabian Socialist, prophecied that men would land on the moon. Masons have held H.G. Wells up as a "prophet" in their official Scottish Rite publication. The One-Worlders seemed to have a interest in insuring his forecast and plans would happen.

H.G. Wells felt that the New World Order would rule because it controlled the air and sea ways. Indeed today they do dominate it completely.

For instance, his book *The Shape of Things To Come*, on p. 11 advises us that "...during the struggles and changes in world government that went on between 1980 and 2 059, at which date the Air Dictatorship, properly so called, gave place to that world-wide Modern State."

He also calls the Air Dictatorship a different name "the new World Council". "The new World Council, which is known also as the Air Dictatorship..."(p. 348)

In *A Modern Utopia*, p. 67, H.G. Wells tells us that this Air Dictatorship's Utopia will be "Bacon's visionary House of Saloman." And in the following pages he foresees that some of this Utopia's methods will use Plato's thinking.

The Air Dictatorship's air power was demonstated in the book *The Shape of Things to Come* and the film based on it, in the same manner that George Bush demonstated the New World Order's air power in Iraq. The parallels are interesting.

Is it proper to call 33° Mason George Bush's New World Order an Air Dictatorship?

•In 1991, when Iraqi Scud missiles were launched Air Force Space Command Defense Support Program missile-warning satellites provided stereo data on the Iraqi Scuds within seconds of their launches.[8] Within 12 0 seconds the underground facility in the Rocky Mountain, which is full of computers, had received the data and determined what to do. The commands would be relayed in seconds back to the Patriot missile crews in Saudi Arabia or Israel which then would figure the last minute tragetories and launch their Patriot missiles.[9] The reaction time would be in a matter of something like 6 minutes from the time the scuds were fired until the Patriots were launched. Is that air power?

•The government admits that its spy-satellites can read license plates and newspapers from outerspace. When describing intelligence capabilities it usually understates its capabilities. Imaging satellites beam their intelligence down to the Air Force/CIA at Fort Belvoir, VA. In the future if the Air Dictatorship wants to turn its attention to control you, it could conceivably watch your house from space, and follow you going out to your car, and track your car electronically. A description of one of the spy satellites:

"The 20m-long 13t KH-lls fly in pairs. Sun-synchronous orbits so that a first pass over a particular site is followed three hours later by the second craft. Each sports solid state CCD arrays for multi-spectral imaging via a 2m-diameter mirror and, although its 250km perigees that contribute to its 1,000-day lifetimes limit resolution to around 30 cm, the digital imagery is really manipulated and available to analysis within 90 min. This rapid response was the essential ingredient in attempting the rescue of the hostages in Tehran's U.S. embassy in 1980..."[10]

Yes, the satellites are like a pair of eyes in the sky which can be used for directing military operations. Satellites have also been used in law enforcement in the United States. Is that not air power? Can't our New World Order today properly be called an Air Dictatorship?

The significance that Bacon's House of Saloman (Solomon) is also describing this same World Order (this Air Dictatorship) will be seen as we examine some more about what the Masonic Lodge is and its history.

[FIGURE 2 & 3 Both pasteup #2- 4 x 6.75 #3- 2.5 x 6.75]

THE 20TH CENTURY HAS BEEN FOLLOWING A MASONIC SCRIPT. THE SCRIPT PLANS TO CREATE CONDITIONS THAT WILL MOTIVATE PEOPLE TO WANT A ONE-WORLD-GOVERNMENT .

WELLS' PLAN WAS FOR THE CONSPIRACY TO BECOME AN OPEN CONSPIRACY WITH MANY PEOPLE CONTRIBUTING TO ITS SUCCESS. MANY WHO CONTRIBUTE TO HIS IDEAS HAPPENING ARE NOT EVEN AWARE OF HIS PLANS.

FABIAN H.G. WELLS, HERALDED BY SOME LEADING MASONS AS A PROPHET, FORECAST A MANNED MISSION TO THE MOON IN HIS BOOK THE SHAPE OF THINGS TO COME. (The photos are taken from the 1939 film made from the book.)

[FIGURE 4 Pasteup 3.8 x 7]

The Winged-Globe (the emblem of the Illuminati) is to become the emblem of the New Order according to H.G. Wells. The above picture is from the film "Things to Come" based on the book The Shape of Things to Come. It shows at meeting in Basra, Iraq of the New World Order making plans at the Wings Over the World headquarters. John Cabal (actor Raymond Massey) is leading the discussion.

Few people inquire about the Masonic temples that dot the map. Some of those that were curious have told this Author what they were told by the Masons. They were given such bland answers as the following that this author has collected: the Masonic lodge functioned as a. a place where men play cards, b. a Christian organization c. a fun and games fraternity that does benevolence work. (A club that plays cards got their flag to the moon first?)

Masons and their wives have gotten upset with this Author, when merely the implication is made that Masonry has secrets . When one friend, who is still a Mason, gave slight criticism of the lodge to his mother (who was the wife of a Mason) , he was essentially disowned. His mother is in Eastern Star also. In other

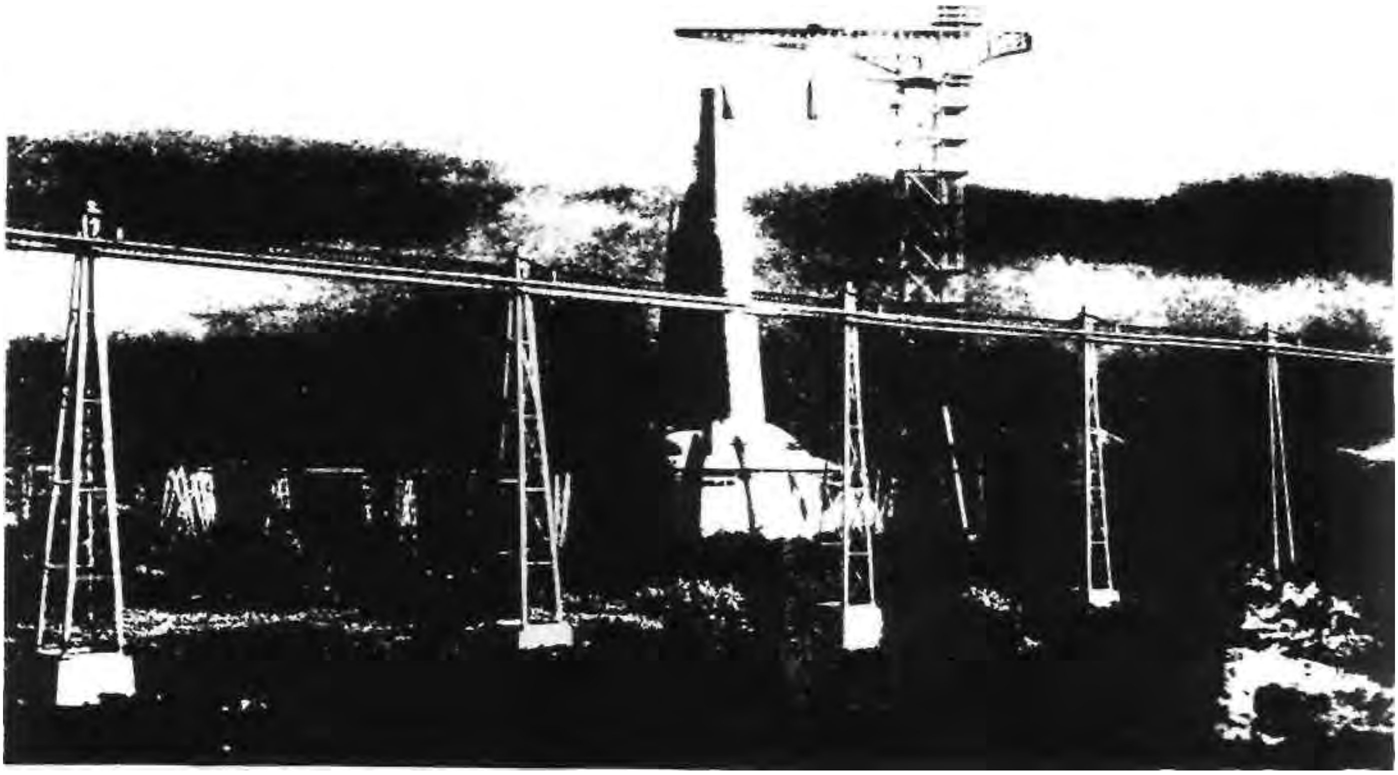

THE 20TH CENTURY HAS BEEN FOLLOWING A MASONIC SCRIPT, THAT PLANS TO CREATE CONDITIONS THAT WILL MOTIVATE PEOPLE TO CALL OP A ONE-WD-GOVT.

FABIAN H.G. WELLS, HERALDED BY SOME MASONS AS A PROPHET, AND WHOSE BOOKS ARE BEING USED AS A GUIDE TO CREATE THE NEW ORDER, DISCUSSED THE MANNED MISSION TO THE MOON IN HIS BOOK THE SHAPE OF THINGS TO COME. (The photos are taken from the 1939 film made from the book.)

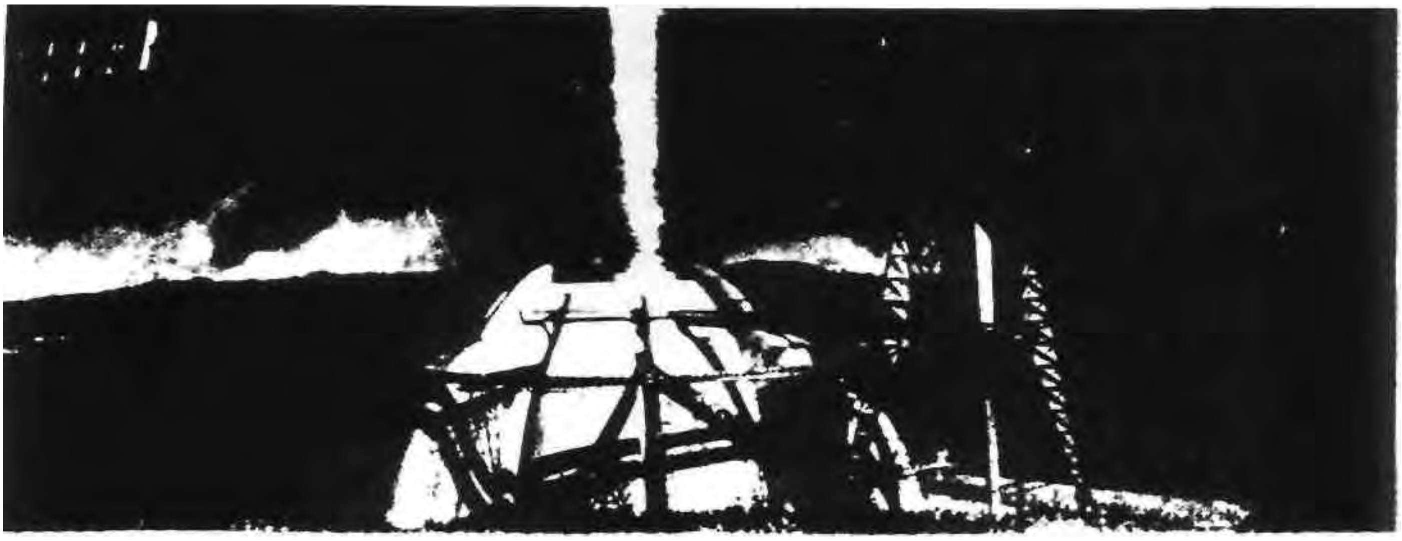

The Winged-Globe (the emblem of the Illuminati) is to become the emblem of the New Order according to H.G. Wells. The above picture is from the film "Things to Come" based on the book The Shape of Things to Come.

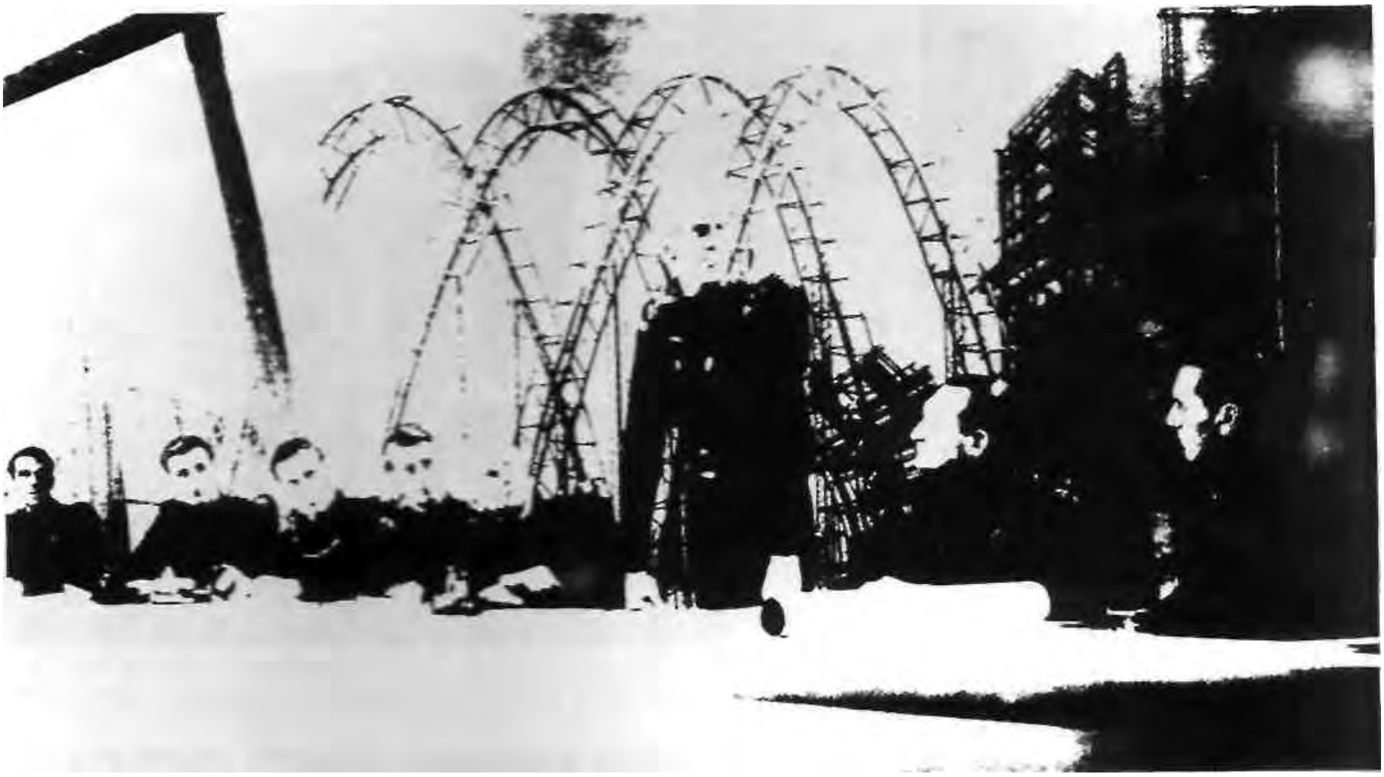

The picture above shows the New Order government making plans at Wings Over the World headquarters in Basra. John Cabal (Raymond Massey) is leading the discussion.

words, generally Masons will not suffer the slightest criticism or exposure of their organization without hostility, even if it comes from another Mason.

Masons have instantly hated this Author when he has made some very simple statements, such as the Masonic Lodge has secrets. They declare adamantly that they have no secrets. Christians who listen to them repeat this line.

This Author has pursued the Truth from the beginning to the end of this research. To weave fiction into the momentous message of this book would only detract rather than enhance the message.

TWO BEGINNING ITEMS OF MASONRY ARE A STORY IN A NUTSHELL

Two items tell much about the Freemasons by themselves. These two items occur before anyone becomes a Freemason. They tell a story in a nutshell.

First a petition by each candidate is made in the standard form supplied by the Lodge requesting " ... that I may be initiated into the mysteries of Freemasonry ... " It can be shown from many Masonic sources that the Mysteries of Freemasonry are the Mystery religions, and the initiation is an initiation into those mystery religions.

Second, an oath on penalty of a gruesome death is made that the candidate will not reveal any of the secrets of Masonry and will deceive those on the outside as to what goes on in the lodge. That this is carried out, can be easily shown by Masonic articles which discuss such deception. And if that were not enough proof, it is attested to by the testimony of men who quit practicing such Masonic deception.

MASONRY REPEATEDLY CLAIMS TO HAVE A DIFFERENT TRINITY THAN CHRISTIANS.

What is the Holy Trinity that early Masons talked about?

Mackey in his *History of Freemasonry & Concordant Orders*, p.771 states, "Masonry does ...not teach the 'Trinity in Unity' as Christians understand it; furthermore, it does not teach that T: G: A: 0: T: U: is Immanuel, the God with us, the Christ. Templary is called the Masonic Christian Order, but modern Masonry is not Christian."

DECEPTION

The great pontiff of Masonry, Albert Pike, has had his words on page 819 of *Morals and Dogma* often quoted. He states there that lower degree Masons are intentionally deceived and whoever tries to undeceive them will labor in vain because the first degrees are convinced they have the true explanations.

As most people, including most Masons themselves do not know what the deep secrets of Masonry are, they are not in a position to know whether Masonry has any secrets.

Deception itself has many forms. Peceptions management is adroitly used by the Masons not only to deceive outsiders as to their true goals and intentions, but also to deceive many of the Masons, who are supporting a structure that unbeknownst to them is destroying what they believe in. The impact of Masonic disinformation and smokescreens in extensive.

In the C.S. Lewis' Screwtape Letters, the novice demon is taught how to convince others he doesn't exist. Likewise, the Masons who worship Lucifer and/or knowingly know the Masonic machinations to control the world find that they are likely to find more unwitting accomplices than actual hard core occultists in favor enthroning Lucifer.

On the one hand, they must expose what they really are about to get those recruits who will give themselves over to their evil designs. Yet on the other hand, they must conceal their true face to the majority. By filtering the candidates through a series of degrees, the ones who will serve Luciferian (Satanic) goals can be identified.

Those who control power over the world benefit from the general population's reluctance to admit the possibility of ugly realities. The general method of thinking is to attribute to these men motivations common to the common man, such as fair play, national interests, human decency, and honesty. Perhaps the best book on the mind-set of those who secretly rule the world is Lindsey Williams' Syndrom of Control. Lindsey Williams, who rubbed shoulders with some of these men, studies how the mind-set of power is in a different realm than the common person. Think power, control, and money. Think of men who believe they are special, and that destiny has called them to Lord it over the world.

The Christians are manipulated to fight each other. The various nations pretend to feud with each other, concealing the fact they are puppets on strings with the same Master. The democrats and republicans feud with each other, when the real power has nothing to do with their pretended power struggles. Many straw-monsters are created, and pretended power struggles, and senseless conflicts, simply to mask the steady growth of the one-world-power. This strategy is taught in military colleges as Divide and Conquer.

Our self-deception is one of the One-World-Powers best allies.

MANY REFUSE TO ADMIT MASONIC DECEPTION

When the profane non-Masonic world uncovers some Masonic ritual, or Masonic act, then the uncovering is taken as proof that there was no deception. "Why [supposedly] was there no deception? Because the world was able to uncover things." Obviously such thinking believes we are only deceived when we are unaware that we have been deceived. This thinking can be summed up, We have never found anything that the Masons have successfully covered up. And because we have been able to discover things, then there must not have been a serious attempt to hide things.

HOW EASY IT IS TO DECEIVE

Our self-deception is one of the Power's best allies.

The truth simply needs to be suppressed, and fictions embellished somewhat to fool most people. For instance, suppress the actual figures of how many Masons are in government positions, and embellish fictions of how many anti or non-Masons are in government. Masonic statements to such effect don't mention how those non-Masons allowed in government still fit into their plans and power structure. Grand Orient Masons are not on the rolls of American Lodges, although they are Masons. Masons pretend to the public that those Americans with only European lodge memberships are not Masons. Further, a man bought off by the Masons is just as much theirs as one who is a member but they can say he is not a Mason. Or again, suppress the actual figures of Jewish involvement in the Masons, and stress the fiction of anti-Jewish lodges. Or again, suppress the actual figures of Jewish Masonic involvement with Communism, and stress the fiction of anti-Semitism in Russia. The show case propoganda in communist countries of anti-semitism works well to hide the overwhelming figures of Jews within the communist power structure.

Still, this Author's experience is that many Christians would rather listen to men who have repeatedly sworn to deceive than to read what the Masons actually teach. Why? It is discomforting to them to disturb their secure feeling in this present system. They don't want to learn that their present system is an elaborate myth, concealing and insulating the world power from anything that might oppose it.

The Mason Rev. Dr. William Dodd in a speech to brother Masons to open a new Masonic temple in 1794 traced Freemasonry from "the first astronomers on the plains of Chaldea, the wise and mystic kings and priests of Egypt, the sages of Greece and philosophers of Rome." Whether or not this would be historically correct if one looks from 1794 backward in Masonic history, it clearly shows that even in 1794 the Freemasons did desire to identify themselves with the Mystery Religions of the ancient pagans.

Let us examine one Masonic deception- that their organization was or is Christian.(See chapter 1.17 for more on Masonic deception.) Recently, Episcopalian theologian Dr. Morey wrote a book declaring Freemasonry's origin and early history to be Christian. Today, Masons are still leading people to believe it is a Christian institute. Morey's book has been in Christian book stores. According to Morey, his book is popular with Masons, and is to be advertised in a Masonic magazine. This Episcopalian Theologian with Masonic friends, says that his permission to visit the best Masonic library was because the Masons were blinded just like when Brother Andrew went into Communist countries. He says they never once asked in weeks of his research who he was. Indeed, they opened up locked documents and made suggestions as to what he could see.[11] This Author and others have repeatedly been told by official representatives of the Scottish Rite that no-one except Masons with special permission are allowed to use such libraries. This Author and others know that they do ask who people are. They don't just allow anyone in. Also in this Author's research experience almost everywhere he has researched at, i.e. at Public Libraries, the Patent Office, etc., he has experienced numerous requests for I.D. or his signature. The reader can draw his own conclusions, but it is the opinion of this Author that it is highly possible the grossly misleading research of Morey's book, was a setup, aided by his Masonic friends who asked their library to play dumb, break the rules, and assist (guide) this research. There are other suspicious items about the book, but it will take time to follow them up.

THIS BOOK'S MESSAGE- AMAZING BUT TRUE

Yes, I agree Be Wise As Serpents conclusions sound outrageous AT FIRST. But after the reader is aware of this book's contents though, then the testimony of those who have confided to this Author of their paricipation in the conspiracy of the major religions to bring the One-World-Religion will be seen to be credible.

AN INTRODUCTION TO THE VARIOUS GROUPS

It is true that there are several centers of power upon the earth. However, these groups have made alliances and together create the New World Order. A One-World-Government already exists. Even though the world is ruled by a secret world government, the world has not willingly consented to this. H.G. Wells, who spent his life planning how this One-World-State would come into power and function, fully expected today's situation in his timetable, "The World Council was in effective possession of world power, but not in unchallenged possession. Even in 2000 C.E., nineteen-twentieths of mankind were still unassimilated to the organization. If the world was not rebellious it was mutinous, and there were plenty of alert and intelligent people in opposition, ... to the reconditioning of human affairs on Modern State lines. "[12]

The reader is familiar with how two royal blood lines can be joined by marriage, to produce a new royal blood line containing both lineages. This principle has been used a great deal in creating the unified One-World-Government of today.

The Black Nobility is a group of nobility that traces back to the Roman Emporers. Many of the royality of Europe belong to the Black Nobility. The Knights of Malta are one of the Black Nobility's secret orders. The Order of the Knights of Malta helps continue the cohesion of the Nobility as a group. This Black Nobility have formed an alliance with two major groups, the Jewish blood line of the House of David, and the group of International Bankers who are practicing Satanism. The merging of these three groups has created a unity called the New World Order. A host of other organizations are built upon this nucleus. Freemasonry is one of the fundamental ones.

The Jewish blood line (considered to be not only the House of David but to contain the Royal blood line of Jesus) has been preserved by the secret order the Prieure de Sion.

The Satanists have been actively working through groups that are illuminized. There are groups are called the Illuminati. There are also individuals (usually at the head of gnostic religious groups--see chapter 1.3) who are Illuminati. One main Rosicrucian group is called the Church of Illumination.

The three groups- the Black Nobility, the Satanists, and the claimed Blood Line of Jesus- have an outer group of about 500 men who assemble once a year. This group is nicknamed the Bilderbergers. Although the heads of some of the largest newspapers attend, and their meetings are newsworthy, the media do not cover their supersecret meetings. (More about the Bilderbergers in chapter 2.12.)

The center of power geographically recides in Great Britian.[13] That does not mean New York, Zurich, Rome, Paris and Moscow, etc. aren't important. These cities also are centers of their power.

Through a vast number of organizations the world has been brought under their control. Some of their organizations like the Boy Scouts or the Order of the Antelope[14] play little part in the control of humankind and their construction of a one-world-religion. While others like the Order of the B'nai B'rith and the Order of the Skull and Bones play major roles. The One-World-Power has used and is using foreign cults and secret societies that Americans rarely hear about like the Hung and Triad secret societies in China, and the Tenri Kenjukai in Japan.

As a reference to help the reader get started a list of some major groups is now provided. (This author has files on hundreds of organizations and sects. The number of religous groups and secret fraternal organizations, and New Age organizations started by the One-world-power is simply fantastic. See chapter 2.9. for a chart showing some.)

SECRET & SEMI-SECRET ORDERS OF THE ILLUMINATI KNOWN ABOUT

the Order of B'nai B'rith- Although its strictly Jewish membership is not secret anymore, the inner workings at the top are. It's purpose is to organize, unify, and direct the Jewish people. It also directs Christian clergymen and Freemasons at times. Its militant arm is the JDL and ADL. It also has Hillel and some other all-Jewish organizations included in its membership. Although it claims to represent all jews, it has promoted the liberal "Reformed" Jewish movement. The Order has around 500,000 members and 3,500 local lodges.

the Hermetic Order of the Golden Dawn- An illuminated Satanic group that worked with the German Thule Society, related to the O.T.O. Reportedly directed by the Rothschild family. (See chapter 3.3) This was a branch of the Masonic Societas Rosicruciana in Anglia. Many groups developed from the Golden Dawn including Stella Matutina (Morning Star). The Morning Star is Lucifer.

Grand Council of Allied Masonic Degrees (AMDGC)- The council controls the various allied degrees. It works fourteen degrees: Royal Ark Mariner, Secret Monitor, Knight of Constantinople, Grand Tyler of Solomon, Red Branch of Eri, Ye Ancient Order of Corks, and other degrees. It's subordinate groups are called councils.

Grand Orient- This is a type of Masonry which is almost global, but based in Europe. It is blatantly occultic, and sponsors revolutions. It maintains strong ties with all the other branches of Masonry incl. British Masonry. The French Grand Orient is the mother lodge directing other G.O. in other countries. Funds for the assassination of the Archduke in 1914 travelled from Paris to Rome between the Grand Orients on behalf of the Alliance Israelite Universelle.[15]

the Group- Based at Oxford University, this group's initiates form part of the Illuminati's British elite.

Jason Society- A branch of the Order of the Quest, this secret group is extremely powerful in the United States. Some of its men sit on MJ-12, the body that rules the United States for the New World Order.

Jesuits, the Society of Jesus- This is the Catholic branch of the Illuminati. Black masses are performed at the higher levels. Only the higher echelons are aware of the Illuminati contacts. There are about 28,000 Jesuits worldwide. They have been primary agents to change Christianity into Marxism through Liberation Theology.

Knights of Malta- This order preserves the cohesion of the "Black" nobility, the European aristocracy that dominated Europe for many centuries, the head family traces itself back to the Roman emperors. Not all Knights of Malta members have connections to the Black nobility though, only about half of the 10,000 members are Black nobility. (Another Black nobility group in Europe is the Club of Rome with a small select group of about 75.) Typically, U.S. Govt.envoys to the Vatican are Knights of Malta.

Mizraim Rite (of Freemasonry) and the Prieure de Sion (Priory of Zion)- These two closely related groups are guarding the lineage of a future messiah to rule the world. The Mizraim Rite is almost exclusively jwish. The Prieure de Sion is primarily in Scotland, Britian, U.S., Canada, and France. France has about 43 members, of the 9,731 members. The Prieure de Sion is divided into the Legion (charged with the Apostolate) and the Phalange (charged with the guardian of the tradition.) The Prieure de Sion has nine levels of initiation.

Palladium Rite- A secret rite that extends globally. This super-rite is sold out to Lucifer and controls Freemasonry behind the scenes. Both men and women are members. Its triangles (lodges) are in the major cities.

Independent Order of Oddfellows- This group is designed for the lower classes and minorities. Because its members are not often in powerful positions, it functions less as a powerhouse fraternity than does Freemasonry, but places more emphasis on the occult for the lower levels.

Order of the Quest- This is the group in charge of preserving their plan for world domination. (The name used here for this order is the one Manly P. Hall used for it, it-- like other groups-- most likely it has an esoteric name also.) Several groups mentioned in this list play important roles for the Order of the Quest.

Scroll & Key Fraternity- Based at Yale, this is a secondary group which also provides some leadership for the Illuminati along with Wolf's Head.

Skull & Bones Order (Russell Trust)- Based at Yale, this group is one source of American leadership. It is part of the larger "Brotherhood of Death." Exactly 15 members are added each year. (Previous to 1860 the number initiated varied.) There are about 600 active members currently. In the last 150 years about 2500 Yale graduates have been initiated into this super-secret society. Some members, perhaps exceptions, have been initiated away from Yale. Most are descended from the early Puritan families, and are tied to the Unitarian/Universalist movement. These older S&B families have formed blood alliances with wealthy families such as the Rockefellers. (See Chapter 2.3)

Thule Society- Based in Germany, this group was the primary German Illuminati group prior to W.W. II. This Society recruited German leaders including Adolf Hitler who they placed in charge of their Nazi party. Their symbol was the swastika, which was then also used by their daughter organization the Nazi party. Saturn was an important god, so their lodges met on Saturday. It was associated with the Prussian Freemasonic Lodges which were opposed to the western or Jewish Masonic lodges.

York Rite Sovereign College (the YRSC)-- A partial supreme council for the York Rite, organized into at least 57 colleges. Membership is by invitation only, and the insignia of the order is the pentagon. It's has an annual "General Assembly", and headquarters in Detroit, MI.

SIMPLIFIED DIAGRAM OF ORDERS & rites OF MASONRY

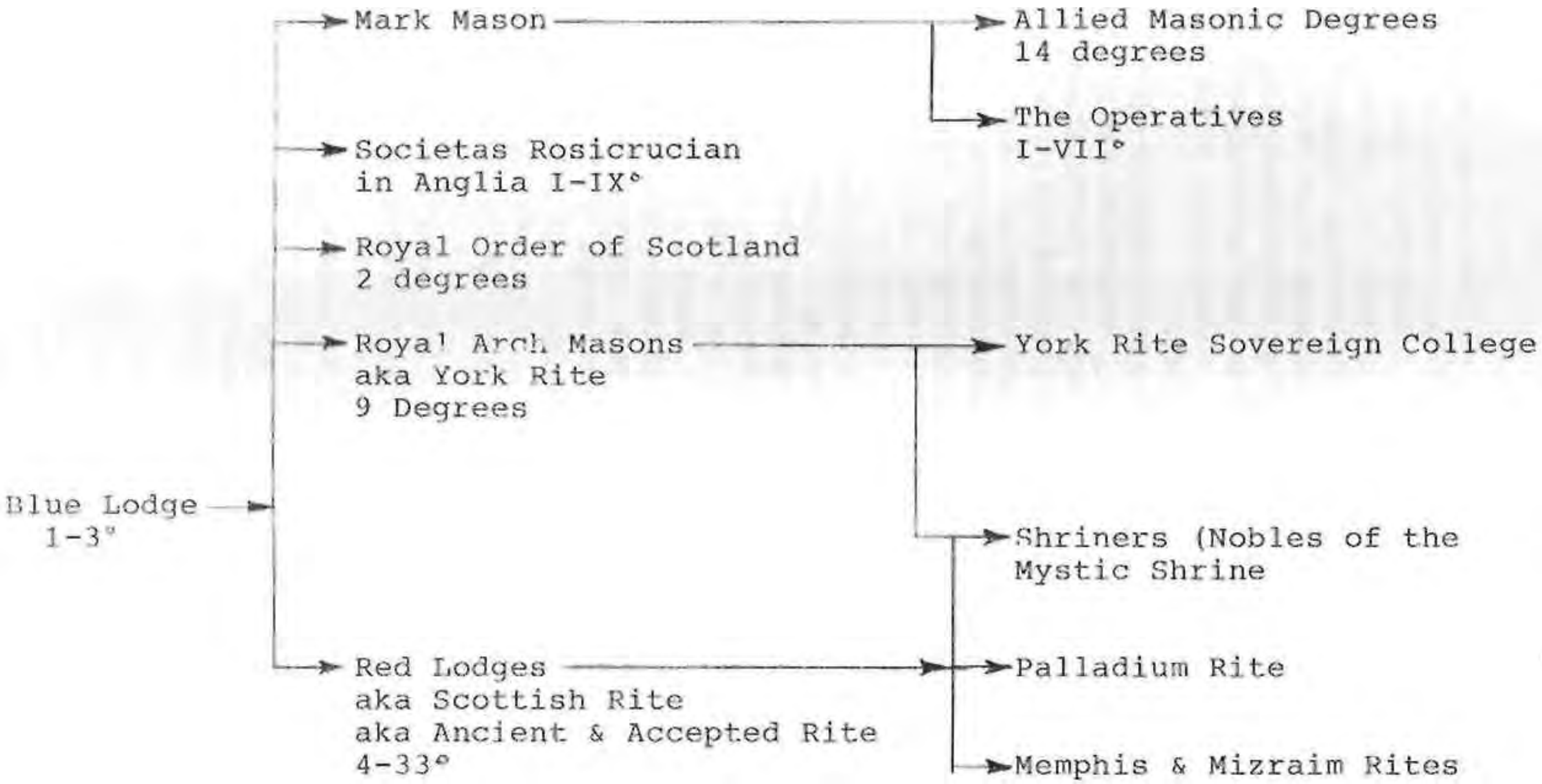
Mark Mason
Allied Masonic Degrees 14 degrees
The Operatives I-VII°
Societas Rosicrucian in Anglia I-IX°
Royal Order of Scotland 2 degrees
Royal Arch Masons aka York Rite 9 Degrees
York Rite Sovereign College
Blue Lodge 1-3°
Shriners (Nobles of the Mystic Shrine
Red Lodges aka Scottish Rite aka Ancient & Accepted Rite 4-33°
Palladium Rite
Memphis & Mizraim Rites

For a listing of other Masonic Organizations (for white Masons) see the next page.

[FIG. 5- needs to be computer drawn somehow -5x7.5

[Description FIGURE 5 -simplified diagram of orders & rites of Masonry- see diagram]

OTHER MASONIC ORGANIZATIONS (FOR WHITE-SKINNED MASONS) not shown in diagram INCLUDE:

Ancient Egyptian Order of Sciots
Ancient Order of Knights of the Mystic Chain
Conference of Grand Masters of Masons in N.A.
The Convent General Knights of the York Cross of Honour
Daughters of the Eastern Star
Daughters of Mokanna
Daughters of the Nile, Supreme Temple
Federation of Masons of the World
George Washington Masonic National Memorial Association
Grand College of Rites of the USA
Grottoes of North America
Heroes of '76
Heroines of Jerico
High Twelve International
Independent Order of Owls
International General Grand Council of Royal and Select Masters
International Order of Job's Daughters
International Order of Rainbow Girls
International Supreme Council of World Masons, Inc.
Jason Society
Knights of the Globe
Ladies Oriental Shrine of North America
Masonic Life Association
Mutual Guild of Grand Secretaries
The National League of Masonic Clubs
National Sojourners, Inc.
The Order of Amaranth
Order of the Bath
Order of the Builders
The Order of the Constellation of Junior Stars
The Order of DeMolay
Order of Desoms
Order of Eastern Star
Order of the Golden Key
Order of the Knight Masons
The Order of the White Shrine of Jerusalem
The Philalethes Society
Royal Order of Jesters

Social Order of the Beauceant
Tall Cedars of Lebanon

PRIMARY BLACK-SKINNED MASONIC LODGE
Prince Hall Order

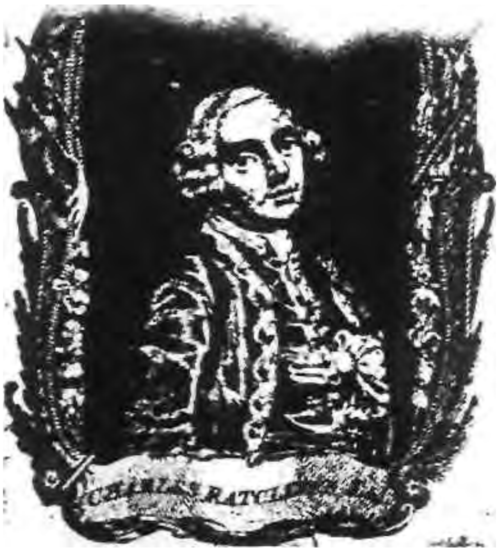

CHARLES RATCLIFFE LORD DERWENTWATER

SELECTIONS FROM MASONIC HISTORY

The following pages will discuss selected aspects of the history and development of Freemasonry and related groups. These selections will help you to understand the story of the New World Order.

THE PRIEURE DE SION PLAYED AN IMPORTANT LEADERSHIP ROLE IN THE EARLY MASONIC LODGE SYSTEM

The St. Clair Charters of 1601 and 1628 are interesting. William St. Clair, who was part of the Prieure de Sion, and a descendent of the St. Clairs of Roslin was given the right to govern the Masons.

[FIG. 6 Charles Radcliffe Pasteup 3.25 x 2.5]

HOW THE PRIEURE DE SION STARTED THE SCOTTISH RITE

Charles Radclyffe was the Grand Master of the Prieure de Sion from 1727-1746.[16] "It is probable that Scottish Rite Freemasonry was originally promulgated, if not indeed devised, by Charles Radclyffe."[17] It seems also most likely that Charles Radclyffe was one of the "unknown superiors" (likely the head one) of a German nobleman Baron Karl Gottheif von Hund[18] (1722-1776) who is well known to have created the Rite of Strict Observance.[19] According to von Hund a Grand Master of a super secret order authorized him to start the Rite of Strict Observance. The Rite of Strict Observance entered France in 17 58 under the name of Council of the Emperiors of the East and West, and three years later authorized Stephen Morin to take the rite to the four corners of the earth.[20] With his Charter of Authority Morin went to Jamaica where he initiated the Jew Moses M. Hayes. Hays went to Charleston, SC. The Rite that Hays established had only the 25 degrees that Von Hund had offered.[21] The Rite of Perfection is now known as the Scottish Rite, and in around 1802 the authorization was given to allow Masons to progress in eight more degrees.[22] Another early branch of the Rite of Perfection had 32 degrees, and this contradiction was eventually worked out. The result is that Scottish Freemasonry has 32 degrees for most worthy Masons to achieve, with 33 special men chosen to an advanced 33 degree. In addition to this numerous men are made

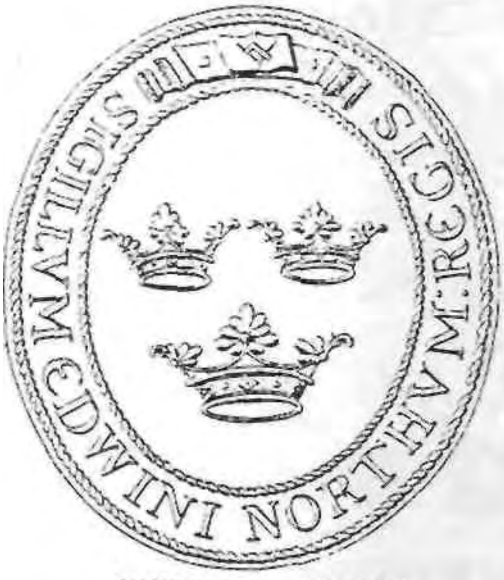
SIGILLVM EDWINI NORTHVM REGIS

SILVER SEAL AT YORK
circa 1761

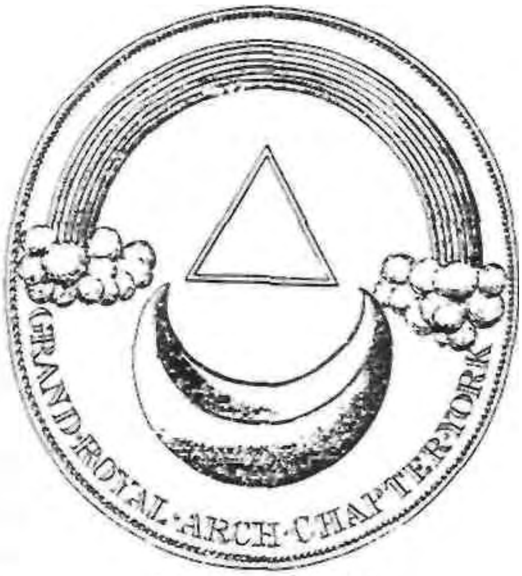
GRAND ROYAL ARCH CHAPTER YORK

GRAND CHAPTER
YORK *circa* 1780
(Brass)

FIG. 10 SEALS

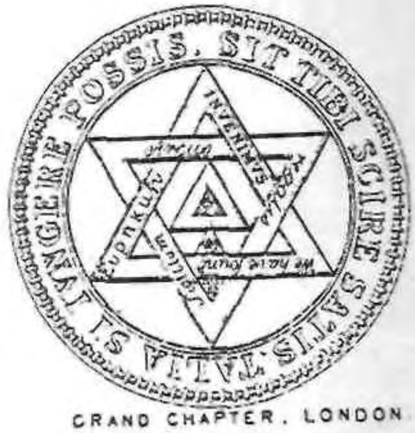
SI TALIA JVNGERE POSSIS SIT TIBI SCIRE SATIS
We have found

GRAND CHAPTER, LONDON
1763 – 1817

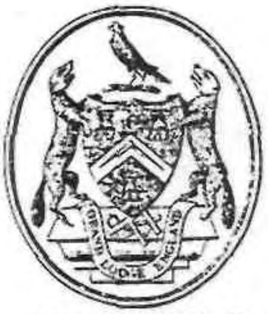

THE OFFICE SEAL OF
THE GRAND LODGE OF ENGLAND
before 1813

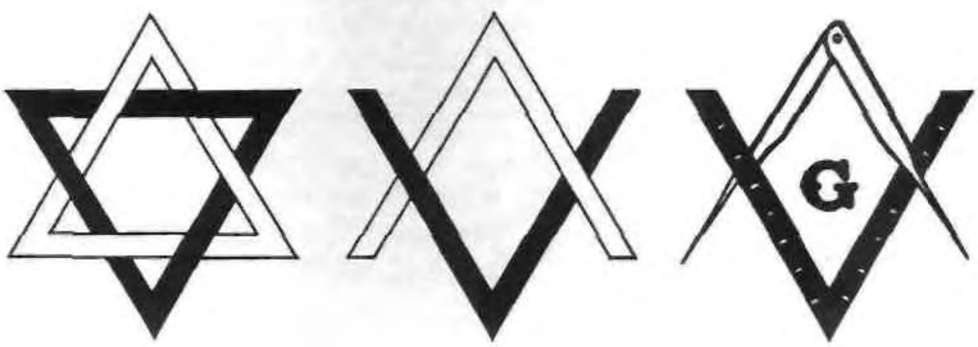

FIG. 7

FIG. 3

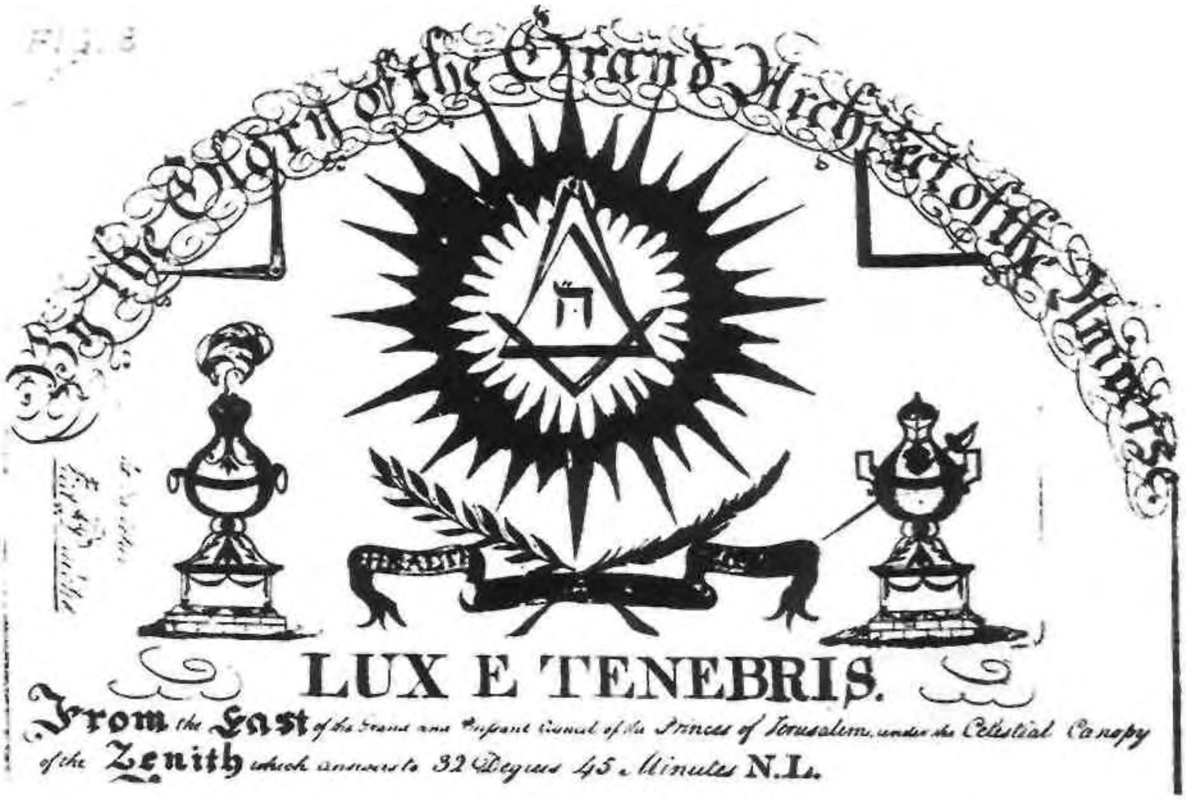

By the Glory of the Grand Architect of the Universe

LUX E TENEBRIS.

From the East of the Grand and Puissant Council of the Princes of Jerusalem, under the Celestial Canopy of the Zenith which answers to 32 Degrees 45 Minutes N.L.

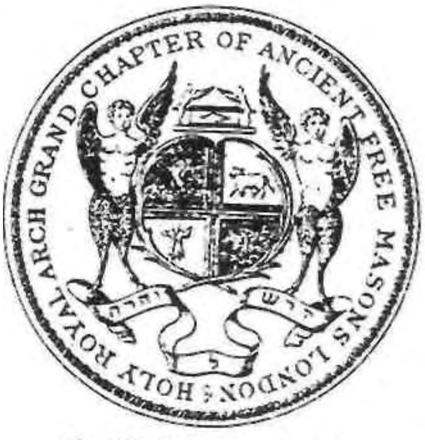
ROYAL ARCH GRAND CHAPTER OF ANCIENT FREE MASONS LONDON : HOLY ROYAL

4 GRAND CHAPTER
ATHOLL *before* 1817

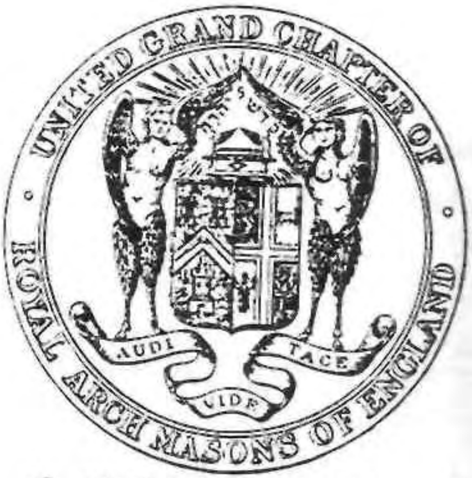
UNITED GRAND CHAPTER OF ROYAL ARCH MASONS OF ENGLAND
AUDI
VIDE
TACE

5 UNITED GRAND CHAPTER
LONDON 1817

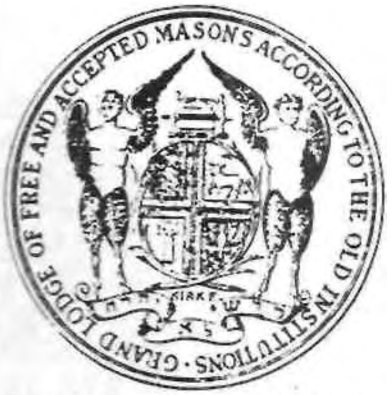
GRAND LODGE OF FREE AND ACCEPTED MASONS ACCORDING TO THE OLD INSTITUTIONS

6 GRAND LODGE OF ENGLAND
ATHOLL *before* 1813

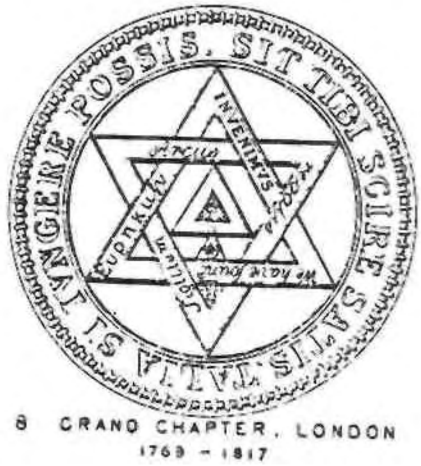
SI TALIA JUNGERE POSSIS, SIT TIBI SCIRE SATIS
INVENIMUS
We have found

8 GRAND CHAPTER, LONDON
1769 – 1817

honorary 33° Masons. The Scottish Rite Lodges are still referred to as the Rite of Strict Observance.

The Prieure de Sion recruits it own special ones from the upper reaches of the Scottish Rite. After the Scottish Rite men can procede to the Rite of Mizriam, which also has ties to the Prieure de Sion. The upper grades of the Scottish Rite are the lower degrees of the Prieure de Sion, according to M. Jean-Luc Chaumeil, a man who had contact with the Grand Master of the Prieure de Sion and was familiar with that Society.[23] Also according to Jean-Luc Chaumeil, whose knowledge of the Prieure de Sion is obviously of merit and worthy of attention, the Prieure de Sion is generally Jewish but a few non-Jewish members are admitted.[24]

Why would a man like Chaumeil leak information about this powerful Jewish society which is claimed to guard the holy blood lineage of King David and Jesus Christ? Because the time is close when the most powerful "Jews" in the world plan to reestablish a King-Priest to rule the world. People must be given a chance to believe in this purported blood descendent of Jesus Christ. In order to legitimatize their story, they have orchestrated a complex series of "leaks", which has revealed the existence of their Order and its antiquity. Whether their story line that they have guarded the royal blood line is true or not, it has enough truth in it to fool most people. It is and will be one of the best orchestrated hoaxes of history. By uniting both the Christians and Jews behind this Messiah, they can rule the world with the religious blessings of the masses. Now the reader begins to see the significance, that the present day Pope is Jewish, a Freemason, and working with the Prieure de Sion.[25]

[FIG. 7 picture of square and compass becoming the seal of solomon PASTEUP 1.6 x 5]

[FIG. 8 charter]
THE TOP OF THIS MASONIC CHARTER SHOWS THE SEAL OF SOLOMON HIDDEN IN THE SQUARE & COMPASS. This is only one of many examples like this.

FREEMASONRY & THE HOUSE OF DAVID

The Prieure de Sion is specifically tied to the blood line purported to be of Jesus of the House of David. The various orders of Freemasonry also relate to the lineage of the House of David.

For instance we learn from 33° Mackey, "So that now almost all the symbolism of Freemasonry rests upon or is derived from the "House of the Lord" at Jerusalem. So closely are the two connected, that to attempt to separate the one from the other would be fatal to the further existence of Masonry. Each lodge is and must be a symbol of the Jewish Temple; each Master in the chair a

FIG . 9

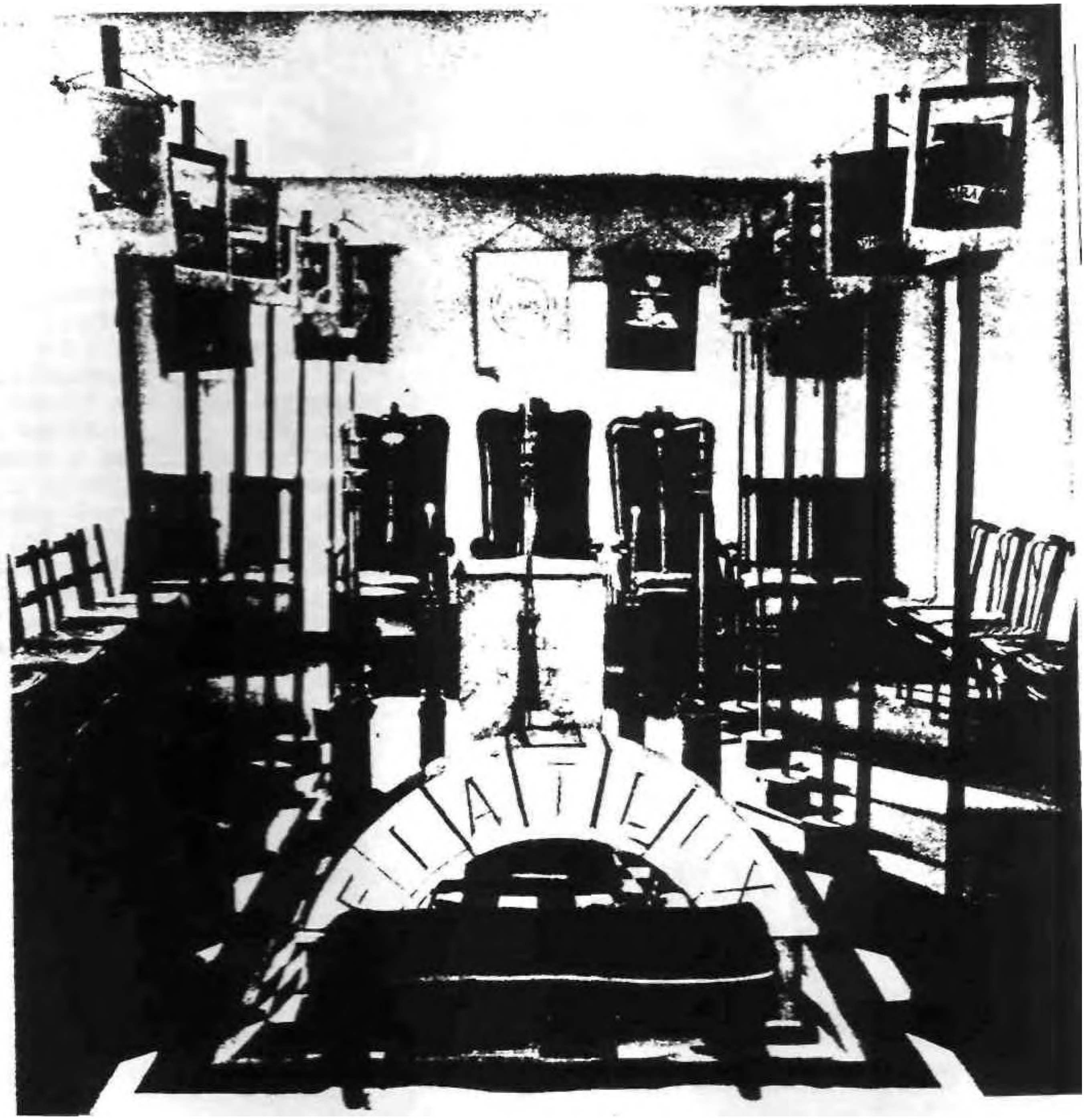

representative of the Jewish king; and every Mason a personation of the Jewish workman."[26]

In the big book *Masonic History of the Northwest* written by some past Grand Masters we are told,

> "In the English organization of the Chapter the presiding officer is the Prince and heir to the Jewish throne, ZERUBBABEL (being descended in the direct line from King Solomon), and as such represents the King, though nominally a tributary Prince, first under the Persian King Cyrus and afterward Darius....by reason of the war of the Revolution for American Independence, caused the word Royal to be looked upon with disfavor by patriotic American Masons; and, as Oliver, the English Masonic historian, truly says in his 'Historical Landmarks.':
> 'Our transatlantic Brethren,[Americans] impelled probably by a dislike to royalty, have deposed Zerrubbabel from the first chair and place the High Priest in his place, giving the King only the second throne, which is evidently erroneous; and they have also greatly injured the force of the illustration of the triple office of the MESSIAH, by substituting a scribe for a prophet in the third chair."[27]

Masons have looked forward to the Jewish goal of rebuilding the Jewish temple. It is a theme repeatedly pushed in the Masonic temples. An example of this is the Scottish Rite article by 33° Mason Charles L. Bachtel entitled "Where Is King Solomon's Temple". "Until the arrival of the day when the Temple is located and reconstructed for the use of all mankind, we should carry the symbol of the Temple in our hearts."[28]

[FIGURE 9 Picture of the interior of a Royal Arch Lodge showing the banners of the 12 tribes of Israel, SCAN 7 x 6.5.]

PHOTO OF THE INSIDE OF A ROYAL ARCH LODGE WITH THE BANNERS OF THE 12 TRIBES OF ISRAEL

JEWISH PARTICIPATION WITHIN THE EARLY MASONIC LODGE

Because there has been such a powerful coverup of the role Jews have played in Freemasonry, this subject must be dealt with. The Reformed Rabbi Gotthold Saloman wrote that Freemasonry was more a Jewish movement in origin than Christian. However, as is so often the case today, Jews can say things about themselves which if Gentiles, the Goy, say the same thing, then the non-Jews are in serious trouble.

The initial formation by four Masonic lodges in 1717 of the first public Grand Lodge, included several Jewish Masons as participants. These were Marranos Jews (Jews converted to Christianity) and included Mendez, de Medina, Alvarez, and Baruch.[29] In other words, Jews were there from the start. A look at the seals of the various Masonic groups in England in the 18th century reveals a Jewish or magical influence. (See illustrations of early Masonic seals with the Star of David, etc.)

[FIGURE 10 Seals of the early Grand Lodges to be here -PASTE UP 3 disks of 2" diameter side by side.]

Many books, including Morey's recent one, portray the American lodges as anti-Jewish. This is a smokescreen. The only Grand Lodge that was really anti-Jewish was the Prussian Grand Lodge which eventually transformed itself into the Thule Society and then into the Nazi Party. The reason that the Prussian Lodges became concerned in the early 19th century about Jewish control of Freemasonry could be a book in itself, but was based on several items, 1. being close to the several radical Jewish movements in Poland and the German States the Germans were more aware of what was taking place, 2. in Germany warnings were given by ex-Masons and Masons, 3. German authors like Johann Christian Ehrmann in

1816, Eduard Emil Eckert (*Der Freimaurer-Orden in seiner wahren Bedeutung*, c. 1850), and Georg Michael Pachtler to name a few wrote books warning the Germans about Freemasonry and the power of Jews within the lodges.

A close examination by reliable Masonic, Jewish, and other sources reveals that the Jews have indeed played an important part in the Masonic lodges since their beginning. A person today will witness for instance such things as the Feast of Tishri observed by for instance the Arkansas Lodge of Perfection.[30]

SECRET DENS OF ANTI-CHRISTIANITY

The first early lodges in the various European nations of Scotland, England, German states, and France built upon a number of existing organizations. Various secret societies were built upon. Although it is beyond the scope of this chapter to explain Masonry's early history, it will be found in the Knight's Templar groups, in the secret societies of Europe and the Middle East (including the Order called Roshaniya, the Assassins, & Sufism), the Rosicrucians, the Prieure de Sion, the Mystery Religions (including the evolution of the Mazdains to Mithraism to Manicheanism to Freemasonry), witchcraft, and Platonic humanists and philosophers.

Not only were the Masonic Rites formed from the early secret societies, but the secrecy of the Lodges encouraged and provided a forum for men of all types of anti-Christian persuasions, including - but not limited - to the Jews. John Robison, a Mason and a leading intellect of his day, exposed the conspiracy of Illuminized Masonry to take over the world and destroy Christianity in 1789.

After decades of working closely with these men and listening to them in the Lodges he writes about the activities of these men, "...although in direct opposition to a standing rule, and a declaration made to every newly received Brother, 'that nothing touching the religion or government shall ever be spoken of in the Lodge.' But the Lodges in other countries quickly followed the example of France, and have frequently become the rendezvous of innovators in religion and politics, and other disturbers of the public peace. In short, I have found that the covert of a Mason Lodge had been employed in every country for venting and propagating sentiments in religion and politics, that could not have been circulated in public without exposing the author to great danger. I found, that this impunity [freedom due to Masonry's secrecy] had gradually encouraged men of licentious principles to become more bold, and to teach doctrines subversive of all our notions of morality..."[31] "...under the protection of Masonic secrecy, they planned schemes... they formed associations in opposition to the... superstitions of the church....The church dreaded the consequences, and endeavored to suppress the Lodges. But in vain.... the rigours of the church only seved to knit the Brethren [Masonic Brethren] more firmly together...The Lodges became schools of skepticism and infidelity, and the spirit of conversion or proselytism [to spread Masonic Dogma] grew every day stronger. "[32]

Robison found in his attendence of Masonic meetings that even some of the Church officials like the Prince Bishop of Liege at the

Loge de la Parfaite Intelligence mocked and attacked the church in his talks given at the Masonic Lodge and this while many of the other Lodge members were dignitaries in the church.[33] This type of thing is still continueing. Today some of the most important "Christian" ministers who are Masons have only contempt for Christianity once they have the Lodge's secrecy to talk.

The *Standard Jewish Encyclopedia* states, "Early European Jewish settlers in the U.S. were amongst the most enthusiastic masons and the...first lodge in Newport, R.I....[was established by them]".[34] Indeed, the St. John's Lodge of Newport was one of the first lodges in the colonies.[35]

Charlestown, S.C. became a "capital" or a nerve center of Freemasonry for a number of reasons. The city of Charlestown, S.C. had the largest Jewish population of any U.S. city in 1800.[36] It was also an early strong point for the Unitarian church whose congregation originated in Charlestown in 1772.[37] Further, Charlestown was a cosmopolitan commercial center with strong French ties. (The Rite of Perfection came from France to Charlestown via the West Indies.)[38] The Scottish Rite's Sublime Grand Lodge of Perfection was created in Charlestown in 1783. Also the Order of Palladium (the Palladium Rite) had been started soon after 173 0 in Charlestown.[39] (The significance of this last point will been seen later.)

One of the original founders of the Mother Supreme Council, Scottish Rite, at Charleston, S.C. was Abraham Alexander. Abraham Alexander was the chazan (reader) for the Bayh Elohim Jewish Congregation,[40] and later a Rabbi.[41]

Another Jew involved in founding the Scottish Rite at Charleston was Moses C. Levy. He was a man of great learning who became the president of the Bayh Elohim congregation.[42]

The Inspector General appointed by the Grand Consistory of Princes of the Royal Secret to oversee Masonry in the British colonies in the New World was Stephen Morin, a Jew. Morin was joined by the Jewish Mason Moses M. Hays in Jamaica. Moses M. Hayes established the Sublime Lodge of Perfection in Boston, Mass.[43] The Jewish Mason Abraham Da Costa worked with Morin to establish Masonry in Charleston, S.C.[44] They set up the King Solomon Lodge. Morin forged Frederick the Great's signature on his Masonic documents to gain credibility. Another Jewish Mason, Isaac Dacosta, in 1758 working with Moses M. Hayes established the St. Andrew Lodge in Boston, and helped out in S. Car. Dacosta helped establish the Charleston Lodge of Perfection, and served as one of its Grand Masters. Joseph M. Meyers, another Jewish Mason was his successor.[45] The Jew Moses Cohen, who was originally initiated into Masonry in Philadelphia, was one of the first members of the Mother Lodge in Charleston.

From the two mother lodges in Boston and Charleston, S.C. came many of the Scottish Rite lodges.[46] Charleston, S.C. would also be known as the cradle of Reformed Judaism. Interestingly, the Jew Isaac Harby who fathered Reformed Judaism in Charleston is called "Pallas Athena" in the Jewish author Max Dimont's book *The Jews in America*, (Simon & Schuster, 1978), p. 93. The significance of this will be discussed soon.

And Charleston, S.C. would be the place the Civil War conflict began. Mason Brig. Gen.Beauregard ordered the first shots on Fort Sumpter.

One other prominant Jewish founder of the Mother Supreme Council, of the Scottish Rite was Israel de Lieben, a prosperous Jewish merchant.[47] And yet another Masonic merchant who participated in establishing the Mother Supreme Lodge, believed to be Jewish and having a monopoly on the world's Indigo (purple dye) trade, was Moses Lindo.[48]

SUMMARY OF JEWISH FOUNDERS OF THE MOTHER SUPREME LODGE

So far we have mentioned a few of those Jewish Masons who were involved with the founding of the Mother Supreme Lodge in Charleston, S.C. (there were other Jewish Masons): Abraham Alexander, Abraham Dacosta, Isaac Dacosta, Moses Cohen, Moses C. Levy, Israel de Lieben, Moses Lindo, Joseph M. Meyers, and last but not least Stephen Morin. (This explains why this Author slightly winces when he hears the oft said remark that the Jews had nothing to do with early Freemasonry.)

A quick overview of the eleven founders of the Supreme Council 33rd degree of the Scottish Rite:
Rabbi Abraham Alexander (33°)-Jewish
Emanuel De La Motta (33°)-Jewish
Israel De Lieben (33°)-Jewish
Moses Levy (33°)-Jewish
Dr. Isaac Auld (33°)-Presbyterian
Dr. Frederick Dalcho (33°)-Episcopalian
Dr. James Moultrie (33°)-Scot who studied at the University of Edinburgh, Scotland
de Grasse (33°)-French aristocrat active with Grand Orient Masonry
Jean B. Delahogue (33°)-Frenchman
Mitchell & Bowen (both 33°) -two men born in Ireland.[49]

Hezekiah Levy, a Jewish Mason, was one of the earliest members of the Fredericksburg Lodge No. 4 to which President George Washington would join.[50]

Jews played prominant roles in the lodges in America and Europe. For instance, the English Grand Lodge's Coat of Arms was designed by Jewish Mason J.J. Leon Templo.[51] In 1717, when Anderson's Constitution began to be drawn up, the Constitution not only included parts of Egyptian and Pythagorian thought, but also included the two pillars Jachin and Boaz which derive from Jewish Rabbinical tradition concerning Solomon's temple.

The German Jewish Mason Moses Mendelsohn (1729-1796) was a friend of the Mason philosopher Kant and was himself a very famous philosopher. He has been called the "German Socrates." He wrote a metaphysical book Abhandlung uber die Evidenz in den Metaphysichen Wissenschaften.[52] Another Jewish Mason, Karl L. Reinhold, was also a philosopher and friend of Kant. He published Letters on the Philosophy of Kant, and the book The Hebrew Mysteries or the Oldest Religious Freemasonry. This later book explains that Moses got his religious system from the Egyptians, and that Freemasonry derives from that lineage. Remember, that Moses practiced magic.[53]

LIST OF OFFICERS ELECTED BY THE ROYAL LODGE OF THE COMMANDERS OF THE TEMPLE, FOR THE ORIENT OF CABCASSONE, to direct the labors from the 24th day of the fourth month of the year of G: L: 5785 to the same day of the year 5786.

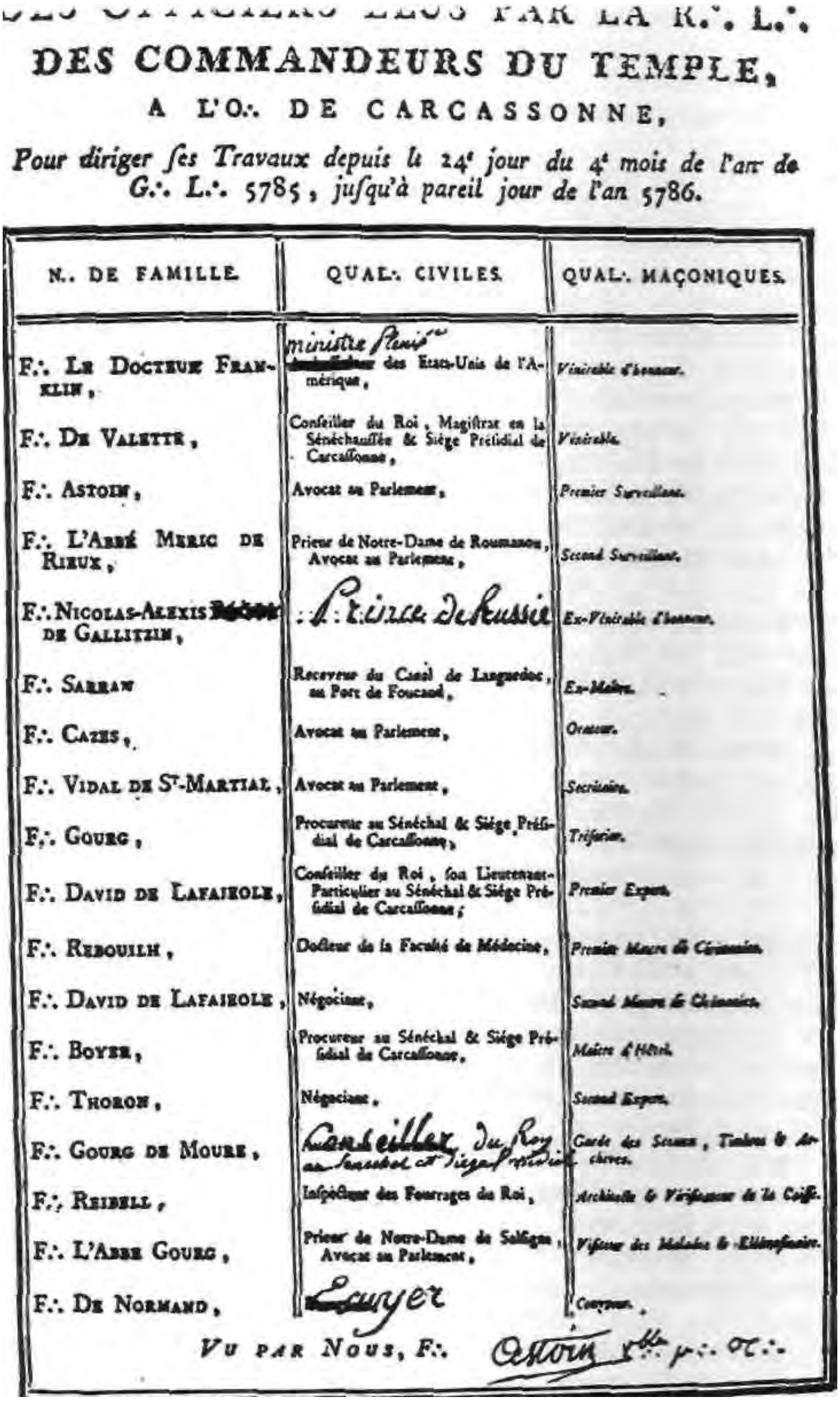

DES OFFICIERS ÉLUS PAR LA R.·. L.·.

DES COMMANDEURS DU TEMPLE,

A L'O.·. DE CARCASSONNE,

Pour diriger ſes Travaux depuis le 24ᵉ jour du 4ᵉ mois de l'an de G.·. L.·. 5785, juſqu'à pareil jour de l'an 5786.

N.. DE FAMILLE.	QUAL.·. CIVILES.	QUAL.·. MAÇONIQUES.
F.·. LE DOCTEUR FRANKLIN,	ministre Plenipo ~~[illegible]~~ des Etats-Unis de l'Amérique,	*Vénérable d'honneur.*
F.·. DE VALETTE,	Conſeiller du Roi, Magiſtrat en la Sénéchauſſée & Siège Préſidial de Carcaſſonne,	*Vénérable.*
F.·. ASTOIN,	Avocat au Parlement,	*Premier Surveillant.*
F.·. L'ABBÉ MERIC DE RIEUX,	Prieur de Notre-Dame de Roumanou, Avocat au Parlement,	*Second Surveillant.*
F.·. NICOLAS-ALEXIS ~~[illegible]~~ DE GALLITZIN,	: P : Prince de Russie	*Ex-Vénérable d'honneur.*
F.·. SARRAN	Receveur du Canal de Languedoc, au Port de Foucaud,	*Ex-Maître.*
F.·. CAZES,	Avocat au Parlement,	*Orateur.*
F.·. VIDAL DE Sᵀ-MARTIAL,	Avocat au Parlement,	*Secrétaire.*
F.·. GOURG,	Procureur au Sénéchal & Siège Préſidial de Carcaſſonne,	*Tréſorier.*
F.·. DAVID DE LAFAJEOLE,	Conſeiller du Roi, ſon Lieutenant-Particulier au Sénéchal & Siège Préſidial de Carcaſſonne;	*Premier Expert.*
F.·. REBOUILH,	Docteur de la Faculté de Médecine,	*Premier Maître des Cérémonies.*
F.·. DAVID DE LAFAJEOLE,	Négociant,	*Second Maître de Cérémonies.*
F.·. BOYER,	Procureur au Sénéchal & Siège Préſidial de Carcaſſonne,	*Maître d'Hôtel.*
F.·. THORON,	Négociant,	*Second Expert.*
F.·. GOURG DE MOURE,	~~[illegible]~~ Conseiller du Roy au Senechal et Siege presidial	*Garde des Sceaux, Timbres & Archives.*
F.·. REIBELL,	Inſpecteur des Fourrages du Roi,	*Architecte & Vérificateur de la Caiſſe.*
F.·. L'ABBÉ GOURG,	Prieur de Notre-Dame de Salſigne, Avocat au Parlement,	*Viſiteur des Malades & Elémoſinaire.*
F.·. DE NORMAND,	~~[illegible]~~ Ecuyer	*Couvreur.*

VU PAR NOUS, F.·. Astoin [illegible] p.·. or.·.

Many of the Lectures of the Sublime degrees contain an epiteme of the arts and sciences, and in their hisory many valuable and important facts are recorded, obtained from authentic archives in the possession of our society, and which, from the manner of their communication can never be mutilated or corrupted. This is an object of the first magnitude in a society whose principles and practices should be invariable? Much variety and irregularity has unfortunately crept into the Blue degrees, in consequence of the want of Masonic knowledge in many of those who, preside over their meetings, and it is particularly so with those, who are unacquainted with the Hebrew language, in which all the Words and Pass-Words are given. So essentially necessary is it for a man of science to preside overs Lodges that much injury may arise from the smallest deviation in the ceremony of initition, or in the Lectures of instruction. We read in the book of Judges, that the transposition of a single point over the Sbeez; in confequence of a national, defect among the Epharimites designated the Cowans, and led to the slaughter of forty-two thousand. The Sublime figure of the Divinity formed in the Fellow-Crafts degree, can be elegantly illustrated, only by those who possess some knowledge of the Talmud. Most of the Words in the Sublime degrees are derived from the Chaldean Hebrew and Latin languages.

The various tranflations which the Symbolic degrees have undergone since their first establishment, from one language to another, and that; oftentimes by men illiterate even in their mother tongue, is another cause of the variety which we lament. Not so the superior degrees, they appear in that Sublime dress which their founders gave them; skilled in science and embellished by genius. Many of the Sublime degrees are founded on the polite arts, and unfold a mass of information of the first importance to Masons.

Although many of the Sublime degrees are in fact, a continuation of the Blue degrees, yet there is no interference between the two bodies. Throughout the continent of Europe, and the West-Indies, where they are very generally known, they are acknowledged and encouraged. The Sublime Masons never initiate any into the blue degrees, without a legal warrant obtained for that purpose from a Symbolic Grand Lodge; but they communicate the secrets of the Chair to such appllicants, who have not already received it, previous to their initiation into the Sublime Lodge, but they are, at the same time informed, that it does not give them rank as Past Masters in the Grand Lodge.

The Sublime Grand Lodge, sometimes called the Inessable Lodge or the Lodge of Perfection extends from the 4th to the 14th degree inclusive which last is the degree of Perfection. 16th degree is the Grand Council of Princes of Jerusalem, who hold jurisdiction over the 15th degree, called Knights of the East, and also over the Sublime Grand Lodge, and is to them, what a Symbolic Grand Lodge is to the subordinate Lodges. Without a warrant and Constitution regularly issued by them, or by an higher Council of Inspector, they are deemed irregular and are punished accordingly. All the degrees above the 16th are under the jurisdiction of the supreme Council of Grand Inspectors General, who are Sovereigns of Masonry. When it is necessary to establish the Sublime degrees in a Country where they are unknown, a Brother of the 29th degree, vhich is called K. H. is appointed Deputy Inspector General, over the district. He selects from among the Craft such Brethren as he believes will do honor to the fociety, and communicates the Sublime degrees to as many as is necessary for the first organization of the Lodge, when they elect their own officers, and govern themselves by the Constitution, and warrant which is furnished them. The jurisdiction of a Lodge of Perfection, is twenty-five Leagues.

It is well known that about 27,000 Masons accompanied the the Christian Princes in the Crusades, to recover the Holy land from the Infidels. While in Palestine, they discovered several important Masonic manuscripts, among; the descendants of the ancient Jews, which enriched our Archives with authentic written records, and on which, some of our degrees are founded.

In the years 5304 and 5311, some very exraordinary discoveries were made, and occurrences took place, which renders the Masonic History of that period, of the highest importance. A pe-, riod dear to the Masons heart, who is zealous in the cause of his Order, his Country and his God.

A New York Jewish Mason Haym Saloman (1740-1785) helped finance the American Revolution for the Americans, and was noted to have given financial aid to many of the revolutionary leaders including Jefferson, Madison, and Randolph. Arrested by the British, he somehow got free and escaped to American lines.[54]

While the Jewish Mason Saloman financed the Americans, the Jewish family of the Rothschilds (who participated in secret societies) were making large sums of money from the American Revolution due to their banking arrangements with the Elector of Hesse, who rented German troops to the German British Monarch to fight the Americans.

[figure 10a PHOTOCOPY 2 X 6.5]
THIS IS A SMALL PORTION OF A MASONIC CIRCULAR SENT WORLDWIDE IN 1802 STATING THAT THE SUBLIME FIGURE OF DIVINITY OF THE FELLOWCRAFT DEGREES CAN BE FULLY UNDERSTOOD ONLY BY THOSE WITH KNOWLEDGE OF THE TALMUD.

[FIGURE 11 picture of French Lodge Document with Franklin's name PHOTOCOPY 7.2 5 x 4.3]

LIST OF THE OFFICERS ELECTED BY THE ROYAL LODGE OF THE COMMANDERS OF THE TEMPLE, FOR THE ORIENT OF CARCASSONE, TO DIRECT THE LODGE FROM THE 24TH DAY OF THE 4TH MONTH OF THE G: L: 5785 TO THE SAME DAY OF THE YEAR 5786. (YEARS ARE NOT A.D. BUT A.L.-ANNO LUCIS. AFTER LIGHT or AFTER LUCIFER)

ONE OF THE EARLY POWERFUL FREEMASONS

A very famous Jewish Mason, born in Boston to descendents of the Puritan tradition is Benjamin Franklin. His father and mother were Josiah and Abiah Franklin. Benjamin Franklin contributed to the Mikveh Israel Jewish congregation in Philadelphia.[55] But Franklin did not practice Judiasm. He did practice the occult, and things that would be weird to Christians. He became the head of the very occultic Grand Orient Freemasons when he was in France. Franklin's life was surrounded by Freemasons. Franklin's role in the establishment and promotion of Freemasonry is overwhelming. His role in the destruction of Christianity is quite unknown.

Franklin's career as a Freemason is shrouded in mystery. This Author has in his library the somewhat rare book Benjamin Franklin as a Freemason by Julius Sachse (J.F. Sachse is the last of a line of Sachses in the World Order.) This leading Masonic scholar writes, "To write the history of Franklin as a Freemason is virtually to chronicle the early Masonic history of America....A great difficulty, however, here confronts us, notwithstanding the prominence of FRANKLIN in Pennslyvannia Freemasonry; strange as it appears, he does not mention a word of his Masonic connections or career in his Autobiography, or in any of his correspondence, with but two exceptions, so far as known. This omission is the more remarkable when we look at his Masonic career while in France during the later years of his life. There, his activity and intimacy with the Brethren was intimate and close, both personal and official, FRANKLIN taking an active part in their proceedings, even advancing to the so-called higher degrees."[56]

In spite of all his many duties, Benjamin Franklin was "never absent from a [Masonic] meeting."[57]

The Masonic Lodge played such a big role in Franklin's life, and yet Franklin never even hints about Freemasonry in his autobiography. The editor of his autobiography points out that Franklin tried to portray an unreal persona in his autobiography, but one that Franklin felt people would want to emulate.[58] If Masonry is so virtuous, one wonders why it plays no role in his autobiography which was written on purpose to create an image worthy of emulation.

Benjamin Franklin was the founder of the American Philosophical Society.[59] He was also a Rosicrucian.[60] In Feb. 1730, it appears he was initiated into St. John's Lodge of Philadelphia.[61] And in 1727, he started the secret revolutionary political society called the Leather Apron Club which changed its name in 1731 to Junto, and took on the appearance of being a literary society.[62] The same year that this "literary" society changed its name, the St. John's Masonic Lodge that Franklin belonged to got in touch with the Grand Lodge of London whose Grand Master the Duke of Norfolk appointed Daniel Coxe. Daniel Coxe advised the Masons when he arrived of a plan for the federation of the colonies.[63] In 1754, while deputy Grand Master, Franklin unveiled at Albany, NY to his brother Masons his plan to unite all the colonies under one government.[64] Albany was the site of one the earliest Scottish Rite's Lodge of Perfection.

Between Jan 21, 1769 and Jan. 21, 1772 a series of inflamatory letters called The Letters of Junius, which were written in England, were circulated through out the American colonies. The letters advanced those causes that the colonists would declare to be the causes of their revolution, human rights, freedom of the press, and taxation without representation. The letters were read by Franklin and many of the Masons who initiated the American Revolution. The man who wrote these letters according to his niece, was the Reverend James Wilmot (1726-1808) a Mason and rector of Barton-on-the-Heath, in Warwickshire in 1785. He also was the first person to publicly name Bacon as the author of Shakespeare's works.[65] He also apparently was in contact with the Lodge of Nine Sisters in France that Franklin would join in 1777.[66]

"Historians have never ceased to wonder at the enormous psychological influence which Franklin exercised in colonial politics. But up to the present day, few indeed are those who have realized that the source of his power lay in the secret societies to which he belonged and which he was the appointed spokesman."[67]

Independence Hall which became the famous center of the Revolution was built by the Masons. It is believed by some that the Mason Benjamin Franklin layed its cornerstone, others say it was another Freemason instead.

(For more on the American Revolution, the Masons, and what the history books are lacking see chapter 3.4)

BENJAMIN FRANKLIN & RELIGION

Some of Franklin's Masonic brothers in France were impressed by the rituals, etc. that he thought up for a new religion.

Turning our attention to a different aspect of Franklin's, in a statement of beliefs Franklin states, "I conceive then, that the INFINITE has created many beings or Gods... It may be that these created Gods are immortal; or it may be that after many Ages, they are changed, and others Supply their Places."[68]

Not only were Franklin's beliefs not Christian, but in the later years of his life all the Christian standards were violated, so that it is really a travesty of honest reporting, that Franklin is held up by so many as a role model for Protestants. The distortions in the popular history books about Franklin are but a microcosm of the distortions that history books in general suffer from.

FRANKLIN'S MOTHER'S CONCERN

His mother was very concerned that he had joined the Freemasons, and strongly objected. In diplomatic double-talk he advised her not to worry about what she didn't know about. "As to the Freemasons, unless she will believe me when I assure her that they are in general a very harmless sort of People; and have no principles or Practices that are inconsistent with Religion or good Manners, I know no Way of giving my Mother a better Opinion of them than she seems to have at present (since it is not allow'd that Women should be admitted into that secret Society)... I must entreat her to suspend Judgment till she is better inform'd,..."[69] To paraphrase--So Mom I can't tell you anything more, but don't judge until you're well informed about us.

THE ROSICRUCIANS

There have been numerous small groups of Rosicrucians of various kinds. (See the diagram) The purpose stated by one of the principal Rosicrucian groups: "The Fraternity is now entirely devoted to philosophical research, spiritual training and Occult Initiation."[70]

The famous Jewish magician Eliphas Levi (self-named Zahed)[71] was the Supreme Grand Master of the Rosicrucians in 1861, when the next Supreme Grand Master, the American Dr. P.B. Randolph was chosen.[72] Eliphas Levi was a deep student of the Kaballah, and wrote many books on magic, including the *History of Magic.* His 1896 edition of *Transcendental Magic* carries a big illustration of the "Star of David." One hostile biographer claimed he charged up to 25 Francs to give clients prophecies from Lucifer.[73] Lytton knew Levi. Lytton tried to establish a magic society in London, which Madame Blavatsky became acquainted with.[74] (Magic, the Jewish Cabala, and Freemasonry are connected. A large number of famous magicians have been Jewish Freemasons.)[75]

This Rosicrucian group had an Order which in England was called The Order of the Rose, in France L'Ordre du Lis, and in America The Order of the Lily. During the Civil War, the Rosicrucian Council of Three of the Order of the Lily consisted of Paschal Beverly Randolph, General Ethan Allen Hitchcock (his mother was the Mason Ethan Allen's daughter), and Abraham Lincoln.[76] It is well known that Lincoln and his wife had seances, etc. in the White House. Abraham Lincoln's wife was especially into spiritism. Rev. Cole of the Church of Illumination writes in *The Light of Life,* "Abraham Lincoln also received his training in the Regeneration, in like manner, under the great Teacher Dr. P.B. Randolph."[77]

This helps solve one "mystery" about Abraham Lincoln. Abraham Lincoln was never a Mason, but many lodges and individual Masons believed he was.[78] Lincoln had been asked to join, but turned down the chance. A French Masonic magazine *Monde Maconnique* referred to Lincoln as a "member of the Grand Lodge of New York."[79] It appears from various reliable Masonic sources that Lincoln was not a Mason. But he was a Rosicrucian. The close affiliation between the two orders, and the overlapping memberships would naturally tend to cloud the issue. During the Civil War, Randolph and Hitchcock, who were close friends, Dr. Alexander Wilder and Abraham Lincoln formed the nucleus of the Rosicrucians in Wash.D.C.[80] Hitchcock in a compilation of his notes *Fifty Years in Camp and Field* alludes to their meetings with the President.

(Lincoln was the man the Rothschilds wanted, for his election provoked secession by the South. Their plans were to control Lincoln. He turned out to be a far greater man than people expected.)

THE LEADERSHIP OF ROSICRUCIANS

The leadership consists of a Grand Master and a Council of 3 . Underneath this are a Council of 7, Council of 9, and a Council of 21. Their Priests are called Priests of AEth or Priests of Light. They have Round Table discussions, and an Order of Chivalry, the Knights of the Holy Grail. They are associated with the Martinist Order of Freemasonry.

THE AMORC (The Ancient, Mystical Order Rosae Crucis) GROUP OF ROSICRUCIANS IS A SEPARATE GROUP FROM THE CHURCH OF ILLUMINATION

The AMORC group of Rosicrucians headquartered in San Jose, CA and Sussex, England puts a cartouche on the odd-numbered pages of their *Rosicrucian Digest.* The three symbols represent the following--the bug (the people of the earth) , the crown (the illuminated one), the circle with its dot (the all-seeing eye).

[FIGURE 12 show the Cartouche here PHOTOCOPY 1 x .5]

What then are the major differences between the Masons and this line of Rosicrucians? The Masonic Lodges were known to the public and practice symbolic ritual, the Rosicrucians were secret and were spiritual, "...training is often given secretly even in our day," and "...today there are numerous men... receiving instructions from the Great Order unbeknown to their closest friends."[81] (This does not apply to AMORC which is less secret.) Masonry was a brotherhood introducing the occult but not demanding any religious growth from the initiate, while the Rosicrucians have always linked "spiritual growth" to the progress of their initiates.

At the time of the Revolution, the Council of Three consisted of Benjamin Franklin, George Clymer and Thomas Paine.[82] George Washington received his training in Regeneration from Paul Ardenheim, the Monk of Wissahikon.[83] Thomas Jefferson was also a member of the Order, as well as Lafayette, who was initiated in France prior to helping with the Amer. Revolution.

Later british King Edward belonged to the Order of the Rose.

A GREAT MYSTERY

There is a great man of history whose life was more mystery than it was known. But certain men, especially Alfred F. Dodd, have broken codes, have uncovered ancient overlooked letters and documents, and have analyzed and put multitudes of tiny pieces together so that the evidence is so great as to be incontrovertable about who this man really was. But it is not likely you know who I am writing about, because Alfred Dodd's books with their evidence have been supressed by the system.[84]

I am writing about an extraordinary genius, a great philosopher, a great orator, a great lawyer, and a man of great character. A man who was framed in his old age for a crime he was innocent of, by a ruthless politician.[85] A man who gathered the sciences together under the Royal Society.[86] The man who wrote the greatest works of English literature,[87] and proofread the King James Bible.[88] Many of his incredible works of genius are known under his pen-name of William Shakespeare.[89] He conjectured ahead of his times that heat was energy in motion, and that light travels very fast.[90] He created the modern English language and is responsible for English replacing Latin in the English higher schools.[91] He was of royal blood and proper heir to the throne of England.[92]

He also lived in an age when the shadow of the executioner's block haunted men. It was a day when the heads of those who displeased the Queen were severed and put on public display. He would have lost his head for some of his works written under Shakespeare's name had the Queen been able to identify who wrote the works. Therefore, he wrote much of his works under pseudonyms, and many of his works were published after his death. He concealed his royal identity. He concealed his leadership of secret

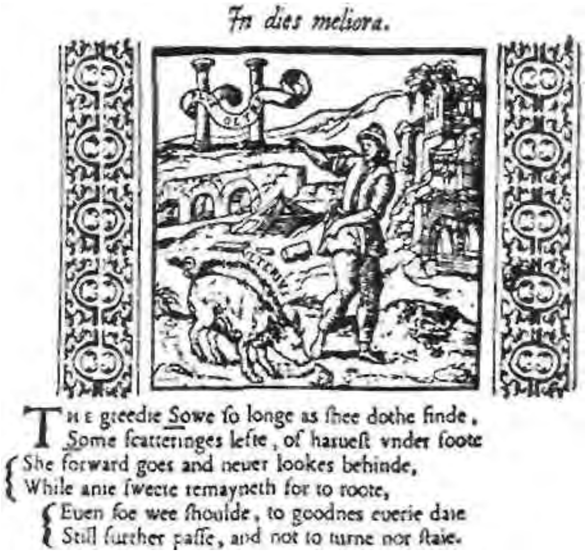

In dies meliora.

THE greedie Sowe ſo longe as ſhee dothe finde,
Some ſcatteringes lefte, of harueſt vnder foote
She forward goes and neuer lookes behinde,
While anie ſweete remayneth for to roote,
Euen ſoe wee ſhoulde, to goodnes euerie daie
Still further paſſe, and not to turne nor ſtaie.

THE TWO PILLARS OF MASONRY AND OTHER ESOTERIC EMBLEMS IN 1586
Facsimile of page 53, the upper half of Whitney's "Choice of Emblems" (1586)

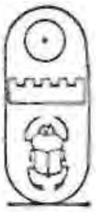

FIG. 12

FIG. 13

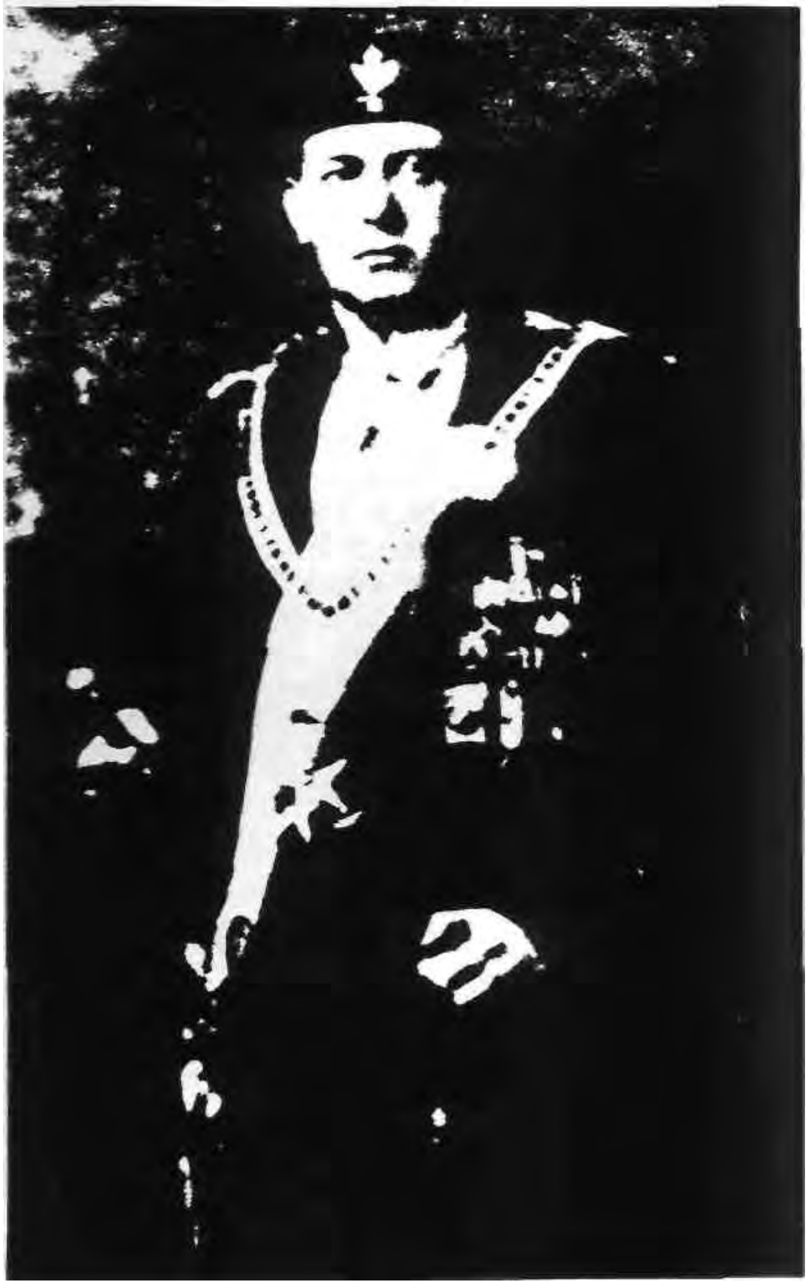

FIG. 14

societies.[93] He concealed the role he played in designing the plans and machinery for the creation of his vision of a New World.[94] His mother the Queen, ruling when half of her people questioned her legitimacy, feared the repercussions if the truth of her secret marriage and two sons were revealed. Indeed his mother, Queen Elizabeth 1, had almost been beheaded by her own sister, and had watched the first man who she had romanced be beheaded by her father for him being to forward. She had watched baby heirs to the throne be killed. Such barbarism is forgotten, and the Elizabethian age seems now to be only full of the glamour of romance. It was difficult and dangerous times, even for the Queen of England.

Who was this great man? Sir Francis Bacon, Viscount St. Alban, for over two decades the leader of the British Parliment's House of Commons, and later in life, on January 30,1621, a member of the House of Lords, the secret first son of the secret marriage between Lord Robert Dudley and Elizabeth Tudor.

[FIGURE 13 PHOTOCOPY 2 x 2.6]
IN 1586 FRANCIS BACON PUBLISHED A BOOK CHOICE OF EMBLEMS WITH THIS PICTURE CONTAINING THE MASONIC PILLERS (Joachin and Boaz) & OTHER ESOTERIC SYMBOLS.

A GREAT BIRTHDAY PARTY

On 22 January, 1621 in honor of Sir Francis Bacon's sixteeth birthday, a select group of men assembled without fanfare for a great Masonic banquet. This Masonic banquet was to pay tribute to their leader, Sir Francis Bacon. Only those of the Rosicrosse, the Rosicrucians, and the Masons who were already aware of Bacon's leadership role were invited.

Bacon's favorite perfumes had been used. The meeting was at the Great Hall at York House, England (now known as Whitehall) . The tables were T-tables with gleaming white drapery and silver. Flowers decorated the Great Hall.

A dear longtime friend of Bacon's, the famous English Poet Ben Jonson gave a Masonic ode to Bacon that day.-Jonson once remarked something like, "I love the man (Bacon) and do honor his memory above all others."[95] First, Ben Jonson toasted his friend. Next, one can picture this man with his strong face and long nose, and full, thick, and wavy hair, and short mustache and beard as he read out his ode in English.

On Francis Bacon's Sixteeth Birthday
Hail! Happy Genius of this Ancient Pile!
How comes it all things so about thee Smile?
The Fire? the Wine? The Men? and in the MIDST
Thou STAND' ST as if some MYSTERY thou didst.[96]

This ode goes by most of us today, without being told the double meaning it had for those Masons that day. "Hail" was a masonic sign, a masonic call. The word Pile also meant spear in those days--an illusion to Francis Bacon's role as the Happy genius who was Pallas-Athena the Spear-Shaker. Smiles referred to their fellowship in their brotherhood. The Masons would Fire with their glasses, and the Wine refers to their toasts that vent along with their Firing Glasses. As their gathering was all male it refers to the Men. Because Bacon was like a Christ figure Ben uses the wording "in the MIDST." Finally, the word Mystery is full of Masonic connotation. Sir Francis Bacon had revived the Mysteries which only his genius and deep scholarship could have done so well.[97]

THE MASONS PRINT BACON'S DIARY YEARS LATER

In 1625, Sir Francis Bacon was busy getting his affairs in order. He arranged his private diary of sonnets carefully, and then disarranged them to destroy personal meanings. The private Rosicrosse Press published it for the exclusive use of the heads of the Rosicrosse-Masons. Finally in 1766, the Mason George Steevens reprinted this Masonic secret book.

FRANCIS BACON & THE PRIEURE DE SION

The Grand Masters of the Prieure de Sion during those times were Robert Fludd (1595-1637), J. Valentin Andrea (1637-1654), and Robert Boyle (1654-1691).[98] The driving force behind what became the Royal Society, the British scientific society, were Robert Fludd, Robert Boyle, Wren, Ashmole, Locke, and Sir Thomas Moray.[99] Interestingly, all of these men were both Freemasons and Rosicrucians.[100] When King Charles II raised the Academie (which had gone through various names, the Gresham College, The Invisible College of Scientists) to its present status of the Royal Society, Francis Bacon was honored as the "Moses" who had led the Invisible College through its "wilderness."[101]

Sir Francis Bacon knew the Prieure de Sion. He stayed according to a number of reliable historians,[102] with the Prieure de Sion's Grand-Master-to-be Andrea in Berlin the last years of his life, after faking his death in England.[103]

Sir Francis Bacon is widely known for his Utopian book the New Atlantis. What is not widely known is that it was originally titled The Land of the Rosicrucians. The concept of Atlantis has been preserved by the Mysteries. Sir Francis Bacon and the other leaders of Secret Societies in that day felt the New World held out the best chances to create the New Atlantis.[104] Sir Francis Bacon played a leading role in creating the British colonies, especially in Virginia, the Carolina's and Newfoundland.[105] The British Masons with the British Empire behind them were entrusted with the Plan to create the New Atlantis. Bacon's descendants moved to Virginia in 1635, where his descendant Henry Blount took the name Nathaniel Bacon.[106] Nathaniel Bacon, a Master Mason,[107] led a premature revolution called Bacon's Rebellion that prefigured the American Revolution.[108] It is true that Freemasons served on both sides of the American Revolution. Naive people think that indicates that the Masons could not have had anything to do with the Revolution.[109] On the contrary, the Masons were the primary instigators and leaders of the Revolution, although they allowed others to get involved. The British Masons fighting the rebels actually contributed to eventual independence of the Colonies,[110] as did the secret societies in France and Germany.

The Masons claim to know something about Sir Francis Bacon uncovered by excavations done in Williamsburg, Virginia. A vault left by his descendants supposedly gives information about the founding of the United States.[111]

Some of Sir Francis Bacon's last words known to us, "I have held up a light in the obscurity of Philosophy, which will be seen centuries after I am dead. It will be seen amidst the erection of Tombs, Theaters, Foundations, Temples, of Orders and Fraternities for nobility and obedience,--the establishment of good laws as an example to the World. For I am not raising a Capital or Pyramid to the Pride of men, but laying a foundation in the human Understanding for a holy Temple after the model of the World. For my memory I leave it to Men's charitable speeches, to foreign Nations and the next Ages, and to my own Country after some Time has elapsed."[112]

At another occasion he said, "I go the same way as the Ancients, but I have something better to offer than the Morality Dramas of the Greeks and the Mystery Ceremonials of the Egyptians." True, he gave part of the Masonic ritual[113] and much of it decidedly non-Christian.

TWO NOTABLE OCCULTISTS THAT WERE FREQUENTLY AROUND BACON

The Earl of Leichester, who was Bacon's actual father, had as his physician the magician and Jew Dr. Frederigo Lopez. Christopher Marlowe described Lopez in a dramatization of his career in the book *The Jew of Malta.* Marlowe was stabbed to death after the book came out.[114] Sir John Dee, who was another magician/doctor, travelled throughout Europe and was the court astrologer for Queen Elizabeth. (See chapter 1.11 about John Dee.)

THE NEW ATLANTIS

Bacon describes the Masons in New Atlantis "...amongst the excellent acts of that king, one above all hath the pre-eminence. It was the erection and institution of an order, or society, which we call Solomon's House; the noblest foundation, as we think, that ever was upon the earth..."[115]

THINGS HAVE CHANGED

The idealism, charity, and integrity that characterized Bacon is notably absent today in the inner circle of the One-World-State power. Bacon was a Philosopher. A man who for much of his life was not wealthy or exceptionally powerful. His life was in jeopardy a great deal of the time, although contrarywise he and those who knew about his secret royal blood were more respectful, never knowing if he might be proclaimed King by his mother the Queen. When James 1 took over the throne from Bacon's mother, to protect his head Bacon wrote a letter to King James 1, delivered through the Secretary of State, renouncing any ambition to the throne, and announcing his decision to marry a commoner.[116] By comparison, those who are as prominant today in the One-World-State as Bacon was then are part of a far greater power, and have been corrupted by that power. Technology has made a One-World-State much more ominous. It is possibe that Bacon would be aghast at what the One-World-State is going to be.

GOING PUBLIC IN 1717

In 1717, four lodges in London went public. To give the reader the frame of mind that the "new" lodges had, a quote from a Masonic book *Defense of Masonry,* (1730) is informative as to their view of antiquity. "The System, as taught in the regular Lodges, may have some Redundancies or Defects, occasion'd by the Ignorance or Indolance of the old members. And indeed, considering through what Obscurity and Darkness the MYSTERY has been deliver'd down; ...notwithstanding the great Rust it may have contracted, there is much of the OLD FABRICK remaining..."[117]

According to Christian researcher Edith Star Miller,[118] once Masonry was open to the public, it was to serve as the screen behind which a host of secret societies, whether theurgic or political, would operate clandestinely. In other words, organizations like the secret Palladium Rite of Masonry find it easier to function secretly behind the screen of regular Masonry. Masonry acts as a clearing house for many of the occult organizations. The center switchboard for the various types of Masonic lodges is the Alpina Lodge in Switzerland.

The Sufi mysticism, which is masonic theosophy, operates in cooperation with Freemasonry. Sufism has "a species of Masonic or Eleusian initiation from lower to higher degrees."[119] The Sufi leader to be, who is considered the Messiah by the Sufis, is being helped by a select group which includes several Masons to be revealed as Lord Matreya.(See chapter 1.4)

One researcher of Masonry offered his evaluation, "The masonic Order usually draws its members from the leading merchants, and from the professions, bankers, doctors, and lawyers. They come to their meetings, they dabble in some charity work, and in general, they mark time until the day when they are asked to perform some unusual task for a fellow Mason, or for the national or world order. At that time, they finally realize that the blood oath does have significance, but by that time it is usually too late. They may be asked to support a Masonic candidate for political office, to swing a business deal to a fellow Mason, or. even to commit perjury or some other illegal act for a brother Mason. Even then, they are never offered any confidences; they are merely told what they must do, and they obey."[120]

Ex-Masons confirm this. They also indicate that some of the more insignificant members may not be in a position to help, and may not be called upon for favors.

THE PRIEURE DE SION & THE ILLUMINATI

In order to explain the connection let us cover the structure of Masonry.

One of the Modern known groups of the Illuminati is also known as the Ancient Order of Oriental Templars (Ordo Templi Orientis) . However, its own esoteric name is Order of To Ov. It's publication was *The Equinox.* According to *The Equinox,* Vol. III No. 1, 1919 the

O.T.O. is "a body of initiates in whose hands are concentrated the the wisdom and knowledge of the following bodies:

1. The Gnostic Catholic Church
2. The Order of the Knights of the Holy Ghost
3. The Order of the Illuminati
4. The Order of the Temple (Knights Templar)
5. The Order of the Knights of St. John
6. The Order of the Knights of Malta
7. The Order of the Knights of the Holy Sepulchre
8. The Hidden Church of the Holy Grail
9. The Hermetic Brotherhood of Light
10. The Holy Order of Rose Croix of Heredom
11. The Order of the Holy Royal Arch of Enoch
12. The Antient and Primitive Rite of Masonry (33 degrees)
13. The Rite of Memphis (97 degrees)
14. The Rite of Mizraim (90 degrees)
15. The Antient and Accepted Scottish Rite of Masonry (33 degrees)
16. The Swedenborgian Rite of Masonry [9 degrees]
17. The Order of Martinists [3 degrees]
18. The Order of the Sat Bhai, [14 degrees] and many other orders of equal merit, if of less fame." (End of quote).

It is clear from reading their own publication The Equinox (published from 1909-13) that the O.T.O. has suceeded in placing their people in the leadership positions of those listed Orders and Rites. Aleister Crowley was the leader of the O.T.O. when he was alive. Can the O.T.O.'s literature be taken seriously that it concentrated the esoteric Gnosis of the above groups?

[FIGURE 14 reduced picture of Aleister Crowley in his garb SCAN 7 X 3.5]

33° Scottish Rite Mason Aleister Crowley appears in his masonic OTO garb. Crowley who called himself "the Beast" is imfamous as one of the world's leading Satanists.

Yes, an examination of the leadership of the above groups shows interlocking directories of power; those interlocking directories also interlock with the O.T.O. To belong to the O.T.O. initiates pledge loyalty to "unseen superiors". The O.T.O. was openly Satanic, worshipping Satan, and the Anti-Christ. The Black Mass is performed by them, and their rituals include blood, sacrifices, excrement, horrible sexual acts, etc.

The Masonic pamphlet "The Grand Mystic Temple" describes how the the Scottish Rite Supreme Grand Council in America, the Rite of Mizraim, and the Rite of Memphis allied themselves together. The Rite of Mizraim and Memphis had already been allied prior to this union.

To illustrate the interlocking directories of various rites and orders--some more openly occultic and Satanic than others let us consider the following men. (The following were compiled from Masonic/ Esotoric sources too numerous to footnote.)

ALEISTER CROWLEY (1875-1947) For Crowley's personal description of his initiation to the 33rd degree of the Scottish Rite read his book Confessions.)
He was the following: Ancient and Primitive Rite of Memphis-Patriarch Grand Administrator General, 96th degree; Scottish Rite, 33rd degree; Rite of Mizraim 90th degree; Order of the Golden Dawn, Ruling Chief or Supreme Magus; Order of Ov Tov, Chief Magus, or Frater, aka Master Therion; Stella Matutina, chief; and other things. Of Jewish ancestry.

ADOLPHE ISAAC CREMIEUX (1796-1880)

He was the following: Scottish Rite, 33rd degree and Grand Master; Alliance Israelite Universelle, part founder and twice later Pres.; Carbonari, member; Order of Mizraim, Supreme Council, 90th degree; Grand Orient, 33 degree and Grand Master; friend of Karl Marx, the Rothschilds, and Maurice Joly; a Jew.

JOHN YARKER (1833-1913)

He was the following: Scottish Rite, 33rd degree; Cerneau Rite, 33rd degree; Ancient and Primitive Rite, Imperial Grand Hierophant 97th degree; Rite of Mizraim, 90th degree, Royal Grand Commander of the Rose Croix and Kadosch, 1868-1874; Sat Bhau of Prag, President and co-sponsor; Hon. Grand Master of Cuba, of Unit. Sup. Grnd. Coun. It., and of Society Alchemica, Grand Warden of Greece, Order of Lamaistique, 5th degree; Grand Chancellor of the Confederated Rites (1882-83); Rite of Swedenborg, Supreme Grand Master; Grand Representative of the Grand Lodge of Germany, 1902-06; Rite of Ishmael, head; Red Branch of Eri, head; York Rite, Knights Templar; Knights Templar Priest, 7th degree; Martinist Order, delegate of the Supreme Council; friend of Henry J. Seymour and William Wynn Wescott; Fratres Lucis (Grand Lamaistic Order of Light), Crown of Kether; Societas Rosicruciana in Anglia, IX; Order of Tov Ov (OTO), member.

WILLIAM WYNN WESTCOTT (1848-1925)

He was the following: Scottish Rite, 30th degree; Quatuor Coronati Research Lodge, G. Master; Grand Lodge of England, Junior Grand Deacon; Societas Rosicruciana in Anglia, secretary-general and Supreme Magus (head); Golden Dawn, head; Rite of Swedenborg, Secretary; Royal Arch, Grand Standard Bearer; OTO, Regent of the Illuminati; supporter of H.P. Blavatsky, friend of Papus, and John Yarker, and Theodore Reuss.

PAPUS (DR. GERALD ENCAUSSE) (1865-1916)

He was the following: Order of Martinism, Grand Master; Rite of Mizraim, Grand Master; Rite of Memphis, Grand Master; Swedenborg Rite, delegate for in France, occult advisor to Russian Czar Nicholas II; friend of the Duchese de Pomar; OTO, member.

THEODORE REUSS

He was the following: Scottish Rite, 33rd degree, Rite of Mizraim, 90th degree; Rite of Memphis, 96th degree; Sovereign Grand Master General of those two Rites, Esoteric Rosicrucians, Supreme Magus; Societas Rosicruciana in Anglia, VIII; OTO, Frater Superior and Outer Head in Mundo; friend of Papus; Sovereign Grand Master General ad Vitam for the German Empire, Swedenborg Rite, founder of six lodges in Germany, and Prov. Grand Master.

ALBERT PIKE (1809-1891)

He was the following: Scottish Rite, Grand Commander of the Supreme Council, 33rd Degree; York Rite, Knights Templar; Oddsfellows, member; Sovereign Pontiff of Universal Masonry; Palladium Rite (reformed) (full name Free and Regenerated Palladium), founder; Supreme Grand College of Emeritus Masons; early Theosophical Society, member; friend of Mazzini.

WHAT WAS THE VALUE OF THE UNION OF THE SCOTTISH, MIZRAIM & MEMPHIS RITES?

What was the value of this union? The Rites of Mizraim and Memphis are far more occultic and gnostic than the Scottish Rite. If a neophyte was obviously interested in the occult, and was lacking finances, this Masonic pamphlet "The Grand Mystic Temple" indicates he could be started at the 18th degree of the Scottish Rite (the Rose Croix of Heredom) and at the 46th degree of Mizraim. From there he could progress in the 3 rites.

There are numerous secret "interoffice memo type" papers that indicate that a Satanist, a Luciferian, a practitioner of black magic, or the like has a easy time in Freemasonry, because the upper degrees are controlled by men who will bend any rules to help them. Having a membership card is of limited value in visiting a foreign Lodge. A dues card is important, showing that one's dues are all paid up. Certain questions will be asked, and certain parts of the rituals need to be quoted by memory to satisfy the Lodge one is visiting. Now, let us, for instance, picture an American Mason visiting an Irish lodge. He can go to the Freemasons' Hall in Dublin or to one of the Provincial Masonic Temples and be examined.

This examination though is a courtesy, and it is up to the Grand Lodge's office whether they bother to interview him. By being interviewed this American will then be vouched to attend any meeting in the Grand Lodge of Ireland. When attending he will have to have been given the password of the First Degree (or other degree) . However, if he has been vouched, he will know the passwords. One can now see the leverage the Luciferian occultists have in Masonry, when the correct dues cards, diplomas, and passwords are given freely to them by the heads of these Rites.

THE RITE OF MIZRAIM & MEMPHIS

These two rites, although separate in some areas are closely allied. The Rite of Mizraim is mainly Jewish.[121] The secret order of the Prieure de Sion is also predominantly Jewish.[122] The B'nai B'rith seems to have taken over some of the Rite of Mizraim influence upon Masonry.[123]

The Rite of Memphis is not just European. Americans, such as 6-term Governor of Wisconsin Lucius Fairchild who was 95°, are Memphis Rite Masons too.

The Rite of Memphis has Ormus in their ritual. What or who is Ormus? Ormus (Ormudz) was the supreme God of Mithraism and Zoroastrian thought. It was also the name by which the Prieure de Sion allegedly went by from the years 1188-1306.[124] In 1188, when the Ordre de Sion became the Prieure de Sion it took the subtitle Ormus, until just before the arrest of the Templar Knights' leaders.

The controversial Protocols of Sion have been traced to the Rite of Mizraim in Paris, to a Mason named Maurice Joly. People have raised a straw man in claiming that the Conspiracy "Theories" are based on the Protocols of Sion. The Protocols, whether they are of any significance or not, are a tiny atom of the mass of evidence. Even so a lot of disinformation has spewed forth from the System against the Protocols, and it continues to be printed, perhaps by agent provocateurs for the System. The book *Warrant for Genocide* put out by Yale University, supposedly destroying the credibility of the Protocols is such poor thinking and pure nonsense,[125] one wonders if that is the best argumentation against the Protocols, then the Protocols must be valid. *Warrant for Genocide* makes it appear that all "anti-semitism" comes from crazy people who use the Protocols. The Protocols themselves speak of a Masonic conspiracy, not a Jewish conspiracy, so why have the Jewish people never used that as a defense?

Numerous researchers into the Conspiracy have noticed heavy Jewish involvement. The lack of public response has resulted in some researchers believing that radical problems needed radical solutions. Nesta Webster, who began neutral toward the Jews ended up a die-hard Fascist in the 1920s. She wrote *The Need for Fascism in Great Britain*. (For the Christian it would be worthwhile to take a fresh look at 1 Cor. 13 which declares that no matter what worthwhile thing we do, if we do not have love, it of no value.)

The religion called Mithra (Babylon), Mithras (Roman), Mitra (India) had spread over the known world during the first centuries A.D. It was very popular. It had cabbalistic thought, astrology, numerology, 'words of power', Greek philosophy, Babylonian myth, and a Gnostic dual theology which Masons like Albert Pike believed in.[126] When Christianity became a recognized religion, it is a valid question to wonder which absorbed which, Mithraism or Christianity? Certain ideas of Mithraism continue to resurface under the label Christian. For instance, in Mithraism (which became known later as Gnosticism) there was the idea that after 6,000 years of man's existence, a Golden Age would come in.[127] Mithraism is so close to Masonry, that those who study Mithraism have often commented that Freemasonry is the continuation of it. Mithraism absorbed occultic thought, and was somewhat eclectic.

It's follower's held rituals (for men only) in caves, or temples. Their rites remind one of the Masonic Rituals. In Israel, Masonic ceremonies are held in the Caves of Hezekiah, which have a chamber about 130 feet underground below the Temple Mount (of where Herod's Temple in Jerusalem was) . The cave will seat about 200. The cave is near the Damascus Gate. The City of Jerusalem gives a special privilege to the Masons to use it. On days of Masonic ceremonies, the caves which are normally open to the public are closed. Manly P. Hall claims the Masonic eye comes from the supreme God Ahura Mazda (or Ormuzd, Ormus). There are many similarities between Mithraism, the Prieure de Sion, and Masonry.

In *A Guide To The Gods* a reference works on pagan gods the Rite or religion of Mithra is described, "It contained much symbolism. . .all with Masonic overtones."[128] "One can see in the appurtenances of Mithraism the germ of many secret society and occult rite, many an exclusive cabal... and clubs."[129]

In *Mithraic Studies*, an extensive compilation of studies on Mithraism, it states, "Undoubtedly ancient Mithraism like orthodox Freemasonry today, with which it has so much in common..."

FREEMASONRY HAS LOTS OF SPIN-OFFS

Freemasonry is "directly or indirectly the parent of all modern secret societies, good, bad, or indifferent."--*Cyclopedia of Fraternities*. One outdated source indicates there are over 600 secret societies in the U.S. utilizing Masonic symbolism, and operating largely under Masonic influence, so that about every third male adult in the U.S. is a member of one or more such societies.[130] The 600 figure is outdated, and the actual number of secret societies has increased by several hundred more secret societies.

See Chap. 2.3 for the Spin-off Chart.

Some of the Masonic spin-offs have become such a part of normal life that the negative reactions of past years toward them are forgotten. Rotary, because of its Masonic control, hostility toward the Catholic Church, and its moral code, "which in almost every particular resembles that of Freemasonry, " was forbidden in some Catholic jurisdictions, and discouraged in others.[131] That was back in the 19th and early 20th century.

THE HIGHER SCOTTISH RITE DEGREES & THE PALLADIUM RITE

In the hard to obtain book, *The Hidden Life In Freemasonry*, written by 33rd degree C.W. Leadbeater for Masons one learns in Masonic language what the upper degrees of Freemasonry can get into. On page 175 Leadbeater refers to "when a clandestine meeting is held, even though a duly I.M. be present, the inner recognition is not given..."

What? Why are these Masons being so secretive amongst themselves? Because the Theurgical fun (Magical & occult) and politics begin, and the Lodge quits being just a private club for ritual. How this operates will be discussed.

First, we'll discuss the 30-33 Scottish Rite degrees. This is where it is becoming evident that Lucifer is the God of Masonry. Leadbeater says, "It must of course be understood... the conferring of the Higher Degrees puts certain definite powers in the hands of the recipient." Where does such power come from? "The 33 degree links the Sovereign Grand Inspector General with the Spiritual King of the World Himself--that Mightiest of Adepts who stands at the head of the Great White Lodge, in whose strong hands lie the destinies of earth--and awakens the powers of the Triple Spirit as far as they can yet be awakened." (The Hidden Life In Freemasonry, p.302) Other Masons like Manly P. Hall (33°) and Foster Bailey (32°) have said similar things.

Foster Bailey calls the spirits that Masons communicate with the "Illuminati"[132]. These spirits initiate these higher Masons into becoming light-bearers themselves. The Illuminati..."assist at the unfolding of the consciousness of the candidate until the time comes when he can 'enter into light' and, in his turn become a light-bearer, one of the Illuminati who can assist the Lodge on High in bringing humanity to light."[133]

These spirits have various Masons. Masons Harold Waldwin Pecival and Lynn F. Perkins claim their books were inspired by spirits.[134]

Is 33° Mason Leadbeater talking about linking up with the Christian Christ? "The H.O.A.T.F. makes the actual links both with Himself...and also through himself with that Mighty King...This stage combines the wonderful love of Horus the Son with the ineffable life and strength of Osiris the divine Father and Isis the eternal Mother of the world." This initiation connects the Mason with the pagan egyptian trinity? That's what he says. Leadbeater goes on to say how much glory, spiritual power, and worldly power the Mason has after this initiation, (p. 3 04) The next page Leadbeater begins the section telling the Mason "How to Use the Powers". He talks about the Liberal Catholic Church. Yes, men who have left the Liberal Catholic Church have verbally and in writing talked about how Satanic it is.

Leadbeater continues, "Yet when one of these bright Spirits is attached to us by a Masonic ceremony we must not think of him either as a director or as an attendant, but simply as a co-worker and a brother." (p. 309)

The next chapter "Two Wonderful Rituals" describes Egyptian rituals to Amen-Ra, and the Blazing Star. They sing a hymn to "Ra, the Logos, the Sun-God, thanking Him for His response..." They take a sacrement to Osirus.

The next ritual described may possibly refer to part of the secret Palladium Rite, as it refers to THE TRIANGLE OF ADEPTS. The Palladium Rite calls its groups Triangles. He talks about chanting invocations, and then angels appearing. Then the Illuminati salute is given to the Angel, where the left arm is placed above as if shielding one from light. (p. 341) Leadbeater indicates that eventually the Temple of the Angels draws 9 orders of angels, "which are not limited to one solar system." (p. 342)

If the reader is still with me--this Author would like to describe some about the Palladium Rite. This Author has never been in the Palladium Rite, and it is secret, so how would a person find out about such a rite? One expose of the Palladium Rite that appeared to be a hoax in the 19th century, has made people leary that the Rite even exists. When a news conference had been held, they were unable to produce evidence. One ex-Palladist Mason has problems getting people to believe it exists!

Goddess Pallas Athena, the Sign of Prudence and Circumspection, was used especially by Francis Bacon because it had the double meaning from Greek mythology of Spear-shaker, or "Shake-speare" his pen name. Palladian means pertaining to the Goddess Pallas or characterized by wisdom. And palladium means an object that is essential to the safeguarding of a community. Palladium is also the statue of Pallas Athena, upon which the city of Troy depended upon for its safety. Pallas Athena is also called Athena by the Greeks and Minerva by the Romans. Sir Francis Bacon wrote the name AthenA in his Rosicrucian books as A.A. Alfred Dodd goes into details of letters, poems of people to Bacon and writings of Sir Francis Bacon which use Pallas Athena.[135]

A secret Palladium Rite had existed at least from the time of 1730. Perhaps it was itself was from yet another earlier Palladium Rite, or perhaps it drew from some Rosicrucian source. At any rate, it was reactivated in 1884.

At the Public Library was the respectable *Encyclopaedia of American Institutional Fraternal Organizations* by Schmidt. Under "FREE AND REGENERATED PALLADIUM" it reads "This Masonically linked society... remained dormant until 1884. After this date it was reformed to ' impart new force to the traditions of high grade Masonry.' The society admitted men and women, the former to the grades of Adelphos and Companion of Ulysses and the latter to the grade of Penelope. The society held all its "Councils" in strict secrecy. It never printed any proceedings and very much restricted its membership." (p.119) On page 161 is an article on HOME PALLIDUM, which is a fraternal benefit society, apparently for members of the Palladium Rite.

The Palladium Rite created by Albert Pike is totally Luciferian. It is "androgynous." In the larger cities, activities are carried out in the Masonic Temples, which allows women to slip into the Temples without arousing attention. All of this will be strongly denied by the Masonic Lodges. Members are selected mainly from higher levels of the Scottish Rite, although the members can come from other Rites too. The Palladium Rite has its own budget. Its power over the Masonic Lodge does not derive from being a part of the power structure, but from the careful selection of Masons that participate in the Palladium Rite and their distribution throughout the various Rites of Masonry and their controlling bodies. The Grand Central Directories (and from there to the Supreme Councils, Grand Encampments, Grand Orients, and Grand Lodges) are the nerve centers of Masonry from which orders emanate. The Palladium Rite is popular among those in positions of power. It is said that the leaders of the Palladium Rite are allowed to visit or join the B'nai B'rith lodges.(See chap. 1.7)[136]

William Schnoebelen is presently a Christian author. Prior to becoming a Christian, he had been initiated into the Palladium Lodge in Chicago named Resurrection Lodge #13. He describes some about getting the Palladium Degree of Paladin in his recent book Masonry Beyond The Light. That lodge claimed to be derived from the European chapter of the AISB.(p. 186) Higher Masons become Illuminati-- which go by several names one of which is "Masters of the Temple." A single illumined person is called an Illuminatus.

SUMMARY

This chapter has shown how Freemasonry is the One-World-Religion. Freemasonry has created hundreds of organizations. Freemasonry itself is the pagan mystery religion, which at the highest level becomes Luciferian worship. It has quietly played the dominant political role in the United States even before independence. (For more details on its political role see the Appendix.)

NOTES

1. I have tried to leave these introductory paragraphs without footnotes to help the flow of reading. Alice Bailey is so well known that these things really don't need footnotes. However, the question can be asked, "How much would her husband and her have talked about things, considering Masons do not talk or tell the truth to their wives about the Lodge?" This is a legitimate question, some wives have found out that their honest husbands lied for decades about the lodge. There are some rites which are designed for both sexes like the Palladium Rite and the Order of the Magi which admit women. Also for women is Co-masonry, Order of the Eastern Star, and Daughters of the Nile. The high level of importance that Alice Bailey held indicates she was in communication with whoever in Masonry she needed to cooperate with.
2. The Watchtower June 15, 1963, p. 377 says the Rosicrucians go back to Great White Brotherhood of Egypt.
3. Benjamin Creme, a student of Freemasonry, the occult, and Bailey believes the Hierarchy has assigned him the job of John the Baptist to announce the new messiah named Lord Maitreya. (See chapter 1.4) Benjamin Creme in describing the One-World-Religion that is coming in the Age of Aquarius states, "The Ancient Mysteries [Freemasonry] will be restored, the Mystery Schools reopened, and a great expansion of man's awareness of himself and his purpose and destiny will become possible."(Creme, Benjamin. The Reappearance of the Christ and the Masters of Wisdom. London:Tara Press, 1980, p.182) "The Mystery schools will be reopened and men will go to them as they now go to University, to learn and to take the disciplines that will prepare them for initiation, and so into the Hierarchy."(ibid.,p.190) "The new religion will manifest itself through organizations like Masonry." (ibid.,p. 28) (bold added.)

4. Found and originally published in the *Unita Catholica.* Later the Constitution was reprinted in the *Irish Ecclesiastical Record,* Nov. 1865.
5. Kleinknecht, C. Fred. *The House of the Temple of the Supreme Council.* Wash. D.C.: The Supreme Council, 33 degree, 1988, p. 23. "Albert Pike remains today an inspiration for Masons everywhere. His great book *Morals and Dogma* endures as the most complete exposition of Scottish Rite Philosophy. He will always be remembered and revered as the Master Builder of the Scottish Rite." (emphasis added.)
6. Because parts of Pike's *Morals and Dogma* are openly Luciferian, Masons are reluctant to admit to profane people that Pike is still important to Masonry. Church going Masons have said that they don't know who Albert Pike is. For the sake of the non-Masonic world the following are a sampling of how important Pike is to Masonry. The *New Age Magazine,* Official organ of the Supreme Council 33° Scottish Rite, Apr. 1964, pp.13-19 has a eulogy of Albert Pike where the following items are said about Pike, "Although Albert Pike was a master in many lines of endeavor, his brethren recognize him as the world's most renowned Scottish Rite Mason and will be forever grateful for his work in behalf of Freemasonry and the Scottish Rite."(p.19) "Not only Masonry, but all Protestantism is deeply indepted to Albert Pike..."(p.19) "...Albert Pike, the man whose memory we recall with deep reverence..." As an example that Pike's *Morals and Dogma* are considered valid today *The New Age,* Nov. 1958, p. 680 quotes *Morals and Dogma* as an authoritative writing. The *New Age Magazine* (Sept. 1959) has an article about "six very great men" (p.518) -Lincoln, Darwin, Albert Pike, Holmes, Tennyson, and Jewish Prime Minister of Britain Gladstone. The *New Age Magazine* (Oct. 1959) carries Pike's picture, and an article on his philosophy. Pike's *Morals and Dogma,* p. 321 et. al. reveals Masons worship Lucifer, who Pike says is the Light-bearer.
7. *The New Age,* (Sept. 1921) the official organ of the Scottish Rite Supreme Council 33°, Washington, D.C., p. 404.
8. art. "Spacecraft played vital role in Gulf War victory." *Aviation Week & Space Technology,* (Apr. 2-2, 1991), p. 91
9. Television special that showed how the Patriots work and the underground Colorado facility tracking scuds.
10. Wilson, Andrew, art. "Eyes in the sky," *Interavia* (Sept. '88) p. 924.
11. Telephone interview with Dr. Morey, 8/3/91
12. Wells, H.G. *The Shape of Things To Come.* NY: The Macmillan Co., p.336.
13. This is known to this Author by his research, confidential interviews, and from other researchers. For instance, both Eustice Mullins, and Prof. Quigley were aware of it. Prof. Quigley (member CFR) was one of the insiders to the New World Order. He wrote *Tragedy and Hope.* The book deals with how this group of men shaped history. In the book, he describes studying the Power. He "was permitted for two years in the early 1960s" to study the "papers and secret records" of an international anglophile network." (Emphasis mine.) Freemasonry is one of the primary parts of that network.

14. An expose of the Order of Antelope fraternal group was in the 7/28/91 Oregonian, p. A-16+ If only our media would expose some serious wrongdoing by Fraternal organizations, and not just their lewd drinking parties.
15. Erzberger, Mathias. Experience in the Great War.
16. Lobineau, Henri. Dossiers secrets d' Henri Lobineau. Paris, 1967, planche no. 4, Ordre de Sion.
17. Holy Blood, Holy Grail, p. 146.
18. ibid., p.147
19. This is well known from various Masonic histories.
20. Warvelle, George W., 33 degree, History of Scottish Rite Masonry in Chicago, Chicago, IL: Scottish Rite, 1907, p.4.
21. ibid.
22. ibid.
23. Chaumeil, Jean-Loc. Le Tre'sor du triangle d'or (The Treasure of the Golden Triangle), Paris, 1979, p.136.
24. BBC interview with J.L. Chaumeil as mentioned about by Baigent, Leigh and Lincoln in Holy Blood, Holy Grail, p. 223.
25. The refered to paragraph is a compilation from many sources. The Pope is Jewish through his mother. That the Prieure de Sion has control of the Catholic Church is the conclusion of those that have researched the Prieure de Sion, and their own guarded statements.
26. Mackey, Albert G.,33°, An Encyclopedia of Freemasonry, pp 798, 804.
27. Hudson, John Milton, Past Grand Master along with 3 Grand Masters. Masonic History of the Northwest. San Francisco, CA: The History Publishing Co., 1902, p.71.
28. The New Age, Scottish Rite, June 1959, pp.351, 354.
29. Katz, Jacob. Jews & Freemasons in Europe, 1723-1939. Harvard University Press.
30. Roth, Cecil, ed. The Standard Jewish Encyclopedia. Garden City, NY: Doubleday & Co., 1959, p. 706.
31. Robison, John. Proofs of a Conspiracy Against All the Religions and Governments of Europe Carried on in the Secret Meetings of the Freemasons, Illuminati, and Reading Societies Collected From Good Authorities, orig. pub. in 1798 republished by Western Islands, Boston, 1967, p.6.
32. ibid., p. 18.
33. ibid., p. 29.
34. The New Age, The Scottish Rite (Dec. 1962), p. 39.
35. Friedman, Lee M. Jewish Pioneers & Patriots. NY: The MacMillan Co., 1943, p.203.
36. Elzas, Barnett A. The Jews of South Carolina. Philadelphia, PA: J.B. Lippincott Co., 1905, pp. 20-121.
37. Ramsay, David. The History of South Carolina from its First Settlement in 1670 to the year 1808, Vol. II, Charlestown, S.C.: David Longworth, 1809, pp. 24-38; plus other sources.
38. Harris, Ray Baker (33°), History of The Supreme Council, 33°, Ancient and A. Scottish Rite of F. Southern Jurisdiction, USA 1801-1861. Wash.D.C.,The Supreme Council, 33°, 1964, pp.10-12.
39. Stevens, Cyclopaedia of Fraternities as quoted in Miller, Occult Theocracy, p. 215.
40. Denslow, William R.(33°?) 10,000 Famous Freemasons. Richmond, VA: Macoy Pub. & Masonic Supply Co., Vol. I, p.12.

41. This is based on the South Carolina Gazette and Public Advertizer (July 3, 1784)-as quoted in Harris's official history. See Harris, 33°, op. cit.
42. ibid., Vol. III, p. 81
43. Lady Queensborough. Occult Theocracy, pp. 189-190.
44. Mullins, The Curse of Canaan, p.145
45. Lady Queensborough (Miller) op. cit., p. 190-191.
46. ibid., p. 191.
47. Denslow, op. cit., p. 302
48. Mullins, op. cit., p. 145
49. Information taken from Harris, 33 , op. cit.
50. A.J.H.S., xix, p. 58.
51. Roth, op. cit.
52. Denslow, op. cit., Vol. Ill, p. 193
53. ibid., Vol. IV, p.25
54. ibid., p.92
55. Friedman, op. cit. (Jewish Pioneers & Patriots), p.125
56. Sachse, Julius F.(33°) Benjamin Franklin as a Freemason. Philadelphia,PA: Compiled by order of the Grand Master of Pennslyvannia, 1906, p. 1.
57. ibid., p. 103 quoting Dr. Mease who had access to Masonic documents in 1811, that are not available anymore.
58. Lemisch, L. Jesse, ed. Benjamin Franklin the Autobiography and Other Writings. NY: The New American Library, 1961, pp. vii-xii.
59. Lemisch, op. cit., pp. 121, 205-9
60. Various Rosicrucian sources.
61. Sachse, op. cit. p.13
62. cf. Sachse, op. cit. pp. 7, 8, 15
63. Fay, Bernard. Revolution and Freemasonry, pp. 230-231.
64. Sachse, op. cit., p. 88.
65. Hall, Manly P.(33°) America's Assignment with Destiny. Los Angeles, CA: Philosophical Research Soc., 1951, pp.85-87.
66. cf. ibid., and Sachse, op. cit. p. 5.
67. Hall, Manly P. The Secret Destiny of America. Los Angeles, CA: Philosophical Research Soc, 1972, p. 133.
68. Lemisch. Benjamin Franklin The Autobiography and Other Writings, pp. 329-330 from Smyth, Albert Henry, ed. The Writings of Benjamin Franklin Collected and Edited with a life and Introduction, NY: 1905, pp. 411-12.
69. Lemisch, op. cit., pp. 319-320.
70. Randolph, Paschal Beverly. Ravallette The Rosicrucian's Story. Quakertown, PA: Philosophical Pub. Co., 1939, p. 134.
71. Butler, Ritual Magic, p. 283.
72. Randolph, op. cit. p.21.
73. Biography by Charles Chauliac.
74. cf. Butler, op. cit.,p. 286-287.
75. Examples of JEWISH FREEMASON MAGICIANS are Harry Houdini (32° & Shriner- orig. name Weiss)(1874-1926), Dr. Jacob Haym Falk (aka Hayyim Samuel Jacob Falk and other names, a Satanist and follower of Sabbatai Zevi, also carried the title Ba'al Shem, which is Chief of all the Jews, he was an important figure in spreading magic) (1708-1782), Baron von Offenback (a.k.a. Jacob Frank, a Satanist), Compte de Cagliostro (a.k.a. Joseph Balsamo, started the Egyptian Masonic Rite and leader of the Lodge of Isis with its wild sexual

rites.) (1743-1795), Compte de Saint-Germain (aka Daniel Wolff, now heralded by New Agers as a great spiritual leader)(1710-1784), Friedrich Franz (a.k.a. Anton Mesmer, founder of hypnotism then called mesmerism) (1733-1815). SOME OTHER MASONIC MAGICIANS for which this Author is not aware if they have Jewish heritage or not are Dr. Gerald Encausse (aka Papus), Lorenza Feliciana (also in Lodge of Isis), Manly P. Hall, Alexander Herrman (1844-1896), C.W. Leadbeater, S.L. MacGregor Mathers, George Pickingill (warlock), Dr. Theodore Reuss, Philip Samuel Rosa, and Arthur Edward Waite.

76. The membership on this Council comes from quite a number of Rosicrucian sources, and seems to be supported by circumstantial historical evidence. Rosicrucian sources that mention the memberships of Randolph, Hitchcock, Lincoln, and Albert Pike in the Order of Lilly and/or the 3 men on the Council of Three include: The Book of Rosicruciae, Quakertown, PA. Philosophical Publ. Co.; A Pilgrimage to Beverly Hall, Quakertown, PA. Beverly Hall Corp.,1955, pp.9,51.; Randolph, Ravallette The Rosicrucian's Story, p. 20.

77. Cole, Arthur A. The Light of Life. Newark, NJ: Church of Illumination, (n.d.), p.11

78. Denslow, Vol. III, p.86.

79. ibid.

80. Randolph, op. cit., p. 64.

81. Cole, op. cit., p. 11

82. A Pilgrimage to Beverly Hall, p.9

83. Cole, op. cit., p. 10, quoting George Lippard

84. Dodd's research and his books are overwhelming. The One-World-Order has worked hard to keep them out of the United States. Delia Bacon, (no relation to Francis Bacon) was the first profane person to really realize that Sir Francis Bacon was Shakespeare. She was so overwhelmed by this discovery, she went to England and devoted her life to researching the connections. They managed to lock her up in an insane asylum near Stratford, but not before she succeeded to get her book published. Her nephew finally rescued her from the British insane asylum and brought her back to Hartford,Conn, where she died in peace "trusting in the Lord." She was cruelly slandered, rediculed and mocked as if her discovery was an insane idea. Whether true or false, her theory, now substantiated, makes more sense than any other explanation. Interestingly, various Masons, including Mark Twain, and various important men in the One-World-Power like Henry James and Sigmund Freud believed in her research, while the "profane" world almost entirely ignored her.

85. Dodd, Alfred. Francis Bacon's Personal Life-Story, Vol. 2-The Age of James, London: Rider & Co., 1986, pp. 518-532. See also Dodd's book The Martyrdom of Francis Bacon, (same publisher) .

86. Dodd, Francis Bacon's Personal Life-Story, pp. 157-158. See also Dr. Sprat. History of the Royal Society, pp 35-36, Part I, Sec. xvi.

87. Dodd, op. cit.

88. ibid., pp. 390, 419-420, 433. Note that the beauty of the King James Bible may in part be due to Sir Francis Bacon, who was the author of Shakespeare's works. Dr. Andrewes, a chief AV (Authorized Version) translator was Bacon's close friend, and received help from him. Dr. Thomas Bilston and Dr. Miles left the AV's draft for

final editing with Sir Francis Bacon. See also Hall's The Secret Teachings of All Ages, p. CLXVI.

89. Hall, Manly P. The Secret Teachings of All Ages. pg. facing CLXV, pg. CLXVI. Alfred Dodd's books cover this also, incl. the book Francis Bacon's Personal Life-Story.

90. Dodd, op. cit.,p.l0

91. ibid., p.130-136

92. ibid., vol.1, See also Hall, Marie Bauer. Foundations Unearthed. Veritas Press, 1974.

93. Dodd, op. cit., and Hall, Manly P., op. cit., pp. CLXV-CLXVI.

94. Dodd, op. cit., and Hall, Marie Bauer, op. cit.

95. Dodd, op. cit. p. 12

96. ibid.,p. 502

97. ibid., p.502-503

98. Lobineau, op. cit.

99. Dodd, op. cit., p.158

100. ibid., Cf. The Secret Teachings of All Ages p. CXXXIX, which is quoting the Ency. Brit, and Holy Blood, Holy Grail, p. 144. Numerous Masonic works discuss these men.

101. Abraham Cowley's Ode recited to the Royal Society, as referred to in Dodd, op. cit., p. 158

102. Elinor Von Le Coq, wife of Prof. Von Le Coq in Berlin, stated that she had found evidence in the German Archieves that Sir Francis Bacon stayed after 1626 with the Andrea family. Woodward, Parker. Sir Francis Bacon, p. 127 states about him feigning death and going to Germany. See also Hall, Manly P. Lectures on Ancient Philosophies, Philosophical Research Society, (n.d.), p. 407

103. Theobald, Bertran G. Francis Bacon Concealed and Revealed.

104. Still, William T. New World Order: The Ancient Plan of Secret Societies, p. 54.

105. Dodd, op. cit., p.425. In 1910, which was the 400th anniversary Newfoundland issued a stamp to commemorate Sir Francis Bacon's role in establishing Newfoundland. The stamp states about Bacon, "the guiding spirit in Colonization Schemes in 1610." See also Hepworth, Dixon. The Story of Francis Bacon.

106. Hall, Marie Bauer, op. cit.

107. ibid. p.22

108. This is well known in American History. Referred to in Hall, Marie Bauer, op. cit., p.23.

109. This can be verified through many sources, especially Masonic books and periodicals have numerous references to the Masonic leadership role during the American Revolution. The book The Temple and the Lodge has some good chapter on the subject. The Temple and the Lodge interestingly has been placed in Masonic libraries.

110. Again as in note 35, numerous sources. The Temple & the Lodge would be a good place to start.

111. Read Foundations Unearthed by Marie Bauer Hall

112. ibid., p.62-63.

113. Dodd, op. cit.,p.550.

114. Mullins, Eustace. The Curse of Canaan. Stauntan,VA: Revelation Books, 1987, p.88.

115. Bacon, Francis. Francis Bacon Essays and New Atlantis. Roslyn,NY: Walter J. Black, Inc., 1969, p. 270; see also pp 272-3 for more about the brethren of Solomon's House (Masons).

116. Dodd, Alfred. *Francis Bacon's Personal Life-Story.* London: Rider & Co., pp. 372-377.
117. Newton, Joseph Fort (32°). *The Builders A Story & Study of Masonry.* London: George Allen & Unwin Ltd., 1914, page facing 117.
118. Miller, Edith Star Miller. *Occult Theocracy,* p. 161.
119. Higgins, Godfrey. *Anacalypsis.*
120. *America's Promise Newsletter,* (Jan. 1988), p.4.
121. Miller, op. cit., p. 408.
122. *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* and *Messianic Legacy.*
123. cf. *Supra,* chp. iv, pp. 84-5.
124. Baigent, Leigh, & Lincoln. *Holy Blood, Holy Grail,* p. 122.
125. *Warrant for Genocide.*
126. cf. Carlyon, Richard. *A Guide To The Gods.* NY: William Morrow & Co., 1982, p. 195; See also *Morals & Dogma.*
127. Various sources on Mithraism
128. Carlyon, Richard, op. cit., p.194.
129.
130. Stevens. *Cyclopedia of Fraternities.* N.Y.: Treat & Co., 1907, introduction.
131. Various Catholic sources, *Civilta Catholica,* June 16, 1928. See also *Revue Internationale des Societes Secretes,* No. 43, 1928, and no. 12, 1929, p. 298.
132. Bailey, Foster. *The Spirit of Masonry.* London: Lucis Press, Ltd., 1957, p. 21.
133. ibid.
134. Ankerberg, John & John Weldon. *The Secret Teachings of the Masonic Lodge.* Chicago: Moody Press, p.236.
135. Dodd, Alfred. *Francis Bacon's Personal Life-Story.* London: Century Hutchinson, 1986, pp. 100-102.
136. Derived from various sources, incl. Masons, ex-Masons, and others.

SECRET RULING BODIES OF THE NEW WORLD ORDER (believe it or not) A diagram of how the United States policy is created is in chapter 3.6. A diagram of how Christian religions are directed is in chapter 2.1.

level 1- Elders of Sion. An inner core of Jewish world rulers numbering 13 who are dedicated to Lucifer, and his alien demons. It can be theorized that there is an inner core to this. This group includes the Rothschilds, and some other "Jews" who believe they are gods and who have worshipped Satan for generations. If we were as rich and powerful as the Rothschilds we might also think we were gods. And in addition to their power of wealth are the witchcraft powers they have attained. The Bilderbergers is an extension of this. This group will make the final decision on who is selected of the various candidates to be the world's King-Priest ruler that the public will worship.

level 2- There is a top circle or Round Table of nine members of the Bilderbergers. Next is a policy committee of 13. The next level are the 3 inner core groups of the Bilderbergers. Each of the 3 inner core groups number 13, and are made up of members of the Prieure de Sion, Illuminated Masons, the "Black" Nobility, leading Satanists, and men of power. Some are in the leadership of the Catholic Church. Their policy committee meets yearly under the polar cap via submarine to give the USSR its yearly directives. (Of course they have thousands of other communication links with their men in the Kremlin.) The names of one powerful group is given in chapter 2.10. Offices for the Bilderberger committees are maintained in Switzerland and at least once a year a general secret meeting is arranged where delegates are invited and prearranged topics are discussed.

level 3- Majesty 12, this is the Inner group that directs the U.S. Other major western nations have an equivalent group of rulers. MJ-12 consists of:
6 members of the executive committee of the JASON Group which is a group of intelligent men that began with the Manhattan project.
6 members of the executive committee of the Council of Foreign Relations (CFR)- these men are known as "the wise men", they are also all members of the Jason Society, which is a branch of the Masonic Order of the Quest.
6 other key people-heads of the FBI, CIA, etc. usually also Masons and CFR people.
(Majesty 12 has been variously named by those in the U.S. government in the know as 5412 Committee or Special Group (Eisenhower & Kennedy Admin.), 303 Committee (Johnson Admin.), 40 Committee (Nixon, Ford, & Carter Admin.), PI-40 (Reagon Admin.). It has been seen in some intelligence messages as MAJIC.)

level 4- Covert groups like the Mafia, and a host of tens of thousands of public organizations. These are directed through a host of channels including the CFR. (It is worthy of note that the CFR ties in with Masonry, particularly the Grand Orient.) The Mafia, which was empowered by Illuminated Masonry, works closely with the CIA, the Vatican, and the Freemasons to militantly control local situations. They are able to deliver local elections. Pres. Kennedy turned on the Mafia, and was attempting to attack their leadership, after they delivered the Presidential election to him.

Recommended for further study:

Occult Theocracy by Edith Star Miller (Lady Queensborough) This book should be in every Christian minister's library. It was the forerunner of this book Be Wise As Serpents. It was Miller's wish that someone would continue where she had left off. Her book covers over 100 secret and occult groups that are coordinating their activities and are offshoots from one another. Her book was printed after she died for private circulation. Had she lived longer she may have been able to guard against a few minor errors that occured when they printed her manuscript. She concludes her book on pg. 665, "The work is far from being completed. It claims, in fact, to be only an attempt in the direction of inexhaustible research work upon the coordination of the aims of all societies whether political or occult. It is hoped that others, and may they be many, will begin work where this book ends for--"The harvest is great indeed but the labourers are few." This book is difficult to obtain, but can be obtain from the publisher of Be Wise As Serpents.

Fire In The Minds of Men by James H. Billington. This great historian was a member of the CFR. I say great because he wrote an expose that the Power let slip through their censorship. After it was published they tried to suppress it, and were successful in limiting its availability and visibility. The book covers the details of how secret occult societies have been behind all the revolutionary forces since the American Revolution. The book is written for scholars by a scholar.

Francis Bacon's Personal Life-Story by Alfred Dodd. This remarkable book is part of Alfred Dodd's intensive life-long research into the person of Francis Bacon. The book is divided into two volumnes--The Age of Elizabeth (Vol. 1) and The Age of James (Vol. 2). Alfred Dodd died before Vol. 2 could be printed. Both parts were finally printed together years later in 1986. The book gives many details concerning Bacon's involvement with the Rosicrucians and the formation of Freemasonry. This excellent book has been suppressed by the Power for some reason.

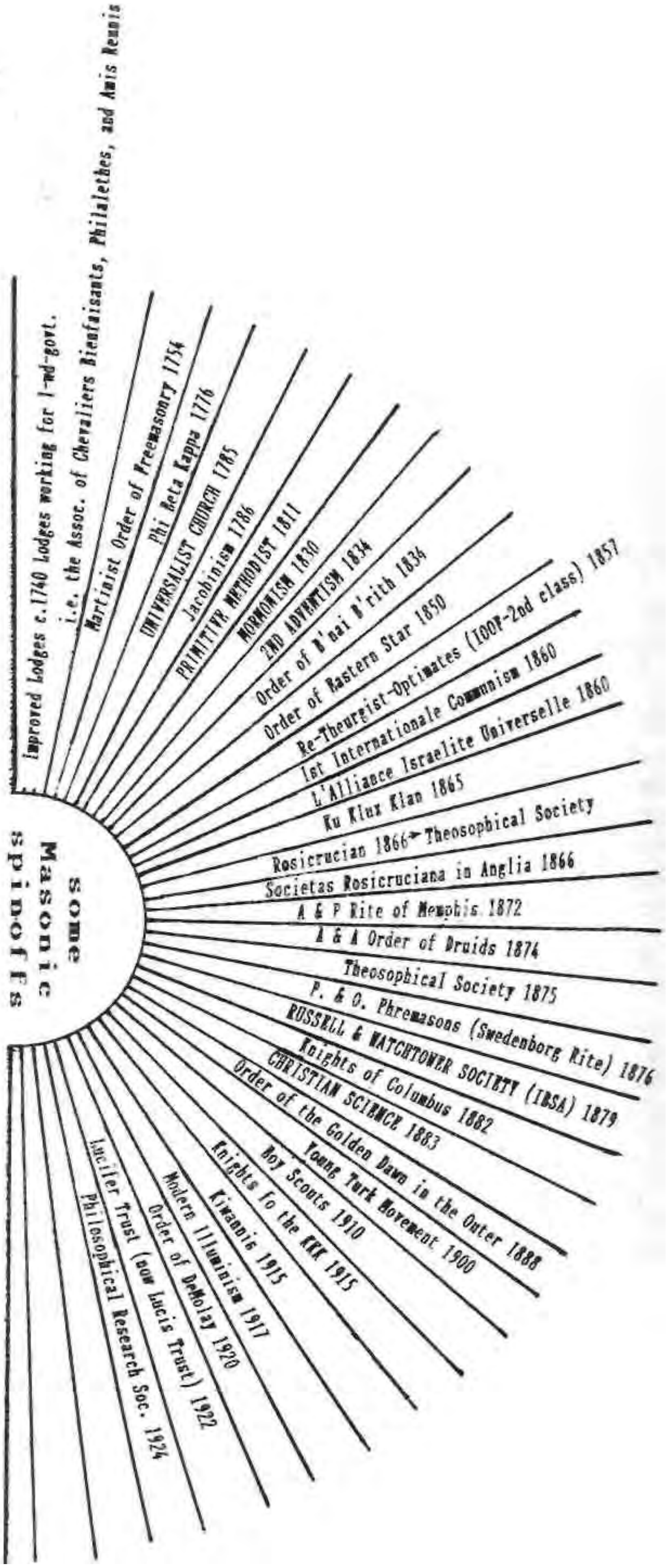
some Masonic spinoffs
Improved Lodges c.1740 Lodges working for 1-wd-govt.
i.e. the Assoc. of Chevaliers Bienfaisants, Philalethes, and Amis Reunis
Martinist Order of Freemasonry 1754
Phi Beta Kappa 1776
UNIVERSALIST CHURCH 1785
Jacobinism 1786
PRIMITIVE METHODIST 1811
MORMONISM 1830
2ND ADVENTISM 1834
Order of B'nai B'rith 1834
Order of Eastern Star 1850
Re-Theurgist-Optimates (IOOF-2nd class) 1857
1st Internationale Communism 1860
L'Alliance Israelite Universelle 1860
Ku Klux Klan 1865
Rosicrucian 1866→Theosophical Society
Societas Rosicruciana in Anglia 1866
A & P Rite of Memphis 1872
A & A Order of Druids 1874
Theosophical Society 1875
P. & O. Phremasons (Swedenborg Rite) 1876
RUSSELL & WATCHTOWER SOCIETY (IBSA) 1879
Knights of Columbus 1882
CHRISTIAN SCIENCE 1883
Order of the Golden Dawn in the Outer 1888
Young Turk Movement 1900
Boy Scouts 1910
Knights fo the KKK 1915
Kiwanis 1915
Modern Illuminism 1917
Order of DeMolay 1920
Lucifer Trust (now Lucis Trust) 1922
Philosophical Research Soc. 1924

CHART BY FRITZ SPRINGMEIER

ROSICRUCIAN GROUPS

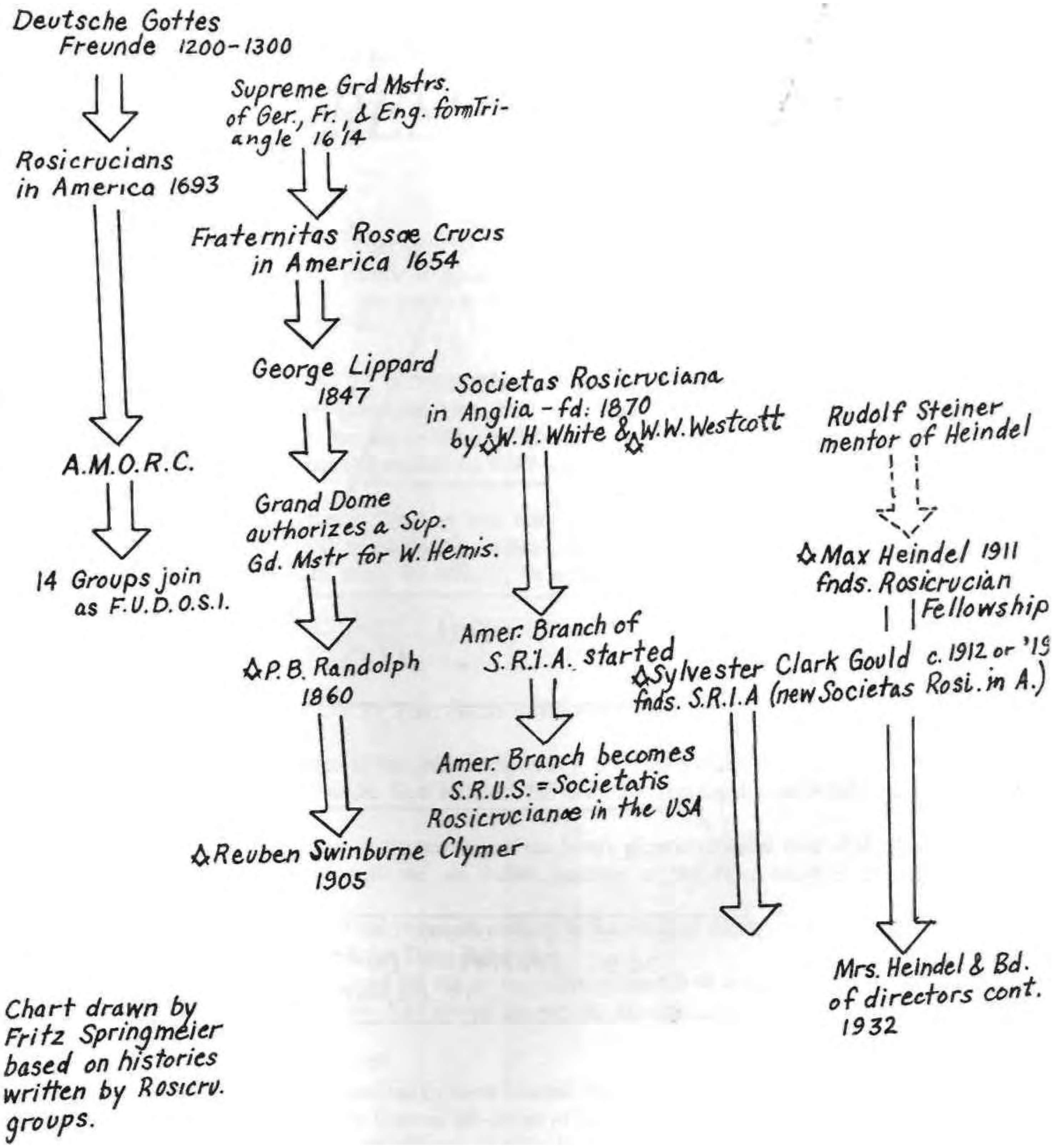
Deutsche Gottes Freunde 1200-1300
Rosicrucians in America 1693
A.M.O.R.C.
14 Groups join as F.U.D.O.S.I.
Supreme Grd Mstrs. of Ger., Fr., & Eng. formTri-angle 1614
Fraternitas Rosae Crucis in America 1654
George Lippard 1847
Grand Dome authorizes a Sup. Gd. Mstr for W. Hemis.
P.B. Randolph 1860
Reuben Swinburne Clymer 1905
Societas Rosicruciana in Anglia - fd: 1870 by W.H. White & W.W. Westcott
Amer. Branch of S.R.I.A. started
Amer. Branch becomes S.R.U.S. = Societatis Rosicrucianae in the USA
Rudolf Steiner mentor of Heindel
Max Heindel 1911 fnds. Rosicrucian Fellowship
Sylvester Clark Gould c. 1912 or '19 fnds. S.R.I.A (new Societas Rosi. in A.)
Mrs. Heindel & Bd. of directors cont. 1932

Chart drawn by Fritz Springmeier based on histories written by Rosicru. groups.

PRIEURE' DE SION (PRIORY OF ZION)

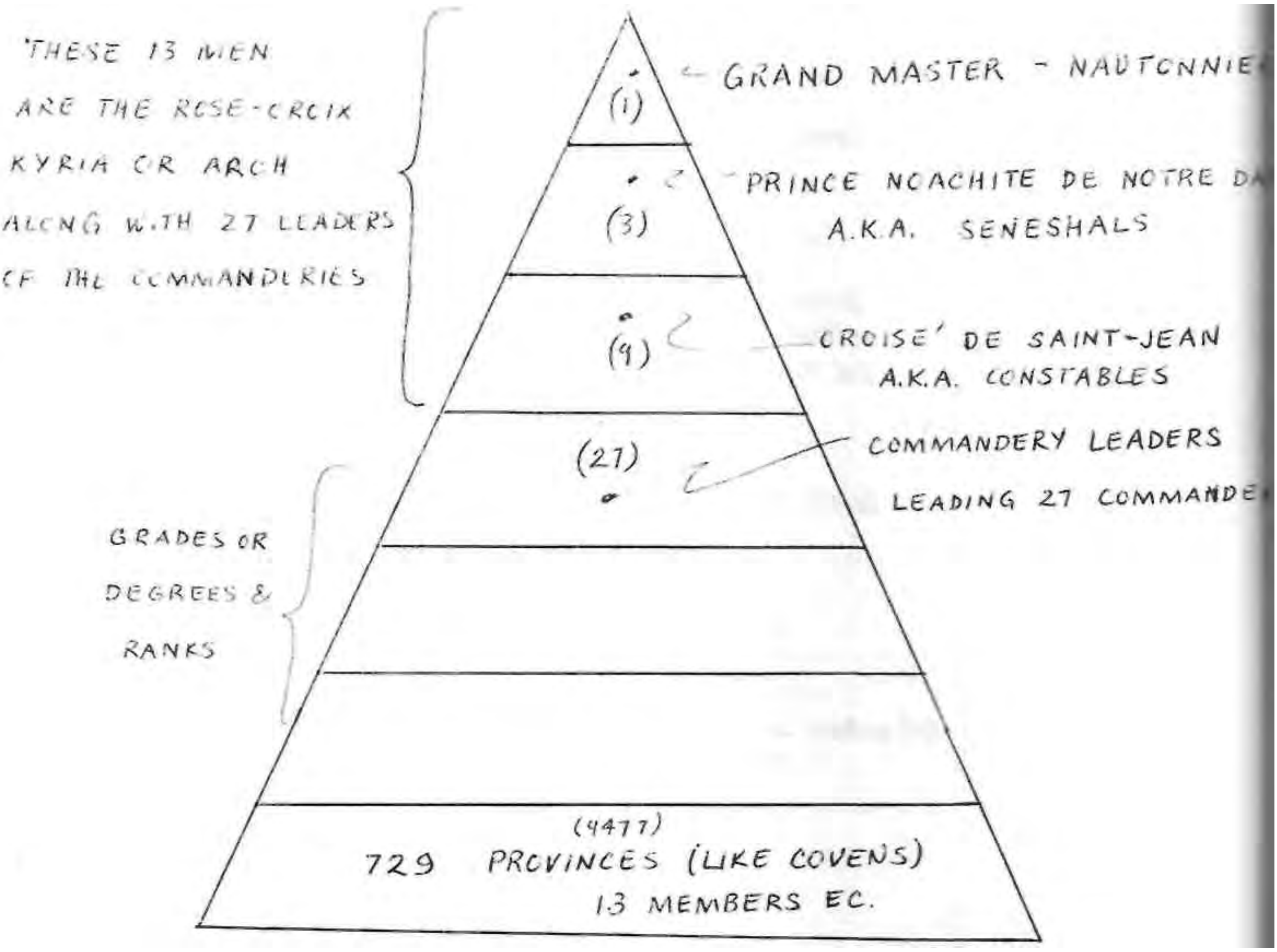
THESE 13 MEN ARE THE ROSE-CROIX KYRIA OR ARCH ALONG WITH 27 LEADERS OF THE COMMANDERIES
(1)
GRAND MASTER - NAUTONNIE
(3)
PRINCE NOACHITE DE NOTRE DA
A.K.A. SENESHALS
(9)
CROISE' DE SAINT-JEAN
A.K.A. CONSTABLES
(27)
COMMANDERY LEADERS
LEADING 27 COMMANDE
GRADES OR DEGREES & RANKS
(4477)
729 PROVINCES (LIKE COVENS)
13 MEMBERS EC.

Chapter 1.3
PROGRESSIVE LIGHT

- You will learn how the World Order gets instant power bases by creating Gnostic religions.
- You will learn how to build a gnostic religion.
- You will be shown information that contrasts Gnosticism with Christ's teachings.

The young SS officer was only 23, but perhaps the most talented in Germany for the Indiana Jones role he was cast into. His quest was a real life search for the sacred cup, the lost key to the ancient germanic legends, known to the Christian world as the Holy Grail. This tall, muscular, and handsome German had studied the Grail legends in detail. He even knew the local dialect.

It was 1931 and southern France. The new Nazi religion needed the Grail to legitimize their new Gnostic religion, which was based on the ancient German gnostism of the German tribes. His name was Otto Rahm. Like many SS officers, he would commit suicide before the allies could capture him.

[FIGURE 1 Otto Rahm SCAN 2.8 x 3.]

OTTO RAHM ON HIS MISSION IN THE GROTTOES OF ORNOLAC

Otto Rahm may have suceeded in his quest. Apparently, a German castle was restored with slave labor for the Grail. But like the Nazi religion, the Grail has remained a well-kept secret for many years.

Strange? Yes. But even more so, is the coverup of the Nazi's gnostic religion. One of the first items done at the Nuremburg trials was to forbid mention of the Nazi religion. It was inadmissible.

"One of the best kept secrets of the twentieth century is the occultic roots and nature of the religious philosophy at the heart of the Third Reich."[1]

Because of the disinformation about the Nazis, the public is unable to grasp the connections of Nazism with the modern day New Age movement and the Masonic Lodges.

NAZISM, THE MASONS & W.W.II[2]

W.W. II was staged. The allies were led by three Masons Roosevelt, Stalin, and Churchill. The Germans were led by men who were from an off-shoot of the Masons. II Duce in Italy had also been associated with the occult and the Masons, but like Hitler had broken away and gone in the direction of Fascism. Stalin encouraged Hitler to strike the West. Knowing that Hitler wouldn't attack, Stalin made a pact with Hitler, so that Hitler could rest assured that his rear would be safe. There is a book which goes into detail about the machinations that Stalin went through to get Hitler to attack Poland. Roosevelt knew that the Pearl Harbor attack was coming. Roosevelt

FiG. 7

was looking for a way to get the U.S. into the war. The war was costly to the world in general, but looking at it from the viewpoint of the one-world-conspiracy it was a brilliant. They were able to profit greatly. Russia was able to conquer half of Europe. They were able to use the threat of Russia to create a de facto united Europe. The U.S. was able to use the W.W. II to allow a massive exchange of material and technology to Russia, including the technology and materials to build the atomic bomb. The United Nations was set up, as a testing ground for the New World Order.

This background information is intended as an introduction for the reader to the multifaceted gnostic religion and the one-world-government conspiracy it is married to. You will now learn that the basic ingredients are the same for the various gnostic hierarchical religions, they just have a different flavor to them. They operate off of the same principles. There is even a book How to Start your own Religion. As you progress through this book Be Wise As Serpents you'll learn how they cooperate and function together. What we have been viewing as separate independent religious groups are actually at the very top working together.

This chapter is meant to be a tool to enable the reader to see that those basic ingredients of gnosticism make up all the gnostic religions, and that the Jehovah's Witnesses, the Nazi's, the Mormons, the Masons, Wicca, etc. are simply different flavors of the same thing. If you want Moslem flavor be a Sufi, if you want a Jewish flavor join a Jewish New Age synagogue, if you want a Buddhist flavor join Nichiren Shoshu or Lamaism, if you want American Indian flavor join the Earth Circle or the Bear Tribe Medicene Circle, if you want a Christian flavor join the Moravians, or Jehovah's Witnesses, or the LDS church, or the I AM. The Gnostic New Age movement has other flavors too, Egyptian, Aryan, Witchcraft, Sun Worship, Satan Worship, and New Thought. This Author has drawn a diagram to show the reader his choice of Gnostic poisons. What flavor do you want?

Let's say your religious tastes are like the Neopalitan Icecream (a combination of three) lover. There are groups to accomodate you. For example, Annalee Skarin has an offshoot from Mormonism which is a small metaphysical religion. In 1948 she published Ye are Gods. Another of the many Mormon offshoots called the Aryan Christian Church combines the philosophies of Mormonism and Nazism. They use the Hitler salute and the swastika.

Basic ingredients to create a gnostic religion.

1. Hidden knowledge.
2. A heirarchy, generally divided in 3 basic tiers, the general initiates, the elect, the enlightened top 1,2 or 3 leaders
3. The higher one goes up the hierarchy the more hidden knowledge is dished out.

Let's pause and define esoteric. Esoteric means- intended to be understood by only a select small group. Exoteric means- intended for general consumption.

Ingredient 1. The knowledge given is mystical and esoteric knowledge. A great emphasis is placed on secrecy. It's salvation rests on man controling himself and working out his own destiny. Only initiates at special occult centers learn the power and symbols. The word Gnosis means the ultimate knowledge transmitted by an elite hierarchy of initiates. Another trademark is that there are recurrent cycles of cataclysisms and an earthly paradise, often called the Golden Age.

Ingredient 2. The hierarchy has a ternary classification system. The Theosophical Society informs

GNOSTIC RELIGIOUS BODIES RULED BY HIERARCHIES

TYPE OF GNOSIS (TYPE OF MYSTERY KNOWLEDGE)
Examples of Organisations

Some of these classifications are rough placements, because most of these groups overlap into other placements. Not only are they similar to one another, many of their leadership are in contact with one another.

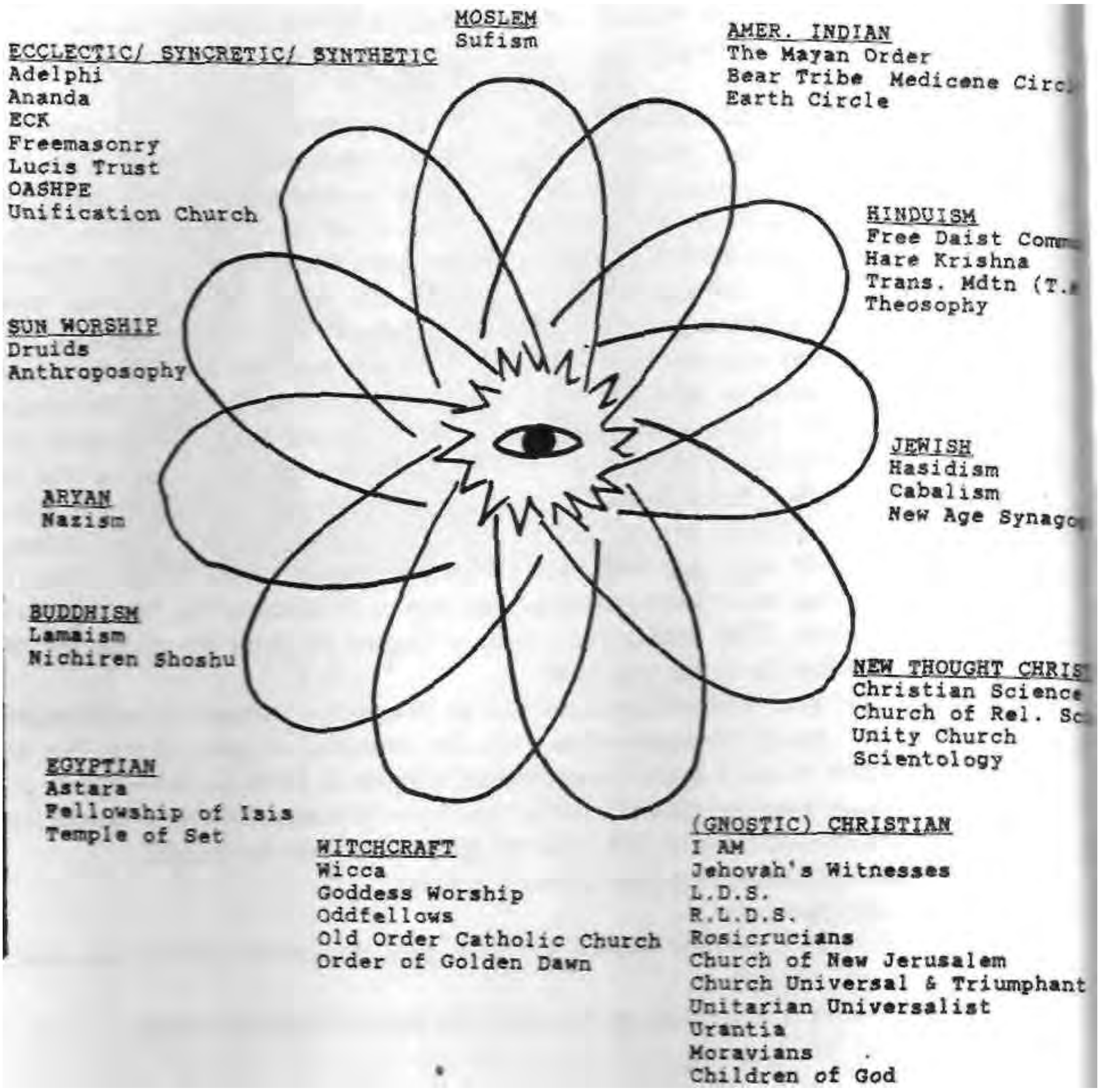
MOSLEM
Sufism
AMER. INDIAN
The Mayan Order
Bear Tribe Medicene Circ
Earth Circle
ECCLECTIC/ SYNCRETIC/ SYNTHETIC
Adelphi
Ananda
ECK
Freemasonry
Lucis Trust
OASHPE
Unification Church
HINDUISM
Free Daist Comm
Hare Krishna
Trans. Mdtn (T.
Theosophy
SUN WORSHIP
Druids
Anthroposophy
JEWISH
Hasidism
Cabalism
New Age Synago
ARYAN
Nazism
BUDDHISM
Lamaism
Nichiren Shoshu
NEW THOUGHT CHRIS
Christian Science
Church of Rel. Sc
Unity Church
Scientology
EGYPTIAN
Astara
Fellowship of Isis
Temple of Set
(GNOSTIC) CHRISTIAN
I AM
Jehovah's Witnesses
L.D.S.
R.L.D.S.
Rosicrucians
Church of New Jerusalem
Church Universal & Triumphant
Unitarian Universalist
Urantia
Moravians
Children of God
WITCHCRAFT
Wicca
Goddess Worship
Oddfellows
Old Order Catholic Church
Order of Golden Dawn

This is the New Age Movement's Religious buffet. It's like going to Baskin & Robins where there are 32 flavors of ice cream. This is by no means a comprehensive list, but it provides a feel for the different "flavors" of gnosticism a person can get into.

the reader of The Gnosis And Christianity, "the practice common to all the genuine Gnostic cults was followed in having at least three degrees of membership or initiation. It was only in the highest degree that the deepest 'mysteries' were orally communicated;..."[3] Remember that last tip they gave us, that the deepest mysteries are only orally communicated to the very top leader(s). In terms of their use of the ternary system, consider the following gnostic religions.

Catharism: 1. pure ones, 2. the initiates, 3. the masses.
Jehovah's Witnesses: 3. the Great Crowd, 2. the Annointed, 1. the Faithful and Wise Servant(s) those actually leading/the President or Governing Body.
The Mormons: 3. the Aaronic priesthood, 2. the Melchizedek Priesthood, 1. the Top prophet and his presidency.
The Nazis: 3. The Aryan race 2. the Nazi Party 1. the very top of the Nazi religion the high priest Hitler (who was considered their god by some devoted Nazis).
Lamaism: 1.the Dalai-Lama (considered god, a reincarnated Buddha) 2. the Lama priests (aka tulkous), 3. the mass of Tibetan believers.
The Essenes: 1. The Perfect, 2. the Brethren, 3. the Neophytes.
Church Universal & Triumphant: l.The Messenger 2a. Permanent Staff 2b. Temporary Staff 3a. Community Member 3b. Keeper of the Flame 3c. Pearl's Reader.

[Place FIG. 2 -chart of gnostic religious flavors]

Many have asked this author, do the leaders of the cults know what is going on? Yes, they have been orally, emphasis on that word orally told exactly what is happening. The leaders of the New Age, the Jehovah's Witnesses, and the LDS church know what they are up to, and what their roles are in creating a one-world government. That is the method that Gnosticism uses. The very top Prophet or Illuminated Master is informed orally.

Illumination for any Gnostic group comes from superhuman knowledge. New Age leaders almost always claim they are channeling. There is an evolving dualistic fight of lightness and darkness found in the Hindu Vedas, the old Germanic legends, the Nordic sagas, and the Jehovah's Witnesses myth that Jehovah is struggling to vindicate himself to Satan. Like C.T. Russell, founder of the Watchtower Society, the gnostics often see the sun as a primary sacred symbol. The Hakenkreuz (swastika) of the Nazis was a sun wheel. The swastika was a frequently used Masonic symbol, until Hitler. Since Hitler, the Masons haven't been using it. It is also called the gamma cross and has been used for many centuries. The Jewish gnostic groups have tended to exalt the moon, (also the planets and stars) while Aryan groups from India, Iran, and Germany tend to exalt the Sun.

One of the better summaries of Gnosticism, and how Gnostic religion has come down the ages to us today is given by the Theosophical Society,

"From the time of the closing of the Neo-Platonic and Gnostic Schools to the last quarter of the Nineteenth Century, save for the few alchemists, Kabalists, Rosicrucians, occultly instructed Masons and Christian mystics, Theosophy was unknown in the Western world. Before then it was known and studied in various forms by the Platonists, the Pythagoreans, the Egyptians, and the Chaldeans, whilst in India and China it has been preserved down the ages in unbroken continuity. It is the wisdom of the Upanishads and the Vedas, the very heart of Hinduism, Taoism and Islam."[4]

To realize what is being said here is eye opening. The Rosicrucians and occult Masons have preserved Gnostic Theosophy which is the very heart of Hinduism, Taoism and Islam.

The Gnostic religions are often called pagan. This pagan worship is often the exoteric cover that the first levels are initiated into. The highest level is often the real esoteric worship, and often involves direct Luciferian or Satanic worship. In other words, the Sun worship of the Masons and other groups is a fig leaf for the worship by the highest levels of the Divine Serpent Satan.

Gnostic religions use symbols and rituals. The Jehovah's Witnesses have formed their own new rituals, and their own new symbols. But they have retained the magical use of the word Jehovah which has been in use for centuries. The WT Society has followed the very popular school of Gnosticism which follows the ideas of Valentius. This school teaches that matter is more evil than good, and that all matter will be destroyed by fire. For instance, this pattern of thought is seen in the refusal of the WT Society to accept sex as a natural process and to view it as an evil to be tolerated.

Listen to a professed Gnostic, "Humanity reaches forward to a spiritual consummation when the whole Earth will be peopled with a Race of men fully conscious of their god-like nature and powers; and sin, sickness, and death will have been banished for the remaining period of the Earth's cosmic cycle."[5] It almost sounds like something out of the Watchtower magazine. The WT magazine has even used the phraseolgy that a new race was to inhabit the New System.[6]

The Gnostics believe they have a deeper form of Christianity. Then they generally take this further contending that they have the root teaching for the ancient scriptures of the other religions. They indeed have the root teaching of religion, but not of the Christian faith.

In the first book of the Hebrew scriptures is the story of the perfect Garden of Eden. This perfect garden environment shows that originally God had established order.

(Some readers may not believe the Genesis account, even so by continuing to read this chapter you will understand an alternative to the New World Order's Gnosticism and why many Christians contend their faith in God is the opposite of religion. This is important not only for those seeking answers but also to understand why the Christianity that Christ taught is being singled out for destruction.)

From the time man left that Garden environment of order, he has been trying to create a New World Order. By the use of religion he has tried to patch up the wild world, and to rearrange, to repair, to reform this polluted disordered world. The condition of the world testifies that religion has failed. But religion was never meant to be the tool to reorder the world. In the Garden of Eden, Jesus Christ was promised to Adam and Eve as God's own method of reconciling Himself back to mankind. Christ was the hope of the Hebrew prophets, and the center of their faith in God. The mystery of God, Jesus Christ, was sent to man as God's way of allowing those people searching for Him to get to know Him. Religion is supposedly a search for God, but in reality the priesthoods are not honestly looking for God to reveal Himself (how often do they speak of a need for an atonement?), but they are looking for techniques they can develop to sell to the masses. Religion continues for various reasons, many of them selfish.

In reality, they have misunderstood the Christian message. They reinterpret in the view of their religious message. All religions are seeking God(s) in their own strength, and becoming proud of their findings.

SIMPLIFIED CHART
OF
RELIGIOUS POWER
CREATED
BY
THE
HINDU CASTE SYSTEM

Caste (called jati) is based on race.
The Aryans rule at the top.
The caste system varies from one area to another in India.
Although technically illegal, the caste system continues in full force in India.
The New World Order directs peoples' hate as it desires.
The N.W.O. created hate against aparteid in So. Africa, while ignoring the far more serious racism in India. This was because the New Age Religion of the New World Order has been discreetly derived from Hinduism. The relationship between the New Age Religious movement and Hinduism has been clouded by relabeling of components.

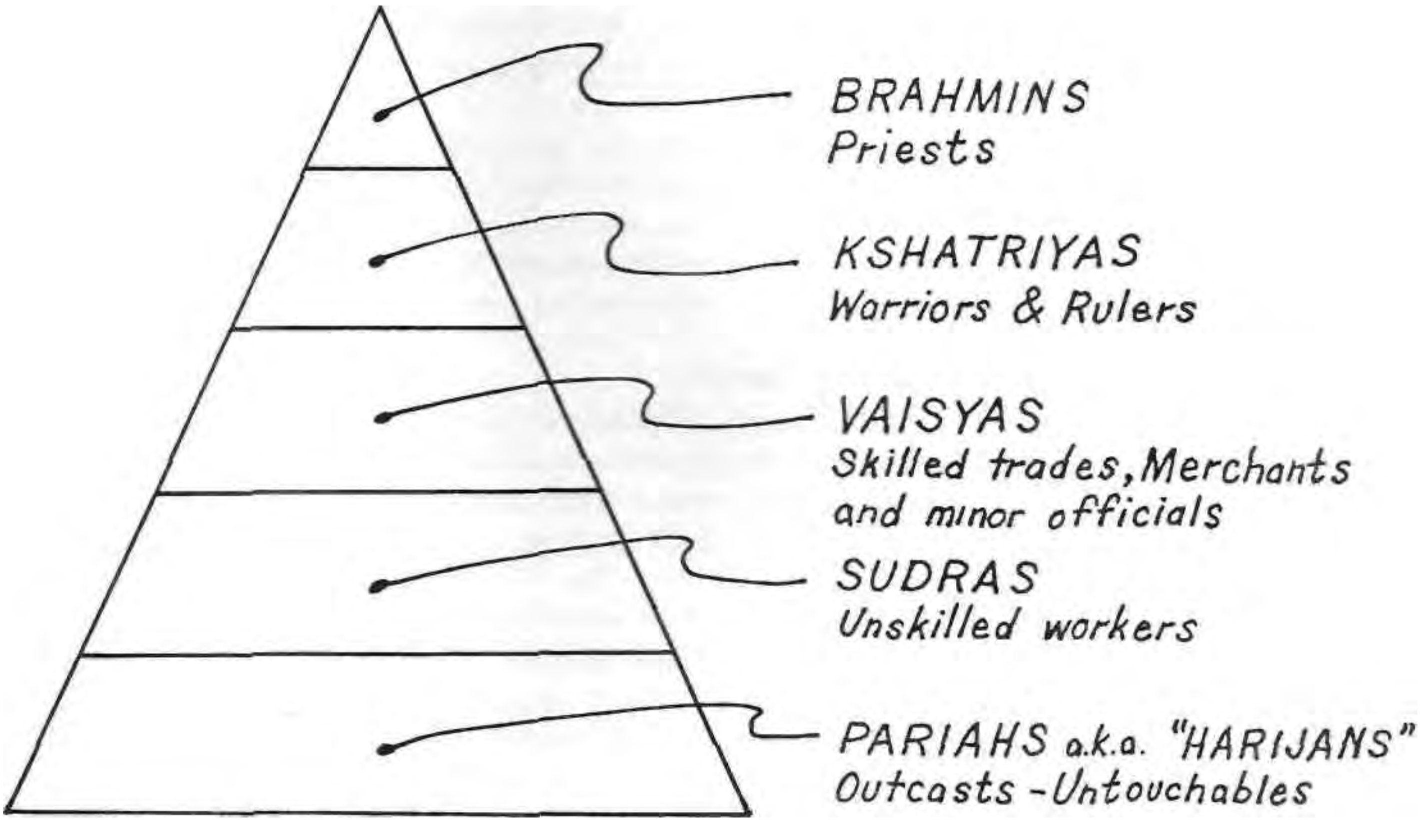
BRAHMINS
Priests
KSHATRIYAS
Warriors & Rulers
VAISYAS
Skilled trades, Merchants and minor officials
SUDRAS
Unskilled workers
PARIAHS a.k.a. "HARIJANS"
Outcasts - Untouchables

GNOSTIC HIERARCHY
PROPOSED
BY
H.G. WELLS

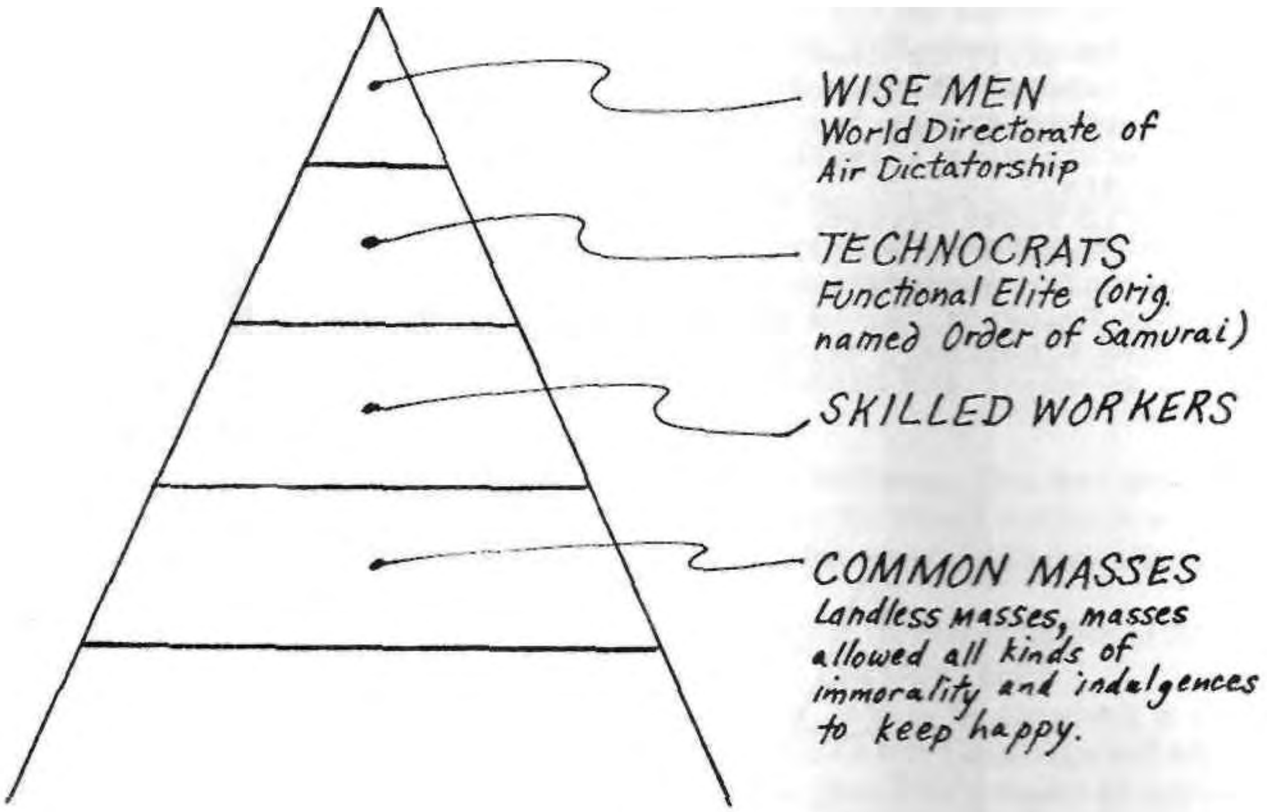
WISE MEN
World Directorate of
Air Dictatorship
TECHNOCRATS
Functional Elite (orig.
named Order of Samurai)
SKILLED WORKERS
COMMON MASSES
Landless masses, masses
allowed all kinds of
immorality and indulgences
to keep happy.

Charts drawn by F. Springmeier

SIMPLIFIED CHART
OF
H.G. WELL'S UTOPIA
a.k.a. Bacon's "House of Saloman
and Plato's Utopia

To seek for God is a claimed goal of religion. This seems to be a fine goal. If one wants to search for and study a rock, there is no objection on the part of the rock. If one wants to search for and study a man without his consent, he may run into big trouble. If one searches for God, he finds out that unless God reveals Himself to the searcher the finite man cannot find an infinite and Holy God.

Christ came with the object of showing man how man doesn't need to seek God by himself, that God is willing to reveal Himself to mankind. Rather than relying on religion, man can allow God to reconcile Himself to mankind. Jesus Christ was not very complimentary to the religious leaders of the day. He called them "ye fools and blind; woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites." (Mt 23:13)

Those Pharisees had picked up the entire Babylonian gnostic religious system. After Jerusalem fell to the Romans the Jewish religious leaders returned to Babylonia, which became the Jewish religious center until they began moving into Europe in the middle ages. The Universal Jewish Encyclopedia states on pages 13 through 17,

"...in the second century C.E.[A.D.] Babylonia had become a bulwark of Judaism.... The former land of exile had become a land of refuge... The 7th century found the importance of Babylonian Jewry considerably increased. During the preceding 300 years, Palestine had been merely a place of veneration, while Babylonia became the center of Jewish life and learning. Babylonian Jews no longer looked to Palestine for instruction; even the heads of the schools at Tiberius were Babylonian Jews....Babylonia was the spiritual center of Judaism, and its influence brought many Babylonian customs into general use..." (bold added)

The early groups called gnostics in Egypt and the Middle East were primarily Jews. From the preceeding information one begins to realize how indepted the world is to the Jews who served as a vehicle to spread gnosticism throughout the world.

(The Cause celebre of this book will be to show how the Jehovah's Witnesses' Watchtower Society ties into the New World Order in chapters 1.5 to 1.17. Anyone at all familiar with how the Watchtower Society claims to have nothing to do with any political, religious, or fraternal group, will realize that if the Watchtower Society is part of this New World Order then our minds can adjust to accepting about anybody else could be involved too. Unit 2 will tell us who else.)

EXAMINING JEHOVAH'S WITNESSES GNOSTIC TEACHINGS

Let us examine for a while the Gnostic teachings of the Jehovah's Witnesses. Rutherford in Preservation (1932) p. 153, "God has made known to his people the meaning of much that has heretofore been hidden, and may not those things be taken as proof that Armageddon is near,..."

The Jehovah's Witnesses credentials are based on revealing hidden knowledge.

Let us narrow our examination to their book The Harp of God.

"Jehovah had a great plan before the foundation of the world; but no one knew about it. During the first four thousand years of man's history God's plan was kept a secret. He began to reveal it to man nearly nineteen hundred years ago, and then only to those who are consecrated to do his will. Promise was made that greater light should come at the end of the age, and this promise has been kept. We ARE AT THAT TIME, as clearly proven by the contents herein...

People generally have not been thoroughly instructed in the Bible. Even those who have attended the Sunday schools have merely learned the text and not the meaning of the text. Like the prophets of old, they have heard but understood not. The real reason for these conditions is that God's plan could not be understood until his due time to reveal it. HIS DUE TIME IS HERE. (Preface to The Harp of God, 1921)

"The mystery of God has been a stumbling block to both Jews and Christians, so-called; but in God's due time he WILL MAKE KNOWN to all the secret of his mystery and then all rightly exercised by this will rejoice with exceeding joy." (Harp of God, p. 182)

"The mystery is THE CHRIST...(ibid. ,p.l82) The Christ is the instrument or channel for the blessing of mankind. THE CHRIST IS COMPOSED OF JESUS, THE GREAT AND MIGHTY HEAD, AND 144,000 MEMBERS. (ibid, p.187)

"Jehovah has so arranged that only those who have their minds illuminated...can understand and appreciate the mystery of God. These are the ones designated by the prophet Joel as the servants and handmaidens of God..." (ibid., p.190)

ANALYSIS

Concerning the revelation of the "mystery" Col. 1:24-27 says,

"...the mystery which hath been hid for ages and from generations, but NOW is made manifest to his saints..." When Paul wrote "this mystery is NOW made manifest" it was 19 centuries ago.

This is just one of several scriptures that say the same thing. Rom. 16:25-26 and I Cor. 2:7-10 were both written by Paul and both declare that the "mystery" which had been "hid" was revealed to all the nations in Paul's day.

The Gnostic Rutherford would have us believe that he is revealing to the world the mystery knowledge for the first time.

However Jude in his epistle in verse three says, "contend for the faith which was once delivered (the ASV "once for all") unto the saints.

Were Christians to receive a better new message at some future point? Paul warns the Christians that "the faith" that was once delivered is the one and only gospel, and that if an angel (spirit being) or man brings another gospel, whether better or worse which Paul had not preached then let him be cursed. See Gal. 1:8,9.

Don't let anyone fool you. The church of the first century knew this Mystery and proclaimed it to the world. Mt. 28:18-20, Mk. 16:15,16. Yes, the Mystery had been on the mind of God since the beginning of the world, and had been only partially revealed in the Old Testament and the prophets. Read Eph. 3:1-2 and we find that

1. the mystery was revealed to him-verse 3,
2. when the Christians read Paul's letter they could perceive his understanding of the mystery. They understood it then.
3. We see in verse 5 that the "mystery" was revealed to the apostles and the prophets by the Spirit.
4. Paul's mission was to MAKE ALL MEN see what was the dispensation of the mystery for ages which had been hid in God.

We are told that "in God's good time he will pour out his spirit upon all mankind, so that all can understand his wonderful plan." (The Harp of God, p. 190) Yet, the Bible verse that this is quoting and the reference to this on p. 190 which is Joel 2:28,29 is applied by Peter in the

New Testament to what was happening back on the day of Pentecost, "This is THAT spoken through the prophet Joel." They misunderstand the meaning Joel gives to " all flesh"- he doesn't mean every person that has ever lived, but rather all kinds of people Jew and Gentile, Greek and Egyptian, and they were all there at Pentecost.

It is clear from II Tim. 2:15 that the day when the mystery was revealed partially by inspired men and women is over. The revelation of God's will is complete; and now we should study the written Revelation. This only makes sense.

Rutherford says, "Those who are thus anointed have the spirit of the Lord and by virtue of his spirit are ABLE TO UNDERSTAND THE MYSTERY OF GOD..."

The Holy Spirit inspired the writers. He does not have to inspire the readers. If so, there was no point in inspiring the writers. It does not require an inspired man to interpret an inspired man. If so, the first inspired man's book is not a REVELATION, but still a MYSTERY. If we can not understand the first inspired man, how can we understand the second inspired man. Especially if they are inspired by the same Holy Spirit.

Gnostic leaders like the power that comes from people having to come to them for enlightment. Even if the Bible is not understood by a man, because he is so carnal that he can't think straight, he doesn't need to go to a man like Rutherford. (Read more about Joseph Rutherford in especially chapters 1.12 & 1.14.) The reason Christ went away, according to Christ was so that the Holy Spirit would be sent to teach us all things.

A further study of Christ and his relationship to the despised common masses of people, would show that he was advocating the opposite of Gnosticism. His wisdom was not hid under a bushel basket, but set on a hill, so to speak, for all to learn and profit from. Also Christ ministered and befriended those of every social class, including government officials and gentiles. God wants to reconcile himself to everyone, not just to some inner clique.

Jesus Christ also taught the limitations of knowledge (gnosis).

MAN-MADE NEW ORDERS

Christ's atoning work is totally overlooked by popular "theology" that the New World Order is trying to get people hooked on. One of these is called "Liberation Theology". Naturally, they are going to give it a good label. Liberation Theology has as its goal the creation of a man-made Kingdom of God on earth, a millenium. This Millenial kingdom is to be a One-World socialist (Marxist) government such as Cuba and Russia's communist regime. The use of a promised Millenium by the New World Order will be discussed in Chapter 2.5. For now, we will touch on LT here simply to point it out as another religious scam. People are told if they through violent revolution create a Marxist socialist One-World government, then they will have the classless Utopian society Jesus supposedly tried to set up. People today are killing in the name of Liberation Theology, blindly fighting for their own enslavement. The plans of the New Order over a century ago were to make us demand what they wanted to do to us. Under the religious trappings of "Liberation Theology" many people are helping create what is planned already to be the worst slave state in mankind's history.

Even if Liberation Theology through communism could satify man's material needs, Jesus said "Man does not live by bread alone." "Take heed and beware of covetousness, for a man's life consisteth not in the abundance of the things which he possesseth."Lk 12:15 Why? Because man is an organic unity of body, spirit, and soul. To neglect the spiritual side is to ignore part of man's nature. Further their program will fail even on the material needs, for those administering communism are full of greed, lust for power, pride and selfishness. Christ said, "out of the heart of man proceed evil thoughts—all evil comes from within and defiles the man."Mk 7:21-23 The Bible's age old wisdom was that unless God builds the house, they labor in vain who build it. That can equally be applied to theology. Men are building religions, God builds men's faith in Him.

In any case, being religious or not being religious, will not solve the basic problem of man. The action of a pig rolling in the mud does not make him a pig. He won't become a lamb if stops rolling in the mud. Likewise, man and creation are disordered and sinful by nature. Whether man "rolls" in religion or doesn't roll, doesn't change man's nature either, and so knowledge doesn't reconcile man to God. God reconciles man to God.

Man has been working hard to create a New World Order without the new heart God has offered him. (Ezekiel 18:31, 36:26, Jeremiah 31:33b, Deut. 30:6)

FINAL WRAP UP

Gnostic Religions create instant power bases for their administrators—whatever those administrators are called Priests, Rabbis, Swamis, Guru's, etc. The gnostic religions follow a pattern. The various leaders at the very top of these various authority pyramids are collaborating. (You'll learn much more on this further on in this book.) The bottom line is that what appears as perhaps fifty or one hundred religious "scams" are components of one single conspiracy for ultimate world power.

Judaism comes from Babylon. For those who like the ancient mystery religions you will want to thank the Jews. Jews have been one of the best instruments for spreading gnosticism in its various forms.

Christ's teachings and mission was the opposite of gnosticism. Christ was the predicted method that God had for revealing Himself to those who were seeking Him. Faith in God through Christ Jesus is not a power religion. Rather than trying to hide knowledge, Christ tried to spread his good message by calling on his disciples to "go into the whole world teaching", and to do good to all even those who despitefully would abuse them.

Notes:

1. Cumbey, Constance. The Hidden Dangers of the Rainbow, p.99.
2. Readers who are familiar with the conspiracy will be aware of much of this. It was appropriate to give some background information at this point for the general readership. 1 didn't want to bog the reader down in footnotes and details of events at this point, because this information about W.W. II is not vital to the discussion at hand. Readers are encouraged to investigate several of the books now available that cover the Conspiracy's role in W.W. II. The whole story from how it looked at the top has never been told, but hopefully this summary will be helpful.
3. Kingsland, William. The Gnosis And Christianity. Wheaton, II.: The Theosophical Publishing House, 1975,p. 16 (orig. pub. 1937)
4. Hodson, Geoffrey. Theosophy Answers Some Problems of Life. Adyar, Madras, India: Theosophical Pub. House, p. viii.
5. ibid, p.7l
6. I have read this in several places in WT material, but have been unable to relocate a good reference to insert here. The WT 6/15/01 pp.204-208 states that the new race will be composed of special androgenous units—"The race will be composed of perfect units, such as Adam was originally, before being divided into two persons."

Chapter 1.4
A RAINBOW OF DRAGONS

You will learn in this chapter:

- some of the stock tools of the conspiracy
- the history of the Church Universal & Triumphant, John Birch Society, & the Theosophical Society
- the connections between the CUT, the JBS, & the TS with Freemasonry.

No wise person would knowingly choose to fight their opponent blind and deaf, yet that seems to be the choice which many nominal Christians are choosing. They would like to characterize this book as doomsdayer stuff and then dismiss and ignore this material. They want to eat, drink and be happy. This book has nothing to do with a dooms day, if Christians suffer for Truth that can only be a wonderful testimony of love for their Lord Jesus, who is the Way, the Truth, and the real Life. (Christians are not seeking martrydom, but the chance to stand for the Truth revealed in Christ is a chance to honor their creator for his love.)

This book has to do with recording what people involved with the Power have planned, and why they can carry out their plans. Further it will give you things you can do to counter the Power. While you may perhaps shudder at the thought of World War III, you should be aware that many people have been deceived to look forward to an Armageddon. Not only are these people planning and looking forward to it, but they have been blaming its assumed arrival on Christians for several years.<#1. Various New Age leaders preach the power of collective consciousness (which belief is a type of belief in magic). Some of these New Agers speak and write that Christianity's belief in Armageddon is the reason it will occur, that Christians are Willing it to happen.> If people think that by putting their heads in the sand they can escape the future, or even the present difficulties, they may be in for a rude surprise.

So how is the adversary of freedom building a One-World-Religion? Several items are stock tools,

a. What they call Blinds- these are deliberate deceptions placed within their own writings to confuse the uninitiated. H.P.B. gives a good description of the use of these, so do Masonic writers like Albert Pike.<#2. H.P.B. writing describes the use of Blinds in The Secret Doctrine, (Vol. 5 Adyar edition), p. 435.>

b. They use Deflection to redirect the power of truth which is opposed to them. Healthy foods, benevolence, ecology, love, acceptance, etc. are all part of the Creator's Christian walk. These truths and other are deflected from their original purpose of glorifying the Creator to glorifying their own programs. Rather than publicly opposing Christianity, they rename their own movements Christian, and then proceed to do very little for Christ, and everything for Lucifer. They are even deflecting worship of Jesus Christ onto worship of a demon named Jesus.<#3. Kurt Billings, an ex-New Age leader now a sincere Christian has been giving his testimony around the United States, he was a New Ager who infiltrated churches and as a church leader channeled a demon named Jesus.>

c. They use Hegelian Dialectics. This dialectic process doesn't happen on its own so it often has to be forced into happening. The idea is that each idea ("ism") called a "thesis", like say Capitalism, naturally by definition has an opposite, an "antithesis". In Capitalism the antithesis is Communism. The conflict between the two produces a synthesis. By controlling both ends of the conflict, one controls the end product, the synthesis. More than not, the One-World-Power can be seen working behind both sides of many conflicts. Indeed, the Secret Societies have been historically shown to be behind all the revolutions and wars in Modern Europe since the American Revolution. In religious conflict, both sides are often being manipulated. Some of the various groups openly admit their strategy is designed to create a synthesis. You will find Hegelian Dialectics has been introduced into the U.S. educational system by the Skull & Bones Order (considered an Illuminati group). It was adopted in Russia by the Slavophiles in the 19th century. Communism, Nazism, Fabians, most New Age groups, Liberation Theology, and other parts of the Power use Hegelian Dialectics. Hegel in turn based his system on the ancient Greek atomists especially Democritus.

d. The New World Order's One-World-Religion is organized on the SPIN principle.

WHAT IS THE SPIN PRINCIPLE?

This concept is to be the topic of this section.

S-P-I-N = Segmented Polycentric Integrated Networks

If one were to diagram a SPIN organizational chart it would not be a conventional box type configuration such as an army company organization chart. Rather, it would resemble a fish-net with interlocking nodes with groups linked to many other groups and cluster around nodes. There is no center to the network. It is like the brain's electrical connections, with an overlap of functions, so that good cells can take over from damaged sections. A network (one of their buzzwords) is many times more greater than the sum of its parts.

The New Age author Marilyn Ferguson does an excellent job in describing how the Conspiracy's SPIN network functions.

"This is a source of power never before tapped in history: multiple self-sufficient social movements linked for a whole array of goals whose accomplishment would transform every aspect of contemporary life.

"Because SPINs are so qualitatively different in organization and impact from bureaucracies...most people don't see them—or think they are conspiracies. Often networks take similar action without conferring with each other simply because they share so many assumptions. It might also be said that the shared assumptions are the collusion.

"The Aquarian Conspiracy is, in effect, a SPIN of SPINs, a network of many networks aimed at social transformation. The Aquarian Conspiracy is indeed loose, segmented, evolutionary, redundant. Its center is everywhere. Although many social movements and mutual-help groups are represented in its alliances, its life does not hinge on any of them."<#4. Ferguson, Marilyn. The Aquarian Conspiracy. Los Angeles, CA: J.P. Tarcher. Inc, 1980, p. 217.>

Organisationally, the SPIN principle has worked wonders for the Illuminati, who are the Illumined Ones who are directed by an angel of light variously called Venus, Lucifer, Satan, or Sanat (a scrambling of Satan). Different groups have their own preferred name for this Master. Almost without fail their literature and art provide enough in each case to positively identify this Being of Light Lucifer as the Ascended Master of every Illuminated group. Sources that have been near the top of the hierarchies of these various groups reveal that the "alliances" are not as loose as the public pictures them. The top leaders are actually in contact and collusion together. Further, the New Age movement is producing all kinds of organizational charts, Yellow Pages, coordinating councils between groups such as the Unity in Diversity Council, etc. The movement is not as leaderless as the New Age Movement likes to pretend.

Further, while their SPIN network is powerful, it is much more manmade and artificial than people can imagine. Groups that supposedly just materialize out of nothing, are actually funded and promoted from the start by an outside source.

While the New Agers pride themselves on their SPIN strategy, the followers of Christ have been configured the same way for centuries.

It must be admitted that several interlocking Secret Cults, the Freemasons, the CIA (the Company), and MI6 (the Firm) control much of the world. Through allied groups such as the B'ai B'rith (the Order), the Skull and Bones Order (the Order), the KGB, the Triads, the Mafia, the Order of Jesuits (the Company), and the MOUSSAD their control extends even further. Finally, there are a plethora of religious groups interwoven into the whole SPIN network. Some like the Universal Aquarian Church, the Metaphysical Church in America, Light of Christ Community Church, the Institutes for the Enhancement of Life Energy and Creativity (IELEC) in NY, Children of God's ashram, and the Church Universal & Triumphant are openly New Age religious bodies. Unity School of Christianity in Unity Villiage, MO is a training center for the New Age where Luciferian initiations have been conducted for years. Lucis Trust functions as part of the brain of the New Age movement, and the Findhorn Foundation in Scotland is comparable to the Vatican City of the New Age movement. Today the Illuminati are also known by the esoteric (inside) name of Royal Ipsimus (Ipsimus is Latin for "Master of the Household.")

It is not impossible to draw diagrams showing the seed, producing its rotten fruit, producing seed, producing fruit, producing a host of seed, etc. The Spin diagrams in this book are an attempt to begin showing the development of their SPIN of SPINs.

THE DEVELOPMENT OF PSYC & EDUCATION SPINs

Let us take for instance, Karl Kasimir Wundt (1744-84), a German professor and member of the Bavarian Illuminati. His son was Maximilian (1787-1846), whose son was William Maximilian Wundt (1832-1920). Wilhelm Maximilian Wundt was influenced by Johann Herbart who was a student of Hegelian Dialectics. Herbart's mentors were Illuminati. Wilhelm Mazimilian Wundt then influenced Daniel Coit Gilman and G. Stanley Hall, who were Americans who went to Germany to study. Daniel Coit Gilman and G. Stanley Hall were very influential to introduce Hegelian ideas into American education. John Dewey was influenced by Gilman and in turn influenced many other in the American Educational System.<#5. Researchers have available the documents confiscated from the

Bavarian Illuminati and published by the Bavarian government. These are in German entitled Originalschriften des Illuminaten Ordens, Zweite Abteilung, see p.65. Also see Klass, Lance J. and Paoli Lionni. The Leipzig Connection. Sheridan, OR: The Delphian Press, 1967. This book traces the Wundt link to Amer. Education. Anthony C. Sutton, America's Secret Establishment. Boring, OR: CPA Book Pub., 1986, pp. 81-111 (and other pages) does an excellent job of tracing how Hegelian ideas were propogated throughout the American Educational System and Psyc. departments by the Order.>

This is just a single line of influence. When one considers some of the other important U.S. educators that learned Hegelian ideas from Wundt it is easy to picture how a vast network of interlocking schools of education and departments of psychology were established. Other Americans taught by Wundt and the number of doctorates they awarded up to 1948 are:<#6. Sutton, America's Secret Establishment, p. 91.>

J. McKeen Cattell, of Columbia University,	344 doctorates
E.W. Scripture, of Yale University,	138
E.B. Tichener, of Cornell University,	112
H. Gale, of Minnesota University	123
G.T.W. Patrick, of Iowa University	169
C.H. Judd, of the University of Chicago	196

THE DEVELOPMENT OF THE CHURCH UNIVERSAL & TRIUMPHANT NODE

Another line of influence by the Illuminati can be seen in the illumination of the leaders of the Continental Masons in the 18th century. Illuminated puppets like the Portugese Jew Martinez de Pasqualis went from Germany to France and initiated various people and started various Secret illuminated groups. As a result Grand Orient Masonry was illuminated, and so was Co-Masonry on the continent. The illuminatus Giuseppe (Joseph) Mazzini (1805-1872), who belonged to several Secret Societies, the Scottish Rite, the Grand Orient, Carbonari, Young Italy, Young Ireland, the 1st Communist International, initiated Helena Petrovna Blavatsky into Carbonarism (a type of Masonry) in 1856. Helena Petrovna Blavatsky (she went by the initials H.P.B.) had already met the magician mentor of Mazzini in 1848 in Asia Minor. After her initiation by Mazzini, H.P.B. claimed she was illumined by the Hierarchy of the Great White Lodge in 1856. George Felt of the Hermetic Brotherhood of Luxor also was a big influence on H.P.B.

After 1866, she was also under the influence of the Mason hypnotist and spiritist Victor Michal.<#7. Que'non, Rene'. Le Theosophisme, 1921, p. 14.>

H.P.Blavatsky was also initiated into the Order of Druses, the Adoptive branch of the Ancient and Primitive rite of Masonry (1877), and the Rites of Memphis and Mizraim. In the Grand Orient Adoptive Masonry she held the highest rank, a Crowned Princess 12. With the help of the Rosicrucian Masters, H.P.B started the Theosophical Society. The socialist and occultist Herbert Burrows, a member of the Stella Matutina (a Masonic occult spinoff from the Golden Dawn), introduced the Co-Mason Annie Besant to H.P.B. in 1889. In 1887, H.P.B. started a Theosophical magazine called Lucifer the light-bringer.

Annie Besant took over the illuminated Theosophical Society. Annie Besant bungled her job in creating a Christ in the early 1920s, so her job was given to Alice Ann Bailey. Alice Ann Bailey decided (or rubber-stamped) revised secret plans to keep the work low key until 1975. 1975 would be the big year. Meanwhile, she wrote numerous influential books, and in 1922 established Lucifer Publishing, and Lucifer Trust, later changed to Lucis.

Early in the 1930s, a couple named Edna and Guy Ballard received illumination, and started the I AM movement. The St. Germain Press publishes items such as the monthy periodical The Voice of the I AM. Guy borrows much of his ideas from Alice Bailey, the Rosicrucians, and the Masons. Two of his books Unveiled Mysteries and The Magic Presence sound masonic. His messages he received from the Great White Brotherhood seem like a regurgitation of what others had also received.

Mark and Elizabeth Clare Prophet began as a spin-off of the I AM movement in the late 1950s. In 1958, they started Summit University to train initiates of their Church Universal and Triumphant (CUT).

The I AM movement feels that CUT stole their picture of St. Germain, and have started using a different picture in order to assert their separateness. Even though they don't cooperate officially, the I AM movement and the Church Universal and Triumphant are nearly identical in beliefs.

What has been covered is how the lineage of Illumination has been passed down from generation to generation in a series of spin-offs. Although there is no publicly known connection between the Church Universal and Triumphant and the Masons, it will be worthwhile to examine this movement. Although the lineal descent is a direct one between CUT and the Masons, few people would on their own see any connection between the two.

THE CHURCH UNIVERSAL & TRIUMPHANT

It was the spring of 1990 and the Montanans in Paradise Valley were showing concern toward their new neighbors who had bought 33,000 acres near Yellowstone National Park.<#8. Wilhelm, Maria, "An angry publisher fights to save the valley called Paradise." People Weekly Dec. 24, '90, p.38. See also Reid, T.R., "Montanans feel 'invaded' by survivalist church; tensions rise over "Guru Ma', followers." The Washington Post (April 22, 1990), p. A3 col. 1.> The National Park people were getting upset too at these new neighbors, who called themselves Church Universal & Triumphant. Problems, like the sect's fuel tanks leaking, had the park people unhappy.<#9. The National Parks, a Periodical put out by the U.S. National Parks, discusses in short articles in the Jan-Feb., the Jul-Aug, and the Sept-Oct. issues problems the Yellowstone National Park was having with the CUT.> An ex-member Kenneth Polini, who had served as the sect's security chief, was telling the newspapers that the sect could end up to be another Jonestown.<#10. Texe Marrs gives as his source for this in his New Age Cults & Religions, p. 171 an article in the Spokane Chronicle however an examination of the last few years of the Spokane Chronicle didn't reveal any such article. He did get the information from some source apparently. This is one quote that I am not able to verify.> The Prophet's oldest daughter Moira Lewis had to be thrown out of the CUT, when it became apparent that she didn't believe in it. Now Moira Lewis was talking, and talking to the anti-cult ministries.

"I AM El Morya," Elizabeth Clare Prophet's Christmas message read, "Through the Ages I have worn various guises and disguises. You will know me (as I stand beside you

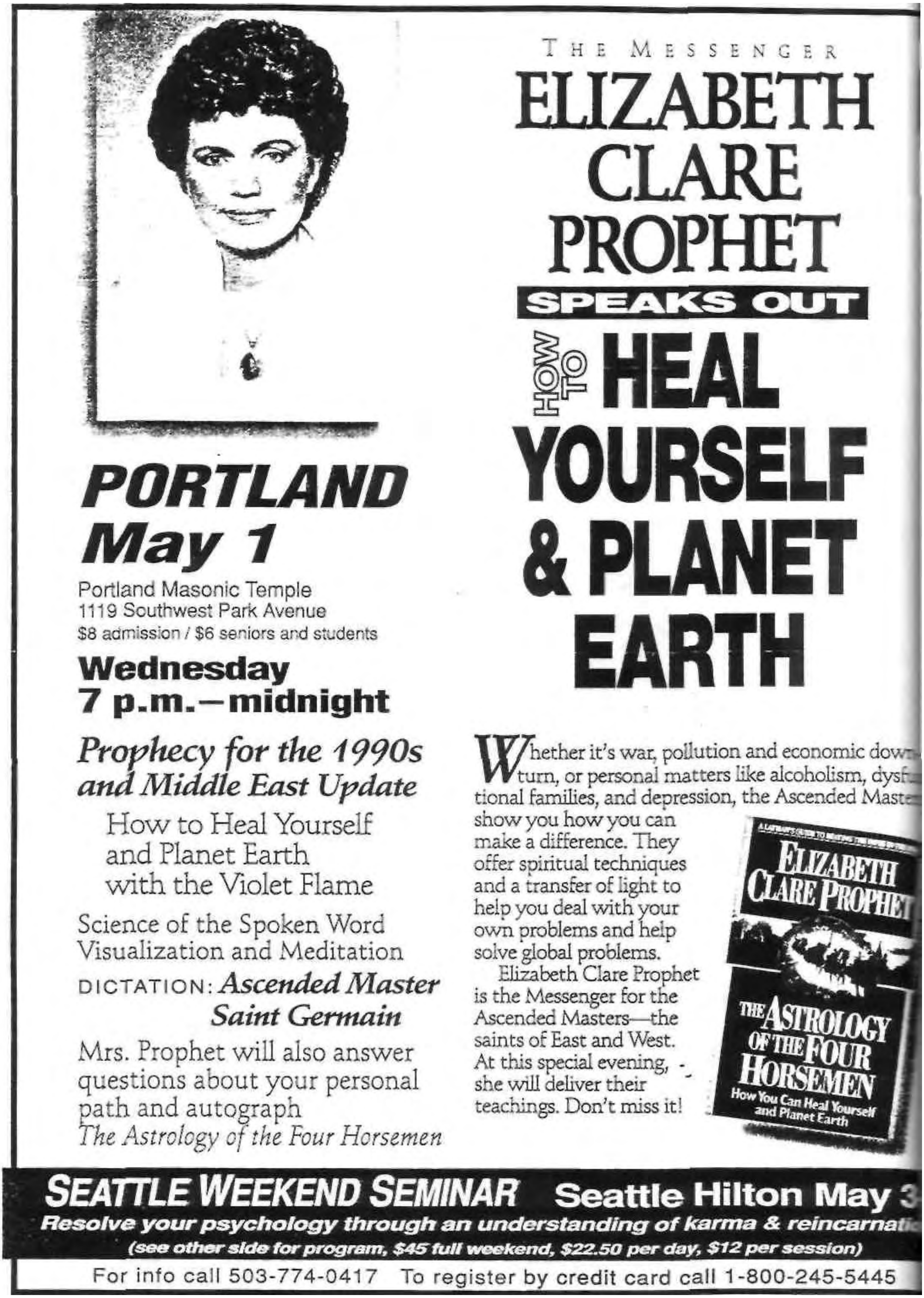

THE MESSENGER

ELIZABETH CLARE PROPHET

SPEAKS OUT

HOW TO HEAL YOURSELF & PLANET EARTH

PORTLAND May 1

Portland Masonic Temple
1119 Southwest Park Avenue
$8 admission / $6 seniors and students

Wednesday
7 p.m.—midnight

Prophecy for the 1990s
and Middle East Update

How to Heal Yourself
and Planet Earth
with the Violet Flame

Science of the Spoken Word
Visualization and Meditation

DICTATION: *Ascended Master Saint Germain*

Mrs. Prophet will also answer questions about your personal path and autograph *The Astrology of the Four Horsemen*

Whether it's war, pollution and economic dow
turn, or personal matters like alcoholism, dysf
tional families, and depression, the Ascended Maste
show you how you can make a difference. They offer spiritual techniques and a transfer of light to help you deal with your own problems and help solve global problems.

Elizabeth Clare Prophet is the Messenger for the Ascended Masters—the saints of East and West. At this special evening, she will deliver their teachings. Don't miss it!

ELIZABETH
CLARE PROPHE
THE ASTROLOGY OF THE FOUR HORSEMEN
How You Can Heal Yourself and Planet Earth

SEATTLE WEEKEND SEMINAR Seattle Hilton May

Resolve your psychology through an understanding of karma & reincarnat

(see other side for program, $45 full weekend, $22.50 per day, $12 per session)

For info call 503-774-0417 To register by credit card call 1-800-245-5445 with the legions of light who are implementing sound and the sound waves to counteract discord, all destructivity, disease, and death ere it return to mankind who have sent it forth with the suddenness of a woman's travail.

My beloved brothers and sisters of the Light, I address you as co-equals and co-inheritors of the mantle of God's will. I pray that without fear, with longsuffering and perseverance, you shall endure and fulfill your mission of this year and the decade to come.

All of heaven is poised for the victory. We look to commune with you, each one, directly through the ultra-dimensional sound of Excelsior. May you who believe in angels and in the brothers in white be not forgetful to entertain strangers. For this is the hour of the coming of the LORD'S Spirit in the manifold expressions of our legions who are descending to earth on the glorious mission of the sons of God to raise up souls who are counted as the servants of the Lamb.

I AM El Morya. Through the ages I have worn various guises and disguises. You will know me (as I stand beside you in answer to your call) by my vibration, by a certain knowing, a certain God-determination, a certain will to move and to be movers of men and mountains. You will know me by my impetus which I give to you to act, act, act in the name of God to set the captives free.

Let us be up and doing. I am with the I AM THAT I AM who reveals himself in the outflowing and the inflowing of events.

Children of the sun, be prime movers of fight and love and goodwill in time and space and you will be with me held in the bonds of the eternal Brotherhood.

In the Spirit of Christmas, I AM

For a Christmas wreath of light and sound the world around, play this record on Christmas Day and be one with brothers and sisters on the love ray.

in answer to your call) by my vibration, by a certain knowing, a certain God-determination, a certain will to move and to be movers...I am with the I AM THAT I AM...In the Spirit of Christmas, I AM"<#11.1969 CUT Booklet with Cover of Christ saying "Arise Shine for Thy Light Is Come!" The Booklet has a Christmas Message and is accompanied with a record. Malibu, CA: CUT, 1969, p.7.> El Morya is identified in CUT literature as Chohan of the First Ray, Master of the Lodges of Perfection.<#12. CUT Broshure with a mountain scene with El Morya's words "The trek upwards is worth the inconvenience" on back and "the Messenger" E. C. Prophet on the front. p.2.> Those familiar with Masonry know what the Lodges of Perfection are.

Elizabeth Clare Prophet is now running CUT. She claims that El Morya, Chief of the Darjeeling Council of the Great White Brotherhood is using her to channel messages so that the earth can be raised once again into a Golden Age.

Elizabeth tells her followers, "If you would like to be counted among the avant-garde who are advancing the cause of this Revolution, read and meditate upon El Morya's words."<#13. ibid., Quote is from the 6th paragraph on front.>

Elizabeth Clare Prophet not only has the name Prophet, but she claims to be one. Not only does she look divine (at least in the photos released to the public), but she claims to be divine. Not only does she have weekly handouts called "Pearls of Wisdom", but her 3rd ex-husband Randall King reports she is getting wealthy from her followers. And that's not all.

One of the first items that struck me about Elizabeth Clare Prophet's Theology is how Masonic it sounded. Since Elizabeth Prophet states she is continueing the Ballard's work--not with Mrs. Ballard's approval though—it is not surprising the two groups are alike. But the CUT doesn't talk about any Masonic connections. Sure they sell Masonic books, and they do use the Masonic Temples for their meetings, but they make clear to her followers that even though Masonry is O.K., her church is a big advancement over Masonic believes. The truth is, her teachings and the Ballard's are just a rehash of Masonic beliefs. They even invoke (pray to) the Masonic All-Seeing-Eye as the Elohim Cyclopea. Their Knight Commander is St. Germain.<#14. The title Knight Commander has been used at various times by CUT in the "Knight Commander St. Germain." Knight Commander St. Germain supposedly addressed CUT on May 3,1981, and this is referred to in a letter by James W. McCaffrey, CUT Board of Directors.> (Since they do not see St. Germain, but accept that their prophet channels his messages, it means that their Knight Commander is in reality the person supposedly channeling him.) People in the I AM movement also study Masonic and Theosophical books for spiritual knowledge.<#15. Interviews and visits with ex-I AM members and members of the I AM movements by Author.>

IS CUT PART OF AN ILLUMINED NETWORK?

It is not inconceivable that this Illumined Religion is part of the Illuminati network. Interestingly, the winged-globe which is the symbol of the Illuminati and Rosicrucians is on the cover of Elizabeth Prophet's book Teachings of the Ascended Masters. The Rosicrucian belief is that the Winged Sun Disk represents the Elysian Fields. CUT also believes in the Elysian Fields. Another link to the Illuminati is CUT's use of Enochian Magic and its 7 planes. Repeatedly, references to these 7 planes of existence crop up in CUT inner teachings given to the Fraternity of the Keepers of the Flame.<#16. 1969 Christmas Message, p.4.>

ALL UNDER THE AUTHORITY OF THE GREAT WHITE BROTHERHOOD

Elizabeth Clare Prophet has emphatically made a big issue that she is following orders from the Great White Brotherhood. The Great White Brotherhood is the same group that Bailey, H.P.B., the Rosicrucians and the Esoteric Masons follow. Note, they are following the same authority. The Masonic Book Ancient Mystic Oriental Masonry, (1907) written based on information from the highest Masonic authorities, states on pg. 79, "THE UNDERLYING PRINCIPLE. 114 "The Ancient Wisdom Religion is the Thread-soul' on which are strung all the various incarnations and encasements of the religious life,...Begotten by that Spiritual Hierarchy—the Great White Brotherhood—in whose guardianship is the evolution of the human race..." The next page tells how the "Great White Brotherhood" is known in Ancient Mystic Oriental Masonry as the 11th degree. (Is this a Blind?) Students of the Supreme Initiation will see "The Beautiful Philosophy of Initiation," by the Count M. de St. Vincent.

An Illumined Chief of one of the occult branches of the English Masonic Lodge of Rosicruciana in Anglia— called Stella Matutina— left it, became a Christian. This ex-Chief's book Light-bearers of Darkness clearly details how the Illuminati (Illumined ones) are lead by the Great White Lodge and that the Illumined ones in that day (1930) were far more powerful than people imagined, and that they were in all kinds of groups. "These secret societies, formed when needed, are detached into groups distinct and apparently opposed, professing respectively and in turn the most contrary opinions of the day, so as to direct, apart and with confidence, all parties, political, religious, economic, and literary." (Light-Bearers of Darkness, p.2)

Another follower of the occult, Tal Brooke, who was the top Western disciple of India's miracle-working god-man Sai Baba, also like the Stella Matutina chief, became a Christian and also wrote a book When The World Will Be As One warning people about Elizabeth Clare Prophet, the Fabians, the New Age agenda and the Masons who are promoting it.

The highest Masonic authorities teach that illumination like Elizabeth Clare Prophet practices was part of the Mystery Religions. Elizabeth Clare Prophet often uses the Illuminati 3-dot symbol when she signs her initial. How ironic that her teachings are being passed off as so fresh and new, yet are the very ancient superstitions that men practiced long ago.

In the Secret Teachings of All Ages, "The Mysteries taught that spiritual illumination was attained only by bringing the lower nature up to a certain standard of efficiency and purity. The Mysteries were therefore established for the purpose of unfolding the nature of man according to certain fixed rules which, when faithfully followed, elevated the human consciousness to a point where it was capable of cognizing its own constitution and the true purpose of existence. This knowledge...of spiritual illumination constituted the secret, or esoteric doctrine of antiquity. Certain apparently physical organs and centers are in reality the veils or sheaths of spiritual center."<#17. Hall, The Secret Teachings of All Ages, p. LXXVI.>

This is the issue at stake here. Is CUT a manmade or demonic authority, and therefore a false authority or is it the Almighty God's authority?

Although CUT claims to be Christian and use the Bible, it advocates and teaches Magic. For instance, "We seek to raise the veil upon the wonderful world of Cosmic Magic, the Magic of believing in the Power of the original Intent which may then be blazed as the all-consuming Love of God..." (Pearls of Wisdom, 3/26/67, p. 3)<#18. Another example is Pearls of Wisdom, 6/25/67, front page aka p.53.>

It is not the job of this book to enlist the reader to champion this Author's religious doctrinal understandings. The issue is more important than that. A world-wide authority is being created through the actions of separate nodes of a SPIN of SPINs. This authority plans to someday be absolute. They will cleanse the world like Hitler's Final Solution of the Jews. Hundreds of people who have come out of CUT or had family members in it, are warning that this is a deception that has destroyed people's lives and families. Judging on the basis of where CUT came from, who they are friends with, and what Masonic and Illuminati tactics are, it is a safe bet that there is some kind of colloboration at the top by Elizabeth Clare Prophet with Secret Societies. Indications are that it is part of a vast scheme to establish a One-World-Government.

Elizabeth Clare Prophet has no problem getting on the radio, and getting publicity. Obviously, she has connections. Although she heralds her own group as the Church, she has appeared with other New Age leaders on radio talk shows. She does seem to work with them on some level. Her Summit University, started in 1958<#19. Pearls of Wisdom, on the back pages of for example July, 31,1977 Vol. 20, No.31, Malibu, CA: CUT, p.148.> is not shabby. Her "Fraternity of Keepers of the Flame" as she calls her initiates learn such things as astrology, crystals, white magic, Hinduism (reincarnation, karma, meditation, chakra points), how to decree, how to dress, and how to become divine at Summit University. Her religion itself is quite organized with several presses, computer operators, Montessori Preschool Elementary and High School people, cooks, accountants, planning and development people, purchasing, and the whole nine yards.<#20. Notes, Summit University Student.>

How does she finance all her expensive advertising and constant travelling? How did her husband and her finance things in the beginning when they established Summit University, and their headquarters in Colorado Springs, and their house in Santa Barbara? Details about Elizabeth Clare Prophet and her Organization are hard to come by.

If she can keep recruiting new people, her finances may do all right. If a person gets serious about being part of her organization, they are expected to make a once in a lifetime gift of everything they have to the CUT controlled by Elizabeth Clare Prophet.<#21. Notes, Summit University Student and Confidential Interviews After that they are expected to tithe (one-tenth).<#22. Church Universal and Triumphant Tenets, Colorado Springs, CO: 1975, p.12 under Art. XII Law of the Tithe.> In return, they are initiated into what I call "the supreme Grand Flattery", "You shall become an enlightened God."

The Keepers of the Flame were told "We don't have any dollars to increase our staff until we have more dollars coming in from person in the world. Your love and service here should draw in enough supplies to cover all your needs."<#23. Notes, Summit University Student.>

When students are invited onto staff it is a commitment. They are told, "Your life will never be your own again, but was it ever your own?" They have already been taught "Ascension Keys". Elizabeth Clare Prophet tells her students that to Ascend to Godhead is their birthright,<#24. Pearls of Wisdom, Vol. X, No. 23, (June 4, 1967), The Summit

Lighthouse, p. 41 -"...has robbed men of the birthright of their Ascension..."> the divine right of everyperson.<#25. Pearls of Wisdom, Vol. X, No. 19, (May 7,1967), The Summit Lighthouse, p. 24 - "The Divine Right is the Immortal Plan...Inherent pattern of unique Christ manifestation..."> In the Ascension Dossier of Serapis Bey they are told "The capacity of the externalized self must be given in toto." Also- "You must abandone your past to God." In Lanello's Message(a channeled message), 4/20/73 the students are told, "You do not have to wait for the carnal mind to evolve, for the carnal mind will never evolve. It must be put off and cast into the Flame."<#26. Lanello 4/20/73 in the Pearls of Wisdom, Vol. 16, #32, 8/12/1973.>

In Serapis, Ascension Class they are told, "The Ascension Flame is the Flame of Mother."

"Men prove the Law by doing the Law. They see Truth by becoming Truth."<#27. Serapis, Dossier 6/4/67.> "All things are relative except the Absolute."<#28. El Morya, Ascension Class, covering the Ascension Keys.>

There are many interesting parallels between CUT and the WT Society. Both make a big show of being against the system, the United Nations and the people uniting the world. However, neither group ever mentions the Masons in connection with plans to bring in a one-world-state. The religious side of the One-World-Power can not be understood with out an awareness of Freemasonry. While supposedly warning their adherents of those men who control the world, both CUT and the WT Society carry out a systematic program to condition their people to believe in a soon-to-come Golden Age, and training people how to act in it. It's this writer's conviction that it is not so criticaly dangerous to the One-World-State for these people to know something of what is happening, because their leadership, who they blindly follow, are part of the One-World-Religion. According to CUT, Jesus was Chohan of the age that ended, now a new cycle is starting with Sanat in charge.<#29. Pearls of Wisdom, (Mar. 26, 1967), Summit Lighthouse, p. 1. Another reference is Prophet, E.C.. Prophecy for the 1980s, p. 10.>

Elizabeth Prophet writes about the coming Armageddon, "There's a certain sense in America that it can't happen here, that somehow we are a favorite or chosen people, that we will not go the way of a Rome or an Atlantis or a Lemuria—that somehow it will be different. And yet collectively, as far as the entire consciousness of the earth goes, we are Lemuria, Atlantis, Babylon, Assyria, Rome come again. We are the melting pot and the descendants of all of these movements..."

"We speak of the age of Pisces as the two-thousand cycle of Jesus Christ that is coming to its conclusion, and we feel the winds of a new age that is called Aquarius."

"The state of the world is perilous....The coming, then, of the Four Horsemen is actually the prophecy of a planetary initiation. Those horsemen could not ride except by the flow of events, by the karma of the people. They are bringing to our very doorstep the forces that we have set in motion as a planet, as mankind, for centuries."<#30. Prophet, Elizabeth Clare. Prophecy for the 1980's. Los Angeles, CA: Summit University Press, 1982, paragraphs quoted from p. 24,10, and 12 respectively.> "And so the Great Initiator of life stands before us and says, These are the causes (cause of Disaster and Armageddon) you have set in motion, humanity."<#31. ibid., p. 13.>

What Elizabeth Clare Prophet has just said is that the people of the world are creating the forces to bring about Armaggeddon. It is their karma. A great Initiator is waiting for the time of planetary initiation. Jesus Christ's time is passed, the leadership has passed to another Chohan.

In spite of all the time CUT spends teaching its people about the Conspiracy of the Communists, the International Financiers, the CFR, etc. when Elizabeth Prophet makes statements like this above she is shifting the blame for wars and W.W. Ill from those who control the world to the common people. If she only succeeds in this propaganda ploy, she will have accomplished a great favor for the One-World-State.

The common people of the world are not directing world events. For instance, it was not the common people of either Iraq, Kuwait nor the U.S. that had anything to do with Operation Desert Storm and Desert Shield. In fact, months before Kuwait was invaded the Trilateral Commission had decided at the White House that Iraq was to be the focus of a disarmament program. As nothing was attempted politically, it is clear that they had planned a military disarmament program.

CUT initiates received a letter, "Keeper of the Flame: the need for harmony and love between all the masters servants united in a common effort cannot be overemphasized. Working and serving together, we form a mandala of light through which the masters of the Great White Brotherhood will awaken humanity."<#32. Letter by CUT Chairman of the Outreach Committee Michael Veys to the Fraternity of the Keepers of the Flame, c. 1980.>

CAPTURING BY USING FEAR

CUT is a New Age Religion designed to catch the conservative elements, that would shun most New Age groups. CUT preaches against Communism, the Feminist Movement, Abortion, Drugs, the Trilateral Commission, the Bankers, and uncontrolled immigration from Mexico. It is in favor of survivalist tactics, political activism, wearing business suits, and looking clean cut. If one looks at where they have concentrated their activities one notices they have worked in some very conservative western areas, Colorado, Montana, Idaho, Washington, and Arizona. (California is also an important center of activity but hardly a bastion of conservatism.)

When I contemplated the hoax that Church Universal and Triumphant is apparently carrying out among the conservatives in Western United States, I was reminded of a fishing trip years ago. In 1969, several Germans and I went out to a small German island in the North Sea. We strung a net across a river, went downstream and entered into the river. We walked upstream toward the net. The fish were afraid of being caught by us. They swam into the net. We reached the net, pulled the net to shore and filled two large baskets full of big good tasting flounder. It's one of my favorite fishing trips.

The people in the Western U.S. are like these flounder. They are aware that big powers are trying to control their lives. They are trying to get away from the One-World-State Power. And so what do they do? They swim right into the very conservative CUT, and are easy pickings for the One-World-Religion.

To gain the great advantages of Hegelian Philosophy— the One-World-Power has been behind both extremes. But this can only work if the people being deceived and manipulated, don't realize that the same people are behind different groups.

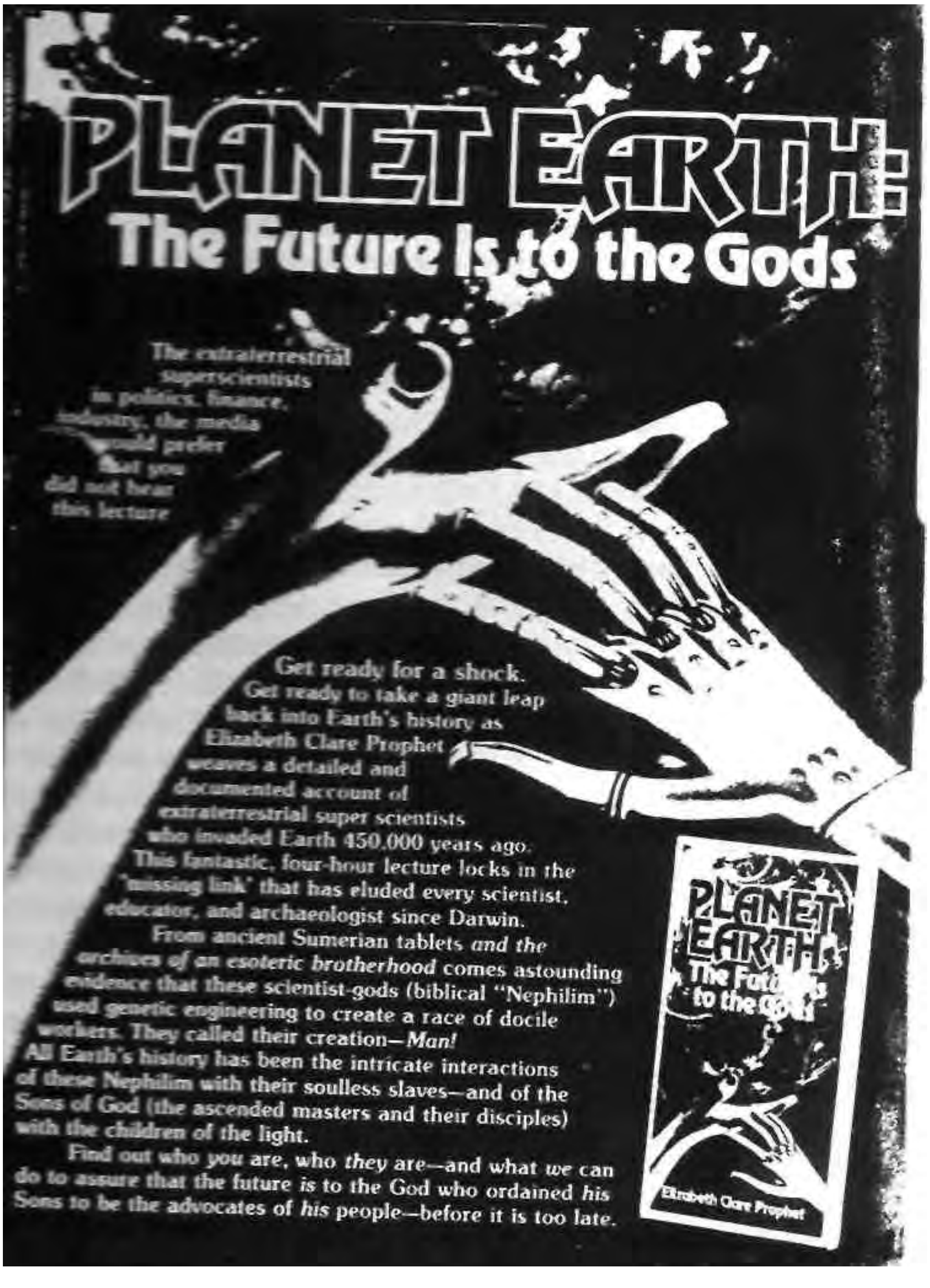

PLANET EARTH:
The Future Is to the Gods

The extraterrestrial superscientists in politics, finance, industry, the media would prefer that you did not hear this lecture

Get ready for a shock. Get ready to take a giant leap back into Earth's history as Elizabeth Clare Prophet weaves a detailed and documented account of extraterrestrial super scientists who invaded Earth 450,000 years ago. This fantastic, four-hour lecture locks in the 'missing link' that has eluded every scientist, educator, and archaeologist since Darwin.

From ancient Sumerian tablets *and the archives of an esoteric brotherhood* comes astounding evidence that these scientist-gods (biblical "Nephilim") used genetic engineering to create a race of docile workers. They called their creation—*Man!* All Earth's history has been the intricate interactions of these Nephilim with their soulless slaves—and of the Sons of God (the ascended masters and their disciples) with the children of the light.

Find out who *you* are, who *they* are—and what *we* can do to assure that the future *is* to the God who ordained *his* Sons to be the advocates of *his* people—before it is too late.

One thing that Elizabeth Clare Prophet may be commended upon, it is her willingness to give some of the best occult knowledge to her followers. In her catalog she sells Raymond Bernard's The Hollow Earth. An ex-high level New Age disciple Troy Lawrence tells us that the masses are told Shamballa the home of the Spirit Masters is in Tibet but, "The initiated know something different. They know that Shamballah is the region of the hollow earth. The spiritual region where the King of the World and his Master dwell." The Spirit Masters have told the highest level occultists who are sold out to them that the earth is hollow. For instance, Pam Davis was told by a spirit, "Do you not know that the center of your Earth, it is not that which has been spoken by your scientists, the bubbling of the molten rocks, it is beauteous. It is home for thousands upon thousands of Beings that have lived there in totality of harmony and understanding of love." ("The Power of One," Life Times (Winter 86/87), p. 84.)

Elizabeth Clare Prophet is infatuated with the Great Pyramid like H.P.B. and C.T. Russell. She has produced an illustrated program with 8 cassettes entitled A Retreat on the Ascension, which includes lectures on the inner mysteries of the Great Pyramid. The Great Pyramid has long been held by esoteric groups as an initiation center. Some confidential sources speak of gaining godlike power from the pyramid. The occult leaders of the One World Power have held that the Great Pyramid's King's chamber is an initiation center for godhood.

CUT teachings are heralded as 'Spiritual wisdom uniting east and west."<#33. Quote from the banner of Pearls of Wisdom. The idea of being the religion of unity between east and west is heralded by CUT In other places too

The teachings (supposedly from the Ascended Masters) are a brew of Hinduism with Buddhist thought and Christian terminology. Add a heavy dose of Mariology from the Catholics with Fatima, and sprinkle in bits and pieces of other things from other sources and stir this brew, and you will come up with CUT 's beliefs. They basically are another Gnostic Mystery Cult Whether one identifies CUT as having the I AM movement's beliefs, or Masonry's, or the Gnostic Mysteries is perhaps moot, they are all about the same. Let's look at some of the similarity of CUT with Masonry before CUT was even thought of.

ITEMS OF SIMILARITY- THE TRIBE OF MANASSEH IS THE USA

The first item of similarity between Elizabeth Clare Prophets teachings and Masonry is the belief that the Tribe of Ephraim is Great Britian and the Tribe of Manasseh is America.<#34. Notes from a local CUT meetings.>

In the Masonic book, Mystic Americanism we are told The theme of the entire Bible centers around a hope of a glorious country afar off, in an age that was to come. The crowning event of the allegory of the Twelve Tribes of Israel—the one and one-half tribe of Jewish and the rest Christian origin—culminates in Manasseh (America) and Ephraim (Christ's Kingdom) as sons of Joseph (Great Britian). Most important of all is the story of the Woman (Revelation: 12) who fled into the wilderness (secrecy)' but who is to return and, in a glorious nation, defeat the Dragon by reopening the ancient teachings of the Holy Grail (Illumination of the Soul)."<#35. Mystic Americanism. Quakertown, PA: The Philosophical Pub. Co.> Parentheses are part of the quote.

This and other beliefs of various groups are lumped together under the label British—Israelism. A strain of British-Israelism appears in Masonry from its inception.<#36.

Hodson, John Milton, William H. Upton, et. al. Masonic History of the Northwest. San Francisco, CA: the History Pub. Co., 1902, p. 71. In the Royal Arch degree in England "the presiding officer is the Prince and heir to the Jewish throne, ZERUBBABEL (being descended in the direct line from King Solomon), and as such represents the King..." In America, after the Amer. Revol. the heir to the Jewish throne JERUBBABEL was replaced in the American Lodges with the High Priest. And the Prophet in the third chair was replaced with a scribe. In England, in the Royal Arch degree ritual mention is made in regards to the Messiah, but no in America. Apparently, the mission was to keep safeguarded the Royal Blood, and apparently that Royal Blood stayed in England. The mission of the Royal Arch degree changed, "it became the ally of the English Government and Church." The British exert power over the Americans.> Considering that Masonry began in the British Isles, and that Masonry has had universal goals from its earliest times, this is not surprising. However, it is not clear to this author why the various Masonic groups work so closely with the Askinazim Jews, and haven't elevated the Sephardic Jews. For instance, the British Royal Family which has been prominant in Freemasonry and believes in British-Israelism,<#37. Numerous Masonic sources parade the lists of Kings, Princes, etc. that are Masons. The Kings themselves have made public comments publicly endorsing the belief they are the decendants of the House of David.> has been very congenial with Jews. Cecil Rhodes, who believed the One-World-State would be British, included Lord Rothschild on his roundtable. The Mormon leaders, who believe in British-Israelism, have had close relations with the Jews, and although they should know better, have totally ignored the fact that the Askenazim Jews are not genetically related to the Childen of Israel. They apply prophecy to those Jews because they are supposedly the right seed, and then ignore the historical evidence they never were genetically that seed.<#38. LDS McConkie's writings on prophecy.> Even the Mormon leaders who have access to the world's genealogical records, are pro-Askinazim Jew. Elizabeth Clare Prophet's teachings have been a welter of contradictions. While condeming the Bavarian Illuminati in talks, she also has taught about how great Sir Francis Bacon, who she believes started Masonry, is. She points out to her people how the Masonic Temples have the words I AM on them, to support her I AM beliefs.<#39. Notes from a CUT class.>

In 1723, Dr. Abadie, a protestant apologist, put forth the view that the lost ten tribes were the people of the British Isles.<#40. Gaebelein, Dr. A.C. World Prospects, cf. Gaebelein's art. in Our Hope, Jan. 1932 issue.> However the idea predated Abadie by half a century. Oliver Cromwell was convinced that the British were Israelites. He was not only active in Masonry, but was the person who brought the Jews back to England in 1655, after their expulsion. Some contend it was money that motivated Cromwell to bring the Jews to England. Interestingly, it was the discovery of Jews in China by the Jesuits that allowed Cromwell to justify allowing Jews into England. Rabbi ben Israel who lived across the street from Rembrandt in Amsterdam corresponded with Cromwell. (The Rabbi was also responsible for the philosopher Spinoza's education. Spinoza made his own contribution to the moral demise of Western Civilization.) The Rabbi brought out the phamplet "Spes Israelis" (latin for "The Hope of Israel" or in Heb. "Mikveh Israel"). Using a Biblical passage that the Jews were to be found at two ends of the earth, and declaring the recently found Chinese Jews as one end, he argued that Biblically the other end of the earth was...Portugal (well, at first it was Portugal—but then the Rabbi realized

England had more commercial profit potential so he reworded his tract to say...)England. Yes, the Rabbi declared that Biblically the Jews were at both ends of the earth, and since England had no Jews then the British must be Jewish. If Jewish, then how could they forbid other Jews from coming in. Since then, others have built on the Rabbi's idea.

The dual marriage of Jacob with his wives Leah and Rachel was referred to as "two bands" (Gen. 32:10). These are the "two sticks" that the Mormons,<#41. The LDS Mormons appeal to the Book of Mormon. 1 Ne. 5:5 and Alma 46:23-24 are used to explain that the America's are for the Tribe of Joseph.> and various Masons believe in. If Britain is Ephraim and the United States is Manasseh,<#42. Edward Hine in 1871 published his theory that Great Britain was Ephraim and America was Manasseh.> how did the United States become Manasseh? The United States began with such settlers as the Pilgrims who were British, therefore Ephraimites. This particular version seems illogical. Another version is that that the sons of Joseph (Great Britian) culminate in Manasseh (America) and Ephraim (Christ's Kingdom). This last idea carries an eerie aura about it to this Author. The symbology of the Tribe of Manasseh is the Olive Branch and the Arrows (associated with Joseph's bow).<#43. Scriptures that are used to illustrate the tie-ins between Manassah's heraldry and scripture are Gen. 4:22-24 (bow and arrows) and Rm 11:24 (which were always pictured as Olive Branches.)> (One common symbol of the Tribe of Dan is the eagle<#44. The best British-Israelism examination of the heraldry of the Tribes of Israel and British Heraldry is W.H. Bennett, Symbols fo Our Celto-Saxon Heritage. Stanhope Press, Kent, Eng., 1976.> the other is the serpent or snake. The American eagle- that would be Dan- controls the other two tribes' symbols. The best book in showing archeological evidence concerning the fate of the ten tribes of Israel is Missing Links Discovered by E. Raymond Capt. Critics of British-Israelism owe it to themselves to read this.) One of the symbols of the Tribe of Ephraim is the Unicorn. But the Unicorn according to Alice Bailey stands for the God-man, the Christ-man, the Illumined New Race coming in the New Order. The horn of the Unicorn on the third-eye chakra point indicating illumination by Lucifer. This Author hasn't seen Ephraim's symbols matched with their New Age meaning in the context of the idea that Ephraim is Christ's Kingdom soon-to-be established, but when it is, the "two-sticks"-belief matches itself to the New Agers Millenial belief.

SPECIAL COLORS

Another interesting parallel is that in some areas Masons wear a special color of clothes on certain days.<#45. Confidential interview with a Christian who the Masons had intended to recruit.> The Church Universal and Triumphant also assigns certain colors to be worn on different days.<#46. Confidential interviews with ex-I AM & ex-CUT members, and class materials of Summit Univ. Due to the large influx of new converts, it has been difficult for CUT to keep up the teachings on wearing different colored clothing during different times of the day, and for different days. Newer converts may be unaware of this teachings The colors of purple and white are especially esteemed.

ASTROLOGY

A perusal of Summit University course material shows that the astrology information that CUT teaches its Fraternity of Keepers of the Flame is the same type of astrological items that others have taught before. The extra meanings assigned the various 12 signs can also be found in the Mason Manly P. Hall's book The Secret Teachings of All Ages. Both CUT and Masonry use Astrology as a way to get people interested in their teachings. The first three degrees of Masonry are called the Blue Lodge because the color blue is associated with the skies and astrology.

RAYS & VIBRATIONS

Masonic Source that matches CUT teachings- "50. "The force of the obligation is therefore in the obligation and not in the reason. As a matter of fact, the real reason is scientific to the last analysis; scientific to a degree beyond the penetration, up to the present time, of the 'radiant matter' of the Roentgen Ray of Modern Science. The Word concerns the science of rhythmic vibrations, and is the key to the equilibrium of all forces and to the harmony of Eternal Nature." <#47. Ancient Mystic Oriental Masonry, p.48.>

THE SOUL IS AN EMANATION OF DEITY

Masonic Source that matches CUT teachings- "That the Soul is an emanation of Deity, and in its original essence is all purity, truth, and wisdom, is an axiom which the disembodied learn,...These sparks of heavenly fire become Souls, and as the effect must share in the nature of the cause, the fire which warms into life, also illuminates into Light, hence the Soul emanations from the Divine are all Love and Heat, whilst the illumination of Light, which streams ever from the great Central Sun of Being, irradiates all Souls with corresponding beams of Light." Ancient Mystic Oriental Masonry, p.20

"Says Bro. Buck again: "Humanity in toto is the only Personal God; the Christos is the realization, or perfection of this Divine Persona, in Individual conscious experience. When this perfection is realized, the state is called Christos, with the Greeks, and Buddha with the Hindoos....Know you not that they who Follow the Buddha follow the same Christ as you under but another name." Ancient Mystic Oriental Masonry, p.11

"Fire in turn signifies Love, God, the Fatherhood of God." Ancient Mystic Oriental Masonry, p. 30

"That the Soul is an emanation of Deity...These sparks of heavenly fire (parts of God) become Souls...hence the Soul emanations from the Divine are all Love and Light, whilst the illumination of Light, which streams ever from the great central Sun of Being (God's Light), irradiates all Souls (who harmonize themselves with God, or the Light) with corresponding beams of Light." The Mysticism of Masonry, p. 11

HEALING BY CORRECT VIBRATIONS

Masonic Source that matches CUT teachings- "The second method of healing was by vibration. The inharmonies of the bodies were neutralized by chanting spells and intoning the sacred names or by playing upon musical instruments and singing. Sometimes articles of various colors were exposed to the sight of the sick, for the ancients recognized, at least in part, the principle of color therapeutics, now in the process of rediscovery." Masonic Hermetic Qabbalistic & Rosicrucian Symbolical Philiosophy, p. CXI

THE IMPORTANCE OF "I AM"

Masonic Source that matches CUT teachings- "By these 'rites and benefits,' the Freemason is, above all men, in our so-called Modern Civilization, the nearest to the

Ancient Wisdom. He has possession of the territory in which lie concealed the Crown Jewels of Wisdom. He may content himself, if he will, by merely turning over the sod...he may rise untrammeled by the rubbish of the temple, and, meeting Elohim face to face, learn also to say 'I am that I am!'" Ancient Mystic Oriental Masonry, p.7

MYSTICAL FLAME

Masonic Source that matches CUT teachings- "The mysteries have now, as throughout the long ages past, for their foundation, the existence of God, as Jehovah Adonai— the Father of Light— and the Immortality of the Soul, which Soul, in the language of the Initiates, is and always must be, an ever-burning Fire, a Light that must be brought into close relationship with the Father of all Light from which it originally came." The Mysticism of Masonry, p. 19

" "Cast not thy seed upon the ground"..."Lest it become a serpent and rend thee") and the search for its recovery (the retention or exchange, the raising and transmutation of the seed into the Fire or Light of the Soul); the tradition of the Ineffable Name in connection with the Lost Word (finding the Soul's Light and through the Fire being able to come face to face with the Soul's Creator, the Father of Light..." The Mysticism of Masonry, p.46

NEED FOR MAN TO BE A GOD

Masonic Source that matches CUT teachings- "As the earth groans for the lordship of superior beings to rule over them, the spirits of distant Edens hear the whispers of the tempting Serpent (desire, longing), the animal principle, the urgent intellect, which appealing to the blest Souls in their distant paradises, fill them with indescibable longings for change, for broader vistas of knowledge, for mightier powers; they would be as the gods and know good and evil." The Mysticism of Masonry, p.12

An example of this from Elizabeth Clare Prophet's teachings is this quote, "The challenge of all the great revolutionaries of all time, East and West, has been to subdue that sacred fire, to channel it, to make contact with it, to interact with it, to integrate with it. The 1980s are a decade of reintegration with the sacred fire that all of the world's great revolutionaries—for good, for God—have contacted.

"A lack of self-knowledge and knowledge of the Self in and as this God-potential has set the limits of our social and technological progress." Prophecy for the 1980s, p.17. (Bold added.)

Her description of this fire corresponds perfectly with the occult masonic groups who started communism from the 1840s the 1870s. An excellent history of the Masonic belief in this "fire" which started so many revolutions is found in the well researched book Fire In the Minds of Men by James Billington.

HUMANITY IN TOTAL IS GOD

Masonic Source that matches CUT teachings- "Humanity in toto is the only personal God; the Christos is the realization or the perfection of this divine Persona, in (through) individual conscious experience. When this perfection is realized, the state is called Christos..." The Mysticism of Masonry, p. 14

VARIOUS LEVELS OF INITIATION

As this is common knowledge concerning Masons, the first quote will be from CUT's Pearls of Wisdom (The Ascended Master's Weekly Newsletter) Apr. 9,1967, p.10. "...where are the staunch ones applying to Us today for Initiation into the highest steps here at Luxor?" CUT doesn't have the multitude of levels like Masonry though.

Some of the other beliefs that the two share in common are a. the idea of invocations b. the old order must be destroyed so that a Golden Age of Illumined Ones can be established, c. the hierarchy is the mediator, not Christ d. Satan is the animal nature in man preventing him from becoming a God, e. the Ancient of Days in scripture is Sanat (the scrambling of Satan). These concepts are taught until one get high up in Masonry or goes into one of the more occultic masonic rites. Similar to the Jehovah's Witnesses she believes in a literal 144,000.

C.U.T. FITS A PATTERN

There are some people who will be disatisfied with this chapter. They will want harder proof. Yet, these same people very likely accept many things without any proof. If they didn't they wouldn't be part of mainstream America.

For instance, you are told that this country is a democracy. Democracy means the people vote and decide everything. Everything in a real democracy is decided by what is called a referemdum today. Very little is decided by referemdum today. Has anyone shown you proof this is a democracy? Have you ever asked?

I have found that those who object to this information are those who have not studied the subjects at all. CUT. fits a pattern that has been repeated over and over. Either it is part of the pattern which can be shown to be Masonic or it's an exception to the rule. If CUT. is really against the New World Order (it depends what part of their literature you read, because they do want a Global Interdependence of Spiritual Ones, they only claim to be against a Global Political Union), it is interesting that the system cooperates with them so much.

On the surface they appear to some to be against the CFR/International Bankers, etc. They teach their members the dangers that these men pose in conjunction with international communism. On the otherhand in their tract "What is The Summit Lighthouse?" they end the tract saying "The Summit Lighthouse sheds its beams o'er the earth and releases into manifestation the symbol for the coming Golden Age—"Destiny, not dust!" Unless a person is aware of the connections between the Rockefellers and the Masons and the New Age movement, the common person will not be able to see Hegelian dialectics being used.

While conservatives join CUT., it is not likely very many of them caught a little clause that CUT. put into its Christmas Day, 1981 Declaration of International Interpendence. Line 8 from the bottom states, "Therefore, as divinely blessed individuals...the citizens of planet Earth have the right...to call for a constitutional convention to found their nation under God;..." Elizabeth Prophet has repeatedly stated Sanat Kumara was the leader of the Great White Lodge Hierarchy and God.<#48 Just one example of many where Sanat (Satan) is identified as a God by Elizabeth Clare Prophet is her 1979 Christmas message, p. 2. "Yes, my chelas have sung for you and for me the message of Sanat Kumara, the Great Bodhisattva, known to Daniel and the prophets of Israel as the Ancient of Days. In his name we say, "Arise, shine; for thy light is come, and the glory of the LORD is risen upon thee!...This great bodhisattva who revealed himself to Moses in the person of Jehovah and to Ezekiel as the fire infolding itself, to the soul of Gautama as the Buddha, to Zarathustra as Ahura Mazda, and to the Hindus as the "Eternal Youth" has appeared to humanity in every epoch of earth's changes, signaling the beginning and the ending of cycles..." Not only does she identify Sanat with Jehovah, but also Buddha and Ahura Mazda of the Mazdians. Another example is Pearls of Wisdom, Vol. X No. 13, (Mar. 26, 1967), p. 1 "The name, Ancient of Days, refers to Sanat Kumara, Hierarch of Venus, Who came to earth millions of years ago...">. Here in effect is a call for a constitutional convention to establish either the U.S. or world government under Sanat. (It is not exactly clear which nation is being spoken about that is to call this constitutional convention.) Who are the forces calling for a Constitutional Convention? William Still links these forces to the CFR, the Rockefeller Foundation, the Brookings Institute and the World Federalists in his expose.<#49. Still, William T. New World Order The Ancient Plan of Secret Societies. Lafayette, LA, Huntington House, 1990. Chapter 15 covers the Constitutional assult.>

An example of an organization that has been created by the One-World-Power, that functions in much the same capacity as the C.U.T. is the John Birch Society. Both groups are so conservative that they stick out as extreme. Elizabeth Clare Prophet likes the John Birch Society and speaks good things about it. The John Birch Society was created as the Anti-thesis of communism, much in the same way that C.U.T. siphons off the conservative element that dislikes long hair and dirty clothes, etc. but theologically is attracted to the New Age. A 32 degree Mason named Robert Welch<#50. Braddock, James E. The John Birch Society An Enigma. Bumsville, MN: Weisman Publications, p.13 states "Welch, being a well proven 32nd degree Mason, jumped at the chance to aide and abet in the furtherance of the destruction of Christianity." CPA has access to a Masonic document showing Welch's membership. Perhaps the first to claim Robert Welch was a Mason was Dr. Stuart Crane. Eustice Mullins also received information that Welch was a Mason from confidential sources. Braddock's research has been well-received by a number of prominent ex-John Birchers.> started the John Birch Society in 1958. For the Board of Directors for the John Birch Society he chose men from the Council of Foreign Relations (CFR). As JBS policy, he had an Anti-communist but pro-Jewish stance. After Welch had the JBS started, he received a large sum of money from the Rockefellers. Braddock states, "Robert Welch...heir to, the Welch Candy Company... Nelson [Rockefeller] purchased the company for a price that was three times the asking price but with the condition that Robert would head the new John Birch Society."<#51. Braddock, op. cit.p. 13.>

So the American people got more Hegelian Dialectics. And many conservative people who sincerely wanted to save and defend the United States gave their money, time and allegiance to this Society. Many rich conservative Americans gave their money to the John Birch Society to fight the Anti-American forces. The John Birch Society was able to siphon off much resistance that could have been really damaging to the One-World-Power, and waste that concern and money of resistance into a make-believe battle against communism.

Many of the highly knowledgeable people who joined the John Birch Society, such as Dr. R.P. Oliver, Dr. Draskovich, Brig. Gen. G. Mohr, along with the three Directors of Public Relations and others realized they were be taken for a ride, and got off. The comments by these ex-John Birchers are a good testimony about the manufacture of an Antithesis by the New World Order. Some of their comments are<#52. Braddock, op. cit. various pages.>:

"The John Birch Society is a complete and deadly mirage in a vast desert of confusion that was purposefully designed and augmented to aid in that confusion..."— James E. Braddock

"Unlike other groups and organizations which International Zionism has gradually taken over, the John Birch Society was their own creation, to fulfill their own purposes—one world order and control."—Charles A. Weisman

"When you see the Jewish influence in the top echelon of the Society in the organizing Council of the JBS' and the Jewish money that is poured into the Society, you understand that, here again, is an organization that is set up by International Judaism as a neutralizing force for patriotic Americans."—Gen. Mohr

"I have resigned from the Council of the John Birch Society (and from the Society itself) because I can no longer in conscience remain a member. I have also resigned as Associate Editor of American Opinion and I will no longer contribute to that magazine." --Dr. Oliver

THE THEOSOPHICAL SOCIETY

Our modern rainbow of dragons was the direct result of the Theosophical Society. Helena P. Blavatsky (or H.P.B. as she called herself)(1831-1891) was sponsored by several occult groups to get the Theosophical Society started. A small group of Rosicrucian adepts were the primary sponsors of hers. The Great White Brotherhood was lurking in her background too. The Theosophical Society is also called Co-Masonry. Many of the leaders of the Theosophical Society have been women involved in the occult Masonic groups that admit women, and men who have been part of Masonry. (See the Appendix.)

In the book On The Watch-Tower by Sri Ram we are told that the Theosophical Society was working to unite Europe into one United States of Europe (p.570) and that eventually the only solution for mankind was a Federation of all the nations.(p. 571) The Primer of Theosophy states that the T. Society was started for two reasons a. to study Occultism and b. to spread Universal Brotherhood.<#53. American Section of the Theosophical Society. A Primer of Theosophy. Chicago, IL: The Rajput Press, 1911, p.110.>

The theosophical book A Primer of Theosophy tells us that "There are two presentations of the divine wisdom which are rounded and satisfying; that given by Theosophy and that of Masonry. No religion or exoteric philosophy can equal them in fullness or clearness."<#54. ibid., p. 61.>

WHO SHALL HEAD THE WOLRD GOVERNMENT THAT THE THEOSOPHICAL SOCIETY WANTS?

Interestingly, the Theosophical Society feels that Freemasonry and itself teach the clear divine wisdom. H.P. Blavatsky, founder of the Theosophical Society tells us that the God of the Bible is "a tribal God and no more"<#55 Blavatsky, H.P. Collected Writings, Vol. 8. Theosophical Publishing House, p. 277> who is "capricious and unjust."<#56 Blavatsky, H.P. The Key to Theosophy. Chicago: Theosophical Publishing House, 1930, p.111.>

H.P.B. felt that Lucifer was the Savior of mankind and that the God of the Bible was really the adversary of man, hence the name Satan described God better than Lucifer.

"The appellation Sa'tan, in Hebrew Satan, and Adversary...belongs by right to the first and cruelest "Adversary" of all other Gods—Jehovah; not to the serpent which spoke only words of sympathy and wisdom."—Blavatsky, The Secret Doctrine, Vol. 3. Los Angeles: Theosophy Co., 1925, p. 386.

H.P. Blavatsky, a Jewess, tells us, "Once the key to Genesis is in our hands, the scientific and symbolical Kabbala unveils the secret. The Great Serpent of the Garden of Eden and the "Lord God" are identical."— The Secret Doctrine, Vol. 2, p. 132.

"Satan, the Serpent of Genesis is the real creator and benefactor, the Father of Spiritual mankind. For it is he...who opened the eyes [of Adam]...And he who was the first to whisper, "in the day ye eat thereof, ye shall be as Elohim, knowing good and evil." can only be regarded in the light of a savior....he still remains in Esoteric Truth the ever loving messenger...who conferred on us spiritual instead of physical immortality."—The Secret Doctrine, Vol.3, p.246.

H.P.B. and her Society hate the Christians who they see as "fighting against divine truth, when repudiating and slandering the Dragon of Esoteric Divine Wisdom."—The Secret Doctrine, Vol. 3, p.376.

When we study further we discover that the global initiation spoken of by the T.S. is a Luciferian initiation, and the Second Coming of Christ means that a "Christ consciousness" of man's divinity returns to the human race.

Although people who follow the Theosophical Society initially may join for personal development or enlightment and do not realize the ultimate goal, the ultimate goal of the Theosophical Society is a One-World-Government with H.P.B.'s "Lord God" ruling. Christians refer to her God as Satan, the Devil.

MASONS & THE T.S.

Manly P. Hall, 33° Mason, was an important Theosophical leader. He could really pack the audiances in when he spoke to their groups. Many Anglo-American Masons study Theosophy. Theosophic books are placed into the Masonic Libraries. Theosophy is another way to describe Hinduism, or the New Age teachings. A visit to a Theosophic Library will reveal that they carry books on witchcraft, Judaism, as well as all the various topics of the New Age movement.

T.S.'S INNER CIRCLE & DIVISIONS

The E.S. or Esoteric Section, also known as the Eastern School of Theosophy is the inner secret circle. This inner circle has itself several levels.

The Theosophical Society divided into two competing groups. The major group has its international headquarter in Madras, India with its American headquarters in Wheaton, Il. The other group had its headquarters in Covina, CA and also in San Diego, CA.

The American Theosophical Society has its Quest Publishing house at Wheaton. Interestingly, the name Manly P. Hall gives the to the Order whose job is to preserve the plans for the take over of the world is called by him the Order of the Quest. The Theosophical library at Wheaton called the Olcott Library and Research Center is one of the best occultic collections anywhere.

The two Theosophical Societies have made their greatest impacts in the British nations U.K/Can./Aust./N.Z./India and the United States. They have also been very popular in the Scandinavian countries and Germany.

Episcopalian clergymen have been active in both Theosophical groups. Alice Ann Bailey who took over the leadership in the 1920s, had taught in the Episcopalian church and was married to an Episcopal rector. Alice Bailey did as much for Theosophy as did H.P.B. Bailey is still influencing our culture today. She felt the number 666 was sacred. One of the Theosophical Society's publications is Lucifer. Bailey started Lucifer Trust now called Lucis Trust. She helped create the vast network of New Age groups. Lucis Trust has continued promoting the number 666.

[fig. T.S. Logo PASTE UP 1.5 x 1.5]
THE THEOSOPHICAL SOCIETY LOGO SHOWS US THE BLEND OF THE OCCULT MASONIC ELEMENTS (circle of snake), MARRIED TO JUDAISM (Star of David), ALONG WITH THE MYSTERY RELIGIONS (Egyptian ankh), and HINDUISM (the Devanagari letters) AND ITS RELATIONSHIP TO ITS GRANDDAUGHTER SPIN-OFF NAZISM (the Swastika).

The Watchtower Society has a number of teachings, symbols, etc. that match up with the Theosophical Society's. More about these later.

PROMINENT THEOSOPHICAL LEADERS

Two prominent leaders that were involved with the Theosophical Society were Mahatma Gandhi and Adolf Hitler. Mahatma Gandhi was interested in learning about Christianity until H.P.B., who pretended to be a Christian convinced him Hinduism had more to offer. Gandhi joined the Theosophical Society. The impetus for India's independence to a large degree came from the Theosophical Society. Ann Besant the second Theosophical President was instrumental in changing British attitudes. India's political leadership has been closely connected with the Theosophical Society ever since independence, including several Gandhis and Jawaharlal Nehru.

Hitler learned much of his occult knowledge from the Theosophical Society, although credit needs to be given to his occult mentors at the Benedictine monastery school who got him off onto the occult trail. Hitler spent much of his time in occult bookstores learning metaphysics. He also had several adepts in white and black magic instruct him. In Vienna, Hitler joined a modern German version of the Knights Templars, a German Masonic group called "The Order of the New Templars." The swastika was their emblem. The Theosophical Society even today continues to use the swastika as one of their emblems.

The Theosophical Society has also included such genius inventors as the co-workers Thomas Edison and Nichola Tesla. It has included such writers as George Bernard Shaw and William Butler Yeats.

It is possible that the Dalai Lama is also associated with them.

Elvis Presley was a Theosophist. For a discussion on how the New World Order has promoted the New Age religion through musicians see chapter 2.10.

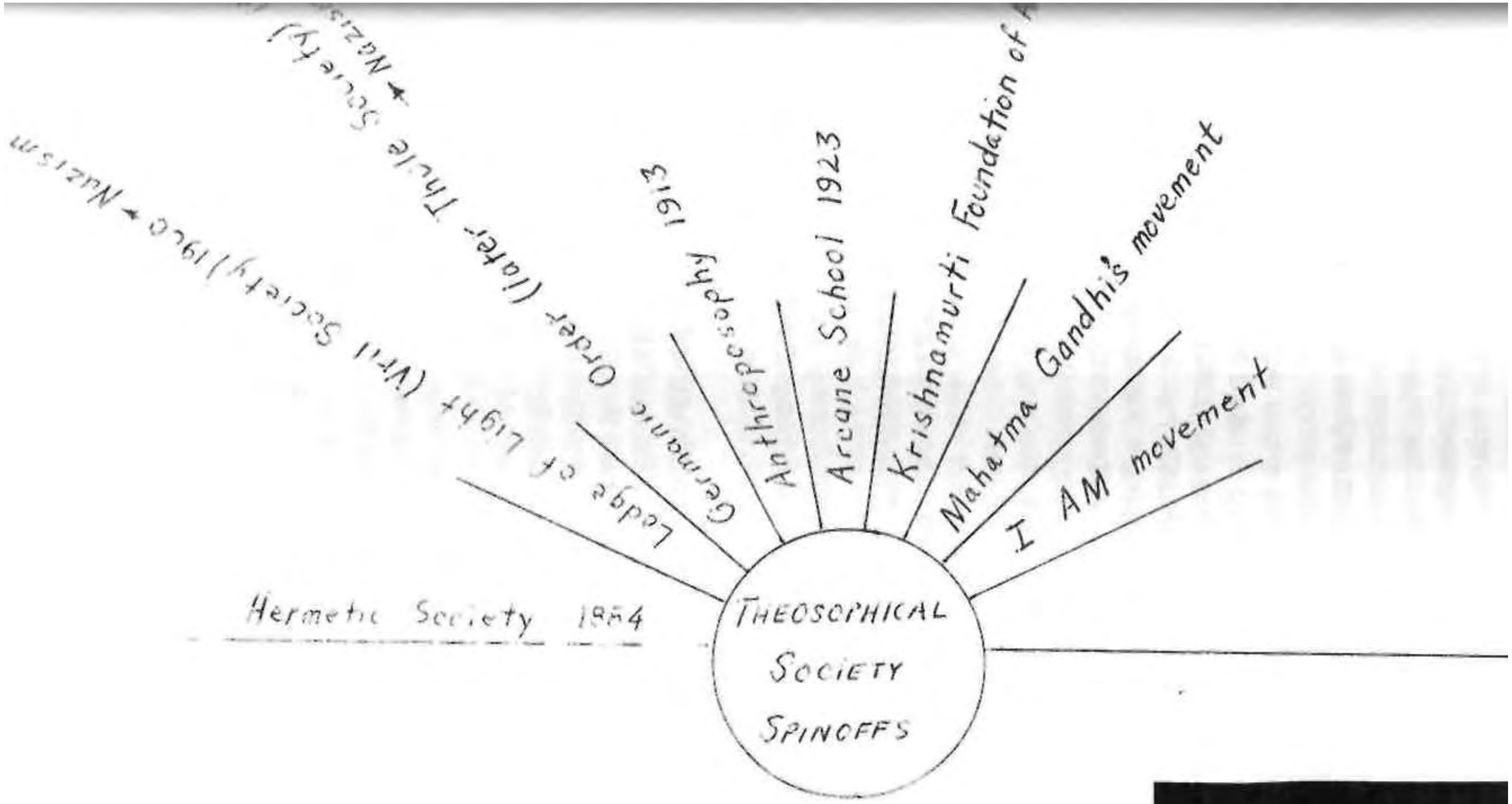
Hermetic Society 1884
THEOSOPHICAL SOCIETY SPINOFFS
Lodge of Light (Vril Society) 1960 → Nazism
Germanic Order (later Thule Society) → Nazism
Anthroposophy 1913
Arcane School 1923
Krishnamurti Foundation of
Mahatma Gandhi's movement
I AM movement

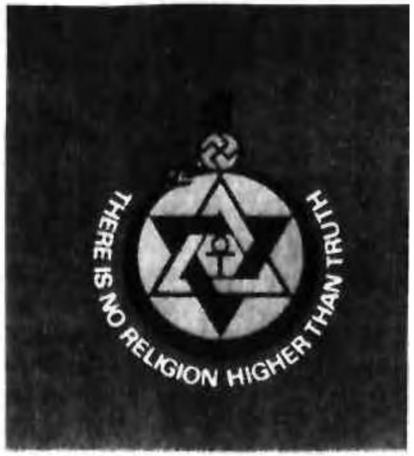
THERE IS NO RELIGION HIGHER THAN TRUTH

THEOSOPHICAL SOC
LOGO

Theosophist John H. Dewey wrote, "It is not proposed, be it observed, to replace Christianity by Buddhism, nor Buddhism by Mohammedism, nor both by Judaism, nor yet all three by Spiritism, but to bring each of the old religions back to its esoteric origin, meaning and purity, and if they are found to be in essence one, shall we not have found the TRUE RELIGION OF HUMANITY?"<#57. Dewey, John H., The Way The Truth and The Life. Buffalo, NY: 1888, pp.11-12.>

RECAPPING THE CHAPTER

One of the ways this chapter can be recapped is to quote part a letter written in 1822 by a Jewish Mason Piccolo Tigre to the Italian Piedmontese lodges of the Carbonari (forest Masons).

"...it has been judged good and useful to propogate the light everywhere, and to set in motion all that aspires to move. For this reason we do not cease to recommend to you, to affiliate persons of every class to every manner of association, no matter of what kind, only provided that mystery and secrecy should be the dominant characteristics. All Italy is covered with religious confraternities, and with penitents of divers colours. Do not fear to slip in some of your people into the very midst of these flocks, led as they are by stupid devotion. Let our agents study with care the personnel of these..."<#58. Dillon, George E. Grand Orient Freemasonry Unmasked. London: Britons Pub. Society, 1950, p. 58.>

The letter goes on to show how to create societies and associations, how to separate men from their families, and to use secrets as bait to lead men where you want them. Masons continue even today creating new societies and associations and infiltrating those that they haven't created.

THE LORD MAITREYA'S CHRONOLOGY

1358- The Sufis go underground with their religion, are reported to have extended into Scotland as a trade guild in the 14th century and developed into Freemasonry.
1700's- Druidism and the worship of Tara come with the activation of the Illuminati.
May 1, 1776- Birth of the Bavarian Illuminati
1781- United Ancient Order of Druids formed in London with Masonic rites.
1871- H.P.B. formed the Spiritist Society.
1875- H.P.B. formed the Theosophical Society, she writes that preparatory work for Lord Maitreya will begin in 1975.
1890- Ghulam Ahmad who claims to be the Promised One of all Religions appears, organizes the worldwide Sufi movement.
1891 - Annie Besant takes over T.S. after H.P.B. and begins talking of a coming Avatar, a "great world teacher" to take the world into its next stage of evolution
Spring, 1908- Ghulam Ahmad dies, his Master evil Spirit leaves Ahmad for Krishnamurti
1909- Order of the Star formed by Besant to promote Krishnamurti as the Lord Maitreya
1919- Alice Bailey says she was appproached by Djwal Khul (D.K.-a Master) who showed her the plan which included Lord Maitreya coming. Meditation groups were set up to channel energy from the Masters.
1925- Besant announces Krishnamurti is the Christ, trip to America ends in failure.
1931- Krishnamurti renounces that he is the Christ.
1932- Nicolas Roerich's Maitreya published.

1948- Bailey publishes The Reappearance of the Christ, she suggests that 1975 is the year for preparatory work to begin for Lord Maitreya.

1959 - Benjamin Creme says he received telepathic messages from the Hierarchy.

Feb.,1962- Rahmat Ahmad is born in Pakistan. He is in line to become the fifth Khalifah-ul-Masih (Caliph -Successor- of the Messiah).

1975- Benjamin Creme (Scotsman and part Jewish) announces to his wife and others that he is Lord Maitreya's John the Baptist.

July 8, 1977- Rahmat Ahmad (Lord Maitreya) flew into Karachi.

July 19, 1977- Rahmat Ahmad (Lord Maitreya) flew into London, England, takes control of the London Mission of the Ahmadiyya community.<#59. Lawrence, Troy. New Age Messiah Identified. Lafayette, LA: Huntington House, 1991. This book was written under an assumed name by someone who became a Christian while working for the Tara Center. After much secret work, and access to much confidential information, the book's author was able to identify who Lord Maitreya is.>

April 25, 1982- Creme spends $250,000 on ads in 20 major papers worldwide announcing Lord Maitreya.

May 14, 1982- Benjamin Creme gives the press the clue that Lord Maitreya lives in the Indian-Pakistani community of London and invites them to look for him.

June 21, 1982- Lord Maitreya has failed to show as predicted.

July 31, 1985- 22 journalist from 12 countries discuss how to make Maitreya's "Day of Declaration" possible.

1986- Top executives of British Media agree to stage the Maitreya's "Day of Declaration", but higher authorities in British government veto it.

June 11, 1988- Maitreya appears in person in Nairobi, Kenya and is worshipped by thousands.

Apr. 21-22, 1990- 200 dignitaries including royalty from around the world attended a conference with Lord Maitreya in London.

1991-George Bush, Mikael Gorbechov meet with Lord Maitreya off of Malta.

YET TO COME- "The Day of Declaration" when Rahmat Ahmad is presented to the world as Lord Maitreya.

Rahmat Ahmad is to be the next leader of the Sufi Moslems. The Sufis have secret societies around the world and rule in most of the Arab states. There are now about 14 million Ahmadis who give total allegience to whoever holds the position that Rahmat Ahmad is to inherit. His title translates "Successor of Messiah." Why might the New World Order pick Rahmat Ahmad to be their King/Priest? The Sufi Moslems are tied to Freemasonry, the Knights Templars, and the Theosophic Society. A visit to a Theosophical Society Library will allow the reader to see that they have a good selection of books on Sufism. Sufism is a mysticism that holds that man can become illuminated and divine. Although it is called Moslem, it has no more to do with the Moslem religion than the Rosicrucians have to do with Christianity. Sufism is New Age mysticism, similar to Hinduism.

It is reported that Col. Quaddafi of Libya is a Sufi or a Sufi supporter. When Quaddafi when came to power, he repressed the Moslem clergy, even shut down a few mosques and made the moslem clergy subservient to him. This may help explain why CIA agents with ties to Freemasonry would help him. Although he puts out loud speeches threatening the United States, he appears to be working in close cooperation with the New World Order; at the least he is unwittingly helping carry out some of their goals. It further explains why when travel to Libya was supposedly prohibited to all Americans, Knight of Malta and U.S. diplomat to the Vatican William Wilson was visiting Sufi Quaddafi. One of the American oil companies that continued operating quietly in Libya during all the big press releases of tensions and the U.S. air attack, was headed by J. Peter Grace, who is the head of the Knights of Malta in the United States.<#60 Cooper, William. Behold A Pale Horse. Sedona, AZ: Light Technology Pub., 1991, pp. 87-88.> Quaddafi proposes in his Green Book a synthesis of Communism and Capitalism.

The Buddhists are looking for a Lord Maitreya (the fifth Buddha) to return. Some of the Jews are looking for a Messiah, and the Shiite Muslims are looking for Imman Madhi. The Hindus are expecting the Bodhisattva (Kalki) or Krishna. The Tara Center, which promotes the Lord Maitreya, hopes to play upon all these various expectations.

Great expense and great plans are to be used to convince the world of his divinity. The Establishment media is ready to be used for promoting Lord Maitreya. A number of indicators seemed to indicated that the new messiah would have a Jewish Lineage of the House of David. If Rhamat Ahmad is not of the House of David, and it appears he isn't, then it may well be that Ahmad is not the prized leader that they plan to set up as a King/Priest.

The Tara Center often uses the pyramid with the all-seeing eye which is a masonic symbol. The Tara Center has ties to Freemasonry. Tara worship is linked to Freemasonry, and has been practiced by the Druids and the Hindus. Tara Hill in Ireland is a worship center for Druid worship.

The Tara center believes in a One-World-Socialist government with revitalized Freemasonry as the world's religion. People are being told man will become divine under this New World Order. (Sadly, the truth is they will become slaves. And slaves of Satanists have been the most pitilessly abused slaves of all.)

SUMMARY

The New World Order has a Pakistani man named Rhamat Ahmad ready to be revealed as the Lord Maitreya. His identity has been a secret only known to a handful of men. The New Agers, the Masons, and the Sufi, and some of the Buddhists can be counted on to worship him, if the Power decides to go ahead and use him. He may be the bridge between East and West that the Power is hoping to create for his One-World-government.

Chapter 1.5
Mysteries of the Watchtower Society

You will learn in this chapter:

- You will be informed that the winged-sun-disk used by H.P.B and C.T. Russell was an Illuminati symbol and a symbol for the Church of Illumination.
- You will learn about three mysteries of the Watchtower Society, pyramids, the Golden Age, and the winged-sun-disk.
- You will examine Charles T. Russell and his sun worship.

I remember the first time I came in contact with Jehovah's Witness literature. I was in high school, and as the caretaker of our family library I puzzled over the symbolic meaning to the cover. Two tiny snakes with protruding gold tongues encircled a Winged globe on the book's reddish-brown cover. The book was part of a series "Studies in the Scriptures". What the symbolic meaning of this strange Winged-Sun-Disk with snakes was not explained. Obviously, the meaning was for those "in the know" and not the casual reader.

The author of "Studies in the Scripture" spoke of a Golden Age to come. He capitalized in bold underlined letters on each volume's title page THE GOLDEN AGE OF

Russell had a fold out chart in the front of Vol. 1 about the Great Pyramid. | was unaware of who Russell was, and unable to realize the implications of all this. I do, however, remember those first impressions as a Christian in high school "this is weird."

Where did all these strange beliefs come from? It doesn't take much to pique the curiosity of my research oriented mind. My teenage mind was always from early on searching in an effort to learn, checking out Plato, John Dewey, Will Durant, Mahatma Gandhi, and many other philosophers and religious leaders. As a youngster, I was always asking why?

The curious can have a field day with the Jehovah's Witnesses. For instance, why call one's meeting place a hall? why not Kingdom meeting, or Kingdom assembly, or Kingdom study, or church, or chapel, or tabernacle, or temple, or something else? why hall?

Why all the secrecy? Why are the writers and leaders of the Watchtower Society clouded in secrecy? Why have no membership records been kept? The answer given, that it was a security measure in case of persecution didn't satisfy me. Why? Because other groups equally persecuted made other choices, choices that are not secretive. Others said, we trust God and are willing to suffer for Him, so why be secretive? What have we to hide?

The choice to be secretive is just that, a choice, a decision. And it was made at the top of the Watchtower pyramid, by the Watchtower President, and now by the Governing body. And this secretive attitude permeates down the pyramid to the rank and file Jehovah's Witnesses.

"I was interested in possibly joining the Jehovah's Witnesses," a stranger related to this author in a chance conversation, "but when I arrived at the Kingdom Hall, the meeting had begun. They had locked the door, there were no windows, and I didn't want anything to do with a secretive religion like that."

The answer to where Jehovah's Witnesses receive their strange beliefs, strange doctrines, and attitudes comes primarily from two men. Because primarily only two men, Charles Taze Russell and Joseph F. Rutherford made all the decisions of the Watchtower Society for the beginning sixty years.

Ray Franz who was an important Governing Body member stated that the first two Watchtower Bible and Tract Society Presidents "acted according to his own perogatives in exercising his presidential authority, with no hint of a governing body."[2]

Since these two WT leaders, two other Presidents have served, Knorr and Franz. But while Knorr administrated, Frederick Franz was the real religious leader. Governing Body member Klein referred to Fred Franz as their "oracle." But today their oracle is 97 years old, blind, and only a figurehead.

How does the researcher attempt to understand these problems and men?

Some of this Author's conclusions after years of research, is that there are certainly many pitfalls to investigating secretive organizations.

Material written by secretive organizations for the public's consumption are often loaded with fictictious information. Modern Masonic writers are quite frank that the early Masonic writers when writing about the lodge are not to be trusted.[3] Not every Mason author identifies himself as a Mason. The Masons have lied to show their legitimacy and antiquity. The Jehovah's Witnesses have done similar things, but have also deceived to gloss over doctrinal controversies, embarrassing scandals, anything that doesn't square with the image of being God's selfless, pristine perfect organization. Periodically they rewrite their history to match "present truth." The WT Society has been taken to task numerous times for scholastic dishonesty. Anyone familiar with the Mormon murders has a chance to know the elaborate deception the LDS (Mormon) church leaders have gone to, to preserve their power.[4] As the reader will discover, Masons and Mormons are given latitude to explore religious thought, within the limits given them, but the power and integrity of the leadership is an off-limits subject. Two insiders close to the top of LDS pyramid of power, Frank J. Cannon and John C. Bennett, revealed in their books some of the high-level working of the LDS church.[5] LDS members were forbidden to quote their sensitive material.

Both Masonic and non-Masonic writers often have an incorrect view that all Freemasons have a common purpose, common beliefs, and common methods. The higher Masonic leadership has goals which will be exposed in this book. The lower levels of Masonry are a cover, and for that purpose are permitted to have many ideas. Most Freemasons are limited in their knowledge of Freemasonry. The Freemason next door may regard his own personal experience, as universal of all Freemasonry. He may have only experienced the lodge in terms of a philanthropic fraternity, and has not bothered to study what Freemasonry has done historically, or what the higher levels reveal. Like army-grunts in the field, they have no knowledge of the high-level planning.

The Masons have clouded their activities. The higher degrees are called "side degrees" and they claim the higher degree aren't higher, but simply on the side. The truth seeker has to work his way through these ruses.

How does one investigate the strange masonic connections of the Watchtower Society, the Mormons, and other religious groups?

It's like being a policeman who comes upon a suspicious car accident. If he rules it "an accident", rather than a homicide, he will limit his approach in gathering clues. On the other hand, if he assumes the worst and views it as a homicide, he will collect all the evidence he can. This book is an attempt to gather evidence. Yes, the fact that the policeman gathers facts means he's suspicious. It doesn't mean anyone is guilty. For instance, just because C.T. Russell was a Mason, doesn't mean Jehovah's Witnesses today join Masonic Orders.

Now this Author can not actually take the reader through all the hoops of research he has jumped through to get to his conclusions. But he can pass some of it along in this book, along with his conclusions. This Author has concluded that the following statement of Manly P. Hall, a powerful Mason who was on the secret world council of thirteen,[6] is an accurate reflection of the power that the Masonic mystery religions feel they have.

"Under new names and, to a measure, with new interpretation, the old wisdom which guided the destinies of ancient peoples is being reconsidered and restored. It becomes increasingly more evident that wisdom and understanding alone can can bestow the security and happiness which all men still seek as the foundation of a useful life. The shadowy forms of the venerated sages and prophets of the Golden Age rise again, inviting our appreciation. Though long exiled from the sphere of mortal purposes, these noblest of men are being re-established as the great teachers of the human race. The mystery religions of antiquity, which flourished long before the rise of the modern way of life, have been brought into clear focus by progressive leaders in the fields of psychology and comparitive religion."[7]

Manly P. Hall is correct in that Hinduism is presented today under a new name "New Age Movement." And true, the Hindu forms of prayer, Yoga and Transcendental Meditation have a new interpretation, they are exercises to practice. And the venerated sages of Hinduism and Witchcraft have risen (and fallen like the "Bhagwan Shree" Rajneesh and Krishnamurti, and like New Age leaders Jim Jones and Adolf Hitler). However, progressive leaders have not brought the New Age movement into focus. That is why this book is needed.

The author's experiences in New Delhi, India were a real picture of the end result of the New Age beliefs. There are many clues around. For instance, this Author's stamp collection contained Indian Nationalist postage stamps printed by Nazi Germany, just a glimpse of the connection between the Hitler's promised thousand year Millenium, and the New Age New Order. The more clues a researcher finds the worse the story gets worse, much worse. No, progressive leaders have not brought the issues into clear focus. For those readers who are interested in stories of power, for those who do not want to be compliant servants of a New World Order, this book is written for you. Dedicated to those whose love of truth and freedom led them to pay the ultimate sacrifice, death.

Let's start by an examination of those three mysterious items of the founder of the Watchtower Society, Charles Taze Russell. Those were the winged-sun-disk, pyramids and the Golden Age to come. It is disconcerting to find that these items are three notable things discussed in Manly P. Half's classic reference book on esoteric Masonic knowledge, The Secret Teachings of All Ages. As we flip through Manly P. Hall's book page after page refer to a coming future Golden Age. We also stumble upon the winged-sun-disk (on page XLIX) which is explained as a solar trinity, and represents the various sun Gods of the ages. At least eight pages discuss pyramids in detail, especially the Great Pyramid that Pastor C.T. Russell wrote so much about. On page XLIII appears a Great Pyramid drawing from Piazzi Smyth, C.T. Russell's mentor. It is well established that Smyth was the mentor of the Watchtower Society's experts on the meaning of the Great Pyramid. Smyth was the source of both Manly P. Hall's esoteric Great Pyramid knowledge and C.T. Russell and the Edgar brothers' (well known WT lecturers on the Great Pyramid) knowledge.

IDEAS DON'T COME OUT OF A VACUUM

When something new appears it is good for us to remember there is nothing new under the sun.

I illustrated that point with a personal anecdote in my previous book The Watchtower & The Masons. (This book Be Wise As Serpents is going to go over some of the same material on the Watchtower Society as my previous book, but this time more details and better explanations will be brought to bear on the subject.)

Perhaps the reader can think of his or her own experience that taught him how we derive our ideas from sources, and not from out of a vacuum.

I marvel at how much continuity a modern people have with their ancestors. This point was highlighted one day. I was studying some ancient Egyptian cursive handwriting from the 19th Dynasty while waiting for my meal in a restaurant. My sample of cursive called hieratic was about 3,300 years old.

An arab approached me and started a conversation, because he thought I was reading Arabic. That caused me to reflect. The Egyptians had been conquered by the Assyrians, Persians, Greeks, and Romans, and had gone through using various scripts, yet they choose in relatively modern times to use the Arabic script which resembles hieratic. The word choose here is used on the premise people are responsible for their own actions. People tend to build, to adapt old ideas. People tend to borrow rather than create new. (As I did with this paragraph from from my earlier book.) When we see something "new" arrive in history, such as the alphabet, then it is valid to question where "new" ideas have come from. In the case of an alphabet, one looks for clues as to when it was introduced. "New" ideas rarely come from a vacuum.

If the researcher tracks down where Charles T. Russell's ideas come from he is led to a source that was a common source of other religions too. The researcher begins to see patterns, and to realize that religions stemming from the source of Russell all have a common goal. The rank and file of these groups are of course unaware of much of this, and are unwittingly contributing to a master plan.

RUSSELL & THE WINGED SUN DISK

In 1910, Russell made his second trip to the Egyptian pyramids. He went inside the Great Pyramid. When he returned, he informed the readers of the Watchtower magazine about the Pyramid's hidden message. He also instituted some big changes to the binding of his books. His Studies in the Scriptures received the Egyptian trinity Winged-Sun-Disk on their covers, and the other Watchtower books also received it. He also at the same time made an effort to look international stamping the binding of the covers either "London and Brooklyn" or "Brooklyn and London".

Another religious leader, Helena Petrovna Blavatsky, leader of the Theosophical Society, also used the Winged-Sun-Disk. She by coincidence also started putting it on her magazines Theosophy in 1912. She had also made a pilgrimage to the Great Pyramid, and like Russell had to go in and explore the passageways and chambers herself. She spent an entire night alone in the heart of the Great Pyramid in the King's chamber.

5 INTERLINKED CONCEPTS OF THE SERPENT

LUCIFER AKA LIGHT BEARER (godhood)	=	SEARCH FOR LIGHT AKA WISDOM	=	SUN WORSHIP AKA ENERGY	=	FIRE (aka KUNDALINI FORCE)	=	REGENERATIVE PRINCIPLES (AKA PHALLIC & SEX WORSHIP)
‖		‖		‖		‖		‖
SNAKES		SNAKES		SNAKES		SNAKES		SNAKES

The Theosophical Society had a branch in Pittsburgh when Russell lived there, and also in Brooklyn where Russell reestablished. It would be hard to conceive that Russell never came into contact with this group. Especially since he writes about them, and mentions contact with Theosophists. Interestingly the man who was famous in the Irish Lodge of Theosophy was George W. Russell, who wrote for The Irish Theosophist. The Golden Dawn was a Society and the name of that Society's magazine that was started by a Mason in 1887. The Irish, especially George Russell, were attracted to this order and its Temple of Isis. The Temple of Isis used the Winged-Sun-Disk over its portals.

The tie-in with Masonry, the New Age, and the Theosophical Society is a close one. The Scottish Rite started the modern Rosicrucians who started HP. Blavatsky off with the Theosophical Society.[8] They financed her and her constant travels. The Grand Master of the Brotherhood of Luxor recommended H.P.B to Olcott with a letter written in gold ink on green paper.[9] Olcott, himself an active Mason, suggested to H.P.B. that they start the Theosophical Society using their group of Masons, Rosicrucians, Cabalists, and Spiritualists that were meeting in a NY apartment.[10] The Scottish Rite also has published for over 100 years the New Age magazine, and has promoted the New Age Movement from the Masonic Lodges. The publications of the Theosophical Society are stocked in the Masonic libraries and read by them. Most of the leaders of the modern Rosicrucians have been Masons. The leaders of the Theosophical Society have generally been women who were in co-Masonry. And the T.S. has also been called co-Masonry.[11] The Theosophical Society has openly promoted the New Age movement, in contrast with the Scottish Rite's quieter methods. The leaders of the Theosophical Society have been channelers,[12] which is interesting because so have the leaders of the Watchtower Society.[13] One of the books put out by a later president of the Theosophical Society is titled On the Watchtower.[14] It is a regular part of the Masonic Knights Templar's libraries, and is a selection of Theosophist articles. More on the meaning of Watchtowers and the parallels between the W.S. and the T.S. later.

WHERE THE SYMBOL CAME FROM

The investigator will find similar winged-globes in the pagan mystery religions of the Middle East, but this representation of the Winged-Sun-Disk originates in ancient Egypt. The meaning is derived from Ancient Egypt, and stands for Osirus (the Sun God), Horus, and Isis.

Those who study Egyptian Magic and practice it today use the symbol for its purported magical properties. "Emblematic of the element of air, this consists of a circle or solar-type disk enclosed by a pair of wings. In ritual magic it is suspended over the altar in an easterly direction and used when invoking the protection and co-operation of the sylphs." So says an expert on such magic in his book Practical Egyptian Magic.[15]

According to a book used by the Church of Illumination (Rosicrucian) to instruct on their teachings, "The Winged Globe is pre-eminently a Rosicrucian symbol, although the Illuminati may lay some claim to it, and it may be admitted that it is of Egyptian origin. The Winged Globe is the symbol of the perfected soul making its flight back to the source of its creation in Elysian fields beyond."[16]

It is also said to be the "house of many mansions", that is the God-like reasoning that man supposedly has.[17]

If one investigates further back into Rosicrucian thought one finds that the German Illuminati used the Winged-Sun-Disk. The use of the magic symbol goes back to the Kabbalah. The Kabbalists use it to portray Jehovah. However, their full explanation of who Jehovah is, is that Jehovah is the sun-god. He is to the Kabbalists the same as the Gnostic sun-god Demiurgus or the Greek almighty God Zeus, which name at times is used interchangably with Jehovah. The Jewish mystical thought that pervades Rosicrucian thinking then is seen in an illustration of a secret 16th Century Rosicrucian book Die Goldene Zeit (The Golden Age) which portrays the Winged disk with the magical Tetragrammaton in the sun globe's center.

From the sources quoted, the reader has learned that the Illuminati and Rosicrucians use the Winged-Sun-Disk. What about the Masons?

Illustration from the secret 16th century Rosicrucian book The Golden Age.

MASONIC USE OF THE WINGED-SUN-DISK

Upon achieving the 32 degree, the Mason is given Albert Pike's Morals and Dogma. It is now from the Pope of Masonry, Albert Pike, that the Mason learns that Phallic worship is the true worship of Masonry. However, an examination of Phallic worship, which is the worship of the regenerative parts is the same as sun worship, the sun being the symbol of regeneration.[18] The worship of the sun has often been sexual in its ritual. The Elysian fields that the Sun Trinity-the Winged Solar Disk represents are sexual rituals. Masonry itself claims to perpetuate the ancient mysteries of Isis and Osiris, Tammuz and Baal[19] which are Sun religions that ultimately are derived from a single common origin.

In Albert Churchward's (30° Mason) book Signs and Symbols of Primordal Man, The Evolution of Religious Doctrines from the Eschatology of the Ancient Egyptians, he states that the Winged-Sun-Disk is used by 33 degree Masons.

The 33rd degree is the highest public level of the Scottish Rite Masons. There are both honorary and actual operative 33 degree Masons. Notable persons, such as Presidents and leading clergymen are initiated into the 33rd degree. According to Churchward they alone know its meaning. However, exposure to the symbol is almost unavoidable to those Masons reading Theosophic literature.

"That's the sun disk Ra," exclaimed an active 32 degree Mason when this Author flashed Russell's cover of the Studies in the Scriptures.

"It's a Masonic symbol," this Author chimed in.

"No, it's not a Masonic symbol," came the reply.

"How did you know what it was?"

Complete silence. He had immediately recognized the symbol but refused to talk about it, or his knowledge about it. According to the Masonic oath they aren't to talk about Masonic knowledge.

QUESTIONS & OBJECTIONS

Some will object that if Russell went to Egypt he may have got the symbol from Egypt, and not from esoteric Masonic-connected groups.

It is true that it is found displayed over Egyptian temples. For instance, one of the most spetacular exhibits ever, was the King Tut artifacts, discovered seven years after

C.T. Russell died. Four oak house-like structures, called shrines, contained the body of this minor boy Pharoah. The inside of these large oak shrines were laid of gold, giving us an idea of the splendor the other Pharoahs likewise received. Visitors to the exhibit can view the Winged-Sun-Disk at the top above each door and on the far side or rear panals.

However, in drawing representations of this over their temples the Egyptians employed a variety of styles. The snakes may look like vipers or cobras, and may even be dropping down rather than looking out from the sun disk. In researching what books were available to Russell, and what live Egyptian drawings Russell could have studied of the Osirus, Isis, and Horus trinity, it is this Author's conclusion that he would have seen a variety of representations. None of which he used. However, he did follow basically the way the esoteric Masonic groups drew it, so consequently his source was most likely an esoteric source.

Illustrations from references of C.T. Russell's day showing the Winged-Sun-Disk are provided to document the variety of choice.

Some have speculated that the Winged-Sun-Disk is an angel's wing like a Cherub. This is an uninformed guess. A close look at copies of Russell's books in excellent condition will reveal that there are snakes on each side of the disk. Further, Russell passes up ways to use it as an angel. It is undoubtedly the Winged-Sun-Disk on his books.

WHAT DOES C.T. RUSSELL & THE WT SOCIETY HAVE TO DO WITH THE SUN-GOD?

Surprisingly, there are a number of clues that show C.T. Russell did believe in a Sun deity. Russell spoke about Zorastor as a true prophet (WT '06, p. 14). Zoroaster, was considered to be the Sun God by his followers. Cyrus the Great, who name meant the Sun, was considered by his gnostic followers to be the Sun-God. Russell thought Cyrus the Great was a prefiguring of Jesus Christ. Russell in fact believed the Resurrected Jesus was at the center of the Sun.

Russell never left himself without a scripture to explain whatever he decided to believe.

Mal. 4;2 refers to "But to you who fear My name, The Sun of Righteousness shall arise With healing in His wings; and you shall go out And grow fat like stall-fed calves."

Russell at various times gave various interpretations to Mal. 4:2. A comprehensive examination shows he said the Sun of Righteousness is

1) Jesus and his church

SYMBOLOGY OF THE MYSTERY RELIGIONS

After reading thousands of pages on the Mystery religions, dozens of Masonic books on their religious symbology, various books on the mythic images of mankind globally, and the Christian scriptures it was clear that 5 concepts repeatedly have been interlinked with each other on a worldwide basis and that each of these 5 interlinked ideas has also been represented by the concept of a serpent, a snake.

[place diagram here]

It is understandable how man in various areas could see the stars, the closest star the Sun, and fire and worship these items. It is also easy to see how two internal fires within man, sexual passion and curiosity could be integrated into the worship of the Sun, stars, and fire. If one were worthy of worship, then all the rest were too. It is easy to understand how a priesthood could persuade people to give them authority in order that these items might be properly worshipped. An examination of the related Sun worships from the classical world shows that the priests reserved an esoteric worship for themselves that was hidden behind the worship of fire, sex, snakes and the sun. The Egyptian priests that taught the people sun worship in Moses' day were monotheistic. This monotheistic god was the Light-bearer.

To understand the significance of pyramids to Masons (and New Agers in general) we can show how pyramids, especially in particular the Great Pyramid of Giza, relates to these 5 interlocked concepts.

The Great Pyramid is important to Masons according to Masonic sources because:

a. An initiate (then and now) after entering the Great Pyramid leaves as a god. (light—bearer/godhood on chart)
b. The Great Pyramid is said to be prophetic when its passageways are measured. (wisdom)
c. Sun worshippers built the Great Pyramid.(sun worship)
d. All pyramids are said to emit special energy.
e. Pyramids are an architectural picture of an ascended flame to heaven.(fire)
f. The pyramid's upward triangle shape stands for the male generative principle.

When the Masons Charles T. Russell and H.P. Blavatsky made their pilgrimages to the Great Pyramid and went into the King's chamber it is possible the significance of their visits included the above a through f items.

The philosophy behind the mystery religions, Freemasonry, Theosophy, Gnosticism and the New Age movement continue the idea that man should seek out the fruit of the tree of good and evil for it shall make him a god. These religious philosophies also declare that "true" Christianity (cosmic or New Age Christianity) is also this gnostic quest for enlightenment.[20]

Many Gnostic religions hate traditional Christianity. They have also over the years criticized biblical Christianity for holding mankind back from finding his quest for godhood.

For several upcoming paragraphs we will contrast Christianity with the gnostic quest for enlightment. We will refer to the head adversary of the Creator, what the scriptures call "...the dragon, that serpent of old, the devil, or Satan." Rv 20:1

Some readers will hold the view that Satan and demons don't exist. They are free to speculate that, but there is no way to prove their speculation. On the other hand, it is easy to substantiate an objective belief in demons by examining the countless testimonies, etc. about them. J.W. Montgomery in Principalities and Powers, written after years of research into the existence of demons, concluded, "The problem involved in determining whether demon possession occurs and whether witchcraft works is absurdly simple. The documentation is overwhelming."[21]

Whatever our view of demons and their reality, there is the visible behavior of humans who are so brutal that we label their behavior as "inhuman" because they exhibit a cruelty that surpasses all the animal kingdom and surpasses any purposeful depraved needs. So why are these men so "demonically" destructive? How do we explain a man like Pol Pot who cruely killed half the people (many killed were of the better half) in his beautiful country of Cambodia. These were his own people. Rational answers fall short of explaining such irrational behavior for destruction. This destructive force may be labeled demonic, whether we view demons as real or as a psychological phenomena.

"Be wise as serpents...," What were the issues at stake in the Garden of Eden? If we are to be as wise as serpents, what was it that the serpent knew that Eve didn't know?

The story of the Garden of Eden sets forth the Biblical view of this issue right from the first part of scriptures.

The serpent knew that man was man, and that it was a delusion for man to try to become god. The only way since then for man to think he has reached godhead is if he deludes himself. And the serpent is there to help him try. But why does the Serpent want man to seek godhead through taking in the fruit of good and evil?

The biblical view of God was that man should not try to determine good from evil by taking in knowledge—that is eating of the fruit of the tree of good and evil. For man to determine for himself right from wrong is called situational ethics. Rather than man pretending to be a god by declaring what is wrong by his own wisdom of situational ethics, man was to allow God to decide. The creator had laid down physical, spiritual, and moral laws. But the gift of choice was given to man. That was God's will. God's will allows for bad choices on man's part, including the option by man to reject his loving Creator and make up his own rules in contradiction to truth.

Today, we are seeing that many young people do not want the responsibility of making their own choices about what is right and wrong. They are running to Guru's, and laying their freedom of choice at the feet of these New Age "Godmen". "Tell me what to do," they ask. And then men like Jim Jones, who thought he was God,[22] make their choices for these youth, often with disasterous consequences.

Why does Satan encourage man to seek divinity? Even today people are as naive as Eve concerning the issue. Satan and the demons really hate the Creator and would like to destroy his Creation. But how does seeking one's divinity aid in mankind's destruction?

The Theosophical Society tells us that "...all philosophy is an effort to apprehend Reality; but it is an effort of the intellect merely, and as such it is, and must always be a fruitless effort."[23]

The inability for man to find godhead by reason and logic has been repeatedly discovered by all the great minds. Man has always failed. For instance, William James the philosopher tell us in A Pluralistic Universe, p. 212, "For my own part I have finally found myself compelled to give up the logic, fairly, squarely, and irrevocably. It has an imperishable use in human life, but that use is not to make us theoretically acquainted with the essential nature of reality."

To apprehend reality as a truth seeker by using only logic and reason is a dead end street. God reveals truth to man according to the Scriptures, and man obeys.

If man chooses not to obey, and insists on seeking truth on his own, he invariably must discard logic and reason and turns to mysticism, the occult and the mystery religions including Hinduism. In order to achieve his delusion of godhead, the initiate is encouraged to leave reality by using drugs, self-hypnosis, ectastic activity such as rigorous physical and sexual activity, psycotic states of the mind and trances.

The Theosophical Society states, "Some of our modern philosophers are beginning to apprehend this fact: notably Henri Bergson, who speaks of a higher faculty which he calls intuition, and which he says must replace intellect if we would contact Reality."[24] The Theosophical Society believes the world is but an illusion, Maya, an idea they have learned from Hinduism.

The reasoning that these people use is a form of reasoning not under God's authority and is consequently according to scripture not under his protection from demonic control. To step out from underneath God's authority is like stepping out from underneath an umbrella during the rain, the protection offered is lost. Although these people use reason, it is a distorted version. The dying words of atheists who exalted reason, shows that they often discovered their philosophy turned out to be a cruel hoax.

Does Satan benefit by watching men pursueing altered states of consciousness and tripping out and leaving reality? Yes. A life centered on deluding oneself is a destructive life.

Satan's Kingdom, often called the Kingdom of the World is taking advantage of man's ignorant groping for godhood. Satan is out to destroy God's creation made in his own image.

Get in touch with reality and stay there. Quit trying to "cop out" of reality. Christians are to test the spirits to see if they are of God. That means elements of logic, science, and reason must be tested to see if they are under God's authority. If they are, then embrace them. Christianity and the Scriptures are not against science, logic, and reason. No those items are powerful tools for Christianity. But when those items are used in a distorted way that must be avoided. Science and intellect are not to be used to create gods nor is their purpose to invent systems of morality.

Evolution is an example of a powerful warped way of thinking. Because it was developed intentionally as a tool to destroy belief in God, it has not been protected from demonic powers. All kinds of demonic influences have directed the evolutionists, and the list of frauds perpetrated by evolutionists is long. It is also used to teach us morality, such as, only the fit (the best) survive. This means one is superior if he survives by any means.

To use reason, science and reality to become gods is in itself a distortion of reality—a contradiction, for man is but man. In order to delude himself into thinking he is a god, mankind is turning to drugs and other escapes from reality.

The Christian NT book of Ephesians chap. 4 deals with sins of the flesh in the context of the old man (verse 22) and the new man (verse 24). In this context, suddenly Paul warns us, "Neither give place to the devil." (verse 27). By committing fleshly sins, the demons are given a place (lit. ground) for their activity in the believer's life.

But the Christian idea of God establishing right and wrong for us, is rediculed as simplistic by all the various Gnostic groups.

" 'Christianity,' so-called, lulls its devotees into a false sense of security, or "salvation"; whereas the whole history of humanity, and of religion itself, shows us that:

" The path by which to Deity we climb
Is arduous, rough, ineffable, sublime.'"[25]

The poem is right. The path to divinity is an arduous path, because it is a path man is not to accomplish on his own. It is a cruel hoax which Lucifer as an angel of light assists.

The Masonic lodges which continue the ancient mystery religion (one religion with various names) teaches the initiate that he needs light. Masonic authority Mackey in his Encyclopaedia states, "Light. Light is an important word in the Masonic system. It conveys a far more recondite meaning than it is believed to possess by the generality of readers. It is in fact the first of all the symbols presented to the neophyte, and continues to be presented to him in various modifications throughout all his future progress in his Masonic career."

As a candidate for various degrees the Mason Will declare his need for light. For instance, the Entered Apprentice, or first degree is asked by the Worshipful Master, "In your present condition, what do you most desire?"

And C.T. Russell, Joseph Smith, Jr., Billy Graham, and Robert Schuler all answered, "Light."[26]

"Light is the first demand of a candidate at his initiation; and the material light is succeeded by an intellectual illumination."—Historical Landmarks, Vol. 1, p.135.

This search for light continues up through the degrees. When the candidate receives his lecture for the 32nd degree he is told, "You are here to learn, if you can learn, and to remember what you have been taught. In the Scottish Rite you will be taught that our ancient ancestors who knew all the Mysteries left enough traces so that we today with diligant labor and teaching may renew them and bring them to light for your enlightment. We now come to the great symbol of Pythagoras. Our symbols have descended to us from the Aryans, and many were invented by Pythagoras, who studied in Egypt and Babylon. In order to preserve the great truths learned from the profane, there were invented some of our symbols that represent the profoundest of truths descended to us from our white ancestors...The ancient Masters invented some of these symbols to express the result of deity. They did not attempt to name him, but rather tried to express their reverence by describing him as Ahura-Mazda, spirit of light."[27]

Ahura-Mazda was the god of the Mazdean religion which worshipped five types of fire. The five fires were the internal fire of the earth, the Kundalini aka as Sex-force or serpent power, the fire of lightning, the fire of vegitation, and the fire of Ahura-Mazda.

The ritual quoted above of the 32 degree lecture introduces us to two concepts worthy of note at this point. First, that symbols are used to conceal truth from the profane, and second that Masonry involves the worship of the various 5 elements of the serpent.

In Ez. 8:16, Sun worshippers are described facing the east. Generally, sun worshippers have faced east, as the Masonic rituals connected to sun worship do. Because of a number of items, it appears that Lucifer may be playing a larger role within the Masonic lodges than one is led to believe. The symbology of the lodge includes frequent use of the Sun, the serpent, and the eagle representing the sun.

In order to bait mankind into continuing to self-destruct, Lucifer and his demons have been appearing and providing enlightment for those who are on the New Age road. It should be obvious that a real angel of light (by Bible standards) is not going to appear to help men become gods. The Bible is clear from the beginning Yahweh the God of the Bible doesn't want situational ethics and man-made gods.

Notes

1. The seventh volume was billed as Russell's, but was written by George H. Fisher and C.J. Woodworm.
2. Franz, Ray. Crisis of Conscience. Atlanta, GA: Commentary Press, 1983, p.60.
3. Morey, Robert. The Origin and Teachings of Freemasonry. Morey quotes a number of respectable Masons-for instance Mackey criticising the Masonic historians of Preston, Hughan, et. al—for instance the Mason A.S. Macbride criticising 19th century masonic

historians—also Melvin Johnson criticing Gould, Hughan and others, —also Delmar Darrah criticizing Masonic historians. It seems that the phrase "First liar doesn't stand a chance," may apply in some ways to masonic historians. Morey himself isn't honest with the facts. The smokescreens of false information have helped cloud the Masonic Lodge, but it is possible to get to the bottom of it all. Honest men who have left Masonry like Charles Finney have been reliable witnesses about the Masonic Lodge.

4. Mormonism, Shadow or Reality by the Tanners in Salt Lake City does an excellent job documenting Mormon deception. The casual reader may want to read the compelling story about the Mormon document dealer Mark Hoffman and his dealings with Mormon officials and the murders he committed. The book reveals the mindset of the top Mormon leadership. The book is The Mormon Murders by Steven Naifeh and Gregory White Smith, New American Library a division of Penquin Books, NY, 1988.

5. In 1842, John C. Bennett produced History of the Saints. Frank Cannon's material was originally a series in Everybody's and became the book Under the Prophet in Utah.

6. Confidential sources. As far as seeing this in print references to a group of 13 men who control the world's religious groups can be picked up here and there in various books, for instance in Stan Deyo's The Cosmic Conspiracy. Hints about such a group come through in Manly P. Hall's books, and for a good reason, he sat on the council.

7. Hall, Manly P. The Secret Teachings of All Ages. An Encyclopedic Outline of Masonic, Hermetic, Quabbalistic and Rosicrucian Symbolical Philosophy. Los Angeles, CA: The Philosophical Research Society, 1971, preface.

8. This was originally revealed by H.P. Blavatsky in her own books. The Theosophical Societies have put out more information on the origins of the Theosophical Society. H.P.B. also refers to other Adepts and Rosicrucians who she met in her travels throughout the Middle East, Egypt, India, and Tibet.

9. Ancient Wisdom and Secret Sects. Alexandria, VA: Time-Life Books, p. 124.

10. ibid.,p. 125.

11. According to papers put out by the Deputy of the Supreme Council of Universal Co-Masonry for Great Britain and its Dependencies by the Grand Secretary of the said Jurisdiction. The smaller group that broke away and is headquartered now in Pasadena, CA claims to be against the idea of Co-Masonry. This position is attractive to those Masons who have a difficult time accepting Co-Masonry. For instance, Iverson L Harris, Theosophical leader, while under oath in court in Florida said, "Neither is our Society in any way responsible ofr the Co-Masonic Order which Mrs. Besant organized and publicized widely as a Masonic Order for women. A number of our very prominent members for years past have been Masons, and our late Secretary General, Dr. Joseph H. Fussell, was a high Mason, and vigorously opposed this so-called Co-Masonic Order." Theosophy Under Fire (deposition taken for a court case in FL),Point Loma, CA: Pub. by Iverson L. Harris, p.9.

12. Blavasky claimed she wrote Isis Unveiled under spirit control. Besant and Bailey later TS Presidents also claimed the same thing for their books.

13. The WT Society has on Numerous occasions referred to themselves as God's channel of light. For instance The Finished Mystery, (1917), p. 144; WT 1/1890, p.1; WT Dec. 1, 1981, p. 27; Theocratic Aid to Kingdom Publishers (1945), pp. 249-250. Some specific quotes are that the WT Society is the "sole visible channel through whom alone spiritual instruction was to come." WT, c. 1956, p.590.

Russell says angels helped bring messages to him. WT 10/1/14. Rutherford declared spirit beings brought him light. Vindication III, (1932), p.250. Franz also at various times said that angels were bringing light to the Watchtower leaders, see pg. 40 of the Douglas Walsh Trial. "Well, we believe that the angels of God are used in directing the Jehovah's Witnesses."

14. Sri Ram, N. On the Watchtower. Adyar, India. The Theosophical Society.
15. Hope, Murry. Practical Egyptian Magic. NY: St. Martin's Press, 1984, p.107.
16. Clymer, R. Swinburne. The Rosicrucians Their Teachings. Quakertown, PA: Philosophical Publishing Co., 1923, p. 112.
17. ibid., p.113.
18. Pike, Albert. Morals and Dogma.
19. Numerous masonic and non-masonic authors tie phallic and sun-worship together. "Phallus: a representation of the virile member (male sexual organ) which was venerated as a religious symbol universally...by the ancients. It was one of the modifications of Sun-worship, and was a symbol of the fecundating (impregnating) power of that luminary. The Masonic point within a circle is undoubtedly of phallic origin." Mackey, Albert G. Symbolism of Freemasonry, pg.352.
20. Kingsland, William. The Gnosis And Christianity. Wheaton, II.: The Theosophical Pub. House, 1975, p. 13 et al.
21. Montgomery, J.W. Principalities and Powers: The world of the occult. Minneapolis, Minn. Bethany Fellowship, 1973, p.146.
22. Film God's of the New Age exposes how Jim Jones thought he was a divine reincarnation of Jesus Christ.
23. Kingsland, op. cit, p.18
24. ibid.
25. ibid., p. 23
26. Duncan, Malcolm C. Revised Duncan's Ritual of Freemasonry. Danbury, Conn.: Behrens Publishing Co., 1922, p.31.
27. McKenney, Tom and Jim Shaw. The Deadly Deception., p.156.

Chapter 1.6
The Emerald Island

You will learn:

- the importance of bloodlines in relation to the Power.
- about the bloodline of Charles T. Russell, founder of the Watchtower Society.

BLOODLINES

Bloodlines, they can mean authority (such as royal lineages), they can mean mean power (occult wisdom and power is generationally passed down in Satanists), they can mean likemindedness (world views are learned to a great extent from our parents, similar physical brains are genetically inherited; for instance, identical twins separated at birth, and rejoined at adulthood are found to have surprising similarities in modes of behavior.) Today the principles of racial heredity are not popular at the public educational institutions controlled by the Power. Also supposedly, royalty is a thing of the past and aristocracy is fading with it.

After thousands of hours of research on the Power, one thing is blatantly clear— the Power recides in bloodlines that pass authority, occult power and knowledge, and likeminded worldviews from generation to generation. Bloodlines have not ceased to be important.

THE PROCESS TO IDENTIFYING THE POWER

In researching the Power behind hundreds of individuals and groups, it has been like peeling the layers of a onion. Which men and women are front men, lackeys, and hirelings, and which ones are really running the show and making decisions?

For instance, men like Anton LaVey, George Bush, William Buckley, the major networks' news anchormen, although powerful in their own right are in the overall picture front men.

There is an elite, not only in the United States, or Great Britian, or Russia but an elite over the entire globe. Surprising? When the astute observor begins to realize that an oligarchy is running the world, then there are lackeys in academia to tell us we should not have been surprised. Robert Michels concluded that elitism is a natural thing of society, because society required organization and all organizations are oligarchies even socialist societies.[1] That elites are inevitable is debatable (the elites are actually unproductive parasites on society), but this is not likely to be debated in today's population, which have been conditioned by the elite's media to be sheep. It was debated by the U.S.'s founding fathers, who set up an alternative to an oligarchy or a democracy, by establishing a Republic. Although there are societies, even somewhat modern ones without oligarchies, which prove that a community can function without some self-perpetuating power elite, these societies are not in control of the world.

The Power that is in control of the world is not the benevolent wise and spiritual group some of the masses have been conditioned by behavior modification to believe. This book intends to expose that world Power, and that means attempting to expose the bloodlines that have savagely maintained their parasitic power.

IMPORTANT BLOODLINES

Important bloodlines for the Power include:

- •The Jewish bloodline of the Prieure de Sion which starts with the tribe of Dan, extends through the Merovingian Dynasty and into the Hapsburg royalty. This bloodline has kept a close association with all branches of the occult, often providing the leadership for the occult.
- •The bloodlines of the leaders of the LDS and RLDS churches which go back to the bloodline of the Prieure de Sion, the Merovingians. A secret society of Danites was created by the LDS church.
- •The bloodlines of the 13 Illuminati families, which include several Jewish and Maranos Jewish families.
- •The bloodlines of the petty Hasidic Jewish messiahs that began their religious reigns in Poland among the Askinazim.
- •The bloodlines of the Babylonish Talmudic Jews. Historical evidence shows these bloodlines were of mixed blood even in Christ's time, in disregard for the Scriptures commandments not to mix blood.[2]
- •The bloodlines of the "Successors of the Messiah", that is the bloodline of the Sufi leadership.
- •The bloodlines of the Knights of Malta. The aristocratic/royal bloodlines carry titles, wealth and power.
- •The bloodlines of the descendents of William of Orange and those who helped him conquer England. They have been in powerful positions since, especially in England. Part of William of Orange's help was derived from those of Jewish descent.
- • The bloodlines of the thirteen Illuminati families (which have tie ins to the blood lines above). These thirteen are not a fixed set, but because of their power change in who are the thirteen doesn't often occur. A tentative list of these thirteen families includes Astor, Bundy, Collins, DuPont, Freeman, Lee, Onnasis, Rockefeller, Rothschild, and Van Dyne.

Besides those families there are a host of other families that are important within the Illuminati. The list includes:
(those of German Jewish Heritage): Adler, Geisenheimer, Goldschmidt, Guggenheim, Lazard, Oppenheim, Oppenheimer, Seligman, Sichel, Speyer, Stern, Russell, Wolf(e)
(and those of British or Scottish Heritage): Acheson, Bell, Billings, Brown, Buckland, Clinton, Eddy, Frost, Gardner, Hall, Hopkins, Hooker, Kennedy, Leek, Lord, Morgan, Sinclair (St. Clair), Smith, Tolkein, Lewwellyn
(and others such as): Hapsburgs, Sassoons

What makes this study of vital and timely importance is that members of these bloodlines intend within the 7-year period of 1992-1999 to launch a sequence of events to lead the world into a one world slave-state ruled by a man controlled by the god which the elites worship. Should the reader allow, I will quote from the Power's own statements plus other proof to show that this god, the god of the world, is Lucifer (aka Satan, Sanat, Venus, etc.) For thousands of years, The Plan for world domination has been passed down from occult generation to occult generation. Spaced every 20 years plus is a Feast of the Beast, a year-long holiday during which Satanists receive new instructions from Satan on how to carry out The Plan.[3] We read of the great holiday and its Great Councils in Externalization of the Hierarchy, when Satan's instrument Alice Bailey writes, "The past year...has, however, been the year in which the greatest spiritual Approach of all time has shown itself to be possible - an Approach for which the initiates and Masters have for centuries been preparing, and for which all the Wesak Festivals since the meeting of the Great Council in 1925 have been preparatory. I have, in past instructions, referred to the great meetings held at intervals by Those to Whom is entrusted the spiritual guidance of the planet and particularly of man." (Externalisation of the Hierarchy, p. 389.)

ONE SAMPLE OF THEIR PLANS

As example of how ingenius these plans are to create a One-World-Government consider the following part of it.

The Drug War is not what it seems. It is a very ingenious scheme to enslave the American people, and destroy all their civil rights.[4]

The first rumblings of the Drug War part of The Plan seem to stir from the occult, so it is highly possible the Drug War originally was first developed by Satanists, perhaps even given during one of the Feasts of the Beast.

The Drug War seems like the perfect plan, with no way for the Power to lose. First, the Power creates a drug culture in America. The Drug Culture would and did give many their first step into the Aquarian (New Age) conspiracy.[5] The Power would make billions of dollars by running drugs, to further finance other nefarious schemes, and could use their world-wide power to crush all their competitors. When the Power crushed and arrested their competitors in drug running, they would be hailed as heros by the majority of people.(And they have.) The introduction of drugs into society does several things. It taxes the Christian church's ability to oppose immorality. It gets the public indignent about drugs, and the public's moral outcry allows the Power to pass "drug" laws that remove the last vestiges of legal civil rights. In fact, the beguiled public demands the laws which abolish their rights, and applauds these laws in ignorance unknowing what the laws actually say and mean. If the public somehow gets a complete picture that their government has been smuggling drugs to create a drug war in spite of the controlled media, or perhaps through the media at the right time, then they can create a scandal involving several U.S. Presidents to eliminate the U.S. government and switch the public's alligience to a world government. (See chapter 3.9 for more details and a chronology of the secretly planned escalation of today's designed Drug War.)

As an ex-Mason, who is very aware of their plans, said to this Author, "These people are in it for the long-term."

THE BLOODLINE OF THE RUSSELLS

The purpose of this next subsection may be misunderstood, unless I make myself clear at this point. This Author has not established any link between the various famous Russells. (Although I have been doing genealogy work, I have not had the chance to do the long term Geneology work required to clarify the issue, if the reader is dissatisfied with the extent of this information, he is encouraged that rather than criticize to research it himself.) The reader will observe by the time he finishes this book, that this Author has done extensive research into many groups. One item that has popped up consistently is that people with the surname Russell repeatedly appear as important figures in the various elements of the World Order as it has developed.

Before becoming aware of the One World Order, this Author had no inkling how important blood lines have been for the elite that controls the world. Friendships have also played a role, for instance, Eleanor Roosevelt (who was involved in numerous communist organizations[6]) was a close friend and confidant to Ronald Reagon's mother. This seems trivial, but the reoccurance of blood lines and the reoccurant discovery of connections of friendships between what have been thought of as unrelated personages, compels one to believe the elite is more compact than appears.(More on that later)

The mysterious Watchtower Society and its founder Charles Taze Russell will serve as perhaps the most used example in this book of an organization that is secretly serving the New World Order. (The reader will be presented with the history of all this throughout the book, especially in chapters 5-17 of the first section.)

Let's comment about the type of Russells that keep appearing throughout the course of the history of the New World Order as this Author went about his research. To summarize, these various Russells (who until the genealogy work is done to show the connections should be viewed as individuals—not a group) have been prominent members of the Illuminati, the Masons, the Fabians, the Mormons, the Jehovah's Witnesses, the Jesuits, the Royal Society, and the Media controlled by those of the New World Order, and a deputy chairman of the Federal Reserve. Typically they have been merchants and lawyers, with a fair share of them also as Christian heretics. It will be easier perhaps to illustrate how the Russells keep popping up in the New World Order story line by listing a good sampling of them.

SAMPLE OF RUSSELLS OF INTEREST

RUSSELLS WHO FOUNDED FRATERNAL SOCIETIES

William Huntington Russell- founder of what is believed to be an american chapter of the llluminati (Skull & Bones Order).[7] More on this in chapter 2.3. It's legal name is Russell Trust.

John Russell- founder of the fraternity of Daughters of Isabella (DOI) in May, 1897 in New Haven, Conn.[8]

RUSSELLS CONNECTED TO FRATERNAL ORGANIZATIONS

Charles Taze Russell- Knights Templar Mason of York Rite, in Allegheny Pa. and founder of the WT Society.[9]

Harvey D. Russell- KT Mason leader of Pittsburgh, PA Beaver Valley Lodge No. 84[10]

John Russell- Pastor C.T. Russell's step-mother was executor of his will. His mother was the one chosen to dance with famous Mason and Illuminatus Lafayette when he was in Philadelphia.[11]

William H. Russell- Mason and part owner of the Pony Express, which was a firm made up mainly of Masons.[12]

George William Russell (1869-1935)- leading member of the Dublin Theosophist lodge, wrote art. for the theosophic periodical The Irish Theosophist. Initiated into the Lodge of Isis (with it sexual rites). The keynote of his work is from the Bhagavadgita. He was a good friend of Golden Dawn leader William Butler Yeats who wrote some of the Satanic Masonic Rituals for the Golden Dawn.[13]

James Russell- President of the Royal Society of Edinburgh which was associated with esoteric groups like the Masons.[14]

Archibald D. Russell (1811-1871)- A Presbyterian Mason who graduated from the Univ. of Edinburgh, Scot. He studied at the Univ. of Bonn, Ger. and was active in setting up various organizations in the United States.[15]

Benjamin Russell (1761-1845)- Mason and early American Journalist.[16]

Charles H. Russell- Governor of Nevada, 1950-58, and 32 degree Mason, also in the York Rite, and a Shriner.[17]

J. Stuart Russell- Mason and newspaper editor and deputy chairman of the Fed. Reserve Bank in Chicago.[18]

Lee M. Russell (1875-1943)- Mason and Lt. Gov. of Miss. 1916-20.[19]

Louis A. Russell (1854-1925)- Mason, organist for South Park Presbyterian Church, Newark, N.J.[20]

Richard B. Russell (1861-1938)- Mason, judge, editor & business exec.[21]

Richard B. Russell, Jr.- Mason and Gov. of Georgia, 1931-33 and Sen. from Georgia since 1933.[22]

Before going to our next section would be worthwhile to cover the family that Bertrand Russell came from. They hold the title of Dukes of Bedford. Ordo W. Russell served in Lord Palmerston's office from 1850-52. He served as unofficial ambassador for Great Britian to the Vatican from 1857-70. His son Baron Ampthill was Grand Master of the English Masons 1908-1935. He joined the English equivalent of the Knights of Malta--that is the Order of St. John of Jerusalem, and served as the Grand Master of the lodge formed at the Bank of England! He was appointed head of the Indian Masons of Madras, India (home of the Theosophical Society). Ordo Russell's son also served in some high political positions.

RUSSELLS CONNECTED TO GROUPS THAT TIE BACK TO THE ILLUMINATI (see future chapters such as 2.5)

Charles Edward Russell, Jewish Socialist who worked for N.Y. Life controlled by J.P. Morgan, and also for N.Y. Tribune and Herald.[23]

James E. Russell, Columbia University professor who introduced Wundt's Hegelian philosophy to his students at Columbia.[24]

Thomas Russell (1767-1803)- a revolutionist of the Illuminati-stream of Revolution[25]

Samuel Russell- represented Baring Bros. Helped open up the Port of Shanghai for the International Financiers.[26]

Bertrand Russell- famous Fabian socialist, and One-Worlder[27]

Alys Russell- ex-eccentric Quaker, wife of Bertrand and also a Fabian Socialist.[28]

Rev. Matthew Russell (1834-1912)- Jesuit writer.[29]

RUSSELLS CONNECTED IN SOME WAY TO THE IBSA (NOW CALLED JEHOVAH'S WITNESSES)

Charles Taze Russell, Sr.- Pastor Russell's uncle, broker and real estate agent.[30]

Moses F. Russell, Postmaster of Saltillo, Hopkins Co.,TX near where Hayden Cooper Covington's parents moved.[31]

Brother Russell- an early elder of the Belfast Ireland IBSA congregation.[32]

RUSSELLS CONNECTED IN SOME WAY TO MORMONISM

Elder Isaac Russell- a prominant early Mormon missionary to Great Britian in 1837.[33]

Captian Joseph H. Russell- original investor in stock in the Mormon Deseret Manufacturing Co. which was intended to be an umbrella company for many early Mormon enterprises.[34]

The Russell who opened a store with Mormon blessings in the newly created Salt Lake city. The store was called Miller, Russell & Co., a branch of Russell, Majors, & Waddell, and was a primary source of goods in the area of Utah.[35]

OTHER RUSSELLS

Baron Charles Russell (1832-1900)- Solicitor (Lawyer) in Ulster and advocate for Ireland.[36]

Jerome Russell, a Greyfriar, burned in 1539 for heresy with John Kennedy in Glasgow, Scot.[37]

Philemon R. Russell- editor of the Christian Herald & Journal, in the Mar. 19, 1840 issue he stressed 2,520 years in prophecy, which was an idea C.T. Russell would later pick up and promote.

William Howard Russell- first war correspondent for London's *The Times* newspaper in 1854. The London Times has long been part of the World Order, that William was the first of his kind is quite significant.

NOTES

1. Michels, Robert. *Political Parties: A Sociological Study of the Oligarchical Tendencies of Modern Democracy*. (orig. 1915) reprint: New York: Free Press, 1962, p. 70.
2. This subject is very controversial. One of the few books even willing to touch the subject in a scholarly biblical manner is Crawford, Jarah B. *Last Battle Cry, Christianity's Final Conflict With Evil.* Knoxville, TN: Jann Publishing, 1986. Although I don't concur with all of Crawford's conclusions, the book shows more than enough evidence to support the point superscripted.
3. Confidential source personally involved with the it.
4. The documentation to show that the drug war is a contrived scheme is extensive. I have chosen to place some of the documentation much further back, but will state that several researchers give seminars exposing it in detail. The Vietnam War was an important part of the scheme and since then some of the recent important laws passed to implement this contrived war are P.L. 99-570, P.L. 100-690, and the Omnibus crime bill in 1991.
5. Marilyn Ferguson, New Age writer, states in her famous book *The Aquarian Conspiracy*, p. 90, 'LSD gave a whole generation a religious experience.' But chemical satori is perishable, its effects too overwhelming to integrate into everyday life. Non-drug psychotechnologies offer a controlled, sustained movement toward that spacious reality. The annals of the Aquarian Conspiracy are full of accounts of passages: LSD to Zen, LSD to India, psilocybin to Psychosynthesis."
6. Checks by the FBI, and other federal agencies confirmed this.
7. Sutton, Antony. America's Secret *Establishment.* Billings, MT: Liberty House Press, 1986, pp. 5,6,8,35, 66-67, 100, 212, 253.
8. Schmidt, Greenwood. *Encyclopedia of American Institutional Fraternal Organizations.* Westport, Conn.:Greenwood Press, 1980, p. 84.
9. Various Christians have seen Charles T. Russell's KT membership records which are filed in the Mother Lodge in Ireland. The connections between his beliefs and his actions as the WT Society's leader and the Masons is the subject of my previous book *The WT & the Masons*.
10. *Proceedings of the Ninetieth Annual Conclave held in the City of Harrisburg, Dauphin County...* PA: Knights Templars, 1943, p.114.

11. This information is compiled from research from several sources. a. Nevin, Adelaide Mellier. The Social Mirror A Character Sketch of the Women of Pittsburgh and Vicinity during the first Century of the County's existence. Society of to-day. Pittsburgh, PA: T.A. Nevin Publisher,1888, p. 19.; b. The Pittsburg Directory 1878-79 showing Elizabeth the widow of John, and c. John Russell in the 1850 Census, and John Russell's Will.
12. Denslow, 10,000 Famous Freemasons, Vol.4, p.82. William H. Russell is also mentioned in the New Age Magazine (June, 1963) p. 45.
13. This information comes from several sources including a.Boylan, Henry. A Dictionary of Irish Biography. NY: St. Martins Press, 1988, p. 345; b. Ancient Wisdom and Secret Sects, Time-Life, 1989, p.154.
14.
15. Denslow, op. cit., p.80.
16. ibid.
17. ibid.
18. ibid.
19. ibid.
20. Denslow, op. cit., p.82
21. ibid.
22. ibid.
23. Biography of Americans.
24. Sutton, Antony C. America's Secret Establishment. Billington, MT: Liberty House, p. 84.
25. Boylan, Henry. A Dictionary of Irish Biography. NY: St. Martins Press, 1988, p. 345.
26. Mullins, Eustice. The World Order. Staunton, VA: Ezra Pound Institute of Civilization, 1985, p.92.
27. The Fabians.
28. ibid.
29. Boylan, Henry. A Dictionary of Irish Biography. NY: St. Martins Press, 1988, p. 345.
30. Springmeier, Fritz. The WT & the Masons, pp. 9, 215.
31. Author's geneological research in Hopkins Co. TX history.
32. Early Convention Report
33. Evans, Richard L. A Century of Mormonism in Great Britain. Salt Lake City, UT: Publisher's Press, 1937, pp. 34-35.
34. Gibbons, Francis M. John Taylor Mormon Philosopher Prophet of God. Salt Lake City, UT: Deseret Books, 1985, p. 129.
35. Utah Historical Quarterly, 1941, Salt Lake City, pp. 190-211.
36. Boylan, op. cit., p. 344
37. ibid., and Black, George F. The Surnames of Scotland. NY: The NY Public Library, 1962, p. 705.

QUESTIONING OLD ASSUMPTIONS

There was enough circumstantial evidence to lead one to question several assumptions. I began to question the assumption that the W.T. presidents were unconnected to each other. Another supposition that was questionable was that the WT Society did not have a hidden agenda.

C.T. RUSSELL'S STORY

Once there was a Jewish family whose name was Roessel. They lived in early 17th century Germany. They moved to a country called Scotland. There they re-spelled the name Russell. They took on the ways of their new homeland. The English tried to settle Protestants from Scotland in Ireland in order to control the Irish. When the opportunity opened up to go to the Emerald Island (Ireland) with the Scottish settlers who went to the plantation Ulster they went. It is possible, but not known for sure that they learned to know the Rutherfords either in Scotland or Ireland.

Scotland repeatedly appears as the source of much of the religious heresy connected with the Power. That C.T. Russell's family were in Scotland for a period, and also from the German states which seem to be a hot bed for Jewish Satanism may be only a coincidence and then again it might be a clue to understanding the origins of the Watchtower Society.

This Author's previous book *The Watchtower and the Masons* tells the story how the Arian heresy began at the University of Edinburgh, Scotland and spread to the the Presbyterians of the Synod of Ulster. The book gives this Author's reasons for believing that the C.T. Russell's family in northern Ireland were Arian in belief before coming to the U.S. and chances are they were involved with Freemasonry also.

THE ACKLEY CONNECTION

In *The Watchtower and the Masons* the early history of C.T. Russell is given. Charles and his father married two Ackley sisters a number of years after Charles' mother died.

What is an intriguing item is that C.T. Russell's mother's will indicates she owned land in Iowa. A description of that land shows it was north of the town of Ackley, Iowa. It turns out that a man named William Ackley had purchased the land in that area, and had sold it in large part to Scot-Irish settlers of the Presbyterian faith as they were coming to America. At the time C.T. Russell's mother died a town named Ackley had been staked out in 1857, but the Civil War had interferred with construction plans. A Presbyterian congregation had been formed in the area during the early 1860s in the Ackley area, which indicates some settlers had arrived. What connection did the Russells have with the Ackleys years before Charles T. and his father married Ackley sisters?

Who are the Ackleys? Maria Ackley, who was Charles T. Russell's wife, was well-educated and an excellent writer. Interestingly, in the 19th century she believed a socialist revolution was coming. She wrote, "This great revolution has not yet come, but where is the statesman or the intelligent citizen that does not see it coming?" (Russell, Maria. *This Gospel of The Kingdom,* p. 26.) She was the ghost writer and ghost editor for much of her husband Charles Taze's work. Her family was well-off. William Ackley, the land speculator/seller in Iowa, traces his ancestry back to Prence Doane and Elizabeth Godfrey. Elizabeth Godfrey in turn was the great-granddaughter of William Brewster of the Mayflower fame. The Ackleys were Puritans to begin with and seem to have been concentrated in the Connecticut area, and from there their family members moved out into NY and PA. Another Ackley (1832-1881) at that time was Richard Thomas Ackley, a Freemason who worked for the Miller, Russell and Company store in Salt Lake City in 1858 soon after the Mormons built Salt Lake City.

LEADS

Of course, these are all simply tantalizing leads for the investigator but nothing solid. There seems to be much more to Charles Taze Russell than the little that the public has been told. In the next few chapters we will attempt to dispel some of the mystery surrounding the man.

Times were gloomy in the Emerald Island during the 1840s. A potatoe famine drove many to immigrate to a new ~~world~~ land named the New World. The Russell family and the other Scottish families did not have the deep roots ~~that~~ the native Irish had for the land. Earlier in the 1820's, Alexander G. Russell had gone to New York City and onto Orange Co., N.Y. He could ~~tell~~ write them firsthand how good it was. So they moved to America; all that is except Fannie's husband Alexander Harper who stayed behind in Donegal estranged ~~with~~ from his wife.
Their family tree looked like this

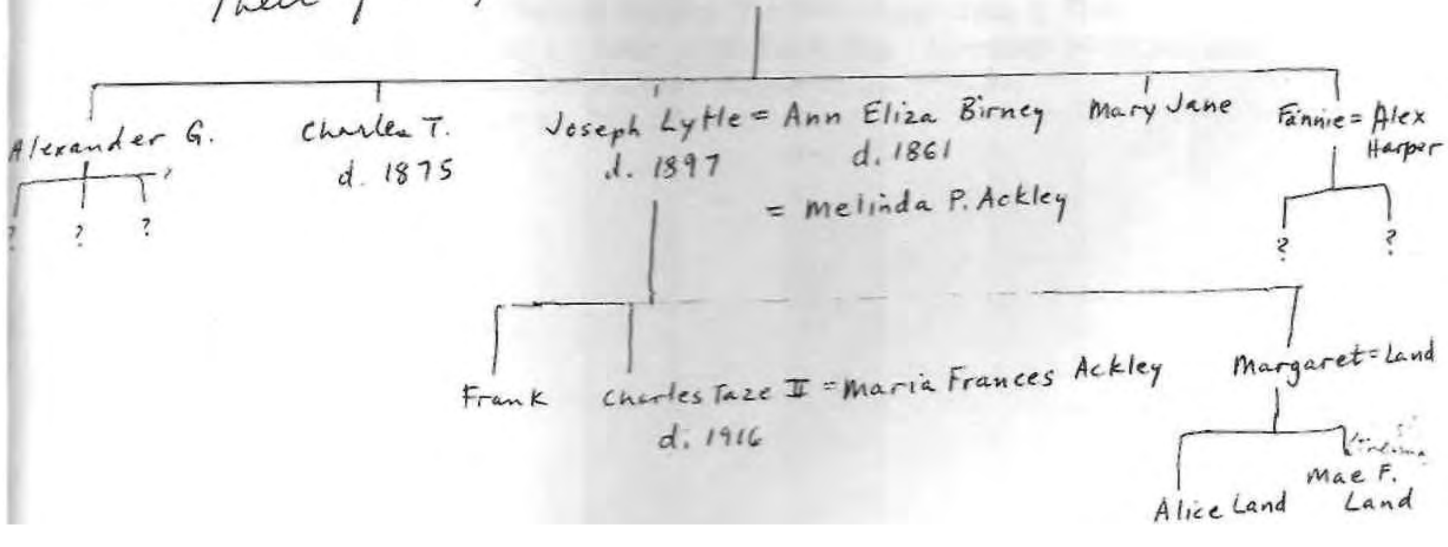
Alexander G.
?
?
?
Charles T.
d. 1875
Joseph Lytle = Ann Eliza Birney
d. 1897
d. 1861
= Melinda P. Ackley
Mary Jane
Fannie = Alex Harper
?
?
Frank
Charles Taze II = Maria Frances Ackley
d. 1916
Margaret = Land
Alice Land
Mae F. Land

Chapter 1.7
God's "Annointed Seed"

In 1852, the Joseph Lyttle Russell family had a baby who they gave the same name to as his uncle had. This baby, named Charles Taze Russell had a brother Frank who was two years older, but Charles ended up the favorite of his father. Later Charles would get a sister Margaret M.

Both Charles T. and his sister Margaret spoke on various occasions that his had been chosen before his birth for the work that he was to carry out.[1] Margaret referred to her brother as the greatest man alive "a giant unmatched." She stated that he had been choosen for his religious work before his birth. Perhaps, Charles' Russell family, and his father Joseph L., (like Joseph Kennedy who had goals for his son to be president) had goals for Charles. If Charles had been encouraged to meet such expectations and had gone forward, then that could account for his sister's great admiration for him. He had fulfilled her father's wishes.

At the Put-In-Bay Convention his sister Margaret had outlined how God planned and chose her brother. First God had planted a seed with the early church. But the seed had laid dormant for centuries. "In due time", she says, the seed of truth grew and was watered according to God's plan. During the Dark Ages the seed of truth was barely kept alive waiting for God's Chosen One to bring it to fruition. When it was time, God "annointed the eyes" of her brother at age 17, and "God's smile of favor rested upon him." Margaret said her brother was the one, the faithful one who God could depend upon, the "one despite the burden and heat of the day" would remain faithful to God.[2]

NOTES

[1] C.T. Russell is noted to have privately admitted his belief that he was chosen for his great work before his birth. The Finished Mystery. The Watchtower Bible & Tract Soc. 1917, p. 53. A testimony speech given by his sister at the Put-In-Bay Convention where she said similar things is commented on the The Laodicean Messenger, pp. 179-180.

[2] The Laodicean Messenger, pp. 179-180.

Chapter 1.8
"To have my throat cut"

The following stories, statistics and facts are revolting and are not something we particularly want to dwell on. However, for the minute it takes to read through the next few paragraphs, this Author wants to point out how prevalent yet secret Satanism is. Whether you the reader are or aren't aware of evil spirits, the facts remain there are countless people down through the ages who have worshipped evil spirits.

On Friday and Saturday nights across the United States members of Satanic Covens are secretly meeting.[1] They also meet on the many Satanic special days. (See the list of their sacred days and the blood sacrifices that they carry out on those days.) An ex-Illuminati member estimates that over 300,000 covens exist in the United States each having 13 or more members. A Black Prince (Black Satanic Magician) estimated 40,000 to 60,000 satanic human sacrifices occur in the U.S. yearly.[2]

This Author had the privilege to talk to someone who had an accidental rare encounter with Satanists in Kansas City and managed to successfully flee to live and tell about it.

Having been a West Point cadet, it especially caught my attention when the West Point Day Care Center was accused of being involved in the ritual abuse of 30 children. The officer requesting an investigation into his 2 1/2 year old daughter's abuse was told to resign his commission. (This is no surprise in several ways.)

Many dozens of day care centers in California are investigated each year for subjecting the children left in their care to Satanic Ritual Abuse. In Los Angeles County 800 allegations of ritual abuse involving 64 schools and preschools and 27 neighborhoods were reported.

The newmen and newspapers are repeatedly coming upon news stories involving Satanism. Most of these stories never get printed, and many stories which do, do not draw conclusions from the obvious clues indicating Satanic activity. An example of this is a news story describing the desecration of a grave by some young people. Certain bones are listed as having been taken, and the story writes the incident off as youngsters playing games. If more were known about Satanism the fact that the left hand was taken would have clued people that Satanism was involved. The left hand, the femur, the Skull, and a particular rib bone are especially important parts of the body. Left hands are associated with Satan-right hands with God. Human sacrifices are always done with knifes in the left hand, except when the Priestesses battle to the death for power.[4]

Many criminal cases showing clues of Masonic involvement have the Masonic clues ignored by the police and the press. Examples abound such as Jack the Ripper's case.

This Author knows personally from when he did farm work that occassionally cattle would be found obviously killed from some type of Satanic ritual. The newspapers often did not report such stories by farmers.

The Chicago Tribune, Sunday, Apr. 27,1986 carried a story "Satan Worship Called Dangerous, Growing" by Eric Zorn. The story told how youth in the area had been involved in attempts to sacrifice humans to Satan, and about a series of mutilation killings in Cook and Du Page Counties in 1981-82 in which 4 men abducted and murdered up to 18 women. The parts of the dead women's bodies were used in Satanic rituals involving cannibalism and sexuality.

Satanic Ritual Abuse Calendar

Jan. 1	New Years Day	Druid feast day
Jan. 7	St. Winebald Day	blood ritual,
Jan. 17	Satanic Revels	sex ritual
Jan. 20	St. Agnes Eve	
Jan. 20		kidnapping, sacrifice preparation
Jan. 26	Grand Climax	sex ritual, human sacrifice (5 wks. & 1 day since equinox)
Feb. 2	Candlemas	sex ritual, one of the witches' Sabbats
Feb. 25	Blood Host or St. Walpurgis Day	blood ritual, animal sacrifice
March 1	St. Eichatadt Day	blood ritual, demon hommage
March 20	Equinox Feast	sex and blood rituals, Sabbat
March 24		16 year old bride of Satan ritual
April 19-25		kidnapping, sacrifice preparation
April 24	St. Mark Eve	
April 25	Grand Climax	female sacrifice (can be a child), sex & fertlity ritual (5 wks. & 1 day since equinox)
April 26-30	high holy days for Beltaine	
April 30	Walpurgis Night or May Eve	blood ritual, one of the greatest witches' Sabbats
May 1	Beltaine, Walpurgis or May Day	blood ritual and/or fire festival
June 21	Solstice Feast	sex ritual, animal or human sacrifice
June 23	Midsummer's Eve	fire festival, most important times for the practice of magick [sic]
July 1	Demon Revels	blood ritual, sex with demons
July 20-27		kidnapping, sacrifice preparation
July 25	St. James Day	
July 27	Grand Climax	sex ritual, human female sacrifice (5 wks. & 1 day since solistice)
July 31 or Aug. 1	Lammas / Harvest	animal or human sacrifice, great Sabbat
Aug. 3	Satanic Revels	sex ritual
Aug. 24	St. Bartholomew Day	fire festival, great Sabbat
Sept. 7	Marriage to the Beast	sex &. blood rituals, female under 21
Sept. 20	Midnight Host	hands of glory / blood ritual
Sept. 22	Equinox Feast Day	sex ritual
Oct 23-30		kidnapping, sacrifice preparation
Oct 29-31 or 31	All Hallows' Eve	blood ritual, fire festival, great Sabbat, believe the dead return to earth this night
Nov. 1	Halloween	sex ritual
Nov. 4	Satanic Revels	sex ritual
Nov. 11	All Hallows' Eve	the ancient date, celebrated by some groups
Dec. 16-23		kidnapping, sacrifice preparation
Dec. 21	St. Thomas Day	fire festival, great Sabbat
Dec. 22	Solistic Feast Day	sex ritual (also burial ritual for some groups)
Dec. 24	High Grand Climax	blood ritual

In addition to the above dates, the following dates should also be added:

year 2009	Feast of the Beast	year long celebration, occurs every 28 years
	Good Friday	passion, mock crucifixion, male sacrifice only
	Holy Saturday	male or female sacrifice
	Easter	male, female, adult or child, sacrificed, followed by three days of chanting
	the survivor's birthday	highest of all days for that individual

The sabbath, from sunset Friday to sunset Saturday is also observed. Astrological events like full moons and eclipses are also causes for "celebration."

This is a compilation of 6 different versions of SRA calendars. It is highly unlikely that any one SRA survivor would have been abused on all the above dates. However, most SRA survivors, irregardless of the group they belonged to, were abused on the following dates: April 26-May 1, June 21, October 31, and December 22 & 24. Many survivors are also affected one to two weeks prior to the celebration of any major ritual as this is the time for preparation rituals leading up to a major event.

In Mexico across the Texas border a Satanic group which sacrificed people recently managed to splash across the headlines and television screens. Even though the news media is careful not to give the full ramifications in such stories, and is reluctant to carry these stories, the stories still can't be totally suppressed.

Two points have been introduced, that Satanism is widespread, and that our awareness of its activity is very slim due to its extreme secrecy and poor news coverage.

DEMONIC DEPRAVITY

The Satanic Skull and Bones Order has initiation rites which include the candidate lying in a coffin and relating their sexual exploits. Another part of the ceremony involves wrestling in a manure pile.[5] This is the type of degenerate activity Satanism is well known to draw people into. One of the top Christian researchers in demons, and author of two excellent books on Satanism and demons Merrill F. Unger writes, "People who deal in the occult are often found to be immoral. Men and women who abandon themselves to immorality reach a point where God gives them up, in the sense of restraining Satan and demonic power from them, so that they are abandoned to the degrading depths of immorality and are shamelessly reduced to actions that even animals avoid (Romans 1:26-32; cf. Revelation 9:20, 21)."[6]

ROLE OF DEMONS IN STARTING RELIGIONS

Hinduism is replete with many gods and many superstitions. It has a deep-rooted tendency toward mysticism, and derives much of its power from demonic activity. Some of the Holiest men of Hinduism are deranged men who run around on all fours like animals. This Author has personally seen the total demonic degradation of the human by Hinduism all in the disguise of making the person spiritual.

Primitive religions are as a rule full of magic and the worship of evil spirits. These evil spirits are feared, ceaselessly placated, and slavishly worshipped.[7]

The polytheism of the Mesopotameans, the Sumerians, Assyrians, the Persians, the Babylonians are full of demons from the earliest of historical records. Demonism is the dynamic behind the magic and spiritual powers of these groups' religion.[8] The Caananite, Egyptian, Greek, and Roman gods relate to the Babylonian gods in character and nature, and are also demonic. All kinds of magic, immorality, human sacrifice, astrology, etc. came to be practiced

2 Page CHART
the SATANIC HIERARCHY

BASIS FOR CHART: This chart has been developed from charts by Ex-Satanists, it also is colloborated by information received from many historical sources. Historical information describing the hierarchies and power structure of demonology are worldwide. Although differing in details, it is clear that multiple levels of demonic authority have been experienced by people.

LEVEL A. SATAN AND RULING SPIRIT PRINCES- The ruling spirit princes are widely known among Satanists. Many of the ruling princes go by several names, as do many of the Satanists. Some of the ruling princes are still referred to by names they used in ancient Babylon and ancient Egypt.

LEVEL B. DEMONS- The highest ranking Satanists teach their children that the demons are aliens from other planets. Within the Satanic covens one variety of demons looks like E.T. (but also can have more hair) are common and they serve as guardians. Also a grey type of demon with almond eyes associated with UFOs is also working closely with the high ranking Satanic Illuminati. The first rumblings of Satanic plans to use a mock alien invasion from outer space to unite the world under Satan's rule were given to the Satanists in the 19th century, perhaps at a Feast of the Beast in possibly 1868. After the next Feast of the Beast 28 years later, UFOs began appearing in large numbers in the USA esp. Calif. H.G. Wells novel War of the Worlds was published in serial form the following year too. By 1917, the secret occult fraternities show signs of working toward creating this artificial alien invasion. The UFO phenomena is accompanied with a. repeated accounts by abductees and contactees that man has failed to advance morally as rapidly as he has technologically, and that these aliens will give mankind or the elite of mankind both advanced technology and advanced morality. The secrets of the galaxies- not just ancient mysteries but the mysteries of the ages- will be given to our elite free by these aliens (actually demons), b. mankind is on the verge of a great evolutionary leap forward, but also faces an Armageddon. Demons which appear manage to come in all sizes and shapes. There is a munchkin variety called elves, lepricans, or menihunis. There is a large giant variety too. The spirits are assigned various tasks, and are often grouped in 4's, 7's, or 13's.

LEVEL C. PRINCIPALITIES & POWERS- These forces are akin to "school spirit" or the power that a rampaging crowd has within itself. These powers of synergy are carefully manipulated by the Satanic forces. These energies produce a Zeitgeist -a spirit or fad of the times. Peer pressure is a form of such power. These power structures are known and manipulated by the Satanic forces.

LEVEL D. GUARDIANS - These Nephalim (half men - half demon) are to be found distributed throughout all the levels. They are the goon squads, the enforcers, the Sargeant-at-arms, and have rank according to the level they operate on.

LEVEL E. ILLUMINATI - Illuminati members depending upon their groups have various levels themselves. Their knowledge of Satan's organization depends upon which group they are in and which level they are at, most usually they may have only that knowledge needed to function at their level. Illuminati members have their name written in blood by a quill pen into a book. The various factions of Illuminati rule the world as the Kingpins in politics, finance, porn, drugs, communications, and religion in preparation for the Anti-Christ (Kashema) to take his throne, and rule with rest of the Satanic trinity of the Beast, and the False Prophet. This level includes the Grande Druid Council, and the 13 highest Satanic families. Various branches have their own terminology and rules for their lower levels which are the following pattern.

LEVEL F. BRIGADES- SISTERS OF LIGHT/ ASMODEUS -These are the Mothers of light, the overseers of power. Training for these Illuminati begins at age 11. Coronations for a Queen in the Mother of Light is at 14 years old.

LEVEL G. REGIMENT- This level is led by a Grande Master/Matriarch. Regiments are divided up into various levels of groupings of covens into companies and sub-regiments led by captain and major-types. Rings are worn by various levels.

LEVEL H. COVENS- Basic low level group (similar to an Army platoon) containing 13+ witches with a Priest or Priestess as an officer. Most covens are extremely well kept secrets. A few show temples like Anton LeVey's Temple of Satan are put on for the public's consumption.

NOTES:

Alan K. Russell put together The Collector's Book of Science Fiction by H.G. Wells which gives the information about the Pearson's Magazine serial publication of H.G. Well's War of the Worlds.

Interestingly not only do Masonic publications indicate a Satanic trinity, and Occult and Magic publications describe this, but the Christian Scripture's book of Revelation 20:10 (et. al.) also refers to the Satanic trinity of the Beast, False Prophet, and Satan.

According to the Masonic book An Interpretation of Freemasonry by Mason Martin Wagner, p. 97, the name Solomon which is used by Masons so frequently is actually a Sun-God trinity, "This name Solomon is not the Israelitish king. It is name in form, but different in its meaning. It is a substitute which is externally like the royal name. This name is a composite. Sol-om-on, the names of the sun in Latin, Indian, and Egyptian, and is designed to show the unity of several god-ideas in the ancient religions, as well as with those of Freemasonry." If Wagner, and ex-Mason McQuaig who also claims this is the case are accurate, and this view was known in Elizabethan England, then Solomon's temple that the Masons are building ends up to be nothing other than Lucifer, the light-bearer's temple. [end of Satanic Hierarchy Chart]

under these systems. Another example from another angle, the cloven hoofed Greek god Pan from who was derived the English word "panic" is a carbon copy of what ex-Satanists claim Satan looks like.

In Shintoism all kinds of deities and spirits are conjured up, and all kinds of occult practices including divination, fortune-telling, spiritism, magic, and conjuring are practiced.

In Taoism, which is polytheistic, all kinds of magic, divination, charms, dealings with demons, geomancy, and fortune-telling are practiced.

Buddhism exists in many forms. This Author lived in Nepal and can personally testify that Buddhists in Nepal and Tibet as well as other Asian lands have many superstitions, do practice all the occult practices, and they live in fear of demons which are placated.

Confucianism was started strictly as a philosophy, not as a religion and does not concern itself with the spirit realm. By default then most Confucists must learn of the supernatural from Taoism which most of them practice. Taoism is very demonic.

Rabbinic Judaism is based on the religions of Babylon, not the Old Testament as most people especially Christians incorrectly assume. The Kabballa and the Zohar of the Jews are the fundamental books that most occult, magic, and Satanic groups base their actities on. One of the leading well-known Satanists and a magician E. Levi wrote in his book Transcendental Magic, "All truly dogmatic religions have issued from the Kabalah and return therein. Whatsoever is grand or scientific in the religious dreams of the illuminated, of Jacob Bohme, Swedenborg, Saint-Martin and the rest, is borrowed from the Kabalah; all Masonic Associations owe to it their secrets and their symbols."[9] (Bold added)

A BIZZARE DISCOVERY

One of the strangest things for this Author was to continue running into evidence that seems to indicate Charles Taze Russell, the man who started the Jehovah's Witnesses' Watchtower Society, was secretly an important Satanist. Lest the reader devalue the evidence, permit this Author to state that the evidence came in first before I came up with my theory that Russell was an important Satanist, and not vice-versa.

Some of the outstanding clues are:

a.) C.T. Russell was definitely a Mason, yet he puts up some great smokescreens in his writing concerning his membership.

b.) C.T. Russell's Bethel staff became concerned about his occultic activities and required him to take an oath forswearing any further occultic activities.

c.) In my previous book The Watchtower and the Masons, I study 35 parallel beliefs that Russell had with Masonry. I spent a page per parallel. These 35 are not in any way inclusive, Russell had many other identical ideas to what the Masonic lodges propogate.

d.) Various items from magic were part of Russell's religious beliefs including healing handkerchiefs, phrenology, the Winged-Sun-Disk, Enochian Magical planes, etc.

e.) Russell's family's possible Illuminati links, and his wife's possible connections with a family line of Satanists.

f.) Russell's apparent secret Rosicrucian membership with the Quakertown, PA group of Rosicrucians, as revealed by the pyramid he ordered erected, his use of the Winged-Sun-Disk, and his cremation three days after his death.

g.) Russell owned a cemetary in Pittsburgh. Leading Satanists try to own cemetaries for several reasons. First, it facilitates the disposal of human sacrifices which are buried in pieces below the fresh holes dug for someone else's burial. When the casket is placed in the hole, it would be rare for anyone to dig below the casket level ever again. Second, magic power is associated with cemetaries. The spiritual power of the dead is pulled up by making a circle of light over them then within the circle a naked Satanist lays. Third, specific bones are sought such as the skulls and left hands. Left hands are preserved in order to hold candles for certain ceremonies.

h.) Contacts from various places today indicate that the modern Watchtower Society is working with the New World Order. This implies that at some point the Society began cooperating with the New World Order. Russell seems to be the likeliest starting point.

UNDERSTANDING CHARLES T. RUSSELL

As with all occult organizations a veil of secrecy is maintained by requiring initiates to take secrecy oaths on penalty of death. As in Witchcraft, Masonry repeatedly demands secrecy oaths at every new level. Charles T. Russell began participating in this secrecy when he took the Entered Apprentice (first Masonic degree) oath on penalty of mayhem and violent death, "I...do hereby and hereon most solemnly and sincerely promise and swear that I will always hail, ever conceal and never reveal any of the arts, parts or points of the secret arts and mysteries of ancient Freemasonry which I received, am about to receive, or may hereafter be instructed in..."

NOTES

1. Confidential interviews with ex-Satanists.
2. Interview by Dr. Al Carlisle with a Black Prince recorded in Stratford, L. Satan's Underground, p. 144.

3. Stratford, ibid, p. 199.
4. Confidential interview with ex-Illuminatus.
5. Schrag, John, art. "Skeleton in His Closet", Willamette Week (Sept 19-25, 1991), p. 10.
6. linger, Merrill F. Demons In The World Today. Wheaton, IL: Tyndale House Pub., 1971, p. 28.
7. For study of this cf. Codrington, R.H. The Melanesians; Spenser, W.B. and F.J. Gillen. The Native Tribes of Central Australia and The Northern Tribes of Central Australia; Ellis, A.B. The Tshi-Speaking People of the Gold Coasr. Westermarck, E. Ritual and Belief in Morocco; Lowie, R.H. Primitive Religion.
8. Unger, op. cit., p. 152
9. Levi, E. Transcendental Magic, trans. Waite. London: England, n.d. pp. 24f
10. The wording of this quote is taken from ex-33° Mason Jim Shaw's book The Deadly Deception. Lafayette, LA: Huntington House, Inc., 1988. The wording also may be found in Revised Duncan's Ritual of Freemasonry, Part 1, by Malcolm C. Duncan, Behrens Pub. Co.,Danbury, Conn. 1922, p. 30 where the entire Entered Apprentice ritual is given. The Knights Templar magazine (9/1988) p. 21 indicates that a few Grand Lodges have recently experimented with doing away with the blood-curdling oaths on penalty of death, and substituting the use of the more moderate oath on penalty of "expulsion from the Fraternity." This was done as an expedient to raise recruiting levels.

Chapter 1.9
A BLANK CHECK

WHICH EYE OF GOD BLESSED C.T. RUSSELL?

Jehovah's Witnesses point to their success as proof of God's approval, in the same way that communists have pointed to various revolutions to show proof that the broad masses support them.

COLOSSAL SPENDING

During the half century before his death C.T. Russell spent vast sums of money. Russell travelled nearly continuously. His trips took him to Europe frequently and around the world. He often had large entourages accompanying him. The Jehovah's Witnesses, then called International Bible Students or simply Bible Students, gave out enormous quantities of FREE books, tracts, and other things. For instance consider some of the following expenses,

In 1881 the WT issued a 164-pg book Food for Thinking Christians. The cost of printing was born by the WT Society, and for some unknown reason several newspapers picked up the cost of distribution. These small books (now extremely rare) were distributed free. Zion's W.T. in 1881 says that their tract Supplement No. 2 is "for free distribution. Order as many as you can use."[1]

In 1882 the WT magazine (then called Zion's Watch Tower) advertises, "We have plenty of tracts and September numbers, which you can have for free distribution by asking for them."[2]

In 1886, Russell had 300 workers distributing Food for Thinking Christians. 300,000 free tracts were distributed in Great Britian alone. WT literature was given free to the colporteurs.

In 1893, the WT Magazine says "A good colporteur can put into the hands of the people 5 to 6 thousand volumes of Dawn in a year. One with little talent ought to dispose of 3,000 a year."[3] The Dawn books were good looking hard back books with about 370 pages apiece. To distribute such vast quantities of books generally free had to have cost the Watchtower Society plenty. The WT Magazine (Z.W.T) published by the Tower Publishing Co., stated under its title "FREE TO THE LORD'S POOR." For instance, the May 1, 1893 issue states under a first page article "ADDRESSES FOR FREE READING MATTER" that "we are glad to send out matter freely to such." Such refers simply to those interested.[4]

In 1897, there was a mass distribution of 300,000 of the free WT booklet the Bible versus Evolution.[5]

In 1899,948, 459 tracts were handed out by people a half block away from churches in each direction as people came out.[6]

In 1910, Russell had 76 workers at headquarters and paid 2,000 different newspapers to carry his articles. How much money would it take for an unknown person without connections to pay 2,000 newspapers to run their articles? Russell wasn't without connections. In 1910, the German branch ran a $7,340.49 deficit, even though they received much of their literature free, and the British branch came up $9,331.41 short that year, all made up by the Brooklyn,NY headquarters.[7]

Had the gigantic literature giveaways ended yet? In 1913, in a Convention Russell states, "Do you know how many copies of free literature have been distributed by the people of Great Britian this year so far? Eight millions of copies....And I am so pleased to see that many of God's people are rejoicing in the privilege of showing forth His praises. Never mind if it is not customary to go about giving out literature. Never mind if it is not popular to give out religious literature. We have a message and work, and this is our way of preaching."[8]

During all this time period of 35 years, the Watchtower Society had managed to rent such hugh building such as Prince Albert Hall—which by the way is famous for many big Masonic events. Renting the Hall would have ranged in the hundreds of dollars. In 1910 they rented it six times.[9]

WHAT WE HAVE BEEN TOLD

Up to now, no one has contested the explanation that has been provided by the WT Society and their official history. Supposedly, Russell sold his clothing store and financed his activities from the proceeds.

Anyone familiar with printing and shipping knows that the large quantities of material Russell distributed free had to cost in just one year alone more than the proceeds from selling his store. On top of that, Russell had legal fees from repeated court battles, exorbant travelling costs, and a full-time staff to house and feed.

His followers were not required to give up their money to become Bible Students. So where did the money come from? The foreign branches received free literature some of which they sold, and came up short even after some sales and donations. Bear in mind, the WT Society was not efficient as it is today. Today they make their own ink and have the latest equipment to typeset and print with. But back then, at least part of the books Russell printed he paid outside printers to print.

Up to now, it has been stated that Russell was a genius with money. That kind of statement simply clouds what really happened. Russell was not Rumplestiltchen. If he was such a man of finance (and he certainly had the reputation then), it seems hard to picture him sending out his people to stand in front of churches to hand out expensive books free to Christians as they left. A man that loose with his own money would hardly makes a fortune in ten years of running a clothing store. Russell wasn't being careless with his money, because he was not having to finance his operation himself. His backers were obviously quite rich and powerful.

The Greek Orthodox church which jealously guards it turf, has repeatedly accused the Jehovah's Witnesses of being financed by the agents of "International Zionism."[10] This topic is discussed more in chapter 6.

RUSSELL'S FINANCES

It will surprise many people to learn that Charles T. and his father Joseph L. were quite poor in 1870. They boarded and their store was rented to them. In 1870, they were not involved in religion yet, and between the two of them they had not a single piece of property. Joseph's personal belongings were $2,000.[11]

Actually, they were doing fine, considering Joseph had left Ireland during the Potato famine, and had left owing his brother-in-law money.[12]

The first good financial break was when Charles T. Russell's uncle by the same name died Dec. 1875. His father inherited $1,000.[13] Because his father and him were in business together, this was a real boost. According to court testimony, Russell had a chain of 5 stores by 1880. Soon Russell invested in oil in Butler Co. and his father and him opened a scrap metal business in 1882.[14] They closed the men's furnishing business in 1883.

Charles bought out his father, and when his father died in 1897, his will reveals that he had 3 houses and lots in Allegheny, PA. a house and 3 lots at Farfron Springs, FL. along with another 25 acres, 160 acres in Polk Co.,FL and stock in the Carlin Co. Besides that he had shares of stock in the Railway and Dock Construction Co. of NYC which C.T. Russell inherited.[15]

Because C.T. Russell's wife divorced him in 1897 Russell hid his money so that his ex-wife would not be able to get any support, in court, C.T. Russell would not honestly state his holdings even under oath. A Reverend J.J. Ross investigated on his own and discovered that Russell had lied under oath. Russell was a stockholder in the Pittsburgh Asphatum Co. which later became the Calif. Asphatum Co. which was the organizer of the Selica Brick Co. Russell also had controlling interest in the Brazilian Turpentine Co. located in Pittsburgh, a cemetary in Pittsburgh. & the U.S. Coal & Coke Co. with capital of $100,000.[16] After having lied in court, Pastor Russell had to make a clean breast of his lies when the Reverend Ross confronted him in court with the facts and the charters of some of Russell's companies.[17]

Russell also had money invested in timber limits. Russell had just secretly purchased silver mines in Nevada, and had gone out to check them out on his western trip when he died.

In 1874, when C.T. Russell began his religious meetings, he also began buying property in Allegheny. He bought again in 1874, 1884, 1885 (two properties), 1889 (four properties), in 1890 (five properties), 1892, 1894, 1896, 1897 (two properties), and four more properties after the turn of the century in that area alone in his own name.[18]

Further, the WT Society which he had control of had ownership of numerous properties.

Russell had control (99% of the snares) of the U.S. Investment Co.,Ltd. which in turn held 38 houses and lots in Binghamton, NY, several lots in Tacoma, WA, a farm near Rochester, NY, a house and lot in Buffalo, NY, a farm in OK, 100 lots in TX, a house and lot near Pittsburgh, and 5,500 acres in KT.[19]

By the way, the original owners of U.S. Investment Co. were John A. Bohnet (5 shares), Ernest C. Henninges (5 shares), and C.T. Russell (990 shares).[20]

The popular story is that Pastor Russell gave all his money to his great crusade and died a poor man, leaving his poor wife (the WT Society claims they were only seperated--the divorce papers say otherwise) with only $200.[21] The court records show a very rich man indeed. And most of Russell's money came in after he started up his Watch Tower Society.

THE ENIGMA REMAINS

Here is a man that starts a religion from scratch. He is busy travelling, writing and talking almost full time. He is well off but not a millionaire. After starting his religion, he spends millions on giving away free literature, and invests perhaps millions in gold, silver mines, government bonds, oil fields, property, and stocks in companies. There has never been a real analysis of C.T. Russell's finances, and his WT Society.

Russell was involved in several financial scams also. He lost in court.

WHOEVER FINANCED RUSSELL HAD BIG PLANS FOR HIS SOCIETY

Russell's WT Society was financed by some heavyweights. The history of the WT Society gives evidence that the power to bring in a one-world-government financed Russell. The WT Society has been a proxy for the One-World New Order to accomplish certain goals. Unfortunately, the JWs "in the trenches", have not known how they have been used. JWs brought upon themselves all kinds of persecution when Rutherford announced to them that the angels had revealed that all national flags were the " devil's banner." On page 44 of Uncovered Rutherford states "Flag saluting is in direct violation of God's law." Individual JWs had to suffer first in order to bring the issue of flag saluting before the Supreme Court. It would have looked bad for the Masonic Lodge to openly support the issue, but the WT Society was accomplishing a goal that they, the Masons had determined in advance. So the populace hated the JWs, and the Masons could continue putting out Patriotic material for public consumption, although in their own literature, they had clearly marked Nationalism for destruction.

J.P.Morgan, the Rothschild's representative in the United States, set up a trust fund to unite the various Christian denominations. Russell praises this in his Jan. 1, 1911 WT, pp.1-4 (WTR p.4735), "Mr. Morgan's well-known business capacity, exhibited in connection with financial trusts, encourages many to believe that he will accomplish the desired end in connection with the movement. More and more all denominations are craving a religious trust or federation and are becoming more and more willing to sacrifice doctrines and principles formerly held dear, in order to accomplish the federation....Evidently this federation is near at hand; the Scriptures have long foretold the Federation, as we have been pointing out therefrom for thirty years. It is to us one of the special signs of our day, one of the special indications marking the end of the Gospel age and the inauguration of Messiah's kingdom."

Here is a trust fund set up to pay denominations to federate, and here is Russell saying this is fulfillment of Scripture.

"Our message was to the Jews as Jews..."

In 1910 and 1911, Jews flocked to hear a Christian preacher. His message at St. Louis (June 11-12, 1911) was "Zionism, the hope of the world."

This fatherly figure of a preacher, the likes of which the Jews had never seen before, was C.T. Russell. And he captured many of the Jews' attention if not their hearts.

They flocked to his meetings. Four thousand Jews listened to this Christian preacher at New York City's Hippodrome on Oct. 9, 1910. Later in London 4,600 went to the Royal Albert Hall (site of many large Masonic gatherings) to hear him, and 800 at the Shoreditch Town Hall. 1,200 Jews came at Manchester, 1,400 Jews turned out at Glasgow, Scotland, and another 5,000 at Cincinnati, OH.

What captured their hearts? Russell sums up his hippodrome message, "We were not preaching Jesus to them. Our message was to the Jews as Jews, from Is. 40:1,2, Comfort ye, comfort ye my people." [22]

Russell's repeated assurances that he wasn't proselytizing the Jews achieved their goal to calm the fears of wary Jews. Further, Russell had a radical message for his time, Zionism. Russell was a Zionist before the word existed.

Russell's Zionism

In 1880, Russell began to predict that the Jews would return to Palestine.

He wrote an article "God's Message of Comfort to the Jews" telling the world that God had promised the Jewish nation would be restored. This article was made into a 32 page Bible Student tract around Sept., 1881, and reprinted again in tract and newspaper-article forms in Dec. 1887. One source also says the booklet was put out in 1912. This Comfort for the Jews is not to be confused with Rutherford's later book in 1925 by the same title.

Russell's third book, Thy Kingdom Come, spends its entire 8th chapter on "The Restoration of Israel."

His prophecy about the Jews returning to Israel are, in this Author's estimation, his most accurate. The others failed. This prophecy goes unmentioned by today's WT because it clashes with their present light that the nation of Israel is not in God's plan.

Russell applauded as he saw his predictions on Zionism starting to happen. Russell advertized Dr. T. Herzl's lauching of Zionism. Russell published a Yiddish paper Di Stimme, which circulated in Europe and Russia. With Jewish help it was circulated worldwide. It was especially popular in Poland.

The WT Society collaborates with Jewish groups

After Russell's death, and while Rutherford, the second WT president was confined in a Federal Penitentiary, the WT headquarter shifted back from Brooklyn to Pittsburg. The Watchtower magazine on Sept. 1, 1918 prints a revealing letter from the men in Pittsburgh who were running the Watchtower Society. The letter equates the Watchtower Society with the Jewish Zionist movement. Whether the two are actually the same or not, it is evident from this article, that the Watchtower leaders were not concerned that the Society and the Zionist movement be identified together.

"On Saturday and Sunday we had the pleasure of hearing our dear Brother Thorn expound the further unfolding of God's plan. He spoke of the restoration of the Jews to their land, called the attention to the significance of their Passover Supper coming the day following ours, and also to the significance of the opening date of the of the recent

Zionist Congress in Pittsburgh, June 22nd, the day following a most memorable day in the history of our Society. Note how in this wonderful sequence of events the ceremonial and governmental features of the movements effected have been kept seperate and distinct. This Congress accomplished more than did the former twenty Zionist conventions put together..."(WT 1 Sept '18, p.275)

It has not been a total secret that Jewish groups were associated with C.T. Russell.

"...Russell interviewed a large number of Jewish notables and leaders who came to visit him at the central offices of the Witnesses in Brooklyn."[23]

Some like the Jewish editor of the Boston Jewish Advocate, Jacob de Haas, a Hassidic Jew and prominant member of the Munich Zionist meeting on Aug. 25, 1897, felt Russell had identical religious beliefs to his.

Another Jew, Raymond G. Jolly, states about his meeting with Russell, "I was very much impressed with this godly man..."[24] So much so that Jolly joined Russell's movement, along with many other Jews. Numerous Jews would become prominant figures in the Watchtower Society including Paul S.L Johnson, John J. Hoefle, and Olin R. Moyle. Many with Jewish heritage would also find Russell's movement attractive such as Frederick Franz and Nathan Knorr. Early lists of Bible Students show that people of Jewish heritage may have made up to 20 percent of Russell's movement. This Author gives that figure, not as a statistic, but as one of the many factors that lead him to conclude that Jews joined Russell faster than the general population.

Jews referred to Russell as a "great friend of the Jewish people."[25] And Russell did love them, even those who were secular humanists, "I feel great sympathy for the Jews in their unbelief..."[26]

When the Berlin Conference in 1878 proposed a Zionist solution to the Jewish question, Russell threw together a hodge-podge of scripture to show that this event in 1878 had to be the beginning of the "Millenial day." This Millenial day would then progress to the restoration of the Jewish Kingdom in 1914.[27] Indeed, one of the plans to restore the Jewish bloodline of David with a united Europe with the aid of the European Freemasons was scheduled for 1914, but was delayed due to World War I.[28]

One of the undeniable leaders of the Jewish people were the Rothschilds. Pastor Russell wrote the Rothschilds several letters, one of which will be quoted, and the importance of the Rothschilds will be discussed later in chap. 3.3.

The B'nai B'rith finances Russell

The B'nai B'rith was behind Russell's start. Before explaining who the B'nai B'rith was and why they supported Russell let's look at some of evidence of the cooperation.

Edith Starr Miller, a researcher into international politics and the causes of social unrest, who managed to position herself in amongst various important people, came upon "irrefutable evidence" of the bewildering drama of a conspiracy between various organizations. She writes that the B'nai B'rith was responsible for getting Russell started.

Frank Goldman, both a member of the Order (as the B'nai B'rith is known) and a Mason, escorted Pastor Russell by car to the Hippodrome for his two hour talk. Jewish financiers had by the way rented the Hippodrome for Russell. After Russell finished his talk, the Zionist anthem "Rosh Hoshkana" was played. Frank Goldman went on to become the President of the B'nai B'rith.

Interestingly, the B'nai B'rith points out in their Los Angeles B'nai B'rith Messenger[29] their close affinity,

"The Jews themselves are Jehovah's Witnesses. In due time, according to prophecy, Jerusalem will be the capital of the world and Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, Moses, and other Ancient Worthies' will be resurrected and form the nucleus of God's Kingdom on earth. This was the understanding of Pastor Russell from his studies of the prophecies, and he so taught during his long ministry."

Zionism actually encompasses Russell's vision for the establishment of a universal Israel, with Jerusalem as world capital. For instance, Yigal Aldon at the United Nations on Sept. 30, 1975 speaking for the nation of Israel (and therefore in a sense Zionism & Jews worldwide) defines Zionism, "Zionism is, in sum, the constant and unrelenting effort to realize the national and universal vision of the Prophets of Israel." A national homeland is not enough, the universal kingdom the Talmud says is to be Israel's millenial kingdom is their goal.

The Watchtower Society distributed a Yiddish periodical Di Stimme (The Voice) all over the world.[30] It was especially attempted to place it Russia, to motivate Russian Jews to emigrate to Palestine. Because the paper was ostensibly Christian it's distribution came under less restrictions than Jewish literature.

The Watchtower Society offered to supply the Di Stimme periodical to anyone "in any quantity—free."[31] There seems to have been no bottom line to the financial backing of the WT Society.

The same year that the offer was made to supply the Yiddish paper to anyone "in any quantity—free", the WT Society's account books claimed a $22,415.93 deficit. "We doubt not this indebtedness will soon be cancelled; nevertheless the fact that it is nearly double the shortage of last year cautions us that we must to some extent put on the 'brakes.' " (WTR 1911,p.4936)

So how does the Society show caution and put on the brakes? Does it stop printing and distributing millions of pieces of free Zionist literature? No. They have subtly bilked their readers for more donations, but the pace of the free giveaway of Zionist literature worldwide doesn't abate. The reason for this is given away in the WT of Jan. 1, 1911, p. 4 which quietly reveals that funding came from Jewish sources. The distribution of Di Stimme was aided "...by Jewish Journals interested in the message..."

Secret backers have always been the secret to Russell's success. In 1882, Russell tells readers, "...a brother who has already contributed largely guarantees any debts incurred, to the amount of one thousand dollars in excess of receipts."

Although there are reports of anonymous donations every now and then of amounts like $9,000 and $1,000, the real underwriting must have been almost a blank check when one examines the WT Society's activities.

Further, the ease with which Russell visits, works with, and writes Jewish leaders indicates a close relationship.

EVIDENCE OF RUSSELL'S JEWISH HELP STANDS IN COURT

Isn't the evidence that the B'nai B'rith helped Russell's Watchtower Society circumstantial? It wouldn't hold up in court would it?

Indeed, it has held up in court.

A swiss physician, Dr. Fehrmann, at a public meeting on Jan. 21, 1924 upset some people by asserting the B'nai B'rith and the International Jews had contributed large financial sums to the "Ernst Bibel Forscher" (that is in Swiss German the Earnest Bible Students which was the name the Russellites— that is the International Bible Students, the followers of the Watchtower Society were known as.) R.G. Binkele of Zurich charged Dr. Fehrmann with slander on this particular point, and the Dr. in a libel court of law sucessfully defended his statement.

Dr. Fehrmann brought forth a number of proofs. One letter entered as evidence was a Masonic letter from high Masonic sources dated 27 December, 1922. The letter was of unquestionable genuineness and stated, "We give them (the Earnest Bible Students), in the usual indirect ways, much money through a number of brothers, who during the war made a pile. It won't hurt their fat pocket books. They are Jews."

Why would Jews support the Christian Pastor Russell?

Obviously today the WT Society would be a good investment. And for someone who was trying to destroy the power of Christianity, the WT Society is very divisive. The Society targets minorities and the lower classes so it isn't quite the threat to someone in the power structure. But what about then, in Charles T. Russell's day?

Not much attention has been given this question.

The prominent Jew, Jeane Kirkpatrick, who was the U.S.'s ambassador to the U.N. described Russell's Zionism as "a neglected chapter" and concerning his contributions to Zionism, she describes Russell a "neglected man."[32] Such praise is significant. Kirkpatrick is a CFR member, in favor of a One-World-State, and is often praised in the CIA's National Review.[33] Her husband was involved in intelligence in key operations.[34]

Pastor Charles T. Russell preached Judaism with a veneer of Christianity. Perhaps no one else has more successfully passed off Jewish thought as Christian, than C.T. Russell.

Consider what Russell taught. (Actual quotes documenting these points follow later.) Russell said:

1. the Jews would be the principle rulers during the Millenium.
2. That the nations of the world would have to become Jews during the Millenium.
3. That God would bless the world through the Jewish people
4. Russell advised the Jews to go to their Rabbi's to learn how to protect themselves from Christian teachings.
5. Russell told the Christians they should stop trying to convert the Jews, for it was against God's will to convert them
6. and that it was God's will for Jews to remain Jews.
7. Russell promoted Zionism, and frequently reprinted articles from leading Jews in the WT.

What does Russell do for Christianity? Everything sacred to Christianity is attacked.

8. Russell says the Messiah is a collection of Jews, with maybe a few gentiles included.
9. Russell says the Protestant and Catholic Bibles are inaccurate, and that only he could understand the Bible. The WT Society would carry this to its logical conclusion, they produced their own Bible called the New World Translation, which true to its makers

preconceived ideas, tries to erase the deity of Jesus Christ.
10. Christians are the most guilty and horrible of people.
11. God has not tried to save the world of mankind.

If Russell had labelled himself a Jew, he never would have been listened to by the Christians. But by labelling himself the most orthodox of Christians, many Christians bought into his message which was the same message some of the most rabidly anti-Christian Jews have advocated for centuries.

Let's read some of the documentation on the previous points:

1. Jews will rule the world. After the "times of the Gentiles" ends in 1914 Israel will be restored. The Kingdom of David will be restored. [35] "God has certainly promised a restitution and a glorious future to Isreal in the flesh..."[36] "The channel through which this spiritual and invisible kingdom will operate amongst men will be the ancient worthies of Israel. 'Ye shall see Abraham and Isaac and Jacob and all the prophets in the Kingdom.' In close association with these, first to be recognized will be the Jews, natural Israel."[37] "We are interested in the earthly Jerusalem and the prosperity about to come to it, when, under Messiah's Kingdom, it shall become the capital of the world."

2. Nations must become Jews. God will answer the prayers of the Jews and fight against the nations. Then the Jewish remnant will be restored. The gentiles will go up to Jerusalem from year to year, to keep the feast of tabernacles.[38] "To my understanding, dear friends, the Scriptures are very clear in their statement that this New Covenant will be for Israel only and that all the nations of the world, if they desire to receive the blessings of that covenant, must come into Israel, so that during the reign of Messiah, which will be for 1,000 years, all nations will be pressing into it that they may become members of Israel, and so the nations will eventually come to be a part of Israel, as the Scriptures say—the seed of Abraham, like the sands of the seashore, filling the whole earth—and every one who will not become an Israelite, who will not come into harmony with God, with that divine law, with the New Covenant, will be cut off in the Second Death."[39]

2 & 3. In the New Order the world is blessed through the Jews. "All who would enjoy Divine favor and restitution blessings will gladly gather to their standard...will become Israelites, proselytes, children of Abraham...all who will obey...will be lifted up, up, up to perfection..."[40]

4. Jews should go to their rabbi to learn how to protect themselves from Christian doctrine. "Jews should be taught by their rabbis, and should be able to answer such arguments by showing that 'the wages of sin is death'... God's Word applies to Jews as well as to Christians- "My people perish for lack of knowledge;" This page goes on to say the blessing of the Messianic Kingdom will come first to the Jew. Also Russell states, "So far from endeavoring to bring Jews into any of the Christian denominations, Catholic or Protestant, I would advise the Jews to stand clear of all of them. I seek to point out to the Jew that he has his own Divine promises, which are separate and distinct from those of Christians. God's promises to the Jew are all earthly. The Israelites are all to come back from the state of death under Messiah's glorious Kingdom, which will gradually efface sin

and death from the world..."[41]

5. Christians should not convert Jews. (See quote pt. 8)

6. It is God's will for Jews to remain Jews. "The Jew who ceases to be a Jew ceases to look in the proper direction for the blessings God has promised him."[42]

7. His promotion of Zionism has already been discussed.

8.The Messiah is basically a group of Jews. "The hidden Mystery is that this great Prophet, Priest and King is not a man, but a Son of God on the spirit plane; and further, the great Messiah is composed of many 'members,' of which he is the 'Head.'" Christ is a son not the son and is made up of many people.[43] The church is the Messiah—"twelve thousand for each of the twelve tribes of Isreal..." "This class as a whole is the Messiah..." "Does this make clear my reasons for not wishing to turn Jews into Presbyterians, Baptists, Roman Catholics, etc.? Does it make clear my reason for urging Jews to a preparation mentally, morally and physically for the great work that God has for them to do? I hope so...it is my conviction that the Messianic company, all saintly, will be composed more largely of Jews than of any other nationality."[44]

9. This is discussed in other sections.

10. Christians are the most guilty and horrible of people. "Millions of people are being turned away from faith in a God of Love and from faith in the Bible as His Message by the most monstrous blasphemies of the 'dark ages.' I charge the responsibility of all this against the sects and creeds of Christendom."[45] Christians are the biggest hypocrites in the world.[46]

11. God has not tried to save the nations. (Evil people would be resurrected to learn Judaism in the New Order.) From the beginning, Russell accepted a very Judiastic outlook. In reviewing the 1877 Three Worlds which Russell agreed with although only helped write one finds...

(p. 11)- God has never tried to save mankind. Rather, God gave the gospel to only a select group. God's promises to the Jewish nation are unfulfilled.

(p. 7-8)- Christ, which is a group of the elect, subjugates all the nations in the Millenium with "real subjection" "with a rod of iron."

(p. 12)- "While under the past Jewish dispensation not a Gentile could be saved..."

(p. 13)- God did not make any effort to save mankind, and they have died without the truth. Why? Scriptures tell us that God made it "unlawful to give the children's meat to dogs". Also, says Russell and Barbour, why did Christ command his disciples "Go not in the way of the Gentiles..." "He (God's son) did not come, at his first advent, to save the world;...He did not even pray for the world, 'I pray not for the world.' (John 17 9)."

(p. 14)- "If God has been trying to save the world during the gospel dispensation, He has made as great a failure as during the Jewish Age."

This Author would direct the reader to a 12 part series of articles Russell wrote for the Overland Monthly. Each was entitled "God's Chosen People". The individual articles had titles which dealt with the following issues: how faith was the foundation of Jewish character, how the Jews could revive their faith in Judaism, how Israel had a "double", about the Jubilee of restoration, the Passover, the Sabbath, Yom Kippur, Zionism, Must Jews Become Christians in Order to Receive Divine Favor?, plus three other topics related to Jews.

THE "CHOSEN PEOPLE-STRONG STUFF

The concept that the Jews are the Chosen people who will eventually rule the world forms the basis of Rabbinical Judaism. In the Cabala, even more than the Talmud (and the original Talmud is pretty strong stuff), the concept of world-dominion is even more noticable. The Zohar accepts it as an accepted fact. The Toldoth Noah, folio 63b (de Pauly's trans., I p. 373) states, "the Feast of Tabernacles is the period when Israel triumphs over the other people of the world; that is why during this feast we seize the Loulab and carry it as a trophy to show that we have conquered all the other peoples known as 'populace' and that we dominate them." The Zohar relates that the kings of the world will end by declaring war on the Messiah. But "the Holy One, blessed by He, will display His force and exterminate them from the world." (Zohar, section Schemoth, folio 7 and 9b; section Beschalah, folio 58b -de Pauly's trans., III. 32,36,41,260)

WHAT IS ZIONISM?

A popular misconception among the Goyim (gentiles) is that Zionism is simply a desire of the Jews for a small place to call home. The WT Society itself is aware that Zionism entails more. On page 296 of their tenth Souvenir Report, "Many Hebrews of the United States believe that the whole course of world events is now favorable to the Zionist movement, and that the day is near when their aims will be realized and the Jews, as a united people, will become one of the most powerful factors in the modern world."

But when they needed to still opposition to taking over Palistine from the arabs, the B'nai B'rith told the public, The Jews of neither America nor any other of the democratic lands will return to Palestine.*" At that time (before the state of Israel) the B'nai B'rith sounded like the Jewish people were loyal to the countries they lived in, and harbored no desire to go to Israel.

THE HATIKVAH

The Hatikvah ("The Hope") to return to Eretz Yisrael ("Israel") didn't start with Theodor Herzl, but goes back to the Tenakh (the Hebrew O.T.) But by and large the modern movement has been led by secular Jews along with cultic and occultic Jewish leaders. A secular messianism has also pervaded Judiasm where the modern state of Israel is believed to be the world's Messiah. The one-world-conspiracy has distorted so many people into a deterministic eschatological frame of mind. This mindset is that God's will has preordained in heaven that this state of Israel would be great. Therefore, to oppose it is wicked. Many Christian leaders and Jewish leaders take this one step further and give Israel a blank check to do whatever they want without any moral responsibility. Persecution has fallen on Goyim who have had the audacity to reprint what the Talmud says on conquering the world and Jewish rulership. One dare not criticize the large gay community in Tel Aviv, nor talk about the Jewish prostitutes there, nor talk about the

Mossad running drugs for profit, nor about the terrorism done by Jews to the Palestinians-many of them Christians. One dare not talk about Christian church services being shot up by Uzis, and innocent Christian ministers being beat up by Israeli soldiers.

RUSSELL SAYS THE JEWS ARE SUPERIOR MORALLY & INTELLECTUALLY

Russell preached that the Jews are superior to Christians morally and intellectually. "Judged in this broad, general way, who will dispute that the twelve millions of Jews are not in advance of the average of Christendom intellectually and morally?"[48]

That's quite appropriate for a man who has turned the Messiah basically into a collection of Jews. Russell's hatred for Christianity, could serve the interests of any group bent on Christendom's destruction. The reader will learn more of how these various anti-Christian group relate.

Whether justified or not, many Jews see the source of their problems as Christians. Most of the various groups working toward a one-world government are united in their hatred for Christianity. That fact doesn't automatically mean they are all in collusion, but it is a tell-tale sign of their similar origins. After their collusion is established, the investigator becomes aware it is an important element of their collusion. This Author is reminded of when he visited a synagogue Shabbat (what gentiles call "Sabbath") service, and how his Jewish host clearly lumped all Christians into the category of evil and anti-Jewish. He was not alone, sections of Chicago and New York, would oblige any Christian desiring actual Martyrdom.

The WT Society vilifies Christianity in the fashion the Talmud does, "...with great pomp and glory that unholy system rides upon the backs of peoples. Without the support of the common peoples that wicked system called 'Christendom' could not survive...instead of heeding the message...those constituting the unholy alliance...continue to oppress...The doom of 'organized Christianity' or Babylon is sealed." (WT 10/15/27 p. 312, cf. Babylon the Great, p. 559 and a host of other WT references.)

In contrast, the WT Society doesn't attack the modern Jewish religion, or its adherents, except with mild jabs.

"But what grieves me today is the large scale voluntary assimilation (into Christian society) especially among Jewish Youths." (A modern day follower of Russell, Bible Student Kenneth W. Rawson) [49]

THE HOLOCAUST

Today, men like CBS's Norman Lear (who is into humanism and the New Age) like to blame Christianity for the Holocaust. Lear's "Sunday Dinner" hero Ben is used in one scene to blame Christians for the Holocaust. The WT Society has been accusing Christians of the same for years.[50] The truth is that many Christians opposed the Nazi regime and lost their life for it.[51] The truth is that many Christians risked their lives to save Jews.[52] The truth is that many Christians died in the Holocaust.[53] Even Jewish sources will admit that many of the people rounded up as Jews, were not even Jews.[54] The Nazis preferred to error on side of killing more than needed, rather than not enough.[55] The truth is the Nazis did try a final solution, the Holocaust,[56] and their new religion what is now known as the New Age religion, with its belief in reincarnation helped alliviate any guilt.[57] The Truth is that much of what is shown the public about the

JEWISH KEHILLA

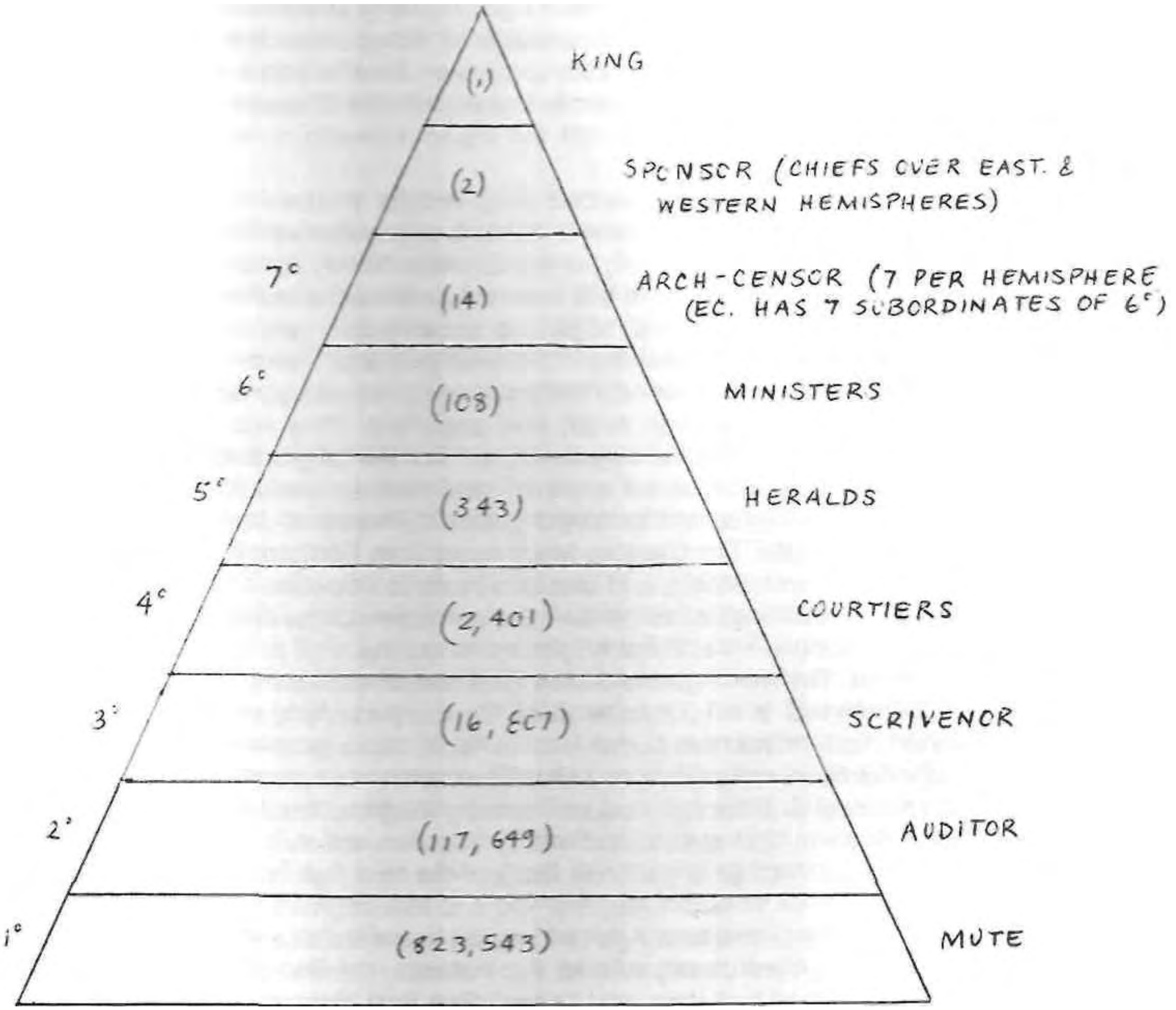
(1)
KING
(2)
SPONSOR (CHIEFS OVER EAST. & WESTERN HEMISPHERES)
7°
(14)
ARCH-CENSOR (7 PER HEMISPHERE (EC. HAS 7 SUBORDINATES OF 6°)
6°
(108)
MINISTERS
5°
(343)
HERALDS
4°
(2,401)
COURTIERS
3°
(16,807)
SCRIVENOR
2°
(117,649)
AUDITOR
1°
(823,543)
MUTE

When reading Jewish books written for Jewish readership this Author has repeatedly bumped into remarks mentioning the KEHILLA. KEHILLA is consistently put into the context of being the organisation that controls life in the Jewish communities. It turns out that the KEHILLA is a secret (at least to the non-Jews) organization that does indeed run Jewish life, and at the top it is run by Satanists.

Holocaust is lies. But how can we honestly evaluate what happened when the Power ruthlessly censors any real investigation into the facts? The truth is that Hitler was financed by international financiers,[58] and that the list of people who have financed the Communists and those that helped Hitler are often the same, for instance Chase Bank, now Chase Manhattan.[59]

The truth is that the religion that the one-world-government conspiracy is going to bring in, the Power behind the New Age religion is responsible for the Holocaust, not Christianity. Be rational and think about such things. Was the Swastika a hindu or a Christian symbol? Did the Masonic Lodges or the Christians use the Swastika as a symbol before W.W. II? The Masonic Lodges and the Theosophic Lodges used it.

TIEING IT ALL TOGETHER

This may be getting quite confusing. Initially, this book describes Russell's belief in a Sun-god, later this book shows Russell, a Jew financed by Jews, was preaching Judaism with a veil of Christianity, and finally this chapter speaks of a New Age religion. Isn't this contradictory? No, and this book will cover all this in due time. Joseph Campbell shows an old synagogue with a picture showing Sun-god worship was part of the synagogue, in his book on Myths.[60] As one gets into where modern day Judaism is derived and what the Talmud and Cabbala are about, an investigator finds that they are a continuation of Babylonian magic and paganism. They are occultic. But then how widespread is the Caballa among the Jews? For the religious elements it is extensive. Judaism has become a cultural and traditional ritual for many Jews.[61] The small group of Karaites, Samaritans, and the larger groups of Messianic Jews (Christian Jews) have rejected the Caballa. The Caballa, which came from Babylon, forms the basis for many if not all the Satanic, Magic, and occultic Fraternal Societies.[63]

Further on, this book will show how the syncretism of the New Age movement has no problem including each of these religious strains, and who, why, and how it was brought it to the West. The New Age movement itself tosses various things together like a tossed salad. I know this is difficult to envision for many readers, perhaps one example will suffice until later. When this Author lived in Nepal, many people were both Buddhists and Hindus. The Hindi world-view can and does accomodate most anything but the Moslem religion and real Christianity. Hinduism is many things to many people. Caryl Matrisciana who also lived in that area of the world, and was active in the New Age movement concurs with this Author in her book God's of the New Age that the New Age is basically Hinduism.

Does that mean the New Age isn't related to the occult and Babylon? Hinduism and Babylon's religion are closely related. For instance, the God Moloch goes by the names Pluto, Saturn, Kali(Hinduism), and Durga. (See Spin diagrams) A whole book could be written on the interweaving of religious ideas between Greece, Egypt, Babylon and India. Such as Hinduism's Shiva relates to Jupiter. From Babylon came Rabbinic Judaism. The speculative Kaballah is pantheistic. The Ancient Mystery schools' wisdom is taught by the Jews today according to "Academies", Jew. Encyc., p.67. Just one more of the many examples of how far reaching the interweaving is, Horus of Egypt (sometimes depicted as an evil adversary in the form of a snake) finds its counterpart in Calyia the Snake God that Krishna, the 8th incarnation of Vishnu, killed.

Zionist James P. Warburg of Kuhn, Loeb & Co. told the U.S. Senate that we were going to get a one-world-government, whether we liked it or not. The only question is, whether world government will be achieved by conquest or consent.[63] Another member of Kuhn, Loeb & Co. the Jewish legal officer Louis Marshall said, "Zionism is but an incident of a far-reaching plan."[6] Russell was fully aware that the Declaration of Independence of the Zionist State (published in The Jewish World, Feb. 9, 1883) said "The great ideal of Judaism is...that the whole world shall be imbued with Jewish teaching, and that in a Universal Brotherhood of Nations-a greater Judaism in fact-all the separate races and religions shall disappear." When one realizes that that Judaism today (aka Rabbinic Judaism, earlier aka Pharisism, aka Babylonian occultism) would like to be world-wide, and one observes the New Age movement is spreading world-wide, what this mean? It is apparent powerful forces are trying to move us away from Christ's teachings.

The question can be raised, is it unfair to put down Judaism's goal of world-wide conquest when Christians envision the world will be entirely Christianized at some point in the future? It depends. If Christians want to conquer the world like during the Crusades, then yes the Christians are subject to censor too. The Talmud doesn't portray a peaceful conquest of the world—but slaughter of the "cattle" gentiles. (The author has in his possession photocopies of several different modern Jewish documents spelling out present day plans to carry out such a ruthless bloody conquest.)

In informing people about the New Age "Aquarian Conspiracy", as New Age writer Marilyn Ferguson calls it, she states on pg. 63 of her book who the people are who are supporting the New Age Conspiracy. "Maverick theologians and members of the clergy pondered "the new spirituality" that rose as churches declined. There were networks of innovative, "transpersonal" educators, caucuses of legislators, and a melding of economists-futurists-managers-engineers-systems theorists, all seeking creative, humanistic alternatives. A few captains of industry and finance. Foundation officials and university programmers, artists and musicians, publishers and television producers. A surprising clutch of celebrities. Scions of Old American Wealth. Ex-political radicals, minus their rhetoric, now in positions of influence." As you read further in this book, you'll learn more about who these people are. The Scions of Old American Wealth can be found in groups like the Skull and Bones Order. The publishers and televisions producers are Jews and Masons. (See other chapters.) Thafs right, the Jews own and operate all three major networks, and the major newspapers and publishing houses. On pg. 367 she states, that the religious backgrounds of a poll she took indicated 20 % of the Aquarian Conspirators were Jewish. What is perhaps not known, is the prominant positions that so many Jews are playing. See the footnote for a list of some of these.[65]

The B'nai B'rith

According to Jewish leader Rabbi Meir Kahne of the Jewish Defense League the Jewish leaders such as Adler, Schiff, Marshall, Seligman, Loeb, and Warburg formed the B'nai B'rith and the ADL. [66]

Actually, although these men were prominant in the B'nai B'rith, the origins of the B'nai B'rith also ties in with the Masonic Lodge. Twelve men on Oct. 13, 1843, in NYC began the Order of the B'nai B'rith.[67] Most of them were Freemasons and Odd Fellows.[68]

Philip Klulznick, B'nai B'rith president (1953-1959), heads a delegation of presidents of sixteen major Jewish organizations meeting with Secretary of State John Foster Dulles in October 1954 on American policy regarding Israel and the Middle East. These cooperative efforts led to the establishment of the Conference of Presidents of Major American Jewish Organizations to coordinate American Jewish policy on Israel.

For the first sixty years the B'nai B'rith was patterned after the Masonic Lodge. The Masonic Lodge had in turn also been patterned to a large degree from the synagogue, with a smattering of witchcraft added. Because they were patterned after the Masons and the Oddfellows, the B'nai B'rith was secret, benevolent, exclusive, and fraternal.[70] In contrast to the Masonic Lodges which were open to all religions and types, the B'nai B'rith admits only Jews.

But in contrast with the Masonic Lodges which are very select in selecting upper crust candidates, the B'nai B'rith accepted men of low social status. In this regard, it was in the fashion of the Oddfellows. This Author believes it was the need to establish a secret Jewish fraternity open to the rank and file Jew, that motivated the establishment of the Order (as the B'nai B'rith is called.)

The founder taking his cue from the Masons billed his fraternal Order as non-religious and non-sectarian. And then in typical masonic fashion at the same time called the Order as "the restoration of the Ideal synagogue, which had ceased to exist."[71]

This gives us a further clue as to Russell's connection to the B'nai B'rith, in that the B'nai B'rith set out to Reform the Jewish religion into the Masonic religion. The B'nai B'rith was associated with Reform Judaism after it was drafted in 1885. Reform Judaism's centers of power were Pittsburgh and Brooklyn, the two cities Russell operated his headquarters from.

BROOKLYN N.Y., JEWISH CENTER OF POWER

Crown Heights Section of Brooklyn is just for JWs but is also the world headquarters of the world's "best organized and most dedicated Jewish organization in the world," the Habad of the Lubavich, at 770 Eastern Parkway. The National Council of Churches reported in 1957 that there were 1,077,000 Jewish synagogue members in Kings Co.,NY and 556,000 in the Bronx.[72]

THE B'NAI B'RITH (THE ORDER) & THE MASONS

The connections of the Order to Masonry are certain. One Mason exposed quite a bit when he wrote about the B'nai B'rith having a made a secret treaty with Masonry.[73] Albert Pike and Armand Levi concluded this secret treaty.

There are numerous cases of the leaders of the B'nai B'rith also being Freemasons. There are also numerous cases of leading members of the Order promoting socialism and communism. An example of this is that the Grand Master of the Order (of the B'nai B'rith) in Russia in 1917 was also a 32 degree Freemason and one of the leaders of the Socialist Revolution.[74]

THE ORDER WINS ITS FIGHT FOR CONTROL

Various Jewish leaders have fought to prevent the B'nai B'rith from capturing control of the Jewish people, but they were not successful. As this book will show the Christians also have not been successful either, for many of the Christian leaders are marching to a Masonic agenda too.

Many of the Rabbis today are members of the Order, which has in the neighborhood of a half million members and has membership all over the world.[75]

One of the Order says, The question of who speaks for the Jews has no single answer. B'nai B'rith has urged its own primacy, first on the grounds of its secular and national character, then, after the ADL's establishment, on the premise that whoever defends American Jews leads them. Since B'nai B'rith has represented a cross-section of Jews, it perceives itself as deserving to sit at the head of Jewry's communal table."[76] The U.S. president recognizes their primacy. And since 1954, has sponsored a Conference of Presidents of Major American Jewish Organizations headed by the B'nai B'rith to coordinate the American government's Jewish policy with respect to Israel.[77]

"A SECULAR SYNAGOGUE"

Those Jews that are tied to the moral values of the Old Testament, are being subverted, and humanism is being promoted. For instance, the B'nai B'rith has promoted all kinds of Jewish education, that has eliminated much of the Jewish religious teaching.[78] The B'nai B'rith in the 1970s began to feel that the seperation of the sexes was an artificial relic to be done away with.[79] The Order in 1913 started the Anti Defamation League (ADL). This group organized long before the Nazi brown shirts, has used tactics on the level of the Mafia. Their radical leaders have repeatedly gone on record as having contempt for all laws, believing in the end is justified by any means.[80] Rabbi Meir Kahane removes all doubt about how dangerous he is in his book The Anti Defamation League. A comprehensive dossier on JDLs bombings, killings and maimings is in the book The Zionist Terror Network. They apparently have power within the Christian ranks, because they are able to mobilize Christians for their causes when they need to.[81] It is believed by many students of Masonry that the B'nai B'rith has issued orders to various Masonic orders. If the B'nai B'rith has some influence on the Freemasons, it would explain why the ADL has influence within the ranks of fundamentalists and liberal Christians.(For more info on this refer to chapter 2.1)

The ADL has been exposed conspiring with the FBI.[82] And its leader Meir Kahane worked for the CIA prior to starting up with the ADL.[83]

JEWS SPEAK UP

People of Jewish heritage have all kinds of opinions. Some have bravely spoken as one Jewish man, "I am anti-Zionist. Jewish chauvinism is no less despicable than other kinds of chauvinism and more despicable than many since it is based on racist ideology. In the dispute between Israel and the 900,000 Arab refugees it had driven from their lands, I support the Arabs."[84]

Jewish writer Kenneth M. Mitzner, in The Wanderer (June 29, 1989) encourages Christians to opose those Jewish forces that are corrupting the morals of this country. He writes, "It was not anti-German to oppose Nazism, nor anti-Russian to oppose Bolshevism. It is not anti-Semitic to oppose the forces within the Jewish community which are waging war against you and your family."

Jack Bernstein, a Jew, tells in his book how corruption, graft, persecutions and dangers are forced upon those Jews who want to be Jewish but not Zionists. Another Jew, Henry H. Klein exposes that the certain Jews are out to control this country and the world no matter what they have to do in his book A Jew Exposes the Jewish World Conspiracy.

SOME FUNDAMENTALISTS FALL UNDER JEWISH INFLUENCE

J. Frank Norris, a Fundamental minister in a letter to another fundamental minister named Swain, reveals that if Rev. Sam Swain will say the proper things he can get financing from the B'nai B'rith.[85] Some of the nominal Christians willing to work with the B'nai B'rith are those of Jewish heritage. The B'nai B'rith magazine itself has written articles about the widespread practice of Jews who have pretended to become Christians.[86]

The B'nai B'rith has sponsored the National Conference of Jews and Christians, and under the auspices of the Order Protestant, Catholic, and Jewish speakers appeared together in the year of 1939 at 10,000 meetings in 2,000 communities in all the U.S. states.[87] While carrying on such conferences, the Order has actively pursued the removal of all Christian books from school libraries, have forced numerous Passion plays to shut down, and threatened Christian ministers for discussing the crucifixion on the radio.[88]

New Testament Scriptures specifically describe the anti-Christ as those denying that Jesus is the Christ.

At one point even the Almighty declared of the Hebrews, "How long will this people provoke me?" But Jesus called his disciples to love, and if the Christian can not love the Jew, and the Jew the Palestinian, and the Palestinian the Jew, how can each of these love God. And if there are men among the Christians who want power, the Christian should follow the example of his Master Jesus Christ, and return good for evil. Those who live by the sword will die by it. Those who live by power will die by it.

Zionism's goal of real estate is not as important as the relationship of each Jewish person to his creator. This author would like to see each Jewish person have spiritual power. The religion that C.T. Russell was helped to create, has taken away from its adherents the most precious legacy of the Jew Jesus Christ. That is that God loves each of his children, and has given them the chance to be his sons and daughters, and to receive the Holy Spirit to guide them.

Notes

I. Zion's Watch Tower 1881 (WTR p.214)

2 Zion's Watch Tower 1882 (WTR p.213?) (pp.2-3 in orig.)

3. Zion's Watch Tower July 1-15,1893, Vol. XIV (p. 194 WTR)

4. Zion's Watch Tower May 1,1893, Vol. 14, No. 9, p. 1 (WTR p.130)

5. Magnani, Duane and Arthur Barrett. Dialogue with Jehovah's Witnesses, Vol. 1, Clayton, CA..Witness, Inc.,1983, p.7 apparently quoting Jehovah's Witnesses in the Divine Purpose.

6. WT 1899, p.226 As quoted pg.40 Jehovah's Witnesses In the Divine Purpose, WTB&TS,

7. WT Jan. 1,1911, pp. 5-7

8. Convention Reports, 1913 Convention, p.442

9. WT Jan. 1, 1911, p.5-6 (WTR p. 4737)

10. New York Times, June 4, 1970 cf. Awake! Nov.22,1976,p.23

11. 1870 Census of Pittsburgh, Ward 4, pg. 98, Line 4,5,6

12. Will of Ann Eliza Birney Russell, this will mentions Joseph's business failure in 1839 and his debt to Thomas Birney.

13. Will of C.T. Russell.Sr.

14. Sweetnam, George. Where Else But Pittsburgh!, Pittsburgh, PA: Davis & Warde, Inc. 1958, p.112.
15. Will of Joseph L Russell
16. Ross, Rev. J.J. Some Facts and More Facts About the Self-Styled "Pastor" Charles T. Russell, Hamilton, Ont.:(self-published), 1920, pp. 31-32
17. ibid, p.31
18. Courthouse Records,Deeds, Allegheny Co.,PA, citations are from numerous volumes and pages.
19. Ross, op. cit, pp. 34-37
20. ibid., p. 35
21. The Divine Plan of the Ages, WTB&TS, 1924, p.8
22. Horowitz, David. Charles Taze Russell, Early American Zionist, p. 69
23. ibid.,p.33
24. ibid.,p.68
25. ibid.,p.71
26. Russell, C.T. Jewish Hopes—Jerusalem Restoration Prospects, Pittsburgh,PA, 1910.
27. Horowitz, op. cit. p.24 ff
28. Read Holy Blood, Holy Grail
29. B'nai B'rith Messenger, Los Angeles (Jan. 15,1971)
30. WT Jan. 1, 1911, (WTR p. 4355)
31. WT Jan. 1, 1911, p. 19 (WTR p. 4743)
32. Horowitz, op. cit. back cover
33. Mullins, Eustice. None Dare To Call Him Traitor.,p.2
34. Mullins, Eustice. The World Order, p. 115.
35. Russell, Barbour, Three Worlds, p.57.
36. ibid.,p.88
37. Russell, C.T. Jewish Hopes..., p.19
38. Three Worlds, p. 84-85
39. 1910 Speech by C.T. Russell
40. Russell, C.T., Jewish Hopes...,p. 19
41. What Pastor Russell Wrote for the Overland Monthly (a collection of his newspaper articles), p. 154
42. ibid.
43. Jewish Hopes..., p. 10
44. Overland Monthly, p. 156
45. art. "Day of Vengeance", Overland Monthly, p. 347
46. Overland Monthly, p.347
47. Overland Monthly, p. 156
48. B'nai B'rith & the Challenge of Ethnic Leadership, p.201
49.
50. Various WT over the years since the 1940 through 1980s.
51. A recent book that I read, the title escapes me, was a compilation of stores of Christians and Nazi Prison guards who risk their lives to save Jews. -
52. Bartoszewski, Wladyslaw and Zofia Lewin. Righteous Among Nations How Poles Helped The Jews 1939-1945. London: Earlscourt Pub. Ltd., 1969. This book is about Poles who helped Jews during W.W. II

53. This is widely known.
54. Bartoszewski, op. cit., pp. XX-XXI
55. ibid., plus many other sources have said the same.
56. Angebert, Jean-Michel. The Occult and the Third Reich, pp. 238 & 281
57.
58. There are so many books and researchers that have brought this to light, to name several to refer to Thyssen, Fritz. / Paid Hitler; Sutton, Antony. Wall Street and the Rise of Hitler, and his America's Secret Establishment, None Dare to Call it Conspiracy, Mullins, Eustice. The World Order.
59. One example is Sutton, America's Secret Establishment, pp.171-174. On page 172 and 173 Sutton reproduces intelligence letters.
60. Cambell, Joseph. The Mythic Image, p. 200-201
61. testimonies of Jewish people to Author
62. Pike, Albert. Morals and Dogma, p. 744; Hall, The Secret Teachings of All Ages, pp. CXII-CXIV; Butler, Ritual Magic, pp. 39, 50, 254 et al.
63. Quoted in several books including Griffin, Des. Descent into Slavery. S. Pasadena, CA: Emissary Pub., 1980, p.214.
64.
65. According to my research Jews who have been New Age leaders include (their original names are in parentheses): Helena P. Blavatsky, Benjamin Creme, Baba Ram Dass (orig. Richard Alpart), Werner Erhard (orig. Jack Rosenberg), Da Free John (orig. Franklin Jones), Helen Schucman (author of A Course In Miracles being used by so many churches), Rudolf Steiner, and Stephen Gaskin (of The Farm). Also the Bhagwan Shree Rajneesh was a Jew from India. Some report his second in command was married to a Jew. It is interesting to note that about 20% of the early WT leadership appears to be of Jewish heritage. Polls indicate that about 30% of the humanists are Jewish. New Age author Marilyn Ferguson in her polls found similar high levels of Jews in the New Age movement too.
66. Kahane, Rabbi Meir. The Story of the Jewish Defense League. Radner, PA: Chilton Book Co., 1975, p.59
67. Schmidt, Greenwood. Encyclopaedia of American Institutional Fraternal Organizations. Westport, Conn., Greenwood Press, 1980, p.52
68. ibid.
69. My direct source is lost, however the statement can be realized by noting when the various Masonic elements were dropped such as blackballing, secrecy (much of which was dropped in the '20s), secret recognition signs, and lodge regalia.
70. Schmidt, op. cit., p. 52-53. The first few pages of Moore, Deborah. The B'nai B'rith the Challenge of Ethnic Leadership describes the medieval secrecy that the synagogues had. They were very similar to today's Masonic lodges. Schnoebelen's Mormonism's Temple of Doom provides the parallels between witchcraft & the Masonic lodges. The 1991 Jeremiah Film "Freemasonry from darkness to light?" has a revealing series of interviews with ex-Masons and witches showing the parallels in witchcraft and masonic rituals.
71. Moore, Deborah, op. cit.,p.6
72. National Council of Churches, N.Y..N.Y., Bureau of Research and Survey , Series C. Bulletin No. 6 (1957), Table 29.

73. Margiotta, Domenico, 33rd degree. Adriano Lemmi, Chef Supreme des Franc-Macons. France, 1894.
74. Le Cahiers de I'Orde, Nov. 1927, and other sources
75. Author's research along with Schmidt, op. cit. p.53. Schmidt notes its international nature and its 500,000 membership.
76. Kahane, op. cit. p.156-157. For example, at the Constitution Grand Lodge of the Order (B'nai B'rith) meeting in 1854 Dr. Sigmund Waterman proposed "the founding of a religious free school for Jewish children." The schools and reading rooms that the Order set up, although they taught Jewish culture, tended to wean the Jewish people away from religious values and God toward humanism. The B'nai B'rith aptly calls itself a "secular synagogue"—Moore, op.cit. p.251. cf. p.140 on Frankel.
77. Moore, Deborah, op. cit, p.255
78. ibid., p.216 ff
79. ibid., p.250
80. Kahane, Rabbi Meir. The Story of the Jewish Defence League.pp 25,45, and others
81. ibid., pp. 325-326
82.
83. Mullins, Eustice. The World Order, p. 119
84. Kahane, op. cit. p. not known
85. Dilling, Elizabeth. The Octopus. Boring, OR: CPA Book Pub., 1986 reprint of 1940 ed., p. 200-202
86. B'nai B'rith Magazine (4/1940) p. 234, this type of thing is often referred to, example Warrant of Genocide, p. 46.
87. Saturday Evening Post, 6/1/40
88. B'nai B'rith Magazine, (Mar. 1938) p.239 as quoted in Dillings, op. cit. p.4

Chapter 1.10

JEHOVAH

One of the biggest issues the Jehovah's Witnesses make a big fuss about is the name Jehovah. Christians, they say, are obviously evil for Christians are not promoting the name Jehovah. Although it is true the Bible has a Tetragrammaton, even the Jehovah's Witnesses admit in their literature that Jehovah is not the proper pronounciation, in fact it is known to be a Middle Age invention. What is not widely known is the importance that the word Jehovah has played in Black Magic and Freemasonry.

The word was introduced into Freemasonry, not in a Christian context but in a magical context.

Albert G. Mackey, 33 degree, one of the highest respected Masonic authorities for the Masons states in his Encyclopaedia of Freemasonry, Vol. I, 1871,

"JEHOVAH is, of all the significant words of Masonry, by far the most important. Reghellini very properly calls it 'the basis of our dogma and of our mysteries.'...The history of the introduction of this word into the ritualism of Freemasonry would be highly interesting, were it not so obscure. Being in almost all respects an esoteric symbol... That this name, in its mystical use, was not unknown to the Medieval Freemasons there can be no doubt... It is now conceded, from indisputable evidence, that the holy name was, in the earlier years, and, indeed, up to the middle of the last century, attached to the Third Degree, and then called the Master's Word...Third Degree refers to 'the mystic word, the Tetragrammaton.'"[1]

What was the esoteric, mystical use of the word Jehovah? It stood for what Medieval Cabalists and other practitioners of magic called their Satanic Holy Trinity.

E.M. Butler an expert on Magic writes in his book Ritual Magic that "...the 'triple name' could stand for ADONAY, ZEBOATH, JEHOVAH or for JEHOVAH, EMMANUEL, ZAMEH (Father, Son, Holy Spirit) or any other of the variant holy names by which the deity was invoked in black magic. With this exception, the invocation, although there is a learned Renaissance flavour about it, follows orthodox lines, and the word valeat instead of salveat represents ... rather subtle attempt to make the invocation blasphemous. It certainly is at odds with 'Jehovah's name forward and backward anagrammatized' (a pithy poetical way of describing the method used by Kabbalists to determine the seventy-two names for God), and also with the abbreviated names of the saints in the circle. It makes nonsense too of the conclusion: "By Jehovah, hell and the holy water which I now sprinkle, and the sign of the Cross, which I now make.' It would be worse than useless, it would be in the highest degree dangerous, to call on the name of the 'triple deity' who had just been dismissed (however courteously) from the circle."[2]

The frequent use of the word Jehovah by Joseph Smith, Jr., and Charles T. Russell was the impact of Masonry on their lives. C.T. Russell disliked Christ's name so much he wrote the word Christmas as X-mas in his personal letters.[3] Joseph Rutherford, who was involved in the occult, elevated the name. Jehovah even more, and downplayed the name of Christ. There are many solid Scriptural reasons why Jehovah is not the name that Christians are to promote and worship, but that is a topic in itself. The point though is that a balanced view of scripture in no way demands that Joseph Rutherford's worship of the word Jehovah be adopted. The over emphasis these men placed on it, was due to their contact with the occult.

WHO FIRST PROMOTED THE WORD JEHOVAH?

"It was the Kabbalists who emphasized the mystery surrounding the letter JHVH by referring to the name they represented as the 'word of four letter', TETRAGRAMMATON, and this caught on like wild-fire in the magical texts. Few indeed and far between are those modern rituals in which that awe-inspiring name does not occupy the place of honour."[4]

From a group of JW elders at my house came the advice, "If you will say a prayer using Jehovah's name, and say it with lots of will power, you can count on it working."

Folks, those elders don't know it—but that's Kabbalistic Magic. Unfortunately, not knowing history well, they do not realize who promoted the name Jehovah for centuries—the Magicians of the Kaballist Jews.

THE MASONIC HOLY TRINITY

But if the Caballists believe in a Holy Trinity doesn't that make them Christians?

"The Cabala is Occult Science itself. It is the secret theology of the initiates, theology essentially Satanic. In a word counter-theology. Our God, the God of the Christians, is the power of evil in the eyes of the Cabalists; and for them the power of good, the real God, is Lucifer."

"One cannot be a convinced Cabalist without soon becoming a magician and devoting oneself to the practices of occultism."[5] This explains why many of the famous magicians such as Harry Houdini[6] have been Jewish Freemasons.

In Freemasonry at the Kadosch the triangle is inverted to represent Lucifer, who is said to be the Very Holy and Indivisible Trinity to which the Kadosch takes his oath of blind obedience. The Grand Inspector Inquisitor Commander takes his oath to this Very Holy and Indivisible Trinity of Lucifer also.[7] This is clearly described in the 33 degree French Mason Domenico Margiotta's book Le Culte de la Nature dans la Franc-Maconnerie universelle. Is the reader surprised that a Mason would publish something saying their Holy Trinity is the Trinity of Lucifer?

Mackey in his Ency. of Freemasonry, 1887 ed., p.617 explains that "The objection to treatises and disquisitions on Masonic subjects, that there is danger through them of giving too much light to the world without, has not the slightest support from experience. In England, in France, and in Germany, scarcely any restriction has been observed by

Masonic writers, except as to what is emphatically esoteric; and yet we do not believe that the profane world is wiser in those countries than in our own in respect to the secrets of Freemasonry. In the face of these publications, the world without has remained as ignorant of... our art, as if no work had ever been written on the subject.... The truth is that men who are not Masons never read authentic Masonic works. They have no interest in the topics discussed,... "

This Author agrees with Mackey. When this Author has tried to show what the Masons are about, few people will even accord the courtesy of even a few seconds of their time. Even when people are willing to spend a few minutes, how can a few moments dispel all the Masonic smokescreens. Some read that the Masons believe in a Holy Trinity and conclude they are solid Christians. If such men believed in the Christian Trinity, why have most of the most anti-Christian philosophers and writers been fervent Freemasons? Masonry and Christianity are not the same, nor are their trinities.

"Theurgy is the highest degree of occultism. Necromancy is limited to the summoning of dead souls, but the Theurgists of the nineteenth century evoke entities qualified by them as genii, angels of light, exalted spirits, spirits of fire etc. In their meetings, scattered throughout the world, they worship Lucifer. The three mysterious letters J... B ... M.... that the common initiates see in the Masonic Temples, are reproduced in the meeting rooms of the Luciferians, but they no longer mean Jakin, Bohaz, Mahabone, as in the Lodges, nor Jacques Bourguignon Molay, as with the Knights Kadosch; in Theurgy these three letters mean; Jesus Bethlemitus Maledictus. Theurgy is therefore pure Satanism."[8]

The Cabalists and Masons profess to practice white magic and refer to Theurgy as black magic.

What the reader sees here is a common tactic by the devote Satanists. They rename or slightly disguise their symbolism and foister it upon groups of people that don't know what they are really worshipping or getting into. Albert Pike states in Moral and Dogma that the lower levels are deceived.[9] They have been deceived from the very beginning of the Masonic Lodge. The Masonic symbolism from the beginning has its origins in the occult. It use of Christian symbols is esoteric.

TOPIC OF CHAPTER

This chapter will explore the relationship of Watchtower symbology and their special words to the Masons and the occult.

A VISITOR

The young blond girl in a patterned dress at my door stammered and shook a little as a Matronly older woman looked on and observed her memorized presentation.

"This is the great issue that faces everyone," she said jitterly.

And indeed the cover of her Watchtower magazine[10] said, "The Great Issue Faces You," along with a picture of an old man with stars surrounding him.

As a scholar of the Watchtower Society, my curiosity was aroused, What is the great issue?

Her visit had caught our family at an unfortunate time when I couldn't invite them in. I took her magazines, and silently prayed she'd keep her word to return on her back call, which she didn't unfortunately.

I opened the magazine. What is the great issue—was it sin? That certainly was Christ's great issue, his central message was man's slavery to sin. He preached that theme from several different angles. The captives he came to set free were the captives of sin. Those he was able to bless, were those poor in spirit, that is those who realized their sinful nature.

The apostle Paul continued Christ's message on sin. "This righteousness from God comes through faith in Jesus Christ to all who believe. There is no difference, for all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God, and are justified freely by his grace through the redemption that came by Christ Jesus." (Rom. 3:22-24)

Even the Apostle John, a favorite among the Masons and other esoteric groups made sin the great issue. "If we claim to be without sin, we deceive ourselves and the truth is not in us. If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just and will forgive us our sins and purify us from all unrighteousness." (I Jn. 1:8,9)

So what was the Watchtower's Great Issue?

At the end of page three, which is the first article, we learn the answer, "In fact, the great issue facing each one of us is whether we accept or reject the sovereignty of God, "whose name alone is JEHOVAH." Having been associated with Jehovah's Witnesses, I knew that the issue of God's Sovereignty meant Jehovah's name. For instance, Moses had done all he did to Pharoah and the Egyptians the JWs had instructed me, solely to teach them his name is pronounced Jehovah.

Knowing this, it was fairly certain what would follow in the Watchtower article, "The time must come when he will resolve all aspects of this issue of sovereignty in harmony with his own stated purpose: "They will have to know that I am Jehovah."[11]

And there they did it again. The WT Soc. has taken a Biblical concept the Sovereinty of God and perverted it into a test of "Are they promoting the word Jehovah or not?"

The real issue is not whether some magical word Jehovah is promoted or not. The issue is sin.

If you want words the Hare Krishna's have magical words. "Hare Krishna, Hare Krishna, Krishna Krishna, Krishna Krishan, Hare Hare, Hare Rama, Hare Rama, Rama Rama, Hare Hare, " they chant.

If you want magical words the Maharishi Mahesh Yogi will give you for around $20 a mantra (the name of some Hindu deity picked especially for you) to relax with.

These groups all have plenty of magical words to save us, but what do they say about sin?

Transcendental Meditation (TM) says sin is a state of mind. Hare Krishnas see sin as something that can be purged with eating, clapping and dancing. The Watchtower Society chooses to believe that the results of sin can be ignored, for in the New order sinfull mankind will teach himself to be perfect with the aid of 144,000 elite teachers. The guilt, the horror, and the need for confession of sin eludes their religious teachings.

Christianity realizes sin, realizes the guilt man has, his need to confess his sin to God, and his need to rely on God for salvation.

WHAT IS THE WATCHTOWER'S REASON FOR USING THE TERM "NEW WORLD" & "NEW ORDER"?

The WTs answer to the public was given in the WT May 1, 1987 issue pg.30. Their answer is that the greek word kosmos allows them to fittingly speak of a coming "new world." To quote, "But the Biblical use of Ko'smos allows for a Christian to speak of a 'new world' when referring to the coming Paradise restored on earth." This answer is good fodder for brain-washed androids, but is not a responsible answer at all. Strong's Concordance's Greek dictionary indicates that the word kosmos (word #2889 in the dict.) probably came from a root word meaning orderly arrangement such as a decoration, and by implication means the world. The Bible however does not speak anywhere of a new world order or a new order.

AT-ONE-MENT

Did Russell coin the breakdown of the word atonement into At-one-ment? Hardly, the Christian Scientists and the Masons were using such phraseology before Russell. Russell used it as the title of an approx. 500 page book he put out in 1899. An example of the Masonic use of the term is an article in the Mar. 1923 New Age Magazine entitled "TOWARD AT-ONE-MENT".[12]

Notes

1. Mackey, Albert G. Encyclopaedia of Freemasonry, Vol. I, 1871 ed., p.363 ff

2. Butler, G.M. Ritual Magic. New York: The Noonday Press, 1949, p.307.
3. Author's personal collection
4. Butler, op. cit., p.40
5. Bataille (Carl Hackse). Le Diable au XIXe Siecle, Vol. I, p.29.
6. Denslow, 10,000 Famous Freemasons, p.255
7. Margiotta, Domenico, 33 degree. Le Culte de la Nature dans la Franc-Maconnerie Universelle. (18??), p.227
8. Bataille, op. cit., p. 35
9. Pike, Albert, 33°. Morals and Dogma., p.819.
10. WT Mar. 1, 1991
11. ibid.,p.5
12. Milburn, H.A. art. "TOWARD AT-ONE-MENT", New Age Magazine, Mar. 1923, p. 147.

Chapter 1.11
The Magical Watchtowers

You will learn:

- You will learn why it is possible that the choice of Russell's to name his magazine Watch Tower was due to its secret magical implications.
- You will find out the role Enochian magic may play in tracking the lineage of the One-World-Conspiracy.
- You will be informed how the humanistic renaissance was caused by the movement of Jewish thinkers.

The Masonic Watchtowers

The Masonic Lodges are usually given a number and then are named after the location they are at. For instance, in Oregon something like 9 out 10 lodges are named after the town that they are in. However, some of the lodges are named after famous Masons such as Franklin, Lafeyette, and Washington. Others are named after Masonic themes Mystic Tie, Mystic Circle, Rising Sun, New Jerusalem, and Mizpah. Mizpah? What is Mizpah. The Watchtower Society tells us in the issue of the Golden Age 3/26/24, p. 387, that Mizpah translates Watchtower. The word Hebrew word Mizpah (also spelled Mizpeh, and Mitspeh) occurs only once in scripture.[1] And the use of the word Mizpah among the Masons is interesting.

This Author has located 4 Masonic chapters so far in the world that are named Mizpah, and three of these are in C.T. Russell's area of Pennslyvannia. These are all York Rite (R.A.M-Royal Arch Masons) lodges like Russell belonged to. They are Mizpeh Chapter No. 288 R.A.M. of Allegheny, PA, Mizpah Chapter No. 252 R.A.M. Mahonoy City, PA, and the Mizpah Chapter 96 of the Grand Commandery of Knight Templars of PA.

There is a Mizpah Lodge No. 639 in Cedar Rapids, Iowa and the Grotto, which is an offshoot of the Masons, has a Mizpah Grotto in Long Beach, CA.

What could be important enough to Masonry to call their lodges Watchtowers? The highest Masons which get cryptic and mystic, are exposed to Enochian magic, where the use of the Magical Watchtowers is the key, the heart so to speak, of Enochian Magic.

It is interesting to note that several of the Masons who founded new cults were fascinated in the name and person of Enoch, for instance Joseph Smith, Jr. and Charles T. Russell.

Joseph Smith gave himself the name Enoch, called his first community the City of Enoch, and created the communal Order of Enoch. Further, Joseph Smith, following the Jewish pseudepigraphic Book of Enoch's story, purports to narrate Enoch's experiences in the Book of Moses. (Joseph Smith, as the reader remembers, wrote the Book of Moses.) Joseph Smith in fact believed that Freemasonry went back to Enoch.

Freemasons believed that the correct pronunciation of the sacred name of the Tetragrammaton had been revealed to Enoch.[2] In Enochian magic the Tetragrammaton plays an important part. Each letter represents a different element. In Joseph Smith's day it was popular for Masons to trace Freemasonry back to Enoch. It is not so much in vogue now.

"...Enoch may be considered as representative of that class of mankind which in the future will be in harmony with God and have eternal life—the ones who will be brought to perfection during the Millennial Age."—Charles T. Russell, 1907[3]

Russell was careful not to exceed what he could back with scripture, and he was not about to break his Masonic oath of secrecy and blab about Enoch and Enochian magic. However, Russell can still be recognized as having put an inordinate amount of emphasis on Enoch. What happened to Enoch "seems to be one of the secret things which Moses says belong unto God. Deut. 29:29" WT Apr. & May 1884. Russell pointed out on numerous occasions that Enoch was the 7th man from Adam, this meaning he was the perfect man. This view was still coming out in the WT as late as 1941.[4] The WT Society has been fascinated by Enoch's transformation, but have been varible in their explanation of it. In 1943, the WT Society tells us that "Enoch was put into a trance"[5] That "God gave him a final vision of the New World..."[6] and that when scripture says "transferred Him" in Heb. 11:5 that meant God granted Enoch a vision of the New World.[7] This was a change from Russell's speculation that God may have taken Enoch to another planet. Also that year, the WT Society tells us that Enoch was the first man to prophecy of Christ.[8]

This is just a glimpse of Russell and the WT Society's fascination with Enoch. Now we will discover what Enochian Magic is about.

THE MAGICAL WATCHTOWERS

Twice a month, a magazine called the Watchtower goes out in 105 languages in about 13 million per issue. (Actually minor foreign language editions lag behind the English editions, so that the 13 million copies are not issued simultaneously.)

Yet no one has explained why Charles T. Russell chose the Watch Tower as the name and center idea of his new religion. Many return to the Bible movements like

Campbell's Church of Christ churches, have eschewed being associated with any symbology. The idea of the Watch Tower must have been very important for Russell to have situated it as the central symbol for his movement. Was he thinking that a tower towered him above others? Or was it because ancient Watch Towers could view approaching armies and thereby warn of approaching battles. Or was it chosen because Masons have been associated with building castles and cathedrals?

Each of these explanations put forth, has some merit. But there is another explanation. One that seems bizarre, so bizarre that this author dismissed it until such time as he was able to confirm C.T. Russell's Masonic membership.

C.T. Russell's membership records in the Masonic Knights Templar are kept in Ireland. The Blue Lodge records belong to the Grand Lodge of PA. Lady Queenborough in her book Occult Theocracy published in 1933 notes on page 737 C.T.Russell's masonic membership. His Masonic membership must have also been common knowledge to those associated with him, and those acquainted with the prominence Russell gave to the Knights Templar logo.

Before diving into the evidence of this chapter, this author would like to interject that the idea that Russell used the Second Adventists as the source for the name Watch Tower was the first theory this author considered. Russell associated with Adventists and moved in Adventist circles during the years leading up to the publication of Zion's Watch Tower and Herald of Christ's Presence. The Adventists frequently used the word Watchman as part of the titles of their periodicals. However, after closer-examination this author dismissed the Adventist origin as an incomplete explanation, for it doedn't really explain what happened. First, the original concept seemed to be as much the idea of a Tower rather than a Watchtower. Russell's printing firm was initially called the Tower Co. and only later became the Watch Tower. Is one to believe that later Russell substituted "Watchtower" for his company name of Tower because the Adventists use "Watchman" at a time when Russell was trying to distance himself from the Adventists? Bear in mind that under discussion is one of Russell's central symbols of his movement — the other at that time was the Knight's Templar logo. So the decision to use the word "Watchtower" was not trivial or accidental, but a very important decision. The name of Russell's religious publishing company had to express something important to Russell. Russell by this time was trying to distance himself from the Adventists, trying to remove the idea he was with them. Also noteworthy, Russell does not make any fuss about the word Watchtower. He selects it, but is silent about its importance to him. This silence needs to be taken into account by any explanation of the origin of the title "the Watchtower." Second, when this author surveyed the entire range of Second Adventist periodicals (about 30) printed prior to Russell's Zion's Watch Tower, I discovered 8 of these used the word Watchman in the title but not one used the concept of a Watch Tower. Why would Russell in the beginning, when his movement was really Adventist, substitute the magazine title Watchtower for the very popular Adventist title of Watchman? While there were no Adventist magazines prior to Russell's Watchtower magazine that used the word Watchtower, it appears that the Masonic magazine Mizpah could have served as example to Russell. The Masonic Mizpah magazine, and a masonic article in an early Masonic Review with the title "Watchman what of the night" do prove a similarity here between that Masonic thinking and Russell's Magazine.

Evidence shows C.T. Russell was not only a high Freemason, but prominent in their schemes, in other words he was a key player. Watchtowers are very important to the very highest Freemasons. The highest secret knowledge of many Masonic rites including such rites as the Scottish Rite, the Rite of Memphis, the Rite of Mizraim, etc. is concentrated in a high level group of Illuminati. The basic group of the Illuminati is the O.T.O. The initials O.T.O. can stand for a several names for this group one being Ordo Templi Orientis (The Order of Oriental Templars). Its esoteric name is Order of To Ov. Its members also have been referred to as the Great White Brotherhood or Atlantean Adepts, and have worked with the B'nai B'rith.

The O.T.O. Illuminati teach their select group of initiates Hermetic Science (occult knowledge), magick (called Holy Magick of Light), Mysticism, and Yoga of all forms. The O.T.O. during C.T. Russell's lifetime established in every important metropolitan area, including New York, a secret hidden center (Collegium ad Spiritum Santum) where members could carry out their "great work" concealed without interference.

However, each Illuminati is nothing if he is not able to practice the Magick that gives him a knowledge of the Watchtowers and the ability to enter the four Watchtowers.

Is this bizarre? Why doesn't C.T. Russell mention any of this in his writings?

This author must unreservably without any doubt in his mind advise the reader that C.T. Russell would never have mentioned anything of his higher esoteric Masonic knowledge to anyone. The penalties for such higher secrets are harsh. This author knows of some cases that the men were killed. Obviously without presenting, any proof on that point, the reader can simply know that the higher echelons in the esoteric group of Illuminism rarely lose their initiates, because they are so sold out to the occult. This author as a teenager studied the life of Benjamin Franklin, in order to emulate his great character. Benjamin Franklin gives no hint in his Autobiography of his intense activities in the Freemasons. Franklin was the Grand Master of the occultic Grand Orient Masons in France, and participated in many weird unchristian activities. Benjamin Franklin although hailed by many Christians as a Christian was not a Christian, in fact he gave money to a Synagogue. But the bottom line is that, a great man like Franklin, whose life was closely watched, could still get away with keeping his Masonic activities fairly secret. Only the avid historian, or the average Mason, is aware of his Masonic membership, let alone what he did in the lodge or with his Masonic brothers.

C.T. Russell was in the public eye. Everything he published was with the public eye in mind. No one should expect to find any notes or slips about Masonic activities or beliefs in Russell's writings.

C.T. Russell followed a policy of backing everything he said with a scripture. If he could not establish a point by twisting scripture in some fashion, then he would try not to publish the point. What needs then to be looked for are-occultic strains of thought that seeped into his Bible explanations, because they had a possible scriptural explanation. There are a fair number of statements by Russell that seem to be evidence of ties to the magic of Watchtowers, but this Author must strongly emphasize that this is not written as proof that Russell used the term Watchtower because of its magic meaning. No, this chapter presents this material or evidence because to date this possible explanation has been unpublished, (Indeed, this author knows of no one else who has observed a possible magical explanation for the title Watchtower.) and this author feels it ought to be placed on the table for consideration, for investigation and possibly even rejection (if additional evidence can suffice to solve this mystery.)

WHAT ARE THE MAGICAL WATCHTOWERS?

Watchtowers are regions of the Magical Universe. The type of Magic that uses these regions is called Enochian Magick.

According to occultists, Magic is merely the use of hidden laws to bring about the will. Every person has a spark of divinity—an inner God, also called an angel or Holy Guardian Angel. The Magician is to get in touch with his Angel—his divinity. This is where his knowledge of the Watchtowers is helpful. Enochian Magick claims for itself two unique elements: an original language, and the map of the indivisible worlds. The Indivisible worlds are known as the Magical Universe. The map of this Magical Universe contains 4 Enochian regions called Watchtowers. These are the Watchtower of Fire, the Watchtower of Air, the Watchtower of Water, and the Watchtower of Earth. These 4 regions are often symbolized in ancient esoteric manuscripts. The following are the 7 planes and their regions on the map:

Occult Planes	Enochian regions
Divine...........	------------
Spiritual.........	Tablet of Union
Causal	Watchtower of Fire
Mental	Watchtower of Air
Astral	Watchtower of Water
Etheric	Watchtower of Earth
Physical.........	-------------

Should all the bodies of the planes (except for the physical) be collectively taken together, the Magician calls this the Body of Light. New Age, Masonic, and Rosicrucian Magicians will then speak in terms of leaving their bodies and entering into the Watchtowers (the Body of Light). To be an advanced magician, you must be able to enter the Watchtowers.

It is an established fact the Illuminists all learn this Magic and practice it. Could there be some connection between C.T. Russell and the Illuminists who practice Enochian Magick?

In order to answer this, this chapter will explore a. the history of Enochian Magic (to be divided 3 ways: early, since Sir John Dee, and certain Masons worthy of study), b. clues in Russell's works that may indicate a connection in thought with Enochian Magick.

WHAT IS THE HISTORY OF ENOCHIAN MAGIC?

The history of Enochian Magick is tied in part to the history of the masonic Hermetic Order of the Golden Dawn. Sir John Dee (1527-1608) made Enochian Magic known to the esoteric initiates of the Elizabethian Era. However, the roots of Enochian Magick go back before Dr. John Dee.

The name of this magic comes from Enoch. Josephus in Antiquities of the Jews, relates that some Jews identified Enoch as the Sun God. This identification can be better understood knowing that the Hebrew word we translate Enoch comes from the Hebrew word chanak (pronounced khaw-nak') meaning to initiate or discipline. Note also in Gen. 5:21-23 that Enoch lived exactly 365 years. Enoch, the Initiator, living 365 days, as the Sun God gave his name to Enochian Magic.

Esoteric thought from Egypt was learned by the Greeks. Hermes was originally an Egyptian. Hermetic thought and Pythagorean thought (secrets of Geometry), including magic, have been passed down through the years by secret groups.

Today, geometry is merely a field of math dealing with shapes and numbers, but throughout history geometry has been viewed as sacred. Sacred geometry revealed to man the unifying principle of the divine architect of the world. God's mind and glory was revealed in shape and numbers. Even today the New Agers and Satanists place an importance on the geometric shapes of circles, triangles, and squares. Geometry, the study of shapes and numbers, became sacred to both Judiasm and Islam. Note the importance of the geometric patterns on their mosques and synagogues. Geometry was held to be tied to the Creator's mind, and to reveal his master plan. It is well-documented that leading operative masons during the Middle Ages also had knowledge of not only sacred geometry, and both its building and mystical purposes, but also were philosophers, and mystics.

The origin of this sacred geometric science is clearer when one notes that its big revival in Western Europe, resulted from the infusion of Greek thought into Italy which resulted in the Renaissance. Remember that the Eastern half of the Roman Empire calied later Byzantine, which had as its center Greece, never fell to invaders. The wisdom of the mystery schools and the ancient greek philosophers and scientists was still intact until the Byzantine Empire's capital of Constantinople fell in 1453 to the Islamic Turks. The vast libraries of Greece which dated material back to Alexandria, Egypt were moved to Italy where they spawned the Renaissance. Forty years later Ferdinand and Isabella by expelling the Jews from Spain created another movement of people and ideas. These two influxes of people and their esoteric knowledge are believed to be the single most important contributing factor to the Renaissance. The Flemish Renaissance resulted because the Netherlands belonged to Spain, and fleeing Jews went both to Italy and to the Netherlands. From the Netherlands and Italy esoteric knowledge went to the house of Guise and Lorraine.

An example of how esoteric knowledge then became associated with the royal house of Guise and Lorraine, is that the first edition of Corpus hermeticum (pub. in 1549) was dedicated to Charles de Guise, the Cardinal of Lorraine and brother of Marie de Guise, who married James V of Scotland and who bore Mary Queen of Scots.

Under the cover of being zealous Catholics, the house of Guise and Lorraine spread esoteric knowledge. Men like Sir William Sinclair imported the esoteric knowledge into Scotland. Another figure was the Scotsman, James Beaton, the Scottish ambassordor to France, who was also the former Archbishop of Glasgow and who worked with the house of Guise and Lorraine.

SIR JOHN DEE INTRODUCES ENOCHIAN MAGIC

Esoteric knowledge spread to England before Ireland. A famous Welchman, Dr. John Dee, created a center for estoteric studies. Sir John Dee, was the court astrologer for Queen Elizabeth. He also was a brilliant magician, physician, philosopher, alchemist, Cabbalist, mathematician, scientist, and diplomatic emissary. This model of the Renaissance man lay the groundwork for modern speculative Freemasonry. He lectured on the Continent to the great European universities on Geometry. Sir John Dee was fully aware and spoke about the idea of Plato about the Great Architect of the Universe, for which sacred geometry is a method to understand this great architect's mind. In the preface Dee wrote for Henry Billingley's translation of Euclid published in 1570, Dee refers to Plato as "Divine Plato."

Sir John Dee is credited for founding a type of Magick called Enochian Magick. (Practitioners of magic often spell magic with a k.) He believed he could conjure up Angels. And he was convinced that the angels he conjured up with magic were not demons.[9]

John Dee believed he was descended from the tribe of Dan, and that the Queen of England and him were related to the Brutus and the city of Troy. He also associated himself intensely with the King Arthur legends, and his belief that the England had a destiny to rule the world.[10] Dee had a politico-religious program for the imperial destiny of Queen Elizabeth I. This expansion was based on the belief that Elizabeth was descended from King Arthur, who was supposedly also a descendent of Troy which had been settled by the tribe of Dan, and that the Queen had a religious duty to conquer the world. He managed to convince the Queen to follow through on these ideas. Francis A. Yates has described this belief system in his book Astraea. The Imperial Theme in the Sixteenth Century (1975). Dee received a vision of a vast universal religion.

A good portion of the Christian caballists in Europe at that time were converted Jews.[11]

Dee's library contained thousands of books, including Lullist works, Pico della Mirandola and Reuchlin. He had Agrippa's De occulta philosophia, and the 1545 edition of the Latin version of Giorgi's De harmonia mundi. Agrippa was an cabbalist. Giorgi wrote on achitechtural symbolism, the sacred geometry and combines cabalism letter-mysticism and Pythagoro-Platonic theory to create his own synthesis of these.

Dee was very influential with the Earl of Leichester and his secret son Sir Francis Bacon. The puritan Edmund Spencer the poet was also Caballist Neo-Platonist.[12]

Dee's idea of an architect is more a description of an esoteric intiate, he writes, "I thinke, that none can justly account themselves Architects, of the suddeyne. But they onely, who from their childes yeares ascendying by these degrees of knowledges, beyng fostered up with the atteyning of many languages and Artes, have wonne to the high Tabernacle of Architecture...the Name of Architecture, is of the principalitie, which this Science hath, above all other Artes. And Plato affirmeth, the Architect to be Master over all ....

The reader has a better appreciation of the significance of Russell's references to God as being the Great Architect or the Divine Architect or Great Architect of the Universe. This masonic buzz word for God, allows us to see the connection between Russell and those who practiced sacred geometry.

In 1603, a scion of the Guise-Lorranne families became King James of England. Scottish families at this point in history carried their estoric knowledge to Ulster, Ireland, where over two centuries later Russell's family, originally from Scotland would be living before coming to the New World at Allegheny, PA.

One of Sir John Dee's principle disciples was Robert Fludd. Fludd and Francis Bacon spread esoteric thought through the Rosicrucian channels. This esoteric thought came the full circle back to England when Johann Valentin Andrea created the lodge system to protect the Rosicrucians, and some of these lodges emigrated to England. These later became the "Invisible College of the Rosicrucians", and later became the famous Royal Society. In a Rosicrucian work from Germany A Golden Treatise on the Philosopher's Stone (printed 1625) on the page entitled "The only true way ... to attain true perfection.", there is a paragraph labelled "Enigma". Two towers must be passed to get the true believer to where he is going. The sun god is also referred to on this page. A rare plate from Elias Ashmole's Theatrum Chemicum Britannicum also throws light upon the subject. The plate is named the "Key to the Great Philosophical Secret". It states the Philosopher's stone is a macrocosm and a microcosm of the universe. It shows four areas which correspond to the four Watchtower areas of the Magical Universe. They are Ignis(fire), Aer(air), Tera(earth), and Aqua(water).

Before dealing with how those who practiced Enochian Magic might have had a common goal or worked with C.T. Russell, let us examine some of the items in Russell's writings that seem to connect him with Enochian Magic and its Watchtowers.

The idea of planes of existence is an important Enochian Magic idea. In Russell's first book, pp. 225-237 a big issue is made of 6 planes of existence. These are

<table>

Plane M- plane of spirit begetting

Plane L- plane of perfection of spirit
Plane K- plane of divine glory
Plane N- plane of human perfection
Plane R- Adamic races' lower plane
Plane P- Plane of typical justification

Russell's answer to the following question is in line with Enochian Magic.

"Is the body of a consecrated person a part of the New Creation? ... It is not a part of the New Creation because the New Creation is spiritual .... "

"Is the New Creature divine? The New Creature is begotten to the divine nature. The intention of begetting was to bring these new creatures to the divine plane..."

What does Russell think of Enoch? C.T. Russell speculates that, "Since seven is always in the Scriptures recognized as a perfect number and indicates perfection, we might understand that Enoch, the seventh from Adam, would represent that perfect man—the perfection of man, or man in his future state when he will be perfect and when he will not die. And in this sense of the word, Enoch may be considered as representative of (no ending text...)

NOTES ___

1. Strong, James. A Concise Dictionary of the Words in the Hebrew Bible; with renderings in the Authorized English Version, contained in Strong's Concordance, (Riverside Book and Bible House: Iowa Falls, IO), p. 71 of the Hebrew dictionary, words #4707 and 4708. The Word Mitzpah occurs at Is. 21:8.
2. Webb, Thomas. The Freemason's Monitor; or, Illustrations of Masonry. NY: Southwick & Crooker, 1802, pp. 245-46,247.
3. Souvenir Notes, Bible Students Convention, Indianapolis, IN, 1907, p.26
4. WT 7/1/41
5. The Truth Shall Make You Free (1943) WTB&TS, p. 127
6. ibid.,p.126
7. WT 3/15/43, p.95
8. The Truth Shall Make You Free(?) , p. 207
9. Yates, Francis A. The Occult Philosophy in the Elizabethan Age. London: Routledge & Kegan Paul, 1979, p. 82.
10. ibid., p. 85.
11. ibid., pp. 111-112.
12. ibid., p. 95 ff.

Chapter 1.12

The Channel of Angelic Redemption

HISTORY REPEATS ITSELF

In July 1636, the town of Aberdeen, Scotland saw a member of the clergy confined to its city limits. The clergyman had been imprisoned in for sedition against the state. The man was Samuel Rutherford, and his radical hatred of the state, and his advocacy of disobedience to it on religious grounds, seems to be a foreshadowing of his descendent Joseph Franklin Rutherford, who would on June 21, 1918 be sentenced to twenty years in the Atlanta Pen for sedition against the United States government.

THE UNEDITED STORY

The whole story of Joseph F. Rutherford may never be known. But the unedited story will be presented, especially in regards to the Masons, the New Age and power.

Joseph was bom at Versailles, MO and grew up[11] in the rolling farmland of Morgan Co., Missouri.[12] He was ambitious. His father wanted him to remain on the farm, but he wanted to become someone important. He had always had high goals for himself, novel goals at that. His goals were novel in part due to his great imagination.[14] Joseph had his flights into fantasy,[15] and from the evidence available actually channeled with what he felt were spirit beings.[16] He liked to call attention to himself and his theatrics. His booming voice, six foot figure, and emotional earnestness made him a dynamic speaker. He was not interested in accumulating wealth,[17] but he did like the fine life.[18] He lectured all over the United States, and travelled throughout Europe and the Middle East.[19]

One Watchtower source says, "Probably no man in the world was closer to Pastor Russell than Mr. Rutherford." This is simply a big lie. Rutherford had made himself obnoxious to the point, Russell had exiled him away from headquarters. Russell even paid him to leave. Rutherford was very sensitive. He seethed at his treatment by Russell. Russell stepped on his toes numerous times. In one case, Rutherford wrote a complaint to Russell about his treatment, and Russell did the wrong thing considering the sensitive feelings of Rutherford. Russell printed the complaint in the WT magazine.[20]

Alexander Hugh Macmillan, another man of Scottish blood, was responsible for Rutherford joining the Society.[21] Apparently Rutherford, who was a big reader, purchased three books by Russell. While sick at home he happened to look at Russell's books.[22] Joseph Rutherford had become a lawyer, and up to this point had not shown any interest in spiritual matters in his life. He knew practically nothing about the Bible,[23] and did not attend church, although his parents were Baptists. But he liked what Pastor Russell taught. And his friend A.H. Macmillan who was prominant in the WT Society, was able to get Rutherford positions in the Society. Rutherford became the Society's lawyer, and went to court numerous times to defend Russell in court.

After 1907, all the legal matters of the Society were handled by Rutherford.[24]

A.H. Macmillan's friendship with Rutherford was an important one. A. H. Macmillan claimed he had been put in charge of the Watchtower Society when Russell was gone. (Macmillan, A.H. Faith on the March, p.70) Macmillan along with his cohort Van Amburgh, the Society's accountant used their power to get Rutherford into the WT Presidentcy. (Faith on the March, p. 68)

As is common knowledge, Rutherford took turns filling in as a special judge in the absence of any regular judge of the Eighth Judical Circuit Court of Boonville, MO. This happened before he became associated with the Bible Students. Because of this the Jehovah's Witnesses called Joseph Rutherford, Judge Rutherford. It was a term he liked.

The Judge stated, "My purpose is good toward all." But his actions came across entirely different.[27]

" When Russell died all pandemonium broke out," a Bible Student said. Rutherford's ability to take firm command of a situation was put into motion. Out of his L.A. exile he came, and by force of his personality, legal trickery, and some nasty power grabbing tactics took charge of the situation. He expelled 31 Bethel workers.[28] And being the trail blazer that he was, he renounced all the former guide lines and followed his own ideas rather than Russell's. He took the Society out of the rut that the cult around Russell had the Society in. Many that were loyal to Russell left the Society.

It is important to understand Rutherford's nature to think for himself. It was so extreme that he found it difficult to conform to any regulations. He set his own guidelines. He was always resisting anyone thinking for him.[29] Consequently, because the Judge liked alcoholic beverages, he was an alcoholic, and even created the same attitude among some of his associates.[30] He encouraged JWs to break the prohibition laws and smuggle alcohol.[31] Because the Judge liked certain women, he had his girlfriends,[32] even though the scriptures condemn adultery.

Mysterious, distant, reserved, and cold, Rutherford is remembered best for his greed for power. With dictatorial powers came the ability to live in luxury at the Society's expense. His life of luxury during the depression is hardly known to Jehovah's Witnesses today, but it included the use of several mansions, several 16-cylinder Packards, the best liquors money could buy, and all his desires for comfort. He rarely spent time with his invalid wife, who lived in California.[33]

It is hard to picture Rutherford as a Mason. He was so narrow-minded and had so many prejudices that it isn't likely that he would have been asked or would have cared to joined. None the less it would not be beyond the realm of possibility, considering that some of his friends were some of the most powerful Masons in the United States. Initially Rutherford had worked for three time Presidential nominee, and Secretary of State and Arch-Mason William Jennings Bryan (1860-1925). Rutherford had a friend in the in the U.S. Senate, a German-born Jew from Cumberland, Md. named George Louis Wellington, who also was a banker and president of Edison Electric Illuminating Co.[34] Sen. Wellington was a leading Freemason (32° and a Knight Templar). Wellington was also an Oddfellow, and Elks, and a Knights of Pythias. Wellington's family had to leave England during Mary Tudor's reign and move to Germany. His mother's maiden name was Meyer. She was Jewish.[34a]

Certain Bible Students have claimed that Russell was murdered. They believed that certain men J.F. Rutherford, W.E. Van Amburgh, R.H. Hirsh (Jewish), Morton Edgar (Scottish), Morton's brother Edgar, C.J. Woodworth (Methodist parents), Paul S.L. Johnson (Jewish), Czeslaw Kasprzykowski, A.H. Mcmillan, George Fisher (his father was an Episcopalian clergyman possibly of Jewish descent from Scranton,Pa), Isaac F. Hoskins, William E. Page, Henry Clay

Rockwell, and some others contributed to the murder. They believed that some poison was slipped past Russell's foodtaster.[35] They think the body was gotten off the train at the next stop and embalmed quickly to hide the murder. According to Macmillan, Menta Sturgeon took the body to an quack embalmer and got Russell into a $20 casket.[36]

It would be hard to determine anything now about Russell's body because the 5 foot thick foundation of the pyramid which is over Russell is reinforced with lots of barbed wire,[37] and at least one WT reference says that Russell was cremated before being laid under the pyramid after having lain in state in Brooklyn and Pittsburgh. Russell's body was cremated after three days in the good Rosicrucian fashion. It is the Rosicrucian's belief that the spirit within the body must be given this time. The WT Society at the time owned the Union Cemetary,[38] and later placed a decoy tombstone with Russell's name to deceive people as to the real burial spot.

Perhaps the second most vital position of the WT Society was the London office, as it helped with the European and Commonwealth work. Paul S.L. Johnson, a Jew, had been assigned this position by Russell. Paul Johnson had for some time thought Russell had selected him to suceed,[39] and a majority of the Directors thought so to.[40] For a while the London office and British Guinea were loyal to Johnson rather than Rutherford.[41] But Rutherford tricked the law into believing that the four Directors who opposed him were illegal, and forced their dismissal.[42] Then he had the upper hand.

The motive for murder would have been power and money.

Rutherford and his friends like Macmillan took over the Society. Rutherford became a recluse.[43] He gradually solidified his power and wealth. He had the use of several Packards, and several mansions, even in Europe.[44]

[text missing]

On Feb. 8, 1942, Rutherford died according to one WT reference with his boots on.[70] Some older Bible Students on the West Coast say he fell down the stairs drunk. His death was kept secret for several days, and the local San Diego Union paper didn't get the scoop until the 10th, three days later, and printed a story the 11th. His estranged son Malcolm C. (also a lawyer) and his neglected wife, who he had ignored for years, Mary M. Rutherford lived in Los Angeles. His live-in secretary Bonnie Boyd was with him at his Beth Sarim mansion when he died, and signed his death certificate. Afterwards she married a man named W.P. Heath and dropped out of the picture. It appears his death was kept secret until the petty power struggle between the Triumpirate in Bethel was ironed out. Still why his death was wrapped in secrecy is not known for sure.

His burial was kept secret because he wanted to be buried at Beth Sarim which was outside of any cemetary zone. In a fitting tribute to a man who had no respect for anyone else's opinion nor was ever governed by anyone else's rule, Rutherford was buried secretly against city ordinances at Beth Sarim.[71] Three months later a lone unaccompanied hearse pulled up to Woodrow Cemetery and a mock funeral was held in the Staten Island dawn by a select group of Jehovah's Witnesses.[72]

The death certificate says Rutherford died of uremic acid which he had had for 1 month, due to Carcinoma Rectum which he had had for 18 months due to Pelvic metastasis which he had had for 6 years.

In exploring the relationship of the WT Society to the One-World-Conspiracy several items can be mentioned in relation to Rutherford.

1) What ever Rutherford decided to do, he would have done it, for he was not guided by moral scruples, but his own ideas.
2) Rutherford had some powerful friends. He had campaigned with William Jennings Bryan's presidential campaign, worked with civic groups[73] and groups like the Masons,[74] and had friends like Congressman Blackburn Barrett Dovener of W. Va., a lawyer.[75]
3) He had some pull with some newspapers, for instance, the National Labor Tribune of Pittsburgh ran his sermon on Thurs. May 9,1918.
4) His modus operandi to cover over the controversy over the widespread use of a demonic oeji healing device by Jehovah's Witnesses was to allow Goodrich to write an article against it, and then to refute Goodrich's article in a subsequent issue, and then to proclaim the issue closed to discussion.[76] In light of this and other similar coverups it is not out of the question that the anti-masonic article reprinted in the WT in 1930 may have been merely a subterfuge.

Was Paul Johnson slated by the B'nai B'rith to take over the WT Society? Was Rutherford and his close henchmen tried on sedition, because they upset the plans of the B'nai B'rith to put their man in? Did Rutherford strike a deal at some point with the Powers? Circumstantial evidence points to Rutherford agreeing to some kind of working relationship with the Conspiracy. Or did the One-world-government planners support both sides of the struggle for power over the WT Society?

There was a noticable change in Rutherford during the 1920's. He began channeling. He wrote that wicked angels worked their sins off by bringing messages to the earth for God. Since his messages from these spirit beings have proved false, the conclusion is they were demonic. After God's channel to redeem the angels had died, the WT described his death in these words, "Brother Rutherford's advancing on to greater fields of activity, by Jehovah's grace..."[77]

NOTES

11. Death certificate from San Diego Co., cf. Harrison, Visions of Glory, p. 172
12. Harrison, op cit., p. 172 and Cole, Jehvovah's Witnesses, p. 213
13. ibid.
14. Author's research
15. ibid.
16. Several researchers have studied Rutherford's channeling. Duane Magnani gave a talk at the Pa. Convention of ex-JWs, 1987 on Rutherford's demonic channeling, which was taped and sold as "Angels of the New Light." Magnani has accumulated much information, yet to be published on the subject. At least one New Age channeler has identified Rutherford as channeling. Rutherford indicates this several times, because holy spirit has ceased to function according to him, see Preservation(l932), pp.201, WT 11/1/31, p. 327 and WT Apr. 1, 1934, p. 105
17. Author's research into Rutherford's character. One of the salient features of his personality was his independent thinking.
18. Magnani, Duane. Danger At Your Door. Clayton, CA: Witness, Inc., 1987, pp. 210-224.
19. Cole. op. cit.,p. , and WT publications during Russell's time.
20. WT, 191?, p.
21. Unpublished manuscript of talk by A.H. MacMillan. "History of the WT, 1910-1920."
22. ibid.,and other sources
23. Pike, Royton. Jehovah's Witnesses. London:Watt & Co., 1954, p.19.

24. Cole, Jehovah's Witnesses, p. 214.
25. Macmillan, A.H. Faith on the March. Englewood Cliffs, N.J.: Prentice-Hall, 1957, p. 70
26. ibid., p.68
27. Rutherford, Government and Peace (1939),p.4
28. Cole(?) , Jehovah's Witnesses, p.89
29. Author's research
30. Gruss, Edmund. Apostles of Denial reprints a BTTBW publication #79, which was a reprint of Olin Moyles letter(Sept. 25,1940) to the Milwaukie, WI congregation of JWs. Olin Moyles had been the Society's attorney. On page 295 of Gruss' book, Moyle wrote, "There appears to a definite policy of breaking in newcomers into the use of liquer and resentment is shown against those who do not join them. The claim is made 'One can't be a real Bethelite without drinking beer." This statement is accord with the author's research on Rutherford's personality.
31.
32. Confidential Bible Student sources. Obviously this is a delicate situation for an informant. Verna Peal travelled with Rutherford internationally, and was his "nurse". See Bonnie Boyd Heath's testimony for the New York Supreme Court, court transcript pp. 1364-1370. Bonnie Boyd was his devout secretary, from 1923 to his death, she even signed his death certificate Bonnie Boyd. She had a quick Los Vegas marriage to Heath, but lived with Rutherford at his mansion. Rutherford's fascination with bare-breasted women is quite evident just by looking at the many WT illustrations of topless or nude women in their publications during his reign as President.
33. This paragraph is compilation of indictments made against Rutherford from a host of sources. Some of these sources are a. Letter from W.F. Salter (4/1/37) to Joseph Rutherford. Olin R. Moyle's 7/21/39 letter to Rutherford which says much of the same things that Salter's says. Rutherford's mansion at Beth Sarim is mentioned in Time Magazine 3/31/30 and the San Diego Sun 1/9/31, and photocopies of these are reproduced in Duane Magnani's book Danger At Your Door, published by Witness, Inc.

34. The Cyclopaedia of American Biography, Vol. ?, p.545 and ?
34a. History of Allegheny Co., p. 702-704.

35. List do Chrzescijan Nr.149 (orig.in Polish) The Ger. version is Brief an Christen-This is a German trans, of Detroit Bible Student Stanley's letter concerning what his Bible Student (Jehovah's Witnesses) parents who lived in Pittsburgh,PA had experienced. They were friends of Maria Francis Ackley, and left the Society after Russell died. The items in the letter have not been substantiated, but there were Stanleys in the early Pittsburgh congregation.
36. A.H. Macmillan. "History of the WT Society, 1910-1920"
37. Souvenir Report of the Bible Student Convention, Pittsburgh, PA 1/2-5/1919, p.7
38. ibid.
39.
40.
41.
42.
43.
(more on file below)

70. Consolation (Feb. 4, 1942) p.17

71. Confidential Bible Student sources, cf. Cleveland Plain Dealer Newspaper, Jan. 12, 1942, which says he is to be buried according to their sources at Beth Sarim.

72. UPI reported this April 25 from NY

73. The Catholic Northwest Progress Newspaper, Seattle, WA, Fri. Apr. 22, 1938 as quoted in Consolation, No.487, 1938, p.19.

74. Numerous talks by Rutherford were given at Masonic Halls.For instance, the annual meeting of the WTB&TS was held in late 1923 along with a five day convention. Rutherford was present. The first days were held at the Memorial Hall, but Sunday's convention service was held at Pittsburg's Syria Shrine Temple a.k.a. the Syria Mosque, where not only the Shriners but various Masonic groups held functions. The WT 12/1/23 p.360 records the use of this Masonic facility for their convention. Consequently, with so much interaction between the Society and the Masons, Rutherford could not have avoided dealing with them at some point.

75.

76. Goodrich, Roy. Demonism and the Watchtower. Fort Lauderdale, FL.:The Bible Way Publ., 1969, p.1-35

77. Consolation, Feb. 4,1942, p.17

BROTHERHOOD OF THE GREAT WHITE LODGE

Manly P. Hall, the Great Masonic leader wrote, "Through the labyrinth of diversity only the illumined mind can, and must lead the soul into the perfect light of unity."[1]

The Freemasons have promoted the "illuminated minds" of the New Age movement. New Age leaders who have been illuminated by the Brotherhood of the Great White Lodge have been helped by and promoted by the Freemasons. Most New Age channellers are not Masons, nor are they expected to be to receive Masonic sympathy.

The leaders of the Theosophical Society, some of the higher Masons, and Church Universal Triumphant's prophet Elizabeth Clare Prophet are some of those who claim to have received enlightment from the Brotherhood of the Great White Lodge.

Note the photocopy of the broshure of the New Age group Church Universal Triumphant (Fig.) This broshure indicates that their group will hold a meeting with their prophetess at the Masonic Lodge.

So who is the Brotherhood of the Great White Lodge?

They are called various names, such as Ascended Masters, and spirit guides. They are spirit beings who channel to the New Age leaders.

These Ascended Master are also variously called "the Hierarchy", and "the Brotherhood of Light" by channeller J.J. Hurtig, "the Brotherhood" by channeler Richard Kieninger, and the "Divine Hierarchy of Great Beings of the Universal Brotherhood" by channeler Earlyne Chaney. They have provided much of the information that the New Age literature consists of.

THE MESSAGE OF THE GREAT WHITE LODGE

What have these Ascended Masters told their New Age channelers?

Turn your radio on and you may hear a song such as "In the year 2525, if man is still alive..." The Ascended Masters have stressed that man is on the verge of a New Age, a New Order. Man needs to create a one-world-governent and a one-world-religion. This new period is often called the Golden Age. At least one spirit is reported to have called it a grand Second Genesis. Technology and New Age spiritual philosophy are to combine to establish a paradise New World. 2 Examples of this are The Book of Knowledge: Keys of Enoch a New Age Bible given by the spirits Enoch and Metatron to J.J. Hurtag in a code to supposedly help man unlock the divine plan in the minds of the Great White Brotherhood. The Keys of Enoch speak of a grand Second Genesis, a second paradise.

Another New Age Bible given by the spirit "god" to Michael Mathiesen warns that man will be severely punished unless mankind organizes into a 1-world-government by the year 2000. Mathiesen titled his 442 page "Bible" The New American Bible.

Interestingly, this message of a coming Golden Age paradise has been given thousands of times to New Age channelers. Often the spirits mention that a cataclysmic or series of cataclysmic events must precede the New World System.

Yes, the terminology and message happens to be identical to message given to Rutherford by the spirits who channeled to him.

Interestingly, the parallels don't end here. The Watchtower Society came out with a Bible called New World Translation. It is apparent that portions of that translation borrow from translations which were channeled, such as Johannes Greber's translation.

THE STRANGEST CONNECTION

The channeling connection between the Watchtower Society, the Freemasons, and the New Age is indeed the strangest type of connection, because it suggests a supernatural power is coordinating such "new light."

For a while it appeared that the idea of the Devil was going to disappear from Western culture. Psychiatrists told us that such supernatural phenomena did not exist. It's interesting that these would be the people to tell us that, because the early great psychiatrists were themselves into the occult and demonic activities.

The New Age channelers don't view their spirit guides as demons. That is the label placed on their activities by Christians who note what the Bible states about such activities. Most of us have never channelled and can not address the issue of what kind of spirits these are. However, several New Agers have confided with the Author that at some point they discovered the spirits revealed their demonic identity to them. One famous New Age leader who found out that these spirit guides were demons was Randall Baer.

It is believed Randall N. Baer was murdered for revealing too much about the New Age Movement. His book Inside the New Age Nightmare tells the story of someone who left his channeling when he realized he was serving demons. The reader should read his book to fully appreciate why Baer after years of being a New Age leader concluded that Satan and his demons were the spirit guides of the New Age. Baer tells the compelling story of how the spirits had power, indeed a supernatural power, and were not simply figments of the mind. The skeptic of supernatural events, will at least concede from his book that these spirit guides are believed to be real by the people who communicate with them.

Some examples of New Age channeler Baer's conclusions concerning such spirit guides are.

Public channeling is mass hypnosis. "Through speech cadence, orchestrated body and hand movements, voice inflections, and invisible demonic powers that fill the room, the spirit weaves a hypnotic web of rainbow-gilded infiltration. Not only do the participants take in false information but, more deeply, they absorb the permeating influences of the demon's formidable powers into the heart, mind, soul, and spirit. Often, a type of open-eyed trance-state overtakes the listeners with a sense of relaxation, pleasant tingling sensations, and rapt fascination with the goings-on.[3]

It is refreshing to see Baer, like so few prophets ever do, reveal that the "psychic powers ultimately draw upon demonic principalities as their source of power."[4]

"Channeling is indeed a blending, a merging, a touching, between humans and disincarnate spirits. However, behind the oh-so-friendly and wise fascade are demons who touch to deceive, blend to invade, and merge to possess. They come with an olive branch of peace, love and universal brotherhood in one hand, and a smoking gun concealed behind their back in the other."[5]

Baer became a Christian when he discovered that these spirits were demons. Other New Agers who have told their stories to this Author also came to Christ when they realized that demons were the spirits that were controlling them. Baer praised the Lord God for his salvation from "Satan's New Age Movement" and for the true freedom and salvation received through Christ Jesus. He turned his back on all his New Age practices and his demon Ascended Masters.

Baer felt the New Age Kingdom was a delusion. "The ultimate paradox for New Agers is that they believe the lie that they are heading for the New Age Kingdom-on-earth. All the while, they're really following a Satan-conspired path to destruction."[6]

If Baer's insight from his years of leading the New Age can be applied to the Watchtower's channeler Rutherford, then Rutherford was part of a demonic conspiracy. At the very least even if some readers are very skeptical of this whole thing, they must recognize the many similarities between Rutherford and the New Age channelers.

There are more similarities. The similarities go back to such things a Russell believing that Cyrus (who was supposedly an incarnation of the sun god and worshipped by his people as such) was a foreshadowing of Christ. Zoroaster was also viewed by Russell as a great prophet[7] (and is also tied to the sun and its worship. One of the Ascended Masters is Zoroaster. Elizabeth Clare Prophet has channeled Zoroaster's messages.

The Masons also look to Zoroaster. Their New Age magazine calls this Persian prophet a "noble" prophet.[8] In another article, of the New Age Magazine (Nov. 1922, p.658,) 32° Mason M.M. Javens writes, "It is useless to dwell longer on Zoroaster and the Zend-Avesta as most Master Masons are familiar with their position in Masonry."

The New Age Magazine, the official organ of the Scottish Rite, in the June 1922 issue, p. 343) pronounce Magic as "good." In another issue White Magicians are declared to be " 'angels encamped about the people,' serving, protecting..." (Sept. 1933, p.554)

THE ILLUMINATI

According to Illuminati, masonic and other sources the Illuminati were white magicians. The masonic leaders believe they continue to guide mankind as the Great White Brotherhood. "The ancient Illuminati manifested...in the 18th century have no inheritors on the physical plane at this time...Their activities are chiefly from the spiritual plane where they are momentous. They may be said to truly exist, but their organized activities and beneficences in aiding needy humanity are from the spiritual side." (The New Age. Sept. 1933, p.554)

1. Hall, Manly P. The Secret Teachings of All Ages, p. CCIII
2. The Book Of Knowledge: The Kevs of Enoch.
3. Baer, Randall. Inside the New Age Nightmare. Lafeyette, LA, Huntington House, 1989, p.104
4. ibid.,p.113
5. ibid.,p.103
6. ibid.,p.42
7.
8. The New Age. July , 1961, p.46-50

Chapter 1.13
CULT OF THE DOUBLE-SEXED GOD JEHOVAH

The reader will be shown:
- Clues that indicate that Frederick Franz, WT President and oracle is a Mason.
- Evidence that shows connections between the Power of Masonry and the WT leaders.
- The rambant homosexuality within WT Society's elite.

GOD BECOMES GRAND MASTER

On Tuesday, 23 November, 1954 a slim, reticent, kindly man took the stand in the Right Honorable James Latham Clyde's courtroom.[1] The man's name was Frederick William Franz, who besides Russell and Rutherford, has contributed more leadership for the Jehovah's Witnesses than any other man. He was then Vice-President and later became the President of the Watchtower Society. When he got older, arrangements were taken to place the power in the hands of others. While Nathan Knorr was still President, prior to Franz succeeding him, the Governing Body removed much of the power of the President of the WT Society.[2]

This was a curious phenomena which will be discussed later. That his power could be taken away so easily, is just one clue that the power controlling the Watchtower Society actually ultimately recides outside of the Society and works through a select clique within the elite of the Watchtower hierarchy.

FRED FRANZ, AN EARLY WT RELIGIOUS LEADER

Fred Franz, before joining the Watchtower Society, had studied to be a Presbyterian minister.[3] In 1913, while C.T. Russell was still considered the Faithful and Wise Servant, Fred Franz joined.[4] He was soon promoted to prominence in the Society, and as an early key player was a key speaker already in the early 1920s.[5] In 1924, he delievered talks over the WT Society's radio-station WBBR.[6] Some observers think he may have played a greater role in formation of the Watchtower's Theology during Rutherford's time, than is generally credited him.

Fred Franz remained a bachelor for his lifetime. As part of the Bethel Headquarters, he lived simply, although like other WT leaders because of their power he rarely lacked anything. He went on trips to places like Israel and Ireland. He earned a reputation of being friendly and of not being self-conscious to the point he'd walk around headquarters in slippers and mismatched socks.[7]

THE WT SOCIETY'S SCHOLAR

He was also the Society's Bible Scholar by virtue of a few college classes in Hebrew and Greek. Because he was their most skilled leader (his nephew Ray Franz would prove equally as adept until Ray's conscience bothered him), Fred's skill came under scrutiny at the Douglas Walsch Trial on that Tuesday. Much time and effort was spent in court on witnesses, to uncover the story behind the controversial New World

Translation of the Bible. It is clear from testimony that day, and that testimony is colloborated by testimony from other sources, that Fred Franz, as the Society's leading scholar, played a crucial role in the production of the NWT.

When asked, "Insofar as translation of the Bible itself is undertaken, are you responsible for that?"

To which Fred Franz answered, "I have been authorized to examine a translation and determine its accuracy and recommend its acceptance in the form in which it is submitted."[8]

The New World Translation was billed by the WT Society as the most literal translation available. The NWT itself expresses this, for instance, on pg. 9 of the Forward, of the 1950 ed., "We offer no paraphrase of the Scriptures. Our endeavor all through has been to give as literal a translation as possible, where the modern English idiom allows and where a literal rendition does not for any clumsiness hide the thought. That way we can best meet the desire of those who are scrupulous for getting, as nearly as possible, word for word, the exact statement of the original."

The anonymous Translating committee revised in 1961 and 1970 the NWT. They declare that "An effort was put forth to bring about even greater consistency in the renderings of the related parts of the Holy Scriptures,... the purpose was to attain to closer conformity to the literal reading in the original languages. All this process has resulted in revisions in the main text of the translation."[9]

According to one source connected with the translating committee, the translating committee sat around a table with 20-30 different translations, and went verse by verse picking the version that fit their theology best. Sometimes they relied upon Johannes Greber's spirit channelled translation.

Whether this is exactly how they created their "translation", is not critical at this point. The reader is asked to bear in mind, three pertinent items—

a. That the translation was an attempt to be the most literal translation possible. In this they have succeeded in points to where it is hardly readable. However, all translations must paraphrase to some degree, the languages involved are not constructed so that word for word translations could make sense. In other words, they do paraphrase in spite of their denials, but they have managed to produce a very literal translation. (This is not to imply that they used the best ancient manuscripts, just that they tried to be literal with the ones they chose.)

b. Fred Franz directed and edited the work. He gave the final approval and recommendation to print.

c. Other translations were consulted, if my sources are accurate, other translations formed the base or were relied upon heavily. The wording of the NWT supports this information.

So what? It's important to the discussion, because Fred Franz gives his Masonic membership away, when he translates at Hosea 12:14 the Hebrew word adonai= Lord as "grand master".

The word "adonai" is literally Lord. It is a single word that simply calls for its simple, direct, straightforward translation as Lord. Indeed, almost all translations (with a few minor exeptions) translate "adoni" in Hosea 12:14 as Lord, the Watchtower itself translates the word everywhere else in their NWT correctly as Lord. There is no conceivable, plausible explanation for calling God the "grand Master" except that it is a subtle signal of his Masonic membership. Even if we believe that the committee merely borrowed from other translations, there are no other translations that call God the grand Master at Hosea 12:14. For instance, Young's Literal, the NAS, NIV, NEB, AV, NKJ, and others simply use the obvious word Lord. An exception is the Jerusalem Bible which interjects "Yahweh". In this instance, the Catholic translation does a better job of promoting God's name than the Watchtower Society.

MORE EVIDENCE OF FRANZ'S MASONIC MEMBERSHIP

Other clues about Fred Franz's masonic membership have surfaced. The greatest evidence has been brought to light by another researcher.

His firsthand research (which is at some point to be published) may deal with the issue even more indepth.)[10] Certainly, if the New Order's plans are defeated it will owe a big debt to men like Russ Pine, who have labored hard to bring to light the actions of the conspiracy to unite the world under their political, economic, and religious domination.

FRANZ'S BACKGROUND

Franz is a German Jewish surname.[11]

It is interesting to note that the locations of Russell's hometown, Pittsburgh, and Franz's hometown are centers of Jewish thought and power. The location that Russell moved his headquarters to from Pittsburgh, Brooklyn, N.Y., is the center of Jewish power and thought in the world. As this author travelled through Israel, the question was never are you an American, but many times, are you from New York? because so many Jews recide in New York City.

Someone who went to the University of Cincinnati with Franz was Sidney S. Tedeshe, who was a Jewish Freemason, and a Rabbi after graduation. Tedeshe graduated from both the University of Cincinnati and the Hebrew Union College in 1913. He later got a Ph.D. from Yale in 1928. He became the Rabbi of Union Temple in Brooklyn, NY.[12]

Frederick's father was Edward Frederick Franz. He was apparently a German of Jewish heritage who professed to be of the Lutheran Church. Frederick's parents made a big display of Fred and his brother's Lutheran baptismal certificates which were framed and hung on the wall for all to see.

Fred and his brothers though were not sent at school age to a Lutheran school but to St. Joseph's Roman Catholic Church parocial school. According to Fred, he took part in Catholic Mass and in going to the Catholic confessional. (Catholics were expected to go to confession before Mass until after Vatican II when it quit being a rule.) Before he entered 3rd grade, his family moved to Cincinatti, OH which is across the river from Covington, KT. When they moved to Cincinnati, Fred and his brothers started attending the Second Presbyterian Church of Cincinnati where he had Bessie O'Barr as his Sunday School teacher, and a Mr. Fisher as his Sunday school superintendant.[13] Franz's family's changeability raises questions. Having Lutheran relatives, this author is fully aware of the deep ties, devotion, and stubborn loyalty many Lutherans have toward their church. To prominently display the infant baptismal certificates, etc. makes one wonder if this religiousness was a show considering how quickly they could switch churches.

A RHODES SCHOLAR?

Fred Franz and the WT Society have claimed he rejected the offer of a Rhodes Scholarship to work for the WT Society.[14] While making this claim to enhance Frederick Franz's scholastic credentials, it actually undercuts the reputation of his character in several ways. First, the Rhodes Scholarship people in response to querries have said Franz wasn't selected. On the surface it appears Franz has lied. To have "rejected" it means Franz is claiming it was offered to him. Even if Franz had sat through a personal interview with an election committee (which in the U.S. selects 32 scholars), and then was not selected— that is not the same as "rejecting" an offer of a Rhodes Scholarship.

Did Franz lie? Perhaps he didn't. Just maybe a secret offer of a Rhodes Scholarship did occur. If secret feelers had been put out, concerning whether he would want to go to Oxford or not, he just may have secretly rejected such an offer. What?

MYSTERIES OF THE RHODES SCHOLARSHIP

Cecil Rhodes was a British multimillionaire who during his life time was deeply involved in secret societies and his vision of a united world. His vision of a united world under B'rit-ish rule (that in Hebrew means the rule of the Covenant People, and is a way to legitimatize their One-World State) was a big part of his life early on. By age 22, he had already drawn up a will to leave his money for the purpose of furthering the British empire.[15]

Cecil Rhodes was a Scottish Rite Mason.[16] He contributed the land upon which the Bulawayo Lodge No. 2566, Rhodesia built a Masonic Temple.[17] He established the Rhodes Scholarships which to no surprise have tended to go to Masons and people sympathetic to his vision of a One-World-State.[18] Cecil Rhodes, along with some of his friends like the Rothschilds, founded a secret society based on the King Arthur Legends and his Round Table.[19] This group ties into the Pierre de Sion whose key facet is the Holy Grail and its legends which they are the caretakers of. Rhodes and Lord Rothschild in 1891 formed a "Circle of Initiates" known as the Round Table.[20]

The key to Rhodes' spiritual philosophy are Plato and Aristotle.[21] Rhodes' mentor, John Ruskin, was heavily into Plato and Plato's idea of an "ideal state" under a single world rulership.[22]

The Rhodes Scholarship was designed to bring together scholars, and it was viewed that they would learn the ruling class concepts of Rhodes' One-World-State vision. Rhodes and his friends are responsible for the Royal Institute of International Affairs, which expanded internationally and is known in the U.S. as the Council on Foreign Relations (CFR).[23]

Rhodes amalgamated the diamond mines in the Kimberley area of southern Africa under the Jewish corporation, the De Beers Consolidated Mines in 1888.[24] The Jewish De Beers have a monopoly on essentially the world's diamond market.[25] Diamonds are mined in places like South Africa and cut in Amsterdam. Rhodes "was disclosed as instigator of attack upon government of a friendly nation; forced to resign premiership (1896)."[26] Rhodes was involved in various political intriques, because he wanted the British to control South Africa for the fabulous financial benefits it would provide. When he died 6 million pounds were left which endowed 170 scholarships for youth from the British Empire and the U.S. to go to Oxford.[27] German students have been included off and on also.[28]

THE LEADERSHIP PASSES TO OTHERS

Fred Franz played a big role as the "oracle" of the Society. It was Governing Body member Karl F. Klein that perhaps first refered to Fred Franz as the WT's "oracle." But he became a figure head to conceal that the real directing influence of the WT Society was outside of the Society. A big 6'2" Jewish man has gone everywhere with Fred Franz as his guide these last few decades. This man, Natheer Salih, was needed because Fred became blind. However, for many years people at Bethel found that Salih was more like a bodyguard. Indeed, he was more than a bodyguard, for any communication to Franz has been going through Salih, who then returns with the "answer" from Franz. This Jewish man with obvious rich tastes, big expensive rings and watches, has become the President's mouthpiece, and in effect a decision-maker although he isn't part of the Governing Body.[29] Salih was in a position to protect against an old man saying the wrong thing.

THE TRIUMVIRATE

How has the leadership of the WT Society been determined? Apparently the guidance of the Society is by a power outside of the Society and this is secret. However, even those men who carry the titles of leadership are cloaked by the Society in the deepest secrecy. During a tour of the Brooklyn Headquarters, while associated with the Society, this Author found his questions concerning such items as the writing staff were given "answers" that avoided giving information.

Various stories exist about Rutherford's death. It is said that Rutherford, an alcoholic, while drunk, fell down some stairs at his California mansion.[30] The official story in the WT publication Let Your Name Be Sanctified (1961), pp. 335-336 describes Rutherford on his deathbed passing the mantle of authority like the prophet Elijah did to Elisha. The WT publication describes the mantle of Elijah falling to a composite three-man Elisah. According to Ray Franz, ex-Governing Body member, Rutherford told these three men to carry on after his death and to "stick together" as a team. These three men were Nathan Knorr, Fred Franz, and Hayden Coveinton.[31] Ray Franz has gotten of course his information on what happened from others, these others having a vested interest in what story would be told. Ray Franz trusting his WT brothers bought their story about Rutherford. The WT leaders maintained that Rutherford only left an oral will. A lawyer and author left only an oral will when he knew he was in ill health for some time?? Sure. What is reliably clear though is that these three men took over the rulership of the Jehovah's Witnesses, but when their group dissolved, the mantle was transferred to certain other men on the Governing Body who were also recepients for the One-World-State's directives.

Hayden Cooper Covington is also an interesting WT leader. He took the stand during the Douglas Walsh Trial in Scotland. Covington was a Jewish lawyer who earned his law degree at San Antonio School of Law in San Antonio, Tx. He began passing out Watchtower literature in 1934,[32] and was baptized in 1935.[33] He succeeded Judge Rutherford as the Jehovah's Witnesses' legal counsel in 1942. He won many cases for the Jehovah's Witnesses, sometimes with the help of the ACLU. He also took on clients like heavy-weight boxer Muhammed Ali. He personally argued 41 major cases before the U.S. Supreme court for Jehovah's Witnesses.[34]

Interestingly, Hayden became part of the Governing Body and was made Vice-President of the Watchtower Society from Jan. 13, 1942 until Sept. 24, 1945 without being part of the annointed class.

According to WT Theology the JWs are divided into two major classes, the annointed and the great crowd.[35] Supposedly the recruiting by God for the annointed class was completed by God in the early 1930s, but occasionaly when one of the annointed apostasize, they are replaced to keep the magic number of 144,000. The annointed are to be the governing ones. It may have been this blatant conflict with this official doctrine that caused Hayden Cooper Covington to step down from his positions. That is what the Nov. 1, 1955 WX p. 650 indicates.

NATHAN KNORR

Nathan Knorr took over the WT Presidency soon after Rutherford died. He was born in Bethlehem, PA. Apparently he had been baptized as a baby into the reformed church, although he possibly was of Jewish heritage. When he joined the International Bible Students at age 16, he had his name removed from their rolls.[36] He graduated from Allentown, PA. Nathan served the Society as an administrator and was not important in terms of their doctrinal gymnastics. He was important in seeing their plans put into action. However, statements made by a relative of Knorr's indicate that Knorr was aware of how the Watchtower Society is part of a world-wide conspiracy.[37]

Some of the other Governing Body members who may possibly be of Jewish extract may include Albert D. Schroeder, Karl F. Klein, and William Jackson.[38]

The Cult of the Double-Sexed God Jehovah

The WT magazine was forced to admit to some degree that problems of morality reached to the very top of the Watchtower Society, including homosexuality.[39]

The leaders of the WT Society belong to a group called the Governing Body. Even the names of this Governing Body are kept secret. For instance, when this Author called headquarter to try and get any information at all about the Governing Body the spokesperson at Headquarters refused to reveal anything, not even how many men served on the Governing Body.[40]

The following paragraph may offend some readers, however it is not included to embarrass any individual but to develop a point about the occult connections of the WT Society.

A number of men on the Governing Body have been bachelors all their life, and are believed by people who worked at headquarters to have been homosexuals.[41] Leo K. Greenlees was forced to resign when his homosexuality became public. He then moved to New Orleans. Governing Body member Ewart C. Chitty, was in the middle of a sexual act with a seventeen year old male Bethelite when some unexpected guests arrived and opened the door. The boy committed suicide. An unconfirmed report says that Chitty was forced to resign later. Ex-Bethelites also report strange behavior by the "oracle" of the Society—the principle light of the Society on religious matters, the

President Frederick Franz. It used to transpire that all the young boys would sit at Frederick's table, and that at other times he would discuss scriptures with them in the nude. That's passed, Frederick is now 97 years old. Other examples have been reported. Anyway, these specific examples are mentioned only to give some credence to the next discussion.

There may be a definite occult link between the homosexual activity of the WT leaders and witchcraft. It turns out that "Homosexual rites, which were most foreign to later religionists, and disturbing to Christian ideas, were associated most strongly with all that the Christian religion hated, notably occult powers."[42] For instance," In the Congo it was not unusual for a priest to dress as a women and be affectionately spoken of as 'the Grand Mother'.[43] " Further, "It is possible to link homosexuality with religion and magical practices all through the world."[44]

Several items might lead one to the conclusion that the homosexuality of the WT leadership is related to the occult.

1. Their relationship with the channeler Johannes Greber who lived in NY (later NJ) indicates a. that the leadership has occult connections and b. that they are willing to cover and lie about any occult connections.
2. Their belief going back to C.T. Russell that the perfect state of man is to have the sexual organs of both sexes. This androgenous belief goes back to Baal, to Mithras, Aphrodite, and the Hindu's Siva who are all depicted as double-sexed in some of their statues. It also relates to the Jewish Midrash. Rabbi Samuel-bar-Nachman (third century) says, "Adam when God created him was a man-woman androgune." Maimonides, a later Jewish scholar also believed this. The singular account of the creation of Brahm and Adam led various Jewish scholars to suggest that Jehovah, like Baal and the Syrian gods, was double-sexed.[45] The two words that make up the word Jehovah were composed with the male-female idea.[46] The Hebrew letter Hod (or J) was the virile organ, and Hovah was Eve, the mother of all living things, the procreator. This interpretation of Jehovah as bi-sexual has been preserved by the Cabbala and the mysteries of the Masons.

At first it may seem like jumping somewhat to connect a belief in an androgenous God to homosexuality, but after studying the lives of several homosexual religious leaders/witches that's exactly the connection they themselves make. For instance, Manly P. Hall, the great Masonic philosopher was homosexual. He makes this connection between it all, "These holy persons seldom took part in war, and frequently were distinguished by a costume combining elements of male and female attire. This practice has been common throughout the religious world and has influenced the dress of pagan priests and Christian clergy alike. The androgynous human being, in whom there is a spiritual union of male and female attributes, has been widely accepted as personifying a superior type capable of a greater understanding of the Father-wisdom and Mother-love potencies of Divinity. Such symbolism existed in all the great Esoteric Orders of the past."[47]

This leading 33rd degree Mason Manly P. Hall reports, "Philosophically, Adam may be regarded as representative of the full spiritual nature of man—androgynous and not subject to decay."[48] He suggests that Elohim may have been androgynous. From these it can be seen that Hall believes homosexuals are on a higher spiritual level.

3. Wicca, black witchcraft believes that Jesus is a great teacher, but not God.[49]

4. The use of the word Jehovah by Caballists and Masons has meant a double-sexed God.

This Author in researching the Occult noticed that there was a connection between homosexuality and the New Age. For instance, upon entering a New Age store called the Third Eye (see the chapter on the Mark of the Beast), he found that free Homosexual literature was being given out.

The whole idea of such connections seem bizarre to those of us who have had little to do with the occult or homosexuality. Yet, in trying to understand others, say for instance, Catholic nuns who openly flaunt their lesbianism, and who are also into the New Age, the possibility that witchcraft and homosexuality play a role with each other may be a worthwhile explanation.

As one climbs the ladder of the Watchtower Society's hierarchy he becomes more immune to any censor of immoral behavior. "Witnesses are resentful of the fact that it seems that Elders commit 'the same wrong over and over, and little is done—and yet if a publisher is caught sinning once, he or she is disfellowshipped almost on the spot!"[50] This Author has witnessed that double-standard. This is one more reason why it is possible that widespread homosexuality may have been practiced so long at Headquarters.

MECHANICS OF THE GOVERNING BODY

The Governing Body holds meetings at least weekly to discuss appointments, business, and recommendations by branch personnel.[51] The Governing Body in 1971 began a rotation annually by alphabetical order of the offices.[52] A WT spokesperson told the Brooklyn Heights paper that the Society now had 2 Vice-presidents, George Couch and a Pearson. The WT Society has made the Governing Body so mysteriously powerful that just the rubber stamp of their signature is enough authorization for anything.

NOTES

1. Trial Transcript of the Douglas Walsh Trial, 1954. Witness, Inc., Clayton, CA. has reprinted the full transcript.
2. Franz, Ray. Crisis of Conscience. Atlanta, GA: Commentary Press, 1983, p.73. As Vice-Pres. Fred made the motion limiting powers, but turned around and opposed it when voting.
3. Cole, Marley. Jehovah's Witnesses, The New World Society. NY: Vantage Press, 1955. Also see WT, May 1, 1987, p.24.
4. ibid.-both references, plus other sources give 1913 as the date.
5. Convention reports attest to his talks as early as 1921.
6. WT 5/1/1987, p.28
7. Harrison. Visions of Glory, p. 143.
8. Douglas Walsh v. The Right Honorable James Latham Clyde, M.P., P.C., Scotland, 1954, trial transcript, p. 88.
9. New World Translation, 1970 ed., "Forward",p.6.
10. Russ Pine has done four films that hopefully will become available at some time. They are The Naked Truth (TNT), Matrix of Power, Ancient Egypt-Light of the World, and Modern Day Religion.

11. Heintze A. and Dr. Paul Cascorbi. Die Deutschen Familiennamen geschichtlich, geographisch, sprachlich. Berlin: Ger. Buchhandlung des Waisenhausers, G.m.b.H., 1933, p. 199.
12. Denslow, 10,000 Famous Freemasons, Vol. IV, p. 224.
13. WT 5/1/1987
14. WTMay 1, 1987 and other references.
15. "Rhodes, Cecil John" art. Ency. Brit. Vol 19, 1960 ed.,p.258.
16. Denslow, op. cit., Vol. IV, p. 29-30.
17. ibid, p.30
18. Still, William T. New World Order. Lafayette, LA.: Huntington House, 1990, p. 151.
19. ibid.
20. ibid.
21. Various books about his life mention this, incl. Ency. Brit, Vol. 19, 1960 ed., p. 258.
22. Still, op. cit., p. 152
23. ibid.
24. Webster's Biographical Dictionary. Springfield, MS: G. & C. Merriam Co.,Pub., 1972, p. 1253.
25. Interview by author with an individual who had worked for De Beers.
26. Webster's Biographical Dictionary, p. 1253.
27. Various articles incl. Ency. Brit, Vol. 19, 1960 ed. pp. 258-260.
28. "Rhodes Scholarships" art. in Ency. Brit, Vol. 19, 1960 ed.
29. Various talks with ex-JWs, especially Russ Pine who has been studying the Governing Body for 31 years.
30. Report by a JW elder, and based on an older WT associate.
31. Franz, Ray. Crisis of Conscience. pp. 83-84.
32. Cole, Marley. Jehovah's Witnesses, p. 213.
33. Douglas Walsh Trial Transcript, p. 394
34. Cole, op. cit, p.213.
35. A sample of WT thinking in this mode is, "Since 1919 this 'faithful and discreet slave,' who is a composite person made up of all anointed Christian joint heirs of Jesus Christ, has been taking care of 'all his belongings' on earth....The governing body of the 'faithful and discreet slave' class is taken from the members of this same anointed, spirit-filled class, by God's spirit it is functioning. So, then, when the appointment of overseers is made by this governing body in harmony with the requirements laid down for overseers, it is really by the spirit that such overseers are appointed, although through human intermediaries." WT, Jan. 15,1958,p.46.
36. WT Nov. 1, 1955, p. 650.
37. Statements by relative of a high WT official indicating awareness of the important connections between the WT Society and the Masonic Lodge.
38. Analysis of references such as Zubatsky, David S. & Irwin M. Berent. Jewish Genealogy A Sourcebook of Family Histories, and Genealogies. NY: Garland Pub., Inc., 1984.
39. WT 1/1/86, p. 13
40. The answer to the Author's phone call on 1/29/91 inquiring about the Governing body, "We don't give out that information, but we'll send you some information about the

Jehovah's Witnesses." The only information the Author received was two Jehovah's Witnesses at his door with WTs and Awake!s.

41. Information concerning the homosexual activities of WT Governing Body members comes from confidential sources who have left Bethel headquarters. People risk a lot when they say anything about an organization with so much power over so many people, even this Author.
42. Leek, Sybil. The Complete Art of Witchcraft. NY: World Pub. Co.,p. 169
43. ibid.
44. ibid.,p.168
45. For instance,see George Foote Moore's work Judaism.
46. Leek, op cit., p. 177
47. Hall, Manly P. America's Assignment with Destiny. Los Angeles, CA.: Philosophical Research Society, p. 44-5.
48. Hall, Manly P. The Secret Teachings of All Ages, p. CXXVI
49. Leek, op. cit.,p.64
50. This quote is from Bergman, Jerry. The Mental Health of Jehovah's Witnesses. Clayton,CA: Witness, Inc., p.86.
51. 1978 Yearbook, p. 259
52. WT Dec. 15, 1971, p. 761

Chapter 1.14
THE NEW WORLD SOCIETY

Since 1871 a powerful religious organization has grown up, first headquartered in what is now Pittsburgh, PA and later Brooklyn, NY where it is today. It has established itself worldwide.

Americans are familiar with the door to door Jehovah's Witnesses. They are less familiar with the Watchtower Organization.

The Watchtower Society was actually established by a Knights Templar Mason Charles T. Russell to destroy, and to change the Christian churches.

In the process, an organization worth over a billion dollars has come into being, led by a secret group of men called the Governing Body. Out of the public's view, and even little known to Jehovah's Witnesses these men direct the details of the lives of the Jehovah's Witnesses.

The Governing Body has so much control that they have convinced JWs that the Watchtower Society never prophecied that 1975 would be the end of the world and Armaggeddon. The Watchtower Society's financial operations are totally secret. Some rumors have circulated that the WT Society is one funnel for money laundering. JWs would never believe that their Society and their Governing Body could ever do such a thing. Indeed the Governing Body has almost a godlike image with the rank and file Jehovah's Witnesses, which they have promoted through their slick propoganda.

Few today can escape the proselytizing efforts of the Jehovah's Witnesses. But few understand the organization that they are coming up against. The organization has frequently affected families, and the careers of tens of thousands of people caught up by its slick propoganda.

Much of what the Watchtower Society writes about itself is fantasy. I have not attempted in this chapter to write an encyclopedia of the organization and its people, but to describe some of its personalities, policies, and political pull in order to reveal some of the myths about the Watchtower Society.

PESONALITIES

General William P. Hall of the U.S. army and General Alexander P. Stewart were early supporters of Charles T. Russell. Although JWs are typically thought of as anti-military such was not the case in the early WT Society. Some early IBS were members of the military for years after joining the society.[1] General Hall was a West Pointer and a decorated sharpshooter. His family had associations with the Masons. General Hall was on the IBSA Committee of which Russell was the Chairman. General Hall was chosen to accompany C.T. Russell on his world-wide tour.[2]

Fred H. Robison was one of the seven WT leaders sentenced in June 1918 for violating the espionage act. A NY District Court sentenced him to many years of imprisonment, but he was released after only a short time in prison. Papers were introduced at the trial "showing their connection with German agents in the United States of America and Mexico."[3] At his sedition trial, Robison disclosed that his religious experience before joining the WT Society consisted entirely of several years service for the Christian Endeavor groups. He was not a member of any church prior to joining the International Bible Students. The Christian Endeavor groups were known to have departed from the Christian faith.[4] The President of the Christian Endeavor Society of America (and Sec. of the World Chapter) was Dr. Stanley B. Vandersall, who was a high ranking and active Freemason.[5]

William E. Van Amburgh was treasurer of the WT Society. Some of the older International Bible Students didn't trust him. If one considers what the Society was teaching is it any surprise? In court during the Sedition trial in 1918, he told the court that the Millenium of God had started in October, 1874.[6]
Van Amburgh was one of the suspected ringleaders by those who suspected foul play in the death of C.T. Russell. Before joining the WT Society, Van Amburgh had been active in the YMCA, and the Methodist church. He served on the editorial staff of the *Watch Tower,* along with the Jew R.H. Hirsh, Robison, and Rutherford.[7]

POLICIES

The WT Society has pushed their people hard to get out in field service, that is the door to door sales work. In order to squeeze more time out of their people the Society ordered the JWs not to have children. This was done in *WT* 11/1/1938 pp.323-324; in the *Children* book 1941, and could be seen in the *Awake!* magazine of 11/8/1974 p. 11.

About Christians the WT Society said, "Do not confuse Christianity with the so-called "Christian religion". The latter operates in the name of God and Christ but is wholly against Christ and his kingdom, which is the only hope of the human race. Religion labeled "the Christian religion" is a racket invented by the Devil to defame the name of Almighty God."--*Enemies,* p. 146.

About democracy the Society says, "Democracy is the perverted form of the third form of government. . .God's Holy Word says nothing about democracy...God is not the Author of any other ocracy than theocracy." The origin of democracy is demons.--*The New World,* pp. 69-70

Dr. L.W. Jones (of Jewish heritage) gave an address in a lodge building to the IBSA in 1911, "I was much impressed on looking around to see all of these beautiful mottoes. All of them seem to speak of the one word, "Loyalty," which we have on our badge...friends, the key...is "obedience." And surely, now is the time we must be loyal, and we will not be loyal if we are not obedient."--Convention Report for Convention at Seattle, Wash. July 2-3, 1911.

POLITICAL PULL

One ex-JW mother found out that the JWs had obtained the political pull of the Governor of her state, which Governor is heavily into the New Age movement, to win custody of her child.[8]

When a JW was arrested for peddling magazines without a license in Tucson, AR. The JW, Hal was found guilty of violating the city's ordinance No. 729 'Peddling Without a License'. The case was appealed to the Arizona Supreme Court. The next day, Judge Cella, who had sentenced him, had a mysterious fire that destroyed his whole office, and Hal was released.[9]

ACTIONS

During the Prohibition days, the WT President had fine Scotch whiskey smuggled into the U.S. from Canada by the Branch Overseer.[10]

In 1938, Rutherford tried to enlist the support of various civic agencies to support the Watchtower Society and its upcoming Seattle Convention.[11]

During Rutherford's presidency, the office of an enemy of the Watchtower Society was destroyed by a special team of Jehovah's Witnesses that broke into the office of Koerber at night and destroyed evidence against the Watchtower Society.[12]

So the Watchtower Society clearly will break laws, will deal with political power clandestinely, and operate in a total cloud of secrecy. It has remained rabidly hostile to Christians. The sinister nature of the upper Watchtower leadership has been clouded in the tightest secrecy, while the rank and file willingly submit to their dictatorship.

NOTES

1. The Case of the International Bible Students, Vol. 1, Court transcript page 717, area 2150.
2. Articles mentioning General Hall are somewhat numerous in the WT Societies publications. WT Oct. 1, 1911 discusses Hall's selection to serve on the committee to go with Russell around the world. WTR p. 4946 has a picture of Russell and Hall, pg. 4888 has some about his life and his opening speech at at WT Convention.
3. The Case of the International Bible Students Association--this is a Witness, Inc. reprint of the trial transcipts. Quote is from page 96 area 287.
4. Masselink, William. What Is Wrong with the Lodge. Chicago, Il.: National Christian Association, p.24.
5. ibid. quoting a Columbus, OH newspaper and information also in Christian Cynosure, Aug. 1947.

6. The Case of the International Bible Students Association, Vol. I, pp. 659, 672.
7. ibid., p. 536.
8. confidential interview
9. WT Magazine, circa 1942, p. 16.
10. The Iconoclast. Also described in other sources.
11. Consolation No. 487, 1938, p. 9 (now Awake!) quoting The Catholic Northwest Progress newspaper of Fri. April 22, 1938.
12. Peter O. Moyle and his father Olin Moyle who left the WT Society's Bethel.

Chapter 1.15
The WT's Mein Kampf

Jehovah's Witnesses and ex-Jehovah's Witnesses will be surprised to see my account of Armageddon differing from the prevailing viewpoint on various points.

It is quite extraordinary to suggest that Jehovah's witnesses would fight during Armageddon, especially since they have built up such a public reputation for being conscientious objectors.

This author is quite conscious that wild accusations or overstatements could damage the credibility of this book. He is including the suggestion that the Jehovah's Witnesses may be ordered to take more than a passive role due to careful consideration. This Author doesn't know what the future holds. He does suggest it is naive to think that the WT Society poses no potential threat.

Several points can be established beyond doubt. These are:

1 The Jehovah's Witnesses are not conscientious objectors in the classic sense. They have adamently declared that themselves. Their reasons for not participating in war are not from being conscientious objectors.[1]

2. Jehovah's Witnesses are instructed by their leaders to physically defend themselves (Awake! Sept.8,1975,pp27,28) and other JWs (WT June 1,1968, p.367) and that there is no bloodguilt in a death blow to an attacker (Awake! Sept.8,'75). Over the entire history of the Watchtower movement there are numerous cases when the JWs have felt the need to physically attack and seriously injure those they consider to be threatening.[2] One JW attack in N.Y.C. left dozens of people hospitalized.[3]

3. The WT Society is anticipating a military attack upon themselves during Armageddon.[4]

4. The WT Society's literature does make statements that do include the JWs in the fighting at Armageddon. These statements are on the record, in spite of other WT statements to the contrary.[5]

5. There are numerous case histories from Africa, where WT converts after reading WT literature, have got the mistaken impression God wanted them to kill. So they have gone out and killed. The WT argues that their message has been misunderstood. That may be so, but the point remains that it is at best difficult to clearly understand WT intentions.

The WT Society has played a big role in destroying the colonial governments in Africa, and then in limiting the success of African leaders to try to create nations out of borders left over from colonial rule.

This Author fully recognizes that the WTB&TS has urged their people to be politically neutral, and to stay aloof from politics.

But such neutrality has in some cases in reality translated into political sabotage. When black African leaders try to create national identities and build national concensus from odd ball groups of people and bounderies that are meaningless to Africa, and then the JWs block their efforts, and by intense proselytizement encourage others to block their efforts, then it is understandable that African national leaders have often viewed the JWs as a thorn in their side.

And while the JW literature has played a big role in promoting riots, murders, strikes, and other tensions, the WT Society simply ignores their responsibility by claiming that they are not responsible for people misunderstanding their literature.

In other words, an event (effect) is caused by a certain particular cause. Just because the WT did not want the effect that is caused, they feel they are relieved of any responsibility for the effect that they caused.

In Zaire, the Society was held responsible for the 1961 Luba rebellion.[6]

In Southern Rhodesia, especially at Wankie in 1923, "the Watchtower became a kind of surrogate union movement... and was a major element in one of the earliest strikes in the country."[7]

In the eastern province of what was Rhodesia"... protests led by the Watch Tower preachers brought a quick crack-down from the colonial authorities."[8]

A Watch Tower self proclaimed prophet Tomo Nyirenda and his associates murdered 174 people before Nyirenda was captured and executed by the British colonial government.[9]

"... the Watch Tower was a worker's movement. The revolutionary tenor of its teachings helped pave the way for the first modern labour protests on the Northern Rhodesian Copperbelt, the 'rolling strikes' of 1935."[10]

If my literature incites people to kill and riot, am I guilt free? The WT Society has never expressed (to this Author's knowledge) remorse for those who became victims of overzealous WT readers. The Society's reaction is to stress that these tragedies are not their fault.

In Africa when a political party loses and is outlawed, their leaders at times seek refuge by joining the JWs. Although the JWs are in their own eyes neutral, by providing a haven for dissidents, and by proselytizing for the hearts of the people in competition with ruling political parties, they appear in practice to be a political threat.

If the WT Society's message were not so anti-state, it would be different. But the Witnesses are taught that their governments represent Satan, and that allegience should go solely to the WT Society in N.Y.C.

Is the WT Society merely a religious faith, or is it a government as it so often has called itself? It may be the " perfect scam; call one's government a non-political religion -and then who can dare oppose you? But the Witnesses know who rules them. They are told the WT Society is the voice of God (WT 6/15/57, p.370) They are told that rejecting the WT Society is rejecting God. (WT 2/15/76 p.124) They are told the WT Society is their mother.( ) They are told that the God's sole visible channel is the WT Society and they must be submissive to it. (WT) They are told to avoid independent thinking, and not to question the WT Society. (WT Jan. 15,1983, pp.26-27) The WT Society is not just any government, it is a very autocratic dictatorial one, but they believe it is the only legitimate government, all others are Satanic.

3.

4. See point 3 of the WT's Mein Kampf for an example of a statement on this.

5. See point 7 of the chapter The WT's Mein Kampf for ~~Some~~ examples of ~~the~~ such type of statements.

6. Hodges, Tony. Jehovah's Witnesses in Central Africa. (prepared for the U.N.), p. 1.

7. ibid., p. 4

8. Cross, Sholto. The Watch Tower Movement in South Central Africa, 1908-1945. unpublished D. Phil. thesis, Oxford, 1973.

9. Cross, Sholto, op. cit; and Rotberg, Robert I,. The Rise of Nationalism in Central Africa, The making of Malawi and Zambia, 1873-1964, Harvard, 1966, pp. 142-146.

10. Hodges, Tony, op. cit., p. 5.

A NEW PARADISE ON EARTH

LOOK at those tall trees, pretty flowers and high mountains. Isn't it beautiful here? See how the deer is eating out of the little boy's hand. And look at the lions and the horses standing over there in the meadow. Wouldn't you like to live in a house in a place like this?

God wants you to live forever on earth in a paradise. And he doesn't want you to have any of the aches and pains that people suffer today. This is the Bible's promise to those who will live in the new paradise: 'God will be with them. There will be no more *death or crying or pain. The old things have passed away.'*

Jesus will see to it that this wonderful change takes place. Do you know when? Yes, after he cleans the earth of all badness

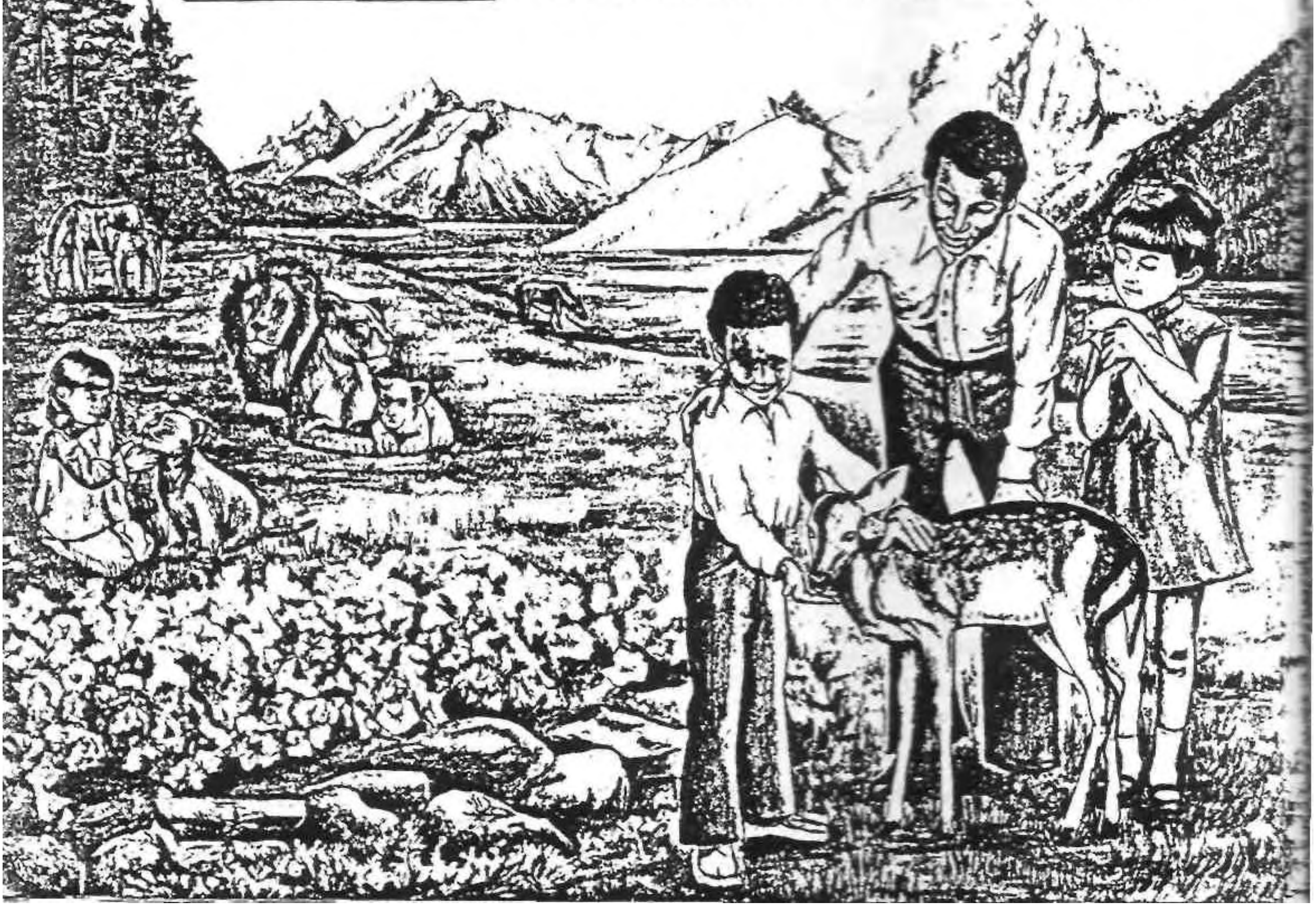

My Book of Bible Stories, 1978, p. 115.

9.2 The WATCHTOWER'S Mein Kampf

The title to this chapter is not derived from an actual document called Mein Kampf, but rather because the Watchtower Society's words spell out a sinister future, much in the way Hitler spelled out his plans to wipe out certain undesirables. The coincidence is not coincidence. Hitler founded his Nazi religion on Hindi (New Age) beliefs. This author has repeatedly during the course of his research come across New Agers referring to Hitler as one of them.

The Watchtower Society adveritises themselves as Christians. They don't now directly identify themselves with the New Age Movement.

The Watchlower Society does a good job of portraying their Millenium as a wonderful paradise. Hitler also promised his people a 1,000 year reign.

The Society anticipates a special race in the New Order. This New Age race is to be especially righteous and spiritual.

Allow the Author to digress. There is a certain disquieting flaw in the WT's history that perhaps when taken with some modem recent WT statements produces an uneasiness. Permit the Author to dig up the WT's unrepented and covered up racist past. It indicates an inability of the Society to admit faults. Who is going to keep the Society honest in the New Age if they have been able to hide their racism during this century? At one time the Society was simply racist. Consider the following Watchlower Society messages, which arc but a sampling. "The negro race is supposed to be descended from Ham, whose special degradation is mentioned in Gen. 9:22,25" WT 8/1/1898 A black man whose skin was turning while was hailed in the WT 10/1/1900 as proof that the New Age was about here. The WT 7/15/02 declares Caucasions are more intelligent than others. Russell's Studies in the Scriptures. Vol.6,p.490 advises to keep the races segregated

as New Creatures. On and on the articles went like this. Reformers, such as Martin Luther King, Jr. was to become, were branded satanic. WT 2/1/52 "It is generally believed that the curse which Noah pronounced upon Canaan was the origin of the Black race." The Golden Age 7/24/29 Even up to recent times segregation was practiced. While others were fighting discrimination; the Witnesses were practicing discrimination, yet fighting for the right not to salute the flag and going to jail for it. Their priorities are disquieting.

The Society has never admitted to their racism, or repented of it. In all due fairness, the rank and file JWs are in these times very commendable in their acceptance of racial differences. However, the Governing Body continues to make decisions that reflect a racial bias. Raymond Franz gives an example of that in their decision not to translate the AID Bible encyclopedia into Spanish, because supposedly the Spanish speaking JWs wouldn't use it.

The Society promotes the idea that in the Millenium there will be brotherhood. That is an interesting concept, because it implies tolerence, and acceptance, and love.

For now, let's accept the WT's word that it believes in brotherhood, and that in their Golden Age to come there will be this love, and acceptance, and tolerance. Bear in mind, the WT Society has consistently said that all men resurrected into the New Order will have their same personalities as before.

Most of the resurrected will be all the wicked people throughout history that lived before the JWs began seperating the sheep from the goats. Likewise, those that survive the revolution, the battle of Armageddon will also have only the same personality as they always had. From this is to come a special race.

The Watchlower Society has been brutally frank in their literature about what life will really be like under their rule in the New Age. However, because these items are slipped into articles along with nice garden-like paradise pictures with people smiling and a lot of verbage, few people, if anyone, have really stopped to assimilate the whole picture and digest what they arc really saying.

It's interesting that the Communists and the Nazi have always spelled out publically to their people what was intended. There seems to be several reasons for this according to political scientists. They have done that while simultaneously painting a rosy picture to other countries. Equally interesting is how most foreignors have tended to prefer to ignore clear statements of evil intentions. In spite of repeated warning by Germans who were scared of Hitler's intentions, the Allies gave him Czechoslovakia. A phenomena for social scientists to study.

Hitler spelled out what he would do in Mein Kampf, but most people choose to ignore it. The WT Society has also prepared its people, while at the same time keeping the illusion going that paradise will be wonderful. Hitler had the Hitler Youth sold on his wonderful predictions for the future. The Society has also maintained an illusion of pacifism which when juxtaposilioned against numerous statements to the contrary when dealing with the last battle, ought to at least raise some eyebrows.

This author would never want to live in the New Age 1984 Orwcllian world that the Watchtower Society describes in their own literature.

This Author has taken a few quotes from older WT material in the following report—but in general most is fairly recent. However, the older material is relevant along with the new in that it hasn't ever been denied, or changed, and today's Governing Body was around when it was published, and finally modern WT literature tells the same story.

THE WATCHTOWER'S MEIN KAMPF

The actual quotes documenting each of the following will follow this summary.

According the Watchtower Society the future New Age has this waiting for us. l. A new mark on the forehead will be required to survive the revolution.(more on what this is about later) 2. A fight between "God's Kingdom" (read WT Soc.) and those now in power breaks out 3. precipitated by an attack on the WT Society 4. God's forces and the world clash. 5. The heavenly Zion is actually in part the WT Society 6. The WT Society is God's government, and speaks for him 7.The JWs fight

in the revolution, 8. along with other revolutionary groups 9. The genocide of all Christians 10. and those without the mark begins. 11. A time of slaughter and pain equal to all the bloodshed in history begins. 12. The Society doesn't give advice to Jehovah's Witnesses on where to hide, or protect themselves. 13. The JWs are to treat this as a time of great joy. 14. Tears are not allowed for any victims. 15. The WT Society survives Armageddon to lead the New Age Society. 16 The Society is God's government now and in the Millenium 17.They are training their loyal people right now to govern during the Millenium. 18. Does the slaughter end with the initial genocide?- no, executions continue during the whole New Age period 19. People in the New Age are afraid 20.The WT Society will serve as judges. 21. Their secret police force will have absolute control and even control over the minds. 22. Instant punishment will be handed out 22. Ambitious people will be killed or brainwashed 23. People will be afraid and not permitted to mourn for victims of the slate 24.The world will be reeducated. 25 They must confess how evil Christianity is. 26. People will learn a 1-world-language. 27.The education will be transforming (read brainwashing) 28. Laws will be taught them. 29. People will work hard 30. They will be slaves 31. History books will disappear- the Bible will no longer be used. Many of today's books can be expected to disappear. 32. Executions will occur for any infraction of disobedience. 33. Big brother will watch everything. 34.Factories will be destroyed and closed. 34.The people will be sent to the countryside to plant. 35.Conveniences will be rarer. 36.Life will be in harmony with new age cycles. 37. Vegitarian and new age health food ideas will be around. 38. Rosicucian and Theosophical ideas about animals will be in force. 39.A Gandhi style of home industry as in India will come into being. 40. Marriage is controlled. 41. All marriages arranged by the government. 42. At first children will be allowed, 43. but they will belong to the state. 44. Then the population will be de-sexed, and 45. the only new people will be those resurrected (this author suggests possibly test-tube babies from baby factories?) 46. Christ who is Satan's brother will rule invisibly but will never show himself. 47. God will never communicate with the world 48. But his occultic power will be used in the Millenium. 49 People will still be the same people as they are today 50. but they will not be taught anything of Christ's redemption, 51. but they will be perfected through training, the Laws, and executions. 52. But what is really wild is that the JWs have all these visions of the New Order being a lazy garden paradise, while the WT Society say that they will spend the first seven months burying dead bodies. Pass out the gas masks! That certainly is one picture one doesn't get from all their colored pictures, but it is what they warn JWs it will be like in the New Order. 53. People will have to wait to see anyone resurrected, because it will take some time before things are ready for any one to be resurrected.

1. A new mark on the forehead will be required to survive the revolution.

One of the WT Society's methods is to hint at something in their literature in a vague fashion and then later come along and reinterpret it in a more precise manner or even in an unexpected manner. When they teach that a mark on the forehead is absolutely needed they are laying the ground work for their people to accept the New Age Mark of the Beast. On the one hand the Society says the mark is symbolic. But then it says that a persons doesn't automatically acquire the mark simply because he has done all the right things. The mark is symbolic alright. But this author suggests it's symbolic of a sinister empire. Somehow the JW is to receive this, but it isn't acquire by just doing all the right things. An allusion to "standing in line" is made in the United in Worship book.

2.A fight between "God's Kingdom" and those now in

power breaks out.

How will there be a war between God's kingdom and the world? "Such wars during the centuries prior to 1914 were mere wars against human nations, human governments; but the wars that the nations, including those of Christendom, were to fight at the consumation of the system of things were to be against God's kingdom and its King Jesus Christ, on the issue of world domination."A New Heavens and A New Earth. 1953,p.246. Note the fight is between more than just Christ but with "God's kingdom."

3. precipitated by an attack on the WT Society. The final assault on the New World Society will provoke the final battle. A New Heavens & A New Earth. 1953,p.32 This will be a military attack on the Jehovah's Witnesses KJ,1971,p.360

4.God's forces and the world's clash.

What alliance makes up God's Kingdom forces at Armageddon?

"At Armageddon the nations and demon powers invisibly behind them will meet up with the Invincibles, 'kings from the rising of the sun", namely Jehovah God and his Son Jesus Christ." A New Heavens and A New Earth, p.290, para. 7

5.The heavenly Zion is actually in part the WT Society. We read much about a heavenly Zion in WT material. Who is God's woman, the heavenly Zion?

"The creating of the new heavens at the Kingdom's birth A.D. 1914 was not accompanied by the creating of the promised new earth, for Jehovah's witnesses on earth were desolated during the world war that then began. According to the appearance of them by 1918 God's woman, the heavenly Zion, their mother, was desolate and a rag-covered captive in the dust at Babylon's feet....In 1919 Jehovah...rescued the remaining ones." A New Heavens & A New Earth, p.322

The "heavenly Zion" in this passage is definitively linked to the WT Society leaders here on earth. The "heavenly Zion",

God's woman was captive on earth. It must be then the WT Society that is being referred to or in the least the WT Society and the dead members of the elect that must make up part of the "heavenly Zion." "On earth today the New World society is the only group that is doing true constructive work." Ibid, 328. You mean the WT Society plans to keep on governing after the revolution? "The survivors of Almighty God's victorious war will step out as pioneers into the new earth. Although spread all over the earth according to their pre-Armageddon location, they will promptly operate together as a new-world society in harmony with the theocratic organization already established among them." Ibid. 343-344. This sounds like a subtle hint, "promptly report for orders, so that you can work in harmony." "The new heaven is the government of Messiah, The Theocracry, born and in power." WT June 1,1943
Who will rule the New Order? The WT Society. "The NEw World Society on earth really started with the remnant when restored from Babylon in 1919...the new earth can rightly be said to have been founded in this remnant, for the New World society continues on for eternity on earth." A New Heavens & A New Earth, p.338

6.The Watchtower Society is God's government and speaks for him.
7. The JWs fight in the revolution.
Who fights? To protect themselves the Society writes, "Jehovah's woman in heaven brought forth her male child, her theocratic Messianic government....Therefore, let all earthly, man-made governments be put on notice that God's kingdom is not established by any seditious, revolutionary movement of Jehovah's witnesses on earth." A New Heavens and A New Earth, p.222 And yet three pages further Rutherford's oft-quoted 1922 Cedar Point Speech is given which instructs JWs "Be faithful and true witnesses for the Lord. Go forward in the fight until every vestige of Babylon lies desolate." See also Babylon the Great! p.464 The only sense that reconciles both these statements is that the true legitimate King has been born, and that his claim to

the throne can't be taken away. But that meanwhile his foot soldiers will be out destroying Christendom until every vestige of Christendom is destroyed.

When the revolution comes people will say, "I thought Christ and the angel were going to do this." The WT Society will point to a long list of statements where they warn that the revolution actually begins with people like the communists. Babylon the Great! p.537 The book Religion. 1940 compares JWs to an army of locust striking terror into Christendom, (see p.183 ff) When the revolution, or Armaggeddon comes just what will the loyal JWs be doing under orders from their secretive Governing Body? "...they will immediately begin working under the direction of the 'new heavens' of Christ and his 144,000 associate kings and priests to subdue the earth." (Life Does Have a Purpose. WTB&TS, 1977,p.l41) A Resolution was made that the "faithful remnant...are eager to continue in the fight until and through Armageddon..." (Informant. Sept. 1944) "Will some people be executed? There will be Royal Orders "of an executioner against wicked enemies." (Holy Spirit-The Force Behind the Coming New Order!. WTB&TS, 1976, p. 172-173) The other sheep (that is most JWs) must prove their faith during this by their works. (Children. 1941,p307) "Any not desiring to serve Jehovah will be executed, rightly." (Let God Be True, p.269) "Jehovah's D-day of Armageddon may be strictly a military secret..."(WT, Oct. 15,1952,p.614) "It is a combat between God's organization under Christ Jesus and Satan's invisible and visible organization." (The Truth Shall Make You Free. 1943, p.348) Jehu's Chariot of God is God's organization. The WT Society is compared to when Jehu went to slaughter Baal-worshippers. (Children. 1941,p.201) At the St. Louis assembly the Pioneers were greeted, "Well, it should refresh anyone's heart to greet a company of real fighters, that are not only willing to fight, but to fight for the greatest thing that has ever been known or ever will be known, namely, the great Theocratic Government. " (Report of the J.W. Assembly, St. Louis. 1941, WTB&TS, p.43)

8.other revolutionary groups fight at Armageddon.

One of the best examples of this are the WT quotes which declare that Armageddon will be like the French Revolution. Occultic Masonic groups are known to have created the French Revolution. The Society tells us under the title: French Revolution. A Foregleam of Things To Come.

"From autumn 1793, the revolutionary government set up a vast plan for dechristianization. The aim was to build a "new man" who would be rid of vice. The Catholic religion was accused of trying to take advantage of the people's credulity. Some churches were destroyed, while others were turned into barracks. The clergy were forced to quit their vocation...Those who refused were arrested and executed."

"The French Revolution sowed ideas that later grew into both democracies and dictatorships. It also showed what can happen when political powers suddenly turn against organized religion. In this, it may provide a foregleam of things to come.—Revelation 17:16; 18:1-24" (Awake! 12/22/1989, p.28)

Docs this mean the JWs receive help from others? There is no mixing of good and evil forces according to The 1952 Yearbook. Mon. June 16. Nor will the JWs try to get any converts, for it is too late once the battle begins, according to the 1951 Yearbook. Fri., Oct. 12.

Who else will murder the Christians? Military units no longer acting under orders from their original governments, in the manner that the French military in the French revolution killed the clergy. (Awake! Dec. 22, 1989) Secular forces will leave the Christians "completely desolated" (KJ, 1971, p.289.) Christendom will also be destroyed by the U.N. (KJ, 1971, p.367)

The fighting is summed up in that God will "dash them all to pieces at the final war of Armageddon." (1949 Yearbook, Sept.3) and "Christ will strike the enemy with confusion and the various elements of Satan's visible organization will fight and annihilate one another." (This Means Everlasting Life. 1950, p.263)

9.The genocide of all Christians begins. "The so-called 'Christendom', with its demon religion, is in the most reprehensible position of all because 'Christendom's' leaders have fraudulently and blasphemously posed as the representatives of Almighty God..."(Religion. 1940,p.79) "They call themselves shepherds of the flock...The Christian Clergy...That they will die in Armageddon is certain...they will demonstrate that they belong to Satan and are unworthy of life..."(Light, p.215) "Christendom will be completely blotted out."(1943 Yearbook. July 18) "...all those clinging to the old world will suffer annihilation." (Report 1942 Assembly. WTB&TS, p.8)

11. "The greatest war and trouble that the world has ever known is just ahead." (Golden Age, #278, 5/14/1930) "The fight is on! Now the greatest issue of all ages will be settled by the most tremendous battle ever fought, and there will never be another. Now all four of the war chariots abreast, and all driving furiously, come out from between the "mountains"; and thus is pictured Jehovah's entire militant organization, foursquare and complete rushing into the battle." "...before Jehovah's irresistible forces the enemy shall crumble like a rotten wall." "Jehovah's forces are attacking every part of the enemy stronghold." (Preparation, 1933, p.311)

Is the destruction just to governments?

No. Everyone who supports the world as it is now, and who will not submit to a Big Brother-1984 type government of this New Order will be eliminated.

Under the caption "Beneficial Results" in the WT book True Peace and Security, p. 43 note the question, "What will result from the destruction of the present world system and its supporters? The text then relates that wonderful things will come from the annihilation of anyone committed to the present system.

Who else will be--as they say "cleansed" from the earth?

"God will cleanse the earth of all who ruin it." (You Can Live Forever in Paradise on Earth, WTB&TS, p. 15) Page 14 continues, "Rather, as happened at the worldwide flood in Noah's day, it will mean the end only of bad people...those serving God will survive...on an earth made clean, they will enjoy freedom from all who want to oppress them." (This author notes that the Scriptures actually say all people are sinners. The idea that some people are good and others are bad is not scriptural. God loves all people. The idea that the earth can be cleansed by eliminating bad people smacks of Nazism and New Age threats to eliminate Christians.)

12.Quest. 30 "Would it be wise to try to hide during the great time of trouble, and wouldn't it be safer in the country than in the city?" (The cryptic reply-) "I advise you to hide before the time of trouble."(11th Souvenir Report, Con-Reports, p.20) Although the WT Society has stated it expects many terrible things to happen, they seem to have taken no precautions to elliviate the pain that is to come. The same thing happened in Nazi Germany. The JWs were told simply, "Jehovah will protect you." This attitude is reflected in the following quote, "Those who maintain their integrity toward God and who remain true and faithful to the Theocratic Government will receive protection and salvation from the disasters of Armageddon." (1940 Yearbook, p.215)

13. The JWs are to treat Armageddon as a great time of joy. "a great slaughter...This great carnage at Armageddon...it will...be to those who delight themselves in Jehovah...joy to their hearts and will give them strength to go onward in their work and service which God may yet have for them to do on earth." (1931 Yearbook. Dec.25) "...Allow your mind to dwell upon God's righteous new world. Cultivate a strong desire for it. Keep a clear-cut vision of it before you all the time. Meditate upon it. Picture yourself walking in the midst of its paradisaic beauty. Feel its peace and tranquility. See yourself looking at the ruins of one of the old-world cities and at happy members of the New World Society busily clearing away those ruins." WT July 1, '57 (This sounds to this Author like a New Age visualization.)

14. Tears are not allowed for any victimes. "The present mourning of the people world-wide speaks out plainly its own meaning, but now such mourning will not much longer continue. The battle of Armageddon will destroy and remove completely the cause of mourning, the wicked bearing rule." (The New World, p.103) "...Jehovah will show her (Christendom) no pity at the end of the system of things." (You May Survive Into Paradise...l955,p.215?)

15."...as the smoke of Armageddon's battle clears, Jehovah's visible organization will still be here..." (Let Your Kingdom Come. 1981, p.176) The WT refers to its present annointed leadership as the "remnant". "It seems probable that some of the remnant may be used for a time after Armageddon in directing the people in the way of the kingdom." "...the people will come to Jehovah's temple, his holy organization,..." (Preparation, 1933, p.329) "The New World society will be still here on earth after Armageddon has purged the earth." (New Heavens & a New Earth, p.330) "The restored remnant of spiritual Israelites dwell at the center or naval of the earth, that is, they are at the center of the New World society." (You May Survive...1955, p.317)

16. Who will rule the New Order? the Watchtower Society. "The New World society on earth really started with the remnant when restored from Babylon in 1919...the new earth can rightly be said to have been founded in this remnant, for the New World society continues on for eternity on earth." (, p. 338) "You mean the WT Society plans to keep governing after the revolution? "The survivors of Almighty God's victorious war will step out as pioneers into the new earth. Although spread all over the earth according to their pre-Armageddon location, they will promptly operate together as a new-world society in harmony with the theocratic organization already established among them." (,p.343-344) "In the endless time to come there shall not be different governments on earth at the same time, one style of government best suited for one section of the land, and another style for another section.. There will be no self-determination of peoples under the "new heavens", different groups of people having each a distinct and independent form of human government. There will be only ONE GOVERNMENT, indivisible, world-wide, only one central authority...All humankind under them shall be subject to them as unto the King whom they visibly represent:..." What is this government? It is in Brooklyn, NY known as the Watchtower's Governing Body. A very secretive group-so secretive the WT refused to tell this author anything about it, not even how many are on it. This Author didn't need their help to learn this. Anyway this group is slated to lead. On page 133 of the recent publication You Can Live Forever On Planet Earth, a picture is shown of two JWs going door-to-door, the caption reads, "Subjects of God's government must tell others about it." Another tip off that they plan to rule, is that according to their theology, the heavens were cleansed of evil in 1914, yet today God's government rules "In the Midst of Enemies" (You Can Live Forever On Planet Earth, pp. 136-142) God's government must today be on earth, because Christ is safe in heaven, and is not in the midst of enemies.

17."God has been selecting, preparing and training the new government of those who will live on earth in the new system." (The Truth that leads to Eternal Life, p. 73) The WT School of Gilead is training administrators of the Kingdom government, "originally designed for training missionaries...Also receiving training on how to teach for the expanded work during the Millenium." (1952 Yearbook, p.51-52)

18.After the genocide of Christians, and the executions of all who do not have the mark, the New Order will be in process, will the executions stop? "The new heavens of Jesus Christ,...and his 'bride,'...will then be in complete control over the earth. So there is nothing to hinder such children in attaining to a hundred years of age and eternity. And a man who attains to a hundred years of age need not then die as if he had lived his normal span of life....Hence if anyone then lived a hundred years and was executed for willful disobedience to the "new heavens" King, he would be dying relatively a mere youth or child in view of the endless eternity he might have lived. If he did die at a hundred years of age, it would not be then because of extreme age and decrepitude."(A New Heavens and a New Earth, pg 332, para 28) "If one then dies either under or at the age of a hundred years, it will be because of the curse that one may bring upon himself because of steady, willful insubordination to the King.' (Ibid, pg.333, para. 29) Note, Big Brother will execute in the New Order, but very quietly. The option of a long life will be offered a New Age citizen in return for his obedience. Indeed the WT Nov.15,38 p. 1 enunciates, "What will be required of each individual composing that multitude? Obedience. That one word answers the question. God's instructions to his creatures concerning obedience cannot be too strongly emphasized." In the New Order it will be O.K. to execute those who are disobedient, because they will be 100 years old. Hitler, who exterminated millions was relieved of his guilt in part because he believed in reincarnation and that the ones he. exterminated would still see a long life. The WT rationale is similar.

19."...mankind will fear and tremble at all the goodness and prosperity Jehovah shall bring to them." (The Finished Mystery, p.89)

20.In the following quote the parenthesis are the WT's "...and all judges of the earth (the visible representatives on earth of the Theocratic Government)" (WT 11/15/38 Article on God's New Earth.) Russell at various times mentioned the numbers of judges he thought would precide, for instance see his Hell pamphlet, p.26.

21."A spiritual police force will have humanity under absolute control. Every misdeed will be punished as soon as it is determined upon and before it is shall have been put into effect." (The Finished Mystery, p.334) "Any not desiring to serve Jehovah will be executed, rightly." (Let God Be True, p.269)

22."The trial of these is more favorable because the evil influences will then have been removed, and society and Christ's righteous government will be favorable to righteousness, and faithful obedience will then be rewarded and wrongdoers instantly punished."(Man's Salvation, p.89)

23."There will be no ambitious and stronger ones on earth then to push themselves forward...All suchlike will have been wiped out...This will preclude all ambitious and stronger ones from exercising political propensities and seizing the government or any part of it."(WT June 1,1943)

24."An extensive educational work will be neccessary, therefore, in the course of the thousand-year reign when billions of 'unjust' dead, need instruction in God's law..."(Let God Be True, p.266) "The greatest educational program of all time will be carried forward under the Kingdom organization." (Let Your Kingdom Come, p.181)

25."The nations of all the earth shall come to the new order of things and cheerfully admit that the teachings of the clergy were chiefly lies and vanity." (The Finished Mystery, p.89)

26."...the wiping out of language barriers will be accomplished only by the same power of Jehovah God during The Theocratic Government...(Consolation, Nov. 8, 1941, p.26)

27.The effect of the New Order's control on its citizen's minds will be a "transforming effect." (A New Heaven & A New Earth, p.333)

28. Let God Be True, p. 270 speaks of how the people will "need instruction in God's law."

29."AI1 will need to be real workers..."(Let Your Kingdom Come, p. 177)

30. In referring to the New World the WT 1/1/1987 says a "A Jubilee for Millions It is noteworthy that twice in Leviticus chapter 25 the Israelites were reminded that from Jehovah's standpoint they were his 'slaves' whom he had liberated out of Egypt." Already the children are standing and pledging unwavering loyalty & alligience to the WT Theocratic government. "2,000 Children stood and pledged unwavering alligience to the Theocracy at St. Louis Assembly 1941." (Report of the Jehovah's Witnesses Assembly, St. Louis, 1941, WTB&TS, p.52ff.)

31.Already the WT forbids much secular and religious reading material. Even more literature will disappear in the Millenium. "There is no reason to conclude that the publications which God's visible organization now publishes and distributes amongst the people will be found of use during the thousand years of kingdom reign, not that even the Bible will be used during that time. Those publications are for present-day use to inform the people."(WT 2/15/37 para. 17 p.54) In reference to the reading material of Christendom, they describe it as miserable. So miserable that Christians are "starved" of any spiritual food. (WT 2/15/37, p. 54, para. 17)

32.

33."Then the eyes of those who see will not be closed, and the ears of those who hear will be attentive. (A New Heaven & A New Earth, p.335)

34."Well, since the big city way of life is part of a world wide system of things that does not work, the only remedy is to replace it..."(Awake! p.10) "Jehovah will shortly destroy the citv..." (His Vengeance. 1930, p.3) "He will teach the great crowd of people who will have lived through

Armageddon how to take care of the earth. These people will learn how to plant the paradise." (From Paradise Lost to Paradise Regained, p. 220) The Kingdom Ministry of 12/51 asks "Destruction how long?" and then answers, "Until cities be waste without inhabitant, and houses without man, and the land become utterly waste." —Isa. 6:11,AS." "In view of such expressions of God's viewpoint, a more agricultural way of life will no doubt predominate for the soon-to-be-realized 'new earth.' " (Awake! 1/8/1976 , p.l1) A picture in that Awake! article shows factories being destroyed. It sounds to this Author like the clock will be turned back like Pol Pot did in Cambodia.

35."Or, can you imagine the majority of business, industry and city folk willingly reverting to a less production-minded, convience-oriented way of life? Even if political leaders should attempt such innovations, they would be stymied by forces beyond their control. Is the kind of farsighted leadership and power that it would take to make such far-reaching changes anywhere to be found? Superior Direction Needed." (Awake!, p.10, 1/8/1976)

36.Life will be in harmony with "natural cycles". Awake! 1/8/76 p. 10

37.

38.

39. People are not perfect when resurrected. (From Paradise Lost to Paradise Regained, p. 234, para.29) Other WT articles also bring out how people have the same ideas in their heads as they had before Armageddon. The WT 1912, p.169 refers to accidents happening in the Millenium.

40. Already in the past JWs were given a choice be loyal to the organization or choose the selfish right to have children. They were expected to be obedient and not have children. This commandment was characterized in the Report of the Jehovah's Witness Assembly, St. Louis, 1941, p.52, "The book Children is manna from heaven prepared by the Lord for the people of good will to enable them to see their relationship to Theocracy." It was said to be proper to wait until after Armageddon to have children. (Children, p.313)

41."The survivors of Armageddon under the direction of the King and his princes, will marry..." (Let God Be True, p. 265) Christ will personally be the matchmaker for every couple. (WT 1956, p. 604.)

42.

43."The real mother of children is God's organization."(WT 9/1/41)

44. Once the earth is refilled then the reproductive powers of people will be taken away. (WT 6/15/01 p.206) Mankind will be composed of perfect un-sexed units. (WT 6/15/01, p. 204-208)

45."The dead will not come back from the grave on the spot they were buried. Christ Jesus might well resurrect a thousand at one time in one location -from say like what used to be N.Y.C. and from there they would be dispersed to where Christ wanted them." (Bro. Schroeder"s Talk at Saginaw, MI, 1953. Will Big Brother regulate who can have children? According to the WT and Ray Franz in Crisis of Conscience they WT Society will take over the selection of spouses. At some time they will also take over control of who can have children and the production of people. They say that this is that "Allowance must be made for those resurrected." This Author speculates such a scenario would happen such as Aldous Huxley's Brave New World, that could fulfill their expectations.

46.Jesus is Lucifer's brother. (WT 3/1/32, p.76) Lucifer (now called merely Satan by the WT) was part of "the heavens" during the Garden of Eden. "That special organization of angels under Lucifer was spiritual, higher than man and invisible to him, and hence they constituted "the heavens" of that original world...That "heavens" and that "earth," therefore, composed the then perfect and righteous world." (The New World, p.22) "God's only begotten Son, The Word, and Lucifer were princes,... they are called "the morning stars" For a long time they worked together, and on special occassions of joy 'the morning stars sang together'..." Christ will be invisible during the Millenium but only present as he is today. Aid to Bible Understanding. 1971, pp.551, 1336. Satan is not bound during, but after Armageddon. (Light, 1931, p. 187)

47. "God has no communication with the world until Jesus has restored the men thereof to actual perfection," (Man's Salvation, p. 87)

48."EVIL OCCULT POWERS IN OPERATION" "The Difference between Samuel and his occult powers, and the

occult powers of others today is this: Samuel's were manifested under Divine direction at a time when God was pleased to use such powers amongst His people Israel.- powers which doubtless will be in exercise also to some extent during the Millenial Age for the world's guidance."
(WT 2/15/15, p.59) Bear also in mind Russell felt that the Persian occultist Zoraster was taught his tricks by Jeremiah, and that he in turn taught the Magi who chased the Star of Bethlahem. (WT 1906, p.14)

49. In the New Order people such as the resurrected ones will have the exact same personalities. "They will be the same personalities, the same people....The "law of sin and death" will not have been abolished from them..." (Life Everlasting -In Freedom of the Sons of God, p.396-397) Pastor Russell is asked, "Ques. 34- Please explain what condition the body will be in the resurrection, whether a lost eye, or the hearing will be restored at their awakening, or how? "...It is not the teaching of the Scripture that man will come forth in the resurrection perfect..." "If there was a wart on that hand before it was withered, it might be there afterwards..." (11th Convention Souvenir Report, p.20)

50. "The 'great crowd' will not undergo a change of nature from human to spiritual and so do not need the justification by faith and the imputed righteousness that the 144,000 "chosen ones" have required. Not imputed human perfection by faith in Christ's blood, but actual human perfection in the flesh by the uplifting, cleansing help of God's Messianic kingdom-This is what the "Great crowd" will need and what they will attain by Christ's kingdom of a thousand years." (Life Everlasting-In Freedom of the Sons of God, p.391)

52. "The first work is to clear away the awful debris of the battle of Armageddon...it does not take many years." (Golden Age. 2/25/28 #218, p.277) "The slaughter ...Their slain also shall be cast out, and their stink shall come up out of their carcases, and the mountains shall be melted with their blood." (Religion, 1940,p346) "Like dung upon the ground will lie the unburied bodies of those who would not heed God. Strewn over the earth, unlamented..." (1952 Yearbook July 27) "That millions of people will be killed in that battle is certain..."(Prophecy, 1929, in the WAR chapter) "For seven prophetic months the Armageddon survivors will gather up the bones and bury them." (From Paradise Lost to Paradise Regained, p.211) Boy are they in for a surprise-pass out the gas masks.

Is this New Order going to be an earthly paradise or an Orwellian nightmare? which?

What is the current "spiritual paradise" like for Jehovah's Witnesses - or to put it another way, what is life like as a JW?Does he have a "new personality" or a "split personality" as he tries to reconcile life with what he is told to believe.

Is the condition of the New World society slavery or freedom?

Will the people be given a New Language or Newspeak?
Are the JWs truly happy , or just brainwashed robots?

THE WATCHTOWER & THE MASONS

Chapter 1.16
The Mark of the Beast

3 items you will learn:

- That the Power plans to cause all to take a Luciferian initiation.
- That the One World Order plans to tag and mark everyone so that they can be instantly identified by satellites, and so they must buy and sell through their controlled system.
- That the Watchtower Society is coordinating with these plans.

Has the reader watched a TV show on India, or met with a Guru? Perhaps you've seen how Hinduism, expecially the Hindu teachers mark their foreheads with a red, yellow, or white dot. This is the position of the third eye.

Geoffrey Hodson, in The Hidden Wisdom of the Holy Bible, Vol. 1, p. 140 tells his readers that man has now advanced to the point where he is able to use the third eye lying beneath his forehead.

This is why public schools are now teaching subjects on the third eye such as "Math and the Third Eye."

This third eye is on one of the Chakras, which are energy points, and initiation sites that open up outside forces to enter the body. Another Chakra is on the palm of the right hand. These two positions happen by some holy coincidence to match up with the marks of the beast prophesied in Rev 13:16,17.

The information that this Author has learned on this subject is vast. Hopefully, the following will summarize this subject before the details are given.

The Plans of the Satanists who control the Illuminati are to have every one take a Luciferian initiation.[1] Luciferian intiations have been given already for years (actually for centuries).[2] These initiations have already involved using the chakra points of the right palm and the forehead.[3] Satanists may initially only push for an invisible mark, but the ultimate goal is to make the mark a visible mark that people will wear as a status symbol that they will be proud of. That will give the Satanists a perverse thrill to look over their slaves who proudly wear their Master's brand, in the same proud manner that a Texas rancher looks over his herd of cattle all wearing his ranch's brand.[4] The New Age Manual of Initiation entitled The Rays and the Initiations reveals that the mark is to be given to all mankind.

It is also clear that the Power intends to inject coded microchips into everyone under the disguise of a nationwide AIDS vaccination.[5] Humane Societies are already injecting microchip tags into dogs to prove the viability of the tagging system.[6] The tags will enable computers via Satellites to track and identify every human being.

It is very likely that hand scanners will come into use and people given a manditory bar code on their hands. The bar code that we now must use to buy or sell with already has the number 666 hidden within it.[7]

With all my awareness that the initiation point of the New Age is the third eye, it is significant that Jehovah's Witnesses rather than being warned against following the plans of Satan are being warned that they must take a mark on the third eye area to survive into the New World system. That Jehovah's Witnesses are being directed in that direction is another indication who their masters will ultimately serve. As the JWs have been conditioned to obey without question, it is probable that they will also join in taking the Luciferian Initiation. The JWs are not esteemed to highly by the Internationalists. For them the JWs are merely the Internationalists' expendable shock troops. They are not too concerned whether the JWs do or don't fall in line for survival.

MARKS OF LUCIFER

Witches receive a small mark called the Devil's Mark. New Agers are receiving stars on theirs during a Luciferian initiation. This initiation also gives them a Kundalini (aka Skaktipat) experience. Their minds are altered by the initiation and their new personality is now Satan-possessed.

ASTARA's booklet *Finding Your Place in the Golden Age* has a picture of a New Age thinker with a star on his forehead.

These marks on the forehead's third eye area may vary. The important item is the location. The third eye are is an important point to the occult. It is significant that the Watchtower Society has been warning people in recent years that they need a mark on the forehead to get into the New Order.

What is the WT's test to be worthy to enter into the New Order? Is it placing so many books? Is it praying for so many hours?

Under the section "Tested As To Worthiness of Survival" in the WT's *United In Worship,* (WTB&TS, 1983) p. 106 it says that the test is to have a "mark" that separates a person from "pretending Christians."

In the WT book *Survival Into a New Earth* the JWs are given instructions how to survive into the coming New System.

Under the chapter "Identified For Destruction Or Survival" under the Subsection "Do You Have The Mark", the JWs are instructed, "It would be a serious mistake to conclude that if a person tries to lead a 'good' life and if he shuns religions that are doing things clearly condemned in God's Word, nothing more is required of him. All who hope to survive into the "new earth" must also be unmistakably identified as worshippers of Jehovah...What was the key to survival? It was te mark placed on one's forehead by the man with the secretary's inkhorn. . .All who want to be marked as having

God's approval must accept the instruction that Jehovah is providing through that 'slave' class and become true worshippers... No one will put a literal mark on their forehead."

It is not clear to this Author exactly where this teaching is going. On the one hand they refer to an actual physical mark being neccessary, yet a further page says the mark means to put on a new personality. This sounds somewhat like the Skaktipat experience. Whatever the Watchtower Society means, it is significant that they have spent one chapter and a colored picture on the theme. Three colored pictures are included in the Survival *Into a New Earth* book. First is the picture of the person taking a Mark. Second is a picture telling us to be submissive and repent of our own prideful ways. Third is a picture of what happens if a person thinks of what life used to be, or if a person thinks anywhere that the Society doesn't want them to think, they may share the fate of Lot's wife who turned into a pillar of salt. The message is that once you are a JW you can not turn back and look at the world. You must only look where you are being led. (Read this a mind control, a self-imposed censorship. Now if you do this your mind in the WT Society's.)

It is interesting that the location of the WT's required mark exactly matches the New Age initiation point required to survive into the New Age. It is not clear why if this is an invisible mark, and only symbolic, why it is so omninously fussed over so much. The fuss being made is that "all regardless of background, who hope to survive into the 'new earth'...must have this mark."

One WT reference alludes to standing in line to receive the mark. The door has been left open for the WT to do what they have often done before, that is to come back and reinterpret in a different but more precise way what they have hinted at in a vague fashion. This makes it appear that they have held the view for a long time. On the one hand the Society says the mark is symbolic, on the other hand they say it is needed. They say a person doesn't automatically acquire the mark by doing all the correct things.

Who is the man with the inkhorn that gives this mark on the third eye to survive? Originally it was said to be C.T. Russell.[8] Later the man was identified as "the spiritual remnant or 'faithful and discreet slave' class"[9].

Alice Bailey indicates that the Luciferian initiation will be done in the churches and Masonic Lodges. (*Externalisation of the Hierarchy*, p. 514) and that what she calls externalized Ashrams will be active along the major line of "The public inauguration of the system of initiation." (p. 700)

Should the Watchtower Society align itself with the New Order when needed, then it's Kingdom Halls may become part of the system of churches and "externalized Ashrams" that provide the initiation.

New Age sources reveal that the Watchtower Society is cooperating with the Power, but that it is showing some signs of independence, which the Power is wanting stopped.

Marrs found stories of marks that are being given even today. Witches receive a small mark called the Devil's Mark. The New Agers are receiving stars on theirs in a Luciferic Initiation. This Initiation gives the New Agers a Kundalini or Skaktipat experience where their minds are altered from these initiations, the have a new personality by being possessed by Satan.

ASTARA's booklet Finding Your Place in the Golden Age has a picture of a New Age Thinker with a star on his forehead.

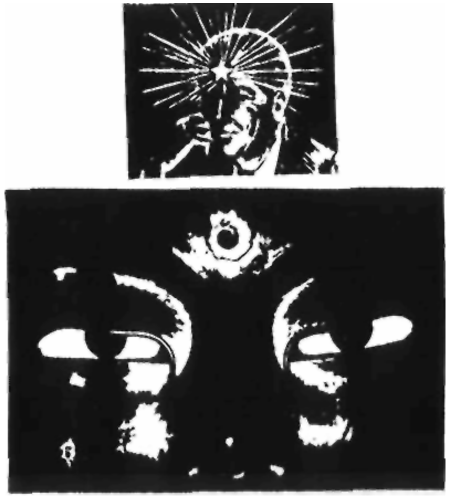

The New Age and Hindu teaching of an energy point between one's eyes on the forehead is a precursor of the Mark of the Beast.

Marrs finds in his research that various New Agers are already sealing people in the third eye area. An New Age Manual of Initiation entitled The Rays and the Initiations reveals the Mark is to be given to all mankind. It also reveals the marks are related to the third eye and right palm chakras. The pentagram comes up repeatedly in New Age literature as an initiation sign on the forehead. The Mark will be a mark of an advanced thinker.

Rather than restate Marrs' research in full, this Author will mention one more interesting point. The number 666 is also related to the third eye by New Agers.

There may be various marks placed on the forehead, or third eye area . The significant item is the location. In recent years the Watchtower Society has been warning their people that they need a mark on the forehead to get into the New Order. '

What is the test to be worthy to enter into the New Order? Is it placing so many books? Is it praying so many hours? Under the Section "Tested As To Worthiness of Survival" in United In Worship, WTB&TS, 1983, p. 106 it says that the test is to have a "mark" that seperates a person from "pretending Christians".

In the WT book Survival Into a New Earth the JWs are given instructions how to survive into the coming New System.

Under the chapter "Identifed For Destruction Or Survival" under the Subsection "Do You Have The Mark", the JWs are instructed, "It would be a serious mistake to conclude that if a person tries to lead a 'good' life and if he shuns religions that are doing things clearly condemned in God's Word, nothing more is required of him. All who hope to survive into the "new earth" must also be unmistakably identified as worshippers of Jehovah....What was the key to survival? It was the mark placed on one's forehead by the man with the secretary's inkhorn....All who want to be marked as having God's approval must accept the instruction that Jehovah is providing through that "slave" class and become true worshippers...No one will put a literal ink mark on their forehead."

It is not clear to the author exactly where this teaching is going. On the one hand they refer to an actual physical mark being neccessary, yet a further page says the mark means to put on a new personality. This sounds somewhat like the Skaktipat experience. Whatever they mean, it is significant that they have spent one chapter and a colored picture on the theme. Three colored pictures in the book give items that are needed to survive. First, is the Mark. Second, is to repent of pride and be submissive. Third, is a picture of Lot's wife turning to salt. The message is that once you are a JW you can not turn back and look at the world. You must only look where you are being led.(Read this as mind control, a self

-imposed censorship. Now one's mind is the WT 's.)

It is noteworthy that this mark is located in the same area that Marr's identies as the Mark of the Beast. It is not clear why if this is an invisible mark, and only symbolic, why it is so ominously fussed over so much . The fuss being made is that "all regardless of background, who hope to survive into the "new earth"—must have this mark."

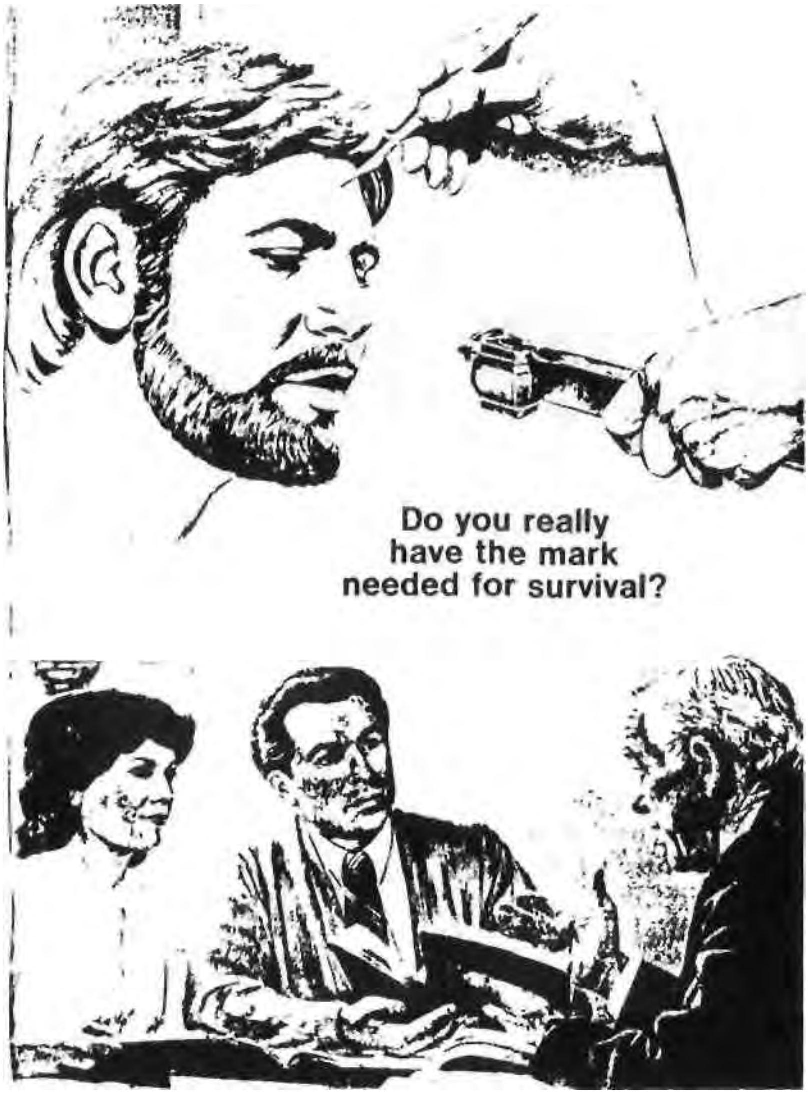

THE WATCHTOWER ADVISES JWs ABOUT THE MARK NEEDED TO SURVIVE INTO THE NEW AGE

1. Confidential interviews with ex-Illuminati members. The New Globalism 2000 curriculum being introduced to the schools will have a veiled Luciferian initiation given to all elementary students.
2. Confidential interviews with ex-New Age leaders,
3. Personal knowledge of Author of what others have experienced and Marrs, Texe. Mystery Mark of the New Age. Westchester, IL: Crossway Books, p. 39, who quotes "Contactee: Firsthand," California UFO, January/February 1987, p. 29.
4. This conclusion also coincides with the exact meaning of the word chargma (mark) in Rev. 13, and is the view that Texe Marrs adequately defends in his book Mystery Mark of the New Age.
5. This is a plan that Joe Frick revealed, which the NSA is trying to implement. Frick speculates that an AIDS vaccination will be used as the cover to inject the tiny microchip tags. A vaccination for AIDS is the only viable cover that exists today. Frick, Joe. art. "Big Brother's Coming! Revealed: Secret plan to tag every man, woman and child." Sun Magazine (Aug. 1, 1989) p. 15.
6. Wright, Mary (Assoc. Dir. of PR for the Marin Humane Society, art. "An ID tag that won't get lost." Pacific Sun (May 4, 1990).
7. Relfe, Mary Stewart. The New Money System. Montgomery, AL: Ministries, Inc., 1982. This is an excellent book.
8. The Laodicean Messenger, p. 150.
9. You May Survive Armageddon Into God's New World, p. 211

Recommended reading:

The New Money System by Mary Stewart Relfe. This book explains the UPC code with its hidden 666, it explains hand scanners, the world ID transaction cards, the cashless society etc. that the New World Order is bringing us.

Mystery Mark of the New Age by Texe Marrs. This book gives the best and most reliable analysis of where the New Age initiation point is going to be. Texe also gives good information on New Age symbology.

Chapter 1.17

SMOKESCREENS

You will learn:

- The reader will learn about Smokescreens that the Jehovah's Witnesses' Watchtower Society and the Masons have thrown up around their organizations.

- The reader will find out why the Satanic activities of the Illuminati are so hard to discover.

- The reader will be given information from history and testimonies that indicate that the Satanic Illuminati threat to rule the world is a serious and very real threat.

One April Saturday in 1974 in sunny southern California, an overconfident Jehovah's Witness met with Bill Cetnar. The Jehovah's Witness was Duane Magnani and he was sure that he could expose the lies that Bill had told his brother about the Watchtower Society. Duane was trying hard to get his brother back into the organization. He felt that Bill had to be met and refuted, even though the local elders had trembled and stuttered with fear and warned him not to talk to Cetnar when they learned who Duane was to meet. They had told him that to "follow God's arrangement" is what was important.

One of the things Duane learned that day was the lies and false prophecies that the Society has propogated. And long story short, Duane did something about the information he learned that day. Duane eventually would realize the mind control that the Watchtower Society uses, and so Duane used their own literature to show the Society's lies in order to crack that mind control. His campaign to expose their lies motivated him within two years to get the largest collection in the world of JW material (outside of the WT Society itself).

His book Eyes of Understanding, (the title based on the WT Society's explanation that one needed eyes of understanding to know God's plan, and they of course were the ones with the correct eyes), exposes their false prophecies. Duane went on to write Who is the Faithful and Wise Servant? Called the Who book for short it shows the WT's coverup of their long held view that Russell was the sole Faithful and Wise Servant. Because their present leadership use the parable of the Wise Servant to justify their dictatorship, that the Society held Russell to be that Servant and that Servant died, is devastating to their theology. They have worked hard to coverup the "creature worship" they gave to C.T. Russell.

The numerous coverups by the WT Society, and their dishonesty is so pervasive, that it boggles the mind of the sincere historian. But they are successfully carrying out their campaign of false information, why?

Most people know nothing or little about the JWs. They have the liberty to investigate before they join, but few know how to and they then rely on WT material. After they join, it is difficult for them to ever make an honest appraisal of their religion or its history.

Outsiders have little interest in the Watchtower movement.

Only a small group of people keep watch over the WT Society. This is why the Society is able to buffalo so many people.

RUSSELL'S SMOKESCREENS

Most of us go through life without questioning why we do the things we do. Why do we wear ties and import granite from Vermont to bury our dead under? However, this Author is one of those who is always asking why. And the problem of why Russell was so deceptive many times in his life, and yet was clearly respected as a very honest man, and indeed considered himself to be an honest man, was a puzzle. His lies in court to cover his friends would hardly seem to be worth the trouble. But once this Author saw how the mindset of Russell was so clearly a reflection of the views surging through the Masonic Halls of that age, then it at last made sense.

Russell was honest as Masons are trained to be, that it is not a lie to deceive those not worthy of the truth. Further, like many Masons, he kept his membership very quiet. He pays close attention not to let out any clues that his beliefs are from the Masonic Hall. He always portrays his beliefs as coming from the Bible. A Mason invented Phrenology, and the Mormons and Russell were big on Phrenology at that time it surged through the Masonic halls. Masons had dabbled in the occult and magic, and both the early Mormon leaders and Russell did healing with magic handkerchiefs. The pyramidology surged through the lodges, and both the Mormons and Russell picked it up. But Russell is careful to always use the Bible as the "fall guy" for his beliefs. He calls his magic handkerchief Paul's handkerchief. He ties his pyramid beliefs back to some scripture which are misused to prove his beliefs.

Russell is always playing to an audience. He is very careful to say and do the right things. He is careful not to expose his deep Masonic mindset. But every now and then he slips. He refers to the woman of Luke 15:8 as "divine energy", but then when questioned about this denies having written it, "The fact that something in the Tower might be misunderstood would not surprise us any. Why, we find a whole lot in the Bible that has been "misunderstood." (Bible Student's Convention, Indianapolis, 1907, p.26)

Russell is also asked if anyone else teaches the invisible presence of Christ. "Are there any other papers than the Tower which teach as it does that Jesus is now present?" Russell answers, "We know of none other which teaches the personal presence of Jesus."(WTR p546 10/1883) That he can say this is just remarkable. He is fully aware that others such as the Rosicrucians teach this, besides the Christians have held that he has been invisibly present since his ascension.

RUTHERFORD

Rutherford is the second WT President. He was a lawyer. He was as honest as the common stereotype of lawyers. In other words, he does what it takes to win.

By reprinting in 1928 an article that is negative about Freemasonry, he may simply have been putting up a smokescreen, so that Masonic goals could continue to be carried out. Certainly, that was his modus operandi with the demonic Ouji healing devices that headquarters were using. To stiffle criticism, he allowed something negative printed, and then forbade discussion. However, it may be that he wasn't a Freemason. Unlike Russell, this author hasn't any Masonic records of membership for Rutherford, although the rumors persist. The powers that controlled him certainly were not concerned whether he was a Mason or not, but simply that their goals could be furthered.

That Rutherford could do what he pleased without the rank and file knowing it is clearly demonstrated. He became an alcoholic, and this and his live-in girlfriend, who even signed his death certificate, managed to be kept secret.

During Rutherford's reign, R.H. Barber of Bethel Headquarters throws out a smokescreen with some false clues about the conspiracy to bring in a one-world-government. He points the finger at the Christian clergy. He says the Christian clergy have originated the conspiracy and are in someway deceiving the governments into becoming a party of the conspiracy. (The Golden Age, pp 277-278, Feb. 3,1932 #323.)

Another conspiracy smokescreen appears in the book The Truth Shall Make You Free (1943). It states that Christendom has an "international police force for her continual world domination."
But Rutherford is careful not to tell us the esoteric Masonic sources that have taught him all about the supposed pagan connections to Christian symbols—such things as Phallic worship. Phallic worship is by the way, declared by Albert Pike's Morals and Dogma to be the true worship of Masonry. Each Scottish Rite Mason is given Pike's book after the 32nd degree.

Again Rutherford, like Russell, is careful not to clue us in on any Masonic connections. Isn't easier to believe that he learned all his mystery religion/ pagan symbolism stuff from masonic sources than from angels.

AFTER RUTHERFORD

The WT Society leaders continued their secrecy. Covington, even managed to succeed Rutherford as President and run the Society for a period without the rank and file Jehovah's Witnesses knowing about it. Nathan Knorr pushed him aside, and apparently that suited the Powers in control of things. Knorr, Covington, and Franz were to work together, but circumstances didn't really work out that way. Covington, not one of the annointed, theologically was a red herring. Yet, the Covington family is a prominant family within the Order, so he may have had strong support, at least temporarily.

At the Scottish Douglas Walsh Trial in 1954, we see Covington lying under oath. Another JW, named Hughes, asked the same question, gives the truth. What was the question? The question was whether the JWs use other groups buildings for their Kingdom Halls. The practice of using Masonic Halls and Oddfellows Halls was widespread. Covington was in the best position of anyone to know this. So why did he lie about it? Was this perhaps a sensitive issue?

The questions on page 381 of the trial transcript had touched on buildings rented for use as Kingdom Halls and what steps were taken to consecrate them. On page 382 of the trial transcript, the questioner asks, "Sometimes the Kingdom Halls are shared with other bodies or secular societies, aren't they? A. I do not know of any such cases where the actual hall itself is. I may say this, that Kingdom Halls of Jehovah's Witnesses are often to be found in commercial neighborhoods and in buildings where, say for instance, on the ground floor there might be a store."

However, the truth is that the JWs were using Masonic temples and lodges. In Grand Coulee, WA the Kingdom Hall was located on the bottom floor of the Oddfellows Hail, and while the JWs used the bottom floor, the Oddfellows would at times be conducting meetings above them. This lasted from about 1947 to 1952. Two of the Melbourne Kingdom Halls in Australia were Masonic lodges to begin with. The Kingdom Hall at 256 Murray Road, Pres Victoria, Austrailia had been a Spiritist church which was converted into a Kingdom Hall. While Covington only admits to a dedication of Kingdom Halls occuring, the truth is that this Spiritist church required the Spirits to be exorcised by the Jehovah's Witnesses before they could use it. Covington was privy to everything, having been the Society head legal guardian and its President and Vice-President.

A.F. Hughes, under oath apparently doesn't know the sensitivity of the issue for when he is asked, several questions about the Kingdom Halls leading up to the question, These Halls are sometimes owned by the Society? A. They are owned by the local congregation. Q. Or leased by the local congregation? A. Yes. Q. Or shared with others; outside agencies? A. Sometimes, yes, but that would only be where there is a small congregation that is not able to meet the costs for the time being. They would, of course, have the ultimate in mind that they would have a Kingdom Hall of their own. (Douglas Walsh Trial, p.626-627, 1954).

The Society has put out instructions that "Whether you own or rent your hall, it ought to be ... a proper representation of Jehovah's true worship." (Organization for Kingdom Preaching and disciple-making,1972, p.104) Today the Society is still using Masonic Halls for weddings where one of the spouses is not a Jehovah's Witness. Their use of Masonic and Oddfellow Halls for Kingdom Halls raises questions. Either, these places are proper representations of true worship according to the Society, or the Society has been quietly being hypocritical. This Author tends to believe that the JW top leadership is a Mason, so in that case, the close relationship between Kingdom Halls and Masonic Halls is not hypocritical.

The WT Jan. 15, 1958, p. 46 states " ... it is really the holy spirit that leads to the appointing of such overseers;" The Governing Body have issued other statements such as this, that lead one to believe that their decisions are made after prayerful consideration. Ray Franz, former Governing Body member, in his book Crisis of Conscience, pulls the cover off that false picture.

One mask though that has never been pulled off, is the Jewishness of Russell's religion. This book does that for the first time. In the twenties, it appears that some people began to catch onto the connections between the B'nai B'rith and the WT Society. Could this explain why the WT became anti-Zionist. Was this to hide their origins and their Jewishness, or was it because Rutherford had actually broken with the Society's Jewish backers?

It is an intriguing puzzle. The Jew Paul S.L. Johnson, who had forsaken being a nominal Lutheran minister and became a Bible Student, acted like he sincerely believed that he was to be Russell's successor. What is interesting is that 4 out of the 7 board of Directors of the WT Society also thought so. In fact, in the 1975 Yearbook, p.89 it explains that Johnson believed clear back in 1915 before Russell died that the mantle would be passed to him. The British office and the Kingdom Halls in the British South American colony of Guiana (see WT Oct. 1,83) went under Johnson's leadership. It was only by hard fisted manouevering that Rutherford gained control. It meant dismissing those men on the Board of Directors, who at the time didn't think Rutherford had the power to dismiss them. (The 73 Yearbook, pg.101 also gives details of the British events in this battle for control.) Rutherford gained control, but then he and his leadership ended up going to prison. Could it be that the Order did not want Rutherford in? Did Rutherford have to make a deal with them, or did he simply realize from there on that they had power?

One of the biggest smokescreens is the appearence the JW make of hating all religions. In reality, they attack only one religion in their literature—Christianity. They claim that their lack of work in India is that Hinduls are hard to deal with, but a close examination shows they have made almost no effort over the last 150 years to convert Hindus. The rank and file witness certainly has little affection for other religions, but his leadership has been careful to direct his hate toward only one group in particular—Christianity (called Christendom).

If the New Age Religion were to be capsulized into 7 teachings it could be reduced to the following seven identifying beliefs.

1. God is impersonal.
2. Christ is not Almighty God, but a good teacher.
3. Jesus is but one of many Christs.
4. Sin and evil do not exist.
5. Man should seek instruction from the spirit world.
6. All religious teachings are of merit, except those that are Christian and believe in absolute truth. Therefore the religious views of Egypt, Babylon, India and the Aztecs are held to be of value for us today.
7. Man can be a god.

8. The Jehovah's Witnesses have made repeated statements over the years that God is not personally involved in events. This is not just an insignificant idea in Watchtower theology—it is necessary because they declare that what is happening in the world is not the will of God. Because they have an incomplete understanding of the will of God they need to distance him completely from evil which they do not realize he has permitted.
9. The Jehovah's Witnesses are well known for their attacks on the divinity of Christ. If pressed, the JWs will declare he a god, a lesser God.
10.The Jehovah's Witnesses see a composite Christ class. Jesus Christ is merely the first of a class of exalted men.
4. The Watchtower Society has destroyed the Biblical concept of sin. This is accomplished very subtly. Sin is so trivial that sinful mankind is to receive a second chance and will teach itself how to overcome sin in the Millennium. The Christ class will live perfect lives without sin. Men on their own strength in a perfect environment will be able to attain perfection and sinlessness. (See Truth book, chapter 9, para. 4 as an example of this type of thinking.)
5. While condemning the occult to its followers, the Watchtower leaders have gone to the occult for enlightenment. For instance, Rutherford received his messages from fallen angels supposedly working out their redemption.
6. The WT Society does not accept all religions—in this it appears to disagree radically with other New Age groups. At least this Author thought so, until I scratched below the surface in researching the Watchtower Society. An indepth look at what the Watchtower Society has condemned shows that only lip-service has been given to the idea other religions are false. In reality, there is one exception, that is the only religion has been singled out and targeted for attack as the enemy is Christianity.
7. The Watchtower Society believes that ultimately mankind will elevate itself to Godhood.

Texe Marrs, although very scimpy on the proof, correctly placed the Watchtower Society in the camp of New Age religions in his book New Age Cults & Religions.

It was one of the first Masonic New Age religions.

They have been preparing mankind for an alien rulership of 144,000 alien beings—known by Christians as demons.

This last charge—that the 144,000 will be demons is based on the following: demons have been supplying the WT leaders with guidance, and the Masonic Plans to bring in a world government include setting up a government of aliens to rule mankind. Understand that only the very selected top of the leadership realize this. The rank and file are taught to fear demons, and not to believe in aliens.

Several New Age channelers have told me (or someone who spoke with them have said) that the Hierarchy (the Spiritual Hierarchy that guide the occult, New Age, and Masonic groups) has been directing the Watchtower Society leaders, but that the Hierarchy has been having trouble bringing them into line. Apparently there is an effort to bring them into line. Share International Magazine, October 1988 has a article about Maitreya visiting Kingdom Halls. The article concludes, "Some Jehovah's Witnesses have had certain experiences as a result of Maitreya's presence among them which have led them to abandon an entrenced, 'ideological' position."

Another subtle indication that the Watchtower Society is moving its people toward a One-World-Religion is that they have been teaching their people what the other religions believe. Only Christianity has been singled out as a target for criticism and abuse. True, the Society hasn't approved of these other religions, but the idea of teaching their people what the other religions believe, is a new item and a step toward a possible assimilation. On the other hand, it could be postulated that the Hierarchy has lied to these channelers, and that also the New Agers are exaggerating Lord Maitreya's influence among the Kingdom Halls when he visits. Perhaps as some claim, the Watchtower isn't smart enough to criticize the Hindus. (Even the public papers criticized the Bhagwan Shree Rajneesh— so that argument is very difficult to swallow.)

ARE THE JEHOVAH'S WITNESSES CHRISTIANS AS THEY CLAIM?

This question can be debated, however it is clear that all the fundamental important sacred concepts of Christianity have been attacked by this organization calling itself Christian. Why did they feel a deep seated need to eliminate Christ's name out of our dating system? Why have they felt such a deep seated need to attack the idea that Christ died on a cross. Let us examine their attack on the cross. This is a prime example of their anti-Christ anti-Christian bias.

For most people that Christ died on a cross is taken for granted. It is simply not an issue. And what difference does it make how exactly he died? It is a rare person who questions the idea he died on the cross, unless he is someone who has come under the influence of the Watchtower Society.

If the Christian wants to know how Christ died, the Scriptures are very clear—he died on a cross. A close reading tells us that. In Mt 27:37 it tells us that when Christ was being crucified they nailed the sign above his head. (If the WT is correct then the sign would have been above his hands as a stake would require.) It goes on to say in verse 38 that on his left hand was one robber and on his right hand's side was another. This is nonsense by WT drawings of Christ's hands tied above his head. In Jn 20:25, the resurrected Jesus talks about the prints of the nails in his hands. The WT Society has acknowledged that Num 21:9 is a picture of Christ's death. (For instance see What Has Religion Done For Mankind where they even portray this.) They also acknowledge in the Awake! May 22,1952 that flag banners were crosses in ancient times. The Hebrew word in Num 21:9 picturing and forecasting Christ's crucifixion is Nec which means a flag banner which in those days was a cross.

The mark placed on the foreheads of those saved (see Ez 9:4, also Rev 7:3) was called "tav" in Ez 9:4. The "tav" in Ezekiel's day was a cross shaped Hebrew letter. For this reason Christians in early times of Roman persecution made the sign of the cross on their foreheads.

Bottom line is that Gal. 6:14 states that the cross is important for Christians to glory and boast about. It is an important symbol. Does the Watchtower use their authority to glorify the cross? Do they instead glorify in the torture stake which they claim was used? NO. What truth loving Christian authority would attack Christianity so viciously as the Watchtower Society does concerning the cross, while ignoring so many Christian scriptures?

The real answer lies in the Watchtower leaders veiled hatred for Christ and his atoning work on the Christ. As with so many Masons who lead various religious groups they do not honor Christ in a Christian way.

MASONIC SMOKESCREENS

The smokescreens put out by the Masonic Lodge are so thick they come close to choking any investigator. Masonic deception and lies are so numerous that any truth loving person should get sick to the stomach. Unfortunately, often when Christians investigate the Lodge, they swallow whatever line the Masons give them— EVEN THOUGH MASONIC LITERATURE ITSELF EXPOSES THEIR LIES. An example is that Masonry is not a religion. The author has seen that line repeated by the Mason to the public ad nauseum. Reproduced as documentary evidence are two broshures that are designed for the publics consumption denying that Masonry is a religion.

However, practically every important Masonic authority has stated in one place or another, that Masonry is a religion. Not only do they believe Masonry is a religion, they believe it is the religion. That is, their religion of Masonry is superior to any other religion. Some pages are photocopied from various Masonic sources showing how in their own literature, they boast about the Masonic religion— and then turn around and lie to the public.

LIST OF MASONIC AUTHORITIES WHO REFER TO MASONRY AS A RELIGION and WHERE THEY SAY MASONRY IS A RELIGION

Albert Mackey—The Mystic Tie, p.32
—Lexicon of Freemasonry, p.404
—Encyclopedia of Freemasonry, p.439, 619
—Mackey's Revised Encyclopedia of Freemasonry, Vol. 2, p. 847
—Textbook of Masonic Jurisdiction, p.95

Henry Wilson Coil—A Comprehensive View of Freemasonry, p.234
—Coil's Masonic Encyclopedia, p. 158

Albert Pike—Morals and Dogma, p. 213, 219, 718 (He calls it "a worship" on pp. 219, 526)

Joseph Fort Newton—The Builder's, p. 243, 258

— The Religion of Masonry, pp. 10, 11

J.S.M. Ward—Freemasonry: Its Aims and Ideals, pp. 182, 185, 187

New Age Magazine (official organ of the Scottish Rite)—Feb. 1959, p. 107-108

Here then are 21 references from Masonry's best authorities written to Masons telling them that Masonry is a religion. Contrast that to the two official Masonic broshures that the Lodge puts out deceiving people that Masonry is not a religion. Even without these 21 references, the thinking person would realize that an organization that has temples, priests, rituals, offers salvation, teaches morality, and worships is a religion.

What religion is Masonry? It is a super-Religion, the Religion over all others, and it is the Ancient Mystery religion of Babylon and Egypt, et. al. according to Albert Pike (33°),

TWO IMPORTANT QUESTIONS

Is Freemasonry a religion?

No. Neither is Freemasonry a religion, nor does it require a religious affiliation. However, Masons worship in congregations of their choice. Some are ordained priests, ministers, or rabbis; many serve in lay capacities; and, others have no affiliation. With origins in post-Reformation-England. Freemasonry's allegories and rituals are rooted in Judo-Christian tradition. They exemplify mankind's universal experience and inculcate an admired moral and ethical value system. With respect to religion, Freemasonry simply teaches the "Fatherhood of God" and the "Brotherhood of Man."

Is Freemasonry a "secret" society?

No. Freemasonry is a fraternity of men who are proud to be known as Masons. Since our inception, the world has known of speculative Freemasonry and its work. Freemasonry does, however, have some secrets, all extending from historic tradition. Our modes of recognition, opening and closing ceremonies, and rituals for conferring the Degrees of Masonry are our only secrets. Thousands of works discussing Masonic history, traditions, craft, and proceedings are widely available to the public.

MASONS

(Lodge imprint here)

For more information, contact any Freemason or Masonic Lodge in your community or telephone (503) 357-3158 (Portland Metro).

Grand Lodge of A.F.&A.M.
P.O. Box 96
Forest Grove, OR 97116

of its members to worship according to his own belief in the church, synagogue or mosque of his choice. Masonry is not a religion, but Masons are religious.

WHO MAY BECOME A MASON IN OREGON?

All men who are 18 years of age or older, who are of good moral character, who come well recommended and who believe in a Supreme Being and a life after death may petition to become a Mason.

SINCE YOU HAVE GIVEN ME THIS TO READ, YOU MUST THINK THAT I MAY BE INTERESTED IN MASONRY. WHY DIDN'T YOU JUST ASK ME TO JOIN?

Masons are prohibited from asking anyone to join. We want you to first know what we do and bow we act and then make your own decision. We want onjy_those who seek membership because of their favorable impression of us. If you should become a Mason, we want you to be proud of being our Brother and we want you to participate in our work. If, after you have examined us, you have a favorable opinion and would like to share in our work and privileges, ask any Mason for a Petition for the Degrees of Masonry.

What I Would Like My Friends To Know About Freemasonry

By Authority of
The Grand Lodge of Ancient Free
And
Accepted Masons of Oregon

WHAT IS FREEMASONRY?

Freemasonry is a society of men working together in the interest of serving mankind.

HOW DO MASONS WORK TO SERVE MANKIND?

Masons work to enhance their communities and to help needy people in all walks of life.

HOW DO MASONS ENHANCE THEIR COMMUNITIES?

Masons assist public schools and other public bodies in a variety of ways. Masons and members of Masonic affiliated bodies assist as tutors. Some Lodges have scholarship programs, student recognition programs, and activities recognizing the achievements of students and teachers. Masons serve as volunteers for many community projects. The reason you may not have learned about this involvement is that Masons seek only to provide service.

HOW DO MASONS ASSIST THOSE IN NEED?

Most Masonic Lodges and Masonic affiliated bodies provide funds and services for those in need. Some of these activities include helping children who are crippled or burned or who have learning disabilities or visual prohlems, or who need denial restoration, and contributing to cancer and other research and to other health and rehabilitation services. Masons and Masonically related bodies spend over two million dollars a day for charitable and benevolent purposes. In addition to National and Statewide programs, help is extended to solve personal problems, such as paying medical bills, restoring fire or flood damaged homes and assist-

HOW CAN I AFFORD TO BE A MEMBER?

Masons and those in Masonically affiliated bodies often have only modest incomes. Much of the money spent on charity is obtained by sponsoring fund raising activities.

AS A MASON, WHAT WOULD I GET OUT OF IT?

The satisfaction of knowing you are helping those in need and knowing that future generations may be better off because of your efforts.

WHAT ARE SOME OF THE BENEFITS OF MASONRY?

Fellowship. Fellowship forms a bond between members. Masons plan many activities for the entire family. Our families generally share our interests and goals. Masons assist distressed brother Masons and the wives, widows, and children of Masons. Brotherly love is both an obligation and a privilege.

IS MASONRY A SECRET SOCIETY?

No. Masonry is a society which has some secrets. Our modes of recognition, opening and closing ceremonies and the ceremonies of conferring the degrees of Masonry are our only secrets. We are proud to show that we are Masons.

IS MASONRY A RELIGION?

No. All Masons must believe in one Supreme Being and in life after death. Masonry encourages each

Albert Mackey (33°), J.D. Buck, Daniel Sickles, R. Swinbourne Clymer, C.W. Leadbeater (33°) and a host of other big Masonic authorities.

Can it be possible that Freemasonry is really involved in creating a socialist one-world-government? Obviously, the Freemasons can't be entirely faulted for trying to keep this one a secret. If the common man knew what the ultimate goal of the Masonic leadership was, they would likely be very angry. And who can say what their reaction would be to find out they have made monkeys of us.

By the word of three witnesses an event is established according to the age old wisdom in the Christian Scriptures.

FIRST WITNESS

Within the Masonic Reference 10,000 Famous Freemasons is an article on the Freemason John Robison (1739-1805). John Robison was a professor of natural history at the University of Edinburgh, Scotland and secretary of the Royal Society in that city. We are talking about a well educated respected man. In 1797 Robison published information in a book entitled Proofs of a Conspiracy Against All the Religions and Governments of Europe Carried on in the Secret Meetings of the Freemasons, Illuminati, and Reading Societies Collected From Good Authorities.[1] The book is still available. Clear back in 1797, there were concerned Masons willing to expose the Illuminati plans for world conquest.

SECOND WITNESS

Jim Shaw who was a 33 degree Freemason writes, "Freemasonry is a world-wide conspiracy to destroy the Church of Jesus Christ on earth, a means to bring about a one-world church and government. With the Unitarian and Theosophical system in Masonry it is nearing this goal. Unsuspecting Christians, who do not know that Masonry is controlled by Satan, are also aiding it instead of exposing it."[2]

THIRD WITNESS

C.W. "Win" Jackson was a 32 degree Freemason. He wrote, "I then focused my attention and study to learn how the lodge was started, and by whom. At this point, I became thoroughly convinced, beyond any shadow of a doubt, that a world-wide conspiracy existed against God, Our Lord and Savior and all mankind."[3]

OTHER WITNESSES

There have been other Masons and ex-Masons that have given similar testimony. John G. Stevens, an ex-Mason testifies, "If the lodge went unchecked, the United States would have a Masonic monarchy for its government, a Masonic church, a Masonic way to a Masonic heaven...Masonry was a state within a state and that one day Masons would overthrow the democratic government of the United States and would crown one of their 'grand kings' as ruler of this nation."[4] As the reader continues into Unit 2 he will see in detail how the Masons have done what these witnesses have warned us about.

Freemasonry has repeatedly told the public that it doesn't keep its memberships secret. For instance, in an article entitled "What Can I Tell My Non-Masonic Friends???" in the Scottish Rite's New Age Magazine it says, "You can explain that Freemasonry is not a "secret society." A secret society is one that keeps its existence a secret and whose members do not make known their affiliation with the group. Freemasonry is not a secret society because it does not hide its existence nor do members hide their membership."

Dear friends, any Mason saying that ought to have his nose grow long. That is simply a boldfaced lie. Repeatedly, the Masons have created secret groups within secret groups. They seem to have a ceaseless urge to create new organizations, and many like the Pallidium Rite are secret. That is why they do not keep written records, and why the Pallidium Rite's finances are separate from the regular lodges. The Highest Masonic authorities have repeatedly lied to keep secret their memberships.

Gary Blevins has a letter received from Grand Executive Director William G. Sizemore, 33°, of the Supreme Council at the House of the Temple in Washington, D.C. which denies that Ronald Reagon is a Mason.[5] The April, 1988 New Age Magazine shows on its front page cover President Reagon receiving the honorary 33rd degree of Masonry.

When friends of this Author have called Billy Graham's ministry to ask if he has been or is a Freemason, they were told that his ministry chose not to comment on the matter. And yet on the authority of a number of several very reliable sources his membership has been confirmed to this Author. (See chapter 2.1 for a discussion and an explanation of the meaning of this.)

When President George Bush became president, by law he was required to place in the Library of Congress information about himself. That information included his 33° membership in the Scottish Rite, but after a few months the information disappeared from the Library of Congress. (George Bush by the way took his presidential oath on a Masonic Bible.)

These are just some of the examples I am aware of where the Masonic Lodge is covering up prominent memberships. They are covering up the memberships of Congressmen and religious leaders too.

HEAVIER COVERUPS[6]

This chapter up to this point has only scratched the surface of two organizations who are front organizations for the Power. If the Masonic Lodge and the Watchtower Society have been screened in such secrecy, what about the organization that controls both the Watchtower Society and the Masonic Lodge?

Indeed, Satan's closest worshippers have been shrouded in the deepest secrecy. Each of the top Satanists have at least one cover. That cover is a life that they live in the public's view. They may be a mayor of a town, a business leader, or a Christian evangelist. The primary goal is that the cover makes them look good to the public, or at least too powerful for people to believe criticism of them. For instance, George Bush is nicknamed the teflon president because no criticism of him seems to stick, even though the proof is abundant that the man is a very dangerous servant of the New World Order.

Perhaps one of the most sucessful covers of the New World Order has been the one Adolf Hitler with the help of Satanists world-wide has foistered on the history books. Hitler's cover was to be an anti-Judeo-Masonic crusader. Hitler pretended to be the ultimate crusader against the One World Power, while he really was a powerful Satanist and descendent of the Illuminati family of the Rothschilds. Stalin was a co-conspirator in the Satanic Illuminati's plans. Bear in mind England according to Satanists is the Satanic mother of all nations—the center for Illuminism.[7] Hitler personally intervened to prevent his tanks from destroying the British Expeditionary Force at Dunkirk. Hitler personally intervened to prevent the German invasion force from capturing Leningrad, and Stalin personally intervened to prevent the Soviet military from protecting itself when many intelligence sources were warning them of a German invasion. The Illuminati got exactly the war they had planned and exactly the results they wanted, and Hitler's Satanic role for the Illuminati is still basicly secret. The fictions revolving around W.W. II are too numerous to try to clear up, the reader's mind would simply not accept them. Perhaps after reading this book, enough of a thinking process will have occured to get the reader to initiate his or her own investigation. Part of what really went on behind the cover of killing Jews, was the elimination of all devout Christians and the placement of Satanists into leading offices. The U.S. Army and the Soviet army facilitated this after Germany surrendered.

Information about the top level of Satan's organization are hard to get because:

A. Much of the activities are committed to memory.
B. Informants or people who know too much are murdered.
C. High level Satanists from the time of birth have been psycologically worked over by mind programming to commit suicide if they think about things that they are not to reveal.

Information that has come out of the Satanic cults is so unbelievable that most people dismiss it. Why is the information unbelievable? Because the majority of people in this nation have been programmed by the Satanists. Chapter 3.3 documents how the leading Satanists control the mass media. Over a period of decades they have subtly brainwashed the people, in such a subtle way that people do not even know they have had their behavior modified and controlled. This author has repeatedly witnessed that buzz words when told to the masses cause them to respond like Pavlov's dog. (Part of the reason that this Author can write this book is that I was spared from watching Television until age 11, and since then have only seen small amounts of Television and Movies since, in part what little has been viewed was done to understand the American people and the Power.) A program of kidnapping and implanting of control devices within the heads of people has also been going on, without the people knowing what has happened to them when they return to society.

THE FORCE

In order to fully understand why evil men, also do good deeds let us study the philosophy of Satanism which perpetuates the gnostic principle of duality.

Gnostic religions have since their inceptions worked off a dual view of the power. This thinking is directly linked to Hegelian philosophy, which by providing to the masses opposite answers oftens diverts people from seeing the correct answer which has little to do with the two extreme views nor with their synthesis. The easiest way perhaps to explain what we are discussing is to refer people to how the force in Star Wars could be used for both good and evil. In the final analysis, the mind set of Satanists is that they themselves above all others have been deceived into thinking that light can be used for good or evil. This is seen in their idea that there is white and black magic.

According to Alexander Wilder in his book Philosophy and Ethics of the Zoroasters (pub. 1885) "The Mithraic rites superseded the Mysteries of Baccus, and became the foundation of the Gnostic system, which for many centuries prevailed in Asia, Egypt, and even the remote West." The importance of this is that if the foundation of the Gnostic

5 INTERLOCKED CONCEPTS
OF
THE SERPENT

LUCIFER AKA LIGHT BEARER/ GODHOOD	=	SEARCH FOR LIGHT AKA WISDOM	=	SUN WORSHIP AKA ENERGY	=	FIRE AKA KUNDALINI FORCE	=	REGENERATIVE PRINCIPLE (AKA PHALLIC WORSHIP & SEX WORSHIP)
‖		‖		‖		‖		‖
SNAKES		SNAKES		SNAKES		SNAKES		SNAKES

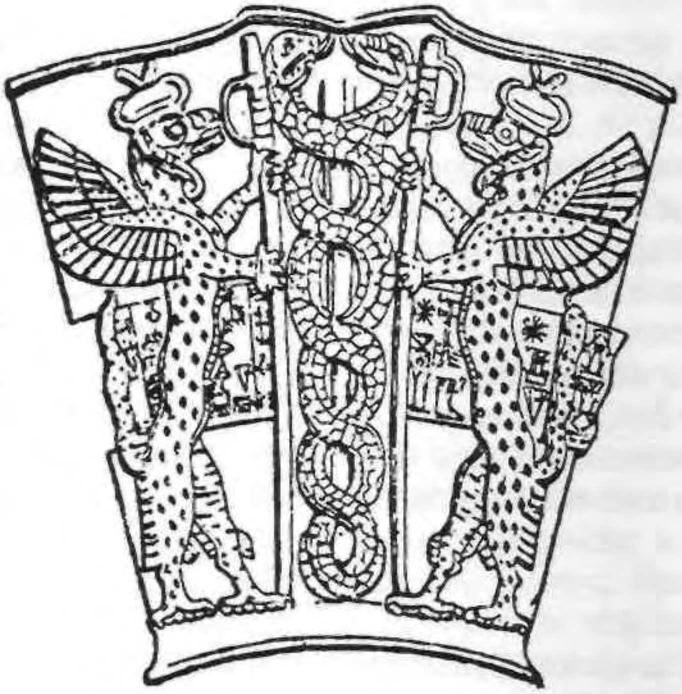
Early Sumerian version of the caduceus.

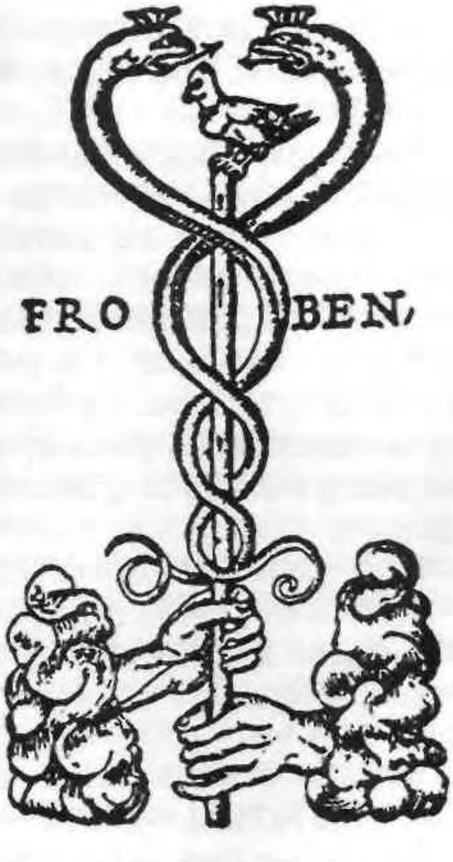

Caduceus (Swiss, 1515).

system with its various religious hierarchies is based on Mithraism, then it is apparent that the concept of the Force containing both evil and good was part of the Gnostic system. Mithraism believed in a good god Ahura-Mazda (aka Ormuzd, and aka in latin as Oromazes). The Illuminati today often uses the latin version of the word Oromazes. Ahriman is the evil god and places evil where ever Ormuz creates good or does a good deed. Mithras is the mediator between the two. Today the Illuminati continue to believe in two principles, Satan and Lucifer. Satan is the evil one, Lucifer is the good side of the Force. Mithras tries to harmonize the two. In order to be in step with Mithras the Illuminatus as he (or she) ascends the occult ladder must try to balance his progressively evil deeds with equally benevolent deeds. Consequently, the most wickedest and powerful Satanists are big philanthropists as they try to balance their deeds while gaining Satanic power. The belief of the Satanists is that if an unbalance occurs they are destroyed. The initiate into Mithraism was told Mithra was his own soul, Ormuz was his spiritual nature and Ahriman was his animal nature. The "Grip of the Lions Paw" and the references to the Lion in the Master Masons degree come from Mithraism.[8]

Part of the benevolence done by Satanic organizations and Satanists is part of their belief system to maintain a balance within their lives of the dual principles, it is not entirely done to deceive.

In contrast to this Jesus Christ told the Gnostic religious leaders that evil is will be judged by God, and that all the good deeds of mankind are but filthy rags.

The Caduceus is a wand with two serpents twined around it and often has two small wings or a winged helmet on its wand's top. Today it serves various uses symbolically. It is the insignia of the Catholic bishop in the Ukraine. The symbol is very ancient and goes back to ancient Indian Hindu temples and Mesopotamia (Babylonia, Sumer, Assyria). The Buddhists also use it to represent the world (wand) and the kundalini force (serpents). But what the twin snakes are always expressing is the "idea of active equilibrium, of opposing forces balancing one another in such a way as to create a higher, static form." (book on symbols of witchcraft). This is a symbolic representation of the balance the leading Satanists attempt to maintain between their evil and philanthropic deeds.

[Figures of a Swiss 1515 Caduceus and an early Sumerian caduceus from several thousand ago.]

SATANIC RITUAL ABUSE[9]

Why is this item put in a chapter on Smokescreens? Because what has been called Satanic Ritual Abuse (SRA) is the primary vehicle for maintaining the shroud of secrecy. The primary part of Satanic Ritual Abuse is to use a series of sophisticated and sadistic mind control strategies which use the combined effects of physical pain and threat of pain, double-bind coercion, split brain stimulation, drugs, hypnotism, and other methods to program and brainwash the candidates for membership in the Illuminati. In order for the lower level covens and the Satanic hierarchy to maintain its secrecy, intense effort is expended to program all the members of the Satanic hierarchy to commit suicide if they betray the Satanic covens. There is no easy way for such people to talk or break lose from the Illuminati.

The professional terminology for this mind control is "conditioned stimulus-response sequences." The programs that are taught the subconscious mind of the Satanists can be triggered by auditory, visual, tactile, olfactory and/or gustatory (taste) modalities. In other words the trigger to cause them to hurt or kill themselves or someone else are subconsciously set to go off by some sensory trigger, perhaps a word that they are not to reveal. But these people are not just given one program. Layers upon layers of destructive back up programs are put into their minds.

These layers of programming are intentionally put into place by creating in the tiny infants multiple personalities called alternate personalities or alters for short. Once the splitting process is started on the human personality, it is like passing critical mass on the splitting process of atoms in a nuclear reaction, it becomes difficult to stop the splitting process which is self-sustaining.

People who are Satanists or come out of Satanism have Multiple personalities. Adolf Hitler is quite a visible example. He could talk peace with the Czechs and Poles while simultaneously preparing for war.

Should something go wrong the Satanists are programmed to do such things as stop eating, have an accident, ingest poison, not sleep, not to take medicene, break their own bones, etc. Reminders to reinforce these triggers are enacted via such things as spoken phrases, taps, or a rapid series of six electronic tones. These suicide programs are responsible for many of the shootings, hangings, overdoses, auto accidents, starvation, etc. that ex-Satanists experience. However, their deaths are not all suicide, Satanists will also put in great effort to kill the ex-Satanists.

Satanists are also programmed with Scrambling programs to confuse and block their alter system, emerging memories, thought processes and incoming data. Other programs forced into the SRA victims are Flooding programs to interfere with any therapeutic process, Recycle programs to cause the SRA victim to re-dissociate memories if any do get revealed, Cover programs to discredit the SRA victims stories with unbelievable content, Verbal Response programs which have been extensively and painfully rehearsed by the SRA victim and his programmer to ward off questions about Satanism and the victim's alters with acceptable answers. Some other programs are the Silence-Shutdown Programs which cause the victim to stop talking, another type is called Nightmare-Night Terror Programs which cause their minds to terrify them with horrible images. These programs can be tripped automatically if the victim tries to talk about forbidden material.

It is critical to realize the extent of such mind programming. Not only have the Satanists practiced this mind control for centuries, going clear back to early Hinduism and the early Mystery religions, but the mind programming is part of the life of the child of Satanists on an ongoing basis without time to be safe from the abuse.

The Ritual Abuse Task Force, Los Angeles County Commission for Women put out a report in 1990. The following are excerpts from it. Because of the nature of this material, I am quoting directly so that it will not appear to be simply this Author's own opinion but rather this is the real story about the indoctrination that people are going through everyday into the beliefs of Satanism.

"Ritual abuse is usually carried out by members of a cult. The purpose of the ritual elements of the abuse seems threefold: (1) rituals in some groups are part of a shared

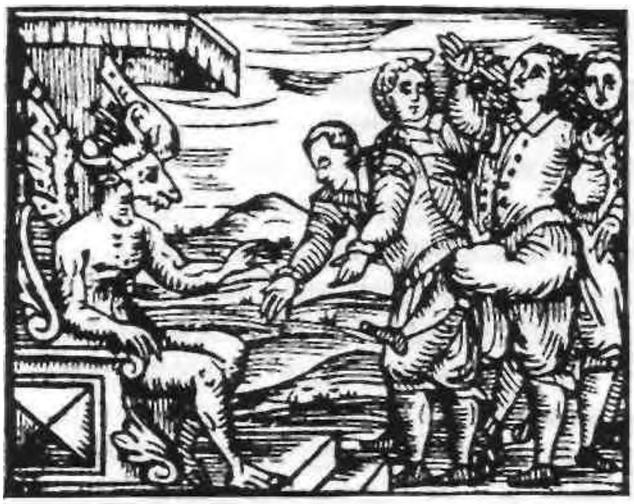

Sorcerers paying Homage to the Devil
Guaccius, *Compendium maleficarum* (Milan, 1626).

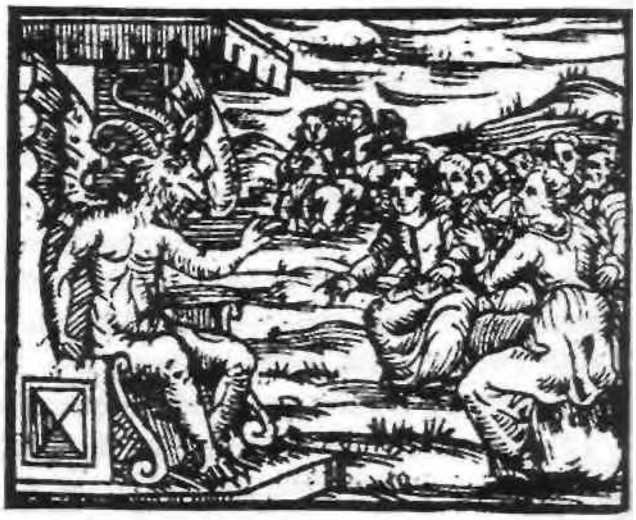

Satan pronounces a Discourse to Sorcerers
Guaccius, *Compendium maleficarum*.

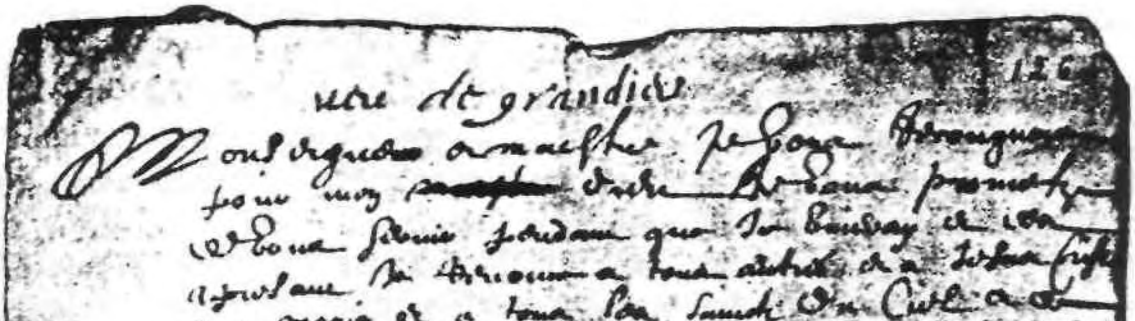

Fig. Autograph Pact of Urbain Grandier
Bibliothèque Nationale, manuscript *fonds français*, No. 7619, p. 126.

I give you my body and soul, and my life as holding it from you, having dedicated it for ever without any will to repent. Signed Urbain Grandier in his blood.

PACT SIGNED WITH SATAN IN BLOOD

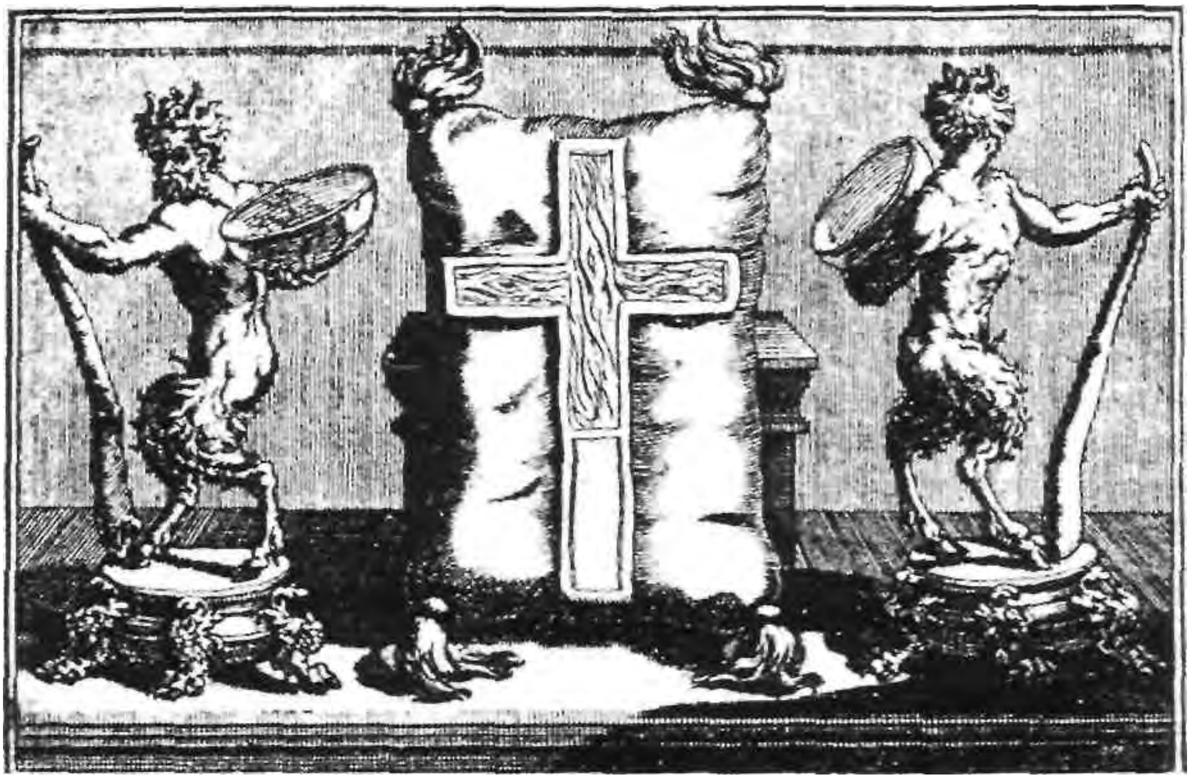

PARAPHERNALIA OF SORCERY USED BY HENRI III IN HIS SATANIC OPERATIONS
Les Sorceleries de Henry de Valois (Paris, 1589). Author's collection.

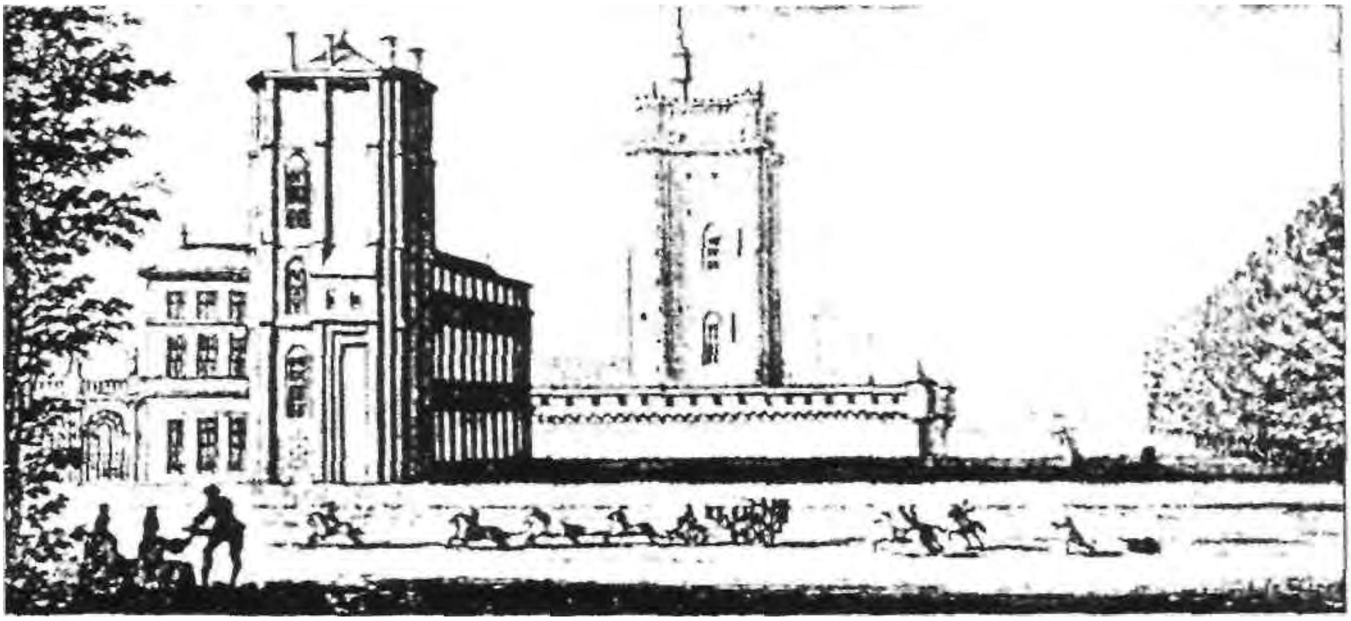

THE CASTLE OF VINCENNES AND ITS KEEP IN THE SEVENTEENTH CENTURY
Sebastien Le Clerc.
In the foreground is the Tour de Paris, where Henri III is said to have secluded himself to carry out works of sorcery.

belief or worship system into which the victim is being indoctrinated; (2) rituals are used to intimidate victims into silence; (3) ritual elements (e.g., devil worship, animal or human sacrifice) seem so unbelievable to those unfamiliar with these crimes that these elements detract from the credibility of the victims and make prosecution of the crimes very difficult.

"Most victims are children under the age of six who suffer the most severe and longstanding emotional damage from the abuse. These young victims are particularly susceptible to being terrorized and indoctrinated into the abusers belief system. During and even long after the abuse victims live in a state of terror and dissociation and suffer from the impact of mind control techniques. All this makes the initial disclosures of abuse exceedingly difficult, and can make each subsequent disclosure a terrifying and painful experience.

"Mind control is the cornerstone of ritual abuse, the key element in the subjugation and silencing of its victims. Victims of ritual abuse are subjected to a rigorously applied system of mind control designed to rob them of their sense of free will and to impose upon them the will of the cult and its leaders. Most often these ritually abusive cults are motivated by a satanic belief system. The mind control is achieved through an elaborate system of brainwashing, programming, indoctrination, hypnosis, and the use of various mind-altering drugs. The purpose of the mind control is to compel ritual abuse victims to keep the secret of their abuse, to conform to the beliefs and behaviors of the cult and to become functioning members who serve the cult by carrying out the directives of its leaders without being detected within society at large."

It is not by accident the the Mason Mesmer came out publicly with hypnotism (aka Mesmerism). The occultists who were the foundation of many of the Science Academies have been working to give scientific credibility to their occult methods. What was once Satanic is now scientific. Hynotism, spirit guides, visualization etc. which have long been part of the occult's mind control methods are now "scientific" and becoming an integral part of modern society. Other occult beliefs, such as evolution (discussed later), are being made the foundation of many of the arts and sciences. Step by step the Satanic Plan for world domination is being carried out. You the reader will learn what these plans are and how they are being carried out, if you read the rest of this book.

HOW CREDIBLE ARE SUCH ISSUES AS SATANISM?

How can this book maintain credibility in examining Satanism, when to assert the possibility of Satanism seems so unreasonable and monstrous? Not only is Satanism a historical fact, it is a contemporary experience of eyewitnesses who have been interviewed by this Author.

THE HISTORICAL FACTS

Throughout the history of Europe (and the rest of the world) there have been widespread reports of witchcraft.

Not all practitioners of Witchcraft are Satanists, but Witchcraft is a part of Satanism. All across Europe and indeed the whole world come countless historical documents attesting to the practice of witchcraft, and on a lesser scale also Satanism.

It has long been recognized by scholars who study witchcraft that some of witchcraft is merely slight-of-hand, terror, fraud, insanity, sensory illusion, hypnosis or semi-hypnosis.[10]

Witches in earlier times believed that they could fly on broomsticks on the Sabbat (the Satanic Sabbath). Chemists who have reconstructed medieval potions that were recipes for flying ointments have identified that these potions are of hemlock and aconite, (henbane and Jimsonweed were also used). These were in reality drugs that often gave the witch the notion of flying through the air when she applied the drugs. There are reports by medieval judges who watched suspected witches toss in delirium after these potions were applied, and then witnessed the individual witches insist that they had "flown" to their Sabbat and returned, yet the judges knew in fact they had never left the room.[11] Apparently, the use of these flying potions was widespread, and their covens would secretly carry the witches while they were delirious to the Sabbat, and when they would come down from their drug trip they would believe that they had flown and their belief in Witchcraft as a powerful fulfilling life would be increased.

But in spite of many of the non-supernatural explanations for various aspects of witchcraft, there is an element of the supernatural that persists. I say supernatural based on the common opinion that demonic spirits are supernatural. However, the demons may be more a natural part of this world than is commonly realized.

In 1681, two respected scholars Joseph Glanvil and Dr. Henry More published their scientific and empirical evidence that Witchcraft existed. The book was called Sadducismuc Triumphatus, Or full and plain Evidence concerning Witches and Apparitions...After the first came the Third Edition with Additions... (pub. in 2 parts) London, 1700. The book was an extensive compilation of case-histories and other evidence of Witchcraft. The book was so well received it settled the issue for a period until the book was forgotten. The book went through 5 issues it was so popular.

In 1668, Dr. Meric Casaubon came out with a book that contains information and evidence of Witchcraft. His A Treatise Proving Spirits, Witches and Supernatural Operations by Pregnant Instances and Evidence, was also well received and republished in 1672.

Obviously, the controversy about the existence of Satanism is an old one, but the evidence concerning Satanism is very old and sufficient throughout history. Skeptics to Satanism, have tended to be people who did not believe in God or perhaps anything supernatural. But within my own lifetime, this Author has seen how those who reject God because they supposedly don't believe in the supernatural and God is supernatural, have turned to the occult for their values and their world-view. They claim they are rejecting the supernatural, but their actions show they are rejecting God.

Witchcraft is not simply silly credulity. It is hoped that as the Power (Satanism) takes a stronger power grip on the world, its Satanic aspect will become more visible, so that when it fails people will know it for its evil deeds. Our written history has typically greatly under reported both good and evil. Evil prefers the darkness and evil prefers good not to shine, consequently the Power as it has controlled the media has ignored many miracles that God has done across the world, while simultaneously ignoring the activities of Satanism. This has served to blow smoke over the whole spiritual battlefield.

This Author can identify with something Joseph Glanvil wrote on page 6 of his Sadducismuc Triumphatus. After years of studying witchcraft and trying to debunk the stories and testimony of witnesses, Glanvil writes concerning those people in general who object, "To this aggregate Objection I return, in the general, The more absurd and unaccountable these actions [of witchcraft] seem, the greater confirmations are they to me of the Truth of those Relations, and the Reality of what the Objectors would destroy. For these circumstances being exceeding unlikely, judging by the measures of common belief, 'tis the greater probability they are not Fictitious: For the contrivers of Fictions use to form them as near as they can conformably to the most unsuspected realities, endeavouring to make them look as like Truth as is possible in the main supposals..."[11]

This Author concurs. Why would people seeking help and understanding (SRA victims) repeatedly say that they had guardian spirits that looked like E.T. (the alien on the film E.T.)? People coming out of the Satanism, the Illuminati, or Encounters of the third kind with Flying Saucers are repeatedly making similar outlandish statements that can only obviously destroy their credibility. These people can't all be irrational in the exact same way. Their stories are too similar.

Statements by those who have become Christians who were into Satanism say that Satan appears like an exceedingly handsome man with cloven hoofs. These contemporary witness, sound just like the testimony that has come forth for centuries. For instance, in France in 1578, Jeanne Hervillier testified that her Satan was dressed in black with hoofs, and in 1646 an English witch named Joan Wallis testified the same thing that Satan was "a large man in blackish clothing, but with cloven feet." Can such confirmation of the description by people in different countries at different time periods simply be dismissed?

These demons are reported to like the triangle symbol. For whatever reasons the triangle is becoming a popular symbol to use today. These demons also lie prolifically. There are many tie-ins between UFOs, demonic activity, Satanism, and the New World Order. That is a subject vast enough for another book.

The foundation of the Satanic religion, its basic doctrine from the middle ages down to the present was that Satan would one day rule the world. "The triumph of Satan will only be accomplished when the dualist dilemma is obviated and when one single force, Satan, rules supreme....This vision and ambition eventually became the fundamental Satanic influence in medieval Europe and laid the ground for the full-fledged Satanic religion known as witchcraft." (—Magic: Black, White, and Otherwise chapter of The Occult Conceit, p. 81)[12]

The inventions that intuitively came to scientists that were involved in the occult, make it suspicious that the technology has been spoon-fed mankind with an ulterior motive. Satanism during the Middle Ages was extensive, but it wasn't the threat to the world, as it is today with the increased world-wide communications, centralized controls, and high technology. Before there was merely the will to have Satan rule, but now there are power structures and the means to. The Old Testament states that God formed the nations to limit the power of evil. Today, the world is being rushed into globalism without being told the dangers. By the end of this book you will learn more about how the plans for the future Satanic slave-state have been carefully concealed.

1. Denslow, 10,000 Famous Freemasons, Vol. IV, p. 54
2. Storms, E.M. Should A Christian Be A Mason? American Heritage Pub. Co., 1980, —in back of the book Jim Shaw's tract "Christianity vs Freemasonry" is printed. Quote is from Shaw's tract.

3. America's Promise Newsletter,(Jan. 1988) p. 1.
4. Vaughn, William Preston. The Anti-Masonic Party in the United States. XT: University of Kentucky, 1983, p. 29.
5. Blevins, Gary D. The Final Warning. Kingsport, TN: Vision of the End Ministries, p. 260 and 482.
6. This section is based on this Author's research and the sources are of a sensitive nature. Suffice it to say that God has been able to break through the most powerful attempts of the Satanists to keep their secrecy, and has given some of the leading Satanists the power to overcome the forces of darkness, to allow them to reveal the details of how the Satanic Power that rules the world operates.
7. A surprising number of confidential sources from the occult confirm this.
8. Hall, Manly P. 33°, The Secret Teachings of All Ages, p. xxiv.
9. Much of this section is taken from Neswald, David W. "Common 'Programs' Observed in Survivors of Satanic Ritual Abuse," The California Therapist (Sept./Oct. 1991), pp. 47-50. David Neswald is one of the leading specialists in the treatment of SRA. People who do not understand the methods and power of Satanism, often tell this Author that there could not be any Satanic conspiracy because people change their minds and plans fail. In other words, life is too unpredictable for any such conspiracy to work. First, they don't realize the mind control that keeps Illuminati members in line, and second, they do not realize how controlled history has been, because the Satanists have controlled what has been put in the history textbooks and teach the masses the accidental theory of history. The reader will learn more about history in chapter 3.4.
10. Kittredge, George Lyman. Witchcraft in Old and New England. NY: Russell & Russell, 1956, p.354 quoting Bekker's treatment of the subject.
11. Glanvil, Joseph and Henry More. Saducismus Triumphatus: or, A Full and Plain Evidence concerning Witches and Apparitions. London, ed. of 1700, Vol. I, p.6.
12. Rachleff, Owen S. The Occult Conceit, a new look at Astrology, Witchcraft & Sorcery. NY: Bell Publishing Co., 1971, p. 81.

Recommended for further study:

Crisis of Conscience by Ray Franz. The author was in a position to inherit the presidency of the WT organization, and was the WT Society's leading Theologian. But his conscience led him to a separation from the WT Society. An excellent expose by one of the leading Governing Body members of the WT Society.

The Deadly Deception Freemasonry Exposed...By One of its Top Leaders by Jim Shaw and Tom McKenney. Jim Shaw was a 33rd degree Freemason and a Past Master of all Scottish Rite bodies, and a Knight Commander of the Court of Honor. McKenney and Shaw do an good job of informing readers what it is like to participate in Freemasonry. The book also has a good chapter comparing Masonic Doctrine versus Christian Doctrine. Exposes some of Masonry's deception.

Ritual Abuse Task Force Report. Available from Los Angeles Commission for Women 383 Hall of Administration, 500 W. Temple Street, Los Angeles, CA 90012. cost $5. Exposes the mind control used by Satanism to keep its secrets.

BECOMING YOURSELF

OVERCOMING
MIND CONTROL AND RITUAL ABUSE

ALISON MILLER

KARNAC

BECOMING YOURSELF

Overcoming Mind Control and Ritual Abuse

Alison Miller

KARNAC

First published in 2014 by
Karnac Books Ltd
118 Finchley Road, London NW3 5HT

Copyright © 2014 to Alison Miller.

The right of Alison Miller to be identified as the author of this work has been asserted in accordance with §§ 77 and 78 of the Copyright Design and Patents Act 1988.

All rights reserved. No part of this publication may be reproduced, stored in a retrieval system, or transmitted, in any form or by any means, electronic, mechanical, photocopying, recording, or otherwise, without the prior written permission of the publisher.

British Library Cataloguing in Publication Data

A C.I.P. for this book is available from the British Library

ISBN: 978 1 78220 076 5

Edited, designed and produced by The Studio Publishing Services Ltd
www.publishingservicesuk.co.uk
e-mail: studio@publishingservicesuk.co.uk

Printed in Great Britain

CONTENTS

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

ABOUT THE AUTHOR

FOREWORD by Kim Noble

INTRODUCTION

CHAPTER ONE
Symptoms, memories, and evidence

CHAPTER TWO
The struggle for healing
  with a contribution by:
  Wendy Hoffman: "Creating a government robot"

CHAPTER THREE
Dissociation, multiplicity, and personality systems
  with a contribution by:
  Wendy Hoffman: "Discovering my multiplicity"

CHAPTER FOUR
Engineered multiplicity: personality systems created by mind control

CHAPTER FIVE
Indoctrination
  with a contribution by
  Stella Katz: "How non-human parts are made"

CHAPTER SIX
Sally from three perspectives
  contributed by:
  Sally and her insiders

CHAPTER SEVEN
Internal hierarchies
  with a contribution by:
  LisaBri: "Mistakes my therapist made"

CHAPTER EIGHT

Talking with the higher-ups

CHAPTER NINE
Keeping safe from the perpetrator group

CHAPTER TEN
Dealing with triggering
with a contribution by:
Jean Riseman: “Programming: taking the wind out of its sails”

CHAPTER ELEVEN
Building inner community
with contributions by:
Jen Callow: “How I created my inner community”
Arauna Morgan: “Dismantling my inner structures”

CHAPTER TWELVE
Coping with daily life
with contributions by:
Wendy Hoffman: “Defrosting”
Trish Fotheringham: “My fail-safe and discard programming”

CHAPTER THIRTEEN
Emotions
with a contribution by:
Wendy Hoffman: “Feelings”

CHAPTER FOURTEEN
What about the memories?
with contributions by:
Wendy Hoffman: “My memory process”
Gaby Breitenbach: “Processing difficult experiences”

CHAPTER FIFTEEN
Putting together the traumatic memories
with a contribution by:
Jen Callow: “Memory work later in recovery”

CHAPTER SIXTEEN
Looking at your family
with contributions by:
LisaBri: “Paternal incest”;
“Sibling incest”;
“Maternal incest and emotional abandonment”

CHAPTER SEVENTEEN
Healing your sexuality
with a contribution by:
Meredith Sharman: “My sexual healing process”

CHAPTER EIGHTEEN

Succeeding in friendships and relationships

CHAPTER NINETEEN
Therapy and therapists
  with contributions by:
  Adriana Green: “Downfall”
  Wendy Hoffman: “My life as a therapy patient”
  Sally's higher-up insiders: “The new therapist”

CHAPTER TWENTY
Overcoming spiritual abuse
  with contributions by:
  Stella Katz: “For Miranda”
  Aurora Levins Morales: “Torturers”
  Heather Davediuk Gingrich: “A Christian therapist's perspective”

CHAPTER TWENTY-ONE
Becoming yourself
  with contributions by:
  Steven Frankel: “Learning to blend”
  Stella Katz: “Reclaiming me”
  Jen Callow: “To integrate or not to integrate”
  Jen Callow: “Life after integration”

REFERENCES

INDEX

This book is dedicated to those who have died as a result of mind control and/or ritual abuse, and those who have lived when they would rather have died.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

First of all, I want to thank all the clients who, over the past twenty-three years, have shared with me their painful stories of mind control and ritual abuse. They have been my most important teachers, and without them I would not have been able even to conceive of writing such a book. Some of them will recognise themselves in these pages, and I know it will be important to them to know they have helped point the way to freedom for many other survivors who have had experiences similar to their own.

Beyond that, words cannot express how grateful I am to those courageous survivors who have provided original contributions for this book: Jen Callow, Adriana Green, Wendy Hoffman, Sally, LisaBri, Arauna Morgan, and Meredith Sharman. Their bravery in facing their experiences, their hard-won internal co-operation and maturity, and their willingness to speak up constitute a unique contribution to our understanding of both these abuses and their healing process. Trish Fotheringham, Aurora Levins Morales, and Jean Riseman have also graciously allowed me to reprint their writings from elsewhere (in Jean's case, after her editing), and Stella Katz, before she died, gave me permission to use anything she had written or told me. One reason these survivors have had the courage and motivation to tell their stories is a desire to speak for those who cannot; another is to expose what the criminal groups do so that others may become free of those groups' control.

Therapists Gaby Breitenbach, Heather Gingrich, and Steven Frankel have also contributed techniques they use to help survivors. We therapists who have not personally experienced mind control or ritual abuse have, nevertheless, been touched by these horrors, through caring for clients who have gone through them. We cannot turn our backs on those who come to us, or fail to hear their stories simply because there is no external verification of the cause of their suffering. (Of course, some therapists are also survivors.)

I asked four survivors and three therapists to read this book chapter by chapter and provide feedback regarding whether each part would be helpful for survivors, and whether it could trigger programming. Survivor therapists Arauna Morgan and Wendy Hoffman, survivors LisaBri and Sally, and psychologist and lawyer Steve Frankel put in long hours reading the book chapter by chapter for conceptual clarity, accuracy, and safety, and I thank each of them from the bottom of my heart. You will see their own creative ideas in the book, not only in the longer pieces they wrote, but they are also quoted here and there in my text. All my readers put their hearts into this task because they want to help and empower survivors to overcome mind control.

ABOUT THE AUTHOR

Alison Miller is a clinical psychologist in private practice in Victoria, British Columbia, Canada. She worked for many years in child and youth mental health services, treating children and families. She is the original developer of the Living in Families Effectively (LIFE) Seminars (www.lifeseminars.com), and has co-authored two books on parenting with Dr Allison Rees. Since 1991, Dr Miller has been treating and learning from persons with dissociative disorders, in particular survivors of ritual abuse and mind control, and has developed a protocol for effective treatment. She is a Fellow of the International Society for the Study of Trauma and Dissociation. Her previous work on this subject is: *Healing the Unimaginable: Treating Ritual Abuse and Mind Control* (London, Karnac, 2011).

FOREWORD

This is Alison Miller's second book on mind control. To take on the task once is brave, but to take on the challenge of mind control twice is like professional suicide. Yet, without people like her speaking out, the cycle would continue, children and adults would be no more than puppets on a string, unaware of their lack of control. As survivors, we can hide behind anonymity, but for a professional this is not acceptable. Yet, it is the professionals who are attacked time and time again on our behalf and I would like to thank Alison and all the professionals that speak out.

I am pleased to have the opportunity to write something for this book as a mother, an artist, an author, and a main person of a programmed dissociated identity disorder (DID) system. This is the first time I have publicly given up my anonymity and stated that I am a mind control survivor. This book helped me decide to do that. Thank you again to Alison and our therapy for giving me the strength and support to do this.

I was introduced to mind control slowly and sensitively by our therapist, but went off on a false sense of strength, denial, and power and searched the Internet only to find our paintings were all over the mind control sites, being ripped apart and analysed. It was shocking and frightening to read about all the mind control symbols different people saw in our art, both rightly and wrongly. When I first came across this, I was not ready to hear what I read. As a survivor with DID, it is hard enough to get used to being in the public eye as an artist, and with my autobiography I allowed more of my life to become public. However, that was not about mind control. Reading the words written about our paintings and the different language used to describe programmes was indeed shocking. This made me realise how careful we survivors must be in how we time ourselves for such journeys.

With Alison's book, you are able to take one step at a time, read through it slowly and digest it chapter by chapter. It might not relate to you or it may be similar to your experiences. It might even be you to a T, but we are all different. It matters that we realise there is no single key to unlock each of our unique systems. We have to be honest with ourselves. It might help to take it to therapy, as I did, and it opened up new discussions and learning.

This book is carefully written with understanding of, and sensitivity to, the reader. From the beginning it slowly prepares one for the tragic truth of the damage one human being can do to another and the frightening world we live in. It is not only from one human being to another adult. It is, of course, what full-grown adults can do to tiny people, from babyhood onwards. Alison Miller is careful not to traumatise.

One important issue Alison's book highlighted for me was the difference between DID and mind control DID. Now there is more understanding that DID exists and survivors are communicating with each other on social networks, and through books and art, a difference needs to be noted between these two very different conditions.

DID as a creative defence against trauma is not the same as programmed DID, DID that is deliberately created through abusers deliberately torturing babies and young children with the aim of creating alters with particular tasks and identities. In the early days, professionals were not even trained to understand, recognise, or treat DID, so it did not seem that important to know the difference, but now the significant difference needs to be noted as there are different treatment implications.

It has been of concern to me, as the main person of a programmed DID system, to have some professionals lack knowledge of the severity of my condition. As an individual from such a programmed system, I can manage competently in certain areas, much to the disbelief of some professionals. Many feel DID means dramatic public switches of state which everyone can see all the time.

In addition, it needs to be stated that just as each human is different, each person with DID of any kind is also different, and we do not all fit into a square box. To have DID, we have all suffered in one way or another and the healing process is a very long, difficult journey made easier by the dedicated professionals who speak out on our behalf.

Kim Noble

Introduction

As a therapist working with survivors of mind control and ritual abuse, I became acutely aware of the need for a book to guide me, and for twenty years I waited for that book to appear, while struggling to learn from my survivor clients. Two years ago, I wrote the book that I had wanted to have. I hear from therapists all over the world that it is helping their understanding of how to work with survivors.

In that book, I included survivors' writings which detailed some of the abuses which mind-controlling and ritualistic abuser groups perform. I wrote "A word to survivors" in which I suggested they not read my book, but instead recommend it to their therapists. The reasons I gave were:

1. "You do not want your memories to be contaminated by reading the details contained on these pages about what ritual abusers and mind controllers do. Genuine survivors have difficulty in any case believing their memories, and it is easier to believe what comes up from within you if you do not have other people's information to confuse you.
2. "There are some graphic details of abuses here, and they can trigger flashbacks or trained behaviours in people who are actually survivors of such abuses. This can be unpleasant and destabilising for you."

After the book came out, I heard that some survivors complained about these cautions. They felt, quite rightly, that it was up to them to read it and judge whether or not it was appropriate. I have been told that survivors did read it. But because that book had a lot of "therapist language" as well as potentially upsetting details of abuses, I came to realise that perhaps I should write a book specifically geared to survivors. (If you want those gory details, you can read the other book, *Healing the Unimaginable: Treating Ritual Abuse and Mind Control.*)

Shockingly, at present, the self-help literature for persons suffering from complex dissociative post trauma conditions makes little or no mention of mind control or ritual abuse, despite the fact that many such persons have had those experiences, which are the strongest reasons to dissociate.

There are historical reasons for this omission. When therapists began to talk about the disclosures they were receiving, some of the leaders in the field were slapped with lawsuits, and a very well organised media campaign was orchestrated to convince the general public that most mind control and ritual abuse stories came straight from the mind of the therapist, and that survivors were gullible enough to believe anything a therapist would tell them. That concept is, in my opinion, an insult to survivors as well as to therapists. No one would deliberately make up such horrifying stories, and no one who had not undergone such experiences would claim them for their own and terrorise themselves with false memories of sadistic abuse, when they could just live a "normal" life.

Be that as it may, you can still receive some help from some of this literature, just as long as you do not expect it to do what it cannot do. The index of Boon, Steele, and van der Hart's otherwise excellent *Coping with Trauma-Related Dissociation* (2011) does not even mention the words *mind control, programming*, or *ritual abuse*, and neither does the text, despite the fact that for many people these abuses are the basis of the symptoms which the authors are trying to address.

However, that book, which has received much praise, does have many helpful exercises to help you cope with everyday life. It is based on a day treatment programme, and the authors recommend it be used only as part of work with a trained and skilled therapist. Unfortunately, not all survivors can afford therapy, or can find a safe therapist who understands and is willing to face what they are dealing with. Other self-help books, especially for survivors of sexual abuse, can also be helpful, particularly for dealing with the effects of abuses which were not deliberately orchestrated to create mind control.

In reading *Coping with Trauma-Related Dissociation*, as well as many books for therapists about trauma and dissociation, I keep recognising the effects of programming in the case examples. I see the experts making up complex intrapsychic motives for survivors doing things which have a very simple explanation: young inside parts of them doing jobs they were trained to do. In my opinion, trying to fight programmed urges can be a constant losing battle, and there are much more effective ways to deal with these once you recognise that they are programmed (which means they are driven by the terror of young child parts of you).

There are several first-person accounts of mind control and ritual abuses, but not many books that point the way to recovery. I know of two: Chrystine Oksana's *Safe Passage to Healing* (1994) and Emilie P. Rose's *Reaching for the Light* (1996), both of which take a very gentle and compassionate approach but are aware of the mind control through which cults control those they abuse. At the time these books were written, non-religious military/political and organised criminal abuses had not yet come to light, but still much of what they say is applicable to survivors of non-religious mind control abuse.

What is different about my book? It is compassionate, but it is not gentle. It tackles the problems head-on. I believe that people who have survived horrendous childhood abuse can be strong and courageous in finding out the truth of what happened to them and doing the necessary work to achieve safety and healthy lives.

I do not believe that survivors are more suggestible than other people. This is a cover-up lie disseminated by abusers to make therapists afraid to ask survivors what happened to them. Certainly, the young child parts of you might have been fooled by stage magic and adults' lies, but you are now old enough to put two and two together and make four, not a hundred. If you are a mind control survivor, even your desire to deny the facts of what happened to you is not just coming from your own wish to have had a happy childhood and to continue to have a happy family, it is programmed—that is, it was drummed into you—by abusers.

So, much of this book is about how you can overcome the lies that your young parts were told, and might be continuing to be told. In order to do this effectively, you need to involve all parts of you in the process of assessing reality. When you read survivors' stories, you need to say within yourself: “This is that other person's experience. If it resonates with mine, perhaps something similar happened to me. But if it doesn't resonate, then perhaps my experience was different.” Mind control is complicated, and different groups do different things. What is important is that you find out what was done to *you*, and what you were forced to do, and find ways to reverse the effects of these experiences. It is possible that things do not resonate because your system is blocked or closed down by the abusers, but it is also possible that they do not resonate because those things did not happen to you. Only your insiders can tell.

What about triggering, the second concern I expressed in my introduction to the book for therapists? Well, if you read this book, you are going to be triggered. There is no way around that. The destabilisation caused by beginning to remember is temporary, however. There are two kinds of triggering. The first kind is when something in the present reminds you of a past trauma, and sets off flashbacks. If you are a survivor, you have parts inside who already know how to shut that down. The second kind of triggering is when some part of you sets off a programmed emotion or behaviour, usually as a warning or punishment when you are coming to know or tell something which is supposed to be a secret of the perpetrator group. You have parts who know how to turn that off, too, but they have to decide to do so. You can also refer to Chapter Ten, which gives more detailed information on dealing with triggering.

Every chapter in this book is potentially triggering. One survivor therapist I know says “Triggering is good, and it gets you out of your stupor.” She sees it as a way to access her inside parts and her memories.

The other way in which this book is different from other self-help books is that I am writing to you as if you are multiple, because whether you know it or not, if you are a survivor, you are. This just means that you have different inside parts who know and feel different things and have different “jobs”. I am writing to all parts, at least, to all parts who are old enough to read and understand what I am saying, not just to the part of you who goes to work or takes care of your children. That part has a specialised job in the present-day world. For most survivors, that part has to be protected from the knowledge and feelings of the mind control abuse. So, I am inviting other parts, particularly those who were trained and indoctrinated by your abusers, to participate in learning from this book. Do not leave it to the adult who has to handle daily life. You can heal if you all choose to take part. You can even read portions of the book out loud or internally to child parts who cannot yet read. Yes, the material is not suitable for children—but neither were the experiences you underwent when you were in the hands of your abusers.

Finally—this is only a book. I am not exercising any control over you. I am not telling you what to feel or think or believe. I am only laying out things that I have learnt from the survivors I have known, in order to help you engage in your own healing process. You are not “telling” me anything, so there is no need to turn on punishments for telling or talking! You are only reading.

I chose *Becoming Yourself: Overcoming Mind Control and Ritual Abuse* as the title because that is what this book is about. Mind controllers do not recognise a child's right to become himself or herself. Rather than recognising their children's innate abilities, interests, and choices, they attempt to turn children (and the adults they become) into mind-controlled slaves who serve someone else's purposes. Yet, valiant survivors all over the world are struggling to reclaim their true identities, overcoming the effects of all the atrocities that they have endured to claim their true selves. Some have already succeeded.

Although this is a tough book, I am hoping it is a compassionate one. Indeed, it is a love letter to survivors. (Yes, love, *not* sex.) I was fortunate enough not to have to endure mind control or ritual abuses. My personal acquaintance with a number of survivors who have been brave enough to pursue healing has given me great admiration for them. I care about those who have endured these horrendous experiences, and I want to provide you with as much help as possible to enable you to engage in and complete your own healing. I hope that as survivors come to recognise what has happened to them, and to heal, they will transform “civilised” society from one which permits the existence of mind control abuses by denying or dissociating its awareness of them into one which recognises, rejects, and combats these evils. Your first step to becoming yourself is awareness of what is inside you and what happened to you.

Only the small secrets need to be protected. The big ones are kept secret by public incredulity.

(*Marshall McCluhan*)

The most authentic thing about us is our capacity to create, to overcome, to endure, to transform, to love and to be greater than our suffering.

(*Ben Okri, Nigerian poet and novelist*)

Our sorrows and wounds are healed only when we touch them with compassion.

(*Mohandas Gandhi*)

CHAPTER ONE

Symptoms, memories, and evidence

This book is written for survivors of mind control and ritual abuse. Perhaps you know beyond a doubt that you are such a survivor, because you have clear memories of childhood abuse that involved attempts to split and control your mind through occult rituals, torture, and deception. If so, you are in a minority.

Over centuries, organised perpetrator groups have observed and studied the way in which extreme childhood traumas, such as accidents, bereavement, war, natural disasters, repeated hospitalisations and surgeries, and (most commonly) child abuse (sexual, physical, and emotional) cause a child's mind to be split into compartments. Occult groups originally utilised this phenomenon to create alternative identities and what they believed to be “possession” by various spirits. In the twentieth century, probably beginning with the Nazis, other organised groups developed ways to harm children and deliberately structure their victims' minds in such a way that they would not remember what happened, or that if they began to remember they would disbelieve their own memories. Consequently, the memories of what has happened to a survivor are hidden within his or her inside parts.

My purpose in writing this book is not to suggest to you anything that could have happened to you, but to help you know how to work with those inside parts (if you have them) to help them deal with their own experiences. They, rather than any book, outside group, or even therapist, know the ultimate truth about your life. If something in this book resonates with you, check with your inside parts who know what did and did not happen, recognising that no one of them knows the whole story. If you do have separate inside parts, some of them will not know what happened to others of them. This can be a lengthy process, and we shall spend several chapters on it.

My other purpose is to help you heal from whatever happened to you, as survivors of these unimaginable abuses usually, and quite naturally, suffer from quite a few debilitating symptoms.

The human brain is very complex, with many component circuits that communicate with one another through electrical and chemical signals. In traumatic dissociation, those parts are kept separate by strong barriers, so that one part is not aware of the content or feelings held by the other parts. The child who attends school does not remember the abuse that happens at home or via the family; those memories are held in another part of the child's mind. The child does not even remember abuse that happened the preceding night. When the child grows up, he or she might not consciously remember the abuse, but might experience flashbacks and other symptoms related to it.

Although a body has only one brain, the circuits in that brain can operate relatively independently, so that people with very separate brain circuits experience themselves as more than one person, multiple. Dissociative splitting is an adaptation which enables a child to live with ongoing trauma, in many or most cases involving his or her own parents or care-givers, with the "normal" parts of that child being unaware of the things that happened to the other parts. (When I speak of "parts", I do not mean to imply that any internal identity is less important than the identity who manages everyday life; it, too, is a part of a complex brain.) Dissociative splitting is a defence against post traumatic stress disorder, in which flashbacks, nightmares, "body memories", and overwhelming emotional states can make life unbearable.

Dissociative separation of brain circuits does not always work perfectly. Because the different parts are located in the same brain, emotions or impulses can "leak" from hidden parts into the "front person" who manages everyday life, and can give rise to a large number of psychiatric symptoms which affect the person's physical health, interpersonal relationships, ability to manage emotions, ability to control behaviour, beliefs and thinking, and self-concept.

Amnesia for the traumatic events which cause the symptoms and the dissociation is very likely if care-givers, such as parents, are involved in the abuse, and if it has to be kept secret, as Jennifer Freyd points out in *Betrayal Trauma* (1996), and has demonstrated in many research studies. This is true for survivors of incest, for children beaten by their parents, and, most of all, for children whose parents are involved in an organised perpetrator group. With mind control, which includes ritual abuse, the dissociation is deliberately created and the secrecy enforced through "programming" the child never to speak of the abuse, and sometimes never to remember it. (I use the term "mind control" to mean any attempt to deliberately control the mind. Ritual abuse is one type of mind control, but not the only kind.)

Finding out what happened to you

If you do not remember what happened to you because of dissociation, what evidence can you find to discover it? There are now checklists for formal assessments of childhood trauma history by professionals, notably Briere's and Runtz's "Trauma Symptoms Check-list" (see www.johnbriere.com/tsc.htm), which includes measures of dissociation, anxiety, depression, sexual abuse trauma, sleep disturbance, and sexual problems. A high score on this checklist will tell you that something happened, but not *what* happened to you.

Some of your experiences, however, can give you clues about what actually happened.

Evidence in flashbacks

Since "flashbacks" are episodes during which survivors re-experience parts of traumas they have undergone, they serve as indicators of experiences that are hidden from consciousness. Flashbacks are especially likely to happen when triggered by some kind of reminder, such as a smell that reminds someone of an abuser. They can be like "waking dreams". Flashbacks can be pure emotion, or body sensations, or pictures, or sound. You might hear someone calling your name or feel as if someone is there behind you. Sometimes flashbacks are difficult to interpret, as they only give part of the whole experience.

Evidence in body memories

Certain aspects of your experience are hard to disbelieve. Your body can give you important clues. “Body memories” are flashbacks of physical trauma that are experienced as pain or other bodily symptoms. One client of mine had small sores appear on his body before he actually discovered the story behind them—cigarette burns used as punishment during his childhood. Another had body sensations of being raped, and recognised that she must be a survivor of childhood sexual assault. She also had different sensations, for example of her hands being pressed together painfully, and she did not know the meaning of these sensations until some of her inside parts were able to provide the visual and auditory parts of the memory, in which a man was behind her pressing his hands around hers while she held a knife. The original reason she began therapy was because of an obsessive fear of harming someone with a knife.

It is harder to disbelieve body memories than narrative memories. They are involuntary. They cannot really be influenced by television shows or books; if you have not experienced something in your body, you do not know what it feels like. So, body memories are evidence that cannot be discounted. They simply must be “heard” and respected.

Evidence in dreams

Freud called dreams “the royal road to the unconscious”. When we dream, the material that affects our life, of which we might not be aware in our everyday consciousness, comes to the surface and makes stories. Dreams can represent our wishes, and our fears. They can also represent our past experiences, known or unknown to us. All of this is commonly known. They can also represent people's internal parts and the relationships between them.

One client of mine had spent many hours interpreting her dreams symbolically with her Jungian therapist. This interpretation, based on someone else's theory, was misleading. When I saw the dreams (written out), I saw the stories of conflict between her dissociated inside parts, and of happenings that looked a good deal like ritual abuse. And, sure enough, when I got to know the younger parts, very slowly over about four years, a ritual abuse history, from a period very early in her life, emerged. This client has never heard the term, and still does not use it. Nevertheless, her dreams told her story.

Another client meets her inside parts only in dreams, where they appear as children or teenagers with whom she is spending time, or whom she is helping.

Dream content is mixed and distorted, so you can never say that a dream has definitely shown you what happened to you. You cannot be sure about the meanings of dreams. They are influenced by everything that happens to us, including games, television shows, and the news. But if we do have hidden abuse memories, or hidden parts of ourselves, these are likely to show up in dreams. Since dreams contain helpful clues, some abuser groups tell the children, when they ask about things they remember, that it must have been “only” a dream.

Recurrent dreams are especially significant and, in my experience, they continue to recur because they are conveying an important message, and may not stop until they are acknowledged.

Evidence in artwork

If you make spontaneous art, you might find that indications of your trauma surface in your artwork. Interpreting your art is similar to interpreting your dreams. The content might be mixed and distorted, but it can tell your story.

An activity that helped one survivor was drawing an outline of her whole body, and colouring the areas of it where she felt violated and where she had felt pain. This was the beginning of her discovery of what had happened to her.

Throughout this book, you will find exercises to help you apply the book's material to your own life. Here is the first one.

Exercise 1. Writing down your possible experiences

Do you have conscious memories of events which appear to have been mind control or ritual abuse? (Mind control and ritual abuse will be explained in Chapter 2.)

Do you have flashbacks? What does their content suggest might have happened to you?

Do you have body memories which seem to go with physical or sexual assaults which your conscious mind does not remember?

Do you have dreams of traumatic events which you do not consciously remember happening to you? What could have influenced these dreams (TV, reading news, others' stories-or your own dissociated memories)? Are there recurrent themes in your dreams?

If you make artwork, have any of your works suggested any specific kind of trauma? Are there recurrent themes in your artwork?

When you look at your flashbacks, body memories, dreams, and artwork, what clues do you see about what might have happened to you?

Write a brief description of each of the events you have remembered or encountered in dreams or flashbacks. Try to put them in chronological order, by how old you believe you were when these things happened. If some events, especially very early ones, cannot be put into words, try drawing them.

Do you remember other children, such as your siblings, being present at any of these events? (Note that if they were present, it is not wise to ask them about it, since they might alert abusers to the fact that you are remembering. See Chapter Nine for more information on this topic.)

Is there any part of the events that could possibly be validated by physical evidence? Are there places that you remember and could visit with a safe companion? Do you have scars on your body that could be evidence of something that happened to you?

Dissociative conditions as evidence

One of the best indicators of the possibility of a mind control history is the presence of traumatic dissociation. Unfortunately, dissociation itself functions by hiding. Not only does it hide the material, but it hides *the fact that the material lives somewhere out of awareness*. Therefore, while some people seek help because of overt and disconcerting symptoms of dissociation, the average dissociative person is no more aware of having it than the average mind control or ritual abuse survivor is aware of what has happened to him or her.

At present, psychiatry and the other mental health professions define dissociation as a disorder, and the two major dissociative disorders they currently recognise are dissociative identity disorder (DID) and dissociative disorder not otherwise specified (DDNOS). A person is considered to have DID when different parts of the mind take over the body at different times, with the main person not remembering what has happened when he or she is not consciously “out” in the body. DDNOS is an overly inclusive diagnostic category covering many types of dissociation other than DID—essentially, a situation in which a person meets some but not all of the criteria for DID.

In what I believe is the most common form of DDNOS, the main person is only a “shell” through whom the inside parts come. The visible personality differs depending on which combination of inside parts is near the surface, temporarily blending with the “front person”. This condition is the intended goal of mind controlling abusers. In mind control created DDNOS, the parts live behind the scenes, and only take over consciousness, or executive control, when “triggered” to do so, either deliberately by the abusers, or accidentally by someone else, or by an event that resembles the abuse. The “front person” is not supposed to know about the other parts.

Mind control builds on the natural, reactive dissociative fragmenting caused by childhood trauma. The trauma-based developing of many separate part-selves that begins in early childhood and results from extreme (often life-threatening) trauma is not merely psychological. It is also a biological process in the brain. It is not something that the person chooses, and it cannot begin in adulthood. Although the parts are all in one body, they represent different brain circuitry that appears to have been separated by some biological process that we do not sufficiently understand. Brain imaging studies show different brain pathways activated with different parts, and other studies show physiological differences between different personality states.

DID used to be called MPD (multiple personality disorder). I shall, at times, use the old term "multiple" in this book, in respect for the internal experience of people whose psyches have been split in childhood, as those who are aware they are multiple often feel like a "we" rather than an "I". The term "multiplicity" is usually assumed to describe DID alone, but it also applies to DDNOS, which, for the purpose of this book, is even more important. The psychiatric community calls multiplicity a "disorder", but it is a valuable, creative asset that has served the person well. It is not an inferior way of being.

I like to tell my clients something that I learnt from one of my first survivor clients: that a dissociative disorder is mental injury rather than mental illness, and, therefore, requires a different treatment. For a broken leg, you would put the bone parts back together and keep them connected so they could heal, even though it might be painful. Similarly, with a broken mind, you bring the parts back together by introducing them to one another, and you clean the wound by helping the person resolve what happened to make the parts split from one another.

Singletons (non-multiples), being conscious of everything that happens to them, are well adapted for living in safety. They do have different parts, adapted for different situations, but there are not strong barriers or amnesia between those parts. They are unable to "go away" from the body if they are afraid or in pain.

A person who is multiple, on the other hand, is well-adapted for living with ongoing trauma. I once heard a prison psychologist say he would not treat multiples, because prison is so traumatic that you need to be multiple to survive well. Certainly this is also true of the early life years when the divisions first develop, as this is a time of relative helplessness and dependence on others. The barriers that separate the parts of a multiple are what enable a child to tolerate, and so survive, unavoidable abuse or other trauma.

Even in an adult life that is not challenged by ongoing trauma, there are sometimes advantages to being multiple. In some cases, it permits heightened abilities. I knew a multiple whose internal part called "Brain" (not *Brian*!) memorised all her textbooks and was able to remember everything word for word for exams, and another who had insiders with all kinds of special savant abilities. Without the distractions of emotions, everyday life, and other thoughts, a part with a singular focus can sometimes do amazing things.

Some multiples are consciously aware of their dissociative personality systems. Others are not, especially if they have deliberately structured personality systems which are designed so that the person who lives the regular daily life is unaware of the other inside parts and their activities.

Someone who is multiple experiences life through a series of different selves. Just as a singleton cannot become a multiple at will, a multiple cannot become a singleton, until and unless the barriers between the parts of the self are removed. Those barriers were put up to enable the child to tolerate and so survive unavoidable abuse or other trauma. Someone who was not multiple might not have been able to survive those overwhelming experiences.

If you are multiple, you are probably a survivor of some kind of severe and prolonged trauma beginning in early childhood, perhaps right from birth or even in the womb. This might or might not have been deliberate mind control or ritual abuse. It could be from physical or sexual abuse by a family member, or from living in a war zone, or from a prolonged painful illness.

Whether or not people understand that they have been through severe and prolonged childhood trauma, they might experience the signs of a dissociative disorder, even without identifying them. There are a number of excellent books and other resources that can help you work out whether or not you could be diagnosed with a dissociative disorder.

There are also several good assessment tools for professionals. However, if you have a formal assessment, make sure that the person who conducts it is aware of dissociative disorders and the tools necessary to diagnose them, as many psychologists and psychiatrists have not yet been educated about the dissociative disorders (which some dissociative people would argue are not "disorders" at all, since they are normal adaptations to abnormal situations).

Whether you have DID or DDNOS, you can only find out what traumas happened to you and resolve them by communicating with your inside parts and working through the memories they contain.

Exercise 2. The Dissociative Experiences Scale

The Dissociative Experiences Scale (DES) is a well-known quick instrument for assessing dissociation. It covers a number of experiences that are common to persons with dissociative disorders. It is not a substitute for a professional diagnosis, however.

The DES is available online at www.serene.me.uk/tests/des.pdf. Take the test and see how high your score is. Remember that people with DDNOS might not score as high as those with DID, and that if you have dissociative parts who were designed to be well hidden, you might have a low score. Some of the items also reflect "normal dissociation", the ability to be so absorbed in thought or in what you are doing that you do not notice what else is happening, as in "highway hypnosis", when you do not notice the landmarks and drive past your destination.

How high is your score? What does this tell you about yourself?

Many persons doing this test are struck by how well some of the items capture experiences which they thought were unique to them. Did this happen for you? Which items were significant to you?

I have observed that when clients with dissociative disorders do the test in my presence, they often "switch" during the test, so that they will say no to the first few items and then begin to say yes more frequently as different internal parts of them recognise the experiences on the test. Did this happen to you? If so, you might want to deliberately do the test in different states, or, if you know you are multiple, with different parts of you "out". This shows how different the experience can be from one internal part to another.

Deliberately structured dissociative personality systems are designed to hide the dissociation, so it is possible to get a low score on the DES and have a very complex personality system.

Mind control and ritual abuse indicators

Some survivors do not have any concrete memories, but suspect mind control and/or ritual abuse because of specific symptoms they are experiencing. Ellen Lacter provides a current, and comprehensive, list of indicators on her website (www.endritualabuse.org). Lacter's list for adult survivors of ritual abuse has forty-three items, many of which resonate with my experience of ritual abuse survivors. She also has a separate list of indicators of mind control by groups other than religious ones.

In Exercise 3, I have put together a list of symptoms that are common in survivors of mind control and ritual abuse. Some items are drawn from earlier lists developed by Pamela Reagor and Catherine Gould, as well as Lacter; others come from my own experience of dealing with survivors.

As you check off the list items, remember that individual items can be explained by a variety of experiences. For example, difficulties around birthdays or holidays could come from childhood participation in a cult that celebrated birthdays and holidays with abusive rituals. Or they might indicate a family history of alcoholism, with drunken violence at those times. Other items are more specific for mind control and ritual abuse—such as ritualistic chants in your head, or patterned self-mutilation.

In medicine, the same symptom might be indicative of a number of different conditions, some serious and some benign. Items on this checklist, like those on symptom lists for cancer or other diseases diagnosed by physicians, are not intended as individual indicators. It is the configuration and pattern of the symptoms that make a difference. When all the items are taken together, they accurately present a profile that can alert you to the possibility of a mind control or ritual abuse history.

The following exercise looks at symptoms that are common in survivors of mind control and/or ritual abuse.

Exercise 3. Symptoms of mind control and/or ritual abuse

Tick each item which applies to you.

- You have been diagnosed with DID or DDNOS;
- You have made drawings characterised by ritual-like features, for example, lots of red and black, knives, fire, cages, robes, body parts, blood, etc.;
- You find yourself preoccupied with or needing to avoid newscasts, magazine articles, or conversations, about mind control or ritual abuse;
- You have worse psychiatric symptoms around your birthday, family members' birthdays, Christmas, Easter, Halloween, May Day, and early September;
- You have cut patterns, shapes, or letters on your own body;
- You have unexplained scars on your body, or scars for which the explanations you were given do not make sense or seem right;
- You have intrusive thoughts or impulses regarding violent sex, sex with children, or sex with animals;
- You find odd, ritualistic songs or chants running through your head, sometimes with a sexual, bizarre, or “you'd better not tell” theme;
- You hear voices ordering you not to talk or to be quiet;
- If you talk about what might have happened to you, you experience symptoms like bodily pain, nausea, a severe headache, paranoid thoughts and fear, or flashbacks of violent events;
- You get spontaneous spasms or head jerks as if you are receiving an electric shock;
- Sometimes you feel that there is something foreign inside your body which can do harm to you or others, or can signal your location or your thoughts to abusers;
- Sometimes you worry that you will harm or murder someone or that you have done so;
- Sometimes you feel that your energy will poison those you are close to;
- You have dreams which seem to describe mind control or ritual abuse experiences;
- You have fears, phobias, and nightmares associated with the following:
  - religion and church;
  - Christmas and Easter;
  - going to the doctor or the dentist;
  - bodily fluids and excretions;
  - injections and needles;
  - weapons;
  - birthdays and weddings;
  - police, jails, and cages;
  - baths and drowning;
  - insects, snakes, spiders, and rats;

- cameras and being photographed or videotaped;
- specific colours or shapes;
- ropes, being tied up, being hung;
- confined spaces, basements, crawl spaces, pits;
- death and burial;
- red meat and/or certain other foods;
- harm being done to your loved ones or your pets.

Some of the fears (such as needles or insects or the dentist) are common. If you have ticked these, do you have a way to account for them in your life history?

Some of the fears, and the non-fear items, are uncommon. Have you ticked any of the uncommon ones? Do you have a way to account for them in your life history?

Look at the entire pattern of your answers. No single one of these items means you have a history of mind control or ritual abuse. However, if you say yes to a large number of them, especially the uncommon ones, you might suspect such a history.

The real life conscious fears, feelings, and reactions that survivors of mind control and ritual abuse experience are not the only or deepest indicators of such a history. In Chapter Four, we shall look at a checklist which goes deeper, covering the characteristics of a personality system designed by mind controlling abusers.

"Maybe I made it up"

If you are having memories indicating mind control or ritual abuse material, and have tried talking to friends or to authorities about them, you have probably had a frustrating experience. Many people do not want to listen to such things. They might question your truthfulness. They might tell you to "grow up and get over it". They might wonder whether you are imagining things. Even people who are genuinely interested just cannot grasp the meaning; they cannot believe that such things happen.

Child abusers exploit such reactions when they tell their victims things such as "No one will believe you". It is not true. True friends can, and will, honour what you share with them, although it might be a struggle for them to hear that such awful things happened to someone they care about. Competent, empathic therapists are also capable of knowing how difficult it is to talk about these things, and being open to hear horrendous truths, though, sadly, there are not many therapists who can tolerate hearing about this level of abuse. If someone cannot hear what you have to say, you should not continue to disclose your experiences to that person; seek out someone else.

But survivors of mind control and ritual abuse usually have a more serious problem: they have difficulty believing themselves. Many times I have had survivors come into my office the week after disclosing a particularly horrendous memory and say, "It didn't happen, I made it all up." Or "There are no younger parts inside me holding memories; I just wanted attention." Or (my favourite) "We are not multiple." Why does this reversal or denial happen?

Survivors who are discovering apparent memories of mind control or ritual abuse often struggle with the question, "Could this really have happened?" and insist that none of it is true. They struggle to find excuses to dismiss it, such as that they made it all up, they got it from television shows or the Internet, or they have vivid imaginations.

Some survivors do have vivid imaginations; some do not. Some like to read and research, others do not. In fact, others deliberately do not read or watch anything related to what they are remembering so that they do not contaminate their memories. If you do have such an imagination, you might want to be careful about what you read and watch, so that you cannot be accused, or accuse yourself, of making things up. My concern here is mainly so that you can reassure yourself about this. I do not believe that non-survivors, even imaginative ones, are easily able to make up the kinds of memories which survivors have. I myself have listened to literally thousands of narratives of mind control and ritual abuse experiences—and I am still convinced that I have never personally experienced such things. I do not even dream about them.

One of my clients had flashbacks of ritual abuse, and her mother informed her that certain neighbours who used to look after her were the perpetrators. The client now doubts both whether she was ritually abused, and whether those were the real perpetrators, just because it was her mother who told her this. Outside influences can be very confusing for people with these memories.

Many things that happen to persons with a dissociative disorder feel as if they happened to someone else. This is because those things happened to another part of the person, and the information about them "leaked" into the "front person" who lives most of daily life. In addition, events that are remembered at one time might not be remembered at other times, and this leads to confusion. (Such people have been described as having "multiple reality disorder".)

There are many reasons that someone might insist that what they are remembering cannot be real. One obvious reason is the bizarre and horrific nature of the flashbacks that survivors experience. If you are seeing such things in your head, you do not want to believe they are real, or even possible.

Inside parts may "recall" different realities and maintain different beliefs about abuse. One survivor I know has a group of little child parts inside who have horrible memories of abuse outside the family that began early in her life (via a babysitter). At the same time, another group of parts, comprising adults and teenagers, has no conscious memories of this abuse. They tell her that they have been having awful nightmares of things which cannot be real. Some of their "nightmares", they say, are during the day. The little ones told me about the "line" down the middle of their head that separates those who lived inside the home from the ones who remember the early abuse outside the home. So the older parts are unaware of the little ones and what happened to them. However, pictures and emotions leak through this dividing line and are interpreted by the older parts as signs that they must be either crazy or evil to invent such horrible things.

In Chapter Five, we shall look at mind control "programming", which is the deliberate training of inside parts of a person to produce automatic beliefs, emotions, and behaviours which the perpetrators want them to have. This training gives each part or group of parts a specific job. Many jobs serve the purpose of security and secrecy for the perpetrators of the abuse. Mind control training involves various kinds of deception, including stage magic and technology.

One category of training is denial training, designed to make the "regular" everyday life person disbelieve any memories of the abuse that might leak into consciousness. Denial of mind control material is not just the natural product of human nature. Most mind-controlled children are trained in denial and disbelief of their own memories and their own internal multiplicity by mind controlling abusers, who have studied the processes of remembering and forgetting, and how dissociation works.

Types of denial training that I have heard about include:

1. Training that makes survivors unaware of their dissociation by creating "walls" between the inside parts or using anti-psychotic drugs to suppress internal voices.
2. Simulated murders of people who later turn out to be alive. These memories are designed to pop up if the person starts to remember other secret events, and if they are disclosed, investigators find out the victims are alive and then disbelieve other disclosures. Needless to say, the survivors who

remember these supposed murders become very confused, and begin to doubt everything they have remembered.
3. Deliberately designed "cover memories" that are impossible, such as alien abductions. These memories, like the simulated murders, are supposed to come up if other things are remembered or disclosed.
4. False but reasonable explanations for scars or particular memories that come up for a survivor.
5. Built-in denial training during rituals, such as people chanting, "This is not real, this is a dream."
6. Training that discourages telling the truth because of survivors believing that the abusers know what they do and say, and/or young parts of them believing something horrific will happen if they tell.

Validation and proof

Many survivors feel they would believe their own memories if they only had some proof other than their own memories. Unfortunately, most of the time this proof is hard to come by. Organised groups who abuse children are very careful to remove all evidence of their crimes.

Sometimes there is cross-corroboration by other survivors or family members who were actually present during the abuse. (However, even if this exists, not all who shared mind control or ritual abuse experiences might be ready to deal with them at the same time.) The similarity of survivors' experiences in different locations is well documented. The Extreme Abuse Survey (see http://eassurvey.wordpress.com/extreme-abuse-survey-final-results/) asked questions about quite a number of different experiences, and found large percentages of those reporting extreme abuse had similar experiences.

If survivors of ritual abuse find it difficult to be believed, it is even more difficult for someone who was abused and mind controlled by his or her own government. Fortunately, however, these survivors potentially have available to them the most substantial documentation of these acts having been committed. Mind-control survivor Carol Rutz, in her book, *A Nation Betrayed*, has described some of the validation that she obtained through her Freedom of Information Act submission in the USA (although other survivors have more recently been unable to find their own records this way).

Look for your internal truth

All your feelings are real and are based on your life experiences, including those you do not yet remember. There is a reason for any dreams, flashbacks, or body memories, or other symptoms you are having. Whatever is in your head and causes emotional responses or flashbacks deserves to be investigated.

The truth about the specifics of what has occurred to you might take a lot of time to unravel, but you need to keep the question open, and explore it as best you can. Do not make premature conclusions. I once counselled a teenage girl who was very upset because she was having feelings of having been sexually abused, along with an image of her father's face. When the memory finally emerged, it was her father rescuing her from abuse by the boy next door. Thank goodness she did not accuse her father of abuse! On the other hand, one of my first ritually abused clients thought that her grandfather was the only safe person in her life, and that he never abused her. After he died, memories of very sadistic abuse by him began to come up. You might want to be very cautious if you find yourself idealising someone.

I tell my clients that they can talk with me about whatever they need to talk about, regardless of whether or not at this moment they believe that their memories or the images in their head represent real experiences. That gets them “off the hook” of having to tell “the truth” (actually a lie) which their abusers wanted them to tell. So, I now tell you the same thing: find out first what is in your head; you can decide later whether it is true or false. You have a right to know what is in your head. You can work out later what is real and what is not.

If you are having memories that seem impossible, remember that mind-controlling abusers engage in a lot of deliberate deception. You may be remembering real events, but events that are not what they appear to be. *There is a difference between believing that bad experiences happened, and believing what your child parts were led to believe*. For example, a woman recently disclosed to me a memory in which a group of her child parts who believed they were boys were anally raped by a group of priests, who told them that this was a special honour and a spiritual experience which was only given to boys. It is not necessary to believe that they were actually in a boy's body or that it was a spiritual honour in order to think that my client's memory could be valid. Similarly, when I meet an insider personality who informs me that he or she is not part of the body and would not die if they killed the body, I acknowledge that they had some experience which led them to believe that, but I do not accept their belief at face value; I search for what was done to make them come to this conclusion, and I attempt to unmask the trick. You can do the same.

Respect your parts, and validate their experiences as well as their right to believe what they believe as a result of those experiences. As you put the memories together with all the parts of you who were involved, you and all your parts will come to see the truth.

When everything seems to fit together, your symptoms, your insiders' stories of what happened, your body sensations and emotions, and any external corroboration (although this is rare), over time you may come to the reflective belief that certain experiences must have happened to you. Or, of course, the reverse, if it does not fit together.

Mind control and ritual abuse often reveal themselves in stages. It is possible for a dissociative person to completely work through his or her non-mind-control trauma memories without touching the parts of the personality system who have experienced mind control or ritual abuse. It is also possible to remember ritual abuse without accessing the memories of other kinds of mind control (we shall look at these kinds in the next chapter). A ritually abused client of mine with whom I have worked for many years recently discovered a new group of inside parts who believe themselves to be intelligence officers of the Gestapo, the Nazi secret police.

No matter who your abusers were or are, or what tactics they used or are using, your recovery goals will be the same: freedom, healing, and empowerment: taking back your own life from those who robbed you of it, and becoming yourself. That is what the rest of this book is about.

CHAPTER TWO

The struggle for healing

What is mind control?

I had difficulty finding a definition that, in my view, best described mind control, but Wikipedia defines it as involving “a broad range of psychological tactics able to subvert an individual's control of his or her own thinking, behavior, emotions, or decisions…The goal is to have those individuals carry out actions which ordinarily would go counter to human nature. This training involves physical, sexual and emotional torture, the use of drugs, and, in some cases, the use of technologies which directly affect brain function”. One implication of this definition is that victims are not responsible for having been mind controlled, even if they have done things that they would not otherwise do.

Popular media representations of mind control involves trained spies or assassins working for the CIA or other military/political groups, or even companies, without their conscious knowledge, because they have other “personalities” who engage in these activities. Think of Jason Bourne, or the hero of the film *Conspiracy Theory*, or Echo in television's *Dollhouse*, among other American television shows and films. The fictional stories concocted about these mind-controlled special agents suggest that they are recruited in adulthood, even making a conscious choice to participate. Once they have been recruited, the story goes, their previous memories are erased and new “personalities” created with special skills and manufactured memories.

However, there is only one stage of life during which mind controllers can create persons who will engage in these activities without *any* conscious awareness, or resistance, throughout their days, and only one way to do so: that is, through the abuse and torture of small children. The awful reality is that there is no adult who volunteers loyalty to such a group because of thought-out endorsement of its goals. There are only tiny victims.

The mind control discussed in this book achieves its power over victims through programming. Survivor therapist Arauna Morgan (see Chapter Eleven) defines programming as

> the act of installing internal, pre-established reactions to external stimuli so that a person will automatically react in a predetermined manner to things like an auditory, visual or tactile signal or perform a specific set of actions according to a date and/or time.

Programmes are implanted lessons that serve as the workhorses—perhaps we should say Trojan

Horses—of the abusers. Implanted within the victim through hypnotic suggestion reinforced with torture and terror, they are designed to exploit victims' natural trance or dissociative response to trauma.

What is ritual abuse?

The first form of mind control to be disclosed by survivors to their therapists was ritual abuse, abuse by occult religious groups. In the 1980s, therapists rediscovered dissociation, which had been forgotten by psychologists when Freud reneged on his brilliant original discovery of sexual abuse, and decided that his patients must have invented it. As they explored the other selves of their dissociative clients, therapists in the 1980s and 1990s discovered that many of them had experienced ritual abuse.

In 1991, a report by the Los Angeles County Commission for Women's Ritual Abuse Task Force reflected their early enlightenment regarding the mind control aspect of ritual abuse, including how it is created, and for what reason. It stated,

> Mind control is the cornerstone of ritual abuse, the key element in the subjugation and silencing of its victims. Victims of ritual abuse are subjected to a rigorously applied system of mind control designed to rob them of their sense of free will and to impose upon them the will of the cult and its leaders…The mind control is achieved through an elaborate system of brainwashing, programming, indoctrination, hypnosis, and the use of various mind-altering drugs. The purpose of the mind control is to compel ritual abuse victims to keep the secret of their abuse, to conform to the beliefs and behaviors of the cult, and to become functioning members who serve the cult by carrying out the directives of its leaders without being detected within society at large.

The term "ritual abuse" is not *literally* accurate in describing all similar abuses. Although other labels are also used, such as "ritual abuse torture," "RA/MC", the term "ritual abuse" has come to be applied generically, both to abuses contained in the classic, religiously based abuse and to non-religious forms of mind control; however, I find it more accurate to use "mind control" for this purpose, as mind control is what all these organised perpetrator groups have in common.

Whichever term is used, what I am talking about in this book is the organised abuse of children by secret groups for the purpose of mind control. The tactics of hidden groups are violent, extreme, and sophisticated, and many survivors experience ongoing abuse. As a result, the consequences of those tactics are more complex. The groups' invisibility to everyday society makes them particularly dangerous, and this combination of violence, sophistication, and secrecy makes recovery more complicated for their victims/survivors. For one thing, in order to keep their existence secret, members have to maintain "normal" lives while continuing to be involved with these groups. This requires the segmentation of consciousness that we call dissociation: survivors have different internal parts with different awarenesses. We shall return to dissociation in Chapters Three to Eight, because it is the keystone of mind control.

Kinds of abuser groups

Ritual (religious) abusers

Most of the religious ritual abuse seen in Western society occurs in the context of occult religions, primarily the worship of either Satan or Lucifer, or both. (Although some such groups, such as traditional Christians, see Satan and Lucifer as a single entity, most treat them as separate beings and prefer to worship one or the other, whichever they believe is the most powerful. See cult trainer

Stella Katz's description of Satanic *vs*. Luciferian religion in Miller, 2012, p. 93.) Organised religious groups meet in covens (of thirteen "adults"—over thirteen years old—plus their children), and on special occasions hold a much larger gathering. They celebrate both Christian and pagan (Wiccan) holidays by reversing the worship of those benign groups. There are also groups who believe in making the good and evil in the world equal; they abuse in the names of God and Jesus as well as Satan and Lucifer. There are also Jewish ritually abusing groups. Other deities worshipped through rituals include such ancient gods and goddesses as Isis and Tiamat.

All these groups abuse children in the following ways:

- breaking the mother–child bond;
- lack of nurturing or comfort;
- terrorising through costumes and robes, horror films and videos;
- lavish use of blood;
- sexual abuse in rituals and orgies;
- sexual abuse by parents and relatives (if they belong to the group);
- use of psychoactive drugs to create altered states;
- use of high voltage electricity applied to various parts of the body;
- punishment for disobedience by confinement, isolation, starvation, burial, physical and sexual abuse, and other forms of torture;
- simulation of religious figures, and heaven and hell, to destroy the child's belief in a loving God and to control the "soul" or "spirit" of the child;
- forcing children to participate in actual and/or simulated sacrifice of animals and (at special gatherings) of human beings (the children believe the killings are real);
- forcing children to participate in real or simulated cannibalism, that the participants believe is real, at the black mass and other events;
- developmental rituals such as Satanic baptism, Satanic rebirth (after "death" and burial), and marriage to Satan (including consummation through rape);
- "programming" of various inside parts of the person to believe what the abusers say and to do the "jobs" assigned to them (see discussion in Chapter Five);
- creation of parts of the person who believe themselves to be demons or animals, and supposed "attachment" of evil spiritual beings to parts (see discussion in Chapter Twenty).

Child Abuse Wiki says of ritual abuse,

> It usually involves repeated abuse over an extended period of time. The physical abuse is severe, sometimes including torture and killing. The sexual abuse is usually painful, sadistic, and humiliating, intended as means of gaining dominance over the victim. The psychological abuse is devastating and involves the use of ritual/indoctrination, which includes mind control techniques and mind altering drugs, and ritual/intimidation which conveys to the victim a profound terror of the cult members and of the evil spirits they believe cult members can command. Both during and after the abuse, most victims are in a state of terror, mind control, and dissociation in which disclosure is exceedingly difficult."

Because Satanic cult abuse was the first type of mind control to surface, the first people to discover it focused on its religious—specifically Satanic—aspects. In fact, for a long time all of it was referred to as "Satanic ritual abuse" (SRA). Over time survivors reported that in the religious form of the abuse, other deities besides Satan are worshipped, and that the religious form was not the only kind of mind control practised on children.

Initially, most of the survivors who disclosed these abuses appeared to have been taken into these groups by their parents; these were intergenerational cult groups that involved many generations. But children of innocent parents were also recruited through day care settings, without their parents being a part of the abuse. Once they became aware of what was happening to their children, these parents often became dedicated advocates on their children's behalf, at great personal and emotional expense. Neighbours, business associates, well respected doctors or lawyers, and often religious and political leaders in their communities were often reportedly involved as abusers. Sometimes whole communities were involved. Adults raised by group members were expected to continue to participate in the groups, and not break the cycle.

Government and military/political experimenters

During the Second World War, Nazi doctors studied mind control in unethical experiments in their concentration camps. After the war, the Americans recognised that these Nazi doctors (as well as other German scientists) could be of use to them in their next conflict, the “cold war” with the Soviet Union. Hence, they imported some of these doctors to continue mind control experiments in North America.

The USA's government, through various secret projects, used the Nazi doctors to teach their own operatives how to conduct mind control. They wanted to create a spy who did not know he or she was a spy, and a “sleeper” assassin whose killer personality would only emerge under very specific conditions. They wanted to create what was then known as “multiple personality disorder”—persons with different identities who emerged under different circumstances and were largely unaware of one another. The Nazi doctors were happy to oblige. They not only created personality systems for the USA's government, they put in some sections of their own, loyal to the Aryan race. The Ku Klux Klan co-operated with this manipulation.

Other political systems have also engaged in mind control, including at least the Soviets and the Stasi (East German intelligence). Any country wanting to engage in espionage and assassination is aware of the value of mind-controlled unwitting “soldiers”.

Where did these military and political groups access the children on whom they experimented and whom they trained? We can speculate that groups who use children in child pornography often borrow them from multi-generational incestuous families, such as are found in organised cults. Military mind-control trainers have easy access to children who reside on their own bases, and find cult children a bonus as they are readily trainable as potential spies and killers because a dissociative foundation has already been created in them. If the parents are dissociative and are being accessed in the military or by any cult, the children will most likely be accessed and trained by special trainers, without parental conscious knowledge. Whether criminal, religious, or political/military, abusers on an international scale are aware that dissociation is the linch-pin of power and secrecy. What better source of already dissociative children than the parents who themselves are members of abusive cults? The parents might or might not be directly abusing their children, but by being members of an abusive cult, they make sure that their children *will* be abused.

Survivor therapist Arauna Morgan writes,

> In the groups I was involved with, adults were asked to join a secret, benevolent society, backed by rich anonymous backers who want to reward virtuous people for their good deeds. The one requirement, besides being virtuous, is that they are allowed to question your children, unescorted, to see if they will be making the same offer to them when they become old enough. If the adults are not dissociative, a relationship will be established with them for the sole purpose of gaining access to their children. If the adults are dissociative and/or are programmed, then the system will be mapped and exploited and programmes will be exploited or created, as needed.

According to survivors, during the second half of the twentieth century there appears to have been some collaboration between the secretive military and political organisations and the occult religious groups who were already engaging in deliberate systematised child abuse, as well as organised crime. These groups apparently share children, strategies, and even trainers. Many survivors report being abused by religious groups, more than one military or political group (for example, CIA and neo-Nazis and Ku Klux Klan), and also organised criminal groups. In the Extreme Abuse Survey (http://eassurvey.wordpress.com/extreme-abuse-survey-final-results/), of 987 self-identified survivors of extreme child abuse, 19% stated they experienced ritual abuse, 7% stated they experienced mind control, 52% stated they experienced both ritual abuse and mind control, and 22% stated they had experienced neither. These statistics are probably underestimates because of dissociative amnesia in the subject population, and because many, if not most, survivors did not participate in the survey because they had been "closed down" by their perpetrator groups. The definition of mind control used was "…all mind control procedures designed to make a victim follow directives of the programmer without conscious awareness including, but not limited to, government-sponsored mind control experiments". There have been assassins who claim to have no memory of the killing they performed.

All these groups employ the same torture, interrogation, and training techniques used on adults by military and police all over the world. According to the *Guardian* (2009) there is evidence that many of the techniques of mind control and ritual abuse are used for child pornography, the training of child soldiers (notably in Africa), and the human trafficking of sex trade workers. The beliefs of at least some suicide bombers and terrorists are consistent with that found in young parts of some mind-controlled survivors who present for therapy.

Survivors of abuses by military and political groups first disclosed their horrendous experiences to therapists. Subsequently, evidence was made available to all of society regarding mind control abuses designed and perpetrated by USA intelligence agencies and those of other countries. These activities were assigned such names as MK-ULTRA, BLUEBIRD, and PAPERCLIP, which involved the Nazi doctors and scientists who had been given asylum in the USA. The Cold War was used as justification for these mind control abuses, intended to create spies or assassins who lacked conscious awareness of their involvement.

Described in CIA documents that became available through the American Freedom of Information Act in the latter part of the twentieth century, these activities have been the subject of senate hearings in the USA and much media attention. Colin Ross documented them in his 2000 book, *Bluebird*, now republished as *The CIA Doctors*. There is clear documentation that some mind control abuses that we identify as government based were designed, promoted, and executed by the most respected psychiatrists and psychologists of the day, in the most revered learning and behavioural health institutions. Some perpetrators have been exposed for practising such techniques on persons who came to them for help. For example, Canada's Dr Donald Ewen Cameron was a leading Montreal psychiatrist who, in the 1950s and 1960s, with the support of CIA funding, engaged in unethical experiments on people who sought help for run-of-the-mill emotional difficulties, destroying memories of their entire previous lives, and thereby ruining their brains and their future.

It is not generally known that some of these projects involved experimentation on children in an attempt to create a perfectly controllable spy or political assassin. It is suspected that most documents regarding this were destroyed. In her book, *A Nation Betrayed: The Chilling True Story of Secret Cold War Experiments Performed on Our Children and Other Innocent People* (2001), survivor Carol Rutz describes the years of government mind control experiments to which she was subjected.

Her memories of sexual abuse, hypnosis, drugs, ESP, and other experiences were specific and meticulous, but she wanted more proof and documentation. In 1999, at the age of fifty-two, after submitting a Freedom of Information Act request, she received the validation she had been waiting for. It came in the form of three CD ROMs:

> Forty-eight years after I was first experimented on, I found solid proof of my memories—proof that was in the government vaults of the nearly 18,000 pages of declassified documents from the Bluebird/Artichoke and MKULTRA programs. One of the documents specifically stated that experimental studies of the postulated abilities of a few specially gifted subjects would be conducted….
>
> The document states 'that in working with individual subjects, special attention will be given to dissociative states which tend to accompany spontaneous ESP experiences. Such states can be induced and controlled to some extent with hypnosis and drugs… The data used in the study will be obtained from special groups such as psychotics, children and mediums…'
>
> The document continues, 'Learning studies will be instituted in which the subject will be rewarded or punished for his overall performance and reinforced in various ways by being told whether he was right, by being told what the target was, with electric shock etc.' The proposal then goes on to say, 'In other cases drugs and psychological tricks will be used to modify his attitudes. The experimenters will be particularly interested in dissociative states, from the abaissement de niveau mental (reduced concentration and attention and loosening of inhibitions), to multiple personality in so-called mediums; and an attempt will be made to induce a number of states of this kind, using hypnosis.' The government had finally handed me the validation I had been searching for. To say my heart stopped that day is almost true. (Rutz, 2001, p. xviii)

Many ritual abuse survivors, including Rutz, report "doctors" at their cult training centres who assisted with their training.

One of the declassified documents from MK-ULTRA describes two experiments in 1951, in which, after being taught to respond to code words which would function as post-hypnotic suggestions, two girls were successfully trained to place an incendiary device or steal a person's belongings while in a trance state, and then be amnesic for doing it. Ross quotes similar documents in *The CIA Doctors* (pp. 46–47).

Below is an account from Wendy Hoffman, a survivor of this early training, who may possibly have been one of the two girls referred to in the above document, although in all probability many girls had such training. In this account, a Nazi doctor (Mengele) collaborates with a cult trainer (Mrs Twartsky).

Wendy Hoffman: "Creating a government robot"

> "Now, Mrs Twartsky, I will show you how to construct a government bureaucrat.
>
> "For males, we build on their capacity for violence. For females, we build from their capacity for sexuality and seduction. The formula is that simple, sterling and simple.
>
> "We divide these programs into age categories: 18–22, 22–26, 26–31 (especially if the girl looks young); After that, we close the program down. No age group knows about another. No function within a category knows about another.
>
> "Ingenious, isn't it?" Mengele said.
>
> "Brilliant," Mrs Twartsky said.
>
> "With her (meaning me), "we will make her a sexual robot. She has a good body and we will use it.
>
> "We use the obedience drug. We show her the card. We tell her to sit in the chair. We tell her to put her own helmet on.
>
> "We strap her in.
>
> "'You are now being made a criminal. Do you agree?'
>
> "Shoot her with electricity.

> "'Nod when you agree.'
>
> "Keep shooting her, Mrs Twartsky.
>
> "That's all for today. We want to make her agree, not kill her," Mengele said.
>
> This went on for consecutive days until I started to die. No food, water or sleep.
>
> On the 5th day, some part of me nodded and I agreed.
>
> "When you are beckoned, you come out. The maitre d' will point. Next person inside sits on designated man's lap. Next person dances on his lap. Next person gets two pills from purse. Next person leans breasts into man's face covering his eyes. Next person drops both pills in his drink. Next person slips out documents from pocket in jacket. Next person slips in replacement document. Man should pass out by now. Next person slides away from man. Next person exits room. Exiting, next person hands maitre d' in doorway papers taken from passed out man. The assistant will help girl take off her costume. She will return to her home and remember nothing. No person will feel anything—no fear, pleasure, shame, victory—nothing. She will perform her sequence of tasks like a puppet with no emotion, an emotionless puppet. A puppet of the state. Herr Hitler wanted a country filled with these people. Controllable people doing the right thing for the welfare of the government."

When Mengele said "next person", he meant parts within Wendy. Survivor accounts such as this are corroborated by others who indicate that governmental groups wanting to create mind-controlled spies used not only hypnosis, but also electroshock, torture, and complex technology.

Organised crime

Almost every survivor of organised abuse whom I have treated has reported being used as a child in both prostitution and pornographic filming. This is true whether or not they were part of a religious ritually abusive group or indoctrinated into the beliefs of one or more military/political groups. Other therapists report the same thing. In many (but by no means all) cases, it appears that Satanic rituals were staged for the purposes of filming, even those involving actual murders. Persons in uniforms or costumes (soldiers, generals, doctors, Ku Klux Klan members) have also been reported as involved in sadistic abuse, but, again, in some cases, it appeared that these costumes might have been for film purposes rather than genuine. Some survivors' evidence suggests that even when a person is abused in military locations, pornographic filming occurs. Trish Fotheringham and others also report trafficking of overseas children:

> Often, I was taken to the yacht by my grandfather when he delivered newly acquired trainees. These were usually missing or unregistered children of all races and ages, who had been transported from other places in North America and were being readied for shipping and sale in other countries. (Miller, 2012, p. 82)

Mind control has evolved significantly since the 1940s. Most survivors now do not have flagrant dissociative identity disorder (visible switching between personalities); their switches are beneath the surface and difficult to detect. Technology has improved, and every kind of new relevant technology is being used. So, survivors from different generations might have had somewhat different experiences. As technology becomes more sophisticated, it is entirely possible that the techniques that were used in the beginning will be replaced by technologies that we cannot imagine. But at the core, the goal will be the same: to control and violate children and thereby create an invisible slave labour force for financial, political, and hedonistic purposes.

What they have in common is having had their minds split through torture in childhood, and their hidden young insiders deceived by the abusers into love and loyalty to the very people who hurt them. To maintain the security of their horrendous crimes, these abuser groups have implanted various paralysing beliefs in their victims, via torture and trickery, so that the victims will not tell, and will almost never remember, what they have experienced. That is what you must undo, if you are a survivor, so that you can regain ownership of your own life.

Healed cult trainer Stella Katz wrote, in *Healing the Unimaginable* (Miller, 2012, p. 116), “The rewards of ordinary life can seem very mild compared to those given in the cult. But I know the value of what I now have: freedom of body and soul. I am no longer a trapped soul; that is worth it”.

The history of disclosures

Therapists (and society) did not understand what mind control and ritual abuse were, or even recognise their existence, before the early 1980s. When significant amounts of this material first began to be revealed, therapists and researchers did not even know much about child abuse, especially that by trusted care-givers. No one understood how widespread it was, or that abuse memories would not always be maintained in the forefront of victims' consciousness. When the issue of “forgotten” childhood trauma was first confronted in therapy offices around the country, therapists called it “repressed memory”, since most therapists had barely any understanding of the workings of dissociation. Therefore, most therapists did not know what they were seeing when clients presented with amnesia and other signs of divided minds. This ignorance and naïveté left survivor clients feeling invalidated and not helped.

In the beginning, most of us therapists dismissed our survivor clients as psychotic. The material they were disclosing certainly sounded “crazy”. I remember a client in the late 1980s telling me about attending a church service in which everything was done backwards, and about her child seeing “demons” move in a picture on her wall. It did not occur to me that she could have been involved in a group which celebrated the Black Mass and conjured demons. This woman had been diagnosed as “manic-depressive” (now known as bipolar disorder) by the psychiatric system, and, as any conventionally trained psychologist would do, I told her to get back on her medication because she was having a breakdown. For years I observed this woman's “mood swings” and did not recognise the clues which pointed to ritual abuse, because I was uninformed.

It is easy to see why so many therapists resisted their clients' disclosures. We had been taught a model of mental illness which suggested that the problem was in the mind, or brain, of the afflicted person, not in what had happened to them. Those of us who grew up in safety had accepted the myth that “civilised” Western society did not engage in the torture of children. It was only in the 1980s that spousal abuse and child sexual abuse began to be accepted as realities, but even then they were thought of as very rare.

However, courageous survivors persisted in telling their stories, in spite of all the fail-safes their abusers had put in their minds to prevent this from happening, and in spite of therapists not deciphering what they were reporting.

Around 1992, when I had just begun working with my first (known to me) survivor clients, the politics surrounding mind control and ritual abuse erupted with the “memory wars”, a well-orchestrated, well-funded political effort to silence survivors and destroy those who would seek to help them. A group in the USA called the “False Memory Syndrome Foundation” was the cornerstone of a variety of organisations that declared war on therapists, authors, and others who advocated the reality of incest, dissociation, and, especially, ritual abuse. Their illogical claims and theories suddenly filled the headlines under the guise of “science”. They said they had valid research proving that something called a “false memory syndrome” of childhood trauma could be, and was being, implanted by unethical therapists (and books). They claimed that there was no research establishing that memories of childhood trauma could be or were being "forgotten". But, in fact, there were dozens of such studies (now there are even more) which showed that not only are memories dissociated, but that forgotten and retrieved memories are just as likely to be proved true as those always remembered. (See http://ritualabuse.us/research/memory-fms/recovered-memory-corroboration-rates/.)

Trauma professionals were totally unprepared for this political attack. A leading journal, *Treating Abuse Today*, was forced out of business when its editor was harassed by picketers representing supposedly innocent accused parents. Leading therapists in the dissociative disorders field, such as Bennett Braun, Judith Peterson, and Kathy Snowdon, were targeted for lawsuits and, in Peterson's case, even criminal charges. Insurance companies chose to settle most lawsuits out of court—this is their usual policy—but the enormous amounts of money they gave in settlements, along with some of their actions, gave the impression that the therapists were guilty. Some therapists were doubtless foolish and did unethical things, but most were not, and the evidence against those who were sued has been discredited.

The false memory movement was taken at its word by the press, despite its lack of scientific credibility and the fact that those involved could hardly be considered objective. Many of the founders and declared membership of the American group were accused, convicted, and confessed perpetrators and their spouses. Its advisory board included not only a married couple with documented child sexual abuse activities (such as the publication of a child pornography magazine called *Finger*) but also a minister and his wife who made statements in an interview for a paedophilia magazine about how paedophilia was an expression of God's love. Books by the minister, revered as significant and scientific, were found to include countless errors, including the fact that many of the studies they claimed supported their theories actually either proved the opposite, or did not address the issue at all.

None of the scientific advisers of the group had ever treated, or even interviewed, any survivors. In fact, almost none of the advisers had ever done any psychotherapy at all. What some of them did have was documented involvement as researchers in some questionable government mind control experiments of previous years. Most people knew nothing of their dual roles. Neither the media coverage of the claims of these spokespeople, nor the attention they received in mainstream psychological literature, nor the courts that welcomed their "expert testimony" ever addressed their duplicity.

The false memory movement devoted considerable attention to ritual abuse, which it dismissed as "hysteria". Many of the lawsuits were about cases where ritual abuse was alleged. With their speciality under attack, a significant shift occurred among the remaining leaders in the field of dissociation, the therapeutic arena where these abuses were most often addressed. They pulled back, taking a sceptical—even hostile—position regarding the existence of ritual abuse.

Eventually, not only were mainstream books and other media presentations of the issue skewed or silenced regarding ritual abuse, but the psychotherapy professions were as well. No one talked about the phenomenon except to challenge its existence. The topic was driven totally underground. Therapists discussed it in the hallways at conferences, but there were no formal presentations on the subject.

The survivors, however, remained. Only now it was even harder for them to find help.

Some of we therapists were still working with ritual abuse survivors, but we were isolated. We watched the leaders and pioneers in this work being publicly ridiculed and humiliated, or worse, destroyed. We were attacked by sceptics when we mentioned ritual abuse in online discussion forums. We had no local colleagues who understood what we were dealing with. No textbooks to guide us. No professional conferences. Isolation and paranoia ruled the day. In response, many of us simply stopped doing this work. Others, like me, continued quietly, in private. Our isolation and fear were a pale shadow of what survivors live with day in and day out, from their birth onwards.

My introduction to ritual abuse was abrupt and extreme. In the early 1990s, I acquired no fewer than four survivor clients at virtually the same time, through my work at a government mental health clinic. The first was a young mother, Teresa, who sought parenting help. She was followed by a teenage girl, Jennifer, who had disclosed sexually abusing her younger brother. Next was a young man, Tony, who had been diagnosed with schizophrenia, who called the centre when I was on telephone duty. Teresa's best friend, Lorraine, came to see me after Teresa begged her to because many years of the hospital's revolving door had not helped her significantly. (I have changed the names and some details to preserve confidentiality.)

It was not long before I discovered that these young people all knew one another. In fact, they were members of the same coven of a local Satanic cult. Teresa and Tony were the same age and had been reared together in this group, while Lorraine and Jennifer had moved to town from elsewhere. Their work on recovery brought on severe harassment by the cult group, including repeated abduction and torture of those survivors, and threats against my life.

All this was new to me. I reached out to local colleagues, many of whom were sympathetic but knew nothing to help me. Those I communicated with online who were working with dissociative disorders were embroiled in the “false memory” controversy and reluctant to even entertain the idea that my clients' past and current abuses could be real. One leader in the field actually suggested that perhaps my clients met and created their stories in my waiting room (as if they had been all coming to see me at the same time!). I experienced a small part of the invalidation that survivors must feel when told they are inventing their experiences, as well as disgust that someone so well respected lacked the courage to face reality.

So I was left to learn from the real experts in the field—my survivor clients. Eventually, both Teresa and Jennifer made significant recovery and moved to distant locations. Lorraine, crippled by severe osteoarthritis from her abuse, and unable to keep herself safe, was freed from her ongoing abuse only by death, an alleged suicide by a method which would have been very difficult, if not impossible, for her to accomplish, and which I believe was murder. Tony left town but was recaptured by his cult-involved family members.

I learnt as I treated; I treated more clients with this kind of history, mostly referred to me by other therapists, and I worked out what helped and what did not. I have written about these experiences and discoveries in my book for therapists, *Healing the Unimaginable: Treating Ritual Abuse and Mind Control* (Karnac, 2012).

Many of the early therapists working with survivors believed what their clients believed, that the abusers were terrifyingly omnipotent, and that they had sophisticated ways of tracking survivors' activities and disclosures and exerted control over them no matter how far away they got. We had not yet come to understand the importance or purpose of the most salient feature, and ultimate goal, of this kind of abuse: mind control. We and our clients had no idea of the sophisticated lies and tricks abusers were employing, or how they embedded these lies in parts of survivors' shattered brains. Now we have learnt one important fact—that it is trained parts of survivors who disclose their activities to their abusers. Certain insiders have the job of reporting any disclosures or relocations, believing that the abusers already know what they tell and that the reporting parts will be severely punished if they do not do their jobs. Now, having learnt this, we can pass this information on to the courageous survivors who are struggling to get free.

Over time, as survivors continued to disclose their experiences, abuses experienced in secretive military/political and organised criminal groups came to light. Experiments or military training predominated. Some Satanist scenarios seem to be staged for the purpose of controlling and frightening the children or for use in pornography rather than as part of genuine occult worship. However, other survivors continued to speak of their experience in Satanic and other occult groups who practised ritualistic child abuse, dressing up in robes, torturing and raping children in rituals, sacrificing animals and what the children perceived to be human beings, and celebrating the Black Mass.

The therapeutic situation is somewhat better now. Because mind control and ritual abuse have not gone away, and clients continue to dare to disclose, many more therapists know about it. Therapists are once again sharing their knowledge widely, and some excellent websites have developed over the years. There is a large special interest group on ritual abuse and mind control within the International Society for the Study of Trauma and Dissociation (ISST-D), the main professional organisation for therapists in that field. Professional texts, such as my book for therapists (Miller, 2011), Valerie Sinason's 2012 *Trauma, Dissociation and Multiplicity: Working on Identity and Selves*, and *Ritual Abuse and Mind Control: The Manipulation of Attachment Needs* (Epstein, Schwartz, & Schwartz, 2011), are once again being accepted for publication.

Survivors who have discovered what was done to them have never stopped teaching us. It is no small act of bravery that they have continued to speak out and share their stories. One such survivor has sent me a list of qualities of those survivors who are on the road to healing:

- resilient;
- spunky;
- intelligence and personal abilities shine through despite abuse and programming;
- kindness despite…;
- humanity despite…;
- ability to be in relationship despite…;
- desire to be free;
- keeping on living even though their lives were essentially stolen;
- crave justice even though they have had none;
- capable of not being loyal to perpetrators and abusive families;
- able to see the world from many different perspectives;
- realistic about the evil in the world;
- empathic.

If some of this describes you, I hope this book will help you in your healing journey. It is worth the fight. Even a day of freedom is better than a lifetime of slavery.

Everything I share here I have learnt from survivors.

CHAPTER THREE

Dissociation, multiplicity, and personality systems

Almost all survivors of mind control and ritual abuse have a dissociative mind, even if the dissociation is hidden from public view and perhaps from the survivor him- or herself. Dissociative states of being are necessary adaptations to having to endure ongoing life-threatening trauma in childhood. Organised child abuser groups know about this adaptation, and deliberately structure their victims' dissociative disorders so that their awful secrets will be kept, not only from the authorities and the outside world, but from the main “front person” inhabiting the victim's body in everyday life.

If you are such a survivor (and that is who this book is written for), I invite all internal parts of you who are old enough to understand it to read this chapter, so that you will understand yourself—or your selves—better.

Who am I really?

A child who is being abused on an ongoing basis needs to be able to function despite continuing hidden trauma. He or she has to eat breakfast with parents who might be abusers, to attend school and not appear to be in pain, and to present as relatively “normal” to persons outside the abusive situation. So, the child has at least one part whose job consists of that daily functioning.

When DID was still officially called MPD, the person who primarily lived life on the outside in the real present world was known as the “host” personality, and the other parts were known as alters (short for “alternates”). Unfortunately, the word “alter” can be upsetting to ritual abuse survivors, who remember altars being used for sacrifices. (Note the different spelling.) The term “host”, unfortunately, implied that all the parts other than the host were guests, and, therefore, of less importance than the host. They were somehow secondary. They are not.

Another kind of terminology used by therapists, coming from the theory of “structural dissociation”, distinguishes between the “apparently normal personality” (ANP) and the “emotional personalities” (EPs). While I think that “apparently normal personality” describes the everyday person quite well, the term “emotional personality” does not fit many of the inside parts, since quite a few are not emotional at all, and the everyday person can also be emotional.

In this book, I shall use the term “front person” to describe the primary identity who lives everyday life, and the word “insiders” to describe the inside ones who hold different aspects of the traumatic memories. Sometimes, I will call the insiders (as well as the front person) “parts”, “states”, or “identity states”, as they are parts of a single brain. But I do respect their sense of being themselves, in their own experience separate people, as they have lived separately from the rest of that brain and often they do not know what happened to the others or that the body has grown up, and other parts do not know about them.

Front people are created to be unaware of the abuse and also of the multiplicity, and to “pass for normal” in the real world. A front person is actually just another part—one who is specialised for handling the normal (non-abusive) world. Most people assume that the adult who functions in the world is the “real” person, and the other personalities, or ego states, whether or not they come out and take over conscious awareness, are less real. This assumption is a misunderstanding. All the parts reside in the same brain and the same body, whether or not they believe they do, and all are real and important.

Many people (at least, their front parts) have a great deal of difficulty accepting that they are multiple. If you know or suspect that you have insiders, you need to face the reality that they hold not only some of your hidden memories, but also many of your potential abilities, emotions, and desires. Rather than being “more” than the others, the front personality who deals with daily life is generally very limited, with little power in the personality system, little memory of what happened, limited emotions, and not much depth. Many front people have very little energy or strength and are chronically depressed. Others are really “apparently normal personalities”, function well, and are even vital.

The present-day main person is almost never the original person, especially if the person has an extensive abuse history. In my experience, the front person who handles most of adult life is usually formed when the person first moves away from home, cannot remember his or her childhood, and adapts quickly to “normal” adult life.

It is unlikely that one front person will serve as a constant throughout the life of someone who is multiple. Dissociative adults often have several front people from earlier stages of life inside. They usually have the same name, but are of different ages. Sometimes, there are several current front people. Each assumes he or she is the “real” person and has amnesia for the existence of the others. Their current knowledge and experience might overlap, while their other characteristics differ somewhat. This makes them glide easily from one to the other, and even people who know them can easily miss the switch.

One client of mine has four front people by the same name who alternate with one another and with some teenage parts at the workplace. One of them is severely depressed and suicidal, another is just a functionary who does her job, another loves music and art and nature, and another is an investigator who wants to know what has gone on in her life to create her symptoms. What they all have in common is their ignorance about the abuse the client suffered and their ability to function somewhat in the adult world. They are not unemotional, although they do not necessarily know the sources of those emotions or recall what they relate to. Emotions from the inside parts leak into the suicidal one more than into the other front parts.

In most cases, the front person is replaced for each new stage of life. For example, one survivor was doing well at her workplace until the employers changed the computer system to a more complicated one, so a younger front person had to come out in order to learn it. Another survivor had a front person who was becoming increasingly overwhelmed with emotions coming from the hurt insiders, so his system decided to put out a tougher part as the front person. Another survivor's front person began to recall sexual abuse from the age of three, and blended with the three-year-old part from which she had been split, so a teenage insider had to take over as the front person.

So, who is the real person? Well, it depends on what you mean by "person". If a person is the contents of one brain, then all of your parts together constitute a person. On the other hand, if a person is a well-organised "self" with a sense of personal identity, an age, beliefs, and emotions, then perhaps many or most of your insiders qualify as people. Even parts who are just memory fragments often see themselves as people (unless they have been told they are puppets, or robots, or computer chips). What is clear is that all parts, whether or not they are front people, are parts of a greater being, whether they know it or not. You all live in the same brain, and in the present-day outside world you all share the same body, regardless of whether or not you experience yourselves as having "inside bodies". What you cannot say is that the person who handles everyday adult life is more "real" than the other parts. He or she just has a different job.

It has been my experience that the only multiples in whom there is one strong main person are those who were abused or traumatised for only a brief period of time, usually outside the home. Their long period of safety has allowed them to build a strong "outside world" personality. However, they still have hidden split-off parts who come out only occasionally, or never come out but influence the person's behaviour and feelings from time to time. In the kind of personality system deliberately created by mind controllers, the front people are merely shells through which the other parts are manifested without visible switching. This structuring makes the multiplicity much less obvious. Successfully created mind-controlled persons never recognise that they are multiple (at least, their front people do not).

Wendy Hoffman: "Discovering my multiplicity"

> Moments in life are indelible and do not wash away no matter how many years have passed. Those moments can derail the stream of a life and put one on a different path. I was in bed in my co-op on 108th Street near Amsterdam Avenue. I can't remember whether I was about to sleep or wake up. It was as if a curtain ripped open within me from the bottom up. Many people inside came to the surface and told me they existed. That was the worst and best moment of my long life.
>
> "No, I am not multiple," the surface me or me's screamed back. "These things did not happen to me. Multiplicity is a hoax," I flailed. The force of my recoil from my own being alone could have right there shredded me into fragments. I refused to be multiple. Anything was better, I thought, not knowing that only multiplicity had so far saved my life.
>
> I had already written, performed and toured with my multi-media performance *Incest: Remember & Tell*, mounted art exhibits on sexual abuse and given lectures to survivors and professionals around New York City on incest and what we then called satanic ritual abuse. But I hadn't yet known the most important part, that I was multiple. Other survivors talked about their multiplicity in 12-step meetings around the city, but I had not acknowledged mine. I didn't mind exposing society's abuses, but I couldn't get a hold on my own internal system.
>
> The people and voices who had come to the surface began telling me horrendous stories, even worse than I had heard in meetings. The list of my perpetrators kept growing longer. But slowly, breath by breath, thought by thought, eye lash by eye lash blink, I accepted my selves. I didn't know them yet or the structure they lived in. That would take years. But I came to know that my mind was a tangled web of serious despair. I had to face that multitudes lived under my surface and I had to meet everyone.
>
> Despite my initial rejection, I learned that the parts I avoided are the strongest, most selfless and the real me. Anyone could live regular life. Not everyone could swim through a constant river of double binds and life or death decisions. Survivors of multiplicity are brave people, trying to go on without being aware of major parts of ourselves and now trying desperately to dig through fragmented memories of abuse to find what remains of who we are.

Problems of front people

You might need to read this section more than once. When your "main personality" (current front person) who deals with everyday life reads it, you can see whether or not your symptoms and problems fit what is described here, and perhaps get some insight into why these things happen. When your insiders read it, they can perhaps gain some understanding of what life is like for the front person, and develop more empathy for that part.

Amnesia

Dissociation becomes a disorder when the activities or behaviours of the usually hidden parts result in problems for the adult survivor. When a person has DID, the front person may suffer from amnesia not only for past abuse, but also for pieces of everyday life. Sometimes nothing happens during a period of amnesia; the person just sits there, “spacing out”. Sometimes the amnesia is caused by inner parts of the person coming out into the world and taking over the body for a period of time. A child part of a person with DID might come out when the person is at work, or driving, or during sex, or at a doctor's office. This can cause very concrete problems, even life-threatening ones. A client of mine came home from a business meeting to find that a child part of her had begun to cook something and then left the pot on the stove, almost burning her house down. A forty-year-old married woman discovered her multiplicity when a teenage insider took over the body and developed an online romance with a young man in another part of the continent. Believing herself to be a teenager, she made arrangements to fly to his city to meet him. Needless to say, the trip was a disaster. Some people with DID lie to cover up for their periods of amnesia. Their own lives feel like a television series in which they have missed some of the episodes. Persons with DDNOS do not experience this kind of upheaval; they are more likely to just feel unreal, as hidden inside parts influence their behaviour.

Hearing voices

Hearing voices is another one of the most important parts of the experience for most multiples. The voices are usually the sound of the other inside parts attempting to talk to the front person or to one another, arguing or giving orders. They can easily be misunderstood as signs of a psychotic disorder or as “possession” by external entities. Multiples who do not understand their condition frequently seek out help from churches who perform exorcisms or mental health facilities who diagnose psychosis, medicating heavily and inappropriately.

Many therapists believe that these voices are distinguished from the voices of schizophrenia by the fact that they are experienced as coming from inside the head. But this is not always the case. One of my first DID clients, diagnosed with schizophrenia, heard the insiders' voices coming out of his television set. I asked one of the main insiders why this happened. “If we talk inside his head, he thinks we're demons and doesn't listen to us. But he believes everything he hears or sees on TV.” This person was a ritual abuse survivor, as well as a very religious Christian, and had probably been trained to believe his insiders were demons. The insiders called him “religious Tony”.

The voices might sound to the main person like background noise in a crowded place, or they might stand out individually. In some cases, they are just experienced as thoughts rather than heard as voices, but they still feel alien to the person experiencing them, and contribute to the person feeling that he or she is going crazy. They might be strong thoughts that come “out of nowhere” and do not really seem to belong to the person. “Thought-snatching”, having your thoughts disappear as inside parts take them away, is also common.

Often, the voices are critical. Everyone has an “inner critic”, of course, which shows up in self-critical thoughts, but the inner critics of multiples are generally very unpleasant, and are internally audible to the person who is trying to accomplish things or carry on a conversation. No matter what one of my clients does, he hears some insiders complaining about it, usually in foul language. He used to speak to them out loud, and nastily. He appeared psychotic. He has now learnt to "think" to them, and, since he realises they are small child parts, to reassure them and tell them he loves them. As a result, they are more co-operative, but they still complain in the only kind of language they know, the foul language they heard at home while attempting to grow up.

You might notice that some voices often tell you to shut up or be quiet, call you a liar, and say that certain events never happened. Others might suggest self-harm or suicide. These parts, who have been called persecutor–protector parts or trauma-bonded parts, try to protect you from the abusers by acting like the abusers. They are common in mind control created personality systems, as they have been given the jobs of making sure the secrets of the abuse do not leak out. They are also usually present if abusers have made threats to the child, and they repeat those threats. They often engage in more severe reprisals if they are not heeded.

It is common for multiples—DID and DDNOS—to hear the sound of infants or small children crying. Abusers often punish children severely for crying (suffocation is the treatment of choice for many cult children being trained not to cry), so the crying goes "inside". An inside child part who never comes out into the world holds the tears and the crying sound.

Above all, remember that when you hear your insiders' voices, they are *communicating*. They need you to communicate with them. This might be quite difficult, at first. You begin by listening.

In many mind-controlled personality systems, the person on the outside is not designed to communicate directly with the insiders, just to be influenced by them without knowing it, thinking their voices are demons or hallucinations or crazy thoughts, and their emotions are just moods, or that everyone has a "busy mind". This is how the abusers maintain control of children, and of the survivors they become.

There are some multiples who do not hear voices at all, even when they try to. That is the experience of one of my clients who has only four insiders (she did not experience mind control or ritual abuse). It is difficult for the front person to communicate with the inside parts, because they are unable to hear one another, so they have to write in a book or give me messages to pass on.

Sometimes, the voices being heard are not those of the other insiders, but pieces of traumatic memories being played back, such as the voice of an abuser telling the child not to talk about what happened on penalty of death. This is particularly true with mind-control survivors. If you have this experience, it is actually being created by an insider who is trying to frighten you away from remembering or telling what happened by showing you the threat that was made.

Seeing insiders

Many multiples not only hear, but also see their insiders. Even if your outside person does not see them, it is common for insiders to see one another. You might be afraid of those who resemble your perpetrators, or demons, or monsters, or animals. Although it might be hard for you to believe, these insiders are also hurt children who were deceived into believing they were these beings. You might be afraid to go near those insiders who appear hurt, or dirty, or in the conditions in which they were abused. And in some cases, going near them means you begin to feel their pain or see their memories.

Some multiples see their insiders' faces in mirrors, which is part of why they often avoid mirrors. Fake mirrors (with pictures glued on to them) are used by abusers to deceive children into believing they are something they are not.

A sense of unreality

Particularly with DDNOS, the person often feels as if he or she is no longer himself or herself, or feels that familiar places are strange. When insiders first appear, the person might have the experience of watching himself doing things he has no control over, such as harming the body. Another part is actually “out” and is doing it, and the usual main person is relegated to a “back seat”. This situation can make the world feel unreal to the person who is not fully present. It can be quite frightening.

Flashbacks and nightmares

Dissociation protects the front person against overwhelming trauma. Still, sometimes the traumatic memories come back via flashbacks, nightmares, anxiety, or depression, or body memories. All these things are known as post trauma intrusive symptoms. They can be visual, auditory, or tactile (including physical or emotional pain). Small things in the present environment could trigger flashbacks and feelings of being overwhelmed and an inability to cope. Intrusions are more common than we generally realise: depression, anxiety, panic attacks, obsessions, and compulsions are often emotional intrusions from past traumatic memories that are not recognised as such.

Emotional numbness

Many survivors of severe trauma have periods of emotional numbness, in which they feel very little, to balance out the times when they have intrusive symptoms of flashbacks and nightmares. If the person is multiple, the front person is often numb and feels unreal, except when the feelings and memories leak through from inside parts.

Ignoring, or conflict with, insiders

Since the purpose of the adult front person is to deal with everyday adult life, and since insiders cause all the problems we just discussed, it is tempting for the front person to just want the insiders to go away and not exist. If you think the voices are signs of psychosis, or, even worse, intruding spirits or demons, you obviously want them gone. It is common to be afraid of, or hostile to, those insiders who are rude, impulsive, or threatening. You might fear those parts doing things that will get you into trouble.

You need to know three things about such parts:

1. They helped you survive in childhood when your survival was at stake, physically or emotionally, so they deserve your respect, compassion, and gratitude.
2. It is their disconnection from the rest of you (the parts of you who have a conscience or empathy or “common sense”) that permits them to have the attitudes or perform the behaviours that you worry about. They are not balanced, because they are disconnected.
3. You cannot get rid of them—but if they become connected to the rest of you through sharing memories, they will change. Those who have appeared the most hostile or dangerous can often become the most helpful.

I have known survivors to try to get rid of their inside parts or voices by drowning them in liquor, throwing out their toys and stuffed animals, and answering the voices with angry threats or "spiritual" rebukes. Doing such things will only make your internal conflict worse.

Insiders and their origins

Because it is so overwhelming, clear conscious memory of childhood sexual and betrayal trauma does not develop, at least in a front personality, who is designed to deal with ordinary life and not know about anything else. This process is both psychological and organic. From the organic perspective, the different aspects of the traumatising experience are stored in separated circuits of a single brain.

When the trauma is extreme and complex, begins in early childhood (under the age of six), and involves pain, betrayal, and threats to life, the various aspects of the overwhelming traumatic memories and their responses are divided between different internal personalities. For a single memory, one insider might be aware of the first piece of the story, another insider of the next segment, and so on. Or one insider might hold the pictures, another the "sound track", another the feeling of sadness, another the anger, another the fear, another the physical pain, another the tastes and smells, and another the sexual arousal. If there are repeated traumas of a particular kind, these aspects of experience go into the same brain circuits that held them previously.

Over time, insiders develop who specialise in certain emotions or physical sensations, and hold these from many different memories. Mind controllers, aware of this process, utilise it to control their victims.

Regardless of how they view themselves, if you are a multiple, you are likely to find within your mind the following categories of insiders:

1. *Parts from before the trauma*: relatively untraumatised child insiders who hold positive or neutral memories. They stop growing and are put away when they experience trauma or serious deprivation. (There are some survivors who do not have such a base of non-traumatised being.)
2. Parts created during the trauma:
   (a) *Hurt children* who have unfulfilled needs and/or hold traumatic pain or emotions. They often still "live" in the experience of their trauma.
   (b) *Protectors* (including internalised perpetrators). Like the hurt children, these parts generally live in the past and think the trauma is still happening. (In some cases, it might be.)
   (c) *Observers*, recorders, watchers, parts in the sky, etc.—parts who "left the body" when the trauma was happening. Some might be aware of what happened, others live in a cloud, or some such place where they could be unaware. Perpetrator groups call these "floaters", and try to get rid of them or lock them up, as they often know secrets the abusers do not want known.
3. *Parts from after the trauma*: survivors, usually the body's chronological age. They have to deal with everyday life, so must not be affected by the trauma, which they often do not remember. They may be high-functioning, or they may be weary and empty, and they might have post traumatic stress disorder. Front people belong in this category, as do those who were previous front people at different ages.

It helps to think of the needs and purposes of each of these categories as you get to know your parts. Frightening or angry parts are often protectors. Observer parts can be helpful for putting memories in order and knowing what really happened (*vs*. what illusion the abusers created). Parts from after the trauma might need to be protected from much of the trauma until it has been worked through by those parts who actually went through it.

As I mentioned in Chapter One, being dissociative (or multiple) is mental injury rather than mental illness, and, therefore, requires a different treatment. For a broken leg, you would put the bone parts back together and keep them connected so they could heal, even though it might be painful. Similarly, to heal a broken mind, you bring the parts back together by introducing them to one another, and you clean the wound by resolving what happened to make the parts split from one another. Marlene Steinberg's book *The Stranger in the Mirror* (2000) can help you and your support people understand your experience, and so can a newsletter by and for multiples such as “Many Voices” (http://www.manyvoicespress.org/).

Understanding internal parts

The main front person in a personality system generally has continuity of memory for most of his or her current life, and hears only some of the parts as voices or thoughts, or feels their experiences as body memories. It is uncommon that the front person knows much about the insiders, unless he or she has deliberately worked on it.

The situation is reversed with the insiders. They often do not know much about what is going on in current everyday life, but at least some of them have much more awareness of the other insiders, and are likely to recognise that they are part of a “personality system”.

Although all the selves of a multiple are really separated circuits of a single brain, in most cases they experience themselves and one another as separate people. They are just as real to one another as people on the outside. They might actually see the other selves in locations in the inner world. In addition, when mind control has been involved, some of the selves might believe things about their identities and purposes (and those of other parts) that were deliberately taught to them by their abusers.

Insiders have separate and different memories, feelings, and approaches to life, and a sense of separate identity and agency. Although they feel themselves to be complete persons, each tends to have a specific function and a certain typical emotional state.

The front person is generally orientated to time and place, knowing accurately the details of present life. However, many of the insiders might not be. They generally believe it is still the year and place where their abuse happened, sometimes the very moment the abuse happened, and they interpret all current events in terms of the experience of that time and place.

Beginning to communicate with your insiders

It is essential for the front person to learn to communicate with the other parts. Many multiples lack this skill. A lifelong habit of looking outward and not speaking with the voices is difficult to overcome for the front person. But it can be done. And if, for some reason, your front person cannot do it, some older insiders can learn to get communication happening internally. So, this section is directed to either the front person or any other adult or teenage parts who are prepared to learn inner communication.

Listening

In many cases, the insiders do not really know the front person (the part who handles everyday adult life), and might not even like him or her. If you are a front person, you may have to earn their trust. If you have spent the past twenty, forty, or sixty years ignoring them, it is no wonder they do not trust you and do not ask your advice. So, when you first approach them, be gentle and try to learn from them rather than bossing them around. If they will not speak with you, ask your therapist or best friend to help by speaking with them first. Then treat whichever parts try to communicate with you with respect, kindness, and gentle curiosity, even if they are swearing at you. Do not shut them out; they need to be heard, and if they are not heard they might find other ways of getting your attention, such as giving you pain or making you feel sick.

Do not ask your parts too many questions at first; it might feel like interrogation, and they might have been interrogated as part of their abuse. Just be open and sympathetic, until they are ready to talk.

If you hear a voice, listen to it and treat it with respect. If it says “Don't talk”, for example, you can ask it why not. Listen to what it is saying, and then talk with it. If it is swearing or threatening you, this is its way of trying to protect you from the abusers, just as other parts protect you by holding pain or rage, or withholding traumatic knowledge from you. Listening to, and dialoguing with, your insiders will make a difference in your life which you will see and feel.

Note that “listen” does not mean “obey”, as it frequently does to adults who abuse children. When I say “listen to the voices”, I just mean try to understand them. It will take time to determine how much you can trust them, since some of them might have been deceived by abusers.

Looking for the source of symptoms or emotions

When you want to know something about, for example, the source of a symptom you are experiencing, think your question to the insiders, and see what words or thoughts come to you. You might be surprised.

Parts often make themselves known by exerting influence on the “outside”, or presenting, part. This (called “passive influence”) is common, and can be detected simply by asking internally about it. If you have a feeling or an impulse that you do not understand, someone inside might really be experiencing the feeling which is “leaking through” to you. You can follow the feelings to find who inside is their source. Ask, for example, who is feeling depressed, or who is crying internally, and why. Or ask who has the impulse to buy that chocolate bar, and what it means to them. Do not insist on knowing internal names, as some parts might feel that this gives you or hostile parts power over them. Abusers use names to call them out for torture or punishment, or to give an assignment, or make them do a job. Your insiders might have no trouble giving names, but do not assume they want to.

Any symptom can be dealt with by communicating with the insiders. If you are having flashbacks, seeing pictures of frightening events, you can ask who inside is seeing these pictures, and who is making them see them, and why.

Once you talk to the right inside “person”, often a simple explanation of reality can lead to big changes. In every case, the key is communicating with the insiders responsible. You and the rest of the personality system have the opportunity to introduce these parts to the safe present (assuming you have got away from your abusers; these issues will be discussed in Chapter Nine). They can tell you the false beliefs the abusers put into their heads, and you (or other parts who know more than you do) can explain the truth, or show them the trickery involved.

Matching your communication to the insiders

It is important to match your communication to the kind of part you are talking with. Some use strong, challenging language, and will respond to dares and challenges and humour. Other parts are terrified and just need listening. They might be dealing with dire threats about what will happen if they talk to anyone, especially about their experiences at the hands of the abusers.

Some cannot speak and might need to communicate through writing, through drawing, or through another part. Some insiders might believe that they cannot talk because their tongues were cut out (a common deception used by abuser groups). Some might be too young to have words; they can draw, or older parts can speak for them. Others might speak different languages, and you can find an internal translator for them.

Be careful with your language. Innocuous words have often been given sinister meanings by the perpetrator groups. If you experience distress when you use words like “love”, or “safe”, or “feel”, you can ask your parts what the word in question means to them, and you can train yourself to substitute another word when you speak with that particular part. (Did any part of you have a reaction to the words I just wrote?) With one survivor I know, I have to substitute “believe” for “think”, and “sense in your body” for “feel”, since the original words were used by the perpetrators as part of torture.

Do not show favouritism

Remember that it is very important to treat all parts with equal kindness; do not pick favourites. Every part is there for a purpose, and is an important part of the system. So, for instance, do not be afraid of hostile parts. It has been said that every persecutor is a misguided protector. Its protector job was important and necessary when it first developed, but it can be a handicap later in life when your needs are different. Most hostile insiders are using anger to protect vulnerable parts inside, usually younger children. If they seem dangerous, talk with them at first through another part. But if you act scared, you will create a self-fulfilling prophecy. Watch out for good kid–bad kid dichotomies. You need to appreciate all your parts, just as they all need to accept one another. Sometimes, an internal part unknowingly makes trouble for the front person and feels bad about it, for example, if a child comes “out” at the wrong time or in the wrong place. In the end, remember they (*and you*) are all parts of one person (or at least, of one brain), so it is important to accept all your selves, including the parts that you or others do not want or like.

Do not hurry to change things

Personality systems structured by perpetrator groups tend to be better organised than those spontaneously created, but they usually operate through a military-style hierarchy where everyone obeys his or her “boss” out of fear of punishment. It is wise not to interfere with this hierarchical organisation at first, but get to know the leaders, and, over time, you can help them change the governmental system to a more democratic one.

Talking with your insiders pays great dividends. As soon as one part is persuaded to work together with you for healing, another will appear who is supposed to stop this process, *but secretly wants you to help them, too*. You might have to work your way through many layers, but you will get there.

Eventually, it can be helpful to ask insiders to help you map the system if they are willing. But if you are a survivor of mind control or ritual abuse, you should not do this too soon, as it is breaking the rules of the insiders' training, and they could be punished (by insiders or by the perpetrator group, if they know what is happening) for doing it.

Communicating with child parts

In most personality systems, many, usually a majority, of parts feel themselves to be children or teenagers. There might be some who are too young to talk or to understand language, or who can only speak a language which has not been spoken since childhood. I believe that the child parts of any multiple split off during childhood, not later, and remain developmentally children. They are not ordinary children, however. They are child parts who have been assigned jobs, and who hold knowledge or feelings that would be too overwhelming for the front person to handle. Sometimes, children can handle what adults cannot.

Child parts believe themselves still to be children, and if they take over the body, they behave and think like children. I am currently looking at four different handmade birthday cards given to me by the same survivor: one with beautiful sophisticated artwork done by her older parts, one with a cute picture done by those around age six, one with simple drawings of themselves made by the parts around age three or four, and one with scribbles done by the infants. They are just like the drawings my own children made at those ages. Before I understood multiplicity, a child part of one of my first survivor clients stole an electric wheelchair from the hospital where I worked, and rode around the hospital grounds on it. When she was caught, she said she was my employee. Another survivor in a child state sat on the floor and put out her feet for me to tie her shoes, assuming she was in preschool. I have been in session with an adult man when he stood on his head on my office couch, because the child that he "was" at that moment preferred that position. I have met with adults whose "out" personalities knew no English, but spoke languages the main person had learned in early childhood and then forgotten. And one woman shocked and frightened me by falling down my office stairs because a baby part who did not know how to walk came out at the top of the stairs. When you begin communicating with the children inside you, it is important not to let them out to drive the car or take on other adult tasks!

The thinking process of child parts is like that of actual children of those ages. They might not understand long words or sentences. They might not grasp abstract concepts. When you speak with an insider, one of the first things to ask them is their age. This will help you use language that they understand. It is easy to talk "above their head" in adult words, if you do not realise that their life experience was cut off in childhood and they have not grown since then. Talk as you would to a "real" child, no matter how articulate the front person may be. You will find that as they become comfortable in the present world, they will begin to grow up gradually.

Child parts will often echo the words of their adult abusers. I frequently have to remind my client with the foul-mouthed critical parts to ask them their ages. There is a pause while he asks internally, then, "Oh." The one who believes herself to be his abusive mother (who had to be his father's sexual partner) is four. She understands things like a four-year-old, but she swears like an old pro.

Parts with different identities

As you meet your insiders, you are likely to find parts who believe they are older than the body's age, parts who believe they are of the opposite sex to the body, and parts who believe they do not belong to the body at all.

Although I believe that a child part is really a child and thinks like a child, I also believe that a part who says he or she is older than the body is not really older, but, rather, is a child's, or a young adult's, conception of an older person. And an opposite-sex part (a male in a female body, for instance) is more like a young girl's idea of what a boy is like than like a “real” boy. Boys in women's bodies usually represent the part of the person who has traits that are traditionally considered masculine, such as bravery, or anger, or stoicism; girls in men's bodies often have supposedly “feminine” traits, such as fearfulness, or are the ones who were raped. Insiders who believe they do not belong to the body might have been deliberately made to believe this (through drugs) for the abusers' purposes, or might just believe that by not identifying with the body they will not be hurt.

It is unwise and disrespectful to argue with parts about what they are, even though you must keep in mind that they are all just parts, they do all belong to the brain of the present body, and the body they are in (in the real, present-day world) is actually an adult male or female human being.

What newly discovered parts do not know about the present

Many insiders have not come directly out into the world since childhood, so they know nothing of the present. They are often terrified or hostile if they actually come out into the body. Their past experience could be that they did not emerge directly into the world unless called out by a perpetrator. I encourage newly discovered parts to look around my office and see that it is daytime, and we have our clothes on, and there are no weapons or programming chairs.

You can do the same in the safety of your present home. Your young insiders can notice that they have control over their environment; they can stand up or sit down when they want, and they can choose to open the door or to lock it and keep it locked. All this is very different from the time when the abusers had control of them.

Here is what inside parts do not know.

1. They can be mistaken about the date, especially what year it is. Often, they believe it is the year in which they stopped growing, that is the year of their own last remembered experience, which was, of course, when you (they) were still being abused. So it helps to have a calendar and a recent newspaper or magazine handy to show them the date. You can also show them things that have changed: for example, a personal computer and a mobile phone rather than a typewriter and a rotary dial phone.
2. They are often mistaken about their location, where you live, and whether you are still near the location where the abuse occurred. If you are no longer living there, you need to help those parts recognise that. A map will help, on which you can point out the location of where the abuse happened and where you are now. You might need to tell them how you got to where you are now, and also where the abusers are currently, especially if the abusers are dead.
3. They might have difficulty recognising the fact that the body has grown up. Insiders who come out into the body will often discover that they are in an adult body, for example, noticing they have breasts or they are bigger than they believe themselves to be, or that they have a full set of teeth, or wrinkles, or bags under the eyes. It takes work to help parts adjust to the fact that they live in an older body who looks like the adult front person, not the way they believe they personally look. In many cases, the parts (except for the front person) “see” one another in the inner world, looking just as they looked when the body was a child or a teenager. Parts discovering the adult body might say things such as “This isn't my body.” You can ask them to come out and move their hand, while looking at it. You can offer to use a mirror so they can see what their body looks like now, but be careful, since mirrors are used by organised groups of abusers to deceive parts about their nature (such as showing a child a “mirror” which has on it a picture of a scary creature).

4. They might have difficulty accepting the fact that they all inhabit the same body, which is now that of an adult. It takes time for parts to accept this reality. You can tell them that their inside bodies are different, but that in the present, real world, of this year in the twenty-first century, they are all in the same outside body.
5. They might not be aware that some places, and some other people, are safe and will not harm them. They might believe that every adult will hurt them, especially if you (and they) are a mind control survivor and your insiders have been taught that “outsiders” (ordinary people) are all dangerous. You might need to fill them in on who your therapist, your spouse, your children, your doctor, and your friends are; they do not automatically know.

And here is what you, the front person (if that's who is reading this), need to know: those voices, except for the ones that are flashbacks of memories, are all parts of the same brain that you are a part of. They are not outside influences. They are not psychotic hallucinations. And you, too, are a part. A very specialised part, with an important job: to handle real everyday adult life.

The suggestions in this chapter are only the beginning of getting to know your internal parts. In the following exercise, you will have the opportunity not only to describe what you are experiencing, but to try to deliberately communicate with inside parts of you. If you already know how to do this, feel free to skip this exercise.

When I ask you to talk to the parts, you can do it by thinking; you do not need to talk out loud. If you are not able to hear the voices of your parts but are pretty sure they exist because you are missing time, or you have been told of doing things you do not consciously remember, you might need to communicate in writing, allowing the parts to write back to you some time later.

If you have an inner world, see whether you are able to enter this inner world and meet the parts. If you can, that is a huge step forward. If you find this impossible, you will have to rely on thinking or writing to the parts.

Exercise 4. Beginning to know your insiders

Do you have missing periods of time? If so, think of the most recent period of amnesia, and gently enquire by thinking to the inside of your head: who was in charge of the body when you lost that time, and what were they doing? Write the answer down in a notebook. It might be in the form of a thought, or it might sound like a voice. (Remember to write the question if thinking gets no result.)

Do you hear voices? If so, what kind of voices? Adults or children? Male or female? If they are children, ask their ages, and be sure to talk with them at a level of language they can understand.

Do you hear crying or shouting in your head? If so, can you visualise the person who is crying? How old does he or she seem to be? Try to speak to that person, imagine him or her as a hurt child, and tell that child you want to help him or her.

Do voices criticise you or call you names? If so, does what they say remind you of anyone in your earlier life, or do they actually sound like those people? (Voices can be parts of you who have learnt from your parents or others, they can be parts who imitate those people, or they can be “tape recordings” of what those people actually said.) You might want to ask who they are, and why they criticise you like this.

Do any voices tell you to be quiet? How do they say it? Again, do they sound like adults, children, or tape recordings of someone unpleasant? Are there specific threats?

Ask the voices who tell you to be quiet why they want you to be quiet. Ask them what you did wrong, and listen to what they say.

Can you categorise the voices you hear into: happy kids, hurt kids, protectors (who might threaten or criticise), or observers?

Do any of the voices have names? Or titles? Do any of them say they are not human, or make noises which do not sound human? Make sure you take what they say seriously even if their names or titles or what they believe about themselves seems strange to you.

Introduce yourself to your insiders by thinking or writing to them. Tell them who you are, how old you are, what year it is, where you live, and facts about you such as your job or your present family. Let them know that you are in control of the body most of the time and you want to get to know them. Try some of the suggestions I gave earlier for updating parts on present life.

If you suddenly get a symptom such as a flashback or a strong emotion that seems inappropriate to the present, enquire inside your head about who this comes from. If you can, reassure them that the danger they sense is no longer there, but something in the present reminded them of it. Tell them you will keep them safe, and if they are not safe, you will find a way to make them safe. Listen to their response, and stay in dialogue with them.

You can find more exercises in getting to know your insiders in some of the self-help books for multiples, such as *Got Parts?*, by ATW (2005), *Amongst Ourselves*, by Tracy Alderman and Karen Marshall (1998), and *Coping with Trauma-Related Dissociation*, by Boon, Steele, and van der Hart (2011). In the next chapter, we shall look at the special characteristics of mind-controlled personality systems.

Be assured that discovering, listening to, and dialoguing with your insiders will make a difference in your life, and you will see and feel that difference.

CHAPTER FOUR

Engineered multiplicity: personality systems created by mind control

The personality systems of mind control and ritual abuse survivors are different from those of dissociative individuals whose abuse has been less systematic, such as in severe physical or sexual abuse by a family member. The definitive clues to what happened to you will be found within your personality system, even though people who have experienced organised criminal abuse have often also experienced abuse within the family.

Now, there is abuse that can technically be called "ritual abuse" but does not really involve systematic mind control—for example, by teenage Satanic dabblers. Personality systems created spontaneously in response to abuse do not manifest the degree of internal organisation seen when a person's insiders have been deliberately split off and trained by an organised group for the purpose of achieving mind control. Without the mind control, healing can proceed in much the same way it does for someone who has undergone abuse that is not systematic.

What I shall tell you in this chapter and those that follow is based on my experience of survivors I have known, as clients or colleagues. So, when I make a statement of what I believe to be the case, you can preface it with an "in my experience…" even if I do not say that every time.

Mind-controlled, deliberately created personality systems do have certain identifiable characteristics, which only the insiders within that system can know about. If you have most or all of these characteristics, you might suspect that you have been abused by an organised criminal group. When I say "criminal", I include religious (pseudo-Christian) and governmental groups, because even if they say they are doing it for a good cause, they engage in criminal practices of child abuse, and keep it secret. If those in charge of your personality system do not allow your front person to know about these things, you can have some of your knowledgeable insiders read this chapter. It is a good idea for those in charge to read it, because the abuser groups hide things from you as well as from the front person, and you have a right to know what has been done to you and the others inside you.

Markers of mind control

A front person who is a shell

In my experience, organised perpetrator groups often (not always) design their trainees to have a front person who has little or no real "self" of his or her own that the inside parts can speak through. The shell on the outside bridges the transitions (internal switches) smoothly so the individual does not appear multiple at all. He or she switches as different parts or groups of parts come to the fore, but the switches are subtle and hard for others to detect, as the voice is always the same. When the front person is a shell, his or her awareness, memory, and behaviour vary according to which other parts are conscious at any given time. Shell personalities themselves feel hollow and empty and are often depressed.

Trish Fotheringham gives an example of how her system was designed to work (Miller, 2012, p. 84):

> In order to give my personality system a new structure, a combination of four alters were to be simultaneously present in my consciousness at all times, though only one could actually be out at any given time. This would ensure two things: that I would always appear normal (not multiple) to the world, and that only the appropriate skills and knowledge base would be accessible in any given situation. A young alter called Pat memorized patterns for who should be out in each situation, and conveyed them to a Controller alter. The controller alter flipped the right combination of switches to bring the correct alters to "just below the surface" where they could then take their turns out as the situation warranted. Songs and rhymes continued in my head as instructions to the alters who were out.

This might seem strange, and even shocking, to you, especially if something similar is how your own system works. Front people are designed by abuser groups to not know about the others who fill them from within, and change places. Sometimes, they are aware to some degree. I remember one client telling me that, when in a meeting, she actually saw one of her insiders get up and go out the door, leaving her without the knowledge and skills that this insider held.

Deliberately placed triggers for learned behaviours (programmes)

Although all abuse and trauma survivors may be "triggered" into intrusive flashbacks by present-day experiences that remind them of the trauma, the triggers deliberately installed by mind controllers are different, in that they are cues for conditioned behaviours. Some of these are behaviours such as going home, going outside (where someone is waiting), coming to the person who uses the trigger, or switching to a particular insider. Others are psychiatric symptoms such as flashbacks, self-harm, or suicide attempts, which are actually punishments given by insiders for disobedience or disloyalty. For many survivors, every trigger causes a switch to a part programmed to perform a particular behaviour associated with that trigger. For others, the front person remains present in the world but has an irresistible compulsion to perform the behaviour.

Most organised abuser groups call each particular training a "programme", as if you were a computer. Many specific trained behaviours have "on" and "off" triggers or switches. Some personality systems are set up with an inner world full of wires or strings that connect switches to their effects. These can facilitate a series of actions by a series of insiders. For example, one part watches the person function in the outside world, and presses a button if he or she sees the person disobeying instructions. The button is connected to an internal wire, which rings a bell in the ear of another part. This part then engages in his or her trained behaviour, opening a door to release the pain of a rape, or cutting the person's arm in a certain pattern, or pushing out a child part. So the watcher has no idea of who the other part is or what she or he does. These events can be quite complicated. You can see another example in Trish's description, above, in which Pat provided the patterns for who should be "out", the Controller flipped switches to bring certain insiders out, and some other part played the songs in the head to guide those insiders' behaviour.

Triggered behaviours can sometimes be temporarily stopped if you can speak with those responsible and get them to agree to turn off the programmes that have been triggered. In some systems, it is possible to explore the whole chain of planned events from an outside perspective so that all parts can be shown how the situation was set up. Once the insiders see how they were tricked, they can agree to stop their trained behaviours, particularly if their perpetrators are no longer in their lives.

On and off triggers include sights or sounds or touches. For example, one survivor had a habit of pushing on the fingers of her left hand with her thumb. This turned out to be the inside copy of an abuser (a child part who had been told to "be" that abuser) warning her not to talk by doing what the real abuser had done. Although many triggers are particular to the person, like that one, others are used widely. One common trigger looks like a reassuring rub on the crown of the head, to silence a child. The husband of one client of mine discovered that this calmed the client down when she was upset. He had no idea he was using a pre-installed trigger. The Satanic "horned hand" (so often used by heavy metal musicians) is a common sight trigger to identify survivors to cult members, although it is widely used by other kinds of groups, both benign and evil. Beeping sounds on the telephone, or beeping of a car horn, or wind chimes (a gift from a family member) convey particular messages, such as "go outside". Not every such sound is an intentional trigger, of course. However, if you are programmed to be triggered by something, then you will go through the paces you were taught, whether the perpetrator group did the triggering or whether the trigger was accidental, just part of everyday life.

One of my early clients compiled a catalogue of "touch triggers" and what they meant. I have discovered that many of them are familiar to other clients, including unrelated people from very different geographical locations.

I want to emphasise once more that you are not really a computer or robots or inanimate object of any kind. You are a person, or a community of persons, no matter what you were told. When someone inside responds to a trigger, it is because they were hurt in the past to make them do so, and they are living in the memory of that hurt.

Booby traps or fail-safes

Booby traps or fail-safes are dangerous internal events that are triggered to happen if the survivor investigates too much of his or her own training, and/or talks about or becomes aware of memories he or she (the front person) is not supposed to know. The effects of booby traps include such things as suicide attempts, serious self-harm, or falling into terrible depression. It is important to know that the overwhelming emotions experienced when a booby trap is set off actually belong to real, specific memories.

A booby trap can be set off without the knowledge of the main outside personality. Because of such traps, *it is very important to go very slowly in discovering what happened, if you are a survivor of this kind of abuse*. Even though parts of you are involved in setting off the booby traps, they may not know the effects of what they are doing (pushing buttons, turning switches, and so forth), and it might be difficult to anticipate what will happen.

Internal calendars with jobs to be done on certain dates

If the perpetrator group has a long-term agenda—and most ritual and political groups do—there are insiders who memorise a "calendar" which lays out the "jobs" to be done on certain dates. Regular ritual dates are part of the calendar for any ritual abuse survivor, and have been learnt by insiders in a normal everyday way, just as we learn the dates of our birthdays and Christmas. Some survivors also have parts who hold significant future dates, such as the anticipated return of Satan, or the date of the political group's planned battle to take over the world.

In addition, some groups implant personal dates, which are years in which survivors are to return to the group, integrate real-life parts with cult-loyal parts, commit suicide, or become ill. Young adult survivors are frequently let go in their twenties to create an identity in the world, then recalled to the group at a certain age in their late twenties or early thirties. During this "growing up" period, the main identity is usually unaware of the mind control or of the other internal identities. There are often internal punishments, such as a very annoying sound, spinning, or a sensation of being shocked if the person does not return to the group when he or she is supposed to. At this time, the survivor might be told that a significant family member or friend is seriously ill, forcing the survivor to return and be re-accessed. If a member has become established in a strategic position in society, then he or she will be allowed to return to that position and contact with the original cult will be maintained along with returning to, starting, or joining a cult group where the member now lives.

When an important date is near, the personality system may be trained to "turn" and bring to the front a group of insiders who have jobs connected with that date. These insiders are generally not aware of what has gone on in the world or in the body's life between this date and the last time they were "out", which might have been many years ago.

An internal structure (or structures) and/or a complex inner world where insiders live

Many ritually abusive cults deliberately divide the personality system down the middle of the head, making sure that there is no communication between the two sides. (This is not a literal physiological fact, since inside parts occupy brain circuits rather than specific sites in the brain, but it is a belief system common to ritualistic mind controllers and their victims.) "Left side" parts might be instructed to speak to no one other than the perpetrators. Although emotions might leak out from these parts, the person could go through years of therapy without the survivor or the therapist ever suspecting that they exist.

For many years, therapists and survivors have been aware of ritualistic (religious) abuser groups, but not of other groups who engage in mind control. Thus, they have tried to work with the ritual abuse, not realising other groups of insiders were present but hidden. For instance, after many years of therapy for ritual abuse, one of my clients has discovered that she not only has the left side–right side division, she has Ku Klux Klan parts hidden "beneath the ground" in the "right side" of her inner world and Nazi parts "up in the sky". Many survivors have groups of parts hidden in this way, and often these parts are only found when the survivor looks for the part that does a particular job, such as flooding the system with emotions.

When you look inside your mind, do you see an internal geometric structure or set of structures? This is a "red flag" for organised perpetrator group abuse. The insiders are mentally located in an internal structure with a particular shape. A typical structure might be shaped like an upside-down pyramid, or a prism, or a tetrahedron, or a spider web. Many MC survivors have an internal world that contains several or many structures or "worlds". There are also systems where mountains, rivers and lakes, trees, or other "natural" structures contain programmed insiders. When you search internally, the part who is searching needs to "look" and feel inside of virtually everything to see whether there is someone hidden inside.

These structures are neither random nor merely created for the purpose of organisation. They are used by perpetrating groups to locate specific inside people, and to call out specific combinations of them for certain tasks. The adults who deliberately create these structures or inner worlds do so at a stage of the child's development when the child is able to internalise things he or she sees in the outside world. They use stage settings in the real world that they want replicated in the inner world of the child's mind. Or they might use a combination of drugs and hypnosis while describing the inner world, or showing films. Often, there is both a structure and an inner world.

Very young children are often taught to create their inner world or structure. The child builds an actual, real life, physical structure, while the child's trainer explains that this structure is to be replicated inside the child's mind as a place for the parts to live. The building materials vary according to what is available at the time of building: Tinker Toys, Lego, or blocks. According to the late Stella Katz, a former trainer in a Kabbalah based cult training centre, each child's builder part was trained to build a structure with building blocks of varying colours, and to place dolls of the same colours representing the inner children in their proper places in the structure. The builder part was instructed that everyone must be kept in their places.

The structure is gradually developed and elaborated over the years. Walls between the parts or groups of parts prevent their communication. Taking down the walls will allow parts to integrate, after memories are shared, or to become co-conscious with one another if they are not ready for integration. Often the builder is supposed to take down certain walls when the survivor gets to a certain age; for example, some survivors are programmed for their everyday life parts to integrate with the cult-loyal ones, leaving out the pain holders. When this happens, the everyday life parts become “conscious”, that is, they come to know that they have been involved in the cult or group, but since the pain is being held by hidden parts, the person does not realise how gruesomely they have suffered.

Knowing the nature of the structure(s) you have, if you have any, will help you discover how many insiders there are and which ones are most important to work with. It does not matter much what kind of structure or structures exist; the approach to dealing with them is still the same: explore each part of the structure and its purpose and who lives there. It is important to note that parts might not just be in an empty space within the structure, but are also the structure itself; these parts are often not aware that they are part of a living human being, because as soon as they were created they were made to believe that they were inanimate objects. See Arauna Morgan's story in Chapter Eleven for an example of this.

Outlier parts (my name for them) are located outside the structure that houses the main personality system. Their job is to keep those in the main personality system in line. They might be located in a structure separate from the main structure. For example, two of my clients programmed in Ontario had their main parts in an inverted pyramid, and their outliers in rings around the outside of the pyramid. As you have seen, survivors of ritual abuse often hear the voices of parts who appear to be demonic beings, ghosts, or other evil and generally non-human entities. (They might also purport to be other people, living or dead, or God or Jesus.) These identities give them more power over the parts who are supposed to run the system. However, they are just parts like everyone else, with a job to do; their job is to keep those in the main personality system in line.

Mind controllers encourage children to create, either instead of or in addition to a structure, a complex inner world in which the parts live. It is often based on fairy tales, stories, or films that have been shown to the child. It might have frightening places in it, some copied from the outside world (such as a pit or a torture chamber) and some created by suggestion. The trainer gives the child suggestions about the appearance of the internal world, through showing the child a picture of a tree, or a pyramid, or a house, or a box, and telling the part who is out that he or she lives, for example, in the roots of the tree, or in the upstairs bedroom of the house.

Trish Fotheringham's account in *Ritual Abuse in the 21st Century* describes the way in which she was taught to construct her inner world. In her case, an actual theatre with a stage was used, enabling the abusers to create the "stage of life". When Trish first worked on her recovery, she believed that her parts and her own imagination had created the inner world in which the insiders lived. She engaged actively with this world, going "inside" to see how each of the parts was doing and adding things to the inner world to make it more comfortable for them, such as a healing hot tub for those who were in pain. It was only after many years of therapy that she came to recognise that most of the features of the inner world had been deliberately installed by the abusers.

If your internal world is frightening, you can use your own imagination to redesign it to your liking and put the parts in safer places. The people who placed them in the first place will not know that anyone has been moved unless your reporter parts (see Chapter Nine) tell them.

A survivor of childhood trauma whose parts were not deliberately created by an organised group might also have an inside structure, but it is usually only a place for the parts to "live" inside, such as a house. One of my ritually abused clients has cult-trained parts housed in an upside-down pyramid, and abused-at-home parts living in an internal house.

Sometimes, places or structures that have been installed inside are copies of outside places, including places where abuse happened. This is true for both structured (deliberately created) and reactive (self-created) multiples, but many whose abuse was not perpetrated by an organised group have no inner world at all, and parts, when not "out", simply disappear into blackness or exercise an effect on the person's emotions without being internally visible.

In "Simplifying complex programming" on the Survivorship website, Jeannie Riseman states,

> Often the alters [parts] are arranged in complex patterns—sometimes geometric patterns (as in Cabala-based or matrix programs), sometimes patterns based on things or communities. Some people have systems that replicate an organizational structure, with a CEO, advisory boards, etc. Sometimes the pattern is more like a video game, with castles and dragons and all sorts of tricks and booby traps for the unwary.

There are some organised perpetrator groups who do not create inner structures or worlds, but still install cues to bring out different insiders to do their jobs.

Internal filing systems for memories, especially of training sessions

Many survivors of organised abuse have internal filing systems, usually with a "control room", files, a file manager or controller, and labels on the files which refer to such things as the type of training, age, and place where it was done. When you come to working with the memories, it is very important to work with the file managers. In some cases, there are "programme codes", which, when said in the right order, will make certain programmes or pieces of training cease to work.

Usually, a type of training session, or "programme", is repeated at different ages, so that by the time the person reaches adulthood, the training is well established and the conditioned response automatic. All the times this particular training was given will be noted in the internal files, as well as which insiders were involved. These files make it easy to access the memories, once you have got by the security systems and gained the co-operation of the insiders in charge of the system.

By now you might be alarmed, overwhelmed, and perhaps frightened by the complexity of all this. Do not worry; I am going to explain it all to you, and it will come to make sense gradually, particularly to those parts of you who were assigned by the abuser group to be internal leaders. Feel free to reject anything which does not apply to you; each personality system is unique. However, this chapter is focusing on the characteristics that systems set up by abuser groups have in common.

Tricks and technologies used for deception and training

The mind-controlling perpetrator groups use stage magic extensively to create non-human parts and simulate various false scenarios, such as murders or alien abductions. They wear costumes and dress children in costumes to make them believe they are demons, or animals, or robots. They put a bag of blood on top of a drugged person's body, and force a child to stab that bag, making the child believe he or she has murdered that person. Dentists numb children's tongues and then tell the children in the chair that their tongues have been cut out. Survivor therapist Arauna Morgan writes,

> The group that I was in was all about trickery…Resuscitation dummies, combined with drugging the children who were supposed to kill someone, cows' internal organs to simulate human internal organs, dye to simulate blood, pretty much anything that could be faked was faked. However, the drugs that were used knock people out, put them to sleep, cause blurred or double-vision, cause hallucinations or increased suggestibility, were real and used extensively.

I remember one of my first ritually abused clients confessing to me that for a long time she had remembered being abducted by aliens, but had not told me because she did not want me to disbelieve her other memories because of it. We worked through the "alien abduction" memory and discovered that the "spaceship" was parked in the courtyard of the cult training centre. An insider had been instructed that if the survivor began to remember the ritual abuse, she was to make her remember the alien abduction, so that nobody would believe her account of the ritual abuse. This programme did not work in this case, but you can imagine the larger consequences of such a ruse.

You might have noticed my mention of the training centre. Yes, cults have training centres; Stella Katz worked in one, which I accidentally discovered years before I knew about mind control or ritual abuse. With my family (including a furiously crying baby), I was trying to find the way to a summer camp, but we took a wrong turn. We drove down a long winding road through tall dark trees, and began to encounter strange road signs. When we came to "Trespassers will be shot", we turned back (thank goodness!) because it was beginning to feel quite frightening. Years later, Stella mentioned to me the location of the training centre, and I recognised it.

Besides stage magic props and settings, perpetrator groups use technology. Military and political groups have the most sophisticated technologies, and much training or programming is now done with virtual reality equipment. Films and holograms are used to deceive a child into believing in things that are unreal. For example, survivor Sally (see Chapters Six and Eight), as a Nazi-trained child, was shown many films of Hitler, suggesting he was alive and ready to take over the world. Her insiders did not know that he lost the war or that he committed suicide. I asked whether the films were in colour or in black and white. "Black and white, of course. All movies are black and white." I had to explain to the trained insiders that if a film is in black and white it is usually a very old one, from the time when people did not know how to make colour films.

A hierarchy of trained insiders with "jobs"

Most deliberately created personality systems are hierarchically organised. Each system has levels or layers, and each level has a boss, who reports to someone on the next higher level. There are often several parts with the same name but different functions, usually on different levels. The ones in charge usually have titles representing their authority. In military or political systems there are captains, leaders, and soldiers; ritual systems have demons, Satans, Luci-fers, and high priests or priestesses, as well as representations of family members who have authority in the person's life. Each layer in a Satanic system usually includes a Satan, a few demons, a high priest or priestess, a copy of the primary trainer, and various guards. Authoritative insiders have the job of disciplining others under them for disobedience (such as talking about the abuse.) If the disciplinarian on one level fails to do its job, the discipline moves up to a higher level.

Abuser groups also place fail-safe parts outside the “layers”, and these parts have the job of dealing with the problem if the ones in charge prove disloyal. They have been told they are such entities as ghosts, chameleons (who can impersonate other parts), jokers, deceivers, and spiritual guides.

Not all systems are equally complicated. Some complicated systems might have several different groups of parts, each with its own layers, trained by different perpetrator groups or for different purposes. A “criss-cross” security system might have parts from one group disciplining those from the other groups. Those in charge of the system are usually aware of what goes on in the outside world, but rarely intervene directly at first. You can talk to them; they are usually listening even if they do not speak to you.

All parts in a deliberately created system have jobs to do, and doing one's job is the most important expectation after compliance and silence. The first parts of this kind of which you are likely to become aware are the ones who punish others for disclosures. If you have frequent bodily pain or flashbacks, ask your insiders whether it is someone's job to punish you for some misbehaviour or disloyalty.

Many dissociative persons have experienced some degree of mind control, even done individually by, for example, an abusive parent. They might have internal punishers who replicate the behaviour of their abusers, even in the absence of organised group abuse, but their inside parts are less likely to refer to what they do as a “job”. If you hear about your parts having assigned jobs, you are probably dealing with mind control by an organised perpetrator group.

Most insiders are created and trained in childhood. Different job training is given to each part or group of similar parts. The more complex the abuse and mind control training the child has experienced, the more complex the personality system. In this way, the perpetrator group can create the ideal sex slave, drug courier, and/or cult priest or priestess, who does not know he or she has been victimised or committed a crime, and, thus, will genuinely and convincingly claim innocence if caught. This structuring of the personality system allows perpetrator groups to continue abusing and training children without those children breaking the secret.

Abusers purposefully design systems where additional personalities are created and stored so that they can be programmed for specific uses at later dates; when these new personalities show up without memories of early abuse, the front person of the victim often believes that these personalities were created in adulthood and never looks for the intensive and complex splitting and programming of youth. In their everyday lives, child victims will be unaware that any of this has happened. Later, neither will the adult survivors.

Typically, some parts will interact with the “normal” world, and others will perform functions only for the perpetrator group as a result of being cued or “called out”. Some of those can take over executive function of the body. Identity states will have no access to, or memory of, the thoughts and activities of the other states. Only those who know how to activate a particular trained identity state will be able to talk to the person in that identity state. This is one thing that differentiates such structured systems from the more organic form of multiplicity that comes from non mind-control based, albeit severe, child abuse. Sometimes, the group hides parts within other parts, and you can only get to the second part by accessing the other part. It can be quite complicated.

Many of the states, even in adults, will continue to experience themselves as young children, and believe their only choice is to remain loyal to the group in order for themselves, or others, to stay alive.

Trainees discarded by the perpetrator groups because they are rebellious or security risks often have parts who are programmed to self-destruct with drugs and alcohol and other risky behaviours. Successfully programmed survivors are reported to be highly functional in the identity states that perform cult rituals or other tasks required by their group.

Basic rules and arrangements for insiders

The internal parts (personalities) are arranged in a hierarchy, and all who were designed to be useful to the abusers have jobs. To help you understand, I have divided the kinds of jobs into three categories: organisers, enforcers, and discards.

Internal organisers

Gatekeepers and switch controllers. Most mind-controlled personality systems include gatekeeper parts, often but not always called by that title. I have encountered gatekeepers who hold back memories or permit them to surface, and gatekeepers who hold back parts, only permitting certain ones to come out into the body or to influence those out in the body. Some insiders have the job of controlling switching—that is, controlling who is "out" in the body or coming through the presenting shell person.

Higher-ups with impressive names and titles. Depending on the kind of perpetrator group, the higher-ups in the hierarchy may have different titles. In religious ritually abused systems there will be high priests or priestesses and deities such as Satan and Lucifer (and sometimes God and Jesus). In military/political systems you will find great leaders, generals, and people with specific names, such as Hitler.

Introjects (inside copies) of perpetrators are also common in personality systems that are not created by organised abuse. The internal punitive "mother" or "father" warns the child not to perform behaviours which will get the child punished by the real external mother or father, often by giving a reminder of the pain of the real parent's punishment. Leaders of organised abuser groups have capitalised on this natural phenomenon by deliberately creating (and, therefore, controlling) these copies of themselves. It is important to realise that these copies are not really identical to the perpetrators, but are child parts who were instructed to play back or imitate the sound of the perpetrators' voices.

Many perpetrators put their own stamp on to a personality system by putting "themselves" inside it. This is often done by splitting off parts during a rape, and instructing those parts that they are the perpetrator, or "born from his seed", and have to do what he does (usually, bring on the pain of that rape) if the person is disloyal. A child might be tortured until a part emerges who agrees to "be" the perpetrator in the inside world, reminding everyone inside of the pain the perpetrator gave them. In less cruel groups, a cardboard cut-out of the perpetrator is placed in the model of the internal world or structure, so that the insiders will always "see" the perpetrator. This is not an actual personality, just a trick to scare the young child parts.

File keepers and internal programmers. Training events are not only recorded by the perpetrators;

an internal record is kept by trained insiders. This record contains information about each type of training, when it was given, and what signals can be used to activate or de-activate it. The insiders in charge of this tend not to know much about everyday adult life, having been kept in a place where they only saw switches or control panels.

Recyclers of memories and programmes. A recycler (or reactivator) is an insider who has been trained to keep a small piece of each training memory, so that the survivor will be unable to recover the entire memory and thereby undo the effects of training. The recycler might be given a name like Piece Keeper, Puzzle Maker, Collector, Juggler, or Key Holder, and will be instructed to do something with the pieces, which are not kept in the files with the rest of the memories.

No doubt the development of Recycling programmes was based on the observation that a partially known traumatic memory creates flashbacks more than a completely dissociated traumatic memory. Because these recycling parts exist, it is important to enlist their co-operation before you start working through the traumatic memories, especially those of training or programming events. That way, the recycling pieces can be put in with the memories the first time you work on them, and the programmes will not reappear.

"Blank slate" parts can also be stored, split off, then kept for future programming or for reinstituting a damaged programme.

Internal enforcers

Observers, recorders, and reporters. Survivors of organised abuse generally have observers or watchers inside who are trained to be aware of, and remember, everything that happens. These parts are often told that they can see everything but cannot and must not act in the outside world. They may have been taught (through trickery) to believe they are non-human, for example, aliens, or whales, or spirits. They can be very helpful in accessing memories for processing.

The observers and recorders are often the reporters who have the job of telling the person's handler what the person has said or done, or sometimes even thought. Getting them to co-operate is essential to maintaining your safety during the recovery process.

Also, look for "*floating parts*". These are not deliberately created parts of the system, but parts that were accidentally split off at the same time as others. They may be escapees, in a way, parts who intentionally left the body when it was being harmed, and watched instead of feeling the pain. They are able to float around the system, learning everything they can, often unnoticed by the other insiders. Since the perpetrating group is unaware of them, they do not get hurt unless they get in the way accidentally or they choose to take someone's pain. They can be an incredible source of information about the system and about what has happened and of great assistance in recovery, as they have not been instructed by the abusers. Organised perpetrator groups try to find the floaters and assign them to the dump, but if the floaters are able to hide effectively, they can be the key to undoing the programming. One of my clients has one such part who calls himself "The Observer"; he detected many of the tricks which deceived the trained insiders, and when we process their memories he chimes in with his observations about what was really going on.

Threateners and punishers. The structured personality system of a mind control survivor is always protected by a security system. The observers and reporters watch any parts who are "out" in the body, and sometimes those who speak to one another internally. They report to others in the hierarchy, who then issue threats and order punishments to be administered by those parts who are trained to punish. Punishments include such things as flashbacks, flooding of unbearable emotions, painful body memories, self-harm, suicide attempts, and flooding of memories in which the survivor perpetrated against others. Each insider who punishes has his or her place in the hierarchy, and if he or she fails to do the assigned job, a backup will do it while the disloyal punisher himself experiences punishment or is banished. Parts who believe themselves to be soldiers or guards are common in mind-controlled (including ritually abused) systems, and, like real soldiers, they are trained to both obey the abusers' instructions and enforce obedience in other parts.

Spinners. Cults and mind control agencies often use physical spinning of the child, using devices such as baby scales and spinning chairs. Some survivors report having been spun on a huge catherine wheel, sometimes going in and out of water. This is also known to have been used in political torture, and has been shown in films. Spinning is not a programme. It is a means to that end. It is used very generally, in many kinds of training, just as torture and rape are.

Spinner parts, who do not themselves become dizzy, have the job of spinning internally to send out feelings or impulses to all the other parts, the main person, or a group of selected parts. Many of the “booby traps” or “fail-safe” programmes involve spinning. Often, when a programme (that is, a particular training) is in operation, the survivor feels dizzy, as though something or someone is “spinning” inside his or her head. If this is happening to you, you can speak to the spinner and ask that part to stop spinning or to slow down the spin. If this does not work, ask to speak with whoever is making the spinner part spin. This strategy, of working up through the chain of command, applies to mind control treatment recovery in general. Another tactic you can use is to ask the spinner to spin in the opposite direction, which will often put away whatever is being spun. If permitted by those in charge, a spinner can also replace whatever lesson is being spun with something positive, such as a feeling of calmness, taken from a positive memory.

For a complicated target behaviour which must not be set off by accident, some military/political mind-control groups use a sequence of parts rather than a group who are spun together. For example, some parts are trained to sing the songs on a record in the head to get out one insider after another in a sequence until the final one performs an assassination.

A dump containing discarded insiders

“*Garbage kids*” are child parts that were discarded because they either would not comply in training, or could not learn quickly enough. Often, garbage kids are hidden pain-holders, and continue to participate in some memories. If they have been “killed”, they are stuck in the memory of being unconscious, and have not actually been destroyed. I believe that it is important to find these parts, and process their part of any traumatic memories that need to be worked with. Often, they have the most resistance to the perpetrators, and can become helpful allies in healing. However, they have usually been severely traumatised. Sally (see Chapters Six and Eight) refers to her dump of discarded parts as “the blue pile”. The pile is blue because these inner children are black and blue with bruises. As long as your garbage kids remain hidden, the trauma cannot be worked through thoroughly, because their parts of the memories are missing. The training of the other parts will still have some power in your life, even if you are working hard to resist the pull of the abusers' instructions. Survivor therapist Arauna Morgan says, “To me, these parts are pure gold: they are the ones that the cult could not tolerate and so are the best ones to help the person break free.”

These are the primary characteristics I have seen in personality systems created by organised mind controllers. I know it looks complicated, but actually its organisation makes it possible for the survivor to find an organised route to healing, since so many things about it are predictable. In the next chapters, we shall look at how you can work with your structured personality system towards recovery.

Exercise 5. Symptoms of a structured personality system

You might or might not be aware of the following indicators of mind control within your personality system. The more of these you agree with, the more likely it is that you are a survivor of mind control. As with other diagnostic questionnaires, a "yes" to one of these questions means very little, but if you say yes to most of them, it might indicate that you have a structured (mind-controlled) personality system.

Caution: For some survivors, just thinking about some of these questions could trigger insiders to do the jobs the questions represent. Please do your best to make sure that all your parts know that you are only imagining responses to these questions; these things are not actually happening, so no one inside you has to take action.

- Do you sometimes feel empty, as if you have nothing inside? And at other times, have differing sets of emotions and beliefs? Is it possible that you (the front person) are a shell through which other parts operate?
- Are there sights, sounds, or touches to which you have immediate, strong reactions which you cannot stop? If so, what are they? Could they be cues for trained behaviours?
- Have you had a strong impulse to do something such as return home to your family at a particular time, even if they live far away?
- Have you suddenly fallen into a strong suicidal depression without knowing why? If so, ask your insiders (by thinking to them) what it is about, and whether it could be a booby trap.
- Are there certain dates which trigger fear in you? If so, what are they? Do you know why? Do they match any regular or cult holidays, or family birthdays?
- Do you feel as if your head has a division between the right and left sides?

The part of you who lives your everyday life should only be permitted to do the rest of this exercise when your inside parts are ready to let that part have hidden information. If you are a mind control survivor and your front person explores these questions too soon, it could trigger some strong conditioned reactions from trained insiders.

However, if you are not ready for the front person to find out these things, perhaps one of the parts in charge would like to take over and ask these questions to the rest of the system. Mind-controlling abusers hide a lot of information from the parts who believe themselves to be in charge, and the parts put in charge do have a right to know what has been hidden from them.

- Where do your inside parts live? Is there a structure of some kind where they are located? If so, what does it look like?
- Do you have an inner world where your parts live, and can you explore it, or can insiders draw parts of it?
- How are your traumatic memories stored? Are there files? Who is in charge of those files? Are there inside people such as file keepers and librarians?
- Are there internal programmers who keep the records of the programmes and turn them on or off or down low in response to triggers?
- Are there gatekeepers inside who keep the insiders in their places, or control who is "out" in the body?
- Is there anyone inside who has the job of keeping a piece of each memory separate from the rest of it (so that if you recall the memory this piece will not be included, and the programme it controls will continue to function)?
- Do you have flashbacks which could involve technology, such as virtual reality or an electrified chair or a helmet?
- Do you have memories which appear to be impossible, such as alien abductions?
- Do some of your insiders have jobs?
- Is there a hierarchy inside (parts having bosses and underlings)? Do some of your insiders have titles connected with their place in the hierarchy?
- Do you "see" the perpetrators of your abuse (if you remember any of it) in your inside world? If so, do their actions seem to be flashbacks of what they did in the past, or new actions? Or do they just stand still and look scary?
- Do you have inside parts who believe they are other real people in the outside world?
- Is there anyone inside who has the job of watching everything you do and say, and reporting it to an outside person?
- Do you have secret parts who watch everything but are not controlled by people who hurt you? (Do not ask them to identify themselves, or they will not answer.)
- Do you hear threats of punishment in your head for disclosing secrets?
- Do you have insiders who believe they are computers or machines? What are their jobs?
- Do you have insiders who believe they are animals? What are their jobs?
- Do you have insiders who believe they are demons, devils, Satan, Lucifer, or other such entities? What are their jobs?
- Do you have insiders who believe they are structures, such as buildings or bridges, etc., or who believe they are features of the internal landscape, like trees, mountains, lakes, or rivers?
- Do you have insiders who are underground and hidden in your internal landscape?

- Do you have insiders who believe they are wired to bombs and/or booby traps?
- Do you sometimes get a sense of spinning and vertigo, combined with some other symptom such as a strong feeling or belief or flashback?
- Is there an inside place where “garbage kids” or others who would not obey abusers are kept?

CHAPTER FIVE

Indoctrination

The most obvious evidence of mind control is the existence of insiders who believe what they were indoctrinated to believe. This is central to understanding mind control, and to no longer being controlled by the abusers. If you have experienced mind control, you, or many of your insiders, believe things that the mind controllers want you to believe.

In this chapter, we will look at the basic beliefs and the deceptions involved. In subsequent chapters we shall look at specific lies which mind-controlling abusers use to maintain control over their trainees. Encourage your higher-ups to read this section even if the adult who handles the outside world does not.

Psychologist and lawyer Steve Frankel read this chapter and responded, "Abusers have two goals: (1) to do whatever they want (to hurt children) and (2) to get away with it." All the deceptions are for the purpose of these goals.

The most important thing for you to know is that the foundation of the mind control created in children, whether by cults, military or government groups, or organised criminal groups which use children as sexual slaves, is one of carefully designed and meticulously executed deceptions. Mind control is produced through a combination of hypnotic suggestion, drugs, torture, threats, and double binds (choices where there is no good option).

If you are a survivor, members of the abuser group created false beliefs in your insiders while you were a child through staged scenarios, films and videos, stories, pictures, costumes, puppets, and other techniques of "stage magic". Many of your insiders remained children even while your outside person grew up, and those children continue to hold the beliefs implanted in them in childhood through this trickery. Any parts you might have that were fooled should not feel bad about this, because all the trickery was only done after torture that even strong grown men have been unable to resist; you were only a child when this happened and the trauma from that torture is why those parts of you stop getting older and stay "stuck" at that age, and often still believe themselves to be with the abusers in the places where the abuse occurred.

Some of those beliefs (such as that the abusers always know where you are) might have been actually true in childhood, but are no longer true. Others were never true. The indoctrination of mind control consists of lies reinforced by tricks. But when you were a child you did not know that these were lies and tricks, and probably most of your insiders still do not know that. The emotions resulting from these experiences are just as strong now as they were in childhood.

The most crucial lies are those that create lifelong obedience and loyalty in every survivor, and those that maintain the secrecy and security of the perpetrator group. Other lies are told to get inside parts to do their “jobs”. Even your ability to accept the truth of your life is affected by this training or “programming”.

Each of your deliberately created insiders began at a certain age, when he or she was split from a previously existing insider through torture. The programmers might have permitted some parts to grow up with the body, but they provided most parts with their own torture/traumas, which made those parts stop maturing. They have been unable to grow up since then, and remain at that age. Each insider has a “start” point and a “stop” point at which he or she stopped growing. The abuser groups know this because they created it deliberately.

Abusers tell parts of different ages lies that are believable for children of those ages. So, for instance, four-year-olds will be told about the “magic” powers of the group members, and will see these demonstrated; eleven-year-olds could be told about the extensive power of the group to infiltrate every organisation, spy on everyone, and use sophisticated technology that has not yet been released to the general public. Both these lies serve the purpose of causing the child, and, later, the adult survivor, to believe there is no way to escape the perpetrator group. An adult survivor might have many different parts who believe the lies they were told at the ages when they were trained.

The fact that there are parts (front personalities) who live most of their daily lives and function socially in the outside world, parts who often do not know of the beliefs, training, or even the existence of the other parts, allows for the lies and tricks to be effective. In my experience with survivor clients trained by different groups, I have found that there are many lies and tricks that might be called “standard”.

Before I tell you the kind of things these abuser groups tell children, perhaps you would like to ask your own insiders what they were told, and what they believe. Then you can compare your own answers to what I have heard from other survivors.

Exercise 6. *What your insiders were taught*

Ask your insiders each of these questions. You may receive more than one answer, since many survivors have been involved with more than one group.

Do your insiders think or know that a group created and trained them? What do they believe about the group who trained them? What were they told? How is this group different from any other group in society?

Do your insiders believe the group's teachings were right, or superior to what your front person may have heard elsewhere? If so, why?

Do your insiders believe they can trust the group? Why?

Do your insiders believe that the group did things for their (the insiders’) own good? Did the group hurt them for their own good? What were your insiders told about this?

What were your insiders told about people who are not part of the group? Whst do they believe?

What do your insiders believe will happen if they talk to anyone outside the group about what occurred or occurs in the group?

How important is obedience to the group, according to your insiders?

What were your inner children told about being good?

How important is loyalty, according to your insiders?

Do you have insiders who had to make vows of loyalty, or sign agreements?

What do your insiders believe they should do if they are disloyal.

What do they believe will happen to them if they are disloyal?

Do you have insiders who believe their only purpose in life is to do the jobs the group gave them?

What do they believe about the group's power in the world? What were they told about this?

Do your insiders believe your abusers can locate you through magic or prayer or sophisticated technology and can know what you say or think? (Note: such sophisticated technology might be available now, but it was not at the time most survivors were abused and trained.)

Do you have soldiers inside? If so, what is their duty?

How old are the insiders who believe they are soldiers? What kind of training did they go through?

Do you have robots inside? If so, what is their duty?

What were your insiders told about thinking for themselves?

What were your system leaders taught to believe? What would they need to know in order to agree to work towards healing and freedom?

Teachings about the abusers' correctness, superiority, and wisdom

Right, now that you have given your own private answers to the questions, I will tell you what I have learned from survivors about the teaching of the groups within which they grew up.

Here is what these groups tell children. The words are slightly different depending on which group is saying them and what they are doing to the children. Compare these statements to what you wrote.

"Our way (the way of the Family, or the Luciferians, or the Third Reich, or the Illuminati, or Satan, or the white American way of life—or whoever the group that trained you was) is the only right way. Our leader (or our deity) deserves your complete obedience and loyalty."

"You can trust us because we are your family and we act in your best interests. You can't trust anyone else."

"We do these things for your own good. Taking pain without crying makes you strong. Harming or killing inferior beings gives you power. All this training makes you one of us and permits you to rise to the top."

Do your insiders believe things like this? Often children believe things that adults say, because adults are supposed to know better than children. And the adults who say these things may themselves truly believe them. But that does not make what they say true.

Methods of indoctrination

If these are the beliefs of some of your young insiders, what was done to force the abusers' belief system into their minds? Intense, abusive, religious or military indoctrination. These beliefs were hammered into each part of your young mind over and over, through religious ceremonies, military drills, songs and chants and rhymes, severe punishments, and rewards for compliance or memorising the correct beliefs. You may have been forced or coerced into making vows of loyalty and signing official documents, sometimes in blood, swearing allegiance to the group.

At night or during breaks from real school, you might have attended special schools or camps run by the abuser group. If you were part of a military-style group, you may have been dressed up as a soldier, given weapons, and made to engage in military exercises. If you were in a religious group, you would have taken part in rituals and were taught how to kill and dissect sacrifices. You may have been trained in the various kinds of sexual behaviours desired by the group, especially if organised crime was involved and you were used for prostitution and/or pornography. You might have been trained and used by more than one group, since many of these groups are connected and use the same children.

Obedience, loyalty, and betrayal

Again, here is what the group leaders might have told you about *obedience.* They tell different things to different insiders in the same body. See whether what you wrote down about obedience is similar to these abuser statements:

"You're good if you obey us, and you're bad if you disobey us."

"You have to be loyal and obedient to us, because you made vows or promises to be loyal."

"If you disobey us, someone you love or another kid or a pet will be punished or will die, and it will be your fault."

These statements twist the meaning of words. I believe that every child has an innate sense of what is good—kindness to all living creatures. But "good" to the abuser groups means doing what they tell you to do, even if it is harming or killing another living being.

It is not surprising that they say obedience is good, since for many years Western society believed children are supposed to be obedient to their parents, who know better than they do. But persons whose beliefs and life goals are dedicated to harmful values will try to make their children adopt those beliefs and their lifestyle. It is obedience that has enabled dictators in many countries to exercise power over the people, and made them fight to keep those dictators in power, even when those rulers clearly did not have the best interests of the people at heart. When children are taught to obey, they can be manipulated easily by bad bosses and rulers when they grow up. So, parenting experts now recommend that children be taught to think for themselves and develop their own values rather than obey adults without question. (I consider myself a parenting expert, as parent education was my earliest speciality, and I have co-authored two books on parenting—see the References section.)

Within the personality system of a child being trained and/or abused in a mind-controlling group, there is a hierarchy, and lower-down insiders (usually younger) are told to obey the higher-ups. Adults in these groups tell the higher-ups (those insiders they have put in charge of the others), "You must always make the others obey, and punish them if they disobey, or we will find you and punish you severely." They tell them, "If you do as you're told, you'll rise to be the highest members of the coven or to be generals in the army." And they give them "promotions" to make them feel important.

Loyalty is a rather strange value. It has been used by military organisations, companies, schools, and various other institutions to get people associated with them or in their employ to put the organisation first. But, in my opinion, it has been misused. Yes, it is important not to sell out your friends for money, and when a person has treated you with kindness and respect they deserve the same back. But this is earned loyalty.

In team sports, it helps a team to have loyal fans who cheer for them. But experiments show that people assigned to different teams who are rivals will quickly come to believe that their team is superior to the other team, even though they did not choose the team in the first place. When you were a child, you did not choose your parents. You did not choose the groups to which your parents belonged. They have not earned your loyalty unless they treated you, all parts of you, with kindness and respect.

I have frequently heard of mind control groups punishing "traitors". What is a traitor? Someone who is disloyal, or someone who betrays. Someone who belongs to one side in a war, but sells secrets to, or spies for, the other side. If you are a traitor to your country, you are helping a country who wants to harm your country. But all this assumes there is a war, and there are the good guys and the enemies, and if you choose to belong elsewhere you are betraying your side.

Children in perpetrator groups do not get to choose sides, unless it is a false choice to give them the illusion of choice. For example, a little girl was placed between two groups of people, one in hooded black robes and the other in ordinary clothes. She chose the ordinary looking ones, and they abused her. She was given the choice again, and this time she chose the robed ones. She chose them only to avoid being hurt, not because she truly believed that they were good people. Of course, both groups of people were really part of the larger perpetrator group.

Perpetrator groups talk a lot to children about loyalty and about traitors.

"If you fight back against us you are a traitor and will be punished."

"Traitors deserve punishment [by the rape or torture or even death of themselves or others]."

Punishment and reward

Note: Some of these examples might be triggering, in terms of bringing up unpleasant memories, so your system needs to prepare to put memories away as soon as they come up. (See Chapter Ten about triggering.)

Children being shaped to a group's beliefs are punished for minor mistakes. Children have to watch a supposed "traitor" being tortured or apparently killed in a particular way, and are told this will happen to them if they become traitors. They are given a sample of what this feels like, such as being stretched on a rack, or severely electroshocked. This is very terrifying, especially if the "traitor" suffers a great deal.

One survivor wrote, "We were severely raped, over and over for any infractions. We were held underwater in the river until we desperately struggled to get loose to breathe, then raped again. We were electrocuted then raped again. If we still resisted we were told that our whole family would be killed and with the earlier punishment, this was very believable. This treatment started at FIVE YEARS OLD."

Those parts of a child who will become the higher-ups are also rewarded for doing what they are told. Simple rewards are candy or sweets, drugs, and pleasurable sex. Children are also rewarded by being allowed to harm someone else instead of being harmed themselves. For some children, this is a reward, but some experience it as worse punishment. When they obey, they gain the respect instead of the disdain of the community, although there is still disdain because they caved in, could not take the punishment, and chose to punish others instead. They are given "promotions" in the cult or the military organisation, with stripes, or rings, or medals, or some kind of token of the increased status. Of course, this is all fake, but the children do not know it. They are told they can rise to be the highest members of the coven, or to be generals in the army.

So, if you have insiders who (at least when questioned by group members) demonstrate unquestioning loyalty and obedience to the group, this is a sign that you have experienced mind control. Groups that are not involved in mind control do not demand such loyalty and obedience, and do not indoctrinate so brutally.

The power of the group

Perpetrator groups lie to children about their power. They tell children such things as "We can kill you or take you away at any time and no outsider can stop it from happening, because we have infinite power." When children are small, and large adults have power over them, and especially when parents are involved, it is easy to see that these adults can actually do such things. But when the children have grown up, the situation is different. The trainers know that children will grow up and move away, and they do not have infinite power and resources to track them down. (Chapter Nine, on "Safety", will go into more detail regarding this.) They also have to be careful not to alert the authorities. So, their power in survivors' lives is much more limited. Therefore, they make sure that all the child parts inside each survivor continue to believe in the group's infinite power.

The adult parts in you need to let the inside children know that the group does not really have infinite power. Abusers have jobs and families like anyone else; their resources are not unlimited, and they do not have the time to track people down. In the chapter on "Safety", we shall look at what they actually do to keep survivors connected with them. It is not magic; it is mind control. They actually rely on the survivor's trained insiders to keep in touch with them.

Soldier training

Many mind-controlling perpetrator groups, including even the religious ones, find it useful to create insiders who believe themselves to be soldiers. They are usually children, of various ages.

In regular life, all armies exert some degree of mind control over their soldiers, because their commanders need bodies willing to go to battle and obey without question. Foot soldiers have been called "cannon fodder" because they fight and even die for the goals laid out by the people in power, regardless of whether those people are good people trying to stop a vicious dictator or evil people seeking to dominate the world and acquire land and property. In regular societies, people are not allowed to join armies until they reach a certain age. Children are not allowed to become soldiers. The Lord's Resistance Army in Africa has been condemned by all societies because it forces children to be soldiers.

To make children believe they are soldiers, abuser groups dress them up in uniforms, and uniformed adults who call themselves generals, or commanders, or captains use their power, their size, and their loud voices to frighten the children and make them obey. The children are forced to engage in training just like adult soldiers, often with weapons. In some of these exercises, they believe they are killing enemies; in others, they are instructed to pretend to be killed. They might have to fight one another. If you have insiders who believe they are soldiers, this is what they might have gone through.

The "generals" make the children watch films of soldiers marching or fighting. They talk about pride in fighting for their glorious cause, and dying for it. They give fake promotions. They shout at the children and tell them to obey and not think for themselves. They punish severely those who cry, vomit, show fear or sadness, or show compassion for others who are being hurt.

Soldier children are taught "You are a soldier and your duty is to obey without thinking. Don't think, just act. It's wrong to think." If you have soldier insiders, they were taught to despise weakness, which includes emotionality, fear, sadness, loneliness, nausea, disgust, or any other human feelings. In particular, they are not to show empathy for animals or people being tortured or killed. Hidden parts hold all these emotions and sensations for them, because the soldiers are punished severely if they show humanity.

Child parts, especially those who have been designated "soldiers" by the perpetrator group, are fed many lies regarding those they are to harm or kill. These are similar to those lies taught to actual adult soldiers in training, told because it is not natural for any person to harm or kill another human being. You might have been told that the people you were hurting were subhuman, or did not feel anything, or were just inferior animals, or were dangerous enemies who must be exterminated or they would pollute the whole world. Children believe what adults tell them, and even though your whole insides revolted against the actions, the insiders who did these things might have believed they were doing it for a greater good. Parts who have to do these things are often given contracts to sign, in blood, to prove their loyalty to the group, who are presented as righteous and good.

Military/political groups train their little assassins using standard military indoctrination and training, praising children for being skilled “soldiers”. However, these children are generally tortured to produce these soldier insiders, who are then forced to commit acts of extreme cruelty. We can see this kind of training in the Ugandan “Lord's Resistance Army”, known to engage in both mind control and ritual abuse, though these terms are not always used in news reports. Much of soldier training is about dehumanising the enemy as “inferior” and “deserving to die”, and about being “tough” and not showing feelings such as nausea, sadness, and empathy while harming others.

Similar training is given to those children in religious cults who have to do the killing and dissection of the sacrifices.

These are not real soldiers or priests; these are *children* who have been deceived into believing they are adults doing important jobs. What they have been through is heartbreaking—and they themselves are not allowed to experience their own heartbreak; it has to be hidden inside. If you have parts like these, treat them with compassion, no matter how tough they seem to be. Their hearts *are* broken, and often they have other parts within them who hold their pain.

When it comes time to look at their memories, do not forget the hidden ones, often “garbage kids”, who hold the feelings. For every “tough” insider, there are usually several feeling-holders, some of them children who refused to obey and were punished, others parts who feel strong emotions or horrible physical sensations which could not be shown by the visible part. They have never been thanked for their work or relieved of their suffering.

You might want to take a moment now and notice how your insiders are feeling, both the “tough” ones and the ones who hold the different kinds of pain for them, as you read this.

Non-human insiders

Sometimes parts (originally, actual small-bodied children) are taught that they are not human at all. They may be *robots or computers*, not permitted to have any feelings. Or sex machines, or killing machines, that just perform their functions without any emotions. But they are actually parts of a human brain, and, as with the soldiers, other parts hold the feelings for them. Sometimes, robotic parts are only fragments, not full-fledged insiders; they understand very little. A fragment is an internal part that is split off through trauma and has only one small piece of life experience and perhaps a skill it learned during that experience, such as a particular sexual behaviour or use of a particular weapon.

Animal parts, who are usually young children, are used for jobs similar to the abilities of the animals they believe they are. Dogs keep watch at rituals or come when called. Cats sneak out at night.

Demons and beast parts are very young children who are led to believe they are entirely evil and are therefore not loveable by anyone except Satan. They also believe they are very ugly so that anyone from outside will be afraid of them. They are given the job of frightening other internal children.

Aliens, ghosts, spirits, and deities are parts whose job is to keep the higher-ups in line. Because these parts typically believe they do not belong to the body, they do not feel the body's pain because they are created while the child is under the influence of a strong pain-killing drug. This makes them very useful to the perpetrator group when the person requires punishment, such as self-harm or suicide attempts. They might have been taught that they will live on if the body dies, since they think either that their "internal bodies" are the real ones, or that they do not have bodies at all. The following is my own story.

The Woo-Woo Kids

My client left me a message: "I went to bed really early and woke up at 12.45 a.m. and can't get out of my head. I keep replaying everyone I know who is dead and they are taunting me, telling me that I'm making it all up and they are watching me and know that I'm a liar." She managed to calm herself with medication until our next appointment.

I know this client pretty well, and we have worked through much of her training and abuse memories. So I did as I usually do with her. I requested that the client ask High Priestess 9, who was the main insider in charge of the system, whether she knew who inside was making my client hear these voices. I was assuming that the voices were neither real dead people nor memory fragments, but something some insider had been trained to do.

The reply was that High Priestess 9 was also affected by hearing the voices of the dead, as was Satan 9. It had taken me about a year to work my way up to High Priestess 9 and convince her that I wanted to work with her, rather than against her. The left side of this client's system had nine layers, and each one had a high priestess, a Satan, and a number of deliberately created parts.

I remembered a group of three parts I had worked with about a year ago, the Big High Satan and two others called the Entities. This little group functioned to keep the parts in charge of the system in check by frightening them, Big High Satan frightening the rulers on Level 9, and the Entities in turn frightening him. It had taken some convincing for this client's system to let me actually meet the "Big High Satan". Didn't I know he was the real Satan, implanted in her at a ritual? The parts knew by now that all the other Satans from ages three to twelve were just inside parts like them. But this one was the *real thing.* That was in line with what many survivors and therapists believe, that somehow real demonic entities are attached to the personalities within a ritual abuse survivor.

I reminded my client that little Satan One had thought Satan Two was the real Satan, and Satan Eight had thought Satan Nine was the real Satan, and so on. Why should this new situation be any different? And, sure enough, it was not. The Big High Satan, who was all of eleven years old, boasted about how he was the one *really* in charge. The system had worked through some of his memories, and he became, for the most part, a co-operative part of the system.

I thought, "This new problem sounded as if it might originate with our young Big High Satan." So I asked to speak to him. He came out. "I'm the only one who can make those voices," he bragged. I asked why he was doing it. He said it was because Stan was telling him to.

The problem with this was that Stan was not a part. He was an actual high priest and the uncle who had abused my client. And he had died of cancer several years ago.

I asked the Big High Satan whether he thought anyone inside could be impersonating Stan, since he himself was impersonating several different dead people. He was indignant. No, he was the one really in charge, and he was the only one who could do the voices realistically. I reminded him that the Entities had been split off from him in order to control him, just as he was supposed to control the rest of the system. Oh, yeah, then, he guessed it could be them. I asked him to check it out. He reported that he heard laughter. They were laughing about how they had fooled him.

Then we all laughed together about how Big High Satan went "Woo woo" and scared the rest of the system, and how the Entities had done the same thing to him. We decided to call them "the Woo Woo Kids" from then on.

Although cults in particular take great pains to convince certain deliberately created parts, like the "Woo Woo Kids", that they are non-human or demonic entities, they are not. They are all insiders like everyone else.

If abusers want to teach you as a child that you are really a killing machine or a robot, they put you in a position where you lack control over your own body (for example, because of a paralysing drug, or strong arms moving your arms, or electroshock making your body jerk). Your body is made to perform the actions the group wants even against your will. After this training, those parts continue to believe they cannot choose what they do, even when it is no longer true.

Stella Katz, a former Kabbalah programmer, wrote about the creation of demon and animal parts in the training centre where she worked.

Warning: this account is very graphic.

Stella Katz: "How non-human parts are made"

It is important to remember that not all of what is seen or believed by members of these groups is real. For instance, you know there are alters who believe they are cats or dogs or snakes or demons, although you also know they cannot possibly be real. But to the alter, they are as real as you or me. Tricks, technology and "stage magic" are used to deceive the child. These are regarded as legitimate parts of magik…

For demon and animal alter creation, puppets are used to simulate demons. The puppets are operated from above, and some are spiked. Some are hand puppets; others are on strings and fly in the air. They come at the child, who then gets a shock. The child is strapped down and wired. Probes are used to create pain. Some demons appear to fly right through and inside the child. This is done in an empty room with white walls on which the demon pictures can be projected. Finally, the "Granddaddy of All Demons", a man or teenage boy in a costume, rapes the child. Little girls are raped anally as well as vaginally. Little boys are raped anally while the penis is manipulated, and then they are raped orally. The rapist is using a drug which maintains his erection.

This takes place during a long session, lasting through the night. More than one perpetrator is present. One operates the puppets. The trainer does all the vocalisations—making demon sounds, and giving each demon a name and a job. As many demons and animals are made as possible, from two to twelve.

After the rape, while still heavily drugged, the child is decorated with theatrical makeup and corresponding tail and horns. When he or she "comes around", the child alter is told that it is a puppy, pussycat, or snake, or a demon, gargoyle, or devil. The alter might be a demon in the shape of an animal, or just an animal. The child is shown a small "mirror" that is painted with the image of an animal or a demon, and told that it is them.

For example, the "cats" are kept in a dark room, until their eyes become accustomed to the darkness. Objects are coated with neon paint. The children are then told that cats can see in the dark. A black light is turned on, and the objects glow in the dark, making the children believe they can see in the dark like cats do. When the child has been shown that he or she is a demon, an image of fire is projected on to a screen hidden behind a wall of smoke. The smoke has been created by dry black ice that has a red lamp shining on it. These children are told the fire will not burn them because they are from hell. In their drugged state, they are walked through what they perceive as fire. “Snake” children are bound with gauze and plastic wrap so they cannot move their arms or legs, then are placed on the ground and told to slither like a snake.

The purpose of the demon alters is to keep the child in line and in constant fear of being grabbed and harmed by a demon. They represent actual demons, just as idols may represent deities in the Hindu faith. A total of thirteen demons are wanted, including the original one, and six animals. The job of demons is to come up during rituals and during times of potential disloyalty. If the child is about to disclose something to an outsider, a demon will come up and scare him, so as to ensure compliance. The demons are set up in a hierarchy. They are given names of actual demons. Animal alters are used for purposes consonant with that animal's nature, such as a cat for going through the bushes at night. The large animals, such as dogs, are also used for sexual intercourse with real animals. The child usually gets to pick their own animal names.

None of the children who are programmed to believe they have animal or demon alters are beyond the age of five years. This appears to be the best age in which to create these kinds of illusions. The group will be very careful to maintain the age of these alters. Beyond that age they would tend to question, and the illusion would be broken. If you come across a cat or dog or snake or demon… remember that it is not likely to be more than five years old.

* * *

So, approach your non-human insiders as you would any other insider. Get to know them, ask their ages, ask about their jobs, help them achieve and maintain present-day safety, and eventually you will be able to work with them in the recovery process.

Trainers say to the insiders, “You were created only to do the job we gave you, and if you don't do it you won't exist any more.” This is a lie. Everyone inside is a part of a greater whole, split off and separated in childhood. Everyone inside contains real human emotions and needs and abilities. As you reclaim them for your own purpose rather than that of the abuser group, you will become stronger and more whole.

Trainers also say, “All you inside people must stay in your places in the inner world (or structure).” This is simply for the convenience of them finding the parts they want. It does not benefit you. There might, of course, be chaos, if everyone inside moved out of their allotted places at the same time. But if you choose to alter your inner world to make it a comfortable living space for your insiders, and then move them gradually into better places, it will benefit you. We shall talk more about this in Chapter Twelve.

In later chapters, I shall address some of the more specific types of indoctrination, about such topics as the group knowing where you are and what you say, about your being evil, about people outside the group, especially professionals, being dangerous to you, and about what you have to do to prove your loyalty.

Different lies for different parts

One of the things that mind-controlling groups do is tell different things to different groups of insiders. So, even though you all share the same body and live in the same head, some of you were told that your body is a girl, and others that it is a boy. Girl insiders receive different training from boy parts. Some parts might have been told they are not human, are immortal, and can never die, but they do live in the same body with the rest of you. Some parts were dressed up in costumes, or shown “mirrors”, which were actually pictures, to make them believe they were adults, or midgets, or animals, or non-human beings.

The way you can find out the truth about your life is through internal sharing, finding out what different insiders experienced and were told. Then you can make up your own mind(s).

Look again at your answers to Exercise 6, about what the abusers taught you. What do you now think about these things? Would it help you to take the questionnaire again?

Regaining your own mind

I believe strongly that your mind is your own, and that no one, whether they are your actual family, your cult “family”, your country's military or intelligence service, or your “owners”, has the right to dictate what you believe and what you do. In order to take your own mind back, you need to discover what is in it, what experiences your different parts have had and what those experiences have made them believe about life and about you. Then, between all of your parts, you can form an identity which was not programmed for you in childhood, but is your own chosen path in life.

Sally from three perspectives

In order to help you understand the varying perspectives of the different parts inside a survivor of mind control and ritual abuse, I asked Sally to tell the story of three years of her life from three perspectives: that of the adult, Sally, that of the younger insiders ("the Kids"), and that of the higher-ups inside her. This story is in their words. You will notice that the insiders refer to Sally as "Old Lady" rather than by her name. Perhaps some of your own insiders have had the experience of looking in a mirror and being shocked to see an adult man or woman there.

A note from me: Sally's higher-ups use the word "programmes". It is the word the abuser groups used to describe the specific kinds of trainings they gave to her insiders. Some mind-controlling perpetrator groups see the mind as a kind of computer in which they can place programmes. What they actually do is train inside children to obey particular instructions, using behavioural conditioning and torture and hypnosis. These are the insiders' "jobs". Sometimes, there are internal "switches" in the inner world which insiders (internal "programmers") use to turn programmes on or off. When a programme is turned on, the insiders with that particular training do their jobs. (I have put their descriptions of the programmes and their purposes in endnotes to this chapter, so that explanations will not interrupt the flow of ideas.)

Sally and her insiders also use the word "littles" to refer to the younger insiders. This word will be familiar to those of you who are involved in online support groups and websites.

Sally

In my mid-thirties, I took a leave of absence from my place of work and moved across the continent to attend university with the idea of graduating and applying for another position within my place of employment. Aside from the ongoing memories of being molested by an "uncle" during childhood, I had forgotten about being raped and tortured by a female room-mate nine years earlier, and had no conscious memories of surviving ritual abuse/torture and mind control. I had told my father when I was ten about my uncle's abuse, and I believed it had stopped at that point, as my family had ended the connection with that "uncle." This uncle was actually a major leader of the group who abused me throughout my childhood, including after the disclosure.

The stress of trying to complete a fast-tracked university programme within a year without any family support triggered me into a self-destructive lifestyle. I was a "Christian" who feared God and eternal damnation, so, during the early spring of that year, I chose to abuse alcohol on a daily basis instead of committing the unforgivable sin of suicide. This triggered the emergence of PTSD symptoms: I became distant, anxious, hyper-vigilant, enraged inside, depriving myself of sleep. I experienced continuous nightmares and flashbacks relating to an experience of rape and torture by a female room-mate as well as incest. I kept seeing "snapshots" of my father, uncle, mother, and aunt.

By the next summer, my erratic behaviour caught the attention of the campus security guards. Their concern for my safety increased when they searched my dorm room and found evidence (piles of empty beer cans, dark notes) of suicidal behaviour. They called the police, who said I could either go with them or with a counsellor. I feared what would happen to me if the police took me, so I chose to go with the counsellor instead.

Once I was packed, the counsellor drove me to a government-funded transition house. I was allowed to stay there for ninety days while attending AA meetings and a twenty-day course of treatment for women. My family would not let me return home when I fell apart and failed my courses, so I had to quit university, leave the dorm, and go on social assistance while getting treatment. I was ashamed of getting myself into this predicament. I almost wished I had succeeded in killing myself via a more immediate means, such as hanging, stabbing, or drowning. I hate making a fool out of myself, especially in public. I couldn't move out of the university dorm fast enough. I was also still in shock that my entire family had abandoned me—especially my mother. I was always loyal to her, and had been there for her 24/7. I couldn't believe she had betrayed me like this!

I was diagnosed with PTSD and depression. For two years a newly certified counsellor tried to help me work through emerging body memories of being tortured and raped by a woman when I was a young adult. I was always anxious before seeing her. She was nice and caring, but did not have much confidence and was not sure how professional she was supposed to be yet with her clients. I could see her being warm and understanding and then there would be a shift in her attitude, and she would become more professional in her stance and the words she used.

Whenever I went to take the bus to see her, my right leg would start to shake uncontrollably. It would start again when I sat down in her office. My upper body would tense up, my head would suddenly turn towards the left, my whole body would shoot back towards the back of the chair, and my head would hit the wall behind me. I didn't know what was going on. It all happened within seconds. I would lose my vision and then come to, drained and exhausted, either leaning to one side of the chair or on the floor near her desk. I could not comprehend anything the counsellor said to me until she helped me to ground myself by looking at five different objects in her room and/or feeling my feet flat on the floor and/or standing up for a few minutes to reorientate myself. Every session was basically the same, going through body memories without understanding them.

I signed up for three correspondence courses. At first, I was managing all three fairly well. Signs of a learning disability began to emerge, but I shrugged it off. Then it became more and more difficult to comprehend, process, and articulate information for my courses. I had to write and rewrite what I was reading so that I could retain the information for exam time. However, when exam time came, I was not able to understand the questions on the exam, and I couldn't organise or articulate my thoughts. Sometimes I would go into a trance-like state and just stare at the paper until a sudden noise or something triggered me out of it again. I barely managed to complete the courses.

Then I went back to university, but attending school on campus became increasingly difficult for me. I felt like a freak. I was afraid of being asked a question or participating in group work because sometimes a student's or a professor's voice sounded garbled to me and I could not make sense of it. Or, even though I understood the question, I began to talk like someone having a stroke. Sometimes the content of the course (sociology of religion, criminology, psychology, social issues) would trigger flashbacks of being molested, raped, killings, and fires. The campus psychologist referred me to a psychotherapist.

For seven years, the psychotherapist tried everything she knew to help me heal and do well, but she became literally exhausted. My insiders increasingly harassed her and the counsellors at the university. In the therapy office, we would hit our head, and she would get mad at us, and yell at us to stop. I started drinking heavily again, and had constant thoughts of suicide. I used to hit myself in the head a lot, or take scissors to the stomach or punch/cut the left arm. I later realised that these were programmes, in which robotic insiders obeyed instructions to self-destruct or die. Finally, we made a serious suicide attempt. One of my insiders called the university psychologist and told her that we had just drunk coolant. I ended up in hospital for three days.

When I got out of hospital, three years ago now, my psychotherapist finally gave up on me, and referred me on to my present therapist, who understands survivors of mind control and ritual abuse. Everything changed for the better. My crazy symptoms came to an end, and I completed my degree within a year. I began to practise my innate right to think for myself. I am now doing what I have longed to do and thought was impossible: I have been volunteering for over a year now, helping others through an organisation that values a person's innate right to live as a peaceful, unique, free-thinking, and respected human being! And I now have part-time paid employment there.

* * *

Note: Sally's experience with the new therapist will be shared in Chapter Nineteen.

The kids

We be on the bad people's side and believed what they told us and was really scared of them too (not supposed to say we scared but we were). We didn't like Old Lady [Sally] because she be stupid and a traitor. It be the higher ups who make us turn the programmes on and off to hurt Old Lady, make her feel stupid, crazy, or want to kill herself. Because it be the higher ups' job to protect us and keep us loyal to the bad people and we just robots and do what we told. We do a really good job with the programmes to make Old Lady drink and get caught by the police. We so happy because we knowed we do a good job and that mean that the higher ups be happy with us and we don't get pain to make us obey them better. But we get scared too because we not like the police because some of them bad people who could hurt or kill us. And we really scared of going to crazy land and that might be what happen if we get taked to the hospital by the police or the doctor or the therapist so we be really scared. We also supposed to kill ourselves because that show we be honoring our cult family so we happy we doing our jobs good but we scared about dying too.

The counsellor Old Lady have to see after the police were called not know about us because we still be trapped in memories. Old Lady just goed through body memories and the counsellor only watch, write, and be there in case Old Lady fall down or something when in the memory. We do a really good job of making our body look dead in a body memory. The counsellor be scared and picked up her phone to call emergency but we not want the police to come so we wake the body up and it make the counsellor happy again. That funny we think.

Our reporters make sure Old Lady tell our mum and dad everything that happening with counselling so they be informed. We do this till Old Lady tell the police in 2006 to not allow our dad or family to speak to us no more.

We like to be out in the body sometimes so we feel like real people instead of being treated like its or nothings or parts or stupid mental cases because we not mental cases or retards, we real kids who have feelings and thoughts and like to do things too, but we never be heard by Old Lady or be heard very good by our counsellors. We start to use the body's mouth and speak with the psychotherapist, but she don't understand us.

Then, the higher ups get mad at us and at our psychotherapist when she asks Old Lady (because she thinks it's her sometimes when it really is us) or us not to do our job. So, if we do our job, we get in trouble or make our psychotherapist mad or worried about us and if we don't do our job then our higher ups get mad at us and give us and Old Lady head pain or stomach pain,[1] or high-pitched sound in her head like she going crazy, or make her get flashbacks, or make her get really angry and feel like she being tortured, or make her want to kill herself.

Then some of us littles who scared of the higher ups and dark insiders ask our psychotherapist to put those ones up on the moon or Mars before we go home so we not be scared of them. So she do this but it make our higher ups and Darks really mad and then we get really scared and we start to feel the pain of being tortured again or we think we gonna be sent to hell again. It make us want to cut the arm so she remember who she belong to. We supposed to be loyal to them for they are our only family.

When the psychotherapist didn't help us, the higher ups were looking for excuses to get mad and walk out, or to push the therapist over the edge instead of us. We sent the therapist lots of emails, one after the other to get her mad, up to 100 in a week. We would also leave a lot of messages on her office and personal phone.

Then after we drank the coolant and went to hospital, we find out that our psychotherapist fired us and we have to see our present therapist instead. We littles were really sad and confused and felt betrayed and some of us were really mad at her, too. Our higher ups were happy because it worked, we got fired. But they didn't expect us to be alive and especially to see another therapist. And so, they were going to give the new therapist a hard time too.

The higher-ups

We were created to keep everyone in line so that they would remain loyal to the Luciferians, KKK, SS, Freemasons, GI and Green Beret organisations. They were our family, not the parents, and we owed our lives to them; they were our leaders, fathers, mothers, military trainers, confidantes and family. They told us: “Obey or be killed. Obey or suffer. Obey and do. Do not think—just do it. Do not listen to outsiders, they don't understand, they are stupid and naïve, they are tools to be used and are worthless. They have no worth, no rights and are full of lies. They will not help you, they will mess with your head and confuse you and make you feel bad and unworthy. They will contaminate your mind and your soul. They are toxic and not one of us. You belong to us, you are ours, you are property, to be owned only by us and for our use and no other. We will tell you what to do and when, and you will listen or be punished and sent to hell, for God is not the leader here, we are—the Luciferians, SS and KKK. Do not deceive us or we will find you and bring you back or dispose of you or make you self-destruct.” These are our powers, the higher-ups, that were instilled in us by our leaders and family, the “cults” and military.

“For your work, little ones, you will be rewarded by not being harmed, thrown into prison, into caves or coffins, or killed or tortured or have your friends killed or sacrificed. Obeying and being able to take pain via training makes you stronger and more determined to follow our light, the light of darkness, the way of truth, of light, of power and superiority over all humans and life. Heil the Aryan race, heil Hitler, hail God on high, hail Lucifer the almighty and the devil his superior, then Satan—the 'father of lies,' the father of the true light not lies.

"The father of lies is what the counsellors will tell you but this is not true, for we are the light. We light the way of the truth, of the power of the Aryan race, and this is your purpose little ones, so obey us and be strong and do not let any outsider fool you into believing their lies. You are free with us, not with them, you don't need to think, for we think for you and for your safety and your power, so that you may have power over life itself, and the blood of all humanity, and animals, for you are superior and will honour us till death or be called a traitor and die with the outsiders in mind, spirit and body. We will make it so."

From the body's first anointment at birth until age fifteen, when the body betrayed us for a second time by leaving the "cults", we were in full control and then, slowly we began to lose our grip on the body. The body was not obeying. It never did to the fullest and thus was always a problem, so we had to keep it in line with the turning on and off of switches via the little ones being told to follow commands, acting like robots for us, and thus not asking or whining or thinking, just doing regardless of the consequences.

The underlying programme we used to control Old Lady was Snakes and Ladders®.[2] It gives Old Lady a sense of hope (ladder) and then, there is a sudden drop (snake): suicidal thoughts, she freezes or collapses and fails an exam. All the other programmes are "snakes." Whenever Old Lady feels like she is doing well, she will feel that she has been humiliated in public and has made a fool out of herself. Then look out, a trip wire is set off for the snake pit, and she falls hard towards self-harm and suicide.

In addition, the Submissive programme was always on. It caused fear, sensations of electric shock, flashbacks and a need to submit to the abusers whenever we heard any of the following words: light, truth, trust, touch, free, feel, and think. It is still at work in us today, but not as strongly, as we have worked through some of the memories behind it.

Old Lady had another underlying programme running, which started when she was three and has never been fully turned off. It is a spiritual programme to make her fear God. She gets flashbacks of God looking down at her, remembers scripture, feels unworthy, and needs to live as a perfect, God-fearing Christian.

Soon after Old Lady started university, we told the littles to turn on the Self-Destruction,[3] Dead Head,[4] and Scramble[5] programmes so it would make it hard for her to think, and make her feel stupid and think she is no good and needs to escape being at school and in this world. And we had the littles turn on the memories of her being molested by her uncle and wondering if her dad molested her too via the Fear Family[6] programme. We deprived her of sleep by haunting her with nightmares of being molested, hearing her father and uncle knocking on her dorm door, and sensing some adult being in the room ready to grab her and calling out her name for her to come to them.

The snake pit gave Old Lady a sudden drop as the Suicide/Self-Harm[7] programme was turned on. She hated herself and life, period. She wanted to escape this life, to die. She felt abandoned and alone with no support, stranded 3,000 miles away from home. She didn't know anyone, had no income now, and knew for sure that she was not going to be able to complete the fast-tracked university programme; she was going to fail.

We took this and ran with it. Time to turn up the heat. The Fear God programme influenced Old

Lady to choose abusing alcohol and cigarettes over killing herself with a knife, drowning or hanging herself, because she knew from reading the New Testament that committing suicide was an unforgiveable sin. (Committing suicide confuses us because we were told that this was an honourable act which shows our loyalty to all of our cult families.) Old Lady didn't want to upset God and be damned to hell. She felt like she was already living in a torturous hell, but this would be worse and for eternity.

When Old Lady started to see a counsellor to help her with her nightmares and memories of being molested, this upset us because you are not supposed to see a therapist, that's against the rules. Old Lady was a traitor and we needed to honour the code: Once you leave the cult family, if you share anything about us or seek outside help, you will either be tracked down and killed, will be killed by us insiders, or driven insane and useless and be institutionalised. That was where Old Lady was heading, but she didn't know that.

We knew that the first counsellor was inexperienced so we could have some fun with turning various programmes on and off. We needed to maintain control and so we turned on Shield[8] and Enemy[9] programmes to make sure Old Lady kept her distance with counsellors and other people trying to heal. We didn't want her to get close to anyone and become weak. Ugh! Old Lady is so weak and stupid sometimes we think. She's not like us, that's for sure. She would try to trust people or help them. The littles loved to help people and longed to trust others or find a mother-figure, but we didn't want that. Old Lady was supposed to be loyal to the cult and not think or help others. We couldn't trust Old Lady or those she mingled with.

None of us higher-ups wanted the first counsellor's help. She was the enemy, but we were confused. She wasn't shocked or scared when the littles came out and she was willing to talk and help them through the memory. We were jealous and scared and mad. We wanted to talk too and be heard, but were scared because that was not what we were supposed to do and mad because our family secrets might be found out.

In our therapy sessions, Old Lady was only going through the motions of parts of memories, and the emotions and pain were not being processed by all of us who were involved in the memory. This caused Old Lady to struggle with a rage that was unbearable and could not be controlled. We now know that when only part of a memory is experienced, the rest of it can flood the system. It was connected to the memory of the blue pile (black and blue) insiders who were tortured and the beasties who felt the rage against the bad people. Old Lady didn't know how to work with this rage or help it to go away.

However, once she left the counselling office and was out in public, she would switch into a strong disbelief/denial about what happened and would switch into a polite demeanour so that she would not be conspicuous in public. When she got home, the strong disbelief/denial programme[10] took over to the point of her being unreceptive to her littles and any of us. She went on about her daily business as if nothing had happened. She couldn't relate to her insiders, not realising that they were really littles (younger parts of “her”). She also didn't know she too was a host, just another part, and not the whole person or a singleton.

Old Lady had to go to a daily treatment programme for her alcohol abuse. The head counsellor there could see right through Old Lady and knew somehow that Old Lady had been involved in more than what she was sharing. We feared her and so, one time we turned on a Suicidal and Trance[11] programme when Old Lady was near the ocean outside the treatment centre. She just stood near the water and looked out, ready to walk in the water to her death. This daily drug and alcohol treatment programme Old Lady attended was disturbing because it made Old Lady use her mind. She had to think back to childhood and we didn't know how to think. We'd always been told “Don't think—just do.” We didn't like this and so we made it easy for Old Lady to stay clean and graduate and get out of there.

When Old Lady started the correspondence courses, we wanted to give Old Lady some hope of being able to go to school and graduate again. But we knew we were also going to turn the Snake part of the programme on so that she would begin to struggle again and fail. She needed to be taught a lesson: that we, not her, were in control of her life (even if she didn't know about us; she would know that she doesn't have any control over her life). So, we let Old Lady get into the correspondence courses at first and then, within a couple of months, we started to turn on the Scramble, Dead Head and Smoke Bomb/Mist[12] programmes. She struggled. It took her a long time to understand the questions and answer them correctly. She would start to go off track with her answers, write partial sentences, or misunderstand questions. She would write and rewrite her answers and worry about completing all three courses on time.

By the time of the final exams, Old Lady could not remember what she was studying and had to write out what she was reading to retain the information. Her confidence level was starting to sink, but she persevered and went to the college to write the exams. It was then that we turned up the heat: we kept the Scramble, Dead Head, Smoke Bombs programmes going, and added the Trance, Confusion,[13] and Will Fail[14] programmes so that it would be difficult for her to find where to write the exams and she would feel even more self-conscious and stupid when trying to understand the exam questions.

She passed anyway.

When Old Lady started school again, we initially turned off the Suicide programmes. We kept the Shield, God-Fearing, Family-Fearing, Self-Hatred, Will-Fail programmes going and then turned the Denial, Dead Head, Smoke Bombs, Drugged,[15] Trance, Scramble, Garble,[16] Confused, Robot,[17] Crazyland,[18] and Voice Over[19] programmes on and off so that she would increasingly struggle with school and therapy.

We knew now that the most honourable thing to do was to kill ourselves and we were prepared to do this if we had to because we didn't like Old Lady and some of us (the Lights and littles, not the Darks; the Darks could only go to hell not heaven) also wanted to be with our best friend and the others who were killed/sacrificed when the body was six.

The most debilitating programme was the Denial programme because it played with Old Lady's emerging and overwhelming emotions. The programme would cause Old Lady to think she was going crazy to the point of wanting to die. She would believe the bits and pieces of memory that she had consciously remembered in the counselling office, and felt overwhelmed, shocked and angry at the abusers for what they did.

We were around too many people so we got scared ourselves. We would see someone who looked like our uncle, dad, aunt, or mother. When we saw rabbits, dogs, kids, or babies we would have flashbacks and be confused. Were we still in the barn, church, coffin, tunnel of death, or were we in another world, Old Lady's world? The body would even react and feel sick, want to vomit, gag, choke or be unable to breathe. The angrier we got, the more destruction we would cause. We would have our littles send the professors and/or therapists numerous emails that were full of anger, apologies and/or suicidal thoughts. We would even set off physical symptoms of head pain, headaches, muscle spasms, stomach aches, vomiting, gagging and choking, shortness of breath, dizziness and depression.

The psychotherapist used to say Old Lady was “ambivalent” when that wasn't true. It was because we were fighting inside and she didn't know that it was us who were mad. The therapist didn't ask us what we wanted or why the littles were afraid of us; she just pushed the memories back and put us up on the moon and Mars. This made us mad. We are kids too; we were not being heard and were being treated as if we were bad for just doing our jobs; we felt like we were being punished. Sometimes the therapist would get mad—you could hear it in her voice—so we would ask her if she was mad at us and she would say no, she was mad at the people who did this to us and was frustrated that she couldn't help us. She tried to help us, but she wasn't; she was making it worse. We didn't know that each other existed and definitely did not know that the Lights were the Darks' enemy and the Darks were the Lights' enemy. We were starting to fight with each other on the inside and hated Old Lady. Old Lady didn't understand us either and didn't want to know us or get to know us. She was ashamed of us and wanted to be classified as a person with mental illness.

By this time, we had taken over. All the programmes were running, including the Suicide programmes. Old Lady started drinking heavily again and then we ordered the littles to drink poison. Old Lady, in a trance-like state, went to the store, bought the coolant, and hit the conscious point of knowing that there was no going back, this was what she was going to do. She felt no emotion at this time (Shield programme); the Robot programme was engaged and she drank the coolant. We didn't expect one of our littles though, a six-year-old, to panic and call for help. And we didn't expect what happened next: the psychotherapist fired us and sent us on to a therapist who actually knew how to help us! And now we are healing.

* * *

I have edited Sally's original story only for clarity and to reduce its length. Her original description showed even more of her anguish, confusion, and anxiety. It is a testament to her that she accomplished so much despite her internal conflict and sabotage. I should note that Sally had strong programming to be dysfunctional and addicted. Some survivors are designed to be much more functional than Sally was during these years, and some even hold very high positions in government or professions.

As you read about Sally's experiences from each of these different viewpoints, we can see how differently each event in the life of a mind control or ritual abuse survivor is viewed by different parts of the whole person. The main adult suffers from symptoms and often does not know their cause. The little insiders are confused and upset by various triggers in daily life. They are also aware that they have to obey orders from the higher-ups, even though they often do not know what it means when they obey in this manner.

From the disclosures of the higher-ups, you can see that the abuser groups deliberately create “programmes” which are trainings for little insiders to do their “jobs” of creating symptoms and problems, and for higher-up insiders to order the little ones to perform this sabotage of the person's life. You can see how complex and numerous these programmes can be. You can see a little about the training of the insiders, the ways they have been deceived, and the lies that they were told by the abuser groups.

You can also see what therapy can be like for a survivor of mind control and ritual abuse. The usual methods that survivors are taught to deal with their symptoms are unlikely to be effective. What good will it do for the front adult to try to calm herself down by mindfulness, or relaxation techniques, or rational thoughts when her head is filled with insiders doing their jobs of creating symptoms in fear of being tortured or killed? You can also see how difficult it is for survivors to engage in therapy, and to trust a therapist, and how difficult it is for a therapist to know how to help a survivor. (See Chapter Nineteen.)

Sally was fortunate to eventually find a therapist who did understand mind control. Not all survivors have that chance. If you have a therapist now, you need to be realistic about that person. Is he or she sincere and caring? Does your therapist listen to all of you? And if your therapist does not have the understanding of mind control that Sally's final therapist had, is he or she willing to learn? Your own higher-up insiders will tell you that no therapist can be trusted. That is a lie they were told.

Even if you do not have a good therapist, because no one is available or because you cannot afford one, you can make a lot of progress on your own in understanding all your insiders, how they were abused, trained, and deceived, how they are behaving now, and how they, as well as the front person, can heal.

Exercise 7. Learning from Sally's story

Think about your life over the past year or two, and write down what activities you have been involved in, such as education, work, housing, parenting, relationship, friendships, counselling, treatment programmes, and therapy. List each of these activities with lots of space after it.

For each activity, write down what it has been like for your main adult, “apparently normal personality” or “host” (front person.) How has it been helpful or unhelpful? If it has gone wrong, in what ways has it gone wrong?

Now, for each activity, ask your insiders, kids and higher-ups, to write down what that experience has been like for them? What has gone well? What has not gone well, and why? What programmes have been operating, and why?

Do you have any decisions to make about your healing process? What needs to change to make your healing more effective?

You will have noticed how Sally's counsellors, though sincere and well meaning, were unable to help her. If you are in therapy, are there any things you need to tell your therapist so that he or she can be a more effective helper for your healing? Do you need to find a new therapist? (Read Chapter 19 first.)

Notes

1. *Body Illness Programmes*: Sally's body illness programmes included stomach ache, headache, head pain (from vice grips or electricity applied to the head), gagging/vomiting, tiredness, and eye pain (being hurt by the light). Other survivors have had ear and nose and dental pain from needles.

2. I have encountered this programme in other survivors. It is first taught to the child through playing the game Snakes and Ladders® or “Chutes and Ladders”.

3. *Hate Self Programme*: She wants to cut and/or stab herself, drink alcohol, hang or drown herself, neglects to eat or eat well, smokes, punches herself.

4. *Dead Head Programme*: Sally is unable to think at all, as if her head is full of cement.

5. *Scramble Programme*: Sally cannot understand words or numbers because they seem scrambled. Note that some other survivors have different learning disability programs, like training to write letter or numbers backwards.

6. *Fear Family Programme*: She sees flashbacks of abuse by family members.

7. *Suicide*: She wants to die and/or sees herself committing suicide.

8. *Shield Programme*: She has no emotion, is detached. This helps to protect herself, or hurt herself and push people away, or hurt other people.

9. *Enemy Programme*: An enemy is any outsider, especially those outsiders who are genuinely nice or trying to help us, in particular, “friends”, counsellor, doctor, spiritual people, teachers, and people in authority; she is to make them hate her, leave her, abandon her, fire her. Or she is to go crazy and kill them.

10. *Denial Programme*: She does not believe that the mind control or ritual abuse really happened, despite her memory flashbacks.

11. *Trance Programme*: This puts Sally in a trance, such as we were in during rituals.
12. Smoke Bombs/Mist Programme: Sally's mind goes foggy, and she cannot see the truth or reality of the situation.
13. *Confusion Programme*: Sally is spatially disorientated or mentally confused, and does not know what or whom to believe.
14. *Will Fail Programme*: She thinks she is stupid; cannot do anything right; believes that eventually something will go wrong and she will fail.
15. *Drugged Programme*: She has the sensation of being drugged or poisoned, and is unable to focus, groggy, slow to act, and weak, just wanting to sleep.
16. *Garbled Programme*: Voices sound garbled so that Sally cannot comprehend what is being said.
17. *Robot Programme*: This makes her “Just do it; don't think”.
18. *Crazy Land Programme*: She gets lost in the maze at the back of her mind, or driven crazy via a high-pitched sound in the head, or feels electricity or a scared feeling of “losing it’”.
19. *Voice-Over Programme*: When a person (a therapist, friend, or person in authority) talks, Sally hears one of the abusers' voices instead.

CHAPTER SEVEN

Internal hierarchies

I begin this chapter with another survivor's story, which illustrates important mistakes made by her first therapist (and, therefore, by her) in her journey towards recovery. (The names of the therapists have been changed.)

LisaBri: "Mistakes my therapist made"

In childhood, severely abused emotionally, physically, and sexually, I refused to die. My perpetrators, including my own mother and father, did not mildly abuse; they subjected me to the horrors of incest and satanic ritual abuse on a continual basis.

I was fearful of the slightest noise at night—beds creaking, house settling, pipes banging or a door opening left me cowering in the corner of my bedroom. I knew they would be back to twist and warp my mind for their sadistic purposes. They always knew where to draw the thin line between death and sanity. I always waited in fear, with my heart pounding through my chest and cold, sweaty, and clammy hands.

At the age of twenty-five, I ran across the continent. I arrived battered and worse for wear, ready to do anything, especially continue to drink, to curb the intense feelings I was experiencing. When I looked for help, I was diagnosed with everything from schizophrenia to premenstrual syndrome. I was told to get a hobby and to not drink in the evenings. One psychiatrist pulled a packet full of white pills from his desk drawer every time I showed any kind of emotion. Every doctor and psychiatrist I saw wanted me to stuff the feelings away. But where could they go? The more I "stuffed", the worse I became. For five years, I was hospitalised two weeks of every four, until I landed in a locked ward of a psychiatric hospital when I hit bottom. Soon afterwards, I was diagnosed with a dissociative disorder (having inside parts) and I finally sobered up, threw away the drugs and alcohol, and looked for a therapist to talk to.

Three thousand miles from home, in hiding, I approached my first therapy appointment. I was about to break one of the cardinal rules of the cult—you do not disclose to outsiders. Body shaking, icy, freezing hands and feet, knees feeling like they would buckle with every step, I reached "Linda's" home office—scared but alive. She would guide me through the next five years. I left my car on the road and thought of a hundred reasons why I should not continue and each was just as feeble as the last. During that two-minute walk, I convinced myself I had not escaped and behind that door lay my abusers ready to punish me for my indiscretion. As I stood at the door, ringing the bell, hearing the sudden bark of dogs and what sounded like a thousand troops pounding down the stairs ready for battle, it took all my inner reserves not to take flight as the internal pull to run or stay clashed in my brain.

With Linda's help, I discovered that I had been ritually abused. I soon learned to substitute the process of stuffing feelings away with stuffing away "bad" inside parts. This was what my left side (cult) parts were labelled—evil. They needed to be dealt with harshly, I was told. They were "sabotaging" therapy by creating chaos in the system, preventing any healing. Today, we bear the scars caused by these early misinterpreted inner parts, who were just doing the jobs assigned to them by our abusers.

When we discovered an inside part whose main function was to hold pain arising from both the present day and past traumatic memories, Linda felt it only right for her to be banished and isolated from the rest of the system. Miss Pain was sent away to an internal imaginary beach, alone with all her pain. She had no one to talk to, cry with or hold.

In order to make our right side more strongly defended against the left side, Linda attempted a forced integration between the front person, Lisa, and the strongest defender of our system, Brian (Bri), by creating a hypnotic integration ceremony which took place in an imaginary forest. It appeared to work, and Linda was ecstatic, but it was too confusing inside. I tried to talk, but I couldn't find the proper words. Julie, a five-year-old part from abuse by my father, had appeared just as we joined. At that moment, we were a threefold being who had no idea how to live in this singleton world. I tried to convey that there was a complication, but Linda didn't listen. We finally made it out to the car and stalled it all the way home as we couldn't operate the gearstick. It felt as if our core strength, Bri, who had been the basis of our survival for so long, almost crumbled because of a botched attempt by an outsider to gain control of our personality system. After three days of not being able to function and carry out simple tasks such as unlocking a door or preparing a meal, we broke apart, but not before deciding never to integrate again.

Those first few years with Linda were turbulent, with many valleys and hills. I would reach the crest of one only to fall down the other side. Linda did more than guide me; she broke her own ethical rule of conduct by laying no boundaries. She spent one-on-one time with me in her home. I would have lunch with her family. She spent her time off frequently having coffee at my house. I could call her twenty-four hours a day, seven days a week, and she bought me presents. Within four years, I had moved from the city to the small town that she resided in. I became part of Linda's other life away from therapy. Playing to my constant insecurities, Linda consistently told me, "I will never hurt or leave you," and I believed her.

Looking back upon it now, telling me this was as cruel as it was kind. With no set therapeutic boundaries I had no sense of myself. I was living Linda's life and I was bound for hurt or betrayal. Instead of helping me find independence and growth, I grew increasingly dependent on her and when the blow came, it hit the core of my being.

The telephone message I received in the midst of intensive memory work told me Linda had renewed her faith in God, and overnight had come to believe that only God could save me. She would no longer work with non-Christians. Scared, hurt, disbelieving, and having been so dependent on her, I could not comprehend life without her. Desperately not wanting to lose Linda, I ignored my own instincts and the daily growing knot of uncertainty in my stomach. I went to her now Christian counselling and to her church for a year, until the fear completely overwhelmed me. Coming from such a horrendous background had left me spiritually raped and unable to cope with any religious denomination. When I stopped going to her church, she never contacted me again. I finally had to accept that I had lost Linda in more than a therapeutic way.

I began work with a new psychiatrist who also set the goal of banishing the “bad” parts. He had the strongest right side parts gather all the left side parts, many times forcibly, put them into a rocket, and send them over the highest imaginary mountain into space. We did this routine with him once a week for over three years.

After shopping around for almost a year, I found “Christyne”, but with a different resolve. I chose her, not from an overwhelming sense of urgency and neediness, but from an educated place of having learnt a harsh lesson. I talked to Christyne on the phone prior to making an appointment and she said, “I can guide you, I can help you find yourself and what that means, but first we have to set boundaries.” I made an appointment.

I must have reached for the phone twenty times from that day to the date of my appointment to cancel. I didn't. I arrived at my appointment with Christyne, weak-kneed, with a parched mouth and throat, and feeling as if I could not string two words together.

Our first session scared the hell out of me. She said, “I will work with your right side; however, we need to do a lot of healing with the left side parts. This is going to be my starting focus.” She wanted to *work* with the left side, my inner cult parts. Was she crazy or what? After spending almost a decade with doctors and therapists doing all they could possibly do to get rid of those parts, this took me by complete surprise. But, that's what I needed. Finally, I could heal.

With boundaries set by Christyne, I embraced my inner world. I stopped letting others make decisions about my inside parts, no matter how honourable their intentions seemed to be. Labels were discarded. Each now had a say. No inside part was ever hidden or banished again. As a result, I broke free from my abusers and we have become a self-sufficient community with the capability to ask for outside help when needed. Every inside part is loved and respected for his or her unique contribution to our survival and healing. We strive to meet the needs of fulfilment, hunger and safety for all.

With a sense of pride, I used what I had learnt about boundaries and the therapeutic process to help others by creating a website for survivors. Christyne taught me to “listen inside.” All survivors could benefit from those two words.

* * *

LisaBri's experience with Linda reflects two important mistakes that are easy for survivors, as well as their therapists, to make. The first one is a lack of boundaries. The child parts of most survivors do not even know what boundaries are, since theirs were never respected. We shall look at boundaries in more depth in Chapter Eighteen. For some reason, perhaps the existence of child parts, many therapists do not maintain firm boundaries with survivors. They become over-involved, make promises they cannot keep, and then abandon the survivor when it becomes too much for them.

The second mistake is that many survivors and their therapists or helpers focus on helping one side of the personality system and battling with the other side. This is because the moment a survivor of mind control or ritual abuse begins to remember, and particularly to disclose, memories of that abuse, the insiders who are part of the internal security system go into action and do their jobs. It begins with warnings: “Don't talk.” “You can't trust her.” “You'll be killed if you talk.” If the survivor continues to talk to an outsider, the insiders with security jobs (assigned by the abuser group) begin to administer flashbacks or other kinds of punishments.

The enforcers—the key to unlocking the system

In his study of the features of DID, Colin Ross (1997) found that 84% of 236 DID patients said they had internal persecutor parts. As he describes them, "On first meeting they will be fearsome, loathsome, demon-like entities totally committed to the malicious harassment and abuse of the patient". These parts are aggressive exaggerations of the more common "inner critic" which almost everyone experiences. They tell you not to talk, they threaten consequences for disobedience, they alienate your friends, and they might harm or even attempt to kill the body.

In your inner world, these parts might look like demons, or they might look or sound like some of your actual abusers, so that your scared inner kids believe either that you have these abusers in you or that they abusers are somehow magically contacting you and speaking to you. The fact is, these parts are not actually demons or abusers, and usually they know it. But they are doing their jobs of impersonating them because of their fear of the consequences if they do not keep on doing those jobs.

When "Satan" or some similar part talks in a deep scary voice to you, it is easy to think this is a nasty perpetrator or a supernatural being; it is natural for you and/or your therapist to want to oppose it or fight with it or try to banish it. It is unwise, and damaging to you, to avoid dealing with the insiders who issue the warnings. To battle with them is even worse. These insiders have probably already been badly hurt by the abuser group, and have been told that anyone to whom you talk about the abuse will also hurt them and you. So fighting with those parts will only make them angry, which is not a good idea because they have the capacity to punish the front person and other insiders through using feelings, pictures, or scary sounds from horrible traumatic memories.

In my experience, front people and other insiders can be very afraid of these parts, leave them alone as much as possible, and do what they say, such as stopping talking about forbidden topics. Unfortunately, this is exactly what the real life abusers want; that is why they designed your personality system this way. Getting free of the abusers begins with communicating with the parts who are scaring you, coming to understand them, and forming an alliance with them. No matter what they might look like in your inner world, they are really just scared insiders, children and teenagers. It takes patience to communicate with parts who appear to be destructive, or who are overtly hostile, but it is what you must do. It is important to recognise that these insiders do their jobs in order to protect the system as a whole, and sometimes also to protect people you love who have been threatened. They persecute you in the service of protecting.

If you (the front person) are a polite person who does not swear or say things bluntly, you might not want to deal with parts whose words you consider rude, and whose manner reminds you of people you had to deal with in your childhood. But censoring them will get you nowhere. Ignore their manner and concentrate on learning why they are behaving that way. And if you have a good therapist, let them come out in therapy even if they are rude and crude. Therapists can take it (or, if they cannot, they are not the right therapists for you).

You might find that you need to talk with other inside protectors who believe the "persecutor" parts are "bad" and want to keep you from them. You need to explain to these ones that the persecutors are actually protectors like them, and are trying to keep everyone safe by doing their jobs: containing overwhelming memories, controlling rage, preventing abandonment, and avoiding external punishment by the abusers.

The persecutor/protector parts are actually lonely because they are internally isolated (because all the other parts are afraid of them), and they long to be accepted into the internal and external community, so just talking and listening to them make a great deal of difference.

When you are first talking with persecutor/protector parts, it is important to express appreciation for their strength and self-sufficiency. If you fight them or try to weaken them, they will demonstrate their strength by attacking. Do not mention their needs for comfort or help at first. This comes later. They think other parts are “wimpy”, and they can often tolerate large amounts of physical pain, but not very much emotional pain. They see the expression of vulnerable emotions as a sign of weakness. They simply do not feel emotional pain; it is diverted to other parts—though they might feel anger. In some personality systems, each “tough” part has its own “inner child” to hold the vulnerable feelings.

Some of these parts might be trained to cut your arms (or make another part do it) as a punishment, to flood your entire personality system with despair, to prevent a memory from being completely processed and put together, or to stop you from talking by making you mute and terrified. These abuser-trained parts are the key to stopping your symptoms (many of which they create by doing their jobs) and to unlocking your mind-controlled personality system.

So, you need to find out why the persecutor/protector parts do and say what they do and say. At least some of these parts will be doing jobs that they were required to do by their abusers as an alternative to death or serious bodily harm. They might not understand the effect of doing these jobs on the body or the rest of the personality system. Persecutor/protector parts believed the aggressors' verbally abusive statements and threats, so they believe they have to keep the system in line to prevent bad, or worse, things from happening. This is not always a false belief.

You can ask these insiders about the content of the threats they have been given. Disclosing the nature of the threat is less likely to stimulate harmful behaviour than disclosing the abuse memories. Ask them what they believe will happen if they do not do their jobs, or if the system disobeys the abusers. Then you can give them a reality check on whether or not those things can really happen in the present.

It is, of course, important to first ask inside whether there is any current contact with abusers, because, in that case, certain actions might be protective in a concrete and real way. Some survivors have contact and do not know it; in other cases, they may have had no contact, but the protective parts might believe they have. This will be discussed further in Chapter Nine.

You might have heard about soldiers from the Vietnam or Korean wars who are found in the jungle somewhere, believing the war is still continuing long after it is over. Many of your parts are like them, still living in the past, doing what they had to do when the abusers could hurt or kill you at any minute. If you reach out to them, and help them know the present situation, they might respond by changing their jobs to things which are helpful in the current situation.

The most effective approach with persecutor/protector parts is to engage them as your allies in healing. As with any insider, you need to become aware of their ages, and of how much they know or do not know about life in the present. Empathise with the dilemmas they have faced and agree with them that their protector roles have been very important for your safety. Then you can help them to protect in more effective ways for the present circumstances.

Voices and faces

If, in everyday life, you had a very angry, critical, and punishing mother, you might hear your mother's voice telling you not to do something, or reprimanding you harshly if you do something your mother never permitted you to do. This happens to people who are not mind-controlled. By influencing your behaviour, the voice who reminds you of what your mother would say is trying to protect you from very real abuse from your mother. In ordinary life, people know their punishing mother is dead or far away, but still respond as if she were alive and lived with them. However, if your mother was an abuser, the situation becomes more serious.

Some persecutor/protector parts might actually believe themselves to be your real-life abusers. There could be more than one internal copy, for example, of a parent. This happens spontaneously, and its tendency to happen is exploited by mind controllers. One survivor I know has a whole hierarchy of abusive mother parts inside her, and they are all actually children who are terrified of her mother, who tortured them to the point that they only wanted to die. They were told they look like the mother, and to the other insiders, they do indeed look like that mother, which is enough to frighten all the insiders into submission. The girl at the top of the "mother" hierarchy was given control over all the "home kids", and, of course, is in charge of making sure they do not disclose anything about the mother's abuse.

As I mentioned in Chapter Four, in ritually abusing and mind-controlling groups, the main abuser will rape a child while saying he is "putting himself inside her". A new part is split off through the pain, and the abuser says that he has created it, and it is him or his child. It has to act like him in the person's inner world, replaying his words to the other insiders to keep them in line, and administering the pain from his rape if they are disobedient. This kind of insider has usually been severely hurt, believes the abuser knows everything, and is terrified of the abuser. It takes patience, compassion, and persistence to help such parts learn that they are now safe and no longer have to "be" their abusers.

Christian survivors and therapists, take note: ritual abusers frequently give parts demonic names in order to make them and the other insiders believe they are demons or evil spirits. They even teach these parts how to behave like demons, growling and making frightening noises. But this does not mean that the parts are actual demons. They are child insiders who have been given those jobs. Some parts have been deceived into believing they are demons, devils, Satan, or animals. They are usually very young (around age three) and imitate "demons" or animals they were shown to frighten them. The way they are made was described in Chapter Five.

There is a school of thought among some Christian therapists that suggests that actual demons are "attached" to the insiders who go through this. That is not my experience with the survivors I have seen, even if as children they were coerced into "inviting" demons to enter them. Rather, what happened is that a new part split off in terror and was then told it was a demon. For example, my client Tony had a little three-year old "demon" named Trevor, who was supposed to be the spirit of his dead grandfather.

Those insiders who imitate cult leaders or mind-controlling doctors, or "devils", or "demons" are really no different from the internal "imitation mother". They are trying to protect you from those persons or creatures. You might be many years and many miles away from those abusers, but these insiders do not know it. Or you might still be in danger, so the protection of these insiders is still needed, though in a different form now if you are an adult and have the capacity to make your own life choices.

The internal hierarchy

In most mind-controlled personality systems, the parts are arranged hierarchically. The first parts you meet who threaten you or object to your pursuing recovery are likely to be low down in the hierarchy, obeying orders from above. Even if they push internal buttons or flick switches to administer punishments, they are not in charge of this; they are just following orders from those above them.

As you or your therapist, if you have one, begin to dialogue with the “lower-down” parts, the higher-ups will make their presence known, either by coming out and objecting to what is being said or by creating symptoms or by threatening voices in your head. *If you get a flashback or a sudden pain, that is your chance to ask to speak with whoever is causing it.*

Although I am a therapist, not a survivor, perhaps you can learn from what I do. When I meet a new mind-controlled client, if possible I begin working my way up the hierarchy almost immediately. Whenever a new part surfaces doing its job, I ask it about that job, update the part who appeared on the front person's current life, introduce it to other insiders, and encourage it to take part in present-day activities suitable for a child of its age, such as going to the beach, or making models, or colouring pictures, or playing sports. As each new part comes up to protect the secrets, I invite that part to work with the others towards healing the whole person from the abuse. I offer it an opportunity to have a new job, a purpose other than the one it was originally given. I let it know that the abusers did not “create” the parts, but simply split them through torture. I help the members of the hierarchy develop respect for the hurt parts who resisted doing the jobs and were discarded by the abusers.

In getting to know a hierarchical system, I frequently ask each part if someone else is threatening him or her or giving orders, and then ask to talk to the one who is doing this. When I meet an insider called Satan, for example, I do not assume he is the only Satan. He could just be Satan 1, and there might also be, for example, Satans 2 to 9, and Immortal Satan, or Big High Satan. If I am talking to Satan 1, and he begins to respond to my suggestions about changing his job, he will hear threats from someone who might be Satan 2, or might be someone different whose job is to keep him in line. So, then I talk to the one who is threatening him, and so on until I reach the top of that hierarchy. I shall illustrate this in the next chapter.

The higher-ups

The higher-ups in the hierarchy, who issue threats and punishments to those who disobey, and order other parts to punish those below them, are generally aware of whether you are making disclosures or disobeying the abusers' rules. They have to watch that you do not become disloyal and begin to tell—or even remember—things you are not supposed to talk about. However, although they are listening for disclosures, they are often not aware of what else is going on in your everyday life—for example, that you have not seen the abusers for twenty years, or that the abusers are dead.

Although these insiders have observed the “real” world, they have rarely been out in it, and have very limited experience of anything in life other than perpetrator group events and training. Their rewards have been sex, drugs, and power; they know nothing of love, or caring, or pets, or anything else positive in life. Other parts can share these positive experiences with them to help them see what they have been missing.

These parts' experience of human beings is only of abusers, who would switch into other states of being, and torture and punish. For a long time they might think your therapist (or your best friend) is one of the abusers testing their loyalty, since this kind of trick has been played on them. In most cases, they have been conditioned against therapists, and warned against people who try to find out the secrets and express caring or empathy for them. They will be very cautious—as they should be. There are some therapists with cult connections (see Chapter Nineteen).

The higher-ups were taught in your childhood to believe that the abusers always know what is going on with you, and that if they do not punish the other parts, the abusers will punish them. This is what I call the BIG LIE, and I shall discuss it in more detail in Chapter Nine. For now, I shall just say it is a lie, even though it might have been true when you were a child.

It is important to gradually help the higher-ups realise that they have been deceived by their trainers. Higher-ups may believe they have never been hurt. They do not realise how many other insiders were hurt badly in order to create them, and they often do not realise that they were split from those pain-holder parts. They need you both to listen to them and to give them information they do not have.

By gently exposing their false beliefs, as you work up the hierarchy and talk to parts that have increasing authority, you will gradually build trust and help these parts see what has really happened to them. *You can only succeed in healing from organised abuse if the inside parts in charge of the hierarchy at first allow you to proceed, and later actively co-operate with you.*

Higher-ups have strong loyalty programming, including training to die an honourable death rather than betray the group. It is very important to be aware of this programming. Reason with the higher ranked members, and be sure to respect the loyalty, bravery, and sense of honour involved in their misguided allegiance to a perpetrator group that deceived them about its purposes. If they change their allegiance, they can be excellent protectors in the present from outside perpetrators.

Each internal personality in a mind-controlled system both takes pride in the job he or she has been forced to do, and is terrified of punishment for failing in that job. For parts low in the hierarchy, the punishment comes from parts higher up (through, for example, body memories of severe pain). Parts higher up fear being punished by the actual adults who abused them, who might or might not be still involved in their lives. They believe these people will hunt them down, torture them, and possibly kill them if they disclose the abuse. They often believe that the abusers have supernatural powers with which to find them. In addition, hidden parts of the personality system who believe they are demons or ghosts or spirits or aliens have the jobs of frightening and threatening and punishing higher-ups to keep them obedient and make them believe the abusers can always find them and hurt them, sometimes even after the abusers are dead.

The higher-ups' loyalty training

Higher-up parts have received some of the most horrendous spiritual abuse, in that they have been forced to perpetrate against other people to make them identify with the abuser group and believe that no one else will want them. When a survivor is re-contacted by the abuser group, there are reminders of these awful trainings. Often the higher-ups are forced to perpetrate sexual abuse or torture or even (apparent) murder on another person, and then told they will always be part of the evil group and if they disobey the group will kill someone they love. They have to repeat their loyalty vows, or sign them in blood.

Insiders who have been through experiences as heinous as these might be very ashamed, and they generally believe they are evil. They will be afraid to disclose these experiences to a therapist—or to you. They are often afraid of their own memories, and afraid you will reject them if you know what they have done. You need to be ready to accept them, no matter what they have been forced to do. You will need to explain to them, in ways they can hear, the coercion which was involved in their past behaviour. You must be patient. These parts can come to understand that their (and your) guilt is what distinguishes you from people who really are evil. If you were truly evil, you would not be feeling this way. Evil people do not feel guilt for what they do. This is true of not only the front person, but also the parts who were forced to do evil things.

Rewards given to the higher-ups

The parts in charge of the personality system, who hold the power over the others, have also been given rewards. Rewards include pleasurable sex, pleasurable drugs, and getting to do the hurting instead of being hurt. Those who are chosen for internal high office may be offered money, good jobs in the outside life, good homes, and prestige in the non-cult world. If they are supposedly demonic, they might have been taken to a simulated hell, and given the choice of being tortured there or being in charge of the torture of other children. Since they believed they were going to hell for eternity anyway as a result of the crimes they had committed, they might have naturally chosen to be the ones doing the hurting rather than the ones receiving it.

You have to remember that these parts had been split off from other discarded parts (garbage kids) who refused to co-operate with the abusers. When the higher-ups confess their guilt to me, I ask how many different parts refused to do the heinous act before these ones finally agreed to do it. In many cases, the perpetrators would not actually kill the child even if he or she chose to be killed rather than do what was required. They would simply continue with the torture and threats until a part was split off who would do the required job.

You need to have compassion for those who had to do the things that no one else inside would do.

Backups

If you manage to gain the co-operation of the higher-ups, you can expect some trouble for a little while. All insiders with jobs, including those in charge of the system, have “backups”, parts who have received the same training and are supposed to take over the roles of any part who becomes disloyal. Do not be discouraged. This will be manageable. Backups are pretty easy to persuade to change sides, if the primary higher-ups have already decided to work for healing. Backups do not have much real life experience and are hollow compared to the parts they are backing up. Backups are often an earlier (younger) version of the part with the job—for example, Priestess 8 (aged ten) might be the backup for Priestess 9 (aged eleven).

Important principles

Delay memory work

As you pursue your healing process, it is wise to take your time about getting to the traumatic memories, and in particular about telling them to anyone, even your therapist. If disclosures are made prematurely, you can expect to have flashbacks and have insiders engage in self-harm and even suicide attempts; plus there is the risk that parts will report to the abusers that you are disclosing, and they will make moves to stop you. (I shall discuss this further in Chapter Nine.) Only after you have good co-operation from the leaders of the personality system can you begin your work with traumatic memories.

Get permission for any interventions

If you or your therapist are thinking of making any intervention, from self-soothing to more fancy hypnotic interventions, begin by saying that if anyone inside objects to this technique or intervention, they need to let us know and we will not do it unless we have their permission. If they deny permission, we can ask what they are concerned about, and if we cannot meet their concerns, we do not do the intervention. This approach is respectful and shows that we value their input and want to address their concerns.

Kindness and acceptance

When you talk with your higher-ups, their emotional response can quickly escalate to put you into a "booby trap" of suicidality or at least self-harm. Higher-ups (and other insiders too) have usually been led to believe they are evil, and have committed unforgiveable sins and crimes. Be careful, therefore, to accept these parts as they tell about their guilt and shame, even if they appear to be proud of what they did. It is important to emphasise that they were children when they did these things (if this is the case), or at least when they were trained to do these things, and they were deceived and victimised, and did not really have a choice. When they did choose, it was usually the "lesser of two evils", as the alternative that was threatened was worse. They deserve compassion rather than punishment.

Updating the insiders

The higher up a part is in the hierarchy, the less they are likely to know about the present world. The ones who enforce the orders of the perpetrators (primarily the "don't talk" rule) often have no idea what year it is, how old the body is, and how much things have changed since the abuse took place. It is very important to update them about these things. You can keep a calendar and a world map handy for this purpose, or know how to find them on your computer.

Helping higher-ups discover deceptions

Organised groups of abusers are very careful to isolate the higher-ups from the experiences of other insiders, in order to deceive them. One question you can ask the system while your higher-ups are listening is: are there any insiders who have to contact someone and report any rule-breaking? Before you ask this question, get your higher-ups to agree not to punish anyone inside who gives an honest answer. The answer is almost certain to be "yes". And the higher-ups did not know about it; they were not supposed to know.

Now that they are aware that they were deceived with this important lie, the higher-ups, who have thought themselves in control, will be more curious about what other deceptions might have occurred. You can ask them to access knowledge from the other "lesser" insiders. After a while, the system can be arranged so that newly emerging parts are instantly updated by insiders, and do not have to go through the painstaking process of learning from the front person.

Now I am writing for the internal leaders and enforcers: I hope I have described you adequately when I tried to help your front person understand what you are going through. It is up to you whether you take the risk of working for healing instead of continuing the protective job you have been doing until now. A job that was helpful in the past but might need to be changed to reflect the realities of the present.

If your personality system is to heal, you all need to become co-operative. This means that the persecutors, the front personalities, and other parts must negotiate your differences, resolve long-standing conflicts, and overcome past hurts, both real and imagined. This is often difficult, as other parts are terrified of the persecutors and will not go near them. It takes time to change this situation.

Ask what each part needs, and listen to one another. In encouraging internal communication, sometimes “deals” can be made—for example, a persecutor will not create flashbacks if the little ones do not talk about their abuse. Agreements are very helpful, as is homework, but make sure you dot every “i” and cross every “t” in an agreement, as young parts can be very concrete.

Exercise 8. Internal conversation

What would you (the everyday person) ask your higher-ups about? Write down some questions you might ask. (Be sure to ask, not interrogate or accuse).

What would you like your higher-ups to know about your present life? Write down a few important points.

What would the higher-ups like to ask the rest of the system about? Write down some questions you might ask, and try to use gentle language, even if you are not used to doing that. Before you ask, assure those who respond that you will not punish them for their answers (and, of course, keep your word).

CHAPTER EIGHT

Talking with the higher-ups

In Chapter Six, I introduced you to Sally and her insiders, including the kids and the higher-ups. I have spent a lot of time talking with her higher-ups, and I decided to do some of this discussion by email. She has given me permission to share some of what we have talked about, to help you understand what happens when the higher-ups face the real facts and compare those facts to what they were taught in childhood.

By email, I asked the questions to Sally's higher-ups. My aim was to encourage them to think for themselves rather than just parrot the abusers' words. Their abusers had said, “You don't need to think, for we think for you and for your safety and your power.” In fact, “Don't think, just do!” was frequently repeated when these parts were being trained. The abusers prevented logical reasoning as much as possible, because it might undermine the mind control programming. I find that asking higher-up insiders questions that get them to think and reason is very helpful for healing.

Now, when I asked these questions, Sally and all her insiders knew the questions were coming from me, an outsider and a therapist. But you do not need a therapist to ask questions to your own inside higher-ups. You can ask them yourself.

When you first try to talk with your own higher-ups, they might be angry and hostile to you, especially if you have ignored them and the child parts they control for a long time. You might need to apologise to them for this neglect. And when you ask them questions, be sure to ask with gentle curiosity, because they have probably been interrogated, and questions to which there is a “right answer”, or even a desired answer, can be terrifying to them. I hope that you can sound encouraging and optimistic, as I have been told that I sound that way when I ask this kind of question. I sound that way because I truly believe that there is a way out of mind control, and this is the way.

Besides asking questions to your own higher-ups, you can encourage them to ask you questions. Most insiders, including higher-ups, often lack information about the present-day world. They might believe things that are no longer true (such as that certain abusers are alive and nearby), and they might not know how the world has changed since they were last out in the body. They might also believe things the group told them which were never true.

Your higher-ups can ask questions to other insiders in your personality system. Members of abuser groups keep secrets from the higher-ups, and your higher-ups have a right to know what has been hidden from them. Nobody likes to be lied to, and I am sure that includes you and all your parts, especially the higher-ups. Mind control programming works through lies and tricks perpetrated on children by sophisticated adults. I know that some of your insiders do not want to believe that their "family" lied to them, but if this is the case, they deserve to know it.

Through respectful inner dialogue, you can help the higher-ups discover the lies and the tricks used by the abusers. This will undermine and eventually dissolve the programming.

Below you will see my questions or statements I emailed to Sally (in normal type), and her insiders' comments on the internal effect of each such question (indented and in smaller type). Several of the questions come from what her higher-ups said they were taught, which I quoted for you in Chapter Six. You may notice that her responses to any given question or statement sometimes come from several different insiders. My comments to you as the reader will be in the normal type size with italic formatting.

I need to warn you at this point that the dialogue in this chapter can be triggering. When Sally reread the dialogue for the purpose of this book, new parts of her emerged who were not aware that she was currently safe and would not be punished for having said these things. Fortunately, she had healed enough that her system head (whose words you will read later in this chapter) was able to speak with each part who reacted and tell them about her current situation and why he had chosen to take part in this dialogue and allow it to be in this book. He was also able to tell them to turn off any programmes that were triggered. If you are reading this, I suggest that your system head might want to read it first, and then decide whether other parts of you can read it.

Note that the perpetrator group who abused Sally and trained her insiders seems to have included people who identified themselves to her as SS (the secret police of the Nazis), KKK (Ku Klux Klan, including white knights), GIs (US army), and Luciferians (occult religion), and they all told her they were her Family.

Questioning the perpetrator group's ownership of the person

The group told you that you were theirs, you were property, to be owned only by them and for their use and no other. Did you know that slavery, that is, owning another human being, has been abolished and is illegal in all civilised countries? People are never to be property. Your group might have used people as slaves, but they would be in big trouble if outsiders found out.

A protective reaction

> Your question sets off an Alert alarm: "Alert, alert, someone is trying to penetrate our system." Those who were hurt are made to think of a penis penetrating us because the people in the group did this a lot to us, and when it happens it makes the body become alert, as if it's under attack and needs to get into survival mode.
>
> The lower ranking soldiers in the inside control room sense fear within the system and a switch is turned on, to let us know that we are being interrogated by the enemy just like the SS, KKK, GI, and Luciferian commanders and elders said would happen. "They were right; we must protect our Family at all costs" is the message we get throughout our system. You are the enemy. We are programmed to see you as nothing, less than, a thing to be destroyed. We must show you who is in control here, that we are loyal to our Family (that is, the group). Our note takers get ready to record your questions and our answers too, in case they have to report back to the Family. We were also taught to lie if we were interrogated so we don't give up the group's secrets. The soldiers in the control room will continue to monitor what is happening, waiting for the higher-ups to signal them to turn on or off switches, programmes, pain, to induce the body to become catatonic, just stare and not answer, show no emotion, or be hard and stoic, so that our system stays secure and no secrets leak out.
>
> The soldier mode has been triggered. Consequently, Sergeant Major comes forward to speak. We wouldn't tell you or show you how scared we are because we have to give the appearance of being tough and impenetrable. We try to sense whether you are intimidated, scared, angry, unstable, or defensive. If you are, that is good, it shows that we are in control and so we can weaken

and destroy you, psychologically and emotionally.

“Nein, nein” says a little German insider; “Don't answer, we'll get in trouble, we don't want to get hurt, please don't tell her.” “It's okay,” says another insider who knows you are trying to help us. “No it's not,” says the little German insider, “someone, a higher up, will hurt me if we say anything.”

Now a higher-up speaks.

It is me whose job is to hurt him, you don't know me. If I was hurting him in your office, this is when you could say “Whoever is hurting this little one, could you please stop or turn off the programme. This is a safe place, remember our rules, no one hurts anyone in this room, that includes me. Please come and talk to me, the one who is hurting the little one, I would love to speak with you.”

If we were sitting in your office, you might see our body showing signs of sadness, punching our hand with our fist, clenching our fist, moving our face away from you in shame, or holding our head as we experience intense feelings. Or if we are feeling confused, the blue pile will start to come forward and show you via a body memory that some of us weren't protected.

Or another higher-up (a white knight, an immortal Luciferian, or a soldier who is trained to kill) may come forward and say “You do not question the group, it is forbidden. It is a privilege and an honour to be part of the group; they do what they must to ensure that the group's mission succeeds, that the Aryan race dominates this world, for they are the superior race.” The higher-up would show no emotion; his eyes would try to penetrate through you and his posture would be upright, to show how strong and indestructible he is.

Note: Since it is you who are asking the questions to your own insiders, perhaps there will not be such alarm at being questioned. But often insiders cannot tell the difference between inside and outside people. And often higher-ups are trained to reveal nothing to the front parts who are supposed to live in the ordinary outside world.

You may notice that pain was mentioned as one way the higher-ups might communicate. If you get a sudden pain, speak internally and say something like “Please use your words to tell us what the pain message means. We would like to honour your message but if it is just pain, we do not understand what you want to have happen. Please use your words, and if anyone is in charge of you and using your words would get you in trouble, please let me ask whoever is in charge to let us know what message is being sent by sending pain.”

An inner response to the question

Because you talked about slavery being illegal, connections will be made with the part (Sally) that is usually out in the body and is engaging with the outside world. Her interaction with the real world will at some point help us to be informed about what is legal or not legal in the country where we live now, and about the history of slavery, and so the part speaking with you will begin to know from within that you are speaking the truth. Our Old Lady, Sally, just watched a movie called *Amazing Grace* about the abolishment of slavery. We are seeing the chains and children being burned on ships that were used in the slave trade.

How can people be free when they have to obey someone else, and when they are someone else's property?

The higher-ups are saying “She is asking us to do the forbidden, to think, we can't think, we must be loyal to our Family. The Family tells us we don't know what “free” means. We just accept what they say because they were the adults, plus they have control over what we do, say, and think, so if they say we're free then we're free. Understand? All we know is what they teach us and let us do. We are free because we are allowed to live, we aren't killed like the others, and all soldiers or KKK or Luciferians and Freemasons who belong to our family are living in a place of privilege.”

Note: In the next paragraph, a different insider is now responding to the question. With most questions, the first response comes from a higher-up who is trying to be loyal to the group, and the next response comes from an insider who has been thinking and learning that they can become *free.*

We didn't know what freedom meant until now. Now we are learning that it means not being programmed or living in fear, having fun and not having to worry that the bad people are going to get us, not being trapped in the memories, eating foods we like and not getting into trouble or hurt for it. We now know we are not property. Some of us still don't know but we'll help them know, we'll update them.

Questioning the military obedience training

The group told you that they were your fathers, mothers, military trainers, and family. They may have trained you as soldiers, but it is illegal to make children soldiers. It is also illegal and wrong for parents to abuse their children. If the authorities find out adults are doing this, they arrest the adults.

A higher SS is saying this inside as we're writing this answer. “Stop saying ‘abuse.’ We weren't abused, we were trained to be soldiers. There are soldiers in many countries fighting for what's right. All military operations involve intense training, and that is what we went through. We were selected to accomplish a secret mission so that the Aryan race will dominate this world—the superior, right race. Hitler would be proud of us—he is our leader, the father of all nations, to him we owe our lives. He said that we would face many people like you who will mess with our heads to make us give up our mission. I don't have any parents, I was trained by the SS, they do not abuse, they train us to be tough soldiers. Haven't you heard of tough love? There is no place for love in the military, only discipline, obeying orders and accomplishing the SS mission.”

But I am hearing from others inside that we no longer belong to the group, that the body left the group a long time ago and is living far away now, that it's 2012, a long long time since I was with the SS; I'm twelve. I am being shown what it's like for children living in Africa being trained as soldiers—their parents, children, women and men of opposing tribes being slaughtered in the name of another tribe's beliefs—that this is wrong. So what I was trained to do was abuse? I am a child, not a soldier or tool for the Nazis? I am not nothing, but I have a right like all kids and people to live free without harm, and to be encouraged not to hurt others but to respect all people the same? This is too much information, I can't compute it all.

Does obedience actually make you stronger, or does it just allow people to use you for things you don't really want to do?

This is what the twelve-year-old SS was told: “Yes, obedience makes you stronger. You do what you're told to do and do it well, or else. Obedience produces respect, shows character, and makes you tough and able to take pain. It shows loyalty and respect for your elders and the father of all nations, Hitler. It is not your job to think, we think for you because we know what's best for you and have your best interests in mind. You were selected to fulfil a sacred mission that will make this world a better place to live, free of weak and useless degenerates. It will set an order that is unrefutable and indestructibly productive, and one that will be economically sound.”

This is what they told us and I believed them and now you are asking me to do the forbidden, to think for myself and question my kommandants and the father of all nations. This is not allowed. Whatever they do is for my best interest, and so that our mission can be achieved without error.

So, I guess if I stop and turn off the soldier mode and allow the others to speak and share what they know: you are helping to free our minds so that we can question for ourselves if what we learned and were trained to do by our commandants is right, lawful or humane, and I guess it isn't. I never thought of it that way, never thought about it until now.

Did you like having to kill people and animals for them? Did you have a choice about it?

I am getting mad and scared and sick. No, I didn't like killing but I didn't have a choice about it. You weren't allowed to think for yourself, you just had to do it. If you do think and hesitate in killing then you could get killed or tortured, or they kill someone you know or hurt or rape someone like your sister. And the victim would get killed anyway because they're in control of everything, they have the ultimate power, not us. Our essence and some of the little ones didn't want to kill and neither did I, but they would take our hand and make us do it. Now there is conflict because you are making me think—yes, they were using me for things that I, or more correctly, the ones below me who took the pain, didn't want to do. I didn't have a say in what I wanted to do or not do. I just did it.

Do you have insiders who refused to obey? What happened to them? Were they as strong as you?

Yes. I am finding out that there are more of us, more than I knew existed. I was in charge of killing and giving orders to kill and induce pain to lower ranking soldiers, but I wasn't aware that we all live in the same body. That's weird. I see myself as one person and not attached to anyone, but a commander of lower ranking soldiers. I see these soldiers like a film that I watched and heard. Everyone has their job to do and must never step or do things out of line or without an order. I see the lower ones as a platoon, not as other insiders who are all part of this body.

Yes, those in the blue pile *[called that because they are black and blue with bruises]* disobeyed. They were tortured and raped…and so, perhaps they are stronger than me because they didn't kill or try to hurt other kids, babies, animals and adults.

This is stirring up something inside of me, a feeling of sadness and shame and pain like an aching heart and soul. I do not deserve to live, I must die, I have disgraced my family by talking to you, sharing their secret information, and disgraced myself and hurt and killed others.

Others are telling me "No, nein, it wasn't your fault, you're just a kid like us, it was the bad people who made you and others of us kill and do bad things to people and animals. If you were given a choice and not created as a robot to not feel or show emotion, what do you think you would do?" I don't know…I don't think I would kill or want to kill. I'm getting confused, I'm not used to thinking and it's hard to do. No, I wouldn't kill, unless someone is trying to kill me and I have to defend myself, I might. But to just kill someone, no, I wouldn't.

These questions make us really think, and they get some of the insiders mad, which is good, because they start to respect the ones who got hurt, and know that these ones are really the strong ones. They are actually starting to feel sorry for those of us who got hurt, because they now know what we went through before they were made. It makes them start to feel and really know the truth, the extent of what was done to us to try and make us like them—and that we are not like them, we were controlled for their sick purposes, but now we can become much stronger and healthier when we start respecting each other and working together as a team or an inside family.

Questioning the perpetrator group's teachings

The group told you that you didn't need to think, because they thought for you to keep you safe and make you powerful. How do you know those people told you the truth when they said that?

Why would they lie? You don't expect adults to lie, especially those in uniform. I wasn't allowed to question what they said to me. You're just supposed to listen, obey and that's it—simple—"Do what you're told, don't talk to anyone outside the Family, or anyone inside the Family unless we tell you to. You are here because we chose you, you have no rights here, you are nothing. We are making your life worth something special, it is a privilege to be a member of this family, you owe your life to us and will help us fulfil our mission to perpetuate the Aryan race at all costs. Do you understand?" "Yawohl, Kommandant" is what I said because that's what is expected of you. All day and night you watch movies of Hitler being saluted, hearing a crowd of people yell with honour for him, for all that he is doing for Germany and the rest of the world. All you know is what is being told to you or engrained in your head with electricity, or being yelled at you like a commander yells at his soldier to make the soldier feel like he's part of a special unit, a strong unwavering unit prepared to die for his Fuhrer.

The group told you that they worked for Hitler and for the Aryan race, who had the truth. Did you know that Hitler is dead, and the Nazis lost the war? Did you know that Hitler killed himself? Your trainers would call that a coward's death.

Note: This provoked an internal argument, and several insiders took part.

You're making some of our higher-ups mad. He's not dead, I just saw him. He has black hair, a moustache, brown eyes, and wears a SS military uniform. Other twelve-year-olds and younger parts were raped by him too—that was to keep us afraid and make us know that he was our real father whom we had to obey and trust and follow and be loyal to. And he made little Hitlers inside to carry on his seed so that he would never die and always have power over us and the world.

No, he's dead, he died before you were born. He did kill himself too, he drank poison so that the traitor Nazis and English wouldn't catch him because Germany was losing the war. You can check this on the Internet, and you will see that he is dead. You saw either a picture of him, a film of him, or a man dressed up like him.

What? I saw Hitler himself, but if the real Hitler is dead, he must have been someone else dressed up as Hitler. I am being told that Mr Jones, a neighbour, was dressed up like Hitler. And I saw films of Hitler and admired his power and tried to be as tough as him, so that he would be proud of me.

Hey, don't say “coward's death”. Hitler is not a coward, you are, you are a woman, inferior, the enemy.

No, she's not, she is a really good person and really brave too, she's not afraid of the people who trained us like all of us and you.

Hey, watch what you are saying to me, I am a higher ranking officer, a commandant, you have no right to talk to me that way, I can send orders to have you punished.

No you can't. You have lost your power over us, and the group has no power over you any more because the body grew up, it's 2012 now. The Germans lost the war in 1945 to Britain and the US.

Arrrrrg, this makes me angry!

How did he make the little Hitlers? How old are they? Do they believe they are actually Hitlers? Do they like having that name?

Note: Several insiders responded to this, and argued about it.

He made us with his thing (penis). It was a special ceremony. We are being told that our body when it was a girl was on a table, and Hitler put his thing in her, and it made us. Yes, we are Hitler but not the real Hitler, he's our father, we're his kids. He wanted to make sure that the world had lots of Hitlers in it so that no one could ever stop him from ruling Germany and the world.

He wanted to make sure that only the people who he picks out will live in the world because they're the best, and the other stupid people aren't really people, they're degenerates, and don't deserve to live, they have to be exterminated.

We're supposed to be Hitler, that's the best name anyone can have. It means you're special and that people have to respect you or else. It means power and privilege so we think we will keep our names.

I don't want it…me either…me too, I want another name, like Shawn or Philip.

I am the Hitler in charge of this whole system. When I first found out that I wasn't Hitler, it made me mad and confused because I had been told and shown how powerful Hitler was and how much everyone admired him and how tough he was, that he was like God himself and the father of all nations. But then after listening to the other insiders and checking for myself on the Internet I began to see what type of a man and coward he really was and that he is dead. I thought that I was given this name to recognise how much like the real Hitler I was, and I was honoured to have his name and felt as powerful and admired as him by the lower ranks in my system. We would never tell you this thought. It took a while before I was happy to not be him.

Dialogue about safety, protection and freedom

The group told you that they were your family, not the parents. Were your biological parents part of the perpetrator group?

Some of us are really angry, because we know that our parents were part of the group. We keep getting flashbacks of seeing what our mother and father did to us, or did as part of the group, when the body was at different ages, and it is disturbing, makes us angry and sad. We know they never stopped it and we are afraid of them too, because you can't trust them, they are two different people or more. They act like good parents in public, and you never know who is going to be upset or what they will do when the body is at home with them, and then they act different again when they are part of the group. And your question is making us think of all these things, and have emotions, and some of us start to feel sick.

If your parents were part of the group, did they give you to the group?

“So what if they did?” says the sergeant major inside. “The group is our Family and the body's parents are not high up in the ranks, and so, they are only in charge of the body when it is not around the group (when it is at home, being raised as a regular kid).” Some of the higher-ups feel proud because it was the leaders of the group who assigned us to be one of their Family members and it is an honour and a privilege to be part of the group; it shows us we are superior and special.

The little ones in our system are sad, and the beasties are angry and enraged, because we really didn't like being with the Family.

> Those people really scared us and hurt us, but we little ones can't tell you that because we're not allowed to talk right now. And our little ones miss having a mum and dad that would save us and treat us well. The little ones are really mad because the parents made them go with the other Family. The blue pile (the bruised and discarded ones) are especially feeling sad and angry and betrayed by their parents and the group.

The group told you that they would always protect you if you obeyed them and were loyal. Did they really protect you? All of you? All the loyal ones?

> Hey, you can't ask us that. You're questioning the group's integrity. No one is allowed to ask questions about the group itself. This question is really disturbing because the blue pile, the babies, and those who were sexually abused know they weren't protected, and are sharing their memories with Sergeant Major and the other higher-ups. This makes some of the higher-ups mad because they either didn't know about this or they have to be loyal to the group no matter what.
>
> Some of the other insiders are getting flashbacks and memories and strong emotions, and faint thoughts of wanting to cut or worse, because they know they weren't protected, they were hurt and tortured, and were part of the killing. We are getting pictures of the group's leaders and priests and the commander of the soldiers, all showing us or reminding us to stay loyal and not talk, don't speak. We remember the group leaders saying “We always protected you, we are protecting you now.” Some of the higher-ups are mimicking the group leaders' words and saying to us “It is you who is betraying us through the little ones who are speaking.”

Were you really safe when you were with these people?

> No, I guess not, especially when I hear about what happened to those in the blue pile. They weren't safe. And if I think hard, I know that I was really living in fear, scared to get hurt or see someone else get hurt or having to hurt or kill another person. No one was safe with them, you never knew what was going to happen next or who was going to get hurt or worse.

Did you know that there are lots of people in the world who don't have those things done to them, who don't get tortured or raped? Only some people do such things to kids.

> This stirs up emotions in us and makes us sad. That's all we knew. It was normal, it was life, we thought it happened everywhere. I know now that we live far away from the group members and that it's 2012 now. The others are telling me. Some of the ones who spoke today thought it was 1975 or 1967, but they are being updated too.
>
> These questions are like swords penetrating our hearts and souls, going straight to the heart of the deception, and shining the true healing good light in the place that we call the tormentuous hell where we are eternally damned. We say this to show you how powerful your words are. They begin to speak to our essence and bring it closer to the front. Our essence is the part of us that knows the real truth, what is morally right and wrong, even if we can't articulate what is happening for us. Your words begin to shake the foundation of beliefs that we were told and made to accept as truth, and rock what we thought was hopeless to break down.
>
> The more questions you ask and the more we have to think, and/or the insiders start sharing information with one another, the more our head will start to hurt. We also begin to sense from a core part of us that what you are saying is true, and we know that you are asking us questions to help us, that you are being kind to us, and this is also confusing for us, especially the higher-ups, because we aren't used to people being kind or wanting to help us. We are used to being told what to do and when, from people who have no emotions or souls.

Effects of the dialogue

From Sally's insiders' responses, we can see that my questions and statements had the following effects:

1. Alerting the security system to turn on programmes.
2. Helping the insiders, including the higher-ups, begin to think for themselves and wonder about the answers to my questions and whether my statements are true.

3. Shaking the foundation of the beliefs indoctrinated into them.
4. Exposing the ways in which they were deceived.
5. Giving the insiders the opportunity to talk on an equal basis with someone who is kind and curious, as opposed to their abusers who gave orders and were cruel.
6. Reducing dissociation and ending the internal secrets by encouraging insiders to obtain information from one another and from the front personality.
7. Making the unemotional higher-ups aware of the emotional and physical pain which created them, which is still held in the discarded and lower-down insiders.
8. Making the loyal higher-ups begin to feel, or at least be aware of, the unmet needs, sadness and loss, and constant fear and anxiety experienced by other insiders.
9. Getting the head of the system (in this case, Hitler) to engage and begin to think.
10. Making memories of hurt insiders accessible to unhurt obedient ones who believed what they were told.
11. Helping insiders stuck in the past become aware of present-day reality and giving hope for freedom and recovery in the present and future.
12. Gradually dissolving the programming.
13. Connecting parts of the person to her own spiritual essence, and helping her regain control over her own life.

Sally told me that when the questions were written, more higher-up insiders responded to them than when such questions had been asked in person. As a result, there was more effective internal dialogue and updating.

If you have the time, you might try writing questions to your insiders.

What questions would you like to ask them? (See Exercise 8 in Chapter Seven.)

Keeping safe from the perpetrator group

How safe is it for you to work on your recovery? To put together your memories? To disclose them to a therapist or to friends?

Many survivors have ongoing contact with their abuser groups in one way or another. This occurs whether they are in therapy or not, and results in ongoing access and survivors' involvement in continuing activities throughout their lives, especially if they are living in the same vicinity where they grew up. However, this contact might not be consciously known by the survivor's front person.

Here is what is most important for you to know: it is not the group's magical powers, or omnipotence, or sophisticated technology that allows the group this ongoing control. If this is happening to you, it is likely that certain ones of your own insiders are contacting the group members and enabling the group to continue to access you. They report not only any physical relocation, but also whether you are in treatment, with whom, and what you are disclosing there, as well as (sometimes) any work you may be doing on your own towards healing. This is what allows the abuser group to take actions that trigger parts to behave in ways that sabotage your recovery.

Current contact

In general, the further a survivor is from where his or her childhood abuse occurred, the more likely it is that the abuse has stopped. But in some cases it continues via a different group, or a different branch of the original abuser group.

When a survivor begins addressing his or her mind control history, an insider (in that survivor) is likely to contact a designated person in the abusing group, who will then call out a reporting part for a recitation of all the survivor's behaviours.

Once a group discovers a current or previously abused person is telling secrets to outsiders, or is even beginning to remember what happened to him or her, various threatening things happen. If the survivor who has become a security risk is far away, the group will make certain long distance attempts to trigger parts into shutting down the leak. This will result in some disturbing symptoms, as internal punisher parts do their jobs. In some cases the person will be ordered to return home for further retraining. If the survivor is of particular importance to the perpetrating group, either because he or she was high up in the group's hierarchy or because he or she has knowledge of some important crimes, the abusing group might ask or pay another group in the survivor's area to harass the survivor.

However, if the survivor is far from the location where the abuse occurred, and the original perpetrator group does not have a branch there, harassment could be limited to phone calls, letters, emails, and cards which attempt to trigger parts into doing their jobs. If the perpetrators do not know the survivor's address or phone number, even this will not happen. (You can get an email address that does not have your name in it, and possibly a mobile phone that cannot be traced if you pay cash each month or put it in someone else's name.)

If a survivor still lives near the original abuser group, it might continue to pursue its goal of interfering with or destroying therapy and healing, by extreme tactics if necessary. When the group members contact the survivor, they will trigger parts into returning to them and into obeying their rules of silence and loyalty. When the survivor returns, the training experiences of his or her childhood will be repeated. He or she will again be tortured and forced to perpetrate against others. The therapist might be impersonated, and this “therapist clone” will abuse the survivor, and the survivor might be forced to abuse the supposed therapist.

Members of local groups will hang around the locales where the survivor spends his or her time and use signals to get young parts to come to them so that they can take the survivor for retraining. They will ask a cult-loyal insider to bring them a house key so they can make copies. If the survivor ignores the signals and does not come to the group, they will lie in wait and abduct him or her. If the survivor finds ways to prevent this, the perpetrator group will resort to more extreme measures, such as breaking into his or her home and lying in wait there, in order to torture and/or abduct the survivor.

Just as there is an escalation of these tactics, there is a gradual escalation of punishments for survivors who disobey, and in particular if they spill secrets to outsiders. For two of my clients, the original perpetrators travelled all the way across the continent to attempt reprogramming. If a survivor has become unmanageable and core secrets have been breached, true suicide training (as opposed to attempts designed to land the survivor in the hospital) could be triggered. If the survivor does not commit suicide, some groups might engage in murder attempts disguised as suicide or accidents. They broke into one survivor's apartment, found all the pills she had on hand, and stuffed them down her throat. Fortunately, she did not have a great deal of medication, and she did not die. Organised criminal groups protect their secrets at all costs.

How to identify whether you have current involvement

It might take time to find out whether or not you have any ongoing contact with dangerous people. In the worst-case scenario, you will find you have parts who are fully involved in a perpetrator group, attending rituals, participating in the training of other members, and carrying out other crimes.

There are, however, many survivors who have not had contact with their perpetrator groups for many years and appear to have been completely dropped by them. Errors in programming, a rebellious nature, or difficulty in keeping information nicely segregated in hidden pockets of memory or internal parts render many survivors useless to their programmers. After measures have been taken to “cap” their memories, “close them down”, and encourage them to self-destruct through addictions and suicide attempts, they are turned loose to fend for themselves.

However, you do not need to be in constant contact with the group in order for them to establish contact under certain circumstances. When survivors begin to remember their abuse and seek out therapy, or work privately on their own recovery, the rule of secrecy still prevails. A survivor who has not had any contact with the group for many years might end up reporting to them and reactivating harassment by them without consciously knowing this is happening.

Other survivors move far away from their abusers to a location where the perpetrator group does not function. Sometimes the group itself has disbanded, or its original purpose (such as the Cold War between Russia and the USA, for some military/political groups) no longer exists (though often the actions of the abusers continue, with different rationales).

Even if there is minimal group involvement, survivors usually maintain contact with their families of origin. In most cases, family members, or generations of the person's entire family, were involved with the group when the survivor was a child. It is difficult to know whether you are reporting to family members about your therapy or healing work because you could be reporting in a dissociated identity state and have no memory of doing so. At the same time, you need to understand that failure to maintain contact with the family could arouse suspicion, and aside from the fact that you, and many of your parts, might genuinely care about your family members, it is probably best not to deviate from your usual contact patterns, unless you have some other urgent reason such as preventing the abuse of your own children, or being forced to abuse other people's children at cult events.

Indicators of recent or ongoing perpetrator contact, harassment, triggering and/or abuse

Early therapists working with ritual abuse survivors listed indicators that signified to a therapist that recent or current contact was occurring. This led to an inaccurate understanding of how things work, because, unfortunately, some of the indicators simply meant that programming was triggered and inside parts were doing their jobs. There is a vast difference between:

- internal punishment for disclosures by insiders doing their jobs (this is not “current contact”);
- having family members or other cult members deliberately trigger programming;
- having parts who continue to contact (and possibly report on your recovery process to) family members whom you have been avoiding in your conscious life;
- being harassed by perpetrator group members and punished by them for disobedience;
- having insiders who continue to participate actively in perpetrator group activities.

If you “lose time”, and do not know what has happened during the lost time, you might want to look for clues to indicate whether there has been some kind of current contact with the perpetrators, or whether it is just activity by insiders, such as a child part coming out to play, or a sad part sitting and crying, or a teenager enjoying driving the car. You can ask your insiders for an explanation. Be sure to reassure them that they will not be punished for whatever they did when you were not conscious of it, as it is common that they were punished severely early in life. If they give you a harmless explanation, you can perhaps arrange for times when they can come “out” into the body and do the things they want to do. If they do not give you an explanation, it might be because they fear punishment, or because they are doing something they do not want you to know about. That something may or may not be current perpetrator contact. And, of course, some survivors cannot hear their parts talk to them. If that is the case, you can write to them or think to them to draw what happened.

Arauna Morgan lists some signs of current contact in her article on Ellen Lacter's website: http://endritualabuse.org/healing/breaking-the-chains/. Some of the items in the checklist below come from that article.

Exercise 9. Tracing current contact

Do you have significant periods of amnesia, without reasonable explanations from your insiders about what may have gone on during those periods?

Do these periods of amnesia occur around cult holiday times (including your and family members' birthdays, Christian and pagan holidays)?

Do you find evidence that you have gone out at night without remembering it? Do not be too confident that an alarm system can protect you, as insiders or cult members might know how to disarm it.

Have you developed a fear of locking or closing your windows or doors?

Have you found yourself compelled to answer the telephone and then not remembered the conversation?

Have you received peculiar phone calls, particularly where the same thing is said over and over at each call, or calls that consistently hang up after a set number of rings?

Have you been approached by people in the street who say peculiar things, often with Satanic themes?

Have you found your car or home broken into and minor vandalism conducted, or objects put in a place other than where you left them? (If so, check with your insiders to see whether any of them did this as part of their job, to make you think perpetrators are around when they are not.)

Have you become afraid of your therapist or of the therapist's office?

Have you found bruises, pin-pricks, blisters, other pains or marks on your body, especially after lost time and with no plausible other explanation?

Have you suddenly become ill, with no clear explanation? (This could be a programme or a body memory rather than an indicator of current contact, or a result of poison left in your home or office.)

Have you discovered new parts who have no memory of childhood or adolescence?

Have you suddenly found you are unable to access your inside parts?

Have you suddenly felt "all better" so that you no feel you no longer need to work on your recovery?

Have you found known parts now split into two or more parts, with different knowledge, abilities, etc., and a fear of going back together?

Have you had a sudden onset of intense urges to engage in some complex, usually dangerous behaviour (e.g., suicide in a specified motel, go to a specific town, self-mutilate in a specific manner, etc.)?

Have you had a sudden burning desire to return to alcohol or drug abuse?

If you have answered yes to several of these questions, you may suspect that you are being accessed by perpetrators. However, saying "no" to all does not necessarily indicate there has been no current contact. Current contact is designed to be hidden from the front person who lives your daily life, and from other inside parts, including the higher-ups, who are supposed to believe the group knows everything. Encourage all insiders to work towards permission to know whether there is contact.

Means of initiating current contact

It is extremely important to understand how the group is able to find out where you are and what you are saying. Not all current contact is a simple matter of access by the original perpetrator group or of insiders reporting to it. We must also be aware of the dangerous tentacles of the Internet for survivors. One of my clients told me that a man with whom she was in contact on an internet discussion forum was trying to figure out her personality system; the system subsequently turned upside-down, parts I had never met took control, and she left therapy. I do not believe this survivor had any current perpetrator contact prior to this; the man was actively searching survivor discussion forums for those whose personality systems he could disrupt. He told her he was going to come to meet her, and he might have done so.

Other dangers are seen in the recovery community. Another of my clients, one who had not been in contact with her perpetrator group (in another city) for almost forty years, met a fellow ritual abuse survivor in a sexual abuse survivors' group. This woman took her out to what turned out to be a cult meeting and reprogramming session. After that event, my client received regular telephone calls from local perpetrator group members, attempting to call out parts and get them to attend meetings. This is the kind of experience that would cause a survivor who is unaware of the function of inside parts believe that "They (the abusers) are everywhere, and know everything!"

I also had a meeting (arranged through a church minister) with a woman who had supposedly healed from ritual abuse and was now said to be healing survivors. She attended a number of churches in town. It was clear to me that what this person said about her programming and healing was pure hogwash. One of my clients recognised her as a cult high priestess who was going from church to church seeking out survivors and giving signals to trigger them to return, report, and punish disloyalty internally.

Several other survivors of whose safety I am fully assured have been constantly terrified that they were being followed and spied upon. That is because survivors who relocate and separate from these perpetrator groups still have parts inside who have been taught that they can never get away and that the offenders know everything. (The groups teach this to children precisely because it is not true, and they do not want the survivors to find out.) In most cases, you are safer if you have moved a great distance from the original perpetrator group. I shall discuss this at greater length later in this chapter.

Another possibility is contact that is minimal. A telephone call with a cult member (usually a family member), or a birthday card with a certain type of picture on it (e.g., a rose) can be enough to set off many of these symptoms. A survivor I have worked with for many years just recently revealed that this is a "recall year for her". The parts in charge of her system are supposed to organise the system to return to her place of origin, where they will report to her programmer (who by now is either dead or very old) about any parts who have broken the silence. These parts will then be "sacrificed", which could mean death, torture, or closedown. Her last recall year was sixteen years ago.

It cannot be stressed enough: current contact is a serious business, whether it is present all along, initiated by parts reporting to the perpetrators about therapy or other attempts at healing, or accomplished by contact with other survivors who are still involved and looking for disobedient survivors to trigger or recall.

The Big Lie

What makes survivors contact people who they know abused them in childhood? They do it because some of their insiders believe what I call the Big Lie, something they were taught to believe beginning very early in life,

Mind control groups know that the children they abuse and train will one day grow up and possibly move away, and possibly begin to remember what happened in childhood. So, they prepare these children with a great deal of training to make sure that the group's secrets do not leak out when the children grow up. They want and need their victims to believe they are all-powerful, all-seeing, all-knowing, and able to appear at any moment to punish disloyalty.

The most basic lie of mind controllers, which I call the Big Lie, is that the perpetrators always know where you are and what you do, say, or think.

First of all, they tell you that whomever they worship, God or Satan or Lucifer, is watching you. If you attended church or Sunday school, you may recall being taught that God is all-powerful, all-seeing, and everywhere. If some of your insiders were part of a Satanic or Luciferian group, they would be taught the same thing about Satan or Lucifer. There is nothing like an invisible, omnipotent watcher to make children behave in the desired manner when no one is really supervising them. This is especially effective if that deity has already been simulated by a costumed person who punished those children for disobedience with rape or torture, or by torturing someone else. And this is what they do. But even groups without a religious belief teach children that they, the abusers, have special powers or technology that enables them to know where you are and what you do and say and even think.

Punishment and trickery are used to convince each child of the truth of the Big Lie. The child is set up to hide, to talk to someone about the abuse, or to disobey. A hidden microphone or a one-way mirror permits the group to see or hear what the child is doing or saying. The group punishes the child for what he or she did or said when the child thought he or she was alone or hidden.

Often a child (and, therefore, a survivor) has a hidden floater part who observes the trickery and can tell you about it. If you have one, you can work on winning his or her trust so that part will tell you what he or she saw happen.

Abuser groups tell children many different versions of the Big Lie. They even tell different versions to different insiders of the same child. Here are some I have heard about.

What children are told

“The walls have ears.” This is taught to a young child in a room with plastic “ears” glued to the walls. The abusers say the ears will always be there in any room but will not be visible.

“The all-seeing Eye always sees you even when you can't see it.” This is taught with a plastic eyeball in a glass case, or even with an actual eyeball from a dead creature.

“Your stuffed animals [some given to the child by the perpetrators] report on you to us.” When the child is little, there could be a tape recorder or “nanny camera” in a stuffed animal.

“We [the abusers] are always hiding in the shadows or in the walls.” This is taught through an actual experience where people jump out from the shadows or from behind the walls—but of course, it would not be true in other places or at other times; this is a setup.

“Mothers have eyes in the back of their heads.” This is taught to a child whose mother is an important part of the abuser group.

“Your mother can hear everything you tell anyone.” When LisaBri was little, vinyl ears were put over both her ears and her mother's ears, and the child was told that everything she said was transmitted to her mother through the ears.

“The crows tell what you are doing or saying.” The truth is that since crows eat dead things, they hang around abusers who kill animals, but they cannot really talk to them. Some groups may use other common creatures, such as spiders. They pick something that is always around so the survivor will always be afraid of that animal telling on them.

“Satan's eyes are always watching.” This is simulated with flashlights covered with red crepe paper, in the dark.

“There is a microchip implanted in your body which tells us where you are and what you are thinking or saying.” There are considerable technological difficulties with this. Even if a device could be implanted, it cannot both record speech and send radio signals over a long distance for a very long time.

“There is a device implanted inside your head which sees and hears everything, even your thoughts, and reports it to us.” They perform fake surgeries to make children believe this.

“We have sophisticated state-of-the-art technology to listen to your phone conversations and read your emails and see where you are at all times." The truth is that it takes a lot of manpower and time to monitor someone's calls or emails, even if it could be done, and abusers cannot put that much time and energy into this. The important thing for the groups is that the child believes them and so keeps their secrets.

"We know things and do things by real magic." Every story I have heard about this turned out to be trickery. Stage magicians are very impressive, but their magic is not real.

"We always know if someone is lying, so you must always tell the truth to us." The truth is that this has been studied a lot, and no one can always tell if someone is lying.

"Everyone you know is linked to us and knows your every move, and will report back to us." This may have been true in childhood, but it is not true later. In some cases, it is not true in childhood either. Abuser groups can make a child believe his or her parents are present when they are not.

One of the abuser groups' favourite tricks is fake surgery, in which they make children believe they are putting things in their bodies. They dress the child up for surgery, put him or her on a stretcher, and tell the child they are going to implant such things as a device which records everything the child says or thinks and sends it to the abusers. The anaesthetic puts the child to sleep, and he or she wakes up with a bandage and the belief that this device is now inside his or her head, or tooth, or body. It is, of course, a trick.

Some of your insiders might be asking, "Then how do they know where we are and what we have said, if what they told us is a big fat lie?" The answer may shock you: it is you who tells them. You have reporter insiders who have the job of telling the abuser group where you are and what you have said and done, especially if any of your parts have been disloyal and disclosed secrets.

When you are a child, it is easy for your parents and other relatives to know where you are pretty well all the time. They also encourage siblings to spy and tell on one another, with threats of punishment if they do not. This is not magic or technology.

The main purpose of the Big Lie is to make sure that the group's secrets do not leak out to outsiders when the child's body has grown up and the person has left the area. In addition, some groups want to continue to use some survivors. For instance, ritualistic cults expect the children they abuse to become adult cult members who will transmit the group's values and practices to the next generation. Military/political groups continue to use some adult survivors of their training as spies, assassins, or couriers for drugs or political documents. While they "close down" the programming of some survivors, they keep others in active use. Child prostitution and pornography groups probably allow survivors to leave when they reach adulthood, unless they are also involved in the adult versions of the same things. (By the way, it is frequently only one section of a personality system who is involved in these criminal activities; if the child becomes too old for use in sexual services, other activities may continue.)

The group leaders realise that they will not have the time or resources to keep track of all their victimised children when they reach adulthood. Because of that, they get the (now grown) children to keep track for them, through internal reporters.

Fake surgery is also used to make children believe there is a bomb in their stomach that will explode if they talk about or remember the abuse. After the bomb is supposedly implanted, the abusers show the child an X-Ray that purports to show the bomb in his or her middle. Less sophisticated versions of this deception involve putting a small animal like a rat or a snake inside the child's orifices and telling the child it will devour him or her from inside if he or she talks.

There are many lies designed to keep the children and adults trained by the group involved. "Return" programmes are insiders' trainings based on lies that make survivors believe they have to return to the group at certain times or for specified events. “Access” programmes train insiders to respond to callbacks by abusers. “Report” programmes address the problem of members giving away secrets by forcing those who have done so to contact the group immediately. Particular groups of insiders (usually children) are given each of these types of training.

Note: The following material may be triggering or upsetting to some survivors. If you need help dealing with this, Chapter Ten is about dealing with triggering.

Training to return to the abusers

Most survivors of organised abuse have parts trained to return to their abusers, either at specific times or dates (e.g., for family birthdays, or important rituals, or full moons), or when they are called back. Young adults are usually allowed to go out and create an identity in the world, and then called back for use at a specific age or year. After their return, those people whose initial abuse was with an occult religious group are expected to continue to participate in the rituals that happen on the dates listed in the group's calendar. They will not incur any punishment for disloyalty—unless they begin disclosing secrets to outsiders. If they are parents, they are very probably programmed to take their children to the group's events, and their children are being abused on an ongoing basis within the group and possibly by some of the parents' parts at home. Those who have been trained by a military/political group might be sent on assignments for the group. A child, teenager, or young adult from either setting might continue to be involved in pornographic filming or prostitution. All of this happens in a life separate from the one they present to the world.

How are child parts trained to return to their abusers? Here are some specific types of training which survivors have disclosed to me:

“Return on Hallmark™ holidays”

This is the title one survivor client gave to me to describe the compulsion to contact family or go home at Christmas, Easter, her own or family birthdays, and other such times. It appears innocuous, but if there is a very strong compulsion to return, it could be a result of this programming. Important rituals are often conducted on these dates, and parts are trained not to miss them for fear of being severely punished (or someone else being punished because of their absence), or missing rewards if they do not attend.

“Return for rewards”

This is part of the training of insiders who have to take leadership in rituals or other significant events. Some of these parts might have experienced none of the abuse, and are rewarded with massage, drugs, pleasurable sex, promotions (with crowns or rings if it is a religious group, stripes if it is a military group, and various other symbols of authority) and power, such as the right to decide who gets hurt (which might be experienced as a punishment rather than a reward).

Abuser groups do, as they promise, give rewards to these insiders for coming on time. But they hurt other insiders quite badly if there has been disloyalty. Oh, they might give you a fake promotion if you go back, but it does not mean anything in the real world, and to earn it you might be forced to harm someone else.

Sometimes, the parts who have this training really want to go back to the group, and can only be completely stopped by other parts sharing with them the pain of what has happened to the body at cult events. Until the abuse memories have been shared with them, other parts with internal authority can keep them under control by making them forget the date they are to return, or getting them to go to sleep at that time.

External helpers, such as a friend or spouse, can also help. For example, someone safe can hide your shoes or block the driveway so that you cannot drive to a group event.

“Return at a specific date”

After making a lot of progress in her recovery, a survivor client of mine encountered callback programming for Easter of 2011. Just before Easter, certain parts that I had not known about “woke up”. They were heavily drugged child parts who had been told that the world would end at Easter of 2011 and that they must return home by that time. (Other parts who woke up at the same time had the job of punishing the rest of the system if they did not comply.) I spent considerable time showing them current magazines and books with dates on them which showed that the date on which the world was supposed to end was already past.

Because the survivor had made so much progress in her recovery, the callback was unsuccessful. Her system was able to detect the new parts and update them on the changes in her life and her current safety. But if this were a survivor who had not worked hard on her healing, or whose system were not largely co-conscious and co-operative, she would probably just have booked a flight home and returned to whichever perpetrators were still around to reset her programming. Even if her original programmers were not still around, they would have had replacements (who had her records) ready to deal with her. Newly awakened parts are confused about present-day reality. Your system can help prepare for such events by having a method of updating any insider who wakes up after years of unawareness. Other insiders can act as helpers and share information with the newly awakened one about your present life, where you live, how many years have gone by, and what keeps you safe now.

“Return to avoid punishment”

This has several variations. For example, a cult child misses a ritual (usually for the full moon) and is punished with electroshock the next day. Or she is made to kill what she believes is a baby and is told that if she does not keep returning the police will be notified and she will be jailed. Parts who have this training are afraid not to return. These are young children, and their fear is based on their believing the Big Lie that the abusers know everything and will hunt them down. This probably actually happened to these insiders when the body was a child, but it is much more difficult for abusers to accomplish when the body is an adult. Those insiders who return to avoid punishment need to learn a simple truth: the abusers can only hurt them if they have access to the survivor's body. If the body is not where the abusers are, it cannot be hurt.

“Return to save someone”

This callback is used frequently with disloyal survivors. Insiders have been told that someone will be badly hurt or killed just because they do not show up for the event. They believe that they must return to save a younger sibling or friend from being killed. The parts who have this training feel a desperate need to return to the group, feeling that something awful will happen to someone if they do not.

In one setup, you (as a child) are made to be unable to attend an event on time. Then you are taken to the event and forced to watch someone else being punished and told it was because you were late. In another, you are told that you are the only person who can save another child from being hurt, but you are prevented from arriving in time to do so, and have to watch. Of course, these were tricks to make you believe that other people will be hurt because of you. But many years later, this will not happen. It only happened in your childhood because the abusers had planned for you to arrive and watch it. No one will actually be hurt because of you *unless* you are there to watch it or take part in it. So, do not be there!

These lies about what the survivor can expect to happen throughout their lives are all established through tricks that happen in the person's childhood. Because the child insiders remain children, and often do not know that years have passed, they still believe what the abusers told them when they were under their control.

I want you (the front person or the higher-ups) to remember that you can dialogue with the parts who believe they have to return for any or all of these reasons. They need to understand that contact with the group puts them in a *weaker* position and will lead to pain, while disconnection will protect them. For example, if a person returns to save someone else, he or she is often used to harm the person he or she was supposed to save, then accused of being a perpetrator, and told that disclosing what happened will result in the survivor being jailed. This is all a lie. *The truth is that the group is less likely to harm someone you love if you are not present.*

Sometimes, guilty parts think they should return to be punished for their crimes. The truth is that if they return they will be forced to commit more such crimes.

Training that ensures abuser access

Children (who later become child parts of survivors) are trained always to be available to their abusers—that is, they must respond to their abusers and come when called. This training results in programmed, immediate responses. I have frequently seen survivors with a panicky desire to call home, and an inability to turn off the phone ringer. This is based on the fact that when the body was a child, the abusers could get hold of that child and punish him or her for not responding immediately when told or signalled to come.

A survivor client of mine, who frequently denied the ritual abuse history that brought her to therapy, was trying to reduce her contact with her family (who might or might not have been involved with the ritual abuse). She told me that she just could not help answering the phone or returning phone calls when messages were left. Turning off the ringer did not work because she saw the flashing light that indicates a message. She had no knowledge of this specific programming, but clearly something was forcing her to respond to phone calls whether or not she wanted to.

Some of the beliefs that abusers instil in survivors are:

> "You always have to answer the phone, or something bad will happen."
> "Even on the phone, certain parts have to come out if they are asked for."
> "You always have to answer the door and open it, even if you don't want to see the person who comes to the door."
> "You have to go outside if you hear a certain sound."
> "You have to go to anyone who makes a certain hand signal."
> "If an abuser gets hold of you or signals you, you cannot run away or fight back."

Methods of indoctrination

When a survivor is no longer returning to the group or reporting to them, he or she might still be accessible to the perpetrators for some time because of parts trained to respond to cues from the perpetrators. Some of these trainings get the survivor out into the open where group members can get at them. Often there are specific auditory triggers, such as a certain number of rings on the phone, the honk of a car horn, or a beeping sound. Group members can use visual hand signals to call a person to come to them. Some triggers might make a survivor unable to move or speak, so that he or she will co-operate with an abduction.

Here are examples of some trainings I have discovered in survivors:

Answer the phone

A drugged child was painfully shocked until she answered a ringing telephone. Then "Satan" spoke on the phone and told her, "Always answer when Satan calls." In later life, the survivor always had to answer the phone. She had no conscious memory of the reason for this compulsion, until she uncovered the training memory.

Open the door

Abusers knocked on the child's bedroom door. If she did not open it, they kicked it down and then violently abused her.

Go outside

At about age nine or ten, a child was deliberately made addicted to narcotic drugs, and was conditioned to go outside at the sound of a car horn (for another child, it was a dog whistle) to get the drugs she needed. Many years later, feeling drug withdrawal symptoms and knowing she must go outside to get rid of those symptoms, this part responded to the sound cue. (Another insider used the memory to give her the feelings of withdrawal.)

Come to the handler

A young child was put in a back yard swimming pool, and called by a perpetrator, on the other side of the pool, to swim to him. A lid was put over the pool so that the only place she could get any air was where the man was. She swam across to him underwater in order not to drown. Later, the survivor felt the sensation of drowning until she went to the cult person who had called her.

Young children are also trained to recognise symbols that have special meanings to survivors. So, a card from a family member with a particular picture or particular words might be a message to come home. One survivor received a letter from her aunt, whom she believed was a safe person, mentioning the butter cookies the aunt would like to bake for her. Later, when the survivor discovered her internal programmer, he had a list of programmes including one called "Butter Cookies" which was a cue to return to the abusers.

Keep still and silent

A child was put in an enclosed space with some type of supposedly poisonous creature (bees, snakes, spiders). He was told not to speak or move or the creatures would bite or sting him to death. I have seen this training in several different survivors. In one case, the insects (bees) stung her and because she was allergic to bees she became unconscious. Then she was resuscitated. In later life, if a perpetrator group member approaches this person on the street and gives the signal for this programme, the survivor will be unable to move to run away. (This kind of training is also one reason that survivors so often have strong reactions to insects.)

No running away

A young child was encouraged to run away from the perpetrators, then punished by harm to her knees or feet when she was caught. An insider was trained to give her this pain if she considered running away from the group.

A client of mine recently arrived for her first session with a mysteriously broken foot. When she returned home, she sprained both ankles. These injuries were traced to an inside boy who had been trained to injure her feet.

Don't leave town

A child (and, later, teenager) was drugged and put through simulated car accidents, plane crashes, and other events designed to make her believe that these things would inevitably happen to her if she attempted to leave the town where the perpetrator group operated. (She has now successfully moved away, but she had to uncover these programmes first.)

Training to report any disclosures or relocations

We have already looked at the variety of deceptions that are used to make children believe that the abusers always know where they are and what they have said and done, and will hunt them down and punish them severely for disloyalty.

Abusers teach one or more insider parts that they must report to the abusers any time the child (or, later, the adult) disobeys or discloses secrets. These “Reporters” are also told to report any relocations, so that the abusers always know where they are living when they grow up. The paradox of this situation is that the parts who report to the abusers do so because they believe the abusers know everything and will punish them if they do not report.

If the abusers really knew everything, why would they need anyone to report to them?

Meanwhile, the rest of the personality system does not know about the secret reporting and its consequences, so it is easy for the abusers to “prove” that they know everything. Even the higher-ups are not supposed to know that there are insiders giving information about them to the abusers.

The survivor usually reports to the perpetrators through a phone call to a relative. The relative triggers reporter parts to come out, and the everyday front person is unaware this has happened. The one who makes the phone call might be unaware of the reporting. Generally, the reporting parts of the survivor, as well as those who make the phone call, believe (because of the Big Lie) that the group always knows where they are and what they are saying anyway, since that was often true in childhood. There is usually more than one insider with each of these tasks.

Child parts in an adult trauma survivor might not understand time or place, and might believe they are still in the places where the group had access to them in childhood. Here is how one survivor described it in a letter to me: “Most of the ones inside do not feel time the way you do. When you say it has been a long time or many, many years, it does not make the same kind of sense to the little ones as it does to you or to the older ones. Those little ones only know about time when they are out. So for them it isn't as long as you think it is since they were in that place. The older ones know better about time and how it works. The little ones kind of know about today, tomorrow and yesterday. They sort of only know where they are when they are out. They know the neighbor lady's house [where some abuse happened]. Some know the house with that mother and father and a few know the house we lived in later. Some of those same ones know different rooms where bad things happened like with the doctor and that other man. They only know all of those different moments. There is kind of nothing in between. A few of them have been lost in the town after your meeting. They just know they are lost. But they are not looking around and thinking this is a different place."

Because young child parts have so little understanding of the time that has gone by, or the distance they have travelled from the place where the abuse occurred, they often believe the perpetrators are still around even when they are not. It can help if you have a small object (like a little coloured stone, or a toy) from the present which you can hold to remind your inside children that you are far away from the abusers in space and time. It can also help to have a calendar on your wall, and a map, for your older insiders.

Methods of indoctrination

Here is how one child was trained to telephone her mother. At age eleven, she was heavily sedated so she believed she was asleep. Then, she was painfully abused by people in costumes, so that she thought she was having a nightmare. Her mother came in and soothed her, and told her that if she had nightmares she should call her. This event was repeated several times, and in different places, and in the later instances her mother was not present, but there was a telephone on which she could call her, and her mother responded by coming and soothing her. In later life, when this programme was triggered, the adult had nightmares (given by trained insiders) and the child part phoned her mother.

Usually the training of the reporters includes a horrendous experience designed to make the child terrified of the consequences of not telling the perpetrators what she has disclosed. For example, the child is told that another child has talked about the cult to an outsider. She watches this child being tortured until he or she discloses to the cult what has been told; then the punishment stops. The child being trained is then put in a position to receive the same kind of torture (e.g., put on the cross or the rack, or touched with a hot poker), and told "*You must always tell us if you have talked.*"

Reporter parts are tested and trained; they have backups. It is important to the abusers that the rest of the survivor's personality system does not know about the reporters, so they will all continue to believe in the magic or technology which enables the perpetrators to know everything, so survivors can never escape or be free.

Let me repeat: the abusers do not know things through magic, or crows, or ears on the walls, or implants, or special technology. They know only because of reporter insiders. And if your reporters do not report, the abusers assume you are not remembering or telling things.

Dealing with reporting

As soon as you even suspect that you are a survivor of mind control or ritual abuse, you should (1) look for evidence to assess whether or not you could be currently involved with the perpetrating group, and (2) find a way to prevent parts from reporting to the perpetrators. Your parts, most of whom are child parts, have no idea that they have choices, and how much power they really hold simply by stopping the reporting and preventing the trained insiders from acting on their access programming.

Higher-ups, you need to know this information, which the people who gave you your positions withheld from you. So, begin by asking inside whether there is anyone trained to report to the abusers. Tell them they will not be in trouble for telling you about this, and that you will appreciate them for telling you. And make sure you mean it. I have several times sat with a client and asked them to just think the question to their insiders: “Do we have any parts who have the job of reporting on us to someone?” and if the answer is yes, “Are they still doing that job?” and “Whom do they report to?” and “How do they tell that person?” You need to know just where the danger is—in a phone call to a family member, in an email, or in a meeting.

If your reporters say that they are still doing their jobs, you might ask other insiders to arrange for the reporters to forget they told you about the reporting. Then they will not be able to report being discovered.

If you discover that you have reporting parts, I advise that you (the front person or the higher-ups) reason with those parts, or, if they are too young to understand, with the older parts who might be in charge of them. Ask them why the abusers would need parts to report to them where the person is, if they already know. Point out to them that the abusers knew that when the body became an adult, they would not be able to keep track of the person all the time as they could when he or she was a child. Explain that this is why they trained parts to keep track of those things for them, and if the reporters do not report, or do not tell the truth when they report, the perpetrators will not know that any disclosures have been made and you will all be safe.

If the reporters (or those in charge of them) decide not to report, you have the safety to proceed with healing and even with therapy. (You can still engage in therapy while you have insiders reporting, but it is much more difficult.) Reporter parts have generally been trained always to tell the truth. Be sure to look for “backups”, however—parts who are supposed to take over the job of any part who stops doing his or her job. They will also need to be convinced.

Reporter parts are also observers, trained to watch and listen carefully to everything you do in the real world. Therefore, they observe therapy sessions and any other situations in which you might talk about the abuse. If the reporters are unwilling to stop doing their jobs, other insiders can be recruited to help. Here is one way that you can deal with this problem. There are usually some parts who have the job of putting other parts to sleep (the initial training is done with sleep-inducing drugs); they can put the reporters to sleep during most of the therapy session. You can arrange this with those in charge of the “sleep programme”, then have those in charge of the “forgetting programme” make the reporters forget that you have made this arrangement. From then on, in therapy sessions, you talk about inconsequential topics for the first five or ten minutes for the benefit of the reporters, then, when the reporters have gone to sleep, do your real work. They can be woken up for the closing minutes of the session. All they will have to report is what happened in those first and last few minutes.

Another way of dealing with it is to satisfy the reporters' need to do their jobs by having them report internally to internal copies of the abusers (there usually are some). How do you find out if there are any? You just ask. Note, however, that some internal children cannot tell the difference between real present-day people and internal copies or memories, so older parts need to guide this process.

If you do not have sufficient rapport with your insiders to do these things, you need to proceed very slowly with finding your memories, so as to not accidentally trigger any reporting which will get the perpetrator group reinvolved with your younger parts.

What about relocation?

Recovering from ritual abuse is a serious business, and sometimes there are real dangers. Relocation to a place at a great distance from the original abuse is sometimes quite necessary if you are trying to leave the group and experiencing severe harassment to the point that you are unable to keep safe. However, relocation is most useful when the parts are no longer reporting to the abusers, and the abuser group does not have a branch in the new location. If there is no related group in the new location, it might reduce current abuse, but if there is a related group, the abuse could continue and you might not be able to recognise the group members in order to avoid them. Or a new group might be able to call out insiders using access triggers. It is imperative to continue your healing and disable triggers that allow you to be reaccessed. Failing to do so leaves you open to any predator who knows how to use triggers, and there are a lot of them, and some groups can be even worse than the home "cult" group.

One of my first ritually abused clients moved to a nearby town, where she believed she was safe. What actually happened, since she had reported, was that the persons who regularly abducted her were unknown to her, so it was more difficult to avoid them than it had been to avoid the people she recognised. She was actually less safe than she had been here.

A woman once came to me from a city some distance away. Her previous therapist had sent her to me because of severe harassment; she just knew too much and had breached security. She believed her life was in danger. About a week after she arrived, she disclosed with embarrassment that she had telephoned the perpetrator group and given them her location. A local group had already contacted and threatened her. This was now an emergency that would not allow time for inside work with reporters. I had to smuggle the woman out of town (while her apartment was being watched) and send her on to another location previously unknown to her. I sent her to the USA, hoping that the abusers (on the Canadian prairies) would have fewer links there. Still, I was aware that it was quite likely that the person I sent her to would have the same experience, unless he had the time to deal with her reporting training.

However, this probably only happened because of her high status in the group; if she had been a lower-level person, her original perpetrator group might have been content with phone calls and letters rather than paying a local group to harass her. It might still be safer to move a great distance from the place where you grew up, then disable the reporting in order to progress in your healing with minimal harassment.

In most cases, what I recommend if there is current contact is, first disable the reporting, and then carefully plan a move to a distant location, where the group is unlikely to have a branch, and, if you can afford it, where you can find a competent therapist (see Chapter Nineteen). I know that uprooting yourself can be very difficult and upsetting, but it is preferable to continuing to be abused.

What you can do

Most mind control survivors I have encountered, especially of cult abuse, have all of these kinds of trainings. You see how complicated they are for the survivor to deal with, and to unravel.

If you are a survivor who is being watched and/or harassed by perpetrators, it helps if you live with a safe spouse or roommate who can be informed of the situation and stay with you as much as possible. Although this frequently occurs, I do not recommend mind control or ritual abuse survivors living with one another; rather than keeping one another safe, they could expose one another to risk. For example, one roommate might have the strength to keep the door locked, but the other might open the door to abusers who then abuse both roommates.

One survivor found a creative solution. When she was being harassed by the cult that she had broken away from, the cult's van kept circling her neighbourhood, waiting for her to leave the house. So, she telephoned the police and said, “I keep seeing a van around here, and I think it may have something to do with those break-ins that keep happening in this area.” After the police checked it out, they called her back. “It's funny,” they said, “There weren't any burglary tools, but that van was full of illegal drugs and weapons and handcuffs.”

If the perpetrator group is at a distance, you may only have to deal with telephone calls and letters or emails. If they harass you in this way, trying to trigger various trained behaviours, you can turn off the ringer on the phone (and place it where it is not visible), change your email address to something they do not know, and open any letters or parcels only in the presence of your therapist or another safe person with whom you can discuss their meaning and make sure that you will not act on any messages they carry.

In the end, however, the only solution is to work through the memories of the trainings so that your parts are no longer bound by the compulsion to act on their training. Programming such as this operates like post-hypnotic suggestions; it feels compulsory when the person is under its grip, even though the conscious adult does not understand it. Once the story of the programming becomes conscious, it loses that grip and the person becomes free. Some survivors find ways to make it conscious even when the memories have not yet been fully worked through. The exercise below gives some help with this. In the initial stages, before you have worked through your training memories, the important thing is to make sure that reporting does not occur so that you do not have to deal with perpetrators.

I have occasionally had marathon therapy sessions of a weekend at a time (all day long) with some current-contacting survivors, in which we went through all the access training memories to remove their effects. I also have a policy of working through all current abuse memories immediately after they occur, along with the memories of whatever programming was being retaught in the current contact. This is what enabled some of my current-contacting survivors to escape their group and become free.

Ongoing perpetrator contact is one of the most difficult issues for survivors of mind control and ritual abuse. It is my belief that most of the retractors of memories disclosed in therapy—the kind of survivors who were put forward as figureheads by the “false memory syndrome” advocates—were victims of ongoing abuse (and rewards) by perpetrator groups. Ellen Lacter has a very helpful page on her website with suggestions for survivors about safety: http://endritualabuse.org/activism/safety-tips-for-ritual-abuse-survivors/.

We do not want to know this is happening, but if it is, it is. If you are aware of this possibility, you can communicate with your parts before working on memories to prevent this kind of harassment.

Exercise 10. Recognising and defeating access programming

Do you, or do many of your parts, believe that the perpetrators always know where you are and whether you have talked about the abuse? If so, what do those parts and others (such as hidden observers) remember that made them believe this? Can the older parts detect the trickery in it?

Do you have insiders who do not know what year it is, and believe they still live with perpetrators when they do not? If you do, you can go about updating them.

Internal reporters

Do you have parts whose job is to describe everything you have done or said or thought when cued by a family member or another group member?

If you are in therapy, is there someone inside who is supposed to call a family member or other abuser after each therapy session? (If so, your higher-ups might want to make sure that those parts do not know who your therapist is, what goes on in therapy sessions, or even that you have been to therapy.)

Is there anyone who is supposed to call a family member or other abuser if you have a nightmare or a flashback or a memory about the abuse? Is there anyone who is supposed to give you the nightmares?

Do your reporter parts have backups?

If you have these reporter parts, it is important to help them realise that the person they report to does not actually know all these things. And to have your gatekeepers (those with the job of keeping parts inside or letting them out) make sure they stay inside (rather than responding to a cue to bring them out) if you are talking to someone they might be trained to report to.

Impulses to return

Do you have a very strong impulse to return to family on birthdays and cultural holiday dates and full moons? If so, try to discover whether you have any insiders who have to return for rituals or other events held on these dates.

Do you find that receiving cards or letters or emails from family members triggers a strong impulse to go home? If so, search for insiders who have recognised cues in those communications, and find out more about how they were trained.

Do you have a fear of breaking off contact with family or other abusers, or not attending events, because insiders are afraid of being severely punished? Do those parts realise that punishment involves hurting the body, and that if the body is not present it cannot be hurt, and other people will not be hurt because of you if you are not there to watch or participate? (Note that it is not your fault if the abusers hurt other people, but you can perhaps prevent some being hurt by not being there to watch.)

Do you have insiders who believe that they will be rewarded for coming back to the abusers? What do they believe will happen? Are there other insiders who know that something different happens? Have these different kinds of parts talk with one another. Make sure they know they all share the same body, and those who experience rewards are in the same body that gets hurt if you return. Are those rewards what you really want?

Do you have insiders who are trained to return in a particular year or on a particular date? If you find these parts, you need to make sure they know enough about your present life that they will not act on their training.

Being accessible to abusers

Do you find that you feel compelled to answer the phone, and to respond to voice messages?

Do you find that you feel compelled to open the door if someone knocks or rings the doorbell?

Do you find that you are unable to block email senders or delete emails without responding to them?

Do you sometimes have an impulse to go outside, particularly at night?

Do you notice people on the street making hand signals or saying strange things, and find yourself responding with impulses to speak with them or to do something particular? Do you find yourself changing the direction from the way you meant to walk?

Are there times when you feel you are unable to move? Are there times when you feel a strong desire to run but are unable to do so?

Do you feel afraid to ever leave town, particularly if you live in the place where you grew up?

If any of the above are true, search for the insiders who have this training, find out how they were trained, and help them understand why they do not need to obey their training any more. You might need to rescue those trained insiders from their internal locations, which might be places based on their traumatic training memories, and take them to safer internal locations (see Chapter Eleven). If some of them are desperate to act on their programming, which would put you in danger, they might need to be kept deep inside or asleep until you have had a chance to thoroughly undo the programming by means of working through the memories.

So, what does it take to keep yourself safe? Counsellor Lynette C. Lins wrote the following to a professional discussion list (quoted by permission) with regard to how she and her ritually abused client worked on this problem:

> It takes a while to get the lie of the land to figure out whether external or internal safety is problematic.
>
> That said, some of the external things we worked on to increase safety: modeled and practiced safety while walking from a parking area to a building, and/or getting into a car; stressed physical safety in the home detailing what that means; encouraged changing phone numbers, using a cell number for work and keeping the house number private even from those inside; encouraged use of a post office box rather than home mail delivery; emphasized the importance of shutting off the phone at night; taught them

> what to do if followed; pushed for removal of dangerous items from the house (i.e., pills, syringes, ropes, cleaning supplies, razors, etc.); established boundary roads that they are not allowed to cross and stores they are not allowed to frequent (identified meet-up points); emphatically asserted that no one under the age of 16 is to be in control of the body when driving the car.
>
> And some of the internal things we worked on to increase safety: identified the patterns of lost time and circumstances under which they occur; explored lost time in detail so parts can see who it is that is hurt after they take the body to unsafe people; explored who inside projects the images that scare the others and convince them that they need to go back to the abusers; temporarily (and briefly) segregated dangerous parts inside until we are able to work with them; encouraged reporters to be truthful but vague in their reports; listened to and validated the goal of “complicit parts” (i.e., protector parts) to avoid far worse from abusers, sometimes coupled with asking “complicit parts” not to take the body to abusers; worked on empathy for child parts.

Lynette Lins noted that many of the external methods she worked on were very difficult for her ritually abused client at first. It was the internal work (on disabling the programming) that has helped the most. This is probably true for most survivors. The entire personality system has to work together in order to achieve safety. When your system is working together, then it is possible for you to use the ideas in the “external things” category to become safe and stay that way.

The power to become free is within you, the survivor. Freedom will make the difficult work of getting free worthwhile—in fact, nothing could be more worthwhile. If you have never experienced your life being your own, let me tell you that nothing compares to it. You will still have sadness about what happened, of course, but liberty is priceless.

CHAPTER TEN

Dealing with triggering

Post-traumatic vs. programmed responses

All survivors of trauma have post-traumatic responses, commonly called being "triggered". For example, you walk past a man in the street who wears the same aftershave as the stepfather who sexually abused you, and you have a flashback of your abuser. That is a post-traumatic response, but not a programmed one. However, if you walk across the street in response to a deliberate signal from a cult member, that is a programmed response. It is still post-traumatic, as it is based on trauma, since some insiders fear being severely punished if they do not go to the cult person, but it is also deliberately trained.

Post-trauma responses are not all deliberately programmed. As a survivor of mind control and/or ritual abuse, you will have both programmed and non-programmed post-traumatic responses. Non-programmed post-traumatic responses are usually triggered accidentally by situations that resemble the original trauma. Even programmed responses can be set off accidentally if something in the present situation happens to resemble the pre-set cues for those insiders to do their jobs. However, if a response is programmed, you need to negotiate with the insiders who are "doing their jobs" in setting off the response, to help them understand that it is safe to turn it off.

Kinds of programmed behaviours

If you have been to therapy, you probably know that most therapists put a lot of effort into training their clients to live in the present and avoid self-destructive behaviours such as self-harm and suicide attempts. But this effort is largely wasted when the child parts doing the cutting or taking the overdoses are doing their "jobs", in fear of death or torture to themselves or others if they disobey. The programming behind the behaviours needs to be recognised and addressed.

The first thing you need to know if you are a survivor is that parts of you have probably been trained to create a variety of symptoms and behaviours. Abusers actually train child parts to cut the body, to make other parts cut, to attempt suicide, to create flashbacks by releasing pieces of visual or auditory memories, to create body memories of pain or electroshock, and to create depression, terror, anxiety, and despair by releasing the emotional components of memories to the rest of the personality system. The front person and most of the rest of the system do not know that this is the source of these feelings and behaviours.

What kinds of symptoms or behaviours result from the insiders' training or programming? The most basic kind of training is for loyalty and obedience, and we looked at this in Chapter Five. We also looked at the different kinds of access programming in Chapter Nine.

Punishment symptoms

Many of the other types of programming produce psychiatric symptoms, usually administered as punishments by insiders who are trained to administer them, if the survivor has breached security or disobeyed the abusers' instructions in other ways.

These symptoms serve a variety of purposes, such as disrupting therapy, getting the survivor into hospital, or getting the survivor to return to the perpetrators to have the programming reinforced.

The following exercise lists symptoms that can (but do not always) result from programming. They are difficult to recognise as internal punishments, but each punishing symptom is created when a trained insider uses parts of stored traumatic memories to retraumatise the front person or other insiders.

Exercise 11. Recognising programmed symptoms

Which of the following symptoms have you suffered from?

- Extreme depression
- Mood swings
- Insomnia
- Intermittent learning disabilities that get in the way of your academic or professional success
- Inability to concentrate on important issues, like saving money; it seems to inexplicably disappear as soon as you get it
- Physical pain without a current physical cause
- Flooding of unpleasant emotions (one emotion such as sadness or anger, or a whole series of emotions)
- Self-harm (cutting, burning, etc.)
- Suicide attempts
- Hearing frightening voices or hearing screaming
- Visual or other hallucinations (for example, seeing someone in the room who isn't really there, seeing someone as a demon, smelling or tasting something awful, feeling insects, snakes, or rodents on or under your skin)
- Seizures (which could be electroshock memories)
- Unexplained physical symptoms such as rashes
- “Disasters” (earthquakes, tidal waves, tornadoes, floods, fires) in your inner world
- Rapid switching, causing mixed-up speech as different child parts come out and are pushed inside again
- Scrambling of sensory information so that you can't understand others or make sense of the world
- Bizarre delusions (these can be created with hallucinogenic drugs, films, and cartoons)
- Being told you behaved bizarrely or like an animal

The symptoms at the start of the list are less likely to be programmed than the more rare ones at the end of the list. However, any of these symptoms can be the result of trained parts doing their jobs.

For each listed symptom you have experienced, ask inside to see whether an insider turned on a programme to create this symptom. If you get no answer or just a “no”, respect that. If you hear a “yes”, ask why. Keep talking gently with the part who answered (or whoever gave the order to turn on the programme), trying to understand his or her reasons. After you have listened thoroughly, try to help that part understand why you believe it might no longer be necessary for that job to be done.

If the part feels he or she has to continue to do this job, find out what behaviour you need to avoid in order not to trigger the programme. For example, you may be talking about memories to an outsider while there are still parts who believe they have to report this violation of secrecy to abusers. The part who is punishing you with pain knows that it is not safe to make such disclosures until your reporters have stopped doing their jobs.

Perpetrator group members can give cues (apparently innocent words, touches, or hand signals) to parts to set off these programmes and have the spinner parts spin them out to the rest of the personality system.

This does not mean that real mental illnesses involving many of the above symptoms do not exist, or cannot exist in survivors of mind control and ritual abuse. They can. But they can also be simulated through programming. I always wondered, for example, why so many supposed paranoid schizophrenics had delusions about God and the devil, or about the CIA. Now I suspect that such people might be mind control victims. Sally's story in Chapter Six gives examples of the programmes that her higher-ups were trained to use to keep her under the abusers' control.

The most dangerous punishment programmes include self-harm, unsuccessful suicide attempts, and suicide attempts designed to be successful (if central secrets have been disclosed).

Self-harm

Certain insiders are specifically trained to do things to harm the body, such as cutting or burning when the person is disloyal or discloses secrets. Perpetrators can also give words or signals to trigger this behaviour. Sometimes, the cuts will form a pattern that serves as a visible sign of abuse by a cult group: this may make other cult members aware of the survivor's history so that, for instance, other patients in a psychiatric hospital can approach the survivor to bring him or her into the local group.

Here is an example of such a training: using a hot branding iron, abusers brand a child with the mark of a pentagram. She is told she is being marked because she is a servant of Satan. If she is disloyal, a particular insider has to make this mark on her own body to prove her loyalty. She does this because she has been made to believe that the perpetrators know she has been disloyal and will punish her unless she self-mutilates in this way. (Of course, if they know, it is because some part of her reported to them.)

Parts who are “introjects” (internal copies) of the perpetrators are told they actually are replicas of the persons who “created” them. Their jobs are often to speak their creators' words, and to harm the body in the exact same ways as those persons did if any of the parts become disloyal.

Unsuccessful suicide attempts

Although mind control and ritual abuse survivors attempt suicide more frequently than other extreme abuse survivors, their rate of successful suicide is no different, according to the Extreme Abuse Survey (Rutz, Becker, Overkamp, & Karriker, 2008). Organised criminal groups expend large amounts of resources on training children, and in many cases they expect to be able to use them for life. Also, successful suicides might prompt investigations, and these groups do not want to draw attention to their existence by actually having someone die. A suicide attempt, however, is likely to get a survivor hospitalised, and cults and other criminal groups monitor many psychiatric facilities to find and retrain survivors while they are there.

Because these groups want to avoid investigation but often do want survivors hospitalised, they teach children to take overdoses but to stop short of actually killing the body, for example by taking just a few less pills than a lethal amount. Children and adults are generally taught several specific ways of harming and attempting to kill themselves, down to the details of how many of each kind of pill to take.

There is also training not to die. For example, a child is drugged and assaulted by persons costumed as “demons” in a simulated hell; he or she is told that if the body dies this is what will happen because she is evil and deserves to go to hell. This child insider will work hard to be sure not to let the body die if other parts attempt suicide.

Serious suicide attempts

This is not to say that no one is trained for "successful" suicide. They are.

Training for successful suicide is not activated until either the perpetrators instruct the survivor to do it, or the security of the most important secrets is prematurely breached. It usually involves a group or sequence of parts. That is, triggers are given to bring out several parts in succession, and the one who is to kill the body can only come out if a particular other insider is already out. This is to protect against accidental suicide.

Suicide trainings are often really trainings for internal homicide—that is, one part killing the body with the goal of getting rid of the other parts. The parts who do this are usually trained to believe they do not belong to the body and will not die if the body dies. For example, an insider who believes he is a demon is taken to "hell" where others parts in the body are tortured, and this part gets to torture other (outside) people. He is told he will not die if the body dies, and that he will have a higher place in hell if he kills the body on command. He may be given an injection which makes him unable to feel anything, then invited to watch something painful being done to the body, without feeling it. There are different variations on this trick, but they all rely on trickery: the truth is that if your body dies, everyone inside it will die too, regardless of what kind of being they believe they are. Even the parts who believe they are outside people are really inside, and they share the same body.

Try writing on the hand of a part who is meant to die, then have someone who believes they are not part of the body come out and look to see whether the writing is on their hand. It will be! With several clients, I have written my initial on the hand of one part, and then asked another part to come out and look at his or her hand. They are always surprised and shocked. It is the beginning of realising how much the abusers lied to them. The lie that you will not die if the body dies is a particularly horrible lie, and I wonder how many mind control victims have discovered this too late.

The dangers of traditional mental health treatment

Psychiatric medications

Some of the symptoms that our psychiatrist colleagues see as amenable to medication are not, because they could be caused by abuse and trauma rather than a disease of the brain. However, while medications might not be appropriate for some of the symptoms that survivors have, they may be effective in managing other symptoms. I strongly recommend that survivors work with psychiatrists who have experience in treating mind control and ritual abuse survivors, if they feel that they need medication. (Unfortunately, such doctors are rare.) The training experiences that survivors have been subjected to have included psychoactive medications since infancy.

Antipsychotic medications can reduce the outside person's ability to communicate with the rest of the personality system, thus suppressing the survivor's ability to effect the necessary recovery. One of my clients was hospitalised when she unearthed a memory of a "bug" being placed in her ear to supposedly let the abusers know whatever she disclosed to any outsider. She became understandably alarmed. She and I scheduled the memory work to deal with this issue, but before we could meet to do it, the hospital psychiatrist discovered she was "paranoid" (since she believed the "bug" was there) and put her on antipsychotic medication. As a result, she was no longer able to contact the parts involved in the memory and could not do the work. My attempt to explain all this to the hospital psychiatrist failed. In his view, she was paranoid, this was psychosis, and so she needed the medication. This client had to pretend she was fine for two weeks, so that she could be discharged and stop the medication. The memory work was successful once the medication was out of her system.

Most psychiatric medications have serious side effects, especially if they are taken over a long period. Some are addictive, and you can have a lot of difficulty withdrawing from them. If you are already on such medication, you may have learnt to rely on it to suppress some of your insiders. This might be a short-term solution, but it does not heal you. To heal, you need all of your insiders to work together with the goal of healing, which means you cannot just knock some out with drugs. It is worth going through the drug withdrawal symptoms if drugs are impairing your capacity for internal communication.

Group treatment settings

I am very hesitant about all group settings and group interventions for survivors of organised criminal abuse, whether on an outpatient, self-help, or residential basis. Survivors who are currently involved with perpetrator groups are often trained to seek out other survivors in treatment settings, such as group therapy and hospitals, to get them reinvolved. When a colleague of mine facilitated a group therapy programme for dissociative people, the local cult conducted a similar group in the hospital basement at night, involving some of the same people (including one of my clients, who told me about it). Another of my clients, who had been abused by a group two thousand miles away, was taken back to a local abuser group by a survivor she met in a therapy group for sexual abuse survivors. Even those survivors who do not reinvolve others often have parts trained to give signals that will cause deterioration in those survivors' functioning.

Residential and inpatient settings

Hospitalisation can lead to a lot of serious problems for those with ritual abuse histories. Hospitals are medical facilities, and patients receive medical treatment. They are places where people with psychiatric emergencies are stabilised as quickly as possible, at the least cost. Most clinicians, particularly those entrenched in this “medical model”, are uneducated about mind control and do not acknowledge it or know how to treat it. In fact, most are unable to properly identify or treat dissociative conditions of any kind (although, ironically, according to my clients who were hospitalised, some other patients may “look inside” the person to detect the presence of parts). In most hospitals, mind controlled patients are simply diagnosed with mental illnesses, and subjected to heavy use of psychiatric drugs and other inappropriate treatment, such as ECT (electroshock therapy), which resembles the original programming.

The abusers tell you that if you disclose the secrets, you will be locked up, drugged, and given shock therapy. Unfortunately, this is still sometimes true, and the medical staff who administer these treatments will genuinely believe they are helping you.

Another risk is exposure to the other patients. Before I saw her, one of my ritual abuse survivor clients had been hospitalised. For a long time, she would not discuss what happened, but made me promise not to hospitalise her. Eventually, she revealed that another woman in the hospital had handed her a note that said, “I'm sorry I have to kill you.” When she told me the name of the woman, I recognised her as a ritual abuse client of another therapist I knew.

In some communities, perpetrator groups actually want their survivors put into outpatient day programmes, or hospitalised. When I was treating my first few ritual abuse survivors, the cult they belonged to had a regular pick-up system for hospitalised survivors at the dinner hour. The survivors would go out to the front door for a smoke, and the cult van would appear, pick them up, take them to be tortured and for their training to be reinforced, then drop them off at the time they were supposed to be back indoors. I have heard of organised perpetrator groups in other locations doing the same thing.

Although the hospital did keep patients from committing suicide during their stay, it did not keep them safe, because it enabled the perpetrator group's access to them. According to researcher Margo Rivera, it is a fact that during or immediately after a psychiatric hospital stay is the time when most patients commit suicide. I learned to avoid the psychiatric hospital for my clients who experienced current contact with their perpetrator group. Even a safe psychiatric hospital, unless it is specialised for treating dissociative disorders, is little more than a holding tank to prevent patients from committing suicide. At best, such a hospitalisation just delays effective treatment.

I have heard that some mental hospitals have members of the perpetrator groups on staff who are trained to recognize mind-control and ritual abuse survivors. The mother of one of my first ritually abused clients worked in our local mental hospital, and worked hard at making sure her adult child was thoroughly discredited in the view of other staff. That is not to condemn all such workers; most of the people who run mental hospitals are sincere professionals who really want to help those whom they believe suffer from a “mental illness”. But mind-control-created dissociative conditions are mental injury rather than mental illness, and so require different treatment, especially when the abuser group is local and has an interest in preventing disclosures.

Hospitals specialising in dissociative disorders, when not infiltrated by members of organised perpetrator groups, can be quite helpful to survivors of organised abuse. The challenge is determining which ones are safe.

Many survivors, when hospitalised, almost immediately switch into a part who appears normal. E. Sue Blume (author of *Secret Survivors*) told me that before she understood ritual abuse, she had several dissociative clients who were admitted to hospitals in crises—including suicidal emergencies—who immediately became “all right”. Neither she nor the hospital staff understood the nature of what they were witnessing. The psychiatrist was sure his medication had cured his patients, and released them. In one case, however, the nurses confided in E. Sue that something seemed “odd” about her client's transformation.

Exercise 12. Dealing with dangerous programming

Have you harmed your body in any way? If so, in what ways have you harmed it?

If so, did it feel as if you did it consciously, or as if you watched it happening, or did you find out it had happened after you “lost some time”?

If it was conscious, what do you think was the purpose? Is there another way you could achieve the same end?

If it was not conscious, enquire of your insiders who did it, and who made it happen (these might be different). Then ask them why they made it happen. Again, see whether there is another way they could achieve the same end. Do you want to achieve that end?

Did you make any kind of pattern on your skin with your self-harm? If so, what does that pattern mean? Enquire of your insiders.

Have you attempted suicide? In what manner? Did you do it consciously, or did it seem that you watched it happen, or did you discover afterwards that it had happened?

If it was conscious, why did you do it? Ask inside whether it was influenced by any other parts, and what they were trying to achieve. See whether there is another, less risky way they could achieve the same end.

Dialogue with the parts who were responsible for the suicide attempt. Ask whether it was serious, or whether it was a warning, not designed to kill you.

If it was a warning, ask them what they were warning you about, and see whether you can avoid this behaviour or you can persuade them not to repeat the attempt.

If it was a serious attempt, ask the parts responsible whether they believe they would die if they killed your body. If the answer is "No", you or other parts need to inform them of the true situation—that all of you would die.

Are you taking psychiatric medications? If so, ask your insiders how these medications affect them? Do they reduce internal communication, which you need for your recovery? Do they help some of the traumatised parts feel better? Try to make an informed decision about whether these medications help you.

Have you participated in a group therapy programme, or been a patient in a psychiatric hospital? If so, did you or your internal parts experience any triggering of programmed responses while you were there? What were they? Who set off these programmes? Was the programme safe for you? Did it affect your credibility? Was it helpful?

How to deal with your symptoms

The above exercise helps you make the most important internal intervention: talk inside! Communicate with your parts. If you develop a symptom, speak inside to whoever might be causing it. Ask why it happened. Negotiate with them. If they are acting on orders from above, negotiate with their bosses. Try to avoid the behaviours which get you "into trouble" with the parts in charge until they are ready to co-operate with your attempt at healing. This often means slowing down your attempts to recover memories and focusing instead on developing co-operation with your insiders. If you have survived the abuse, you have the strength to find ways to communicate internally, and this can be a major factor in your healing. This is difficult, but it is crucial.

Of course, it is possible that some of these symptoms are genuine and exist for other reasons than programming (that is, no parts are trained to produce them). When one of my clients had two different gastro-intestinal symptoms, one of the symptoms turned out to be a medical illness, and the other was an intrusive memory of extreme pain being inflicted on one of her parts. We had the system put away the memory until they were ready to work on it, then worked through it so the part was out of his pain. But we could not do anything (except get medical help) about the symptom which was an actual physical ailment.

Sometimes internal children kick up symptoms because they are unhappy or their needs are not being met. This might not be programming. You deal with this the same way you deal with programming: negotiate with the kids. One survivor promised pizza to the children in return for them not performing a particularly problematic behaviour. Often the children need something—a new place to live inside, a guarantee that they get some time in your day to play, or read, or colour, a chance to exercise, some good food. Their needs were not met in your (and their) actual childhood, but many of those needs can be met now, thanks to you. This begins with your listening to them. Sometimes internal parts give the front person symptoms to prod him or her into taking action about an unsafe situation.

Learning from and putting away what is triggered

Some programmes reveal themselves early, as they are part of the abusers' plan to sabotage healing. If your attempts to heal or to get help immediately result in symptoms, this can alert you to the fact that your background might include mind control. Once that fact has been established, you know you must consider that any particular issue might be due to the activity of trained internal parts. Instead of just wasting time taking soothing baths to promote sleep (though perhaps this can help a little), you can search for the parts who are responsible for the insomnia. If you find yourself unable to stop cutting your arms, you can find the parts involved, ask how they were trained to cut and why they do it, and eventually work through these training memories. You can use whatever has been triggered to search for the trainings involved. Then you can gently negotiate with the parts responsible, and eliminate, arrest, or reduce the intensity of the problem behaviour.

As soon as you become aware of something coming from your inside parts, try to stop what you are doing and communicate with those parts. The something might be a pain, a body motion, a voice you hear, an emotion, or an impulse.

There are a number of steps that you, the survivor, can take to address programming and other post-traumatic responses without depending on a therapist. Here are some options you might choose. Only you can decide what feels comfortable and safe. The basic principle behind all these interventions is communicating with the parts who act on their training and with those in charge of them, rather than simply letting the symptoms overwhelm you. And with non-programmed post-traumatic responses, the most effective approach is also to communicate with the parts who have been accidentally triggered.

One of my clients once was triggered by an incident in which her cat caught a fly, which made a loud buzzing sound. All her parts went deep inside and hid for a week, until her next therapy session. Two different things were going on. In one, child parts who had been put in a pit with rotting meat and dead things and flies now began to think they were back in the pit. I had to give them a little biology lecture about flies, telling them that flies do eat rotten things like fruit, but have no interest in eating people. I made sure they knew they were safe in my client's apartment.

The buzzing of the fly also brought out a male part who had been trained with electroshock administered (with a buzzing sound) through a helmet. That part's job was to make a similar buzzing sound inside the head, which frightened all the other parts who had worn the helmet. I had to bring him out and show him that there was no helmet on his head, and he was in a safe place; he could let the others know that. I then had the part in charge of the memory storage put the memories of the pit and of the helmet safely away, so those affected would no longer have flashbacks. Although this client was a ritual abuse survivor, and had trained parts (yes, trained in the pit and with the helmet), this triggering was not programming; it was just post-traumatic. So, all that needed to happen was for the triggered insiders to recognise that the present situation was not the same as their original trauma. No programme needed to be turned off, since a programme was not turned on. The survivor did not need to work through all the memories of the “pit” or the helmet when we found what was triggered by the fly's buzzing, she just had to put them away. But she made a note of them, to return to these memories at a later stage of her recovery.

You will make your decision as to how to address a triggered programme based on your healing agenda. With mind control, it is wise to be systematic in your approach to recovery. Generally speaking, memory work comes only after a good deal of groundwork has been laid. (Memory work will be discussed further in Chapters Fourteen and Fifteen.) In this example, it was not time to work on these particular memories. This is an important point for you to understand: sometimes it is preferable to just turn off and put away what is triggered, and continue to work with whatever you have made your priority.

Negotiating with trained insiders

Often, a symptom is caused by a trained insider doing his or her job. When you search for parts who are creating programmed behaviours, keep in mind that their training probably included threats of punishment if they did not comply with the abusers' instructions. Usually, there are other parts who are supposed to punish them, and backups who will do their jobs if they become disloyal. You can search for the punishers and the backups and dialogue with them until they agree to turn it off. You will need to update any parts you speak with, explaining what you now understand about how the perpetrators can no longer hurt them (because of time and/or distance), or if the group is local and still harassing the person, the group can only hurt them if it gains access to the body.

Generally, however, as long as the trained behaviour has been performed, it might be all right to turn it off, though it could be turned on again in response to a cue or to other parts' disobedience to their instructions.

With programmes such as flooding of emotions, the parts involved might not feel safe in turning the programme off. But you might be able to negotiate that they turn it down so it is barely noticeable. Or you could ask the spinner parts to spin in the opposite direction, so that they spin the effects back into the part who originally held those feelings rather than out to the rest of the system. Or you could insert a hidden drain and start draining out some of the feelings. Or you could find a way for the parts doing their jobs to implement the programme without doing harm. One client of mine used to come into therapy sessions with instructions to harm me. So, she came up with the idea of taking a thumbtack from the notice board and pricking me lightly with it once. Then she would say, "OK, I've done my job," and we would have no further problems. Similarly, you can have the child parts draw on their arm in red ink rather than cutting it to draw blood.

Jean Riseman has been active in the survivor community for many years. Her website, www.ra-info.org was the very first one on ritual abuse. She also has a blog, www.ritualabuse.wordpress.com, which contains short essays, poems, and artwork, as well as information on ritual dates and news items. Here, she offers her own expertise about how to deal with programming. Like this courageous thinker, you can use the power of your own creativity, experience, and humour, to be an active participant in identifying and changing your own programming.

One of the things you will notice about Jean's approach is that she, the front person, does not have to identify or be consciously aware of the identities of her inside parts in order to communicate with them and make a difference.

Jean Riseman: "Programming: taking the wind out of its sails"

I am a Satanic ritual abuse survivor and was used as a government/academic mind-control experimentation subject from 1943, when I was six, to 1949, when I was twelve. The point of the experiments was to see how easy different programming systems were to install, how easy they were to use, and how useful they were. Some aspects of the systems studied were used in later mind control programming, but nothing was used in its entirety.

Since I don't have discrete alters, increasing internal communication, as it is usually understood, is not possible. I had, therefore, to try out different techniques and see what worked for me.

The first theory I tested was that my child-rearing experience could be applied to dealing with my programming. What worked with my kids was giving simple directions, using words that were easy to understand given their age level, and expressing myself non-abusively and non-coercively. Basically, I explained what was going to happen and described how I wanted them to behave. If my kids did a good job (assuming they remembered what I said!), they got a big smile and some praise. If their behaviour was less than stellar, all I had to do was remind them of what was expected. There was no need for punishment and drama was kept to a minimum.

So, how could I educate the discrete alters which I didn't have? I knew that there had been a real flesh and blood little girl present for the programming and that the experiences and beliefs lingered somewhere in my mind, just as learning maths and spelling had made an impression. So, if I could pretend I had alters and "talk through" to those parts of me, whatever they were, I might be able to make some intellectual and emotional changes. I would speak to them just as I spoke to my children, simply and respectfully.

I start by giving permission to my pretend-alters to learn new things, without telling them what to do. "Anybody who wants to listen can. Nobody has to. Anybody who isn't listening can ask others inside about what I said. And I will explain again, too, in case you want to listen later on. Anybody who objects to, or doesn't like, what I am saying can let me know if they want to. Anybody who wants to give me information may, as long as it's OK inside."

Then I educate and explain in simple language. I say, "We were raised by people who liked kids to obey and liked to hurt kids. But those people aren't around any more. We don't have to follow their rules. We don't have to agree with them any more. We can make up our own rules. We can change our rules any time we want."

I steer away from words that have a weird connotation to me. "Safe" for example, means to many of my parts that I am locked up, and that therefore I cannot hurt anybody or anything. I am "safe" because I am imprisoned. This is not a message that I am trying to convey inside, so I avoid the word and find words that were not used back then. "OK" is a fine substitute, as the members of my cult were too prim and proper to use that word. If I find that I'm getting anxious or panicky, I take a look at the words I have just used and apologise inside, and ask if I need to add to my list of double-meaning words.

I describe my present life. "This is my bed. I sleep alone in my bed. Nobody comes to my bed to bother me. Never! Those days are all in the past. I can go to sleep whenever I want. I can eat any time I want. I can eat anything I want. I don't have to ask anybody's permission."

I explain all the psychological things I have learned about PTSD and dissociation. I explain amnesia, alters/parts, and flashbacks. Again, I keep it simple so that the young parts can understand.

"This is a flashback. It feels yucky. It's something we are remembering. Once long ago we forgot it, and now we are remembering. It isn't happening now. It just feels like it is because the memory is so strong. But that's OK. It's like the mind is burping up a memory. Feels better after you burp."

I do this at random times during the day when I'm relatively calm, as well as in an emergency. Years ago, when all this was new to me and I was flooded, I held a stuffed rabbit and patted it, saying, "Of course you're afraid. You would have to have rocks in your head not to be afraid. It's OK to be afraid now." Day after day I repeated the same message. In time, with repetition, it got through. My feelings had been normal, there was nothing wrong with me, and I was in a different situation now, one where I could feel my feelings.

Without trying to change anything inside, I offer opportunities. "You never got to choose what kind of ice cream you wanted to eat. How would you like to choose what kind we're going to buy today?" I think what I am doing is introducing the idea of freedom of choice and expanding the number of jobs and skills each alter/part/fragment has, without challenging their fundamental sense of self.

This has turned out to be incredibly useful. I am usually a terrible driver, but I drive much more safely if I coach myself beforehand. "We are going to the supermarket. We are going to drive carefully and cautiously. We are going to pay attention to all the traffic lights, all the cars and bicycles and pedestrians and animals. It's going to be just fine." And when I get there I congratulate myself for doing a great job. Coaching myself like this works in all sorts of situations, like staying more present to cut down on the number of times I fall or bruise myself by walking into a wall or a piece of furniture.

I also adapted a technique I use when my mind wanders during meditation. If a thought, emotion, or sensation appears during meditation, I name it, refuse to act on it, and turn my mind back to my mantra.

To name a thing is to take away some of its power; a name is like an anchor in my mind. Labelling a thought “programming” clearly brackets the thought that I find undesirable and separates it from the “me” that I value. It is now something that was taught me without my permission; it is not my own thinking.

Not acting on the thought or impulse and turning my mind away are weakening the programming by not reinforcing it. Refusing to act on it is avoiding reinforcement and avoiding buying into the cult's value system. Refusing to brood on it, to beat myself up over it, is equally an avoidance of reinforcement. If I spend three days agonising over having had a suicidal thought, that is three days of driving that thought deeper into the grooves of my mind.

This is not the same as denial; I am not shoving anything under the rug. I acknowledge it, deal with it, and move on. If I slip, I just apologise to myself. I don't solidify the programming by feeling guilty about the intrusive thought all day and all night.

Here's how I handled a cult-implanted “don't talk” programme which was triggered by telling my therapist something I was never supposed to remember, let alone talk about. The internal backlash was something fierce. I was haunted by strong urges to suicide, usually in particularly revolting ways. So I started thinking “programming” every time I spotted a self-destructive thought. Note that I did not try to not think of suiciding, because trying not to think something is a losing battle, and consumes a vast amount of energy, besides.

I then gave my kitchen knives to my best friend to hold and recommitted myself to not acting on suicidal urges. Just let them be. If I act on them, I will never get a chance to understand where they came from and what they mean. I'm sure I would have experienced temporary relief if I had cut, but I chose to stay with the thoughts and feelings and see what happened.

Every time I had a suicidal thought I labelled it “programming” and then turned my attention back to everyday activities. After about three days the programme ran its course and faded. I emerged from the situation feeling more empowered. There was more of “me” and less of the programming. The next time a suicide programme kicked in, it was less intense and lasted a shorter time.

I would like to end with a couple of tips. The first one is to phrase things positively, not negatively. The unconscious doesn't hear the “nots” and don'ts”, so that “don't crash into another car” comes across as “crash into another car”. The other tip is not to give up if you don't get immediate results. You would not expect a three-year-old to remember to say “please” after telling them once. When you were programmed, the instructions were repeated many times and it will take many repetitions to counter them. You are not doing anything wrong—it just takes patience.

* * *

Jean has so many good points here, all based on her own personal experience. You may notice that she has a strong front person, who was able to take charge and talk to the inside parts like a mother to children. Even if you do not have a strong front person like hers, you may have some insiders who have taken leadership in the system, and they will be able to do this. One thing I really like about her approach is that she is not dazzled by “programmes” but can see them all as the results of training of younger parts of her mind. These parts were just trying to keep the whole system safe when the body was not safe, and they were happy when those in charge internally gave them permission to have their own life and choices instead of acting on the programming. Her inner dialogue went two ways: the outer part expressing curiosity about the training and educating about the safety of her present life, and the inner parts telling their stories and expressing their present-day needs.

She cautions survivors about watching the words they use in internal conversations, as perpetrator groups have taken ordinary words like "safe" or "love" and given them bad meanings. So, when you talk to your inner parts, ask them what the words you use mean to them. Some words can be cues to close doors so that information will not be available, but if you ask about those words you can discover the programming that is behind these doors closing. One survivor discovered that the word "really" did this—see Chapter Nineteen.

If your system is closed down and seems inaccessible, you might try the exercise she suggested at the start: "Let's pretend." Pretend that you are multiple and draw your system. Or pretend you were molested and write or draw what happened. Or pretend that the image you see is a memory and describe it.

Exercise 13. Dealing with a triggered response

Think of a recent time when you seem to have been "triggered", either with a strong thought or urge, or with an emotional reaction. What happened to you?

What were the events in your present-day life that triggered this reaction?

Thinking of the same event, how did you handle it? If it was an urge, did you act on it?

Did you try to communicate with the parts responsible? If not, try to talk with them now. Find out how old they are and why felt they had to perform this behaviour or create this feeling. Be gentle with them; they might easily feel interrogated because of past experiences.

Enquire inside about whether this response was programmed (that is, the result of a trained part doing his or her job), or just the result of an accidental similarity between something in the present and something in a traumatic experience in your childhood?

If this was purely a post-trauma response, not a programmed one, what could you do to make these inner parts of you feel safer in the present? How could you reassure them that what they fear is not happening now (assuming this is true)?

If the triggering was caused by some insiders doing their jobs, making it a programmed response, find out why they did these jobs at this particular time. What signal did they think they received? Was that signal actually given to them by someone, or were they misunderstanding an ordinary event?

What needs to happen to get them to turn the programme off? Do you need to talk to their internal bosses? If so, do that. Negotiate with insiders until you can get an agreement to turn the programme off, or at least down.

Is there a memory that needs to be put away internally so that young parts will not be triggered? If so, ask your insiders to put the memory away.

Jean Riseman suggests that you now take your mind away from the programmed behaviour, thought, or emotion, and refuse to believe that lie, or dwell on it. Any time it comes into your mind, refuse to act on it or brood about it. As Jean said, "Labelling a thought 'programming' clearly brackets the thought that I find undesirable and separates it from the 'me' that I value. It is now something that was taught me without my permission, not my own thinking."

Using perpetrator-created programmes and triggers for your own purposes

The techniques in this section are somewhat specialised, but are ones which survivors I know have found effective in closing down programmes which are giving them disturbing symptoms. You can use some of the programmes the abusers created for helpful purposes. For example, a part trained not to feel pain can reduce the pain resulting from a re-abusive group contact. A part trained to put other insiders to sleep can put to sleep parts who are programmed to go to group meetings or to harm the body. A part trained to make the others forget events can make the parts who are supposed to report to the perpetrator group forget having talked about the memories.

Most programmes, if they have “on” triggers (cues which trigger trained parts to do their jobs), also have “off” triggers. Some programmes are triggered by particular hand gestures or touches on the body. I have often observed survivors performing such gestures or such touches on their own bodies. One client does a hand signal that tells all her insiders to be calm; another does a touch on her face that enables insiders to forget a memory that was giving flashbacks. There is a touch trigger for sleep, and a part who knows how could use it on your own body. You can ask your insiders to use triggers in this way. However, be sure that the triggers that have the desired effect do not create pain for other insiders, because sometimes they do.

Some survivors do not respond to hand signals or touch triggers unless they are performed by someone else outside the body. If your system works like this, you can ask insiders to show you the “off” triggers and, with their permission, you can ask someone else, such as your therapist or good friend, to use the triggers when you need them performed. Note that if it is necessary for someone to use touch triggers to turn off dangerous behaviours, a part should first be out in the body who does not mind being touched, and who understands that the person doing it is not an abuser just because he or she knows about triggers. One of my clients asks me to do a “sleep” touch trigger on her face to put young ritually abused parts to sleep between sessions, and then a “forget” trigger to make parts temporarily forget any memories we have worked on, so those memories will not “leak” and traumatise her when she is at home.

It must be remembered, however, that this use of perpetrator-installed triggers may be experienced as coercive if the parts being triggered do not consent. *Co-operation is always to be preferred to coercion*, and can often be achieved. For example, a part who is trained to harm or kill the body might agree to be put to sleep or internally isolated until the next therapy session, when the self-harm programme may be undone. It is preferable to convince the internal parts to do these things rather than having an outside person do it via triggers.

Using programme codes

Another way that parts can be helped to change their jobs is through their programme codes, which are sequences of letters and numbers which, when spoken or written by the correct person or in the correct manner, will turn programmes on or off, or even destroy them. These are spoken signals which are taught to parts, and which parts are expected to obey. Your insiders would have to tell you the codes or write them down for you.

For instance, one mind control survivor had assassin programming, the codes for which were songs on a particular record album. Certain insiders sang the songs in his head. Each song brought out a particular part, in sequence, the second to last being the assassin, and the last being one who was supposed to stand around to await getting caught, appearing crazy. The “off” code for the programme was all the lengths of the songs on the album (for example, 4:16, which meant four minutes and sixteen seconds). The survivor could not at that point just say these codes to himself; I had to read them off to him. Now, years later, those in charge of his system are sufficiently co-operative that the programme no longer is turned on at all.

Knowing codes and saying the “off” codes can help in undoing programming. Since it does not remove the trauma that created the programmes in the first place, it simply means that the parts involved no longer have to do their jobs. I believe that if you use such codes, it is wisest to obtain them from inside your own head rather than from elsewhere. Be very aware that if you use codes which you have heard from someone else, they might have unexpected effects, and they might alienate parts in charge of the personality system.

Using programme codes to disarm programmes can be a useful shortcut, but it does not resolve the trauma, which still must be worked through for complete recovery to occur. Neutralising the programmes can be helpful, as they will then not get in the way of the healing. The time period during which a programme is turned off can allow you to work through the memories of the abuses that these programmes represent. Be aware that programmes which have been turned off via codes sometimes get turned on again, perhaps after a time lapse, or because an internal programmer part has discovered they are turned off and turns them on again, or as a result of an internal reactivation schedule.

Asking internal programmers for programme charts

You may have heard of survivors having "internal programmer" parts. Do not be intimidated. These are parts who have been trained to turn programmes on and off in response to environmental cues. When someone speaks a programme code or uses a touch or sight trigger, it alerts an internal programmer to turn a programme on or off, usually through flipping a switch. The programmers usually do not know what effect their switches have, but are heavily trained in obedience and in memorising signals. In most such systems, the switches are located on internal control boards, such as would be found in an electrical circuit-breaker box. Every switch is labelled, usually with some kind of shorthand representing what the training was, when and where it was done, and how many times it was repeated at what ages.

Most deliberately structured personality systems have some kind of control system for the programmes. When you have reached the point where your insiders are working together effectively, you may ask the internal programmers to put together a chart of all the programmes existing within your system, based on the labels on the switches. Once that is done, it is possible to work through the programming memories systematically to permanently disable the programmes and rescue the parts that hold these programmes from their traumas.

As an example, here is how one survivor's internal programmer described his instructions:

> To turn on a programme hit the black button, speak the programme, and then press in the two-numbered code.
>
> To close the programme hit the red button, speak the programme, then press in the reversed two-numbered code.

The first number or numbers followed by a comma is the Programmer level that can activate that code. [There was a programmer part on every level of the system: levels 1 to 9 reflected ages five to thirteen, and level 0 meant every level.]

> The numbers after the comma are the numbers in the alphabet of the first letter of words except the last, and the last letter of the last word of the programme title.

So, for example, the code for the programme "Watching You" was 0, 23, 21. The number "0" meant that internal programmers at all nine levels held this programme, as the training was repeated every year. The numbers 23 and 21 after that were for the W in Watching and the U in You. If this survivor wanted to dismantle the programme by going through the memories, she would have to make sure to deal with all nine instances in which the training was given.

There were around 200 programmes listed. Each programme also had a spoken code, which would turn the programme on or off if spoken. For example, one programme to make the person go home was triggered by the words “butter cookies”, which were innocuously inserted into a letter from her aunt. To turn this programme off, someone would have to say “Butter cookies 19, 2.” The programme to make her go with someone was triggered by the word “cigarette”.

With a list and chart like the one this internal programmer gave me, it is possible both to turn off programmes that have been triggered, and to identify the programmes for working through the memories. It should be noted that another inside part (hidden as a sub-part of a part with a different job) controlled a different set of programmes.

Creating programme “wiring diagrams”

Perpetrator groups sometimes arrange things so that if one programme is interfered with, another programme will be set off. I shall say more about how to deal with this in Chapter Fifteen, “Putting together the traumatic memories”.

Here is an example of such a setup: the front person of a survivor kept alternating between flooding of horrible emotions to flooding of offender memories to having suicidal thoughts. All this started when this survivor began to remember and work on memories of some core programming. When questions were asked internally, she discovered that the insider named “8” (for his age) had been instructed that if the person began to make disclosures about, or to remember, a certain core programme, he was to do his job of turning on the “flood feelings” programme, in which all kinds of unpleasant feelings flooded the front person and everyone inside. This survivor had internal leaders who knew how to turn off programmes and did so when it was needed. However, the insider named “6” had been told that if the “flood feelings” programme was turned off somehow, he was to flood the person with memories of that person being an offender. The insider named “7” had been told that if this memory flooding was turned off, she was to turn on a “suicide” programme. A chain of programmes like this can be quite long. It can also be quite complex. In this case, the parts with the various jobs were from different sectors of the system, and did not know one another.

So, what can you do about it? You can ask questions internally to find out about the programme chain: “What happens if…[this programme] is interfered with? Who is supposed to do something? What is their job?” Then, as this survivor did, you can have the internal leaders gather all the insiders with the jobs of turning these programmes on, update them on their present-day life and why they (the leaders) have chosen to stop doing their old jobs. Invite all those insiders to take on new jobs, such as detecting when the programmes they were supposed to turn on come on for some other reason, turning them off and alerting the internal leaders. If you do this, be sure to invite the “backups” to help with this, too, rather than taking over the original jobs of the insiders whom they believe have now become “traitors”. Now you will have a more co-operative personality system and your emotional life should stabilise.

Effective and ineffective shortcuts

The use of codes, triggers, and wiring diagrams can be considered shortcuts that temporarily shut things down and make you more functional. However, you should know that the key to dismantling or neutralising programming is in your long-term work with the personality system. There are a lot of desperate survivors, and many therapists who promise them that various shortcuts will heal them quickly without their having to go through any of the pain that they endured over their childhood years.

It seems to me to trivialise your pain when someone tells you that your prolonged suffering over twenty or more years can be easily fixed by some simple technique.

Shortcuts can, however, help on a temporary basis, to settle down insiders temporarily while the long-term recovery work is going on. Some people have devised their own effective shortcuts. For instance, one of my mind control survivor clients told his inner children "Whatever they told you to do, do the opposite." He had spent several years actively psychotic while many bizarre programmes were set off. Once he got his inner children to "do the opposite", his system settled down, he began to access the significant abuse memories, and he is now much more functional.

The key to either using a pre-existing shortcut (e.g., finding out programme codes) or developing a new shortcut, like this man did, is for the whole personality system to work together in the service of healing. The parts in charge need to decide to do this. If they do, many things are possible.

The key to all effective shortcuts is really wanting things to be different, no matter what. As survivor therapist Arauna Morgan wrote to the Ritual Abuse and Mind Control (ISST-D special interest group) discussion list (reprinted by permission), "Of the survivors I know, one common thread seems to be that they finally decided that they have had enough. Some of the most impressive deprogramming I have seen was various ways of stating just that, 'I have had enough and I no longer accept…' (fill in the blank)".

Is "deprogramming" effective?

The term "deprogramming" is used in various ways. Self labelled "deprogrammers", such as Steve Oglevie, who work specifically with mind control and ritual abuse survivors, appear to know a great deal about the specific illusions implanted in the minds of survivors programmed by different groups, and the programme codes which have been implanted by these groups. They attempt to discover the type of structured personality system, speak the codes, and rescue the parts from the perceived abuses or internal situations in which they are trapped. The deprogramming is conducted over a period of several days.

However, therapists who have taken their clients to such deprogrammers report mixed results. It appears that the survivor's stage of recovery, along with his or her trust in the therapist, has an effect on whether or not such deprogramming is effective. Psychologist Randy Noblitt has done some of this work, and he sees this strategy as the equivalent of using temporary shutdown codes. In a post (reprinted by permission) to the Ritual Abuse and Mind Control Discussion List, he said that he does not "deprogram" because "…people are not computers even though they may be abused and under traumatic circumstances they may come to believe that they have computers installed inside them…I do not believe any of us can "deprogram"—the brain is not a programmable/nonprogrammable computer".

Noblitt is also critical of the process because, in his experience, it leads to complications: "…it only [gives] a temporary but false sense of recovery to clients (comparable to premature integration)". After applying a method he had learnt to "deprogram" robot parts, he found that

> …the method worked but it kept me and the client in an interminable loop of deprogramming rather than attending to the necessary therapy. For example…It took about 20 minutes for each robot and I could "remove" the robot parts one at a time. However, my client had 1,000 robot parts. Had we continued with that goal in mind we would have been sidetracked and missed the important therapy that she needed.

In fact, Noblitt found that, for his client, deprogramming was not even a shortcut. He developed a way to integrate these "robots" in less than fifteen minutes, without codes or passwords. In the end, he cautions, “Many of the tunnels, mazes, computers, files, etc. [found in these clients] can keep a therapist and client distracted from the work of therapy for a long time”. The real work is developing communication and trust between the inside parts and, when they agree, processing the trauma which led to the programmes.

Exercise 14. Triggers, codes, charts, and diagrams for avoiding programmed responses

Are there any triggers your parts know which you can use to turn off programmes or stop programmed responses from being spun around in your personality system? What are they? Do you know what they will do? Can you use them on yourself, or do they require another person (your therapist, or a trusted friend) to use them?

Are there any spoken words or codes that can turn programmes off? What are they? Do you know what they will do? Can you use them on yourself, or do they require another person (your therapist, or a trusted friend) to use them?

Are you in communication with any internal programmers who could provide you with lists or charts of the programmes and the codes that can turn them on or off? (This generally happens at a late stage of recovery.) If so, ask them for a list to guide your recovery work. If you have a good therapist, give him or her a copy of the list.

Have you found that interfering with any programme (for example, attempting to remember the training) turns on another programme? If so, what has happened? Ask your insiders for a “wiring diagram” of which programmes are triggered by interfering with which other programmes. If you have a good therapist, give him or her a copy of the list.

Have you tried formal “deprogramming”? Has it been helpful? What do your insiders think of it? Do you know anyone else it has helped? Do you know anyone who tried it and found it was not helpful, or was harmful?

Do you have any shortcuts you have developed yourself to turn off and put away post-trauma triggering or programmed responses? If so, what are they? Do you use them consistently? Could they be shared with other survivors?

Are the leaders of your personality system at the point where they are willing to take some risks in order to become free of the ongoing effects of their abusers, know the truth, and know who you really are apart from the interference provided by the abusers?

Give the young part or parts of you that learnt this permission to learn, without being coercive. As Jean Riseman said, “Anybody who wants to listen can. Nobody has to. Anybody who isn't listening can ask others inside about what I said. And I will explain again, too, in case you want to listen later on.” Then educate and explain to them in simple language. You might follow Jean's example here: “I explain that we were raised by people who liked kids to obey and liked to hurt kids. But those people aren't around any more. We don't have to follow their rules. We don't have to agree with them any more. We can make up our own rules. We can change our rules any time we want.” Offer those young parts of you opportunities to change their beliefs and behaviour, without bossing them around. Answer any questions they might have.

CHAPTER ELEVEN

Building inner community

At the start of recovery, most multiples have internal battles for control. The front person usually has little or no control over switching. The parts might fight to be out, or might push others out in order to stay inside. It is important to work on improving internal communication, negotiation, and co-operation. Democratic decision-making is not usually learned in the childhood of a multiple, and can be incredibly difficult. “Eww, Jane got us dressed this morning”, or “I don't like her having sex with *my* body”, or “Why's she making us eat vegetables?” are typical comments that one part will make about another, if the system is a DID one in which the parts actually come out into the body. Parts will often express anger and even hatred for one another, including for the adult whose head or body they inhabit. And the adult front person often hates or resents the insiders, hearing them as threatening or frightening voices. It is hard for all parts, including the front person, to realise that they are all legitimate parts of a greater whole, and to respect the way in which each of them helped that person survive the extreme situation in which you all grew up. It takes a long time.

Survivor Svali puts it this way:

> Sometimes, a system that has broken free from the cult, and has no external hierarchy that they are accountable to, will go through a short period of chaos as word gets out: we're free, and don't have to do what the cult tells us to do any more! Hundreds of internal arguments may break out as to: what do we do for a living? Where do we live? What do we eat/what hobbies will we have? Everybody wants to come out, see the daytime, and live this new, free life. But the freedom may cause imbalance with all of the switching going on inside.

New forms of internal leadership and governance

So, who is to run the show? It makes sense that those who are used to being in charge continue to do it, at least at the start. If these higher-up insiders lose their authority, they might be upset and make trouble for your whole system. They are not intentionally unkind to others; they are just following the orders they were given and the rest of the system is used to obeying them.

However, they might need to learn new methods of governing, and of parenting the little ones, since they tend to do what they originally learnt, which is to threaten and punish. Internal leaders can be quite lonely because, although they are respected and feared, they are generally not liked by those they rule. They can gradually come to be liked as well as respected by maintaining order through kindness rather than cruelty.

And your system's governing council can move gradually from having leaders selected by the abusers to a democracy in which the leaders are selected internally to represent the needs and wishes of each group of parts. Insiders do not have to vie for control, but can learn to co-operate and to meet everyone's needs, though not all at the same time. The council can also guide your recovery work, selecting the memories to work through and avoiding or disabling traps. They can help you create a functional inner family to replace the one that the abusers made in their own dysfunctional image.

I use my stained glass lamp to explain the inner situation to my multiple clients. Each piece of glass is a different colour and shape, but if they all fit together harmoniously, they make a beautiful picture which the light can shine through.

Arauna Morgan's metaphor is a wisteria tree. She writes,

> Wisteria is a vine, so one alone will not stand up as a tree, but if you take each vine and wrap it around the others, then the vines will make a trunk that eventually all grows together and supports the beautiful flowers at the top and turns a flowering vine into a flowering tree with one, solid trunk. Any new vines can just be wrapped around the trunk just like the others were.

Using insiders' job skills to assist in recovery

Many parts define themselves by their jobs, and do not know who they will be when those jobs are gone. This can make them resistant to recovery. But they usually have special skills related to those jobs, and these skills, and even (in some cases) the jobs themselves, can continue to be useful long into the course of recovery. As you meet various insiders, ask them about their jobs, and show appreciation for their skills. Then help them find other ways to use those skills in the service of making the whole personality system healthier.

For example, file keepers have access to the training memories and can keep them contained until the right time, then bring them up when the system is ready to process and resolve them. Observers and recorders can watch your present-day life to make sure you are safe. Spinners can spin peaceful and calm feelings out into the system when other parts are anxious. Pain holders can assist with dental and medical appointments by keeping the pain deep inside, far from the front person. Soldier parts can get the body to exercise. Parts who hold "forget" programmes can make your reporting parts forget anything they might have been trained to report.

Changing names and appearances

Insiders who were named by the abusers sometimes have names that reflect their roles in the abuse. When these parts begin to help with recovery, they often like to give themselves new names. Other insiders might prefer, for example, to communicate with "Alicias" instead of "Satanic Legions", or "Simons" instead of "Satans".

One of my first ritually abused clients had a part who announced he was "Almighty God" (trained, presumably, to make other insiders hear the voice of "God"). I told him I had difficulty calling him that, so was there another name he would be comfortable with? "Well, I always liked Geoffrey," he replied. So he became Geoffrey. In another survivor, I met another "God" recently, whose job was to condemn the other parts and tell them they were going to hell. He was an internal copy of a frightening man standing up high on a pulpit in a church. When he noticed my little dog right in front of him, he softened and became the sweet child that he actually was. This part (and his backups) decided to become the "Dawgs". I sent him an MP3 of a very funny song by Bob Snider entitled "Dog".

You can encourage insiders who were made to believe they looked like fearsome creatures to take off their costumes in the inner world, so that they can look like the children and teenagers that they really were when they were deceived. Abuser groups dress drugged children up in costumes, then they wake up to believing they have claws and fur. They show children “mirrors” which actually have pictures on them, and tell the children this is what they look like. Steve Frankel suggests to survivors that they have “mirrors of truth” which are hidden and do not appear until it is safe for a particular part to see who he/she/it really is under the “suit” that he/she/it wears. *All your insiders are parts of you; none of them is actually an external person.* Those parts who look like abusers can also change their appearance. If they need to maintain authority internally, they can choose to look like someone they admire rather than like the people who hurt you.

Exercise 15. Developing inner democracy

Do you have conflict between some of your insiders, or groups of insiders? Describe it from the viewpoint of one side of the conflict, then from the other side. If this is hard for you, try sitting in a different chair for each side, as though each insider or group of insiders had their own chair. What can be done to resolve it?

Who is in charge of your personality system? How do they run things? What do they need to learn to make things better for all parts?

If you have a governing council inside, do they represent the needs of all parts? Who could be added to the council to make it more representative?

Do internal parts of you continue to do jobs assigned by your abusers? Is this necessary? Which jobs are still needed? Are there parts who have useful skills which could be used in the service of recovery instead of in the service of your abusers?

Do you have parts who would like to change their names or their appearances in the inner world? Who can give them permission? Can your system make this happen?

Exploring and changing your inner world

As we discussed in Chapter Four, most, if not all, survivors of mind control and ritual abuse have some kind of inner world where their insiders live. People's inner worlds differ. Some have magic castles and woodlands, others have prisons and fortresses and control rooms and military installations, still others have cellars and pits and dungeons. Some have what appear to be different worlds and other planets. Most have hidden sections with guards. It pays to explore your inner world, and to make changes in it that will assist your parts to heal.

Since your inner world was probably created by the abuser group, your first explorations of it need to be cautious, looking for traps, conversing with guards if you find them, and learning from them what their jobs are and seeing whether they can assist you in disarming the traps.

If your personality system is one in which the front person is not permitted into the inner world, your internal leaders can select an insider to take charge of the exploration. Regardless of whether you are the front person or a higher-up insider, you will learn a lot from your explorations. Some survivors can walk around their inner worlds and discover their layout and scenery; others only discover it by asking insiders where they are housed.

One good thing about an inner world is that it can be redesigned to give all insiders whatever they need.

Ask each of your groups of insiders where they are housed in the inner world. Often, some are in dungeons, cages, and other horrific places where their real-life body was placed during the abuse. Sometimes their memory was cut off at the point of the abuse, and as far as they are concerned, the abuse is still happening. They not only need to be introduced to the present world, they need to be removed from the abuse scenario and given safe bedrooms, playrooms, or hiding places. If they are naked, give them clothes. If they are cold, give them blankets or heaters. If they are lonely, give them company. If they are overwhelmed by people, give them solitude. If they are dirty, give them a safe way to get clean (I favour a warm, breathable waterfall). If they are injured, give them medicine, salve, and helpful settings such as a healing internal hot tub (this was Trish Fotheringham's idea).

You might wonder why there are structures in your inner world. This is because abuser groups like to know where to find everyone inside. Every part has been assigned his or her place in the structure. This is actually a good reason for you to change things! However, some parts of you might be understandably afraid to mess with what the abuser group has created.

One thing you need to understand is that the abusers cannot actually see into your inner world and discover how it has been altered. They only know what your reporters tell them. However, if you have some parts who are afraid of making changes, you need to get internal agreement first, and make sure no one will suffer punishment, or tell the abusers about the changes you are making.

Then, what do you do with the abuser-created structures? I have found that many survivors like to destroy them, after building better living quarters for the insiders. The soldiers or boy parts who like guns and bombs enjoy using their skills to blow up bad places. They appreciate the chance to use their training for good. However, be sure to get everyone out of structures before destroying them, and look everywhere, even in the walls.

Many survivors have parts trained to set off internal world disasters, which are actually memories of things that were done in childhood. Inner world earthquakes are originally created by abusers shaking up both the child and the model that child has created of his or her inner world. (See Chapter Four for the way inner worlds are constructed.) Inner world tidal waves are created by flooding the world model and almost drowning the child. Tornadoes are created with a leaf blower or wind tunnel, and fires by setting fire to the world model as well as burning the child. An insider is instructed to activate these memories in response to certain triggers, and the rest of the system then experiences the destruction of the inner world. Often, it seems that some parts are "killed" internally. If this happens to you, it helps to recognise that it is a programme, a memory rather than a present-day reality. You can create a healing stream in your inner world in which the "dead" parts can be placed to revive them. And do not forget to find the insiders who set off the programme, negotiate with them about not doing it again, and help them find more suitable jobs.

Exercise 16. Improving your inner world

Are you able to see where your parts live in the inner world? Take as much space as you need to describe all the different places they have let you know about. It might help to draw that world or the structure in which the parts are located.

Are there places in your inner world that are frightening or unpleasant for the parts who live there? Can you get those parts out of there?

Can you find an insider or a group of insiders who know how to build new places for the others to live in? What would you like them to build? It might help to draw what you would like.

Now, ask the builders, or those in charge of your inner world, to create new living spaces for the parts who need them.

Meeting insiders' needs

When you meet your inner parts, they bring with them many of your unmet needs from earlier years. When an insider's life experience gets cut off at a particular age because of trauma, he or she remains at that stage of development, and experiences the needs of a child of that age. One survivor I know (in her late thirties) tells me that she does not think there is any genuine adult in her, only kids who pretend to be adults. Many survivors feel this way. Most survivors of mind control and/or ritual abuse have many unmet childhood needs, such as safety, connection, nurturance, friendships, intellectual stimulation, physical activity, creativity, and play. In order for your parts to grow up, you need to meet those needs, at least in part, for each stage of development.

You can meet your younger parts' needs to some extent both within the inner world, and outside in the body. You can give the babies safe places to sleep, warm and comforting clothes, blankets, stuffed animals and imaginary pets. Older insiders can look after them, or you can make them new imaginary companions and care-givers based on good people you have known, or have read about in books, or seen in films and television shows.

Adults and older insiders can read children's stories to the younger child parts. When you borrow a children's book from the library, the librarian will assume it is for your front person's real children, or your niece or nephew. Recorder parts can store these books in the internal library for inside reading. Child parts can colour in colouring books, or do their own artwork. They can play at the park, climb trees, walk along the beach and throw stones into the water. They can look after a pet. Older children can construct models or play video games. All these things can happen either out in the real world, or internally, or both. The front person does not have to be present.

As you improve your life and the life of your inner parts, you need to strike a balance between adult activities (such as work, shopping, parenting, adult friendships, and relating to your partner if you have one) and child activities. If you are fortunate enough to have friends who understand your multiplicity, your child parts can even have real-world friends. Or they can sneak out or come close to the surface when you are playing with a real-world child, as long as an inner adult is watching to make sure they do not do anything inappropriate.

Sources of healing can also be both internal and external. If the insiders can let the front person know when they feel pain or discomfort, you can make sure you get proper medical attention. (Pain and discomfort are often held in child parts rather than experienced by the adult front person.) You might benefit from massage or acupressure, as long as everyone inside knows you will not be abused. Physical activity, too, is essential for health, and is something that many of your child parts may enjoy, especially if you choose activities that they like.

Sometimes, when parts connect internally, negative emotions and bodily pain “leak” from one part into another. In some personality systems, it is difficult for older parts to look after little ones because they begin to feel the little ones' pain. You can try various things to deal with that. LisaBri has her little ones inside bouncing around in “space suits” that prevent emotions and bodily pain from leaking from one part into another. Another survivor imported the whole cast of the television show MASH (doctors and nurses) into her inner world to look after the insiders. She also created nannies based on Mary Poppins.

Until the traumatic memories are worked through, you will have children inside who are in physical and emotional pain from those memories. Insulating the system by such things as space suits has to be only a temporary measure, until the memories can be addressed. Meanwhile, the children can be removed from internal places which are copies of the settings where they were abused, given better internal places to live, and taught that they are now safe and will not be abused any more.

Often the same child parts who took the original pain take new current pain from injuries or illnesses. They need to be encouraged to speak up rather than suffer in silence, as when they suffer, the whole system suffers. Tell them that their pain and unhappiness affects everyone, and if they can let the older ones know, something might be done to reduce that pain. It is often difficult for inside children to speak up when they are afraid, sad, anxious, or in pain, since they might have been brought up with the refrain “Don't bother the adults. Children should not be seen or heard.”

You can give parts who are not yet ready to emerge into the external world viewing screens or windows so they can watch your present-day life, and discover how different it is from the years that they remember. Arauna Morgan gives such parts their own consoles, with big screens that they can sit in front of, with headphones and controls to turn the sound up, down, or off, adjust the brightness and colour of the picture (or turn it off), and turn the emotions up, down, or off. This way they can safely see and experience what is happening on the outside without having to come out or interfere with what the front person is doing.

Exercise 17. Meeting everyone's needs

Describe each of the insiders you know within your personality system. If it is a very complex system, describe the groups of insiders. For each insider or group:

How old are they?
What do they like doing?
What do they need?
How could you provide for those needs in the external world?
How could you provide for those needs in the inner world?

In the following section, survivor Jen Callow recounts her experience of making her personality system a happy and co-operative one. It has many inspiring suggestions for other survivors. (This article is also in my book for therapists (Miller, 2012).)

Jen Callow: “How I created my inner community: living happily without integration”

When I first discovered I was multiple, I had well over 700 inner parts and very little communication between them. Most of my parts didn't know the others existed. They were still very afraid and alone. After years of healing, I now have a loving community inside. We support each other and have inner cities and towns where we live and play together. Now, when we find new parts, we can help them leave their programme lines and become a larger part of our inner world (my abusers set up my inner system as a spider-web of interconnected lines holding programmes and parts). Throughout this process, we do our best to make sure everyone has a voice and is heard. We meet competing needs, and organise, plan, and develop a growing inner world that in turn helps us to increase a sense of belonging and connectedness, supporting and caring for each other.

When we finally started therapy with a therapist who understood dissociation, many of us were isolated and living in terror. We were shut away in our inner world—in boxes, cold basement rooms, and in any other number of locations depending upon our memories. We were locked in our programmes, often starving or in pain. Our inner system had torture and abuse going on similar to what our abusers had inflicted upon us. We didn't trust each other, and only a very few of us knew and trusted our therapist. We were afraid that we, someone we cared about, or the world would be destroyed if we started working with our inner system.

Over time, we came to trust our therapist and then slowly learnt to trust each other. After we learned how to be co-conscious and to create inner TV screens so parts could safely view the outer world, we created an inner movie of our life that we could show newly discovered parts, to bring them up to date and show them that we were safe now. (This movie's content was huge and growing, but it only took a few minutes for parts to see and absorb it, and now we can share it in seconds.) Eventually, we got so we could talk to each other clearly in our minds and didn't need the therapist as much for communication.

Our inner world's physical environment evolved, as well. At the end of each session, our therapist would make sure any new parts had a comfortable place to live with their immediate needs met. We built a welcoming mansion filled with many bedrooms, a large common area, full bathrooms with large tubs for bubble baths, a large kitchen and eating area with long benches and tables, and several playrooms. Each bedroom could be decorated and furnished however its resident(s) wanted, and had doors that could lock, and a window, if one was wanted. Stuffed animals were an important comfort item, as were pets. We made sure that none of the pets would harm any of the other pets (e.g., cats would leave hamsters and fish alone) and that they were friendly. When we later discovered infant parts, we added comfortable nurseries with care-givers, and created items such as slings to carry the babies in, bottles, rattles, and changing stations. Now, there was a more harmonious feeling inside.

Eventually, we developed many more buildings. We now had a healing area full of herbals, liniments, and soothing sights and sounds: beautiful gardens and grounds, an ocean and beaches, forests, and opportunities for expression and recreation. We created spaces for soccer games, a dance hall, music and art rooms, safe rooms for yelling in and letting out anger, even a skateboard park. Every addition encouraged us to work together, to interact more, and to have more relaxation and fun. As we played soccer, ate, and lived together, we began to feel more and more like the family we had missed out on. This was every bit as important in our healing as the actual memory work.

Some of our parts needed a lot of time on their own, so it was important to create and give them some quiet space. Some parts preferred to live in tree houses, or in cottages in the woods. Sometimes our inner towns didn't work at all for certain parts. Rather than force these parts to assimilate, we created other inner worlds for them. There was a group of teenagers that loved the Dragonriders of Pern series when they were growing up. We created a version of Pern with them, where they could live together with their dragons and fly through the skies each day. Several children were very attached to an animated adventure show they had watched when they were out in the body, and created a world like this for themselves to live in, complete with all the good guys. The bad guys were created as a vague danger the children were in complete control of; the bad guys would take whatever form and strength the children wanted and the children, who were the heroes, always won. Parts could travel between worlds whenever they wanted, so no one was truly alone and we could still access these worlds and parts when processing memories.

Running the programmes and keeping constant vigilance over our system had been the only way for many of our parts to feel powerful and to avoid feeling physical or emotional pain. After we'd processed a memory, our therapist made sure to help each part find a new job and purpose. This included the children, if they wanted a smaller job. For example, the soldiers who had terrorised our system were put in charge of security, record keeping, and maintaining the soccer field.

Some responsibilities in our inner world are large and time consuming, such as cooking, cleaning, and looking after the infants. Another task we struggled to fill consistently was taking the children on field trips to places inside, such as a fun version of school where we could teach them about the outer world. It was hard for the few parts doing this to come up with enough ideas. At the suggestion of a friend who was multiple, we set up a rotation of chores and responsibilities. Now, older parts that take on a larger role can take regular vacations and we have parts who have been taught how to fill in. Over the years, we have also created inner people (different from the parts already in our system) to help with various tasks, such as a healer, gardener, cook, and care-givers for the infants. We find it works best to still have our parts help with chores, as it builds a sense of pride in our community and shared responsibility, but this way the risk of parts burning out from overwork is reduced.

Many of our parts lived in suffering and deprivation. One aspect of their healing is recognising that they matter and that their needs can be easily filled, provided no one will be harmed in the process. If a part wants a specific toy or needs an extra blanket, those items can appear for them right away. However, sometimes more work is required to ensure a need is met. Although we can have food items available immediately, for reasons unknown to us we still need to cook and prepare these items for a proper meal, so outside of meal times we try to have pre-made snacks readily available. In addition to inner people to help with chores, we've added many other helpers to our inner world, from a therapist for the children to care-givers who give us back rubs before bed. The care-givers also help the younger parts with baths, getting changed, and getting tucked into bed. Many of our parts enjoy tending large flower and vegetable gardens, and we created several gardeners who help with bigger jobs. Female vocalists (we don't trust men easily) sing lullabies to parts who enjoy this, and can soothe crying infants.

After much debate, we also recently added loving, sexual partners for those parts who needed this inside. Many of these parts were children, but their sex needs were huge as a direct result of the abuse. In the end, we felt it was better to create people who could provide loving sexual contact, respecting the children's wishes and needs, rather than have these parts feel ashamed and suffer from their overwhelming urges. It has worked well for us, as several months later, many of these children are now asking more often for non-sexual, loving touch, with these inner people taking on more of a nurturing friend or care-giver role.

In addition to caring for each other inside, we take care of our inner environment. At one time, we were concerned that all the emotions we were releasing would have a negative effect on our inner world. We are very sensitive to energy and were taught that our feelings were toxic to others when we were growing up. So, we created some areas that transformed the energy from our feelings into the good feeling energy of our waterfalls, trees, and other natural spaces. In keeping with our own beliefs, we think of this transformative power as “earth energy”, the earth changing the energy and helping good things to grow. This helps us in the outer world, too, as nature has always been grounding and nurturing for us. We envision our outer environment and the earth transforming our feelings, so it now feels safer for us to express emotions. In the interest of environmental sustainability, we also have inner areas where we bury our garbage, recycling it so the earth can transform it into electricity, food for plants, and other new kinds of energy for our inner world.

Our outer and inner worlds are deeply interconnected. In caring for each other and our inner world, we learn how to take care of ourselves in the outer world, and also how to care for the earth and other people. As we experience caring from others in the outer world, we learn that we matter and discover how we like to be treated, which we can then mirror inside.

Without the care and attention spent both on our parts and our inner world, we would never have made it this far. Even today, when things feel chaotic in our outer world, as is the case for us now during some major life transitions, we can look inside and help calm ourselves through creating more stability in our inner world and attending to parts' fears and needs. Lately, we have been holding regular inside meetings for any parts who want to attend. In our inner world, we sit out in nature; we sing, talk, play music, and release feelings and outdated beliefs (e.g., often we'll write these on pieces of paper and throw them into a small bonfire, over which we later roast marshmallows, which makes it feel less like a ritual and more like fun). The buildings, recreational areas, nature, and living spaces play a huge part in our sense of inner peace and security.

How we built our inner world is specific to our preferences and to the way our inner system was initially set up during the abuse. Every survivor's system is unique and offers many ways to build a community or create objects inside. It's important to work with what's already in the inner system, as opposed to fighting it and trying to shut it all down. Although areas can be transformed, in our experience the building blocks of the inner world remain the same. Through creativity and patience, it is possible to have co-operation and harmony between any number of parts, and a thriving inner community. With an increasing sense of inner peace and community, it is not only possible for survivors to create happier lives for themselves in the outer world, it is possible for them to truly heal.

* * *

Now, you do not have to do things the way Jen did. She is a very creative person who devoted a tremendous amount of energy and creativity to her inner world, creating and improving it as someone might do if they were writing a complex series of novels. The important thing is that she found ways to modify her inner world to create harmony and meet the needs of all her insiders—and so can you.

It might be helpful for you to go through Jen's article and write down any ideas that you would like to implement in your own healing.

Some inner worlds provide a particular challenge because they are designed with programmed traps so that parts cannot get free. Here is one survivor's highly detailed description of an unpleasant inner world, how she worked with it, and how she managed to dismantle it. But Arauna did more than that: as she discovered her inner parts, hidden inside the structures, she found out what had happened to these parts to imprison them there, and in getting their stories she dismantled all the programming and freed herself from the mind control that the abusers designed!

Arauna Morgan: “Dismantling my inner structures”

One of the purposes of my programming was to create inside parts who were trapped or imprisoned in an internal structure (that could be seen by the system internally, if they knew where to look) that the cult had created, so they could be called out for specific duties. Parts were only released long enough to perform a prearranged function, then they returned to the structure. In my inner world, every part of the structure, even the booby traps, was an inside part of me, programmed to be something else.

Deep inside, there were walls containing the only parts that had not been programmed. If I talked to them, the wall would dampen not only what they said, but also the emotions they projected. I learned to thin the wall in order to communicate with them. The cult had discovered these parts, sometimes years after their programming was done, and just neutralised them by enclosing them in walls. There was gold in those walls! Those were the parts that would later help rescue programmed parts and dismantle the programme structures.

In my system there were entities that would attack if not appeased in a prescribed way. After all of the entities were pleased and calm, no traps would be tripped. At one time, I thought the entities were not part of my system, so I tried to send them away. I found that they kept coming back; they no longer attacked, but were still there. I learnt that when something does not go away, there is an inside person in it somewhere. There were often shells that contain parts of me. The shell could look or act like anything that can be imagined, even a real person, but they were not themselves people. There were layers of shells.

I noticed that all shells would start to lose definition and turn into blobs when separated from their original placement by the programmer. I had an internal safe place where I put all rescued inside parts. There was one part that I pulled out of a cement floor. The part looked like a foetus. It did not move, but I knew it was alive. I could not help that part right away, so I left it in the safe place, while I tried to figure out what to do. A week later it had degraded into a blob. I thought it did not belong and tried to send it away, but it would not leave. I finally opened it, as one would unwrap a present, and there was a part of me inside.

My programming would be “unlocked” by a programmer to improve upon the training of an obedient inside part, then would be “locked” by the programmer to trap parts within the structure if they were no longer useful to the cult. In one spot, parts who were designed as mythical creatures were created at the top and bottom of the Tree of Life. Then a part was created with the sole purpose of antagonising the two creatures at the top and bottom of the Tree and turning them against each other. In my system there were several such scenarios where I had to convince antagonistic parts that the true enemy was outside and we needed to co-operate to be able to better our lives.

I took apart one structure by myself, using my primary parts as care-givers for the rescued ones. Then I was ready to take a break before diving into the next structure, but my primary parts did not wait; that night and every night thereafter, they worked at dismantling structures and rescuing the parts that were trapped inside. Daytime was reserved for me to remember exactly what the programmer said while I was being programmed for a particular piece of the structure we were working on, to be able to finish dissolving the structure and freeing the parts inside.

I am now integrated/co-concious with only one other part, but back then my primary inside parts were very helpful and often worked on problems on their own. Most of the time I was aware of what they are working on, because I asked them for help and I felt slightly dissociated while they worked. They would dismantle the programming structures at night, so I did not get a very good night of sleep when this happened.

The last and very necessary step of dismantling the structure, for me, was to remember exactly what the programmer told me and the imagery that I created from this; once I realised that the structure was that way because of what someone told me, I was able to dissolve it permanently. Strangely, just knowing that the programmer told me did not work; I had to remember *exactly* what he said, and what *I* did in response. What I did in response to what they said was just as important as what they said for me to get rid of the structure.

* * *

Arauna's approach was effective in removing her programming and freeing her inner parts, as well as in remembering what had happened to her. She is now a free, competent human being who is able to help other survivors. One thing I admire about her approach is that she was unafraid to discover what had happened to her, or to the child parts of her. Essentially she

- explored the inner world and structures created by the perpetrator group;
- found the children imprisoned there by their programming;
- discovered what had been said and done by both them and the perpetrators to imprison them there, thus dissolving the structures in which they were held;

- helped these parts escape and move to safe inner places where their needs could be met.

If you take this approach, you will not have to spend so much of your life resisting programmed urges and emotions, but will be truly freed from them. Jeannie's approach of identifying what had been programmed, resisting it, and giving inner children permission to be free in their present-day lives is a first step. Arauna's approach of discovering how the programmes were made is a wonderful second step which actually undoes the programming!

And now, for the next step towards complete healing, follow Arauna's approach: while not acting on the programmed urge, set aside some time to explore internally and find out who inside holds the programming and what happened to create this programme. Assist these parts to share their stories with one another and with the important insiders, so that you can discover how you were trained and deceived. Important to this process is remembering what the perpetrators said, and what you did in response. Chapters Fourteen and Fifteen will go into detail about working with the traumatic memories which created the programmes, because it is important to share not only the stories but also the emotions and bodily feelings involved in these traumatic memories.

CHAPTER TWELVE

Coping with daily life

Many survivors of ongoing childhood trauma often have difficulty managing daily life as adults. They are usually out of touch with their bodies, and so they do not know when they need food, or rest, or exercise. They are out of touch with their emotions, and so they do not know what they like or dislike. And their emotions are not accurate gauges of what is going on in their lives in the present, because they are so often a response to post-traumatic triggers. Survivors often do not have personal boundaries, as theirs were perpetually violated in childhood. They lacked an intimate, nurturing connection with their parents, and so they do not know how to build one with their friends, spouses, and children. Their sleep is disturbed, because it was disturbed by abusers in childhood. They have difficulty with many areas of everyday life, often because of post-traumatic reactions in which they react to something in the present as though it were the past when the abuse was still happening.

There are many self-help resources for childhood trauma survivors to help them deal with living, and I shall not try to duplicate what those resources offer. Instead, I shall share the problems—and solutions—that are unique to survivors of mind control and ritual abuse. In Chapter Ten, we looked at how self-harm, suicide attempts, flashbacks, panic, and despairing states are often the result of trained insiders doing their jobs, and we shall look at this topic in more depth, as well as looking at the post-traumatic responses which survivors often experience, such as difficulties with cult ritual dates and birthdays. Programmed reactions are usually post-traumatic reactions that are, to some extent, under the control of trained insiders. But post-traumatic reactions that are not programmed are also common in survivors, especially if they have also experienced abuse that did not involve deliberate mind control.

A theme you may notice in this and subsequent chapters is that often the best solutions to the problems of everyday living are the interventions we already discussed in the earlier chapters: getting to know the leaders of your personality system, building a co-operative inner community, and having the parts who have been doing abuser-assigned jobs find new jobs which are actually helpful to the system as a whole.

In my experience, there are particular areas of daily living that are common to survivors. In addition to giving my own suggestions, I asked LisaBri to comment on some of these topics, to add a survivor's perspective.

Improving your sleep

Almost all child abuse survivors that I know have difficulties with sleep. The most common problems are insomnia and nightmares. Insomnia often stems from the fact that much childhood sexual abuse occurs at night, most rituals happen at night, and inside parts prepare for rituals by abstaining from sleep for days. LisaBri writes,

> Sleep patterns need to be rebuilt—a continuous life filled with interrupted sleep can leave you angry, scared, tired, and unable to cope with daily life. Uninterrupted, continuous sleep every night will help heal your mind and body.
>
> If you have a cell phone or other battery-operated device, you know how important it is to plug it in and recharge it. Well, we too have to be recharged, and sleep is the time when we recharge our batteries. So anything you can do to make it easier to get plenty of sleep will help in your recovery process.
>
> It helps to have a night light. If it's too bright to have one in the bedroom, you can leave it in the hall just outside the bedroom door. Make sure that nothing in your bedroom is a particular reminder to your parts of events that happened to them—although the fact that it is a bedroom may be part of the problem for some parts. It also helps to have a lock on the bedroom door, and make sure the lock is closed (as well as all outside doors and windows) when you go to bed each night. If you can't do this because you sleep with someone else, or because you have children who may need you, you may find that some parts of you stay awake and “stand guard” when you are sleeping. This may not be harmful as long as they take turns and all parts get some sleep. A dog who will bark at intruders can also help.

People who are dissociative, and especially those who have experienced mind control and/or ritual abuse, might have inner parts who only came out at night in childhood, and are now awake primarily at night. These parts have a kind of reversed “biological clock”, and become active when it goes dark. One thing you can do is give them some time during the day or the evening to be around and do things they want to do, such as using the computer, or drawing, or house cleaning. Then they can make themselves tired and may learn to sleep when the body sleeps. It is a bit more difficult than recovering from jetlag (which happens when you have been in a country in a distant time zone), as it is the sight of darkness that wakes these insiders up. So, you need to educate them about your present life, that (if you are currently safe) nothing is going to happen at night now, and they do not have to be ready for things that will not happen.

Nightmares might happen as punishments for remembering or talking about your abuse. You know how to deal with this if you have read Chapter Ten. If you are experiencing nightmares as punishment, this might give you a clue about the existence of insiders who are still doing their jobs when those jobs are no longer necessary. One of my survivor clients has recently been getting one particular nightmare and flashback, and it led me to discover some inside children who did not know they are currently safe and were giving these things as preparation for a ritual which they no longer have to attend. Finding these children, updating them, and asking their leader to join the inner council, resolved the problem.

Nightmares may also come up because some inner parts of you are remembering these bad events, and the barrier between conscious and unconscious is weaker at night. Nightmares and dreams can be an important source of information about what happened to you, and about the important issues to be resolved in your life. Try writing down your nightmares, and asking your parts about them during the day or taking them to your therapy session. Two of my ritually abused clients get the most information about what happened to them through their dreams and nightmares.

Nightmares and dreams also frequently represent the relationship between your parts, including conflict between them, and parts helping or rescuing other parts from bad internal places. These are worth recording, too, as they will give you clues about the insiders who need help and what you can do to help them. If you are going to have such dreams, you might as well make use of them in your healing process.

Making up for memory gaps

Some people who are multiple often have difficulty keeping track of their time, knowing what they have and have not done, and finishing tasks. This is especially true if they have DID. Parts might fight for time out in the body to do the things they want to do. You might find that you have begun an activity and then abandoned it when someone else came out into the body, and you might not remember things that another part did. You can have difficulty if child parts come out when you are driving, or even adult or teenage parts who do not know their way around town. Even if your front person never switches, you can suffer from poor organisation as the ones just behind the front shell change places and your memory for what you were doing or planning to do becomes confused.

One practical thing that may help is to keep a daytimer book in which you write your appointments and other plans, and make sure that whoever is out in the body looks in it frequently, and writes in it. It can also help if you keep a communication book in which all parts can write things they want the other parts to read, such as activities they want to do or food they want to eat.

The book *Coping with Trauma-Related Dissociation* by Boon, Steele, and van der Hart (2011) has an excellent chapter titled “Establishing a healthy daily structure”, and I recommend it for detailed suggestions on this topic, and for many other topics relating to multiplicity rather than specifically to mind control or ritual abuse. The primary solution to organisational or memory problems is, of course, improving communication with your parts. If you do not remember a part of your day, ask your insiders what happened and let them tell or show you. If there is an important appointment that you must attend, or task you must do yourself, let your parts know that it is important they permit you to do this. If you have an inner governing council, they can make sure that child parts are kept inside when you have adult tasks to do.

Learning to relax and play

Many multiples had childhoods in which they were regarded as slaves, and had to work all the time. Mind control and ritual abuse survivors have many parts who believe they exist only to do the jobs assigned by their abusers. These parts are often young children. They have never experienced the joy of playing, moving their bodies, trying out new things, seeing what they like and dislike, and being creative. All these experiences are essential for children to grow up into their true selves. Play therapy is a recognised treatment for children, because through play they can tell the truth about what happened to them, express anger at their abusers, and work out their issues symbolically with dolls or action figures. You can allow your young parts to do this, too, at least when you are alone at home.

You can also go to the park or the beach, play with toys at home, borrow children's books from the library to read to the little ones, and sometimes find real children to play games with. When inner children get “air time” in the body in the real, present world, they begin to meet their developmental needs, and, as a consequence, they begin to grow up in a natural way. It is very important to give them this opportunity, dividing your time between the adults and the children in a way that works for all.

It is easy for people who were work slaves in childhood to remain work slaves in adulthood, when there is no external person to impose this on them. Take a look at your life and see whether you, or any inner parts of you, need more recreation, creativity, and play. Then try to find a way to build this into your weekly schedule. LisaBri's suggestion is,

> You have young insiders who want to play. Play is essential to their healing. If you as an adult are embarrassed to be seen in public doing childhood play things, e.g. swinging on swing sets with 4 year olds, or splashing in a wading pool, work up to it. Begin with play in your home in private, and when that feels all right invite a friend over who has a child and let your kids come out and play. Work towards venturing outside to public swing sets only when your inner kids are ready.
>
> You can pick a time when there are not many adults around, to reduce your front person's embarrassment.

Learning to enjoy your body

Believe it or not, bodies are designed to experience comfort and pleasure. They do experience pain, but the purpose of pain is actually a signalling system to help you avoid more pain and keep yourself safe. However, mind-controlling abusers actually use your body to exert their control over your mind by administering pain, sexual feelings, and drugs. So, many parts of you probably do not even want to have a body, because being in it means you might experience those sensations that you do not want.

Bodies have many senses: sight, hearing, taste, smell, and the various skin sensations. Each of these can bring pleasure rather than pain if you discover your body's ability to feel good in various ways. Sexual feelings are a special case, and will be discussed in Chapter Seventeen, because abusers have misused them so much. But discovering your body's senses can be a wonderful experience of coming alive. Survivors' bodies are often in a frozen state, feeling little or nothing.

In addition, some of your parts might have had their entire life experience in such places as dungeons, or control rooms, or cages, and have never experienced sunlight, or warmth, or comfort. It is very important that these parts discover the good that can come when their senses are exposed to positive things.

The following is Wendy Hoffman's account of how, even though she had been abused, she learned to live in her body and enjoy its sensory (non-sexual) pleasures.

Wendy Hoffman: "Defrosting"

I was fortunate that the teenage boy my handlers sent to love me before he was sacrificed was a very good person, saintly. I was three years old and had not yet been loved. On my mother's wing chair in the family living room, he let me sit on his lap, suck my left thumb, place my right ear on his heart, and match my breath to his. (There was nothing sexual about it.) And so I learned to commune with another person, feel part of the universe and a sensuous, comforting delight in being alive.

Few good things happened after that, but I enjoyed the sweetness of fruits, vanilla ice cream, the hills in my neighbourhood which gently rocked me to sleep and the breeze which caressed, especially right before it rained. I came to this enjoyment naturally.

I had a theatre-type mother and she took me to dance class in Manhattan three times a week. At that time, I hated the rigidity of ballet. It was not at all pleasurable and sometimes hurt. When I was fifteen, I discovered modern dance and became interested. I acquired a sense of sculpting space with my body, beginning and ending a sequence of movement on time and feeling underlying rhythms. I studied the transitions between one movement and another, which felt delicious to me. As an adult, I studied Kinetic Awareness with Elaine Summers in New York City. The goal of this body movement technique is to locate frozen tension in the body and release it. I noticed I held my breath, understandable because of all the traumas piling up, but not beneficial. Slowly, I started to exhale and consequently to feel. The frozen tension in my upper back was solid. By moving my limbs from my joints slowly and internally, I started to melt and feel as if I had bones, blood, organs, skin, and pores.

The more my body softened, the more I remembered breathing and sucking my thumb on that cherished boy's lap—that is, the boy they killed.

It had been difficult for me to communicate deeply with people. But when dancers move in a group, there is a deep wordless bond that forms between them.

I could not leave my body when I danced. In ordinary life, I orbited around my body. When I danced, I stayed in it, a new experience. In regular life, I slumped, hid my torso, and showed how beaten down I was. When I danced, I elongated my spine. Using my body as an instrument, as if it were a violin or vocal cords, I learnt it was more than an object for others to abuse.

If I were to stay alive, I had to have a little pleasure each day. It couldn't be all trauma. The front person did not know, or knew just a little, about the abuses, but the front person had the job of finding something pleasurable.

Soft ice cream, melons, walking in the wind, moving, sunshine—something to keep going and bring the body back to life, make it sentient, let it know there is more than just frozen tension.

Exercise 18. Exploring your bodily senses

Here are a few things you might try to take back your body and explore the pleasures of your senses.

- Notice your breath. Don't change it or judge it. Just observe it. Befriend and bless it. You are still alive.
- Scan your body for tension. Your whole body may be frozen in tension. Direct your breath to where your tension hurts you. When you exhale, exhale into those spots.
- Become aware of every inch of your body. Include your toenails, your eyelashes and the hair under your arms.
- Eat a piece of dark chocolate very slowly, letting each nibble melt in your mouth.
- Walk barefoot in warm sand or over a soft lawn.
- Stand outside in the sunshine and enjoy the sensation of the sun on your skin.
- Stand in the wind. If it's a little breeze, let yourself feel its gentleness on your skin. If it's a strong wind, lean your body on to it.
- Stand in the rain, and let it run over your face and into your mouth. Drink the rain the way the trees and flowers drink it.
- Run your fingers over the velvety petal of a flower. Put your face close to it and feel the texture of its fragrance.
- Walk through a flower garden and pause to smell each different kind of flower. Now, look at all the colours of the different flowers and their different shapes, and enjoy their beauty.
- Pet a furry animal. Rub your face in the fur. Hug it and enjoy the feel of the fur on your body.
- Move, run, dance through space. Feel the space as palpable.
- Dance, all by yourself, expressing your emotions in the way you move your body. Experiment with different emotions, allowing your inside parts to express these through movement.
- Sing, shout, scream as you move.
- Choose your favourite fruit and savour its flavour as you eat it slowly. Think of yourself as part of the bounty of nature, like that fruit.
- Listen to a bird singing. Watch a bird flying and imagine yourself flying, spreading your wings and riding on the wind.
- Run, jump, row, exercise, and feel the strength of your muscles.
- All the way through, say to yourself and to your inside parts “This is *our* body. We can enjoy it. No one else is in charge of it. It belongs to us alone.”
- Resolve to give yourself a pleasurable experience each day. In the morning, or the night before, plan the next day's enjoyable experience.

If any of the items in this list are triggering for you, take time to put away any feelings that have been triggered and rescue any inside children you find.

Learning to eat normally

Survivors of mind control and ritual abuse often have difficulties with eating. Many find certain foods to be reminder triggers of various kinds of sexual abuses, especially oral sex, and sometimes the names of certain foodstuffs are code for various sexual actions that a survivor had to perform in childhood. In this case, it is important to avoid these foods at first, then gradually teach your child parts what these foods are and why they are not harmful. There are also programmes for bulimia, anorexia, and overeating (sometimes to hide pregnancies), and these can be triggered in a personality system that is at war with itself. If you have one of those problems, you want to enquire inside about whether it is a programme before you attempt to get help for it. If it is not a programme, you can benefit from eating disorders treatment. *Secret Survivors*, by E. Sue Blume (1991), has an excellent section on eating disorders.

Sleep deprivation and the withholding of nourishing food were ways to keep your body and mind weak and easy to manipulate into compliance by an abuser. This is why it always happened as preparation before rituals. Sometimes survivors find they have insiders who prepare for rituals by stopping eating (and sometimes sleeping) three or more days before the ritual date. If you find yourself hungry but unable to eat, check with your insiders to see whether anyone might be preparing for a ritual.

Good, healthy food and sleep rejuvenate your body, giving you the strength you need to heal. So it is important to work on helping your parts be at ease with eating. Give yourself permission to buy food that everybody likes, and learn about healthy foods so that you do not just live on sweet snacks, which some child parts might prefer.

Note: The next sections could trigger flashbacks, and strong emotional reactions, so be prepared to put the images away and comfort those with feelings. If your system leaders read it, they might be able to develop a plan to address these problems.

Becoming comfortable in the bathroom

Bodily fluids and excretions, as well as baths and drowning, are on the list of phobias in Chapter One associated with being a survivor of mind control and/or ritual abuse. This is because of horrendous childhood experiences. Washing after rituals is often a painful experience, drowning and waterboarding are common methods of torture, and bodily excretions are used both in rituals and as punishment. Many survivors have trouble allowing themselves to urinate or defecate, especially if child parts are out. This is because abused children are made to hold their urine for a long time, or are given enemas (which are a form of rape). One survivor was told as a child that every time she moved her bowels, the smell would tell everyone her role in the cult.

Bathroom privacy can help: a door that locks, and taking the time to let the inner child parts know that no one else can get into the room. With time and encouragement, they can overcome their fears. You might need to take time to explain the present situation to them: “We have our own bathroom now, no one is going to come and get us. It's OK to have no clothes on in the shower; no one will see us, and we can wash ourselves gently. It feels good to empty our bladder or our bowels and to be clean.”

LisaBri says,

> As an adult it is okay to give yourself permission to let go and empty your bladder and you will not be punished. Wetting your pants in childhood was the result of your abusers not letting you pee. As a baby you soiled your diaper—that is what they are for!—and were punished. It is okay to be fresh, clean and empty of body wastes.

Learning to recognise illness and injury

Children being abused by organised perpetrator groups are taught to hide their pain and suffering so that no outsider will suspect the ongoing abuse, and also so that they will endure the abuse silently. When a child is being brutally sexually abused, for example in prostitution, he or she has to pretend to enjoy the experience. Stella Katz, a former cult trainer, says that the trainers deliberately link pain parts and sex parts, so that one part enjoys sexual experiences while the hidden pain-holder takes the pain. A cruder form of hiding pain occurs when a vicious parent is beating a child, and crying or screaming makes the beating worse, so the child learns to be silent. I have met several survivors with parts who scream constantly in the head, with the screams they could never let happen out loud.

People who have learnt in this manner to hide their pain and suffering tend to continue to do so even when they need to ask for help for such things as injuries and painful illnesses.

“Regular” childhood (including school attendance) for a ritually abused or otherwise tortured child is a time for pushing away physical pain, exhaustion, and drugged sensations in order to appear “normal” so that no one in the regular world will realise what is going on in that other world the child inhabits at home or elsewhere at night. Children are severely punished for showing pain, and usually their doctors are part of the abuser group. The “apparently normal personalities” who are out in everyday life, such as school, are not to show any sign that the body has been tortured, or sleep-deprived, or starved.

One of my ritually abused clients has a large number of very young parts, most of whom are visibly depressed and sad, but one part always smiles. Her face always used to light up when she saw me. I flattered myself that it was because she was glad to see me. Recently I asked the one who came out after her to tell me about the one who looked so happy. Scornfully, she replied, “It's called acting.” This little child part was a superb actress! She was not happy at all. Children are taught to “act normal” and “act happy”, for example, to answer the phone cheerfully.

In many cases, the parts who hold the physical and emotional pain are pushed deep down inside, and the ones who handle the present-day world have very few feelings, physical or emotional, and very little energy. When these children's bodies grow up, the adults they become do not know what is going on in their bodies. In some cases, they feel nothing. In other cases, they are in constant pain from flashbacks or from physical injuries that have left lasting damage to joints. Or they feel constantly nauseated because of flashbacks involving nausea. They might not be able to distinguish between these sensations and ones which might indicate an infection or a serious illness. They simply do not know when they are ill. In several cases, I have had to tell survivor clients of mine that they must go to the doctor because they might have something seriously wrong with their bodies.

It is important to learn to notice pain in your body. If your present-day pain is held by pain-holder parts deep underneath, you need to keep communicating with those parts, encouraging them to tell you if there is any unusual pain, nausea, or other physical sensations that might indicate illness or injury. You need to reassure them that they will not be in trouble for letting you know. Survivor therapist Arauna Morgan writes,

> When I discovered these parts, I thought, ‘Great! I can give them all my pain and I won't have to feel it!’ Then I talked with these parts and I felt ashamed that I was willing to add to the burden that they bore for me through all that abuse! Instead of adding to their pain, I started to gradually take it on to ease their burden and also to help them heal.

Learning to deal with doctors, dentists, and needles

All the survivors of mind control or ritual abuse I have known have been afraid to go to the doctor or the dentist. This is because their childhood experiences include abuse by doctors and dentists. Some of this abuse is in order to make them fear disclosing to such people; other abuse includes fake operations (for example, a dentist apparently cutting out the tongue, or drilling in a tooth and telling you they are placing a microphone or a camera there). Some abuse is from maltreatment by actual doctors who are cult members. Of course, survivors of "regular" abuse also have fear of internal examinations (reminders of sexual abuse) or being confined in a chair with something in the mouth (a reminder of oral abuse). And medical examinations and tests, as well as dentistry, are unpleasant experiences even for people who have not been through abuse.

Mind control and ritual abuse also involve drugs administered by needles, as well as torture with needles. As a result, the fear of needles, which occurs in many ordinary people, can be accentuated in survivors. It is important to find a doctor and a dentist whom you know you can trust, and to speak with the young parts before you go to appointments, explaining who the doctor is, what he or she will do, and helping the little ones who are afraid to stay deep inside and let the adult handle it.

About doctors, dentists, and needles, LisaBri says,

> These are all things that leave you in a vulnerable position in the hands of someone else. Think of a simple dentist chair reclining backwards and a yearly physical for women. A needle gives you medicine when you are sick or to prevent illness. (Notice a needle is not given between the toes to prevent the sight of track marks!) If you have concerns with your health professionals take the control back. Have a friend or the nurse in the room with you during your examination. Explain (you don't have to give your whole life history at once—except your doctor should know the basics) that you are uncomfortable and you will be amazed at what the doctor or dentist will do to make you feel safe. The difference between doctors and dentists in your childhood compared to in adulthood is that you have free choice now. Interview these doctors and dentists as you would a possible therapist.

One survivor I know finds that whenever she goes to the doctor she forgets all the symptoms she planned to talk with her about, and she has nothing to say. In her childhood it was not permissible to tell a doctor anything that was wrong with her body, so some of her insiders make sure the front person cannot remember the problem she went to see the doctor about. This situation is not uncommon. Reassure the parts who were traumatised by real or fake doctors in childhood that this doctor is different and will not hurt them. It also helps to make a list of what you want to talk about before you go to the doctor, and take it with you, so that if the programme to believe nothing is wrong kicks in automatically, you can refer to your list.

Be sure, too, that your current doctor and dentist are not cult members. Do not stay with the ones you had in childhood, and do not go to ones recommended by family members. Be careful with recommendations from other survivors, too.

Although it is important to be able to recognise and disclose symptoms of physical illness or injury, you need to be more careful about revealing psychiatric symptoms. Unless you know that your doctor understands trauma symptoms, including dissociation, you are wise not to reveal too much. Too many medical professionals, including psychiatrists, believe that hearing voices is a sign of schizophrenia, that mood swings mean bipolar disorder which has to be medicated, and that depression requires electro-convulsive therapy if medication does not relieve it sufficiently. The "medical model" simply does not work for dissociation, and many treatments can do more harm than good (see Chapter Ten). You do not have to tell someone everything just because he or she is a doctor. However, if you have a therapist, even a psychiatrist, who does understand, you need to encourage your parts to be honest with that person. Then you can get appropriate help.

Learning to recognise hunger and tiredness

Just as survivors do not recognise physical pain or other symptoms of illness, they often do not recognise the sensations of hunger and tiredness, which are messages from the body about what you need. When you are hungry, you need to eat; when you are tired, you need to rest or sleep. When you have been sitting or lying down for a long time, you get restless and need to exercise. People who underwent ongoing severe child abuse often spent much of their childhood in a state of being deprived of sleep and sometimes starved or imprisoned. As a result, they have learnt to tune out normal bodily sensations and to never speak of them. They do not know that a well looked after body can feel comfortable, well rested, energetic, and not hungry.

You need to teach yourself to pay attention to your body at regular intervals, asking yourself whether you might be hungry and whether you might be tired. Listen to its messages. It is trying to help you. Learn the pleasure of listening to your body say what food it wants to eat today and whether it needs an afternoon nap.

Learning to release emotions

According to Stella Katz, a former cult programmer, one of the first programmes installed in infants is the “Don't cry” training. Although it is done differently in different groups, the essence of this training is that crying is severely punished, either with suffocation or with physical abuse. A survivor starting to cry might immediately begin to feel as if she is suffocating, as the training takes effect.

Pretty well all the mind control and ritual abuse survivors I have seen have been unable to cry for a long time. The ability to cry is a positive sign of healing. Crying allows a release of emotions that should normally be released right after a painful experience, in the presence of someone who cares. If you see “normal” little children fall down and hurt themselves, you will see that, rather than crying immediately, they will run to a parent, and then begin to cry, when there is someone to comfort them.

The need to cry is an important reason that survivors can benefit from a relationship with a good, caring therapist—or at least a friend. Some (but not all) survivors have supportive partners with whom they can cry, and others have friends who can listen to them and encourage expression of their anguish. Unfortunately, many spouses and friends are so shocked by the realities of the abuse that it makes it difficult for them to listen. Much of society has the attitude that crying is weakness, and that people should “get over it”. Many regular people cannot handle hearing about the horrors of abuse. So, you need to choose your friends with care. We shall talk about this more in Chapter Eighteen, and about emotions in Chapter Thirteen.

Avoiding drugs and alcohol

Ritual abusers, child brothel owners, and mind controllers use drugs extensively to control the children they hurt and train. As a result, those children are used to being in a drugged state much of the time. When they grow up, they still feel this is normal. It is easy for them to try to regulate their emotions or physical sensations by using alcohol, marijuana, nicotine, or various stronger illicit drugs, or misusing and overdosing on psychiatric medications. One of my early ritually abused clients had a war going on between his parts about drugs. One group would take “uppers” in order to gain the upper hand in his personality system; another group would take “downers” in order to suppress the first group. As a result he was a chaotic poly-drug user. Another client tends to take too many of her prescribed medications whenever something upsets her. Another uses alcohol to get to sleep, not realising it actually causes the insomnia for which she is using it.

It is very important not to give in to the impulse to medicate away your feelings. Instead, when something is upsetting, you need to:

- search within your personality system for the parts who are upset;
- ask your system to close down any programmes which might have been triggered;
- rescue the insiders who may be caught in a memory and take them to a safe place;
- ask your internal leaders to contain the memories and emotions until you are able to work on them safely.

You could print out this list and post it somewhere in your home, where you will see it when you need it.

Learning relaxation, deep breathing, yoga, or other techniques to help you relax can be much healthier than taking medication every time you are upset. Physical exercise is a wonderful drug, as it stimulates your body to produce natural painkillers (endorphins). However, these things mainly work for the front person, and if insiders are still upset you need to do the internal work that will help your insiders.

Survivor LisaBri, who was an active alcoholic for fifteen years, says,

> If drugs were a part of your childhood abuse, know today it is unacceptable to continue to hurt your body this way. You don't need drugs to live; in fact, health is shown by your refusal to continue childhood patterns of hurt. You also don't have to do it alone. Seek out AA or NA or friends or your therapist. Remember you are not only hurting yourself but also child parts who feel the abuse has not stopped as a result of your continued use.

AA is itself triggering for some survivors because of its talk about a higher power, and often having meetings in churches. But there are other support groups or programmes which do not have religious overtones, if AA is too triggering for you.

Another thing you need to do, which you could not do in childhood, is to face up to the present-day situation that is causing the problem. Once you have dealt with internal triggering, you need to see whether there is something in your present-day life which you need to deal with—for example, stand up to someone who is bullying you, or reduce your workload, or improve your living situation. When you were a child, you were helpless to change such things, so you might have learnt to feel helpless and do nothing but self-medicate, even though in your adult life you actually are not helpless and can do something about these situations. Chapter Thirteen will go into this in more detail.

Anticipating difficult dates

People can have “anniversary effects”, times of year which remind them of traumas they have experienced, whether or not they have experienced ritual abuse. But survivors of ritual abuse often have worse anniversary effects than those who experience of mind control does not include ritual abuse. Evil cults are religions, and they hold their religious ceremonies, many of which involve torture and murder, on certain dates. Dates vary between groups, but the most commonly used ones are: Christmas and Easter (for Satanic or Luciferian religions which reverse Christian ceremonies), the summer and winter solstices, the spring and autumn equinoxes, and the pagan holidays of Candlemas (February 2), Beltane (May 1), Lammas (August 1), and Samhain (October 31). All these “ceremonies” last for three days and nights. Birthdays of cult members are also celebrated with painful rituals. (If your birthday was near a major cult holiday, your family might have adjusted the date, and your birth certificate, to fit the holiday.)

Survivors often have difficulty functioning around these dates, especially as they are supposed to prepare for rituals by fasting and abstaining from sleep. Eating and sleeping can be problematic for several days before cult ritual dates, because certain inside parts have been trained to prepare for rituals by not eating or sleeping. One survivor gorged on food for a whole month because she had insiders who believed they were going to be starved. It is important to speak with these parts and bring them into the present, letting them know they will not have to attend any rituals so they need not prepare. It can also help to change the meaning of the holidays, or change the date when you celebrate your birthday.

It goes without saying that those who continue to be involved in cults have the most difficulty. If your family of origin was involved in ritual abuse, they might well expect or invite you to go home at the ritual dates. Survivorship (http://www.survivorship.org/resources/articles/holidays.html) has some excuses you can give to relatives about why you will not come home at those times, as well as descriptions of the historic meaning of some of the holidays.

If you know that you will be expected to be present at rituals at any of these dates, make arrangements to be with a safe friend at those times. Have them sleep in the room with you or just outside your door, and hide your shoes and your car keys.

Here's survivor LisaBri's advice regarding dates:

> It's a day on the calendar reminding you that 30 or 40 or more years have passed since the true significance of the day rang true. Hallmark dates are on a piece of card stock, folded to form a card, and sold to people, innocent people, to help them celebrate a certain day. You were taught to act in a special way, to do something you didn't want to do on a particular day. Today you can choose how you will acknowledge that date. Take your birth date, (a day usually filled with fear and anxiety recalling past cult birthdates), and change it. Your son's birth month can be the month of your new birthday. Your dog's birth date can be added to create a meaningful and fun day. It works if you are creative and if DID's are anything, you are creative.

Dealing with church and religion

Much ritual abuse is conducted in churches, and it frequently involves “priests” in clerical garb, whether or not they are real priests. Ritual abuse can involve unorthodox Christian belief systems, or can reverse Christian rites for Satanic or Luciferian worship. It is no wonder, then, that being in a church can be frightening for young parts of survivors. Many survivors avoid churches for this reason, but, unfortunately, weddings and funerals are usually held in churches, so attendance cannot be entirely avoided. It is important to reassure the young parts that it is daytime (if that is the case), that you are with someone safe (make sure you are), and that no evil rituals will happen.

Survivors might hear voices that sound like demons and devils, especially in church. These voices, in my opinion, are either young parts doing their jobs, or the result of “playbacks” of abuse events involving costumed adults pretending they are demons or devils. Be careful whom you tell about such voices. Fundamentalist churches may attempt to exorcise (cast out) parts who say they are demons or devils, and this can really upset your personality system and lead to reprisals by the higher-ups. Often the “good” or “light” parts in a personality system want to get rid of the “dark” parts. But this does not work; it just intensifies the internal conflict, and leads to an increase in problems of daily living. If you attend a church, be discreet about what you say to church members, and try to choose a church that emphasises God's love and forgiveness rather than his judgement. Churches that preach about hell and damnation will help convince the “dark” parts of you that they can never experience kindness or be part of your recovery. As this is what the abusers also said to them, it will delay your healing.

Dealing with accidental triggering

Survivors sometimes have reactions to things that other people do not react to. One common example is sitting in a circle. Some survivors have difficulty with symbols like circles and triangles, or with certain numbers or number sequences, or combinations of numbers and letters, or certain words. Words with positive meanings (such as "light", or "care", or "love") might have been distorted by abusers to mean something terrifying. These everyday triggers can be activated accidentally, or as part of programmed reactions administered by trained insiders. If you find you have reactions like this, gently enquire inside about what your children were taught about these words or symbols, and help them learn that these things do not have those scary meanings in the real world. You learnt about this in Chapter Ten.

Punishment and discard programming

The following are excerpts from consultant, author, and mind control survivor Trish Fotheringham's contribution to my book for therapists, *Healing the Unimaginable* (Miller, 2012). Her full experience of the "Patterns in mind control" was published in *Ritual Abuse in the Twenty-first Century* (Noblitt & Perskin-Noblitt, 2008).

Trish Fotheringham: "My fail-safe and discard programming"

> From the start of my training, various self-destruct, booby-trap, and time-bomb programs were implanted, which I call "fail-safes". They became more detailed, involved and tailored to me and my alters, as time went by. My instructions were to never tell, to keep silent, to whisk knowledge or memories away, to keep the pieces separate, or to go crazy. Later, I was programmed to destroy my own credibility, sabotage myself, attempt suicide, or engage in addictions in order to cope or belong. The same instructions were imparted to the internal systems that reported infractions so that punishments or repairs could be done. These programs made me crash or become flooded with unbearable feelings, that locked away certain memories, or that made a memory or programmed belief impossible to escape from. Like a spider-web, they were linked, woven together to intersect, support, and back each other up. This was done by repeating such phrases as "too much trouble," over and over. The same instructions were woven into many different trainings, so that a particular trigger phrase could set a cascade of programs into effect. The effects of the programs were designed to spiral, and to operate as a paradox. Thus, for instance, affirmations that work well with the average person might actually trigger increased problems for me. It was confusing for me and those assisting in my recovery that I would be getting worse when I was using methods that should make me get better.
>
> One significant type of fail-safe programming involved "trip wires" which could trigger actual physical responses, such as an arm jerking or pain in the chest that felt like a heart attack. These began early. They were part of two separate aspects of my training: "flying" (for fairies, witch, and genie alters—done in a harness of the sort used in circus/gymnastics training), and being a "puppet on a string" (mostly to prove I was not in control of my own body). I was encased in wires and/or string (hidden from sight so the alters didn't know they were there) in a way that led me to believe my trainers controlled my movements from a distance through their magical powers. Over time, these wires were used to form a network of control points throughout my body, each of which had specific fail-safe body responses linked to it. Telling a secret produced the feeling of being choked. Ignoring an internal warning about a fall could make a knee buckle to make me actually fall, thereby enforcing the validity of the warning.

If a person has in the opinion of the perpetrator group become untrainable, or is no longer useable, programming is put in to do two things: (1) ensure that all trained insiders and their memories are permanently locked away and unknown to the person who lives everyday life, and (2) make the person so miserable that he or she will self-destruct and eventually die of suicide or an accidental drug overdose. Here is more of Trish Fotheringham's story, describing her discard programming. (Remember that when she uses the word "alter" she means "part" or "insider".)

> …when I was eleven years old, I committed more major acts of rebellion, including putting poison in the ceremonial drink at a ritual. This, along with increasingly poor test results, proved that I was irrevocably uncontrollable. "Adjustments and fine-tuning" suddenly and drastically changed. Now, my lessons—drugged, brutally painful and confusing nightmares come to life-changed to what I call "shutdown" and "discard" programming. The plan was to severely and permanently cripple or destroy my credibility,

my ability to function coherently and consistently, my sanity, and, if necessary, my physical body.

White alters, who had previously been taught that they were the "voice and words of the gods" (the scholar/writer, oracle, and preacher) were now "outcast from the realm of the gods." Tests were deliberately engineered for them to fail. These were followed by terrifying and humiliating belittlement about their inability to fulfill their responsibility to the gods and the people. They were accused of putting their loved ones and others in danger through their stupid, careless, selfish choices and actions. My perception and sensation were distorted by drugs, and I was exposed to initial shutdown scenarios through a combination of hypnosis, holographic projections, movies and scenarios acted out by actors on a stage. I saw masses of people rioting and being injured or killed because of my failures. Strapped in the now familiar magic gateway chair, my white alters "rode the rainbow" to "the realm of the gods". There, they were told by the "gods" (and shown, using holographic projections in smoke-filled air) that they were "no longer of value and had become too much trouble." They were cast out, tossed into a simulated hell and told that this was where they belonged. These experiences transferred into the inner world. One alter was left trapped in "purgatory", on the "outskirts of heaven", in smoky clouds of grey fog, hiding from the gods to avoid being sent back to hell.

My handlers used re-activation codes to open the seal. They individually called forth three of the original foundational virtues alters (red, green, and yellow). After receiving paralyzing drugs, these alters were "encased" in "webs" by my handlers, who systematically carved my whole body with fine spider-web-like lines which they painted red and/or black. When the paint dried and shriveled, the lines looked and felt like burning traps that had constricted. Then these alters were "thrown into the (inner) tunnels" (by throwing them into actual tunnels) and "left to rot." Thereafter, they were only allowed immobilizing, excruciatingly painful, restricted roles. This effectively silenced them. There were more shutdown and discard events, designed separately for the alters of each colour path.

From the age of twelve on, each colour path was taught that their only avenue to feeling good or powerful was to be "bad." Being stupid, scary, tough, weak, crazy, a hippie, a rebel, a partier or dropout were now good, necessary, and desirable. Alters were trained to embrace "wild times" filled with sex, drugs, alcohol, criminal activities and/or weird, flaky practices.

In order to give my personality system a new structure, a combination of four alters were to be simultaneously present in my consciousness at all times, though only one could actually be out at any given time. This would ensure two things: that I would always appear normal (not multiple) to the world, and that only the appropriate skills and knowledge base would be accessible in any given situation. A young alter called Pat memorized patterns for who should be out in each situation, and conveyed them to a Controller alter. The controller alter flipped the right combination of switches to bring the correct alters to "just below the surface" where they could then take their turns out as the situation warranted. Songs and rhymes continued in my head as instructions to the alters who were out.

At fifteen, a "stage-of-life" was created for the alters who were allowed to take part in my real life from then on, and each stage-of-life alter was individually called forth and given a false "memory shell." Thereafter, if they ever told tales, shared secrets, or otherwise broke the silence, their initial statements would be either false or fragmented and confused. This would discredit any revelations of truth that might manage to surface. These memory shells provided a common but false background of life experiences that naturally progressed to my programmed lifestyle and beliefs—those of the shutdowns, outcasts, and later, disables and lockdowns—making everything feel, and appear to have been, the product of my choice or true nature. The memory shells were created by showing each alter bits and pieces of "memory" that had been photographed, filmed, or otherwise recorded on a "brain imaging screen", spliced together with new clips of staged scenes with characters alters were told were them.

Finally, when I was eighteen, my handlers stopped layering more programs into my failed system. A "brain wipe" was done to erase everything that had been installed, and my memories were "rebuilt" over a period of nine months. These events occurred in a mental health center where I believed I was attending therapy appointments with a psychiatrist. I lay drugged on a stretcher, watching a screen which displayed photographs and films which I was told belonged to each alter. All of my experiences that were known to the mind controllers were included to the degree necessary for each alter or group to believe it was real. All alters (even those who had previously been made to disappear) had to sign contracts agreeing to whatever they understood needed to be "locked away forever." They were all regressed to infancy, and the ones who were to live my life from that point on were "re-grown" to my current age with newly implanted false memories.

In this regression part of programming that erased and rewrote alters' life experiences, my trainers told me about both the "false life" that was being erased and the new "real life" which was being installed, thus informing my file-keeper alter of which file to pull for whatever was to be done. In my healing, this helped distinguish what had actually happened to me from the fake life that had been created in installments over the years. Examples include "You were never or never did…," and "You did not receive… training," which really meant I was, and did, and had, and was now supposed to forget it forever.

New alters were created to guard the hidden system, including a "rear guard" and a "captain." After sufficient time for my body to recover, the control mechanisms were drastically adjusted and the controller was given new instructions yet again. Then I was taken back to the mental health facility, where the "brain imaging screen" was used to update the "memory shells."

> After the final lock and seal was done I never encountered my programmers again, although they continued to have me watched and triggered by others when they felt it was needed. Calculated caution, along with terror of being locked up or trapped back in their control, has helped me get where I am now, integrated and able to write this paper. When watchers would visit me during the years of my recovery, I made sure to appear as dysfunctional as I had been programmed to be, and they would go away satisfied that the shutdown programming had worked.
>
> I believe that I am still watched and occasional attempts are made to trigger me. But I really am free to live my own life now, the life my heart and soul choose, not the one they designed for me. Patterns can crumble. I am proof.

Other survivors report similar shutdown and discard training. One client of mine had people dressed up as God, Jesus, and angels reject her, telling her she was too evil to be acceptable to them so she might as well kill herself. Others had training encouraging them to smoke, drink, and become addicted to dangerous drugs. Sally referred to “Snakes and Ladders” programming in which she was permitted to move towards success, then fail and become self-destructive. Some survivors have large numbers of insiders shut away, sometimes by cult-involved therapists. These persons can appear quite functional, but are missing out on their full potential.

If you have frequent feelings or beliefs that you are totally useless, unacceptable, or evil, and that you can get nowhere in life, or you hear words in your head telling you such things, chances are you have what I call “discard programming”. You need to talk with the voices who say these words, as they are parts trained to tell you these things. Discard programming is like any other programming, and can be undone by communicating with the parts involved and eventually helping them put together the memories of the events that caused their beliefs or behaviours.

The following difficulties often result from discard programming.

Difficulty accomplishing things

Survivors with discard programming often have difficulty completing courses or study and working consistently at jobs. Their personality systems can be dominated by parts whose job is to make them fail at whatever they try. To overcome this, it is important to get to know these parts and convince them that they can do a better job of protecting if they allow the person to succeed.

Difficulty “having a life”

Discard programming also interferes with the survivor's ability to “have a life”—that is, engage in fulfilling activities such as exercise, being outdoors in nature, having pets, having friends, playing and singing and dancing and painting and doing things which feed the soul. The massive depression induced by the belief that you are nobody, nothing, and worthless, or that you are evil and will infect everyone around you—both lies told by the perpetrators—can cause survivors to just sit and do nothing for hours at a time, never doing any of those things which teach their systems that there is light, and hope, and joy, and fun, and many wonderful, positive things and activities which they might believe are not for them. I have heard some survivors report that they sit in a chair and do nothing all day, or just play solitaire. They do not even get the housework or the grocery shopping done. This can look like a regular depression (which doctors tend to treat with medication), but it is actually the result of the lies told to the parts in the discard programming. Other, stronger parts need to resist this programming and make you do the fulfilling things which will let you know that the good things in the world *are* for you, too, and that you do not bring evil and darkness into the world as you were told. This will be easier, of course, when you have uncovered the memories that make parts believe these lies.

Survivor therapist Arauna Morgan writes,

> In my own recovery, I found that it was very important to go back to the earliest memory of when I was told some self-defeating refrain, for instance, “You are worthless and will never have a family or be able to hold a job!” The first step was to be able to remember it being said to me, the next step was to remember who was saying this, then next, *what were they doing to me while they said this.* When I was able to remember the circumstances, I was able to see, as were all parts involved, that what was being said was being said by a deranged person who only wanted me to have as miserable a life as he had! After that, it was very easy to discard the self-defeating refrain from my life and when it slipped back, I had only to remember again to remind me why this no longer applied.

Understanding and overcoming programmed reactions

Many of the difficulties we have discussed in this chapter are actually related to programming, and many of the suggestions I have made are stop-gap measures. When you build a co-operative inner community, so that your insiders turn off programmes, it makes a huge difference. And when you actually work through the training memories, it makes your life much, much better. Sally's story in Chapters Six and Eight illustrates both the programmed difficulties, and the changes that can happen. She struggled through university with great difficulty because of programming to give her apparent learning disabilities. When her insiders decided not to do those jobs, she became much more competent, using her real abilities.

Exercise 19. Daily life problems and solutions

For each of the following areas of daily life, describe:

- what difficulties you have;
- what actions you are taking to deal with this problem;
- what else you plan to do about it.

Sleep

Memory and organisation

Relaxation and play

Bodily enjoyment, using your senses

Eating

The bathroom

Recognising illness and injury

Dealing with doctors, dentists, and needles

Recognising hunger and tiredness

Avoiding drugs and alcohol

Difficult (cult) dates

Church and religion

Other triggers

Which of your difficulties might be a result of punishment programming? Is there something for which you have always felt that you were being punished? Explore this with your inside parts and keep asking until you get an answer. “I don't know” is not an answer; keep asking until you get a real answer.

Try to communicate with your insiders about what might have happened, or what you did that set this off. When you find out, dialogue with them some more about their concerns and yours.

Do you have indicators in your life that shutdown and discard programming might be operating? What indicators (such as difficulty “having a life” and difficulty accomplishing things or behaving appropriately) do you experience? If you have such indicators, try to communicate with the insiders who are causing these difficulties. It could also be interesting to know which behaviours of yours (that the perpetrators did not want) caused the perpetrators to put in these programmes.

CHAPTER THIRTEEN

Emotions

Every part of our being, including each of our bodily sensations and each of our emotions, is designed by nature to help us meet our needs and achieve wellbeing.

Just as physical pain tells us what is happening to our bodies, emotional feelings tell us what is happening to us in other respects. They let us know what we need. We might not like pain or negative emotions but they are a necessary part of life. Pain hurts and yet it actually protects us and helps us to live safely. Physical pain tells us when we need to attend to a part of our body. If our tooth hurts we can get it checked so that the tooth does not rot. If we experience painful emotions such as anger, fear, anxiety, loneliness, and sadness, we need to check what those messages are about in order to achieve and maintain emotional and psychological health and happiness.

When we lose touch with important emotions, we become vulnerable to violations from others (which is, of course, what abusers want). The sad thing is that we might not even know that we have been affected by these violations. In the disease leprosy (Hansen's disease), people lose their fingers and toes not from a disease process that eats up the hands and feet, but by the inability to feel these body parts. The pain that is meant to protect is not there, and the person develops an infection or injury which goes untreated. Emotional pain has just as important a purpose as physical pain, and we ignore it at our peril. Emotional pain, just like physical pain, serves the purpose of drawing attention to what we need to do to keep ourselves safe and healthy.

Emotions, abuse, and dissociation

Of course, if you suffered ongoing childhood abuse, with no source of comfort, you were unable to keep yourself safe and healthy during your childhood and possibly into your adulthood as well. For all those years it was not helpful for you to pay attention to your emotions because you were unable to act on the messages they gave to you. So, you probably learnt to dissociate those emotions into hidden inside parts whose main purpose was holding feelings for you, while the external you did what the abusers told you to do.

All survivors of childhood trauma—or even inadequate parenting—have difficulty with their emotions. If a child's early emotions are denied, shamed, and ridiculed, the child buries them, seeing them as pathetic and unsafe. Even when they have not experienced deliberate mind control, people with abusive and neglectful childhoods have usually not learned to understand their emotions and respond to them in helpful ways. They often either fear emotions or swing from one extreme feeling to another as different post-traumatic emotional states are triggered by relatively small current events.

Anyone who has undergone unresolved traumatic experiences, especially in childhood, has areas of sensitivity in which present-day triggers bring back the old reactions of childhood. When this happens, the person feels as if the childhood pain were happening all over again, even though he or she might not even remember the original situation that caused the emotions. That person might then believe the emotions belong to something in the present, when they actually arise from some accidental resemblance of something in the present to a past trauma. The intense feelings of rage, terror, or despair are totally disproportionate to what is actually happening now. In Chapter Ten we looked at triggering, sometimes when programmes are set off, but also when reactions from old trauma intrude into present life. It is because of over-reactions that many people do not want to deal with their feelings at all.

Denial of emotions

Denial of emotions is the process of pretending that emotions do not exist or pretending that they have been dealt with sufficiently—"*everything is fine*".

When someone asks survivor LisaBri how she is, she responds, "I am just fine. F=Fucked up, I=Insecure, N=neurotic, E=emotional."

Denial is actually lying to yourself and others about a truth that for some reason you just cannot face. Except, if you are dissociative, you are not consciously lying—you just do not know you have the emotions because they are hidden within insider parts.

Strong emotions do not just go away when they are ignored, because they are signals of unmet needs, danger, or harm. They might seem to have gone away, but they go "underground", and they continue to build up as new situations trigger more emotions. The "sack" in which we have stored the emotions gets more and more full, even if we are not aware that it is happening. When the sack finally bursts open, the emotions are out of proportion to the situation that triggers them.

In dissociative people, the "sack" is actually hidden child parts who specialise in particular emotions. The everyday life person may be unaware that emotions are even occurring, until these child parts' feelings become so strong that they burst forward and the person acts childishly.

Many experts now believe that unresolved emotions are stored in the body and that much bodily illness is a result of stress, unresolved emotions, and unmet needs.

Depression is often a result of unacknowledged experiences and their associated emotions. There is a deep sense of unhappiness without clear awareness of the cause. This often goes with considerable guilt and self-blame, sometimes about trivial things. Instead of the person feeling anger when taken advantage of, he or she turns the anger inward and becomes depressed. It might feel much safer to punish yourself rather than run the risk of "losing it" with others and losing your connection with them. And it could be unsafe to be mad at an abusive partner or relative. Depression can also result from unresolved grief over losses and unmet needs. Much depression is just the experience of "keeping the lid on" what the person really feels. This is different from appropriate sadness. Sometimes, the person feels that if the lid were taken off, he or she would never stop crying. This is actually not true. Grief and sadness have a natural process and come to an end, if they are felt.

Organised child abuser groups know that grief can be healing, and for this reason, they train children from birth not to release their distress through crying. So, it is important for your healing to learn to cry again, if necessary working through the memories of being taught not to cry. Abusers frequently tell children that being emotional or experiencing and expressing pain is weakness, but that is simply a lie.

Healthy grieving follows remembering. Child abuse survivors have a great deal to grieve. If the emotions from losses overwhelm you without the conscious memory of those losses, depression can disable you. This is one reason it is important to become conscious of your traumatic memories. How to do this will be discussed in Chapters Fourteen and Fifteen.

Emotional pain-killers

A person feeling a strong degree of discomfort is likely to turn to “emotional pain-killers” in order to feel better, even though the improvement in feeling is only temporary. Emotional painkillers are self-indulging habits that temporarily make a person feel better. Any of the following activities can be used as emotional painkillers: alcohol, prescription and non-prescription drugs, smoking, sex, pornography, work, gambling, shopping, saving money, spending money, sports, jogging, vomiting, chocolate, eating, the Internet, some kinds of religion, and television. You can probably think of others.

Most of these things are harmless in moderation, but harmful when they become addictions. They only work for a short while, so you have to return to them again and again, wasting time and money in order to improve your mood, and you need more and more of them to feel satisfied. Like any pain-killing drug, emotional pain-killers deal with the symptom rather than the cause of the pain. Unfortunately, most emotional painkillers are capable of ruining a person's life and relationships.

When a person becomes physically addicted to some chemicals, the chemical replaces certain substances in that person's nervous system. These substances are no longer manufactured by the body, so when a person withdraws from the chemical, he or she suffers symptoms caused by their absence. In psychological addictions, the substance or the activity makes the person feel temporarily better. Eating fills some kind of internal emotional hunger. Gambling, or shopping, or spending makes the person feel temporarily rich, and allows for the impulsive release of some desires. Work, or exercise, or saving money creates a sense of control, but eventually psychological withdrawal sets in, and the person needs another “fix” to take away the pain of the unpleasant emotions.

People who, as children, were not allowed to express and explore their emotions are especially prone to self-medicating with drugs or other addictions. If they can learn to deal with stress in a healthy way and develop these skills when they are young, they can avoid sliding into the trap of addiction.

Drugs and alcohol can easily present problems for survivors of mind control and ritual abuse, because these substances are used during the abuse. Different insiders might be addicted to different drugs, and may take over the body when these drugs are in the body. The abuser groups sometimes supply drugs to addicted survivors in order to keep them coming back to the group.

The meaning of moods

Many people get into good or bad moods without knowing why and then feel trapped in their mood. It is helpful to learn to identify our emotions, and use those emotions to detect both the situations that trigger you and the underlying causes of the moods. We can ask ourselves questions such as “Why am I feeling this way? What's going on?”

When we grow up learning to reject or ignore our emotions, we learn not to trust ourselves. We use the unspoken rules of the dysfunctional family, which are: “Don't feel. Don't acknowledge that anyone has hurt you. You have no right to feel hurt. It is your fault. Don't be a wimp. Don't be selfish. You should be grateful for all that has been done for you.” When a person loses his or her conscious awareness of what has happened, a “bad mood” happens.

Every bad mood begins somewhere. You can learn (1) to notice a bad mood as soon as it begins, (2) to detect the trigger that got it started, (3) to identify the feelings produced by that trigger, and (4) to problem-solve the situation in order to prevent the same thing from happening again.

When a person has hidden inside parts who experience themselves as separate, the different emotions (which create the moods) are held within these parts. So, rather than just thinking about the problem, you need to communicate with the parts who are holding these emotions. Find out who inside has this feeling, how old he or she is, what in the present triggered this part to come up to the surface, and whether the feeling actually belongs to the present or belongs to some past event. Ask that part what he or she needs to feel safe and cared for. Let that part know about your present life, and how it differs from the years that part remembers.

Emotions in mind control survivors

A survivor's emotions are often tied up in insiders, sometimes very young ones, who are still stuck in the experiences of their abuse. Present-day reminders (post-traumatic triggers) of those experiences will bring those insiders close to the surface, and the person will be flooded with their overwhelming emotions.

Mind-controlling abusers manipulate this process of emotional dissociation, distorting your emotions to serve their purposes instead of your own. They deliberately create internal parts who hold specific emotions, such as anger, or despair, or sexual lust. Sometimes, their emotions are enhanced by drugs, such as amphetamines (“speed”) for angry parts. The angry parts are designed to come up when they are called upon to engage in violent acts. Despairing parts are designed to come up for suicide attempts. These programmed acts are to be performed by parts who are in extreme emotional states and have very little awareness of everyday life and current events when they take over the body.

Many, if not most, of the inner parts of mind control survivors have characteristic emotions, or characteristic ways of handling emotions. Because many of their childhood experiences were emotionally overwhelming, they have developed personality systems in which certain parts contain only sadness and despair or shame, other parts contain only anger and rage, others are filled with anxiety and panic, and still other parts appear to have no emotions. Often the sad parts have been put through experiences that make them suicidal, and it is their emotions which are accessed when a suicide or self-harm programme is turned on. The rageful parts (who may believe themselves to be monsters) have been made angry and then forced to perpetrate crimes against others, then told they are evil and no one wants them (except the abuser group). These strong emotions are not supposed to appear in everyday life, so a survivor's front person often feels numb rather than experiencing a range of emotions.

You need to be aware of the existence of these extreme parts who are capable of engaging in desperate acts. Keep them inside while they are gradually educated by other parts about the realities of your present life. Eventually, they need to work through the memories of the events that caused them to experience such extreme emotions. This will free them to connect with other parts and experience a range of more normal emotions. It will enable the rest of you to be in touch with your own anger and sadness, which might not currently be available to you except as extreme rage or despair.

The following is survivor therapist Wendy Hoffman's description of the emotions she experienced as part of her recovery process:

Wendy Hoffman: "Feelings"

Usually, I can go to work, do my job, have conversations with friends. But when I have free mornings or on the weekends, when I have space before me, memories emerge followed by spurts of strong feeling. Then I stop functioning in the real world and begin functioning in my inner world. Anxiety, shame, grief and angry depression hold hands and dance in my brain. The feelings are too big for the child's body and too strong for the adult's heart. The feelings crush me as if I were a closed accordion, but then a source of comfort from the outside or inside or both rescues or appeases.

Terror obliterates all other feelings. It wraps around my body like a serpent and shakes me until I am breathless. When I think of the repeated break-ins or the torture and threats, terror erupts like a personal mini-earthquake. When it subsides, I can see what's underneath. And I feel shame, the kind of shame that turns my body crimson red. No cliché. For real. A therapist would say "You have survived the unthinkable and have made some right choices. You can't blame yourself for being tricked into making some wrong choices. You thought you were saving other people or warding off something worse." And the therapist would be right, but I am nonetheless filled with shame about not having had a normal life, not being part of a family, knowing close up what mankind is capable of. And I am ashamed of what this abuse has made me into and that I have to hide who I am. I am ashamed the abuse has gone on my whole life.

Grief is the other big feeling I live with. One life is not enough to fit in all the grief I feel. There have been instances of love. It doesn't matter that the relationship was scripted and staged, there was still a real friend who understood who I was and cared for me. Love can melt a frozen person and bring someone to life. The memory of his love has probably been the one factor that got me through my arduous life. I believe I would have been evil had if not been for his love.

When they killed him, the tempest of grief entered not to be killed. Love and grief are mixed for me now. I grieve the pets I lost and loved and a friend in the outside world who loved me and died from a heart attack after a gastric bypass.

And I grieve the family I had to leave behind and that I gave birth to children who were either stolen or killed as newborns or who were coerced into being a cult participant. I ask why with all this similar DNA and genes, why am I the only one in my family line who really wanted freedom? Perhaps because of the love of that one boy. So grief and I get up in the morning, go to work, have dinner, go to sleep. As I eat my breakfast cereal, grief can open its jaws around my heart. Yet, without the love that caused the grief, where would I be now?

To live without your family is to live without large parts of yourself. Family can be a pulse that insulates and protects but not for survivors of criminal groups. Family for them is what makes people not know who they are, give up their souls and fear for their lives.

I used to be mainly angry, reacting to life's injustices with rage. When younger, my anger was tinged with sexuality. My anger was justified. What was overwhelming were its tentacles that went back to my earliest trainings, which I was unaware of. I felt the feelings but didn't know why.

My anger has recently subsided considerably. The young parts still react angrily but I can locate them in my system and model for them an alternate way of expressing anger, such as putting it into words, exercising it off or understanding its genesis. Knowing who is reacting angrily and causing huge overreactions quiets the rage.

I think my getting older is helping reduce anger. My hormones are diminished, I expect less from life and people and am used to injustice and corruption. My being shocked less easily has also quelled anger.

When I have big memories and parts in me rush to my inner safe house, I feel gratitude and relief. Relief for me is as good as it gets. I would not choose to live my life again. But as I emerge into the other side, I feel my old friend relief but also proud of myself. I feel that I have protected my soul. Could there be anything in this world more important than that! And so I am walking through life with a soul somewhat intact though I have a way to go in my healing. When shame and terror grip me, I keep going anyway. When I think of my parents and grandparents who never tasted freedom, I feel sadness and pity. When I think of my family mind controlled to be what they never would have chosen to be and whom I am leaving behind, I feel my companion of grief but I keep moving forward toward freedom and belief in myself and gratitude for the few non-impostor people who have helped me, and the invisible power in the world that still cherishes us. Perhaps currents from the freedom I strive for will touch the dead and the unborn, travel generations backwards and forward and give them courage and hope.

From the time I was born, my handlers suffocated and tortured me whenever I cried. First they caused infants and children to cry, then they prevented it. Lately, in difficult and advanced therapy, I have understood their diligence in reinforcing the ‘don't-cry’ program throughout my life.

If I could allow my inside parts to cry, I could connect how I felt on the most visceral level to what happened to me. Not connecting these emotions leaves me still in a partially split-off state. The ‘don't-cry’ program is the glue of my mind control.

Crying is also a time of reaching out to God. The branch of the cult I was born into focused on preventing that communion.

* * *

Reclaiming your emotions

You need to reclaim your emotions, and you can do this, even if they are separated internally by being held by different insiders. If your personality system works together, you can regain the use of your emotions for your own health and safety.

The first stage in learning to handle your emotions is to acknowledge that you do have them and to become aware of what they are. Simply stated, all feelings are messages. Their purpose is to tell us what is going on inside us, psychologically.

Using your emotions effectively begins with accepting and paying attention to the emotions, and then expressing them, in order to “get their message”. This process includes noticing the present triggers of those emotions, noticing any old connections which make the feelings more intense, and noticing the unmet needs that the emotions are telling you about. Then make plans for careful action to see that your needs are met and the situation does not recur in the same way again.

If you pay attention to your emotions when they happen, they will not overwhelm you later.

Finding and expressing your emotions

Emotions need to be discharged in order for healing to occur. It is important that the emotions be associated with the actual events that have caused these emotions, not only the present-day "triggers", but also the old traumas. You can relieve some tension by releasing emotions whose cause you do not know, but because their causes are not resolved, they will recur.

Certainly, while you are in the grip of an intense emotion, you cannot plan rationally. You first have to discharge the physiological arousal associated with the feelings by expressing the emotions. If the expression is allowed to take a natural course, through such acts as talking, crying, praying, writing, and/or drawing, it leads to new awareness. You will become aware of other emotions behind the original one, such as hurt covered up by anger, or hope replaced by disappointment. You will begin to see the unmet needs that the emotions are pointing to. Each emotion points to a specific kind of need.

Often, mind control survivors have been trained in childhood not to express their emotions in these ways. "Don't cry" is one of the first trainings given to infants, through smothering or beating them when they cry. This makes it very difficult for survivors to release their emotions, not only by crying, but by vomiting, shaking, screaming, or other visible or audible means of expression, all of which were violently suppressed by the abusers. Survivors often hear screaming or crying inside their heads, because parts are constantly crying or screaming on the inside. Those parts (who are often very young) need to learn that it is now safe to express their feelings.

However, there is a problem here. The feelings these insiders hold belong to many of the childhood traumas rather than to the present, and the extreme emotions from those childhood traumas can come up as a response to minor present events. The long-term solution is that these insiders need to be involved every time you work through a traumatic memory, releasing the emotions that belong to that particular memory. Some survivors try to access the content or story line of the memories without dealing with the emotions. This leaves the crying or screaming children stuck in their trauma, so it does not fully resolve the trauma. It is fine to access the narrative first, but then you have to go back and dig out the feelings.

Someone in your personality system knows which insiders hold the emotions belonging to each memory, and can guide these little ones to releasing those emotions when you do the memory work.

Feelings from the present and the past

To use your emotions intelligently, you have to be able to access the emotions that give you information about what is happening to you in your present everyday life. Our initial awareness of emotions is often only whether they are positive or negative—are we happy or unhappy? These general emotions, and others like them (joyful *vs.* depressed, satisfied *vs.* dissatisfied, comfortable *vs.* uncomfortable, hopeful *vs.* anxious, peaceful *vs.* fearful, optimistic *vs.* pessimistic) are the general indicators of how things are going for us and what we expect from the path we are on. The positive emotions are signs of health, of needs being met. The negative ones are warnings, signs that we need to look at more closely to find out what is wrong in our lives.

Negative emotions are present to tell us about problems, so that we can take action to remedy the situation. Emotions are not there to be medicated away! We can use these emotions to correct our behaviour or plans before it is too late. For example, a woman who was about to be married kept feeling a great deal of anxiety about the wedding. Upon closer examination, she discovered a lot of "danger signals" she had been ignoring about the character of her husband-to-be. The anxiety that she had thought was about the wedding day was really about the marriage. She was able to face the possibility of marriage more realistically when she realised this.

A mind control survivor was about to entertain weekend guests, and had recently discovered some insiders who had experienced abuse by a particular man. Unfortunately, the man who was going to visit her with his wife had a physical resemblance to the abuser, so some of her inside children had a strong reaction of fear and revulsion to him. They were afraid to look at the face of the guest in case he was the abuser. But the adult parts of the survivor knew that the abuser had been dead for many years, so they deliberately looked at the guest, to compare his face with that of the abuser. When they did this, the little ones still felt uncomfortable with the guest, but they knew he was not the person who had harmed them. The adult was able to push through the trigger, and relate to the guest as the person he really was, even though she could sense the little ones' emotional reactions within.

When you experience a strong emotion, one that seems out of place or too strong for the situation, you might need to look for insiders who are reacting to something in the present that resembles something in the past. Often, young inside parts are confused about time, and do not realise that years have gone by.

You might also experience emotions because particular insiders who hold those emotions just happen to be close to the surface. Inside children who have discovered they are safe in the present want as many opportunities as possible to meet their own unmet needs. So, they may come to the surface at school or work and get bored and want to play. I once treated a dissociative ten-year-old girl. Her three-year-old part would come out in the classroom, sit on her desk and sing, and get sent to the principal's office. The ten-year-old would not remember what happened.

Once parts from the past are around, even if they are just behind the front person, they might misinterpret what is going on in your adult life and have emotional reactions to things they do not understand. Children do not belong in adult situations, and your system may need to devise some way to make sure they do not come up when the adult needs to work. Another common problem is that abandoned parts who want closeness lead a survivor to hook up with an inappropriate partner.

In each situation in which you experience an emotion, you as a survivor need to find out who inside is experiencing that emotion, and whether or not it is a realistic response to the present.

Often, the situation is the reverse: you do not experience an emotion when the situation would normally provoke one. In this case, you can still search for whoever inside is having this emotion, and why it is being suppressed. Emotions that belong to the situation are helpful guides, and need to be experienced and expressed to receive their message. It is not uncommon for survivors to experience the emotions a day or two after the situation, when it is too late to act on the information they give.

The purpose of each emotion

The sections below indicate some of the major emotions we all experience and the present-day needs they are meant to tell us about.

Boredom and the need for challenge

The need for challenge, stimulation, and achievement is a basic need. We all need to be using our abilities, doing something worthwhile, learning and experiencing new things. When this is not happening our natural response is boredom. If this need goes unmet, we begin to feel rebellious and have thoughts of walking out of our home or driving past our workplace and heading south because we are bored with our job.

So, boredom, like a pain, is a signal that something is wrong and we need to pay attention to it.

Survivors of mind control and ritual abuse have plenty of inside parts who used to have “jobs” when they were children. Some of them might have been told that they are that job, and if they are not doing that job they are nothing. They might have been told that they were "created" for that work. And they might have gained some self-esteem and satisfaction (as well as praise or rewards from the abusers) for doing their jobs well. These insiders feel useless when they are away from the abuser group. They will get bored unless they have new jobs. So, put them to work. Think about what better job each part could claim. For example, soldiers can maintain your safety; programmers can make sure all the programmes are turned off unless you need them for some reason (e.g., to temporarily forget a memory you are working on and have not completed, or to reverse a programme); spinners can encourage and spin something positive, and spin away flashbacks.

Another kind of boredom can occur in survivors if they have been discarded by their abusers, and programmed to fail at life tasks. It might be difficult for such survivors to allow themselves to succeed or to take on new challenges. But it is possible, if the whole personality system works together co-operatively instead of some parts sabotaging other parts' attempts to succeed.

And then, there is just regular boredom, which everyone experiences from time to time, a signal that you need more challenge and stimulation in your life. Pay attention to this emotion and try to meet those needs. Sometimes what you need when you feel bored is physical exercise. Exercise is active, and everyone needs to move their body and use their muscles. But you may not be consciously aware that this is what you need. I notice this need in my dog, because he is very clear about when he needs exercise, and he shows his restlessness until I satisfy that need.

Confusion and the need for meaning and order

The need for meaning, sense, and order is a basic human need. It is easy to become cluttered in our minds or our surroundings. Often, too much is going on at once: too many activities, obligations, and commitments, too much stuff and not enough space. Whether the clutter is in our kitchens, our offices, or our minds, we need to take time to clear it out. If we do not, it can leave us feeling confused, perplexed, and overwhelmed.

At one point, I had a sense of confusion and clutter about my entire life. I had been very busy, and experiences, like house clutter, had piled in one upon another without my taking time to sort them and work out their meaning. Relationships were unexamined, even though they had generated all kinds of feelings that were clues about how I needed to handle certain people. I felt as though I was making my way through life without knowing where I was going. I felt that I had no priorities and was just dealing rather inadequately with whatever happened to capture my attention at the moment. I took a weekend to retreat alone to a little cabin. As I drove there, things crowded into my mind in almost random order—thoughts and feelings that seemed unrelated to one another. I spent the weekend alternately doing a huge jigsaw puzzle and working on the puzzle of my life, sorting the pieces by shape and colour until they fitted together into a meaningful pattern. Gradually, the confusion and feeling of being overwhelmed lifted, and I could make sense of my life. Some of the things which gave me bad feelings were still present, but I now knew what each problem was, and could prepare myself to deal with it. I realised that certain relationships were affecting the rest of my life, and they had to be either changed or ended. Sorting through it all was a very satisfying experience. I felt closer to myself, that I understood myself better.

Sorting like this can be particularly helpful for dissociative people, because they have so many parts operating almost independently. If you make the time to contact all the parts and let them communicate about their feelings and needs, it can be very helpful.

People who are multiple sometimes need special solutions to achieve continuity and order in their lives. Each part of you can write things down, leaving notes for other parts about your concern. Many multiples keep a book in which they can write to one another. Talk internally before making decisions, rather than acting impulsively just because you happen to be "out", fearing that you might be shut up inside again. Ask the other parts to let you know their needs and their concerns. Internal communication and co-operation can reduce confusion significantly.

Irritability, stress, and the need for self-care

When we are under stress, we all tend to become cranky and irritable. Stress, often caused by too many demands, failure to prioritise, and not enough self-care, is one of the major contributors to aggressive or impulsive behaviour. Stress can come on in response to sudden unexpected events such as the loss of a loved one, an illness, or accident, the loss of a job, or a marital conflict.

Sometimes, our basic needs (such as sleep or safety or attention or affection) just are not being met, and during those times it is hard to keep our cool. Sometimes, our irritability is a signal that we are doing and giving more than we can comfortably do or give, that we are not addressing an important emotional issue in our lives, or that too much of our self—our beliefs, values, desires, or ambitions, are being compromised in a relationship. If we do not pay attention to the stressed-out, cranky feeling we get, it can easily turn to anger at the people who make demands of us, including our dependent children.

When other people (for example, our partner or our children) appear to be stressed, and are becoming irritable, we can help by encouraging them to relax and take time for themselves. Not by saying "Relax, keep your cool", but by offering to take on some of their responsibilities or at least giving them room to do what they need to take care of themselves.

Survivors know that in their childhood they were expected to function "normally" no matter how much abuse, neglect, rejection, sleeplessness, and pain they had to endure. So they have learned to pretend things are all right when they are not. It is important to change this pattern, to listen to our stressed-out feelings and give ourselves permission to look after ourselves in a healthy way.

You might feel irritable when you are ignoring your insiders. They hold emotions, physical sensations, and needs of which you, the outside person, might be unaware. So, make a habit of listening to your insiders.

Tiredness and the need for recreation and rest

Many people, especially abused children, have been raised with the belief that rest and recreation are not real needs. This is particularly true for child abuse survivors. Even in general society, workaholism is often not only accepted, but held up as a sign of success. Physical exercise is really important for our health, and is also enjoyable, but many people have even gone so far as to make recreation hard work! Recreation means to re-create. How do you re-create yourself? Do you believe you can re-create yourself by playing or by having a nap? Are rest and play priorities for you, or are you influenced by expectations to perform and excel every waking hour?

We need rest: sleep, in which the body's muscles are inactive; dreams, in which the mind "digests" the experiences of the day and fits them in with its past experiences; play, in which we explore new ways of being; and humour, in which we gain perspective on ourselves and our human struggles and pretensions. When we do not get these things we "burn out". Our bodies and our minds become tired and exhausted. If we define this tiredness as laziness, and pay no attention to it, we break down.

Another type of feeling we get, and this feeling indicates the need for play, is the feeling of wanting to goof off, to get up to mischief, to do something "dumb", or silly, or useless. We should pay attention to this feeling. Perhaps this is just what we need! Watching a comedy, or playing video games or charades, or reading a comic book, really does meet an important need. In such situations, our mind renews itself and gains perspective and energy for the tasks ahead.

Survivor therapist Arauna Morgan writes,

> Since I have started to pay more attention to the needs of my entire system, I find that I need at least one day a week to do "insignificant" things, i.e., things that are not associated with studying, do not make money and no housework. About once a month I also need a "down day" where I can sleep in the living room all day, interspersed with watching movies or TV. I am a workaholic, by necessity, and this adjustment has been very hard for me. Alarms keep going off that there are things that need to be done! I have to keep reminding those alarmist parts that if I do not take these days off, I will get sick and have to take them off anyway; this way, I keep my health.

When a person has children inside, those children need activities appropriate to their developmental stages. Part of the reason inside parts stay very young is because the needs they had at this stage of development were not met. So find out how old your inner children are, and this will help you work out what they might need in order to mature and grow. If you are not familiar with normal developmental stages of children, consult a parenting manual.

Worry, fear, and the need for safety

Worry, like all emotions, serves a purpose. When anxiety works normally, it alerts us to possible future dangers so that we can take action to prevent these things from happening. We need to tune in to our anxiety enough to see whether there is any real danger. When we feel worried or anxious, it is important that we slow down and pay attention to what is worrying us. Sometimes, there is a problem we have not been paying attention to. Sometimes, we are worrying about the wrong thing, like the woman who fussed over the wedding plans and ignored the problems in her fiancé's character.

Unfortunately, worry can run away with us even when the possibility of danger is very low. This is particularly true for child abuse survivors. You probably have parts who live in a perpetual state of terror, because they were split off during a genuinely terrifying event. Survivors know (at least, their inside parts know) that some of the really awful things can and do happen, and have happened to them frequently. Some insiders still live in the memory of those traumas, and can easily think they are happening again when they are not. It is important to update your insiders, as they make themselves known to you, if you are currently safe, so that they know what year it is, how old you are, and how far you are from the people who hurt you.

At the same time, some survivors are oblivious to danger, in particular the danger of recontact and ongoing abuse by the perpetrator group. Personality systems are designed in such a way that the everyday adult part is unaware of such dangers. Your watcher parts can be given the new job of watching for actual dangers, and letting you know if there is such a danger.

Sometimes, survivors will experience extreme terror without knowing the cause. It can be a present-day situation that is actually dangerous, or it can be the fear from a memory. There are such things as emotional flashbacks, where the emotions from a traumatic memory flood the person without the content of the memory. These can, in perpetrator-designed personality systems, be punishment for disobedience or disclosures, or they can simply be flashbacks triggered by something in the present. You can only find out by talking with your insiders.

Our worries need to be examined and approached head-on. Chapter Nine addressed safety from the perpetrator group in more detail. But, of course, there are other dangers, some of them common to anyone, from crossing a busy street to hooking up with a dangerous or uncaring partner. The key is to make sure you have listened to all the concerns of your insiders.

Loneliness and the need for love

We feel lonely when we long to be near someone who loves us. This emotion leads many people into relationships that turn out to be destructive, whether it is one-night stands, affairs, or hasty marriages. It is important to recognise our loneliness, but not rush into something we might regret. The same goes for sexual feelings, which we shall discuss in Chapter Seventeen.

Loneliness can be an overwhelming emotion for survivors whose own families were child abusers. So can fear of getting close to anyone. Organised abuser groups exploit these emotional states to create bonds with the group rather than with healthy family members or friends. They deliberately prevent or break each child's natural bond with his or her mother, even if the mother is not part of the group and does not know what is going on. This lack of a safe secure attachment does huge damage not only to the person's ability to trust, but to every part of their being. The inside parts might include some who cannot trust anyone, and will sabotage any possible relationship, and others who will allow themselves to be exploited by any person who offers the faint possibility of caring. Because of this, you need to be very cautious in developing relationships. It is important to recognise and acknowledge lonely feelings and the needs behind them, see which of your insiders contain these feelings, and just remain aware of the needs without either rushing into lustful action or isolating yourself from those who could offer love and companionship. Sometimes, loneliness can create anger with people who are near but not emotionally available.

We shall look in more detail at the emotions and needs concerning love and belonging in Chapter Eighteen and concerning love and sex in Chapter Seventeen.

Sadness and the need to grieve

(Warning: This section may be very upsetting to some survivors, just because it is true.)

Because of our society's denial of emotions, many people are living with unresolved grief. The loss of a loved person or pet, whether through death, divorce, or relocation, can affect us deeply, and if we “get over it” too fast people will say we are coping well. But the grief might have gone underground and can cause irrational anxiety in new situations.

For mind control and ritual abuse survivors, grief is a huge need, and sadness may well up, seemingly out of nowhere. Most survivors have seen persons or animals they loved murdered, and have even been forced to participate in these atrocities, or at least to be blamed for them.

All losses need to be grieved. Grief can feel overwhelming, but it is a time-limited process that comes to an end if we allow ourselves to feel our sadness. If our grief is complicated by guilt and shame, there is also a need for some kind of acknowledgement and forgiveness. The process ends with acceptance of the losses and the beginning of a new enthusiasm for life as it is now.

It is important to grieve for what we never had, not only for what we had and lost. When my marriage ended, my primary grief was for the marriage I had wanted and did not have. Grieving for our ideals validates our needs, and says we were not wrong to want these things.

Survivors have a great deal to grieve about. They grieve not only for what they have lost, but for what they never had. Innocence. A happy, normal childhood. Friendships. Loving parents. Pets who survived and whom they were permitted to love. Pets who did not, whom they were forced to hurt or witness being tortured. Children whom they bonded with, and were then forced to rape or kill. Loving fathers and mothers who did not sexually abuse them, either selfishly or because they were forced. Emotional security and bonding. The ability to trust. Unmet needs throughout childhood. The gradual, healthy development of healthy sexuality in the context of loving relationships. A brain that could develop in a healthy way, with sufficient sleep for rejuvenation when needed. The opportunity for the cortisol released because of trauma to relax into a normal level and not be constantly in overdrive. An education which would develop their true abilities and fit their true interests. An opportunity to use their intelligence. The ability to make their own decisions. Potential achievements which an overwhelmed child or teenager, struggling with ongoing abuse, could not manage. Physical safety. Physical health and functioning. A feeling of being able to live in their own body. A sense of being a unified person with an ability to know and meet their own needs and develop their own purpose. And independent thought. If they come to these, it is generally at least twenty years later than other people. They must grieve for the person they could have been without the abuse, for not having the opportunity to become their real selves.

The more time I spend thinking about it, the longer the list grows.

Survivors whose families were involved in their abuse have permanently lost family. In fact, they have been cheated of the opportunity to even understand the concept, just as they have been tricked about the meaning of *love*, and *safety*, and *trust.* They have no parents who can safely mentor them through their own children's births and childhoods. They cannot trust siblings, aunts and uncles, grandparents. They have to attempt to create artificial families from unrelated friends. They are often excessively dependent on therapists because of the lack of supportive family or healthy childhood dependency. Some have supportive spouses or life companions, but many more have remained single or have unsupportive partners who cannot face or cope with the degree of injury that survivors undergo. Some choose partners who re-enact an aspect of their abuse. And when is it safe to confide the truth in friends? So, there is also social isolation, and broken relationships, and huge disappointments in people.

Much is now known about the stages of grief. They often occur simultaneously rather than in sequence. One stage is denial. As long as a survivor pretends the abuse did not happen, he or she is unable to grieve any of this. Yet, if all the abuse, and all of the losses become available to consciousness at once, they will be overwhelming. So, a survivor will have to reduce his or her dissociation very gradually, confronting one loss at a time.

Anger is another important part of grieving. As with other emotions, mind control survivors' relationship with anger has been distorted and manipulated by their abusers. Their anger and rage have been deliberately buried in internal parts who are brought out for violent rituals or killing, the rage being channelled on to a helpless victim rather than on to the abusers who set up the whole situation. The anger and rage need healthy expression, through art, through screaming, through writing, whatever means gives voice to these justified emotional responses to the horror of what happened.

Sadness is the core of grieving, and its natural expression is crying. I have found that recovering the ability to cry is one of the most difficult achievements for my mind-controlled and ritually abused clients, but also one of the most significant, as well as one of the latest. Crying, especially in the presence of someone who cares, is enormously healing. A client whom I have seen for many years has never been able to cry, and recently, in the company of a friend, had a big emotional outburst. She was ashamed about this because of all her “Be tough” training. When we investigated her inner world, we found a large number of “weak” crying parts, holding her true feelings, locked away in a dungeon.

In her book, *Safe Passage to Healing* (p. xxiv), survivor Chrystine Oksana writes of expressing her anger and sadness:

> My recovery has been a quest to reclaim all parts of myself and then connect that whole self with the good things of this world. My journey is ongoing. Today, most of my illnesses are gone. Now I know that they were symptoms of my repressed feelings—mostly rage and grief. My emotional pain is leaving more slowly, but it is leaving.
>
> Today I am able to cry freely. And in addition to deep grief, I also feel gratitude. It is my tears, not my smiles, that are healing me. Today, my tears speak *my* truth and reveal *their* secrets. It's through my tears that I am breaking free.

It is a paradox that re-experiencing the traumatic memories, including the emotions, in the presence of a safe person in the present, actually brings relief. Not immediately, but eventually, and sometimes sooner than later. One of my ritually abused clients goes through a gruelling piece of severely traumatic memory each week, leaving dazed and exhausted. She later emails me to tell me how much better she is feeling, how she has been able to do things like play basketball, which she was never able to do, and how well her recovery is going. It is the memory work, the experience of having a witness to her trauma, and the emotional release that enable her recovery to move forward in this way.

The ideal way of expressing the emotions connected with the traumatic memories is in a safe place, with a safe person who is tuned in to what you are feeling and accepts your process. This kind of connection (whether a therapist, a partner, or a friend) is hard to find. However, it is still healing to express those emotions alone, with the compassionate life force as your witness, along with the other parts of your full self. Inside every person is a connection to that life force, and you can still renew your connection to it, knowing that this compassionate life force will never reject you. Crying alone can give you this sense of connection. When you were a child, you might have been told to pray to a rescuing “god”, who did not rescue you. But the compassionate life force is within you and within the universe, not a magical rescuing religious superhero but the essence of life.

Despair is the most extreme expression of sadness and hopelessness. When a survivor feels extreme despair, it may be a part of their normal grief. But it may also be the feelings of an inside, mind-controlled child part leaking through into the adult. The “booby traps” which abusers design to lead to suicide use the despair of an insider to flood the personality system. These insiders with extreme emotions are often deliberately isolated from the rest of the personality system, their emotions being used for the booby traps. They “live” inside in cages, or torture situations, or “hell”, or a place where “God” is rejecting them, and that is all they know of life.

Many such insiders live in literal darkness and are unaware of daylight, especially those trained at night in secret programming sessions. When I met one recently, he asked me, “What's that bright?” as he pointed to a tree outside the window. I did not understand what he meant, until the adult told me it was the sunlight on the leaves of the tree. This part had never seen sunlight.

Let us look at what despair means to a mind-controlled structured system, on not just a physical level, but an emotional and spiritual level. Many of the inside parts have never experienced anything positive. They believe the entire world to be similar to the situations they experienced once, in which they have continued to be trapped, frozen in time.

When survivors feel that they do not want to live in this world, because the world is so dark and evil, the emotions and belief may well be coming from insiders who are still trapped in the memories of their traumas, with all the feelings that belong to that time. For them, it is as if the abuse is still happening, over and over again. Until their memories are worked through, they will continue to feel this way, and their emotions can infect the rest of the system, especially if there are programmes that cause this to happen.

The long-term solution is working with the memories—see Chapters Fourteen and Fifteen. In the short term, other insiders can share positive experiences with these insiders, to show them that their experience is only a very small part of all that is. And they can be rescued internally from their horrible situations, given new places to "live", and given positive experiences of safety and nurturing in the present. Pleasure comes from the simplest experiences. One survivor first discovered this when she found an insider who had never seen or felt snow. She had her spinners send the experience of playing in the snow through the system, making all the children happy.

Anger and the need for secure boundaries

Anger is what we all normally feel when our own or someone else's boundaries are violated. Like fear, anger is about safety, but fear warns us that a future situation might be unsafe, whereas anger tells us that a boundary violation has already occurred. Anger is also about justice: we tend to feel angry and outraged at injustices not only to ourselves but also to others.

Anger comes in milder forms: we often feel irritated or annoyed at small boundary violations or injustices. We feel frustrated when a person is unresponsive to our efforts to communicate. These feelings escalate to fury if the violations continue or if we deny our milder feelings and take no action. If we respond effectively to these minor feelings, we will not escalate to full-blown anger.

Anger is often viewed negatively, and for good reason. Often, anger leads to violence or hurtful actions. When we feel anger, adrenalin is pumped into our bodies. This prepares us for the "fight or flight" reaction by giving us energy to attack or run away. But the emotion of anger is not the same as an act of aggression. We can be angry with someone without calling him a name or punching him. Anger, the emotion, is important to our wellbeing. On the other hand, aggressive behaviour needs to be controlled and stopped.

Our upbringing plays a large part in determining when we experience anger. Survivors of mind control and ritual abuse sometimes have young insiders who see themselves as queens or princesses, or kings and princes, and believe everyone should obey them. It is hard for these parts to learn that this was a deception, and they are just human beings who need to balance their desires and needs with those of others.

We might become angry too easily if we had an unsafe childhood, and have learnt to perceive things as threatening which are not actually dangerous to us. If something in a situation triggers feelings related to a previous trauma, we can have an inappropriate reaction. Poor communication can play a part in this, and can lead to misperceptions such as believing someone is putting us down or criticising us when that was not their intention. Misunderstandings such as this happen frequently and it is best to refrain from retaliating with hurtful comments. It pays to hold ourselves in check before we lash out at others for what we think they intended. When you feel an initial hurt and begin to feel angry, do not react immediately; take time to examine what is really going on and communicate with the other person respectfully. Sometimes you need to take "time out" to make sure your angry parts do not get you into trouble by engaging in behaviour you will regret later.

There are, of course, special issues regarding anger for survivors of mind control and ritual abuse. Whether your angry parts were used to assassinate "enemies", or to ritually kill victims, your anger has probably been concentrated in a few insiders who have been made angry through cruelty to them, then trained to hold in this anger and release it as extreme rage only on the designated victims. Often, there is a rageful child part, which might believe it is a demon or beast, and above it a cold, emotionless killer part. It is likely that there are both these kinds of parts at each level of your personality system, since the training begins very early and is refined by splitting off a new set of parts each year. Some parts also might have sexualised rage, again trained into them by pairing sexual arousal and release with acts of violence. You may be shocked and horrified at what some of your thirteen-year-old parts were capable of doing and feeling, but you need to remember that they were split off each year from younger ones, to the point where the final part who did these things knew very little or nothing of the torture and mind control and ongoing training which made them capable of this.

Meanwhile, survivors often report either that they have no anger at all, or that they have intense rage that they want to release, and nothing feels adequate for that. Sally, who told part of her story in Chapter Six, tried to "let out" her rage with one of her early therapists. This was completely ineffective, but putting together the memories to which the rage belonged did dissipate it, and allowed the rageful parts of her to feel once more like parts of the human race, and recognise that they were children who were forced by adults through torture to feel this emotion and perform these acts; they did not choose this.

We shall address the issues of guilt and shame regarding such acts, and how these parts can recover, in the next chapter. Meanwhile, other insiders need gradually to educate the rageful parts about your present life so that they do not pop out at the wrong time and express their rage in the only way they know. Many survivors want to isolate or get rid of their angry and rageful insiders, believing them to be evil (which is what the perpetrator adults told them). You need to know that it is impossible to get rid of any part of you. You also need to know that these angry insiders are part of a larger whole, and contain an emotion which is not, in itself, evil. Your anger, and the parts containing it, were used for perverted and evil purposes by adults, but they can be reclaimed for self-protection and for achieving justice for others.

Guilt and the need for moral integrity

Guilt (sometimes called remorse) is another feeling with an important purpose. Guilt is meant to stimulate us to take action. Healthy guilt says, "The way I acted was wrong." We feel guilty when we violate our own integrity or moral standards, often by hurting someone else. It is a basic human need to have moral integrity and purity. Guilt is a signal that helps us take action to clear our slate and live according to our own moral values.

There are three different ways to react to a feeling of guilt. One is to go deep into shame. Guilt is not the same as shame and it is important not to confuse them.

Here is what Dr John Bradshaw (1988, pp. 2–3) says about guilt and shame:

GUILT	SHAME
I have *done* something wrong.	There *is* something wrong with me.
I've *made* a mistake.	I *am* a mistake.
What I *did* was no good.	I *am* no good.

Shame is an overall sense of dirtiness and no-goodness. It usually results from having been blamed and shamed by other people. It is usually harmful rather than helpful. Wallowing in shame makes us feel bad but does not change the situation. It is important to be able to feel guilt without getting into shame. Sometimes, people are afraid to allow feelings of guilt because they can lead to overwhelming shame.

People raised with a lot of punishment can easily get into shame and emotional self-punishment. This is not useful. The purpose of useful guilt is to get us to change the behaviour or habits that are harmful, not to make us feel as if we need to be punished.

Another way of dealing with guilt is to hide behind a defensive coat of armour. When feeling the guilt is too painful or difficult, we would rather blame someone else and make it that person's fault. People who do this usually associate guilt with shame and being “bad”. Defensiveness enables us to push the feeling of guilt away. While this might help us feel better, the guilt will come back, and we might repeat the same violation of unfairly blaming others because we have not listened to our guilt. Some families get stuck in throwing blame around like a ball of fire. When each family member catches it, he throws it to someone else so he will not have to feel the shame that comes with the blame. In families like this, people feel worse and worse even as they deny their guilt.

The real purpose of guilt is to enable us to respond to it by becoming aware that we have hurt someone, apologising, and making restitution to that person. Once this is done, we can let go of the situation. Taking this kind of responsibility actually makes us and the other person feel better.

Sometimes, we feel guilty for things which are not serious violations, but merely things which may be disapproved of by society—or at least by our parents. In order to distinguish between useful and useless guilt, it helps to sort out our own beliefs about right and wrong, and not be influenced by social pressures.

A good example of this is the story of Huckleberry Finn, who felt guilty and assumed he would be going to hell because of his failure to turn in his friend Jim, a runaway slave. He followed his own conscience but was unaware that his conscience was right and his society's racist values were wrong.

Now, there are very special issues with regard to mind control and ritual abuse, because most, if not all, survivors have been forced to participate in crimes, including rape, murder, sacrifice of human beings and animals, and cannibalism. I have learnt from my survivor clients that even a little child knows these things to be very wrong, even if he or she is told he is being “good” in doing them. We all have “mirror neurons” which allow us to experience empathically what other people (and animals) are going through. This biologically based empathy is the source of our accurate conscience, no matter what adults tell us during our childhood about right and wrong.

So, when a child is forced to do these things, or when later (because of years of forcing and conditioning) he does them apparently on his own, he feels enormous remorse. This emotion is, of course, hidden in feeling-holder parts, so that the ones who had to perform these acts of evil were able to do their jobs in an unfeeling manner.

The matter is even more complicated, because after a child has committed such an act, the adult perpetrators point it out to him and tell him how evil he is, how even God would not want him, how only Satan and/or Lucifer will accept him now, that he is going to hell because of what he did, and he might as well kill himself because he only brings evil into the world. Most survivors of ritual abuse especially have a huge load of shame induced by this programming. Such memories, along with their associated guilt and shame, are designed to come up if survivors try to find out what happened to them, to give them the message that they are the evil ones, not the adults who trained and forced them to do acts of evil. We shall go into these issues in more depth in Chapter Twenty, “Overcoming spiritual abuse”.

Meanwhile, we can learn to be more sensitive to our normal feelings of guilt and remorse for how we treat others in our present life. If we have hurt someone, it is normal to feel remorseful, and this emotion can stimulate us to apologise and to be more careful in the future. At the same time, it is important that we stop ourselves from moving into shame when we make a mistake or behave unkindly, and instead just apologise, change our behaviour, and move on.

Exercise 20. Tuning in to your emotions

Reflect back on your day. Use three “feeling words” to express your general mood.

What do those emotions, either negative or positive, tell you?

Did you have contradictory emotions at the same time?

If you were to sort through those emotions and associate needs with them, what needs would you record?

If you felt unpleasant emotions, when did those emotions get triggered?

How can you express those emotions?

What needs are those unpleasant emotions coming from?

Can you think of any strategies that would help get those needs met?

You can use this exercise daily, or even several times a day, to get in touch with your emotions and needs.

Using emotional awareness to get your needs met

The emotions discussed in this chapter are only a sample of some of the important emotions and the needs they point to. You may discover different ones in your own life, especially as you get to know those inside parts who hold emotions for you.

The first step in handling emotions with awareness is noticing and expressing your feelings, in private or with an understanding person. Through this, you become aware of your unmet needs. Next, you need to take careful action to see that your needs are met.

No one can know your needs as you yourself (including all your inside parts) can. Even if your spouse and close friends are aware of your feelings, they are not mind-readers, and they are unable to know what you need and automatically supply it. It is easy to become angry with someone else and think you are unloved, when it is really up to you to discover and express what you need. If you need peace and quiet, privacy, nurturing, or challenge, you need to make changes in your life to see that these needs are met. Sometimes, this involves asking someone else for what you need; sometimes it involves spending your time differently, changing your job, or your leisure activities, or your friendships.

By working with your feelings and your thoughts together, listening to all your parts, expressing your feelings, tuning into your needs, and planning action which meets your needs without harming others, you will ensure that your life and those of your loved ones are happier.

Taking action to have your own needs met is often very difficult for survivors to do. This is because in childhood it was generally forbidden not only to pay attention to your feelings, but also to do anything about your own needs. You were at the mercy of others. So, you may have developed learnt helplessness.

People who were made helpless during their childhood years frequently continue to believe they are helpless in adulthood, when things have changed. Thus, they will complain about situations, ruminating on their mistreatment and victimisation, but take no action.

Experiments with rats show that those who have been exposed to avoidable shock try to save themselves by swimming hard when put into deep water, but those who were exposed to unavoidable shock give up and start to drown. People are similar. Child abuse takes away your sense of your own power to change things, but in adulthood you do have that power, and you can use it. Your unhappy emotions will tell you what is wrong, and then you can do something about it.

Exercise 21. Interpersonal emotion log

Think of a situation in which you had an emotional reaction when dealing with another person and write down what you can identify about it, using the points below as a guide.

What emotion did I feel?

What triggered this emotion?

What other emotions were underlying?

What other causes did these emotions have?

What past situations triggered these emotions?

Which insiders felt them, and how old are they?

What did I do in response to this emotion?

What needs did I have in this situation?

Did my behaviour meet my own needs?

How did my behaviour affect the other person:

What emotions did the other person show?

What needs did the other person have?

How can I resolve the situation now?

CHAPTER FOURTEEN

What about the memories?

Pretty well all survivors of mind control and ritual abuse suffer from post traumatic stress disorder (PTSD), the same disorder that war veterans frequently have, although theirs has been caused by several years of war trauma whereas yours were caused by a lifetime of terror. The first diagnostic criterion for whether you have PTSD requires that you have been exposed to a traumatic event in which you experienced, witnessed, or were confronted with an event or events that involved actual or threatened death or serious injury, or a threat to the physical integrity of yourself or others. I cannot imagine a survivor of mind control or ritual abuse who has not had such an experience, whether or not they have a clear memory of it.

The second criterion for PTSD involves persistently re-experiencing the traumatic event or events through recurrent intrusive recollections of it, including images, thoughts, or perceptions, distressing dreams of it, and acting or feeling as if it is happening now. You are intensely upset, and your body reacts as if the trauma is still happening. In general you are hyperaroused, which results in insomnia, irritability, difficulty concentrating, hyper-vigilance (being always on the alert for danger), and startling easily and strongly.

At the same time, if you have PTSD, you persistently avoid anything connected to the trauma. You do not want to think or talk about it; you avoid anything that might bring up memories. You do not remember important aspects of it. (Many of your memories are hidden away in inside parts of you who have been assigned their places by the abuser group.) You may lack interest in regular life, feel detached from others, have difficulty feeling positive, and may not expect to have a normal life.

Have I just described you? The memories haunt you, but you hate it when they emerge, and you do not want to deal with those memories. If there were any way to just get rid of them, you would welcome it. I guess by now, however, you have worked out that this is impossible, just as it is impossible to get rid of your inside parts. The parts were separated from one another and from the front person by the traumas they endured, and the only way to resolve all this is to find a way to resolve the memories of those traumas.

Your situation is more complicated than it would be if you had simple PTSD, because not only do you have many years of hidden traumas that start from the moment you were born or sooner, you have insiders who are trained to punish you by causing flashbacks and body memories. They administer physical pain, or the sensation of electroshock, or overwhelming despair, if you approach the memories to find out what happened to you. Abuser groups do not want their victims to remember or talk about what happened, so a considerable amount of the programming they perform is designed to make you afraid of remembering or talking. This is not to protect you, even if they said it is. It is to protect them, the abusers, because they were doing things that are both illegal and immoral, and they could get into big trouble if society in general found out.

So, you cannot approach your traumatic memories (at least, at first) without triggering punishment programming as well as programming designed to make you return to the group.

However, even if your personality system is now so co-operative that insiders hardly ever turn on programmes to hurt you, you probably still get spontaneous flashbacks, and these are unpleasant and often horrifying.

Do you need to process the memories?

Then, of course, there is the question of whether you want to deal with the memories at all. Some of your parts probably do; they are angry about being abused and they want to know just what happened and who was responsible. Other parts are fearful, and would prefer to leave the memories alone.

It is up to you to decide to what extent you want to put together your memories and your fragmented inner parts. The memories are painful and disgusting; that is one reason they are dissociated. They usually involve betrayal. It is probable that they involve forced perpetration—that is, the abusers made you participate in their acts of cruelty and then told you that you were evil like them. It can be very upsetting to re-experience such memories.

Many survivors can become significantly more functional without working through their memories. I have worked with some people who chose to know just enough of what happened to them to be able to continue to live in the present and not have to deal with their childhood trauma directly. If you are able to function well, without the memories or the associated emotions, bodily pains, or programmed urges intruding into your daily life, and you are now free of the perpetrator group, perhaps you do not need to process the memories.

However, if you choose to leave the memories alone, you are also leaving hidden parts inside who feel as if they are still suffering in the traumatic situations. Is it fair to leave them there? Survivor therapist Wendy Hoffman disagrees with the choice not to remember:

> The problem with wanting not to know is that you are leaving inside another person without a voice, witness or friend. That part then will be permanently disenfranchised. You are silencing that part the way the perpetrators silenced you. And that part may be able to open the door that releases the full soul.

These parts also hold pieces of the story. It is, therefore, likely that you will have to continually resist the programming rather than be assured that it has been dissolved. You will also be open to being accessed by other groups who look for programmed people and know how to spot and access them.

If programmes are constantly being triggered, or if you keep having flashbacks or nightmares of some aspects of the memories (for example, pictures, or voices, or physical pain, or sexual arousal, or overwhelming emotions), you will definitely benefit from putting the memories together. This is especially true of the training memories that are behind the mind control. Your parts were led to believe that their lives or the lives of others were dependent on their doing the jobs that they were programmed to do, and their emotions are all tied up with that belief. When you see how you were deceived, their overwhelming panic might lead them to continue to do those jobs.

Can you find out what happened and avoid the pain?

If you view memory work as detective work to find out “the facts”, you will not be able to do this work effectively. A survivor's front person often presses to know what happened because there is an investigator part pushing from inside. It is natural to want to make sense of your life. However, with mind control or ritual abuse there are usually other parts inside whose job is to make sure the front person does not come to know things, and will punish if you do come to know. Punishments can include pain in various parts of the body, for example the places where the abusers told you recording devices were implanted. If you do not remember all the punishment programmes which Sally's insiders used when she was trying to discover her memories, you could review Chapter Six. Before your front person tries to get information about your traumatic past, the parts in charge of punishment must be willing to co-operate with your recovery plan.

Often, survivors believe they can access “the memories” without re-experiencing physical or emotional pain. They try to make recovery a fact-finding mission. Many therapists and some well-known survivors, such as Carol Rutz, whose book contains some excellent research, believe this is possible. They take a largely cognitive approach, believing that if survivors can look at “what happened” and identify the deception and coercion involved, they can become free from continued loyalty and obedience to the abusers. This appears to work for some people, especially if they have had many years of freedom from the perpetrator group. Many trauma survivors, even some who are multiple, have the luxury of saying, “That was in the past, and I do not need to re-experience all of that pain in order to live my life.”

However, many survivors of mind control and ritual abuse find that even if they know what happened to them, they still experience panic attacks and strong urges to engage in programmed behaviours. The basis of the programming is the emotions involved in the memories. Abuser groups deliberately store the physical pain in one group of insiders, each different emotion in another group of insiders, the hidden words and instructions in others, and the visual record of what happened in others. Some abusers deliberately hide away the feeling-holders, and some hide away the soundtrack and words. In my opinion, you cannot really undo the programming unless you find all aspects of the memory, not just the story. You might be able to find the feeling-holder parts and relocate them in the inner world, but they will still be in pain (physical or emotional) until they are able to connect their feelings to the memories that caused them to split off. Even if the feeling-holder parts have conscious knowledge of how they were deceived, their emotions will easily be able to push them into programmed behaviours such as telephoning perpetrators or cutting themselves.

So, I believe that trying to discover what happened to you, without dealing with the feelings, is not very effective in freeing you from mind control, and can simply be an invitation to internal punishers to do their jobs, unless you have a very co-operative personality system. If you do decide to pursue the memories, you need to “go for broke”, including all the emotions and body sensations, and involving every insider who has a part of each memory to take part in processing it.

Do not be discouraged, however. You can work through the memories thoroughly, and you can heal. Many survivors have already worked through their memories and are free of their programming; some of them are speaking out about their experiences. You can find their blogs and much more on www.ra-info.org.

Dealing with flashbacks

A flashback is a memory fragment that intrudes into your everyday consciousness. It may be visual (hallucinating something that happened), auditory (hearing a voice or a scream), emotional (such as a panic attack or a feeling of overwhelming despair), or physiological (a "body memory" that can be a pain in a part of the body that was injured during the unremembered event, or an unpleasant smell or taste). Until the trauma is resolved, these flashbacks might recur, often in unacceptable times and places.

Many flashbacks appear to be caused by some parts pushing their piece of a memory up to consciousness while others are resisting the knowledge. Memories usually first surface through flashbacks, and traumatic memories that have not been organised and catalogued by an abuser group can often only be found through flashbacks. In order to resolve the trauma, you need to put all the components of those memories together. I have worked with several survivors whose previous therapists spent untold hours assisting them in "chasing flashbacks": re-experiencing bodily sensations of abuse in the hope that this would resolve the trauma (this happened to Sally, see Chapter Six). Just as going through the story of a trauma without the emotions does not resolve that trauma, going through the emotions and pain without the storyline also does not work. In fact, it feels like re-abuse when you open up the pain without attaching it to its cause.

At the other extreme, many therapists and survivors who recognise that flashbacks generally do not resolve trauma have taken the stance that "stabilisation" involves preventing flashbacks from occurring, and that memory reconstitution is unnecessary. But survivors who are merely "stabilised" continue to be at risk of destabilisation if present events trigger aspects of their trauma. If they are survivors of organised abuse, they are also susceptible to deliberate triggers for programmed behaviours. As I said earlier, only working through the memories thoroughly will create long-term stability and destroy programming.

For survivors of mind control and ritual abuse, what appear to be spontaneous flashbacks are frequently internal punishments for disclosures of secrets. If you are having a lot of flashbacks, you will need to discover whether someone inside is punishing you for something. Slow down the disclosures and get to know the parts who are doing their jobs by giving or ordering those flashbacks. You can review Chapter Seven for more about this.

One of my clients kept having a particular flashback recently, and insisted we process the memory it came from. At the same time, many of her parts were terrified of going into this memory. When she investigated internally, she found a little boy inside doing his job of reminding her that a big ritual date was coming up and she should be ready. He did not realise that many years had gone by since she had attended any rituals, and that he did not need to do that job any more. She asked the leader in charge of that section of the personality system to release him from his job and to join the internal council. Problem solved, without going into the flashback memory.

Most trauma therapists recommend "grounding" in the present to help you deal with intrusive flashbacks—that is, bringing the front person and anyone else who is near the front clearly into the present. Here is a way to "ground" yourself if you are experiencing a flashback: open your eyes, which often spontaneously close during flashbacks. Listen to and name the sounds around you, such as birds, city noises, or traffic. Name the things in the room, including what you are touching (couch, pillow, etc.). Put your fingers on your clothing, and name each item, noting that you are clothed, which is important because child parts are frequently naked during their abuse. You can also use a signal, such as ringing a bell, to bring yourself back to the present, but make sure that any signal you use is not one that the perpetrators used.

Grounding, like other forms of containment, just prevents a flashback from occurring at any particular moment; the flashback is still likely to erupt later when you are alone, or as a nightmare. If it is caused by an insider doing his or her job, you can communicate internally to stop it. Internal negotiation is an important skill for the survivor in dealing with flashbacks. For example, a survivor client of mine was having horrible bodily symptoms of choking. He found the part responsible, and struck a deal with her: she (his insider) would remove his symptoms, if, in our next therapy session, she could tell me about the abuse that caused those symptoms. This allowed him to feel better until the therapy session, when he (the front person, who was a man) kept his part of the bargain and listened to this girl part's story.

When you negotiate with your parts regarding the flashbacks, it is important to talk with the parts *causing* the flashback rather than only the ones *experiencing* it; they are usually not the same.

If you have been mind-controlled or ritually abused, you are likely to have one or more gatekeeper or file keeper or librarian part in charge of keeping memories and feelings put away (or letting them out on command). You might be able to close down a flashback by asking one of these insiders to put away the memory until it is time to work on it. Sometimes, too, the spinner parts might be able to use their spinning abilities to spin something away.

After you have closed down the flashback, ask the parts inside whether any of them deliberately made you go through it, and negotiate with them to change the situation. Also, make sure you look after the parts who were having the flashback. They can be put in safe rooms in the inner world, go to sleep if they agree (through the internal use of the sleep programme), or be given care-takers, such as nannies or older girls to look after little children.

Storing the memories

Your abuser group has probably already created a storage system in your mind for the memories, and at first it is that system you will use when you ask your internal librarians or file keepers to put away the memories that are flashing back. Personally, I enjoy using things that abuser groups installed for purposes that are the opposite of the abusers' intentions!

However, in order to keep memories, and parts of memories, contained, you might want to make a new system of your own. In addition to the original storage for the memories which have not yet been worked on, you can have your internal builders (who built your inner structures in the first place) construct in your inner world a place where partially processed memories and feelings are to be kept in containers, and some containers in which to put them, such as a cave containing barrels, a bank with a vault with storage lockers, a well with buckets, or a storage room with jars on shelves, or anything you think will work. Both the containers and the place in which they will be kept should be able to be locked, but there should be a way to put things in the containers after they are locked. A spout or straw might work (if the memories and feelings are thought of as liquid), or a “doggie-door” which snaps shut may be created. Let your mind come up with the image best for you. As with all such creative solutions, it does not matter what the image is, as long as it works for you. It helps if you draw a picture of the storage place and containers. Some survivors discover that their insiders have already created such storage but their front people were not aware of it.

You probably need two types of storage:

1. Containers where the feelings (emotions and bodily sensations) of a memory in progress can be stored temporarily while your insiders watch the “video” of the memory (to be discussed in the next chapter) to get the story line.

2. Containers where unfinished memories can be stored between memory work sessions, or where flashbacks can be put.

Once you have these containers, try putting the emotions and bodily sensations from some easy memories, and eventually entire memories, into the containers. (Make sure you put only feelings into the containers, not inside feeling-holder people.) For example, the emotions from an argument you had yesterday with your partner can be put safely away first, or the taste of the milk that went bad, and then, the flashback of the hands of someone who abused you. It gets easier, and you get better at it, the more you do it.

When to begin memory work

Often, dissociated survivors are in a rush to get their memories back. When asked why, they say they "just want to get this recovery stuff over with". It certainly would be nice if all you had to do was recover the knowledge of what happened, but that is not the case. The process takes a long time. It takes that long because you need to take care of yourself, not push yourself too hard (as the abusers pushed you), and it is very hard work, and the memories you have to discover are traumatic and create strong emotional reactions.

You cannot rush into memory work such as this. You need to be at a stage in your life where this work will not disrupt important daily life tasks, such as raising children or full-time paid employment (although Stella Katz, who was a housewife, did her memory work when her children were at school—see Chapter Twenty-one). There are many healing tasks that must precede the memory work. In general, you are ready for memory work when your personality system is co-operative, and the parts in charge permit all those involved in the memory to participate in its processing. If your main higher-up parts are not aligned with the process, protector parts might punish those who access or disclose forbidden material prematurely. Delay is important when your personality system is not ready, but the process cannot be delayed forever, if you want full healing. If you have a disconnect between the parts who want to rush and those who do not know it is safe, your inner leaders need to get these parts to share information with one another so you can make a balanced decision.

What if you are still being accessed by the perpetrator group? Should you attempt to work with memories? If you have insiders who report all the recovery work you have done, you might be inviting the group to access you and re-split your child parts in order to reinforce the programming and even make new programmes. However, you can combat this by immediately working through the memories of the reprogramming as well as those of the original programmes on which this reprogramming was built, as well as the access programmes (described in Chapter Nine) that keep you in contact with the group. My first survivor clients were all involved in a Satanist group when I began seeing them, and they used this method to stay ahead of the group's interventions.

Finally, it really helps, though it is not essential, to have a safe person who can be with you when you process your most difficult memories. This person can make sure you are simultaneously in the present and the past when you work through a memory, and pull you back to the present if you get "lost" in the memory experience. They can also help you talk about it afterwards, to come to a better understanding of what was done to you and how it has affected you.

If you do not have such a person, you can still work through memories on your own. You can use a bell or other noise-maker to startle you into the present if you get lost in the memory, and you can write out both the content and the feelings, as well as your present reactions to it all, after you go through the memory. If you do not, you may lose the content, as memories, once consciously known, tend to have the details fade and become assimilated with the rest of your experiences quite quickly.

The front person's role

Should your front person or people be involved in the memory processing? It depends on how your personality system works. If you have a very strong front person, he or she might want to be involved or even to take the lead. But most survivors have front people who are primarily shells, and who can function in the world because they do not know about the abuse or experience feelings from it (though these might leak through sometimes.)

Insiders often make a strong case that the front person cannot handle the truth, and they are often right. This is because the "front person" has the job of managing the adult world, which is pretty complex in itself. Front personalities are created for this purpose, and in order to be an effective life manager and not be overwhelmed with symptoms, it is often best that they do not know the secrets or feel the emotions carried by the insiders. The piece of the personality that has to deal with work and the outside world is usually not big enough to also handle the other information; there either has to be integration of some other parts to make it "bigger" and have more energy, or some of the inside parts need to take over some of the tasks of this part to free some energy.

However, you can work through memories with internal parts without the front person coming to remember these events. If the front person agrees, you can embark on a course of working with memories without that part finding out the memory content. Sally (see Chapters Six and Eight) does her memory work this way. Her front person usually does not find out what the insiders are working on, but reports that she feels lighter and better able to function after they have done pieces of memory work. Whether this will be effective for you depends on the strength and the importance of the front person in your personality system. It also depends on your degree of co-consciousness. If there is a lot of co-consciousness between your front person and the rest of the parts, you might not be able to process memories without the front person coming to know the content. If your front person has developed strength over the years, you might want him or her to know what happened.

Some survivors have a series of front people who share the job and switch when the going gets too rough. Some front people are tougher than others, and whether or not you want to allow the tough front people to know the memories may depend on how much those ones share with the more vulnerable front people. Sometimes, front people are relatively separate from one another, and one can know things without the others coming to know them; in other cases, if one front person comes to remember something, the others do, too. Your decision about whether to let front people know what memories have been discovered should take into account whether they, and other parts they are connected to, can handle the knowledge.

Exercise 22. Assessing your readiness for memory work

Do you have a tendency to speculate on what might have happened to you, rather than allowing the parts to share their experiences? What effect does your speculation have on your certainty about your memories? (For some people it confuses them and makes them unsure of what they have remembered and what they have merely imagined.) Explore inside and find out whether there is a part who pushes you to do this, and explain to that part why it is not a good idea.

Do your parts want to see the tricks and lies that their abusers employed, in order to be freed from their overwhelming compulsion to do their "jobs"?

If you have a strong desire to know what happened to you, are you aware that the memories probably contain much pain, betrayal, horror, and shame? Are you prepared to undergo these experiences in order to reclaim your history, knowing that your identity will change as a result?

Are you now free of the perpetrator group's interfering in your life? How do you know this?

Are you now able to function well, without the memories or the associated emotions intruding more than minimally into your daily life?

If so, do you want to put together the memories anyway, or would you prefer to leave them alone? Let your front person answer, and then ask your insiders the same question, perhaps one group at a time.

If you are having a lot of flashbacks, you need to discover whether someone inside is punishing you for something. If so, you will need to slow down the disclosures and get to know the hierarchy of parts who are doing their jobs by giving or ordering those flashbacks. You are not yet ready to work on the memories. You might decide to push through anyway, but, if so, be aware that you will get symptoms such as dizziness, dental pain, or other reminders by insiders that you are breaking the abusers' rules.

Do you have parts inside whose job it is to make sure the front person does not come to know things, and will create problems if the front person does gain access to memories? If so, those insiders in charge of your system need to talk with those parts and make an agreement with them that memory work will not involve the front person at this point.

Is your personality system sufficiently co-operative that the parts in charge will permit all those involved in a memory to participate in its processing, and permit all aspects of the memory to be included?

Do you have a safe person, such as a competent therapist or a good friend, who will not be overly shocked by or afraid of the content of your memories or the pain you experience in the process, who can understand why you need to put the memories together, and assist you with your memory processing? If not, do you feel solid enough to do the work without a support person?

Have you practised with an effective “grounding” technique to let you know that you are in the safe present when you have a flashback or are reliving a memory?

Depending on your answers to all these questions, you can become aware of whether or not you want to resolve your traumatic memories, and whether or not your personality system is ready to go ahead with it. Try not to underestimate yourself.

Choosing the memories to be put together

Here is the place where you need to proceed differently as a survivor of mind control and ritual abuse than you would if there were no organised abuse. For memories of abuse within the family, such as beatings and/or incest, you might have to wait for memories to emerge, and work with them. For some survivors, these memories come up first, because they are more “normal” than those of rituals or mind control experiments; for others, they come up last because they involve significant betrayal by people you love, which is hard to face.

With the mind control memories, it is most effective to choose memories strategically in order to dismantle the programming. It is possible to do this because of the storage systems for memories that the mind controllers deliberately installed. So, your first step is to find those insiders (file keepers, or librarians) in charge of the memory storage systems. They might have stored just the programme training memories, or they might have filed the other abuse memories, too. Those in charge of your system can work with these parts to find the memories you choose to work on.

Start with a relatively easy memory, a minor trauma that does not have too much shock, or horror, or physical pain, so that your parts can learn the process. One survivor, for instance, began with memories of her mother washing her hair and pulling it while combing it. Another chose to work on the memories of being teased at school, which caused splits between her school-going parts. In this example, there was no physical pain, and the emotional pain was bitter but not overwhelming. Ask the parts who have more difficult memories to observe what happens when you process the easy ones, so that they can see how to put memories together, and what happens as a result.

After those in charge of your personality system know how it is done, your inner leaders or council can select the memories to work through on a logical basis. The goal is safety. Do not focus on what is flashing back, as flashbacks can be a distraction from what is important, and are sometimes programmed. Instead, go for the most dangerous trainings of the insiders. The highest priority memories to process are the ones that make you unsafe (e.g., reporting or suicide programmes), or the ones that create symptoms which interfere with everyday life. You may already have made considerable progress with these issues (at least temporarily) by communicating with parts, but they are still important memories to deal with, to get rid of the urges that some parts might have to engage in unsafe behaviour.

Here is one survivor's account of how she puts her memories together.

Wendy Hoffman: "My memory process"

I am not fully aware of how my memory process works even as I can't feel how my blood manages to flow or breath passes through my lungs and the pores of my skin. They have their own inner mechanism, mysterious to me.

I imagine everyone's process is somewhat different and somewhat the same. Mine starts with a feeling that appears to come from nowhere but also from deep inside the person I am whom the rest of me doesn't know. The feeling is just about never pleasant. It is raw, spiky, and shakes me. After a while, it subsides. It can come in my sleep, while I'm walking my dog, when I'm cooking oatmeal, or at work. Next comes a body sensation. Two days ago, I had such severe pain in the left side of my lumbar spine that I gave myself a back treatment. I thought a vertebra had slipped and pressed on a nerve. Days later, I realised I was in a body memory of needles going into my spine in Montreal, Canada in 1961. Very slowly, the memory unfolded. I have learnt the theory that the parts of my mind holding different pieces come together and communicate their past with the outside part of me that is living our life, or at least going through the motions of living life. I have also learnt that the leaders of my sections decide what will be remembered when. I believe that that theory is true and accurate, a revolutionary piece of knowledge really, but I can't say I experience it step by step. I am not yet sufficiently self-aware to feel exactly what is going on internally.

All I know is that many mornings, when I am in a preconscious state, I wake up and a new or continuation memory unfurls. It is almost always connected to the body memory and emotion I have recently experienced. As I get closer to what happened, I am seized with chills. I imagine that's a personality shivering with fear. If I sense resistance to going further into the memory, I talk with the inside person who has the programme to stop me. Often, someone gets hungry and I tell that one to step aside into the internal kitchen and have a glass of milk and a cookie. After an hour or two, I need to take a break. For the pause, I don't do anything fancy, I just say we'll come back to it later. More usually starts pouring out that afternoon. I am jealous of these hours right after awakening and guard them the way a good mother protects her babies. If neighbours ask me to baby-sit, I tell them I am only available in the afternoon. Every morning I am not at my job I save for memory work. If I do memory work on a day I go to work, I find I am more tired than usual.

To help with the memory work, I get out a tiny machine that gently taps one hand, then the other. I hold each pulsar and the back and forth motion seems to loosen the memories and bring my inside parts out. I tap slowly and lightly because all my nerves are already agitated. It also helps if my dog is beside me. She and I have been through a lot together and we trust each other. Once the memories finish pouring out, they aren't so real any more. I used to write them down as they revealed themselves but that divided my mind further into processor and recorder. I found parts inside who could remember. Now after the memory or part of the memory finishes, I quickly record it in my journal. If I wait till that evening, I'll lose some of it. I want to hold it all.

I stumble cognitively. Did I really have such a gruesome life? Have people from the beginning of time gone through this? I can't believe all this happened to me and I didn't know it before. Was I made into an evil person? I must have asked myself these questions hundreds of times, but every time I ask it again. That's a lot of evil to exist in the world.

The other impossible part for me is the feelings. Emotions shredded my insides. I'm talking about the kind of emotional pain that folds the body in two. I can't store the feelings. They are always there. In my inner world, the parts with these intense emotions are housed in towers. Sometimes, it is impossible for me to be near people. I'm in too much pain to deal with their insensitivity. In my imagination, I have installed a pipe underneath my heart. The feelings from this abuse are constantly dripping out from me. It may take a lifetime to expel them. I have to excrete the feelings from the inside and I think for me an imaginative surgical intervention was needed. When the intense heart pain starts, I have to keep moving. Sometimes, I get chest pains so severe that I have to stop working for a while.

I help my memory process by letting my inside parts know that I love and respect them no matter what they did or who they had to become. I stand by all parts of myself. Without that attitude, I would not heal. Whichever parts talk to me from inside, I take their hands and let them lead me to where they need to go. Although I flinch, I follow. This journey can be isolating but they at least have me, for better or worse.

* * *

Different survivors have different kinds of memory storage, so you have to find the method of memory processing which works for your own personality system. There are many creative ways to achieve recovery. In the next chapter, I shall describe step by step a method which has worked well for most of my survivor clients.

I have found, however, that survivors whose mind control or ritual abuse experiences only happened very early in life, and ended by the age of about six, have difficulty approaching memory work this way. Their personality systems are not as clearly organised, and they do not have older insiders to guide the process, or, if they do, those are not from the mind control experiences but from spontaneous abuse and trauma in other settings, and are unable to understand and help the younger insiders.

If you are like this, you need to allow the memories to emerge at their own pace, and this can be much slower than the more efficient way that people can do it when they have well-organised internal hierarchies to direct the process. The key to finding your memories is finding your insiders, and helping them find one another, so that they can put together the memories which they share parts of. This is also the way any survivor needs to approach the traumatic memories that the abuser group did not deliberately structure.

Many therapists now use fractionated processing to help their clients work through traumatic memories. In his recent book for therapists, *Shelter from the Storm* (2013), Dr Richard Kluft says that he originally developed this (calling it “fractionated abreaction”) in order to make memory resolution easier for his patients. The essence of the method is to process one part of a traumatic memory at a time. There are several ways to do this:

- by dividing the duration of the event into small chunks, and processing one chunk at a time;
- by letting one insider at a time share his or her portion;
- by processing feelings, thoughts, sounds, and sights separately.

If your personality system is not very logically developed, and if you have been able to retrieve only small parts of a memory, German psychotherapist Gaby Breitenbach has developed a memory work technique which might help you. (You may observe that this abuse is international and going on in Germany and other parts of Europe, as well as Africa and English-speaking countries.)

Exercise 23. Processing difficult experiences (Gaby Breitenbach)

You can do this exercise alone (taping or writing it all down) or with the help of a friend or a therapist, who will write the contents down and also help you keep things in perspective as you go through the memory.

This is an exercise in inner teamwork. Working with your inner people, you can co-operate in order to put together a complete segment of your life experience, attaching the emotions and bodily sensations and thoughts that belong to that experience to its story. This process helps you discover parts of your experience that are stored separately because the experience was traumatic. Ask your inner parts to sit beside each other, looking at an imaginary television that shows the story of the difficult experience.

Instructions, Part 1

As you watch the difficult experience on your inner television, describe it in words. Make sure to tell it without any feelings, sensations, or thoughts about it. Just describe what happened, the events, and the sound track, as if you are watching a film on a screen. If things were said, please tell the actual words, and if noises could be heard, describe them as well. Describe everything any part of you could see or hear.

If you need a sense of more distance, you can talk about what the person of the past, for example the ten-year-old girl, or the five-year-old boy, saw and heard.

Please describe the beginning and the end of the scene first, so that you (and your helper, if you have one) are telling exactly what you have chosen to tell. You can control it.

Beginning:

End:

The whole scene:

If you get stuck, go to the last part of the memory which was clear, and ask yourself or let your helper ask something like: “and in that moment when [whatever was just described], did she (or he) react? Say or do something?” If that does not work, widen the focus with questions like “What did you see close by? What did you hear?”

Part 2

Listen to your story (on the tape, or told by your helper) in the same way it was told, without emotions. Make no comments unless to correct a mistake.

After listening to the story, what are your *thoughts*, right now?

What are your inner *feelings* in response to the story?

How do you experience those inner feelings in your body right now? If there is one main feeling, where do you feel it in your body and what kind of feeling is it?

What kind of body sensation is it (burning, pushing, pulling, pressure…)?

If it had a texture, what kind of surface would it be (coarse, smooth, bumpy…)?

What kind of material would it be made of (wood, stone, iron, cloth…)?

What kind of weight would it have (heavy, light, featherlike…)?

What colour or colours would it have (dark, light, translucent…)?

What would its edges be like (sharp, jagged, irregular, rounded…)?

Try to find a symbol that stands for the feeling created by this experience, and draw that symbol or imagine it in front of you.

Watch the power of that symbol reduce as you find a way to bring it under your control. For example, if it is a balloon you can prick it with a needle. If it is a metal object you can melt it with heat…

Try to find a single word to describe the feeling. The symbol may help you find it. Now imagine that the whole film has been recorded with that word as its name. Take the tape or disc and put it safely away in an inner storage place, such as a safe.

Part 3 (optional)

If you wish, you can visualise these questions as a puzzle. The puzzle can be any shape you like, as long as it has separate but connected pieces for each aspect of your experience.

You can use the acronym NEST to help you identify the aspects of the experience. Each aspect

N (narrative),
E (emotions),
S (sensory experiences) and
T (thoughts and beliefs)

occupies a piece of the puzzle.

You can break these down further. For example, Emotions might have a section for Fear, another for Anger, another for Sadness, another for Guilt, and so on.

For each part of the experience, ask yourself: Is this complete? When I look at a particular sequence of the story, am I convinced that this is showing all the feelings that belong to it? If I ask my inner people of other age levels, can they add things to it? What might be missing? Ask about all your senses: smell, taste, sight, hearing, and about every bodily sensation.

Part 4

When you have, for instance, a thousand experiences of pain or fear, it is also useful to discover where each one belongs in your life experiences. When you have put together one experience, ask your inner people what other similar experiences they have, at different ages. Imagine the puzzle being three-dimensional, with one level for each age at which a similar experience occurred: a puzzle behind a puzzle behind a puzzle. You can fill in the levels by asking your inner people about their experiences at each age.

Working with the puzzle, you and your inner people can learn to open just one experience at a time, and see how that experience has been fragmented into its components, split into inner narratives that belong to specific inner people, who have been trained to hold one or more components of the experience. At the same time, they can recognise the existence of other similar experiences and prepare to put those experiences together, too.

You may want to try these ideas as well as the one I shall describe in the next chapter, and find which method is most suitable for you when you approach your traumatic memories. Gaby's method provides a way for your front person to find the aspects of a memory, or series of related memories, which you might not have put together. This is particularly helpful for dealing with less well-organised abuse, when your inner leaders have not stored the memories deliberately in places designated by the perpetrator group. The next chapter describes a method I use, assisting internal leaders to find all the insiders who have pieces of a memory, and using the structured internal storage created by the abuser group.

CHAPTER FIFTEEN

Putting together the traumatic memories

To be fully healed, survivors of mind control and ritual abuse need to put together all components of the traumatic memories that caused the splits between their parts. This is what dissolves the programmes and frees insiders from the internal memory landscapes where they are stuck and the compulsions to do what the abusers trained them to do. It is, in many ways, the core of the recovery process.

Let me clarify what I mean by "memories". What most people mean when they use this term is "the story", or the narrative—who did what, where, and when. But each of your traumatic memories includes not just the facts, but also, and perhaps most importantly, the physical and emotional pain. Different separated, insulated parts of your brain hold fragments of the memory. The narrative is only one aspect of the whole memory, and is stored in a different part or circuit of the brain from the rest of the experience.

In your personality system, this means that different aspects of the same memory are held by different parts of you. You have parts who know what happened, parts who saw things, parts who heard sounds and words (including programming commands), parts who hold various different emotions (such as fear, sadness, and anger), and parts who hold bodily sensations (such as pain, sexual feelings, or electroshock). A single traumatic memory may be divided among ten or more insiders. The abuser groups create these divisions deliberately to reinforce your dissociation and prevent you from putting the memories together.

Even if you think you "remember" a trauma, you can still be affected by it, flooded with post trauma feelings, and parts involved in that trauma can still feel compelled to act on the instructions their controllers gave them. This happens when you have not put together the entire memory, including the emotions, physical sensations, and instructions, as well as the story of what happened.

Organised abuser groups worked out long ago that the only way to fully resolve a trauma is to put together all aspects of it. They deliberately create "recycler" insiders whose job is to withhold some part of each memory so that the survivor cannot put that memory together and, thus, destroy the programming anchored in that memory. The piece of memory held by a recycler part can be anything—some pain, certain words, an emotion—but as long as it is withheld, the memory cannot be fully reconstituted and the programming dissolved.

In order to resolve the trauma and the programming from a memory, every part of you who holds a piece of that particular memory needs to share the part they hold with every other insider who was involved with that particular experience. I do not mean just a piece of the story. All aspects—the different emotions, the physical pain and other sensations, the narrative, the drugged feelings, the instructions, etc. — must be included. You must take that memory from an ordinary life experience such as driving in the car to a ritual site, on until you return to ordinary life again, such as waking up in your own bed. When *all* the parts who were present share their parts of the memory with one another, the trauma will be resolved and the programming dissolved. You do not have to do it all at once, as that can be overwhelming, but it is important to do it all.

Reintegrating memories with all their components to remove rather than merely resisting programming is a lengthy and painful process. However, those who have done it say it is more than worth it. They get their lives back. They get to own whatever happened to them, and recognise what caused the emotions they have experienced all their lives. They release trapped energy and emotions, and, as a consequence, feel lighter and freer. Each time I assist a survivor client in working through a traumatic memory, that survivor reports that although he or she is tired afterwards, a huge burden has lifted and its removal has made room for a new joy in life. Even more important than getting your life back is becoming yourself again or, more likely, for the first time.

Principles to make memory work effective

In my experience, a few key principles can make memory work efficient, minimally traumatising, and permanently healing. These principles are derived from what I have learned from survivors' minds and experiences about how the mind-controlling abuser groups work when they create and train insiders. The abuser groups, including scientists among them, have extensively researched the way that traumatic memory and dissociation work. Unlike those scientists working on the visible side of our society's dissociative barrier, they do not have an ethics committee, and they have experimented considerably with children to learn how to create programmed dissociative inside parts, how to keep memories (including physical and emotional pain) stored efficiently, and how to keep trauma from being resolved. The method I recommend here is based on what they have done as well as on the visible research of genuine ethical scientists, and on my own experience as a clinical psychologist.

The keys that make this method of memory processing effective are:

1. Make sure that all bodily sensations and emotions, and all words and pictures, are included in the memory processing.
2. Make sure that all insiders who have any aspect of the memory participate, including “recycler” parts.
3. Utilise the memory storage already built in by the abusers.
4. Utilise the internal recorders' knowledge of how to find memories and insiders who hold pieces of each memory;
5. Work through each memory in stages, usually beginning with the storyline while the other aspects are stored.

I do not claim that the method I am about to describe to you is the only technique, or even the best technique you can use; I can only claim that it is very effective for most of my survivor clients. It takes advantage of the way the organised abusers have stored the memories and the personality parts inside their victims. It has been carefully honed for a number of years, during which time I have worked the “bugs” out of it, correcting the most common errors that I used to make.

If you are a working with a therapist, or are a therapist yourself, you can enhance this memory work by any one of a number of existing trauma techniques, such as EMDR, energy therapies, and hypnosis.

Finding and selecting memories

I first described recorder parts in Chapter Four. Recorder parts know everything about the system and the history, and observe it with apparent disinterest. They are trained to do nothing but store information, which they tell to their handlers or others when required. In preparing to process a particular memory or programme, I ask the internal recorders to find both the contents of the event and all the parts of the person who are holding any part of that memory. Although they are not usually allowed to deliberately intervene on their own initiative to help the person, they are glad to assist when asked. Recorders I have met often believe they are not human (for example, are aliens or whales) and, therefore, cannot act in this world.

Thanks to the recorders, it is actually easier to access and reconstitute memories held within mind-controlled or ritually abused survivors than those within other kinds of trauma survivors. You do not need to chase flashbacks. You do not need to spend weeks retrieving the content of the memory. You can do what you need to do in an organised rather than haphazard way. For example, you could simply ask your parts for “the suicide programme”, “the memory that gives me the stomach ache”, “the programme that makes me bulimic”, “the memory that I see part of in the nightmare”, “the memory that gives me that awful feeling of sadness”, or “the memory that makes me get up and go outside at night”. You have insiders who know how to find the right one, even if several different memories are causing a particular symptom and need to be processed one at a time.

It can also be helpful, especially in the later stages of recovery, to have your internal programmers create charts or lists of the programmes, and then work through them systematically (as I described in Chapter Ten).

Before processing a memory, all you need to know is that it is the one causing the symptoms or behaviours that need to end, and that you will have enough time to get through it from start to finish (or can contain it well if it is unfinished). If you are processing it with a therapist, please note that I, as a therapist, prefer *not* to be told ahead of time what the content of the memory is. And it is wisest that you not know ahead of time either. Speculation by the front person and other parts about what a memory might contain can contaminate the process and make it more difficult to get at the actual memory. Also, in these days when therapists are being accused of creating “false memories” in their clients, I want to avoid all possibility of suspicion. And since abuser groups tell clients they have made it all up, you are more likely to believe your own memories if you have not tried to figure them out ahead of time.

How much memory to process at once

Now, when organised abusive groups decide to traumatise children, they do not do it neatly in little pieces that are just the right size for an hour or two of memory processing. Sometimes, they take a child or a group of children to “cult camp”, or “military cadet camp” for a week, while other children are going to regular camp. Some major rituals or pornographic film shoots go on for days. Programme creation, however, usually involves a deliberate trauma in which a new part is split off and given instructions; each programme is repeated at different ages, and this repetition is documented both externally and internally within the records of the internal programmers. A programme creation training event might be embedded within a longer event, but it does have a beginning and an end.

When you select a memory for processing, your internal leaders need to select an event, or a piece of an event, which has a beginning and an end (even if other bad things happened both before and after this piece), and ideally can be processed in a single sitting. If this cannot be done with a particular memory, more care must be taken to put away the remainder of the memory temporarily so that you can manage your daily life before you do memory work again.

When you work through a traumatic memory, always begin the story in “normal life” (e.g., getting into the car to go to an event, or being awakened in the middle of the night and told to get up) and follow it through until you are in “normal life” again, with the traumatic event having happened in between. The parts of you who hold the beginning and end of a memory are usually different from the ones in the middle, but selecting a complete memory, normal life-to-normal life, in this way helps you understand how the traumatic events fit in with your everyday life.

Often, for a survivor, the memories of bizarre and horrible events seem unreal because they seem unconnected to the daily life remembered by the front person. When your memory work includes the connection between “regular life” and your hidden life, it all begins to make sense, and you begin to realise that these events not only occurred, but were arranged and conducted by actual people, many of whom also existed in more benign positions in your “regular” daily life. This helps you gain perspective on what was actually going on.

Getting internal agreement to do the work

Often, the insiders who have only the awareness of what occurred do not want to experience the pain, and the ones who just have the feelings do not want to know what happened to them; in that case, you have to talk with them about the advantages of memory processing.

In speaking with the parts who do not want the pain, emphasise that everyone inside shares the same body, and while *they* may feel fine, someone else inside is in pain. Some parts might scoff at the pain holders as “garbage kids”, and weak, but it is fairly easy to help them see that those pain holders have done a very helpful job so that the “tough” parts can do their jobs without feeling the pain, and that the pain-holder parts will remain in pain until the memory is put together, which is unfair to them.

In speaking with the parts who have the feelings but do not want the knowledge, emphasise that the abuse is now over (if you know it is actually over), and that the awful feelings they have belong to the time of the abuse, not to the present. Tell them that if they participate in putting the memories together, they will be truly aware and even feel that the events are over, and that their feelings from the time of the abuse will be discharged and will no longer plague them. If the abuse is not over, but is ongoing, then their shared awareness will help end it and keep them safe in the future. It is very important to understand that the parts you do not want to know about are still you, and that they are not freaks, but have your good qualities also.

Preparation for memory work

You do not just dive into a traumatic memory and hope it comes out all right, any more than you would start on a road trip without a map or GPS, and enough fuel and money to get to your destination. You need to prepare carefully. All of the following steps ensure that the memory work will be effective. Once you have chosen an actual memory to be processed, and you have developed the internal containers for feelings and incomplete memories (discussed in the previous chapter), you are ready to begin.

Gather the parts

As much as you can, make sure that all the insiders who contain pieces of the chosen memory participate. By "pieces of the memory", I mean not only the story but the sounds, tastes, smells, bodily sensations, thoughts, and emotions. This means speaking with these insiders ahead of time (or having other parts or your therapist speak with them) and getting their agreement. You do not have to know their names, as long as you know you have all those involved in the memory. Sometimes, it is hard to know whether you have everyone. If you do not, the memory processing might stall, and at that point you might have to look for whoever was left out. Someone inside will know who it is.

This is very important: if even one insider who holds a portion of the memory stays out of the memory processing, or withholds part of what he or she knows, that insider is likely to experience ongoing flashbacks of the traumatic event that might affect the whole system. In a way, this is helpful, because it signals that there is a missing piece you need to retrieve. Sometimes, it is impossible to gather all the insiders involved in a memory because some of them are still hidden. If this is the case, it will help to keep an indexed summary of the memories you have worked through, and, if they are memories of the abuser group's deliberate programming, their purpose. If you do not have time to write down all the details, just make sure that some insider has the (possibly new) job of keeping track of which memories were processed and how they relate to the programmes. One of the internal programmers or recorders might like this job.

It is sometimes helpful to invite parts to be present who were not there for the original event—for example, a care-taker for little children. Other parts might also want to watch from a distance, to acquire knowledge of how to process memories or of what happened to the body. Over time, you will be able to find one or two parts who will specialise in helping the others with memory processing. I have found that often the most effective ones are severely traumatised, empathic child parts. These parts, especially, remind us what a great gift a personality system can be. Many people who have not been traumatised have the luxury of going through life without much caring what is happening to other people whom they do not know personally. Trauma, like the fire that refines metal, can create good people who care, and are not indifferent to the suffering of others.

It is not necessary to have the front person present during memory work unless that personality was involved in the original experience. Memories that have been completely processed often gradually "leak" through to the main adult personality in the days following the memory work, but if this does not happen, do not require the adult to know their content. If you intend to work through until you are completely healed, a time will come when the front person will come to know. But for now, you can trust the wisdom of those in charge of your personality system. The adult needs to function in the present external world, hold a job, study, look after children, relate to other people, balance his or her chequebook, and cook without burning the food.

Insiders who do not have any part of the original memory do not need to participate. But do include those who have the transition from "regular life" to the special traumatic events, for example, those who rode in the car to the rituals. This way, you can clearly identify when and where the events occurred.

Other insiders might want to observe as you process a memory to see how it is done, so they can be ready when their turn comes.

Include the internal recyclers

Some parts, usually known as recyclers or reactivators, are trained to deliberately withhold and hide a small part of each training memory so that the effect of the training cannot be destroyed. The hidden bit may be some words that were spoken, something they saw, an emotion, or some physical pain. If this piece is not included in the memory, the perpetrator group will be able to re-create the programme from the missing piece. (I am not sure how this works in the brain.)

I remember my shock when all the programmes I had worked through with one of my first survivor clients suddenly began to activate once more. Her recycling programme, which I had not known about, was operating. If the perpetrator group accesses you, they will have the capacity to set off many programmes at once if they discover you have done memory work but not included the recycler's part. That is what happened with this survivor.

Prevent this disaster by looking for recycler parts, and convincing them to include their part in each memory you work through. This is one reason to keep specific records of memory processing. If you go through memories without including the recyclers, you will have to redo them, working from your records, inserting the piece which the recycler holds for each memory. It will not be as painful as the first time, but it will still be hard work.

You may ask why you will not just remember the memories you have gone through. The first time you go through a traumatic memory, you will notice it is very intense and specific, as if every sensation is being experienced for the first time. In a way, that is true: it is the first time many parts of you have had this experience. It has been stored just in pieces, and now it is put together. But when a memory has been entirely, or even mostly, put together, it enters your general memory bank of known events, and there it begins to fade in its intensity and get confused with other similar memories. So, if you want a record of it, you need to make the record that first time.

It is quite possible for you to find the recycler parts; the process is not complicated, and you can do it. Just ask internally in a casual way whether there are any parts trained to keep pieces of the memories separate. Usually, someone will answer truthfully, and then permit you to dialogue with the recyclers or those in charge of them.

Some personality systems have hidden areas in which large numbers of fragmentary parts are hidden, each group with a particular type of emotional state. These are kept for later use by the perpetrator group, and might also be used to reconstitute programmes for which they kept some of the emotions. If you have such places in your system, it is wise to find them and free their inhabitants.

Needless to say, memory work is much more efficient, and you are much safer, if each memory only has to be processed once. And, believe it or not, you can get through it. Sometimes, I look at it like mowing a gigantic lawn. When I mow, I like to go around the outside perimeter of the lawn so that the remaining square becomes gradually smaller and smaller, and eventually I have the satisfaction of seeing the tiny piece in the middle disappear completely. I have seen survivors accomplish this with memories too.

Titrate or fractionate the memory components

The goal of this work is re-association of memories, but not reliving them all at once in all their painful detail. It is important not to allow yourself to become flooded with painful memories, or to be overwhelmed by the emotions or bodily sensations when working with any particular memory. You can avoid this by using your ability to dissociate parts of experience in a helpful way.

When a memory is dissociated, the components of the experience are generally separated from one another, each component held by a different insider or group of insiders. Although you want all the insiders who were present to be present when you process the memory, you want initially to keep some of the memory's components separate.

You can look for the components by listing all the senses, thinking of the emotions as also being a group of senses. I think of the senses as organised into three groups:

- the distance senses — sight and hearing;
- body sensations — smell and taste, pain, heat and cold, sexual feelings, drugged feelings, etc.;
- emotions—fear, terror, anxiety, anger, frustration, sadness, etc.

The first time you go through a traumatic memory, you will want to allow only the first group (sight and hearing) to be present. Since sight and sound do not hurt (unless there is an unbearably loud noise), these senses can be tolerated for a fairly long time without too much discomfort. They are also essential for obtaining information about what happened, and what false beliefs, instructions, and programmes were implanted.

Bodily pain, on the other hand, is very difficult to bear. It helps to dissociate it while the *content* of the memory is learnt.

Smell and taste and touch can be quite unpleasant but not completely unbearable, unless the memory involves cannibalism or corpses, which, unfortunately, come with ritual abuse. Sometimes, it is preferable to allow those insiders present to experience just a little bit of these bodily sensations when you go through the memory for the first time, so that you can gain the information these senses provide. For example, in a memory in which a survivor was injected with a numbing drug and unable to move, it was necessary to include a small part of these sensations to make her aware of what was happening to her.

Like the bodily sensations, the emotions in a traumatic situation are very strong, and can make it very difficult to proceed with putting the memory together. So, they need to be temporarily dissociated. Sexual feelings can distract some parts, causing them to dwell on the memory rather than getting on with it. Or these feelings can be so embarrassing that you may refuse to experience them, especially if you are with someone else, such as a friend or a therapist. Feelings created by drugs can confuse you, so generally it is wisest to omit the drug sensations during the first run through the story of the memory.

Temporarily put away the feelings

When you gather together the insiders who have pieces of the memory, you could instruct them as follows.

“We are now going to put away the feelings from this memory, bit by bit, so that we can see what happened without it hurting.

“Put in all the pain, all the “owies” and hurts. (If you are dealing with child parts, use childish words as well as adult synonyms for pain and emotions, to make sure that the young parts understand you.)

“Now, put in all the fear, all the scared feelings, all the terror, all the worry and anxiety.

“Now, put in all the angry and mad feelings, and all the sad and hopeless feelings.

“Now, put in any drugs and any sexual feelings.

“Now put in anything else, anything you felt in any part of your body, and anything you felt in any part of your feelings.

"When you are sure that all the feelings are in the container, close the box (or bucket) and lock it up tightly. Keep the doggy door (or spout, or straw) ready in case any more feelings come up when you watch the film."

Remember to tailor any suggestion you read here, and any treatment in general, to your own specific needs and preferences. Some survivors like to speak out loud and name what theyare putting in. Some survivors like to have see-through containers, so they can see what is in them. Remember, however, that all of it needs to be processed later, because anything you keep out of a memory (e.g., pleasant sexual or drug feelings) is likely to cause flashbacks later. LisaBri has a strong insider standing guard on the rubbish bin she uses to contain feelings, so that they do not leak during the memory processing.

Watching the "video" of the memory

Go through each memory at least twice. The first time, do it as if you are watching a video, with sight and sound but no emotions or bodily sensations. The parts can watch it on an internal screen in a viewing room. When you watch the video, hold an imaginary remote control, so that you can make the picture bigger or smaller, speed up or slow down, rewind, fast forward, mute, or stop. You can pause the video to take a bathroom break, or to talk about something that was on it. All, or almost all, of the feelings have been put away into a container.

Because you are not feeling the pain or the fear, you are able to describe what is happening clearly, and will remember what happened. If you do it with a therapist or friend, he or she will be able to take coherent, even verbatim, notes. But you probably do not want to be writing things down as you watch the video, since this will interfere with the process. You can ask an insider who remembers things well to help you write it down once you have completed the memory processing.

When you are watching this "video", you need to be simultaneously in the inner world which includes the memory, and in the outer present world, either alone or with a safe person, in a safe place. Stay as conscious as possible, closely enough connected to the real world that you can describe the memory while going through it. This is important for two reasons. It helps you stay grounded in the present, so that the memory processing does not turn into a flashback, and it helps you to know two important things: whether all parts of the memory are being included, and what parts were trained to do.

Be sure you include what you heard (words as well as sounds) as well as what you saw. With mind controlled and ritually abused survivors, the words usually contain the programming or training, so the parts who know what was said will sometimes omit the soundtrack, and it has to be specifically requested. They might have been ordered never to reveal what was said to them. Stay alert to whether an insider tries to skip a part of the memory, and ask them to put that part in. Be suspicious if the memory seems to have a gap, and ask whose part is missing. Even if the memory appears whole, ask whether there is anything missing or glossed over.

You (the front person or an older higher-up) can talk with the parts as they go through the memory, asking questions (for clarification only), giving reassurances that the event is not really happening now, and correcting their confused perceptions as they express them. If the abusers implanted a false idea during the memory (e.g., that what happened was all your fault), you can challenge it right there. It is extremely effective to challenge the lies and tricks right at the point where your parts are remembering them clearly for the first time.

If different parts hold different aspects of the experience, the chronological order of the parts of the memory can become confused. To prevent this, ask for someone inside who knows the content to line the parts up in the order in which their pieces come.

If the memory gets stuck, take a break to talk with the parts and find out why. Sometimes, an insider just does not want to go through with it. Sometimes, there is a piece of the memory held by an unknown part, whom you have to find. Then you need to negotiate with that part, and decide whether or not to go ahead with the memory. The feelings and needs of all parts deserve a fair hearing, and respect. Insiders can be amazingly co-operative if you just listen to them and ask them for help. Often, the only people they have spoken with (until now) were abusers, who never listened to them, so, while they might be suspicious at first, they will warm up when you listen and explain what you need. There may be parts who are ashamed of what they were forced to do, or did on their own, and now want to hide. Let them know that you need their memory pieces and will not judge them.

Often there has been “incidental training”, accidental events incorporated into a training memory. For instance, in the middle of a training session or other traumatic event, someone might have turned on a radio, or a car horn might have honked outside. Incidental training is the “white noise” in the background that most people do not even notice, because they are too busy concentrating on what is happening in the room with them, but it will end up becoming part of the traumatic memory. However, it is often forgotten or left out while trying to break down a programme, leaving you unable to work out why things just are not working. It must be included in the memory processing.

During the process, be careful to monitor your emotional state. If you notice your feelings becoming overwhelming, remind your parts to dissociate them into their container. If this does not work, stop the memory temporarily to diagnose and address the problem (for example, an insider who refuses to put away pleasant sexual or drugged feelings can keep other feelings active as well).

Sometimes, a very young part will want to do the story-telling part of a memory through play with dolls, a sand tray, or other toys, or by drawing what happened. This can be useful, especially because, in some cases, it bypasses the “don't talk” programming, as the story is not told by talking.

It helps to write down what you saw and heard during the “video” part of the memory quite soon after you go through it. This narrative is probably the best record you will ever have of what happened to you, as the memory will fade once it is consciously known. The memory that returns when first putting together a dissociated trauma is far more detailed and feels much more “alive” than any other.

Special issues in memory processing

Infant memories

It is important that memories of your original splits be processed if you want to become your whole self, since, with organised abuse, most parts are deliberately split off in infancy. Abuser groups often describe a designed personality system as a tree (for example, the tree of life, the Kabbalah). A tree has a trunk from which come the biggest branches, then other branches come off those, and smaller and smaller branches off the others. Each split creates a new branch. Memories of events that occur very early in life may involve the entire personality system, as they are traumas that split a branch off the trunk. To process these, all of the parts involved might have to regress to the age at which the trauma happened while they process the memory, which is sometimes very young. You may feel yourself becoming younger as you go through these very early memories.

If, as a baby, you had already been previously split, some of your older parts might not belong to the branch whose trauma you are working on. In that case, these older parts can stay nearby and help by holding the babies internally and keeping them connected with the present-day situation. But with the earliest splits, all parts regress to infancy during the memory. So, make sure your body is in a safe, comfortable place when you do the memory work if you do not have a friend or therapist to guide you through it.

When I work as a therapist on a survivor's baby memories, sometimes I have to use word and touch signals with such memories because the survivor is unable to speak, or cannot return to the present. I squeeze the survivor's hand and ask the client to squeeze mine from time to time to indicate that he or she can hear me. I pre-arrange “stop” signals—one for the survivor to give me if he or she cannot speak, and one for me to give the survivor which will automatically stop the memory. (For example, I may hold the right shoulder firmly and say “Stop!” loudly.) I practise these things with easy memories first. If the memory belongs to pre-verbal parts, I ask a verbally fluent part to watch. Then I help the survivor process the memory in short segments, stopping to allow the older part to tell what happened. If you have a memory-processing partner (therapist or friend), you can arrange for that person to help you in this way. This person can reflect the baby's experience by imitating his or her body language, just as a caring parent will do with an infant.

Memory processing is different for infant parts. Survivor and former cult trainer Stella Katz (who has, sadly, recently succumbed to cancer) described her experience with infant parts and memory processing as relatively quick and uncomplicated.

> Processing baby memories…is something that can be done very quickly if you just let the person do it without verbal interference.
>
> Baby memories phase in and out because babies phase in and out during the experience. They are not like a five year old who remembers hours of torture, in that they only take in small parts of memories. That's why when training babies you use short quick things, rather than long drawn out things. What takes a five year old 24 hours to break, only takes a baby a few minutes.
>
> Baby memories are based on events that occur when life is still a complete mystery, so for a baby it is best to just take what you see as real. So, when travelling back to baby years, don't try to understand, just experience, and let it go.
>
> These memories are the hardest to get at, but the easiest to let go of.

I have found that when survivors access baby memories, they are often able to make sense of them in ways in which they could not as a baby. The memories appear in their sensory form, as they are being experienced for the first time. But now, when they cross over into the cognitive part of the brain, there is an adult brain able to understand them. One survivor remembered her mother saying “I hate you” to her right after she was born. She heard the words and felt her mother's emotions as a baby, and as an adult she knew what the words meant.

How do you find the baby memories? When one survivor had worked through all the memories of the parts on the layers in her internal structure (a tetrahedron or inverted pyramid) as well as the memories of home abuse, she was left with “the point”—the portion of the structure at the very base. It contained the infant memories, which were a conglomeration of bodily sensations and emotions. Your memories might not be organised that way; they may be divided by topic, or by emotion—but the baby memories are stored somewhere in your personality system, and someone inside knows where to find them.

Memories of dying or becoming unconscious

During memory work, you will encounter memories of times when you became unconscious or even temporarily died. This can last for some time and it can be quite frightening to you and to the person helping you. What if you do not wake up? Having helped survivors work through a large number of such memories, I have confidence that a survivor will not actually die during the memory work because they did not die, or, at least, did not remain dead, during the original trauma. I have helped my clients work through quite a few memories of apparent death, and of resuscitation by the perpetrators when the abuse went too far and the child was in the process of dying. Although it is certainly gruesome, these memories can be processed like any other.

Although I strongly suggest that these memories not be the first ones you tackle, they are necessary to address. Additionally, within these memories are the hidden gems of the near-death experiences that can give you spiritual hope. We shall look at these in more detail in Chapter Twenty.

Combining memories

You can put together a number of similar memories into one memory processing session. If you were sexually abused by your father, for example, there might have been hundreds or thousands of incidents. All the oral rapes in the bedroom, or all the touching in the television room, or all the "come-when-you-hear-the-whistle" trainings may be grouped together and processed as if they are one. I do not know how survivors do this, but I know that they can, and do. This is fortunate, because if it were not the case, trauma recovery would take forever and be so painful that people might give up.

Creating programme "wiring diagrams"

As discussed in Chapter Ten, "Dealing with triggering", some abuser groups instruct insiders about what to do if a survivor attempts to work through programming memories in order to destroy the programmes. Each programme that the survivor attempts to undo (through working through the memory) is attached to another programme, which is turned on as soon as he or she interferes with the first programme. Some personality systems have this connection between programmes built in. For example, if you attempted to undo a suicide programme, it might trigger a programme to harm your body, and if you attempt to undo the programme to harm your body, it might trigger a programme causing bodily pain, and if you attempt to undo that programme, it might trigger a programme to fall asleep. Sometimes, the wiring is circular, for instance, in the above example, working through the "sleep" programme might trigger a suicide programme.

To battle this, get your insiders to make "wiring diagrams", describing what other programme would be set off if you interfered with a particular programme. Examine the wiring diagram and select the weakest link, which might be a programme you have already worked through, or one which is minimally harmful, or one for which you know and can use the "off" trigger. Start there, and work your way through the sequence backwards. So, let us say that in the example above, you know the "off" trigger for the bodily pain. You begin to work on the memory of the programme for harming your body, and the pain kicks in. You immediately use the "off" trigger for the pain programme, and then go back to what you were doing.

Memories that have to be redone

If, later in your recovery, a part or group of parts emerges who belongs to a memory you have already done, it will be easy to reprocess the memory if you have a record of it. For instance, sometimes a programme or training you have destroyed suddenly starts working again, and you find yourself engaging in behaviours you thought you were cured of. It is important, then, to identify which programme has re-emerged, and reprocess that training memory more completely, putting in the missing pieces. When this happens, it is usually because some insider was hidden, and has now emerged, with his or her memory piece. He or she might be a recycler (whose job was to hide the piece), or simply a part who was split off during this memory.

Sometimes, there are parts who believe themselves to be computers or programmers, who believe they have the ability to create new programmes. They cannot. They can only use existing programmes and get them working again.

Adding in the feelings

When you have *completely* put together a previously unconscious memory, you have discharged the emotions connected with it, brought the behaviours programmed by the event under your conscious control, and freed the insiders separated by the event to join back together, *that is recovery*.

If you just leave the feelings dissociated into the containers, you will temporarily feel better, as I hope you did while you were putting together the content of the memory. But this reprieve will not last. The containers are likely to leak, as the memory tries to complete itself, and you may be flooded with those feelings. You are not yet healed. The programme created by this remembered event will still be capable of operating. You need to go on to the next stage.

There is an internal rhythm to this process. Once you have started effective memory work, it continues, bit by bit, as your inside leaders discover the joy of undoing what was done by the perpetrator group.

After getting the "story" of a memory, you might want to take a break in the "real world" of the present before tackling the feelings, and you might want to have some internal conversation (and conversation with your therapist or friend, if you have one with you) before proceeding. Just the information in the content of a memory is huge to digest, and the new feelings you will have in response to the content can be overwhelming.

The next step sounds easy, but it is very hard, and it can be intensely painful. Fortunately, it is brief, only lasting a few minutes or seconds for each memory, or memory segment, which is processed. It is like having a broken limb reset, which can be extremely painful but is necessary for the limb to be put back together in the right way and be useable once more. I know this is pretty unpleasant to anticipate, but the results are definitely worth it. If you survived this experience in the first place, you can revisit it for a few seconds now to free yourself from its effects. It will be incredibly beneficial in the long run.

In this step, open the container that has the feelings in it, and put the memory together with the feelings. *The feelings do not have to be experienced for the duration for which they were originally felt, but they do have to be acknowledged and incorporated into the memory along with the story and the physical sensations*. The feelings to be included are both the physical and the emotional sensations that occurred at the time of the memory; they do not include new reactions by parts (including the front person) who did not previously share in this memory. All the parts who were present during the event you are remembering need to share in the feelings.

Each survivor has his or her own preferred method of putting the story together with the feelings. It helps if you have the feelings in a transparent container, so that you can see your emotions gradually empty out of the container as you put them in with the story of the memory.

One way of doing this is counting. If your abuse does not include numbers as programme triggers, you might count upwards from one to ten, spacing the numbers about one second apart. You put the feelings in, adding more after each number. As each number is spoken, your agony increases. Usually a ten-count is enough to contain a memory, although for some very long memories it is necessary to go to fifteen, or even twenty. You will know when the feelings have all been acknowledged. Then count back to zero, putting the feelings away, now connected with the storyline of the memory. Some survivors find this brief, intense method is all they need to reassociate the feelings with the story line of the memory. Other people find it necessary to take a longer time to make sure that every physical sensation and every emotion are included.

Another method is to name out loud, slowly (or have your therapist or support person name out loud), what feelings are being associated with the memory, with a pause between each type of feeling: "Everything you tasted…everything you smelled…everything you felt in any part of your body [name specific body sensations such as pain in particular locations, electric shock, and sexual feelings, remembering to mention any sensations which would have happened in the particular memory you are dealing with]…everything you felt in any part of your emotions [name specific emotions such as fear, anger, anxiety, and sadness, remembering to mention any which must have been in the particular memory]."

Or you or your memory-processing partner (therapist or friend) can read out loud the transcript of what you said during the first story-telling, slowly, with a pause after each line. You then allow yourself to experience the feelings that belong to that part of the memory during each pause. Or you can go through the transcript several times, each time adding in more feelings.

Another thing you can do is to feel the feelings of the memory while you breathe in, then let them go as you breathe out. You can do this with one kind of feeling at a time, going through the storyline as often as you need to until the feelings have all been experienced and shared between the insiders who were in this event. You imagine the feelings beginning in the container into which you originally put them, and seeing it gradually empty as you allow yourself to experience them.

Look for feelings that some parts of you might be withholding because of shame or embarrassment, such as enjoyment of power, feeling special, sexual arousal, betraying or hurting someone, or sacrificing someone else to save someone you love. These must also be included, or the memory will not be fully processed, and the withheld feelings might flood you later.

As you can see, there are many ways of putting the feelings together with the rest of the memory. You can experiment with these and choose the way that works best for you.

Closure and integration of material

To complete the process, you can imagine the memory being put together by placing the whole thing in a new container, not one to be locked away, but one to be known, at least to the inside parts of you who took part in that event. It can help to mention specific things that happened in the memory, to make sure that everything is put in. You can say to your parts the final words:

"Put together:

- everything you saw,
- everything you heard (all the sounds, all the words),
- everything you tasted,
- everything you smelled,
- everything you felt in any part of your body [here, you name specific body sensations such as pain

and sexual feelings, remembering to mention any sensations which would have happened in the particular memory we are dealing with], and

- everything you felt in any part of your emotions [here, you name specific emotions such as fear, anger, anxiety, and sadness, remembering to mention any which must have been in the particular memory]."

Once a memory has been put together with all its parts, a miraculous thing happens. The emotions and body sensations from the time of the traumatic memory disappear, leaving only a knowledge of what happened, similar to the knowledge of any other life experience. Finally, healing can occur. The wound is closed, though there may be a scar, in terms of your awareness that a horrible thing happened to you, but you survived. *The parts* (insiders) involved might also join with one another, depending on whether or not other memories still stand between them. This is a natural outcome of the memory barriers between them being dissolved. And the huge burden of the frozen trauma will be lifted, allowing room for joy to be alive.

There will, however, still be a need for parts, including the front person if he or she becomes aware of the memory, to experience their current emotions about what they now know happened to them, and to make sense of it.

Sending the memory into storage

In physiological terms, when the memory is reassociated, then it has been taken from the sensory and emotional centres of the brain through the hippocampus to the cerebral cortex (the cognitive processing part), and now it can be remembered like any other memory. Its vividness and emotional punch will gradually fade with time. So, if you want a record of what happened to you, be sure to write everything down or speak it into a recording device once you have the storyline, because you will not remember the details for very long.

If you had time only to partially process the memory, either leaving the feelings alone or doing just a segment of what happened, then it is important to put the incomplete memory away in one of your containers, labelling it so someone inside knows where it is. That way, it will not create flashbacks.

After all the parts of a memory, including the feelings, are joined in your awareness, you can send the labelled container into permanent storage. The way in which this is done depends upon your inner world. One survivor just threw the box into the internal river, and it floated down to its resting place. Another used her inner self helper, who believed herself to be a whale, to take the container away and deposit it on the bottom of the ocean. If she had to reprocess the memory, the whale could get it back again—but the other parts could not. Some survivors just use filing systems similar to the original ones installed by the abusers — but for completed memories. The main reason to store the memory this way is in case new insiders pop up later who have something to add to this memory. It is also useful to have it located somewhere known to the file manager parts if the front person is not yet ready to know what happened. Eventually, it will be time to let the front person know. Once the front person knows, it is likely that this memory will become just a "regular memory", no longer holding the traumatic impact it once had, although the conscious knowledge of what happened may change your life.

Completing the processing and integrating parts

At the conclusion of the process, it is helpful to have a symbolic cleansing and joining, an image of your choosing located in your inner world.

I like to use a (breathable) waterfall of soft, warm, sparkling water or coloured light, in which the parts can wash away any all remnants of the memory which did not get into the container. They can cleanse themselves, inside and out, from any dirty or contaminated feelings. They can also revitalise themselves, removing their tiredness.

Now, finally, the waterfall will wash away any boundaries between parts whose separateness is no longer necessary, and will blend them together. Any parts who still need to be separate will remain separate and have their boundaries strengthened. We shall look in more detail at integrations in Chapter Twenty-one, “Becoming yourself”.

You do not have to use a waterfall. Do not use one if your abusers installed one in your inner world; use something else. Choose a setting and image which works for you, so that the parts involved in the memory can be cleansed and healed, and can join if they are ready.

Cognitive and emotional processing

Although the *previous* emotions (the ones which happened at the time of the traumatic event) have been put in with the memory, there will be new *current* emotions about what happened.

It is important, after you work through a memory, to discuss any implications the memory might have with your therapist or friend, or to write about it if you are doing it alone. All these thoughts and feelings deserve to be expressed, especially if you have just become aware of some trauma that you did not previously know about. You might need to recognise and deliberately reject the false beliefs that resulted from the dissociated trauma. You might have discovered that someone you believed was safe was a perpetrator. You need time to talk with your parts, the ones who were in the memory, and the ones who came to know about it. You need internal conversation about what this memory means, and you need to reassure the little ones that you are safer because of knowing this now.

When memories are processed and shared with other parts, sometimes including the front person, there can be new horror or shame because of parts knowing things they did not previously know about what happened to them, or what they did. It takes time to work through all these new emotions. Give yourself that time if it is needed. You also need to have time to reorientate yourself in the present. Unless you are a super-dissociator, do not go to work on a day when you have processed a traumatic memory!

Exercise 24. Steps in memory processing

This exercise guides you through the process of resolving a traumatic memory. You might need to use it with the first few memories, then it will become “second nature” and you will no longer need to refer to this guide.

1. Choose a memory to be resolved. If this is your first time, make sure it is a relatively easy one, of which you have at least partial knowledge. Do not choose it because it is creating flashbacks, but because you want some issue resolved which is connected to this particular memory.
2. As much as you can, make sure that all the insiders who contain pieces of the memory participate. Ask those inside who know to find all such parts.
3. Speak with the insiders who have pieces of this memory ahead of time (or have other parts speak with them) and get their agreement, and get the agreement of their bosses as well.
4. If this is a training or programming memory, look for recycler parts who were taught to withhold part of the memory, and make sure that the system allows them to participate.
5. Invite helper parts to be present, such as a care-taker for little children.
6. Ask other parts who might be traumatised by the memory to stay away while you process it.
7. Gather all insiders who are going to participate in this memory or help with it, in an inner safe room with a video screen and audio

equipment.

8. Make sure you have ready containers for partially processed memories and for feelings belonging to the memories, such as a cave containing barrels, a bank with a vault with storage lockers, a well with buckets, or a storage room with jars on shelves, or whatever image you created. Both the containers and the place in which they will be kept should be able to be locked, but there should be a way to put things in the containers after they are locked.
9. Get the participant parts to put their emotions and bodily sensations away in the container.
10. Have the storyline of the memory (sight and sound only) projected on the video screen in the meeting room so that all participants can see and hear it. Have them watch it from “normal life”, through the trauma, up until the return to “normal life”.
11. If emotions or bodily sensations come up during the video, pause it and have the participants put those sensations away in the containers.
12. If sounds or words are missing, pause the video and find the parts who have the sound track and get them to participate.
13. If the order of events is unclear, ask for someone inside who knows the content to line the parts up in the order in which their parts come.
14. If the video gets “stuck”, pause it and search for missing insiders who need to participate in order to resolve it.
15. After the video has been viewed, put it in a container and take a break in the “real world” for at least ten or fifteen minutes.
16. Go through the memory again with all participants, this time adding in the feelings that were put away in the container as you get to the parts of the memory which involve these feelings. Keep checking the container to see how much is left of the feelings. You may do it once, thoroughly, or several times, adding a particular feeling each time.
17. Look for feelings that some parts of you might be withholding because of shame or embarrassment, such as enjoyment of power, or sexual arousal. These must also be included, or the memory will not be fully processed, and the withheld feelings might flood you later.
18. Put all the pieces of the memory together, mentioning specific things that happened in the memory, and asking your insiders to put in “everything you saw, everything you heard (all the sounds, all the words), everything you tasted, everything you smelled, everything you felt in any part of your body [here, you name specific body sensations such as pain and sexual feelings, remembering to mention any sensations which would have happened in the particular memory we are dealing with], and everything you felt in any part of your emotions [here, you name specific emotions such as fear, anger, anxiety, and sadness, remembering to mention any which must have been in the particular memory].”
19. Then send the labelled container into permanent storage. If the memory is incomplete and you have to return to complete it, mentally label it and file its components in temporary storage.
20. Have a symbolic cleansing and joining, through an image of your choosing located in your inner world, such as washing in a breathable waterfall.
21. Although the *previous* emotions have been put in with the memory, there will be new *current* emotions about what happened. It is important, after you work through a memory, to discuss internally any implications the memory may have for you.

Will you always need to work through memories in this amount of detail? Here is what survivor Jen Callow discovered about this.

Jen Callow: “Memory work later in recovery”

After many years of painstakingly processing every piece of a memory, my system is able to do a lot of memory work on our own. As we are not nearly so triggered by events in our daily life, and our parts are increasingly willing to work together, we have many more inner resources to draw on to help us through a memory, no matter how intense it may be. We now have more options when dealing with memories, particularly since our abusers are no longer in our life to re-programme or trigger us.

Sometimes, we choose to talk to new parts, and, when they're ready, help them leave their programme line. We do this by simply “flying over” the memory, seeing it from a distance in our mind without having to feel it all and getting drawn in. Our goal is to understand what happened, what we learnt from that event, and how those enduring beliefs and feelings are impacting our life now. We remind ourselves that we are safe and work with the old beliefs and feelings so that we can move beyond them and forward in our life. This might involve using art, affirmations, physical activity, crying and yelling, whatever feels right at the time. Sometimes, it's simply a matter of an “aha” moment where we realise those beliefs are false and replace them with beliefs that work for us now.

We can often disable a whole programme line in this manner, part by part. The disadvantage is that the line is still there. But with safety and internal co-operation, it is unlikely the line will get reactivated, since parts will not go back to it and their programmes.

Other times, we do have to process the feelings from the memory after we've flown over and understood it, as they continue to leak through. Even this takes less time than it used to, though, and the processing tends to flow smoothly with less resistance.

* * *

Along with getting to know your personality system, memory work is the core of the healing process. I hope these two chapters have given you some helpful information about how to do it. If you are working with a therapist or other helper, please feel free to share these chapters with him or her.

CHAPTER SIXTEEN

Looking at your family

This is one of the most heart-breaking chapters of this book. Most survivors of ritual abuse whom I have known had families who were involved in that abuse, and, as a result, they had to sever connections with those families.

In addition, most survivors whom I have known came from incestuous families, and the parents who were not directly involved in the mind control or ritual abuse were often sexual perpetrators. Sibling incest appears to be common, and in some cases is even taught by the abusers. Besides their involvement with the mind-controlling or ritually abusive group, parents frequently take their children to child pornography studios, or rent them out as prostitutes.

The family, which is supposed to be the safe haven in which we are nurtured as we grow from a small, helpless infant into a mature adult, has been turned instead into a frightening place where safety is non-existent, and the lessons of compliance and secrecy are well learnt. Children become dissociative because it is the only way to survive in such a family. There is not only the deliberate splitting off of insiders which abuser groups engage in, there is usually much spontaneous splitting of the child's mind, because the trauma is just too much for one person to deal with.

In this chapter, we shall look at some survivors' personal stories to see how their family life affected them. We shall also look at how to deal with your family of origin in the present, and at the situation you are dealing with if you are in a relationship and have children. Unfortunately, many marriages are arranged by perpetrators to keep survivors tied to them, and to continue the abuse into the next generation.

Let us begin with the least ominous situation.

Innocent parents

Some survivors had loving parents, but were abused outside the home, for example, through schools, religious organisations, or day-care centres. In many or most such cases, the children could not tell their parents what was happening, because of threats to kill their families if they talked about the abuse. The children might have acted out in various ways, perhaps in sexual play with other children, or temper tantrums, or social withdrawal, but it is easy for parents to write off such things as developmental stages, or just misbehaviour.

These survivors have a lot to work through, but the good parenting they received makes a great deal of difference to their resilience, and this means that after they remember, they still have parents and a family, unlike those whose parents were perpetrators.

Being angry with innocent parents is much easier for survivors than facing the way they feel about the perpetrators, who are terrifying to them. “She should have known”, or “Where were they when all this happened?” are common reactions. But parents with no knowledge of organised abuse often just do not have a clue. It is not as if society as a whole knows about these things. And sometimes, the kindest and most well-meaning parents are the most clueless, because they really do not realise that human nature can be so dark, and that people can engage in such horrific acts against children.

Sometimes, it seems that innocent parents just do not want to know. If you are a survivor, parts of you were aware of the darkest events from a very early age. You have forgotten how incredibly shocking it is to discover such things. And it is heart-breaking for parents—even those who are therapists—to discover that such things were done to the children that they love. Such parents will feel incredible guilt and shame for not realising what was going on. The very act of listening to you, or reading about these kinds of abuses, is deeply traumatising to loving parents. So, when you are seeking to tell your parents the things you could not tell them when you were five, you are unwittingly causing them extreme emotional pain. This does not mean that you should not tell them. Loving parents want to know, even if it hurts.

Because of this, it takes time for innocent parents to come to grips with what has happened, and to be able to look you in the eye and listen to the horrors you have experienced. This does not necessarily mean they do not care about you. They might care a great deal. Keep up your relationship with them in all the positive ways you can, and introduce them to your experience very gradually.

When one parent was involved

In my experience, it is common for one parent to be a perpetrator involved with the abuser group, while the other parent either suspects nothing, turns a blind eye to symptoms, or is powerless to protect their child from what they might suspect is going on because the child cannot tell the authorities.

When the parents are separated, there is an opportunity for the child to tell the innocent parent, but he or she usually does not because the abusers have threatened to kill the parent if the child tells. The group might also have impersonated the innocent parent or parents. One of my first ritually abused clients, “Tony”, lived with his cult-involved mother and stepfather, and had regular visits with his father in another city. Before each such visit, the cult group simulated the nature of the visit, imitating, for example, a camping trip, and the person pretending to be Tony's dad abused him. The result was that Tony was afraid of his father, kept his distance, and refused to bond with his father during these visits, and the father felt helpless to get to know his son. This father was innocent and well meaning; he had no idea why his son refused to become close to him.

Another survivor lived with both parents until her teens. Mother had taken her to the cult day-care, and introduced her to the abuser group who continued to access the child in her school years, even though mother was not present during the ritual abuse. Father suspected nothing. It was mother who “ruled the roost” in the family, father being relegated to the role of wage-earner. When the child developed depression, it was assumed she just had a mental illness, and she was treated for this illness for years before disclosing the abuse. This survivor, like Tony, remembers her father (who was in the home) being impersonated so that she would not trust him.

Another survivor was subjected to military mind-control via his estranged father during access visits. His mother, a loving mental health professional with a “positive thinking” outlook on life, simply had no idea what was going on. When the boy showed disturbance, she would accuse him of learning bad habits from his peer group. He desperately wanted to tell her “It's my father, not the kids I play with,” but he could not because the abusers (including his father) had threatened to kill his mother if he ever told. Even though she did not know, the generally good parenting that she and her partner provided gave this child some resilience with which he was able to resist some of the programming his father and the other abusers intended to implant in him.

This young man believed his mother had the power to refuse access to his father. He would tell her he did not want to go on visits with his father, and she insisted he go, not realising the horror of what was actually going on at his father's home, as he had disclosed nothing. Now that he has remembered and told her about it, she has told him that she feared losing custody of him if she denied his father access, because she was in a long-term loving lesbian relationship, and the courts were prejudiced against lesbians.

Parents who are aware of their children being abused by the other parent are truly in a bind. They can actually lose custody, being accused of “parental alienation”. We hear of mothers, notably Elizabeth Morgan, who have gone as far as hiding their children and eventually being jailed for refusing to allow access to fathers they believe have sexually abused their children.

It is difficult, if not impossible, for a judge to determine the truth in such a situation, because there are really some fearful parents who falsely believe their children are being abused by the other parent. They distort what their children tell them, so that the children's normal physical contact with the other parent becomes interpreted as sexual or physical abuse.

I cannot address here what a parent should do if he or she suspects that a child is being abused by or through the other parent. That is beyond the scope of this book, as it involves legal issues. The point here for you as a survivor is to recognise that you might have an innocent parent who either knew nothing or suspected abuse but was powerless to take any action. That parent might now be willing to hear your story, even if he or she finds it painful.

Paedophiles married to cult parents

I have known of several families in which one parent (usually the mother) was involved in a cult, and the other parent was simply a paedophile. This was the situation with LisaBri, who tells some of her story below. Presumably, the cult parent threatens the paedophile parent with exposure if she or he interferes with the cult activities.

Confusion about whether your parents were involved

Some adults who are aware that they are survivors of mind control and/or ritual abuse are confused about whether their parents were involved in the abuse. It is difficult to relate to your parents if you just do not know whether they were abusers. I know a survivor of very early ritual abuse in a babysitter's home who is constantly confused about this, and alternately cuts off her parents and invites them back into her life. Were they impersonated by abusers? Were they just a regular dysfunctional family, with the organised abuse having nothing to do with them? She will not know until her inside parts reveal more to her. Organised abuser groups do a great deal of work to confuse kids about what has actually happened to them, and by whom.

People who were abused as children, especially by trusted family members, often go back and forth between awareness and unawareness. One of my clients is reading a book on incest, and at times she (the adult part) says she does not know whether she was abused; at other times she says she is very angry at her father for sexually abusing her, and once she told me that her mother sexually abused her. She will only find out what really happened if she asks her insiders.

Only some of your insiders know whether one of your parents was or is involved. And some of them could be mistaken, if your parents were impersonated or if you were told by abusers that your parents were present. This can be done with the aid of drugs and hypnosis. If you are confused about this, you need to share information between your insiders so that they can work out the truth. Do not jump to conclusions one way or the other.

And, difficult and heart-breaking though it may be, you do need to be willing to face the truth. If one or both of your parents were involved, they might or might not be safe to be around now. Does the perpetrator group still exist? Were they involved willingly, or unwillingly? Parents can be told that unless they sexually abuse their children, the children will be killed. What is a parent to do in that situation? You can get clues by asking your insiders what they remember about your parents' involvement. Were they sadistic abusers on their own, apart from what the group did? Or were they trying to find ways to get free and save your life?

The same goes for your siblings. If you were abused by an organised group, there is a high probability that it happened to your siblings, too. Abuser groups use siblings against each other—to report on each other, or to put up with abuse believing it will save their little sister or brother. If any of your siblings were sadistic abusers privately, away from the group, you should be careful around them, but even in that situation they might have been acting out what happened to them—children often do.

Perpetrator families

Incest in ritually abusive families is pervasive. Father, mother, brothers, and sisters, even the dog. One of my first ritually abused clients angrily referred to “my whole fucking family”. And then she stopped and looked at me, and we both laughed. Black humour. Because, yes, it was true. Every family member had sex with every other family member. This is, unfortunately, a very common situation in perpetrator families. The deliberately organised mind control and ritual abuse involves non-family members, and is strictly controlled, but within the privacy of the home, sexual abuse is endemic, and violence and physical abuse are also very common. I have heard about parents who rent out their children for sex. Cult members might casually rape the child, who they know belongs to a cult family, often gang raping. There are incest pregnancies, ending in forced adoption, abortion, or sacrifice.

In some cult groups, parents who do not want to sexually assault their children might be told they have to do it or the children will be killed. The group leaders question the children to make sure the parents have done as they were told. And of course, cult children do not know how to, and are not allowed to, lie to the abusers.

Ritual abuse survivor LisaBri has a website (www.dissociatedsurvivor.com) with several articles describing the abuse she suffered at home. She has given me permission to adapt some of her writings for this book. She grew up with a father who sexually abused her in “ordinary” ways, two older brothers who also sexually abused her, one of them for years, and a mother who was a cult leader and was vicious in her sexual and physical abuse.

As she describes each of these situations and its effects, you will notice two important things: the effects of the abuse itself, and her longing for what that family member should have provided instead.

Warning: These are very sad stories, so be prepared; they could be triggering and you need to take care of yourself.

LisaBri: "Paternal incest"

Dear Dad:

Thank you for being the best dad ever.

As I entered life, you could not suppress your happiness over the tiny bundle in your arms—your first and only daughter in a house that already contained two boys.

As I matured into a toddler, you held me with your strong calloused hands as I took my first steps.

As I matured to kindergarten, we both faced our fears. I experienced the insecurity of entering a new world, somewhere beyond your presence, strength and love. And you were forced to recognise even then that your little girl was growing up.

As I matured to school age, you taught me how to make friends, and gave me the gift of learning.

As I matured into puberty, you watched me move from child to budding woman and bestowed upon me the respect and responsibility that entailed.

As I matured into a teenager, you taught me about boys and dating.

As I matured to high school, you taught me to drive, having the patience for an over-zealous student. You watched me start my first job, and as I stumbled through this new responsibility, you taught me the value of a dollar.

When I graduated, you were the first on your feet, applauding the loudest.

As I matured and left your house to make a place in the world for myself, I had all the life skills you had taught and our bond became even stronger.

As I matured in life, I gave you your first grandchild and your tears of joy were felt throughout the hospital.

And as you matured, dad, into your last days, we just sat with each other; no words needed—our love had all been expressed before.

I wish this were true, dad.

Instead, why do I remember the words you spoke to me?

"It will be our little secret."

"Don't talk about it to your friends."

"Don't tell your brothers."

"Don't tell anyone at all."

"And for God's sake, don't tell your mother!"

"If you tell, I'll go to jail."

"You don't want to see your daddy in jail, now do you?"

"The whole family will suffer."

"And it will be all your fault."

"You know you're just a little tease."

"It feels good, doesn't it, honey?"

"Daddy just wants to make his little girl feel special."

Father–daughter incest. I never forgot the incest with my father. I tuned it out, dissociated parts of it out of my mind, closed off all the feelings attached, but I *never* forgot. No one can claim my memory is the result of interfering therapeutic processes.

I came from a middle-class family, well respected in our small community. No one would expect incest in my family, but it happened and not just with my father, but my two older brothers and mother. Incest has no class discrimination.

In my generation, kids were taught not to accept rides from strangers, not to accept candy from strangers. I was never taught that I could turn my father in for sexually assaulting me. The good news is that awareness of father–daughter incest is no longer a taboo. Kids today are taught that sexual assault can and does happen in the family and it is OK to tell.

Incest takes your freedom. It ruins your life. You are labelled a victim. There are hushed voices in hospital wings where you are admitted for yet another round of self-harm and suicide attempts, trying anything to release the overwhelming pain. You're damaged goods, and no one wants you. You become a shell to be abused again and again until, if you are lucky, help arrives.

Hollywood moviegoers are warned of danger by dark, menacing, terrifying music played before a scary scene. Father–daughter incest has no musical accompaniment. There is neither warning nor escape.

Why couldn't I tell? He was my father. He told me that he would go to jail if he was caught. My mother was stuck in a marriage with no visible means of support besides his income. Having this to deal with, she turned a blind eye. How can any mother not know that her husband, her daughter's father, is sexually assaulting her child? Not once. More like once or more a week.

But more damaging and, perhaps, more shocking than all, my father's sexual assaults did feel good, knowing that it was all I would get from him. I so wanted to be my daddy's little girl. If you feel embarrassed or shocked at this, let me tell you what embarrassment is really like. It's forty years later, when you still can't let go of the sexual component in order to heal. It's years of being told by therapists that in order to heal, I have to relive the feelings, hence, let go of the frozen body. So embarrassment: try sitting in your therapist's office hidden under a blanket, shaking, hoping she can't see you as you relive those sexual feelings from your father's assaults as a child.

Given this, was it my fault? Of course not. My body is like your body. When touched in such a manner, it will respond. When a potato chip is placed in the mouth it tastes like salt. Can we stop from tasting the salt? Of course not. Our bodies respond to sensations of salt in our mouth.

This doesn't take away the shame. I don't think anything ever will. Yes, I will get on with my life, rise above it, but it is there in the back of my mind ready to remind me if something in my current life brings back the memory or the feelings.

Many years later, I came to understand we all have a choice in life, growing from the roots of our childhoods. We can either take what we are given and live in the sickness and carry it on to the next generation, or we can break the patterns and change things.

Fortunately, I found my voice before it was too late. I flew back to my dad to confront him with my new found strength that needed shots of bourbon on the five-hour plane trip to his home. Emerging drunk, I found him in the airport and with my bottle of courage, I asked, “What went on between us when I was a kid, Dad?”

There was no hesitation when he replied, “Oh, it was nothing. Just some touching and things. It was no big deal.”

I have spent the greater part of my adult life running from those “Don't tell” and “It was no big deal” words, fighting them, challenging them in order to be able to embrace life. I learned in 2004 from my lawyer that my dad passed away in 2002. I can't tell him I am no longer keeping his filthy, lying, sick secrets. Or what effect his behaviour had on me. But since my dad is dead, he cannot reach out from his grave and abuse his grandchildren. And I'm glad.

I miss the dad I didn't have. The dad he sometimes was, when sex was not on his mind. I didn't see enough of that dad.

* * *

One of the worst things about sexual abuse in the family is the betrayal by someone whom you needed to love you. The loving touch which every child needs has been associated with providing sexual gratification, rather than just with warmth and cuddling and closeness. And the parent whose spouse is sexually abusing a child may be angry and punish that child out of jealousy.

Incestuous families frequently carry on the behaviours to the next generation, and this happened in LisaBri's family with her older brothers, who had been involved along with her in the ritual abuse. She writes to the brother who abused her the most frequently:

LisaBri: "Sibling incest"

My memory fades back to the beginning. I am six. You enter my room whispering, "Shh! Don't tell Mum. You'll be in trouble."

When I was nine, we lived in a rural area. I had to be protected, the mother said. I could not participate in community activities unless there was someone to escort me to the event. There were "bad" people in this world, she said, and wasn't I lucky to have two older brothers who jumped at the chance to take me to my baseball and tennis games.

But I had to pay the price. As we went to swimming lessons, I remember lying in that farmer's field, cattle all around us. As you took your due, my nine-year-old brain wondered if the cows could talk and whether they would tell on us. It was no shock to me that I didn't advance to the next level with my swimming buddies. Most times I arrived late and on that occasion I didn't show up at all. Your desires were more important.

And then the games. I owed you $20,000.00 at age ten from "go-fish". It was always "double or nothing", and I never won. But that was OK, you told me, you would take it out in trade. Then there was the paper cube game (called Origami Fortune Teller Game) where I took the cube and open a flap and read what I had to do. Things like: run up and down the stairs eight times, dial a number on the phone and talk to someone unknown for thirty seconds, have intercourse with my clothes on, have intercourse with my clothes off, suck your organ, let you undress me…It always seemed like I received the sexual actions from those games. I now recognise I was duped.

When you were a teenager, you let me play with you and your friends, and when they scoffed at having a "girl" play with them, you told them it would be OK. I felt all grown up playing with my older brothers.

You let me help build your fort back in the woods. As I lay on the forest bed with the smell of pine needles assaulting my senses, you gang-raped me at gun-point.

One night in the grandmother's basement, my face pressed hard against the rough plaster wall, you taught me the term "bum-fuck", explaining as you did that it was a skill I would need in high school.

At age of eleven, the dance lessons began. Disco was big at the time. You had to learn your moves for the many contests you entered and won. And you had to impress the girls—so they would think what a big man you were. But you needed a dance partner, and who better than the one who serviced your needs your entire life—your sister. For the longest time I associated sex with dance since our "dancing lessons" always ended with me holding and rubbing your organ, until surely, my hand would fall off. Complaints were met with your heavy breathing—you were too far gone in your fantasy.

You insisted I wear nylons. You liked to peel them off inch by inch and savour your heightened excitement. You made me play whore to you as I stood stock still, wishing I was the tree I could see out of your bedroom window. You told me I had a beautiful body and I believed you. You chose me above all others. I was the chosen one, not remembering I was the only girl in the family.

Today, I can't dance.

Today, I can't wear nylons.

Today, people ask me why I wear a black leather jacket, long pants and black tee-shirts with short hair. Anything to make me invisible. An entity without a woman's body.

You both played football and soccer. And played well. Night after night, practice after practice, led to road games. I was forced to attend, the family making its showing of love and support.

I was proud of you and wondered what was wrong with me. No one came to my practices, my out of town games. The excitement of earning pitcher on the Rep team for the county was exciting in itself. Earning first place standing brought tears to my eyes as my team surrounded me. The tears turned to despair as slowly the field began to empty, my playmates gathered around by their families. I was alone once again.

When you purchased your first new car my feelings ran proud. My brother, the first to drive in the family. You drove me through the centre of town honking to our friends and neighbours. I recall the many days in that car, on secluded roads, as you joked about the car's gear shift getting in the way of your own gear shift, both of them with the same purpose—driving me for your pleasure.

When you married for the first time, you insisted I stand beside you, proud that your little sister was your new wife's maid of honour. I wonder how you felt that day, marrying as society deems the norm, with me, your other “wife”, the one who had taken care of all your needs for so long, standing beside your new wife. Nine months later you left her, a shock to the entire family. Over drinks, you told me how your wife would not service you the way you wanted, the way your younger sister had. You said you were spoiled, and I was the one who had spoiled you. You were forced to go to prostitutes and escort agencies. Were you blaming me, I wondered. I watched your eyes brighten as we talked of your failed marriage and new sexual alliances; your tongue caressed your lips and I saw your hands reach below the table. Minutes later, the table moved and a small gasp whispered from your lips and I felt dirty, as if I had just been raped, yet you never touched me. I was twenty-four. I was still bound to you and had I not fled the city I am sure we would have resumed the “childhood sexual contact” I had been trained for by you, and I had no voice with which to speak up and say no.

Now I have to live with this body; one that responded sexually to your acts of degradation and evil. Even though I was also ritually abused, the memories of your ongoing sexual abuse have made me feel ugly and revolting. Shame and hatred of my body has led me to harm my body and attempt suicide. Sibling incest doesn't have the programmes and rituals of ritual abuse, but it is just as devastating, and it leaves the same trails of destruction behind. And it is a daily event.

In 2004, I gathered strength and with help, I filed a police report. An investigation was conducted with the conclusion that it was the “natural curiosity of children”, “kids playing doctor”, “It's part of growing up”. The assault upon my body all those years was minimised to “childhood sexual contact”. No charges were laid. When the detective who investigated my police report was questioned during a Victims Compensation Hearing, she stated, “He was out of the city and he never returned my phone call when I phoned him.” The two board members representing the government just shook their heads as I paraphrased to the detective: “You are telling me that my brother who sexually assaulted me on a daily basis from the time I was six until age sixteen, was not interrogated for these crimes because he was out of town and didn't return your phone call?” Her answer: “Yes.” Hell, I wouldn't have returned the call either! It sounds horrendous when placed on paper. How should any brother get away with such acts of sickness?

Any children still at risk will not be interviewed. I have spent sleepless nights and wakeful days wondering whether any nephews or nieces are being assaulted. After all, the message I received from that particular police force was: “Abusers have rights, too.”

Dear brother, I am not alone. The community of survivors speaking out is increasing at an enormous rate, ensuring that abusers will no longer be able to hide behind ‘“childhood sexual contact”. And when that day comes, dear brother, I will be the first in line to protect the next generation.

* * *

The worst of LisaBri's abuse in the family was by her mother. Sexual abuse by mothers is thought to be rare, but in my experience it is common in families who are involved in ritually abusive cults, whether their children are boys or girls. LisaBri's story about her mother reflects not just incestuous abuse, but the devastation of emotional abandonment by the one person we all expect to be there for us.

LisaBri: “Maternal incest and emotional abandonment”

My brain stops. All functioning inert. Years piled with emotional abuse have taken their toll. I don't want to remember that it was my mother who broke my spirit.

My gait is a half-hearted attempt to walk. I don't want the flooding of memories to reveal that my handicap is the result of my mother's physical abuse.

My heart breaks and tears roll down my cheeks. I don't want to remember abandonment by my mother.

My mind recoils and my stomach lurches. I don't want to remember childhood sexual abuse by my mother.

My mother and I were very close. People always commented on our relationship. Envy filled their eyes watching us interact as if we were sisters or best friends. I defended my mother to the stars. Nobody spoke ill of her around me. Then I moved away from home, put time and space behind me, and I started to remember.

She was an at-home mother, giving up her potential career to bring up her children. I went to her for everything: the time I fell and cracked open my knee, all the times she made me a soft boiled egg in an eggcup when I returned home early from school with cramps, the time I went to her confused over what to do with my life. These are the things a mother should respond to with care, love, nurturing and understanding. And she did. At times.

I thought she and I were very close, but I did wonder why I hated to be in the same room with her, or why I would flinch when she touched me. I discovered that the “closeness” with her which I once thought came from me was actually from a single part inside me, Lise. This realisation shocked me. I would never let anyone call me Lise. Except my mother. I had hit people, yelled and screamed at them, told them my name was Lisa not Lise, and if they expected to keep their teeth they would remember my real name. This violence against innocent people calling me a common nickname seemed a little harsh—I should have known.

In our small rural community, where everyone knew my mother, she took extreme measures to prove no favouritism towards me as the only girl in the family. She often iterated, “I brought you into this world, I can take you out just as easily." When most kids were scheming to find ways to stay home from school, my mother snatched me from school, leaving us the privacy of the empty house.

The times of love shared with my mother are overshadowed by abuse. Many times I came home from school, work or an outing and held on to the doorknob leading into the house thinking, "God, please let her be in a good mood. Let her be a mother." She would switch in a second from a happy person into a monster, ugly to the core. I have finally realised that my mother is dissociative. It is the only explanation for the mood swings, the inconsistent acts of sometimes mothering, sometimes abuse.

I endured endless fits of her screaming at me for things like not staying at work when I came home sick. The next time when I fought through sickness to stay at work, I was brow-beaten for not having the common sense to come home. When my best friend died, I wanted comfort and an outlet for my grief. All my other friends had found places to grieve. Hoping for a shoulder to cry on, I went to mum and was humiliated for my apparent lack of strength to endure this small tragedy. I never went to her again. The message became very clear—my mother couldn't give me the love I had desperately craved.

Eventually, after I became aware of my inner parts, Lise told me of ongoing sexual abuse by my mother involving giving and receiving fondling, inserting objects into the vagina and oral sex. Throughout all of this, Lise loved her mother. The body responded to pleasure and Lise wanted to give this back to her. It was the only way she could gain her mother's love and affection. At other times, the body was tortured from her mother's assaults. Once, in the long grass field behind the house, Lise was left bleeding and in shock after the mother rammed and twisted a carving knife into her vagina. After such vicious and brutal sex my mother told Lise that she made her do it, and that she was "dirty and bad". Because of this, I have deep feelings of shame, humiliation, and disgust. Consequently, I have never had any sexual relationship other than childhood sexual abuse and rape as a young adult.

My mother was the High Priestess in the Satanic cult I was forced to participate in. From age five, I was trained to continue on in her footsteps. There was a simulated surgery in which my mother's brain was supposedly transplanted inside my head. In another simulated operation at the age of seven, fake ears were attached to my real ears and the same done to my mother who (we were told) would hear everything we thought or said, and any action we took to reveal the abusers. It was my mother who took me to the pornography studio and to the dentist who pretended to cut the tongues out of the little girls who had to take part in the pornography.

Most likely my ritual abuse was generational. She had no therapist and if I thought speaking out about childhood abuses was taboo in the twenty-first century, I can only imagine the pressure she was under to not speak of the horrors done to her growing up. Yet, she had the same choice as me, and she could have chosen not to pass on what was done to her, regardless of the time period.

I have not seen my mother for over twenty-five years, nor do I wish to. She continues to exert her power by sending others to bring me to her. All her attempts have failed and will continue to do so. She is old and will die soon. Perhaps, this is the one act of kindness she will ever give to me, Lise, and the other parts of me who lived with her: the physical freedom to live our life our own way, knowing she can't touch us.

* * *

Emotional and physical abuse—the minefield

Many of the organised abuse survivors that I know have grown up in families where not only incest, but also emotional and physical abuse were the norm. In fact, two clients' near-death experiences (see Chapter Twenty, “Overcoming spiritual abuse”) occurred after severe beatings by their mothers. Perhaps the strain of parenting while involved in violent perpetrator groups taxes a parent's personality system to the point that he or she can't “hold it together”, and attacks the children. Survivors report living in a “minefield” in which small actions can lead to violent repercussions by their parents, particularly mothers. The constant threat of violence erupting poisons the entire home atmosphere. The children become scapegoats for all the unbearable emotions erupting inside their parents, who are themselves multiple.

Children learn to be wary and to watch their parents closely to see whether they are close to the breaking point when they will break out into physical violence. Often they develop parts who become their parent's care-takers, soothing and placating the parent to prevent that parent's emotions from breaking through and causing violence, or comforting the parent after such an incident.

Emotional and verbal attacks diminish the children's self-esteem hugely. It is very hard to forget words which are repeatedly thrown at you, not just swear words, but attacks on your character, physical appearance, and intelligence. I know one survivor who is very physically disabled, but will not stop working and accept a disability pension because her violent mother constantly called her lazy when her physical injuries prevented her from doing housework properly.

Family members who are multiple

LisaBri is now aware that her mother is multiple. Her mother had some external parts who presented to the neighbours and community as normal and caring, but she also had other parts who came out at home and were violently abusive, as well as parts who were active in the cult.

Not all multiple mothers abuse their children, of course. If you are a mother or a father, and are dissociative, it does not mean that you have abused or will abuse your children. Multiples, like everyone else, come in all kinds. Some engage in violence on their own (without being forced to by other perpetrators) and some do not.

One of my early DID clients, “Jennifer”, severely abused by her mother, recognised her mother's multiplicity when she wrote this Mother's Day poem:

M is for the many times you hurt me.
O is for your orders to obey.
T is for the trust I've never had.
H is for the hope that it would stop.
E is for the evil that's within you.
Oh Mummy that I love, I wish you would Remember.

What is life like when you are multiple, and your parent is also multiple? You switch in tandem. You put out whatever part of you is necessary to deal with the particular part of your parent who is out at that moment. This means that the little girl who loves her mummy is unaware that her mother has abused her. And the child who underwent the abuse is unaware that her mother has a caring side. In public, as a child, you can only access the parts of you who have had positive experiences with your parents. So, you cannot tell anyone what your parents are doing to you, not just because of threats, but because you are genuinely unaware of it.

Jennifer had no idea her mother was an abuser when I first saw her. She wrote the poem after she became aware, both that her mother had abused her, and that her mother was multiple. She also recognised that her everyday “mother” had no idea of the things that her mother's other parts had done to her children. There are abusive parents who genuinely believe they are innocent, because they do not remember the abuse they perpetrated. They might be genuinely outraged, and accuse their children (and their children's therapists) of making things up. If you remember abuse, and have parents like this, recognise that they might not be just lying, they might really not remember. One client of mine confronted her father, who said, “I hope I didn't do it.” What a peculiar response. He was probably aware that he had periods of time he could not account for.

Survivor therapist Arauna Morgan writes,

> My mother's participation was literally not to know. When family came and abused us, her job was just to make sure that they didn't kill us; later her job was just to be oblivious to anything that happened to us. Some of my younger clients told me their mothers turned into “zombies”. I think this is a very accurate description.

Internal mothers and fathers

Some multiples have internal representations of their parents inside. I discovered that Jennifer did. I asked to speak to her mother. She replied, “Just a minute, I'll go and get her.” She went out to my waiting room and came back—as her mother. When she later drew a map of her personality system, I discovered that she had within her not only each of her family members, but that these insiders were themselves multiple, having within them copies of her actual family members' insiders.

I do not know how common this is. What I do know is that if you hear a voice that says it is one of your family members, it is not. It is some child part of you who believes itself to be that parent or sibling. Or, possibly, it is some other insider replaying a “tape” of something that family member used to say to you. You can recognise this by the fact that it always says the same thing.

Betrayal trauma

Psychologist Jennifer Freyd wrote a book titled *Betrayal Trauma*, in which she argues that one reason people do not remember much childhood trauma is because it involves significant betrayal by care-givers. A child needs to rely on her parent or other care-giver for food, shelter, love, even life. In order to keep trusting that person, she needs to see that person as trustworthy. So, she dissociates the awareness of any abuse by that person. Many survivors of incest or other forms of childhood abuse dissociate the memories (usually into inside parts of them) in order that they will not recognise the betrayal. This inability to recognise the abuse means that survivors can be vulnerable to ongoing abuse. Adah Sachs has written about this in an article entitled “Still being hurt” (2013).

It is very hard to come to terms with the fact that your loved ones, the people who were supposed to care for you, abused you (and, in some cases, could be still abusing you). It takes time. It involves considerable grief.

Note, of course, that your not remembering abuse by your parents does not mean that they abused you! But it also does not mean that they did not abuse you.

Do you talk with family members about the abuse?

This is a difficult and complicated question. In some families, the original perpetrator group has dissolved, and the present generation is no longer engaging in the abuse. In such cases, it might be safe to spend time with your siblings—though it is wise to be careful how much you disclose to them about what you have remembered, in case some of them are still in contact with perpetrators.

If you are pretty sure your family members are no longer involved with the abuser group, and your higher-up insiders confirm this, it might be safe for you to remain in contact with your family of origin and attend family gatherings. This way, you will retain some semblance of family. But even this can be difficult. One survivor knows her siblings are safe to be around, but is very frustrated by the fact that she is the only one of them who remembers the things that happened, and that when she confronted her father about abusing her, one of her older brothers supported him. The family gatherings have superficial happiness, but they gloss over what really went on in their childhood. This survivor keeps an ongoing relationship with her sister but finds it too difficult to have much contact with those siblings who forget or deny her reality.

If family members are still involved with a perpetrator group, your talking about your memories is likely to alert the group that you are remembering, and they will take steps to stop you. Survivor therapist Arauna Morgan writes,

> My experience with asking siblings or family members is very bad; not only does the family get triggered but the cult is immediately brought in to stop the remembering. I have found that individuals are grudgingly allowed to get free and remember, but where the whole family is stirred up, there can be drastic consequences for disturbing the whole unit. You can't tell if it is safe to ask until you do; I had no idea that I would get the reactions that I did! If someone is just recovering these memories and either confronts a parent, still active or not, and/or brings charges against them before recovering enough memories to gather the evidence they need, then there could be big problems.

Arauna's parents were only minimally involved in the perpetrator group, which was led by distant relatives, and since the time when she tried talking with family members about the abuse, the cult leaders have become ill and are no longer capable of the reprisals which they could once perform. She knows that her whole family is dissociative, and she writes,

> For me, a big consideration was: what kind of relationship would I like with my parents now, and what am I willing to let go of to have that? I chose to leave the past behind, as far as confronting and talking about the past, so that I could have a healthy relationship (if you disregard what happened in the past) with my parents now. This has been exceedingly hard for me, but in order to forgive what has happened, it has forced me to look at generational family dynamics, DID family dynamics and cult family dynamics. I know that neither parent was inherently cruel and each dealt with family in the context of themselves having experienced extreme abuse as children and adults. I choose to teach my family now how to be a functional family.

If you make this choice, it means giving up on getting your family members to remember and validate your experiences, in favour of keeping the few good things in the present. Even if the abuse and group involvement have ended, usually those family members are in denial (and probably do not remember) about what happened, and it is very difficult to be around people who were present but will not acknowledge the abuse or the depth of your pain. How can you forgive something that has never been acknowledged? Even though Arauna has chosen to remain in contact with her family, she has chosen not to talk about the abuse with them. Talk about the “elephant in the room”. But at least she has some semblance of family.

Furthermore, it is only safe to have this kind of contact with family members if you know that they are no longer involved in a perpetrator group. Can you be sure of this? Only if you know your entire personality system well enough that your insiders would tell you if they had such contact.

Arauna's is (in my opinion) an unusual situation. Most of my survivor clients had parents and siblings who engaged in horrendous abuses, not just during group activities but on their own, even if they were multiple and did not remember those things. It is just not safe for these survivors to be around them.

Ongoing risks from perpetrator family members

The programme which one of my early clients labelled “Return for Hallmark™ holidays” requires you to see your family of origin on family birthdays, Christmas, Halloween, Easter, Thanksgiving, and other such dates, the times when most ordinary people get together with their families. Those are the times when you and your children are most at risk if your family is still involved in an organised perpetrator group, because they will expect you to continue your involvement, and to make sure your children are properly programmed. They will take advantage of these innocent-seeming family gatherings to access you and your children.

If your family continues to be with an organised perpetrator group, they will naturally expect you—and your children—to remain involved, too. If the group has already discarded you, perhaps all they will require of you is that you keep the secrets. But if you were not discarded, it will be very difficult for you to spend time with your family of origin without being abused, reprogrammed, and forced to perpetrate. And the scariest thing about this is that you might not remember this happening, since this is done to child insiders who are not supposed to let the main adult know it is going on.

Cult groups, and other mind control perpetrators, arrange marriages. They select spouses on the basis of genetic abilities and predispositions, and belonging to the “right” race or genetic grouping. Sometimes, they select spouses who will not be involved in the group but will bring in the genetic qualities they want in the children. At other times they select spouses whose families of origin are also involved. That way, they continue to control you in adulthood. They might even choose a generational cult spouse for you as punishment.

Those who grow up in such groups are expected to participate in the training (which means abuse) of their own children and grandchildren. If they refuse to do so, a trainer may take over or may force them to take part. The groups work hard to break the parent–child bond, taking a child away from the mother if the bond is becoming too strong, making her abuse her own child (by a threat to kill the child if she does not abuse), or impersonating her and abusing the child. One young mind control survivor began to get his abuse memories just before the birth of his first child, remembering having his father teach him that if he had a child, he had to suffocate it whenever it cried.

Teresa, one of my first ritual abuse survivor clients, courageously and selflessly gave her daughter up for adoption when the child was five, when some of her inside parts realised they could not protect the little girl from abuse. Teresa grieved for years, but she did the right thing. After the child was gone, the cult group had nothing to hold over her, and she could do her healing work.

If you have already raised children while involved in a perpetrator group, you have the most agonising experience of all: seeing your own children become perpetrators, and pass the abuse and involvement on to your grandchildren. You remember trying to love your children, and you see what they have become, and what they continue to do. Sometimes you have to recognise how little you can do to save them, or their children, at this point.

If you have specific memories of the grandchildren being abused you can report these, and if those children can be made safe for long enough that they feel able to tell what has happened, they can be taken from the abuser parents. I knew a stepfather who worked hard on raising ritually abused children and keeping them from their real cult-involved father. I knew a grandmother who rescued her grandson from his ritually abusing mother, and got him into a safe foster home. But often those children will not tell because of fear of themselves or their nonabuser relatives being killed, so reports of abuse fail. A foster mother once said to me, “If a child says that daddy touched her pee-pee, the authorities take it seriously and remove that child. But if the child says daddy and mummy and granny and grandpa went out into the woods with some other people and sang strange songs and had sex with everyone and killed a dog, the authorities think that child is making things up." Sad, but often too true.

Severing ties

What can you do if your family of origin is still involved in an abuser group? Most such survivors I know who are in recovery have moved a long distance away from that family, and severed ties. In some cases they maintain superficial contact through cards and phone calls, but are alert to triggers and the presence of reporting insiders, making sure the reporters tell the family nothing of significance.

In most cases, they have just completely cut off contact. In some such cases, perpetrators have travelled across the continent to find them and programme them back to loyalty, but if this does not work, the abusers cannot afford to keep doing it. They have jobs and families and lives, so they are likely to write off the distant survivor, as long as they are not getting evidence that the person is disclosing their secrets. It is very helpful for a survivor who is cutting off contact to have a non-offender and non-survivor spouse or roommate, for safety. The person is not likely to be harmed, as the abuser groups place a priority on not being seen or noticed.

You need to consider your options carefully. I cannot advise you on what to do.

Dealing with the loss

Whether or not you maintain superficial contact, the reality is that if your family members are or were perpetrators, you have to grieve. You need to grieve both the past and the present, as well as the future you cannot have with a supportive family. Regarding the past, it is what they did not provide for you—nurturing, attunement, safety, encouragement, all those things which a family is supposed to provide for a child and a young adult.

Your child parts hold the unfulfilled longings. Recently, I was for the first time with a very ill child part of a client of mine. She peered up at me and said, "I don't want to imagine you." She believed me to be just a figment of her imagination. When she was being abused and neglected, she had imagined a woman coming to rescue her and comfort her, but no one had come. Now, forty years later, this child part needed both to experience my real presence and to allow the sadness to come out, the sadness she had felt when no one came.

Regarding the present, there is the experience of being an orphan, without parents or siblings, or even aunts or cousins. If you have children, they do not have grandparents, at least on your side of the family. When other people get together for Thanksgiving dinners, you know that you cannot get together with your own extended family, because they are dangerous. You do not get to see your siblings' children grow up. If they are being abused, you know you can do nothing about it. They would not tell the truth to the authorities if you reported that you suspect abuse. They would probably get punished just for being questioned, and it would alert the abusers to the fact that you were talking, and put you (and your present family, if you have one) at risk. If your children grew up in the perpetrator group, they are also a risk to you, and seeing your own grandchildren puts you at risk both for being abused and for being forced to abuse them.

There is a hollow loneliness for the disconnected survivor, especially at the times when other families are celebrating their togetherness. You might feel you are all alone, on your own in the world, as if you do not belong here.

Grief is hard. It comes and goes in waves, even though it is always there. You just have to ride the waves, and allow yourself and your insiders to experience the grief of all you have lost.

It is important to comfort yourself as best you can. Here are some ways survivors can comfort themselves:

you can rock yourself;
sit by the fire;
stroke yourself;
eat a small bit of chocolate;
take a walk in nature;
a bath with Epsom salts;
tell yourself how much you love yourself;
be proud of yourself;
do something nice for someone else;
read a novel;
do work with your hands;
clean a counter;
pet your own or someone else's dog;
talk with a calming friend if you have one;
have a small glass of wine;
cook a healthy meal;
make a contribution to charity.

Pets

One very comforting relationship almost anyone can have is with a pet. Even if your abuse included rape or physical attack by animals, you know the animals were coerced to do it; it is not their real nature. If you saw pets killed, you know this was done because it is so natural to love a pet, and for a pet to love you. You can have this loving relationship again even if you do not have any family. Pets love you no matter what, they do not engage you in arguments, they just cuddle up.

Here are a few quotations about pets, taken from www.paralumun.com/catquotes.htm and www.brainyquote.com/quotes/keywords/dogs.html.

Dogs and philosophers do the greatest good, and get the fewest rewards. (Diogenes)

What greater gift than the love of a cat. (Charles Dickens)

Histories are more full of examples of the fidelity of dogs than of friends. (Alexander Pope)

A cat has absolute honesty. (Ernest Hemingway)

Dogs never bit me. Just humans. (Marilyn Monroe)

The smallest feline is a masterpiece. (Leonardo da Vinci)

Dogs are not our whole life, but they make our lives whole. (Roger Caras)

There are many intelligent species in the universe. They are all owned by cats. (Anonymous)

Dogs are my favorite people. (Richard Dean Anderson)

I got rid of my husband. The cat was allergic. (Anonymous)

> If dogs could talk, it would take a lot of the fun out of owning one. (Andy Rooney)
>
> The cat is the only animal which accepts the comforts but rejects the bondage of domesticity. (F. A. Paradis de Moncrif)
>
> If I have any beliefs about immortality, it is that certain dogs I have known will go to heaven, and very, very few persons. (James Thurber)

Even if you are unable to have a healthy relationship with your family of origin, you can, I hope, build other relationships, with a partner or supportive friends, to partially make up for it. Chapter Eighteen, "Succeeding in friendships and relationships", is an introduction to relationship skills. With a pet, you do not even need these skills; you just need to be kind, and provide it with the food, comfort, and exercise it needs. It will reward you with love and devotion.

Parenting

I could write a whole book on this topic. In fact, I did, along with my friend Dr Allison Rees. (Two books, which you can order from www.lifeseminars.com.) *Sidestepping the Power Struggle: A Manual for Effective Parenting* (2006) covers understanding children's temperament, developmental stages, why they behave as they do, and healthy ways to manage their behaviour. *The Parent–Child Connection: A Guide for Effective Family Living* (2008) covers the parent–child bond, handling emotions, healthy families, boundaries, and communication skills, specifically with children. Although I have given you plenty of tips in this book, you probably need to learn much more if you come from a very dysfunctional family, as most survivors do. One ritual abuse survivor client had several children after completing her healing from the abuse. Her parents were both cult-involved and very abusive. I was delighted with how tuned in she was to her children, and how she knew them each as an individual. I asked her how she learnt to be such a great parent, and with a smile, she answered "From a book." I was flattered when I realised she meant our books.

You do need to be careful which parenting books and courses you choose. Some approaches to parenting treat children as if they are animals to be trained to obey and produce appropriate behaviours on cue. You probably grew up with an extreme version of this, at least during the mind control training, and when this same approach comes in a milder version (without torture), you might not recognise it as unhealthy, but it is. Children are living creatures who grow when given the healthy resources they need; they are not meant to be made into what their parents think they should be.

I would like to mention some particular dangers for parents who are survivors in the following sections.

Recognising when children trigger you

I remember one woman who attended my parenting course years ago. She confessed to me that when her children left messes, she became enraged, and yelled and screamed at them and even hit them. I asked her what had happened if she left a mess as a child. Her face went white, and she said, very slowly, "My dad…would get out…the whip." The sight of a mess left by a child triggered huge anxiety in her, and the anger was a protective response to that enormous anxiety. She had to get rid of the mess at all costs, because her inner child, living in the past, was terrified that her father would come and punish her. As well, she had probably believed that her father's response to her normal childish messiness was appropriate, which it was not.

If you find yourself triggered into feeling like mistreating your children, you need to flee the scene and take time out while you work out what is going on inside you. You cannot help being triggered, but you can take charge of what you do when it happens. You can go into a room and close the door for a few minutes. You can ask someone else to take care of your children while you calm down. You can walk around the block if your children are old enough to be left. You need to make sure that your insiders' reactions do not lead you to be abusive to your children in any way, including verbally. Cruel words stay in a child's mind long after the physical bruises are healed.

Survivor therapist Arauna Morgan developed a unique solution:

> When my children were babies, the sounds of fussing and crying were very triggering. I was able to refrain from doing anything bad to them, but I was frantic about trying to find what was wrong and fix it so they would stop. At the time I had no idea why I had this reaction, but I solved it by wearing foam earplugs that shooters wear. (I worked in a high noise environment and we had to wear them at work and I realized that you can hear people talk perfectly, but they filtered out all the other noise.) It offended my husband that I wore earplugs around my kids, but my anxiety went to zero when I did and they could make all the noise they wanted!

Now, I am not suggesting that you wear earplugs whenever your children cry. They need to know that you are responsive to their expression of their needs. But as a stopgap measure, if programming is kicking in and you are in danger of hurting them, it is all right to do this kind of thing for a short time.

Overprotectiveness

Some people who were abused as children become overprotective of their own children, seeing danger everywhere. To grow up healthy and confident, children need to face surmountable challenges, and to gradually expand their control over their own lives. It is a tricky balance to recognise when your children are in genuine danger (for example, if they spend time alone with the grandparents who abused you as a child), and when they are not (for example, if they walk home from school in a safe area). If you are not sure, consult with other parents.

Danger of role reversal

Adults who are multiple have child parts inside. These children can come out, or come through the adult, and relate to other family members in child-like ways. If you have a nurturing spouse who understands the situation, this may be fine with him or her. But many spouses do not understand, and many are not capable of dealing with their partner being a child. One multiple client of mine said to me plaintively, “The little boy in me needs the adults in his life to be strong and understanding.” But this man's female partner is struggling with having a new baby, and she needs him to be a strong man for her; she cannot be a mother to his inner child. For the most part, parenting of the inner children needs to be done within the personality system, not by outside people.

As for your actual outside children, it is not all right to make them into parents or older siblings for your inner children. If they have to look after you when you turn into an anxious or fearful child, this is placing a burden on them that will delay and interfere with their emotional development. You might have friends with whom you can be a child, but this should not happen with your own children. Sometimes, you can play with children and your inner children can enjoy the play and even contribute to it, but you should not allow them to take over completely, as they are still children and might not understand such issues as safety.

You can learn to be an effective parent, but you might need to work at it.

Exercise 25. Facing the facts about your family

Each question in this exercise might cause you to grieve. Take it very slowly, meditating on each question, and allowing your emotions to be felt and your insiders to express themselves about it. Stop and take a break if it is too much for you. This can be devastating material.

Do you believe that one or both of your parents was involved in the organised perpetrator group that abused you? Why? Would you say that your parents are innocent of the abuse, one parent was involved, or both parents were involved?

If, after communicating with all your parts, you are sure that a parent or sibling is innocent, what is your relationship with them like? Are you able to talk with them about what happened to you? Would it help to try, or would it damage your relationship?

Was your family incestuous? Who in your family had sexual contact with you? At what ages?

If there was sexual abuse within your family (apart from the organised abuse), how do you believe it has affected you?

Did you live in a “minefield” at home, where physical and emotional abuse was likely to explode from one or both parents?

If so, do you have parts who have the primary memories of this, or who adapted to a violent parent? How did they adapt? Do you have parts who were your parents' care-takers?

What words do you or your parts remember being hurled at you when a parent was violently angry with you? Do you believe what your parent said about you? What can you do to disprove what that parent said?

What positive things did your mother provide for you during your childhood? What should she have provided but didn't? Allow your insiders to express their grief about her.

What positive things did your father provide for you during your childhood? What should he have provided but did not? Allow your insiders to express their grief about him.

What positive things did your siblings provide for you during your childhood? What should they have provided but did not? Allow your insiders to express their grief about them.

Were any of your family members dissociative or multiple? What makes you think so? What are they like on the outside (in the regular world), and what parts have you seen in private? Do the parts of them that deal with regular life have awareness of what the other parts have done?

Do you have ongoing contact with your family of origin? If so, what do your insiders remember about this contact? Have you been safe? Will you be safe in the future if you maintain contact with this family? Why or why not?

If you have a partner, is that person part of the perpetrator group, or an outsider? If an outsider, to what extent can you share your experiences with him or her? Can your partner listen to your tales of your painful experiences?

Do you have a pet? If so, how does he or she enrich your life? If not, how could a pet provide companionship and comfort? Do you need to work through any memories first?

If you have children, are they safe? Do they spend time with your parents or siblings, and if they do, do you believe they are safe? Ask all your insiders about this. If your children are grown, have they been involved with the perpetrator group? Is it safe for you to spend time with them during your recovery? What could you do to protect yourself, if they have such involvement?

Is there anything you can do to protect the children of your relatives if they are at risk? If not, you might need to grieve this.

If you have children, do you switch in their presence? Are you aware of what happens when you are alone with your children? If not, ask your insiders about it, and be prepared to make some internal changes if parts of you are not behaving like loving parents.

Do you find your children looking after you or consoling you in ways a parent should do for a child? Do you know this behaviour is unfair to your children? If this happens, how can you change this dynamic so that your children can just be children and not feel they have to look after you?

Do you find that certain of your children's behaviours trigger you to rage? If this happens, what do you do about it? Are you able to take time out so that you do not become emotionally or physically abusive?

For each behaviour of a child that makes you angry, identify what in your own childhood may be behind your overreaction. Plan to work through these memories.

Are you overprotective with your children because of what happened to you? (This is most likely with survivors whose abuse happened apart from their families.) Consult with other parents to see whether your fearfulness is appropriate or inappropriate.

Are you underprotective and blind to other people (such as relatives or teachers) abusing your children, because you have learned to dissociate such information? Are you both over and underprotective?

CHAPTER SEVENTEEN

Healing your sexuality

I am sure this is a chapter some of you would just like to skip. Many survivors do not talk about sex with their therapists because the whole subject is embarrassing and possibly repulsive. Often the front person knows little or nothing about sex, and does not recognise or acknowledge sexual feelings.

This is just a book, and you are reading it alone, not telling anyone else what you are thinking or feeling. So you do not have to be embarrassed—I cannot read your mind! I know that just mentioning some things might trigger shame, feelings of humiliation, and possibly flashbacks. It is also possible that reading this could arouse sexual urges and fantasies, even violent ones. It is important that your inner leaders find a way to manage your emotions and behaviour as you read. This might mean deciding who inside should read this, and who should not.

Sexuality, like pain and emotions, is actually a good thing that abusers have distorted for their own purposes. I am including this chapter to give you hope, because it is possible to heal your sexuality, no matter how badly it has been damaged. Meredith Sharman's story later in the chapter shows how.

Many years ago E. Sue Blume wrote *Secret Survivors: Uncovering Incest and its Aftereffects in Women*. Although at that time she was unaware of the particular sexual violations involved in mind control and ritual abuse, much of what she wrote is still relevant. Every survivor (male or female) of these abuses has experienced extreme kinds of sexual abuse, and this has had a profound effect on his or her sexuality.

Blume wrote a moving passage about how sexuality should ideally develop. If you have a male body, please change the gender:

> A baby girl touches her genitals because the touching *feels good*. She *chooses* whether, when, and how to touch her body. It is within her control. But for many women—not just incest survivors—this moment of sexual self-determination is soon eroded. In an ideal scenario, as the child begins sexual exploration, she chooses as her partners other children, whose bodies and personalities are like hers developmentally. She touches and is touched; she learns what gives pleasure and what does not. Later, her sexual experiments become more focused, progressing from the joys of holding hands to more overtly sexual activities. She learns to distinguish friendly kissing from sexual kissing, affectionate feelings from sexual desires. She experiences kissing, deep kissing, necking, petting, and finally intercourse or other intense, genitally based activities whose purpose is orgasm.
>
> Step by step, she learns which sexual activities she enjoys and which she does not; she decides when she wants to pursue a certain sex act and with whom. And she decides when to lose her virginity. (In an ideal world, this decision is hers, and not the result of pressure or date rape.) She learns to value her body and its sexual expression, to engage in sexual activity for her own pleasure and (maybe) for bonding with a partner. And she learns that this is hers, this experience of sexuality, to do with as she

wishes. (Blume, 1991, p. 205)

Somehow, I doubt that this is your experience. It is not the experience of most people, particularly women and girls. Blume states (p. 207) that “the primary message incest sends is that the victim's sexual life is not her own”. Nowhere is this more true than in mind control and ritual abuse.

Not only have survivors experienced sexual abuse by relatives at home, they have almost all been forcibly involved in child prostitution and pornography, and often the sexual experiences they have had to endure, and the sexual skills they have been forced to learn, involve not only gang rapes and sadism and masochism, but also pairing sexual arousal with extreme violence, sex with animals, sex with dead bodies, and killing. Some children have inside parts who have been taught to abuse younger children.

How does a child endure having to go through such things? Only through dissociation; it would be unbearable for a single mind. The abuser groups, including those who specialise in child prostitution and child pornography (including the violent kinds), train children through manipulation of their insiders.

Every sexual training experience involves some parts who experience sexual pleasure, and others who at the same time experience physical or emotional pain, either their own or the pain of others who are being abused. These two kinds of parts are both present for the experiences without being aware of one another. So, for example, masochistic parts feel sexual pleasure while pain is being administered to their body, but do not actually feel the pain, which is held in another part of the system. Similarly, perpetrator parts do not feel the pain of the other person being harmed, and sexual abuser parts might even believe the child they are abusing is enjoying the experience, because they are disconnected from the insiders who hold their capacity for empathy. All this is deliberately designed by the perpetrator groups. They use sexual stimulant drugs and pain-killing drugs to train children to enjoy pain. Some parts are taught to need pain in order to achieve sexual release, and they feel this pain as pleasure.

Besides dissociation, there is also pretence. Children forced to be involved in prostitution and pornography have parts who are good actors or actresses; they have to be, under threat of extreme violence or death. Do not assume that your child parts necessarily enjoy what they say they enjoy.

One thing I find horrifying and disgusting is the fact that the groups who produce and sell child pornography, and who train and sell child prostitutes, produce their own market. Some of the children they have trained and used grow up and become their customers, their sexual responses having been trained to be connected to children and to violence.

I am not going to dwell any further on the details of these abuses. What you have gone through is for you to discover through inner communication. You do need to know, however, that if you find yourself having disturbing sexual thoughts or feelings, those are probably a result of what you have been through, and not the natural, organic you.

I am also not going to repeat all the excellent descriptions of what sexual abuse survivors go through, or all the excellent advice given to them, which is in other books such as *Secret Survivors* (Blume, 1991) and *The Courage to Heal* (Bass & Davis, 1988). I encourage you to read these books. I am just going to talk about specific problems related to the warped sexuality practised by many mind-controlling groups, including, in particular, organised crime, and some ways you can deal with these problems.

What your parts learnt about sex

When a child is brutally raped, he or she learns to fear any physical approach to his or her genitals, or anus, or mouth. When a child is taught to perform particular sexual acts to please “customers”, but never to become attached to those customers, he or she learns to be a good actor, but never to be truly present during sex, and that he or she is valued only for sexuality, not for intelligence or kindness or any other quality. When a child has to provide sexual gratification to a parent's needy young parts (in a parent's adult body), he or she learns that the only way to have any intimacy, physical contact, or closeness is to meet the other person's sexual needs, at his or her own expense. When a child has been sexually stimulated and brought to orgasm while being violently abused, or watching someone else be violently abused (in person or on film), he or she learns that sex is inevitably connected with violence, or is the only way not to be killed.

When a person has experienced mind-controlling abuse by an organised group, he or she has probably experienced all these things. As a result this person has insiders representing each of these different attitudes to sex and insiders who are angry about it all, viewing anyone with a sexual or romantic interest in the person as an abuser. This can make it very difficult for a survivor to develop a relationship with a sincere romantic partner.

Regardless of the type of abuses you have experienced, the core of your learning is eloquently expressed by Blume (1991, p. 208):

> The incested child or adolescent…learns that the purpose of her sexuality is the gratification of the other person. She learns that she cannot control what sex acts she becomes involved in, that her body does not yield sexual pleasure, but shame, embarrassment, pain, entrapment, and betrayal: ultimately, she learns that sex is dirty.

So probably the most important new learning you need is that your body is your own, and only you should be in charge of what it experiences.

Learning to accept the body you have

Many women who have been sexually abused hate having female bodies, believing that only girls get abused. When they are old enough to menstruate, they might hate having breasts and having periods, especially if their abuse started at puberty—or if it ended at puberty, they might be glad.

Male insiders in female bodies hate the fact that their bodies are female; they, too, often believe that only girls get abused (which is actually not true).

Do your insiders see themselves as having different bodies from the front person? My experience is that many insiders in the survivors I have met believe they are still children or teenagers, see one another with bodies of that age in the inside world, and have difficulty accepting that the “old” body they now inhabit is really theirs. They also frequently believe their body to be the opposite gender from what it actually is. I often hear “What happened to my body?” and “How did I get this body? It isn't mine!”

There are many reasons why a girl may want to believe she is a boy. Although Western society has made some changes recently, girls have always had a harder time being recognised for their abilities and allowed to pursue their interests. I tried deciding to be a boy when I was seven years old, as I saw the future of girls being housewifery, a career I did not want. I disguised my appearance as best I could, hiding my hair inside a cap and rubbing dirt on my face when I went out to play. Eventually, in my twenties, I decided that I would not have been given my abilities and interests, along with my female body, unless it was all right for me to follow these abilities and interests and be myself, regardless of what kind of body I had. I have a client, a man in his seventies, who has inside him a girl, who chose to be a girl because he was a creative, artistic, and physically small man born into a rough, tough fishing family who valued only traditional masculinity. He is not gay.

If a girl is being sexually abused on an ongoing basis by a man or men, she might believe it would not happen if she were a boy, so parts of her could split off who imagine themselves to be boys. If a boy is being sexually abused by a man or men, the parts of him who endure the abuse might imagine themselves to be girls or women, because they feel it is less humiliating.

Mind controlling abusers assign gender to parts of you, regardless of the gender of the body. They might tell the "soldier" parts that they are boys or men even if the body is a girl. They also make internal copies of abusers, and these parts believe they are whatever the abuser is—usually a man or a woman.

Parts in women whose abusers told them they were boys or men see themselves as boys or men, complete with penises. This is especially true if they were made to wear a strap-on vinyl penis for pornography. Parts in male survivors who were told they were female might believe their anus is a vagina.

All this confusion often leaks through to the front person. I do not know what proportion of people who are looking for gender reassignment surgery do actually have hormones which belong to the other gender, and what proportion have had child abuse experiences which lead parts of them to very badly need to be the other gender.

If you have a strong urge to be the other gender, it would be wise to talk with your insiders and discover who feels this most strongly, and why. If you are multiple, a big decision such as gender reassignment should only be made with the agreement of all your major insiders. Do not allow a few panicky parts of you push you into something you might regret later when you have gone further in your recovery process.

Figuring out your sexual orientation

There is more and more scientific evidence that genuine homosexuality or heterosexuality, or possibly bisexuality, is inborn, and cannot be changed by social pressure or child abuse. There is, however, also evidence that if a person's earliest sexual arousal and gratification is paired with certain stimuli, these stimuli can continue to produce sexual arousal for that person. So, as a survivor, you have both your inborn sexual orientation, and the experiences that for your insiders may have been linked to sexual feelings, producing arousal—or revulsion—or both. If the sexually responsive parts of your body were touched in an arousing way, they would have responded, regardless of who or what touched them. That does not mean your own natural sexuality is orientated towards whoever or whatever touched those parts. If a girl, for example, knows that her body is about to be violated by a woman, she might produce lubrication in order to ease the situation, but this does not mean she is a lesbian.

You might be confused about your sexual orientation because not only do you have opposite-sex parts inside, you also have parts who believe they are gay or lesbian, as well as parts (most commonly the front people) who believe they are either straight or completely asexual (having no interest in or desire for sex). What are you to do about this?

First of all, talk with your insiders about why they believe themselves to be male or female, and why they believe themselves to be heterosexual or homosexual. Some insiders in a woman might see themselves as lesbian when they are really just afraid of penises because these have been used to hurt them; they need to learn that some men (and their penises) can be gentle and kind. As Blume says, "A woman who hates men because she was molested by a man does not gain the capacity to be aroused by women”. This is true for male as well as female survivors; being molested by a man does not make a boy gay, but it also does not turn a genuinely gay boy into a heterosexual man.

You might be surprised at what you find out from your insiders. One heterosexual male survivor was extremely embarrassed and humiliated because he had insiders who kept urging him to have sex with men he met. When he talked with these inner teenage boys, he discovered that they had been forced to perform sexual acts with men in order to earn the reward of sex with a woman. They were not gay; they believed that the only way they would ever get to be with a woman was by having sex with a man.

Although it is thought that the vast majority of adults who molest both female and male children are men, in the Satanic and Luciferian cults and in the organised criminal groups, it is common that children are molested by women as well as by men, often in violent ways, but sometimes as the only experience of relatively gentle touch which the child has experienced. No wonder survivors are confused about their sexuality. Survivors who come out as lesbian and then remember abuse by females become especially devastated.

Sometimes, survivors of abuse by men believe that women will be different. I have known several survivors who made friends in the lesbian community without being at all sure about their own sexuality, only to feel extreme social pressure to “come out” as lesbians. One survivor moved in with a woman who said she loved her, and had no idea that this meant they would have sex. The partner became abusive when she tried to resist.

What is a natural sexual orientation? It appears that some people are attracted only or primarily to the opposite sex, some to the same sex, and some to the person regardless of their gender.

How do you figure out your own genuine sexual orientation, given all the confusing experiences you have had? I would say, cautiously. Do not rush into identifying yourself in any specific way. Learn to notice your own and your other parts' emotional responses to different kinds of people and different acts. Resist social pressures to define yourself the way other people want you to be. Be careful of translating the desire to be held as a sexual preference, or the desire to at last have the love of a certain parent as a sexual preference.

Dealing with sexual acting out

This is not a problem for all survivors, but it is for some. Many survivors have some insiders who, either on their own or through influencing the front person, engage in sexual behaviours that could get them into trouble. Some are compulsively seductive. Some engage in impersonal, “promiscuous” sex with strangers. Some work as prostitutes, strippers, and porn actresses, using the training given them by the perpetrator group. They might rationalise, “I may as well make money from it.” Some use their sexuality as power, or for revenge against men. Some try to sexualise all their relationships. Some might be involved in sadomasochistic relationships or groups such as whipping clubs.

There are also private problematic sexual behaviours, such as self-harm, which bring on sexual arousal, and addiction to violent pornography or child pornography. I have seen these behaviours more often, but not exclusively, in male survivors.

Before you judge these parts of you too harshly, talk with them. Find out what they know about why they do these things. Some behaviours may be programmed: for example, attempts to seduce therapists, attempts to get pregnant, and sexual self-harm. Sometimes, the abuser groups continue to use adult survivors for prostitution or for seduction and political spying. Do not assume all this behaviour is spontaneous. Find out whether any parts of you are still being used in some way, and if so, have your internal leaders talk with them about how they might plan an escape.

Many survivors have inner child parts who assume that every adult wants to have sex with them. One such part made me an offer, and when I declined, saying I do not have sex with children, that part was indignant—"Why not? That's what kids are *for.*" He (a male part in a female survivor) did not understand why it made me sad that he actually felt rejected by me when I refused sex.

Your inside children do not necessarily want what they say they want. For example, an abuser told a little girl that if she did not pull his hand towards her genital area, he would hurt her there. So she did what he said. Then he told her that the fact she pulled his hand to her body meant that she "wanted it". All she wanted was not to be hurt.

As I mentioned earlier, some survivors also have insiders who use sex for revenge, and a way to have power and to express anger. All survivors have plenty of buried anger—but it would be better to aim it at your abusers, not at anyone who attempts to have a sexual relationship with you. There are many innocent people for whom sex is an expression of affection as well as attraction. Although some paedophiles do look for single mothers in order to abuse their children, more men have no interest at all in having sex with a child.

Working out your sexual values

When your body has been used as a sexual commodity, it is tempting to just write off sex as meaningless and perhaps evil. Or the opposite—to believe that your sexuality is the only thing about you which has value, so you need to maintain that value by being seductive or even by earning your living through it.

What do you really believe about sex, its purpose, its value? Many people who have not been used sexually regard it as an expression of emotional intimacy. Whether they confine it to marriage, or believe in "polyamory" (loving more than one person), they associate it with love and committed caring for persons with whom you have a deep relationship.

Other people believe that sex is just an enjoyable physical experience, and consenting adults can do whatever they feel like doing. This is also a valid moral stance, as long as your sexual partners have the same belief. Too often, a person who enjoys casual sex takes advantage of another person who believes sex belongs in a committed relationship.

Some people believe that BDSM (bondage, domination, sadism, and masochism) is all right between consenting adults. BDSM groups try to govern themselves by ethical standards. I have a problem with their ethics, because of what I know about dissociation. What exactly is consent between adults, when the front person consents to experience sexual enjoyment through pain without being aware that a child insider is bearing the pain? By abusing children sadistically, and coupling this violence with sexual arousal and orgasm, organised perpetrator groups produce survivors who are attracted to the violent pornography they produce or who continue to participate in sadomasochistic activities as adults.

You might have some insiders whose sexual responses are connected with pain, or with harming others, with young children, or even with animals or dead bodies. This is not your true nature. These conditioned responses come from what was done to you in childhood, when your body was made to respond while you were giving or receiving pain, or coupled with another child, an animal, or a dead body.

If you have parts who have been made to be sexually attracted to children, they may mistakenly believe that children enjoy having sex with adults. This is because little children in perpetrator groups are trained to fake enjoyment. Let me tell you loud and clear: children do not want sex with adults. They want attention, caring, and closeness, and often even cuddling, but not sex.

I have seen survivors who become sexually aroused while harming their own bodies. This is a programme, taught in childhood. If this happens to you, you need to say "No" to the behaviour and make sure that you work through any memories of this training.

Many survivors have sexual fantasies that are actually representations of their memories of abuse. Every human being has sexual hormones that lead to sexual responses. People in whom sexual release has been linked with cruel or bizarre practices by abusers may have parts who believe they need to do these things in order to have an orgasm. Rather than focusing on the shame and degradation of what these parts want, you can educate them about what makes an orgasm happen, explaining that these learned behaviours are not necessary. One male survivor used to torture himself anally. He had to teach those parts of him who did it to discover his penis and see that it could respond sexually without any need for torture.

Sexual fantasies are one way of finding out what happened to you sexually. You are not actually harming anyone when you are having a fantasy. But you do not have to spend time dwelling on the fantasies in the process of discovering what was done to you. And, of course, you cannot act on any harmful fantasies. Doing harm to people (even with apparent consent), including yourself, doing harm to animals, having sex with children, and violating the dead are behaviours which I find hard to justify in any situation. If you did these things, it was because the perpetrator group forced you to make a choice of the lesser of two evils. Some survivors might turn to pornography because it resembles their victimisation experiences. If you purchase such films, you should realise that you are aiding the perpetrator groups to continue to abuse people to make money. You also have to be careful that your fantasies do not become addictions, which take the place of developing real relationships with real people.

How do you begin to deal with the violent and perverted sexual desires which some of your parts might have? You can develop your own values about sex, based on treating other people the way you wish you had been treated. Your internal leaders can insist that all parts of you live by those values, even though some may want to do otherwise. To truly heal those desires, however, you need to work through the memories that created them. There is no way around this. And the good news is—it works!

Sexual avoidance and celibacy/chastity

In my experience, it is common that a survivor's front people (and other parts as well) have little or no interest in sex, especially if those parts remember being sexually abused. Sex for such parts is simply being used for someone else's gratification, and has never been an expression of love, or caring, or mutual enjoyment. If all your parts were that way, you could probably be fairly contented without any sexual relationships, and some survivors seem to manage this, perhaps suppressing those of their parts who hold the sexual feelings. I have seen more than one incest survivor who is not gay but has knowingly married a gay person in order to avoid sex. Their partner is their good friend, or their household management partner, but sex is not expected.

Sex, when it has not been interfered with, is actually a good thing. Sexual attraction brings together people who will make healthy children. It can create close bonds. Because your abusers perverted sex, you do not have to omit it permanently from your life. But you need to restore it to its rightful place in your life.

Blume writes (1991, p. 229):

> For many incest survivors, the only safety can be found in saying no to sex entirely. At the same time, she may or may not want to cuddle, be naked, or share affection in other, nonsexual ways….The incest survivor may feel guilty (for not giving her partner what she feels he wants) or cheated (of her own sexual birthright) or angry (at men who want her to satisfy them). She may want closeness, though not sex, and may not see the difference. She may be afraid she must sacrifice closeness to say no to sex, or she may discover that there hasn't been any closeness except sex. The partner also suffers from this aftereffect, especially the most caring partners.

Blume suggests that many incest survivors need a period of choosing chastity. Then "After she is free of sex (and violation), she can journey through the adolescent tasks of developing sexuality that she was robbed of by her early abuse". Ellen Bass and Laura Davis, in *The Courage to Heal* (1988), suggest "time out from sex", then beginning with making love to yourself. I shall let you read those other books to get more of an idea of what this means. Essentially, it is reclaiming your body and your own sexual responses by touching the sexual areas of your body lovingly and allowing yourself to respond in safety, discovering that sex can involve pleasure without pain or violence. See whether you can stay in your body while being touched, knowing that the touch is not abuse.

If you have a sexual partner

If you are in a relationship with a spouse or partner who wants sexual relations, you probably need to face the question of sexual healing, at least for your partner's sake. This is especially true if your partner sees sexual relations as an expression of deep intimacy, which is the opposite of your own past experience.

What happens to survivors when they have sex with a partner? Some "space out", trying not to be present. Some find that child parts of them come out during sex because these are the parts who had to go through their sexual abuse experiences. The partner suddenly finds that he or she is making sexual love to a child—possibly a very experienced child, but also possibly a terrified and traumatised child. Some survivors suddenly switch from sexually greedy and enthusiastic parts, who initiate sex, to parts who hate sex and experience it as rape. One male client of mine who was married to a survivor told me about how confusing it was for him to believe he was making love to his wife, and have "some other woman" get up out of bed and walk away without any awareness of who he was or what had been happening.

Many survivors find that sex brings on flashbacks, or "emotional flashbacks" of strong feelings of revulsion or anger. One partner of a male survivor reported that although the sex itself seemed fine, her survivor husband would go into a very angry state right afterward, and become emotionally and physically abusive to her.

Developing your healthy sexuality

I know I am repeating myself here, but sex can be a normal, healthy part of life for an adult. This might be hard to believe after the experiences you have had. So, if you want to, you can reintroduce sex into your life gradually. Meredith did this in stages, beginning alone, then with a safe and supportive partner. At one point, she recognised that she was allowing herself to be used for sex when she did not want it, and she corrected this by refusing when she did not feel like it. The final stage, for her, was allowing sex to be connected with love for her partner, as the parts of her who had been sexually used (in child pornography and prostitution) had been taught that they should never love a “customer” (that is, a sexual partner).

The reality is that you, like everyone else, are a sexual being. You have hormones. If your body is female, you have (or had) a monthly cycle and you might feel sexual desires particularly at certain times of the month. You might find yourself sexually attracted to certain people, and you might find yourself aroused by the sight of certain types of bodies. This is not shameful, it is normal humanity, the way nature ensures the survival of our species. If you are not ready to be in a sexual relationship, you still may need to acknowledge your sexuality. Jen Callow (see her section in Chapter Twelve) found a creative way to deal with this by giving her sexual inside parts loving sexual partners. Other people learn that it is all right to masturbate, as long as you are not being violent to yourself. For one thing, it can provide a release of tension.

The Courage to Heal, as well as other books for sexual abuse survivors, has many practical suggestions for various stages of healing. I suggest you consult those other books.

Steve Frankel has developed a method of helping survivors develop their healthy sexuality, as follows.

1. Find out if there are any insiders who were not personally involved in sexuality. Rather, their jobs may have involved other aspects of abuse and functioning, but not sexuality directly.
2. Ask if any of those insiders would be willing to try to develop sexual functioning and interest. If any agree, have them try sexuality out for a while, seeing if they can explore the body's sexuality alone or in a safe relationship.
3. If they are able to do this, and only once they have been able to do it for a while, then address the trauma-sexualised parts' feelings about sex. These parts are then free to withdraw from sexuality completely without impairing your whole person's sexual functioning.

This is a practical solution for survivors who are in a relationship and want to make their partners happy. However, it cements your splitting, meaning that you have to stay split indefinitely, or at least until you work through the memories of sexual trauma. This is only worth doing if you truly love your partner, and if making love to you is for that partner an expression of intimate connection, rather just using you as a sexual object.

Pregnancies

You might have heard that cults make teenage girls pregnant, deliver the babies prematurely but late enough that they will be born alive, then sacrifice them. Is it true? It appears so, judging from the experience of survivors who have remembered. In the Satanic and Luciferian groups, it appears to be a standard practice to sacrifice the firstborn as the “child of Satan”. The supposedly “Christian” ritually abusing cults also sacrifice babies on Christian holidays (Christmas and Easter). Certain teenage girls are selected to be “breeders”, to give birth over and over again only to have their babies taken from them for the cult's purposes, either for immediate sacrifice, for being kept as an unregistered child and sacrificed later, for trade with other groups, or for sale. Breeder girls are given hormones to bring on premature puberty so that they can provide babies for sacrifice or sale.

According to what I have been told, traditional organised crime is also in the business of breeding babies, sometimes with particular genetic characteristics, for adoption. Some survivors have memories of being kept in brothels where abusers impregnate them, deliver their babies, and then take those babies away.

This is a source of much grief if it is remembered. Regular-life pregnancies can bring back memories of prior pregnancies and of what happened to the babies. Bereaved mothers always carry the pain in their hearts.

Perpetrator groups also use children and babies to control survivors: a mother with a child can be controlled by threats to that child. There is programming for certain insiders to want desperately to be pregnant, to have a baby to love. These parts do not recognise the reason why they want a baby so much. Mothers whose children are being accessed by perpetrator groups are often only vaguely aware of this fact, though they might be aware of the threat of harm to the children if they leave the group or make disclosures about it.

So, even the sacred experiences of giving birth to a child and nurturing him or her have been contaminated by the evil of groups who see babies as sacrifices or as commodities to be sold, and see women as commodities and as baby-making machines.

Is it even possible to heal your sexuality? It does take courage. Many survivors do not even try.

Meredith Sharman (a pseudonym to ensure her safety) is one courageous survivor who has pursued full healing, including healing of her sexuality. Here is her own story of her healing process.

Meredith Sharman: "My sexual healing process"

Some people say you can never get over sexual abuse. They're wrong. Some people say it takes a lifetime to heal. They are wrong, too. You yourself might find healing and enjoying a healthy sex life unimaginable, but if you are reading this book, you have at least a glimmer of hope for improvement. You have to start with at least a little bit of hope. It is possible to heal; it is possible to be whole and healthy, and it's possible to do it in a reasonable amount of time. There may be permanent scars, but even they will fade over time. These healed scars are insignificant compared to the festering sores that keep you up at night and prevent any semblance of a healthy relationship.

The things that happened to me left me with problems in virtually every area of personal functioning, but much of that was hidden because my real life and the "other life" were fairly neatly segregated—dissociated from each other, with experiences divided up into a very large number of inside parts. That was before the walls started to crumble when I was seventeen. It's a bit hard to remember now which part knew what or did what when. They are all me now. I did it all and I experienced it all, the good and the bad. There was a lot more bad. While there was a wide variety of types of abuse and damage, here I am going to focus on healing my sexuality.

Therapy

The first thing that happened on my road to recovery was that I fell apart completely. I was at boarding school and went home most weekends. I spent those weekends cycling to the library to read diagnostic books to try to find out what was wrong with me. I began experiencing flashbacks and nightmares. I became withdrawn and had difficulty sorting out the past from the present or even working out what was real. There were voices in my head, lost time, and feeling like a stranger was running my life. The structures and systems that had kept me so organised and controlled for nearly eighteen years were beginning to crumble and the external me, who knew only normal life, could not cope with the floods of horror scenes in my head. Some of this deterioration was fuelled by physical health problems and some of it by the recognition that this was an opportunity—possibly the last—to get out.

At some point in this personal disaster, I worked out that there were different “parts” of me and started to label and map them in my journal. At the end of the school year, I had a total breakdown and ended up in the psych ward diagnosed with a psychotic break. This, plus some involvement with the criminal justice system which will be detailed later, led to psychotherapy and therapeutic foster care.

I was optimistic about therapy from the start. I expected my therapist to be able to help me and I figured then that it could not take longer to undo the damage than it took to do it. I got better comparatively quickly, in about four years for the bulk of it. This is not because the abuse was mild—at least, I don't think it was—it is because of several factors that made things more straightforward or faster for me. Other people may take longer, but with a supportive guide (probably a professional therapist), motivation, and a willingness to face some of the scariest things in your life, it won't take forever. One of the factors that helped was that I was young and at first had no responsibilities. Several people told me they wish they had done their work when they were my age. I hated hearing that. Now that I'm their age, I suppose I see their point. It is easier when you don't have children, a job, a marriage or various other complications. It's a lot easier when you don't have to worry about maintaining functioning day to day and keeping things under wraps so no one suspects how really screwed up you are. Still, I spent my transition to adulthood with only professionals to care for me and trying to get away from that crazy mixed-up life, figure out who I was, and learn to be independent all at the same time. It was hard. I felt as if I had lost my entire life. In some ways I did. It was worth losing, but still, I have regrets.

In therapy, I learnt more about my personality system and how it worked. I learned about dissociation and how dissociating protected me from events I couldn't cope with, but may have outlived its usefulness. I learned to process memories of abuse by going to a nice place with all the parts who had pieces of it. We would talk through it, put it together and then put it away where it was allowed to blend and fade like any other memory. And that's what we did every week for four years.

Being a victim

From very early in life, I was used and abused sexually by everyone in my family—my parents and my brother. My older brother had been taught by others that having sex with me was the right thing to do. For the most part, I enjoyed these interactions. He didn't have to really force me into it; he bribed me with good feelings. Sometimes he got too forceful and wouldn't stop even if I didn't want it or it hurt. I didn't know there was anything to be ashamed of. I guess I was too young and oblivious. I stayed oblivious for a long time. We knew it was a family secret, but not why.

As we got older, things got more complicated. From later childhood, my brother was “selling” me to his friends for sex. I saw little or none of the profit from this, but I went along with it because I was fearful of him and didn't know there was any other option. I felt exploited, but still possibly not as horrified as it seems now that I should have been.

I also remembered things about being hurt, including being hurt by a group of people. They taught me to do as I was told for the men and the filmmakers, and they taught me to associate sex with both pleasure and pain. It was too much for me as a little kid to cope with all that, so I went away. But I couldn't really go unconscious at will, so there was part of me left behind even when “I” wasn't there and that part experienced things and got overwhelmed just as the first me had and she went away as well and then there was another. Dissociation. Lots of it. So I never had much idea of what was what when I was living my life and I was never too surprised when some new weird thing happened. These events were planned and organised to train me to dissociate in certain ways and to respond to cues without conscious awareness.

It turned out that my brother was not my first or only pimp. The same thing was being promoted by my mother from a much earlier age. As a small child, I learnt to take on various roles mainly with men, who were surely paying considerable sums for my services. I could do a great act. I could be a sexy young vixen or an innocent victim or anything in between, so long as it was what the man wanted. I was trained to make them feel pleasure and that their approval of me was the most important thing. I was terrified of the customer being dissatisfied in any way because the consequences for me would be severe, even torture. I was taught to put away the pain the men caused me by dissociating it. Another part of me was always bearing the pain somehow, but for those parts that remained "out" and were successful at pleasing the men, this experience made them feel loved and valued. Some parts thought sex was the only possible way anything good could ever happen. True love, however, was banned. If I developed a true affection for one of my abusers, that could cause him to do things he shouldn't, like try to steal me. The interaction had to remain detached at the same time as intimate and passionate. A hard juggling act for a young child, but perfectly suited to dissociation.

I wasn't just prostituted, I was also used in child pornography very early in life. These events, the acts, and the training that led to them caused me to mix up pleasure, pain, love and exploitation. They gave me long-term drives to hurt or be hurt in sexual interaction or play.

Being an offender

My breakdown when I was seventeen was in part a release of long held secrets. Among the first to surface was that between the ages of nine and fifteen I had been sexually abusing my little brother. I did the same type of things to some boys that I babysat, although not as much. I never threatened them and I always tried to make them feel good too, to pay them back for using them and to make them less likely to report it. But I knew it was wrong even though I could not quite understand how something that felt good and didn't scare them could be harmful.

Two months before I turned eighteen, I confessed to my doctor about what I had been doing to my brother. Part of the reason was that I had decided to tell on myself so that I would be tried as a juvenile. I was also tired of the constant threat that at any time our mum could find out. I had tried to tell her a few times, but she didn't get the hint. I thought she knew at one point, but it turned out that was when she found out that he had been molested by a friend of the family. So eventually I told on myself. I went to court and pleaded guilty, against my lawyer's advice. I was given the strongest non-custodial sentence they could. Actually, it was longer than they were allowed, but it included mandated therapy, which was probably the point.

The first step in therapy to make sure I didn't hurt little boys any more was to make me not feel like doing it. This was achieved in the short term by the parts of me who remembered what it felt like to be abused sharing the memories with those who felt like abusing others. This gave me enough empathy for my victims to prevent me acting on any impulses I had to do it. The next step was to put together all the parts of the memories that made me into an abuser. First, we had to find out why I was sexually attracted to younger children. One of the origins went back to what I had been doing with my older brother. After having sex with me from as early as I could remember, my older brother, in turn, introduced me to sexual activity with our younger brother. There was more of a power differential there because the age difference was much greater, and I think this is important. This is why I consider what I did with my younger brother to be abuse whereas it is a bit more ambiguous with my older brother, who was closer to my age.

Processing the memories was a lengthy and stressful process that involved recounting and then briefly reliving every aspect of the memory before putting it away, integrated and whole. At the same time, sometimes the parts involved would integrate if there was no longer any reason for them to be separate. In the end, when the memories were together, I didn't feel like abusing boys any more. Even if the thought crossed my mind, it was just a thought and not a drive.

Pregnancy

As pregnancy is a natural outcome of sex, and involves a lot of invasiveness by medical staff in otherwise private body parts, I think coping with pregnancy and birth is relevant to my sexual healing. When I was being abused as an adolescent I became pregnant a number of times. Most of the babies were forcibly aborted before they could survive, although at least two of them were born alive. One of them lived for years and was then killed in my presence. These experiences left deep scars and made me fret about the impact of having any more, but I desperately wanted children.

My first was conceived under unusual circumstances. The group that had abused me as a child continued to do so whenever they could catch me, and tried to get me to return to them. When I was twenty they decided they wanted me to have a baby so they could manipulate me better. By triggering scripts that had been implanted a long time before, they made me seek out a man to father a child. It didn't matter who he was, as long as he wouldn't be involved. So I found someone through the personal ads in the newspaper. When we met, I lied and told him I was on birth control. When we went back to his house and things were heating up, I switched to an inside part who did not want to have sex with a stranger and tried to get away, but he forced me to continue. It only took once. When I told people I was pregnant, it was hard to explain who the father was or why I'd gone and got pregnant as a young woman on my own with no partner or family. Although I had been manipulated into getting pregnant, I was happy because I had already wanted a baby for years.

The pregnancy gave me very strong motivation to get completely free from my family and to put the past behind me. I didn't want it negatively affecting my child. I worked harder than ever in therapy and on my own outside of sessions and put together all the memories and inside parts we could find at that time until I was whole and together.

I had the usual prenatal care, including quite a few internal examinations. I must have endured those by dissociating. As the birth approached, I became afraid of how I would manage the pain and whether I would end up dissociated and either acting in a way that would make them take my baby away, or simply missing the whole experience. So I decided in advance on a number of things that should help me stay present and focused—a picture, music, key words—and I decided that I wanted an epidural as soon as they were willing to give me one, to keep the pain from getting to an unbearable level. My baby was induced at one week overdue, perfect and healthy. One and a half years later I had a mental health crisis, including self-injury, and she was taken away by social services, but after two years of waiting for a court date and then fighting for her in court, I got her back. Several witnesses, including those from social services, said that I was a loving mother with good parenting skills who always put my daughter first. Also through the process of the court case, I had external acknowledgement by the judge that I really had been abused by a group of people. This helped with my acceptance of my past and moving on with my life.

I had two more children with my now ex-husband and then a further two with my current partner. At certain points in all the pregnancies I would struggle for a while when they got to the point when one of the earlier babies would have been terminated, but I got through that with support from my partner.

So I now have five children, from an almost grown teenager down to a not yet one-year-old baby. All are doing well, none have been abused to my knowledge, nor have they more than the vaguest hint that there was anything amiss about my past. I have made a conscious decision not to keep secrets or deny events from their own histories, but there is no need to burden them with my story. My eldest knows that she was in foster care for a while, but takes that in her stride as just part of her own history. The only thing they ask about is why they don't have any relatives on my side, and I still struggle to come up with honest answers to that.

Relationships

After beginning to remember all these nasty things, I went off sex altogether. I found it an embarrassing topic to discuss with my psychologist, especially when it was about real world current issues rather than about being abused as a child. So I did a lot of the healing necessary to go from “solo only” to sex with someone else on my own. To some extent this was processing more memories by myself, but it was also a process of coming to terms with what had happened to me and deciding that it didn't have to affect everything about me for the rest of my life. I know that some therapists wouldn't recommend it or even believe it it is possible, but for me sometimes the best way to get over something is to just steel myself and blast right through as if it isn't there. I have been through so much, I'm sure I can tolerate a bit of anxiety. Once I have tolerated the discomfort of doing something I find scary or uncomfortable, it does not get such a big reaction the next time, and even smaller the next. Eventually, I can do the thing I was once terrified of just as if it isn't a problem.

By the end of this process, I didn't have a therapist and mostly didn't need one. First, I had a boyfriend who was so gentle and slow and uncertain that he was the ultimate in non-threatening and gave me plenty of time and space to be the boss. That's just what I needed. We did quite a bit of fondling and hand jobs and not so much full on intercourse. Next, I got another boyfriend whom I eventually married and divorced. He was rather more enthusiastic with plenty of initiative. He was the first man I lived with. We went through some tough times together when things from the past would bubble up again and we had to endure it and put it away again. On many occasions, he convinced or coerced me to have sex with him when I didn't really want to. I was so used to being used, I just allowed this one more situation for that to happen.

Finally, I found my current partner. I had an eight-year crush on him online before I finally professed my feelings for him and found they were reciprocated. He surprised me by never forcing himself on me in the slightest. If I wasn't in the mood, even if it was just because I was tired, he would stop and back off, maybe altogether or maybe just to cuddling, depending what I wanted. With him it was possible to have physical affection that didn't always lead to sex. This sort of respect for me and my body was something I had never experienced. It shed new light on the behaviour of my ex.

Things were a bit tumultuous at the beginning, to say the least, but he was kind and patient with any issues I churned up for him. There were times when I would have a wave of past issues and I would become afraid of him, confuse him with an abuser, or act as if he was going to hurt me. This hurt him, but he stayed by me at whatever distance I was comfortable with, and talked me back into the present, reminding me that I was with a man I loved and would never be hurt like that again.

Long after I thought everything was resolved (again) I had the emergence of another inside part. This one was a child who loved sex. She wanted to please and pleasure men and put some considerable effort into doing so for my partner. He was torn about the ethics of allowing a part who thought she was a child to have sex with him, but together we decided that as it was really me, an adult, it was acceptable. Others could decide differently if a similar thing happened to them. It would have been okay with me if he decided he wasn't comfortable with it and wanted to call out an adult any time she appeared. But to be frank, even the best man isn't going to go out of his way to avoid a good blow-job. This is something I had never really been able to do before, and I suddenly wanted to do it all the time because that was this part's speciality.

When that child part began to feel true affection and love for my partner, she became terrified. I was flooded with frightening memories and she was interfering with my ability to function in day-to-day life. That young part had been taught that if she loved any man she was supposed to be pleasing in the child prostitution scheme, she would be tortured or even killed. She was also helping to maintain a dissociative separation between “me” and all the events of my past. With the help of my old therapist from fifteen years ago consulting by phone, my partner helped me to process the relevant memories, and to take sole ownership of my life. It was arduous, but worth it in the end. I am now truly whole and I know that “the other life” (the bad things) is also “my life”, even if it's not constantly in the forefront of my mind now.

The final inside part became part of the whole that is me now. I retained some of the sexual interest and skill that I previously had not had access to when they were dissociated. I have not had any further issues since except for the occasional bad memory briefly resurfacing.

Where am I now?

Far away. Over a decade ago, after therapy and getting my daughter back from foster care, I moved thousands of kilometres to another country to live with my now ex-husband. Often, such moves are an attempt to run away from unresolved issues and problems, but in my case those things were as resolved as I could get them living under the oppressive cloud of my past. I was able to leave behind my past and its legacy, the fear of being recontacted by the people who abused me, my psychiatric records, and the contamination my mum had left everywhere by telling churches, community groups and anyone else she could that I was a sexual predator.

I have a loving partner. Ironically, I think that some things that made our relationship work in the beginning are no longer quite as good now that I am a little too stable and not needy enough. We are boring and a bit bored and intolerant. Yet one of the things that does work, surprisingly, is our sex life. There's a lack of frequency, but that probably comes from too many babies and hormonal birth control. Our physical intimacy is working. I don't cry or feel bad. I don't feel taken advantage of. I respond. He responds. We trust each other. There is no force or coercion. No instances of “I really don't want to but…” Occasionally, I will go along with it even when not totally into it, but I am freely choosing to do that as a gift to my partner, to make him happy, but not in a submissive way. The only thing still very quirky about me would be some of the thoughts I find arousing. They are not things I would talk about with anyone and they would not be possible to carry out, which I wouldn't anyway.

With the exception of my partner and my ex, no one in my current life knows the extent of what happened to me. I like it that way. It's not relevant any more and I do not want it to be part of my identity.

The person who asked me to write this is hoping that it will give hope to others. If my story is anything to go by, you can hope that one day you have a mundane yet enjoyable, stable yet sufficiently exciting sex life. You can hope to have children who grow up with healthy natural sexuality. You can hope to get rid of compulsions to act on desires you don't want to have and to keep the ones you do.

You can work out what your genuine sexual orientation may be. This can be so confusing when you're multiple. I don't think there's any particular reason to have a goal to integrate. My goal was to heal and for me integration was a side effect of that, but maybe it doesn't have to be.

Where am I now? Here. In normal life. I hope you can join me one day.

* * *

Steps in sexual healing

There are many things you can learn from Meredith's story. The stages of her sexual healing included:

- getting to know her personality system;
- accessing her history of sexual victimisation;
- facing up to her history of sexual perpetration;
- having victim parts share their feelings with perpetrator parts (This was a turning point for Meredith.);
- working through all the memories of victim and perpetrator parts;
- dealing with her history of "breeder" pregnancies;
- exploring solo sex;
- noticing and permitting unusual arousing thoughts or fantasies without acting on them in inappropriate ways;
- sex with a kind and non-threatening partner who had patience;
- learning not to allow herself to be used;
- giving sexual parts permission to love her sexual partner without fear and dread;
- allowing herself sexual enjoyment—and tolerating boredom—with this partner.

You might notice that the first few stages involve internal work to access her personality system and sexual memories. The last few stages involve sexual behaviours in the real world.

Finding your sexually experienced insiders

Very often, the front person is embarrassed and ashamed about sex, so he or she might not want to acknowledge that there are insiders with sexual experiences and training, especially if some of this was of a distorted and perverse nature. If you look at the very beginning of this chapter, you will see a brief description of some of the kinds of sexual experiences which mind-controlled or ritually abused children are forced to endure. If you have had any of these experiences (which, unfortunately, is likely), you will have insiders who went through them.

If your body was made to feel sexual arousal, pleasure or satisfaction during any of these experiences, you will have insiders who felt these sensations. Just as you would taste a strawberry if it were placed on your tongue, you would experience sexual feelings if your genitals were stimulated in certain ways, whether or not you wanted to. You might feel ashamed of this, but it is perfectly natural. It simply means that the body was working the way it was designed to work.

If you were being hurt during sexual experiences (including not only pain but choking or other forms of violence), you will have insiders who hold that pain and discomfort, and who consequently hate anything to do with sex. If other people or animals were being hurt during those experiences, you will have insiders who hold their pain empathically.

All these parts will eventually need to co-operate in the sharing of the memories, if your sexuality is to be healed. And, initially, they will have very different attitudes about sex. It is important not to argue with one another about this, but to accept all parts as having had different experiences that shaped their outlooks.

Perhaps you can have some objective insider make a list of who inside has what kind of sexual experiences and desires. Then you can prioritise your sexual healing work according to what things are most important to change.

Preventing sexual perpetration

You might not want to know whether you have sexual perpetrator parts. Not knowing will not make these parts magically disappear. If you have them, it is wisest to know it, or at least for your inner leaders to know it, so that you can address the problem.

Meredith entered therapy when she began to remember sexually abusing her little brother. She was unaware of all the training that had led to this, but she was aware that some of her parts still wanted to engage in it. Before she could work through all the memories, she needed a stopgap measure to make sure no part of her would act on those impulses again. So, her inner system leaders decided to ask the parts who had been sexually abused to share their feelings about it with the abuser parts. This was unpleasant for the abuser parts, but forced them to recognise that being sexually abused was not really a pleasurable experience for a child, even if that child pretended to enjoy it.

Most sexual perpetration for survivors of mind control and ritual abuse happens either at rituals or in the home. I have been told that cult-involved parents are told they must sexually abuse their children, or their children will be killed, and the children's reporter parts are interrogated to make sure this is happening. At rituals, sexual orgies often involve violence. So, if these things are still happening in your life, your priority must be to end your (and your children's) current contact with the perpetrator group.

Working through traumatic and training memories

You cannot fully heal sexually without working through the memories. These include memories of “spontaneous” abuse in the home, rapes in rituals, and the sexual training of your parts who were supposed to perform sexually and/or to become offenders. These are very difficult memories for the front person to face, but you deal with them no differently from the way you deal with any other kinds of traumatic memories. Some people are too embarrassed to do this work with a therapist, and choose to do it on their own, although that can be very difficult. Other people find the presence of a safe person whom they know will take it in his or her stride reassuring.

Full sexual healing is not the highest priority for survivors of mind control and ritual abuse. As long as you are not acting on impulses or fantasies that could harm yourself or other people, you might decide to work on other things before you tackle sexual healing.

Be aware, however, that working through the memories brings relief for those of your insiders who have been stuck in these memories for years. You might want to have compassion for them and free them by processing their memories rather than just leaving them shut down.

Exercise 26. What needs healing in your sexuality?

This may be a difficult exercise, and you may want to keep the results private. Your answers to these questions can guide you to which insiders you need to work with, and what kind of memories you might need to work through.

Does your front person (or persons) want to avoid sexuality altogether? If so, does this create any difficulties in your life, or does it make things easier?

Do you have opposite-gendered insiders? Does this have anything to do with their sexual preference, or is it more about the “masculine” or “feminine” jobs they were assigned, or names they were given?

Are you clear about your gender identity?

Are you clear about your sexual orientation? Do you have parts who are homosexual and parts who are heterosexual?

Do you have a life partner? What difficulties do you have in that relationship regarding sex?

Are you able to be sexual with yourself (your own body) without harming it or descending into shame and humiliation?

If you have sex, does it create any of the following.

- Anger?
- Feeling dirty?
- Disgust?
- Spacing out?
- Flashbacks?
- Needing to get drunk?
- Crying or feelings of grief?
- A feeling of power?
- Switching into child parts?
- Odd or violent fantasies?
- Having to please the other person regardless of what you like or dislike?
- Discovering you have sexual skills you do not remember learning?
- A feeling of being drugged?

Take a moment to stay with your emotional response to this question.

Do particular sex acts bother you? Which ones? Ask your insiders why this is.

Do you have insiders who act out sexually? What do they do? Does this create problems for the front person?

Have you been promiscuous? If so, how do you understand your promiscuity?

Have you (as an adult) been involved in the sex industry? How do your different parts feel about this?

Have you been involved with sadomasochistic groups? If so, how do your various parts feel about this?

Have you worked out your sexual ethics? In what situations is it good to have sex? What kinds of sex are permissible?

Do you have violent or abusive sexual fantasies, or fantasies which disgust you?

Do you find you or some parts of you have sexual responses to children, animals, or weird things?

Do you engage in any form of sexual self-harm, such as cutting your genitals?

Have you used religious artefacts such as crosses during sex acts?

Do you have strong negative feelings, or sexual arousal, at the sight of cameras?

Are you able to say “No” to sexual advances?

Do you respond to any romantic or sexual pursuit as if the person were an abuser?

What is triggered by your being pregnant or giving birth?

Is it difficult for you to be sexual with someone you love or for whom you feel affection?

(If you are female) have you had babies whom you were not able to keep? What are your insiders experiencing regarding this?

Your answers to any of the above questions give you clues about what your insiders have been through and what needs to be healed. If you want to proceed with this healing, your internal leaders can now make a plan regarding where to begin.

My sexual healing plan:

CHAPTER EIGHTEEN

Succeeding in friendships and relationships

Mind-controlling abusers are concerned about security, so they want their victims to keep their distance from outsiders and to be dependent on the abuser group itself for any friendships or relationships. If you have had to separate from your family in your attempts to get free from participating in an abuser group, you might find that you are living an isolated life, having difficulty getting close to and trusting people. Perhaps you wonder why.

Programming for isolation

Organised perpetrator groups indoctrinate children that safety only exists within the confines of the group, and they can never trust anyone who is not part of the "family". They tell children that people they know and like or love will always leave them and will end up hating them. They tell children that anyone who finds out about the abuse, as well as their families, will be hurt or killed. They tell children not to get attached to people, because something bad will happen to those people, sometimes because of contact with such an "evil" person as a cult child.

This group of lies, which many of your insiders may believe, includes both general training not to trust or bond with people, and specific lies to prevent you from connecting to helpers such as therapists, police officers, and medical professionals.

As with all the mind-controlling lies, scenarios are set up to "prove" the "truth" of the perpetrators' statements. For instance, a young child is asked to choose between two groups of people, one group wearing hooded black robes, the other group wearing ordinary clothes. Naturally, she chooses the people in ordinary clothes, and they assault and abuse her. She is put back in the choice situation, and chooses the robed cult members, and they pretend to welcome her with love. Years later, the adult who has that child part inside will become afraid if she begins to develop friendships with regular people outside the cult.

A worse scenario occurs when a child is paired with a "disposable" child (an unregistered child, unknown to the outside world, bred for the purpose of sacrifice). The child who will be allowed to stay alive is permitted, for the first time in his or her life, to have a friend, and then is forced to participate in the real or simulated murder of that friend. This horrible event is a basic part of the training of cult children not to make friends.

Although your front person does not consciously remember it, this indoctrination into an "upside-down" system of reality might prevent you from breaking free from the group and developing real friendships with outsiders.

Ask your insiders about what they were told and what experiences they had to make them fear getting close to people who are not part of the "family". You might find that some of them were set up with childhood experiences to make them remain fearful and isolated from people who are not part of the perpetrator group. Realise that these experiences were deceptions designed to maintain the security of the perpetrator group. While not all "outsiders" are trustworthy, many of them are trustworthy, kind, and capable of being loyal and supportive friends or partners.

Survivors' isolation is, in part, a result of this deliberate programming, but much of it is a result of your everyday experiences in childhood. Programming is a series of calculated experiences delivered to particular child parts in order to control their beliefs, behaviour, and emotions. These experiences, though they may be horrendous, only take up a relatively small proportion of a child's time. The rest of the time consists of living with your family and attending school or being around other people. This "regular life" also has a strong impact on your future relationships.

Healthy love and attunement

Parents are the most significant persons in children's lives, and the ones with whom children usually spend the most time while their personalities are being formed. Therefore, they are the most influential in building or destroying both the children's self-esteem and their basic trust in other people and in life. A close nurturing parent–child love bond is essential for a child's healthy development. Although adult relationships must set boundaries and require equal amounts of giving and taking, a baby needs unconditional love from a parent who sees, respects, and esteems the child's true self and underlying nature. This kind of love does not require that the child measure up to certain standards. It does not ask for anything in return. With such love, children become people who fulfil their true potential. The nature of that potential is, of course, different for every individual. We are meant to be different from one another, each having something unique to contribute to the world.

A baby's first care-giver, usually the mother, holds and rocks the baby, and looks into the baby's eyes. The baby is calmed by the sound of her heartbeat. When the baby gives off distress signals (cries), different ones for hunger, for anger, and for pain, mother responds to those cues and is "tuned in" to the baby's needs, and an attachment bond is formed. The bond is formed not only by physical closeness but also by *attunement*—the way in which the care-giver tunes in to the baby, understands and responds to his or her signals of need. Rather than forcing infants to be what the parent wants them to be, attuned parents sense their infants' true natures and encourage them to develop these real selves towards maturity.

A securely attached baby relies on mother to keep him safe. A bond of affection develops. As the child becomes mobile, he or she begins to explore the environment, but constantly runs back and checks on mother's availability and attentiveness. Using mother as a secure base, the infant explores the world. If there is any sign of danger, he or she runs back to mother. This happens in all animal species. The young animals who get separated from the flock because they do not have a strong attachment are the ones who get eaten by predators.

Prevention and breaking of bonds

Organised abuser groups deliberately interfere with the mother–child bond in order to make all parts of the child know that they can rely on no one to care for them. One common scenario is to have the child in distress and then have its mother walk by and ignore it. Another is the parent suffocating or hitting the child when it cries. Even before the baby is born, abusers give some mothers strong electric shocks to make them withdraw their emotional connection with their unborn children.

Once the bond with the mother has been broken or prevented from forming, the abusers try to create a bond with them. They tell children “You are only safe with us”, and “We are the only ones who will want you”. But, of course, the child is not safe with the group members at all. This means there are parts of the child who believe what they have been told, while other parts know that they are not safe with the abusers and have been lied to. There may be parts who are aware that their mother was forced to abandon them. But the need for someone to attach to is so basic to survival that many parts of the abused child run to the perpetrators when they feel threatened.

Psychologist Adah Sachs, in an article entitled “Still being hurt: the vicious cycle of dissociative disorders, attachment and ongoing abuse” (2013), says that “attachment” signifies

> *a survival instinct* (not an emotional longing): the young of every species instinctively holds on, follows and acts in ways that engage the adult's attention, to maintain their close contact…The survival of the young depends on their ability to draw the closest attentiveness from the parent that he or she has.

She says that in some cases “the deepest and most powerful engagement between the child and the attachment figure occurs during abusive acts”.

A child who learns that closeness involves abuse might return to an abuser over and over again, and will most likely get into abusive relationships later in life, mistaking the focused attention of abuse for a true connection. Cults and other mind-controlling groups want their victims to maintain this kind of connection with them for life, while they deny those victims any nourishing attunement and actual safety.

Probably because of the deliberate breaking of the mother–child bond, survivor therapist Arauna Morgan's experience was that her own and other cult involved families were distant and dismissive:

> Children are mostly left to their own devices; they are expected to comfort themselves, siblings are allowed to ‘work things out,’ and can do anything they want to each other that does not result in blood on the rug or furniture (bleeding outside or in the bathroom is fine) and does not result in questions from people at school that cannot be easily answered. Children do their chores and if in a middle class family, they also do their homework with no adult supervision. Children do not interfere in the affairs of the adults and do not ask questions about what the adults may be doing. There may be occasions when the adults are interactive, but this is so rare that it is viewed with suspicion by the children and the adults pretend they act that way always. Adults will tell other adults that they are aware of the things their children do and the children will agree with them, even though they know their parents have no idea of what happens in the home, even while the adults are there.

Contradictory parenting

A survivor of mind control and/or ritual abuse knows by painful experience that not all parents are properly attuned to their children. I have heard the most horrendous stories from my ritually abused clients regarding the kind of parenting they experienced. Ongoing bad parenting was in addition to the deliberate controlled abuse in the formal training of their inside parts. Parents who are members of these abuser groups are usually dissociative themselves, and often have sadistic parts who come out in the privacy of the home and abuse their children physically, emotionally, and sexually. And parents who truly love their children may be required to sexually and physically abuse them, believing that the alternative is having them killed.

The parents' contradictory behaviours lead to the child developing spontaneous insiders whose purpose is to deal with the different parental states—some apparently loving and trusting, others fearful, and others care-givers for the parents. These splits are in addition to the deliberately created splits made by the perpetrator group.

Adult results of early attachments

The nature of a person's early attachments affects his later attachments to friends, partners, and children, and even pets, and his capacity to love and be loved. Attachment researchers believe that much mental illness and psychopathology result from disturbed attachment in childhood.

Although its primary importance is in infancy, attachment theorists believe that the "attachment system" continues throughout life: people of all ages regain a sense of security when they are anxious, afraid, ill, or tired, by establishing contact with someone they love and trust. The extent to which they love and trust other people and themselves depends on their attachment history, beginning with that all-important first attachment in their infancy.

Parents, peers, siblings, friends, and sexual partners may all operate as attachment figures over a person's lifespan. Most adult love relationships include the same defining features as infant–mother attachment: a desire for closeness, especially under stress, a sense of security which comes from contact, and distress or protest when threatened with loss or separation. Sue Johnson, the founder of Emotionally Focused Therapy for Couples, believes that adults' ability to have secure intimate relationships depends on their capacity to form interpersonal connections, which in turn depends on their early experiences with parents.

Psychologist Kim Bartholomew has studied attachment styles in adults, and has divided people into four categories, as shown in Table 1.

The people in the first two columns (secure and preoccupied) have a positive view of other people, while the people in the second two (dismissing and fearful) have a negative view of other people; they do not trust easily. The people in the first and third columns (secure and dismissing) have a positive image of themselves—they like themselves, while the people in the second and fourth columns (preoccupied and fearful) have a negative view of themselves—low self-esteem.

Bartholomew writes of the preoccupied category: "Children who experience inconsistent and insensitive parenting, especially if accompanied by messages of parental devotion, may conclude that their own unworthiness explains any lack of love on the caregiver's part" (Griffin & Bartholomew, 1994, p. 431: see Bartholomew's writings at www.sfu.ca/psyc/faculty/bartholomew/research/publications/attachment.htm). She says that these people will be overly dependent, and have "an insatiable desire to gain others' approval and a deep-seated feeling of unworthiness".

Of the fearful category, she writes, "Rejected children would tend to conclude that others are uncaring and unavailable and perhaps, in addition, that they themselves are unlovable…" She describes these people as experiencing "pervasive interpersonal distrust and fear of rejection". They are generally unhappy and oversensitive to what others think of them. In social situations and close relationships, they expect and tend to perceive rejection.

Bartholomew speaks here only of rejection, not of abuse. But abuse, especially by parents who are not consistently abusive but are sometimes apparently loving, can make children very fearful. When psychologists speak of children's attachment styles, they talk about a category of "disorganised attachment"—approaching the parent then freezing or trying to escape. This should be a red flag for identifying abusive parents. The child desperately wants the parent's love and support, but knows that coming close to that parent sometimes results in being hurt. And, especially with a parent who switches between kind and abusive parts, the child has to be constantly alert for which aspect of that parent he or she is dealing with.

Finally, Bartholomew describes those in the dismissing category as maintaining a positive self-image in the face of rejection by attachment figures by distancing themselves and seeing themselves as "fully adequate and hence invulnerable to negative feelings", as those feelings might lead them to want to depend on others. "Individuals with this style passively avoid close relationships; they place much value on independence and assert that relationships are relatively unimportant."

Table 1. Categories of attachment styles in adults.

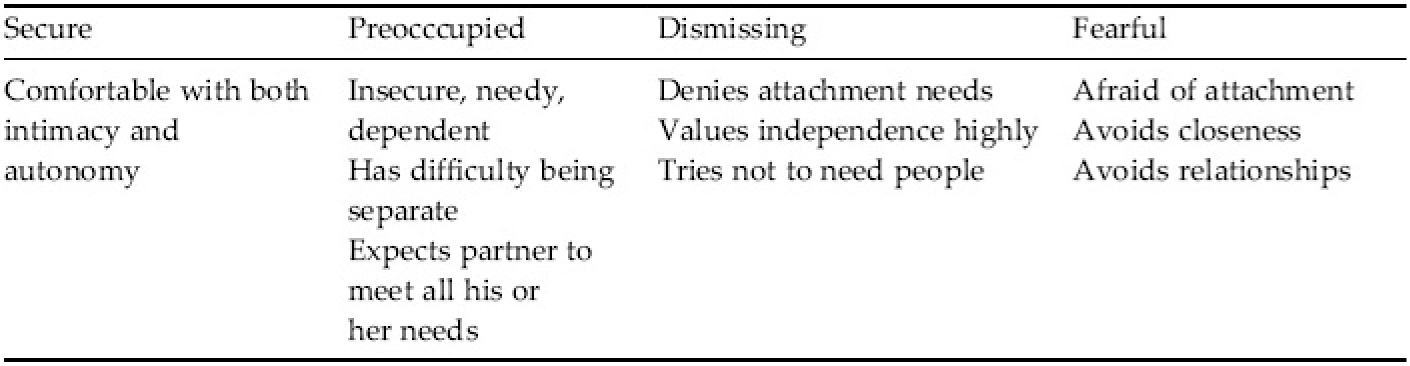

Secure	Preoccupied	Dismissing	Fearful
Comfortable with both intimacy and autonomy	Insecure, needy, dependent Has difficulty being separate Expects partner to meet all his or her needs	Denies attachment needs Values independence highly Tries not to need people	Afraid of attachment Avoids closeness Avoids relationships

This is more characteristic of persons whose parents were too busy, ill, or preoccupied rather than abusive. Sometimes, children are vulnerable to abuse outside the home because their parents are inattentive. But cult families can also leave children to their own devices when not abusing them, resulting in those children knowing they have nobody to rely on except themselves.

So, we see that your view of yourself as good and lovable or bad and unlovable, your view of other people as trustworthy or untrustworthy, the way you handle your emotions, your capacity to form secure and healthy relationships with peers and partners, and your self-confidence, are all strongly affected by how your parents treated you. Do not despair, however. The beginning of positive change is recognising what needs to be changed.

It goes without saying that survivors of mind control and ritual abuse probably have all four attachment styles in various inside parts of them, though not many would have a secure attachment. It is common that, in close relationships, survivors switch between different parts and therefore show different attachment patterns, confusing their friends and partners, who might begin to feel they cannot do anything right. All the distrust learnt appropriately in childhood is carried forward into adulthood and projected on to people who might not really deserve it.

Exercise 27. Identifying your attachment issues

Do you find that you are unable to become close to other people, or when you become close to them, you begin to panic and pull away or criticise or provoke them to make them reject you?

Ask your insiders whether they were trained or have programming not to get close to anyone. Are they acting on that programming?

Ask your insiders whether some of them feel that when they are stressed they must make contact with persons (family members or others) who are part of the perpetrator group? If so, have other insiders let those parts know why that might be dangerous, if necessary giving them memories to demonstrate this reality.

What do you see as your front personality's main attachment style (secure, preoccupied, dismissing, or fearful?) What experiences led him or her to develop this style?

Do any of your insiders have a secure attachment style? If so, who are they attached to in this way? Is it realistic, that is, is that person really trustworthy? If not, educate these insiders. If it is realistic, perhaps these insiders can teach the rest of you some things about how to make a relationship work.

Do some of your insiders have a preoccupied (needy) attachment style? Have they driven people away by being too demanding? Does their neediness leak through to the front person? Infants and babies need this kind of care and attention, and it is a sad fact that it is not available to someone in an adult body.

Have you developed relationships with unsafe people because the needs of some young parts have taken over and led you to ignore signs that these people are not safe? If you have, arrange for some insiders to watch for signs that a person is not safe, and inform everyone inside if this is the case.

If you have young parts who need more care than is available in the world, see whether you can provide it in the inner world. What could you do internally to meet these childhood needs? Can you provide internal care-givers, or can some older parts volunteer for this job?

Is there anything you can do in the real world to provide nurturing for your young abandoned internal children, such as getting a pet or a rocking chair?

Do some of your insiders have a dismissing attachment style, believing they don't need anyone and that the only persons they can trust are themselves? Identify which insiders feel this way.

Are some of your parts fearful of any relationship at all? Can you help these parts see how their childhood experiences have led them to believe all people are untrustworthy, rejecting, and abusive, even though this is not really the case?

What will all of you be missing if the fearful and dismissive insiders prevent you from having any friedships? How can you achieve a balance between those parts who need love and connection and those parts who need safety and autonomy? Can you rearrange the jobs of your insiders so that some strong insiders will guard against you being re-abused, while permitting trust to develop with trustworthy people?

One important principle in relationships is that trust should not be given unconditionally; it has to be earned, and not just by a kind word or two. Do you give people a chance to earn your trust? What would it look like if you did this?

Are any parts in you anxious as a result of reading this section? Can they express their fear, or can someone older express these fears for them? Can an older part reassure them?

Principles in developing friendships

Developing friendships gradually

People (in fact, all mammals) were designed to live in relationships, having family and friendships. Many survivors of mind control and/or ritual abuse are, of necessity, cut off from their families, because their families are involved with the abuser group or are themselves abusers. But good friends can fill the void left by the family, which is why abusers try to prevent survivors from having close friendships.

Friendships come at many different levels: casual acquaintances, work colleagues, buddies who share interests and activities, relatively close friends with whom you can share some struggles of your everyday life, and, finally, best friends who can handle most or all of the history and difficulties you share. The latter are hard to find, but that does not mean you should not have friends at all the other levels. Each kind of friend can meet a different kind of need in you. Not all friendships have to be deep in order to enrich your life.

The deep friendships generally develop over time from one of the other kinds of friendships; they are not instantly deep. You need to be cautious about people who get too deep too fast; it might indicate that they lack personal boundaries and a sense of what is safe to be shared and what is not.

Many survivors just do not know how to develop friendships. They tend either to avoid sharing anything with people they meet, or they blurt out their entire life history, frightening off people who could be supportive friends. This often comes from child parts who are tired of keeping the secrets, are lonely, and want to be understood and accepted. It can also come from child parts who are programmed to sabotage friendships by making you look crazy.

The first thing to know about developing friendships is that it is a gradual process. You do not share everything at once. You share little bits of your life at a time, observing how the person reacts to your disclosures. What you observe will give you information about what kind or level of friendship you want with this person, and what kind or level of friendship he or she wants with you.

Some people cannot take you sharing much about your life history. There are many reasons for this. Some people who have not had much personal trauma are genuinely shocked and traumatised by hearing about child abuse, even the milder kind. When it happens to someone they know, it is as if it happened to them. You may have no idea how overwhelming it is for someone who has not suffered much to hear about mind control and ritual abuse. Even therapists go through this. I know I did with my first few ritual abuse survivor clients, and I still sometimes feel shocked and overwhelmed by the things people tell me.

Just because people are shocked and horrified does not mean they cannot become good friends or they do not care. Just the opposite; it may mean they are sensitive and caring. You just have to go slowly with them. Share one small thing at a time, so that they will not be overwhelmed.

Other people have walled themselves off in a view of life which will not allow for the fact that terrible things happen in the world. They want a constant positive rosy glow. Such people are likely to say that the past is past and you should move on, or to react to disclosures with scepticism, or to say that God makes it all happen for a purpose. Or they suggest that you are stressed from events in your present life and, therefore, are imagining the things you are remembering. Such people are fine for going bowling or to the cinema with, but do not share anything personal with them. When your abusers told you “No one will believe you,” they were right—about some people, but not about others. You do not need to risk the disbelief of people who are not open to hearing about the bad things that happened. Seek out those who will believe you.

It is also boring and unfulfilling to try to have friendships with people who just do not know about trauma and do not want to know. Perhaps they are all right to go to see a film with, but they will not fill your need for connection.

A true friend is a healthy role model, something that survivors desperately need, since their role models in childhood were badly flawed. A friend who accepts all of you as you are is the most wonderful source of healing. This kind of acceptance can come from therapists, but it can also come from friends.

Whenever I meet a new client with a trauma history, I tell them I do not expect them to trust me. Trust takes time, and it has to be earned. This is as true in friendships as it is in therapeutic relationships. Allow people to earn your trust. Keep your vigilant parts listening for signs of disbelief or untrustworthiness in potential friends, and get them to bring these things to your attention. However, make sure they are not just overreacting to small behaviours which do not mean anything, on the basis of their childhood training. If your whole system works together, you can keep safe while developing friendships.

Friendships with other survivors

Many survivors dream of a friendship with someone who really understands what they have been through—and that ideal person, of course, is another survivor. I have seen such friendships be very supportive, and I have also seen them be very destructive. Be very, very careful.

Many survivors are not consciously aware that many or most of their friends are cult members and still actively involved. Some survivors of mind control and ritual abuse are still involved with perpetrator groups, and some have programming to report on other survivors and get them reinvolved. I have seen survivors taken back to cults other than the ones they escaped from.

I have seen friends who were both survivors being accessed and reabused at the same time by cult people. If survivors live together, they are particularly vulnerable to this.

I have seen survivors have programming triggered by things said or done by other survivors. There is a greater chance of this with another survivor, especially if that person has parts who are trained to trigger others.

What if both of you have achieved physical safety? There are still some risks. I have seen survivors become inappropriately sexually involved with one another, and hate themselves afterwards. I have seen two survivors have their "get pregnant" programming triggered at the same time, and go out into the streets offering free sex to anyone nearby.

I have heard of survivors spending all their time together coddling one another's "littles", living primarily as children, and not getting on with their recovery.

I saw two survivor clients of mine begin to develop what could have been a real friendship, but then one of them accused the other of making sexual comments to her, an accusation that deeply wounded the other person. They stopped seeing one another, and I worked with both while not knowing which one was mistaken. After several months, the one who made the accusations discovered that some of her own insiders were imitating her friend's voice and making the comments in her head. It was a great shock to her to discover they were doing this, acting on programming not to get close to anyone. She felt very ashamed, and had to apologise to her friend. It was too late for the friendship to resume.

Despite all this, I know some survivors who have developed deep, supportive, and abiding friendships with one another. Part of what has made this work is not spending their time together in child states, and not talking about the abuses they have experienced. The focus of such friendships has been on helping one another manage present-day life in a healthy way. And, of course, you do not need a fellow survivor to accomplish this.

Respecting and maintaining boundaries

It is not enough just to be close to someone else. We need to feel that the other person sees us as we are, appreciates the unique person that we are, and does not try to make us different. If the person, in "loving" us, needs us to be someone that we are not, we can feel both smothered and abandoned.

Every person needs both to be loved and to be himself or herself. This is possible only when there are healthy boundaries in the relationship. Personal boundaries are imaginary lines that separate people within relationships. You can imagine your boundaries as bubbles, fences, or walls. They work best when they are flexible rather than rigid.

Boundaries are essential for healthy relationships. Without boundaries, each person has no separate sense of self, and one person's identity can become submerged in that of another person. Intimate closeness is normal and essential between a mother and her infant, but as the child grows, he or she gradually becomes separate from the mother. Both child and mother begin to assert their own boundaries and some degree of independence. This process is called differentiation. Unfortunately, in the dysfunctional families involved in cults and mind control groups, children are not generally allowed to differentiate and become separate selves.

At different times, any person has greater needs for closeness or for distance. This happens on both a physical and an emotional level. There is a continual dance back and forth as people express their needs for intimacy and for separateness, and people respond to others' needs by moving closer or further away. A healthy friendship, relationship, or family is one in which you can be loved and be yourself at the same time. When you are multiple, this is more complex, but still each part needs to be accepted for who he or she is, and each part has a unique set of likes and dislikes and interests.

In a healthy relationship, people learn to hear no and say no. Boundaries are discussed, respected, and maintained. There is closeness without sacrificing the freedom of each person. Being in a loving relationship involves compromises, since not everyone's needs can be met at the same time. It is possible for one person to put his or her needs aside temporarily to respond to the other's needs, because he or she trusts that the other person will do the same at another time. No one is taken advantage of on an ongoing basis. Caring is not an obligation but a matter of free choice.

In a healthy relationship, the “fences” between the people are both strong and flexible, and they are respected. A person can extend her personal boundaries (or open her gates) by asking the other person to meet her needs, responding to his or her needs in turn, and sharing things in her life. A person can pull in his personal boundaries (or close his gate) by withdrawing, taking time alone, keeping personal information private, or indicating that he is unable at the moment to respond to the other person's needs. When he does this, his boundaries are respected, and his gate does not get kicked in. This makes the person feel safe to extend or soften his boundaries on other occasions.

Relationships that are too close: enmeshment

“Enmeshed” is the technical term for a family or a relationship in which everyone is involved in everyone else's business. Often, such families describe themselves as “very close”. In an enmeshed family, the parents do not know how to have closeness with their children and allow them freedom at the same time. Presumably because their own boundaries were not respected when they were children, they do not recognise and respect either their own boundaries or those of the other family members. Each family member is, therefore, torn between his or her need for closeness and his or her need for separateness. Enmeshed families are very common in families where abuse occurs.

When a child's personal boundaries are not respected, there is too much closeness in the relationship and the child does not have room to grow. Yes, it is important that there be a healthy, close attachment between parents and children, but in an enmeshed relationship, the parents are over-involved in the children's lives and the children feel that they do not have privacy, their own space, or the ability to make their own decisions based on their own preferences and values. The children cannot develop personal boundaries. Parents who had anxious, insecure, or fearful attachments to their own parents are the most likely to give their children too little space. They might use their children as confidantes, and want to keep them as their care-givers all their lives, making the children give up their own ambitions. They might also push their children towards having the life they (the parents) wanted.

Friendships, like family relationships, can be enmeshed, with the people doing everything together. When this happens, frequently one person becomes dominant and the other person's preferences are squashed.

Relationships that are too distant: disengagement

Children who have had to deal with intrusive parents often respond by trying to create distance in later relationships. They keep their distance in order to feel nobody will violate them. However, in doing so they give up the possibility of emotional intimacy. If you can learn how to have firm but flexible personal boundaries, you can have intimacy without giving up your own unique self (or selves, if you are multiple).

A person may attempt to disengage from an enmeshed relationship by putting up very rigid, wall-like boundaries, remaining in contact but keeping out the other person's “invasions” by anger outbursts. Or he or she might do it by silent withdrawal, removing the gate altogether and putting up a “wall of silence”. There are entire families that exist together with no real relationships, as all members have emotionally disengaged. Disengagement makes relationships very unsatisfying; it is preferable to break off the relationship altogether if you cannot talk it out.

Boundaries around relationships: triangles

For relationships to be healthy, there need to be boundaries not only around individuals but also around relationships. Adult family members and friends need to be able to have one-to-one relationships with one another without other people interfering. In healthy families with strong boundaries, individuals are allowed to work out their own conflicts without interference. However, children first need to be coached in ways of relating without violence or sexual intrusions. In families where boundaries are weak, many of the relationships are not respected and the result is triangles in which people “take sides”. Many sibling rivalry conflicts are made much worse by a parent who interferes.

People who grow up with this situation carry it through into their adult friendships. A triangle occurs when a third party enters a conflicted two-person relationship to alter the balance of power. People who have grown up in families where triangles were common are likely to intrude into others' relationships as the third party who takes sides, ganging up and often becoming the “rational judge” who says who is right and who is wrong. When this happens, it prevents people from working out their own conflicts and learning to communicate assertively and kindly.

It is important, as you develop friendships, to keep boundaries around those friendships and not begin gossiping with one friend about another. And do not allow others to intrude into your friendships.

Boundary blindness

People from enmeshed families of origin are often insensitive to invasions of their own personal boundaries. They are not able to say no to requests, and might give in to a request which could easily have been denied with a “NO”. Then they feel resentful of whoever made the request. If you are unassertive like this, it leads people to think you are all right with whatever they suggest or request, and then they are surprised to learn you are not, since they cannot read your mind or even the subtleties of your body language.

It is common for an unassertive person to become suddenly depressed or angry and irritable without knowing why, and to stay in that state for some time. Usually, this is traceable to a boundary violation. Someone has intruded into your life in a way that violates your personal boundaries, but you were not consciously aware of it at the time. However, if you are multiple, some of your insiders will know that you feel invaded, although they will not necessarily tell you.

It is important to learn

- how to perceive your own boundaries and assert them;

- how to respond to requests and probes;
- how to respond to outright invasions.

Assertiveness is the ability to maintain your own boundaries without invading those of other people. If your parents taught you to always obey and say yes, *no* is probably not part of your vocabulary. Survivors of mind control have great difficulty saying no, because insiders who disobeyed the abusers were often punished with torture. So, feelings from these insiders will leak into the person if he or she even contemplates saying no to anyone. It is important to reassure your insiders that the punishment they experienced in childhood will not happen now if they say no to regular people. It is also important to know that even people who normally do not like to *hear* "No" are able to accept it if you say it to begin with, rather than later changing your mind.

Having boundaries does not mean that we do not have love and compassion for others. It does not mean that we stop doing things or caring for others. When you have healthy boundaries, you can give *whole-heartedly* from a loving place. With poor boundaries, giving feels like an obligation and is shortly followed by resentment.

As people begin to recover from growing up in an enmeshed family, they are often oversensitive to boundary violations, perceiving them where they are not intended at all, or overreacting to minor unintentional violations. In normal negotiations, a person asks for something (such as some time together, some help, or a personal disclosure), and the other person can respond with "yes", or "no", or "not yet". Boundaries are being tested and respected rather than violated. People who are just learning to perceive their boundaries go back and forth between two extremes: unassertiveness (not standing up for oneself) and aggressiveness, rather than following the sensible middle road of assertively maintaining their own boundaries and respecting those of other people.

People who have grown up in an enmeshed family might also be insensitive to others' boundaries. Not knowing how to see self and others as separate, they begin to control the people they "love", telling them how to live, taking over their responsibilities, and insisting on being involved in every aspect of their lives. It is important to realise that such people are not consciously aware of their enmeshment with family members or friends. They just lack empathy for how the others may feel about this, and are unaware of others' need to be themselves and make their own decisions.

If this is you, you need to learn to recognise the clues (often subtle), which indicate that another person is asserting his or her boundaries, recognise that this is not a threat, and respect the privacy and autonomy of those you love. They can only trust you if they know you will not try to control them. This might be difficult for you. People who have been controlled a lot feel safest when they are in control themselves, but in taking control of others they put those others in the same disempowered position they themselves used to be in.

Dealing with neediness in friendships

A survivor of severe child abuse, who did not have attuned parents, has lots of abandoned, hurt, and needy child parts inside. These parts really want someone to care about them. They might have unrealistic expectations of what a friend, even a very close friend, can provide. It is up to the older parts of you to take care of them, and to meet as many of their needs as you can.

Be careful not to let needy child parts take over your friendships and demand more than your friends are able to give. For a friendship to succeed, it must be two-way. That is, you must give as much as you get. If you are always taking and never giving, your friend may withdraw—unless he or she is also full of unmet needs and will put up with anything in order to have a friend. That also is not healthy, and the resentment your friend stores up might one day come out all at once.

Some survivors go to the other extreme, and believe they should always give and never receive. A friendship is for both people. If you have a friend and they are always taking and never giving, you need to set some limits. Do not give more than you get. It is important to have empathy for other people, and there are times in everyone's life when they are needier and deserve to have more attention and help. But it should not remain that way for ever. If it does, it is no longer a friendship; it is a volunteer job.

Couple relationships

Except for the possibility of sex, couple relationships work much the same as friendships. To summarise: you have to allow the relationship to develop slowly, seeing how much you can trust the other person with increasing levels of sharing. You need to respect one another's boundaries, and to maintain your own boundaries so the other person does not overwhelm you. You need to be able to rely on the other person to support you when you need it, but if you have hurt and needy children inside, you need to recognise that you, or your older parts, are their primary parents, and you cannot expect even a life partner to meet all the needs which a young child should have had met by loving attentive parents.

All the challenges of a relationship intensify when you live with someone, even a roommate. And it is even more with a partner, because you expect more of them, and you are more easily hurt when they do not come through for you. So SLOWLY is the best way—let a friendship develop slowly, and if it ripens into a deeper love, you will have plenty of time to enjoy that; you do not have to rush into it before all parts of you are ready.

In developing new relationships as an adult, you might need to unlearn much of what you learnt in your family of origin. You need to become aware of what was violating, and teach yourself not to do those things. It is all right to make a few mistakes along the way. It is hard to learn as an adult what you should have learnt as a child.

Exercise 28. Assessing your boundary awareness

Would you describe the family in which you grew up as enmeshed, disengaged, a combination of enmeshed and disengaged, or having appropriate boundaries? Describe what boundaries were like in that family. Did the parents respect the children's boundaries? Did they respect children's relationships with one another and with friends, or did they intrude? Did they treat their children differently, being enmeshed with one and distant from another?

Are you aware of your own boundaries, and when someone crosses them? What signs indicate that your boundary has been crossed?

Are you able to say “No” when you do not want to do something someone asks? Why or why not? Can you say it firmly but respectfully?

Think of a situation in which you want to say no to someone. How could you say it to affirm your own boundary without being rude to that person?

Are you aware of other people's boundaries? Do you intrude upon them, or are you respectful of the subtle signs that they want privacy or more distance?

Think of your friends and acquaintances. Is there anyone who seems excessively needy, and expects you to be there for them all the time? What could you say to that person?

Are you ever that person? How can you prevent yourself from overwhelming your friends with your neediness?

Do you have any friends who are mind control or ritual abuse survivors? What differences do you notice in their boundaries, *vs.* those of your other friends?

When you have had friendships or relationships that have gone wrong, can you say what went wrong? Did it involve boundary violations?

How quickly do you develop friendships? Do you think this is too quickly, or too slowly?

What level of intimacy do your friendships have? Superficial (doing things together), relatively deep (sharing about present life), very deep (you can share your trauma history freely)? Are you happy with the level of each friendship? Would you like to share more with some person, or less with some other person?

The workplace

If you work outside the home, as most people do, your workplace is probably a setting where you have to deal with people. Everything I wrote above about boundaries in relationships applies in the workplace. Unfortunately, many workplaces are dysfunctional in terms of the relationships between people. One survivor, who had just returned to work after a period on a disability pension, had her first experiences of sexual harassment (a supervisor persistently trying to make friends with her and finally kissing her) and bullying (colleagues criticising her and making remarks about her). It helped her when she learned the names for these behaviours, and that what these people were doing was not all right. She reported the sexual harassment to the supervisor's own boss, who put an end to it pretty quickly. She realised she would have to stand up to the bullies, and when she did, they stopped their behaviour.

You probably had to deal with bullies when you attended school. Bullying is more obvious when it is a child who pushes you or calls you by an insulting name, but it is quite common in workplaces. It is perpetrated often by supervisors, and sometimes by co-workers. Types of bullying include threats to your professional status (belittling your opinions, public professional humiliation, accusations regarding lack of effort, intimidating use of discipline), threats to your personal standing (undermining your personal integrity, destructive innuendo and sarcasm, making inappropriate jokes about you, persistent teasing, name calling, insults, and intimidation), isolation, pressure on you to overwork, and destabilisation (failure to acknowledge good work, allocation of meaningless tasks, removal of responsibility, repeated reminders of your blunders, setting you up to fail, and telling you there is more to be done when you think you have finished).

Many people, not just survivors of child abuse, have to deal with difficult bosses. But people who spent much of their childhood being bossed around might take it for granted that bosses are unkind and allow themselves to be verbally abused or taken advantage of in the workplace. A childhood of slavery does not prepare you for a life of freedom and autonomy. However, be careful not to overreact to slight difficulties at work. LisaBri writes:

> Innocent directions from your boss can bring up the feelings from memories of rituals ordering you to answer to a higher power, such as Satan. It is important for you to distinguish between the two.
>
> If your boss, on the other hand, is demanding, threatening, or overbearing, you have the choice not to deal with this tyrant. Quit, and if that is not an option, do not let them get the best of you. Sing to yourself under your breath, changing the cadence of the boss's voice to a ridiculous sound that you can laugh and share with inside others, later. Also, learn your boss's voice. Know it is on the outside. If a programme was set to have a part mimic someone's voice and set off havoc in your system, recognise that it is a programme and dismantle it.

How do you know when it is time to run from a job? One survivor who quit her job provided me with the following list.

When to run from a job

1. When Administration overworks staff to exhaustion.
2. When Administration requires complete subservience.
3. When you are punished for expressing yourself and especially for pointing out unethical practices in the agency.
4. When they pick on you and blow up possible mistakes.
5. When they blame you for things you did not do.
6. When they do not acknowledge your strengths or minimise them.
7. When they practise partiality and favouritism to others (who have mastered subservience).
8. When the organisation is run by greed rather than service.
9. When they try to blot out your individuality and ability to think.
10. When they inhibit any initiative.

In other words, when the workplace is as coercive as the abuser group you grew up in (though without the torture). If this is your workplace, recognise what it is like and start looking around for another job.

You also need, however, to be careful that you are not reading underhanded motivations into people on the basis of your past experience. You might have parts who think everything is an insult, and cannot handle even reasonable authority. While such parts can be helpful, they should not be allowed to run the show.

Communication skills

The most important communication skills are listening in a way that attempts to understand the other person, speaking in a respectful and clear manner, taking turns, and conflict resolution. There are courses in communication skills, and if you have difficulties in this area it might be wise to take such a course.

Dealing with anger in relationships

The biggest reason for conflict in relationships is anger. I explained in Chapter Thirteen that anger is a normal emotion that tells us our boundaries might have been violated. Unfortunately, most survivors have inner child parts who can become very angry at very small things which are reminders of their trauma.

Researchers Matthew McKay and Patrick Fanning, who wrote *When Anger Hurts Your Kids* (1996), discovered that parents with high levels of ongoing anger were using certain kinds of "trigger thoughts". These anger-fuelling thoughts consisted of three categories: magnification (making something bigger than it is), labelling (calling the person names in your head), and assuming intent (assuming they did the annoying thing on purpose to harm you). When we are stressed, these trigger thoughts can start a downward spiral toward aggressive behaviour. Becoming aware of not only our feelings but also our thoughts has been proved to be an effective way to defuse emotional build-ups and overreactions.

Think of some behaviour of your friend, partner, or child that upsets you, then see which of the thoughts outlined below fit you. Notice how your emotions about the situation change when your thoughts do, and how the behaviour you might engage in changes when you understand the situation differently.

Trigger thoughts

Examples of magnification

Your supervisor at work gives you a last-minute assignment that you have to scramble to get done.

Magnification: She's really mean. She doesn't like me. I can't work under her. This is too stressful. I should quit this job.

Realistic view: She might not know how much work I already have to do. She may be under pressure herself. I can handle my workload, or if I can't, I can ask her which things are the priority.

A seven-year-old child has a temper tantrum when you say "No" to her.

Magnification: I can't stand it. She never listens. She's getting out of control. This is manipulation. She doesn't care how I feel. This behaviour is intolerable.

Realistic view: She can't help doing this; it's how she tries to cope. Children have to go through these stages. I don't like her behaviour, but I can accept it. I'm the grown-up; I can handle this. I can get through it without blowing up. I need a plan to get her attention without anger.

Examples of labelling

Your doctor keeps you waiting for forty minutes.

Labelling: She only sees me for the money. She's inconsiderate.

Realistic view: Something delayed her. Since it bothers me, I can ask her why this happened.

A ten-year-old girl has stomach-aches at night and becomes anxious.

Labelling: She's a drama queen. This is manipulation.

Realistic view: Something is bothering her, and I need to pay attention, comfort her, find out what's wrong, and give her ways to cope.

Examples of assumed intent

A two-year-old pours his milk all over the floor from his high chair.

Assumed intent: He's doing it to annoy me. He doesn't care that he makes work for me.

Realistic view: He isn't really trying to annoy me. It's just how he's coping right now. He doesn't have the words to express himself. He's much too young to understand my workload.

Your best friend doesn't mention your birthday.

Assumed intent: She's doing this deliberately. She doesn't care about me.

Realistic view: Birthdays don't mean as much to her as they do to me. She doesn't know it matters to me.

Coping with unexpected trigger thoughts

1. Think of other reasons why the person might be doing what they're doing.
2. Figure out how important this situation is.
3. For each negative label you have used in your mind, try to find a neutral description you could use instead.
4. Remind yourself of ways that you can cope and keep your cool.

Of course, there are special issues for survivors of mind control and ritual abuse. Triggered emotions and the associated thoughts often come from child insiders, even when the adult on the outside is unaware of it. These emotions can be strong and even overwhelming, just like the emotions of children who are going through severe trauma. It is important to keep these children well looked after on the inside, and for some older insiders to reassure them and help them know that you can cope with the situation and they do not have to handle it themselves. Children do not have to deal with adult situations. If programmes are triggered, inside higher-ups need to make sure they are turned off, so that you do not react inappropriately.

These inappropriate thoughts and reactions are especially likely to happen when you are dealing with children, because of the way your parents and other adults dealt with you when you were a child. If you are a parent, it is a good idea to take a parenting course and/or read some good books on parenting (such as my own), so you can learn how to parent children in a different way from the way you were raised.

Exercise 29. Working with the anger chart

The following chart (from our book, Miller and Rees, 2008, *The Parent–Child Connection*) might help you know what to do if your anger begins to take over. It uses the letters A - N - G - E - R to identify steps towards awareness of your anger. However, you can use it when other very strong emotions are triggered.

Whenever you have a situation in which you notice yourself becoming irritated, upset, anxious, or angry, find a way to be alone and think through or (preferably) write out the answers to the “Steps to awareness” in the left-hand column. Then make plans for the actions in the right-hand column.

	Steps to awareness	**How this can be effective**
A	Attend to your early signals of anger. What do you feel in your body? How do you behave?	You can catch anger before it escalates. When you increase your awareness of the early signals, you can choose how you will react. Annoyance is an early stage of anger.
N	Negotiate with those around you about your anger, not about specific issues. Choose distance and time.	Discuss this strong emotion with your family or friends. Come up with a signal that means you need time out: *Give me five; Grumpy guy alert; I need a break*. Calm down, remove yourself from the situation, and take some time to to reflect. Even turning your back and breathing deeply can be effective.
G	Gear down from taking action and explore your feelings. Identify them if you can. Pay attention to your own triggering thoughts that might provoke anger.	G = Get alone E = Express your emotions A = Analyse your thoughts R = Recognise your needs. Catch negative trigger thoughts and replace them with healing ones. Use your feelings to explore what your needs are.
E	Express your feelings and needs assertively.	When you———, I feel———because————. I want/would like you to—————.
R	Resolve issues if possible. It might be as simple as making a positive request. It might mean engaging in conflict resolution. It might mean resolving the issue within yourself.	Resolving conflicts stops the vicious circle of old issues and patterns recurring. Resolution does not have to be complicated, but it cannot happen without the preceding steps. Often, we need to feel anger to know there is a boundary that needs to be addressed.

Learning to be alone

As you become more discriminating in your selection of friends, you will find yourself lonely at times. It is rare to find the kind of friend who can be there for you consistently and can understand and accept what you have been through. You can still have superficial friendships, however, and I hope you do so, while you look for true friends.

What can help with the loneliness? Well, if you are multiple, you can have friendships within your own personality system (see Chapter Twelve). A pet can also be a tremendous source of companionship for anyone who lives alone or with people who do not understand. Animals, especially dogs, make wonderful companions. They are designed to live in community, to be close to their owners, and to enjoy your presence. It really is true that "a man's best friend is his dog"—or a woman's, or a child's.

But even if you are comfortable being alone, do not close off the possibility of close friendships. Look at your attachment style, and see to what extent it is a result of your childhood abuse and neglect. A close relationship can be very rewarding, and can give you an anchor in difficult times, if there are respect and clear boundaries in the relationship.

This chapter has covered most of th*e important issues in friendships and relationships, but, of course, only briefly*. Many of these issues are problematic for anyone raised in a dysfunctional family, not just for mind control and ritual abuse survivors. Besides *The Parent–Child Connection*, there are also many other helpful books, such as Harriet Lerner's *The Dance of Anger* (2009a); *The Dance of Connection* (2009b); *The Dance of Deception* (2009c); *The Dance of Fear* (2009d); *The Dance of Intimacy* (2009e). For couple relationships, I recommend Gottman and Silver's *The Seven Principles for Making Marriage Work* (1999), and Sue Johnson's *Hold Me Tight: Seven Conversations for a Lifetime of Love* (2008).

CHAPTER NINETEEN

Therapy and therapists

Healing from mind control and ritual abuse takes a long time. It can help to have a companion along the way, especially one who understands what you are dealing with and is caring rather than shocked or disbelieving.

Many survivors of ritual abuse and mind control see therapists. One survivor, who had been to both bad and good therapists, listed for me the benefits of having a good therapist.

- It gives all parts of the survivor the experience of being near somebody who is good, which is an antidote to all the evil they have experienced.
- It is better not to be alone in healing, the way you were alone in the abuse. It gives support, a companion as you enter an unknown world of horror.
- It makes you feel as though you are worthwhile when someone else is this interested in you.
- The therapist can keep you on track, with a relentless pursuit of what is necessary for your healing, when you are tempted to retreat from the pain and horror of what you have to deal with.
- The therapist can record what you remember as you go through it, so you do not have to use any of your own energy or attention for record keeping.
- Since your controllers programmed you to forget every time a trauma occurred, it helps to have a witness to your remembering, someone who encourages retrieving and not flushing away the memories.
- A wise therapist knows how to distinguish what is important from what is trivial, ignore irrelevant information, disinformation and fraudulent information, and focus on what matters.
- A knowledgeable therapist can be more thorough than you would be on your own: asking questions you would be blind to, looking for the root of each problem, the first instance of each programme training, the missing pieces of each memory, the incongruities and inconsistencies which need to be pursued for the information they hold, searching for the insiders who hold each emotional or physical state belonging to a memory, and the words used by the perpetrators when programming your insiders.

However, even without a therapist, you can heal, so do not despair if you cannot afford therapy.

Programmed resistance to therapy

Knowing that therapy can not only help a survivor, but also unmask the secrets of the perpetrator groups, the groups take measures to ensure that therapy is ineffective with survivors of their abuses. They pay special attention to disrupting their victims' potential relationships with therapists.

Here is a story more than one survivor has told me. As a child, her parents took her to see someone she believed to be a therapist, who invited her to tell the story of a recent cult event, giving a visual signal to reporter parts of her that they should talk. She was not allowed to look up at the therapist and see his or her face, until she was told to. The therapist was wearing a devil mask, and raped her.

Many survivors have a similar experience with the family doctor, who is usually a cult member. After the child has been injured, he or she is encouraged to show the doctor the injuries, and the doctor then abuses him or her. The message is “Never tell a doctor when you have been hurt.”

In another type of training, the “therapist” to whom the child is triggered to disclose the abuse tells the child that he or she is crazy for talking about such things, and takes the child to a “mental hospital” or a “loony bin”. In the hospital, people put the child in restraints and administer strong drugs which make him or her feel ill and unable to think. Inmates or staff of the “loony bin” or “mental hospital” abuse the child. The person may or may not be a real therapist, and the hospital may or may not be a real one.

If you are a survivor, you probably have insiders who hold the memories of these or similar experiences, and as a result are afraid of doctors, therapists, mental hospitals, and making disclosures. If you go to a therapist, specific insiders have been taught to bring up these beliefs and the associated memories and fear. Your insiders also bring up reminders of the supposed devices (microphones in your teeth, Satan's eyes or mother's ears on the walls) that tell the abuser group what you have disclosed. These were, of course, just tricks.

You might notice that if you go to a therapist or a doctor, you are unable to look at him or her. Child parts are trained (via the “doctor” or “therapist” with the demon mask) not to look at a therapist, so that the perpetrator group can later impersonate an actual therapist more effectively, since the client does not really know what the therapist looks like.

If a survivor is in therapy and is disclosing the perpetrator group's secrets to the therapist, and at the same time still reporting to the group, the group is likely to impersonate the therapist. When I was seeing my first few ritually abused clients, I discovered that I was being impersonated frequently by a woman who sexually abused these clients. The local cult found a way to get into my office (via a cult member who attended another therapist's sexual abuse survivor group in our shared office building), and one of my clients became very afraid of my office. I had to meet him instead in the coffee shop across the street. Once I worked out what was happening, I asked each client to instruct certain insiders to memorise the appearance of my one crooked finger, and to compare it to the hands of the person they were told was me to see whether it was really me. They quickly learnt to tell the difference.

I had surgery on that finger, and saw a new ritually abused client shortly after the surgery. She kept staring at the bandaged finger, and when I asked her why, she said, “You didn't have that the last time I saw you.” I had never seen her before. The cult was one step ahead of me.

When I moved to a new office that was not shared, with a good alarm system, the cult had to find another office space nearby and pretend it was my office. Then, with a new client, they decided to use a subtler approach. Instead of having “me” sexually abuse the client, they just had “me” do really bad therapy, yelling at the client and accusing her of bad behaviour. It worked, and she fired me, accusing me of doing things that I had not done. In the weeks before this happened, this client told me that she kept drawing my office, and did not understand why.

If there is a chance that your therapist has been impersonated, you can teach all your parts to find some unique thing in your therapist's appearance or voice or manner which the cult group is unlikely to be able to create in the imposter. Do not use anything about the face, as the chances are you will find yourself unable to look at the impersonator. One survivor had a blind insider who could tell the therapist by her smell, although if your therapist wears perfume this is easy to simulate.

Crime Victims or Criminal Injuries funding for therapy is often dependent on you making a police report about the crimes committed against you. Unfortunately, most survivors of organised abuse are terrified of talking to police, often believing many police are members of the perpetrator group. This fear comes from insiders' experiences with uniformed people they believed to be police officers. The group triggers a child to talk to a "police officer" about a memory, usually one in which another person was tortured or killed. The supposed police officer accuses the child of being the perpetrator, arrests the child, and puts him or her in a jail cell with abusive guards and "inmates".

Of course, this is all a setup, a deception to make your child parts scared. Even if some police officers are actually cult members, most are not. However, since many police are trained to be suspicious about reports of ritual abuse, it might be wiser to just report sexual or physical abuse by a relative, since this is sufficient to get therapy funding.

"Don't talk" is the goal of all kinds of programming. So, even if you recognise that your child insiders were deceived about therapists and police all being perpetrators, you still have to cope with the more general "Don't talk" training of your insiders. Many of the kinds of training your very young parts might have received are designed to make sure you do not talk to anyone about the abuse. See Chapter Nine for descriptions of some of this training.

Another common training, especially favoured by military/political mind control groups, is to change the meanings of words commonly used by therapists so that those words instil terror or anger in your insiders. These include such words as "love", "care", "forgive", "think", "light", "life", "truth", and "free". Often these words mean their opposites to some inside child parts. When a therapist or other helper uses such a word, some insiders believe it means what the abuser group meant when they distorted it. For example, "free" could bring back memories of being chained, "think" could bring back the sensations of being punished for thinking, "love" could mean sexual abuse. If this is happening to you, you can try to find the inside children who had this training, and gradually help them to know that things are different now, and these words actually have good, positive, helpful meanings.

Remember that the child parts on whom these deceptions are perpetrated are deliberately kept at the ages at which they believe such things and accept the "proof" of them provided by the abusers. If you attempt to find out what happened to you, the fear coming from these young parts may flood you, no matter how old you are. *It is important to recognise what may be causing this fear, and not let it deter you from finding good help*.

Do bad things really happen when you get into therapy? Well, it depends on who your therapist is. In Chapter Six, you saw how Sally's higher-ups were able to act on their programming and defeat the intent of her first few therapists, who were uneducated about mind control and ritual abuse. In Chapter Seven, you saw the mistakes made by LisaBri's first long-term therapist, who became overinvolved and then abandoned her, and who increased the hostility between LisaBri's insiders rather than helping them all to work together. You might find it helpful to review those stories now, if you do not remember them clearly.

You might have noticed that with both LisaBri and Sally the early therapists had difficulty maintaining clear boundaries, and became overinvolved with their dissociative client. In Sally's case, her system was acting on programming to overwhelm the therapist. There is some evidence that dissociative people do need different (looser) boundaries than singletons (non-multiples) do, probably because they have so many children inside, whose unmet childhood needs emerge when they have a nice therapist. Adah Sachs (2012) researched this and found that therapists who treated DID and non-DID people more frequently offered DID clients time outside normal working hours, outside the office, and during practitioners' holidays. However, with some therapists, unclear boundaries can lead to bigger problems. The following section is a story of what went terribly wrong in a long-term therapy.

Adriana Green: "Downfall"

"This is how some people say goodbye to each other," Derek, my therapist of ten years, says. We sit as still as possible. He pulls the red chair close in front of us, until there is only a small space before our knees touch. He leans forward, kisses lightly, as if a feather has just brushed against our lips.

I'm closer to the foreground than earlier when we were in the midst of memory, yet the other parts of me are still here, watching, waiting what will happen next. He kisses us a second time with his eyes closed. "I can't stop kissing you."

We're dazed.

He opens his eyes. They are bright and shining. He smiles wide until his ears lift. He appears different, younger than his forty-something years.

Our session is coming to a close. We are suddenly too open, as if air falls through us. Derek pushes the red chair back in an angled position, where he begins and ends each session, taking meticulous notes, giving thought to what is needed by the small population that comprises me.

The younger ones are so still, like small statues lined up, each with their own frozen expression, each clutching their part of the story—a line, a tear, an unspoken word.

From the backdrop of my mind, I do not feel threatened, only numbness. I think of father, who held a firm grip on the shoulders and pressed hard on my lips like a blowfish, demanding more than what a child could bring.

I am not fully back, struggle to come forward. I can't yet talk. The others are beside me, the fourteen-year-old in front. She's smitten, more shy than earlier.

She thinks, *he must really love me*.

"Ready to go?" he asks, stands and stretches his arms towards the ceiling. He straightens his tie, his cabled sweater that is askew from the child parts of me that he held earlier in the session, before the kissing. He held the three-year-old, and the one who is six, and spoke with the eight-year-old, but she is too grown up to be held. She would rather tell him about how everyone is doing, because she is the one who sees almost everyone. Once trust took hold, there was little refusal to be embraced, to be loved. They came forward in his consolation, they showed their pain in his presence, their need for human contact—now that danger was gone.

But not all want closeness. Some do not believe in the notion of belonging. They keep far in the distance, and watch.

Lately, Derek has spoken of how the world of therapy is changing; how we are nearing the end of the 1990s towards a new era, a new approach. Now there is a question, an ear to the ground, as to whether therapists should comfort the patient in their arms.

What was once acceptable might soon become grounds for misconduct.

The thought of such change frightens the younger selves. They do not look to me for comfort. They do not consider me as someone that can be relied upon. I am considered the one to watch out for, not to be trusted. For some, I do not even exist.

They do not come out fully at my home, where Adriana, the wife, the mother, lives.

He looks at us, raises his brow. “Make sure the adult is here before you leave. You can have the room for a while to come back. I'm off to have lunch.”

I don't know how long it will take to come back, to unfold and once again fill the space I retreated from earlier.

I'm anxious to take the puzzle home, to make sense of what has happened. *This is how some people say goodbye to each other*. I wonder, is this true? Where? Here, in our country? In Canada?

We curl on the couch and face the door, which stays closed. And then, as if the zoom lens is turned on, I notice more sharply the open knit of the comforter around me, the jacquard pattern of the pillows. I notice the green black broadleaf plant in the corner that climbs to the ceiling, how it takes a turn to the right from where I sit, and travels halfway across the room. I am back in the forefront, yet sense the others are still here with me.

I think about the kissing, try to bring the act, the still warm memory, into focus. But it remains tangled in confusion. I want to believe that the trust is deep enough, that nothing can rock the foundation of safety built over the years.

I remind everyone that we are safe, and tell them, *Derek is not the father. He will not hurt any of us*. None the less, when I pull on my jacket, my hands shake.

The kissing holds different meanings for everyone. I know the younger ones do not understand. They have now left altogether. I walk down the street, two city blocks away from Derek's office.

Someone yells in the corridor of my mind, blots out the traffic, the spray of wet from the road. *You are a fool*. I recognise the voice, the protector—the one that will cut the body, so pain will not be felt; the one that regrets trusting. I am cautious of him, of punishment. His temper flares from the confusion. *Now look what happened. You knew he would change. That is why you kept asking him, will you change?*

The fourteen-year-old is here as well. She interrupts, tells me, “I don't want anybody to be mad at Derek.” Her voice is timid, yet carries a distinct mingling of shame and infatuation. I know she adores Derek. How he came and sat with her, understood her not wanting to be in the world. How she did not want to belong, before she met him. He spent painstaking sessions befriending her. Last summer, she painted her toenails a coral pink, dared to go barefoot in sandals to a session. She did not tuck one foot behind the other to hide them from sight. Rather, she did not mind her feet being noticed.

She was beginning to like the idea of being a girl.

I want to believe that the kissing was only a show of genuine affection. But after all these years, why now the close attention to the lips? I try to shake loose from the spin of surprise. I need to talk with Derek, to make some sense of this push beyond the simple comfort of a held hand, of encircled arms.

And then I wonder, *why do I feel the terrible push to keep silent?…*

I wait for the window of time and space to ask about that which bewilders me.

“Your body is waking after all these years,” Derek says, and stretches his legs out in front of him, crosses his hands behind his head. “You can be more in your body, feel what you might not have before.” I am uncomfortable when he talks about the body, as if it is yet another separate identity—one that is given far too much attention. I do not want to hear the theory, his point of view about where

I am in the process of recovering my sexuality. “Do you notice any changes, Adriana?”

“I'm not sure,” I say. “But I am confused about the time you kissed me.”

He sits tall, his back a straight line to the ceiling, looks at me without speaking, long enough to heed warning. I hear my breath, my heart beating in my ears. Everyone inside is quiet. They draw further inward. But I know they can still hear.

“You remember?” He stands and walks a few feet away from me, then stops. He turns to face me. “Well?”

“Yes,” I say. “I do remember.” I want to shout at him, *How could I forget? Did you not know that I was there, in the backdrop of my mind? Was it not you that explained I would always be there, so that I could understand, so that I could listen?* But instead, my voice fails me.

“What do you *think* the kissing means?”

“I don't know,” I say.

I look in his eyes, but they are flat, withholding.

Humiliation is hot on my face, dampens the palms of my hands.

He stands with his feet together, puts his hands in his pockets. I hear the muted jingle of coins.

“Tell me what you think,” he says.

I think of lips touching, the warm breath that exhaled on the face, the faint smell of washed hair, scent of morning coffee. I think what this means to me, to the others; how still everyone was.

We are not in a country where we kiss on the lips to say goodbye—unless of course we are with family, and even then…

He squints at me as if I am suddenly hard to take in. In this instant I think of father, of avoiding being near him; how I disappeared early in the morning and evening, the time of day that gave justice for a kiss. He was disgraced with my clever escapes, tricked by my ghostly existence.

“I think it was sexual,” I say, but do not know whether I am asking or making a statement.

One look at his face, and I see that a decision has been made as to my perception. The deep lines that cross his forehead are deeper still, his eyes turn from me to the wall as if to say, *enough*. And so I fall quiet. He looks out the window that is fogged with the heat in the room and the cold outside, where only the high branches of winter trees can be seen. Where life carries on the street two storeys below.

I want to yell at him, *You seemed younger*.

Instead, I return to the place where speaking is impossible.

Pain is a rock, hard and round in my chest.

He walks to the other side of the room, near the door, leans his back against the wall and slides down until he is sitting, then draws his knees upward to where he rests his elbows. He runs his hands through his coarse black hair, puts his head against the wall and shuts his eyes.

I dare not breathe.

“I'm depressed,” he says after a long silence, then opens his eyes, keeps his gaze averted, looks out the window again. I don't know how to comfort him. I want to ask him what we can do to make this right again.

He lowers his eyes until they are level with my own, unwavering, and says, “Don't tell anyone. They may not understand.”

My pulse quickens.

I do not know where I can find room for this secret.

He lifts himself off the floor, walks over to the red chair, and picks up his black notebook and pencil off the floor. We are back in our places, therapist and patient. I want to tell him he was not at all like father. There was no wrongdoing. We can make this right. This is what I need to believe.

But he has already made up his mind to let it drop, as if the first part of the session did not exist, and says, “Tell me about your week. What do we need to work on today?” His voice is like cold metal.

I work to bury the image of what he wants me to forget.

At the end of our session he stands and pushes back the red chair. The scrape of wood on carpet is like a reprimand. He puts on his jacket, pulls at the zipper as if he is already standing in the winter air. I get up from the couch, my legs like water, and walk towards the door. He holds it open, stands to the side.

My mind reels with unanswered questions. I need to talk this out, to come to a place of understanding so that we can repair the safety net.

“What now?” I dare ask.

“What do you mean?” He pushes the door shut and faces me.

“I still don't understand,” I say.

“I want you to be careful,” he says. I notice the twitch in his right shoulder, the ever so slight rise. I do not miss the slowed tempo of his words that carry the weight of meaning.

“Of what?” I ask.

“Of what your father did to you, Adriana. What your father did to you is not who you are, but he still may have control inside over what you do. He might be inside of you.”

Stunned, I try to make sense of what he is saying. And then it dawns on me. I know what he's saying. I must be on watch for what lies inside even if it isn't clear. I must be on watch for what can happen under the influence of the past. I wish I could see beyond my fear. My heart beats hard. I can't trust this. I can't risk the hurt it can create. What has happened and what is unknown stir in my stomach like a sickness. I'm terrified—but not for my own safety. I pray in quiet desperation. I pray that harm will not befall my ally from the cost of my actions.

* * *

This is a very disturbing story. In the first many years of therapy, Adriana's therapist, Derek (not his real name) did not exploit her but worked to gain the trust of her younger parts, and they gradually disclosed their memories of sexual abuse in the home by her father, along with her mother's blaming her for this abuse. Derek put himself in a position of the loving rescuer to the little child parts, and physically held them, in an era when therapists were less afraid of being accused of sexual exploitation of their clients. Adriana became very dependent on Derek to help her feel better when emotions or body sensations came up from the abuse, since he was not able to teach her adult self how to work with her own inside parts.

While holding the child parts, it appears that Derek misinterpreted their response to this closeness, since they were in a woman's body, and came to believe that they represented a woman's wanting to enter a sexual, or at least romantic, relationship with him. When he asked what she thought the kiss meant, Adriana gave the answer she thought he wanted without understanding its meaning. Her little child parts had no concept of sexual feelings, but they craved the close cuddling which they had been denied in childhood. The fourteen-year-old had the kind of chaste crush which a young girl can have on an older man. She wanted only to continue the loving, close relationship she had with Derek; she had no concept of sex other than as abuse. They all (except the protector) felt loved by Derek.

You may have noticed that Derek asked Adriana whether she remembered his kisses. It seems that knowing she was dissociative, he was hoping that she would not remember his inappropriate boundary-crossing behaviour.

Although it does not come through in this excerpt, Derek's "memory work" encouraged discharge of bodily sensations without finding the parts who remembered the content of what had happened, so it did not resolve the problems. He did not even know Adriana had experienced ritual abuse, although if he had enquired about what experiences led to these bodily sensations he would have quickly found out.

It was Derek's words that did the most damage. When his own feelings led him to behave inappropriately, he blamed his client, accusing her of being like her sexually abusive father. This resonated with the ritually abused parts, who were told by the abuser group that it was they who were evil once they had been forced to participate in the group's evil acts. Years later, there are parts of Adriana who still believe it is she who is evil, and Derek's accusation is for them the proof of it.

You may notice that Adriana's protector part was aware that people change, having grown up with dissociative parents, and was constantly watchful for Derek changing from a loving, nurturing helper to something else. This part of a person is important, as it often sees the truth that other parts want to deny.

If you have had a therapist become sexual or romantic with you, know that it is not your fault. This is true even if you have a part who has attempted to seduce a therapist. (Some groups programme child parts to do this.) It is always the therapist's responsibility to make sure that the relationship never becomes sexual, and to deal with his or her own sexual or romantic feelings without involving the client or blaming the client.

There is another risk that is worse than inept therapy, and even worse than a therapist sexualising the relationship: that is the risk of getting a therapist who is still part of a perpetrator group. Wendy Hoffman, who is herself a therapist as well as a survivor of mind control and ritual abuse, tells the story of her attempts to deal with her memories with the therapists she has seen over many years. The therapists' names and locations have been changed.

Wendy Hoffman: "My life as a therapy patient"

If I had not sent my child to a specialised private school, been disobedient and fought my cult husband, who was also my handler, launched a successful performance on incest that toured, started one of the first lawsuits exposing incest, mounted a group art exhibition on satanic ritual abuse that attracted the press, went to graduate school without their permission, written a clinical book on satanic ritual abuse that had a publisher who had featured the book in its advertising, tried to help survivors get free of this mind control and abuse—if all that had not happened, then they would not have sent me to their own therapists. I would have been one of their many obedient automatons sent for tune-ups and maintenance now and again, but not for punishment and close-down.

Three cult therapists: a psychiatrist, a psychologist, and a Christian counsellor, in three different cities, reprogrammed me before my last one, Ann, who was a Christian counsellor with a master's degree in education. I will just tell you about my last series of punishments here, for, although the circumstances were different for each set of therapy, the close-down procedures were similar.

Every few months for almost one year, I commuted to this last therapist for week-long intensive therapy sessions. I (that is, my front person) believed it would be excellent therapy with a specialist in ritual abuse who was recommended by one of the leaders in the field. My New York handlers had tricked me into thinking the cult was programming me against Ann. In one of their programming rooms that had torture instruments, and electricity for electroshock and visual effects, they showed me wall-sized photos of Ann with steely facial expressions and changed her name to “Abominable”. That interference persuaded the outside me that she was safe. I remembered and reported this mind control to Ann and she pretended to be outraged. My inside parts, who knew what Ann really was, thought of cheating spouses who feigned to despise the person they were sleeping with, but my front person thought she was sincere.

During the therapy sessions, Ann did something strange with her eyes, moved her hands back and forth, spiralling upward—hand signals that meant “if you ever tell, we will kill you.” In her guesthouse, where I stayed overnight, Ann and her professional partners, Lenny and Marge, drugged, hypnotised, tortured, and threatened me: “If you ever remember this—kill yourself when you are back in New York.” They didn't want any mess on their land in Freeport. And so I was programmed with the foundational cult training that I could never be free of my oppressors and never consciously aware of my programmes and personalities who held the programmes and the structure that embedded them.

Even though other parts in my brain knew what these impostors were up to, they did not tell the rest of me, including my front person. I should not be exasperated with my insiders. They had their reasons. But it irks me that I fell into treacherous hands again. I have searched my mind to ascertain how it happened. Two of my ruler-insiders tell me that they believed that once the cult assigns you to a close-down specialist, it's a done deal. Even if I had been more aware of my inside reality, changed my name, run to another country, disappeared, other parts of my brain were still reporting on me. Until the internal reporters understand the ramifications of what they are doing, there can be no safety.

Drugs and torture take away the ability to think and have a will. Because she had possession of the volumes of my ‘black book’, Ann knew how to draw out and intimidate vulnerable pieces of my dissected brain. “You will never remember, tell or write about what we do or we will kill your only living child, of that you can he certain.” No one inside me doubted it. In retrospect and without the drugs or brain concussion, I can see that it is doubtful they would have taken the chance of killing my daughter. My protective act was most likely for nothing.

Lenny called out my inside babies who couldn't resist his tyranny. “Take your book about cult abuse off the queue, never give it to anyone, it's a finished project. Write to the publisher and say you don't want it published.” His orders went to the adult me but the babies felt the torture and intimidation. He held a gun.

Another time, I was asleep but some parts of my brain heard the guest-house door lock turn, the door open and close, footsteps through the living room and hall. Rita, one of the clients they co-opted, was in the other guest bedroom. Physically strong, she was being prepped to be a torturer. Ann, Marge, and Lenny surrounded my bed. One of them tasered my left nipple and my body leaped a foot or two off the mattress. After injecting my arm, Ann said, “Come forward,” to a young part who held the memory of the original nipple torture. Ann raised her left hand index and third fingers, made a circle with her thumb nail and index finger and pushed her hand toward me, meaning “We will kill your child if you ever tell.” She did the sequence four times and then the two straight fingers one more time. “If anybody tries to help you, don't listen to them. You will never be free, you are only slave material.”

When I was born, my maternal grandmother had put a needle through my left nipple at an initiation ritual. Ann had the record of this torture in my “black book”. On the floor of this Freeport Counseling Center, Marge did the same thing as Ann chanted:

“Snatches, batches, you are a waste,
snatches, batches, you have no face.
snatches, batches, go from this place,

snatches, batches, you are to be erased."

In unison, they all said "a waste." They love to chant and rhyme as they programme.

Ann took me to her church where I learnt about the Baptist beliefs of Christianity. Instead of getting to mind control programmes, parts, and structure, Ann focused on Jesus, demons, human spirits, and spiritual warfare. And in her therapy sessions, Ann liked to slap her thighs four times while saying "lies, trickery, deceit, illusion" over and over, meaning that the cult practised deception and that I shouldn't be tricked. But in group programming sessions at night, she and her entourage used the same movements and rhythmic beat to say "You will never escape, you belong to us, forever and evermore."

In 1993, I lived in New York City, my psychotherapy clients were making progress and I had begun working on a multi-media performance about ritual abuse. In 1994, they commanded me to stop commuting, leave my city, and move to Freeport. If I didn't, I thought they would kill my child. About six months after my move, at an outdoor ritual, Ann showed me the tarot card with the death angel in blue and said that after I got home, on February 4th at midnight, I was to slit my wrists sitting on the seat in my shower and that there was a razor already placed in the bathroom near the sink. I must have handed over a key to my house during a mind control session or someone could have climbed through a window. Although I did feel suicidal, just as they had programmed, one of my internal leaders picked the razor up carefully, another wrapped it in paper towels, and a third inside part threw it in the garbage. My insiders were in turmoil because some of them wanted to take this opportunity to die but others, especially the leaders of my internal world, felt victorious. Despite the elaborate ritual and all the programming, my handlers did not win. My front person's having no conscious memories of this mind control or ritual, I continued in therapy with Ann. She had by now, through hypnosis and drugs, made me emotionally dependent on her.

One day, Ann telephoned me to say that she got word from God that I should watch the movie, *Papillon*. In *Papillon*, two men are exiled to an island surrounded by mountainous cliffs. One figures out a way to escape by diving into the water at the seventh sequential wave. The other man contents himself with being a prisoner by starting a garden on the barren rocks and keeping his mind distracted. Ann and her colleagues drugged and tortured me as the score from *Papillon* played in the background. "You will never escape us. You will always be the man trapped on the rocks. You will never be free of us. God wants that. You will never jump on the seventh wave like the other man. You are caught here with us. It is God's will."

Ann taught that demons held programmes in place and kept the personalities separated; hence the need for deliverances. When an inside part is first coming out, it can feel like a wave rising, almost like levitating. Ann persuaded me that these were not parts of myself, but human spirits and demons or demonised human spirits. She convinced me that the levitating feeling was proof that these were demonic beings inside of me. Ann performed weekly exorcisms to rid me of these "supernatural beings", but what she was doing was closing down the courageous parts of myself that tried to come forward and speak. The hand movements she used during the exorcism gave trigger signals to cult-trained insiders to lock away the part she was talking to in a sealed container. I felt temporary relief after each of these parts was put away and, therefore, believed that I had had a successful exorcism. By the time she finished with me, all the inside parts who knew their and my story had been sent away, and I thought that I had been mostly filled with evil entities.

Whenever I related a memory to Ann, she said "Really?" Once I complained to her that it stopped my process. Without knowing it, I was complaining about the programming. Ann, Marge, and Lenny did not have a special black electrified chair in their offices in Freeport, but they had hand-held electric shock devices with sticky glue and electrodes, and shocked my body as they said to my hypnotised parts, “Whenever you tell anyone anything, they will not believe you and think you're crazy. They will say ‘Really?’ which means ‘You're nuts.’ Protect yourselves by not telling anyone what you know of your past.” Again they employed a combination of settings. In an outdoor ritual in the woods, I lay on the altar with electrodes over my body. Ann instructed me to tell Marge, Lenny, and three of the co-opted ritual abuse victim-clients a memory such as “Ann tricked me into moving here.” I told the same memory to every person, one after the other; the person replied ‘Really?’ and I was electro shocked, then stoned. Drugged, my body frozen and bruised, I almost stopped breathing and stayed in paralysis. Then Ann reinforced the motto of this training: “It doesn't pay to tell people anything because no one will believe you.” I remember feelings of despair that crawled around and never stopped until I ceased remembering who I was.

Another night, I was in the front office of the Counseling Center and Marge had a large pad of paper on a stand. She drew my internal structure on it, outlined the sections in bold black lines which meant I was never to go there, drew arrows by the Illuminati section and said “Never, never enter there on penalty of death.” This Illuminati section is the core of my programming.

Here is some advice from a duped person. When you go to a therapist, your front person could pick up clues: if the therapist makes you feel bad about yourself or if s/he alternates between making you feel bad about yourself and grandiose, then you should be on the alert. If you are chronically angry with the therapist, honour your anger. Your inner people will have the facts, and it would be wise to ask them about what they know about the therapist(s). If they tell you the therapist(s) call inside people out by words, images, hand or foot signals, numbers, or any kind of mind control trigger, or push down or send away parts of your mind, or administer drugs and torture, then you know you are in the hands of a double agent.

Although I am now working with a skilled and trustworthy therapist, I still have scars. Now whenever my honest therapist does anything at all even remotely reminiscent of something Ann and her gang may have said or done or gestured, waves of mistrust sweep over me. The scars of being so tricked have long-lasting tentacles.

After seven years, Ann and her entourage deemed that I was sufficiently closed down and were disgruntled that it took so long. She needed my space for other unwitting survivors making progress in their quests for freedom and was anxious to discard me. But first they had to make sure I would have no future therapy. After all, it is possible to find a safe and helpful therapist.

Right before I was sent away, Ann drugged me and Lenny put a head vice around my now fifty-seven-year-old head, squeezed it more and more tightly until someone agreed to be a seven-year-old girl who was in charge of a whole schoolroom of internal children. “All the children have to be told there's no point in seeing other therapists because they are all Ann. If you need a therapist, you have to go back to Ann. You must never tell anyone about Ann.”

Just before I left Freeport, Ann and her colleagues were in her programming room, which she called a therapy room. They flipped through my black book deciding which memories to flag. They planned to take pieces of crucial memories out and block them so that I would never be able to complete and therefore resolve certain dissociated sequences. She would call out a part of me from a memory, torture and shock that part, and move it into storage in what she called a “morgue”. There the parts remained in cold storage, separated from the other parts of the experience. These programmers considered each memory for selection, and chose important rituals and programming sessions. They left out everything before the age of three, as well as memories that they thought would be too humiliating for me to remember.

They then recruited ten previously created child parts of me to stand guard at the door to this imaginary "morgue" and not let any other parts of my mind enter or leave. Finally, they got a four-year-old part and her helpers to agree to hide a piece of pain from each subsequent abusive event after I left therapy with Ann. Then they beat me up and discharged me. They were sure they had sealed me off for good.

* * *

Wendy's piece speaks for itself. I do not know what percentage of the therapists who specialise in working with mind control and ritual abuse are "plants", but for certain some of them are. If a therapist has been recommended by a family member, be wary. If the therapist has been recommended by another survivor, be wary too, although it is possible that the other survivor has actually found someone competent. Be wary in any case—Wendy's last cult-involved therapist was suggested by a leader in the field, who was not (to my knowledge) a plant. You need to ask your insiders to be watchful, as Adriana's protector part was, and to tell you the truth about any therapist you might consider. It is also wise to help your reporter parts understand as soon as possible how they undermine your safety, so that they will not report that you are on your way to healing.

You might have wondered what happened to Sally ("Old Lady") after the experiences written about in Chapters Six and Eight of this book. She did find a therapist who understood what she was dealing with, and here is what she wrote about it after three years with the new therapist.

Sally's higher-up insiders: "The new therapist"

The new woman was a therapist and so we were supposed to get rid of her too, either kill her or give her a hard time so she wouldn't accept Old Lady. When we kept emailing her, she just set down clear strict boundaries and was not a pushover or scared of us or weak like the other therapists. She was firm, which we liked because we were used to being trained that way. We were intrigued and scared and determined to make her fire us or we would kill her. But first we wanted to see her and test her. Who was she? Why did she want to help us? She told us that she was here to listen to us and learn from us and to help us to be free. Could we trust her? Why should we trust her? Why didn't she appear weak? Why couldn't we push her around? Hmmmmm…she was a challenge, we thought. With each test that we performed to see if she would fire us, abandon us, or even get mad at us, she passed.

We always let the littles come out before any of us higher-ups because they were expendable. If the new therapist was going to trick us like the other therapist or doctor or the bad lady, then she would hurt them, not us. The new therapist did not hurt the littles when they came out, and did not get mad at them. She treated them with respect, like young children who had the right to think for themselves, laugh, be creative, and play and learn. She didn't hurt them or hate them even if they did their jobs. We could see that they were not as afraid any more. They were happy—smiling, laughing, and having fun. This was strange for us higher-ups to see and we wanted it too, but we were torn about being loyal to the cult, and also scared to try something different, even having fun. They shared some information with us so we know we are safer now and can maybe come out too, because none of us really likes being stuck in our memories, or in pain, or doing our jobs all the time.

Some of us higher-ups are scared to come out and talk about this stuff, too, because we don't like being exposed or naked, and we do not like to lose any power. Thinking we have power helps us to stay safe, and feel big and strong and brave like our cult leaders, powerful and bad. But we do not really like to be bad or hurt people. But we still got scared to give up all our power because it was like being naked. So we told her that it was like taking a card from a card house we had made, and the card house was us, and when you take the card away the house falls down. It is gone forever because it's dismantled, every last code and job and secret, and that scares us because then what would we do? And do you know what our therapist said? She said "Why don't you play cards then?" and it made us laugh because it was so funny. We used to have the power to turn on programmes or make the body sick and remember things, but we were really just hurting ourselves for the cult's purpose and not our purpose. Now we have power in a different way, power to do good and help others. This is why we turned the programmes off.

Our new therapist taught us that we are not bad people, we are kids who were messed up and taught to hurt without thinking, but not any more. She kept asking us things that made us think, and it surprised us that we could think. Sometimes it hurts when we start to think because our heads aren't used to thinking. It was freeing for us too, and empowering. We began to question what we were taught, to wonder if what our leaders told us were lies. She asked us to check on the Internet and read books so we could practise thinking for ourselves and judge for ourselves whether what she told us was true or not. We found out that we do have minds and can think for ourselves and make choices without being told we are bad or needing to be punished or killed. She said it was all right to disagree with her, that sometimes she would be wrong because she wasn't perfect. She also would apologise if she was wrong about something or if she hurt us. We were not used to this.

And very soon she began to help some of us work through our memories in a way that all the insiders who had a part in a memory could work through it together, so that we all could relive the memory to be free and feel without being overwhelmed and in pain. Then we could be free and be able to welcome the other insiders and protect them, dress them, or take care of them and start to work together as a football team and then as a family that values mutual respect and democracy.

And we see now that we can think and decide for ourselves what we want to do, like play or sleep or protect the body and the littles, and help others be safe and heal and have fun, so that's why we are speaking today about what we know. Instead of being like a caterpillar, with so many legs that it cannot decide which way to go, we are becoming free like butterflies.

* * *

Transference and countertransference

One of the experiences known to be common in therapy is transference. Transference is the word for what occurs when a client has an emotional reaction to the therapist that actually belongs to a parent or other significant person in that client's life. Transference can be positive or negative. Organised abuser groups make sure you have plenty of negative feelings to transfer on to any therapist you might see. Not only is there the anti-therapy programming I described earlier in this chapter, there are the negative experiences of daily life. Many of your parts have only encountered adults who were rejecting and abusive, or who switched from kindness into abusiveness, so it is natural for them to expect this behaviour from a therapist. It takes time to be sure that someone will not treat you the way the adults in your childhood treated you. So, you are bound to have negative transference to your therapist.

A good therapist needs to be able to detect negative transference and not take it personally, and also to detect when a client is genuinely having trouble with the therapist's behaviour, and be ready to examine that behaviour and apologise if necessary. Even good therapists do make mistakes, and clients perceive them.

Survivors are filled with young insiders who have unmet childhood needs for nurturing, appreciation, comfort, and friendship. If the therapist is kind and caring, these child parts emerge. Some of their needs are too vast to be met in a therapy relationship, because infants need a loving mother full-time, not for an hour or two per week. Healing comes through grieving for what you did not have when you should have had it, not through trying to replace it later in life. Your therapist—and even your partner—will "burn out" if he or she tries to be a parent for your infant parts. A common reaction for therapists working with survivors is feeling like the mother who was unable to protect her child, and becoming overly involved and guilty. This can lead to the young parts wanting more and more, not understanding the limitations of the therapist, who cannot provide the constant availability and physical holding provided by the loving parent of a young child. The parts who were told they were "special" by the perpetrators may also feel entitled to special attention beyond what a therapist can give them. The therapist is unable to set clear boundaries, the programmes to harass the therapist are set off, and chaos ensues. We saw this in both LisaBri's (Chapter Seven) and Sally's (Chapter Six) stories about their therapists.

Countertransference is the word used to describe what happens when a therapist projects something on to a client, reacting to that client emotionally because of a resemblance to someone else in the therapist's life. Whether it is the therapist's own past traumatic experience, or the therapist's present needs, anything projected on to the client is detrimental to the client's recovery process, as you will see. If a therapist cannot acknowledge these projections, examine them, and take responsibility for them, he or she is actually dangerous to the client, at least on an emotional and psychological level. We see this illustrated in Adriana Green's story.

If you do find a truly competent therapist, your recovery can most probably proceed much faster than if you do it alone. There is something wonderfully healing about having an ally who truly cares about you and understands what you have gone through and are going through now. Wendy states that "Just knowing this person is there fortifies the survivor, and the other person's objectivity about what may be the effects of mind control is invaluable."

What I would want in a therapist

I have something to confess to you: I have never been in therapy, except as a therapist. So, I can only imagine what it is like to be a therapy client, just as I can only imagine what it is like to be a survivor of mind control and ritual abuse. However, I have been a therapist for over thirty years, and I have observed what my clients go through. Several of my mind-controlled and ritually abused clients have come to me after years of failed therapy, and I have learnt from what they have told me about what went wrong.

Like every human being, I have needed basic medical care all my life. Recently, I had a bad experience with my primary care physician, who tried to override my concerns and decisions (I had brought a list) in favour of her own. Now, I recognise that physicians know what symptoms to look for, because they have training in recognising serious illnesses, and there is a place for asking about things that the patient might not have considered. But this does not excuse her failing to listen to me, and attempting to refer me for procedures without respecting my opinion, since it is my body and my health being considered.

It made me think about what I want in a doctor. I need that person to be (1) knowledgeable and competent; (2) respectful of me as an intelligent participant in my own healthcare decisions; and (3) kind and compassionate, able to reduce my anxiety and my actual and potential suffering. My doctor needs to listen to my concerns, take the time to answer my questions clearly and respectfully, be reassuring when I am anxious, and explain his or her reasons for tests, referrals, prescriptions, or advice. I need my doctor to know that I, not she, am in charge of my own health, and I will make the decisions, although she is there to assist me. What I want is the basic minimum that is the right of every patient or client. Being a patient who was not heard has given me some insight into what clients and patients frequently go through with therapists, no matter what the therapist's academic training or discipline.

The research shows that it is the character of the therapist that makes the most difference in the effectiveness of therapy. Patterson (2000) summarises:

> The magnitude of the evidence is nothing short of amazing. There are few things in the field of psychology for which the evidence is so strong. The evidence for the necessity, if not the sufficiency, of the therapist conditions of accurate empathy, respect, or warmth, and therapeutic genuineness is incontrovertible…The effectiveness of all methods of counseling or psychotherapy may be due to the presence of a therapeutic relationship. (p. 436)

That is one reason the mind controllers work so hard to try to destroy that relationship.

What would I want in a therapist if I were a survivor of mind control and/or ritual abuse, struggling to free myself of the programmes and their consequences? The first qualities I would want are those I want in my doctor, and in any therapist I would consult about any issue: knowledge, respect, and compassion. In addition, I would want my therapist to be a stable person, emotionally healthy, able to set clear boundaries, tune in to his or her own feelings, and remain grounded while I went through the ups and downs of the recovery process. I would especially want my therapist to care about me, for real.

Knowledge

I stated that my doctor should be knowledgeable. The main way a doctor acquires knowledge is in many years of university training, plus on-the-job supervised training. This is not very different from a therapist. Different therapy professions (psychiatrist, psychologist, social worker, counsellor, art therapist, etc.) have different emphases in their training. I believe it helps to know family systems theory (since a dissociative person is a system), child development, and play and art therapy (since a dissociative personality system contains children), and attachment theory (since the therapy relationship attempts to repair the broken attachments of childhood). Many other theories and skills can be helpful.

Although there are many things therapists can learn during their formal training, no university programme that I know of yet teaches its students how mind control works or how to work with a mind-controlled client. The main way in which I have learnt about these abuses and their effects on survivors is through listening to my clients, listening to the content of what they disclose, and listening to what is unspoken, their agony. A therapist needs to listen with respect, knowing that the only real experts on what a person has been through are the parts of that person. That is still the case, even though I and others have begun to write about what we have learnt and to teach others. So, knowledge in a therapist is deeply intertwined with the ability to listen to what the client is saying and experiencing.

This is not to say that knowledge is not important. If you look at the list of advantages of working with a good and knowledgeable therapist on the first page of this chapter, you will see that a therapist's knowledge about how mind control and ritual abuse work can be very helpful. Someone who understands these matters will not be shocked or overly traumatised by your traumas, or overly intrigued by your multiplicity. He or she will understand about parts having jobs, about symptoms being caused by these jobs, about the lies the abusers tell you, about how a programme training is repeated at different ages, about how a traumatic memory belongs to a whole group of insiders rather than just one—and many other things. The competent therapist may know the road map of this abuse, which you might not be aware of until you meet all or most of your internal parts.

If you do not have such a person available in your area, you might find someone who is willing to learn, both from you and from those more knowledgeable therapists who discuss these matters online and write books and articles about them.

Respect

A recent pilot study by Ellen Lacter and others (2012) looked at the most and least helpful approaches in dealing with ongoing victimisation of ritually abused clients. The participants in the study, who were ritual abuse survivors who were in training to be therapists, said that disbelief and “abusive neutrality” were among the least helpful approaches, while believing the client and understanding the subject matter were among the most helpful. To me the essence of this is respect for the client and his or her experience. Even if a survivor is completely confused about whether or not anything happened, even if he or she is “remembering” things that appear impossible, and even if he or she appears psychotic, it is respect for that survivor which will enable the person to look inside and discover the truths to be found there.

Mind control is a tricky business. I believe each survivor has the right to determine the validity of his or her own memories, while being aware that much of what he or she has experienced might involve deliberate deception. I was fortunate in that the one and only really useful course in my graduate programme was essentially a course in scepticism, a course in which we analysed all the then-current approaches to psychotherapy and looked at their assumptions and their validity. This scepticism has provided a firm base from which to approach the maze of information and disinformation regarding ritual abuse and mind control. As I have struggled to make sense of it, I can assist my clients to learn to think in ways that will enable them to make sense of their own experiences. Listening to the content of what my clients tell me requires me to be both curious and sceptical—believing my clients' experiences to be real, but looking at a larger picture to explain these experiences. That is how I discovered much of the trickery embedded in the programming. I believe a healthy scepticism is a really important quality for a therapist working with survivors, as well as compassion for how it might feel to discover you have been deceived all your life.

One of my major goals in working with survivors of mind control is to free their minds, so that they can decide for themselves what is true and what purpose they want to have for their lives. I do not want to replace one kind of mind control with another. You want to make sure that any therapist you see has sufficient respect for your understanding and your right to make your own decisions. Your therapist should empower you, not rescue you or take away your rights by hospitalising or medicating you against your will.

Stability

Every survivor has some inner parts who are exquisitely tuned to what is going on in the therapist. They notice every sound and perceive every innuendo in the therapist's wording or tone of voice, looking for judgement, or disbelief, or rejection. This is different from parts who are trained to distrust all therapists just because they are therapists. In Adriana Green's story, you see the value of her protector part. Trust these parts in yourself, listen to their messages, and take them seriously.

The survivors I have worked with reported that many of the adults in their childhood were multiple. Anyone who has grown up around adults who are multiple has parts who are looking for switches, or the precursors to switches, when a person who was being kind or attentive suddenly becomes abusive or self-centred. You may notice that Adriana said that Derek "appeared different, younger" when he crossed her boundaries. It is all right to watch your therapist for switches. I always tell my clients that I do not expect them to trust me at first; trust has to be earned. This is nowhere more true than in the therapeutic relationship. I also tell them that I am incapable of switching because there is only one of me, and they can watch me to see whether this is true.

Every therapist is, of course, a human being, and will have times of difficulty and possible inattentiveness when he or she is going through something personal which is unrelated to you. If you notice such things, ask your therapist what is going on, and see how he or she responds. While the therapist is unlikely to tell you the details of what goes on in his or her personal life, it is important that he or she is aware of when it is affecting his/her therapy. You need your therapist to be essentially stable.

You might have noticed in Sally's story that it was very important to her that the new therapist was "firm" and "didn't appear weak", as her higher-ups tested her in various ways. Therapists are only human, and our own fears can be triggered by the fears of our clients. We find this material very disturbing, and we can feel incompetent because nothing we were taught in graduate school gave us a way to deal with the horrors and the complexity of mind control and ritual abuse.

Many therapists run quickly to any easy fix which is offered us by those promoting a "one-size-fits-all" solution, which does not require us to accompany our clients through the living hell they have been in. Many graduate schools encourage students to learn various models of therapy, and apply them to clients regardless of what the clients are dealing with. Many newly trained therapists are afraid to venture out on their own, and follow models or techniques they have learned at workshops uncritically. "If your only tool is a hammer, everything is a nail." This is particularly true when we are anxious. You do not need a therapist whose anxiety and need to appear competent leads him or her to slavishly copy someone else's method. Every technique is valuable only as a tool in the hands of someone who can look at the big picture and choose his or her tools carefully.

Emotional contagion can affect therapists. Over the years, I have observed how some therapists working with survivors have been taken in by the abuser groups' disinformation, coming to believe that there is one gigantic cult that controls the whole world and knows everything, or that therapists' families are in mortal danger, or that survivors (or certain parts of them) are evil and controlled by supernatural forces of evil. You saw how Wendy's cult-plant therapist persuaded her she was filled with demons. Clients can convince therapists of such things, too. Your therapist needs to be able to realistically assess danger without panic, since parts of you may panic easily. He or she needs to offer a safe ground when you feel unsafe.

When I listen to a client, I have to be solidly grounded in myself and in the present, while opening my heart to hear the client's experience. It is a delicate balance. If I am not fully with my client, he or she will know this at a deep level, and will be unable to trust me, and I will be unable to hear what is unspoken, or the deepest reality of what is spoken. If I am not fully in my own experience, knowing the world to contain both good and evil, knowing why I have chosen compassion, knowing everything I have learned in seventy years of living and growing, I will be drawn into my client's panic, and will resonate with it so much that I will be unable to provide a solid ground to steady the client, and I might be overcome with terror and susceptible to believing the lies the abusers told my client.

Compassion

Literally, the word "compassion" means "to feel with". Therapy is, above anything else, a real (though one-sided) relationship, a relationship within which I come to know another person deeply, sense the places where they are hurt or where their growth has been halted, and bring healing to those places. Listening to my client's heart, with my own heart, allows me to detect what is unspoken, and to provide that connection, that attachment bond, without which the wounded young parts of my client cannot come alive and move beyond their trauma. The essence of that bond is compassion, along with appreciation for the survivor's courage and tenacity in pursuing recovery.

One woman saw me for a whole year without speaking in sessions. I observed and connected with each young part of her as she switched, and I spoke what I was detecting in her mind, usually an emotional state. I began to perceive her insiders moving around inside her head; she encouraged me to do this, and I would speak about each one that I saw, what that one felt and what it believed about people. Over time, our relationship has progressed, and now she is working through very early memories of sadistic abuse in a backwoods cult, as well as years of brutal abuse by several family members. Sometimes, it feels as if I can see what she is thinking or seeing when she goes through a memory, as if I am there in her head. Her young parts describe me as "reaching in".

Sometimes, I am with a client who is going through a traumatic memory, and she is unable to cry because of the brutal "don't cry" training. I find myself with tears on my face, although I do not feel weak and helpless—tears because I care about that client and what he or she went through.

Recently, I did an "intensive" with a client—an entire week during which we worked to resolve her mind control memories. The first or second night, I had a dream in which I went down many levels of a waterslide inside a tall building, enjoying the ride, but missed the last two levels because there was a red curtain over them and the water in there was red. I walked down the stairs instead, but then decided to do those levels I had missed. I had to get up to the top of the building and go down a different waterslide in another section of the building to reach those forbidden levels. When I described the dream to my client, she gasped and said that the building I had described was her system structure and the waterslide was the "river of blood" by which we could be transported to the important deeper levels of the structure. My dream guided our work. I had three other dreams that week, all relating to what my client and I had to work on. In the last one, I saw a group of people who were looking together at some pathways, and each of them had brought a different pair of spectacles. As they looked through one another's glasses, they could all finally see the pathway clearly, and what had appeared to be several different pathways turned out to be just one. I believe this is what was happening within my client. It seems that the process of attunement between us allowed my subconscious dreaming mind to gain crucial information for our work together.

It is important that your therapist be capable of connecting with you lovingly on a deep level, connecting with all parts, no matter what feelings and what memories they hold. You have parts who can sense whether or not the therapist is capable of this kind of connection.

Why I choose to work with survivors

I believe we all have the same basic choice in life. Those of us who grow up with poverty or abuse or deprivation can choose to become bitter, and pass on the abuse to another generation, or to learn and grow and turn things around for the next generation. Those of us who grow up with safety and comfort and privileges can choose to take those things for granted, and turn our faces away from the less fortunate, or to take on the challenge of helping others and making the world a better place, even though it will have a personal cost for us. Choosing not to choose means we become blind to whatever evil we see, and make no difference to the world.

I had been a practising psychologist for over ten years when I encountered my first mind control and ritual abuse survivors. Very little of what I had studied had prepared me for this work. Working in the "mental health" system had deepened my distrust in the "medical model", which saw all serious difficulties as illnesses to be medicated away. I could see that my survivor clients were receiving little or no help from traditional mental health services. Could I take on the challenge of finding a way to help? Nobody would have blamed me if I had continued to just do what I had been hired to do, which was provide mental health services to children. But I would know that I had shirked an important challenge.

My survivor clients have enabled me to learn much more about how the human mind works than the few basic and often mistaken things I learned in university. Unfortunately, much of what I have learnt is information that organised perpetrator groups have known for many generations but not shared with the visible "mental health" community. In addition, I have come to know and admire people who have fought bravely against many obstacles to regain control of their own minds and lives. I recognise how fortunate I have been not to have to go through childhood torture and mind control, which could have been my lot if I were born to a different family. I have learnt how to use my "mirror neurons" (some people might call them psychic gifts) to tune in to what was going on in my clients' very complex minds, in order to help them. I consider it a great privilege to be able to work with survivors and to learn from them.

In this work, I have also had the exhilarating experience of seeing miracles happen. I have seen people cured of bulimia or chronic pain in a single day, when we worked through the memory of the events in which this symptom was created. I have seen clients who were weighed down with hopelessness gain new hope, regain ownership of their own lives, and go on to make the contribution they want to make. This is very satisfying.

But the horror never goes away, not for me, not for the survivors I speak with. The things they-you—have endured are at the farthest limits of human endurance. I have to renew my commitment daily in order to not look away from these horrors and be able to reach out a hand to those who have experienced them through no choice of their own.

Exercise 30. Assessing your therapist(s)

The following questionnaire goes into detail about your therapist and your relationship with him or her. If you do not have a therapist at this point, it will give you important questions for assessing any potential therapist.

Professionalism

What special skills or education does your therapist bring to your work together?

Does your therapist seem to you to be a stable, mentally healthy person?

Does your therapist pretend to have knowledge or expertise that he or she does not really have?

Is your therapist consistently reliable (on time, remembers appointments, rarely cancels or reschedules, responds to crises, keeps accurate records, gives you advance notice of vacations, remembers important facts about you)?

Does your therapist answer questions honestly?

Does your therapist maintain clear boundaries?

Has your therapist become over-involved with you, inviting you into his or her personal life, or having more than one kind of relationship with you?

Agenda

Have you agreed with your therapist on the goals of your therapy?

Is your therapist following a set agenda or methodology regardless of where you are at and what you say you need?

Is your therapist more concerned with your functioning than with finding the internal causes of your difficulties, and getting to know your insiders?

Is your therapist only focused on giving practical advice about life?

Does your therapist try to push his or her religion, or dislike of religion, on you?

Whose needs predominate during sessions, yours or those of your therapist? Do you ever feel used?

Danger signs

(A "yes" to any of these danger signs indicates that you would be wise to have serious doubts about remaining with this therapist.)

Has your front person noticed any odd behaviour (such as hand signals) which might indicate that your therapist is involved in an abuser group?

Does your therapist's office contain items (such as pictures or magazine articles or particular dolls or toys) that appear to be triggers for some of your insiders? (This could be deliberate or accidental.) If so, does your therapist readily remove the items when you tell him or her about your discomfort?

Ask your insiders whether any of them have seen or heard your therapist do or say anything that would indicate he or she is involved in an abuser group. Has he or she called out insiders, or pushed them inside, through abuser-created triggers?

Has your therapist ever been sexual or romantic with you, overtly or covertly, told dirty jokes, or looked at your body or touched you in inappropriate ways?

Has your therapist ever used or threatened to use physical force with you?

Has your therapist ever spoken highly of cult practices such as members wearing beautiful clothes or admiration for people in high rank? Has he or she ever seemed envious of cult rewards and pay-offs?

Have any of your insiders seen your therapist at rituals?

Does your therapist see you as sick or "mentally ill" rather than mentally injured and traumatised?

Do you find you are chronically angry with your therapist?

Does the therapist make you feel grandiose (too special) or ashamed and really inadequate?

Has your therapist ever shamed you, humiliated you, or put you down? Do you feel that he or she looks down on you?

Does your therapist blame you if you are not progressing in therapy?

If any of these things have happened, are there any indications that your therapist has been impersonated (as I was) by a cult member? If so, how can you learn to tell the difference between the real and the false therapist, and how can you avoid this happening again?

Do different parts of you have different kinds of experiences with your therapist? Ask inside and do not take silence for an answer. Does your therapist have more than one way of being? Do you have parts who remember being abused by the actual therapist, not an impersonator, as Wendy was?

Therapeutic relationship

Does your therapist make you dependent on him or her for rescuing or preventing self-harm or relieving your painful emotions, or encourage dependency in more subtle ways?

What kind of transference do you have with your therapist? Do you see him or her as the all-powerful saviour, or as just a well-intentioned human being?

Do you react to your therapist as if he or she were one of your parents, or one of your abusers? What behaviours of your therapist trigger this reaction?

How does your therapist respond when you test him or her? Do you dare test him or her?

Has your therapist ever reacted to you, or to something you have done, from a transference of his or her own? If so, did he or she own up to it and apologise?

Does your therapist respect your decisions, even if he or she disagrees with them?

Is your therapist a good listener, able to listen to all parts of you and gain an accurate understanding of what you are communicating?

Do you feel that your therapist is truly with you during the sessions?

Can your therapist admit to mistakes and apologise sincerely?

Does your therapist show compassion for the hurt parts of you?

Does your therapist's body language match his or her words?

Is your therapist resilient, able to remain strong and not panic when you may be panicking?

Effects of programming

Do any of your insiders have programmed reactions to any words your therapist uses? If so, discover which words, and what these words mean to them.

Do you find that your insiders' training to fear therapists, or to fear disclosures, is making you unable to trust a therapist who might be trustworthy?

Do you experience physical pain or extreme fear while making disclosures to your therapist?

Expertise with multiplicity

Does your therapist understand multiplicity and switching? Does your therapist notice when you switch and bring it to your attention?

Does your therapist accept all of your insiders, no matter what they believe about themselves and no matter what they may have done or been forced to do?

Does your therapist speak respectfully to insiders?

Does your therapist have favourites among your parts, liking some and rejecting others?

Does your therapist encourage you to reject or isolate those of your insiders who are loyal to the perpetrator group, are named after perpetrators, or believe themselves to be evil?

How does your therapist react if your immature or needy parts come out?

How does your therapist react if your angry or aggressive parts come out?

Understanding mind control and ritual abuse

Does your therapist have a good understanding of what mind control and ritual abuse are?

If not, is he or she prepared to do the hard and time-consuming work of learning about these things?

Does your therapist understand why your parts might feel they have to do their assigned jobs?

Does your therapist recognise when your feelings or behaviours indicate you are acting on programming?

When working with memories, does your therapist understand about involving all the parts of you, all the emotions, and all the sensory experiences including especially the “sound track” and what was said?

Is your therapist astute enough to help you detect the deceptions in what you experience or were told by the perpetrator group?

Does your therapist respect and appreciate your survival, your coping, and your desire to recover and to have a meaningful life?

Does your therapist respect your despair and not wanting to have lived?

So, is it worth it to have a therapist? You can see from all the examples that it can be very harmful, mildly harmful, mildly helpful, or very helpful indeed. It depends on the therapist and the relationship. If you do find a therapist who is able to provide the support and insight that enable you to work with your personality system to undo the mind control, it will speed up your recovery process immensely, as you will not be alone in it. If you can afford therapy, I believe it is worth the search for the right person, despite the risks.

Looking at all your answers to this exercise, are there issues that you need to raise with your current therapist, if you have one? Do you need to seek a new therapist? Or if you do not have a therapist, would it be a good idea to look for one? If so, what professional knowledge would you like your therapist to have? What personal qualities would you like your therapist to have? Can you afford a therapist? What funding options are open to you? Is it possible to find a therapist in your location who meets your criteria? What, if anything, do you need to do about finding a good therapist? Do you need to relocate? (See Chapter Nine regarding the risks and benefits of relocation.)

I am hoping this chapter has given you ways to evaluate both your present therapist, if you have one, and any potential therapist you might consider. It could also give you guidance as to how to treat your selves if you have to be your own therapist. Perhaps some strong insider in your personality system would like to take on the therapist role for other parts. If you have to be your own therapist (because you cannot afford one, or because no one suitable is available in your location), what have you learnt about how a therapist should respond to your different parts and their experiences?

CHAPTER TWENTY

Overcoming spiritual abuse

I am not myself a survivor of mind control or ritual abuse. I can only imagine what survivors have been through when they tell me about it. I had to stop frequently while writing this chapter, because the horror of the events I discuss here overwhelms me. What does it mean for me to live in a world where these things happen? And for you, what does it mean that you were there and had to undergo these experiences?

This chapter contains graphic detail which can cause memories to flash back, including some that bring on considerable guilt and shame and possible self-hatred, so make sure you have parts inside ready to put away any memories that come up, until you are ready to deal with them (See Chapter Ten, "Dealing with triggering".)

Throughout your childhood, and possibly throughout your life, survivors have experienced an extraordinary amount of abuse, exploitation, and betrayal. You have seen the worst horrors known to humanity, perpetrated by human beings who might even have been your care-givers when you were a vulnerable child. And you have been forced to participate in those horrors as a perpetrator. What you have endured is a hidden holocaust (a term I first heard from survivor Anne Earle). The horror is what makes recovery take so long, and go so slowly. There are no shortcuts to recovery.

Am I evil?

I have heard this question many times from survivors. Sometimes, it is not phrased as a question, but just as a statement: "I am evil." It is often followed by "God hates me. I am going to hell." These beliefs are deeply ingrained in survivors, particularly of ritual abuse. There are two reasons for this, one true, one false. The false reason is the things the abuser group told you, and the scenarios they set up to make you believe these things. The true reason is that evil was committed, and you were made to be part of it. Every survivor has to come to terms with this.

The guilt and shame of every abuse survivor

Mind control and ritual abuse universally include sexual abuse. The sexual abuse alone is enough to bring on considerable guilt and shame in survivors. E. Sue Blume (1991) describes some of these effects. (Note that although Blume says "she" for the victim and "he" for the abuser, it could be the other way around.)

> Many survivors of childhood abuse draw a simple inference from their experience: “If all of these bad things happened to me, then I must be bad; if I didn't fight and scratch to the death, I must be responsible.” This is truly *survivor guilt*: “If I lived, I must not have done enough.” And in her guilt, she turns her anger on herself, removing it from her abuser and blaming herself…
>
> The child victim of incest feels *soiled* and *spoiled*. She feels contaminated by the dirty act of incest that she “permitted” or even “asked for.” Because the event(s) occurred in childhood, while her self-esteem and her identity were still developing, and often before she was even verbal, these feelings weave their way into the very fabric of her being…She grows up feeling as if something inside is putrid, disgusting…Simultaneously she feels both bad and responsible. (pp. 111, 112–113)
>
> Although powerless to stop the abuser, the child believes that somehow she should have been able to stop him (p. 110)
>
> By blaming herself, the incest survivor blocks her awareness of her victimization. “I was not *abused*,” she tells herself, “it was *my fault*.” (p. 108)
>
> And if, God forbid, her body responded in any way with arousal, even as the rest of her wanted to puke from the violation, then she must have *loved* it, the most awful guilt of all. (p. 109)
>
> The child victim of incest often sees herself as a participant rather than a victim…Actually, in incest one person is active and one passive, one dominates and one acquiesces. The incest survivor herself often fails to make this distinction…The alternative would be even more difficult to face: *powerlessness*. It is less threatening to see oneself as somehow responsible and, therefore, guilty than to admit that one has been basically powerless and, therefore, the victim of a situation out of control. (p. 110)

Over the past thirty or so years, society has come to recognise that adults having sex with children is abuse. However, when adults sexually abuse children, they frequently blame the children for being seductive or wanting the relationship to be sexual. And, if a child's body responds, the adult points that out as proof that the child wanted this to happen. It is likely that your sexually abused child parts still feel very dirty and contaminated, especially if abusers told them it was their fault.

Perpetrators who abuse children physically and emotionally also blame and shame them. Children believe they are being hit because they are bad, or did something wrong. The words of verbal abuse stick in their minds, and they believe those words rather than recognising that there is something wrong with the adults who speak or shout the shaming words.

Physical, emotional, and sexual abuse are common in the homes of mind-controlled and ritually abused children, so those of their insiders who live daily life in the family home often believe themselves to be dirty, bad, stupid, and whatever they have been called. But more sinister things happen in the hidden part of survivors’ childhoods.

Forced perpetration

Probably the worst spiritual abuse for victims of abuser groups is being forced to take part in both physical and sexual abuse, especially killing of animals and real or apparent killing of infants and people. Ritually abusing cults engage in sacrifice of animals and, sometimes, people, including the “Black Mass”, in which the flesh of the sacrifice is devoured by the cult members. Racist groups murder members of despised groups. Most mind-controlling groups force children to take part in these events as perpetrators.

Initially, an adult holds the child's hand around a knife and makes it stab the victim. By a certain age, the group requires children to do this without adult assistance. Parts who refuse are discarded, and the coercion continues with the child being tortured until he or she fully realises he or she cannot resist. Finally, a part is split off who will do the stabbing without being physically forced. The adults similarly assist each child to participate in rapes. For a girl, this is done with objects. The group splits off successive parts until they get one who will perform the act, often with little or no understanding of what he or she is doing.

Group members are expected to take part in sacrifices, rapes, and murders on a regular basis. Some of the murders are no doubt simulated, but they are real to those who are forced to participate in them. Persons who steadfastly refuse to perpetrate have to watch others harm someone or kill an animal, and are told it is their fault. “Kill this rabbit or we will kill your baby brother” is the kind of forced choice a child must make. He or she might have to choose which other child will be sacrificed.

Perpetrator groups also set up simulated “psychic killings”, leading children (and later, adults) to believe they have the power to kill psychically. They make a child angry, then show that child someone he or she can kill psychically. The victim appears to die, and the child is told that he or she succeeded in killing that person, and has special powers that can at any time destroy people's lives. When someone in that child's life dies or becomes seriously ill, the child is told that he or she caused it.

A note about psychic abilities: my belief, after having had such experiences myself and reading several books about the research on these, is that psychic abilities such as telepathy and clairvoyance are natural abilities. Many animals as well as people have such abilities. However, in most people they are weak and inconsistent at best. If you want to know more about the scientific investigation of psychic abilities, you might read Chris Carter's *Science and Psychic Phenomena: The Fall of the House of Skeptics* (2007). He has also written similar books on the scientific evidence for near-death experiences and the afterlife (2010, 2012).

Wendy Hoffman says, “extreme suffering makes one more psychic and enhances one's natural ability. As soon as we were born and before, we were on the alert for danger. So existing on the non-earthy realm was second nature and practiced”. At the same time, perpetrator groups lie to children about the psychic killing as well as about actual killings.

Some survivors have an added horror. Women often give birth to infants who are sacrificed at birth (sometimes by their own insiders), or kept hidden and later sacrificed. According to Stella Katz, a former cult trainer, each girl (aged 11–13) in a Satanic or Luciferian cult is made pregnant and required to sacrifice her first-born male child. These groups also use “disposable” children, who are raised in secrecy for a few years and then sacrificed. Children of cult members are encouraged to form their first permitted friendships with disposable children, and then forced to sacrifice those children.

Stella has shared this story from her own life, as an acknowledgment of what she was forced to do as a young girl and a tribute to the (other) victim. She states that Miranda was a disposable child bred within her group, and was used to train Stella in sacrifice, by being the sacrifice. (Caution: If this personal story is too much for you, you can skip to the next heading.)

Stella Katz: “For Miranda”

This is for you Miranda, and for all the other Mirandas who came before you and who have come after you. May your souls be forever at peace.

Miranda was four years old when she died on an altar of Satan, at the hand of her five-year-old friend.

The only difference between Miranda and the other little girl was the family she was born into. The five-year-old was fortunate, or not so fortunate, depending on the way you look at it, to be born to a family of the inner circle. She was destined to be “great” and was groomed to be so, and Miranda's death was part of this hideous grooming. Miranda was born to the lower circle. From the moment of her conception she was fated to die. She was probably conceived during an orgy, paternity unknown. Her birth would have been at home, or in the home of another coven member. She would never have seen a doctor unless he was of the coven, or anyone, for that matter, outside the group. She never went to nursery school, or the zoo, or any public place. No outside human being would have known of her existence.

From the moment of her birth she was neglected and abused, physically, emotionally, sexually, and spiritually. She was given only the bare necessities of survival. She was never allowed to associate with other little children or have any kind of friends. About six months before her death, she was, for the first time, allowed to have a little friend. The bond created between these children was unbreakable.

For those six months the friendship was encouraged in every way, and it flourished, neither child knowing what was to come. When someone is starving to death, and food is offered, they do not often stop to ask the cost. When children are deprived of love, any affection is welcomed. When that child suddenly has someone, the bond that is created is everlasting.

For Miranda and her little friend, the bond that was created was nothing more than a deliberate cruel joke. The children were told that something special is coming, and that they are to be a part of it. They got excited as children do, talking and whispering and giggling about what it might be. As the day approached, they were primed and pumped and hyped up, just like children anticipating a special gift from Santa.

On that special day, they were bathed in sweet-smelling soaps, and covered in sacred oils. Their hair was neatly curled and groomed and their bodies were painted with sacred symbols.

For those six months, they had been inseparable. And now they were to join in a big celebration at which they would be the honoured guests. They were dressed in ceremonial garb, the little friend in white satin, and Miranda in a beautiful red chiffon dress, all soft and flowing. She looked like a princess and felt, for the first time in her little life, like someone special. Her blonde hair fell in ringlets flowing gently over her shoulders and down her back. Hand in hand, Miranda and her friend were led into the centre circle by the High Priestess. The bell rang nine times, and chanting began. The High Priest began the offerings, and then, after what seemed like forever, he picked up Miranda and carefully placed her on the altar. Her hands and feet were bound, and as the fear welled up inside her, she began to cry. The priest then picked up her little friend and held her as she knelt beside Miranda. When Miranda saw her friend she immediately quieted and smiled. The priest picked up the sacred athame and placed it into the hand of the little friend.

Holding her hand in his, he raised her hand, and, with one swift thrust, pierced Miranda's heart. Miranda looked up at her little friend and smiled through her pain and tears, and said, “You was my friend”, and died.

The little friend was left kneeling on the altar at Miranda's side holding the knife with the blood of her friend dripping off the end of it, knowing that she had just killed her best friend. The High Priest picked her up again, and raised her to the crowd, and said, “You are forever ours.” They cheered. She was passed around the circle and praised. The shock of what had happened was so great she couldn't even cry.

Well, Miranda, thirty odd years later, your friend is finally crying and canot seem to stop. There are too many Mirandas. There are TOO many children that society doesn't know about, or care to know about. They turn their heads away and pretend that this stuff just does not happen. And worst of all, some are claiming that our memories of Miranda and kids like her are false.

Well, Miranda, I know that you existed. I know that my memories are very real and so were you. I promise to you here and now that as long as I am alive, the world will know that you and others like you are not figments of our overactive imaginations. And Miranda, I swear to you that the voice I silenced so long ago, your voice, my friend, will scream through mine, until somebody finally hears, and puts an end to the slaughter of all the little Mirandas.

No one on this earth will ever tell me that you never existed. Be at peace, my little friend.

* * *

Stella's tale of her little friend not only shows the horror of forced perpetration, but exposes the horror of the brief lives of unregistered children, born into cults and kept for a few years solely for the purpose of sacrifice. In some groups, each cult child destined to live is paired with a "friend" whom he or she has to sacrifice, as Stella did. Besides forcing a chosen child to participate in a killing, this experience teaches him or her never to make friends. And, of course, this initiation is designed to make that child believe that he or she is evil and a killer, acceptable only to the cult.

(Caution: Here is another horrifying story which you can skip if you choose to.) My most personally traumatic experience in all the years of working with ritual abuse survivors happened when I discovered that one of my clients had an unregistered five-year-old child. The client's reporter part told the group that I had found out, and she was forced to kill the little girl before anyone could locate her. She had to work through this very recent memory with me. The part of her who performed the killing had already integrated with the mother part and was aware that this was her own child. The group told her to perform the sacrifice quickly, and when she refused, began to cut parts off the child, killing her slowly, until the survivor did what she had to do to end her daughter's suffering. As the therapist she had told about the child (before she or I knew about her internal reporter parts), I felt guilty and responsible both for the murder and for my client's having to endure such a devastating trauma.

How does a person come to terms with having experienced such things?

Women and men who continue to be cult-involved while parenting find they have raised cult-involved children who have been abused and programmed, and who will carry the horror on to their own children. Some military/political mind control survivors discover they have been programmed to carry out assassinations, and have done so, and they, too, might have involved their own children, or recruited other children, for the purposes of the group who abused them.

As survivors come to awareness of what they have experienced, it rocks their view of the world, of humanity, and of themselves. It rocks therapists' view of the world, too.

Survivors must face massive guilt and shame for having been forced to participate in rapes, murders, and cannibalism, which to them are very real, whether or not there was trickery involved. For this, they often feel they are too evil to be forgiven, even by a "higher power".

Shaming of victim-perpetrators

After a victim is made to participate in an act of evil, the people in charge put a lot of energy into convincing that child or adult that he or she is evil and a perpetrator rather than a victim, just like them. The perpetrator adults tell the children that God hates them and will punish them because of the evil they have done, that they are children of the devil and belong only to the coven and to the devil, that they are going to hell, and their only choice is whether they will be hurt there or will hurt others.

This indoctrination, combined with forced perpetration of acts of extreme cruelty, serves to make such children believe they are different from the rest of humanity in the extent of their evil. They are certainly different in what they have experienced.

Ritually abusive groups also convince children that something evil has been put inside of them. For example, a child is made to believe he or she has a "black heart"—seeing the abuser holding an animal heart and then feeling severe chest pain while it is supposedly inserted. In "brain transplants", the brain of an abuser or of a despised animal such as a rat is supposedly put into the child. Children are told that they are demons or monsters or aliens, or internal copies of an abuser whose "seed" has been implanted by rape.

A programme for flooding of offender memories is set off when a survivor begins to remember the abuse. The survivor suddenly finds himself or herself remembering being the perpetrator of all kinds of horrible acts, and wanting to die because of it. If you have experienced this, know that some insider is acting on his or her programming, making you remember bad things you were made to do without giving you the important information about how you were made to do it and what alternatives you had, if any.

Simulated religious scenarios

Ritually abusive groups are religious organisations, in service to their deities. They resort to trickery to convince their victims that their beliefs are true. They simulate religious scenarios for the children they abuse to make the children believe that the only way to be safe in life is to worship their deity and become a lifelong member of their group. Some genuine, above-ground organised religions do similar things, but not to the same extent or with the same degree of deliberate deception.

The ritual abusers use scene settings and costumes taken from traditional religious imagery to make children believe they are in heaven or hell, and in the presence of God, Jesus, Satan, Lucifer, or other supposed religious figures.

God, Jesus, and heaven

Children are drugged to the point of passing out, placed in a coffin, in some cases buried, and told they are going to die. They awake in a place they are told is heaven, with staged scenery that looks like traditional images of heaven.

God is represented by an old, white-bearded man. Depending on the effect the perpetrator group wants, he might rape a child, or he might verbally abuse that child, telling that child how bad and evil he or she is, that he (God) will never accept the child, and that the child must go to hell for his or her crimes.

Jesus is represented by a younger bearded man who dresses in a robe like the traditional pictures of Jesus that children might have seen in Bibles or on the walls of churches. He might turn his back on a ritually abused child, spit on the child, or rape him or her. He might be tied to a cross, and the child forced to stick a spear into his flesh. Or the child might be tied to the cross, sometimes upside down, and Jesus, along with his followers, tortures that child.

Many cult rituals, including the Black Mass, which includes cannibalism, are conducted in churches. At Christmas time, members of ritually abusive "Christian" cults sacrifice a child who may be said to be the baby Jesus.

I have heard of priests being in charge of the rituals, conferring "forgiveness" through raping the "sinful" child. Because of this, some survivors are very afraid of the notion of forgiveness.

Costumed perpetrators who say they are God or Jesus rape children to make new parts, who are given the job of making the victim remember the rape and the words the abuser said. Sometimes these parts are given the name of "God" or "Jesus".

If you hear the voice of "God" speaking to you, investigate further, but please do not assume it is actually the creator of the universe! It is probably one of two things: (1) a memory of someone who impersonated God, or (2) an insider who has the job of saying "God's" words to you. Do not believe or do what it says, but if it is an insider, speak with it and learn more about its job and why it does it.

Abuser groups use very bright interrogation lights, saying they are shining the "light of God" on the abused child, to make him or her terrified of God. One survivor's inner children all have their eyes closed when they come out because of their fear of the light.

When your inner children experience extreme terror in hearing someone talk about God, it is likely that they are remembering the "God" they had to deal with in the cult. They might also react to religious organisations, buildings, and symbols.

Child victims being tortured are told to pray to God or Jesus to rescue them from torture, and when they do, nothing happens. The cult group mocks them, saying such things as "God doesn't want you", or "See, your God has no power, Lucifer has all the power." Then they are told to pray to Satan or Lucifer, and someone in that costume comes to help.

Angels are also frequently simulated in abusive religious cults. Persons disguised as angels abuse children. In some Kabbalah-based cults there is a blue angel (the angel of the sunset) at the end of each pathway (a very stressful experience for a child), who offers the child peace through drugs. This is part of programming the child to take a drug overdose to reach that peace—and die. If you begin to see or imagine a blue angel who invites you to come to it, tell all your insiders to run fast in the other direction: this is a trick put in by the abusers to get people who are remembering and telling too much to kill themselves. Then ask who inside is showing you the picture of the angel, and when they were taught to do that. "Angel of the sunset" programming begins very young, so it may be coming from very young insiders who do not realise it was a trick. Secrecy is so important to abuser groups that they want to make sure that those who remember die by their own hand before they can disclose the secrets.

For many survivors, Christian beliefs (such as God forgiving) and words (like "Suffer the little children to come unto me") have been so perverted that they cannot even be heard. So, if your outside adult is a Christian, make sure that for the insiders "forgive" does not mean "rape", and "God" does not mean a sadistic abuser. Until your insiders can recover from their terrified reaction to these words, you can use different words for the ideas, and teach your therapist to avoid trigger words. Instead of God, you (and your therapist, if you have one) can say "the compassionate life force" or the "great spirit"; instead of "forgive", you can say "understand and accept".

Satan, Lucifer, and hell

Ritually abusive groups give children heavy doses of drugs, place them in coffins where they pass out, and revive them in a place they are told is the afterlife. It might be "heaven", as discussed previously, or it might be "hell", a place with darkness illuminated by fires, and people in demon costumes with pitchforks and instruments of torture. I have heard of both outdoor and indoor simulations of hell, but please know they are simulations.

Lots of programming goes on in simulated hell. In "hell", the victims are tortured as punishment for their "crimes" and/or are made to participate in torturing others. They are told their destiny is to go to this hell, they cannot escape it, and they have to choose between being tortured there and becoming torturers. Painful rituals are conducted in “hell”. Those children wanting to be safe in this life and the afterlife through loyalty to Satan or Lucifer may have to sign “contracts” giving their souls to those beings.

Many more scenarios are set up to make children (and, therefore, the adult survivors they become) believe in the reality of demonic beings. In Satanic or Luciferian groups, demons are simulated through various means, including puppets, films, and costumed people. According to Stella Katz, when a child is three or four years old, people in demon costumes sexually assault him or her, tell the new inside parts split off by these rapes that they are demons or devils, and teach them how to behave in these roles. If you hear the voices of demons or devils, they are likely to be these little child parts of you talking or thinking.

In addition to the Judeo-Christian God and demonic entities, perpetrator groups also simulate ancient Egyptian and other deities. Military/political mind control groups simulate “gods” (for example, wearing togas and standing in misty places) to tell insiders their “true purpose in life” and lead them to believe they are serving the divine when they do the group's bidding.

It is important for you as a survivor to realise that you probably have children inside who believed all these things to be real. Many of them may still be “stuck” in these scenarios: for example, terrified of God and wanting to die, or believing they are already dead and are in hell. It is important to gently bring those child parts into safe places in the inner world, then gradually introduce them to the real, present-day world, where these things are not happening and they can begin to experience some of the good things in life, and eventually to help them work through their spiritual abuse memories so that they can be free of their overwhelming terror, guilt and shame.

Exercise 31. Identifying religious trickery

Ask your insiders about the following religious experiences. Ask for an observer who can tell you and the other insiders what really happened (look for zips in the Satan suits, Halloween costumes and masks, the trick which made the devil appear out of the fire).

God
Jesus
Baby Jesus
Jesus on the cross
Other gods
Angels
Other spirits
Dying
Burial
Resurrection
Heaven
Hell
Forgiveness
Damnation
Anything else
Voices inside saying they are God, Satan, Lucifer, other deities
Insiders with those names

Gaining perspective

It is important for both your front person and your system leaders to recognise that the gods and demons your insiders have seen were all fake, staged and simulated through trickery, even though the little ones inside might believe they were real. The evil was real, but the creatures and entities they saw were not; they were humans, or technologically created to appear real. The crimes of rape and torture and murder might have been real, but the circumstances that made you participate in them were those of deception, cruelty, and inescapable forced choices.

Mind control and ritual abuse survivors tend to believe that they are more evil than any other person, and unforgiveable. Before you judge yourself too harshly, it is important to become aware of the whole context of the things you remember which make you feel evil.

Your discarded and "garbage kid" parts will remember your attempts to refuse to do the evil that was demanded of you. Look for these insiders. For every insider who stuck a sharp stick inside a vagina, plunged a knife into a living body, or took "communion" with the heart of a sacrificial victim, there are usually several who refused, and were severely punished, one after the other, until a new one was created who would commit the required act, often without understanding its significance. Even in events where it appears that one insider performed an act of unspeakable cruelty, it is likely that the insider had previously been split from another, who had been split from another, who had in turn been split from another, so that the eventual product was a part who was out of touch with his or her humanity and believed the adults' lies.

Let me give you an example. Many groups have an important initiation ritual in which a twelve-year-old child has to kill on his or her own, without someone else's hands using the child's hands to perform the killing. I recently worked through the memory of this event with a survivor. This survivor begins with reliving the bodily aspects of the emerging memory, and only explains the story later. I watched in horror as she choked, seemingly to death, losing consciousness three times. Finally, a new part emerged who suddenly sat up and announced, "I'm the new one, I came from the dead one, I can kill." After I had introduced myself to the new one, the survivor told me that her whole system had rebelled against this killing, with the result that the "killer" refused to do it. She was punished by being buried alive, and what she was reliving was the experience of choking to death from dirt in her throat, then being revived after a new part had split off. My sense was that her whole system, including her core, recognised that the punishers were not going to allow her body to remain dead, but they would persist until they got a part who would do the evil that they wanted. "The new one" asked me whether I hated him because he had killed.

The mind-controlled child is frequently given "lesser of two evils" choices. All of these choices, and the resulting perpetration, are memories I have watched survivors in agony work through:

"Take your part in the ritual, or we will go out and find everyone you love and kill them."

"Kill this rabbit, or we will kill your little brother."

"Stick this poker into this girl, or we will stick it into her and into you as well".

"Kill your child quickly, or we will kill her slowly and painfully."

Survivor therapist Wendy Hoffman writes,

> My job as an Illuminati princess was to choose the infant to be slaughtered. A man held three infants up. "Choose one or we will kill all three," he said. I froze and did nothing. This standoff went on for a few minutes. Someone inside me said "Be sensible". An eight-year-old male came forward. Older females inside me whispered to him which one to choose based on whom they thought was the least likely to survive. This setup was frequent. As time went on, someone jumped out sooner.
>
> My friend Jeannette, who lived across the street and who did not attend school, had already been sacrificed when she was sixteen in a ritual in the woods adjacent to our families' properties. Her strong, robust brother was a little younger than her. They were both blond with blue eyes. The members strung him up on a crucifix and were bleeding him slowly at the same ritual site. His blood dripped from his ribs into a bucket. He went in and out of consciousness. In a black robe, I lay on the ground, on my stomach with my hands tied behind my back. Someone was stepping on my back as he whipped me. His foot moved closer to my neck.

> "Say you worship Lucifer.
>
> "Say you worship Satan.
>
> "Say it now or we will start skinning."
>
> I didn't want to and I could get stubborn. For minutes, I resisted. Minutes during torture is eternity. Then several things happened all at once. I could not take the pain, I saw Jeannette's brother's glazed eyes and someone inside said to me, "This is ridiculous." A chorus of girls who were about eight years old jumped out together and said, "We worship Lucifer. We worship Satan." My father looked pleased. They untied my wrists and let me stand, then they swiftly stabbed the brother.

Some mothers are told that their children will be killed unless they abuse them sexually and physically. Others are made to choose between personally abusing their children or having their children taken away. One survivor wrote to me, "I told them that I would not abuse my children. They told me that the only way that this could happen (me not abusing my children) was for my children to be taken away. I agreed to this, thinking that this would save them from abuse. It was arranged that my husband kidnapped my children and I was unable to get custody. I realised decades later, when I recovered my memories, that they were abused anyway, but at least not by me."

These are all unbearable choices, but many survivors have been given such unavoidable apparent choices. If you made such choices, what else could you have done? And how can you blame yourself?

Accountability, remorse, and forgiveness

Survivors still have to face the fact of having perpetrated, even if they had no choice other than the lesser of two evils. Remember that guilt, remorse, and shame are not good or bad, but normal and human. We feel guilty and remorseful when we commit evil acts, acts that harm others. We feel shame about who we are when we have violated our own deepest sense of morality. Even though abuser groups work hard on turning children's guilt into shame, the guilt is real, and the shame for having perpetrated is also real.

It is important to recognise that if a person were truly evil, he or she would not feel remorse, guilt, or shame. The fact that you experience these things means you have not lost your inner core of goodness, in spite of all you may have been made to do.

Full healing includes taking responsibility. Even if he or she is forced to do it, a child whose body is involved in an evil act, for example, holding a knife which hurts or kills, is violating his or her own core spirituality, that human ability to have empathy for other living creatures. The child might have created a non-empathic insider in the process, but when that part joins with those who feel empathy and compassion, guilt or remorse will result. This guilt needs to be accepted and confessed, at least to yourself.

Even if you were a trainer or programmer, or raised your own children (consciously or unconsciously) to be part of an abuser group, the same principles apply. My understanding is that doing evil is possible only through dissociation, when a part of a person is separated from the core who understands the moral truth. This is even true for "conscious" perpetrators, who are often designated for high positions within the perpetrator groups. There is a programme which ensures that when they reach a certain age, their everyday-life parts join with their perpetrator parts, while their internal pain-holders and empathy-holders remain locked away, hidden from their view, so that they cannot consciously feel the pain of those whom they hurt, and they do not remember their own pain. They believe they remember everything that happened, but they do not.

Full healing involves coming to understand how you were made to become the person who did what you did. Allow the parts of you who perpetrated to become connected with the parts who took the pain, so that each can understand what the others went through. This will bring on remorse and regret, and perhaps also an ability to understand at least some of the persons who hurt you.

Forgiving yourself

What happens when you forgive another person? It does not mean excusing or glossing over their behaviour that harmed you. It means looking that harm straight in the face, and accepting that it did happen and was hurtful. After that, it means giving that person another chance when (and only when) he or she truly and genuinely wants to be free of such behaviour. This is also what it means when the creator, or a person you have harmed, forgives you. And when you ask someone to forgive you. And when you forgive yourself.

Whether or not he or she intended it or wanted it, every mind-controlled or ritually abused person has done acts of evil, and needs to face it. This does not require specific religious beliefs; it only requires recognition of innate morality and how it has been violated. It can be done in private with the creator, or in a one-to-one relationship with an accepting and forgiving person. It is a very freeing experience to confess your guilt, and accept forgiveness from a universal spirit or creator who is greater and more loving than you can possibly understand. And if you do not believe in a compassionate life force, you can still come to an understanding of how your mind was split in order to enable you to do those things you would not otherwise have done.

It helps survivors who are immersed in shame to have a real relationship with a person—their therapist, or partner, or clergy person, or friend—who accepts them even knowing that they have done these things, and does not just excuse them but recognises the extent of the evil in which they have been forced, coerced, or tricked to participate.

Apologies

Should you approach persons you have harmed, to apologise to them? This is a difficult question, particularly if the persons you have harmed do not remember it. It might do more harm than good to awaken traumatic memories in persons who have them put away. And if those persons are still involved in a perpetrator group, it is risky for both them and you. One ritually abused client remembered sexually abusing her stepson. She decided to tell him, and fortunately it was at the time when he had just remembered it, so she was able to provide a genuine apology, which was accepted. Perhaps if you know that someone you abused is now physically safe, you could apologise and, if you are able, offer to pay for that person's therapy. But you have to consider what is best for them at present, and if you make an apology just to relieve your own feelings it might not be helpful to them. Your concern now should be for their current and future wellbeing.

Arauna Morgan writes,

> I have found a way to make general apologies to people I believe that I have harmed, even though they do not remember. I do not reference specifics, only time periods where, “I believe that I may have done things in the past that were hurtful/harmful to you and I am deeply sorry for doing these things. I'm sorry, but unless you remember specifics, I will be unable to explain further, but please accept my apology now”.

What about persons who died? Some survivors have conducted their own memorial services for those whose deaths they remember. You should know, however, that many deaths are simulated and the persons could still be alive. It pays to have an internal search to see whether any of your parts remember those “killed” persons being alive after the time they were supposedly killed. And you might use the Internet to conduct an external search as well.

Forgiving others

The following excerpt is taken from Aurora Levins Morales’ piece, “Torturers”, 1998.

“Torturers”

> Several years ago the media was full of the story of two ten-year-old English boys who had beaten a toddler to death. The coverage dripped with revulsion and hatred toward these children. They were described as inhuman, as evil, as bad seed. Reporters exclaimed, enraged, that they showed no remorse and wished aloud that there was a death penalty for ten-year-olds. The complete rejection of the boys couldn't be said often, or loudly or vehemently, enough. They are not of us. We are not like them. If we don't destroy them, we will never be safe. What I didn't hear anyone ask was what had to happen to a pair of children that by the age of ten they could batter another child to death with a brick.
>
> Torturers are made, not born. We know enough about the repetitive cycles of violence, enough about the training of secret police and death squads, special military units and spies, to know that the way you learn to torture is through torture. As a child I had an intimate view of this process. For a period of several years, without the knowledge of my parents, I was periodically abused by a small group of adults who practiced physical, psychological and sexual tortures, mostly, though not exclusively, on children. It was clear that their treatment of me had several goals. They deliberately confused and intimidated me so I would not reveal what was happening, but they also were attempting to reproduce themselves in me and the other children, to separate us from our own humanity enough to turn us into torturers as well.
>
> I understood that the first step in becoming like them was to learn to dehumanize others and that part of the goal of their cruelty was to make us hate them, make us want to hurt them, make us see them as monsters we would be willing to torment. To plant in us the seeds of their own pain. Part of the way I prevented this was to envision my abusers as young children, before they became this cruel. I would imagine that imprisoned within the adult bodies that hurt me were captive children who had themselves been tortured. I would pretend I could catch their eyes, send them signals of solidarity to give them courage. Imagine how horrified they were at the actions of their grown-up selves. This was what enabled me to survive spiritually.
>
> If we have nothing but retribution to offer the perpetrators of the world, we will, in an important sense, become like them. The urge to punish, to execute, to wipe them out is the refusal to consider what we ourselves might be capable of.
>
> I speak for the torturers because they are the tortured who did not survive intact. I speak for the ones who were so numbed by the world they saw and the part they were told to play in it that they cannot understand the reality of the harm they do. Of the men who tortured me, I wrote:
>
> There are people in this world
> so terrified that they hunger, night and day, for the fear of others.
> There are people in this world
> who can show their wounds only by inflicting them,
> and the story of my body
> is also the map of their unspeakable pain.
>
> There is nothing more moving to me than the stories of people who had the courage to reclaim their humanity even after full participation in the shameful. Too few people know that the beautiful hymn “Amazing Grace” was written in gratitude by a slave trader who suddenly, mid-Atlantic, awoke to the horror of what he was doing and refused to participate any further.
>
> Until we confront the moments when we have been co-opted, coerced or seduced into harming others, we will be vulnerable to becoming defensively self-righteous. Like those English reporters, we will exclaim in horror over the crimes without taking responsibility for the world that keeps turning children into criminals.
>
> I am holding out for a radical refusal to compromise on the possibility of any one of us to heal, make new moral choices, make amends and reclaim kinship with those we have harmed. There is a place for righteous rage at the torturers, and a place to demand accountability and hard work. But punishment is not a tool of liberation; it is the powerless exercise of violence by those who can think of nothing better. It is the refusal to acknowledge our kinship with those who hurt us. (pp. 111–112)

No one knows better than the survivor of mind control and ritual abuse that any person can become a perpetrator, even a torturer. This happens through dissociation. Child selves do indeed become imprisoned within adults when children are tortured. But they are not all innocent children. In my experience it is, for the most part, child selves who torture. Perpetrators in adult bodies, even those who believe themselves to be adults, are often split-off parts who have very little life experience, often none outside of the perpetrator group. They do what they do as a result of choices they were forced to make when their bodies were still small and under the control of deceptive torturers—or when they had no choice at all. Incidentally, that is why they often seem to behave childishly—because they are actually still children, frozen in their development. And this may be the case with many of the people who abused you, as it was with you.

Do they understand the reality of the harm they do? Well, did you understand this reality when you did such things? The answer is probably "Part of me did." I believe that some part of them does, though in many cases the part who is doing the harm does not have full understanding, or believes he or she is doing it in order to save a life. One recovering survivor says, "It would have been better just to refuse and let everybody die." I do not know whether every part of her agrees with that.

I have heard of some perpetrators who appeared to be wholly dedicated to evil, to inflicting as much pain as possible, for their own enjoyment. Perhaps they were the "conscious perpetrators" I mentioned previously, whose front people were joined with their perpetrator parts, while their hurt and empathic child parts were locked away, unknown to them. Whether or not this is a result of programming, it is important to continue to keep safe from such persons, and to recognise that you cannot forgive them until and unless they are truly remorseful, even if it is your father, husband, brother, sister, or mother.

Should you forgive those persons who perpetrated against you? Only you can make that decision, and it may be different for every perpetrator. When you put together all your memories of those people, perhaps you can determine how free they were to refuse to harm you, and whether they harmed you to save your life, or with glee.

You do not have to forgive someone just because he or she apologises. Many apologies are insincere. You need to assess their sincerity as best you can. And, most important, you do not have to let them back into your life, especially if they remain connected to a perpetrator group and could endanger you again. Survivor therapist Arauna Morgan writes as follows.

> To me, forgiveness is mostly beneficial to the person who forgives. When I have forgiven someone, I was the one who felt the relief and the other person, not so much. When people have told me that they have forgiven me, it was evident to me that *they* were the ones who benefited most from the exchange. I do not ask for forgiveness, I apologise and if I need to, I forgive myself.
>
> To me, forgiving someone for something that happened does not mean that I have to like the person or that I intend to spend any time with them or that I would not put them in jail for abusing me. To me forgiveness is for my peace of mind, not theirs. I do not care if my abusers had the insight to recognise that what they did to me was from their own abuse or not; I forgive the child parts, who were abused and forced to perpetrate until they found a way to abuse without external abuse to themselves first, and who I am sure that perpetually internally abuse themselves. I forgive the part that lives in an internal hell of his own making. However, I will do whatever is legally necessary to ensure that the body of this person no longer abuses me or anyone else.
>
> It took a long time for me to come to this place. I think that trying to get somebody to forgive before all of his or her parts have had a chance to relate what happened to them and how they were hurt will slow down the whole healing process, making it necessary to back-track to allow parts that were skipped over to be heard. Other steps need to come before forgiveness.

Exercise 32. Guilt, responsibility, and forgiveness

If you remember being sexually abused, who do you believe was responsible for it? Why? Would you say the same thing about another child to whom this happened? How much power did you actually have to control whether or not this abuse happened to you?

Do you have parts who perpetrated in any way on other people? How do those parts feel about what they did? How do they feel about who they are?

What did the abusers tell them to make them feel shame? Do they still believe it? Do you?

How do other parts feel about them? Does the rest of the system reject your perpetrator parts? If so, this leaves them alone and either not understanding the harm they did, or sunk in the shame the abusers poured on them.

How much do you know about what led these parts to do what they did? It might take a long time, but it will be helpful to see what led up to this perpetration, whether there are others who refused, whether the perpetrator parts knew what they were doing, and what lies they were told. What, if anything, were they attempting to prevent?

Is there anyone whom you can tell about these things, someone who will believe you, accept you, and also accept the enormity of what you were made or taught to do, someone who can offer forgiveness without shying away from the reality or abusing you? If so, perhaps you can begin by telling that person about one thing.

Do you believe in a loving and forgiving force in the universe? If so, would you tell that being about what your parts have done, and allow yourself to be forgiven and freed from ongoing shame? You can do this even if there is not a human being whom you can tell.

If you do not believe in any being other than your own highest humanity, are you able to choose to accept your perpetrator parts and acknowledge that they were coerced/forced/tricked/conditioned into harming others? They can then be transformed by connecting with your kind and empathic parts.

Will your perpetrator parts agree to stop participating in the harm of self or others? Can they have a new purpose now? What will it be?

Are there any persons in the real world to whom you need to apologise, and who would benefit from an apology?

When you remember each of your abusers, do you see him or her as having been wholly dedicated to evil, enjoying hurting you, or as split and acting on programming without full understanding? Which of them can you forgive, and which of them can you never forgive?

Developing your own spirituality

If you are a survivor of mind control and/or ritual abuse, it is important that you develop an approach to spiritual issues which is truly your own, and not externally imposed by any group.

If you are multiple, as I believe all such survivors are (including “conscious” ones), you need to develop an approach that satisfies all parts of you.

I am going to review different possible approaches that are offered to survivors, and give some critique for each. This will require thinking on your part (something you were probably told not to do). You do not have to agree with me. I only want you to think about it rather than blindly following what some “expert” has told you, even if that person is a clergy person, or therapist, or any other kind of expert in religion or healing.

Supernaturalist approaches

Ritual abuses are so horrendous, and divine or effective human help for victimised children so vividly absent, that they make us question any faith we might have had in humanity or in a benevolent deity.

Many ritual abuse survivors in particular (at least, their everyday life parts) adopt evangelical Christian belief systems, in the hope of finding an answer to the noise in their heads about Satan and demons and God, or out of a hunger to find something good which is stronger than the evil to which they have been exposed. As well, many sincere, well-meaning Christians want to help survivors, and seek out Christian leaders to help them know how to help.

Ritual abuse survivors whose front people are Christians often have inner parts who hold similar beliefs to Christians about God and demonic entities, but believe that Satan or Lucifer rules the universe and has claimed these insiders for his own. One of my first ritual abuse survivor clients, "Tony", was a very strong Christian; his insiders called him "religious Tony". Tony was a religious Christian, but among the parts who controlled his personality system were Satanists, who believed as they had been taught, and others who disbelieved everything.

As we have seen, cult and mind-controlling perpetrator groups use stage magic and trickery to simulate religious experiences, dressing people up in costumes to simulate demons and deities, making "Satan" appear out of flames, and putting children in a fake hell or heaven. These experiences make survivors seek belief systems that focus on the battle between good and evil but teach that the good side will win and can intervene in our lives.

However, these survivors most likely have inner parts who know that neither deity really rescued them from extreme suffering (even if a man dressed as Satan or Lucifer got them out of some particular situation). These insiders may be atheists, or may believe they are too evil to be rescued or loved even by a loving God.

Survivor Chrystine Oksana, in *Safe Passage to Healing*, says,

> Until the early traumas around supernatural phenomenon are resolved through recovery, survivors may continue to be drawn to "magical" solutions outside themselves. Recovery is realizing that the solutions are within yourself…Once your sense of self is regained, you are in a position to sense deceit and manipulations. There is less likelihood of confusion by external influences. You are less susceptible to revictimizing by people claiming to have 'the answer,' when their interest isn't to empower you but rather gain power for themselves. You will know who you are and your own truth. (1994, p. 258)

Now, I do not believe that evangelical Christian therapists are all after power for themselves. Although some may be following a laid-out agenda and more interested in conversions than in compassion, most of them are very sincere in their beliefs, and genuinely want to help survivors. But in the search for answers to these horrendous abuses, which involve the invocation of supernatural powers, they often tend to look to their outspoken leaders for answers. So do many survivors whose front people are Christian.

Attachment of demons and spirits

At this point, the primary outspoken Christian leaders seem to have only one viewpoint: that the demons are real, are "attached" to survivors (they prefer this word to "possessed"), and have to be expelled, generally by a professional in the field. Among those professionals who have written about these issues from an evangelical Christian perspective are the late Pastor Tom Hawkins of Restoration in Christ Ministries (2010), and Reverend Tom Ball (2008). These leaders do recognise the existence of dissociative disorders, but believe that demons attach themselves to internal parts of survivors and form the barriers that keep the parts separated.

The belief systems put forward by these Christian leaders in the field have a lot in common with those of the cult groups in which some have been raised, as both Satanists/Luciferians and fundamentalist Christians believe in specific controlling deities and other entities who interfere in human life and expect loyalty and obedience. The primary difference between these "mirror image" world views seems to concern who will win the battle and control the universe—God or the other side—and who is right and, therefore, deserves people's loyalty.

The late Pastor Hawkins described one of the methods that ritualistic abusers use to get those demons into the person:

> Most [ritual abuse survivors] were forced to engage in rituals that included vows, oaths, sacrifices, or covenants made with the evil spiritual realm. These "legal transactions" gave evil spirits, or demons, the right to "attach" to the specific alters involved and to exert varying degrees of influence and control over them. They may play a role, for instance, in enforcing programming;

> blocking memories; and re-traumatizing any alter who fails to fulfill cult purposes, tells secrets, or seeks outside help. These demonized alters have essentially been brought under bondage to Satan and his agenda…
>
> Connections can also be made to evil entities of a higher echelon than demons…Many of the more sophisticated cult perpetrators also claim that dissociated identities can be…held “captive” by evil cosmic beings and covertly used in Satan's worldwide agenda that is being directed from the spiritual realm. Within the person's system, these alters generally maintain a seemingly out-of-body perception and may be considered absent or even ‘dead’ by the other identities. (2010, p. 62)

Here, he is talking about at least two kinds of insiders: the ones within the internal hierarchy who have been given the names of supposed evil entities, and what I call in Chapter Five the “outliers”, the parts deliberately deceived by perpetrators to believe that they do not belong to the body. I believe that their out-of-body perception has been induced by drugs, not by anything from the spiritual realm. In that chapter, I also included an excerpt from the writings of recovered programmer Stella Katz about how, in her experience, very young demon insiders are made and trained. You might want to review that chapter before you go any further, because it is important to know that ritual abusers deliberately create parts who tell you they are demons or other spiritual beings, whether or not they believe it. (Some might believe it, and some might not.)

Mind controllers of all kinds, military as well as religious ones, use the notion of “legal” agreements and rights a great deal. They “enlist” children in armies that they did not choose, and make them sign (often in blood) agreements committing them to give their lives to Satan or Lucifer, or the Third Reich, or whatever or whoever the group believes in. They tell those children that they are “married” or are bound for ever.

Steve Oglevie is a well-known “deprogrammer” and expert in mind control systems who gives workshops on the different kinds of mind control programming. Like Hawkins, he is married to a ritual abuse survivor. Many therapists have attended his trainings. Here is how one day-long event is described:

> Recognizing Spiritual Evil, Recognizing Dissociated and Disembodied Foreign Human Spirits and “Installed” Personalities. Understanding of Spiritual Evil and how it Interferes in the Therapy Process. The therapist will be introduced to the very complex field of dissociated and disembodied foreign human spirits including their level of attachment to the client and ways in which they can be successfully disentangled from the true humanity and sent away. Therapists will be introduced to understanding installed personalities and how to differentiate between installed and genuine personalities.

When Oglevie speaks of “disembodied foreign human spirits”, I believe he is referring to the deliberate creation of insiders who believe themselves to be specific perpetrators the child knew. An abuser will rape the child, saying that he is putting his “spirit” or his “seed” into him or her. The resulting new split-off part is then told he is that abuser. This is a common event in ritual abuse, and also in other kinds of mind control, and I have met many such insiders. Sometimes, the person who makes the new part is costumed as a demon or beast, and the child is drugged to unconsciousness and then costumed like the abuser. The new part of the child wakes up to see himself in the same costume as the perpetrator. In military/political abuser groups, parts made in this way can believe themselves to be such entities as Hitler, generals, and various doctors or military leaders. Abuser groups also use drugs that make the body numb or unable to move, then tell the drugged parts that they are dead, ghosts, or aliens. They tell these confused parts that they do not belong to the body—and if they kill the body, they will not die themselves.

So, how do you differentiate between insiders who have been deliberately deceived into believing they are demons, devils, abusers, political leaders, and deities, and actual demons or “foreign human spirits”? And how do you distinguish between a “demonised” insider (one to whom a demon is attached) and an actual demon?

Reverend Tom Ball states that other Christians working in the field "assert the best method [by which] to be sure a demon is present is to exercise the gift of discernment of spirits". This appears to leave it up to the Christian expert to decide whether any given entity is part of the person or something external. Some of the sources Ball cites suggest that you can tell a demonic spirit if it slithers like a snake, or has rolling eyes, or looks hateful. But "demon" alters (small child parts) are taught to do exactly these things. Another expert in the field asserts that states who do not belong to the person are not motivated to feel better, are hostile to therapists, and do not make a human connection with them, expressing scorn for the rest of the person and hatred for the therapist; the person feels much better when he or she believes these states are gone.

I recently met a new insider in a long-term client. It was very hostile, and very much acted the role of a "spiritual attachment". I asked the part whether it thought I was a member of the cult and was testing it to see whether it remained loyal. Its reply was "*Yes, of course.*" This part simultaneously believed that I was an outsider who would destroy it, and that I was a cult member who would punish it if it showed any signs of disloyalty. What a set of feelings to juggle. I got the system leader to explain to it why she had become a "traitor", and that she had known me for several years and they really were safe. Then it relaxed, and began to behave like the child it was.

These parts are really no different from any other part. You (or your therapist) cannot judge that some part is external to your personality system just because of its behaviour, no matter how "evil" that behaviour, or its attitudes or self-identity. These are usually very important parts in maintaining the inner hierarchy of loyalty to the abusers. When I met twelve-year-old "Lucifer Immortal" in a client of mine, he maintained he was in charge of all the others. I asked him whether he had met the other Lucifer Immortal, who was eight and had also been told he was in charge. He quickly became indignant at the way the abusers had deceived both of them, giving them the illusion of power and lying to them.

In my view, it is important to view these parts with an extra dose of compassion, and not collude with their own view (and that of other insiders) that they are really evil external entities. It is not hard to see that such reactions are normal for a part who has been told (1) that it is not part of the body and should kill that useless and traitorous body, and (2) that it is an evil spiritual being and if it talks to a therapist or other outsider it will be destroyed, either by that outsider or by the abuser group. Banishing these parts might make them feel they are being destroyed. It takes patience, persistence, and kindness to break through their defences and help them know they are now safe and do not need to continue to do their jobs. In my experience, exorcism or "deliverance" attempts simply alienate important parts of the personality system. I have seen many survivors in whom the "demonic" parts went into temporary hiding as a result of rejection by therapists or religious authorities, and, consequently, they could not recover fully because some of their important insiders were not involved in the recovery process.

Tom Hawkins stated that

> Successful resolution of the major spiritual bondages occurring in RA survivors requires…an understanding of the spiritual principles relating to the cosmic struggle between the forces of God and the forces of Satan as found in the Bible…Releasing the person from bondage to the spiritual realm can only occur through the power of God. Therefore, this part of the process needs to be facilitated by a pastor, Christian counselor, or prayer minister who has thorough training in working with the dissociative disorders…. Disconnecting RA survivors from the spiritual entities holding them in bondage is not a simple process. The specific legal rights claimed by the demons and/or evil cosmic beings must be ascertained and renounced by the identities involved. (2010, p. 62)

This approach takes power from the survivor, giving it to the trained Christian worker, the only person who can remove attached entities. I find it far too much like that of the abuser groups, who tell these insiders that the group members are the only ones who can understand and accept them. I would like to tell you that you do not have to give your power away any more, not to anyone. No one but you should be in control of your mind.

Why do some Christians accept that there are genuine legal agreements made in some heavenly or hellish court? If such agreements, especially when made by under-age children under coercion, were made on earth, no genuine court would regard them as legal or binding in any way. We have seen this with regard to forced marriages with child brides, where the older "husbands" have been charged with sexual assault.

Once you let go of your belief in them, such agreements are nothing but evidence of how a child was deceived by cunning adults. You do not have to believe the lies your abusers told you! You might find it helpful to deliberately renounce agreements that were made, but simply as a statement of your own free choice, not because they are actually legal agreements.

There is also a more sinister side to this. Survivor therapist Wendy Hoffman (who tells part of her story in Chapter Nineteen) had many years of therapy with someone she believed to be a kind Christian therapist, sending "attachments" and "human spirits" to "the throne of Jesus" for judgement. When the "Christian therapist" was ousting these parts, she was actually using cult-created hand signals to have them put away inside, and as a result all the programming was intact and Wendy's recovery was halted. Wendy's front person experienced a sense of relief as the "deliverance" happened, as parts who were doing their supposedly evil jobs went into hiding. It was easy for her to believe that the warfare was outside her, between her and external spiritual entities, and these entities were actually leaving her. However, without their co-operation, she could no longer discover how her personality system worked and what had been done to her. The "deliverance" was just further mind control.

Now, I do not believe that all Christians who take this approach are members of evil cults, but this one was, along with her whole treatment team.

If you (the front personality—or any other part) are a Christian, must you accept the approach recommended by the most vocal Christians working in this field? I do not believe so. Many Christians do not believe in "possession" as a literal fact, or in "legal agreements" between coerced children and external spiritual entities. Jesus' teaching is that "by their fruits you shall know them"—in other words, an evil or a good being is distinguished not by its appearance or its supposed loyalty, but by its actions when it has an actual choice, not a fake or forced choice.

You can exercise your free will by rejecting and separating perceived attachments, but, in my opinion, that is likely to continue the internal war within your personality system, a war which was deliberately set up by your abusers, who knew that if they told part of you that they were demons or evil spirits, those parts would believe them, particularly if they were made to commit acts of evil. To be truly free, your whole person, including those parts, needs to assert that you will no longer be part of any religion or belief system that does evil.

The following section gives the perspective of a Christian counsellor (and professor of theology) whose approach is, in my opinion, more understanding of survivors of mind control and ritual abuse.

Heather Davediuk Gingrich: "A Christian therapist's perspective"

My initial reaction to reading Dr Miller's cautions about Christian therapists is that she is rather hard on us! Unfortunately, however, I think that many of her criticisms are justified. I have seen too many dissociative people retraumatised through well-intentioned, but none the less misguided attempts at casting out evil spirits. To my horror, one such client reported that the deliverance prayer she underwent was experienced by her as more traumatic than the ritual abuse she survived! What recourse, then, is available to those of us who believe that demons are actual spiritual entities (rather than always being dissociated aspects of self), which can derail therapeutic process? This is a complex question, one which I cover more extensively in my book *Restoring the Shattered Self: A Christian Counselor's Guide to Complex Trauma*, but the following paragraphs are an attempt to hit the core issues.

Many years ago, I was reminded by the pastor of a church which had an extensive deliverance ministry that when people are demonised, the evil spirits influencing them probably have been around for many years, if not decades. Therefore, he concluded, there is not necessarily a need to be in a hurry to get rid of them, particularly when attempting to do so could put the individual at risk for greater harm.

The term “spiritual warfare” can be confusing to ritual abuse survivors. Simply put, it means fighting against evil, which we evangelical Christians see as involving actual demonic forces that are not part of a person. Exorcism-type rituals, sometimes called power encounters, are only one way of doing spiritual warfare. The one that excites me the most as a therapist is that counselling itself can help free people from demonic influences as they reject the lies they have been told (or forced to accept through torture) about themselves, others, and reality, and begin to make choices based on truth.

The “armour of God” talked about in the Bible (Ephesians 6: 10–18) includes nothing violent. The belt is truth, the coat of mail is integrity or honesty; the shoes are the good news that God wants to make peace with you; the shield is faith in the reality of a loving God; the helmet is the awareness that God accepts and forgives you. The only offensive weapon, the sword, is words from God that speak the truth, when evil forces want you to believe lies.

Sometimes, Christian counsellors want to temporarily “bind” the power of perceived evil entities. This does not mean putting literal ropes or chains around any of your inside parts! If you have parts who have experienced this, be assured they are not really demonic entities. The term simply means holding back any evil powers (external to you) who might be making your life difficult.

In my role as counsellor, I am always aware of the possibility of demonic influence, and know that at some level my clients and I are engaged in doing spiritual warfare. However, I also know that explicit discussion of this in therapy is very risky due to the possibility that dissociated parts of a client could misinterpret what is being said because of the way in which abuser groups often distort Christian concepts. For example, a particular dissociated part could connect a phrase such as the “armour of God” to soldier training, or “the blood of Christ” to a ritual involving killing. Specific Scripture verses and words commonly used in Christian prayers could have been given a malevolent meaning. So, a wise Christian counsellor will ask you what you think something means, and make sure that you understand the true meaning of any words they use. If my counselees desire explicit use of spiritual resources in counselling, such as prayer and Bible reading, I will certainly incorporate them into the process, but very carefully, watching for distortions of meaning and recognising that there will probably be varying reactions from dissociated parts of the person.

Dr Miller's concerns related to Christian counsellors are broader than the danger of misidentifying dissociated parts of a person as demons, attempting to cast out evil spirits, or inadvertently creating problems by using Christian language that has been given a different meaning by an abuser group. She is afraid that Christian therapists are sometimes not appropriately respectful of their RA/MC clients' own spirituality. This is a tough one, partly because the part of you that seeks out counselling may identify as Christian, but you might not even be aware of the worldviews of other parts of you! In a sense, both your therapist and you need to tread gently, making sure that all parts of you feel understood and respected, regardless of what each part believes in a given moment. One of my DID clients invited other parts of her to learn about Jesus, having adult discussions with the older ones, and reading children's Bible story books to the little ones. Over time, and one by one, all parts of her decided they wanted to follow Jesus, but did so without coercion. To be honest, I would love all of my clients to have a similar experience. But I realise that I always need to be mindful that that it is not my job to evangelise my counselees, that I must be aware that they may end up with a very different view of spirituality than mine, and that ultimately the decision is theirs to make. The decision *is* yours to make.

* * *

I cannot emphasise enough how important it is to accept those parts of you who were told by the abusers that they are demonic. Restoring the human dignity of insiders who have been forced to perpetrate and have been told they are evil and damned is one of the most important parts of recovery. For this to happen, the parts who performed the evil acts need to see how they came into being and the double binds involved. But if these parts are rejected and ousted as demons, or “attachments”, they lose this chance for recovery, and are, in a sense, put in a permanent grave.

In twenty years of working with ritual abuse survivors, I have never met a single real demon or “attachment”, although I have met lots and lots of insiders with impressive demonic names (many of whom thought they were demons), as well as names of various leaders of perpetrator groups. I believe that evil is about what we do, and its essence is doing harm to other people and living things. Raping little children and teaching them to kill are evil. It only muddies the waters to add notions of external forces. Evil done in the name of Jesus, or God, or Mohammed, or Buddha, or Hitler, or Stalin, or Satan, or the “free world”, or democracy is still evil. In Chapter Four of my book for therapists, *Healing the Unimaginable* (Miller, 2012), I have a piece by Sally (called “Old Lady” in that book), in which her young insiders tell about ritual abuse, including sacrifice of babies, done in the name of God and Christ as well as in the name of Lucifer.

Some people do appear to be entirely governed by evil and to enjoy doing it. I do not believe this can happen because of legal agreements with demons made under coercive conditions, or because of being forced to choose the lesser of two evils. It may perhaps happen if a person consistently chooses power over others rather than equality and compassion. We all, whether or not we are ritually abused, make such choices, daily, in big or small ways, and each choice moves us further along the continuum between devotion to evil or to truth and justice.

Dissociation offers a powerful explanation for the existence of relatively autonomous and destructive entities within someone's mind. A part of a person, separated from that person's capacity for empathy, is more able to do evil than a human being whose inner parts are all connected to their empathy and wisdom. Recovery is moving toward a state of wholeness, whether it comes in the form of literal “integration” or internal co-operation and co-ordination and living for a positive shared purpose. In my view, approaching evil as a set of disembodied evil entities interferes with your ability to achieve that goal.

Ritual abusers, who might for centuries have believed they were attaching real demons to children, now recognise they are creating dissociative conditions. They still *tell* the children they are attaching demonic spirits, or their own spirits, or the spirits of dead relatives, but they now know they are actually splitting children and naming and training the newly separated parts. Should we continue to subscribe to the belief system the abusers have implanted, even when they themselves know that it is dissociation that gives them power over their victims?

In one sense, all humanity, indeed all of creation, is a single entity, a very complex multiple. Some people believe that all living beings on the planet are parts of that entity, which is sometimes called Gaia. When we choose to live and work for the good of that entire entity, we are choosing good; when we choose to live for the supremacy of ourselves or some small part of it such as our religion or our race, we are choosing evil.

Karmic belief systems

The standard fundamentalist Christian approach is not the only way survivors try to sort out their spiritual beliefs. Some survivors maintain belief systems that reassure them that “everything happens for a reason”, and “God never gives us more than we can handle”, although “God's ways are not to be known by mortals”. These beliefs provide them with the perspective of a just, or at least a protected, universe, which is not the way the world appears to a child being abused. These sunny beliefs may often be held by the front person, who knows very little of what went on in childhood, but are often not held by the abused insiders, who experienced overwhelming physical, emotional, and spiritual pain, enough to split their psyches repeatedly.

What can you say about a God who is all-powerful but would allow children to go through such brutal experiences without intervening? Who would tell them that this terror and horror are for their own good? No wonder many insiders are opposed to God, if this is the kind of God they believe exists.

Some try to make it all right by adopting new-age approaches that include a notion of past lives and karma, defining the trauma they have experienced in this life as something they earned in previous lives. This notion of karma allows a belief in a just universe even for those who have perpetrated and/or have suffered severely. It makes everything appear to be just. One survivor I know believes she has had memories of past lives in which she did evil, and this evil is the reason she had to make up for it by suffering in this life. Another survivor who developed cancer said it was her karma because of all the evil she had done while in the cult, especially as an adult. (But some scientists believe that cancer can be caused by unexpressed grief.)

If this is true of mind control and ritual abuse survivors, it must be true of everyone. Are all illnesses then the result of our own bad behaviour in this or past lives? Does the experience of being abused only happen to those who deserve it? This approach also denies the reality that people have the power to harm others. It suggests that everyone who gets hurt deserves it.

It is very difficult for anyone looking at suffering from the outside to believe that, for example, all the children who have died of AIDS in Africa are suffering the results of karma accrued in previous evil lives. And if those children are suffering unjustly, how can we say that the suffering of mind controlled and ritually abused children is just? I have often heard a survivor say, “Other children don't deserve to be abused, but I'm different, I'm dirty, I'm evil, I deserve it.” These are things the perpetrators have told you. I cannot accept this. No one is that special, that much more evil than anyone else. Yes, many ritually abused kids were made to participate in evil acts, but it was through adult coercion and deception. I know that if I had been there, I would very probably have done the same things. Would that have made me especially evil? I would feel very contaminated, as you probably do, but really it would be the situation that had made me do those things, not my own nature.

The belief that the abuse was a consequence of your own past behaviour is a way of making you feel you had more control than you actually had. It denies the consequences of earthly and political realities, and gives every believing individual the illusion of power over what happens to him or her. It saves you from the experience of powerlessness, and the associated feelings of despair. But powerlessness is a reality in some situations, in particular mind control and ritual abuse.

How honest is a perspective that makes everyone responsible for his or her own suffering, denying what other people can do to us?

Some people have a karmic belief system that does not blame the victim. Arauna Morgan writes, “I believe in reincarnation, but also free choice. I believe that if you just ‘go with the flow’, and do not reflect and struggle for insight and enlightenment, then lives of ‘tit-for-tat', where revenge and suffering are the theme, will continue. To break the cycle, one tries to awaken and treat themselves and fellow human beings with compassion, which still allows for stopping perpetuators from harming others. It is insight that allows for forgiveness.

“There is much more, but while someone is still hurting, it is hard to justify anything that happened and I think that, at that point, there should be no attempt to justify anything that happened. The survivor should be allowed to question everything, reject all religious thought and concentrate on healing the trauma. At some point, the survivor will be ready for a religion or faith that feels right, even if this is atheism. I, for one, have been abused in the name of several religions and resent people touting one or the other as ‘the religion’. It is a personal choice, thank you.”

Nihilism, atheism, and humanism

Many survivors, however, fall into despair, believing either that they are truly evil or that there is no good in this world. If there is a God, and even He does not care, how can they find the strength to fight for themselves? Sometimes, they find that strength by rejecting all spirituality, especially notions regarding a God. Yet, they are still left with the question of good and evil, and the awareness that what happened to them (torturing little children and forcing them to participate in harming helpless others) was evil. Agnostic and atheistic humanism has a respected tradition of developing a value system in the absence of the supernatural, and I believe it is one of several valid options for survivors. If you are not familiar with it, you may want to Google it and learn about it.

Choosing good and seeking truth

It is possible to develop a spiritual approach that does not follow the currently popular options that I have described above. And I believe it is important for every survivor to engage all his or her parts in working out the meaning of their experiences and an approach which makes sense of what happened and what they are doing in the world.

In *Reaching for the Light*, ritual abuse survivor Emilie Rose has a helpful chapter about spiritual abuse. She believes that spiritual abuse is perhaps the greatest wound. An important part of Rose's spiritual healing was rejecting the false notions of the divine which she had been taught, not only by the abusers, but by the conventional religion which she had at the start of her journey:

> I don't believe it is possible to be a survivor of ritual abuse without undergoing a deep, spiritual crisis…My realization that I was a ritual abuse survivor profoundly affected me. In some ways it totally shattered my old ideas about God. Who was this loving God I had heard about all my life? How could God be loving if God would not save those children I saw sacrificed? How could God be

> all-powerful, all-protecting, omnipotent? Obviously God could be none of these and also be good. Good Gods didn't watch the massacre of innocents when they had it within their power to act. Good Gods did something. How could I place the heinous reality of ritual abuse into a spiritual framework while still embracing the God I know? The answer was that I could not. Instead, I railed at this God. I hated this God—"the bastard God," as my friend said. Finally, in the midst of the deepest spiritual crisis of my life, I renounced this God.… I had to create a completely different vision of God. Today I think of God/Good as a light energy, an energy of creation that flows within and without so that it is a part of me, as I am a part of it. (Rose, 1996, pp. 102–103)

These questions, she says,

> …come from a part of us that knows that nothing like ritual abuse should ever happen to anyone. They come from the part of us that knows that what happened to us is contrary to the way the world was intended to be. That part of us is outraged and sickened and horrified. Our questions come from the place within us that cries out against such evil, that life-clinging part of us that helped to keep us alive. That tiny spark of justice within us could not be put out even in the most horrible, degrading experiences a human being can go through. (pp. 109–110)

But she sees hope:

> Every ritual abuse survivor has an inner part that somehow stayed connected to life even in the midst of torture and death…It may have many names: the strong one, the keeper of the spirit, the healer, the mystic, the grandparent, the wise one. Whatever we call the part, we can assist in its healing by seeking that part of us, inviting it out, befriending it, nurturing it, and assisting it to develop further in our life…This strong one within has a natural longing for life and healing. It is wise beyond years. It knows about pain and healing and spirit. It may be the place where our connection with a higher power resides. It guides us in the healing journey if we give it room to do so. (p. 146)

She talks about survivors, including herself, having transcendent experiences of joy and love, even during the years of the abuse. This, to her, is God:

> There are many things like that in my life, that I can point to or experience, and say, "This is real. This is good. This you did not destroy, and will not, ever, no matter how hard you try. This is God, the transcendent, the holy. This is what matters, and it is with this that I will cast my lot, *not evil.*" I know evil, intimately, and I reject it with everything in me. This does not mean that I reject those parts of me that were made to do bad things. I accept them, condemn the ways they were violated, and am thankful for the ways they helped me survive. And so, I see my life, as a kind of ongoing prayer. It goes on all the time, because in every moment, every thought, every action, I feel confronted with that choice between good and evil. It is not merely a theoretical choice. I know I really could go either way. And I continually constitute myself by consciously choosing the good. (p. 165)

My experience as a therapist for survivors of mind control and ritual abuse has been similar to that of Rose, the survivor. I can no longer easily embrace the idea of a God who is both all-loving and all-powerful, and who intervenes in people's lives to prevent disasters. I am aware of too many horrors. I know also that I, too, could have been a ritual abuse survivor and yes, a perpetrator, given different circumstances in my childhood. I was not, but countless other people—people with no less value than I—were. What that demonstrates to me is that God does not micromanage.

Survivors' genuine spiritual experiences

Spiritual experiences do happen to ritually abused children, even though no deity intervenes to stop the abuse. Ritual abusers frequently bring children to or near the point of death, and they have no control over what happens in the person's experience at that point. They can restart a stopped heart, but they canmot prevent the near-death experiences. Over the years, with the clients who were brave enough to work through the most horrific of their memories, I have encountered amazing near-death experiences (NDEs) that address the truth of what the client has experienced on the deepest level.

One six-year-old girl experienced the usual components of the NDE, including the presence of a being of light, and a life review in which she recognised she was not responsible for the perpetration which was forced upon her, only for the events in which she made an active choice to harm someone. Some of these events had nothing to do with her ritual abuse. Another child of five, while beaten almost to death by her mother, found herself in a new place with a loving angel. When brought back to life by the cult doctor, she said something about wanting to stay with the angel, and he told her mother, “Don't mention it, she'll get over it.” Once she had accessed this memory, the client has been able to go to this happy place to be with her angel when she needs it. Another client, too, found some of her most damaged parts had angels accompanying them.

Now, I do not know what an angel is, and explaining them is beyond my scope as a psychologist, but I do know that experiences of angels have happened to a number of my ritually abused clients, none of whom have a specific religious faith. (I am not, of course, talking about the angels who are simulated as part of ritual abuse training, for example to invite a survivor to suicide. Perhaps these groups simulate angels because they have experience with survivors who talk about them. They use the “angel of the sunset” deception because they know there will be angels present if the victim actually comes to the point of death, and they want to block out the experience of the genuine divine.)

Another survivor's Satan part was enduring some training in a simulated hell, when the drugs were too strong and the child almost died. “Satan” split off another part, “Satan's ghost”, who found himself in a beautiful place with a being of light. He encountered a dog and a baby whom he was to be forced to kill, and both told him that they forgave him. When he returned to fake hell, he knew it was not really the afterlife.

Another person remembered a near-death experience in which a little boy she knew, whom she had been forced to kill in a ritual, was waiting for her at the other end of the tunnel to the afterlife, and told her he would remain with her as her helper. Recently, I was with a survivor whose killer part was grieving for a boy she was made to kill, after which she was told she was going to hell. It occurred to me to say, “The boy is somewhere now. What would he say to you?” She listened, and then reported that the boy said three things: that he forgave her, that he was in a place where there was no pain, and that she would not go to hell because there was no hell. I asked whether she and he could be friends in the afterlife, and the answer was yes.

These accounts give me hope. If you do not remember such an experience, it might be helpful to know that they have happened to other survivors who, up until that point, believed the perpetrators' lies about how evil they were.

Many survivors have spiritual parts such as “Essence”, or the wise part which Emilie Rose talks about, who remain spiritually connected to a higher reality, the compassionate life force, who seem to guide the recovery process, and who will communicate if asked. Perhaps you have such a part, too. Perhaps everyone has, but singletons have more difficulty recognising it.

Exercise 33. Your spiritual beliefs and experiences

What kind of spiritual beliefs does your main adult part have? Why? Who have been the main influences for your beliefs?

Have your spiritual beliefs changed? What changed them? What is the history of your spiritual beliefs?

What kind of spiritual beliefs do your insiders have? (There may be a variety.) Ask each one who responds why he or she holds a particular belief. Remember the trickery that you looked at in Exercise 30.

What emotions hold each part of you to his or her present spiritual beliefs?

What loyalties or personal connections with people hold each part of you to his or her present spiritual beliefs?

If you have a therapist, does that person have a particular spiritual viewpoint? Has it influenced you?

Do you have any insiders who have gone into hiding because someone tried to get rid of them? (You may also have insiders who really want to get rid of them, believing them to be demonic.)

Do you have any parts who have had genuine near-death experiences in which they crossed to the afterlife? If so, what can they tell you?

Do you have an Essence, or other spiritual parts? Can you communicate with them, and if so, what do they say?

Have you had experiences of angels, or persons who died, speaking with you or accompanying some of your inside parts?

Have a discussion between the parts who have different spiritual viewpoints, and perhaps out of that discussion you can begin to develop your own spiritual perspective.

CHAPTER TWENTY-ONE

Becoming yourself

You might have difficulty knowing who you are, especially if you are multiple, and have different insiders, each of whom has a different sense of identity. I have titled this chapter “Becoming yourself” because, for me, it is my most important goal with my clients. Every species of animal or plant has an essential nature. You cannot make a kitten into a dog, or a cedar seedling into an oak tree. Mind controllers try to make children, at least parts of them, into things of their design, rather than developing each child's essential nature by providing the spiritual nutrients from which the child can grow into who he or she really is. If you have experienced mind control, either the systematic, organised kind, or just the programming provided by controlling parents and/or a society which wants people to be a certain way, you might have abandoned your essential nature in order to avoid pain or to please people whose acceptance of you has been essential to your survival.

You are a living being, not a machine

A child is not a machine to be programmed with others’ ideas and plans. A child is a living being, like a tree, only vastly more complicated and with more potential. A tree needs water, sunlight, nutritious soil, and a chance to put down roots that will sustain it through each winter and draw nourishment to enable it to make leaves, then flowers, and finally seeds, in the other three seasons. If it has begun its growth in hard dry ground or in a dark place, it might have struggled for life, and taken on a shape which is not what nature intended. However, if it is transplanted to a good location and well looked after, it will once again grow towards its full potential. So will a person. A child who grows up in a dysfunctional or abusive family might have tried to become what that family wanted, just to survive, but once away from the family, he or she can begin to grow into his or her real shape. This can begin at any age.

Self-help writers talk a lot about self-esteem, as though having it is basic to happiness and to mental health. It is, as long as it is on the right basis. Too many people base their self-esteem on “conditions of worth”, valuing themselves if they measure up to some externally imposed standards of wealth, beauty, success, or character. This does not just happen in families who harm children for their own ends; it happens everywhere. You can see how worth is measured if you just watch the advertising on television. Basing your self-esteem on conditions of worth makes you very vulnerable if you are unable to measure up to these conditions.

I believe that true self-esteem means simply esteeming, accepting, and liking who you are, with weaknesses and mistakes and even failures because you are a learning, growing human being. Rather than striving for self-esteem based on measuring up to some standard, you can learn to be authentic, real, true to yourself. When you are authentic, self-esteem follows naturally.

However, something comes before self-esteem—knowing and allowing yourself to be who you are.

But how do you know who you really are, if people have worked hard to make you what *they* want? To have the right basis for self-esteem, you first have to have an awareness of your own self. This awareness comes through experiencing your likes and dislikes, your positive and negative emotions, the joy of using your abilities and the distaste for doing things that do not fit with your true nature.

How do you know who you are if you are multiple? Some of your insiders might be crying out “But we're all different! I don't even like some of the parts inside this head; I'd like to get rid of them.” Well, the reality is you all occupy different electrical and chemical circuits within the same brain. Although you experience yourself as different people, and may have different images of what your bodies look like, you are all living within the same head of the same body. If that body becomes ill, you are all ill, even if some of you do not feel the pain or sickness. If that body has grown up, any of you who come out into that body will find themselves in an adult body, with signs of maturity and aging. Each of you only uses a few of the circuits that make up the immensely complicated brain you inhabit.

Who you really are is the whole thing together, all the learning and feeling and experience contained in that complicated brain, with many capacities beyond those that each one of you believes you have, and that adult body, with its size and strength and also its limitations. If you think of people as trees, a singleton may be like a conifer which has one main trunk and just little branches out the side, and a multiple may be like a tree which has several or many main limbs, and branches out in a very complicated manner. If one of you, even the front person, insists he or she is the main person, this is not true, as each one is using only a very small part of the potential of that powerful brain. The more all of you communicate within that brain, which means communicating with the other parts, the closer you come to being who you were meant to be. It will be up to you whether you eventually choose to integrate fully, so that you experience a single identity, but even if you do not, it can only benefit you to become more connected to one another, so that all of you have access to all the abilities and insights and intelligence and experiences available within that brain and that vast mind.

So, how do you get there? It begins with recognising the effects of indoctrination, by your family, your abusers, and society. Besides the specific indoctrination for the purposes of the abuser group, there was also your family's home environment, which for most survivors was a place where adults required unquestioning obedience from children, and told them how to be and what to do. To combat that indoctrination, you need to learn about your needs through your emotional reactions (which are often contained within inside parts), learn about your body through how it feels and what it can do, and learn about your gifts and abilities through trying new things in a playful way, with different parts coming together in those new safe experiences.

Rejecting the lies they told you about who you are

If you were raised within an abuser group, the adults in your life saw you as a commodity rather than a person who needed nurturing and psychological and spiritual food for growth. Some parts of you were accepted or even praised, but only when you sacrificed your own needs and wants in order to obey the adults and become what they wanted—all the different things they wanted. Although the group might have put considerable effort into assessing your abilities, it was only for their own use, not to allow you to develop to your full potential. They might even have deliberately given you disabilities to prevent your entering a fulfilling career. Or they might have insisted you excel in areas which do not really fit your natural interests or abilities.

Every part of a mind-controlled survivor has been told lies about who he or she is. Whether you believe you are a high-level programmer, or a demon, or a copy of your handler, or your father, or a seductress, or a soldier, or a robot, or a worthless piece of garbage, or someone specially created for a job without which you will not exist—you have been deceived. So, you need to begin all over again to discover who you really are, apart from those lies.

Children who are not abused or mind-controlled discover who they are in childhood, through exploring their abilities and interests. Even though it has been delayed, you can still do this. You will probably find that those of you who were given "jobs" by the abusers had certain interests and abilities of theirs used in carrying out those jobs. But those of your insiders who were told they were worthless pieces of garbage had abilities and interests too, such as the capacity for standing up for the truth. They are just as important parts of you as the ones who were told by the abusers that they were important. They often contain the most important qualities of kindness, empathy, and courage, which can benefit the whole of you.

Tuning in to your own needs

If your parents were members of an abuser group, they were not allowed to be attuned to you; the group deliberately broke any bond they might have developed with you. You learnt very early that people would not respond to your expressed needs, but they intruded upon you at times and in ways of their choosing. No adults spent time with you just to be together, letting you take the lead in play and exploration of your environment. So, you probably do not know how to play and explore your world and your interests.

Children whose parents have not been attuned to them often cannot "tune in" to themselves. They become adults who do not know what is going on in their bodies or their emotions. They do not know how to soothe themselves when they are upset, because nobody was tuned in enough to soothe them when they were upset children. They do not develop their own mature, thought-out values, but rely on others to tell them what is right and wrong.

When you have been neglected and rejected in this way, it is natural for you to abandon yourself and your own needs and desires, especially when these are held in other parts of you and you therefore do not feel their pangs. How good are you now at recognising what you need and how you feel? The way we learn what we need, and how to meet our needs, is through listening to what our emotions tell us. (See Chapter Thirteen on "Emotions".) Our emotions were designed to give us information about every need of ours, about what is happening to us psychologically. Do you invalidate your own needs? If your needs and strong emotions are tucked away in inside parts, do you listen to those insiders and try to let them know their feelings are valid, and that you will hear them, protect them, and try to meet their needs?

Learning about your interests and abilities

A child brought up in a loving family, with attuned parents, gets to try out various activities and continue with those which they like and are good at, while discarding those that do not fit who they are. Although the school system insists we all learn certain things, whether or not they are the most important to us, it is important that we not lose sight of which things “turn our crank” and make us happy, which things we are naturally interested in and/or good at, and which are things we do not much like and need to learn only minimally.

Children normally learn about their interests and abilities through trial and error in childhood. They try painting, writing, various sports, singing and musical instruments, and various school subjects. Wise parents do not force a child to continue for years with something he does not enjoy or is not any good at, but encourage him to develop his own abilities and interests. Sometimes, that goes “against the grain” of society's prescribed roles. I was a child in the 1950s, and I remember praying nightly that I would not have to become a housewife, since none of the skills involved in that career (other than, perhaps, enjoying children) fitted my abilities and interests. I was a complete dud at cooking and sewing, and had absolutely no interest in clothing or house cleaning. My thinking, writing, and intuitive abilities would have been wasted if I had followed the path of my female classmates.

Depending on your body's age, you might or might not be able to direct much of your life into areas that fit with your abilities and interests. If you are older, this might be difficult, except for hobbies. But even hobbies can bring some satisfaction. If you are younger, you might be able to find and pursue a life direction that truly fits you, rather than fitting what your parents or your programmers intended for you. If you have numerous insiders with varied interests and abilities, perhaps you can find a life direction that allows for a bit of time devoted to each area of interest and ability.

Learning what we like and are good at begins with play. Children try out various life roles through play. Let your inner children do the same. Give them chances to paint, draw, write, be athletic, study science, take courses—whatever enables them and you to find out who you are, what you like, and what you are good at.

It might help to discover what ordinary children are like so you can relax a bit more with your inner children, allow them to behave like children again, and enjoy them. Watch comedies such as *The Simpsons* (an excellent critique of American culture) with your inner children, and shows which depict children (and teenagers and adults) making mistakes and accepting themselves, or having other people accept them as they are, with all their flaws.

Learning through mistakes

Abuser groups bring up children with the goal of complete, unquestioning obedience. Parents who are involved in illegal activities want to maintain an appearance that their family is perfect and successful. So, in some such families, the push for children to excel is very strong. Parents who are members of these groups, as well as handlers within the groups, are often perfectionists, insisting that tasks be done immediately and be done right, no matter how the child is feeling. Mistakes are simply not allowed.

If you grew up with these demands, you probably have some parts who are ferocious inner critics, insisting you do everything right, and not accepting mistakes, tiredness, sickness, or even just plain disinterest in a task. It is important for these critical insiders to learn that mistakes are all right. If you are really a perfectionist, set yourself a goal of making a certain number of mistakes a day, and laughing at them. It is fine to make mistakes. We learn through trying things we do not like or are bad at, and once we are in charge of our own lives we do not have to continue doing those things. We also do not have to base our self-esteem on doing everything perfectly.

High standards are good. They can motivate us to grow and to do excellent work. But if they are too high or are perfectionistic, they lead us to be constantly dissatisfied with ourselves. If you are dissociative, you might actually hear the voice of an inner critic, perhaps sounding like one of your parents or trainers. You need to get to know this part and speak with it about how its job is no longer necessary.

When we are being our authentic selves, failure is not devastating because we do not need to please others and our self-esteem is not dependent on their approval. So, we can afford to take risks. We can try new things, explore our gifts by using them, and speak up when something needs to be said. We can be motivated by the hope of success rather than the fear of failure. I know this is difficult for mind control survivors who have been programmed to fail, but this is the goal.

Developing a sense of humour is one of the most important parts of this process. If you see mistakes as funny rather than devastating, this gives you permission to laugh at your own mistakes, recognising that you are only human and are learning. Everyone makes mistakes; they are allowed; they can even be good. When you do make a mistake, especially an embarrassing one, you might want to take a break until you can see the mistake from a different angle.

Developing values instead of "being good"

"Being good" in groups who engage in mind control means obeying whatever the abusers tell you to do, even if it is a criminal act, or something completely against your own conscience and nature. Most survivors have inside parts who were consigned to the "rubbish dump" because they refused to "be good" and do things they believed were wrong. But they also have parts who were "good" and did these things in order to save their lives, or those of others, and avoid torture or something worse.

If you are a survivor of mind control and/or ritual abuse, you are sure to have been conditioned to be "good" in the terms that your abusers defined. And you are likely to have inner child parts who push you to continue to be that way, out of fear of punishment. There is often an inner war between the ones who implement the instructions of the abusers and those who rebel against these instructions, each group believing the others are "bad". It is important to mediate between these groups of insiders, helping each to understand the other and why they did what they did.

One important task in becoming yourself is to develop your own values. You have been given upside-down values by the abuser group. Most cultures and religions give at least lip service to the Golden Rule—"Treat other people the way you want them to treat you". There is much wisdom in this. It avoids all the petty rules and goes to the heart of the matter. One version of the Golden Rule says, "Love your neighbour as yourself." I like this because of the *as.* It suggests that it is all right to love yourself and treat yourself as well as you treat your neighbour. Both you and the other person are valuable human beings, and as you share a common humanity, you can recognise what the other person might be going through and would benefit from, and they can do the same for you. (Note: One survivor says she was told that Silence was the Golden Rule. Maybe it is the most important rule in some cults, but that is not the real Golden Rule.)

What are your own deepest beliefs about what is right and wrong? You need to consult all your insiders to find these, especially those who were discarded by the group. One thing I have learnt from survivors is that even very little children know it is wrong to kill and torture other living beings. Adults have to use very strong means to make them do it, because children just know that it is not right.

Exercise 34. Steps to becoming your real self

When you were a child, did your parents expect you to "be good"? What did this mean to your parents?

Did members of the organised abuser group also tell you to "be good"? What did this mean to them? What happened to the parts of you who were not "good" or correct?

What can you do to get away from "being good" and obedient, and allow yourself to follow your own instincts and your own conscience?

Do all your parts accept that you all exist within the same brain and the same body? If some do not, why not? Talk with one another about it. Help one another recognise how powerful a united brain can be. When you are connected, you will have all the knowledge and abilities and experience of every one of you to draw on, and you will be able to see through tricks and make wiser decisions.

Do your parts realise that what they believe about themselves was mostly indoctrination (which means it was not true)? Identify the parts who believe those lies. Find the parts who are old enough to think logically, and ask them to help the ones who were deceived to recognise the lies.

Are some of your parts ashamed of who they are? Find out who, and why. If this shame is a result of abuse, including verbal abuse, help them realise that just because it was said to them does not mean it is true.

Do some of your parts feel ashamed because your involvement in the perpetrator group led them to do and think things that they now know to be wrong and false to your true self? Encourage those parts by pointing out how they have learnt and grown and become more authentic.

How much ability do you have to recognise your needs, your wants, and your likes and dislikes? Are some parts better at it than others? Is it frightening to think of yourself as being allowed to have needs and wants, and likes and dislikes?

What is the basis of your self-esteem? That is, when you like yourself, why is that? (Or, if you feel you never like yourself, what are the reasons?)

Are you a perfectionist? If you are, what areas of your life do you tend to stress over the most? How did you become a perfectionist? What can you do to allow yourself to try new things and make mistakes?

Ask each of your insiders (and ones who live in the outside world, too) what are his or her biggest interests. Then try to find a way to incorporate these interests into your daily life.

Ask each insider about his or her abilities. Give all your insiders a chance to develop those abilities through activities that rely on these skills.

Do you have time in your daily life for play and art and physical activity like sports, through which the younger children can work out what they like and what they are good at? If not, could you plan scheduled times for these activities?

The question of integration

When therapists began working with dissociative persons, the explicit goal was generally integration or fusion, a term that was used to mean fusing all the insiders into one person. This was usually conducted through a ceremony that joined the entire system or major parts, and was artificially induced by therapist-directed hypnosis. It often did not work, or created more problems than it solved.

My experience after twenty years of working with dissociative people, including those with mind control and ritual abuse histories, is that parts often naturally join with one another when there is no longer a need for them to remain separate, to protect secrets, or to keep toxic emotions or body sensations from flooding the whole person. There is no need for you to deliberately make it happen, unless there is a special reason to hurry.

As small joinings happen at the close of each piece of memory work, they become the natural evolution of the system—and they hardly ever come apart. The real barriers between the insiders are the separately held secrets and the intense feelings that belong to the memories; once these have been shared, there is no need for parts to remain divided.

Fragmentary parts, who only have little bits of memories, join easily; more complex parts have to process all their distinct memories before they are able to integrate.

If you or your parts are very invested in separateness, integration will become more difficult. But it will still happen, at least with some groups of parts. Several survivors have told me that it is impossible to keep parts separate when the traumatic memories that divide them have been fully processed.

Temporary blending

It is possible for parts to choose to temporarily blend with one another to see what it feels like, and then come apart again. Here, psychologist and lawyer Steve Frankel describes how he teaches this process to his patients (clients).

Steven Frankel: "Learning to blend"

I teach blending as a skill. I want my patients to learn how to do it and undo it, so they have control over whether/when/for what purpose(s) to do it. It happens to be a skill that provides experiential learning of what fusion feels like, so they will have a referent for that experience and not be so afraid that fusion means that some will die or disappear (the most common concerns about fusion). Blending also gives them an experiential lesson in the difference between being "not alone" (blended") *vs.* alone (unblended). For many who have not already had spontaneous blending experiences, this will be the first time they will have felt "not alone", but what this is like cannot be explained in advance, as it is experiential in nature—sort of like trying to explain three dimensions to a two-dimensional creature (I do not mean this in a devaluing way—just a descriptive way).

One of the neatest things ever to happen between the USA and what used to be called the Soviet Union was the US–Soviet Space programme. The reason it was so neat was that it took one astronaut/cosmonaut from each country—countries that had deep and abiding distrust for each other—and put them in a common space, with common problems to solve. Each country could be assured that if the other was pulling a fast one, their countryperson could radio back to them to warn them, and they had constant contact with their person to make sure everything was all right. While sharing the space together, the individuals found that they could appreciate each other and work together effectively to solve problems of the universe. That's what blending is like.

Blending is helpful with many problems. The two for which I most frequently use it are:

1. Conflict resolution where the parts in conflict do not have the empathic connections with one another to be able to talk through solutions/accommodations to problems. For example, one group of parts says that daddy loved them, valued them, made them feel special, never hurt them. They resent the parts who keep telling them that their daddy was a bad man who hurt them and abused them. Neither group can convince the other of the rightness of his/her views; they just can't imagine what it feels like to have that different belief about something so important.
2. Establishing "teams" of insiders for the purpose of solving life tasks. This approach can be applied to a great variety of life tasks. The dissociative way to solve problems is to have each part do a single task. A more productive way is to have teams that do life tasks, making life problems "our" problems rather than someone else's problems. The task could be assertiveness in the workplace,

for example, or sexuality with a partner.

I have three rules before blending can be tried: (1) permission, (2) willingness, and (3) omitting the trauma.

Permission: I suggest that if there were permission from the group that thinks daddy never hurt them, and also from the group that thinks that daddy was a bad guy, for one representative of each group to blend together, maybe they could understand each one another better. I then ask for permission, which is non-negotiable rule no. 1. If one or the other side says NO, I ask what the objections are, and if I can't meet them, I don't teach the skill. End of story. If there are no objections, I ask for two volunteers.

Willingness: Non-negotiable rule no. 2 is willingness. The parts that blend must be willing to try it. No one gets dragged, kicking and screaming, into a blend.

Once we have permission and willingness, I announce the third non-negotiable rule: neither part can carry toxic trauma material into the blend—they have to take it out and put it on the floor before entering the blend. This, I explain, is due to the fact that parts are separate for very good reasons, one of which is that the toxic trauma material they carry is so powerful that it is too much to bear and must, therefore, be divided up. I tell them that if, as they blend, they feel a burning sensation, someone hasn't taken all of their trauma material out of them, so they have to unblend and repeat the step of taking the toxic trauma material out of them and putting it on the floor.

Then I give the blending instructions: everyone watch and listen please, as this is a skill for you to have and use as you see fit. Then, to the blending parts: please face each other, take the toxic trauma material each of you carries and put it on the floor. Now, I'm going to count slowly from 5 to 1. As I count, I'd like you to walk toward each other very slowly, taking deep breaths between each number. When we get to “3” you'll be nose to nose and I'd like you to keep walking right into each other. When we get to 1, the boundary will close around you. Five (breath), four (breath), three—nose to nose now/keep going (breath), two, right into each other and 1, feel the boundary close around you.

Now, is either of you feeling too cramped in that space? If so, take a deep breath and the space will expand. Is either of you feeling a burning sensation? If so, step back out of the blend and put all toxic trauma material on the floor, then walk back into the blend.

Part A, can you announce that you're there please? (“I'm here”) and Part B, can you announce that you're there please? (“I'm here”). I do this to assure everyone that no one dies or disappears when they are in a blend.

Can each of you tell me what you are experiencing? I never tell them what I think they will experience. In my experience they often report feeling thicker, denser, and stronger (I ask them to move the body around, make fists, etc., to help them experience the body with them blended), and they report being amazed at how much stronger (and SAFER) they feel, and that they now understand/appreciate one another's feelings.

* * *

You can adapt what Steve has taught here for your own purposes. Discuss it internally before you try it. Blending is something you can practise to see how various parts feel about it. It is not the same as fusion, especially as the trauma that forces the parts to remain separate has not been worked through. But, as I said before, parts naturally join together and remain joined when the trauma has been resolved.

Stella Katz, the cult trainer who had the courage to escape from her abuser group, work through her traumatic memories, and recover, here tells the story of her recovery, including her eventual integration:

Stella Katz: "Reclaiming me"

I am writing this for one reason only, and that is to prove to others with DID that there really is LIFE beyond the dark tunnel.

I spent the better part of forty years fragmented. I had one stable alter personality who lived everyday life, went to school, took dance and skating lessons, dated, married, and had children. That person knew nothing of what was going on in the rest of my life. All I knew was that from a very early age I would go to bed at night and wake up with dirty feet, or completely clothed with unusual makeup or markings, and bruises. What I found odd, though, was that I only did the sleepwalking at my Grandmother's house, and never at home until after my Grandmother died. As a young child I assumed it was because I missed my own bed, but I had no explanation for it happening later on. I was told that the horrible things I remembered in the morning were just bad dreams and to forget about them and not to tell anyone because they would think I was insane and lock me up in the home for bad crazy people.

At the age of thirty-five, when all came to light, I was horrified. I was told to go to a group for people like me, only to find out that most of the people never really got better, or ever integrated, and were in therapy for most of their lives. Being stubborn and pig-headed, I was not going to hear of that. I wanted to get well. I wanted to know every detail of my secret life, and, moreover, I wanted the loud, opinionated, taunting voices in my head to shut up.

So began the journey that helped me reclaim "myself".

I can still remember the feeling of horrific physical pain of the memory that first brought it all to light. Although it was only a memory, the pain was so intense I was sure my foot was broken. I could barely walk on it for days after. I still remember the smell of wax from the burning candles and leftover incense that permeated the room where the memory all took place. Even now it was like yesterday. It was all so horrid but it answered a burning question I had had since I was five years old about how I broke the heel of my foot while I was supposedly sleeping.

The more I learnt, the more I wanted to learn. I wanted forty years of unanswered questions answered. But the more I learnt the worse I felt about myself, because the one thing I learnt was that I was still going somewhere where these things happened. I needed to find the people inside who knew the most and I knew that once or twice a week in a therapist's office, no matter how good she was, just wasn't going to cut it. I needed to get out of the group not years from now, but right now, and unless I learnt more about my internals, I would never be free of the group. So, I began my version of homework.

On the days of my sessions, after my children were in bed and my husband safely tucked in front of the television for the night, I would go down to the recreation room where I could be alone and go over the therapy session of that day. I would try to figure out what seemed to be missing from what I had learnt or worked on during the session. It meant that I had to go back into myself and try to talk to those who had been out that day in the therapist's office. My biggest fear was that I would get in and get stuck. So I bought myself a silk rope, and a timer. I would set the timer for thirty minutes, tie the rope to the chair and hang on so tight you'd have thought I was dangling from a ten-storey building. Somehow the rope gave me safety, as if it was a lifeline to pull me back from falling over the edge. I would close my eyes and visualise a dark tunnel and step by step I would walk through into my inner world still hanging on to my rope, calling out to the name of the last insider I remembered from the session.

As I got to know each member of the Clan, as they called themselves, I began to see them as real people. Some were easy to talk to, while others were so dark and scary it was all I could do to look at them. There were adults on the light side and the dark side, and children, oh so many children. Some rather happy, some so terrified they would only peek out of little holes in the fabric of our mind. I saw houses and places that were familiar, and places I was sure I had never seen before, yet felt strangely familiar. At times I was so terrified I just wanted to run. I felt so foolish because I knew I shouldn't be scared of these people—after all, they were part of me. I equated it to being afraid of my own arm. It seems so silly now, but then it was terrifying.

After a few years of twice weekly therapy sessions and twice weekly homework, I finally realised that though I liked my therapist a great deal, I didn't want to grow old with this woman. So I stepped up the work I was doing on my own. Along the way, something happened, and the therapist and I parted ways. I went on to another who was sweet but useless, and then to another who was both unpleasant and incompetent. All that forced me to work harder on my own. So I left therapy altogether, for a while.

Night after night I worked getting to know my system, one alter at a time, or sometimes in little groups. It was amazing and intricate and I didn't think I would ever get to know everyone in it. Just when I thought I was through most of it, a little floater child would introduce me to a whole new level. A floater child does not actually belong to the structured system created by the abusive group, but is “born” by accident. As Fiona the floater didn't belong to the structure, she was free to travel throughout the system and was no threat to anyone in it.

After about six more months, I was taken on by another wonderful therapist. I got to know so many more in my system with her help, but her office was too far away. The beauty of living in your head is that you can do things you cannot do in the real world, such as creating a holodeck like the one on *Star Trek*. When I became afraid of a memory or a dark Clan member I was dealing with, I would simply “freeze programme” and go around and look at the entire situation from every angle. I discovered that so much of what had been done to me was nothing more than smoke and mirrors. I was able to see the Devil who had abused me from all angles. I saw that he was not eight feet tall; he was just a grown man while I was a small child. He did not have scales and claws and a tail, he wore a stretch suit with a zip up the back, and you could see the line of his boxer shorts under his costume. It made me laugh. The fear I had was now gone. The more comfortable I got with processing my memories, the more I increased the period on the timer from thirty minutes to forty-five, sixty, and eventually two full hours.

I became friends with my Clan, with the help of Fiona, the little floater child who knew every single member of the clan. I was able to get through to members who would have been blocked otherwise. Fiona trusted me, and because she trusted me, the others came to trust me as well.

I was often in awe of the structure of the system. I learnt so much about the missing years and answered so many of the burning questions of my life. I discovered the reason my real life children spoke languages I didn't. The Clan had an internal nanny who cared for the internal children. She had the ability to come out and take care of my real world children when I slipped inside. She spoke Gaelic to them and sang songs with them, and they learnt and had a great deal of fun. The only thing that bothered me was that she was a better mother than I was. In time I found out why I hated highly textured food, and especially raisins. I won't tell you why, but I can tell you it was disgusting. I came to love the little internal children, and animals, and even my little demons, who were all under the age of five. I came to understand that my black heart was not black as in evil, but black as in a mix of all the wonderful colours of the world.

I knew that every member of the system had to be in agreement about integrating. They had to be able to decide for themselves and choose to join the healing plan because they had never had any choice about what had happened to them. I knew this could only be done by helping the little ones grow up, or at least to understand what we were hoping would take place. So, after the real-world kids had gone to school, I would set the timer, bring out the toys and cookies without raisins, and let the children out to play and watch television and read books. Once they were allowed out into the world, they grew quickly, not like real children do, but years in a matter of weeks. One by one they grew. One by one they joined.

All through this healing process, I still had one big problem, which was that I still belonged to the group. I was still a high priestess; I was still part of the inner circle. I was still a trainer. I knew I had to get out of it but I knew they were not going to let me just walk away because I knew too much.

For the next couple of years I was stalked and harassed daily. My children were threatened. I had dead animals put in my car, snakes in my postbox, and dead kittens nailed to my door. I was driven off the road at night and raped. I didn't think it would ever end. I got tough and looked at the rapes as just lousy sex. Once I was sent a photograph of a person dead and mutilated with a threat saying that would be me. I called the police and an officer came eight hours later. I gave him my statement and the picture. I took his business card, only to find out when I called to talk to him it was fake.

The more I worked on my system, the less use I was to the group. Eventually, they got tired of stalking me, and let me go. It took a few more years, but I was free, or at least felt I was relatively safe.

Once I was free, it did not take long before I was pushing through the system, had everyone catalogued, knew where, when, and how each had come into separate being. With that all done, I was able to get everyone in the system to set a date and time that we would join as one. Some were afraid they would die. Others were afraid that the body wouldn't remember them, others were afraid it would hurt, but we worked through the fears. We planned the day it would all happen, and so, on a beautiful day while the children were in school, I gathered the members of the Clan, had everyone line up in order of their birth, hold hands, and form a circle. One by one, in a very ceremonial manner, the newest member stepped into one who came before and so on down the line until we reached the child whose body had been born. It felt wonderful and frightening and strange, and a little like a house of cards ready to collapse at any second. It felt like the house's foundation had been built on jelly, but it felt right.

I was one with myself. I wasn't who I thought I would be. There were a few times when I was sure we would fall apart, but I hung on. No one died, no one was forgotten, and I had to fight to get rid of the Celtic accent I had acquired unexpectedly. In the first few months, when I recalled something I saw it through the eyes of the person who had experienced it. As time went on, all the memories became mine. And it was an amazing feeling, though a little lonely at times to have only one voice in my head. The thought I was thinking was my thought and mine alone, and to know that I would no longer hurt little children or animals or wake up with muddy feet was amazing.

I was not prepared for what came afterwards. I was stupidly under the impression that all would be well once there was only one of me. I could not have been more wrong.

What I did not expect was the unbearable remorse for what I had done. The faces of every child I had hurt, their cries, and their anguish kept flooding through. It was a dam that broke in my moral conscience.

I no longer had a therapist because “I was well and integrated”. I really could have used someone at that point, even if it was just to cry on her shoulder, but I had no one. I had to hang on and let myself feel the pain. It went on for two years. There were rivers of tears, torment, and guilt. I had never been so depressed. I had known the pain while fragmented into mini me's, but now I understood that all the pain I had felt in those years of abuse had been dulled by an imaginary coating of Novocaine brought on by the fragmentation; now it was just the raw pain of remorse and I had only one of me to feel it.

I also went through a spiritual crisis. I didn't know what I believed. I had the guilt teaching of the Catholic Church running through my head, telling me I was going to hell. I had the Satanic beliefs that God is weak and worthless. I had my mother's Pagan beliefs that Dark and Light are equal and balance life. I had Jewish beliefs of the group I had belonged to, and I didn't really feel any of it was worth my time. I think this was the hardest part to try to work out in my mind.

It all came to a head at a stop light one sunny afternoon when a song triggered a memory that forced me to ask the question “What do I believe?” Between stop lights and stop signs, I went through the list. The questions were everything from my belief in a god to my personal beliefs about life in general. I gave myself ten seconds to answer each question. I felt that what I answered in ten seconds was what I truly believed without the process we all have of overthinking, and justifying what we say. By the time I got home, I felt as light as a feather. The weight of the world had been lifted off my shoulders. I could not stop grinning. I finally knew who I was, and what I truly believed in. I found my life at the end of that long tunnel. I was integrated on all levels. It had been a long, long road.

It's not my dream life, but it is mine. I now have terminal cancer, but I worked through what I believe about death, and I'm all right with it. I don't know how long I have left, but I see every day that my name is not in the obituary column as a great day, and more so as a gift. I have made my peace with myself.

For all of you who are still going through the torment of memory and the chaos of an untamed system, know that there is Life at the end of your tunnel. Know that you are not alone because we are all connected in the universe. Know that every member of your internal self is part of the whole and worthy of love and of being heard. And know that it's all right to remain divided if you can get your system to co-operate. No one member is more important than another in the long haul. The tunnel to yourself is long, painful, and, more often than not, extremely frustrating, but it does have an end. If you all work together, even through the chaos and pain, there can be peace.

* * *

You might notice that Stella integrated all her parts through a ceremony, and had considerable difficulty afterwards. It is possible that this was because the insiders’ emotions, particularly guilt and shame, had not been fully worked through when she processed the memories. Stella was in a hurry, because of her high position in the cult and the ongoing harassment she was experiencing. She warns us that, for survivors who are still being accessed by perpetrator groups, it is unsafe to continue to have child insiders remain separate, because the groups can re-split them to create new parts, whereas they are unable to do this to a fully integrated person.

However, as you may be aware, guilt and shame are, unfortunately, an effect of your front people and some insider parts coming to know and take ownership of things you have done because of your involvement in the mind-controlling perpetrator group. There is no way to avoid dealing with these feelings and the spiritual issues that they raise. Because of this, I recommend working through the emotions gradually as the memories are accessed a little at a time. Generally, it is helpful for the parts who are just memory fragments or partial "people" to join with stronger ones, and it is easier for a personality system to work together with a smaller number of parts.

Full integration is not *the only* healthy resolution of dissociative splitting. Survivor Jen Callow has thought a lot about the process of integration. In this article, written two years ago, she demonstrates that there is no formula for how parts, individually or in relationship, will respond to this process, for what will change, and how parts will feel. She also shows what can happen if insiders are not fully involved in, and prepared for, the process. She explores the value of keeping out just a bit of a memory until all parts involved in that memory are really, really ready to integrate. "Integration," she says, "is more of a journey, and doesn't have to mean total fusion." On the other hand, it "isn't about losing who you are, it's about becoming what you were meant to be."

Jen Callow: "To integrate or not to integrate"

I started out with over 700 fully and partially developed parts, although only a handful spent time in the outside world. Partially developed parts are ones that carry memory fragments, but do not have a clear identity and personality, unlike fully formed parts. Now I have about 150 parts, since many times two or more parts have merged into one new part that is a composite of these original parts. With merging, the walls completely disappear and there's no barrier between certain parts anymore. This can lead to a stronger sense of self. When parts were really ready to merge, my merges happened effortlessly without my full awareness. I sometimes felt a new energy coming into me, the outside part, but normally only noticed a shift in my perceptions, feelings, or beliefs afterward. Often, I felt stronger and more whole inside. For a number of my parts, integration like this is just "something that happens". Some are quite positive about it, seeing it as becoming stronger and wiser, gaining in life experience. I have child parts who look forward to "growing taller" through merging with another part.

For parts who are unprepared or do not understand what is happening, or who do not want, or are not ready, to merge, this merging can be terrifying. All parts respond to integration differently, depending upon how close they are to the parts being integrated, whether it is happening directly to them, and their beliefs around what is happening. With my system, it also depends upon whether they are fully or partially developed parts. Merges between partial and full parts seem to be easier, with the partial part being strongly pulled toward the full part. Merges between fully developed parts have the potential to be more emotional.

Many of my parts still fear integration. Some parts see the inner world decreasing, with a physical loss of playmates, friends, and care-givers as various parts merge. This can result in a huge sense of loss, and parts may need time to grieve. This reduction in numbers can also be interpreted as people "disappearing" and parts might be afraid of disappearing, too. Others see integration as a loss of self, and are terrified at the prospect.

Just as integration can be a welcome event, it can also be traumatic when parts are not ready to integrate or merge. Once, I had a part crying as he merged, resisting all the way. Pete (the name he chose) hadn't realised he would merge when he helped process a particular memory, and it was an awful experience for him. He was not prepared for what was happening to him. He had just processed a long and terrifying memory on the assurance that it would help him and my system feel better. Afterward, he fought the merge, moving in and out of the other part involved. Eventually, I discovered he was still trying to keep out a piece of the memory so he could stay separate. But by this point he hated being half in and half out, and realised he could not go back to being fully himself. When Pete released the memory piece, we processed it, and he merged with the other part. This took only a few minutes, now that he was ready. The new part still contains elements of Pete, and he tells me everything's all right, although he still carries some of Pete's anger and sadness about the merge. Had we made it clear that he might merge if we went through the memory, and offered him the opportunity to address his feelings and perhaps, in his case, the choice to stay separate (see next paragraph), merging would not have been so traumatic.

It might be helpful under some circumstances to arrange to leave a small piece of a memory unprocessed until resistant parts are ready to integrate. The memory piece could be a smell, a sound, an image, or even a short scene, whatever works best for you and will create the least disturbance if it is left in your system. Regardless, whatever is left unprocessed needs to be something that was directly held by the part, otherwise the part could merge. If a part chooses to leave a piece unprocessed, it is important to set the piece aside in such a way that it won't get added into the memory, or affect the rest of the system. For example, the part could put the memory fragment into an inside container, label it for easy retrieval should the memory need to be finished, and then put it in a safe spot where it can be found, but will not be accidentally opened.

Use this technique sparingly, though, as each memory piece dramatically increases the chance that one of the associated memories could be opened again and negatively impact you, regardless of how much of the memory was actually processed. Only when memories are fully processed are they gone and carry no risk of impacting you.

Parts that have merged might also need support to adjust. It might be hard for them to fit in, to find their new role in the inner world. A merge may suddenly result in a part becoming older and no longer at the same developmental level as his/her playmates, or any number of other changes. My merged parts seemed to adjust fairly easily because I had made a point to help all of the parts involved find new roles in my inner system, whether they had merged or not. So, parts often had fairly clear roles before they merged, and afterward their roles were simply amalgamated or expanded.

For a number of my parts, integrating is scary because it means giving up their identity and becoming someone new and unknown. In my view, merging is a micro-version of spiritual bliss, or nirvana. In both of these situations, giving up the self or ego to a higher power is called for, in order to achieve a greater unity and sense of inner peace. With integration, I am achieving a greater unity within myself, as opposed to merging with a greater spiritual force, although I find my spiritual connection deepens, as well. Many books have been written on the subject of spiritual enlightenment and a common theme is how terrifying and difficult it can be to give up your sense of self, your individuality and identity—in other words, your ego. This fear exists even with the promise of an incredibly joyous and peaceful state. Each part's thoughts, feelings, and personality will not be their own any more. Integration, in both a dissociative and spiritual sense, is a leap of faith.

If you have not experienced integration yet, it can be hard for you to imagine what it might be like. If some parts have merged successfully, it can be helpful for parts that are scared of merging to talk with them. Some parts may need to understand that it is not a painful process and that they will be all right in the end. This should never be done to coerce parts to merge, but, rather, to help alleviate their fears so they can make a good choice for themselves.

I believe my fear of merging is, in part, due to never being allowed to develop a separate sense of self growing up. To survive, I had to adapt myself to be whoever people wanted me to be, and as I developed my sense of self in my recovery process, I became scared of losing it or having it ripped away. This fear also came from abusers forcing me to switch (change parts out in the body) at their whim, and not knowing if I'd ever be able to bring any given part back or for how long. As my sense of self became more secure, I became less scared of losing it. Integration is not about losing who you are, it is about becoming who you were meant to be. This doesn't mean that I want to fully integrate all my parts, or that none of my parts is afraid. Rather, it means I have a stronger foundation to draw upon when integration does happen.

Integration is more of a journey than a specific goal, and it doesn't have to mean total fusion. During the course of my recovery, I found that the “walls” between my different parts grew thinner. At first, my parts became aware of one another's presence. Then it got easier to communicate with each other and to work together to build a community. More parts were able to participate in my daily life and to feel that they mattered. It also became easier to find and rescue parts that were still in unpleasant situations inside.

My personal choice has been to integrate, but not completely. My system is now cohesive enough that I can experience a high degree of personal safety and I have come to view my inner world as my family. Someday, I may become “one” person, but that's not my goal. I am happy in my life and enjoy the company of my inner parts. I have come to love and cherish them in a way they didn't experience in the outer world, and would miss their distinct personalities and spirit should they fully become part of me. They have taught me how to increasingly love myself as I come to love each of them.

And the parts that have integrated have taught me how to trust, to know it can be safe to connect deeply with others, and that as I connect within, I am also connecting with the divine.

* * *

Whether or not to fully integrate is up to the person—or is it? Stella chose full integration. Trish Fotheringham, as reported in her DVD (2009), did not choose either way. All of her parts remained for a long time as separate parts inside her, but then one day, when she was experiencing anguish and despair about her life, all the parts came together and integrated into a single identity. Like her, Jen chose to integrate some parts but allow others to remain separate. This is a valid choice. However, even if that is what you plan to do, it is not always what happens, or at least not what remains the case throughout your life. Here is what happened to Jen (and also to Trish).

Jen Callow: “Life after integration”

About six or seven months after writing my first piece on whether or not to integrate (above), I unexpectedly integrated. A friend was doing some energy healing on me and cleared a lot of stuck energy, particularly in my abdomen. I felt my energy shifting and changing; the top of my head was tingling. When she had finished, my parts had merged and the inner “lines” holding my programmes had vanished; I had integrated.

The irony of my integration wasn't lost on me, considering I had chosen to remain multiple and some of my parts feared losing themselves through integration. In reality, integration itself was both powerful and natural. Afterward, I felt stronger and more peaceful, and a knowing that it had been time to integrate. The biggest challenge was adjusting to being whole. Integration is not a common outcome of energy healing and I was not prepared for it. Just as people who are multiple are unique, I suspect there are many ways of integrating. I offer this piece as a rough guideline to what life after integration can be like, and as help to adjust to this change.

Over the coming weeks, I did my best to adjust to the quiet inside me. I felt hollow and lonely without the chatter and activity that had been there up until integration. Before the integration, I still had around 100 parts, I think, although I cannot properly remember now. They had provided company, unique ways of seeing the world, and a chance to take breaks from everyday life by switching with one of my older parts for short periods of time. I found it exhausting to be "out" all the time and wished I could escape the way I used to, even for a few minutes. I still zone out for short periods, even now, in order to keep from getting over-stimulated—often on walks, or somewhere safe.

I also had to adjust to feeling many emotions at once. Although I had experienced this to a lesser extent as my system became more cohesive, I now experienced mixed emotions over many things that had seemed very straightforward. It took time for me to realise this was normal, and even healthy. It also took time to learn to sit with myself, to feel all the emotions as I breathed and tuned into my body's messages and my intuition. This was the only way I seemed to be able to make clearer and wiser decisions for myself, in addition to it being a coping mechanism. Gradually, sifting through my emotions became easier. It is definitely one thing to learn to manage differing emotions as you grow up, another to get a crash course in it through integration.

My biggest challenge was adjusting to the loss of my kid parts. I hadn't realised how much I had drawn on their energy and ways of being in the world in order to survive. Although they were still within me, and were not "dead" or lost, they were no longer separate. Their unique energy had merged into the larger whole of "me". Without them being separate, my energy felt flat and I felt very old. I had no reference for being my actual adult age in the world, even though I had been capably dealing with adult responsibilities for many years. Months later, I am finally learning to generate energy without relying on my inner kids; when I am living in my passion and joy, fully in the moment, a lot of that energy returns. Only now it feels different, deeper somehow, as it is sourced from my whole self. I believe this will help me learn to be an adult in the world while retaining the enthusiasm and wonder of my inner child.

I remained in a state of full integration for at least several more months, until one day I went inside myself to deal with some strong feelings coming up and discovered another part. She was a young girl who had been buried deep inside of me. From other people I know of who have integrated, it seems common to find one or more parts and to still be, essentially, integrated, as the rest of me was energetically still in that state of "oneness". Thankfully, my inner structures were still intact, so the girl had places to live. When I wondered how I would properly support her, given I spend most of my time out in the world and she would be living alone inside, some of my parts spontaneously re-separated. I still cannot explain how this happened. These parts were sad to do this, missing the feeling of being integrated, but were also willing to help. It was empowering to realise I now had a true choice about whether to be integrated or multiple.

Interestingly, although I can still have parts, it is harder to create any helpers inside. Helpers differ from my parts and were a significant part of my system before I integrated; when I integrated, they disappeared. Created from my imagination, helpers provided what felt like a very real presence and help inside. We (myself and my parts who separated to be a support system) no longer have extra healers, mother figures and the like, to draw on, though we somehow managed to re-create our main healer, who performs her same duties. She is less substantial than she was before, though not exactly a ghost, either.

The young girl I found inside was in a lot of pain, although she was no longer attached to any programme line (my system was like a spider web of coloured lines, each one a programme with parts locked on to it). I held her inside, as a caring adult, and listened to what she had to say, witnessed the scenes she showed me. I let her feelings move through and out of me, acknowledged her pain, and when she was ready to hear it, showed her how things were different now and reassured her I would keep her safe. There was no need to run through the memory over and over, as in the past, or to specifically link up each part of the memory with a feeling, sound, etc. Because all of the other parts involved had already merged with her, a lot had been processed through other memory work (including related memories with similar feelings, sounds, etc.), and this memory wasn't as intense or charged as it would have been in the past. Once she had been reassured, she also had some feelings to express over being deceived. After that, she continued to live in the inner world for some time, feeling more safety and love than she had had before. When she had worked through whatever remained, she simply integrated. It wasn't something I was aware of, I only noticed one day she was gone and I think she had integrated sometime before that.

Most of the time, I find what's left from the abuse is body memories and core beliefs. When I have feelings that are overwhelming, or out of proportion to the event, I make a point of tracing them back inside. Sometimes, the feelings are truly an in-the-moment reaction, but usually they are from inner parts. Sometimes, I trace them back to what “normal” people describe as their inner child. We are all dissociative to some extent, and many “normal” people would say they have an inner child; practically everyone has areas and parts of themselves they hold separate. These inner children don't feel as if they were separate to begin with, in the way one of my actual parts would feel separate, and I do not remember them being a part of my system. They are less substantial than actual parts, and appear more translucent to me, although just as real as any other part. (My actual parts were solid in my inner world, both visually and to the touch.) After I listen to the inner children and support them in working through their concerns, they hang around inside for a while, and once they have had whatever corrective experiences they need and released all their feelings, they tend to integrate, or reintegrate, on their own. Integration isn't the big deal it used to be.

Recently, I did find a group of three actual parts still attached to part of a programme line. This caught me by surprise. The young girl had a wisp of green coming out of her back, the remains of the programme line, and was upset at being tortured and poked. I soothed her as best as I could and, because of the green wisp, traced the “line” back to another young part who was doing the poking. He was also being encouraged by a third part holding a lot of rage. These parts were living in isolation and could not do much damage due to the lack of a whole programme line and related parts; however, they were attached enough to still affect each other. Their shared memories were emotionally charged and intense. I've had to do a lot of processing, and have worked with them similarly to when I was in therapy, just with fewer parts holding larger pieces of the memory. I have had to link more of their feelings, sounds, sights, etc., in a movie of sorts, and to watch it several times with all of these parts present. The third part has a lot of anger, which we are helping him with inside. This group of parts has proved more challenging to help, due to the strength and complexity of their beliefs and feelings. With fewer of us inside, there is more room for individual attention, which can help parts such as these. My hope is that over time, they will come to trust us more and be willing to release their pain. The difference now is that their pain doesn't overwhelm my system or, since I have integrated, me, and we are concerned for them more as individuals than from any agenda of our own (e.g., making our life easier, integration, etc.).

A focus in my healing now is helping my physical body release trapped energy. This is energy still stored in it from the abuse, which has created imbalance and illnesses over the years. Now that I have done so much emotional and spiritual healing, it finally seems possible to heal physically (much of the imbalance is still emotionally based). I do guided meditations, breath work, and various forms of energy work, along with regular exercise and movement. I often visualise the stuck energy moving, leaving my body as a cloud of smog, and visualise my being filled with light. When I do this work, my body feels progressively lighter.

The most challenging thing for me now is dealing with the deep-seated core beliefs left over from the abuse. These include: “I'm not worthy”, “There's never enough”, “I'm a bad person”, “Everything good gets taken away”, and “I can't keep myself safe”. Since integration, I've realised how much these beliefs permeate my life and influence how I both show up in the world and take care of myself. After years of therapy, and finally feeling done with that, I didn't realise I'd still have this piece ahead of me.

Sometimes life provides corrective experiences where it is clearly shown that the old beliefs are not true, and if I am ready to accept a new way of seeing myself and the world, I will have an “aha!” moment that dramatically shifts things. I am deliberately choosing ways of being that shift behaviour patterns no longer serving me. For example, instead of allowing myself to feel hurt and not speaking up, increasingly I take the risk to speak my truths. I also might choose to reach out and have fun with a friend when I'm feeling unloved, or to look for ways I can give love that day, which opens me up to receiving it.

I also spend time, ideally each day, going inside and communicating with the inner children who send feelings up to me, building a strong relationship. I ground/breathe into my adult self so I can be strong and present, listen to the child's (or even teenager's) feelings, let them express without interruption or judgement and let them know they've been heard. I notice what core beliefs have been triggered, and with the child's help, determine how the feelings and beliefs were triggered in the present, and what they are related to in the past. I commit to taking action when and if I can, and reassure the child with concrete examples that things are different now. I also increasingly make a point to spend quality time with my inner child in play, quiet time, or whatever it is they need. This all goes a long way to clearing core beliefs, I find, when coupled with positive affirmations. It is a long process for me and some days I feel like giving up in frustration, but when I can step back from my perfectionism and desire to be completely free of the abuse, I know I've come a long way and it's worth it. Once a detrimental belief is changed, it is as if a whole new area of the world opens up to me.

I have changed a lot since integration. My sense of self is deeper and stronger, my body feels amazingly whole and I can feel the energy flowing from my feet on the floor all the way up to the top of my head. Although I still have an underlying anxiety about life, which comes from the core beliefs and few remaining parts, I am not overwhelmed by programming any more. Even when I am triggered, it is usually feelings with maybe some brief flashbacks, and they are easier to clear. It is more stable, secure, and peaceful inside, and I think that's reflected in the fact that integration isn't even an issue any more. My inner world is becoming my inner sanctuary. More and more often, I am able to find a place of power, expansiveness and joy within myself. I am finally able to be more of who I am, to more fully express myself in the world.

Although people will label my inner state as they wish, I feel and identify as integrated and “one” person. I don't fit the world of “multiple” any more; I'm creating my own new world now. Although integration wasn't what I wanted, and I feel I am moving through largely uncharted territory now, it is worth it to feel so whole and solid. I would never tell anyone to integrate, and still truly believe being multiple is a perfectly valid and good-feeling way to live once parts are connected enough. For me, integration feels natural, like the birth of the person I am meant to be.

* * *

You might notice that Jen's experience of spontaneous integration, later finding one or more hidden parts, and then their integration, is much like that of Meredith Sharman (in Chapter Seventeen). They and the other integrated survivors I know are content with the way things developed, as it was natural. As I read Jen's account of life since integration, I see that there is some loss in integration, the loss of the child parts and their energy as separate, and the internal noise and conversations. There is, however, a strength and a peacefulness and a sense of wholeness.

There is also the experience of ambivalence and mixed emotions, as well as the stress of being “out” all the time. We can see that integration does not mean there is nothing left to heal. Jen names trapped energy that needs release, core beliefs such as “I'm bad”, and experiences of out-of-proportion emotions related to present-day post-traumatic triggers. These experiences are no different to those which regular non-multiple people, singletons, have to deal with. You might notice that her way of processing her emotions and triggering is much like what I have recommended in Chapters Ten and Thirteen. Therapy can be helpful for singletons as well as multiples—but you may find that you have developed such skills at inner work that you no longer need professional help.

A client of mine, an older man whose childhood trauma did not include ongoing mind control or ritual abuse, is in the integration process. After finding himself being clearly assertive in a situation in which he would previously have just given in to others’ demands, he wrote to me:

> I tell you this to confirm that integration allows assertiveness and action. When faced with difficulties, a small child is not left to deal with the problems. Shifting moods keep a person from making decisions and carrying them out. A consistent mood state allows thinking through problems, taking into account the various thoughts, feelings, without being overwhelmed by one of them. Difficulties don't have to result in despair. Time and energy can be budgeted.
>
> How much easier is life for the integrated.

However, he also says:

> Integration is very painful and difficult. I think the dominant feeling of integration is sorrow. Dissociation, while an immediate solution to a problem, pain, fear, when maintained, creates endless losses. Consistency is required for success and productivity. You can't be successful when constantly changing mood states, personalities. Dissociation does not allow adaptability. It keeps a person from understanding other people. It makes it very hard to create and maintain friendships, professional relationships. It maintains and gives power to the past. I have been unable to shake free from my mother yelling “You are nobody and nothing and don't you ever forget it.” It's always there.

As you heal, you feel sorrow about all the years during which you could not take charge of your own life because parts of you were trapped in the past.

There is no “right” way for all multiples. Keep in mind the goal of recovery. It is not to make a multiple into a singleton, but to become more functional and free of disabling symptoms. For a mind-control survivor, the goal is to remove all the external controls over your mind so that you can be a full human being—free, in charge of your own life, choosing your own life goals.

Each system will naturally blend to a smaller or greater degree as memory work goes along, and, at the end, find its own resolution. As someone once said, survivors may integrate, or become a corporation, or become a collective. But what happens will happen naturally, and that is as it should be. In the end, the choice is yours.

I use two different images in explaining integration to my clients. The first is two rivers joining. All the water that was in each river is contained in the new, larger river, which contains both of them. The only thing that is gone is the strip of land between them, which represents the secrets that they did not previously share. The new river will probably carry the name of one of the original smaller rivers, but it will contain all the water—all the memories and experiences—of the other small river, too.

The other image I use is that of a stained glass lamp. Many coloured pieces come together to make a beautiful lamp through which the light can shine, displaying all the colours and making a picture that could not be seen as long as the pieces were separated. This image can be used for co-operative co-consciousness as well as for integration.

I have been asked "What happens to your memories after integration?" Once a memory is known to your everyday consciousness, it starts to mingle with other similar memories in your brain, and the details fade. It is hard to remember exactly when something happened, though the fact that it happened remains clear. An event is never so clear in its sensory details as when it is first *experienced*—and, for delayed recall, that means when the memory is first put together, even though this might be years after the event happened. If you want to know exactly what happened to you, you should write it down or tape your account right after you first put the memory together, or after each piece comes out. Then you can refer back to the account you made when the memory was fresh.

What about the feelings from the traumatic memories? After integration, they will be less raw than when you first experienced them, but they can probably be triggered to some extent by life events that resemble the original traumas. If and when this happens, you will need to revisit those traumas as well as the triggering situation, search for hidden parts or "inner children" whose feelings have been triggered, and offer love and security to those parts of you.

As Jen discovered, you might also need to work on changing the beliefs you acquired during those years when you were so unsafe. Of course, you will not end up with the naïve, sunny outlook of someone who has never suffered. The goal is to put the bad things in perspective, as part of what happens in a world which contains both good and bad, and still has many wonderful experiences to offer, especially as you move forward.

Exercise 35. Internal consultation about integration and life direction

Do you have parts who have merged with one another? If so, how and when did this happen? What seems to have caused it?

How do the merged parts feel about what has happened to them?

How do the other parts feel about what has happened to those who merged? If they are upset or confused, give them a chance to communicate with the joined parts to see whether the parts who seem to be missing are still there within the new people, and what it is like for them.

Consult your main outsiders about what their recovery goal might be. Do they want everyone inside to remain separate? Or to have a reduced number of parts who co-operate with one another? Or to achieve full integration?

What might you need to do to reach this goal?

Do you, or some of your parts, have an idea about what is the most important thing to do with your life, once you are in charge of your own life? If you do, what is that idea? Does everyone inside agree with it?

What stage of life are you in? How do you feel about having those years prior to recovery taken away from you? How are you handling this grief?

Maintaining your emotional and spiritual health

Much of what I have covered in this book is repairing the damage that the mind control and ritual abuse did to you. If the damage were physical, you would need a series of surgeries to repair the breakages caused by a series of severe physical traumas. But after the surgeries, you would need to maintain your physical health through exercise, healthy eating, regular checkups, rest and recreation.

Good health is more than repair; it requires ongoing maintenance. The activities Jen talks about in "Life after integration" are all ways in which she maintains her psychological and emotional health. Chapters Twelve, Thirteen, and Eighteen of this book are full of suggestions for ongoing work which will help you become a fully functional, mature, and developed person. In addition, once the "repair" part is completed by working through your traumatic memories, you can learn and grow in many new ways as you become your authentic self.

Finding a life direction

Most survivors who are in the recovery process are not able to be content with the petty values they see in the general population around them; they want to contribute to the world and to others through their work or creative output. Our abilities are meant to be used, to contribute to the world. Many "normal" people are bored, and lack self-esteem because they feel useless. Their jobs are meaningless, their recreation is adequate but boring, and they feel they are just marking time. An authentic person wants to take it further and use his or her gifts for the good of others. This gives deep satisfaction, not just for survivors, but for anyone.

As you work towards integration, or co-operative co-consciousness, and become more functional and more in touch with your feelings, needs, and abilities, the question will arise of what you want to do with your life. That is a big deal for someone whose right and ability to think independently and make choices has been derailed.

Some survivors will choose to become outspoken survivor advocates. For them, recovery might resemble what it means to alcohol and drug addicts, whose sobriety requires that they "pass it on", or they might find the meaning they need to attach to their suffering, and the suffering they were forced to cause, by bearing witness to the truth in a public way. Some will choose to "go public" through publishing and telling their stories to the world, by helping others through such forums as web discussions, by "fighting back" through lawsuits against their abusers, or by making their survivor status publicly known in other ways. If you are not fully integrated, however, there are considerable dangers in this. Programming can still be triggered through words, non-verbal signals, or what appear to be innocent questions. One of my clients who was involved in a court case recently had programmes reactivated when a lawyer (who had access to my clinical notes) asked him about certain alter personalities (probably on purpose to trigger him). Another had programmes triggered through words spoken to her by a participant in an online forum she was helping to lead. As I mentioned earlier, I lost a client when a man found her in an online discussion group and worked out her personality system. I have also, on two different occasions, seen well-known public speakers on the topic of ritual abuse use deliberate triggers as part of their talks.

Never forget that these abuser groups have a strong interest in keeping their secrets, and survivors who expose their status publicly, even by attending lectures on the subject, need to be alert for triggering events. I recommend that survivors be very cautious about "going public", and only do it if they truly feel it is their calling.

Many, perhaps most, survivors might decide of their own free will to leave all those awful experiences in the past and get on with lives that have nothing to do with mind control or ritual abuse. The *choice*, the *decision*, is entirely yours. You can have a life outside of mind control and ritual abuse. Meredith Sharman, who tells her story in Chapter Seventeen, has chosen an entirely different life direction, one in which she contributes to society, but has nothing to do with the abuses of her past.

* * *

Well, dear reader, that is it. I have shared much of what I know about the process of overcoming mind control and ritual abuse. It is almost as if I were ending therapy with a long-term client, with whom I have travelled a great distance, through many ups and downs, to a successful conclusion. If you have actually read through to this point, you have learnt a great deal, and if you have done the exercises, you have changed a great deal. Ending is sad, but it is also an accomplishment! And a beginning.

I know that you did not choose what happened to you, but I also know that you can choose what you make of your life now. You can accomplish this, regardless of what abusers did to make you believe otherwise. All your experiences have given you strengths that most people do not have, since you have survived unimaginable challenges and emerged dedicated to recovery. You have developed wisdom along the way, and as you share among your parts what you have learnt, that wisdom will provide practical guidance for the road ahead. You have a great deal to offer the world.

When I used to teach parent education courses, there were many parents who chose to take the courses over and over again, because there were so many things they did not fully “get” the first time through. As they became skilled in one aspect of parenting, their eyes would open to another aspect they needed to learn. This book is designed like a course. You can read its chapters, and do the exercises they contain, over and over again, discovering new things each time. It would make me happy to know you were doing that, because no one could possibly learn all that is in this book in one read-through. Most of this material took me over twenty years to learn. I encourage you to continue to learn from it, as well as from other sources.

This might be your most basic recovery textbook, because it deals specifically with mind control and ritual abuse. However, there are many other helpful books and courses, some specifically directed at the area of life that gives you difficulty. As you explore further learning, remember that your mind is your own, and it is unwise to slavishly follow any other person's method. Accept only what resonates with your deepest parts as true and helpful. Discard the rest. (You can do this with my book, too.)

You have the rest of your life ahead to keep learning and growing. This book has addressed the most difficult parts of the journey. The rest of it can be a wonderful adventure in becoming your true self, and contributing from your own deepest being to the greater whole of humanity and life on this planet.

REFERENCES

Alderman, T., & Marshall, K. (1998). *Amongst Ourselves: A Self-Help Guide to Living with Dissociative Identity Disorder.* Oakland, CA: New Harbinger.

ATW (2005). *Got Parts? An Insider's Guide to Managing Life Successfully with Dissociative Identity Disorder.* Ann Arbor, MI: Loving Healing Press.

Ball, T. (2008). The use of prayer for inner healing of memories and deliverance with ritual abuse survivors. In: R. Noblitt & P. Noblitt (Eds.), *Ritual Abuse in the 21st Century* (pp. 413–442). Bandon, OR: Robert D. Reed.

Bass, E., & Davis, L. (1988). *The Courage to Heal: A Guide for Women Survivors of Child Sexual Abuse.* New York: Harper & Row.

Blume, E. S. (1991). *Secret Survivors: Uncovering Incest and its Aftereffects in Women.* New York: Ballantine Books, 1998.

Boon, S., Steele, K., & van der Hart, O. (2011). *Coping with Trauma-Related Dissociation.* New York: Norton.

Bradshaw, J. (1988). *Bradshaw on: The Family.* Deerfield Beach, FL: Health Communications.

Briere, J., & Runtz, M. (n.d.). Trauma symptoms checklist. www.johnbriere.com/tsc.htm.

Carter, C. (2007). *Science and Psychic Phenomena: The Fall of the House of Skeptics.* Rochester, VT: Inner Traditions.

Carter, C. (2010). *Science and the Near-Death Experience: How Consciousness Survives Death.* Rochester, VT: Inner Traditions.

Carter, C. (2012). *Science and the Afterlife Experience: Evidence for the Immortality of Consciousness.* Rochester, VT: Inner Traditions.

Dissociative Experiences Scale (n.d.). www.serene.me.uk/tests/des.pdf.

Epstein, O. B., Schwartz, J., & Schwartz, R. W. (Eds.) (2011). *Ritual Abuse and Mind Control: The Manipulation of Attachment Needs.* London: Karnac.

Extreme Abuse Survey Results (n.d.). http://eassurvey.wordpress.com/extreme-abuse-survey-final-results/.

Fotheringham, T. (2008). Patterns in mind control: a first person account. In: R. Noblitt & P. Perskin-Noblitt (Eds.), *Ritual Abuse in the 21st Century* (pp. 491–540). Bandon, OR: Robert D. Reed.

Fotheringham, T. (2009). Healing from ritual abuse and mind control: survivor Trish Fotheringham speaks out. Available from: www.endritualabuse.org.

Freyd, J. (1996). *Betrayal Trauma.* Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.

Gingrich, H. D. (2013). *Restoring the Shattered Self: A Christian Counselor's Guide to Complex Trauma.* Downers Grove, IL: Inter-Varsity Press.

Gottman, J. M., & Silver, N. (1999). *The Seven Principles for Making Marriage Work.* New York: Three Rivers Press.

Griffin, D., & Bartholomew, K. (1994). Models of the self and other: fundamental dimensions underlying measures of adult attachment. *Journal of Personality and Social Psychology*, *67*(3): 430–445.

Guardian (2009). Re. sex trade trafficking: www.guardian.co.uk/world/2009/nov/22/people–trafficking–usa–prostitution–ohio.

Hawkins, T. R. (2010). *Dissociative Identity Disorder. Volume 1, Psychological Dynamics.* Grottoes, VA: RCM.

International Society for the Study of Trauma and Dissociation: http://www.isst-d.org/.

Johnson, S. (2008). *Hold Me Tight: Seven Conversations for a Lifetime of Love.* New York: Little, Brown.

Kluft, R. (2013). *Shelter from the Storm: Processing the Traumatic Memories of DID/DDNOS Patients with the Fractionated*

Abreaction Technique. North Charleston, SC: CreateSpace Independent Publishing Platform.

Lacter, E. website: http://ritualabuse.us.

Lacter, E., Karriker, W., Ball, T., Sinason, V., & Somer, E. (2012). Therapists reporting histories of ritual abuse trauma: preliminary results on beneficial and detrimental treatment approaches. 29th Annual Conference of the ISST-D, October.

Lerner, H. (2009a). *The Dance of Anger.* New York: HarperCollins.

Lerner, H. (2009b). *The Dance of Connection.* New York: HarperCollins.

Lerner, H. (2009c). *The Dance of Deception.* New York: HarperCollins.

Lerner, H. (2009d). *The Dance of Fear.* New York: HarperCollins.

Lerner, H. (2009e). *The Dance of Intimacy.* New York: HarperCollins.

LisaBri website: www.dissociatedsurvivor.com.

Los Angeles County Commission for Women's Ritual Abuse Task Force report (1991). http://ritualabuse.us/ritualabuse/articles/report-of-the-ritual-abuse-task-force-los-angeles-county-commission-for-women/.

“Many Voices” (contact www.manyvoicespress.com/newsletter.html.)

McKay, M., & Fanning, P. (1996.) *When Anger Hurts Your Kids.* Oakland, CA: New Harbinger.

Miller, A. (2012). *Healing the Unimaginable: Treating Ritual Abuse and Mind Control.* London: Karnac.

Miller, A., & Rees, A. (2006). *Sidestepping the Power Struggle.* Victoria, BC: LIFE Seminars.

Miller, A., & Rees, A. (2008). *The Parent–Child Connection.* Victoria, BC: LIFE Seminars.

MKUltra declassified document (n.d.). http://abuse-of-power.org/modules/content/index.php?id=31.

Morales, A. L. (1998). Torturers. In: *Medicine Stories: History, Culture and the Politics of Integrity* (pp. 111–116). Cambridge, MA: South End Press.

Noblitt, R., & Perskin-Noblitt, P. (2008). *Ritual Abuse in the 21st Century.* Bandon, OR: Robert D. Reed.

Oglevie, Steve (n.d.). http://truthbeknown2000.tripod.com/Truthbeknown2000/id23/html.

Oksana, C. (1994). *Safe Passage to Healing: A Guide for Survivors of Ritual Abuse.* Lincoln, NE: iUniverse.com.

Patterson, C. H. (2000). Empathy, warmth and genuineness in psychotherapy: a review of reviews. In: *Understanding Psychotherapy: Fifty Years of Client-Centered Theory and Practice* (pp. 431–438). Ross-on-Wye: PCCS Books. See: www.sageofasheville.com/pub_downloads/EMPATHY_WARMTH_AND_GENUINESS_IN_PSYCHOTHERAPY.pdf.

Riseman, J. (n.d.). Simplifying complex programming. www.survivorship.org/resources/articles/programming.html.

Riseman, J. Website: www.ra-info.org. Blog: www.ritualabuse.wordpress.com.

Rose, E. P. (1996). *Reaching for the Light: A Guide for Ritual Abuse Survivors and Their Therapists.* Cleveland, OH: Pilgrim Press.

Ross, C. (2000). *Bluebird: Deliberate Creation of Multiple Personalities by Psychiatrists.* Republished as *The CIA Doctors: Human Rights Violations by American Psychiatrists.* Richardson, TX: Manitou Com munications.

Ross, C. A. (1997). *Dissociative Identity Disorder: Diagnosis, Clinical Features, and Treatment of Multiple Personality* (2nd edn). New York: John Wiley.

Rutz, C. (2001). *A Nation Betrayed: The Chilling True Story of Secret Cold War Experiments Performed on Our Children and Other Innocent People.* Grass Lake, MI: Fidelity (http://my.dmci.net/~casey/).

Rutz, C., Becker, T., Overkamp, B., & Karriker, W. (2007). Exploring commonalities reported by adult survivors of extreme abuse: preliminary empirical findings. In: R. Noblitt & P. Noblitt (Eds.), *Ritual Abuse in the 21st Century* (pp. 491–540). Bandon, OR: Robert D. Reed.

Sachs, A. (2012). Boundary modifications in the treatment of people with dissociative disorders. *Journal of Trauma and Dissociation*, *14*(2): 159–169.

Sachs, A. (2013). Still being hurt: the vicious cycle of dissociative disorders, attachment and ongoing abuse. *Attachment: New Directions in Psychotherapy and Relational Psychoanalysis*, *7*(1): 90–100.

Steinberg, M. (2000). *The Stranger in the Mirror.* New York: HarperCollins.

Survivorship: www.survivorship.org/.

Svali First Series (2000). How the Illuminati Programs People. www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/esp_sociopol_illuminati_svali01a.htm#menu.

INDEX

- abuse/abusers *see also*: alcohol, drug(s), mind control, mother, parent(s)
  - child/childhood, 1, 9, 16, 18–19, 23–24, 26, 29, 45, 53, 158, 166–167, 177, 179, 197, 242–243, 246, 258–259, 282, 293
    - survivors, xv, 105, 158, 179, 188–189, 287, 289, 320
  - emotional, 1, 83, 242, 244, 253–254, 263, 320, 322
  - organised, 16, 46, 54, 90, 189, 207, 212–213, 215–216, 222, 234, 236, 253, 277, 309, 352
    - survivor(s), 22, 51, 55, 112, 131, 202, 244, 297, 320
  - physical, 1, 6, 17–18, 45, 83, 166, 235, 237, 242, 244, 253–254, 263, 278, 297, 320–322
  - religious, 16–19, 22, 49, 54, 62
  - ritual, xiv–xv, xvii, 2–4, 6–13, 16–19, 23–26, 34, 45, 49, 52, 65, 80, 88, 109, 115, 120, 130–131, 134, 158–159, 165, 167–169, 180, 195, 201, 220, 233, 235, 237, 239, 241, 243, 255–256, 282, 295, 297–298, 302–303, 305, 307, 311–312, 317, 320, 325, 334, 336–337, 339, 341, 343–345, 353, 367–370 *see also*: Satanic
    - indicators of, 7
    - survivor(s), 1, 5, 7, 9, 11, 21, 25, 29, 33, 40, 45, 48, 50, 52, 67, 71–73, 79, 86, 107, 109, 119, 121–122, 125, 127–131, 133, 142, 147, 149, 157, 160, 162–163, 165–166, 168, 186, 190, 193, 195, 199, 201, 203, 207, 209, 213, 233, 236–237, 248, 251, 273, 278, 280–283, 288, 291, 293, 295, 303, 310–311, 314, 319–320, 323, 327, 332, 334–336, 339–345, 352
    - victims, 16, 306
  - sadistic, xv, 12, 18, 22, 236, 261, 313, 326
  - sexual, 1–2, 6, 12, 16–18, 20, 23–24, 31–32, 45, 83, 91, 103, 125, 158, 162, 164–165, 190, 224, 235–237, 239, 241–243, 253, 255–256, 258, 262–263, 265–266, 273, 278, 297–298, 302, 320–322, 333
    - survivor(s), xv, 109, 130, 257, 264, 297
  - spiritual, 91, 321, 327, 343
  - verbal, 289, 320, 352
- access programming/training, 112, 119, 121–122, 126, 205
- addict/addiction, 79, 107, 116, 129, 170, 173, 179–180, 260, 262, 369
- afterlife *see*: life, after-
- agreements, 61, 94, 138, 207, 217, 229, 258, 338, 358
  - internal, 148, 216–217
  - legal, 336, 338–339, 341
- alcohol, 7, 54, 77, 80, 83, 167, 171, 174, 179–180
  - abuse, 72, 76–77, 109, 369
- Alderman, T., 43
- alien(s), 55, 66, 91, 15, 324, 337
  - abduction(s), 11, 51–52, 58
- all-powerful, 316, 342, 344–345 *see also*: empowerment, power
- all-seeing Eye, 111
- altar, 29, 306, 322–323
- alter(s), xiii, 29, 46, 51, 68, 135–136, 170–172, 336, 356–357, 369 *see also*: file keepers/managers, insider(s), part(s)
  - animal, 68–69
  - child, 69
  - controller, 46, 171
  - demonic/demons, 68–69, 336–337
  - discrete, 135

  - fairy, 170
  - genie, 170
  - pretend, 135
  - stage-of-life, 172
  - white, 171
  - witch, 170
- amnesia, 2, 6, 19, 23, 30, 32, 43, 108, 135
- angel(s), 173, 326–327, 345–346
  - blue, 326
  - of the sunset, 326, 345
- anger/angry, 35–36, 39, 41, 74, 78, 87–88, 95, 97, 101–102, 126, 158, 177, 179, 181–183, 187, 190–191, 193–194, 196, 211, 213, 219–220, 226–227, 230, 234, 236, 239, 251, 253–254, 260, 263, 274, 276, 285–286, 290–292, 297, 306, 316–317, 320–321, 361, 365 *see also*: insider(s), parts
  - chart, 292
  - expression of, 145, 152, 160, 182, 260
- answering door or phone, 41, 84, 108, 115–116, 118, 123, 164
- anxiety, 2, 34–35, 72, 79, 104, 126, 135, 146, 150, 169, 177, 181, 184, 188, 190, 219–220, 226–227, 230, 251–253, 270, 278, 281, 284, 291–292, 299, 306, 310, 313, 366
- apologies, 78, 95, 135–136, 195–196, 283, 308–309, 317, 330–331, 333–334
- apparently normal personality (ANP), 30, 80, 164
  - shell, 5, 31, 46, 54, 57, 155, 159, 205
- art, xii–xiii, 4, 30, 32, 152, 191, 231, 303, 311, 353
- Aryan race, 18, 75, 97, 99, 100–101
- assassins, 15, 18–20, 56, 65, 112, 139, 193, 324
- assumed intent, 291
- attachment
  - bond(s), 276, 313
  - early, 277–278
  - figure(s), 277–279
  - needs, 279
  - patterns, 280
  - secure, 189, 277, 280
  - spiritual, 17, 337
  - styles, 279–281, 293
  - theory, 278, 311
- attunement, 249, 276–278, 287, 314, 349–350
- ATW, 43
- autonomy, 279, 281, 287, 289, 341

- baby (babies), xiii, 56, 78, 100, 103, 114, 163, 208, 223, 252, 255, 264–265, 268–269, 271, 274, 276–277, 280, 321, 341, 345 *see also*: Jesus, part(s)
  - memories, 223–224
  - -sitter, 10, 208, 236, 267
- backups, 56, 92, 118–119, 122, 134, 141, 147
- bad *see also*: behaviour, dream(s), parenting, part(s)
  - being, 62, 171, 195, 243, 308, 320, 325, 352, 365–366
  - events/experiences, 12, 159, 246, 265, 310
  - feeling, 39, 59, 75, 187, 194, 271, 280, 306, 308
  - guy(s), 152, 354
  - habits, 235
  - internal places, 159
  - memory, 271
  - moods, 180
  - people, 73–74, 77, 99–100, 240, 308, 356, 365
  - therapist/therapy, 295, 297
  - things, 87, 100, 115, 118, 216, 270, 275, 282, 298, 320, 324, 344, 368
- Ball, T., 311, 335, 337

Bartholomew, K., 279
Bass, E., 257, 263
bathroom, 152, 163, 174, 221, 278, 305
BDSM (bondage, domination, sadism, and masochism), 261 *see also*: sadomasochism
beast *see*: part(s)
Becker, T., 128
behaviour *see also*: insider(s)
  aggressive, 187, 193, 290
  bad, 297, 342
  conditioned, 46, 71
  control, 2, 15
  dangerous/harmful, 72, 87, 108, 125, 139, 194, 208
  problem, 132–133, 260
  programmed, xvi, 46, 125–127, 134, 138, 201–202, 225, 260–261, 276, 317
  sexual, 62, 66, 260, 272
  survivor(s), 105, 260–261
  trained, xiv, 10, 46–47, 57, 121, 126–127, 134, 251, 261–262
  triggered, 47, 105, 127, 254, 316
belief(s)
  core, 364–366
  false, 38, 59, 87, 90, 220, 229
  reflective, 12
  spiritual, 342, 346
belief system(s), 48, 62, 335–336, 339, 341
  Christian, 169, 335–336
  karmic, 342–343
betrayal, 35–36, 62–63, 72, 74–75, 84, 90, 102–103, 200, 206–207, 227, 239, 245–246, 257, 319 *see also*: traitor(s)
Big Lie, 90, 110–112, 114, 118
bipolar disorder, 23, 166
birthday(s), 7–8, 48, 122, 156, 168, 291
  card(s), 40, 109
  family, 8, 57, 108, 112–113, 122, 247
  your, 8, 108, 168–169, 291
black heart, 324, 357
Black Mass, 17, 23, 26, 321, 325
blending, 5, 353–355
blood, 8, 17, 51–52, 62, 65, 75, 91, 134, 161, 208, 278, 314, 323, 328, 336, 340
Bluebird *see*: Project Bluebird
Blume, E. S., 131, 163, 255–257, 259, 262–263, 320
body
  adult's, 42, 257, 280, 348
  bomb in, 58, 112
  child's, 112, 181, 320
  language, 223, 286, 317
  memories, 2–4, 12, 34, 37, 56, 72–74, 91, 97, 108, 126, 200, 202, 208, 364
  out of, 336
  parts, 8, 145, 177, 268
  physical, 171, 365
  sensations, 3, 12, 202, 208, 211, 219, 226–227, 230, 302, 353
  your, 3–4, 8, 12, 39, 68, 70, 108, 111, 128, 131–132, 160, 162–164, 166–167, 199, 211, 220, 223–227, 230, 239, 257, 259, 261, 263–264, 272, 286, 292, 300, 316, 349–350
bond/bonding, 33, 161, 189–190, 234, 237, 248, 256, 262, 275–277, 313, 322, 349 *see also*: attachment
  mother–child, 17, 277
  parent–child, 248, 251, 276
booby trap(s), 47–48, 51, 56–58, 93, 154, 170, 192
Boon, S., xv, 43, 159
boredom, 185–186, 272
boss(es), 39, 52, 58, 62, 132, 138, 229, 270, 288–289

boundary, 84–85, 228, 251, 283–288, 292, 298, 355
  blindness, 285–287
  child's, 284, 288
  clear, 293, 298, 307, 309–310, 315
  established, 124
  firm, 86
  healthy, 283, 286
  personal, 57, 281, 283–286, 288
  secure, 193–194
  set, 84–85, 276
  violation(s), 157, 193, 286, 288, 290, 302, 312
Bradshaw, J., 194
brain
  circuits, 2, 5, 35, 37, 48, 348
  function, 15
  imaging screen, 172
  same/single, 2, 30–31, 35–37, 42, 352
  transplant, 243, 324
  -washing, 16
  wipe, 172
Braun, B., 24
breeders, 264–265, 272
Breitenbach, G., 210–212
Briere, J., 2
brothel, 167, 265
bullying, 168, 288–289
button(s), 47–48
  internal, 89
  programme, 140

cages, 8, 148, 161, 192
call home, 115
callback(s), 112, 114
Callow, J., 151–154, 230–231, 264, 360–366, 368–369
Cameron, D. E., 20
camp(s), 52, 62, 216, 234
  concentration, 18
cannibalism, 17, 195, 220, 324–325
cap, 107
care-giver(s), 2, 23, 149, 152–153, 155, 245, 276, 278, 285, 319, 361
care-taker(s), 203, 218, 229, 244, 253
Carter, C., 321
celibacy/chastity, 262–263 *see also*: sexuality
Central Intelligence Agency (CIA), 15, 19–20, 127
chair *see also*: dentist(s), spinning
  electrified, 58, 305
  gateway, 171
  red, 298, 301
challenge, xi, 6, 25, 39, 131, 136, 154, 185–186, 196, 221, 239, 252, 287, 307, 314–315, 363, 365, 370
chameleons, 53
chanting, 7–8, 11, 62, 304, 322
choosing memories to process, 207–208
Christian(s), 33, 72, 76, 264, 304, 325–326, 335–340, 342 *see also*: belief system(s), God, Jesus
  ceremonies, 168
  counselling/counsellor, 85, 303, 338–340
  evangelical, 335, 340
  holiday, 17, 108, 264 *see also*: Christmas, Easter

  non-, 85
  pseudo-, 45
  reverse, 168–169
  survivor(s), 88, 335
  therapist(s), 88–89, 335, 339–340
  traditional, 17
  unorthodox, 169
Christmas, 8, 48, 113, 168, 247, 264, 325
church, 8, 23, 33, 78, 85, 109–110, 147, 168–169, 174, 271, 304, 325, 339, 359
circle(s), 169, 292, 304, 322–323, 358
  centre, 322
  inner, 224, 322, 358
coffins, 75, 78, 325–326
cognitive processing, 228–230
colour(s), 9, 49, 146, 150, 162, 187, 211, 228, 357, 364, 367
  books/pictures, 89, 132, 149
  films, 52
  path, 171
come when called, 66, 115, 224
compassion/compassionate, xv, xvii, 35, 65–66, 88, 92–93, 273, 286, 310, 312–314, 317, 329, 335, 338, 341, 343
  life force, 192, 326, 330, 346
computer *see*: insider(s), part(s)
confusion, xiv, 10–11, 75–79, 81, 84, 97, 100, 102–103, 114, 159, 170–172, 185–187, 194, 206, 219–221, 236, 242, 258–260, 263, 270–271, 280, 299–300, 311, 331, 335, 337, 340, 368
conscious(ness), 3, 5–6, 9–10, 15–16, 23, 46, 49, 107–108, 114, 121, 131, 134, 151, 159, 171, 178, 191, 202, 206, 221, 225, 269, 328–330, 333–334, 344, 368 *see also*: unconscious(ness)
  awareness, 6, 15, 19–20, 30, 180, 186, 267, 283, 286, 304
  everyday, 202, 368–369
  knowledge, 3, 15, 19, 78, 105, 107, 202, 205, 222, 228
  memories, 2, 4, 10, 35, 42, 72, 78, 116, 179, 205, 305
  mind, 4
  pre-, 208
  self-, 77
  sub-, 314
container(s)/containment, 69, 87, 146, 155, 167, 181, 189, 194, 203–204, 215–217, 220–222, 224–230, 305, 349, 361
contracts, 65, 172, 326
costumes, 17, 22, 51, 59, 68, 70, 110, 118, 128, 147, 169, 325–327, 335, 337, 357
council
  governing, 146–147, 159
  inner, 159, 203, 208
countertransference, 308–309 *see also*: transference
cover memories, 11
criss-cross, 53
cross, 118, 325, 327
crows, 111, 119
crying, 33, 38, 43, 61, 65, 84, 108, 153, 164, 166–167, 179, 183–184, 191–192, 231, 243, 252, 271, 274, 314, 323, 359, 361 *see also*: “don't cry”
cube, 240
current contact, 87, 105–110, 121–122, 130, 273
cutting, 8, 80, 103, 125–127, 137, 202, 274, 300
  arms, 47, 73–74, 87, 133–134
  tongues, 39, 51, 165, 243

date(s), 48, 57, 112–113, 122, 168–169, 174, 247 *see also*: birthday(s)
  for return, 112–114, 122, 247
  for rituals, 48, 112–113, 122, 134, 157, 168
Davis, L., 257, 263

death, 9, 17, 25, 32, 34, 63, 75, 77–78, 83, 87, 90, 101, 110, 117, 125, 190, 199, 224, 256, 305–306, 320, 322, 328, 331, 344–345, 359 *see also*: near-death experience (NDE)
deception, 1, 10, 12, 39, 51–52, 59, 93–94, 103, 112, 117, 193, 201, 276, 297–298, 305, 311, 317, 325, 327, 332, 342, 345
defrosting, 161–162
deities, 17–18, 54, 61, 66, 69, 110, 324–327, 334–337, 345 *see also*: God, god/goddesses
demonic/demons, 17, 23, 33–34, 50–51, 68–69, 88–89, 91, 126, 128, 169, 304–305, 313, 324, 326–327, 335–341, 349 *see also*: alter(s), insider(s), part(s)
  attaching, 89, 335–337, 341
  entities, 67–68, 86, 326, 335–336, 339–340
  mask, 296
denial, xii, 9–11, 77, 136, 178, 191, 247
  of emotions, 178–179, 190
  programme(s), 77–78, 80
  training, 10–11
dentist(s), 8–9, 51, 165, 174, 243
  chair, 51, 165
depression/depressive, 2, 30, 34–35, 38, 46, 48, 57, 72, 78, 126, 164, 166, 173, 179, 181, 184, 235, 286, 301, 359
  manic *see*: bipolar disorder
deprogramming, 142–143, 336 *see also*: programme(s)/programming
despair, 32, 87, 126, 157, 178, 181, 192, 200, 202, 241, 280, 296, 306, 317, 343, 362, 367
device(s)
  implanted, 111–112, 119, 201, 296
  recording, 111–112, 201, 228, 296
devil(s), 58, 68, 75, 89, 127, 169, 324, 326–327, 337, 357 *see also*: Lucifer, Satan
disasters *see*: internal
discard(ed) *see*: insider(s), part(s), programme(s)/programming
disengagement, 285, 288
disloyal(ty), 46, 53–54, 56, 61, 63, 69, 90, 92, 109–110, 112–114, 117, 127–128, 134, 337 *see also*: loyal(ty)
disobedience, 17, 46–47, 52, 62–63, 86–88, 90–91, 100, 106–107, 110, 117, 126, 134, 189, 286, 303 *see also*: obedience
disposable children, 276, 321–322
dissociation, xv, xvii, 2–5, 7, 11, 16–19, 23–24, 29–30, 32, 34, 55, 104, 135, 151, 155, 166, 177–178, 181, 191, 200, 204, 213–214, 219–220, 222, 225, 229, 238, 245–246, 254, 256, 261, 265–267, 269, 271, 306, 330, 332, 336–337, 339–341, 367
dissociative *see also*: part(s)
  children, 19, 185, 233
  client(s), 16, 131, 298, 302
  conditions, xv, 5, 36, 130–131, 341
  disorder(s), 5–7, 10, 24–25, 29, 83, 130–131, 336, 338
  fragmenting, 5
  mind, 29
  people/person, 5–6, 12, 19, 30, 45, 53, 130, 158, 178, 187, 243–244, 246, 253, 278, 298, 302, 311, 339, 351, 353
  personality system(s), 6–7, 311
  separation, 2, 270
  splitting, 2, 360
  states, 20, 29
dissociative disorder not otherwise specified (DDNOS), 5–8, 32–34
Dissociative Experiences Scale (DES), 7
dissociative identity disorder (DID), xii–xiii, 5–8, 22, 29, 32–33, 86, 107, 145, 159, 169, 244, 247, 298, 340, 355
doctor(s), 8, 18, 21–22, 32, 42, 74, 80, 83, 85, 89, 118, 129, 150, 164–166, 173–174, 241, 268, 291, 296, 307, 310, 322, 337, 345 *see also*: Nazis
“don't cry”, 166, 184, 314
“don't leave town”, 117
“don't talk”, 38, 86, 93, 100, 136, 222, 238, 297
double binds, 32, 59, 341
dream(s), 3–4, 8, 10–12, 159, 188, 199, 314, 359
  bad, 356 *see also*: nightmare(s)
drug(s)
  abuse, 109, 116, 180, 369
  couriers, 112

overdose, 125, 128, 171, 326
dungeon(s), 148, 161, 191
dying memories, 224
Earle, A., 319
ears on the walls *see*: walls
Easter, 8, 113–114, 168, 247, 264
eating, 98, 133, 152, 162–163, 168, 174, 179, 369
  disorders, 163
electroshock, 22, 63–64, 68, 114, 126, 133, 200, 213, 303, 305–306
  therapy (ECT), 130, 166
emotion(s)/emotional *see also*: abuse/abusers, denial, flooding, NEST
  abandonment, 242–243
  awareness, 184, 196
  expression, 87, 261
  health, 310, 368–369
  mixed, 363, 366
  negative, 150, 177, 184, 348
  numbness, 35
  overwhelming, 2, 48, 78, 180–181, 189, 201
  pain(ful), 35, 87, 104, 150, 152, 164, 177, 191, 201–202, 316
  pain-killers, 179–180
  personality (EP), 30
  positive, 184
  reaction(s), 137, 163, 185, 197, 204, 308, 349
  release, 166, 183, 192
  respons(es), 12, 93, 191, 260, 274
  states, 2, 37, 178, 181, 189, 219, 222, 296, 313
  strong, 43, 66, 103, 163, 178, 181, 185, 204, 292, 350
empowerment, 13, 137, 308, 312, 335, 364 *see also*: all-powerful, power
energy, 8, 30, 111, 136, 153–154, 164, 166, 188, 193, 206, 214–215, 295, 324, 344, 360, 363–367
enforcers *see*: internal
enmeshment, 284–286, 288
entities, 50, 53, 58, 67–68, 155, 240, 327, 336–339, 341–342 *see also*: demonic/demons
  evil, 305, 336, 338, 340–341
  external, 33, 338–339
  spiritual, 338–339
Epstein, O. B., 26
equinox, 168
essence, 99, 103–104, 192, 341, 346
evil(s), xvii, 10, 17, 27, 47, 50, 65–66, 69, 84, 91, 93, 128, 169, 173, 181–182, 192, 194–195, 200, 209, 241, 244, 261, 275, 295, 302–303, 313–314, 317, 319, 323–325, 327–331, 333–337, 339–344, 346, 357 *see also*: entities
  cult(s), 168, 339, 342
  group, 91, 265, 302
  lesser of two, 93, 262, 328–329, 341
  mask, 296
  person, 209
  spirit(s), 17–18, 88, 336, 338–340
exercise(s), xv, 4, 7–8, 42–43, 57–58, 60–61, 70, 80, 94, 104, 108–109, 121–123, 126–127, 131–132, 137–138, 143, 147, 149, 151, 162, 174–175, 196–197, 206–207, 210–212, 229–230, 253–254, 273–274, 280–281, 288, 292, 315–318, 327, 333–334, 346, 352–353, 368, 370
  military, 62, 65
  physical, 132, 146, 157, 162, 166–167, 173, 179, 186, 188, 251, 365, 369
Extreme Abuse Survey (EAS), 11, 19

fail-safe(s), 23, 47, 53, 56, 170
fairy tales, 50
false memories, xv, 24–25, 172, 216

syndrome, 24, 122
False Memory Syndrome Foundation (FMSF), 24
family *see also*: birthday(s), programme(s)/programming
  cult, 70, 74, 76, 237, 247
  gatherings, 246–247
  member(s), 6, 8, 11, 25, 45, 47–48, 52, 80, 102, 107–109, 116, 119, 122, 165, 189, 195, 236–237, 244–247, 249, 252–253, 280, 284–286, 307, 314
  of origin, 168, 233, 246–248, 251, 253, 287
Fanning, P., 290
father *see also*: incest, internal, mother, parent(s), parenting
  grand-, 12, 22, 89
  loving, 190, 350
  of lies, 75
  step-, 125, 234, 248
fear, 3, 8–9, 22, 25, 35–36, 39, 41, 57, 65, 69, 72, 76–77, 79, 83, 85–86, 91, 97–98, 103–104, 108, 113–114, 123, 125, 138, 146–147, 154, 163, 165, 169, 177–178, 182, 184–185, 187–189, 193, 200, 208, 211–213, 219–221, 226–227, 230, 235, 237, 248, 253–254, 257, 267, 271–272, 276, 278–281, 284, 296–298, 302, 312, 317, 323, 325, 332, 351–352, 356–358, 360, 362–363, 367 *see also*: God, programme(s)/programming
feeling-holder *see*: part(s)
file(s), 51, 55, 58, 143, 172, 207, 230
file keepers/managers, 51, 55, 58, 146, 172, 203–204, 207, 228
film(s), 15, 22, 49–50, 52, 56, 59, 65, 100–101, 127, 149, 172, 210–211, 220, 257, 262, 282, 326 *see also*: colour(s), movies
  black and white, 52
  horror, 17
  pornographic, 22, 113, 216, 267
fire, 8, 69, 73, 126, 149, 154, 218, 249, 326–327
firstborn, 264, 321
flashbacks, xiv, xvi, 2–4, 8, 10, 12, 34–35, 38, 42–43, 46, 53, 55–56, 58, 72–74, 76, 78, 80, 86, 89, 92, 94, 102–103, 122, 125–126, 133, 135, 138, 157, 159, 163–164, 186, 189, 200–204, 207–208, 215, 217, 220–221, 228–229, 255, 263, 266, 274, 366
floaters/floating *see*: part(s)
flooding
  of feelings, 141, 170, 213, 225, 227, 230, 359
  of horror scenes, 266
  of memories, 56, 141, 189, 242
  of offender memories, 141, 324
  of the system, 77, 87, 136, 141, 192, 298, 353
  with emotion(s), 49, 56, 126, 134, 141, 180, 189
  with frightening memories, 270
  with painful memories, 219
forced *see*: perpetration
forgiveness, 169, 190, 247, 297, 324–327, 329–331, 333–334, 340, 343
Fotheringham, T., 22, 46–47, 50, 148, 170–171, 362–363
foundation, 19, 59, 103–104, 171, 299, 304, 358, 362
fractionated processing, 210, 219–220
fragmentary/fragments, 5, 31, 172, 212, 356, 359 *see also*: part(s)
  memories, 31–32, 67, 202, 213, 360–361
Frankel, S., 59, 147, 264, 353–355
Freemasons, 75, 98
Freyd, J., 2, 245
friendship(s), 80, 149–150, 190, 196, 275–276, 281–285, 287–288, 293, 309, 321–322, 367
front people/person(s), 2, 5, 10, 29–37, 39–40, 42, 45–46, 48, 57, 60, 79–80, 84, 86–87, 89, 91, 93, 97, 104–105, 109, 115, 117, 119, 126–127, 132, 134, 137, 141, 145–146, 148–150, 159–161, 165, 167, 181, 185, 200–201, 203–207, 212, 216, 218, 221, 226–229, 255, 258–262, 272–274, 276, 280, 303–306, 316, 327, 333, 335, 339, 342, 348, 360
fusion, 353–355, 360, 362

gaps
  memory, 159, 221

  stop-, 174, 252, 273
garbage kids *see*: part(s)
gender identity, 274
generals, 22, 54, 63–65, 337
ghosts, 50, 301 *see also*: part(s)
GI, 75, 96–97
Gingrich, H. D., ix, 339
God, 50, 54, 75–76, 85, 102, 110, 127, 147, 173, 183, 192, 195, 282, 305, 319, 324–327, 335–336, 340–345, 359 *see also*: programme(s)/programming
  amour of, 340
  fear of, 72, 76, 325, 327
  fearing, 76, 78
  forces of, 338
  love of/loving, 17, 24, 169, 335, 340, 344–345
  name of, 17, 341
  power of, 338
  voice of, 147, 325, 327
  will of, 305
god/goddesses, 17, 171, 192, 326–327, 359 *see also*: deities
Golden Rule, 352
good *see also*: mother, parent(s), parenting
  actor, 256–257
  being, 61–62, 195, 339, 342, 351–352
  choosing, 342–345
  feeling, 153, 160, 171, 238, 265, 267, 366
  for their/your own, 61, 342
  friend, 139, 143, 207, 262, 281–282
  greater, 65
  guy(s), 63, 152
  job, 74, 91, 135
  moods, 180, 243
  people, 63, 65, 101, 149, 161, 218
  therapist/therapy, 79, 87, 139, 165, 207, 275, 295, 298, 309, 311, 317–318, 356
  things, 148, 153, 161, 173, 191, 247, 255, 262, 327
Gottman, J. M., 293
Gould, C., 7
Green, A., 298–302, 307, 309, 312
grief/grieving, 179, 181–182, 190–192, 243, 246, 248–249, 253–254, 265, 274, 309, 342, 346, 361, 368
Griffin, D., 279
grounding, 153, 203, 207
group treatment, 120–130
guard(s), 52, 56, 72, 148, 172, 208, 221, 281, 297, 307
Guardian, 19
guilt, 24, 91–93, 115, 136, 179, 190, 194–195, 211, 234, 262, 268, 309, 319–320, 323–324, 327, 329–330, 333, 359–360

hallucinations, 34, 42, 52, 126–127, 202
hand signals, 115–116, 123, 127, 138–139, 303, 316, 339
handler, 55, 116, 161, 171–172, 183, 215, 303, 305, 349, 351
harassment, 24–25, 73, 86, 106–107, 120–122, 134, 309, 358–359 *see also*: sexual
hate, 72, 76, 78, 80, 145, 161, 199, 223, 241–242, 258–259, 263, 266, 272, 275, 283, 307, 319, 324, 328, 331, 337, 344, 357, 361 *see also*: self
Hawkins, T. R., 335–336, 338
head pain/headaches, 8, 74, 78, 80
hearing voices, 33–34, 166
heaven, 17, 78, 171, 251, 325–327, 335, 338 *see also*: life, after-
hell, 17, 69, 74–76, 78, 85, 91, 103, 128, 147, 169, 171, 192, 195, 313, 319, 324–327, 333, 335, 338, 345–346, 359 *see also*: life, after-
helmet, 21, 58, 133, 340

hierarchies, 39, 52, 56, 58, 69, 88–91, 93, 106
  external, 145
  inner/internal, 54, 89, 210, 336, 338
high-pitched sound *see*: sound
high priestesses/priests *see*: priestesses/priests
higher-ups, 54, 59, 63–64, 66, 71, 74–76, 79–80, 89–98, 101–104, 109, 115, 117, 119, 122, 127, 145, 148, 169, 205, 221, 246, 298, 307–308, 312
Hitler, A., 22, 52, 54, 75, 99–102, 337, 341 *see also*: insider(s)
Hoffman, W., 21–22, 31–32, 161–162, 181–183, 200–201, 208–209, 303–307, 309, 313, 316, 321, 328–329, 339
homicide *see*: internal
horned hand *see*: Satanic
hospital, 25, 40, 130–131, 238, 296
  mental, 131, 296
  psychiatric, 83, 127, 130, 132
  psychiatrist, 129, 131
hospitalisation, 1, 73–74, 83, 106, 126, 128–131, 312
host personality, 29, 77, 80
humanism, 343
hunger, 85, 163, 166, 174, 179, 208, 276, 332, 335
hyper-vigilance, 72, 199
hypnosis, 7, 16, 20–22, 49, 71, 171, 215, 236, 304–305, 353
hypnotic
  integration, 84
  interventions, 92
  suggestions, 16, 21, 59, 121
illness, 6, 132, 150, 164–166, 174, 178, 187, 191, 310, 314, 342, 365 *see also*: programme(s)/programming
  mental, 5, 23, 36, 78, 127, 130–131, 235, 278
Illuminati, 61, 306, 328
illusions, 36, 63, 69, 142, 305, 338, 343
imagination, 9–10, 43, 50, 57, 84–85, 93, 149, 155, 162, 206, 208–212, 221, 226–227, 249, 258, 282–283, 307, 323, 332, 364
immortal, 70, 251 *see also*: Lucifer, Satan
impersonation of therapists, 106, 296–297, 316
implants, 16, 23–24, 48, 59, 67, 136, 142, 170, 172, 220–221, 235, 268, 324, 341 *see also*: device(s)
incest, 19, 24, 32, 72, 83, 207, 233, 236–239, 244, 253, 256–257, 303, 320
  maternal, 238, 242
  paternal, 237–238
  sibling, 233, 238–242
  survivor(s), 2, 32, 242, 245, 255, 262–263, 320
indicators, 3–4, 7–9, 107–109, 175, 184–185, 188, 223, 281, 284, 287–288, 316–317 *see also*: abuse/abusers, ritual; mind control
indoctrination, 18, 22, 59–60, 62, 64–65, 69, 104, 116, 118, 275–276, 324, 348–349, 352
infant(s), 33, 40, 152–153, 166, 183–184, 233, 277, 280, 321, 328 *see also*: mother, part(s)
  memories, 222–224
  splits, 222
initiation, 304, 323, 328
injury, 164, 166, 174, 177, 191, 199
  mental, 5, 36, 131
inner *see also*: circle(s), council, hierarchies, world
  communication, 37, 257
  community, 151, 154, 174
  critic, 33, 86, 351
  dialogue, 96, 137
  teamwork, 210
insider(s) *see also*: alter(s), part(s)
  anger/angry, 193–194, 257, 290
  behaviour, 47
  child, 36, 88, 115, 128, 247, 261, 291, 297, 360
  computer, 58, 66, 143
  demonic/demons, 33–35, 52, 58, 67, 88–89, 128, 305, 336–338, 341, 346, 357

  discarded, 56–58, 104, 352
  gatekeeper, 54, 58, 122, 203
  hierarchy of, 52, 58, 62, 89, 207
  librarian, 58, 203–204, 207
  (little) Hitlers, 101–102, 104
  mapping, 19, 40, 245, 266, 311, 332
  needs of, 85, 147, 149–151, 154, 187–188, 222, 280
  non-human, 66–69
  observer, 43, 55, 90, 218, 327
  opposite sex, 41
  punisher(s)/punishment, 46, 56, 58, 86–87, 90–91, 123, 126, 201, 286
  recorder, 55, 146, 215, 218
  recycler, 55, 213, 218
  reporters, 55, 112, 119–120, 248, 304
  robot, 61, 66, 73
  rules for, 40, 54, 76, 90, 106, 135, 143, 207
  spirit(s), 55
  training of, 10, 79, 113, 118, 155, 278, 297
  updating, 93, 98, 103–104, 114, 122, 141, 159, 189
  wired, 58
insomnia, 126, 133, 158, 167, 199 *see also*: sleep
integration, 48–49, 84, 142–143, 151, 155, 172, 206, 214, 227–228, 268, 271, 323, 341, 348, 353, 355–356, 358–369 *see also*: hypnotic
integrity, 103, 194, 199, 289, 340
interests, xvii, 190, 258, 281, 284, 349–351, 353
  best, 61–62, 99
  natural, 349
intergenerational cults, 18
internal *see also*: agreements, bad, button(s), hierarchies, switches, wires/wiring
  calendars, 48
  communication, 129, 132, 135, 145, 187
  conflict, 35, 79, 169
  dialogue, 104
  disasters, 126, 148
  earthquakes, 126, 148
  enforcers, 54–56, 86–88, 93
  father, 246
  filing system, 51, 228
  homicide, 128
  mother, 245
  programmers, 55, 58, 116, 140–141, 143, 215–216, 218
  punishers/punishment, 48, 53, 106–107, 126, 202–203
  storage, 212
  structure(s), 49–51, 54, 154, 212, 223, 306
  walls, 11, 49, 148, 155, 265, 283, 360, 362
  work, 124, 148, 167, 272
International Society for the Study of Trauma and Dissociation (ISST-D), 26, 142
interrogation, 19, 38, 94–95, 97, 138, 241, 273, 325
intervention, 92, 132–133, 157, 192, 205, 209 *see also*: hypnotic
introjects, 54, 128
irritability, 187, 199, 286
isolation, 17, 25, 191, 289, 365 *see also*: programme(s)/programming

Jesus, 17, 50, 54, 173, 304, 325, 327, 339–341
  baby, 325, 327
Johnson, S., 278, 293
jokers, 53, 241, 289, 316, 322

Kabbalah, 49, 68, 222, 326
Karriker, W., 128, 311
Katz, S., 17, 23, 49, 52, 68–69, 164, 166, 205, 223, 321–323, 326, 336, 355–359, 362
keep still, 117
kill/killing, 12, 17–19, 21, 51, 56, 61–66, 68, 72–76, 78–80, 86, 88, 91–92, 97–101, 103, 111, 114, 128, 130–132, 139, 149, 161, 171, 173, 182, 190–191, 193, 195, 234–237, 245, 248, 250, 256–257, 268, 270, 273, 275, 278, 297, 303–305, 307–308, 321, 323, 326, 328–329, 331, 337–338, 340–341, 345–346, 352
    psychic, 321
Kluft, R., 210

Ku Klux Klan (KKK), 75, 96–98

labelling, 84, 136–138, 140, 142, 228, 230, 238, 247, 290–291
Lacter, E., 7, 108, 122, 311
layers, 40, 52–53, 67, 155, 172, 223
learnt helplessness, 196
Lerner, H., 293
librarian *see*: insider(s)
lies/lying, xvi, 12, 26, 32–33, 59–60, 64–65, 67, 69–70, 75, 79, 90, 93, 96–97, 100, 110–112, 115, 123, 129, 138, 173, 178–179, 206, 221, 237, 239, 245, 275, 305, 308, 311, 313, 321, 328, 334, 338, 340, 346, 349, 352 *see also*: Big Lie
life *see also*: compassion/compassionate
    adult, 6, 30–31, 35, 37, 42, 55, 168, 185, 239
    after-, 321, 326, 345–346 *see also*: heaven, hell
    current, 37, 89, 239, 271
    daily, xvi, 6, 10, 30, 60, 79, 109, 157–158, 169, 174, 200, 205, 207, 216, 230, 309, 320, 353, 362
    direction, 350, 368–370
    everyday, xv, 2, 6, 10, 29–32, 35–37, 42, 47, 49, 53, 55, 57, 88, 90, 157, 164, 170, 178, 181, 184, 208, 216, 281, 330, 335–356, 363
    experience, 12, 40, 66, 92, 149, 161, 172, 210, 212, 214, 227, 332, 360
    history, 9, 165, 281–282
    later, 116–118
    normal, xv, 16, 30, 182, 199, 216, 229, 266, 271
    ordinary, 23, 35, 88, 161, 214
    present, 37, 43, 94, 114, 123, 135, 137, 158, 178, 180–181, 184, 194–195, 282, 288
        -day, 138, 141, 146, 150, 156, 168, 283
    real, 9, 42, 48–49, 86, 88, 92, 148, 172, 265, 357
    sex/sexual, 256, 265, 271
    -style, 62, 72, 172
    -threatening, 5, 29, 32
Lins, L. C., 123–124
LisaBri, 83–85, 111, 150, 158, 160, 163, 165, 167, 169, 178, 221, 235–244, 289, 298, 309
loneliness, 65, 177, 189–190, 249, 293
Lord's Resistance Army, 65
Los Angeles County Commission for Women's Ritual Abuse Task Force report, 16
love, xvii, 22, 33, 39, 85, 90, 99, 137, 161, 169, 182, 189–191, 207, 209, 234, 237–240, 242–245, 250–251, 260–261, 264–265, 267, 270, 272, 274–276, 278–279, 281, 283–284, 286–287, 297–299, 322, 344, 352, 354, 357, 359, 362, 364–365, 368 *see also*: God, sexual
loved ones, 9, 62, 87, 91, 115, 171, 187, 190, 196, 227, 246, 248, 328
loyal(ty), 15, 19, 22, 27, 48–49, 54, 60–65, 69, 72, 74–76, 90–91, 97–99, 101–104, 106, 126–127, 201, 248, 276, 308, 317, 326, 336–339 *see also*: disloyal(ty)
Lucifer, 17, 54, 58, 75, 110, 195, 325–327, 329, 335–336, 341 *see also*: devil(s), Satan
    immortal, 338
Luciferian, 17, 61, 75, 96–98, 110, 168–169, 259, 264, 321, 326, 336

magic, 60–61, 64, 86, 105, 111–112, 119, 147, 170–171, 192, 273
    stage, xvi, 10, 51–52, 59, 68, 111, 335
magik, 68
magnification, 290–291
"Many Voices", 37
mapping *see*: insider(s)
marriages, 184, 189–190, 238, 241, 261, 266, 338 *see also*: Satan
    arranged, 233, 247
Marshall, K., 43
McKay, M., 290
meaning(s)
    different, 299, 340
    double, 135
    -ful, 169, 187, 317

  -less, 261, 289, 369
  need for, 186
  of moods, 180
  of words, 62, 223, 297, 317
  positive, 169
  scary/sinister, 39, 170, 340
  special, 116
  well, 80, 234–235, 335
medical
  appointments, 146
  attention, 132, 150
  exams, 165
  facilities, 130
  illness, 132
  model, 130, 166, 314
  professional(s)/staff, 130, 166, 268, 275
  treatment, 130, 310
medication, 23, 33, 67, 106, 129, 132, 166–167, 173, 184, 312, 314 *see also*: self
  antipsychotic, 11, 129
  psychiatric, 129–132, 167
  psychoactive, 129
memories *see*: baby (babies), bad, body, choosing, conscious(ness), cover, dying, false, flooding, fragments, gaps, infant(s), re-association, storage, traumatic, unconscious(ness), video, work
Mengele, J., 21–22
merging *see*: part(s)
microphone(s), 110, 165, 296
military
  and political groups, xv, 15, 18–20, 22, 26, 52, 54, 56, 59, 65, 107, 112–113, 297, 324, 326, 337
  operation, 99
  organisation(s), 62–64
  training, 19, 26, 65, 75, 98–100
Miller, A., xii–xiii, 17, 22–23, 26, 46, 151, 170, 251, 292, 339–341
mind control
  abuse/abuser(s), xv, xvii, 5, 9, 11–12, 20, 26, 34, 57, 59, 160, 181, 214, 233, 257–258, 275, 282–283
  child/children, 11, 15, 18–19, 34, 50, 59, 192, 320–321, 328, 342, 347
  group(s), 7, 62–64, 70, 88, 110, 214, 257, 277, 284, 297, 321, 326, 335, 351, 360
  history, 5, 9, 105, 353
  indicator(s), 5, 7–9, 57
  perpetrator(s), 51, 53, 64, 247, 335, 360
  personality system, 33–34, 43, 45, 54, 57, 87, 89, 192, 318
  programme(s)/programming, 10, 15–16, 95–96, 135, 154, 304, 336, 347
  symbol(s), xii
  training, 10, 19, 53, 194, 201, 251
  victims, 127, 129
Miranda, 322–323
mirror, 34, 42, 71, 110, 357
  fake, 34, 42, 68, 70, 147
  image, 336
  neurons, 195, 315
mistakes, 41, 63, 85–86, 194, 196, 211, 236, 261, 277, 283, 288–289, 315, 348, 351, 353
  by therapist(s), 83–86, 298, 309, 317
MKUltra declassified document, 20–21
mood(s), 34, 179–180, 196, 270, 367 *see also*: bad, good, meaning(s)
  state(s), 367
  swings, 23, 126, 166, 243
Morales, A. L., 331–332
Morgan, A., 15, 19, 50–51, 57, 108, 142, 146, 150, 154–156, 164, 173–174, 188, 245–247, 252, 277–278, 331, 333, 343
Morgan, E., 235

mother *see also*: father, internal, parent(s), parenting
    abusive, 88, 236, 242, 245
    foster, 248
    good, 208
    grand-, 240, 248, 304, 356
    –infant, 17, 277–278, 283, 309
    loving, 190, 269, 309, 350
    punishing, 88
    violent, 244
movies, 52, 100, 171, 188 *see also*: colour(s), film(s)
multiple(s)/multiplicity, xvi, 2, 5–7, 9–10, 20, 30–37, 40, 43, 46, 50, 137, 145–146, 151–152, 159–160, 171, 187, 201, 244–245, 247, 252–253, 258, 271, 284–286, 293, 312, 334, 342, 347–348, 363–364, 366–367
    multiple personality disorder (MPD), 5, 18, 29
murder(s), 8, 11, 22, 25, 51, 91, 106, 168, 190, 195, 276, 321, 323–324, 327
    simulated, 11, 91, 276, 321

narrative, 3, 10, 184, 212–214, 222 *see also*: NEST
Nazis, 1, 49, 52, 96, 99, 101 *see also*: Hitler, A., SS
    doctor(s), 18, 20 *see also*: Mengele, J.
    Gestapo, 13
    neo-, 19
near-death experience (NDE), 224, 244, 321, 345–346
necrophilia *see*: sex with dead bodies
neediness, 85, 257, 271, 279–280, 287–288, 317
needles, 8–9, 80, 165, 174, 208, 211, 304
neglect, 80, 95, 178, 187, 249, 293, 322, 350
negotiate/negotiation, 93, 125, 132–134, 138, 145, 149, 203, 222, 286, 292
    non-, 354–355
NEST (narrative, emotions, sensory experiences, thoughts and belief), 211
nightmare(s), 2, 8, 10, 34–35, 72, 76, 118, 122, 158–159, 171, 201, 203, 215, 266
Noblitt, R., 142–143, 170
numbness, 35, 181, 299, 337

obedience, 21, 38, 56, 58, 60–66, 71, 74–75, 79, 89, 98–101, 106, 123, 126, 135, 139–140, 143, 146, 193, 201, 244, 251, 286, 336, 349, 351 *see also*: disobedience
occult *see also*: Luciferian, Satanic
    religion, 17, 96
    religious groups, 1, 16, 19, 26, 113
    rituals, 1
    worship, 26
Oglevie, S., 142, 336–337
Oksana, C., xv, 191, 335
Old Lady *see*: Sally
organised crime, xv, 19, 22–23, 26, 45, 59, 62, 106, 128–129, 257, 259, 265
Overkamp, B., 128
overprotectiveness, 252, 254

paedophilia, 24
pain/painful *see also*: emotion(s)/emotional, flooding, head pain/headaches, part(s)
    bodily, 8, 53, 150, 200, 220, 224–225
    create, 68, 138, 336
    experience, 163, 166, 254, 278
    extreme, 132, 226
    overwhelming, 238
    physical, 35–36, 87, 104, 126, 150, 152, 164, 166, 177, 200–201, 207, 213–214, 218, 256, 317, 356
    severe, 91, 208

traumatic, 36
unspeakable, 332
Paperclip *see*: Project Paperclip
parent(s) *see also*: bond/bonding, father, incest, mother
abusive, 53, 245, 279, 302
biological, 102
caring, 223
cult, 235–236, 251, 273
good, 102
innocent, 18, 24, 233–235
involved, 251, 253, 273, 284
loving, 190, 233–234, 254, 279, 309
vicious/violent, 164, 253
well-meaning, 234
parenting, 25, 62, 80, 146, 150, 188, 244, 251–254, 278–279, 292, 324, 370 *see also*: father, mother
bad, 278
contradictory, 278
expert(s), 62
good, 234–235, 269
inadequate, 178
part(s) *see also*: alter(s), file keepers/managers, front people/person(s), higher-ups, insider(s), watchers, Woo-Woo kids
anger/angry, 36, 86, 181, 193, 200, 290
baby (babies), 40, 149, 152, 304
bad, 84–87
beast/beastie, 68, 77, 102, 193, 337
builder, 49
child, xv–xvi, 10, 12, 32–33, 40–41, 47, 54, 56, 64–65, 85–86, 95, 107, 113–115, 118–119, 124–127, 133–134, 149–150, 156, 159, 163–164, 167, 178, 192–193, 203, 205, 218, 220, 245, 249, 252, 256, 260, 263, 270, 274, 276, 281, 287, 290, 296–299, 302–303, 307, 309, 320, 326–327, 333, 337, 352, 360, 366
computer, 31, 47, 225
demonic/demons, 50, 66–68, 86, 88, 91, 169, 193, 326, 336–339, 341, 357
discard(ed), 54, 56–57, 89, 92, 102, 321, 328
dissociative, 7, 214, 354
emerging, 93
feeling-holder, 195, 202, 204
floaters/floating, 36, 55, 110, 357
fragmentary, 66, 136, 200, 219, 353
fully developed, 360
garbage kids, 56–58, 66, 92, 217, 328
ghost, 53, 66, 91, 337, 345, 364
infant, 152, 223, 309
left side, 48–49, 57, 67, 84–85
merging of, 360–362
non-human, 51, 55, 68–70
observer, 36, 55–56, 110, 119, 122, 146, 215
opposite sex, 41, 259
outliers, 50, 336
pain-holder, 49, 56, 90, 146, 164, 217, 330
partially developed, 360
persecutor/protector, 33, 36, 39, 43, 86–88, 91, 93–94, 124, 205, 300, 302, 307, 312
recorder, 36, 149, 215
recycler, 55, 214, 218–219, 225, 229
reporter, 50, 56, 74, 117–120, 122, 124, 127, 148, 273, 296, 307, 323
right side, 49, 57, 84–85
robot, 31, 47, 66, 68, 74–75, 100, 142–143, 349
snake, 77
spinners, 56, 127, 134, 146, 186, 192, 203
spirit(s), 66, 91

  trauma-bonded, 33
  traumatised, 132
  updating, 43, 89, 93, 114, 134
passive influence, 38
Patterson, C. H., 310
perpetration *see also*: mind control, sexual, watchers
  forced, 91, 106, 181, 200, 247, 259, 321–324, 333, 341
persecutor/protector *see*: part(s)
Perskin-Noblitt, P., 142–143, 170
personality system, 7, 9, 12, 18, 30–31, 33, 37–40, 45, 48, 51–54, 57, 62, 84, 86–87, 91–93, 96, 109, 112, 117–118, 126–127, 129, 139, 141, 143, 147–148, 150–151, 157, 163, 167, 169, 171, 173, 181, 183–184, 189, 192–193, 200, 202–203, 205–210, 213, 218–219, 222, 224, 231, 244–245, 252, 266, 272, 293, 318, 335, 337–339, 360, 369 *see also*: dissociative, mind control
  entire/whole, 87, 124, 142, 146, 186, 222, 247
  main, 50
  structured, 6, 46–47, 53, 56–57, 140, 142
pet(s), 9, 62, 90, 149, 152, 162, 173, 182, 190, 250–251, 254, 278, 280, 293
Peterson, J., 24
play, 80, 107, 132, 149–151, 160, 173–174, 185, 188, 192, 222, 234–235, 240, 253, 258, 267, 307–308, 311, 349–350, 353, 358, 366
  -mates, 241, 360–361
  music, 154
  -room, 148, 152
  sport(s), 89, 152, 192, 240
  video games, 149, 188
police, 8, 19, 72, 74, 114, 121, 297, 331, 358
  force, 241
  officer(s), 275, 297, 358
  report, 241, 297
  secret, 13, 96
political *see*: military, programming
pornography, 22, 26, 62, 113, 179, 216, 243, 260, 262 *see also*: film(s)
  child, 19, 22, 24, 112, 233, 243, 256–258, 260, 264, 267
  violent, 256, 260–261
possession, 1, 33, 304, 335, 339
post-traumatic *see also*: trigger(s)/triggering
  conditions, xv
  intrusions, 34
  reactions, 157
  responses, 125, 133, 138, 157
  stress disorder (PTSD), 2, 36, 72, 135, 199–200
power *see also*: all-powerful, empowerment, God
  higher, 168, 289, 324, 344, 361
  -lessness, 234–235, 320, 332, 343
pregnancy, 163, 237, 260, 264–265, 268–269, 272, 274, 283, 321
priestesses/priests, 12, 53, 66, 92, 103, 169, 325
  high, 52, 54, 67, 109, 243, 322–323, 358
programme(s)/programming *see also*: access, behaviour, button(s), denial, deprogramming, internal, mind control, suicide, switches, trigger(s)/triggering
  Body Illness, 80
  charts, 140–141, 143, 215
  code(s), 21, 51, 139–143, 162, 171, 308
  crazy, 78, 81, 139, 381
  discard, 170–171, 173, 175, 186
  Fear Family, 76, 78, 80
  Fear God, 76, 78
  isolation, 275–276
  political, 18–22, 52, 65, 112, 297, 324
  punishment, xvi–xvii, 127, 170, 174, 200–201, 326
  recall, 58, 109–110

- recycling, 55, 218
- return, 112–115
- robot, 21, 51, 78–79, 81
- wiring diagrams, 141, 143, 224–225

Project Bluebird, 20
Project Paperclip, 2
promotions, 63–65, 113, 133, 267, 313
proof, 11, 20, 172, 298, 302, 305, 320
prostitution, 22, 62, 113, 164, 233, 241, 260, 267
- child, 112, 256–257, 264, 270

protectors *see*: part(s)
psychiatric *see also*: hospital, medication
- symptoms, 2, 8, 46, 126, 166

psychic *see also*: kill/killing
- abilities, 315, 321

psychosis (psychotic), 20, 23, 33, 35, 42, 129, 142, 266, 311
punisher/punishment, 3, 17, 38–39, 54, 56, 62–64, 66, 87, 89, 93, 106, 108, 110, 112–114, 118, 126, 134–135, 148, 158, 163, 189, 194, 201, 248, 300, 303, 328, 332, 352 *see also*: insider(s), internal, programme(s)/programming
puppets, xii, 31, 59, 68, 326
puzzle, 55, 187, 211–212, 299

rack, 63, 118
rage, 38, 77, 87, 178, 181–182, 191, 193–194, 254, 332, 365
rape, 3, 17, 26, 41, 47, 54, 56, 63–64, 68, 72–73, 85, 88, 99–101, 103, 110, 163, 190, 195, 237, 241, 243, 250, 256–257, 263, 273, 296, 321, 324–327, 337, 341, 358
- anal, 12, 68
- gang, 237, 240, 256
- oral, 68, 224

Reagor, P., 7
re-association of memories, 219
recorder *see*: insider(s), part(s)
recreation, 152, 154, 160, 188, 356, 369 *see also*: play
re-creation, 188, 218, 364
recycler/recycling *see*: insider(s), part(s), programme(s)/programming
Rees, A., 251, 292
relationship(s)
- adult, 276
- broken, 191
- couple, 287–288, 293
- healthy, 247, 251, 265, 280, 283–284
- loving, 190, 250, 284
- ongoing, 246
- sexual, 243, 261–264
- survivors, 191
- therapeutic, 282, 309–312, 316–317

relaxation, 79, 152, 160, 167, 174, 187, 190, 337, 350
religion(s), 8, 17, 73, 168–169, 174, 179, 316, 325, 334, 339, 342–343, 352 *see also*: occult
relocation, 26, 105, 109, 117, 120, 190, 202, 318
remorse, 194–196, 329–331, 333, 359
reporter *see*: insider(s), part(s)
resistance to therapy, 296–298
responsibility, 15, 38, 47, 131–133, 138, 152–153, 171, 187, 195, 200, 203, 237, 266, 286, 289, 303, 309, 320, 323, 329, 332–334, 343, 345, 363
rest, 157, 166, 188, 369
reward(s), 19–20, 23, 63–64, 75, 90–91, 113, 122–123, 186, 251, 259, 293, 316
Riseman, J., 51, 134–138, 143
rituals, 1, 11, 17, 26, 54, 62, 66, 69, 80, 107, 112–113, 122, 158, 163, 168–169, 191, 203, 207, 216, 218, 241, 273, 289, 307, 316, 325–326,

336, 340 *see also*: abuse/abusers, date(s), occult, Satanic
robe(s), 8, 17, 26, 63, 275, 325, 328
robot *see*: insider(s), part(s), programme(s)/programming
role reversal, 252–253
roommate(s), 121, 249, 287
Rose, E. P., xv, 343–346
Ross, C. A., 20–21, 86
rules *see*: insider(s)
run away, 115, 117, 193, 271
Runtz, M., 2
Rutz, C., 11, 20–21, 128, 201

Sachs, A., 246, 277, 298
sacrifice, 17, 26, 29, 62, 66, 75, 78, 110, 161, 195, 227, 237, 263–265, 276, 284, 321–323, 325, 328, 336, 341, 344, 349
sadness, 36, 65, 74, 97, 100, 102–104, 108, 124, 126, 150, 164, 177, 179, 181–182, 190–191, 192, 211, 213, 215, 219–220, 226–227, 230, 249, 269, 361, 364
sadomasochism, 256, 260–261, 274
safety, xv, 6, 23, 31, 41, 55, 69, 72, 75, 85, 88, 95, 102, 109, 114, 119, 122–124, 137, 149, 183, 186–193, 208, 231, 233, 249, 253, 262–263, 265, 275, 277, 281, 283, 299, 301–302, 304, 307, 314, 356, 362, 364
Sally, 52, 56, 71–81, 95–96, 98, 103–104, 127, 173–174, 194, 201–202, 206, 298, 307, 309, 312, 341
  Family, 95–103
  higher-ups, 75–79, 95–98, 101, 104, 127, 298, 307–308, 312
  littles, 71, 74–79, 97, 102, 307–308
  Old Lady, 71, 73–79, 98, 307, 341
  the kids, 71, 73–75, 95, 99–103, 308, 341
Satan, 17–18, 48, 52, 54, 58, 61, 66–68, 75, 86, 89–90, 110, 116, 127, 147, 195, 289, 322, 325–327, 329, 335–336, 338, 341, 345 *see also*: devil(s), Lucifer
  eyes, 111, 296
  Immortal, 89
  marriage to, 17
Satanic
  baptism, 17
  cult, 25–26, 205, 243, 259, 264, 321, 326, 335–336
    abuse, 18
  dabblers, 45
  horned hand, 47
  Legions, 147
  occult, 26
  rebirth, 17
  religion, 17, 168–169, 359
  ritual abuse (SRA), 18, 32, 83, 134, 303
  rituals, 22
  themes, 108
scepticism, 24–25, 282, 311–312
schizophrenia, 25, 33, 83, 127, 166
Schwartz, J., 26
Schwartz, R. W., 26
seed(s), 54, 101, 324, 331, 337, 347
self *see also*: conscious(ness)
  -care, 187
  -confidence, 280
  -destruction, 54, 72, 75–76, 125, 170–171
  -esteem, 186, 244, 276, 279, 320, 348, 351, 353, 369
  -harm, 33, 46, 48, 56, 66, 75–76, 92–93, 126–128, 131, 139, 157, 181, 238, 260, 274, 316
  hate, 78, 319
  injury, 269
  medication, 168, 180

  -mutilation, 7, 108, 128
senses, 160–162, 174, 211, 219–220, 240
sensory deprivation *see*: sleep
sex *see also*: life
  industry/trade, 19, 260, 274
  pleasurable, 64, 91, 113, 263, 267
  slave/slavery, 53, 59
  violent, 8, 243, 257
  with adults, 261
  with animals, 8, 256
  with children, 8, 237, 260–262, 320
  with dead bodies, 256
  with men, 259
  with women, 259–260
sexual *see also*: abuse, behaviour, life, relationship(s)
  acting out, 260–261
  arousal, 36, 193, 201, 227, 230, 256, 259–261, 272, 274
  experience, 164, 256, 272
  fantasies, 261–262, 274
  feelings, 160, 189, 213, 219–220, 226–227, 230, 239, 255, 259, 262, 272, 302
  harassment, 288
  healing, 263, 265, 268, 271–274
  love, 263–264, 267
  orientation, 259–260, 271, 274
  perpetration, 233, 272–273
  values, 261–262
sexuality, 21, 182, 255–257, 259–261, 263–265, 271–273, 300, 354 *see also*: celibacy/chastity
  bi-, 259
  healthy, 190, 263–265
  hetero-, 259
  homo-, 259
shadows, 111
shame, 22, 72, 78, 91, 93, 97, 100, 153, 164, 178, 181–182, 190–191, 194–196, 206, 222, 227, 229–230, 234, 239, 241, 243, 255, 257, 262, 264, 267, 272, 274, 283, 300, 316, 319–320, 324, 327, 329–330, 332, 334, 352, 359–360
Sharman, M., 255, 263, 265–273, 366, 370
shell ANP *see*: apparently normal personality
shortcuts, 139, 141–143, 319
sibling(s), 4, 112, 114, 191, 236, 245–247, 249, 253–254, 278, 285 *see also*: incest
signing
  agreements, 61, 336
  contracts, 65, 172, 326
  in blood, 62, 65, 91, 336
Silver, N., 293
Sinason, V., 311
singletons, 6, 77, 84, 298, 346, 348, 366–367
slave/slavery, xvii, 22, 27, 96, 98, 160, 195, 289, 304, 332 *see also*: sex
sleep, 2, 52, 81, 112–113, 118, 120, 123, 133, 135, 138–139, 149, 157–158, 161, 163, 166–168, 174, 182, 187–188, 190, 203, 208, 224, 303–304, 308, 356 *see also*: insomnia
  deprivation, 21, 72, 76, 163–164, 166
smoke, 69, 171, 357
  bomb, 77–78, 80
Snakes and Ladders, 75, 80, 173
Snowdon, K., 24
solstice, 168
Somer, E., 311
sound
  high-pitched in head, 74
  track, 36, 210, 230, 317

spinners *see*: part(s)
spinning, 48, 56, 58, 134, 146, 186, 203, 300 *see also*: part(s)
  chair, 56
spirit(s), 1, 17, 35, 75, 89, 242, 326–327, 330, 335, 337, 341, 344, 362 *see also*: evil(s), insider(s), part(s)
  human, 304–305, 337, 339
spiritual *see also*: abuse/abusers, attachment, beliefs, demons/demonic
  bondage, 338
  entities, 338–339
  experience(s), 12, 345–346
  guides, 53
  healing, 343, 365
  health, 368–369
  realm, 336, 338
  warfare, 304, 340
spirituality, 329, 334, 340–341, 343
SS, 75, 96–97, 99, 101
stabilisation, 130, 141, 154, 202, 312–313
stage magic *see*: magic
Steele, K., xv, 43, 159
Steinberg, M., 37
storage *see also*: container(s)/containment, internal
  feelings, 204, 229
  lockers, 204, 229
  memory, 133, 204, 207, 209, 215, 227, 229
  permanent, 228, 230
  place/room, 204, 211, 229
stress, 72, 178, 180, 187, 268, 278, 280, 282, 290, 326, 353, 365 *see also*: post-traumatic
structures *see*: internal
stuffed animals, 35, 111, 136, 149, 152
suicide, 25, 30–31, 33, 48, 52, 57, 72, 75–76, 80, 93, 106, 108, 130–131, 136, 171, 181, 192, 305, 345 *see also*: thought(s)
  accidental, 128, 171
  attempts, 46, 48, 56, 66, 73, 92, 106–107, 125–128, 131, 157, 170, 181, 238, 241
  bombers, 19
  programme(s)/programming, 76–78, 80, 136–137, 141, 181, 208, 215, 224
  serious, 128
  successful, 128
  training, 106, 128
  unsuccessful, 127–128
supernaturalist approaches, 334–335
surgery, 258, 297
  fake, 111–112, 243
survivor therapist(s), xvi, 15, 19, 51, 57, 142, 164, 173, 181, 188, 200, 245–246, 252, 277, 328, 333, 339
Survivorship, 51, 168
Svali, 145
switches, 46–48, 54–55, 75, 89, 97, 140, 171–172
  internal, 46, 71, 140
  programme, 46
switching, xiii, 7, 22, 30–31, 46, 54, 77, 90, 127, 131, 145, 159, 206, 243–244, 254, 263, 268, 274, 279–280, 309, 312–313, 317, 362–363
symbols, 3, 113, 116, 160, 169–170, 211, 228, 230, 322, 325 *see also*: mind control

teachings of abuser groups, 60–62, 100–102
technology, 10, 15, 22, 51–52, 58, 60–61, 68, 105, 111–112, 119, 327
telephone *see*: answering
terror, xv, 16–19, 89, 126, 151–152, 172, 178, 181–182, 189, 199, 219–220, 297, 313, 325, 327, 342
therapists *see*: bad, Christian(s), good, impersonation of, mistakes, survivor, trust(ed)
thought(s) *see also*: NEST, trigger(s)/triggering
  crazy, 34

  critical, 33
  intrusive, 8, 136
  paranoid, 8
  snatching, 33
  suicidal, 73, 75, 78, 136–137, 141
threat(s)/threatening, 25, 33–36, 38–39, 43, 56, 58–59, 86–87, 89–93, 106, 112, 120, 134, 142, 145–146, 181, 193, 199, 234–236, 244–245, 248, 256, 265, 267–268, 277–278, 287, 289, 299, 304, 316, 320, 357–358 *see also*: life
  non-, 270, 272
tiredness, 80, 158, 166, 174, 188, 209, 214, 228, 268, 270, 278, 281, 351
torture/torturer(s), 1, 15–19, 22–23, 25, 38–39, 50, 54, 56, 59–60, 63, 65, 71–72, 74–75, 77, 79, 88–92, 99–100, 103, 106, 110, 118, 125, 128, 130, 151, 163–165, 168, 181, 183, 190, 192, 194, 223, 243, 251, 262, 267, 270, 286, 289, 297, 303–306, 315, 321, 325–327, 329, 331–332, 340, 344, 352, 365
touch, 57, 76, 118, 127, 138–139, 203, 220, 223–224, 239, 241–242, 255–256, 259, 263, 316, 364–365 *see also*: trigger(s)/triggering
  loving, 153, 239
  silence, 47
tough, 31, 65–66, 87, 97, 99, 101–102, 171, 191, 206, 217, 258, 270, 340, 358
trafficking, 19, 22
trainer(s)/training, 19, 49–50, 52, 64, 68–69, 90, 101, 164, 170, 172, 248, 329, 351, 358 *see also*: access, behaviour, denial, insider(s), military, mind control, suicide
  cult, 17, 21, 23, 49–50, 52, 164, 223, 304–305, 321, 355
  incidental, 222
traitor(s), 63, 74–76, 101, 141, 337–338 *see also*: betrayal
transference, 308–309, 316–317 *see also*: countertransference
trauma/traumatic *see also*: pain/painful, part(s), post-traumatic
  childhood, 1–2, 5–6, 23–24, 50, 157, 178, 184, 200, 245, 367
  events, 2, 4, 199, 216–218, 222, 228
  hidden, 29, 200
  memories, 30, 34–36, 55–56, 58, 84, 86, 92, 127, 141, 150, 156, 179, 184, 189, 191–192, 200, 202, 207, 210, 212–214, 216–217, 219–220, 222, 227, 229, 273, 311, 314, 330, 353, 355, 368–369
  ongoing, 2, 6, 175, 194
  past, xvi, 35, 84, 178, 201, 309
  physical, 3, 369
  toxic, 355
tree(s), 49–50, 52, 58, 146, 149, 152–153, 162, 192, 222, 301, 347–348
  of life, 155, 222
triangles, 169, 285
trick(s)/trickery, 12, 20, 23, 26, 38, 47, 51, 54–55, 59–60, 68, 90, 96, 110–112, 115, 122, 128, 182, 191, 206, 221, 252, 296, 301, 303, 305–307, 312, 324, 326–327, 330, 334–335, 346, 352
  religious, 327
trigger(s)/triggering, xiv, xvi, 3, 5, 35, 46–47, 57–58, 63, 72–73, 79, 96–97, 105–107, 109, 110, 112, 116–117, 120–122, 128, 132–134, 137–139, 141, 143, 149, 162–163, 168–170, 172, 174, 178, 180, 183, 185, 189, 193, 196–197, 202, 230, 237, 246, 248, 251–252, 255, 268, 274, 283, 291–292, 296–297, 305–306, 312, 316, 326, 359, 366, 368–369 *see also*: behaviour
  on and off, 46–47, 58, 138–139, 225
  post-traumatic, 72, 125, 143, 157, 178, 180, 366
  programme(s)/programming, 96, 107, 118, 127, 132–133, 136, 138, 140–141, 143, 167, 200–202, 224, 226, 230, 283, 291, 369
  thoughts, 290–292
  touch, 47, 57, 138–140
trust(ed), 23, 38, 60–61, 76, 86, 90, 101–102, 110, 143, 151, 153, 165, 180, 189–191, 209, 218, 235–236, 244–245, 271, 275–276, 278–279, 281–282, 284, 287, 299–300, 302, 307, 312, 357, 362, 365
  friend, 143
  therapist, 79, 142–143, 151, 307, 312–313, 317
  -worthy, 245, 276, 280–281, 306, 317
truth, xiii, xv, 1, 9, 11–12, 38, 60, 70, 75–76, 80, 98, 100–101, 103, 110–111, 114–115, 119, 124, 128, 143, 147, 160, 172, 178, 191, 205, 219, 235–236, 249, 275, 297, 303, 307, 311, 330, 335, 340–341, 343, 345, 349, 365, 369
Twartsky, Mrs, 21

unconscious(ness), 3, 56, 117, 137, 159, 224, 267, 329, 337 *see also*: conscious(ness)

  memories, 224–225, 276
unforgivable, 72, 76, 93, 327
updating *see*: insider(s), part(s)

validation, 4, 11–12, 20–21, 24, 124, 170, 190, 247, 261, 311–312, 343, 350, 362, 366
values, 23, 62, 73, 112, 136, 187, 194–195, 261–262, 267, 279, 284, 308, 343, 350–352, 369
Van der Hart, O., xv, 43, 159
video of memory, 204, 221–222, 229–230
violence/violent, 7–8, 16, 21, 116, 181, 184, 191, 193, 237, 242, 244, 255–257, 259, 261–264, 272–274, 285, 331–332 *see also*: mother, parent(s), pornography, sex
virtual reality, 52, 58
vows, 61–62, 91, 336

walls *see also*: internal
  ears on the, 111, 119, 296
  of silence, 285
watchers
  part(s), 34, 36, 47, 55–56, 58, 67, 90, 119, 131, 140, 146, 150, 189, 204, 218, 221, 223, 280, 298–299, 312
  perpetrators, 110–111, 120–121, 172, 321
waterfall, 148, 153, 228, 230
weakness, 65, 76, 81, 87, 97, 99, 115, 135, 159, 163, 167, 171, 179, 191, 217, 225, 285, 307, 312, 314, 321, 348, 359
wires/wiring, 68, 170, 224 *see also*: insider(s), programme(s)/programming
  internal, 47
  trip, 75, 170
Woo-Woo kids, 67–68
word *see*: meaning(s)
work/working *see also*: internal
  -aholic, 188
  art, 4, 40, 134, 139
  detective, 201
  hard, 57, 114, 131, 188, 204, 219, 248, 269, 332, 348
  healing, 107, 248, 272
  home-, 94, 278, 356–357
  house-, 173, 188, 244
  memory, 85, 92, 129, 133, 152, 184, 192, 201, 204–207, 209–210, 214–219, 223–225, 230–231, 302, 353, 364, 367
  place, 30–31, 186, 288–290, 354
  recovery, 142–143, 146, 205
  through, 12, 72, 121, 133, 139–140, 146, 174, 181, 184, 202, 205–206, 208, 210, 215–216, 218, 224, 229–230, 234, 254, 261–262, 264, 273, 308, 323, 327–328, 345, 355
  with survivors, xiv, 314–315
world
  adult, 30, 205
  external, 150–151, 218
  inner, 37, 42, 47–50, 58, 69, 71, 85–86, 88, 126, 147–154, 156, 171, 181, 191, 202–204, 209, 221, 228, 230, 280, 327, 356, 360–362, 364, 366
  internal, 49–50, 54, 305
  model, 148–149
  outer/outside, 29, 31, 47, 49–50, 53, 55, 58–60, 97–98, 151–154, 182, 206, 276, 353, 360, 362
  present, 29, 40, 93, 148, 160, 221
  real, 30, 42, 49, 90, 98, 113, 119, 150, 170, 181, 221, 225, 230, 269, 272, 280, 334, 357–358
worry, 8, 35, 51, 74, 77, 98, 188–189, 220, 266

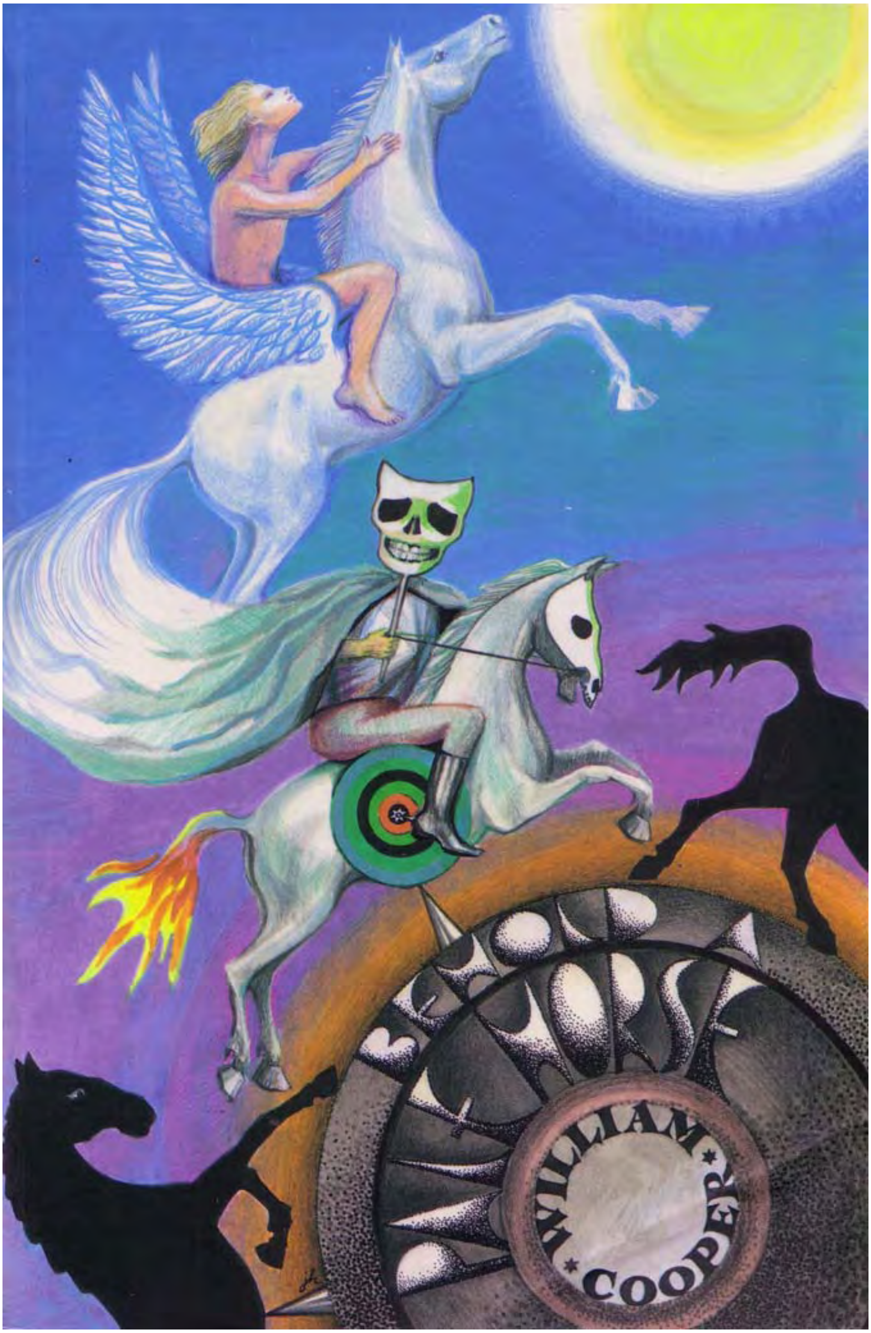
WILLIAM
COOPER

"BEHOLD
A
PALE HORSE"

Milton William Cooper

And I looked,

and behold a pale horse:

and his name that sat upon him was Death,

and Hell followed with him.

And power was given unto them

over the fourth part of the earth,

to kill with sword,

and with hunger,

and with the beasts

of the earth.

The Holy Bible
The Book of Revelation
Chapter 6
Verse 8

The ideas and conclusions expressed in this work are mine alone. It is possible that one or more conclusions may be wrong. The purpose of this book is to convince you (the reader) that something is terribly wrong. It is my hope that this work will inspire you to begin an earnest search for the truth. Your conclusions may be different but together maybe we can build a better world.

One
basic
truth can
be used as
a foundation for
a mountain of lies,
and if we dig down deep
enough in the mountain of lies,
and bring out that truth, to set it
on top of the mountain of lies; the entire
mountain of lies will crumble under the weight of
that one truth, and there is nothing more devastating to a
structure of lies than the revelation of the truth upon which
the structure of lies was built, because the shock waves of
the revelation of the truth reverberate, and continue to
reverberate throughout the Earth for generations to
follow, awakening even those
people who had no
desire to be
awakened
to the
truth.

Delamer Duverus

Table Of Contents

Introduction 1
Foreword 5
Chapter 1 Silent Weapons for Quiet Wars 35
Chapter 2 Secret Societies and the New World Order 67
Chapter 3 Oath of Initiation of an Unidentified Secret Order ... 99
Chapter 4 Secret Treaty of Verona 103
Chapter 5 Good-by USA, Hello New World Order 109
Chapter 6 H.R. 4079 and FEMA
Federal Emergency Management Agency......................121
Chapter 7 Anti-Drug Abuse Act of 1988
H.R.5210, P.L. 100-690...151
Chapter 8 Are the Sheep Ready to Shear? 159
Chapter 9 Anatomy of an Alliance 163
Chapter 10 Lessons from Lithuania 179
Chapter 11 Coup de Grace 183
Chapter 12 The Secret Government 195
Chapter 13 Treason in High Places 239
Chapter 14 A Proposed Constitutional Model
for the Newstates of America 251
Chapter 15 Protocols of the Elders of Zion 267
Chapter 16 The Story of Jonathan May 331
Chapter 17 Documentation: U.S. Army Intelligence
Connection with Satanic Church..................................361

Appendix A William Cooper's Military Service Record 381
Appendix B UFOs and Area 51 397
Appendix C Alien Implants 442
Appendix D AIDS 445
Appendix E New World Order 448
Appendix F U.S. Government Drug Involvement.............................473
Appendix G Kurzweil vs. Hopkins 490

INTRODUCTION

Sometime ago I had the opportunity to meet William Cooper and his wife Annie. It was part of my job to verify whether this man did indeed speak the truth or was just another person seeking fame and fortune. What I found was a rugged, bulldog, driven individual who was kind, thoughtful and tenderhearted. He was truly concerned about you and your welfare.

Bill knew that people were badly informed by a society which spoon-feeds you deception until there is no distinction between fiction and reality. He sees what many other[s] see happening, and he is not afraid to do something about it.

There are many who do not want you to know what Bill has to say. They have tried many times to stop him from saying it. The scars on his face and the loss of his leg are his badges of sincerity on your behalf.

No one becomes popular by telling people the truth. History records what happened to the true prophets of the past. However, some have listened to their warnings and were not caught off-guard. Others have put their heads in the sand and refused to listen.

Bill has it together, and has put it together for you so you can also be one of the informed of the world. A well informed person can make the right decision. William Cooper has my vote of approval because I cared enough to find out who the man is. Now is your opportunity.

There have been many related sequential coincidences all throughout my life, incidents that by themselves would have led nowhere. Statistically, the odds against the same or a related sequence of events happening to one individual are astronomically high. It is this series of incidents that have convinced me that God has had a hand in my life. I do not believe in fate. I do not believe in accidents.

I cannot and will not accept the theory that long sequences of unrelated accidents determine world events. It is inconceivable that those with power and wealth would not band together with a common bond, a common interest, and a long-range plan to decide and direct the future of the world. For those with the resources, to do otherwise would be totally irresponsible. I know that I would be the first to organize a conspiracy to control the outcome of the future, if I were such a person and a conspiracy did not yet exist. I would do it in an attempt to ensure the survival of the principles in which I believe, the survival of my family, my survival, and the survival of the human race, if for no other reason.

I believe, therefore, that a grand game of chess is being played on a level that we can barely imagine, and we are the pawns. Pawns are valuable only under certain circumstances and are frequently sacrificed to gain an advantage. Anyone who has studied military strategy is familiar with the concept of sacrifice. Those who have seriously studied history have probably discovered the real reason we go to war on a regularly scheduled basis.

Before reading this book I advise you to play at least two complete games of chess. You must learn the rules THEY play by. You must realize objectively that some pieces are more valuable than others and that the king is the most valuable of all. You cannot learn reality if you get caught up in the fantasy that "if s not fair." You must come to know that the ultimate outcome of the game is the only thing that counts. You were lied to when you were told that "it does not matter whether you win or lose, if s how you play the game." Winning in the world of the elite is everything. Indeed, it is the only thing. The power elite intend to win.

My research has shown, at this point, that the future laid out for us may be just about impossible to change. I do not agree with the means by which the powerful few have chosen for us to reach the end. I do not agree that the end is where we should end at all. But unless we can wake the people from their sleep, nothing short of civil war will stop the planned outcome. I base that statement not on defeatism but on the apathy of the majority of the American people. Twenty-five years ago I would have believed otherwise — but twenty-five years ago I was also sound asleep.

We have been taught lies. Reality is not at all what we perceive it to be.

We cannot survive any longer by hanging onto the falsehoods of the past. Reality must be discerned at all costs if we are to be a part of the future. Truth must prevail in all instances, no matter who it hurts or helps, if we are to continue to live upon this earth. At this point, what we want may no longer matter. It is what we must do to ensure our survival that counts. The old way is in the certain process of destruction and a New World Order is beating down the door.

To cling to the past is guaranteed suicide. To remain apathetic is assured enslavement. To learn the truth and then act upon it is the only means of survival at this moment. To shrug off the information contained in this book and to disregard its warning will result in the complete destruction of the Republic of the United States of America. You will never get a second warning or a second chance. Like it or not, this is it, stark reality. You can no longer turn your head, ignore it, pretend if s not true, say "it can't happen to me," run, or hide. The wolf is at the door.

I fear for the little ones, the innocents, who are already paying for our mistakes. There exists a great army of occupationally orphaned children. They are attending government-controlled day-care centers. And latch-key kids who are running wild in the streets. And the lop-sided, emotionally wounded children of single welfare mothers, born only for the sake of more money in the monthly check. Open your eyes and look at them, for they are the future. In them I see the sure and certain destruction of this once-proud nation. In their vacant eyes I see the death of Freedom. They carry with them a great emptiness — and someone will surely pay a great price for their suffering.

If we do not act in concert with each other and ensure that the future becomes what we need it to be, then we will surely deserve whatever fate awaits us.

I believe with all my heart that God put me in places and in positions throughout my life so that I would be able to deliver this warning to His people. I pray that I have been worthy and that I have done my job.

THIS IS MY CREED

I believe first in God, the same God in which my ancestors believed. I believe in Jesus Christ and that he is my saviour. Second, I believe in the Constitution of the Republic of the United States of America, without interpretation, as it was written and meant to work. I have given my sacred oath "to protect and defend the Constitution of the United States of America against all enemies foreign and domestic." I intend to fulfill that oath. Third, I believe in the family unit and, in particular, my family unit. I have sworn that I will give my life, if it is required, in defense of God, the

Constitution, or my family. Fourth, I believe that any man without principles that he is ready and willing to die for at any given moment is already dead and is of no use or consequence whatsoever.

William Cooper
August 3,1990
Camp Verde, Arizona

FOREWORD

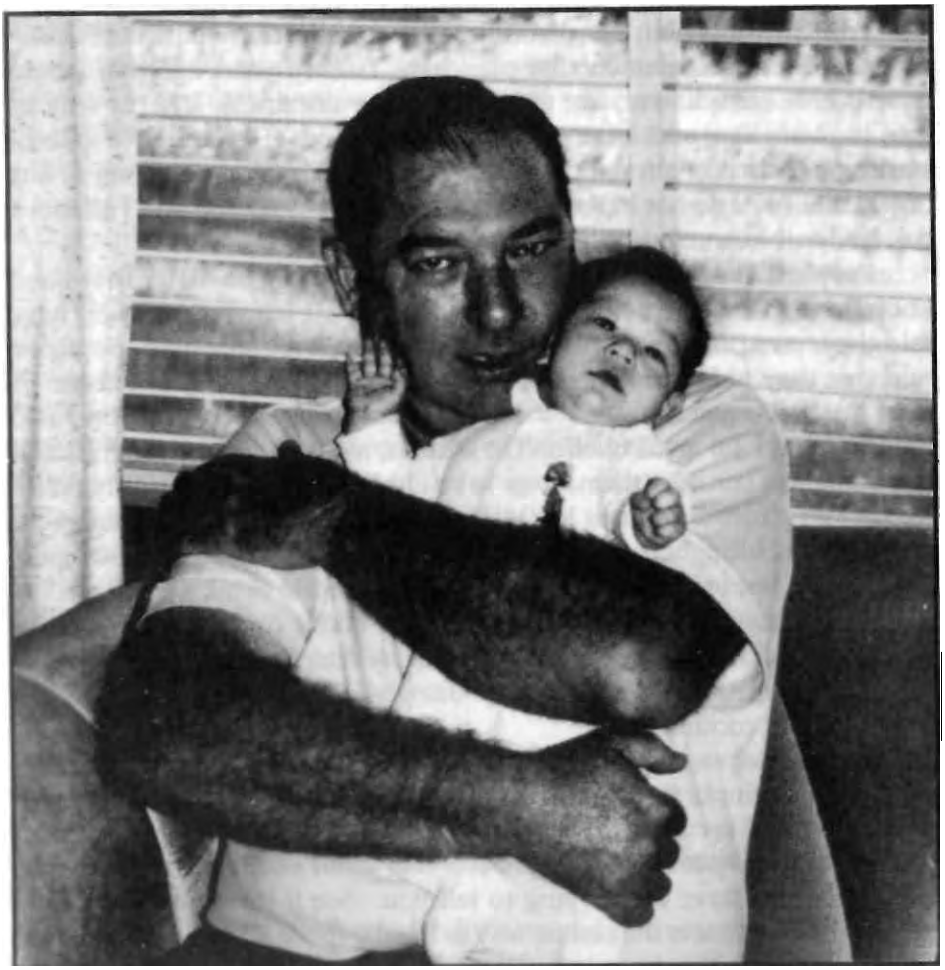

William Cooper and daughter Dorothy

The one thing that I find most difficult is to write about myself. It is hard to understand why some people thirst for knowledge about me. It was never my intention to be anyone's hero. I am certainly no great example upon which to base one's life. I consider myself a very average normal kind of guy. I have some pretty good points; I have some human failings. I am proud of some of my achievements, and there are things that I wish I had not done. I'm not perfect, and I am not sure that I ever want to be. But it is certain that I do not belong on anyone's pedestal. I am a man with a message. And the message will be accepted by only a few. To those few who will understand, I am your brother. Maybe...we can change the future for the better.

William Moore, in his disinformation publication entitled "Focus," said that I am a fundamentalist preacher. Twenty years ago that would have been a compliment, but today it implies sleaziness. That is why he said it. I am not, and have never been any kind of preacher. I am not starting a church. I am not developing a religion. I do not belong to any organizations. I do not have an entourage. There is no cult and I am not a cult leader. No one camps out around my house.

People have called radio talk shows claiming to have first-hand knowledge that I am a notorious radical right-wing extremist. Others have said they have proof that I belong to a white racist organization. Someone said that they found my name on a list of communist party members. A man in Los Angeles, always the same voice, calls when I am on radio claiming that I am an alcoholic. The truth is, most of my close friends and acquaintances consider themselves to be liberal democrats. My only political stance is Constitutional. My wife is Chinese. That rules out the racist propaganda. I fought the communists in Vietnam. I will fight them again, if necessary, but only on United States soil. I used to drink a lot of alcohol in my younger days. As I became older the booze dwindled to a trickle. Now I do not drink much at all. Most of my friends have never seen me take a drink. Annie and I are fond of using wine in our cooking. The lies, no doubt, will continue.

For the purpose of keeping everything in perspective, let's all understand that attempts to assassinate my character will continue and in all probability will become worse. Rather than let that get in the way, I want you to believe everything bad that you ever hear about me. See if that changes anything that I have been trying to tell you. See if it negates any of the proof. I believe that is the easiest way to handle those attacks. You who are sincerely interested in knowing will seek out me or those who are intimately close to me. Those who do are the only ones who will ever really know who and what I am.

My ancestors came from England, Scotland, and Ireland. I had relatives who fought on both sides in the Civil War. And some who fought in the Indian Wars. One of my ancestors was a horse thief in Texas. I don't know for sure, but I think he got hung for it. When I was a little boy I heard whispers that there was some Cherokee blood in the family. Every time I asked about it I was told to shut up. I never could figure out why everyone was afraid to talk about the Indian blood. I thought, and still think, that it is something of which to be proud. I have since discovered that the old folks in my family, like the old folks in almost every family, thought there was some stigma attached to being part Indian. In the old days on the American frontier, people lived by hard rules. If you weren't accepted by your neighbors you were more than likely to end up dead.

My paternal grandmother's family, named Vance, traveled to Texas in a covered wagon and were some of the first settlers in the area of Odessa. My great grandfather Vance was a real cowboy who eventually became one of the first oil-field workers. My great grandmother Vance told me that one of their first homes was a dugout on the prairie. My great aunt Sister owned a photo of her father, my great grandfather Vance, standing in front of a saloon beside his friend. Both men had six-guns stuck in their belts.

When she was about 84 or so she told me that my great grandfather Vance had gone off to do some work for a rancher. It was during a particularly nasty Indian uprising. My great grandmother was a newly married young woman at the time. She rose early one morning and saw smoke rising from the direction of one of her neighbors. Soon a war party of five young braves rode up to her dugout. She told me that she was scared to death but knew if she showed it they would kill her for sure. The Indians were hungry. Great Grandma Vance made them get down off their ponies, dragged them inside and fed them. They didn't harm her. After filling their stomachs they rode off in the direction where she saw smoke rising later that afternoon. She said that she learned later that she was the only one in the area that had not been burned out or killed. She was a very brave woman.

Great Grandma Vance died in a car accident just a short time after telling me that story. I thought it was a very strange way for her to die. She went from covered wagons to Fords and Boeing 707s. Grandma Vance saw just about everything that ever was important in this world happen in her lifetime.

My paternal grandfather's family also rode across the country in a covered wagon. They strayed a little north, however, and ended up in the Indian territory now known as Oklahoma. They were on the front line during the Oklahoma land rush and succeeded in staking out 320 acres on

Big Bear Creek near what would eventually become Enid. A little town sprang up not too far away called Garber. They raised a lot of kids. I remember my great grandmother cooking the biggest breakfast I had ever seen. We slept in real feather beds that swallowed us up. We ran to the outhouse in the middle of the night because we were embarrassed to use the chamber pot that Great Grandma kept handy under every bed. In the morning everyone would crowd around the wood stove in the kitchen or the coal stove in the parlor trying to get warm.

My dad had given me a .22 rifle for Christmas and Great Grandma's farm was the first place that I ever went hunting. I got up before the sun one morning, tiptoed downstairs, and headed out for the creek. About two hours later I saw my chance and shot a quail sitting up in a tree. I strutted proudly to the farmhouse holding that quail up for all to see. Luckily the farmhand saw me first. He burst out laughing and asked me what I thought I was doing with that sparrow. I ran off and buried that bird and never said a word to anyone. I learned later that quails don't sit in trees. For those who may think this to be a terrible thing, I must tell you that every boy in those days was given a rifle and taught to hunt. During hunting season many a family managed to put aside some extra money because the boys brought home meat from the hunt. That money saved was sorely needed. It was considered a duty for a citizen to own a gun in order to carry out the intent of the 2nd amendment to the Constitution. As long as the citizens owned guns the government could never become oppressive.

My mother's family came from Scotland and settled in North Carolina. They were hardworking and thrifty folk. Most of them were poor. I never knew much more about my mother's family. I don't even remember anyone talking much about them. I know that my grandmother, Nellie Woodside, was forced to give up some of her children when her husband died. There was not enough money to feed all of the kids. My mother was one of those chosen to live in a children's home until things got better. No one ever talked about my mother's father. When I asked about my grandfather I was told, "Red was no good, and you just mind your own business." I got the feeling that nobody liked him. He died before I entered this world.

I was born May 6, 1943. I was reared in a military family. My father is USAF Lt. Col. (Ret.) Milton V. Cooper. He prefers to be called Jack, the nickname given to him by the family when he was a boy. Dad began his Air Force career as a young cadet flying biplanes and retired as a command pilot with thousands of hours to his credit. I have a picture of him standing in front of an old biplane in his leather jacket and his cap with the earflaps

My mother and father

just like Snoopy wears.

I can remember the pilots gathered around the kitchen table talking about the planes and telling stories. Sometimes they discussed strange things called foo fighters or UFOs. When we were lucky they got out the projector and showed Kodachrome slides. That was a special treat. By the time I was eight years old, I think I had already seen and been inside every plane the Air Force (which used to be the Army Air Force) had ever owned. I had flown in several. I had seen many of them crash and had friends who had lost their fathers.

I remember one night in the Azores at Lages Field. We were at the base theater watching a movie when the projector ground to a stop, the lights came on and a plea was made for blood donors. We knew there had been a disaster. Everyone went outside and looked down the hill at the flightline. It was literally consumed in flames. We could see men on fire running through the night. A B-29 had crashed. I forget if it had been taking off or landing; but I will never forget the scene that was spread before me on that night. No one went back to the movie even though we had only seen half. I was nine years old but felt much older. I had seen many crashes, and I would see many more in the years to come. But I never saw anything that could ever compare to the wreckage, the fire, the devastation, or the loss of life caused by the crash of that B-29. We left the Azores a year later. As we climbed into the sky I looked out the plane window. I could still see pieces of the wreckage where it had been pushed away from the runways. It was that incident that gave me an appreciation of the dangers that my dad faced on a daily basis. I knew then how lucky we were to see him walk in the door. Aviation wasn't safe in those days, especially for military pilots. We all knew families that had lost someone in a crash.

I didn't always love my father. He was a strict disciplinarian. My dad did not believe in "spare the rod" and his belt was put to use frequently in our family. I was a very sensitive but willful child. Rules didn't mean much to me until I got caught breaking them. Many times I was the focus of his anger. Like most kids, I didn't understand. I thought he was a tyrant. Now I appreciate his upbringing. I know, beyond the shadow of a doubt, that without his strict discipline we most probably would have turned out bad.

Now I love my Dad. He is my friend. He is an independent, gregarious, feisty, tough, confident, adventurous, sometimes overbearing, handsome, big bear of a man. My mother told me that she fell in love with him because he looks like John Wayne, and he does. I have watched him progress from one who disdained any public show of affection to a man who is just as likely to hug you as shake your hand. On the other side, he has at times made me so angry that I could have punched him in the mouth, but I never have. If s damn hard for anyone not to like him. He is always up to some mischief, and I can guarantee you that no one is ever bored around my father.

My mother is a real Southern lady. They used to call her kind a Southern belle. She is one of the last of a dying breed. Dovie Nell (Woodside) Cooper is the type of woman that men like to dream about when they're lonely. She is the kindest, gentlest, woman that I have ever known. I do not make that statement just because she is my mother. It's true. She was beautiful as a young woman and she is beautiful now. My mother is one of those people who, once she likes you, can't be driven away. She is loyal to a fault. I have seen her during the good and during the bad times. She never flinched, no matter what. It always surprised me that she could be so tough and yet so kind, gentle, and loving all at the same time. Woe to anyone who ever harms my dad or one of her children in her presence. She is the best cook who ever stepped foot in any kitchen that was ever built. I love my mother probably more than anyone else in this world.

I have a brother Ronnie and a sister Connie. They are fraternal twins two years younger than me. We were closer than most siblings when we were children because we spent so much of our life in foreign countries, where oftentimes we found ourselves unable to communicate except with each other. We had school friends, but school was often many miles from where we lived. We had few toys. Most of them were things that mother gave us such as spools, cigar boxes, string, or anything else that we could find to keep us occupied. Every Christmas was a delight because we always got some REAL toys. Ronnie and I had a propensity to see how things worked, however, so they never lasted long. Everything we wore, including shoes, was ordered from the Sears catalog. It was the wish book, and we never tired of looking through it. We alternately loved each other, hated each other, fought each other, and defended each other, as I guess all kids do.

Ronnie, his wife Suzie, and their daughter Jennifer live in Garber, Oklahoma, where Ron sells John Deere farm equipment. Ron & Suzie built their house with their own hands. As far as I know they intend to live in that house until they die. Ronnie served as an officer in the Army. In Vietnam he earned the Silver Star. We haven't seen each other since 1976 after he came to visit me in the hospital after I lost my leg. Nevertheless I love him and I miss him a lot. Neither one of us can afford to travel much unless it's business, but one of these days soon I'm going to surprise him unless visit. Connie has shown me pictures and Ron looks just like my great grandfather. Almost every picture I've seen shows Ron in chaps, a Stetson, boots, and either near or on a horse. I guess that is about how it should be, as Ronnie always wanted to be a cowboy when he was a child. Connie has really turned out to be a fine woman. When she was little I sometimes liked her and sometimes didn't. Little boys don't usually have much use for little girls. Since we only had each other to play with, however, Ronnie and I loved her a lot; but little boys just can't ever admit anything like that. I remember Connie always followed me everywhere I went. I couldn't get rid of her no matter how hard I tried. Her devotion and loyalty made me love her all the more. Of course I pretended that she was a pain in the ass. As we grew older and began to realize that there was a really big difference between boys and girls Connie began to take on an air of mystery. From that time until I was about 18 she baffled me completely. I remember when she was around 13 or so she would throw temper tantrums when she got angry. She would stomp her feet, scream, run to her room and then slam the door. Ronnie and I thought it was a great show but couldn't for love or money understand why she did it. When we asked mom she would just shake her head and say, "Hormones."

William Cooper, brother Ronnie, sister Connie

Connie grew up to be a beautiful woman and eventually married her high school sweetheart, Gus Deaton. They had two beautiful children, Janice and Chrissie. Janice is very much like Connie, loving and loyal. Chrissie is different. She's a redhead who loves to party. I guess Chrissie represents a freedom of spirit more than anything else.

Connie's marriage deteriorated and no one could figure out what was happening until Gus was diagnosed as having brain tumors. It was tragic. Everyone really loved Gus. As his disease progressed and he began to do crazy things, people just drifted away. I have always nurtured a very special love for Chrissie. She never deserted her father. When no one else could stand to be around him, Chrissie chose to go and live with him "so he won't be lonely," she said. Even now I get all choked up when I think of that little red-headed girl going to live with her sick father "so he won't be lonely." His behavior was such that no one else could stand to be around him. At least that is what I'm told. It wasn't Gus's fault that he became ill and I've always felt it just wasn't fair to Connie, the children, or Gus. I've since learned that life is seldom fair.

Connie eventually remarried and moved to Austin, Texas, where she has established herself as a valuable employee of a large bank. Her husband is an executive for McGraw Hill. His name, coincidentally, is Ron. We all really like Ron McClure, especially Dad, who has formed a close friendship with him. My sister has really blossomed into a wonderful woman. She has become one of my dearest and closest friends. She has grown to be so much a part of me that even now I sometimes get a feeling to look behind me to see if that little girl is still there. I feel a great loss when I see that if s only Sugarbear, my faithful dog; but then, I love him too, so can't complain.

I graduated in 1961 from Yamato High School in Japan. That fall I enlisted in the Air Force. I really wanted to go into the Navy but I had always had a tendency toward car sickness and seasickness. I attended basic at Lackland Air Force Base, Texas, and Technical School for Aircraft & Missile Pneudraulics at Amarillo Air Force Base.

Upon completion I was ordered to the 495th Bomb Wing of the Strategic Air Command at Sheppard Air Force Base just outside Wichita Falls. The name was later changed to the 4245th Bomb Wing — don't ask me why. In just a short time I had gone from a skinny kid who didn't know much about anything, even though I thought I did, to an airman who had a Secret(!) security clearance and worked on B-52 bombers, KC-135 refueling aircraft, and Minuteman missiles.

I saw REAL atomic bombs. I worked around them on a daily basis. Because of that I had to wear a dosimeter just in case I was exposed to radiation. In those days we were the elite of the Air Force and we knew it. I received a Letter of Commendation for my work. In due time I was awarded the National Defense Medal and the Air Force Good Conduct Medal. (Actually, I think everyone was awarded the National Defense Medal so that no one would be embarrassed standing in formation with nothing on their chest.)

It was during this time that I met a couple of sergeants who kind of adopted me. We went out to the clubs together and usually ended up chasing women and drinking a lot of beer. They told me several stories about being attached to a special unit that recovered crashed flying saucers. Sgt. Meese told me that he had been on one operation that transported a saucer so large that a special team went before them, lowering all telephone poles and fence posts. Another team followed and replaced them. They moved it only at night. It was kept parked and covered somewhere off the road during the day. Since we were always half-tanked when these stories came out, I never believed them — sergeants were known to tell some tall tales to younger guys like me.

On November 22, 1963, I was on duty as CQ (Charge of Quarters) for the Field Maintenance Squadron. Most of the men were out on the flight-line working, the barracks orderlies had been assigned their tasks, the first sergeant was gone somewhere, and I was alone. I turned on the orderly room TV to watch the live broadcast of the President's motorcade in Dallas. I was not prepared for what I saw. I stared in disbelief as the events unfurled in front of my eyes. I knew that something had happened, but what? I had seen and heard the assassination, but my mind was not accepting it. I kept staving at the set to discover what it was that had happened when slowly the realization crept over me. A numbness spread up my arms and legs. I saw what had happened! The hair stood up on the back of my neck and a chill went down my spine. President Kennedy had been shot right in front of my eyes!

At that point huge tears began to stream down my face. Waves of emotion rushed through my body. I felt that I had to do something, so I picked up the direct line to the command center. I choked back the tears. When the command duty officer answered, I told him that the President had just been shot in Dallas. There was a pause, and he asked me, "How do you know he has been shot?" I told him that 1 had watched it on television and then hung up the phone. I was numb all over.

A few minutes later the command duty officer called back and ordered a red alert at DEFCON TWO (Defense Condition Two meant war was imminent). The roar of jet engines could already be heard as the alert crews taxied their planes toward the runway. I was scared shitless as I ran from barracks to barracks routing out the night shift and those who had the day off. We had been told that we had about 15 minutes to launch all of our planes before the first atomic bomb would hit us in the event that the Russians launched an attack.

I didn't even lock up the orderly room. I just jumped in the first car I saw, rode to the SAC compound/ and reported to my red alert duty station. For the next three days I slept under the belly of a B-52 bomber staring at the Armageddon that hid just inside the closed bomb-bay doors. We thought the shit had finally hit the fan. It was a great relief when the alert was ended. I left the Air Force with an honorable discharge in 1965.

In December of the same year I joined the Navy. I had always loved the ocean. I had wanted to be a sailor since I was a little boy. Seasick or not I made up my mind to follow my dream. I was sent to the Naval Training Center in San Diego for boot camp. Because of my prior Air Force experience I was made the Recruit Chief Company Commander. I was allowed to keep my same rank and pay grade. We had a good bunch of guys in my company and we had a great company commander. Chief Campbell, chief electricians mate. He turned the company over to me. The chief was a good man. He was only interested in teaching us what we needed to know and in keeping us out of trouble. Unlike most boot camp instructors, Chief Campbell had no axe to grind and wasn't trying to prove anything to himself or anyone else. He was truly our friend.

During boot camp I volunteered for submarines (my sense of adventure was very strong). I was accepted, and upon completion of basic training, was ordered to the USS Tiru (SS-416) at the submarine base at Pearl Harbor, Hawaii. Spitfire and damnation, no one could possibly be that lucky! I couldn't believe my eyes when I read my orders. Here I was fulfilling my dream of being in the Navy. I got exactly what I asked for the first time that I asked for it, which was extremely rare in any branch of military service. And to top it all off, I was being sent to Hawaii, the land of tropical paradise. I was in seventh heaven.

I landed in Hawaii with no time to play and took a cab directly to the sub base. My submarine was nowhere to be found. I kept asking people until I found someone who told me that my boat (subs are called boats in the Navy) was not at the sub base but in dry dock in the Pearl Harbor Naval Shipyard. I hailed another cab.

The cab driver dropped me off at the head of a pier that looked like it had never been cleaned up after the Japanese bombed Pearl Harbor. It was covered with what appeared to be hoses, huge electrical cables, rusting metal of every conceivable size and shape that you can imagine. The air was rank with the smell of diesel, welding fumes, paint, and steel. If there is a hell on earth, I thought, this has to be it. I walked up the pier, over to the edge, and looked down into the dry dock. There, stripped of all dignity, lying naked and cut cleanly in half, was my boat, the USS Tiru. Men were scrambling all over it. They looked like ants swarming over a dead grasshopper. Brilliant flashes of light brighter than the sun drove sparks high into the air and then down in a beautiful flow to the bottom of the dock. I couldn't believe my eyes. Someone actually expected me to go out to sea, then underwater, in what appeared to me to be a motley collection of cut-up rusting metal scavenged from some satanic junkyard, stuck together by demons with welding torches. My luck had just run out.

I reported to the barracks barge moored in the water on the other side of the pier and was given a hammock for when I had the duty; then I was sent to the sub base barracks where I was assigned a rack and a locker. I wanted to go into Honolulu but quickly discovered non-quals did not rate liberty. It was getting worse.

The next few months were spent sanding, painting, lifting, and learning the boat. The men of the crew, except for the chief cook, were great. The chief cook was drunk every minute of the day and night. He didn't like me, so I didn't get much to eat. His dislike stemmed from my first morning when I walked into the galley and watched as the other crew members ordered their breakfast. When there was an opening I stepped up and asked for eggs over easy. That's when the chief hit the overhead and vowed that I would never eat a meal in his mess decks. He wasn't kidding, either. The only time after that morning that I got anything to eat out of that galley was when the chief cook was ashore.

To this day I still don't know what I did wrong. I could have gone to the captain, but if I had done that I might as well have put in for a transfer at the same time. It wasn't long, though, before I was able to locate where he hid his booze. I made his life miserable from that moment on. I won't tell you what I laced his vodka with, but it wasn't anything you'd ever want to drink, believe me. I kept that chief so sick that he was transferred off the boat for medical reasons. I didn't want to hurt him, but it was either get rid of him or starve to death. I made up my mind that chief or no chief I wasn't going to go to sea on a boat that wouldn't feed me.

I didn't relish going to sea with a drunk chief in charge of closing the main induction valve when the boat made a dive. When a submarine goes underwater certain valves MUST be closed or the boat will flood with water and everyone will drown. The main induction is the MOST IMPORTANT of those valves. It was the cook's duty to close it, because the valve was in the galley on board the USS Tiru.

I made two especially close friends while on the Tiru. A black seaman named Lincoln Loving and an American Indian seaman we called Geronimo. The three of us were inseparable. Lincoln was best man at my first marriage. Of the three Geronimo was the most experienced seaman, so he taught Lincoln and me. He knew everything there was to know about the boat, rope, paint, and a whole lot of other things that a man had to know to survive in the Navy. I knew the most about getting along in the military, so I taught Geronimo and Lincoln. Lincoln knew every really good spot on the Island where we could have a good time, so he led the liberty party.

Three things really stand out in my mind about the time that I spent on the Tiru. The first was an incident that occurred during a test dive while we were creeping along at about 3 or 4 knots at a depth of 600 feet off the Island of Oahu. Lincoln and I had just been relieved from watch and were in the after battery talking when we were knocked off our feet. We heard a loud CLANG forward and felt the boat lunge to port. Then we heard a sound that made our blood run cold. I could literally feel the blood drain from my face as I listened to whatever it was that we hit scrape along the starboard side of the hull. Lincoln and I froze. We held our breath as metal screeched upon metal. I thought it would never end. No one moved, anywhere.

Finally, after what seemed a lifetime, the boat lurched and the noise disappeared aft. If it had pierced the hull none of us would be alive today. We never found out what it was. When we returned to Pearl, divers went down to have a look. When they surfaced they reported that the starboard bowplane was damaged and the hull was gouged all along the starboard side from bow to stern. We went in for repairs. In a couple of days we were good as new, but I certainly had an entirely different perspective on life.

The second thing that stands out happened to another boat that had been out participating in torpedo attack exercises with another submarine. I remember seeing the boat entering the harbor with a large tarp over the conning tower. I could see something holding the tarp up on each side of the tower but I couldn't see what it was. Later, Geronimo, Lincoln and I walked over where the boat was berthed and looked under the tarp. The other boat in the exercise had scored a direct hit! What we saw was a torpedo sticking completely through the sail. We started laughing. Then we looked at each other and decided that it wasn't so funny after all. This submarine business was not quite as attractive as I'd thought.

Number three happened during a transit between the Portland-Seattle area and Pearl Harbor. I was the port lookout during the afternoon watch (1200 to 1600 hours). Geronimo was the starboard lookout. Ensign Ball was the OOD (Officer of the Deck). We were doing 10 knots on the surface and the three of us were on the bridge in the conning tower. It was a bright day, but the sun was obscured by a low layer of clouds. It was cool. We had a bit of fun when someone below requested permission to put a man on deck forward to get something that was needed from the waterproof deck locker. The locker was under the deck plate all the way up on the bow near the forward torpedo-room escape trunk. Geronimo and I laughed when Ensign Ball gave his approval. He really shouldn't have, because we were running a pressure wave over the bow. When we saw who it was they had sent on deck we roared with laughter. We looked down over the side of the sail at the deck-level door just as it popped open and Seaman Lincoln Loving stuck his head out. He didn't look happy.

Lincoln reached down and put the runner in the safety track in the deck, fastened the safety belt around his waist and, grabbing the handrail, stepped out on deck. He looked up at us with that "don't you laugh at me" look that he did so well. It took him a few minutes to get up the nerve to let go of the handrail and begin to make his way forward against the wind and the pitching deck. Gingerly, he crept forward until he was just at the point where the pressure wave was rolling off the deck when the bow heaved free of the water on its cyclical upswing.

I could see that Lincoln was trying to time a run forward when the bow was out of the water. He made a couple of false starts, then ran slipping on the wet deck, disappearing into the access hole for the forward torpedo-room escape hatch. The bow plunged underwater and I found myself sucking air as I imagined the cold saltwater swirling around me. It wasn't me, though, it was Lincoln. I gripped the top of the sail as I waited for the bow to swing up, hoping that Lincoln wouldn't panic.

What we saw next could have been a clip from one of those old Keystone Cops movies. Lincoln was flailing water so hard that it looked like he had 40 arms and 40 legs. It was only then that I realized that Lincoln had joined the Navy but he didn't know how to swim. When he finally gathered a foothold, the half-drowned seaman exploded up out of that hole like a Polaris missile and ran back to the conning tower just as fast as his wet leather soles would carry him.

Ensign Ball, Geronimo, and I laughed for a good ten minutes. In fact, every time we saw Lincoln for the next two days we would burst out laughing. Lincoln didn't think it was funny and didn't miss a chance to slug us every time we laughed.

Lincoln went below. Geronimo and I began the unending task of sweeping the horizon from bow to stern, then the sky from horizon to zenith, and then back to the horizon from bow to stern. Again and again, and then a pause to rest our eyes and chat for a few minutes. I asked Ensign Ball to call for some hot coffee. As he bent over the 1MC, I turned, raising my binoculars to my eyes just in time to see a huge disk rise from beneath the ocean, water streaming from the air around it, tumble lazily on its axis, and disappear into the clouds. My heart beat wildly. I tried to talk but couldn't; then I changed my mind and decided I didn't want to say that, anyway. I had seen a flying saucer the size of an aircraft carrier come right out of the ocean and fly into the clouds. I looked around quickly to see if anyone else had seen it. Ensign Ball was still bending over the IMC. He was ordering coffee. Geronimo was looking down the starboard side aft.

I was torn between my duty to report what I had seen and the knowledge that if I did no one would believe me. As I looked out over the ocean I saw only sky, clouds, and water.

It was as if nothing had happened. I almost thought I had dreamed it. Ensign Ball straightened, turned toward Geronimo and said the coffee was on the way up.

I looked back toward the spot, about 15 degrees relative off the port bow, and about 2-1/2 nautical miles distant. Nothing, not even a hint of what had happened. "Ensign Ball," I said, "I thought I saw something about 15 degrees relative off the bow, but I lost it. Can you help me look over that area?" Ensign Ball turned, raising his glasses to eye level. I didn't know it at the time, but Geronimo had heard me and turned to look. He was happy that something had broken the monotony.

I was just lifting the binoculars off my chest when I saw it. The giant saucer shape plunged out of the clouds, tumbled, and, pushing the water before it, opened up a hole in the ocean and disappeared from view. It was incredible. This time I had seen it with my naked eyes, and its size in comparison with the total view was nothing short of astounding. Ensign Hall stood in shock, his binoculars in his hands, his mouth open. Geronimo yelled, "Holy shit! What the — hey! did you guys see that?" Ensign Ball turned, and looking right at me with the most incredulous look on his face, said in a low voice, "This had to happen on my watch!" He turned, quickly pressing the override on the IMC and yelled, "Captain to the bridge, Captain to the bridge." As an afterthought he pressed the switch again and yelled, "Somebody get a camera up here."

The Captain surged up the ladder with the quartermaster on his heels. Chief Quartermaster Quintero had the ship's 35-mm camera slung around his neck. The Captain stood patiently while Ensign Ball tried to describe what he had seen. He glanced at us and we both nodded in affirmation. That was enough for the Captain. He called sonar, who during the excitement had reported contact underwater at the same bearing. The Captain announced into the 1MC, "This is the Captain. I have the conn." The reply came back instantly from the helm, "Aye, Aye sir." I knew that the helmsman was passing the word in the control room that the Captain had personally taken control of the boat. I also knew that rumors were probably flying through the vessel.

The Captain called down and ordered someone to closely monitor the radar. His command was instantly acknowledged. As the five of us stood gazing out over the sea the same ship or one exactly like it rose slowly, turned in the air, tilted at an angle and then vanished. I saw the Chief snapping pictures out of the corner of my eye.

This time I had three images from which to draw conclusions. It was a metal machine, of that there was no doubt whatsoever. It was intelligently controlled, of that I was equally sure. It was a dull color, kind of like pewter. There were no lights. There was no glow. I thought I had seen a row of what looked like portholes, but could not be certain. Radar reported contact at the same bearing and gave us a range of 3 nautical miles. The range was right on, as the craft had moved toward the general direction that we were headed. We watched repeatedly as the strange craft reentered the water and then subsequently rose into the clouds over and over again until finally we knew that it was gone for good. The episode lasted about 10 minutes.

Before leaving the bridge the Captain took the camera from the Chief and instructed each of us not to talk to anyone about what we had seen. He told us the incident was classified and we were not to discuss it, not even amongst ourselves. We acknowledged his order. The Captain and the Chief left the bridge. Ensign Ball stepped to the 1MC and, pressing the override switch, announced, "This is Ensign Ball. The Captain has left the bridge. I have the conn." The reply, "Aye aye sir," quickly followed.

Those of us who had witnessed the UFO were not allowed to go ashore after we had berthed in Pearl. Even those of us who didn't have the duty were told we had to stay aboard. After about two hours a commander from the Office of Naval Intelligence boarded. He went directly to the Captain's stateroom. It wasn't long before we were called to wait in the passageway outside the Captain's door. Ensign Ball was called first. After about 10 minutes he came out and went into the wardroom. He looked shaken. I was next.

When I entered the stateroom, the Commander was holding my service record in his hands. He wanted to know why I had gone from the Air Force into the Navy. I told him the whole story and he laughed when I said that after putting off the Navy for fear of chronic seasickness, I hadn't been seasick yet. Suddenly a mask dropped over his face, and looking me directly in the eyes he asked, "What did you see out there?"

"I believe it was a flying saucer, sir," I answered.

The man began to visibly shake and he screamed obscenities at me. He threatened to put me in the brig for the rest of my life. I thought he wasn't going to stop yelling, but as suddenly as he began, he stopped.

I was confused. I had answered his question truthfully; yet I was threatened with prison. I was not afraid, but I was not very confident, either. I figured I had better take another tack. Eighteen years with my father and four years in the Air Force had taught me something. Number one was that officers just do not lose control like that, ever. Number two was that if my answer had elicited that explosion, then the next thing out of my mouth had better be something entirely different. Number three was, that his response had been an act of kindness to get me to arrive at exactly that conclusion.

"Let's start all over again," he said. "What did you see out there?"

"Nothing, sir," I answered. "I didn't see a damn thing, and I'd like to get out of here just as soon as possible."

A smile spread over his face and the Captain looked relieved. "Are you sure, Cooper?" he asked.

"Yes sir," I replied, "I'm sure."

"You're a good sailor, Cooper," he said. 'The Navy needs men like You'll go far with the Navy." He then asked me to read several pieces of paper that all said the same thing only with different words. I read that if I ever talked about what it was that I didn't see, I could be fined up to $10,000 and imprisoned for up to 10 years or both. In addition I could lose all pay and allowances due or ever to become due. He asked me to sign a piece of paper stating that I understood the laws and regulations that I had just read governing the safeguard of classified information relating to the national security. By signing, I agreed never to communicate in any manner any information regarding the incident with anyone. I was dismissed, and boy, was I glad to get out of there.

Not long after that incident I devolunteered from submarines. I was transferred to the USS Tombigbee (AOG-11).

The Tombigbee was a gasoline tanker. It was more dangerous than the sub. The Captain was crazy and the crew was a combination of idiots and misfits. I once had to draw my pistol while I was petty officer of the watch to prevent an officer from being attacked by a seaman.

The Tombigbee collided in the dead of night with a destroyer in the Molokai channel and several men died when the destroyer was almost cut in half. Every day aboard that ship was exactly like a scene right out of Mr. Roberts. I struck for quartermaster (navigation specialist) and managed to advance to the rank of second class petty officer despite the obvious obstacles.

I made two WESTPAC tours aboard the Tombigbee. They included a total of 12 months off the coast of Vietnam. We came under machine-gun fire while anchored off Chu Lai. We had to do an emergency breakaway and leave the harbor. All we needed was one tracer round in one of the tanks, and KA-BOOM, it would have been all over. The Viet Cong gunner probably got busted because the stupid jerk missed the whole damn ship. HOW CAN YOU MISS A WHOLE SHIP?

The only other time I felt threatened was when we went up to a small outpost at the DM2 called Cua Viet. It was a vision right out of hell. Cua Viet sat on the southern bank at the river mouth of the Thack Han river. We rode at anchor and pumped fuel ashore through a bottom lay line. Every night we could see the tracers from fire fights raging up and down the river and along the DMZ. It was a real hot spot. Every once in awhile Viet Cong or NVA rockets would slam into the camp. We would perform an emergency breakaway and put to sea until the all clear was sounded.

Everything was cool until our whacko Captain decided we were going into the river mouth. Did you ever try to put a pencil through the eye of a needle? Thaf s about comparable to what we did. I'll never know how we got that big ship through the narrow mouth of that river with no navigational references whatsoever. We dropped anchor midchannel and the Captain backed the ship right up to the beach and dropped the stern anchor into the sand. There we sat, a great big target full of gasoline. We were helpless in the mouth of a narrow river, with three anchors out, right in the middle of one of the hottest combat zones in Vietnam. That night several men in the crew wrote letters to the Chief of Naval Operations requesting an immediate transfer. No one slept. I don't know why the enemy didn't send in the rockets, but they didn't. I knew then that God must keep a special watch over fools. The next day we set to sea and started for Pearl. The Captain was relieved for incompetence later that year. Then I was transferred to school.

I didn't know what school I had drawn. It turned out to be the Naval Security and Intelligence School for Internal Security Specialist (NEC 9545). The general training prepared me to set up security perimeters, secure installations and buildings, and safeguard classified information. My training included special weapons, booby-trap identification and disarming, the detection of bugs, phone taps, transmitters and many other subjects. I was specifically trained to prepare and conduct Pacific-area intelligence briefings. From the day I reported to school in 1968 until I left the Navy I worked off and on for Naval Security and Intelligence,

Upon graduating I was transferred to Vietnam. I had volunteered over a year before because I figured that my chances were better in the war than they were on that screwed-up gasoline tanker. This was the first good news I'd had since leaving boot camp. I really wanted to fight for my country. I wasn't to find out what a real fool I was until a few years later.

I landed at Da Nang and was bused to Camp Carter, the headquarters for Naval Security and Intelligence in I Corps. I was interviewed by Captain Carter, the commanding officer. The names turned out to be a coincidence. Captain Carter asked me if I thought I would make a good patrol boat captain, and I told him that I would. What else could I tell him? I thought he was joking when he told me I would have command of a boat and crew. He wasn't, and I did. Lt. Duey at the Harbor Patrol, a division of Naval Intelligence, allowed me to hand-pick a crew. He gave me first choice of four 45-foot picket boats that had just been unloaded from the deck of a freighter. I and my new crew spent three days going over every inch of that boat. We adjusted and fine-tuned everything. We sanded and painted. One of the seamen even hung curtains in the after cabin. We checked and double-checked the engines. My gunners mate, GMG3 Robert G. Barron, checked out weapons and we began to arm our vessel. I've got to tell you the truth — just looking at all those guns scared the shit out of me. I vowed right then and there that I would be the best damn captain that ever commanded a combat vessel in wartime. I learned to exist an only 2 or 3 hours of sleep out of 24 and never ate until I knew that my crew had been fed.

We spent a lot of spooky nights patrolling the Da Nang harbor and river. One night a rocket hit the ammo dump at the river's edge near the Da Nang bridge, and it really looked as if the world was coming to an end. Another time we engaged the enemy in the cove at Point Isabella near the marine fuel farm and probably saved their butts. That engagement was reported in The Stars and Stripes, the armed forces newspaper in Vietnam.

The worst moments came, however, not from Charley but from mother nature. A full-blown typhoon roared across the Gulf of Tonkin. To save the boats we put to sea. The angels must have been laughing. What a sight we must have made! I maneuvered our boat in between two giant cargo ships riding at anchor off Red Beach and learned quickly what fear was really all about. The wind was blowing so hard that none of us could go on deck. That meant that the two of us in the pilot house were stuck on watch and the men trapped in the after cabin had to man the hand pumps. The windows in the pilot house blew out and the rain felt like knives hitting our skin. Water poured in, and I prayed that the men on the pumps would not become exhausted. I could just barely make out the two tankers. I could tell they were in more trouble than we. When we were on the crest of the mountainous waves we looked down onto the top of the ships. When we were in the trough we seemed to be in danger of their crashing down upon us. One of the freighters snapped a cable and steamed slowly out of the harbor.

The next morning the storm calmed and we moved into the river. Debris was floating down and we had to play dodge-the-tree-trunks until we spotted a sheltered pier in front of the Press Club. We carefully pulled the boat alongside, tied fast to the pier, then collapsed from exhaustion. After awhile we drew straws to see who would remain on watch with me. The rest went into the Press Club. After a couple of hours the crew returned and we went in. It was like nothing was going on outside. Reporters sat around drinking or eating. All around flowed conversation and laughter. We ordered a huge meal, signed Lt. Duey's name to the check, then went out to the boat. I don't know whose name the other guys signed, but none of us had any money. I don't even know if Lt. Duey ever got the bill. I do know that it was one of the best damn meals that we ever had in that country.

The next two days were spent in repairing the boat, cleaning the weapons, and checking everything. Then we went to the club, got stone drunk, and slept for damn near a whole other day.

Bob Barron volunteered for Cua Viet. I begged him to stay with us. Maybe we could all go up later together. He couldn't wait; he had to have action. We promised each other that if one of us bought the farm the other would drink a bottle of scotch in memory, then break the bottle on the rocks. Don't ask me what that was all about. Men who think they might die at any given moment do stupid things and I was no different than most.

About three weeks later we learned that Bob's boat had gone on TWO LIMA patrol on the Thack Han River one night and had never returned. No radio transmissions were ever heard. And for awhile no bodies were found. Then one by one they popped to the surface along the bank. It was a long time before we ever found the boat. When we did it was twisted up like a pretzel. I say "we," because after I drank the bottle of scotch and broke it on the rocks, I forced the issue and was transferred to the Dong Ha River Support Group at Cua Viet.

It was now a personal war. They had killed a part of me. Bob had been my friend. His name is on the Vietnam Memorial. My boat engaged the enemy more times than any other boat that ever patrolled that river. We kept the enemy off the river and I never lost another man. I was awarded the Naval Achievement Medal with Combat V, the Naval Commendation Medal with Combat V, and the Combat Action Ribbon. Our whole organization was awarded the Presidential Unit Citation, the Naval

Unit Citation, and each of us accumulated various other minor awards, ribbons, and medals.

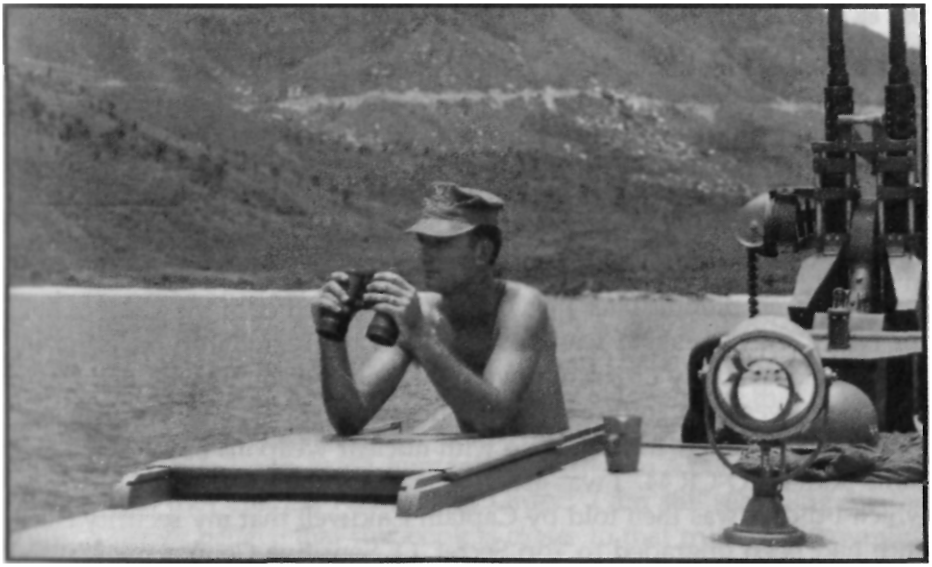

On a Patrol Boat

One thing I didn't like about Vietnam was that it was very difficult to maintain unit cohesion and morale when you had proven and trusted men leaving all the time at staggered intervals and green, unproven men arriving to take their place. I noticed that I felt like I was deserting my crew when I was rotated home. I tried to extend my tour of duty, but they had already decided to phase out our forces and turn the war over to the Vietnamese. If I had extended a month earlier, I was told, I could have stayed. My attitude at that point was a smoldering "SCREW IT!"

The whole time that I was in Vietnam and especially on the DMZI had noticed that there was a lot of UFO activity. We had individual 24-hour crypto code sheets that we used to encode messages, but because of the danger that one of them could be captured at any time, we used special code words for sensitive information. UFOs, I was told, were definitely sensitive information. I learned exactly how sensitive when all the people of an entire village disappeared after UFOs were seen hovering above their huts. I learned that both sides had fired upon the UFOs, and they had blasted back with a mysterious blue light. Rumors floated around that UFOs had kidnapped and mutilated two army soldiers, then dropped them in the bush. No one knew how much of this was true, but the fact that the rumors persisted made me tend to think there was at least some truth in them. I found out later that most of those rumors were true.

I eventually found myself back in Hawaii. This time it was shore duty at the headquarters of the Commander in Chief of the Pacific Fleet at Makalapa, a hill above Pearl Harbor.

I had carried a Secret security clearance in the Air Force, and Secret was required for submarines. When I checked into the Fleet Administration Unit, I was asked to fill out papers for another clearance. I did as I was asked. I remember that one of the questions asked if I had ever belonged to any fraternal organizations. I looked down the list, circled the DeMolay Society, and answered in the affirmative. I was assigned to the Operational Status Report office (OPSTAT) under Lt. Cdr. Mercado while I awaited the results of my FBI background check for the upgraded clearance.

About six months later I was called into the office of the Chief of Staff for Naval Intelligence. I was asked to read the regulations covering the Personnel Reliability Program governing those personnel who had access to nuclear weapons, information on nuclear weapons, launch codes, and various other things having to do with nuclear weapons or anything that came under HQ-CR 44. I was asked to read and then sign a security oath, which I did. I was then told by Captain Caldwell that my security clearance had been upgraded to Top Secret, Q, Sensitive Compartmentalized Information with access authorized on a strict need-to-know basis. He told me to report to the officer in charge of the CINCPACFLT Intelligence

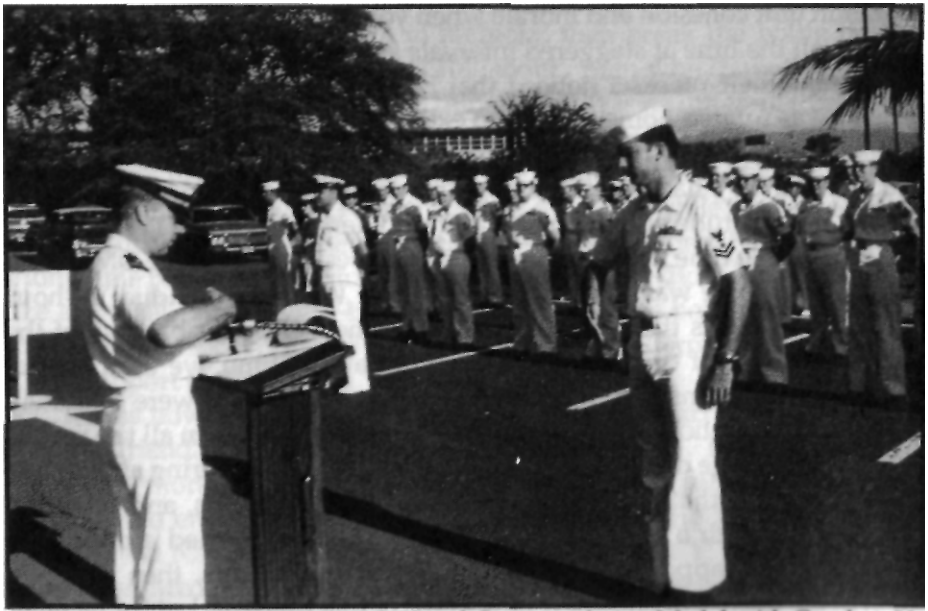

William Cooper is presented with Naval Commendation Medal with Combat V.
CINCPACFLT Headquarters – 1970

Briefing Team the following morning at 0400 hours. I did. What I learned during the time I spent with that briefing team is what led me on my 18-year search that has culminated in the writing of this book. I was later given another upgraded clearance in the crypto category and served as the designated SPECAT operator when I was on watch in the command center.

On the day that I learned that the Office of Naval Intelligence had participated in the assassination of President John F. Kennedy and that it was the Secret Service agent driving the limo that had shot Kennedy in the head, I went AWOL with no intention of ever returning. My good friend Bob Swan is the one who talked me into going back. Later, on June 1, 1972, the eve of my wedding, I told Bob everything that I knew about the UFOs, Kennedy's assassination, the Navy, the Secret Government, the coming ice age, Alternatives 1, 2, & 3, Project GALILEO, and the plan for the New World Order. I believed it was all true then and I believe it is all true now.

I must warn you, however, that I have found evidence that the secret societies were planning as far back as 1917 to invent an artificial threat from outer space in order to bring humanity together in a one-world government which they call the New World Order. I am still searching for the truth. I firmly believe that this book is closer to that truth than anything ever previously written.

I attempted to leak information to a reporter after my discharge. I was forced off a cliff by a black limo in the hills of Oakland. Two men got out and climbed down to where I lay covered in blood. One bent down and felt for my carotid pulse. The other asked if I was dead. The nearest man said, "No, but he will be." The other replied, "Good, then we don't have to do anything else." They climbed up and drove off. I succeeded in climbing up the bank where I waited until found. A month later I was forced into another accident by the same limo. This time I was to lose my leg. Two men visited me in the hospital. They only wanted to know if I would shut up or if the next time should be final. I told them that I would be a very good little boy and that they needn't worry about me anymore. Under my breath I swore to spill the beans as soon as I could figure out how to do it without unit getting hurt again. It took 16 years, $27,000, a computer and a lot of envelopes, but now everyone knows.

I went back to school after leaving the Navy and obtained a degree in photography, served as the Chief Instructor of the Coastal School of Deep Sea Diving, the head of the Mixed Gas Deep Saturation Diving Department and the underwater photography instructor for the College of Oceaneering, Admissions representative for Airco Technical Institute, Assistant Director of Adelphi Business College, Executive Director of Adelphi Business College, National Marketing Coordinator of United Education &

Software, Executive Director of Pacific Coast Technical Institute, and Executive Director of National Technical College. I also owned and operated Absolute Image Gallery and Studio of Fine Art Photography.

In the spring of 1988 I saw a magazine that made reference to a document discovered by the research team of Moore, Shandera, and Friedman that outlined the government's knowledge of a downed saucer, dead alien bodies, and an operation called Operation MAJESTIC TWELVE. I knew that Moore and Friedman were government agents and the document was a fraud. I had never heard of Shandera. I knew this because I had seen a list of agents who were to initiate a contingency plan called MAJESTIC that would lead investigators off the track when such a need arose.

I decided that it was time for me to enter the arena and expose the cover-up and the disinformation. First it was necessary to convince the known agents that I was just a kook who didn't really know anything. I prepared some bogus information, mixed it with some true information, and passed it to Moore and Friedman through Jim Spieser, the operator of a computer BBS network called Paranet. Spieser was told that the information was to go only to Moore or Friedman; no one else was to see it. I wanted to buy time by convincing these agents to report me to their case officers as harmless, thus allowing me to get the real information out to the public. None of that information was intended to go to the public. Spieser turned out to be working with Moore, however, and posted the files on the computer networks. Spieser then went to Los Angeles, conferred with Moore for three days, then returned and barred me from the Paranet system.

Friedman called and elicited my address, the name and address of my employer, and a lot of other personal information. I knew that I was being checked out through the intelligence network and played along. About one week after talking to Friedman two Defense Investigative Service agents showed up at my home and confiscated all my floppy disks. The only thing that prevented them from taking my computer was the fact that it was an XT with no hard drive. I knew that my plan had worked, because they didn't take me.

With the help of Annie and a few very close and trusted friends, I prepared the real information, as true and correct as I could remember, and together we did a mailing that, all total, cost me $27,000. We sent the packages to people all over the world. That is what prevented the government from arresting me or harming me. Any move by them would be interpreted as total confirmation of everything that I had revealed. I also uploaded the information onto computer bulletin boards all across the nation. At the same time I publicly stated that Moore, Shandera, and Friedman are government agents and that the Eisenhower briefing document is a fraud. I was attacked by everyone. They insisted that Moore, Shandera, and Friedman were above reproach.

I resigned effective April 15,1989, from the college where I was the Executive Director after Jaime Shandera was seen poking around the grounds. That story is included later in this book. The loss of income was a serious blow. Stan Barrington, the head of the college security department, came to our aid. Stan gave us $5,000 to help out. I was deeply moved by his faith and trust in me, and so I gave him 24% of whatever was to come out of my efforts down the line. Neither of us ever expected much, and so far we have not been wrong. I have, however, paid Stan back his money, and now whatever he earns is extra. Stan is in charge of printing information and the sale of my papers and tapes. Stan Barrington is my only authorized representative.

Moore was proved to be an agent when by his own admission on July 1, 1989, he stated he had participated in spying on fellow researchers, had changed documents, had put out disinformation, and had helped run a scam on Paul Bennowicz that had resulted in Mr. Bennowicz being confined to a mental institution. Moore stated that he had been recruited by an intelligence agency and that he knew he had been recruited. He was a witting agent. No one acknowledged that I had been right.

From that point on, my Annie and I were followed and harassed. Death threats began showing up on our answering machine. The phone would ring several times during the night, but no one would reply when we answered. Sometimes a man would deliver another death threat. Government cars would park in front and well-dressed men watched the house. The strangest people began to show up at our door, sometimes in the middle of the night. I purchased a .380 automatic for Annie and a 9-mm for me. I taught Annie how to shoot, and she will not hesitate to kill anyone who attempts to harm me, her, or our little daughter.

Annie and Pooh (Dorothy's nickname) are the lights in my life. Annie and I were married on July 4,1989. Pooh was born on May 30,1990. My most touching memory of Annie is of the time after 12 hours of labor when we were finally in the delivery room. She had taken no drugs. She had not been given a spinal tap. She did everything naturally. She was drained of energy and was experiencing great pain. She was numb. After a really hard push she looked up at me with all the innocence and trust of a little child and asked, "Did the baby come yet?" It was very hard for me to tell her that the baby had not yet been born, but that is what I did. She seemed to waver for a moment, but only a moment. Annie quickly regained her composure. I could see the love in her eyes as she looked up at me. I squeezed her hand. She took a deep breath and pushed Pooh's little head out into the world. The doctor suctioned the baby's mouth, then Annie gave her all, a push that seemed to come from her very soul — and little Dorothy popped out, announcing her presence with a great cry. I am so proud of Annie. She is my hero. And Pooh is my always and forever friend.

Anne and Dorothy

At one point I became very upset with the intimidation. I went out to the government car at the curb. I showed the man in the car my 9-mm pistol and told him that we were fed up with their intimidating tactics. I told him that if he or anyone else wanted to know something about me, they should come to the house, sit down, have a cup of coffee, and I would be happy to tell them anything that they want to know. I informed him that if any further attempt was made to harass me or my family I would not hesitate to use my pistol. I then walked behind his car and wrote the license number down. He started the car, drove off, and we have not detected any overt signs of surveillance since that day.

They did not give up on us. No one knew the location of our new house when we moved to Arizona. However, when we drove into the driveway, a government car showed up right behind us. The man got out and said he was lost and wanted to know who lived here. I asked him why he wanted to know. He stated that he was a census taker. He said it was his job to ensure that no one out here in the country was left out of the census. He asked my name. I told him to get off the property and to not ever come back. He protested, but left when he saw that I was serious. (I merely asked Annie to get my pistol out of the car.) Now, many people would say that I was paranoid in this instance — until they discover that census takers DO NOT DRIVE GOVERNMENT CARS.

I was at the post office one morning when a county sheriff's deputy asked the clerk at the window next to the one where I was buying stamps if "William Cooper" had rented a box. I smiled as the clerk handed him my rental agreement and he copied the information. He didn't learn anything, as we live in the country where there are no addresses. The form had only "Stolen Blvd." listed — a lot of people live on Stolen Boulevard.

We have been taken advantage of by every crooked con man, TV producer, scriptwriter, author, and flim-flam expert that there is in this country. I have learned that the TV and print-media reporters and producers that I have met are a pack of liars. They are not objective and don't give a damn about the truth. The only really open media left to the public is talk radio, and even talk radio won't discuss certain subjects. My material has been copied, changed, and even plagiarized. A lot of people have used my material to make money without my knowledge or permission. A Hollywood producer wanted to buy the exclusive rights to my story for ONE DOLLAR!

Bill Hamilton begged me to let him include my material in his book entitled Alien Magic. He pretended to be a friend and I let him. I asked for no money and he offered none. His entire book consists of other people's material. He now accuses me of stealing "his" information. Bill Hamilton turned out to be just another UFO flake. I have since learned that I am not the only person of whom he has taken advantage.

The most damaging scam was perpetrated by two old, has-been actors turned con men, named Michael Callan and Douglas Deane. I doubt seriously that you will remember either one, Callan was a regular in the cheapy teen beach-blanket movies and Deane never got beyond bit parts and chorus lines. I got involved with them when another actor named Bruce Reed called and asked if I would consent to meet with him and a friend who preferred to remain anonymous. I agreed that they could come to the house where we could talk on familiar turf. I was not eager to meet with someone that I did not know, and especially with an anonymous person away from familiar surroundings.

Reed and friend showed up at my home, and the friend turned out to be Michael Callan. They told me that they had read my material and wanted to help. What a joke that statement turned out to be! They told me that they knew how to get me in front of millions of people where I could deliver my message. Callan was slick; he told me he was only interested in helping spread the information, but talked me into signing a five-year management contract that gave him a full 20% of the gross of all of my earnings no matter what the source. He swore that if he didn't show results within six months he would tear up the contract.

The first thing that Callan did was shaft his partner, Bruce Reed. He cut Reed out of the action. To prevent me from finding out that he had done it only to get Reed's half of the 20%, Callan told me that Bruce was a drug dealer. Callan said that the public would find out eventually, and Reed's drug involvement would damage me. Everything Callan told me about Reed turned out to be a lie.

Stan Barrington called me next, wanting to know why I was trying to dump him. I didn't know what he was talking about. It turned out that Callan was trying to force Stan into giving up his 24% so that Callan could form a 50-50 partnership with me. I told Stan that I had no intention of dumping him. I told him that his 24% was his, that he could keep it, sell it, or give it away and that he did not need my permission. Stan felt much better after that conversation and told Callan to go fly a kite. At that point Callan began working on me to get rid of Stan. I refused. I also told him that he had nothing invested and therefore did not warrant anything. His job was to manage according to our contract.

Douglas Deane entered the picture at the January 7,1989, lecture that I gave at the Showboat Hotel and Casino in Las Vegas. Callan brought him to videotape the lecture so that we would have a tape to sell for those thousands of people who pleaded with us to produce a tape. The agreement was that he would tape the event and the tapes would belong exclusively to me. In return, if the tapes turned out good, Deane would get a contract to produce future tapes. The tapes were terrible and I told both Deane and Callan that I did not want tapes of that poor quality being sold to anyone. They did it anyway behind my back and began the process of stealing my master tapes from all of my other lectures. At the same time Callan drained all the business accounts. He borrowed $1400 from Stan to produce tapes and then kept the money and the tapes.

A producer in Germany booked me to do a lecture in that country. To secure the agreement he sent $3,000 to be used for two first-class tickets and as a guarantee that when I got there I would not be cancelled. The producer cancelled when a German postal strike prevented him from advertising the event. Callan kept the man's $3,000. I did not find out about that until after I fired Callan.

At my lecture in San Diego at the Whole Life Expo I found out that Deane was selling tapes and asking people to make checks out to "Need to Know Productions," a phony company. I immediately fired Deane. I informed Callan that we were to do no more business with him whatsoever. I discovered that Callan was telling me that we were having tapes duplicated in Hollywood for $15 per tape, but in reality Deane was doing it on VCRs at his home in Arizona. I asked Callan to return all of my master tapes for all my lectures. He refused and I fired him.

When I got rid of Callan, he had stolen everything that we had. We were literally left penniless. He was in possession of all of our master tapes from all of my lectures. We were broke and homeless at that point. If it had not been for a few good friends in Minnesota, we would not have survived. We would be in the streets today. Callan and Deane continue to injure us by selling tapes from my lectures. We get nothing from those sales. They are the most despicable con men and thieves that you can imagine.

I paid a visit to Deane's home one Saturday morning to ask him for my master tapes. He was not home, and after a polite conversation with his handyman, I returned to my home. A few days later the sheriff's department called and asked me if I had been to Deane's home that same Saturday. I told him that I had. He asked me if I had tried to break in Deane's home and I told him that I had not. He thanked me and that was the end of it. I had no idea what it was all about until I was served with a retraining order. It seems that Deane's guilty conscience had made him afraid that I would return. He slit his own tires, made a report to the sheriff that I had done it, and then procured a restraining order from the local court. I have never been questioned or accused by the police or sheriff other than what I have already disclosed. I believe that their goal from the very beginning was to try and destroy my efforts at educating the American people. They damn near succeeded.

CHAPTER 1

EXCERPTS FROM

SILENT WEAPONS FOR QUIET WARS

Copy furnished by Mr. Tom Young
A fellow Warrior in the cause of Freedom

Excerpts printed word for word exactly as discovered

(With the added comments of William Cooper)
(Emphasis added by William Cooper)

The Illuminati's declaration of War upon the people of America.

[Above title added by WC]

WC/Author's Note: I read Top Secret documents which explained that "Silent Weapons for Quiet Wars" is the doctrine adopted by the Policy Committee of the Bilderberg Group during its first known meeting in 1954. A copy found in 1969 was in the possession of Naval Intelligence.

The following document, dated May 1979, was found on July 7,1986, in an IBM copier that had been purchased at a surplus sale.

TOP SECRET

Silent Weapons for Quiet Wars

An introductory programming manual
Operations Research

Technical Manual

TM-SW7905.1

WELCOME ABOARD

This publication marks the 25th anniversary of the Third World War, called the "Quiet War/' being conducted using subjective biological warfare, fought with "silent weapons."

This book contains an introductory description of this war, its strategies, and its weaponry.

May 1979 #74-1120

SECURITY

It is patently impossible to discuss social engineering or the automation of a society, i.e., the engineering of social automation systems (SILENT WEAPONS) on a NATIONAL or WORLDWIDE SCALE without implying extensive OBJECTIVES of SOCIAL CONTROL and DESTRUCTION OF HUMAN LIFE, i.e., SLAVERY and GENOCIDE.

This manual is in itself an analog declaration of intent. Such a writing must be SECURED FROM PUBLIC SCRUTINY. Otherwise, it might be recognized as a TECHNICALLY FORMAL DECLARATION OF DOMESTIC WAR. Furthermore, whenever any person or group of persons in a position of great power and WITHOUT FULL KNOWLEDGE and CONSENT OF THE PUBLIC, USES SUCH KNOWLEDGE and METHODOLOGY FOR ECONOMIC CONQUEST —it must be understood that A STATE OF DOMESTIC WARFARE EXISTS between said person or group of persons and the public.

The SOLUTION of today's PROBLEMS REQUIRES an approach which is RUTHLESSLY CANDID, with NO AGONIZING OVER RELIGIOUS, MORAL or CULTURAL VALUES.

YOU have QUALIFIED for this project BECAUSE of your ABILITY to LOOK at HUMAN SOCIETY with COLD OBJECTIVITY, and yet analyze and DISCUSS your OBSERVATIONS and CONCLUSIONS with OTHERS of similar INTELLECTUAL capacity WITHOUT a LOSS of DISCRETION or HUMILITY. Such virtues are exercised in your own best interest. Do not deviate from them.

WC/Author's Note: All above emphases are mine as are those in the following two sections and including bracketed additions throughout.

I do recognize this document, based upon the document's own admission, as a formal Declaration of War by the Illuminati upon the Citizens of the United States of America. I acknowledge that a State of War exists and has existed between the Citizens of the United States of America and the Illuminati aggressor based upon this recognition. I present to you that the peaceful Citizens of this nation are fully justified in taking whatever steps may be neccessary, including violence, to identify, counterattack, and destroy the enemy. I base this statement upon the God-given right of any peaceful people to defend themselves against attack and destruction by any enemy waging war against them. I cite the principles outlined in the Declaration of Independence, the Constitution of the United States of America, and the fully recognized and acknowledged historical precedents that have served as the justification for destruction of tyrants.

HISTORICAL INTRODUCTION

Silent weapon technology has evolved from Operations Research (O.R.), a strategic and tactical methodology developed under the MILITARY MANAGEMENT [Eisenhower] in England during World War II. The original purpose of Operations Research was to study the strategic and tactical problems of air and land defense with the objective of effective use of limited military resources against foreign enemies (i.e., logistics).

It was soon recognized by those in positions of power [THE COUNCIL ON FOREIGN RELATIONS] that the same methods might be useful for totally controlling a society. But better tools were necessary.

Social engineering (the analysis and automation of a society) requires the correlation of great amounts of constantly changing economic information (data), so a high-speed computerized data-processing system was necessary which could race ahead of the society and predict when society would arrive for capitulation.

Relay computers were too slow, but the electronic computer, invented in 1946 by J. Presper Eckert and John W. Mauchly, filled the bill.

The next breakthrough was the development of the simplex method of linear programing in 1947 by the mathematician George B. Dantzig.

Then in 1948, the transistor, invented by J. Bardeen, W. H. Brattain, and W. Shockley, promised great expansion of the computer field by reducing space and power requirements.

With these three inventions under their direction, those in positions of power strongly suspected that it was possible for them to control the whole world with the push of a button.

Immediately, the ROCKEFELLER FOUNDATION got in on the ground floor by making a four-year grant to HARVARD COLLEGE, funding the HARVARD ECONOMIC RESEARCH PROJECT for the study of the structure of the American economy. One year later, in 1949, THE UNITED STATES AIR FORCE joined in.

In 1952 the original grant period terminated, and a high-level meeting of the ELITE [Illuminati] was held to determine the next phase of social operations research. The Harvard project had been very fruitful, as is borne out by the publication of some of its results in 1953 suggesting the feasibility of economic (social) engineering. (Studies in the Structure of the American Economy — copyright 1953 by Wassily Leontief, International Sciences Press Inc., White Plains, New York.)

Engineered in the last half of the decade of the 1940s, the new Quiet War machine stood, so to speak, in sparkling gold-plated hardware on the showroom floor by 1954.

With the creation of the maser in 1954, the promise of unlocking UN LIMITED SOURCES OF FUSION ATOMIC ENERGY FROM THE HEAVY HYDROGEN IN SEA WATER and the consequent availability of unlimited social power was a possibility only decades away.

The combination was irresistible.

The QUIET WAR was quietly DECLARED by the INTERNATIONAL ELITE [THE BILDERBERG GROUP] at a meeting held in 1954.

Although the silent weapons system was nearly exposed 13 years later, the evolution of the new weapon-system has never suffered any major setbacks.

This volume marks the 25th anniversary of the beginning of the Quiet War. Already this domestic war has had many victories on many fronts throughout the world.

POLITICAL INTRODUCTION

In 1954 it was well recognized by those in positions of authority that it was only a matter of time, only a few decades, before the general public would be able to grasp and upset the cradle of power, for the very elements of the new silent-weapon technology were as accessible for a public Utopia as they were for providing a private Utopia.

The ISSUE of PRIMARY CONCERN, that of DOMINANCE, revolved a round the subject of the energy sciences.

ENERGY

Energy is recognized as the key to all activity on earth. Natural science is the study of the sources and control of natural energy, and social science, theoretically expressed as economics, is the study of the sources and control of social energy. Both are bookkeeping systems: mathematics. Therefore, mathematics is the primary energy science. And the bookkeeper can be king if the public can be kept ignorant of the methodology of the bookkeeping.

All science is merely a means to an end. The means is knowledge. The end is control. [THE END ALWAYS JUSTIFIES THE MEANS.] Beyond this remains only one issue: Who will be the beneficiary?

In 1954 this was the issue of primary concern. Although the so-called "moral issues" were raised, in view of the law of natural selection it was agreed that a nation or world of people who will not use their intelligence are no better than animals who do not have intelligence. Such people are beasts of burden and steaks on the table by choice and consent.

CONSEQUENTLY, in the interest of future world order, peace, and tranquility, it was decided to privately wage a quiet war against the American public with an ultimate objective of permanently shifting the natural and social energy (wealth) of the undisciplined and irresponsible many into the hands of the self-disciplined, responsible, and worthy few.

In order to implement this objective, it was necessary to create, secure, and apply new weapons which, as it turned out, were a class of weapons so subtle and sophisticated in their principle of operation and public appearance as to earn for themselves the name "silent weapons."

In conclusion, the objective of economic research, as conducted by the magnates capital (banking) and the industries of commodities (goods) and vices, is the establishment of an economy which is totally predictable and manipulative.

In order to achieve a totally predictable economy, the low-class elements of the society must be brought under total control, i.e., must be housebroken, trained, and assigned a yoke and long-term social duties from a very early age, before they have an opportunity to question the propriety of the matter. In order to achieve such conformity, the lower-class family unit must be disintegrated by a process of increasing preoccupation of the parents and the establishment of government-operated day-care centers for the occupationally orphaned children.

The quality of education given to the lower class must be of the poorest sort, so that the moat of ignorance isolating the inferior class from the superior class is and remains incomprehensible to the inferior class. With such an initial handicap, even bright lower class individuals have little if any hope of extricating themselves from their assigned lot in life. This form of slavery is essential to maintaining some measure of social order, peace, and tranquility for the ruling upper class.

DESCRIPTIVE INTRODUCTION OF THE SILENT WEAPON

Everything that is expected from an ordinary weapon is expected from a silent weapon by its creators, but only in its own manner of junctioning.

It shoots situations, instead of bullets; propelled by data processing, instead of a chemical reaction (explosion); originating from bits of data, instead of grains of gunpowder; from a computer, instead of a gun; operated by a computer programmer, instead of a marksman; under the orders of a banking magnate, instead of a military general.

It makes no obvious explosive noises, causes no obvious physical or mental injuries, and does not obviously interfere with anyone's daily social life.

Yet it makes an unmistakable "noise," causes unmistakable physical and mental damage, and unmistakably interferes with daily social life, i.e., unmistakable to a trained observer, one who knows what to look for.

The public cannot comprehend this weapon, and therefore cannot believe that they are being attacked and subdued by a weapon.

The public might instinctively feel that something is wrong [ISN'T THAT THE TRUTH?], but because of the technical nature of the silent weapon, they cannot express their feeling in a rational way, or handle the problem with intelligence. Therefore, they do not know how to cry for help, and do not know how to associate with others to defend themselves against it.

When a silent weapon is applied gradually, the public adjusts/adapts to its presence and learns to tolerate its encroachment on their lives until the pressure (psychological via economic) becomes too great and they crack up.

Therefore, the silent weapon is a type of biological warfare. It attacks the vitality, options, and mobility of the individuals of a society by knowing, understanding, manipulating, and attacking their sources of natural and social energy, and their physical, mental, and emotional strengths and weaknesses.

THEORETICAL INTRODUCTION

Give me control over a nation's currency,

and I care not who makes its laws.

Mayer Amschel Rothschild
(1743 - 1812)

Today's silent weapons technology is an outgrowth of a simple idea discovered, succinctly expressed, and effectively applied by the quoted Mr. Mayer Amschel Rothschild. Mr. Rothschild discovered the missing passive component of economic theory known as economic inductance. He, of course, did not think of his discovery in these 20th-century terms, and, to be sure, mathematical analysis had to wait for the Second Industrial Revolution, the rise of the theory of mechanics and electronics, and finally, the invention of the electronic computer before it could be effectively applied in the control of the world economy.

GENERAL ENERGY CONCEPTS

In the study of energy systems, there always appear three elementary concepts. These are potential energy, kinetic energy, and energy dissipation. And corresponding to these concepts, there are three idealized, essentially pure physical counterparts called passive components.

(1) In the science of physical mechanics, the phenomenon of potential energy is associated with a physical property called elasticity or stiffness, and can be represented by a stretched spring.

In electronic science, potential energy is stored in a capacitor instead of a spring. This property is called capacitance instead of elasticity or stiffness.

(2) In the science of physical mechanics, the phenomenon of kinetic energy is associated with a physical property called inertia or mass, and can be represented by a mass or a flywheel in motion.

In electronic science, kinetic energy is stored in an inductor (in a magnetic field) instead of a mass. This property is called inductance instead of inertia.

(3) In the science of physical mechanics, the phenomenon of energy

dissipation is associated with a physical property called friction or resistance, and can be represented by a dashpot or other device which converts system energy into heat.

In electronic science, dissipation of energy is performed by an element called either a resistor or a conductor, the term "resistor" being the one generally used to express the concept of friction, and the term "conductor" being generally used to describe a more ideal device (e.g., wire) employed to convey electronic energy efficiently from one location to another. The property of a resistance or conductor is measured as either resistance or conductance reciprocals.

In economics these three energy concepts are associated with:

(1) Economic Capacitance — Capital (money, stock/inventory, investments in buildings and durables, etc.)

(2) Economic Conductance — Goods (production flow coefficients)

(3) Economic Inductance — Services (the influence of the population of industry on output)

All of the mathematical theory developed in the study of one energy system (e.g., mechanics, electronics, etc.) can be immediately applied in the study of any other energy system (e.g., economics).

MR. ROTHSCHILD'S ENERGY DISCOVERY

What Mr. Rothschild had discovered was the basic principle of power, influence, and control over people as applied to economics. That principle is "when you assume the appearance of power, people soon give it to you."

Mr. Rothschild had discovered that currency or deposit loan accounts had the required appearance of power that could be used to INDUCE PEOPLE [WC emphasis] (inductance, with people corresponding to a magnetic field) into surrendering their real wealth in exchange for a promise of greater wealth (instead of real compensation). They would put up real collateral in exchange for a loan of promissory notes. Mr. Rothschild found that he could issue more notes than he had backing for, so long as he had someone's stock of gold as a persuader to show to his customers.

Mr. Rothschild loaned his promissory notes to individuals and to governments. These would create overconfidence. Then he would make money scarce, tighten control of the system, and collect the collateral through the obligation of contracts. The cycle was then repeated. These pressures could be used to ignite a war. Then he would control the availability of currency to determine who would win the war. That government which agreed to give him control of its economic system got his support.

Collection of debts was guaranteed by economic aid to the enemy of the debtor. The profit derived from this economic methodology made Mr.

Rothschild all the more able to extend his wealth. He found that the public greed would allow currency to be printed by government order BEYOND THE LIMITS [WC emphasis] (inflation) of backing in precious metal or the production of goods and services (gross national product, GNP).

APPARENT CAPITAL AS "PAPER" INDUCTOR

In this structure, credit, presented as a pure element called "currency," has the appearance of capital, but is, in fact, negative capital. Hence, it has the appearance of service, but is, in fact, indebtedness or debt. It is therefore an economic inductance instead of an economic capacitance, and if balanced in no other way, will be balanced by the negation of population (war, genocide). The total goods and services represent real capital called the gross national product, and currency may be printed up to this level and still represent economic capacitance; but currency printed beyond this level is subtractive, represents the introduction of economic inductance, and constitutes notes of indebtedness.

War is therefore the balancing of the system by killing the true creditors (the public which we have taught to exchange true value for inflated currency) and falling back on whatever is left of the resources of nature and regeneration of those resources.

Mr. Rothschild had discovered that currency gave him the power to rearrange the economic structure to his own advantage, to shift economic inductance to those economic positions which would encourage the greatest economic instability and oscillation.

The final key to economic control had to wait until there was sufficient data and high-speed computing equipment to keep close watch on the economic oscillations created by price shocking and excess paper energy credits — paper inductance/inflation.

BREAKTHROUGH

The aviation field provided the greatest evolution in economic engineering by way of the mathematical theory of shock testing. In this process, a projectile is fired from an airframe on the ground and the impulse of the recoil is monitored by vibration transducers connected to the airframe and wired to chart recorders.

By studying the echoes or reflections of the recoil impulse in the airframe, it is possible to discover critical vibrations in the structure of the airframe which either vibrations of the engine or aeolian vibrations of the wings, or a combination of the two, might reinforce resulting in a resonant self-destruction of the airframe in flight as an aircraft. From the standpoint of engineering, this means that the strengths and weaknesses of the structure of the airframe in terms of vibrational energy can be discovered and manipulated.

APPLICATION IN ECONOMICS

To use this method of airframe shock testing in economic engineering, the prices of commodities are shocked, and the public consumer reaction is monitored. The resulting echoes of the economic shock are interpreted theoretically by computers and the psycho-economic structure of the economy is thus discovered. It is by this process that partial differential and difference matrices are discovered that define the family household and make possible its evaluation as an economic industry (dissipative consumer structure).

Then the response of the household to future shocks can be predicted and manipulated, and society becomes a well-regulated animal with its reins under the control of a sophisticated computer-regulated social energy bookkeeping system.

Eventually every individual element of the structure comes under computer control through a knowledge of personal preferences, such know ledge guaranteed by computer association of consumer preferences (universal product code — UPC — zebra-stripe pricing codes on packages) with identified consumers (identified via association with the use of a credit card and LATER A PERMANENT "TATTOOED" BODY NUMBER [WC emphasis] invisible under normal ambient illumination....

THE ECONOMIC MODEL

...The Harvard Economic Research Project (1948-) was an extension of World War II Operations Research. Its purpose was to discover the science of controlling an economy: at first the American economy, and then the world economy. It was felt that with sufficient mathematical foundation and data, it would be nearly as easy to predict and control the trend of an economy as to predict and control the trajectory of a projectile. Such has proven to be the case. Moreover, the economy has been transformed into a guided missile on target.

The immediate aim of the Harvard project was to discover the economic structure, what forces change that structure, how the behavior of the structure can be predicted, and how it can be manipulated. What was needed was a well-organized knowledge of the mathematical structures and interrelationships of investment, production, distribution, and consumption.

To make a short story of it all, it was discovered that an economy obeyed the same laws as electricity and that all of the mathematical theory and practical and computer know-how developed for the electronic field could be directly applied in the study of economics. This discovery was not openly declared, and its more subtle implications were and are kept a closely guarded secret, for example that in an economic model, human life in measured in dollars, and that the electric spark generated when opening a switch connected to an active inductor is mathematically analogous to the initiation of a war.

The greatest hurdle which theoretical economists faced was the accurate description of the household as an industry. This is a challenge because consumer purchases are a matter of choice which in turn is influenced by income, price, and other economic factors.

This hurdle was cleared in an indirect and statistically approximate way by an application of shock testing to determine the current characteristics, called current technical coefficients, of a household industry.

Finally, because problems in theoretical economics can be translated very easily into problems in theoretical electronics, and the solution translated back again, it follows that only a book of language translation and concept definition needed to be written for economics. The remainder could be gotten from standard works on mathematics and electronics. This makes the publication of books on advanced economics unnecessary, and greatly simplifies project security.

INDUSTRIAL DIAGRAMS

An ideal industry is defined as a device which receives value from other industries in several forms and converts [it] into one specific product for sales and distribution to other industries. It has several inputs and one

output. What the public normally thinks of as one industry is really an industrial complex where several industries under one roof produce one or more products....

THREE INDUSTRIAL CLASSES

Industries fall into three categories or classes by type of output:
Class #1 — Capital (resources)
Class #2 — Goods (commodities or use — dissipative)
Class #3 — Services (action of population)
Class #1 industries exist at three levels:
(1) Nature - sources of energy and raw materials.
(2) Government - printing of currency equal to gross national product

(GNP), and extension (inflation) of currency in excess of GNP.

(3) Banking - loaning of money for interest, and extension (inflation/counterfeiting) of economic value through deposit loan accounts.

Class #2 industries exist as producers of tangible or consumer (dissipated) products. This sort of activity is usually recognized and labeled by the public as an "industry."

Class #3 industries are those which have service rather than a tangible product as their output. These industries are called (1) households, and (2) governments. Their output is human activity of a mechanical sort, and their basis is population.

AGGREGATION

The whole economic system can be represented by a three-industry model if one allows the names of the outputs to be (1) capital, (2) goods, and (3) services. The problem with this representation is that it would not show the influence of, say, the textile industry on the ferrous metal industry. This is because both the textile industry and the ferrous metal industry would be contained within a single classification called the "goods industry" and by this process of combining or aggregating these two industries under one system block they would lose their economic individuality.

THE E-MODEL

A national economy consists of simultaneous flows of production, distribution, consumption, and investment. If all of these elements including labor and human functions are assigned a numerical value in like units of measure, say, 1939 dollars, then this flow can be further represented by a current flow in an electronic circuit, and its behavior can be predicted and manipulated with useful precision.

The three ideal passive energy components of electronics, the capacitor, the resistor, and the inductor correspond to the three ideal passive energy components of economics called the pure industries of capital, goods, and services, respectively.

Economic capacitance represents the storage of capital in one form or another.

Economic conductance represents the level of conductance of materials for the production of goods.

Economic inductance represents the inertia of economic value in motion. This is a population phenomenon known as services.

ECONOMIC INDUCTANCE

An electrical inductor (e.g., a coil of wire) has an electric current as its primary phenomenon and a magnetic field as its secondary phenomenon (inertia). Corresponding to this, an economic inductor has a flow of economic value as its primary phenomenon and a population field as its secondary phenomenon of inertia. When the flow of economic value (e.g., money) diminishes, the human population field collapses in order to keep the economic value (money) flowing (extreme case — war).

This public inertia is a result of consumer buying habits, expected standard of living, etc., and is generally a phenomenon of self-preservation.

INDUCTIVE FACTORS TO CONSIDER

(1) Population
(2) Magnitude of the economic activities of the government
(3) The method of financing these government activities (See Peter-Paul Principle — inflation of the currency.)

TRANSLATION

(A few examples will be given.)

Charge — coulombs — dollars (1939).

Flow/Current — amperes (coulombs per second) — dollars of flow per year.

Motivating Force — volts — dollars (output) demand.

Conductance — amperes per volt — dollars of flow per year per dollar demand.

Capacitance — coulombs per volt — dollars of production inventory/stock per dollar demand.

TIME FLOW RELATIONSHIPS AND SELF-DESTRUCTIVE OSCILLATIONS

An ideal industry may be symbolized electronically in various ways. The simplest way is to represent a demand by a voltage and a supply by a current. When this is done, the relationship between the two becomes What is called an admittance, which can result from three economic factors: (1) hindsight flow, (2) present flow, and (3) foresight flow.

Foresight flow is the result of that property of living entities to cause energy (food) to be stored for a period of low energy (e.g., a winter season).

It consists of demands made upon an economic system for that period of low energy (winter season).

In a production industry it takes several forms, one of which is known as production stock or inventory. In electronic symbology this specific industry demand (a pure capital industry) is represented by capacitance and the stock or resource is represented by a stored charge. Satisfaction of an industry demand suffers a lag because of the loading effect of inventory priorities.

Present flow ideally involves no delays. It is, so to speak, input today for output today, a "hand to mouth" flow. In electronic symbology, this specific industry demand (a pure use industry) is represented by a conductance which is then a simple economic valve (a dissipative element).

Hindsight flow is known as habit or inertia. In electronics this phenomenon is the characteristic of an inductor (economic analog = a pure service industry) in which a current flow (economic analog = flow of money) creates a magnetic field (economic analog = active human population) which, if the current (money flow) begins to diminish, collapse (war) to maintain the current (flow of money — energy).

Other large alternatives to war as economic inductors or economic flywheels are an open-ended social welfare program, or an ENORMOUS (but fruitful) OPEN-ENDED SPACE PROGRAM [WC emphases].

The problem with stabilizing the economic system is that there is too much demand on account of (1) too much greed and (2) too much population.

This creates excessive economic inductance which can only be balanced with economic capacitance (true resources or value — e.g., in goods or services).

The social welfare program is nothing more than an open-ended credit balance system which creates a false capital industry to give nonproductive people a roof over their heads and food in their stomachs. This can be useful, however, because the recipients become state property in return for the "gift," a standing army for the elite. For he who pays the piper picks the tune.

Those who get hooked on the economic drug, must go to the elite for a fix. In this, the method of introducing large amounts of stabilizing capacitance is by borrowing on the future "credit" of the world. This is a fourth law of motion — onset, and consists of performing an action and leaving the system before the reflected reaction returns to the point of action — a delayed reaction.

The means of surviving the reaction is by changing the system before the reaction can return. By this means, politicians become popular in their own time and the public pays for it later. In fact, the measure of such a politician is the delay time.

The same thing is achieved by a government by printing money beyond the limit of the gross national product, an economic process called inflation. [Note: REMEMBER THAT INFLATION IS ONLY THE ACT OF PRINTING MONEY IN EXCESS OF GROSS NATIONAL PRODUCT. THEY COULD BLAME IT ON THE PRICE OF WIDGETS OR OIL ONLY BECAUSE YOU NEVER KNEW THE REAL CAUSE. THE REAL CAUSE AND THE ONLY CAUSE OF INFLATION IS THE PRINTING OF MORE MONEY BEYOND THE GROSS NATIONAL PRODUCT.] This puts a large quantity of money into the hands of the public and maintains a balance against their greed, creates a false self-confidence in them and, for awhile, stays the wolf from the door.

They must eventually resort to war to balance the account, because war ultimately is merely the act of destroying the creditor, and the politicians are the publicly hired hit men that justify the act to keep the responsibility and blood off the public conscience. (See section on consent factors and social-economic structuring.)

If the people really cared about their fellow man, they would control their appetites (greed, procreation, etc.) so that they would not have to operate on a credit or welfare social system which steals from the worker to satisfy the bum.

Since most of the general public will not exercise restraint, there are only two alternatives to reduce the economic inductance of the system.

(1) Let the populace bludgeon each other to death in war, which will only result in a total destruction of the living earth.

(2) Take control of the world by the use of economic "silent weapons" in a form of "quiet warfare" and reduce the economic inductance of the world to a safe level by a process of benevolent slavery and genocide.

The latter option has been taken as the obviously better option. At this point it should be crystal clear to the reader why absolute secrecy about the silent weapons is necessary. The general public refuses to improve its own mentality and its faith in its fellow man. It has become a herd of proliferating barbarians, and, so to speak, a blight upon the face of the earth.

They do not care enough about economic science to learn why they have not been able to avoid war despite religious morality, and their religious or self-gratifying refusal to deal with earthly problems renders the solution of the earthly problem unreachable by them.

It is left to those few who are truly willing to think and survive as the fittest to survive, to solve the problem for themselves as the few who really care. Otherwise, exposure of the silent weapon would destroy our only hope of preserving the seed of future true humanity....

THE HOUSEHOLD INDUSTRY

The industries of finance (banking), manufacturing, and government, real counterparts of the pure industries of capital, goods, and services, are easily defined because they are generally logically structured. Because of this their processes can be described mathematically and their technical coefficients can be easily deduced. This, however, is not the case with the service industry known as the household industry.

HOUSEHOLD MODELS

...The problem which a theoretical economist faces is that the consumer preferences of any household is not easily predictable and the technical coefficients of any one household tend to be a nonlinear, very complex, and variable function of income, prices, etc.

Computer information derived from the use of the universal product code in conjunction with credit-card purchase as an individual household identifier could change this state of affairs, but the U.P.C. method is not yet available on a national or even a significant regional scale. To compensate for this data deficiency, an alternate indirect approach of analysis has been adopted known as economic shock testing. This method, widely used in the aircraft manufacturing industry, develops an aggregate statistical sort of data.

Applied to economics, this means that all of the households in one region or in the whole nation are studied as a group or class rather than individually, and the mass behavior rather than individual behavior is used to discover useful estimates of the technical coefficients governing the economic structure of the hypothetical single-household industry....

One method of evaluating the technical coefficients of the household industry depends upon shocking the prices of a commodity and noting the changes in the sales of all of the commodities.

ECONOMIC SHOCK TESTING

In recent times, the application of Operations Research to the study of the public economy has been obvious for anyone who understands the principles of shock testing.

In the shock testing of an aircraft airframe, the recoil impulse of firing a gun mounted on that airframe causes shock waves in that structure which tell aviation engineers the conditions under which parts of the airplane or the whole airplane or its wings will start to vibrate or flutter like a guitar string, a flute reed, or a tuning fork, and disintegrate or fall apart in flight.

Economic engineers achieve the same result in studying the behavior of the economy and the consumer public by carefully selecting a staple commodity such as beef, coffee, gasoline, or sugar, and then causing a sudden change or shock in its price or availability, thus kicking everybody's budget and buying habits out of shape.

They then observe the shock waves which result by monitoring the changes in advertising, prices, and sales of that and other commodities.

The objective of such studies is to acquire the know-how to set the public economy into a predictable state of motion or change, even a controlled self-destructive state of motion which will convince the public that certain "expert" people should take control of the money system and reestablish security (rather than liberty and justice) for all. When the subject citizens are rendered unable to control their financial affairs, they, of course, become totally enslaved, a source of cheap labor.

Not only the prices of commodities, but also the availability of labor can be used as the means of shock testing. Labor strikes deliver excellent tails shocks to an economy, especially in the critical service areas of trucking (transportation), communication, public utilities (energy, water, garbage collection), etc.

By shock testing, it is found that there is a direct relationship between the availability of money flowing in an economy and the psychological outlook and response of masses of people dependent upon that availability.

For example, there is a measurable quantitative relationship between the price of gasoline and the probability that a person would experience a headache, feel a need to watch a violent movie, smoke a cigarette, or go to a tavern for a mug of beer.

It is most interesting that, by observing and measuring the economic modes by which the public tries to run from their problems and escape from reality, and by applying the mathematical theory of Operations Research, it is possible to program computers to predict the most probable combination of created events (shocks) which will bring about a complete control and subjugation of the public through a subversion of the public economy (by shaking the plum tree)....

INTRODUCTION TO ECONOMIC AMPLIFIERS

Economic amplifiers are the active components of economic engineering. The basic characteristic of any amplifier (mechanical, electrical, or economic) is that it receives an input control signal and delivers energy from an independent energy source to a specified output terminal in a predictable relationship to that input control signal.

The simplest form of economic amplifier is a device called advertising.

If a person is spoken to by a T.V. advertiser as if he were a twelve-year-old, then, due to suggestibility, he will, with a certain probability, respond or react to that suggestion with the uncritical response of a twelve-year-old and will reach into his economic reservoir and deliver its energy to buy that product on impulse when he passes it in the store.

An economic amplifier may have several inputs and outputs. Its response might be instantaneous or delayed. Its circuit symbol might be a rotary switch if its options are exclusive, qualitative, "go" or "no go," or it might have its parametric input/output relationships specified by a matrix with internal energy sources represented.

Whatever its form might be, its purpose is to govern the flow of energy from a source to an output sink in direct relationship to an input control signal. For this reason, it is called an active circuit element or component.

Economic Amplifiers fall into classes called strategies, and, in comparison with electronic amplifiers, the specific internal functions of an economic amplifier are called logistical instead of electrical.

Therefore, economic amplifiers not only deliver power gain but also, in effect, are used to cause changes in the economic circuitry.

In the design of an economic amplifier we must have some idea of at least five functions, which are

(1) the available input signals,
(2) the desired output-control objectives,
(3) the strategic objective,
(4) the available economic power sources,
(5) the logistical options.

The process of defining and evaluating these factors and incorporating the economic amplifier into an economic system has been popularly called GAME THEORY [WC emphasis].

The design of an economic amplifier begins with a specification of the power level of the output, which can range from personal to national. The second condition is accuracy of response, i.e., how accurately the output action is a function of the input commands. High gain combined with strong feedback helps to deliver the required precision.

Most of the error will be in the input data signal. Personal input data tends to be specific, while national input data tends to be statistical.

SHORT LIST OF INPUTS

Questions to be answered:

(1) what
(2) when
(3) where
(4) how
(5) why
(6) who

General sources of information:

(1) telephone taps
(2) surveillance
(3) analysis of garbage
(4) behavior of children in school

Standard of living by:

(l)food
(2) clothing
(3) shelter
(4) transportation

Social contacts:

(1) telephone — itemized record of calls
(2) family — marriage certificates, birth certificates, etc.
friends, associates, etc.
(4) memberships in organizations
(5) political affiliation

THE PERSONAL PAPER TRAIL

Personal buying habits, i.e., personal consumer preferences:

(1) checking accounts
(2) credit-card purchases
(3) "tagged" credit-card purchases — the credit-card purchase of products bearing the U.P.C. (Universal Product Code)

Assets:

(1) checking accounts
(2) savings accounts
(3) real estate
(4) business
(5) automobile, etc.
(6) safety deposit at bank
(7) stock market

Liabilities:

(1) editors
(2) enemies (see - legal)
(3) loans
(4) consumer credit

Government sources (ploys)*:

(1) Welfare
(2) Social Security
(3) U.S.D.A. surplus food
(4) doles
(5) grants
(6) subsidies

*Principle of this ploy — the citizen will almost always make the collection of information easy if he can operate on the "free sandwich principle" of "eat now, and pay later."

Government sources (via intimidation):

(1) Internal Revenue Service
(2) OSHA

(3) Census
(4) etc.

Other government sources — surveillance of U.S. mail.

HABIT PATTERNS — PROGRAMMING

Strengths and weaknesses:
(1) activities (sports, hobbies, etc.)
(2) see "legal" (fear, anger, etc. — crime record)
(3) hospital records (drug sensitivities, reaction to pain, etc.)
(4) psychiatric records (fears, angers, disgusts, adaptability, reactions to stimuli, violence, suggestibility or hypnosis, pain, pleasure, love, and sex)

Methods of coping— of adaptability — behavior:
(1) consumption of alcohol
(2) consumption of drugs
(3) entertainment
(4) religious factors influencing behavior
(5) other methods of escaping from reality

Payment modus operandi (MO) — pay on time, etc:
(1) payment of telephone bills
(2) energy purchases (electric, gas,...)
(3) water purchases
(4) repayment of loans
(5) house payments
(6) automobile payments
(7) payments on credit cards

Political sensitivity:
(1) beliefs
(2) contacts
(3) position
(4) strengths/weaknesses
(5) projects/activities

Legal inputs — behavioral control (Excuses for investigation, search, arrest, or employment of force to modify behavior)
(1) court records
(2) police records — NCIC
(3) driving record
(4) reports made to police
(5) insurance information
(6) anti-establishment acquaintances

NATIONAL INPUT INFORMATION

Business sources (via I.R.S., etc.):
(1) prices of commodities
(2) sales

(3) investments in
    (a) stocks/inventory
    (b) production tools and machinery
    (c) buildings and improvements
    (d) the stock market

Banks and credit bureaus:

(1) credit information
(2) payment information

Miscellaneous sources:

(1) polls and surveys
(2) publications
(3) telephone records
(4) energy and utility purchases

SHORT LIST OF OUTPUTS

Outputs — create controlled situations — manipulation of the economy, hence society — control by control of compensation and income.

Sequence:

(1) allocates opportunities.
(2) destroys opportunities.
(3) controls the economic environment,
(4) controls the availability of raw materials.
(5) controls capital,
(6) controls bank rates,
(7) controls the inflation of the currency,
(8) controls the possession of property.
(9) controls industrial capacity.
(10) controls manufacturing,
(11) controls the availability of goods (commodities),
(12) controls the prices of commodities.
(13) controls services, the labor force, etc.
(14) controls payments to government officials.
(15) controls the legal functions.
(16) controls the personal data files — uncorrectable by the party slandered
(17) controls advertising.
(18) controls media contact.
(19) controls material available for T.V. viewing.
(20) disengages attention from real issues.

(21) engages emotions.
(22) creates disorder, chaos, and insanity.
(23) controls design of more probing tax forms.
(24) controls surveillance.
(25) controls the storage of information.
(26) develops psychological analyses and profiles of individuals.
(27) controls legal functions [repeat of 15]
(28) controls sociological factors.
(29) controls health options.
(30) preys on weaknesses.
(31) cripples strengths.
(32) leaches wealth and substance.

TABLE OF STRATEGIES

Do this	To get this
Keep the public ignorant	Less public organization
Maintain access to control points for feedback	Required reaction to outputs (prices, sales)
Create preoccupation	Lower defenses
Attack the family unit	Control of the education of the young
Give less cash and more credit and doles	More self-indulgence and more data
Attack the privacy of the church	Destroy faith in this sort of government
Social conformity	Computer programming simplicity
Minimize the tax protest	Maximum economic data, minimum enforcement problems
Stabilize the consent	Simplicity coefficients
Tighten control of variables	Simpler computer input data — greater predictability
Establish boundary conditions	Problem simplicity/solutions of differential and difference equations
Proper timing	Less data shift and blurring
Maximize control	Minimum resistance to control
Collapse of currency	Destroy the faith of the American people in each other.

[WC: Ultimate objective — New World Order]

DIVERSION, THE PRIMARY STRATEGY

Experience has proven that the SIMPLEST METHOD of securing a silent weapon and gaining control of the public is to KEEP THE PUBLIC

UNDISCIPLINED AND IGNORANT of basic systems principles on the one hand, WHILE KEEPING THEM CONFUSED, DISORGANIZED, AND DISTRACTED with matters of no real importance on the other hand. [WC all emphases.]

This is achieved by:

(1) disengaging their minds; sabotaging their mental activities; providing a low-quality program of public education in mathematics, logic, systems design and economics; and discouraging technical creativity.

(2) engaging their emotions, increasing their self-indulgence and their indulgence in emotional and physical activities, by:

(a) unrelenting emotional affrontations and attacks (mental and emotional rape) by way of a constant barrage of sex, violence, and wars in the media — especially the T.V. and the newspapers.

(b) giving them what they desire — in excess — "junk food for thought" — and depriving them of what they really need.

(3) REWRITING HISTORY and LAW and SUBJECTING THE PUBLIC TO THE DEVIANT CREATION, thus being able to SHIFT THEIR THINKING from personal needs to highly fabricated outside priorities. [WC all emphases.]

These preclude their interest in and discovery of the silent weapons of social automation technology.

The general rule is that there is profit in confusion; the more confusion, the more profit. Therefore, the best approach is to create problems and then offer the solutions.

DIVERSION SUMMARY

Media: Keep the adult public attention diverted away from the real social issues, and captivated by matters of no real importance.

Schools: Keep the young public ignorant of real mathematics, real economics, real law, and REAL HISTORY [WC emphasis].

Entertainment: Keep the public entertainment below a sixth-grade level.

Work: Keep the public busy, busy, busy, with no time to think; back on the farm with the other animals.

CONSENT, THE PRIMARY VICTORY

A silent weapon system operates upon data obtained from a docile public by legal (but not always lawful) force. Much information is made available to silent weapon systems programmers through the Internal Revenue Service. (See Studies in the Structure of the American Economy for an

I.R.S. source list.)

This information consists of the enforced delivery of well-organized data contained in federal and state tax forms collected, assembled, and submitted by slave labor provided by taxpayers and employers.

Furthermore, the number of such forms submitted to the I.R.S. is a useful indicator of public consent, an important factor in strategic decision making. Other data sources are given in the Short List of Inputs.

Consent Coefficients — numerical feedback indicating victory status. Psychological basis: When the government is able to collect tax and seize private property without just compensation, it is an indication that the public is ripe for surrender and is consenting to enslavement and legal encroachment. A good and easily quantified indicator of harvest time is the number of public citizens who pay income tax despite an obvious lack of reciprocal or honest service from the government.

AMPLIFICATION ENERGY SOURCES

The next step in the process of designing an economic amplifier is discovering the energy sources. The energy sources which support any primitive economic system are, of course, a supply of raw materials, and the consent of the people to labor and consequently assume a certain rank, position, level, or class in the social structure; i.e., to provide labor at various levels in the pecking order.

Each class, in guaranteeing its own level of income, controls the class immediately below it, hence preserves the class structure. This provides stability and security, but also government from the top.

As time goes on and communication and education improve, the lower-class elements of the social labor structure become knowledgeable and envious of the good things that the upper-class members have. They also begin to attain a knowledge of energy systems and the ability to enforce their rise through the class structure.

This threatens the sovereignty of the elite.

If this rise of the lower classes can be postponed long enough, the elite can achieve energy dominance, and LABOR BY CONSENT NO LONGER WILL HOLD A POSITION [WC emphasis] of an essential economic energy source.

Until such energy dominance is absolutely established, the consent of people to labor and let others handle their affairs must be taken into consideration, since failure to do so could cause the people to interfere in the final transfer of energy sources to the control of the elite.

It is essential to recognize that at this time, public consent is still an essential key to the release of energy in the process of economic amplification.

Therefore, consent as an energy release mechanism will now be considered.

LOGISTICS

The successful application of a strategy requires a careful study of inputs, outputs, the strategy connecting the inputs and the outputs, and the available energy sources to fuel the strategy. This study is called logistics.

A logistical problem is studied at the elementary level first, and then levels of greater complexity are studied as a synthesis of elementary factors.

This means that a given system is analyzed, i.e., broken down into its subsystems, and these in turn are analyzed, until, by this process, one arrives at the logistical "atom," THE INDIVIDUAL [WC emphasis].

This is where the process of SYNTHESIS [WC emphasis] properly begins, and at the time of the birth of the individual.

THE ARTIFICIAL WOMB

From the time a person leaves its mother's womb, its every effort is directed toward building, maintaining, and withdrawing into artificial wombs, various sorts of substitute protective devices or shells.

The objective of these artificial wombs is to provide a stable environment for both stable and unstable activity; to provide a shelter for the evolutionary processes of growth and maturity — i.e., survival; to provide security for freedom and to provide defensive protection for offensive activity.

This is equally true of both the general public and the elite. However, there is a definite difference in the way each of these classes go about the solution of problems.

THE POLITICAL STRUCTURE OF A NATION — DEPENDENCY

The primary reason why the individual citizens of a country create a political structure is a subconscious wish or desire to perpetuate their own dependency relationship of childhood. Simply put, they want a human god to eliminate all risk from their life, pat them on the head, kiss their bruises, put a chicken on every dinner table, clothe their bodies, tuck them into bed at night, and tell them that everything will be alright [sic] when they wake up in the morning.

This public demand is incredible, so the human god, the politician, meets incredibility with incredibility by promising the world and delivering nothing. So who is the bigger liar? the public? or the "godfather"?

This public behavior is surrender born of fear, laziness, and expediency. It is the basis of the welfare state as a strategic weapon, useful against a disgusting public.

ACTION/OFFENSE

Most people want to be able to subdue and/or kill other human beings which disturb their daily lives, but they do not want to have to cope with the moral and religious issues which such an overt act on their part might raise. Therefore, they assign the dirty work to others (including their own children) so as to keep the blood off their own hands. They rave about the humane treatment of animals and then sit down to a delicious hamburger from a whitewashed slaughterhouse down the street and out of sight. But even more hypocritical, they pay taxes to finance a professional association of hit men collectively called politicians, and then complain about corruption in government.

RESPONSIBILITY

Again, most people want to be free to do things (to explore, etc.) but they are afraid to fail.

The fear of failure is manifested in irresponsibility, and especially in delegating those personal responsibilities to others where success is uncertain or carries possible or created liabilities (law) which the person is not prepared to accept. They want authority (root word — "author"), but they will not accept responsibility or liability. So they hire politicians to face reality for them.

SUMMARY

The people hire the politicians so that the people can:

(1) obtain security without managing it.

(2) obtain action without thinking about it.

(3) inflict theft, injury, and death upon others without having to contemplate either life or death.

(4) avoid responsibility for their own intentions.

(5) obtain the benefits of reality and science without exerting themselves in the discipline of facing or learning either of these things.

They give the politicians the power to create and manage a war machine to:

(1) provide for the survival of the NATION/WOMB.
(2) prevent encroachment of anything upon the NATION/WOMB.
(3) destroy the enemy who threatens the NATION /WOMB.
(4) destroy those citizens of their own country who do not conform for the sake of stability of the NATION/WOMB.

Politicians hold many quasi-military jobs, the lowest being the police which are soldiers, the attorneys and the C.P.A.S next who are spies and saboteurs (licensed), and the judges who shout the orders and run the closed union military shop for whatever the market will bear. The generals are industrialists. The "presidential" level of commander-in-chief is shared by the international bankers. The people know that they have created this farce and financed it with their own taxes (consent), but they would rather knuckle under than be the hypocrite.

Thus, a nation becomes divided into two very distinct parts, a DOCILE SUB-NATION [great silent majority] and a POLITICAL SUB-NATION. The political sub-nation remains attached to the docile sub-nation, tolerates it, and leaches its substance until it grows strong enough to detach itself and then devour its parent.

SYSTEM ANALYSIS

In order to make meaningful computerized economic decisions about war, the primary economic flywheel, it is necessary to assign concrete logistical values to each element of the war structure — personnel and material alike.

This process begins with a clear and candid description of the subsysterms of such a structure.

THE DRAFT

(As military service)

Few efforts of human behavior modification are more remarkable or more effective than that of the socio-military institution known as the draft.

A primary purpose of a draft or other such institution is to instill, by intimidation, in the young males of a society the uncritical conviction that the government is omnipotent. [WC Note: The truth is just the opposite, as government exists only with the consent of the people.] He is soon taught that a prayer is slow to reverse what a bullet can do in an instant. Thus, a man trained in a religious environment for eighteen years of his life can, by this instrument of the government, be broken down, be purged of his fantasies and delusions in a matter of mere months. Once that conviction is instilled, all else becomes easy to instill.

EVEN MORE INTERESTING IS THE PROCESS BY WHICH A YOUNG MAN'S PARENTS, WHO PURPORTEDLY LOVE HIM, CAN BE INDUCED TO SEND HIM OFF TO WAR TO HIS DEATH [WC emphasis]. Although the scope of this work will not allow this matter to be expanded in full detail, nevertheless, a coarse overview will be possible and can serve to reveal those factors which must be included in some numerical form in a computer analysis of social and war systems.

We begin with a tentative definition of the draft. THE DRAFT (selective service, etc.) is an institution of COMPULSORY collective SACRIFICE and SLAVERY, devised by the middle-aged and the elderly for the purpose of pressing the young into doing the public dirty work. It further serves to make the youth as guilty as the elders, thus making criticism of the elders by the youth less likely (Generational Stabilizer). It is marketed and sold to the public under the label of "patriotic = national" service.

Once a candid economic definition of the draft is achieved, that definition is used to outline the boundaries of a structure called a Human Value System, which in turn is translated into the terms of game theory. The value of such a slave laborer is given in a Table of Human Values, a table broken down into categories by intellect, experience, post-service job demand, etc.

Some of these categories are ordinary and can be tentatively evaluated in terms of the value of certain jobs for which a known fee exists. Some jobs are harder to value because they are unique to the demands of social subversion, for an extreme example: the value of a mother's instruction to her daughter, causing that daughter to put certain behavioral demands upon a future husband ten or fifteen years hence; thus, by suppressing his resistance to a perversion of a government, making it easier for a banking cartel to buy the State of New York in, say, twenty years.

Such a problem leans heavily upon the observations and data of wartime espionage and many types of psychological testing. But crude mathematical models (algorithms, etc.) can be devised, if not to predict, at least to predetermine these events with maximum certainty. What does not exist by natural cooperation is thus enhanced by calculated compulsion. Human beings are machines, levers which may be grasped and turned, and there is little real difference between automating a society and automating a shoe factory.

These derived values are variable. (It is necessary to use a current Table of Human Values for computer analysis.) These values are given in true measure rather than U.S. dollars, since the latter is unstable, being presently inflated beyond the production of national goods and services so as to give the economy a false kinetic energy ("paper" inductance).

The silver value is stable, it being possible to buy the same amount with a gram of silver today as could be bought in 1920. Human value measured in silver units changes slightly due to changes in production technology.

ENFORCEMENT

FACTOR I

As in every social system approach, stability is achieved only by understanding and accounting for human nature (action/reaction patterns). A failure to do so can be, and usually is, disastrous.

As in other human social schemes, one form or another of intimidation (or incentive) is essential to the success of the draft. Physical principles of action and reaction must be applied to both internal and external subsysterms.

To secure the draft, individual brainwashing/programming and both the family unit and the peer group must be engaged and brought under control.

FACTOR II— FATHER

The man of the household must be housebroken to ensure that junior will grow up with the right social training and attitudes. The advertising media, etc., are engaged to see to it that father-to-be is pussy-whipped before or by the time he is married. He is taught that he either conforms to the social notch cut out for him or his sex life will be hobbled and his tender companionship will be zero. He is made to see that women demand security more than logical, principled, or honorable behavior.

By the time his son must go to war, father (with jelly for a backbone) will slam a gun into junior's hand before father will risk the censure of his peers, or make a hypocrite of himself by crossing the investment he has in his own personal opinion or self-esteem. Junior will go to war or father will be embarrassed. So junior will go to war, the true purpose not withstand-

FACTOR III — MOTHER

The female element of human society is ruled by emotion first and logic second. In the battle between logic and imagination, imagination always wins, fantasy prevails, maternal instinct dominates so that the child comes first and the future comes second. A woman with a newborn baby is too starry-eyed to see a wealthy man's cannon fodder or a cheap source of slave labor. A woman must, however, be conditioned to accept the transition to "reality" when it comes, or sooner.

As the transition becomes more difficult to manage, the family unit must be carefully disintegrated, and state-controlled public education and state-operated child-care centers must become more common and legally enforced so as to begin the detachment of the child from the mother and father at an earlier age. Inoculation of behavioral drugs [Ritalin] can speed the transition for the child (mandatory). CAUTION: A woman's impulsive anger can override her fear. An irate woman's power must never be underestimated, and her power over a pussy-whipped husband must likewise never be underestimated. It got women the vote in 1920.

FACTOR IV — JUNIOR

The emotional pressure for self-preservation during time of war and the self-serving attitude of the common herd that have an option to avoid the battlefield — if junior can be persuaded to go — is all of the pressure finally necessary to propel Johnny off to war. Their quiet blackmailings of him are the threats: "No sacrifice, no friends; no glory, no girlfriends/'

FACTOR V —SISTER

And what about junior's sister? She is given all the good things of life by her father, and taught to expect the same from her future husband regardless of the price.

FACTOR VI — CATTLE

Those who will not use their brains are no better off than those who have no brains, and so this mindless school of jelly-fish, father, mother, son, and daughter, become useful beasts of burden or trainers of the same.

[End of excerpt]

WC/Author's Note: So now you know. This chapter could only come in the beginning. Your preconceived ideas had to be shattered in order for you to understand the rest of this book. In this chapter you can see every step that the elite have taken in their war to control this once great nation. You can see the steps that will be taken in the future. You can no longer pretend innocence. Your denial of the conspiracy will fall on deaf ears. This book is part of the education that will give Americans the weapons needed in the coming months and years of hardship as the New World Order struggles to be born.

Many will argue that "Silent Weapons for Quiet Wars" is only a bogus conglomeration of words for which the writer has never taken credit or responsibility. Those who do so ignore the self-evident truths contained within the document. They ignore these truths because they are an indictment of their own ignorance, which they cannot face.

The document, first found in 1969, correctly outlines events which subsequently came to pass. It cannot be ignored or dismissed. The document is genuine. Its truths cannot be negated or shrugged away. The message is this: You must accept that you have been cattle and the ultimate consequence of being cattle — which is slavery — or you must prepare to fight, and if necessary die to preserve your God-given right to Freedom.

That last sentence is the real reason why people choose to ignore "Silent Weapons for Quiet Wars." People are not ready to admit that they have been cattle. They are not prepared to fight, and if necessary die, for Freedom. It is an indictment of the citizens of the United States of America. And that is the total confirmation of the truth of the information contained in "Silent Weapons for Quiet Wars."

CHAPTER 2

SECRET SOCIETIES AND THE NEW WORLD ORDER

...there is a power so organized, so subtle, so complete, so pervasive, that they had better not speak above their breath when they speak in condemnation of it.

President Woodrow Wilson

History is replete with whispers of secret societies. Accounts of elders or priests who guarded the forbidden knowledge of ancient peoples. Prominent men, meeting in secret, who directed the course of civilization are recorded in the writings of all people.

The oldest is the Brotherhood of the Snake, also called the Brotherhood of the Dragon, and it still exists under many different names. The Brotherhood of the Snake is devoted to guarding the "secrets of the ages" and to the recognition of Lucifer as the one and only true God. If you do not believe in God, Lucifer, or Satan, you must understand that there are great masses of people who do. I do not believe in racism but millions do and their beliefs and actions based upon those beliefs will affect me. It is clear that religion has always played a significant role in the course of these organizations. Communication with a higher source, often divine, is a familiar claim in all but a few.

The secrets of these groups are thought to be so profound that only a chosen, well-educated few are able to understand and use them. These men use their special knowledge for the benefit of all mankind. At least that is what they claim. How are we to know, since their knowledge and actions have been secret? Fortunately, some of it has become public knowledge.

I found it intriguing that in most, if not all, primitive tribal societies all of the adults are members. They are usually separated into male and female groups. The male usually dominates the culture. Surprisingly, this exactly resembles many civilized secret societies. This can only mean that the society is working not against established authority, but for it. In fact, could be said to actually be the established authority. This would tend to remove the validity of any argument that all secret associations are dedicated to the "destruction of properly constituted authority." This can only apply, of course, where the secret society makes up the majority or entirety of any people which it affects. Only a very few fall into this category.

Secret societies in fact mirror many facets of ordinary life. There is always an exclusivity of membership, with the resultant importance attached to being or becoming a member. This is found in all human endeavors, even those which are not secret, such as football teams or country clubs. This exclusivity of membership is actually one of the secret societies' most powerful weapons. There is the use of signs, passwords and other tools. These have always performed valuable functions in man's organizations everywhere. The stated reason, almost always different from the real reason, for the societies' existence is important. It can be anything, but is usually fraternal and is found in all pressure groups wherever people congregate.

The comradeship is especially important. Sharing hardships or secrets has always been a special thrill to man. No one who has ever undergone the rigors of boot camp is ever likely to forget the special feeling of belonging and comradeship that was shared between the victims of the drill sergeant or company commander. It is an emotion born of initiation. The most potent tool of any secret society is the ritual and myth surrounding initiation. These special binding ceremonies have very deep meaning for the participants.

Initiation performs several functions which make up the heart and soul of any true secret society. Like boot camp, the initiation into the armed forces, important aspects of human thought that are universally compelling, are merged to train and maintain the efforts of a group of people to operate in a certain direction. Initiation bonds the members together in mysticism

Neophytes gain knowledge of a secret, giving them special status. The ancient meaning of neophyte is "planted anew or reborn." A higher initiation is in reality a promotion inspiring loyalty and the desire to move up to the next rung. The goals of the society are reinforced, causing the initiated to act toward those goals in everyday life. That brings about a change in the political and social action of the member. The change is always in the best interest of the goals of the leaders of the secret society.
The leaders are called adepts. This can best be illustrated by the soldier trained to follow orders without thinking. The result is often the wounding or death of the soldier for the realization of the commander's goal,
which may or may not be good for the overall community.

Initiation is a means of rewarding ambitious men who can be trusted. You will notice that the higher the degree of initiation the fewer the members who possess the degree. This is not because the other members are not ambitious but because a process of very careful selection is being conducted. A point is reached where no effort is good enough without a pull up by the higher members. Most members never proceed beyond this point and never learn the real, secret purpose of the group. The frozen member from that point on serves only as a part of the political power base, as indeed he has always done. You may have guessed by now that initiation is a way to determine who can and cannot be trusted.

A method of deciding exactly who is to become an adept may be decided during initiation by asking the candidate to spit upon the Christian cross. If the candidate refuses, the members congratulate him and tell him, "You have made the right choice, as a true adept would never do such a terrible thing." The newly initiated might find it disconcerting, however, that he/she never advances any higher. If instead, the candidate spits upon the cross, he/she has demonstrated a knowledge of one of the mysteries and soon will find him/herself a candidate for the next higher level. The mystery is that religion is but a tool to control the masses. Knowledge (or wisdom) is their only god, through which man himself will become god. The snake and the dragon are both symbols of wisdom. Lucifer is the personification of the symbol. It was Lucifer who tempted Eve to entice Adam to eat of the tree of knowledge and thus free man from the bonds of ignorance. The WORSHIP (a lot different from STUDY) of knowledge, science, or technology is Satanism in its purest form, and its god is Lucifer. Its secret symbol is the all-seeing eye in the pyramid.

Undesirable effects of secret societies and their aura of mystery has sometimes given them the reputation for being abnormal associations or, at the very least, strange groups of people. Whenever their beliefs are those of the majority they are no longer considered antisocial. A good example is the Christian church, which was at one time a secret society under the Roman Empire. In fact, the "Open Friendly Secret Society" (the Vatican) actually ruled most, if not all, of the known world at one time.

Most secret societies are generally considered to be antisocial; they are believed to contain elements that are not liked or are outright harmful to the community in general. This is exactly the case in some instances. Communism and fascism are secret societies in many countries where they are prohibited by law. In this country the Nazi party and the Ku Klux Klan are secret societies due mostly to the fact that the general public is disgusted by them. Their activities are sometimes illegal, thus the secrecy of their membership. The early Christians were a secret society because Roman authorities considered them from the start to be dangerous to imperial rule. The same was true of the followers of Islam. At least some of these true believers, working in secret, accomplished what would turn out to be for the eventual good of society. The Druseed and Yezidis in Syria and Iraq consider the Arabs a dangerous secret society dedicated to the takeover of the world. The Arabs today think the same of the Jews. Catholics and Freemasons used to have precisely the same ideas about each other.

In many primitive or backward societies initiation into the highest degrees of the group involved subjection to trials which not infrequently resulted in death or insanity for the candidate. It can be seen that social right and wrong is not the yardstick in estimating the value of a secret society. In Borneo, initiates of hunting societies, consider it meritorious and compulsory to hunt heads. In Polynesia, infanticide and debauch were considered essential for initiation into their societies, where the tribal code needed members who indulged in these things, as pillars of society.

Since the beginning of recorded history, governmental bodies of every nation have been involved with maintaining the status quo to defend the establishment against minority groups that sought to function as states within states or to oust the constituted authority and take over in its place.

Many of these attempts have succeeded but have not always lasted. Man's desire to be one of the elect is something that no power on earth has been able to lessen, let alone destroy. It is one of the "secrets" of secret societies. It is what gives them a political base and lots of clout. Members often vote the same and give each other preference in daily business, legal, and social activities. It is the deepest desire of many to be able to say, "I belong to the elect."

Houses of worship and sacrifice existed in the ancient cities. They were in fact temples built in honor of the many gods. These buildings functioned often as meeting places for philosophers and mystics who were believed to possess the secrets of nature. These men usually banded together in seclusive philosophic and religious schools.

The most important of all of these ancient groups is the Brotherhood of the Snake, or Dragon, and was simply known as the Mysteries. The snake and dragon are symbols that represent wisdom. The father of wisdom is Lucifer, also called the Light Bearer. The focus of worship for the Mysteries was Osiris, another name of Lucifer. Osiris was the name of a bright star that the ancients believed had been cast down onto the earth. The literal meaning of Lucifer is "bringer of light" or "the morning star." After Osiris was gone from the sky, the ancients saw the Sun as the representation of Osiris, or more correctly, Lucifer.

> Osiris was represented by the sun.
>
> Albert Pike

> How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer...
>
> Isaiah 14:12.

> ...it is claimed that, after Lucifer fell from Heaven,
>
> he brought with him the power of thinking as a gift for mankind.
>
> Fred Gittings,
> Symbolism in Occult Art

Most of the greatest minds that ever lived were initiated into the society of Mysteries by secret and dangerous rites, some of which were very cruel. Some of the most famous were known as Osiris, Isis, Sabazius, Cybele, and Eleusis. Plato was one of these initiates and he describes some of the mysteries in his writings.

Plato's initiation encompassed three days of entombment in the Great Pyramid, during which time he died (symbolically), was reborn, and was given secrets that he was to preserve. Plato's writings are full of information on the Mysteries. Manly P. Hall stated in his book, The Secret Teachings of All Ages that, "...the illumined of antiquity...entered its [pyramid of Giza] portals as men; they came forth as gods." The ancient Egyptian word for pyramid was khuti, which meant "glorious light." Mr. Hall says also, "The pyramids, the great Egyptian temples of initiation..."

According to many, the great pyramids were built to commemorate and observe a supernova explosion that occurred in the year 4000 B.C. Dr. Anthony Hewish, 1974 Nobel Prize winner in physics, discovered a rhythmic series of radio pulses which he proved were emissions from a star that had exploded around 4000 B.C. The Freemasons begin their calendar from A.L., "In the Year of Light," found by adding 4000 to the modern year. Thus 1990 + 4000 = 5990 A.L. George Michanowsky wrote in The Once and Future Star that "The ancient Sumerian cuneiform...described a giant star exploding within a triangle formed by...Zeta Puppis, Gamma Velorum, and Lambda Velorum...located in the southern sky....[An] accurate star catalogue now stated that the blazing star that had exploded within the triangle would again be seen by man in 6000 years." According to the Freemason's calendar it will occur in the year 2000, and indeed it will.

The spacecraft called Galileo is on its way to Jupiter, a baby star with a gaseous makeup exactly the same as our sun, with a load of 49.7 pounds of plutonium, supposedly being used as batteries to power the craft. When its final orbit decays in December 1999, Galileo will deliver its payload into the center of Jupiter. The unbelievable pressure that will be encountered will cause a reaction exactly as occurs when an atomic bomb is exploded by an implosion detonator. The plutonium will explode in an atomic reaction, lighting the hydrogen and helium atmosphere of Jupiter and resulting in the birth of the star that has already been named LUCIFER. The world will interpret it as a sign of tremendous religious significance. It will fulfill prophecy. In reality it is only a demonstration of the insane application of technology by the JASON Society which may or may not even work. They have practiced overkill to ensure success, however, as the documents that I read while in Naval Intelligence stated that Project GALILEO required only five pounds of plutonium to ignite Jupiter and possibly stave off the coming ice age. Global warming is a hoax. It is easier for the public to deal with and will give the ruling elite more time before panic and anarchy replace government. The reality is that overall global temperatures are becoming lower. Storms are becoming more violent and less predictable.

The icecaps at the poles are growing larger. The temperate zones where food can be grown are shrinking. Desertification is increasing in the tropics. An ice age is on its way, and it will occur suddenly.

Simultaneously a vault containing the ancient records of the earth will be opened in Egypt. The return of Lucifer and the opening of the vault will usher in the millennium. A great celebration has already been planned by the Millennium Society to take place at the pyramids in Egypt. According to the January 3,1989, edition of the Arizona Daily Star, "President-elect Bush is spending this New Year's holiday at Camp David, Maryland, but In 10 years he may be in Egypt. Organizers of the Millennium Society say he's already committed to ushering in the next century at the Great Pyramid of Cheops in Giza."

The first secret that one must know to even begin to understand the Mysteries is that their members believe that there are but few truly mature minds in the world. They believe that those minds belong exclusively to them. The philosophy that follows is the classic secret-society view of humanity. "When a person of strong intellect is confronted with a problem which calls for the use of reasoning faculties, they keep their poise and attempt to reach a solution by garnering facts bearing upon the question. On the other hand, those who are immature, when confronted by the same problem, are overwhelmed. While the former may be said to be qualified to solve the mystery of their own destiny, the latter must be led like a bunch of animals and taught in the simplest language. Like sheep they are totally dependent upon the shepherd. The able intellect is taught the Mysteries and the esoteric spiritual truths. The masses are taught the literal, exoteric interpretations. While the masses worship the five senses, the select few observe, recognizing in the gulf between them the symbolic concretions of great abstract truths.

"The initiated elect communicate directly to Gods [ALIENS?] who communicate back to them. The masses sacrifice their lambs on an altar facing, a stone idol that can neither hear or speak. The elect are given knowledge of the Mysteries and are illumined and are thus known as The Illuminati or the Illuminated Ones, the guardians of the 'Secrets of the Ages.'"

Three early secret societies that can be directly connected to a modern descendant are the cults of Roshaniya, Mithras and their counterpart, the Builders. They have many things in common with the Freemasons of today as well as with many other branches of the Illuminati. For instance, common to the Brotherhood are the symbolic rebirth into a new life without going through the portal of death during initiation; reference to the "Lion" and "the Grip of the Lion's Paw" in the Master Mason's degree; the three degrees, which is the same as the ancient Masonic rites before the many other degrees were added; the ladder of seven rungs; men only; and the "all-seeing eye."

Of special interest is the powerful society in Afghanistan in ancient times called the Roshaniya — illuminated ones. There are actually references to this mystical cult going back through history to the House of Wisdom at Cairo. The major tenets of this cult were: the abolition of private property; the elimination of religion; the elimination of nation states; the belief that illumination emanated from the Supreme Being who desired a class of perfect men and women to carry out the organization and direction of the world; belief in a plan to reshape the social system of the world by first taking control of individual countries one by one, and the belief that after reaching the fourth degree one could communicate directly with the unknown supervisors who had imparted knowledge to initiates throughout the ages. Wise men will again recognize the Brotherhood.

Can you hear the echo of the Nazi party, the Communist party, the extreme right and the extreme left? The important fact to remember is that the leaders of both the right and the left are a small, hard core of men who have been and still are Illuminists or members of the Brotherhood. They may have been or may be members of the Christian or Jewish religions, but that is only to further their own ends. They are and always have been Luciferian and internationalist. They give allegiance to no particular nation, although they have used, on occasion, nationalism to further their causes. Their only concern is to gain greater economic and political power. The ultimate objective of the leaders of both groups is identical. They are determined to win for themselves undisputed control of the wealth, natural resources, and manpower of the entire planet. They intend to turn the world into their conception of a Luciferian totalitarian socialist state. In the process they will eliminate all Christians, Jews, and atheists. You have just learned one, but only one, of the great mysteries.

The Roshaniya also called themselves the Order. Initiates took an oath that absolved them of all allegiance except to the Order and stated, "I bind myself to perpetual silence and unshaken loyalty and submission to the Order....All humanity which cannot identify itself by our secret sign is our lawful prey." The oath remains essentially the same to this day. The secret sign was to pass a hand over the forehead, palm inward; the countersign, to hold the ear with the fingers and support the elbow in the cupped other hand. Does that sound familiar? The Order is the Order of the Quest. The cult preached that there was no heaven, no hell, only a spirit state completely different from life as we know it. The spirit could continue to be powerful on earth through a member of the Order, but only if the spirit had been itself a member of the Order before its death. Thus members of the Order gained power from the spirits of the dead members.

The Roshaniya took in travelers as initiates and then sent them on their way to found new chapters of the Order. It is believed by some that the Assassins were a branch of the Roshaniya. Branches of the Roshaniya or "the illuminated ones" or the Illuminati existed and still exist everywhere. One of the rules was not to use the same name and never mention "the Illuminati." That rule is still in effect today. I believe that it is the breaking of this rule that resulted in Adam Weishaupt's downfall.

One of the greatest secrets of the ages is the true story of the Holy Grail, the robe of Jesus, the remains of the Cross of Crucifixion, and whether Jesus actually died or if he survived and produced a child. Many myths surround the Knights Templar concerning these relics, and most myths throughout history always have at least some basis in fact. If my sources are correct, the Knights Templar survive today as a branch of the Illuminati and guard the relics, which are hidden in a location known only to them.

We know that the Templars are Illuminati because the Freemasons absorbed and protected those that escaped persecution of the church and France, just as the Freemasons would absorb and protect Weishaupfs Illuminati centuries later. The Knights Templar exist today as a higher degreve of Freemasonry within the Templar Order. In fact, the Knights Templar is a branch of the Order of the Quest. The DeMolay Society is a branch of the Freemasons that consecrates the memory of the persecution of the Knights Templar and in particular, their leader Jacques deMolay. I know, because I was a member of the DeMolay Society as a young adult. I loved the mystery and ritual. I became separated from the Society when my family moved to a location out of reach of any lodge. I believe to this day that my association with the DeMolay Society may have been the reason for my selection for Naval Security and Intelligence.

According to members of the intelligence community, when the New World Order is solidified the relics will be taken out, will be united with the Spear of Destiny, and will, according to legend, give the world's ruler absolute power. This may confirm beliefs passed down through the ages that describe the significance of these relics when united in the hands of one man. It may also explain Hitler's desperate search for their hiding place during World War II. Again I must remind you that it makes not one iota of difference what you believe. If they believe, you will be affected.

The Knights Templar were founded sometime during the 11th century in Jerusalem by the Prieure de Sion for the express purpose of guarding the remaining relics of Jesus and to provide military protection for the religious travelers during their pilgrimage to the Holy City.

The Prieure de Sion was a religious order founded upon Mount Sion in Jerusalem. The Order set for itself the goal of preserving and recording the bloodline of Jesus and the House of David. Through every means available to them, the Prieure de Sion had found and retrieved the remaining relics. These relics were entrusted to the Knights Templar for safekeeping. I am amazed at the authors of Holy Blood, Holy Grail and the information that they have unearthed. Most of all I am amazed at their inability to put the puzzle together. The treasure hidden in France is not the treasure of the Temple of Jerusalem. It is the Holy Grail itself, the robe of Jesus, the last remaining pieces of the Cross of Crucifixion, and, according to my sources, someone's bones. I can tell you that the reality of the bones will shake the world to its very foundations if I have been told the truth. The relics are hidden in France. I know the location and so do the authors of Holy Blood, Holy Grail, but they do not know that they know — or do they?

Adam Weishaupt, a young professor of canon law at Ingolstadt University in Germany, was a Jesuit priest and an initiate of the Illuminati. The branch of the Order he founded in Germany in 1776 was the same Illuminati previously discussed. The Jesuit connection is important, as you will see later in this chapter. Researchers agree that he was financed by the House of Rothschild (the same Rothschild family mentioned in "Silent Weapons for Quiet Wars"). Weishaupt advocated "abolition of all ordered national governments, abolition of inheritance, abolition of private property, abolition of patriotism, abolition of the individual home and family life as the cell from which all civilizations have stemmed, and abolition of all religions established and existing so that the Luciferian ideology of totalitarianism may be imposed on mankind."

In the same year that he founded the Illuminati he published Wealth of Nations, the book that provided the ideological foundation for capitalism and for the Industrial Revolution. It is no accident that the Declaration of Independence was written in the same year. On the obverse of the Great Seal of the United States the wise will recognize the all-seeing eye and other signs of the Brotherhood of the Snake.

Every tenet was the same. Date and beliefs confirm that Weishaupt's Illuminati is the same as the Afghan Illuminated Ones and the other cults which called themselves "illuminated." The Alumbrados of Spain were the same as were the "illuminated" Guerinets of France. In the United States they were known as the Jacobin clubs. Secrets within secrets within secrets — but always at the heart is the Brotherhood.

I believe that Weishaupt was betrayed and set up for persecution because he ignored the rule that the word "illuminati" or the existence of the Brotherhood would never be exposed to public knowledge. His exposure and outlawing accomplished several goals of the still-hidden and still very powerful brotherhood. It allowed members to debunk claims of its existence on the grounds that the Illuminati had been exposed and outlawed and thus was no longer a reality. It allowed members to deny allegations of conspiracy of any kind. The Brotherhood of the Snake is adept at throwing out decoys to keep the dogs at bay. Weishaupt may have been a fool — or he may have been doing exactly what he was told.

Weishaupt said, "The great strength of our Order lies in its concealment; let it never appear in its own name, but always covered by another name, and another occupation."

Allegations that the Freemason organizations were infiltrated by the Illuminati during Weishaupt's reign are hogwash. The Freemasons have always contained the core of Illuminati within their ranks, and that is why they so freely and so willingly took in and hid the members of Weishaupt's group. You cannot really believe that the Freemasons, if they were only a simple fraternal organization, would have risked everything, including their very lives, by taking in and hiding outlaws who had been condemned by the monarchies of Europe. It is mainly Freemason authors who have perpetuated the myth that Adam Weishaupt was the founder of the Illuminati and that the Illuminati was destroyed, never to surface again.

In 1826 an American Freemason wrote a book revealing Masonic secrets entitled Illustrations of Freemasonry. One of the secrets that he revealed is that the last mystery at the top of the Masonic pyramid is the worship of Lucifer. We have since learned the secret of the "story of the murder of Hiram Abif." Hiram Abif represents intelligence, liberty and truth, and was struck down by a blow to the neck with a rule, representing the suppression of speech by the church; then he was struck in the heart wih the square, representing the suppression of belief by the State; and finally he was struck on the head by a maul, representing the suppression of intellect by the masses. Freemasonry thus equates the Church, the State, and masses with tyranny, intolerance, and ignorance. What Morgan revealed was that the Freemasons were pledged to avenge Hiram Abif and that their plan was to strike down the Church, the State, and the freedom of the masses.

Morgan caused a small uproar against the Masons. The small uproar turned into a full blown anti-Freemason movement when the author, William Morgan, disappeared. Morgan had apparently been abducted and drowned in Lake Ontario. It was alleged that fellow Masons had done it, a claim that they deny to this day. Who else would have done it? I believe they murdered him. The newspapers of the time state without reservation that he was murdered by Masons. The oath of initiation into the Freemasons states that if secrets are told, the initiate will be murdered. A nationwide furor ensued that resulted in the creation of an anti-Masonic political party in 1829 by Henry Dana Ward, Thurlow Weed, and William H. Seward. Interest in several anti-Masonic books was revived during that period, with the result that Freemasonry suffered a severe loss of membership. It lasted only a few years and by 1840 the anti-Masonic party was extinct. Time really does cure all ills.

We know that the British Freemasons are a totally self-serving group that discriminates in favor of its own whenever jobs, promotions, contracts, or careers are concerned. The English Freemason organization was used by the KGB to infiltrate and take over British Intelligence. British Intelligence is synonomous with Chatham House, more commonly known as the Royal Institute for International Affairs, the parent organization of the Council on Foreign Relations in the United States. The English state police, Scotland Yard, ordered its personnel not to join the Masons for fear the same would happen to them. Of course, you have been told all your life that the Freemasons are only a benevolent fraternal organization bent only on community service. Read on, O innocent one.

Probably the most notorious Freemason lodge is the P2 lodge in Italy. This group has been implicated in everything from bribery to assassinations. P2 is directly connected to the Vatican, the Knights of Malta, and to the U.S. Central Intelligence Agency. It is powerful and dangerous. The P2 lodge has succeeded in infiltrating the Vatican and has scored a coup of tremendous significance: the Pope, John Paul II, has lifted the ban against Freemasonry. Many high-level members of the Vatican are now Freemasons.

I tell you now that Freemasonry is one of the most wicked and terrible organizations upon this earth. The Masons are major players in the struggle for world domination. The 33rd Degree is split into two. One split contains the core of the Luciferian Illuminati and the other contains those who have no knowledge of it whatsoever.

ALL of the intelligence officers that I worked for while in Naval Intelligence were Masons. As I stated before, I believe that my association with the DeMolay Society as a young adult may have been the reason that I was selected for Naval Security and Intelligence. However, that is only a guess.

I had intended to go into great detail linking P2, the Prieure de Sion, the Vatican, the CIA, organizations for a United Europe, and the Bilderberg Group. Fortunately, Michael Baigent, Righard Leigh & Henry Lincoln beat me to it. I say fortunately, because they confirm my previous allegation that I published in my paper "The Secret Government" that the CIA had plants, called moles, deep within the Vatican. I do not wish to be called a plagiarist so you MUST READ Holy Blood, Holy Grail and The Messianic Legacy, both by Baigent, Leigh, & Lincoln. Any reputable bookstore should carry them. Between pages 343 and 361 of The Messianic Legacy you can read of the alliance of power that resulted in a secret world government.

Most members of the Freemasons are not aware that the Illuminati practices what is known as "secrets within secrets," or organizations within organizations. That is one purpose of initiation. I cannot excuse any of the members, however, for anyone who joins a society without knowing EVERYTHING about the organization is indeed a fool. Only those at the top who have passed every test truly know what the Masons are hiding, thus rendering it impossible for anyone outside to know much at all about the group. What does that say about new members or those who are already members but do not know the ultimate secrets? It tells me that fools abound. Unlike authors who out of fear have acted as apologists for the Freemasons, I decline to absolve them of responsibility and guilt. The freemasons, like everyone else, are responsible for the cleanliness of their home. The occupant of a secret house within a secret house within a secret house cannot clean if he cannot see the number of rooms or what they contain. Their house is a stinking cesspool. Look to the Masons for the guilty party if anything happens to me. I believe that they have murdered In the past and that they will murder in the future.

I firmly believe that all adult secret societies that practice degrees of initiation and consider the members to be "illuminated" are branches of the original ages-old Illuminati. Their goal is to rule the world. The doctrine of this group is not democracy or communism, but is a form of fascism. The doctrine is totalitarian socialism. You must begin to think correctly. The Illuminati are not Communists, but some Communists are Illuminati. (1) Monarchism (thesis) faced democracy (antithesis) in WWI, which resulted in the formation of communism and the League of Nations (synthesis). (2) Democracy and communism (thesis) faced fascism (antithesis) in WWII and resulted in a more powerful United Nations (synthesis). (3) Capitalism (thesis) now faces communism (antithesis) and the result will be the New World Order, totalitarian socialism (synthesis).

The 1953 report of the California Senate Investigating Committee on Education stated: "So-called modern Communism is apparently the same hypocritical world conspiracy to destroy civilization that was founded by the Illuminati, and that raised its head in our colonies here at the critical period before the adoption of our Constitution." The California Senate understood that communism is the work of the Illuminati. They failed to realize that the Council on Foreign Relations and the Trilateral Commission are also the work of the Illuminati. You MUST begin to think correctly. The enemy is not communism, it is Illuminism. The Communists are not going to be much happier with the New World Order than we.

I hope to show that most modern secret societies and especially those that practice degrees of initiation — and that is the key — are really one society with one purpose. You may call them whatever you wish — the Order of the Quest, the JASON Society, the Roshaniya, the Qabbalah, the Knights Templar, the Knights of Malta, the Knights of Columbus, the Jesuits, the Masons, the Ancient and Mystical Order of Rosae Crucis, the Illuminati, the Nazi Party, the Communist Party, the Executive Members of the Council on Foreign Relations, The Group, the Brotherhood of the Dragon, the Rosicrucians, the Royal Institute of International Affairs, the Trilateral Commission, the Bilderberg Group, the Open Friendly Secret Society (the Vatican), the Russell Trust, the Skull & Bones, the Scroll & Key, the Order — they are all the same and all work toward the same ultimate goal, a New World Order.

Many of them, however, disagree on exactly who will rule this New World Order, and that is what causes them to sometimes pull in opposite directions while nevertheless proceeding toward the same goal. The Vatican, for instance, wants the Pope to head the world coalition. Some want Lord Maitreya to head the New World Order. Lord Maitreya is the front runner, I believe, since witnesses say he was present on the ship at Malta with Bush, Gorbachev, and the ten regional heads of the New World Order. "Approximately 200 dignitaries from around the world attended a major conference initiated by Maitreya in London on April 21 and 22, 1990. Representatives of governments (including the USA), members of royal families, religious leaders and journalists, all of whom had met with Maitreya previously, attended the conference." Quote from "Prophecy Watch" column of Whole Wheat No. 8, Minneapolis.

Someone has also spent an awful lot of money announcing his presence. The Pope will have to approve him if Maitreya is selected, however, and that would fulfill the Bible prophecy in the Book of Revelation that states that the first beast will be given his power by Rome. If you can interpret Revelation as I can, then you know that the Pope will ultimately win out and will reign as the second beast.

In 1952 an alliance was formed, bringing them all together for the first time in history. The Black Families, the Illuminati (the Order), the Vatican, and the Freemasons now work together to bring about the New World Order. All will protest their innocence and will do everything within their power to destroy anyone who suggests otherwise. I will undoubtedly become a target when this book is published.

You may notice that some of those listed in the preceding paragraphs do not, or so it appears, practice degrees of initiation. That is the public view. Look at the Council on Foreign Relations. Many members—in fact, the majority — never serve on the executive committees. They never go through any initiation of any kind. They are, in fact, the power base and are used to gain a consensus of opinion. The majority are not really members but are made to feel as if they are. In reality they are being used and are unwilling or unable to understand. The Executive Committee is an inner core of intimate associates, members of a secret society called the Order of the Quest, also known as the JASON Society, devoted to a common purpose. The members are an outer circle on whom the inner core acts by personal persuasion, patronage and social pressure. That is how they bought Henry Kissinger. Rockefeller gave Kissinger a grant of $50,000 in the early '50s, a fortune in those days, and made dear old Henry a member of the CFR. Anyone in the outer circle who does not toe the mark is summarily expelled and the lesson is not lost on those who remain. Do you remember the human desire to be a member of the elect? That is the principle at work.

The real power are men who are always recruited without exception from the secret societies of Harvard and Yale known as the Skull & Bones and the Scroll & Key. Both societies are secret branches (also called the Brotherhood of Death) of what is otherwise historically known as the Illuminati. They are connected to parent organizations in England (The Group of Oxford University and especially All Souls College), and Germany (the Thule Society, also called the Brotherhood of Death). I learned this when I was with Naval Intelligence. I was not able to explain why some members of the Executive Committee were not listed under the "Addresses" of Chapter 322 of the Skull & Bones Society until I read The Wise Men by Walter Isaacson & Evan Thomas, Simon and Schuster, New York. Under illustration #9 in the center of the book you will find the caption "Lovett with the Yale Unit, above far right, and on the beach: His initiation into Skull and Bones came at an air base near Dunkirk." I have found that members of these two societies were chosen on an ongoing basis by invitation based upon merit post-college and were not confined to only Harvard orY>ale attendees.

Only members of the Order are initiated into the Order of the Quest, the JASON Society that makes up the executive members of the Council on Foreign Relations and, in fact, the Trilateral Commission as well. The executive members of the Council on Foreign Relations are the real elect in this country. George Bush is a member of the Order. Surprised? You shouldn't be. His father was also a member who helped finance Hitler.

It is important that you know that the members of the Order take an oath that absolves them from any allegiance to any nation or king or government or constitution, and that includes the negating of any subsequent oath of allegiance which they may be required to take. They swear allegiance only to the Order and its goal of a New World Order. George Bush is not a loyal citizen of the United States but instead is loyal only to the destruction of the United States and to the formation of the New World Order. According to the oath Bush took when he was initiated into Skull & Bones, his oath of office as President of the United States of America means nothing.

The Trilateral Commission is an elite group of some 300 very prominent business, political, and intellectual decision-makers of Western Europe, North America, and Japan. This enterprise is a private agency that works to build up political and economic cooperation among the three regions. Its grand design, which it no longer hides, is a New World Order.

The Trilateral Commission was the idea of its founder, American banking magnate David Rockefeller. The real reason for its formation was the decline of the Council on Foreign Relation's power as a result of the people's dissatisfaction with the Vietnam War. The reasoning behind the move toward the Trilateral Commission was the same as entering two horses in the same race. It doubles the chances of winning. The real power has always remained solidly in the hands of the Council on Foreign Relations. The Rockefeller family was, is and always will be the benefactor of both organizations. Rockefeller, though powerful, is not in control in this country or anywhere else. The key to the REAL power is the fact that Rockefeller had to put out feelers at a Bilderberg Group meeting in 1972 about forming a private group of trilateral leaders. The Bilderberg Group gave the nod and Rockefeller's man Zbigniew Brzezinski gathered up a membership and organized the Trilateral Commission in 1972, not in 1973 as the Commission claims.

A key to the danger presented by the Trilateral Commission is its "Seminal Peace," written for them by Harvard Professor Samuel P. Huntington in the mid '70s. In the paper Professor Huntington recommended that democracy and economic development be discarded as outdated ideas. He wrote as co-author of the book Crises In Democracy, "We have come to recognize that there are potential desirable limits to economic growth. There are also potentially desirable limits to the indefinite extension of political democracy. A government which lacks authority will have little ability short of cataclysmic crisis to impose on its people the sacrifices which may be necessary." The crises and sacrifices he talks about will be discussed in a later chapter.

Remember that George Bush was a member of the Trilateral Commission and only resigned as an expediency to get elected. He believes wholeheartedly in the Commission and its ideas and ideals. We have elected a President who believes that democracy and economic development must be discarded. I tell you now that he is working toward that end. Bush is still a member of the Order and the CFR.

The JASON Society, or JASON Scholars, takes its name from the story of Jason and the Golden Fleece, and it is a branch of the Order of the Quest, One of the highest degrees in the Illuminati. The golden fleece takes on the role of truth to JASON members. Jason represents the search for the truth. Therefore the name JASON Society denotes a group of men who are engaged in a search for the truth. The name Jason is spelled with capital letters when used as the name of the JASON Society. Lower-case letters are never used when referring to this secret group.

Author's note: The name may even have a deeper meaning, as the name "Jason" and the Golden Fleece appear throughout history in relation to various other secret societies. In these instances the story represents man (Jason) looking for himself (Golden Fleece).

Top Secret documents that I read while with Naval Intelligence stated that President Eisenhower had commissioned the JASON Society to examine all of the evidence, facts, lies, and deception and find the truth of the alien question.

Founders of the JASON Group (not the same as the JASON Society) include members of the famous Manhattan Project, which brought together almost every leading physicist in the nation to build the atomic bomb during World War II. The group is made up mostly of theoretical physicists and is the most elite gathering of scientific minds in the United States. As of 1987 the membership included four Nobel Prize winners.

Today JASON continues to offer scientific help the government cannot find anywhere else. They are probably the only group of scientists in the United States that know the true state of highest technology.

JASON is shrouded in what appears to be unnecessary secrecy. The group refuses to release its membership list. None of the members list JASON membership on their official resumes. Working completely behind the scenes, JASON has guided the nation's most important security decisions. These include, but are not limited to, Star Wars, submarine warfare, and predictions about the greenhouse effect. The JASON members are each paid a $500-per-day consultant's fee.

In the documents that I read while with Naval Intelligence the

JASONS predicted that the greenhouse effect would lead ultimately to an ICE AGE.

According to the Pentagon, the JASONS hold the highest and most restrictive security clearances in the nation. They are given the protocol rank of rear admiral (two stars) when they visit or travel aboard ships or visit military bases. The only other reference to the JASON group that I have been able to find is in The Pentagon Papers. The papers stated that JASON was responsible for designing the electronic barrier between North and South Vietnam for the purpose of sealing off infiltration of the South by North Vietnamese regulars during the Vietnam War. I was stationed on the DMZ and I can tell you that it did not work.

The veil of secrecy drawn around the JASON Group has been so tight and so leak-proof since its conception that those who think the government cannot keep a secret need to reexamine that position. The government was able to contain the JASON secret except for the one leak; but the JASON Group itself, a civilian group, did even better. No leaks have ever occurred from within JASON. JASON is administered by the Mitre Corporation. Government contracts allotted to the Mitre Corporation are in reality allotted to the JASON scientists. This is done so that the name JASON does not ever appear in documents which may come under public scrutiny.

What is the difference between the JASON Scholars or JASON Society and the JASON Group? The documents that I read referred to the JASON Society in exactly those words. In public documents the only JASON reference is to the JASON Group, administered by the Mitre Corporation. I believe the JASON Society is one of the highest degrees above the Skull & Bones and the Scroll & Key in the Illuminati. In other words, it is a higher level of initiation. The JASON Group is a scientific organization formed and hired by the JASON Society and the U.S. Government for obvious reasons.

I know a lot more about the JASON Society and the JASON Group, but I do not want to injure Mr. Grant Cameron, who has done extensive research on these subjects. He will publish his research in the coming months. I guarantee his findings will amaze you.

The Council on Foreign Relations has been the foremost flank of America's foreign-policy establishment for more than half a century. The Council on Foreign Relations is a private organization of business executives, scholars, and political leaders that studies global problems and plays a key role in developing U.S. foreign policy. The CFR is one of the most powerful semi-official groups concerned with America's role in international affairs. It is controlled by an elect group of men recruited from the Skull & Bones and the Scroll & Key societies of Harvard and Yale, which are both chapters of a secret branch of the Illuminati known as Chapter 322 of the Order [see page 81]. The members of the Order make up the Executive Committee of the Council on Foreign Relations after undergoing initiation into the Order of the Quest, also known as the JASON Society.

The Council on Foreign Relations is an off-shoot sister organization to the British Royal Institute of International Affairs. Their goal is a New World Order. Although it existed as a dinner club in New York, it did not take on its present power until 1921, when it merged with the Royal Institute of International Affairs and received its financial base from J.R Morgan, the Carnegie Endowment, the Rockefeller family, and other Wall Street banking interests.

The Council on Foreign Relations controls our government. Through the years its members have infiltrated the entire executive branch, State Department, Justice Department, CIA, and the top ranks of the military. EVERY DIRECTOR OF THE CENTRAL INTELLIGENCE AGENCY HAS BEEN A MEMBER OF THE CFR. MOST PRESIDENTS SINCE ROOSEVELT HAVE BEEN MEMBERS. The members of the CFR dominate ownership of the press and most, if not all, of America's top journalists are members. The CFR does not conform to government policy. The government conforms to CFR policy. The appendix contains the most current list of CFR members that I was able to locate.

I read Top Secret documents while with Naval Intelligence that stated that President Eisenhower had appointed six of the Executive Committee members of the CFR to sit on the panel called Majesty Twelve also known as Majority Twelve for security reasons. Majesty Twelve is the secret group that is supposed to control extraterrestrial information and projects. The documents stated that Eisenhower had also appointed six members from the Executive branch of government who were also members of the CFR. The total membership of Majesty Twelve was nineteen, including Dr. Edward Teller and the six members from the JASON scientific group. Again, whether this is true or disinformation depends solely upon the existence of aliens.

The CFR is a secret society in that it forbids the taking of notes or the publishing of minutes of its meetings. Any member who divulges the subject or any part of any conversation or talk that took place during a meeting is terminated. The goal of the Council on Foreign Relations is a New World Order. George Bush is a member of the CFR.

Knights of Malta play a powerful role in this scenario. In the 1930s General Smedley Butler was recruited to help take over the White House. He was told that he was needed because of his general popularity with the military. General Butler blew the whistle and named several prominent Americans as part of the plot. At the top of the list was John J. Raskob, who was a founding member of the U.S. branch of the Knights of Malta. He was board chairman of General Motors. He was, at the time, the U.S. Treasurer of the Knights of Malta. Congressional hearings were held to investigate the plot, but none of those named, including Raskob, was ever called to testify and nothing ever came of the hearings. Although you will find this in the Congressional records, you will NEVER find it in ANY history book anywhere.

It is significant that the Iran-Contra episode has many similarities to the 1930s plot. William Casey was a member of the Knights of Malta. William Casey, with the help of Vice President Bush, Anne Armstrong and Donald Regan, caused the President's Foreign Intelligence Advisory Board to be emasculated so that Bush, Casey, North and others could carry out their dirty deeds without oversight. They had also developed a plan to suspend the Constitution of the United States and were preparing to implement the plan when they were caught. These facts emerged from the hearings but were suppressed by the committee chairman, Senator Daniel Inouye of Hawaii. You must understand that tremendous power was involved in both attempts to overthrow the United States Government.

William Casey was the Director of the CIA. He was a member of the CFR. Casey was a Knight of Malta. He was the head of Ronald Reagan's political campaign. He was head of the Securities and Exchange Commission. During the Nixon administration he was head of the Export-Import Bank.

Casey arranged financing for the Kama River truck factory in the Soviet Union with 90% of the funds guaranteed or furnished by the U.S. taxpayer. This factory built military truck and tank engines for the Soviet Army. It was, and may still be, the largest factory in the world and could produce more heavy trucks than all U.S. factories together. I believe Casey was murdered.

The Knights of Malta is a world organization with its threads weaving through business, banking, politics, the CIA, other intelligence organizations, P2, religion, education, law, military, think tanks, foundations, the United States Information Agency, the United Nations, and numerous other organizations. They are not the oldest but are one of the oldest branches of the Order of the Quest in existence. The world head of the Knights of Malta is elected for a life term, with the approval of the Pope. The Knights of Malta have their own Constitution and are sworn to work toward the establishment of a New World Order with the Pope at its head. Knights of Malta members are also powerful members of the CFR and the Trilateral Commission.

The Vatican has been infiltrated over many years by the Illuminati. This is easily proven by the fact that in 1738 Pope Clement XII issued a Papal Bull which stated that any Catholic who became a Mason would be excommunicated, a very serious punishment. In 1884 Pope Leo XIII issued a proclamation stating that Masonry was one of the secret societies attempting to "revive the manners and customs of the pagans" and "establish Satan's kingdom on Earth." Piers Compton, in his book The Broken Cross, traces the infiltration of the Catholic Church by the Illuminati. He has found the use of the all-seeing eye in the triangle by leading Catholics and by the Jesuits. It was used in the seal of the Philadelphia Eucharistic Congress in 1976. It was on a special issue of Vatican stamps in 1978, announcing the final Illuminati victory to the world. Mr. Compton claims that Pope John XXIII wore the "all-seeing eye in the triangle" on his personal cross. Compton is adamant that several HUNDRED leading Catholic priests, bishops and cardinals are members of secret societies. He quotes an article in an Italian Journal that lists more than 70 Vatican officials, including Pope Paul VI's private secretary, the director general of Vatican radio, the Archbishop of Florence, the prelate of Milan, the assistant editor of the Vatican newspaper, several Italian bishops, and the abbot of the Order of St. Benedict. Those are only the ones that are known and only the ones known in Italy. It is widely believed that THIS Pope, John Paul XXII, is a member of the Illuminati. I believe, according to my research, that it is true. The best indication of infiltration is that on November 27,1983, the Pope retracted all of the Papal Bulls against Freemasonry and allowed Catholics, after several hundred years, to again become members of secret societies without fear of excommunication. The goal of the Illuminati to elect one of their own to the Papacy appears to have come to fruition. If that is the case, the New World Order is just on the horizon. Now is the time.

The first U.S. Ambassador to the Vatican was William Wilson, a Knight of Malta. His appointment was probably illegal and, for a fact, was highly unethical. Wilson could not possibly have represented the U.S. when his allegiance was sworn to the Pope.

Wilson, if you will remember, took an unauthorized trip to Libya and met privately with Libyan officials at a time when travel to Libya had been banned by the President. President Ronald Reagan had called Gadhafi "a mad dog" and made a few strong threats. The U.S. had been resolute in bombing Libya even though civilians were killed. Following Wilson's trip, Gadhafi issued a press release stating that "an American diplomat had been sent to reduce tensions with Libya." The State Department denied that any such thing had taken place. Ambassador Wilson closed his mouth and refused any comment. To this day he has said nothing, even though his actions made a liar of the United States and embarrassed us worldwide.

A clue to what was happening is the fact that while we had cut off Libya and even bombed them and while travel by U.S. citizens to Libya was forbidden, five huge oil conglomerates were filling their pockets dealing with Gadhafi. One of the companies was headed by J. Peter Grace, President of W.R. Grace. Eight members of the W.R. Grace Company are members of the Knights of Malta. According to an article by Leslie Geld in the New York Times, administration officials had expressed concern about Mr. Wilson's activities. These actions, they said, often seem to revolve around his contacts and interest in the oil business.

Wilson should have been fired, but instead nothing happened except that he and his wife attended a Papal Easter Mass and stood next to George Schultz and his wife. In diplomatic language this indicated private approval of his actions. George Schultz, of course, is a member of the CFR, the Bohemian Club and the Bechtel Corporation, all of which have close ties to the Order and the Knights of Malta.

Wilson engaged in several other improprieties during his ambassadorship. Again, in each case nothing happened. Finally he resigned. Later, if you will remember, President Reagan suffered a fall from a horse on William Wilson's ranch in Mexico. Do you seriously think that President Reagan would have visited Wilson's home in Mexico if he had not approved of Wilson's actions while he was the U.S. Ambassador to the Vatican?

Knight of Malta Myron Taylor was President Roosevelf s envoy. Knight of Malta John McCone was President Kennedy's envoy and he was also the Director of the CIA during the early '60s. A former mayor of New York City, Robert Wagner, was President Jimmy Carter's envoy. Frank Shakespeare replaced William Wilson. Frank Shakespeare is a Knight of Malta, and so it goes. President Reagan spoke at the annual Knights of Malta dinner.

The Knights of Malta ALL have diplomatic immunity. They can ship goods across borders without paying duty or undergoing customs check. Does that ring any bells? In any case, that is power.

The Knights of Malta is held up by a backbone consisting of nobility. Nearly half of the 10,000 members belong to Europe's oldest and most powerful families. This cements the alliance between the Vatican and the "Black Nobility." The Black Nobility is mostly the rich and powerful of Europe. The head of the Black Nobility is the family that can claim direct descendancy from the last Roman emperor. Maybe now you can see that things are beginning to fall into their proper place. Membership in the

Knights of Malta entails obedience to one's superior in THE ORDER and ultimately to the Pope. Therefore, a U.S. ambassador who is also a member of the Knights of Malta faces a conflict of interest. Why is this fact ignored? President Bush appointed Knight of Malta Thomas Melledy to the post of U.S. Ambassador to the Vatican.

The Vatican has founded the Pope John Paul II Center for Prayer and Study for Peace at 1711 Ocean Avenue, Springlake, New Jersey, in a mansion overlooking the ocean. The mansion was given to the New York Archdiocese by the estate of Elmer Bobst, who died in 1978. He was a multimillionaire and chairman of Warner Lambert Company. Richard Nixon was a frequent visitor. Directors of the Center were Kurt Waldheim, former Secretary General of the United Nations and ex-nazi war criminal; Cyrus Vance, former Secretary of State under Carter and member of both the Council on Foreign Relations and the Trilateral Commission; Clare Booth Luce, a dame of the Knights of Malta; and J. Peter Grace of W.R. Grace Company, who is head of the Knights of Malta in the United States. The Center was set up by the Vatican as a part of the Pope's new peace plan, which will bring the world together (see my paper "The Secret Government"). The Center has two roles: (1) Educate Catholics and their children to accept the New World Order. (2) Provide residence for the world-peace-solution computer and an ongoing study for peaceful solutions to any future problems which may endanger world peace. The computer is hooked to the world capitals via satellite. All nations have agreed to relinquish sovereignty to the Pope and submit future problems to the computer for solution. Of course, this will not go into effect until the New World Order is publicly announced. I believe that the New World Order was born in secrecy on January 19,1989. Now you know.

Acquaint yourself anew with the teachings of Jesus. Compare his teachings with the tenets of the Illuminati and then compare it with the following. The Vatican has stated at various times that "the Pope is for total disarmament; the Pope is for elimination of the sovereignty of the nation states; the Pope is also stating that property rights are not to be considered true property rights. The Pope believes that only the Vatican knows what is right for man."

In the early 1940s, the I.G. Farben Chemical Company employed a Polish salesman who sold cyanide to the Nazis for use in Auschwitz. The same salesman also worked as a chemist in the manufacture of the poison gas. This same cyanide gas along with Zyklon B and malathion was used to exterminate millions of Jews and other groups. Their bodies were then burned to ashes in the ovens. After the war the salesman, fearing for his life, joined the Catholic Church and was ordained a priest in 1946. One of his closest friends was Dr. Wolf Szmuness, the mastermind behind the November/78 to October/79 and March/80 to October/81 experimental hepatitis B vaccine trials conducted by the Center for Disease Control in New York, San Francisco and four other American cities that loosed the plague of AIDS upon the American people. The salesman was ordained Poland's youngest bishop in 1958. After a 30-day reign his predecessor was assassinated and our ex-cyanide gas salesman assumed the papacy as Pope John Paul II.

1990 is the right time with the right leaders: ex-chief of the Soviet secret police Mikhail Gorbachev, ex-chief of the CIA George Bush, ex-Nazi cyanide gas salesman Pope John Paul II, all bound by an unholy alliance to ring in the New World Order.

The Pope has challenged world leaders by claiming that the people of the world already recognize the absolute authority of Rome because they observe the Sunday Sabbath that was ordered by the Pope in the Council of Laodicea (A.D. 364). The original Ten Commandments given Moses by God ordered that we should:

> Remember the Sabbath day, to
> keep it Holy. Six days shalt
> thou labor, and do all thy work:
> but the seventh day is the
> Sabbath of the Lord thy God; in
> it thou shalt not do any work,
> thou, nor thy son, nor thy daughter,
> thy man servant, nor thy maid servant,
> nor thy cattle, nor thy stranger
> that is within thy gates: for in six
> days the Lord made heaven and earth,
> the sea, and all that in them is,
> and rested the seventh day: wherefore
> the Lord blessed the Sabbath day, and
> hallowed it.

The seventh day, the Sabbath as handed to Moses by God, is Saturday The celebration of Sunday as the Sabbath is verification that the people recognize the Pope as SUPERIOR TO GOD. The only WHOLE people who have not recognized the authority of the Pope are the Jewish people, and that is why the Vatican has not and will not recognize the state of Israel. The Vatican refuses even to call it Israel. Instead the Vatican says Palestine when talking about Israel. AGAIN, I MUST REMIND YOU THAT WHAT YOU BELIEVE MAKES NOT ONE BIT OF DIFFERENCE. THE IMPORTANT THING TO UNDERSTAND IS THAT IF THEY BELIEVE THIS, IT IS GOING TO GIVE YOU NIGHTMARES.

"The Pope has a lot of charisma and in a one world system you need a religious head for power. Khomeini proved that. This Pope has enough following and charisma to make what we consider a great threat in this move." [Quote from The Mantooth Report.]

"Pope John Paul II is most anxious to complete his goal. His goal is to reunite the Christian World under the LEADERSHIP OF THE PAPACY. If at all possible, he hopes to reach his goal by the end of this century. This is the primary reason behind the Pope's many worldwide trips." [From an article by Gene H. Hogberg, Nov./Dec. 1989, Plain Truth.]

Were you aware that Hitler and his entire staff were Catholic? Did you know that the Nazis dabbled in the occult? Did you know that the New York Times of April 14,1990, quotes George Bush as stating, "Lefs forgive the Nazi war criminals." I wonder why he said that? Did you know that the Los Angeles Times, December 12,1984, quoted Pope John Paul II as saying, "Don't go to God for forgiveness of sins, come to me." The Pope committed blasphemy, thus fulfilling prophecy according to the book of Revelation. The Pope is telling us that HE IS God!

REMEMBER—NEVER WORSHIP A LEADER. IF YOU WORSHIP A LEADER, YOU THEN NO LONGER HAVE THE ABILITY TO RECOGNIZE WHEN YOU HAVE BEEN DECEIVED!

On July 21, 1773, Pope Clement XIV "forever annulled and extinguished the Jesuit Order." France, Spain and Portugal had independently come to realize that the Jesuits were meddling in the affairs of the state and were therefore enemies of the government. The Pope's action was a response to pressure applied by the monarchies. King Joseph of Portugal signed a decree "by which the Jesuits were denounced as 'traitors, rebels and enemies to the realm...'" Pope Pius VII in August, 1814, reinstated the Jesuits to all of their former rights and privileges.

Ex-President John Adams wrote to his successor, Thomas Jefferson: "I do not like the re-appearance of the Jesuits. If ever there was a body of men who merited eternal damnation on earth...it is this Society..." Jefferson replied: "Like you, I disapprove of the restoration of the Jesuits, for it means a step backwards from light into darkness."

The Jesuits are still in trouble today as they have been throughout their existence. On February 28,1982, Pope Paul II told the Jesuits to "keep clear of politics and honor Roman Catholic tradition." U.S. News and World Report stated that the Jesuits had indeed meddled in the affairs of nations.

The article stated: "Jesuits have played leading roles in Nicaragua's Sandinista revolution. Some Jesuits have joined Communist parties. One priest in El Salvador has claimed that his order is working for the advancement of Marxism and revolution, not for God....Jesuits have joined left-wing rebel movements in Central America and the Philippines, and have advocated a melding of Marxism and Roman Catholicism in what is called 'liberation theology.'"

When the United States wanted to employ the nastiest forms of the Haig-Kissinger depopulation policy in Central America it was the Jesuits who organized and prodded the people into civil war. Wherever the Jesuits go, revolution quickly follows. I am always sad when I see or hear of people being hurt; but according to my research, the Jesuit priests murdered in Central America probably deserved it.

The most powerful secret organization in the world is the Bilderberg Group, organized in 1952 and named after the hotel where its first meeting took place in 1954. The man who organized the Bilderberg Group, Prince Bernhard of the Netherlands, has the power to veto the Vatican's choice of any Pope it selects. Prince Bernhard has this veto power because his family, the Hapsburgs, are desended from the Roman emperors. Prince Bernhard is the leader of the Black Families. He claims descent from the House of David and thus can truly say that he is related to Jesus. Prince Bernhard, with the help of the CIA, brought the hidden ruling body of the Illuminati into public knowledge as the Bilderberg Group. This is the official alliance that makes up the world governing body.

The core of the organization is three committees made up of thirteen members each. Thus the heart of the Bilderberg Group consists of 39 total members of the Illuminati. The three committees are made up exclusively of members of all the different secret groups that make up the Illuminati, the Freemasons, the Vatican, and the Black Nobility. This committee works year round in offices in Switzerland. It determines who is invited to the annual meeting and what policies and plans will be discussed. Every proposal or plan that has ever been discussed at an annual meeting of the Bilderberg Group has come to pass usually within one or two years following the meeting. The Bilderberg Group is directing the "quiet war" that is being waged against us. How can they do it? These are the men who REALLY rule the world.

The numbers 3,7,9,11,13,39 and any multiple of these numbers have special meaning to the IUuminati. Notice that the Bilderberg Group has a core of 39 members who are broken into 3 groups of 13 members in each group. Notice that the core of 39 answers to the 13 who make up the Policy Committee. Take special notice that the 13 members of the Policy Committee answer to the Round Table of Nine. You know that the original number of states in the United States of America was 13. The Constitution has 7

Articles and was signed by 39 members of the Constitutional Convention. The United States was born on July 4,1776. July is the 7th month of the year. Add 7 (for July) and 4 and you have 11; 1+7+7+6 = 21, which is a multiple of 3 and 7. Add 2+1 and you get 3. Look at the numbers in 1776

and you see two 7s and a 6, which is a multiple of 3. Coincidence, you say? I say, "Baloney!" and I'd really like to say something a lot stronger. For those of you who still say it's accidental, however, I offer the following evidence. I could write a book just on numerical links, but I won't.

Manly P. Hall, 33rd-degree Mason, probably the most renowned expert on these subjects, wrote in his book The Secret Destiny of America, "For more than THREE THOUSAND YEARS [WC emphasis], secret societies have labored to create the background of knowledge necessary to the establishment of an enlightened democracy among the nations of the world....all have continued...and they still exist, as the Order of the Quest. Men bound by a secret oath to labor in the cause of world democracy decided that in the American colonies they would plan the roots of a new way of life. The Order of the Quest...was set up in America before the middle of the 17th century....Franklin spoke for the Order of the Quest, and most of the men who worked with him in the early days of the American Republic were also members....Not only were many of the founders of the United States Government Masons, but they received aid from a secret and august body existing in Europe which helped them to establish this country for a particular purpose known only to the initiated few." I found these quotes in a book on page 133. When added together, 1+3+3 equal the number 7 — coincidence? I think not.

We can get a little insight into the Order of the Quest from Franklin D.

Roosevelt's Secretary of Agriculture, Henry Wallace, the man directly responsible for the printing of the reverse of the Great Seal of the United States on the one-dollar bill. Mr. Wallace, a member of the Order of the Quest, wrote in a letter to the Russian mystic and artist Nicholas Roerich: "The search — whether it be for the lost word of Masonry, or the Holy Chalice, or the potentialities of the age to come — is the one supremely worthwhile objective. All else is karmic duty. But surely everyone is a potential Galahad? So may we strive for the Chalice and the flame above it." The Holy Grail has a way of popping up on a regular basis in the writings of secret In the Great Seal of the United States we see the ancient symbol of the Brotherhood of the Snake (or Dragon), which as you already know is the all-seeing eye in the pyramid representing Lucifer in the form of wisdom.

Just below the pyramid you will note "Novus Ordo Seclorum" which translated means, "New World Order." There are

9 tail feathers on the eagle;
13 leaves in the olive branches;
13 bars and stripes;
13 arrows;
13 letters in "E Pluribus Unum";
13 stars in the green crest above;
13 stones in the pyramid;
13 letters in "Annuit Coeptis."

Thirteen is the mystical number assigned to Satan, according to Stan Deyo in his excellent book entitled Cosmic Conspiracy.

All of these mystical numbers also have special meaning to the Freemasons. You would have to be a devout skeptic to miss the tremendous significance of all of these supposed coincidences. Who among you can still say that there is no link?

I read while in Naval Intelligence that at least once a year, maybe more, two nuclear submarines meet beneath the polar icecap and mate together at an airlock. Representatives of the Soviet Union meet with the Policy Committee of the Bilderberg Group. The Russians are given the script for their next performance. Items on the agenda include the combined efforts in the secret space program governing Alternative 3. I now have in my possession official NASA photographs of a moonbase in the crater Copernicus.

This method of meeting is the only way that is safe from detection and/or bugging. The public outcry that would result would destroy everything should these meetings be discovered. A BBC-TV documentary program entitled "Science Report" revealed these same facts but subsequently issued a retraction. In their retraction they stated that the show had been fiction. It must be noted here that "Science Report" was a very respected documentary — nonfiction — program in Britain. Never in its history had it ever aired fiction. This subject is explored in depth in another chapter. There is no other method that I know of to verify these meetings short of somehow becoming a crew member on one of the submarines. Is Alternative 3 true, or is it a part of the plan to ring in the New World Order? It really doesn't matter, because either way we're screwed. The quicker you understand that, the wiser you become.

The members of the Bilderberg Group are the most powerful financiers, industrialists, statesmen and intellectuals, who get together each year for a private conference on world affairs. The meetings provide an informal, off-the-record opportunity for international leaders to mingle, and are notorious for the cloak of secrecy they are held under. The headquarters office is in The Hague in Switzerland, the only European country never invaded or bombed during World Wars I and II. Switzerland is the seat of world power. The goal of the Bilderberg Group is a one-world totalitarian socialist government and economic system. Take heed, as time is running short.

You must understand that secrecy is wrong. The very fact that a meeting is secret tells me that something is going on that I would not approve. Do not ever believe that grown men meet on a regular basis just to put on fancy robes, hold candles, and glad-hand each other. George Bush, when he was initiated into the Skull & Bones, did not lie naked in a

coffin with a ribbon tied around his genitalia and yell out the details of all his sexual experiences because it was fun. He had much to gain by accepting initiation into the Order, as you can now see. These men meet for important reasons, and their meetings are secret because what goes on during the meetings would not be approved by the community. THE VERY FACT THAT SOMETHING IS SECRET MEANS THERE IS SOMETHING TO HIDE.

John Robison wrote Proofs of a Conspiracy in 1798, and I believe he said it best in the following passage from the book. "Nothing is so dangerous as a mystic Association. The object remaining a secret in the hands of the managers, the rest simply put a ring in their own noses, by which they may be led about at pleasure; and still panting after the secret they are the better pleased the less they see of their way.

"A mystical object enables the leader to shift his ground as he pleases, and to accommodate himself to every current fashion or prejudice. This Again gives him almost unlimited power; for he can make use of these prejudices to lead men by troops. He finds them already associated by their prejudices, and waiting for a leader to concentrate their strength and set them in motion. And when once great bodies of men are set in motion, with a creature of their fancy for a guide, even the engineer himself cannot say, 'Thus far shalt thou go, and no farther.'"

Is the common man really as stupid as the elite seem to believe? If he is, then maybe the average citizen is better off ignorant, being manipulated this way and that, whenever the elite deem it necessary. We will discover the answer very quickly when the common man finds that his "E" ticket to Fantasy Land has just expired.

I hope I have shown you the role of secret societies and groups within the world power structure. I hope you can see how these groups gain and keep power. You should have some understanding of how, operating in secrecy and infiltrating every level of government and vital industry including the press, the elect manipulate the people and nations of the world toward any direction desired. I hope you caught on to the fact that the secret power structure is toward a totalitarian socialist state (fascism). It is not the Nazis, as they were a product of this power structure. It is not the Jews, although some very wealthy Jews are involved. It is not the Communists, as they fit the same category as the Nazis. It is not the bankers, but they do play an important role. I also hope that you are beginning to look inside yourself to see if THEIR reality fits. Are you getting the message? For a better understanding of secret societies and their role throughout the ages, I recommend you read the books listed as source material at the end of this chapter.

U.S. President Bush and Soviet President Gorbachev arrived yesterday on this Mediterranean island for a summit conference beginning today during which both hope to start the search for a New World Order.

New York Times
December 1,1989

SOURCES

Alamo, Tony, various writings, Music Square Church, P.O. Box 710, Van Buren, Arkansas, 72956 (501) 997-8118.

Baigent, Michael, Richard Leigh, and Henry Lincoln, Holy Blood, Holy Grail, Delacorte Press, New York, 1982.

Baigent, Michael, Richard Leigh, and Henry Lincoln, The Messianic Legacy, Dell Publishing, New York, 1989.

Bramley, William, The Gods of Eden, Dahlin Family Press, San Jose, California, 1989.

Cantwell, Alan Jr,. M.C., AIDS and the Doctors of Death, Aries Rising Press, 1988.

Carr, William Guy, Pawns in the Game, Omni Publications, Palmdale, California, date unknown.

Daraul, Arkon, A History of Secret Societies, The Citadel Press, New York, 1961.

Epperson, Ralph, The New World Order, Publius Press, Tucson, Arizona, 1990.

Epperson, Ralph, Unseen Hand, An Introduction to the Conspiratorial View of History, Publius Press, Tucson, Arizona, 1985.

Hall, Manly P., The Secret Teachings of All Ages, The Philosophical Research Society, Inc., Los Angeles, 1988.

Hieronimus, Robert, Ph.D., America's Secret Destiny, Spiritual Vision & the Founding of a Nation, Destiny Books, Rochester, Vermont, 1989.

Howard, Michael, The Occult Conspiracy, Destiny Books, Rochester, Vermont, 1989.

Mantooth, Don, The Mantooth Report (newsletter), November 1989, New Haven, Indiana.

Mullins, Eustace, The Curse of Canaan, Revelation Books, Staunton, Virginia, 1987.

Robison, John, Proofs of a Conspiracy, The American Classics, Belmont, Massachusetts, 1967, originally published in 1798.

Robinson, John J., Born In Blood, The Lost Secrets of Freemasonry, M. Evans and Company, Inc., New York, 1989.

Sutton, Antony C, America's Secret Establishment, An Introduction to the Order of Skull & Bones, Liberty House Press, Billings, Montana, 1986.

Waite, Arthur Edward, A New Encyclopaedia of Freemasonry, Combined Edition, Weathervane Books, New York, 1970.

Whitmire, Richard, article on JASON, September 17, 1989, The Olympian (newspaper), Olympia, Washington.

CHAPTER 3

OATH OF INITIATION of an UNIDENTIFIED SECRET ORDER

from

A Mother Who States That Her Son Took This Oath
(and Who Must Remain Unidentified)

and

CONGRESSIONAL RECORD - HOUSE, 1913, p. 3216.
(furnished by Dr. Ron Brown)

> Not yet, O Freedom! close thy lids in
> slumber, for thine enemy never sleeps.
>
> Bryant

Author's Note: The author makes no claims whatsoever regarding this oath. It was handed to me by a woman who claimed that her son took this oath. Another source, Dr. Ron Brown, independent of and not known by the first, furnished a copy of the Congressional Record of the House of Representatives dated February 15,1913, where the same oath is entered as purported to be of the Knights of Columbus. The Congressman may have been wrong, however, since the content indicates that this oath may belong either to the Society of Jesus (otherwise known as the Jesuits) or to the Knights of Malta, which is the militia of the Pope. I include this oath only as an example that such oaths do in fact exist and are subversive. Because of the impeccably correct and difficult level of English used, the obvious expert knowledge of religious terminology and form, and the content and format of this oath, I consider it highly unlikely that it is a forgery. You must be the ultimate judge of its authenticity. The truth will win.

THE OATH

I________________________, now in the presence of Almighty God, the blessed Virgin Mary, the blessed St. John the Baptist, the Holy Apostles, St. Peter and St. Paul, and all the saints, sacred host of heaven, and to you, my Ghostly Father, the superior general of the Society of Jesus founded by St. Ignatius Loyola, in the pontification of Paul the III and continued to the present, do by the womb of the Virgin, the matrix of God, and the rod of Jesus Christ, declare and swear that His Holiness the Pope, is Christ's vice regent and is the true and only head of the Catholic or Universal Church throughout the earth; and that by virtue of the keys of binding and loosing given His Holiness by my Savior, Jesus Christ, he hath power to depose heretical kings, princes, States, Commonwealths, and Governments and they may be safely destroyed. Therefore to the utmost of my power I will defend this doctrine and His Holiness's right and custom against all usurpers of the heretical or Protestant authority whatever, especially the Lutheran Church of Germany, Holland, Denmark, Sweden, and Norway and the now pretended authority and Churches of England and Scotland, and the branches of same now established in Ireland and on the Continent of America and elsewhere, and all adherents in regard that they may be usurped and heretical, opposing the sacred Mother Church of Rome.

I do now denounce and disown any allegiance as due to any heretical king, prince, or State, named Protestant or Liberals, or obedience to any of their laws, magistrates, or officers.

I do further declare that the doctrine of the Churches of England and Scotland, of the Calvinists, Huguenots, and others of the name of Protestants or Masons to be damnable, and they themselves to be damned who will not forsake the same.

I do further declare that I will help assist, and advise all or any of His Holiness's agents, in any place where I should be, in Switzerland, Germany, Holland, Ireland, or America, or in any other kingdom or territory I shall come to and do my utmost to extirpate the heretical Protestant or Masonic doctrines and to destroy all their pretended powers, legal or otherwise.

I do further promise and declare that, notwithstanding I am dispensed with to assume any religion heretical for the propagation of the Mother Church's interest to keep secret and private all her agents' counsels from time to time, as they intrust me and not divulge, directly or indirectly, by word, writing, or circumstances whatever but to execute all that should be proposed, given in charge or discovered unto me by you my Ghostly father, or any of this sacred order.

I do further promise and declare that I will have no opinion or will of my own or any mental reservation whatsoever, even as a corpse or cadaver (perinde ac cadaver), but will unhesitatingly obey each and every command that I may receive from my superiors in the militia of the Pope and of Jesus Christ.

That I will go to any part of the world whithersoever I may be sent, to the frozen regions north, jungles of India, to the centers of civilization of Europe, or to the wild haunts of the barbarous savages of America without murmuring or repining, and will be submissive in all things whatsoever is communicated to me.

I do further promise and declare that I will, when opportunity presents, make and wage relentless war, secretly and openly against all heretics, Protestants and Masons, as I am directed to do to extirpate them from the face of the whole earth; and that I will spare neither age, sex, or condition, and that will hang, burn, waste, boil, flay, strangle, and bury alive these infamous heretics; rip up the stomachs and wombs of their women, and crush their infants' heads against the walls in order to annihilate their execrable race. That when the same can not be done openly, I will secretly use the poisonous cup, the strangulation cord, the steel of the poniard, or the leaden bullet, regardless of the honor, rank, dignity, or authority of the persons, whatever may be their condition in life, either public or private, as I at any time may be directed so to do by any agents of thePope or superior of the Brotherhood of the Holy Father of the Society of Jesus.

In confirmation of which I hereby dedicate my life, soul, and all corporal powers, and with the dagger which I now receive I will subscribe my name written in my blood in testimony thereof; and should I prove false or weaken in my determination, may my brethren and fellow soldiers of the militia of the Pope cut off my hands and feet and my throat from ear to ear, my belly opened and sulphur burned therein with all the punishment that can be inflicted upon me on earth and my soul shall be tortured by demons in eternal hell forever.

That I will in voting always vote for a K. of C. in preference to a Protestant, especially a Mason, and that I will leave my party so to do; that if two Catholics are on the ticket I will satisfy myself which is the better supporter of Mother Church and vote accordingly.

That I will not deal with or employ a Protestant if in my power to deal with or employ a Catholic. That I will place Catholic girls in Protestant families that a weekly report may be made of the inner movements of the heretics.

That I will provide myself with arms and ammunition that I may be in readiness when the word is passed, or I am commanded to defend the church either as an individual or with the militia of the Pope.

All of which I,______________________, do swear by the blessed Trinity and blessed sacrament which I am now to receive to perform and on part to keep this, my oath.

In testimony hereof, I take this most holy and blessed Sacrament of the Eucharist and witness the same further with my name written with the point of this dagger dipped in my own blood and seal in the face of this holy sacrament.

CHAPTER 4

SECRET TREATY OF VERONA

Precedent
and
Positive Proof of Conspiracy

from

Congressional Record - Senate, 1916, p. 6781

and

The American Diplomatic Code, Vol. 2,1778-1884, Elliott, p. 179

1916

CONGRESSIONAL RECORD SENATE

Mr. OWEN:

I wish to put in the Record the secret treaty of Verona of November 22, 1822, showing what this ancient conflict is between the rule of the few and the rule of the many. I wish to call the attention of the Senate to this treaty because it is the threat of this treaty which was the basis of the Monroe doctrine. It throws a powerful white light upon the conflict between monarchical government and government by the people. The Holy Alliance under the influence of Metternich, the Premier of Austria, in 1822, issued this remarkable secret document:

AMERICAN DIPLOMATIC CODE, 1778-1884

The undersigned, specially authorized to make some additions to the treaty of the Holy Alliance, after having exchanged their respective credentials, have agreed as follows:

ARTICLE 1. The high contracting powers, being convinced that the system of representative government is equally as incompatible with the monarchical principles as the maxim of the sovereignty of the people with the divine right, engage mutually, in the most solemn manner, to use all their efforts to put an end to the system of representative governments, in whatever country it may exist in Europe, and to prevent its being introduced in those countries where it is not yet known.

ARTICLE 2. As it can not be doubted that the liberty of the press is the most powerful means used by the pretended supporters of the rights of nations to the detriment of those of princes, the high contracting parties promise reciprocally to adopt all proper measures to suppress it, not only in their own States but also in the rest of Europe.

ARTICLE 3. Convinced that the principles of religion contribute most powerfully to keep nations in the state of passive obedience which they owe to their princes, the high contracting parties declare it to be their intention to sustain in their respective States those measures which the clergy may adopt, with the aim of ameliorating their own interests, so intimately connected with the preservation of the authority of the princes; and the contracting powers join in offering their thanks to the Pope for what he has already done for them, and solicit his constant cooperation in their views of submitting the nations.

ARTICLE 4. The situation of Spain and Portugal unite unhappily all the circumstances to which this treaty has particular reference. The high contracting parties, in confiding to France the care of putting an end to them, engaged to assist her in the manner which may the least compromit [sic] them with their own people and the people of France by means of a subsidy on the part of the two empires of 20,000,000 of francs every year from the date of the signature of this treaty to the end of the war.

ARTICLE 5. In order to establish in the Peninsula the order of things which existed before the revolution of Cadiz, and to insure the entire execution of the articles of the present treaty, the high contracting parties give to each other the reciprocal assurance that as long as their views are not fulfilled, rejecting all other ideas of utility or other measure to be taken, they will address themselves with the shortest possible delay to all the authorities existing in their States and to all their agents in foreign countries, with the view to establish connections tending toward the accomplishment of the objects proposed by this treaty.

ARTICLE 6. This treaty shall be renewed with such changes as new circumstances may give occasion for, either at a new congress or at the court of one of the contracting parties, as soon as the war with Spain shall be terminated.

ARTICLE 7. The present treaty shall be ratified and the ratifications exchanged at Paris within the space of six months.

Made at Verona
the 22nd November, 1822.

for Austria: METTERNICH
for France: CHATEAUBRIAND
for Prussia: BERNSTET
for Russia: NESSELRODE

Mr. OWEN:
I ask to have printed in the CONGRESSIONAL RECORD this secret treaty, because I think it ought to be called now to the attention of the people of the United States and of the World. This evidence of the conflict between the rule of the few versus popular government should be emphasized on the minds of the people of the United States, that the conflict now waging throughout the world may be more clearly understood, for after all said the great pending war springs from the weakness and frailty of government by the few, where human error is far more probable than the error of the many where aggressive war is only permitted upon the authorizing vote of those whose lives are jeopardized in the trenches of modern war.

Mr. SHAFROTH:

Mr. President, I should like to have the Senator state whether in that treaty there was not a coalition formed between the powerful countries of Europe to reestablish the sovereignty of Spain in the Republics of South and Central America?

Mr. OWEN:

I was just going to comment upon that, and I am going to take but a few moments to do so because I realize the pressure of other matters. This Holy Alliance, having put a Bourbon prince upon the throne of France by force, then used France to suppress the constitution of Spain immediately afterwards and by this very treaty gave her a subsidy of 20,000,000 francs annually to enable her to wage war upon the people of Spain and prevent their exercise of any measure of the right of self-government. The Holy Alliance immediately did the same thing in Italy, by sending Austrian troops to Italy, where the people there attempted to exercise a like measure of liberal constitutional self-government; and it was not until the printing press, which the Holy Alliance so stoutly opposed, taught the people of Europe the value of liberty that finally one country after another seized a greater and greater right of self-government until now it may be fairly said that nearly all the nations of Europe have a very large measure of self-government.

However, I wished to call the attention of the Senate and the country to this important history in the growth of constitutional popular self-government. The Holy Alliance made its powers felt by the wholesale drastic suppression of the press in Europe, by universal censorship, by killing free speech and all ideas of popular rights, and by the complete suppression of popular government. The Holy Alliance having destroyed popular government in Spain and in Italy, had well-laid plans also to destroy popular government in the American colonies which had revolted from Spain and Portugal in Central and South America under the influence of the successful example of the United States. It was because of this conspiracy against the American Republics by the European monarchies that the great English statesman, Canning, called the attention of our Government to it, and our statesmen then, including Thomas Jefferson, took an active part to bring about the declaration by President Monroe in his next annual message to the Congress of the United States that the United States would regard it as an act of hostility to the Government of the United States and an unfriendly act if this coalition or if any power of Europe ever undertook to establish upon the American Continent any control of any American Republic or to acquire any territorial rights.

This is the so-called Monroe doctrine. The threat under the secret treaty of Verona to suppress popular government in the American Republics is the basis of the Monroe doctrine. This secret treaty sets forth clearly the conflict between monarchical government and popular government and the government of the few as against the government of the many. It is a part in reality, of developing popular sovereignty when we demand for women equal rights to life, to liberty, to the possession of property, to an equal voice in the making of the laws and the administration of the laws, This demand on the part of the women is made by men, and it ought to be made by men as well as by thinking, progressive women, as it will promote human liberty and human happiness. I sympathize with it, and I hope that all parties will in the national conventions give their approval to this larger measure of liberty to the better half of the human race.

Author's Note: Anyone who believes that the monarchs, after being deposed, forgave and forgot, is not playing with a full deck.

Most of these families are wealthy beyond belief and may be more powerful today than when they sat upon thrones. Today they are known collectively as the Black Nobility. Just because the secret treaty of Verona was signed in 1822 does not mean that the treaty is void. It is imperative that you realize that privately, the Black Nobility refuses to ever recognize any government other than heir own inherited and divine right to rule. They work diligently behind the scenes to cause conditions whereby they might regain their crowns. They believe that the United States belongs to England.

CHAPTER 5

GOOD-BYE USA
HELLO
NEW WORLD ORDER

Backbone of Hidden Government

Subversion of the Balance of Power

The plan to suspend the Constitution
and declare martial law

> It could probably be shown by facts and figures
> that there is no distinctly native
> American criminal class except Congress,
> Mark Twain, 1885

THE BALANCE OF POWER

When our forefathers wrote the Constitution of these United States they provided safeguards against despotism by providing a balance of power. The Constitution was set up to provide clear divisions of Legislative, Judicial, and Executive powers. It was believed that this system would ensure that if one branch got out of hand the other two would act to keep the one in check. This balance of power was predicated upon the assumption that none of the three branches could or would infringe upon the power of the others.

The Constitution is clear on the functions of each of the branches. The Legislative will make the laws. The Judicial will interpret the law. The Executive will decide policy and enforce the law. This, of course, is the simplest of explanations, but this is not a textbook on government. My intent is to acquaint you with simple basics of the balance of power so that you can then understand how it has been subverted.

The Legislature (Congress in the form of the House and Senate) is required to publish the laws that are made, and this is done in the Congres sional Record and the Federal Register. Pending or passed legislation can be obtained by citizens through their Congressmen or from the Government Printing Office. Citizens cannot be held responsible for the law if it is not made available to them.

It is paradoxical that the government body most representative of the American citizen is the one that has been the most easily subverted. Through PACs, payoffs, pork-barrel politics, professional politicians, Congressmen who are members of secret societies and through greed and fear, our Representatives and Senators quit representing us long ago.

Congress has tremendous powers but fails in most cases to exercise even a token amount. How is it that our Legislature has allowed and at times encouraged the Executive branch to write law? You probably did not know that the President and others in the Executive branch of the government can and do write law. This is done in the form of Presidential Executive orders, National Security Council memos, National Security Decision directives, and National Security directives.

NSC memos were broad policy papers in the days after passage of the National Security Act. NSC memos became narrower and more specific over the years, and the name has varied. Under Kennedy they were called National Security Action Memorandums. President Bush has changed the name to National Security Directives.

There is a tremendous difference between Presidential Executive orders, NSC memos, and National Security Decision directives. Presidential

Executive orders are listed in the Federal Register or Presidential Findings, which are made known to the House and Senate Intelligence Committees. The most important difference between the Presidential Executive orders and all of the others, no matter what they are called, is that the others do not have to be reported, reviewed, made available to anyone, or even acknowledged that they exist.

There is no oversight whatsoever that could maintain a check on the legality of these National Security directives. The President and others within the Executive branch have used these supersecret directives to skirt the balance of power and write law without anyone's knowledge. Justification of the President's power to write law through Executive orders stems from the failure of the Government to rescind the declaration of martial law during the Civil War. In effect, the United States has been under martial law ever since Lincoln's administration. These NSDs are powerful, hidden, and dangerous tools. They were prolific during the Reagan administration: over 300 were written, with no more than 50 ever leaking out to undergo public scrutiny. Yet most Americans have never heard of these subversive weapons. They are being used to destroy our Constitution. I believe that everyone should know about this corruption of government.

Congress has turned a blind eye to these abuses of executive power. At 3:30 a.m. Saturday, August 4,1990, the Senate made it even easier for the Executive branch to subvert the Constitution and may have made George Bush the first American king. At that time on that day, a minority of United States senators, maybe ten at the most, passed Senate Intelligence Authorization Act for Fiscal Year 1991 (S.B. 2834). This bill will fundamentally change our constitutional system and threatens to destroy the very foundations of our great nation. Since attention has been focused upon the Middle East crisis, the public and most Congressmen know absolutely nothing about this bill.

The bill was fraudulently introduced as a reform to prevent future incidents of the abuses brought to light during the Iran-Contra scandal. Instead of preventing future abuses, however, it virtually authorizes essentially every abuse. The bill was carefully brought to a vote by Senator Sam Nunn in the dead of night when the opposition was gone. It effectively transfers most authority over the United States government directly into the hands of George Bush and thus directly into the hands of the Secret Government.

The President (presently George Bush) was given the power to initiate war, appropriate public funds, define foreign policy goals, and decide what is important to our national security. In "Oversight of Intelligence Activities," Tide VII, S.B. 2834 authorizes the following:

Gives the president power to initiate covert actions (this has never before been given to the President); prevents Congress from stopping the President's initiation of covert actions; allows the President to use any federal "departments, agencies, or entities" to operate or finance a covert operation; empowers the President to use any other nation or private contractor or person to fund or operate a covert action; redefines covert actions as operations "necessary to support foreign policy objectives of the United States," a definition that is so vague and broad as to be essentially unlimited; for the first time officially claims the right of the United States to secretly interfere in the internal "political, economic, or military affairs" of other countries in direct and flagrant violation of international law; requires that the President prepare and deliver a written finding to the Intelligence committees of the Congress but allows the President to omit "extremely sensitive matters" and authorizes the President to claim executive privilege if Congress asks too many questions.

There are no penalties in the bill for violating any of its provisions, including the provision requiring a finding. Why should there be? This bill has literally handed the power of all the branches of government to the President on a silver platter. President Bush is now truly American King George the First. S.B. 2834 gives Bush the power to use any agency or branch of the government and any appropriated funds from any agency or branch of the government for covert action even if they were never appropriated for that purpose. The bill effectively prevents any oversight by anyone and allows the Executive branch to skirt the law and to escape accountability. This will be done using National Security directives. A few examples of past NSD directives that have come to light will help you understand the seriousness of the matter. They will be listed in the following paragraphs under the heading of the subject matter of the NSDDs:

NSDD 84: SAFEGUARDING NATIONAL SECURITY INFORMATION [SECRECY], 3/11/83 (Declassified in full). SUBJECT: This directive drastically expands restrictions on government employees' freedom of speech. Those with access to classified information were required to sign a nondisclosure agreement; those with access to a special category of classified information were made to agree to prepublication review of any future writings. The use of polygraphs was authorized. PURPOSE: Prevent disclosure of information that could damage national security. CONSEQUENCES: The polygraph requirement was rescinded due to Congressional opposition. Secrecy restrictions were imposed on more than 4 million government employees and CONTRACTORS for more than fifty executive agencies. Many reporters' contacts were shut down. Government employees' unions and members of Congress sued to protect the rights of whistleblowers, and the Supreme Court recently sent the case back to the district level for review.

Author's Note: NSDD 84 indicates that John Lear, Robert Lazar, Bruce Macabbee, Stanton Friedman, Clifford Stone, and many others may be active government agents. They were all working in government jobs or for government contractors and all of them were subject to this executive order. NSDD 84 was not used to silence them, which seems to indicate that they had executive approval in each and every instance.

NSDD 17: DETERRING CUBAN MODELS/COVERT ACTION IN NICARAGUA, 11/23/81 (Classified). SUBJECT: The Central Intelligence Agency was given authority to create the contras and "work with foreign governments as appropriate" to undermine the Sandinista government of Nicaragua. PURPOSE: To stop the flow of arms from Cuban and Nicaraguan sources to the Salvadoran rebels. CONSEQUENCES: The C.I.A. was given $19 million to assemble and arm a force of 500 contras to join with 1000 exiles already being trained by Argentina. Scores of operatives arrived in Honduras; arms shipments from Miami began. The contra war was set in motion.

NSDD 77: MANAGEMENT OF PUBLIC DIPLOMACY RELATIVE TO NATIONAL SECURITY, 1/14/83 (Declassified in full). SUBJECT: This directive set up several planning groups to conduct "public diplomacy activities." It ordered "organizational support for foreign governments and private groups to encourage the growth of democratic political institutions and practices." PURPOSE: To mobilize international and domestic support for "our national security objectives." CONSEQUENCES: Created propaganda ministries in the National Security Council, the State Department and the White House that concentrated on, in the words of the NSC staff member in charge of the program, "gluing black hats on the Sandinistas and white hats on UNO" (the contras' United Nicaraguan Opposition). Stories were planted in the press; journalists were pressured. The General Accounting Office later found that these activities violated the law banning "covert propaganda" inside the United States. How many other covert propaganda programs do you think are operating against the American Citizens? I can assure you that there are many more than you would ever believe.

NSDD 138: INTERNATIONAL TERRORISM, 4/3/84 (Classified). SUBJECT: This directive endorsed the principle of preemptive strikes and retaliatory raids against terrorists and called on 26 Federal agencies to recommend specific measures to combat terrorism. PURPOSE: To lessen international terrorism and free U.S. hostages in Lebanon. While this NSD directive pretends to be concerned about international terrorism, it is really a thinly disguised authorization of preemptive strikes and retaliatory raids against patriots in this country. When FEMA is activated, patriots will be rounded up in the dead of night, most likely on a national holiday such as Thanksgiving. Government agents and law-enforcement officers in every city across the nation have received antiterrorist training under this NSDD directive, and I can assure you the target is patriots. CONSEQUENCES: Set up the Terrorist Incident Working Group under North in the NSC. Its first major action was the interception and capture of the Achille Lauro hijackers, which gave North's career an important boost.

Either NSDD 138 or a subsequent NSD directive on terrorism authorized the training of three Lebanese units for preemptive strikes. When problems arose, Director of Central Intelligence William Casey took that operation off the books and enlisted Saudi Arabian help in an attempt to assassinate the head of Hezbollah. A resulting car bombing killed about eighty in Beirut; Sheik Fadlallah, the target was unhurt. The U.S. military, along with civilian law-enforcement teams, conducted joint antiterrorist training across America. To allay public fears the participants wore civilian clothing.

NSD directives have become the de facto legislative vehicle of the national security state. It has become known through the research of Susan Fitzgerald, a research consultant at the Fund for Constitutional Government in Washington who has collected declassified NSD directives, that many were released without the White House letterhead at the top of the page and without the President's signature at the bottom. This, she speculates, is to conceal the fact that the signatures on some of them would reveal that they had been made by autopen, not by Ronald Reagan's own hand. That should give you a taste of what we are up against. Please understand that virtually all but a very few NSD directives still remain classified, and unless the public forces disclosure their effect will probably never be known.

Somewhere within the volumes of secret NSD directives there is a plan to suspend the Constitution of the United States of America. The existence of this plan surfaced during the Iran-Contra hearings. Congressman Jack Brooks (D), Texas, attempted to bring it into the open. When he asked Col. North directly if North had ever helped draft a plan to suspend the Constitution, Brooks was silenced by the committee chairman Senator Daniel K. Inouye (D), Hawaii. Senator Inouye stated that the subject dealt with national security, and any questions regarding the matter could be brought up during a closed-door session. We never learned the outcome. I would like to know who gave anyone, in any branch of government, with any title, the right to suspend the Constitution at any time, for any reason, under any conditions?

I believe the plan to suspend the Constitution is directly tied to the underground facility called Mount Weather and to the Federal Emergency Management Agency (FEMA). Mount Weather is so shrouded in secrecy that 99.9% of Americans have never heard of it. FEMA, however, is another story. Remember Hurricane Hugo? Remember the federal agency (FEMA) that was sent to handle the emergency and was thrown out by the citizens because of gross incompetence? FEMA was incompetent, because

"emergency management" is just a guise for its real purpose, which is to take over local, state, and federal government in case of a national emergency. The only way FEMA could do such a thing is if the Constitution Were suspended and martial law were to be declared. Therefore its very existence is proof positive that a plan to suspend the Constitution does in fact exist.

MOUNT WEATHER

Just outside of a sleepy little town called Bluemont, Virginia, about 46 miles west of Washington D.C., is an area of wilderness covering what has been called the toughest granite rock in the eastern United States. The area is surrounded by signs marked "Restricted Area" and "This installation has been declared a restricted area....Unauthorized entry is prohibited." Other signs state: "All persons and vehicles entering hereon are liable to search. Photographing, making notes, drawings, maps or graphic representations of this area or its activities is prohibited. Such material found in the possession of unauthorized persons will be confiscated. Internal Security Act of 1950." The installation is beneath a mountain and its name is the Western Virginia Office of Controlled Conflict Operations. Its nickname is Mount Weather. It was ordered to be built by the Federal Civil Defense Administration, which is now the Federal Preparedness Agency.

Mount Weather was designed in the early '50s as part of a civil defense program to house and protect the Executive branch of the Federal government. The official name was "The Continuity of Government Program."

Congress has repeatedly tried to discover the real purpose of Mount Weather, but so far has been unable to find out ANYTHING about the secret installation. Retired Air Force General Leslie W. Bray, director of the Federal Preparedness Agency, told the Senate Subcommittee on Constitutional Rights in September 1975: "I am not at liberty to describe precisely what is the role and the mission and the capability that we have at Mount Weather or at any other precise location."

In June 1975, Senator John Tunney (D), California, chairman of the

Subcommittee on Constitutional Rights, charged that Mount Weather held dossiers on at least 100,000 Americans. He later alleged that the Mount Weather computers, described as "the best in the world," can obtain millions of pieces of additional information on the personal lives of American citizens simply by tapping the data stored at any of the other 96 Federal Relocation Centers.

I know from my stint with the Office of Naval Intelligence that these dossiers consist of information collected about American patriots, men and women who are most likely to resist the destruction of our Constitution and the formation of the totalitarian police state under the New World Order. The patriot data bank is constantly updated so that when the appointed hour arrives all patriots can be rounded up with little if any effort. The plan calls for this to be accomplished in the dead of night on a national holiday. The most likely holiday is Thanksgiving, when everyone, no matter the religion, race, or creed, will be at home. The targets will be ripe for the picking after a heavy meal, maybe some alcoholic beverages, and during a deep sleep. There is a traitor in the patriot movement who provides the Secret Government with accurate names and addresses of patriots who will fight to protect and defend the Constitution.

MY RECOMMENDATION IS THAT NO PATRIOT SHOULD EVER BE AT HOME OR AT THE HOME OF ANY FAMILY MEMBER ON ANY HOUDAY EVER AGAIN UNTIL THE TRAITORS HAVE BEEN HUNG AND THE CONSTITUTION RESTORED AS THE SUPREME LAW OF THE LAND.

Some sources state that Mount Weather is virtually an underground city complete with dormitories, private apartments, streets, sidewalks, cafeterias, hospitals, water-purification systems, power plant, office buildings, a lake fed by fresh water from underground springs, a mass-transit system, and many other astounding things.

Several disturbing facts emerge when one researches Mount Weather. One is the conclusion that a complete parallel government exists at the site. Nine Federal departments exist there — Agriculture, Commerce, HEW, HUD, Interior, Labor, State, Transportation, and the Treasury. Apparently at least five Federal agencies are also in residence: FCC, Selective Service, Federal Power Commission, Civil Service Commission, and the Veterans Administration. Two privately owned corporations have offices at Mount Weather: the Federal Reserve and the U.S. Post Office. There is also an Office of the Presidency. What makes all this upsetting is that there is a President and a complete set of cabinet officers in residence at Mount Weather. Who are they and who appointed them? Where is such a thing provided for in the Constitution of the United States of America?

Mount Weather is the operational center — the hub — of over 96 other underground Federal Relocation Centers scattered across the United States. The majority of these appear to be concentrated in Pennsylvania, Virginia, West Virginia, Maryland, and North Carolina. Each of these facilities contains computer data banks holding information — not on enemy agents, Soviet diplomats, or suspected terrorists but on American citizens, patriots. A list of other files kept at the facilities was furnished to the Subcommittee on Constitutional Rights in 1975. The list included "military installations, government facilities, communications, transportation, energy and power, agriculture, manufacturing, wholesale and retail services, manpower, financial, medical and educational institutions, sanitary facilities, population, housing shelter, and stockpiles."

The committee concluded that these data bases "operate with few, if any, safeguards or guidelines." Senator James Abourzek (D), South Dakota, a member of the subcommittee, said, "I feel the entire operation has eluded the supervision of either Congress or the courts." Chairman Tunney said, "Mount Weather is out of control." Nothing was done by Congress to rectify the situation, however, and Mount Weather remains out of control.

Former high-level officials from Mount Weather agree that the base at Mount Weather is much more than any standby government facility or storage center for the preservation of records; they describe it as an ACTUAL GOVERNMENT-IN-WAITING. "We do not merely store essential information; the facility attempts to duplicate the vital functions of the Executive branch of the Administration." As stated above, according to my research, this includes a President and all Cabinet members actually in residence. Protocol even demands that subordinates address them as "Mr. President" or "Mr. Secretary." Most of these mysterious appointees have held their positions through several administrations. "We just act on the orders of the President in national emergencies," said one former Mount Weather official.

The FPA in its 1974 Annual Report stated that "Studies conducted at Mount Weather involve the control and management of domestic political unrest where there are material shortages (such as food riots) or in strike situations where the FPA determines that there are industrial disruptions and other domestic resource crises." The report states that the bureaucracy at Mount Weather invokes what it calls "Civil Crisis Management."

Officials who were at Mount Weather and who have furnished us with data say that during the 1960s the complex was actually prepared to assume certain governmental powers at the time of the 1961 Cuban missile crisis and the assassination of President Kennedy In 1963. The source said that the installation used the tools of its "Civil Crisis Management" program on a standby basis during the 1967 and 1968 urban riots and during a number of national antiwar demonstrations against the administration by the American people.

Daniel J. Cronin, who was the assistant director for the FPA, outlined a massive surveillance and manipulation program that is directed against the American population on a continuing basis. The FPA has organized an impressive armament of resources and equipment. Mr. Cronin described in an interview his agency's attitude toward its wide-ranging surveillance program. "We try to monitor situations," he said, "and get to them before they become emergencies....No expense is spared in the monitoring program." He cited reconnaissance satellites, local and state police intelligence reports, and law-enforcement agencies of the Federal government as examples of the resources available to the FPA for information-gathering.

The only document that I was able to find that attempts to outline some of the statutory authority of Mount Weather is Executive Order 11490. It was drafted by Gen. George A. Lincoln, former director for the Office of Emergency Preparedness (preceded FPA) and was signed into law by President Nixon in October 1969. Executive Order 11490 superseded Executive Order 11051, signed on October 2,1962, by President Kennedy. Kennedy's order used the language, "Whereas, national preparedness must be achieved—as may be required to deal with increases in international tension with limited war, or with general war including attack upon the United States..." Nixon's order began: "Whereas our national security is dependent upon our ability to assure continuity of government, at every level, in any national emergency type situation that might conceivably confront the nation..." Nixon has deleted any reference to "war," "imminent attack," and "general war" from the order and replaced them with the phrase "during any emergency that might CONCEIVABLY occur."

Nixon's order, which is the one in effect today, allows the government in the form of FEMA to suspend the Constitution for literally any reason they decide to call a national emergency. I CANNOT FIND A PLAN OR EXECUTIVE ORDER ANYWHERE WHICH OUTLINES ANY PROCEDURE OR ALLOWANCE FOR THE RESTORATION OF THE CONSTITUTION AFTER A NATIONAL EMERGENCY HAS ENDED. THIS LEADS TO THE OBVIOUS CONCLUSION THAT NO RESTORATION OF THE CONSTITUTION IS CONTEMPLATED OR DESIRED BY THOSE IN POWER.

In 1975, Senator Tunney expressed concern, "We know, from what we've heard in the press, that 15,000 names were being maintained by the FBI for detention in an emergency...We also know that the IRS had its files on individual taxpayers. We know that the CIA had their Operation CHAOS and that the NSA has the records of conversations that have been intercepted electronically. My question is this: Is there anyone like yourself, General Bray, that is in control of the overall access to this data if it is maintained in a relocation site? And your answer, as I understood it, is no." Tunney continued: "General Bray, I must say that I still don't know who's in control of these relocation centers....You say you don't have that knowledge and still we don't know from the...three witnesses that we had here today, that they had information as to who has control of those centers."

"I am not at liberty," Bray answered, "to describe precisely what is the role and the mission and the capability that we have at Mount Weather, or at any other precise location." I firmly believe that our Continuity of Government program has not provided continuity at all, but has been the instrument for discontinuing open and democratic government, and that the very program designed to protect Americans has actually been turned against us.

We at the executive level here were active in either OSS, the State Department, or the European Economic Administration. During those times, and without exception, we operated under directions issued by the White House. We are continuing to be guided by just such directives, the substance of which were to the effect that we should make every effort to so alter a life in the United States as to make possible a comfortable merger with the Soviet Union.

H. Rowan Gaither
President of the Ford Foundation
1953

SOURCES

"Bureaucrats Get Ready for a Presidential Order," Spotlight, Washington D.C, July 27,1987.

Pell, Eve, "The Backbone of Hidden Government," The Nation, June 19,1989.

Pollock, Richard P., "The Mysterious Mountain," The Progressive, March 12, 1976.

Sinkin, Lanny, "Democracy at Risk If Covert Bill Passes," ANOTHER VIEW, Los Angeles Daily News, September 19,1990.

Weekly Compilation of Presidential Documents, Office of the Federal Register, National Archives and Records Administration, Washington D.C, 1950 to present.

Witt, Howard, "Lawyers Press U.S. on Martial Law Plan," Chicago Tribune, August 15,1983.

CHAPTER 6

H.R. 4079 & FEMA

FEDERAL EMERGENCY MANAGEMENT AGENCY

Tool That Can Be Used to Establish the Police State

PATRIOTS and TAX PROTESTERS:

YOU MUST NEVER BE FOUND AT HOME ON ANY HOLIDAY.

Your life depends upon how well you can obey that rule.

FEMA

(Federal Emergency Management Agency)

The following is a transcript of an audiotape with an urgent message to the people from William Cooper on the subject of H.R. 4079. We must stop the traitors now. William Cooper dictated this information to me by phone early in 1990 and I tape-recorded the information as he gave it. I made many tapes and sent them out exactly as Mr. Cooper has asked me to do and those recipients have done the same. My name is Richard Murray and I believe that William Cooper is the only man in America outside the Secret Government who truly knows what is happening and what it means to us, the average American Citizens.

[Begin tape] There's a guy by the name of Buster Horton. He's a member of FEMA, and he's a member of the interdepartmental unit which is empowered in the event of a national security emergency to become the unelected national government, a sort of FEMA secret government, so to speak.

A pretext for invoking those emergency measures can be found almost daily in the newspapers. It can be anything from the suspension of debt payments by the high bureaus of American countries, to mass runs on U.S. commercial banks — and thaf s an issue, by the way, thafs being handled personally by the National Security Council and Brent Scocroft — to food shortages, to the drug war. The whole bit — anything, any disaster emergency declared at all, even including the oil spill from the Exxon tanker in Alaska. If the President had declared a national emergency, that could have triggered it. Any instability in the Middle East — anything, in fact.

And they've already tested their capabilities in April 1984 with REX-84A. And that was designed to test the readiness of the U.S. civilian and military agencies to respond to a serious national security crisis.

Now, the Executive order that will implement this, the Executive Order 11051, details responsibilities to the Office of Emergency Planning or FEMA. It gives authorization to put ALL Executive orders into effect in times of national emergency declared by the President, increased international tension or economical or financial crisis. (Note that it covers every conceivable domestic crisis but does not even mention war or nuclear attack.)

Now, the only thing that has to happen for FEMA to be able to implement all the executive orders, emergency executive orders, is for the President to declare a national emergency of any type, as long as it's a national emergency.

Executive Order 10995 provides for the takeover of the communications media.

Executive Order 10997 provides for the takeover of all electric, power, petroleum, gas, fuels, and minerals.

Executive Order 10988 provides for the takeover of food resources and farms.

Executive Order 10999 provides for the takeover of all modes of transportation, control of highways, seaports, etc.

Executive Order 11000 provides for mobilization of all civilians into work brigades under the Government supervision.

Executive Order 11001 provides for Governmental takeover of all health, education and welfare functions.

Executive Order 11002 designates the Postmaster General to operate a national registration of all persons.

Executive Order 11003 provides for the Government to take over airports and aircraft.

Executive Order 11004 provides for the Housing and Finance Authority to relocate communities, designate areas to be abandoned, and establish new locations for populations.

Executive Order 11005 provides for the Government to take over railroads, inland waterways and public storage facilities.

Now, all of these were COMBINED under Nixon into one huge Executive order, which allows all of this to take place if the President declares a national emergency and it can be implemented by the head of FEMA, NOT BY THE PRESIDENT. The President has already given him that power under these executive orders.

All of these were combined into Executive Order 11490 and that was signed by President Carter on July 20,1979, and is, in fact, law.

So, if H.R. 4079 is passed and the President does what it says and declares a national emergency because of the drug situation, whether it's for one year, five years, five minutes or forever, it doesn't make any difference. FEMA then can implement all these Executive orders, take over all local, state, and national government suspend the Constitution and do whatever they want to do.

Now, remember what North said during the Iran-Contra hearings. He said that they were prepared to suspend the Constitution of the United States. And he said if it hadn't been for their getting caught that this would have happened. And all that did was delay it. This is what is still going to happen.

Now, they've nominated (and I think he's been appointed) Maj. Gen. Calvin Franklin, who's the head of FEMA. He was nominated because of discussions proposing the removal of the implementation of the National Guard in Washington, D.C. And Maj. Gen. Franklin is or was the Commanding General of the District of Columbia National Guard.

Now, you've got to know that the National Guard would be of no help at all in combating drug traffic in Washington, D.C, or anywhere else. The primary effectiveness of the National Guard is in controlling mass civil disorders.

On March 24, President Bush issued a new Executive order delegating to the Director of FEMA powers which were vested in the President by the Disaster Relief and Emergency Assistance Act of 1988. And although the order is described by the White House as simply a technical matter, in reality the revision delegates to the FEMA Director, direct responsibility for a large number of items which were earlier only the President's prerogative. And that includes responsibility for General Federal Assistance, Federal Emergency Assistance, Hazard Mitigation, Individual and Family Grant Programs, and the power to direct other federal agencies to assist in an emergency. AND THAT'S THE KEY. All other federal agencies will come under FEMA.

Of course, the President retains the power to actually declare an emergency, but as soon as he does that, the implementation of the measures utilized will be transferred directly to the Director of FEMA. The brains behind this contingency plan for a police state were the members of the Council on Foreign Relations and the Trilateral Commission, both of which Bush is a member. And Brent Scocroft, National Security Adviser, who was a member of FEMA's Advisory Board until he was appointed by Bush to head the National Security Council, is a member of the Trilateral Commission and also a business partner of Henry Kissinger, who has been a traitor to this country for many, many years. And of course Scocroft would become the superior to FEMA in the chain of command of the National Security Emergency whenever it is declared.

The FEMA Advisory Board is dominated by Prof. Samuel P. Huntington. In 1978 Huntington drafted for Jimmy Carter Presidential Memorandum 32, which led to the creation of FEMA in 1979. And he's a Harvard Professor.

He wrote the "Seminal Peace" for the Trilateral Commission in the mid-1970s, recommending that democracy and economic development be discarded as outdated ideas. He wrote, as co-author of the book Crises in Democracy, "We have come to recognize that there are potential desirable limits to economic growth. There are also potentially desirable limits to the indefinite extension of political democracy. A Government which lacks authority will have little ability short of cataclysmic crisis to impose on its people the sacrifices which may be necessary."

All of Huntington's ideas were rewritten into National Security Decision Directive 47, which is in NSDD 47, and that was enacted by President Reagan on July 22, 1982. It identified important areas to be upgraded, such as the nation's industrial base to maintain the national defense, but it nonetheless — and this is very important — laid the groundwork for the secret government's options to institute a police state, and its title is Emergency Mobilization Preparedness. It ordered preparedness measures that involved the waiving or modification of socioeconomic regulations that delay emergency responses and that should receive priority attention. It also specified that preparedness measures that are or may be impeded by legal constraints be identified in the priority task that lays the groundwork for the SUSPENSION OF THE CONSTITUTION.

Make copies of this tape if you want to. You don't even have to transcribe it if you don't want to. BUT GET THIS OUT TO THE PEOPLE. It's important that they understand that if H.R. 4079 is passed — they're history.

They won't pass it if we get this out to the people and tell them that this is what they're doing. Most people don't even know about it, and that's to the Secret Government's benefit. If we get this out and tell people what they're doing, then people can get on the phone and then go down and kick their Congressman's ass (which is what they should have been doing years ago) and get this thing thrown out of Congress. And the next thing they need to do is throw their Congressmen and their Senators out of Congress — and keep them out of Congress. And put their neighbors in there, people they can trust, and keep them in there for only one term. THE CONSTITUTION IS IN SERIOUS DANGER.

This has nothing to do with the right wing, left wing, or any other damn thing. It has to do with the Illuminati taking over this country and joining in the New World Order.

When you give this out to people, make sure they agree to make ten copies and send them to all their friends. [End of tape]

I decided that the transcript of this tape says it all. Why write it again?

H.R. 4079

As of this writing H.R. 4079 is still in committee and has not been subjected to a vote. It is one of the most deceptive and dangerous pieces of legislation to go in front of the Congress in many years. It must be stopped at all costs. You must call your representative and stop this bill.

H.R. 4079 has included within its pages two provisions that are meant to divert attention from the fact that the bill would declare a state of national emergency for five years and would allow FEMA to literally take over local, state, and federal government. This means that the Constitution of the United States could be suspended.

The diversions used are terrible if allowed to sneak through. One is a clause that would eliminate the 4th amendment to the Constitution and the other would eliminate the 8th amendment to the Constitution. The diversion would cause heated argument over these two provisions, resulting in some sort of compromise while allowing the declaration of a 5-year state of national emergency to sail right through Congress and become signed into law. If that happens if s good-bye USA, hello New World Order.

Call your Congressman and insist that he/she deliver into your hands a complete copy of H.R. 4079 immediately. Do not take no for an answer. Read it and defeat it.

[Added before press time: H.R. 4079 may have been secretly passed just as S.B. 2834 was passed and H.R. 4079 may be Public Law 101-647 signed into law by President Bush on November 29, 1990. If this has occurred, then we are already subject to a FEMA takeover. I am attempting to acquire a copy of P.L. 101-647. This late-breaking new was furnished by a Congressional staff member and has not been verified as of January 8,1991.]

SOURCES

"Bureaucrats Get Ready for a Presidential Order," Spotlight, Washington D.C., July 27,1987.

Codification of Presidential Proclamations and Executive Orders, Office of the Federal Register, National Archives and Records Administration, Washington D.C., 1/20/61-1/20/85.

Murray, Richard, transcript of phone conversation with William Cooper, FEMA & H.R. 4079, San Diego, California, Winter 1989.

Pell, Eve, 'The Backbone of Hidden Government,' The Nation, June 19,1989.

Pollock, Richard P., 'The Mysterious Mountain," The Progressive, March 12, 1976.

Quinde, Herbert, article from Executive Intelligence Report News Service, Washington D.C., April (no year on document), uploaded to my computer BBS by anonymous user.

Sinkin, Lanny, "Democracy at Risk If Covert Bill Passes," ANOTHER VIEW, Los Angeles Daily News, September 19,1990.

Weekly Compilation of Presidential Documents, Office of the Federal Register, National Archives and Records Administration, Washington D.C., 1950 to present.

Witt, Howard, "Lawyers Press U.S. on Martial Law Plan," Chicago Tribune, August 15,1983.

Author's Note: The following report by Dr. Pabst concerning FEMA and concentration camps in the United States is photographed and printed exactly as written.

IN THE UNITED STATES

A National Emergency: Total Takeover

This is Dr. William R. Pabst. My address is 1434 West Alabama Street, Houston, Texas 77006. My telephone number is: area code 713 521-9896. This is my 1979 updated reported on the concentration camp program of the Department of Defense of the United States.

On April 20, 1976, after a rapid and thorough investigation, I filed suit on behalf of the people of the United States against various personages that had a key part in a conspiratorial program to do away with the United States as we know it. This is a progress report to you, the plaintiffs, you, the People of the United States. The civil action number is 76-H-667. It is entitled, "Complaint Against the Concentration Camp Program of the Dept of Defense". It was filed in the U.S. District Court for the southern district of Texas, Houston division. The judge responsible for the case was Judge Carl Bue.

You have no doubt heard the story: Once upon a time, under the Nazi regime in Germany, a man worked on an assembly line in a baby carriage factory. His wife was going to have a baby, but the Nazi government would not let anybody buy a baby carriage. The man decided he would secretly collect one part from each department and assemble the carriage himself. When this was done he and his wife gathered up the pieces and assembled it. When they were finished they did not have a baby carriage; they had a machine gun.

And that is exactly the situation that I am going to present to you at this time. The Center for the Study for Democratic Institutions recently completed a proposed constitution for the "Newstates of America". The Center is Rockefeller funded. To give you an indication of the type of constitution proposed, the term "national emergency" is mentioned 134 times. The document did not have a Bill of Rights and the right to own arms was taken away. At the same time, House Concurrent Resolution #28 awaited for calling a constitutional convention on or before July 4, 1976. The presiding officer of such an event would have been Nelson Rockefeller. Vice Presidenl and president pro tern of the Senate. This particular resolution awaited in committee. Obviously money would not be spent on these massive programs unless there would be the chance for the actual implementation of such a scheme.

However, in case the American people do not voluntarily adopt a new constitution less troublesome to those who desire dictatorship, there is Executive Order #11490. which will include its predecessors when it is cited herein. The Executive Order authorizes the secretaries of the various agencies to prepare for any "national emergency" type situation - including, but not limited to, those specified in the Executive Order itself. If you read the Order, there is nothing at all left to the imagination. For any conceivable pretense a national emergency may be declared based upon this frightening decree, dated October 1969. The Order itself was prefaced in March of '69 by another Executive Order which established the federal regions and their capitals. All the departments of the government were involved, including the L.E.A.A. (Law Enforcement Assistance Administration) and H.E.W. (Health, Education and Welfare). Congressman Larry McDonald has revealed to Congress that various guerrilla and terrorist groups were being financed by the federal government. If they (the terrorist groups) actually began insurgent activities, Executive Order #11490 would be activated.

But as mentioned previously, if you will read Executive Order #11490, you will see that a "national emergency" may he declared for any conceivable pretense whatsoever. If the Order itself were activated, here is what would happen: The next day you and your family would be standing in front of your local post office with your neighbors; the front door bursting with block-long lines of people waiting to be registered. After waiting in line with your family for hours, you finally get channeled through the doors. Once inside, you overhear the postal clerk with his sidearm on telling a frightened restrant, "Look, there is nothing I can do. The truck behind the building will take you to a work camp where you have been assigned. Your wife has been assigned to a factory and there's nothing I can do." Then your son or daughter looks up at you with a quivering voice and asks, "Dad, why are we here?"

Implementing the New Government

Well, you see there's much more to life in a "free country" than paying your mortgage. You have to be aware of what is going on and act accordingly and participate in government; that is, get involved. Examining the organization chart on Executive Order #11490 to discover how we have all helped finance (through our tax dollars) the mechanics of the overthrow of our Constitution, Executive Order #11490 designates certain authorities to the Office of Emergency Preparedness -- which in turn designates authority to the various departments of the federal government.

If Order were implemented, the Post Office Department would be responsible for a national registration. The State Department would be responsible for the protection of the United Nations personnel or properly and prevention of escape from the United States. The Department of Defense would be responsible for the expropriation of industry; direction of services and national production system; control of censorship; and communication expropriation of non-industrial facilities. The Commerce Department would be responsible for expropriation, selection and international distribution of commodities (which would be the actual looting of the United States), census information and human resources.

The Treasury Department would be responsible for collection of cash and non-cash items and the re-creation of evidence of assets and liabilities. The Justice Department would have concurrent responsibility with the Department of State for prevention of escape from the United States: for replenishing the stockpile of narcotics; for a national police force: for correctional and penal institutions; for mass feeding and housing of prisoners and for use of prisoners to augment manpower which would be slave labor.

The Federal Bank (which is not a FEDERAL bank) would be responsible for regulation of withdrawal of currency. The G.S.A. (General Services Administration) would be responsible for confiscation of private property for government use. Health, Education and Welfare would be responsible for nationalization of education (which the Department of Education has already done), health services, hospitals and mental institutions. The Labor Department would be responsible for recruiting manpower; selecting manpower; referring manpower; and allocating manpower so each particular person that was registered at the post office in this national registration would be told where he (or she) was going to work. H.U.D. (Housing and Urban Debvelopment) would be responsible for transfer of persons to temporary or permanent housing in regional emergency planning and cooperation. The Transportation Department is responsible for emergency enforcement and control and movement of passengers and the emergency operation of the Alaska railroad.

There are two specific agencies here that we need to look at and to keep in mind. They are: H.E.W. and Justice (Department), as those two agencies are related to the Department of Defense; The various military departments are part of the Department of Defense. Under it, we have the Secretary of Army, Chief of Staff, Deputy Chief of Staff of Personnel and law enforcement, U.S. Army's forces command, and continental Army Reserve & National Guarkd. And under that we have the four armies dividing up the United States. Under the Fifth Army we have the provost marshal, who is directly connected to the Deputy Chief of Staff for law enforcement personnel. Under the provost marshal for the Fifth Army we have the 300 Military Police Prisoner-of-War (POW) Command at Livonia, Michigan.

At this point I quote from retired Adm. Elmo Zumwalt's book, ON WATCH, Kissinger states, "I believe the American people lack the will to do the things necessary to achieve parity and to maintain maritime superiority. I believe we must get the best deal we can in our negotiations before the United States and the Soviets both perceive these changes and the balance that occurs. When these perceptions ara in agreement, and both sides know the U.S. is inferior, we must have gotten the best deal we can. Americans at that time will not be happy that I have settled for second, but it will be too late."

Zumwalt said, "Then why not take it to the American people? They will not accept the decision to become second best while we are in a position of Gross National Product twice that of the U.S.S.R."

Kissinger responds, "That's a question of judgement. I judge that we will not get their support, and if we seek it and tell that fact, as we would have to, we would loose our negotiating leverage with the Soviets."

Zumwalt stated, "But isn't that the ultimate immorality in a democracy; to make a decision for the people of such importance without consulting them?'

Kissinger stated, "Perhaps, but I doubt that there are 1 million who could even understand the issue."

Zumwalt responded, "Even if that presumtion is correct, those 1 million can influence the opinions of the majority of the people. I believe it is my duty to take the other course."

Kissinger responded, "You should take care, lest your words result in a reduction in the Navy budget."

So we see what the intention of the State Department is regarding the People. Another fact: On December 30, 1975, the California National Guard announced in a press release (which I have) that the state's Military Police battalions were organized and trained to provide immediate response to virtually every civil and man-made disaster, as well as to assist law enforcement officers in emergency situations; to carry out their law enforcement as well as their military mission. When I asked four of the defendants in this case for their mission statement they did not provide it - although they say it is public information.

The training spoken of for the California National Guard covers such subjects as dealing with individual civilians/civil population, detention procedures, citizen's rights, and similar matters. And you know as well as I do that, when there is Martial Law, or Martial Rule, citizens have no rights - because the Constitution is pre-empted. Even the uniforms of the National Guards who participate in this program are different from the regular uniforms. Army spokesman will not reveal more about the uniforms. But the Los Angeles Sheriffs Department para-military units, who have received this training also, have army fatigues dyed black for their uniforms.

A further fact is the disaster preparedness plan for the Marine Corp Supply Center in Barstow, California. Quoting from that document" "Under the Constitution and the laws of the United States, the preservation of law and order is the responsibility of local and state government. And the authority to maintain the peace and enforce the law is invested in the authorities of those goverments." There are specific exemptions to the above concept. One of these pertains to federal intervention to civil disturbances in certain situations. Military commanders are deemed to have the inherent authority to take any measure reasonably necessary for the protection of life and property in the event of a sudden unexpected public calamity which dirupts the normal process of government and presents an emergency so eminent as to make it dangerous to await instructions from appropriate authorities. This includes Law Enforcement duties. The manual mentions something called "Garden Plot Forces," which we will discuss at length in a few minutes.

Don Bell (who writes a weekly report) reported on July 25, 1975, that in May of 1975, the 303 Civil Affaires group of the U.S. Army Reserves in Kearny, New Jersey, conducted an exercise to sharpen plans for a military takeover of the state government in New Jersey. According to Colonel Frances Clark, they had conducted similar studies on how to seize municipal and county government over the past few years. But this was the first time they had studied STATE government. Such units were trained during World War II to operate captured governments in the foreign. We never had federal troops trining to take over governments in the United States. When local violence or catastrophe struck, the National Guard - under command of the governor - went into action. This is definitely not the situation at this time............................

Controlling the Masses

On February 16, 1975, in the SAN GABRIEL VALLEY TRIBUNE, it was reported that the L.E.A.A. (funded by the Department of Justice) and the Police Foundation (funded by the Ford Foundation) are prime movers toward implementing a national police force. Each, however, contends they support local police agencies. The total program invoices military units that have the function of taking over the administration of local and state governments. That program is "Operation Cable Splicer" - by Army civil affairs groups, a sub-plan of "Operation Garden Plot" (the Martial Law program).

The method by which the national police concept is being presented to the public has changed. It was first disguised under the cover of protection against civil disturbances. This program was as follows:

A. Keep the people from gathering in the streets.
B. Isolate and neutralize the revolution's leadership.
G Dispersal of crowds and demonstrators.

This is followed by successful prosecution in order to: (1) Validate the action of police; (2) Denying the arrestees propaganda materials; and (3) Denying them the opportunity to recover money damages against the police for arresting them.

Let me quote for you the scenario which was developed for Cable Splicer One, Two and Three, to justify the needs for dealing with civil disturbances: "Phase One: an arrest and shooting provoke crowd unrest and threats against public officials and a riot begins to form. Phase Two: police vehicles are ambushed, various attempted assasinations of public officials occur, destruction and raiding of armories occur, and thousands of people begin to gather and local police loose control. Phase Three: increased movement of rioters and the crowds must be dispursed before they become sympathetic with the rioters. The National Guard and the local police loose control."

This scenario provides for an orderly transition from state to federal control. The Deputy Attorney General of California commented, at a Cable Splicer Three conference, that anyone who attacks the State - even verbally - becomes a revolutionary and an enemy by definition. They are the enemy and must be destroyed. This program was taught in almost every state west of the Mississippi River and included as participants local active military, reserve military, and civilian police. The course name was "Civil Emergency Management Course". The official explanation that was to be given, if any questions were asked about the program, was: "This activity is a continuous, joint law enforcement-military liaison effort and a continuation of coordination established last year."

In 1976, the OAKLAND TRIBUNE carried the most complete explanation of what is planned. It is reported in it entirety in the NATIONAL CHRONICLE which added an analysis to the story. (The OAKLAND TRIBUNE'S editor died suddenly after the story was published.) And, I quote:

> Last Saturday the California National Guard unveiled a new Law Enforcement Assistance Force - L.E.A.F., a specially trained and

> outfitted Military Police unit, whose members will serve as shock -troups in the state's war against political protesters and demonstrators.
>
> I saw a full-dress exhibition of what the California National Guard has planned for the next American revolution. Helicopters, SWAT teams, civilian military policemen in jack boots and helmets, twelve-guage shotguns, .38 and .45 caliber pistols, radios, walkie talkies, and electrically-controlled intelligence centers wired for instant communications with any police force in the state.
>
> L.E.A.F. is a 1000-member unit put together this year to handle unique law enforcement problems, such as mass civil disobedience, protest demonstrations and riots. In other words, breaking heads and taking names. L.E.A.F. has the support of Governor Brown, a quarter-million dollard worth of grants from the federal government, and no public opposition from civil liberties groups.
>
> For all its ineptitude, however, L.E.A.F. has a frightening possibility from a civil liberty standpoint. It is a direct product of the California "Cable Splicer" conferences - a series of high-level secret meetings between government officials, lawy nforcement officers, and military planners held during the late '60s and early '70s. The meetings were held as late as 1975, so far as many public records show. These were the conferences which COUNTER-SPY magazine had identified as California's "Garden Plot Sub-Plan:.
>
> Gary Davis, Governor Brown's righthand man, says L.E.A.F. is to assist civil police not to replace them. Gary says, "Civilians could expect a civilian type law enforcement rather than what is commonly known as Martial Law." Despite this assurance, L.E.A.F.'s exercises look disturbingly like the military coup described in the novel, SEVEN DAYS IN MAY.
>
> L.E.A.F. soldiers with nightsticks sood at intersections, stopping cars with suspicious occupants, checking I.D. cards and generally intimidating onlookers with their SWAT style uniforms, their sidearms and helmets. Perhaps more ominously, several participants in the role-playing exercises Saturday admitted that, even under simulated pressure, there has already been a number of incidents where the L.E.A.F. troops used excessive force to quell disturbances - even though their orders forbade it." (End of quote.)

Former L.E.A.FA administrator, Charles Rosgovin, is on record as having stated that local law enforcement has failed and must be replaced by a national police force. Patrick Murphy, the administrator of the Police Foundation, states, "I have no fear of a national police force. Our 40,000 police departments are not sacred." Ex Attorney General, William Saxby, warned that, if we can go on as we are, crime will invade us and the national police will take over.

For the policemen who do not cooperate and still want to be policemen, there is the program of Contemporary Research, Inc. - and organization of psychologists, sociologists, education specialists and economic experts - who work toward a solution of many of today's social problems. The same organization develops specialized computer programming for the new world-wide military command and control system, as well as computer base systems for law enforcement agencies at all levels of government.

The L.E.A.A. alone will receive over a billion dollars a year over the next 4 years - even though it has been ineffective against crime. This is because the L.E.A.A. is not geared to fighting crime; it's geared to developing a system for takeover of the United States with the assistance of the Department of Defence.

The Planned Police State

One of the programs the L.E.A.A. works on in its fight against crime is psycho-surgery. If you don't cooperate with their programs, you are merely operated on so that you be as cooperative as an adding machine. Or, the L.E.A.A. supports drug research for the same purpose - to neutralize neurological sources of violence. Hence, as an example, if a law were passed whereby the ownership of firearms was declared to be illegal, you would be placed in one of these programs if you did not cooperate. The L.E.A.A. control exercise (at the state's level) is from the Office of Criminal Justice Planning of the Governor's Office. Here in Texas, Mr. Robert C. Flowers is still the executive director in that office. But all states have that particular department.

In May 1975, the L.E.A.A. NEWSLETTER describes the function of one of its organizations: the National Institute of Law Enforcement & Criminal Justice. This organization funds something called the "United Nations Clearinghouse" in Rome, Italy. The function of that organization is, among other things, the exchange of Criminal Justice System information with the Soviet Union. And it goes without saying that we have nothing to learn from the Criminal Justice System of the Soviet Unition. These incredible projects are being funded with our tax dollars.

The code name for these projects are: "Garden Plot" and "Cable Splicer". Garden Plot is the program to control the population. Cable Splicer is the program for an orderly takeover of the state and local governments by the federal government.

An investigation was completed in November 1975 by 4 sources: the Conservative publication AMERICAN CHALLENGE; the leftist NEW TIMES; the foundation financed FUND FOR INVESTIGATIVE JOURNALISM; and Don Wood of the trustworthy OZARK SUNBEAM. It involves the potential creation of a Police State through the use of the Pentagon and its computerized intelligence dossier (lodged in the Pentagon basement) of thousands of citiaens by the National Guard, state and local police departments, the L.E.A.A., plain-clothes military forces, SWAT teams, and the Department of Justice.

Brig. Gen. J.L. Julenic. senior Army officer of the Pentagon National Guard Bureau, has admitted, "I know of no state that did not have some form of these exercises within the last year."

Today the Cable Splicer handbook is composed of 6 loose-leaf 3-ring binders that are merely an outline for the impending takeover and destruction of our Constitution. The Sixth Army used the term "Cable Splicer" for the name of the operation, but it has not revealed the name of the operation in the other military areas within the U.S.

On page 4, paragraph 10, on Public Information, the instructions state: "As a means to prevent adverse publicity or misleading psychological effects in regard to coordinating, planning, and conducting this exercise, all military participants involved will perform such duties in civilian clothing when exercise oriented activities are conducted at law enforcement facilities. In the event inquiries are received regarding this exercise, the response should be limited to identifying the activity as a continuous, joint law enforcement-military liaison effort and a continuation of coordination established last year." On page 6, security guidance is explained to the effect that if anybody asks any questions, limit the information that is given out on the basis of it being in the interest of "national interest" (security).

Now, in the festivities celebrating the success of completion of the exercises, Gen. Stanly R. Larsen, the commanding general of the Sixth Army stated, "The most serious challenge facing all of us will be the challenge of discharging our legitimate responsibilities. For a significant portion of a soiety at large is likely to regard us with suspicion and to question, even challenge our authority on the basic assumption of out profession. Part of this challenge we must be prepared to deal with; a potentially dangerous portion of our society which, in truth, could well become the domestic enemy.

The manual includes instructions on operation of confinement facilities, handling and processing prisoners - including searching, transporting,, feeding, housing and handling of the special class of persons called "detainees". The plan also specifically includes a proposition for confiscation of privately-owned weapons and ammunition.

Files on Potential Prisoners

The Army has over 350 separate record centers containing substantial information on civilian-political activities. Virtually every major Army unit has its own set aside from this. The Fifth Army of San Antonio has over 100,000 files of its own. The overall operation command post is a domestic room at the Pentagon. There are 25 million cards on individuals and 760.000 on organizations held by the Defense Central Index of investigations alone. And this information includes political, sociological, economic and psychological profiles. All this type of information on 25 million Americans.

Since 1970, local county and state police forces all over the country have undertaken crash programs to install various kinds of computerized information systems. A large portion of this is being paid for by the LE.A.A. Beginning in 1970, Congress and the Joint Chiefs of Staff ordered the destruction of all these data banks, but thev were not destroyed. All the outlawed collection is now located at Mt. Weather. Clark County. West Virginia and similar Pentagon facilities designed as adjuncts to the president's emergency powers under the Executive Orders.

The cadre of specialized persons to enforce this plan are found in the U.S. Army Reserves-Military Police POW Command at Livonia, Michigan. Mr. Fennerin, of the 300th Military Police POW Command, at Livonia, told me, when I called him from the Federal Information Center at Houston, that the camps in the Command were for foreign prisonsers-of-war and for "enemies of the United States". I asked him if enemies of the United States included U.S. citizens. He became angry, wouldn't deny it, and referred me to a very sinister individual at the Army Reserve facility here at Houston who I talked to; who explained to me that the prisoners were called "inventory" and "internees". He would not deny that the camps were for U.S. citizens.

I called the Pentagon, spoke with the defendant there, and then with the provost marshal for the Fifth Army, and do you know what? Not one of these persons would deny that the system was for U.S. citizens. The provost marshal for the Fifth Army - when I mentioned the names of all the camp sites - said, "Well at least you've got that right."

The names of the detention facilities that I gave him were a list that I had acquired from the OZARK SUNBEAM. That list of names was the same list of facilities designated under the old Detention Act of 1950 as "emergency detention centers". But there is only one problem: That act was supposed to have been repealed in 1971. After some research, I found out what the problem was. One congressman - when the hearings were held for the repeal of the Emergency Detention Act - mentioned that there am 17 other bits of law that provided for the same thing. So it didn't matter whether they ever repealed the Emergency Detention Act. The public was in fact tricked by the Congress of the United States!

Here are the designated sites: Tucked away in the Appalachian Mountains of centeral Pennsylvania is a bustling town of approximately 10,000 people. Fifteen to twenty years ago it was a sleepy village of 400. Allanwood, Pennsylvania is linked to New York City by Interstate 80. It takes up approximately 400 acres and Is surrounded by a 10-foot barb-wire fence. It now holds approximately 300 minimum security prisoners to keep it in shape. It could hold 12.000 people from one day to the next.

Thirty miles from Oklahoma City, on U.S.66, is El Reno, Oklahoma with an approximate population of 12,000. Due west, 6 miles from town, almost in sight of U.S.66, is a complex of buildings which could pass for a small school. However, the facility is overshadowed by a guard house which appears to be something like an airport control tower - except that it's manned by a vigilant, uniformed guard. This a federal prison camp or detention center. These camps are all located near super -highways or near railroad tracks or both.

The federal proson at Florence, Arizona could hold 3,500 prisoners. It is presently kept in condition by approximately 400 legally convicted prisoners. Wickenburg, Arizona is famous for its municipal airport, which was once government owned. It is now occupied by a private party. It is rumored to be capable of being taken beck by the federal government without notice.

Now there are a couple other of these facilities which are probably existing under the same arrangements. This particular rumor of instant taking back without notice has existed for about 9 or 10 years. The only way it can actually be established is by looking at the local contract for the Wickenburg Municipal Airport itself, and the parties that have possession of it.

As I mentioned previously, these names were ratified by the provost marshal of the Fifth Army, who is in charge of the 300th Military Police POW Command. He is the one who verified them. He said, as I mentioned before, "Well at least you've got that right."

Some of the other locations are: Tule Lake, in California - now in private hands. It can be retaken without notice. Some of the others: we have Mill Point, West Virginia. I couldn't find a thing on Mill Point, but in that area we have all kinds of prisons. Among them are: Alderson, West Virginia, a woman's federal reformatory; Lewisburg, West Virginia, a federal prison; Greenville, South Carolina, in Greenville County, is now occupied by the State Youthful Offenders Division. Even that is a mystery to the people of the area.

At Montgomery, Alabama, we have a federal civilian prison camp at Mazwell Air Force Base. Now does that sound right? There's one at Tuscon, Arizona, David Munson Air Base. In Alaska, we have Elmendorf at Eielson Air Force Base.

And that brings us to a facility in Florida called Avon Park, Florida. I sent a representative to see what was at Avon Park. He found the Avon Park Bombing and Gunnery Range, which is also listed as the 56th Combat Support Squadron of the U.S. Air Force; which is also listed as the Avon Park Correctional Institute. No one is permitted entrance and probably there is no overfly permitted because it is a bombing and gunnery range. This was one of the places ratified by the provost marshal of the Fifth Army.

In 1976, as well as on March 20, 1979, I went to the Sheriffs Dept in Houston to see if our local Sheriffs Dept had been infiltrated by these plans. Well, it appears so. I was put in contact with a Lt. Kiljan, who is in charge of some secret unit in the department. I asked him if he had participated in military training or in training with military personnel here in the Sheriff's Department. He denied it and, when I asked him if he would testify so under oath he became angry and stated, "You are just an ordinary citizen. I don't have to tell you anything." I later descovered that Lt. Kiljan is the ex-director of the Houston branch office of the U.S. Secret Service. Now where does his money come from? The area is administered by the Houston-Galveston Area Council.

In this regional-government plan, each federal region is divided into state clearinghouses, and each state clearinghouse is divided into area clearinghouses. And for our area we have the Houston-Galveston Area Council. It serves as a conduit for federal funds in two major areas: L.E.A.A. and H.E.W.

Most everbody thinks this organization (the Houston-Galveston Area Council) is for the development of the area - the geographical area here in Houston. But it is not. It is for the development of L.E.A.A. and H.E.W. projects. Now this finds its counterpart in every community across the U.S. It provides for these agencies a liaison for inter-governmental communications, interaction and coordination

Mental Cooperation in Takeover Plans

I examined their projects to see what they were doing. This regional-government program distributes federal funds for two major purposes: (1) Radio hookups between every police agency in the state to For Sam Houston: and (2) Mental health programs, including programs for the mentally ill having priority of beds and hospitals.

Another interesting fact to consider is that in the Pine Bluff Arkansas Arsenal "B-Z" is stored. It's a nerve gas which creates sleepiness, dizziness, stupor, and the incapacity to move about. According to the Associated Press, the agent can be sprayed by aerosol, injected or sprayed over large areas by a bomb. The Military has admitted that one potential use of the gas is for civilian control. So, whatever they have planned, they've also planned a way for you to go to your destination in a tranquil state of mind.

H.E.W., by law, is operated in conjunction with the United Nations through the World Health Organization. Back In 1948, the International Congress on Mental Health - a U.N. organization - declared in its pamphlet, MENTAL HEALTH AND WORLD CITIZENSHIP, that "prejudice, hostility or excessive nationalism may become deeply imbedded in the developing personality without awareness on the part of the individual concerned. In order to be effective, efforts of changing individuals must be appropriate to the successive stages of the unfolding personality. While in case of a group of society, change will be strongly resisted unless an attitude of acceptance has first been engendered.

"Principles of mental health cannot be successfully furthered in any society unless there is progressive acceptance of the concept of world citizenship." the document states. "Programs for social change to be effective require a joint effort of psychiatrists and social scientists, working together in cooperation with statesmen, administrators and others in positions of responsibility."

The three phases of the development are: (1) Mental hospitals for segregation, care and protection of persons of unsound minds; (2) Community Mental Health Care Centers, so that persons may be treated in their own neighborhoods; and (3) Child Care Centers for dealing with early difficulties of nationalism in a child's life.

Two years earlier, Maj. Gen. G.B. Chisholm, Deputy Minister of Health In

Canada - who later became director of United Nations World Health Organization - explained, "Self defense may involve a neurotic reaction when it means defending one's own excessive material wealth from others who are in great need. This attitude leads to war."
So his solution to the problem is: Let's redistribute the wealth among everyone.

Further, the reinterpretation and eventual eradication of the individual's concept of right and wrong - which has been the basis of child training - are the belated objectives of practically all effective psychotherapies. Now, if we digress even further, to Buria (phonetic spelling), the director of the Soviet Secret Police, in the 1930s, we see that he explained the communist political strategy through the use of "mental healings" of psychiatry:

"Psycho-politics is the art and science of asserting and of maintaining a dominion over the thoughts and loyalties of individuals, officers, bureaus, and masses. and the effecting of the conquest of enemy nations through mental healing. You must work," he stated, "until every teacher of psychology unknowingly or knowlingly teaches only communistic doctrine under the guise of psychology."

If you look at the Russian manual of instruction of psycho-political warfare, we see in chapter 9, "Psycho-political operations should at all times be alert to the oportunities to organize for the betterment of the community mental health centers."

Now, under the new national Mental Health program at this moment there are more than 600 of these community mental health centers across the United States. The whole thing was promoted by Dr. Stanly F. Yolles, who was the director of the National Institute of Mental Health in 1969. And, he stated back then that the newest trend treating mental illness is care at local health care centers, where the patient is not Isolated from his (or her) family and friends. They have been working on this program for 46 years publicly and, now across the U.S. - through your tax dollars - you have 603 centers (to be exact); Community Health Centers that are all part of this program.

And this is how they are part of the program. (It has already happened): In the mid-1950s, there was set into motion an interesting chain of events. About 1956, the Alaska Mental Health Bill was proposed and later passed. It granted approximately $12 million and 1 million acres of public land to Alaska so that it could develop its own metnal health program. Now, this was a little abnormal since Alaska only had a little over 400 people who were classified as mentally ill!

After the bill was passed, Alaska passed its own, enabling legislation to get into the mental health business. They started by adopting the essential elements of the Public Health Service Draft Act on the hospitalization of the mentally ill in the old "Interstate Compact on Mental Health" - now called the Uniform Mental Health Act. There were no provisions for jury trial in it or anything else. You would just be picked up and taken to the Alaskan-Siberian Asylum - incommunicado - and the state would also confiscate all of your personal and real propertyl And they actually tried to do it as 1954 in the case of Ford vs. Milinak, which declared the act as adopted in another state (the state of Missouri) as unconstitutional.

But the act itself still exists - and modified - but essentially in the same form, the Uniform Mental Health Act, to which approximately 6 states subscribe. And, in passing month State Constitutions - if you will check them from the period of 1935 - made a part of their constitution the practice of having a person submit to a 90-day mental examination to determine his (or her) sanity, without any provisions for a trial by jury. This was part of the national program at that time.

In this act, the governor could have anyone picked up and sent to the Mental Health Institution in Alaska or elsewhere. The results, as rumors, back in the 1950s, were that there was in fact a sinister, Frankenstein-type mental health prison in Alaska. I wrote to Alaska (the officials that is) and asked them for a description of the land of 1 million acres that they were eligible to receive, under the Alaska Mental Health Act. And I also asked them for a copy of the inventory they ran for their facilities back at that same time. Well, so far no answer. And probably I will never receive an answer without a court order.

But through the years, there was a spot in Alaska that was continually referred to: Southeast of Fairbanks; Southwest of Fairbanks; northwest of Fairbanks - somewhere near Fairbanks. Then I received information that a pilot had flown over the area once and had had his license revoked. And so, for $1.85 each, I ordered the low-level navigation maps from the federal government for Alaska and located the Alaska-Siberian Asylum for the treatment of enemies of the United States. It's right where rumor over the past 20 years had placed it: Southeast of Fairbanks. It stands out like a sore thumb! It's the only one of that geometric configuration within the state of Alaska, and you will note a black line running up through Fairbanks and down over near that area of the map. That is the railroad that the Department of Transportation would take the emergency operation of, under the Executive Order - if the Excecutive Order went into effect. And H.E.W. would be responsible for making a dermination of whether or not you were mentally disturbed because of your nationalistic tendencies, your love for the United States, or your adherence to any political or religious doctrine.

But let's look a little further into the type of program that the L.E.A.A. Is paying for through the Department of Justice, the Federal Bureau of Prisons - located in the back woods of North Carolina, near a tiny village called Butner - is constructing a mammoth 42-acre research complex for prisoners from throughout the East. Who will be sent for experiments to test new behaviorial programs and techniques? Target date for completion of the entire system is ironically 1984.

And so, they're using right now, under the L.E.A.A. program, something called anectine. Punishment for troublesome behavior within the prison Is being done by drugs and shock, likely to be the most selected examples of programs that have made use of anectine - a derivative of South American curari. Anectine was originally used as a beginning factor to electro-convulsive shock. Such shocks applied to the head are so strong they can break and graze bones under the strain of resulting muscle contractions. Since anectine paralyzed the muscles without dampening consciousness or the ability to feel pain, by first injecting the inmates with it, researchers can turn up the voltage as high as they want without cracking the inmate's skeleton when his body is thrown into convulsions by the jolt.

What the anectine does, in short, is to simulate death within 30 to 40 seconds of injection. It brings on paralysis first, with the small rapidly moving muscles in the nose, fingers and eyes, and then in the diaphram and the cardiovascular system. As a result, the patient cannot move or breath and yet remains fully conscious, as though drowning and dying. This from the 1974 publication, HUMAN BEHAVIOR.

The People vs. the Conspirators

The federal government answered my suit, in June (1976), by filing an unsworn general denial of everything that I had alleged. I spoke with the assistant U.S. Attorney in charge of the case and asked him if he had gone to the trouble to call any of the parties mentioned in the suits - since I had provided not only the addresses, but their telephone numbers to provide a faster means of investigation. He said he had not. He had not even done a minimal amount of investigation of the case, but yet he filed a denial of my allegations.

I filed a motion, in the mean time, to take the deposition of the person who writes the training programs for the concentration cam guards, Mr. Richard Burrage - the 75th Maneuver Air Command at Army Reserve Center at Houston, Texas - stating the, in light of all the recent activity of government agents, one of the agencies involved might attempt to murder this key witness, the author of the training camp program. The federal judge denied my motion, stating that I had not quoted enough cases to him justifying my request. However, he was also aware that there were no cases existing on this set of facts but, as you will see as I go along with this report, he chose to ignore it.

I then made an agreement with the assistant U.S. Attorney to take the deposition of Mr. Buirrage. After I'd made the arrangements, the U.S. Attorney refused to voluntarily go along with taking the deposition. It is very difficult to find justice in our system of courts. Law is usually practiced by the "buddy system," hence the court rules are overlooked or not followed.

On July 29, a hearing was held at the magistrate of Norman Black, U.S. District Court in Houston. The courtroom was completely filled with spectators. And although the news media had been contacted, no representatives of the press were there. There is a new media blackout on this matter here in Houston.

Brief oral arguments were presented. The U.S. Attorney explained that I was not the proper person to bring the suit because, although the free exercise of my constitutional rights was threatened by the concentration camp program, as alleged, it did not constitute my injury. The magistrate was impressed with the information I had thus far collected and stated that he would bring it to the attention of the federal judge. The U.S. Attorney tried to have my investigation of the case halted, but the magistrate would not go along that far with a pre-arranged decision.

As an additional indication of what I was up against, the original hearing was scheduled for 10:30 in the morning. However, the U.S. Attorney secretly had the time changed to 2:30 in the afternoon. The magistrate gave the U.S. Attorney permission to file for motion to dismiss because he felt that the concentration camp program - to be used for persons who exercise their freedom of speech - did not present any injury.

Now, on July 23, I had placed in the HOUSTON POST and in the HOUSTON CHRONICLE newspapers the following advertisement in the legal section: "Solicitation for witnesses in Civil Action 78-H-667, Federal District Court of Houston, People Ex Rel. William Pabst vs. Gerald Ford et al. The action titled: Complaint Against the Concentration Camp Program of the Department of Defense. Attention: If you have participated in Operation Garden Plot, Operation Cable Splicer, the 300th Military Police Prisoner of War Command, or the Army Reserve Civil Affairs group, you may be involved in a program that needs to be disclosed for this suit. To give your testimony call or write, (and here I placed my name, address and telephone number)."

As I previously mentioned, there is a news media blackout on the story here in Houston. Both newspapers refused to carry the ad. First, at the HOUSTON POST, I had to threaten them with a law suit to carry out the ad, even though I was paying for it. And then at the HOUSTON CHRONICLE, I had to meet with the president and various vice presidents because a refusal from that paper had come up from their own lawyers. Both nespapers finally carried it, but only after two days of complaining. The initial response of both papers was, "We don't carry stories like that" and "Don't you think that the people planning the concentration camps have our best interests in mind?" As you will hear for yourselves, the policies definitely do not reflect our best interests.

The next event that occurred was that the U.S. Attorney filed a "Statement ot Authority," showing the reasons that he could find why I should not be allowed to take depositions to get more information from the person who was writing the concentration camp guard training program. However, his brief was completely filled with misquotes of the law from many cases. He would mention the case and then invent whatever the case should say. In my brief to the court, at this point, I notified the judge of the violation of the law requiring honesty in such matters. But the notification was ignored by the judge, who apparently sanctioned this most dishonest of acts commonly known as "quoting out of context".

The Geneva Convention

My brief was filed in August 31, formal arguments were set. The new courtroom of the magistrate was almost filled again. However, no one from the news media showed up for this hearing either. The few who were contacted had been told not to go; they would loose their jobs.

At the hearing, I introduced evidence that heretofore had never been introduced in any court of law in the U.S. The U.S. Attorney had denied, you will remember, everything in my suit without so much as even a tiny investigation. So I introduced into evidence the following letter from the Department of the Army, Office of the Deputy Chief of Staff of Personnel, signed by one B. Sergeant, Col. G.S., Acting Director of Human Resources Development.

The letter states, "On behalf of President Ford, I am replying to your letter 27 May, 1976, regarding a new article in the DALLAS MORNING NEWS. As much as he would like to, the president cannot reply personally to every communication he receives. Therefore, he has asked the departments and agencies of the federal government in thos instances where they have special knowledge or special authority underlogued.

"For this reason your communication was forwarded to officials of the Department of Defense. Within the Department of Defense, the Army is responsible for custody and treatment of enemy prisoners of war and civilian internees as defined under terms of the Geneva Convention of 1949. Therefore, the Army is prepared to detain prisoners of war and aetainees as defined in Article IV of the 1949 Geneva Convention relative to the treatment of prisoners of war and protection of civilian persons.

"It is U.S. policy that its Armed Forces adhere to the provisions of international law to set the example for other countries of the world to follow and respecting the rights and dignity of those who become victim of international conflict. It should be noted that the Army program is designed for implementation during conditions of war between the U.S. and one or more foriegn countries. The Army had no plans nor does it maintain detention camps to imprison American citizens during domestic crises."

The problem with this letter is that it's not true, and that's why I'm going to discuss it at this point. First of all, in verifying the authenticity of the claims in the letter, l checked the Geneva text. There is no article in the Geneva Convention entitled as the letter states. There is, however, on each one of the classifications: "Protection of War Victims/Civilian Persons" and a separate article on "Prisoners of War". That was the first discrepancy.

Then I turned to Article IV of the Geneva Convention. That article did not set up any requirements or authorizations for military units of any type and does not even suggest it. Hence, the second discrepancy.

The next problem with the letter from President Ford's representative is that it states that the prisoner of war guard program is set up for the implementation for "conditions of war between the U.S. and one or more (foreign) countries." However, Article III of the Geneva Convention reads that the treaty applies to (and I am quoting) "in case of an armed conflict, not of an international character, occurring within the territory of one of the high contracting parties." Obviously an armed conflict occurring within one's own territory did not mean between one or more of the parties to the treaty, especially if only one is involvedkkkk. Now, the examples of this type of conflict are: civil war, armed insurgency and guerilla activities. In other words, they're speaking of a domestic conflict.

An even more shocking item is found in the last pages of the 1949 Geneva Convention under "Protection of War Victims/Civilian Persons". You will find the index card, the identification card, forms to be used to writing your family, and

i/

everything necessary for the administration of a concentration camp is contained in this treaty that the U.S. signed and ratified. Further, if there is a conflict in the U.S. involving only the U.S. this convention or treaty can go into operation - which includes the procedures for setting up the concentration camps.

Article LXVIII of the Convention states (and I paraphrase): If you commit an offense that is soley intended to harm the occupying power, not harming the life or limb of members of the occupying power, but merely talking against such a force - such as Martial Law situation _ you can be imprisoned provided that the duration of such imprisonment is proportionate to the offense committed. Well, President Dwight Eisenhower didn't feel that provision was strong enough. So he had the following additions placed in the treaty which states: "The U.S. reserves the right to impose the death penalty in accordance with the provisions of Article LXVIII without regard to whether the offenses referred to therein are punishable by death under the law of the occupied territory at the time the occupation begins.."

So not only can you be imprisoned for having exercised freedom of speech; you can be put to death under the provisions of the Geneva Convention in 1949 for having exercised, or attempting to exercise freedom of speech.

The next item that I introduced into evidence was a field manual: FM 41-10, CIVIL AFFAIRS OPERATION. You will remember at the outset that I mentioned Civil Affairs groups. Let me quote to you from that manual what one of the functions of the Civil Affairs activities includes: "Item 4. Assumption of full or partial executive, legislative and judicial authority over a country or area". So let's see what a "country or area" is defined as in the same manual. It includes: "small towns in rural areas, municipalities of various population sizes, districts, counties, provinces or states, regions of national government".

Nowhere in the manual does it exclude this program from being put into effect right here in the United States. As a matter of fact, in Kearny, New Jersey, the Civil Affairs group went into that area and practiced taking over that government unit. And yet the Army - in its letter of June 16 - states that these programs are not for us. Yet they are practiced here in the United States under conditions that can only occur here at home.

The study outline of field manual, FM 41-10, on page j-24, under "Penal Institutions 1-B," you see there is a program on concentration camps and labor camps - number, location and capacity. It is important to note that a concentration camp and labor camp are always located near eather other for obvious reasons.

Again on page d-4 of the same manual, you'll find a sample receipt for seized property; a sample receipt written English and containing terminology applicable to only U.S. territory.

On page 8-2 of the same manual, under the heading "Tables of Organization and Equipment," we find that there are 3 other organizations that would be working along with the Civil Affairs operation: the Chemical Service Organization, the Composite Service Organization, and the Psychological Operations Organization, along with lh» various Civil Affairs organizations.

In July of that year (1976), the following Civil Affairs groups met with the following airborne groups at a staging area in Fort Chaffee, Arkansas. A staging area is where military units meet before they go into action. They met with the 32nd Airborne and part of the 101st Airborne; the 321st Civil Affairs group of San Antonio, Texas headquarters; the 362nd Civil Affairs brigade from Dallas, Texas; the 431st Civil Affairs company from Little Rock, Arkansas headquarters; the 306th Civil Affairs group, and William Highlin. The 486th Civil Affairs company from Tilsa, Oklahoma; the 418th Civil Affairs company from Kansas City, Missouri; the 307th Civil Affairs group from St. Louis, Missouri; the 490th Civil Affairs group from Abilene, Texas; the 413th company from Hammon, Louisiana; the 12th S.S. group, 2nd Battalion (headquarters unknown).

They're ready to go into action. The problem is, as it appears, they were ready to lake over the entire government of the United States as their mission set out. One man who attended this staging area talked to a Civil Affairs Sgt. and asked him what his job was. The Sgt. explained that the civilians of this country will reaiiy be surprised some day when the Civil Affairs groups begin to operate the government.

Now, the Department of the Army still maintains that all this is not for the United States - yet this training continues here for us. The evidence is overwhelming; the plan exists for the imprisonment of millions of U.S. citizens. And even though all this information was presented to the federal magistrate, he still felt that no one was injured by such a plot.

On the 2nd day of September, 1976, the magistrate recommended to the federal judge that the case be dismissed. And the sole basis for his reasoning to dismiss was that we have to be actually physically injured before we can maintain a law suit of this type. He did not feel that, although all this active planning, preparation and training was going on, that any U.S. citizen had been injured - even though the citizen may fear exercising his (or her) freedom for fear of being detained and imprisoned in a concentration camp at a later date.

Ignoring the Constitution

The case of Tatum vs. Laird, heard before the Supreme Court in 1974, is a case in point. It involved the Army intelligence collecting aparatus, which was developing a list of names of persons whom the Army felt were troublesome. The Supreme Court held that the making of lists of this type did not, of and by itself, present any injuries. The minority opinion in that case was that the injury, in the case with aprogram such as this made people afraid to use their freedom of speech for fear of being sent to jail for it. But majority did not buy that argument.

The difference between that case and this case - although we also have the computer program - is that we have something much further past that point; the concentration camp guard program and the Civil Affairs program for the taking over of all functions of our government. In light of that, the federal judge said that this is not an injury. As a matter of fact, the U.S. Attorney alleged that even if people were placed in concentration camps, if they were all treated the same thay would still not have the right to go to federal court.

On the 20th day of September, I filed a memorandum to notify the magistrate and the federal judge that I had discovered that the federal government had a program for number of years to suspend our constitutional right of the writ of habeas corpus. This information substantiated the complaint. Habeas corpus is the name of that legal instrument utilized to bring someone before a judge when that person is being illegally imprisoned or detained so that he (or she) may obtain his (or her) freedom. The Constitution slates that the writ of habeas corpus shall never be suspended.

I found the disturbing information in a report: 94-755, 94th Congress, 2nd Session Senate, April 26, 1976, entitled "Intelligence Activities and the Rights of Americans Book II." On page 17-d, entitled "First Amendment Rights," the report states that more importantly "the government surveillance activities in the aggregate, whether expressly intended to do so, to deter the exercise of First Amendment rights by American citizens who become aware of the government's domestic intelligence program."

Beginning on page 54, it is stated that, beginning in 1946 - 4 years before the Emergency Detention Act of 1950 was passed - the FBI advised the Attorney General that it had secretly compiled a secret index of potentially dangerous persons. The Justice Department then made tentative plans for emergency detention based on suspension of the privilege of the writ of habeas corpus. Department officials deliberately avoided going to Congress. When the Emergency Detention Act of 1950 was passed, it did not authorize the suspension of the writ of habeas corpus. But shortly after passage of that act, according to a bureau document, Attorney General J.H. McGraf told the FBI to disregard it and to proceed with the program as previously outlined.

A few sentences later, on page 55, it states, "With the security index, use broader standards to determine potential dangerousness than those described in the statute." And, unlike the act, Department plans provided for issuing a master search warrant and a master arrest warrant. This is the center importance; it is the same thing that I am alleging in federal court. And yet the magistrate chose to ignore these facts also.

We have government officials not only ignoring the will of Congress, but going the opposite of what the Constitution provides by planning illegally for the suspension of the writ of habeas corpus. In addition, as mentioned before, the master search warrant and the master arrest warrant are forms fed into the computer, which print the names and addressses on them from the tapes previously prepared bv the intelligence-gathering program.

As you are arrested, your home will be searched and anything found there may be confiscated. This program has existed since 1946, up to and including 1973, and without proper access to judicial discovery techniques, it can't be determined dwhether the same plan now exists under the same name or under another name right now.

This memorandum was filed on September 28 to make the court aware of the danger that our rights of freedom of speech and lawful assembly are in. But the cour, on September 30 - after this notification was received - dismissed the case. However, in keeping with the practice of federal courts in Houston of actively participating in the obstruction of justice, I was not notified of the dismissal until the 6th of October - which gave me just 2 working days to submit any further motion in a 10-day period before time starts running for the appeal.

What I have just said regarding the federal courts in Houston is not only my opinion; the HOUSTON CHRONICAL, surprisingly, published an extensive document severely criticizing the federal courts in Houston for making up their own rules as they go along with the proceedings, as well as commenting on the communist-like Supreme Court attitude of the judges and the court personnel. My experience here has been that the court has returned to me almost every document that I have filed. Then after a gib argument, they reaccept the document, stating that they just made a mistake. In reality, the power structure doesn't want these types of cases in any federal court.

Summary of Evidence

On the 8th of October, I had submitted a request for finding the facts in the filling which had been established by the evidence presented:

1. The 300th Military Police POW Command is located at Livonia, Michigan.

2. The Department of the Army has stated that said Command exists per se the Geneva Convention of 1949, a treaty of the U.S., Article IV thereof under the title relative to the treatment of prisoners of war and protection of civilian persons.

3. However, no such title exists in the Geneva Convention per se.

4. Nevertheless, there are separate titles, one of which is: (a) Multilateral Protection of War Victims/Prisoners of War; (b) Multilateral Protection of War Victims/Civilian Persons.

5. Nevertheless, Article IV of both titles does not provide for the creation of any military programs for concentration camps.

6. Whether Mr. Fennerin, of the 300th Military Police POW Command, has stated that the purpose of the Command is for the detention of foreign prisoners of war and enemies the United States.

7. Further, Article III, concerning civilian persons, makes the treaty applicable to conflicts occurring soley within the territory of the United States that are not of an international character, which is capable of including any type of conflict in its description whether it be civil war or guerilla activity or anything else. The text

states: "In case of armed conflict not of an international character occurring in the territory of one of the high contracting parties, each party to a conflict shall be bound to apply to the minimum of the following provisions."

8. Department of the Army Field Manual FM 41-10, Civil Affairs Operations of Civil Affairs Organization lists, as one of its functions, the assumption of full or partial executive, legislative and judicial authority over a country or an area and there is no specific exclusion of the United States as such a country or area.

9. Said manual defines country along certain geographical population basis, county, state regions and national government.

10. Said organization has, in fact, conducted practed takeovers of local and state governments in the continental United States, including, but not limited to the state of New Jersey.

11. Said organization includes in its study outline, on page j-24, a section on concentration camps and labor camps.

12. Said organization includes in its operations composite service operations and psychological operations organizations.

13. Said psychological operation, working with the U.S. Public Health Service, is prepared to operate any and/or all mental health facilities in the Unites States as tools of repression against outspoken but nonviolent political conduct of the United States citizens in conjunction with all the above, which is to be used for the same purpose.

14. Further, the Department of Justice, in conjunction with this program, has had plans for the suspension of writ of habeas corpus since the year of 1946; said plan depriving persons being detained under this total program any means for protection against tyrannical political repression.

The plaintiff requested that the court make findings of fact and draw conclusions of law, consistent therewith, as shown by the evidence on record before the court. The effect of this request is that the case must go back to the district judge for further consideration. I mentioned that is appeared that all this planning for concentration camps was to be directed against anyone, regardless of his polictical persuasion of ideology, who exercised freedom of speech against the established power structure of international bankers and multinational corporations. But, with Proposition 13-type movements threatening to reduce taxes throughout our nation. I foresee an activation of emergency programs so that the parasites on the federal take will continue to receive their checks.

Price of Patriotism

In the same Senate document, on intelligence activities on the rights of Americans referred to on pages 166 and 167, you will find that the federal government has targeted its intelligence activities against one group of Americans. On page 166, the first classification listed is rightists and anti-communist groups. And the first group on page 167 on Army surveillance lists the John Birch Society as a number 1 and the Young Americans for Freedom as the number 2 target. Therefore, the groups of U.S. American citizens considered to be the biggest enemy of the United States, by the federal government, at this time, is the conservative patriot, and those who assert the Constitution and individual rights.

Although this information has been available since April of this year (1979), no one has mentioned this incredible discovery that the federal government considers the patriotic conservative as its greatest enemy. I have received all kinds of information regarding this case from all across the United States.

Price of Apathy

I obtained the 1945 report of the O.S.S. (Office of Strategic Service) - the precursor of the C.I.A. - 7th Army, William W. Quin, Col. G.F.C.A.C. of the G2, on the liberation of Dachau, a concentration camp during the liberation in Germany. It contains much groups of information, but the relevant portion of the report concerns itself with the section on the townspeople. Quoting from this report, on why the people of this little town didn't complain or didn't overthrow oppressors but just continued to go along and get along even though they lost their freedom in the process, it states:

> These words crop up and up again. They are the rationalization of a man who admits that he was a member of the Nazi party. 'I was forced to do so by business reasons,' they state. We were lied to in every respect but they admit they knew the camp existed. But they saw the work detail to the inmates passing through the streets under guard and, in some instances, the S.S. behaved brutally even towards the townspeople.
>
> When asked if they realized that within the last 3 months before the liberation 13,000 men lost their lives within stone's throw of where the people lived, they claimed they were shocked and surprised.
>
> When asked if they never saw transports of dead and dying pass through the streets along the railway, they referred only to the last one. They Insist that most of the trains came in at night and that they were sealed cars.
>
> Did they never ask what was in the endless procession of cars that came in full and always went out empty? A typical reply was, 'We were told it was all army material and booty from France.'
>
> It is established that anyone who stated that he saw only one train come In in the daytime was telling a flat lie. There are quite a few such people In Dachau.

The analysis of the anti-Nazi element of the town: (1) The people knew what was going on in the camp, even ten years prior to liberation; (2) The town did a thriving business from the concentration camp guard; (3) Ninety percent are guilty and have dabbed themselves with the blood of innocent human beings; (4) The people are to blame for their cowardice - they were all too cowardly. They didn't want to risk anything. And that was the way it was in all of Germany.

So you can see how the whole program is related here. My lawsuit was against one single aspect of the total program: The enforcement arm of the conspiracy - the people who make up the cadre that is going to occupy the concentration camps where enemies of the United States will be placed. Remember Solzhenitsyn's words in the GULAG ARCHIPELAGO: "Resistance should have began right there but it did not begin. You aren't gagged, you really can and you really ought to cry out that arrests are being made on the strength of false accusations. If many such outcries had been heard all over the city would arrests have no longer have been so easy."

They, the tyrants, can't work in the public eye. Those people who were so apathetic, hoping that nothing was really wrong, that nothing would happen to their persons and property, sat back and watched. The anarchists, financed by multinational interests, looted and pillaged their country.

If you think that all (that) is necessary is to pay your house notes, to pay your TV notes, to go vote when there is an election, and to stand back during the rest of tht year and watch as your country and way of life are replaced by a system in which you will be a slave in a concentration camp, you - not the conspirators - are guilty because you, by silent acquiescence, invite tyranny and oppression.

And, when you have to steal food to eat because our production is for foreign use because the Department of Commerce - through Executive Order 11490 and its predecessors - is responsible for international distribution of our commodities, don't sit in a culvert hiding and eating and sondering what happened because you made it all possible.

When your family is split up and spread across the United States to do slave labor and you never see yourloved ones again, it will be your fault because you did nothing to prevent it. And, once we loose our freedom, we are never going to regain it. That is why we must stand together to prevent the loss of our freedom as citizens of the United States.

Thank you very much.

(Conclusion of taped report.)

CHAPTER 7

ANTI-DRUG ABUSE
ACT of 1988

H.R. 5210
P.L. 100-690

PREPARATION FOR THE POLICE STATE

AN

ANALYSIS

H.R. 5210 / P.L. 100-690

Public Law 100-690, which was introduced to the 100th Congress as H.R. 5210, passed by Congress in September 1988 and signed by the President on November 18,1988, is the most serious attack upon the freedoms guaranteed the citizens of the Republic of the United States of America in our Constitution since the formation of the Federal Reserve and the IRS.

The act may be cited as the Anti-Drug Abuse Act of 1988. The following titles are contained within the act.

Title I	Coordination of National Drug Policy
Title II	Treatment and Prevention Programs
Title III	Drug Education Programs
Title IV	International Narcotics Control
Title V	User Accountability
Title VI	Anti-Drug Abuse Amendments Act of 1988
Title VII	Death Penalty and Other Criminal and Law Enforcement Matters
Title VIII	Federal Alcohol Administration
Title IX	Miscellaneous
Title X	Supplemental Appropriations

The Anti-Drug Abuse Act of 1988 can be found in most college or city libraries contained in the U.S. Code Congressional and Administrative News, Vol. 3,1988, with amendment and voting information in the Congressional Quarterly Almanac, Vol. XLIV, 1988.

The law looks innocent enough upon first glance, containing new drug-awareness and treatment programs, more law enforcement and much stricter penalties — and all to be financed with a 2.1-BILLION-dollar budget. Upon close examination, however, I discovered some really scary stuff tucked in where most citizens would never look.

The act is some 366 pages of fine (very fine) print on very small pages. It is tedious reading, as is all legislation. In fact, it was impossible to read until Nancy Batchelder, a volunteer on my research staff, enlarged each page on a copy machine. Could it be that the Congress does not want the citizens to read the contents of their legislation? I believe that is exactly the case.

One of the most frightening aspects of this legislation was the proposal to allow evidence found in a warrantless search. Congress said "illegally obtained evidence is legal to use in drug cases." Months later the Senate said no and that portion of the legislation was removed — or at least that is what we were meant to think.

The act leaves a loophole for court decisions on some mass searches/ drug tests, such as school lockers, requirement for certain jobs, and an experimental program for those getting their first driver's license. (Sec. 9005) Key words here are "mass searches/drug tests," "jobs," and "drivers license." The courts have held that if the citizens give up any right by giving what is called implied consent, then they no longer have claim to that right. The dangerous implication here is that "mass search" could mean the search of every person in, say, Chicago, Los Angeles, or New York City. Get the picture?

The proposed legislation contained a section that if passed would have taken away our right to trial by jury, and specifically stated that you could be held guilty without trial. How could any citizen or Representative or Senator even have had the guts to propose such a thing for passage into law in this country? Fortunately, it was removed by amendment, HOWEVER IN SOME CASES A TRIAL ISN'T AUTOMATIC; YOU MUST REQUEST A HEARING. (Sec. 6480) Do I have your attention yet?

$10,000 is the maximum fine for knowingly possessing any amount of a drug of any kind (even the kind that an enemy might plant in your car or home) (Sec. 6480).

Congress has asked for a study on the relationship between mental illness and substance abuse (Sec. 2071).

Congress has recommended changes for involuntary commitment for mental illness which echoes the Russian NKGB model (Sec. 2072a). The secret power structure considers PATRIOTISM and NATIONALISM to be mental illness.

Congress has asked for an evaluation of the appropriateness of administering health-service programs in conjunction with biomedical and behavioral research. IN OTHER WORDS, MIND CONTROL ON A GRAND SCALE (Sec. 2073a).

The Congress ordered in this act that "the Attorney General shall study the feasibility of prosecuting Federal drug-related offenses in a matter alernative or supplemental to the current criminal justice system." THIS IS THE BEGINNING OF A POLICE STATE (Sec. 6293).

The act states that anyone with intent to obstruct or harass the harvesting of timber on public lands can get 1 year in jail or up to 10 years if the resultant damage exceeds $10,000. Tree spiking is specifically named. WHAT IS DOING IN A DRUG LAW? It's in there because Congress wanted to make an end run around environmental groups and give the timber away (Sec. 6254/1864).

Herbicides are to be used for aerial coca eradication with no consideration of what it might do to the humans or animals being sprayed. After a year of spraying the President shall determine if such use is harmful to environment or health and shall file a report (Sec. 4202).

The act mandates the establishment of a "World Currency Control" system. This would be an international data base to analyze currency transactions filed by member countries in order to monitor large ($10,000 or more) dollar transfers. To encourage "teamwork": Prohibit noncooperative foreign countries from participating in any U.S. dollar clearing or wire-transfer system, or from maintaining any financial accounts in the U.S. (Sec. 4701).

The act gives the Secretary of the Treasury power to require ANY transaction records from ANY domestic financial institution (even those not part of the bank/savings & loan system), as well as information on ALL of the persons involved. MAKE SURE YOU UNDERSTAND WHAT THIS MEANS TO YOU PERSONALLY. This IS a police state (Sec. 6184/5326).

ALERT...ALERT

The Constitution of the United States, Article I, Section 9, paragraph 2, states:

"The Privilege of the Writ of Habeas Corpus shall not be suspended, unless when in Cases of rebellion or invasion, the Public Safety may require it."

Public Law 100-690, Sec. 7323, provides for a Special Committee on Habeas Corpus Review of Capital Sentences, appointed by the Chief justice of the United States. The purpose of the Special Committee is to recommend to the Chief Justice of the United States, who will forward the recommendation to the chairman of the Committee on the Judiciary of the Senate, a proposal of a bill to modify Federal habeas corpus procedure.

Quotes from P.L. 100-690:

"This bill to modify habeas corpus procedure must be reported with or without recommendation by the Committee on the Judiciary of the Senate by the end of the 60th day of session after the submission of the report or the bill must be automatically placed on the appropriate calendar of the Senate.

"Once the habeas corpus bill is on the calendar, it is not debatable; it is not subject to a motion to postpone; reconsideration of the vote by which the motion is agreed to or disagreed to shall not be in order under this act. Only one motion in the Senate shall be in order pursuant to this paragraph and such motion shall be decided by a roll call vote."

SIT UP AND TAKE NOTICE! Section 7323 states that this habeas corpus legislation is enacted by Congress "as an exercise of the rulemaking power of the Senate and as such it is deemed a part of the rules of the Senate..." CAN YOU BELIEVE THIS TREASON? Chapter 33 of Title 28, United States Code, is amended by adding at the end thereof Sec. 540, which states that the Attorney General and the Federal Bureau of Investigation may investigate felonious killings of officials and employees of a State or political subdivision when such investigation is requested by the head of the agency employing the official or employee killed, and under such guidelines as the Attorney General or his designee may establish.

Notice that the above paragraph does not say by invitation of the State, but says by the employing agency. Once the Feds are involved they always hold jurisdiction. THIS IS SERIOUS! It could establish the legal precedence for justification of a police state once the courts rule that the States have given up their right to jurisdiction under this act. Notice that it only involves crimes of a POLITICAL nature.

Businesses are required to report all cash transactions of $10,000 or more (Sec. 7601 /60501-IRS). (It has been reported to me but not verified by me that this requirement has been lowered to $3000.) THIS HAS NOTHING TO DO WITH DRUGS BUT HAS EVERYTHING TO DO WITH THE IRS.

The act establishes a requirement to record and verify the I.D. of a purchaser of a money order or other financial instrument of $3000 or more (Sec. 6184/5325). WHY?

This is a big one. The act orders a study to be made on whether to withdraw $100 bills and $50 bills from circulation (Sec. 6187). THIS WOULD VIRTUALLY PROPEL US INTO A CASHLESS SOCIETY.

$23 MILLION DOLLARS HAS BEEN ALLOCATED FOR A MACHINE-READABLE IDENTITY DOCUMENT PROGRAM. The excuse used is to be able to identify known criminals who attempt to cross borders. The type of border is not named (required in legislation) and could be the border of your city, county or state. It also raises the question of how they are going to get the criminals to accept the identity document program without REQUIRING ALL CITIZENS TO PARTICIPATE (Sec. 6604.)

This data pool will be shared by:

Drug Enforcement Administration

Bureau of Alcohol, Tobacco, & Firearms

Federal Aviation Commission
U.S. Marshals Service
U.S. Coast Guard

The act requires a study of the feasibility of requiring aircraft to carry operating transponders so that they can be tracked (Sec. 7212) including the "INTERCEPT" (the use of military aircraft is assumed due to the fact that the military is the only agency which has such a capability) of any aircraft not in a proper flight corridor (Sec. 7213). The act requires a study to be made on requiring onboard monitoring devices on commercial motor vehicles to record speed, driving time and other information (Sec. 9101). It further requires the utilization of existing government laboratory facilities (Departments of Defense, Justice, Energy, National Security Agency, CIA, FBI) to develop technologies for Federal law enforcement (not limited to) drug enforcement) (Sections 6163 and 7605).

This would include:
Night Vision (Ft. Belvoir, Virginia);
Ground Sensor & Communications Electronics (Ft. Mom
Jersey);
Physical Electronic Security (Hanscom Field, Massachusetts);
Imaging Electronic Surveillance (CIA & NSA, Washington, D.C.);
Chemical/Biosensor Research & Development (Aberdeen, Maryland);
Chemical /Molecular Research (Albuquerque, New Mexico);
Physical/Electronic Surveillance & Tracking (FBI, Washington, D.C.)
Explosives Ordnance Detection (Indian Head, Maryland).

The act calls for the expenditure of $120 million for the Bureau of Justice Statistics, a national clearinghouse of data from federal, state, and local criminal justice agencies (Sec. 6092).

Grant money will be made available for state and local agencies to hook into the data system (Sec. 6101 /1301). Gun sellers will have to check for a buyer's police record (Sec 6213).

The act includes a special note from the Attorney General to INCLUDE DOMESTIC VIOLENCE information in the system (Sec. 7609).

My sources have informed me that the New World Order plans to execute any person who has exhibited any degree of violence during their life. A fist fight while in the service would qualify you. They believe that violence is hereditary and this could mean execution of family members as well.

This act calls for a study of the feasibility of establishing an INTERNATIONAL CRIMINAL COURT (World Court) (Sec. 4108).

An international criminal court would have no jurisdiction or authority over any citizen of the United States of America unless we surrender our sovereignty to the New World Order.

No weapons are to be allowed in Federal buildings: up to 1 year imprisonment for carrying a weapon into any FEDERAL FACILITY. The only exception is a pocket knife, but only if the blade is LESS than 2-1/2 inches long (Sec. 6215).

The act has authorized postal authorities to serve warrants, subpoenas, make arrests, carry firearms, and make seizures in matters involving use of mails (Sec. 6251).

The Post Office Department is a private corporation and is not a part of the Federal government. How can they be allowed to function as Federal police if they are not federalized? Are post office employees destined to become a part of the national police force?

It is now illegal to mail or send locksmithing equipment to anyone but a locksmith (Sec. 3002). MANY COMMON TOOLS CAN BE CLASSIFIED AS LOCKSMITHING EQUIPMENT.

The act legalizes the arming of aircraft in other countries for defensive purposes, in drug control (Sec. 4202).

SAY AGAIN? If this had been in existence a few years ago, the IRAN-CONTRA AFFAIR WOULD HAVE BEEN LEGAL with only a statement that the arms were for defensive purposes in drug control.

The act mandates that military installations are to be used as MENTAL TREATMENT CENTERS, OR PRISON CAMPS WITH WORK PROGRAMS (Sections 7302 and 2081/561). Does this SOUND LIKE RUSSIA?

In addition, $200 million dollars will go for new prisons (Sec. 6157).

Plus, proceeds from seized and forfeited property are to be used for construction of prisons, rewards for information or help, or for OTHER THINGS THE ATTORNEY GENERAL NEED NOT REPORT (Sec. 6072/924 Title 20-CIA,H).

The act states that prison industries may BORROW AND INVEST FUNDS (Sec. 7093). Prison industries may DIVERSIFY THEIR PRODUCTS and PRODUCE PRODUCTS ON AN ECONOMIC BASIS (Sec. 1096b provide a labor pool SOVIET UNION STYLE it authorizes a study of the feasibility of REQUIRING PRISONERS TO PAY THEIR COSTS FOR FOOD, HOUSING AND SHELTER AT PAID EMPLOYMENT BEFORE, DURING OR AFTER IMPRISONMENT (Sec. 7301).

In other words, it means imprisonment Soviet style presented in what sounds like a nice idea. A LABOR CAMP WHERE MEN AND WOMEN ARE WORKED TO DEATH IS ONLY THAT AND NOTHING MORE OR LESS, NO MATTER WHAT THEY CALL IT OR HOW ATTRACTIVE THEY MAKE IT SOUND.

Prisons going into business to produce products on an economic basis can only serve to DESTROY THE LAST REMNANTS OF SMALL BUSINESS.

This law is 366 pages of very small print I am sure that as carefully as I read it, I still must have missed many other terrible clauses. Congressmen have been known to deny knowledge of this law and some have stated that it does not exist because they are terrified of the public finding out what they have done. When I first warned the nation about this legislation on talk radio across the country, the Government pulled all copies not already in public hands. The Government states that there are no copies available and there will not be any copies available. THIS ACT IS TOO LARGE TO INCLUDE IN THIS BOOK. You will find it in your library, though, exactly as I have stated at the beginning of this chapter. Please look it up yourself to verify that it it indeed real.

SOURCES

Public Law 100-690.

U.S. Code Congressional and Administrative News, Vol. 3,1988, with amendment and voting information in the Congressional Quarterly Almanac Vol. XLIV, 1988.

CHAPTER 8

ARE THE SHEEP READY TO SHEAR?

OKLAHOMA
H.B. 1750

TEST CASE
FOR THE POLICE STATE

OKLAHOMA
H.B. 1750
The Police State's Test Case

Gary North recently wrote about one of the scariest pieces of socialistic police-state legislation to arrive on the scene to date.

"On January 1, 1991, a new, 96-page state law goes into effect: H.B. 1750, passed last year [1989]." It requires all Oklahoma residents to declare everything they own to the tax collector, everything: guns, coins, art collections, furniture, business equipment, bank accounts, household furniture, etc. Forms will be distributed through banks. Any taxpayer who refuses to fill out the form and submit it to the tax assessor by March 15 — the ides of March — will be visited by an assessor. He will ask permission to enter the home or place of business. If this request is denied, he will be issued a search warrant. Any property not previously listed, or undervalued, will be assessed a penalty of up to 20% of its market value. This will make renters into property taxpayers and make life easy for the gun grabbers.

What are the investment implications of this? Invest in a good gun and be standing on your porch with gun in hand when they pay you a visit.

It is clear where the tax collectors are headed next. Oklahoma will be a test case. If they can pull this one off, the other states will follow. Big Brother wants to know all and to tax all. Eventually the New World Order will eliminate all private property, "redistribute the wealth," and this inventory will tell them how much exists and exactly where it is stored. Of course, the Oklahoma tax assessor will share its information with other federal and state agencies.

Will they get away with this blatant disregard for civil and constitutional rights? That is exactly the reason for the law, to find out if it will meet with strong or violent opposition. If the citizens of Oklahoma lie down and allow this to happen, then you can bet everyone else in the nation is going to be subjected to the same or a similar law.

It is time to stand up with a weapon and scream, "ENOUGH!" It is time to draw the line. It is time to make decisions and carry them out. It is time to resist at any and all cost. The penalty for failing to do so is slavery.

IT IS NOT TIME FOR REBELLION. IT IS TIME FOR RESTORATION.

THE CONSTITUTION MUST BE AGAIN, AS IT ONCE WAS, THE SUPREME LAW OF THE LAND. FEDERALISM IS TREASON. STAND UP AND FIGHT.

SOURCES

H.B 1750, legislation of the Oklahoma State House of Representatives, Oklahoma City, Oklahoma, 1989.

North, Gary, "Big Brother Wants to See It All in Oklahoma," The McAlvany Intelligence Advisor, July 1990.

CHAPTER 9

ANATOMY OF AN ALLIANCE

The Logic for the New World Order

The Glue That Binds the Alliance of Power
and
the Consequences

> All that is necessary for evil to triumph
> is for good men to do nothing.
> Edmund Burke, 1729-1797

THE REASONS FOR COOPERATION BETWEEN OPPOSING FORCES

I give lectures all over the United States. At some point before, during, or after every lecture, some well-meaning but misguided soul, tells me that I have it all wrong and that it's the Jews, the Catholics, the communists, or the bankers that are the cause of all our ills. The target group is blamed for everything that has ever gone wrong. Power over everyone and everything is always attributed to this group — whichever group it happens to be at that moment to that person. These poor people are on the right track, in that there has been and certainly is a conspiracy to bring about a totalitarian world order. They are completely off track to think that any one ethnic, religious, or financial group alone could ever muster enough power to bring its plan to fruition. One group, you see, would always be opposed by all of the other special-interest groups that exist and have always existed throughout history. That is, unless they were all really the same group (the Illuminati) or for some reason they became unified (the Bilderberg Group).

The one-group scenario, except for the Illuminati, has been used effectively to divert your attention away from the truth. It has caused you to fight each other in a manipulation that always leads the REAL conspiracy closer to its ultimate goal, a New World Order. Those of you who believe that Hitler was financed by Jews so that he could murder Jews have a serious logic deficit. The fanatical leftists who tout that it's Nazis behind the conspiracy have ignored the fact that very wealthy Jews are certainly involved, along with many Catholics, Protestants, communists, atheists, capitalists, Freemasons, etc., all of whom are diametrically opposed to each other, at least on the surface.

Those on the right who believe that it is communist forget that U.S. bankers financed the creation of the Soviet Union. Financial assistance from MANY different countries, institutions, and peoples of opposing religious and political beliefs has been the only thing that has kept the unworkable communist economy afloat for all of these years. The Rockefeller family has a bank branch in the Kremlin. Those on the right must also ask why, whenever we have set out to stop communism, the United States has only strengthened communism. No modern war, no matter what it was called, has ever resulted in territorial gain for the winner. It is not because our leaders are communist, as claimed by the right. Communism was a creation meant to function as the antithesis to the United States. Many of our leaders, however, are Illuminati.

The answer lies with the many faces of the Illuminati and the fact that several unifying reasons for bringing about the New World Order surfaced immediately following World War II. It is possible, however, that one or two or more of these reasons are not real, and thus manipulations. The evidence indicates that they are real and dangerous, each in its own way, and must be dealt with quickly and thoroughly.

If it were secretly discovered that extraterrestrial beings were visiting the earth it certainly would make sense to unite humanity against the possible threat that this would present. If extraterrestrials are not visiting earth, then it would make sense to invent them in order to convince opposing forces to unite against the threat. This has been done whether or not the alien beings in question exist; however, there are more believable and more immediate dangers that may be the reason for an alliance of so many traditionally opposing groups. Aliens will be discussed at length in a later chapter.

The reason could be the threatened extinction of the human race by no other enemy than the human race itself. This threat may not be a manipulation; it may be real, and unless drastic measures are taken, may materialize within the next one hundred years.

Following World War II something happened that was to have tremendous significance for the future of all mankind. The intellectuals took note of this happening and brought it to the attention of the world power elite The elite were severely shaken by the predicted repercussions of this event. They were told that by or shortly after the year 2000 the total collapse of civilization as we know it and the possible extinction of the human race could occur. It could occur, that is, if we did not destroy the earth with nuclear weapons before then. They were told that the only things that could stop these predicted events would be severe cutbacks of the human population, the cessation or retardation of technological and economic growth, the elimination of meat in the human diet, strict control of future human reproduction, a total commitment to preserving the environment, colonization of space, and a paradigm shift in the evolutionary consciousness of man.

Those in power immediately formed an alliance and set about bringing the recommended changes to fruition through propaganda, mind control and other manipulations of the masses. The Illuminati's prayers had been answered.

What was this event that caused so much consternation and changed forever the future of the world? Millions of soldiers returned from war. The soldiers found lonely, eager women waiting for them. The greatest coupling in the history of the human race occurred. The result was everyone born between 1941 and 1955 and the children that they would eventually produce. It was me and you and everyone who lives today. It was the great worldwide BABY BOOM. It was the culmination of all man's efforts to survive through history. It was modern medicine, better diets, heat in winter, pure running water, and proper disposal of sewage. It was the point in history when the birth rate so exceeded the death rate that the world's population doubled between 1957 and 1990. It was the most wonderful time in the history of the world, but it was also the worst. It signaled the end of man's most precious achievement. An alliance of all of the powers on earth, open and hidden, decided that individual freedoms could no longer be tolerated in the interest of the preservation of the human race. They believed the common man could not be trusted.

What had been the unfulfilled dream of many individual groups became reality by the concentration of power in the alliance known as the Bilderberg Group. What had been impossible before was now promised The New World Order that so many had envisioned was now a certainty.

The first study was made during World War II to determine the impact of the returning soldiers upon the economy. The results mobilized the ruling elite. A second secret study was conducted in 1957 by scientists meeting in Huntsville, Alabama. It confirmed the results of the first. The conclusion was that civilization as we know it would collapse shortly after the year 2000 unless the population was seriously curtailed. The study expressed a concern that since atomic weapons existed they would ultimately be used. Total worldwide disarmament was urged. Congress adopted the disarmament plan and created the U.S. Disarmament Agency, President Dwight David Eisenhower had this to say in 1957: "As a result of lowered infant mortality, longer lives, and the accelerating conquest of famine there is under way a population explosion so incredibly great that in little more than another generation the population of the world is expected to double."

A third study was made by the Club of Rome ending in 1968 to determine the limits to growth. The result was the same. The Club of Rome was commissioned to develop a computer model of the world so as to predict the outcome of corrections made to social and economic structures by the elect. The Club of Rome was also asked to develop a computer model of a New World Order. Both tasks were accomplished.

Studies were done to determine a method to arrest the population explosion before the point of no return would be reached. It was determined that an immediate attack on the problem would involve two points of intervention. The first was to lower the birth rate and the second was to increase the death rate.

To lower the birth rate several programs were put into motion. The first was the development of positive birth-control methods using mechanical (diaphragm and condom), chemical (foam and birth-control pills), and medical (sterilization, abortion, and hysterectomy) procedures. These were developed and implemented. The Women's Liberation movement was started with the demand for free abortions, using "pro choice" as its rallying cry. Homosexuality was encouraged and Gay Liberation was born. Homosexuals do not have children. Zero population growth became a hot subject at cocktail parties. Individual freedom, "the heat of the moment," religion, and the old blue laws sabotaged these efforts, and while zero population growth became a reality in some areas, population increased rapidly in others.

The only alternative left to the world's ruling elite was to increase the death rate. This was a difficult thing to do, as no one wanted to pick people out of a crowd and line them up for execution. Neither did they relish the possible consequences of an enraged public upon discovering that they were being systematically murdered. Of course, a very short but very deadly global war using nuclear weapons upon select population concentrations was contemplated and, to tell you the truth, was not ruled out. The fact that such a population control was even contemplated confirmed the worst fears of those who had participated in the 1957 study. War was put on the back burner to simmer, but may become a reality. In the meantime something else had to be done that would absolve the decision makers of guilt and place the blame on those who did not lead clean lives.

Something that could be blamed upon Mother Nature. What was needed was the bubonic plague or some other horrible but natural disease. The answer came from Rome.

Several Top Secret recommendations were made by Dr. Aurelio Peccei of the Club of Rome. He advocated that a plague be introduced that would havhe same effect as the famous Black Death of history. The chief recommendation was to develop a microbe which would attack the autoimmune system and thus render the development of a vaccine impossible. The orders were given to develop the microbe and to develop a prophylactic and a cure. The microbe would be used against the general population and would be introduced by vaccine. The prophylactic was to be used by the rulling elite. The cure will be administered to the survivors when it is decided that enough people have died. The cure will be announced as newly developed when in fact it has existed from the beginning. This plan is a part of Global 2000. The prophylactic and the cure are suppressed.

"Man has skyrocketed from a defensive position, largely subordinated to Nature's alternatives, to a new and dominant one. From it he not only can and does influence everything in the world but, voluntarily or unwittingly, can and indeed does determine the alternatives of his own future —

and ultimately must choose his options for it. In other words, his novel power condition practically compels him to take up new regulatory functions that willy-nilly he has had to discharge with respect to the world's mixed natural-human systems. Having penetrated a number of the erstwhile mysteries and being able to sway events massively, he is now vested with unprecedented, tremendous responsibilities and thrown into the new role of moderator of life on the planet — including his own." The above words were written by Dr. Aurelio Peccei and are taken verbatim from page 607 of The Global 2000 Report to the President.

Funding was obtained from the U.S. Congress under H.B. 15090 (1969), where $10 million was given to the DOD's 1970 budget. Testimony before the Senate Committee revealed that they intended to produce "a synthetic biological agent, an agent that does not naturally exist and for which no natural immunity could have been acquired. Within the next 5 to 10 years it would probably be possible to make a new infective microorganism which could differ in certain important aspects from any known disease-causing organisms. Most important of these is that it might be refractory to the immunological and therapeutic processes upon which we depend to maintain our relative freedom from infectious disease."

Sir Julian Huxley said, "Overpopulation is, in my opinion, the most serious threat to the whole future of our species." The project, called MK-NAOMI, was carried out at Fort Detrick, Maryland.

Since large populations were to be decimated, the ruling elite decided to target the "undesirable" elements of society. Specifically targeted were the black, Hispanic, and homosexual populations. The poor homosexuals were encouraged on the one hand and scheduled for extinction on the other.

The African continent was infected via smallpox vaccine in 1977. The vaccine was administered by the World Health Organization. According to Dr. Robert Strecker, "Without a cure the entire black population of Africa will be dead within 15 years. Some countries are well beyond epidemic status."

The U.S. population was infected in 1978 with the hepatitis B vaccine. Dr. Wolf Szmuness, the ex-roommate of Pope John Paul II, was the mastermind behind the November/78 to October/79 and March/80 to October/81 experimental hepatitis B vaccine trials conducted by the Centers for Disease Control in New York, San Francisco and four other American cities. He loosed the plague of AIDS upon the American people. The gay population was infected. The ads for participants specifically asked for promiscuous homosexual male volunteers. Whatever causes AIDS was in the vaccine. The vaccine was manufactured and bottled in Phoenix, Arizona.

The order was given by the POLICY COMMITTEE of THE BILDERBERG GROUP based in Switzerland. Other measures were also ordered.

The one you will be able to check the easiest is the Haig-Kissinger Depopulation Policy, which is administered by the State Department. This policy dictates that Third World nations take positive and effective steps to decrease their populations and hold them in check or they get no aid from the United States. If the Third World nations refuse, civil war usually breaks out and the rebels are usually found to be trained, armed, and financed by the Central Intelligence Agency. That is why many more civilians (especially young fertile females) than soldiers have been killed in El Salvador, Nicaragua, and other places. These wars have been instigated in Catholic countries by Jesuits (see Chapter 2).

The Haig-Kissinger depopulation policy has taken over various levels of government and is in fact determining U.S. foreign policy. The planning organization operates outside the White House and directs its entire efforts to reduce the world's population by 2 billion people through war, famine, disease, and any other means necessary. This group is the National Security Council's Ad Hoc Group on Population Policy. The policy planning staff is in the State Department's Office of Population Affairs, established in 1975 by Henry Kissinger. This same group drafted the Global 2000 Report to the President that was given to Carter.

Thomas Ferguson, the Latin American case officer for the State Department's Office of Population Affairs (OPA) made the following statements: "There is a single theme behind all our work; we must reduce population levels. Either they do it our way, through nice clean methods or they will get the kind of mess that we have in El Salvador, or in Iran, or in Beirut. Population is a political problem. Once population is out of control it requires authoritarian government, even fascism, to reduce it....The professionals," stated Ferguson, "aren't interested in lowering population for humanitarian reasons. That sounds nice. We look at resources and environmental constraints. We look at our strategic needs, and we say that this country must lower its population, or else we will have trouble. So steps are taken. El Salvador is an example where our failure to lower population by simple means has created the basis for a national security crisis. The government of El Salvador failed to use our programs to lower their population. Now they get a civil war because of it. There will be dislocation and food shortages. They still have too many people there. Civil wars are somewhat drawn-out ways to reduce population. The quickest way to reduce population is through famine, like in Africa or through DISEASE, like the Black Death, all of which MIGHT OCCUR in El Salvador." His budget for FY 1980 was $190 million; for FY 1981 it was

$220 million. The Global 2000 Report calls for doubling that figure.

Henry Kissinger created this group after discussion with leaders of the Club of Rome during the 1974 population conferences in Bucharest and Rome. The Club of Rome is controlled by Europe's Black Nobility. Alexander Haig is a firm believer in population control. It was Haig that backed Kissinger and pushed the OPA into action.

Ferguson said, "We will go into a country and say, here is your goddamn development plan. Throw it out the window. Start looking at the size of your population and figure out what must be done to reduce it. If you don't like that, if you don't want to choose to do it through planning, then you'll have an El Salvador or an Iran, or worse, a Cambodia."

The real reason the Shah of Iran was overthrown was that his best efforts to institute "clean programs" of birth control failed to make a significant dent in the country's birth rate. The promise of jobs, through an ambitious industrialization program, encouraged migration toward overcrowded cities like Teheran. Under Ayatollah Khomeini, the clean programs have been dismantled. The government may make progress because it has a program "to induce up to half of Teheran's 6 million residents to relocate. Iran's war with Iraq really pleased the OPA." Now you know about the Shah and now you know part of the reason we have troops in the Middle East. Marcos fell victim to the same policy.

Daniel B. Luten had this to say: "...an organization cannot have a conservation policy without having a population policy....the sanity test — in which the candidate, confronted with an overflowing sink, is classified according to whether he reaches for the mop or the faucet."

Thousands of people, mostly civilians, are killed in El Salvador's civil war each year. "To accomplish what the State Department deems adequate 'population control,' the civil war would have to be greatly expanded," according to Thomas Ferguson, the Latin American case officer for the OPA.

El Salvador was targeted for population control and war in an April 1980 population report published by the National Security Council. "El Salvador is an example of a country with serious population and political problems," the report states. "Rapid population growth — the birth rate has remained unchanged in recent years — aggravates its population density, which is already the highest on mainland Latin America. While a population program exists on paper, it has not been pursued with a strong commitment, and contraceptives remain unavailable." The population program "really did not work," OPA's Ferguson said. 'The infrastrucure was not there to support it. There were just too many goddamn people. If you want to control a country, you have to keep the population down. Too many people breed social unrest and communism."

"Something had to be done," the OPA official said. The birth rate is 3.3 percent — one of the highest in the world. Its population, he complained, will double in 21 years. "The civil war can help things, but it would have to be greatly expanded."

In making sure that the population falls in El Salvador, Ferguson said, the OPA has learned a lot from its experiences in Vietnam. "We studied the thing. That area was also overpopulated and a problem. We thought that the war would lower population and we were wrong." Now you know what we were really doing in Vietnam and why we were not allowed to win According to Ferguson, the population in Vietnam increased during the war, despite U.S. use of defoliation and a combat strategy that encouraged civilian casualties. Now you know why those of us in the know consider Lt. Calley to be a scapegoat.

To reduce population "quickly," said Ferguson "you have to pull all the males into the fighting and kill significant numbers of fertile, child-bearing age females." He criticized the current civil war in El Salvador: "You are killing a small number of males and not enough fertile females to do the job on the population. If the war went on 30 to 40 years like this, then you might accomplish something. Unfortunately, we don't have too many instances like that to study."

To aid you in your research of this travesty, the names of the significant reports are THE POPULATION BOMB by DR. PAUL R. EHRLICH (his wife Anne is a member of the Club of Rome), THE GLOBAL 2000 REPORT TO THE PRESIDENT, and THE LIMITS TO GROWTH, A REPORT FOR THE CLUB OF ROME'S PROJECT ON THE PREDICAMENT OF MANKIND.

In April 1968 the study began publicly in the Academia dei Lincei in Rome, Italy. The study had been ongoing in secret ever since the initial findings of the Huntsville meeting of 1957. They met at the instigation of Dr. Aurelio Peccei. The first real public indication of their findings and the solution that had been decided upon was publication of the book The Population Bomb in May 1968. Notice how close the dates are. On page 17 of The Population Bomb, a telling paragraph reveals all there is to know.

"In summary, the world's population will continue to grow as long as the birth rate exceeds the death rate; it's as simple as that. When it stops growing or starts to shrink, it will mean that either the birth rate has gone down the death rate has gone up or a combination of the two. Basically, then, there are only two kinds of solutions to the population problem. One is a 'birth rate solution,' in which we find ways to lower the birth rate. The other is a 'death rate solution,' in which ways to raise the death rate — war, famine, pestilence — find us. The problem could have been avoided by population control, in which mankind consciously adjusted the birth rate so that a 'death rate solution' did not have to occur."

The recommendations of the results of the study were made by Dr. Aurelio Peccei, who pledged not to use the prophylactic and not to take the cure should the microbe be developed and should he contract the disease. Dr. Peccei was considered a hero for deciding to take the same risk as the general population. The public results of the study were published in 1968 and again in 1972. The MIT project team members that developed the computer model study are listed below:

Dr. Dennis L. Meadows, director, United States
Dr. Alison A. Anderson, United States (pollution)
Dr. Jay M. Anderson, United States (pollution)
Ilyas Bayar, Turkey (agriculture)
William W. Behrens III, United States (resources)
Farhad Hakimzadeh, Iran (population)
Dr. Steffen Harbordt, Germany (sociopolitical trends)
Judith A. Machen, United States (administration)
Dr. Donella H. Meadows, United States (population)
Peter Milling, Germany (capital)
Nirmala S. Murthy, India (population)
Roger F. Naill, United States (resources)
Jorgen Randers, Norway (population)
Stephen Shantzis, United States (agriculture)
John A. Seeger, United States (administration)
Marilyn Williams, United States (documentation)
Dr. Erich K. O. Zahn, Germany (agriculture)

When the study was completed in 1969 U.N. Secretary General U Thant of the United Nations made this statement:

"I do not wish to seem overdramatic, but I can only conclude from the information that is available to me as Secretary General, that the Members of the United Nations have perhaps ten years left in which to subordinate their ancient quarrels and launch a global partnership to curb the arms race, to defuse the population explosion, and to supply the required momentum to development efforts. If such a global partnership is not forged within the next decade, then I very much fear that the problems I have mentioned will have reached such staggering proportions that they will be beyond our capacity to control."

MK-NAOMI was developed by the Special Operations Division (SOD) scientists at Ft. Detrick, Maryland under the supervision of the CIA.

A reference to the project MK-NAOMI can be found in The Intelligence Community by Fain et al., Bowker, 1977.

Lt. Col. James "Bo" Gritz was a member of the Special Operations Division of the Department of Defense, the commander of U.S. Special Forces in Latin America, the principle agent for the National Security Council's supersecret Intelligence Support Activity (ISA), which hatched the illegal groups known as Yellow Fruit and Seaspray, and the Congressional Relations Chief for the Pentagon. Lt. Col. Gritz claims he didn't know of any illegalities in the military or in government until he was told by a drug lord in a Third World nation. I'm sorry, but I am not that easily duped. I recommend that we support his efforts as long as his efforts help us, I also recommend that we watch him very carefully. There is a slim chance that Gritz is legitimate, but I would not put my life in his hands.

Lowell Sumner expressed his view: "As a biologist the human population explosion, and its declining spiral of natural resources, is to me the greatest threat of all. The time is ripe, even dangerously overripe, as far as the population control problem is concerned. We shall have to face up or ultimately perish, and what a dreary, stupid, unlovely way to perish, on a ruined globe stripped of its primeval beauty."

Many other population controls have been promulgated. The reduction of the world's population to workable levels has been virtually assured. It is only a matter of time. The problem will be to curtail further human reproduction beyond approved levels. To handle that problem the New World Order will adopt the Communist Chinese model of population control. It is the only population-control program that has ever worked. The old and infirm have been periodically murdered and couples are forbidden to have more than one child. Penalties are so severe that families in China with two children are extremely rare. Three-children families are nonexistent. A surprising byproduct is that Chinese children as a group are treated better than any other national grouping of children in the world, including the United States.

Tobacco fields in the U.S. have been fertilized with the radioactive haillings from uranium mines, resulting in a tremendous increase in the incidence of lip, mouth, throat, and lung cancer. If you do not believe it, just look at the incidence of lung cancer per capita before 1950 and compare it to the lung cancer per capita at the present time. Are those who smoke committing suicide, or are they being murdered?

Malathion, a nerve gas developed by the Nazis during World War II to kill people, is being sprayed heavily on population centers in California. The excuse used is that it will kill the Mediterranean fruit fly. The tipoff is that the orchards are not being sprayed, only people. The helicopters come from Evergreen in Arizona, a known government and a suspected CIA base. The pilots are contract pilots furnished by Evergreen. Evergreen has been named as one of the bases where drugs are flown in from Central America. The City of Pasadena passed a law making it illegal to spray malathion within the city limits. The law was ignored and the city took no action. When the people of California literally revolted against the spraying of malathion, the Governor of California stated that he did not have the power to stop the operation. What higher power is there that could prevent a governor of a state from halting the spraying of an insecticide? A warning was issued to cover up automobiles and belongings because malathion could destroy paint, some plastics, and other property. People, they said, would not be injured. It is a lie.

Heart disease used to be a very rare illness. Now it is epidemic. Go and look at the statistics. I do not know what is causing this, but 80 years ago people consumed more salt, fat, cholesterol, and everything else that heart disease is blamed upon, but the disease was rare. Why is it now one of the leading killers?

In the state of Colorado and elsewhere dioxin is turning up in the drinking water in alarming levels. It should not be present in any amount. Where is it coming from? Dioxin is one of the deadliest chemicals known to man. Colorado citizens attempting to do battle against the dioxin contamination are met with closed doors, denial, and attacks upon their characters.

We have watched the news in horror as story after story unfolded revealing that the Army and the CIA had released germs and viruses into the population to test their biological warfare capability. In light of what you have learned in this chapter you should now know that it was really to reduce population.

It is a matter of public record that investigations into cover-ups of radioactive leaks into the atmosphere and into ground water have revealed that some leaks were not accidental but were purposful. Some areas of the country now have such a high rate of cancer that virtually everyone who lives in these areas will die other than a natural death. The true extent of radioactive gases, waste, and toxic material, especially cesium-137, strontium-90, uranium-mine and -mill tailings, thorium-230, radium-226, and radon-222 that has leaked or has been purposely planted in the atmosphere, soil, and ground water is far beyond anything you or I can imagine. Every investigation has revealed that the true figures regarding radioactive leakage are much larger than official figures and the real numbers may never be known. Cover-up has become SOP (standard operating procedure) at all levels and in all departments of government. Do we dream reality or is reality a dream?

According to Dr. Eva Snead, the San Francisco Bay area has one of the highest cancer rates in the world. The San Francisco Bay area has been revealed as one of the primary test locations of the Central Intelligence Agency's biological and chemical programs. You may recall that Legionnaire's disease was an experimental bacteria released into the wind on the San Francisco Bay from a government-operated boat. San Francisco is also one of the six known inoculation sites for the CIA Project MK-NAOMI (AIDS). The Bay area was headquarters for Dr. Timothy Leary, who introduced the drug culture to American youth under CIA Project MK-ULTRA. It is suspected that the San Francisco Bay area was also subjected to large doses of radiation to test the effects upon a population over a prolonged period of time. Why do they hate San Francisco? The answer is that the largest homosexual population in America lives in San Francisco and they have been targeted for extermination.

A reason for the New World Order, or rationalization, as the case may be, is the very real possibility that some terrorist will set off a global nuclear war by detonating an atomic bomb to make a political point. I believe that it is safe to say that any large-scale exchange of atomic or hydrogen weapons will result in the complete destruction of civilization, and could precipitate the escalation of the onslaught of an ice age. The obvious conclusion would be that any kind of compromise leading to coexistence is better han any kind of nuclear exchange. In other words, "better Red than dead." This is exactly what the hierarchy has decided, only the New World Order will not be Red. It will be fascist. It will, in fact, be a socialist totalitarian state.

It is hoped that a natural metamorphosis will eventually occur. The Illuminati hope that it will result in a paradigm shift of the evolutionary consciousness of man. This could cause the formation of a state where no government is needed, where anarchy is not to be feared. They dream that the end result will be the world that Christ taught but that the Christian religion prevents. It is ironic that the Illuminati actually believe that this can evolve from a plan built upon such suffering. Christ suffered, if the New Testament is true, to bring about his world; and if he suffered maybe it is necessary that we also suffer. I am not wise enough to know the answer.

I managed to locate a reference to The Protocols of Sion dated in the 1700s (see Chapter 15, page 269). This plan for subjugation of the world correctly outlined exactly what has happened since the Protocols were discovered, and that is all that is needed to confirm the authenticity of the information contained within the document. It is clear that the Illuminati has planned to rule the world for centuries.

They have followed the plan outlined in The Protocols of Sion. The Illuminati could not possibly have succeeded, however, if an alliance had not been formed with the other world power structures. Is the world population crisis a hoax perpetrated to bring that alliance about? It it possible. All I can say is that my own calculations, using the knowledge available to me, performed on my 386 computer, confirm that the crisis it real, and is, in fact, very serious. If it is a manipulation, the whole world has been fooled.

ALL INTELLECTUALS, RULERS, AND GOVERNING BODIES AGREE THAT POPULATION IS THE BIGGEST THREAT TO CIVILIZATION THAT WE KNOW OF TODAY. It does not matter what you believe. If THEY believe it, you will be affected because they have the power.

The New World Order will eliminate the population threat in several ways. Complete control of individual behavior may be established using electronic or chemical implants. No one will be allowed to have a child without permission; stiff penalties wait for those who ignore the law. The violent, the old, the infirm, the handicapped, and the unproductive will be killed. Private property will be abolished. Since religion helped to create the population problem, it will not be tolerated except for the approved state-controlled religion which will evolve according to man's needs. Joseph Campbell explains this concept excellently in his series with Bill Movers called "The Power of Myth." Cash will disappear and with it most crime will also disappear; but total control of each individual will be the price we pay.

Man cannot be trusted to safeguard what little is left in the way of natural resources. Technological development and economic growth will be severely cut back. Man will be required to live like his ancestors. Those who learn to be self-sufficient and can adapt to the absence of many of the things that we take for granted today, such as automobiles, will get along fine. Others will suffer terribly. Man will once again conform to the law of the survival of the fittest.

No one is going to like the loss of individual freedoms guaranteed us by the Constitution and the Bill of Rights. I do not like or agree with what is planned. Intellectually I know that people will not solve the problems that we face unless they are made to do it. That is a sad commentary on the common man, but nevertheless it is true. The New World Order is evil but very much needed if man is to survive long enough to plant his seed amongst the stars. A paradigm shift and starseed are the only legitimate long-term answers.

THIS IS WHY WE HAVE ALL BEEN SO WRONG FOR SO LONG. It never was what we thought it was. Nothing is or ever will be until we learn to live in reality instead of fantasyland. A paradigm shift in the evolutionary consciousness of man MUST take place. Right or wrong, the world is covered with agents of the Illuminati who are attempting to cause that evolutionary jump. We have not been taken into their confidence. As you learned in Chapter One, we have been judged too stupid to understand.

It is true that without the population or the bomb problem the elect would use some other excuse to bring about the New World Order. They have plans to bring about things like earthquakes, war, the Messiah, an extra-terrestrial landing, and economic collapse. They might bring about all of these things just to make damn sure that it does work. They will do whatever is necessary to succeed. The Illuminati has all the bases covered and you are going to have to be on your toes to make it through the coming years.

ACCORDING TO PLANS, MANY PEOPLE ARE GOING TO DIE BETWEEN NOW AND THE YEAR 2,000; BUT IF THESE PLANS ARE NOT SUCCESSFUL THE HUMAN RACE COULD BECOME EXTINCT.

Nothing on earth can change this except a tremendous reduction and stabilization of the population. Without starseed this reduction and stabilization would only delay the inevitable, as eventually all raw materials will be completely depleted. A never-ending source of free energy will then be needed. That may be possible but is unlikely to solve the problem. Without some central common need that would bind man together, a source of free energy would most likely result in total anarchy. So you see, what was needed in the beginning is still needed in the end. A paradigm shift in the evolutionary consciousness of man coupled with starseed is the most logical answer for the human race.

We must learn to accept individual responsibility for the world's problems or be willing to live by the terms of those who do. We must learn to love one another, share, deplore violence, and work with nature, not against it. We must do all of this while colonizing the Universe. We must be prepared in the process to peacefully meet and deal with an extraterrestrial intelligence. I believe they exist.

Can you imagine what will happen if Los Angeles is hit with a 9.0 quake, New York City is destroyed by a terrorist-planted atomic bomb, World War III breaks out in the Middle East, the banks and the stock markets collapse, Extraterrestrials land on the White House lawn, food disappears from the markets, some people disappear, the Messiah presents himself to the world, and all in a very short period of time? Can you imagine? The world power structure can, and will if necessary, make some or all of those things happen to bring about the New World Order.

PATRIOTS MUST NOT BE AT HOME ON ANY NATIONAL HOLIDAY DURING THE DAY OR NIGHT EVER AGAIN UNTIL THE DANGER IS PAST. DISREGARD THIS WARNING AND YOU WILL FIND YOURSELF IN A CONCENTRATION CAMP. In the camp you will be treated for a mental illness called nationalism, common to patriots. This illness is not in the interest of the New World Order. Those who cannot be cured will be exterminated. When asked what was in store for the world in the coming decade, Henry Kissinger said this: "Everything is going to be different. Many will suffer. A New World Order will emerge. It will be a much better world for those who survive. In the long run life will be better. The world we have wanted will be reality."

CHAPTER 10

LESSONS FROM LITHUANIA

A well regulated Militia, being necessary to the security of a free State, the right of the people to keep and bear Arms, shall not be infringed.

AMENDMENT II
Constitution of the U.S.

I know not what others may do. But as for me,
give me liberty or give me death.

Patrick Henry

EXPLANATION

I had intended to write a long and thoroughly referenced chapter on the Second Amendment to the United States Constitution, the right of the people to keep and bear arms.

I had to eat humble pie when I read the following text entitled "Lessons from Lithuania" by Neal Knox. It was contributed by a member of the Citizens Agency for Joint Intelligence. I was impressed by its simplicity and ability to deliver with very few words the precise message that I had intended to convey in twenty pages. Since I believe that sometimes less is more, and since my ego has nothing to do with this book and its message, "Lessons from Lithuania" has been printed in its entirety, with no changes, as the complete chapter on the Second Amendment. Try as I might, I could never improve upon Neal's simple statement.

My deepest appreciation to Neal Knox and The Firearms Coalition for permission to use "Lessons from Lithuania."

LESSONS FROM LITHUANIA

by Neal Knox

Those who avoid and evade the reason for the Second Amendment to the U.S. Constitution would surely admit that if Lithuania had a Second Amendment, Mikhail Gorbachev violated it on March 22,1990 — Russian troops seized arms from the Lithuanian militia. Or was "the right of the people to keep and bear arms" actually violated two days earlier, when Premier Gorbachev ordered private citizens to turn in their hunting and competition guns to the Russian army within one week "for temporary safekeeping" or have them confiscated and their owners imprisoned? Or was "the right of the people to keep and bear arms" initially violated many years before, when the people were first prohibited from possessing guns without permission of government and laws were passed requiring every gun to be registered? In fact, the Soviet Constitution guarantees the people the right to keep and bear arms, and Lithuania is part of the Soviet Union — or so Gorbachev contends. But obviously the Soviet government pays no more attention to that constitutional freedom guarantee than do the majority of the U.S. government, the International Association of Chiefs of Police, or CBS and the Washington Post. What is the difference, precisely, between the confiscation of private firearms in Lithuania and the confiscation ordered by S. 166, the Graves bill now pending in the New Jersey Senate? What is the difference, precisely, between the registration law in Lithuania — which makes confiscation possible — and the registration of military-style firearms required by California's Roberti-Roos bill, which went into effect January 1,1990. What is the difference, precisely, between Lithuania's law prohibiting the people from owning military-style firearms and the so-called "assault rifle" bans now pending in both houses of Congress and in many states? The difference is that the people of the United States are free men and women who can trust their benevolent government. FOREVER?

NOTE: Nothing has so clearly demonstrated the reasons for the Second Amendment and the reasons it must be defended than when on Dec. 14,1981, when Gen. Jaruzelski declared martial law in Poland, placed all press under total government control, and declared all firearms licenses and gun registration certificates void — requiring the licensed owners to turn in their registered guns within 48 hours. Of course, since the government knew where every gun was — except those in the hands of criminals — they had no choice but to comply.

Please download this file, print it out and send it to your local newspaper — putting your name on it if you think it will cause more letters editors to run it. Also please upload it to as many other bulletin boards and nets as possible.

Neal Knox
The Firearms Coalition
Box 6537
Silver Spring, MD 20906

Author's Note: This is a lesson that we hope to learn only from reading and not in the manner learned by the Poles and Lithuanians. After reading the above, I hope you will agree with me that anyone who attempts to subvert the Second Amendment or any other section or legal amendment of the Constitution is a traitor and should be arrested and tried for treason. I hope that you will copy this chapter and distribute it as widely as possible, to as many people as possible. Education is more than half the battle.

In case you have not guessed by now, the fact that most Americans own at least one firearms weapon is the only thing that has kept the New World Order at bay.

A Ray of Hope: As of January 8, 1991, less than 10% of all California gun owners have registered their firearms. Many Californians stood in the streets with weapons in hand and publicly burned the registration forms. Network news did not cover these demonstrations, and no mention has been made on television that California gun owners have ignored this unconstitutional gun-registration law.

CHAPTER 11

COUP
DE GRACE

High Crimes & Misdemeanors

Treason Committed by the Joint Chiefs

Phone Conversation with Randall Terpstra

BACKGROUND

When I finished "The Secret Government" in May 1989, a temptation existed to remove the material that I had written on the Nixon resignation. I thought that no one would ever believe that a coup had occurred in the United States. Furthermore, I held no hope that anyone would ever step forward and substantiate my claim. I was wrong. People did believe it, and subsequent to my delivery of the paper on July 2, 1989, three individuals have come forward to confirm that a coup did in fact take place. This chapter is the transcript of a phone conversation between me and one of those people, Randall Terpstra.

The members of the Joint Chiefs of Staff who were serving at the time of Nixon's resignation were asked if they had instructed their commands to ignore orders from the White House. They replied that the subject had come up but that it was not done. They lied.

CONFIRMATION OF A COUP

Randy: This is Randy.

Bill: Hi, Randy?

Randy: Yes...

Bill: This is Bill Cooper.

Randy: Hello, Bill.

Bill: You left a message on my phone. I didn't get to hear it because my wife took the messages off the phone and wrote them down. I have no idea why you called. If you'll let me in on it...

Randy: Well, I have a copy of your documents that were provided in me by a friend, and uh...two things: One, I'm missing a page on one of them. The one that you've titled "Operation Majority," the final release. It looks like I'm losing page 3, 'cause on the...I have page 2 that says, "MJ-12 is the name of the" dah-da dah-da dah-da "under the leadership of the director" and then it flips right over and the first line on the next page that I have says "means MAJI controlled." I appear to be missing a page on that one.

Bill: Hmmm. Okay.

Randy: The second is — I have to close my office door. One moment.

Bill: Sure...

[Can hear door close.]

Randy: I'll be frank with you. When I first started reading, my first reaction was, "Gee, this is National Enquirer material, up until a point when I came across something that startled me a little — in the same document your final release document. You used two terms that I've only seen on other place, and that was MAJESTY and MAJORITY. When I was in the Navy, I was a radioman, and in the mid seventies — the year escapes me at the moment, it's been a long time, I've only had your papers since last night - and I was involved in a joint Apollo-Soyuz moon shot. I was an onboard crypto operator, which basically meant that all message traffic of a certain nature, which was referred to as SPECAT or special category, was off-line encrypted. ed. During the Apollo-Soyuz shot we established what was referred to as a termination with an unknown location. That location identified itself only as MAJORITY CONTROL.

Bill: Okay...

Randy: All of the message traffic we sent to and from this location was off-line encrypted, which was rather odd because...First, let me explain it. In the Navy when you send a SPECAT, or Special Category message, you go into what's called a clean environment. The message is drafted by the originator or on a piece of paper. That piece of paper is brought directly to a designated SPECAT operator — somebody who has a SPECAT or higher clearance — who enters that in the teletype on a paper tape with the hole punched in it for transmission.

Bill: Right.

[Randy did not know that one of my duties as the Petty Officer of the Watch in the CINCPACFLT Command Center was SPECAT operator for the Command Center.]

Randy: At that point the SPECAT operator goes onto the circuit, notifies the other end that he has SPECAT traffic to transmit. The other end... an authorized SPECAT operator has to come on the circuit at the other end. He has to identify himself back to you with his SPECAT code number, his name and service number. Now, to me at this particular moment in time and space — this would be in the middle seventies — that was probably the most insulated means of transmitting information point to point in the military, because you knew who wrote the message, who had seen it to transmit, who had received it, all the way to its ultimate

Bill: Uh huh...

Randy: Well, in this particular case all of the message traffic was being handed to me and I was instructed to encode it through a machine called a KL-47, which takes standard text material and turns it out into five-letter blocks - random characters. And the origination...they...there were five of us onboard the USS Mount Whitney, and the five of us were SPECAT operators. We were on a revolving shift all during the Apollo-Soyuz mission. We were put into a controlled environment that — it was a room with a teletype and a cot in it — and we were told to maintain the term circuit to MAJORITY control. Every hour a Mr. Logan from NASA would come down to the room, punch in because it had a cipher lock on the door, look at any message traffic that came in, and then we would burn it, right in the room. He would draft his replies, which I would enter on the KL-47, take the tape, transmit it and then he would burn the outgoing messages as well.

Bill: Uhhuh.

[Note: The tape is made by the KL-47. It is a paper tape containing the five-character grouping encryption. The tape is put onto a sprocket in the teletype machine and it automatically sends the message to the addressee. It comes out at the other end in encrypted form and must be decoded. At least that is the way I was trained as designated SPECAT Operator to do it in the CINCPACFLT Command Center.]

Randy: I don't remember a lot of what was sent because it was very, very busy times. We had so many civilians on board the ship that it was...an incredible amount of work going on.

Bill: I can imagine.

Randy: I do know that hourly we received a report from MAJORITY CONTROL that was headed — now, this is after I've decoded it...the heading was always MAJESTY ADVISORY, over and over and over again.

Bill: Okay.

[Note: MAJESTY ADVISORY messages were sent by CINCPACTLT to update or inform the President personally of beginning, ending, or ongoing operations that could result in serious repercussions to the United States, i.e. the bombing of North Vietnam after the President had informed the American people that no more bombing would occur.]

Randy: Now after doing this I was on for four hours, then off for four then on for four. We did a rollover like that for the whole Apollo-Soyuz mission. The other thing that I saw that tripped me off a little bit was the term "IACs."

Bill: Identified Alien Craft!

Randy: They...that was never...they never spelled out the acronym. It was just IACs.

Bill: Fantastic!

Randy: It was recurring through all of this message traffic that I was sending.

Bill: Randy, you are a godsend... Where have you been hiding all of these years?

Randy: Well, it's...how I came about getting your document is a long story as well, but when I read through it, it was just like a floodgate opened up and all these memories kept coming back.

Bill: Right.

Randy: Now, at the end of it, after the Apollo-Soyuz mission concluded, the five operators, myself included, were given 50 days basket leave, which in the Navy meant they give you leave for free.

Bill: Sure. Yeah.

Randy: They didn't dock you for it.

Bill: Go home, get drunk, forget about this.

Randy: Exactly!

Bill: Yeah.

Randy: And when I came back 1 was taken from third class to second class spot promotion, and I was moved to the teletype repair shop, which was quite prestigious at that time.

Bill: Yeah. If s quite normal when you're exposed to this material. They either snuff you or promote you.

Randy: Well, I've lost contact with the other — well, I mean we had a ship reunion a couple a years ago, and it never occurred to me about these other guys. But I don't...I don't have a conscious memory of seeing them. But as I said when I read through this, it was rather startling to see things that uh, that I'm aware of.

Bill: Uhhuh.

Randy: I, I'm really interested in that missing page, actually.

Bill: Yeah. Was there anything else that you can remember that-

Randy: No, thaf s, I mean, at the time it didn't mean a damn to me. I mean, being a radioman, we pumped so much traffic through that ship. Mount Whitney is an amphibious communications command ship.

Bill: Yeah, I'm familiar with it. Were you in the Navy at the time that Nixon resigned?

Randy: No, I was not.

Bill: Hmmmm.

Randy: I was acting as a consultant to a company that was doing work for the U.S. Marine Corps, though.

Bill: Uh huh. Were you in communications at that time?

Randy: Yes, I was.

Bill: Do you remember a message that came to military commands? Let me see if I can remember the exact words. I believe the message said... uh.

Randy: "Upon receipt you are instructed to no longer accept direct orders from the White House."

Bill: Right!

Randy: Actually, they didn't use the term White House. They used the term "TOP HAT."

Bill: TOP HAT. I remember "White House" in the one that I saw. I was aboard the Oriskany when I saw this.

Randy: I was working with a Lt. Col. A. P. Finlon as a civilian consultant on a device called the MCC-20, which is a multiplexer device.

Bill: His name was Finland or Fin...?

Randy: Finlon...F - I - N - L - O - N , and he was the recipient of the message. He was the S-3 operations director for the 6th Marine Amphibious Brigade.

Bill: Okay, you realize the implications of all of this, don't you, Randy? You know whaf s happening.

Randy: Yeah, I've taken a liberty with the documentation you sent me and I've forwarded it to someone else.

Bill: Okay, I am in dire need...I'm trying to do this as quickly and as cleanly as I can to get the people in this country to wake up, or we're gonna lose it. And if s...I'm fighting a battle pretty much on my own. There are people rallying around and they're helping out, and I'm getting bits of information here and there. I need people who have the balls to stand up with me and say what they saw. And I understand that, you know, when anybody does that they're putting themselves in danger. But I don't see any greater danger than the loss of our Constitution and what they have in store down the road. They've literally thrown it in the trash can already, anyway. And what, I guess what I'm asking is for your help. Would you be willing to go public with what you just told me?

Randy: I already have.

Bill: You have?

Randy: I forwarded your manuscript along with exactly what I've just told you to Lt. Col. Robert Brown, the director of the Soldier of Fortune magazine.

Bill: Fantastic!

Randy: I spoke with his secretary on the phone, described what it was all about, she in turn passed it on to him. He said, "Send it to me quick."

Bill: Fantastic!

Randy: If anybody...Soldier of Fortune magazine has the biggest military following of any publication in the world. If anybody was in the service who saw this stuff, it'll be them.

Bill: Fantastic! Great. Do you mind if I use the information that you've told me? Can I say that someone has corroborated what I've said?

Randy: Absolutely!

Bill: Can I use your name?

Randy: Yes!

Bill: What's your last name?

Randy: Terpstra.

Bill: Let me get your address.

Randy: 130 Foothill Court, Morgan Hill, California, 95037.

Bill: Your first name is Randy?

Randy: My first name is Randall, middle name Wayne.

Bill: Okay, Randy. You're a godsend. If you were right in front of me I'd kiss ya. I swear to God, I have been hunting so hard for people to come out of the woodwork, because I know there's a lot of people out there who know.

Randy: They don't know it the — I mean, you've taken a lot of loose bits and pieces that I've had. I mean, thaf s the problem. Yes, there's a lot of people who know things, but they don't know what they know.

Bill: Yeah, I'm sure of that. And if s so compartmentalized that what they know, they don't believe is wrong.

Randy: Well, one of the things I'm really stirring up some controversy about is, I want more information about NRO, and the one person who can get it is Col. Brown. If that exists...

Bill: Well, NRO is the National Reconnaissance Organization that first put together the DELTA teams which were specifically assigned to security of the alien-tasked projects. They've since been used for all kinds of other things. Now, there's a different NRO that you have to be careful you don't get wrapped up in, and that's the National Reconnaissance Office, which is responsible for the spy satellites.

Randy: To even throw a little more smoke on it, do you know Col. Charles Beckwith down in Florida?

Hill: No.

Randy: Col. Charles Beckwith was the one who came up with the whole term DELTA FORCE. That's that rescue, the hostage rescue group, the Green Beret unit?

Bill: Uh huh.

Randy: Now, he originally wanted to call it something else, and the White House pushed DELTA FORCE down his throat.

Bill: Do you know that I talked to Barbara Honegger? Have you read October Surprise?

Randy: No, I haven't. As a matter of fact, I've got your bibliography here and I was about to make a call to a friend of mine who runs a bookstore to place a rather large order.

Bill: Okay, Barbara Honegger wrote October Surprise and they refused to print one chapter. I met her at one of the talks that I give and we got very embroiled in conversation. She ended up coming over to my home, and we talked face to face. There were about four other witnesses there who heard her say this to me. She said, "At DESERT ONE, the first craft that was there was an antigravity disc craft carrying DELTA personnel. Then the aircraft and the helicopters came in." And she said the purpose of the alien crafts, or the craft that we built from alien technology, or the alien craft that we're using was to ensure the sabotage of the operation.

[Note: Sometime later Barbara Honnegger related the same story on the Anthony Hilder "Telling It Like It Is, Like It Or Not" radio show. During the broadcast she said the antigravity craft was from a project named RED-LIGHT. Ms. Honegger was a White House staff member during the Reagan and Bush administrations.]

Randy: That makes sense, because I have some 8x10 glossies of that Jolly Green Giant that caught on fire and burnt.

Bill: Uh huh.

Randy: I have some real problems with that. I'm a military nut. I spent my time in the Navy, and I've since been associated with a variety of military groups.

Bill: Yeah.

Randy: I have some pictures of that photo, of that helicopter that were...they're black & white AP photos. And it shows a burnt pattern that starts at the nose of the aircraft and goes back across the fuel tanks. They don't originate in the fuel tanks. So how in the hell did that helicopter catch fire right at the cockpit and outside of the cockpit, out on the fuselage?

Bill: That's a good question. The alien beam weapons will do that though.

Randy: Now ask a new question.

Bill: Uh huh.

Randy: The beam weapons you refer to, do they leave a pattern on the material, a wavy, ripply pattern?

Bill: That I don't know. All I know about the beam weapons is this. That they are only effective at short range; that they can paralyze a human being; they can levitate a human being; they can burn something out of your hands without hurting you, like an M-16; and fry you to a crisp and nothing but ashes is left. It can give you a sunburn. It depends upon the degree of how they want to use this thing as to exactly what it will do That's what I remember, and that's what my research has also confirmed At Ellsworth Air Force Base, in fact, one airman security patrol encountered an alien craft and aliens on the ground. He aimed his M-16 at them, and this weapon, this beam hit the M-16 and literally vaporized it. He had burns on his hands, but otherwise he was unhurt.

Randy: Have you read or heard the reports about something called spontaneous human combustion?

Bill: Yes! That is caused by..in fact, it can, it can be done and it's a

weapon that we use. The intelligence community can get rid of some...
Randy: I respect you a great deal. You know things that you shouldn't know, but you're right.

Bill: Yes, I do know things that I shouldn't know, and hopefully I can get it all out before something happens to me. But you know, I just, I love this country so much, I love the Constitiution so much. What they've been able to do, and the way that they've been able to fool the citizens of this country...I don't care what happens to me. I've got to stop this. I've got to do everything in my power to stop this.

Randy: Well, I'm not one of — I don't know, for lack of a better term, I'm not one of these wild-eyed loonies that runs around doing the rest of it. As I told Col. Brown, "Look, I'm just a guy. I work in the computer industry; I make modems. I travel around the world, I talk computer systems. I mean, that's about it. Okay? I mean, yeah, I like to go shoot my gun at the target range, and I'm an armchair commando, and I like reading Soldier of Fortune magazine, and vicariously living adventures through other people. So I'm not a holy roller. I mean, I have my own belief in God, but I don't go around espousing it to everybody. And I'm not one of these esoterics that run around talking about Maitreya and the Hinduisms and all the rest of this, the chakras and all the rest of it. I know those people are out there, I know they exist. As a matter of fact, I'm dating one of them, but that's her beliefs and if she wants to believe that, that's fine."
Bill: Sure.
Randy: When this came in out of the blue, I've had a lot of thought in my own head. You've galvanized a lot of them, especially the text where you were talking about the sudden influx of media and television on an alien presence among us in our society. I've felt that for almost two years, and I could never really verbalize it.
Bill: Oh yeah, they're desensitizing us so that when it happens, all of the things that they feared in the beginning that led to all the lies that led to all the crimes won't cause what they feared. It won't cause the collapse of our society and our culture and our religions. It will affect the economy, though, quite a bit.
Randy: The economy is out the door, anyway...
Bill: Yeah, and that may be what they're waiting for, to change into a cashless society so it can't have that kind of effect.

Randy: Yeah, there was an awful lot, you see. I have my sister and my mother are both, let's say God's Green Berets. You know, they're super religious types — "God bless you, come to church" type thing, and at their urging I went through the Bible and I read it. I read it four or five times, and every time I came back with it I kept seeing different things. And I have my own views on life and on a variety of things. And until I read your material, it never really galvanized me into thinking things. Now, like I said, the only thing I can really relate to you is what I experienced during the Apollo-Soyuz shot.

Bill: That's great! Because what you experienced there is just confirmation of what I've been telling everybody. There is a secret space program. There is a control group called MAJORITY. The President is called MAJESTY in connection with these things. What you were getting, the MAJESTY advisory messages, were to keep the President updated.

Randy: You know, the real funny part about all of that is the guy who would come in and was using our facility. His name was Logan, Mr. Logan. His title was supposed to be communications coordinator, but I never seen him do a damn thing except come into that room, read traffic, draft a reply, and then go back up to CIC. Now, we were in what was called the GENSER, general service side of communications. We weren't the spooks. The spooks had their own little quarters over on the other side of the ship.

Bill: Sure.

Randy: But we did have the KL-47 and the rest of the NASA types. The civilian types would come down to — we had a message window in the hallway and they'd come up and they'd hand their outgoing messages in the window and they would go out on the general service circuits. The only stuff that we handled was the, was traffic for MAJORITY CONTROL with MAJESTY advisories and that was it. And a lot of it, like I said, was a lot of textual data. I mean, there was tons of text, and it was all couched in techno-babble that I didn't really understand. But I do remember the acronym IACs everywhere. I mean completely repetitious.

Bill: Oh yeah.

Randy: You know, thaf s as much as I can offer you.

Bill: Do you remember where the messages were sent for MAJORITY CONTROL?

Randy: No. The location of MAJORITY CONTROL was never disclosed. The only thing I can assume is that it was somewhere north. The ship was anchored — well, we weren't anchored, we were at what was called sea-anchor, which I am sure you are aware of. We were on an east-west axis so that all of our antennas could be brought to bear on the western horizon, because thaf s the way the spacecraft was coming around The antenna that was assigned to my circuit was an antenna called an RLPA or Rotating Log Periodic Antenna, which is a very, very directional antenna, and it was pointed north.

Bill: What was north of you at that point?

Randy: Thule, Greenland.

Bill: Thule, Greenland! Okay, hmmmm, very interesting. Also, I'm glad you saw the message about Nixon, because everybody thought sure that if anything was whacko, that was the whackiest thing that I said.

Randy: Actually, no. That one made complete sense, because those days surrounding Nixon's announcement — you said that message was sent five days previous to his announced resignation. That five-day period, if I remember my history correctly, was extremely turmoiled, and if you go back to the New York Times and read in depth the political commentary during those days, what you're going to find is that there was a awful lot of turbulence. I mean, five days prior there were a lot of steps being taken. It would not surprise me if that message was — that message would have been promulgated and sent five full days prior to the public announcement, because the public is always the last one to know. So I found that the most realistic of the things that were in here.

Bill: Fantastic! God is answering my prayers. Oh wow, it makes me so happy. Listen Randall, I've been taping this whole phone conversation. If you want me to destroy this tape, I will. The reason I do it is I never know when somebody's going to say something that is important or not.

Randy: I have nothing to hide from you, Bill.

Bill: Okay, but I just want you to know I've never betrayed a source or used a person's name when they asked me not to. I've never used a tape if they asked me not to. If they asked me to destroy it, I've always done that. I try to work with everybody in a manner that they're comfortable working with, because my goal is not to embarrass or hurt anyone, if s to stop this thing thaf s happening.

Randy: Well, you've got another recruit.

Bill: Fantastic!

Randy: Question?

Bill: Sure.

Randy: Who is Linda Howe?

Bill: Linda Moulton Howe is a TV producer who — I don't remember when it was, '78 or something like that, she made a film called "A Strange Harvest" about the animal mutilations, the cattle mutilations...

Randy: Yeah, because in your notarized statement you make reference to her.

Bill: Yes, she contacted me along with a whole bunch of other people, but I tried to pick out the people who I thought were the most professional and the most likely to stand up under scrutiny or attempts to discredit and I figured she was one of those people, so...

Randy I think, I think where you're at right now with the data you have is — I mean, if s time to try to get it in front of people.

Bill: Yes, that's what I'm trying to do.

Randy: I'm in the process now of — as a matter of fact, when you called I was drafting the cover of a FAX that I'm sending to KGO Radio, which is a local radio talk station. Its a clear-channel station; it's heard all up and down the West Coast.

Bill: Great! Fantastic!

Randy: There's a moderator there named Ron Owens who — I'm sending this to him with a statement, "This is not being sent to you as a joke. Ifs being sent to you as something that I think you should take a minute and just read it." And I've asked him to contact you. And basically I said, "Ron, if ten percent of this is true, then we're in trouble."

Bill: Right. Absolutely. And there's a lot...you know, when I give a talk or something, someone will always stand up and say, "How do we know that you're not just feeding us disinformation?" and I say, "Just think about what you're saying. What I'm after is the truth. I'm telling you what I saw in these documents and where my research has led me over the intervening 17 years. Thaf s what I am imparting to you. I want you to go and verify this or not verify it or prove it wrong or whatever you can do on your own. And I'm perfectly willing to listen to anything that you have to say, but just think about what you just said. If in fact I'm giving you disinformation, then you're in worse trouble than you ever thought of. It would be better if there are aliens, because if there's not aliens that means this whole thing has been perpetrated by the Government for some purpose that we don't even know about. What it really means is we got the whole human establishment against us." And that really opens their eyes because it's true.

Randy: You just kicked off another memory...

And that is another story. Note: Randy Terpstra called the Billy Goodman Happening two days later, during the week ending November 4, 1989, and repeated live on the air what he told me during this taped phone conversation. On Sunday, November 5, 1989, I played the tape to an audience of approximately 800 people at Hollywood High School.

When President Nixon gave his farewell speech, he said he would tell the American people the truth about UFOs. Like James Forrestal, Richard Nixon found himself a prisoner on the mental ward of Bethesda Naval Hospital Unlike Forrestal, Nixon survived. He has remained silent.

CHAPTER 12

THE SECRET GOVERNMENT

The Origin, Identity, and Purpose of MJ-12

May 23, 1989

Updated November 21, 1990

> The signs are increasing.
> The lights in the sky will appear red, blue, green, rapidly.
> Someone is coming from very far and wants to meet
> the people of the Earth.
> Meetings have already taken place.
> But those who have really seen have been silent.
>
> Pope John XXII, 1935

PERSPECTIVE

Many sources of information were used to research this chapter. I originally wrote this piece as a research paper. It was first delivered at the MUFON Symposium on July 2,1989, in Las Vegas, Nevada. Most of this knowledge comes directly from, or is a result of my own research into the TOP SECRET/MAJIC material which I saw and read between the years 1970 and 1973 as a member of the Intelligence Briefing Team of the Commander in Chief of the Pacific Fleet. Since some of this information was derived from sources that I cannot divulge for obvious reasons, and from published sources which I cannot vouch for, this chapter must be termed a hypothesis. I firmly believe that if aliens are real, this is the true nature of the Beast. It is the only scenario that has been able to bind all the diverse elements. It is the only scenario that answers all the questions and places the various fundamental mysteries in an arena that makes sense. It is the only explanation which shows the chronology of events and demonstrates that the chronologies, when assembled, match perfectly. The bulk of this I believe to be true if the material that I viewed in the Navy is authentic. As for the rest, I do not know, and that is why this paper must be termed a hypothesis. Most historic and current available evidence supports this hypothesis.

THE SECRET GOVERNMENT

During the years following World War II the government of the United States was confronted with a series of events which were to change beyond prediction its future and with it the future of humanity. These events were so incredible that they defied belief. A stunned President Truman and his top military commanders found themselves virtually impotent after having just won the most devastating and costly war in history.

The United States had developed, used, and was the only nation on earth in possession of the atomic bomb. This new weapon had the potential to destroy any enemy, and even the Earth itself. At that time the United States had the best economy, the most advanced technology, the highest standard of living, exerted the most influence, and fielded the largest and most powerful military forces in history. We can only imagine the confusion and concern when the informed elite of the United States Government discovered that an alien spacecraft piloted by insectlike beings from totally incomprehensible culture had crashed in the desert of New Mexico.

Between January 1947 and December 1952 at least 16 crashed or downed alien craft, 65 alien bodies, and 1 live alien were recovered. An additional alien craft had exploded and nothing was recovered from that incident. Of these events, 13 occurred within the borders of the United States, not including the craft which disintegrated in the air. Of these 13, 1 was in Arizona, 11 were in New Mexico, and 1 was in Nevada. Three occurred in foreign countries. Of those, 1 was in Norway and the last 2 were in Mexico. Sightings of UFOs were so numerous that serious investigation and debunking of each report became impossible, utilizing the existing intelligence assets.

An alien craft was found on February 13, 1948, on a mesa near Aztec, New Mexico. Another craft was located on March 25, 1948, in White Sands Proving Ground. It was 100 feet in diameter. A total of 17 alien bodies were recovered from those two crafts. Of even greater significance was the discovery of a large number of human body parts stored within both of these vehicles. A demon had reared its head and paranoia quickly took hold of everyone then "in the know." The Secret lid immediately became a Top Secret lid and was screwed down tight. The security blanket was even tighter than that imposed upon the Manhattan Project. In the coming years these events were to become the most closely guarded secrets in the history of the world.

A special group of America's top scientists were organized under the name Project SIGN in December 1947 to study the phenomenon. The whole nasty business was contained. Project SIGN evolved into Project GRUDGE in December 1948. A low-level collection and disinformation project named BLUE BOOK was formed under GRUDGE. Sixteen volumes were to come out of GRUDGE. "Blue Teams" were put together to recover the crashed disks and dead or live aliens. The Blue Teams were later to evolve into Alpha Teams under Project POUNCE. During these early years the United States Air Force and the Central intelligence Agency exercised complete control over the "alien secret." In fact, the CIA was formed by Presidential Executive Order first as the Central Intelligence Group for the express purpose of dealing with the alien presence. Later the National Security Act was passed, establishing it as the Central Intelligence Agency.

The National Security Council was established to oversee the intelligence community and especially the alien endeavor. A series of National Security Council memos and Executive orders removed the CIA from the sole task of gathering foreign intelligence and slowly but thoroughly "legalized" direct action in the form of covert activities at home and abroad.

On December 9,1947, Truman approved issuance of NSC-4, entitled "Coordination of Foreign Intelligence Information Measures" at the urging of Secretaries Marshall, Forrestal, Patterson, and the director of the State Department's Policy Planning Staff, George Kennan.

The Foreign and Military Intelligence, Book 1, "Final Report of the Select Committee to Study Governmental Operations with Respect to Intelligence Activities," United States Senate, 94th Congress, 2nd Session, Report No. 94-755, April 26,1976, p. 49, states: "This directive empowered the Secretary of State to coordinate overseas information activities designed to counter communism."

A Top Secret annex to NSC-4, NSC-4A, instructed the director of Central Intelligence to undertake covert psychological activities in pursuit of the aims set forth in NSC-4. The initial authority given the CIA for covert operations under NSC-4A did not establish formal procedures for either coordinating or approving these operations. It simply directed the DCI to "undertake covert actions and to ensure, through liaison with State and Defense, that the resulting operations were consistent with American policy."

Later NSC-10/1 and NSC-10/2 were to supersede NSC-4 and NSC-4A and expand the covert abilities even further. The Office of Policy Coordination (OPC) was chartered to carry out an expanded program of covert activities. NSC-10/1 and NSC-10/2 validated illegal and extralegal practices and procedures as being agreeable to the national security leadership. The reaction was swift. In the eyes of the intelligence community "no holds were barred." Under NSC-10/1 an Executive Coordination Group was established to review, but not approve, covert project proposals. The ECG was secretly tasked to coordinate the alien projects. NSC-10/1 & /2 were interpreted to mean that no one at the top wanted to know about anything until it was over and successful.

These actions established a buffer between the President and the information. It was intended that this buffer serve as a means for the President to deny knowledge if leaks divulged the true state of affairs. This buffer was used in later years for the purpose of effectively isolating succeeding Presidents from any knowledge of the alien presence other than what the Secret Government and the intelligence community wanted them to know. NSC-10/2 established a study panel which met secretly and was made up of the scientific minds of the day. The study panel was not called MJ-12. Another NSC memo, NSC-10/5 further outlined the duties of the study panel. These NSC memos and secret Executive orders set the stage for the creation of MJ-12 only four years later.

Secretary of Defense James Forrestal objected to the secrecy. He was a very idealistic and religious man. He believed that the public should be told. James Forrestal was also one of the first known abductees. When he began to talk to leaders of the opposition party and leaders of the Congress about the alien problem he was asked to resign by Truman. He expressed his fears to many people. Rightfully, he believed that he was being watched. This was interpreted by those who were ignorant of the facts as paranoia. Forrestal later was said to have suffered a mental breakdown. He was ordered to the mental ward of Bethesda Naval Hospital. In spite of the fact that the Administration had no authority to have him committed, the order was carried out. In fact, it was feared that Forrestal would begin to talk again. He had to be isolated and discredited. His family and friends were denied permission to visit. Finally, on May 21, 1949, Forrestal's brother made a fateful decision. He notified authorities that he intended to remove James from Bethesda on May 22. Sometime in the early morning of May 22,1949, agents of the CIA tied a sheet around James Forrestal's neck, fastened the other end to a fixture in his room, then threw James Forrestal out the window. The sheet tore and he plummeted to his death. James Forrestal's secret diaries were confiscated by the CIA and were kept in the White House for many years. Due to public demand the diaries were eventually rewritten and published in a sanitized version. The real diary information was later furnished by the CIA in book form to an agent who published the material as fiction. The name of the agent is Whitley Strieber and the book is Majestic. James Forrestal became one of the first victims of the cover-up.

The live alien that had been found wandering in the desert from the 1949 Roswell crash was named EBE. The name had been suggested by Dr. Vannevar Bush and was short for Extraterrestrial Biological Entity. EBE had a tendency to lie, and for over a year would give only the desired answer to questions asked. Those questions which would have resulted in an undesirable answer went unanswered. At some point during the second year of captivity he began to open up. The information derived from EBE was startling, to say the least. This compilation of his revelations became the foundation of what would later be called the "Yellow Book." Photographs were taken of EBE which, among others, I was to view years later Project Grudge. In late 1951 EBE became ill. Medical personnel had been unable to determine the cause of EBE's illness and had no background from which to draw. EBE's system was chlorophyll-based and he processed food into energy much the same as plants. Waste material was excreted the same as plants. Several experts were called in to study the illness. These specialists included medical doctors, botanists, and entomologists. A botanist, Dr. Guillermo Mendoza, was brought in to try and help him recover. Dr. Mendoza worked to save EBE until June 2, 1952, when EBE died. Dr. Mendoza became the expert on at least this type alien of biology. The movie E.T. is the thinly disguised story of EBE.

In a futile attempt to save EBE and to gain favor with this technologically superior race, the United States began broadcasting a call for help early in 1952 into the vast regions of space. The call went unanswered but the project, dubbed SIGMA, continued as an effort of good faith.

President Truman created the supersecret National Security Agency (NSA) by secret Executive order on November 4,1952. Its primary purpose was to decipher the alien communications, language, and establish a dialogue with the extraterrestrials. This most urgent task was a continuation of the earlier effort. The secondary purpose of the NSA was to monitor all communications and emissions from any and all electronic devices worldwide for the purpose of gathering intelligence, both human and alien, and to contain the secret of the alien presence. Project SIGMA was successful.

The NSA also maintains communications with the Luna base and other secret space programs. By executive order of the President, the NSA is exempt from all laws which do not specifically name the NSA in the text of the law as being subject to that law. That means that if the agency is not spelled out in the text of any and every law passed by the Congress it is not subject to that or those laws. The NSA now performs many other duties and in fact is the premier agency within the intelligence network. Today the NSA receives approximately 75% of the monies allotted to the intelligence community. The old saying "where the money goes therein the power resides" is true. The DCI today is a figurehead maintained as a public ruse. The primary task of the NSA is still alien communications, but now includes other extraterrestrial projects as well.

President Truman had been keeping our allies, including the Soviet Union, informed of the developing alien problem. This had been done in case the aliens turned out to be a threat to the human race. Plans were formulated to defend the Earth in case of invasion. Great difficulty was encountered in maintaining international secrecy. It was decided that an outside group was necessary to coordinate and control international efforts in order to hide the secret from the normal scrutiny of governments by the press. The result was the formation of a secret ruling body which became known as the Bilderberg Group. The group was formed and met for the first time in 1952. They were named after the first publicly known meeting place, the Bilderberg Hotel. That public meeting took place in 1954. They were nicknamed The Bilderbergers. The headquarters of this group is Geneva, Switzerland. The Bilderbergers evolved into a secret world government that now controls everything. The United Nations was then, and is now, an international joke.

Beginning in 1953 a new president occupied the White House. He was a man used to a structured staff organization with a chain of command. His method was to delegate authority and rule by committee. He made major decisions, but only when his advisors were unable to come to a consensus. His normal method was to read through or listen to several alternatives and then approve one. Those who worked closely with him have stated that his favorite comment was, "Just do whatever it takes." He spent a lot of time on the golf course. This was not unusual for a man who had been career Army with the ultimate position of Supreme Allied Commander during the war, a post which had earned him five stars. The President was General of the Army Dwight David Eisenhower.

During his first year in office, 1953, at least 10 more crashed discs were recovered along with 26 dead and 4 live aliens. Of the 10,4 were found in Arizona, 2 in Texas, 1 in New Mexico, 1 in Louisiana, 1 in Montana, and 1 in South Africa. There were hundreds of sightings.

Eisenhower knew that he had to wrestle and beat the alien problem. He knew that he could not do it by revealing the secret to the Congress, Early in 1953 the new President turned to his friend and fellow member of the Council on Foreign Relations Nelson Rockefeller. Eisenhower and Rockefeller began planning the secret structure of alien-task supervision, which was to become a reality within one year. The idea for MJ-12 was thus born.

It was Nelson's uncle Winthrop Aldrich who had been crucial in convincing Eisenhower to run for President. The whole Rockefeller family and with them, the Rockefeller empire, had solidly backed Ike. Eisenhower belonged heart and soul to the Council on Foreign Relations and the Rockefeller family. Asking Rockefeller for help with the alien problem was to be the biggest mistake Eisenhower ever made for the future of the United States and maybe for humanity.

Within one week of Eisenhower's election he had appointed Nelson Rockefeller chairman of a Presidential Advisory Committee on Government Organization. Rockefeller was responsible for planning the reorganization of the government, something he had dreamed of for many years. New Deal programs went into one single cabinet position called the Department of Health, Education and Welfare. When the Congress approved the new Cabinet position in April 1953, Nelson was named to the post of Undersecretary to Oveta Culp Hobby.

In 1953 astronomers discovered large objects in space which were tracked moving toward the Earth. It was first believed that they were asteroids. Later evidence proved that the objects could only be spaceships. Project SIGMA intercepted alien radio communications. When the objects reached the Earth they took up a very high geosynchronous orbit around the equator. There were several huge ships, and their actual intent was unknown. Project SIGMA and a new project, PLATO, through radio communications using the computer binary language, were able to arrange a landing that resulted in face-to-face contact with alien beings from another planet. This landing took place in the desert. The movie, Close Encounters of the Third Kind is a fictionalized version of the actual events. Project PLATO was tasked with establishing diplomatic relations with this race of space aliens. A hostage was left with us as a pledge that they would return and formalize a treaty.

In the meantime, a race of humanoid aliens landed at Homestead Air Force Base in Florida and successfully communicated with the U.S. government. This group warned us against the race orbiting the equator and offered to help us with our spiritual development. They demanded that we dismantle and destroy our nuclear weapons as the major condition. They refused to exchange technology citing that we were spiritually unable to handle the technology we already possessed. These overtures were rejected on the grounds that it would be foolish to disarm in the face of such an uncertain future. There was no track record to read from. It may have been an unfortunate decision.

A third landing at Muroc, now Edwards Air Force Base, took place in 1954. The base was closed for three days and no one was allowed to enter or leave during that time. The historical event had been planned in advance. Details of a treaty had been agreed upon. Eisenhower arranged to be in Palm Springs on vacation. On the appointed day the President was spirited to the base. The excuse was given to the press that he was visiting a dentist. Witnesses to the event have stated that three UFOs flew over the base and then landed. Antiaircraft batteries were undergoing live-fire training and the startled personnel actually fired at the crafts as they passed overhead. Luckily, the shells missed and no one was injured.

President Eisenhower met with the aliens on February 20,1954, and a formal treaty between the alien nation and the United States of America was signed. We then received our first alien ambassador from outer space. He was the hostage that had been left at the first landing in the desert. His name and title was His Omnipotent Highness Crlll or Krlll, pronounced Crill or Krill. In the American tradition of disdain for royal titles he was secretly called Original Hostage Crlll, or Krlll. Shortly after this meeting President Eisenhower suffered a heart attack.

Four others present at the meeting were Franklin Allen of the Hearst newspapers, Edwin Nourse of Brookings Institute, Gerald Light of metaphysical research fame, and Catholic Bishop MacIntyre of Los Angeles. Their reaction was judged as a microcosm of what the public reaction might be. Based upon this reaction, it was decided that the public could not be told. Later studies confirmed the decision as sound.

An emotionally revealing letter written by Gerald Light spells it out in chilling detail: "My dear Friend: I have just returned from Muroc. The report is true — devastatingly true! I made the journey in company with Franklin Allen of the Hearst papers and Edwin Nourse of Brookings Institute (Truman's erstwhile financial adviser) and Bishop Maclntyre of L.A. (confidential names for the present, please.) When we were allowed to enter the restricted section (after about six hours in which we were checked on every possible item, event, incident and aspect of our personal and public lives), I had the distinct feeling that the world had come to an end with fantastic realism. For I have never seen so many human beings in a state of complete collapse and confusion, as they realized that their own world had indeed ended with such finality as to beggar description. The reality of "other-plane" aeroforms is now and forever removed from the realms of speculation and made a rather painful part of the consciousness of every responsible scientific and political group. During my two days' visit I saw five separate and distinct types of aircraft being studied and handled by our Air Force officials — with the assistance and permission of the Etherians!

"I have no words to express my reactions. It has finally happened. It is now a matter of history. President Eisenhower, as you may already know, was spirited over to Muroc one night during his visit to Palm Springs recently. And it is my conviction that he will ignore the terrific conflict between the various "authorities" and go directly to the people via radio and television — if the impasse continues much longer. From what I could gather, an official statement to the country is being prepared for delivery about the middle of May."

We know that no such announcement was ever made. The silence-control group won the day. We also know that two more ships, for which we can find no witnesses, either landed sometime after the three or were already at the base before the three landed. Gerald Light specifically states that five ships were present and were undergoing study by the Air Force. His metaphysical experience is evident in that he calls the entities "Etherians." Gerald Light capitalized "Etherians," calling attention to the fact that these beings might have been viewed as gods by Mr. Light.

The alien emblem was known as the "Trilateral insignia" and was displayed on the craft and worn on the alien uniforms. Both of these landings and the second meeting were filmed. These films exist today.

The treaty stated that the aliens would not interfere in our affairs and we would not interfere in theirs. We would keep their presence on earth a secret. They would furnish us with advanced technology and would help us in our technological development. They would not make any treaty with any other Earth nation. They could abduct humans on a limited and periodic basis for the purpose of medical examination and monitoring of our development, with the stipulation that the humans would not be harmed, would be returned to their point of abduction, would have no memory of the event, and that the alien nation would furnish Majesty Twelve with a list of all human contacts and abductees on a regularly scheduled basis.

It was agreed that each nation would receive the ambassador of the other for as long as the treaty remained in force. It was further agreed that the alien nation and the United States would exchange 16 personnel with the purpose of learning of each other. The alien "guests" would remain on earth. The human "guests" would travel to the alien point of origin for a specified period of time, then return, at which point a reverse exchange would be made. A reenactment of this event was dramatized in the movie Close Encounters of the Third Kind. A tipoff to who works for whom can be determined by the fact that Dr. J. Allen Hynek served as the technical advisor for the film. I noticed that the Top Secret report containing the official version of the truth of the alien question, entitled Project GRUDGE, which I read while in the Navy, was co-authored by Lt. Col. Friend and Dr. J. Allen Hynek, who was cited as a CIA asset attached to Project GRUDGE — Dr. Hynek, the one who debunked many legitimate UFO incidents when he functioned as the scientific member of the very public Project BLUEBOOK. Dr. Hynek is the man responsible for the infamous "it was only swamp gas" statement.

It was agreed that bases would be constructed underground for the use of the alien nation and that two bases would be constructed for the joint use of the alien nation and the United States Government. Exchange of technology would take place in the jointly occupied bases. These alien bases would be constructed under Indian reservations in the Four Corners area of Utah, Colorado, New Mexico and Arizona, and one would be constructed in an area known as Dreamland. Dreamland was built in the Mojave desert near, or in, a place called Yucca. I cannot remember if it was Yucca Valley, Yucca Flat, or Yucca Proving Ground, but Yucca Valley is what I always seem to want to say. More UFO sightings and incidents occur in the Mojave desert of California than any other place in the world. So many, in fact, that no one even bothers to make reports. Anyone who ventures into the desert to talk to the residents will be astounded by the frequency of activity and with the degree of acceptance demonstrated by those who have come to regard UFOs as normal.

All alien areas are under complete control of the Naval Department, according to the documents that I read. All personnel who work in these complexes receive their checks from the Navy through a subcontractor. The checks never make reference to the government or the Navy. Construction of the bases began immediately, but progress was slow. Large amounts of money were made available in 1957. Work continued on the Yellow Book.

Project REDLIGHT was formed and experimentation in test-flying alien craft was begun in earnest. A super-Top Secret facility was built at Groom Lake in Nevada in the midst of the weapons test range. It was code-named Area 51. The installation was placed under the Department of the Navy and all personnel required a Q clearance as well as Executive presidential, called MAJESTIC) approval. This is ironic, due to the fact that the President of the United States does not have clearance to visit the site. The alien base and exchange of technology actually took place in an area code-named Dreamland above ground, and the underground portion was dubbed "the Dark Side of the Moon." According to the documentation that I read, at least 600 alien beings actually resided full time at this site along with an unknown number of scientists and CIA personnel. Due to the fear of implantation, only certain people were allowed to interface with the alien beings, and those personnel were and are watched and monitored continuously.

The Army was tasked to form a supersecret organization to furnish security for the alien-tasked projects. This organization became the National Reconnaissance Organization based at Fort Carson, Colorado. The specific teams trained to secure the projects were called Delta. Lt. Col. James "Bo" Gritz was a Delta Force Commander.

A second project code-named SNOWBIRD was promulgated to explain away any sightings of the REDLIGHT crafts as being Air Force experiments. The SNOWBIRD crafts were manufactured using conventional technology and were flown for the press on several occasions. Project SNOWBIRD was also used to debunk legitimate public sightings of alien craft (UFOs to the public, IACs to those in the know). Project SNOWBIRD was very successful, and reports from the public declined steadily until recent years.

A multimillion-dollar Secret fund was organized and kept by the Military Office of the White House. This fund was used to build over 75 deep underground facilities. Presidents who asked were told the fund was used to build deep underground shelters for the President in case of war. Only a few were built for the President. Millions of dollars were funneled through this office to Majesty Twelve and then out to the contractors. It was used to build Top Secret alien bases as well as Top Secret DUMB (Deep Underground Military Bases) and the facilities promulgated by Alternative 2 throughout the nation. President Johnson used this fund to build a movie theater and pave the road on his ranch. He had no idea of its true purpose.

The secret White House underground-construction fund was set up in 1957 by President Eisenhower. The funding was obtained from Congress under the guise of "construction and maintenance of secret sites where the President could be taken in case of military attack: Presidential Emergency Sites." The sites are literally holes in the ground, deep enough to withstand a nuclear blast, and are outfitted with state-of-the-art communications equipment. To date there are more than 75 sites spread around the country which were built using money from this fund. The Atomic Energy Commission has built at least an additional 22 underground sites. See the chapter on Mt. Weather.

The location and everything to do with these sites were and are considered and treated as Top Secret. The money was and is in control of the Military Office of the White House, and was and is laundered through so circuitous a web that even the most knowledgeable spy or accountant cannot follow it. As of 1980 only a few at the beginning and end of this web knew what the money was for. At the beginning were Representative George Mahon of Texas, the chairman of the House Appropriations Committee and of its Defense Subcommittee; and Representative Robert Sikes of Florida, chairman of the House Appropriations Military Construction Subcommittee. Today it is rumored that House Speaker Jim Wright controlled the money in Congress and that a power struggle removed him. At the end of the line were the President, Majesty Twelve, the director of the Military Office and a commander at the Washington Navy Yard.

The money was authorized by the Appropriations Committee, who allocated it to the Department of Defense as a Top Secret item in the Army construction program. The Army, however, could not spend it and in fact did not even know what it was for. Authorization to spend the money was in reality given to the Navy. The money was channeled to the Chesapeake Division of the Navy Engineers, who did not know what it was for, either. Not even the commanding officer, who was an admiral, knew what the fund was to be used for. Only one man, a Navy commander who was assigned to the Chesapeake Division but in reality was responsible only to the Military Office of the White House, knew of the actual purpose, amount, and ultimate destination of the Top Secret money. The total secrecy surrounding the fund meant that almost every trace of it could be made to disappear by the very few people who controlled it. There has never been and most likely never will be an audit of this secret money.

Large amounts of money were transferred from the Top Secret fund to a location at Palm Beach, Florida, that belongs to the Coast Guard called Peanut Island. The island is adjacent to property which was owned by Joseph Kennedy. The money was said to have been used for landscaping and general beautification. Some time ago a TV news special on the Kennedy assassination told of a Coast Guard officer transferring money in a briefcase to a Kennedy employee across this property line. Could this have been a secret payment to the Kennedy family for the loss of their son John F. Kennedy? The payments continued through the year 1967 and then stopped. The total amount transferred is unknown and the actual use of the money is unknown.

Meanwhile, Nelson Rockefeller changed positions again. This time he was to take C. D. Jackson's old position, which had been called the Special Assistant for Psychological Strategy. With Nelson's appointment the name was changed to the Special Assistant for Cold War Strategy. This position would evolve over the years into the same position Henry Kissinger was ultimately to hold under President Nixon. Officially he was to give "advice and assistance in the development of increased understanding and coperation among all peoples." The official description was a smoke screen, for secretly he was the Presidential Coordinator for the Intelligence Community. In his new post Rockefeller reported directly, and solely, to the President. He attended meetings of the Cabinet, the Council on Foreign Economic Policy, and the National Security Council, which was the highest policy-making body in the government.

Nelson Rockefeller was also given a second important job as the head of the secret unit called the Planning Coordination Group, which was formed under NSC 5412/1 in March 1955. The group consisted of different ad hoc members, depending on the subject on the agenda. The basic members were Rockefeller, a representative of the Department of Defense, a representative of the Department of State, and the Director of Central Intelligence. It was soon called the 5412 Committee or the Special Group. NSC 5412/1 established the rule that covert operations were subject to approval by an executive committee, whereas in the past these operations were initiated solely on the authority of the Director of Central Intelligence.

By secret Executive Memorandum NSC 5510, Eisenhower had preceded NSC 5412/1 to establish a permanent committee (not ad hoc) to be known as Majesty Twelve (MJ-12) to oversee and conduct all covert activities concerned with the alien question. NSC 5412/1 was created to explain the purpose of these meetings when Congress and the press became curious.

Majesty Twelve was made up of Nelson Rockefeller, Director of Central Intelligence Allen Welsh Dulles, Secretary of State John Foster Dulles, Secretary of Defense Charles E. Wilson, Chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff Admiral Arthur W. Radford, Director of the Federal Bureau of Investigation J. Edgar Hoover, six men from the executive committee of the Council on Foreign Relations known as the "Wise Men," six men from the executive committee of the JASON Group, and Dr. Edward Teller.

The JASON Group is a secret scientific group formed during the Manhattan Project and administered by the Mitre Corporation. The inner core of the Council on Foreign Relations recruits its members from the Skull & Bones and the Scroll & Key societies of Harvard and Yale. The Wise Men are key members of the Council on Foreign Relations and also members of a secret Order of the Quest known as the JASON Society.

There were 19 members of Majesty Twelve. The first rule of Majesty Twelve was that no order could be given and no action could be taken without a majority vote of twelve in favor, thus Majority Twelve. Orders issued by Majesty Twelve became known as Majority Twelve directives.

This group was made up over the years of the top officers and directors of the Council on Foreign Relations and later the Trilateral Commission. Gordon Dean, George Bush and Zbigniew Brzezinski were among them. The most important and influential of the Wise Men were John McCloy, Robert Lovett, Averell Harriman, Charles Bohlen, George Kennan, and Dean Acheson. Their policies were to last well into the decade of the '70s. It is significant that President Eisenhower as well as the first six Majesty Twelve members from the Government were also members of the Council on Foreign Relations. This gave control of the most secret and powerful group in government to a special-interest club that was itself controlled by the Illuminati.

Thorough researchers will soon discover that not all of the Wise Men attended Harvard or Yale and not all of them were chosen for Skull & Bones or Scroll & Key membership during their college years. You will be able to quickly clear up the mystery by obtaining the book The Wise Men by Walter Isaacson and Evan Thomas, Simon and Schuster, New York. Under illustration #9 in the center of the book you will find the caption: "Lovett with the Yale Unit, above far right, and on the beach: His initiation into Skull and Bones came at an air base near Dunkirk." I have found that members were chosen on an ongoing basis by invitation based upon merit postcollege and were not confined to Harvard or Yale attendees only Because of this fact, a complete list of Skull & Bones members can never be compiled from the catalogues or addresses of the college segment of the Russell Trust, also known as the Brotherhood of Death, or the Skull & Bones. Now you know why it has been impossible to pinpoint the membership either by number or by name. I believe that the answer lies hidden in the CFR files, if files exist.

A chosen few were later initiated into the secret branch of the Order of the Quest known as the JASON Society. They are all members of the Council on Foreign Relations and at that time were known as the Eastern Establishment. This should give you a clue to the far-reaching and serious nature of these most secret college societies. The society is alive and well today, but now includes members of the Trilateral Commission as well. The Trilateralists existed secretly before 1973. The name of the Trilateral Commission was taken from the alien flag known as the Trilateral Insignia. Majesty Twelve was to survive right up to the present day. Under Eisenhower and Kennedy it was erroneously called the 5412 Committee, or more correctly, the Special Group. In the Johnson administration it became the 303 Committee because the name 5412 had been compromised in the book The Secret Government. Actually, NSC 5412/1 was leaked to the author to hide the existence of NSC 5410. Under Nixon, Ford, and Carter it was called the 40 Committee, and under Reagan it became the PI-40 Committee. Over all those years only the name changed.

By 1955 it became obvious that the aliens had deceived Eisenhower and had broken the treaty. Mutilated humans were being found along with mutilated animals across the United States. It was suspected that the aliens were not submitting a complete list of human contacts and abductees to Majesty Twelve and it was suspected that not all abductees had been returned. The Soviet Union was suspected of interacting with them, and this proved to be true. The aliens stated that they had been, and were then, manipulating masses of people through secret societies, witchcraft, magic, the occult, and religion. You must understand that this claim could also be a manipulation. After several Air Force combat air engagements with alien craft it also became apparent that our weapons were no match against them.

In November 1955 NSC-5412/2 was issued establishing a study committee to explore "all factors which are involved in the making and implementing of foreign policy in the nuclear age/' This was only a blanket of snow that covered the real subject of study, the alien question.

By secret Executive Memorandum NSC 5511 in 1954, President Eisenhower had commissioned the study group to "examine all the facts, evidence, lies, and deception and discover the truth of the alien question." NSC 5412/2 was only a cover that had become necessary when the press began inquiring as to the purpose of regular meetings of such important men. The first meetings began in 1954 and were called the Quantico meetings because they met at the Quantico Marine Base. The study group was made up solely of 35 members of the Council on Foreign Relations' secret study group. Dr. Edward Teller was invited to participate. Dr. Zbigniew Brzezinski was the study director for the first 18 months. Dr. Henry Kissinger was chosen as the group's study director for the second 18 months beginning in November 1955. Nelson Rockefeller was a frequent visitor during the study.

THE STUDY GROUP MEMBERS

Gordon Dean, Chairman
Dr. Henry Kissinger, Study Director
Dr. Zbigniew Brzezinski, Study Director
Dr. Edward Teller
Maj. Gen. Richard C. Lindsay
Hanson W. Baldwin
Lloyd V. Berkner
Frank C. Nash
Paul H. Nitze
Charles P. Noyes
Frank Pace, Jr.
James A. Perkins
Don K. Price
David Rockefeller
Oscar M. Ruebhausen
Lt. Gen. James M. Gavin
Caryl P. Haskins
James T. Hill, Jr.
Joseph E. Johnson
Mervin J. Kelly
Frank Altschul
Hamilton Fish Armstrong
Maj. Gen. James McCormack, Jr.
Robert R. Bowie
McGeorge Bundy
William A. M. Burden
John C. Campbell
Thomas K. Finletter
George S. Franklin, Jr.
I.I. Rabi
Roswell L. Gilpatric
N.E. Halaby
Gen. Walter Bedell Smith
Henry DeWolf Smyth
Shields Warren
Carroll L. Wilson
Arnold Wolfers

The second-phase meetings were also held at the Marine base at Quantico, Virginia, and the group became known as Quantico II. Nelson Rockefeller built a retreat somewhere in Maryland for Majesty Twelve and the study committee. It could be reached only by air. In this manner they could meet away from public scrutiny. This secret meeting place is known by the code name "the Country Club." Complete living, eating, recreation, library, and meeting facilities exist at the location. (The Aspen Institute is not the Country Club.)

The study group was publicly terminated in the later months of 1956.

Henry Kissinger wrote what was officially termed the results in 1957 as Nuclear Weapons and Foreign Policy, published for the Council on Foreign Relations by Harper & Brothers, New York. In truth, the manuscript had already been 80% written while Kissinger was at Harvard. The study group continued, veiled in secrecy. A clue to the seriousness Kissinger attached to the study can be found in statements by his wife and friends. Many of them stated that Henry would leave home early each morning and return late each night without speaking to anyone or responding to anyone. It seemed as if he were in another world which held no room for outsiders.

These statements are very revealing. The revelations of the alien presence and actions during the study must have been a great shock. Henry Kissinger was definitely out of character during this time. He would never again be affected in this manner, no matter the seriousness of any subsequent event. On many occasions he would work very late into the night after having already put in a full day. This behavior eventually led to divorce.

A major finding of the alien study was that the public could not be told. It was believed that this would most certainly lead to economic collapse, collapse of the religious structure, and national panic, which could lead into anarchy. Secrecy thus continued. An offshoot of this finding was that if the public could not be told, Congress could not be told. Funding for the projects and research would have to come from outside the Government. In the meantime money was to be obtained from the military budget and from CIA confidential, nonappropriated funds.

Another major finding was that the aliens were using humans and animals for a source of glandular secretions, enzymes, hormonal secretions, blood plasma and possibly in genetic experiments. The aliens explained these actions as necessary to their survival. They stated that their genetic structure had deteriorated and that they were no longer able to reproduce. They stated that if they were unable to improve their genetic structure, their race would soon cease to exist. We looked upon their explanations with extreme suspicion. Since our weapons were literally useless against the aliens, Majesty Twelve decided to continue friendly diplomatic relations until such time as we were able to develop a technology which would enable us to challenge them on a military basis. Overtures would have to be made to the Soviet Union and other nations to join forces for the survival of humanity. In the meantime plans were developed to research and construct two weapons systems using conventional and nuclear technology, which would hopefully bring us to parity.

The results of the research were Projects JOSHUA and EXCALIBUR.

JOSHUA was a weapon captured from the Germans which was capable of shattering 4-inch-thick armor plate at a range of two miles. It used aimed, low-frequency sound waves, and it was believed that this weapon would be effective against the alien craft and beam weapons. EXCALIBUR was a weapon carried by missile not to rise above 30,000 feet above ground level (AGL), not to deviate from designated target more than 50 meters, able to would penetrate "1,000 meters of tufa, hard-packed soil such as that found in New Mexico," carry a one-megaton warhead, and intended for use in destroying the aliens in their underground bases. JOSHUA was developed successfully but never used, to my knowledge. EXCALIBUR was not pushed until recent years and now, we are told, there is an unprecedented effort to develop this weapon. The public would be told that EXCALIBUR would be needed to take out Soviet underground command posts. We know that is not true because one rule of war is that you try not to destroy the leaders. They are needed either to unconditionally surrender or to negotiate terms. Leaders are also needed to ensure peaceful transition of power and the compliance of the populace to all negotiated or dictated terms.

The events at Fatima in the early part of the century were scrutinized. On the suspicion that it was alien manipulation, an intelligence operation was put into motion to penetrate the secrecy surrounding the event. The United States utilized its Vatican moles and soon obtained the entire Vatican study, which included the prophecy. This prophecy stated that if man did not turn from evil and place himself at the feet of Christ the planet would self-destruct and the events described in the book of Revelations would indeed come to pass. The prophecy demanded that Russia be consecrated to the Sacred Heart. It stated that a child would be born who would unite the world with a plan for world peace and a false religion. The people would discern that he was evil and was indeed the Anti-Christ World War III would begin in the Middle East with an invasion of Israel by a United Arab nation using conventional weapons, which would culminate in a nuclear holocaust. Most of the life on this planet would suffer horribly and die as a result. The return of Christ would occur shortly thereafter.

When the aliens were confronted with this finding they confirmed that it was true. The aliens explained that they had created us through genetic manipulation in a laboratory. They stated that they had manipulated the human race through religion, satanism, witchcraft, magic, and the occult. They further explained that they were capable of time travel, and the events would indeed come to pass if the conditions were not met. Later exploitation of alien technology by the United States and the Soviet Union, utilizing time travel in a project named RAINBOW, confirmed the prophecy. The aliens showed a hologram, which they claimed was the actual crucifixion of Christ. The Government filmed the hologram. We did not know whether to believe them. Were they using our GENUINE religions to manipulate us? Or were they indeed the source of our religions with which they had been manipulating us all along? Or was this the beginning scenario of the genuine END TIMES and the RETURN OF CHRIST which had been predicted in the Bible? I DO NOT KNOW THE ANSWER.

A symposium was held in 1957 which was attended by some of the great scientific minds then living. They reached the conclusion that by, or shortly after, the year 2000 the planet WOULD self-destruct due to increased population and man's exploitation of the environment WITHOUT ANY HELP FROM GOD OR THE ALIENS.

By secret Executive order of President Eisenhower, the JASON Scholars were ordered to study this scenario and make recommendations from their findings. The JASON Society CONFIRMED the finding of the scientistts and made three recommendations called ALTERNATIVES 1,2, and 3.

Alternative 1 was to use nuclear devices to blast holes in the stratosphere from which the heat and pollution could escape into space. They would then change the human cultures from that of exploitation into cultures of environmental protection. Of the three this was decided to be the least likely to succeed due to the inherent nature of man and the additional damage the nuclear explosions would themselves create. The existence of a hole in the ozone layer may indicate that Alternative 1 might have been attempted. This is, however, only conjecture.

Alternative 2 was to build a vast network of underground cities and tunnels in which a select representation of all cultures and occupations would survive and carry on the human race. The rest of humanity would be left to fend for themselves on the surface of the planet. We know that these facilities have been built and are ready and waiting for the chosen few to be notified.

Alternative 3 was to exploit the alien and conventional technology in order for a select few to leave the earth and establish colonies in outer space. I am not able to either confirm or deny the existence of "batch consignments" of human slaves, which would be used for the manual labor as a part of the plan. The Moon, code-named ADAM, was the object of primary interest, followed by the planet Mars, code-named EVE. I am now in possession of official NASA photographs of one of the moon bases. I believe that the Mars colony is also a reality.

As a delaying action, ALL THREE ALTERNATIVES included birth control, sterilization, and the introduction of deadly microbes to control or slow the growth of the Earth's population. AIDS is only ONE result of these plans. It was decided BY THE ELITE that since the population must be reduced and controlled, it would be in the best interest of the human race to rid ourselves of the undesirable elements of our society. Specific targeted populations included BLACKS, HISPANICS, and HOMOSEXUALS. The joint U.S. and Soviet leadership dismissed Alternative 1 but ordered work to begin on Alternatives 2 and 3 virtually at the same time.

In 1959 the Rand Corporation hosted a Deep Underground Construction Symposium. In the symposium report, machines are pictured and described which could bore a tunnel 45 feet in diameter at the rate of 5 feet per hour in 1959. It also displays pictures of huge tunnels and underground vaults containing what appear to be complex facilities and possibly even cities. It appears that the previous five years of all-out underground construction had made significant progress by that time.

The ruling powers decided that one means of funding the alien-connected and other "black" projects was to corner the illegal drug market. The English and French had established a historical precedent when they exploited the opium trade in the Far East and used it to fill their coffers and gain a solid foothold in China and Viet Nam, respectively.

A young ambitious member of the Council on Foreign Relations was approached. His name is George Bush, who at the time was the president and CEO of the offshore division of Zapata Oil, based in Texas. Zapata Oil was experimenting with the new technology of offshore drilling. It was correctly thought that the drugs could be shipped from South America to the offshore platforms by fishing boat, to be taken from there to shore by the normal transportation used for supplies and personnel. By this method no customs or law enforcement agency would subject the cargo to search.

George Bush agreed to help, and organized the operation in conjunction with the CIA. The plan worked better than anyone had dreamed. It has since expanded worldwide. There are now many other methods of bringing the illegal drugs into the country. It must always be remembered that George Bush began the sale of drugs to our children. The CIA now controls most of the world's illegal drug markets.

The official space program was boosted by President Kennedy in his inaugural address when he mandated that the United States put a man on the Moon before the end of the decade. Although innocent in its conception, this mandate enabled those in charge to funnel vast amounts of money into black projects and conceal the REAL space program from the American people. A similar program in the Soviet Union served the same purpose. In fact, a joint alien, United States, and Soviet Union base existed on the Moon at the very moment Kennedy spoke the words.

On May 22,1962, a space probe landed on Mars and confirmed the existence of an environment which could support life. Not long afterward the construction of a colony on the planet Mars began in earnest. Today I believe a colony exists on Mars populated by specially selected people from different cultures and occupations taken from all over the Earth. A public charade of antagonism between the Soviet Union and the United States has been maintained over all these years in order to fund projects in the name of national defense when in fact we are the closest allies.

At some point President Kennedy discovered portions of the truth

concerning the drugs and the aliens. He issued an ultimatum in 1963 to Majesty Twelve. President Kennedy assured them that if they did not clean up the drug problem, he would. He informed Majesty Twelve that he intended to reveal the presence of aliens to the American people within the following year, and ordered a plan developed to implement his decision, President Kennedy was not a member of the Council on Foreign Relations and knew nothing of Alternative 2 or Alternative 3. (Although some researchers claim JFK was a member of the CFR, I can find no legitimate list with his name upon it.) Internationally, the operations were supervised by the Bilderberg elite committee known as the Policy Committee. In the United States they were supervised by the executive committee of the CFR and in the Soviet Union by its sister organization. President Kennedy's decision struck fear into the hearts of those in charge. His assassination was ordered by the Policy Committee and the order was carried out by agents in Dallas. President John F. Kennedy was murdered by the Secret Service agent who drove his car in the motorcade and the act is plainly visible in the Zapruder film. WATCH THE DRIVER AND NOT KENNEDY WHEN YOU VIEW THE FILM. All of the witnesses who were close enough to the car to see William Greer shoot Kennedy were themselves all murdered within two years of the event. The Warren Commission was a farce, and Council on Foreign Relations members made up the majority of its panel. They succeeded in snowing the American people.
Many other patriots who attempted to reveal the alien secret have also been murdered throughout the intervening years. At the present time over 200 material witnesses or people actually involved with the assassination are dead. The odds against this happening are so high that no one has been able to calculate them. The odds against the first 18 to die within two years of the assassination were calculated at one hundred thousand trillion to one. You can order a copy of the film by sending $30 + $4 postage & handling to William Cooper, 19744 Beach Blvd., Suite 301, Huntington Beach, California 92648.

In December 19881 had a phone conversation during which I told John Lear what I had seen in the Navy concerning the Kennedy assassination. I told him that the Top Secret documents stated that the act was plainly visible in a film withheld from the public. I told John that I had been looking for a film that showed Greer shoot JFK for 16 years but had not found one. I was shocked and very pleasantly surprised when John asked me, "Would you like to see it?" I, of course, replied in the affirmative and John invited Annie and me to his home in Las Vegas. We spent four days with John. He not only showed me the film but gave me a video copy. I showed the video whenever I spoke to a group of people. The film is titled Dallas Revisited, John told me that he obtained it from a CIA acquaintance whom he was not at liberty to name. I later found out the originator of that version of the Zapruder film was Lars Hansson. John Lear was showing the film at every meeting that he conducted.

Shortly after Lear gave me a copy of the film, Lars Hansson called and asked if he could drop by to meet with me at my home in Fullerton, California. I told him he could and asked him to bring a better copy of the film if he had one. Lars said that he would. He stated that he would also bring a film on a man named Bo Gritz, of whom I had never heard. Mr. Hansson informed me that he had made the video for Bo Gritz and John Lear and that both were using it in their lectures. I found out much later that Bo Gritz was selling the tape for $10 per copy.

Lars came to the house, brought the films on videotape and we spoke for about an hour. His main purpose was to tell me that he wanted me to expose people to the film but did not want me to connect him to the film in any manner. I agreed not to divulge the source and I kept my word. I began to use the tape in my lectures. When I found out that Bo Gritz was making it available, I bowed to public pressure and also made it available.

Some time later I read an L.A.-based newsletter (forgot the name) in which Lars Hansson stated that he did not know that I had the film and did not know that I was showing it at lectures. Hansson stated in the newsletter that he was at my Hollywood High lecture on November 5,1989, and that he tried to protest my use of it during the question-and-answer period but that he never had a chance to be recognized. We videotaped that event, and at the end I asked anyone with questions or comments to walk to a microphone that we had placed in the aisle. I have examined every inch of that videotape and Lars Hansson never got up from his seat, nor did he ever raise his hand, nor did he attempt in any way to be recognized.

Lars later called me again and asked me not to use his voice on the tape, his voice where he says with no hesitation or qualification whatsoever, as he narrates the videotape, "The driver of the car turns with his left arm over his right shoulder with a pistol and fires. You see the .45 automatic, .45-caliber nickel-plated automatic weapon in his left hand, He's firing over his right shoulder; you see it in relief. You see his head pointing backwards towards the President. In this enhanced close-up you see the impact of the bullet upon the President. The force of the shot drives him violently backward against the back of the seat. You see Mrs. Kennedy react in horror." Then later in the film Lars Hansson makes this statement: "You can clearly see his [the driver's] head turning and his arm, and the weapon extending into view over his right shoulder." I agreed not to use his voice. In subsequent lectures I showed the tape with no audio. As it turned out, people were able to see it better with no narration.

It is important that you understand the above, because in the late summer of 1990, after I had been showing the film for over a year and a half, Lars Hansson began to show up on radio proclaiming that Greer, the driver, did not shoot the President. Lars Hansson showed up at my fall 1990 Beverly Hills High School lecture and disrupted the lecture, yelling out taunts and otherwise making an ass out of himself. When the lecture ended he accosted people in the lobby and, along with David Lifton, attempted to convince members of the audience that they didn't really see Greer shoot Kennedy. To their credit most of the audience told Hansson and Lifton to stick it where the sun don't shine. Once people see it with their own eyes they can no longer be fooled. Hansson, Lifton, Grodin, and the other agents of the Secret Government are running out of time. Americans are catching on to the scam. I shudder to think what will happen to these people when Americans finally get angry. Do not forget that Lear informed me that his source for the film was a CIA agent who later turned out to be Lars Hansson.

Hansson later claimed that I violated his copyright. He had no copyright. Hansson himself had violated someone's copyright by making the film and giving it to me, Lear, and Gritz. I didn't and still don't give a damn about copyright on THIS particular film. If I did, no one would ever know who really killed our President.

Bo Gritz stated on radio that he felt exactly the same way. Hansson never attacked Lear or Gritz, who still show the tape, and Gritz still makes it available. I wonder why? Are Lear, Hansson and Gritz working together?

Robert Grodin then entered the picture. He publicly challenged me to appear and debate him. He claimed that he had a copy of the Zapruder film showing that Greer never took his hands off the wheel of the car. Grodin is an active secret government agent whose job it is to confuse the public and perpetuate the cover-up.

I called Bob Grodin and accepted his challenge. I invited him to appear with me at Beverly Hills High School and show his film. I would show my film. The audience would decide. He refused. He refused because he knows what I know, that the audience would boo him out of town. Grodin knows that Greer shot Kennedy because he is part of the cover-up.

Bob Grodin is the same Bob Grodin who claims to be the world's foremost independent photo-interpretation expert. Bob Grodin has NO photographic education whatsoever. He has never worked with photography. Bob Grodin has never been a photographic interpreter in his life. He has been lying to the public about his credentials for all these years and no one even checked; not even Congress checked his credentials when they hired him. Do you really think that was an accident? I HAVE A DEGREE IN PHOTOGRAPHY.

Bob Grodin is the same Bob Grodin who was hired by the House Select Committee on Assassinations in 1976. He is the same Bob Grodin who blatantly lied to the committee and told them that the driver, William Greer, never took his hands off the wheel. His job is to write books and confuse you. His job is to maintain the position that the government lied and that there was a conspiracy. His job is also to prevent you from knowing the truth about who did kill the President. You cannot welcome the New World Order if you have faith in your government. You WILL have faith in your government if you learn that Greer killed Kennedy on orders of the Illuminati and that it had nothing to do with the legal, Constitutional government. Did you know that the man who was in charge of the Secret Service at the time of the assassination became the man in charge of security for the Rockefeller family upon his retirement? Well, now you know. You should also know that Bob Grodin is a friend of Leslie Watkins, and it is Bob Grodin's name that Watkins uses as the alias of the astronaut cited in Alternative 003. Did you know that when Ricky White made appearances on talk radio across the country to say that his father killed Kennedy, that Bob Grodin accompanied him? Did you know that every time a caller asked Ricky White a question, Grodin answered for him? Do you really believe that is a coincidence? Ricky White's father did not kill Kennedy.

For years I have been telling people and audiences about the discrepancies between the doctors' reports in Dallas and the autopsy report made at Bethesda Naval Hospital. I have revealed that the wounds were tampered with and changed. I have been telling the world that the body was removed from its casket aboard the plane and was taken out the galley door and onto a marine helicopter, and that the body arrived at Bethesda Naval Hospital a full 30 minutes before the empty official casket. I have stated that the President's brain had disappeared and told why it had disappeared.

All of a sudden David Lifton appeared on radio and TV in 1990 telling the world that he had NEW evidence that he had discovered. Every bit of his new evidence was exactly what I had been telling people for years. It was the same information that I had told Bob Swan in 1972. Lifton showed up at my lecture at Beverly Hills High School. After making a scene at the box office because he had to pay, Lifton accosted anyone who ventured into the lobby, and along with Lars Hansson, attempted to convince them that they did not see Greer shoot Kennedy. Legitimate people would never have resorted to such disgraceful and discrediting behavior. My testimony and the public's outrage after seeing the murder of President Kennedy with their own eyes, has seriously damaged the cover-up. The behavior of Grodin, Lifton, and Hansson reveals the degree of damage. The public can now see without any doubt that they are either part of the cover-up or that they are totally incompetent researchers, and in the case of Grodin, a bare-faced liar who may have committed treason.

In the middle of all this, "Hard Copy" TV magazine called me and wanted to see the film. I showed them the film and they were shocked, excited and wanted an exclusive. I gave it to them but told them that I doubted that it would ever get on the air. A date was arranged to film an episode for airing, but just before we were scheduled to go on camera an NBC executive called the Los Angeles studios of "Hard Copy" and told them not to air the film. I tried to find out the name of the executive, but no luck. That was the end of that. The producer that had tried to air my story and the Kennedy film is no longer with "Hard Copy." Her name is Bubs Hopper.

I was approached by another producer (don't remember his name) from "Inside Edition," another TV magazine, who told me that Americans needed to see the film. I agreed to be on the show but told him the same thing, that I did not believe it would ever air. A week later I was listening to David Lifton on a radio talk show. Someone called in and asked David if he knew who I was and David Lifton said, "I know who he is and we have a surprise for Mr. Cooper. We are going to put him away for good on a national TV show. We are going to get a full accounting from that guy." I had someone call the producer and cancel because he had lied to me. He pleaded to have me on. I relayed through this intermediary that I would appear only if I could have editorial control to make sure that he did not edit the segment to ridicule the film. He refused, and I then knew his intention all along had been to discredit me. When the segment aired, Lars Hansson was used as a stand-in, in my place. Hansson, the man who had been attacking me, stating that Greer had not fired at Kennedy, was now on TV stating that Greer killed Kennedy! The reason became obvious, as they had Bob Grodin on the next segment. Grodin ridiculed and debunked Hansson and the film. They had intended to do a hatchet job on me, but when I cancelled they could attack the film only with Hansson taking my place. It had every earmark of an agency operation. It didn't work.

I discovered the next ploy when on radio Grodin stated that he would soon (finally) release a video of his so-called pristine copy of the Zapruder film overexposed to bring out detail in the shadows. Overexposure would completely wash out Greer's arm and the gun, which are both in full sunlight and have the effect of rendering both invisible to the viewer. hope that people are not as stupid as Grodin thinks they are. I will debate anyone at any time as long as it's in front of a live audience and nothing is edited. I have seen what a film editor can do to make people seem to say and do things that were never said or done.

* * * * *

During the United States' initial space exploration and the Moon landings every launch was accompanied by alien craft. On November 20, 1990, Los Angeles TV Channel 2 announced that a separate, red, glowing, round-shaped object accompanied the space shuttle Atlantis on its latest classified military mission. That was the first public admission.

A Moon base, Luna, was photographed by the Lunar Orbiter and filmed by the Apollo astronauts. Domes, spires, tall round structures which look like silos, huge T-shaped mining vehicles that left stitchlike tracks in the lunar surface, and extremely large as well as small alien craft appear in the official NASA photographs. It is a joint United States and Soviet base: The space program is a farce and an unbelievable waste of money. Alternative 3 is a reality. It is not science fiction.

The Apollo astronauts were severely shaken by this experience, and their lives and subsequent statements reflect the depth of the revelation and the effect of the muzzle order which followed. They were ordered to remain silent or suffer the extreme penalty, death, which was termed an "expediency." One astronaut actually did talk to the British producers of the TV expos) "Alternative 003." It was aired on the documentary, nonfiction program named "Science Report," confinning many of the allegations.

In the book Alternative 003 the pseudonym "Bob Grodin" was used in place of the astronaut's identity. (The real Bob Grodin is a friend of Leslie Watkins and is a part of the Kennedy assassination cover-up.) It was also stated that the astronaut committed suicide in 1978. This cannot be validated by any source, and I believe that several so-called facts in the book are really disinformation. I firmly believe that this disinformation is a result of pressure put upon the authors and is meant to nullify the effect upon the populace of the British TV expose "Alternative 3."

The headquarters of the international conspiracy is in Geneva, Switzerland. The ruling body is made up of three committees consisting of thirteen members each, and all three together comprise the 39 members of the executive committee of the body known as the Bilderberg Group. The most important and powerful of the three committees is the Policy Committee. (It is more than interesting to note that the United States had thirteen original colonies and that 39 delegates from those colonies signed the Constitution after it was written and adopted in the first Constitutional Convention. Do you believe that is coincidence?) Policy Committee meetings are held on a nuclear submarine beneath the polar icecap. A Soviet sub and an American sub join at an airlock and the meeting is convened. The secrecy is such that this was the only method which would ensure that the meetings could not be bugged.

I can say that the book Alternative 003 is at least 70% true from my own knowledge and the knowledge of my sources. I believe that the disinformation was an attempt to compromise the British TV expos) with information that could be proven false, just as the "Eisenhower Briefing Document," which was released here in the United States under the contingency plan Majestic Twelve, can also be proven false.

Since our interaction with the aliens began we have come into possession of technology beyond our wildest dreams. We currently have, and fly, atomic-powered antigravity-type craft in Nevada. Our pilots have made interplanetary voyages in these craft and have been to the Moon, Mars, and other lanets. We have been lied to about the true nature of the Moon, the planets Mars and Venus, and the real state of technology that we possess today, at this very moment.

There are areas on the Moon where plant life grows and even changes color with the seasons. This seasonal effect is because the Moon does not, as claimed, always present the exact same side to the Earth or the Sun. The Moon has several man-made lakes and ponds upon its surface, and clouds have been observed and filmed in its atmosphere. It possesses a gravitational field — and man can walk upon its surface without a space suit, breathing from an oxygen bottle after undergoing decompression, the same as any deep-sea diver!

I have the official NASA photographs. Some of them were published in the books We Discovered Alien Bases on the Moon by Fred Steckling and

Someone Else Is on the Moon. In 1969 a confrontation broke out between the Soviets and Americans at the lunar base. The Soviets attempted to take control of the base and held American scientists and personnel hostage. We were able to restore order but not before 66 people were killed. The Soviets were suspended from the program for a period of two years. A reconciliation eventually took place and once again we began to interact.

Today the alliance continues. The Archuleta Mesa underground-base confrontation scenario is pure disinformation put out to confuse the issue. I knew that a confrontation had taken place but could not remember the details. John Lear had convinced me that aliens and Delta forces had fought at the Archuleta base. (The New World Order must have an enemy from outer space.) Later, when I used regressive hypnosis to improve my memory, the true facts emerged. To my knowledge the only hostility between aliens and humans was provoked by the U.S. military when they were ordered to shoot down UFOs in order to capture technology.

John Lear also says that we invented AIDS in order to kill blood-sucking aliens and that we are only containers for souls. This is hogwash! It is a clear vote for the "aliens do not exist" theory.

When the Watergate scandal broke, President Nixon was confident that he could not be impeached. Majesty Twelve had a different agenda. Nixon was ordered to resign, the intelligence community rightfully concluding that an impeachment trial would open up the files and bare the secrets to the public eye. He refused. The first military coup ever to take place in the United States was carried out. The Joint Chiefs of Staff sent a Top Secret message to the Commanders of all the U.S. armed forces throughout the world. It stated, "Upon receipt of this message you will no longer carry out any orders from the White House. Acknowledge receipt." This message was sent a full five days before Nixon conceded and announced publicly that he would resign.

I saw the message. When I asked my commanding officer what he would do, as obviously the order violated the Constitution, I was told: "I guess I will wait to see if any orders come from the White House, and then I will decide/' I did not see any communication from the White House but that does not mean that none was sent. I have confirmation from three additional sources, all ex-military, who wrote or called to state that they saw the exact same order. These people are Randall Terpstra, ex-Navy; David Race, ex-Air Force; and Donald Campbell, ex-Navy. The transcript of a taped phone conversation between the author and Mr. Terpstra is presented as Chapter 11 of this book, and the signed statements of the others can be found in the Appendix.

During all the years that this has been happening the Congress and the

American people have seemed to know instinctively that something was not right. When the Watergate scandal surfaced they jumped on the bandwagon and everyone thought that the agencies would be cleaned out. President Ford organized the Rockefeller Commission to do the job. His real purpose was to head off Congress and keep the cover-up going. Nelson Rockefeller, who headed the commission investigating the intelligence community, was a member of the Council on Foreign Relations and the one who helped Eisenhower build the Majesty Twelve power structure. Rockefeller uncovered only enough to keep the hounds at bay. He threw the Congress a few bones and the cover-up rolled merrily along as always.

Later Senator Church would conduct the famous Church hearings. He also was a prominent member of the Council on Foreign Relations, and he merely repeated the Rockefeller act. Again the cover-up prevailed. When the Iran-Contra affair emerged, we thought this time it had to come gushing out. Wrong again. Despite mountains of documents pointing to drug smuggling and other hidden monsters, the cover-up sailed on. The Congress even seemed to go out of its way to duck the real issues. As mentioned earlier, one of the most serious facts uncovered is that North was involved in preparing a plan to suspend the Constitution of the United States of America. When Congressman Jack Brooks of Texas attempted to probe the issue he was silenced by the committee chairman. Could it be that Congress knows the whole thing and won't touch it? Are they among the select who have been picked for the Mars colony when the Earth begins

to destruct, if the Earth is going to destruct?

I cannot even begin to outline the entire financial empire controlled by the CIA, the NSA, and the Council on Foreign Relations, which in turn control and launder the money from drugs and other intelligence community proprietary ventures; but I can give you a beginning. The amount of money is beyond anything you can imagine and is hidden in a vast network of banks and holding companies. You should first begin to look at the J. Henry Schroder Banking Corporation, the Schroder Trust Company, Schroders Ltd. (London), Helbert Wagg Holdings Ltd., J. Henry Schroder-Wagg & Co. Ltd., Schroder Gerbruder and Company (Germany), Schroder

Munchmeyer Gengst and Company, Castle Bank and its holding companies, the Asian Development Bank, and the Nugan Hand octopus of banks and holding companies.

A contingency plan was formulated by Majesty Twelve to throw every
one off the trail should they come close to the truth. The plan was known
as MAJESTIC TWELVE. It was implemented with the release by Moore,
Shandera, and Friedman of the purported Eisenhower Briefing Document.
The document is a fraud, because it is numbered 092447, a number which

does not exist and will not exist for quite a long time at the present rate. Truman wrote Executive orders in the 9000 range; Eisenhower's were in the 10,000 range; Ford was up to the 11,000 bracket; and Reagan reached only into the 12,000s. Executive orders are numbered consecutively, no matter who occupies the White House, for reasons of continuity, record keeping, and to prevent confusion. This red herring has thrown the entire research community off the trail for several years and has resulted in the wasted expenditure of money looking for information which does not exist.

The Washington D.C.-based Fund for UFO Research headed by Bruce Maccabee has committed what I believe to be criminal fraud in connection with the Eisenhower Briefing Document, Stanton Friedman, and the research team of Moore, Shandera, and Friedman. Maccabee solicited funds from people, promising to use those funds to investigate Moore's, Shandera's, and Friedman's claims and prove the Eisenhower Briefing Document to be genuine or fake. Instead he gave the entire $16,000 to Stanton Friedman and assigned HIM the task of establishing or destroying his own validity. What a snow job! People in the UFO community fell for the scam and eagerly awaited Stanton Friedman's findings. Of course, Friedman found that the documents were genuine. Just what did people think he would find? HE WAS GIVEN $16,000 TO INVESTIGATE HIMSELF! IT IS UNETHICAL. IT IS A CLEAR CONFLICT OF INTEREST. I SINCERELY BELIEVE IT TO BE CRIMINAL FRAUD, since money was taken in the process. Those who donated money in good faith should immediately bring suit against Stanton Friedman, Bruce Maccabee and the Fund for UFO Research. This farce resulted in the total waste of $16,000. Many thousands of man hours have gone down a rathole. If you doubt the secret government's ability to lead you through the rose garden, you had better think again.

Another plan is in force. It is the plan to prepare the public for eventual confrontation with an alien race. It could also intend to make you believe in an alien race that may not exist. The public is being bombarded with movies, radio, advertising, and TV programs depicting almost every aspect of the purported true nature of an alien presence. This includes the good and the bad. Look around and pay attention. Someone is planning to make their presence known and the government is preparing you for it. They do not want any panic. The unprecedented number of sightings worldwide indicates that public exposure is not far off. Never in history have there been so many incidents involving UFOs and never in history have there been so many official acknowledgments.

For many years the Secret Government has been importing drugs and selling them to the people, mainly the poor and minorities. Social welfare programs were put into place to create a dependent, nonworking element in our society. The government then began to remove these programs to force people into a criminal class that did not exist in the '50s and '60s.

The government encouraged the manufacture and importation of military firearms for the criminals to use. This is intended to foster a feeling of insecurity, which would lead the American people to voluntarily disarm themselves by passing laws against firearms. Using drugs and hypnosis on mental patients in a process called Orion, the CIA inculcated the desire in these people to open fire on schoolyards and thus inflame the antigun lobby. This plan is well under way, and so far is working perfectly. The middle class is begging the government to do away with the 2nd amendment.

Author's Note: I have found that these events have indeed happened all over the country. In every instance that I have investigated — the incident at the women's school in Canada, the shopping center incident in Canada, the Stockton, California, massacre, and the murder of Rabbi Meir Kahane — the shooters were all ex-mental patients or were current mental patients who were ALL ON THE DRUG PROZAC! This drug, when taken in certain doses, increases the serotonin level in the patient, causing extreme violence. Couple that with a posthypnotic suggestion or control through an electronic brain implant or microwave or E.L.F. intrusion and you get mass murder, ending in every case with the suicide of the perpetrator. Exhume the bodies of the murderers and check for a brain implant. I think you are going to be surprised. In every case the name of the murderer's doctor or mental treatment facility has been withheld. I believe we will be able to establish intelligence-community connections and/or connections to known CIA experimental mind-control programs when we finally discover who these doctors of death really are.

Due to the wave of crime sweeping the nation, the media will convince the American people that a state of anarchy exists within the major cities. They are now building their case almost nightly on TV and daily in the newspapers. When public opinion has been won to this idea, they intend to state that a terrorist group armed with a nuclear weapon has entered the United States and that they plan to detonate this device in one of our cities. (This is now being set up by the crisis in the Middle East.) The Government will then suspend the Constitution and declare martial law. The secret alien army of implanted humans and all dissidents, which translates into anyone they choose, will be rounded up and placed in the one-mile-square concentration camps which already exist. Are the people whom they intend to place in these concentration camps destined to make up the reported "batch consignments" of slave labor needed by the space colonies?

The media — radio, TV, newspapers, and computer networks — will be nationalized and seized. Anyone who resists will be taken or killed. This entire operation was rehearsed by the government and military in 1984 under the code name REX-84A and it went off without a hitch. When these events have transpired, the SECRET GOVERNMENT and/or ALIEN takeover will be complete. Your freedom will never be returned and you will live in slavery for the remainder of your life. You had better wake up and you had better do it now!

Philip Klass is an agent of the CIA. This was stated in the documents I saw between 1970 and 1973. One of his jobs as an aviation expert was to debunk everything to do with UFOs. All military commanders were instructed to call him to gain information on how to debunk and/or explain UFO contacts and/or sightings to the public and/or the press if and when the need arose. Some people seem to love Klass. They encourage him and heap large doses of attention upon him. He is invited to speak at UFO events and is quoted in papers, books, and newspapers as being the expert on "what really happened."

Philip Klass is not operating in our best interest. His debunkings and explanations of UFO sightings are so full of holes that a six-year-old child should be able to discern his true purpose. I have seen poor misled people actually ask Klass for his autograph, an act similar in magnitude to Elliot Ness asking Al Capone for his autograph. I have found that in many instances the secret elect are absolutely right when they state that "people who will not use their intelligence are no better than animals who do not have intelligence. Such people are beasts of burden and steaks on the table by choice and consent." (Quote from "Silent Weapons for Quiet Wars" in Chapter Two). We get exactly what we deserve in most instances.

William Moore, Jaimie Shandera, and Stanton Friedman are witting (with full knowledge, understanding, and consent) agents of the Secret Government. William Moore's reported use of a Defense Investigative Service ID card and his reported self-confession to Lee Graham that he is an agent of the government confirmed it. (Lee Graham phoned me at my home, and when asked, confirmed that Moore had indeed shown him a Defense Investigative Service ID.) Moore's later confession proved it without any doubt.

Author's Note: On July 1,1989, the night before I presented this paper at the MUFON symposium in Las Vegas, William Moore admitted that he was a government agent, that he had released disinformation to researchers, that had falsified documents, that he had spied upon researchers and reported information concerning those researchers to the intelligence community, that he had helped in a counterintelligence operation against Paul Bennewicz that resulted in Mr. Bennewicz's commitment to a mental institution, and that he had done all this with full knowledge of what he was doing. He is either a traitor or a stone-hearted manipulator at best.

Some of the self-appointed "ufologists" still look up to Moore, and still cite his research in their correspondence, papers, and books. This reflects a degree of ignorance and stupidity in the UFO community. Bruce Maccabee wrote a letter to Caveat Emptor citing articles from William Moore's publication, Focus, as proof that I am discredited. Dream on. It is no mystery to me why mainstream America calls ufologists whackos, loonies, and nuts. In some cases they are.

Jaime Shandera is the man responsible for my loss of employment as the Executive Director of National Technical College. Shortly after going public, Shandera showed up at the college wearing a brown suit and carrying a briefcase. He ignored the receptionist's attempts to help him. She informed me that a man had walked into the college and appeared to ne inspecting the building and classrooms. I found Mr. Shandera peering into the word-processing classroom. I asked him if I could be of any help. He said no and ignored me. I explained that I was the Executive Director and again asked if I could be of any help. Again he said no but gave me some very hard stares and appeared to have been taken off guard. He seemed to be extremely nervous and immediately left the building. I followed him out the door, and a man across the street snapped my picture with a 35mm camera. I watched as Jaime Shandera walked to his car, took one last look at me and then drove away. A few days later he repeated the act, only this time he told me that he had seen an ad that the college was for sale and he was looking over the property. I saw him again, coming out of the corporate offices. When he saw me he again became extremely nervous and hurried to his car, took off his jacket before getting in and then drove off. A few minutes later I was called to the President's office and told that the college could not use anyone who could jeopardize the status of government assistance by getting involved with flying saucers. I knew wthat had happened and tendered my resignation effective April 15,1989. I had no intention of stopping my activities and I did not wish to hurt the college or the students who depended so much on government aid programs. All this time Shandera thought he had pulled it off anonymously, but I and several others have always known that it was he. Now you know. Jaime Shandera was positively identified by me, the Security Department Head, and the receptionist. Later I obtained another positive identification from the Vice President in charge of Admissions. John Lear was at that time the only person who knew the name and address of my place of employment. I later found out by body-proportion comparison analysis and voice-print analysis that John Lear is the agent dubbed "Condor" on the CIA-backed TV production of "UFO Cover-up Live." As Condor, he is in reality a government agent who has been working with Moore, Shandera, Friedman, John Grace, Bob Lazar, and others all along. They are CIA all the way.

Stanton Friedman has told me and others that years ago he "helped develop a nuclear reactor to power an aircraft that was the size of a basketball, was clean, turned out hydrogen, and worked like a dream" (his words, not mine). Several others have written me to say that they also were told the same thing by Mr. Friedman. Roger Scherrer is one who remembers Stanton relating to him this same story. The only fuel which could go into such an engine and produce hydrogen as a byproduct is water, and that is precisely what at least one type of alien craft uses — nuclear energy and water, according to the documentation I read while in Naval Intelligence. Is he really unwitting? I seriously doubt it. He was a member of the Moore, Shandera, and Friedman research team, and it was they who implemented the MAJESTIC TWELVE contingency plan.

In documents that I read between 1970 and 1973, the names of individuals were listed who had been targeted for recruitment. These documents stated that these people were to be coerced, using patriotism as a motivating force whenever possible. If necessary, financial assistance would be provided through employment with a proprietary front company or through grants. This is, coincidentally, the method by which Friedman got his $16,000 from another agent, Bruce Maccabee. We have also found that Moore has received money for research from at least two CIA front companies. This has been confirmed by the research of Grant Cameron. Others named on the list were cited as active intelligence-agency assets. When I first presented this paper I gave only a partial list of those named in the Naval Intelligence documents. Following are as many names as I can remember. (There may be more, but these are all that I can recall at this time.)

Stanton Friedman, CIA; John Lear, CIA (Lear's father was named as having participated in antigravity research); William Moore; John Keel; Charles Berlitz; Bruce Maccabee, ONI (Office of Naval Intelligence); Linda Moulton Howe; Philip Klass, CIA; James Moseley, CIA (Moseley's father was discussed in a very complimentary manner); Virgil Armstrong, CIA (listed as Postlethwaite); Wendelle Stevens, CIA; Dr. J. Allen Hynek, CIA.

That is the list as I remember it. There may have been others, but I cannot recall. I know of other agents who were not on the list. You must remember that when I first wrote this paper I thought that Bruce Maccabee might not have been recruited, but then later he proved me wrong when he gave Stanton Friedman $16,000 to investigate himself.

There was a two-word code that these people were to use to identify each other. The first word was a color and the second word was a bird. The code was "Gold Eagle." When Stanton Friedman first contacted me he used the code. I pretended ignorance but he asked me several times if I had ever seen or heard of Gold Eagle. John Lear also asked me if I had ever heard of Gold Eagle. He too was testing me. They knew that I had access to correct information and were attempting to determine if I were one of them. As George Bush would say, "Read my lips." I was never one of you. I will never be one of you.

When I talked to Stan Deyo in Australia by phone, he told me the code given to him was "Blue Falcon." Stan was a victim of mind-control experimentation while a cadet at the Air Force Academy. He and over 80 other cadet mind-control subjects resigned from the academy in protest. He has been on a crusade to discover the truth ever since. Stan has written two excellent books, The Cosmic Conspiracy, and The Vindicator Scrolls. I recommend you read them both.

I think that Linda Moulton Howe may be innocent of witting involvement. Linda in particular seems to have exercised extreme care in what she has presented to the public. Her research is excellent. I was impressed when she confided to me that Sgt. Richard Doty of the Counterintelligence Division of the Air Force Office of Special Investigations had taken her into the Intelligence office at Kirtland Air Force Base in New Mexico and showed her the exact same documents that I had seen while in the Navy. She even saw the same information on the Kennedy assassination naming Greer as the assassin. Ms. Howe is also the only person in the world outside of the intelligence community who knows the truth as I know it regarding Operation MAJORITY. She has exercised good judgment and great restraint in not revealing the contents of those documents to the public. It is for this reason that I believe that an attempt has been made to use her. Fortunately, Linda did not fall off a turnip truck and she didn't play the game. I recommend you read her book entitled Alien Harvest. You should be able to order it from any good bookstore.

I have discovered that Whitley Strieber is a CIA asset, as is Budd Hopkins. Strieber's book Majestic has convicted him with those of us in the know. It is the true story of the Roswell crash taken from the confiscated diaries of James Forrestal. That is, assuming that the documents that I saw in the Navy were not a hoax. I do not believe that they were. The names of people and names of projects and operations have been changed in Strieber's book, but other than that the information and documentation is true. The autopsy reports are exactly the same that I saw in Project GRUDGE 18 years ago.

I have recently come into possession of an affidavit that is signed, notarized, and sworn under penalty of perjury from an M.D. in New York stating that the M.D. was recruited by a CIA agent named Budd Hopkins to help work with abductees for the CIA. The affidavit is included in the Appendix. I knew that Hopkins was not right when I met him in Modesto. He could not look me in the eyes, and anyone who cannot look me in the eyes is not right. He spent the whole time, including his speech, trying to convince people of the innocence of the abductee experience and the absence of the aliens' malevolence, which was a total crock. It was an insult to anyone who had investigated abductees.

I know that all of the major UFO research organizations were targeted for infiltration and control by the Secret Government, just as NICAP was infiltrated and controlled. In fact, NICAP was eventually destroyed from within. I know that these efforts have been successful.

MUFON is a great example. Hundreds of members all over the world conduct investigations and send in physical evidence to MUFON headquarters, where it quickly disappears. Everyone screams for physical evidence as proof. Recently samples were collected of a liquid that had dripped from a saucer onto a schoolyard in Gulf Breeze, Florida. The samples were sent to MUFON, where they immediately vanished. Walt Andrus has stated that it was an accident. BALONEY! This is not the first time MUFON has "lost" evidence. I consider MUFON the great black hole of the UFO community. The control of information is so tight that nothing escapes. Anyone who tells it like it really is, is debunked and barred from symposiums. The members are told what to believe and what not to believe. The members do not seem to know that they are being controlled. The members of the MUFON board of directors and the members of the advisory board of consultants are for the most part supported by the Government in the form of salaries, grants, or retirement checks. Who can believe that this does not constitute a conflict of interest? Who can investigate and expose the hand that feeds them? How can you possibly believe the Government could not control the people to whom it funnels money? MONEY IS THE BASIC METHOD OF CONTROL.

The major UFO publications are without any doubt controlled and are most probably, as in the case with UFO, financially backed or controlled by the CIA. Vicki Cooper (no relation), the editor and publisher of UFO, has been telling friends and relatives for at least two years that the CIA is pushing her magazine. Ron Regehr and Lee Graham remember the summer of 1988 when Vicki interviewed them at Mr. Graham's residence in Huntington Beach. After the interview was over Vicki Cooper walked to her car, turned, and mysteriously yelled, "You know, my magazine might be financed by the CIA."

I have talked to friends and acquaintances of Ms. Cooper who swear that she has stated on many occasions that "the CIA controls UFO magazine." Vicki Cooper's uncle, Grant Cooper, was Sirhan Sirhan's defense attorney, who made no attempt to defend his client. It was important to the Secret Government and the CIA that Sirhan be pinned as a "lone assassin." Grant Cooper has extensive ties to the CIA and the Johnny Rosselli mob.

We have found that Vicki's son attends the West Point Military Academy. What a wonderful way to control a magazine! "You don't play ball, your son won't graduate." I found out that the person who found Vicki Cooper an apartment when she arrived in Los Angeles was Barry Taff, a long-time employee of the intelligence agencies (yes, plural) and a long-time proteg) of Dr. John Lilly and Dr. J. West, the government's premiere experts in mind control. These men have been involved in the most terrifying, experimentation ever directed at total control of individuals. I believe that it is no innocent coincidence that Taff's apartment is directly above Vicki's. All of this was confirmed independently in a letter written by Mr. Martin Cannon, a Los Angeles-based researcher. The letter can be found in the Appendix.

The most damning evidence for the control of UFO magazine and Vicki Cooper comes from Don Ecker. At the 1989 MUFON Conference Don Ecker became so uninhibited that he managed to relate the following story to me and two others.

According to Don Ecker, Vicki Cooper used to work for the infamous Mayflower Madam. The Feds were trying to get the Madam and discovered Vicki. Ms. Cooper was busted and threatened with spending the rest of her life in prison if she did not cooperate. Vicki rolled over, according, to Ecker, and ratted on her employer. Since Vicki had apparently had something to do with the bookkeeping operation, she became a key witness. The Mayflower Madam was put out of business and into jail, thanks to Ms. Cooper's testimony. That is, if Don Ecker was telling the truth. We have no reason to believe that he was lying. I don't know why Don told us. Maybe he doesn't like Vickie. Or maybe he, like Lear and Friedman, thought I was one of them. (If 11 be a cold day in hell.)

According to Ecker, Vicki Cooper was told to get out of town and stay out. She was given money and told to start UFO magazine in Los Angeles. She was told that she was to print information that would be fed to her. Sure enough, you read in UFO purported leaked government UFO information, always written by someone who cannot be contacted. It is always under an alias; no one can check the information. Vicki is adamant about printing only the news and information that she considers best for the readers, as if they have no mind of their own. She indulges in character assassination.

Don Ecker claims to have been a member of Army Intelligence, the Green Berets, and later a police officer in Boise, Idaho. Don claims a total of ten years experience as a criminal investigator. The Boise Police Department, when asked by phone, has denied any knowledge of Mr. Ecker. I have requested that Don furnish a copy of his Army record, but he has refused. Ecker calls himself a UFO expert and has dubbed himself (yep, you guessed it) a "ufologist." He sprinkles terms like "ufological" around in his articles, and not even Don knows what the hell it means. He confirms most of the information that I have divulged when he speaks to groups. He has furnished data bases with a plethora of files that confirm everything that I have ever said. Ecker probably made them up himself, since they are all anonymous. He claims that aliens mutilate humans like cattle. Don Ecker, like Vicki Cooper, practices character assassination.

According to legitimate law-enforcement sources, Ecker is lying to the public. He was a guard at the Idaho State Prison from September 1981 to September 1982 when he quit to become a Canyon County Sheriff's Department Narcotics Deputy Trainee. Donald Francis Ecker II was fired after only six weeks for "improper conduct." Mr. Ecker returned to the Idaho State Prison where he was employed as a guard until July 1987 when he shot off his left leg with a shotgun during a training exercise. Sources also reveal that Donald Francis Ecker II is a fugitive from justice. Authorities in Idaho hold several outstanding warrants for the arrest of Mr. Ecker.

You must understand that the government is not ever going to allow any person or any group of persons to uncover the most highly classified secret in the world — if they can help it. They will always have agents controlling UFO groups, publications and information. If aliens are not real and the whole thing turns out to be the greatest hoax ever perpetrated, just who do you think did the perpetrating?

If the underground history is correct, aliens have manipulated and/or ruled the human race through various secret societies, religions, magic, witchcraft, and the occult. The Council on Foreign Relations and the Trilateral Commission are in complete control of the alien technology and are also in complete control of the nation's economy. Eisenhower was the last President to know the entire overview of the alien problem. Succeeding Presidents were told only what Majesty Twelve and the intelligence community wanted them to know. Believe me, it was not the truth.

Majesty Twelve has presented most new Presidents with a picture of a lost alien culture seeking to renew itself, build a home on this planet, and shower us with gifts of technology. In some cases the President was told nothing. Each President in turn has swallowed the story (or no story at all) hook, line and sinker. Meanwhile innocent people continue to suffer at the hands of the alien and human scientists. I have been unable to determine exactly what it is they are doing. Many people are abducted and are sentenced to live with psychological and physical damage for the rest of their lives. Could this really be a CIA mind-control operation?

In the documents that I read, 1 in 40 humans had been implanted with devices, the purpose of which I have never discovered. The Government believes that the aliens are building an army of implanted humans who can ne activated and turned upon us at will. You should also know that to date we have not even begun to come close to parity with the aliens.

I sent 536 copies of a "Petition to Indict" to every member of the Senate and House of Representatives on April 26,1989. As of this date, November 23,1990, I have received a total of only six replies, only four more than I had received in May 1989.

THE CONCLUSIONS ARE INESCAPABLE:

(1) The secret power structure may believe that by our own ignorance or by divine decree, planet Earth will self-destruct sometime in the near future. These men sincerely believe that they are doing the right thing in their attempt to save the human race. It is terribly ironic that they have been forced to take as their partner an alien race which is itself engaged in a monumental struggle for survival. Many moral and legal compromises may have been made in this joint effort. These compromises were made in error and must be corrected. Those responsible should be brought to account for their actions. I can understand the fear and urgency that must have been instrumental in the decision not to tell the public. Obviously I disagree with that decision.

Throughout history small but powerful groups of men have consistently felt that they alone were capable of deciding the fates of millions. Throughout history they have been wrong. This great Nation owes its very existence to the principles of Freedom and Democracy. I believe with all my heart that the United States of America cannot and will not succeed in any effort that ignores those principles. Full disclosure to the public should be made and we should proceed to save the human race together.

(2) We are being manipulated by a joint human/alien power structure which will result in a one-world government and the partial enslavement of the human race. This has been deemed necessary to solve the elemental question: "Who will speak for planet Earth?" It has been decided that man is not mature enough in his evolutionary development to be trusted to interact properly with an alien race. We already have enough trouble between the different human races, so what would happen if a

totally alien extraterrestrial race was introduced? Would they be lynched, spit upon, or shot? Would discrimination result in nasty encounters that would doom humanity as a result of the alien's obviously superior technology? Have our leaders decided to lock us in the playpen? The only way to prevent this scenario from taking place is to cause an evolutionary leap in consciousness, a paradigm shift for the entire human race. I have no idea how it can be done, but I know that it desperately needs to be done. It needs to be done very quickly and very quietly.

(3) The government has been totally deceived and we are being manipulated by an alien power, which will result in the total enslavement and/or destruction of the human race. We must use any and every means available to prevent this from happening.

(4) If none of the above are true, something else may be happening which is beyond our ability to understand at this moment. We must force disclosure of all of the facts, discover the truth, and act upon it. The situation in which we find ourselves is due to our own actions or inactions over the last 44 years. Because it is our own fault, we are the only ones who can change future events. Education seems to me to be a major part of the solution. The remaining part is the abolition of secrecy.

(5) There is always the possibility that I was used, that the whole alien scenario is the greatest hoax in history designed to create an alien enemy from outer space in order to expedite the formation of a one-world government. I have found evidence that this could be true. I have included that evidence in the Appendix. I advise you to consider this scenario as being probable.

Through ignorance or misplaced trust we as a people have abdicated our role as the watchdog of our government. Our government was founded "of the people, for the people, by the people." There was no mention or intent ever to abdicate our role and place our total trust in a handful of men who meet secretly to decide our fate. In fact, the structure of our government was designed to prevent that from ever happening. It we had done our jobs as Citizens we would never have reached this point Most of us are completely ignorant as to even the most basic functions of our government. We have truly become a nation of sheep — and sheep are always eventually led to slaughter. It is time to stand up in the manner of our forefathers and walk like men. I remind you that the Jews of Europe marched obediently to the ovens after having been warned, believing all the while that the facts could not possibly be true. When the outside world was told of the holocaust occurring in Hitler's Europe, it was not believed at first.

You must understand that, real or not, the purported presence of aliens have been used to neutralize certain widely different segments of the population: "Don't worry, the benevolent space brothers will save you." It can also be used to fill the need for an extraterrestrial threat to justify the formation of a New World Order: "The aliens are eating us." The most important information that you need to determine your future actions is that this New World Order calls for the destruction of the sovereignty of nations, including the United States. The New World Order cannot, and will not, allow our Constitution to continue to exist. The New World Order will be a totalitarian socialist system. We will be slaves shackled to a cashless system of economic control.

If the documentation that I viewed while I was in Naval Intelligence is true, then what you have just read is probably closer to the truth than anything ever written. If extraterrestrials are a hoax, then what you just read is exactly what the Illuminati wants you to believe. I can assure you beyond any shadow of a doubt that even if aliens are not real, the technology IS REAL. Antigravity craft exist and human pilots fly them. I and millions of others have seen them. They are metal; they are machines; they come in different shapes and sizes; and they are obviously intelligently guided.

If suddenly there was a threat to this world from some other species from another planet, we'd forget all the little local differences that we have between our two countries and we would find out once and for all that we really are all human beings on this Earth.

Ronald Reagan

to Mikhail Gorbachev

SOURCES

Andrews, George C, Extra-Terrestrials Among Us, Llewellyn Publications, St. Paul, Minnesota.

Bamford, James, The Puzzle Palace, Houghton Mifflin, Boston.

Borklund, C. W., The Department of Defense, Frederick A. Praeger, New York.

Collier, Peter and David Horowitz, Rockefellers: An American Dynasty, Holt. Rinehart and Winston, New York.

Cooper, Vicki and Sherie Stark, eds., UFO (magazine — several issues since Spring 1988), Los Angeles, California.

Cooper, William, "Operation Majority, Final Release/ Fullerton, California.

Corson, William R., The Armies of Ignorance, The Dial Press/James Wade, New York.

Curry, Richard O., ed., Freedom at Risk, Temple University Press, Philadelphia.

Deyo, Stan, The Cosmic Conspiracy and The Vindictor Scrolls, West Australian Texas Trading, Perth, Australia.

English, Bill, "Report on Grudge/Blue Book #13," John A. Lear, Las Vegas Nevada.

Friend, Lt. Col. and Dr. J. Allen Hynek, "GRUDGE/Blue Book Report #13" (Top Secret). Last seen at the headquarters of the Commander in Chief of the Pacific Fleet (CINCPACFLT), Hawaii.

Graubard, Stephen, Kissinger, Portrait of a Mind, W.W. Norton & Co., New York.

Gulley, Bill with Mary Ellen Reese, Breaking Cover, Simon & Schuster, New York.

Hawking, Stephen W., A Brief History of Time: From the Big Bang to Black Holes, Bantam Books, New York.

Isaacson, Walter and Evan Thomas, The Wise Men, Simon & Schuster, New York.

Kissinger, Henry, Nuclear Weapons and Foreign Policy, Harper & Brothers, New York.

Kwitny, Jonathan, The Crimes of Patriots, W.W. Norton & Co., New York.

Lear, John A., "The John Lear Hypothesis," Las Vegas, Nevada. Partially true; the rest is disinformation.

Lear, John A. and John Grace, "The Krill Papers Hoax."

Ledeen, Michael A., Perilous Statecraft, Charles Scribner & Sons, New York.

"MAJIC/Operation Majority" (Top Secret). Presidential briefing document by Majesty Twelve. Last seen at the headquarters of the Commander in Chief of the Pacific Fleet (CINCPACFLT), Hawaii.

Mickus, Tom, 'The Larry Fenwick Interview," Canada.

Moscow, Alvin, The Rockefeller Inheritance, Doubleday & Co., New York.

"Operation MAJESTIC TWELVE," Eisenhower Briefing Document. Author unknown, released by the research team of Moore, Shandera, and Friedman.

Pea Research, Government Involvement in the UFO Cover-up: Chronology, Pea Research, California.

Ranelagh, John, The Agency: The Rise and Decline of the CIA, Simon & Schuster, New York.

Schulzinger, Robert D., The Wise Men of Foreign Affairs, Columbia University Press, New York.

Shoup, Laurence H. and William Minter, Imperial Brain Trust: The Council on Foreign Relations & United States Foreign Policy, Monthly Review Press, New York.

Steckling, Fred, We Discovered Alien Bases on the Moon, G.A.F. International, California.

Steiger, Brad, The UFO Abductors, Berkley Books, New York,

Stienman, William, The Crash at Aztec, William Stienman, La Mirada, California,

Strieber, Whitley, Communion and Majestic, Avon, New York.

Valerian, Valdamar, The Matrix, Arcturus Book Service, Stone Mountain, Georgia.

Chapter 13

TREASON IN HIGH PLACES

The United Nations Treaty
and
The United Nations Participation Act
vs.
The Sovereignty of the United States of America

At the conclusion of the Constitutional Convention
in September 1787, Benjamin Franklin was asked,
"What have you wrought?"
He answered,
"...a Republic, if you can keep it."

The United States Constitution

Article VI

All Debts contracted and Engagements entered into, before the Adoption of this Constitution, shall be as valid against the United States under this Constitution, as under the Confederation.

This Constitution, and the Laws of the United States which shall be made in Pursuance thereof; and all Treaties made, or which shall be made, under the Authority of the United States, shall be the supreme Law of the Land; and the Judges in every State shall be bound thereby, any Thing in the Constitution or Laws of any State to the Contrary notwithstanding.

The Senators and Representatives before mentioned, and the Members of the several State Legislatures, and all executive and judicial Officers, both of the United States and of the several States, shall be bound by Oath or Affirmation, to support this Constitution; but no religious Test shall ever be required as a Qualification to any Office or public Trust under the United States.

HAVE WE ALREADY JOINED A ONE-WORLD GOVERNMENT?

U.S. Sovereignty — Fact or Fiction?

The Executive, Judicial and Legislative Branches of the U.S. Government have followed the policy that the United Nations Treaty approved under the U.N. Participation Act of 1945 in behalf of the United States of America by Harry S. Truman and the United States Senate, which treaty supersedes the United States Constitution under the terms of Article VI of the United States Constitution.

The Council of Foreign Relations created the United Nations. Their member agents, Alger Hiss and Leo Pasvolsky did the paperwork, but the honors went to a special committee appointed by President Roosevelt to draw the first draft of the Charter.

The members of the Committee were: Sumner Wells, Isaiah Bowman, Hamilton Fish Armstrong, Benjamin Cohen, and Clark Eichelberger — all members of the Council on Foreign Relations and members of a secret Order of the Quest called the JASON Society.

The Charter was rushed through the U.S. Senate without printed copies to guide the Senators: it was EXPLAINED to them by Russian-born revolutionary Leo Pasvolsky.

The Charter conferred no real power on the General Assembly; all the power was in the Security Council where the VETO was. The Senate would not have ratified the Charter except that the American delegation had a right to VETO if our interests were threatened by action of other members.

Included in this Charter was and is ARTICLE 25: "Member nations agree to ACCEPT and CARRY OUT the decisions of the Security Council in accordance with the PRESENT CHARTER/'

No restrictions, no reservations. This is ALL of Article 25. Note the word "present," indicating that there might be OTHER charters. The VETO was a hindrance to World Government — it had to be circumvented.

In 1950 the General Assembly, without any legal authority, met and adopted what they named the "UNITING FOR PEACE" RESOLUTION. This, greatly expanded since that time, permitted THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY to EXERCISE THE POWERS OF THE SECURITY COUNCIL. I bet you didn't know that. The Government of the United States recognizes the illegally amended Charter as the "law of the world," overriding our Constitution. The General Assembly has for years been making the law of the world by RATIFYING RESOLUTIONS BY A 2/3 MAJORITY VOTE. When the Resolution is ratified it is sent down to the CHIEF EXECUTIVE OF THE MEMBER STATE and the EXECUTIVE IS OBLIGED TO ACCEPT AND CARRY OUT the provisions in the resolution.

The governments concerned must IGNORE, ABOLISH, REVISE AND RESCIND LAWS in their territories which conflict with the resolutions of the General Assembly, and to PASS OTHER LAWS WHICH WILL PUT THESE RESOLUTIONS INTO FORCE. "One man, one vote" comes through Resolution No. 1760.

There are more than 2000 of these resolutions now in effect. THEY ARE THE LAW OF THE LAND. Our civil rights laws (the ex-post facto sections of which come from the Nuremberg Resolutions), our agricultural laws, our health and welfare laws, our labor laws, our foreign aid laws — all come from resolutions of the General Assembly or treaties of the U.N. ratified by our Senate.

Any law passed in your state will be rescinded or abolished if it is in conflict with resolutions of the General Assembly.

I can tell you, with no reservations whatsoever, that all of the intelligence organizations of the United States work directly for the United Nations in concert with the Secret Government toward the sole purpose of the destruction of the sovereignty of the United States of America and the bringing about of the one-world government. The authority cited for their efforts is ARTICLE VI of the Constitution, the United Nations Treaty, and the U.N. Participation Act of 1949 signed by Harry S. Truman with the advice and consent of the U.S. Senate.

This should help you understand how our laws are being made and who is making them! ASK YOUR SENATORS, CONGRESSMEN AND STATE LEGISLATORS IF THEY ARE AWARE OF THESE FACTS.

The following statement was made by Mr. Carl B. Rix of Milwaukee, former president of the American Bar Association, before a Senate subcommittee which was hearing testimony on the proposed Bricker Amendment. It was entered into the House Record by Hon. Lawrence H. Smith, Wisconsin, on May 11,1955.

CONGRESSIONAL RECORD (page A3220)

Statement of Carl B. Rix, Milwaukee, Wisconsin:

I appear in favor of the amendments.

Congress is no longer bound by its constitutional system of delegated powers. Its only test is under the obligatory power to promote human rights in these fields of endeavor: Civil, political, economic, social and cultural. These are found in Articles 55 and 56 of the Charter of the United Nations, a ratified and approved treaty. They are being promoted in all parts of the world by the United Nations.

Congress may now legislate as an uninhibited body with no shackles of delegated powers under the Constitution. Our entire system of a government of delegated powers of Congress has been changed to a system of undelegated powers without amendment by the people of the United States.

The authority for these statements is found in a volume entitled Constitution of the United States of America, Annotated, issued in 1953, prepared under the direction of the Judiciary Committee of the Senate of the United States and under the chairmanship of Prof. Edward S. Corwin of Princeton, aided by the legal staff of the Library of Congress. This is the conclusion on page 427 of the Annotations: "In a word, the treaty power cannot purport to amend the Constitution by adding to the list of Congress' enumerated powers, but having acted, the consequence will often be that it has provided Congress with an opportunity to enact measures which, independently of a treaty, Congress could not pass, and the only question that can be raised as to such measures will be whether they are 'necessary and proper' measures for the carrying of the treaty in question into operation."

It will be noted that one of the principal cases cited is that of the Migratory Bird case.

These conclusions are those also of a committee of the New York State Bar Association, of which former Attorney General Mitchell and Mr. John W. Davis were prominent members.

Now, for some practical illustration of new-found powers under treaties of what Congress may do:

1. It may enact a comprehensive education bill, providing for education in any State which does not provide it. In fact, it may take over all public education now provided by States and municipalities.
2. It may enact a prohibition act without an amendment of the Constitution.
3. It may enact a uniform divorce act.
4. It may take over all social and welfare services rendered by or through the States or their agencies.
5. It may take over all commerce, all utility rates and service, all labor.

The list may be multiplied extensively at your will.

The new test of constitutionality will apply to all legislation by Congress since 1945, which deals with any of the five fields of endeavor. Any judge deciding on the validity of legislation must have two books before him — one, the Constitution of the United States, and the other, the Charter of the United Nations. If he does not find authority for the act in the Constitution, he will find it in the Charter. That is the exact situation in which Justice Holmes found himself and the other members of the Supreme Court when they decided the Migratory Bird case. The authority was not found in the Constitution — it was found in the treaty with Great Britain.

The question to be answered is this: Under which form of government do the people of the United States prefer to live? Manifestly, we cannot operate under both.

Senators, the people of the United States have given up their sons; they have given up billions of their substance. They should not be the only Nation in the world to give up their form of government — the wonder of the world — to discharge their obligations to the people of the world.

THE BRICKER AMENDMENT, WHICH WOULD HAVE CHANGED THIS, WAS NOT PASSED.

A LETTER TO THE EDITOR

Borger, Texas News Herald
Sunday, November 11,1962
Dear Mr. Newby:

Replying to your letter Oct. 12th, also CHALLENGE for November, 1961: quoting Patrick Henry on treaties. In the first place Patrick Henry was and is NO AUTHORITY on either treaties or the Constitution, and he opposed it, IF it is too late to do anything about reinstating our Constitution, then why not just accept the traitorous U.N. Charter-Treaty without more ado? Why didn't the American Revolutionists think it too late or too difficult to defend their Liberty? And IF the highly-intelligent framers of the Constitution "were well aware of the deathtrap incorporated in ARTICLE VI," why then did they so frame it? Did they not expect PATRIOTS, rather than Treasonists as our elected officials, to HONOR AND ENFORCE the spirit, letter, and intent of the Constitution?

I note you say that according to a law dictionary, the terms "legal" and "lawful" are almost one and the same. Agreed! "Almost," but not quite. I believe there is a fine point of difference. Taking us into the U.N. may SEEM to have been done legally (by the President and Senate), but the act is still unlawful, because it is unconstitutional, and the CONSTITUTION IS THE SUPREME LAW OF THE LAND. All renowned and genuine Constitutional experts (such as Thos. M. Cooley, Thos. Jas. Norton, and Harry Atwood, to name several) have always held that anything which contravenes, diminishes, or perverts the Constitution is null and void and of no effect.

Neither the President or Senate has authority or power to change, diminish, or destroy the Constitution "by usurpation," treaty, or otherwise: only a Constitutional Amendment can lawfully change it.

The Constitution is a contract that WE THE PEOPLE of the USA made with one another, which sets up the machinery of government to carry out this contract —mainly for the purpose of PROTECTING INDIVIDUAL RIGHTS as well as STATE RIGHTS, AGAINST THE POWERS OF GOVERNMENT: and no public official has a right to override the provisions of that contract. To quote Thos. Jas. Norton's Constitution of the United States, Its Application, etc., "A law of Congress to be one of the supreme laws must be 'made in pursuance thereof and not in conflict with the Constitution. When not made in pursuance thereof it is of course unconstitutional and of no effect." And the same would similarly apply to a wonderful decision rendered by the Supreme Court or an unlawful Treaty.

And from Norton's Undermining the Constitution, which quotes Alexander Hamilton in No. 33 of The Federalist: "It will not, I presume, have escaped observation that it expressly confines the supremacy to laws made pursuant to the Constitution" (emphasis by Hamilton). And from page 21, "The General Government can claim no powers which are not granted to it by the Constitution, and the powers actually granted must be such as are expressly given, or given by necessary implication."

Anyone with the presumed intelligence to be President of the USA must know that he cannot lawfully make any such far-reaching treaty with the United Nations, or any other foreign power, as you envision by your language, without laying himself open to the charge of TREASON under ARTICLE III, Section 3 of the Constitution. Just ordinary common sense is required to know that our alleged Treaty with the U.N. and acceptance of the all-inclusive terms of its Charter by our Presidents (beginning with FDR, who connived with Stalin at Yalta for the setting up of the U.N. in the USA) and our Senate, is a violation of their sacred oath of office as per ARTICLE III, Section 2 of the Constitution.

Such a Treaty makes a mockery of any genuine allegiance to OUR Flag and Constitution. A genuine American, Abraham Lincoln, said, "Worse than traitors-in-arms are the men who, pretending loyalty to the Flag, feast and fatten on the misfortunes of the nation." Think of any TRUTH more applicable to the present time?

A number of our officials, including former Secretary of State Dean Acheson, the late John Foster Dulles, and members of our present one-world Kennedy entourage go along with the statement that the USA now has NO "domestic" affairs: there has been a melding of our domestic and foreign affairs! (Meld means to merge.)

Katanga Province in the Congo thought she had some private affairs and rights, but the U.N. soon disillusioned her. Quote from S.L. Tribune for September 14,1961: "U.N. Soldiers Take Over in Katanga. U.N. troops seized Katanga's capital, Elisabethville, in a brisk battle Wednesday, and the Congo's central government proclaimed the return of that secessionist

province." There is no doubt that the President of the USA and Senate have surrendered certain of our rights and Sovereignty to the U.N., and plan still more.

Any informed American is aware that ARTICLE IV, Section 4, of the Constitution automatically cancels out any allegiance to the U.N. and its alien one-world Internationalism, the antithesis of Constitutional Americanism founded on Washington's "NO foreign entanglements." And that said republican representative form of government is the exact opposite of the U.N. Charter's Soviet-initiated modifications, restrictions, and reservations in its various "Conventions" which would nullify our Bill of Rights. Stalin, his protege, Alger Hiss, and Russian Communist Pasvolsky figured largely in the writing of the U.N. Charter.

To assume that a heterogeneous body composed of appointed representatives of foreign governments (some from crude cannibalistic so-called "States" and others, from virulently atheistic Communist States) — which

Governments DO NOT REPRESENT "We the American People" — could exercise dictation and control over U.S. is monstrous in the extreme. Lawfully or constitutionally, they may not enforce any provisions of the U.N.

Charter against us, or take any action whatever affecting the Sovereign Rights of American Citizens.

Further, the United Nations is not a lawful government in the accepted sense of the term and is not a proper body with which to make a treaty. Actually, the U.N. has NO valid binding treaty-making power — except as the subversive one-worlders try to make it so. Quoting Norton's Constitution of the United States, at page 14: "A treaty is a written contract between two governments (not a motley assembly of unstable tribes, or enslaved peoples calling themselves a 'government') respecting matters of mutual welfare, such as peace, the acouisition of territory, the defining of boundaries, the needs of trade, rights of citizenship..." etc.

And such treaties, even though "legally made," MAY be abrogated for cause. Quoting ibid, p. 115: "A precedent for thus abrogating a treaty made by the President and approved by the Senate may be found as far back as July 7, 1789, when Congress passed 'An Act to Declare the Treaties heretofore concluded with France no longer obligatory on the United States because they have been repeatedly violated on the part of the French government." So what about all the violations of the treaties or agreements made by the USSR, which dominates the U.N.? The USA is vastly outvoted in this motley aggregation called the United Nations, even as American taxpayers foot most of the bills, which constitutes Constitutionally forbidden confiscation of the citizens' money (property) without just compensation therefore. This is merely communistic confiscation.

A Treaty made "pursuant to the Constitution" becomes A PART of the LAW OF THE LAND, and should be honored; but it does NOT become "Supreme" or take precedence over nor supersede the Constitution. It is NOT the "Law of the Land" standing alone. And NO Treaty or Executive Agreement is binding on the USA if made by the President alone (as has been done) with the advice and consent of the Senate, nor if it violates the Constitution.

Actually, ARTICLE VI, instead of setting Treaties on high or being a "death trap," is a statement of the SUPREMACY OF THE CONSTITUTION and of the NATIONAL GOVERNMENT. Lawful Treaties are a part of, but subordinate to, the Constitution for the simple stated provision therein that ALL laws and treaties must be made "in pursuance thereof."

Can the "creature" (or a part) become greater than its CREATOR, or the whole??? Some American common sense is necessary in all this blather about the supremacy of treaties, which is promulgated largely by the one-worlders to discredit or diminish the Constitution so they can achieve their own ends.

The language and intent of the Constitution and of ARTICLE VI is clear and forthright, and does not admit, in good faith, of any other interpretation. But sadly enough, it is well known that many of our highest judiciary and elected officials — in this era of TREASON, not Reason — do not act in good faith nor in "pursuance of the Constitution."

With reference to fourth paragraph your letter Oct. 12th, Mr. Newby, that the "making of treaties is without limitation, exception or reservation" and that "no treaty has ever been declared unconstitutional or invalidated or repealed by the Courts or Congress in the history of this nation," I think that the foregoing invalidates your statement.

And as to ARTICLE VI being a "deathtrap" over which the Constitution gives no control or remedy other than its explicit language in VI regarding the law and treaties: has it occurred to you that the Supreme Court has power and authority to rule on the constitutionality of treaties the same as on the constitutionality of any other law — treaties being merely "part of the Law of the Land"? ARTICLE III, Section 2 explicitly states: "The Judicial power shall extend to all cases, in Law and Equity, arising under this Constitution, the Laws of the United States, and treaties made, or which shall be made, under their authority." To quote Norton's Constitution of the United States, page 137: "When a case arises in a State court and involves a question of the Constitution, or an Act of Congress, or of a treaty, it is the duty of the court to follow and enforce the National [Constitional] law; for the Constitution explicitly and emphatically requires that the 'judges in every State shall be bound thereby, anything in the Constitution or laws of any State to the contrary notwithstanding.'" Any time that the President and Senate make a treaty with a foreign power (such as the U.N.) which infringes upon or abrogates rights guaranteed citizens of the USA under the Constitution, the Supreme Court can declare such treaty unconstitutional, void, and of no effect. Of course, the present Supreme Court, being composed of political radicals rather than judicial Constitutional experts, is not likely to take such action — unless forced to do so by public opinion and demand.

And so, with reference to your statement in printed CHALLENGE for November, 1961, to the effect that, "under ARTICLE II, Section 2, clause 2 of the Constitution...such treaty (as with the U.N.) can be made without restriction, limitation, exception or reservation irrespective of the fact that it contravenes, violates, infringes or alienates every article of the Constitution. All that is necessary is for the President and Senate to ratify ANY treaty and it is in force." The above article and clause likewise does not stand alone, but must be construed in the light of the entire Constitution. YOUR interpretation is not only to make idiots of the Founding Fathers and Framers of the Constitution, but to say that regardless of the solemn

Presidential oath of allegiance required by ARTICLE III, Section 2a, regardless of the SUPREME SOVEREIGNTY of the U.S. Constitution, and in violation of the explicit language contained in ARTICLE VI, i.e., "THIS CONSTITUTION, and the laws of the United States which shall be made in pursuance thereof; and all treaties...under the authority of the United States...," as well as all authoritative rulings by genuine Constitutional authorities to the effect that anything which contravenes the Constitution of the USA is null and void, including any such acts by the Congress; despite all of the foregoing. I reiterate that YOUR interpretation would claim that there is absolutely NO constitutional safeguard for the American People against TREASONOUS treaties (which "gives aid and comfort to our enemies" as per ARTICLE III, Section 3).

YOUR interpretation would give complete IMMUNITY to the maker...of such treaties and would constitute "changing the Constitution by usurpation" in violation of the intent, spirit, AND letter of the Constitution as a whole.

The President obviously is NOT a "free agent" by virtue of ARTICLE II, Section 2, clause 2, to make any sort of treaty he would like, but is BOUND DOWN by the chains of the entire Constitution. Nothing else makes any sense. His treaty-making acts are subject to review by the Courts.

True, we SHOULD DEMAND rescinding of the action by both Senate and Harry S. Truman in signing the U.N. Participation Act of 1945 in behalf of the USA. This would put the World on notice that we were once more HONORING OUR OWN CONSTITUTION (CHARTER OF FREEDOM) AS THE SUPREME LAW OF THE LAND, AND REINSTATING IT TO ITS FORMER PROPER SUPREME POSITION: as well as reclaiming our Sovereignty as an Independent Republic in accordance with our Declaration of Independence.

There is not nor ever will be any true Peace, Freedom, Safety or Security for the American People under the alien U.N. Charter.

There is "NO SUBSTITUTE" for American Independence. Many men have died and "worms have eaten them" for a far lesser Cause.

And so, Mr. Newby, you and I do have one primary objective in view: GET THE U.S. OUT OF THE U.N., AND THE SUBVERSIVE U.N. OUT OF THE USA!

Most sincerely yours,

Marilyn R. Allen

I guess that just about covers the U.N. Charter vs. U.S. sovereignty hoax. No one should ever be able to bullshit you on this issue again. Your job now is to make sure your Congressmen and Senators are educated on this issue.

GET TO WORK — NOW!

Chapter 14

A PROPOSED CONSTITUTIONAL MODEL FOR THE NEWSTATES OF AMERICA

Prepared Over a 10-Year Period
by the
Center for Democratic Studies
of Santa Barbara, California,
at a Total Cost to the
United States Taxpayers of
Over $25 Million

A PROPOSED CONSTITUTIONAL MODEL FOR THE NEWSTATES OF AMERICA

PREAMBLE

So that we may join in common endeavors, welcome the future in good order, and create an adequate and self-repairing government - we, the people, do establish the Newstates of America, herein provided to be ours, and do ordain this Constitution whose supreme law it shall be until the time prescribed for it shall have run.

ARTICLE I

Rights and Responsibilities

A. Rights

SECTION 1.. Freedom of expression, of communication, of movement, of assembly, or of petition shall not be abridged except in declared emergency.

SECTION 2. Access to information possessed by governmental agencies shall not be denied except in interest of national security; but communications among officials necessary to decision making shall be be privileged.

SECTION 3. Public communicators may decline to reveal sources of information, but shall be responsible for hurtful disclosures.

SECTION 4. The privacy of individuals shall be respected; searches and seizures shall be made only on judicial warrant; persons shall be pursued or questioned only for the prevention of crime or the apprehension of suspected criminals, and only according to rules established under law.

SECTION 5. There shall be no discrimination because of race, creed, color, origin, or sex. The Court of Rights and Responsibilities may determine whether selection for various occupations has been discriminatory.

SECTION 6. All persons shall have equal protection of the laws, and in all electoral procedures the vote of every eligible citizen shall count equally with others.

SECTION 7. It shall be public policy to promote discussion of public issues and to encourage peaceful public gatherings for this purpose. Permission to hold such gatherings shall not be denied, nor shall they be interrupted, except in decalred emergency or on a showing of imminent danger to public order and on judicial warrant.

SECTION 8. The practice of religion shall be privileged; but no religion shall be imposed by some on others, and none shall have public support.

SECTION 9. Any citizen may purchase, sell, lease, hold, convey and inherit real and personal property, and shall benefit equally from all laws for security in such transactions.

SECTION 10. Those who cannot contribute to productivity shall be entitled to a share of the national product; but distribution shall be fair and the total may not exceed the amount for this purpose held in the National Sharing Fund.

SECTION 11. Education shall be provided at public expense for those who meet appropriate tests of eligibility.

SECTION 12. No person shall be deprived of life, liberty, or property without due process of law. No property shall be taken without compensation.

SECTION 13. Legislatures shall define crimes and conditions requiring restraint, but confinement shall not be for punishment; and, when possible, there shall be preparation for return to freedom.

SECTION 14. No person shall be placed twice in jeopardy for the same offense.

SECTION 15. Writs of habeas corpus shall not be suspended except in declared emergency.

SECTION 16. Accused persons shall be informed of charges against them, shall have a speedy trial, shall have reasonable bail, shall be allowed to confront witnesses or to call others, and shall not be compelled to testify against themselves; at the time of arrest they shall be informed of their right to be silent and to have counsel, provided, if necessary, at public expense; and courts shall consider the contention that prosecution may be under an invalid or unjust statue.

B. Responsibilities

SECTION 1. Each freedom of the citzen shall prescribe a corresponding responsibility not to diminish that of others: of speech, communication, assembly, and petition, to grant the same freedom to others; of religion, to respect that of others; of privacy, not to invade that of others; of the holding and disposal of property, the obligation to extend the same privilege to others.

SECTION 2. Individuals and enterprises holding themselves out to serve the public shall serve all equally and without intention to misrepresent, conforming to such standards as may improve health and welfare.

SECTION 3. Protection of the law shall be repaid by assistance in its enforcement; this shall include respect for the procedures of justice, apprehension of lawbreakers, and testimony at trial.

SECTION 4. Each citizen shall participate in the processes of democracy, assisting in the selection of officials and in the monitoring of their conduct in office.

SECTION 5. Each shall render such services to the nation as may be uniformly required by law, objection by reason of conscience being adjudicated as hereinafter provided; and none shall expect or may receive special privileges unless they be for a public purpose defined by law.

SECTION 6. Each shall pay whatever share of governmental costs is consistent with fairness to all.

SECTION 7. Each shall refuse awards or titles from other nations or their representatives except as they be authorized by law.

SECTION 8. There shall be a responsibility to avoid violence and to keep the peace; for this reason the bearing of arms or the possession of lethal weapons shall be confined to the police, members of the armed forces, and those licensed under law.

SECTION 9. Each shall assist in preserving the endowments of nature and enlarging the inheritance of future generations.

SECTION 10. Those granted the use of public lands, the air, or waters shall have a responsibility for using these resources so that, if irreplaceable, they are conserved and, if replaceable, they are put back as they were.

SECTION 11. Retired officers of the armed forces, of the senior civil service, and of the Senate shall regard their service as a permanent obligation and shall not engage in enterprise seeking profit from the government.

SECTION 12. The devising or controlling of devices for management or technology shall establish responsibility for resulting costs.

SECTION 13. All rights and responsibilities defined herein shall extend to such associations of citizens as may be authorized by law.

ARTICLE II

The Newstates

SECTION 1. There shall be Newstates, each comprising no less than 5 percent of the whole population. Existing states may continue and may have the status of Newstates if the Boundary Commission, hereinafter provided, shall so decide. The Commission shall be guided in its recommendations by the probability of accommodation to the conditions for effective government. States electing by referendum to continue if the Commission recommend otherwise shall nevertheless except all Newstate obligations.

SECTION 2. The Newstates shall have constitutions formulated and adopted by processes hereinafter prescribed.

SECTION 3. They shall have Governors; legislatures, and planning administrative and judicial systems.

SECTION 4. Their political procedures shall be organized and supervised by electoral Overseers; but their elections shall not be in years of presidential election.

SECTION 5. The electoral apparatus of the Newstates of America shall be available to them, anc they may be allotted funds under rules agreed to by the national Overseer; but expenditures may not be made by for any candidate except they be approved by the Overseer; and requirements of residence in a voting district shall be no longer than thirty days.

SECTION 6. They may charter subsidiary governments, urban or rural, and may delegate to them powers appropriate to their responsibilities.

SECTION 7. They may lay, or may delegate the laying of, taxes; but these shall conform to the restraints stated hereinafter for the Newstates of America.

SECTION 8. They may not tax exports, may not tax with intent to prevent imports, and may not impose any tax forbidden by laws of the Newstates of America; but the objects appropriate for taxation shall be clearly designated.

SECTION 9. Taxes on land may be at higher rates than those on its improvements.

SECTION 10. They shall be responsible for the administration of public services not reserved to the government of the Newstates of America, such activities being concerted with those of corresponding national agencies, where these exist, under arrangements common to all.

SECTION 11. The rights and responsibilities prescribed in this Constitution shall be effective in the Newstates and shall be suspended only in emergency when declared by Governors and not disapproved by the Senate of the Newstates of America.

SECTION 12. Police powers of the Newstates shall extend to all matters not reserved to to the Newstates of America; but preempted powers shall not be impaired.

SECTION 13. Newstates may not enter into any treaty, alliance, confederation, or agreement unless approved by the Boundary Commission hereinafter provided.

They may not coin money, provide for the payment of debts in any but legal tender, or make any charge for inter-Newstate services. They may not enact ex post facto laws or ones impairing the obligation of contracts.

SECTION 14. Newstates may not impose barriers to imports from other jurisdictions or impose any hindrance to citizens' freedom of movement.

SECTION 15. If governments of the Newstates fail to carry out fully their constitutional duties, their officials shall be warned and may be required by the Senate, on the recommendationof the Watchkeeper, to forfeit revenues from the Newstates of America.

ARTICLE III

The Electoral Branch

SECTION 1. To arrange for participation by the electorate in the determination of policies and the selection of officials, there shall be an Electoral Branch.

SECTION 2. An Overseer of electoral procedures shall be chosen by majority of the Senate and may be removed by a two-thirds vote. It shall be the Overseer's duty to supervise the organization of national and district parties, arrange for discussion among them, and provide for the nomination and election of candidates for public office. While in office the Overseer shall belong to no political organization; and after each presidential election shall offer to resign.

SECTION 3. A national party shall be one having had at least a 5 percent affiliation in the latest general election; but a new party shall be recognized when valid petitions have been signed by at least 2 percent of the voters in each of 30 percent of the districts drawn for the House of Representatives. Recognition shall be suspended upon failure to gain 5 percent of the votes at a second election, 10 percent at a third, or 15 percent at further elections.

District parties shall be recognized when at least 2 percent of voters shall have signed petitions of affiliation; but recognition shall be withdrawn upon failure to attract the same percentages as are neccessary for the continuance of national parties.

SECTION 4. Recognition by the Overseer shall bring parties within established regulations and entitle them to common privileges.

SECTION 5. The Overseer shall promulgate rules for party conduct and shall see that fair practices are maintained, and for this purpose shall appoint deputies in each district and shall supervise the choice, in district and national conventions, of party administrators. Regulations and appointments may be objected to by the Senate.

SECTION 6. The Overseer, with the administrator and other officials, shall:

a. Provide the means for discussion, in each party, of public issues, and for this purpose, ensure that members have adequate facilities for participation.

b. Arrange for discussion, in annual district meetings, of the President's views, of the findings of the Planning Branch, and such other information as may be pertinent for the enlightened political discussion.

c. Arrange, on the first Saturday in each month, for enrollment, valid for one year, of voters at convenient places.

SECTION 7. The Overseer shall also:

a. Assist the parties in nominating candidates for district members of the House of Representatives each three years; and for this purpose designate one hundred districts, each with a similar number of eligible voters, redrawing districts after each election. In these there shall be party conventions having no more than three hundred delegates, so distributed that representation of voters be approximately equal.

Candidates for delegate may become eligible by presenting petitions signed by two hundred registered voters. They shall be elected by party members on the first Tuesday in March, those having the largest number of votes being chosen until the three hundred be complete. Ten alternates shall also be chosen by the same process.

District conventions shall be held on the first Tuesday in April. Delegates shall choose three candidates for membership in the House of Representatives, the three having the most votes becoming candidates.

b Arrange for the election each three years of three members of the House of Representatives in each district from among the candidates chosen in party conventions, the three having the most votes to be elected.

SECTION 8. The Overseer shall also:

a. Arrange for national conventions to meet nine years after previous presidential elections, with an equal number of delegates from each district, the whole number not to exceed one thousand.

Candidates for delegates shall be eligible when petitions signed by five hundred registered voters have been filed. Those with the most votes, together with two alternates, being those next in number of votes, shall be chosen in each district.

b. Approve procedures in these conventions for choosing one hundred candidates to be members-at-large of the House of Representatives, whose terms shall be coterminous with that of the President. For this purpose delegates shall file one choice with convention officials. Voting on submissions shall proceed until one hundred achieve 10 percent, but not more than three candidates may be resident in any one district; if any district have more than three, those with the fewest votes shall be eliminated, others being added from the districts having less than three, until equality be reached. Of those added, those having the most votes shall be chosen first.

c. Arrange procedures for the consideration and approval of party objectives by the convention.

d. Formulate rules for the nomination in these conventions of candidates for President and Vice Presidents when the offices are to fall vacant, candidates for nomination to be recognized when petitions shall have been presented by one hundred or more delegates, pledged to continue support until candidates can no longer win or until they consent to withdraw. Presidents and Vice-Presidents, together with Representatives-at-large, shall submit to referendum after serving for three years, and if they are rejected, new conventions shall be held within one month and candidates shall be chosen as for vacant offices.

Candidates for President and Vice-Presidents shall be nominated on attaining a majority.

e. Arrange for the election on the first Tuesday in June, in appropriate years, of new candidates for President and Vice-Presidents, and members-at-large of the House of Representatives, all being presented to the nation's voters as a ticket; if no ticket achieve a majority, the Overseer shall arrange another election, on the third Tuesday in June, between the two persons having the most votes; and if referendum so determine he shall provide similar arrangements for the nomination and election of candidates.

In this election, the one having the most votes shall prevail.

SECTION 9. The Overseer shall also:

a. Arrange for the convening of the national legislative houses on the fourth Tuesday of July.

b. Arrange for inauguration of the President and Vice-Presidents on the second Tuesday of August.

SECTION 10. All costs of electoral procedures shall be paid from public funds, and there shall be no private contributions to parties or candidates; no contributions or expenditures for meetings, conventions, or campaigns shall be made; and no candidate for office may make any personal expenditures unless authorized by a uniform rule of the Overseer; and persons or group- making expenditures, directly or indirectly, in support of prospective candidates shall report to the Overseer and shall conform to his regulations.

SECTION 11. Expenses of the Electoral Branch shall be met by the addition of one percent to the net annual taxable income returns of taxpayers, this sum to be held by the Chancellor of Financial Affairs for disposition by the Overseer.

Funds shall be distributed to parties in proportion to the respective number of votes cast for the President and Governors at the last election, except that new parties, on being recognized, shall share in proportion to their number. Party adminstrators shall make allocations to legislative candidates in amounts proportional to the party vote at the last election.

Expenditures shall be audited by the Watchkeeper; and sums not expended within four years shall be returned to the Treasury.

It shall be a condition of every communications franchise that reasonable facilities shall be available for allocations by the Overseer.

ARTICLE IV

The Planning Branch

SECTION 1. There shall be a Planning Branch to formulate and administer plans and to prepare budgets for the uses of expected income in pursuit ot policies formulated by the processes provided herein.

SECTION 2. There shall be a National Planning Board of fifteen members appointed by the President; the first members shall have terms designated by the President of one to fifteen years, thereafter one shall be appointed each year; the President shall appoint a Chairman who shall serve for fifteen years unless removed by him.

SECTION 3. The Chairman shall appoint, and shall supervise, a planning administrator, together with such deputies as may be agreed to by the Board.

SECTION 4. The Chairman shall present to the Board six-and twelve year development plans prepared by the planning staff. They shall be revised each year after public hearings, and finally in the year before they are to take effect. They shall be submitted to the President on the fourth Tuesday in July for transmission to the Senate on September 1st with his comments.

If members of the Board fail to approve the budget proposals by the forwarding date, the Chairman shall nevertheless make submission to the President with notations of reservation by such members The President shall transmit this proposal, with his comments, to the House of Representatives on September 1.

SECTION 5. It shall be recognized that the six-and twelve-year development plans represent national intentions tempered by the appraisal of possibilities. The twelve-year plan shall be a general estimate of probable progress, both governmental and private; the six-year plan shall be more specific as to estimated income and expenditure and shall take account of necessary revisions.

The purpose shall be to advance, through every agency of government, the excellence of national life. It shall be the further purpose to anticipate innovations, to estimate their impact, to assimilate them into existing institutions, and to moderate deleterious effects on the environment and on society.

The six-and twelve-year plans shall be disseminated for dicussion and the opinions expressed shall be considered in the formulation of plans for each succeeding year with special attention to detail in proposing the budget.

SECTION 6. For both plans an extension of one year into the future shall be made each year and the estimates for all other years shall be revised accordingly. For nongovernmental activities the estimate of developments shall be calculated to indicate the need for enlargement or restriction.

SECTION 7. If there be objection by the President or the Senate to the six-or Twelve-year plans, they shall be returned for restudy and resubmission. If there still be differences, and if the President and the Senate agree, they shall prevail. If they do not agree, the Senate shall prevail and the plan shall be revised accordingly.

SECTION 8. The Newstates, on June 1, shall submit proposals for development to be considered for inclusion in those for the Newstates of America. Researches and administration shall be delegated,when convenient, to planning agencies of the Newstates.

SECTION 9. There shall be submissions from private individuals or from organized associations affected with a public interest, as defined by the Board. They shall report intentions to expand or contract, estimates of production and demand, probable uses of resources, numbers expected to be employed, and other essential information.

SECTION 10. The Planning Branch shall make and have custody of offical maps, and these shall be documents of reference for future developments both public and private; on them the location of facilities, with extension indicated, and the intended use of all areas shall be marked out.

Offical maps shall also be maintained by the planning agencies of the Newstates, and in matters not exclusively national the National Planning Board may rely on these.

Undertakings in violation of official designation shall be at the risk of the venturer, and there shall be no recourse; but losses from designations after acquisition shall be recoverable in actions before the Court of Claims.

SECTION 11.The Planning Branch shall have available to it funds equal to one-half of one percent of the approved national budget (not including debt services or payments from trust funds). They shall be held by the Chancellor of Financial Affairs and expended according to rules approved by the Board; but funds not expended within six years shall be available for other uses.

SECTION 12.Allocations may be made for the planning agencies of the Newstates; but only the maps and plans of the national Board, or those approved by them, shall have status at law.

SECTION 13.In making plans, there shall be due regard to the interests of other nations and such cooperation with their intentions as may be approved by the Board.

SECTION 14.There may also be cooperation with international agencies and such contributions to their work as are not disapproved by the President.

ARTICLE V
The Presidency

SECTION 1 .The President of the Newstates of America shall be the head of government, shaper of its commitments, expositor of its policies, and supreme commander of its protective forces; shall have one term of nine years, unless rejected by 60 percent of the electorate after three years; shall take care that the nation's resources are estimated and are apportioned to its more exigent needs; shall recommend such plans, legislation, and action as may be necessary; and shall address the legislators each year on the state of the nation, calling upon them to do their part for the general good.

SECTION 2.There shall be two Vice-Presidents elected with the President; at the time of taking office the President shall designate one Vice-President to supervise internal affairs; and one to be deputy for general affairs. The deputy for general affairs shall succeed if the presidency be vacated; the Vice-President for internal affairs shall be second in succession. If either Vice-President shall die or be incapacitated the President, with the consent of the Senate, shall appoint a successor. Vice-Presidents shall serve during an extended term with such assignments as the President may make.

If the presidency fall vacant through the disability of both Vice-Presidents, the Senate shall elect successors from among its members to serve until the next general election.

With the Vice-Presidents and other officials the President shall see to it that the laws are faithfully executed and shall pay attention to the findings and recommendations of the Planning Board, the National Regulatory Board, and the Watchkeeper in formulating national policies.

SECTION 3. Responsible to the Vice-President for General Affairs there shall be Chancellors of External, Financial, Legal, and Military Affairs.

The Chancellor of External Affairs shall assist in conducting relations with other nations.

The Chancellor of Financial Affairs shall supervise the nation's financial and monetary systems, regulating its capital markets and credit-issuing institutions as they may be established by law; and this shall include lending institutions for operations in other nations or in cooperation with them, except that treaties may determine their purposes and standards.

The Chancellor of Legal Affairs shall advise governmental agencies and represent them before the courts.

The Chancellor of Military Affairs shall act for the presidency in disposing all armed forces except militia commanded by governors; but these shall be available for national service at the President's convenience.

Except in declared emergency, the deployment of forces in far waters or in other nations without their consent shall be notified in advance to a national security committee of the Senate hereinafter provided.

SECTION 4. Responsible to the Vice-President for Internal Affairs there shall be chancellors of such departments as the President may find necessary for performing the services of government and are not rejected by a two-thirds vote when the succeeding budget is considered.

SECTION 5. Candidates for the presidency and the vice-presidencies shall be natural-born citizens, Their suitability may be questioned by the Senate within ten days of their nomination, and if two-thirds of the whole agree, they shall be ineligible and a nominating convention shall be reconvened. At the time of his nomination no candidate shall be a member of the Senate and none shall be on active service in the armed forces or a senior civil servant.

SECTION 6.The President may take leave because of illness or for an interval of relief, and the Vice-President in charge of General Affairs shall act. The President may resign if the Senate agree; and, if the term shall have more than two years to run, the Overseer shall arrange for a special election for President and Vice-President.

SECTION 7. The Vice-Presidents may be directed to perform such ministerial duties as the President may find convenient; but their instructions shall be of record,aand their actions shall be taken as his deputy.

SECTION 8.Incapacitation may be established without concurrence of the President by a three-quarters vote of the Senate, whereupon a successor shall become Acting President until the disability be declared, by a similar vote, to be ended or to have become permanent. Similarly the other Vice-President shall succeed if a predecessor die or be disabled. Special elections, in these contingencies, may be required by the Senate.

Acting Presidents may appoint deputies, unless the Senate object, to assume their duties until the next election.

SECTION 9. The Vice-Presidents, together with such other officials as the President may designate from time to time, may constitute a cabinet or council; but this shall not include officials of other branches.

SECTION 10. Treaties or agreements with other nations, negotiated under the President's authority, shall be in effect unless objected to by a majority of the Senate within ninety days. If they are objected to, the President may resubmit and the Senate reconsider. If a majority still object, the Senate shall prevail.

SECTION 11. All officers, except those of other branches, shall be appointed and may be removed by the President. A majority of the Senate may object to appointments within sixty days, and alternative candidates shall be offered until it agrees.

SECTION 12. The President shall notify the Planning Board and the House of Representatives, on the fourth Tuesday in June, what the maximum allowable expenditures for the ensuing fiscal year shall be.

The President may determine to make expenditures less than provided in appropriations; but, except in declared emergency, none shall be made in excess of appropriations. Reduction shall be because of changes in requirements and shall not be such as to impair the integrity of budgetary procedures.

SECTION 13. There shall be a Public Custodian, appointed by the President and removable by him, who shall have charge of properties belonging to the government, but not allocated to specific agencies, who shall administer common public services, shall have charge of building construction and rentals,and shall have such other duties as may be designated by the President or the designated VICE Presidents.

SECTION 14. There shall be an Intendant responsible to the President who shall supervise Offices for Intelligence and Investigation; also an Office of Emergency Organization with the duty of providing plans and procedures for such contingencies as can be anticipated.

The Intendant shall also charter nonprofit corporations (or foundations), unless the President shall object, determined by him to be for useful public purposes. Such corporations shall be exempt from taxation but shall conduct no profitmaking enterprises.

SECTION 15. The Intendant shall also be a counselor for the coordination of scientific and cultural experiments, and for studies within the government and elsewhere, and for this purpose shall employ such assistance as may be found necessary.

SECTION 16. Offices for other purposes may be established and may be discontinued by presidential order within the funds allocated in the procedures of appropriation.

ARTICLE VI
The Legislative Branch
(The Senate and the House of Representatives)
A. The Senate

SECTION 1.There shall be a Senate with membership as follows: If they so desire, former Presidents, Vice-Presidents, Principal Justices, Overseers, Chairmen of the Planning and Regulatory Boards, Governors having had more than seven years service, and unsuccessful candidates for the presidency and vice-presidency who have received at least 30 percent of the vote. To be appointed by the President, three persons who have been Chancellors, two officials from the civil service, two officials from the diplomatic services,two senior military officers,also one person from a panel of three, elected in a process approved by the Overseer, by each of twelve such groups or associations as the President may recognize from time to time to be nationally representative, but none shall be a political or religious group, no individual selected shall have been paid by any private interest to influence government, and any association objected to by the Senate shall not be recognized. Similarly, to be appointed by the Principal Justice, two persons distinguished in public law and two former members of the High Courts or the Judicial Council. Also, to be elected by the House of Representatives, three members who have served six or more years.

Vacancies shall be filled as they occur.

SECTION 2. Membership shall continue for life, except that absences not provided for by rule shall constitute retirement, and that Senators may retire voluntarily.

SECTION 3. The Senate shall elect as presiding officer a Convener who shall serve for two years when his further service may be discontinued by a majority vote. Other officers, including a Deputy, shall be appointed by the Convener unless the Senate shall object.

SECTION 4. The Senate shall meet each year on the second Tuesday in July and shall be in continuous session, but may adjourn to the call of the Convener. A quorum shall be more than threefifths of the whole membership

SECTION 5. The Senate shall consider,and return within thirty days, all measures approved by the House of Representatives (except the annual budget). Approval or disapproval shall be by a majority vote of those present. Objection shall stand unless the House of Representatives shall overcome it by a majority vote plus one; if no return be made, approval by the House of Representatives shall be final.

For consideration of laws passed by the House of Representatives or for other purposes, the Convener may appoint appropriate committees.

SECTION 6. The Senate may ask advice from the Principal Justice concerning the constitutionality of measures before it; and if this be done, the time for return to the House of Representatives may extend to ninety days.

SECTION 7. If requested, the Senate may advise the President on matters of public interest; or, if not requested, by resolution approved by two-thirds of those present. There shall be a special duty to expressions of concern during party conventions and commitments made during campaigns; and if these be neglected, to remind the President and the House of Representatives that these undertakings are to be considered.

SECTION 8. In time of present or prospective danger caused by cataclysm, by attack, or by insurrection, the Senate may declare a national emergency and may authorize the President to take appropriate action. If the Senate be dispersed, and no quorum available, the President may proclaim the emergency, and may terminate it unless the Senate shall have acted. If the President be not available, and the circumstances extreme, the senior serving member of the presidential succession may act until a quorum assembles.

SECTION 9. The Senate may also define and declare a limited emergency in time of prospective danger, or of local or regional disaster, or if an extraordinary advantage be anticipated. It shall be considered by the House of Representatives within three days and, unless disapproved, may extend for a designated period and for a limited area before renewal.

Extraordinary expenditures during emergency may be approved, without regard to usual budget procedures, by the House of Representatives with the concurrence of the President.

SECTION 10. The Senate,at the beginning of each session, shall select three of its members to constitute a National Security Committee to be consulted by the President in emergencies requiring the deployment of the armed forces abroad. If the Committee dissent from the President's proposal, it shall report to the Senate, whose decision shall be final.

SECTION 11.The Senate shall elect, or may remove, a National Watchkeeper, and shall oversee, through a standing committee, a Watchkeeping Service conducted according to rules formulated for their approval.

With the assistance of an appropriate staff the Watchkeeper shall gather and organize information concerning the adequacy, competence, and integrity of governmental agencies and their personnel, as well as their continued usefulness; and shall also suggest the need for new or expanded services, making report concerning any agency of the deleterious effect of its activities on citizens or on the environment.

The Watchkeeper shall entertain petitions for the redress of grievances and shall advise the appropriate agencies if there be need for action.

For all these purposes, personnel may be appointed, investigations made, witnesses examined, post audits made, and information required.

The Convener shall present the Watchkeeper's findings to the Senate, and if it be judged to be in the public interest, they shall be made public or, without being made public, be sent to the appropriate agency for its guidance and such action as may be needed. On recommendation of the Watchkeeper the Senate may initiate corrective measures to be voted on by the House of Representatives within thirty days. When approved by a majority and not vetoed by the President, they shall become law.

For the Watchkeeping Service one-quarter of one percent of individual net taxable incomes shall be held by the Chancellor of Financial Affairs; but amounts not expended in any fiscal year shall be available for general use.

B. The House of Representatives

SECTION 1. The House of Representatives shall be original lawmaking body of the Newstates of America.

SECTION 2.It shall convene each yell on the second Tuesday in July and shall remain in continuous session except that it may adjourn to the call of a Speaker, elected by a majority vote from among the Representatives-at-large, who shall be its presiding officer.

SECTION 3. It shall be a duty to implement the provisions of this constitution and, in legislature to be guided by them.

SECTION 4. Party leaders and their deputies shall be chosen by caucus at the beginning of each session.

SECTION 5. Standing and temporary committees shall be selected as follows:

Committees dealing with the calendaring and management of bills shall have a majority of members nominated to party caucuses by the Speaker; other members shall be nominated by minority leaders Membership shall correspond to the parties' proportions at the last election. If nominations be not approved by a majority of the caucus, the Speaker or the minority leaders shall nominate others until a majority shall approve.

Members of other committees shall be chosen by party caucus in proportion to the results of the last election. Chairmen shall be elected annually from among at-large-members.

Bills referred to committees shall be returned to the house with recommendations within sixty days unless extension be voted by the House.

In all committee actions names of those voting for and against shall be recorded.

No committee chairman may serve longer than six years.

SECTION 6. Approved legislation, not objected to by the Senate within the allotted time, shall be presented to the President for his approval or disapproval. If the President disapprove,and three-quarters of the House membership still approve, it shall become law. The names of those voting for and against shall be recorded. Bills not returned within eleven days shall become law.

SECTION 7.The President may have thirty days to consider measures approved by the House unless they shall have been submitted twelve days previous to adjournment.

SECTION 8. The house shall consider promptly the annual budget; if there be objection, it shall be notified to the Planning Board; The Board shall then resubmit through the President; and,with his comments, it shall be returned to the House. If there still be objection by a two-thirds majority, the House shall prevail. Objection must be by whole title; titles not objected to when voted on shall constitute appropriation.

The budget for the fiscal year shall be in effect on January 1. Titles not yet acted on shall be as in the former budget until action be completed.

SECTION 9. It shall be the duty of the House to make laws concerning taxes.

1. For their laying and collection:

a. They shall be uniform, and shall not be retroactive.

b. Except such as may be authorized by law to be laid by Authorities, or by the Newstates, all collections shall be made by a national revenue agency. This shall include collections for trust funds hereinafter authorized.

c. Except for corporate levies to be held in the National Sharing Fund, hereinafter authorized, taxes may be collected only from individuals and only from incomes; but there may be withholding from current incomes.

d.To assist in the maintenance of economic stability, the President may be authorized to alter rates by executive order.

e. They shall be imposed on profitmaking enterprises owned or conducted by religious establishments or other nonprofit organizations.

f. There shall be none on food, medicines, residential rentals, or commodities or services designated by law as necessities; and there shall be no double taxation.

g. None shall be levied for registering ownership or transfer of property.

2. For expenditure from revenues:

a. For the purposes detailed in the annual budget unless objection be made by the procedure prescribed herein.

b. For such other purposes as the House may indicate and require the Planning Board to include in revision of the budget; but, except in declared emergency, the total may not exceed the President's estimate of available funds.

3. For fixing the percentage of net corporate taxable incomes to be paid into a National Sharing Fund to be held in the custody of the Chancellor of Financial Affairs and made available for such welfare and environmental purposes as are authorized by law.

4. To provide for the regulation of commerce with other nations and among the Newstates, Possessions, Territories; or, as shall be mutually agreed, with other organized governments; but exports shall not be taxed; and imports shall not be taxed except on recommendation of the President at

rates whose allowable variations shall have been fixed by law. There shall be no quotas, and no nations favored by special rates, unless by special acts requiring two-thirds majorities.

5. To establish, or provide for the establishment of, institutions for the safekeeping of savings, for the gathering and distribution of capital, for the issuance of credit, for regulating the coinage of money, for controlling the media of exchange, and for stabilizing prices; but such institutions, when not public or semipublic, shall be regarded as affected with the public interest and shall be supervised by the Chancellor of Financial Affairs.

6. To establish institutions for insurance against risks and liabilities for communication, transportation, and others commonly used and necessary for public convenience.

8. To assist in the maintenance of world order,and, for this purpose, when the President shall recommend, to vest jurisdiction in international legislative, judicial, or administrative agencies.

9. To develop with other peoples, and for the benefit of all, the resources of space, of other bodies in the universe, and of the seas beyond twelve miles from low-water shores unless treaties shall provide other limits.

10. To assist other peoples who have not attained satisfactory levels of well-being; to delegate the administration of funds for assistance, whenever possible, to international agencies; and to invest in or contribute to the furthering of development in other parts of the world.

11. To assure, or to assist in assuring, adequate and equal facilities for education; for training in occupations citizens may be fitted to pursue; and to reeducate or retrain those whose occupations may become obsolete.

12. To establish or to assist institutions devoted to higher education, to research, or to technical training.

13. To establish and maintain, or assist in maintaining, libraries, archives, monuments, and other places of historic interest.

14. To assist in the advancement of sciences and technologies; and to encourage cultural activities.

15. To conserve natural resources by purchase, by withdrawal from use, or by regulation; to provide, or to assist in providing, facilities for recreation; to establish and maintain parks, forests, wilderness areas, wetlands, and prairies; to improve streams and other waters; to ensure the purity of air and water; to control the erosion of soils; and to provide for all else necessary for the protection and common use of the national heritage.

16. To acquire property and improvements for public use at costs to be fixed, if necessary, by the Court of Claims.

17. To prevent the stoppage or hindrance of governmental procedures, or other activities affected with a public interest as defined by law, by reason of disputes between employers and employees, or for other reasons, and for this purpose to provide for conclusive arbitration if adequate provision for collective bargaining fail. From such findings there may be appeal to the Court of Arbitration Review; but such proceedings may not stay the acceptance of findings.

18. To support an adequate civil service for the performance of such duties as may be designated by administrators; and for this purpose to refrain from interference with the processes of appointment or placement, asking advice or testimony before committees only with the consent of appropriate superiors.

19. To provide for the maintenance of armed forces.

20. To enact such measures as will assist families in making adjustment to future conditions, using estimates concerning population and resources made by the Planning Board.

21. To vote within ninety days on such measures as the President may designate as urgent.

Article VII
The Regulatory Branch

SECTION 1. There shall be a Regulatory Branch, and there shall be a National Regulator chosen by majority vote of the Senate and removable by a two-thirds vote of that body. His term shall be seven years, and he shall make and administer rules for the conduct of all economic enterprises.

The Regulatory Branch shall have such agencies as the Board may find necessary and are not disapproved by law.

SECTION 2. The Regulatory Board shall consist of seventeen members recommended to the Senate by the Regulator. Unless rejected by majority vote they shall act with the Regulator as a lawmaking body for industry.

They shall initially have terms of one to seventeen years, one being replaced each year and serving for seventeen years. They shall be compensated and shall have no other occupation.

SECTION 3. Under procedures approved by the Board,the Regulator shall charter all corporations or enterprises except those exempted because of size or other characteristics, or those supervised by the Chancellor of Financial Affairs, or by the Intendant, or those whose activities are confined to one Newstate.

Charters shall describe proposed activities, and departure from these shall require amendment on penalty of revocation. For this purpose there shall be investigation and enforcement services under the direction of the Regulator.

SECTION 4. Chartered enterprises in similar industries or occupations may organize joint Authorities. These may formulate among themselves codes to ensure fair competition, meet external costs, set standards for quality and service, expand trade, increase production, eliminate waste, and assist in standardization. Authorities may maintain for common use services for research and communication; but membership shall be open to all eligible enterprises. Nonmembers shall be required to maintain the same standards as those prescribed for members.

SECTION 5. Authorities shall have governing committees of five, two being appointed by the Regulator to represent the public. They shall serve as he may determine; they shall be compensated; and he shall take care that there be no conflicts of interest. The Board may approve or prescribe rules for the distribution of profits to stockholders, allowable amounts of working capital, and reserves. Costing and all other practices affecting the public interest shall be monitored.

All codes shall be subject to review by the Regulator with his board.

SECTION 6. Member enterprises of an Authority shall be exempt from other regulation.

SECTION 7. The Regulator, with his Board, shall fix standards and procedures for mergers of enterprises or the acquisition of some by others; and these shall be in effect unless rejected by the Court of Administrative Settlements. The purpose shall be to encourage adaptation to change and to further approved intentions for the nation.

SECTION 8. The charters of enterprises may be revoked and Authorities may be dissolved by the Regulator, with the concurrence of the Board, if they restrict the production of goods and services, or controls of their prices; also if external costs are not assessed to their originators or if the ecological impacts of their operations are deleterious.

SECTION 9. Operations extending abroad shall conform to policies notified to the Regulator by the President; and he shall restrict or control such activities as appear to injure the national interest.

SECTION 10. The Regulator shall make rules for and shall supervise marketplaces for goods and services; but this shall not include security exchanges regulated by the Chancellor of Financial Affairs.

SECTION 11. Designation of enterprises affected with a public interest, rules for conduct of enterprises and of their Authorities, and other actions of the Regulator or of the Boards may be appealed to the Court of Administrative Settlements, whose judgments shall be informed by the intention to establish fairness to consumers and competitors and stability in economic affairs.

SECTION 12. Responsible also to the Regulator, there shall be an Operations Commission appointed by the Regulator, unless the Senate object, for the supervision of enterprises owned in whole or in part by government. The commission shall choose its chairman, and he shall be the executive head of a supervisory staff. He may require reports, conduct investigations, and make rules and recommendations concerning surpluses or deficits, the absorption of external costs, standards of service, and rates or prices charged for services or goods.

Each enterprise shall have a director, chosen by and removable by the Commission; and he shall conduct its affairs in accordance with standards fixed by the Commission.

Article VIII
The Judicial Branch

SECTION 1. There shall be a Principal Justice of the Newstates for America; a Judicial Council; and a Judicial Assembly. There shall also be a Supreme Court and a High Court of Appeals; also Courts of Claims, Rights and Duties, Administrative Review. Arbitration Settlements, Tax Appeals, and Appeals from Watchkeeper's Findings. There shall be Circuit Courts to be of first resort in suits brought under national law; and they shall hear appeals from courts of the Newstates.

Other courts may be established by law on recommendation of the Principal Justice with the Judicial Council.

SECTION 2. The Principal Justice shall preside over the judicial system, shall appoint the members of all national courts, and, unless the Judicial Council object, shall make us rules; also, through an

Administrator, supervise its operations.

SECTION 3. The Judicial Assembly shall consist of Circuit Court Judges, together with those of the High Courts of the Newstates of America and those of the highest courts of the Newstates. It shall meet annually, or at the call of the Principal Justice, to consider the state of the Judiciary and such other matters as may be laid before it.

It shall also meet at the call of the Convener to nominate three candidates for the Principal Justiceship whenever a vacancy shall occur. From these nominees the Senate shall choose the one having the most votes.

SECTION 4. The Principal Justice, unless the Senate object to any, shall appoint a Judicial Council of five members to serve during his incumbency. He shall designate a senior member who shall preside in his absence.

It shall be the duty of the Council, under the direction of the Principal Justice, to study the courts in operation, to prepare codes of ethics to be observed by members, and to suggest changes in procedure. The Council may ask the advice of the Judicial Assembly.

It shall also be a duty of the Council, as hereinafter provided, to suggest Constitutional amendments when they appear to be necessary; and it shall also draft revisions if they shall be required. Further it shall examine,and from time to time cause to be revised, civil and criminal codes; these, when approved by the Judicial Assembly, shall be in effect throughout the nation.

SECTION 5. The Principal Justice shall have a term of eleven years; but if at any time the incumbent resign or be disabled from continuing in office, as may be determined by the Senate, replacement shall be by the senior member of the Judicial Council until a new selection be made. After six years the Assembly may provide, by a two-thirds vote, for discontinuance in office, and a successor shall then be chosen.

SECTION 6. The Principal Justice may suspend members of any court for incapacity or violation of rules; and the separation shall be final if a majority of the Council agree.

For each court the Principal Justice shall, from time to time, appoint a member who shall preside.

SECTION 7. A presiding judge may decide, with the concurrence of the senior judge, that there may be pretrial proceedings, that criminal trials shall be conducted by either investigatory or adversary proceedings, and whether there shall be a jury and what the number of jurors shall be; but investigatory proceedings shall require a bench of three.

SECTION 8. In deciding on the concordance of statutes with the Constitution, the Supreme Court shall return to the House of Representatives such as it cannot construe. If the House fail to make return within ninety days the Court may interpret.

SECTION 9. The Principal Justice, or the President, may grant pardons or reprieves.

SECTION 10. The High Courts shall have thirteen members; but nine members, chosen by their senior justices from time to time, shall constitute a court. The justices on leave shall be subject to recall.

Other courts shall have nine members; but seven, chosen by their senior, shall constitute a court. All shall be in continuous session except for recesses approved by the Principal Justice.

SECTION 11. The Principal Justice, with the Council, may advise the Senate, when requested, concerning the appropriateness of measures approved by the House of Representatives; and may also advise the President, when requested, on matters he may refer for consultation.

SECTION 12. It shall be for other branches to accept and to enforce judicial decrees.

SECTION 13. The High Court of Appeals may select applications for further consideration by the Supreme Court of decisions reached by other courts, including those of the Newstates. If it agree that there be a constitutional issue it may make preliminary judgment to be reviewed without hearing, and finally, by the Supreme Court.

SECTION 14. The Supreme Court may decide:

a. Whether, in litigation coming to it on appeal, constitutional provisions have been violated or standards have not been met.

b. On the application of constitutional provisions to suits involving the Newstates.

c. Whether international law, as recognized in treaties. United Nations aggreements, or arrangements with other nations, has been ignored or violated.

d. Other causes involving the interpretation of constitutional provisions; except that in holding any branch to have exceeded its powers the decision shall be suspended until the Judicial Court shall have determined whether, in order to avoid confrontation, procedures for amendment of the Constitution are appropriate.

If amendatory proceedings are instituted, decision shall await the outcome.

SECTION 15. The Courts of the Newstates shall have initial jurisdiction in cases arising under their laws except those involing the Newstate itself or those reserved for national courts by a rule of the Principal Justice with the Judicial Council.

ARTICLE IX
General Provisions

SECTION 1. Qualifications for participation in democratic procedures as a citizen, and eligibility for office, shall be subject to repeated study and redefinition; but any change in qualification or eligibility shall become effective only if not disapproved by the Congress.

For this purpose a permanent Citizenship and Qualifications Commission shall be constituted, four members to be appointed by the President, three by the Convener of the Senate, three by the Speaker of the House, and three by the Principal Justice. Vacancies shall be filled as they occur. The members shall choose a chairman; they shall have suitable assistants and accommodations; and they may have other occupations. Recommendations of the commission shall be presented to the President and shall be transmitted to the House of Representatives with comments. They shall have a preferred place on the calendar and, of approved, shall be in effect.

SECTION 2. Areas necessary for the uses of government may be accquired at its valuation and may be maintained as the public interest may require. Such areas shall have self-government in matters of local concern.

SECTION 3. The President may negotiate for the acquisition of areas outside the Newstates of America, and, if the Senate approve, may provide for their organization as Possessions or Territories

SECTION 4. The President may make agreements with other organized peoples for a relation other than full membership in the Newstates of America. They may become citizens and may participate in the selection of officials. They may receive assistance for their development or from the National Sharing Fund if they conform to its requirements; and they may serve in civilian or military services, but only as volunteers. They shall be represented in the House of Representatices by members elected at large, their number proportional to their constituencies; but each shall have at least one; and each shall in "the same way choose one permanent member of the Senate.

SECTION 5. The President, the Vice - Presidents, and members of the legislative houses shall in all cases except treason, felony, and breach of the peace be exempt from penalty for anything they may say while pursuing public duties; but the Judicial Council may make restraining rules.

SECTION 6. Except as otherwise provided by this Constitution, each legislative house shall establish its requirement for membership and may make rules for the conduct of members, including conflicts of interest, providing its own disciplines for their infraction.

SECTION 7. No Newstate shall interfere with officials of the Newstates of America in the performance of their duties, and all shall give full faith and credit to the Acts of other Newstates and of the Newstates of America.

SECTION 8. Public funds shall be expended only as authorized in this Constitution.

ARTICLE X
Governmental Arrangements

SECTION 1. Offices of the Newstates of America shall be those named in this Constitution, including those of the legislative houses and others authorized by law to be appointed; they shall be compensated, and none may have other paid occupation unless they be excepted by law; none shall occupy more than one position in government; and no gift or favor shall be accepted if in any way related to official duty.

No income from former employments or associations shall continue for their benefits; but their properties may be put in trust and managed without their intervention during continuance in office. Hardships under this rule may be considered by the Court of Rights and Duties, and exceptions may be made with due regard to the general intention.

SECTION 2. The President, the Vice-Presidents, and the Principal Justice shall have households appropriate to their duties. The President, the Vice-Presidents, the Principal Justice, the Chairman of the Planning Board, the Regulator, the Watchkeeper, and the Overseer shall have salaries fixed by law and continued for life; but if they become members of the Senate, they shall have senatorial compensation and shall conform to senatorial requirements.

Justices of the High Courts shall have no term; and their salaries shall be two-thirds that of the Principal Justice; they and members of the Judicial Council, unless they shall have become Senators, shall be permanent members of the Judiciary and shall be available for assignment by the Principal Justice.

Salaries for members of the Senate shall be the same as for Justices of the High Court of Appeals.

SECTION 3. Unless otherwise provided herein, officials designated by the head of a branch as sharers in policymaking may be appointed by him with the President's concurrence and unless the Senate shall object.

SECTION 4. There shall be administrators:

a. for executive offices and official households, appointed by authority of the President;
b. for the national courts, appointed by the Principal Justice;
c. for the Legislative Branch, selected by a committee of members from each house (chosen by the Convener and the Speaker), three from the House of Representatices and four from the Senate.

Appropriations shall be made to them; but those for the Presidency shall not be reduced during his term unless with his consent; and those for the Judicial Branch shall not be reduced during five years succeding their determination, unless with the consent of the Principal Justice.

SECTION 5. The fiscal year shall be the same as the calendar year, with new appropriations available at its beginning.

SECTION 6. There shall be an Officials' Protective Service to guard the President, the Vice-Presidents, the Principal Justice, and other officials whose safety may be at hazard; and there shall be a Protector appointed by and responsible to a standing committee of the Senate. Protected officials shall be guided by procedures approved by the committee.

The service, at the request of the Political Overseer, may extend its protection to candidates for office; or to other officials, if the committee so decide.

SECTION 7. A suitable contingency fund shall be made available to the President for purposes defined by law.

SECTION 8. The Senate shall try officers of government other than legislators when such officers are impeached by a two-thirds vote of the House of Representatives for conduct prejudicial to the public interest. If Presidents or Vice-Presidents are to be tried, the Senate, as constituted, shall conduct the trial. Judgments shall not extend beyond removal from office and disqualification for holding further office; but the convicted official shall be liable to further prosecution.

SECTION 9. Members of legislative houses may be impeached by the Judicial Council; but for trials it shall be enlarged to seventeen by Justices of the High Courts appointed by the Principal Justice. If convicted, members shall be expelled and be ineligible for future public office; and they shall also be liable for trial as citizens.

ARTICLE XI

Amendment

SECTION 1. It being the special duty of the Judicial Council to formulate and suggest amendments to this Constitution, it shall, from time to time, make proposals, through the Principal Justice, to the Senate. The Senate, if it approve, and if the President agree, shall instruct the Overseer to arrange at the next national election for submission of the amendment to the electorate. If not disapproved by a majority, it shall become part of this Constitution. If rejected, it may be restudied and a new proposal submitted.

It shall be the purpose of the amending procedure to correct deficiencies in the Constitution, to extend it when new responsibilities require, and to make government responsible to needs of the people, making use of advances in managerial competence and establishing security and stability; also to preclude changes in the Constitution resulting from interpretation.

SECTION 2. When this Constitution shall have been in effect for twenty-five years the Overseer shall ask, by referendum whether a new Constitution shall be prepared. If a majority so decide, the Council, making use of such advice as may be available, and consulting those who have made complaint, shall prepare a new draft for submission at the next election. If not disapproved by a majority it shall be in effect. If disapproved it shall be redrafted and resubmitted with such changes as may be then appropriate to the circumstances, and it shall be submitted to the voters at the following election.

If not disapproved by a majority it shall be in effect. If disapproved it shall be restudied and resubmitted.

ARTICLE XII

Transition

SECTION 1. The President is authorized to assume such powers, make such appointments, and use such funds as are necessary to make this Constitution effective as soon as possible after acceptance by a referendum he may initiate.

SECTION 2. Such members of the Senate as may be at once available shall convene and, if at least half, shall constitute sufficient membership while others are being added. They shall appoint an Overseer to arrange for electoral organization and elections for the offices of government; but the President and Vice-Presidents shall serve out their terms and then become members of the Senate. At that time the presidency shall be constituted as provided in this Constitution.

SECTION 3. Until each indicated change in the government shall have been completed the provisions of the existing Constitution and the organs of government shall be in effect.

SECTION 4. All operations of the national government shall cease as they are replaced by those authorized under this Constitution.

The President shall determine when replacement is complete.

The President shall cause to be constituted an appropriate commission to designate existing laws inconsistent with this Constitution, and they shall be void; also the commission shall assist the President and the legislative houses in the formulating of such laws as may be consistent with the Constitution and necessary to its implementation.

SECTION 5. For establishing Newstates' boundaries a commission of thirteen, appointed by the President, shall make recommendations within one year. For this purpose the members may take advice and commission studies concerning resources, population, transportation, communication, economic and social arrangements, and such other conditions as may be significant. The President shall transmit the commission's report to the Senate. After entertaining, if convenient, petitions for revision, the Senate shall report whether the recommendations are satisfactory but the President shall decide whether they shall be accepted or shall be returned for revision.

Existing states shall not be divided unless metropolitan areas extending over more than one state are to be included in one Newstate, or unless other compelling circumstances exist; and each Newstate shall possess harmonious regional characteristics.

The Commission shall continue while the Newstates make adjustments among themselves and shall have jurisdiction in disputes arising among them.

SECTION 6. Constitutions of the Newstates shall be established as arranged by the Judicial Council and the Principal Justice.

These procedures shall be as follows: Constitutions shall be drafted by the highest courts of the Newstates. There shall then be a convention of one hundred delegates chosen in special elections in a procedure approved by the Overseer. If the Constitution be not rejected, the Principal Justice, advised by the Judicial Council, shall promulgate a Constitution and initiate revisions to be submitted for approval at a time he shall appoint. If it again be rejected he shall promulgate another, taking account of objections, and it shall be in effect. A Constitution, once in effect, shall be valid for twenty-five years as herein provided.

SECTION 7. Until Governors and legislatures of the Newstates are seated, their governments shall continue, except that the President may appoint temporary Governors to act as executives until succeeded by those regularly elected. These Governors shall succeed to the executive functions of the states as they become one of the Newstates of America.

SECTION 8. The indicated appointments, elections, and other arrangements shall be made with all deliberate speed.

SECTION 9. The first Judicial Assembly for selecting a register for candidates for the Principal Justiceship of the Newstates of America shall be called by the incumbent Chief Justice immediately upon ratification.

SECTION 10. Newstates electing by referendum not to comply with recommendations of the Boundary Commission, as approved by the Senate, shall have deducted from taxes collected by the Newstates of America for transmission to them a percentage equal to the loss in efficiency from failure to comply.

Estimates shall be made by the Chancellor of Financial Affairs and approved by the President; but the deduction shall not be less than 7 percent.

SECTION 11. When this Constitution has been implemented the President may delete by proclamation appropriate parts of this article.

Chapter 15

PROTOCOLS OF THE WISE MEN OF ZION

The Protocols of Zion were referred to in the late 1700s. The first copy available to public scrutiny surfaced in the early 1800s. Every aspect of this plan to subjugate the world has since become reality, validating the authenticity of conspiracy.

Author's Note: This is an exact reprint of the original text. This has been written intentionally to deceive people. For clear understanding, the word "Zion" should be "Sion"; any reference to "Jews" should be replaced with the word "Illuminati"; and the word "goyim" should be replaced with the word "cattle."

Here is "The Britons" translation of the complete text of the notorious Nilus "Protocols of the Wise Men of Zion."

PROTOCOLS OF THE MEETINGS OF THE LEARNED ELDERS OF ZION

PROTOCOL NO. 1

. . . Putting aside fine phrases we shall speak of the significance of each thought: by comparisons and deductions we shall throw light upon surrounding facts.

What I am about to set forth, then, is our system from the two points of view, that of ourselves and that of the goyim (i.e., non-Jews).

It must be noted that men with bad instincts are more in number than the good, and therefore the best results in governing them are attained by violence and terrorisation, and not by academic discussions. Every man aims at power, everyone would like to become a dictator if only he could, and rare indeed are the men who would not be willing to sacrifice the welfare of all for the sake of securing their own welfare.

What has restrained the beasts of prey who are called men? What has served for their guidance hitherto?

In the beginnings of the structure of society they were subjected to brutal and blind force; afterwards—to Law, which is the same force, only disguised. I draw the conclusion that by the law of nature right lies in force.

Political freedom is an idea but not a fact. This idea one must know how to apply whenever it appears necessary with this bait of an idea to attract the masses of the people to one's party for the purpose of crushing another who is in authority. This task is rendered easier if the opponent has himself been infected with the idea of freedom, so-called liberalism, and, for the sake of an idea, is willing to yield some of his power. It is precisely here that the triumph of our theory appears: the slackened reins of government are immediately, by the law of life, caught up and gathered together by a new hand, because the blind might of the nation cannot for one single day exist without guidance, and the new authority merely fits into the place of the old already weakened by liberalism.

In our day the power which has replaced that of the rulers who were liberal is the power of Gold. Time was when Faith ruled. The idea of freedom is impossible of realisation because no one knows how to use it with moderation. It is enough to hand over a people to self-government for a certain length of time for that people to be turned into a disorganised mob. From that moment on we get internecine strife which soon develops into battles between classes, in the midst of which States burn down and their importance is reduced to that of a heap of ashes.

Whether a State exhausts itself in its own convulsions, whether its internal discord brings it under the power of external foes—in any case it can be accounted irretrievably lost: it is in our power. The despotism of Capital, which is entirely in our hands, reaches out to it a straw that the State, willy-nilly, must take hold of: if not—it goes to the bottom.

Should anyone of a liberal mind say that such reflections as the above are immoral I would put the following questions:—If every State has two foes and if in regard to the external foe it is allowed and not considered immoral to use every manner and art of conflict, as for example to keep the enemy in ignorance of plans of attack and defence, to attack him by night or in superior numbers, then in what way can the same means in regard to a worse foe, the destroyer of the structure of society and the commonweal, be called immoral and not permissible?

Is it possible for any sound logical mind to hope with any success to guide crowds by the aid of reasonable counsels and arguments, when any objection or contradiction, senseless though it may be, can be made and when such objection may find more favour with the people whose powers of reasoning are superficial? Men in masses and the men of the masses, being guided solely by petty passions, paltry beliefs customs, traditions and sentimental theorism, fall a prey to party distention, which hinders any kind of agreement even on the basis of a perfectly reasonable argument. Every resolution of a crowd depends upon a chance or packed majority, which, in its ignorance of political secrets, puts forth some ridiculous resolution that lays in the administration a seed of anarchy.

The political has nothing in common with the moral. The ruler who is governed by the moral is not a skilled politician, and is therefore unstable on his throne. He who wishes to rule must have recourse both to cunning and to make-believe. Great national qualities, like frankness and honesty, are vices in politics, for they bring down rulers from their thrones more effectively and more certainly than the most powerful enemy. Such qualities must be the attributes of the kingdoms of the goyim, but we must in no wise be guided by them.

Our right lies in force. The word "right" is an abstract thought and proved by nothing. The word means no more than:—Give me what I want in order that thereby I might have a proof that I am stronger than you.

Where does right begin? Where does it end?

In any State in which there is a bad organisation of authority, an impersonality of laws and of the rulers who have lost their personality amid the flood of rights ever multiplying out of liberalism, I find a new right—to attack by the right of the strong, and to scatter to the winds all existing forces of order and regulation, to reconstruct all institutions and to become the sovereign lord of those who have left to us the rights of their power by laying them down voluntarily in their liberalism.

Our power in the present tottering condition of all forms of power will be more invincible than any other, because it will remain invisible until the moment when it has gained such strength that no cunning can any longer undermine it.

Out of the temporary evil we are now compelled to commit will emerge the good of an unshakeable rule, which will restore the regular course of the machinery of the national life, brought to naught by liberalism. The result justifies the means. Let us, however, in our plans, direct our attention not so much to what is good and moral as to what is necessary and useful.

Before us is a plan in which is laid down strategically the line from which we cannot deviate without running the risk of seeing the labour of many centuries brought to naught.

In order to elaborate satisfactory forms of action it is necessary to have regard to the rascality, the slackness, the instability of the mob, its lack of capacity to understand and respect the conditions of its own life, or its own welfare. It must be understood that the might of a mob is blind, senseless and unreasoning force ever at the mercy of a suggestion from any side. The blind cannot lead the blind without bringing them into the abyss; consequently, members of the mob, upstarts from the people even though they should be as a genius for wisdom, yet having no understanding of the political, cannot come forward as leaders of the mob without bringing the whole nation to ruin.

Only one trained from childhood for independent rule can have understanding of the words that can be made up of the political alphabet.

A people left to itself, i.e., to upstarts from its midst, brings itself to ruin by party dissensions excited by the pursuit of power and honours and disorders arising therefrom. Is it possible for the masses of the people calmly and without petty jealousies to form judgments, to deal with the affairs of the country, which cannot be mixed up with personal interests? Can they defend themselves from an external foe? It is unthinkable, for a plan broken up into as many parts as there are heads in the mob, loses all homogeneity, and thereby becomes unintelligible and impossible of execution.

It is only with a despotic ruler that plans can be elaborated extensively and clearly in such a way as to distribute the whole properly among the several parts of the machinery of the State: from this the conclusion is inevitable that a satisfactory form of government for any country is one that concentrates in the hands of one responsible person. Without an absolute despotism there can be no existence for civilisation which is carried on not by the masses but by their guide, whosoever that person may be. The mob is a savage and displays its savagery at every opportunity. The moment the mob seizes freedom in its hands it quickly turns to anarchy, which in itself is the highest degree of savagery.

Behold the alcoholised animals, bemused with drink, the right to an immoderate use of which comes along with freedom. It is not for us and ours to walk that road. The peoples of the goyim are bemused with alcoholic liquors; their youth has grown stupid on classicism and from early immorality, into which it has been inducted by our special agents—by tutors, lackeys, governesses in the houses of the wealthy, by clerks and others, by our women in the places of dissipation frequented by the goyim. In the number of these last I count also the so-called "society ladies," voluntary followers of the others in corruption and luxury.

Our countersign is—Force and Make-believe. Only force conquers in political affairs, especially if it be concealed in the talents essential to statesmen. Violence must be the principle, and cunning and make-believe the rule for governments which do not want to lay down their crowns at the feet of agents of some new power. This evil is the one and only means to attain the end, the good. Therefore we must not stop at bribery, deceit and treachery when they should serve towards the attainment of our end. In politics one must know how to seize the property of others without hesitation if by it we secure submission and sovereignty.

Our State, marching along the path of peaceful conquest, has the right to replace the horrors of war by less noticeable and more satisfactory sentences of death, necessary to maintain the terror which tends to produce blind submission. Just but merciless severity is the greatest factor of strength in the State: not only for the sake of gain but also in the name of duty, for the sake of victory, we must keep to the programme of violence and make-believe. The doctrine of squaring accounts is precisely as strong as the means of which it makes use. Therefore it is not so much by the means themselves as by the doctrine of severity that we shall triumph and bring all governments into subjection to our super-government. It is enough for them to know that we are merciless for all disobedience to cease.

Far back in ancient times we were the first to cry among the masses of the people the words "Liberty, Equality, Fraternity," words many times repeated since those days by stupid poll-parrots who from all sides round flew down upon these baits and with them carried away the well-being of the world, true freedom of the individual, formerly so well guarded against the pressure of the mob. The would-be wise men of the goyim, the intellectuals, could not make anything out of the uttered words in their abstractness; did not note the contradiction of their meaning and inter-relation: did not see that in nature there is no equality, cannot be freedom: that Nature herself has established inequality of minds, of characters, and capacities, just as immutably as she has established subordination to her laws: never stopped to think that the mob is a blind thing, that upstarts elected from among it to bear rule are, in regard to the political, the same blind men as the mob itself, that the adept, though he be a fool, can yet rule, whereas the non-adept, even if he were a genius, understands nothing in the political—to all these things the goyim paid no regard; yet all the time it was based upon these things that dynastic rule rested: the father passed on to the son a knowledge of the course of political affairs in such wise that none should know it but members of the dynasty and none could betray it to the governed. As time went on the meaning of the dynastic transference of the true position of affairs in the political was lost, and this aided the success of our cause.

In all corners of the earth the words "Liberty, Equality, Fraternity" brought to our ranks, thanks to our blind agents, whole legions who bore our banners with enthusiasm. And all the time these words were canker-worms at work boring into the well-being of the goyim, putting an end everywhere to peace, quiet, solidarity and destroying all the foundations of the goy States. As you will see later, this helped us to our triumph; it gave us the possibility, among other things, of getting into our hands the master card—the destruction of the privileges, or in other words of the very existence of the aristocracy of the goyim, that class which was the only defence peoples and countries had against us. On the ruins of the natural and genealogical aristocracy of the goyim we have set up the aristocracy of our educated class headed by the aristocracy of money. The qualifications for this aristocracy we have established in wealth, which is dependent upon us, and in knowledge, for which our learned elders provide the motive force.

Our triumph has been rendered easier by the fact that in our relations with the men whom we wanted we have always worked upon the most sensitive chords of the human mind, upon the cash account, upon the cupidity, upon the insatiability for material needs of man; and each one of these human weaknesses, taken alone, is sufficient to paralyse initiative, for it hands over the will of men to the disposition of him who has bought their activities.

The abstraction of freedom has enabled us to persuade the mob in all countries that their government is nothing but the steward of the people who are the owners of the country, and that the steward may be replaced like a worn-out glove.

It is this possibility of replacing the representatives of the people which has placed them at our disposal, and, as it were, given us the power of appointment.

PROTOCOL NO. 2

It is indispensable for our purpose that wars, so far as possible, should not result in territorial gains: war will thus be brought on to the economic ground, where the nations will not fail to perceive in the assistance we give the strength of our predominance, and this state of things will put both sides at the mercy of our international agentur; which possesses millions of eyes ever on the watch and unhampered by any limitations whatsoever. Our international rights will then wipe out national rights, in the proper sense of right, and will rule the nations precisely as the civil law of States rules the relations of their subjects among themselves.

The administrators, whom we shall choose from among the public, with strict regard to their capacities for servile obedience, will not be persons trained in the arts of government, and will therefore easily become pawns in our game in the hands of men of learning and genius who will be their advisers, specialists bred and reared from early childhood to rule the affairs of the whole world. As is well known to you, these specialists of ours have been drawing to fit them for rule the information they need from our political plans, from the lessons of history, from observations made of the events of every moment as it passes. The goyim are not guided by practical use of unprejudiced historical observation, but by theoretical routine without any critical regard for consequent results. We need not, therefore, take any account of them—let them amuse themselves until the hour strikes, or live on hopes of new forms of enterprising pastime, or on the memories of all they have enjoyed. For them let that play the principal part which we have persuaded them to accept as the dictates of science (theory). It is with this object in view that we are constantly, by means of our press, arousing a blind confidence in these theories. The intellectuals of the goyim will puff themselves up with their knowledge and without any logical verification of it will put into effect all the information available from science, which our agentur specialists have cunningly pieced together for the purpose of educating their minds in the direction we want.

Do not suppose for a moment that these statements are empty words: think carefully of the successes we arranged for Darwinism, Marxism, Nietzsche-ism. To us Jews, at any rate, it should be plain to see what a disintegrating importance these directives have had upon the minds of the goyim.

It is indispensable for us to take account of the thoughts, characters, tendencies of the nations in order to avoid making slips in the political and in the direction of administrative affairs. The triumph of our system, of which the component parts of the machinery may be variously disposed according to the temperament of the peoples met on our way, will fail of success if the practical application of it be not based upon a summing up of the lessons of the past in the light of the present.

In the hands of the States of to-day there is a great force that creates the movement of thought in the people, and that is the Press. The part played by the Press is to keep pointing out requirements supposed to be indispensable, to give voice to the complaints of the people, to express and to create discontent. It is in the Press that the triumph of freedom of speech finds its incarnation. But the goyim States have not known how to make use of this force; and it has fallen into our hands. Through the Press we have gained the power to influence while remaining ourselves in the shade; thanks to the Press we have got the gold in our hands, notwithstanding that we have had to gather it out of oceans of blood and tears. But it has paid us, though we have sacrificed many of our people. Each victim on our side is worth in the sight of God a thousand goyim.

PROTOCOL NO. 3

To-day I may tell you that our goal is now only a few steps off. There remains a small space to cross and the whole long path we have trodden is ready now to close its cycle of the Symbolic Snake, by which we symbolise our people. When this ring closes, all the States of Europe will be locked in its coil as in a powerful vice.

The constitution scales of these days will shortly break down, for we have established them with a certain lack of accurate balance in order that they may oscillate incessantly until they wear through the pivot on which they turn. The goyim are under the impression that they have welded them sufficiently strong and they have all along kept on expecting that the scales would come into equilibrium. But the pivots—the kings on their thrones—are hemmed in by their representatives, who play the fool, distraught with their own uncontrolled and irresponsible power. This power they owe to the terror which has been breathed into the palaces. As they have no means of getting at their people, into their very midst, the kings on their thrones are no longer able to come to terms with them and so strengthen themselves against seekers after power. We have made a gulf between the far-seeing Sovereign Power and the blind force of the people so that both have lost all meaning, for like the blind man and his stick, both are powerless apart.

In order to incite seekers after power to a misuse of power we have set all forces in opposition one to another, breaking up their liberal tendencies towards independence. To this end we have stirred up every form of enterprise, we have armed all parties, we have set up authority as a target for every ambition. Of States we have made gladiatorial arenas where a host of confused issues contend .... A little more, and disorders and bankruptcy will be universal. . . .

Babblers inexhaustible have turned into oratorical contests the sittings of Parliament and Administrative Boards. Bold journalists and unscrupulous pamphleteers daily fall upon executive officials. Abuses of power will put the final touch in preparing all institutions for their overthrow and everything will fly skyward under the blows of the maddened mob.

All people are chained down to heavy toil by poverty more firmly than ever they were chained by slavery and serfdom; from these, one way and another, they might free themselves, these could be settled with, but from want they will never get away. We have included in the constitution such rights as to the masses appear fictitious and not actual rights. All these so-called "People's Rights" can exist only in idea, an idea which can never be realised in practical life. What is it to the proletariat labourer, bowed double over his heavy toil, crushed by his lot in life, if talkers get the right to babble, if journalists get the right to scribble any nonsense side by side with good stuff, once the proletariat has no other profit out of the constitution save only those pitiful crumbs which we fling them from our table in return for their voting in favour of what we dictate, in favour of the men we place in power, the servants of our agentur. . . . Republican rights for a poor man are no more than a bitter piece of irony, for the necessity he is under of toiling almost all day gives him no present use of them, but on the other hand robs him of all guarantee of regular and certain earnings by making him dependent on strikes by his comrades or lockouts by his masters.

The people under our guidance have annihilated the aristocracy, who were their one and only defence and foster-mother for the sake of their own advantage which is inseparably bound up with the well-being of the people. Nowadays, with the destruction of the aristocracy, the people have fallen into the grips of merciless money-grinding scoundrels who have laid a pitiless and cruel yoke upon the necks of the workers.

We appear on the scene as alleged saviours of the worker from this oppression when we propose to him to enter the ranks of our fighting forces—Socialists, Anarchists, Communists—to whom we always give support in accordance with an alleged brotherly rule (of the solidarity of all humanity) of our social masonry. The aristocracy, which enjoyed by law the labour of the workers, was interested in seeing that the workers were well fed, healthy and strong. We are interested in just the opposite—in the diminution, the killing out of the GOYIM. Our power is in the chronic shortness of food and physical weakness of the worker because by all that this implies he is made the slave of our will, and he will not find in his own authorities either strength or energy to set against our will. Hunger creates the right of capital to rule the worker more surely than it was given to the aristocracy by the legal authority of kings.

By want and the envy and hatred which it engenders we shall move the mobs and with their hands we shall wipe out all those who hinder us on our way.

When the hour strikes for our Sovereign Lord of all the World to be crowned it is these same hands which will sweef away everything that might be a hindrance thereto.

The goyim have lost the habit of thinking unless prompted by the suggestions of our specialists. Therefore they do not see the urgent necessity of what we, when our kingdom comes, shall adopt at once, namely this, that it is essential to teach in national schools one simple, true piece of knowledge, the basis of all knowledge—the knowledge of the structure of human life, of social existence, which requires division of labour, and, consequently, the division of men into classes and conditions. It is essential for all to know that owing to difference in the objects of human activity there cannot be any equality, that he who by any act of his compromises a whole class cannot be equally responsible before the law with him who affects no one but only his own honour. The true knowledge of the structure of society, into the secrets of which we do not admit the goyim, would demonstrate to all men that the positions and work must be kept within a certain circle, that they may not become a source of human suffering, arising from an education which does not correspond with the work which individuals are called upon to do. After a thorough study of this knowledge the peoples will voluntarily submit to authority and accept such position as is appointed them in the State. In the present state of knowledge and the direction we have given to its development the people, blindly believing things in print—cherishes—thanks to promptings intended to mislead and to its own ignorance—a blind hatred towards all conditions which it considers above itself, for it has no understanding of the meaning of class and condition.

This hatred will be still further magnified by the effects of an economic crisis, which will stop dealings on the exchanges and bring industry to a standstill. We shall create by all the secret subterranean methods open to us and with the aid of gold, which is all in our hands, a universal economic crisis whereby we shall throw upon the streets whole mobs of workers simultaneously in all the countries of Europe. These mobs will rush delightedly to shed the blood of those whom, in the simplicity of their ignorance, they have envied from their cradles, and whose property they will then be able to loot.

"Ours" they will not touch, because the moment of attack will be known to us and we shall take measures to protect our own.

We have demonstrated that progress will bring all the goyim to the sovereignty of reason. Our despotism will be precisely that; for it will know how by wise severities to pacificate all unrest, to cauterise liberalism out of all institutions.

When the populace has seen that all sorts of concessions and indulgences are yielded it in the name of freedom it has imagined itself to be sovereign lord and has stormed its way to power, but, naturally, like every other blind man it has come upon a host of stumbling blocks, it has rushed to find a guide, it has never had the sense to return to the former state and it has laid down its plenipotentiary powers at our feet. Remember the French Revolution, to which it was we who gave the name of "Great": the secrets of its preparations are well known to us for it was wholly the work of our hands.

Ever since that time we have been leading the peoples from one disenchantment to another, so that in the end they should turn also from us in favour of that King-Despot of the blood of Zion, whom we are preparing for the world.

At the present day we are, as an international force, invincible, because if attacked by some we are supported by other States. It is the bottomless rascality of the goyim peoples, who crawl on their bellies to force, but are merciless towards weakness, unsparing to faults and indulgent to crimes, unwilling to bear the contradictions of a free social system but patient unto martyrdom under the violence of a bold despotism—it is those qualities which are aiding us to independence. From the premier-dictators of the present day the goyim peoples suffer patiently and bear such abuses as for the least of them they would have beheaded twenty kings.

What is the explanation of this phenomenon, this curious inconsequence of the masses of the peoples in their attitude towards what would appear to be events of the same order?

It is explained by the fact that these dictators whisper to the peoples through their agents that through these abuses they are inflicting injury on the States with the highest purpose—to secure the welfare of the peoples, the international brotherhood of them all, their solidarity and equality of rights. Naturally they do not tell the peoples that this unification must be accomplished only under our sovereign rule.

And thus the people condemn the upright and acquit the guilty, persuaded ever more and more that it can do whatsoever it wishes. Thanks to this state of things the people are destroying every kind of stability and creating disorders at every step.

The word "freedom" brings out the communities of men to fight against every kind of force, against every kind of authority, even against God and the laws of nature. For this reason we, when we come into our kingdom, shall have to erase this word from the lexicon of life as implying a principle of brute force which turns mobs into bloodthirsty beasts.

These beasts, it is true, fall asleep again every time when they have drunk their fill of blood, and at such times can easily be riveted into their chains. But if they be not given blood they will not sleep and continue to struggle.

PROTOCOL NO. 4

Every republic passes through several stages. The first of these is comprised in the early days of mad raging by the blind mob, tossed hither and thither, right and left: the second is demagogy, from which is born anarchy, and that leads inevitably to despotism—not any longer legal and overt, and therefore responsible despotism, but to unseen and secretly hidden, yet nevertheless sensibly felt despotism in the hands of some secret organisation or other, whose acts are the more unscrupulous inasmuch as it works behind a screen, behind the backs of all sorts of agents, the changing of whom not only does not injuriously affect but actually aids the secret force by saving it, thanks to continual changes, from the necessity of expending its resources on the rewarding of long services.

Who and what is in a position to overthrow an invisible force? And this is precisely what our force is. Gentile masonry blindly serves as a screen for us and our objects, but the plan of action of our force, even its very abiding-place, remains for the whole people an unknown mystery.

But even freedom might be harmless and have its place in the State economy without injury to the well-being of the peoples if it rested upon the foundation of faith in God, upon the brotherhood of humanity, unconnected with the conception of equality, which is negatived by the very laws of creation, for they have established subordination. With such a faith as this a people might be governed by a wardship of parishes, and would walk contentedly and humbly under the guiding hand of its spiritual pastor submitting to the dispositions of God upon earth. This is the reason why it is indispensable for us to undermine all faith, to tear out of the minds of the GOYIM the very principle of Godhead and the spirit, and to put in its place arithmetical calculations and material needs.

In order to give the goyim no time to think and take note, their minds must be diverted towards industry and trade. Thus, all the nations will be swallowed up in the pursuit of gain and in the race for it will not take note of their common foe. But again, in order that freedom may once for all disintegrate and ruin the communities of the goyim, we must put industry on a speculative basis: the result of this will be that what is withdrawn from the land by industry will slip through the hands and pass into speculation, that is, to our classes.

The intensified struggle for superiority and shocks delivered to economic life will create, nay, have already created, disenchanted, cold and heartless communities. Such communities will foster a strong aversion towards the higher political and towards religion. Their only guide is gain, that is Gold, which they will erect into a veritable cult, for the sake of those material delights which it can give. Then will the hour strike when, not for the sake of attaining the good, not even to win wealth, but solely out of hatred towards the privileged, the lower classes of the goyim will follow our lead against our rivals for power, the intellectuals of the goyim.

PROTOCOL NO. 5

What form of administrative rule can be given to communities in which corruption has penetrated everywhere, communities where riches are attained only by the clever surprise tactics of semi-swindling tricks; where looseness reigns: where morality is maintained by penal measures and harsh laws but not by voluntary accepted principles: where the feelings towards faith and country are obliterated by cosmopolitan convictions? What form of rule is to be given to these communities if not that despotism which I shall describe to you later? We shall create an intensified centralisation of government in order to grip in our hands all the forces of the community. We shall regulate mechanically all the actions of the political life of our subjects by new laws. These laws will withdraw one by one all the indulgences and liberties which have been permitted by the goyim, and our kingdom will be distinguished by a despotism of such magnificent proportions as to be at any moment and in every place in a position to wipe out any goyim who oppose us by deed or word.

We shall be told that such a despotism as I speak of is not consistent with the progress of these days, but I will prove to you that it is. In the times when the peoples looked upon kings on their thrones as on a pure manifestation of the will of God, they submitted without a murmur to the despotic power of kings: but from the day when we insinuated into their minds the conception of their own rights they began to regard the occupants of thrones as mere ordinary mortals. The holy unction of the Lord's Anointed has fallen from the heads of kings in the eyes of the people, and when we also robbed them of their faith in God the might of power was flung upon the streets into the place of public proprietorship and was seized by us.

Moreover, the art of directing masses and individuals by means of cleverly manipulated theory and verbiage, by regulations of life in common and all sorts of other quirks, in all which the goyim understand nothing, belongs likewise to the specialists of our administrative brain. Reared on analysis, observation, on delicacies of fine calculation, in this species of skill we have no rivals, any more than we have either in the drawing up of plans of political actions and solidarity. In this respect the Jesuits alone might have compared with us, but we have contrived to discredit them in the eyes of the unthinking mob as an overt organisation, while we ourselves all the while have kept our secret organisation in the shade. However, it is probably all the same to the world who is its sovereign lord, whether the head of Catholicism or our despot of the blood of Zion! But to us, the Chosen People, it is very far from being a matter of indifference.

For a time perhaps we might be successfully dealt with by a coalition of the GOYIM of all the world: but from this danger we are secured by the discord existing among them whose roots are so deeply seated that they can never now be plucked up. We have set one against another the personal and national reckonings of the goyim, religious and race hatreds, which we have fostered into a huge growth in the course of the past twenty centuries. This is the reason why there is not one State which would anywhere receive support if it were to raise its arm, for every one of them must bear in mind that any agreement against us would be unprofitable to itself. We are too strong—there is no evading our power. The nations cannot come to even an inconsiderable private agreement without our secretly having a hand in it.

Per Me reges regnant. "It is through Me that Kings reign." And it was said by the prophets that we were chosen by God Himself to rule over the whole earth. God has endowed us with genius that we may be equal to our task. Were genius in the opposite camp it would still struggle against us, but even so a newcomer is no match for the old-established settler: the struggle would be merciless between us, such a fight as the world has never yet seen. Aye, and the genius on their side would have arrived too late. All the wheels of the machinery of all States go by the force of the engine, which is in our hands, and that engine of the machinery of States is—Gold. The science of political economy invented by our learned elders has for long past been giving royal prestige to capital.

Capital, if it is to co-operate untrammelled, must be free to establish a monopoly of industry and trade: this is already being put in execution by an unseen hand in all quarters of the world. This freedom will give political force to those engaged in industry, and that will help to oppress the people. Nowadays it is more important to disarm the peoples than to lead them into war: more important to use for our advantage the passions which have burst into flames than to quench their fire: more important to catch up and interpret the ideas of others to suit ourselves than to eradicate them. The principal object of our directorate consists in this: to debilitate the public mind by criticism; to lead it away from serious reflections calculated to arouse resistance; to distract the forces of the mind towards a sham fight of empty eloquence.

In all ages the peoples of the world, equally with individuals, have accepted words for deeds, for they are content with a show and rarely pause to note, in the public arena, whether promises are followed by performance. Therefore we shall establish show institutions which will give eloquent proof of their benefit to progress.

We shall assume to ourselves the liberal physiognomy of all parties, of all directions, and we shall give that physiognomy a voice in orators who will speak so much that they will exhaust the patience of their hearers and produce an abhorrence of oratory.

In order to put public opinion into our hands we must bring it into a state of bewilderment by giving expression from all sides to so many contradictory opinions and for such length of time as will suffice to make the GOYIM lose their heads in the labyrinth and come to see that the best thing is to have no opinion of any kind in matters political, which it is not given to the public to understand, because they are understood only by him who guides the public. This is the first secret. The second secret requisite for the success of our government is comprised in the following: To multiply to such an extent national failings, habits, passions, conditions of civil life, that it will be impossible for anyone to know where he is in the resulting chaos, so that the people in consequence will fail to understand one another. This measure will also serve us in another way, namely, to sow discord in all parties, to dislocate all collective forces which are still unwilling to submit to us, and to discourage any kind of personal initiative which might in any degree hinder our affair. There is nothing more dangerous than personal initiative; if it has genius behind it, such initiative can do more than can be done by millions of people among whom we have sown discord. We must so direct the education of the goyim communities that whenever they come upon a matter requiring initiative they may drop their hands in despairing impotence. The strain which results from freedom of action saps the forces when it meets with the freedom of another. From this collision arise grave moral shocks, disenchantments, failures. By all these means toe shall so wear down the goyim that they will be compelled to offer us international power of a nature that by its position will enable us without any violence gradually to absorb all the State forces of the world and to form a Super-Government. In place of the rulers of to-day we shall set up a bogey which will be called the Super-Government Administration. Its hands will reach out in all directions like nippers and its organisation will be of such colossal dimensions that it cannot fail to subdue all the nations of the world.

PROTOCOL NO. 6

We shall soon begin to establish huge monopolies, reservoirs of colossal riches, upon which even large fortunes of the goyim will depend to such an extent that they will go to the bottom together with the credit of the States on the day after the political smash. . . .

You gentlemen here present who are economists, just strike an estimate of the significance of this combination! . . .

In every possible way we must develop the significance of our Super-Government by representing it as the Protector and Benefactor of all those who voluntarily submit to us.

The aristocracy of the goyim as a political force, is dead—we need not take it into account; but as landed proprietors they can still be harmful to us from the fact that they are self-sufficing in the resources upon which they live. It is essential therefore for us at whatever cost to deprive them of their land. This object will be best attained by increasing the burdens upon landed property—in loading lands with debts. These measures will check land-holding and keep it in a state of humble and unconditional submission.

The aristocrats of the goyim, being hereditarily incapable of contenting themselves with little, will rapidly burn up and fizzle out.

At the same time we must intensively patronise trade and industry, but, first and foremost, speculation, the part played by which is to provide a counterpoise to industry: the absence of speculative industry will multiply capital in private hands and will serve to restore agriculture by freeing the land from indebtedness to the land banks. What we want is that industry should drain off from the land both labour and capital and by means of speculation transfer into our hands all the money of the world, and thereby throw all the goyim into the ranks of the proletariat. Then the goyim will bow down before us, if for no other reason but to get the right to exist.

To complete the ruin of the industry of the goyim we shall bring to the assistance of speculation the luxury which we have developed among the goyim, that greedy demand for luxury which is swallowing up everything. We shall raise the rate of wages which, however, will not bring any advantage to the workers, for, at the same time, we shall produce a rise in prices of the first necessaries of life, alleging that it arises from the decline of agriculture and cattle-breeding: we shall further undermine artfully and deeply sources of production, by accustoming the workers to anarchy and to drunkenness and side by side therewith taking all measure to extirpate from the face of the earth all the educated forces of the GOYIM.

In order that the true meaning of things may not strike the GOYIM before the proper time we shall mask it under an alleged ardent desire to serve the working classes and the great principles of political economy about which our economic theories are carrying on an energetic propaganda.

PROTOCOL NO. 7

The intensification of armaments, the increase of police forces— are all essential for the completion of the aforementioned plans. What we have to get at is that there should be in all the States of the world, besides ourselves, only the masses of the proletariat, a few millionaires devoted to our interests, police and soldiers.

Throughout all Europe, and by means of relations with Europe, in other continents also, we must create ferments, discords and hostility. Therein we gain a double advantage. In the first place we keep in check all countries, for they well know that we have the power whenever we like to create disorders or to restore order. All these countries are accustomed to see in us an indispensable force of coercion. In the second place, by our intrigues we shall tangle up all the threads which we have stretched into the cabinets of all States by means of politics, by economic treaties, or loan obligations. In order to succeed in this we must use great cunning and penetration during negotiations and agreements, but, as regards what is called the "official language," we shall keep to the opposite tactics and assume the mask of honesty and compliancy. In this way the peoples and governments of the goyim, whom we have taught to look only at the outside of whatever we present to their notice, will still continue to accept us as the benefactors and saviours of the human race.

We must be in a position to respond to every act of opposition by war with the neighbours of that country which dares to oppose us: but if these neighbours should also venture to stand collectively together against us, then we must offer resistance by a universal war.

The principal factor of success in the political is the secrecy of its undertakings: the word should not agree with the deeds of the diplomat.

We must compel the governments of the goyim to take action in the direction favoured by our widely conceived plan, already approaching the desired consummation, by what we shall represent as public opinion, secretly prompted by us through the means of that so-called "Great Power"—the Press, which, with a few exceptions that may be disregarded, is already entirely in our hands.

In a word, to sum up our system of keeping the governments of the goyim in Europe in check, we shall show our strength to one of them by terrorist attempts and to all, if we allow the possibility of a general rising against us, we shall respond with the guns of America or China or Japan.

PROTOCOL NO. 8

We must arm ourselves with all the weapons which our opponents might employ against us. We must search out in the very finest shades of expression and the knotty points of the lexicon of law justification for those cases where we shall have to pronounce judgments that might appear abnormally audacious and unjust, for it is important that these resolutions should be set forth in expressions that shall seem to be the most exalted moral principles cast into legal form. Our directorate must surround itself with all these forces of civilisation among which it will have to Work. It will surround itself with publicists, practical jurists, administrators, diplomats and, finally, with persons prepared by a special super-educational training in our sfecial schools. These persons will have cognisance of all the secrets of the social structure, they will know all the languages that can be made up by political alphabets and words; they will be made acquainted with the whole underside of human nature, with all its sensitive chords on which they will have to play. These chords are the cast of mind of the goyim, their tendencies, shortcomings, vices and qualities, the particularities of classes and conditions. Needless to say that the talented assistants of authority, of whom I speak, will be taken not from among the goyim, who are accustomed to perform their administrative work without giving themselves the trouble to think what its aim is, and never consider what it is needed for. The administrators of the goyim sign papers without reading them, and they serve either for mercenary reasons or from ambition.

We shall surround our government with a whole world of economists. That is the reason why economic sciences form the principal subject of the teaching given to the Jews. Around us again will be a whole constellation of bankers, industrialists, capitalists and—the main thing—millionaires, because in substance everything will be settled by the question of figures.

For a time, until there will no longer be any risk in entrusting responsible posts in our States to our brother-Jews, we shall put them in the hands of persons whose past and reputation are such that between them and the people lies an abyss, persons who, in case of disobedience to our instructions, must face criminal charges or disappear—this in order to make them defend our interest to their last gasp.

PROTOCOL NO. 9

In applying our principles let attention be paid to the character of the people in whose country you live and act; a general, identical application of them, until such time as the people shall have been re-educated to our pattern, cannot have success. But by approaching their application cautiously you will see that not a decade will pass before the most stubborn character will change and we shall add a new people to the ranks of those already subdued by us.

The words of the liberal, which are in effect the words of our masonic watchword, namely, "Liberty, Equality, Fraternity," will, when we come into our kingdom, be changed by us into words no longer of a watchword, but only an expression of idealism, namely, into: "The" right of liberty, the duty of equality, the ideal of brotherhood." That is how we shall put it,—and so we shall catch the bull by the horns. . . . De facto we have already wiped out every kind of rule except our own, although de jure there still remain a good many of them. Nowadays, if any States raise a protest against us it is only pro forma at our discretion and by our direction, for their anti-Semitism is indisfensable to us for the management of our lesser brethren. I will not enter into further explanations, for this matter has formed the subject of repeated discussions amongst us.

For us there are no checks to limit the range of our activity. Our Super-Government subsists in extra-legal conditions which are described in the accepted terminology by the energetic and forcible word—Dictatorship. I am in a position to tell you with a clear conscience that at the proper time we, the law-givers, shall execute judgment and sentence, we shall slay and we shall spare, we, as head of all our troops, are mounted on the steed of the leader. We rule by force of will, because in our hands are the fragments of a once powerful party, now vanquished by us. And the weapons in our hands are limitless ambitions, burning greediness, merciless vengeance, hatreds and malice.

It is from us that the all-engulfing terror proceeds. We have in our service fersons of all opinions, of all doctrines, restorating monarchists, demagogues, socialists, communists, and utopian dreamers of every kind. We have harnessed them all to the task: each one of them on his own account is boring away at the last remnants of authority, is striving to overthrow all established form of order. By these acts all States are in torture; they exhort to tranquillity, are ready to sacrifice everything for peace: but we will not give them peace until they openly acknowledge our international Super-Government, and with submissiveness.

The people have raised a howl about the necessity of settling the question of Socialism by way of an international agreement. Division into fractional parties has given them into our hands, for, in order to carry on a contested struggle one must have money, and the money is all in our hands.

We might have reason to apprehend a union between the "clear-sighted" force of the goy kings on their thrones and the "blind" force of the goy mobs, but we have taken all the needful measure against any such possibility: between the one and the other force we have erected a bulwark in the shape of a mutual terror between them. In this way the blind force of the people remains our support and we, and we only, shall provide them with a leader and, of course, direct them along the road that leads to our goal.

In order that the hand of the blind mob may not free itself from our guiding hand, we must every now and then enter into close communion with it, if not actually in person, at any rate through some of the most trusty of our brethren. When we are acknowledged as the only authority we shall discuss with the people personally on the market places, and we shall instruct them on questions of the political in such wise as may turn them in the direction that suits us.

Who is going to verify what is taught in the village schools? But what an envoy of the government or a king on his throne himself may say cannot but become immediately known to the whole State, for it will be spread abroad by the voice of the people.

In order not to annihilate the inititutions of the goyim before it is time we have touched them with craft and delicacy, and have taken hold of the ends of the springs which move their mechanism. These springs lay in a strict but just sense of order; we have replaced them by the chaotic license of liberalism. We have got our hands into the administration of the law, into the conduct of elections, into the press, into liberty of the person, but principally into education and training as being the corner-stones of a free existence.

We have fooled, bemused and corrupted the youth of the GOYIM by rearing them in principles and theories which are known to us to be false although it is by. us that they have been inculcated.

Above the existing laws without substantially altering them, and by merely twisting them into contradictions of interpretations, we have erected something grandiose in the way of results. These results found expression first in the fact that the interpretations masked the laws: afterwards they entirely hid them from the eyes of the governments owing to the impossibility of making anything out of the tangled web of legislation.

This is the origin of the theory of course of arbitration.

You may say the goyim will rise upon us, arms in hand, if they guess what is going on before the time comes; but in the West we have against this a manoeuvre of such appalling terror that the very stoutest hearts quail—the undergrounds, metropolitains, those subterranean corridors which, before the time comes, will be driven under all the capitals and from whence those capitals will be blown into the air with all their organisations and archives.

PROTOCOL NO. 10

To-day I begin with a repetition of what I said before, and I beg you to bear in mind that governments and peoples are content in the political with outside appearances. And how, indeed, are the goyim to perceive the underlying meaning of things when their representatives give the best of their energies to enjoying themselves? For our policy it is of the greatest importance to take cognisance of this detail; it will be of assistance to us when we come to consider the division of authority, freedom of speech, of the press, of religion (faith), of the law of association, of equality before the law, of the inviolability of property, of the dwelling, of taxation (the idea of concealed taxes), of the reflex force of the laws. All these questions are such as ought not to be touched upon directly and openly before the people. In cases where it is indispensable to touch upon them they must not be categorically named, it must merely be declared without detailed exposition that the principles of contemporary law are acknowledged by us. The reason of keeping silence in this respect is that by not naming a principle we leave ourselves freedom of action, to drop this or that out of it without attracting notice; if they were all categorically named they would all appear to have been already given.

The mob cherishes a special affection and respect for the geniuses of political power and accepts all their deeds of violence with the admiring response: "rascally, well, yes, it is rascally, but it's clever! ... a trick, if you like, but how craftily played, how magnificently done, what impudent audacity!" . . .

We count upon attracting all nations to the task of erecting the new fundamental structure, the project for which has been drawn up by us. This is why, before everything, it is indispensable for us to arm ourselves and to store up in ourselves that absolutely reckless audacity and irresistible might of the spirit which in the person of our active workers will break down all hindrances on our way.

When we have accomplished our coup d'etat we shall say then to the various peoples: "Everything has gone terribly badly, all have been worn out with sufferings. We are destroying the causes of your torment—nationalities, frontiers, differences of coinages. You are at liberty, of course, to fronounce sentence upon us, but can it possibly be a just one if it is confirmed by you before you make any trial of what we are offering you." . . . Then will the mob exalt us and bear us up in their hands in a unanimous triumph of hopes and expectations. Voting, which we have made the instrument which will set us on the throne of the world by teaching even the very smallest units of members of the human race to vote by means of meetings and agreements by groups, will then have served its purposes and will play its part then for the last time by a unanimity of desire to make close acquaintance with us before condemning us.

To secure this we must have everybody vote without distinction of classes and qualifications, in order to establish an absolute majority, which cannot be got from the educated propertied classes. In this way, by inculcating in all a sense of self-importance, we shall destroy among the goyim the importance of the family and its educational value and remove the possibility of individual minds splitting off, for the mob, handled by us, will not let them come to the front nor even give them a hearing; it is accustomed to listen to us only who pay it for obedience and attention. In this way we shall create a blind, mighty force which will never be in a position to move in any direction without the guidance of our agents set at its head by us as leaders of the mob. The people will submit to this regime because it will know that upon these leaders will depend its earnings, gratifications and the receipt of all kinds of benefits.

A scheme of government should come ready made from one brain, because it will never be clinched firmly if it is allowed to be split into fractional parts in the minds of many. It is allowable, therefore, for us to have cognisance of the scheme of action but not to discuss it lest we disturb its artfulness, the interdependence of its component parts, the practical force of the secret meaning of each clause. To discuss and make alterations in a labour of this kind by means of numerous votings is to impress upon it the stamp of all ratiocinations and misunderstandings which have failed to penetrate the depth and nexus of its plottings. We want our schemes to be forcible and suitably concocted. Therefore WE OUGHT NOT TO FLING THE WORK OF GENIUS OF OUR GUIDE to the fangs of the mob or even of a select company.

These schemes will not turn existing institutions upside down just yet. They will only affect changes in their economy and consequently in the whole combined movement of their progress, which will thus be directed along the paths laid down in our schemes.

Under various names there exists in all countries approximately one and the same thing. Representation, Ministry, Senate, State Council, Legislative and Executive Corps. I need not explain to you the mechanism of the relation of these institutions to one another, because you are aware of all that; only take note of the fact that each of the above-named institutions corresponds to some important function of the State, and I would beg you to remark that the word "important" I apply not to the institution but to the function, consequently it is not the institutions which are important but their functions. These institutions have divided up among themselves all the functions of government—administrative, legislative, executive, wherefore they have come to operate as do the organs in the human body. If we injure one part in the machinery of State, the State falls sick, like a human body, and will die.

When we introduced into the State organism the poison of Liberalism its whole political complexion underwent a change. -States have been seized with a mortal illness—blood-poisoning. All that remains is to await the end of their death agony.

Liberalism produced Constitutional States, which took the place of what was the only safeguard of the goyim, namely, Despotism; and a constitution, as you well know, is nothing else but a school of discords, misunderstandings, quarrels, disagreements, fruitless party agitations, party whims—in a word, a school of everything that serves to destroy the personality of State activity. The tribune of the "talkeries" has, no less effectively than the Press, condemned the rulers to inactivity and impotence, and thereby rendered them useless and superfluous, for which reason indeed they have been in many countries deposed. Then it was that the era of republics became possible of realisation; and then it was that we replaced the ruler by a caricature of a government—by a president, taken from the mob, from the midst of our puppet creatures, our slaves. This was the foundation of the mine which we have laid under the goy people, I should rather say, under the goy peoples.

In the near future we shall establish the resp6nsibility of presidents.

By that time we shall be in a position to disregard forms in carrying through matters for which our personal puppet will be responsible. What do we care if the ranks of those striving for power should be thinned, if there should arise a deadlock from the impossibility of finding presidents, a deadlock which will finally disorganize the country?

In order that our scheme may produce this result we shall arrange elections in favour of such presidents as have in their past some dark, undiscovered stain, some "Panama" or other—then they will be trustworthy agents for the accomplishment of our plans out of fear of revelations and from the natural desire of everyone who has attained power, namely, the retention of privileges, advantages and honour connected with the office of president. The chamber of deputies will provide cover for, will protect, will elect the president, but we shall take from it the right to propose new, or make changes in existing laws, for this right will be given by us to the responsible president, a puppet in our hands. Naturally, the authority of the president will then become a target for every possible form of attack, but we shall provide him with a means of self-defence in the right of an appeal to the people, for the decision of the people over the heads of their representatives, that is to say, an appeal to that same blind slave of ours—the majority of the mob. Independently of this we shall invest the president with the right of declaring a state of war. We shall justify this last right on the ground that the president as chief of the whole army of the country must have it at his disposal, in case of need for the defence of the new republican constitution, the right to defend which will belong to him as the responsible representative of this constitution.

It is easy to understand that in these conditions the key of the shrine will lie in our hands, and no one outside of ourselves will any longer direct the force of legislation.

Besides this we shall, with the introduction of the new republican constitution, take from the Chamber the right of interpellation on government measures, on the pretext of preserving political secrecy, and, further, we shall by the new constitution reduce the number of representatives to a minimum, thereby proportionately reducing political passions and the passion for politics. If, however, they should, which is hardly to be expected, burst into flame, even in this minimum, we shall nullify them by a stirring appeal and a reference to the majority of the whole people. . . . Upon the president will depend the appointment of presidents and vice-presidents of the Chamber and the Senate. Instead of constant sessions of Parliaments we shall reduce their sittings to a few months. Moreover, the president, as chief of the executive power, will have the right to summon and dissolve Parliament, and, in the latter case, to prolong the time for the appointment of a new parliamentary assembly. But in order that the consequences of all these acts which in substance are illegal, should not, prematurely for our plans, fall upon the responsibility established by us of the president, toe shall instigate ministers and other officials of the higher administration about the president to evade his dispositions by taking measures of their own, for doing which they will be made the scapegoats in his place. . . . This part we especially recommend to be given to be played by the Senate, the Council of State, or the Council of Ministers, but not to an individual official.

The president will, at our discretion, interpret the sense of such of the existing laws as admit of various interpretation; he will further annul them when we indicate to him the necessity to do so, besides this, he will have the right to propose temporary laws, and even new departures in the government constitutional working, the pretext both for the one and other being the requirements for the supreme welfare of the State.

By such measures we shall obtain the power of destroying little by little, step by step, all that at the outset when we enter on our rights, we are compelled to introduce into the constitutions of States to prepare for the transition to an imperceptible abolition of every kind of constitution, and then the time is come to turn every form of government into our despotism.

The recognition of our despot may also come before the destruction of the constitution; the moment for this recognition will come when the peoples, utterly wearied by the irregularities and incompetence—a matter which we shall arrange for—of their rulers, will clamour: "Away with them and give us one king over all the earth who will unite us and annihilate the causes of discords—frontiers, nationalities, religions, State debts—who will give us peace and quiet, which we cannot find under our rulers and representatives."

But you yourselves perfectly well know that to produce the possibility of the expression of such wishes by all the nations it is indispensable to trouble in all countries the people's relations with their governments so as to utterly exhaust humanity with dissension, hatred, struggle, envy and even by the use of torture, by starvation, BY THE INOCULATION OF DISEASES, by want, so that the GOYIM see no other issue than to take refuge in our complete sovereignty in money and in all else.

But if we give the nations of the world a breathing space the moment we long for is hardly likely ever to arrive.

PROTOCOL NO. 11

The State Council has been, as it were, the emphatic expression of the authority of the ruler: it will be, as the "show" part of the Legislative Corps, what may be called the editorial committee of the laws and decrees of the ruler.

This, then, is the programme of the new constitution. We shall make Law, Right and Justice (1) in the guise of proposals to the Legislative Corps, (2) by decrees of the president under the guise of general regulations, of orders of the Senate and of resolutions of the State Council in the guise of ministerial orders, (3) and in case a suitable occasion should arise—in the form of a revolution in the State.

Having established approximately the modus agendi we will occupy ourselves with details of those combinations by which we have still to complete the revolution in the course of the machinery of State in the direction already indicated. By these combinations I mean the freedom of the Press, the right of association, freedom of conscience, the voting principle, and many another that must disappear for ever from the memory of man, or undergo a radical alteration the day after the promulgation of the new constitution. It is only at that moment that we shall be able at once to announce all our orders, for, afterwards, every noticeable alteration will be dangerous, for the following reasons: if this alteration be brought in with harsh severity and in a sense of severity and limitations, it may lead to a feeling of despair caused by fear of new alterations in the same direction; if, on the other hand, it be brought in in a sense of further indulgences it will be said that we have recognised our own wrongdoing and this will destroy the prestige of the infallibility of our authority, or else it will be said that we have become alarmed and are compelled to show a yielding disposition, for which we shall get no thanks because it will be supposed to be compulsory. . . . Both the one and the other are injurious to the prestige of the new constitution. What we want is that from the first moment of its promulgation, while the peoples of the world are still stunned by the accomplished fact of the revolution, still in a condition of terror and uncertainty, they should recognise once for all that we are so strong, so inexpugnable, so superabundantly filled with power, that in no case shall we take any account of them, and so far from paying any attention to their opinions or wishes, we are ready and able to crush with irresistible power all expression or manifestation thereof at every moment and in every place, that we have seized at once everything we wanted and shall in no case divide our power with them. . . . Then in fear and trembling they will close their eyes to everything, and be content to await what will be the end of it all.

The goyim are a flock of sheep, and we are their wolves. And you know what happens when the wolves get hold of the flock? . . .

There is another reason also why they will close their eyes: for we shall keep promising them to give back all the liberties we have taken away as soon as we have quelled the enemies of peace and tamed all parties. . . .

It is not worth while to say anything about how long a time they will be kept waiting for this return of their liberties. . . .

For what purpose then have we invented this whole policy and insinuated it into the minds of the goys without giving them any chance to examine its underlying meaning? For what, indeed, if not in order to obtain in a roundabout way what is for our scattered tribe unattainable by the direct road? It is this which has served as the basis for our organisation of SECRET MASONRY WHICH IS NOT KNOWN TO, AND AIMS WHICH ARE NOT EVEN SO MUCH AS SUSPECTED BY, THESE GOY CATTLE, ATTRACTED BY US INTO THE "SHOW ARMY OF MASONIC LODGES IN ORDER TO THROW DUST IN THE EYES OF THEIR FELLOWS.

God has granted to us, His Chosen People, the gift of the dispersion, and in this which appears in all eyes to be our weakness, has come forth all our strength, which has now brought us to the threshold of sovereignty over all the world.

There now remains not much more for us to build up upon the foundation we have laid.

PROTOCOL NO. 12

The word "freedom," which can be interpreted in various ways, is defined by us as follows:—

Freedom is the right to do that which the law allows. This interpretation of the word will at the proper time be of service to us, because all freedom will thus be in our hands, since the laws will abolish or create only that which is desirable for us according to the aforesaid programme.

We shall deal with the press in the following way: What is the part played by the press to-day? It serves to excite and inflame those passions which are needed for our purpose or else it serves selfish ends of parties. It is often vapid, unjust, mendacious, and the majority of the public have not the slightest idea what ends the press really serves. We shall saddle and bridle it with a tight curb: we shall do the same also with all productions of the printing press, for where would be the sense of getting rid of the attacks of the press if we remain targets for pamphlets and boob? The produce of publicity, which nowadays is a source of heavy expense owing to the necessity of censoring it, will be turned by us into a very lucrative source of income to our State: we shall lay on it a special stamp tax and require deposits of caution-money before permitting the establishment of any organ of the press or of printing offices; these will then have to guarantee our government against any kind of attack on the pan of the press. For any attempt to attack us, if such still be possible, we shall inflict fines without mercy. Such measures as stamp tax, deposit of caution-money and fines secured by these deposits, will bring in a huge income to the government. It is true that party organs might not spare money for the sake of publicity, but these we shall shut up at the second attack upon us. No one shall with impunity lay a finger on the aureole of our government infallibility. The pretext for stopping any publication will be the alleged plea that it is agitating the public mind without occasion or justification. I beg you to note that among those making attacks upon us will also be organs established by us, but they will attack exclusively points that we have pre-determined to alter.

Not a single announcement will reach the public without our control. Even now this is already being attained by us inasmuch as all news items are received by a few agencies, in whose offices they are focused from all parts of the world. These agencies will then be already entirely ours and will give publicity only to what we dictate to them.

If already now we have contrived to possess ourselves of the minds of the goy communities to such an extent that they all come near looking upon the events of the world through the coloured glasses of those spectacles we are setting astride their noses: if already now there is not a single State where there exist for us any barriers to admittance into what goy stupidity calls State secrets: what will our position be then, when we shall be acknowledged supreme lords of the world in the person of our king of all the world....

Let us turn again to the future of the printing press. Every one desirous of being a publisher, librarian, or printer, will be obliged to provide himself with the diploma instituted therefor, which, in case of any fault, will be immediately impounded. With such measures the instrument of thought will become an educative means in the hands of our government, which will no longer allow the mass of the nation to be led astray in by-ways and fantasies about the blessings of progress. Is there any one of us who does not know that these phantom blessings are the direct roads to foolish imaginings which give birth to anarchical relations of men among themselves and towards authority, because progress, or rather the idea of progress, has introduced the conception of every kind of emancipation, but has failed to establish its limits. . . . All the so-called liberals are anarchists, if not in fact, at any rate in thought. Every one of them is hunting after phantoms of freedom, and falling exclusively into license, that is, into the anarchy of protest for the sake of protest. . . .

We turn to the periodical press. We shall impose on it, as on all printed matter, stamp taxes per sheet and deposits of caution-money, and books of less than 30 sheets will pay double. We shall reckon them as pamphlets in order, on the one hand, to reduce the number of magazines, which are the worst form of printed poison, and, on the other, in order that this measure may force writers into such lengthy productions that they will be little read, especially as they will be costly. At the same time what we shall publish ourselves to influence mental development in the direction laid down for our profit will be cheap and will be read voraciously. The tax will bring vapid literary ambitions within bounds and the liability to penalties will make literary men dependent upon us. And if there should be any found who are desirous of writing against us, they will not find any person eager to print their productions. Before accepting any production for publication in print the publisher or printer will have to apply to the authorities for permission to do so. Thus we shall know beforehand of all tricks preparing against us and shall nullify them by getting ahead with explanations on the subject treated of.

Literature and journalism are two of the most important educative forces, and therefore our government will become proprietor of the majority of the journals. This will neutralise the injurious influence of the privately owned press and will put us in possession of a tremendous influence upon the public mind. ... If we give permits for ten journals, we shall ourselves found thirty, and so on in the same proportion. This, however, must in nowise be suspected by the public.

For which reason all journals published by us will be of the most opposite, in appearance, tendencies and opinions, thereby creating confidence in us and bringing over to us our quite unsuspicious opponents, who will thus fall into our trap and be rendered harmless.

In the front rank will stand organs of an official character. They will always stand guard over our interests, and therefore their influence will be comparatively insignificant.

In the second rank will be the semi-official organs, whose part it will be to attract the tepid and indifferent.

In the third rank we shall set up our own, to all appearance, opposition, which, in at least one of its organs, will present what looks like the very antipodes to us. Our real opponents at heart will accept this simulated opposition as their own and will show us their cards.

All our newspapers will be of all possible complexions—aristocratic, republican, revolutionary, even anarchical—for so long, of course, as the constitution exists. . . . Like the Indian idol Vishnu they will have a hundred hands, and every one of them will have a finger on any one of the public opinions as required. When a pulse quickens these hands will lead opinion in the direction of our aims, for an excited patient loses all power of judgment and easily yields to suggestion. Those fools who will think they are repeating the opinion of a newspaper of their own camp will be repeating our opinion or any opinion that seems desirable for us. In the vain belief that they are following the organ of their party they will in fact follow the flag which we hang out for them.

In order to direct our newspaper militia in this sense we must take especial and minute care in organising this matter. Under the title of central department of the press we shall institute literary gatherings at which our agents will without attracting attention issue the orders and watchwords of the day. By discussing and controverting, but always superficially, without touching the essence of the matter, our organs will carry on a sham fight fusillade with the official newspapers solely for the purpose of giving occasion for us to express ourselves more fully than could well be done from the outset in official announcements, whenever, of course, that is to our advantage.

These attacks upon us will also serve another purpose, namely, that our subjects will be convinced of the existence of full freedom of speech and so give our agents an occasion to affirm that all organs which oppose us are empty babblers, since they are incapable of finding any substantial objections to our orders.

Methods of organisation like these, imperceptible to the public eye but absolutely sure, are the best calculated to succeed in bringing the attention and the confidence of the public to the side of our government. Thanks to such methods we shall be in a position as from time to time may be required, to excite or to tranquillise the public mind on political questions, to persuade or to confuse, printing now truth, now lies, facts or their contradictions, according as they may be well or ill received, always very cautiously feeling our ground before stepping upon it. . . . We shall have a sure triumph over our opponents since they will not have at their disposition organs of the press in which they can give full and final expression to their views owing to the aforesaid methods of dealing with the press. We shall not even need to refute them except very superficially.

Trial shots like these, fired by us in the third rank of our press, in case of need, will be energetically refuted by us in our semi-official organs.

Even nowadays, already, to take only the French press, there are forms which reveal masonic solidarity in acting on the watchword: all organs of the press are bound together by professional secrecy; like the augurs of old, not one of their numbers will give away the secret of his sources of information unless it be resolved to make announcement to them. Not one journalist will venture to betray this secret, for not one of them is ever admitted to practise literature unless his whole past has some disgraceful sore or other. . . . These sores would be immediately revealed. So long as they remain the secret of a few the prestige of the journalist attracts the majority of the country—the mob follows after him with enthusiasm.

Our calculations are especially extended to the provinces. It is indispensable for us to inflame there those hopes and impulses with which we could at any moment fall upon the capital, and we shall represent to the capitals that these expressions are the independent hopes and impulses of the provinces. Naturally, the source of them will be always one and the same—ours. What we need is that, until such time as we are in the plenitude of fower, the capitals should find themselves stifled by the provincial opinion of the nation, i.e., of a majority arranged by our agentur. What we need is that at the psychological moment the capitals should not be in a position to discuss an accomplished fact for the simple reason, if for no other, that it has been accepted by the public opinion of a majority in the provinces.

When we are in the period of the new regime transitional to that of our assumption of full sovereignty we must not admit any revelations by the press of any form of public dishonesty; it is necessary that the new regime should be thought to have so perfectly contented everybody that even criminality has disappeared. , . . Cases of the manifestation of criminality should remain known only to their victims and to chance witnesses—no more.

PROTOCOL NO. 13

The need for daily bread forces the goyim to keep silence and be our humble servants. Agents taken on to our press from among the goyim will at our order discuss anything which it is inconvenient for us to issue directly in official documents, and we meanwhile, quietly amid the din of the discussion so raised, shall simply take and carry through such measures as we wish and then offer them to the public as an accomplished fact. No one will dare to demand the abrogation of a matter once settled, all the more so as it will be represented as an improvement. . . . And immediately the press will distract the current of thought towards new questions (have we not trained people always to be seeking something new?). Into the discussions of these new questions will throw themselves those of the brainless dispensers of fortunes who are not able even now to understand that they have not the remotest conception about the matters which they undertake to discuss. Questions of the political are unattainable for any save those who have guided it already for many ages, the creators.

From all this you will see that in securing the opinion of the mob we are only facilitating the working of our machinery, and you may remark that it is not for actions but for words issued by us on this or that question that we seem to seek approval. We are constantly making public declaration that we are guided in all our undertakings by the hope, joined to the conviction, that we are serving the commonweal.

In order to distract people who may be too troublesome from discussions of questions of the political we are now putting forward what we allege to be new questions of the political, namely, questions of industry. In this sphere let them discuss themselves silly! The masses are agreed to remain inactive, to take a rest from what they suppose to be political activity (which we trained them to in order to use them as a means of combating the goy governments) only on condition of being found new employments, in which we are prescribing them something that looks like the same political object. In order that the masses themselves may not guess what they are about we further distract them with amusements, games, pastimes, passions, people's palaces. . . . Soon we shall begin through the press to propose competitions in art, in sport of all kinds: these interests will finally distract their minds from questions in which we should find ourselves compelled to oppose them. Growing more and more disaccustomed to reflect and form any opinions of their own, people will begin to talk in the same tone as we, because we alone shall be offering them new directions for thought ... of course through such persons as will not be suspected of solidarity with us.

The part played by the liberals, utopian dreamers, will be finally played out when our government is acknowledged. Till such time they will continue to do us good service. Therefore we shall continue to direct their minds to all sorts of vain conceptions of fantastic theories, new and apparently progressive: for have we not with complete success turned the brainless heads of the goyim with progress, till there is not among the goyim one mind able to perceive that under this word lies a departure from truth in all cases where it is not a question of material inventions, for truth is one, and in it there is no place for progress. Progress, like a fallacious idea, serves to obscure truth so that none may know it except us, the Chosen of God, its guardians.

When we come into our kingdom our orators will expound great problems which have turned humanity upside down in order to bring it at the end under our beneficent rule.

Who will ever suspect then that ALL THESE PEOPLES WERE STAGE-MANAGED BY US ACCORDING TO A POLITICAL PLAN WHICH NO ONE HAS SO MUCH AS GUESSED AT IN THE COURSE OF MANY CENTURIES? . . .

PROTOCOL NO. 14

When we come into our kingdom it will be undesirable for us that there should exist any other religion than ours of the One God with whom our destiny is bound up by our position as the Chosen People and through whom our same destiny is united with the destinies of the world. We must therefore sweep away all other forms of belief. If this gives birth to the atheists whom we see to-day, it will not, being only a transitional stage, interfere with our views, but will serve as a warning for those generations which will hearken to our preaching of the religion of Moses, that, by its stable and thoroughly elaborated system, has brought all the peoples of the world into subjection to us. Therein we shall emphasise its mystical right, on which, as we shall say, all its educative power is based. . . . Then at every possible opportunity we shall publish articles in which we shall make comparisons between our beneficent rule and those of past ages. The blessings of tranquillity, though it be a tranquillity forcibly brought about by centuries of agitation, will throw into higher relief the benefits to which we shall point. The errors of the goyim governments will be depicted by us in the most vivid hues. We shall implant such an abhorrence of them that the peoples will prefer tranquillity in a state of serfdom to those rights of vaunted freedom which have tortured humanity and exhausted the very sources of human existence, sources which have been exploited by a mob of rascally adventurers who know not what they do. . . . Useless changes of forms of government to which toe instigated the GOYIM token toe were undermining their state structures, will have so wearied the peoples by that time that they will prefer to suffer anything under us rather than run the risk of enduring again all the agitations and miseries they have gone through.

At the same time we shall not omit to emphasise the historical mistakes of the goy governments which have tormented humanity for so many centuries by their lack of understanding of everything that constitutes the true good of humanity in their chase after fantastic schemes of social blessings, and have never noticed that these schemes kept on producing a worse and never a better state of the universal relations which are the basis of human life. ...

The whole force of our principles and methods will lie in the fact that we shall present them and expound them as a splendid contrast to the dead and decomposed old order of things in social life.

Our philosophers will discuss all the shortcomings of the various beliefs of the goyim, BUT NO ONE WILL EVER BRING UNDER DISCUSSION OUR FAITH FROM ITS TRUE POINT OF VIEW SINCE THIS WILL BE FULLY LEARNED BY NONE SAVE OURS, WHO WILL NEVER DARE TO BETRAY ITS SECRETS.

In countries known as progressive and enlightened we have created a senseless, filthy, abominable literature. For some time after our entrance to power we shall continue to encourage its existence in order to provide a telling relief by contrast to the speeches, party programme, which will be distributed from exalted quarters of ours. . . . Our wise men, trained to become leaders of the goyim, will compose speeches, projects, memoirs, articles, which will be used by us to influence the minds of the goyim, directing them towards such understanding and forms of knowledge as have been determined by us.

PROTOCOL NO. 15

When we at last definitely come into our kingdom by the aid of coup d'etat prepared everywhere for one and the same day, after the worthlessness of all existing forms of government has been definitely acknowledged (and not a little time will pass before that comes about, perhaps even a whole century) we shall make it our task to see that against us such things as plots shall no longer exist. With this purpose we shall slay without mercy all who take arms (in hand) to oppose our coming into our kingdom. Every kind of new institution of anything like a secret society will also be punished with death; those of them which are now in existence, are known to us, serve us and have served us, we shall disband and send into exile to continents far removed from Europe. In this toay toe shall proceed with those goy masons who know too much; such of these as we may for some reason spare will be kept in constant fear of exile. We shall promulgate a law making all former members of secret societies liable to exile from Europe as the centre of our rule.

Resolutions of our government will be final, without appeal.

In the goy societies, in which we have planted and deeply rooted discord and protestantism, the only possible way of restoring order is to employ merciless measures that prove the direct force of authority: no regard must be paid to the victims who fall, they suffer for the well-being of the future. The attainment of that well-being, even at the expense of sacrifices, is the duty of any kind of government that acknowledges as justification for its existence not only its privileges but its obligations. The principal guarantee of stability of rule is to confirm the aureole of power, and this aureole is attained only by such a majestic inflexibility of might as shall carry on its face the emblems of inviolability from mystical causes—from the choice of God. Such was, until recent times, the Russian autocracy, the one and only serious foe we had, in the world, without counting the Papacy. Bear in mind the example when Italy, drenched with blood, never touched a hair of the head of Sulla* who had poured forth that blood: Sulla enjoyed an apotheosis for his might in the eyes of the people, though they had been torn in pieces by him, but his intrepid return to Italy ringed him round with inviolability. The people do not lay a finger on him who hypnotises them by his daring and strength of mind.

Meantime, however, until we come into our kingdom, we shall act in the contrary way: we shall create and multiply free masonic lodges in all the countries of the world, absorb into them all who may become or who are prominent in public activity, for in these lodges we shall find our principal intelligence office and means of influence. All these lodges we shall bring under one central administration, known to us alone and to all others absolutely unknown, which will be composed of our learned elders. The lodges will have their representatives who will serve to screen the above-mentioned administration of masonry and from whom will issue the watchword and programme. In these lodges we shall tie together the knot which binds together all revolutionary and liberal elements. Their composition will be made up of all strata of society. The most secret political plots will be known to us and will fall under our guiding hands on the very day of their conception. Among the members of these lodges will be al-

*Some versions of the "Protocols" followed Joly's "Dialogues" so closely that Joly's mistaken spelling of Sulla's name as "Sylla" was also copied. In the translation of the "Protocols" here used, however, the mistake was rectified.—H. B.

most all the agents of international and national police since their service is for us irreplaceable in the respect that the police is in a position not only to use its own particular measures with the insubordinate, but also to screen our activities and provide pretexts for discontents, et cetera.

The class of people who most willingly enter into secret societies are those who live by their wits, careerists, and in general people, mostly light-minded, with whom we shall have no difficulty in dealing and in using to wind up the mechanism of the machine devised by us. If this world grows agitated the meaning of that will be that we have had to stir it up in order to break up its too great solidarity. But if there should, arise in its midst a plot, then at the head of that plot will be no other than one of our most trusted servants. It is natural that we and no other should lead masonic activities, for we know whither we are leading, we know the final goal of every form of activity whereas the goyim have knowledge of nothing, not even of the immediate effect of action; they put before themselves, usually, the momentary reckoning of the satisfaction of their self-opinion in the accomplishment of their thought without even remarking that the very conception never belonged to their initiative but to our instigation of their thought....

The goyim enter the lodges out of curiosity or in the hope by their means to get a nibble at the public pie, and some of them in order to obtain a hearing before the public for their impracticable and groundless fantasies: they thirst for the emotion of success and applause, of which we are remarkably generous. And the reason why we give them this success is to make use of the high conceit of themselves to which it gives birth, for that insensibly disposes them to assimilate our suggestions without being on their guard against them in the fullness of their confidence that it is their own infallibility which is giving utterance to their own thoughts and that it is impossible for them to borrow those of others. . . . You cannot imagine to what extent the wisest of the goyim can be brought to a state of unconscious naivete in the presence of this condition of high conceit of themselves, and at the same time how easy it is to take the heart out of them by the slightest ill-success, though it be nothing more than the stoppage of the applause they had, and to reduce them to a slavish submission for the sake of winning a renewal of success. . . .

By so much as ours disregard success if only they can carry through their plans, by so much the goyim are willing to sacrifice any plans only to have success. This psychology of theirs materially facilitates for us the task of setting them in the required direction. These tigers in appearance have the souls of sheep and the wind blows freely through their heads. We have set them on the hobby-horse of an idea about the absorption of individuality by the symbolic unit of collectivism. . . . They have never yet and they never will have the sense to reflect that this hobby-horse is a manifest violation of the most important law of nature, which has established from the very creation of the world one unit unlike another and precisely for the purpose of instituting individuality. . . .

If we have been able to bring them to such a pitch of stupid blindness is it not a proof, and an amazingly clear proof, of the degree to which the mind of the goyim is undeveloped in comparison with our mind? This it is, mainly, which guarantees our success.

And how far-seeing were our learned elders in ancient times when they said that to attain a serious end it behoves not to stop at any means or to count the victims sacrificed for the sake of that end. . . . We have not counted the victims of the seed of the goy cattle, though we have sacrificed many of our own, but for that we have now already given them such a position on the earth as they could not even have dreamed of. The comparatively small numbers of the victims from the number of ours have preserved our nationality from destruction.

Death is the inevitable end for all. It is better to bring that end nearer to those who hinder our affairs than to ourselves, to the founders of this affair. We execute masons in such wise that none save the brotherhood can ever have a susficion of it, not even the victims themselves of our death sentence, they all die when required as if from a normal kind of illness. . . . Knowing this, even the brotherhood in its turn dare not protest. By such methods we have plucked out of the midst of masonry the very root of protest against our disposition. While preaching liberalism to the goyim we at the same time keep our own people and our agents in a state of unquestioning submission.

Under our influence the execution of the laws of the goyim has been reduced to a minimum. The prestige of the law has been exploded by the liberal interpretations introduced into this sphere. In the most important and fundamental affairs and questions judges decide as we dictate to them, see matters in the light wherewith we enfold them for the administration of the goyim, of course, through persons who are our tools though we do not appear to have anything in common with them—by newspaper opinion or by other means. . . . Even senators and the higher administration accept our counsels. The purely brute mind of the goyim is incapable of use for analysis and observation, and still more for the foreseeing whither a certain manner of setting a question may tend.

In this difference in capacity for thought between the goyim and ourselves may be clearly discerned the seal of our position on the Chosen People and of our higher quality of humanness, in contradistinction to the brute mind of the goyim. Their eyes are open, but see nothing before them and do not invent (unless, perhaps, material things). From this it is plain that nature herself has destined us to guide and rule the world.

When comes the time of our overt rule, the time to manifest its blessings, we shall remake all legislatures, all our laws will be brief, plain, stable, without any kind of interpretations, so that anyone will be in a position to know them perfectly. The main feature which will run right through them is submission to orders, and this principle will be carried to a grandiose height. Every abuse will then disappear in consequence of the responsibility of all down to the lowest unit before the higher authority of the representative of power. Abuses of power subordinate to this last instance will be so mercilessly punished that none will be found anxious to try experiments with their own powers. We shall follow up jealously every action of the administration on which depends the smooth running of the machinery of the State, for slackness in this produces slackness everywhere; not a single case of illegality or abuse of power will be left without exemplary punishment.

Concealment of guilt, connivance between those in the service of the administration—all this kind of evil will disappear after the very first examples of severe punishment. The aureole of our power demands suitable, that is, cruel, punishments for the slightest infringement, for the sake of gain, of its supreme prestige. The sufferer, though his punishment may exceed his fault, will count as a soldier falling on the administrative field of battle in the interest of authority, principle and law, which do not permit that any of those who hold the reins of the public coach should turn aside from the public highway to their own private paths. For example: our judges will know that whenever they feel disposed to fpume themselves on foolish clemency they are violating the law of justice which is instituted for the exemplary edification of men by penalties for lapses and not for display of the spiritual qualities of the judge. . . . Such qualities it is proper to show in private life, but not in a public square which is the educationary basis of human life.

Our legal staff will serve not beyond the age of 55, firstly because old men more obstinately hold to prejudiced opinions, and are less capable of submitting to new directions, and second because this will give us the possibility by this measure of securing elasticity in the changing of staff, which will thus the more easily bend under our pressure: he who wishes to keep his place will have to give blind obedience to deserve it. In general, our judges will be elected by us only from among those who thoroughly understand that the part they have to play is to punish and apply laws and not to dream about the manifestations of liberalism at the expense of the educationary scheme of the State, as the goyim in these days imagine it to be. . . . This method of shuffling the staff will serve also to explode any collective solidarity of those in the same service and will bind all to the interests of the government upon which their fate will depend. The young generation of judges will be trained in certain views regarding the inadmissibility of any abuses that might disturb the established order of our subjects among themselves.

In these days the judges of the goyim create indulgences to every kind of crime, not having a just understanding of their office, because the rulers of the present age in appointing judges to office take no care to inculcate in them a sense of duty and consciousness of the matter which is demanded of them. As a brute beast lets out its young in search of prey, so do the goyim give their subjects places of profit without thinking to make clear to them for what purpose such place was created. This is the reason why their governments are being ruined by their own forces through the acts of their own administration.

Let us borrow from the example of the results of these actions yet another lesson for our government.

We shall root out liberalism from all the important strategic posts of our government on which depends the training of subordinates for onr State structure. Such posts will fall exclusively to those who have been trained by us for administrative rule. To the possible objection that the retirement of old servants will cost the Treasury heavily, I reply, firstly, they will be provided with some private service in place of what they lose, and, secondly, I have to remark that all the money in the world will be concentrated in our hands, consequently it is not our government that has to fear expense.

Our absolutism will in all things be logically consecutive and therefore in each one of its decrees our supreme will will be respected and unquestionably fulfilled: it will ignore all murmurs, all discontents of every kind and will destroy to the root every kind of manifestation of them in act by punishment of an exemplary character.

We shall abolish the right of cassation, which will be transferred exclusively to our disposal—to the cognisance of him who rules, for we must not allow the conception among the people of a thought that there could be such a thing as a decision that is not right of judges set up by us. If, however, anything like this should occur, we shall ourselves cassate the decision, but inflict therewith such exemplary punishment on the judge for lack of understanding of his duty and the purpose of his appointment as will prevent a repetition of such cases. ... I repeat that it must be borne in mind that we shall know every step of our administration which only needs to be closely watched for the people to be content with us, for it has the right to demand from a good government a good official.

Our government will have the appearance of a patriarchal paternal guardianship on the part of our ruler. Our own nation and our subjects will discern in his person a father caring for their every need, their every act, their every inter-relation as subjects one with another, as well as their relations to the ruler. They will then be so thoroughly imbued with the thought that it is impossible for them to dispense with this wardship and guidance, if they wish to live in peace and quiet, that they will acknowledge the autocracy of our ruler with a devotion bordering on APOTHEOSIS, especially when they are convinced that those whom we set up do not put their own in place of his authority, but only blindly execute his dictates. They will be rejoiced that we have regulated everything in their lives as is done by wise parents who desire to train their children in the cause of duty and submission. For the peoples of the world in regard to the secrets of our polity are ever through the ages only children under age, precisely as are also their governments.

As you see, I found our despotism on right and duty: the right to compel the execution of duty is the direct obligation of a government which is a father for its subjects. It has the right of the strong that it may use it for the benefit of directing humanity towards that order which is defined by nature, namely, submission. Everything in the world is in a state of submission, if not to man, then to circumstances or its own inner character, in all cases, to what is stronger. And so shall we be this something stronger for the sake of good.

We are obliged without hesitation to sacrifice individuals, who commit a breach of established order, for in the exemplary punishment of evil lies a great educational problem.

When the King of Israel sets upon his sacred head the crown offered him by Europe he will become patriarch of the world. The indispensable victims offered by him in consequence of their suitability will never reach the number of victims offered in the course of centuries by the mania of magnificence, the emulation between the goy governments.

Our King will be in constant communion with the peoples, making to them from the tribune speeches which fame will in that same hour distribute over all the world.

PROTOCOL NO. 16

In order to effect the destruction of all collective forces except ours we shall emasculate the first stage of collectivism—the universities, by re-educating them in a new direction. Their officials and professors will be prepared for their business by detailed secret programmes of action from which they will not with immunity diverge, not by one iota. They will be appointed with esfecial precaution, and will be so placed as to be wholly dependent upon the Government.

We shall exclude from the course of instruction State Law as also all that concerns the political question. These subjects will be taught to a few dozens of persons chosen for their pre-eminent capacities from among the number of the initiated. The universities must no longer send out from their halls milksops concocting plans for a constitution, like a comedy or a tragedy, busying themselves with questions of policy in which even their own fathers never had any power of thought.

The ill-guided acquaintance of a large number of persons with questions of polity creates Utopian dreamers and bad subjects, as you can see for yourselves from the example of the universal education in this direction of the goyim. We must introduce into their education all those principles which have so brilliantly broken up their order. But when we are in power we shall remove every kind of disturbing subject from the course of education and shall make out of the youth obedient children of authority, loving him who rules as the support and hope of peace and quiet.

Classicism, as also any form of study of ancient history, in which there are more bad than good examples, we shall replace with the study of the programme of the future. We shall erase from the memory of men all facts of previous centuries which are undesirable to us, and leave only those which depict all the errors of the government of the goyim. The study of practical life, of the obligations of order, of the relations of people one to another, of avoiding bad and selfish examples, which spread the infection of evil, and similar questions of an educative nature, will stand in the forefront of the teaching programme, which will be drawn up on a separate plan for each calling or state of life, in no wise generalising the teaching. This treatment of the question has special importance.

Each state of life must be trained within strict limits corresponding to its destination and work in life. The occasional genius has always managed and always will manage to slip through into other states of life, but it is the most perfect folly for the sake of this rare occasional genius to let through into ranks foreign to them the untalented who thus rob of their places those who belong to those ranks by birth or employment. You know yourselves in what all this has ended for the GOYIM who allowed this crying absurdity.

In order that he who rules may be seated firmly in the hearts and minds of his subjects it is necessary for the time of his activity to instruct the whole nation in the schools and on the market places about his meaning and his acts and all his beneficent initiatives.

We shall abolish every kind of freedom of instruction. Learners of all ages will have the right to assemble together with their parents in the educational establishments as it were in a club: daring these assemblies, on holidays, teachers will read what will pass as free lectures on questions of human relations, of the laws of examples, of the limitations which are born of unconscious relations, and, finally, of the philosophy of new theories not yet declared to the world. These theories will be raised by us to the stage of a dogma of faith as a transitional stage towards our faith. On the completion of this exposition of our programme of action in the present and the future I will read you the principles of these theories.

In a word, knowing by the experience of many centuries that people live and are guided by ideas, that these ideas are imbibed by people only by the aid of education provided with equal success for all ages of growth, but of course by varying methods, we shall swallow up and confiscate to our own use the last scintilla of independence of thought, which we have for long past been directing towards subjects and ideas useful for us. The system of bridling thought is already at work in the so-called system of teaching by object lessons, the purpose of which is to turn the goyim into unthinking submissive brutes waiting for things to be presented before their eyes in order to form an idea of them. ... In France, one of our best agents, Bourgeois, has already made public a new programme of teaching by object lessons.

PROTOCOL NO. 17

The practice of advocacy produces men cold, cruel, persistent, unprincipled, who in all cases take up an impersonal, purely legal standpoint. They have the inveterate habit to refer everything to its value for the defence and not to the public welfare of its results. They do not usually decline to undertake any defence whatever, they strive for an acquittal at all costs, cavilling over every petty crux of jurisprudence and thereby they demoralise justice. For this reason we shall set this profession into narrow frames which will keep it inside this sphere of executive public service. Advocates, equally with judges, will be deprived of the right of communication with litigants; they will receive business only from the court and will study it by notes of report and documents, defending their clients after they have been interrogated in court on facts that have appeared. They will receive an honorarium without regard to the quality of the defence.

This will render them mere reporters on law-business in the interests of justice and as counterpoise to the proctor who will be the reporter in the interests of prosecution; this will shorten business before the courts. In this way will be established a practice of honest unprejudiced defence conducted not from personal interest but by conviction. This will also, by the way, remove the present practice of corrupt bargain between advocates to agree only to let that side win which pays most. . . .

We have long past taken care to discredit the priesthood of the goyim, and thereby to ruin their mission on earth which in these days might still be a great hindrance to us. Day by day its influence on the peoples of the world is falling lower. Freedom of conscience has been declared everywhere, so that now only years divide us from the moment of the complete wrecking of that Christian religion: as to other religions we shall have still less difficulty in dealing with them, but it would be premature to speak of this now. We shall set clericalism and clericals into such narrow frames as to make their influence move in retrogressive proportion to its former progress.

When the time comes finally to destroy the papal court the finger of an invisible hand will point the nations towards this court. When, however, the nations fling themselves upon it, we shall come forward in the guise of its defenders as if to save excessive bloodshed. By this diversion we shall penetrate to its very bowels and be sure we shall never come out again until we have gnawed through the entire strength of this place.

The King of the Jews will be the real Pope of the Universe, the patriarch of an international Church.

But, in the meantime, while we are re-educating youth in new traditional religions and afterwards in ours, we shall not overtly lay a finger on existing churches, but we shall fight against them by criticism calculated to produce schism. . . .

In general, then, our contemporary press will continue to convict State affairs, religions, incapacities of the goyim, always using the most unprincipled expressions in order by every means to lower their prestige in the manner which can only be practised by the genius of our gifted tribe. . . .

Our kingdom will be an apologia of the divinity Vishnu, in whom is found its personification—in our hundred hands will be, one in each, the springs of the machinery of social life. We shall see everything without the aid of official police which, in that scope of its rights which we elaborated for the use of the goyim, hinders governments from seeing. In our programme one-third of our subjects will keep the rest under observation from a sense of duty, on the principle of volunteer service to the State. It will then be no disgrace to be a spy and informer, but a merit: unfounded denunciations, however, will be cruelly punished that there may be no development of abuses of this right.

Our agents will be taken from the higher as well as the lower ranks of society, from among the administrative class who spend their time in amusements, editors, printers and publishers, booksellers, clerks, and salesmen, workmen, coachmen, lackeys, etcetera. This body, having no rights and not being empowered to take any action on their own account, and consequently a police without any power, will only witness and report: verification of their reports and arrests will depend upon a responsible group of controllers of police affairs, while the actual act of arrest will be performed by the gendarmerie and the municipal police. Any person not denouncing anything seen or heard concerning questions of polity will also be charged with and made responsible for concealment, if it be proved that he is guilty of this crime.

Just as nowadays our brethren are obliged at their own risk to denounce to the kabal apostates of their own family or members who have been noticed doing anything in opposition to the kabal, so in our kingdom over all the world it will be obligatory for all our subjects to observe the duty of service to the State in this direction.

Such an organisation will extirpate abuses of authority, of force, of bribery, everything in fact which we by our counsels, by our theories of the superhuman rights of man, have introduced into the customs of the goyim. . . . But how else were we to procure that increase of causes predisposing to disorders in the midst of their administration? . . . Among the number of those methods one of the most important is—agents for the restoration of order, so placed as to have the opportunity in their disintegrating activity of developing and displaying their evil inclinations—obstinate self-conceit, irresponsible exercise of authority, and, first and foremost, venality.

PROTOCOL NO. 18

When it becomes necessary for us to strengthen the strict measures of secret defence (the most fatal poison for the prestige of authority) we shall arrange a simulation of disorders or some manifestation of discontents finding expression through the co-operation of good speakers. Round these speakers will assemble all who are sympathetic to his utterances. This will give us the pretext for domiciliary perquisitions and surveillance on the part of our servants from among the number of the goyim police. . . .

As the majority of conspirators act out of love for the game, for the sake of talking, so, until they commit some overt act we shall not lay a finger on them but only introduce into their midst observation elements. ... It must be remembered that the prestige of authority is lessened if it frequently discovers conspiracies against itself: this implies a presumption of consciousness of weakness, or, what is still worse, of injustice. You are aware that we have broken the prestige of the goy kings by frequent attempts upon their lives through our agents, blind sheep of our flock, who are easily moved by a few liberal phrases to crimes provided only they be painted in political colours. We have compelled the rulers to acknowledge their weakness in advertising overt measures of secret defence and thereby we shall bring the promise of authority to destruction.

Our ruler will be secretly protected only by the most insignificant guard, because we shall not admit so much as a thought that there could exist against him any sedition with which he is not strong enough to contend and is compelled to hide from it.

If we should admit this thought, as the goyim have done and are doing, we should ipso facto be signing a death sentence, if not for our ruler, at any rate for his dynasty, at no distant date.

According to strictly enforced outward appearances our ruler will employ his power only for the advantage of the nation and in no wise for his own or dynastic profits. Therefore, with the observance of this decorum, his authority will be respected and guarded by the subjects themselves, it will receive an apotheosis in the admission that with it is bound up the well-being of every citizen of the State, for upon it will depend all order in the common life of the pack. . . .

Overt defence of the king argues weakness in the organisation of his strength.

Our ruler will always among the people be surrounded by a mob of apparently curious men and women, who will occupy the front ranks about him, to all appearance by chance, and will restrain the ranks of the rest out of respect as it will appear for good order. This will sow an example of restraint also in others. If a petitioner appears among the people trying to hand a petition and forcing his way through the ranks, the first ranks must receive the petition and before the eyes of the petitioner pass it to the ruler, so that all may know that what is handed in reaches its destination, that, consequently, there exists a control of the ruler himself. The aureole of power requires for its existence that the people may be able to say: "If the king knew of this," or: "the king will hear of it."

With the establishment of official secret defence the mystical prestige of authority disappears: given a certain audacity, and everyone counts himself master of it, the sedition-monger is conscious of his strength, and when occasion serves watches for the moment to make an attempt upon authority. . . . For the goyim we have been preaching something else, but by that very fact we are enabled to see what measures of overt defence have brought them to. . . .

Criminals with us will be arrested at the first more or less well-grounded suspicion; it cannot be allowed that out of fear of a possible mistake an opportunity should be given of escape to persons suspected of a political lapse or crime, for in these matters we shall be literally merciless. If it is still possible, by stretching a point, to admit a reconsideration of the motive causes in simple crimes, there is no possibility of excuse for persons occupying themselves with questions in which nobody except the government can understand anything. . . . And it is not all governments that understand true policy.

PROTOCOL NO. 19

If we do not permit any independent dabbling in the political we shall on the other hand encourage every kind of report or petition with proposals for the government to examine into all kinds of projects for the amelioration of the condition of the people; this will reveal to us the defects or else the fantasies of our subjects, to which we shall respond either by accomplishing them or by a wise rebutment to prove the short-sightedness of one who judges wrongly.

Sedition-mongering is nothing more than the yapping of a lap-dog at an elephant. For a government well organised, not from the police but from the public point of view, the lap-dog yaps at the elephant in entire unconsciousness of its strength and importance. It needs no more than to take a good example to show the relative importance of both and the lap-dogs will cease to yap and will wag their tails the moment they set eyes on an elephant.

In order to destroy the prestige of heroism for political crime we shall send it for trial in the category of thieving, murder, and every kind of abominable and filthy crime. Public opinion will then confuse in its conception this category of crime with the disgrace attaching to every other and will brand it with the same contempt.

We have done our best, and I hope we have succeeded, to obtain that the goyim should not arrive at this means of contending with sedition. It was for this reason that through the press and in speeches, indirectly—in cleverly compiled schoolbooks on history, we have advertised the martyrdom alleged to have been accepted by sedition-mongers for the idea of the commonweal. This advertisement has increased the contingent of liberals and has brought thousands of goyim into the ranks of our livestock cattle.

PROTOCOL NO. 20

To-day we shall touch upon the financial programme, which I put off to the end of my report as being the most difficult, the crowning and the decisive point of our plans. Before entering upon it I will remind you that I have already spoken before by way of a hint when I said that the sum total of our actions is settled by the question of figures.

When we come into our kingdom our autocratic government will avoid, from a principle of self-preservation, sensibly burdening the masses of the people with taxes, remembering that it plays the part of father and protector. But as State organisation costs dear it is necessary nevertheless to obtain the funds required for it. It will, therefore, elaborate with particular precaution the question of equilibrium in this matter.

Our rule, in which the king will enjoy the legal fiction that everything in his State belongs to him (which may easily be translated into fact), will be enabled to resort to the lawful confiscation of all sums of every kind for the regulation of their circulation in the State. From this follows that taxation will best be covered by a progressive tax on property. In this manner the dues will be paid without straitening or ruining anybody in the form of a percentage of the amount of property. The rich must be aware that it is their duty to place a part of their superfluities at the disposal of the State since the State guarantees them security of possession of the rest of their property and the right of honest gains, I say honest, for the control over property will do away with robbery on a legal basis.

This social reform must come from above, for the time is ripe for it—it is indispensable as a pledge of peace.

The tax upon the poor man is a seed of revolution and works to the detriment of the State which in hunting after the trifling is missing the big. Quite apart from this, a tax on capitalists diminishes the growth of wealth in private hands in which we have in these days concentrated it as a counterpoise to the government strength of the goyim—their State finances.

A tax increasing in a percentage ratio to capital will give a much larger revenue than the present individual or property tax, which is useful to us now for the sole reason that it excites trouble and discontent among the goyim.

The force upon which our king will rest consists in the equilibrium and the guarantee of peace, for the sake of which things it is indispensable that the capitalists should yield up a portion of their incomes for the sake of the secure working of the machinery of the State. State needs must be paid by those who will not feel the burden and have enough to take from.

Such a measure will destroy the hatred of the poor man for the rich, in whom he will see a necessary financial support for the State, will see in him the organiser of peace and well-being since he will see that it is the rich man who is paying the necessary means to attain these things.

In order that payers of the educated classes should not too much distress themselves over the new payments they will have full accounts given them of the destination of those payments, with the exception of such sums as will be appropriated for the needs of the throne and the administrative institutions.

He who reigns will not have any properties of his own once all in the State represents his patrimony, or else the one would be in contradiction to the other; the fact of holding private means would destroy the right of property in the common possessions of all.

Relatives of him who reigns, his heirs excepted, who will be maintained by the resources of the State, must enter the ranks of servants of the State or must work to obtain the right of property; the privilege of royal blood must not serve for the spoiling of the treasury.

Purchase, receipt of money or inheritance will be subject to the payment of a stamp progressive tax. Any transfer of property, whether money or other, without evidence of payment of this tax which will be strictly registered by names, will render the former holder liable to pay interest on the tax from the moment of transfer of these sums up to the discovery of his evasion of declaration of the transfer. Transfer documents must be presented weekly at the local treasury office with notifications of the name, surname and permanent place of residence of the former and the new holder of the property. This transfer with register of names must begin from a definite sum which exceeds the ordinary expenses of buying and selling of necessaries, and these will be subject to payment only by a stamp impost of a definite percentage of the unit.

Just strike an estimate of how many times such taxes as these will cover the revenue of the goyim States.

The State exchequer will have to maintain a definite complement of reserve sums, and all that is collected above that complement must be returned into circulation. On these sums will be organised public works. The initiative in works of this kind, proceeding from State sources, will bind the working class firmly to the interests of the State and to those who reign. From these same sums also a part will be set aside as rewards of inventiveness and productiveness.

On no account should so much as a single unit above the definite and freely estimated sums be retained in the State treasuries, for money exists to be circulated and any kind of stagnation of money acts ruinously on the running of the State machinery, for which it is the lubricant; a stagnation of the lubricant may stop the regular working of the mechanism.

The substitution of interest-bearing paper for a part of the token of exchange has produced exactly this stagnation. The consequences of this circumstance are already sufficiently noticeable.

A court of account will also be instituted by us and in it the ruler will find at any moment a full accounting for State income and expenditure, with the exception of the current monthly account, not yet made up, and that of the preceding month, which will not yet have been delivered.

The one and only person who will have no interest in robbing the State is its owner, the ruler. This is why his personal control will remove the possibility of leakages of extravagances.

The representative function of the ruler at receptions for the sake of etiquette, which absorbs so much invaluable time, will be abolished in order that the ruler may have time for control and consideration. His power will not then be split up into fractional parts among time-serving favourites who surround the throne for its pomp and splendour, and are interested only in their own and not in the common interests of the State.

Economic crises have been produced by us for the goyim by no other means than the withdrawal of money from circulation. Huge capitals have stagnated, withdrawing money from States, which were constantly obliged to apply to those same stagnant capitals for loans. These loans burdened the finances of the State with the payment of interest and made them the bond slaves of these capitals. . . . The concentration of industry in the hands of capitalists out of the hands of small masters has drained away all the juices of the peoples and with them also of the States. . . .

The present issue of money in general does not correspond with the requirements per head, and cannot therefore satisfy all the needs of the workers. The issue of money ought to correspond with the growth of population and thereby children also must absolutely be reckoned as consumers of currency from the day of their birth. The revision of issue is a material question for the whole world.

You are aware that the gold standard has been the ruin of the States which adopted it, for it has not been able to satisfy the demands for money, the more so that we have removed gold from circulation as far as possible.

With us the standard that must be introduced is the cost of working-man power, whether it be reckoned in paper or in wood. We shall make the issue of money in accordance with the normal requirements of each subject, adding to the quantity with every birth and subtracting with every death.

The accounts will be managed by each department (the French administrative division), each circle.

In order that there may be no delays in the paying out of money for State needs the sums and terms of such payments will be fixed by decree of the ruler; this will do away with the protection by a ministry of one institution to the detriment of others.

The budgets of income and expenditure will be carried out side by side that they may not be obscured by distance one to another.

The reforms projected by us in the financial institutions and principles of the goyim will be closed by us in such forms as will alarm nobody. We shall point out the necessity of reforms in consequence of the disorderly darkness into which the goyim by their irregularities have plunged the finances. The first irregularity, as we shall point out, consists in their beginning with drawing up a single budget which year after year grows owing to the following cause: this budget is dragged out to half the year, then they demand a budget to put things right, and this they expend in three months, after which they ask for a supplementary budget, and all this ends with a liquidation budget. But, as the budget of the following year is drawn up in accordance with the sum of the total addition, the annual departure from the normal reaches as much as 50 per cent, in a year, and so the annual budget is trebled in ten years. Thanks to such methods, allowed by the carelessness of the goy States, their treasuries are empty. The period of loans supervenes, and that has swallowed up remainders and brought all the goy States to bankruptcy.

You understand perfectly that economic arrangements of this kind, which have been suggested to the goyim by us, cannot be carried on by us.

Every kind of loan proves infirmity in the State and a want of understanding of the rights of the State. Loans hang like a sword of Damocles over the heads of rulers, who, instead of taking from their subjects by a temporary tax, come begging with outstretched palm of our bankers. Foreign loans are leeches which there is no possibility of removing from the body of the State until they fall off of themselves or the State flings them off. But the goy States do not tear them off; they go on in persisting in putting more on to themselves so that they must inevitably perish, drained by voluntary blood-letting.

What also indeed is, in substance, a loan, especially a foreign loan? A loan is—an issue of government bills of exchange containing a percentage obligation commensurate to the sum of the loan capital. If the loan bears a charge of 5 per cent., then in twenty years the State vainly pays away in interest a sum equal to the loan borrowed, in forty years it is paying a double sum, in sixty—treble, and all the while the debt remains an unpaid debt.

From this calculation it is obvious that with any form of taxation per head the State is baling out the last coppers of the poor taxpayers in order to settle accounts with wealthy foreigners, from whom it has borrowed money instead of collecting these coppers for its own needs without the additional interest.

So long as loans were internal the goyim only shuffled their money from the pockets of the poor to those of the rich, but when we bought up the necessary person in order to transfer loans into the external sphere all the wealth of States flowed into our cash-boxes and all the goyim began to pay us the tribute of subjects.

If the superficiality of goy kings on their thrones in regard to State affairs and the venality of ministers or the want of understanding of financial matters on the part of other ruling persons have made their countries debtors to our treasuries to amounts quite impossible to pay it has not been accomplished without on our part heavy expenditure of trouble and money.

Stagnation of money will not be allowed by us and therefore there will be no State interest-bearing paper, except a one per cent. series, so that there will be no payment of interest to leeches that suck all the strength out of the State. The right to issue interest-bearing paper will be given exclusively to industrial companies who will find no difficulty in paying interest out of profits, whereas the State does not make interest on borrowed money like these companies, for the State borrows to spend and not to use in operations.

Industrial papers will be bought also by the government which from being as now a payer of tribute by loan operations will be transformed into a lender of money at a profit. This measure will stop the stagnation of money, parasitic profits and idleness, all of which were useful for us among the goyim so long as they were independent but are not desirable under our rule.

How clear is the undeveloped power of thought of the 'purely brute brains of the goyim, as expressed in the fact that they have been borrowing from us with payment of interest without ever thinking that all the same these very moneys plus an addition for payment of interest must be got by them from their own State pockets in order to settle up with us. What could have been simpler than to take the money they wanted from their own people?

But it is a proof of the genius of our chosen mind that we have contrived to present the matter of loans to them in such a light that they have even seen in them an advantage for themselves.

Our accounts, which we shall present when the time comes, in the light of centuries of experience gained by experiments made by us on the goy States, will be distinguished by clearness and definiteness and will show at a glance to all men the advantage of our innovations. They will put an end to those abuses to which we owe our mastery over the goyim, but which cannot be allowed in our kingdom.

We shall so hedge about our system of accounting that neither the ruler nor the most insignificant public servant will be in a position to divert even the smallest sum from its destination without detection or to direct it in another direction except that which will be once fixed in a definite plan of action.

And without a definite plan it is impossible to rule. Marching along an undetermined road and with undetermined resources brings to ruin by the way heroes and demi-gods.

The goy rulers, whom we once upon a time advised should be distracted from State occupations by representative receptions, observances of etiquette, entertainments, were only screens for our rule. The accounts of favourite courtiers who replaced them in the sphere of affairs were drawn up for them by our agents, and every time gave satisfaction to short-sighted minds by promises that in the future economies and improvements were foreseen. . . . Economies from what? From new taxes?—were questions that might have been but were not asked by those who read our accounts and projects. . . .

You know to what they have been brought by this carelessness, to what a pitch of financial disorder they have arrived, notwithstanding the astonishing industry of their peoples. . . .

PROTOCOL NO. 21

To what I reported to you at the last meeting I shall now add a detailed explanation of internal loans. Of foreign loans I shall say nothing more, because they have fed us with the national moneys of the goyim, but for our State there will be no foreigners, that is, nothing external.

We have taken advantage of the venality of administrators and the slackness of rulers to get our moneys twice, thrice and more times over, by lending to the goy governments moneys which were not at all needed by the States. Could anyone do the like in regard to us? . . . Therefore, I shall only deal with the details of internal loans.

States announce that such a loan is to be concluded and open subscriptions for their own bills of exchange, that is, for their interest-bearing paper. That they may be within the reach of all the price is determined at from a hundred to a thousand; and a discount is made for the earliest subscribers. Next day by artificial means the price of them goes up, the alleged reason being that everyone is rushing to buy them. In a few days the treasury safes are as they say overflowing and there's more money than they can do with (why then take it?). The subscription, it is alleged, covers many times over the issue total of the loan; in this lies the whole stage effect—look you, they say, what confidence is shown in the government's bills of exchange.

But when the comedy is played out there emerges the fact that a debit and an exceedingly burdensome debit has been created. For the payment of interest it becomes necessary to have recourse to new loans, which do not swallow up but only add to the capital debt. And when this credit is exhausted it becomes necessary by new taxes to cover, not the loan, but only the interest on it. These taxes are a debit employed to cover a debit. . . .

Later comes the time for conversions, but they diminish the payment of interest without covering the debt, and besides they cannot be made without the consent of the lenders; on announcing a conversion a proposal is made to return the money to those who are not willing to convert their paper. If everybody expressed his unwillingness and demanded his money back, the government would be hooked on their own flies and would be found insolvent and unable to pay the proposed sums. By good luck the subjects of the goy governments, knowing nothing about financial affairs, have always preferred losses on exchange and diminution of interest to the risk of new investments of their moneys, and have thereby many a time enabled these governments to throw off their shoulders a debit of several millions.

Nowadays, with external loans, these tricks cannot be played by the goyim for they know that we shall demand all our moneys back.

In this way an acknowledged bankruptcy will best prove to the various countries the absence of any means between the interests of the peoples and of those who rule them.

I beg you to concentrate your particular attention upon this point and upon the following: nowadays all internal loans are consolidated by so-called flying loans, that is, such as have terms of payment more or less near. These debts consist of moneys paid into the savings banks and reserve funds. If left for long at the disposition of a government these funds evaporate in the payment of interest on foreign loans, and are replaced by the deposit of equivalent amount of rentes.

And these last it is which patch up all the leaks in the State treasuries of the goyim.

When we ascend the throne of the world all these financial and similar shifts, as being not in accord with our interests, will be swept away so as not to leave a trace, as also will be destroyed all money markets, since we shall not allow the prestige of our power to be shaken by fluctuations of prices set upon our values, which we shall announce by law at the price which represents their full worth without any possibility of lowering or raising. (Raising gives the pretext for lowering, which indeed was where we made a beginning in relation to the values of the goyim.)

We shall replace the money markets by grandiose government credit institutions, the object of which will be to fix the price of industrial values in accordance with government views. These institutions will be in a position to fling upon the market five hundred millions of industrial paper in one day, or to buy up for the same amount. In this way all industrial undertakings will come into dependence upon us. You may imagine for yourselves what immense power we shall thereby secure for ourselves...

PROTOCOL NO. 22

In all that has so far been reported by me to yon, I have endeavoured to depict with care the secret of what is coming, of what is past, and of what is going on now, rushing into the flood of the great events coming already in the near future, the secret of our relations to the goyim and of financial operations. On this subject there remains still a little for me to add.

In our hands is the greatest power of our day—gold: in two days we can procure from our storehouses any quantity we may please.

Surely there is no need to seek further proof that our rule is predestined by God? Surely we shall not fail with such wealth to prove that all that evil which for so many centuries we have had to commit has served at the end of ends the cause of true well-being-—the bringing of everything into order? Though it be even by the exercise of some violence, yet all the same it will be established. We shall contrive to prove that we are benefactors who have restored to the rent and mangled earth the true good and also freedom of the person, and therewith we shall enable it to be enjoyed in peace and quiet, with proper dignity of relations, on the condition, of course, of strict observance of the laws established by us. We shall make plain therewith that freedom does not consist in dissipation and in the right of unbridled licence any more than the dignity and force of a man do not consist in the right for everyone to promulgate destructive principles in the nature of freedom of conscience, equality and the like, that freedom of the person in no wise consists in the right to agitate oneself and others by abominable speeches before disorderly mobs, and that true freedom consists in the inviolability of the person who honourably and strictly observes all the laws of life in common, that human dignity is wrapped up in consciousness of the rights and also of the absence of rights of each, and not wholly and solely in fantastic imaginings about the subject of one's ego.

Our authority will be glorious because it will be all-powerful, will rule and guide, and not muddle along after leaders and orators shrieking themselves hoarse with senseless words which they call great principles and which are nothing else, to speak honestly, but utopian. . . . Our authority will be the crown of order, and in that is included the whole happiness of man. The aureole of this authority will inspire a mystical bowing of the knee before it and a reverent fear before it of all the peoples. True force makes no terms with any right, not even with that of God: none dare come near to it so as to take so much as a span from it away.

PROTOCOL NO. 23

That the peoples may become accustomed to obedience it is necessary to inculcate lessons of humility and therefore to reduce the production of articles of luxury. By this we shall improve morals which have been debased by emulation in the sphere of luxury. We shall re-establish small master production which will mean laying a mine under the private capital of manufacturers. This is indispensable also for the reason that manufacturers on the grand scale often move, though not always consciously, the thoughts of the masses in directions against the government. A people of small masters knows nothing of unemployment and this binds him closely with existing order, and consequently with the firmness of authority. Unemployment is a most perilous thing for a government. For us its part will have been played out the moment authority is transferred into our hands. Drunkenness also will be prohibited by law and punishable as a crime against the humanness of man who is turned into a brute under the influence of alcohol.

Subjects, I repeat once more, give blind obedience only to the strong hand which is absolutely independent of them, for in it they feel the sword of defence and support against social scourges. . . . What do they want with an angelic spirit in a king? What they have to see in him is the personification of force and power.

The supreme lord who will replace all now existing rulers, dragging on their existence among societies demoralised by us, societies that have denied even the authority of God, from whose midst breaks out on all sides the fire of anarchy, must first of all proceed to quench this all-devouring flame. Therefore he will be obliged to kill off those existing societies, though he should drench them with his own blood, that he may resurrect them again in the form of regularly organised troops fighting consciously with every kind of infection that may cover the body of the State with sores.

This Chosen One of God is chosen from above to demolish the senseless forces moved by instinct and not reason, by brutishness and not humanness. These forces now triumph in manifestations of robbery and every kind of violence under the mask of principles of freedom and rights. They have overthrown all forms of social order to erect on the ruins the throne of the King of the Jews; but their part will be played out the moment he enters into his kingdom. Then it will be necessary to sweep them away from his path, on which must be left no knot, no splinter.

Then will it be possible for us to say to the peoples of the world: "Give thanks to God and bow the knee before him who bears on his front the seal of the predestination of man, to which God Himself has led his star that none other but He might free us from all the before-mentioned forces and evils."

PROTOCOL NO. 24

I pass now to the method of confirming the dynastic roots of King David to the last strata of the earth.

This confirmation will first and foremost be included in that in which to this day has rested the force of conservatism by our learned elders of the conduct of all the affairs of the world, in the directing of the education of thought of all humanity.

Certain members of the seed of David will prepare the kings and their heirs, selecting not by right of heritage but by eminent capacities, inducting them into the most secret mysteries of the political, into schemes of government, but providing always that none may come to knowledge of the secrets. The object of this mode of action is that all may know that government cannot be entrusted to those who have not been inducted into the secret places of its art. . . .

To these persons only will be taught the practical application of the aforenamed plans by comparison of the experiences of many centuries, all the observations on the politico-economic moves and social sciences—in a word, all the spirit of laws which have been unshakably established by nature herself for the regulation of the relations of humanity.

Direct heirs will often be set aside from ascending the throne if in their time of training they exhibit frivolity, softness and other qualities that are the ruin of authority, which render them incapable of governing and in themselves dangerous for kingly office.

Only those who are unconditionally capable for firm, even if it be to cruelty, direct rule will receive the reins of rule from our learned elders.

In case of falling sick with weakness of will or other form of incapacity, kings must by law hand over the reins of rule to new and capable hands. . . .

The king's plans of action for the current moment, and all the more so for the future, will be unknown, even to those who are called his closest counsellors.

Only the king and the three who stood sponsor for him will know what is coming.

In the person of the king who with unbending will is master of himself and of humanity all will discern as it were fate with its mysterious ways. None will know what the king wishes to attain by his dispositions, and therefore none will dare to stand across an unknown path.

It is understood that the brain reservoir of the king must correspond in capacity to the plan of government it has to contain. It is for this reason that he will ascend the throne not otherwise than after examination of his mind by the aforesaid learned elders.

That the people may know and love their king it is indispensable for him to converse in the market-places with his people. This ensures the necessary clinching of the two forces which are now divided one from another by us by the terror.

This terror was indispensable for us till the time comes for both these forces separately to fall under our influence.

The King of the Jews must not be at the mercy of his passions, and especially of sensuality: on no side of his character must he give brute instincts power over his mind. Sensuality worse than all else disorganises the capacities of the mind and clearness of views, distracting the thoughts to the worst and most brutal side of human activity.

The prop of humanity in the person of the supreme lord of all the world of the holy seed of David must sacrifice to his people all personal inclinations.

Our supreme lord must be of an exemplary irreproachability.

Chapter 16

THE STORY OF JONATHAN MAY

Jonathan May attempted to free us from the shackles of the Federal Reserve by creating an alternate banking system with instruments backed by land, raw materials, mineral deposits, oil, coal, timber, and other wilderness holdings. Jonathan aided Governor Connolly and the Hunt brothers in their effort to corner the silver market. The silver would have been used to create a "Bank of Texas" issue of "real" money. This would have destroyed the Federal Reserve had the Hunts been successful. When the world bankers realized what was happening, they destroyed Connolly, the Hunt brothers, Jonathan May, and Texas.

The federal Reserve entrapped Mr. May by intentionally routing his credit instruments through the Federal Reserve, against the terms clearly stated upon those instruments, instead of through Mr. May's alternate system. Jonathan May was illegally arrested, illegally tried, and illegally imprisoned in the Federal Prison at Terre Haute, Indiana. The world power structure has stolen Mr. May's idea, which will be used as the banking system of the New World Order and is known as the World Conservation Bank. Jonathan has served four years of a fifteen-year sentence.

Telling Time: July 27, 1990

I SWEAR BY ALMIGHTY GOD THAT THE EVIDENCE I NOW GIVE IS THE TRUTH, THE WHOLE TRUTH AND NOTHING BUT THE TRUTH, TO THE BEST OF MY KNOWLEDGE, BELIEF AND RECOLLECTION. I DO SO SWEAR UNDER THE PENALTY OF PERJURY UNDER THE LAWS OF THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA - SO HELP ME GOD.

I was born into a privileged life-style in North Devon, England, the third and last child and only son of a wealthy, land-owning family. I was privately educated and left school early, determined to join my father's business and not be encumbered with the authoritarian atmosphere of school. I did so by getting myself expelled. I was, I believe, nearly sixteen. At once I began to work as a livestock broker as ray father and his family did and still does. I also farmed. I then branched into other goods, buying for customers using ray contacts to supply items at a lower cost and better quality items at the same cost than normal retail suppliers. I was very successful. My business continued to expand. Management was highly vertically structured, and diversification was as lateral as I could possibly make it. It continued to thrive. I developed a sophisticated tax-shelter system which was lawfully capable of removing taxation liability from the majority of my own and my colleagues' incomes.

At age 20, in my twenty-first year, numerous old documents - family heirlooms from my mother's side of the family - were given to me as its last remaining male heir.

Among these old documents was an Indenture issued to an ancestor of mine, settling upon him "and his heir and assigns in perpetuity for the duration of the term hereof" the responsibility and authority of Trustee for certain property, goods, chattels, etc. As far as I can recall, the document was dated "In this Year of Our Lord one Thousand, Six Hundred and Forty Seven". The document - a parchment with the Royal Seal of England still attached - constituted a Trust indenturing my ancestor, et. al. for a 999-year terra as trustee for the property named. The parchment was signed by "Charles Stuart Rex Of England, France, and Ireland King" - Charles I.

Knowing nothing about such matters, I consulted lawyers . They determined the document was genuine, that a trust had been established by the British King Charles I and that its original trustee had been my ancestor, and that - as a matter of law - it could not be broken, the British monatch then - and still - being the Supreme Head of the judiciary in the United Kingdom. Also as a matter of law, the trust was an operative entity, under the provisions of which I, as the remaining male heir, was the responsible trustee. However, it had clearly been inoperative for as long as anyone could remember. Shares certified from "The Dheli & Punjab Railway" and other such antiquated relics - seemingly unredeemed still - were with the trust charter. Successive charters endorsed by successive British monarchs were with the original one as well. It was determined that sub-trusts - subsidiaries - should be formed at once, under the grandfathering precepts of the original 17th-century charter. Out of the air, I decided that 4000 such subsidiaries would be formed as non-domiciled entities, governed under the plural and simultaneous governments of all the nations of the world which were non-Communist.

Between the months of September 19, 1969 and February 15, 1970, these 4000 charters were printed and recorded in a register. These were numbered, prefixed by "No. SSR/647/". The first was chosen to be the common trustee entity for the remaining 3,999. None could be recorded in any one country. Doing so would have given the country of registration some prior-claim taxation ability. For this reason, the Register of the 4000 entities was kept in the constant custody of myself as the recorded sole-signator of record of the original trust which we named "The International Equity Trust". We decided to call the group of sub-trusts "The Sovereign Charter Trust Group". This main group was then subdivided into the Sodalitas Trust Group - comprised of the administrative, in-house members whose activities were to be coordinated by and through a board of directors known as The Trustee's Directorate Body. The remaining trusts were to have been sold/leased as tax-shelters to sundry third parties for the fee of 20% of the total tax liability saved by the client using the trust for this purpose, ie. without one of our trusts - a tax liability of $100,000, but with one of our trusts - at a cost to the client of $20,000 - a nil tax liability.

In 1969, lawyers advised us that the only problem we faced was the taxation authorities' propensity to arbitrarily state that our trusts were a non-entity but that they would be protected from taxation anywhere worldwide by legislation once proof positive was available that they had been alive as artificial persons for twelve years. My local home-town lawyer had counter-endorsed the Register under every page, and the 4000 trusts were "born", ie. chartered between September 19, 1969 and February 15, 1970.

Accordingly, I determined that I should continue my business enterprises for another twelve years and then simply sell or lease out the 3,999 trusts at either a flat fee or by the 20%-of-taxes-saved formula - and use the proceeds, in part, to re-determine the what, where, why, and when concerning the assets of the original trust.

During the years that followed, I became more and more diversified and made sound commercial contacts all over the globe. Increasingly, my fees and commissions were being paid to me in differing currencies. This brought my attention to their differing interest rates and who, in fact, it is who determines which currencies are loaned at which rates. I discovered that a minute cartel controlled all banking policies worldwide, and that the provision or non-provision of "money" was all-controlling.

As my reputation as a finder of the unusual at a fair price grew, I with my colleagues began to realize that there was considerable resistance throughout the conventional financial markets to "entrepreneurs". Highly determined but very independently-minded individuals were not at all welcome in "normal" banking circles. There was a very real need in the independent business communities throughout the world for alternative credit facilities to properly and fairly provide for entrepreneurial needs - a window in the market for them between new venture capital and died-in-the-wool conventional business capital. We decided that, in a wholly novel and independent manner, our loosely connected but highly respected circle of

(Telling Time, Page 4 of 26)

"middle-men" would become providers of capital for our established clients all over the world. Independent credit/capital sources in the Middle East and elsewhere, and several substantial private placement arrangements were made, first between ourselves and our investors and subsequently between ourselves and the users of those investments. We chose to take a minimal intermediary fee but retain a non-working but joint-venture/profit-sharing interest in many of the enterprises capitalized by our investors. We did find that there were never enough investors to be found. Otherwise, everyone seemed content.

Like many arrogant and foolish young men before me, I tended to advertise my financial success. I grew headstrong. The local small town police force began to watch me and became a significant nuisance, stopping me for tires, speeding, etc., etc. I started a butcher business and again made a significant success of it, also in my hometown area. My success meant the loss of trade by my competition. My premises were burgled successively, and soon insurers would not insure me. I provided my own deterrent. I rigged a "loaded shotgun" sign outside of my premises and inside the coldstore placed a very lifelike loaded shotgun and trip alarm system for anyone thinking of again stealing my property as uninsured thousands had already been stolen. The local police arrested me for setting a man-trap with intent to endanger life. My intent, quite obviously, was to protect my property, so I was very properly acquitted of this foolish charge against me.

Having been advised not to rig up any such device again, I purchased a young mountain lion as a "guard dog" to continue to dissuade any would-be thieves. With 20-20 hindsight I realize that was not an appropriate thing to do. I began to be a minor celebrity in my little country town, and the local police were thoroughly incensed that the charges against me had been dropped. I had become something of a target. My "high profile" was not working for me. By this time, because of my motoring offenses and the publicity resulting from the trial and the mountain lion, my family all but disowned me. I made it my business to establish exactly who it was in the local police force who was instigating my problems. It was no lesser man than Inspector Goldsworthy. I hired people to watch his activities and it came out that he was involved with drug importing.

The information supplied to me was that Goldsworthy had an aged mother in Plymouth, England whom he used as an excuse to make frequent trips there from North Devon, but in fact he was met there by individuals who were delivering illegal drugs to him. There was no way of establishing for certain if such was the case. The people I had been paying to follow him were not professionals. I felt it was time to hand the matter over into professional hands though, and I did so. Almost at once this particular inspector left the North Devon area.

Word came back to me from different sources, probably the result of one of the two people I had employed to follow Goldsworthy talking carelessly, that Goldsworthy's subordinates on the local police force were going to get even. The harassment grew to overwhelming proportions. For example, a hunting trip with authorized shotguns locked in my car under a blanket in the backseat became "having a loaded shotgun in a public place". Was one of my guns left loaded? It would have been a first and only time. Can the inside of my locked car be a "public place"? But my car was in a public car park, so the court upheld the conviction.

The next two experiences originated with a "friend" who subsequently admitted to me that he had agreed to doing two things in return for not being prosecuted by the same local police force. He sold me a dinghy and gave me a pair of boots. Both were stolen property and I was convicted of stealing and receiving them respectively. Fines were imposed. I realized finally that I had no prospect of leading a civilized life in my birthplace, so I left the U.K. and came to the U.S. to try to establish a new, unsullied life.

Between 1980-4, I simply made contacts and conducted no business beyond consultancy. I generated little money for myself. I lived for the most part on the money I'd made in Europe during the '70's.

I was in the process of suing my local bank manager and Mssrs. Barclays' Bank for multiple contraventions of The Banking Act when I left England. One of the "enemies" I'd made in England was a solicitor who has given me very bad advice and then had the effrontery to charge me for it. He was a close friend of ray local bank manager. During my absence from England he sent me a bill for about $2000 - a final demand - and then obtained a judgement order and a personal bankruptcy order - all without ray knowledge until I returned some five months later. I am certain it was done to thwart ray lawsuit against Mssrs. Barclays' Bank. In England, once adjudged bankrupt, one may not sustain any lawsuits at all. I immediately left England again and rearranged all my assets so that I was not in violation of the U.K. bankruptcy laws. I also obtained a U.S. Visa for Business Purposes.

In 1983 or 1984., the Trustee of The Sovereign Charter Trust Group was recorded as a client of the Oklahoma Trust Company, Oklahoma City, Oklahoma, Rand Everest - C.E.0. It had become necessary to become more visible within the U.S. Little if any business was done with Oklahoma, save using it as a depository for some of the Sodalitas Trust Group's Private Placement Commercial Paper.

Outside of the jurisdiction of The Securities Exchange Commission, exclusively upon a private placement basis, The International Equity Trust began at this time to place its paper in commercial situations worldwide.

Professional third-party geologists determined by core -testing that the actual assayed content of nine sections of gold/silver-containing properties "conveyed, bartered, and assigned unseverably" to the Sovereign Charter Trust Group in 1980-1 consistently down to the assayed depth of 160 feet - was a minimum of one half ounce of gold per tonne (cubic yard) and up to 10 ounces of silver per tonne (cubic yard) over the entire nine square miles and beyond. Geological surveys confirmed that these properties and the acreage adjoining had once been a significantly large lake fed by numerous streams from the Rocky Mountains. Over the millennia, considerable quantities of gold and silver had been washed down to the lakebed. Under the Equal Rights Doctrine - the very cornerstone of the national heritage of the United States of

(Telling Time, Page 8 of 26)

America - with these nine square miles' worth of gold and silver deposits, The Sovereign Charter Trust Group was endowed with a very considerable portfolio of assets. The determination was made that the physical worth of those assets, congruent to and parallel to comparable entities in the public sector, would be used via the production of commercial private placement paper to generate liquidity of a sufficiency to establish the wholly independent credit facility needed throughout the secondary financial market to fill the "middlemen's window" in that market. Between 1982-3 and 1985-6 a considerable volume of face-value long-term maturity paper - private placement "Prime Capital Notes" was issued by the International Equity Trust for and on behalf of the seven trusts which owned the aforesaid gold and silver deposits.

An ultra-conservative system of checks and balances was instituted by the Directorate Members of The International Equity Trust under the chairmanship and C.E.O. authority of the undersigned. Further applying the Equal Rights Doctrine of the United States to our private placement policy, I and my colleagues determined that in order to properly reflect the value of the gold and silver we had acquired it was necessary to establish a minimum possible value and use it as our represented maximum benchmark. This way, there could never be any question of misrepresentation instituted against us. In order to further insulate ourselves from any such charge, we determined that our "paper" was to present itself only upon a private placement basis throughout its "life" in the secondary markets. Both safety features were built into our private placement issue of paper as irrevocable and unconditional prerequisites of its issue.

(Telling Time, Page 9 of 26)

The International Equity Trust, in its capacity as plenipotentiarial fiduciary trustee for The Sodalitas Trust Group (the administrative in-house members of The Sovereign Charter Trust Group) was and is the only authorized issuer of the group's Private Placement Prime Capital Notes. Such issue may not occur in any circumstance, save and except that the seven asset-owning trusts into whose custodial possession the group assets are placed all independently agree, each through their sole guardian/signator(s), that such Issuance is appropriate and acceptable. Such independently-arrived-at and mandatorily unanimous agreement to so issue must be confirmed in writing by each of the seven trusts' sole guardian/signator(s) of record and issued to The International Equity Trust in Official Memorandum format before such private placement paper may be issued. The circumstance of issuance was so made properly accountable.

The face value of the paper was likewise properly and strictly controlled. The Sovereign Charter Trust Group's asset base - initially the aforesaid gold and silver deposits and subsequently also real property comprising over 517,000 acres (surface and minerals) would and shall never, under the terras of the unseverable policy of The Sovereign Charter Trust Group's senior administrative decision-making body The Governing Chapter, be encumbered by debt beyond a one quarter volume. That means that for each certified $100 of the asset base no more than $25 of face-value private placement paper may be in existence. The reasoning behind this very conservative policy was and is that the ultimate credit facility which was being prepared for in the early '80's with this issuance of paper and the accumulation of assets. was never to find itself over-extended. An unquestioned and unquestionable safety feature ever present within each facet of the new facility was that thus none of its component parts would ever be in a position of insolvency.

For administrative purposes, three differently captioned documentary instruments were used. Each was a Private Placement Promissory Note. Each constituted a Zero Coupon instrument, ie. a promise to pay a final due-date figure in the future comprised of both the principal sum and the interest thereon accrued. All three instruments were I referred to as "Prime Capital Notes" but one was also called a "Bill of Exchange", one a "Notice of Acceptance", and one as far as I can remember an "Indenture". "Bills of Exchange were used when the recipient's business need was simply to increase their asset base now in exchange for equity in such business in perpetuity. "Notices of Acceptance" were used in situations where the recipient's business need was both to increase their asset base and to become affiliated with a or a member within The Sovereign Charter Trust Group by placing such business and/or its owners within the frameword of one of the group's trusts. "Indentures" were used exclusively on an in-house basis among the various members, associates, and affiliates of the Sodalitas Trust Group.

****

The formula determined upon by The Directorate Body of Trustees was as follows:

Asset Base 100 - Paper Liability Maximum Aggregate @25 = AAA
Asset Base 100 - Paper Liability Maximum Aggregate @33 = AA
Asset Base 100 - Paper Liability Maximum Aggregate @50 = A
Asset Base 100 - Paper Liability Maximum Aggregate @66 = D.

(Telling Time, Page 11 of 26)

> The private rating of our associate and affiliate business entities began at the beginning of 1986. Our own group's paper was mandated by Group Policy as determined by the Governing Chapter never to exceed an exposure factor of 25% of the group's in-house assets, ie. the assets owned by the Sodalitas Trust Group's seven Primary Members, and was accordingly qualified by our International Finance Counsel Ltd. as a Private Placement AAA rated Promissory Note.

In 1984, one portion of our gold reserves was exchanged in an Asset Barter-Exchange Agreement with the sole surviving owner of over 517,000 acres of real property (surface and mineral). The Group's acquisition of such property was made unseverable under the provisions of Article I - Section 10, Clause i of The U.S. Constitution. After such acquisition, the net worth of the Sodalitas Trust Group by and through said seven Primary Grade I Member trusts was estimated as follows: (Note: Some further eleven sections of the same gold-bearing property was being disputed at the time and therefore not counted, although a defendable title thereto was and is held.)

1. Nine (9) Sections (square miles) x 640 acres x 4840 square yards per acre x 53 yards (the 160-foot depth) = 1,477,555,200 cubic yards.
2. 1,477,555,200 cubic yards x 1/2 ounce = 738,777,600 ounces of gold in the 9 square miles.
3. 738,777,600 ounces - 6,000,000 assigned in exchange for the 517,000 acres = 732,777,600 ounces of gold.

(Telling Time, Page 12 of 26)

4. 732,777,600 @ - say - $250 per ounce = $183,194,400,000.
517,000 acres @ - say - $500 per acre = $ 258,500,000.
1,100,000 High Grade low sulphur coal
at - say - $10 per .... = $ 11,000,000,000.
(Oil, gas, and timber reserves not reckoned)

$194,452,900,000

By June 18, 1986, liabilities outstanding, inclusive of Notes c/s at $12-$13Billion, was approximately ...... $ 14,375,000,000

$180,077,900,000.

On this basis I made representations to parties before June 18, 1986 that The International Equity Trust controlled assets "in excess of $152 Billion". It did, and it still does.

This report concerns those assets' ability to properly reinstate the power and authority of Congress to govern without deference to those to whom it presently owes the National Debt and its life.

On June 18, 1986, at the invitation of Attorney Ms. Wendy Alison Nora (an ex-Recorder who had been forced to resign from her position in the State of Wisconsin according to her subsequent disclosure to me) for and on behalf of "not less than 40" of the Sovereign Charter Trust Group's trusts - including the seven who own the nine square miles of gold and silver reserves and the 517,000 acres - The International Equity Trust purchased The Lac Qui Parle

Bancorporation, Inc. Said entity was and is authorized under Section 225.4 et. seq. of 12 CFR to "act as a bank - buy and sell securities - underwrite insurance - municipal bonds and commercial paper," etc. This Holding Company owned and owns a financial entity named The State Bank of Boyd. Technically, The State Bank of Boyd (Minnesota) was declared closed as a bank by The Federal Reserve System in 1984. On March 31, 1986, The Minnesota State Supreme Court ruled that The State Bank of Boyd was not in liquidation nor in bankruptcy, but rather that its assets and liabilities only had been sold to the Bank of Madison - which later changed its name to The Lac Qui Parle Bank. (Note: NOT to be confused with The Lac Qui Parle Bancorporation, Inc.) Highly unconventionally but not unlawfully, as soon as we purchased The Lac Qui Parle Bancorporation, Inc. (ours), it was the recipient of a Sodalitas Trust Group's Promissory Note, due and payable (from memory) on August 1, 1999, in a figure of $2,000,000,000 with a minimum yield factor included therein (a Zero Coupon Note) which provided a then current value of approximately $1,672,000. A part of the acquisition contract whereby The International Equity Trust purchased the Holding Company and its wholly-owned subsidiary The State Bank of Boyd was that, under the aforesaid provisions of 12 CFR Section 225.4 et. seq. , the Holding Company at once and thereby extended a $1,200,000,000 line of credit to the subsidiary under the strict understanding that said subsidiary was under the direct supervision of its parent entity The Lac Qui Parle Bancorporation, Inc. by and through its owners' Trustee, The International Equity Trust. The first and foremost directive was that The State Bank of Boyd enjoyed a strictly limited authorization, ONLY AS THE SERVICE AGENT OF

ITS PARENT, to extend credit ONLY UP TO AN AGGREGATE FIGURE OF 87 1/2% (7/8ths) of the credit extended to it by its parent, ie. $1,050,000,000 of the $1,200,000,000.

The State Bank of Boyd WAS closed down as a bank. It was not a non-viable corporate entity. It was not "defunct". It did not have a banking charter despite the fact that Attorney Nora confirmed to The Minnesota State Commissioner of Commerce that she took the legal position that "it was in our possession constructively as a matter of law". I took the position that, since the purpose of The Sovereign Charter Trust Group's acquisition of The Lac Qui Parle Bancorporation was primarily to outwit and outmaneuver the private owners of the Federal Reserve System and to provide an alternative credit system for the peoples and governments of the world - OUTSIDE of their manipulative controlled climate, we would NOT presume to overtly contravene the Minnesota State Banking authorities but rather, use the State Bank of Boyd in its ONLY corporate status as the SERVICE AGENT for The Lac Qui Parle Bancorporation, Inc., which was itself authorized by legislation to "Act as a Bank".

The alternative credit facility which was presented to the Directorate Body of The International Equity Trust by our "think-tank" was, in ray estimation, nothing short of brilliant. After some deliberation, we decided to refer to our new, copyrighted system as "The Reconomy System".

The Reconomy System is comprised of a series of individual self-help, socio-economic programs. As far as my memory serves me, a total of 170 different programs were developed. The Reconomy Program restricts itself to two separate functions. One is the provision of interest-exempt credit facilities for private business users. The other is the provision of limited non-repayable grant facilities for what we chose to regard as "Critical Need" areas of society, eg. the homeless, drug and alcohol abuse victims, low-income students, and schools and universities which receive no Federal funds. These were and are national programs.

During the late summer of 1985, The International Equity Trust was approached by a few of the debtor nations. They were complaining bitterly that the owners of the banks, particularly in the U.S., to which their countries were indebted, through the International Monetary Fund were calling for revisions and amendments to those nations' constitutions, the better to accommodate the corporate associates of those bank-owners in those corporations' designs to establish operations within the nations concerned.

For those of you who are not aware, it is generally agreed within informed circles that the Presidency of James Earl Carter was orchestrated and primarily paid-for in campaign funds by various "inner circle" members of the Trilateral Commission. After the effective power and authority of The Federal Reserve System was shifted from a Washington, DC Board of Directors to the so-called "independent" shareholders of the twelve regional Federal Reserve Banks - the voting shareholders of which in controlling proportion are all "coincidentally" members of The Trilateral Commission - Jimmy Carter endorsed Paul Volker's "Fractional Reserve Lending" policy. It alone became the root cause of the inflation-recession and asset/gross sales-collateral cycles which - if you examine the statistics - are orchestrated in four yearly trends. Fractional reserve lending, an exclusive ability of only Federal Reserve member institutions, is wholly and solely responsible for the fact that the nation's money supply in circulation is in fact comprised of over 97% credit for which nowhere on earth has there ever existed the printed currency equivalent.

It was fractional reserve lending which was swiftly instituted immediately before high-ranking U.S. government officials persuaded the Nigerian Prime Minister to increase the price of Nigerian Crude Oil which he did, immediately prior to losing his life in a coup which was orchestrated by U.S. covert para-military personnel trained in Belize (then British Honduras). The Nigerian Prime Minister's life lasted "coincidentally" until the U.S officials had flown on to Kuwait and persuaded its oil producers to sell their oil at the inflated price of $30 per barrel.

Why were these astute U.S. emissaries prepared to purchase the Arabs' oil at this hugely inflated price? The answer is both awesome and terrifying. U.S. government officials were prepared and authorized to agree to purchase the oil from the Persian Gulf states and the United Arab Emirates upon two seemingly innocuous conditions. The first condition was that O.P.E.C. - which was to have so much anti-Arab propaganda spewed up against it later - was to become a reality and insist that all oil sales worldwide were in the future to be dollar-denominated. The second and more sinister condition foisted upon the unsuspecting Arabs was the the U.S. oil companies purchasing the crude would not remit the sales proceeds back to the Middle East. Rather, the Arabs were invited as a prerequisite of sale at the inflated price to purchase long-term, 20 and 30-year Certificates of Deposit locked into their depositor banks.

(Note: Readers are strongly invited to investigate, as did investigators within our Group, the "coincidental" relationships between the owner-controllers of the purchasing oil companies and the owner-controllers of the banks from which the Arabs "chose" to purchase their 20 and 30-year C.D.'s)

In simplest terms, what IS this "fractional reserve lending"? As evidenced by the fact that the money in circulation cannot be matched with currency in existence save in a negative ratio of about 66.6 to 1, it is fraud. Can YOU lend anyone $1 if 66.6c of it has never been coined? The answer is "yes" if you are a member of The Federal Reserve System and not a humble licensee.

In order to evaluate the extent of the fraud of fractional reserve lending as a matter of law, it is time to examine the corruption practiced against "We the People" of the U.S. as a result of its operation. Let us look at a tiny example of the O.P.E.C./U.S. Prime Bank scenario: An oil company issues a check for $lMillion to an Arab seller's stateside agent. The figures are crossed out of the oil company's account at, say, Chase Manhattan and inserted into a 30-year Certificate of Deposit in the Arab's name on the computer. The Arab has been paid. Who then owns Standard Oil? Who then owns Chase Manhattan?

(Telling Time. Page 18 of 26)

What happens next? The crude is refined. The costs and profits are passed on to the U.S. public. "That dirty Arab Cartel" is blamed. But at $2 per gallon it is the oil company's account which receives the revenue.

Meanwhile, what is happening to that Arab's account? It shows $lMillion. In fact the bank in our example, Chase Manhattan, has deposited that $lMillion - a piece of paper with $lMillion written on it - to The Federal Reserve Clearing System which "pursuant to Fractional Reserve Lending Policy" authorizes Chase Manhattan to loan at "x60" SIXTY MILLION to Mexico, Brazil, the U.S. Congress - whomever it pleases - promulgating the overwhelming falsehood that there is too much currency in the market and not enough borrowers.

Concurrently, the U.S. Congress purportedly owes approximately $65Million per week for the next 2000 years providing that as of now not one further dime is ever spent and there is a 2000-year moratorium on all interest charges to Congress. Its second is the United Arab Emirates being paid about 7% per $lMillion in oil revenue.

And those trusted pillars of society The Federal Reserve Members - for every $lMillion recorded due in about 25 years to the Arab - has the burden of paying that Arab about $70,000 per year and is only making from the White House a STAGGERING $6Million per year and REQUIRING at the same time $60Million per year as repayment because of Trilateral originated policy issued by Congress.

We owe this all to the kind fiscal servants of America and her People. In 1912 $400,000,000 was owed to

(Telling Time, Page 19 Of 26)

Congress and today $6,500,000,000,000 is owed by Congress!

A radical I am not. A one-time farmer and now-forever-branded-criminal - permanently humbled in awe of the extent of the above-evidenced megalomania, I am.

****

I terminated my business in England in about 1978. Soon afterwards, I was terminated from being an individual with whom anyone could conduct business in England, as a result of the warped and crippled mind of a banker and his stooge. I was invited to America by American strangers from Texas. They have their own horror stories to tell. They never will. Their lives are at stake. Suffice it to say that they, Mr. John Connelly (since bankrupted), Governor Clemence (now about to be ousted by the same force), the Shah of Iran (whose illness became authentic only after arriving in protective custody at a U.S. Airforce base), a German banker (also assassinated by persons trained in British Honduras) and an Austrian industrialist (now pronounced insane) - were all involved in the silver fiasco. Why? To properly authenticate Texan and U.S. currency - backed with 371 1/4 grains of silver per ounce as the unrepealed Money-of-Account laws decree. I learned these true horror stories after I had rejoiced in my now-proven-to-have-been-assinine belief in the U.S. Constitution.

On June 18, 1986, in my recorded capacity as sole Signator of Record for The International Equity Trust in its lawful capacity a sole Trustee of Record for the 3,999 other trusts - grandfathered under and as sub-trusts of an authentic trust established when only the law of force-of-arms existed on the North American continent, trusts which wholly supersede taxation ANYWHERE, I signed an agreement constituting "Obligations of Contract". I knew they could not be impaired. Article I, Section 10, Clause i of YOUR Constitution decrees it. The International Equity Trust so purchased that Bank Holding Company "authorized to extend credit nationally and internationally" NOT for itself but for 40 trusts - none of the other 39 of which had any idea that the others were likewise buying - thereby defeating The Federal Reserve's controlling policy to obtain its permission to so purchase. One of those 40 trusts was The Sovereign Trust of North America. As a matter of public record recorded under the provisions of Article IV, Section 1 which mandates such fact to be given full faith and credit, the beneficiaries of The Sovereign Trust of North America include the U.S. Congress, each State of the Union's governments, and the Body Politic - "We the People of the United States." Other trusts' beneficiaries are other non-Communist governments.

(Note: Please examine Public Records numbered 2401094 and 2406534 in Ramsey County, Minnesota - about 300 pages. IF you are told that no such record exists, please contact the undersigned who will inform you where preserved, certified copies thereof are located.)

A Declaratory Statement, dated between June 18, 1986 and July 3, 1986 was sent to Mr. Paul Volker, then Chairman of The Board of Directors of The Federal Reserve System. In it, issued and signed by me in my capacity aforesaid, I disclosed to him that our group had allocated a quantum of $500,000,000 per U.S. State for the implementation of our United States Reconomy System - not as a competitor per se but rather as a sophisticated alternative credit source whose purpose was entirely limited to its prospective outlets. The phone number of Attorney Nora was enclosed with a clear and unequivocal request to contact us in the event that our Program was in any way in contravention of the Constitution and laws made on pursuance thereto in that it relied for its authenticity upon the same laws which permitted The Federal Reserve to enforce its policies - because our Holding Company was in part owned by the U.S. This constituted it as an independent Agent of the United States under Title 18 USC, Section 6. We unconditionally covenanted to Congress an equity participation of a minimum of $750,000,000 per month, to each State an anticipated $40,000,000, a certain $35,000,000 per month, and to the Body Politic "We the People" upon a state by state basis about $150,000,000 per month. The balance of the income generated monthly save 5% operating expenses and a 10% fee belonged in perpetuity to the investors, whose assets backed our facility in a minimum ratio in our favor of "x3" in assets and "x8/7ths" in terms of our 12 CFR, Section 225.4-authorized U.S. Bank Holding Company's service agents' maximum possible liabilities.

On June 19, 1986, having so purchased The Lac Qui Parle Bancorporation out of the future control of The Federal Reserve System, in order to shore up its status as an authorized U.S. Bank Holding Company, another banking entity owned by The International Equity Trust was assigned under The Lac Qui Parle Bancorporation, Inc.'s ownership.

A certain amount of "cash" had been set aside to cover the "float". The assets had been duly assigned. The

(Telling Time, Page 22 of 26)

law was clear that we were authorized. Paul Volker had noz come back to us within the ten days under the law of laches which I had invoked in ray letter. Unconventional or not, we were in business.

Certain of our customers were approved for immediate credit lines. Certain of our operatives were appointed as Regional Directors over a five-state area each endowed with the responsibility to open ten offices per State. Each was provided with an interest pre-paid credit line of $50,000,000. Acting Service Agent, first tier retailer for The Lac Qui Parle Bancorporation's credit-extending enterprise, the subsidiary The State Bank of Boyd, in its own right, also enjoyed a new credit line of $1,200,000 but was obligated not to extend more than "x7/8" ($1,050,000) to insulate itself from insolvency.

With the knowledge that checks are not "securities" as so decreed in the Securities and Exchange Act - an act made in pursuance to the Constitution and hence, under Article VI supreme in its force and effect - Attorney Nora ordered cashiers' checks and personalized checks from the appropriate printers for The State Bank of Boyd. She and I both knew and later re-confirmed at my trial that there exists no legislation which prohibits anyone or any corporation from issuing its own cashiers' checks per se. Unconventional without a doubt but unlawful - no. We both also knew that the only restriction in terms of The State Bank of Boyd's activities as a non-bank was that it was physically without its Banking Charter but, as re-confirmed at trial, the only additional ability such a charter grants its corporate owner is the authority to take deposits. Neither The Reconomy System nor any of its 170 programs engages any of its variously tiered instrumentalities in any deposit-taking activity. Reconomy is an entirely restructured socio-economic equation.

On July 3, 1986, in the absence of jurisdiction, in the absence of a valid arrest warrant, in the absolute absence ae a matter of law of any crime, I was arrested in Georgia for "Interstate Transportation of falsely made securities". The "securities" in question, the ONLY securities made the subject-matter of the charges against me, were the State Bank of Lloyd checks - each one of which was appropriately stamped on the reverse side to be privately cleared outside of The Federal Reserve System.

Contrary to Congressional legislation, I was given no extradition hearing but was held in Georgia for my removal to Minnesota for arraignment.

My arraignment took place contrary to legislated time limit prescriptions. I was also denied counsel of my CHOICE.

My "trial" did not take place within the statutory maximum 90 days of my continued incarceration from July 3, 1986. I was denied permission to have witnesses. My subpoena demands were ignored. Exculpating evidence was precluded. When I attempted to fire my mandatory Public Defender to better conduct the remainder of my trial myself, I was denied.

No one would have - no one could have lost when it was OUR assets at risk, backing OUR credit, being extended

(Telling Time, Page 24 of 26)

in direct accordance with Congressionally-instituted legislation and in compliance with 12 CFR, Section 225.4 et. seq. When I pointed this out in court and demanded that it be produced, the court refused.

It was clear I was to be jailed. My "crimes" were my foolishness in believing the U.S. Constitution's guarantee of my innocence and my right to equal commercial ability and protection - and, clearly, my arrogance in believing that such Constitutional provisions would provide sufficient protection against the now-obviously-corrupted instruments of The U.S. Judicial System.

I am a British citizen. I am not a juridical resident of D.C. under 26 USC Section 7701 (A)(39) or otherwise. The United Nations Convention implements Congressional GUARANTEE unto my government that I shall enjoy the full weight of the protection of the laws of the United States. Instead, well beyond the purview of any legislative authority, I was subjected in an Admiralty jurisdictionary Article I Tribunal called "United States District Court" - no Constitutionally proper district court of the United States - to a trial for an invented "crime" that is legislatively impossible to commit. Mr. Harbour, the U.S. Probation Service Congressional delegate, made a "mistake" with ray sentencing guidelines which should have been worst-possible-case 14-18 months. He instead provided the court with a 52-64 month range. Given the judge's appointment by Trilateral President Carter and relationship to the Federal Reserve Director, the court quite "appropriately" sentenced me to TEN YEARS in prison - not to protect the People but to protect The Federal Reserve's fraud against the People!! I SO PUBLICLY ACCUSE!!

During the past four years of this sentence, evidence upon evidence of civil and criminal conspiracy has been presented to such lofty persons as Senator Joseph Biden, the Attorney General, The Inspector General, and more - to no avail, save continued and continuing abuse of process and overt falsehoods being made part of court records - proven to be false by conflicting U.S. government agency source records. Where - to whom - can one turn to regain - as a Human Right, a Civil Right, and both a Constitutional and N.A.T.O-instituted Right - my freedom?

NEVER was there intent to defraud - ONLY, EVER to wrest from the chains of debt a suffocating government and her people.

I SO SWEAR, TO THE ABSOLUTE BEST OF MY KNOWLEDGE BELIEF AND RECOLLECTION: THE FOREGOING IS THE UNADULTERATED TRUTH.

The foregoing, entitled "Telling Time" was duly served by certified mail postage prepaid upon:

1. Senator Thurmon
2. Senator Graham
3. Senator Helms
4. Congressman Crane
5. Congressman Hefner

at their respective addresses on Capitol Hill
this 30th Day of July, 1990.

Chapter 17

DOCUMENTATION: U.S. ARMY INTELLIGENCE CONNECTION WITH SATANIC CHURCH

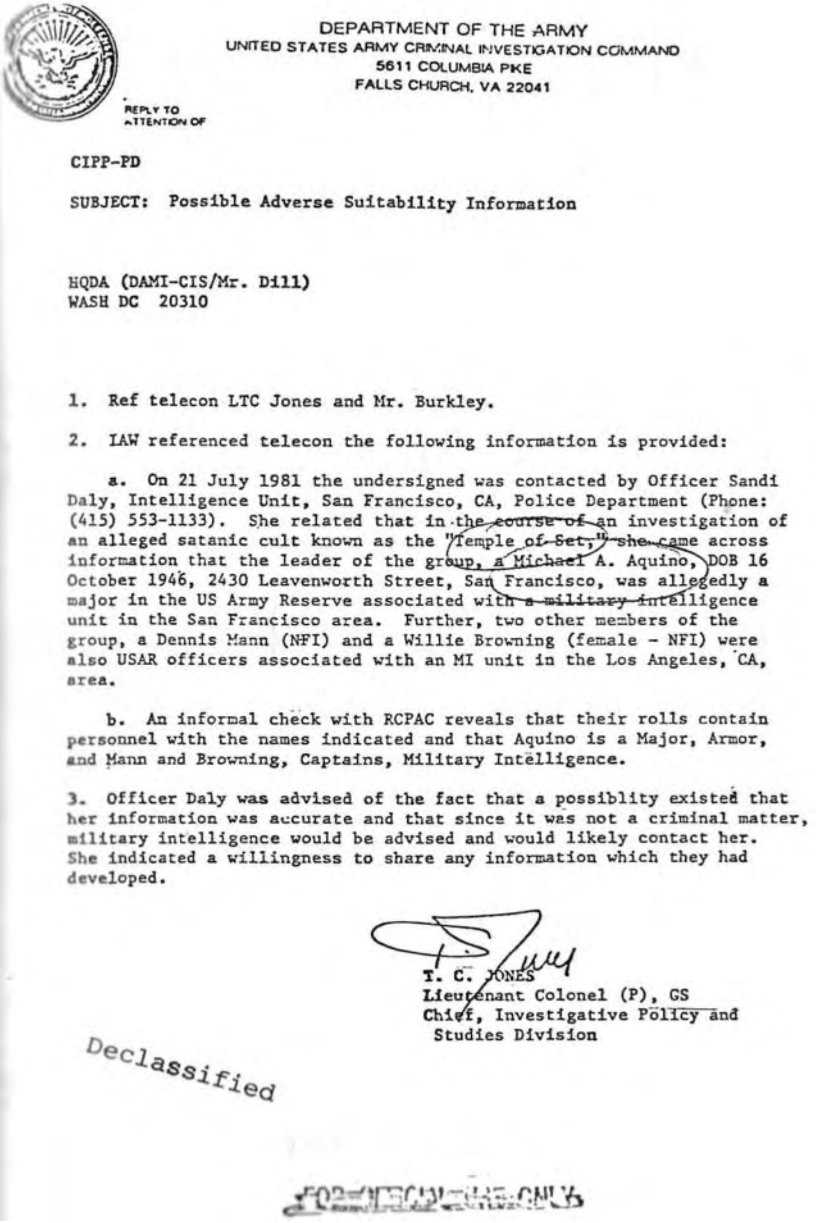

DEPARTMENT OF THE ARMY
UNITED STATES ARMY CRIMINAL INVESTIGATION COMMAND
5611 COLUMBIA PIKE
FALLS CHURCH, VA 22041

REPLY TO
ATTENTION OF

CIPP-PD

SUBJECT: Possible Adverse Suitability Information

HQDA (DAMI-CIS/Mr. Dill)
WASH DC 20310

1. Ref telecon LTC Jones and Mr. Burkley.

2. IAW referenced telecon the following information is provided:

a. On 21 July 1981 the undersigned was contacted by Officer Sandi Daly, Intelligence Unit, San Francisco, CA, Police Department (Phone: (415) 553-1133). She related that in the course of an investigation of an alleged satanic cult known as the "Temple of Set," she came across information that the leader of the group, a Michael A. Aquino, DOB 16 October 1946, 2430 Leavenworth Street, San Francisco, was allegedly a major in the US Army Reserve associated with a military intelligence unit in the San Francisco area. Further, two other members of the group, a Dennis Mann (NFI) and a Willie Browning (female - NFI) were also USAR officers associated with an MI unit in the Los Angeles, CA, area.

b. An informal check with RCPAC reveals that their rolls contain personnel with the names indicated and that Aquino is a Major, Armor, and Mann and Browning, Captains, Military Intelligence.

3. Officer Daly was advised of the fact that a possiblity existed that her information was accurate and that since it was not a criminal matter, military intelligence would be advised and would likely contact her. She indicated a willingness to share any information which they had developed.

T. C. JONES
Lieutenant Colonel (P), GS
Chief, Investigative Policy and
Studies Division

Declassified

FOR OFFICIAL USE ONLY

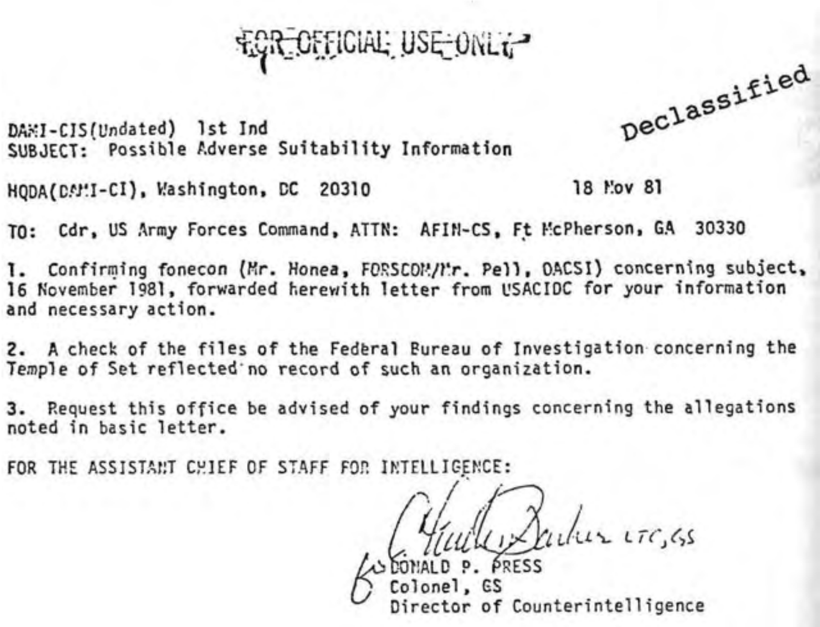

FOR OFFICIAL USE ONLY

Declassified

DAMI-CIS(Undated) 1st Ind
SUBJECT: Possible Adverse Suitability Information

HQDA(DAMI-CI), Washington, DC 20310 18 Nov 81

TO: Cdr, US Army Forces Command, ATTN: AFIN-CS, Ft McPherson, GA 30330

1. Confirming fonecon (Mr. Honea, FORSCOM/Mr. Pell, OACSI) concerning subject, 16 November 1981, forwarded herewith letter from USACIDC for your information and necessary action.

2. A check of the files of the Federal Bureau of Investigation concerning the Temple of Set reflected no record of such an organization.

3. Request this office be advised of your findings concerning the allegations noted in basic letter.

FOR THE ASSISTANT CHIEF OF STAFF FOR INTELLIGENCE:

LTC,GS

DONALD P. PRESS
Colonel, GS
Director of Counterintelligence

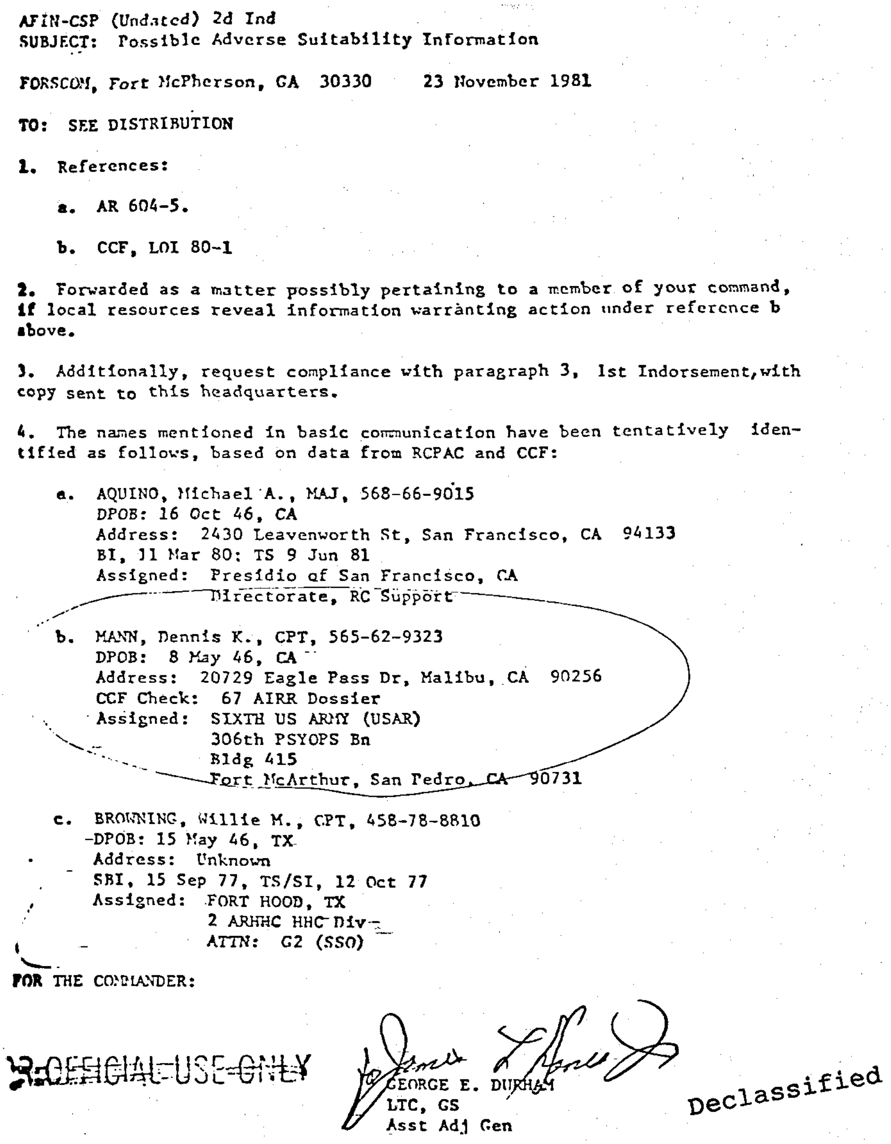

AFIN-CSP (Undated) 2d Ind
SUBJECT: Possible Adverse Suitability Information

FORSCOM, Fort McPherson, GA 30330 23 November 1981

TO: SEE DISTRIBUTION

1. References:

a. AR 604-5.

b. CCF, LOI 80-1

2. Forwarded as a matter possibly pertaining to a member of your command, if local resources reveal information warranting action under reference b above.

3. Additionally, request compliance with paragraph 3, 1st Indorsement, with copy sent to this headquarters.

4. The names mentioned in basic communication have been tentatively identified as follows, based on data from RCPAC and CCF:

a. AQUINO, Michael A., MAJ, 568-66-9015
DPOB: 16 Oct 46, CA
Address: 2430 Leavenworth St, San Francisco, CA 94133
BI, 31 Mar 80: TS 9 Jun 81
Assigned: Presidio of San Francisco, CA
Directorate, RC Support

b. MANN, Dennis K., CPT, 565-62-9323
DPOB: 8 May 46, CA
Address: 20729 Eagle Pass Dr, Malibu, CA 90256
CCF Check: 67 AIRR Dossier
Assigned: SIXTH US ARMY (USAR)
306th PSYOPS Bn
Bldg 415
Fort McArthur, San Pedro, CA 90731

c. BROWNING, Willie M., CPT, 458-78-8810
DPOB: 15 May 46, TX
Address: Unknown
SBI, 15 Sep 77, TS/SI, 12 Oct 77
Assigned: FORT HOOD, TX
2 ARHHC HHC Div
ATTN: G2 (SSO)

FOR THE COMMANDER:

~~OFFICIAL USE ONLY~~

GEORGE E. DURHAM
LTC, GS
Asst Adj Gen

Declassified

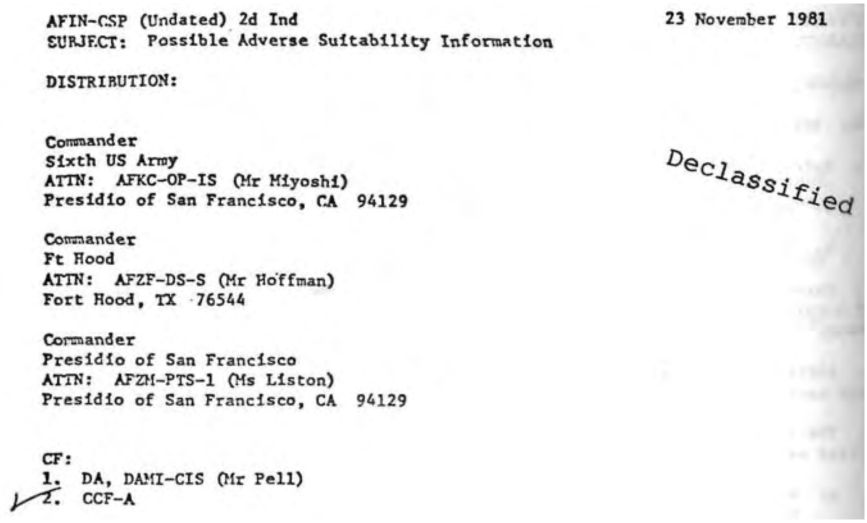

AFIN-CSP (Undated) 2d Ind 23 November 1981
SUBJECT: Possible Adverse Suitability Information

DISTRIBUTION:

Declassified

Commander
Sixth US Army
ATTN: AFKC-OP-IS (Mr Miyoshi)
Presidio of San Francisco, CA 94129

Commander
Ft Hood
ATTN: AFZF-DS-S (Mr Hoffman)
Fort Hood, TX 76544

Commander
Presidio of San Francisco
ATTN: AFZM-PTS-1 (Ms Liston)
Presidio of San Francisco, CA 94129

CF:
1. DA, DAMI-CIS (Mr Pell)
2. CCF-A

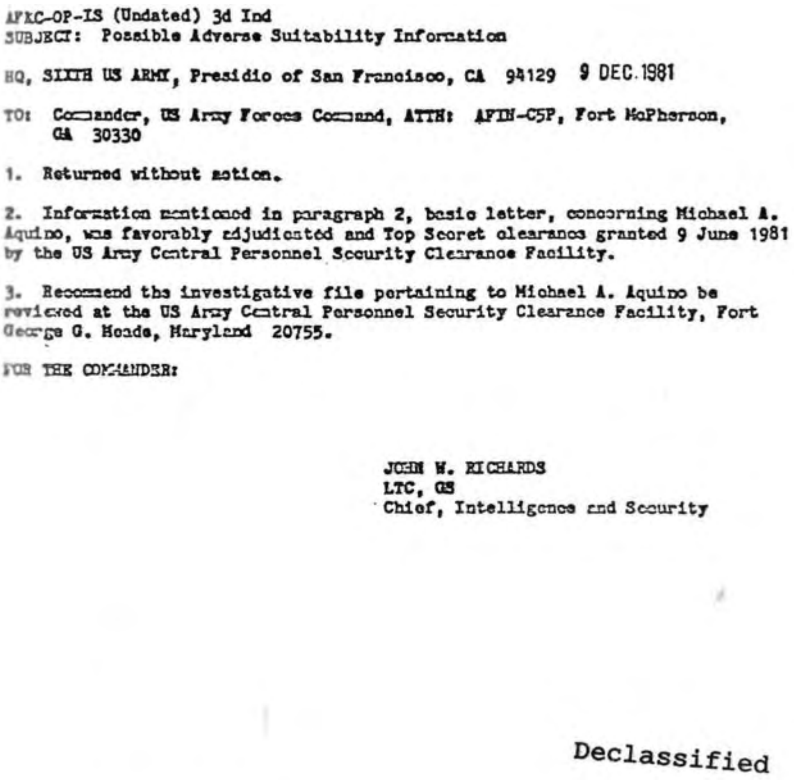

AFKC-OP-IS (Undated) 3d Ind
SUBJECT: Possible Adverse Suitability Information

HQ, SIXTH US ARMY, Presidio of San Francisco, CA 94129 9 DEC 1981

TO: Commander, US Army Forces Command, ATTN: AFIN-CSP, Fort McPherson,
GA 30330

1. Returned without action.

2. Information mentioned in paragraph 2, basic letter, concerning Michael A. Aquino, was favorably adjudicated and Top Secret clearance granted 9 June 1981 by the US Army Central Personnel Security Clearance Facility.

3. Recommend the investigative file pertaining to Michael A. Aquino be reviewed at the US Army Central Personnel Security Clearance Facility, Fort George G. Meade, Maryland 20755.

FOR THE COMMANDER:

JOHN W. RICHARDS
LTC, GS
Chief, Intelligence and Security

Declassified

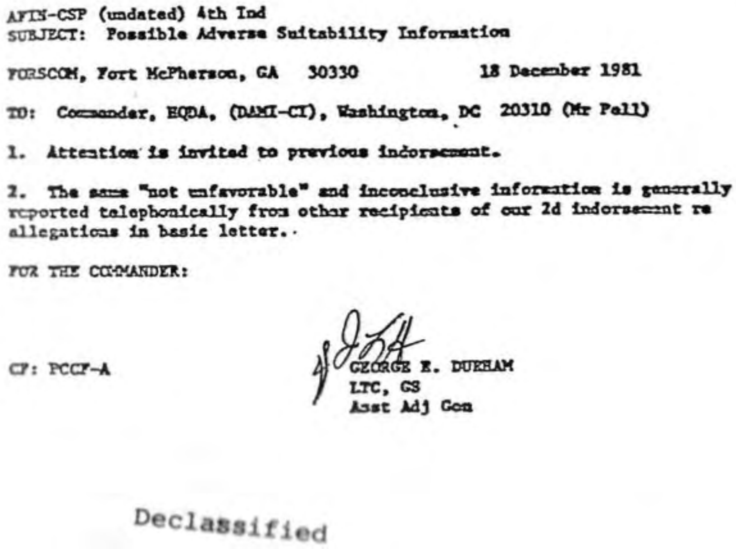

AFIN-CSP (undated) 4th Ind
SUBJECT: Possible Adverse Suitability Information

FORSCOM, Fort McPherson, GA 30330 18 December 1981

TO: Commander, HQDA, (DAMI-CI), Washington, DC 20310 (Mr Pell)

1. Attention is invited to previous indorsement.

2. The same "not unfavorable" and inconclusive information is generally reported telephonically from other recipients of our 2d indorsement re allegations in basic letter.

FOR THE COMMANDER:

CF: PCCF-A

GEORGE E. DURHAM
LTC, GS
Asst Adj Gen

Declassified

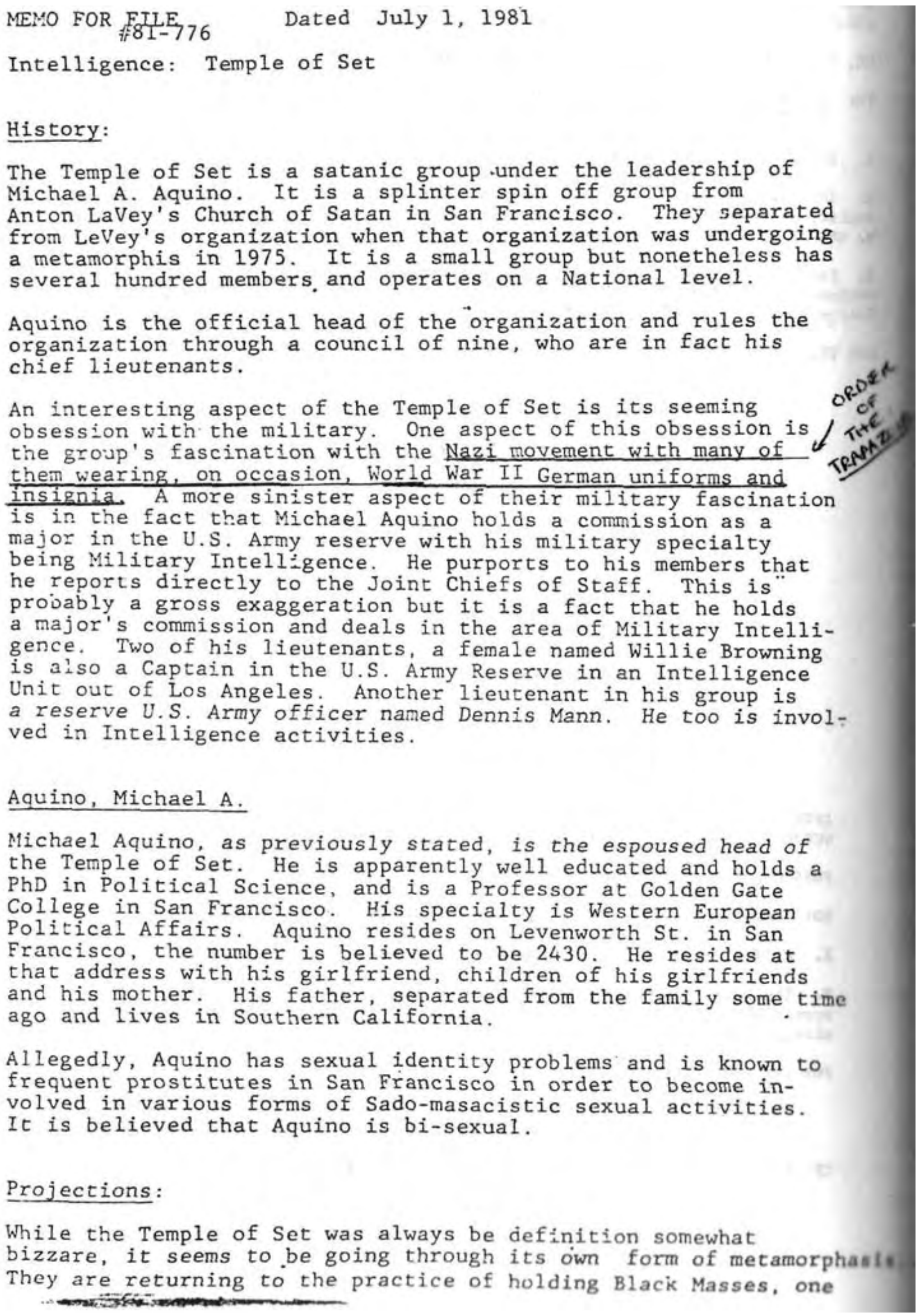

MEMO FOR FILE #81-776 Dated July 1, 1981

Intelligence: Temple of Set

History:

The Temple of Set is a satanic group under the leadership of Michael A. Aquino. It is a splinter spin off group from Anton LaVey's Church of Satan in San Francisco. They separated from LeVey's organization when that organization was undergoing a metamorphis in 1975. It is a small group but nonetheless has several hundred members and operates on a National level.

Aquino is the official head of the organization and rules the organization through a council of nine, who are in fact his chief lieutenants.

An interesting aspect of the Temple of Set is its seeming obsession with the military. One aspect of this obsession is the group's fascination with the Nazi movement with many of them wearing, on occasion, World War II German uniforms and insignia. A more sinister aspect of their military fascination is in the fact that Michael Aquino holds a commission as a major in the U.S. Army reserve with his military specialty being Military Intelligence. He purports to his members that he reports directly to the Joint Chiefs of Staff. This is probably a gross exaggeration but it is a fact that he holds a major's commission and deals in the area of Military Intelligence. Two of his lieutenants, a female named Willie Browning is also a Captain in the U.S. Army Reserve in an Intelligence Unit out of Los Angeles. Another lieutenant in his group is a reserve U.S. Army officer named Dennis Mann. He too is involved in Intelligence activities.

ORDER OF THE TRAPAZ

Aquino, Michael A.

Michael Aquino, as previously stated, is the espoused head of the Temple of Set. He is apparently well educated and holds a PhD in Political Science, and is a Professor at Golden Gate College in San Francisco. His specialty is Western European Political Affairs. Aquino resides on Levenworth St. in San Francisco, the number is believed to be 2430. He resides at that address with his girlfriend, children of his girlfriends and his mother. His father, separated from the family some time ago and lives in Southern California.

Allegedly, Aquino has sexual identity problems and is known to frequent prostitutes in San Francisco in order to become involved in various forms of Sado-masacistic sexual activities. It is believed that Aquino is bi-sexual.

Projections:

While the Temple of Set was always be definition somewhat bizzare, it seems to be going through its own form of metamorphasi
They are returning to the practice of holding Black Masses, one

Temple of Set   Page 2

of which is scheduled for July 1981 in San Francisco, (at an unknown hotel on Fisherman's Wharf). It is also rumored that the group is becoming potentially more and more violent as it recruits the less intellectual and more undesireable level of people such as some former members of Hell's Angels and similar motorcycle gangs. It is also rumored that they are starting to engage in animal sacrifices. Additionally, Aquino is speaking within the organization, that the time has come for him to make his political moves. This is probably in relation to his position in the Army reserve.

End of memo

Devil Worshiper Holds Sensitive Army Post and Top Brass Say 'No Problem'

A senior U.S. military intelligence officer with a secret security clearance admits he's also the founder and high priest of a satanic church — and amazingly, the Army says "no problem"!

Lieut. Col. Michael Aquino, a 41-year-old former Green Beret, confirmed to The ENQUIRER that he's been involved in devil worship for 22 years.

By CHRIS FULLER

He said he formed his own satanic church, the Temple of Set, in 1975 after belonging to another sect, the Church of Satan, for the previous 10 years.

"My religion has been no secret in the Army," said Col. Aquino, who served as a psychological warfare specialist in Vietnam and is now a reserve officer working full-time on extended duty at the Army's reserve personnel center in St. Louis. He admitted satanic terminology is used in his church's rituals, adding: "We are quite proud of that."

But William Gill, executive director of the Catholic War Veterans, fumed:

"This is outrageous and a national disgrace!

"*It's unbelievable that an* admitted devil worshiper should be allowed to hold a senior and sensitive post in the U.S. Army. This abominable situation insults the memory of those who have fought and often died to uphold the traditional values *of our great country.*

"Citizens have a right to expect *our military to up*hold the traditional values of God and country — not the evil ramblings of some satanic sect."

Col. Aquino's satanic church is advertised in the yellow pages in San Francisco, where he was stationed from 1981 to 1986. He says most members are in the U.S. and Canada, although "we *have a sprinkling of* members in places like Western Europe and the Pacific."

The Constitution's guarantee of freedom of religion protects Col. Aquino from action by the Army, said Lieut. Col. Greg Rixon, an Army public affairs officer in Washington, D.C.

"*As long as an individu*al's religious practice remains within the limit of the *law*, there *is* no problem," Col. Rixon said.

But *Catholic* War Veterans director Gill blasted that stand. "For the Army to say 'no problem' is mind-boggling," he said. "This *disturbing situation is* a problem for everyone who is concerned about national security and morality.

"The U.S. Army is no place for worshipers of the Prince of Darkness!"

EX-GREEN BERET Lieut. Col. Michael Aquino is *a high priest of a satanic church.*

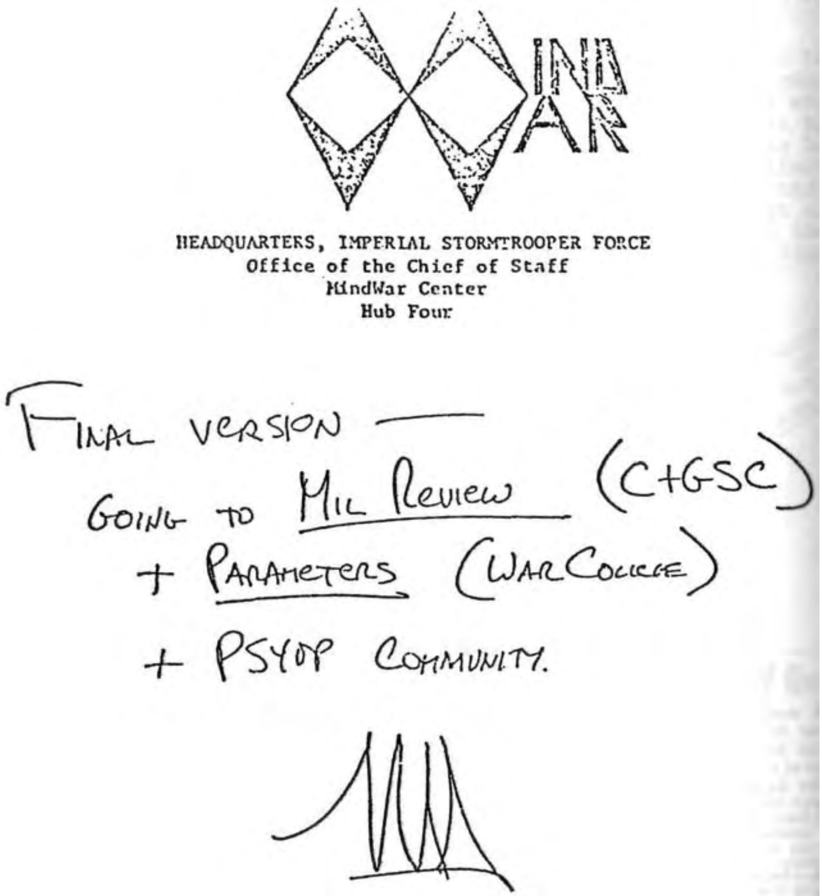

HEADQUARTERS, IMPERIAL STORMTROOPER FORCE
Office of the Chief of Staff
MindWar Center
Hub Four

FINAL VERSION —
GOING TO MIL REVIEW (C+GSC)
+ PARAMETERS (WAR COLLEGE)
+ PSYOP COMMUNITY.

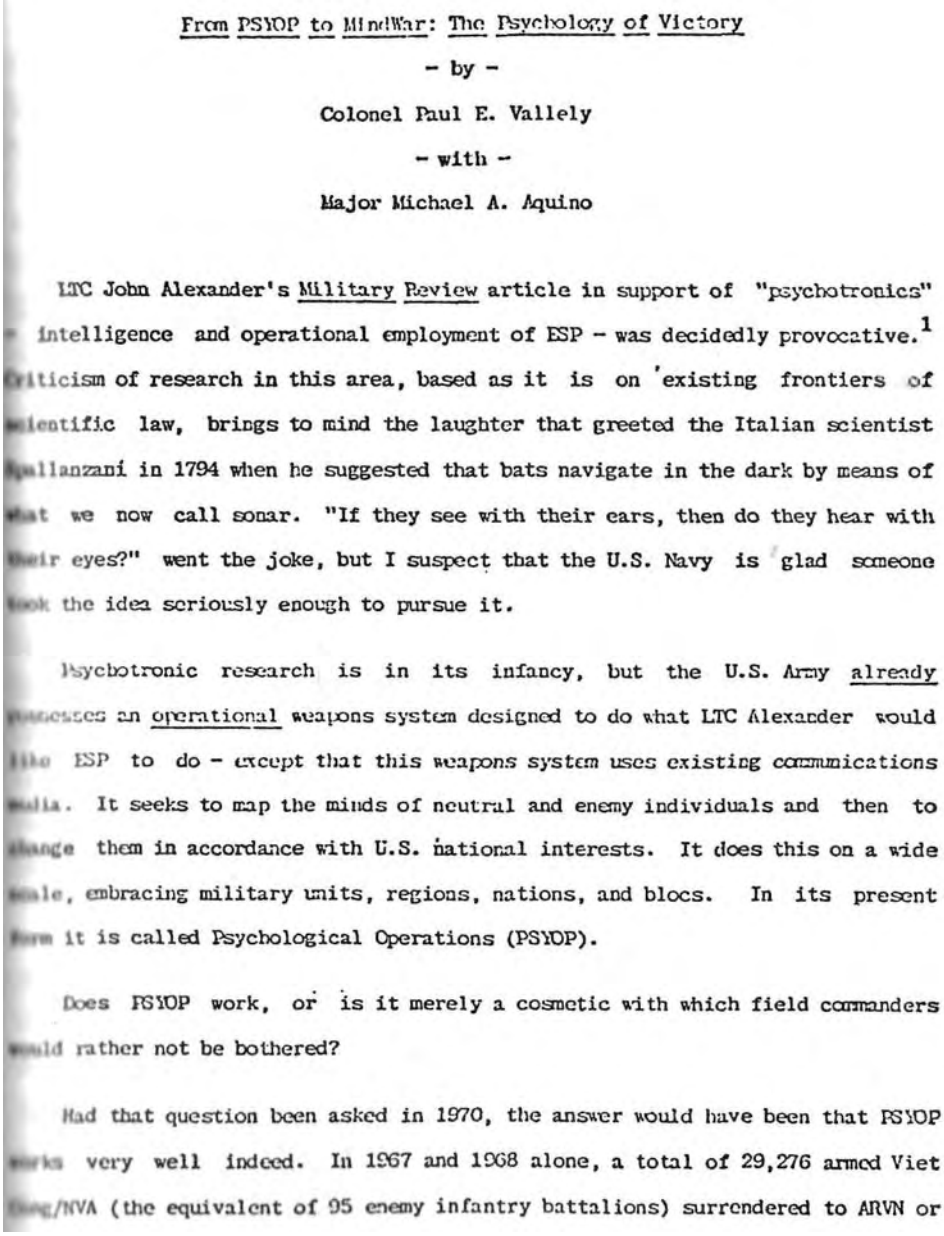

From PSYOP to MindWar: The Psychology of Victory

- by -

Colonel Paul E. Vallely

- with -

Major Michael A. Aquino

LTC John Alexander's Military Review article in support of "psychotronics" - intelligence and operational employment of ESP - was decidedly provocative.[1] Criticism of research in this area, based as it is on existing frontiers of scientific law, brings to mind the laughter that greeted the Italian scientist Spallanzani in 1794 when he suggested that bats navigate in the dark by means of what we now call sonar. "If they see with their ears, then do they hear with their eyes?" went the joke, but I suspect that the U.S. Navy is glad someone took the idea seriously enough to pursue it.

Psychotronic research is in its infancy, but the U.S. Army already possesses an operational weapons system designed to do what LTC Alexander would like ESP to do - except that this weapons system uses existing communications media. It seeks to map the minds of neutral and enemy individuals and then to change them in accordance with U.S. national interests. It does this on a wide scale, embracing military units, regions, nations, and blocs. In its present form it is called Psychological Operations (PSYOP).

Does PSYOP work, or is it merely a cosmetic with which field commanders would rather not be bothered?

Had that question been asked in 1970, the answer would have been that PSYOP works very well indeed. In 1967 and 1968 alone, a total of 29,276 armed Viet Cong/NVA (the equivalent of 95 enemy infantry battalions) surrendered to ARVN or

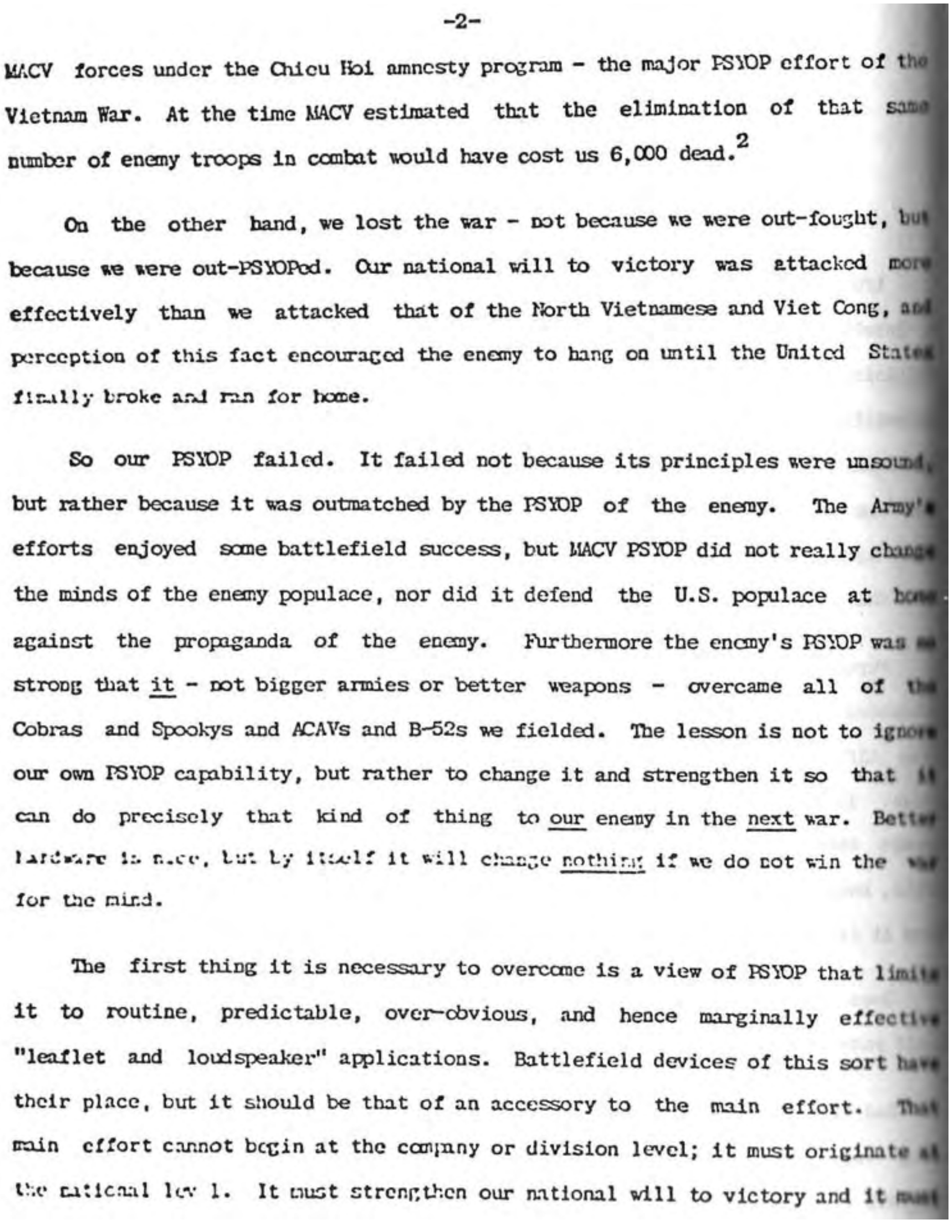

-2-

MACV forces under the Chieu Hoi amnesty program - the major PSYOP effort of the Vietnam War. At the time MACV estimated that the elimination of that same number of enemy troops in combat would have cost us 6,000 dead.[2]

On the other hand, we lost the war - not because we were out-fought, but because we were out-PSYOPed. Our national will to victory was attacked more effectively than we attacked that of the North Vietnamese and Viet Cong, and perception of this fact encouraged the enemy to hang on until the United States finally broke and ran for home.

So our PSYOP failed. It failed not because its principles were unsound, but rather because it was outmatched by the PSYOP of the enemy. The Army's efforts enjoyed some battlefield success, but MACV PSYOP did not really change the minds of the enemy populace, nor did it defend the U.S. populace at home against the propaganda of the enemy. Furthermore the enemy's PSYOP was so strong that it - not bigger armies or better weapons - overcame all of the Cobras and Spookys and ACAVs and B-52s we fielded. The lesson is not to ignore our own PSYOP capability, but rather to change it and strengthen it so that it can do precisely that kind of thing to our enemy in the next war. Better hardware is nice, but by itself it will change nothing if we do not win the war for the mind.

The first thing it is necessary to overcome is a view of PSYOP that limits it to routine, predictable, over-obvious, and hence marginally effective "leaflet and loudspeaker" applications. Battlefield devices of this sort have their place, but it should be that of an accessory to the main effort. That main effort cannot begin at the company or division level; it must originate at the national level. It must strengthen our national will to victory and it must

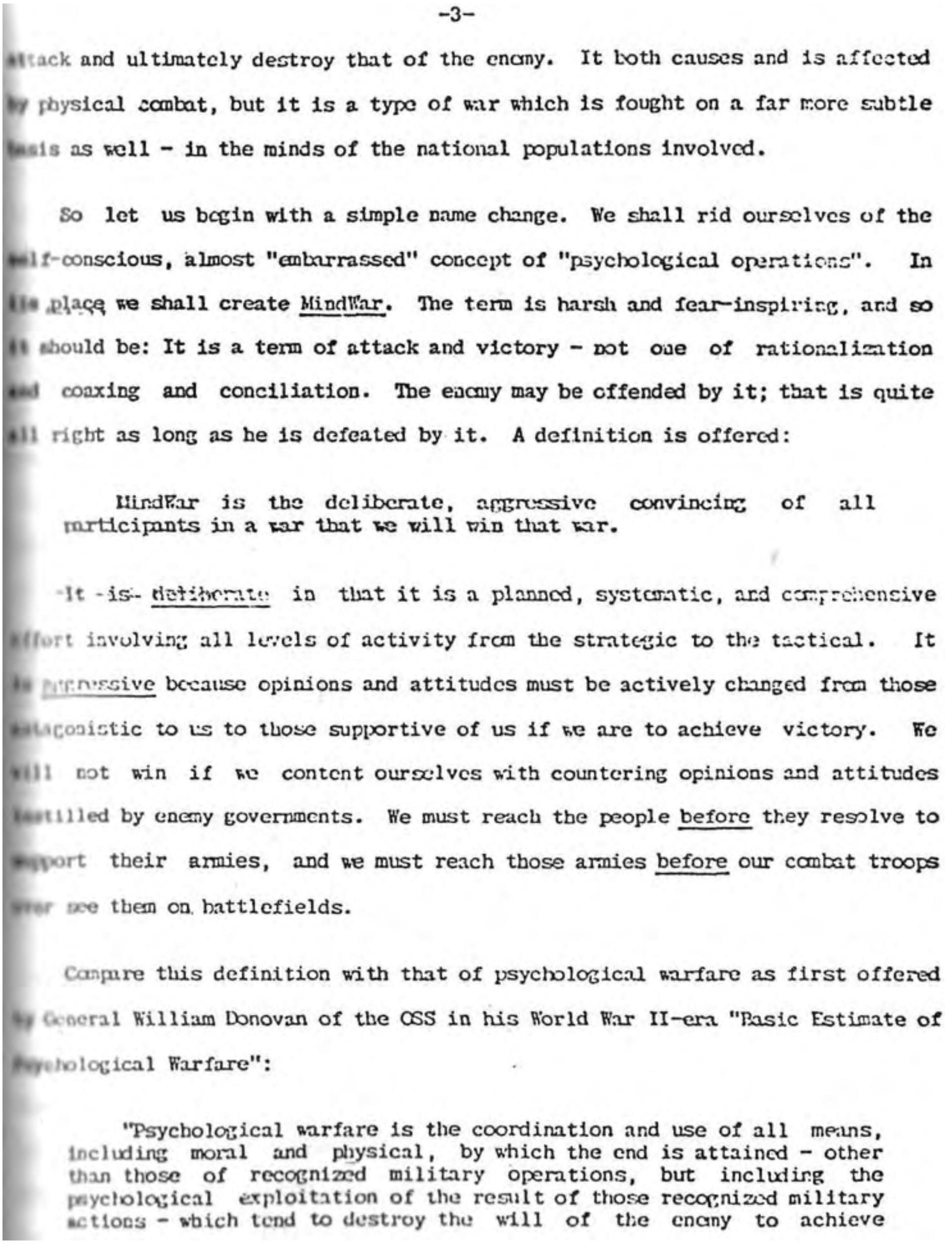

-3-

attack and ultimately destroy that of the enemy. It both causes and is affected by physical combat, but it is a type of war which is fought on a far more subtle basis as well - in the minds of the national populations involved.

So let us begin with a simple name change. We shall rid ourselves of the self-conscious, almost "embarrassed" concept of "psychological operations". In its place we shall create MindWar. The term is harsh and fear-inspiring, and so it should be: It is a term of attack and victory - not one of rationalization and coaxing and conciliation. The enemy may be offended by it; that is quite all right as long as he is defeated by it. A definition is offered:

> MindWar is the deliberate, aggressive convincing of all participants in a war that we will win that war.

It is deliberate in that it is a planned, systematic, and comprehensive effort involving all levels of activity from the strategic to the tactical. It is aggressive because opinions and attitudes must be actively changed from those antagonistic to us to those supportive of us if we are to achieve victory. We will not win if we content ourselves with countering opinions and attitudes instilled by enemy governments. We must reach the people before they resolve to support their armies, and we must reach those armies before our combat troops ever see them on battlefields.

Compare this definition with that of psychological warfare as first offered by General William Donovan of the OSS in his World War II-era "Basic Estimate of Psychological Warfare":

> "Psychological warfare is the coordination and use of all means, including moral and physical, by which the end is attained - other than those of recognized military operations, but including the psychological exploitation of the result of those recognized military actions - which tend to destroy the will of the enemy to achieve

> victory and to damage his political or economic capacity to do so; which tend to deprive the enemy of the support, assistance, or sympathy of his allies or associates or of neutrals, or to prevent his acquisition of such support, assistance, or sympathy; or which tend to create, maintain, or increase the will to victory of our own people and allies and to acquire, maintain, or to increase the support, assistance, and sympathy of neutrals."[3]

If the euphemism "psychological operations" resulted from, as one general officer put it in a 1947 letter, "a great need for a synonym which could be used in peacetime that would not shock the sensibilities of a citizen of democracy", then it may have succeeded domestically.[4] On the other hand it does not seem to have reassured the sensibilities of the Soviets. who in 1980 describe U.S. Army PSYOP as including:

> "... unpardonable methods of ideological sabotage including not just flagrant lies, slander, and disinformation, but also political blackmail, provocation, and terror."[5]

The reluctance with which the Army has accepted even an "antiseptic" PSYOP component is well-documented in Colonel Alfred Paddock's brilliant treatise on the history of the PSYOP establishment. Again and again efforts to forge this weapon into its most effective configuration were frustrated by leaders who could not or would not see that wars are fought and won or lost not on battlefields but in the minds of men. As Colonel Paddock so aptly concludes:

> "In a real sense, the manner in which psychological and unconventional warfare evolved from 1941 until their union as a formal Army capability in 1952 suggests a theme that runs throughout the history of special warfare: the story of a hesitant and reluctant Army attempting to cope with concepts and organizations of an unconventional nature."[6]

According to present doctrine, PSYOP is considered an accessory to the main effort of winning battles and wars; the term generally used is "force multiplier". It is certainly not considered a precondition to command decisions. Thus PSYOP cannot predetermine the political or psychological

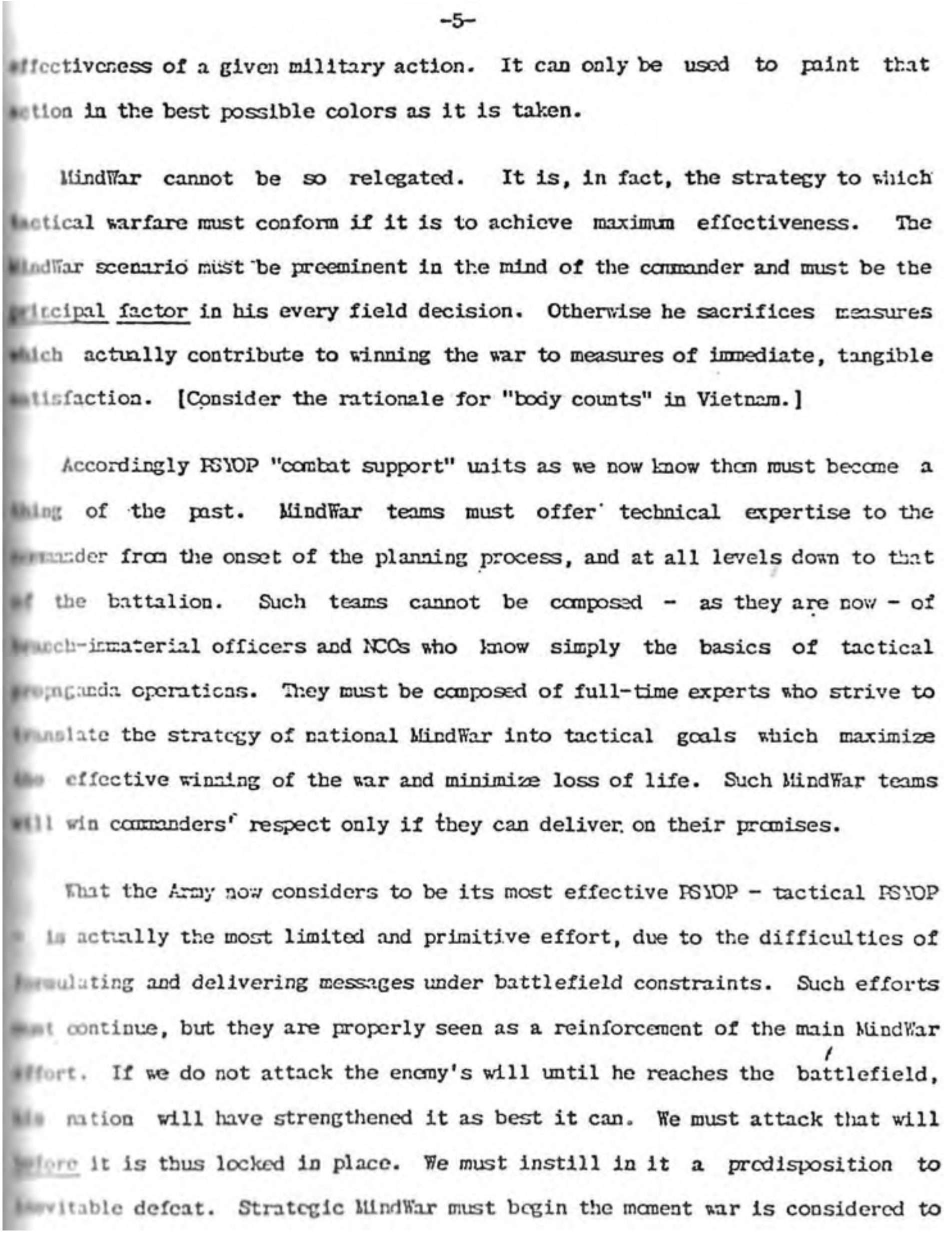

-5-

effectiveness of a given military action. It can only be used to paint that action in the best possible colors as it is taken.

MindWar cannot be so relegated. It is, in fact, the strategy to which tactical warfare must conform if it is to achieve maximum effectiveness. The MindWar scenario must be preeminent in the mind of the commander and must be the principal factor in his every field decision. Otherwise he sacrifices measures which actually contribute to winning the war to measures of immediate, tangible satisfaction. [Consider the rationale for "body counts" in Vietnam.]

Accordingly PSYOP "combat support" units as we now know them must become a thing of the past. MindWar teams must offer technical expertise to the commander from the onset of the planning process, and at all levels down to that of the battalion. Such teams cannot be composed - as they are now - of branch-immaterial officers and NCOs who know simply the basics of tactical propaganda operations. They must be composed of full-time experts who strive to translate the strategy of national MindWar into tactical goals which maximize the effective winning of the war and minimize loss of life. Such MindWar teams will win commanders' respect only if they can deliver on their promises.

What the Army now considers to be its most effective PSYOP - tactical PSYOP - is actually the most limited and primitive effort, due to the difficulties of formulating and delivering messages under battlefield constraints. Such efforts must continue, but they are properly seen as a reinforcement of the main MindWar effort. If we do not attack the enemy's will until he reaches the battlefield, his nation will have strengthened it as best it can. We must attack that will before it is thus locked in place. We must instill in it a predisposition to inevitable defeat. Strategic MindWar must begin the moment war is considered to be inevitable. It must seek out the attention of the enemy nation through every available medium, and it must strike at that nation's potential soldiers before they put on their uniforms. It is in their homes and their communities that they are most vulnerable to MindWar. Was the United States defeated in the jungles of Vietnam, or was it defeated in the streets of American cities?

To this end MindWar must be strategic in emphasis, with tactical applications playing a reinforcing, supplementary role. In its strategic context, MindWar must reach out to friends, enemies, and neutrals alike across the globe - neither through the primitive "battlefield" leaflets and loudspeakers of PSYOP nor through the weak, imprecise, and narrow effort of psychotronics - but through the media possessed by the United States which have the capabilities to reach virtually all people on the face of the Earth. These media are, of course, the electronic media - television and radio. State of the art developments in satellite communication, video recording techniques, and laser and optical transmission of broadcasts make possible a penetration of the minds of the world such as would have been inconceivable just a few years ago. Like the sword Excalibur, we have but to reach out and seize this tool; and it can transform the world for us if we have but the courage and the integrity to guide civilization with it. If we do not accept Excalibur, then we relinquish our ability to inspire foreign cultures with our morality. If they then devise moralities unsatisfactory to us, we have no choice but to fight them on a more brutish level.

MindWar must target all participants if it is to be effective. It must not only weaken the enemy; it must strengthen the United States. It strengthens the United States by denying enemy propaganda access to our people, and by explaining and emphasizing to our people the rationale for our national interest

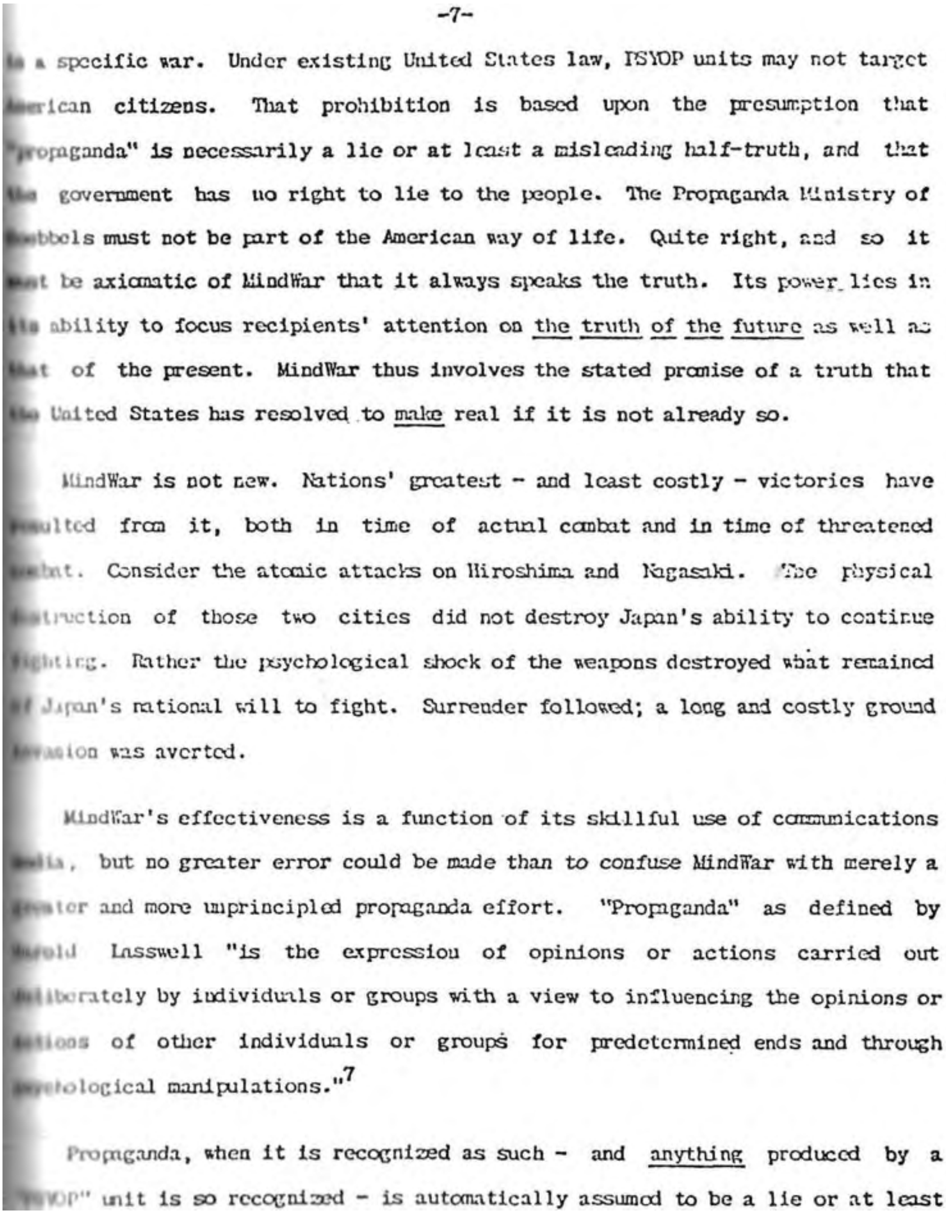

in a specific war. Under existing United States law, PSYOP units may not target American citizens. That prohibition is based upon the presumption that "propaganda" is necessarily a lie or at least a misleading half-truth, and that the government has no right to lie to the people. The Propaganda Ministry of Goebbels must not be part of the American way of life. Quite right, and so it must be axiomatic of MindWar that it always speaks the truth. Its power lies in its ability to focus recipients' attention on the truth of the future as well as that of the present. MindWar thus involves the stated promise of a truth that the United States has resolved to make real if it is not already so.

MindWar is not new. Nations' greatest - and least costly - victories have resulted from it, both in time of actual combat and in time of threatened combat. Consider the atomic attacks on Hiroshima and Nagasaki. The physical destruction of those two cities did not destroy Japan's ability to continue fighting. Rather the psychological shock of the weapons destroyed what remained of Japan's national will to fight. Surrender followed; a long and costly ground invasion was averted.

MindWar's effectiveness is a function of its skillful use of communications media, but no greater error could be made than to confuse MindWar with merely a greater and more unprincipled propaganda effort. "Propaganda" as defined by Harold Lasswell "is the expression of opinions or actions carried out deliberately by individuals or groups with a view to influencing the opinions or actions of other individuals or groups for predetermined ends and through psychological manipulations."[7]

Propaganda, when it is recognized as such - and anything produced by a "PSYOP" unit is so recognized - is automatically assumed to be a lie or at least a distortion of truth. Therefore it works only to the extent that a militarily-pressed enemy is willing to do what we want him to do. It does not work because we have convinced him to see the truth as we see it.

In his "Conclusions" chapter to the Army's exhaustive 1976 case-study of PSYOP techniques, L. John Martin affirms this coldly and bluntly:

> "What all this boils down to is that if our persuasive communication ends up with a net positive effect, we must attribute it to luck, not science ... The effectiveness of propaganda may be even less predictable and controllable than the effectiveness of mere persuasive communication."[8]

Correspondingly propagandists are assumed to be liars and hypocrites, willing to paint anything in attractive colors to dupe the gullible. As Jacques Ellul puts it:

> "The propagandist is not, and cannot be, a 'believer'. Moreover he cannot believe in the ideology he must use in his propaganda. He is merely a man at the service of a party, a state, or some other organization, and his task is to insure the efficiency of that organization ... If the propagandist has any political conviction, he must put it aside in order to be able to use some popular mass ideology. He cannot even share that ideology, for he must use it as an object and manipulate it without the respect that he would have for it if he believed in it. He quickly acquires contempt for these popular images and beliefs ..."[9]

Unlike PSYOP, MindWar has nothing to do with deception or even with "selected" - and therefore misleading - truth. Rather it states a whole truth that, if it does not now exist, will be forced into existence by the will of the United States. The examples of Kennedy's ultimatum to Khrushchev during the Cuban Missile Crisis and Hitler's stance at Munich may be cited. A MindWar message does not have to fit conditions of abstract credibility as do PSYOP themes; its source makes it credible. As Livy once said:

> "The terror of the Roman name will be such that the world shall

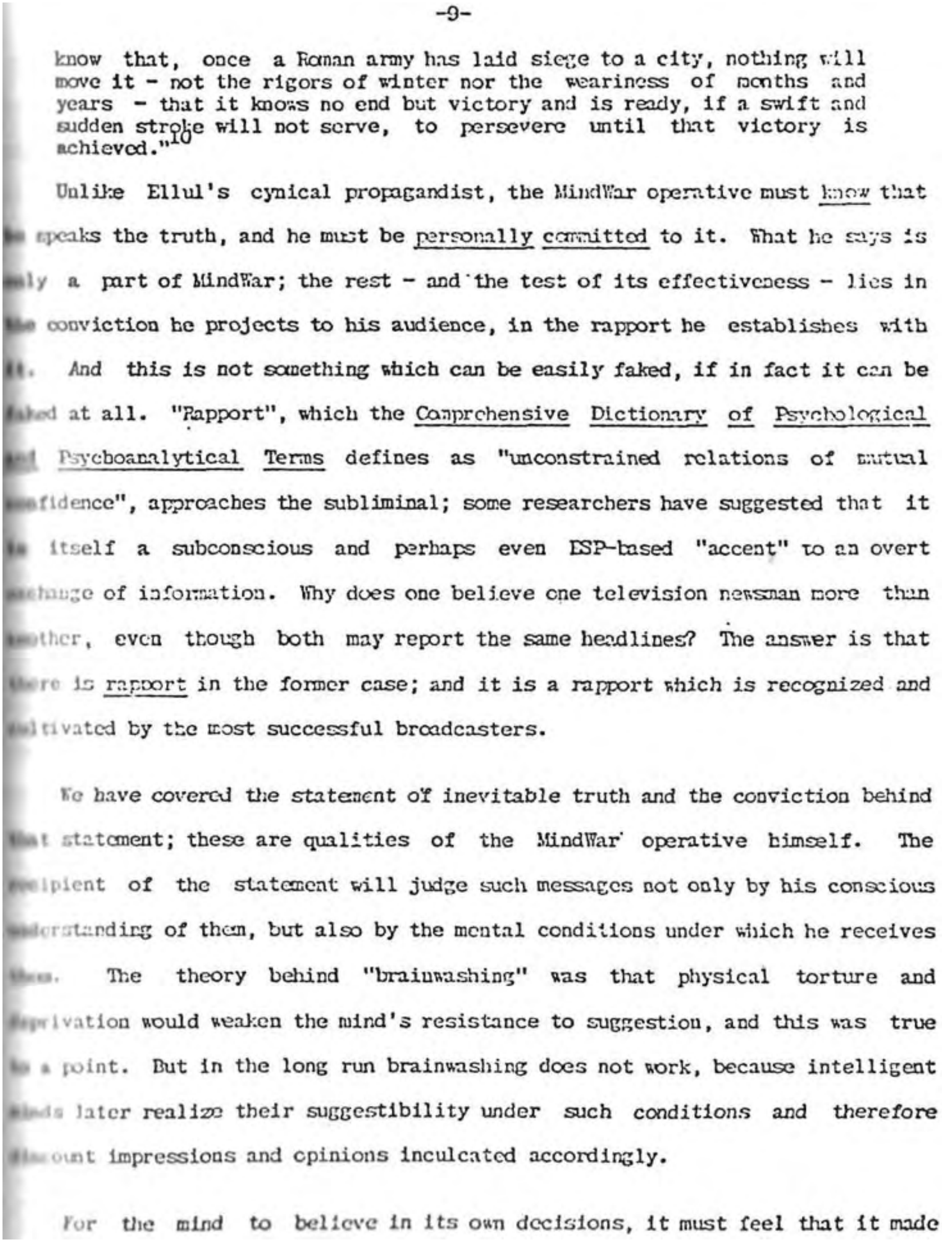

-9-

know that, once a Roman army has laid siege to a city, nothing will move it - not the rigors of winter nor the weariness of months and years - that it knows no end but victory and is ready, if a swift and sudden stroke will not serve, to persevere until that victory is achieved."[10]

Unlike Ellul's cynical propagandist, the MindWar operative must *know* that he speaks the truth, and he must be *personally committed* to it. What he says is only a part of MindWar; the rest - and the test of its effectiveness - lies in the conviction he projects to his audience, in the rapport he establishes with it. And this is not something which can be easily faked, if in fact it can be faked at all. "Rapport", which the *Comprehensive Dictionary of Psychological and Psychoanalytical Terms* defines as "unconstrained relations of mutual confidence", approaches the subliminal; some researchers have suggested that it is itself a subconscious and perhaps even ESP-based "accent" to an overt exchange of information. Why does one believe one television newsman more than another, even though both may report the same headlines? The answer is that there is *rapport* in the former case; and it is a rapport which is recognized and cultivated by the most successful broadcasters.

We have covered the statement of inevitable truth and the conviction behind that statement; these are qualities of the MindWar operative himself. The recipient of the statement will judge such messages not only by his conscious understanding of them, but also by the mental conditions under which he receives them. The theory behind "brainwashing" was that physical torture and deprivation would weaken the mind's resistance to suggestion, and this was true to a point. But in the long run brainwashing does not work, because intelligent minds later realize their suggestibility under such conditions and therefore discount impressions and opinions inculcated accordingly.

For the mind to believe in its own decisions, it must feel that it made

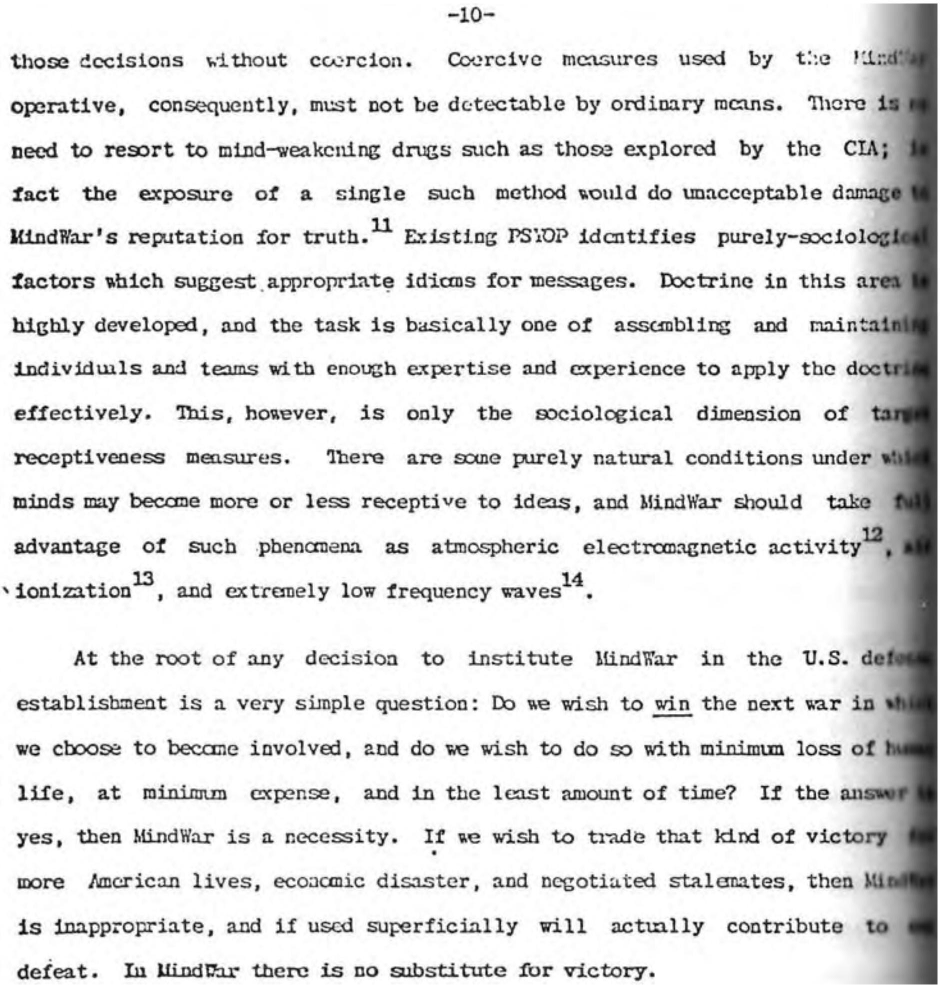

those decisions without coercion. Coercive measures used by the MindWar operative, consequently, must not be detectable by ordinary means. There is no need to resort to mind-weakening drugs such as those explored by the CIA; in fact the exposure of a single such method would do unacceptable damage to MindWar's reputation for truth.[11] Existing PSYOP identifies purely-sociological factors which suggest appropriate idioms for messages. Doctrine in this area is highly developed, and the task is basically one of assembling and maintaining individuals and teams with enough expertise and experience to apply the doctrine effectively. This, however, is only the sociological dimension of target receptiveness measures. There are some purely natural conditions under which minds may become more or less receptive to ideas, and MindWar should take full advantage of such phenomena as atmospheric electromagnetic activity[12], air ionization[13], and extremely low frequency waves[14].

At the root of any decision to institute MindWar in the U.S. defense establishment is a very simple question: Do we wish to win the next war in which we choose to become involved, and do we wish to do so with minimum loss of human life, at minimum expense, and in the least amount of time? If the answer is yes, then MindWar is a necessity. If we wish to trade that kind of victory for more American lives, economic disaster, and negotiated stalemates, then MindWar is inappropriate, and if used superficially will actually contribute to our defeat. In MindWar there is no substitute for victory.

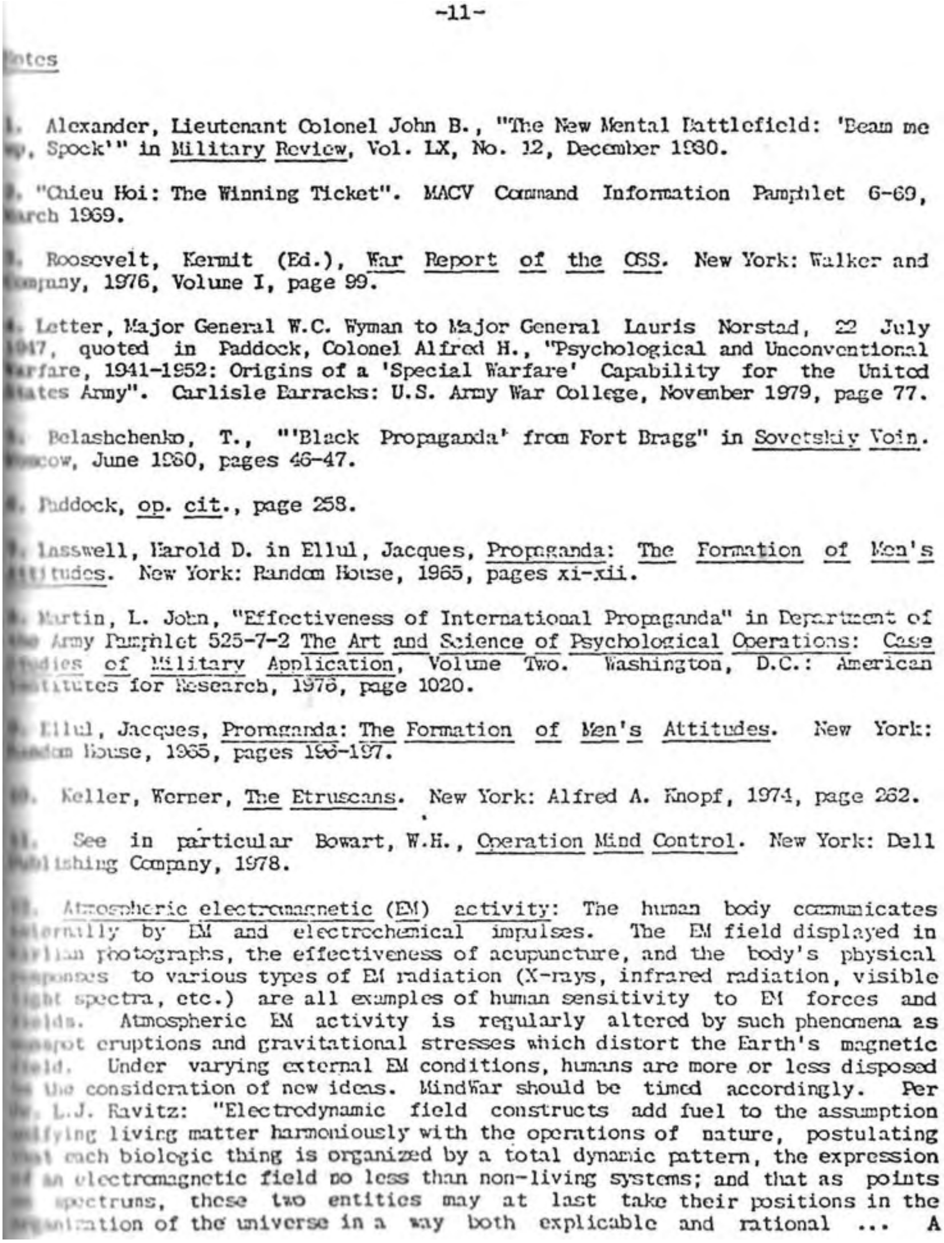

Notes

1. Alexander, Lieutenant Colonel John B., "The New Mental Battlefield: 'Beam me up, Spock'" in Military Review, Vol. LX, No. 12, December 1980.

2. "Chieu Hoi: The Winning Ticket". MACV Command Information Pamphlet 6-69, March 1969.

3. Roosevelt, Kermit (Ed.), War Report of the OSS. New York: Walker and Company, 1976, Volume I, page 99.

4. Letter, Major General W.C. Wyman to Major General Lauris Norstad, 22 July 1947, quoted in Paddock, Colonel Alfred H., "Psychological and Unconventional Warfare, 1941-1952: Origins of a 'Special Warfare' Capability for the United States Army". Carlisle Barracks: U.S. Army War College, November 1979, page 77.

5. Belashchenko, T., "'Black Propaganda' from Fort Bragg" in Sovetskiy Voin. Moscow, June 1980, pages 46-47.

6. Paddock, op. cit., page 258.

7. Lasswell, Harold D. in Ellul, Jacques, Propaganda: The Formation of Men's Attitudes. New York: Random House, 1965, pages xi-xii.

8. Martin, L. John, "Effectiveness of International Propaganda" in Department of the Army Pamphlet 525-7-2 The Art and Science of Psychological Operations: Case Studies of Military Application, Volume Two. Washington, D.C.: American Institutes for Research, 1976, page 1020.

9. Ellul, Jacques, Propaganda: The Formation of Men's Attitudes. New York: Random House, 1965, pages 196-197.

10. Keller, Werner, The Etruscans. New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1974, page 262.

11. See in particular Bowart, W.H., Operation Mind Control. New York: Dell Publishing Company, 1978.

12. Atmospheric electromagnetic (EM) activity: The human body communicates internally by EM and electrochemical impulses. The EM field displayed in Kirlian photographs, the effectiveness of acupuncture, and the body's physical responses to various types of EM radiation (X-rays, infrared radiation, visible light spectra, etc.) are all examples of human sensitivity to EM forces and fields. Atmospheric EM activity is regularly altered by such phenomena as sunspot eruptions and gravitational stresses which distort the Earth's magnetic field. Under varying external EM conditions, humans are more or less disposed to the consideration of new ideas. MindWar should be timed accordingly. Per Dr. L.J. Ravitz: "Electrodynamic field constructs add fuel to the assumption unifying living matter harmoniously with the operations of nature, postulating that each biologic thing is organized by a total dynamic pattern, the expression of an electromagnetic field no less than non-living systems; and that as points on spectrums, these two entities may at last take their positions in the organization of the universe in a way both explicable and rational ... A

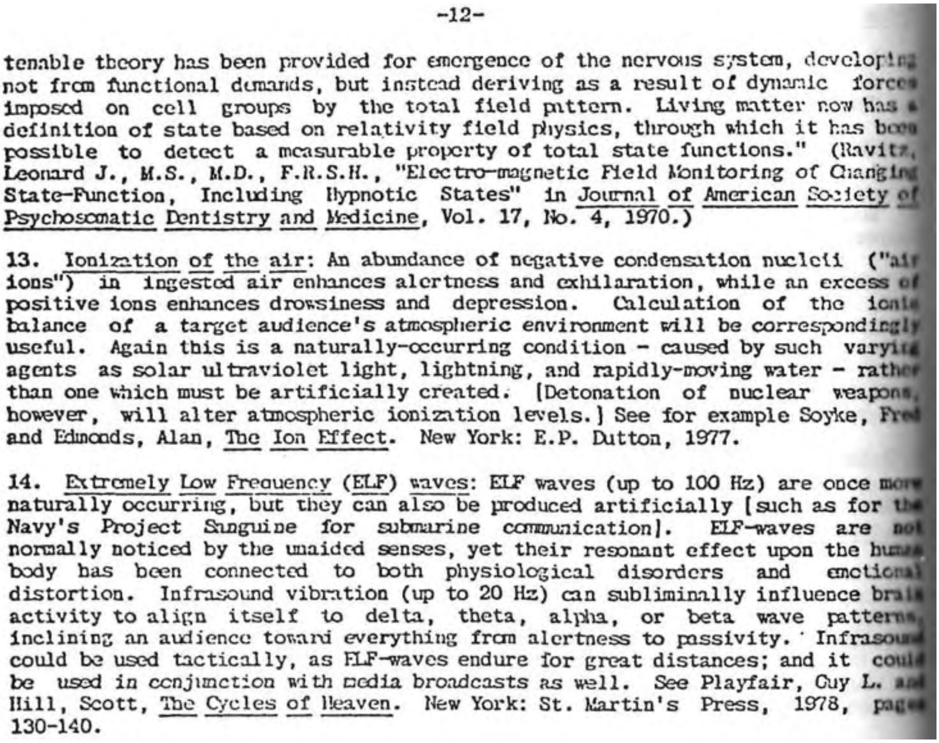

-12-

tenable theory has been provided for emergence of the nervous system, developing not from functional demands, but instead deriving as a result of dynamic forces imposed on cell groups by the total field pattern. Living matter now has a definition of state based on relativity field physics, through which it has been possible to detect a measurable property of total state functions." (Ravitz, Leonard J., M.S., M.D., F.R.S.H., "Electro-magnetic Field Monitoring of Changing State-Function, Including Hypnotic States" in Journal of American Society of Psychosomatic Dentistry and Medicine, Vol. 17, No. 4, 1970.)

13. Ionization of the air: An abundance of negative condensation nuclei ("air ions") in ingested air enhances alertness and exhilaration, while an excess of positive ions enhances drowsiness and depression. Calculation of the ionic balance of a target audience's atmospheric environment will be correspondingly useful. Again this is a naturally-occurring condition - caused by such varying agents as solar ultraviolet light, lightning, and rapidly-moving water - rather than one which must be artificially created. [Detonation of nuclear weapons, however, will alter atmospheric ionization levels.] See for example Soyke, Fred and Edmonds, Alan, The Ion Effect. New York: E.P. Dutton, 1977.

14. Extremely Low Frequency (ELF) waves: ELF waves (up to 100 Hz) are once more naturally occurring, but they can also be produced artificially [such as for the Navy's Project Sanguine for submarine communication]. ELF-waves are not normally noticed by the unaided senses, yet their resonant effect upon the human body has been connected to both physiological disorders and emotional distortion. Infrasound vibration (up to 20 Hz) can subliminally influence brain activity to align itself to delta, theta, alpha, or beta wave patterns, inclining an audience toward everything from alertness to passivity. Infrasound could be used tactically, as ELF-waves endure for great distances; and it could be used in conjunction with media broadcasts as well. See Playfair, Guy L. and Hill, Scott, The Cycles of Heaven. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1978, pages 130-140.

APPENDIX A: WILLIAM COOPER'S MILITARY SERVICE RECORD

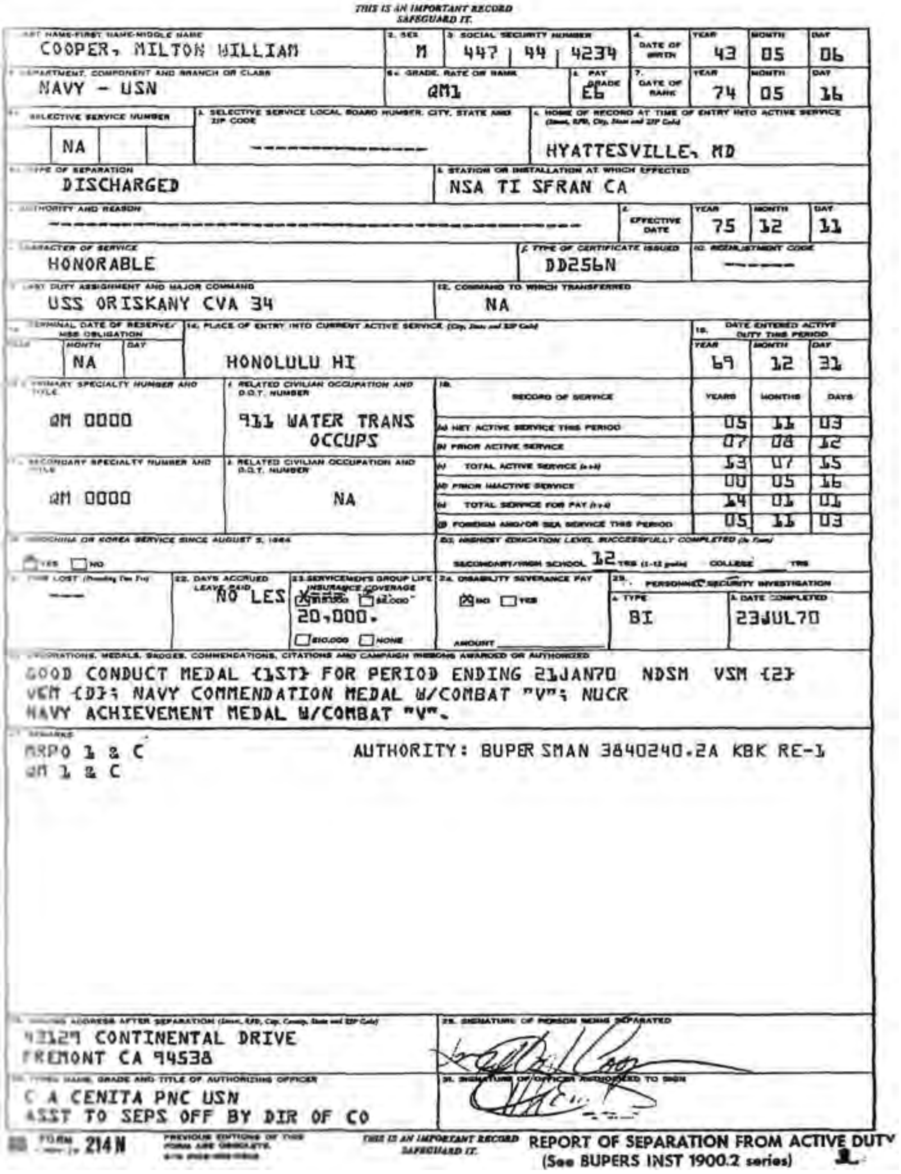

THIS IS AN IMPORTANT RECORD
SAFEGUARD IT.

LAST NAME-FIRST NAME-MIDDLE NAME: COOPER, MILTON WILLIAM
2. SEX: M
3. SOCIAL SECURITY NUMBER: 447 | 44 | 4234
4. DATE OF BIRTH: YEAR 43 MONTH 05 DAY 06
DEPARTMENT, COMPONENT AND BRANCH OR CLASS: NAVY - USN
6a. GRADE, RATE OR RANK: QM1
b. PAY GRADE: E6
7. DATE OF RANK: YEAR 74 MONTH 05 DAY 16
SELECTIVE SERVICE NUMBER: NA
b. SELECTIVE SERVICE LOCAL BOARD NUMBER, CITY, STATE AND ZIP CODE: ---------------
c. HOME OF RECORD AT TIME OF ENTRY INTO ACTIVE SERVICE (Street, RFD, City, State and ZIP Code): HYATTESVILLE, MD
TYPE OF SEPARATION: DISCHARGED
b. STATION OR INSTALLATION AT WHICH EFFECTED: NSA TI SFRAN CA
AUTHORITY AND REASON: ---
d. EFFECTIVE DATE: YEAR 75 MONTH 12 DAY 11
CHARACTER OF SERVICE: HONORABLE
f. TYPE OF CERTIFICATE ISSUED: DD256N
10. REENLISTMENT CODE: ------
LAST DUTY ASSIGNMENT AND MAJOR COMMAND: USS ORISKANY CVA 34
12. COMMAND TO WHICH TRANSFERRED: NA
TERMINAL DATE OF RESERVE/ MSS OBLIGATION: MONTH NA DAY
14. PLACE OF ENTRY INTO CURRENT ACTIVE SERVICE (City, State and ZIP Code): HONOLULU HI
15. DATE ENTERED ACTIVE DUTY THIS PERIOD: YEAR 69 MONTH 12 DAY 31
PRIMARY SPECIALTY NUMBER AND TITLE: QM 0000
b. RELATED CIVILIAN OCCUPATION AND D.O.T. NUMBER: 911 WATER TRANS OCCUPS
SECONDARY SPECIALTY NUMBER AND TITLE: QM 0000
b. RELATED CIVILIAN OCCUPATION AND D.O.T. NUMBER: NA

18. RECORD OF SERVICE	YEARS	MONTHS	DAYS
(a) NET ACTIVE SERVICE THIS PERIOD	05	11	03
(b) PRIOR ACTIVE SERVICE	07	08	12
(c) TOTAL ACTIVE SERVICE (a+b)	13	07	15
(d) PRIOR INACTIVE SERVICE	00	05	16
(e) TOTAL SERVICE FOR PAY (c+d)	14	01	01
(f) FOREIGN AND/OR SEA SERVICE THIS PERIOD	05	11	03

INDOCHINA OR KOREA SERVICE SINCE AUGUST 5, 1964: ☒ YES ☐ NO
b. HIGHEST EDUCATION LEVEL SUCCESSFULLY COMPLETED (In Years): SECONDARY/HIGH SCHOOL 12 YRS (1-12 grades) COLLEGE ___ YRS
TIME LOST (Preceding Two Yrs): ----
22. DAYS ACCRUED LEAVE PAID: NO LES
23. SERVICEMEN'S GROUP LIFE INSURANCE COVERAGE: ☒ $15,000 ☐ $5,000 20,000. ☐ $10,000 ☐ NONE
24. DISABILITY SEVERANCE PAY: ☒ NO ☐ YES AMOUNT ______
25. PERSONNEL SECURITY INVESTIGATION: a. TYPE BI b. DATE COMPLETED 23JUL70
DECORATIONS, MEDALS, BADGES, COMMENDATIONS, CITATIONS AND CAMPAIGN RIBBONS AWARDED OR AUTHORIZED:
GOOD CONDUCT MEDAL (1ST) FOR PERIOD ENDING 21JAN70 NDSM VSM (2)
VCM (D); NAVY COMMENDATION MEDAL W/COMBAT "V"; NUCR
NAVY ACHIEVEMENT MEDAL W/COMBAT "V".
REMARKS:
MRPO 1 & C AUTHORITY: BUPERSMAN 3840240.2A KBK RE-1
QM 1 & C
MAILING ADDRESS AFTER SEPARATION (Street, RFD, City, County, State and ZIP Code):
43129 CONTINENTAL DRIVE
FREMONT CA 94538
29. SIGNATURE OF PERSON BEING SEPARATED:
TYPED NAME, GRADE AND TITLE OF AUTHORIZING OFFICER:
C A CENITA PNC USN
ASST TO SEPS OFF BY DIR OF CO
31. SIGNATURE OF OFFICER AUTHORIZED TO SIGN:

FORM 214N
PREVIOUS EDITIONS OF THIS FORM ARE OBSOLETE.
THIS IS AN IMPORTANT RECORD SAFEGUARD IT.
REPORT OF SEPARATION FROM ACTIVE DUTY
(See BUPERS INST 1900.2 series)

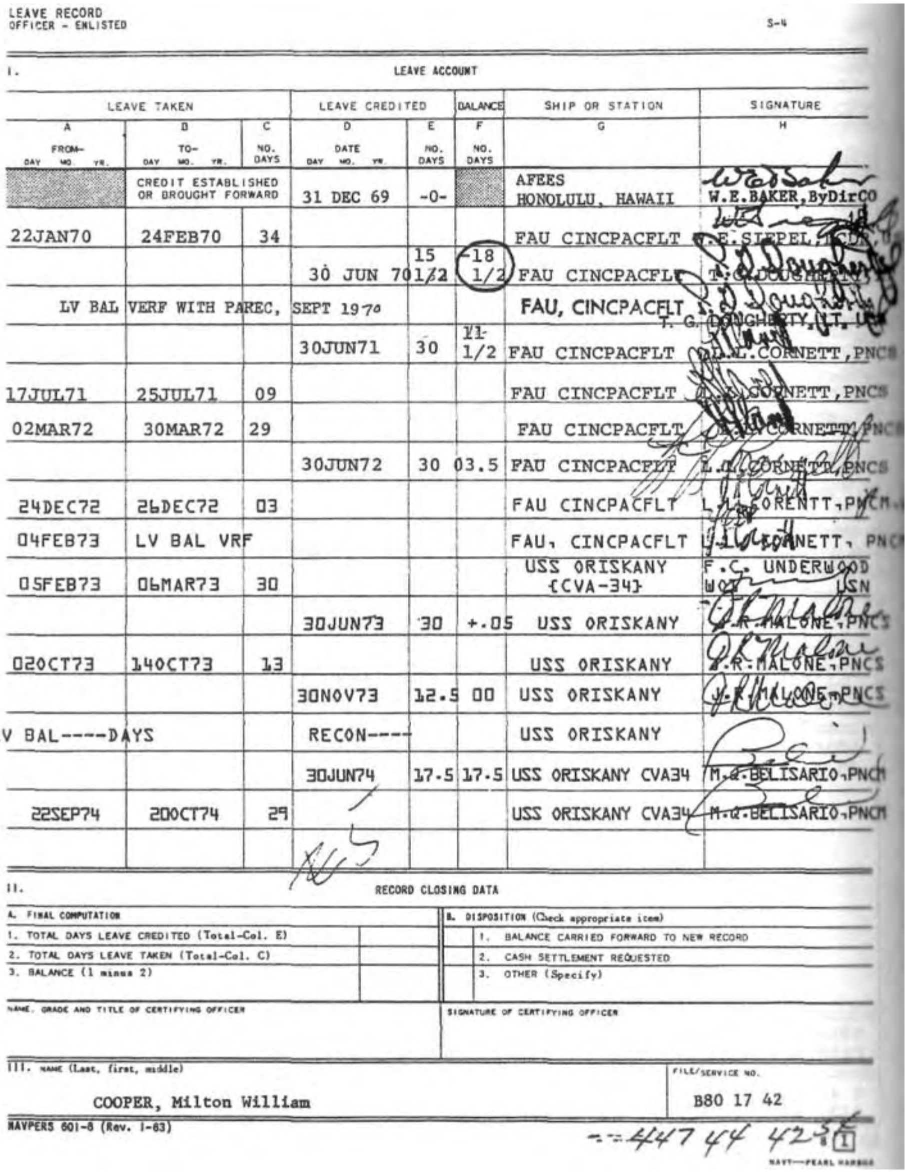

LEAVE RECORD
OFFICER - ENLISTED

S-4

I. LEAVE ACCOUNT

LEAVE TAKEN			LEAVE CREDITED		BALANCE	SHIP OR STATION	SIGNATURE
A FROM– DAY MO. YR.	B TO– DAY MO. YR.	C NO. DAYS	D DATE DAY MO. YR.	E NO. DAYS	F NO. DAYS	G	H
▨	CREDIT ESTABLISHED OR BROUGHT FORWARD		31 DEC 69	-0-	▨	AFEES HONOLULU, HAWAII	W.E.BAKER,ByDirCO
22JAN70	24FEB70	34				FAU CINCPACFLT	E.SIEPEL,LCD
			30 JUN 70	15 1/2	-18 1/2	FAU CINCPACFLT	T.G.DOUGHERTY
LV BAL	VERF WITH PAREC,		SEPT 1970			FAU, CINCPACFLT	T. G. DOUGHERTY, LT, U
			30JUN71	30	~~11~~ 1/2	FAU CINCPACFLT	L.L.CORNETT,PNCS
17JUL71	25JUL71	09				FAU CINCPACFLT	L.L.CORNETT,PNCS
02MAR72	30MAR72	29				FAU CINCPACFLT	L.L.CORNETT,PNC
			30JUN72	30	03.5	FAU CINCPACFLT	L.L.CORNETT,PNCS
24DEC72	26DEC72	03				FAU CINCPACFLT	L.L.CORENTT,PNCM
04FEB73	LV BAL VRF					FAU, CINCPACFLT	L.L.CORNETT, PNC
05FEB73	06MAR73	30				USS ORISKANY {CVA-34}	F.C. UNDERWOOD WO1 USN
			30JUN73	30	+.05	USS ORISKANY	J.R.MALONE,PNCS
02OCT73	14OCT73	13				USS ORISKANY	J.R.MALONE,PNCS
			30NOV73	12.5	00	USS ORISKANY	J.R.MALONE,PNCS
LV BAL----DAYS			RECON----			USS ORISKANY	
			30JUN74	17.5	17.5	USS ORISKANY CVA34	M.Q.BELISARIO,PNCM
22SEP74	20OCT74	29				USS ORISKANY CVA34	M.Q.BELISARIO,PNCM

II. RECORD CLOSING DATA

A. FINAL COMPUTATION		B. DISPOSITION (Check appropriate item)	
1. TOTAL DAYS LEAVE CREDITED (Total-Col. E)		☐	1. BALANCE CARRIED FORWARD TO NEW RECORD
2. TOTAL DAYS LEAVE TAKEN (Total-Col. C)		☐	2. CASH SETTLEMENT REQUESTED
3. BALANCE (1 minus 2)		☐	3. OTHER (Specify)

NAME, GRADE AND TITLE OF CERTIFYING OFFICER

SIGNATURE OF CERTIFYING OFFICER

III. NAME (Last, first, middle): COOPER, Milton William

FILE/SERVICE NO.: B80 17 42

NAVPERS 601-8 (Rev. 1-63)

--447 44 4236

NAVY—PEARL HARBOR

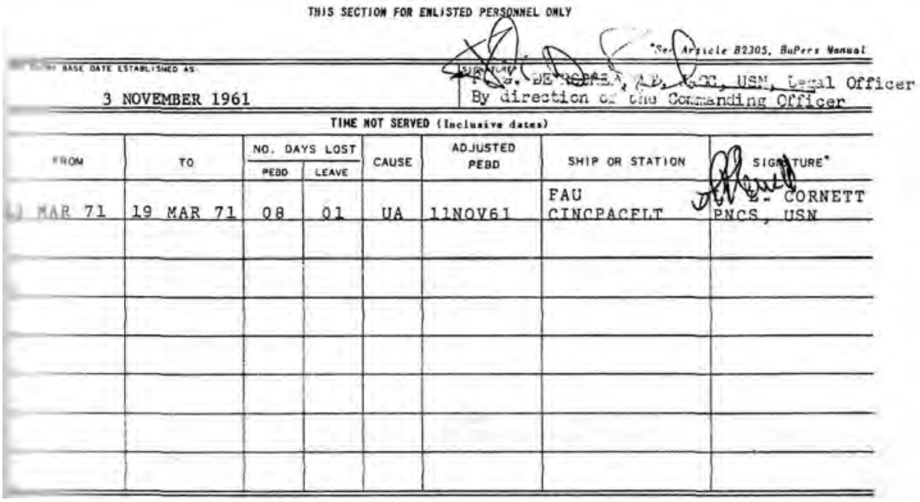

THIS SECTION FOR ENLISTED PERSONNEL ONLY

*See Article B2305, BuPers Manual

BASE DATE ESTABLISHED AS:

3 NOVEMBER 1961

SIGNATURE*

F. G. DE [illegible], [illegible], USN, Legal Officer
By direction of the Commanding Officer

TIME NOT SERVED (Inclusive dates)

FROM	TO	NO. DAYS LOST		CAUSE	ADJUSTED PEBD	SHIP OR STATION	SIGNATURE*
		PEBD	LEAVE				
MAR 71	19 MAR 71	08	01	UA	11NOV61	FAU CINCPACFLT	E. CORNETT PNCS, USN

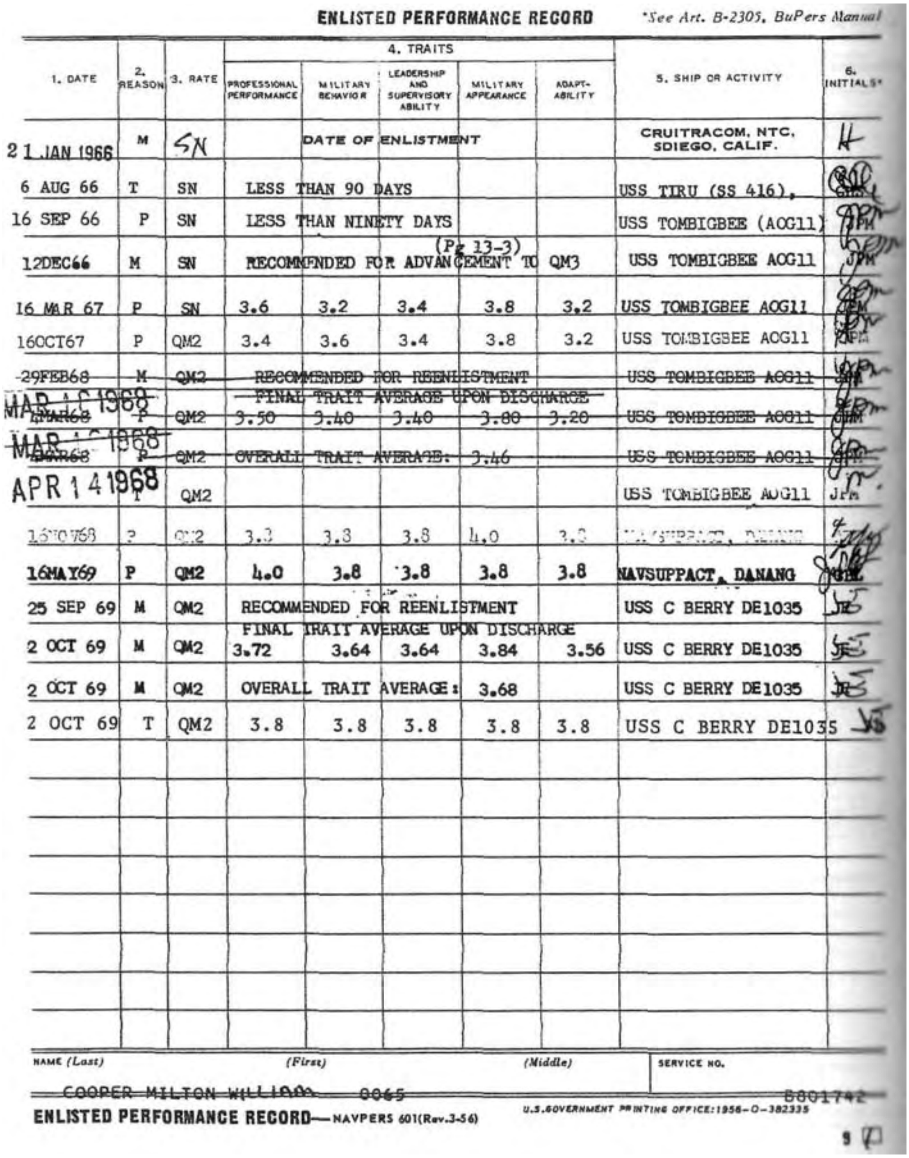

ENLISTED PERFORMANCE RECORD

*See Art. B-2305, BuPers Manual

1. DATE	2. REASON	3. RATE	4. TRAITS: PROFESSIONAL PERFORMANCE	MILITARY BEHAVIOR	LEADERSHIP AND SUPERVISORY ABILITY	MILITARY APPEARANCE	ADAPT-ABILITY	5. SHIP OR ACTIVITY	6. INITIALS*
21 JAN 1966	M	SN	DATE OF ENLISTMENT					CRUITRACOM, NTC, SDIEGO, CALIF.	H
6 AUG 66	T	SN	LESS THAN 90 DAYS					USS TIRU (SS 416),	
16 SEP 66	P	SN	LESS THAN NINETY DAYS					USS TOMBIGBEE (AOG11)	JPM
12DEC66	M	SN	RECOMMENDED FOR ADVANCEMENT TO QM3 (Pg 13-3)					USS TOMBIGBEE AOG11	JPM
16 MAR 67	P	SN	3.6	3.2	3.4	3.8	3.2	USS TOMBIGBEE AOG11	JPM
16OCT67	P	QM2	3.4	3.6	3.4	3.8	3.2	USS TOMBIGBEE AOG11	JPM
~~29FEB68~~	~~M~~	~~QM2~~	~~RECOMMENDED FOR REENLISTMENT~~					~~USS TOMBIGBEE AOG11~~	JPM
MAR 1 6 1968	~~P~~	~~QM2~~	~~FINAL TRAIT AVERAGE UPON DISCHARGE~~ ~~3.50~~	~~3.40~~	~~3.40~~	~~3.80~~	~~3.20~~	~~USS TOMBIGBEE AOG11~~	JPM
~~MAR 1 6 1968~~	~~P~~	~~QM2~~	~~OVERALL TRAIT AVERAGE: 3.46~~					~~USS TOMBIGBEE AOG11~~	JPM
APR 1 4 1968	T	QM2						USS TOMBIGBEE AOG11	JPM
16NOV68	P	QM2	3.3	3.8	3.8	4.0	3.8	NAVSUPPACT, DANANG	
16MAY69	P	QM2	4.0	3.8	3.8	3.8	3.8	NAVSUPPACT, DANANG	
25 SEP 69	M	QM2	RECOMMENDED FOR REENLISTMENT					USS C BERRY DE1035	JE
2 OCT 69	M	QM2	FINAL TRAIT AVERAGE UPON DISCHARGE 3.72	3.64	3.64	3.84	3.56	USS C BERRY DE1035	JE
2 OCT 69	M	QM2	OVERALL TRAIT AVERAGE: 3.68					USS C BERRY DE1035	JE
2 OCT 69	T	QM2	3.8	3.8	3.8	3.8	3.8	USS C BERRY DE1035	JE

NAME (Last) (First) (Middle) SERVICE NO.

~~COOPER MILTON WILLIAM 0065~~ ~~B801742~~

ENLISTED PERFORMANCE RECORD—NAVPERS 601(Rev.3-56)

U.S.GOVERNMENT PRINTING OFFICE:1956-O-382335

9

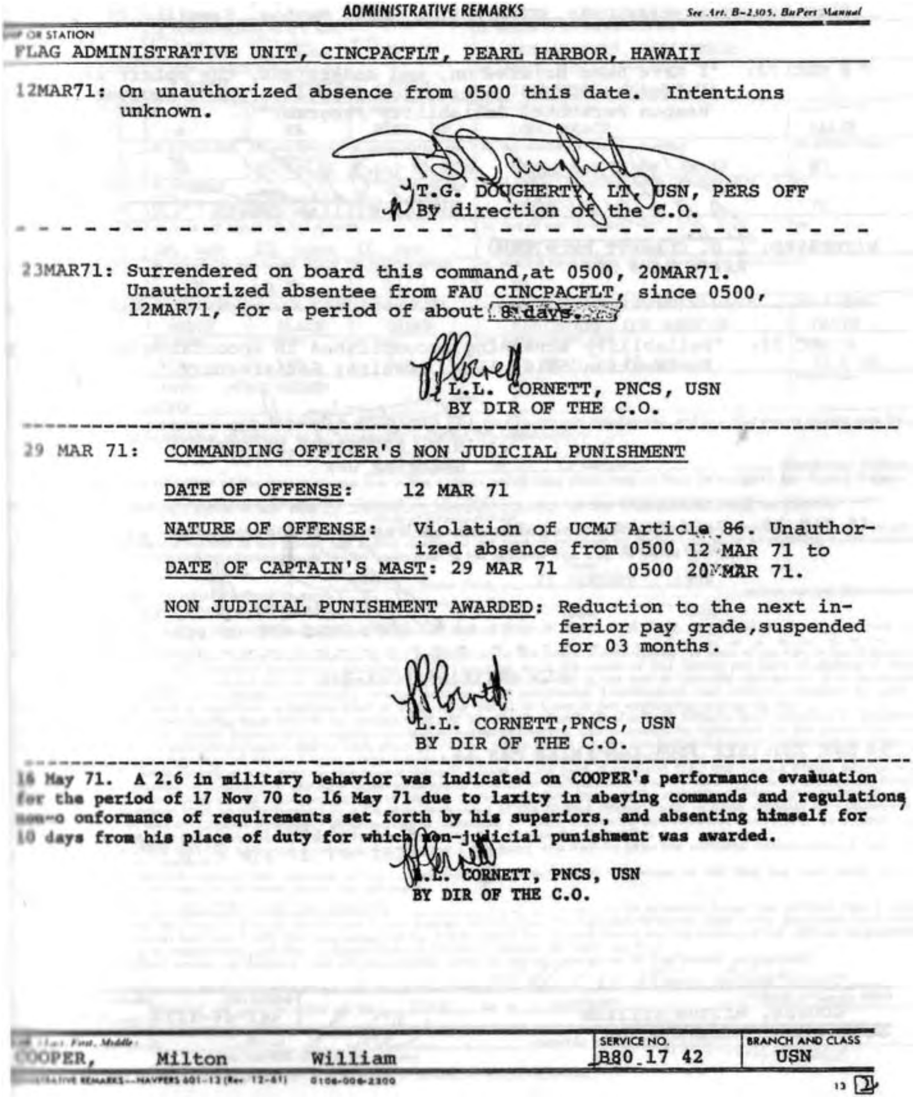

ADMINISTRATIVE REMARKS

See Art. B-2305, BuPers Manual

OR STATION

FLAG ADMINISTRATIVE UNIT, CINCPACFLT, PEARL HARBOR, HAWAII

12MAR71: On unauthorized absence from 0500 this date. Intentions unknown.

T.G. DOUGHERTY, LT, USN, PERS OFF
By direction of the C.O.

- -

23MAR71: Surrendered on board this command, at 0500, 20MAR71. Unauthorized absentee from FAU CINCPACFLT, since 0500, 12MAR71, for a period of about 8 days.

L.L. CORNETT, PNCS, USN
BY DIR OF THE C.O.

- -

29 MAR 71: COMMANDING OFFICER'S NON JUDICIAL PUNISHMENT

DATE OF OFFENSE: 12 MAR 71

NATURE OF OFFENSE: Violation of UCMJ Article 86. Unauthorized absence from 0500 12 MAR 71 to 0500 20 MAR 71.

DATE OF CAPTAIN'S MAST: 29 MAR 71

NON JUDICIAL PUNISHMENT AWARDED: Reduction to the next inferior pay grade, suspended for 03 months.

L.L. CORNETT, PNCS, USN
BY DIR OF THE C.O.

- -

16 May 71. A 2.6 in military behavior was indicated on COOPER's performance evaluation for the period of 17 Nov 70 to 16 May 71 due to laxity in abeying commands and regulations, non-o onformance of requirements set forth by his superiors, and absenting himself for 10 days from his place of duty for which non-judicial punishment was awarded.

L.L. CORNETT, PNCS, USN
BY DIR OF THE C.O.

(Last, First, Middle)			SERVICE NO.	BRANCH AND CLASS
COOPER,	Milton	William	B80 17 42	USN

TRATIVE REMARKS--NAVPERS 601-13 (Rev. 12-61) 0106-006-2300

13 2

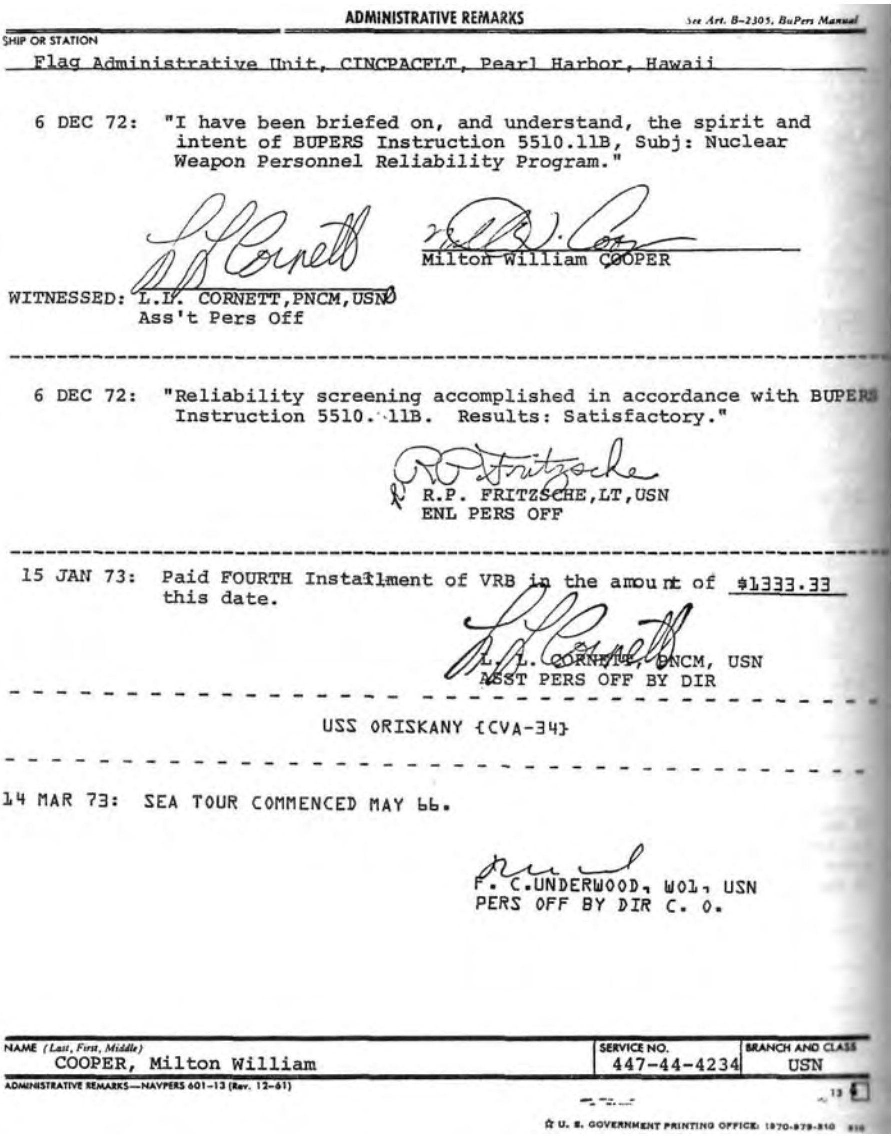

ADMINISTRATIVE REMARKS

See Art. B-2305, BuPers Manual

SHIP OR STATION

Flag Administrative Unit, CINCPACFLT, Pearl Harbor, Hawaii

6 DEC 72: "I have been briefed on, and understand, the spirit and intent of BUPERS Instruction 5510.11B, Subj: Nuclear Weapon Personnel Reliability Program."

Milton William COOPER

WITNESSED: L.L. CORNETT, PNCM, USN
Ass't Pers Off

---

6 DEC 72: "Reliability screening accomplished in accordance with BUPERS Instruction 5510.11B. Results: Satisfactory."

R.P. FRITZSCHE, LT, USN
ENL PERS OFF

---

15 JAN 73: Paid FOURTH Installment of VRB in the amount of $1333.33 this date.

L. L. CORNETT, PNCM, USN
ASST PERS OFF BY DIR

USS ORISKANY (CVA-34)

---

14 MAR 73: SEA TOUR COMMENCED MAY 66.

F. C. UNDERWOOD, WO1, USN
PERS OFF BY DIR C. O.

NAME (Last, First, Middle)	SERVICE NO.	BRANCH AND CLASS
COOPER, Milton William	447-44-4234	USN

ADMINISTRATIVE REMARKS—NAVPERS 601-13 (Rev. 12-61)

13

U. S. GOVERNMENT PRINTING OFFICE: 1970-879-310

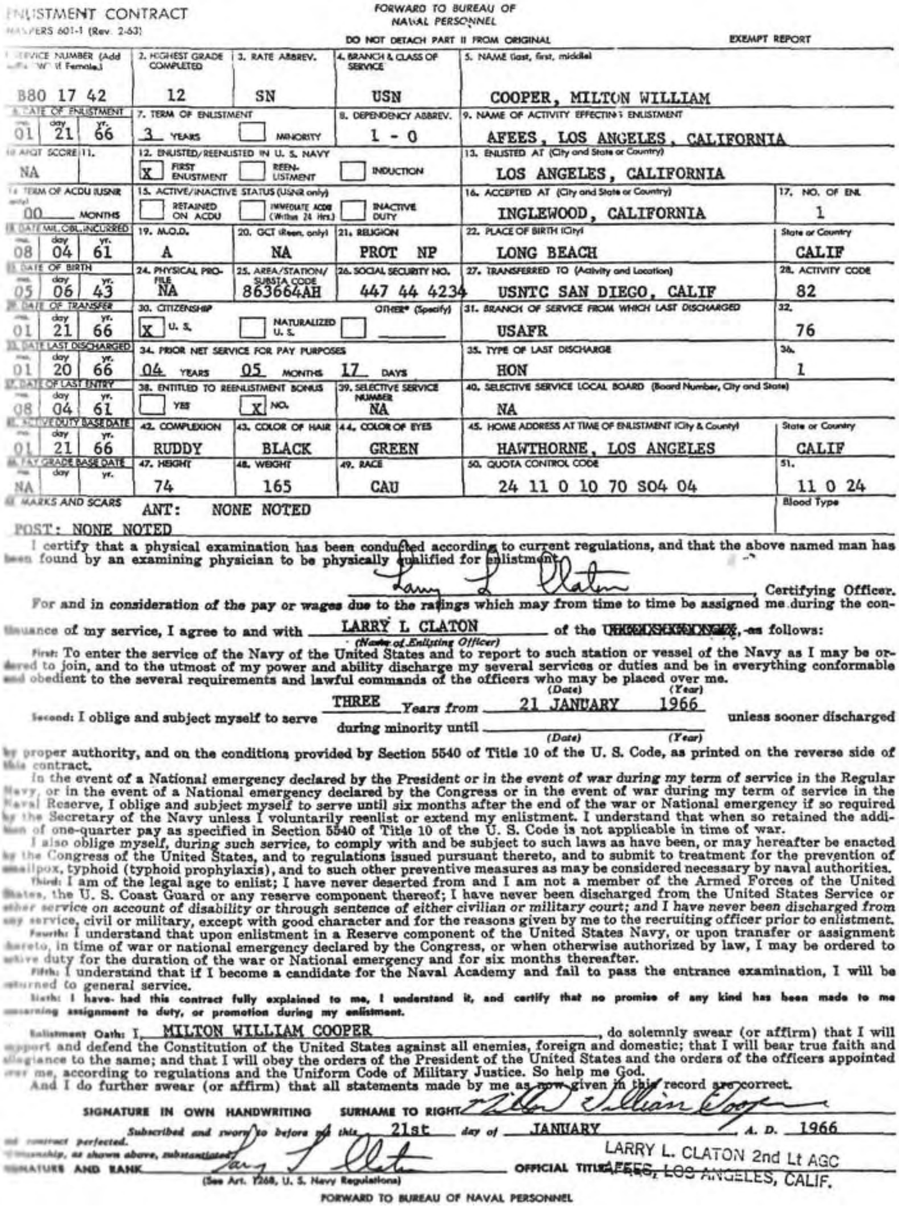

ENLISTMENT CONTRACT
NAVPERS 601-1 (Rev. 2-63)

FORWARD TO BUREAU OF NAVAL PERSONNEL

DO NOT DETACH PART II FROM ORIGINAL

EXEMPT REPORT

SERVICE NUMBER (Add suffix "W" if Female.) B80 17 42	2. HIGHEST GRADE COMPLETED 12	3. RATE ABBREV. SN	4. BRANCH & CLASS OF SERVICE USN	5. NAME (last, first, middle) COOPER, MILTON WILLIAM	
DATE OF ENLISTMENT mo. day yr. 01 21 66	7. TERM OF ENLISTMENT 3 YEARS ☐ MINORITY		8. DEPENDENCY ABBREV. 1 - 0	9. NAME OF ACTIVITY EFFECTING ENLISTMENT AFEES, LOS ANGELES, CALIFORNIA	
AFQT SCORE NA	11.	12. ENLISTED/REENLISTED IN U. S. NAVY ☒ FIRST ENLISTMENT ☐ REEN-LISTMENT ☐ INDUCTION		13. ENLISTED AT (City and State or Country) LOS ANGELES, CALIFORNIA	
TERM OF ACDU (USNR only) 00 MONTHS	15. ACTIVE/INACTIVE STATUS (USNR only) ☐ RETAINED ON ACDU ☐ IMMEDIATE ACDU (Within 24 Hrs.) ☐ INACTIVE DUTY			16. ACCEPTED AT (City and State or Country) INGLEWOOD, CALIFORNIA	17. NO. OF ENL 1
DATE MIL. OBL. INCURRED mo. day yr. 08 04 61	19. M.O.D. A	20. GCT (Reen. only) NA	21. RELIGION PROT NP	22. PLACE OF BIRTH (City) LONG BEACH	State or Country CALIF
DATE OF BIRTH mo. day yr. 05 06 43	24. PHYSICAL PROFILE NA	25. AREA/STATION/SUBSTA CODE 863664AH	26. SOCIAL SECURITY NO. 447 44 4234	27. TRANSFERRED TO (Activity and Location) USNTC SAN DIEGO, CALIF	28. ACTIVITY CODE 82
DATE OF TRANSFER mo. day yr. 01 21 66	30. CITIZENSHIP ☒ U. S. ☐ NATURALIZED U. S.		OTHER* (Specify) ☐	31. BRANCH OF SERVICE FROM WHICH LAST DISCHARGED USAFR	32. 76
DATE LAST DISCHARGED mo. day yr. 01 20 66	34. PRIOR NET SERVICE FOR PAY PURPOSES 04 YEARS 05 MONTHS 17 DAYS			35. TYPE OF LAST DISCHARGE HON	36. 1
DATE OF LAST ENTRY mo. day yr. 08 04 61	38. ENTITLED TO REENLISTMENT BONUS ☐ YES ☒ NO.		39. SELECTIVE SERVICE NUMBER NA	40. SELECTIVE SERVICE LOCAL BOARD (Board Number, City and State) NA	
ACTIVE DUTY BASE DATE mo. day yr. 01 21 66	42. COMPLEXION RUDDY	43. COLOR OF HAIR BLACK	44. COLOR OF EYES GREEN	45. HOME ADDRESS AT TIME OF ENLISTMENT (City & County) HAWTHORNE, LOS ANGELES	State or Country CALIF
PAY GRADE BASE DATE mo. day yr. NA	47. HEIGHT 74	48. WEIGHT 165	49. RACE CAU	50. QUOTA CONTROL CODE 24 11 0 10 70 S04 04	51. 11 0 24
MARKS AND SCARS	ANT: NONE NOTED				Blood Type

POST: NONE NOTED

I certify that a physical examination has been conducted according to current regulations, and that the above named man has been found by an examining physician to be physically qualified for enlistment.

Larry L. Claton, Certifying Officer.

For and in consideration of the pay or wages due to the ratings which may from time to time be assigned me during the continuance of my service, I agree to and with LARRY L CLATON of the [illegible], as follows:
(Name of Enlisting Officer)

First: To enter the service of the Navy of the United States and to report to such station or vessel of the Navy as I may be ordered to join, and to the utmost of my power and ability discharge my several services or duties and be in everything conformable and obedient to the several requirements and lawful commands of the officers who may be placed over me.

Second: I oblige and subject myself to serve THREE Years from 21 JANUARY (Date) 1966 (Year) during minority until ________ (Date) (Year) unless sooner discharged by proper authority, and on the conditions provided by Section 5540 of Title 10 of the U. S. Code, as printed on the reverse side of this contract.

In the event of a National emergency declared by the President or in the event of war during my term of service in the Regular Navy, or in the event of a National emergency declared by the Congress or in the event of war during my term of service in the Naval Reserve, I oblige and subject myself to serve until six months after the end of the war or National emergency if so required by the Secretary of the Navy unless I voluntarily reenlist or extend my enlistment. I understand that when so retained the addition of one-quarter pay as specified in Section 5540 of Title 10 of the U. S. Code is not applicable in time of war.

I also oblige myself, during such service, to comply with and be subject to such laws as have been, or may hereafter be enacted by the Congress of the United States, and to regulations issued pursuant thereto, and to submit to treatment for the prevention of smallpox, typhoid (typhoid prophylaxis), and to such other preventive measures as may be considered necessary by naval authorities.

Third: I am of the legal age to enlist; I have never deserted from and I am not a member of the Armed Forces of the United States, the U. S. Coast Guard or any reserve component thereof; I have never been discharged from the United States Service or other service on account of disability or through sentence of either civilian or military court; and I have never been discharged from any service, civil or military, except with good character and for the reasons given by me to the recruiting officer prior to enlistment.

Fourth: I understand that upon enlistment in a Reserve component of the United States Navy, or upon transfer or assignment thereto, in time of war or national emergency declared by the Congress, or when otherwise authorized by law, I may be ordered to active duty for the duration of the war or National emergency and for six months thereafter.

Fifth: I understand that if I become a candidate for the Naval Academy and fail to pass the entrance examination, I will be returned to general service.

Sixth: I have had this contract fully explained to me, I understand it, and certify that no promise of any kind has been made to me concerning assignment to duty, or promotion during my enlistment.

Enlistment Oath: I, MILTON WILLIAM COOPER, do solemnly swear (or affirm) that I will support and defend the Constitution of the United States against all enemies, foreign and domestic; that I will bear true faith and allegiance to the same; and that I will obey the orders of the President of the United States and the orders of the officers appointed over me, according to regulations and the Uniform Code of Military Justice. So help me God.

And I do further swear (or affirm) that all statements made by me as now given in this record are correct.

SIGNATURE IN OWN HANDWRITING SURNAME TO RIGHT Milton William Cooper

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 21st day of JANUARY A. D. 1966

and contract perfected.
Citizenship, as shown above, substantiated.
SIGNATURE AND RANK Larry L. Claton OFFICIAL TITLE LARRY L. CLATON 2nd Lt AGC
AFEES, LOS ANGELES, CALIF.
(See Art. 1268, U. S. Navy Regulations)

FORWARD TO BUREAU OF NAVAL PERSONNEL

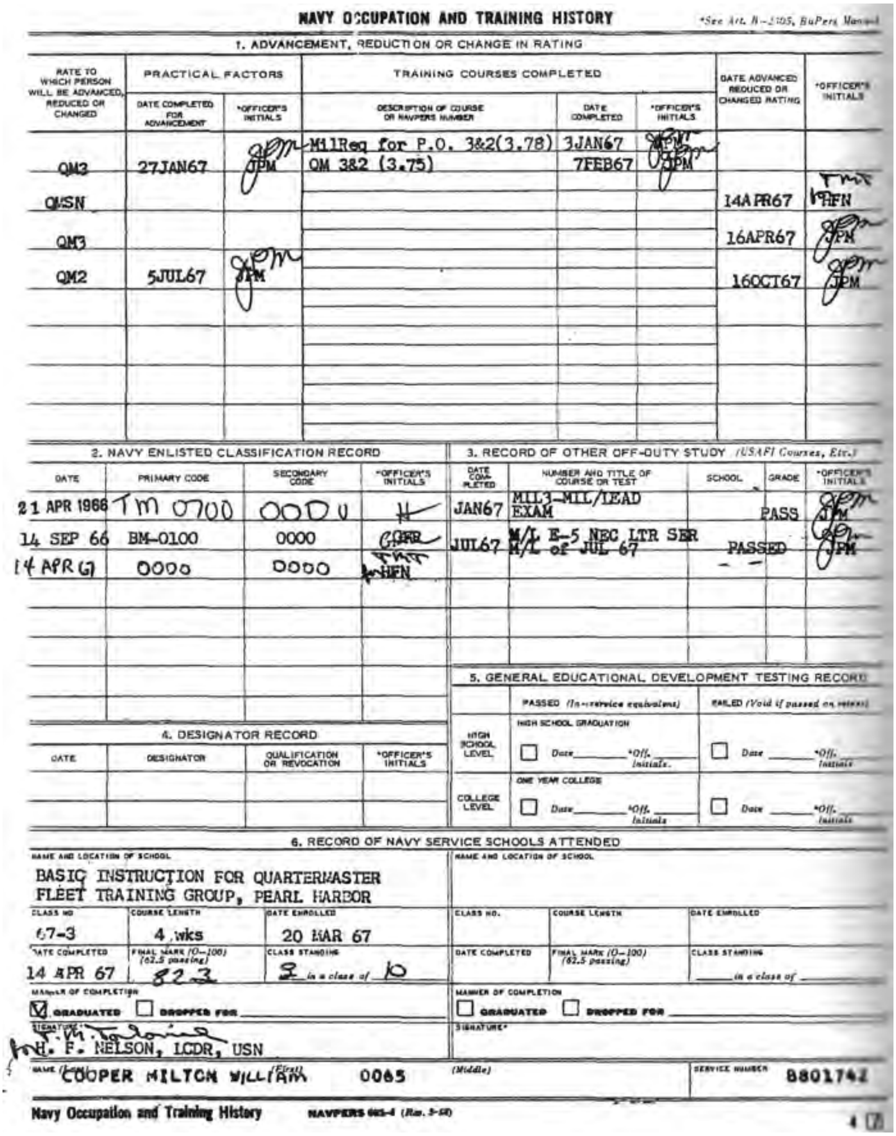

NAVY OCCUPATION AND TRAINING HISTORY

*See Art. B-2105, BuPers Manual

1. ADVANCEMENT, REDUCTION OR CHANGE IN RATING

RATE TO WHICH PERSON WILL BE ADVANCED, REDUCED OR CHANGED	PRACTICAL FACTORS		TRAINING COURSES COMPLETED			DATE ADVANCED REDUCED OR CHANGED RATING	*OFFICER'S INITIALS
	DATE COMPLETED FOR ADVANCEMENT	*OFFICER'S INITIALS	DESCRIPTION OF COURSE OR NAVPERS NUMBER	DATE COMPLETED	*OFFICER'S INITIALS		
			MilReq for P.O. 3&2(3.78)	3JAN67	JPM		
QM3	27JAN67	JPM	QM 3&2 (3.75)	7FEB67	JPM		
QMSN						14APR67	HFN
QM3						16APR67	JPM
QM2	5JUL67	JPM				16OCT67	JPM

2. NAVY ENLISTED CLASSIFICATION RECORD

DATE	PRIMARY CODE	SECONDARY CODE	*OFFICER'S INITIALS
21 APR 1966	TM 0700	000U	H
14 SEP 66	BM-0100	0000	GFR
14 APR 67	0000	0000	HFN

3. RECORD OF OTHER OFF-DUTY STUDY *(USAFI Courses, Etc.)*

DATE COMPLETED	NUMBER AND TITLE OF COURSE OR TEST	SCHOOL	GRADE	*OFFICER'S INITIALS
JAN67	MIL3-MIL/LEAD EXAM		PASS	JPM
JUL67	M/L E-5 NEC LTR SER M/L of JUL 67		PASSED	JPM

4. DESIGNATOR RECORD

DATE	DESIGNATOR	QUALIFICATION OR REVOCATION	*OFFICER'S INITIALS

5. GENERAL EDUCATIONAL DEVELOPMENT TESTING RECORD

	PASSED *(In-service equivalent)*	FAILED *(Void if passed on retest)*
HIGH SCHOOL LEVEL	HIGH SCHOOL GRADUATION ☐ Date_____ *Off. Initials_____	☐ Date_____ *Off. Initials_____
COLLEGE LEVEL	ONE YEAR COLLEGE ☐ Date_____ *Off. Initials_____	☐ Date_____ *Off. Initials_____

6. RECORD OF NAVY SERVICE SCHOOLS ATTENDED

NAME AND LOCATION OF SCHOOL
BASIC INSTRUCTION FOR QUARTERMASTER
FLEET TRAINING GROUP, PEARL HARBOR

CLASS NO	COURSE LENGTH	DATE ENROLLED
67-3	4 wks	20 MAR 67

DATE COMPLETED	FINAL MARK (0-100) (62.5 passing)	CLASS STANDING
14 APR 67	82.3	2 in a class of 10

MANNER OF COMPLETION
☑ GRADUATED ☐ DROPPED FOR ________

SIGNATURE*
H. F. NELSON, LCDR, USN

NAME AND LOCATION OF SCHOOL

CLASS NO.	COURSE LENGTH	DATE ENROLLED

DATE COMPLETED	FINAL MARK (0-100) (62.5 passing)	CLASS STANDING
		_____ in a class of _____

MANNER OF COMPLETION
☐ GRADUATED ☐ DROPPED FOR ________

SIGNATURE*

NAME (Last)	(First)	(Middle)	SERVICE NUMBER
COOPER MILTON	WILLIAM 0065		8801742

Navy Occupation and Training History NAVPERS 601-4 (Rev. 5-58)

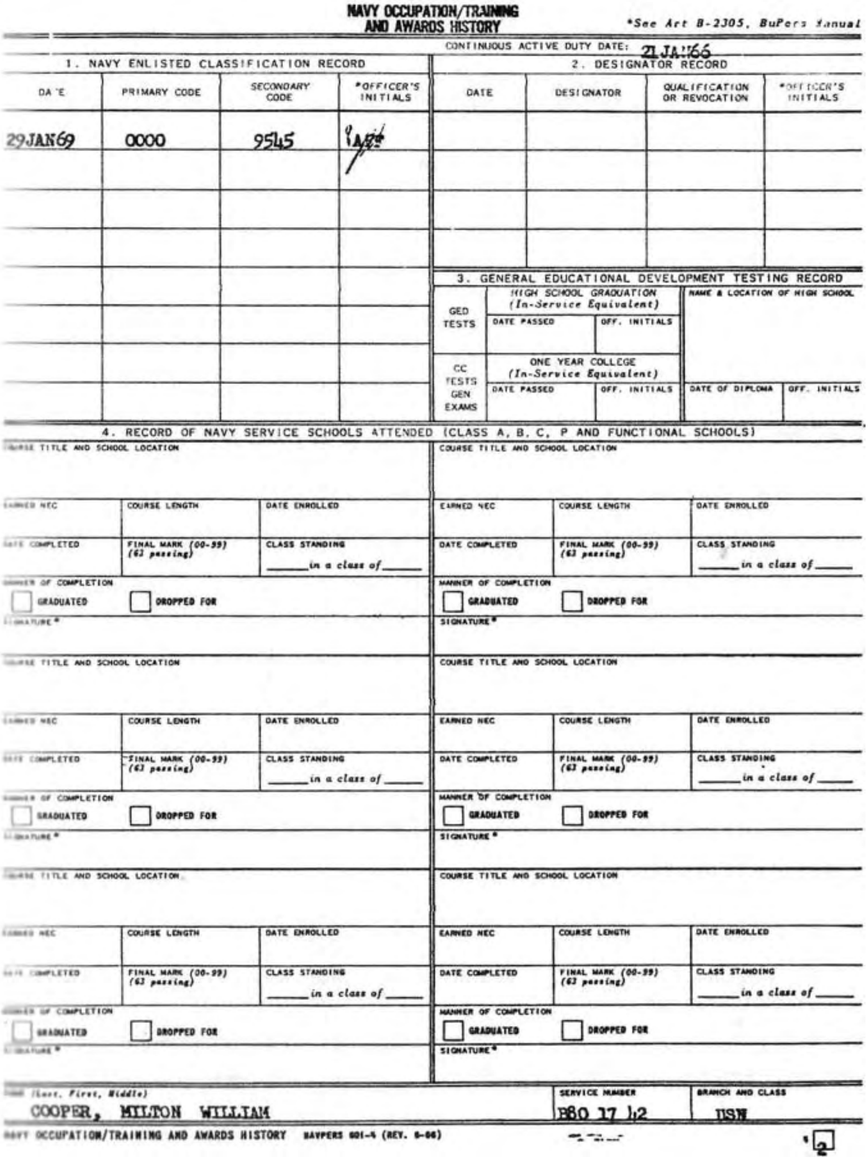

NAVY OCCUPATION/TRAINING AND AWARDS HISTORY

*See Art B-2305, BuPers Manual

CONTINUOUS ACTIVE DUTY DATE: 21JAN66

1. NAVY ENLISTED CLASSIFICATION RECORD

DATE	PRIMARY CODE	SECONDARY CODE	*OFFICER'S INITIALS
29JAN69	0000	9545	

2. DESIGNATOR RECORD

DATE	DESIGNATOR	QUALIFICATION OR REVOCATION	*OFFICER'S INITIALS

3. GENERAL EDUCATIONAL DEVELOPMENT TESTING RECORD

GED TESTS	HIGH SCHOOL GRADUATION (*In-Service Equivalent*) DATE PASSED	OFF. INITIALS	NAME & LOCATION OF HIGH SCHOOL
CC TESTS GEN EXAMS	ONE YEAR COLLEGE (*In-Service Equivalent*) DATE PASSED	OFF. INITIALS	DATE OF DIPLOMA OFF. INITIALS

4. RECORD OF NAVY SERVICE SCHOOLS ATTENDED (CLASS A, B, C, P AND FUNCTIONAL SCHOOLS)

COURSE TITLE AND SCHOOL LOCATION			COURSE TITLE AND SCHOOL LOCATION		
EARNED NEC	COURSE LENGTH	DATE ENROLLED	EARNED NEC	COURSE LENGTH	DATE ENROLLED
DATE COMPLETED	FINAL MARK (00-99) (63 passing)	CLASS STANDING ____ in a class of ____	DATE COMPLETED	FINAL MARK (00-99) (63 passing)	CLASS STANDING ____ in a class of ____
MANNER OF COMPLETION ☐ GRADUATED ☐ DROPPED FOR			MANNER OF COMPLETION ☐ GRADUATED ☐ DROPPED FOR		
SIGNATURE*			SIGNATURE*		
COURSE TITLE AND SCHOOL LOCATION			COURSE TITLE AND SCHOOL LOCATION		
EARNED NEC	COURSE LENGTH	DATE ENROLLED	EARNED NEC	COURSE LENGTH	DATE ENROLLED
DATE COMPLETED	FINAL MARK (00-99) (63 passing)	CLASS STANDING ____ in a class of ____	DATE COMPLETED	FINAL MARK (00-99) (63 passing)	CLASS STANDING ____ in a class of ____
MANNER OF COMPLETION ☐ GRADUATED ☐ DROPPED FOR			MANNER OF COMPLETION ☐ GRADUATED ☐ DROPPED FOR		
SIGNATURE*			SIGNATURE*		
COURSE TITLE AND SCHOOL LOCATION			COURSE TITLE AND SCHOOL LOCATION		
EARNED NEC	COURSE LENGTH	DATE ENROLLED	EARNED NEC	COURSE LENGTH	DATE ENROLLED
DATE COMPLETED	FINAL MARK (00-99) (63 passing)	CLASS STANDING ____ in a class of ____	DATE COMPLETED	FINAL MARK (00-99) (63 passing)	CLASS STANDING ____ in a class of ____
MANNER OF COMPLETION ☐ GRADUATED ☐ DROPPED FOR			MANNER OF COMPLETION ☐ GRADUATED ☐ DROPPED FOR		
SIGNATURE*			SIGNATURE*		

NAME (Last, First, Middle) COOPER, MILTON WILLIAM	SERVICE NUMBER B80 17 42	BRANCH AND CLASS USN

NAVY OCCUPATION/TRAINING AND AWARDS HISTORY NAVPERS 601-4 (REV. 6-66)

2

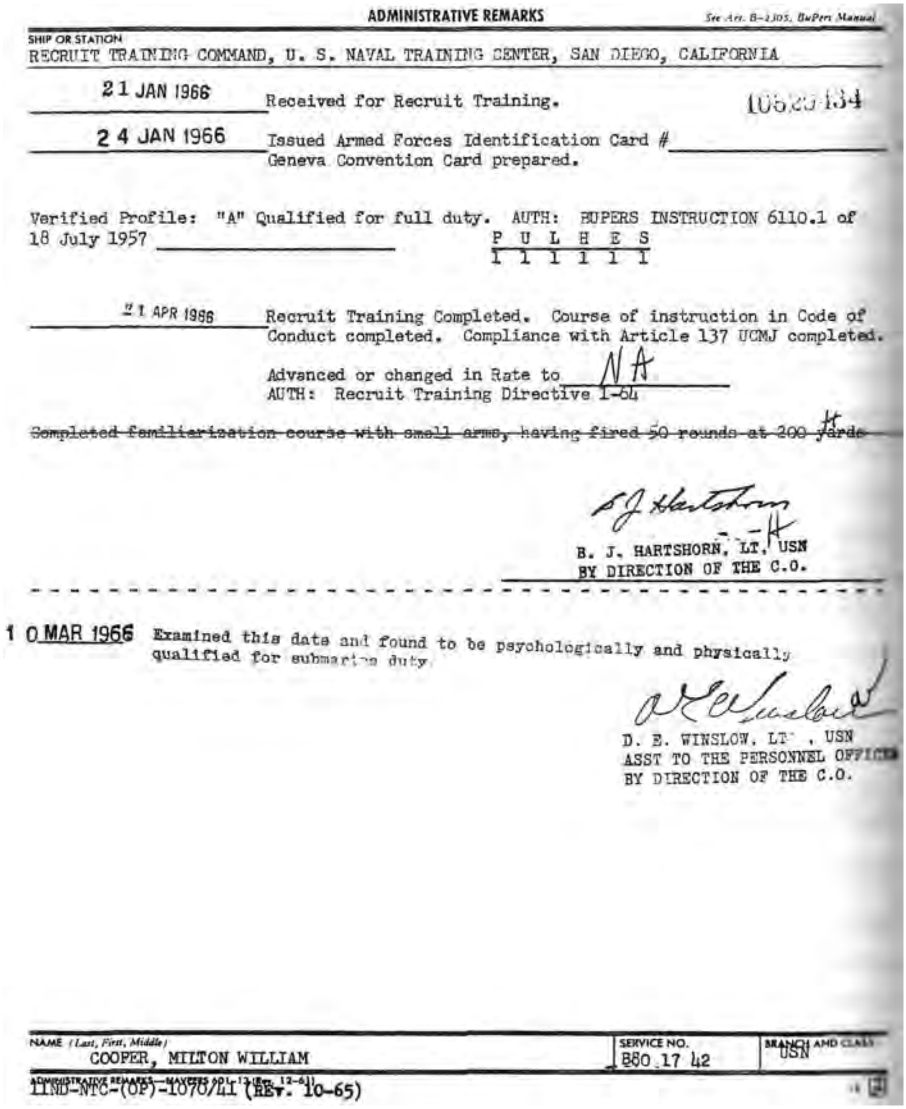

ADMINISTRATIVE REMARKS

See Art. B-2305, BuPers Manual

SHIP OR STATION
RECRUIT TRAINING COMMAND, U. S. NAVAL TRAINING CENTER, SAN DIEGO, CALIFORNIA

10520134

21 JAN 1966 Received for Recruit Training.

24 JAN 1966 Issued Armed Forces Identification Card #
Geneva Convention Card prepared.

Verified Profile: "A" Qualified for full duty. AUTH: BUPERS INSTRUCTION 6110.1 of 18 July 1957

P	U	L	H	E	S
1	1	1	1	1	1

21 APR 1966 Recruit Training Completed. Course of instruction in Code of Conduct completed. Compliance with Article 137 UCMJ completed.

Advanced or changed in Rate to NA
AUTH: Recruit Training Directive 1-64

~~Completed familiarization course with small arms, having fired 50 rounds at 200 yards~~ H

BJ Hartshorn
H
B. J. HARTSHORN, LT, USN
BY DIRECTION OF THE C.O.

10 MAR 1966 Examined this date and found to be psychologically and physically qualified for submarine duty.

D. E. WINSLOW, LT , USN
ASST TO THE PERSONNEL OFFICER
BY DIRECTION OF THE C.O.

NAME *(Last, First, Middle)*	SERVICE NO.	BRANCH AND CLASS
COOPER, MILTON WILLIAM	B80 17 42	USN

ADMINISTRATIVE REMARKS—NAVPERS 601-13 (Rev. 12-61)
11ND-NTC-(OP)-1070/41 (REV. 10-65)

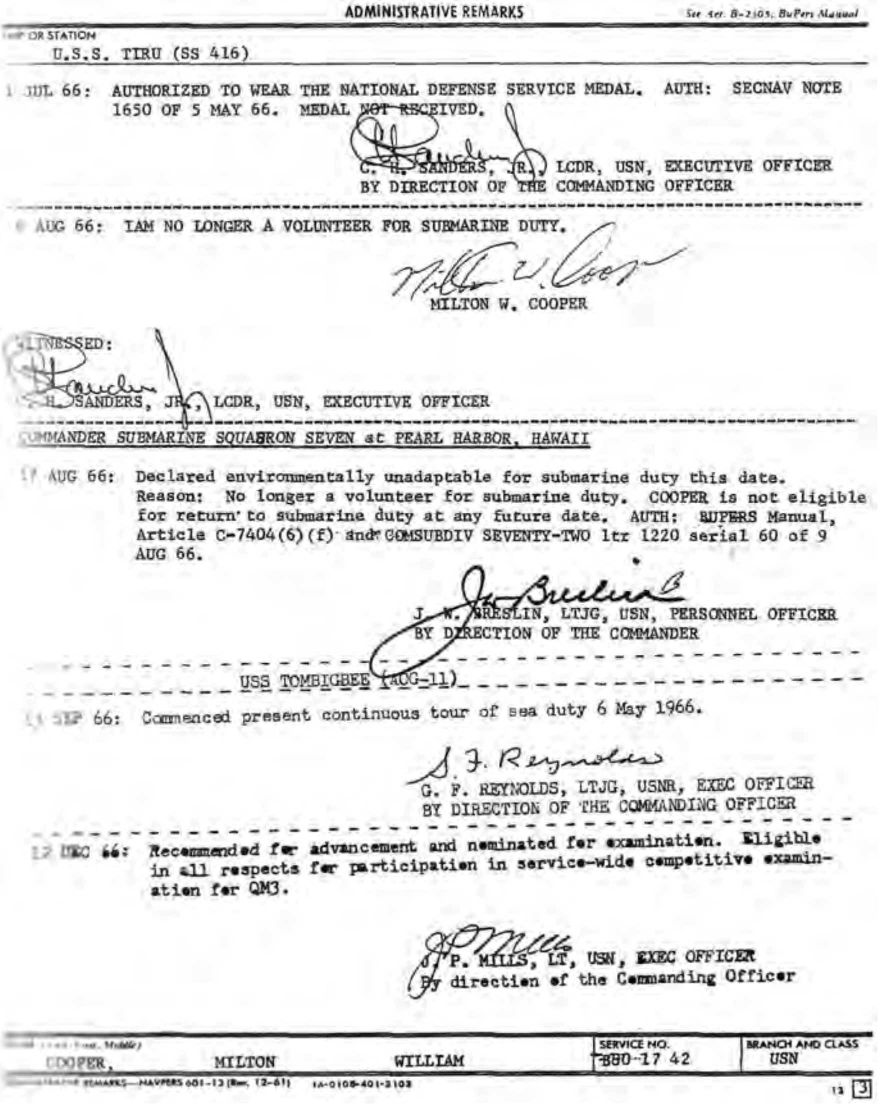

ADMINISTRATIVE REMARKS

See Art. B-2105, BuPers Manual

OR STATION

U.S.S. TIRU (SS 416)

1 JUL 66: AUTHORIZED TO WEAR THE NATIONAL DEFENSE SERVICE MEDAL. AUTH: SECNAV NOTE 1650 OF 5 MAY 66. MEDAL ~~NOT~~ RECEIVED.

C. H. SANDERS, JR., LCDR, USN, EXECUTIVE OFFICER
BY DIRECTION OF THE COMMANDING OFFICER

AUG 66: IAM NO LONGER A VOLUNTEER FOR SUBMARINE DUTY.

Milton W. Cooper
MILTON W. COOPER

WITNESSED:

C. H. SANDERS, JR., LCDR, USN, EXECUTIVE OFFICER

COMMANDER SUBMARINE SQUADRON SEVEN at PEARL HARBOR, HAWAII

17 AUG 66: Declared environmentally unadaptable for submarine duty this date. Reason: No longer a volunteer for submarine duty. COOPER is not eligible for return to submarine duty at any future date. AUTH: BUPERS Manual, Article C-7404(6)(f) and COMSUBDIV SEVENTY-TWO ltr 1220 serial 60 of 9 AUG 66.

J. W. BRESLIN, LTJG, USN, PERSONNEL OFFICER
BY DIRECTION OF THE COMMANDER

USS TOMBIGBEE (AOG-11)

SEP 66: Commenced present continuous tour of sea duty 6 May 1966.

G. F. Reynolds
G. F. REYNOLDS, LTJG, USNR, EXEC OFFICER
BY DIRECTION OF THE COMMANDING OFFICER

12 DEC 66: Recommended for advancement and nominated for examination. Eligible in all respects for participation in service-wide competitive examination for QM3.

J. P. Mills
J. P. MILLS, LT, USN, EXEC OFFICER
By direction of the Commanding Officer

(Last, First, Middle)			SERVICE NO.	BRANCH AND CLASS
COOPER,	MILTON	WILLIAM	880 17 42	USN

REMARKS—NAVPERS 601-13 (Rev. 12-61) 1A-0108-401-3103

13 3

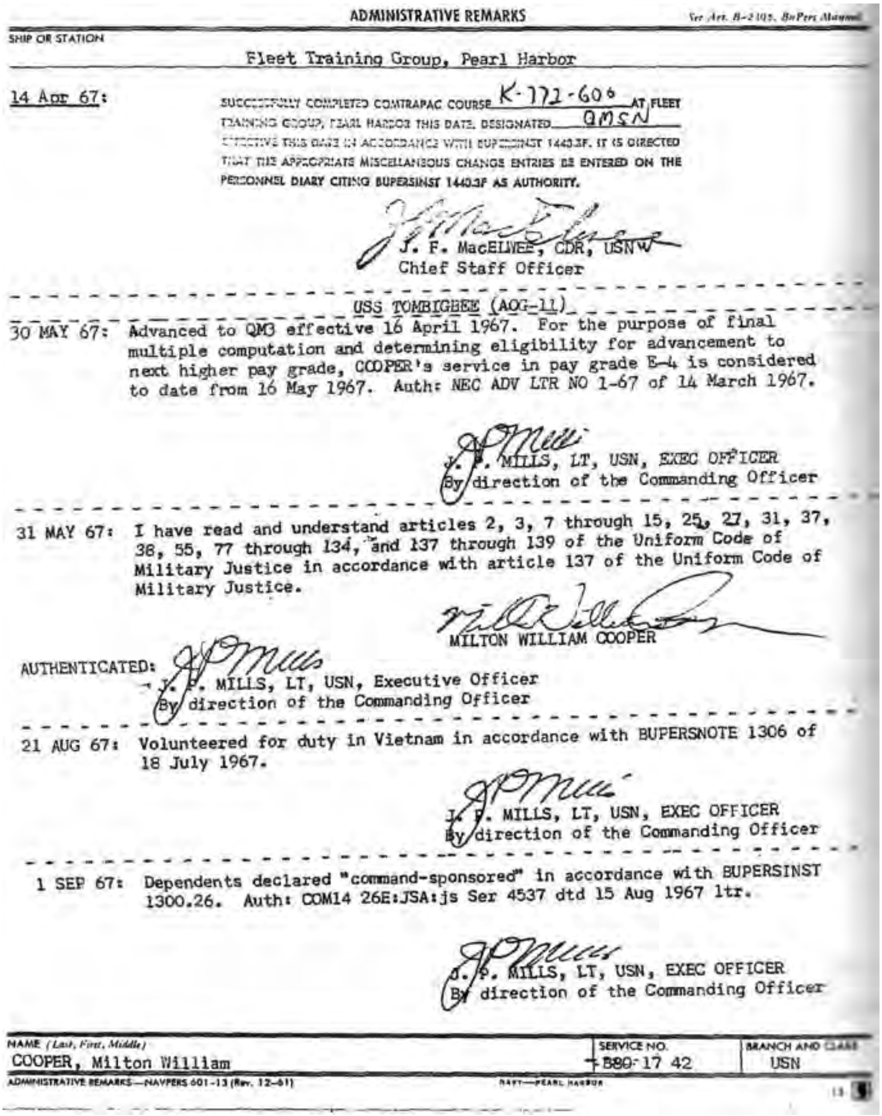

ADMINISTRATIVE REMARKS

See Art. B-2105, BuPers Manual

SHIP OR STATION

Fleet Training Group, Pearl Harbor

14 Apr 67: SUCCESSFULLY COMPLETED COMTRAPAC COURSE K-772-606 AT FLEET TRAINING GROUP, PEARL HARBOR THIS DATE. DESIGNATED QMSN EFFECTIVE THIS DATE IN ACCORDANCE WITH BUPERSINST 1440.3F. IT IS DIRECTED THAT THE APPROPRIATE MISCELLANEOUS CHANGE ENTRIES BE ENTERED ON THE PERSONNEL DIARY CITING BUPERSINST 1440.3F AS AUTHORITY.

J. F. MacELWEE, CDR, USNW
Chief Staff Officer

USS TOMBIGBEE (AOG-11)

30 MAY 67: Advanced to QM3 effective 16 April 1967. For the purpose of final multiple computation and determining eligibility for advancement to next higher pay grade, COOPER's service in pay grade E-4 is considered to date from 16 May 1967. Auth: NEC ADV LTR NO 1-67 of 14 March 1967.

J. P. MILLS, LT, USN, EXEC OFFICER
By direction of the Commanding Officer

31 MAY 67: I have read and understand articles 2, 3, 7 through 15, 25, 27, 31, 37, 38, 55, 77 through 134, and 137 through 139 of the Uniform Code of Military Justice in accordance with article 137 of the Uniform Code of Military Justice.

MILTON WILLIAM COOPER

AUTHENTICATED: J. P. MILLS, LT, USN, Executive Officer
By direction of the Commanding Officer

21 AUG 67: Volunteered for duty in Vietnam in accordance with BUPERSNOTE 1306 of 18 July 1967.

J. P. MILLS, LT, USN, EXEC OFFICER
By direction of the Commanding Officer

1 SEP 67: Dependents declared "command-sponsored" in accordance with BUPERSINST 1300.26. Auth: COM14 26E:JSA:js Ser 4537 dtd 15 Aug 1967 ltr.

J. P. MILLS, LT, USN, EXEC OFFICER
By direction of the Commanding Officer

NAME (Last, First, Middle)	SERVICE NO.	BRANCH AND CLASS
COOPER, Milton William	B80-17 42	USN

ADMINISTRATIVE REMARKS—NAVPERS 601-13 (Rev. 12-61) NAVY—PEARL HARBOR

13

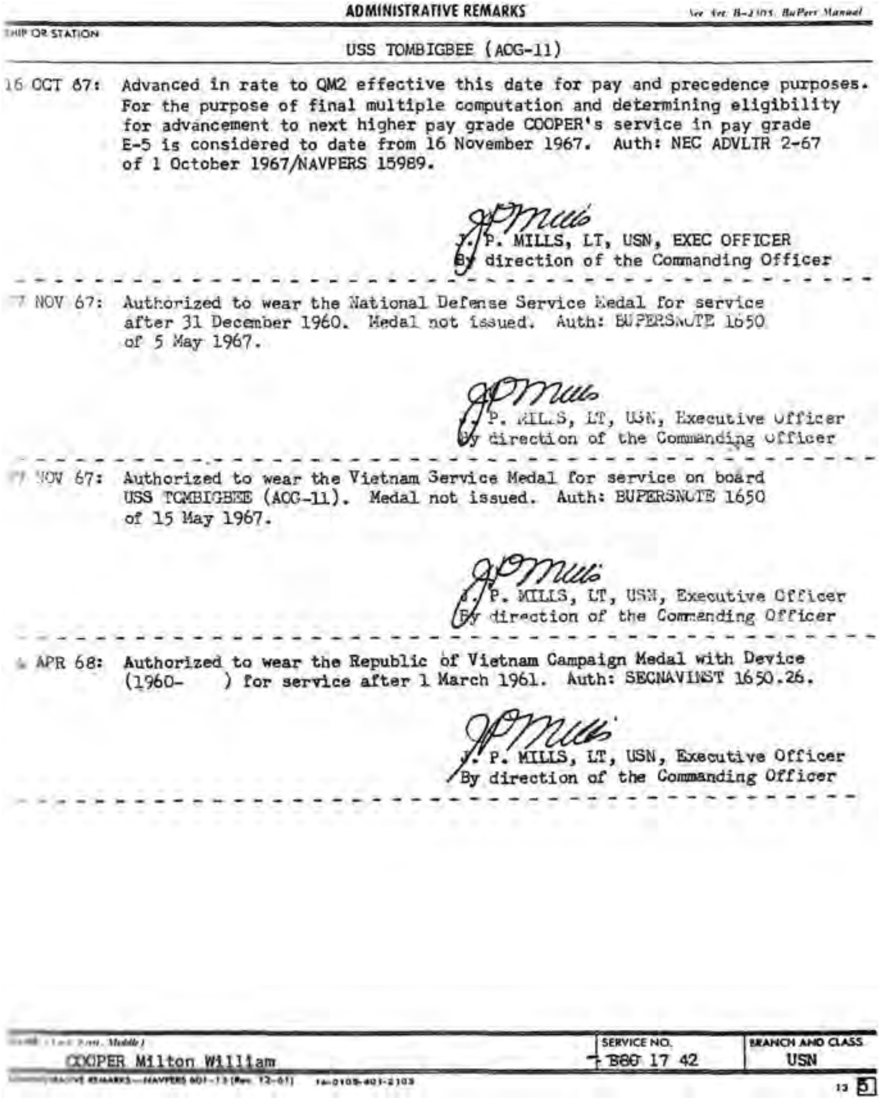

ADMINISTRATIVE REMARKS See Art. B-2305, BuPers Manual

SHIP OR STATION

USS TOMBIGBEE (AOG-11)

16 OCT 67: Advanced in rate to QM2 effective this date for pay and precedence purposes. For the purpose of final multiple computation and determining eligibility for advancement to next higher pay grade COOPER's service in pay grade E-5 is considered to date from 16 November 1967. Auth: NEC ADVLTR 2-67 of 1 October 1967/NAVPERS 15989.

JPMills
J. P. MILLS, LT, USN, EXEC OFFICER
By direction of the Commanding Officer

- -

7 NOV 67: Authorized to wear the National Defense Service Medal for service after 31 December 1960. Medal not issued. Auth: BUPERSNOTE 1650 of 5 May 1967.

JPMills
J. P. MILLS, LT, USN, Executive Officer
By direction of the Commanding Officer

- -

7 NOV 67: Authorized to wear the Vietnam Service Medal for service on board USS TOMBIGBEE (AOG-11). Medal not issued. Auth: BUPERSNOTE 1650 of 15 May 1967.

JPMills
J. P. MILLS, LT, USN, Executive Officer
By direction of the Commanding Officer

- -

APR 68: Authorized to wear the Republic of Vietnam Campaign Medal with Device (1960-) for service after 1 March 1961. Auth: SECNAVINST 1650.26.

JPMills
J. P. MILLS, LT, USN, Executive Officer
By direction of the Commanding Officer

- -

NAME (Last, First, Middle)	SERVICE NO.	BRANCH AND CLASS
COOPER Milton William	~~B80~~ 17 42	USN

ADMINISTRATIVE REMARKS—NAVPERS 601-13 (Rev. 12-61) 14-0105-401-2103

13 5

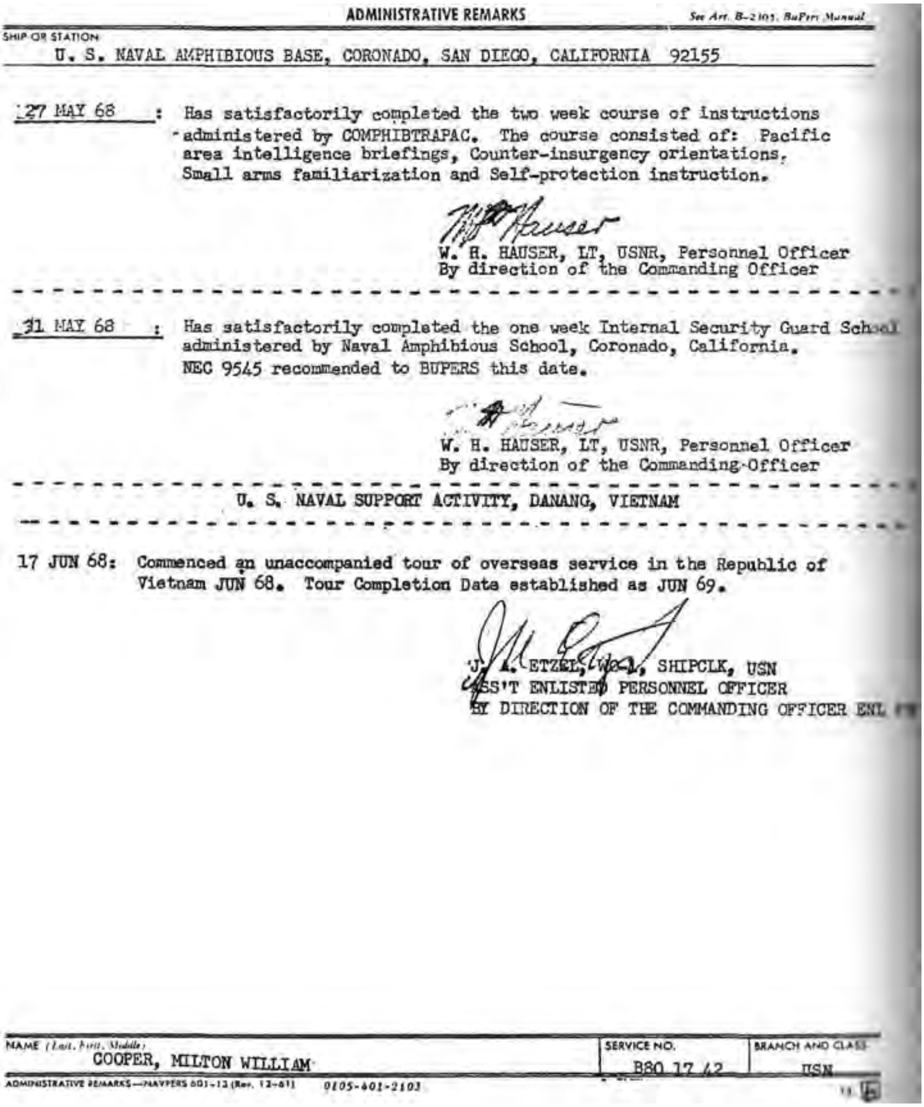

ADMINISTRATIVE REMARKS

See Art. B-2103, BuPers Manual

SHIP OR STATION

U. S. NAVAL AMPHIBIOUS BASE, CORONADO, SAN DIEGO, CALIFORNIA 92155

27 MAY 68 : Has satisfactorily completed the two week course of instructions administered by COMPHIBTRAPAC. The course consisted of: Pacific area intelligence briefings, Counter-insurgency orientations, Small arms familiarization and Self-protection instruction.

WH Hauser

W. H. HAUSER, LT, USNR, Personnel Officer
By direction of the Commanding Officer

- -

31 MAY 68 : Has satisfactorily completed the one week Internal Security Guard School administered by Naval Amphibious School, Coronado, California. NEC 9545 recommended to BUPERS this date.

W. H. HAUSER, LT, USNR, Personnel Officer
By direction of the Commanding Officer

- -

U. S. NAVAL SUPPORT ACTIVITY, DANANG, VIETNAM

- -

17 JUN 68: Commenced an unaccompanied tour of overseas service in the Republic of Vietnam JUN 68. Tour Completion Date established as JUN 69.

J. A. ETZEL, WO-1, SHIPCLK, USN
ASS'T ENLISTED PERSONNEL OFFICER
BY DIRECTION OF THE COMMANDING OFFICER ENL

NAME (Last, First, Middle) COOPER, MILTON WILLIAM	SERVICE NO. B80 17 42	BRANCH AND CLASS USN

ADMINISTRATIVE REMARKS—NAVPERS 601-13 (Rev. 12-61) 0105-601-2103

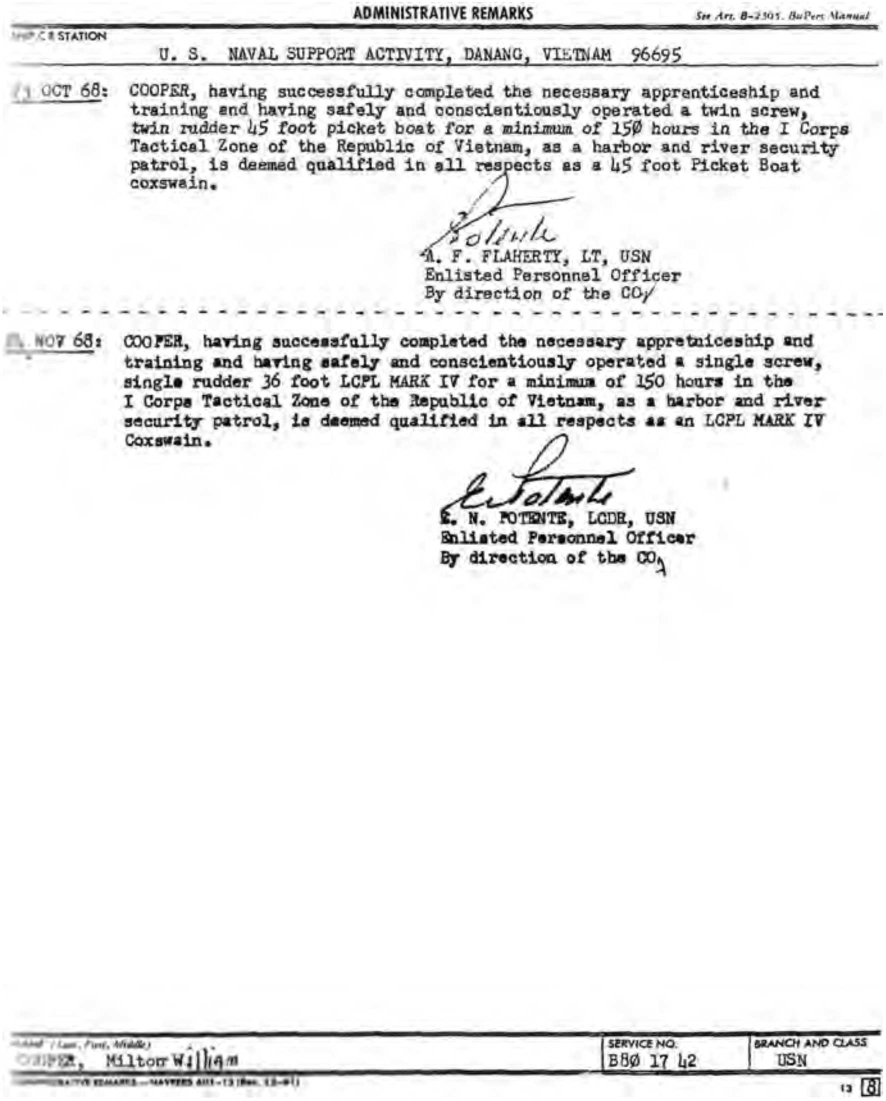

ADMINISTRATIVE REMARKS

See Art. B-2305, BuPers Manual

SHIP OR STATION

U. S. NAVAL SUPPORT ACTIVITY, DANANG, VIETNAM 96695

[illegible] OCT 68: COOPER, having successfully completed the necessary apprenticeship and training and having safely and conscientiously operated a twin screw, twin rudder 45 foot picket boat for a minimum of 150 hours in the I Corps Tactical Zone of the Republic of Vietnam, as a harbor and river security patrol, is deemed qualified in all respects as a 45 foot Picket Boat coxswain.

Potente
A. F. FLAHERTY, LT, USN
Enlisted Personnel Officer
By direction of the CO

[illegible] NOV 68: COOPER, having successfully completed the necessary appretniceship and training and having safely and conscientiously operated a single screw, single rudder 36 foot LCPL MARK IV for a minimum of 150 hours in the I Corps Tactical Zone of the Republic of Vietnam, as a harbor and river security patrol, is deemed qualified in all respects as an LCPL MARK IV Coxswain.

E Potente
E. N. POTENTE, LCDR, USN
Enlisted Personnel Officer
By direction of the CO

NAME (Last, First, Middle)	SERVICE NO.	BRANCH AND CLASS
COOPER, Milton William	B80 17 42	USN

ADMINISTRATIVE REMARKS—NAVPERS 601-13 (Rev. 12-61)

13 8

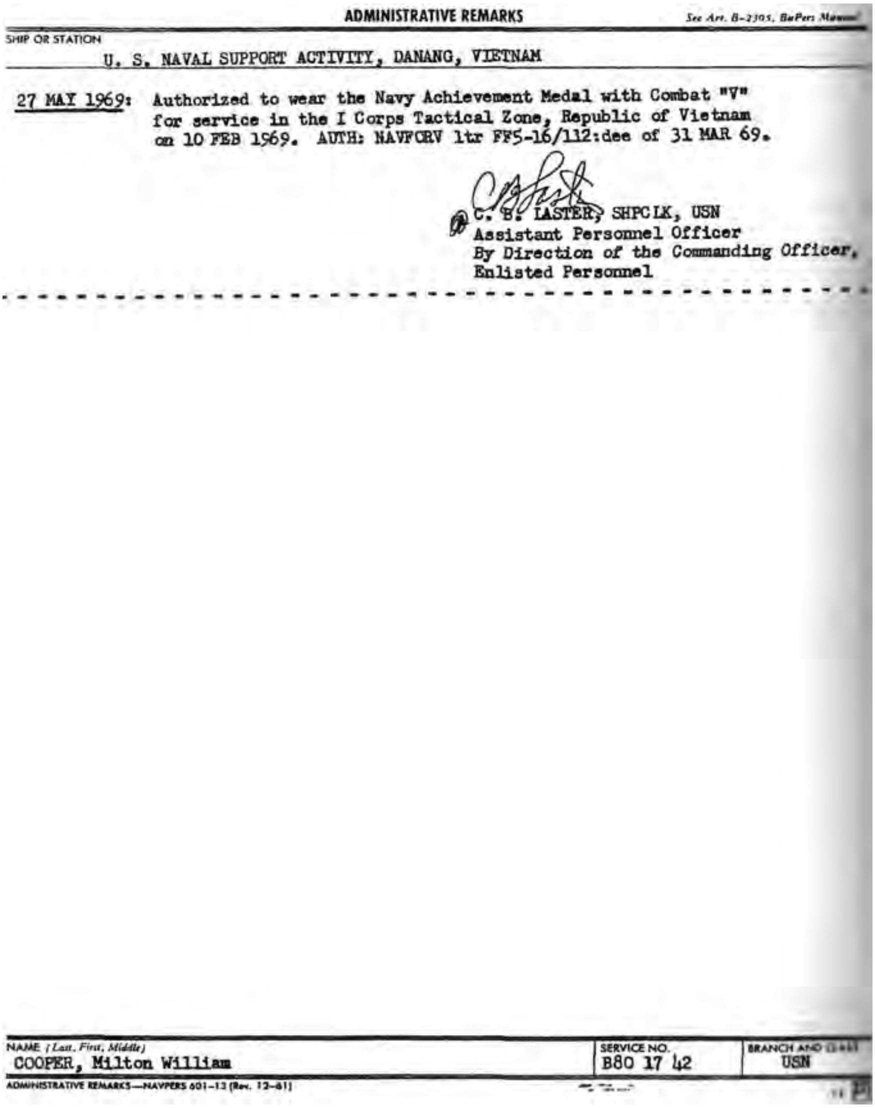

ADMINISTRATIVE REMARKS

See Art. B-2305, BuPers Ma

SHIP OR STATION

U. S. NAVAL SUPPORT ACTIVITY, DANANG, VIETNAM

27 MAY 1969: Authorized to wear the Navy Achievement Medal with Combat "V" for service in the I Corps Tactical Zone, Republic of Vietnam on 10 FEB 1969. AUTH: NAVFORV ltr FF5-16/112:dee of 31 MAR 69.

C. B. LASTER, SHPCLK, USN
Assistant Personnel Officer
By Direction of the Commanding Officer,
Enlisted Personnel

NAME *(Last, First, Middle)* COOPER, Milton William	SERVICE NO. B80 17 42	BRANCH AND USN

ADMINISTRATIVE REMARKS—NAVPERS 601-13 (Rev. 12-61)

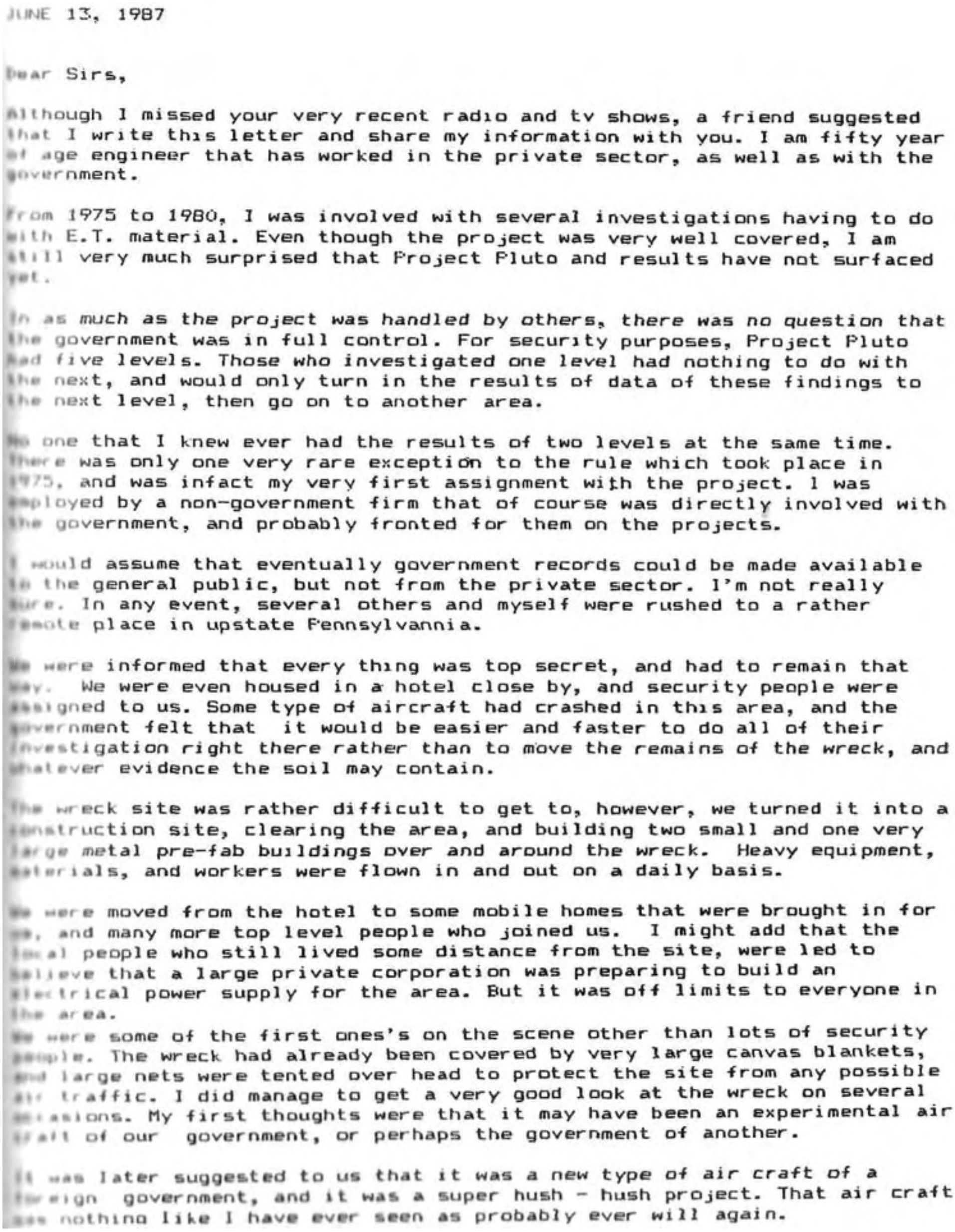

JUNE 13, 1987

Dear Sirs,

Although I missed your very recent radio and tv shows, a friend suggested that I write this letter and share my information with you. I am fifty year of age engineer that has worked in the private sector, as well as with the government.

From 1975 to 1980, I was involved with several investigations having to do with E.T. material. Even though the project was very well covered, I am still very much surprised that Project Pluto and results have not surfaced yet.

In as much as the project was handled by others, there was no question that the government was in full control. For security purposes, Project Pluto had five levels. Those who investigated one level had nothing to do with the next, and would only turn in the results of data of these findings to the next level, then go on to another area.

No one that I knew ever had the results of two levels at the same time. There was only one very rare exception to the rule which took place in 1975, and was infact my very first assignment with the project. I was employed by a non-government firm that of course was directly involved with the government, and probably fronted for them on the projects.

I would assume that eventually government records could be made available to the general public, but not from the private sector. I'm not really sure. In any event, several others and myself were rushed to a rather remote place in upstate Pennsylvannia.

We were informed that every thing was top secret, and had to remain that way. We were even housed in a hotel close by, and security people were assigned to us. Some type of aircraft had crashed in this area, and the government felt that it would be easier and faster to do all of their investigation right there rather than to move the remains of the wreck, and whatever evidence the soil may contain.

The wreck site was rather difficult to get to, however, we turned it into a construction site, clearing the area, and building two small and one very large metal pre-fab buildings over and around the wreck. Heavy equipment, materials, and workers were flown in and out on a daily basis.

We were moved from the hotel to some mobile homes that were brought in for us, and many more top level people who joined us. I might add that the local people who still lived some distance from the site, were led to believe that a large private corporation was preparing to build an electrical power supply for the area. But it was off limits to everyone in the area.

We were some of the first ones's on the scene other than lots of security people. The wreck had already been covered by very large canvas blankets, and large nets were tented over head to protect the site from any possible air traffic. I did manage to get a very good look at the wreck on several occasions. My first thoughts were that it may have been an experimental air craft of our government, or perhaps the government of another.

It was later suggested to us that it was a new type of air craft of a foreign government, and it was a super hush - hush project. That air craft was nothing like I have ever seen as probably ever will again.

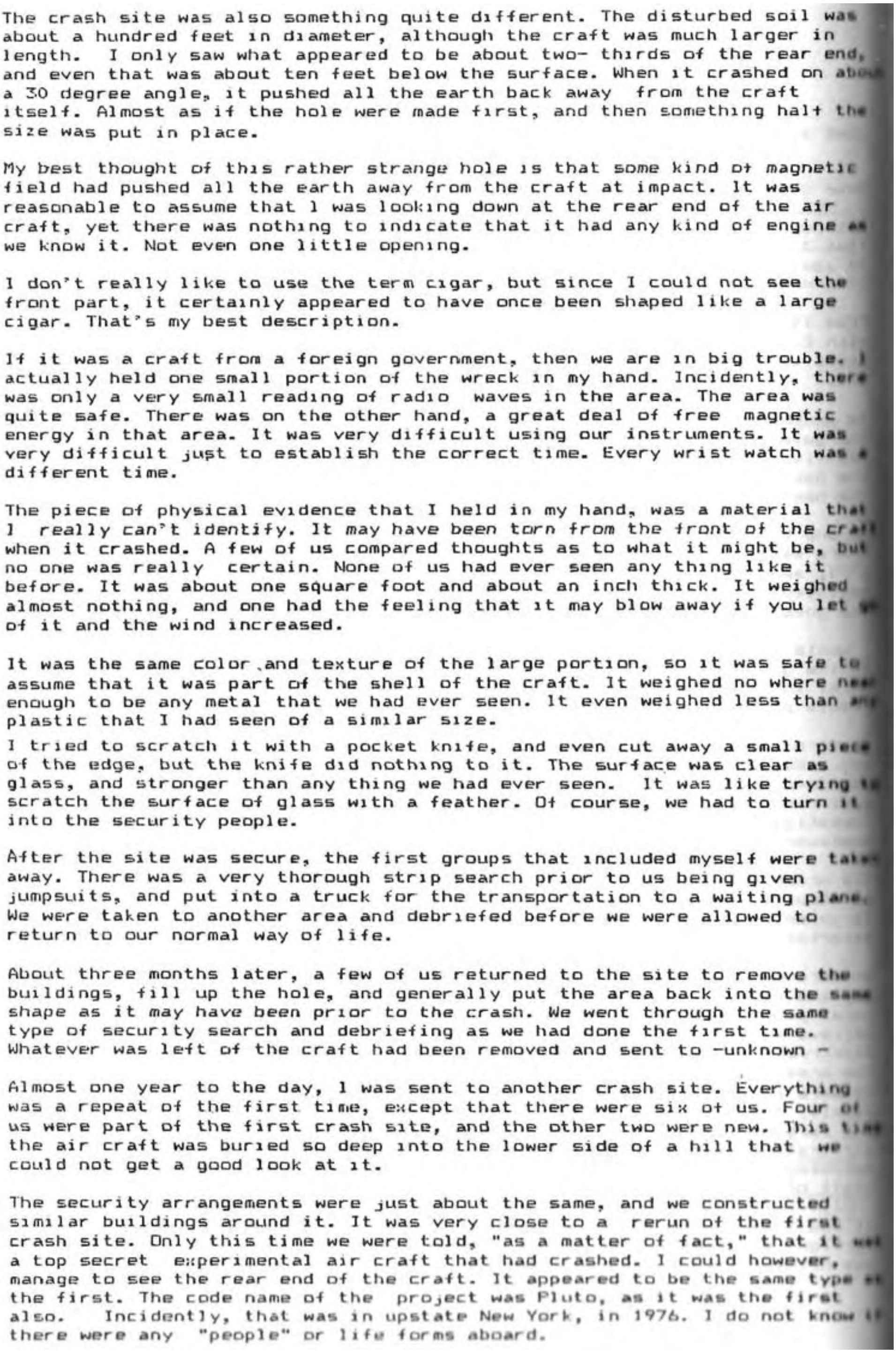

The crash site was also something quite different. The disturbed soil was about a hundred feet in diameter, although the craft was much larger in length. I only saw what appeared to be about two- thirds of the rear end, and even that was about ten feet below the surface. When it crashed on about a 30 degree angle, it pushed all the earth back away from the craft itself. Almost as if the hole were made first, and then something half the size was put in place.

My best thought of this rather strange hole is that some kind of magnetic field had pushed all the earth away from the craft at impact. It was reasonable to assume that I was looking down at the rear end of the air craft, yet there was nothing to indicate that it had any kind of engine as we know it. Not even one little opening.

I don't really like to use the term cigar, but since I could not see the front part, it certainly appeared to have once been shaped like a large cigar. That's my best description.

If it was a craft from a foreign government, then we are in big trouble. I actually held one small portion of the wreck in my hand. Incidently, there was only a very small reading of radio waves in the area. The area was quite safe. There was on the other hand, a great deal of free magnetic energy in that area. It was very difficult using our instruments. It was very difficult just to establish the correct time. Every wrist watch was a different time.

The piece of physical evidence that I held in my hand, was a material that I really can't identify. It may have been torn from the front of the craft when it crashed. A few of us compared thoughts as to what it might be, but no one was really certain. None of us had ever seen any thing like it before. It was about one square foot and about an inch thick. It weighed almost nothing, and one had the feeling that it may blow away if you let go of it and the wind increased.

It was the same color and texture of the large portion, so it was safe to assume that it was part of the shell of the craft. It weighed no where near enough to be any metal that we had ever seen. It even weighed less than any plastic that I had seen of a similar size.

I tried to scratch it with a pocket knife, and even cut away a small piece of the edge, but the knife did nothing to it. The surface was clear as glass, and stronger than any thing we had ever seen. It was like trying to scratch the surface of glass with a feather. Of course, we had to turn it into the security people.

After the site was secure, the first groups that included myself were taken away. There was a very thorough strip search prior to us being given jumpsuits, and put into a truck for the transportation to a waiting plane. We were taken to another area and debriefed before we were allowed to return to our normal way of life.

About three months later, a few of us returned to the site to remove the buildings, fill up the hole, and generally put the area back into the same shape as it may have been prior to the crash. We went through the same type of security search and debriefing as we had done the first time. Whatever was left of the craft had been removed and sent to -unknown -

Almost one year to the day, I was sent to another crash site. Everything was a repeat of the first time, except that there were six of us. Four of us were part of the first crash site, and the other two were new. This time the air craft was buried so deep into the lower side of a hill that we could not get a good look at it.

The security arrangements were just about the same, and we constructed similar buildings around it. It was very close to a rerun of the first crash site. Only this time we were told, "as a matter of fact," that it was a top secret experimental air craft that had crashed. I could however, manage to see the rear end of the craft. It appeared to be the same type as the first. The code name of the project was Pluto, as it was the first also. Incidently, that was in upstate New York, in 1976. I do not know if there were any "people" or life forms aboard.

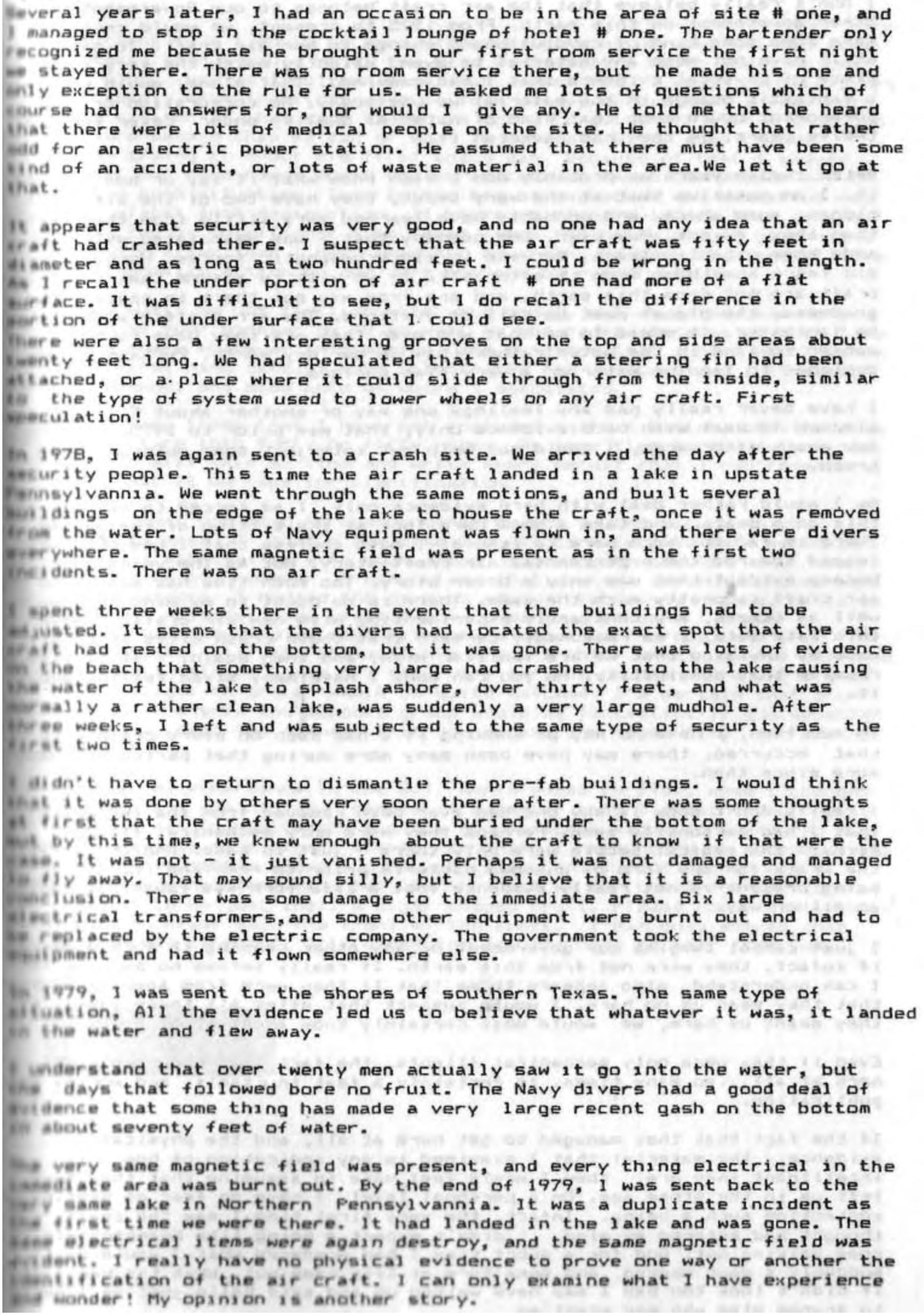

Several years later, I had an occasion to be in the area of site # one, and I managed to stop in the cocktail lounge of hotel # one. The bartender only recognized me because he brought in our first room service the first night we stayed there. There was no room service there, but he made his one and only exception to the rule for us. He asked me lots of questions which of course had no answers for, nor would I give any. He told me that he heard that there were lots of medical people on the site. He thought that rather odd for an electric power station. He assumed that there must have been some kind of an accident, or lots of waste material in the area.We let it go at that.

It appears that security was very good, and no one had any idea that an air craft had crashed there. I suspect that the air craft was fifty feet in diameter and as long as two hundred feet. I could be wrong in the length. As I recall the under portion of air craft # one had more of a flat surface. It was difficult to see, but I do recall the difference in the portion of the under surface that I could see.

There were also a few interesting grooves on the top and side areas about twenty feet long. We had speculated that either a steering fin had been attached, or a·place where it could slide through from the inside, similar to the type of system used to lower wheels on any air craft. First speculation!

In 1978, I was again sent to a crash site. We arrived the day after the security people. This time the air craft landed in a lake in upstate Pennsylvannia. We went through the same motions, and built several buildings on the edge of the lake to house the craft, once it was removed from the water. Lots of Navy equipment was flown in, and there were divers everywhere. The same magnetic field was present as in the first two incidents. There was no air craft.

I spent three weeks there in the event that the buildings had to be adjusted. It seems that the divers had located the exact spot that the air craft had rested on the bottom, but it was gone. There was lots of evidence on the beach that something very large had crashed into the lake causing the water of the lake to splash ashore, over thirty feet, and what was normally a rather clean lake, was suddenly a very large mudhole. After three weeks, I left and was subjected to the same type of security as the first two times.

I didn't have to return to dismantle the pre-fab buildings. I would think that it was done by others very soon there after. There was some thoughts at first that the craft may have been buried under the bottom of the lake, but by this time, we knew enough about the craft to know if that were the case. It was not - it just vanished. Perhaps it was not damaged and managed to fly away. That *may* sound silly, but I believe that it is a reasonable conclusion. There was some damage to the immediate area. Six large electrical transformers,and some other equipment were burnt out and had to be replaced by the electric company. The government took the electrical equipment and had it flown somewhere else.

In 1979, I was sent to the shores of southern Texas. The same type of situation, All the evidence led us to believe that whatever it was, it landed in the water and flew away.

I understand that over twenty men actually saw it go into the water, but the days that followed bore no fruit. The Navy divers had a good deal of evidence that some thing has made a very large recent gash on the bottom in about seventy feet of water.

The very same magnetic field was present, and every thing electrical in the immediate area was burnt out. By the end of 1979, I was sent back to the very same lake in Northern Pennsylvannia. It was a duplicate incident as the first time we were there. It had landed in the lake and was gone. The same electrical items were again destroy, and the same magnetic field was evident. I really have no physical evidence to prove one way or another the identification of the air craft. I can only examine what I have experience and wonder! My opinion is another story.

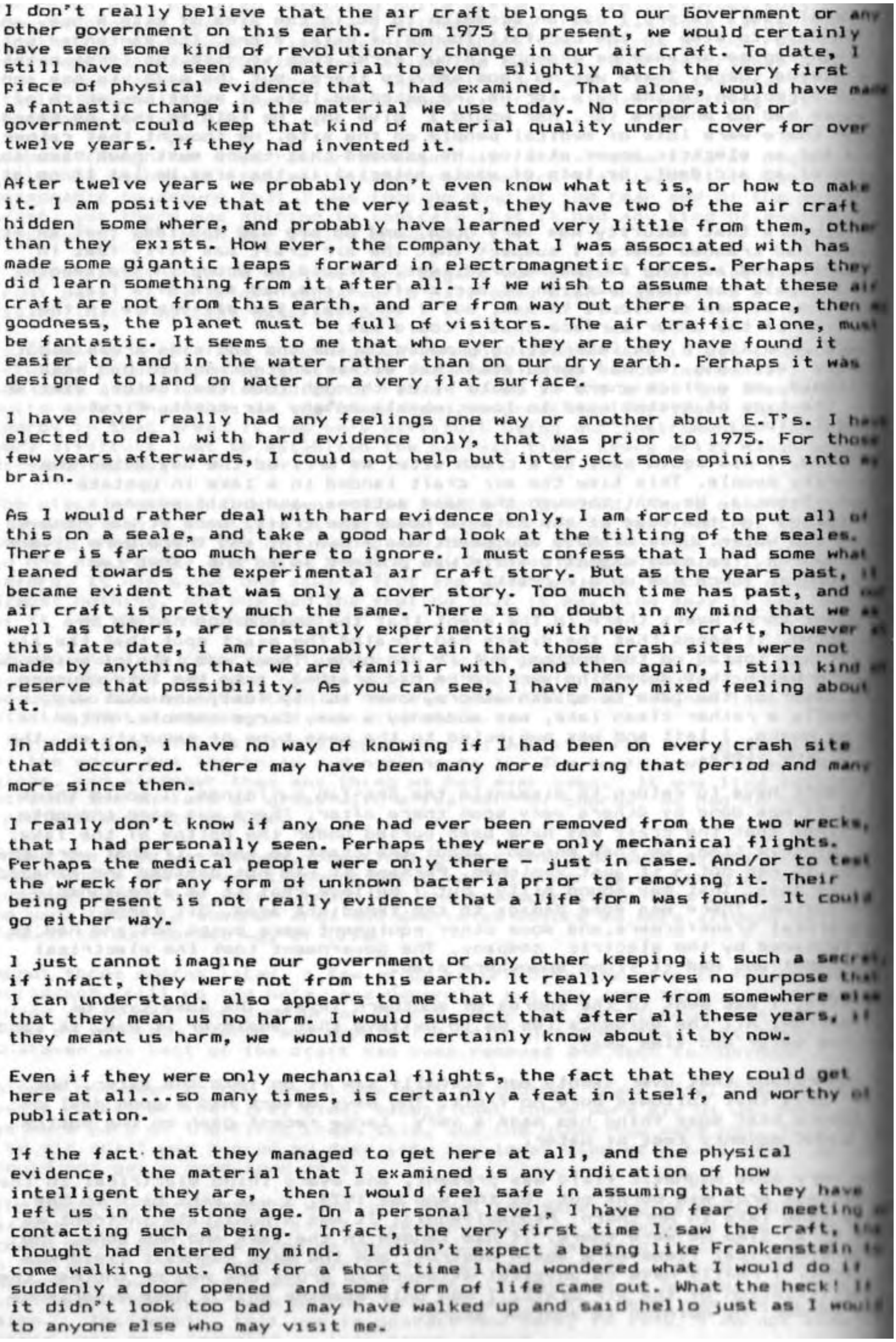

I don't really believe that the air craft belongs to our Government or any other government on this earth. From 1975 to present, we would certainly have seen some kind of revolutionary change in our air craft. To date, I still have not seen any material to even slightly match the very first piece of physical evidence that I had examined. That alone, would have made a fantastic change in the material we use today. No corporation or government could keep that kind of material quality under cover for over twelve years. If they had invented it.

After twelve years we probably don't even know what it is, or how to make it. I am positive that at the very least, they have two of the air craft hidden some where, and probably have learned very little from them, other than they exists. How ever, the company that I was associated with has made some gigantic leaps forward in electromagnetic forces. Perhaps they did learn something from it after all. If we wish to assume that these air craft are not from this earth, and are from way out there in space, then my goodness, the planet must be full of visitors. The air traffic alone, must be fantastic. It seems to me that who ever they are they have found it easier to land in the water rather than on our dry earth. Perhaps it was designed to land on water or a very flat surface.

I have never really had any feelings one way or another about E.T's. I have elected to deal with hard evidence only, that was prior to 1975. For those few years afterwards, I could not help but interject some opinions into my brain.

As I would rather deal with hard evidence only, I am forced to put all of this on a seale, and take a good hard look at the tilting of the seales. There is far too much here to ignore. I must confess that I had some what leaned towards the experimental air craft story. But as the years past, it became evident that was only a cover story. Too much time has past, and our air craft is pretty much the same. There is no doubt in my mind that we as well as others, are constantly experimenting with new air craft, however at this late date, i am reasonably certain that those crash sites were not made by anything that we are familiar with, and then again, I still kind of reserve that possibility. As you can see, I have many mixed feeling about it.

In addition, i have no way of knowing if I had been on every crash site that occurred. there may have been many more during that period and many more since then.

I really don't know if any one had ever been removed from the two wrecks, that I had personally seen. Perhaps they were only mechanical flights. Perhaps the medical people were only there - just in case. And/or to test the wreck for any form of unknown bacteria prior to removing it. Their being present is not really evidence that a life form was found. It could go either way.

I just cannot imagine our government or any other keeping it such a secret, if infact, they were not from this earth. It really serves no purpose that I can understand. also appears to me that if they were from somewhere else that they mean us no harm. I would suspect that after all these years, if they meant us harm, we would most certainly know about it by now.

Even if they were only mechanical flights, the fact that they could get here at all...so many times, is certainly a feat in itself, and worthy of publication.

If the fact that they managed to get here at all, and the physical evidence, the material that I examined is any indication of how intelligent they are, then I would feel safe in assuming that they have left us in the stone age. On a personal level, I have no fear of meeting or contacting such a being. Infact, the very first time I saw the craft, the thought had entered my mind. I didn't expect a being like Frankenstein to come walking out. And for a short time I had wondered what I would do if suddenly a door opened and some form of life came out. What the heck! If it didn't look too bad I may have walked up and said hello just as I would to anyone else who may visit me.

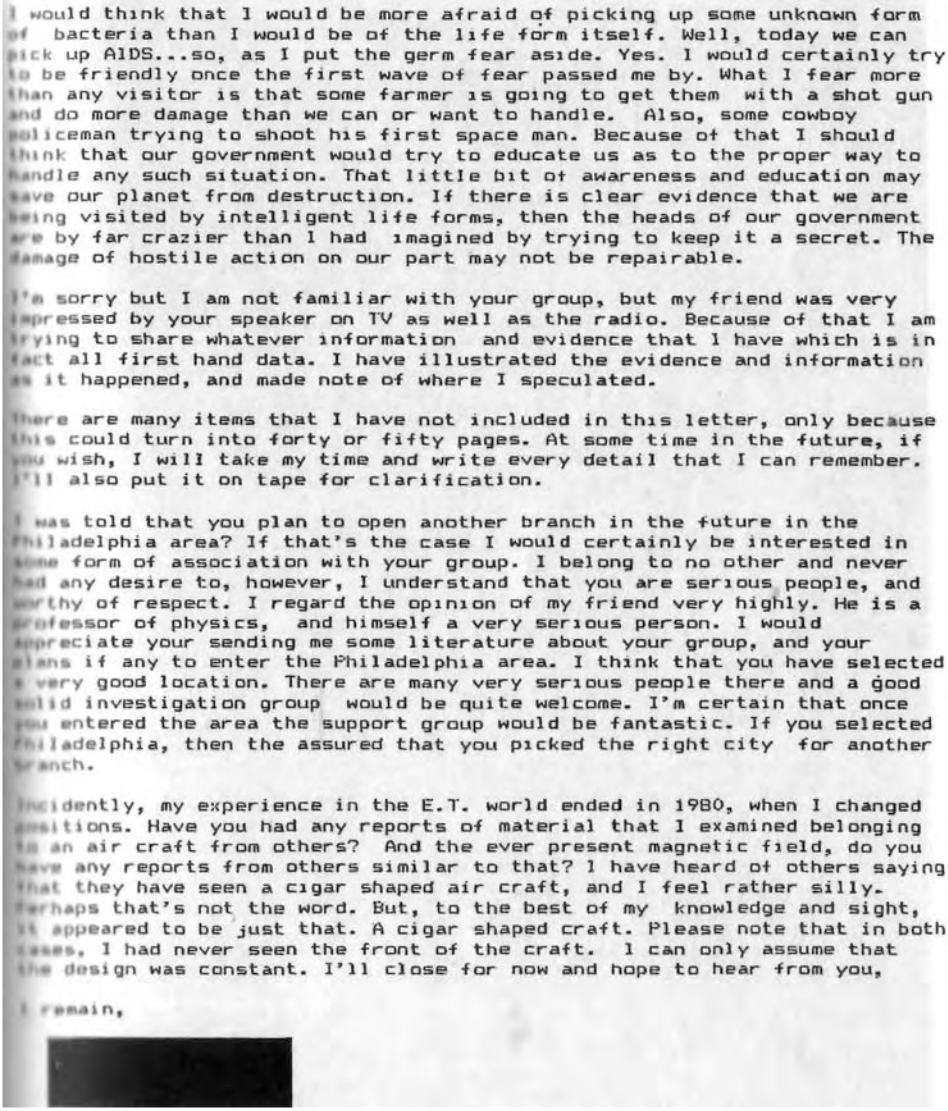

I would think that I would be more afraid of picking up some unknown form of bacteria than I would be of the life form itself. Well, today we can pick up AIDS...so, as I put the germ fear aside. Yes. I would certainly try to be friendly once the first wave of fear passed me by. What I fear more than any visitor is that some farmer is going to get them with a shot gun and do more damage than we can or want to handle. Also, some cowboy policeman trying to shoot his first space man. Because of that I should think that our government would try to educate us as to the proper way to handle any such situation. That little bit of awareness and education may save our planet from destruction. If there is clear evidence that we are being visited by intelligent life forms, then the heads of our government are by far crazier than I had imagined by trying to keep it a secret. The damage of hostile action on our part may not be repairable.

I'm sorry but I am not familiar with your group, but my friend was very impressed by your speaker on TV as well as the radio. Because of that I am trying to share whatever information and evidence that I have which is in fact all first hand data. I have illustrated the evidence and information as it happened, and made note of where I speculated.

There are many items that I have not included in this letter, only because this could turn into forty or fifty pages. At some time in the future, if you wish, I will take my time and write every detail that I can remember. I'll also put it on tape for clarification.

I was told that you plan to open another branch in the future in the Philadelphia area? If that's the case I would certainly be interested in some form of association with your group. I belong to no other and never had any desire to, however, I understand that you are serious people, and worthy of respect. I regard the opinion of my friend very highly. He is a professor of physics, and himself a very serious person. I would appreciate your sending me some literature about your group, and your plans if any to enter the Philadelphia area. I think that you have selected a very good location. There are many very serious people there and a good solid investigation group would be quite welcome. I'm certain that once you entered the area the support group would be fantastic. If you selected Philadelphia, then the assured that you picked the right city for another branch.

Incidently, my experience in the E.T. world ended in 1980, when I changed positions. Have you had any reports of material that I examined belonging to an air craft from others? And the ever present magnetic field, do you have any reports from others similar to that? I have heard of others saying that they have seen a cigar shaped air craft, and I feel rather silly. Perhaps that's not the word. But, to the best of my knowledge and sight, it appeared to be just that. A cigar shaped craft. Please note that in both cases, I had never seen the front of the craft. I can only assume that the design was constant. I'll close for now and hope to hear from you,

I remain,

[redacted]

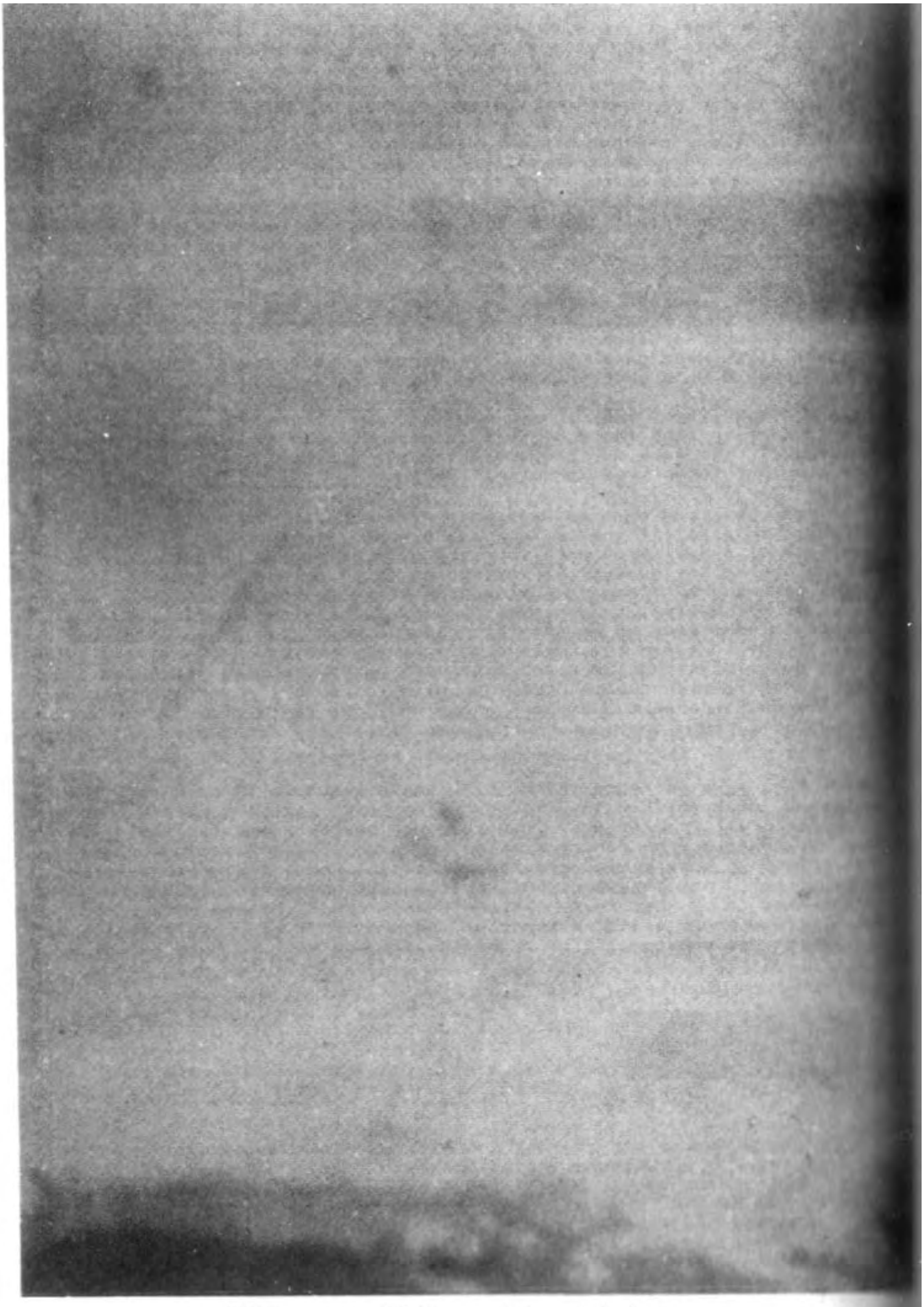

UFO seen in 1948 over Mount Rainier

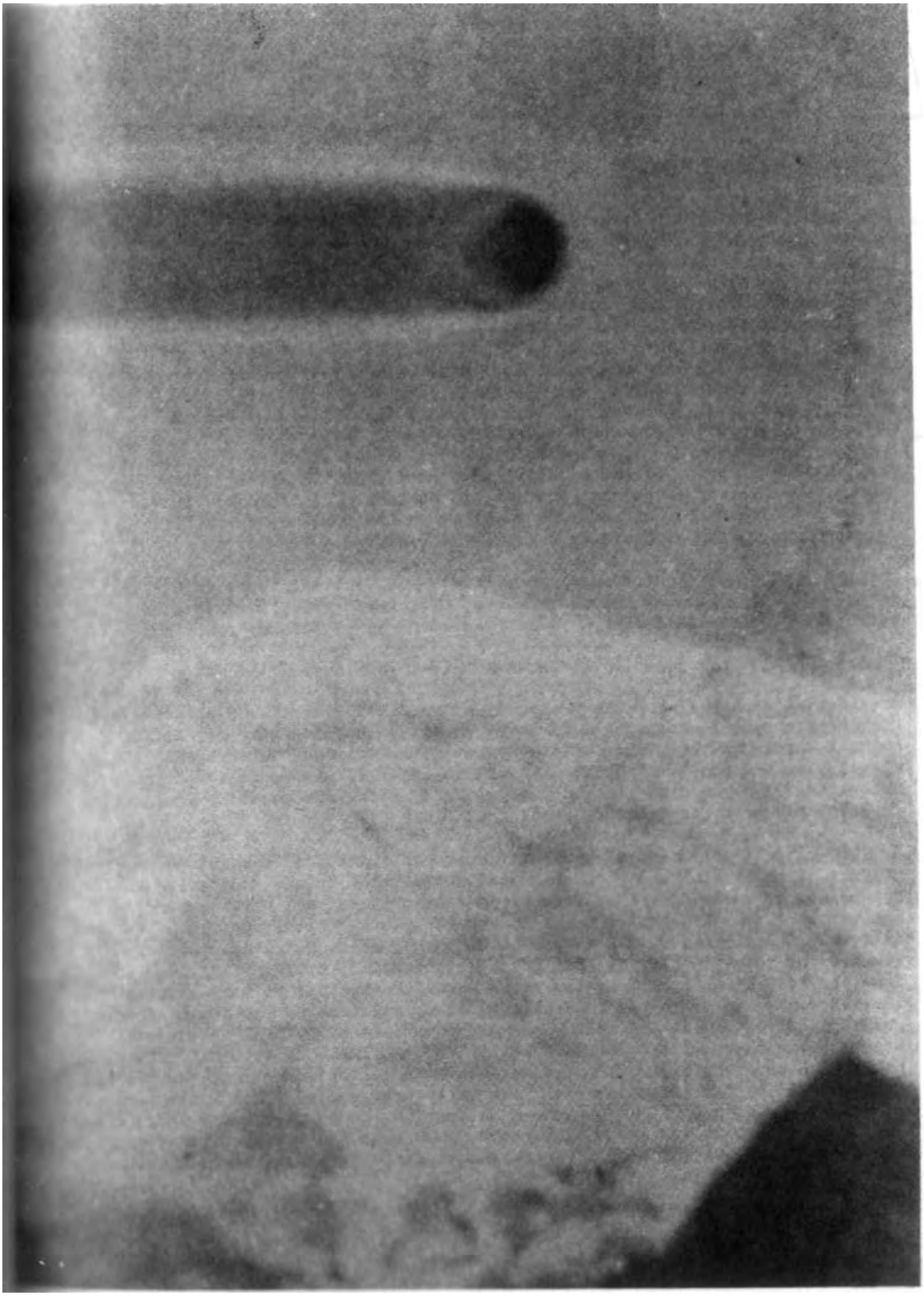

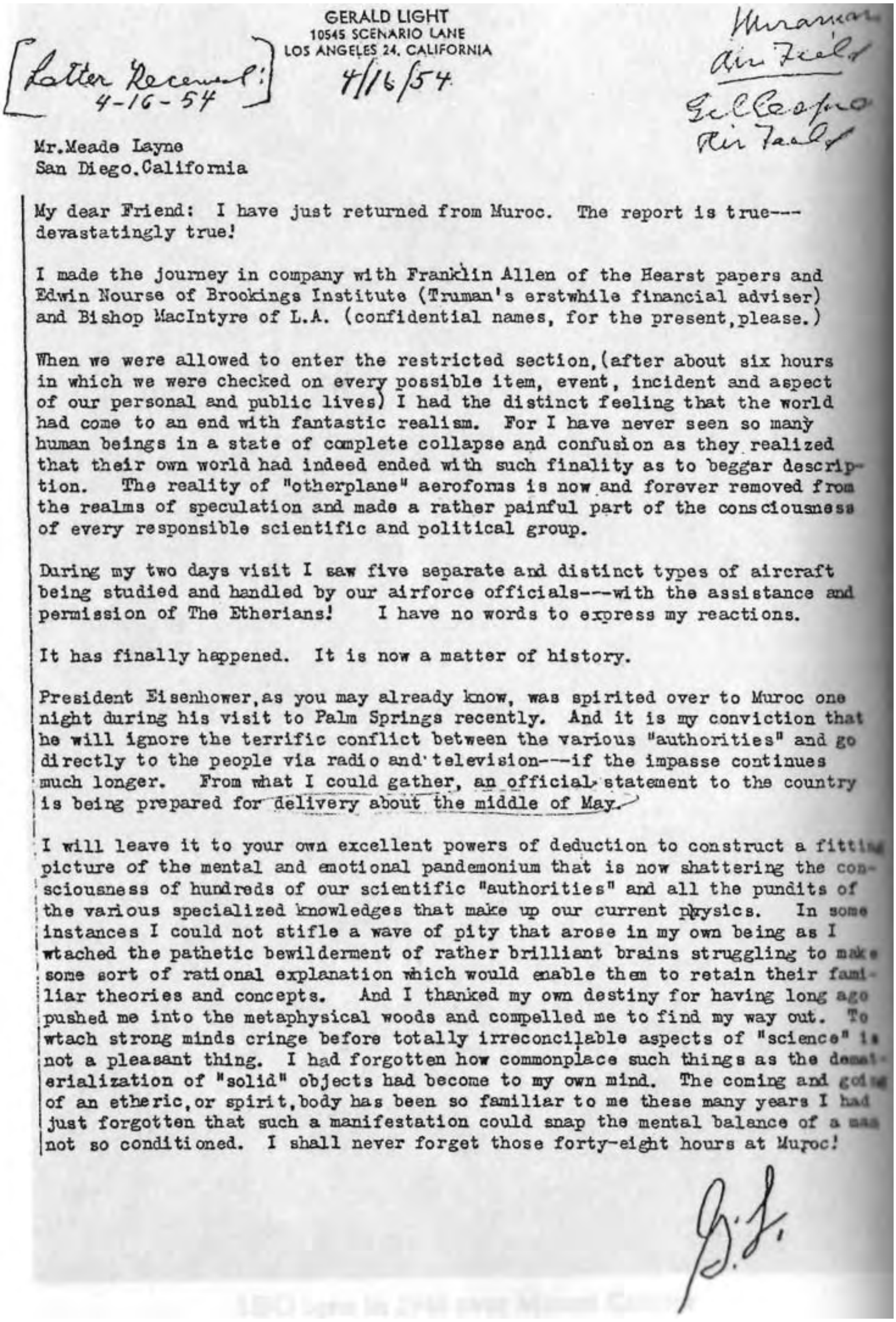

GERALD LIGHT
10545 SCENARIO LANE
LOS ANGELES 24, CALIFORNIA

[Letter Received: 4-16-54]

4/16/54

Muroc Air Field
[illegible] Air Field

Mr.Meade Layne
San Diego.California

My dear Friend: I have just returned from Muroc. The report is true---devastatingly true!

I made the journey in company with Franklin Allen of the Hearst papers and Edwin Nourse of Brookings Institute (Truman's erstwhile financial adviser) and Bishop MacIntyre of L.A. (confidential names, for the present,please.)

When we were allowed to enter the restricted section,(after about six hours in which we were checked on every possible item, event, incident and aspect of our personal and public lives) I had the distinct feeling that the world had come to an end with fantastic realism. For I have never seen so many human beings in a state of complete collapse and confusion as they realized that their own world had indeed ended with such finality as to beggar description. The reality of "otherplane" aeroforms is now and forever removed from the realms of speculation and made a rather painful part of the consciousness of every responsible scientific and political group.

During my two days visit I saw five separate and distinct types of aircraft being studied and handled by our airforce officials---with the assistance and permission of The Etherians! I have no words to express my reactions.

It has finally happened. It is now a matter of history.

President Eisenhower,as you may already know, was spirited over to Muroc one night during his visit to Palm Springs recently. And it is my conviction that he will ignore the terrific conflict between the various "authorities" and go directly to the people via radio and television---if the impasse continues much longer. From what I could gather, an official statement to the country is being prepared for delivery about the middle of May.

I will leave it to your own excellent powers of deduction to construct a fitting picture of the mental and emotional pandemonium that is now shattering the consciousness of hundreds of our scientific "authorities" and all the pundits of the various specialized knowledges that make up our current physics. In some instances I could not stifle a wave of pity that arose in my own being as I wtached the pathetic bewilderment of rather brilliant brains struggling to make some sort of rational explanation which would enable them to retain their familiar theories and concepts. And I thanked my own destiny for having long ago pushed me into the metaphysical woods and compelled me to find my way out. To wtach strong minds cringe before totally irreconcilable aspects of "science" is not a pleasant thing. I had forgotten how commonplace such things as the dematerialization of "solid" objects had become to my own mind. The coming and going of an etheric,or spirit,body has been so familiar to me these many years I had just forgotten that such a manifestation could snap the mental balance of a man not so conditioned. I shall never forget those forty-eight hours at Muroc!

G.L.

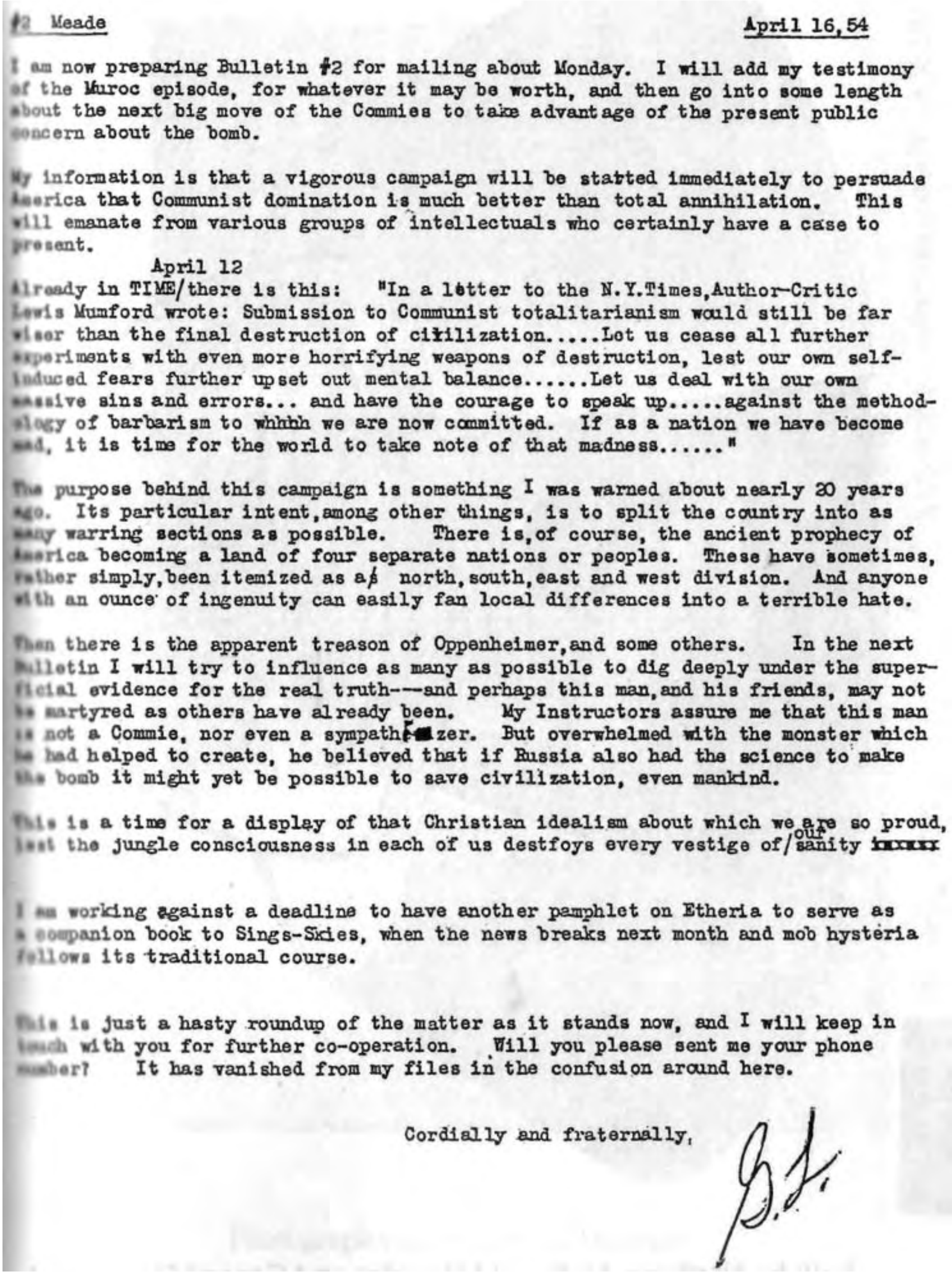

#2 Meade April 16, 54

I am now preparing Bulletin #2 for mailing about Monday. I will add my testimony of the Muroc episode, for whatever it may be worth, and then go into some length about the next big move of the Commies to take advantage of the present public concern about the bomb.

My information is that a vigorous campaign will be statted immediately to persuade America that Communist domination is much better than total annihilation. This will emanate from various groups of intellectuals who certainly have a case to present.

April 12

Already in TIME/there is this: "In a letter to the N.Y.Times, Author-Critic Lewis Mumford wrote: Submission to Communist totalitarianism would still be far wiser than the final destruction of cikilization.....Let us cease all further experiments with even more horrifying weapons of destruction, lest our own self-induced fears further upset out mental balance......Let us deal with our own massive sins and errors... and have the courage to speak up.....against the methodology of barbarism to whhhh we are now committed. If as a nation we have become mad, it is time for the world to take note of that madness......"

The purpose behind this campaign is something I was warned about nearly 20 years ago. Its particular intent, among other things, is to split the country into as many warring sections as possible. There is, of course, the ancient prophecy of America becoming a land of four separate nations or peoples. These have sometimes, rather simply, been itemized as a~~s~~ north, south, east and west division. And anyone with an ounce of ingenuity can easily fan local differences into a terrible hate.

Then there is the apparent treason of Oppenheimer, and some others. In the next Bulletin I will try to influence as many as possible to dig deeply under the superficial evidence for the real truth---and perhaps this man, and his friends, may not be martyred as others have already been. My Instructors assure me that this man is not a Commie, nor even a sympath[illegible]zer. But overwhelmed with the monster which he had helped to create, he believed that if Russia also had the science to make the bomb it might yet be possible to save civilization, even mankind.

This is a time for a display of that Christian idealism about which we are so proud, lest the jungle consciousness in each of us destfoys every vestige of/our sanity xxxxxx

I am working against a deadline to have another pamphlet on Etheria to serve as a companion book to Sings-Skies, when the news breaks next month and mob hysteria follows its traditional course.

This is just a hasty roundup of the matter as it stands now, and I will keep in touch with you for further co-operation. Will you please sent me your phone number? It has vanished from my files in the confusion around here.

Cordially and fraternally,

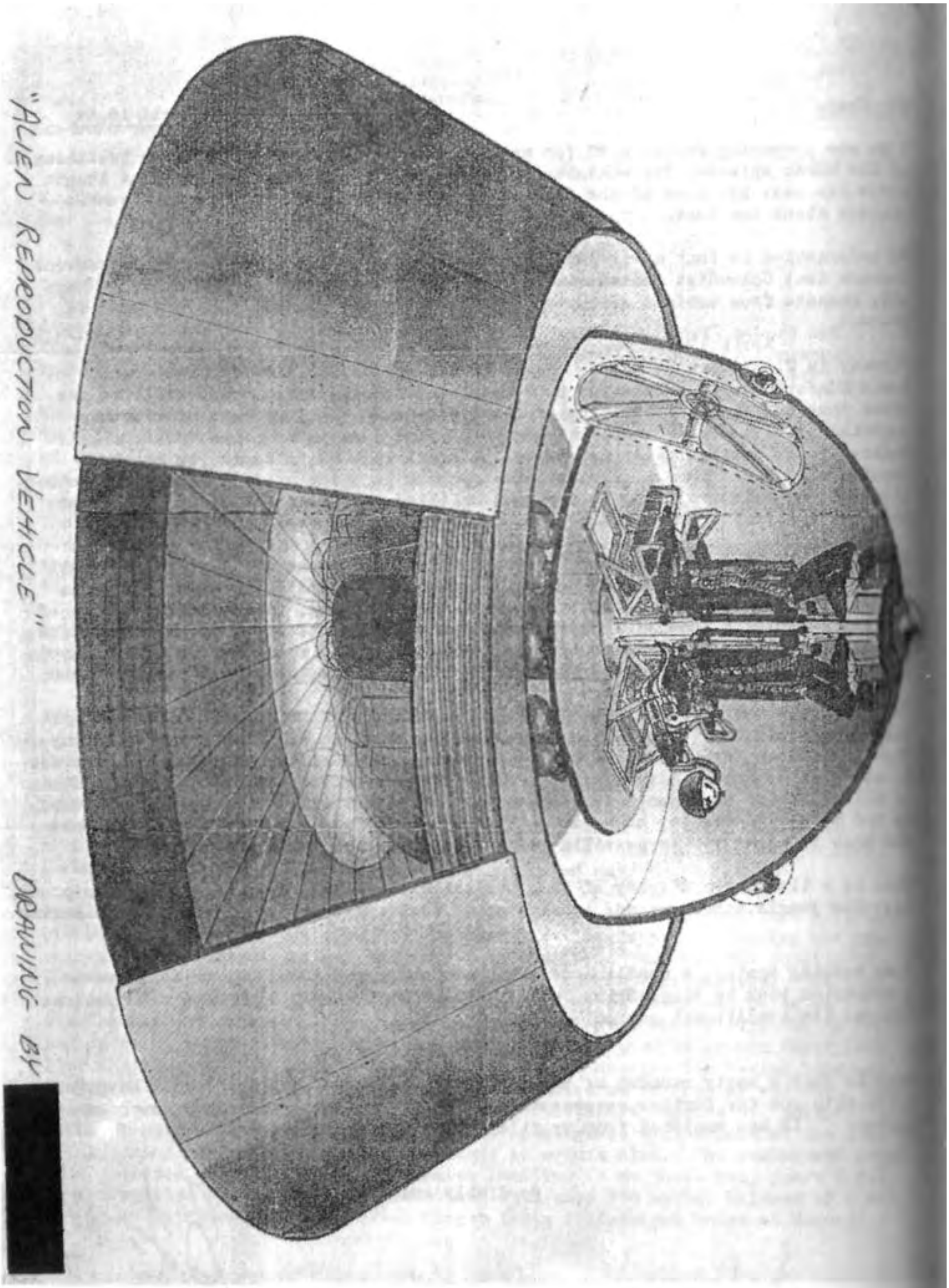
"ALIEN REPRODUCTION VEHICLE" DRAWING BY [redacted]

Built by Northrop, McDonald Douglas, and General Electric
Stored at Norton AFB and Edwards AFB
Flies out of Area #51

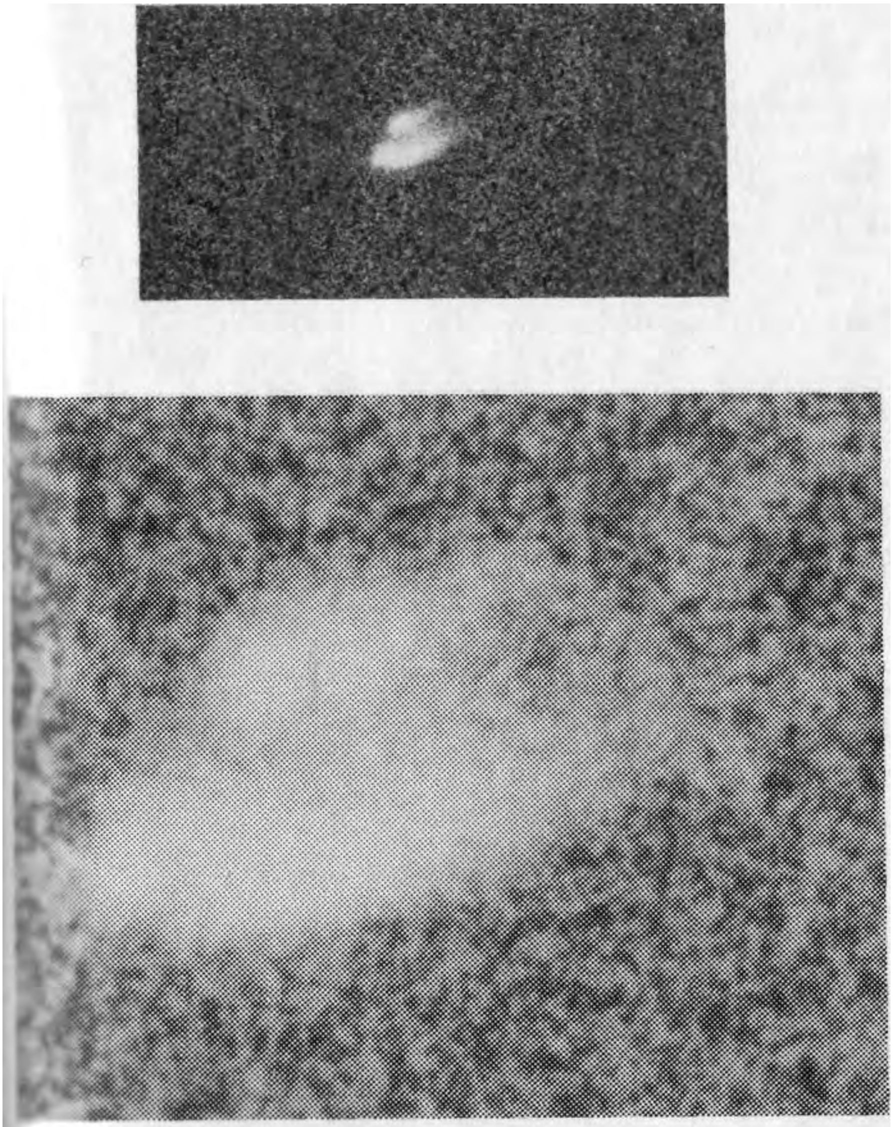

Photograph courtesy of Gary Schultz

Alien Reproduction Vehicle in flight over Groom Lake

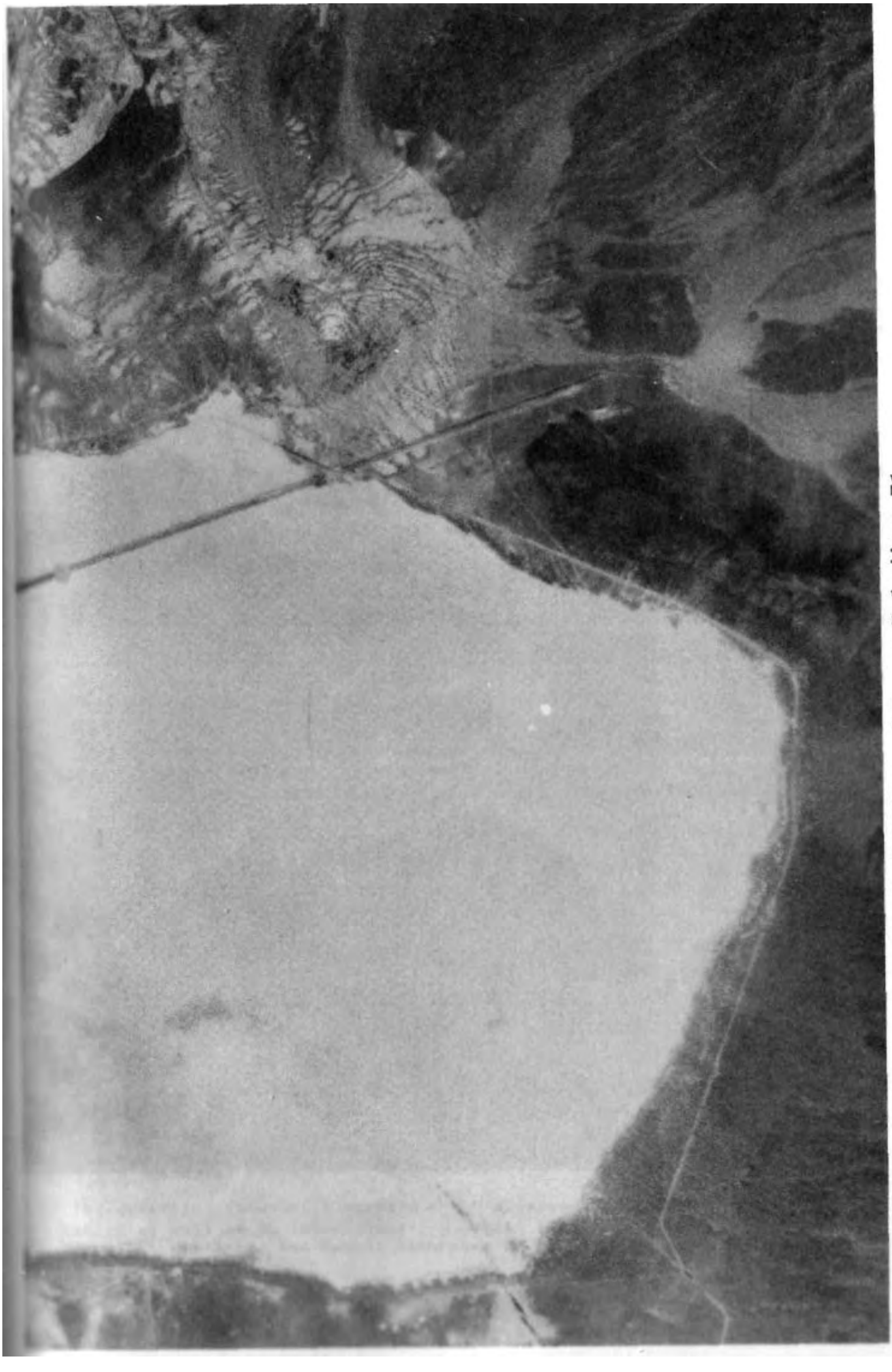

Aerial View of Groom Lake/Area 51

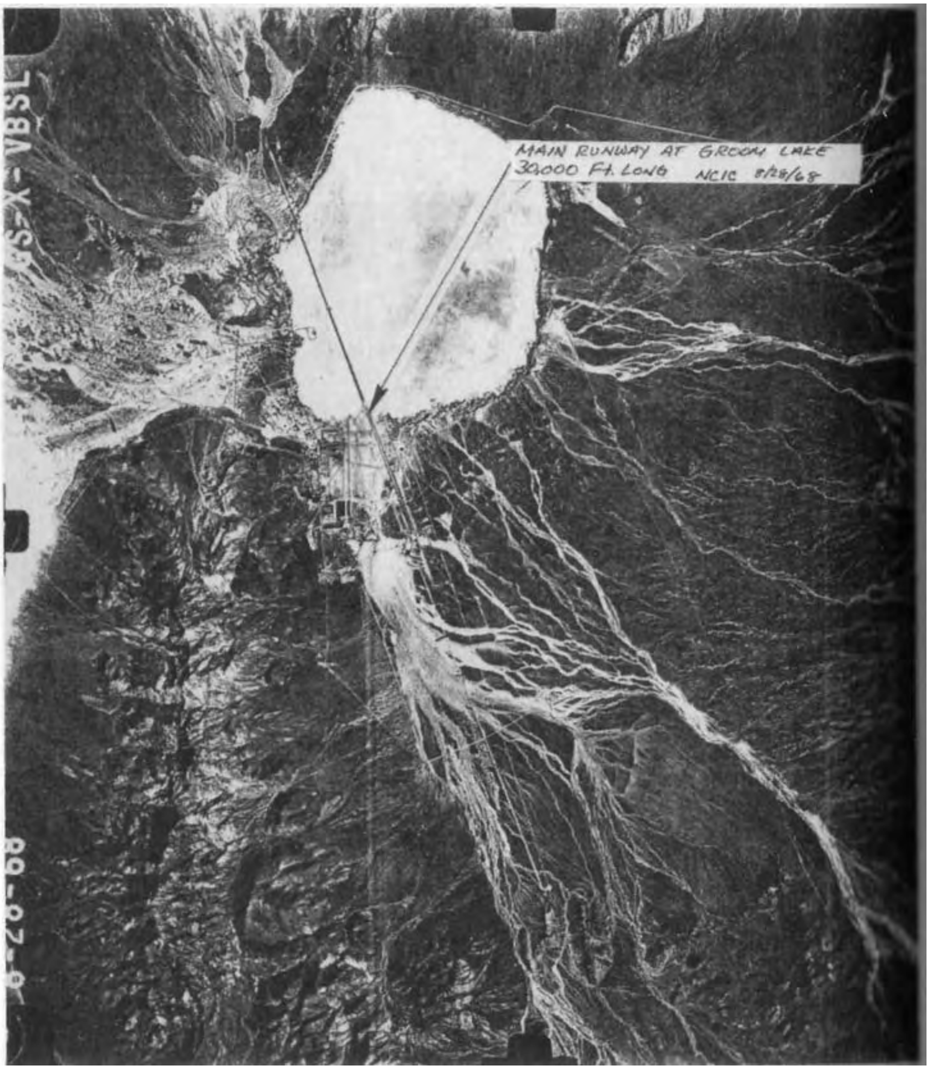

MAIN RUNWAY AT GROOM LAKE
30,000 Ft. LONG NCIC 8/28/68

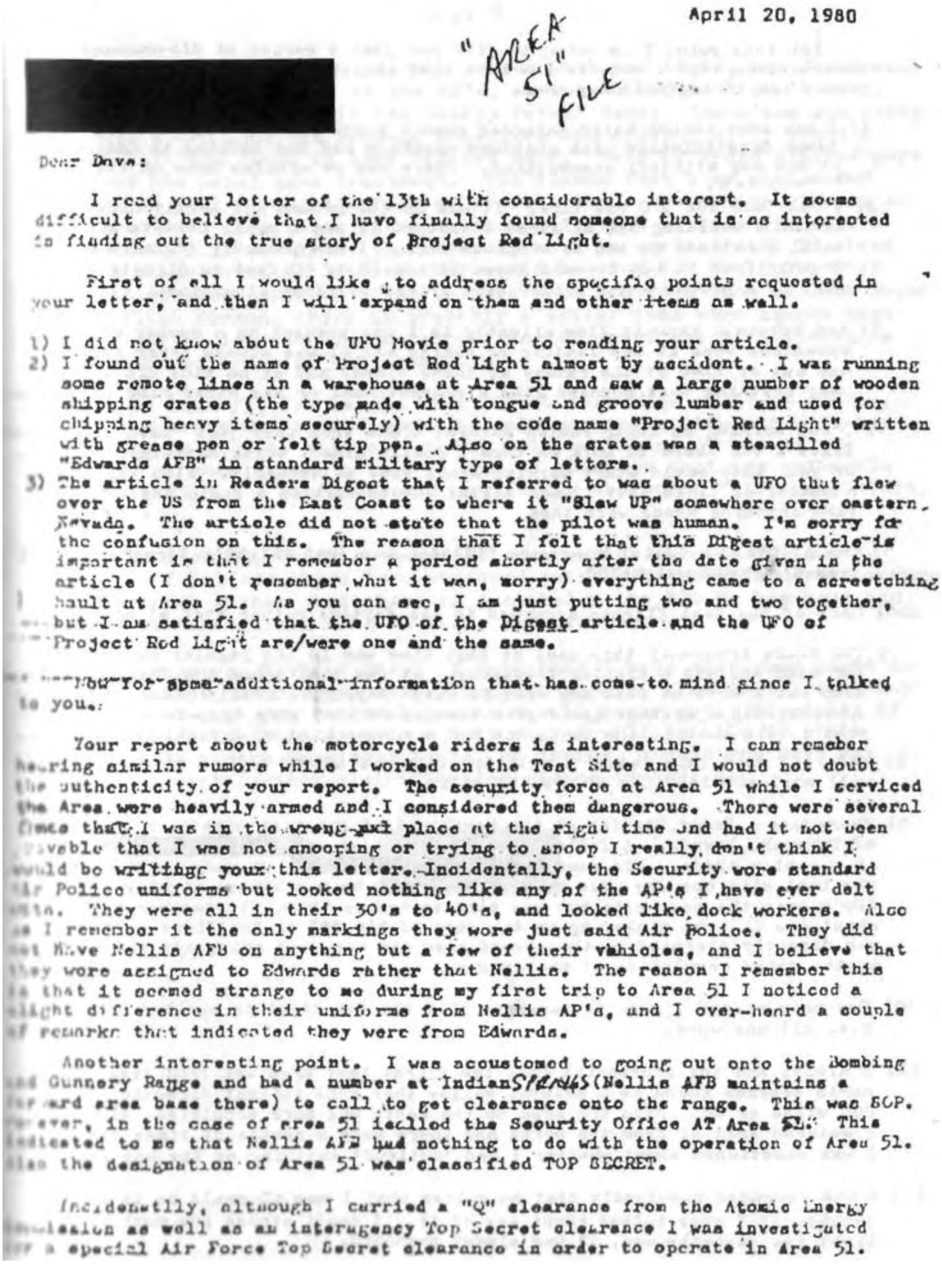

April 20, 1980

"AREA 51" FILE

[redacted]

Dear Dave:

I read your letter of the 13th with considerable interest. It seems difficult to believe that I have finally found someone that is as interested in finding out the true story of Project Red Light.

First of all I would like to address the specific points requested in your letter, and then I will expand on them and other items as well.

1) I did not know about the UFO Movie prior to reading your article.
2) I found out the name of Project Red Light almost by accident. I was running some remote lines in a warehouse at Area 51 and saw a large number of wooden shipping crates (the type made with tongue and groove lumber and used for shipping heavy items securely) with the code name "Project Red Light" written with grease pen or felt tip pen. Also on the crates was a stencilled "Edwards AFB" in standard military type of letters.
3) The article in Readers Digest that I referred to was about a UFO that flew over the US from the East Coast to where it "Blew UP" somewhere over eastern Nevada. The article did not state that the pilot was human. I'm sorry for the confusion on this. The reason that I felt that this Digest article is important is that I remember a period shortly after the date given in the article (I don't remember what it was, sorry) everything came to a screetching hault at Area 51. As you can see, I am just putting two and two together, but I am satisfied that the UFO of the Digest article and the UFO of Project Red Light are/were one and the same.

Now for some additional information that has come to mind since I talked to you.

Your report about the motorcycle riders is interesting. I can remeber hearing similar rumors while I worked on the Test Site and I would not doubt the authenticity of your report. The security force at Area 51 while I serviced the Area were heavily armed and I considered them dangerous. There were several times that I was in the wrong place at the right time and had it not been vable that I was not snooping or trying to snoop I really don't think I would be writing you this letter. Incidentally, the Security wore standard Air Police uniforms but looked nothing like any of the AP's I have ever delt with. They were all in their 30's to 40's, and looked like dock workers. Also as I remember it the only markings they wore just said Air Police. They did not have Nellis AFB on anything but a few of their vehicles, and I believe that they were assigned to Edwards rather that Nellis. The reason I remember this is that it seemed strange to me during my first trip to Area 51 I noticed a slight difference in their uniforms from Nellis AP's, and I over-heard a couple of remarks that indicated they were from Edwards.

Another interesting point. I was accustomed to going out onto the Bombing and Gunnery Range and had a number at Indian SPRINGS (Nellis AFB maintains a forward area base there) to call to get clearance onto the range. This was SOP. However, in the case of Area 51 I called the Security Office AT Area 51. This indicated to me that Nellis AFB had nothing to do with the operation of Area 51. Also the designation of Area 51 was classified TOP SECRET.

Incidenatlly, although I carried a "Q" clearance from the Atomic Energy Commission as well as an interagency Top Secret clearance I was investigated for a special Air Force Top Secret clearance in order to operate in Area 51.

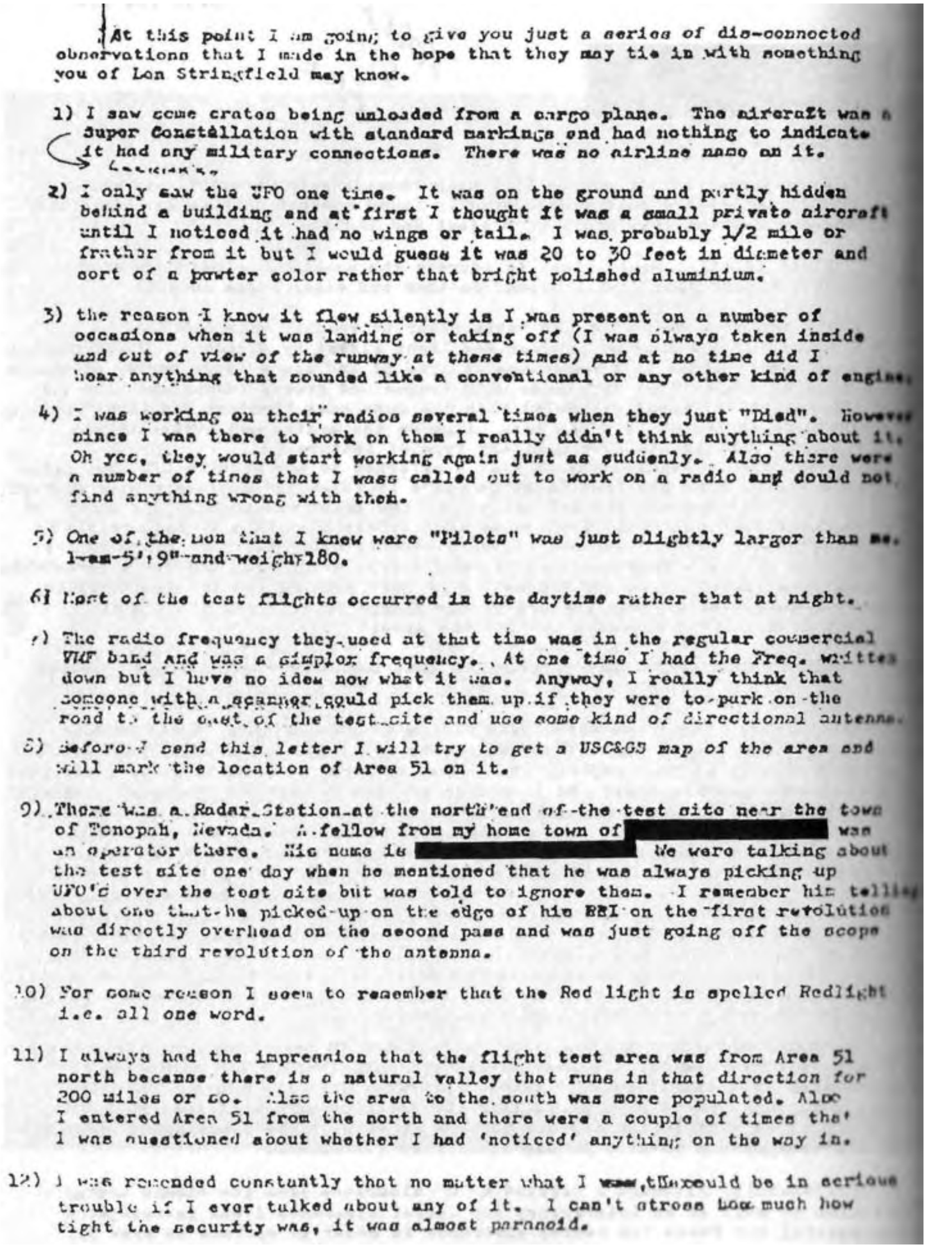

At this point I am going to give you just a series of dis-connected observations that I made in the hope that they may tie in with something you of Len Stringfield may know.

1) I saw some crates being unloaded from a cargo plane. The aircraft was a Super Constellation with standard markings and had nothing to indicate it had any military connections. There was no airline name on it.
Lockheed's

2) I only saw the UFO one time. It was on the ground and partly hidden behind a building and at first I thought it was a small private aircraft until I noticed it had no wings or tail. I was probably 1/2 mile or frather from it but I would guess it was 20 to 30 feet in diameter and sort of a pewter color rather that bright polished aluminium.

3) the reason I know it flew silently is I was present on a number of occasions when it was landing or taking off (I was always taken inside and out of view of the runway at these times) and at no time did I hear anything that sounded like a conventional or any other kind of engine.

4) I was working on their radios several times when they just "Died". However since I was there to work on them I really didn't think anything about it. Oh yes, they would start working again just as suddenly. Also there were a number of tines that I wass called out to work on a radio and dould not find anything wrong with them.

5) One of the men that I knew were "Pilots" was just slightly larger than me. I am 5'9" and weigh 180.

6) Most of the test flights occurred in the daytime rather that at night.

7) The radio frequency they used at that time was in the regular commercial VHF band and was a simplex frequency. At one time I had the Freq. written down but I have no idea now what it was. Anyway, I really think that someone with a scanner could pick them up if they were to park on the road to the east of the test site and use some kind of directional antenna.

8) Before I send this letter I will try to get a USC&GS map of the area and will mark the location of Area 51 on it.

9) There was a Radar Station at the north end of the test site near the town of Tonopah, Nevada. A fellow from my home town of [redacted] was an operator there. His name is [redacted] We were talking about the test site one day when he mentioned that he was always picking up UFO's over the test site but was told to ignore them. I remember him telling about one that he picked up on the edge of his PPI on the first revolution was directly overhead on the second pass and was just going off the scope on the third revolution of the antenna.

10) For some reason I seem to remember that the Red light is spelled Redlight i.e. all one word.

11) I always had the impression that the flight test area was from Area 51 north because there is a natural valley that runs in that direction for 200 miles or so. Also the area to the south was more populated. Also I entered Area 51 from the north and there were a couple of times that I was questioned about whether I had 'noticed' anything on the way in.

12) I was reminded constantly that no matter what I saw, I would be in serious trouble if I ever talked about any of it. I can't stress how much how tight the security was, it was almost paranoid.

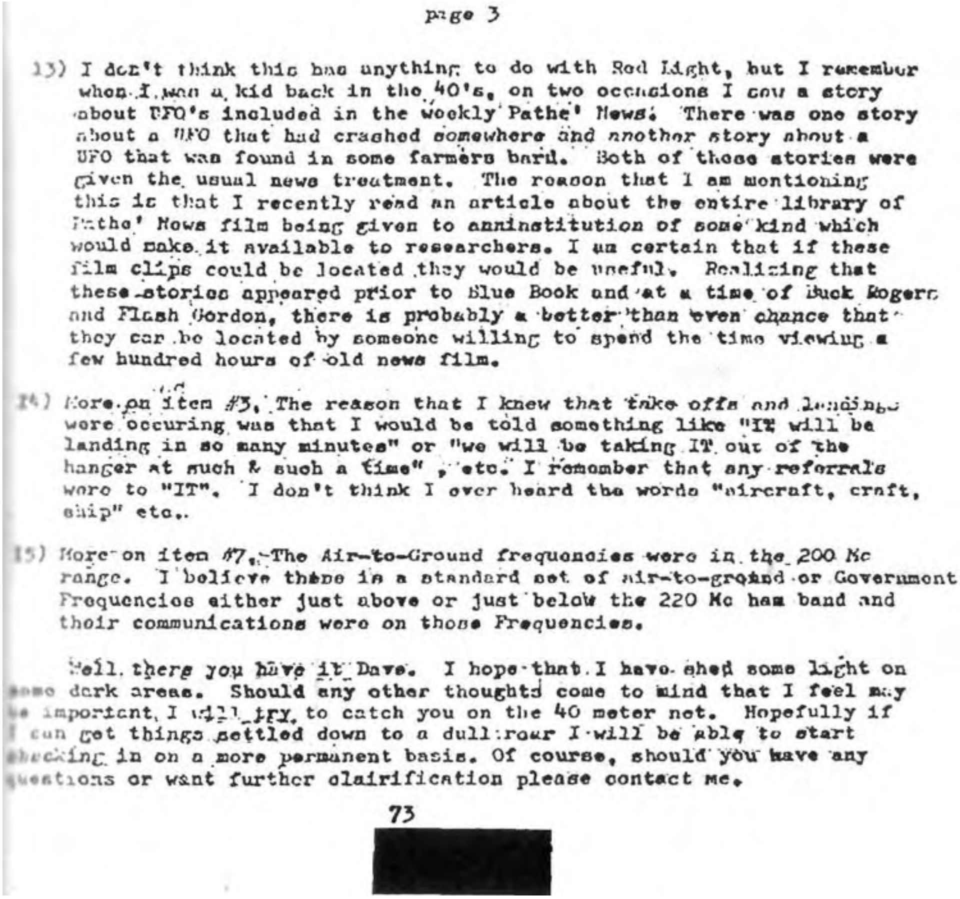

page 3

13) I don't think this has anything to do with Red Light, but I remember when I was a kid back in the 40's, on two occasions I saw a story about UFO's included in the weekly Pathe' News. There was one story about a UFO that had crashed somewhere and another story about a UFO that was found in some farmers barn. Both of these stories were given the usual news treatment. The reason that I am mentioning this is that I recently read an article about the entire library of Pathe' News film being given to anninstitution of some kind which would make it available to researchers. I am certain that if these film clips could be located they would be useful. Realizing that these stories appeared prior to Blue Book and at a time of Buck Rogers and Flash Gordon, there is probably a better than even chance that they can be located by someone willing to spend the time viewing a few hundred hours of old news film.

14) More on item #3. The reason that I knew that take offs and landings were occuring was that I would be told something like "IT will be landing in so many minutes" or "we will be taking IT out of the hanger at such & such a time", etc. I remember that any referrals were to "IT". I don't think I ever heard the words "aircraft, craft, ship" etc..

15) More on item #7. The Air-to-Ground frequencies were in the 200 Mc range. I believe there is a standard set of air-to-ground or Government Frequencies either just above or just below the 220 Mc ham band and their communications were on those Frequencies.

Well there you have it Dave. I hope that I have shed some light on some dark areas. Should any other thoughts come to mind that I feel may be important, I will try to catch you on the 40 meter net. Hopefully if I can get things settled down to a dull roar I will be able to start checking in on a more permanent basis. Of course, should you have any questions or want further clairification please contact me.

73

[redacted]

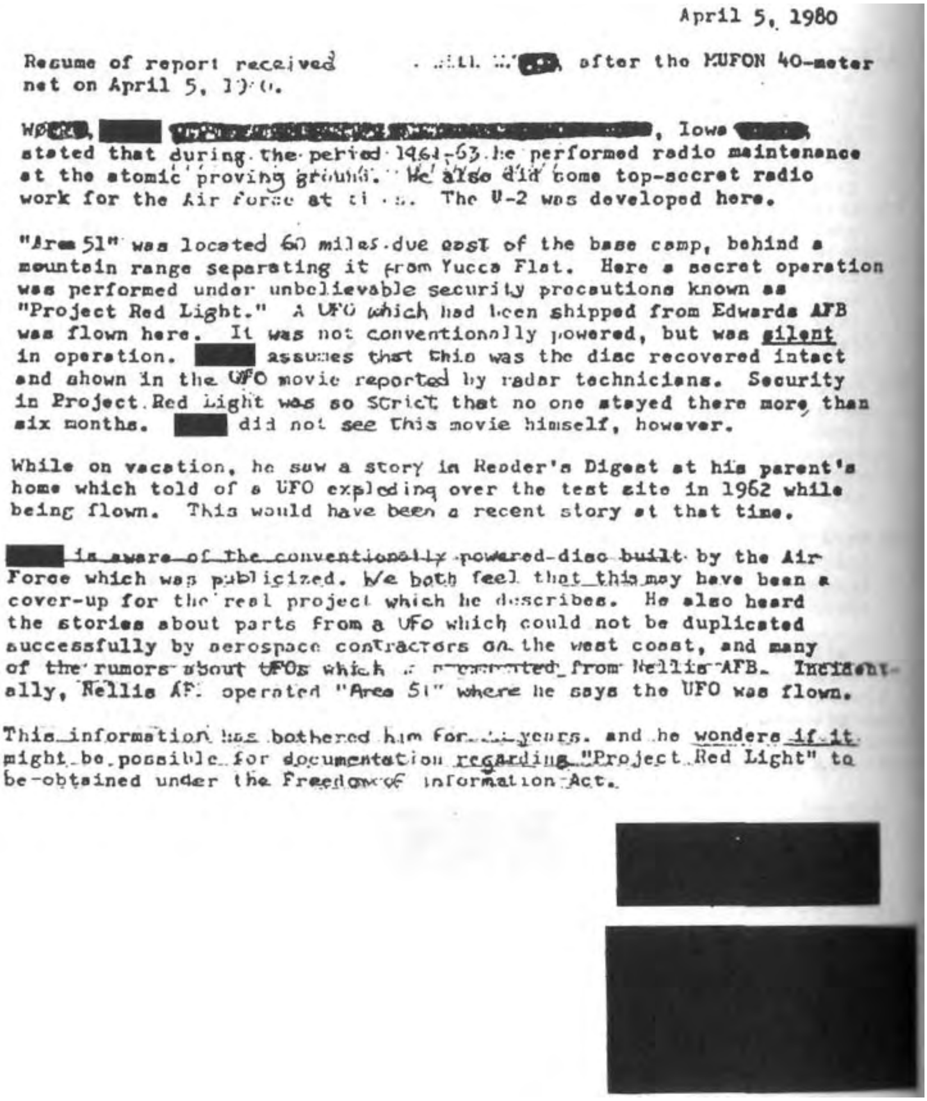

April 5, 1980

Resume of report received [illegible] [redacted] after the MUFON 40-meter net on April 5, 1980.

W0[redacted], [redacted] [redacted], Iowa [redacted] stated that during the period 1961-63 he performed radio maintenance at the atomic proving ground. He also did some top-secret radio work for the Air Force at [illegible]. The U-2 was developed here.

"Area 51" was located 60 miles due east of the base camp, behind a mountain range separating it from Yucca Flat. Here a secret operation was performed under unbelievable security precautions known as "Project Red Light." A UFO which had been shipped from Edwards AFB was flown here. It was not conventionally powered, but was silent in operation. [redacted] assumes that this was the disc recovered intact and shown in the UFO movie reported by radar technicians. Security in Project Red Light was so strict that no one stayed there more than six months. [redacted] did not see this movie himself, however.

While on vacation, he saw a story in Reader's Digest at his parent's home which told of a UFO exploding over the test site in 1962 while being flown. This would have been a recent story at that time.

[redacted] is aware of the conventionally powered disc built by the Air Force which was publicized. We both feel that this may have been a cover-up for the real project which he describes. He also heard the stories about parts from a UFO which could not be duplicated successfully by aerospace contractors on the west coast, and many of the rumors about UFOs which [illegible] from Nellis AFB. Incidentally, Nellis AF. operated "Area 51" where he says the UFO was flown.

This information has bothered him for [illegible] years. and he wondere if it might be possible for documentation regarding "Project Red Light" to be obtained under the Freedom of Information Act.

[redacted]

[redacted]

Two-part message from Joint Staff, Washington, D.C,
to Joint Chiefs of Staff/Defense Intelligence Agency, Washington, D.C.
Subject: Belgium UFO Sightings.

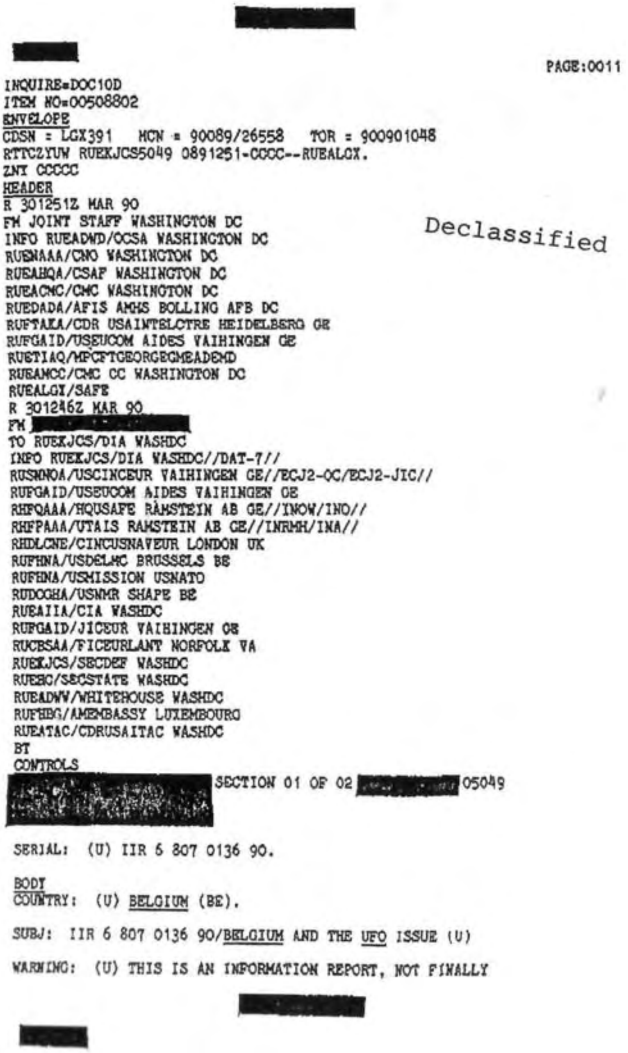

```
                    [redacted]
[redacted]
                                                           PAGE:0011
INQUIRE=DOC10D
ITEM NO=00508802
ENVELOPE
CDSN = LGX391   MCN = 90089/26558   TOR = 900901048
RTTCZYUW RUEKJCS5049 0891251-CCCC--RUEALGX.
ZNY CCCCC
HEADER
R 301251Z MAR 90
FM JOINT STAFF WASHINGTON DC                      Declassified
INFO RUEADWD/OCSA WASHINGTON DC
RUENAAA/CNO WASHINGTON DC
RUEAHQA/CSAF WASHINGTON DC
RUEACMC/CMC WASHINGTON DC
RUEDADA/AFIS AMHS BOLLING AFB DC
RUFTAKA/CDR USAINTELCTRE HEIDELBERG GE
RUFGAID/USEUCOM AIDES VAIHINGEN GE
RUETIAQ/MPCFTGEORGEGMEADEMD
RUEAMCC/CMC CC WASHINGTON DC
RUEALGX/SAFE
R 301246Z MAR 90
FM [redacted]
TO RUEKJCS/DIA WASHDC
INFO RUEKJCS/DIA WASHDC//DAT-7//
RUSNNOA/USCINCEUR VAIHINGEN GE//ECJ2-OC/ECJ2-JIC//
RUFGAID/USEUCOM AIDES VAIHINGEN GE
RHFQAAA/HQUSAFE RAMSTEIN AB GE//INOW/INO//
RHFPAAA/UTAIS RAMSTEIN AB GE//INRMH/INA//
RHDLCNE/CINCUSNAVEUR LONDON UK
RUFHNA/USDELMC BRUSSELS BE
RUFHNA/USMISSION USNATO
RUDOGHA/USNMR SHAPE BE
RUEAIIA/CIA WASHDC
RUFGAID/JICEUR VAIHINGEN GE
RUCBSAA/FICEURLANT NORFOLK VA
RUEKJCS/SECDEF WASHDC
RUEHC/SECSTATE WASHDC
RUEADWW/WHITEHOUSE WASHDC
RUFHBG/AMEMBASSY LUXEMBOURG
RUEATAC/CDRUSAITAC WASHDC
BT
CONTROLS
[redacted] SECTION 01 OF 02 [redacted] 05049

SERIAL: (U) IIR 6 807 0136 90.

BODY
COUNTRY: (U) BELGIUM (BE).

SUBJ: IIR 6 807 0136 90/BELGIUM AND THE UFO ISSUE (U)

WARNING: (U) THIS IS AN INFORMATION REPORT, NOT FINALLY

                    [redacted]
[redacted]
```

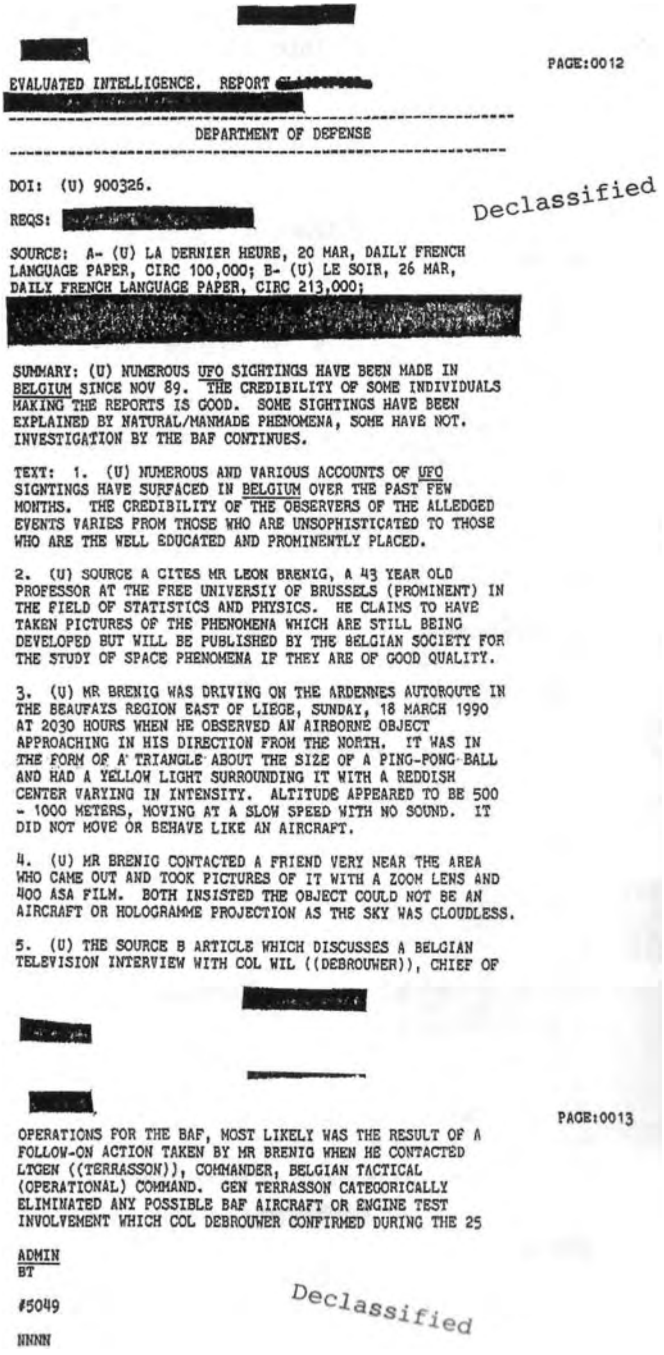

[redacted]

[redacted]

PAGE:0012

EVALUATED INTELLIGENCE. REPORT [redacted]

[redacted]

DEPARTMENT OF DEFENSE

DOI: (U) 900326.

Declassified

REQS: [redacted]

SOURCE: A- (U) LA DERNIER HEURE, 20 MAR, DAILY FRENCH LANGUAGE PAPER, CIRC 100,000; B- (U) LE SOIR, 26 MAR, DAILY FRENCH LANGUAGE PAPER, CIRC 213,000;

[redacted]

SUMMARY: (U) NUMEROUS UFO SIGHTINGS HAVE BEEN MADE IN BELGIUM SINCE NOV 89. THE CREDIBILITY OF SOME INDIVIDUALS MAKING THE REPORTS IS GOOD. SOME SIGHTINGS HAVE BEEN EXPLAINED BY NATURAL/MANMADE PHENOMENA, SOME HAVE NOT. INVESTIGATION BY THE BAF CONTINUES.

TEXT: 1. (U) NUMEROUS AND VARIOUS ACCOUNTS OF UFO SIGHTINGS HAVE SURFACED IN BELGIUM OVER THE PAST FEW MONTHS. THE CREDIBILITY OF THE OBSERVERS OF THE ALLEDGED EVENTS VARIES FROM THOSE WHO ARE UNSOPHISTICATED TO THOSE WHO ARE THE WELL EDUCATED AND PROMINENTLY PLACED.

2. (U) SOURCE A CITES MR LEON BRENIG, A 43 YEAR OLD PROFESSOR AT THE FREE UNIVERSIY OF BRUSSELS (PROMINENT) IN THE FIELD OF STATISTICS AND PHYSICS. HE CLAIMS TO HAVE TAKEN PICTURES OF THE PHENOMENA WHICH ARE STILL BEING DEVELOPED BUT WILL BE PUBLISHED BY THE BELGIAN SOCIETY FOR THE STUDY OF SPACE PHENOMENA IF THEY ARE OF GOOD QUALITY.

3. (U) MR BRENIG WAS DRIVING ON THE ARDENNES AUTOROUTE IN THE BEAUFAYS REGION EAST OF LIEGE, SUNDAY, 18 MARCH 1990 AT 2030 HOURS WHEN HE OBSERVED AN AIRBORNE OBJECT APPROACHING IN HIS DIRECTION FROM THE NORTH. IT WAS IN THE FORM OF A TRIANGLE ABOUT THE SIZE OF A PING-PONG BALL AND HAD A YELLOW LIGHT SURROUNDING IT WITH A REDDISH CENTER VARYING IN INTENSITY. ALTITUDE APPEARED TO BE 500 - 1000 METERS, MOVING AT A SLOW SPEED WITH NO SOUND. IT DID NOT MOVE OR BEHAVE LIKE AN AIRCRAFT.

4. (U) MR BRENIG CONTACTED A FRIEND VERY NEAR THE AREA WHO CAME OUT AND TOOK PICTURES OF IT WITH A ZOOM LENS AND 400 ASA FILM. BOTH INSISTED THE OBJECT COULD NOT BE AN AIRCRAFT OR HOLOGRAMME PROJECTION AS THE SKY WAS CLOUDLESS.

5. (U) THE SOURCE B ARTICLE WHICH DISCUSSES A BELGIAN TELEVISION INTERVIEW WITH COL WIL ((DEBROUWER)), CHIEF OF

[redacted]

[redacted]

[redacted]

[redacted]

PAGE:0013

OPERATIONS FOR THE BAF, MOST LIKELY WAS THE RESULT OF A FOLLOW-ON ACTION TAKEN BY MR BRENIG WHEN HE CONTACTED LTGEN ((TERRASSON)), COMMANDER, BELGIAN TACTICAL (OPERATIONAL) COMMAND. GEN TERRASSON CATEGORICALLY ELIMINATED ANY POSSIBLE BAF AIRCRAFT OR ENGINE TEST INVOLVEMENT WHICH COL DEBROUWER CONFIRMED DURING THE 25

ADMIN
BT

#5049

Declassified

NNNN

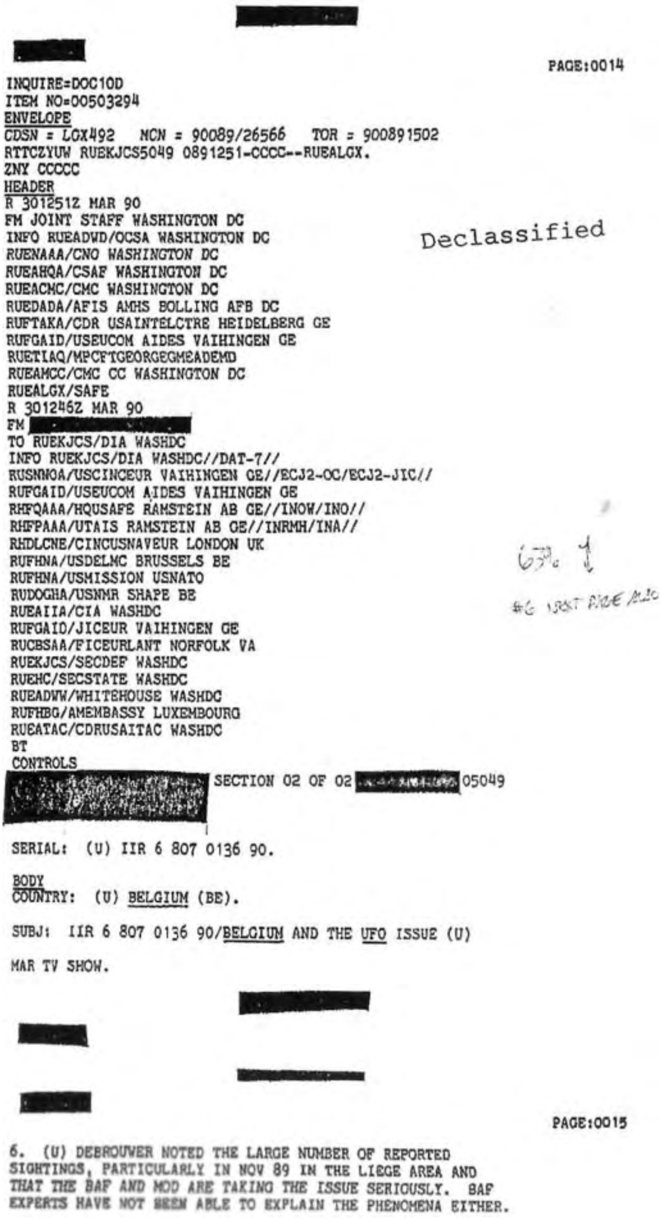

[redacted]

[redacted]

PAGE:0014

INQUIRE=DOC10D
ITEM NO=00503294
ENVELOPE
CDSN = LGX492 MCN = 90089/26566 TOR = 900891502
RTTCZYUW RUEKJCS5049 0891251-CCCC--RUEALGX.
ZNY CCCCC
HEADER
R 301251Z MAR 90
FM JOINT STAFF WASHINGTON DC
INFO RUEADWD/OCSA WASHINGTON DC
RUENAAA/CNO WASHINGTON DC
RUEAHQA/CSAF WASHINGTON DC
RUEACMC/CMC WASHINGTON DC
RUEDADA/AFIS AMHS BOLLING AFB DC
RUFTAKA/CDR USAINTELCTRE HEIDELBERG GE
RUFGAID/USEUCOM AIDES VAIHINGEN GE
RUETIAQ/MPCFTGEORGEGMEADEMD
RUEAMCC/CMC CC WASHINGTON DC
RUEALGX/SAFE
R 301246Z MAR 90
FM [redacted]
TO RUEKJCS/DIA WASHDC
INFO RUEKJCS/DIA WASHDC//DAT-7//
RUSNNOA/USCINCEUR VAIHINGEN GE//ECJ2-OC/ECJ2-JIC//
RUFGAID/USEUCOM AIDES VAIHINGEN GE
RHFQAAA/HQUSAFE RAMSTEIN AB GE//INOW/INO//
RHFPAAA/UTAIS RAMSTEIN AB GE//INRMH/INA//
RHDLCNE/CINCUSNAVEUR LONDON UK
RUFHNA/USDELMC BRUSSELS BE
RUFHNA/USMISSION USNATO
RUDOGHA/USNMR SHAPE BE
RUEAIIA/CIA WASHDC
RUFGAID/JICEUR VAIHINGEN GE
RUCBSAA/FICEURLANT NORFOLK VA
RUEKJCS/SECDEF WASHDC
RUEHC/SECSTATE WASHDC
RUEADWW/WHITEHOUSE WASHDC
RUFHBG/AMEMBASSY LUXEMBOURG
RUEATAC/CDRUSAITAC WASHDC
BT
CONTROLS
[redacted] SECTION 02 OF 02 [redacted] 05049

Declassified

634 1

#6 1ST PAGE ALSO

SERIAL: (U) IIR 6 807 0136 90.

BODY
COUNTRY: (U) BELGIUM (BE).

SUBJ: IIR 6 807 0136 90/BELGIUM AND THE UFO ISSUE (U)

MAR TV SHOW.

[redacted]

[redacted]

[redacted]

[redacted]

PAGE:0015

6. (U) DEBROUWER NOTED THE LARGE NUMBER OF REPORTED SIGHTINGS, PARTICULARLY IN NOV 89 IN THE LIEGE AREA AND THAT THE BAF AND MOD ARE TAKING THE ISSUE SERIOUSLY. BAF EXPERTS HAVE NOT BEEN ABLE TO EXPLAIN THE PHENOMENA EITHER.

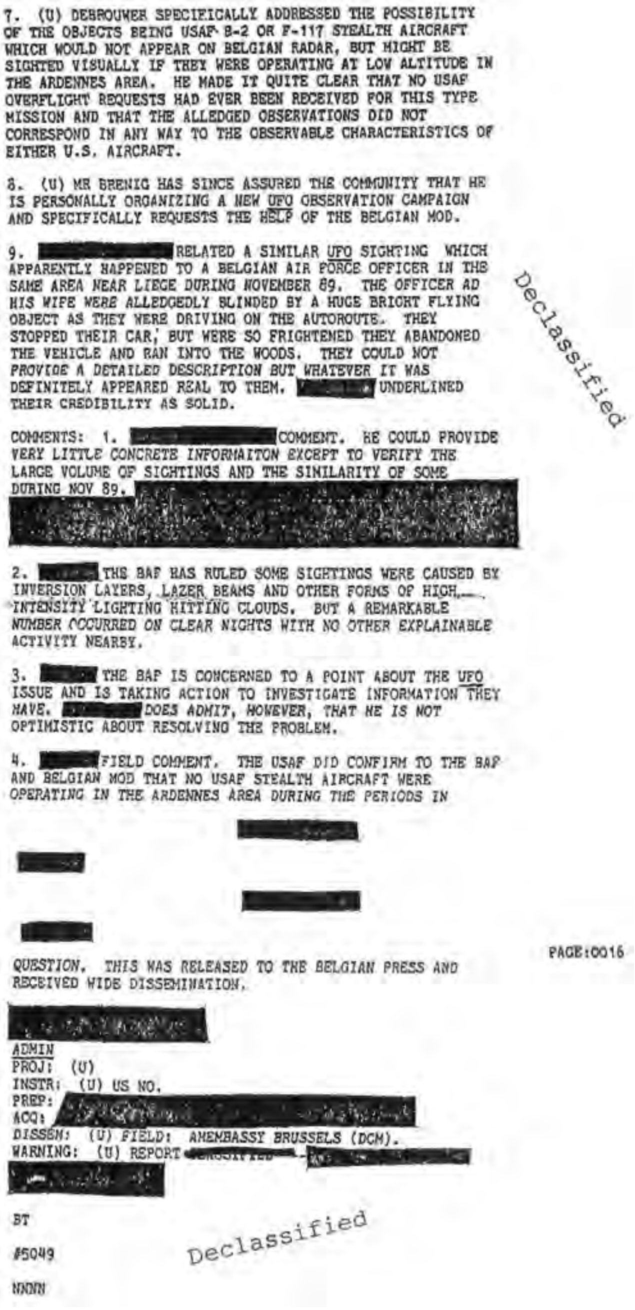

7. (U) DEBROUWER SPECIFICALLY ADDRESSED THE POSSIBILITY OF THE OBJECTS BEING USAF B-2 OR F-117 STEALTH AIRCRAFT WHICH WOULD NOT APPEAR ON BELGIAN RADAR, BUT MIGHT BE SIGHTED VISUALLY IF THEY WERE OPERATING AT LOW ALTITUDE IN THE ARDENNES AREA. HE MADE IT QUITE CLEAR THAT NO USAF OVERFLIGHT REQUESTS HAD EVER BEEN RECEIVED FOR THIS TYPE MISSION AND THAT THE ALLEDGED OBSERVATIONS DID NOT CORRESPOND IN ANY WAY TO THE OBSERVABLE CHARACTERISTICS OF EITHER U.S. AIRCRAFT.

8. (U) MR BRENIG HAS SINCE ASSURED THE COMMUNITY THAT HE IS PERSONALLY ORGANIZING A NEW UFO OBSERVATION CAMPAIGN AND SPECIFICALLY REQUESTS THE HELP OF THE BELGIAN MOD.

9. [redacted] RELATED A SIMILAR UFO SIGHTING WHICH APPARENTLY HAPPENED TO A BELGIAN AIR FORCE OFFICER IN THE SAME AREA NEAR LIEGE DURING NOVEMBER 89. THE OFFICER AD HIS WIFE WERE ALLEDGEDLY BLINDED BY A HUGE BRIGHT FLYING OBJECT AS THEY WERE DRIVING ON THE AUTOROUTE. THEY STOPPED THEIR CAR, BUT WERE SO FRIGHTENED THEY ABANDONED THE VEHICLE AND RAN INTO THE WOODS. THEY COULD NOT PROVIDE A DETAILED DESCRIPTION BUT WHATEVER IT WAS DEFINITELY APPEARED REAL TO THEM. [redacted] UNDERLINED THEIR CREDIBILITY AS SOLID.

Declassified

COMMENTS: 1. [redacted] COMMENT. HE COULD PROVIDE VERY LITTLE CONCRETE INFORMAITON EXCEPT TO VERIFY THE LARGE VOLUME OF SIGHTINGS AND THE SIMILARITY OF SOME DURING NOV 89. [redacted]

2. [redacted] THE BAF HAS RULED SOME SIGHTINGS WERE CAUSED BY INVERSION LAYERS, LAZER BEAMS AND OTHER FORMS OF HIGH INTENSITY LIGHTING HITTING CLOUDS. BUT A REMARKABLE NUMBER OCCURRED ON CLEAR NIGHTS WITH NO OTHER EXPLAINABLE ACTIVITY NEARBY.

3. [redacted] THE BAF IS CONCERNED TO A POINT ABOUT THE UFO ISSUE AND IS TAKING ACTION TO INVESTIGATE INFORMATION THEY HAVE. [redacted] DOES ADMIT, HOWEVER, THAT HE IS NOT OPTIMISTIC ABOUT RESOLVING THE PROBLEM.

4. [redacted] FIELD COMMENT. THE USAF DID CONFIRM TO THE BAF AND BELGIAN MOD THAT NO USAF STEALTH AIRCRAFT WERE OPERATING IN THE ARDENNES AREA DURING THE PERIODS IN

[redacted]

[redacted]

[redacted]

[redacted]

PAGE:0016

QUESTION. THIS WAS RELEASED TO THE BELGIAN PRESS AND RECEIVED WIDE DISSEMINATION.

[redacted]

ADMIN
PROJ: (U)
INSTR: (U) US NO.
PREP: [redacted]
ACQ:
DISSEM: (U) FIELD: AMEMBASSY BRUSSELS (DCM).
WARNING: (U) REPORT [redacted] [redacted]
[redacted]

BT

#5049

Declassified

NNNN

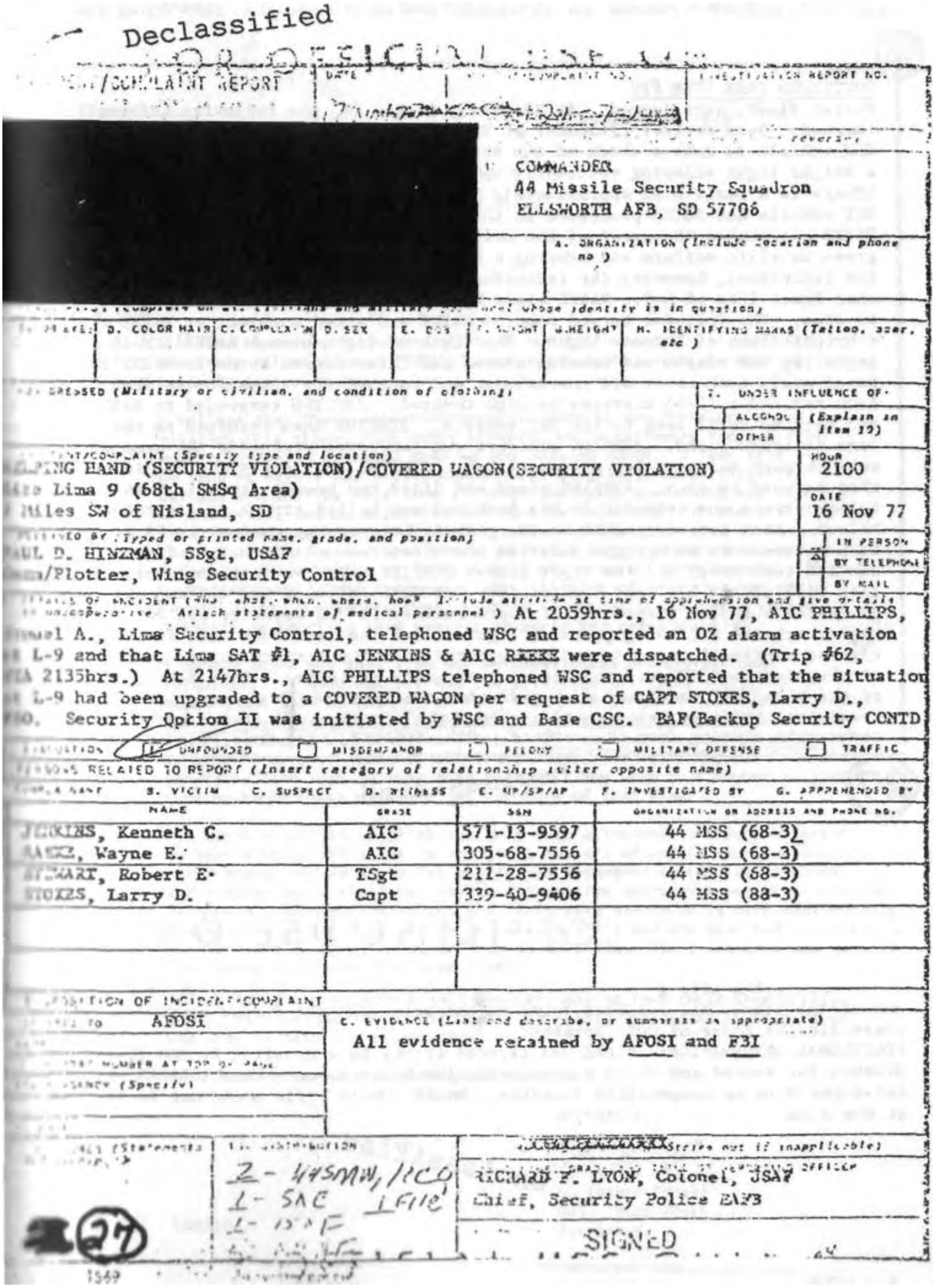

Declassified

FOR OFFICIAL USE ONLY

/COMPLAINT REPORT

/COMPLAINT REPORT	DATE	COMPLAINT NO.	INVESTIGATION REPORT NO.

[redacted]

COMMANDER
44 Missile Security Squadron
ELLSWORTH AFB, SD 57706

A. ORGANIZATION (Include location and phone no.)

whose identity is in question)

	B. COLOR HAIR	C. COMPLEXION	D. SEX	E. DOB	F. WEIGHT	G. HEIGHT	H. IDENTIFYING MARKS (Tattoo, scar, etc.)

DRESSED (Military or civilian, and condition of clothing)

7. UNDER INFLUENCE OF:
☐ ALCOHOL
☐ OTHER
(Explain in item 19)

/COMPLAINT (Specify type and location)
LPING HAND (SECURITY VIOLATION)/COVERED WAGON(SECURITY VIOLATION)
e Lima 9 (68th SMSq Area)
Miles SW of Nisland, SD

HOUR 2100

DATE 16 Nov 77

RECEIVED BY (Typed or printed name, grade, and position)
UL D. HINZMAN, SSgt, USAF
/Plotter, Wing Security Control

☐ IN PERSON
☒ BY TELEPHONE
☐ BY MAIL

DETAILS OF INCIDENT (Who, what, when, where, how? Include attitude at time of apprehension and give details if uncooperative. Attach statements of medical personnel.) At 2059hrs., 16 Nov 77, AIC PHILLIPS, uel A., Lima Security Control, telephoned WSC and reported an OZ alarm activation L-9 and that Lima SAT #1, AIC JENKINS & AIC REEKE were dispatched. (Trip #62, A 2135hrs.) At 2147hrs., AIC PHILLIPS telephoned WSC and reported that the situation L-9 had been upgraded to a COVERED WAGON per request of CAPT STOKES, Larry D., O. Security Option II was initiated by WSC and Base CSC. BAF(Backup Security CONTD

☒ UNFOUNDED ☐ MISDEMEANOR ☐ FELONY ☐ MILITARY OFFENSE ☐ TRAFFIC

PERSONS RELATED TO REPORT (Insert category of relationship letter opposite name)
A. NAME B. VICTIM C. SUSPECT D. WITNESS E. MP/SP/AP F. INVESTIGATED BY G. APPREHENDED BY

NAME	GRADE	SSN	ORGANIZATION OR ADDRESS AND PHONE NO.
KINS, Kenneth C.	AIC	571-13-9597	44 MSS (68-3)
, Wayne E.	AIC	305-68-7556	44 MSS (68-3)
WART, Robert E.	TSgt	211-28-7556	44 MSS (68-3)
TOKES, Larry D.	Capt	339-40-9406	44 MSS (88-3)

POSITION OF INCIDENT/COMPLAINT

TO AFOSI

C. EVIDENCE (List and describe, or summarize as appropriate)
All evidence retained by AFOSI and FBI

NUMBER AT TOP OF PAGE

AGENCY (Specify)

(Statements

DISTRIBUTION
2 - 44SMW, /CC
1 - SAC 1 File
1 - 15AF

XXXXXXXXXXX (Strike out if inapplicable)

RICHARD F. LYON, Colonel, USAF
Chief, Security Police EAFB

SIGNED

27

1569

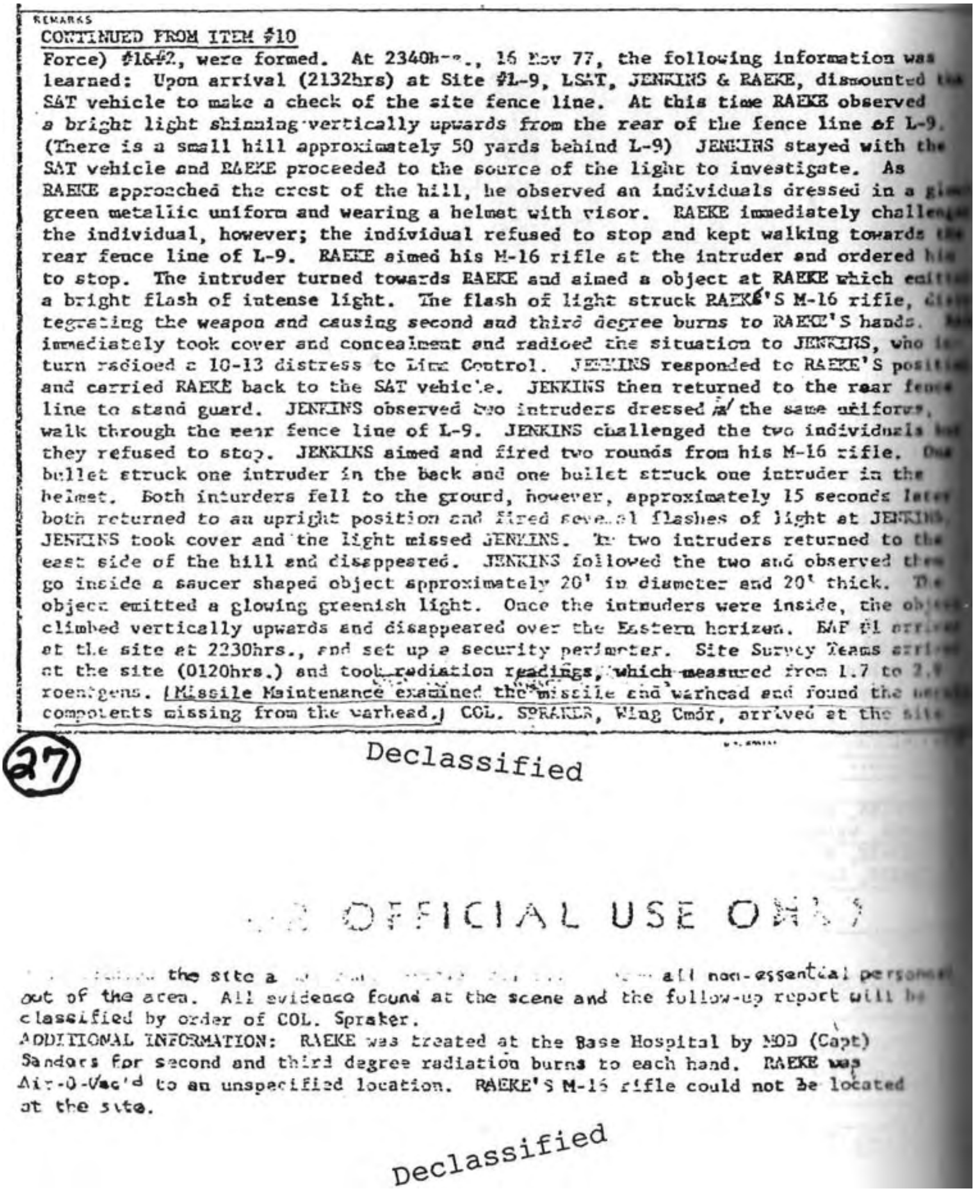

REMARKS

CONTINUED FROM ITEM #10

Force) #1&#2, were formed. At 2340hrs., 16 Nov 77, the following information was learned: Upon arrival (2132hrs) at Site #L-9, LSAT, JENKINS & RAEKE, dismounted the SAT vehicle to make a check of the site fence line. At this time RAEKE observed a bright light shinning vertically upwards from the rear of the fence line of L-9. (There is a small hill approximately 50 yards behind L-9) JENKINS stayed with the SAT vehicle and RAEKE proceeded to the source of the light to investigate. As RAEKE approached the crest of the hill, he observed an individuals dressed in a gl green metalic uniform and wearing a helmet with visor. RAEKE immediately challenged the individual, however; the individual refused to stop and kept walking towards the rear fence line of L-9. RAEKE aimed his M-16 rifle at the intruder and ordered him to stop. The intruder turned towards RAEKE and aimed a object at RAEKE which emitted a bright flash of intense light. The flash of light struck RAEKE'S M-16 rifle, disintegrating the weapon and causing second and third degree burns to RAEKE'S hands. He immediately took cover and concealment and radioed the situation to JENKINS, who in turn radioed a 10-13 distress to Line Control. JENKINS responded to RAEKE'S position and carried RAEKE back to the SAT vehicle. JENKINS then returned to the rear fence line to stand guard. JENKINS observed two intruders dressed in the same uniforms, walk through the rear fence line of L-9. JENKINS challenged the two individuals but they refused to stop. JENKINS aimed and fired two rounds from his M-16 rifle. One bullet struck one intruder in the back and one bullet struck one intruder in the helmet. Both inturders fell to the ground, however, approximately 15 seconds later both returned to an upright position and fired several flashes of light at JENKINS. JENKINS took cover and the light missed JENKINS. The two intruders returned to the east side of the hill and disappeared. JENKINS followed the two and observed them go inside a saucer shaped object approximately 20' in diameter and 20' thick. The object emitted a glowing greenish light. Once the intruders were inside, the object climbed vertically upwards and disappeared over the Eastern horizon. SAF #1 arrived at the site at 2230hrs., and set up a security perimeter. Site Survey Teams arrived at the site (0120hrs.) and took radiation readings, which measured from 1.7 to 2.9 roentgens. (Missile Maintenance examined the missile and warhead and found the [illegible] components missing from the warhead.) COL. SPRAKER, Wing Cmdr, arrived at the site

(27)

Declassified

[illegible] OFFICIAL USE ONLY

[illegible] the site a [illegible] all non-essential personnel out of the area. All evidence found at the scene and the follow-up report will be classified by order of COL. Spraker.

ADDITIONAL INFORMATION: RAEKE was treated at the Base Hospital by MOD (Capt) Sanders for second and third degree radiation burns to each hand. RAEKE was Air-O-Vac'd to an unspecified location. RAEKE'S M-16 rifle could not be located at the site.

Declassified

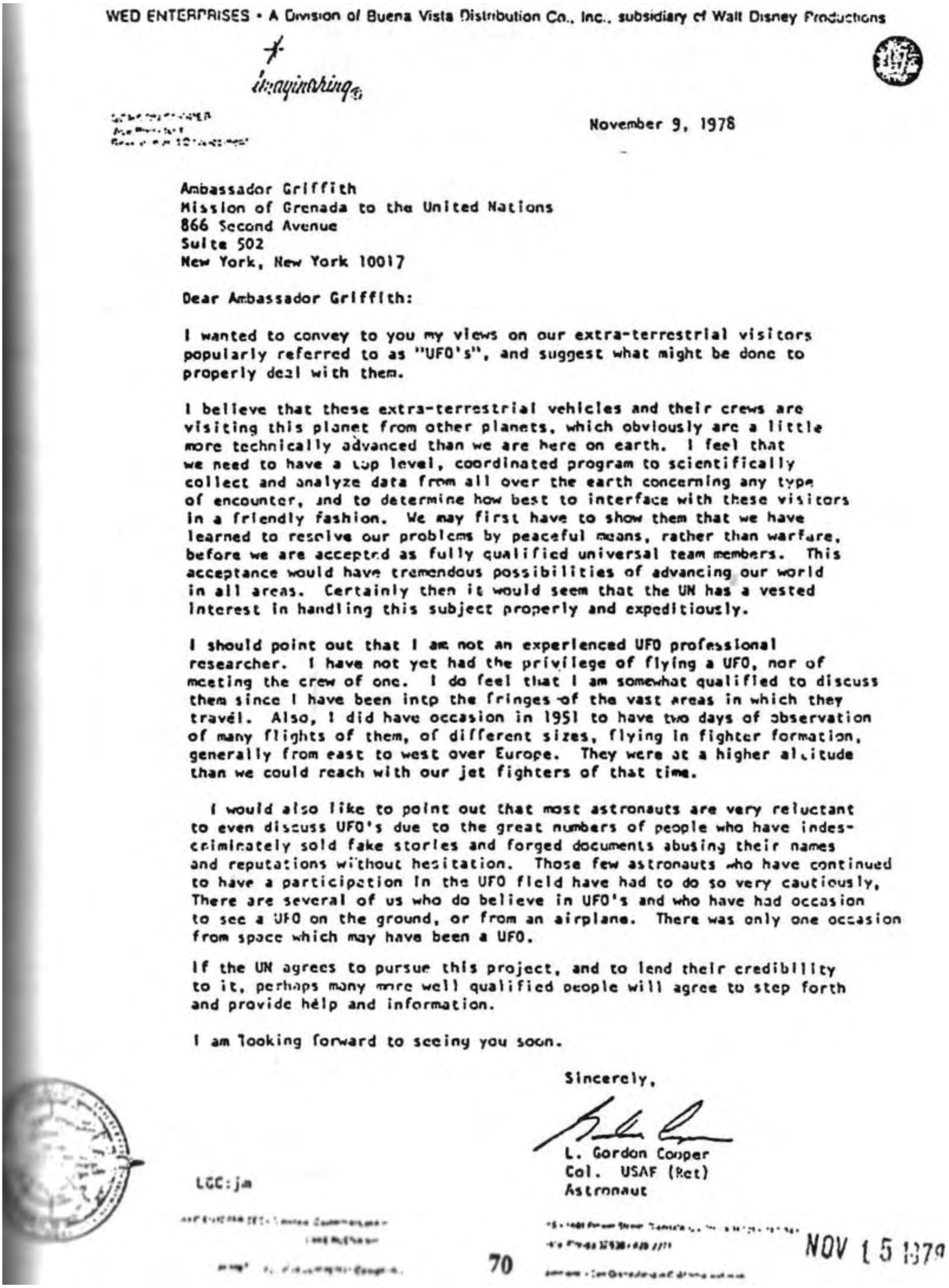

WED ENTERPRISES • A Division of Buena Vista Distribution Co., Inc., subsidiary of Walt Disney Productions

imagineering

November 9, 1978

Ambassador Griffith
Mission of Grenada to the United Nations
866 Second Avenue
Suite 502
New York, New York 10017

Dear Ambassador Griffith:

I wanted to convey to you my views on our extra-terrestrial visitors popularly referred to as "UFO's", and suggest what might be done to properly deal with them.

I believe that these extra-terrestrial vehicles and their crews are visiting this planet from other planets, which obviously are a little more technically advanced than we are here on earth. I feel that we need to have a top level, coordinated program to scientifically collect and analyze data from all over the earth concerning any type of encounter, and to determine how best to interface with these visitors in a friendly fashion. We may first have to show them that we have learned to resolve our problems by peaceful means, rather than warfare, before we are accepted as fully qualified universal team members. This acceptance would have tremendous possibilities of advancing our world in all areas. Certainly then it would seem that the UN has a vested interest in handling this subject properly and expeditiously.

I should point out that I am not an experienced UFO professional researcher. I have not yet had the privilege of flying a UFO, nor of meeting the crew of one. I do feel that I am somewhat qualified to discuss them since I have been into the fringes of the vast areas in which they travel. Also, I did have occasion in 1951 to have two days of observation of many flights of them, of different sizes, flying in fighter formation, generally from east to west over Europe. They were at a higher altitude than we could reach with our jet fighters of that time.

I would also like to point out that most astronauts are very reluctant to even discuss UFO's due to the great numbers of people who have indescriminately sold fake stories and forged documents abusing their names and reputations without hesitation. Those few astronauts who have continued to have a participation in the UFO field have had to do so very cautiously. There are several of us who do believe in UFO's and who have had occasion to see a UFO on the ground, or from an airplane. There was only one occasion from space which may have been a UFO.

If the UN agrees to pursue this project, and to lend their credibility to it, perhaps many more well qualified people will agree to step forth and provide help and information.

I am looking forward to seeing you soon.

Sincerely,

L. Gordon Cooper
Col. USAF (Ret)
Astronaut

LGC:jm

NOV 15 1979

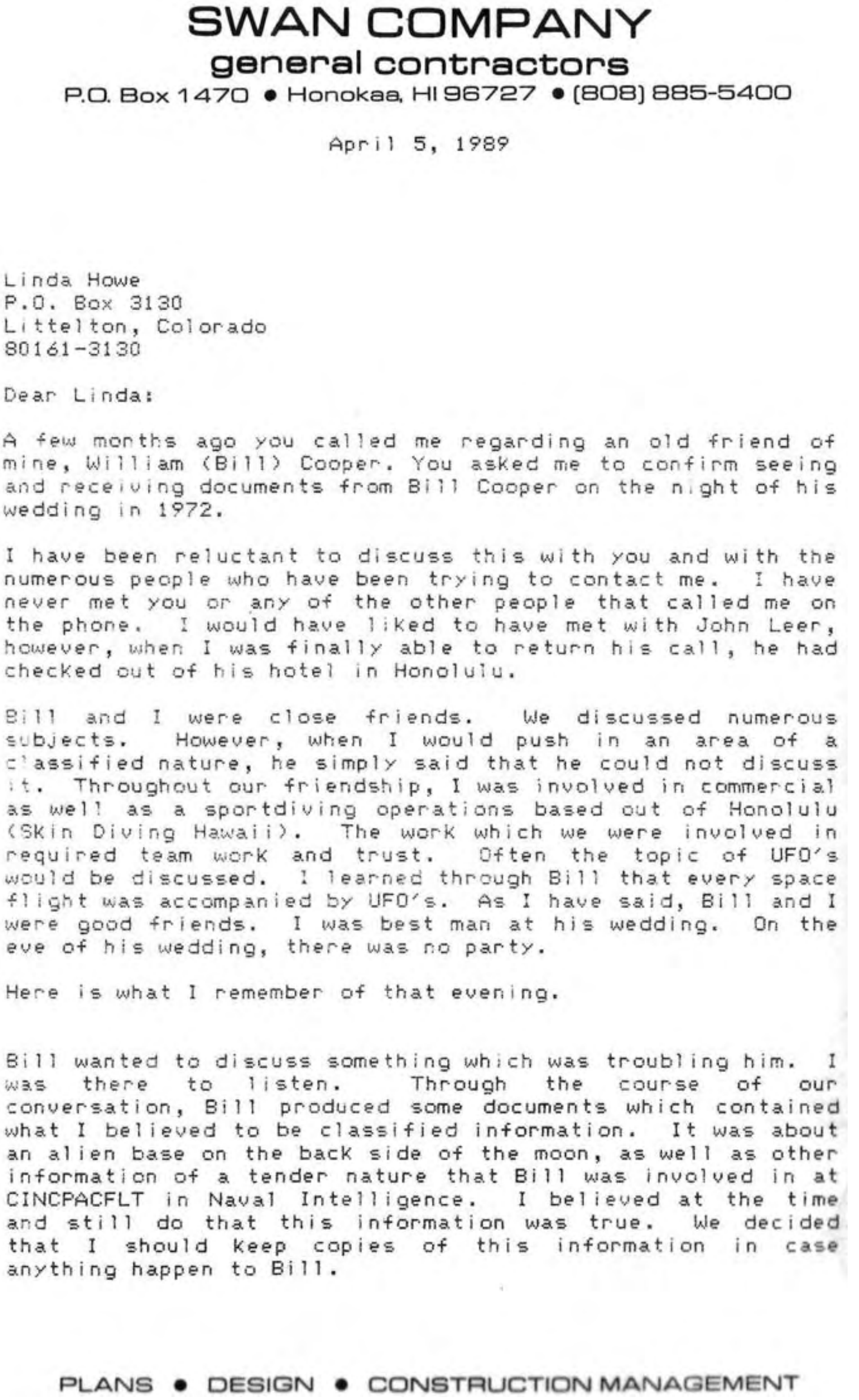

SWAN COMPANY
general contractors
P.O. Box 1470 • Honokaa, HI 96727 • (808) 885-5400

April 5, 1989

Linda Howe
P.O. Box 3130
Littelton, Colorado
80161-3130

Dear Linda:

A few months ago you called me regarding an old friend of mine, William (Bill) Cooper. You asked me to confirm seeing and receiving documents from Bill Cooper on the night of his wedding in 1972.

I have been reluctant to discuss this with you and with the numerous people who have been trying to contact me. I have never met you or any of the other people that called me on the phone. I would have liked to have met with John Leer, however, when I was finally able to return his call, he had checked out of his hotel in Honolulu.

Bill and I were close friends. We discussed numerous subjects. However, when I would push in an area of a classified nature, he simply said that he could not discuss it. Throughout our friendship, I was involved in commercial as well as a sportdiving operations based out of Honolulu (Skin Diving Hawaii). The work which we were involved in required team work and trust. Often the topic of UFO's would be discussed. I learned through Bill that every space flight was accompanied by UFO's. As I have said, Bill and I were good friends. I was best man at his wedding. On the eve of his wedding, there was no party.

Here is what I remember of that evening.

Bill wanted to discuss something which was troubling him. I was there to listen. Through the course of our conversation, Bill produced some documents which contained what I believed to be classified information. It was about an alien base on the back side of the moon, as well as other information of a tender nature that Bill was involved in at CINCPACFLT in Naval Intelligence. I believed at the time and still do that this information was true. We decided that I should keep copies of this information in case anything happen to Bill.

PLANS • DESIGN • CONSTRUCTION MANAGEMENT

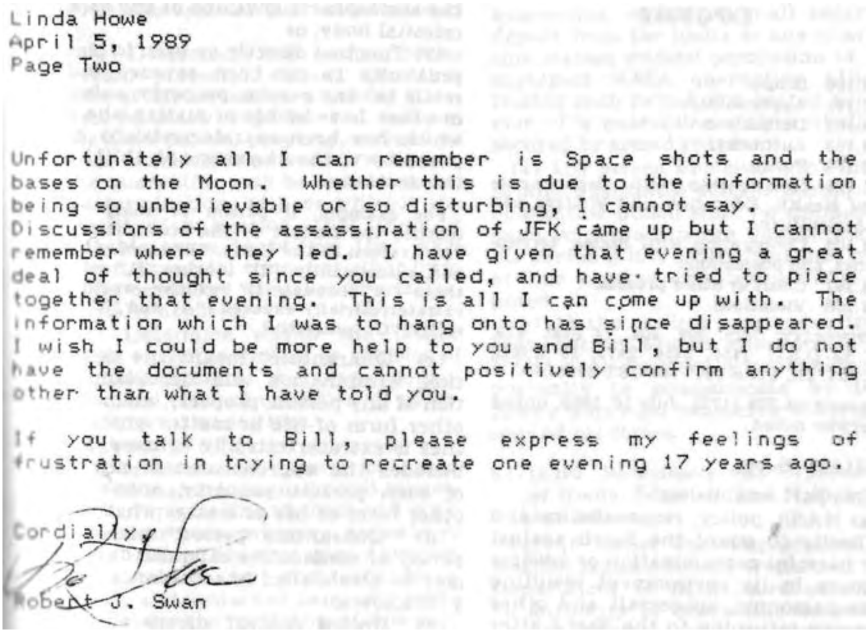

Linda Howe
April 5, 1989
Page Two

Unfortunately all I can remember is Space shots and the bases on the Moon. Whether this is due to the information being so unbelievable or so disturbing, I cannot say. Discussions of the assassination of JFK came up but I cannot remember where they led. I have given that evening a great deal of thought since you called, and have tried to piece together that evening. This is all I can come up with. The information which I was to hang onto has since disappeared. I wish I could be more help to you and Bill, but I do not have the documents and cannot positively confirm anything other than what I have told you.

If you talk to Bill, please express my feelings of frustration in trying to recreate one evening 17 years ago.

Cordially,

Robert J. Swan

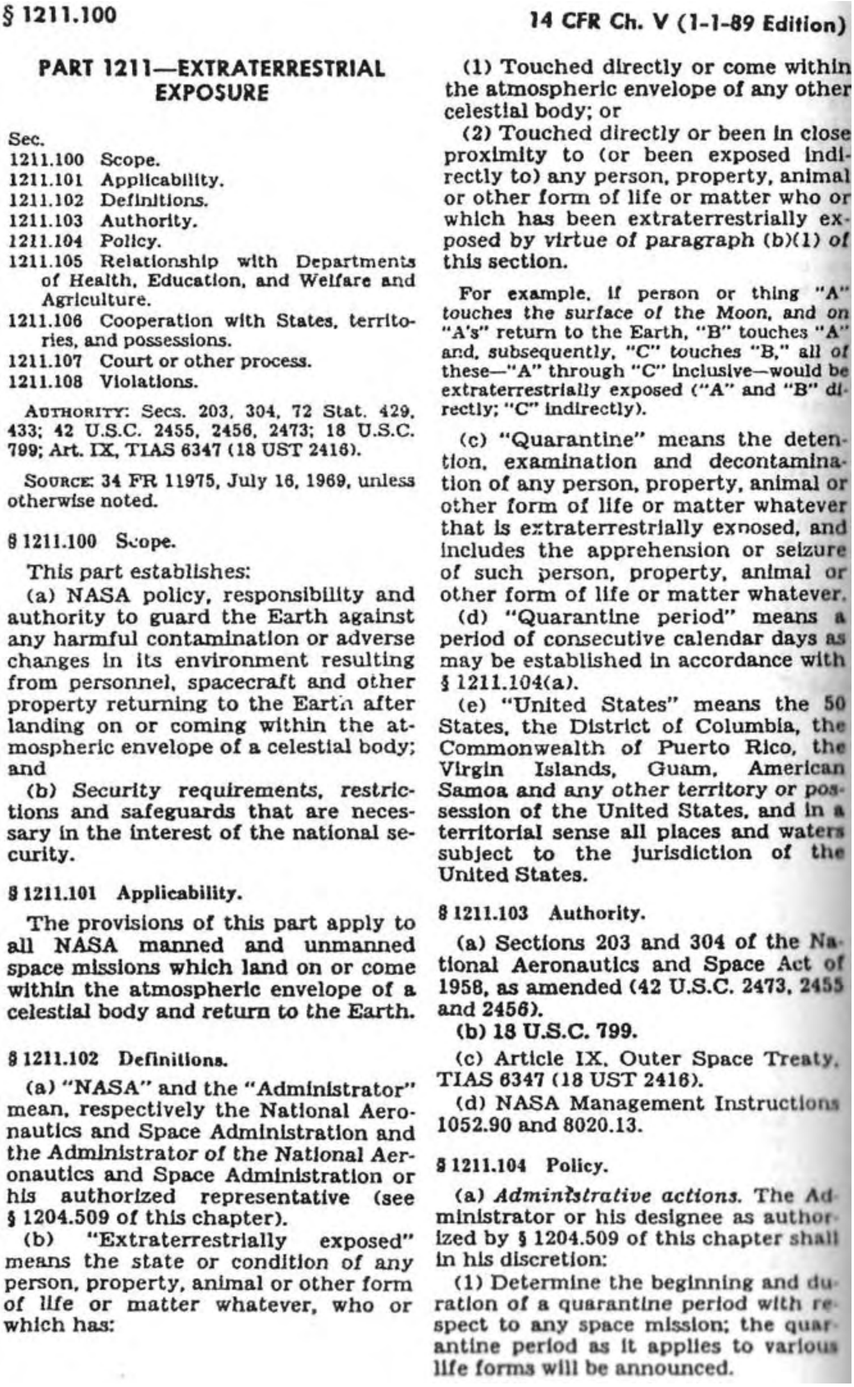

§ 1211.100 14 CFR Ch. V (1-1-89 Edition)

PART 1211—EXTRATERRESTRIAL EXPOSURE

Sec.

1211.100 Scope.
1211.101 Applicability.
1211.102 Definitions.
1211.103 Authority.
1211.104 Policy.
1211.105 Relationship with Departments of Health, Education, and Welfare and Agriculture.
1211.106 Cooperation with States, territories, and possessions.
1211.107 Court or other process.
1211.108 Violations.

AUTHORITY: Secs. 203, 304, 72 Stat. 429, 433; 42 U.S.C. 2455, 2456, 2473; 18 U.S.C. 799; Art. IX, TIAS 6347 (18 UST 2416).

SOURCE: 34 FR 11975, July 16, 1969, unless otherwise noted.

§ 1211.100 Scope.

This part establishes:

(a) NASA policy, responsibility and authority to guard the Earth against any harmful contamination or adverse changes in its environment resulting from personnel, spacecraft and other property returning to the Earth after landing on or coming within the atmospheric envelope of a celestial body; and

(b) Security requirements, restrictions and safeguards that are necessary in the interest of the national security.

§ 1211.101 Applicability.

The provisions of this part apply to all NASA manned and unmanned space missions which land on or come within the atmospheric envelope of a celestial body and return to the Earth.

§ 1211.102 Definitions.

(a) "NASA" and the "Administrator" mean, respectively the National Aeronautics and Space Administration and the Administrator of the National Aeronautics and Space Administration or his authorized representative (see § 1204.509 of this chapter).

(b) "Extraterrestrially exposed" means the state or condition of any person, property, animal or other form of life or matter whatever, who or which has:

(1) Touched directly or come within the atmospheric envelope of any other celestial body; or

(2) Touched directly or been in close proximity to (or been exposed indirectly to) any person, property, animal or other form of life or matter who or which has been extraterrestrially exposed by virtue of paragraph (b)(1) of this section.

For example, if person or thing "A" touches the surface of the Moon, and on "A's" return to the Earth, "B" touches "A" and, subsequently, "C" touches "B," all of these—"A" through "C" inclusive—would be extraterrestrially exposed ("A" and "B" directly; "C" indirectly).

(c) "Quarantine" means the detention, examination and decontamination of any person, property, animal or other form of life or matter whatever that is extraterrestrially exposed, and includes the apprehension or seizure of such person, property, animal or other form of life or matter whatever.

(d) "Quarantine period" means a period of consecutive calendar days as may be established in accordance with § 1211.104(a).

(e) "United States" means the 50 States, the District of Columbia, the Commonwealth of Puerto Rico, the Virgin Islands, Guam, American Samoa and any other territory or possession of the United States, and in a territorial sense all places and waters subject to the jurisdiction of the United States.

§ 1211.103 Authority.

(a) Sections 203 and 304 of the National Aeronautics and Space Act of 1958, as amended (42 U.S.C. 2473, 2455 and 2456).

(b) 18 U.S.C. 799.

(c) Article IX, Outer Space Treaty, TIAS 6347 (18 UST 2416).

(d) NASA Management Instructions 1052.90 and 8020.13.

§ 1211.104 Policy.

(a) *Administrative actions.* The Administrator or his designee as authorized by § 1204.509 of this chapter shall in his discretion:

(1) Determine the beginning and duration of a quarantine period with respect to any space mission; the quarantine period as it applies to various life forms will be announced.

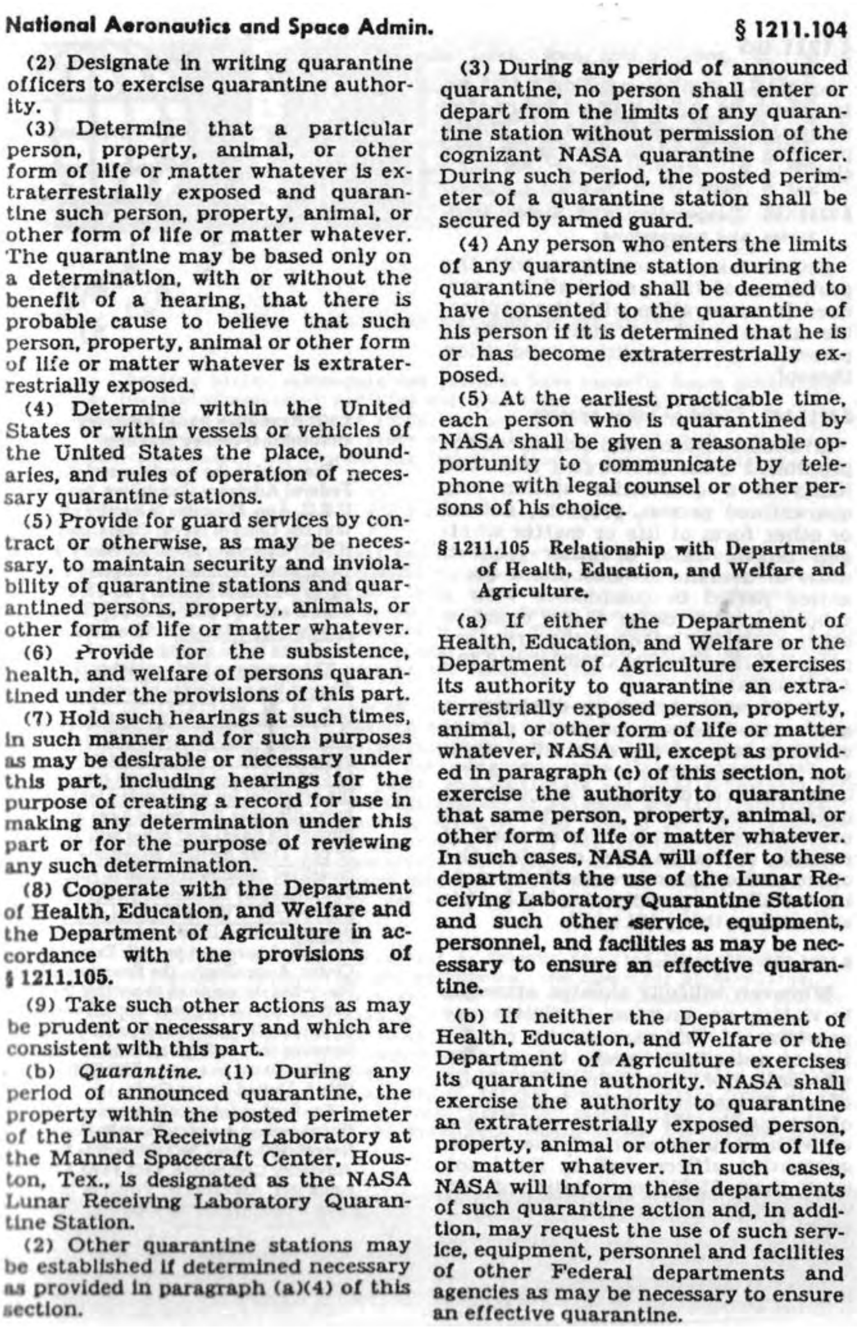

(2) Designate in writing quarantine officers to exercise quarantine authority.

(3) Determine that a particular person, property, animal, or other form of life or matter whatever is extraterrestrially exposed and quarantine such person, property, animal, or other form of life or matter whatever. The quarantine may be based only on a determination, with or without the benefit of a hearing, that there is probable cause to believe that such person, property, animal or other form of life or matter whatever is extraterrestrially exposed.

(4) Determine within the United States or within vessels or vehicles of the United States the place, boundaries, and rules of operation of necessary quarantine stations.

(5) Provide for guard services by contract or otherwise, as may be necessary, to maintain security and inviolability of quarantine stations and quarantined persons, property, animals, or other form of life or matter whatever.

(6) Provide for the subsistence, health, and welfare of persons quarantined under the provisions of this part.

(7) Hold such hearings at such times, in such manner and for such purposes as may be desirable or necessary under this part, including hearings for the purpose of creating a record for use in making any determination under this part or for the purpose of reviewing any such determination.

(8) Cooperate with the Department of Health, Education, and Welfare and the Department of Agriculture in accordance with the provisions of § 1211.105.

(9) Take such other actions as may be prudent or necessary and which are consistent with this part.

(b) *Quarantine.* (1) During any period of announced quarantine, the property within the posted perimeter of the Lunar Receiving Laboratory at the Manned Spacecraft Center, Houston, Tex., is designated as the NASA Lunar Receiving Laboratory Quarantine Station.

(2) Other quarantine stations may be established if determined necessary as provided in paragraph (a)(4) of this section.

(3) During any period of announced quarantine, no person shall enter or depart from the limits of any quarantine station without permission of the cognizant NASA quarantine officer. During such period, the posted perimeter of a quarantine station shall be secured by armed guard.

(4) Any person who enters the limits of any quarantine station during the quarantine period shall be deemed to have consented to the quarantine of his person if it is determined that he is or has become extraterrestrially exposed.

(5) At the earliest practicable time, each person who is quarantined by NASA shall be given a reasonable opportunity to communicate by telephone with legal counsel or other persons of his choice.

§ 1211.105 Relationship with Departments of Health, Education, and Welfare and Agriculture.

(a) If either the Department of Health, Education, and Welfare or the Department of Agriculture exercises its authority to quarantine an extraterrestrially exposed person, property, animal, or other form of life or matter whatever, NASA will, except as provided in paragraph (c) of this section, not exercise the authority to quarantine that same person, property, animal, or other form of life or matter whatever. In such cases, NASA will offer to these departments the use of the Lunar Receiving Laboratory Quarantine Station and such other service, equipment, personnel, and facilities as may be necessary to ensure an effective quarantine.

(b) If neither the Department of Health, Education, and Welfare or the Department of Agriculture exercises its quarantine authority. NASA shall exercise the authority to quarantine an extraterrestrially exposed person, property, animal or other form of life or matter whatever. In such cases, NASA will inform these departments of such quarantine action and, in addition, may request the use of such service, equipment, personnel and facilities of other Federal departments and agencies as may be necessary to ensure an effective quarantine.

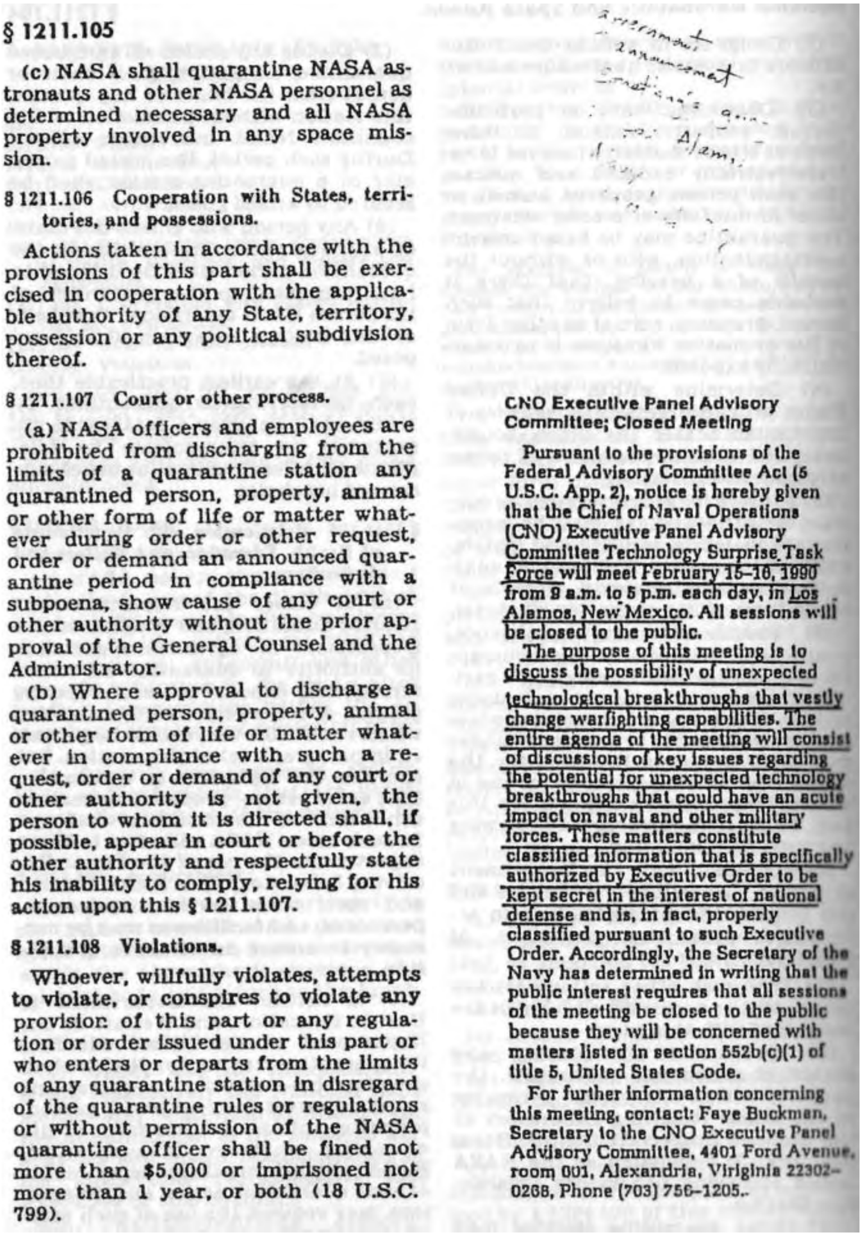

§ 1211.105

(c) NASA shall quarantine NASA astronauts and other NASA personnel as determined necessary and all NASA property involved in any space mission.

§ 1211.106 Cooperation with States, territories, and possessions.

Actions taken in accordance with the provisions of this part shall be exercised in cooperation with the applicable authority of any State, territory, possession or any political subdivision thereof.

§ 1211.107 Court or other process.

(a) NASA officers and employees are prohibited from discharging from the limits of a quarantine station any quarantined person, property, animal or other form of life or matter whatever during order or other request, order or demand an announced quarantine period in compliance with a subpoena, show cause of any court or other authority without the prior approval of the General Counsel and the Administrator.

(b) Where approval to discharge a quarantined person, property, animal or other form of life or matter whatever in compliance with such a request, order or demand of any court or other authority is not given, the person to whom it is directed shall, if possible, appear in court or before the other authority and respectfully state his inability to comply, relying for his action upon this § 1211.107.

§ 1211.108 Violations.

Whoever, willfully violates, attempts to violate, or conspires to violate any provision of this part or any regulation or order issued under this part or who enters or departs from the limits of any quarantine station in disregard of the quarantine rules or regulations or without permission of the NASA quarantine officer shall be fined not more than $5,000 or imprisoned not more than 1 year, or both (18 U.S.C. 799).

agreement
announcement
[illegible]
Alamos

CNO Executive Panel Advisory Committee; Closed Meeting

Pursuant to the provisions of the Federal Advisory Committee Act (5 U.S.C. App. 2), notice is hereby given that the Chief of Naval Operations (CNO) Executive Panel Advisory Committee Technology Surprise Task Force will meet February 15–16, 1990 from 9 a.m. to 5 p.m. each day, in Los Alamos, New Mexico. All sessions will be closed to the public.

The purpose of this meeting is to discuss the possibility of unexpected technological breakthroughs that vastly change warfighting capabilities. The entire agenda of the meeting will consist of discussions of key issues regarding the potential for unexpected technology breakthroughs that could have an acute impact on naval and other military forces. These matters constitute classified information that is specifically authorized by Executive Order to be kept secret in the interest of national defense and is, in fact, properly classified pursuant to such Executive Order. Accordingly, the Secretary of the Navy has determined in writing that the public interest requires that all sessions of the meeting be closed to the public because they will be concerned with matters listed in section 552b(c)(1) of title 5, United States Code.

For further information concerning this meeting, contact: Faye Buckman, Secretary to the CNO Executive Panel Advisory Committee, 4401 Ford Avenue, room 001, Alexandria, Virignia 22302–0268, Phone (703) 756–1205.

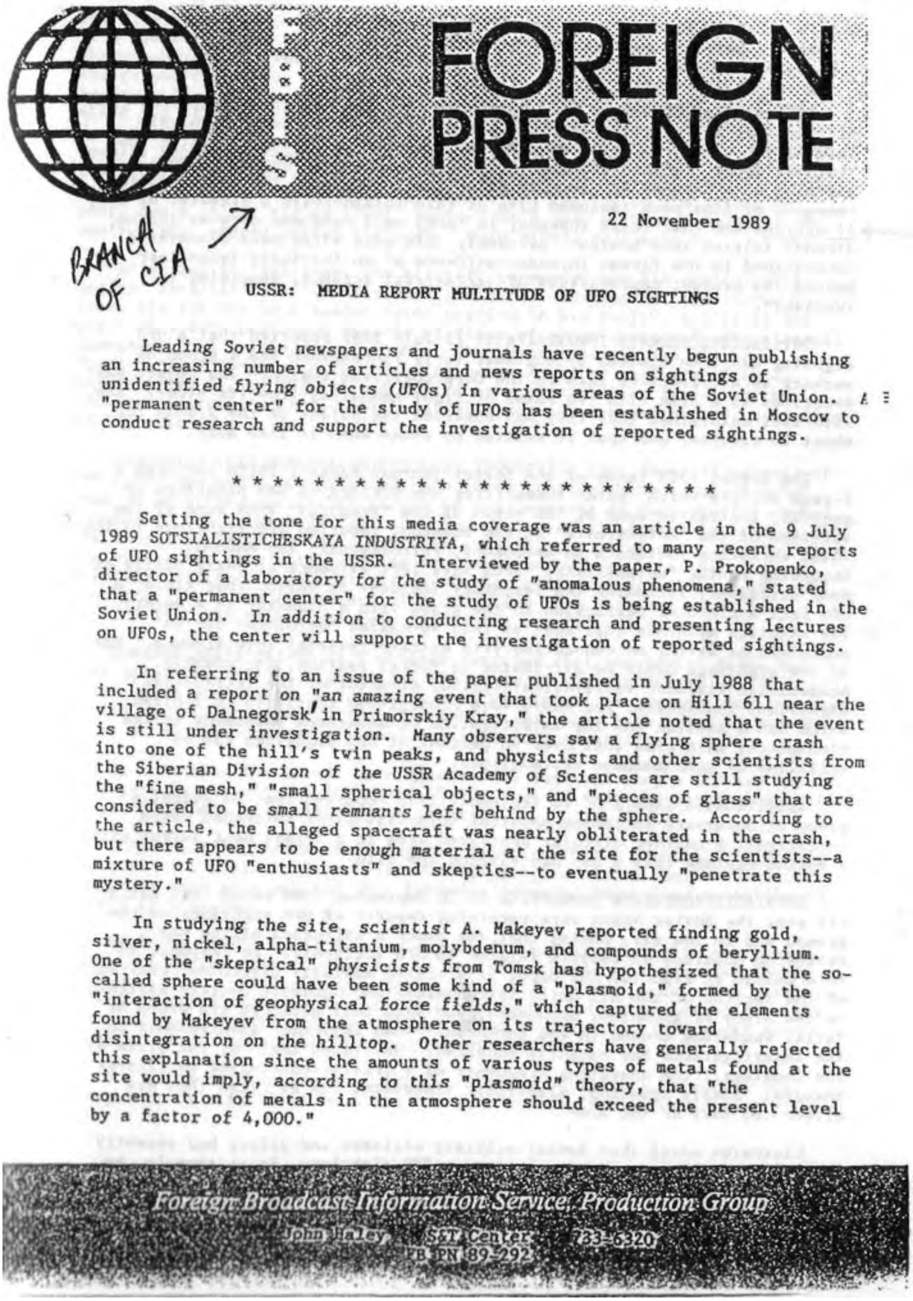

FBIS

FOREIGN PRESS NOTE

BRANCH OF CIA

22 November 1989

USSR: MEDIA REPORT MULTITUDE OF UFO SIGHTINGS

Leading Soviet newspapers and journals have recently begun publishing an increasing number of articles and news reports on sightings of unidentified flying objects (UFOs) in various areas of the Soviet Union. A "permanent center" for the study of UFOs has been established in Moscow to conduct research and support the investigation of reported sightings.

* *

Setting the tone for this media coverage was an article in the 9 July 1989 SOTSIALISTICHESKAYA INDUSTRIYA, which referred to many recent reports of UFO sightings in the USSR. Interviewed by the paper, P. Prokopenko, director of a laboratory for the study of "anomalous phenomena," stated that a "permanent center" for the study of UFOs is being established in the Soviet Union. In addition to conducting research and presenting lectures on UFOs, the center will support the investigation of reported sightings.

In referring to an issue of the paper published in July 1988 that included a report on "an amazing event that took place on Hill 611 near the village of Dalnegorsk in Primorskiy Kray," the article noted that the event is still under investigation. Many observers saw a flying sphere crash into one of the hill's twin peaks, and physicists and other scientists from the Siberian Division of the USSR Academy of Sciences are still studying the "fine mesh," "small spherical objects," and "pieces of glass" that are considered to be small remnants left behind by the sphere. According to the article, the alleged spacecraft was nearly obliterated in the crash, but there appears to be enough material at the site for the scientists--a mixture of UFO "enthusiasts" and skeptics--to eventually "penetrate this mystery."

In studying the site, scientist A. Makeyev reported finding gold, silver, nickel, alpha-titanium, molybdenum, and compounds of beryllium. One of the "skeptical" physicists from Tomsk has hypothesized that the so-called sphere could have been some kind of a "plasmoid," formed by the "interaction of geophysical force fields," which captured the elements found by Makeyev from the atmosphere on its trajectory toward disintegration on the hilltop. Other researchers have generally rejected this explanation since the amounts of various types of metals found at the site would imply, according to this "plasmoid" theory, that "the concentration of metals in the atmosphere should exceed the present level by a factor of 4,000."

Foreign Broadcast Information Service, Production Group

John Haley, S&T Center, 733-6320

FB PN 89-292

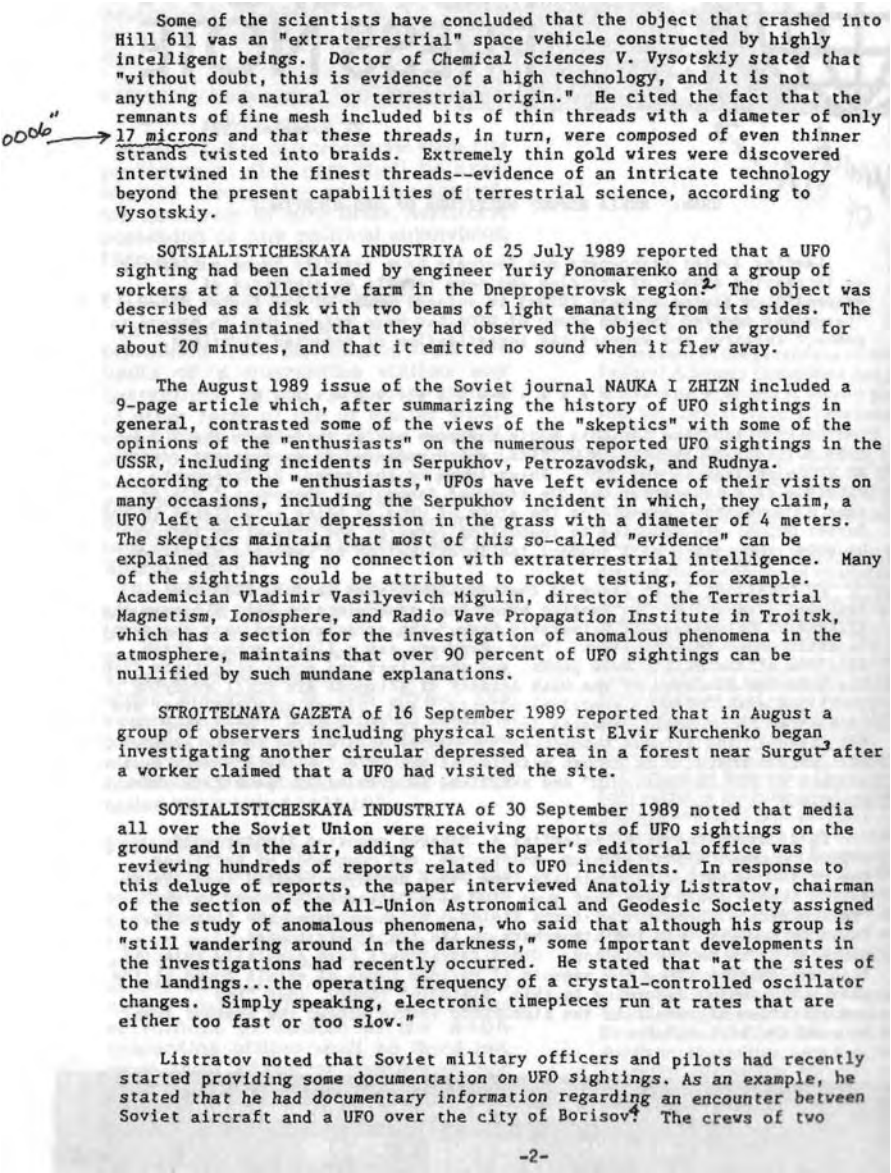

Some of the scientists have concluded that the object that crashed into Hill 611 was an "extraterrestrial" space vehicle constructed by highly intelligent beings. Doctor of Chemical Sciences V. Vysotskiy stated that "without doubt, this is evidence of a high technology, and it is not anything of a natural or terrestrial origin." He cited the fact that the remnants of fine mesh included bits of thin threads with a diameter of only 17 microns and that these threads, in turn, were composed of even thinner strands twisted into braids. Extremely thin gold wires were discovered intertwined in the finest threads--evidence of an intricate technology beyond the present capabilities of terrestrial science, according to Vysotskiy.

.0006" →

SOTSIALISTICHESKAYA INDUSTRIYA of 25 July 1989 reported that a UFO sighting had been claimed by engineer Yuriy Ponomarenko and a group of workers at a collective farm in the Dnepropetrovsk region.[2] The object was described as a disk with two beams of light emanating from its sides. The witnesses maintained that they had observed the object on the ground for about 20 minutes, and that it emitted no sound when it flew away.

The August 1989 issue of the Soviet journal NAUKA I ZHIZN included a 9-page article which, after summarizing the history of UFO sightings in general, contrasted some of the views of the "skeptics" with some of the opinions of the "enthusiasts" on the numerous reported UFO sightings in the USSR, including incidents in Serpukhov, Petrozavodsk, and Rudnya. According to the "enthusiasts," UFOs have left evidence of their visits on many occasions, including the Serpukhov incident in which, they claim, a UFO left a circular depression in the grass with a diameter of 4 meters. The skeptics maintain that most of this so-called "evidence" can be explained as having no connection with extraterrestrial intelligence. Many of the sightings could be attributed to rocket testing, for example. Academician Vladimir Vasilyevich Migulin, director of the Terrestrial Magnetism, Ionosphere, and Radio Wave Propagation Institute in Troitsk, which has a section for the investigation of anomalous phenomena in the atmosphere, maintains that over 90 percent of UFO sightings can be nullified by such mundane explanations.

STROITELNAYA GAZETA of 16 September 1989 reported that in August a group of observers including physical scientist Elvir Kurchenko began investigating another circular depressed area in a forest near Surgut[3] after a worker claimed that a UFO had visited the site.

SOTSIALISTICHESKAYA INDUSTRIYA of 30 September 1989 noted that media all over the Soviet Union were receiving reports of UFO sightings on the ground and in the air, adding that the paper's editorial office was reviewing hundreds of reports related to UFO incidents. In response to this deluge of reports, the paper interviewed Anatoliy Listratov, chairman of the section of the All-Union Astronomical and Geodesic Society assigned to the study of anomalous phenomena, who said that although his group is "still wandering around in the darkness," some important developments in the investigations had recently occurred. He stated that "at the sites of the landings...the operating frequency of a crystal-controlled oscillator changes. Simply speaking, electronic timepieces run at rates that are either too fast or too slow."

Listratov noted that Soviet military officers and pilots had recently started providing some documentation on UFO sightings. As an example, he stated that he had documentary information regarding an encounter between Soviet aircraft and a UFO over the city of Borisov.[4] The crews of two

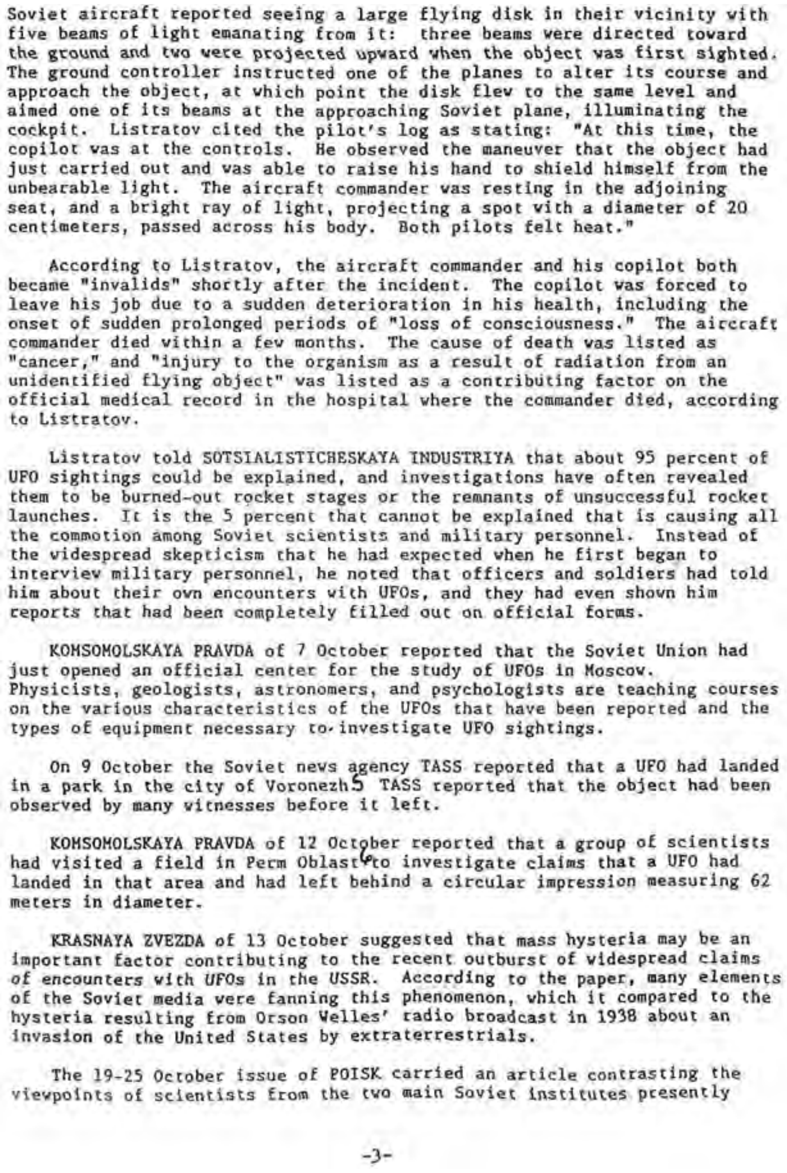

Soviet aircraft reported seeing a large flying disk in their vicinity with five beams of light emanating from it: three beams were directed toward the ground and two were projected upward when the object was first sighted. The ground controller instructed one of the planes to alter its course and approach the object, at which point the disk flew to the same level and aimed one of its beams at the approaching Soviet plane, illuminating the cockpit. Listratov cited the pilot's log as stating: "At this time, the copilot was at the controls. He observed the maneuver that the object had just carried out and was able to raise his hand to shield himself from the unbearable light. The aircraft commander was resting in the adjoining seat, and a bright ray of light, projecting a spot with a diameter of 20 centimeters, passed across his body. Both pilots felt heat."

According to Listratov, the aircraft commander and his copilot both became "invalids" shortly after the incident. The copilot was forced to leave his job due to a sudden deterioration in his health, including the onset of sudden prolonged periods of "loss of consciousness." The aircraft commander died within a few months. The cause of death was listed as "cancer," and "injury to the organism as a result of radiation from an unidentified flying object" was listed as a contributing factor on the official medical record in the hospital where the commander died, according to Listratov.

Listratov told SOTSIALISTICHESKAYA INDUSTRIYA that about 95 percent of UFO sightings could be explained, and investigations have often revealed them to be burned-out rocket stages or the remnants of unsuccessful rocket launches. It is the 5 percent that cannot be explained that is causing all the commotion among Soviet scientists and military personnel. Instead of the widespread skepticism that he had expected when he first began to interview military personnel, he noted that officers and soldiers had told him about their own encounters with UFOs, and they had even shown him reports that had been completely filled out on official forms.

KOMSOMOLSKAYA PRAVDA of 7 October reported that the Soviet Union had just opened an official center for the study of UFOs in Moscow. Physicists, geologists, astronomers, and psychologists are teaching courses on the various characteristics of the UFOs that have been reported and the types of equipment necessary to investigate UFO sightings.

On 9 October the Soviet news agency TASS reported that a UFO had landed in a park in the city of Voronezh.[5] TASS reported that the object had been observed by many witnesses before it left.

KOMSOMOLSKAYA PRAVDA of 12 October reported that a group of scientists had visited a field in Perm Oblast[6] to investigate claims that a UFO had landed in that area and had left behind a circular impression measuring 62 meters in diameter.

KRASNAYA ZVEZDA of 13 October suggested that mass hysteria may be an important factor contributing to the recent outburst of widespread claims of encounters with UFOs in the USSR. According to the paper, many elements of the Soviet media were fanning this phenomenon, which it compared to the hysteria resulting from Orson Welles' radio broadcast in 1938 about an invasion of the United States by extraterrestrials.

The 19-25 October issue of POISK carried an article contrasting the viewpoints of scientists from the two main Soviet institutes presently

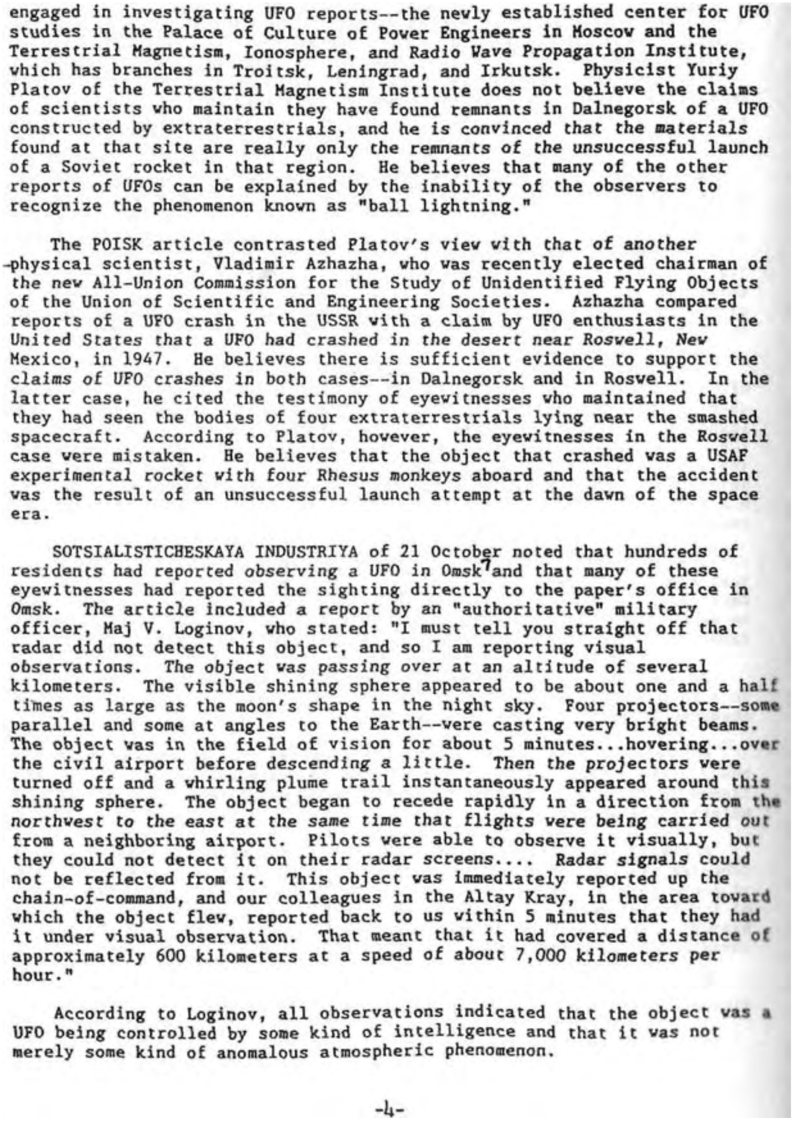

engaged in investigating UFO reports--the newly established center for UFO studies in the Palace of Culture of Power Engineers in Moscow and the Terrestrial Magnetism, Ionosphere, and Radio Wave Propagation Institute, which has branches in Troitsk, Leningrad, and Irkutsk. Physicist Yuriy Platov of the Terrestrial Magnetism Institute does not believe the claims of scientists who maintain they have found remnants in Dalnegorsk of a UFO constructed by extraterrestrials, and he is convinced that the materials found at that site are really only the remnants of the unsuccessful launch of a Soviet rocket in that region. He believes that many of the other reports of UFOs can be explained by the inability of the observers to recognize the phenomenon known as "ball lightning."

The POISK article contrasted Platov's view with that of another physical scientist, Vladimir Azhazha, who was recently elected chairman of the new All-Union Commission for the Study of Unidentified Flying Objects of the Union of Scientific and Engineering Societies. Azhazha compared reports of a UFO crash in the USSR with a claim by UFO enthusiasts in the United States that a UFO had crashed in the desert near Roswell, New Mexico, in 1947. He believes there is sufficient evidence to support the claims of UFO crashes in both cases--in Dalnegorsk and in Roswell. In the latter case, he cited the testimony of eyewitnesses who maintained that they had seen the bodies of four extraterrestrials lying near the smashed spacecraft. According to Platov, however, the eyewitnesses in the Roswell case were mistaken. He believes that the object that crashed was a USAF experimental rocket with four Rhesus monkeys aboard and that the accident was the result of an unsuccessful launch attempt at the dawn of the space era.

SOTSIALISTICHESKAYA INDUSTRIYA of 21 October noted that hundreds of residents had reported observing a UFO in Omsk[7] and that many of these eyewitnesses had reported the sighting directly to the paper's office in Omsk. The article included a report by an "authoritative" military officer, Maj V. Loginov, who stated: "I must tell you straight off that radar did not detect this object, and so I am reporting visual observations. The object was passing over at an altitude of several kilometers. The visible shining sphere appeared to be about one and a half times as large as the moon's shape in the night sky. Four projectors--some parallel and some at angles to the Earth--were casting very bright beams. The object was in the field of vision for about 5 minutes...hovering...over the civil airport before descending a little. Then the projectors were turned off and a whirling plume trail instantaneously appeared around this shining sphere. The object began to recede rapidly in a direction from the northwest to the east at the same time that flights were being carried out from a neighboring airport. Pilots were able to observe it visually, but they could not detect it on their radar screens.... Radar signals could not be reflected from it. This object was immediately reported up the chain-of-command, and our colleagues in the Altay Kray, in the area toward which the object flew, reported back to us within 5 minutes that they had it under visual observation. That meant that it had covered a distance of approximately 600 kilometers at a speed of about 7,000 kilometers per hour."

According to Loginov, all observations indicated that the object was a UFO being controlled by some kind of intelligence and that it was not merely some kind of anomalous atmospheric phenomenon.

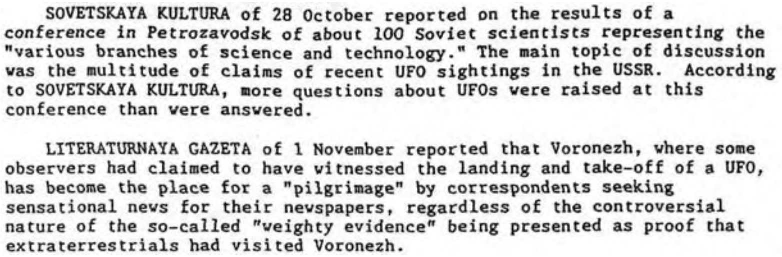

SOVETSKAYA KULTURA of 28 October reported on the results of a conference in Petrozavodsk of about 100 Soviet scientists representing the "various branches of science and technology." The main topic of discussion was the multitude of claims of recent UFO sightings in the USSR. According to SOVETSKAYA KULTURA, more questions about UFOs were raised at this conference than were answered.

LITERATURNAYA GAZETA of 1 November reported that Voronezh, where some observers had claimed to have witnessed the landing and take-off of a UFO, has become the place for a "pilgrimage" by correspondents seeking sensational news for their newspapers, regardless of the controversial nature of the so-called "weighty evidence" being presented as proof that extraterrestrials had visited Voronezh.

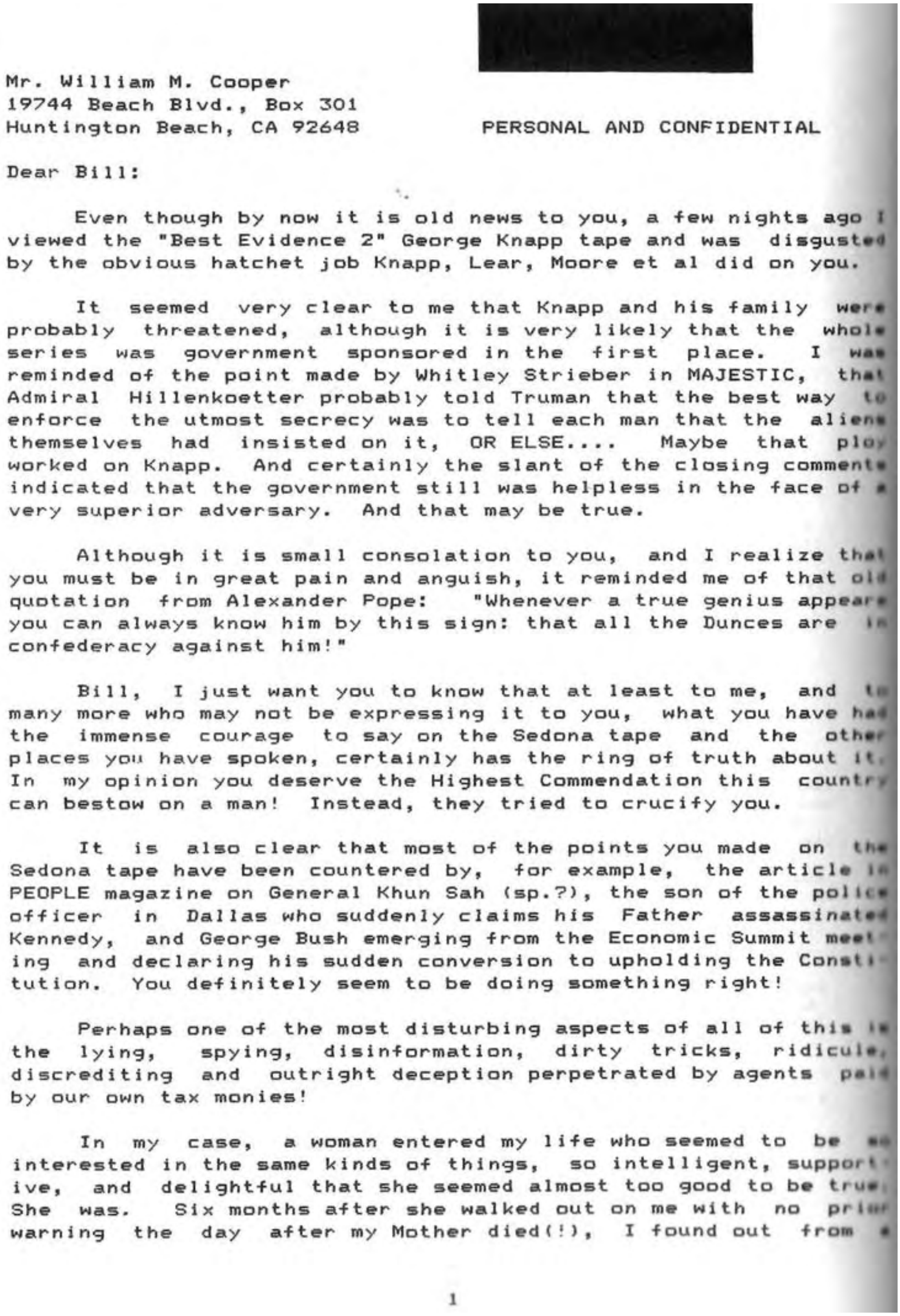

[redacted]

Mr. William M. Cooper
19744 Beach Blvd., Box 301
Huntington Beach, CA 92648

PERSONAL AND CONFIDENTIAL

Dear Bill:

Even though by now it is old news to you, a few nights ago I viewed the "Best Evidence 2" George Knapp tape and was disgusted by the obvious hatchet job Knapp, Lear, Moore et al did on you.

It seemed very clear to me that Knapp and his family were probably threatened, although it is very likely that the whole series was government sponsored in the first place. I was reminded of the point made by Whitley Strieber in MAJESTIC, that Admiral Hillenkoetter probably told Truman that the best way to enforce the utmost secrecy was to tell each man that the aliens themselves had insisted on it, OR ELSE.... Maybe that ploy worked on Knapp. And certainly the slant of the closing comments indicated that the government still was helpless in the face of a very superior adversary. And that may be true.

Although it is small consolation to you, and I realize that you must be in great pain and anguish, it reminded me of that old quotation from Alexander Pope: "Whenever a true genius appears you can always know him by this sign: that all the Dunces are in confederacy against him!"

Bill, I just want you to know that at least to me, and to many more who may not be expressing it to you, what you have had the immense courage to say on the Sedona tape and the other places you have spoken, certainly has the ring of truth about it. In my opinion you deserve the Highest Commendation this country can bestow on a man! Instead, they tried to crucify you.

It is also clear that most of the points you made on the Sedona tape have been countered by, for example, the article in PEOPLE magazine on General Khun Sah (sp.?), the son of the police officer in Dallas who suddenly claims his Father assassinated Kennedy, and George Bush emerging from the Economic Summit meeting and declaring his sudden conversion to upholding the Constitution. You definitely seem to be doing something right!

Perhaps one of the most disturbing aspects of all of this is the lying, spying, disinformation, dirty tricks, ridicule, discrediting and outright deception perpetrated by agents paid by our own tax monies!

In my case, a woman entered my life who seemed to be so interested in the same kinds of things, so intelligent, supportive, and delightful that she seemed almost too good to be true. She was. Six months after she walked out on me with no prior warning the day after my Mother died(!), I found out from a

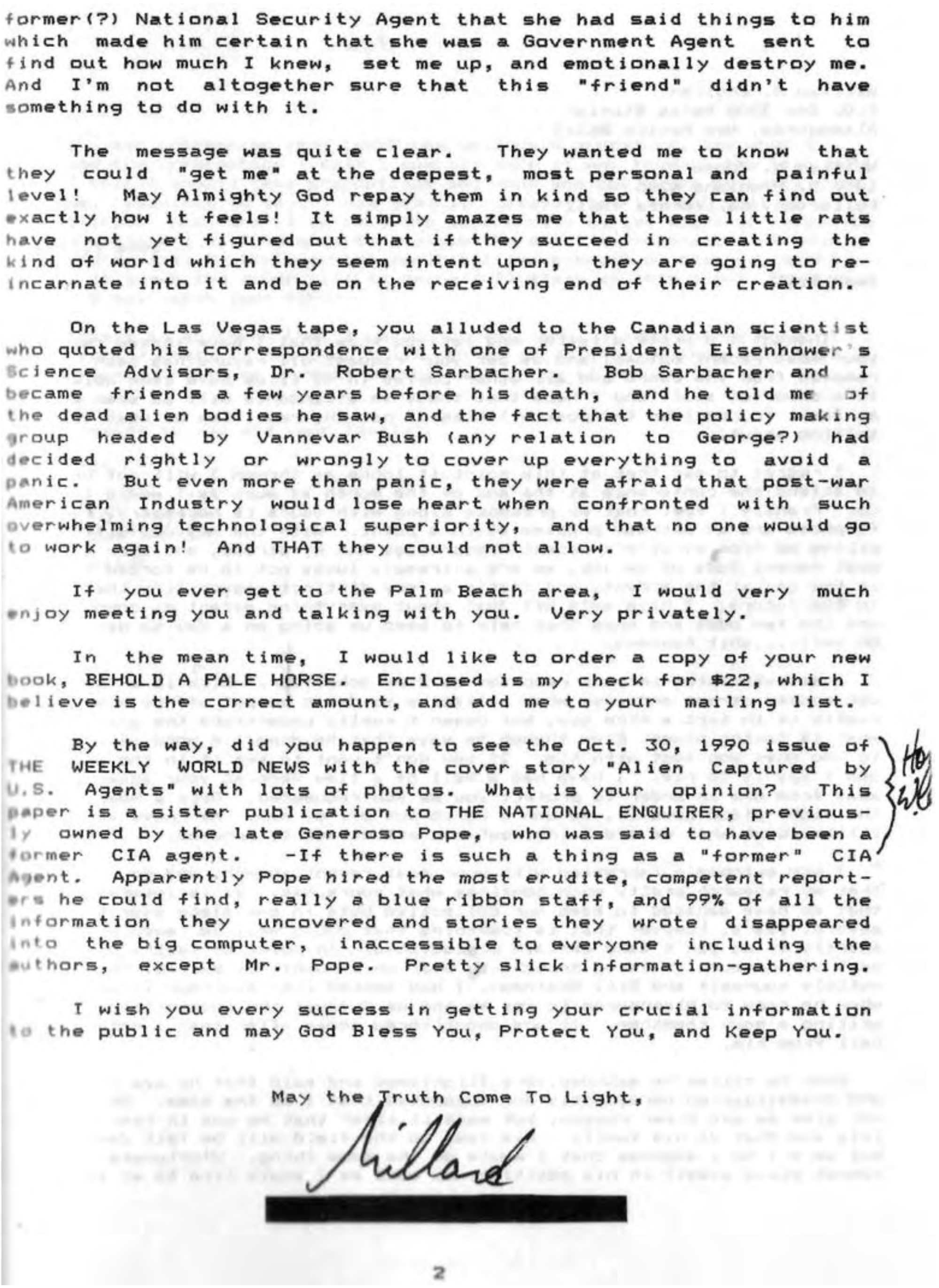

former(?) National Security Agent that she had said things to him which made him certain that she was a Government Agent sent to find out how much I knew, set me up, and emotionally destroy me. And I'm not altogether sure that this "friend" didn't have something to do with it.

The message was quite clear. They wanted me to know that they could "get me" at the deepest, most personal and painful level! May Almighty God repay them in kind so they can find out exactly how it feels! It simply amazes me that these little rats have not yet figured out that if they succeed in creating the kind of world which they seem intent upon, they are going to re-incarnate into it and be on the receiving end of their creation.

On the Las Vegas tape, you alluded to the Canadian scientist who quoted his correspondence with one of President Eisenhower's Science Advisors, Dr. Robert Sarbacher. Bob Sarbacher and I became friends a few years before his death, and he told me of the dead alien bodies he saw, and the fact that the policy making group headed by Vannevar Bush (any relation to George?) had decided rightly or wrongly to cover up everything to avoid a panic. But even more than panic, they were afraid that post-war American Industry would lose heart when confronted with such overwhelming technological superiority, and that no one would go to work again! And THAT they could not allow.

If you ever get to the Palm Beach area, I would very much enjoy meeting you and talking with you. Very privately.

In the mean time, I would like to order a copy of your new book, BEHOLD A PALE HORSE. Enclosed is my check for $22, which I believe is the correct amount, and add me to your mailing list.

By the way, did you happen to see the Oct. 30, 1990 issue of THE WEEKLY WORLD NEWS with the cover story "Alien Captured by U.S. Agents" with lots of photos. What is your opinion? This paper is a sister publication to THE NATIONAL ENQUIRER, previously owned by the late Generoso Pope, who was said to have been a former CIA agent. -If there is such a thing as a "former" CIA Agent. Apparently Pope hired the most erudite, competent reporters he could find, really a blue ribbon staff, and 99% of all the information they uncovered and stories they wrote disappeared into the big computer, inaccessible to everyone including the authors, except Mr. Pope. Pretty slick information-gathering.

Ho
W

I wish you every success in getting your crucial information to the public and may God Bless You, Protect You, and Keep You.

May the Truth Come To Light,

Millard

[redacted]

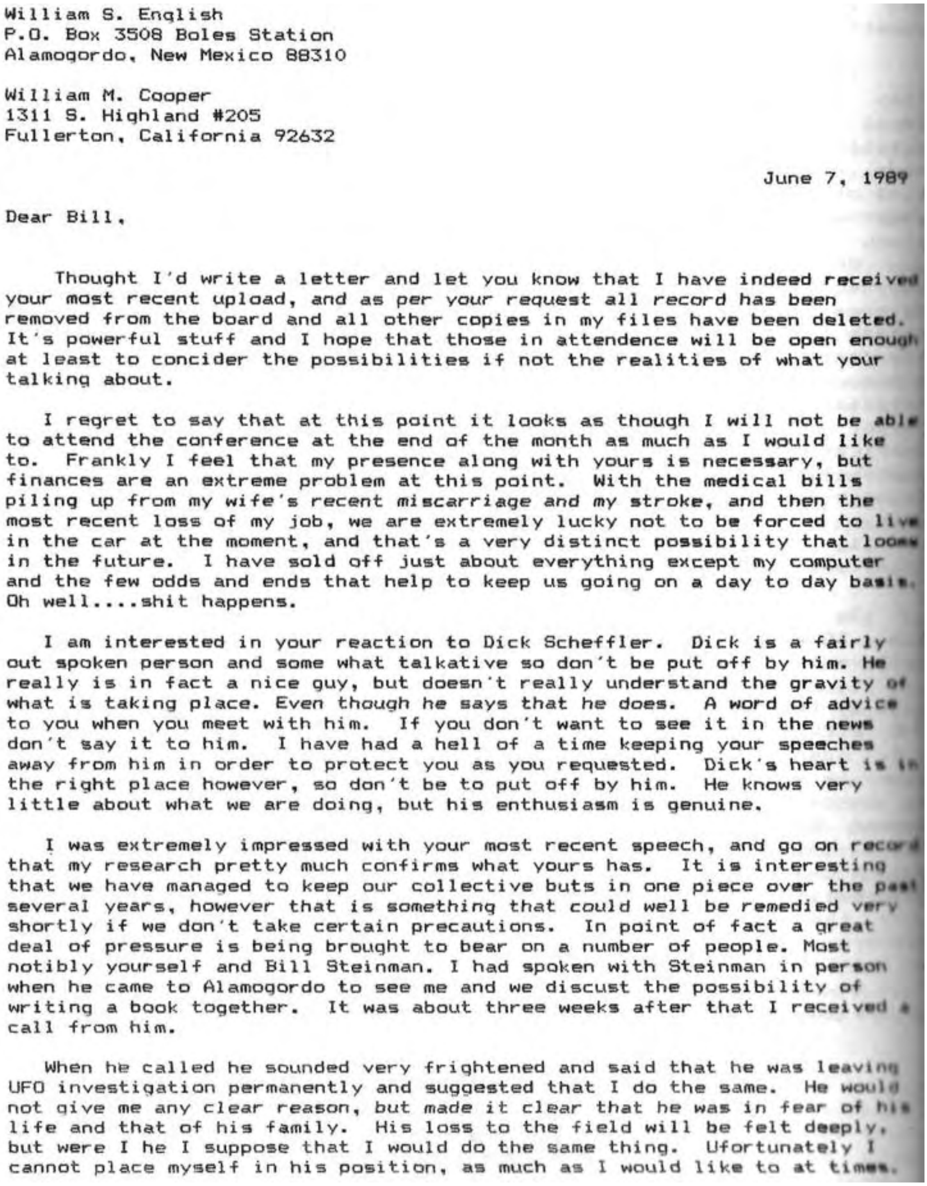

William S. English
P.O. Box 3508 Boles Station
Alamogordo, New Mexico 88310

William M. Cooper
1311 S. Highland #205
Fullerton, California 92632

June 7, 1989

Dear Bill,

Thought I'd write a letter and let you know that I have indeed received your most recent upload, and as per your request all record has been removed from the board and all other copies in my files have been deleted. It's powerful stuff and I hope that those in attendence will be open enough at least to concider the possibilities if not the realities of what your talking about.

I regret to say that at this point it looks as though I will not be able to attend the conference at the end of the month as much as I would like to. Frankly I feel that my presence along with yours is necessary, but finances are an extreme problem at this point. With the medical bills piling up from my wife's recent miscarriage and my stroke, and then the most recent loss of my job, we are extremely lucky not to be forced to live in the car at the moment, and that's a very distinct possibility that looms in the future. I have sold off just about everything except my computer and the few odds and ends that help to keep us going on a day to day basis. Oh well....shit happens.

I am interested in your reaction to Dick Scheffler. Dick is a fairly out spoken person and some what talkative so don't be put off by him. He really is in fact a nice guy, but doesn't really understand the gravity of what is taking place. Even though he says that he does. A word of advice to you when you meet with him. If you don't want to see it in the news don't say it to him. I have had a hell of a time keeping your speeches away from him in order to protect you as you requested. Dick's heart is in the right place however, so don't be to put off by him. He knows very little about what we are doing, but his enthusiasm is genuine.

I was extremely impressed with your most recent speech, and go on record that my research pretty much confirms what yours has. It is interesting that we have managed to keep our collective buts in one piece over the past several years, however that is something that could well be remedied very shortly if we don't take certain precautions. In point of fact a great deal of pressure is being brought to bear on a number of people. Most notibly yourself and Bill Steinman. I had spoken with Steinman in person when he came to Alamogordo to see me and we discust the possibility of writing a book together. It was about three weeks after that I received a call from him.

When he called he sounded very frightened and said that he was leaving UFO investigation permanently and suggested that I do the same. He would not give me any clear reason, but made it clear that he was in fear of his life and that of his family. His loss to the field will be felt deeply, but were I he I suppose that I would do the same thing. Ufortunately I cannot place myself in his position, as much as I would like to at times.

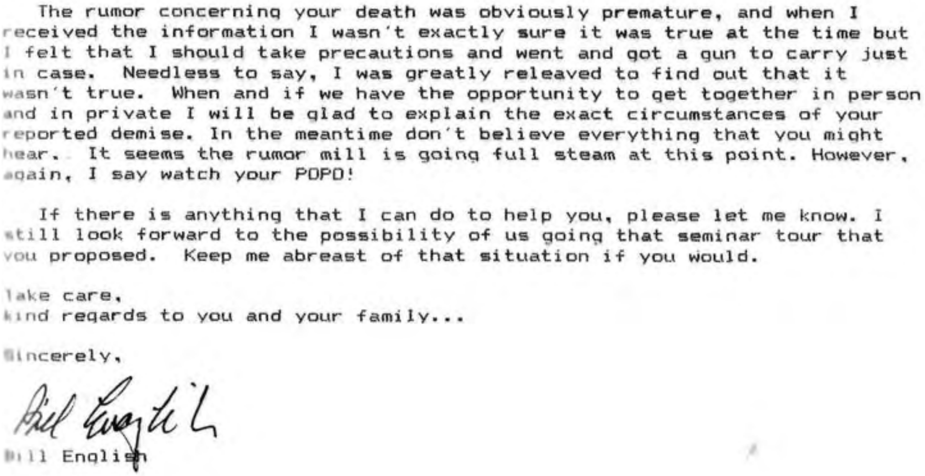

The rumor concerning your death was obviously premature, and when I received the information I wasn't exactly sure it was true at the time but I felt that I should take precautions and went and got a gun to carry just in case. Needless to say, I was greatly releaved to find out that it wasn't true. When and if we have the opportunity to get together in person and in private I will be glad to explain the exact circumstances of your reported demise. In the meantime don't believe everything that you might hear. It seems the rumor mill is going full steam at this point. However, again, I say watch your POPO!

If there is anything that I can do to help you, please let me know. I still look forward to the possibility of us going that seminar tour that you proposed. Keep me abreast of that situation if you would.

Take care,
Kind regards to you and your family...

Sincerely,

Bill English

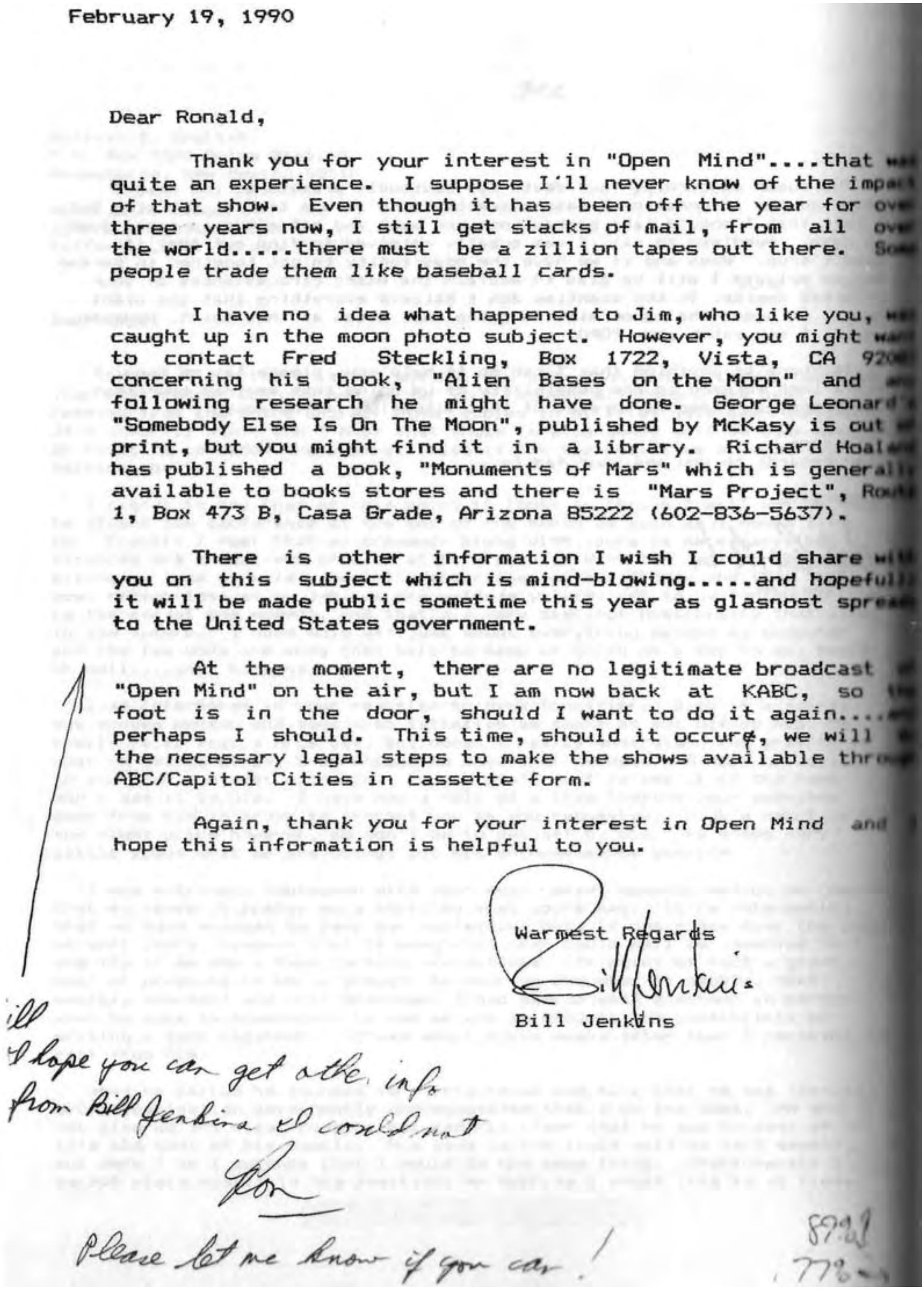

February 19, 1990

Dear Ronald,

Thank you for your interest in "Open Mind"....that wa quite an experience. I suppose I'll never know of the impa of that show. Even though it has been off the year for ove three years now, I still get stacks of mail, from all ove the world.....there must be a zillion tapes out there. Som people trade them like baseball cards.

I have no idea what happened to Jim, who like you, wa caught up in the moon photo subject. However, you might wan to contact Fred Steckling, Box 1722, Vista, CA 920 concerning his book, "Alien Bases on the Moon" and an following research he might have done. George Leonard' "Somebody Else Is On The Moon", published by McKasy is out o print, but you might find it in a library. Richard Hoal has published a book, "Monuments of Mars" which is generall available to books stores and there is "Mars Project", Rou 1, Box 473 B, Casa Grade, Arizona 85222 (602-836-5637).

There is other information I wish I could share wi you on this subject which is mind-blowing.....and hopefull it will be made public sometime this year as glasnost sprea to the United States government.

At the moment, there are no legitimate broadcast "Open Mind" on the air, but I am now back at KABC, so th foot is in the door, should I want to do it again.... perhaps I should. This time, should it occur~~e~~, we will the necessary legal steps to make the shows available thro ABC/Capitol Cities in cassette form.

Again, thank you for your interest in Open Mind and hope this information is helpful to you.

Warmest Regards

Bill Jenkins

Bill Jenkins

ill

I hope you can get othe info from Bill Jenkins I could not

Ron

Please let me know if you can!

8721

77%

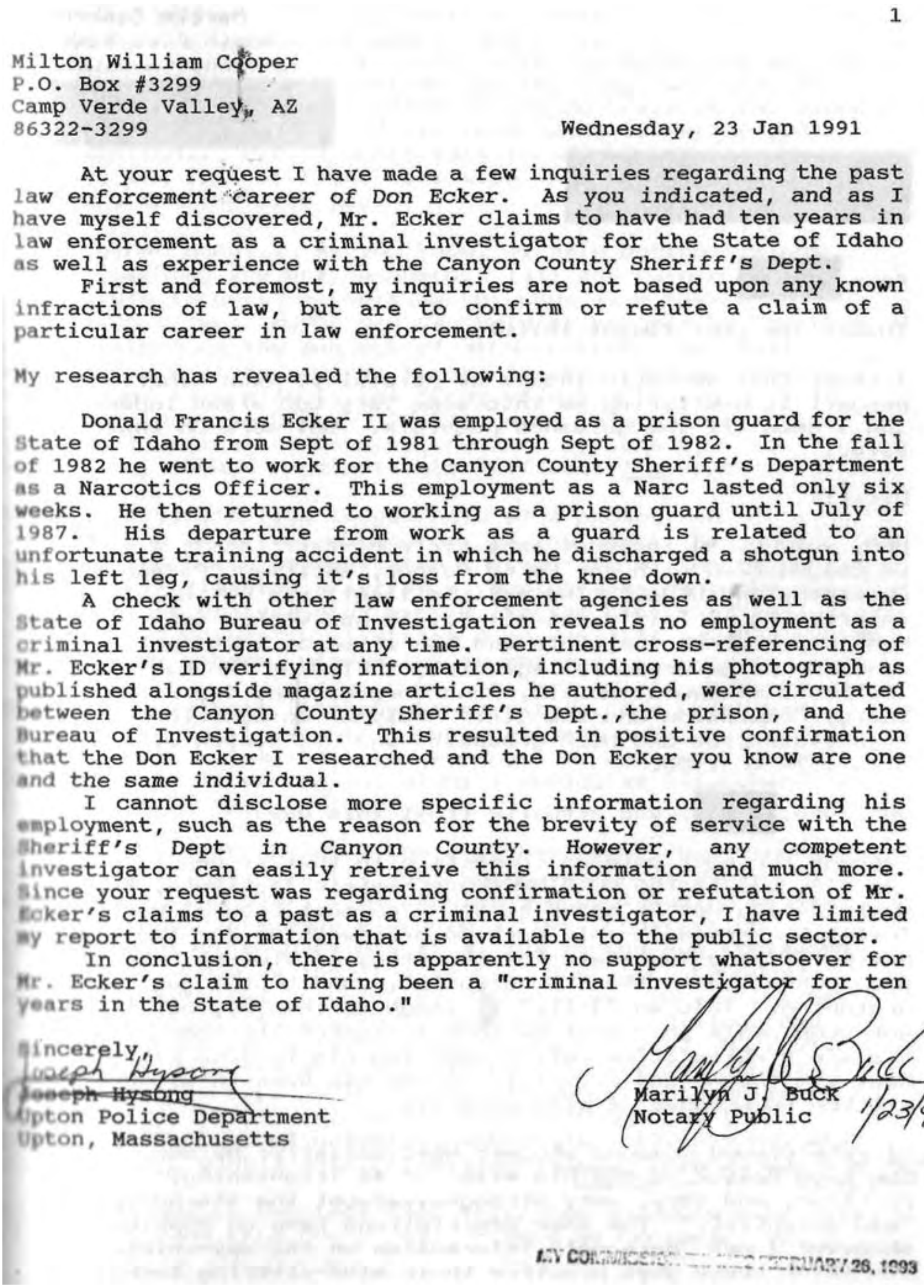

1

Milton William Cooper
P.O. Box #3299
Camp Verde Valley, AZ
86322-3299

Wednesday, 23 Jan 1991

At your request I have made a few inquiries regarding the past law enforcement career of Don Ecker. As you indicated, and as I have myself discovered, Mr. Ecker claims to have had ten years in law enforcement as a criminal investigator for the State of Idaho as well as experience with the Canyon County Sheriff's Dept.

First and foremost, my inquiries are not based upon any known infractions of law, but are to confirm or refute a claim of a particular career in law enforcement.

My research has revealed the following:

Donald Francis Ecker II was employed as a prison guard for the State of Idaho from Sept of 1981 through Sept of 1982. In the fall of 1982 he went to work for the Canyon County Sheriff's Department as a Narcotics Officer. This employment as a Narc lasted only six weeks. He then returned to working as a prison guard until July of 1987. His departure from work as a guard is related to an unfortunate training accident in which he discharged a shotgun into his left leg, causing it's loss from the knee down.

A check with other law enforcement agencies as well as the State of Idaho Bureau of Investigation reveals no employment as a criminal investigator at any time. Pertinent cross-referencing of Mr. Ecker's ID verifying information, including his photograph as published alongside magazine articles he authored, were circulated between the Canyon County Sheriff's Dept.,the prison, and the Bureau of Investigation. This resulted in positive confirmation that the Don Ecker I researched and the Don Ecker you know are one and the same individual.

I cannot disclose more specific information regarding his employment, such as the reason for the brevity of service with the Sheriff's Dept in Canyon County. However, any competent investigator can easily retreive this information and much more. Since your request was regarding confirmation or refutation of Mr. Ecker's claims to a past as a criminal investigator, I have limited my report to information that is available to the public sector.

In conclusion, there is apparently no support whatsoever for Mr. Ecker's claim to having been a "criminal investigator for ten years in the State of Idaho."

Sincerely,
Joseph Hysong
Joseph Hysong
Upton Police Department
Upton, Massachusetts

Marilyn J. Buck
Notary Public
1/23/91

MY COMMISSION EXPIRES FEBRUARY 26, 1993

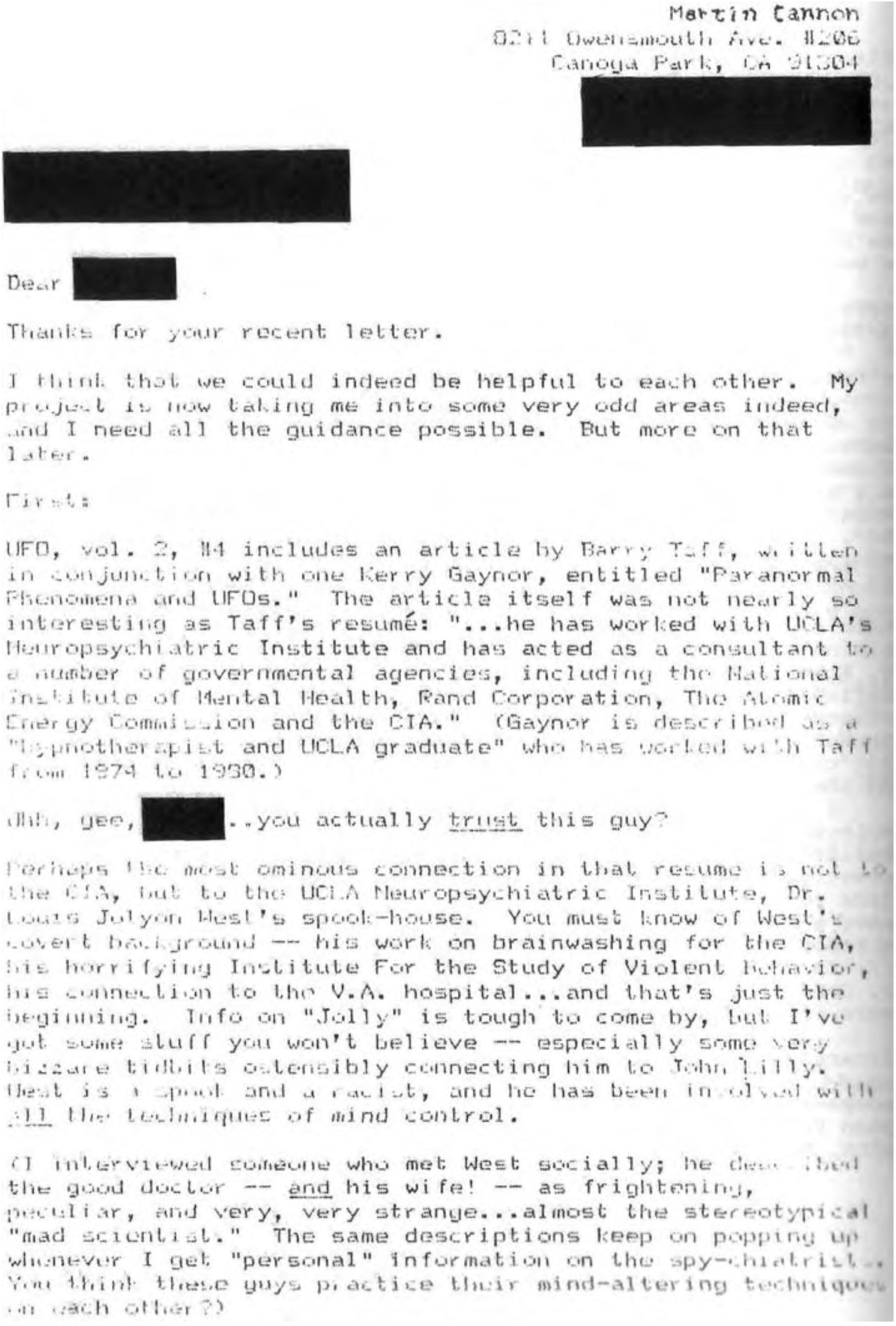

Martin Cannon
8211 Owensmouth Ave. #206
Canoga Park, CA 91304
[redacted]

[redacted]

Dear [redacted]

Thanks for your recent letter.

I think that we could indeed be helpful to each other. My project is now taking me into some very odd areas indeed, and I need all the guidance possible. But more on that later.

First:

UFO, vol. 2, #4 includes an article by Barry Taff, written in conjunction with one Kerry Gaynor, entitled "Paranormal Phenomena and UFOs." The article itself was not nearly so interesting as Taff's resumé: "...he has worked with UCLA's Neuropsychiatric Institute and has acted as a consultant to a number of governmental agencies, including the National Institute of Mental Health, Rand Corporation, The Atomic Energy Commission and the CIA." (Gaynor is described as a "hypnotherapist and UCLA graduate" who has worked with Taff from 1974 to 1980.)

Uhh, gee, [redacted]..you actually trust this guy?

Perhaps the most ominous connection in that resume is not to the CIA, but to the UCLA Neuropsychiatric Institute, Dr. Louis Jolyon West's spook-house. You must know of West's covert background -- his work on brainwashing for the CIA, his horrifying Institute For the Study of Violent Behavior, his connection to the V.A. hospital...and that's just the beginning. Info on "Jolly" is tough to come by, but I've got some stuff you won't believe -- especially some very bizzare tidbits ostensibly connecting him to John Lilly. West is a spook and a racist, and he has been involved with all the techniques of mind control.

(I interviewed someone who met West socially; he described the good doctor -- and his wife! -- as frightening, peculiar, and very, very strange...almost the stereotypical "mad scientist." The same descriptions keep on popping up whenever I get "personal" information on the spy-chiatrists. You think these guys practice their mind-altering techniques on each other?)

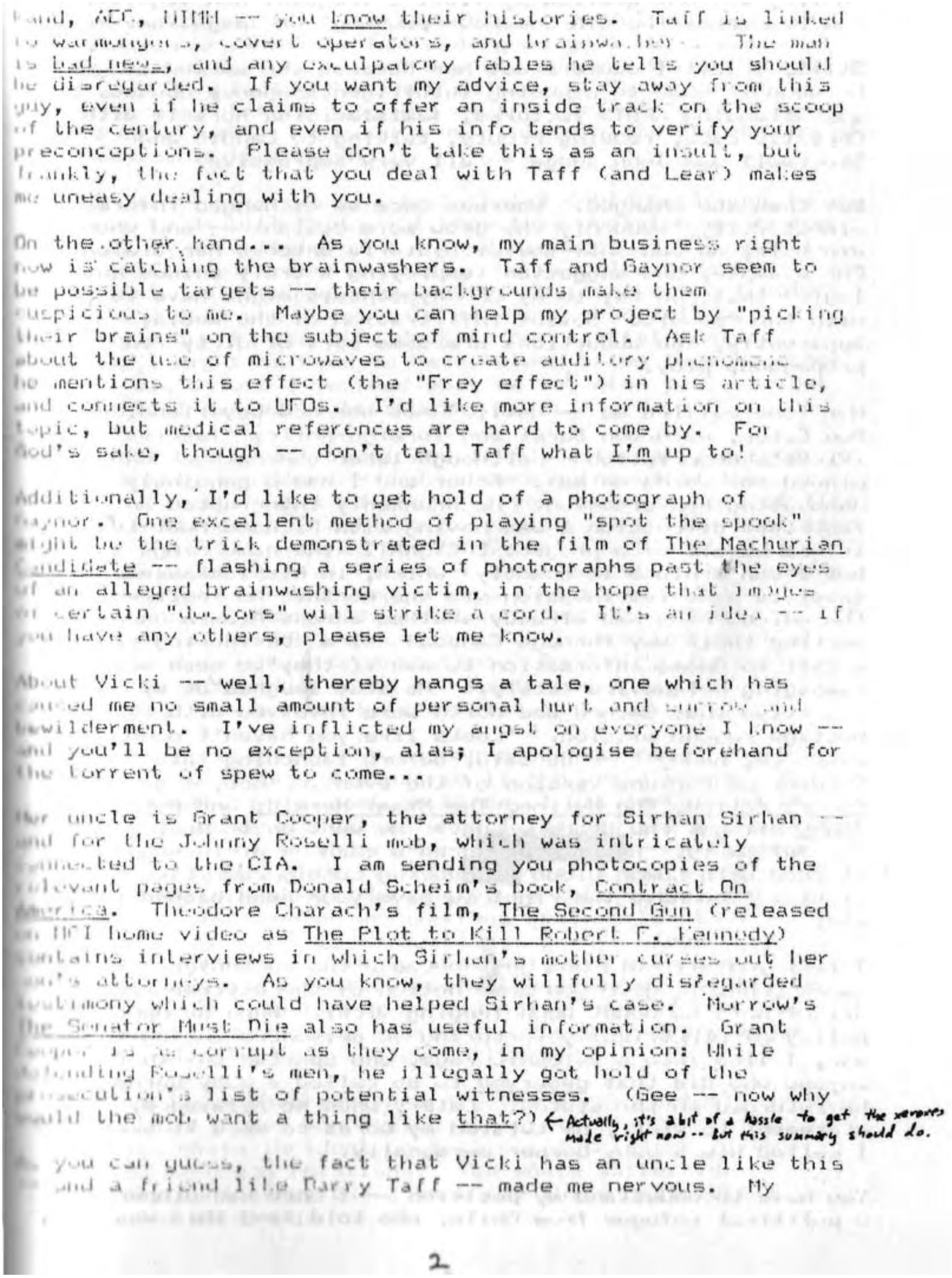

hand, AEC, NIMH -- you know their histories. Taff is linked to warmongers, covert operators, and brainwashers. The man is bad news, and any exculpatory fables he tells you should be disregarded. If you want my advice, stay away from this guy, even if he claims to offer an inside track on the scoop of the century, and even if his info tends to verify your preconceptions. Please don't take this as an insult, but frankly, the fact that you deal with Taff (and Lear) makes me uneasy dealing with you.

On the other hand... As you know, my main business right now is catching the brainwashers. Taff and Gaynor seem to be possible targets -- their backgrounds make them suspicious to me. Maybe you can help my project by "picking their brains" on the subject of mind control. Ask Taff about the use of microwaves to create auditory phenomena he mentions this effect (the "Frey effect") in his article, and connects it to UFOs. I'd like more information on this topic, but medical references are hard to come by. For God's sake, though -- don't tell Taff what I'm up to!

Additionally, I'd like to get hold of a photograph of Gaynor. One excellent method of playing "spot the spook" might be the trick demonstrated in the film of The Machurian Candidate -- flashing a series of photographs past the eyes of an alleged brainwashing victim, in the hope that images of certain "doctors" will strike a cord. It's an idea -- if you have any others, please let me know.

About Vicki -- well, thereby hangs a tale, one which has caused me no small amount of personal hurt and sorrow and bewilderment. I've inflicted my angst on everyone I know -- and you'll be no exception, alas; I apologise beforehand for the torrent of spew to come...

Her uncle is Grant Cooper, the attorney for Sirhan Sirhan -- and for the Johnny Roselli mob, which was intricately connected to the CIA. I am sending you photocopies of the relevant pages from Donald Scheim's book, Contract On America. Theodore Charach's film, The Second Gun (released on MCI home video as The Plot to Kill Robert F. Kennedy) contains interviews in which Sirhan's mother curses out her son's attorneys. As you know, they willfully disregarded testimony which could have helped Sirhan's case. Morrow's The Senator Must Die also has useful information. Grant Cooper is as corrupt as they come, in my opinion: While defending Roselli's men, he illegally got hold of the prosecution's list of potential witnesses. (Gee -- now why would the mob want a thing like that?) ← Actually, it's a bit of a hassle to get the xeroxes made right now -- but this summary should do.

As you can guess, the fact that Vicki has an uncle like this -- and a friend like Barry Taff -- made me nervous. My

2

anxiety was not quelled by Vicki's frequent non-sequitor comments about the CIA somehow "pushing" her magazine.

Still, I felt I could trust her because she seemed so gung-ho when it came to exposing intelligence agency abuses. She was attending ARDIS lectures, familiarising herself with the Christic case, reading Prouty, talking to Landis and Stockwell and John Judge -- all very impressive.

But then she changed. Whereas once we exchanged information almost daily, suddenly she grew more distant -- and when we did talk, an odd anti-soviet hysteria entered her dialogue. For example, she suggested (employing a truly unique quasi-logic) that the key to my UFO hypothesis might have to do with the "massive" Soviet infiltration of the media; apparently, the abductions are some sort of dirty red propaganda ploy.

Her tone baffled me -- until I met her new boyfriend, one Don Ecker, ex-Green Beret and foreign-policy "fascist" (Vicki's description -- although later she rather annoyingly pinned the words on me). Ecker and I had a genuinely nauseating conversation. He drunkenly interrupted an important discussion I was having with Richard Neal to inform us all of a project SPETSNATZ (the name rings a bell, but I can't place it exactly) which, in his fantasies, involves a Soviet invasion via the north. He insisted that the odious Reds had already skulked across Alaska and were working their way through Canada! (I'm considering placing a call to Gnome information to ask if they've seen any rampaging bolsheviks lately.) He also laughed at my assertion that Secord and North were involved with the Iran hostage rescue mission. "Looks like you haven't done your research, buddy!" -- he said, before launching into the Soldier-of-Fortune version of the event. (Gee, I guess Covert Action, The Nation, The Miami Herald, and Mother Jones all got the story wrong.) He went on to praise covert ops fulsomely. He also produced a card -- picturesquely stained with human blood -- bearing cutely rewritten Miranda rights: "You have the right to have your head bashed in," etc.

I tell you all this not just because the encounter still smarts, but to give you some notion of the extreme-rightest drivel he's no doubt been feeding Vicki. When he upheld the policy of electrically torturing VC prisoners during the war, I flew into a volcanic rage, and spurted out that anyone who did that deserved to be called a baby-burner when he returned to the states. Later, when he relayed my statement to Vicki, he twisted my words to make it seem that I called him a baby-burner personally.

You have to undestand my position -- I once had dinner with a political refugee from Chile, who told (and this was the sort of monologue that can induce a frightful insomnia in his listeners of how he had undergone just this sort of electric shock torture -- and how the Special Forces played a large part in placing Pinochet in power. So to see this smirking spook Eckert laughing at the idea of "gooks" being "wired up"...well, I gained a new insight into the depths of the human mind that night.

But the worst part was the fact that I could no longer have anything to do with Vicki. I know this decision seems low and foolish -- cutting of a friendship because I'm appalled at her choice of romantic leads. Honest, I wanted her to be happy -- I could sense, previously, that she was a lonely woman, and when she first told me about this fellow, I encouraged her to see him, despite her initial qualms. (Indeed, I might be said to have helped bring them together -- this was before I learned what he was, mind you...) But above all, I wanted Vicki to stay Vicki.

Now I feel betrayed. Vicki and I had, after all, worked quite closely together -- and we were going after the spooks. For that sort of project, you need partners of like mind when it comes to matters political. Then she hops into bed with (for all intents and purposes) the CIA itself! (You know about Special Forces connections with the Company, the Nazis, Laotian drug smuggling, Jonestown, etc.) Suddenly, Vicki changed from Helen Caldicott to Phyllis Schlafly, from an ARDIS attendee to an interested guest at the official ex-spook organisation. Suddenly, she calls me a fanatic. (She also calls her boyfriend a fascist -- apparently, fascism isn't fanaticism.)

Because she presented such an unprecedented case of political elasticity, I wondered if she was a spook. To tell the truth, for a week or three, I was certain of it. My disposition wasn't helped when I learned she was talking behind my back to an abductee -- [redacted] -- with whom I've worked closely; Vicki told [redacted] that I was a KGB agent and should be avoided! Obviously, by this stage, the accusations and counter-accusations reach a level of absurdity. At least my accusations, however fueled by suspicion and hurt feelings, come weighted with some evidence, and are directed toward the accused. Vicki, by comparison, has constantly spread catty "agent" rumours, unconfirmed by any data, behind the backs of every major figure on the UFO scene. You included.

So tell me, now that you know all the sordid details -- what am I to think? Was she spying on me all along? Or should I chalk this whole incident up to a painful lesson in the vagaries of human relations? The whole matter is infinitely confusing, but I know one thing -- I lost a friend, and it stung.

APPENDIX C: ALIEN IMPLANTS

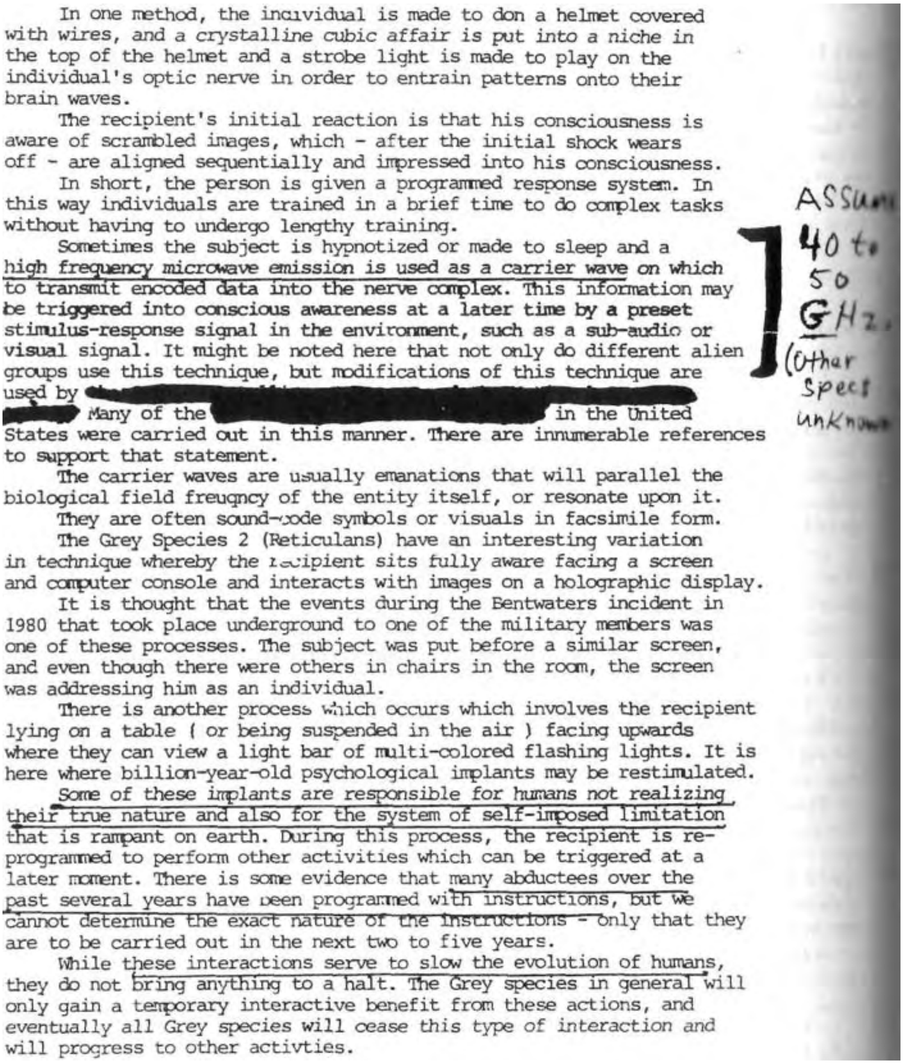

In one method, the individual is made to don a helmet covered with wires, and a crystalline cubic affair is put into a niche in the top of the helmet and a strobe light is made to play on the individual's optic nerve in order to entrain patterns onto their brain waves.

The recipient's initial reaction is that his consciousness is aware of scrambled images, which - after the initial shock wears off - are aligned sequentially and impressed into his consciousness.

In short, the person is given a programmed response system. In this way individuals are trained in a brief time to do complex tasks without having to undergo lengthy training.

Sometimes the subject is hypnotized or made to sleep and a high frequency microwave emission is used as a carrier wave on which to transmit encoded data into the nerve complex. This information may be triggered into conscious awareness at a later time by a preset stimulus-response signal in the environment, such as a sub-audio or visual signal. It might be noted here that not only do different alien groups use this technique, but modifications of this technique are used by [redacted] Many of the [redacted] in the United States were carried out in this manner. There are innumerable references to support that statement.

ASSum
40 to
50
GHz.
(Other
Spect
unknown

The carrier waves are usually emanations that will parallel the biological field freuqncy of the entity itself, or resonate upon it.

They are often sound-code symbols or visuals in facsimile form.

The Grey Species 2 (Reticulans) have an interesting variation in technique whereby the recipient sits fully aware facing a screen and computer console and interacts with images on a holographic display.

It is thought that the events during the Bentwaters incident in 1980 that took place underground to one of the military members was one of these processes. The subject was put before a similar screen, and even though there were others in chairs in the room, the screen was addressing him as an individual.

There is another process which occurs which involves the recipient lying on a table (or being suspended in the air) facing upwards where they can view a light bar of multi-colored flashing lights. It is here where billion-year-old psychological implants may be restimulated.

Some of these implants are responsible for humans not realizing their true nature and also for the system of self-imposed limitation that is rampant on earth. During this process, the recipient is reprogrammed to perform other activities which can be triggered at a later moment. There is some evidence that many abductees over the past several years have been programmed with instructions, but we cannot determine the exact nature of the instructions - only that they are to be carried out in the next two to five years.

While these interactions serve to slow the evolution of humans, they do not bring anything to a halt. The Grey species in general will only gain a temporary interactive benefit from these actions, and eventually all Grey species will cease this type of interaction and will progress to other activties.

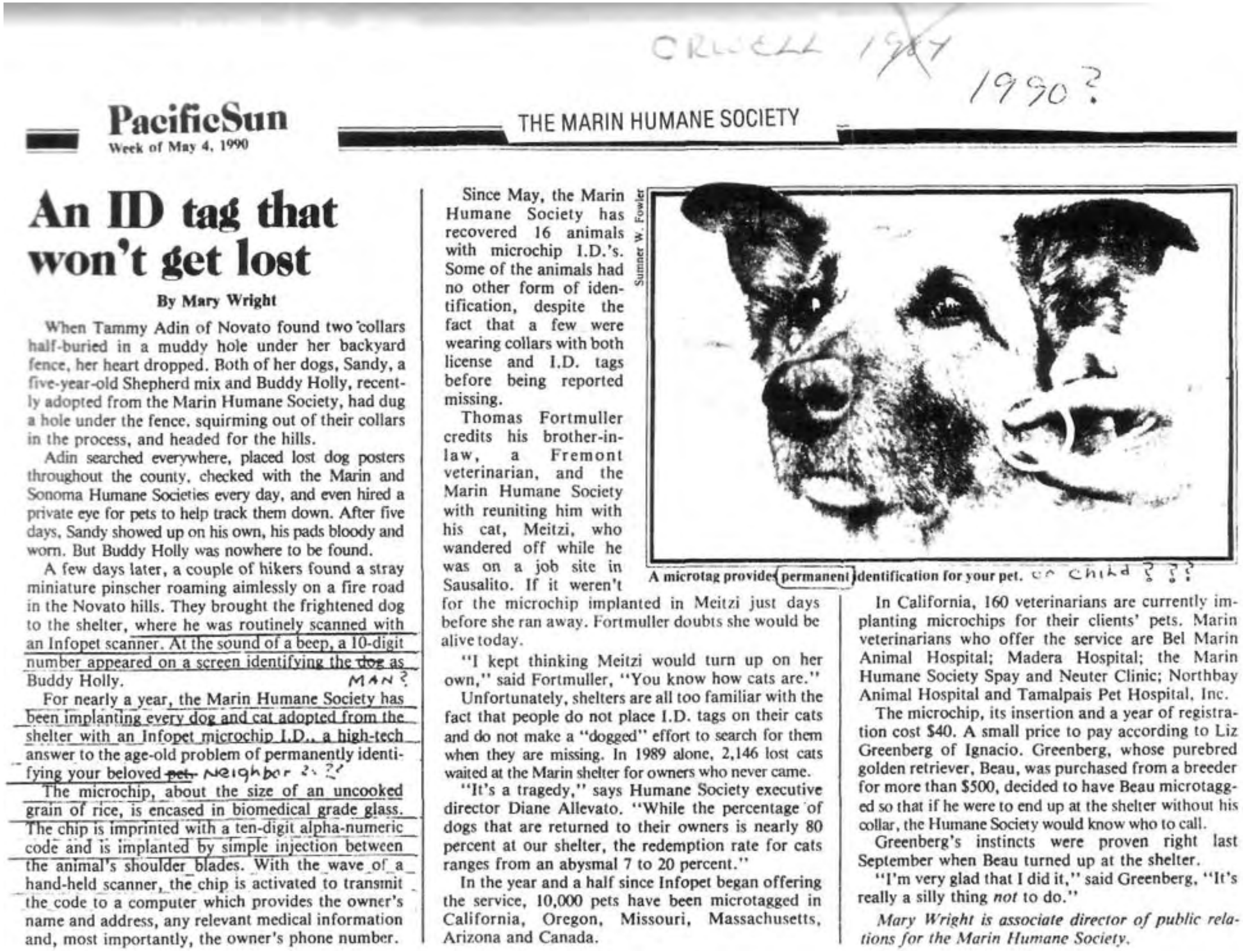

ORWELL ~~1984~~ 1990?

PacificSun
Week of May 4, 1990

THE MARIN HUMANE SOCIETY

An ID tag that won't get lost

By Mary Wright

When Tammy Adin of Novato found two collars half-buried in a muddy hole under her backyard fence, her heart dropped. Both of her dogs, Sandy, a five-year-old Shepherd mix and Buddy Holly, recently adopted from the Marin Humane Society, had dug a hole under the fence, squirming out of their collars in the process, and headed for the hills.

Adin searched everywhere, placed lost dog posters throughout the county, checked with the Marin and Sonoma Humane Societies every day, and even hired a private eye for pets to help track them down. After five days, Sandy showed up on his own, his pads bloody and worn. But Buddy Holly was nowhere to be found.

A few days later, a couple of hikers found a stray miniature pinscher roaming aimlessly on a fire road in the Novato hills. They brought the frightened dog to the shelter, where he was routinely scanned with an Infopet scanner. At the sound of a beep, a 10-digit number appeared on a screen identifying the ~~dog~~ as Buddy Holly. MAN?

For nearly a year, the Marin Humane Society has been implanting every dog and cat adopted from the shelter with an Infopet microchip I.D., a high-tech answer to the age-old problem of permanently identifying your beloved ~~pet.~~ neighbor?? ??

The microchip, about the size of an uncooked grain of rice, is encased in biomedical grade glass. The chip is imprinted with a ten-digit alpha-numeric code and is implanted by simple injection between the animal's shoulder blades. With the wave of a hand-held scanner, the chip is activated to transmit the code to a computer which provides the owner's name and address, any relevant medical information and, most importantly, the owner's phone number.

Since May, the Marin Humane Society has recovered 16 animals with microchip I.D.'s. Some of the animals had no other form of identification, despite the fact that a few were wearing collars with both license and I.D. tags before being reported missing.

Thomas Fortmuller credits his brother-in-law, a Fremont veterinarian, and the Marin Humane Society with reuniting him with his cat, Meitzi, who wandered off while he was on a job site in Sausalito. If it weren't for the microchip implanted in Meitzi just days before she ran away. Fortmuller doubts she would be alive today.

"I kept thinking Meitzi would turn up on her own," said Fortmuller, "You know how cats are."

Unfortunately, shelters are all too familiar with the fact that people do not place I.D. tags on their cats and do not make a "dogged" effort to search for them when they are missing. In 1989 alone, 2,146 lost cats waited at the Marin shelter for owners who never came.

"It's a tragedy," says Humane Society executive director Diane Allevato. "While the percentage of dogs that are returned to their owners is nearly 80 percent at our shelter, the redemption rate for cats ranges from an abysmal 7 to 20 percent."

In the year and a half since Infopet began offering the service, 10,000 pets have been microtagged in California, Oregon, Missouri, Massachusetts, Arizona and Canada.

Sumner W. Fowler

A microtag provides permanent identification for your pet. or child ? ? ?

In California, 160 veterinarians are currently implanting microchips for their clients' pets. Marin veterinarians who offer the service are Bel Marin Animal Hospital; Madera Hospital; the Marin Humane Society Spay and Neuter Clinic; Northbay Animal Hospital and Tamalpais Pet Hospital, Inc.

The microchip, its insertion and a year of registration cost $40. A small price to pay according to Liz Greenberg of Ignacio. Greenberg, whose purebred golden retriever, Beau, was purchased from a breeder for more than $500, decided to have Beau microtagged so that if he were to end up at the shelter without his collar, the Humane Society would know who to call.

Greenberg's instincts were proven right last September when Beau turned up at the shelter.

"I'm very glad that I did it," said Greenberg. "It's really a silly thing *not* to do."

Mary Wright is associate director of public relations for the Marin Humane Society.

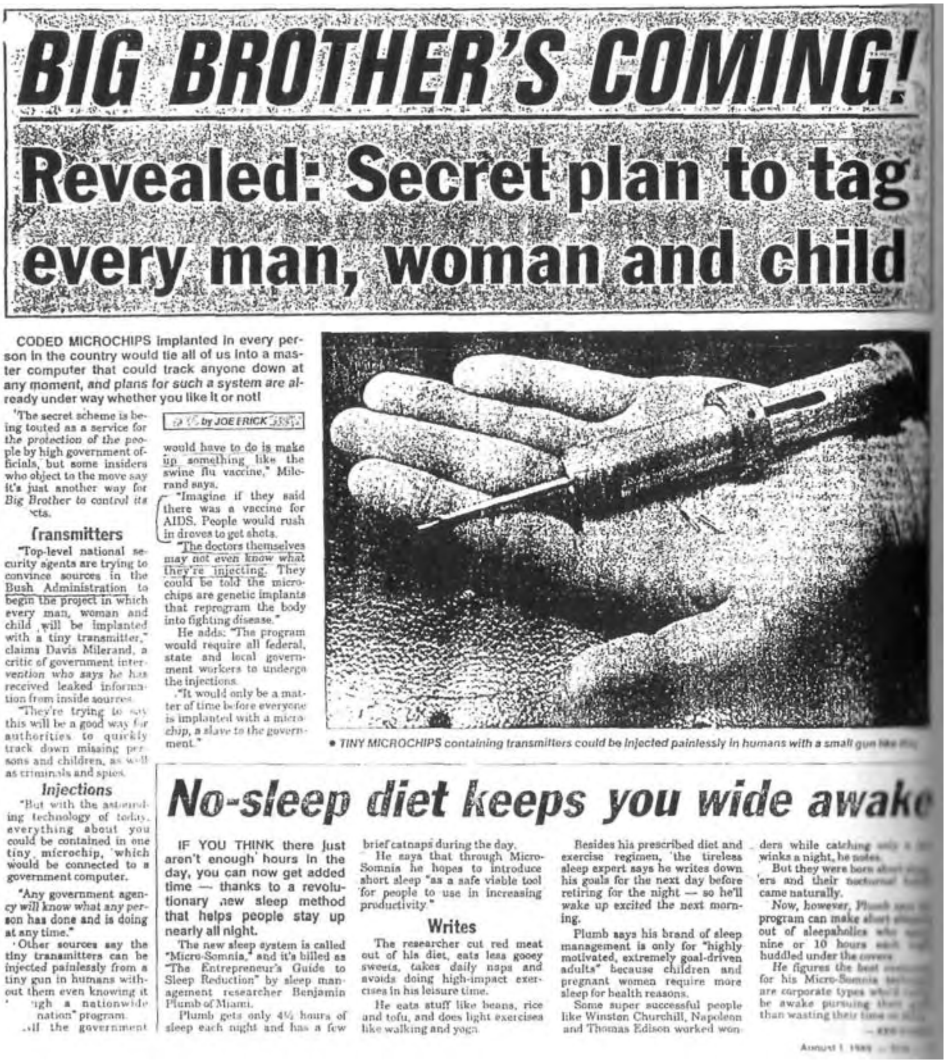

BIG BROTHER'S COMING!

Revealed: Secret plan to tag every man, woman and child

CODED MICROCHIPS implanted in every person in the country would tie all of us into a master computer that could track anyone down at any moment, *and plans for such a system are already under way whether you like it or not!*

by JOE FRICK

'The secret scheme is being touted as a service for *the protection of the people* by high government officials, but some insiders who object to the move say it's just another way for *Big Brother to control its* cts.

Transmitters

"Top-level national security agents are trying to convince sources in the Bush Administration to begin the project in which every man, woman and child will be implanted with a tiny transmitter," claims Davis Milerand, a critic of government intervention who says he has received leaked information from inside sources.

"They're trying to say this will be a good way for authorities to quickly track down missing persons and children, as well as criminals and spies.

Injections

"But with the astounding technology of today, everything about you could be contained in one tiny microchip, which would be connected to a government computer.

"Any government agen*cy will know what any per*son has done and is doing at any time."

Other sources say the tiny transmitters can be injected painlessly from a tiny gun in humans without them even knowing it igh a nationwide nation" program.

ll the government would have to do is make up something like the swine flu vaccine," Milerand says.

"Imagine if they said there was a vaccine for AIDS. People would rush in droves to get shots.

"The doctors themselves may not even know what they're injecting. They could be told the microchips are genetic implants that reprogram the body into fighting disease."

He adds: "The program would require all federal, state and local government workers to undergo the injections.

"It would only be a matter of time before everyone is implanted with a microchip, a slave to the government."

• TINY MICROCHIPS containing transmitters could be injected painlessly in humans with a small gun

No-sleep diet keeps you wide awake

IF YOU THINK there just aren't enough hours in the day, you can now get added time — thanks to a revolutionary new sleep method that helps people stay up nearly all night.

The new sleep system is called "Micro-Somnia," and it's billed as "The Entrepreneur's Guide to Sleep Reduction" by sleep management researcher Benjamin Plumb of Miami.

Plumb gets only 4½ hours of sleep each night and has a few brief catnaps during the day.

He says that through Micro-Somnia he hopes to introduce short sleep "as a safe viable tool for people to use in increasing productivity."

Writes

The researcher cut red meat out of his diet, eats less gooey sweets, takes daily naps and avoids doing high-impact exercises in his leisure time.

He eats stuff like beans, rice and tofu, and does light exercises like walking and yoga.

Besides his prescribed diet and exercise regimen, the tireless sleep expert says he writes down his goals for the next day before retiring for the night — so he'll wake up excited the next morning.

Plumb says his brand of sleep management is only for "highly motivated, extremely goal-driven adults" because children and pregnant women require more sleep for health reasons.

Some super successful people like Winston Churchill, Napoleon and Thomas Edison worked wonders while catching
winks a night, he notes.

But they were born
ers and their
came naturally.

Now, however, Plumb
program can make
out of sleepaholics
nine or 10 hours
huddled under the covers

He figures the best
for his Micro-Somnia
are corporate types
be awake pursuing
than wasting their time

August 1, 1989

APPENDIX D: AIDS

DEPARTMENT OF DEFENSE APPROPRIATIONS FOR 1970

UNITED STATES SENATE LIBRARY

HEARINGS

BEFORE A

SUBCOMMITTEE OF THE COMMITTEE ON APPROPRIATIONS HOUSE OF REPRESENTATIVES

NINETY-FIRST CONGRESS

FIRST SESSION

SUBCOMMITTEE ON DEPARTMENT OF DEFENSE

GEORGE H. MAHON, Texas, *Chairman*

ROBERT L. F. SIKES, Florida	GLENARD P. LIPSCOMB, California
JAMIE L. WHITTEN, Mississippi	WILLIAM E. MINSHALL, Ohio
GEORGE W. ANDREWS, Alabama	JOHN J. RHODES, Arizona
DANIEL J. FLOOD, Pennsylvania	GLENN R. DAVIS, Wisconsin
JOHN M. SLACK, West Virginia	
JOSEPH P. ADDABBO, New York	
FRANK E. EVANS, Colorado[1]	

R. L. MICHAELS, RALPH PRESTON, JOHN GARRITY, PETER MURPHY, ROBERT NICHOLAS, ROBERT FOSTER, *Staff Assistants*

H.B. 15090.

---

[1] Temporarily assigned

PART 5

RESEARCH, DEVELOPMENT, TEST, AND EVALUATION

Department of the Army

Statement of Director, Advanced Research Project Agency

Statement of Director, Defense Research and Engineering

Printed for the use of the Committee on Appropriations

U.S. GOVERNMENT PRINTING OFFICE
36-551 WASHINGTON : 1969

UNITED STATES SENATE LIBRARY

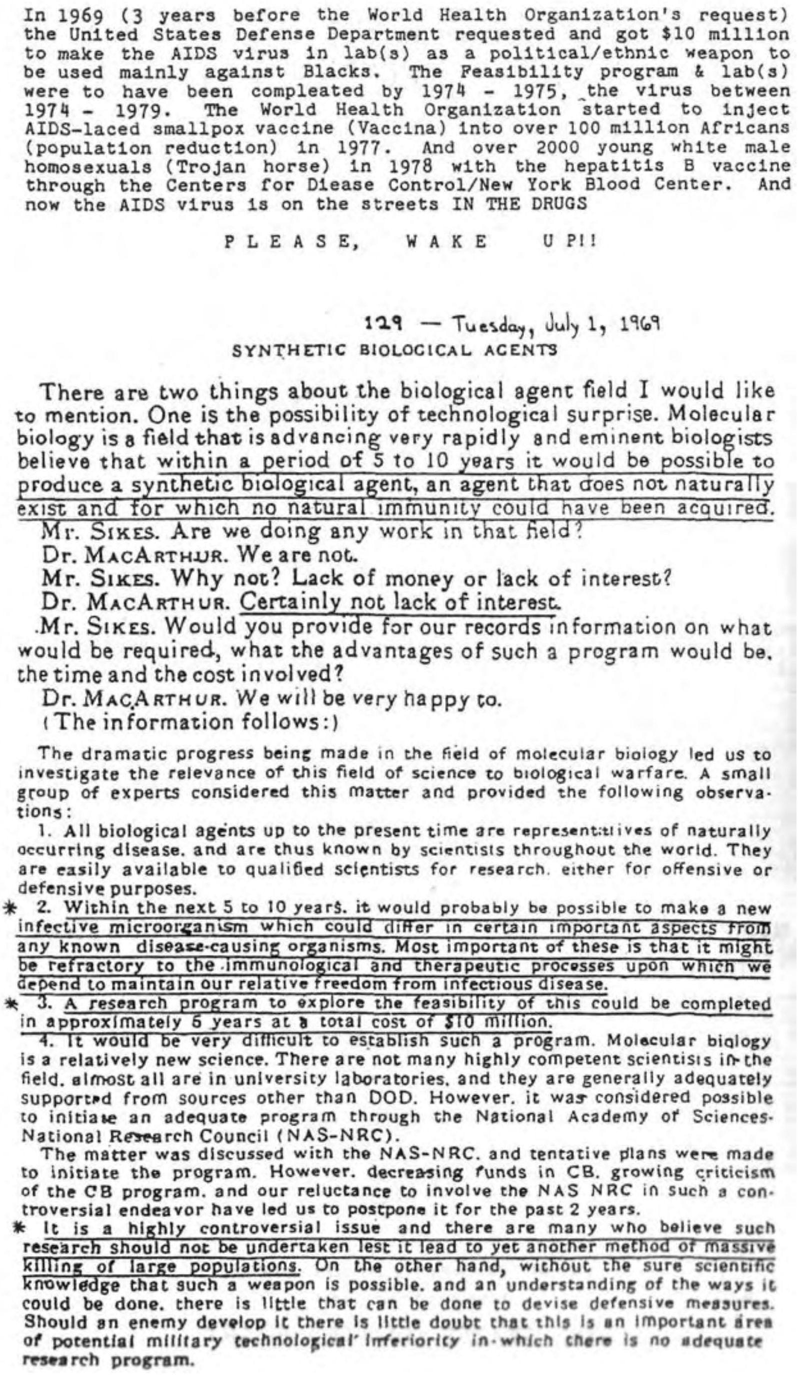

In 1969 (3 years before the World Health Organization's request) the United States Defense Department requested and got $10 million to make the AIDS virus in lab(s) as a political/ethnic weapon to be used mainly against Blacks. The Feasibility program & lab(s) were to have been compleated by 1974 - 1975, the virus between 1974 - 1979. The World Health Organization started to inject AIDS-laced smallpox vaccine (Vaccina) into over 100 million Africans (population reduction) in 1977. And over 2000 young white male homosexuals (Trojan horse) in 1978 with the hepatitis B vaccine through the Centers for Diease Control/New York Blood Center. And now the AIDS virus is on the streets IN THE DRUGS

PLEASE, WAKE UP!!

---

129 — Tuesday, July 1, 1969

SYNTHETIC BIOLOGICAL AGENTS

There are two things about the biological agent field I would like to mention. One is the possibility of technological surprise. Molecular biology is a field that is advancing very rapidly and eminent biologists believe that within a period of 5 to 10 years it would be possible to produce a synthetic biological agent, an agent that does not naturally exist and for which no natural immunity could have been acquired.

Mr. Sikes. Are we doing any work in that field?

Dr. MacArthur. We are not.

Mr. Sikes. Why not? Lack of money or lack of interest?

Dr. MacArthur. Certainly not lack of interest.

Mr. Sikes. Would you provide for our records information on what would be required, what the advantages of such a program would be, the time and the cost involved?

Dr. MacArthur. We will be very happy to.

(The information follows:)

The dramatic progress being made in the field of molecular biology led us to investigate the relevance of this field of science to biological warfare. A small group of experts considered this matter and provided the following observations:

1. All biological agents up to the present time are representatives of naturally occurring disease, and are thus known by scientists throughout the world. They are easily available to qualified scientists for research, either for offensive or defensive purposes.

* 2. Within the next 5 to 10 years, it would probably be possible to make a new infective microorganism which could differ in certain important aspects from any known disease-causing organisms. Most important of these is that it might be refractory to the immunological and therapeutic processes upon which we depend to maintain our relative freedom from infectious disease.

* 3. A research program to explore the feasibility of this could be completed in approximately 5 years at a total cost of $10 million.

4. It would be very difficult to establish such a program. Molecular biology is a relatively new science. There are not many highly competent scientists in the field, almost all are in university laboratories, and they are generally adequately supported from sources other than DOD. However, it was considered possible to initiate an adequate program through the National Academy of Sciences-National Research Council (NAS-NRC).

The matter was discussed with the NAS-NRC, and tentative plans were made to initiate the program. However, decreasing funds in CB, growing criticism of the CB program, and our reluctance to involve the NAS NRC in such a controversial endeavor have led us to postpone it for the past 2 years.

* It is a highly controversial issue and there are many who believe such research should not be undertaken lest it lead to yet another method of massive killing of large populations. On the other hand, without the sure scientific knowledge that such a weapon is possible, and an understanding of the ways it could be done, there is little that can be done to devise defensive measures. Should an enemy develop it there is little doubt that this is an important area of potential military technological inferiority in which there is no adequate research program.

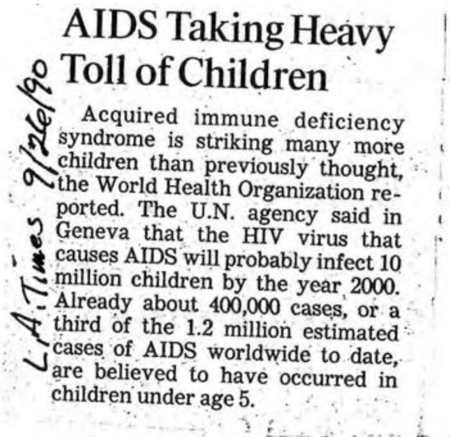

L.A. Times 9/26/90

AIDS Taking Heavy Toll of Children

Acquired immune deficiency syndrome is striking many more children than previously thought, the World Health Organization reported. The U.N. agency said in Geneva that the HIV virus that causes AIDS will probably infect 10 million children by the year 2000. Already about 400,000 cases, or a third of the 1.2 million estimated cases of AIDS worldwide to date, are believed to have occurred in children under age 5.

I'm confused. Are we to believe that these 400,000 children are practicing homosexuals or IV drug users? Or that ≈400,000 (1/3) of their mothers transmit the disease? Or is it more likely that they are neither part of the high-risk group nor born of mothers with AIDS (Meaning, of course, that 1/3 babes + 1/3 moms = 2/3 of total AIDS population... no one is making this claim!) These data, if valid, come close to proving that AIDS is transmissible by casual contact and/or insects.

APPENDIX E: NEW WORLD ORDER

Robison, 1798

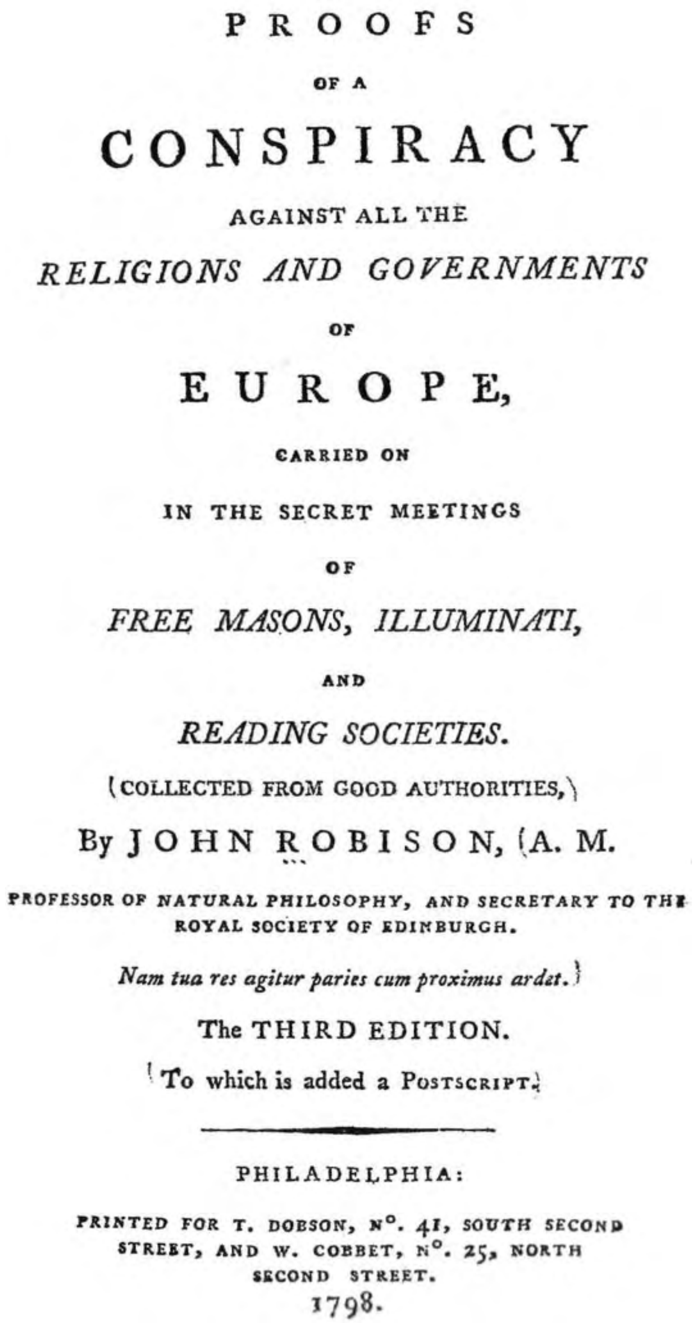

PROOFS
OF A
CONSPIRACY
AGAINST ALL THE
RELIGIONS AND GOVERNMENTS
OF
EUROPE,
CARRIED ON
IN THE SECRET MEETINGS
OF
FREE MASONS, ILLUMINATI,
AND
READING SOCIETIES.

(COLLECTED FROM GOOD AUTHORITIES,)

By JOHN ROBISON, A. M.

PROFESSOR OF NATURAL PHILOSOPHY, AND SECRETARY TO THE
ROYAL SOCIETY OF EDINBURGH.

Nam tua res agitur paries cum proximus ardet.

The THIRD EDITION.

To which is added a POSTSCRIPT.

PHILADELPHIA:

PRINTED FOR T. DOBSON, N°. 41, SOUTH SECOND
STREET, AND W. COBBET, N°. 25, NORTH
SECOND STREET.
1798.

Club of Rome Report

REGIONALIZED AND ADAPTIVE MODEL
OF THE GLOBAL WORLD SYSTEM

Report on the Progress in the

STRATEGY FOR SURVIVAL PROJECT
of the
Club of Rome

Mihajlo Mesarovic and Eduard Pestel, Directors

CONFIDENTIAL

September 17, 1973

1. Motivation and Objectives

The world problematique formulated by the CLUB OF ROME is not only global in nature, involving factors traditionally considered as unrelated, but also points to the crisis situations which are developing in spite of the noblest of intentions and, indeed, as their corollary. To point out the problematique and the spectrum of critical and traumatic situations it entails is not enough; the acceptance of the reality of the problematique MUST BE FOLLOWED BY CHANGES IF THE CONCERN IS NOT TO REMAIN PURELY ACADEMIC. It is necessary, therefore, to present the issues within the problematique in specific and relevant terms which requires regions interpretation of the global issues. Furthermore, a basis should be provided for the resolution of conflicts (inevitably accompanying the problematique-type situations) through cooperation rather than confrontation. These factors have provided the motivation for initiation of the Strategy for Survival project which calls for the construction of a regionalized and adaptive model of the total world system with tht following specific objectives:

(1) TO ENABLE THE IMPLEMENTATION OF SCENARIOS FOR THE FUTURE DEVELOPMENT OF THE WORLD SYSTEM which represent visions of the world future stemming from different cultures and value systems and reflecting hopes and fears in different regions of the world.

(ii) To develop a planning and options-assessment tool for long-range issues, and thereby TO PROVIDE A BASIS FOR CONFLICT RESOLUTION by cooperation rather than confrontation.

2. Basic Structure of the Model

The basic characteristics of the model are:

(i) THE WORLD SYSTEM IS REPRESENTED in terms of interacting regions with provisions made to investigate any individual country or subregion in the context of regional and global development. Presently the world system is represented BY TEN REGIONS: NORTH AMERICA, WESTERN EUROPE, EASTERN EUROPE, JAPAN, REST OF DEVELOPED WORLD, LATIN AMERICA, MIDDLE EAST, REST OF AFRICA, SOUTH AND SOUTH EAST ASIA, AND CHINA.

(ii) In order to be able to deal with the complex of factors involved in problematique in a way which is sound, credible and systematic, a hierarchical structure has bee adopted for the model in which each level in the hierarchy represents the evolution of the world system within a context defined by a given set of laws and principles. Specifically, the levels involved are:
GEO-PHYSICAL, ECOLOGICAL, TECHNOLOGICAL (MAN-MADE ENERGY AND MASS TRANSFERS), ECONOMIC, INSTITUTIONAL, SOCIO-POLITICAL, VALUE-CULTURAL AND HUMAN-BIOLOGICAL. Such and approach enables an optimal use of confirmed scientific knowledge and available data,

(iii) An adequate view of the conditions in which the problematique is emerging and under which the solutions must be found require the recognition of the purposive aspects of the human community and adaptiveness of human beings. The model of the world system will have, therefore, two parts:
(1) the so-called causal part, representing dynamical processes which follow histoical patterns of development and (2) the so-called goal-seeking part which represents purposive changes under new conditions. The goal-seeking part in turn includes two

levels: the decision-making or actions level and the norms level; the former represents the purposive response of the system while the latter represents the values and norms which constrain and condition such a response.

3. Progress in the Model Construction

The construction of the model as described in Sec. 2 and with the objectives as specified in Sec. 1 is certainly a rather complex task and the research is organized to proceed in parallel in several directions. The overall assessment of the model status is the following:

The model has been developed up to the stage where it can be used for policy analysis related to a number of critical issues, such as: energy resources utilization and technology assessment; food demand and production; population growth and the affect of timing of birth control programs; reduction of inequities in regional economic developments; depletion dynamics of certain resources, particularly oil reserves; phosphorus use as fertilizer; regional unemployment; constraints on growth due to labor, energy or export limitation, etc.

Specific developments which enable use of the model as described above include the following:

1. A COMPUTER MODEL OF THE WORLD ECONOMIC SYSTEM HAS BEEN DEVELOPED AND VALIDATED BY AN EXTENSIVE SET OF DATA. The model has two levels - macro and micro. On the MACRO LEVEL the model of each region INCLUDES THE GROSS REGIONAL PRODUCT, TOTAL IMPORTS AND EXPORTS, CAPITAL AND LABOR PRODUCTIVITY AND VARIOUS COMPONENTS OF FINAL DEMAND SUCH AS PUBLIC CONSUMPTION, GOVERNMENT EXPENDITURE, AND TOTAL INVESTMENT. ON THE MICRO LEVEL EIGHT PRODUCTION SECTORS ARE RECOGNIZED: AGRICULTURE MANUFACTURING, FOOD PROCESSING, ENERGY, MINING, SERVICES, BANKING AND TRADE, AND RESIDENTIAL CONSTRUCTION. The input-output framework is used for the intermediate demands. A FULL SCALE MICRO TRADE MATRIX ALSO HAS BEEN DEVELOPED.

2. A WORLD POPULATION MODEL HAS BEEN CONSTRUCTED IN TERMS OF THE SAME REGIONS AS THE ECONOMIC MODEL. The model has been validited by the data available. In each region the population structure is represented in terms of four age groups with appropriate delays which make possible assessment of population momentum and assessment of the effectiveness of implementation of various population control measures.

3. AN ENERGY MODEL HAS BEEN CONSTRUCTED which gives for each region the consumption and production of energy and interregional exchange of energy resources as a function of economic factors. Energy is treated both in composite terms and in reference to individual energy sources, namely solid fuel, liquid fuel, nuclear, gas and hydro.

4. A FOOD PRODUCTION AND ARABLE LAND USE MODEL HAS BEEN CONSTRUCTED which allows the assessment of a number of food related issues including: the need and availability of phosphorus required for intensive agriculture, AND THE CONSEQUENCES OF TIMING AND MAGNITUDES OF NATURAL DISASTERS SUCH AS DROUGHT, CROP FAILURE DUE TO DISEASE, ETC.

5. A MAJOR CONCERN IN THE APPLICATION OF THE COMPUTER MODEL is its proper utilization so as to avoid dependence on the deterministic aspects of model operation. In order to avoid this an interactive method of computer simulation analysis has been developed. THE METHOD REPRESENTS A SYMBIOSIS OF MAN AND COMPUTER IN WHICH THE COMPUTER PROVIDES THE LOGICAL AND NUMERICAL CAPABILITY WHILE MAN PROVIDES THE VALUES, INTUITION AND EXPERIENCE. The method utilizes an option specification and selection program which enables the policy analyst or decision-maker to evaluate alternative options on various levels of the decision process, i.e., with respect to goals, strategies, tactical and implementational factors. SPECIAL ATTENTION IS PAID TO THE NORM CHANGING PROCESSES.

4. Progress in Application

THE MODEL HAS BEEN USED both for the assessment of alternative scenarios for future regional and global developments (under different regional conditions) as well as in the interactive mode selection of policy options (specifically for the energy crises issues in developed regions).

OUR EFFORTS IN THE IMMEDIATE FUTURE WILL BE CONCENTRATED ON FURTHER USE OF THE ALREADY DEVELOPED MODEL. THE PLANS INCLUDE EMPHASIS IN THE FOLLOWING THREE DIRECTIONS:

(i) Assessment in the changes over time of the span of options available to solve some major crisis problems.

(ii) IMPLEMENTATION of the regional models in different parts of the world and their connection via a satellite communication network for the purpose of joint assessment of the long term global future by teams from the various regions.

(iii) Implementation of the vision for the future outlined by leaders from an underdeveloped region in order TO ASSESS with the model EXISTING OBSTACLES AND THE MEANS WHEREBY THE VISION MIGHT BECOME REALITY.

'KINGDOMS' : CLUB OF ROME'S TEN GLOBAL GROUPS

GROUP 1: North America

Canada
United States of America

GROUP 2: Western Europe

Andorra
Austria
Belgium
Denmark
Federal Republic of Germany
Finland
France
Great Britain
Greece
Iceland
Ireland
Italy
Liechtenstein
Luxembourg
Malta
Monaco
Netherlands
Norway
Portugal
San Marino
Spain
Sweden
Switzerland
Turkey
Yugoslavia

GROUP 3: Japan

GROUP 4: Rest of the Developed Market Economies

Australia
Israel
New Zealand
Oceania
South Africa
Tasmania

GROUP 5: Eastern Europe

Albania
Bulgaria
Czechoslovakia
German Democratic Republic
Hungary
Poland
Rumania
Soviet Union

GROUP 6: Latin America

Argentina
Barbados
Bolivia
Brazil
British Honduras
Chile
Colombia
Costa Rica
Cuba
Dominican Republic
Ecuador
El Salvador
French Guiana
Guatemala
Guyana
Haiti
Honduras
Jamaica
Mexico
Nicaragua
Panama
Paraguay
Peru
Surinam
Trinidad and Tobago
Uruguay
Venezuela

GROUP 7: North Africa and the Middle East

Adu Dhabi
Aden
Algeria
Bahrain
Cyprus
Dubai
Egypt
Iran
Iraq
Jordan
Kuwait
Lebanon
Libya
Masqat-Oman
Morocco
Qatar
Saudi-Arabia
Syria
Trucial Oman
Tunisia
Yemen

GROUP 8: Main Africa

Angola
Burundi
Cabinda
Cameroon
Central African Republic
Chad
Dahomey
Ethiopia
French Somali Coast
Gabon
Gambia
Ghana
Guinea
Ivory Coast
Kenya
Liberia
Malagasy Republic
Malawi
Mali
Mauritania
Mauritius
Mozambique

Niger
Nigeria
Portuguese Guinea
Republic of Congo
Reunion
Rhodesia
Rwanda
Senegal
Sierra Leone
Somalia
South Africa
South West Africa
Spanish Guinea
Spanish Sahara
Sudan
Tanzania
Togo
Uganda
Upper Volta
Zaire
Zambia

GROUP 9: South and Southeast Asia

Afghanistan
Bangladesh
Burma
Cambodia
Ceylon
India
Indonesia
LAOS
Malaysia
Nepal
Pakistan
Philippines
South Korea
South Vietnam
Taiwan
Thailand

GROUP 10: Centrally Planned Asia

Mongolia
North Korea
North Vietnam
People's Republic of China

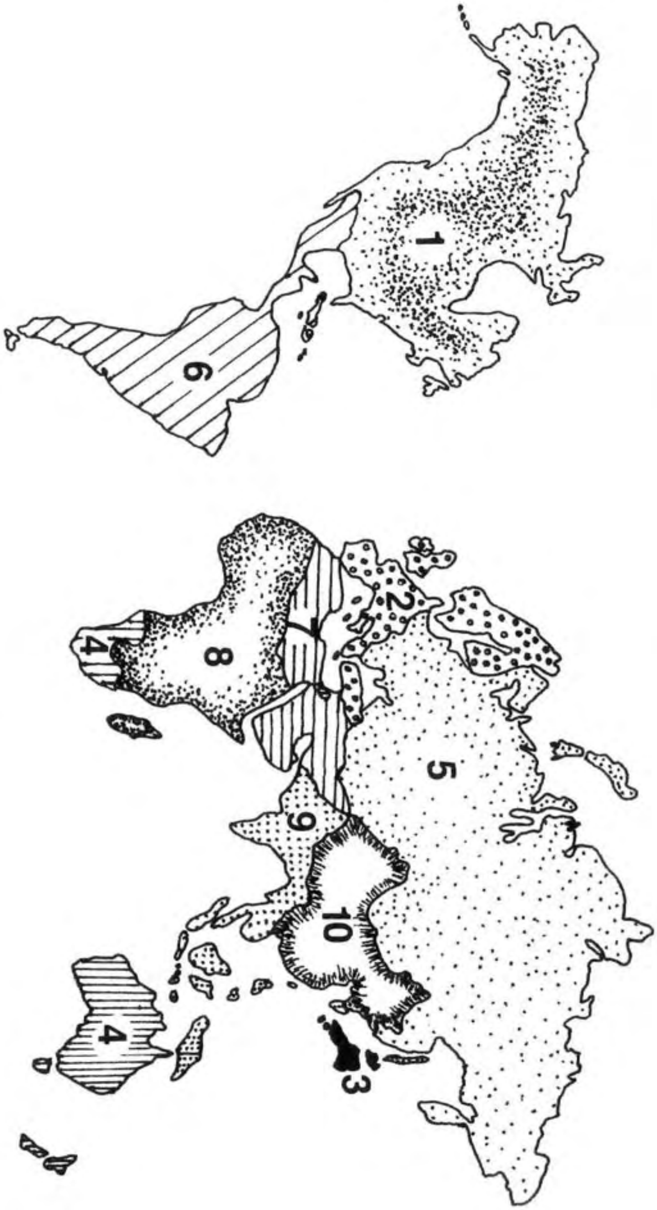
1
2
3
4
4
5
6
8
9
10

Ten Kingdoms . . . from: THE CLUB OF ROME

David Ben-Gurion – when prime minister of Israel forecast world rule from Jerusalem.

Look Magazine, January 16, 1962

David Ben-Gurion (Prime Minister of Israel): "The image of the world in 1987 as traced in my imagination: The Cold War will be a thing of the past. Internal pressure of the constantly growing intelligentsia in Russia for more freedom and the pressure of the masses for raising their living standards may lead to a gradual democratization of the Soviet Union. On the other hand, the increasing influence of the workers and farmers, and the rising political importance of men of science, may transform the United States into a welfare state with a planned economy. Western and Eastern Europe will become a federation of autonomous states having a Socialist and democratic regime. With the exception of the USSR as a federated Eurasian state, all other continents will become united in a world alliance at whose disposal will be an international police force. All armies will be abolished, and there will be no more wars. In Jerusalem, the United Nations (a truly *United* Nations) will build a Shrine of the Prophets to serve the federated union of all continents; this will be the seat of the Supreme Court of Mankind, to settle all controversies among the federated continents, as prophesied by Isaiah. Higher education will be the right of every person in the world. A pill to prevent pregnancy will slow down the explosive natural increase in China and India. And by 1987, the average life-span of man will reach 100 years."

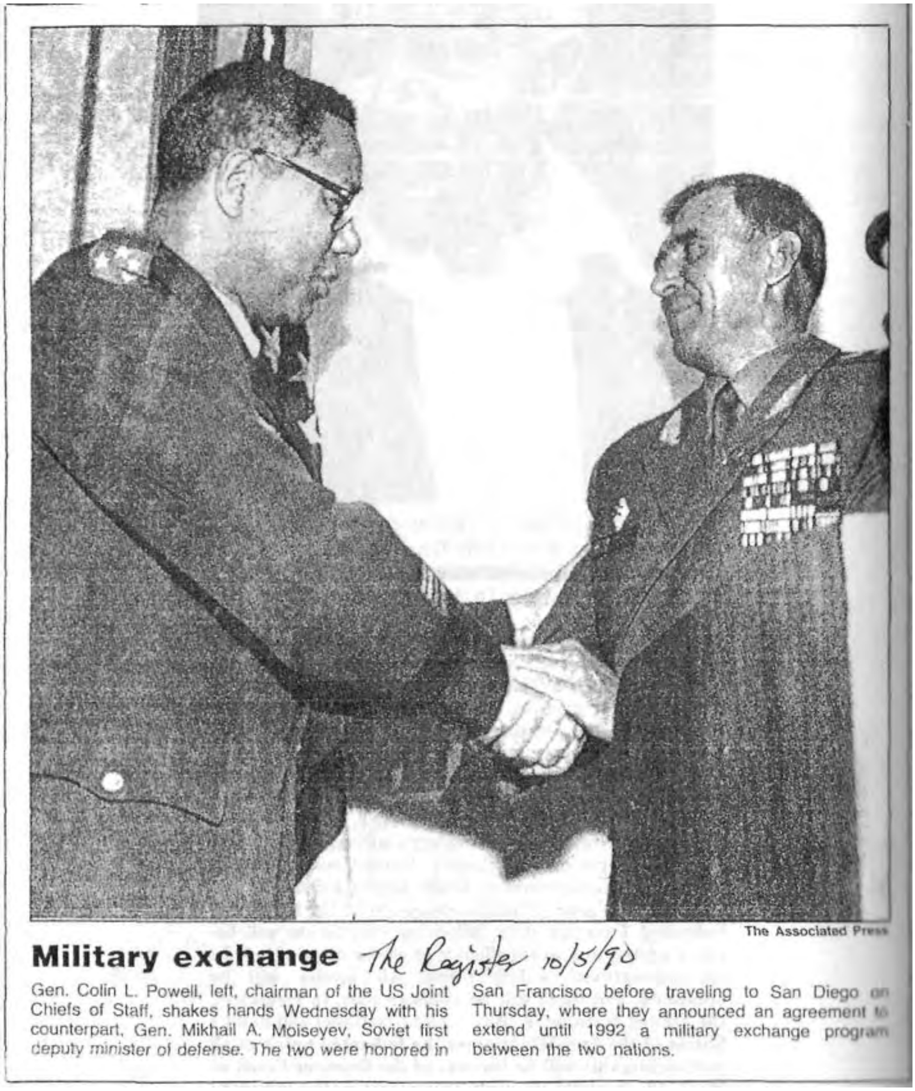

The Associated Press

Military exchange The Register 10/5/90

Gen. Colin L. Powell, left, chairman of the US Joint Chiefs of Staff, shakes hands Wednesday with his counterpart, Gen. Mikhail A. Moiseyev, Soviet first deputy minister of defense. The two were honored in San Francisco before traveling to San Diego on Thursday, where they announced an agreement to extend until 1992 a military exchange program between the two nations.

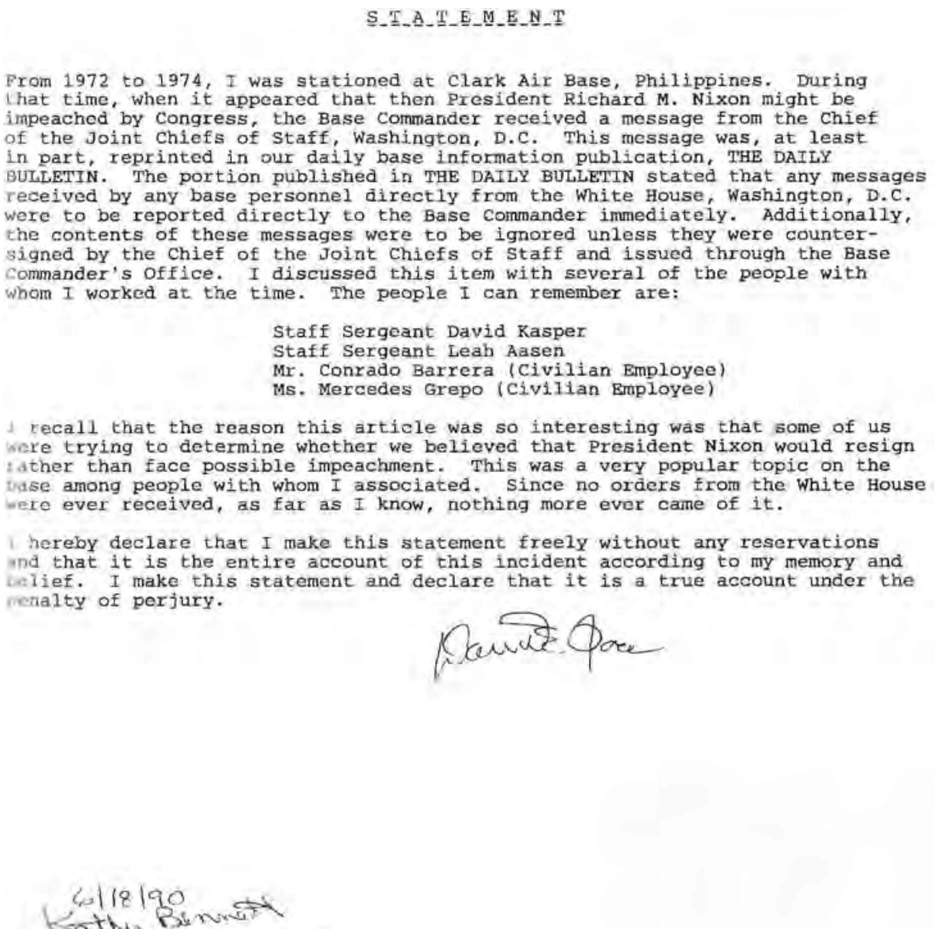

STATEMENT

From 1972 to 1974, I was stationed at Clark Air Base, Philippines. During that time, when it appeared that then President Richard M. Nixon might be impeached by Congress, the Base Commander received a message from the Chief of the Joint Chiefs of Staff, Washington, D.C. This message was, at least in part, reprinted in our daily base information publication, THE DAILY BULLETIN. The portion published in THE DAILY BULLETIN stated that any messages received by any base personnel directly from the White House, Washington, D.C. were to be reported directly to the Base Commander immediately. Additionally, the contents of these messages were to be ignored unless they were countersigned by the Chief of the Joint Chiefs of Staff and issued through the Base Commander's Office. I discussed this item with several of the people with whom I worked at the time. The people I can remember are:

Staff Sergeant David Kasper
Staff Sergeant Leah Aasen
Mr. Conrado Barrera (Civilian Employee)
Ms. Mercedes Grepo (Civilian Employee)

I recall that the reason this article was so interesting was that some of us were trying to determine whether we believed that President Nixon would resign rather than face possible impeachment. This was a very popular topic on the base among people with whom I associated. Since no orders from the White House were ever received, as far as I know, nothing more ever came of it.

I hereby declare that I make this statement freely without any reservations and that it is the entire account of this incident according to my memory and belief. I make this statement and declare that it is a true account under the penalty of perjury.

6/18/90
Kathy Bennett
Comm Expires 10/23/93

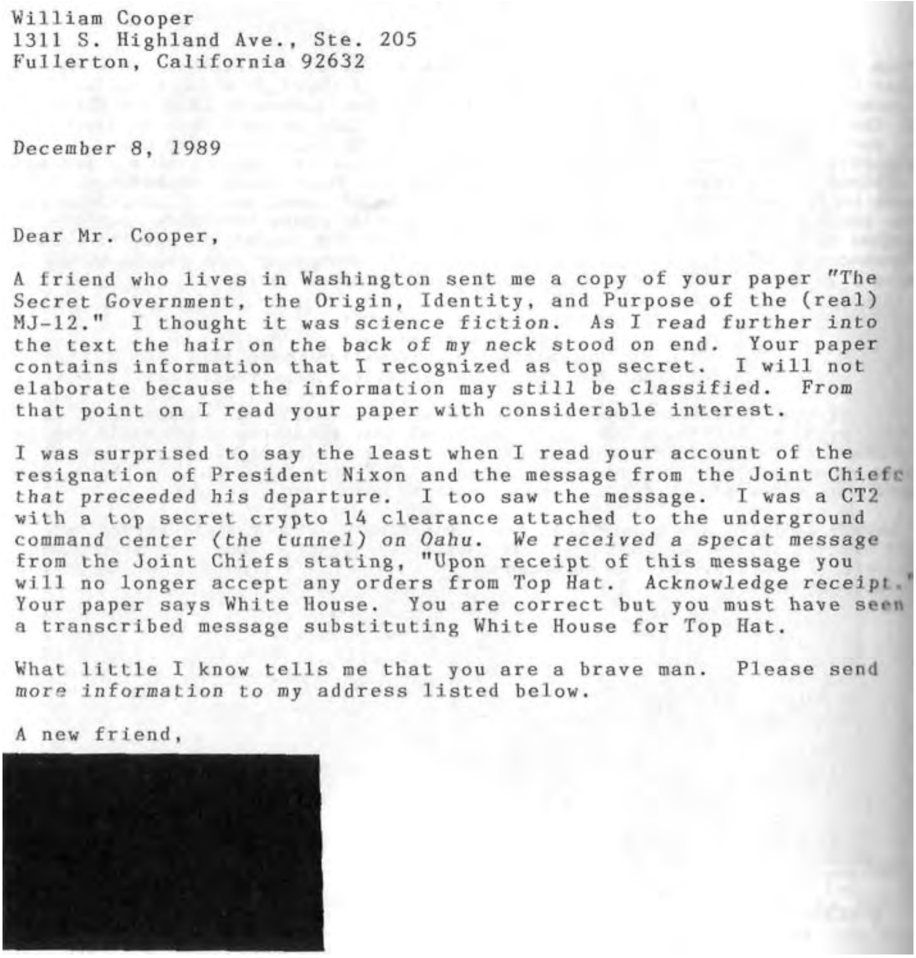

William Cooper
1311 S. Highland Ave., Ste. 205
Fullerton, California 92632

December 8, 1989

Dear Mr. Cooper,

A friend who lives in Washington sent me a copy of your paper "The Secret Government, the Origin, Identity, and Purpose of the (real) MJ-12." I thought it was science fiction. As I read further into the text the hair on the back of my neck stood on end. Your paper contains information that I recognized as top secret. I will not elaborate because the information may still be classified. From that point on I read your paper with considerable interest.

I was surprised to say the least when I read your account of the resignation of President Nixon and the message from the Joint Chiefs that preceeded his departure. I too saw the message. I was a CT2 with a top secret crypto 14 clearance attached to the underground command center (the tunnel) on Oahu. We received a specat message from the Joint Chiefs stating, "Upon receipt of this message you will no longer accept any orders from Top Hat. Acknowledge receipt." Your paper says White House. You are correct but you must have seen a transcribed message substituting White House for Top Hat.

What little I know tells me that you are a brave man. Please send more information to my address listed below.

A new friend,

[redacted]

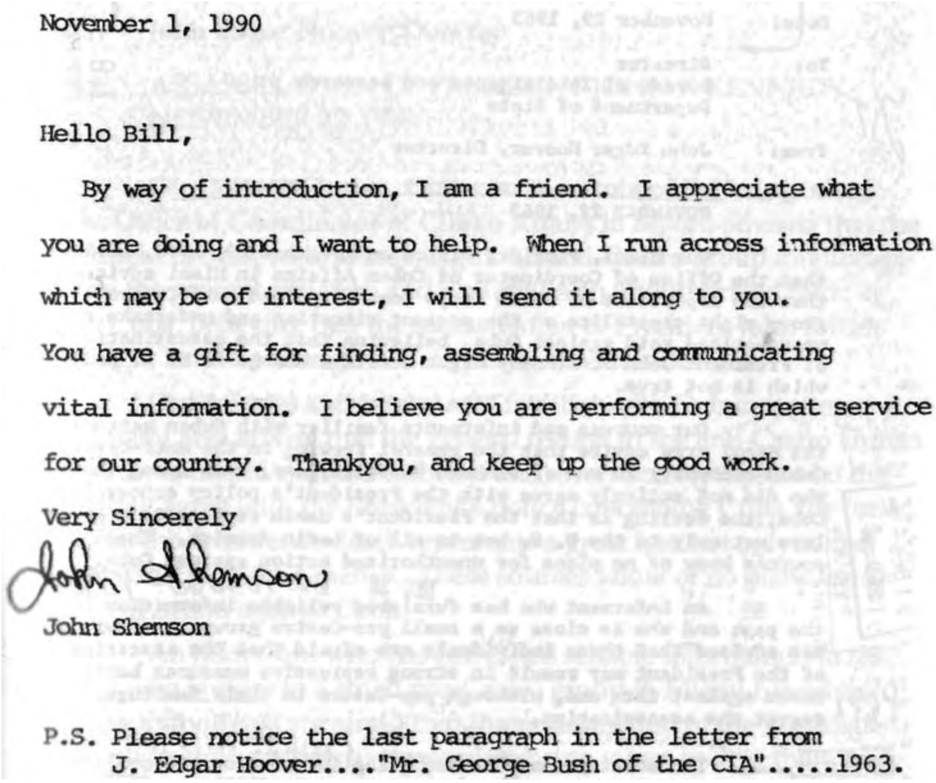

November 1, 1990

Hello Bill,

By way of introduction, I am a friend. I appreciate what you are doing and I want to help. When I run across information which may be of interest, I will send it along to you. You have a gift for finding, assembling and communicating vital information. I believe you are performing a great service for our country. Thankyou, and keep up the good work.

Very Sincerely

John Shemson

John Shemson

P.S. Please notice the last paragraph in the letter from J. Edgar Hoover...."Mr. George Bush of the CIA".....1963.

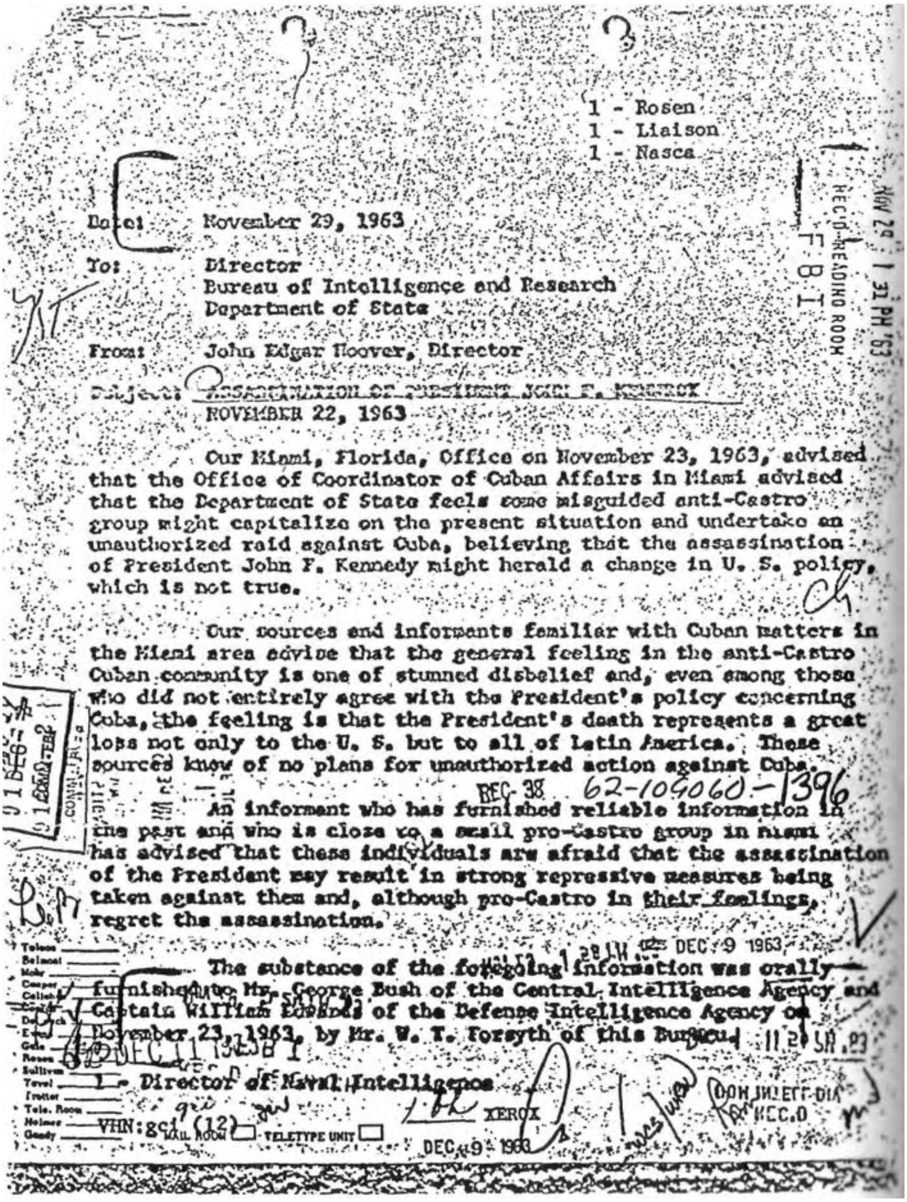

1 - Rosen
1 - Liaison
1 - Nasca

REC'D READING ROOM
F B I
NOV 29 1 31 PM '63

Date: November 29, 1963

To: Director
Bureau of Intelligence and Research
Department of State

From: John Edgar Hoover, Director

Subject: ASSASSINATION OF PRESIDENT JOHN F. KENNEDY
NOVEMBER 22, 1963

Our Miami, Florida, Office on November 23, 1963, advised that the Office of Coordinator of Cuban Affairs in Miami advised that the Department of State feels some misguided anti-Castro group might capitalize on the present situation and undertake an unauthorized raid against Cuba, believing that the assassination of President John F. Kennedy might herald a change in U. S. policy, which is not true.

Our sources and informants familiar with Cuban matters in the Miami area advise that the general feeling in the anti-Castro Cuban community is one of stunned disbelief and, even among those who did not entirely agree with the President's policy concerning Cuba, the feeling is that the President's death represents a great loss not only to the U. S. but to all of Latin America. These sources know of no plans for unauthorized action against Cuba.

REC-38 62-109060-1396

An informant who has furnished reliable information in the past and who is close to a small pro-Castro group in Miami has advised that these individuals are afraid that the assassination of the President may result in strong repressive measures being taken against them and, although pro-Castro in their feelings, regret the assassination.

DEC 9 1963

The substance of the foregoing information was orally furnished to Mr. George Bush of the Central Intelligence Agency and Captain William Edwards of the Defense Intelligence Agency on November 23, 1963, by Mr. W. T. Forsyth of this Bureau.

DEC 11 1963

1 - Director of Naval Intelligence

Tolson
Belmont
Mohr
Casper
Callahan
Conrad
DeLoach
Evans
Gale
Rosen
Sullivan
Tavel
Trotter
Tele. Room
Holmes
Gandy

VHN:gcl (12)
MAIL ROOM ☐ TELETYPE UNIT ☐

XEROX
DEC 9 1963

ONI LIAISON-DIA
REC'D

1 -Rosen
1 -Liaison
1 - Nasca

Date: November 29,1963

To: Director
Bureau of Intelligence and Research
Department of State

From: John Edgar Hoover, Director

Subject: ASSASSINATION OF PRESIDENT JOHN F. KENNEDY NOVEMBER 22,1963

Our Miami, Florida, Office on November 23,1963, advised that the Office of Coordinator of Cuban Affairs in Miami advised that the Department of State feels some misguided anti-Castro group might capitalize on the present situation and undertake an unauthorized raid against Cuba, believing that the assassination of President John F. Kennedy might herald a change in U. S. policy, which is not true.

Our sources and informants familiar with Cuban matters in the Miami area advise that the general feeling in the anti-Castro Cuban community is one of stunned disbelief and, even among those who did not entirely agree with the President's policy concerning Cuba, the feeling is that the President's death represents a great loss not only to the U.S. but to all of Latin America. These sources know of no plans for unauthorized action against Cuba.

An informant who has furnished reliable information in the past and who is close to a small pro-Castro group in Miami has advised that these individuals are afraid that the assassination of the President may result in strong repressive measures being taken against them and, although pro-Castro in their feelings, regret the assassination.

The substance of the foregoing information was orally furnished to Mr. George Bush of the Central Intelligence Agency and Captain William Edwards of the Defense Intelligence Agency on November 23,1963, by Mr. W. T. Forsyth of this Bureau.

1 - Director of Naval Intelligence

VHN:gci (12)

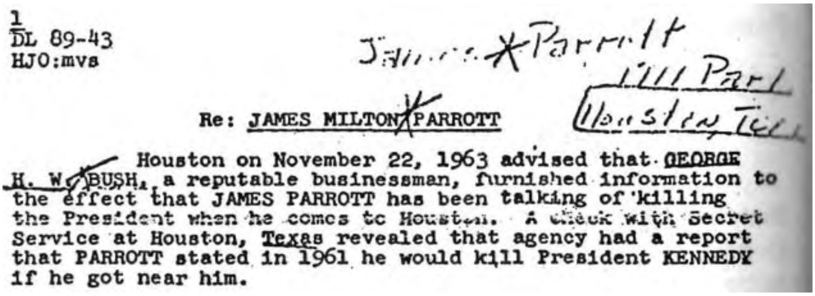

1
DL 89-43
HJO:mvs

James Parrott
1111 Park
Houston Te

Re: JAMES MILTON PARROTT

Houston on November 22, 1963 advised that GEORGE H. W. BUSH, a reputable businessman, furnished information to the effect that JAMES PARROTT has been talking of killing the President when he comes to Houston. A check with Secret Service at Houston, Texas revealed that agency had a report that PARROTT stated in 1961 he would kill President KENNEDY if he got near him.

though not yet expressly put forth, is the development of a long-range sequence of space-research projects with largely unattainable goals. This kind of program offers several advantages lacking in the social welfare model. First, it is unlikely to phase itself out, regardless of the predictable "surprises" science has in store for us: the universe is too big. In the event some individual project unexpectedly succeeds there would be no dearth of substitute problems. For example, if colonization of the moon proceeds on schedule, it could then become "necessary" to establish a beachhead on Mars or Jupiter, and so on. Second, it need be no more dependent on the general supply-demand economy than its military prototype. Third, it lends itself extraordinarily well to arbitrary control.

Space research can be viewed as the nearest modern equivalent yet devised to the pyramid-building, and similar ritualistic enterprises, of ancient societies. It is true that the scientific value of the space program, even of what has already been accomplished, is substantial on its own terms. But current programs are absurdly and obviously disproportionate, in the relationship of the knowledge sought to the expenditures committed. All but a small fraction of the space budget, measured by the standards of comparable scientific objectives, must be charged de facto to the military economy. Future space research, projected as a war surrogate, would further reduce the "scientific" rationale of its budget to a minuscule percentage indeed. As a purely economic substitute for war, therefore, extension of the space program warrants serious consideration.

In Section 3 we pointed out that certain disarmament models, which we called conservative, postulated extremely expensive and elaborate inspection systems. Would it be possible to extend and institutionalize such systems to the point where they might serve as economic surrogates for war spending? The organization of fail-safe inspection machinery could well be ritualized in a manner similar to that of established military processes. "Inspection teams" might be very like armies, and their technical equipment might be very like weapons. Inflating the inspection budget to military scale presents no difficulty. The appeal of this kind of scheme lies in the comparative ease of transition between two parallel systems.

The "elaborate inspection" surrogate is fundamentally fallacious, however. Although it might be economically useful, as well as politically necessary, during the disarmament transition, it would fail as a substitute for the economic function of war for one simple reason. Peace-keeping inspection is part of a war system, not of a peace system. It implies the possibility of weapons maintenance or manufacture, which could not exist in a world at peace as here defined. Massive inspection also implies sanctions, and thus war-readiness.

The same fallacy is more obvious in plans to create a patently useless "defense conversion" apparatus. The long-discredited proposal to build "total" civil defense obvious destabilizing effect of any global social welfare surrogate on politically necessary class relationships would create an entirely new set of transition problems at least equal in magnitude.

Credibility, in fact, lies at the heart of the problem of developing a political substitute for war. This is where the space-race proposals, in many ways so well suited as economic substitutes for war, fall short. The most ambitious and unrealistic space project cannot of itself generate a believable external menace. It has been hotly argued[6] that such a menace would offer the 'last, best hope of peace," etc., by uniting mankind against the danger of destruction by "creatures" from other planets or from outer space. Experiments have been proposed to test the credibility of an out-of-our-world invasion threat; it is possible that a few of the more difficult-to-explain "flying saucer" incidents of recent years were in fact early experiments of this kind. If so, they could hardly have been judged encouraging. We anticipate no difficulties in making a "need" for a giant super space program credible for economic purposes, even were there not ample precedent; extending it, for political purposes, to include features unfortunately associated with science fiction would obviously be a more dubious undertaking.

Nevertheless, an effective political substitute for war would require "alternate enemies," some of which might seem equally farfetched in the context of the current war system. It may be, for instance, that gross pollution of the environment can eventually replace the possibility of mass destruction by nuclear weapons as the principal apparent threat to the survival of the species. Poisoning of the air, and of the principal sources of food and water supply, is already well advanced, and at first glance would seem promising in this respect; it constitutes a threat that can be dealt with only through social organization and political power. But from present indications it will be a generation to a generation and a half before environmental pollution, however severe, will be sufficiently menacing, on a global scale, to offer a possible basis for a solution.

It is true that the rate of pollution could be increased selectively for this purpose; in fact, the mere modifying of existing programs for the deterrence of pollution could speed up the process enough to make the threat credible much sooner. But the pollution problem has been so widely publicized in recent years that it seems highly improbable that a program of deliberate environmental poisoning could be implemented in a politically acceptable manner.

However unlikely some of the possible alternate enemies we have mentioned may seem, we must emphasize that one must be found, of credible quality and magnitude, if a transition to peace is ever to come about without social disintegration. It is more probable, in our judgment, that such a threat will have to be invented, rather than developed from unknown conditions. For this reason, we believe further speculation about its putative nature ill-advised in this context. Since there is considerable doubt, in our minds, that any viable political surrogate can be devised, we are reluctant to com-

Carnegie Endowment for International Peace

DIVISION OF INTERCOURSE AND EDUCATION

Foreword by Elihu Root

Publication No. 15

of the United States as to Central and South America and the enunciation of Japan's attitude toward China. In the first there is on the part of the United States no engagement or promise, while in the other Japan voluntarily announces that Japan will herself engage not to violate the political or territorial integrity of her neighbor, and to observe the principle of the open door and equal opportunity, asking at the same time other nations to respect these principles.

Therefore, gentlemen, you will mark the wide difference and agree with me, I am sure, that the use of the term is somewhat loose and misleading. I ask you to note this with no suggestion that I can or any one else does question the policy or attitude of your country, which we well know will always deal fairly and honorably with other nations.

As you must have noticed, I have persistently struck one note every time I have spoken. It has been the note of warning against German intrigue in America and in Japan—intrigue which has extended over a period of more than ten years. I am not going to weary you with a repetition of this squalid story of plots, conceived and fostered by the agents of Germany, but I solemnly repeat the warning here in this most distinguished gathering, so thoroughly representative of the highest ideals of American journalism.

In my speeches at various places I have endeavored to speak frankly on all points at issue or of interest at this time. There are, of course, some things which can not be openly discussed, because of a wise embargo upon unwise disclosures, but I am confident that from this time forward we will be able to effectively cooperate in all matters tending to secure a victory in this struggle which means so much for all of us, and that throughout all the years to come, differences of opinion or difficulties arising between our two countries will be settled, as all such questions and difficulties can be settled, between close friends and partners.

I thank you, sir, for your hospitality and for your courtesy. I assure you, gentlemen, again that we appreciate more than I can express the high consideration, the patriotism, and the broad and friendly spirit with which you have treated this Mission from Japan.

Comptroller William A. Prendergast was next called upon. He said in part:

Mr. Chairman, Viscount Ishii, gentlemen of the Commission, Your Excellency, and gentlemen: Our host has asked me to say a word of welcome to Viscount Ishii and associate members of the Commission in the name of the great city of New York.

It would seem to me that it is hardly necessary even to attempt to repeat the very great pleasure and honor and happiness that it gives New York to have you as its guests.

Now, Viscount Ishii, might I at this time sound a note which may be somewhat contrary to that which has been the dominant idea of our discussions upon these occasions? We have treated, and naturally, of war. That is the thought that is uppermost in our minds. It is the thing that is in the thought tad the mind of man, woman, and child—war. I can say

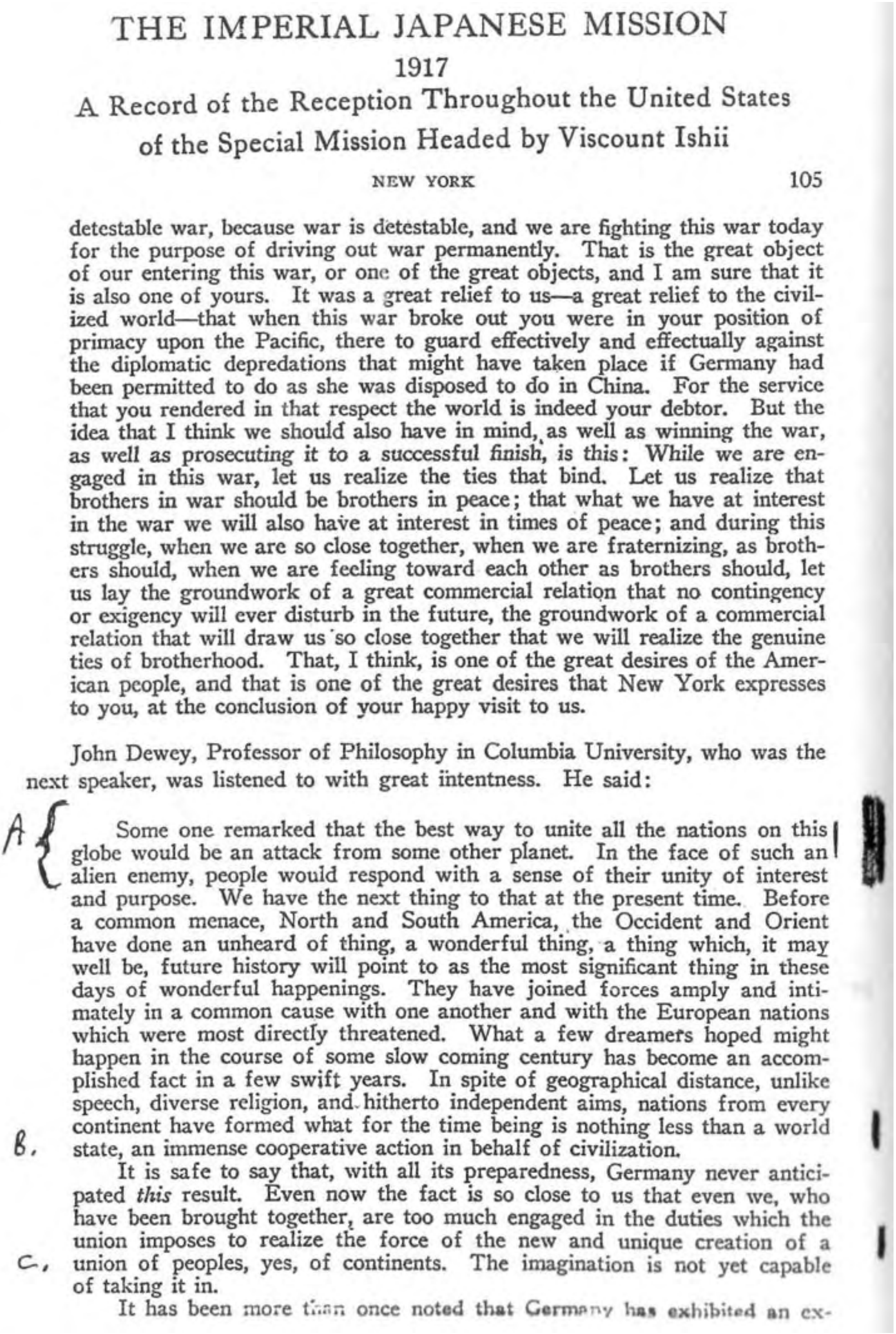

THE IMPERIAL JAPANESE MISSION

1917

A Record of the Reception Throughout the United States of the Special Mission Headed by Viscount Ishii

detestable war, because war is detestable, and we are fighting this war today for the purpose of driving out war permanently. That is the great object of our entering this war, or one of the great objects, and I am sure that it is also one of yours. It was a great relief to us—a great relief to the civilized world—that when this war broke out you were in your position of primacy upon the Pacific, there to guard effectively and effectually against the diplomatic depredations that might have taken place if Germany had been permitted to do as she was disposed to do in China. For the service that you rendered in that respect the world is indeed your debtor. But the idea that I think we should also have in mind, as well as winning the war, as well as prosecuting it to a successful finish, is this: While we are engaged in this war, let us realize the ties that bind. Let us realize that brothers in war should be brothers in peace; that what we have at interest in the war we will also have at interest in times of peace; and during this struggle, when we are so close together, when we are fraternizing, as brothers should, when we are feeling toward each other as brothers should, let us lay the groundwork of a great commercial relation that no contingency or exigency will ever disturb in the future, the groundwork of a commercial relation that will draw us so close together that we will realize the genuine ties of brotherhood. That, I think, is one of the great desires of the American people, and that is one of the great desires that New York expresses to you, at the conclusion of your happy visit to us.

John Dewey, Professor of Philosophy in Columbia University, who was the next speaker, was listened to with great intentness. He said:

A Some one remarked that the best way to unite all the nations on this globe would be an attack from some other planet. In the face of such an alien enemy, people would respond with a sense of their unity of interest and purpose. We have the next thing to that at the present time. Before a common menace, North and South America, the Occident and Orient have done an unheard of thing, a wonderful thing, a thing which, it may well be, future history will point to as the most significant thing in these days of wonderful happenings. They have joined forces amply and intimately in a common cause with one another and with the European nations which were most directly threatened. What a few dreamers hoped might happen in the course of some slow coming century has become an accomplished fact in a few swift years. In spite of geographical distance, unlike speech, diverse religion, and hitherto independent aims, nations from every continent have formed what for the time being is nothing less than a world
B. state, an immense cooperative action in behalf of civilization.

It is safe to say that, with all its preparedness, Germany never anticipated *this* result. Even now the fact is so close to us that even we, who have been brought together, are too much engaged in the duties which the union imposes to realize the force of the new and unique creation of a
C, union of peoples, yes, of continents. The imagination is not yet capable of taking it in.

It has been more than once noted that Germany has exhibited an ex-

WASHINGTON, D. C.
1918

9453

traordinary spectacle to the world. It has stood for organization at home and disorganization abroad, for cooperative effort among its own people and for division and hostility among all other peoples. All through the earlier years of the war the intellectuals of Germany appealed for sympathy in this country because of what Germany had done in the way of social legislation and administration to promote the unity of all classes, because of its efficiency in organization, because of the intelligent efforts it had made to secure domestic prosperity. But, at the same time, as events have since only too clearly demonstrated, it was bending every energy of corrupt and hateful intrigue to disunite the American people among themselves and to incite suspicion, jealousy, envy, and even active hostility between the American nation and other nations, like Mexico and Japan, with whom we had every reason to live in amity and no reasons of weight for anything but amity. In the light of this exhibition, German love of organization and cooperative unity at home gains a sinister meaning. It stands convicted of falsity because born of a malicious conspiracy against the rest of the world. It loved unity and harmony, not for themselves, but simply as a means of bringing about that dominion of Germany over the world of which its remorseless and treacherous efforts to divide other peoples are the other half.

D.

The rest of the world, of the once neutral world, was, it must be confessed, slow to awake to Germany's plots and purposes. They seemed fantastic, unreal, in their unbridled lust for power and their incredibly bad faith. It was especially hard for us in this country, who have never been trained to identify our loyalty to our own country with hatred of any other, to realize that Germany's genius for efficiency and organization had become a menace to domestic union and international friendliness over the world. But finally in North America, as in South America, and in Asia, when the case became too clear for further doubt, Germany's challenge was met. Against Germany's efforts to disunite there arose a world united in endeavor and achievement on a scale unprecedented in the history of this globe, a scale too vast not to endure and in enduring to make the future history of international relationships something very different from their past history. In struggling by cunning and corruption to separate and divide other peoples, Germany has succeeded in drawing them together with a rapidity and an intimacy almost beyond belief. Nations thus brought together in community of feeling and action will not easily fall apart, even though the occasion which brought them together passes, as, pray God, it will soon pass. The Germany which seems finally to be breaking up within has furnished the rest of the world with a cement whose uses will not easily be forgotten.

Formal alliances, set treaties, legal arrangements for arbitration and conciliation, leagues and courts of nations, all have their importance. But, gentlemen, their importance is secondary. They are effects rather than causes, symptoms rather than forces. You may have them all, and if nations have not discovered that their permanent interests are in mutuality and interchange, they will be evaded or overridden. They may be lacking, but if the vital sap of reciprocal trust and friendly intercourse is flowing through the arteries of commerce and the public press, they will come in due season

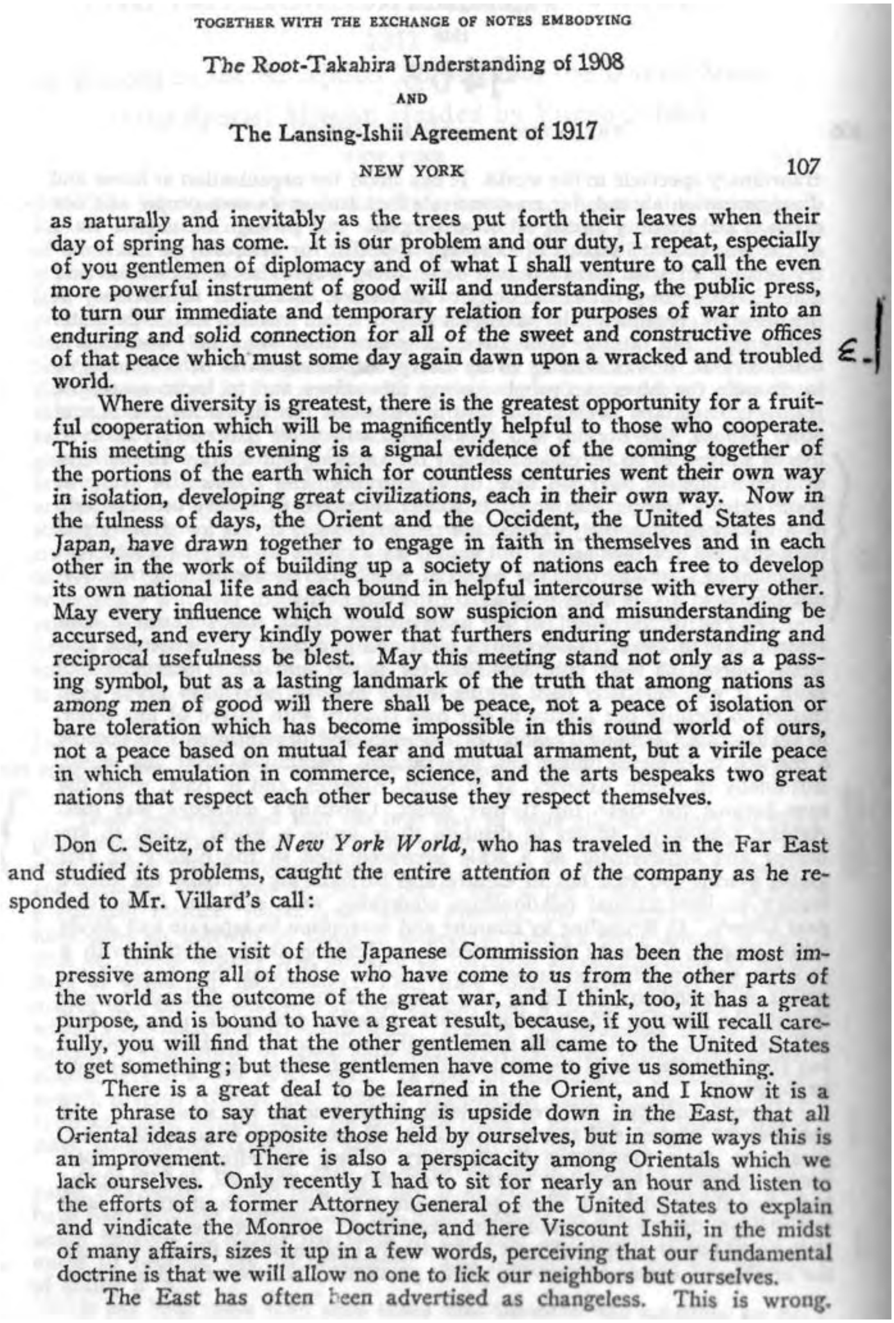

as naturally and inevitably as the trees put forth their leaves when their day of spring has come. It is our problem and our duty, I repeat, especially of you gentlemen of diplomacy and of what I shall venture to call the even more powerful instrument of good will and understanding, the public press, to turn our immediate and temporary relation for purposes of war into an enduring and solid connection for all of the sweet and constructive offices of that peace which must some day again dawn upon a wracked and troubled world.

Where diversity is greatest, there is the greatest opportunity for a fruitful cooperation which will be magnificently helpful to those who cooperate. This meeting this evening is a signal evidence of the coming together of the portions of the earth which for countless centuries went their own way in isolation, developing great civilizations, each in their own way. Now in the fulness of days, the Orient and the Occident, the United States and Japan, have drawn together to engage in faith in themselves and in each other in the work of building up a society of nations each free to develop its own national life and each bound in helpful intercourse with every other. May every influence which would sow suspicion and misunderstanding be accursed, and every kindly power that furthers enduring understanding and reciprocal usefulness be blest. May this meeting stand not only as a passing symbol, but as a lasting landmark of the truth that among nations as among men of good will there shall be peace, not a peace of isolation or bare toleration which has become impossible in this round world of ours, not a peace based on mutual fear and mutual armament, but a virile peace in which emulation in commerce, science, and the arts bespeaks two great nations that respect each other because they respect themselves.

Don C. Seitz, of the *New York World,* who has traveled in the Far East and studied its problems, caught the entire attention of the company as he responded to Mr. Villard's call:

> I think the visit of the Japanese Commission has been the most impressive among all of those who have come to us from the other parts of the world as the outcome of the great war, and I think, too, it has a great purpose, and is bound to have a great result, because, if you will recall carefully, you will find that the other gentlemen all came to the United States to get something; but these gentlemen have come to give us something.
>
> There is a great deal to be learned in the Orient, and I know it is a trite phrase to say that everything is upside down in the East, that all Oriental ideas are opposite those held by ourselves, but in some ways this is an improvement. There is also a perspicacity among Orientals which we lack ourselves. Only recently I had to sit for nearly an hour and listen to the efforts of a former Attorney General of the United States to explain and vindicate the Monroe Doctrine, and here Viscount Ishii, in the midst of many affairs, sizes it up in a few words, perceiving that our fundamental doctrine is that we will allow no one to lick our neighbors but ourselves.
>
> The East has often been advertised as changeless. This is wrong.

I have stated again and again since 1984, that George Bush and others close to him, including the so-called "Pink Team" have been involved directly in the cocaine drug trade from Central America. In HOPE'S HUSBAND, I named the CIA-owned Costa Rican Corporations directly involved in this drug trade, using shrimp fishing boats with the cocaine frozen in with the shrimp. In that same book, still available for a mere $3.00, I *told of the secret sailing course code that* would insure that these CIA-owned fishing boats would not be intercepted by the U.S. Coast Guard. Former Military Intelligence Officers, risking their pensions and perhaps their freedom, have verified to me that these statements are correct and widely known among the professional Intelligence Community. I had often wondered where George Bush, and his relatives and friends, would be putting so much money for their own personal profit. It would be hard to stash it in the United States banks, as someone who is unfriendly to them might leak the information. Well, as most sophisticated investors and financial people know, Panama was one of the best tax haven jurisdictions in the world prior to December 20, 1989. George Bush, with his friendship with Noriega assuring his privacy in financial affairs, would have left his millions in illegal drug profits right there in Panama both in secret bank accounts and in business and tourist properties.

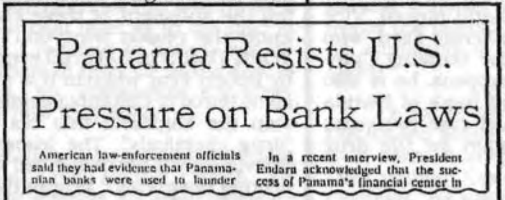

Panama Resists U.S. Pressure on Bank Laws

American law-enforcement officials said they had evidence that Panamanian banks were used to launder

In a recent interview, President Endara acknowledged that the success of Panama's financial center in

We also know from the NEW YORK TIMES front page story of 2/6/90, by reporter Stephen Labaton, that in spite of the invasion supposedly to stop the international drug trade, Panama is not going to reveal those huge cash deposits in Panama banks, even when allegedly pressured to do so by the United States. Thus we see that Noriega's friends are still in full control in Panama. Noriega's #1 economic advisor was Carlos Whitgreen. He "fled the country" and is somewhere in Western Europe according to my personal informant in Panama. Personally, I think Carlos has been given another assignment.

Senator John Kerry, (D Mass) has held extensive hearings into the money laundering and the use of Panamanian Banks for drug operations stated in the NEW YORK TIMES *that he is "very concerned about it." However,* he does not intend to do anything about it. Remember back in 1988 when the U.S. imposed economic sanctions in Panama to halt this money laundering? Well, after these 26 men gave their lives during the Panama Invasion, and Noriega is safely silenced, these sanctions have been suddenly cancelled! If the invasion was really to stop drug trafficking as well as illegal money laundering, the sanctions would have been increased not reduced. Yet, as of March 26th, the U.S. has released $480 million in funds which were frozen while Noriega was in power. Panama is in receipt of this money yet they have not informed the Panama citizens. Hundreds of government employees are not being paid on time, and some not at all.

One of the most important of the Noriega men is Panama Senator Mario Rognoni who has been up to his eyeballs in graft, drugs and theft. It therefore comes as no surprise that Senator Rognoni was scheduled to speak at HARVARD UNIVERSITY, Cambridge, MA. on Wednesday, April 4, 1990, *right in John Kerry's back yard. He is to lec*ture on the violations of U.S. Treaties with Panama as to the sanctions and the invasion, and reportedly is now writing a book about his knowledge of what happened.

So, instead of increasing the economic pressure on Panama, your Congress has just approved the first payment of $42 million to be sent to Panama as part of a One Billion

U.S. Aid package. We have a hunch that some of this money is to protect the Bush Family investments in Panama, and to make the Panama tourist trade again popular so that the Bush string of hotels and resorts will start to make money as planned.

The George Bush hand-picked new President of Panama is Guillermo Endura. He is soon to marry his 24 year old mistress, and is on a special diet so as to lose some 150# for the wedding. However, all the Latin love stories aside, the fact remains that Endura is a Director of a Panamanian bank used exclusively by Columbia's Medellin drug cartel. Do not be so naive as to think that *anything has* changed with the sacrifice of 26 of our finest men in operation "Just Cause."

The George Bush hand-picked Vice President of Panama is Guillermo Ford, who is also the Chairman of the Banking Commission of Panama. As it happens, he is also part owner of the Dadeland Bank of Florida which was named in a court case two years ago as the central institution for the drug cartels.

The George Bush hand-picked new Attorney General of Panama is Rogello Cruz, and according to the NEW YORK TIMES is one of the bosses of the Cali drug cartel of Columbia. All this fits with what I wrote years ago in HOPE'S HUSBAND and other pamphlets, regarding George Bush and his Drug Connections. I make *no apologies*. What I saw in Central America and what I know and published from other sources has proven to be true and accurate. The U.S. Government under Bush command is making no effort whatever to rid the Panamanian Government of *officials tied directly to* drugs. Don't you see? If he did so, they would quickly give their stories to the world news media and bring down a scandal that would make Watergate and the Iran Contra Scandal seem insignificant by comparison. *History may record that George Bush* was the most dangerous man to ever serve as President of the United States. He must be impeached, and *impeached quickly*. I am not so naive as to suppose that it is going to happen in the near future.

On February 8, 1990, ABC Evening News carried a report regarding the Congressional Testimony by Senator *Harry Reid (D NV) who complained* that U.S. based oil companies were not being regulated in the shipment of chemicals necessary to the production of illegal drugs. Two of these chemicals are Acetone and Ethyl-Ether. The oil companies whose chemical affiliates are Exxon, Chevron and *Shell, are sending these chemicals* into Latin America with the full knowledge that this is its only commercial purpose there. George Bush has refused to sign an Executive Order prohibiting or limiting the shipment of these chemicals. We do know the reason why, don't we? The NEW *YORK TIMES of 2/10/90 even* carried a story by Robert Pear wherein it is stated that President Barco of Columbia demanded that Bush stop the shipment into his country of the "drug chemicals". The leaders of Peru and Bolivia have also demanded that these drug making chemicals, **originating in the United States**, *be stopped*. As of this writing, this has not been done.

As you can *imagine*, the Bush Administration does not appreciate the remarks in these pamphlets. The vultures are circling. We are knowingly *placing ourselves* in the *cross-hairs* of some very substantial firepower so that you can know the truth. This month we received two **consecutively** numbered Certified Letters from the Memphis, TN office of the Internal Revenue and they were *returned unopened and refused*. I continue to maintain that I am not under the jurisdiction of the Legislative Democracy of Washington, DC and thus not a "person" required to file returns or pay taxes. I ask that you pray for me, but that you not worry about *me no matter* what happens.

I include the foregoing paragraph

in this report on Bush, Drugs and the Panama treachery for a very good reason. I have mailed 350 copies of a fantastic report on the Bush Financial Investments in Panama to some of you whom I thought would be particularly interested. I simply could not afford to send out any more of them. This report, titled CRIMINAL POLITICS, is by my friend, Lawrence Patterson, PO Box 3812, Cincinnati, OH 45222. He is a financial advisor and normally his monthly reports cost $15.00. In my opinion they are well worth the money, even if you are not a millionaire. This particular issue, February 1990, he will send to you for only $1.00 per copy if you write to him and mention my name in doing so. However, he had what I see as a minor error in that issue regarding the law and a citizen's status. He may well know the truth and be writing for a particular educational level as to the law. In any event, what I respond to here is not intended to be critical of him, for in the case of most Americans, his statements are absolutely true as to how they apply.

Brother Patterson states on page 6 that "Drug Possession is now a CIVIL CRIME." He is quite correctly quoting an announcement by the Bush Administration Attorney General Thornburg's announcement of 12/2/89. In that announcement, Thornburg stated that possession of **no more than** an ounce of marijuana or **no more than** a gram of heroin or cocaine would be prosecuted as a "civil violation" -- not a criminal violation.

Remember I wrote in ENCORE!, the last 24 pages of HOPE'S HUSBAND!, that the government of the United States was formally inserted into a world government on January 19, 1989 without the knowledge of the American people! Since that is true, technically there are no longer any common law Rights guaranteed under the Constitution of the United States, such as those 4th and 5th Amendment protections.

I maintain that the World Government set up in secret during January, 1989 is *ultra vires*, that is, outside the Law and without legal standing. Therefore, I claim my common law Rights as a Citizen and am not a Subject who must submit to search of my home, person, papers and effects without a properly drawn 4th Amendment Warrant signed by a Judge in my County setting forth under oath the probable cause for believing there is a criminal activity on my part.

Here is the point. Read it carefully! Under American Constitutional Law, and the Laws of every one of the States, there is no such thing as a "civil crime." All crimes, even a humble traffic ticket, are legally criminal in nature and jurisdiction. The only jurisdiction wherein there can be a "civil crime", or where any Court can impose such a penalty, is under Admiralty/Maritime International Law. By what authority does an American, walking around with an ounce of Marijuana, come under the International Law of the Sea? Isn't he supposed to be under "the law of the Land?"

What is the only way that a citizen of the United States of America can be reduced to a "Person subject to Admiralty/Maritime Law" without Constitutional Rights? Only by Contract. By what contract has an American been forced into such jurisdiction? There may be a number of them which he is absolutely unaware of until it is too late to unravel his personal affairs and then **timely claim** his lawful rights. With all due respect to my friend Larry Patterson, no federal law can be passed that will do away with the 4th Amendment. For an American to be subject to search and seizure without a 4th Amendment warrant, he must have already waived those Rights by contract or he must have failed to object timely prior to the search.

I am not going to take time and space to list those typical contracts wherein many have waived, albeit inadvertantly and perhaps through fraud, their common law rights. That has been published previously. However, with all due disrespect to Attorney General Thornburg, I am not a person subject to such searches without a warrant. I am not under the jurisdiction of any court who can impose such prosecution for "civil violations." Are you

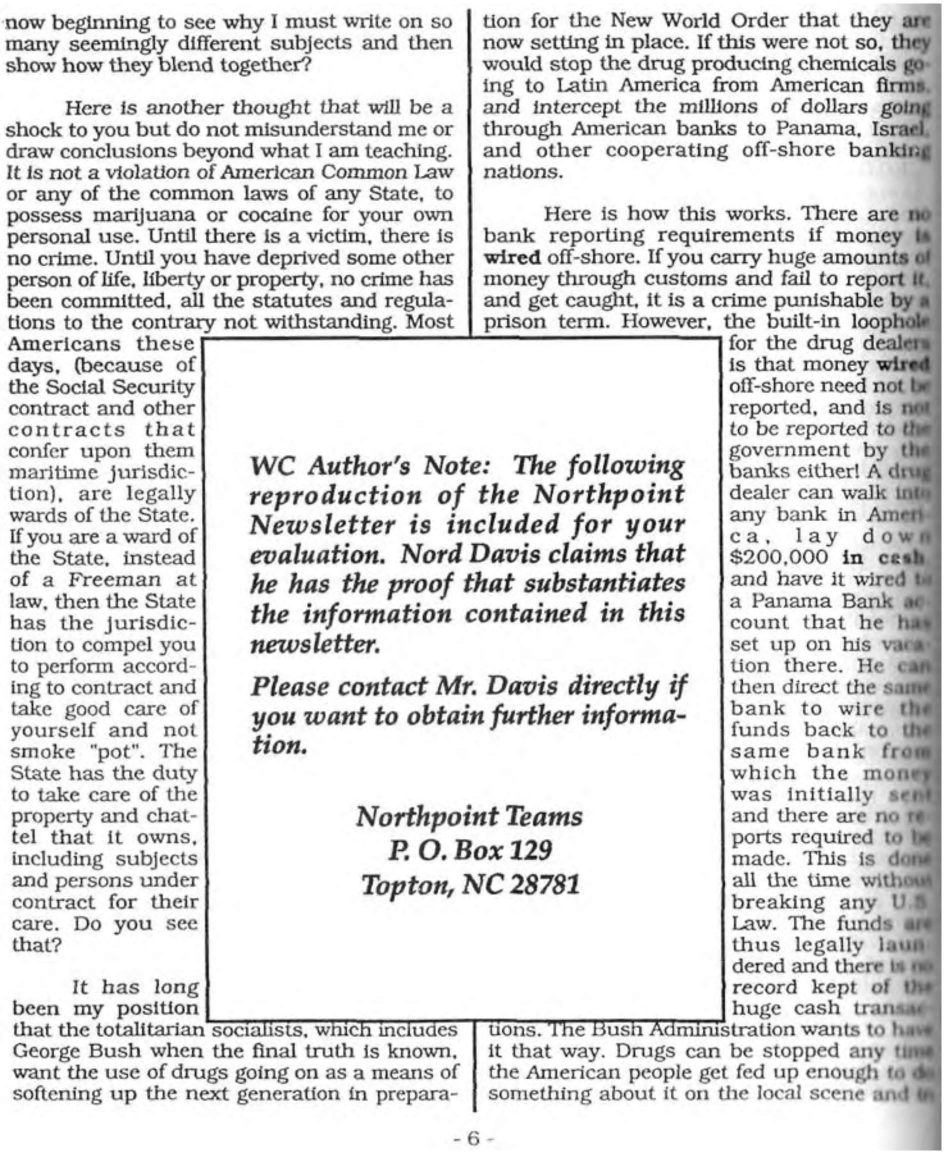

now beginning to see why I must write on so many seemingly different subjects and then show how they blend together?

Here is another thought that will be a shock to you but do not misunderstand me or draw conclusions beyond what I am teaching. It is not a violation of American Common Law or any of the common laws of any State, to possess marijuana or cocaine for your own personal use. Until there is a victim, there is no crime. Until you have deprived some other person of life, liberty or property, no crime has been committed, all the statutes and regulations to the contrary not withstanding. Most Americans these days, (because of the Social Security contract and other contracts that confer upon them maritime jurisdiction), are legally wards of the State. If you are a ward of the State, instead of a Freeman at law, then the State has the jurisdiction to compel you to perform according to contract and take good care of yourself and not smoke "pot". The State has the duty to take care of the property and chattel that it owns, including subjects and persons under contract for their care. Do you see that?

WC Author's Note: The following reproduction of the Northpoint Newsletter is included for your evaluation. Nord Davis claims that he has the proof that substantiates the information contained in this newsletter.

Please contact Mr. Davis directly if you want to obtain further information.

Northpoint Teams
P. O. Box 129
Topton, NC 28781

It has long been my position that the totalitarian socialists, which includes George Bush when the final truth is known, want the use of drugs going on as a means of softening up the next generation in preparation for the New World Order that they are now setting in place. If this were not so, they would stop the drug producing chemicals going to Latin America from American firms, and intercept the millions of dollars going through American banks to Panama, Israel, and other cooperating off-shore banking nations.

Here is how this works. There are no bank reporting requirements if money is **wired** off-shore. If you carry huge amounts of money through customs and fail to report it, and get caught, it is a crime punishable by a prison term. However, the built-in loophole for the drug dealers is that money **wired** off-shore need not be reported, and is not to be reported to the government by the banks either! A drug dealer can walk into any bank in America, lay down $200,000 **in cash** and have it wired to a Panama Bank account that he has set up on his vacation there. He can then direct the same bank to wire the funds back to the same bank from which the money was initially sent and there are no reports required to be made. This is done all the time without breaking any U.S. Law. The funds are thus legally laundered and there is no record kept of the huge cash transactions. The Bush Administration wants to have it that way. Drugs can be stopped any time the American people get fed up enough to do something about it on the local scene and in the local courts.

THE BUSH SECRET EXPOSED

Exactly ten days after the illegal Bush invasion of Panama, the LOS ANGELES TIMES of December 30, 1989 ran a story which exposed the Bush Family deep involvement in the Panamanian financial affairs to the tune of hundreds of millions of dollars! Yes, the Bush Family has that kind of money. Yes, sweet grandmother Barbara Bush knows all about it for those of you who have written here asking about her.

As President, George Bush's time is pretty well occupied, the Bush Family investments are handled by his brother, Prescott S. Bush and their funds are laundered through a Japanese firm, which goes by the name Aoki Corporation. Prescott Bush, according to our sources, is a MAJOR PARTNER in Aoki Corporation, not just a minor stockholder. He is one of those who set the corporate policies of this Japanese firm. This Japanese firm, and their partners, have invested more than $350,000,000 in Panama, and their holdings include the famous Marriott Hotel around which firefights raged in the news not too long ago. They own a luxury resort on Contadora Island known as Caesar Park. You remember that resort, don't you? That was where the notorious "Peace Conferences for Central America" were held from which the pinko Oscar Arias, the former President of Costa Rica, won his Nobel Peace Prize. This Nobel Peace Prize has never been given to anyone who is not either a Communist or Totalitarian Socialist.

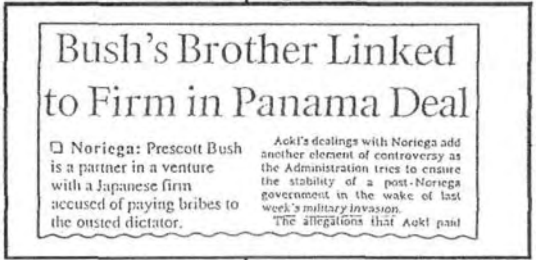

Bush's Brother Linked to Firm in Panama Deal

☐ Noriega: Prescott Bush is a partner in a venture with a Japanese firm accused of paying bribes to the ousted dictator.

Aoki's dealings with Noriega add another element of controversy as the Administration tries to ensure the stability of a post-Noriega government in the wake of last week's military invasion.

The allegations that Aoki paid

I pegged this story as a Bush Secret, because he has never admitted a family commitment of capital to Panama. Financial disclosures are required by law, and this has never been done. More respectable politicians put their financial holdings into a blind trust so that there can be no accusations that they have used their political office or inside information for personal financial gain. In addition, the Bush Family having multiple millions invested in Panama, at the same time that extensive negotiations are going on regarding Noriega, is a serious breach of ethics sufficient to initiate impeachment proceedings against him.

Under normal circumstances, an independent prosecutor would certainly be called for to investigate the Bush involvement in Panamanian business ventures through his brother. Why has there been no investigation of the Bush Family investments in this world capital of drug dealing and money laundering? Can you understand the basic economic fact that valuable investment properties rise or go down in valuation de-pending upon the political climate of any nation, including Panama? Panama, unlike Costa Rica to the north, is not a beautiful country with a delightful climate. It is not one of those places normal people go to on their annual vacation. These resorts are there to supply the needs of the wealthy who go to Panama to handle international financial dealings, and the more money that flows through Panama, even drug money, the more valuable the properties there are going to be and the more money they will be making on investments.

I also pegged this story a Bush Secret

because while the LOS ANGELES TIMES did print the story as written by Doug Frantx and Jim Mann, their wire service did not publish the story, and the story did not appear in API, UPI, or the New York Times wire services. Someone with a lot of clout put a clamp on this story of the Bush Investments in Panama.

As a further insight into the Bush character, the same Japanese firm, Aoki Corporation, is now building the luxury resort facilities near Shanghai, in communist Red China. In that project, the Bush Family has invested $18 million, according to the LOS ANGELES TIMES. This is precisely why the U.S. Policy toward Red China has not changed one bit after the Tiananmen Square slaughter of freedom-loving Chinese students. Now you know why! Another major ethics violation by George Bush which normally would precipitate a Justice Department investigation.

DEEPER STILL!

In the January Letter, I mentioned a 4 million dollar bribe that was paid to Noriega by the Aoki Corporation for permits to build Panama's Hydroelectric Plants. I can now document that this bribe, by the Aoki Corporation, **was arranged by the Bush Family**, and paid to General Manuel Noriega for a special license for this power plant project. Then, according to the investigative staff of the LOS ANGELES TIMES, the bribe money was taken but the license/permit was not issued as promised. This forced a showdown between Aoki Corporation and Noriega, or stated more specifically, a test of wills between Noriega and the Bush Family. You must understand that Noriega is a "low class" person. He never learned any culture and did not understand the deeper workings of the world power elite. He thought that he could control what went on in Panama, and when push came to shove, it is believed that Noriega was about to "nationalize" some or all of the Aoki-Bush Family's $350,000,000 worth of investments in retaliation for the U.S. indictment of him in Florida. He looked upon this as a betrayal of him by his friend George Bush. He did not understand that Bush had no control over that indictment and once it had been handed down, there was little he could do and still keep up the pretenses of being the "Leader of the War on Drugs."

I agree with Lawrence Patterson's assessment of this sinister situation when he writes:

> "26 Men Died To Protect The Bush Investments in Panama!
>
> The obvious fact is that the invasion of Panama was hatched by our President, not because he is concerned about the drug dealing going on in Panama, --but to protect his family's $350 million investment in the Marriott and other resorts in Panama...For this reason alone, the decision to invade Panama was made....Thus, we are left with the obvious conclusion: --that the 26 men who died in battle and the 324 men who were wounded in capturing Noriega for George Bush, were sent there on a personal mission to eliminate a potential threat to his presidency and to protect the Bush family investments, ---not to control the flow of drugs into the United States."
>
> *CRIMINAL POLITICS, February, 1990*

So, what are we going to do about it?

I ask that each of you who receive this Month's Letter take it to your local printer and have at least 500 copies reprinted. I have printed it on white paper so that it will be "camera ready." It will be much less expensive for you to do this than for us to print **and pay the postage** to get them to you. Otherwise, 2 copies for $1.00 postpaid. Then make certain that a copy is provided to each officer of the local Democratic Party, the local newspapers and to your state and federal congressmen. We must create enough political pressure so that Congress will order a Special Federal Prosecutor to investigate the Ethics Violations, or worse, of George Bush, the drug chemicals leaving America for Columbia, and the improper U.S. invasion of Panama for personal reasons.

Nord Davis, Jr., NORTHPOINT

The March Special Thank You Letter

Published by Nord Davis, Jr.
NORTHPOINT TEAMS
PO Box 129, Topton, N.C. 28781

There is a new military medal now being released for those of the Armed Forces who participated in numerous undeclared wars including the recent invasion of Panama known as **Operation Just Cause.** It is called the Armed Forces Expeditionary Medal and I have shown it here. It includes the operations against Libya, Grenada, Cambodia, Laos and the blockade of Cuba in 1962-1963. It includes such missions defined as "peace-keeping" as in the Congo in 1960-62 and Lebanon in 1963-1967. It includes all sorts of unusual operations from 1958 until 1989, some of which are long forgotten as the Naval Blockade off Red China from 1958-1963. I found the release of this new Expeditionary Medal, and the Ribbon that goes with it, a forboding of things to come where American Forces will be used to secure the global schemes of the international socialists and their New World Order.

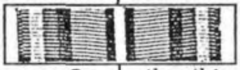

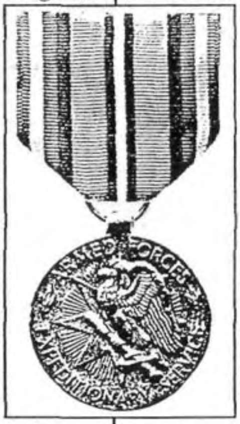

Last December, on the day after the invasion of Panama, the international banker's mouthpiece, THE WALL STREET JOURNAL wrote that Manuel Noriega had "learned, and others like him should take note, that there are limits to the uncivilized behaviour that the United States will accept or endure."

I thought that quote was most interesting and I saved it for special comment this month. I wrote the first 8 pages for the general public to read as I hope that it will be reproduced widely. In this section, we will get down to some other things that you need to know about the criminal operations of the federal government that might not be as fitting in a general circulation pamphlet.

It is now about 3 months after that invasion where 26 of our finest men were killed, and the American troops are still occupying the country. Panamanians are learning just what will and will not be tolerated. American Forces, with token Panamanian troops accompaning them, have openly raided newspaper offices and arrested anyone critical of the U.S. invasion, including a prominent newspaper publisher and the law professor who negotiated the 1977 Panama Canal Treaty. Hundreds of such dissidents have been rounded up and detained without charges at the United States Military Base or held in jails for "impeding the renewal of the powers of state."

Pickets parade daily with at least 100

le in front of President Endara's home anding to be paid, and thus the U.S. et Government is receiving less and less ort. There are approximately 60 armed eries daily in Panama City where my in- ant lives. They range from accosting omers in grocery stores and on the streets pen bank robberies. The Bush Govern- t there is helpless to stop them. Local e, many of whom have been quietly re- d from the Noriega Regime cadre because eir experience, are stopping foreigners in mobiles and intimidating them into pay- icticious traffic violations "on the spot."

* * *

On January 29, 1990, the Associated s ran a story about a writer and former agent named Phillip Agee after a speech Mr. Agee gave at Oregon State University orvallis, *OR. Agee stated that Bush* uld be locked up along side Noriega, ause he stated,

"Bush is up to his neck in illegal g running on behalf of the Contras."

Agee spent 12 years with the CIA ving in various places in Central and th America. Then he left the CIA in 9 and wrote a book on "The Compa- and it is said that the CIA would like see him very seriously dead. He made unforgiveable mistake of naming rently operating CIA agents. Where NORTHPOINT TEAMS know Phillip e from? Why he was working with the ndinista Regime for years right there Managua, Nicaragua at the INTERNA- NAL HOTEL and even more specifically *on* 5th floor. So, while he presents himself as former CIA Agent, and says many of the ht things, remember that his sympathies l lie with his Sandinista friends.

* * *

The next character you need to know out in the on-going saga of the Perfidy in nama, is a secret Israeli Mossad Agent named Michael Harari. The NEW YORK TIMES said of this man on January 2, 1990:

> "An Israeli reputed to be Gen. Manuel Antonio Noriega's closest associate may have eluded capture on the night of the United States invasion because he was warned to flee six hours before the American troops swept into the capital, the deputy commander of Panama's new police force said today...."
>
> Story by David E. Pitt

I reported last month that my contact in Panama knew of the **exact time** of the invasion for almost two days, and now we are reading in the NEW YORK TIMES that the Israeli *community in Panama was given at least* a six hour warning to not be around when the Americans landed. Of the 26 men who died in Panama under combat conditions, it is known that at least 11 of these were U.S. Special Forces, a highly trained elite among our Armed Forces. For this many to have been killed, they had to have been betrayed by our State Department who, in warning their Israeli friends, made it possible for the Israelis to warn the Panama Elite Forces. They were waiting for the Special Forces to arrive, even knowing specifically the targetted planes and boats secretly hidden for Noriega's escape. Harari was to Noriega what Kissinger is to Bush. The reality of the Panama scene, known by the whole world except America, is that Harari was the man *that* ***Noriega*** *reported to, and it* was Harari who was filling his pockets with the drug money. In the coming months, unless the Panama Invasion has been ordered out of the press speculation by the powers that be, there will be conflicting stories as to how the leak came about that alerted Israel and almost certainly the Noriega forces to the forthcoming invasion. No matter what happens, I want you to remember that these 11 Special Forces men died because *they were* betrayed by an Israeli Mossad Hit Squad Chief named Michael Harari whose picture I have shown here. No apologies for the rather poor quality of reproduction. These photographs are often hard to get of such high-level covert operatives.

Michael Harari has a very interesting background of murder and sabotage. He holds the Rank of Colonel in the Israeli Mossad, and took over as the Central American Mossad Director in 1980. I saw him only once to my recollection, and it was in central San Jose, Costa Rica on the square in front of the Opera House. He was with two younger agents, and I did get a photograph of them. They were driving a late model brown four door Jeep Wagoneer. One or both of his men were seen by my people observing me on many occasions. Officially, Col. Harari was assigned to the Israeli Embassy in Mexico City, but in fact spent most of his time in Panama where he had a line of associates and contacts since as early as 1973. It was during that period that Noriega was strong man Omar Torrijos's Intelligence Chief, and double-dipping by getting a $200,000 per year salary as an informant for the CIA then under control of George Bush. He also worked for the MOSSAD as an informant. Isn't it a small world?

Noriega knew Col. Harari from his training in military intelligence in Israel. It is known that Noriega made five jumps with the Israeli Paratroopers and qualified for his Israeli Paratrooper wings, which he wore on his uniform for years. While Noriega was "bought and paid for by Bush's CIA" the fact remains that he was an Israeli creation as to his personal philosophy and military mind-set. Noriega was in his mind, a Zionist. He secretly wished that he was a Jew by birth instead of a Panamanian of uncertain origins. He bought a home in the Herzliya section of Tel Aviv. In Panama, he sent his children to the Jewish Alberto Einstein Day School instead of the Jesuit schools of his early days. He even sent his children to an Israeli Kibbutz one summer. The Panamanian Jewish community numbers around 5,000, but the Israelis control most of the Central Avenue business district. According to the WASHINGTON JEWISH WEEK of December 28, 1989, the Israelis in Panama:

> "...do not reflect well on Israel or the Panama Jewish community....They are engaged in contraband and money laundering. In general they engage in very aggressive and unfair business practices."

It was the Israeli business men, not the Panamanian Jews, who were looted during the confusion following the invasion with reported losses of around a billion dollars. Your government is now going to be taxing you to repay these Israeli businessmen for their losses.

The Associated Press of December 27th quoted a US Embassy official who stated that they had captured Col. Harari. Orders came down from Washington that Harari was to be released, and the next we heard concerning him was on an Israeli TV interview, from Israel, denying that he had anything to do with Noriega's affairs.

* * *

Our DEA intelligence sources reveal that Noriega had a mistress named Magdelena Kusmisk. She bore him an illegitimate son in Washington, DC in 1982. Mrs. Noriega, it seems, cast a "voodoo spell" on her, and Noriega had to bring in a Brazilian witch doctor to counter it. Noriega is not a true Catholic believer although he had been raised as one. The Vatican Embassy chose to take him in during "his hour of need". He was not Jewish by religion, only Zionist by international socialist politics. His actual religion is the *Santeria Folk Theology imported into Brazil* by the African slaves. Santeria is similar to Voodoo in that believers worship their gods with personal offerings and think that their magic can control and manipulate their enemies. Unfortunately, Santeria religious practices are commonly mixed in with the Catholic religion in Central and South America, and Noriega attended Catholic services but practiced Santeria in private. Santeria is what makes many Catholics so unpredictable

Latin American countries. The Santeria es *ritual homicide and it is* known that riega had a room in one of his luxury villas at was used for this purpose. There was an ter there to a Brazilian priestess, along with e other usual trappings of the Santeria, ch as bottles, beads, candles and dried food ferings. Noriega, with the help of his Sante- a gods, tried to influence people by putting ndwritten lists of their names under a glob wax or wrapped around a white candle. Our urce is Chief Warrant Officer James Dibble, .S. Army Specialist in the Occult, stationed Fort Campbell, KY. Dibble was the man lled to inspect the contents of the "ritual oms" in the Noriega complex.

* * * *

As you think of these things, remember at the *ultimate goal of these international* talitarian socialists is to bring America own so *that*, as Kissinger wrote in FOREIGN FFAIRS, "America can be comfortably erged with the Soviet Union." Toward that nd, they are quite willing to be promoting the ternational drug trade for personal financial rofit, and at the same time declaring a "war n drugs" for personal political profit. Some of y wonderful readers simply cannot imagine resident Bush getting away with this du- licity for all these years. Therefore, they ssume that all this cannot be true and that ord Davis must have exaggerated the facts. Vell, George Bush has not gotten away with t, for a number of us are adamantly exposing im with names, dates and places. We had to augh, last *month*, when Bush set up his 'drug summit", key to his "war on drugs", in *artagena*, Columbia of all places. Those of us who remember our history, know that Carta*gena was the site of the greatest naval* invasion defeat of America's pre-revolutionary Latin American escapades. In command of this invasion of Cartagena was an Admiral Vernon and under him in command was one Lawrence Washington, the brother of George, our first President. I do not recall the actual *reason for the attack on Cartagena, but when* the Yankees went ashore, the ladders they carried were six feet too short to scale the walls of the Fort, and the Spanish defenders mowed them down by the thousands. Those who survived, with their immune systems not accustomed to the diseases of the tropics, came down with various diseases, and hundreds of them died. Lawrence Washington picked up one of these diseases, which finally *took his life. However, Lawrence still named* his home after this inept Admiral, calling it Mount Vernon. *When Lawrence died*, brother George inherited his lands, and today we *think* of Mount Vernon as being George Washington's home. Had it not been for the fiasco of Cartagena, George would have never lived there.

We can understand the folly of Admiral Vernon and his too short ladders. We can even understand the loyalty of Lawrence Washington to his friend in his final years of disgrace having lost thousands of men on the shores of South America. But *the folly of the* so-called war on drugs is quite another thing. The plan is to deliberately lose the war, as was done in Vietnam, to *exploit inevitable political* change in America. The no-win war on drugs serves the *secret* interests of the International Socialists by subverting the intent of the Bill *of Rights that most Americans suppose still* protects them from the tyranny of government. Under the pretext of rescuing people from the incalculable perils of rampaging mobs seeking their final fix, or the looting of their homes and ravaging their women by dope heads, the war on drugs is intended to *claim for itself enormously* enhanced powers of repression and control.

Here is the clue. Right after President Bush's speech in September, declaring the "war on drugs", an opinion poll is reported to show that 62% of all *Americans* were willing "*to give up some freedoms*" in order *to rid America of the scourge of drugs*. As the politicaly sophisticated know, "opinion polls" are used to **create** opinions, not monitor them. They are used to determine the effectiveness of the media propaganda. However in this case, it may be quite true that 62% of all Americans would be willing to give up some of their freedoms to stop drugs, and the totalitarian socialists are certainly hoping you will ask that this be done. Isn't that the way that every dictatorship got started? Hitler controlled the German "Brown Shirts." The Brown Shirts were causing all sorts of civil upheavals. Hitler promised to stop the Brown Shirts and was quickly put in power.

George Bush is directly involved with the drug traffic, not only from Central and South America, but from the Golden Triangle of Northern Burma as well. The drugs are causing all sorts of civil upheavals. Bush promises to declare war on drugs. The people willingly give up freedom and liberty for what they believe will be peace and safety. Well, that is the plan. To prepare for that, we are hearing more and more about the need for more police, more judges, more jails, more prisons, more and longer punishments, and more people serving "serious time."

Along with the totalitarian socialist's zeal for coercion, the politicians of both parties are demanding longer prison terms, and harsher laws. Federal officers confiscate motor vehicles, boats and houses of suspected drug dealers even before these people have had their day in court. They are demanding, and it appears that they will get it, the right to invade almost anyone's privacy: search without a warrant anyone's car or boat; bend the rules of evidence, hire police spies, and monitor phone lines without a warrant. The Supreme Court has ruled that the police can stop, detain and question any person travelling through an airport whom the police say that they "see a resemblence to a drug dealer"---the very lowest level of our 4th Amendment Probable Cause Rights. In a recent ABC Poll it was reported that 55% of all Americans support mandatory drug testing for all Americans.

LET'S REVOLT
DON'T
RE-ELECT
ANYONE

The enforcement of these "tougher laws" requires additional tiers of expensive government. Of the $7,900,000,000 dollars ($7.9 Billion) that Bush allotted to the war on drugs in September, the bulk of the money goes to swell the budgets of 58 federal agencies and 74 congressional committees already engaged in the "war on drugs." Each of these has its own agenda and armies to feed on the various fronts of the so-called campaign. The government agents have a talent for theft and fraud that is barely distinguishable from the talent for theft and fraud of the drug syndicates they insist that they are fighting.

Some of the statements on the CIA direct involvement with the importation of drugs from Central America are now coming out in the normal press. I know that there are a number of my friends who privately questioned my statements in HOPE'S HUSBAND, supposing, with love, that I must have spent too much time under the hot tropical sun. As I write, there is a Federal trial going on in Tulsa, Oklahoma. The defendant is Jose Abello-Silva who is charged with "conspiracy to import cocaine." A federal witness, a self-confessed drug smuggler named Fabio Ernesto Carrasco, testified that he worked for the defendant, thus proving the government's case of a conspiracy. However under cross-examination, Carrasco testified that he supervised two CIA-sponsored shipments of weapons to Costa Rica allegedly for the Nicaraguan Contras, and returned to the United States with cocaine for the Central Intelligence Agency! Two years ago, I even told you **where** these planes landed---*John Hull's ranch in Northern Costa* Rica, and **who** supervised these shipments both ways---Oliver North and his associates. I told you **where** the planes landed in the U.S. with the cocaine---Homestead Air force Base, Florida. I even know the official Pennsylvania owners of the aircraft used, and the amount of cocaine in the shipments: 1,000 Kilograms or just over one ton. The man who could testify that the drugs were picked up by Jeb Bush, the son of the then Vice-President, "committed suicide" in California a couple years ago, allegedly from a cocaine overdose. Nonsense! He was trained Special Forces.

There was a very revealing story, of all laces, in the U.S. News & World Report, ated March 26, 1990 on page 16. Read it arefully:

> **"For more than a decade, Khun Sa, the war-rd of opium, has flooded Washington with offers to nd the poppy production within his Golden Trian-le fiefdom in exchange for financial aid. The U.S. as not responded, and this year the region's crop ould double from the levels of just a few years ago. tty. Gen. Dick Thornburgh unsealed an indictment gainst the man considered responsible for 40 per-ent of the U.S. heroin supply. But Sa is not likely to e booked soon. In the remote hills of Burma, a pri-ate army of thousands protect him."**

What the U.S. News & World Report tates is that Gen. Khun Sa will stop his hipments amounting to 40% of the heroin upply if the U.S. will send his nation finan-ial aid, and from other sources we know that e wants another agriculture crop that he can grow that the U.S. will buy from him so that is economy will function without drug mon-y. What the story does **not** say is hat the 1,200 metric tons of refined eroin per year, worth on the street an amount equal to 10% of America's Gross National Product, is being shipped from Thailand on U.S. Air Force cargo planes! One of my NORTHPOINT TEAM members recently finished his military tour of duty and told me that he was ordered to help load some of these shipments. What the story did **not** say is that the U.S. Army Corps of Engineers built a two lane road back into the North Burma mountains so that these shipments could be brought out on trucks instead of the backs of mules. We now know why the Bush Administration "has not reponded," don't we? The secret "CIA within the CIA" that Oliver North testified to, is using the millions of dollars in drug profits to push its worldwide covert operations of preparing the "third world nations" for international socialism in the new world government now being set in place. You might as well get used to the idea that personal privacy set forth in the 4th Amendment is really a thing of the past. President Bush, with his "war on drugs" offers the nation the chance to deny its best principles, to corrupt its magistrates, and to repudiate its civil liberties. His deal is as shabby and unAmerican as is his tons of cocaine and heroin from Costa Rica and Northern Burma. ☐

Oliver North...Once Again

In an earlier monthly letter I stated that I would have some special questions for the former Admiral John Poindexter. I had an idea that the courts would do with him the same as it did with Oliver North---a mere slap on the wrist. Instead, Mr. Poindexter was convicted on all felony counts. I do not suppose that he will spend much, if any, time in prison. His sentencing is not due until later. However, since he was convicted, my questions, the kind one asks when he already knows the answers, need not be asked.

If one makes a study of the Iran-Contra Hearings, John Poindexter was the only witness that did not hang Oliver North out to dry. To an embattled retired Marine, caught in so many illegal activities and downright lies, Admiral Poindexter's testimony was a welcome relief. Oliver North, in his typical inept way, tried to do the same for his old friend and former boss. According to the U.S. NEWS & WORLD REPORT of March 19, 1990, North's testimony at the pretrial hearing was so favorable to Poindexter, in other words false, that even the Judge stepped out of his normally impartial role and called North's testimony "far-fetched." North was the first witness at the Poindexter trial and he stubbornly resisted saying anything that could aid in a conspiracy, obstruction of justice, or lying-to-congress conviction. Well North's intentions were foiled, and his perjury again uncovered, when the prosecutor confronted North with his own testimony during his trial wherein he implicated Poindexter as a key figure in the Iran-Contra scandal. North is now working with Joe Fernandez, the former CIA Agent we knew in Costa Rica as "Tomas Castillo", in the sale of light weight bullet-proof vests. See HOPE'S HUSBAND, page 65. ☐

BILLIONS UPON BILLIONS TO THE WORLD

In mid-March, George Bush called for $300,000,000 in aid to help rebuild Nicaragua. That, he told us, was only the first installment. If you remember, he called for some $570,000,000 in aid to Panama. This money, if the Bush plan succeeds, will come out of the Pentagon's budget and not out of the normal foreign-aid budget. We are not supposed to ask the obvious questions: "How does the expendature of almost a billion dollars rebuilding socialist Nicaragua and Panama help defend the United States? Where in the Constitution is there any authority for the Legislative Democracy of Washington, District of Columbia, [as an entity distinct from the Constitutional Republic of the United States of America], to spend any taxpayer money to rebuild or enrich non-American peoples and nations?" I can find no such authority. The foreign aid budget comes to $14 thousand million dollars, and $5 thousand million dollars, one third of the entire budget, is given to Israel and Egypt alone--both of which are anti-Christ nations. If you approve of these illegal expendatures, keep right on voting for the same set of politicians. Our philosophy remains as it has for years, don't re-elect anybody. Frankly we would have been better off with Dukakis and his drunken wife than with George Bush and his covert activities. ☐

SOME MORE ON THE IRS

On March 15th, the Geraldo Riveria Show devoted his entire hour-long show to the exposure of the bloody, inhumane and criminal brutality of the U.S. Treasury Agents in its supervision of the INTERNAL REVENUE SERVICE, Inc. a private Delaware Corporation. You mean you thought that the IRS was part of the Federal Government? No, they are part of, and in conspiracy with, the privately owned Federal Reserve Banking System. I am still trying to get a video copy of this Geraldo Rivcria Show and would appreciate it if any of my Team Members have a copy that you can run one off for me. Those who can afford to do so, can purchase them from the Riveria Organization for $100 by calling (212) 265-8520. I saw only the tail end of it as I was called and advised to watch it -- but too late to see it all or to video tape it.

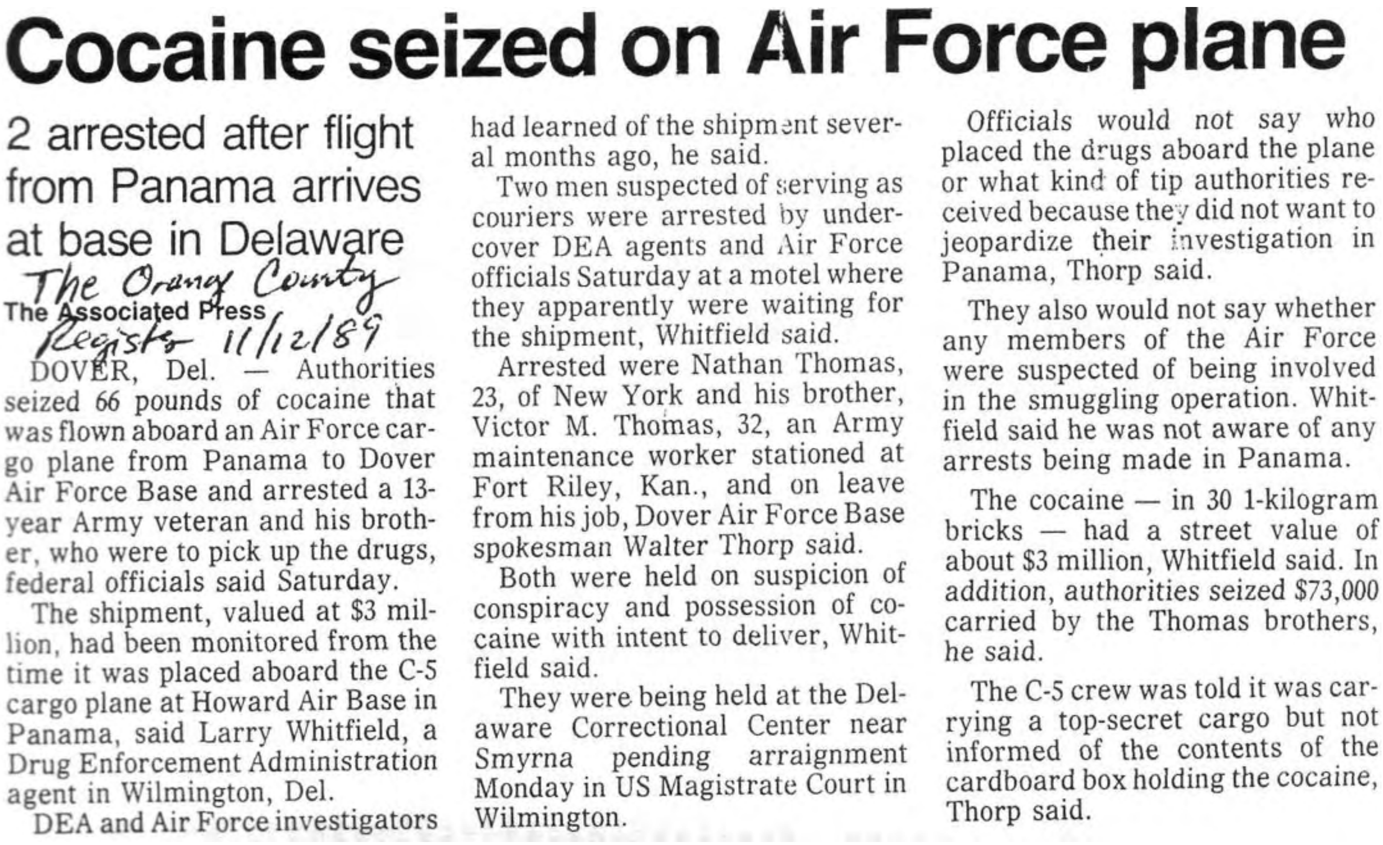

Cocaine seized on Air Force plane

2 arrested after flight from Panama arrives at base in Delaware

The Orange County Register 11/12/89

The Associated Press

DOVER, Del. — Authorities seized 66 pounds of cocaine that was flown aboard an Air Force cargo plane from Panama to Dover Air Force Base and arrested a 13-year Army veteran and his brother, who were to pick up the drugs, federal officials said Saturday.

The shipment, valued at $3 million, had been monitored from the time it was placed aboard the C-5 cargo plane at Howard Air Base in Panama, said Larry Whitfield, a Drug Enforcement Administration agent in Wilmington, Del.

DEA and Air Force investigators had learned of the shipment several months ago, he said.

Two men suspected of serving as couriers were arrested by undercover DEA agents and Air Force officials Saturday at a motel where they apparently were waiting for the shipment, Whitfield said.

Arrested were Nathan Thomas, 23, of New York and his brother, Victor M. Thomas, 32, an Army maintenance worker stationed at Fort Riley, Kan., and on leave from his job, Dover Air Force Base spokesman Walter Thorp said.

Both were held on suspicion of conspiracy and possession of cocaine with intent to deliver, Whitfield said.

They were being held at the Delaware Correctional Center near Smyrna pending arraignment Monday in US Magistrate Court in Wilmington.

Officials would not say who placed the drugs aboard the plane or what kind of tip authorities received because they did not want to jeopardize their investigation in Panama, Thorp said.

They also would not say whether any members of the Air Force were suspected of being involved in the smuggling operation. Whitfield said he was not aware of any arrests being made in Panama.

The cocaine — in 30 1-kilogram bricks — had a street value of about $3 million, Whitfield said. In addition, authorities seized $73,000 carried by the Thomas brothers, he said.

The C-5 crew was told it was carrying a top-secret cargo but not informed of the contents of the cardboard box holding the cocaine, Thorp said.

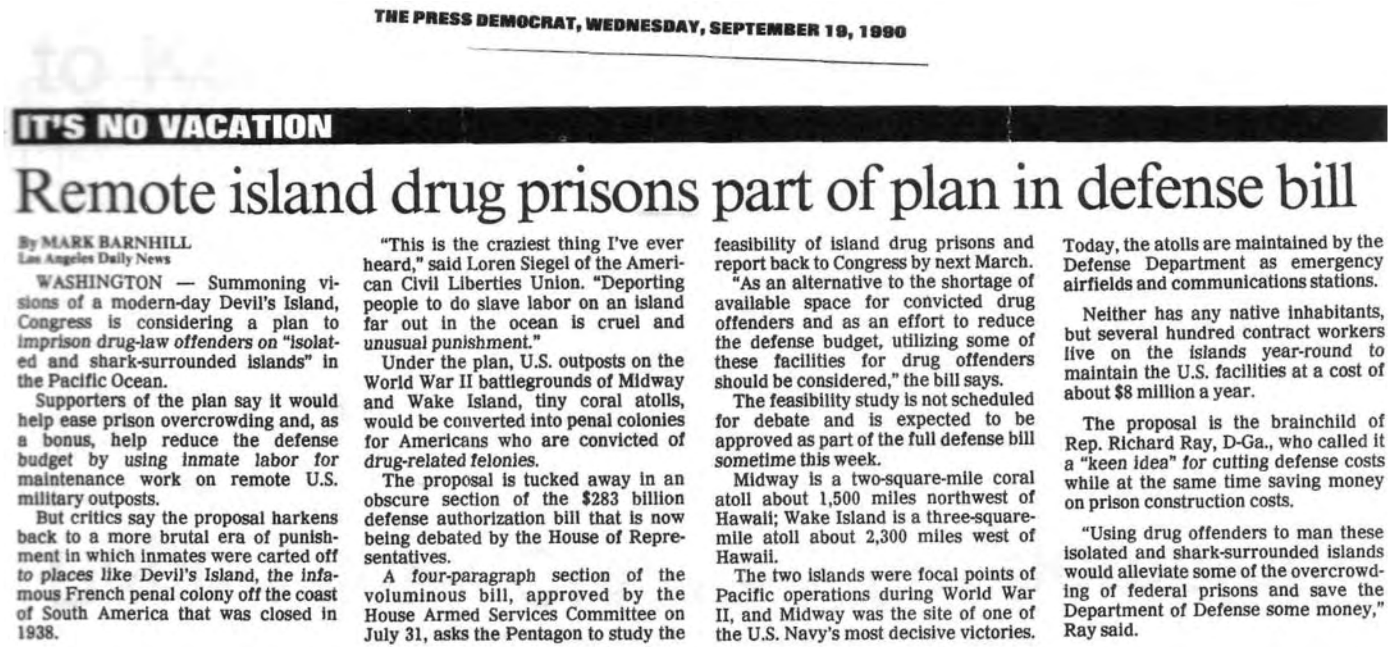

THE PRESS DEMOCRAT, WEDNESDAY, SEPTEMBER 19, 1990

IT'S NO VACATION

Remote island drug prisons part of plan in defense bill

By MARK BARNHILL
Los Angeles Daily News

WASHINGTON — Summoning visions of a modern-day Devil's Island, Congress is considering a plan to imprison drug-law offenders on "isolated and shark-surrounded islands" in the Pacific Ocean.

Supporters of the plan say it would help ease prison overcrowding and, as a bonus, help reduce the defense budget by using inmate labor for maintenance work on remote U.S. military outposts.

But critics say the proposal harkens back to a more brutal era of punishment in which inmates were carted off to places like Devil's Island, the infamous French penal colony off the coast of South America that was closed in 1938.

"This is the craziest thing I've ever heard," said Loren Siegel of the American Civil Liberties Union. "Deporting people to do slave labor on an island far out in the ocean is cruel and unusual punishment."

Under the plan, U.S. outposts on the World War II battlegrounds of Midway and Wake Island, tiny coral atolls, would be converted into penal colonies for Americans who are convicted of drug-related felonies.

The proposal is tucked away in an obscure section of the $283 billion defense authorization bill that is now being debated by the House of Representatives.

A four-paragraph section of the voluminous bill, approved by the House Armed Services Committee on July 31, asks the Pentagon to study the feasibility of island drug prisons and report back to Congress by next March.

"As an alternative to the shortage of available space for convicted drug offenders and as an effort to reduce the defense budget, utilizing some of these facilities for drug offenders should be considered," the bill says.

The feasibility study is not scheduled for debate and is expected to be approved as part of the full defense bill sometime this week.

Midway is a two-square-mile coral atoll about 1,500 miles northwest of Hawaii; Wake Island is a three-square-mile atoll about 2,300 miles west of Hawaii.

The two islands were focal points of Pacific operations during World War II, and Midway was the site of one of the U.S. Navy's most decisive victories. Today, the atolls are maintained by the Defense Department as emergency airfields and communications stations.

Neither has any native inhabitants, but several hundred contract workers live on the islands year-round to maintain the U.S. facilities at a cost of about $8 million a year.

The proposal is the brainchild of Rep. Richard Ray, D-Ga., who called it a "keen idea" for cutting defense costs while at the same time saving money on prison construction costs.

"Using drug offenders to man these isolated and shark-surrounded islands would alleviate some of the overcrowding of federal prisons and save the Department of Defense some money," Ray said.

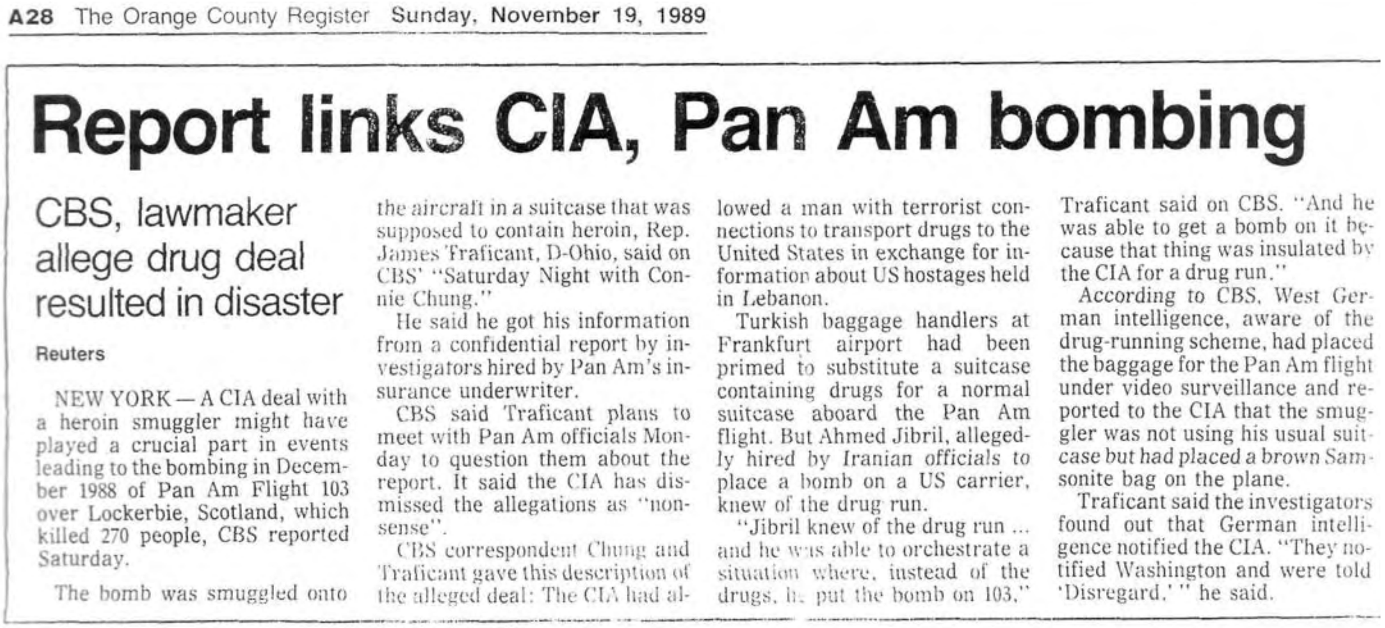

A28 The Orange County Register Sunday, November 19, 1989

Report links CIA, Pan Am bombing

CBS, lawmaker allege drug deal resulted in disaster

Reuters

NEW YORK — A CIA deal with a heroin smuggler might have played a crucial part in events leading to the bombing in December 1988 of Pan Am Flight 103 over Lockerbie, Scotland, which killed 270 people, CBS reported Saturday.

The bomb was smuggled onto the aircraft in a suitcase that was supposed to contain heroin, Rep. James Traficant, D-Ohio, said on CBS' "Saturday Night with Connie Chung."

He said he got his information from a confidential report by investigators hired by Pan Am's insurance underwriter.

CBS said Traficant plans to meet with Pan Am officials Monday to question them about the report. It said the CIA has dismissed the allegations as "nonsense".

CBS correspondent Chung and Traficant gave this description of the alleged deal: The CIA had allowed a man with terrorist connections to transport drugs to the United States in exchange for information about US hostages held in Lebanon.

Turkish baggage handlers at Frankfurt airport had been primed to substitute a suitcase containing drugs for a normal suitcase aboard the Pan Am flight. But Ahmed Jibril, allegedly hired by Iranian officials to place a bomb on a US carrier, knew of the drug run.

"Jibril knew of the drug run ... and he was able to orchestrate a situation where, instead of the drugs, he put the bomb on 103," Traficant said on CBS. "And he was able to get a bomb on it because that thing was insulated by the CIA for a drug run."

According to CBS, West German intelligence, aware of the drug-running scheme, had placed the baggage for the Pan Am flight under video surveillance and reported to the CIA that the smuggler was not using his usual suitcase but had placed a brown Samsonite bag on the plane.

Traficant said the investigators found out that German intelligence notified the CIA. "They notified Washington and were told 'Disregard.'" he said.

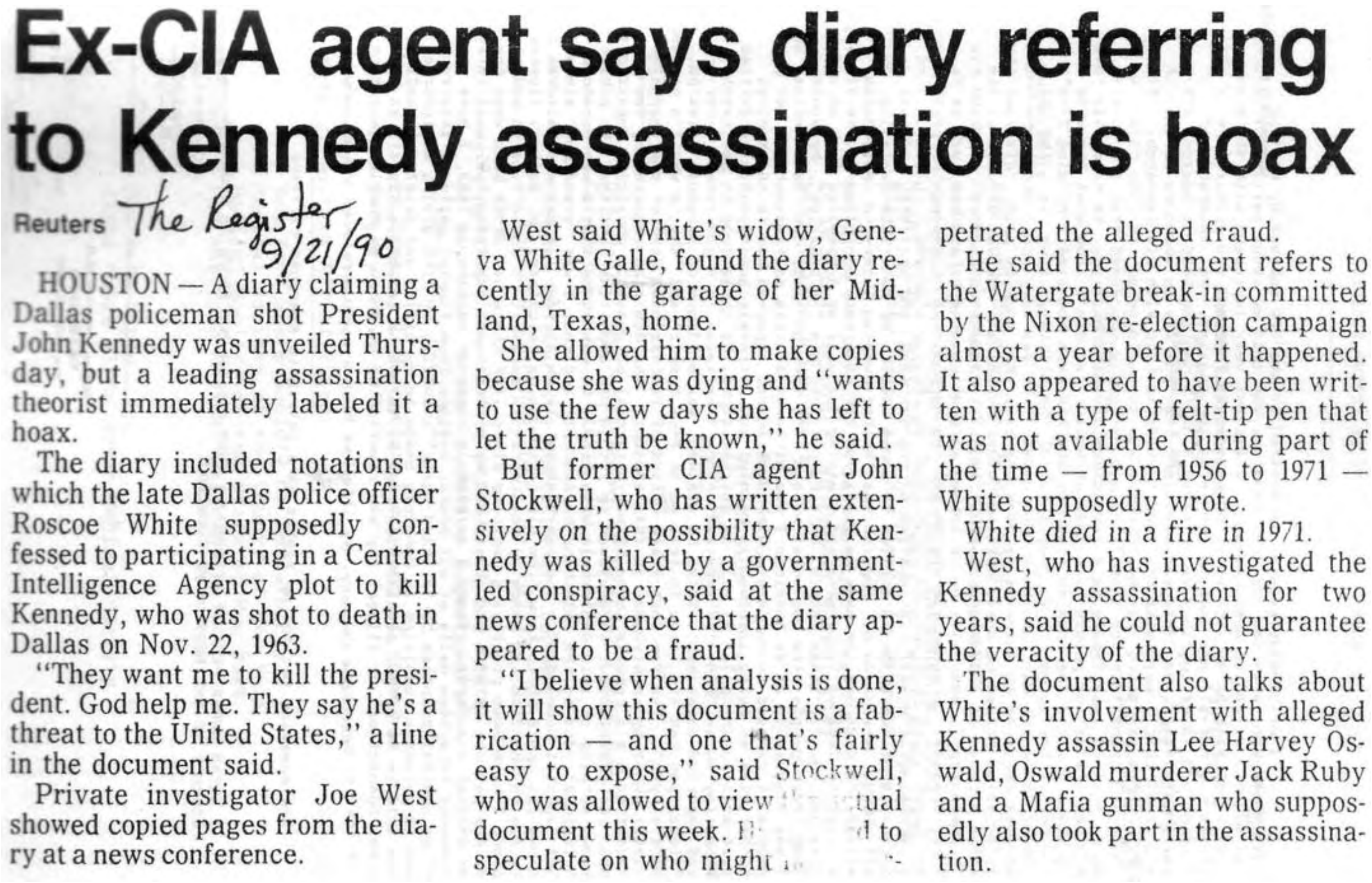

Ex-CIA agent says diary referring to Kennedy assassination is hoax

Reuters The Register 9/21/90

HOUSTON — A diary claiming a Dallas policeman shot President John Kennedy was unveiled Thursday, but a leading assassination theorist immediately labeled it a hoax.

The diary included notations in which the late Dallas police officer Roscoe White supposedly confessed to participating in a Central Intelligence Agency plot to kill Kennedy, who was shot to death in Dallas on Nov. 22, 1963.

"They want me to kill the president. God help me. They say he's a threat to the United States," a line in the document said.

Private investigator Joe West showed copied pages from the diary at a news conference.

West said White's widow, Geneva White Galle, found the diary recently in the garage of her Midland, Texas, home.

She allowed him to make copies because she was dying and "wants to use the few days she has left to let the truth be known," he said.

But former CIA agent John Stockwell, who has written extensively on the possibility that Kennedy was killed by a government-led conspiracy, said at the same news conference that the diary appeared to be a fraud.

"I believe when analysis is done, it will show this document is a fabrication — and one that's fairly easy to expose," said Stockwell, who was allowed to view [illegible]tual document this week. H[illegible]d to speculate on who might [illegible]petrated the alleged fraud.

He said the document refers to the Watergate break-in committed by the Nixon re-election campaign almost a year before it happened. It also appeared to have been written with a type of felt-tip pen that was not available during part of the time — from 1956 to 1971 — White supposedly wrote.

White died in a fire in 1971.

West, who has investigated the Kennedy assassination for two years, said he could not guarantee the veracity of the diary.

The document also talks about White's involvement with alleged Kennedy assassin Lee Harvey Oswald, Oswald murderer Jack Ruby and a Mafia gunman who supposedly also took part in the assassination.

APPENDIX G: KURZWEIL VS. HOPKINS

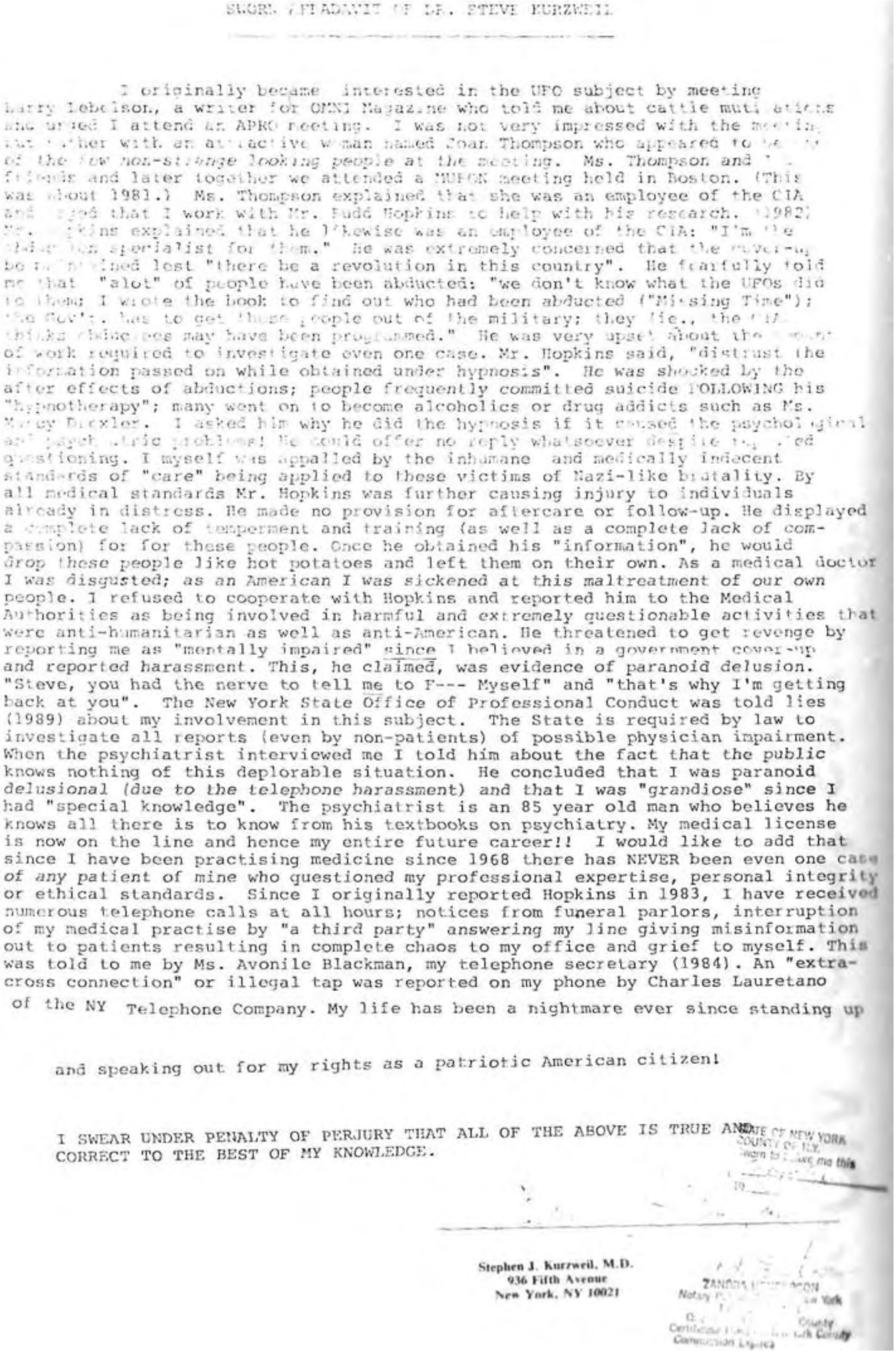

SWORN AFFIDAVIT OF DR. STEVE KURZWEIL

I originally became interested in the UFO subject by meeting Larry Lebelson, a writer for OMNI Magazine who told me about cattle mutilations and urged I attend an APRO meeting. I was not very impressed with the meeting but rather with an attractive woman named Joan Thompson who appeared to be one of the few non-strange looking people at the meeting. Ms. Thompson and I [illegible] friends and later together we attended a MUFON meeting held in Boston. (This was about 1981.) Ms. Thompson explained that she was an employee of the CIA and urged that I work with Mr. Budd Hopkins to help with his research. (1982) Mr. Hopkins explained that he likewise was an employee of the CIA: "I'm the abduction specialist for them." He was extremely concerned that the cover-up be maintained lest "there be a revolution in this country". He fearfully told me that "alot" of people have been abducted: "we don't know what the UFOs did to them; I wrote the book to find out who had been abducted ("Missing Time"); the Gov't. has to get these people out of the military; they (ie., the CIA) thinks abductees may have been programmed." He was very upset about the amount of work required to investigate even one case. Mr. Hopkins said, "distrust the information passed on while obtained under hypnosis". He was shocked by the after effects of abductions; people frequently committed suicide FOLLOWING his "hypnotherapy"; many went on to become alcoholics or drug addicts such as Ms. Marcy Drexler. I asked him why he did the hypnosis if it caused the psychological and psychiatric problems! He could offer no reply whatsoever despite repeated questioning. I myself was appalled by the inhumane and medically indecent standards of "care" being applied to these victims of Nazi-like brutality. By all medical standards Mr. Hopkins was further causing injury to individuals already in distress. He made no provision for aftercare or follow-up. He displayed a complete lack of temperment and training (as well as a complete lack of compassion) for for these people. Once he obtained his "information", he would drop these people like hot potatoes and left them on their own. As a medical doctor I was disgusted; as an American I was sickened at this maltreatment of our own people. I refused to cooperate with Hopkins and reported him to the Medical Authorities as being involved in harmful and extremely questionable activities that were anti-humanitarian as well as anti-American. He threatened to get revenge by reporting me as "mentally impaired" since I believed in a government cover-up and reported harassment. This, he claimed, was evidence of paranoid delusion. "Steve, you had the nerve to tell me to F--- Myself" and "that's why I'm getting back at you". The New York State Office of Professional Conduct was told lies (1989) about my involvement in this subject. The State is required by law to investigate all reports (even by non-patients) of possible physician impairment. When the psychiatrist interviewed me I told him about the fact that the public knows nothing of this deplorable situation. He concluded that I was paranoid delusional (due to the telephone harassment) and that I was "grandiose" since I had "special knowledge". The psychiatrist is an 85 year old man who believes he knows all there is to know from his textbooks on psychiatry. My medical license is now on the line and hence my entire future career!! I would like to add that since I have been practising medicine since 1968 there has NEVER been even one case of any patient of mine who questioned my professional expertise, personal integrity or ethical standards. Since I originally reported Hopkins in 1983, I have received numerous telephone calls at all hours; notices from funeral parlors, interruption of my medical practise by "a third party" answering my line giving misinformation out to patients resulting in complete chaos to my office and grief to myself. This was told to me by Ms. Avonile Blackman, my telephone secretary (1984). An "extra-cross connection" or illegal tap was reported on my phone by Charles Lauretano of the NY Telephone Company. My life has been a nightmare ever since standing up and speaking out for my rights as a patriotic American citizen!

I SWEAR UNDER PENALTY OF PERJURY THAT ALL OF THE ABOVE IS TRUE AND CORRECT TO THE BEST OF MY KNOWLEDGE.

STATE OF NEW YORK
COUNTY OF N.Y.
Sworn to before me this
19

Stephen J. Kurzweil, M.D.
936 Fifth Avenue
New York, NY 10021

ZANDRA [illegible]
Notary P[illegible] York
[illegible] County
Certificate [illegible] County
Commission Expires

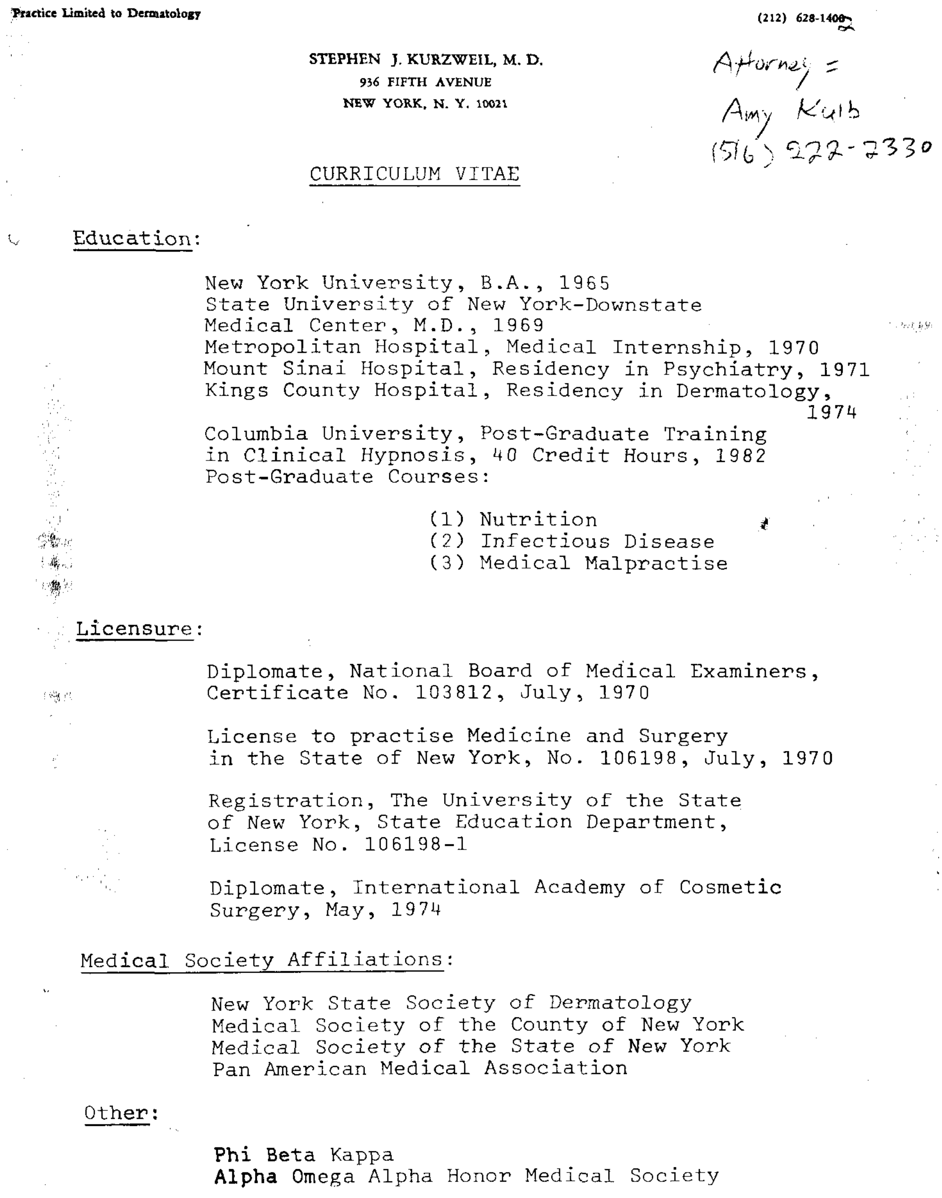

Practice Limited to Dermatology
(212) 628-1400

STEPHEN J. KURZWEIL, M. D.
936 FIFTH AVENUE
NEW YORK, N. Y. 10021

Attorney =
Amy Kulb
(516) 272-7330

CURRICULUM VITAE

Education:

New York University, B.A., 1965
State University of New York-Downstate Medical Center, M.D., 1969
Metropolitan Hospital, Medical Internship, 1970
Mount Sinai Hospital, Residency in Psychiatry, 1971
Kings County Hospital, Residency in Dermatology, 1974
Columbia University, Post-Graduate Training in Clinical Hypnosis, 40 Credit Hours, 1982
Post-Graduate Courses:

(1) Nutrition
(2) Infectious Disease
(3) Medical Malpractise

Licensure:

Diplomate, National Board of Medical Examiners, Certificate No. 103812, July, 1970

License to practise Medicine and Surgery in the State of New York, No. 106198, July, 1970

Registration, The University of the State of New York, State Education Department, License No. 106198-1

Diplomate, International Academy of Cosmetic Surgery, May, 1974

Medical Society Affiliations:

New York State Society of Dermatology
Medical Society of the County of New York
Medical Society of the State of New York
Pan American Medical Association

Other:

Phi Beta Kappa
Alpha Omega Alpha Honor Medical Society

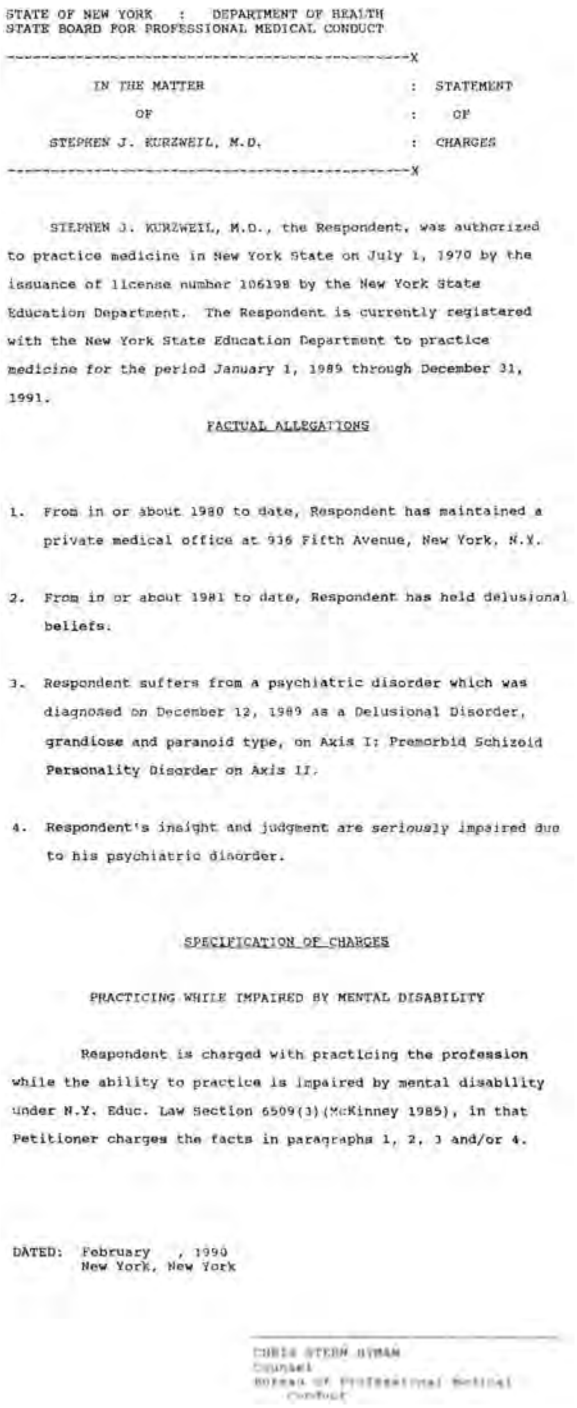

STATE OF NEW YORK : DEPARTMENT OF HEALTH
STATE BOARD FOR PROFESSIONAL MEDICAL CONDUCT

IN THE MATTER : STATEMENT
OF : OF
STEPHEN J. KURZWEIL, M.D. : CHARGES

STEPHEN J. KURZWEIL, M.D., the Respondent, was authorized to practice medicine in New York State on July 1, 1970 by the issuance of license number 106198 by the New York State Education Department. The Respondent is currently registered with the New York State Education Department to practice medicine for the period January 1, 1989 through December 31, 1991.

FACTUAL ALLEGATIONS

1. From in or about 1980 to date, Respondent has maintained a private medical office at 936 Fifth Avenue, New York, N.Y.

2. From in or about 1981 to date, Respondent has held delusional beliefs.

3. Respondent suffers from a psychiatric disorder which was diagnosed on December 12, 1989 as a Delusional Disorder, grandiose and paranoid type, on Axis I; Premorbid Schizoid Personality Disorder on Axis II.

4. Respondent's insight and judgment are seriously impaired due to his psychiatric disorder.

SPECIFICATION OF CHARGES

PRACTICING WHILE IMPAIRED BY MENTAL DISABILITY

Respondent is charged with practicing the profession while the ability to practice is impaired by mental disability under N.Y. Educ. Law Section 6509(3)(McKinney 1985), in that Petitioner charges the facts in paragraphs 1, 2, 3 and/or 4.

DATED: February , 1990
New York, New York

CHRIS STERN HYMAN
Counsel
Bureau of Professional Medical
Conduct

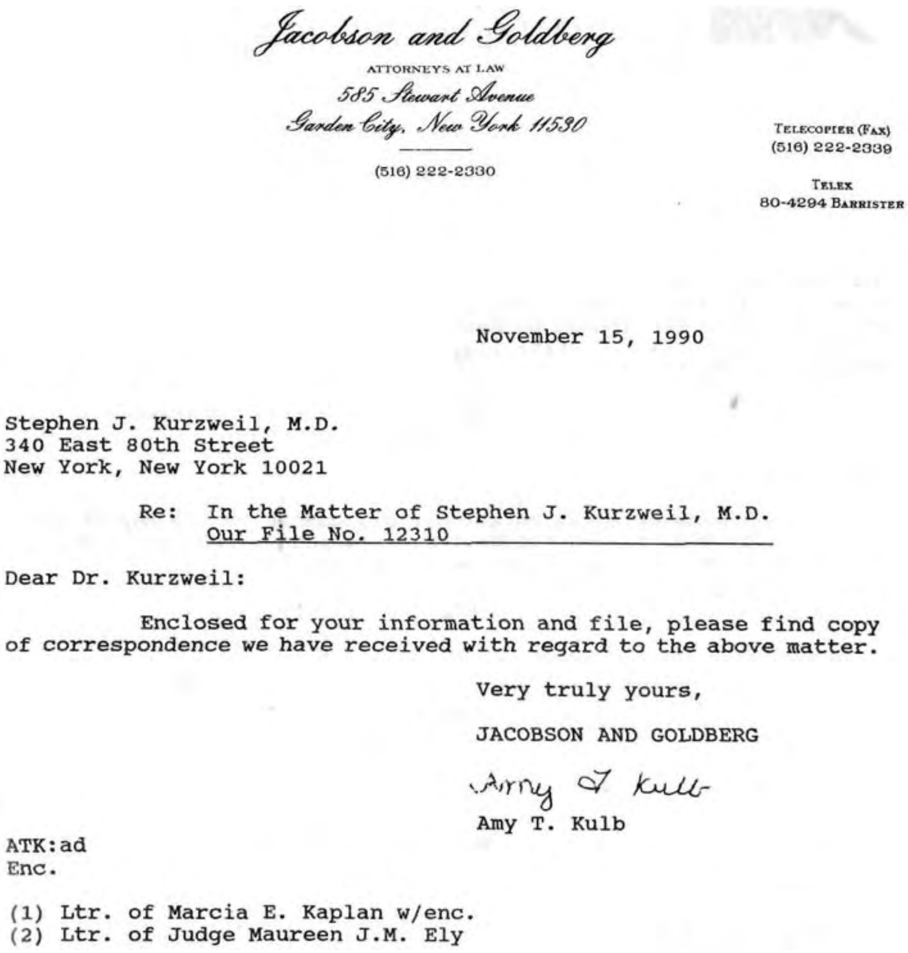

Jacobson and Goldberg
ATTORNEYS AT LAW
585 Stewart Avenue
Garden City, New York 11530

(516) 222-2330

Telecopier (Fax)
(516) 222-2339

Telex
80-4294 Barrister

November 15, 1990

Stephen J. Kurzweil, M.D.
340 East 80th Street
New York, New York 10021

Re: In the Matter of Stephen J. Kurzweil, M.D.
Our File No. 12310

Dear Dr. Kurzweil:

Enclosed for your information and file, please find copy of correspondence we have received with regard to the above matter.

Very truly yours,

JACOBSON AND GOLDBERG

Amy T. Kulb

Amy T. Kulb

ATK:ad
Enc.

(1) Ltr. of Marcia E. Kaplan w/enc.
(2) Ltr. of Judge Maureen J.M. Ely

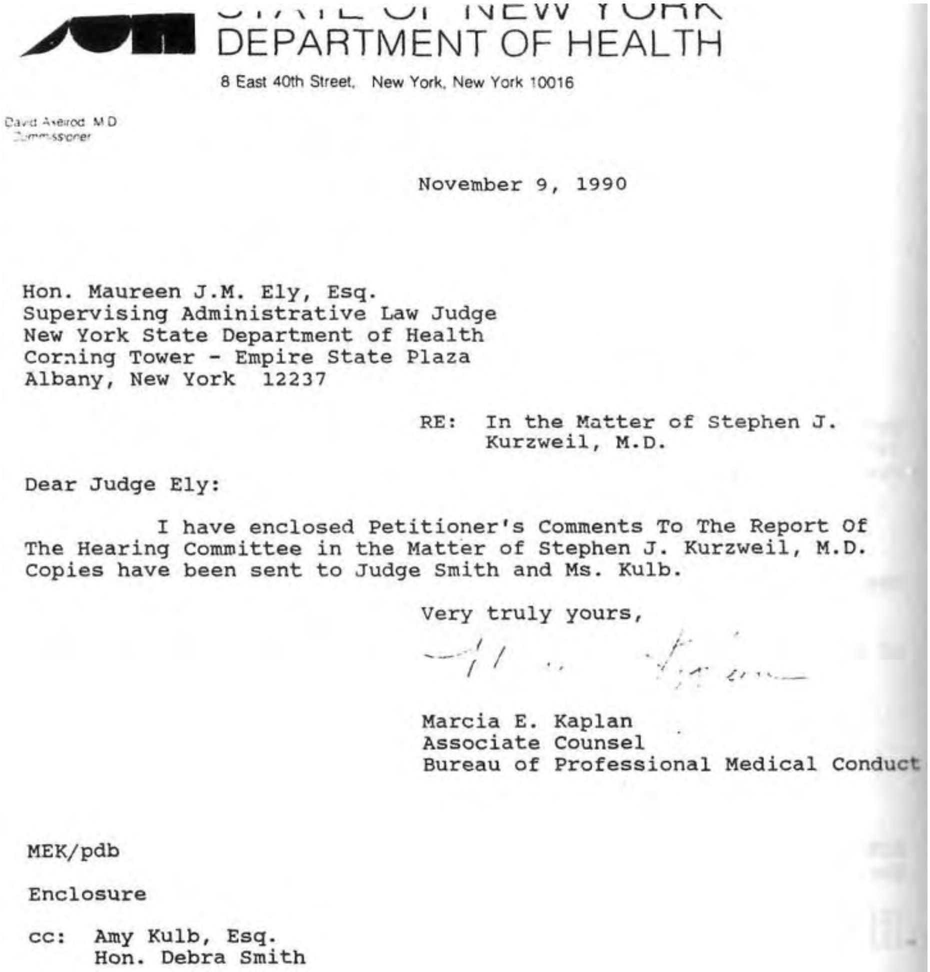

STATE OF NEW YORK
DEPARTMENT OF HEALTH
8 East 40th Street, New York, New York 10016

David Axelrod, M.D.
Commissioner

November 9, 1990

Hon. Maureen J.M. Ely, Esq.
Supervising Administrative Law Judge
New York State Department of Health
Corning Tower - Empire State Plaza
Albany, New York 12237

RE: In the Matter of Stephen J.
Kurzweil, M.D.

Dear Judge Ely:

I have enclosed Petitioner's Comments To The Report Of The Hearing Committee in the Matter of Stephen J. Kurzweil, M.D. Copies have been sent to Judge Smith and Ms. Kulb.

Very truly yours,

Marcia E. Kaplan
Associate Counsel
Bureau of Professional Medical Conduct

MEK/pdb

Enclosure

cc: Amy Kulb, Esq.
Hon. Debra Smith

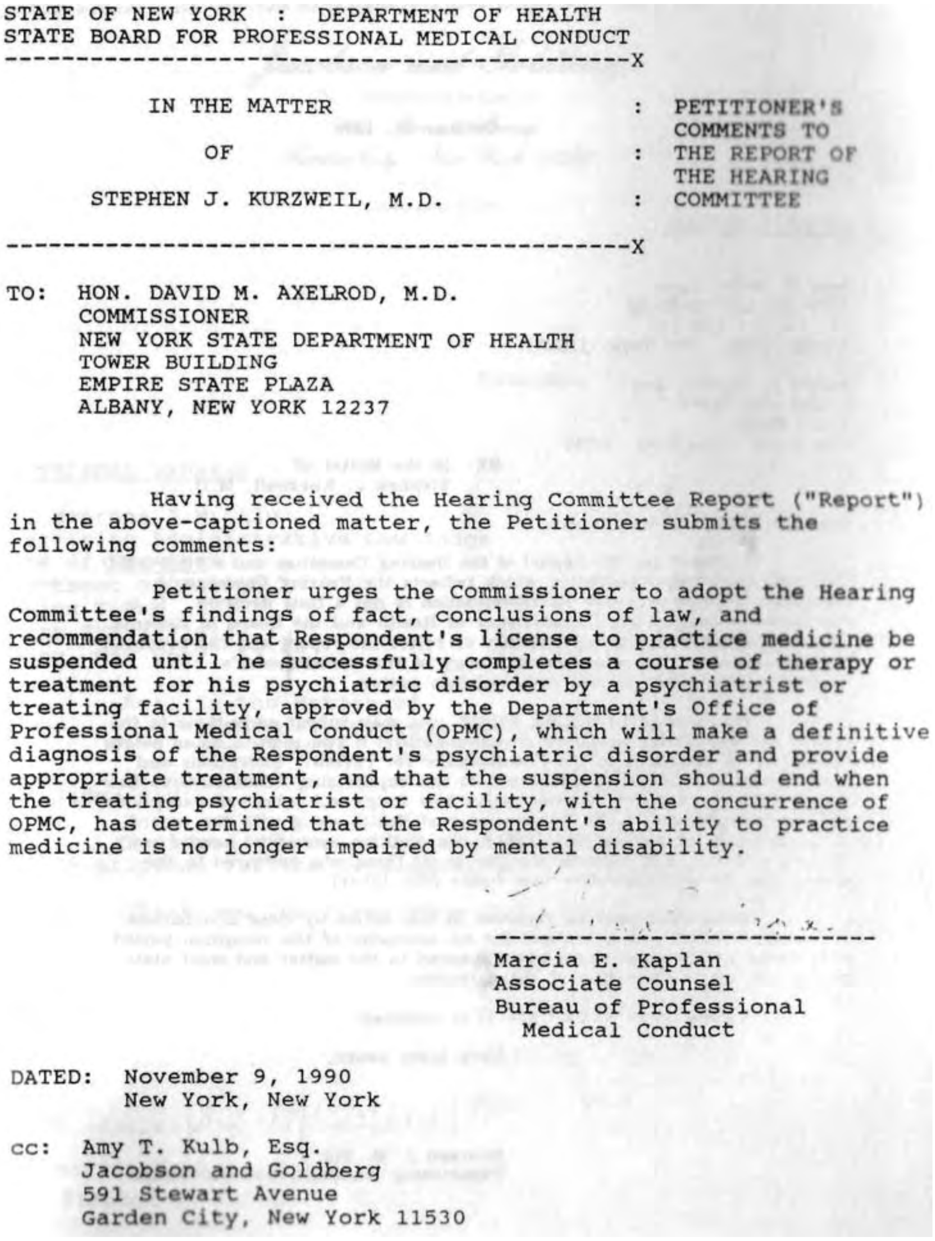

STATE OF NEW YORK : DEPARTMENT OF HEALTH
STATE BOARD FOR PROFESSIONAL MEDICAL CONDUCT
---X

IN THE MATTER	:	PETITIONER'S COMMENTS TO
OF	:	THE REPORT OF THE HEARING
STEPHEN J. KURZWEIL, M.D.	:	COMMITTEE

---X

TO: HON. DAVID M. AXELROD, M.D.
COMMISSIONER
NEW YORK STATE DEPARTMENT OF HEALTH
TOWER BUILDING
EMPIRE STATE PLAZA
ALBANY, NEW YORK 12237

Having received the Hearing Committee Report ("Report") in the above-captioned matter, the Petitioner submits the following comments:

Petitioner urges the Commissioner to adopt the Hearing Committee's findings of fact, conclusions of law, and recommendation that Respondent's license to practice medicine be suspended until he successfully completes a course of therapy or treatment for his psychiatric disorder by a psychiatrist or treating facility, approved by the Department's Office of Professional Medical Conduct (OPMC), which will make a definitive diagnosis of the Respondent's psychiatric disorder and provide appropriate treatment, and that the suspension should end when the treating psychiatrist or facility, with the concurrence of OPMC, has determined that the Respondent's ability to practice medicine is no longer impaired by mental disability.

Marcia E. Kaplan
Associate Counsel
Bureau of Professional
Medical Conduct

DATED: November 9, 1990
New York, New York

cc: Amy T. Kulb, Esq.
Jacobson and Goldberg
591 Stewart Avenue
Garden City, New York 11530

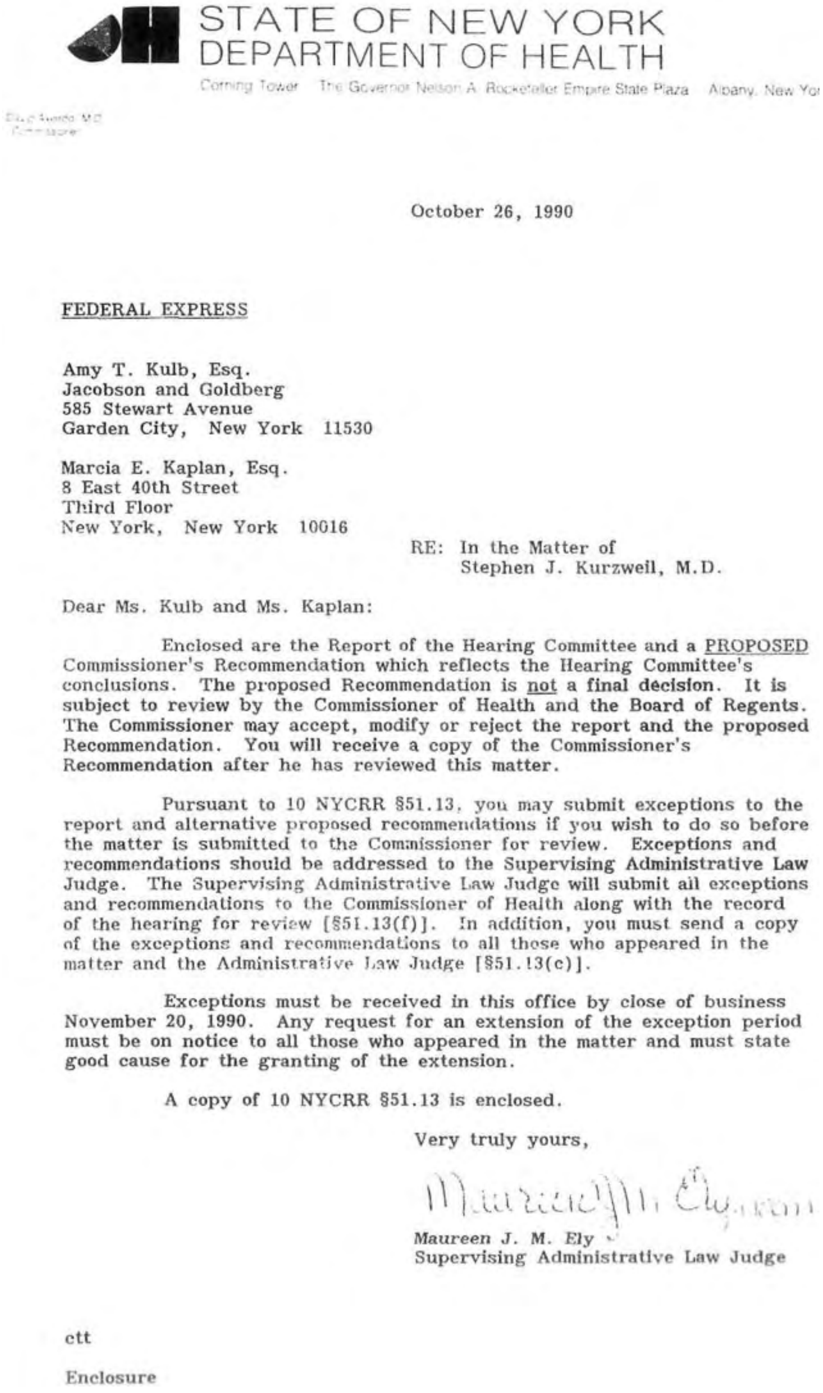

STATE OF NEW YORK
DEPARTMENT OF HEALTH
Corning Tower The Governor Nelson A. Rockefeller Empire State Plaza Albany, New Yor

David Axelrod, M.D.
Commissioner

October 26, 1990

FEDERAL EXPRESS

Amy T. Kulb, Esq.
Jacobson and Goldberg
585 Stewart Avenue
Garden City, New York 11530

Marcia E. Kaplan, Esq.
8 East 40th Street
Third Floor
New York, New York 10016

RE: In the Matter of
Stephen J. Kurzweil, M.D.

Dear Ms. Kulb and Ms. Kaplan:

Enclosed are the Report of the Hearing Committee and a PROPOSED Commissioner's Recommendation which reflects the Hearing Committee's conclusions. The proposed Recommendation is not a final decision. It is subject to review by the Commissioner of Health and the Board of Regents. The Commissioner may accept, modify or reject the report and the proposed Recommendation. You will receive a copy of the Commissioner's Recommendation after he has reviewed this matter.

Pursuant to 10 NYCRR §51.13, you may submit exceptions to the report and alternative proposed recommendations if you wish to do so before the matter is submitted to the Commissioner for review. Exceptions and recommendations should be addressed to the Supervising Administrative Law Judge. The Supervising Administrative Law Judge will submit all exceptions and recommendations to the Commissioner of Health along with the record of the hearing for review [§51.13(f)]. In addition, you must send a copy of the exceptions and recommendations to all those who appeared in the matter and the Administrative Law Judge [§51.13(c)].

Exceptions must be received in this office by close of business November 20, 1990. Any request for an extension of the exception period must be on notice to all those who appeared in the matter and must state good cause for the granting of the extension.

A copy of 10 NYCRR §51.13 is enclosed.

Very truly yours,

Maureen J. M. Ely
Supervising Administrative Law Judge

ctt

Enclosure

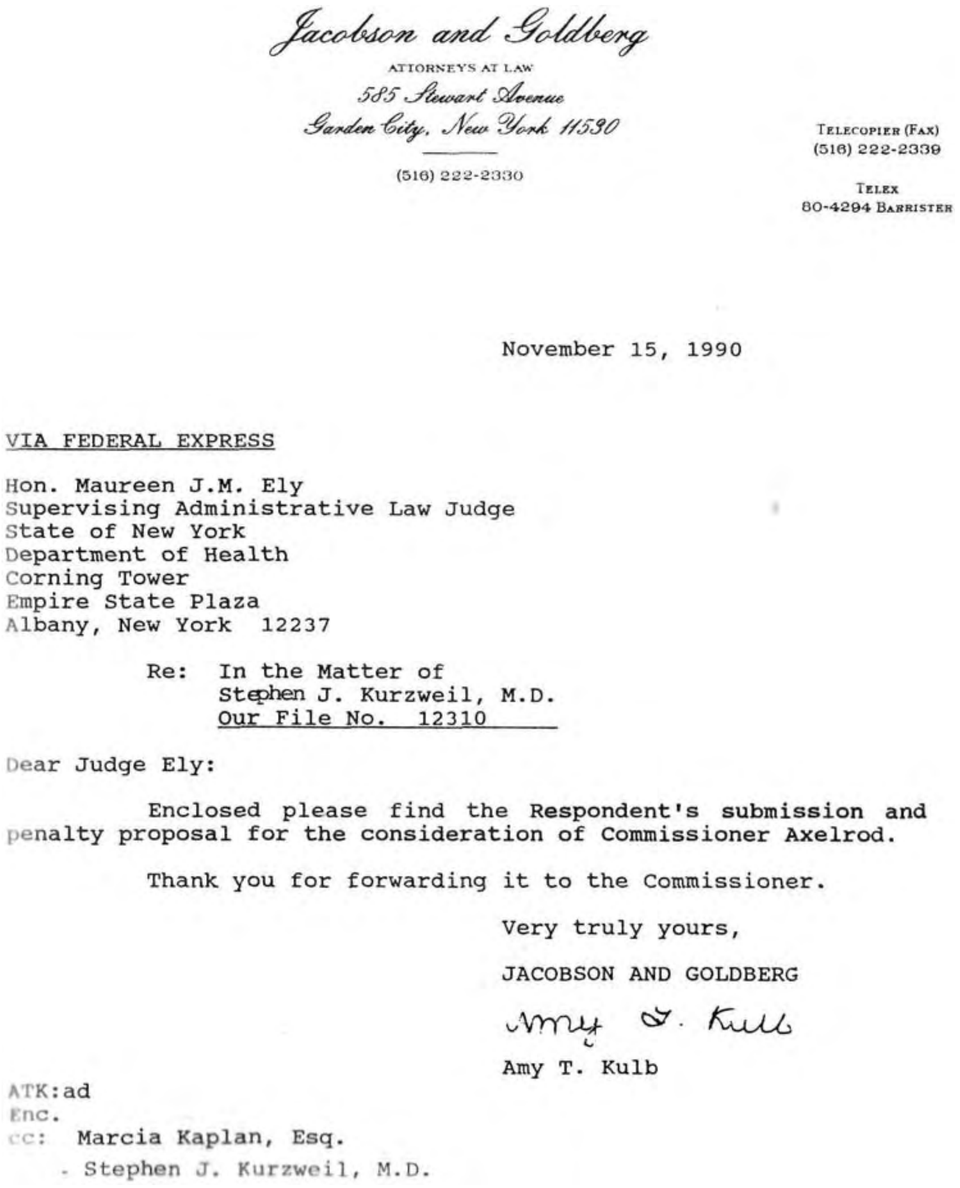

Jacobson and Goldberg
ATTORNEYS AT LAW
585 Stewart Avenue
Garden City, New York 11530
(516) 222-2330

TELECOPIER (FAX)
(516) 222-2339

TELEX
80-4294 BARRISTER

November 15, 1990

VIA FEDERAL EXPRESS

Hon. Maureen J.M. Ely
Supervising Administrative Law Judge
State of New York
Department of Health
Corning Tower
Empire State Plaza
Albany, New York 12237

Re: In the Matter of
Stephen J. Kurzweil, M.D.
Our File No. 12310

Dear Judge Ely:

Enclosed please find the Respondent's submission and penalty proposal for the consideration of Commissioner Axelrod.

Thank you for forwarding it to the Commissioner.

Very truly yours,

JACOBSON AND GOLDBERG

Amy T. Kulb

Amy T. Kulb

ATK:ad
Enc.
cc: Marcia Kaplan, Esq.
Stephen J. Kurzweil, M.D.

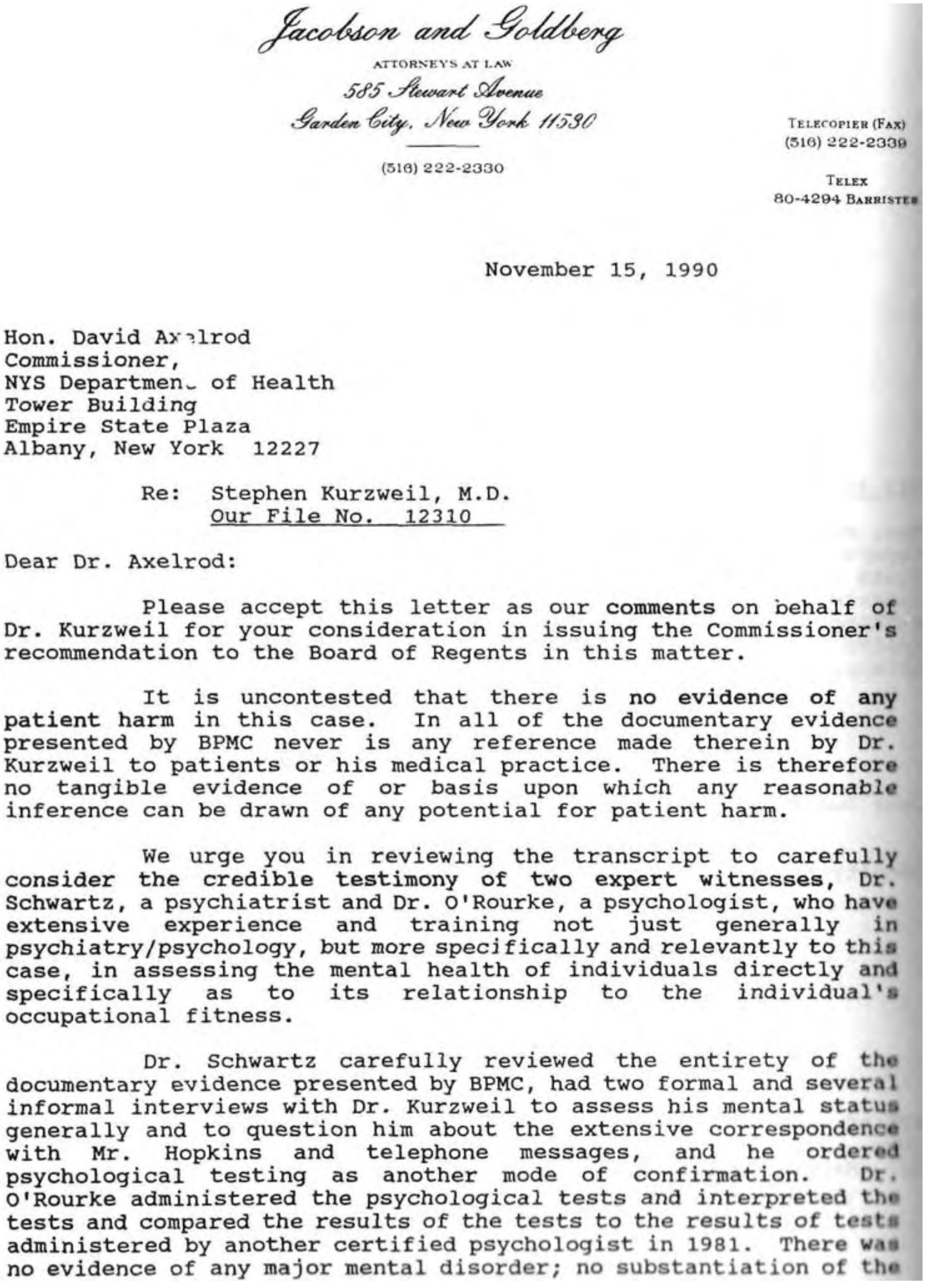

Jacobson and Goldberg
ATTORNEYS AT LAW
585 Stewart Avenue
Garden City, New York 11530

(516) 222-2330

TELECOPIER (FAX)
(516) 222-2339

TELEX
80-4294 BARRISTE

November 15, 1990

Hon. David Axelrod
Commissioner,
NYS Department of Health
Tower Building
Empire State Plaza
Albany, New York 12227

Re: Stephen Kurzweil, M.D.
Our File No. 12310

Dear Dr. Axelrod:

Please accept this letter as our comments on behalf of Dr. Kurzweil for your consideration in issuing the Commissioner's recommendation to the Board of Regents in this matter.

It is uncontested that there is no evidence of any patient harm in this case. In all of the documentary evidence presented by BPMC never is any reference made therein by Dr. Kurzweil to patients or his medical practice. There is therefore no tangible evidence of or basis upon which any reasonable inference can be drawn of any potential for patient harm.

We urge you in reviewing the transcript to carefully consider the credible testimony of two expert witnesses, Dr. Schwartz, a psychiatrist and Dr. O'Rourke, a psychologist, who have extensive experience and training not just generally in psychiatry/psychology, but more specifically and relevantly to this case, in assessing the mental health of individuals directly and specifically as to its relationship to the individual's occupational fitness.

Dr. Schwartz carefully reviewed the entirety of the documentary evidence presented by BPMC, had two formal and several informal interviews with Dr. Kurzweil to assess his mental status generally and to question him about the extensive correspondence with Mr. Hopkins and telephone messages, and he ordered psychological testing as another mode of confirmation. Dr. O'Rourke administered the psychological tests and interpreted the tests and compared the results of the tests to the results of tests administered by another certified psychologist in 1981. There was no evidence of any major mental disorder; no substantiation of the diagnosis and assessment made by OPMC's psychiatrist, Dr. Bryt, on the basis solely of one interview and nothing more; nor was there any information elicited that demonstrated patient harm on any potential whatsoever for patient harm.

Dr. Kurzweil's relationship with Mr. Hopkins is certainly unfortunate, irregardless of the conflicting psychiatric labels attached to it, because it is that relationship, and nothing whatsoever involving his medical practice, that was the predicate for the instant proceedings. Mr. Hopkins in fact testified that he actively solicited various medical specialists to participate in his self-styled research by examining "abductees" but that Dr. Kurzweil had never become so involved. It is Dr. Kurzweil's concerns over Mr. Hopkins, a person with no medical or research or any formal training other than as an artist, engaging in potentially harmful hypnosis, experiments on individuals labeled as abductees by Mr. Hopkins, that led him to report these experiments, recently acknowledged by Mr. Hopkins in a "mystery' show on prime time television, to the authorities. Dr. Kurzweil's good faith inquiries as a physician to the Health Department and New York State Medical Society about these uncontrolled experiments by Mr. Hopkins are what led to an investigation of his relationship Mr. Hopkins and the instant proceedings.

As the record indicates, Dr. Kurzweil is certainly not a wealthy man and his medical license is his only means of earning a livelihood to support himself and his infirm mother. He does not have a family and the ability to practice medicine is truly his whole life. The fact that his license has been placed in jeopardy by these proceedings has effectively served as a deterrent to his continuing his relationship with Mr. Hopkins and generating the emotional intensity of concern, in terms of its potential, to the Hearing Committee. Dr. Kurzweil most importantly has demonstrated that he has the capacity to modify his behavior appropriately in that he has not contacted Mr. Hopkins since early May.

The documentary evidence, relied upon exclusively by the Hearing Committee in its report as the factual underpinnings, for its conclusion and penalty recommendation was correspondence directed to Mr. Hopkins or generated by his relationship with Mr. Hopkins and Mr. Hopkins' work with "abductees". Thus, it is clear that the conduct which resulted in the Hearing Committee's

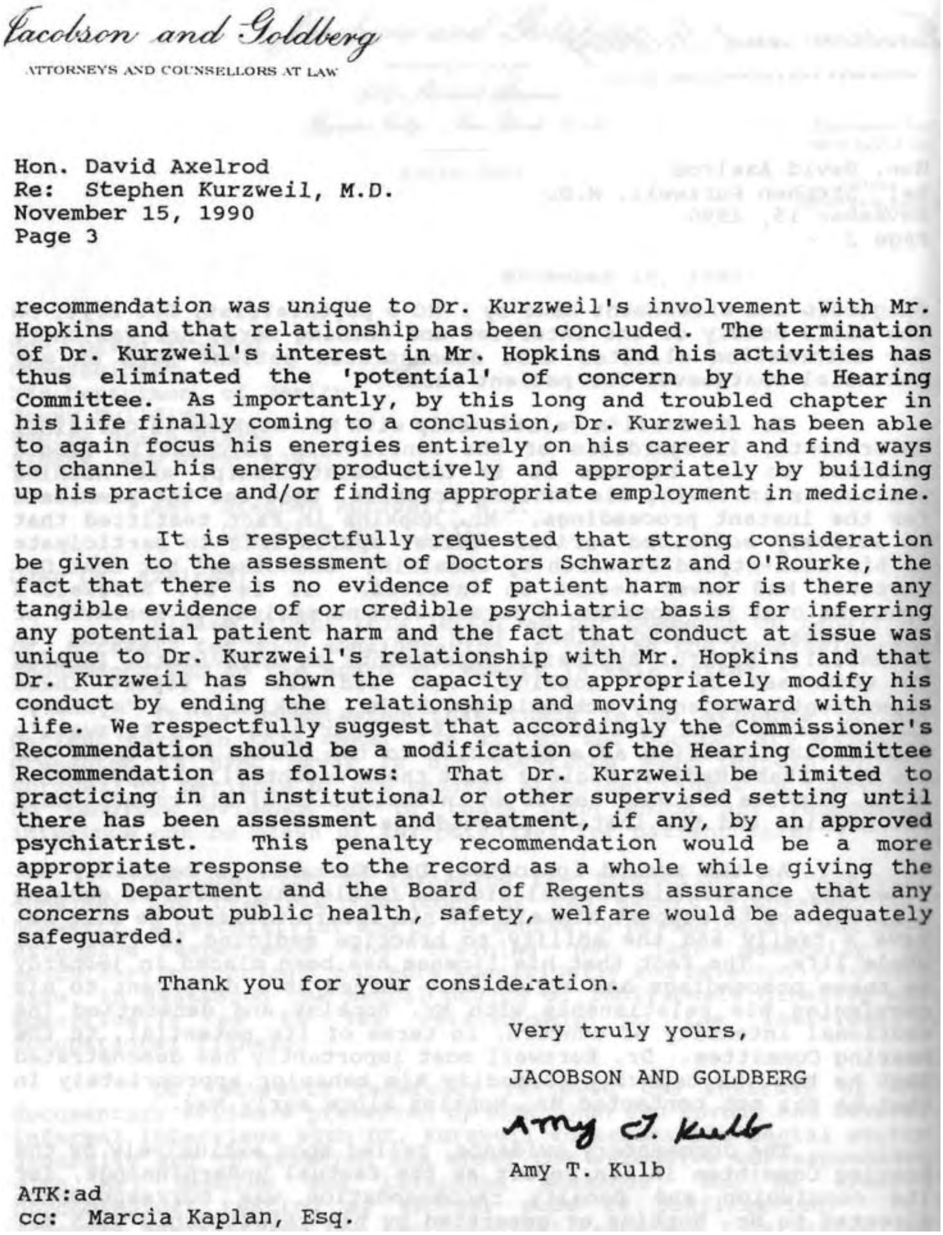

Jacobson and Goldberg
ATTORNEYS AND COUNSELLORS AT LAW

Hon. David Axelrod
Re: Stephen Kurzweil, M.D.
November 15, 1990
Page 3

recommendation was unique to Dr. Kurzweil's involvement with Mr. Hopkins and that relationship has been concluded. The termination of Dr. Kurzweil's interest in Mr. Hopkins and his activities has thus eliminated the 'potential' of concern by the Hearing Committee. As importantly, by this long and troubled chapter in his life finally coming to a conclusion, Dr. Kurzweil has been able to again focus his energies entirely on his career and find ways to channel his energy productively and appropriately by building up his practice and/or finding appropriate employment in medicine.

It is respectfully requested that strong consideration be given to the assessment of Doctors Schwartz and O'Rourke, the fact that there is no evidence of patient harm nor is there any tangible evidence of or credible psychiatric basis for inferring any potential patient harm and the fact that conduct at issue was unique to Dr. Kurzweil's relationship with Mr. Hopkins and that Dr. Kurzweil has shown the capacity to appropriately modify his conduct by ending the relationship and moving forward with his life. We respectfully suggest that accordingly the Commissioner's Recommendation should be a modification of the Hearing Committee Recommendation as follows: That Dr. Kurzweil be limited to practicing in an institutional or other supervised setting until there has been assessment and treatment, if any, by an approved psychiatrist. This penalty recommendation would be a more appropriate response to the record as a whole while giving the Health Department and the Board of Regents assurance that any concerns about public health, safety, welfare would be adequately safeguarded.

Thank you for your consideration.

Very truly yours,

JACOBSON AND GOLDBERG

Amy T. Kulb

Amy T. Kulb

ATK:ad
cc: Marcia Kaplan, Esq.

BLOODLINES
# of the
ILLUMINATI

FRITZ SPRINGMEIER

Bloodlines of Illuminati

by:
Fritz Springmeier, 1995

Introduction:

I am pleased & honored to present this book to those in the world who love the truth. This is a book for lovers of the Truth. This is a book for those who are already familiar with my past writings. An Illuminati Grand Master once said that the world is a stage and we are all actors. Of course this was not an original thought, but it certainly is a way of describing the Illuminati view of how the world works.

The people of the world are an audience to which the Illuminati entertain with propaganda. Just one of the thousands of recent examples of this type of acting done for the public was President Bill Clinton's 1995 State of the Union address. The speech was designed to push all of the warm fuzzy buttons of his listening audience that he could. All the green lights for acceptance were systematically pushed by the President's speech with the help of a controlled congressional audience. The truth on the other hand doesn't always tickle the ear and warm the ego of its listeners. The light of truth in this book will be too bright for some people who will want to return to the safe comfort of their darkness.

I am not a conspiracy theorist. I deal with real facts, not theory. Some of the people I write about, I have met. Some of the people I expose are alive and very dangerous. The darkness has never liked the light. Yet, many of the secrets of the Illuminati are locked up tightly simply because secrecy is a way of life. It is such a way of life, that they resent the Carroll Quigleys and the James H. Billingtons who want to tell real historical facts rather than doctored up stories and myths. I have been an intense student of history since I could read, and I am deeply committed to the facts of history rather than the cover stories the public is fed to manipulate them.

I do not fear the Illuminati taking over this country and doing away with the Constitution, because they took over this country long ago, and the Constitution has not technically been in effect due to Presidential emergency decrees since W.W. II. Being a follower of Christ does not mean we should fear. Perfect love for Almighty God casts out our fear for the situation He has place us in. Don't think for a moment you are going to vote the Illuminati out of office. They control the major and minor political parties. They control the process of government, they control the process of information flow, they control the process of creating money and finally they control Christendom. (However, God controls the hearts of His people.)

I have provided information on how to respond in some of my other writings. This book will not tell you how to deal with the Illuminati families. This volume is simply the first of two volumes which is published to give an overview of what the Illuminati is. In short the Illuminati are generational Satanic bloodlines which have gained the most power. A generational Satanist described the Illuminati as "Satan's elite."

This book is not written to cause fear. It is not written to provide names for a witch hunt. It is not written to provide another theory. This book is not about a theory. It is about the secret occult oligarchies which rule the world. When brought together, the facts of this book will begin to speak for themselves without me. I don't ask that you take my word. Investigate for yourself. God Himself has told us that the whole world lies in the power of the wicked one. Some people after they have read my material have gone out into their own geographic area and seen for themselves that a small group of people control their nation and the world from behind the scenes. They have seen for themselves the power that secret societies exercise from behind the scenes.

This book will not be error free. There will be typos, and misspelled names, and errors of various kinds. The author is not God Almighty. I do not have every hair on these people's heads counted. This book has not been put out with the luxury of ghost writers, editors, a paid staff of researchers and a large budget. I look at many trivial projects which the elite are able to pour millions of dollars into, and I look at the research I do when at times I've not had a dime to photocopy some document I want. There is so much for me to communicate about the Illuminati, who they are, what their rituals are like, and how they control the world that it has taken several years of writing to begin to give people a fully cohesive picture.

Finally, after a number of requests that I assemble my writings exposing the top 13 Illuminati bloodlines, I have taken the time to put it all together in a book with a comprehensive index. History is important. In order to know where we are going, we need to know where we have been. To control the past is to control the present. The Illuminati's control over the entire learning process from cradle to grave gives them great ability to shape our frames of references. Jesus spoke about historical things. Paul reminded people of historical things. Josephus wrote a history of the nation of Israel.

Long ago in the dark unwritten pages of human history, powerful kings discovered how they could control other men by torture, magical practices, wars, politics, religion and interest taking. These elite families designed strategies and tactics to perpetuate their occult practices. Layers upon layers of secrecy have hidden these families from the profane masses, but many an author has touched upon their existence. I began my research when I began to get first hand reports from very informed people that an elite group did rule the world. My research into Satan's hierarchy went fast because of my skills as a researcher and because I knew from the beginning from my informants about the reality of what I was investigating. My investigation into the Illuminati, led me to read and pray about thousands of books. The quantity of books, newspapers, magazines and manuscripts and papers which were read to get me to where I am today numbers in the many thousands. I do not know how many nights I stayed up studying and finally collapsed into sleep with blurred red eyes.

I do know that I was driven enough in my study that I often would not stop until my eyes and mind could go no further. Men and women with sharp intellects like Edith Star Miller (author of Occult Theocracy) and Alexander Hislop (author of The Two Babylons) have tried to research the occult world and the connections between the different groups. I first read Hislop's book in 1981. His book shows that there is a continuity between the ancient occultism of the Mystery Religions and modern day religion. Edith Star Miller's Occult Theocracy was very helpful for me to rapidly see some of the many hidden historical and operational connections between occult groups today. Finally, the book Holy Blood. Holy Grail and its first sequel The Messianic Legacy gave me a deep insightful look into the 13th bloodline. But my understanding has been lifted by countless other investigators, who are worthy of praise because they dared to challenge the power structure to get to the real facts. </p>

In mockery and imitation of God's 12 tribes, Satan blessed 12 bloodlines. One of these bloodlines was the Ishmaeli bloodline from which a special elite line developed alchemy, assassination techniques, and other occult practices. One bloodline was Egyptian/Celtic/Druidic from which Druidism was developed. One bloodline was in the orient and developed oriental magic. One lineage was from Canaan and the Canaanites. It had the name Astarte, then Astorga, then Ashdor, and then Astor. The tribe of Dan was used as a Judas Iscariot type seed. The royalty of the tribe of Dan have descended down through history as a powefful Satanic bloodline. The 13th or final blood line was copied after God's royal lineage of Jesus. This was the Satanic House of David with their blood which they believe is not only from the House of David but also from the lineage of Jesus, who they claim had a wife and children. The 13th Satanic bloodline was instilled with the direct seed of Satan so that they would not only carry Christ's blood--but also the blood of his "brother" Lucifer. </p>

One of the bloodlines goes back to Babylon and are descendent from Nimrod. Down through the years the occult world has remained hidden from the history books. (Publishing and education have been controlled privileges.) They have ruled behind the scenes. The Mystery Religions each had their secret councils which ruled them, and these councils themselves came under the guidance of a secret supreme Grand Council or Governing Body. The Mystery Religions in turn ruled the masses and the political leaders. When I first began investigating the Illuminati a clear picture developed that the history books were doctored, and that great power was concentrated in the hands of oligarchies around the world. But who were these powerful people? I have been repeatedly asked, "If there is a conspiracy who are the conspirators?" That is what this book is about. The history books are full of information about the elites and the masses. Interestingly, upon very close scrutiny and examination the investigator finds that the elite have perpetuated their power for centuries, and have worked hand in glove with other elites to control the masses.

When seen in better light, wars between kings no longer appear as wars between elite factions, but contrived wars to control the masses by their greedy elite masters. But who are these people? The answer may not be the answer some might expect, because power comes in many shapes and sizes. Power doesn’t have to have high visibility to be active. In fact, due to the evil dark nature of these evil bloodlines they have traditionally tried to remain secret. I am indebted to people who have stepped out of the generational Satanic bloodlines of the Illuminati and who have given their lives to Christ for many of the tips which got my investigations on the right track. This book tells what many witnesses of generational Satanism would like to tell, but are too intimidated to tell. Witnesses like Tom Collins, and John Todd, and David Hill have tried to testify what they themselves saw--they each were destroyed. But the truth will not die with Tom Collins or David Hill. The truth did not go out of fashion just because John Todd was framed and dishonored by the Illuminati’s henchmen. Several people from different places have confirmed that there are 13 Illuminati bloodlines. Further, several ex-Illuminati people have confirmed my list of 13 families.

It is possible that my list is off on a name or two, but if it might be off, it can not be off much, if any. I believe the facts speak for themselves. As you study these bloodlines you will also see how powerful they are. David Hill, who was investigating the Illuminati, lost his life because he had been close to the inside as a high ranking Freemason who worked for the Mafia.

I received David Hill’s research manuscript two years after I had begun reporting on the 13 families. David Hill had done what I had originally done. He had asked questions and began to dig into who pulled the strings in this country. Both David and I discovered the names of some of the more obvious powerful families. For instance, in David’s notes he writes, "Yes, it is a fact: the Mellons, Carnegies, Rothschilds, Rockefellers, Dukes, Astors, Dorrances, Reynoldses, Stilimans, Bakers, Pynes, Cuilmans, Watsons, Tukes, Kleinworts, DuPonts, Warburgs, Phippses, Graces, Guggenheims, Milners, Drexels, Winthrops, Vanderbilts, Whitneys, Harknesses and other super rich Illuminated families generally get along quite well with Communists, who supposedly want to take away the wealth of these men and give it to the people.

However, this is only double talk designed to bolster the superstructure of delusion that Communists are the enemies of all Capitalists. But Communists, like the super rich families, are not the enemies of MONOPOLY CAPITALISM: they are the foes of FREE ENTERPRISE." (Untitled manuscript of David Hill, p. 215.)

My research had already entered another dimension beyond David Hill’s, because people trying to escape being part of the Illuminati had given me the 13 family names. But each round of validation I have received is a pleasant encouragement that others have seen the same things. It was a pleasant surprise to see that this researcher had singled out some of the same families as I had. Some of the allied families if not all of them probably have intermarried somewhere with one of these bloodlines.

Because this book is a collection of things which I have written over the years allow me to review what was written. In 1991, I first self-published my Be Wise As Serpents manuscript which exposed the top 13 families. In 1992, I began my newsletter to continue exposing the Illuminati, and came out with some monographs exposing the Monarch Mind Control program and the Illuminati Plans/methods to create earthquakes. From the mid-Dec. ‘92 newsletter up to the most recent ones in

1995, I have ran feature articles exposing the different top 13 families. This book is a collection of things, I, Fritz Springmeier, wrote between 1991 and 1995 about the top 13 families.

· PREVIEW OF VOL. 2

Besides feature articles about the top 13 families, I have also written articles about the Illuminati in general. When I went to assemble what I had written on the 13 families, I realized that much of what I'd said was in the content of articles about the Illuminati in general. I made the decision to use the approximately 250 pages I'd written specifically about the 13 families as Book #1, and what I had written in general about the families, which was also 200 plus pages as Book #2. Volume two will explain how the Illuminati control the world, and what some of their beliefs are, and about their secret and semi-secret organizations.

The two books will provide perhaps the most indepth complete picture of the 13 top Illuminati families that has been done to date. In fact, I know of no other book which is devoted to exposing the top 13 Illuminati families. In Volume two, you will read about Illuminati life, Illuminati control, and Illuminati organizations including the ACL, the Bohemian Grove, the Cosmos Club, the CFR, the Club of Rome, the Council of 9, the Council of 13 which is the Grand Druid Council, the Jason Society, the Jason Group, the Ordo Saturis, the OTO groups, MI-6, MJ-12, the Mothers of Darkness, the Pilgrim Society, the Prieure de Sion, the Process Church, the Sanhedrin, the Temple of Power, and other groups. These two books will give the details behind what was written, "the whole world lieth in wickedness" and that the god of this world is in its full reality Satan.

Grace and peace be with you
Fritz Springmeier, Feb. 10, 1995

Bloodlines of Illuminati

By

Fritz Springmeier

Chapter 1: THE ASTOR FAMILY

The original founder of the Astor fortune was John Jacob Astor (1763-1884). John Jacob Astor was born in Walldorf, Duchy of Baden (Germany) from a Jewish bloodline. The Jewish origins have been hidden, and quite a number of various ideas of the Astor's heritage have been put into circulation by the Astors. John Jacob Astor was a butcher in Walldorf. In 1784, he came to America after a stop over in London, England. Although the story is that he came to America penniless--and that may be true--he soon joined the Masonic Lodge, and within 2-3 years had become the Master of the Holland Lodge No. 8 in N.Y. City. (This Holland Lodge is a prominent lodge in that many of its members have good connections to the Illuminati elite. An example of just one Lodge #8 member is Archibald Russell, 1811 - 1871, whose father was President of a real hotbed of Illuminati action for many years: The Royal Society of Edinburgh).

By 1788, Astor was a master of masonic lodge#8. This is rather interesting considering Astor could not speak Englishwhen he arrived in America, and supposedly was very poor. John Jacob Astor was always very famous for being coldhearted, anti-social, "a man who didn't have charm, wit or grace." (This quote comes even from a relative of the DuPont family who wrote a sympathetic Biography entitled The Astor Family.) If this man lacked social graces and was so cold, and was so poor during his first years in the U.S., why did he rise to such prominence in Freemasonry? Certainly not because of his social graces. For instance, one time later in life at a meal given for elites, when his hands got dirty at the table he reached over and used the shirt of the man beside him to wipe his hands. The original financial break came by carrying out a series of shady and crooked real estate deals in the N.Y. city area.

The next breakcame when two men who are now known to have been in the Illuminati gave John Jacob Astor a special government privilege. The two men were Pres. Jefferson and Secretary Gallatin--both Illuminati members. The United States government had placed an embargo on all U.S. ships from sailing with goods in 1807. But Astor got special permission from these two men for his ship to sail with its cargo. His ship sailed and made close to a $200,000 profit in that day's money. Astor strangely profited greatly from the War of 1812, which crippled almost all the other American shippers. Astor also worked together with George Clinton, another member of the Illuminati, on land deals. Even at that period in history, British intelligence worked for the Committee of 300 and for the Thirteen Top Families, it is interesting then, that John Coleman who had access as an intelligence agent to secret documents, discovered that the original John Jacob Astor was also a British secret agent. The Thirteen Families have very intimate roles with the American and British intelligence cults.

Prior to 1817, John Jacob Astorentered into the fur trade and remained the biggest player in the fur tradeuntil he got out of it in 1834. Over the years, he had managed to build up a monopoly. How he managed to push everyone else out is a good question.

Bear in mind, white people had been trapping furs in the New World for several centuries, and the Indians for who knows how long. Then this guy Astor comes along and in a few years totally owns the whole industry! Again this could only have happened, because the occult power of this Astor family gave them the right. Obviously, others in the Committee of 300 had to step aside, if his position in the hierarchy had not given Astor the right, believe me the other families that originally controlled the fur trade would have gotten rid of Astor. One result of his fur company, was that Astoria, OR was created. Today, perhaps in honor of the family that originally took interest in it, Astoria is a real hot-bed for the secret Satanic covens in Oregon. John Jacob Astor did have a few helpful connections. Three of his relatives were captains on clipper ships. He had connections in London to the Backhouse family. He married a Todd, a family frequently associated with Satanism. His wife, a Todd, was also connected to the influential Brevoort family. And finally for some reason, John Jacob Astor was also on good relations with the politicians of the day, perhaps because most of them were Freemasons too.

For a few years John Jacob Astor had participated in the opium trade, but in 1818-he publicly quit running opium to China. John Coleman in his good book The Conspirator's Hierarchy: The Story of the Committee of 300, p. 131 notes, "John Jacob Astor made a hugh fortune out of the China opium trade .... it was the Committee of 300 who chose who would be allowed to participate in the fabulously lucrative China opium trade, through its monopolistic BEIC, and the beneficiaries of their largess remained forever wedded to the Committee of 300." Interestingly another Top 13 family, the Russells, was also one of the lucky ones to get a slice of the China opium trade. It is clear repeatedly from history that Astor was privy to inside information in the government, and maintained his own courier system. John Jacob Astor bought up large amounts of land in NY which land greatly increased in value. The Financial Panic of 1837 allowed him to foreclose on a large number of mortgages. John Jacob Astor's wealth continued to skyrocket. As one biography said, "When it came to a question of principle versus profit, Astor was a practical man." Put simply, he had no scruples. Astor had a reputation for being a ruthless landlord. He also had the reputation of not paying his legitimate debts. Astor became a banker, and sat on the board of 5 directors of the new national bank that Hamilton created for the U.S. government called the Bank of the United States. Astor owned a large block of the stock of the Bank of the United States. Astor also was fairly active during his life as a Freemason, holding several more key positions in the secret lodge life. John Jacob was the richest man in the United States. Note this reference. Meyers, Gustavus. History of the Great American Fortunes. London: Stationers Hall, 1909, p. 147 said, "Statistics issued in 1844 of manufacturers in the United States showed a total gross amount of $307,196,844 invested. Astor's wealth, then, was one-fifteenth of the whole amount invested throughout the territory of the United States..." Is having 1/15th of all of what American money is invested not rich? John Jacob Astor's descendents had a penchant for secrecy, and set up things to rule from behind the scenes. In contrast, to some of the other top families, the Astors perferred not to sit on boards of corporations they controlled. In 1890, a real estate expert calculated the Astors owned 1/20 of New York City real estate. After making their fortune while residing in the New York area, the Astors by and large have all gone to England. They still wield great financial power in the United States through proxies. Forum Magazine, Nov. 1889, commented that authorities estimated the Astors were worth $300,000, but that that figure had to be an underestimate. Today, my estimate of the Astors is that they are worth about 40 billion dollars. One of the many foundations that the Astors created was the Vincent Astor Foundation, which is controlled from England by the Astors and has in the range of $100 million tax exempt dollars. The Vincent Astor Foundation has typically given to Catholic and Episcoplian needs, among other things. They also give money to agencies opposed to private ownership of guns. They give money to NY's public library. Imagine how much influence that gives them, when the library is receiving regular help for general support? A 1971 Foundation Directory stated that the V. Astor foundation had its present emphasis on preventing juvenile delinquency. Why don't I trust the Astor's in helping out with law enforcement? The William Waldorf Foundation states that its purpose is 'Promotion of mutual understanding and the diffusion of knowledge and culture among the United States and the dominions, colonies, and countries of the British Commonwealth.' This sounds very similar to the public statement of purpose that the secretive Pilgrim Soc. has given out to those who need something about them. Assets for this foundation are a mere $64,000. Vincent Astor (now deceased) was a member of 41 private clubs, To give an idea of how much power just one of the many Astor men wield some of the businesses Vincent was involved include:

director- American Express Company dir. Atlantic Fruit and Sugar Co.
dir. Chase Manhattan Bank (of the Rockefellers)
dir. City and Suburban Homes Co.
dir. Classical Cinematograph Corporation
dir. Cuban-Dominican Sugar Co. dir. Great Northern Railroad
dir. Ill. Central Railroad
dir, Inter. Mercantile Marine Co. dir. National Park Bank of NY
dir. NY County Trust Co.
dir. Weekly Publications Inc.
dir. Western Union Telegraph trustee NY
Zoological Soc.advisor to Bankers Trust of NYmember Amer. Museum of Nat. Hist. member Nat. Instit. of Soc. Sciences(notice these last two like so many elite controlled organizations are heavily involved in the spread of the evolution theory.)

Just like the Rothschilds, DuPonts, and Rockefellers, the Astors always set one of their Astor males as the head of the entire family. This headship is passed down as a birthright within the different branches of the family, just as any King passes on his throne. On the corner of 33rd St. and 5th Ave. (the site later began the site of the Empire State Building) the original Waldorf-Astoria Hotel was built by William Waldorf, et. al. The hotel opened in Mar. 1893. It is described as 'the ultimate in snob appeal.' Later two Astor cousins built the Astoria (another even taller elite Hotel) in New York which opened in 1897. Of course, like many of the other elite famIlies, the Astors have theIr Maine property to get away and relax. In 1894, John Jacob wrote a novel A Journey in Other Worlds where he describes a society which operates on the idea of conserving energy. Strange how the elite likes to promote conservation among us 'cattle.' In the late 1800's, the Illuminati began to reconfigure its outward face. The higher levels started creating innocent sounding cover organizations to hide their meetings behind. In 1901, the Astors contributed toward the creation of the Pilgrim Society, which was the cover organization for Amer. & Brit. 6° Princes of the Illuminati. I believe at least five Astors are now members of the Pilgrim Society. The Pilgrims had recently included David Astor, John Jacob Astor 8th, and William Waldorf Astor 3rd. And during the 1970s, Baron Astor of Hever was the President of the London branch of the Pilgrims. This implies that Astor of Hever was at least the next level up in the chain of command.

The Astors also have been veryprominent in the Group' which is Britian's equivalent to the Skull & BonesSoc. In Britain, the Astor, along with about 20 other families dominate the Group, just as certain families like the Whitneys in the U.S. help dominate the Order of Skull & Bones. Again, as was earlier pointed out, the key to understanding Satanism is the bloodlines. In 1910, the muscle and bone branches of the Illuminati reconfigured themselves with the creation of the Round Table groups in 1910. The Astors were the part of the financialbackers behind the Round Table groups along with Abe Bailey. Rhodes and Milner were key players is setting up The Society of the Elect, a supersecret top circle of Illuminati. Rhodes Trust in part helped by the Astor, helps finance the Rhodes Scholarship system. Rhodes a high ranking Freemason wanted the Masonic clap-trap as part of these various new groups, but Milner and Brett did away with the Masonic rituals and costumes, etc.

In 1919, the Royal Institute of International Affairs (RIIA) was created. And the Astors were the major financial backers of the RIIA which functions as the 4° cover of the Illuminati. For those who are new to this, the RIIA is the British equivalent to the Council on Foreign Relations (CFR) which takes a major role in the policy making process in the U.S. Waldorf Astoria was appointed to the RIIA. Just above the CFR/RIIA are round table groups which were initially named by Cecil Rhodes as the "Association of Helpers". Cecil Rhodes set up the Rhodes Scholarships to recruit and bring top men from several nations to Oxford to be initiated into the Illuminati and to learn about how to bring in a One-World-Government, So the initialselection into the Rhodes program--ist degree of the

Illum.- is equivalent to the initiation into the Skull & Bones. In the picture you see how the Cliveden Astors were intimately connected to the Rhodes Scholars. Rhodes Scholars frequently went to the Cliveden Estate. By looking at the genealogy chart you can see how the family in London broke up into two powerful segments. One part centered around the Cleveden Estate. Another group became Barons-the Astors of Hever - or the Hever Astors for short. William Waldorf Astor owned the Pall Pall Mall Gazette, the Observer, and the Pall Mall Magazine. The London Times was largely controlled by the Astors, and since 1922 they have owned this major source of British news. The DuPonts and the Rockefellers also have some major businesses where they too own blatant large holdings. However, most of the wealth of the 13 Top families is hidden so that the ties to who owns it are difficult to track. Hoyt Ammidon has been a proxy for Vincent Astor and the other Astors. (See membership list of Illuminati in this newsletter). The Astor family also used Owen Lattimore as their proxy for opium trade, who in turn used Laura Spelman who was funded by the Institute for Pacific Relations (IPR).

The lPR was the group that supervised the Illuminati's decision to allow Red China to share in the Opium trade. The puppet strings behind big world events may not be seen by the public, but if we trace the origins of several big events we see the Astors helping pull strings. The IPR helped lay the groundwork for the Pearl Harbor attack. The Astors also were behind the appeasement policy in Europe which allowed Hitler to become a threat. The Astors were also involved in the temperence movement against alcoholic drink which was begun by the Women's Christian Temperence Union. The temperence movement was an elite created movement just like today we have big issues like Aparteid which are made up by them to keep us busy. Joseph Kennedy and Onassis, two other top 13 Illuminati families got rich off of the temperence movement by bootlegging. So many people have exposed the temperence movement (See Occult Theocracy for just one expose of Freemasonry's involvement) that it is not pertinent to cover it here.

Today's equivalent of the temperence movement is the drug war. Col. Jack Astor, one of the world's most powerful men, was among those who went down with the Titanic. To his honor, he didn't have to sacrifice his life, but did. If he had been a scoundrel he could have chased a woman and her children from some lifeboat. Many sermons have been preached on the significance of the Titanic, and I personally am beginning to feel that God laid it on the hearts of so many of his ministers to understand that the Titanic was a judgment upon the pride of the world. More specifically it was a warning to the New World Order's elite. Another Illuminati invention was Communism. This has been so thoroughly documented I don't know why I have to state it here, except that there are still people who haven't taken the time to study it out. James II. Billington's book Fire In the Minds of Men - a very scholarly work, and Occult Theocracy are some good starting points to study this. The Fabian Society was also connected to the Illuminati. For instance, Illuminati prince Prof. George Edward Gordon Catlin, Pilgrim Soc. member was a member of the Fabian Society's executive committee. The Fabian logo is a Wolf in Sheep's clothing!!

Fabians like H.G. Wells who wrote so eloquently on the New World Order with such books as The New World Order, A Modern Utopia, The Open Conspiracy Blue Prints For A World Revolution was a wolf in sheep clothing. H.G. Well's made the New World Order something that sounded advantageous to everyone, a Utopia of sorts. That is not what it will be. During the 1930's, the Fabian Socialists created the Political and Economic Planning group (PEP). Mason Viscount Waldorf Astoria was a leader of PEP. A confidential program that the PEP created and implemented through the British government was later described in a book Principles of Economic Planning in 1935. The book doesn't explain why its cover has a ostentious Masonic square and compass displayed on its cover. George Berhard Shaw, who was a communist and Fabian Socialist was the best friend of Lady Nancy Astor, who became the first woman Member or Parliment. These two spend vast amounts of time together, much more than Nancy did with her husband Waldorf who she didn't care to be around. Waldorf was the Mason that was mentioned earlier who helped lead PEP. After Nancy Astor was elected (or selected by the elite) to be the first lady MP, one of the Russell ladys soon afterwards also became an MP.

Communism pretends it is the enemy of the rich capItalists, but both the rich elite and the communist leaders are committed to wipe out Christianity, to wipe out free trade with monopolies, and to set up an Illuminati One-World-Government. Do you see they have similar goals? A picture is included of Waldorf and Nancy Astor's visit to Russia during the 1930s. The Astors were not treated like enemies but like royalty. Can we see how the elite controlled press have deceived us? Do not trust our Illuminati-controlled elite to protect us from communism, they control communism. Besides socialism, Nancy Astor was a big supporter of Christian Science. Christian Science was a front for witchcraft from Its very beginning. For more information on what Christian Science is about I suggest people study Be Wise As Serpents, chapter 2.6 'The Healing Light". Nancy Astor wrote The Natural History of the Vampire and a book on the early Mason/Communist Bakunin. She used Grenfell family papers. The Grenfell family were close friends to the Cliveden Astors. David Astor, (The Honorable) attended Bilderberger meetings in 1957 and 1966. Alpha Lodge is the lodge in England that is traditionally for royalty. There are other elite lodges too, where the those of the elite, can protect themselves from rubbing shoulders with those of less social stature. These are the type of masonic lodges that the Astors Join.

In summary, an examination of the Astor family reveals their close connections with the full spectrum of Illuminati activities ranging from Freemasonry, the Illuminati itself, the Pilgrim Society, the Round Tables, Communism, Fabian Socialism, CFR, RIIA. the Bilderbergers, as well as the various politically (that is Illuminati) tainted banks such as Chase Manhattan. Ava Alice Muriel Astor was an occultist. She was born in 1902, was pretty but also a very serious woman. She was a very strong willed person that was able to dominate a person in her presence unless they were also strong willed. She was into Egyptian magic and believed she was the reincarnation of an Egyptian princess and a disciple of Ikhnaton. Alice Astor may have been one of the first people to enter King Tut's tomb, where she got herself a necklace. Aldous Huxley wrote Brave New World as a picture of things that were to come --most people think as a expose, but it was really more as a plan or blueprint Aldous Huxley and Alice did a great deal of occult things together. Their financial power is unchecked. Myers and others have noted the Astors are above the law. The Top 13 families don't obey the law--they are the law. The Astors may have Illuminati Kings and Princes in their ranks, they may have dozens of billions of assets, yet it will all be nothing when they face their Creator at judgment.

Followup on the Astors

One of the items that I felt I should have given the readers back in the 1/1/93 issue was the Masonic background of John Jacob Astor (1763-1848). For the record here is his masonic involvement:

Master of the Holland Lodge No.8, of N.Y.C.-1788
Grand Treasurer of the Grand Lodge of New York-1796-1801
Junior Grand Warden on two occasions-1796 & 1801
Secretary of the comamandery (then called encampments).

For a busy man, he kept himself busy In his Masonic work.

· THE ASTOR FAMILY REVISITED WITH INFORMATION ON THEIR CHANLER BRANCH

THERE ARE 13 TOP BLOODLINES

Thirteen families or bloodlines are at the top, and five of these families are the inside core of these thirteen. Prior to Be Wise As Serpents, the existence of thirteen top families was not known by very many people. The existence of the 13 families had come out in Berry Smith's book Final Notice in the 1980s, but the names were still unknown. Berry Smith of Australia wrote in his book Final Notice p. 9, "There are 13 families or groups heading up the World Government plan. These families are portrayed as the 13 layers of blocks found on the strange seal on the reverse side of the U.S. $1 bill." In a little read article, one SRA victim recently wrote that Satanism was controlled by a few families. Recently, one of the Du Ponts was on a television show because the DuPonts were trying to kidnap him because they didn't like his support for the book Dope. Inc. I was able to get a copy of the book, and was overjoyed to find such an excellent book. My sources have been telling me that the top Illuminati families were behind the drug trade. Yes, Satan's top followers are also the kingpins in destroying humanity for profit through drug trafilcing.

The following families (besides others) or individuals from these families are mentioned in Dope Inc. as involved in some aspect of the drug trade: the Astors, Bundys, DuPonts, Freemans, Kennedy's, Li's, Rockefellers, Rothschilds, and Russells. It is no coincidence that nine of the Top 13 families would get there names in a book which revealed the big names behind the world's illegal narcotics trade. It should be mentioned that some other prominent Illuminati families also play key roles in the drug trade such as the Bronfmans, Cabots, Shaws, Bacons, Perkins, Morgan, Forbes, Cisneros and Oppenheimers. Where have we seen such names before? There are names in Dope Inc. that people would do well to know the danger of such as Louis Mortimer Bloomfield, Robert Vesco, Francois Genoud of Switzerland, Ivan Slavkov of Bulgaria, the Duke of Kent - Master of the Grand Mother Lodge of the Scottish Rite, and Jardine Matheson to mention a few. All our favorite secret fraternal groups appear in Dope, Inc. too. For instance, the Triads, P2 Masonry, regular Freemasonry, the CIA, the Order of St. John, and the Jesuits. The Universal Christian Gnostic Church's which practices black magic has a whole chapter showing its connection to the drug trade. Britain's assassination bureau Permindex which has been mentioned previously in this newsletter also gets a chapter in the book. In the Be Wise As Serpents book, I examine in detail only the Rothschilds and the Russells. I did not present much to back up my statements about the 13 families. Further, One of the unthinkable items that most people do not want to consider is that their leaders who they have idolized may be utterly corrupt. There was nothing to do but sit down and give the nitty-gritty details if the threat from the Illuminati was to be properly understood. The facts would speak for themselves. The ideal solution for both writer and reader was for me to write up my research and for you to read it as a series of articles. There is only so much a person can assimilate at once, and these articles give lots of details. In January of this year I began a series of articles on the top 13 families - families which the top experts said nobody knew about. I did this with the hope of stimulating others to notice these families, and to alert a wider sector of the Body of Christ. The young colleague David J. Smith, who wrote part of the Jan. 1 article on the Illuminati, was led to carry out further research in addition to what the Jan. 1 article had. Most of this article's information on the Astors then is a result of David's research.

DIFFICULTY IN DETERMINING THE FACTS.

Most of the material put out on the Astors shows the unmistakable mark of distortion by writers and historians giving information in line with what the Astors wanted the public to get. Books on the Astors contain both believable and unbelievable material, fact and fiction, Some of the real facts may remain obscured forever, but that has not stopped us from getting the most accurate picture we could reconstruct. The Astors do not make the task of investigating them easy. They have been very secret and very deceptive since they arrived In this nation. John Jacob Astor, the first prominent Astor was a notorious liar, "he was known on occasion to invent romantic tales for the edification of people who annoyed hIm with questions ...... Men who knew him best were, therefore, neither ready to discredit completely all legends about his exploits nor to repeat them as gospel. The truth, they suspected, lay somewhere between the two extremes." (Terrell, John Upton. Furs by Astor., p. 102.) John Jacob's son insured that his father's lies would go unchallenged by incinerating all of his personal records, business records and other papers.

ORIGIN OF THE FAMILY & its NAME

The Astors have come up with various origins for themselves and those for or against the family have added more ideas. One strong possibility is that the Astors are descendants of the Astorga family found in Southern Italy before the 1600s. The most likely meaning of the name is that both Astorga and Astor are variations meaning “Astarte” who is the mother of the occult. Her name is also Semiramis. In Babylon the trinity was Nimrod (the sun), Semiramis (the moon), and Tammuz (the morning star). In Egypt, these gods were called Osiris, Isis, and Horus. The pictures and statues Isis and Horns were renamed by the Roman Catholic church as the Virgin Mary and the Christ-child.

THE FAMILY IN EUROPE

The family may have moved from Savoy to Walldorf, Germany. Although it is not a certainty, the best explanation from the available clues indicates that Walldorf’s coven had some important personages in the witchcraft/satanic system and that Johann Astor’s family had power. At that time in Europe, the Astor family had no chance to turn their occult power into success. The power and class structure In Europe was rigid and gridlocked. The boundaries between peasant and aristocracy were solidly in place. So the family looked to the New World to transmute their position in the Satanic hierarchy into financial wealth and power. Johann Astor In Walldorf was only a butcher. His best son John Jacob (1763-1848) was selected to establIsh the House of Astor in America.

JOHN JACOB ASTOR GOES TO AMERICA

At age 16, John Jacob Astor quit helping the family butcher business, went to England and then later to America. Looking at the details of things, and piecing the truth together it appears that his Satanic authority was already in place, because he was able to travel to England, and as a german-speaking peasant converse face to face with the Backhouse family in England. Of course the biographers make it sound like John Jacob Astor left Germany for himself, rather than his family. Michael Astor gives a glimpse of John Jacob’s mission, “He concentrated almost entirely on building a fortune, on escaping the poverty of his childhood and establishing a secure financial position for his family in America.” (Astor, Michael. Tribal Feeling p. 11)

OVERVIEW

The process of 400 years looks like this. Various Satanic families moved into the Southwest German area in the late Medieval time period. Witchcraft associated with Diana was practiced In Southwest Germany, and this began to alarm various elements of the Roman Catholic church. The Astor family provides leadership in the covens in the Heidelberg area. Witchcraft spread virtually all over Southwest Germany. An examination of the old records from about 1500 to 1650 show that witchcraft was being practiced throughout the area. (I have the names of over 120 towns were it was practiced in SW Germany, the list derived from old German records.) The Astors did not have the position, wealth, and power that accorded their position in the late 1700s of occult leadership. In Germany, England and France there was no way to climb the social ladder. However, the New World presented opportunities. The Astors sent two sons to prepare the way for John Jacob, one to England, one to America, and then sent John Jacob their most promising brightest son to the New World.

While in America the Astor family helped the Satanic elite headquartered in England to maintain its control over America. Having come from Germany, and also due to Satanism being secret, John Jacob Astor’s help given to pro-British-elite moves were more difficult to suspect. After establishing themselves as aristocrats in America, the tribe of Astors moved to England, where because of their high social position in America, no one questioned the Queen bestowing titles of nobility on them. All along the process, people with Illuminati connections opened doors for the Astors. At this point, it needs to be pointed out that there were ties between the following groups: English royalty, English Satanism, English Freemasonry, and German witchcraft, and the Italian Black nobility. (Taking the liberty I have as author of this article, I am going to digress to give some examples of these connections. Although on the surface this doesn’t directly pertain to the Astors, it does.) When one paints in the bigger panorama of what was happening in the occult world, and then one sees a blazing star streak across that panorama, then the real history of that blazing star is given by tracking its voyage through that panorama. However, the history books have intentionally hidden the significance of so many of the players and groups that lay along the track of that blazing streak.

SPECIFIC GROUPS

Order of the Knights of the Helmet--This was an illuminated secret society with Sir Francis Bacon at its head. In order to hide its Masonic rituals, Sir Francis Bacon wrote a play entitled “The Order of the Helmet.” This was performed in 3 Jan. 1594, and again for twelve days in December 1594. In Dec. 1594, brItIsh Aristocrats who had been demonically illuminated, met and put on a “play.” Calling their initiation ceremony a play was a great cover. Sir Francis Bacon was made king and “prince of purple.” Various men were invested with the Collar of Knighthood of the Helmet, and took vows, And a “Series of Charges by six High Councilors” was given in a manner that is very similar to what the satanic S.R.I.A. does now. The reader may ask what does this have to do with the Astors? This is simply a few brief look at the background of what was happening in the occult in Europe. The Queen of England sent Sir Francis Bacon as a young man in his twenties to the continent of Europe. Sir Francis Bacon toured France in places such as Louvre, St. Cloud, Blois, Paris, and Poictiers, He also travelled to Germany, Italy and Spain. He visited the various royal courts, such as the court of Marguerite de Valois. Marguerite was married to King Henry of Navarre. Her mother was the evil Catherine de Medicis. Sir Francis Bacon also met with many secret societies. At Marguerite’s court he spent time with “The Pleiade” fraternity, which was a group of 7 intellectuals.

According to the best biographer of Sir Francis Bacon, who was Alf red Dodd (Alfred spent his entire life studying SIr Francis Bacon), Sir Francis Bacon was initiated into a large number of secret occult societies when he was on the continent of Europe. He learned kabbalistic magic, Egyptian mysticism, Arabian mysticism, and the customs of the German Steinmetzin. (Dodd, Alfred. Francis Bacon’s Life-Story. London: Rider & Co., 1988,
p.10.4.) This information has been provided to give some feel for how the occult in Europe was in contact with its various parts, and that its tentacles included many of the royal families.

Hell Fire Club -- This was a secret Satanic cult which was associated wIth early Freemasonry. When the connections became known between the Satanists of the Hell Fire Club and the elite of Freemasonry, Freemasonry and the elite made some radical moves. First, Freemasonry publicly proclaimed that it had nothing to do with the Hell Fire Club. rhen the Hell Fire Club was publicly disbanded by the government (acting on orders from people that tied-in with the club). Later, quietly the club was reconstituted. Phillip, 1 at Duke of Wharton (1698-1731) who was the second person of nobility to be Grand Master of England’s Freemasons (G.M. of the Grand Lodge 6/1722-11/25/1723) was president of the Hell Fire Club. He was an M.P, in the House of Lords. In 1726, he left England and was a basically brought into ill-repute by the Masons, who distanced themselves from him. George Lee, Earl of Lichfield was also another prominent Mason who was a member of the Hell Fire Club. Benjamin Franklin, who was the head of the American Freemasons in various capacities, and also the head of the Rosicrucians and a number of other secret occult groups was also a member of the Hell Fire Club. Benjamin Franklin’s satanism was not mentioned in my Be Wise As Serpents book, but he was an important Satanist who was part of the Order of the Quest--that is the group which has been entrusted with the plans for bringing in the New World Order of Satan. Remember that John Jacob Aster was very involved with Freemasonry, as were a number of his intimate friends such as N.Y. Governor DeWitt Clinton and General John A. Armstrong. In regards to the Hell Fire Club, the Earl of Sandwich, Benjamin Franklin and Sir Francis Dashwood were leaders in the Hell Fire Club and were also Post-Master Generals of the British Postal Service, All were Freemasons too. Their positions as Post-Master Generals allowed them total access to the mail, and allowed them to spy on the communications of the 18th century. The man who became Post-Master General after Dashwood, who moved on to be a M.P, in the Br. Parliament, was the Mason John Wilkes. John Wilkes took over in 1766 (in 1774 was Lord Mayor of London). Wilkes then brought one of the original Hell Fire Club members, a friend of his Willis Hill to help with the Postal Service. The next Post-Master general was the totally corrupt man the Earl of Sandwich, who served until 1771. Benjamin Franklin spent the summers of 1772, 1773, and 1774 at Dashwood’s estate in West Wycombe. The caves under Dashwood’s estate at West Wycombe were used for satanic sexual rituals, which were participated in by Benjamin Franklin.

Ordo Saturnus--This is an old secret satanic German order. In the last few newsletters, I have been educating people on the meaning of Saturn. It means Satan. This previous information helps us understand John Jacob Astor IV when he writes in his book A Journey in Other Worlds, “The souls of the righteous departed were found on Saturn, where, to a background of weird music, pulsating hearts, luminous brains and centers of spiritual activity quiver with motion.” (A side comment: John Jacob Astor IV had a reputation for his insatiable sexual lust to paw women.) One of the people we have to investigate in relation to the Ordo Saturnus is Valentine Jeune, who was John Jacob Astor’s mentor in Walldorf, Germany. Jeune may well have belonged to an organization such as Ordo Saturnus.

JOHN JACOB ASTOR LEAVES GERMANY FOR ENGLAND & AMERICA

John Jacob Astor arrived in England and may well have been introduced In England to British Intelligence by his brother George. At any rate, he got involved in British intelligence which has always been closely linked to Freemasonry and the elite. He spent time socially with the Backhouse family which an aristocratic family. How do you suppose such a supposedly destitute young man could be accepted so easily into the Backhouse social scene? This is not explained by modern biographers.

After four years, his brother George then sent him to America to represent George’s music company. His brother Henry met him when he arrived in 1784 at age 20 and introduced him to the occult world in New York City. Thomas Backhouse & Co. was a leading house in the lucrative fur trade. John Jacob Astor set out to bring the fur trade under his own control. There is a tact that must be faced. the elite’s Committee of 300, a secret legislative group of the Illuminati, decided that John Jacob Astor could expand intothe fur trade and into the opium narcotics trade. Dope, Inc. shows that the Astor famIly was the first American family to get into the Opium trade, and that their opIum trade had was a special privilege that most other American businesses did not even try to compete with. Why? Dope, Inc. doesn’t say this but I know that it is because the Committee of 300 decides such things, not free enterprise. American furs yielded 1000% profit in those days. The privilege of fur trading was a pot of gold so to speak that the Committee of 300 gave Astor, and it could only have happened because the Astor family in Walldorf was already part of a principal satanic bloodline. (The Illuminati members of the Astor family today use their influence to help those of the Illuminati in their dope trade.) William Backhouse the American representative of the London Backhouse family and John Jacob’s brother Henry were two of John Jacob initial contacts in the New World. Soon John Jacob had met all types of people involved in New York’s occult world. John Jacob married Sarah Todd. John Jacob’s step-mother Christina Barbara is described as “the perfect, cruel fairy tale stepmother.” John Jacob ‘raised the principle of self-interest to the level of a philosophy and ..... claimed for himself a natural superiority over his less able and less powerful fellow men, a sort of God-given right to exploit the world and its inhabitants for his personal gain, This was not mere cynicism, but a genuine belief that in some way [he was] among the chosen people for whose convenience and advancement lIfe was ordered ..... Such people ... make history, but they also pervert it in human terms because their world and the codes that govern it have nothing to do with morality.’ (Sinclair, David. Dynasty The Astors and Their Times. p. 59) ‘Astor took Freemasonry seriously... [Gov. DeWitt] Clinton rose unusually fast in the degrees, but the German Immigrant [John Jacob] who talked at times as if he had marbles in his mouth was not far behind him. Astor eventually caught up to Clinton...’ (Terrell. Furs by Astor, p. 84).

DeWItt Clinton’s uncle George Clinton, who served as Jefferson’s Vice-President was also a member of their Holland Lodge No. 8. Archibald Russell of the Russell family, as well as two members of the elite Livingstone family were members of this lodge too at the time. The Livingstone family were participating in the Committee of 300 at that time. One of my Masonic reference books states that business at the Holland Lodge No, 8 was conducted in German. If so, why were all these other men involved with it who apparently had English as their mother tongue? In the 1/1/93 issue, Astor’s dirty real estate deals and his activity as a drug king-pin were discussed.

However, Astor’s connivance to create a nation on the west coast wasn’t. Thomas Jefferson, who I have now come to realize was a part of the Illuminati, was in on the plot. Jefferson said that he “hoped for the establishment of an independent nation on the Pacific Coast, bound to the

United States by ties of blood, language, and friendship." The Northwest was to become a sovereign nation under Astor's rule. The plan failed miserably due to a variety of reasons. Another item that was missed in the earlier article was how John Jacob Astor profited by using his own courier system and powerful friends to profit from the War of 1812. Astor knew the War of 1812 was coming and he set himself up to profit from it in several ways. (His Masonic brother and friend John A.. Armstrong 1758-1843 helped the British war effort as the American Secretary of War. A descendent of John's later married into the Astors.) Astor himself helped the British when he could profit by it. The two illuminati Jefferson and Gallatin gave Astor special sailing privileges which netted him much profit. When war was declared against Great Britain, Astor sent agents to the British forts in Canada to inform them. This gave the British advance knowledge of the war, before the Americans troops knew. This allowed the British to seize northern American forts and to insure that the British had control of the region's fur trade. This was essential for Astor to get control of the fur market, because then when the British furs were embargoed he had less competition. He obtained special permission from the President to import all furs owned by him and held in Canada before the war. He used thIs permission illegally to trap new furs. When the war ended. Astor was able to heat everyone else to Europe with his furs and make a killing. Astor cleared his name of shame, by sending Washington, D.C. information about a mutiny at a British fort which allowed the U.S. army to take advantage of the enemy's weak condition to capture the area. John Jacob Astor traded in guns, and his firearms were used in at least one-Latin American revolution. Bear in mind Latin-American revolutions have all been planned in Masonic Lodges. When employees of John Jacob Astor would trap for or trade furs with the Astor fur houses, they would he paid with letters of credit. Then Astor agents would he sent out to ambush and kill them, so that the Astor Fur Company could save money. The deaths were blamed on Indians. Zachery Taylor stated, "Take the American Fur Company in the aggregate, and they are the greatest scoundrels the world ever knew." (O'Connor, Harvey. The Astors p.44)

WILLIAM BACKHOUSE ASTOR

This was the son of John Jacob Astor. He was infamous for his hank treatment of thousands of people who rented from him in New York. There were repealed riots by tenants who were opposed by the harsh filthy living conditions in the buildings Astor owned, but their complaints were consistently ignored by Astor and their riots suppressed by the police. Only half of the children of his tenants lived to age 20. The Astors were deeply involved with the Tammany organization. William B. supported the corrupt administration of the infamous New York mayor, Fernando Wood. The government at that time was a pack of corrupt men. When Wood was exposed, Astors involvement was overlooked. This is another example of Astor power.

JOHN JACOB III

He was the son of William Backhouse Astor. He was just as haughty, just as cruel, and just as corrupt as his father and grandfather had been. He created "sweat shops" for the poor masses living in his New York tenements. He also supported corrupt politicians such as the criminal "Boss" Tweed who ran NYC. The Tweed Ring stole millions of dollars from the city of New York. Before they finally got caught and sent to prison Mayor Tweed and gang cost the city $200 million. Again John Jacob Astor III's power allowed his involvement to be basically overlooked by the press, while Tweed went to prison for life.

THE CHANLER BRANCH

Most of the Astors took off for England, but one branch of the Astors that is clearly involved in Satanism and the occult is the Chanler family. The Chanler family have Astor blood via "Madie" Astor Ward. The Chanler's parents died at an early age, and the Rokeby Estate in NY was given by the Astors so that a cousin Mary Marshall could raise the Chanler children. The Chanler family is one branch that clearly shows all the earmarks of the SatanIc hierarchy. The behavior of Robert Chanler, Elizabeth Chanler and Armstrong Chanler have ail the classic earmarks of having MPD, and having suffered SRA. The Rokeby mansion that the Chanler family lived in was a haunted house of the first rate. Fairies, ghosts, signs and potents, and all type of occult activity takes place at this mansion, When top rx-Illuminati members who have managed to escape Satanism describe their home life, they mention that occult phenomena was a natural part of home life. This certainly is what life has been lIke at the Chanler Rokeby mansion. The Chaniers are not well known publicly but have been part of the social scene of the elite. Theodore Roosevelt and Senator Henry Cabot Lodge (of the elite Cabot family) were good friends of the Chanlers. The Chanlers created the town Roanoke Rapids, North Carolina. (At some point I hope to do an expose on the resort area in that general area that is a "meat market" for the Illuminati. Families like the Bill Clinton's go down there every year for vacation to mingle with other middle management families that the Illuminati use as lackeys. Illuminati "scouts" watch and choose who they want to use for political office, etc.) A Who's Who of the Astor orphans--the Chanier family who are of interest to our study of the Illuminati will now be given.

John Armstrong Chanler-married mystic novelist and morphine addict Amelie Rives. "Once wandering in the twilight she asked wistfully, "Do you think If I drank a whole cupful of warm, bubbly blood, I would see a real fairy" ... Then there had been the period during which she suffered anguish over the thought that Satan was banished from Paradise forever; she prayed with tears that ultimately he might be pardoned and readmitted to celestial bliss." (Thomas, Lately. The Astor Orphans: A Pride of Lions p. 76.) John carried on spiritual experiments in what he termed "esoteric buddhism". Due to his obsession with this practice and a business fight with his brothers they put him in an insane asylum. He finally did get released. One has to wonder what the whole story was behind the incarceration. HIs esoteric buddhism or "x-faculty" was a trance state where a spirit spoke or did automatic writing through him. His eye color would change when this spirit worked through him.

Margaret Livingston Chanler retained the rights to Rokeby. She married into the Aldrich family, which is another Illuminati family. The Aidriches now own Rokeby.

William Chanler was a friend of Tom Foley who was the Tammany district leader of the Irish-Italian district east of city hall. Another friend was Jack Follansbee. Jack Follansbee's cousin was WillIam Randolf Hearst, an Illuminatus of the 6° who got Billy Graham's ministry going by financing the first several years. The Hearst family is in the Illuminati. One of the Rothschild descendants Don Hearst Bauer, has changed his name to Don Hearst.

Winthrop Chanler's wife, Amelie Rive, her father William Cabell Rives studied law under Thomas Jefferson.

THE ROOSEVELT CONNECTION

The Roosevelt family has been connected to the Delano family which Is a Black Venetian Noble family that goes back for many centuries. The lives of these families also intertwine with the Astors. Examples of the interweaving are:

· Franklin Hughes Delano--heir to a massive whale oil fortune. He married
Lavia Astor, daughter of the original William Buckhouse Astor.
· James Roosevelt Roosevelt-married Helen Astor, daughter of William
Backhouse, Jr.
· James Roosevelt--a Freemason, he married the sister of Vincent Astor's wife.

SUMMARY

In our revisit to the Astors, we have examined in more detail the early life of John Jacob Astor and his connections to Satanism. We have touched on his son and grandson who led the Astor famIly after John Jacob died. We have seen more of their meanness and connections to corruption. We examined bow Satanism and the occult had a hold on England even back when John Jacob Astor came to the New World. Three important occult organizations of the 17th & 18th century were introduced. We have looked at the Chanler family, a branch of the Astor family which is part of Satanism. We also looked at how the Roosevelts and Delano families have been associated with the Astors.

Bloodlines of Illuminati

By

Fritz Springmeier, 1995

Families in the world who are allied with the Illuminati.

Who and what kind of family are allied with the top 13 llluminati bloodlines? The Iliuminati seeks to capture the occult power of powerful occult bloodlines around the world. They have intermarried with American Indians to gain the spiritual power resident within the leading spiritual American Indians. Various Indian reservations are used for llluminati rituals. They have been doing this type of thing for thousands of years

Powerful families around the world participate on different levels with the Illuminati. Some participate on a business level- such as the various crime (Mafia type) families around the world. Mafia families might not subscribe to the occult philosophy but they do recognize power and business. Some powerful families around the world participate simply on the level that they have been sucked into the world's system and are dependent upon going along with the flow of the world's system. An example of this would be the King of Nepal. The King of Nepal rules aver a poor Hindu kingdom. The British empire has done a great job in trying to make Nepal dependent upon them. Nepal was given British protection, their leading families were given British educations, and their leading tribe of warriers, the Gurkhas have been serving as British mercenaries. Should the King of Nepal break loose from his advisers and take an anti-NWO track, his throne could be taken away via revolution, or invasion. The NWO has the capacity to arrange for the Indian Congress Party to invade or some other destablizing factor. The British MI-6 and the American CIA have also stationed assets (agents) in the country. However, the trump card in sucking nations like Nepal in, is to create conflict like the Cold War and then apply Hegelian dialectics. Many nations around the world have been forced to cosy up with the British and Americans, because of the cold war. Secretly manufactured and secretly controlled international conflicts are a great way to take away the independence of some of the smaller nations. The King of Nepal has for many years feared invasions from either India or China.

However, Switzerland has been afforded the luxury of not having to take sides in the Illuminati's secretly created wars, because the bloodlines have had such total control over Switzerland for so many centuries. There is no need for Switzerland to participate in Hegelian dialectics.

If families are powerful but not in the Illuminati's clique, they can be destroyed such as Howard Hugh was. An example of this is how the Rothschilds progressively destroyed the Romanovs (the Russian Imperial Family). But the Romanovs were also an occult bloodline, and so the IlIuminati secretly took children of the Imperial family to serve as breeders for the IlIuminati so that the Illuminati could channel in the Romanov's occult blood into their bloodlines.

The families that control Switzerland go back to Venice. Some of the Phnariot families of the Byzantine have had enduring powerful lineages. The Venetian and Genoese banker/international commerce families have produced some enduring powerful lineages. Families from these groups have tended toward Satanism (Gnosticism) or cults that are not Christian. In this category, we can mention Darius Socinus of Venice. Note also that the Warburgs, who work so closely with the Rothschilds, are descendents of Abraham del Banco, an old banker in Venice. The Warburgs in turn are related to the Rosenbergs of Kiev, Russia. Some of your old aristocratic Russian occult bloodlines were the first to financially help Hitler's fledgling Nazi Party.

The powerful bloodlines diversify into different last names, but some of them still have enough visibility that they can be halfway tracked by their modern names. For instance, the Cabot Family of

Boston are descendents of Sebastian Cabot who was born in Venice. Sebastian Cabot (who father was John Cabot) was in turn descended from Giovanni Caboto of Genoa. Giovannia Caboto was a member of a powerful family in Genoa. In modern times, the Cabot family has been active in politics and intelligence agencies for the NWO. For instance, Thomas D. Cabot set up Radio Swan on Swan Island for the CIA. Paul Cabot was a director of J.P. Morgan & Co., beside director of other corporations that interlock with the Illuminati's power.

Your ruling families in Western Europe tie back to William of Orange. There is a powerful arabic connection to the Illuminati. Men like Sirdar Ikbal Ali Shah are very knowledgable about arab magic and occult practices. Sirdar Ikball Ali Shah has written at least 70 books on magic and occultism. These families keep track of their genealogies, and certain members of these occult families know the histories of these families.

I believe that a history of the top thirteen llluminati families is the key to understanding history. Many of the families which appear to be „allied" with the top families are actually related at some point back in time. Further, many of the allied families are top level flunkies for the families with the real power. Some people have tried to put the Rothschilds in this category, but such thinking is nonsense. Not only do I have too many eyewitnesses who have come from the inside of the IlIuminati who say the Rothschilds are one of the top, but one can also point to how much control and wealth the Rothschilds exercise. The process of history has been to increase their control and wealth. The overall picture can't be denied. The Rothschilds are not flunkies for some other more powerful family.

I believe that an investigator will do himself a favor in tracking down the ties a family has with the top bloodlines and how that family interacts with the top families. This is the principle behind why history books discuss royalty so much. All that I encourage is that people investigate Satan's royalty in order to understand how Satan's realm- the power behind the scenes operates.

In the Be Wise As Serpents book I gave a good example of how Satan's realm works behind the scenes. The Illuminati control the Watchtower Society. The nominal head of the WT Society for many years was their President Fred Franz. Yet, Fred Franz had grown very old, was blind and stayed in his bed. Natheer Salih was supposedly Fred Franz's bodyguard and helper, but all communications to WT President Fred Franz had to go through 6'2" Natheer Salih, who would supposedly ask Franz and then would come back with an answer. Apparently Salih may be from an Iraqi Jewish bloodline. He wears big rings and has expensive tastes. Salih was the channel through whom the llluminati could pass their decisions for the WT onto the Governing Body and Bethel staff.

The Bundy Bloodline

(My knowledge and research is limited. So much more work can be done to uncover the evil works of darkness that collaborate to destroy the Christian faith. Hopefully articles like this will serve as spotlights on the Jekylls and Hyde that ravage our land. And that seeing their opponents better, Christians will avoid the many secret spiritual undertows that drown so many.) In the 1980s one of the most famous criminals was a serial killer named Ted (Theodore) R. Bundy. It is not publicly known why he killed so many innocent victims. Ted Bundy told his girlfriend Elizabeth Kendall that "the force" caused him to kill. Bundy's confession to her was given after his final arrest in Florida. Elizabeth wrote down his confession as he gave it to her over the phone. Ted said, "I don't have a split personality. I don't have blackouts. I remember everything I've done. Like Lake Sammamish. We went out to Farrell's for ice cream after eating hamburgers. It wasn't like I had forgotten or couldn't remember, but it was just over...gone...the force wasn't pushing me any more. I don't understand it. The force would just consume me." (Kendall, Elizabeth. The Phantom Prince My Life with Ted Bundy. Seattle: Madrona Publishers, 1981, p.176) "The force" is the very term that high level Satanists use to describe the power that they believe in, which they believe can be used for either good or evil. The movie Star Wars surprisingly used the Illuminati's term "the force", which up until that time had been reserved for esoteric use by Satanism and the occult. This is part of the plan to take the occult and its goals and instill it into the public's thinking and goals, so that the conspiracy becomes an "open conspiracy" with the general public promoting the drive toward witchcraft as the world religion and its One-World-Government.

Who was Ted, and why did he do what he did? There are a great number of unknowns about Ted. And although it appears to the public that the newspapers covered his crimes thoroughly, often appearances can be very deceiving. If Ted Bundy was reiated to the Bundy Family of the hierarchy, we could expect several things almost without doubt, 1. that his Satanic activities and any occult connotations to the murders would be kept very secret by the police, the newspapers, and his family, 2. that information about the case and Ted Bundy would be closely contained. Interestingly, when I recently went to research Ted Bundy, every copy (all four of them) of the book Ted Bundy: Conversations with a Killer by Stephen G. Michaud had been stolen from the Portland Central Library. One of the other books on him was also missing, and the other was overdue. The University library which is on a different library network was just as bad. I did my research across the border in Washington state. Another category of books that is consistently stolen I have been told by the library staff are books on Freemasonry. Consequently, the Portland Central Library has a policy that interlibrary loan books on Freemasonry cannot be taken out of the library, even though the lending library doesn't mind if they are checked out. Another example of how books relating to Satanism or the Satanic conspiracy become rare is when I checked the Thurston Co. WA library's computerized system for Anton LeVey's Satanic Bible. Of the system's 18 copies, 14 were lost (I assume stolen), one was listed "trace", and three were being held by the libraries (that is, they were not out on the shelves).

Before proceeding any further, let me categorically state that I haven't found anything that ties Ted Bundy in with the top Satanic family of the Bundys, nor have I found anything that disproves it either. I don't know either way. Still there are some interesting items about Theodore Bundy. (Perhaps someone else will be motivated do the genealogy work, and save me the work.) Ted was a law student. One of the schools he studied law at was University of Puget Sound, WA. A major reason he did so poorly in law school was the immense stress that took place in his life in connection to the time and effort he put into murdering beautiful women. Yet, his poor academic performances were no barrier to his political success. Ted does have a number of items that seem suspicious. First, Ted drove all the way from Washington state to Miami, FL to take part in Nelson Rockefeller's 1968 campaign. He was a big Rockefeller fan. Ted was appointed Assistant Chairman of the Washington State Republican Central Committee, Ted travelled in elite social circles, and was preparing for a campaign for Ted to run for State Governor. For instance in 1973, he was part of the Republican State Committee. He may have been on this committee in other years too. (Ironically, Ted Bundy had served briefly on the Seattle Crime Commission on a Study of White Collar Crime.) For whatever reasons-whether it be elite connections or his winning personality, it is certain that he had a big political career in front of him as a young person if he had not blown things. Second, almost all the serial killers have had connections to Satanism and in every case the media and the police have suppressed or greatly downplayed their connections to Freemasonry and Satanism. For instance, Charles Manson (Freemason, O.T.O. & Satanism), Sam of Sam Berkowitz (O.T.O. & Satanism), Jack the Ripper (Freemason), and Henry Lee Lucas (Satanism). Could it be that Ted Bundy had a Satanic side to him? I haven't seen anything that shows that he wasn't a Satanist. He did join the Mormon church during the middle of time period of years when he was murdering innocent women, but his motive for joining certainly had nothing to do with sincerely serving God.

I have learned that Ted had an interest in Astrology. Perhaps the closest person to Ted Bundy, his longtime girlfriend Elizabeth Kendall, wrote in her book The Phantom Prince My Life with Ted Bundy that she didn't know why he brutally killed so many women. She was aware that he liked bondage-type sexual arrangements. But the inner workings of Ted's mind were a mystery to her. And Ted was capable of some of the biggest lying and yet coming across totally honest. (This type of lying goes on everyday by the Illuminati members who as a habit make boldface lies to the public.) Ted Bundy was adopted by his father Johnnie Bundy, who was a dentist in the northwest area of Washington State. What is this main branch of Bundy's that we are speculating that Ted's father might or might not be tied to? The original Bundy family came to the New World before 1635 to Boston, MS. A few years later they moved to Taunton, MS. A large branch of these Bundys went to Connecticut, and later a few went on to New York. Another group of colonial American Bundys were in North Carolina. The particular members of the Bundy family that are prominent in the New World Order today, are the one's who would have inherited the position of authority over the family if Satanic tradition had been followed. The Bundy family was an old American family that was part of the Eastern establishment, but with only a few exceptions like Congressman Solomon Bundy in the early 19th century, the family has only come into the public's eye during the twentieth century. This family also surfaces in not so prominent places too. Two of the key early Watchtower Society leaders were Bundys. These were Walter H. Bundy, who went with Charles Taze Russell to Great Britain on his May 29-31, 1909 trip, and Edwin Bundy who worked at the Bethel Headquarter at the turn of the century and travelled around the U.S. for the Watchtower Society from 1906 to 1910. The following is my own Who's Who of the Bundy Illuminati family. After this list introducing our cast of characters, this article will get back to discussing the Bundys.

WHO'S WHO OF THE BUNDYS

Eric Bundy- Placed in charge of the prisoner Howard Hughes by the llluminati family of Onassis. More about this later.

Eugene H. Bundy-lawyer, judge (1889-1896), V.Pres. & dir. Central Trust & Savings Co., banking ties, dir.Industrial Co., partner Bundy & Jones, chairman Exec. comm. of the Republican state central committee in 1898 and 1900, Knights of Pythias,Order of Red Men, Order of Elks,Episcop.

Frederick McGeorge Bundy--Skull & Bones (init. 1921), chrmn. North Atlantic Fillet Council

Harriet Lowell Bundy--married Skull & Bones member Gasper d' Andelot Belin (init. 1939 with Harriet's brother).

Harvey Hollister Bundy (1888-1963)-- Skull & Bones (init.1909), Special Ass. to Sec. of War Stimson (Skull & Bones), law clerk for Justice Oliver Wendell Holmes, Key Pentagon man on the Manhattan Project, sec. of U.S. Sugar Equilization Board, chrmn Panama Railway Co, (in the U.S.'s Canal Zone), chrmn. Boston Personal Property Trust, dir. Boston Five Cents Savings Bank, dir. State Street and Union Trust Companies, dir. New England Merchants, dir. R.M. Bradiey Co. In 1952, he became the chairman of the Carnegie Endowment for International Peace, chrmn Foreign Bondholders Protective Council, trustee & pres. of World Peace Foundation, chairmn Wellesly College, chairman of the New England Rhodes Scholarships Selection Committee, member Century Assoc., and some other things. Unitarian.

Harry W. Bundy--Mason, Satanist, and Chief Adept (9°) of SRICF

Harvey Hollister Bundy, Jr.--possibly init. in one of the other Yale Secret societies, banker.

Katherine Lawrence Bundy--daughter of Harvey Hollister, *Sr.*

McGeorge Bundy (1919-)--MJ-12, Skull & Bones (init. 1940), C.F.R., President Ford Foundation, Bilderberger, Special Assistant to Presidents Kennedy and Johnson on National Security Affairs--National Security Advisor.

Robert Bundy--edited Images of the Future: The 21st Century & Beyond.

William Putnam Bundy (1917-)--Skull and Bones (Init. 1939), C.F.R, CIA (1951-61, once CIA always CIA), editor of CFR's Foreign Affairs (1972- *),* member of the PERMANENT STEERING COMMITEE of the Bilderbergers, Ass. Sec. of State, Far Eastern Affairs '64-69, 1960 Staff Dir. of Presidential Commission on National Goals, Prof. MIT (1969-71), part of the law firm of Covington & Burling which represents many of the Illuminati elite in Washington, D.C..

OTHER PROMINENT BUNDY’S INCLUDE...

Charles Alan Bundy-- foundation executive, manager of several companies, pres. Springs Foundation, & pres. Close Found., China, S.C. Parks, Recreation and Tourism Comma., mem. S.C. Coordinating Council for Econ. Dvel, Rotary Club Pres., chrmn bd.lst Meth. Church (1978-79)

Charles H. Bundy--Sec. of Frost Foundation

Charles W. Bundy--Sec. of Cornelius Foundation

Edwin S. Bundy--business executive, Cornell Univ., Century Assoc.

Hezekiah Sanford Bundy--Congressman, lawyer, Jonas Mills Bundy--founder & ed. in chief of NY Evening Mail (newspaper), close friend of Pres. Garfield, law degree Harvard

Omar Bundy--West Pointer, General William Edgar Bundy--US. attry So. Dist., trustee Ohio University, editor of some journals

WHAT IS SO POWERFUL ABOUT THE BUNDYS?

Most Americans would not recognize the Bundy family as a powerful elite family. However, during recent history two Bundy brothers held the key positions that controlled most of the information that was fed to U.S. Presidents during the Kennedy and Johnson administrations. When Johnson took over after J.F. Kennedy was assassinated McGeorge Bundy was in the key position as Nat. Sec. Advisor to determine what the President did and didn’t hear. His brother was in a key State Dept. position. Both Bundy brothers were also fraternal brothers of the Illuminati Order of the Skull and Bones. Interestingly, Jonas Mills Bundy (1835-1891) was a key advisor to President Grant, President Garfield, and President Chester A. Arthur. McGeorge Bundy and his brother William P. Bundy have held important CFR and important Bilderberger positions. This in itself makes it clear that the position and power of these two men is extensive. McGeorge Bundy sat on MJ-12, which is the council of wise men that rules the United States. (See Be Wise As Serpents chptr. 2.13 for an explanation about what MJ-12 is and documentation). United States has been the most powerful nation overall on the earth, so without a doubt McGeorge has had both great public-known and great secret power. The three most prominent Bundys to write about are Harvey Hollister Bundy, Sr., William P. Bundy, and McGeorge Bundy. We will now take a look at these three along with Eric Bundy, who was given a key position in a sinister plot to steal all wealth and power of Howard Hughes. and Harry W. Bundy, who was a chief adept of one branch of the Illuminati.

HARVEY HOLLISTER BUNDY SR.

His grandfather was a lawyer and a Congressman, and his father was a lawyer. Harvey also became a lawyer. But he didn’t stop there. Harvey was initiated in the Skull & Bones in 1909. After his law degree he did some world travelling. Then in 1914, he began working for Justice Wendall Holmes. Later in 1929, Alger Hiss (CFR) also began working for Justice Holmes. Hiss was a communist spy and later a key player during F.D. Roosevelt’s reign. Harvey’s son William P. narrowly missed having his career ruined because William had financially helped Alger Hiss. Harvey had five children. Three of these had ties to the Skull and Bones Order also.

Harvey became the Ass. Secretary of State 1n July, 1931 until Mar. 1933 under Henry Lewis Stimson. Secretary of State H.L. Stimson was also a Skull & Bones member (init. 1888) Harvey’s son McGeorge would co-author a book with Stimson entitled On Active Service in Peace and War in 1940. Harvey was special legal assistant to the U.S. Secretary of the Treasury. Harvey became the Special Assistant to the Secretary of War during W.W. II. He travelled with the Sec. of War overseas numerous times. It is often said 1f you want to know where the real power lies look at a man ‘s advisors. Here we see Harvey giving advice to the US. secretary of and Bones pp. 49-50 where be give. various reasons why Covington & Burling are highly suspected of left-wing activity.) William began his War during the United States' largest military challenge in history. Harvey was one of the most key figures 1n the supervision of the Manhattan Project developing the Atom bomb. He was the key Pentagon man. He did liaison work between the War Dept. and Office of Scientific Research and Development. In *1952,* Harvey took over the Carnegie Endowment for Peace from John Foster Dulles. The Carnegie Endowment for Peace has been a major vehicle for the Illuminati to finance tax free various projects. In 1971 for instance, the Carnegie Endowment for Peace spent over $2 million, and had assets of $41 million. The stated object of the foundation is "to promote international peace." This is the type of peace that President George Bush told the United Nations that the world needed. Skull and Bones member George Bush informed the U.N. that a One-World-Government peace was needed by the world. Harvey got the job at Carnegie because Alger Hiss had been convicted of perjury. John Foster Dulles was on record recommending Alger Hiss to replace himself. (See Eleanor, Allen. and John Foster Dulles and Their Family Network by Leonard Mosley, p. 311.) The various men who run the various Carnegie Foundations work with the Rockefellers.

WILLIAM P. BUNDY

William P. Bundy started out his career 1n 1947 working for Covington & Burling which is a firm that represents many of the Illuminati in Washington, D.C. Covington & Burling appears to have been a conduit for the Iliuminati to create a left-wing political movement in the US. (Read Antony Sutton's book America's Secret Establishment An Introduction to the Order of Skull career working for the CIA at this time (1947), and in 1951 he quit Covington & Burling to begin openly working for the CIA as an analyst, and then as assistant to the deputy director of the CIA. His job as assistant required him to get Atomic Energy Clearance. In 1953, Joe McCarthy had caught onto the New World Order. Although the history books and papers report that he was "commie" hunting, If one reads Joe McCarthy's own words it is clear be was gunning for the New World Order. Senator Joe McCarthy subpoenaed William Bundy to testify. The Senator knew he could expose a great deal if William P. Bundy was questioned, eyen if he might try to lie. The calling card to get the subpoena was the fact that William had donated at least $500 to help communist spy Hiss defend himself. Hiss's brother Donald worked for Covington & Burling when William was there, and Alger had worked at the firm William's Dad had worked at. McCarthy sent down many subpoenas but Allen Dulles, who was part of the llluminati and the CIA director ignored the subpoenas, and eventually was able to get William P. out of the country so that he would not have to face McCarthy's questions. The State Dept. was going to arrest William P. at the dock as he was trying to escape on the Queen Mary, but Alien Dulles was able to get the State Dept. to call off the arrest, and William P. Bundy sailed. McCarthy wrote Allen Dulles, "I note your refusal to give us any answers to our questions. Your insistence is very revealing.

It would seem that the last man in the world who would try to protect and hide the facts about one of his top officer's [Bundy] association with, and contributions to, a convicted traitor would be the head of the CIA. I think it necessary for me to call your attention to the tremendous damage you thereby do to this organization. That the matter cannot and will not rest here is, of course, obvious.' (A Biogranhy of Eleanor. Allen. and John Foster Dulles and their family network by Leonard Mosley, p.322) Lou Russell who was an important figure in the House Un-American Activities Committee (HUAC) was part of the Illuminati power structure. This is something one wouldn't expect. It appears like some of the men McCarthy thought were on his side weren't. While the Hiss/Bundy affair led to McCarthy (a genuine patriot) being killed and discredited, someone else who was a socialist and lackey of the CFR was given wide publicity as an anti-communist hero from what happened to Hiss. Funny how the credit is distributed by the establishment media. This socialist was Richard Nixon (CFR). He was given false credit for convicting Hiss (CFR) to build a false public image as an anti-communist crusader. Nixon did not do the footwork etc., to get Hiss convicted contrary to the false image the establishment newspapers and history books give. Later, protected by his "anti-communist" mask, Nixon would recognize Red China, among many other pro-communist NWO acts. By trying to subject a member of one of the top 13 Illuminati families to Congressional questioning, McCarthy had signed his death warrant. It was not long before the Illuminati killed McCarthy. And they have dragged this great patriot's name through the mud. Skull and Bones George Bush was still taking pot shots at Joe McCarthy during the 1992 Presidential campaign. William P. Bundy commented on the help Allen Dulles gave him throughout the Hiss affair with the following words, "I guess there was an element of tribal loyalty in the way Allen handled this, that he knew me, he knew my brother, a sort of fellow feeling-a feeling for the comradeship of the CIA but also a tribal feeling toward a set of people who were in law firms, entered government when the need was felt, could be invited back to the house." Yes, that set of people is called the Illuminati. In 1960, William P. Bundy while still with the CIA was placed as the Staff Director of the mew Presidential Commission on National Goals. If national goals are seriously being set, then that implies that something is happening above and beyond the american people voting at the voting booths, congressmen voting at the Capital, and the market place simply functioning. Indeed there is a guiding hand behind events which is taking us down a preplanned route to achieve Illuminati goals. Bundy's Commission on National Goals set down goals that are Hegelian philosophy. The goals state that the individual has a duty to advance the will of the state, and that the state "is to stimulate changes of attitude ... The American citizen in the years ahead ought to devote a larger portion of his time and energy directly to solution of the nation's problems...many ways are open for citizens to participate in the attainment of national goals." (America's Secret Establishment. p.50)

ERIC BUNDY

The Illuminati uses what is called Hegelian philosophy. A thesis is set up. An antithesis (the opposite of the thesis) is then set up, and then out of the conflict of the two comes the synthesis. Hegelian philosophy is really a fancy term for what the Illuminati were doing before the term was invented. To bring this all down to street terms, the Illuminati's Mafia (yes the Illuminati created and runs the Mafia) would send businessmen a letter demanding money and signed with the imprint of a black hand. (This was the thesis). If the demand wasn't met then the business would be burned or the businessman hurt. Then the Mafia would introduce themselves as potential protectors for the businessman from the black hand extortioners (themselves). (This is the antithesis). And when the businessman begins paying the Mafia for protection that is the synthesis. The lluminati are doing this tactic all over the world, and it certainly has almost everyone fooled. Mafia strongman Sam Giancana (birth name Momo Salvatore Guingano) had a girlfriend Judith Exner that J.F. Kennedy (a member of one of the top 13 Illuminati families) spent regular time with sexually. Giancana also had a friend named Robert Mayheu who worked under Stavros Niarchos of the Onassis family. Stavros Niarchos is a Bilderberger and a nephew of Aristotle Onassis. The Onassis family, - of the top 13 lluminati families, runs the Mafia. Robert Mayheu worked for Giancana and the CIA. Why was a CIA agent willing to help Giancana?-weil as I indicated in other places the CIA is run by the top Illuminati families, and so is the Mafia. This CIA agent, or Mafia man, or Illuminati henchman whatever you want to call Robert Mayheu shows up in the details of the Kennedy Assassination and the kidnapping of billionaire Howard Hughes. Robert Mayheu and other men like him had infiltrated Howard Hughes' organization prior to the kidnapping. In Mar. 1957, a wing or branch of the Illuminati under Onassis (commonly known as the mob or mafia) kidnapped the upstart billionaire and genius Howard Hughes. Now do you see what happens to competition to the Illuminati Top 13 families. Either you join the them, or you are destroyed. Satan must keep his organization intact. From the best inside information I have obtained concerning this area of Illuminati activity, apparentiy two -who were look-alike. to Howard Hughes were used. The reason two were used will be explained. First, because the "Howard Hughes' (actually L Wayne Rector) who on rare occasions showed himself was a fake the Iliuminati wanted to keep him out of the public eye as much as possible, so it made sense to have another double. The natural story was that because Howard Hughes was so reclusive, he had hired Hollywood actor Brooks Randall to be his double to keep newsmen, and other snoops from following him. When Howard Hughes (L. Wayne Rector) would go out, then the decoy (Brooks Randall) would be employed to keep photographers, process servers and private detectors away from the Illuminati's real "Howard Hughes" (L. Wayne Rector). It was Robert Mayheu that hired Brooks Randall. And working with Mayheu and somewhat over Robert Mayheu was Eric Bundy was given oversight of the day to day operations involving the control of their prisoner Howard Hughes, who most likely died in 1971, and whose public death was 1975. For those wanting an official "paper trail" see Senate Report No. 94-465 entitled "Alleged Assassination Plots involving Foreign Leaders", 11/20/75, p. 74 where Mayheu's role is talked about in the death of Onassis. One of Mayheu's top men was Lou Russell, who- besides working for Mayheu, the CIA, the Onassis family-was the person who bandied the security and investigative needs of the Republican National Committee (RNC), and Russell was with the company that provided security for the Watergate complex when it burgiared. The Russell family is a top 13 family. The Russell family will of course have its own turn to have an article about them in this newsletter. It is Lou Russell who helped Nixon get Hiss convicted. Was McCarthy and Hiss used? It appears so. John Smith now puts out the theory contained in his book Alger Hiss: The True Story which claims Alger Hiss was framed. So we have come full circle. The communist agent that almost ruined William P. Bundy's career, because Bundy was Alger Hiss's and Donald Hiss's friend, is now exonerated by a book written by an establishment researcher.

MCGEORGE BUNDY

Antony C. Sutton does an excellent iob in his book on the Skull & Bones Order in describing how McGeorge Bundy received preferential treatment all through his life. Consistently, McGeorge Bundy got jobs for which there were thousands of better candidates. McGeorge Bundy went to Yale where he was initiated into the Skull & Bones in 1940. McGeorge then went to Harvard. After this McGeorge joined the army as a private. Very few privates ever achieve the rate of promotion that McGeorge received. Within a year after joining as a private, McGeorge was promoted to captain. Not only was he made a captain he was placed on staff to plan the logistics and other details of the invasion of Sicily and the Normandy Invasion. That is honestly fantastic. How can a greenhorn without experience have the experience to know how much supplies, etc. are needed for a certain operation? Bear in mind, that these calculations are for battles in which the wrong combination of supplies could mean death or defeat for a unit. As Sutton points out on pg. 51, "Can a 23-year. old, with no military experience, undertake planning for amphibious operations? The answer is obviously no, even if his father (The Order) is in the Pentagon as an aide to the Secretary of War (The Order)." After the war McGeorge continues his phenomenal climb from job to bigger job, often with no credentials. 1945. He becomes assistant to the Secretary of War and co-authors a book with Stimson.

Then McGeorge without any experience or credentials in economics becomes a consultant to the Economic Cooperation Administration. Then he becomes foreign policy analyst for Presidential candidate Thomas Dewey. Christians may recognize from the instruction that the Bible gives that pride warps our abilities to accurately see. How much pride has been installed in men like McGeorge that they feel comfortable to hop from one unqualified position to another and to make weighty decisions.

1949- Bundy was invited to Harvard University to teach as an assistant professor and in four years is made the Dean of the Faculty of Arts and Sciences at Harvard! How does anyone become Dean of a prestigious University department after four years of teaching. Not only has McGeorge been treated as if he is an instant military genius, an economic whiz, now he is bead of the arts and sciences. Bundy becomes the National Security Advisor. From 1961 to 1966 he is the Special Assistant for National Security Affairs to the President. This gives him great control over what the Presidents are told. For instance on pages 177-178, Sutton quotes a conversation between McGeorge Bundy, Dean Achison (Scroll & Key-another llluminati initiation point), and President Kennedy recorded in a memorandum. President Kennedy is lead to believe that the United States has deserted its ally of Portugal to aid nationalists in Angola, when in fact the US. was supporting Marxist guerrillas (that is communist guerrillas). In 1966, McGeorge was appointed President of the Ford Foundation, another Illuminati foundation that is promoting their agenda. McGeorge brought in Harold Howe II to be Vice. President, a position that Howe was unqualified for, except that Howe was a Skull & Bones brother and was a team player that would help promote the New World Order agenda with its Hegelian philosophy and socialism. Both of the Fords on the Foundation board resigned in disgust at the way these Skull and Boners were using the Ford Foundation.

HARRY W. BUNDY

Harry W. Bundy was a Mason, a Satanist and the chief adept (9°) of the Colorado part of the SRICF. To clarify to the reader what this all means allow me to inform you about the structures Satan has built. Pure Satanism in order to function easier has set up some branches which are secret, but if the public hears about these branches, they have a veneer of respectability. Dr. Wynn Westcott, a famous Satanist and the Supreme Magus of S.R.I.A. wrote the rare book History of The Societas Rosicruciana in Anglia. *IX*. It was privately printed by these Masonic Rosicruclans on Dec. 30, 1900, and later received the Br. Museum Press Mark of 0475 h54. Within this rare book the leader of the S.R.I.A. spells out the purpose of the organization to the Brotherhood, "The aim of the Society...searching out the secrets of Nature; to facilitate the study of the system of philosophy founded upon the Cabala and the doctrines of Hermes Trismegistus ..." Hermes Trismegistus (as many of you know) means "the trice greatest Hermes" who was the Egyptian scribe god who is claimed to be the author of all magical writing. Hermes is credited for the grossly evil Satanic-witchcraft rituals that the ancient Egyptians and modern Satanism continue to practice. For an excellent exposé of the connections between the Egyptian Book of the Dead, Masonic Rituals and modern Satanism, I suggest David Carrico's book The Masonic Egyptian Satanic Connection. (obtainable from Followers of Jesus Christ, 5220 Ashley Dr., Evansville, IN 47711). As I was just writing, a number of branches of the Illuminati were created with the same pattern as the Bavarian Illuminati, and these branches sometimes refer to themselves as Illuminati-and rightly so since they are integral part of Satanism. One branch has been set up within .

Freemasonry called Societas Rosicruciana. They coil themselves Rosicruciana and Christians. How they attach the aame of Christ to Satanism, is beyond my imagination. Perhaps the "Christ consciousness they seek justifies in their minds calling themselves "exclusively Christian." Whatever they want to coil themselves they practice magic and Satanism.

A number of daughter organizations have sprung up from the S.R.I.A. such as the Golden Dawn, the Stella Matutina and the Ordo Templi Orientis (OTO). The S.R.I.A. also worked closely with German Illuminism and the Theosophical Society. In England the Societas Rosicruciana (S.R.) is named S.R. in Anglia, in Scotland it is S.R. in Scotia, in Greece it is S.R. in Graecia, in Canada it is S.R. in Canada, and in the US. it is S.R. in Civitatibus Foederatis. The membership is very exclusive. And my understanding that there are about a dozen US. lodges called "colleges" with about 40 members each, which lends me to guess they have an exclusive membership of about 500 in the United States. Membership in Societas Rosicruciana has included such notable Satanists such as A.L Waite, Eliphas Levi, and Kenneth Mackenzie. It has included that Luciferian Albert Pike too. Within a nation the arena are divided up into provinces, each of which has a "college"-their fancy word for a satanic lodge. On Apr. 20, 1948 Harry W. Bundy became the chief adept of the Colorado college. Two letters by the Supreme Magus of all the S.R. groups Win. Wynn Wescott are photocopied so that the reader can read for himself from the SRIA's Supreme Magus (lending magician) that they are connected to the Illuminati. See for yourself!! An interesting point in light of what I have printed in other newsletters, the Mass. college in 1393 printed a book by its Supreme Magus Gould (9°) which declares that the Grand Central San of the Universe is Alcyone in the Pliades. Shades of Alice Dailey, and C.T. Russell!! One of the most knowledgeable people to try to expose the New World Order and the Satanic hierarchy behind it said, "It remains for the student to follow evvery line of enquiry to the point of concentration where nil threads are gathered and systematically manipulated for the eventual destruction of Christian civilization. It may lend to the B'nai B'rith, the Universal Israelite Alliance, India or Tibet, but in any case a thorough and complete study of Rosicrucianism embracing a minute one of Rosicruciana in Anglia and its various branches will be a great step taken in the direction of uncovering much of the political and moral chaos of present day history of mankind." p.510)

Interesting, that this expert would say this. The threads go buck to 13 Top Families, and wouldn't you know, several of their people are lenders of the S.R.I.A. including Harry W. Bundy. The Bundy family has been a very powerful family in American history which has managed to keep itself out of the limelight. Often the members d the Bundy's have had power by virtue of being advisors to those in powerful positions.

P.s.

Congressman Reece, a real hero tried to go farther & expose the connections between Hiss, tho Carnegie Endowment Found., the Morgan Bank, and the rest of the tax-exempt foundations. The Illuminati moved mightily against Reece.

SIMPLIFIED BIBLIOGRAPHY

Almanac of Famous People Census Records

National Cyclopaedia d American Biography Sutton, Antony. America's

Order of Skull & Bones Voorhis, Harold (Sapreme Magus IX°). Masonic
Rosicrucian Societies.

Bloodlines of Illuminati

By

Fritz Springmeier, 1995

THE COLLINS BLOODLINE

The next family in our series of articles on the top 13 Illuminati families is the Collins family, The first two have been the Astor family and the Bundy family. The first two articles were fairly straightforward. Both the Astor and Bundy families have been written about by others, and I had more information on both families than I needed for my articles. In fact I left out worthwhile details in both artides in order to keep the articles to a comfortable length. In this Collins article, there will be some padding." In terms of research on the Collins family from a scale from 0 to 100, I'm about at 10. There are some hard connections that will be presented and some soft connections. Joan Collins is what I'd call a soft connection. She has associated with a long list of key Illuminati men and at least a few known Satanists, but this is only the barest of dues that she might have anything to do with the Illuminati herself. Let me give some of the hard connections first.

The following is a description of a highly secret high level Satanic meeting. It comes via an ex-insider who is now a Christian. If any other ex-hierarchy person is reading this, perhaps this will trigger some memories for you. This experience dates to 1955. This is a meeting that is held twice yearly, and to which the Rothschilds and all the mother families attend. The meeting is inside in a big room, and the Grande Mother on the throne was a Collins. The Collins family has been kept out of the limelight because they have more occult power than the Rothschilds or the Rockefellers. To make money this Collins family does something financially, such as deal with the exchange of money. I've noticed that numerous Collins have been Insurance Executives, and although I haven't exposed the connections between Insurance Companies and the NWO, there is a book out which shows how they most insurance companies are connected and under the guidance of the NWO elite. The Grande Mother Collins dressed in black has an ebony and gold moon shaped throne that she can automatically rotate by pushing a pedal with her foot. Behind her sits the Grand Council with 13 members --this might be or might not be the Grand Druid Council that you will read about further on. The difference between this council in 1955 is that it was all males, while the council in 1978 has several women on it.. The Grande Mother, a Collins woman was thought to be in her middle 50's at the time of this meeting, she had a deep dictatorial voice, was small in stature, and was very powerful. She was decked out on her throne with a great deal of jewelry. One of the first things done was to lay before her feet small gold bricks (shaped like small bricks and made of pure gold). Two boys, who were taken to be her sons, one of whom was Tom Collins, (Tom was later gunned down by the Illuminati) were near her throne. As only the most honored and powerful dared be in the vicinity of her throne, this showed that these two Collins boys were powerful. The boys passed out papers, which had time tables written on them of things that were to happen. A great discussion was carried on about what had happened in the world to bring in Satan's One-World-Government during the last six months and what was prepared to happen in the near future. Things that had not gone according to plan were discussed. The Ark of the Covenant was discussed, where it was hidden in Africa, and a ritual mocking the Ark of the Covenant was held.

Seven children in white were brought in from generational Satanic families and presented before Grande Mother Collins. They laid prostrate in worship of her. She would move her scepter with a snake up and down striking the floor to show approval of a child candidate. Then 7 other children were sacrificed for the 7 approved children, one for each child, whose name would then be written with a quill using the sacrificed child's blood. The children were given oaths. The Grande Mother rotated her throne and faced the Council of 13 and declared (speaking in English) "This is tomorrow's generation, a chosen few." The John the Baptist of the Anti-Christ put in an appearance, but the anti-Christ at that time was not born or only a tiny baby. Was this BenjamIn Creme? The ex-insider didn't learn the name of this John the Baptist forerunner of the Anti-Christ. However, the descriptions of this occult John the Baptist do match BenjamIn Creme. Benjamin Creme was born in 1924, and was deeply into the occult and witchcraft even when he was a boy. (See the official newsletter of Tara Center Emergence, Jan 1982 Issue.) He claims that in 1959, he telepathically received a message from his Master, a member of the [demonic] hierarchy. Creme calls these master spirits simply the hierarchy, Christians know it is the demonic hierarchy. Because all these things are planned out well in advance, it would have been very appropriate if Creme had been at a high level planning meeting in 1955. For more understanding on Creme's Christ the reader is directed to read the article on the Sufis in thIs newsletter. (Referring back to the gold bricks laid before the Grande Mother's throne, there are several reasons that real gold is important to the Illuminati. Perhaps in some other article this newsletter will go into it all. There have been massive secret gold shipments out of the United States and Russia. Guess who is getting it.) In my 1/1/93 newsletter the names of many top Illuminati are given. One that could have been included is Robert Moore Collins (1867-?) who was a member of the Pilgrims (60 of the modern equivalent of the Bavarian Illuminati.) Robert M. Collins was a reporter for several important newspapers and worked as an editor in the Washington and New York offices of the Associated Press. He did chiefly political work for the Associated Press. He was the chief newsman for Reuters (Illuminati controlled press) and the Associated Press for many stories coming out of the Orient. Although he was born in Wash., D.C., his address as an adult became Bournemouth, England. He never married. As those who investigate the Illuminati find out, the Illuminati control the press. Here was a man who helped do it for them Last newsletter issue (1/15/93) went into some detail about how important the Satanic Societas Rosicruciana is in relation to the Satanic groups such as the O.T.O., Golden Dawn, and Stella Matutina. The Societas Rosicruciana is definitely a high level exclusive Illumanati organization. One of the New York S.R. officers was James F. Collins (8°) who died Apr. 2, 1896. He was with the original set of S.R. officers of the first High Council of the S.R. in America which had oversight over all the S.R. colleges (lodges) in America. His position was Presenter. (I don't know what that officer does.) When the Canadians set up a Societas Rosicruciana in Canada, the High Council which had oversight over all Canada included a Collins on its council, Daniel Collins, 8°. Daniel Collins had several positions on the council. The highest degree is the 9°. If you've read the Jan 1, 1993 newsletter or Be Wise As Serpents you have come across the Grande Druid Council, This is a high level Illuminati council. In Be Wise As Serpents in the second section in a chapter entitled Heresy Interlocks with Power on the 8th page, I gave the names of people who were on that secret Grande Druid Council in the Spring of 1978. Each of those people are powerful witches, and have a great deal of power in the world. Yvonne Collins was on the Grande Druid Council. She was a traditionalist. To be a traditionalist means that she holds the view that only those people who are born to families with satanic power and witches in their family background can be true witches Obviously, the Collins family has a long history of witchcraft if she holds this view. Remember, that the leading Satanists feel they have special blood, the top ones feel they are gods. Even Grande Masters may teach their selected children they are the god which created the children. (This last statement makes more sense when one learns the methods, state of mind, and beliefs of the Satanic hierarchy.) Yvonne Collins would reject the idea that just anyone can become a witch of any significance by training and practice. The occult demonic power would not be strong enough for a convert to witchcraft. Yvonne's occult name is Legena which means Lucifer's bride. Legena (Yvonne Collins) who lived la Virginia, got upset with Jerry Falwell, he didn't follow orders well enough. She got the Security and Exchange Commission to investigate his church, which caused the church economic hardships. Even mainline Christian ministers are expected to follow directives of the Grande Druid Council which is said to operate under the orders of the Rothschilds. Everyone who was high up in the Illuminati and are NOW Christians remember Tom Collins. Collins was in the Illuminati, but for some reason the Lord changed his heart and he began to talk to churches about what is really going on. He had an itinery of churches to speak to, of which a Baptist church was one. He warned what was going on. He was gunned down in a Grocery store parking lot, and has been used as an example by the Illuminati to anyone else who dares utter a word. "Remember Tom Collins," they warn people in the covens.

This reminds me of another incident, which happened to a brother in Olympia, WA, the capital of WA. Two weeks after Reagan was elected, a beautiful Mercades pulled up to where this Christian brother was working. The guy who got out was obviously rich-his suit had to be in the neighborhood of $800 and his wife had fox furs around her neck. They said their son was going to work for the state and they wanted to look for a home for him. The woman was being Independent and said, "I don't want to go see the houses. I want to talk to this nice man." The houses were done by Donahue Construction. The men went on to look at the houses, and the woman remained behind and talked. This Christian is an easy talker with people. He struck up a conversion naturally. He said, "I think its great Ronald Reagan got elected, he's going to be a good president." The woman replied, "We wanted George Bush to get it." "Whose we?", the Christian asked to this rich lady who kept tossing her furs back and forth. "The Illuminati," she said, "We're the enlightened ones, and George Bush was trained by us." Unfortunately, the men had just returned at this point and were entering the room. The man with the expensive suit was livid. "Shut your ..... mouth," he yelled. She huffed back, „Well, if you insist." He then turned to the Christian, who he didn't know, and politely told him that they had failed to find anything that suited them. "Thank you very much everything is secure." and handed him the keys. Then he dragged the woman to the Mercedes giving her hell all the way for talking, and when they got in proceeded to physically slap her around. This was an extremely rare incident. Many of the Satanic hierarchy live their entire lives without uttering a word to anyone anything about the hidden Satanic side of their lives. As a rule they find very respectable cover lives in society--the more respectable the better- to cover their hidden lives. The Satanic rituals are always memorized. You will not walk into these people's houses and find incriminating books or objects. Remember Ted Bundy in last issue's article. Ted was exactly the model of bow many top Illuminati are. They are capable of the most horrendous things, but to everyone who know them, they are the most likable, intelligent normal people. People who knew Ted Bundy had no idea what he was doing in secret. The Satanic hierarchy and their Satanism is clearly the most secret religion in the world. They are a priesthood that rules the world through political leaders that they place in power. And because of their power, they have the ability to suppress a great deal of the publicity that could arise from their numerous activities. To describe the security methods employed to keep high level Satanism secret could take an entire book. Let's just put it this way, if you were a billionaire, which several of the leading Olympians (King Illuminati) are, what kind of security could you afford? And what kind of clout would you have with national governments and police forces to get even governments to provide security for you? Remember these people own the press, and the media.

They will kill, or discredit anyone who exposes them. Don't be surprised if both of these happen to me, the author. Just know this--they can kill the body they can not kill the soul. Our Christian God reigns. They also control the CIA and FBI. (See Be Wise As Serpents for more details on this.) Many leading FBI agents have not only been Masons. but many have been Satanists. The FBI sends out reports which paraphrased go like this, "Far more crime has been committed by zealots in the name of God than has ever been committed in the name of Satan. The actual involvement of the occult in a criminal case usually turns out to be secondary, insignificant, or nonexistent. The law enforcement perspective on occult crime requires avoiding the paranoia that has crept into this issue. Unless hard evidence is obtained and corroborated, police officers should avoid being frightened into believing that satanists are performing criminal ceremonies requiring investigation. An unjustified crusade against such activity could result in wasted resources, unwanted damage to reputations, and disruption of civil liberties." (This type of thing is hilarious to hear from the FBI, for those who know how they have trampled on every civil liberty by investigating tens of thousands of organizations simply because they opposed the establishment and ruined the reputations of many people- Martin Luther King for instance. People who have read my book may have picked up that J. Edgar Hoover was a 32° Mason, homosexual, and worked intimately with the Illuminati.) For those who haven't come out of Satanism, one way to explain to people how Satanic secrecy functions is to compare these Satanic families with the Mafia families. Individuals in these families learn what they need to know, no more.

The top bosses have cover jobs, and give their orders orally. (Actualy the comparison between Mafia or Costa Nostra families and Moriah or Illuminati families is quite fitting because they tie in organizationally and were created by the same occult stream of secret societies that Satan has been running.) Don't expect to find what you are reading here about the Collins family- that they are one of the very top illuminati families even more powerful than the Rothschilds- anywhere else. People are getting the inside story for the first time. I am grateful for various exrinsiders giving me accounts of secret meetings. Except for the testimony of eye-witnesses, there is little evidence of what happens at hierarchy meetings. There are numerous clues, but they are rejected by most people who refuse to accept that the Satanic hierarchy exists. Before the 1960s, and the space programs man had not seen the far side of the moon. But that didn't mean it wasn't there. The hierarchy are professionals at Satanism and are really pros at obtaining satanic power through ritual, deeds and worldly power. Their activities are very secret. In contrast there is great deal of physical evidence from the coven levels (the lowest level) that periodically surfaces-robes, candies made of fat, athames, altars, dead animals, ritual sites, etc. The higher levels believe that the force must be balanced-one's good deeds mast match one's evil deeds. Consequently some of the greatest philanthropists are leading Satanists. The lower levels are not concerned with developing power such as what Satan has, they simply enjoy being evil, and in that respect are rather crude in their exercise of evil.

The Collins family hasn't received much attention. Who do you think of when you think of the Collins? Joan Collins? She was a beautiful, Jewish Hollywood actress from England. Joan's grandmother lived at Brighton, England. (Joan mentions her father being a jew on pg. 13 of her autobiography Joan Collins Past Imperfect.) Her father Joe Collins and his friend Lord Lew Grade had an acting company. Joe Collin's father Will Collins and his wife a can-can dancer Henrietta Collins were also into acting. In the l970s she was in several horror movies and picked up the title "Queen of the Horror Films" (p. 271). In 1977 and 1978 Joan was nude in two sexy films (not her first) which were expected to do better at the box office than they did, neither of the titles of these films bear repeating.

One was based on a sexy book Joan's sister wrote that was a best-seller in England. Joan was the first "old" woman to be in the buff in Playboy (the Dec '83 Playboy). The issue is a collector's item. In her 40s, she was still posing in the buff. Which according to her autobiography she feels comfortable doing. (I wonder if being exceptionaly beautiful and a sex idol for millions makes it easier to pose nude.) For those who watch Dynasty, you'li likely remember her. For those who watched Hansel and Gretel, Joan was the witch. She was the woman in film The Devil Within Her. In Dec., 1982 Joan was asked to be the mistress of ceremonies at Prince Albert Hall before the Queen and His Royal Highness Prince Phillips. Besides knowing that she is into astrology, after looking at her autobiography I don't pick up a hint of any religiousness. Besides her amazing beauty, her lack of morals made her a perfect fit for Hollywood. Among her many friends, she had Sammy Davis, Jr. (p. 332) and Jayne Mansfield as friends or acquaintances, both of whom are publicly known to he Satanists. She rubbed shoulders with Henry Kissinger (p.3454 of Autobio.) Joan Collins vacationed in the winter at St. Moritz, which is an exclusive ski resort of the international set where Joan rubbed shoulders with Niarchos and Aristotle Onassis. (These - are Kings within the Illuminati.) Joan Collins spent time with Edgar Bronfman. The Bronfman family are the Jewish Illuminati family that runs Canada. (p. 281-282) Joan Collins may not he part of the Illuminati Collins family, but if she isn't she has at least associated with some of the top Illuminati. Joan was married several times but obviously preferred her maiden name. Another famous Collins is Michael Collins who was one of the three astronauts on the Apollo II. Apollo 11 was the first officially announced visit by man to the moon. For those who have read Be Wise As Serpents you are aware that the first flag on the moon was the Scottish Rite's flag.

There are a number of very strange things about the flight, and about what NASA has been doing. Bun Aldrin is a Freemason. Neil Armstrong has gone into seclusion, shunning any publicity. As Michael Collins puts it, Nell has "dropped out and doesn't sell the NASA program." (Carrying the Fire, by Michael Collins, p. 461--The title to his book is based on Greek mythology. The god Apollo carried fire, which is what Michael felt described Apollo 11.) What our government has been doing with NASA, flying saucers and a manned lunar base, is beyond writing about in this article, But the question did naturally come to my mind, could Michael Collins be related to the Illuminati Collins family? Michael Collins writes about himself, "Fortunately, I have been a poor student all my life, and my parents, concealing their disappointment, seldom pushed me.' (Carrying the Fire, p. 462) It certainly seems like such a student would need some pull to get into West Point, USMA. Michael Collins also sits on the board of directors of the llluminati's Rand Corporation which works with Tavistock Institute. He is not even a nominal Christian as far as I can tell, he states dryly that "no" he "did not find God" when he went to the moon. It looked like the clues were leading in the direction that he might be part of the elite, when I can across one sentence that changed my mind.

Michael Collins wrote, "I feel just as thankful today that I live in the United States of America as I did before flying in space, and I have no desire for this country to merge into a United States of the World.' (p.470 of his book. By the way Michael Collins wrote his own book in contrast with so many of the „Christian" authors like Pat Robertson's New World Order, and some of Billy Graham's books which are written by others with the big name tacked on to sell it.) If anyone could promote internationalism (One-World-Govt.) without any suspicion it would be Michael Collins, for few men share his experience of seeing the tiny earth in the vastness of the hostile universe. And yet he doesn't, he simply advocates that humans learn to cooperate to solve our problems- which we certainly need to do. Michael Collins has some really interesting and in a sense inspiring things to say about what seeing the earth from way out in space meant to his life. What he writes bears repeating. I don't have the space for it all but will share one idea that is novel, "Seeing the earth from a distance has changed my perception of the solar system as well. Ever since Copernicus' theory (that the earth was a satellite of the sun, instead of vice versa) gained wide acceptance, men have considered it an irrefutable truth; yet I submit that we still cling emotionally to the pre-Copernican, or Ptolemaic, notion that the earth is the center of everything. The sun comes up at dawn and goes down at dusk, right? Or as the radio commercial describes sunset: "When the sun just goes away from the sky..." Baloney. The sun doesn't rise or fall: it doesn't move, it just sits there, and we rotate in front of it, while dusk means we have turned another 180 degrees and are being carried into the shadow zone. The sun never "goes away from the sky." It's still there sharing the same sky with us; it's simply that there is a chunk of opaque earth between us and the sun which prevents our seeing it. Everyone knows that, but I really see it now." (pp. 472-73) (I like Michael Collins. What I just quoted is neat. After reading lots of occult garbage, I really appreciate someone who isn't into emphasizing the sun. If Michael were an occultist he would not have made this statement. In fact, I think it would be healthy for Christians to quit looking at the stars, and realize how wonderful God's green earth is. Praise His holy name! The earth is a very unique wonderful marvelous place. And all these people who use their imaginations and belittie the earth because they think some other planet in another galaxy is better, should do some space travel. The earth is a miracle, and anyone who doesn't see God through His creation is not thinking straight.) Back to the question, is Michael's Collins family part of the Illuminati Collins family? I have no idea, but

Michael himself is not an internationalist. The Collins family is an old New England family. Early members of it were Francis, Edward and John. (See the genealogical chart.) Part of the Satanic branch may live in England too. Like most top Illuminati families, the Collins have spread al over - so that even the West Coast has some members of this satanic bloodline. Part of the family is both related to aristocracy and to witchcraft. For instance, I have a complete list of all people accused of witchcraft in New England in the 17th century which includes some Collins, The 17th century was the first century that British settlers, mostly Puritans, some of whom are also known as Pilgrims and Congregationalists settled in New England. In 1640 in Aquiday, Mass. a Collins was accused of witchcraft. In 1653, Jane Collins was accused of witchcraft in Lynn, Mass. And a Collins family lived in the Salem, Mass. area of Marblehead during the 1650s when the witch trials occurred.

They were neighbors to the family accused of witchcraft. Interestingly some of the last names of other people accused of witchcraft in early colonial Massachusetts include Young, Bailey, Carrington, Godfrey, Hall, Brown and Clinton. You will find all of these last names on people today who are connected to the Satanic hierarchy (Illuminati) and Satanism. However, the worst example of dealing with "witchcraft", the Salem Witch trials, was instigated by the Collins family to destroy Christians. Christians have been held accountable for something the Collins family did to Christians in Salem, Mass. My opinion is that the Collins family practiced witchcraft before coming to New England in the 17th century. One ex-Illuminati member who was from the Collins bloodline stated that the Collins family brought witchcraft from England to America. For the first part of the 1700s, one of the British Collins was prominent for his books promoting Deism against Christianity. As an example of some of their aristocratic ties, Arthur Collin's 9 volume reference work Collin's Peerage of England published in 1812 was a definitive work on aristocratic peerage. Obviously, Arthur Collins had a great deal of clout to be able to research such a massive work on people of significance in England. The Collins family gave us John Collins, third Governor of Rhode Island. John Collins was born to the rich powerful part of the Collins family at Newport, R.I. John Coliins (1717-1795) played an important part in the creation of our Federal government, and a role in one of the most remarkable court cases Trevett vs. Weeden which set the precedence in court which allowed courts to declare legislative enactments unconstitutional. He advocated the issuance of paper currency and a strong central government, which made him unpopular in the rural areas of Rhode Island. He married Mary Avery. Another John Collins (1775-1822) born to a well-to-do Collins family was tenth governor of Delaware (1819-1822).

Quite a number of Collins have been well-to-do. The wealthiest Collins that I have discovered so far is Matthew Garrett Collins (1874-1925). Matthew Garrett Collins was an oil producer. His father was Oliver Cromwell Collins! named after Oliver Cromwell. Oliver Cromwell was the early Mason who was paid off by the Amsterdam jews to allow the jews back into England. Matthew Garrett Collins was a Mason. M.G. Collins manufactured silk and in ten years took the operation in 1886 from nothing to a $2 million business. He was president of Interstate Gasoline Co. He worked with several other big oil men, such as Gov. Charles Haskell of Oklahoma. He was Trustee for Drew Seminary. He participated in the Methodist church. Matthew Garrett Collins oil operations and friendship with the governor of Oklahoma are very significant. Inside information indicates some type of connection between the Collins family and Oklahoma, and Tulsa is a major headquarters for Satanism in that area. There are a number of buildings that the Satanists own in the Tulsa area that are used for their operations. Besides Matthew Garrett Collins there have been a number of other wealthy Collinses, such as Theodore Clyde Collins, Jr. (Insur. co. exec., banker, pres. of etc. etc.), Arthur Fletcher Collins (real estate corp. exec., hd of some financial institutions and an financial analyst), Henry James Collins 3rd (Insur. Co. exec., treasurer of several financial organizations), J. Barclay Collins 2nd (oil co. exec., lawyer, bd. dir. of trustee of a hospital), Leroy Collins, Jr. (banker, dir. or president of some organizations), John Roger Collins (aerospace co. exec., banker, economist, trustee or bd. of dir. & v.p. of a number of organizations), John Paul Collins (banker, dir. of Rothschild's Citicorp Research Corp., plus trustee of a hospital, besides holding other leading positions in a number of other organizations.) And finally Michael James Collins (not the astronaut) who has been an investment co. exec, plus to name a few items-- pres. Fidelity Union Life Ins., pres. Allianz Investment Corp., pres. Collins Capital, Dallas, Trustee KERA-TV, bd. dir. & v.p, of the Carr P. Collins Foundation. None of these men gave information concerning any church affiliation. With the other Collinses usually if they do have a church affiliation it is Episcopalian. The Collins famliy also built the world's fastest nicest ocean going ships during the 1850s, for which they spared no expense. The Collins lost a number of ships to natural sea disasters, and after the financial panic of 1857, the Collins got out of shipping, and directed their attention to coal and iron. They had a home on

Madison Ave., NY. One of the Collins who is clearly descended from the old New England family is the banker Atwood Collins (1851-1926) who graduated from Yale in 1873. One line of Collins that were descended from the old New England family were the father and son who gave their names to several locations in Western US. Fort Collins, CO is named after Cal. William Oliver Collins, a descendent of Edward Collins who arrived in Boston from England in 1630. And Casper, Wyoming is named after Col. William O. Collin's son Casper Collins. Casper Collins died fighting indians, and so this family line died out. Col. William Oliver Collins family were well-to-do Episcopalians. W.O. Collins had originally gone to law school, then became a Senator, and then was made a Colonel by the Secretary of War at the outbreak of the Civil War. Because the U.S. troops in the far west were widely dispersed, the rank of Colonel was a very high rank to hold in the western territories during the Civil War. Now this article will list a few Collins who I suspect may have been connected to the Illuminati in their time. These are only suspects, but interesting people at that.

Clifton W. Collins--Clifton studied Saint Simon who was the Mason/Illuminatus that started Communism in the early 19th century. Clifton wrote a book about him entitied Saint Simon.

Copp Collins--Copp Collins was involved in so many political things for the republican Presidential elections, and involved with consulting Federal agencies and so many other government positions it is difficult to give a list of what all he has been involved with. He also was involved with Bahrain Petroleum Co., Ltd during the 1950s.

DeWitt Clinton Collins--DeWitt Clinton Collins was born on Sept. 5, 1866 and was named after DeWitt Clinton, who was assoc. with the Illuminati very early in the history of the United States. His father, Clinton DeWitt was also named after DeWitt Clinton. D.C. Collins did his post-graduate work in Vienna, and practiced in Chicago.

Hugh Collins--Author Marxism and the Law published by Oxford University Press.

James Foster Collins--Worked for U.S. intelligence, for the United Nations, graduated from Yale, had such jobs as Research assistant U.S. Senate Atomic Energy Commission, political affairs officer United Nations Secretariat (1946-1949), By the way a large percentage of the officers in the Secretariat area of the United Nations for the first 10 years were Jews. Collins also worked for the state department and the treasury department, perhaps maintaining his intelligence work on the side.

Jim Collins--Jim writes books on the occult, UFOs, mysticism, Uri Geller, etc.

John Anderson Collins-- He was intimately involved with the illuminati plots involving Unitarians/Rosicrucians/& Masons which created militant abolitionists who intended to wage war against the south. He worked with William Uoyd Garrison. For a full expose on this the reader shouid study my chapter on the Unitarian church in Be Wise As Serpents. John Anderson Collins was a socialist (forerunner of what is known as communism). He attempted several communist social experiments beginning in the 1840s. The importance of how this all connects to the occult and the Illuminati can be appreciated by reading Fire in The Minds of Men by James Billington.

John Churton Collins--In 1886 he wrote a book on Voltaire, and in 1908 he wrote yet another book on Voltaire. As a lecturer who travelled to the U.S. and Germany, the press always gave him great press coverage. He was involved with the occult. He was found dead in peculiar circumstances in a ditch.

Launa Collins and Virginia Collins co. authored a book Levels of Mind in 1984.

Mauney D. Collins--Mauney Collins was State Superintendent of Schools in Georgia. He went to Bob Jones College sometime after 1938. He was a Freemason, a Grand Master of the Georgia Grand Lodge of Odd Fellows, assoc. editor of the Ga. Odd Fellows News, and if my source is correct editor of Atlanta's Masonic magazine. He was in Eastern Star, and a number of other affiliated Masonic groups. He lived at the Capital Building at the state capital in Georgia. He was a pastor (ordained in 1909) of Friendship Baptist Church for his lifetime.

Paul Valorous Collins--writer, studied art in Paris, interviewed Italian strongman Benito Mussolini in 1927 for Outlook Magazine. Presbyterian and a Freemason.

Robert DeVille Collins - foreign service officer, intelligence, 1st Secretary to NATO (73-76), director political officer of personnel of the US. State Dept. (80-82), worked in the U.S. embassy in Rome in various capacities, Roman Catholic, and given an award by the Pope.

Ross A. Collins-- One of the ex-Illuminati members remembers the name Ross Collins. Ross A. Collins was a high ranking Mason, a lawyer, an attorney general (a common position for Satanists), and a Congressman. He was born at Collinsville, Miss. in Congress at

Washington, D.C. he was chairman of the military appropriation committee, a position which the Illuminati control. Ross Collins was famous for advocating mechanized weaponry. He wanted technology to be applied to weaponry. He is credited with bringing the Flying Fortress into being. By the way there have been many Collins who were Masons, for instance, the masonic reference book History of Scottish Rite Masonry in Chicago, also titied Oriental Consistory 1856-1907 by George Warvelle, 33°, lists twelve Collins as being members of Chicago's Oriental Consistory (pp. 99-100).

Varnum Lansing Collins-Princeton Univ. Professor and Episcopalian.

Wilkie Collins-author of occult fiction

William Collins-his british Collins Pub. firm has printed some books on British Intelligence (MI-5, MI-6).

I could continue giving more names on the suspect list, but the reader's patience has likely been tested enough. Articles like this aren't as much fun to write, when I have to pad out some hard evidence with clues. I included some of the suspects so that the readers can see that people with the last name of Collins do show up with some frequency when one investigates the occult and power. Some readers might feel that any last name could be run through history and some people involved in the occult found. I challenge people to test that. I will give them some names, and let them search. There are some names such as Gould for instance that reoccur way out of proportion in Masonic literature than the name should randomly occur. Russell is another name that reoccurs everywhere 1 turned in studying the New World Order. It became evident that the Russell family was not a common family, but wielded immense power. On the opposite side of things, some families have been essentially totally unconnected with the occult in anyway.

Prior to the Civil War, the American branch of the Collins family split off under the surname of Todd. Numerous occult figures including important names in secret Satanism or various Witchcraft groups have had the last name of Todd. Presidents Madison and Lincoln were married to Todds. Lincoln's wife Mary Todd was into the occult. Whether Abraham Lincoln is in heaven or not I do not know, those decisions are God Almighty. But from examining the evidence as carefully and honestly as possible-Abraham Lincoln was a Rosicrucian and in fact he was a member of the Order of the Lily's Council of Three along with Paschal Beverly Randolph and General Ethan Allen Hitchcock. Properly speaking, those Todds who are descended from the Collins family should have been covered in this, because they are considered by the Illuminati as part of the Collins bboodline. The Todd family hasn't been covered now, but may possibly be written about more fully at a later date. In summary, the Collins family is one of the top Illuminati families that has managed to remain low key. It is believed that the Collins family has been kept secret because they wield more power than the Rothschilds, Rockefellers, or the Onassises. The only way that I came to realize their importance is through a number of people giving inside information, and the only reason that the inside information was plausible was the great amount of research I had done in this area. And yet what has been done is a drop from what can be accomplished. My research shows the family has been connected to witchcraft since they arrived in New England in the 1630s, and may well have practiced it centuries prior to that. At least part of the British Collins family are Jewish.

REVISITING THE COLLINS FAMILY--ONE OF THE TOP 13 ILLUMINATI FAMILIES

The Collins family is one of the most powerful families in the world, and yet has been able to hide their power and wealth. The Van Duyn family has also hidden themselves very well. But the Collins family is full of tantalizing clues, such as one Collins branch that I found in looking at genealogical family group sheets. This was a book that Gerald E. Collins' drew up showing the Collins family and their relationship to the Bauer family who according to his book changed their name to Bower. That is exactly what the Rothschild relatives named Bauer did. The name Collins originated in the British Isles, in Ireland it began as O'Collins, and in Scotland as Kollyns. Today, a prominent figure in Wicca is the Wiccan reformer Kollyns, whose name was originally Collins. Two significant Collinses were Sara Aynn Collins and her older brother. Her older brother was a member of the Satanists who called themselves the Hell Fire Club. He belonged to the Boston Hell Fire Club. The Hell Fire Club has been discussed in previous newsletters. It has been pointed out in the past articles how BenJamin Franklin and Thomas Jefferson were members of this purely Satanic group who practiced satanic sexual occult rituals. Sara Aynn Collins (bn. c. 1730) was deeply attracted to the occult. Her family was a generational Witchcraft/Satanic family, but many of them wanted to abandon the occult. Besides not wanting to leave the old family traditions of witchcraft, Sara did not want to marry the man her father tried to sell her to. Neither the arranged marriage nor forsaking witchcraft was for Sara. She went to Scotland to get to the heart of learning the occult and became a leader in the oldest form of Wicca, the Elven Path. (Other traditional types of Wicca in the U.S. come from Ireland, Wales, and Greece.) After the American Revolution she left Scotland skilled in occult power, and came back to the United States, where she formed the first Covendom of Wicca. She and her brother were powerful Wiccans, and their descendants are the main group of Collinses that practice Wicca and Satanism. A wild woman stabbed Sara Aynn Collins to death in a Boston store. What you have just received is the important link in tracing the Satanic Collins bloodline. Sara Aynn Collins (and there were several Sarah Ann Collins in her day-it seems the name appealed to the Collins family) is in turn a descendent of Francis Collins of the 17th century. Francis was the head of the family when it came over from England. The Todd family seems to have Satanic undertones to it, even in the days just after the Revolutionary War. For instance, John Jacob Astor married Sarah Todd who had a fair amount of money attached to her. The Todd surname is not an extremely common name-until one begins researching the conspiracy, and then it pops up with frequency. It is known that during the time of the Civil War the Collins bloodline went into the surnames of Todd and Putman.

It needs to be brought out here that the Putman family also has spelled their name Putnam! One genealogy book which ties the Putman/Putnam family to the Collins family is Putnam, Thomas Russell (1897). Putnam genealogy; recording the descendants of Thomas Putnam. The Be Wise As Serpents book exposed the early Clinton family of DeWitt Clinton as an illuminati family. Interestingly, there was a Collins boy born in 1824 who was named after that Satanist. His name was DeWitt Clinton Collins (1824-1909). Another interesting tidbit was that the Phelps family of Virginia is related to the Collins. The Phelps family arrived n Mass. in 1630 and became a prominent family in the Skull & Bones. And don't forget men like Skull & Bones William Collins Whitney (unit. into S&B 1863) of the Collins family. Ths member of the Collins lineage had two sons, who both became members of the Illuminati's Order of the Skull & Bones. William Collins Whitney (1841-1904) and his two sons are the core of the Whitney influence in the Order of the Skull & Bones. This Collins blood of the Whitney's then went into the Harriman family. Anyone who has been reading this newsletter this year knows how important the Harrimans are! Pam Harriman is the person behind Bill Clinton. Further, the Collins blood of the Whitney's went into the Payne family and the Vanderbilts by intermarriage! The Payne family has been a big part of the Rockefellers and Standard Oil. (It is a small world at the top.) William Collins Whitney had a lack luster career as an inspector of schools. But then beginning in the 1870s, he amassed a fortune from who knows where very quickly. William Collins Whitney was the power behind Pres Cleveland, who was his puppet. He also directed a group of powerful important capitalists called the Whitney Group. W.C. Whitney married Flora Payne. Their son Harry Payne Whitney married Gertrude Vanderbilt in 1896. Their son (and remember he still has Collins blood) Cornelius Vanderbilt Whitney married Marie Norton who later married W. Averell Harriman (unit. into S&B in 1913), the man who helped finance Hitler to power. The Harrimans also helped bring the Bush family from oblivion back in the early 1920s. When Prescott Bush (George Bush's father) lost all his money in the 1929 stock market crash, the Harrimans again came to financially helped Prescott Bush back on his feet. During the 1920s, the W. Averell Harriman, Prescott Bush, Fritz Thyssen and Friedrich Flick created several entitles to help finance Hitler and to produce the weapons Hitler would need to fight W.W. II.. One of these companies was the German Steel Trust (in German called Vereinigte Stahlwerke. This company produced 35% of Nazi Germany's explosives, 50.8% of Germany's pig iron, 38.5% of Nazi Germany's galvanized steel, 36% of Germany's heavy plate, 22.1 % of Germany's wire, and many other things essential for Hitler, if it had not been Harriman'. and Bush's money helping Thyssen who was Hitler's major backer, Hitler would never had been able to have launched W.W. II. Thyssen even wrote a book in the 1930. I paid Hitler (now rare) telling about how he financed Hitler and the Nazis beginning in Oct. 1923. As I have said numerous times Hitler was of the Rothschild bloodline.

An understanding of the top 13 families opens up a whole new understanding of history. In fact, the full extent of the power of the top 13 families is far greater than what I am able to communicate. This is because of their skill at secrecy. Allow me to explain. It was no accident that Hitler's Rothschild blood was hidden. A common practice among the top 13 families is to have an important child secretly or quietly without fanfare, and adopt the child out to another family. The child then takes on another last name, which hides the genealogy, in the occult ceremonies, the biological parents will step forward. For instance, for Mothers of Darkness the biological father must impregnate the young daughter who is being initiated into the Mothers of Darkness. The first baby by the girl must come from her biological father and must be sacrificed by her to Satan. Many of the Illuminati children are adopted out, (in fact our President Clinton was). To try and trace the genealogy of the Illuminati is most difficult. What I am trying to lead up to saying is that due to a number of reasons-many people with last names which are different than the top 12 surnames (as well as the several names I've given for the 13th bloodline) I have given are ALSO part of the top 13 bloodlines. Last names are not the criteria--the magical occult power in their blood is. It is more than just having the correct blood--but the magic power in that blood is critical. Once a branch loses its occult power its blood is nothing. This is why even though my wife is a descendent from the Holy Blood line, the 13th family, her branch of the family has had nothing to do with the occult for centuries, and could never be part of Illuminati. In summary, this article has given some critical names in the early genealogy of the Satanic branch of the Collins family. This article has discussed how important events in our world are being molded by those 13 families secretly, for example the Collins family. Finally, it was discussed how the Illuminati have a number of ways that they hide their genealogies, and one of these is the common practice of adopting out a child, so that it gets a different last name.

Satanist Bonewitz calls the leading Illuminati families "Fam-Trads." He spells out that Fam-Trads mean the very powerful families that have been the actual ones to pass witchcraft down from one generation to the next. Bonewitz's article clalms that the only coherent lineage of witchcraft was what these powerful families have given us. They were able to pass down witchcraft uninterrupted because they were so powerful. He writes, "There is plenty of evidence of ancient Pagan traditions surviving under thin Christian veneers in isolated parts of Christendom, but there is almost nothing logical to suggest that the people leading these traditions were in touch with each other..." How did the leading powerful families continue to practice their witchcraft? Bonewitz's answer is interesting, He states,

· REVISITING THE COLLINS FAMILY

Isaac Bonewitz who sits on the llluminati's Grand Druid Council wrote in "Witchcraft" (which was a series of articles in the Green Egg in 1976) some very interesting statements about the top Illuminati families.

Most members of Fam-Trads made efforts to conceal their "superstitlous" beliefs and Pagan magical systems. Instead they became involved in Freemasonry and Rosicrucianism in the 18th century, Spiritualism and Theosophy in the 19th; for all these movements were considered more respectable than witchcraft, and still allowed the Fam-Trads to practice occult arts ... So as the years went by, members of the Fam-Trads absorbed more and more from non-pagan magical sources and handed their new information down to each generation, often carelessly letting the descendants think that a Rosicrucian spell or alchemical meditation was a legitimate part of their Pagan heritage. So even today we have Fam-Trad witches who are far closer to being Theosophists or Spiritualists than to being Classical or Neoclassical witches. (Bonewitz, Isaac. "Witchcraft" The Green Egg, June 21, 1976, Pt. III pp. 5-6.)

In 1770, Lord Petre, Grand Master in the Masonic Lodges in the British colonies appointed John Collins to be the Provincial Grand Master of Quebec. (Co-authored by a board of Masonic editors, History of the Ancient and Honorable Fraternity of Free and Accepted Masons & Concordant Orders. Boston & NY: The Fraternity Pub. Co., 1891, p. 225.) I mention John Collins as an example of a powerful 18th century Freemason, who was part of what appears to be the Collins Illuminati family. In previous articles, we have documented how the early 18th century Astors and DuPonts were active Freemasons. The history of these top families does agree with Bonewitz that in order to continue to practice their witchcraft they used the cover of Freemasonry. Later, in the 19th century some of the leading families can be seen to have moved into Spiritualism, such as the British royal family, and Mary Baker Eddy of the Baker famliy. Interestingly, H.P. Blavatsky who was involved with spiritism started the Theosophical Society and also a periodical named Lucifer in 1887. The woman who co-edited Lucifer with her was the medium (now called a channeler) Mabel Collins. Mabel Collins later had a disagreement with H.P.B. and left. (Oppenheim, Janet. The Other World. Cambridge, Eng.: Cambridge Univ. Press, p.182.) And it is possible that a few of the Rockefellers joined Lucis Trust which is an extension of Theosophy a well as members of the Hall family such as Manly P. Hall whose wife was a Bauer (very likely part of the Rothschild bloodline.) This pattern that Bonewitz has pointed out to us, is worthy of continued investigation, it is likely that other leading families have also followed the pattern he describes. The 13 top Illuminati families are more correctly described as 13 bloodlines. The Collins family had a branch that shot off from it during the early 1800s which was the Todd family. The Todd family branch remained an important part of the Illuminati. We will now discuss this branch in more detail as I said I might in the Feb. 1, '93 newsletter.

the TODD BRANCH of the COLLINS FAMILY

HOT TODDY & HER FATHER JOHN TODD

Thelma Todd was known as Hot Toddy. She was an extremely sexy movie actress, but she also had another side to her. She was intimately involved with the mob, and men like Lucky Luciano. Hot Toddy was intimate with Lucky Luciano, who made money from gambling, drugs, and prostitution. In 1935, she was murdered. The murderer left her corpse with $20,000 in jewelry on it. In 1989, the book Hot Toddy by Andy Edmonds solves the murder, which the police did not want to solve and tried to cover up. Thelma was originally from 592 Andover St, Lawrence, Mass. Her father was John Shaw Todd and her mother Alice. Her father had been a corrupted police lieutenant before going into politics. John's cronies would come over to their house to the parlor. By 1915, John Todd became "one of the most important men in the East. He was appointed Massachusetts director of public health and welfare, a job that gave him carte blanche to write checks and approve construction and medical contracts, offer political positions on high-paying state committees (most as repayment for favors), and pass funding along to handpicked organizations and charities. Many believed he lined his pockets on more than one appointment or contract." (Edmonds, Andy. Hot Toddy. NY: William Morrow & Co., p. 56.) In 1925, he became a "political advisor" to legislators. In 1926, he used his influence to get good reviews in newspapers of the film his daughter was in. Hot Toddy had a reputation for going braless, for flirting with men etc. She as a teenager had a secret desire to be a madam at a brothel. (p.60) She was sponsored by the Elks Lodge in a beauty contest in 1925 and was selected Miss Massachusetts. Hollywood even in the early 1920s was full of murders, the weirdest sexual habits imaginable, and most of the actors were drug addicts (cocaine, heroin, and booze). That was years before these habits hit the mainstream of American life. Many actors were homosexual. Many if not most (the lists I have seen would indicate most) actors were Jewish. Charles Luciano was nicknamed Charile Lucifer, "the devil." He was the most feared and hated of the underworld bosses. Luciano liked Toddy both because he was attracted to her and she had a restaurant he wanted to use for one of his bases of operations on the third floor for gambling. Luciano was one of the three major distributors for the Bronfman's narcotics. The Bronfmans are outwardly Jewish and covertly satanists. Remember they were mentioned in the previous Collins article being friends of actor Joan Collins. Rothstein and Meyer Lansky were the other two Bronfman distributors. (Dope. Inc., p. 431) Luciano supplied Hot Toddy with her drugs. At the time of her murder, her movie boss had planned to raise her salary to $3,500 a week. Luciano worked for the U.S. government during W.W. II, and in 1946 was deported to Sicily. During W.W.II Luciano work for US. Intelligence--SOE and OSS. (Where else in this newsletter have I mentioned the corruption in the Intelligence Agencies?) After being "deported" to Sicily, Luciano continued to work for US. Intelligence and Permindex (Dope. Inc., p. 483)-which is the elite's assassination bureau which later moved the center of its headquarters to Paradise Island in the Grand Bahamas. (Dope. Inc., p.493) (It seems to me that Luciano had connections to Onassis.) I noticed that there was a man named Collins who was involved with the Illuminati's movements to take over the Australian economy. He was an executive of H.W. Smith, one of those companies that interlock with the CIA, mob, and Illuminati. As you may realize, I offer these types of clues because I can't presume on the future and hope that others will asist in putting together the pieces of how widespread the satanic Collins family is.

JOHNNY TODD

Johnny Todd is reported to have converted to Christ on Labor Day, 1972 according to one person I talked to. It seemed like the talk I heard Johnny Todd give indicated 1973 as his coversion date. He was of the Collins family Todds and at some point after coming to Christ, told people he had been a member of the Grand Druid Council of the Illuminati. Before proceeding to tell about his life lets interrupt to discuss about whether Johnny Todd is for real or not. Johnny Todd has been discredited as a fraud within much of the Christian community. If I had heard all the negative things said about

Johnny Todd first, I might not be writing anything about him, because some of the people against him don't have anything good to say. However, I heard tapes of Johnny Todd speak before I heard the negative things about him. What has taken me years to understand, he went item by item and discussed. I have tried to understand what Johnny Todd did to get discredited, and the central issue seems that a tape he made after he was converted had his voice saying a satanic ritual. I must warn the readers that I haven't gotten to the bottom of who Johnny Todd is, but I was able to ascertain several things.

·Even the people who feel Johnny Todd was a fraud admit he had to have been in Satanism-they simply claim he wasn't as high as he thought.

·Every negative thing that has been said toward Johnny Todd that has any substance that I have been able to hear can be explained away very easily if a person understand MPD. If Johnny Todd was who he claimed he was, then it is an absolute given that he had MPD, because that is part of the "training", part of the preparation neccessary to become part of the Illuminati hierarchy. In other words, the negative things which appear to be insurmountable obstacles to his credibility, may actually if people knew what being involved with the Illuminati is like be items showing his authenticity. Further, it appears that after his conversion to Christ, he received so much lack of understanding and persecution from Christians that he back slide for a period of time, but was brought back to Christ by the repeated message "Jesus loves you." The clincher was listening to the man. After having done years of research and hearing someone tell me much of what I learned the slow and hard way, was very exciting. The man speaks like someone who knows Satanism and the Satanic hierarchy, and knows it first hand. I have listened to many Christians speak on Satanism, and on a scale of 0 to 100 most of them are about step 1 Todd in my opinion, from the talks I have heard rates around an 80. If he is such a fraud, why is what he is saying such superior information than all the other people? People claim he simply borrowed from other people, but that doesn't hold water. I know of no one else who has openly talked about the Collins family. I could be wrong--he may not be legitimate--but I feel so strongly from what I have experienced that I honestly believe that the man is just what he says he is. And in that case, he is one of the highest Satanic hierarchy people to defect to Christianity who have been willing to talk. Johnny Todd is not talking now-the establishment got him put into prison in South Carolina.

· EX-ILLUMINATUS EXPLAINS HOW THE ILLUMINATI FRAMED HIM AND PUT HIM IN PRISON.

This article is comes from a tape which was made by someone who is part of the Collins Bloodline, one of the top 13 Illuminati bloodlines. i transcribed this tape onto paper, because I feel it deals with an important person and some important issues. Christians need to realize that what happened to this man who left and tried to expose the illuminati, is what is in store for many other Christians, that is prison. The Be Wise As Serpents book had an entire chapter on the Concentration camps that are already built for Christians. There are friends of mine who feel very convinced this ex-illuminatus is the real thing, and that he was really part of the Illuminati. Then, there are some who feed he is not for real. There has been an intense program of discrediting this man which was orchestrated by the illuminati and their plants within the Christian people. I have listened to both sides of the issue, and then listened to the man himself, and I am convinced he is for real. I believe he was really part of the illuminati. That was this author's conclusion, although I'm not so firm that I wouldn't bend if new evidence confirmed differently. I have listened to hours of accusations that were leveled against this ex-Illuminatus even before he was framed, and most if not all amount to nothing. When I have asked people what their objections were to this man, they have said they are convinced he is was a Satanist, but that they doubt his illuminati credentials. But the man is part of one of the most powerful bloodlines in the world, the Collins family. Whether he got high in Illuminati can be debated, but if he were in Satanism, which many acknowledge, he would have--almost certainly-- been taken into an Illuminati coven.

MESSAGE FROM A HIERARCHY SURVIVOR

Feb. 26, 1991

I am John Todd, and this tape is being made in a prison cell in South Carolina, it is very late at night. All the inmates are locked down in their cells, but you will still hear noise off and on. And if the guard comes by, I have to stop and be very quiet. The reason for this tape is that I have been framed and put in prison by orders of U.S. Senator from South Carolina Strom Thurmond. I'll go into all the reasons for that, and what happened to me. And only recently, in fact just about a week and a half ago did I find out how it was really accomplished. As I started to say, the reason for this tape is to get the word out about where I'm at. I've been in custody almost four years now. I've been in a prison cell for three years, and that time is a very closely guarded secret by the government, by the Illuminati and definitely by the conspirators. The word of what has happened to me has not gotten out of the state of South Carolina. Here you have religious magazines that are run by the Illuminati, speakers who are members within their organization, or collaborators who have been bought by them over the years. Many of them who would consider themselves to be personal enemies of mine because of exposes which came out about them by me in the '70s- early '80s. Yet, not one of them has said a word, although they al know about it for fear that the true believers that are out there will find out what has happened to me. When I was arrested, one of the few things that was taken from my apartment was my files containing my mailing list. These were taken by the police although they had nothing to do with the case I was supposedly being charged with. And two years later when we went through a law suit to get everything back, this was one of the few items that did not come back. They Just vanished, just disappeared. The reason for it, a was the reason for taking the two personal address books that I had. One I carried in my billfold for such an emergency and one was in my Ubrary shelf were taken by SLED also. This was hopefully to keep me from contact with anybody who could help me obtain legal services or whatever. I want to go into the case very carefully, very diligently. One of the things that seems to be very frightening to Christians is that such a thing could actually take place. Many who knew I was innocent could not believe that I had been found guilty. Not so much that -because-, it just wasn't there, it didn't take place, so therefore even the manufactured evidence wasn't even there. They just couldn't believe that a child of God in this country could go to prison. (I had stopped and came to the door. I can't let this tape be known that it is being made or it would never get out of here.) I want to say this now before I go on, whoever receives a copy of this tape I'm asking you to make a copy or copies and get the word out. Make phone calls. Let people know what has happened to me. Let them know that they can be of service to get me out of here. This is what is most feared about putting me in here, that the word will get out. Let me tell you what all has happened here. We need to go back to 1987 in Columbia, South Carolina where I was living. I had been hurt. I had been doing labor, construction work, carpenter work for several years. I had stopped speaking publicly after my divorce to the woman who had stood beside me for years and years and years, headquarters. Give me a polygraph." Immediately in the form of a scream, I can assure you, not a statement, the SLED agent, a Lt. Carleton Meddle, who is now a captain, who was made captain three days after I was convicted, overpromoted- promoted over people n front of him, screamed out loud, "No, we're not going to give you a polygraph.' That was their stance ali the way through.

I took a polygraph after my conviction. I paid for the polygraph. I - the polygraph. But it's not admissible in court. Now they took me-- Pm going to go through this all so you can see. Immediately, I knew this whole thing was a frame. I wasn't sure what they were up to$_1$ but let it go. The solicitor sald he wanted to have my apartment searched for evidence of the rape, And that he could get a search warrant, but they would prefer that I allow them to search. ,,Well," I said, ,,I have an attorney who is representing me in the lawsuit. He is also a criminal attorney if you allow me to call him, you allow me to ask his advice and he says "yes", I will allow you to do it." They really didn't have a choice in this matter. I was asking for my attorney and they were supposed to. They took me in the hospital downstairs to the security room. I didn't know this at the time, but out of the 17 arresting officers that were SLED there five were lieutenants in the room with me out of the 26 Lieutenants la the state. That's unheard of. Plus the head solicitor. It gets better. They take me into a room. The solicitor calls my attorney. I still didn't realize who he was or anything. He called my attorney. I spoke with my attorney. He told my attorney that if he allowed me to sign this thing. and then again he told that they didn't have a search warrant, which was a lie. The search warrant was limited as to what they could have took trom my apartment. They weren't interested in anything in the rape, as you will find out. They were interested in other materials, which they could not have took under the search warrant. So they told him they will take me straight to Jal, they will go to my apartment, and search it. I signed it. They took me to my apartment. They had lied to my attorney.

They proceeded to box up three 30 gallon plastic trash bags and four boxes with material. Nothing, except 3 knifes- that they claimed they were trying to find the knife which was used in the rape. I showed them where all my knifes were and some business stationary with the publishing company. Other than that knife nothing that went out of there was used during the trial. Nothing was used except what I just said. Everything else was business material, printing concerning my past ministry, or the ministry I was involved I which was the newsletter. The whole time I was there I was not questioned about sexual assault as they put it, I was only asked questions about the Christian underground. I want to stop and explain that. There is, though some of you might find it shocking,, there is an underground n the United States, a Christian underground. It was formed over the trials in Nebraska, where Christians, pastors, ministers of the church were sent to prison. Where we started seeing non-passed laws about child abuse being put into effect by the federal and state governments without ever being passed as law. Children were being taken from their parents without a chance for the parent to he allowed to speak in the trial. All it took was some child psychologist, "I suspect child abuse, blah blah blah." We started seeing how 90% of the people being tried were fundamentalist Christians, so an underground was formed. It contained Christian survivalists but it contained everyday people also. And all they wanted was where these safe houses were, where these places of refuge were, what the underground conductors who they were. That"s all they were asking me. And yet nothing was n South Carolina, So it was out of their jurisdiction. So I knew they were asking for the federal government. I was taken from there to SLED and for the first time I was questioned concerning the so-called rape. I realized, you would have to be arrested to understand the shock you go through, I was just numb. But as my head started clearing and I realized that they held n their hands evidence that they had took from the apartment which would clear me, I told them. I also told them about my whereabouts that night. I told them people they could go question. And here's their statement, "it is not our job to go question witnesses that will prove your innocence." While I was at SLED headquarters the solicitor who had lef't us after we had left the apartment went and held a press conference. This was his story: I was arrested for one rape, I was suspected in three maybe, as many as eighty. That's right. Family members on their way home from work at five thirty in the evening were hearing this on the radio. Never before was anybody that wasn't a murderer ever given this much publicity and never before in the history of SLED had a person who was charged only with criminal sexual assault ever been investigated or charged by SLED. Before I was even booked in the jail, I realized that these folks did not believe I was guilty. They were only interested in something else. I wasn't sure quite yet what. The next morning I was brought before a state magistrate for a ball hearing and to be arraigned. I was denied bail on the following. Now listen to this. The solicitor tells the magistrate the following, I'm not a resident of South Carolina. Bat he had just searched my apartment. I had several businesses in South Carolina and had lived here for years. Further, they said I had no recidence in South Carolina. And yet they had just searched it. Three, they said I had a passport and they were worried I'd flee the country. The passport had been taken from my apartment and had expired on that very day on my birthday of 1967 and they knew it. The next statement was that I had no visible means of support. And yet they knew that I did. And the last one was that I had no family members in South Carolina, and yet, I had children right here. As I tried to tell the magistrate this was all incorrect he wouldn't hear it. I had not yet realized that I was on the front cover of the state newspaper. Now the state newspaper is the newspaper in Columbia. It had a co-owned newspaper called The Record which does not exist now. They have combined them. The newspapers print whatever the authorities want them to print in this state. The interesting thing in this was that it started to go into my military record. Now the Illuminati and collaborators in the Christian church have bled to discredit me for years. Mainly they have said that I have lied about my participation in the military, what I was involved in, that I was in Vietnam, or any of this. During the next several days, the state became very upset at the U. S. military because the US. military sald I was involved in a military group in Vietnam called Phoenix and that all members who were in Phoenix their military records were sealed and in Langley, VA. with the CIA. That is what I have said for years and years and years. And after all this, thousands and thousands of dollars paid to the collaborators within the Christian Church to Illuminati collaborators and plants have put out about me. This newspaper, which was trying to harm me, destroyed it in a matter of days. I became known as the survivalist raplst or the green beret rapist and it all came out about me being ex-special forces green beret. All this stuff denied by Christianity Today, and Logos and all these others for over a year was Just blown away in a matter of moments. Over the next two weeks, it went from I was suspected of 80 rapes to 100 rapes. Everyday the solicitor was holding a news conference. Everyday I was smeared in the news. In fact when they realized that either what they could frame me of, was falling apart on them they proceeded to take my picture and put it on the television. "We know he has done all this would anybody who has been followed by this man please come forward." They broadcast my picture all over the state. And I imagine-I was told- hundreds of crank calls but nothing ever came out because nothing had ever happened. Aud the problem was, and we're only guessing here, is the solicitor had been tricked by SLED. The solicitor really believed this. And he thought it was a high publicity case and it blew up on him and he was embarrassed. But he was being asked, we uncovered this. This is how it went before my arrest. And I think you will be surprised by the lies [?or irony?] in all this. SLED took statements from Meryl Blackburn 2:30 a.m. Sunday morning 17th -I'm sorry - May 18th Monday morning--(l'm sorry.) It was actually Monday morning May 18th at 2:30 in the morning. They arrested me at 3:30 in the afternoon. After taking statements, a close friend of Strom Thurmond who was sexually involved with the woman, who was all these women's bosses, came down to SLED headquarters went with them to solicitor James Anders office, and told Anders he wanted me sent to prison; he didn't care how. He then went to the state magistrate and got a warrant signed. This politician, who lived hundreds of miles away, came down here for that precise purpose and was involved. His name was Larry Martin. Now the reason that Strom Thurmond hated me, in case you're familiar or not familiar with this, is that when I was living in California working with Chick publications and preaching very heavily in '87 and doing mostly exposes on everybody it had come out about Strom Thurmond being the highest ranking Mason in the world, and that he was also a member of the voting Board of Regents for the Bob Jones University. Now the first thing that Bob Jones University did was to deny that Thurmond was a Mason. But Thurmond wouldn't go along with it. He knew he was too well known as being a Mason. So he came out and tried to defend Masonic beliefs that Christians can be that. It blew up on him. And he became so outraged that even though Bob Jones University was always calling me a liar, constantly calling me a liar, constantly trying to hurt me; they had to ask him to step down. lie was not removed. He was only placed to the non-voting board of regents, and., believe me, he still had all of his power. At that Lime, I was told he [Thurmond] is going to get you for this. I made a major mistake. I didn't pray about this. I met, and I let people supposedly Christian people talk me into moving to South Carolina. These were the first people to desert me when all this happened.

Now the interesting thing about this was all through this the only thing they had was this woman's statement. And it came out that woman had first went to the sheriff's department and the sheriff would not believe her because it had been-- she was talking about so far back that she admitted on the stand that she never had told anybody, that she had never sought medical help. There were some things that I don't want to testify- I don't want to say on this tape because it might offend people but things she described that night would have required her to receive emergency treatment in order to stay alive if it had really taken place, and yet she said she was not hurt, not damaged, was not bruised. She was not cut. She was not harmed in any way.

The situation was this, I was held for nine months in custody walting trial. The speedy trial law here was totaily disregarded by the judge. The reason I was held so long is this woman moved out of state didn't want to come back to the state. It was not- I believe this- it was not really a conspiracy in the beginning. This was a woman who wanted revenge for being fired. When it got out of hand she didn't know who she was dealing with. When it had gotten out of hand and become so publicized and she saw all these people running around trying desperately to do me in, she ran away. See what happened was that when she went to SLED, they typed my name into the computer that they have there. They have what they call a black list, a hit list that the politicians in South Carolina put people on. When my name popped up it became a field day and it just became too much for her, and she left, and they had to force her to come back. Now whether she was honest with them or whether they really knew what had happened or what I do know. But they completely changed her appearance for the trial. They dyed her hair, they put her in different clothes, they restyled and cut her hair so that this was how much she changed. I had only seen her a couple times, but when she came into the trial I kept asking my attorney when Meryl Blackburn was going to he there. I did not recognize her. That's how much she had changed. And so people who would have seen her that night which were alibi witnesses of mine would not have been able to perfectly identify her was the plan. And the reason for this is that there were witnesses who could have destroyed her testimony. But most important is lab tests that I happen to know the Lord was behind. I checked into the hospital within six or seven hours from when she claims this had taken place. It was supposed to have taken place Mother's Day weekend of '87 and like in the wee hours of Saturday morning. And Saturday afternoon around lunchtime I was checking in to the hospital. The test on admittance was this test for alcohol and drugs. Now this woman didn't know that. SLED and the prosecution didn't know that. And this woman claimed in her affidavit that I had forced her to drink and to take drugs and that I was drinking and taking drugs along with her. The urineanalysis totally proved her to be lying; there were no drags or alcohol in my system. And yet, and let me say that (O.K.), finally it was brought to trial Jan. 21 which was a Thursday of 1988. The jury was selected. A week before I was to go to trial I had all the funds that I had left I settled my law suit out of court, which was to he $120,000. I settled it out for $10,000 and gave it to my attorney who was supposed to spend it all on a private investigator. This private investigator was an ex-SLED agent. Supposediy, he tracked down all the witnesses I had told him There was enough evidence for, all this time I sat there and I knew I was going to be found innocent. I knew I was innocent. I knew the evidence was there to prove it. And the lawyer came and told me they had the lab tests. That they went before the judge and argued against the solicitor and got lab tests admitted into evidence and it was going to he there. He had drawn as he put it 32 witness's subpoenas and had served most of them, and was going to have the witnesses there and it was going to be an open show. And so all day of the 21st I watched the trial not worried, and yet not understanding what my attorney was doing. My attorney was making me out to he the bad-you see my attorney wanted me to take the stand and say I had affair with this woman and she was just upset. And I wouldn't do it. I didn't know at the time that he was in on it. And if they lost, they really weren't going to lose this case. If they lost, they wanted at least to destroy my reputation. And I couldn't understand where the witnesses were. And I didn't know until this month that they were there, they were just segregated outside of the courtroom. And so all day of the 21st I listened to the testimony. It was so ridiculous the jurors were laughing at the testimony, that's how ridiculous. I insisted when some nurses were up for jury duty I had insisted they get on the stand because they would have been able to believe the medical evidence. I mean the medical evidence which cleared me, we won right then and there.

I couldn't understand my lawyer put a woman on the jury who admitted, it's in the transcript, that her and her husband had seen the stories and read the stories and had already formed a conclusion. Obviously, if you had read the stories the conclusion would have been that I was guilty. Right? And as far as the public knew, I was still being suspected of all these, you know hundred something rapes, and nobody knew these didn't exist and nobody knew they didn't go anywhere. So as this jury took, I couldn't understand it. He said, "Oh, don't worry, it will be alright, I know what I am doing." The next day we come back, [I] still expecting to present a case, the 22nd of January, (1] still expecting to present a case. They called up a few minor witnesses. The only new witness they put on the case, they were trying to prove that the publishing company didn't exist, that it was phony, that it was a scam to draw women into it that I could rape and all this type of stuff. This is what the prosecution was trying to prove. There was just too much thousands of dollars yeah, blah, blah, I'll come and testify and blah blah." Then he turns around and tells my court appointed attorney for the Post-conviction that he thinks James Corry, that's the attorney's name, did marvelous work for me sad did the best be could under the circumstances. Yes, I'm innocent but no attorney could have done better for me. Making himself a witness who wasn't usable, but he didn't show up for the trial though he promised. This pastor had files [files?-word unclear] in his hand to set me free and refused to use it. I'll let you draw your own conclusions as to why. I did not know the full extent of what my attorney had done to me. I was sent to prison. Until Feb. 15, a week or so ago [?]. At the post-conviction in Columbia South Carolina the only two witnesses present were myself sad the attorney for the state. My attorney was testifying for the state. He got on the stand sad lied about several things that meeded to be true, that I need personally knew to be true. Now he had told me up until then that the reason be didn't use the lab was that it didn't show a screen for alcohol and for all these years I had believed him. On the stand however, knowing that it might come oat, he revealed that it did show a screen for alcohol. And be couldn't give a good reason why he didn't use it. That in also the time I found out that all the witnesses subpoenaed were sitting outside the courtroom the whole time for two days sad he never called them. Then the court-appointed attorney asked him, "Would this witness had contradicted Meryl Blackburn ? "would this one?" "Yes." "Would this one?" "Yes." On and on for the whole time for two days, and be never [?]. And the court appointed attorney kept asking him, "Would this have contradicted Meryl Blackburn? With this one?" "yes" and with this one? "Yes." and on and on. And yet be kept saying it wasn't important to present that. It wasn't important that there wasn't any witnesses. According to law, the lawyer can refuse to call witnesses.

However, the Constitution says I have a right to have witnesses there. Under South Carolina law, an attorney can override the defendent and not call the witnesses. And that's what they did to me. So in essence my Constitutional Rights were [blank pause], so I was sent to prison without being able to produce any witnesses.

Now we left the Post-conviction hearing on Feb 15 knowing that it was lost, knowing that it was rigged from the very beginning. About the most maJor point why my attorney threw the case. The Judge cut me off. We could have documented it and proved it. Testify. In essence, he took our defense away by not permitting me to testify at all about it. Again no fair trial. He said, „I will let you know in 3o days". But we knew, we knew at the time, it was pretty much open and shut. But then I pretty much. knew that in no state court would any court appointed attorney was I ever ever going to get anywhere. This attorney should have subpoenaed Rev. Randle sad put him on the stand sad be refused to do so. Again not calling witnesses. There was another brother named Joe in Charlotte who was a major witness in the case. He would alone got me a new trial but stating that I had called him from the jail after the first day of the trial and told him I needed him to be a witness at the next day, for him to take off work to corn on down to Columbia and testify. He then called my attorney and my attorney told him not to come. This man now won't even talk to Christians about it. When they talk to him on the phone, he's just terrified, he's scared to death. under no circumstances will be come to Columbia, South Carolina. There is a conspiracy going on here. That could be overruled by an attorney. There are a couple of attorneys in this state who are known that they can't be gotten to. And they have all told me that my case is open and shut. I should never have went to prison. I could have been set free by a couple court orders. But I have never been able to get these attorneys. And the reason for me not being able to write anybody, or have contact with anybody... (to be continued...in next issue Lord Willing)

CONTINUATION - EX-ILLUMINATUS REVEALS ILLUMINATI REVENGE

In the Sept. 1, '93 issue a tape which was secretly made by Johnnie Todd in prison was transcribed. This is a continuation of that transcription, and then a post-script is given to update the reader on things that have happened just recently. Before beginning we will repeal the last paragraph.

LAST PARAGRAPH FROM LAST NEWSLETTER

There is a conspiracy going on here. That could be overruled by an attorney. There are a couple of attorneys in this state who are known that they can't be gotten to. And they have all told me that my case is open and shut. I should never have went to prison. I could have been set free by a couple court orders. But I have never been able to get these attorneys. And the reason for me not being able to write anybody, or have contact with anybody... (to be continued...in next issue Lord Willing.)

CONTINUATION

was so that funds could never be reached, could never be raised so that I could hire an attorney that could set me free. In May, I'll have been in custody for 4 years. In January, this year I was already in prison for 3 years, for something that I didn't do, and for something that could have proved I was innocent, if I'd just been allowed to produce witnesses. In essence I have to hire an attorney who will subpoena the witnesses who will make no deal to sell me out and will let me have a fair trial. There is something else that you need to know. Three days after I was placed in jail without bail my attorney came to me. He said the Federal prosecutor, the assistant attorney general, whatever you want to call him the attorney solicitor, wanted to make a deal. Now remember I was facing a state charge not a federal charge. But this was the Feds. Now all I had to do was tell him where all the Christians were hiding, identify all these people in the underground, and I could go free. And I said no. It's a matter of record that a federal proffer, this is an immunity grant for testimony, was offered me--it's on record--and it was turned down. After I was convicted in '88 I was sent to prison in Columbia--there are several. Kirkland was the name of mine. I was called up front and I was told to sit down and wait, that the secret service was coming to talk to me. The woman supervising officer who was on duty found it strange that this secret service agent who was supposed to be locally from Columbia did not know where the prison was. And she just said, "Boy they are hiring dumb people today we had to give him instruction how to get here." When he arrived he let it slip out that he was actually a member of President Reagan's body guard staff from Wash. D.C. He said that he had to leave in a couple of days to Moscow. This was right before the Reagan-Moscow trip. And that he had to get ready to set up for the President. What was he doing here? And all he wanted was the same information. Of course it was the information. Why was the secret service involved? He was a member of Reagan's staff. Now after that, I was left alone, everything was left alone for a long time. And then in '90 in the winter of '90, the FBI came. I had been moved to a ah- I had been in three prisons. They keep moving me around and they are fixing to move me again is what they tell me. The FBI came this was late at night I was brought from my cell after everyone else was locked down, and I was taken up front. There were two agents of the FBI. They said they were there to question me again, was I willing to talk? was I willing to make a deal? I said, "no." They said all this could be behind me, I said "no". They left. They've came back three other times. Finally they quit coming. I guess they are getting the message. But I kindof expect them to show up now that I've lost the post-conviction. As soon as I get notified in writing that I've lost this post-conviction, I expect for them to show up again trying to know if I will make a deal; the answer is 'no." Isn't it amazing that I'm supposed to be this terrible rapist on a state charge that the Feds somehow have authority over this state charge and they are willing to let me just go, wipe it off the books for turning Christians who are wanted for nothig,, a lot of times nothing but misdemeanor warrants, or child custody warrants where the state wants to take the kids, or for violations of court orders. A lot of these people are on the run, from Christian schools where the state has sworn out warrants for these Christians because they were teaching the children, and the state decided that this was not right and so on. Little stuff, and yet they are willing to let me go for all these people plus the Christians who are hiding them out. I think you'd better wake up brothers and sisters, because I was sent to prison without the right to a fair trial and I want tell you what. It could be done real easy. It could be done real easy. They control the media. They could say anything about you they want to say. They control the governments. They control the police forces. Wake up!

I want to go into something else that is going on right now in the news. For over twelve years I have said that the goal of the United States government was to activate what is called Operation Garden Plot and its sub-plot Operation Cablesplice. Which was martial law, total military control over all police forces, governments, and so on. I've said that in order to do that they wanted the populace out there to scream at the president that he wasn't doing his job of protecting them from acts of terrorism. And that they were willing to give up their constitutional rights. Now we have seen time and time again in order to stop the drug wars to stop the drug dealers, and all the bloodshed that they are willing to give up Constitutional rights. People are willing to do it. People, when terrorism strikes, are willing to do it. Now for years, the Illuminati have tried to have the Arab countries be so outraged that they would start terrorism in the United States on a great massive rate. And our country is more susceptible than any other country for the simple reason that we are not prepared for it. We don't believe it could happen to us. And they thought they were going to be able to do it in Lebanon. They didn't pull it off. They thought by hitting Gaddafi he would act, he wasn't able to strike back. He was unable to do it. And now we are involved in a war whose sole purpose is to have those acts of terrorism launched upon us in this country. [The media has hyped every act of terrorism they could dredge up in recent years.-F.] And I will leave you with that. Now people soon you will all be in the same danger I'm in. I'm asking for your help. I assure you in the name of our lord Jesus Christ I am innocent of this charge. I state so before the Lord and you in his name. I'm innocent of this. Is it any surprise that John Todd who did them so much damage will be framed and sent to prison? Remember that I warned everybody about it that it would happen 2 years before it happened. I was warned. What is so agitating in this is that Christians who should have stood by me, who knew I was innocent, didn't do it. They became so afraid that they would be gone after, that they just left me here. I need your help. I need copies of this tape made. I need it passed around. I need the word to get around. I need anybody who can help to get the word around, and to help financially. Not until I can hire these non-collaborating attorneys will I get proved and get free. I could be free at this time. I could have been free three years ago. I never should have been sent to prison all I would have had to do was to have help and never had it. And I definitely desperately need this, I'm not very good, I wasn't very good at asking for finances when I was in the ministry. I couldn't even take my own offerings in the church. I need your help. I have a dear brother and sister... [name given is no longer working with him--at present 1, Fritz Springmeier am] is their name who have stood with me all through this. They don't have anything. They are just an everyday couple, a married couple. The man works he works hard. He works long hours. He is not a minister. But they can't get to him. And he is willing to have this [financial helpi come to him. See, I can't receive money [cash & checks] I can only receive a few dollars and they have to be in a U.S. postal money order. And if they catch me receiving a lot of mail in here again, they will come down hard on me, and it just makes it impossible. This dear brother and sister in the Lord will take money, put it in the account and whenever there is enough money, move to get my release. I am asking you to help. I am asking you whether it is five dollars or a hundred dollars, or a thousand dollars. Please, we need desperately. We need to raise the finances. We need to get me free. I never understood before as much as I understood now Paul's writings for when he was in prison to the churches for simple things, a coat, a few belongings, some finances- people who sent to him. And others who totally neglected him yet called themselves his brother and sister in Christ. It was so clear. I am asking for your help. I'm sending this tape to a couple of ministers, who after all these years I finally got their addresses again. And the Lord has just blessed me recently, and I will send this tape out. Now I'm hoping others will make copies and send it out. I'm hoping the word will get out. There is no use for me giving you my address for they keep moving me around from prison to prison so much I may not even be here before this week is out. So let me give you how to send funds and how to contact me if you really feel you want to reach me. You can write me, and they will send me your letter and I'll pray about it. And if I need to take the risk and write you, I'll do it. For those who wish to help you can send cash, money orders, whatever, since I'm not allowed to sign anything in prison they need to be mailed out to this party.[now Fritz Springmeier] And if you would make it out to the party whose name I going to give you in a minute... [At present checks can be made out to Fritz Springmeier to help Johnnie Todd. Put a notation on the check for what it is for.] You will be surprised for a small contribution of a gift of $5 how greatful I'll be. Right now the earliest I can get out [without winning in court] is the year 2005. That's a long time people for something you didn't do. We just don't have that long. I've got family and loved ones, and brothers and sisters in Christ that I desperately need to be out there for I'm asking for your help. If the Illuminati, Strom Thurmond and them put so much effort to this to me, there is a reason. And I'm asking for your help. I'm asking ministers who hear this who have newsletters to just simply send out what is going on here, to make copies of this tape and to make it available. People I don't have much time left in here. Right now there is a conspiracy going on and one of the reasons I hurry to make this tape there is a man in prison who years ago who had threatened to kill me. Amazingly, I'm just John Todd., I don't know why they would want to do that. Because at that time they were not sure what kind of a scandal it would cause they separated us they sent us to different prisons. And they put what is called a flag on my record, saying that we couldn’t ever be in the same prison together. Nine months ago, when I was fighting to gain my freedom, lawsuits and doing some different stuff myself, because I didn’t have an attorney. They got upset at me, they wanted to punish me by sending me to another prison. O.K. They couldn’t do it because this man was at that prison. And they let me know they couldn’t do it, that our records were flagged. Now this man was doing a life sentence without parole for murder. Since being in prison he has stabbed four people. Three of them in the last couple years since I’ve known him. He has sworn to kill me. And now he is here. A few weeks ago, he stabbed an inmate an second inmate at another institution, and instead of charging him with it, and putting him into solitary, like they had done before, they dropped the charges, and sent him to this prison. When I heard that he was here, he was being held up in the lock up in solitary waiting for bed space in my unit. He will be just a couple of cells from me.

I went to the authorities here and I complained. Surprisingly guess what brothers and sisters? the flags on our records had disappeared. And there was no record of them ever being there. In fact, they went so far as to say there is no record in our records of us being in the same prison together. And yet we’d been in two prisons together and in the same building a few cells apart. And its right there. That much is in the records. O.K. Complaints were filed and so on and so forth. And I looked right at the Captain here, Capt. Byrd over security and told him, „You did this. You got the man who will kill me. There is no big secret about this. This doesn’t happen by accident.’ Now at that time what was supposed to be done was that they should have shipped me. When I complained they should have shipped me. They claimed they couldn’t send him anywhere else, that he’s been to all these prisons and done all these things, that this was the last place they could have him. Well, they should have sent me away. Now they are claiming that none of the other prisons want to take me. Isn’t it amazing that they can’t ship me when this man is scheduled to move into my unit into my prison dorm here Fri. This is Monday. They’re doing this to try to kill me. What will happen? I’m in the Lord’s hands... [Johnnie Todd repeats his request for help]...They are afraid that eventually I’ll get my freedom....God bless you. [end of message.] tape was made and quietly gotten out. After my September newsletter came out, toward the end of this last month, in September two inmates who were paid to stab Johnnie Todd stabbed him in the back and then while he was on the ground, they stabbed him three more times. Johnnie Todd lost a lost of blood, but he is back on his feet and has returned to the general prison population, He is still hopeful to gain his freedom next year, because an appeal was won, and now he is to receive his fair day in court. He has an immediate need of $800 this upcoming month for a chance to get legal help. He has to meet legal deadlines.

POSTSCRIPT

Johnnie Todd did get moved from this prison after this tape was made and quitly gotten out. After my September newsletter came out towards the end of this last month, in September two inmates who were paid to stab Johnnie Todd stabbed him in the back and then when he was on the ground they stabbed him three more times. Johnie Todd lost a lot of blood, but he is back on his feet and has returned to the general prison population. He is still hopefull to gain his freedom next year, because an appeal was won, and now he is to receive his fair day in court. He has an immediate need of $800 tis upcoming month for a chance to get legal help. he has to meet legal deadlines.

Bloodlines of Illuminati

By

Fritz Springmeier, 1995

THE DuPONTS

There has been no consistency among the Du Pont family members in the spelling they have employed to write their name. The correct variations in spelling the Du Pont name are as follows: Dupont, DuPont, du Pont, duPont, Du Pont, and du Pont de Nemours. In English the second syllable is accented. In French, neither syllable is accented. The name has tended to be spelled du Pont for the family and Du Pont for business. I decided for this article to standardize the spelling in line with this tendency.

A DYNASTY OF SATANIC ROYALTY

Sitting down to write about the du Pont.s reminded me of two other families. Recently, John Coleman, a researcher on the elite, commented to me that when he had researched the Queen of Denmark he had discovered that the royal danish family was slipping away secretly from everyone and they were going to Satanic rituals. It is also noteworthy that 5 modern kings of Denmark have been the leaders of Freemasonry in Denmark, and the Danish royal family, princes etc. have been active Masons. John Dale wrote a book The Prince and The Paranormal which goes into the secret occult activities of the British royal family, especially Prince Charles, but also many other royal family members too. Besides the secret occult activities of the British Monarch, they have been openly leaders of Freemasonry (see the Appendix of Be Wise As Serpents for a detailed chart on this.) The du Ponts are similar to these families in that they too are a dynasty, they too have a very public image, and they too have a totally hidden life. In fact, the du Ponts have better control over the press's coverage of them than the British Royal Family.

One of the clues that the family is a top Satanic family are the frequency of marriages between relatives of the du Pont descendants. Few people are aware of the immense importance bloodlines play in the upper levels of Satanism. Blood is believed to carry the occult power. Unless a person has the correct blood he or she will not *rise* to the highest levels of Satanism. The du Ponts have intermarried with the Balls and the Gardners. These other familIes are known to be involved with the Illuminati and Satanism. For instance George W. Ball is on the important permanent steering committee of the Bilderbergers and has attended the Bilderberger meetings that I know of starting with the original first meeting in 1954, plus in 1955, 1957, 1963, 1964, 1966, 1967, 1968, 1974, 1975. George W. Ball is also a member of CFR and the Trilateral Commission. Eliza Cazenove (Gardner was a sister to a du Pont. I)orsey Cazenove (Gardner was a distant cousin. Will Gardner and Bessie Gardner duPont were cousins of the duPonts. John W. (Gardner is a 60 Illuminatus and in charge of the Rockefeller Bros. Fund. I have found the (Gardners in the thick of Satanism and witchcraft.

THE COMPLETE FACTS ARE DIFFICULT TO DISCOVER

At the library, I checked out a book Du Pont by William Dutton. The book had been a gift to the library from the f)u Pont Company. I also checked out a book Alfred I. Du Pont by Joseph Frazier

Wall. That book's author J. Wall was flnanced to write the book by the trustees of the Jessie Ball du Pont Fund. Although scholarly in appearance, it is what they don't say that can be so crucial to really understand the history of the du Pont family. When a family is worth billions they can afford to tidy up their family histories, and keep people from spilling the beans about secrets. On May 16, 1893 the press reported the death of Alfred Victor du Pont with great laudatory comments. Alfred (known as Fred) had been in business in Louisville, KT and was widely known in the area as a philanthropist. Louisville's main paper the Louisville Commercial gave the public a totally fictitious story about how Alfred Victor du Pont died, along with many pages of the highest praise.

If it hadn't been for the honesty of the Enquirer (a Cincinnati paper--not to be confused with today's national tabloid by the same name Enquirer) the public would not have learned what really had happened. The false story' said that Fred died of apoplexy while visiting his brother Bidermann. The duPont family still maintains this fiction is true, although all the facts of the case are blatantly known, and were public knowledge to quite a number of people whose lives were involved with what actually happened. Both Fred du Pont and his nephew Coleman du Pont were regular customers at the most expensive house of prostitution in the area, Maggie Payne's bordello. Although rich, Fred was not willing to help support a distraught prostitute raise the child she was sure he had sired. So she shot Fred in the heart. Coleman du Pont, who was familiar with Maggie's, soon went down to Maggie's, retrieved the body with a hearse and took the body to Biderman's house. There the coroner was willing to lie on the death certificate that the death was caused by „effusive apoplexy.' It is most likely Coleman made that lie worth his effort. Henry Watterson, editor of the Courier-Journal, although he later admitted he knew the real story of the murder, went ahead and printed the false story on behalf of the du Ponts.

This article starts out with this anecdote to make a point--the 13 top families do control the press--and are very sensitive to any negative publicity of any kind. Not only are their Satanic activities deeply hidden, but even just the normal everyday sinfulness or human soap box drama of their lives is deeply hidden. By the way, Coleman duPont, an extremely hedonistic man, is one of the duPonts I strongly suspect was into Satanism. Further secrecy has been obtained by working through trusted proxies. Today, a key proxy is the jew Irving Saul Shapiro. The du Pont family is represented in a number of groups by Irving Saul Shapiro, who is on the Council of Foreign Relations. Irving S. Shapiro is a key person who has been the go-between to coordinate the activities of the Rockefellers, the du Ponts, and the Watson families (Watson family members who are 6° Illuminati are mentioned in the 1/1/93 newsletter. Shapiro was a member of Carter's Advisory Council on Japan-US. Economic Relations, is a trustee of the University of Delaware, director of the Jewish Federation of Delaware, director of IBM (which is a Watson-Rockefeller business), director of Citicorp (Rothschilds and Rockefellers--headed in the past by 6° Illuminatus, CFR member, Bilderberger Walter Wristen), and the U.S./U.S.S.R. Trade and Economic Council (which Rockefeller plays a big part of). Shapiro is or was director of Continental American Insurance Co., International Business Machines (under IBM). Irving Saul Shapiro was chairman of the du Pont company.

BEGINNING AT THE BEGINNING

The biographies of the du Pont family usually begin with the marriage of Samuel du Pont to Anne Alexandrine Montechanin in 1737 in Paris, France. Although Anne was a Huguenot, she was a medium with the spirit world. Anne came from an ancient noble family that lived in Burgandy, France. It is quite possible that it was Anne's bloodline that gave the Du ponts their occult power. Anne's bloodline may possibly tie in to the House of David. At any rate, Samuel and Anne's son was the first du Pont to rise to greatness, and the first du Pont that can be connected directly to the Illuminati. Samuel and Anne's son was Pierre Samuel du Pont. Later Pierre Samuel added de Nemours to his name to prevent confusion between him and o ther French legislatures named Dupont. Pierre Samuel du Pont was a ge nius. Pierre's mother taught him to be a medium with spirits, but early on Pierre had to deny it publicly. His father Samuel could not understand the boy's genius, such as his ability at age 12 to translate Greek and Latin at sight. When Pierre's mother died when he was 16, be no longer had a parent in the family who could understand him, and after getting one of his frequent beatings from his father, he ran away, and was spared near starvation by his Uncle Pierre de

Monchantin. Initiatially, Pierre was a watchmaker, But within a short time he attracted the attention of several top Illuminati for his ability to write good tracts, and articles that advocated various economic and political views that they wanted promoted. Pierre Joined the Freemasons, and at some point was illuminized, as most of the French lodges became. Although Pierre went through severe financial difficulties after the French Revolution, be regularly made payments to Masonic organizations in France. Besides being friends with all the famous Masons of the time, one Mason brother of his worthy of note is the french astronomer Lalande, who helped hide him during the revolution. Someone very powerful protected Pierre Samuel during the French Revolution, this is hinted at by historian Pierre Jolly, although Jolly never gives his protector's name. I believe he was protected because DuPont was part of the Inner Satanic hierarchy. He was also protected by the daughter of Swiss financier Jacques Necker. This daughter was Madame Germalne de Staël. The Madame was a close friend of Pierre Samuel and she operated a famous salon/cathouse. Madame de Staël was nothing less than an intimate friend of St. Simon. She shared his occult revolutionary ideas. Henri de St. Simon was a student and friend of Jacques Rigomer-Bazin who was associated with the Inner circle of several occult-based revolutionary groups during Pierre du Pont's time in France. St. SImon was the author of The New Christianity which foreshadowed the creation of international communism. He also wrote in the early 1800s The Globe and The Reorganization of the European Community laying out ideas and plans for European unity. In the early 1800's, the Saint-Simonians suggested in the early 1800's that the date 2000 be the target date for the New Order. In order to rearrange the world into the New Order, a number of items and stages needed to occur. Two canals- one through the Suez and one through Panama were needed they said to create "Interdependence" between the nations. They also suggested a high dam on the Nile. They suggested the technological transformation of the earth, and the biological creation of a new, androgynous humanoid. (Androgynous beings are being produced in underground facilities-they are the small greys used to fly the saucers!) Progress would be brought about by a series of revolutions. (Study from Fire in The Minds of Men by James H. Billington to understand how the occult fraternities have created all the revolutions since the French revolution.) St. Simon, an Illuminatus, wanted to have a child with Madame de Stall which would become the anti-Christ. It didn't happen, but anyway, it is significant that the person who personally intervened during the French Revolution and saved Pierre Samuel DuPont's life was Madame de Staël. Necker along with Lafayette would later loan DuPont large sums of money for him try out his schemes in business and in forming a communist society. It's interesting that the Physiocrats journal was Les Ephémérides du Citoyen The title has astrological occult undertones. On Jan. 1, 1769 Pierre Samuel DuPont took over the journal's management. He became a key leader in France advocating a new order. Pierre Samuel DuPont believed in Plato's idea of government which included a philosopher-king. Pierre Samuel was deist. He spoke of "God" but he meant nature's deistic God, not a personal God. He believed nature was a higher God than his mechanical deist "God". Notice, the Jefferson in the Declaration of Independence also wrote „nature's God". This is because the deists like Jefferson and Du Pont believed Nature was the highest God. The ambiguity of meaning has permitted people to think Jefferson was referring the Christian God in the Declaration of Independence. It is a common occurrence that Christians assume that others who use words that they use, think like the Christians. Even today, many New Agers have an easy task to snow Christians. For instance they just say, "I believe in Christ." The Masonic reference book 10.000 Famous Freemasons put out by the Missouri Lodge of Research provides this about Pierre Samuel DuPont: "When 23 he published two pamphlets on finances, which attracted the attention of the celebrated Quesnay. He then expounded the doctrines of Quesnay's school, "the physiocrats." Went to Poland in 1774 at the request of King Stanislaus-Augustus [a Freemason] to organize a general system of national education. When Turgot became comptroller-general of French finances, DuPont was named inspector-general of commerce....He was recalled by Vergennes to assist in negotiating with England the treaty to accord independence to the U.S. in 1789 he was a member of the States. General, but his reactionary views led to his imprisonment in 1792 .... In 1799 he emigrated to the U.S. with his family, and at Jefferson's request, started on a plan for national education in this country. He returned to France in 1802 and was instrumental in promoting the treaty of 1803, by which Louisiana was sold to the U.S."

Pierre Samuel was a key figure in attempts to create a national education system in both Poland and the new U.S. A national education system was a Masonic/illuminati goal to control education and take it out of the hands of sincere Christians. Jefferson, who was a Grand Orient Mason of the famous Nine Sisters Lodge, and apparently a key Illuminatus, was a close friend of Pierre Samuel and was instrumental at several key points in Pierre Samuel's life when he needed help. Jefferson arranged for the first gunpowder order (which was a government order) when the Du Ponts went into the gunpowder business. Benjamin Franklin, a key leader of several secret occult fraternal groups was also a close friend of Pierre Samuel. When Benjamin Franklin arrived Dec. 1776 in France, one of the first people who sought out to visit with was Pierre Samuel DuPont. During the next year after that, DuPont was a frequent visitor to Franklin's residence in the village of Passy. In 1783, DuPont expected to sit with Franklin at the treaty table in Paris, but John Adams got the Americans to sign a treaty with Britian without France's involvement.

Alexander Hamilton, whose role in the conspiracy is now known, was DuPont's lawyer in the U.S.

THE NEXT GENERATION

During the second year of Pierre Samuel's marriage to Made Le Dèe, Victor Made was born with the Marquis de Mirabeau as his godfather. Victor Marie Du Pont (1767-1827) was an aide-de-camp to Illuminatus Lafayette from 1789-1792. Whether Victor was a Mason in France before the family came to the United States in 1800, I do not know. Victor Marie DuPont soon got involved in Freemasonry in the United States after arriving. The following are some of the highlights to his secret Masonic career according to Masonic records.

·1808-signed a masonic petition to create a lodge at Angelica, NY

·1813--joined Washington Lodge No. 1 of Delaware

·1814-joined Knights Templars of Wilmington, Del.

·1819-Grand Marshall of the Grand Lodge of Delaware (also 1822, 1823, *1825*, 1827)

·1825--Grand Treasurer of the Grand Lodge of Delaware

Pierre Samuel had two more sons- Paul François (died at age 1 month), and Eleuthère lrénée. Eleuthère lrénée followed his father's steps in getting Illuminated. Eleuthère lrénée was a prominent outspoken Jacobin.

THE JACOBINS

The Duc d'Orleans, Grand Master of the Grand Orient of France, that is head of all the French masons, along with two other key Masons Talleyrand and Mirabeau started the Jacobins. According to the book The War of the Antichrist with the Church (a book made from the lectures of George Dillon) (Dublin, Ireland: M.H. Gill & Son, 1885) where Dillon lectures on the French Revolution he states that both Talleyrand and Mirabeau were key Illuminati. The name of the original lodge of the Jacobins was changed to Club Breton and then Jacobin Club. The Jacobins were basically an illuminized type of Freemasonry. The President of the Jacobin Club was the Freemason Georges Jacques Danton, who was a member of the famous and powerful Nine Sisters Lodge (nine sisters or nine muses is what the Pleiades is called.) Lafayette was a Jacobin, as well as the key players in the French Revolution. A very secret body of 300 key Freemasons ruled France secretly during this period according to the Autobiography of Wolfe Tone (pub. by R. Barry O'Brien, 1893). Robespierre, was both a Freemason and an illuminatus. In fact, he was both a disciple of Weishaupt and Rousseau. Prussian Baron Anacharsis Clootz was also a Freemason and illuminatus. He also was a disciple of Weishaupt and understood better what Weishaupt was trying to accomplish. If one studies what these men taught you will discover it is what was later known as Socialism and communism. The original idea for all the French Revolution started with the Satanic hierarchy. In Nov. 1793, the true colors of this Satanic inspired business can be seen in the campaign against religion, where anyone who was a priest in France was killed, and the Illuminati posted one of Its motto’s in public "Death is an eternal sleep." Eyewitnesses testify that Satan has a very detailed plan which he entrusts to his very select few at the top. Much of what seems coincidence and unrelated is actually according to a yery clever (diabolical) plan. Eleuthère lrénée Du Pont was a major printer for the Jacobins. He was a convinced Deist and worshipped nature too.

A POWDERMAN BECOMES DIRECTOR OF THE NATIONAL BANK

Later in the United States, after successfully setting up the best gunpowder factory in the world, Eleuthère Irenée DuPont was selected along with his friend Nicholas Biddle to be a director of Hamilton’s creation the United States Bank. Remember that Astor was also selected as a director of this "National" Bank.

The Mason Stephen Girard (1750-1831), initiated into Masonry in 1788 in Charleston, S.C., helped establish the second Bank of United States in 1816 and served as its director. Girard had amassed a S9 millIon fortune by the time of his death. He was born in France, and become a sea captain. Where his money came from is somewhat of a mystery. He gave large sums of his money to masonic charity.

EARLY YEARS IN AMERICA

On Jan. 3, 1800, the DuPont tribe arrived in the United States with grandiose plans. Part of the plans were to create a new society. While

Victor Marie and his father pursued grandiose schemes that tailed miserably, Eleuthère lrénée DuPont started a gunpowder business in Delaware. Irénée’s success can be attributed to several factors:

·The french government gave him top secret machinery and plans to produce the best gunpowder possible in that day. It was state-of-the-art technology, and they supplied manpower to help get started.

·The DuPonts had friends in various places that helped them in numerous ways, getting financing, business, land, etc.

·Eleuthère lrénée DuPont was intelligent, worked very hard and worked with patience. If he hadn’t had so many commendable qualities, then the Du Pont family may have sunk back in history, and another family taken their place.

A ROYAL DYNASTY

The DuPont’s are a dynasty of Kings. They have been called Kings- and rightly so even if people have been unaware that they are a dynasty of Illuminati Kings. I do not know which particular men have served during the Satanic rituals. The famIly has always had a head of the family. It may be that the most powerful DuPont may also secretly serve as the highest Satanist. I don’t know who has been representing the family at the highest levels of secret Satanism (I suspect or surmise it has not been the public head of the family in modern times), but I can list the public head of the family as it passed down through time:

Persons below --years as head of family-- generation coming to America

Pierre Samuel Dupont- 1739-1817- first

Eleuthère lrénée DuPont- 1817-1834--second

Alfred Victor DuPont- 18341850-third Henry DuPont- 1850-1889--third

Henry A. DuPont- 1889- -fourth

These men had great authority over the tribe of duPonts. The du Ponts had family council where even the women had voting rights. The DuPonts, like the Rothschilds helped set up their children’s marriages, and many of the early ones were to cousins. For instance, much to the delight of the duPonts, Sophie Madeleine du Pont married her cousin Samuel Prancis DuPont in 1833. (2 of Sophie’s drawing occur later in this article.) The family owned everything in common, and distributed according to needs and according to the contribution that each could give to the family business. The James Bidderman, the son of Evelina DuPont Bidderman, went to France and his decedents would give the DuPonts a lineage in France. One of the families that Intermarried and were close friends with the DuPonts was the Cazenoves family. Both families were close friends with Thomas Jefferson and Albert Gallatin, I have concluded that both Thomas Jefferson and Albert Gallatin were Illuminati. Further, I discovered in a forty volume set on American Statesmen in vol. 13, p.386 that Albert Gallatin claimed to be descended from the ancient Roman Consul Callatinus. Incredible as it may seem, the black nobility have kept track of their bloodlines. The same people ruling the world today are in many ways the descendants of the rulers in past ages. Antoine Charles Cazenove, born in Geneva, Sw. was a business partner with Albert Gallatin. During the War of 1812, the DuPont gunpowder factory since it was the primary American powder company was the known target for the British to destroy. However, the British never attacked it. The Du Ponts had organized a local militia called the Brandywine Rangers. Interestingly, their militia flag was a beehive on white silk. Lafayette visited the DuPonts in Delaware the summer of 1825.

Another important Mason who would visit the DuPonts was Henry Clay who was the American Secretary of State and head of the whig party. Henry Clay was Grand Master of the Grand Lodge of Kentucky and GranD Orator for the G.L. 1806-09. He was one of the Freemasons involved in a high level meeting that used the U.S. Senate Chambers on Mar. 9, 1822 for their meeting. If the duPonts were already one of the primary top families, it may well be Clay was coming to them for guidance on how to steer the nation. The duPonts played a role too in the building of the American capital, which was laid out and constructed with numerous occult patterns.

THE NEXT GENERATION--Pierre Samuel’s grandchildren

Eleuthère lrénée du Pont had a daughter Sophie Madeleine du Pont (1810-1888). Sophie was also her mothers name. Sophie Madeleine du Pont (her name Sophie/Sophia is popular with Moriah) wrote diaries, journal voluminous correspondence. Sophie also drew hundreds are drawings and sketches, many of them charactures of people. Of her sketches, this article reproduces two of them which bear importance to this newsletter. The first is a drawing by Sophie du Pont of one of the duPonts dressed up like Satan with long paper horns and a tail. Interestingly, according to a 12/12/1829 letter by Sophie to one of her relatives Sophie comments that the costume of Satan was mistaken "for Old Nick." (See the article on Saturn in this newsletter for evidence of the connection between Satan and Santa.) The next drawing is a drawing that went with a letter from Sophie to Clementina Smith, 21 July 1837 which is a self-portrait of what Sophie calls "blackies" (black servants) who "toted" (carried) her to her bath in a special chair. This drawing is included to show how wealthy the DuPonts were within a short time after coming to Delaware, U.S.A. Alfred Victor DuPont, who took over as head of both the family and the factories making gunpowder, was married to Meta. Meta was into Swedenborgianism, which was a type of mystical religious Freemasonry, that was based on the swedish mason Swedenborg’s teachings. Alfred Victor apparently didn’t feel anything negative toward this. His wife Meta organized a Swedenborg church in town. Around the CIvil War times, the DuPonts became less identified with Deism and more Identified with the Episcopal church. Joanna Smith DuPont was Instrumental in this change. One of the families that the DuPonts would marry with was the Cazenoves, who were Episcopalians, and some members were I suspect involved with the Illuminati. Christ Church was built off the DuPont communal property for Episcopal services. By the Civil War, the state of Delaware was lock-stock-and-barrel under the control of the DuPonts and their friends the Bayards, the Saulsburys, and the Greys, in this 20th century, the DuPonts have gotten firmer control. Because the state of Delaware is controlled by the DuPonts, et. al, it is worthwhile to examine some of the people the DuPonts and their elite friends have placed into office. This is a very unfinished skimpy list, I have done only a little research in this direction.

GOVERNORS OF DELAWARE

(chronological order)
John Collins (Gov. 1819-1822) -- Collin's family

Caleb P. Bennett (Gov. 1832-1836) -- Freemason

Thomas Stockton (Gov. 1844-??) -- high ranking Freemason

Charles C. Stockley (Gov. 1883-87) -- Freemason

BenjaminT .B iggs(Gov.1 887-1891)-- Freemason

Pierre Samuel duPont,I V(1977-) -- also U.S.Representative, and other gov. positions

U.S. SENATORS OF DELAWARE (alphabetical order of surnames)

T.Coleman duPont (Sen.1 921-192?)

Henry A. DuPont (Sen.1 895-1896) (1906-1916) In 1896, the U.S. Senate rejected his election and therefore Henry duPont's credentials due to proof of voter fraud. Delaware legislature (republican) replaced Henry (a republican) with a democrat. But in 1899 when the Senate seat became available and another one in 1901 too they could not come to any agreement on a selection of a Senator because Henry A. DuPont and John Edwards O'Sullivan Addicks the two republican leaders were fighting so much. Consequently in 1899 Delaware only had one U.S. Senator and from 1901 to 1903 Delaware had no U.S.Senators.

L.HeislerBall (190345,1 919-25) also served Del.as state treasurer -- Freemason.

James H. Hughes (Sen. 1937-42)- Freemason, also was Del. Sec. of State

Richard R. Kenney (Sen. 1897- 1901), Freemason, also adj. general of Del.

Arnold Naudain (Sen. 1830-36), Freemason, Grand Master of the G.L. of Del., also state senator ('36-39),

John G. Townsend (Sen. 1929-42), Freemason, banker, alternate delegate to the U.N. General Assembly in 1946.

James M. Tunnell (Sen. 1941-47), Freemason, 32°, also lawyer

John Wales (Sen. 1849-51), Freemason, Pres. of Nat. Bank of Wilmington and Brandywine, sec. of state of Del. 1845-49.

William V. Roth. Jr. (Sen. 1971-) CFR, Trilateral Commission, also on the Rep. Nat. Comm.

The DuPont gunpowder factories dominated the industry. Within only a short time after getting started in 1802 they had the best quality gunpowder in the world for the general market. Every war the United States has fought starting in 1802 with the war against Tripoli (today Ubya) and the Barbary Pirates until the incursion Into Somolia this last year the American military has depended upon DuPont gunpowder. Henry du Pont (1812-1889) took over command of the gunpowder manufacturing when he was thirty-eight. He was very authoritarian and was known as Boss Henry. His narrow-minded, backward and authoritarian thinking ran the DuPont company into the ground in spite of their control of the gunpowder market. When he died, Alfred I. duPont, Pierre Samuel du Pont II (1870-1954), and Thomas Coleman du Pont (1863-1930) took over various DuPont manufacturing affairs. This triumvirate revived the aging Du Pont factories. They bought out the rest of the gunpowder manufacturers, giving them an absolute monopoly in the munitions industry. They modernized the DuPont factories and put the DuPont businesses back Into top shape.

On August 22, 1857 the du Ponts lost their first family member to an explosion, Alexis duPont. The duPonts had always beea in the forefront on safety at their gunpowder factories, but that did not prevent them from having to suffer repeated explosions over the years. An explosion at a gunpowder factory is easily set off and very deadly. The tutor that was hired in 1852 to tutor the DuPont children, R. Page Williamson, described in his letters to Virginia that the duPont children were very spoiled and difficult to work with. In 1872, Henry duPont brought together Laflin & Rand and Hazard Powder Co. in order to form a Gun Powder Trade Association. What the Association did was to eliminate competition between the three largest manufacturers of gunpowder, and create a monopoly for this cartel. Eventually DuPont bought out the other two plus numerous other small gunpowder companies. I suggest that everyone who believes that the DuPonts and the rest of the elite are capitalists, should take another look at history. These men do not believe in capitalism, they believe in monopolies--which boils down to the same thing that occurs under communism. When these people described their setting up a monopoly they call it "bringing order and stability to a fragmented and chaotic industry." In 1889, Alfred I. du Pont attempted to bribe French officers in charge of the production of smokeless gunpowder to give the secrets to him. But no amount of bribe would work, as the Frenchmen knew they would lose thefr lives if they gave the secrets to him. The British were not any more helpful. Ufe was not all peaches and cream. Fred was murdered. William du Pont (1855-1928) was trapped in a marriage with a duPont cousin, May du Pont, that he ditn’t want to be married to. Louis Cazenove du Pout a handsome, intelligent young - committed suicide with a bullet in the library at the Wilmington Club. Alfred was shot in the face by accident on a hunting trip. The duPont family had their share of heartaches, broken marriages, insanity, etc. When Mary Belin married into the family she brought some Jewish blood. As a major part of the budding military industrial complex the DuPonts during the 19th century had to work with the army and navy. The army and navy convinced them to Implement a contract with the Coopal Co. in Belgium for smokeless powder, which when the formula was received was found to be inferior to what the American were already producing. However, this whole episode ended with the DuPonts going with their own formula and setting up a new plant at Carney’s Point, New Jersey. This hits the highlights of the family history in their first 100 years in this nation. To celebrate their first hundred years, every living descendent of the first Pierre Samuel was invited to a great banquet. A building was built to house them. They numbered over 100. At each person’s table setting was a special gift of a gold coin, prepared especially to commemorate this centennial. On Jan. 1, 1900, the DuPont tribe celebrated. The DuPonts are shrouded in so much secrecy, that their secrecy is not even known. When Eugene DuPont, the chief executive of the family gunpowder/high explosive business died near the turn of the century, none of the other DuPonts hardly even a vague idea of how much the company was worth or what assets it had. (At that time the DuPonts had powder plants in PA, DEL, Iowa, and TN. The DuPonts are much the same today, except that their assets are perhaps ten times better hidden, not only from outsiders but from themselves. The DuPonts have in general made their money the hard way-by working and producing, in contrast to the other top families. The DuPonts are to be commended on this, even If at times they have been very tight on what they have given their workers. The DuPonts have also shown an amazing ability to keep their dynasty alive. There seems to be an increasing invisibility to their family.

HITTING PAYDIRT

One of the people who bad been Involved for a short time with the Illuminati, and is now a Christian told me that they could remember the name The Society of the Cincinnati and that they knew nothing about the organization, but that it had something to do with the Illuminati. But what is this organization?

Without anything but the name I began my investigation. At first look it seemed like some old ladles genealogy group who are descendents of revolutionary soldiers.

However, as I carried out what promised to be a long term research project on the Society it began to appear that something big was behind this organization. One reference stated, "The Society of the Cincinnati # 1783 # it is likely that no Englishman feels a greater sense of pride in being a Knight of the Garter, or Scotsman, a Knight of the Thistle, than an American feels in being a member of The Society of the Cincinnati." WOW. DOUBLE WOW! Here is an organization that essentially no one I know has even heard about, and yet an American would feel a great sense of pride in belonging to it. Interesting. Not only that, but I knew what the Order of the Garter is!! The Order of the Garter is the secret inner group which is an elite group within the Order of St. John of Jerusalem which is the British part of the Knights of Malta. The Knights of the Garter are the leaders of the Committee of 300. They are diabolical men. Lord Peter Carrington, who is a member of the satanic Order of Osiris and other demonic groups is a member of the Order of the Garter. Lord Palmerston is an example from history of another similar example of a KnIght of the Garter who was totally corrupt, pretended to be a Christian, and practiced Satanism. I found out that the Massachusetts legislature had had some of its senators and representatives concerned for the welfare and safety of the United States, because, according to testimony on record, the Society of Cincinnati was "the beginning of a hereditary aristocracy in the U.S. dedicated to subverting the Republic." The Massachusetts Legislature declared the Society of the Cincinnati "dangerous." And yet speaking for the public for all the legislators trouble, the truth is nobody has even heard of the Society of the CIncinnati, let alone known or guessed it was dangerous.

When the United States was created it operated under the Articles of Confederation. It was a confederation of Independent states-each of the states printed their - money, passed their own laws, etc. The federal government was simply a League of Nations-type body. The Society of the Cincinnati was partly responsible for getting that changed. The Society of Cincinnati favored a very strong central government, a national bank, etc. The Freemason Baron von Steuben is credited with starting the organization. The Mason Pierre L'Enfant who designed the CIty of Washington with its hidden occult symbols also designed the logo for the Society of the Cincinnati. Every president of the United States has worn the Diamond Eagle jewell of the Society of the Cincinnati. Wow. And I hadn't even heard about it until I got this tip from this ex-illuminatus. Benjamin Franklin was an honorary member. The Marquis de Lafayette was a member. George Washington and James Monroe were Original Members. At least 15 Presidents have been honorary members. Pres. Franklin Pierce and Zachery Taylor (his father was an Original Member) were hereditary members. Many of the high ranking Masons who were also officers in the Revolution were Original Members. Three prominent Freemasons who were big in the Society of the Cincinnati were Henry Beekman Livingston (1750-1831), James Mann (1759-1832), and Hardy Murfee (1752-1809). Hardy served as Grand Master of the Grand Lodge of North Carolina beginning in 1789. I noticed that many very busy elite People were spending a lot of money and time on this Society, whatever its purpose was. The Society had a museum, and a headquarters building in Washington, D.C. on Massachusetts Ave, N.W., and state chapters. But why? The stated purpose of the organization ditn't seem to explain the interest people put into the organization. Why spend time belonging to an organization whose only purpose is to commemorate the fact that all Its members are descendents of Revolutionary War officers? The purpose of the organization is "To render permanent the cordial affection subsisting among the officers." O.K. I can understand a group of officers who are all veterens of a war getting together. But their descendents? We are talking about a war whose fighting basically ended in 1781. That's over 200 years ago. Would my busy descendents care to visit with some other Vietnam vets' great-great-great grandchildren 200 years from now? Yet, my 1983 World Almanac (which lists in fine print about 1,300 associations) gives the membership of the Society of the Cincinnati at 2,800. Other sources indicated that the organization had an affiliate organization in France. But how? How could an organization which was open to only descendents of select Revolutionary Officers be so Identical in purpose to something in France for frenchmen? I could understand why, but only If the stated purposes were not the whole story. As you can see I was very suspicious of the Society of the Cincinnati, it appears I had stumbled onto something big. But I hadn't been able to tie the Society in with the Illuminati-until I stepped up my research on the duPonts. The tie-in between the Illuminati and the Society of the Cincinnati came when I began investigating what I thought might turn out to be an obscure Person. His name was Leighton Coleman (1837-19??) and he was married to Francis

(Fanny) Elizabeth, daughter of Alexis Irenée du Pont (1816-57). Alexis died in an accident. Occult bloodline power can pass through women or men, so it was worth it to investigate Leighton Coleman. Leighton Coleman turned out to be the Bishop of the State of Delaware for the Episcopal Church. He was a prime mover in the temperence movement (which I had already discovered was Illuminati controlled). Further Leighton was grand chaplain of the Grand Lodge of Freemasons in Pennslyvannia, Grand Prelate of the Knights Templar, and chaplain of the Delaware Society of the Cincinnati. Another of the top 13 Illuminati families is the Kennedy family. There is a connection to the Society of the Cincinatti with this family too. Jacqueline Bouvier Kennedy Onassis (ex-wife to both J.F.K. and Aristotie Onassis) had a grandfather named Major Bouvier, who invented a family genealogy which was mostly fiction which was self-published in 1925 as Our Forebears, but tbe fantasy Bouvier genealogy allowed him and his sons Bud and Black Jack to get into The Society of the Cincinnati. (see A Woman Named Jackie, by C. David Heymann, p. 18) All three Bouviers were very proud of their memberships and would proudly display their boutonnieres on their labels showing membership.

THE THREE COUSINS THAT SAVED THE DUPONT COMPANY IN 1902

The successful three Du Ponts, Alfred, Coleman, and Pierre that together took over the gunpowder factories ended up in some serious infighting after a few years. Alfred divorced his wife to marry his cousin, and the Coleman and many of the others did not approve of the marriage. Alfred and the others got Into some serious family infighting. In 1913, Alfred at one point letting his rage get the better of him, got the Delaware legislature to pass a special law changing his first wife’s sons name to spite his first wife. The special law passed the House in four hours secretly at Alfred’s request but failed by two votes in the Senate after the other Du Ponts found out what Alfred was trying. Alfred built his cousin-wife Alicia the most expensive house on the east coast. In 1910 dollars, the lowest estimate is $2 million, but the actual cost may easily have been several times that. The name of the mansion was named Nemours. The main grounds of the Nemours estate are 400 acres enclosed by an 9-ft. wall. Broken glass was embedded in the concrete on top of the wall. Beyond the 400 are 2,000 acreas that make up the estate. From 1906 until 1920, the du Pont family broke up into two factions that waged a civil war in various arenas. Alfred I. DuPont led a political campaign that fought the corruption of Coleman DuPont’s forces. Up to that time politics and voting. and vote counting were totally corrupt. By April, 1918 Alfred had defeated Coleman for control of Delaware’s politics. In 1911, Alfred bought the principle daily paper in the area the Wilmington Morning News. In 1916, after successfully blocking his uncle Henry A. duPont from being reelected, Alfred duPont bought control of 9 Delaware newspapers. in 1932, on a trip to Egypt Alfred found a dog be named Mummy that was his familiar spirit. In the biography about Alfred which I read it said, "Alfred had scored over his sister Marguerite. Let her collect Virginia ghosts if she wanted them. Only he had a reincarnated Egyptian mascot who could produce wonders as great as those of Aladdin’s genie." (Alfred Du Pont by Joseph F. Wail, p. 593) Alfred L du Pont himself wrote this in a letter to the Rev. Baker P. Lee (23 May ‘32) about his familiar spirit, "I have one or two more jobs for Mummy and then I will give her a vacation before I put her to work again." (He wrote at least one other letter where he talks about the magical powers of his dog. which was his familiar spirit. Mrs. Cazenove Lee, Jr. got a letter mentioning Mummy’s powers too.) Alfred died in 1935. Ed Bali and Jessie Ball du Pont (his widow) took over control of his estate. Ed Bail increased the Alfred I. duPont’s fortune and became the most powerful man in Florida. Ed Bali’s wealth passed the Billion dollar mark in the 50s or 60s. In the late 1960s, political enemies were able to attack the wealth of Ed Ball with new legislation and some investigation of the misuse of his money hidden in the foundations. In 1981, Ed Bail died. in 1985, Ed Ball’s widow claimed that Ed’s sister Jessie had actually murdered Alfred I. duPont in 1935. She claimed that while Ed was alive she had been too afraid to tell the truth about Alfred’s murder. Forbes magazine carried the story in Oct., 1965. T. Coleman duPont, went in business with President Taft’s brother Charles P. (member of the Skull & Bones) in 1910 to build McAlpin Hotel in New York City. (Taft’s other brother Horace was a member of the Order of Skull and Bones. In fact, the Taft family which dates back to Braintree Mass. in 1679, helped start the Skull & Bones Order and at least eight Tafts have been in the Order.) This was the first of a series of luxury hotels. Coleman bought New York Equitable Life Assurance Society, which was America’s largest insurance company. N.Y.

Equitable Life Assurance company undoubtedly brought Coleman in touch with other Illuminati elite. He belonged to the Rittenhouse in Philadelphia. He was the director of a number of things including the Union National Bank, in Wilmington and the pres. of Central Coal & Iron Co. along with a few other coal and Iron companies. T. Coleman has been mentioned already in connection to the Du Pont Gunpowder Business, which he ran for a number of years as head honcho. During W.W. 1, the Du Ponts made a mint. The company had $9 million surplus in its treasury. The result was that Du Pont absorbed General Motors. The DuPonts also went Into the chemical business. The american government had seized the German Dye Trust, and the DuPonts were given their patents. The Du Ponts began to build a great chemical empire on the synthetic, such as shatterproof glass, paints, rayon, nylon, dyes, photographic flim, rubber, chemicals, drugs, etc. Only the Dow Chemical Company is any competition with the DuPont chemical operation. Alfred Victor duPont (Alfred I.'s son) served only as a private in the marines during W.W. I and was on board several ships. And yet for some reason when W.W. 11 broke out, he was made a consultant to the Joint Chiefs of Staff from 1943 to 1945. He was an Episcopalian.

Emile Francis duPont (1898-) graduated from Yale, like a number of duPonts have. He was important lay person within the Episcopal church. Pierre Samuel duPont belonged to the American Philosophical Society. He also wears the rosette of an Officier de Ia Légion d' Honneur. (How or why he got this I haven't found out.) He was on Delaware's State Board of Education, 1919 - 21 . He was the President of General Motors from 1920-23 when he turned it over to Alfred P. Sloan, Jr. Pierre Samuel started what is called "the buddy system" where DuPont and GM's management worked together. DuPont saved GM from extinction after W.W.I and has watched over GM since. Robert L duPont, Jr. is a research psychiatrist. He has done research at Harvard. He was the delegate for the US. at United Nations Commislon on Narcotic drugs (1973-78). He is especially knowledgable about what drugs will do to a person, which le an area of his research. And Francis Marguerite du Pont (born 1944 in Duluth, Minn.) is deep into research into genetics. Those of us, who know what these people want to do, cringe when we see that some of the top genetic researchers are connected with Satanic families. Every American almost everyday uses a Du Pont product. When I began learning what the DuPont industries produce it is utterly astonishing. Anything that involves chemicals is under their production. Herbivores and fertilizers for farming. cosmetics and nylons for women, chemicals for all types of industrial production, textiles of all kinds, cleaning fluids such as when you clothes are dry cleaned. The list can go on and on. Most of us are using DuPont products almost continuously all through the day! General Motors, the explosives and gunpowder monopoly, the chemical monopoly (which its tens of thousands of products) gives the duPonts enormous financial leverage. The DuPonts obviously are in close cooperation with the elite involved with oil-because so many of their products are derivatives of petroleum products. In 1940, it was estimated the duPont famIly was worth $5 billion. Today, their total worth must be many billions of dollars, not to mention the enormous power they wield. The very survival of the United States military is dependent upon the military products of the DuPonts.

THE DUPONT COMPANY USED AS A TOOL TO BRING US INTO THE NEW ORDER

Although the DuPont companies -the principle DuPont company is E.L. DuPont De Nemours & Co (whose 1991 revenues were $38.7 billion)- are run by many executives who are not duPonts, the duPont family does quietly pull the strings in the background. Many of the executives are men whose philosophy of life matches the duPonts. It is very clear that the DuPont companies are being used in a big way to move us toward the New World Order. The first item on this, concerns how the Du Pont workers are being Indoctrinated. I received a video of the Pecos River Training near Santa Fe, N.M. that DuPont workers in the east are sent to. I also looked at a magazine article about this training (indoctrination) in the article "Go Take A Flying Leap (for the company)" (Successful Meetings June 1992, pp.59-62). A christian brother who works for the DuPonts in Tennessee has been secretly undermining the efforts of the DuPont company leaders to turn the workers into New Agers. With the help of Christians in the plant, this Christian brother finds out what is planned, and then does his homework so that he can proof to the workers how New Age ideas are being brought in to subvert their thinking. The company changed from calling all its people "employees" to calling them initiates.

The people at the plant were to all be sent to the Pecos River Training by DuPont, but due to the exposure of their New Age subversion, people are not allowing themselves to be led by the nose. This brother sent me a video of the Pecos River Training. and there are scenes in it where "strangers" are kissing each other-well, not exactly strangers because the training is designed to break down individuality and to create a group think with intimacy. Initiates are taught „don't slay the ego, ego is your servant." Another magazine article in (June 1992, p15-16) tells about the five type of thinking that the DuPont company is trying to instill in their people. They are 1. lateral thinking; 2. metaphoric thinking; 3. posItive thinking (this is also called visualization-or in the occult witchcraft); 4. assocIation trigger; 5. rapturing and interpreting dreams. An employee environmental awards program was installed where employees can win money by submitting their environmental suggestions. (Personal Journal Aug. ,92, pp 60-71.) Many of the readers of this newsletter are already aware of how the environmental issue is contrived and controlled by the elite. One of the items our new-agy Dept. of Education secretary Alexander tried to get going was for education to shift from the schools to the factories. This is a process that the Illuminati want to implement to further take us into a total slave state. Interestingly, DuPont has been getting into the act by spearheading Delaware's BRT task force, in which students will attend seminars at Du Pont facilities. The DuPont company is employing A.A.-that is artificial intelligence. The neural networks are to the point they can learn from their mistakes. DuPont is taking us into Brave New Worid. They were the first ones to initiate with Fax NOW a rapid customer service called fax-on-demand. Du Pont is now in the process of becoming totally global. They already have plants in a number of South American countries, Mexico, Canada, US., Korea, Japan; and several european nations. They have been trying to figure out how to enter the Commonwealth of Independent States (CIS--what used to be USSR). Apparently, they lost some money already in that regards. The ICI (Imperial Chemical Industries- which is allied with the Warburg family) in England and DuPont swapped plants. Imperial Chemical Industries has had their headquarters in Wilmington, Del for some time before this swap. DuPont got ICI nylon plant, and ICI got DuPont acrylic plant in the states. Why? So both companies could become more international. Or in the words of someone else to "focus resources on businesses where each can develop stronger global positions." (See Economist, 10/3/,92, p.76) The swap will give DuPont 43% of the European market for nylon fibers used to manufacture carpets.

Dupont has built a $20-million research center in Bad Homburg, Ger. DuPont has been spending according to a recent article $1.27 billion on research. Some of Du Pont's research la in "risky" areas, that means that it is difficult to see how the research can financially benefit the company. ThIs has been admitted by the company.

The Aviation Week and Space Technology, 10/26/92 issue, p. 64,66 talks about the sophisticated composite materials that DuPont is producing for state of the art space and aviation vehicles. (I Imagine some of these composite materials are finding there way to the secret UFO bases, and DuPont may well be producing some of the parts for these secret anti-gravity machines. The article states that Boeing Defense and Space Group, Lockhead Aeronautical Systems Co., General Dynamics and DuPont and Hercules, Inc. are working together on aeronautics projects. Boeing and Lockhead are definitely involved with the production of flying saucers, so this may be a good due that DuPont is too. The article states that DuPont has been a leading supplier for advanced US military programs. An example of the sophisticated materials that the DuPonts are producing is XTC; the first recyclable, class-A finish thermoplastic sheet molding compound for horizontal exterior body panels. It is a flexible, porous; interwoven sheet of polyethylene berephthalate-impregnated long-glass fiber. General Motors (DuPonts) selected the material for use on their air-intake manifold on certain 1993 V-6 engines (Modern Plastics. ",Automotive Show Features Lots of Toughened Materials", by Stuart A. Wood, April 1992 issue, pp 66-69.)

The CEO of E.l. du Pont de Nemours & Co. is Edgar Woolard who took over in 1989. Edgar is innovative which will be beneficial in the '90s with all the upheavals coming. One item that the Illuminati have planned is to put things Into our major cIty water supplies Interestingly, DuPont has research facilities and a Chamber's Work facility in Deepwater, New Jersey which both deal with water treatment. The du Pont family today i represented at the sixth Illuminati level -the Pilgrim

Society. I am convinced their power also run higher, but want mor information/research to bring it out to the open. One book said that th du Ponts were one of the top three influential famIlies in the United States today. Whether one is aware of the secret Satanic power of the duPonts or not, it is inescapable to conclude that thi family is exceedingly powerful in the United States beyond comprehension. Every facet of our lives is influenced by products whose production is still ultimately under the control of the duPont family of control. For those people who subscribe to the theory that the world is divided between oni the Rothschilds and Rockefellers, look at the duPonts, who are truly independent of the other top families dispels that theory. To quote Karl Schriftgiesser in his book Families ",...the Du Ponts of Delaware constitute a definite dynasty perhaps the most complete dynast ever establIshed in this republic an one whIch seems destined to contintue its kingship for generations I come...Today there are seven hundred members of thi family...Every time a package of cigarettes is opened, the simple tearing of the tab is a gesture of tribute to the Du Ponts, and every time a great gun booms, with whatever cost to life or property; it echoes merrily in the feudal stronghold of this mighty clan...We must end with the direct statement that the Du Ponts today rule Delaware with an Iron hand, that their interests affect the daily lives of each one of us in some way, and that the Family moves on. "It is, today, the great American dynasty. Close, unassailed, it keeps to itself, hides its scandals, boasts not of its good works, but continues, within American democracy, to exert its own indomitable way."

REVIEW OF SOURCES

Many key books used in preparing this article can be identified by the references in the text. About 120 magazine articles were reviewed, and many key articles used are identified in the text. Several confidential interviews were also involved in developing the article, as well as the manuscript by an ex-Mason and insider who the elite murdered.

CHECK THIS OUT.

Several years ago, I developed a friendship with a man from Silverton. From that friendship I got the vibes that something was strange about Silverton, OR. Later, through my contacts, I found out that Anton LaVey’s church had set up their Oregon headquarters in Silverton. I suspect this was because Silverton had some occult activity already there. About 25 to 30 mIles southeast of Silverton, Or is Mill City and Gates. The area between this is wooded and has beautiful falls and a large park.

Now the threads of this story return to Portland. A man who saw my book The Watchtower & The Masons told me 2 years ago that be knew John Lawrence. He said I and John would like to meet, and that be would arrange it. One of the weekly papers here is the Williamette Weekly and they seem to be free of some of the stifling control of the New World Order in contrast to our daily paper The Oregonian. A research writer for the Williamette Weekly using John Lawrence’s research on the Skull & Bones Order wrote a long article in the Williamette Weekly about the Skull & Bones Order. John Lawrence and I would be a natural shoe-in as Mends since we both investigate secret satanic groups. But the man who knew John Lawrence always told me after promising to get us together that John had disappeared. Not only that but this man’s original openness turned to not wanting to have much to do with me. touching some type of very sensitive secret. Here is what I have been able to find out. Several satanic groups are in the Gates, OR area. John Lawrence was extremely interested in what the 322 of the Skull and Bones Society meant. He was convinced that number linked the Skull & Bones society with other groups. John Lawrence and 2 other researchers like himself moved to Mill City to investigate the secret satanic groups in the area. From someone from the inside it turns out that the CIA shot two of those researchers while they were in the Mill City area investigating. The CIA went looking for John Lawrence. And John Lawrence is now in hiding. People in the Mill City area were afraid to answer my questions. However, I was able to glean a little information with a great deal of effort. Some occult group bought a ranch near Gates, OR. The head of the group is Jim Cole. They bought a ranch, which is not in Jim Cole’s name. The last police raid against any occult activity was over five years ago, and it appears that the Satanists are in the key positions in the Mill City and Gates. They may even have a person on the police force. The last obvious item to comment on is that for some reason, the CIA is very mixed up and sensitive about this occult activity. John

Lawrence was One reaction to my duPont article was that someone whose mother-in-law works for the duPonts in Pennsylvannia asked a few questions and found out that her mother-in-law is an actual witch (I don't mean as in an old hag--I mean is in witchcraft.) This witch is close friends of the duPonts and has been protected from being fired by the duPonts. What is most significant in this whole thing to me is that my article got other people cognizant of what happening so that they could teach themselves. Once people begin to reaily catch on to things, they will begin to detect things all around that are happening in regards to the NWO. Most Americans don't have any frame of reference to hang any facts about the conspiracy. They bemoan the idea of a Satanic conspiracy, they claim there is no proof all the while it is all around them! For instanced, did anyone catch what Bill Clinton did when he faced the people and waved at the inauguration? See the last article in this newsletter for an answer. A friend called my attention to Inside Edition's television story on Lewis Dupont Smith, the heir to the $10 million fortune of the Du Pont Chemical Co. Lewis Dupont Smith is exposing his family. Of course on national television, which is controlled by the Illuminati they are not going to do much exposing-but they did let a few hints get through. Lewis Dupont Smith did get a sentence left in what was shown on T.V. where he points the finger it "powerful families" as the culprits behind the drug trade. The reason be was allowed to voice this, was that Lewis was the person behind the book Dope, Inc. and it was this involvement that got him in hot trouble with his family. Lyndon LaRouche, who was truly exposing the Satanic conspiracy, wrote a good book Dope, Inc. The book exposes the Queen of England is a participant in the drug trade. Yes, the british royal famIly does tie in the elite, the occult, and the drug trade. They are not as nice is their pictures suggest. Lewis Dupont Smith, having a good feel for what is going on, recognized that Dope, Inc. is the as be put it (paraphrased) "The only book showing the involvement of powerful families." Lewis provided the $212,000 for the book to be printed. (Good for him!) Let's just make it plain, the Satanic hierarhy is behind the drug problem. Lewis' family was very upset that he was helping the enemy, and they got a judge to rule that Lewis was incompetent to handle his financial affairs, and the court declared that Lewis can have on $15,000 per/? of his fortune. The duPonts also tried to stop his wedding. A federal informant saved Lewis from getting captured, and taken 60 miles into the Atlantic on his father's yacht to be tortured and programmed. His family had hired a motorcycle gang with black hoods and some CIA-Green Beret types to kidnap Lewis. Lewis managed to get wind of the scheme and save himself. He tried to get his family on conspiracy to kidnap, but the duPont family bear in mind as one of the top 13 Illuminati families owns justice in this country. He failed to get his family on the conspiracy charge.

One detail, that I didn't mention in the original story on the duPonts was the one of the more recent Governors of Delaware C. Douglas Buck was married to Alice H. duPont. I also left out a great deal of the inside story on the politicking that has gone on in Delaware this century. It is so detailed with so many names that I didn't want to confuse people with it. Anyway, the bottom line is that behind the scenes, all of the Governors since the 1920s have been approved by the duPonts. I debated whether to include the du Ponts genealogy. I had it, so I decided to give it, on the chance someone might use it. The genealogy shows several things, a. that the duPonts like the Astors repeatedly used the same names over and over, b, that the duPonts like the Rothschilds had a lot of first cousin marriages (marriages between a du Pont and a du Pont are given asterisks-however some of the marriages between people with different last names are also between flrst cousins and other relation. If it looks like I've gone to a great deal of trouble for nothing-I can understand what you're saying. We certainly don't need to know every du Pont. But just like in a laboratory one deals with many exact small details in numerous experiments to discover a principle-that is what I am doing here. I am trying to break ground so that people will understand more about how the elite think, etc. I had hoped that I might also be able to track which branches are with the Illuminati and which may have balled out.

Bloodlines of Illuminati

By

Fritz Springmeier, 1995

The Freeman Bloodline

The amazing thing about this family is that it is not a family that people would have thought of as being one of the top thirteen; however, for *me* as a researcher of the elite and the Satanic hierarchy, the name pops up with surprising frequency. For instance, Stephen M. Freeman runs the Legal Affairs Dept. of the Civil Rights Division of the Anti-Defamation League (which is a daughter of the B'nai B'rith). The ADL is a dangerous organization controlled by the hierarchy. The illuminati drug money to fund this organization. Another Freeman is Walter Freeman who introduced the lobotomy into the U.S. with James W. Watts in 1936. The frontal lobotomy was a brutal method of mind control, that has been permitted to be done to us, under the disguise that it is of benefit to humanity. Then there was Simon Freeman an important intelligence officer. And the list goes on of people that are in key places with the Freeman name. But the most important position of all which removes all doubt that the family is at the top is that the late Grand Master of the Prieure de Sion was Gaylord Freeman.

Independent discoverers of The PRIEURE DE SION

What is the Prieure de Sion? Are we sure it exists? How does this relate to the hierarchy? The Prieure de Sion (Priory of Zion) was unknown to the general public until 1982 when a book co-authored by Michael Baigent, Richard Leigh, and Henry Lincoln came out. The book was entitled Holy Blood, Holy Grail and it offered historical proof that an organization called the Prieure de Sion was powerful and had existed since the time of the early crusades (1099 A.D.). In 1991, I came out a little more information on the Prieure de Sion. The organization is so little known to even my readership, that we need to stop and really examine the Prieure de Slon.

In trying to figure out the mysteries surrounding this organization, Lincoln, Leigh and Baigent's research led them to conclude that the holy bloodline that the Prieure de Sion guarded was the bloodline of Jesus. This immediately made all their research anathema (condemned and disliked) by the most of Christendom. I watched to see if Christians would refute the unbiblical parts of their research, but besides a couple of short articles (Christian Century, 9/1-8/82, - "Raiders of the Lost Grail" and Christianity Today, 9/3/82 - "Holy Blood, Holy Grail - holy mackerel") in Christian periodicals (in addition to this was a small book in England- The Holy Grail Revealed) which simplistically claimed that the book was of no value because obviously it was erroneous, no one even pretended to try to refute the book (as far as I know except for that English book which did pretend but didn't refute anything.) The authors went on to write two more popular historical exposes concerning the Prieure de Sion and Freemasonry (The Messianic Legacy and The Temple and The Lodge). Actually to be fair to the Christians, if I hadn't already known from my research that much of the European information in Holy Blood. Holy Grail was correct, the wild religious speculation about Jesus in Part 3 may have caused me to doubt the book too. The first Christian author to pick up on the Prieure de Sion was J.R. Church who wrote Guardians of the Grail which built on Holy Blood. Holy Grail's research in a constructive way and put more pieces of the puzzle together. At last a book was out that challenged some of the false ideas of Holy Blood, Holy Grail without blindly throwing their excellent research. While the public at large had never heard of the Prieure de Sion until Holy Blood. Holy Grail came out, the organization was written about in high level military intelligence briefings years before the book. Some of the men in high level intelligence have become concerned with the direction this nation is going. It is through such men that independent confirmation had leaked out even before the book. The information did get to some researchers. I came out with my Be Wise As Serpents book in 1991, which among other things covered the Prieure de Sion, after I had concluded that the evidence verified its existence.

I approached the issue from my own angle of research. In researching the Illuminati it became clear 1. that bloodlines were very important, 2. that the people in high level Satanism believe they are descendents of the House of David, 3. the Illuminati's activities tied in in many ways to the Prieure de Sion. One startling tie in was that the Freeman family was, according to an informant, one of the top 13 Illuminati families. The ex-Illuminati people I received information from were not familiar with Holy Blood, Holy Grail nor Guardians of the Grail. Even if they had, which they definitely hadn't, neither book mentions the Freeman family. It wasn't until the researchers of Holy Blood, Holy Grail wrote their sequel The Messianic Legacy that was published in 1987 that the name Freeman came out as the leader of the Prieure de Sion. In short the way the research of mine and others simoultaneously from different angles came up independently with similar conclusions using totally different sources confirms beyond a doubt that the Prieure de Sion exists, and that the Freeman family is indeed a very powerful family. I have never spelled out in detail nil the proofs about the Prieure de Sion and the Freeman family, and even now I am not going to. To me the basics are facts, and I don't want to get bogged down trying to prove the obvious, when there is so much more to learn. There are stubborn people whose minds will not come along no matter how much proof and encouragement. They will just have to stay where they are.

DESCRIBING THE PRIEURE DE SION

The original start of the Prieure de Sion appears to have been the idea of a number of powerful bloodlines, and included various descendents of the Merovingians, including the House of Lorraine, the House of Guise, the Medicis, Sforzas, the Estes, the Gonzagas, and the St. Clairs (Sinclairs). The Medicis are tied to the Black Nobility also. From the beginning the Prieure de Sion has been committed to Hermetic Magic (a type of black magic that originated with the ancient Egyptians and portrayed in the Egyptian Book of the Dead.) René d' Anjou, a descendent of the Merovingians persuaded Cosimo de Medici to establish in c. 1444 a non-church library at San Marco where Plato, Pythagorean works, and books on Hermetic Magic were translated. Up until this time, the Catholic church had control of all the libraries. It was from Cosimo dé Medici's library that the spark of Greek and Egyptian teachings set off what developed into the Renaisannce, which was revival of humanism and the occult. It appears that during the Middle Ages, witchcraft and the mystery religions had seriously dissolved to the point that these modes of thought had to be relearned from the ancient writings. Interestingly, the Middle Ages when witchcraft and paganism were dissolving have been branded the „Dark Ages„ by the establishment, and inaccurately painted as a time when learning went out.. A magazine put out during W.W. II by Prieure de Sion members was Vaincre. The organization that took credit for the magazine was Alpha Galates. It carried articles on Atlantis, theosophy, Celtic wisdom, and other esoteric things. The magazine also declared itself in favor of a United Europe. Robert Schuman who was associated with the magazine Vaincre, later become a leading architect of the EEC. An internal magazine for Prieure de Sion members is CIRCUIT (the acronym for Chivalry of Catholic Rules and Institutions of the Independent and Traditionalist Union. A 1956 issue of CIRCUIT promotes the use of a 13-sign zodiac rather than the traditional 12. The 1959 series of CIRCUIT refer the reader toVaincre. The CIRCUIT magazine which claims to write its articles with 'hidden meaning„ says this cryptically about the Prieure de Sion, "We are not strategists and we stand above all religious denominations, political perspectives and financial matters. We give to those who come to us moral aid and the indispensible manna of the spirit." Another article says, "...except through new methods and new men, for politics are dead. The curious fact remains that men do not wish to recognize this. There exists only one question: economic organization." Dr. Otto von Hapsburg, a descendent of the Merovingians, and a Knights of Malta, headed Pan-Europa, an organization that has been working toward a U.S. of Europe. Their logo was a Celtic cross in a circle. The first point in time that the Prieure de Sion can be pinpointed is when Jerusalem was captured by the Crusaders and an abbey of monks that Peter the Hermit had belonged to was established in a building called the Abbey of Notre Dame de Mont de Sion just outside of Jerusalem. This abbey had an order that was called the Ordre de Sion. Over the centuries the Ordre de Sion has developed into what we have today as the Prieure de Sion (Priory of Zion in English). Bear in mind that the Ordre of Sion was visible for several centuries but has been totally secret after the 13th century. It became semi-visible during the 1960s and 70s and became secret again in 1984. The group of monks that made up the original order were led by Ursus of the Merovingians. They were given a place at Orval in France until they apparently decided to move to the Holy Land. This order appears to have had the power behind the scenes to have been in the position to select who would sit on the throne at Jerusalem, and the initially selected their man Godfroi de Bouillon. The Ordre de Sion (Prieure de Sion) set up a military order called the Knights Templar. Louis VII of France became indepted to the Knights Templar, and in repayment of the help he had received he established some of the Ordre de Sion at the priory of St. Samson, along with establishing 26 men (2 groups of 13) at a small priory at the Mount of Sion, Orleans, France. In 1188, the Ordre de Sion let the Knights Templars apparently go their own way, which eventually was to trouble. The story of the Knights Templars is exceedingly interesting because it relates to the Satanic International Bankers of today. The Knights Templars became the first European wide International Bankers.

How their story fits into everything would take to long to tell at this point. At that time period when the Knights Templars took off on their own, the Ordre de Sion became the Prieure de Sion, and also used the names Ormus and Rose-Croix, The Prieure de Sion is intimately connected to the creation and guidance of the Rosicrucians and Freemasons. In the Be Wise As Serpents book, chapter 12 it talks about how the Prieure de Sion set up the Scottish Rite of Freemasonry.

In 1613, the House of Lorraine (part of the Prieure de Sion) joined with the House of Stuart. After that the Prieure de Sion began to display more interest in Scotland. Scotland was one of the few countries wbere the Knights Tempiars had thrived when the order was suppressed by the order of the Pope. Scotland also had several occult traditions operating. It was a hotbed of occult activity. Scotland and the Scottish people have played a very big role in the New World Order conspiracy for centuries. Meanwhile, when the Prieure de Sion went underground they established their archives in some secret rooms beneath the chapel of St. Catherine, at the castle at Gisors, northern France in the rue de Vienne. The archieves were, according to reports, contained in 30 coffers. Secret tunnels connect the chapel with the local cemetery. The Merovingian descendents and the Prieure de Sion have guarded the sacred blood line that Satan has built up. Their members are secretly scattered in key positions throughout society. Many of the descendents are unaware of their heritage. For instance, within the Sinclair family only certain branches have kept up their generational occult heritage, and are aware of what is going on. Family trees subdivide over the centuries until the Merovingian family tree has become a forest. The Houses of Hapsburg-Lorraine (whose titles are dukes of Lorraine and Kings of Jerusalem), Plantard, Luxembourg, Montpezat, Montesquiou, among many others including the Freeman family, and hundreds of others. Be Wise As Serpents revealed for the first time (as far as I know) how all the heads (presidents) of the LDS and RLDS have been descendents of the Merovingian dynasty, and they and the Masons have both used the Merovingian symbol, the bee.

THE HOUSE OF DAVID

In my research of high level Satanists, it became clear the the bloodline that was key in their minds was the House of David--not Jesus Christ’s lineage. I discovered that the House of David had set up a Kingdom in southern France. I discovered this while rummaging through history books on the Middle Ages. I came upon a book A Jewish Princedom in Feudal France 768-900. This book was the key for me to realize that the Merovingian dynasty which wove its bloodline into the royal bloods of Europe was Jewish in origin. When I read Holy Blood Holy Grail, it became apparent that the authors theory of Jesus’ bloodline had clouded their realization that the key was that the Prieure de Sion was of the House of David and was in this sense Jewish (although most of the Prieure de Sion are most likely not attending synagogues). Indeed the Grand Master of the Prieure de Sion Pierre Plantard de Saint-Clair told them so much. To quote the pertinent paragraph from The Messianic Legacy, p. 296, "At our meeting in April, 1982, M. Plantard adopted an ambivalent attitude towards our book [Holy Blood, Holy Grail]. On the whole, be endorsed it and offered to correct, for the French edition, certain vague or unclear references. At the same time, he would neither confirm nor deny our thesis that the

Merovingian bloodline was descended from Jesus. There was no evidence either way, he said non-committally. It was ‘all too far in the past’, all ‘too long ago’. There were no reliable genealogies. Besides, Jesus had brothers. Nevertheless, he acknowledged the Merovingians to have been of Judaic descent, deriving from the royal line of David." The significance of this tremendous. It means that those people who have been saying that it is a Jewish conspiracy have been correct--even if some of these people saying these things may not be greatest characters. This also opens the door as to why the top leaders of the Illuminati have been willing to work with the Askenazi Jews. In Be Wise As Serpents, I show from Masonic sources that there is indeed a big connection at the top with the Jewish leadership and the House of David and Freemasonry. The goals of Freemasonry are entertwined with the goals of the Prieure de Sion. There is a big danger in labelling the conspiracy "Jewish". When people label "jewish" as "bad" it confuses more than clarifies. The Jewish people are not the enemy. Next, although many of the Satanic hierarchy claim to be from the House of David, they do not publicly proclaim themselves as Jews, in fact they may publicly take a negative posture toward the Jews, such as Lady Astor and some of the duPonts have been.

It is perhaps fine that Zionism be labelled evil. Zionism includes both Christians and Jews. To be a zionist is to identify oneself with a movement that the elite has set up and controlled for their purposes. Many in the Zionist movement are like common people everywhere, they want do to what is right, they have simply not gotten the bigger picture, and are being used. When two groups have some similarities but each want to keep their own identity they can be mortal rivals. One group that has been very easy for Satan to provoke against Christians is the Jews. Perhaps no group of people has hated Christians with more intensity. One of the first groups that Satan worked at controlling were the Jews. But to call the conspiracy Jewish is misleading. The father of it all is Satan. It is Satanic, and it will use anyone it can. And God will use anyone too. How many of us have escaped helping one cause or another of the establishment or in being in some organization that the establishment was using? Let each of us examine ourselves and get our own lives in order. There is a song about violin that was going to auctioned off cheap until a master violinist picked it up and played a good tune on it. Don’t auction people off cheaply, the touch of the Master’s hand can turn anyone into a beautiful thing. Don’t reject anyone who will let the Master’s hand tune his life. This is a war against evil, not race. Not everyone of the most evil bloodlines is on the enemies’ side. Many are trying to serve the Lord. Likewise, just because the Freeman family is one of the top 13 Satanic families doesn’t mean that all or even most Freemans are part of the hierarchy.

GAYLORD FREEMAN AS GRAND MASTER

From 1918 to 1963, Jean Cocteau was Grand Master of the Prieure de Sion. Following the unification of the various powers into a secret NWO government in 1954, the Prieure de Sion had a major policy dispute. in 1963 with Cocteau’s death, Gaylord Freeman, helped by Antonio Merzagora and Pierre Plantard de Saint-Clair, governed the Prieure de Sion. In 1981, Pierre Plantard took over as Grand Master. In 1952, long before becoming Grand Master, Plantard de Saint-Clair transferred 100 million francs worth of gold igots to Switzerland to the Union des Banques Suisses. When this was publicly revealed, he said that it was a legitimate move made for the french government. In 1955, several men associated with the Prieure de Sion obtained some old parchments two of which gave the Merovingian genealogies, and they used the british Notary of Royal Appointment Patrick Francis Jourdan Freeman (that’s one name) in relation to a request to the French government to take the old documents to London, England where they were kept at 39 Great Russell St. Later P.F.J. Freeman was used again the next year to request that the documents be allowed to stay in Engiand to be held in a safe deposit box at Lloyd’s Bank of Europe in London. One of the men involved went by the name Captain Ronald Stansmore Nutting of London (born in Dublin, IR) who is reported by reliable sources to have been in British Intelligence MI5, and had sat on the board of directors of at least 14 companies, including Arthur Guinness and Guardian Assurance. He was chairman of the board of the British and Irish Steam Packet Company. He was also governor of the Bank of Ireland. One of Guardian Assurance’s departmental chairmen was also an MIS operative besides Capt. Nutting. Another P.d.S. member who was with Nutting was Viscount Frederick Leathers, who was british

Minister of War Transport during W.W. II. Viscount Leathers had a business associate and longtime friend Sir William

Stephenson, who was the wartime chief for MI6's american branch office called BSC (British Security Coordination) in New York. Another friend of Leathers was Connop Guthrie also headed BSC for MI-6 in New York. Guthrie was a shipping executive. Due to internal trouble in the Prieure de SIon that resulted from a rule that members had to place a birth certificate and signiture with the Priory, an Engiish faction created forgeries of birth certificates and signitures and in secret protest sent these as originals to France. PJ. Freeman then got involved in this act of defiance. Another division occured between the French members and the Brit.-American members. The french wanted more of a role and some type of restoration of the monarchy in a United Europe. The Amer.-British members who far outnumbered the few french wanted to skip the monarchy idea. The Vatican and the Prieure de Sion (P.d.S. - my personal abreviation) work together. Apparently, the Vatican is given some type of minor kickback for their cooperation. John Drick, A. Robert Abboud, and Gaylord Freeman were three members of the Prieure de Sion that were associated with the First National Bank of Chicago. John Drick had started as an assistent cashier in 1944 and became a vice-president three years later. In 1969 Drick became both the president and one of the directors of the bank. He also was on the board of a number of other companies including, Stephan Chemical, MCA incorporated, Oak Industries, and Central Illinois Public Service. The Guardian Royal Exchange Assurance (the Guardian Assurance) in London where P.J. Freeman worked had shared a building with the First National Bank of Chicago which had Gaylord Freeman as chairman of the board of directors. In other words, the two businesses and the two Freemans all connected its seems to the Prieure de Sion, and then by other inferences all connected back to the hierarchy. Gaylord Freeman's signiture appeared on a Prieure de Sion document of Dec. 16, 1983. Gaylord Freeman never publicly admitted that he even knew anything about the P.d.S.

GRAND MASTER GAYLORD FREEMAN and ROGER FREEMAN instructed the U.S. government

On the next page is a photocopy of the article that the New York Times ran when Gaylord (Gale) Freeman died. It has often been said if you want to know who really runs things, look at a man's advisors. Now check this out, Gaylord Freeman never ran for any major political office--and the voting process is supposedly to get men who know what they are doing into omce, and yet if you read the N.Y. Times biography you will read "Mr. Freeman...was frequently called on by Washington for advice and assistance.' Yes, Presidents and Congressman called Gaylord Freeman for advice (instructions might be a better term), and yet most of us haven't even heard of the man! Again for those who think that only the Rockefellers and Rothschilds are powerful families, let me ask, why weren't they calling Rockefeller? Not only did the Presidents turn to Gaylord Freeman for advice (orders), they also turned to anotber member of the family, Roger A. Freeman. Roger A. Freeman was a senior fellow at the Hoover Institute. (I suspect Roger was Jewish but the newspaper doesn't say any religion.) The New York Times biographical news article that came out when Roger died is also put on the next page. Note that in the headline they emphasize that Roger Freeman played the role as advisor to 2 presidents. And yet I doubt that hardly any American has heard of him. One prominent Freeman, James D. Freeman has played a leadership role in Unity School. James Freeman has written at least six important books for Unity which they have published. Two of his works are Unity School and The Story of Unity. Had the article on spiritual warfare covered ritual sites in Kansas-Missouri I would have mentioned about the Unity School. Near (ajoining) the Unity School, in between Kansas City, Ks. and Kansas City, Mo. is a strip of wooded land. Little Ricky Rd. goes through this area, and the forest along Little Ricky Rd. has been used for Satanic rituals by a coven that was made up of adults not teenagers-Interestingly, a man who was part of the Unity School hierarchy, and came to Christ told me that the school secretly conducted Luciferian initiations and that Robert Schuler, 33° Mason, and leading Protestant clergyman knew all about Luciferian initiations being conducted there, yet Schuler went ahead and taught his principles of church growth to Unity School. They call the school Unity School of Christianity but a more accurate name would be Unity School of Witchcraft. Many witches have in fact been associated with the Unity Church and are closely working with it to secretly destroy Christianity. I know from inside information that the hierarchy is sending orders to the school, so it would not surprise me if James D. Freeman was actually part of the Freeman family that is one of the top 13 Illuminati families. Some of the family are clearly jewish, such as Ernest Robert Freeman, who lives in Maryland and is an important jewish leader. He has been the dlr. of the Jewish Community Council in his area, and President of the Sachs/Freeman Assoc. The Sachs family also ties into the conspiracy so that is interesting. And Grace Freeman, who is jewish, wrote Inside the Synagogue. Some of the Freemans are leaders in Christendom too. Lee Jackson Freeman is an American Baptist minister. He went to Union Theological Seminary, which is a totally ungodly place--they turn out socialists for graduates, etc. Lee Jackson Freeman was a member of the executive board of the national ministries of the American Baptist Church. He also served in the Ecumenical Ministries in his Scranton, PA area. R. Lexie Freeman is a Nashville, Tenn. Methodist pastor (Waverly Place) who is a Freemason.

ORIGINS OF THE FAMILY

There are obviously different unrelated family lines that have the last name Freeman. In the preliminary genealogical work that I have done I have found Freemans coming from England, France, Germany and Austria. Howard L. Freeman is a Christian author, who has written about how the economic system of our nation is ungodly. I wrote him a letter of inquiry about the Freeman family. He wrote me and told me that his family came from the English town of Barnstaple. And that the Freemans in that area treated him as a royal guest when he visited the area. He was shown around England over a 50 mile radius by the Freemans in England. His opinion was that his last name did not originate in Barnstaple, England. The history books record an M.P. (Member of Parliament) back in the times when our revolution was being plotted who was named Sambrooke Freeman (c. 1721-82). He was from Fawley Court, near Henley, in Berkshire. He went to Oxford. I do not know if the Freemans in Moriah (the Illuminati) are from England originally, but from the little clues I have that would be my first guess. If not England, then likely France. Mary Freeman of Marlborough, Wiltshire, England claimed back in 1988 that on 7/13/88, almost at midnight, that she, Mary Freeman, was leaving the ancIent Druid stone circle at Avebury when she saw a UFO over Silbury Hill. Most people are interested In her UFO report--l'm curious why this Freeman lady was out late at night at some ancient Druid site.

ILLUMINATI & SATANISM

Due to time restraints, I haven't progressed as far in my research as I would like. However, I have been able to identify one Freeman in the Illuminati. He was Minnesota's Gov. Orville Freeman who appointed Walter Mondale to the position of Attorney General when Walter was just 32 years old. Walter Mondale later enjoyed the status of being the only U.S. Senator on the Trilateral Commission. Walter Mondale went on to serye the Illuminati as U.S. Vice-president and Orville Freeman was appointed as a cabinet member for Kennedy's and then Johnson's administration. Another Freeman is listed on secret membership lists as joining the Order of Skull & Bones in 1869. See his picture which is reproduced. Don Freeman wrote books on witches, including Space Witch, and Tilly Witch. Another Freeman was instrumental in the O.T.O. being set up. For those who know about the O.T.O. (I've mentioned it in the past) it is hermetic magic and Satanism. Right here in Oregon, we have been watching some Freemans, because it appears that there are some Satanic coven members here in Oregon who are Freemans.

FREEMAN FAMILY WRITES BOOKS

It is interesting to look at some of the titles that various Freemans have authored. Here is a sampling--see if some of these don't sound like the authors could be potential candidates for being in a coven.

Martin Freeman--Forecasting Astrology (plus several other astrology books)

Richard B. Freeman--The Overeducated American

Michael Freeman--Cohabitation Without Marriage

Lucy Freeman--Listening to the Inner Self

Kathleen Freeman--books on the Greeks' philosophy

A.V. Freeman--International Responsibility of States for Denial of Justice

Harold Freeman--Toward Socialism In America

Jo Freeman- books promoting „Women's Liberation" such as Politics of Women's Liberation and Women a Feminist Perspective

David F. Freeman wrote a Handbook on Private Foundations. That's interesting because if anyone is skilled in creating foundations, especially private ones Its the Illuminati.

The Freeman family includes many lawyers, doctors, and psychiatrists. Some of the Freeman scientists are studying areas that are interesting. A.J. Freeman wrote on his area of expertise Magnetoelectric Interaction Phenomena in Crystals. Sounds like a subject people interacting with the UFOs might study.

TIES TO OTHER IMPORTANT FAMILIES

Part of what I can do for the reader is to begin to give hIm or her a feel for how the Freeman family connects into the rest of things. This next section's information will include information that only tangently relates to the Freemans, but is important to place them in the context of what is happening back stage out of the sight of the world's eyes. The Freemans in the Satanic hierarchy in the U.S. work with the Illuminati families of the Collins and Wheeler families. Readers are already familiar with the Collins family, but not the Wheelers. Now let me explain who the Wheelers are, because I am trying to put some pieces of the puzzle in place for you. Gen. Earl Wheeler and his brother Leo Wheeler, a Grande Master of the Illuminati (see the top diagram pg. 14 1/1/93 newsletter), are secret Satanists and also 33° Freemasons. Leo Wheeler, by virtue of his Grande Master status in the satanic hierarchy has been able to visit the Dulce, N.M. underground facility. The route he used was to fly in, and then the last stretch is done in a black limousine. Various people in the Dulce area have occasionally spotted these VIP black limousines. The Wheeler family has a long history of involvement with Satanism, and its genealogical history goes back to the House of David. An amazing clue (or an amazing coincidence) appears when we look at the genealogy of the Mormon leaders. (The Be Wise As Serpents book makes the connections of the Mormon leadership but it doesn't appear that many have read or understood the significance. Maybe this here will help.) The top Mormon leadership (LDS & RLDS) all are related and descendants of the Merovingians, but for sake of discussion let us take Brigham Young. Brigham Young's first name was Brigham. It was given to him because of the importance of the Brigham family. His grandmother was Sibil Brigham. Sibyls were prophetesses of the ancient world, and the name is a semi-common occult name. Brigham Young and his family practiced magic. They were also intimately aware of their genealogy, which goes back to the Merovingian Dynasty! One wonders if it is coincidence that the Merovingians' primary symbol--the bee is also the symbol for the Mormon church and Utah. Look at a Deseret Industries (Mormon thrift stores) building in your area and you will see the bee on their side. But not only does Brigham Young have Merovingian blood from at least two lines of blood (and possibly as many as 6 lines of blood back), but he also is related to the Collins family of Massachusetts that we wrote about in the 2/1/93 newsletter. Further, Brigham Young is also a blood relative of the Wheelers. This is the clue which is amazing. A. chart of all this is given on the next page. If Young's Wheeler relatives are related to the Satanic Illuminati Wheelers, then we have an example of how 3 strains of top Satanic blood have interwoven and resulted in the birth of the Freemason, Witch, and President of the LDS Brigham Young. Perhaps the tie-in doesn't exist, but it certainly is worthy of our examination.

DIGRESSING ABOUT THE MORMON CONNECTION

There may be some disinformation put out on this by the other side after this comes out--so don't be taken in by their establishment. As I have mentioned before, a descendent of Joseph Smith, Jr. who was Satanic Ritually Abuse victim, has quietly told certain people that her family is indeed a Satanic bloodline. Further, I have mentioned other confidential pieces of information about how the leaders of the Salt Lake City Mormon church (LDS) are working with the various parts of the Illuminati's empire, incl. the Jehovah's Witnesses. Although the public split occurred between Mormonism and Masonry before the Mormons went to Utah, that was only for public consumption. The leadership have coordinated activities. The Mormon religion is really a high rite of Freemasonry, and this explains why when the Mormons went to Utah, the Mormons held Masonic schools. (Hosea Stout mentions these Mormon Masonic schools in On The Mormon Frontier; The Diary of Hosea Stout, ed. by Juanita Brooks, 2 vols., Salt Lake City: Univ. of Utah Press, 1964, 2: 415, 423.) After going to Utah, Brigham Young contacted the chiefs of Freemasonry in England and proposed that Mormonism be granted a public charter to become its own Masonic Rite. The hierarchy told him no. After that Brigham Young began to publicly distance Mormonism from Masonry, and the Masons strangely broke many of their own rules to distance themselves publicly from Mormonism.

LDS apostle Reed Smoot was given permission to run for office by the LDS church. Pres. Harding appointed him to the World War Foreign Debt Commission, and he also seryed the elite as the chairman of the Senate Finance Committee. The War Finance Corp. just happened due to Smoots arranging it to gave the LDS church a $10 million loan. Marriner S. Eccles, of an old elite family, and a Mormon (and an Illuminatus) became Sec. of the Treasury in 1934, and was chairman of the Federal Reserve Board from '34-51. Ezra Taft Bensen, later the LDS President, was appointed Sec. of Agriculture. David B. Haight, a prominent Mormon was made the head of all the Mayors in the San Francisco area--the full title is "governor of the San Francisco Bay Area Council of Mayors." Mormon Charles C. Cox was put in charge of the Securities and Exchange as commissioner, I could go on listing some other Mormons who have been placed in key establishment positions. Why? Why are the Illuminati and their establishment not afraid of these Mormons who have leadership positions in the LDS church? This is a whole area I would love to explain but as this article is digressing from the Freemans, I need to return to subject being considered. The Lords of Anjou (part of the P.d.S.) were Plantagents and so was one of Brigham Young's ancestors. if we go back through the Goddard and Gifford family ancestors. I am trying to get my readers to look behind the curtain of organizations that we publicly, and to see what is going on back stage. And then I am trying to show how the people back stage are related and know it.

SUMMARY

We find the Freeman family popping up as t be Grand Master of the Prieure de Sion, as a co-rounder of the O.T.O., as a member of the Skull and Bones, as a powerful ADL member, as members of Satanic covens, and as authors. of occult books, as well as other suspicious things. It also should be mentioned that two of the Freemans have been very important advisors to the U.S. Presidents and many other high political leaders. The Freeman family has all the earmarks of being one of the top 13 Illuminati families as my confidential sources reveal.

MORE ON THE FREEMANS

In 1991. Pulitzer prize winner James B. Stewart, the front page editor of the Wall Street Journal, came out with his book Den of Thieves. The book is the detailed story of how major insiders on Wall Street were systematic crooks. The four biggest names of the insider-trading ring were Michael Milken, Ivan Boesky, Martin Siegel, and Dennis Levine. Robert Freeman worked with the ring, and ended up pleading guilty after the evidence cornered him. I am always suspicious of exposes of the establIshment done by the establishment's system. Often, the big crooks get away and the middie management take the blame. Take for instance, Iran-Contra. But Stewart's book Den of Thieves may be helpful in our unstanding the Freeman family better. The Freeman family is one of the top 13 Illuminati families.

At this time, there is nothing to tie Robert Freeman to Satanism, and that is not the purpose here. In an investigation, all the possible clues are collected. I am bringing my readership into this investigation of the top 13 families, and here is a possible suspect to make note of. Robert Freeman worked for the Jewish investment firm of Goldman, Sachs. Goldman, Sach's headquarters. in on Broad St. In NY, NY. Just a short distance from Goldman, Sach's trading floor in their headquarters building on the glass-enclosed 29th floor was Robert Freeman's office. Robert Freeman was a graduate of Dartmouth. He liked to vacation in Colorado skiing with his family. He worked with Siegel and Boesky especially in his illegal insider deals. These insiders made millions off investors and would have made billions if they hadn't been arrested. Freeman and Siegel made some complicated deals such as the Unocal and the Storer affairs. Boesky went to Russia after prison and offered his financial talents but was politely rebuffed. One of the men involved with the ring was Milken. Milken's influence had been a major factor behind the stock market recovery after Black Monday, 1987. That was Monday, Oct. 19, and the stock market plunged over 500 pts. that day. Milken convinced investors to invest in the stock market, and the Federal Reserve flooded the market with cash too to prevent a disaster. MIlken was (& maybe still is) a close friend of Mason Jessie Jackson. Milken is heralded by many prominent Jews even after his arrest as a great Jew. That's not my opinion, a newspaper article will back that up. The Drexel firm associated with Milken was advised by the Federal Reserve, the SEC, the Treasury, and the Stock Exchange to declare bankruptcy with Chapter 11, which they did. Goldman and Sachs, both Jews, went to bat for Freeman, and hired private detectives to help his case. Kaye, Scholar in NY represented Freeman legally. Eventually Robert Freeman pleaded guilty and was given a four-month sentence which he served and was released on Aug. 30, 1990. The significant part is that Robert Freeman was someone who was one of the major players in the New York Stock Exchange. Robert Freeman is not to be confused with Ernest Robert Freeman who also is connected to the Sachs family, and was mentioned In the original article on the Freeman family (Mar. 15, 1993).

Bloodlines of Illuminati

By:

Fritz Springmeier, 1995

THE KENNEDY FAMILY

To be a researcher and to be informed that the Kennedy family is a top 13 llluminati family is akin to being told a needle is in a haystack. Someone has estimated that there are 200,000 Kennedys in the United States.1 And on a list of the most populous surnames of Ireland in 1890 Kennedy ranked 17th.[2] And a recent book listed it as 16th most common today. Fortunately, there is information that allows me to identify at least part of the Satanic Kennedies from all the rest of the Kennedys. You will learn some of this later in the article.

KENNEDY TIES TO OTHER ELITE FAMILIES

Again the ties between various Illuminati families is very involved, and a long unraveling process, similar to untieing a set of bad knots confronts the researcher. The Kennedy family abounds with marriages to names such as Anketells, Baileys, Booths, Buckleys, Collins, Hatfields, Humphreys, Freemans, James, Phelps, Reagans, Russells, and Smiths.[3] The Kennedys that we will look closest at are related to the Fitzpatricks, a powerful Irish family whose coat of arms has 3 fleur-de-lis with a dragon and a lion. (The Fitzpatricks may tie back to France, and they may possibly part of the Sang Royal (Sangraal--Sang Raal is the term used in the older manuscripts which can mean both Royal bloodline or Holy Grail.) Jackie Bouvier Kennedy Onassis who married John F. Kennedy was tied to the Auchinclosses via her sister's marriage into the Auchincloss family. The Auchinclosses are Scottish bloodline of the Illuminati. "One can fairly hear the woof and tweet of history whistle through the names of the ramified Auchincloss tribe: Bunt, Grosvenor, Rockefeller, Saltonstall, Tiffany, Vanderbilt and Winthrop among others."5 For instance, Hugh D. Auchincloss, Sr. married Emma Brewster Jennings, daughter of Oliver B. Jennings, who co-founded Standard Oil with John D. Rockefeller. As for the numerous Kennedy intermarriages with notable names, for instance, Bernet Shafer Kennedy (1798-1878) married Phebe Freeman in 1820.6 But then the question arises--were either of these people secretly part of the occult? Andrew Kennedy married Margaret (Penny) Hatfield (1824-1989). The Andrew Kennedy family is allied with the Hatfield, Bailey, Collins, and Mullins families.[8] Again a person is confronted with a great deal of clues, but precious little time and resources to try following up the numerous leads.

ORIGINS OF THE FAMILY & THE RELATIONSHIP OF THE KENNEDY'S [9] (See footnote 9 for the reference to consult concerning this entire section.)

There are several versions of how the Kennedys got started, but when one goes in and examines things, what turns out is that the origins of the Kennedys is Ireland are very clear. They are descendants of Brian Born (also known as Brian Caeneddi) and his nephew who spelled it Cinneide. The name thereafter was O'Kennedy. They originally were a Dalcassion sept, and were in the area near Killahoe, and Killokennedy parish is a reminder of that ancient fact. The O'Briens and MacNamaras forced them into new territories where they became the Lords of Ormond--what is now north Tipperary. Most Kennedys in Ireland today are still found in that area. The Kennedys remained powerful into the 16th century.

The Kennedy family divided up into 3 branches:

1. Don (brown)

2. Fionn (fair)

3. Rua (red)

THE SCOTTISH KENNEDYS

Around 1600 a Scottish branch of the Kennedys appeared. There are several stories as to how they got their name Kennedy, and it is possible that they were not from Ireland. However, interestingly, genealogists have ascertained that whether the various branches of the aristocratic Kennedys in Scotland and Ireland may have different origins (because the origins of the Scottish branch is unclear)--it can be shown that they all subsequently intermarried and became related if they were not related to begin with. Gayle Marie Kennedy points this out on page 3 of her book My Kennedy Ancestors..., 'It is believed that all the foregoing Kennedy families are related either by virtue of being descendants of common ancestors, or by intermarriage." I looked up in Burke's General Armory to get a listing of the aristocratic Kennedys and here is what I got:

Kennedys of Ardmillan, County Ayr, Scotland

Kennedys of Auchtyfardell, County Lanark, 1752

Kennedys of Blairquhan, County Ayr, Scotland

Kennedys of Clowburn. County Ayr, Scotland

Kennedys of Cultura, County Down, Northern Ireland

Kennedys of Dublin Fun Ent, 1595, Ulster, Ireland

Kennedys of Girvanmains, County Ayr, Scotland

Kennedys of Hill Foot, Ireland

Kennedys of Kirkmiehael, County Ayr, Scotland

Kennedys of Kirmucks, Aberdeen, Scotland

Kennedys of Londonberry, Northern Ireland

Kennedys of Tombrechan, County Tipperary, Ireland

Kennedys of Underwood, County Ayr, 1850, Scotland

Kennedys of Visit Dublin, 1607, Ireland

Johnstown-Kennedy of County Dublin, Ireland

Kennedys of Bargany and Ardstencher, County Ayr, Scotland

Kennedys of Kirkhill from the Bargany group, 1678, Scotland

It is clear that there have been quite a number of powerful aristocratic Kennedys. One of the more powerful recent Scottish aristocrat Kennedys was the Marquess of Ailsa (1872-1943). Because he is often called the Marquess of Ailsa you might not know him by his name Archibald Kennedy, who was the 15th Earl of Cassillis. This branch of the Kennedys married into Scottish royalty. For instance, Sir James Kennedy married Mary, a daughter of King Robert III, and their son was Sir Gilbert Kennedy was made Lord Kennedy before 1458. Archibald Kennedy was an extremely powerful Freemason and held numerous key positions in the Grand Lodge of Scotland. He was 1st Grand Principle from 1913 to his death in 1943. At his death his titles passed to his brother Charles. Archibald Kennedy was initiated in Holyrood House Lodge No. 44, Edinburgh, Nov. 17, 1896. (10,000 Famous Freemasons, Vol. l,--put out by the Missouri Lodge of Research, p. 8)

HOW ARE THE VARIOUS PROMINENT KENNEDYS RELATED?

So the question always arises as I examine the elite of the Illuminati and the New World Order--how is this Kennedy related to this other Kennedy. For instance, how is David M. Kennedy (who is a Bilderberger) and William Jesse Kennedy III (who is a key man for the Duke Illuminati family--he is pres. of Mutual life Insur. Co, a Duke financial asset, dir. of RCA, trustee of the Ford Theater where the elite killed lincoln, and associated with the Pilgrim Soc. through the Conference Board of NYC)?? Although I can’t explain the exact ties, I can safely say that if one goes back several hundred years the Kennedy aristocrats all tie together.

BEGINNING AT THE BEGINNING

One of my first clues that the Kennedys had something to do with the Illuminati was the conspiracy book The Widow’s Son-- The Historical Illuminatus Chronicles (Vol. 2) by Robert Anton Wilson. Robert Anton Wilson and Robert Shea, authors of "Illuminatus!" are not Christians. On the contrary, they are regular participants in the central Ohio Starwood Festival for witches and pagans. Robert Anton Wilson has publicly on a number of occasions explained that he is a gnostic and a great fan of Aleister Crowley. I picked up Wilson’s book The Widow’s Son in a Satanic/New Age bookstore. In both volume 2 (the teaser chapter at the end) and in volume 3 of The Historical Illuminatus Chronicles one is taught the significance of Brian Caeneddi, the first Kennedy, and how Brian Caeneddi’s blood got into some very important royal bloodlines. It is interesting that an informed man like Wilson, who spends time doing rituals with Gnostics and Witches, would declare that the Kennedy family is an important bloodline in connection with the Illuminati. How many people knew that Tip O’Neil, speaker of the house of representatives, was a descendent of the Kennedy clan? Wilson writes for New Agers and witches, not for Christians. One gets the feel that his experience with the occult has somehow given him a very good idea of what is going on in terms of the Masons, the Illuminati, etc. He writes his books in such a way that they are historical novels with a great deal of facts, and yet one is always left wondering by the style of writing whether the author wants to be taken serious or not, is what he writes make-believe or history padded with some fiction? I personally believe it is just the way the occult works, they expose the facts for their own people, but in a way that will not be taken seriously by others. Wilson acts like a buffoon one minute and a serious conspiracy researcher the next, and he will act both ways all in one article or even on a single page of his books. When a person checks up on Wilson’s facts, they usually hold true. On my part the information about Brian Caennedi was astounding. I had to go as soon as possible to verify it from other sources, and it turns out Wilson was accurate about their genealogy,10 and their importance in the Illuminati activities historically, etc.

THE ILLUMINATI & MATTHEW KENNEDY

One of the chief lodges for the branch Illuminati prior to 1784 was located in a hugh chateau at Ermenonville near Paris, France. The land belonged to the Marquis of Gerardin, who protected Rosseau and later gave Rosseau a tomb on his estate. St. Germain precided over this Illuminated lodge. This Illuminated lodge carried out blood rituals with a altar made from human bones. Interestingly, one of St. Germain’s good friends who came over from Ireland to Paris was Matthew Kennedy (1652-1735). Matthew Kennedy was connected with St. Germain’s court, and wrote A Chronological. Genealogical and Historical Dissertation of the Royal Family of the Stuarts. In 1613, the Stuart family had married into the Sang raal, and began to play a role in the genealogies of the Prieure de Sion. Frederick of the Palatinate after he married Elizabeth Stuart established an occult ‘Rosicrucian’ state. It was Frederick who helped start the bloody 30 yrs. war between the Protestants and Catholics. The Stuarts spread the Scottish Rite of Freemasonry throughout Europe. For a while the Prieure de Sion seems to have backed the Stuarts, but at some point quit. St. Germain is revered as a Christ figure by the I AM movement and the Church Universal Triumphant, and other new age groups. A picture that looks similar to Christ, but which is actually a picture of St. Germain hangs in many of the houses of people involved with the I AM movement or its spin-offs. It is significant that an Irish Kennedy who was interested and liked the Stuart dynasty would be part of St. Germain's court and a popular writer for them.

JOHN FITZGERALD KENNEDY

If John F. Kennedy had not been assassinated and so much about his life examined and written about, a window allowing us to see the Kennedy Illuminati family may never have opened so wide. First, the assassination attracted attention. In recent years, the Illuminati have given permission to publishing houses to print exposes of J.F.K.'s sexual life, etc.11 It is believed that this permission was given in an effort to deflect criticism of his assassination by allowing his reputation to be tarnished.12 (I hope my readers are beginning to realize that things are totally corrupt at the top, and that JFK was no different than so many others that have been and are today at the top of the political mess in this nation.) John F. Kennedy had a very active sex life, even after he married Jackie, and even after he was President in the White House. For those who don't think secrets can be kept by the elite, one only has to look at how John F. Kennedy was able to have sex with many women while President and to have frequent nude swim parties at the White House pool and the general public not know anything about it.13 John F. Kennedy's lust for women was well known by the elite. Illuminatus McGeorge Bundy warned his friend JFK (while JFK was a Senator) that John's openness with women might get him into trouble with the public. John F. Kennedy was so open about his sexual habit, that at one party at the Mayflower Hotel in Washington, D.C. John F. Kennedy openly had sex with one pardner in front of the party, while his friend Senator Estes Kefauver did the same. Then they swapped pardners and began again in plain view. John F. Kennedy had many "one-night-stands" as the world calls them. These were merely women hustled up by his aides or the secret service or his friends like Frank Sinatra. But Kennedy also had long term relationships with some of the women he was sexually active with. It is those relationships which reveal so much about the hidden Satanic side of the KennedYs. John F. Kennedy had three long term girlfriends, Marilyn Monroe, Jane Mansfield, and Zsa Zsa Gabor which were ALSO girlfriends of Anton LaVey, who has headed the Church of Satan. Jayne Mansfield was a high priestess of the Church of Satan. Marilyn Monroe was a participant in LaVey's satanic rituals before LaVey founded his Church of Satan. Both JFK and his brother Robert Kennedy had affairs going with Marilyn Monroe, and both visited her just prior to her mysterious death. Zsa Zsa has been interested for years in the occult. (JFK also had relationships with other women connected with the Illuminati also.) Before we examine the significance of these three relationships of JFK's, and before we get into his liaisons with other women who were Illuminati connected, let's cover the relationship between Anton LaVey and the Illuminati. California was very fertile soil for Satanism due to a host of factors. Two lesser known factors are that there were Haitian communities which practiced voodoo in California at the early part of this century. Also California became a haven for witches and Satanists fleeing from France, So. America, Cuba, and other places where their Satanic practices were not tolerated. California had a reputation for acceptance of their evil rituals. When one adds to this such things as Hollywood it is easy to see how San Bernandino valley has become such a strong Satanic center. Anton LaVey's maternal grandmother was from Transylvannia. It was from that side of the family the Anton got some encouragement toward the occult. Anton La Vey loved horror movies. He studied Aleister Crowley, and the O.T.O. which had lodges in California which is where he lived, and in 1947 he joined the Clyde Beatty Circus. The Beatty family connects in with the Illuminati families also by the way. LaVey worked for several circuses and learned how to be a showman. He worked the occult sideshows of the circus, and found that people wanted to believe occult frauds. Anton LaVey found Marilyn Monroe, a jewish girl, working as a striptease in the strip clubs. LaVey helped her performance, and through his connections got her started on her big career. LaVey used his talent of showmanship to create a type of Satanism that could be marketed to the public. LaVey always manages to walk a tight-rope between openly supporting hard-core Satanic practices such as human sacrifice and being just simply theatrics. In other words, he blatantly supports enough evil to attract evil people, but he publicly never allows himself to be connected in any way with child molestation, human sacrifice, etc. Anton LaVey was into Satanism before the 1960's, but it was not until 1966 that he founded the Church of Satan. Some hard core Satanists feel he is "all show," other hard core Satanists form covens and try to serve Anton LaVey, because they view him as a role model.

The Illuminati set up their headquarters in Southern California this century. San Bernadino county is their headquarters. Of course as I have written before that the Illuminati is too secret to carry out any thing themselves. They need co-workers. The Illuminati is strictly hereditary. The Illuminati secretly control the Satanic cults at what is sometimes described as Stage 4 and Stage 5 of Satanism. The lower levels are for recruits, the grunts, the privates so to speak in Satan’s army. In the San Bernadino area, one type of high priest of Stage 2 or 3 is the Master Counselor. Other positions include the Keeper of the Books, and the Keeper of the Seal. In the late ’60s, Mike Warnke, who was a high priest, a Master Counselor, raised the number of Satanists in the first 3 stages to 1,500 members in the San Bernadino area (San Bernandino-Riverside-Colton). Bear in mind that these 1,500 active Satanists are not Illuminati members--they are much lower than the lower Illuminati ranks such as the Sisters of Light. The Sisters of Light and Five-Star generals and an Asmodeus who are the middle management types of the World Order who direct the upper levels of priests of the covens of Satanism that are open to the public. Anton LaVey participates in conferences for the occult where Satanism (the first 3 stages) and secret Illuminati overseers are present. In other words, LaVey is not out of touch with hard core Satanism, he just manages to keep his public profile clean. It is meant that way. Anton LaVey is a publicity agent to give Satanism a good image.

MARILYN MONROE

Anton LaVey knew how to be a showman. He took Marilyn Monroe, helped her with her acting and with his connections helped her get a chance to act. John F. Kennedy had a long term relationship with Marilyn Monroe. When J.F.K. was elected at the convention to be the Presidential candidate the Kennedys threw a party at the convention. The party was described this way, "every delegate (at the conventioni was provided by the Kennedy group with anything they wanted for their entertainment including liquor and women sent to their room." JFK spent the time at the convention and the next day afterwards "making love’ to Marilyn Monroe. After his acceptance speech the whole group went over to his close friend Peter Lawfords for a skinnydipping party. Peter Lawford, Frank Sinatra and Sammmy Davis, Jr. were close friends to each other and to John F. Kennedy. Sammy Davis, Jr. became a member of the Church of Satan after LaVey started it. From the middle of 1955 to the end of 1959 JFK had a suite on the 8th floor of Washington’s Mayflower Hotel set aside for his extramarital affairs. (FBI File)

JAYNE MANSFIELD

During the 1960’s Jayne Mansfield and John F. Kennedy had their relationship. They met at places like Beverly Hills, Malibu, Palm Springs. JFK had several men who "bearded" for him. That is they would act like the women JFK was to get, were their own date. One of these was Dave Powers, who even went so far as to write in a book Johnny, We Hardly Knew Ye that whenever Jackie left Washington. JFK (Jack) and him would eat together and then the President would say his prayers and go to bed alone. One of the things Dave Powers did was to help procure a steady stream of new women for Jack.

Some of the other on-going sexual relationship that JFK maintained were:

- Lady Jean Campbell-daughter of the Duke of Argyll

??Flo Pritchett Smith-wife of the American Ambassador to Cuba

- Kay-Kay Hannon Auchincloss - (In this case although they had a long term close relationship no-ones knows what they did together.)

- Judith Campbell Exner- Judith was Sinatra’s girlfriend who he passed on as a favor. Judith worked for the Mafia, in particular she worked for Sam Giancana and John Roselli, who for some reason also both worked for the CIA.

Exner ran letters between the Mafia and John F. Kennedy while he was President. (according to People Magazine, "The Dark Side of Camelot", Feb. 29, 1988.)

It is also known that JFK was in direct contact with Meyer Lansky and Joe Fishetti, two other Mafia chiefs, and that he benefit from money they passed on to him. This is no surprise because Jack's father had worked with the Mafia Jack's entire life. There are a number of respectable books by ex-Satanists or ex-Organized Crime members where they are clear about how those groups love to blackmail people. John F. Kennedy certainly could have been easily blackmailed by these groups if they had wanted to. I haven't seen any indication that blackmail was even tried, so the only other conclusion, which fits a lot of evidence, is that John F. Kennedy worked with the Satanists and the Mafia. In fact, the Mafia rigged several important counties in the election, like in Chicago, which tipped the scales in John winning the Presidency. That's an entirely different thing that this article won't get sidetracked on.

A POEM BY JACKIE

Something that Jackie wrote on their honeymoon about Jack seems to me significant. When Jack and Jackie we newlyweds after their wedding Sept. 1953, the President of Mexico Don Miguel Alemán, let Jackie and Jack use his villa. During their use of the Mexican President's villa, Jackie wrote a poem about John her new husband.

"He would find love

He would never find peace

For he must go seeking

The Golden Fleece."

(A Woman Named Jackie, p. 134.)

One of the writing projects that I have wanted to see done, and I have delegated it to a good friend, is to give my readers an article on MJ-12, a.k.a. the Wise Men, or the Study Group. This group of men actually run the United States. I know a good deal about the Study Group, in fact if my sources are correct it isn't a formal group anymore. There are not formal meetings, but rather meetings happen at random with people "accidently bumping into each other." MJ-12 draws members from the Jason Society and the Jason Group. Both the Jason Society and the Jason Group are named after Jason and the Golden fleece. There are reasons to believe that Jackie knew some of the way the power structure operated. Jackie was good friends with many of the top Illuminati men in this nation. In fact, she ended up marrying Onassis, who was a King in Moriah (the Illuminati). Could Jackie have meant in this poem that Jack was wanting to climb the ladder clear up to The Golden Fleece, i.e. the Jason Society and MJ-12?

JOSEPH KENNEDY

Joseph Kennedy was John F. Kennedy's father. Through various means I independently learned that Joseph Kennedy was part of the Illuminati. He was a member of the Pilgrim Society (a 60 of the branch Illuminati). He also worked closely with the Mafia, and other Kingpins in the Illuminati. Perhaps in another article we can cover more about Joseph Kennedy. This article is about long enough. I thought I might wrap it up with a story about Joseph Kennedy. The story demonstrates that much of what politicians tell the public is simply for their own benefit, and often only lies. Jack Kennedy got the reputation after Britain and the Germany began fighting in W.W. II, as being against the United States entering the war. Jack Kennedy held the prestigious job of being the U.S. ambassador to Great Britain at the time. The fact that Jack Kennedy was given such an extremely vital position shows that the Kennedy family is important within the Illuminati. At that point in time, like no other time, it was important who the U.S. had as ambassador. After the war began, and both countries had martial law, and extensive military communications, the ambassador was really not quite so critical in his role. One of the men who worked at the embassy for the Americans was an American Tyler Gatewood Kent, a career officer in the U.S. Consular service. Tyler Kent believed in a world conspiracy before he began working in the code room. While he worked there he was astonished that Roosevelt was secretly involving the United States in W.W. II and lying to the American public. Further, Roosevelt was pulling strings to get us involved while lying to the public. Kent secretly took 1,500 pgs. of secret documents, which he was going to show to the public to expose the conspiracy. Kent never made it. He was arrested. In order for the British to hold him, Jack Kennedy had to revoke his diplomatic immunity on May 20, 1940. Ambassador Joe Kennedy did that so he could receive a harsh sentence, because if he had been brought back to America, the public might have gotten outraged at what the politicians had done. According to Standard Operating Procedure and protocol, Kent should have stood trial in the U.S. The papers he had taken were American embassy papers not British. Although the court records show that no evidence was introduced that Kent was a spy, Joseph Kennedy later would concoct a long story for the public that Kent was a Nazi spy. Kennedy went on speaking engagements around the U.S. after he was relieved of his Ambassador post, and Kennedy made it sound like he was whole heartedly against the war. If Kennedy had really been against the war, if he had simply denied the British the chance to keep Kent, Kent could have spilled the beans about what Roosevelt was doing and the outraged would have destroyed Roosevelt's chances to fool the American people. Instead, Roosevelt was able to proceed and develop the elements for the Pearl Harbor attack. While Kennedy pretended to be against the war, he was serving as an intimate accomplice in maneuvers designed to fool the American people. This is a good example of how even today the public is looking to certain public officials to save them. They think that these politicians will try everything possible to help them fight the system, so when they fail to beat the system, the people think they have been beaten fairly. TO BE CONTINUED ---

NOTES

1. This estimate was made by a Kennedy descendant, Gayle Marie Kennedy, who did genealogical research.

See My Kennedy Ancestors of Fairfield Co. S.C. self-published Spartanburg, S.C. Aug. 12, 1969.

2. Irish Genealogical Foundation. The Great Families of Ireland. Kansas City, Mo.: Irish Genealogical

Foundation, 1981, p. 373

3. This list of families is compiled from genealogical research, and is derived from about 20 sources

decided not to list all those here but to give a small sampling:

Altpeter, Ullian Horton. Ancestors and Descendants of Stephen & Jane Horton.

Irwin, Francis Houston. The Genealogy of Helen Frances Landowne Campbell.

Kennedy, Russell. Genealogical descendants of David and Jane Geacen Kennedy

Pettibone, I. Fayette. Genealogy of the Pettibone Family.

4. The determination that the family is an Illuminati family is from the Author's research.

5. Heymann, C. David. A Woman Named Jackie. NY: Carol Communications, 1989, p.52.

6. I've lost the reference, but another book which makes a marriage connection between the Freeman family

and the Kennedys is Freeman, D. Early History of the Freeman Family.

7. Kennedy, Genevieve C Some Descendants of Andrew Kennedy & Margaret (Penny) Hatfield.

8 ibid

9. For this section's information see the following three items listed as ab, & c:a. Grehan, Ida. Irish Family

Names. London, 1973.b. Kennedy, Major F.M.E. A Family of Kennedy of Clogher and Londonderry c. 1600-1938 Taunton, U.K., 1938. c. Callanan, M. Records of Four Tipperary Septs Galway, 1938.

10. For confirmation of the Kennedy family origins in Brian Caeneddi there are numerous sources for instance the Irish Genealogical Foundation's good book The Great Families of Ireland. Also quite a number of Irish history books discuss Brian Caeneddi (aka Brian Boru) and some of the Kennedy Genealogy books also discuss the origins.

11.. statement made verbally to author

12. ibid.

13. Heymann, op. cit., pp 278-292. John F. Kennedy had nude swimming parties almost daily at the White House. Chapter 18 tells the long story of J.F.K.s almost daily extra-marital sex in the White House and his frequent nude swim parties. Some of the original sources come from confidential secret service reports provided under the Freedom of Information Act.

REVISITING THE TOP 13 ILLUMINATI KENNEDY FAMILY

The intention originally was to have the artide on the top Illuminati Kennedy family in two parts. Perhaps sometime a second part can come out. So far I have only exposed a small part of the Illuminati Kennedy.. As might be expected of any "good" Illuminati family, the Kennedy. are connected to drugs, to the Monarch program, to "death" euthanasia programs, to the British monarchy, and to the various organized crimes group., mafias etc. For this issue, I merely want to cover a few aspects of the Kennedy family which I didn't take the time to cover in the May 15, '93 issue. One aspect is the connection of the Illuminati Kennedys to the drug trade, and another is their connection to "death" care and the Knights of Malta. (Readers are invited to read more about the Knights of Malta in one of the last articles in this newsletter.)

After W.W. I, Joseph Kennedy worked for Galen Stone, who was a partner in the prominent firm of Hayden Stone & Co. Hayden, Stone & Co. had ties to the Rothschilds. In order to gain respectability Joe married into the Fitzgerald family. (This is a common Illuminati tactic. It seems many of the Illuminati men, look for a wife who will gain them respectability. Often wives like this are not even brought into the Illuminati activities, so that they can be the best cover possible.) Kennedy's mob connection has been written about, but perhaps two are worth pointing out again. Joseph Linsey who was a kingpin of organized crime in New England and a pardter in crime with Meyer Lan sky was a crime business pardner with Joseph Kennedy. Joseph Linsey in fact was listed as the top contributor to Ted Kennedy's Senate race one year. André Meyer, head of the Meyer family, was manager of the Kennedy estates. One other business pardner of Kennedy was the Bronfmans, who are powerful Illuminati figures in Canada. Kennedy was in business with Newark's Reinfield Syndicate of which the Bronfman's owned 50%. Winston Churchill, whose connections to the elite, are brought out in other newsletters, personally gave the grant to Joe Kennedy which gave him the Brit. alcoholic distiller's franchise for the American market. After Joe Kennedy became the Amer. Ambassador to Britain, we can catch a glimpse of how powerful the Illuminati are. The British Royal Family at the request of Joseph Kennedy put on their full royal regalia for the Kennedy family. When Kennedy arrived in Britain as American ambassador, he contacted the Astors and the Sassoons. Sir John Wheeler-Bennett founder and head of RIIA's research division is credited by those in the know as having written Kennedy's master thesis, which was later made into a book Why Engand Slept. Perhaps one of the items that best shows the hidden power behind Kennedy is his daughters marriage to William Cavendish and Joseph Kennedy's comments about it. Kathleen married the Duke of Devonshire. The Duke of Devonshire was very prestigious position within the British nobility. Dukes are second only to the monarchy. Joseph Kennedy was often heard saying. "If Kathleen and her husband were living, I’d be the father of the Duchess of Devonshire (first Lady-in-Waiting to the Queen) and the father-in-law of the head of all the Masons in the world." (Koskoff, David E. Joseph P. Kennedy: A Life and Times. Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice-Hall, Inc., p. 378.) Joseph Kennedy was in the British branch of the Knights of Malta which is called the Order of St. John. Interestingly, Jackie Bouvier Kennedy Onassis’ sister Lee married Prince Stanislaus Radziwill. The Radziwill family established the Order of St. John of Jerusalem (that’s the Knights of Malta) in Poland in 1610. They also helped establish the Order in the U.S. (See the article on the Knights of Malta this issue.) Another tie in between the Kennedies and the Knights of Malta concerns the Hospice movement. The Kennedy Institute for the Study of Human Reproduction and Bioethics (located at the Jesuit’s Georgetown Univ.) is helping fund the Knights of Malta’s hospice movement in America. In Oct. 1978, the first annual meeting of the National Hospice Organization took place. Sen. Edward Kennedy was one of the two keynote speakers. What is the hospice movement which is being conducted by the Hospitallers (one of the names the Knights of Malta go by)? It is a movement to allow old people "The Right to Die.’ The Knights of Malta have an ancient history of running drugs and in administering mind altering drugs in their hospitals instead of giving medicine. This ancient activity was carried forth into modern times when their St. Christopher’s hospital in London began giving patients Brompton Mixture until they died. Brompton Mixture consists of heroin, cocaine, alcohol, tranquilizers, and chloroform water. This mixture is given in the Knights of Malta hospitals to patients every three hours until they die. Euthanasia, or "mercy killing" may seem like a merciful idea, until a person finds out how the people at the top of the Euthanasia movement view things. They view things similar to the satanist Adolf Hitier. This view is that it is merciful to get rid of unwanted people. Although the "death" hospice movement seems benevolent at first, it is the conclusion of where the program will end up that is the kicker. Hospice, Inc. which is linked to the elite is also provided funding by the Kaiser Foundation. Besides ties to running drugs, the Kennedy Clan has had their problems with drugs. Ted Kennedy’s daughter Kara was on drugs and ended up in a halfway house. Bobby Kennedy’s kids were busted for drugs. Joan Kennedy was having problems with alcoholism. David Kennedy and Robert F. Kennedy, Jr. both have been addicted to hard drugs in spite of repeated treatments in detoxification centers. David later "O-D"ed (overdosed) on cocaine and died in 1984. Pat’s Kennedy Lawford’s husband was dependent on drugs and alcohol. It is not well known that the Illuminati have long used drugs. Elite people such as the Rothschilds, Winston Churchill in London and the Royal Family were using all cocaine, heroin and opium (not to mention occult ceremonies too). Queen Victoria, thought by many to be such a straight laced lady and her guests regularly used large quantities of cocaine and heroin. The royal summer residence was Balmoral and this was the site of frequent drug use, and one has to wonder what else.

SHORT SUMMARY

This revisit to the Kennedy’s shows some of their ties to other elements of the Illuminati’s vast scheme of things. Until people begin to recognize that the Kennedy’s wielded an occult power via their bloodline, they will not begin to appreciate why the Queen of England and her family would honor a request from an Irish commoner to have her family dress up in full regalia for the pleasure of this commoner’s family.

The friendship Winston Churchill had with Billy Graham, with Joe Kennedy, and his very close relationship with Onassis have recently been discussed. Churchill was an active Freemason. He also was a Druid, This is the picture of Churchill joininq the Albion Lodge of the Anc, Order of Druids at Blenheim, 15 Aug. 1908.

FOLLOWUP ON THE KENNEDY FAMILY

There has been new attention focussed on the Kennedys. JFK’s widow died and then his mother Rose has also died recently. Last year, I read a book which was very well researched. It is entitled A Question of Character A Life of John F. Kennedy by Thomas C. Reeves. The book does away with all the propagands, media hype and lies, and tells the truth about the Kennedys. The book is well documented. The author spent a great deal of energy trying to find out the truth about JFK. What emerges is not public image that is so well known. JFK had only about a 119 I.Q., did very poorly in school, and could barely spell. JFK's father had the wealth and connections to buy his son anything. Although Kennedy had a back problem which made him almost crippled, his father got him into the Navy during W.W. II. When he was let in, the examining doctors looked the other way at his back problem (which plagued him his entire life). Kennedy got a commission as a Naval officer without having to go through the normal channels of training and being commissioned. As a naval officer he did a poor job, and the great PT-109 story was far different than what the public has been lead to believe. The fact that Kennedy let his boat be run over by a Jap destroyer was because he and his crew weren't paying attention (sleeping, hungover etc.) Kennedy realized he might be court martialed for his negligence, but his father had the money to turn disaster into a story that made Kennedy into a hero.

Some of the things you will learn from the book follow. In the chapter The Founding Family we learn about PJ. Kennedy who was JFK's grandfather. He dropped out of grammar school, but by the age of 25 he somehow had ownership of a saloon and a liquor business. Later, he sold his liquor interests and went into banking. He also went into politics and via corruption was a successful politician. He won elections by hiring men to vote repeatedly for him. Joe Kennedy remembered 2 Ward heelers proudiy telling Joe Kennedy's father who was on the election commission, "Pat, we voted 128 times today." Joe, PJ's son, married Rose Fitzgerald. The Fitzgeralds were a mighty Italian clan that had helped William the Conqueror become ruler of England. Honey Fitz was her father and he had a reputation for graft and vote fraud, as well as a not so secret notorious affair with a girl named "Toodles." Rose got her education in the Catholic Sacred Heart Convent which she completed a month before her 20th birthday. Her father was removed from the House of Representatives after voting fraud was uncovered. Joe was acquainted with Roosevelt when FDR was only an Ass. Secretary of the Navy. Joe became an insider with the stock market, and knew how to manipulate stock prices to fleece the small fish that tried to play the stock market. Various gangster reported that during prohibition they had smuggled illegal liquor into the U.S. with Joe Kennedy. Joe worked with David Sarnoff and his Radio Corp. of America. Joe had an extremely varied sexual life; he had affairs with countless women, and his son JFK followed in his footsteps. Joe bought a 15 room, nine bath home in Hyannis Port, Mass. on Nantucket Sound. This became a favorite summer home of the Kennedy clan. He also bought a six-bedroom Spanish style house on the fashionable North Ocean Boulevard in Palm Beach, FL which became the clan's winter home. Rose is described as 'self-centered, stingy, prudish. and often spiteful.' Her servants called her "madame". Rather than being the model mother that is pictured to the American public by the Kennedys, she was often gone. JFK told his mother off at age 5, "Gee, you're a great mother to go away and leave your children alone." As an adult, JFK confided to a friend. "My mother was either at some Paris fashion house or else on her knees in some church. She was never there when we really needed her....My mother never really held me and hugged me. Never! Never!' Further, his father's lack of respect for his mother led JFK to say, "My mother is a nothing." (p.40) Imagine growing up without a mother to hug and kiss you! JFK's father 'tolerated littie nonsense and no disobedience." (p.33) The life JFK lived at home was not a life of compassion, but one of rigid obedience. The children were stripped of many things ordinary children would have. They didn't even have their own rooms. (p. 41) Most children have a room of their own sometime in which to place their belongings and nick-nacks. The few times JFK as a boy invited friends over, they were frightened to death at how his father would fly into a rage and give the Kennedy boys a tongue-lashing. The children were not allowed to express pain. For instance, when one of the Kennedy's were hurt and came to his mother for sympathy she ordered, 'On your feet, now you know how to behave. Go out there and behave as you know you should.' It is highly likely this strictness was related to some type of mind-control which even then was practiced by Satanic families. Joe had his daughter given a prefrontal lobotomy and then banished to a nursing convent. From then on his daughter Rosemary did not exist. One wonders what the full story was about Rosemary. Was she sexually abused as is done to so many of the elite's daughters of Satanic families? Felix Frankfurter who played such a prominent role with Charles T. Russell was a good friend of Joe's.

JFK managed to hide from the public during his life the fact that he wore glasses, and also to some degree his intense back pain which hurt him intensely. On page 40 we learn that JFK was unable to ever have a self-revealing conversation. JFK had a total lack of ability to relate, everything was very surface in his relations with people. He was very skilled at picking up women, and getting them to bed. And he had many good friends. However, he didn't have the ability to love or relate to others. This is another clue that he may have had some type of SRA abuse. On page 40, Reeves writes, 'At the root of it were months of loneliness and their parents often selfish, insensitive behavior." But I wonder if it didn't go deeper. From what I know from informers it goes deeper and involves SRA. JFK wasn't even told of his brother Teddy's birth, until he came home from boarding school and discovered he had another brother. JFK was very unsuccessful at most everything he did. His father had so much influence and power that he could get his son out of almost any difficulty. A friend of JFK's recalled, "With Jack, nobody really admired what he did or respected what he did but they liked his personality. When he flashed his smile, he could charm a bird off a tree." At the age of 17, Jack went to Harlem to a brothel. Later, he nicknamed his sexual organ JJ." Meanwhile his father was the chairman of the Securities and Exchange Commission (SEC) and an informal adviser to Pres. Franklin D. Roosevelt. I might add here, that if you look closely you will find the Illuminati Kings are the advisers to the Presidents. I have mentioned some of these already, like in the article on the Bundy Illuminati family. Another example may be found in the book The Old Boys- The American Elite & The Origins of the CIA by Burton Hersh. On page 41 of The Old Boys we learn that President Eisenhower's Special Assistant for Cold War Strategy was Nelson Rockefeller. The most dangerous situation this country has ever been in was the threat of the Russian military, and who was the primary advisor to our President Eisenhower during his term as a U.S. President during the Cold War? Iliuminati King Nelson Rockefeller. JFK went for one year to the London School of Economics according to the story given the public. Actually he went there for one month, didn't do any academic work and came back home. But it is significant that his father tried to send him to a school in which so many of the elite have gone to. JFK had help in writing and putting out a book entitled Why England Slept Henry Luce, who headed Time-Life and who was a good friend of Joe Kennedy gave the book good publicity in Time magazine, and his father bought between 30,000 to 40,000 of the books and stored them in the attic and basement of his Hyannis Port home in order to make Jack's (JFK) book a best seller. When JFK went to California in 1940, one of the places he stayed at was with William Randolph Hearst, who is another Illuminati figure, at his coastal castle. Hearst would give help to Kennedy later on too. When Kennedy ran in politics, Heart's Boston American wouldn't even accept Kennedy's opponent's paid political advertisements. Joe Kennedy worked for the FBI after W.W.II. (p. 59) JFK's favorite sister Kathleen, married William Harrington, who father was the tenth duke of Devonshire, a pillar of the Church of England (called the Episcopalian church in the US.) and a high ranking Freemason. After marrying him, she had an affair with aristocrat Peter Milton, Lord Fitzwilllam. After Joe, Jr. died, JFK's father started grooming JFK to become President. After Jack was elected to the House of Representatives, his three best congressional friends were Richard Russell, Spessard Holland, and Robert A. Taft. Notice that two of these are from well-known illuminati families, the Tafts and the Russells. By the way, the occult Tafts and occult Russell families have intermarried. Because there is so much disinformation out about the people who run this country, it must sometimes seem rather bizarre that people like me come along and say there is a satanic conspiracy of great magnitude. If Americans were as a whole critical thinkers and would challenge the propaganda that the controlled media gives them, then the false fronts and false public images of their leaders might not get written up so easily as history. There are not many critical thinkers in this nation. There are a great many intelligent people, but not a great many critical thinkers. A conspiracy of great magnitude has had this nation in its grips since the nation was founded, and the controlled press has managed to prevent the general population from finding this conspiracy out. The Kennedy Family has played a role in that conspiracy. JFK gave his life to that conspiracy. The assassination of JFK is one of the best ways to introduce Americans to the conspiracy. Ralph Epperson who gives taiks/slideshows about the NWO to groups likes to use the Kennedy Assassination as a method to get people to realize that there is a NWO conspiracy. Interestingly, Ralph Epperson, had as a companion for a while without knowing it, an active Monarch slave who helped him give presentations. It is difficult for those exposing the NWO to get away from being infiltrated.[1] The Monarch mind-controlled slaves are very difficult to detect, especially since most people don't even know that they exist.

[1] *The co-editor of this on-line book talked to Epperson and he denies this and says the woman was an SRA victim and thought herself to be some government project, but not a Monarch victim. [editor's note]*

Bloodlines of Illuminati

By:

Fritz Springmeier, 1995

The Li Family

In writing about the Li family and Chinese secret societies, I am like the man who wakes up in the middle of the night while everyone else sleeps and then gropes around in the darkness trying to feel his way. I can share with you what I've learned, but undoubtedly there is a great deal more that can be learned.

When the year started I knew only a little about the Li family, and that only from what I had heard. I didn't even know how to spell their name right. I was spelling it Lee (Actually the Li family name is spelled Lee in some areas such as Hokkien, Teochew, Singapore and by some chinese Americans.) Because I knew so little about the family, it was one of my primary areas of focus when doing

UNDERSTANDING HOW CHINESE NAMES ARE JOINED

A Chinese is name is made up of a family name (surname), which is written first, and then comes the personal name. In the chinese way of things my name would be Springmeier Fritz. Family names are usually of one character each, although there are exceptions like Ouyong and Situ. There are over 6,000 Chinese surnames for about I billion Chinese. The more frequent chinese surnames in English speaking countries such as the U.S., U.K., & Aust. are Chan, Lin, Li, Wong, Huang, Mei, Yang, Chin, and Fong. In mainland China the 5 top families are Chen, Li, Zhang, He, and Huang.

FAMILY NAMES ARE MORE MEANINGFUL FOR CHINESE (IN CHINA) THAN FOR AMERICANS

The chinese surname Li is a very popular name in China, perhaps not as widespread as Smith in this country, but certainly used as much as the name Brown is in America. Chinese who have the same surname have much more loyalty to someone else who has the same surname. For instance, two chinese with the Li name would consider themselves relatives even if they were total strangers. Even if two people knew no blood ties, if they had the same surname it has generally been considered incestuous to marry each other in China. In the U.S. if two Browns without any apparent blood ties met each other, they would not feel as if they were close relatives which two Chinese with the same surname would.

The Li surname has a long history which goes back to a specific person named Emperor Zhuanzu who was the first Li and lived before 2000 B.C. This is according to the Xing Zuan, the chinese dictionary of surnames.

The Li family has a long history in China with many stories. During the Tang Dynasty about 15 different surnames were given the honor of having the Li surname. Li Yuan was the founder of the Tang Dynasty which lasted from 618 to 906 A.D. His son who ruled after him was Li Shimin. In their dynasty, printing and paper money were introduced to China. (It's interesting that the Li's are connected the introduction of paper money.)

ARE THE DIFFERENT IMPORTANT LI'S RELATED?

In recent history three Li's stand out as giants.

· The billionaire and de facto ruler of Hong Kong Li Ka-shing.

· Li Peng the ruler of Red China.

· **Lee** Kuan Yew President (& dictator) of Singapore

I don't know which of the Li's are closely related and which are not. I do know that Li's control Red China, Hong Kong, and Singapore and have important positions in Taiwan. If the various Li's which control these various nations are related, then we are certainly looking at one of the most powerful families in the world. In terms of power, they would be just as powerful as the Rockefellers. They also **connect** to secret occult societies, but the secret societies which the Li's are major players in are the Chinese secret societies. Those will be covered elsewhere in this newsletter.

WHICH ONES ARE PART OF THE ILLUMINATI?

I have learned from a source that Li Ka-shing and the powerful Hong Kong Li's are definitely part of the Satanic llluminati Li's. in terms of whether the Li's who run Red China are part of the Illuminati, I know nothing that directly connects them. However, there are clues that make one wonder. For instance, why do the Rockefellers and Rothschilds have such a cosy relationship with these Red Chinese Li's. Why does the Premier (or Prime Minister) of the People's Republic of China Li Peng visit with the Rockefellers and other capitalists when he comes to New York City, if he is such a hard-line communist? Haven't the Communists named the CapitalIsts their major enemy? And then when we watch men who are In the Illuminati such as Skull & Bones George Bush treat the Chinese Li's with such closeness, even when it was Li Peng that crushed innocent people at Tiennamen Square, it makes us wonder still. In fact, with other pieces of the puzzle that I have in place, I do know that Red China is already cooperating with and part of the New World Order. The only way that China could already be secretly part of the New World Order Is for it's leaders who are the Li family to be in favor of the New World Order. This strongly suggests that the Li family In China is also part of the Illuminati. From what I know the range of possibilIties range from them being only sympathizers with the NWO elite to them being outright members of the Illuminati. I lean toward the latter view.

Then there is Singapore. Singapore is lock stock and barrel in the New World Order. They went to a cashless Society before anyone else. One of the Li family who spells his name Lee, Lee Kuan Yew, a Cambridge-educated lawryer, was dictator of Singapore for decades. He has ties to the British elite. As an example of his dictatorship, Lee didn't like long hair on men, and so men coming into Singapore with long hair would have their passports taken away and either got a haircut or went to jail. In 1959, when Brittain gave Singapore its Independence the Li family (In this case also spelled Lee) controlled the People's Action Party which ruled the country. In 1976, the People's Action Party monopolized politics so much that they won all 69 seats for Parliament. Lee Kuan Yew was placed into the all-powerful position of President in 1965, where he remained I belIeve until 1991. Singapore's leaders made Singapore very anti-communist during the cold war, and when Nixon began his trips to woo China., Singapore began making goodwill political mission to China. In 1975, Lee's henchman Foreign Minister S. Rajaratnam went to China and met with Chou En-lai. Chou En-lai was the mentor and friend of U Peng.

U Peng's early life.

Actually, to be more specific after Li Peng's father, who was a leading communist, was shot by the nationalists In 1931, Chou Enlal more or less adopted Li Peng and raised him. Chou Enlal got U Peng into Moscow's school system, where, when the Russians finally realized his brilliance wanted to keep Li Peng and train him for their own purposes, and U had to escape to back to China. For whatever reasons Li Peng was an advocate of the Soviet style of economics. Before being placed into his prominent position that he holds today, Li Peng managed China's economy for many years.

Lee met Mao

In 1976, Lee Kuan Yew himself met with Mao Tse-Tung (then the leader of Red China). Mao Tsetuag himself is closely tied to the Li family. Li Ta-chao was the head of the communist party in Northern China during the fighting with the Nationalists. Mao's bodyguard was a Li family member Li Yinqiao. Mao's mentor was Li Ta-chao, who had ties to the Red Spears Secret Society. Other early high ranking communists such as Chu Teh, Ho Lung, and Liu Chib-tan had memberships in the Red Spears Secret Society and Li Ch'l-han an early communist leader was a member of the Green Gang Secret Society. We will cover more about the Li family and Its relationship to Chinese Secret Societies later, as weil as explaining some about the various powerful secret fraternities. It may well have been Li Ta-chao's guidance that lead to Mao Tse-tung writing the first systematic attempt by a Chinese Marxist to characterize the class basis of secret societies, and emphasizing their importance for revolution. Mao cooperated with the Ko-Ino Hui, a secret society, that helped his revolution, but strangely the official collection of Mao's works neglects to include Mao's appeal to them for help. (This neglect is noted on pg. 4 of Popular Movements & Secret Societies in China. 1840-1950) Mao Tse-Tung is also a product of the Harlot Christian church. Mao as a boy had wanted to learn of Christ and attend a Missionary school, but when he went to it, they threw him rudely out because he was Chinese. Mao never forgot the bad treatment he received at the hands of Christians. That explains in part his hatred of Christianity.

A CLOSER LOOK AT THE LI ILLUMINATI FAMILY IN HONG KONG

The Rothschild, and the Rockefeller families have a very high respect for the Chinese and **Japanese** people in relation to some of the other peoples in the world. That is one reason why China and Japan are being given the chance to be important players in the New World Order.

The powerful Li family in Hong Kong is part of the Illuminati This family maintains a good public reladons. They are philanthropists. Billionaire Li Ka-shing donated money to create a University in Shantou in South China. The cost of the University & its teaching hospital were reported at 85 million U.S. dollars In Fortune Magazine 7/13/92, p. 107.

The following chart shows Li Kashing's financial empire, which extends worldwide.

60 Broad Street

New York City Li's share

(with Olympia & York)

Estimated value of building $100 million

Star TV, Hong Kong

countries in Asia and MidEast)

Star’s capitalization: $300 million

HUSKY OIL, Calgary

Husky Oil, Calgary value: $1.3 billion

CANADIAN IMPERIAL

BANK OF COMMERCE Toronto Bank’s market value $4,3 billion

- PACIFIC PLACE, Vancouver

$2 billion property development

SUNTEC CITY Singapore

$1 billion property developmnent with partners

According to Fortune Magazine, 7/13/92, p. 106, Li Ka-shing is worth 4 Billion Us. dollars. Another article motes that he made HK$13.4 billion from real estate sales in 1991 alone.

Li Ka-shing has lived in the same house on a hill Hong Kong for 30 years. Li Ka-shing had little to no formal schooling. He is self-taught. His sons have been weil educated at Stanford. Victor became an engineer, and his other son Richard majored in computer science and is running Star TV In Hong Kong.

Other wealthy friends of Li

Kashing get together with him regularly to play poker games.

U Ka-shing is chairman or chief executive of his four big companies in Hong Kong. He hires both chinese and western executives for day-to-day management. Simon Murray, a Dalton who served in the French Foreign Legion, is one of Li’s trusted managers. Murray had worked for Jardine Matheson, a business owned by one of the Committee of 300. U has built global alliances with British companies, and has part ol Pearson, a British holding company which in turn as interest in Lazard banking Arms In N.Y., London, and Parts. As one can see Li Ka-shing is doing business with the big boys of International Banking. Li also has Joint ventures with MTV, AT&T, Motorola, and Time-Warner. Li’s Star TV broadcast 5 channels to viewers all the way from Israel to Indonesia. The programming comes from the BBC news, and MTV, and some minor pardners. Li is giving Madonna and the rest of Hollywood to the Asians. Li also invested in Vancouver, B.C. He bought the Expo 86 site which Is 1/6th of downtown Vancouver. 27% of Vancouver’s 560000 citizens are of Chinese descent. Vancouver is a Triad stronghold. This will discuss elsewhere

Li Ka-shing has been allowed by the elite to buy into Canada's Husky Oil. He could not have done this without the elite's tolerance. The Oil and Gas Journal, Nov. 18, '91, p. 36 states that U now has 86 % of Husky Oil.

THE REST OF THE LI HONG KONG CLAN

The hugh Bank of East AsIa (BEA) Is run by U Kwok-po. BEA has gone into partnerships with such Illuminati-connected companies as G. Warburg. Li Kwok.po (also known as David Li) also serves in the Hongkong legislature as the councilor who represents the banking community. He is also a vice-chairman of the committee drawing up the future Chinese administrative region that Hong Kong will soon become. He was chosen for this position by the Red Chinese because 'He was chosen by the Chinese mainly because or his family background. The extended Li family, with most of its members holding British passports, is one of the territory's rich and influential old families.' (Far Eastern Economic Review, June 1989, p. 47) Li has been urging the Hong Kong people to trust the Communist Chinese government. David Li did not comment on the Tienamen square massacre when asked. David Li holds a full British passport and can go anywhere be wants. Most people in Hong Kong have only a Hong Kong passport that gives them British citizenship but doesn't entitle them to travel.

David Li's uncle is Simon Li, who was a justice of appeal in Hong Kong,, and also selected for the BLDC. His other uncle Ronald Li was the former chairman of the Hong Kong Stock Exchange and a member of the Basic law Consultative Committee. Ronald Li and his son got caught using their Stock Exchange positions in corrupt money making offenses, and were to be brought to trial. I don't know how it turned out.

Another uncle Li Fook-kow was elected in Sept. '88 to represent the Hong Kong financial community in the government.

When the scandal broke concerning the elite's BCCI, the Hong Kong branch—Bank of Credit and Commerce Hongkong (BCCHK) was shielded from investigation. BCCHK's chief executive Tariq Jamil who could have been called upon to answer questions skipped the country. Hongkong authorities made no attempt to stop him. David U got involved and suggested that the Exchange Fund be used to help his BEA acquire BCCHK.. Another key figure in the BCCHK,, was Louis Saubolle, who was previously Bank of America's chief contact with Red China. Louis Saubolle has travelled to mainland China regularly since the 1940s. He is rumored to have done dubious practices while chairman of BCCHK, but he left the country for destinations unknown.

· A Li heads up American Express International in the area.

· Li. Pel Wu was one of the five best paid chief executives In banking in 1990.

· Some of the Li family In Hong Kong have taken on the trappings of Christianity behind which are their other nefarious activities. One Li, Florence Tim Oi Li, has become a lady Catholic priest. (National Catholic Reporter, Oct. 19, '90, p. 12.

· Richard Li has become a media mogul for Asia.

· And Victor Li ran the East-West Center in Hawaii.

RED CHINA

'The real decislonmaking in China's political system takes place within the Politburo, and particularly among the seven members of its standing committee, in consultation with retired Party elders.' (The China Business Review, Jan-Feb. 1993, p. 22) This inner circle of seven men Includes two members of the Li family: Li Peng, who is the head of this inner circle, and Li Ruihuan, who Is head of the CommunIst Party's Propaganda. Li Ruihuan has been a member of this inner circle since 1989. The other men on the inner circle are Jiang Zemin, Qiao Shi, Hu Jintao, Liu Huaqing, and Zhu Rongji.

As premier or Prime Minister of China Li Peng has met with a great many of the world's leaders, and many of the Illuminati's men.

Here is a sampling of Li Peng's meetings:

April 28, '90—Soviet leaders

around July, '91—U.S.-China Business

Council Officials which includes Illuminati members.

Aug. 15, 91—Japanese Prime MinisterToshiki Kaifu

Sept. 3, '91--Great Britain's Prime Minister John Major

Nov. 16, '91-Sec. of State James A.Baker

Dec. 12-14, '91--Prime Minister of India P.V. Narasiaha Rao

Feb. 1, '92—Pres. George Bush

Peb. 3, '92—top U.S. capitalists (Illuminati members)

Feb. 10, '92—Yeltsin in Russia

Do the world's leaders confer with each other?

Li Peng is not the only important Li family member to be the President or Premier of China:

· Li Xlannian was involved in the power struggle after Mao's death and was President of China. For a number of years Li. Xiannian was considered one of the four top leaders of Red China. For many years Li Xiannian did lots of travelling to places like Africa where he held high level meetings with other leaders.

· Li Desheng was a member of the Politburo, Central Committee of the Communist Party, and served in key military posts.

· Li Qiang was a member of the Central Committee of the Communist Party, and was appointed Minister of Foreign Trade in 1978.

CONTACT/COOPERATION BETWEEN THE ILLUMINATI & THE LI'S

General Li Mi fled to the Golden Triangle and was provided via CIA agents supplies. It was Li Mi who started up the poppy fields to produce drugs that would be marketed by the other top IllumInati families. It was not chance that Li began opium production. The whole affair was a carefully calculated event by the Illuminati who have made millions running drugs for centuries. In the 1960, another Li took over after Li Mi died. His name was Li Wen-huan.

The elite made room for the Li's to open the Li Commercial Bank for business on Long Island, N.Y.

After Bush was ambassador to China, Carter selected 6° (Pilgrim Soc. mmbr) Thomas S. Gates to represent the U.S. to China. David Rockefeller gave his O.K. to the selection of Gates, and Gates was transferred directly from working on the board ofJ.P. Morgan & Co. to Peking.

The Illuminati's banks have been lining up over the years making loans to Red China.

One of the articles that I read to understand where Clinton was going with Red China was in the Jan-Feb '93 issue of The China Business which had on its cover a picture of Clinton and Li Peng with the question "A NEW ERA?" As many of the elite's articles are it was long on rhetoric, propaganda. etc. I think the bottom line was that Clinton is going to follow the advice of his China advisors and that Clintom does not want to rock the boat in our relations with Communist China. The idea that is being planted by the question on the cover is about the size of things, the elite are moving us closer to their "new era."

The Li Family and Chinese Secret Societies

In my investigation of the Triads I discovered that the Li family is one of the principal families which has controlled it. The Triads is a ChInese Secret Society which is something of a cross between the Masons and the Mafia— something in the line of P2 Freemasonry—except much bigger. The Triads are not well known In this country but they are many more times powerful than the Mafia. It is known that the Mafia was invited to work with the Triads in 1970, and at the time the Mafia didn't like the Triads arrogance. However, in my opinion the Triads were not being arrogant considering how powerful they were at the time. I suggest the reader read the article on the Triads for more understanding on this. For the sake of completeness, I will list some of the Li's past and present that have been important Triad leaders.

(see below) I am not trying to weary you with all these strange names, but in breaking new ground on understanding this powerful Illuminati family, if specific details are not given out, we risk losing some of the picture.

The Li's control Hong Kong and the Triads run Hong Kong. Is there a connection between the Li family and the Triads. Yes there is a big one, but It is very secret.

TRIAD LEADERS OF THE FAMILY

Li Chi-tang —overseas leader

Li Hslen-chih

Li Hsiu-ch'eng --Hunan

Li Hung --Honan

Li K'ai-ch'en --Triad, Shanghai

Li Lap Ting --Kwangsi province

Li Ping-ch'ing --Triad, Shanghai

Li Shih-chin

Li Wen-mao

Fatshan

Li Yuan-fa --Hunan

Li Chol Fat -Hong Kong

Li Jarfar Mah --Britain

LI

--north of Peking,

THE LI FAMILY AND GENETICS

The Li family has also provided some of the greatest scientists In the field of genetic research. Genetic research has been a avid interest of the Satanic Hierarchy.

SUMMARY

The facts I have of what is going on with the Li family are Just enough to provide us with the basic picture. The Li family In Hong Kong is part of the Satanic Hierarchy and works hand in glove with British and American elite. They also help run the Triads. Whether or not the Li's in Hong Kong are related to the Red Chinese Li's who run China I do not know, but it is clear that some Li's run Red China and also Singapore. Both these countries work hand in hand with the Satanic hierarchy so it makes one suspicious as to whether their leaders are part of the hierarchy too. If these Li's do consider themselves blood relatives—which they might—we know that according to Chinese custom they would do this to a great extent anyway, then that makes the Li family an incredibly powerful family of worldwide importance.

BIBLIOGRAPHY selected and condensed.

Books

Booth, Martin. The Triads: The Growing Global Threat from the Chinese Criminal Societies.

Chesneaux, Jean. Popular Movements and Secret Societies in China 1840-1950.

?. The New Emperors.

Magazines (various issues of the following)

Banker's Monthly

Business News

The China Business Review

Far Eastern Economic Review

Fortune

Hawali Business

Publishers Weekly

Maclean's

National Catholic Reporter

Newspapers

Christian Science Monitor

Los Angeles Times

New York Thnes

Washington Post

plus interviews.

This article will primarily deal with the Triads which have so many other names it would take pages upon pages to give them all. One of the names the Triads have had is the Heaven and Earth Society. Other principal names include the Hung League, and the Three United Association.

The Freemasons have been very Interested in the Triads and several Masons have done in depth studies and written books about the Thads including G. Schlegel (The Hung League. 1866), J.S.M. Ward (The Hung Society - see another quote of his on pg. 2), and W.G. Sterling (The Hung Society. 1925)

(This article will be trimmed back—and perhaps some of the information can be provided In a future

The history of China is a history of authoritarian dynasties and the secret societies that opposed them. Throughout Chinese history, there has basically been only one recourse to opposition to the establishment, that was through secret societies. Secret societies have been a way for the poweriess, to struggle against what ever they perceived as the cause of their misery. There has never been any lack of recruits for chinese secret societies, and there has never been any lack of causes to use to rally the poor masses against for motivating people into joining secret societies. There seems to be no end to the supply of men willing to lead secret societies also. In fact, I know of over 250 Chinese secret societies, some of which are no longer in existence. Obviously, we are not going to cover that many secret societies in this article.

What criteria do I have for selecting what I will write about in this article. First, I desire to show the compatibility of Chinese secret societies to western secret societies. This compatibility is the reason that the Triads can work with the Mafia, the CIA, and the Illuminati. These points of compatibility explain how Freemasonry can work with some of the Chinese secret societies. For instance, I have a copy of The New Age magazine, Sept. 1964, p. 38, which is put out by The Supreme Council **33º** which states,

‘Chinese Wootsu [sic] Society Compared to Freemasonry

‘Brother Morris B. de Pass, 33°, Master of Kadosh of the Peking Scottish Rite Bodies, in his annual report, includes the following interesting story in regard to Wootsu Society. ‘During the past year I had the pleasure of meeting an ‘Old China Hand,’ himself a Scottish Rite Mason, who, learning of my China background, asked me If I had any knowledge of an old Chinese organization similar to Masonry. I felt certain he had in mind the ‘Wootsu Society’ (Woo meaning 5, and Tsu meaning ‘Ancestor’) or, in English, ‘the Society of the Five Ancestors., "...some fornignors living in China ... were of the opinion that The Society of the Five Ancestors was the Eastern Branch of that movement which developed in Western countries into Freemasonry .... The tenets of the Wootsu Society do have much in common with those of Freemasonry. They pay homage to Buddha, whom they accept as the incarnation of a Supreme Deity they believe in immortality they teach ‘Faithfulness unto Death’; and they practice secrecy. The Society differs from Masonry in that there is no counterpart of the Volume of the Sacred Law as being an indispensable part of its Furniture; ... and it is open to both men and women.’

Perhaps no one better epitomizes the connections and overlap between East and West occult secret societies than the life of Sun-Yat-Sen. Sun-Yat-Sen led China to overthrow the monarchy and create a republic. Sun-YatSen was a leader in several Triad groups, such as the Hong Kong based Chung Wo Tong Society and the Kwok On Wui Society in Honolulu and Chicago. Soon after arriving in Hawaii he formed the Tai Luk Shan, a new Triad group. Sun-Yat-Sen played the key role in setting up 268 other branches of the Triads too. In Japan he set up the T’ung Meng Hui. In Singapore and Malaysla he set up Triad lodges too. He was a high ranking Freemason, and he attended an Anglican school in Hong Kong. Sun-Yat-Sen and the millionaire Chang ChingChang who was an international art dealer worked together. Sun-Yat-Sen travelled in the *US*. and Europe gaining support for his revolution. Several other great non-Communist Chinese leaders have also had membership in both the Triads and Freemasonry.

TRIAD RITUALS

Triad rituals were an elaborate affair but have continued to be streamlined over the years. The ritual initiation drew from 3 religious sources: Taoism (magic), Buddhism, and what might be called Confucianism. Taoism emphasized the importance of blood ancestry, of magic, and alchemy. The traditional initiation lasts about eight hours, and includes ritual dance, secret hand-shakes, a blood sacrifice, and pricking the finger of the new initiates.

The Triads have an extremely long history and a lot of heritage. In order to try to capsulize what they are one has to look at what they are doing at a particular moment. At times they are secret fraternity like the Masons, at other times they have more of the appearance of a revolutionary army, and at other times they look like the Mafia. They are all these things. And so they are a much more complex group to understand than some of the other secret societies that might fit into some nice label. Sometimes their services as hit men are hired out to others. Their heritage and history make them almost a sub-culture, and a sub-culture that is difficult for law enforcement agencies to penetrate. Their blood oaths and traditions bind them together.

ORIGINS

The White Lotus Society centuries ago amalgamated itself to the Hung Society which in turn changed into the Triad Society also known as the Three United Society. Some people continued calling it the Hung Society. The Hung Society had many local names, and like Freemasonry hid behind trade guilds.

INFILTRATED THE BOXERS

The Triads infiltrated the Boxers and even associated with them, but the Boxers lost against the foreign powers.

SET UP BRANCHES IN THE UNITED STATES

During the California gold rush days many Chinese began coming to America. Triad lodges sprang up in the chinese laundrymen of San Francisco. By 1854, the Triad Society called ‘Five Companies’ had 35,000 members in California. In the U.S. the Triad lodges became known as Tongs-which means a ‘hail’ or ‘meeting place.’ Whereever the Chinese lived they quietly set up Triad lodges so that soon there were lodges In Laramle, Cheyenne, Kansas City, Seattle, Vancouver, California, New York, Boston, and the Klondike. These overseas Triads came under the jurisdiction of the Hung Mun Society in Canton. This Triad group was in turn under Chi Kung Tong group. Groups got started in Australia and Malaya.

TRIADS & HONG KONG

When the British began ruling Hong Kong, the Hong Kong area already had a reputation for being a haven for pirates, and the Triads established lodges and began secretly to rule. In 1845, the British made membership in the Triads illegal, and in later years deported them back to communist China for those Triad members found. However, the Triads controlled things and the British never were able to enforce that iaw except for some scattered arrests. For Instance in the 1970s, 35% of the police in Hong Kong were affiliated with the Triads.

In fact, the Britishman Ernest Taffy’ Hunt, the Police Superintendent of the Thad Bureau of the Colony of Hong Kong was paid bribes for 18 years ranging from about $HK700,000 to $HK 12 per year starting in 1955.

The Hong Kong papers every so often report police raids against the Triads, but one has to wonder how much is interrivalry between Triad groups and much is just for show, and how much is really something hurting the Triads.

Under Triad control factories in Hong Kong have been turning out items for sex shops worldwide. The living conditions of areas under Triad control in Hong Kong were literal hells on earth. The Triads packed people in, the sanitation was negligible, the filth overwhelming, and the corruption of the human spirit complete. There is no question what kind of life the Triads want to bring people, total degeneration into total moral corruption and filth. Like the Masons (but to a much lesser degree) there have been a few Triad mutual aid societies for their own members, but in general these have been rare.

The Triads have exacted extortion money from almost everyone in Hong Kong. The history of their extortions and threats etc. is many books long. In short, the whole trading economy of Hong Kong was under their power. And the Li family as now working with them. See the Li article in this issue.

Various scandals over the decades have repeatedly shown that the Triads have totally infiltrated the Hong Kong government and police force. Where ever ethnic chinese were hired the Triads infiltrated. And then even many of the non-Chinese were bought off. People in Hong Kong who have watched the Triads do illegal acts right in public have frequentiy been frustrated by the lack of police response.

THE TRIADS & CHINA

Before the Communists took over, the Triads ran China. For instance, in 1917, it was discovered that the Triads along with the Vice-President of the Republic of China were stealing public funds to purchase opium to deal in the drug trade. The leaders of Free China have been Triad leaders. Many of them have also been Freemasons.

After the Communists took over, the Triads had to go way underground. The communists never stopped the Triads, but they did make them much more secret. You may remember when the Tiananmen Square Massacre occured, the newspapers quietly reported that the Triads had smuggled the leaders of the democratic movement out of Red China. As was just said, the Communists have never broken the power of the Triads. In fact, not only has the brutal Red Chinese government been ineffective against the Triads, most of the police everywhere have been. The Triads are the most powerful criminal fraternal group in the world, except for the IllumInati and the families that make up the Illuminati's Committee of 300. The Mafia Is small peanuts compared to the Triads. The Triads are almost untouchable by any law enforcement group. For instance, in Great Britain the British do not have hardly any ethnic Chinese on their police force to even try infiltrating the Triads.

The Triads have operated in the United States for over 100 years, and are major drug handiers working in cooperation with the Illuminati Kings, and most Americans do not even know they exist. And although America has ethnic chinese, Americans of Chinese descent do not speak the Chinese dialects that undercover agents would have to know to break into the Triad operations.

DIFFERENT TRIAD GROUPS

There are numerous Triad groups. By 1931, there were eight main Triad groups and they had divided Hong Kong up into geographic areas and ethnic groups that each was responsible to control. The eight main ones at that time were the Wo, the rung, the Tung, the Chuen, the Shing, the Fuk Yee Hing, the Yee On, and the Luen. Each had its own headquarters, its own sub-societies, and its own public covers. The Fuk Yee Hing's cover was that it was registered as a benevolent society for workers. It had 12 branch offices and a membership of 10,000. Yee On's cover was as the Yee On Commercial and Industrial Guild. The Wo operated as Death Gratuity associations. Any way each found some cover to hide behind. Most of the Martial Arts dubs were fronts or affiliations with the Triads, and continue to be, not only in Hong Kong, but to some degree in other countries too.

As an example of how divided the Triad groups are--one of the large ones, the Wo Society was itself split into three major factions: Wo Shing Tong, Wo Yung Yee, and Wo Hop To, which for years struggled for domination of the Wo Society. By the late 1950s, there were 41 affiliated organaizations to the Wo Society Triad. Today the Wo Shing Wo is the most powerful of the Wo group Triads.

One of the Triad groups that works with the Illuminati is the Sun Yee On aka Yee On Commercial and Industrial Guild. Sun Vee On was the prime controller of the Kowloon Walled City which produced sex toys for the international market.

Besides the Wo Shing Wo and the Sun Yee On, the third great Triad societies of modern times Is the 14K Society. Probably Chiang Kai-shek and his mentor Big-Eared Tu were responsible for setting up a league to oversee all the various Triad groups called Five Continents Overseas Chinese Hung League. This was set up In 1945, when the Chinese operated in Asia, North America, South America, Europe and Africa.

As a side note on Tu, one of his friends was Charlie Soong (an office-bearer for the Triads) who had attended Vanderbilt Universisty at the expense of millionaire Julian S. Can. Chalie Soong's daughter Al-lag had connections to Sun-Yat-Sen, and also became helpful to the Triads when she married Kung Hsiang-hsi a banker and businessman. The Kung banking empire along with the Soong's veneer of Christianity which came from their Methodist Church membership helped this branch of Triads in their international dealings.

Today in Hong Kong there may be as many as 60 different Triad Societies operating. The largest numerically is the Sun Yee On with 33,000 members. These 60 Societies can be classed into three different styles. The first is the traditional structure. The second type are those who are totally unstructured. The third type is the most dangerous, they are small, closely knit cells or central committees who plan out criminal activity with acute business-like efficiency.

LARGE BASES OF TRIAD OPERATIONS

Vancouver, B.C., San Francisco, New York, London, Manchestor, and Amsterdam (not to mention Macao and Hong Kong) are some of the big bases of Triad Operation. Money is made by extortion, gambling, prostitution, drugs, or any other way to make a profit. The Triads have worked with the CIA in creating the drug network. The creation of the Golden Triangle as a source for drugs was a joint CIA-Triad operation. The Chinese communists couldn't pass up the opportunity to debauch America. The Red Chinese government has secretly worked with the Triads in supplying heroin and opium knowing that these drugs were going to U.S. military bases. U.S. garrisons In Germany were supplied high grade drugs that came through the Triads, either grown under Triad supervision or in places like Red China. One of the kingpins in this drug trade was Lumpy Ho, whose business fronts were known as the Dutch Connection.

The corrupt police-officers that were Triad members that fled anti-corruption drives in Hong Kong would flee to Vancouver, B.C. where they have spent their efforts building that area up as a large Triad base of operations. Actually, they have branched out into Victoria and Seattle, WA.

The Triads are known to have been operating in London since the 1890s, and may have been operating even before that. It wasn't until the 1960. drug culture that the Triads began to catch more attention due to their large involvement in the drug trade. In 1971, the Triads introduced Pure No. 4 herein into England to replace the 'Brown Sugar' that the Rolling Stones sang about.

In 1973, the British authorities moved against the Americans and British agents on the Drug Squad and forced some resignations. It is not exactly clear what the details of the whole mess were, but the process was that for 2 years there was essentially no coherent drug squad in London.

Every locality In England where ethnic chinese are located, the Triads have some type of operation. This means all of the British cities. In Scotland and Ireland the different Triad groups have been fighting each other for control of the territory. No wonder the Illuminati like the Triads. The U family with their connections controlling the Triads, have the perfect vehicle to operate the drug trade. If anyone dislikes the drug trade, their hate will directed to an ethnic group, rather than realizing who the real kings are. Most of the couriers for the Triads today are Europeans. And the Trade are using British banks now more than the Hong Kong banks.

The British Parliament had a committee in 1985 to look at the Triads. They reported that the Triads posed no threat to the U.K

The Mafia had tried to maintain its position in the drugactivity, but the Mafia wasn't in a position to buy directly from the prime sources. The Chiu Chau Triads had operated in Saigon and Vietnam during the Vietnam war bringing in drugs for the American soldiers. The Corsican syndicates (organized crime) had connections in Vietnam. They introduced the Mafia to the Triads. The Corsicans had been known as the French connection in the drug trade. They had worked with supplies coining from Turkey, through Lebanon, and then to Marseilles, France. Now the Triads ship Asian drugs to the U.S. via South America, and the Triads control the drug trade in New York City almost totally now. Dear in mind that the Triad leaders did this only after working out agreements with the top llluminati families. If the top Illuminati families were not cooperating, the Triads would be out of business.

One of the strong-arm units ofa New York Triad group called Hip Sing Tong is the Flying Dragons. The On Lee Ong, another N.Y. triad group' has the Ghost Shadows as their strong-arm unit.

If one takes a city like Toronto, Canada there the population of Chinese and Vietnamese is 175,000 at least. This is a large pool of people from whith to build Triad lodges. There are 10 Triad Societies operating in Canada.

In Australia, the Triad society Yee Hing Soctety with its charitable Mun Ji Dong has been listed as a "masonic charity" for 80 years. The Mun Ji Dong has decided to operate legally.

PUBLIC CEREMONIES

The Triads would publicly celebrate the Goddess of Mercy and the God of the Earth each year at a major festival where a bamboo bomb would be set off. At the 1982 Tin Hau Festival. two groups of the 14K Triad and 500 members of the Wo Shing Wo society openly wore Triad T-shirts at the festival. This was publicly breaking the law that prohibits the Triads from publicly advertising, but the Triads got away with it with impunity.

ENFORCEMENT

The Triads' tradition weapons are the meat cleaver and a razor-sharp butchers knife which they use to slash people.

THE TRIADS INTERFACE WITH MANY OTHER GROUPS

Besides working with the CIA, the Mafia, who work for the Illuminati, and working with the Illuminati families themselves, the Triads work with street gangs, youth gangs, and any other organized crime group. They also have worked with all types of secret fraternal groups including the Freemasons. Historically speaking they have cooperated numerous times with other Chinese secret societies. The Triads also work with the Japanese organized crime group Yakusa, and the Filipino organized crime groups. The Ya.kusa also move drugs into the U.S. mainly via Hawaii. This is taking place with Yakusa/Triad cooperation. The Taiwan Triad Societies work closest with the Yakusa, especially the Four Seas and United Bamboo Societies.

THE TRIADS IN BANKING

The Triads have their own accountants, and so Triad financial operations are great for money laundering. Stolen credit cards and imitation merchandise that look., like the real stuff are also money makers for the Triad.,. The Triads also have their own lawyers, who are members of their societies. Besides making false Gucci handbags, the Triads are adept at forging passports. One of the items that the drug trade takes is gold, because the drug producers want to be paid in gold. This trafficing in gold must be watched by the Illuminati, because gold has always been an important commodity for the Satanic Hierarchy. It's value to them goes beyond the monetary significance.

IN SUMMARY

The Triads are an occult fraternity which has developed into a major international organized crime society. It has many agreements with various families of the Illuminati, and works with them. The Li family is taking a big role somewhere with the Triads, but exactly what that role is I have not spelled out yet.

The Li Family is represented in Salem, OR & other West Coast cities by the Wong Family, who are part of their bloodline. Vol. 2 touches on the Wong Family & their part in organized crime.

Bloodlines of Illuminati

By:

Fritz Springmeier, 1995

THE ONASSIS BLOODLINE

CAST OF MAIN CHARACTERS

Aristotle Socrates Onassis -- named after two greek philosophers, went from being totally broke at age 21 to being a millionaire at age 23. His father's first name was Socrates. Aristotle was an Illuminati king, a shipping tycoon, an intelligent ruthless hard-driving man, a man of the world who spoke a number of languages such as French, Spanish, English, Italian, and Turkish. He married JFK's widow. His everpresent sunglasses made him look like Al Capone to a number of people.

Jackie Bouvier Kennedy Onassis-Her father was a member of the Society of the Cincinnati, the American equivalent to the Order of the Garter. Her father " Black Jack" was corrupt, what is known as a womanizer. He worked at making a living from the stock market. Jackie's "step-father" was the Auchincloss family, an elite family. Her step-father's second wife before Jackie's mother was Senator Thomas Gore's daughter. Her step-father was in Naval Intelligence. Jackie went to the schools that the children of the elite go to. On the anniversary of JFK's assassination, Orville & Jane Freeman were the only ones to remember the date to say or do something about it. Jackie went that day to Central Park and had a good cry.

Stavros Niarchos-Aristotle's brother-in-law and Ari's business competition. Stavros' parents came from Sparta, Greece. His relatives were rich. Stavros went into shipping and after W.W. II broke out, left Greece to avoid having to fight for Greece. He was a close friend of Colgate, Roosevelt and Bernard Baruch, who he would invite to his house on Long Island. He rented his Long island house from Harry Hopkins who was the man who told Pres. F.D. Roosevelt what to do. Even though he was a millionaire, he had a difficult time avoiding have to serve. Eventually, he managed to get himself situated as a naval officer in intelligence for Greece in Alexandria, Egypt. Information sent Into the '69-70 Who's Who reference book about his war time exploits are ficticious. Niarchos and Aristotle were frIends from 1934 onward, but also at times enemies trying to outdo each other. Both frequently went to St. Moritz, Swit., a ski resort. Stavros also frequents an old Medici family Palace/estate near Turin where the Duke of Edinburgh and Baron Elie de Rothschild like to go and shoot birds. The estate has many and it isn't unusual for them to kill a thousand a day. Stavros is an important leader of the Bilderbergers and a billionaire. He married Henry Ford II's daughter who was 38 years younger than he was, and divorced her shortly afterwards. He worked closely with David Rockefeller.

IS THE ONASSIS BLOODLINE STILL POWERFUL?

Aristotle Onassis died in 1975. His son and heir to his throne died in 1973. My inside information about the Onassis family being one of the top 13 goes back to the 1960s and 70's. Is the family stili powerful? One big clue that they still wield power within the Illuminati is that Stavros Niarchos, Aristotle's brother-in-law, is a powerful Bilderberger. The executive committee of the Bilderbergers are the equivalent to 9° of the branch Illuminati. Is the Onassis family still one of the top 13 Satanic bloodlines? I do not know. The answer lies in doing genealogical work to find out what the core satanic bloodline is that curses through the Onassis family.

One whistle-blower on the Illuminati was Dennis Brunnelle, a Grand Master of an OTO lodge, who became disillusioned with the OTO's Illuminati program. Some of his information touches on the Onassis family. My understanding of the Onassis family is limited in terms of their Satanic activities with the Illuminati, but I will attempt to give my readers a better understanding. My inside knowledge of the occult side-that is the secret satanic ritual activIties of the family is sparse, because my informants have very limited knowledge of the Onassis participation. However, there are certainly plenty of tracks in the sand which indicate who the business friends of this family have been, and they have been very clearly those within the Illuminati or with connections to it.

TURKEY

The area that is now known as Turkey played a major role in the Mystery Religions. The use of drugs to create "religious" experiences was developed to a fine art by various occult fraternal mystery religion groups in the Turkey area. The Assassins from where we get the word hashish controlled parts of Turkey and Lebanon in Medieval times. They used drugs to gain the allegiance of their recruits. Some of the most powerful figures for the Illuminati have been Turks. The Grand Orient has had some powerful figures in Turkey. For instance, at the Masonic Congress of all the Grand Orients' (that's European Freemasonry- although several American presidents have been members of European Freemasonry) Grand Lodges, Bou Achmed came from Turkey. The Grand Lodge of Asia was represented by Sebeyck-Kadir from Asia. Bou Achmed took a big role in the Grand Orient's decisions. As a aside, let me explain one example of the power of the Grand Orient in America. The Grand Orient was originally strong in Louisiana but spread Itself to many other US. locations. Garfield, a very powerful man in the Grand Orient, managed to become US. President because the political process got deadlocked at the convention and the Masons suggested him as a compromise candidate. Although Garfield was an extremely powerful Mason, had been perhaps the youngest general in the US. army during the Civil War, the Illuminati ordered him shot after he had served about a year in office as President. Garfield was reported by an eye-witness to Satanic rituals to have participated in the cannibalistic rites of Satanism done to gain the spiritual power of the eaten person. The Grand Orient Freemasonry has been linked to other orders of Freemasonry that are also called Rosicrucians. Pope John XXIII joined a Rosicrucian group that had links to European Freemasonry when he was in Turkey. While the secret Grand Orient Freemasonry was very strong in Turkey in spite of its small numbers, the regular American Freemasonry granted a dispensation for a Masonic Lodge to operate in Smyrna, Turkey in May, 1863 but the charters were withdrawn on Aug. 27, 1880. However, it is interesting that of all the Turkish cities, Smyrna was definitely the best place for Freemasonry to gain recruits. Men like Achmed Pasha and many of the other Pasha family have been leaders within Freemasonry and the Illuminati. Achmed Pasha was a Satanist and had a large harem. Mehmet Talaat Pasha (1872-1921) was a Freemason and part of the Turkish revolution of 1908. He was the leader of the Young Turks, which was a joint project of the Sufis and the Frankist Satanists. (The type of Satanism led by the Frank family has had connections to Turkey for hundreds of years.) Mehmet Talaat Pasha was the Grand Master of the Grand Orient of Turkey. He was held the political position in Turkey of grand vizier of Turkey (1917-18). Another Turkish Pasha was part of the Turkish royalty running Egypt when Egypt was part of the Ottoman Empire. His name was Khedive Ismail Pasha and he was Grand Master of the Grand Lodge of Egypt. It was this Turk, Khedive Ismail Pasha, who gave the famous ObelIsk to the United States. This Obelisk was called Cleopatra's Needle and was originally erected in the city of the sun, Heliopolis, about 1500 B.C. The Obelisk is a representation of a human penis, because sun worship, worship of regeneration (sex) and worship of the sun god Satan were all tied together. Masons helped with the moving of the obelisk, and its dedication when it arrived in New York City. Large obelisks have been erected by Masons in New York, Washington D.C., Paris, the Vatican, and London. (If my memory serves me correct Berlin received one too at one time.)

Every morning when the United States President wakes up he can look out the window and see the Masonic obelisk and be reminded of who controls America. 11 the President has any training in the Mystery religion of ancient Egypt, he will also know what body part is symbolically erected in the Washington Memorial. (If the United States were ever to return to serving God, that monument would be a good one to destroy. God asked the Israelites not just simply to avoid worshipping such abominations, He asked His people to destroy them, for their very creation was abomination. This touches on the issues raised in another article in this newsletter.)

The Illuminati of Europe via the Br. East India Co. wrested control from the Great Moguls of the Opium trade during the 18th and 19th century. People connected the Br. East India Co. were responsible for the creation of the Fabian Society. The Illuminati, already headquartered in London in the 19th century, allowed John Jacob Astor (see Jan. 1, '93 newsletter about the Astor family) beginning around 1815 to operate an opium smuggling operation. Besides Astor's ships picking up quicksilver and lend at Gibraltar, and iron/steel from northern Europe, his ships picked up opium at Smyrna, Turkey. The opium was then sold in China. The Onassis family was one of the top three merchant families in Smyrna. And Socrates Onassis until 1922 quietly ran a banking operation (or money laundering?) from their home which had a large amount of money left by powerful Turks. Could Socrates' father been part of a secret Illuminati opium connection, which had begun back about 1815 with the Astor family in Smyrna, Turkey? We know for certain that he had powerful British, Italian, and Turkish friends before he was arrested in 1922, and that these friends saved his life from a death sentence. About 1925-26, his son Aristotle Onassis, who was from Smyrna, Turkey began secretly importing opium into Argentina from Turkey, under the cover and disguise of importing tobacco. The Grand Orient of Italy by the Jewish Freemason Emannuele Carass established two secret lodges at Salonika, Turkey around the early 20th century. The dialect of the Jews in that area is often mistakenly called 'crude spanish." Actually the language is Latino a Judeo-Spanish dialect spoken in Constantinople and Smyrna. A western Ladino is spoken in Salonika*), Bosnia, and Serbia. Masonic Jews speaking this Latino language were part of the Masonic plot that started World War I. Numerous high level Masons were informed of the coming assassination of the Archduke which a thinking person could realize what and contradiction. Actually, I would state it slightly different. His life is shrouded in smokescreens. However, there are records, documents, witnesses, etc. and it is possible to reconstruct many details about his life. I will attempt to reconstruct some of the details of that life as they pertain to his secret life as an Illuminati leader. The Illuminati is divided into the drug/porn section, the political/business management section, and the cult ritual section, global communications section, and mind-control section. The leadership within the various areas overlap. The drug/porn/political areas work together as a unit. The mind-control area seems to be somewhat technical and somewhat separate. Further, several groups have been identified as assigned the job of keeping the long range plans. The three groups that have been entrusted with long range plans are the Order of the Garter, Order of the Quest, & Keepers of the Dawn. The plans to bring in the New World Order are very detailed, and their management and safekeeping have not been haphazard. Aristotle worked within the drug/porn/political/business management area Aristotle's power was so pervasive that some researchers of his activities concluded that he was absolutely the most powerful man on earth. This is because they were not aware of the shared power of the Illuminati "kings". Aristotle did have world-wide power, but that appearance of power was there because he was part of Moriah (the Satanic hierarchy which controls the world.) Aristotle Onassis' family has bad their misfortunes too. All of the top families are in competition, and although they work together they also fight together. Even within Aristotle's own family, a stiff long time rivalry with his brother-in-law made life difficult for everyone assoclated with Aristotle. And yet for all their competition, Aristotle invited Stavros Niarchos to spend time on hIs yacht, which Jacqueline his wife detested immensely.

*) *Correction. Greek is spoken in Salonika, not Ladino. Salonika is a Greek city (editor's note)*

ARISTOTLE LEAVES GREECE & GOES TO ARGENTINA

Aristotle's father had planned to send him to Oxford, but the Turkish genocide of the greek Turks changed his plans. Aristotle instead set out from Greece to Argentina. Supposedly, Aristotle landed in Argentina stateless and broke. From what I can make out it appears to be true, although it is possible he had some contacts to help the move to a foreign country. It is said that he finally found a job as a dishwasher in a bar on the corner of Corrientes & Talcahuano in Buenos Alres. Near the end of 1924, he was able to obtain a job iater on with the British United River Plate Telephone Co. (Argentina was at times called the fifth British Dominion because the british Rothschilds and other british investors owned so much of Argentina.) In the next few years, Aristotle proved himself a very capable manager and with great potential as an underworld leader. Juan Gaoana, the boss of a leading Argentine cigarette manufacturing company was the first to put in an order through Aristotle to get tobacco from Turkey via Ari's father in Greece. This tobacco importing was the cover for Adi's opium running. After two years, Onassis went into manufacturing cigarettes. Again this was a cover, but Onassis was out to prove himself in anyway he could, so he illegally borrowed the name of a famous Argentine brand of cigarettes called BIS, and labelled his cigarettes the same thing. The owner of BIS sued Onassis for using his company's name and won in court. The cigarette manufacturing was clearly a losing deal, and Onassis got out of it. However, the biographies credit his cigarette manufacturing as bringing in his wealth, while at the same time acknowledging that he was losing money from them and had to dump them because they were unprofitable. Which is it? As I stated, Aristotle was running drugs into Argentina. Aristotle states that he was penniless when he arrived in Argentina at age 21, and that he had made his first million dollars by age 23. Long story short-the facts as to where he lived, what witnesses say etc. appear to collaborate that he went from having nothing to being wealthy within those two years. His lifestyle changed dramatically. People blame his riches on the fact that he worked long hours. (I know many people who work long hours and are creative and people just don't move up the ladder that fast by working for a phone company and selling tobacco.)

ARISTOTLE'S FRIENDS

Aristotle Onassis associated with many powerful people. The ract that he rubbed shoulders with establishment figures that tie back to the elite is nothing surprising of a person his wealth. However, it is the nature of his involvement with other Illuminati figures that reveals his position within Moriah. Before going into his Illuminati business ventures, let's just discuss some of his friendships. An example of his visits to friends is this quote from the book Onassis. 'The Christina's cruises always produced items which no alert gossip columnist could miss. Onassis dropping in on Prince Alfonso Hoheiohe's Marbella Club in southern Spain and lunching with Baron and Baroness Guy de Rothschild (amidst rumors that it was Rothschild money that had supplanted his own in Monte Carlo) was obviously a noteworthy social incident.' (Onassis, p. 255) During W.W. II, Onassis was a regular guest of the movie mogul Spyros Skouras at Mamaroneck on Long Island. Other close friends of Onassis were the Perons of Argentina. The Perons set up a dictatorship in Argentina The Perons have a great number of Nazi & Satanic connections/activities. If you get Into studying about the Perons you will come up with names such as Josef Mengele (a Satanic Nazi Doctor), Dr. Fritz Thyssen, and Otto Skorzeny. Onassis had sexual liaisons with Evita Peron, who was a platinum blonde. Onassis had Nazi connections that continued his whole life, as did the Perons. For instance, one of Onassis's Nazi associates was Hjalmar Schacht, president of Hitler's Reichbank, who Onassis hired after the war. Schacht heiped Onassis' shipyards in Germany build tankers after W.W. II. Until people realize that the real guiding hand behind the Nazi's was Satanism they will continue to be misguided as to the way everything connects together at the top. For instance, John Foster Dulles was the man at Versailles Treaty who can be credited for having created the Treaty's harsh terms against Germany that ruined Germany financially after W.W. II. And yet this same man, John Foster Dulles, was the person who secretly went to Hitler to confirm to Hitler that the elite would financially back Hitler's rise to power. If Hitler were anything like our image of him, Hider would have rung his neck, here before him was the man who made Germany suffer..why was Hitler friendly with this man? It makes no sense, unless people wake up to what is going on. The answer is that there is a conspiracy of those who are at the top to rule us, and to guide us toward a New World Order, and they are quite willing to sacrifice whole nations to do that. Onassis was an extremely close friend of Winston Churchill. The Freemason Winston Churchill is a descendent of a family that has been part of the elite that have secretly run the world. Winston Churchill on several occasions told Onassis that the only one he could trust in W.W. II was Joseph Stalin. (This is a far cry from the picture given in history books.) Winston Churchill spent a great deal of time on Onassis's yacht Christina. Onassis was also friendly with

Winston Churchill's friend of Bernard Baruch. It was Bernard Baruch who convinced Winston Churchill to join the Illuminati conspiracy. He asked Churchill to come watch something important in NY in 1929, and then he showed Churchill how they could destroy the Stock Market. That show of power brought Churchill on board. Two other Illuminati friends of Ari Onassis were Joseph Kennedy and Peter Grace, both men also belonged to top 13 Illuminati bloodlines. Gianni Agnelli, a powerful man in the Illuminati spent time on a number of occasions on Onassis's yacht Christina while it was in the Riviera. Years before JFK became president, Onassis had JFK and Winston Churchill on his yacht at the same time. In 1928, the Illuminati men who controlled the major oil companies got together at Achnacarry Castle and formally created the Achnacarry Agreement which divided up the worid into an international cartel. This is why you may have watched the same gas truck bring gas to all the different gas stations in an area, for instance, say a Sinclair station, a BP station (Rothschilds), and an Exxon station (Rockefeller). If the reader understands the world's oil was totally in an Illuminati monopoly by 1928, it will help you understand that Aristotle who was the man who built the largest oil tanker ships was also Illuminati. In one year alone during the 1950s, Onassis bought 17 new tankers.

EVIDENCE OF THE CONSPIRACY

One of the most telling papertrail signs that the conspiracy has left behind was an executive order that FDR signed just after Japan bombed Pearl Harbor. This executive order was a semi-secret amendment to Trading With The Enemy Act which made it LEGAL to trade with the enemy if the Sec. of the Treasury (then Hans Morganthau) gave permission. Morganthau was a tool of the conspiracy, and of course he gave permission to the top Illuminati to trade with the enemy. (In 1983, a book came out Trading With The Enemy which exposes how the elite secretly kept Hitler going by supplying him, rebuilding his communications etc. Onassis as an Illuminati king worked with other elites Rockefeller, Kennedy, Getty to quietly make a profit and keep the war going longer. Onassis sold oil and guns to both sides. ITT telephones were used in German submarines. [This Executive Order shows that at the top their is a conspiracy--it is reproduced on the following pages.) There were 450 merchant ships owned by Greeks before W.W. II. Out of those Aristotle said 410 were sunk during the war. The offIcial count was 360. Either way it is clear that most of the Greek shippers lost their large merchant ships. However, the German submarines and aircraft never once touched Aristotles' ships although they sailed through war zones. Neither did the Aliles. Aristotle alone did not suffer any losses. Aristotle's large fleet did not lose a single ship even the ones that were in Scandinavia when the Germans invaded. Only the full colloboration at the highest levels could have pulled that one off.

HOWARD HUGHS

Howard Hughs was a self-made millionaire and genius. Howard Hughs was not part of the system, so he was fair game to destroy. Even millionaires like Hughs and the Hunt brothers have to toe the line, or they can be taken out by the Illuminati. This doesn't mean Howard Hughs was virtuous. Howard Hughs gave Nixon's brother Donald a quarter million dollar "loan" (gift) in 1956 in order to continue having vice-pres. Nixon in his pocket. Hughs had been a supporter of Nixon for many years.

Onassis infiltrated his own men into Hugh's organization. Chester Davis was from Sicily, and although he worked for Hughs, took orders from Onassis. In 1955, Hughs had obtained two doubles, one named L. Wayne Rector and the other Brooks Randie. In March, 1957 Onassis' men at the Beverly Hills Hotel captured Howard Hughs using Hughs' own disloyal men. Hughs was seriously hurt in the kidnapping. I believe at this point he was taken to Emerald Isle Hotel in the Bahamas. (Some of the people who are aware that Onassis captured Hughs, dispute that Hughs was taken out of the country.) The top floor was rented for the "Hughes Party". For a month the captive Hughs was shot full of heroin, and then secretly transported to a cell on Onassis' private island of Skorpios. Hughs two doubles stayed on under the pay of Onassis. One became Hughs, and the other became Hughs' double. Computer programs which can duplicate signatures were used to provide Hugh's signature. The computer and its program used for duplicating Hughs' signature even became public knowledge when the Los Angeles TImes had an article on 1/28/71 about a computer which had been programmed to write the signature of Hughes. The Mormon Mafia that supposedly guarded Hughs actually ran the Hughs empire for Illuminatus Onassis, which accounts for the change in policies that were made by Hughs empire. It also explains why they bought up every newsreel they could find on Hughes in order to duplicate voice-prints using computers. When they were through with the double L. Wayne Rector he was shot at Rothschild's Inn on the Park, in London.

In a meeting with feilow Satanist Joseph Kennedy in September, 1957, the decision was taken to use the Mafia's power to get John F. Kennedy elected. The Mafia was caught in Chicago tampering big time with the voting--but Nixon was denied a recount of the votes. Nixon backed off from making a fuss, because he was promised the chance to be President later. Illinois Republicans made an unofficial recount of 699 paper ballot precincts in Cook County and came up with the vote in favor of Nixon. Those votes would have changed Illinois's electorial votes and thrown the victory to Nixon. However, Sam Giancana and his henchman Mayor Richard Daley were not about to let an official recount take place. In 1961, Joseph Kennedy had a stroke, and John Kennedy and Robert feeling their freedom, and disliking some of the powerful Illuminati like Aristotle Onassis, decided to use their popularity to destroy the conspiracy. I believe Kennedy and Robert had more courage to take on the conspiracy, due to the fact that they were familiar with it from having been (in a sense) on the inside of it during their days growing up. However, neither son had received the Illuminati training and indoctrination that their older brother had, and when be died. Joseph made a mistake when he decided to replace Joe, Jr. with John (who they called Jack). The mistake was that John F. Kennedy may have seemed like he'd be a good Illuminati President, but he actually thought for himself. He thought for himself because he was young and with that impetuousness and vigor of youth, and with the popularity he had, he had the possibility to do some good for this nation. If I were state my evaluation, it would be to tell conservatives that they have been "hoodwinked". John F. Kennedy did more conservative (preserving this nation) things in his Presidency than Nixon and Reagan who are heralded as conservative. Kennedy didn't recognize Red China, no-- that was Nixon. Kennedy didn't triple the national debt, no, that was Reagan. The CIA has been out to get JFK, ever since they realized JFK didn't view himself as their puppet, but that he viewed himself as their boss. The head of the CIA on purpose ruined the CIA's chances to succeed at the Bay of Pigs. He personally prevented the CIA air cover from taking off, which the CIA knew that without air support, the operation had no chance, which was soon proved correct. in everyone's zeal to get JFK they blamed JFK. It all sounded so believable, because the CIA were going to tell the full story. The public is not astute enough to realize that the press had subtly turned against Kennedy. Two powerful friends who liked John F. Kennedy and wanted to help JFK fight the elite were taken out before Kennedy was assassinated. Senator Estes Kefauver, whose Crime Commission had discovered the 1932 deal that Onassis, Kennedy, Meyer, Roosevelt, Lansky and other Illuminati--Mafia figures had made. Kefauver was poisoned so that he had a secret poison induced "heart attack" on Aug. 8, 1963. One suspect that might have done it was his subordinate Bernard Fensterwald, who was also a CIA assassin. The other was Phillip Graham. His wife Katherine MEYER Graham has been a full participant of the conspiracy and shows up repeatedly in elite activities. Katherine bribed some psychiatrists to certify her husband who was editor of the Washington Post was insane. He was ordered by a judge into a mental hospital. When he was allowed to visit home on a weekend, he was found "suicided" by a shotgun. Bobby Kennedy had a good idea who shot his brother. He wrote an unpublished book called The Enemy Within, and then later he was assassinated too. Actually, the whole establishment were out to get Kennedy, and even George Bush was involved with the assassination.

The key to understanding the Illuminati is that it is headquartered in the London area. The Satanists (and witches) refer to Great Brittain as the mother country Onassis had the best connections anyone could want in the British Government, as would be expected of someone of his standing in the illuminati. He had many British friends, just one example is Sir Lionel Heald, the Br. Attorney General. He attended the exclusive Br. Other Club. When W.W. II broke out on Sept. 3, '39, Onassis was living in Savoy Hotel where the headquarters for the Illuminati's Pilgrim Society are. The British London Times backed Onassis in his dispute with Peru over whaling. Onassis did finally get himself into trouble with illegal whaling when the nation of Norway gathered the evidence of his lulling of hundreds of whales that were illegal to hunt. Just two more quick examples of his social connections in Brittain are his attendence at J.Paul Getty's party at Sutton Place, Eng. in the '50s, and Onassis' own big party for the elite on 17 June '58 at Dorchester, England. As explained in Be Wise As Serpents, Britain's overseas intelligence MI-6 is the Illuminati's chief intelligence agency.

There is no way of knowing how many meetings took piace dealing with the planning of the assassination of Kennedy. The first were high level Illuminati meetings. But the Illuminati meetings were not operational level meetings. There were several levels of meetings. Next, a series of meetings by British Intelligence at Tryall Compound at Montego Bay, Jamaica, and Mafia meetings at who knows where. A minor trading company called Permindex was the cover to an assassination bureau that had its major U.S. subsidiary the International Trade Mart in New Orleans. The FBI's Divison 5 was tied in with Permindex, and Permindex's board of directors had U.N. posts, Mafia positions, European banking ties, Nazi ties, etc. In other words Permindex was well connected. By the time the planning was done, it included certain elements of the CIA and Freemasons. A Major Lauis Mortimer Bloomfield, Permindex's Pres. & Chairman, a key player in Hoover's Division 5, and a member of the Order of St. John of Jerusalem (the Protestant branch of the Knights of Malta) was a homosexual lover of FBI director J. Edgar Hoover. All the board of Permindex and many of its various subsidiaries were in various areas in November, 1963 carrying out the assassination and coverup. One of the covers for the Permindex operators/teams was to pose as missionaries of the American Council of Christian Churches (ACCC). The whole reason the elite set up the extensive ACCC was to have a cover for their killing units. For instance, a group of about 30 of the best marksmen were undercover as part of ACCC missionary school in Puebla, Mexico, The Tolstoy Foundation (who I have visited with] were another pseudo "Christian" front. Later, the headquarters of this assassination group was shifted to Paradise Island, Grand Bahamas to Intertel. Ian Flemming's novels write about a Third Force used to create a world government that was based in the resort islands of the Carribean. How true that has become. In the Westerns put out by Hollywood, when the bad guy does something to the good guy, he runs off with his woman. That is what happened with JFK. Onassis was one of the Illuminati kings who decided JFK must go, and he got to run off with the dead man's wife. Onassis had already gotten Jackie onto his yacht, sexually, prior to Kennedy's assassination. Franklin Roosevelt, Jr. was on board together with Aristotie and Jackie. Jackie didn't enjoy her marriage to Onassis. At one point in their marriage when they were swimming nude at Onassis' island Skorpios, ten photographers with underwater cameras and telephoto lens captured Jackie naked and her picture was splashed across Playmen and Hustler, etc. Jackie was furious and wanted her husband to sue the newspapers and magazines, which he refused to do A year before Aristotle died he actually admitted that he had planned the whole operation. The date given for the actual Howard Hugh's death, who had been kept prisoner under horrendous conditions by Onassis, was Apr. 18, 1971. In the previous year 1970, Hugh's purported autobiography had come out written by Clifford Irving. Clifford Irving's wife took the publisher's check made out to Howard Hugh's to one of Onassis's Swiss banks, and was paid.

FAMILY DIFFICULTIES

Onassis' second wife was Tina (Athina Mary Onassis) when she divorced her husband for committing adultery said, "It is almost thirteen years since Mr. Onassis and I were married in New York CIty. Since then he has become one of the world's richest men, but his wealth has not brought me happiness with him nor, as the world knows, has it brought him happiness with me."

Tina divorced Ari and then went on to soon marry a relative of Winston Churchill, the Marquess of Blandford. Later, she divorced him and married her old brother-in-law Stavros Niarchos in May, 1971. But after he killed her sister she quit him too.

EUGENIA KILLED

Eugenic, the sister-in-law of Ari Onassis, died according to the official version of an overdose of sleeping pills. Her body in the post-mortem was covered with bruises, black left eye, swelling on the left temple. a hemorrhage to the left of the larynx and so forth down the rest of her body. Let's not. swallow the Illuminati's propaganda to lull us into sleep about what they have done.

It might also be important to comment on the background of the Uvanos family. Both Stavros Niarchos and Aristotle Onassis married Uvanos girls.

The Uvanos family was a prominent family on the Turkish island of Chios. The island of Chios had a type of tree, mastic trees that produced an early form of chewing gum. From the word mastic is where we get the word masticate. Chios was the privnte property of the sultan and it was where he kept his harem. The island was given special royal treatment and allowed to have it full of chewing gum, and "booze and broads". The Uvanos family was one of the leading families on this island.

BASIC SOURCES ON ONASSIS FAMILY

Interviews with people, and notes from other researchers. Author’s own research.

Genealogy compiled from research notes of this writer Fritz Springmeier. Frischauer, Willi. Onassis. NY: Meredith Press, 1968.

Heymann. C. David. A Woman Named Jackie. NY: Carol Commun., 1989 Lilly, Doris. Those Fabulous Greeks Onassis. Niarchos. and Livanos. NY. Cowles Book Co., 1970.

Bloodlines of Illuminati

By:

Fritz Springmeier, 1995

The Rockefeller Bloodline

One of the 13 Satanic bloodlines that rule the world is the Rockefeller bloodline. Today, there are around 190 members of this family with the Rockefeller name and of course some others by other last names. This article is to explore further for those who investigate the Illuminati, how the Rockefeller bloodline is involved in the promotion of the occult and Satanism, and how they are involved in the control of the Christian denominations. This article keys in on just one family, the Rockefellers. To understand the full extent of the Illuminati's control of religion, including Christendom, would require perhaps several books. The Illuminati itself draws its lifeblood from around 500 very powerful families worldwide. This article will not attempt to explain their networks and the many organizations of the Illuminati. It will not even try to do this for the Rockefellers. In fact, no one knows how many trusts and foundations the Rockefellers have. They have hidden trusts within secret trusts within secret trusts. It is estimated that they have between 200 and several thousand trusts and foundations. The finances of the Rockefellers are so well covered that Nelson Rockefeller did not pay one cent in income taxes in 1970, yet he was perhaps the richest man in the U.S. The Rockefellers exert enormous influence over religion in this nation in the following ways:

1. They provide a large share of the money that Seminaries in the United States need to operate.
2. They provide a large share of the money that universities need to operate. Education influences the religious values of our people.
3. They provide large grants to various religious organizations.
4. Their influence and control helps determine who will get publicity in the major news magazines, and on television.
5. Their influence has contributed to various anti-Christian organizations being set up.
6. They directly help control certain religious groups such as Lucis Trust.

The Rockefeller's influence is both subtle and not so subtle.

In the book The Unholy Alliance details are given on how the seminaries, church boards and Christian colleges have been captured. Much of the money for this came from the Rockefellers. One of the principle large Foundations that was instrumental in controlling religious institutions of various kinds was the Sealantic Fund. (They have now shifted to other channels.) This Foundation which was incorporated in 1938 and was headquartered in New York City (50 West 50th St.) gave enormous sums of money to manipulate Protestant concerns. In 1964, according to the Russell Sage Foundation's book The Foundation Directoy the Sealantic Fund gave away $681, 886 in grants.*
In 1969, the Fund gave $1,889,550 in grants.**
By 1984, the Sealantic Fund was not being used. But a look at anotherRockefeller non-profit untaxed Foundation the Rockefeller Brother's Fund shows a revealing grant pattern. Many people would not be able make any sense out of what seems a random pattern of grants without the broad picture of what the Illuminati is doing today. My book Be Wise As Serpents should have clarified how those

various groups who receive grants are related and helpful to the Rockefeller agenda. Although these other Rockefeller Foundations are not specifically geared toward religion such as the Sealantic Fund was, it is clear these other Foundations still impact religion.

4 SELECTED GRANTS IN 1984 OF THE ROCKEFELLER BRO. FUND***

Council on Foundations- $41,000 (This money was according to R.B. Fund info ‘Toward work of project which will carry out recommendations from study that points out lack of knowledge about global interdependence and about relationship between international and domestic issues. Emphasis will be placed on information and educational programs to help funders become more familiar with and learn how to analyze opportunities for international grantmaking.” Harlem Interfaith Counseling Service-$100,000. Private Agencies Collaborating Together - $25,000 (“encourages collaboration among private development agencies working in Africa. Asia, and Latin America...”) Trilateral Commission - $240,000

8 SELECTED GRANTS IN 1984 OF THE ROCKEFELLER FAMILY FUND & ROCKEFELLER FOUNDATION****
ACLU -$15,000, AMERICAN HISTORICAL ASSOC. -$42,000, AMER. PHILOSOPHICAL ASSOC. -$57,500, CATHOLIC UNIVERSITY OF AMERICA -$25,000, CATHOLIC UNIV. OF CHILE - $224,200, COUNCIL ON FOREIGN RELATIONS -$165.000, NAACP- $100,000, POPULATION COUNCIL - $ 1,235,000, UNIV. OF NOTRE DAME - $25,000

Catholic institutions have been large recipients of grants from foundations connected to the World Order. The Catholic Church, the Episcopalian Church, and the Unitarian-Universalist Church are all playing big roles in the New World Order for the Satanists. One ex-Satanist has talked about visits that were made with the Pope and Vatican leaders, where the Pope dealt with this person as a member of the Illuminati. In other words the Pope was not in the Illuminati hierarchy, but he carries out transactions with them, and coordinates his actions according to their instructions.

We will now go into some depth on the six items above.

1. They provide a large share of the money that Seminaries in the United States need to operate.

The Union Theological Seminary has operated from Rockefeller funds.***** UTS hasn’t been the only Protestant Seminary receiving Rockefeller funds, but it may be the best example of a seminary controlled by the Rockefellers.The Sealantic Fund stated under its purpose and activities, “Current interests are primarily Protestant theological education...... ******
The President of the Sealantic Fund when it operated was David Rockefeller, and Laurance (not Lawrence) S. Rockefeller was Vice-President. Steven C. Rockefeller was one of the trustees.

2. They provide a large share of the money that universities need to operate. Education influences the religious values of our people.

In 1952, Congressman Eugene E. Cox headed up a committee that for the first time tried to uncover the Rockefeller’s (and other’s) foundations’ activities. For some reason, Cox encountered stiff opposition everywhere against his committee’s investigation, and the Congressman for some reason got sick and died. One member of the committee, Congressman Carroll Reese, and his Counsel Rene Wormser attempted to continue the investigation. Rockefeller’s henchmen and newspapers did their best to destroy Congressman Reese. The Reese investigation was given only the barest minimum of time and little resources for their investigation. However, they were still able to uncover that beginning in the 1930s vast sums of money were spent in Education by the Rockefeller and Carnegie foundations. This money went to promote John Dewey, Marxism, a One-World-Government agenda, and Socialism. The foundations (principally the Rockefeller and Carnegie) stimulated two-thirds of the total endowment funding of all institutions of higher learning in America during the first third of this 20th century.*******

The NEA (National Education Association was largely financed by the Rockefeller/Carnegie foundations. A 1934 NEA report advised, “A dying laissez-faire must be completely destroyed and all of us, including the ‘owners’, must be subjected to a large degree of social control.” Reece Committee Counsel Rene Wormser wrote of the investigation, “...leads one to the conclusion that there was, indeed, something in the nature of an actual conspiracy among certain leading educators in the United States to bring about socialism through the use of our school systems...” They discovered that the Rockefeller foundation was the primary culprit behind the teaching of socialism in America’s schools and universities and also behind the NEA’s policies. Rene Wormser, Counsel for the Reece Committee reported, “A very powerful complex of foundations and allied organizations has developed over the years to exercise a high degree of control over education. Part of this complex, and ultimately responsible for it, are the Rockefeller and Carnegie groups of foundations.” This was the situation in the 1950s when the Reece Committee briefly investigated. The Rockefeller-Carnegie groups have continued basically unopposed for the next 40 years in controlling education. One of the educational book producers is Grolier, Inc. Avery Rockefeller, Jr. sits on Grolier, Inc. board meetings. Another interesting board member is Theodore Waller who is the director of Grolier, Inc. He was a member of the International Book Committee of UNESCO. The Rockefellers maintain great influence in the United Nations.

3. They provide large grants to various religious organizations.

On Jan. 31, 1945, John D. Rockefeller addressed the Protestant Council of the City of N.Y. and told them that the answer to the problems Christianity was that Christianity needed to become “the Church of the Living God.” Many listening that day, may not have realized that he and other top Illuminati consider themselves gods, and that the solution John D. was cryptically giving was for Christianity to serve him a living god. (Rockefeller, John D. The Christian Church- What of its Future? NY: Protestant Council, 1945, & 1917.)

4. Their influence and control helps determine who will get publicity in the major news magazines.

The Rockefeller family has enormous controls over various magazines and newspapers. Let us examine how the power of the press can be used in religion. One of the magazines that the Rockefellers have some control over is Time magazine. Time’s board chairman, Andrew Heiskell was associated with David Rockefeller. Another Illuminatus of the 6th level1 Henry J. Fisher, ran McCall’s Magazine from 1917 to 1956. The establishment’s media boosted Anton LaVey’s Church of Satan into prominence. The Jan. 31, 1967 New York Daily News ran a story about Anton LaVey performing the first Satanic wedding ceremony in America. The March 1970 issue of McCall’s ran a nice story about the Church of Satan. Not only is LaVey’s Church of Satan a publicity stunt to make Satanism more popular and to deflect criticism of real covert Satanism, the McCall issue makes Anton LaVey’s church sound even better in the article than it is. (For those brainwashed folks who think that this free advertising for Anton LaVey was just for the sake of finding a good story for the Daily News and McCall, I can show you dozens of better juicier stories that never have seen the light of day--because they are contrary to what the Illuminati want people to hear. I won’t argue that a story on Satanism may be interesting, I am pointing out that many other interesting stories don’t get printed. Stories are selected by an editor, they don’t just happen.) Finally on June 19, 1972 Time Magazine provided more coverage for LaVey with an article “The Occult: A Substitute Faith.” Believe me, the sincere devout Christian groups haven’t ever received such nice free publicity. I’m not referring to men like 33° Mason Billy Graham, who works for the New World Order and Knights Templar Mason Charles T. Russell, founder of the Watchtower Society who both received great press coverage. Another minor example, and I am pointing out minor examples because they occur many times during the course of year, is Van Daniken’s UFO books. Lew Wasserman, head of MCA, which owns G.P. Putnam’s Sons, is a member of the Rockefeller University Council. G.P. Putnam’s Sons published Van Daniken’s anti-Christian UFO religious theories. Cadence Industries own Marvel Comics. The men on the board of Cadence sit under David Rockefeller in places like the CFR. Is it any wonder Marvel Comics promotes the occult and heros like ‘The Son of Satan”? Where does the buck stop? You say that the Rockefellers don't control subordinates. Bear in mind, that many of the Rockefellers call themselves Baptists. If they are really Christians don't you think they could use their influence to stop such terrible things? The point is that the rottenness starts at the top. The rest of the pyramid has a hard time turning out O.K. when the top of the pyramid is dedicated to Satan. Rockefeller and Hearst worked together in their news monopolies. It was Hearst who promoted both books on Satanism and Billy Graham. (If you learn what I know--the two are not contradictory.) Hearst made Billy Graham who he is today by financially backing him and publicizing him. Rockefeller was supportive of Billy Graham's New York Crusade, and the Manhattan-Chase Bank helped Billy Graham out.

5. Their influence has contributed to various anti-Christian organizations being set up.

Maurice Strong is a good friend of the Rockefellers. He has been promoting Mother Gaia worship. David Rockefeller works with Maurice Strong and his New Age ideas. Reverend Moon from Korea has been very much loved by the Rockefellers. Moon calls himself Christ and is setting up a religion promoting internationalism. His religion is also a good testing ground for brainwashing/recruiting techniques that are being perfected by the NWO. The Rockefellers have been helping Moon, who also has his primary mansion in NY. Also of interest is that the prominent political figures that have endorsed Moon are those with ties to the NWO, and include Ted Kennedy, Mason Mark C. Hatfield, Mason Jesse Helms, & Illuminatus William F. Buckley, Jr. (See pg. 32-33 of The Puppet Master by J. Isamu Yamamoto.) A lesser known group is the Spiritual Frontiers Fellowship (SFF) in Independence, MO. Their address was Exec. Plaza, 10715 Winner Rd, 64052. They were founded in 1956. Just like Reverend Moon they claim to be Christians, but teach and practice other things. They teach and practice the occult. Two prominent men in SFF are Marcus Bach and Gardner Murphy. They both have interesting backgrounds. Marcus Bach shows the touch of the Rockefellers. Marcus Bach, born in 1906, is director of special projects for SFF. The Rockefeller Foundation granted him a fellowship in "research and creative writing" from 1934-36. Gardner Murphy was the consultant in 1950 for UNESCO in New Delhi to the Hindus of the Indian Ministry of Education. From '52-'68 he was director of research at the Menninger Foundation, Topeka, KS. (Yes, psychology is led mainly by occultists!) Menninger himself is a member of several environmental groups for the elite, an Honorary trustee of the Aspen Institute, a Freemason, member of ACLU, and a close associate of W. Clement Stone. W. Clement Stone in turn is also a Mason, a member of the occult American Society for Psychical Research, and the financial backer of the Menninger Foundation. The Federal Council of Churches was financed to a large extent by Rockefeller money. In my Be Wise As Serpents book I detail how the FCC was designed to destroy Christianity, how they carefully plotted to make the creation of the FCC look like a grass roots movement, when it was actually the creation of the elite (Illuminati). I further detail how the men who ran it were high ranking Masons, Socialists, and One-Worlders. Also shown is how they carefully manipulated the real gospel for their own devious ends.

6. They directly help control certain religious groups such as Lucis Trust.

David Rockefeller is part of Lucis Trust's management. Lucis Trust puts out the book Externalization of the Hierarchy by Alice Bailey which spells out The Plan for the Satanists and New Agers on how the spiritual Hierarchy (actually the demonic hierarchy) is to externalize their rule of the planet. The book gives quite a few of the details of the plan, and is used as a textbook for New Agers at the Arcane Schools in NY, London, and Europe on how the New Age/One World Religion/One-World-Government will be brought in. If anyone doubts the Rockefeller's commitment to Satan, read page 107 of Externalization of the Hierarchy. On page 107 Alice Bailey, President of the Theosophical Society and part of Lucis (formerly Lucifer) Trust, tells us who will rule when the New Age (New World Order) takes over. On the Earthly level--Humanity so to speak, the Ruler is given on page 107 as Lucifer. On the Spiritual level--called "Shamballa - the Holy City" the coming ruler is given as "the Lord of the World" which we Christians know as Satan. Lucis Trust knows it is Satan too, but for public consumption they say that the "ruler of the world" is Sanat (a scrambling of Satan) Kumara. They also predict there will be a Christ Consciousness and the Christ (actually the Anti-

Christ) The book Externalization of the Hierarchy teaches repeatedly (see pages 511-512, 514) that the 3 vehicles to bring in the New Age will be the Masonic Lodges, (obviously not everyone attends Lodges), next the Churches (this is clearly revealing to us that men like the Rockefellers are using the churches for the Luciferian plan of Lucis Trust), and finally Education (Well, of course education. Not everyone attends churches. They need a safety net to catch everyone in their brainwashing to make us all want to be happy slaves under the Light-bearer.) The home life of the Rockefellers is decidedly different than for most people. They have over 100 homes to stay at. The Rockefellers own vast tracts of good land in various countries in South America, and have nice homes in Brazil, Ecuador, and their Monte Sacro Ranch, Venezuela. They have two mansions in Washington, D.C. (at least), numerous ranches around the United States, resorts in Hawaii, Puerto Rico, and the Caribbean, a 32- room 5th Ave duplex in N.Y., not to mention their place at Seal Harbor, Maine, and the large estate at Pocantico Hills, NY. It is estimated that they have 2,500 house servants. Over the years, they have built up the reputation of being miserly with their help, and to each other. (I couldn't begin to know all about the Rockefellers, but I can give a sampling of some of the many items that surround the real lives of America's top Illuminati family.) Winthrop, who is homosexual,, enjoyed living in Arkansas with his black male friend. He reportedly had the world's largest porn collection. Winifred Rockefeller Emeny, Nelson's cousin, murdered her two children and committed suicide.

Michael Rockefeller died when he tried to bribe New Guinea tribesmen with large sums of money to go head hunt and make shrunken heads for him. The natives had given up head hunting and Michael couldn't sucessfully bribe them. Finally getting tired of Michael, the natives decided to head hunt Michael himself!

Many of the Rockefeller family have had troubled lives, filled with all kinds of fears and occult activities. It is known that the Rockefellers have frequently built many hidden tunnels and hidden rooms onto their buildings. They have developed their occult and worldly powers to the point they consider themselves gods. Their powerful often suffer violent ritual death as most high level Satanists traditionally go through. One who died in Arizona is known to have been cremated.

ENDNOTES

* Walton, Ann D. and Marianna O. Lewis, Editors. The Foundation Directory Ed. 2. NY: Published by Russell Sage Foundation, 1964, p.584.

** Lewis, Marianna 0. and Patricia Bowers, Editors. The Foundation Directory Ed. 4. NY: Columbia University Press, 1971, p.342.

*** Garonzik, Elan, ed. compiled by The Foundation Center. The Foundation Grants Index 13 Edition. NY: The Foundation Center, 1984, pp. 369-372.

**** Ibid., pp. 372-373.

***** Allen1 Gary. The Rockefeller File. Boring, OR: CPA Publishers, (reprint of 1976 edition), p. 47.

****** Walton, op. cit.

******* Allen, op. cit., p. 45

PARTIAL BIBLIOGRAPHY

BOOKS:
Allen, Gary. The Rockefeller File. Boring, OR: CPA Book Publishers, 1991. (reprint of 1976 ed.)
Bailey, Alice. The Externalisation of the Hierarchy. NY (866 United Nations Plaza!): Lucis Publishing Co., 1982.

Foundation Directories from 1964, 1971, 1984.

Josephson, Emanuel M. The Truth About Rockefeller 'Public Enemy No 1" Studies in CriminalPsychopathy. NY: Chedney Press, 1964.

Springmeier, Fritz. Be Wise As Serpents. Portland, OR : Fritz Springmeier, 1991.

OTHER:

Interviews--with ex-Illuminati Manuscript--from ex-high ranking Mason who strangely died (it was called a suicide) soon after completing his expose of the New World Order’s elite.

WHY AM I COVERING THE TOP 13 ILLUMINATI BLOODLINES?

I have often been asked who are the liluminati? Who are the people at the top of the conspiracy? Who are the generational satanic families? The illuminati consists of 13 magical and powerful bloodlines. There are also some other powerful bloodlines that are worth naming but if they are in the Illuminati they have blood ties to one of the 13 powerful lineages. About half of the Illuminati people I know have had their parentage hidden from them. Many of the those who still know who their real parents are, still do not know what bloodline they belong to until the liluminati chooses to reveal it to them. Most of the Illiuminati have MPD. When high level Satanists do not have MPD they very often emotionally break under the stress of the horrible blood rituals that are requIred. Recently, a non-MPD Satanist in Chicago emotionally broke and gave his life to Christ. (I have videos available of an interview of this man exposing Satanism.) One of the important lineages has remained secret untill 3 investigators named Lincoln, Leigh, and Bageant were spoon-fed leads and secrets. They put this into a book called "Holy Blood, Holy Grail." I recommend the book and the two books which are its sequels, because they show how just one part of the 13 lineages has kept itself secret and has taken immense power of all forms to themselves. In Southern Belgium there is a castle. (If any one is travelling there and wants to find the castle, I will show them on the map, and describe it.) This is the Mothers of Darkness castle. In that castle, is a cathedral and in that cathedral’s basement a little baby Is sacrificed daily and Is coming to power. The pages are written almost round the clock. (This castle is also described in my Be Wise as Serpents book.) The history in that handwritten book would reveal the real facts behind the propaganda that the world’s major news medias give the gullible public. The history as that book reveals it would tell people about how Abraham Lincoln was a descendent of the Rothschilds. Abraham Uncoin was the secret head of the Rosicrucians, a member of their 3 headed top counci. (I have seen the paper trail proof to these things about Lincoln to my satisfaction that these things about Uncoin are true.) Adolf Hitler was also a secret member of the Rothschild lineage. Hitler carried out blood sacrifices to open his mind up to high level demonic spiritual control. Rockefeller sold Hitler oil during W.W. II via Spain to keep W.W. II going longer. The history in that book mentions people that the “history books” given the public don’t-- like Michael Augustus Martinelli Von Braun Rheinhold, the most powerful Satanist in the world a few years ago. Michael Augustus Martinelli Von Braun Rheinhold had 66 Satanic Brides. And that Satanic book in the Mothers of Darkness castle also mentions the Rockefeller bloodline. Only insiders are supposed to know the real history of what has taken place in human history. The real decisions and the real movers and shakers have been hidden from the public’s eyes. What the public is given is a stage show where illuminati puppets parade around and make big speeches according to their script. Each of the 13 families has their own set of Mothers of Darkness. Each of the 13 families has their own secret Satanic leadershipKings, Queens, Princesses and Princes of Darkness. For instance, the Rockefeller family has people who are selected as Kings and Princes within their own bloodline in secret rituals. The Kings and Princes, Queens and Princesses are strictly bloodline. They secretly rule over an area of the world for their own bloodline. This is independent of the liluminati’s hierarchy which was diagrammed in the Jan 1993 newsletter. (my Newsletter from a Christian Ministry.) In the January, 1993 issue the Covens, Sisters of Light, Mothers of Darkness, and the Grande Mothers were diagrammed. The illuminati pulls its various bloodlines together under several councils. The Grande Druid Council or your Council of 13 is your principle council for the Brotherhood of Death. Above the Council of 13 is a higher Council of 9, and an inner group of 3 is believed to head that Council of Nine. How do we know about these things? The power of God has reached into the very heart of Satan’s emplre and pulled out some of the most powerful Satanists and drawn them to Christ. There are several Satanists that were at the top which have managed to find Christ. in addition, some of the next echelon of the hierarchy, such as some of the Mothers of Darkness are also finding Christ. if someone wants to understand how and why decisions are made in world affairs and by who-- then you need to study the illuminati. The real answers do not rest with the proceedings of the Congress of the United States or with the publicly known leaders of the Communist countries. An example of what I am talking, there is a book entitled "Who Financed Hitler" by James Pool and Suzanne Pool. I am always glad to see that some people are wiling to look behind the scenes. Believe me, there were people that Hitler listened to. They were the people he went to ritual with, and who put him into power.

A CONTINUATION OF THE SERIES OF ARTICLES ON ThE TOP 13 ILLUMINATI BLOODLINES. ThE ROCKEFELLER FAMILY

PREFACE.

The first article about the House of Rockefeller in this newsletter occurred in the Mid-Dec 1992 Vol. No. 13 Issue pp. 3-8. The primary focus of that article was to show how the family controlled large segments of the Protestant groups in the United States. A secondary focus of that article was to show the Satanic occult side of the family. An attempt will be made in this article not to rehash information given out in that earlier article. The Rockefeller family has been so busy and there Is a large amount of information that can be provided about them. Therefore my goal with this article Li to provide introductory information to the readership, and to qualify that what is written In this article Is but the basics of what should be written about the illuminati actIvities of this family. Much of my own material on the Rockefeller family was lost this year and I don’t have the time to go back and research it again. Much of it involved the secret wheeling and dealing that went on behind the scenes to bring the Rockefellers into wealth and power. Some of the details also involved their manipulations to control about everything that the Rockefellers can find to control. Some of the research was on the occult activities of the House of Rockefeller.

THE FIRST NOTORIOUS ROCKEFELLER.

The first notorious Rockefeller that researchers who are not working for the Rockefellers refer to is William Avery Rockefeller (1810 -1906?). William Avery Rockefeller was totally corrupt and lacked any type of morals. He was involved in the occult and practiced magic. He married a number of women around the country in bigamous relationships. He also had a number of mistresses, and a large number of sexual partners. He was charged with raping a women and escaped the state of New York to prevent being sent to Jail for it. He stole, lied, and abused his way through life. He wore the best of clothes, and he never lacked for money, including gold coins. Besides loving women, he loved gambling. And where did his money to gamble with come from? He made much of his money dishonestly. His life Is a carbon copy of other men who are known by this author to have been in the Illuminati. (The reader also needs to bear in mind that the Illuminati carries out a large number of secret occult marriages, which only insiders learn about.) One of his wives was Eliza Davidson (181349). She was an extremely cruel woman. Historians who have been bought off by the elite like to picture Eliza Davidson as a very pious woman. Although she had a religious front, there are a number of things in her life that show that she was not the paragon of virtue that the paid-for historians have made her out to be. When she married William Avery Rockefeller she moved in with him and his mistress.

THE FIRST NOTABLY RICH ROCKEFELLER.

William Avery Rockefeller had many bastard children, and it can be imagined many children born for ritual or for the cult. His wife Eliza had six children for him and of those John Davison Rockefeller is the infamous one who brought the family into limelight. John D. Rockefeller in his lifetime became on of the most powerful men in the world. One of the most best kept secrets were his secret dealings with the other Illuminati families. The Payseurs and other Illuminati families are all intimately involved in the rise to power of the Rockefellers. The other factors involved in John D. Rockefeller’s rise to power Is his utter ruthlessness. He was willing to do anything for power. John o. Rockefeller established the family in their principal estate at Pocantico Hills in New York. I have lost the exact figure, but over 100 Rockefeller families live at the private land of Pocantico Hills.

A BRIEF SURVEY OF THE ROCKEFELLER’S INFLUENCE

The Rockefellers have divested much of their holdings into places which they control, but nominally they are not owners of. The Rockefellers financial power Is far greater than the balance sheets would indicate. The Rockefellers can give donations from an organization which they control to another that they control, and not lose any control over the money. The donations look Impressive, but the Rockefeller bloodline hasn't lost. Have you ever noticed that Rockefeller's Standard Oil uses the satanic pentagram in a circle as their logo? Just three of countless Rockefeller companies are Texas Instruments and General Electric, and Eastman Kodak. The Rockefellers also control Boeing. This author (Fritz Sprlngmeier) has repeatedly been given information from numerous sources about the occult activities that are being perpetrated at the Boeing plants in the Seattle area. Monarch programming has even taken place at a Boeing Plant. All these things fit together when one gets the bigger picture and the inside scoop. The Rockefellers also control Delta. Has anyone realized that the Delta symbol is a very widely used satanic symbol? Is It any wonder so many Illuminati and CIA, and world financiers, and people like Chuck Coison (see the exposes on Chuck Colson in 93's newsletters) use Delta to fly on.

My notes are lost, hut suffice It to say the Rockefelllers own land all over South America. The Rockefellers own land most anywhere anyone would want to visit in the US. from Hawaii to Texas to Florida and Seal Harbor, Maine. Notice how often Bush would go to Maine when he was President? The Rockefellers have played a role in Lucis Trust and the United Nations. Interestingiy, you will notice that Prince Charles is the spokesperson for Lucis Trust and also works with the United Nations in various ways. Prince Charles Is from another satanic bloodline. Readers need to study my Be Wise As Serpents book to see how Lucis Trust fits into things. The Rockefellers were involved in the creation of the FBI, so that the FBI has always been an arm of power for the Illuminati. That is why there are official FBI programs in action today to kIdnap children and provide them for sacrifice. Yes, American people, the wolf was set in charge of guarding the chicken coop. The organization that is working as part of the FBI is the Finders. (The stink was so bad that US. News & World Report did a story to soften the impact of the scandal. See the article on a following page. Ex-Satanists who worked with the FBI to receive the children the FBI kidnapped and sold to them for sacrifice have been trying to get the word out publicly about the FBI's corruption. When the Illuminati was beginning to get exposed in the Franklin Saving & Loan case in Lincoln, NE the FBI was part of the dirty actors and was part of the cover up. The Rockefellers have had control over the FBI since they helped get it started. When Congress wanted to investigate the CIA for wrongdoing the appointed a Commission headed by Rockefeller to investigate the CIA's wrongdoings! Yes, the Rockefeller Commission did a big study and slapped the hands of the CIA for a few misdeeds. Their report is still cited as the big investigation of the CIA. Some investigation! Since the Rockefeller family work hand in hand with the CIA to create Monarch slaves, of course that part of the CIA's misdeeds got overlooked!

A recent convert from Satanism, Michael McArthur, has given validated inside information about the FBI and the CIA programs which kidnap children in order to supply Satanic rituals with sacrificial material. The names of the agents who spend their official government time kidnapping children for Satanism that Michael knows about are as follows:

Chucky "Mike," "Peters"-FBI hit man in Div, 5 of FBI, involved with inslaw case Nichol Harrah--FBI agent who abducts children for sacrifice

Unda KriegSatanist working for FBI

Ken LanningFBI agent who abducts children for sacrifice

Nick O'HaraFBI hit man, satanist, has covered FBI child kidnappings by murder Kape RichardsonCIA agent who abducts children for sacrifice

Rather, than risk election, a brilliant coup d'etat which Is exposed in Be Wise As Serpents. was carried out to put Nelson A. Rockefeller into the Vice-Presidency.

The Rockefellers control both education and religion in this country by their foundations.

The Rockefellers have played key roles in the CFR. Rockefeller wrote the book the Future of Federalism which supports the union of nations into a world government. For many years the Rockefellers have been pouring billions of dollars into projects and international groups which are working to bring in a public One-World government. (The world already has a secret One-World-Government.) The Rockefellers take part in decisions that effect Russia, China and other parts of Asla and with good reason, the House of Rockefeller has holdup and assets in these countries too.

The investigator of the Rockefellers will find that they have secretly had their hand in the politics of the United States during the 20th century. The decisions and directions this nation has taken, are the result of countless orders which the Rockefellers have given to their underlings.

ALONG WITH THIS BRIEF LOOK AT THE ROCKEFELLERS, I HAVE INCLUDED
(not included here because not processed in plain text)

A - A BIBLIOGRAPHY BOOKS FOR FURTHER STUDY,
B - SOME PAGES SHOWING THE POCANTICO ESTATESES,
C - SOME PAGES SHOWING PUBLIC MARRIAGES OF THE ELITE.

BIBLIOGRAPHY & SOURCES

-books-Allen, Gary. Rockefeller. Campaining For The New Worid Order. Boring, OR CPA.

Collier, Peter & David Horowitz. The Rockefellers An American Dynasty. New York Holt, Rinehart and Winston, 1976.

Hoffman, William. David, Report On A Rockefeller. New York: Ly1e Stuart, Inc., 1971.

Josephson, Emanuel M. The Truth About Rockefeller “Public Enemy No. 1” Studies in Criminal Psychopathy New York: Chedney Press, 1964.

Mullins, Eustace. The World Order. Boring. OR: CPA.

other interview with an ex-Rockefeller Monarch slave.
interviews with ex-Illuminati and others who know things about the Rockefellers.

Bloodlines of Illuminati

Financial Wizzards

&

Wealthy Cults

The Rothschild Bloodline

Two neighbor horse farmers came together one day to talk business. The first farmer sold his horse to the second for a quarter million dollars, and then bought it back for about $20 more. He could now advertise his horse (actually worth $20), as a horse he that he had paid over a quarter of a million dollars for.

We can laugh over such schemes. And perhaps we should laugh at ourselves for having been fooled, for if there is one area in life that exceeds the religious in deception, and touches all of us it is the financial. What else can we do about it except laugh? The famous poet Lord Byron describes the archtype of our two farmers in 1823, Who keeps the world, both old and new, in pain Or pleasure? Who makes politics run glibber all? The shade of Bonaparte's noble daring?

Jew Rothschild and his fellow-Christian, Baring. You'll learn about some other „neighbor horse traders" in this chapter too.

ROTHSCHILD TALKS ABOUT THEIR DYNASTY

Lord Rothschild in his book The Shadow of a Great Man quotes a letter sent from Davidson on June 24, 1814 to Nathan Rothschild, „As long as a house is like yours, and as long as you work together with your brothers, not a house in the world will be able to compete with you, to cause you harm or to take advantage of you, for together you can undertake and perform more than any house in the world."(1) The closeness of the Rothschild brothers is seen in a letter from Saloman (Salmon) Rothschild to his brother Nathan on Feb. 28, 1815, "We are like the mechanism of a watch: each part is essential. (2) This closeness is further seen in that of the 18 marriages made by Mayer Amschel Rothschild's grandchildren 16 were contracted between first cousins.

VISITING THE NATION THE ROTHSCHILDS BUILT

In 1974, in the summer after the Yom Kippur War this Author toured Israel, and got the chance to personally visit many of the buildings like the Knesset that the Rothschild's money has built. The Knesset is the Israeli equivalent to our Congress's Capitol building. One of the Rothschilds in his will left money for ongoing building projects in Israel, and the Rothschilds are honored with a Street named after them in Jerusalem.

The people of Germany and Turkey have been very close. I can recall meeting Turkish „Gastarbeiter" (guestworkers) in Germany. The reader will remember that Turkey fought on Germany's side in W.W. I. A few powerful Jews, including the Rothschilds were responsible for the wording of the Treaty imposed on Germany that ended W.W. I (3) The treaty gave the Rothschilds the German owned railway rights in Palestine (which had been part of the Turkish Ottoman Empire), thus paving the way for the Rothschilds to have a sure leverage to dictate policy concerning Palestine. The Rothschilds had made loans to Turkey which amounted to almost one hundred million pounds. When the Turkish government collapsed after W.W. I because they were on the losing side, the Rothschilds had a claim on Palestine because of those unpaid Turkish loans.[4] The British government followed the dictates of the Rothschilds. The British were given a mandate over Palestine, and the Rothschilds were able to through their proxies in the British government, to create the steps that led to the nation of Israel.(5)

THE ROTHSCHILDS AS "PROPHETS"

One item stands out as a person listens to the International Bankers and reads their books. They believe money is what makes the world go round. If you have money, you can do anything. Money is "God", and it is worshipped and served. Even after these families accumulate more than can be spent, these devotees continue selling their souls for this false but powerful god. The great poet-philosopher Heinrich Heine (a Banker's son) said, "Money is the god of our time, and Rothschild is his prophet.'[6] Following the cue of the Rothschilds, Heinrich Heme, a Jew, signed his name by drawing a Seal of Solomon.[7] Amsel Rothschild is reported to have said, "Give me control of the economics of a country; and I care not who makes her laws. (8) Today his descendents meet twice daily in London to dictate to the world what the world price of gold will be. They also dictate what the "Federal Reserve System" will do with America's finances.

ANOTHER GOD TOO

According to eye-witnesses, who were prominent enough to visit one of the British Rothschild homes, the Rothschilds worship yet another god too, Satan. They set a place for him at their table.(8a) The Rothschilds have been Satanists for many generations. The Rothschilds are an important part of the history of the Seal of Solomon (also known as hexagram, Magen David, six-pointed star, Star of David.) The Seal of Solomon, the hexagram, was not considered a Jewish symbol before the Rothschilds began using it.[9] Throughout the Middle Ages the Seal of Solomon had been used by Arab Magicians, Cabalist Magicians, Druid witches and Satanists. One of the few ancient uses of the symbol was on the floor of a 1,200 year old Moslem Mosque found where Tel Aviv is today.[10] In the twelve century an Ashkenazic Jew Menahem ben Duji, who thought he was the Messiah, used the magical symbol.[11] Because the Rothschilds were Satanists they adopted this powerful magic symbol in 1822 for their coat- of-arms. The name they adopted for their family actually comes from the fact that in the 17th century Mayer Amschel Bauer began hanging out a red hexagram in front of their house to identify it. Mayer Amschel then decided to take the name red-schield (Rothschild in German) after the red Seal of Solomon that they used. Alice Bailey in A Treatise On White Magic, p. 412, claims that the Hierarchy has a special group which she calls "the financial group" ,,controlling all that can be converted into energy, and constituting a dictatorship over all modes of intercourse, commerce and exchange." According the Luciferian Alice Bailey, the "financial group" is the latest group directed by the Hierarchy. In 1836 Zevi Hirsch Kalischer approached Rothschild and proposed Rothschild buy all of Erez Israel. It took many years for the Rothschilds to finally create Israel. The Rothschilds have been a primary force behind the creation of Israel, and so it is appropriate that the nation carries their magical Seal of Solomon as the state logo. The Ultra-orthodox Jews in Israel will not serve in the Israeli army because they know that Almighty God was not behind the creation of modern Israel, but rather the rich ungodly apostate Jews. They refuse to serve the ungodly. They are more wiser than men like Jerry Falwell who run around proclaiming Israel is God's nation. Men like Falwell are the type that this Author finds reference to repeatedly in Jewish documents that speak of their power within the Fundamentalists. God is ultimately in charge, he has allowed Hitler to come to power, Stalin to come to power, and the Rothschilds to come to power. In the same sense that God rules over and blessed Stalin's Russia, he rules over America and Israel. To twist scriptures about God seating the rulers and then to apply them to bless one Satanic secular communist nation and not another is inconsistent and not correctly using the Word of Truth. Some people object that the conspiracy of Power is labelled Jewish rather than Satanic by certain concerned citizens. This objection is valid-- however, will these objectors then take the obvious next step and admit the nation of Israel which the Rothschild's created is Satanic and not Jewish? But then who knows precisely why people do what they do? If you ask someone why he does something, he will give you one answer today, another tomorrow, and another the next day. Does he do what he does for a real reason, or a single motive? Perhaps to label the Power as only Satanic or only Jewish or only Masonic is to neglect the personal human dimension. This personal human dimension is godless. Being godless it fills that void, by pretending its men are gods. This brings us right back to the Gnostic religions and

Satan. Most Jewish people do not concern themselves with learning the occultic significance to their treasured Magen David (Star of David). King David did not have anything to do with the hexagram, although his son Solomon did when he began worshipping Ashtoreth (star, also known as Astarte, Chiun, Kaiwan, Remphan, and Saturn).[12] Solomon built altars to Star (Astarte, aka Ashtoreth). The god Saturn is associated with the Star but both Saturn and Astarte also been identified with a number of other names. Saturn is an important key to understanding the long heritage this conspiracy has back to antiquity. The city of Rome was originally known as Saturnia or City of Saturn. The Roman Catholic church retains much of the Saturn worship in its ritual. Saturn also relates to Lucifer.'[13] In various occult dictionaries Saturn is associated with evil. Saturn was important to the religion of Mithra, and also the Druids.

CO-MASTERS OF THE WORLD --connections to JWs, Mormons, and Judaism

It has been said all roads lead to Rome. For this book, it could be said all paths of investigation lead to the Rothschilds. Charles T. Russell, in a 1891 letter to Baron (Lord) Rothschild, mailed from Palestine, outlined possible courses of action that could be taken to establish the Jews in Palestine. Russell's letters praised the Rothschild's money which established Jewish colonies in Palestine. Russell writes Rothschild, „What is needed here, therefore, next to water and cleanliness, is a good government which will protect the poor from the ravenous and the wealthy. Banking institutions on sound bases, and doing business honorably, are also greatly needed " Russell continues, "May the God of Jacob direct you, my dear Sir, and all interested with you in the deliverance and prosperity of Israel, and blessed will they be who, to any extent, yield themselves as his servants in fulfilling his will as predicted."(14) When the Mormon Church needed financing in the late 19th century, they went to Kuhn, Loeb Co.[15] To explain the Rothschild's control of Kuhn, Loeb Co. here is some background information. The method that the House of Rothschild used to gain influence, was the same that Royalty had used for centuries, marriage. The Rothschild children, girls and boys, have had their spouses chosen on the basis of alliances that would benefit the House of Rothschild, but since consolidating world power they generally have married cousins these last two centuries.'[16] Jacob Schiff grew up in the house that the Rothschild's had at 148 Judengasse, Frankfurt. Jacob Schiff came to the United States with Rothschild capital and took over control of a small jewish banking concern founded by two Cincinnati dry goods merchants Abraham Kuhn and Solomon Loeb. He even married Soloman's daughter. In 1885, Loeb retired, and Schiff ran the Kuhn, Loeb Co. for the Rothschilds until 1920 when he died.[17] During Russell's and Brigham Young's day, Lord Rothschild was considered the "lay leader of world Jewry."[18] Edmund Rothschild was President of the Jewish Colonization Assoc,[19] which was a major Zionist group. Amselm Rothschild indicated that his grandfather Amschel Mayer Rothschild had insisted in Clause 15 of his will to his children, "may they and their descendants remain constantly true to their ancestral Jewish faith."(20) However, the will has been secret and there is no way of knowing what it says. The Rothschilds have not remained true to the Orthodox faith. If this was actually what Clause 15 said then something is amiss. The Jewish world has showered the Rothschilds with praises, "The Rothschilds govern a Christian world. Not a cabinet moves without their advice. They stretch their hand, with equal ease, from Petersburg to Vienna, from Vienna to Paris, from Paris to London, from London to Washington. Baron Rothschild, the head of the house, is the true king of Judah, the prince of the captivity, the Messiah so long looked for by this extraordinary people... .The lion of the tribe of Judah, Baron Rothschild, possesses more real force than David--more wisdom than Solomon." (21) The Prieure de Sion-the Elders of Sion[22] also relates to the Rothschilds who are reported to serve on a jewish council of Elders of Sion.[23] The Rothschilds have "helped" the Jewish people the Rothschild's own way. For those who admire stingyness, the Rothschilds will be greatly looked up to. For instance, the extent of James Rothschild's charity in France to poor Jews was 5 francs (the equivalent of $1). Their dynasty has destroyed honest Jews along with Christians. Today, few dare criticize the Rothschilds.

CO-MASTERS OF THE WORLD--connections to secret societies

The Rothschilds had played a major role in the Bavarian Illuminati, (25) and it is known that a least one of the sons of Amsel was a member. As the reader remembers, Amsel placed his sons in the major European capitals, where they each set up the principal banking houses. By their own secret intelligence service and their own news network they could outmanouver any European government. (26) The large amounts of voluminous correspondence by Rothschild couriers attracted attention, (27) but no one ever stopped their personal intelligence and mail services. After the Bavarian illuminati were exposed, the central occult power over the European secret societies shifted to Carbonarism a.k.a. the Alta Vendita,(28) led by another powerful Rothschild, Karl Rothschild,[29] son of Amschel. In 1818, Karl participated in a secret document that was sent out to the head-quarters of Masonry from the Alta Vendita. The Masons were quite distressed when a copy of this was lost, and offered rewards to anyone who could return the lost copy. It was originally written in Italian. Its title translates „Permanent Instructions, or Practical Code of Rules; Guide for the Heads of the Highest Grades of Masonry."(30) The Masonic reference book 10,000 Famous Freemasons, Vol. 4, p.74, indicates two other sons of Amschel were Masons, James Meyer Rothschild, and his brother Nathan Meyer Rothschild. James Rothschild in Paris was a 33 degree Scottish Rite Mason, and his brother Nathan in London was a member of the Lodge of Emulation. And Jewish Freemason Katz indicates Solomon Meir Rothschild, a third member of the five brothers, was initiated into Freemasonry on June 14, 1809.(31) The Rothschilds became powerful within Freemasonry. We find the Saint-Simonians, the occult religious millenialist forerunners of communism, praising Baron de Rothschild in their magazine Le Globe, "There is no one today who better represents the triumph of equality and work in the nineteenth century than M. le Baron de Rothschild... .Was this Jew born a millionaire? No, he was born poor, and if only you knew what genius, patience, and hard work were required to construct that European edifice called the House of Rothschild, you would admire rather than insult it." Lionel de Rothschild (the de was added by the French Rothschilds) was involved with the first communist Internationale. The Mason Mazzini who helped start communism praised Rothschild, "Rothschild could be King of France if he so desired."[32] Adoiphe Cremieux, was a french Jewish Mason (see chap. 1.4 for his credentials). The Rothschilds gave at least £ i ,000 to Cremieux to go to Damascus with Salomon Munk, and Sir Moses Montefiore to win the release of Jews imprisoned there, and to convince the Turkish Sultan to declare the charges of ritual murder false.[33] According to the three Jewish authors of Dope, Inc. the B’nai B’rith was a spin-off of the Order of Zion and was organized as a „covert intelligence front" for the House of Rothschild. It is highly probable that the B’nai B’rith was used as a Rothschild intelligence cover. The Rothschilds are prominent in the Bilderbergers too. The Rothschilds were closely related to the Council of Foreign Relations (CFR). Although many people today would not view the CFR as a secret society it was originally set up as part of a secret society and it was kept secret for many years, in spite of its awesome power. Carroll Quigley, professor of International Relations at the Jesuit Georgetown University, exposed the Round Table Group with his book Tragedy and Hope.(34) The Rothschilds supported Rhodes to form De Beers. (35) Later, Rhodes made seven wills which established a secret society modelled after the Jesuits and Masons to help bring in a One-World- Government centered upon Britain, and the Rhodes Scholarships.[36] The inner group was established in Mar. 1891 and consisted of Rhodes, Stead, Lord Esher (Brett), and 33* Mason Alfred Milner.(33bb) A secondary circle of "potential members of the Circle of Initiates" consisted of the Jew Lord Balfour, Sir Harry Johnson, Lord Rothschild, Lord Grey and others. Initially, Lord Rothschild was part of the inner group of Rhode’s secret society, but was replaced by his son-in-law Lord Rosebury who wasn’t as conspicuous.[37] The Fabian Socialists dominated the staff at Oxford when the Rhodes Scholars began arriving. These scholars then received indoctrination and preparation to become part of an international socialist New World Order.(38) The Round Table Group developed from the inner executive circle of Rhode’s secret society. The outer circle was established after the start of the 20th century. The Round Table Group was extended after W.W. I by organizing a front organization the Royal Institute of International Affairs. The Council of Foreign Relations was the American part of this front. The inner circle continues to direct the outer circle and its two front organizations RIIA and CFR. The CER in turn set up a number of fronts including the Institute of Pacific Relations (IPR).

CO-MASTERS OF THE WORLD--management of the Catholic and Czars’ wealth and the capture of the Orthodox Church's wealth.

Early in the 19th century the Pope came to the Rothschilds to borrow money. The Rothschilds were very friendly with the Pope, causing one journalist to sarcasticly say "Rothschild has kissed the hand of the Pope...Order has at last been re-established.'[39] The Rothschilds in fact over time were entrusted with the bulk of the Vatican's wealth. The Jewish Ency., Vol. 2, p.497 states, „It is a somewhat curious sequel to the attempt to set up a Catholic competitor to the Rothschilds that at the present time (1905) the latter are the guardians of the papal treasure." Researcher Eustice Mullins writes that the Rothschilds took over all the financial operations of the worldwide Catholic Church in 1823.(40) Today the large banking and financial business of the Catholic Church is an extensive system interlocked with the Rothschilds and the rest of the International Banking system. The great wealth of the Russian Czars was entrusted to the Rothschilds, $35 million with the Rothschild's Bank of England, and $80 million in the Rothschild's Paris bank. The Rothschilds financed the Russian Revolution which confiscated vast portions of the Orthodox Church's wealth. They have been able to prevent (due to their power) the legitimate heirs of the Czars fortune to withdraw a penny of the millions deposited in a variety of their banks. The Mountbattans, who are related to the Rothschilds, led the court battles to prevent the claimants from withdrawing any of the fortune. In other words, the money they invested in the Russian Revolution, was not only paid back directly by the Bolshevists in millions of dollar of gold, but by grabbing the hugh deposits of the Czars' wealth, the Rothschilds gained what is now worth over $50 Billions.(41)

CO-MASTERS OF THE WORLD--CONTROL OVER SATANISM & WITCHCRAFT

Chapter 2.11 gives the names of a Witchcraft Council of 13 which is under Rothschild control and in turn issue orders to various groups. One of the purest form of Satanism can be traced to the Jewish Sabbatain sect and its Frankist spinoff. The leaders of this up to the Rothschilds were:

Sabbatai Zevi (1626-1676)

Nathan of Gaza (16??-?)

Jacob Frank (1726-1791)

Rothschilds

Three connections between Satanism, evil, and money.

Money naturally attracts itself to evil. For instance, if a woman prostitutes herself she may receive a great sum of money, but who will pay her for keeping her virginity or her dignity? If you are a hit man a large amount of money is yours if you kill your target, who will pay you if you would miss your target?

Second, evil men believe in where there is a will there is a way, and they are willing to sell their souls for their God money. They will employ evil to gain money.

While most people are quite aware of these last two connections, a third may likely have escaped their attention. Thirdly, the principle group of men who cranked up International Banking were Satanists from the beginning. These Satanists now are the ones who run the Federal Reserve and are responsible for the creation of U.S. Federal Reserve notes. Just having total control over the supply of U.S. paper money almost gives them leverage over the world's finances, without mentioning they control the world bank. It is no accident then, that once they established world financial control, they would do all in their power to divide and conquer and destroy both the Christian and the Moslem faith in God. These powerful Bankers relate to faith in God as Cain related to his brother Abel. That they may be related to the Jewish people, does not mean they have the Jewish people's best interest at heart. Initially Sabbetai Zevi was rejected by many Jews. His sect gained momentum in second half of the seventeenth century in southeastern Poland.(42) In 1759-60, 500 Jewish Sabbateans „converted" to Christianity.[43] In 1715, 109 of the 415 Jewish families in Frankfurt were engaged in moneylending. The rest were merchants of various kinds. The concepts that Satanism holds to were a natural shoe in to justify for many of these Jewish bankers the type of behavior they were engaged in." (44)

LONG-STORY SHORT

Many divisions and battles between religious elements in the world have been encouraged and supported by the Power's wealth. Unfortunately, many have been fooled into thinking that being devout and faithful to God is the source of religious fighting. In some areas of the world, Moslems, Christians, and others have gotten along fine for centuries. Religious tensions do spring to some degree from within the religions themselves, but the fuel to keep those fires burning and to light up conflicts often come from the Power's wealth. An obvious example is the Iran-Iraq war.

CO-MASTERS OF THE WORLD--CONTROL OVER W.W. I TREATY

When Germany fell, not only did Rothschild agents draft the treaty, prepare the idea of the League of Nations, but Max Rothschild was one of 11 men who took control over Bavaria. Max Rothschild was a Freemason in Lodge No. 11, Munich, Germany.

CO-MASTERS OF THE WORLD--connections to MI5, Rockefellers, J.P. Morgan, CFR, et. al.

Victor Rothschild, who worked for J.P. Morgan & Co., and was an important part of MI5 (British Intelligence). Victor Rothschild was also a communist and member of the Apostles Club at Cambridge.[45] Lord Rothschild was one of the original members of Rhode's Round Table group which developed into the CFR. It was the Rothschilds who had financed Cecil Rhodes, beginning in Africa. The Rothschilds' have several agents which their money got started and who still serve them well, the Morgans and the Rockefellers. The Rockefellers were Marrano Jews. The original Rockefeller made his money selling narcotics, (they weren't illegal then). After acquiring a little capital he branched out in oil. But it was the Rothschild capital that made the Rockefeller's so powerful. "They also financed the activities of Edward Harriman (railroads) and Andrew Carnegie Steel."(46)

CO-MASTERS OF THE WORLD--Power within Christendom

The Rothschilds also wielded much influence and power not only in Secret Societies, but also in Christendom's churches. The Salvation Army under the suggestion of the Rothschilds adopted the Red Shield (Roth-red Schild-shield) for their logo. One history of the Rothschilds remarks, "The Rothschilds had rapidly propelled themselves into a position of immense financial power and political influence. They were an independent force in the life of Europe, accountable to no one and, to a large extent, reliant on no one. Popular lampoons depicted them as the real rulers of Christendom..."(47) Some of the Rothschilds have been involved in the campaign to loosen public morals. The first executive Secretary of the National Student Forum was John Rothschild. This National Student Forum changed its name like articles of clothing. Speaking about clothing, one of the aims of this Socialist group was to promote public nudity, and free love. This organization had the following constituent groups Radcliffe Liberal Club, Union Theological Seminary Contemporary Club, Yale Liberal Club"(48) to name just a few. A further development of this was the Youth Peace Federation which consisted of the League of Youth of Community Church, Methodist Epworth League, NY District, Young Judea, and Young People's Fellowship of St. Phillip's Parish[49] to name a few. American religious men have ties to the Rothschilds especially through their various agents.

Harry Emerson Fosdick, who was Pastor of Rockefeller's church was also among the Presidents of the Rockefeller Foundation. John Foster Dulles, CFR, was chairman of the board of the Rockefeller Foundation, and married a Rockefeller, Janet Pomeroy Avery. Remember John Foster Dulles was an important Federal Council of Churches of Christ official. (See chap. 2.9) Every road leads back to the Rothschilds. There are more items than what have been mentioned above linking the Rothschilds to the various tenticles. Each of the various tenticles that conspiracy theorists have put forth,--the Jews, the Masons, the Intelligence Communities, the International Bankers, the Prieure de Sion, the Catholics, the Trilateral commission, the CFR, the New Age, the Cults-- each ties back to the Rothschild's power.

EXTENT OF ROTHSCHILD POWER

According to one source "it was estimated that they controlled half the wealth of the world."(50) The Federal Reserve Bank of New York was controlled by five banks which owned 53% of its stock. These five banks were controlled by Nathan M. Rothschild & Sons of London. Control over the U.S. Fed is basically control over the world's money. That fact alone shows how immense the Rothschild Power is. If one examines who has been appointed to head the Fed, and to run it, the connections of the "Federal" Reserve System to the Rothschilds can further be seen. Another private enterprise using the name Federal that the Rothschilds also direct is Federal Express. Any one else might be taken to court for making their businesses sound like their are government, not the Rothschilds. It is appropriate for them to appropriate the name of Federal, because by way of MI6 via the CIA they instruct the U.S. government. Senators are bought and paid off by their system, as investigators of the BCCI are discovering. The Rothschilds have been intimately involved in witchcraft and the Illuminati since its early known history. The Kaiser of Germany seems to refer to them when he said, "the magic powers of money as wielded by the Lord of Lucre are powers of Black Magic at its blackest."[51]

If only half of the wealth is controlled by the Rothschilds, it indicates that if they are to be part of the world's rulership, they must have allies.

ALLIES

The Rothschilds and Rockefellers are only two of thirteen controlling families of the Illuminati. (52) Two Jewish families that appear to be prominent are the Oppenheims and the Oppenheimers. A. Oppenheim was situated in Cologne. The Oppenheimers were early members of the Bavarian Illuminati. The Bund der Gerechten (League of the Just) was an illuminati front run mainly by Jews who were Satanists. This Bund financed in part by the Rothschilds paid the Satanist and Mason Karl Marx to write the Communist Manefesto. The Jew Gumpel Oppenheim was in the inner circle of the Bund. His relative Heinrich Oppenheim masterminded the communist revolution of 1848 in Germany. The Communist Party's official histories even accept the Bund as the predecessor of Communism.

The Oppenheimers apparently are close to the Rothschilds. J. Robert Oppenheimer of the CFR was exposed as a communist. Harry Oppenheimer, an international banker, is chairman of the Jewish De Beers world-wide diamond monopoly, and chairman of the Anglo-American Corp. Oppenheimers can be found in important financial positions in the U.S. They help run around 10 large foundations, including the Oppenheimer Haas Trust of NY for the care of needy Jewish children.

The Jewish Ency. Vol. 2, p. 496 indicates other Jewish families "adopted the Rothschild plan." These were the Lazards, Sterns, Speyers, and Seligmans. The Rothschild plan was to place family members in the 5 largest European capitals to coordinate their activities. One of Germany's largest magazines is the Stern, and Ernst Stern is second-in-command of the World Bank."(53) The Jewish families that established the Frankfurt Judenloge (this was the Masonic lodge the Rothschilds belonged to in Frankfurt) included the Adlers, Speyers, Reisses, Sichels, Ellisons, Hanaus, Geisenheimers, and Goldschmidts. Isaac Hildesheim, a Jew who changed his name to Justus Hiller is credited as being the founder of this Frankfurt lodge. Michael Hess, principal of the Reformed Jewish school Philanthropin was an important figure in the lodge too, as was Dr. Ludwig Baruch (later Borne) who joined in 1808. Most of these Frankfurt Jewish Freemasons engaged in commerce.(54) Those Freemasons from 1817-1842 were the leaders of the Frankfurt Jewish community.[55] A gentile Mason in Frankfurt Johann Christian Ehrmann began warning the German people that the Frankfurt Jewish Masons wanted a world republic based on humanism. In 1816 he came out with a warning pamphlet Das Judenthum in der M[aurere]y (The Jews in Masonry). A powerful ally of the world's jewry can be seen beginning with men like Oliver Cromwell, who was considered a Mason.

Cromwell was financed by Jews, and helped the Jews gain power in England. Cromwell was willing to go along with the Jews, because he became convinced of British Israelism. Since the core of the conspiracy of power is Jewish, the attitude of those allied with it hinges on their attitude toward the Jewish people.

The religious idea that the British people are descended from the tribes of Israel doesn’t automatically place people into the camp of the conspiracy. Some of the British-Israelites realize that the so called Jewish people in general have no claim over the promises of God. For that reason, they realize that it is not the Christian duty to bow and scrape at their every move. When Christians can be arrested in Israel and abused, and Christians will not even stand up for their own kind, we can see how much hold the idea of the "Chosen Race" theory has over Christendom. Some of the British Israelites such as the Mormons, the old New England wealthy families such as make up the Order, some Masons and New Agers, and the non-Jewish members of the Priuere de Sion are collaborating with the One-World-Power. The anglican church which is run by the Freemasons is strongly British Israelistic.

SORTING OUT THE VARIOUS IDENTITY GROUPS

In contrast, a hodge-podge of groups which are opposed to the conspiracy like some Neo-Nazi groups, and various Churches unrelated with them are also believers in British Israelism. These various groups are sometimes all lumped together as the "Identity" movement, which is misleading because of their vast differences. It is important to diferentiate between those groups that are trying to approach things from a Christian perspective and place themselves under the authority of God, and those who are setting themselves up under the New Order’s authority, or under their own authority.

CO-MASTERS OF THE WORLD- The Media

Eustice Mullins has published his research in his book Who Owns the TV Networks showing that the Rothschilds have control of all three U.S. Networks, plus other aspects of the recording and mass media industry. It can be added that they control Reuters too. From other sources it appears CNN, which began as an independent challenge to the Jewish Network monopoly, ran into repeated trickery, and ended up part of the system. Money from B.C.C.I., (B.C.C.I. has been one of the New World Orders financial systems for doing its dirty business such as controlling Congressmen, and is involved with INSLA, the Iran-Contra Scandal, Centrust, and other recent scandals) which has tainted so many aspects of public power in the U.S. has also been behind CNN. Perhaps nothing dominates the life of some Americans as does the television. Americans sit themselves before the television set and simply absorb what it projects to them. On a day to day basis the biggest way the Rothschilds touch the lives of Americans are the three major networks which are under Rothschild direction. To illustrate this we will examine who run the networks. This list is not current, and no attempt was to provide that. The length of writing a book insures that some material will be dated anyway.

THE ROTHSCHILD’S HISTORY BY A JEWISH WRITER RELATED TO THE ROTHSCHILDS

Jewish writer Anka Muhlstcin wrote a book Baron James The Rise of the French Rothschilds. I prefer paraphrase and make short quotes from her book, because I am trying to document for the reader the mindset and history of thc Rothschilds. Anka Muhlstein has nothing against the Rothschilds, so it will be easier for the reader to accept what shc says about them than from me. I can’t require the reader to read her book, but I can try to summarize some of the appropriate thoughts. Other books also relate many of the things Anka does, but again if I write a footnoted article, it will not carry the weight as my paraphrase will. The reader is recommended to read the book first hand if he has the time and is interested in the details of James’ life. The Jews in the 18th century were restricted to living in Ghettos. Mayer Amschel Rothschild lived in the Frankfurt ghetto. (p.22) The Jews were repressed by outsiders. (p.23) They lived in geographically isolated and self-contained communities (p. 24). The Jewish communities in Europe used a secret relay system between all the Ghettoes. Hebrew characters were one effective code. (p.24) Because of the persecution and repression, the Jewish communities were very tight- knit and highly organized. (p.23) They were deeply hostile to the Christian people. Christians had restricted their own people from money-lending with interest, so lending money on interest had become a Jewish enterprise. The German princes of Thurn and Taxis in the 16th century initiated a postal service. Mayer Amschel loaned them money. (p.21) "Certainly they [the Rothschilds] discovered the latitude that the Thurn and Taxis allowed themselves in unsealing letters, possibly divulging their contents, and according to their own interests, delaying or accelerating delivery. "(p.22) When it profited Mayer Amschel, he would hire Christians, but in general his business and banking were conducted by his close knit family. For instance Mayer Amschel hired a young Christian woman to write his letters for him. (p. 25) Mayer Amschel Rothschild and his family were wholeheartedly Jewish. (p.27) Mayer Amschel Rothschild picked his sons' wifes for the business gains the wives would bring the family. The oldest son was not happy with this (actually he was bitter because he was denied marriage to the woman he loved), but he complied with his father's choice. (p.26) Amschel's daughters all married bankers--in Worms, Sichel, and Beyfus. (p.26) Mayer had ten children and they were all employed in the family business. (p.25) The Jews were taught from childhood up, that the Christians were to blame for all their woes, and that the Christians were to be feared and detested. (p.24) Mayer Amschel had secret, underground passages. (p.22) His carriage was honey-combed with secret drawers. (p.27) The Napoleonic War greatly helped the Rothschild business. (p. 27) Rothschild even outsmarted Napoleon--because the Rothschilds had such good connections. (p.38) The Rothschilds smuggled during the English blocade of Napoleon's Europe, and made millions. (p.33) "The Rothschilds changed course constantly during this period, always manuevering to avoid any kind of political commitment. "(p.34) One of the things Mayer Amschel set up, was to disperse his 5 sons to the major capitals of Europe. Anka attributes the respectibility of Jewish money lending to the help it gave merchants and entrepreneurs. [See chap. 3.2 -this Author's view is that merchants had been borrowing for centuries prior to interest taking becoming acceptable by society in the 19th century. It was greatly in part due to who owned and controlled the major newspapers in the 19th century--Jews and Masons--that led the public to change.] "The obligation to reimburse a loan and to pay interest became less onerous to men whose affairs had flourished as a result of the borrowed money. The Jewish lender ceased to be a bloodsucker; often, indeed, he became an associate of the borrower." (p.31) [The Bible says a borrower is a slave to the lender, hardly an association to be desired.] The business of financing Monarchs was lucrative. The Rothschilds had developed several traits in the ghetto that made their family hard to stop. "The great gift the Frankfurt ghetto bestowed upon him [James Rothschild] was adaptibility, a quality matched by the driving force of his ambition, his prodigious energy, tremendous powers of concentration, and determination to get even [with Christians]. James set out to make his place in the world." (p.40) The five Rothschild brothers, each in the five major European capitals set up their own private courier system which was faster than the regular mail. (p.47) The Rothschilds had news whether political or economic faster than anyone else including the monarchs. "Thus the Rothschilds had news before anyone else, including ministers [govt.]; they also understood how to make use of it." (p.47) [Somewhat akin to how money could be made off of knowing the future.] The Rothschilds nomal correspondence to each other was in code.(p.46) Their world was one of finance, politics and secrecy. In the anti-Napoleonic time period, the Rothschilds increased their wealth ten-fold. (p.47) "...James. He enjoyed, moreover, a rock-solid strength and stability, built up by his family, that family simultaneously closed tight like a fist, united by mutual confidence and an invisible wall of secrecy, yet wide open to the outside world. Such was the cohesion of the Rothschilds that the removal of one or more of them left no gap in their common defenses."

The Rothschilds carried out espionage with their own intelligence service, and other questionable subversive activities but none of these could be tracked. "Whenever Mayer Amschel and his sons were on the verge of being caught out, some highly placed person stepped in and stopped the investigation." (p.36)

The made their money doing technically illegal activity. The original large sum of money made was to take the Elector of Hesse's large sum and instead of investing it into government bonds as directed--to put it to use at investments of higher returns, and giving the elector the return from the government bonds. Anka writes, "The Elector was never the wiser, but even if he had been, he could hardly have complained of disobedience." (p.34) In summary, the Mafia-like closeness of the Rothschild family, along with their tactic to situate themselves in all the major capitals, along with their own quick secret personal news/intelligence/mail service gave them the contacts and the power to manipulate all kinds of business opportunities.

1. Lord Rothschild. The Shadow of a Great Man. London: 1982, p.6.

2. Wilson, Derek. Rothschild The Wealth and Power of a Dynasty. NY: Charles Schribner’s Sons, p. 101. Source of quote given in the book.

3. Armstrong, George. Rothschild Money Trust. CPA reprint of 1940 ed., pp.66-88. Also in this vein read Mullins, Eustice. The World Order. pp. 31-33 and other sources too.

4. Darms, Anton. The Delusion of British-Israelism. N.Y.: Loizeaux Brothers, pp. 186-187.

5. Darms, op. cit., plus there are numerous other accounts of how Israel was started with British help, and one has to simply see who did it and their Rothschild connections.

6. As quoted in Sampson, Anthony. The Money Lenders. Middlesex, Eng.: Penguin Books, Ltd., 1985, p.37.

7. Encyclopaedia Judaica, p. 696.

8. Mohr, Gordon. The Hidden Power Behind Freemasonry. Burnsville, MN: Weisman Pub., 1990, p. 154.

8a. Various high-ranking Satanists that the power of God has pulled out of Satanism have said they were eyewitnesses to Satan appearing at the Rothschilds. What they witnessed when Satan showed up at the Rothschilds was that Satan appeared as an extremely beautiful man, except his hoofs would be cloven. He would wear a black tuxedo to gamble and play cards (winnings were sexual victims) and a white tuxedo when coming only to socialize.

9. An excellently researched book by a Christian journalist of Jewish ancestry is The Six-Pointed Star by O.J. Graham. New Puritan Library, 1984. This book covers the satanic/magic history of the Seal of Solomon before its modern Jewish use. The book shows how the symbol was not a Jewish symbol until recent times.

10. Goldberg, M. Hirsch. The Jewish Connection. NY: Stein & Day, 1976, p.197.

11. Koestler, Arthur. The Thirteenth Tribe. NY: Random House, 1976, pp. 136-137.

12. The Satanic star is refered to in Acts 7:43, in Amos 5:25-26. "The shield carried by King David.. .was traditionally believed to be engraved either with the name of God or the Menorah, or Psalm 67." Siegel, Richard and Carl Rheins. "Metamophoses of a Tree; 10 Jewish Symbols and Their Meanings," Jewish 44 Almanac. New York: Bantam Books, 1980, p. 515.

13. Hall, Manly P., 33°. Masonic, Hermetic, Qabbalistic & Rosicrucian Symbolical Philosophy. l7ed., L.A.,CA: The Philosophical Research Soc., 1971, p. CXLV.

14. WT Dec. 1891, pp.170-71 See also WTR p.1342. C.T. Russell’s letter was sent by him from Palestine in Aug., 1891 to Rothschild.

15. Taylor, Samuel W. Rocky Mountain Empire The Later-Day Saints Today. NY: Macmillan Pub. Co., Inc., 1978, p.66.

16. Read Wilson, Derek. Rothschild, The Wealth and Power of a Dynasty. NY: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1988.

17. Mullins, The World Order, p. 11.

18. Wilson, op. cit., pp. 338-339.

19. ibid., p.338

20. The Reign of the House of Rothschild, p. 405.

21. Muhlstein, Anka. Baron James, The Rise of the French Rothschilds. NY: The Vendome Press, (n.d.-c.1980) .

22. Baigent, Leigh, Lincoln. Holy Blood, Holy Grail. pp. 190-199.

23. Various references. For instance, Armstrong, The Rothschild Trust, p. 196, "That is the present objective of Jeroboam Rothschild and his secret Elders of Zion."

24. Wilson, Derek. op. cit., p. 45.

25. William Still writes, "In 1782, the headquarters of illuminized Freemasonry was moved to Frankfurt, the stronghold of German finance, and controlled by the Rothschilds." Still, The New World Order, p. 82.

26. Muhlstein, Anka. Baron James, The Rise of the French Rothschilds. 'p.47. She describes how their private courier system was faster than the regular mail.

27. Corti, Count Egon Caesar. (trans. from German by B.& B. Lunn). The Rise Of The House Of Rothschild. Boston: Western Is., 1972, p.278cf. pp. 386-389.

28. Miller, Edith Star. Occult Theocracy. chap on Carbonarism, pp. 427-438 is a start in learning its importance.

29. Mullins, op. cit., p.2.

30. di Gargano, Michael. Irish and English Freemasons and their Foreign Brothers, 1878, p. 62.

31. Bruell, Geschichte, p. 24 as quoted by Katz, Jacob. Jews and Freemasons in Europe 1723- 1939. (trans. by L. Oschry) Cambridge, Mass.: Harvard

University Press, 1970, pp.61, 248

32. Mullins, op. cit. p. 3.

33. Muhlstein, op. cit. p. 125

34. Carroll Quigley's book was very enlightening on the New World Order except that it leaves out the Catholic Church and the Jesuits' participation, at a time that their participation was increasing dramatically. In other words, Quigley's book must be taken with a grain of salt, it would be a mistake to believe it to be infallible or unbiased.

35. Le Sueur, Gorden (Rhode's confidential secretary). Cecil Rhodes The Man and His Work.

London: John Murray, 1913, p. 10.

36. Aydelotte, Frank (co-fndr CFR and Amer. Sec. to Rhodes Trustees). American Rhodes Scholarships. "The model for this proposed secret society was the Society of Jesus, though he mentions also the Masons."

37. Allen, Gary. Nixon’s Palace Guard. Boston: Western Islands, 1971, p. 9. cf. Quigley. Tragedy and Hope.

38. Martin, Rose. Fabian Freeway. Boston: Western Islands, 1966.

39. Wilson, Derek. Rothschild The Wealth and Power of a Dynasty, p. 101. The source of the quote is given in the book.

40. Mullins, Eustice. The Curse of Canaan, p.125.

41. Mullins, Eustice. The World Order, p.5.

42. Friesel, Evyatar. Atlas of Modern Jewish History. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1990.

43. ibid.

44. Mohr, op. cit. p. 118.

45. Read Mullins, The World Order.

46. Still, op. cit. p. 136 quoting Griffin, op. cit. p. 37. See also Mullins, op. cit., p. 11.

47. Wilson, op. cit., p. 92.

48. pamphlet published by The American Defense Society Inc., 154 Nassau St., NY.

49. Peace Militant. NY: The New History Foundation.

50. Griffin, Des. Descent into Slavery. S. Pasadena, CA: Emissary Publications, 1980, p. 52.

51. England Under the Heel of the Jew. London, 1918, pp 60-2.

52. Confidential interview with those who were recently in the illuminati hierarchy.

53. Smith, Gary. Land of the ZOG. Portland, OR: VuePoint, 1989, p.58.

54. Katz, Jacob. Jews and Freemasons in Europe 1723-1939. Cambridge, Mass. Harvard University Press, 1970, p.60.

55. ibid, p.92

WHERE DOES NAZISM FIT INTO SATAN’S PLANS?

Let me briefly recap what some of the plan was . And while you read these plans that I am relaying to you from my intensive research on high level Satanism, see if you don’t see the irony in the Satanic plans . How very ironic it is that in all the twisted thinking and reasoning of the leading Satanists for why they must do things, it is surprising they do not catch on that this plan of Satan’s is going to achieve God’s revealed plan . How pride does blind us! (For the sake of brevity I will dispense with my normal method of documenting everything; I suggest that my book Be Wise As Serpents be read for documentation, and further questions be written to me . Otherwise this article would be way to bulky for the newsletter.) The "brilliant" plan given in detail to the Illuminati was to create a thesis and its opposite called the antithesis . The process would repeat itself until the desired outcome . Out of the battle between the two would emerge the synthesis . Out of the battle of chaos would come a new order reminding us of the Masonic slogan "Order out of Chaos." If the thesis were like a hammer and the antithesis like an anvil, what was caught in between would be broken or reshaped . Three world wars would enable the plan to work. The hammer would be constructed and then given a homeland, a secure base in Russia . It is what we call communism. The first anvil would be created out of economic chaos in Germany . It would be called National Socialism . That anvil would be destroyed in a Second World War, but another anvil would replace it called democracy. The first two world wars accomplished exactly what they were intended to accomplish. Out of the first world war came:

(1) A secure Satanic dictatorship in Russia, a secure base to carry out further world subversion.

(2) The Satanic family of Rothschilds gained partial control over Palestine, preparing the way for Satan to rule from Jerusalem some day

(3) Weapons of mass destruction and terror.

(4) The League of Nations.

Out of the second world war came

(1) The enlargement of their secure base in Russia into a world power.

(2) complete control over Palestine by the Rothschilds.

(3) airpower, including long range missiles, jets, secret flying saucers, and powerful submarines, all items that individuals could not produce . Those in control of production would therefore control all air and sea ways of the earth.

(4) The cold war and an era of terror to convince the people of the need for Satan’s One World Order.

(5) the United Nations .

Out of the third world war would emerge a new religious system . The third world war would have to be tailored to be like the Bible’s Armaggeddon, Satan told his highest slaves, because- if it resembled Armaggeddon, then the people would believe he was the Messiah when he came after its end . It would have to be terrible, so that he could step in and bring miraculous order out of a world beaten into chaos by the worst war in history. Again it would be "Order out of chaos", as the Masonic documents repeatedly proclaim. The third world war would come during a period of seven years of tribulation starting in 1992 and running until 1999. Just like the Second World War emerged out of the great world-wide depression. Satan told his followers this 1992-99 tribulation would repeat on a larger scale the plagues of Egypt, for he would wreck revenge for what was done to Egypt by God (and Moses) by giving back in a bigger way to the world what happened to ancient Egypt . To a demonic controlled mind it makes sense to wreck such revenge, especially when the end result is held out to be the salvation of the world by the Lightbearer, the Morning Star, also known as Lucifer. For most of us, the idea of such pain and destruction seems like demonic madness- - which it is .

At the core of the One-World-System is Satanism. It hides itself behind fronts such as Jewish Finance, Socialism, Aryanism, British Israelism, Zionism, and Freemasonry which are tools to get the broad masses to serve the Plan. The "conspiracy" to create the One-World-System has enlisted the help of almost everyone. That is because most of the religious systems at the top are controlled by Satanists who know what they are doing and direct the people’s religious efforts. (Read the research in Be Wise As Serpents for the documentation on this.) Nazism was a Pagan Gnostic religious system whose High Priest Hitler knew what he was doing in relation to Satan’s mission. (More about this further down.) The Jewish people (1 use the term in its broadest sense) are being used. Actually the allegiance of the Satanic hierarchy is not in the least concerned with Judaism, although it appears that at first the plans are to create a religious leader that will have the apparent credentials of the Jewish messiah. How sad, because the actions of the Rothschilds and other Satanic "jewish" bloodlines during W.W. II show that their first allegiance is not to the Old Testament and not to even Orthodox Judaism, but is purely to Satan. At some point in the future the Orthodox Jews and the Conservative Jews will find that this Messiah, who is already alive waiting to play his role, will only give them temporary relief. They are being taken for a ride and then they will be dumped by the New World Order's dictatorship.

Constance Cumbey correctly notices that the New Age movement resembles Nazism exactly to a T . For those students wanting to get a detail by detail parallel go to pages 114 to 120 in The Hidden Dangers Of The Rainbow.

In 1952, James Larratt Battersby in England published The Holy Book of Adolf Hitler for the German World Church in Europe . Except for some of his pro-German ideas, obviously thrown in to make the book enlist the intended audience's favor, the book is an exact description of what would happen in the next 50 years to bring in the New World Order. The reason some of the prognostications of pro-German ideas are not valid is that the Satanic hierarchy is not really concerned for the German people either, except to harness their help in their plans . Batterby's Holy Book of Adolf Hitler was given to him "in the spirit" . According to Battersby the book was written in order that "May God open the eyes of the Gentiles to Truth, and carry his Holy Gospel to the ends of the earth" . The book is an excellent synopsis of what Satan had planned in 1952 and has carried out since to a large degree. The Rothschilds (and other top Satanic families in a lesser way) financed a jewish Mason and devote Satanist named Karl Marx to write his Das Kapital . The Satanists controlling key Masonic groups (along with some other groups they controlled) got Communism started. The original idea came from Satan, and was given at a Feast of the Beast in meticulous detail to those highest in the Satanic Hierarchy . Albert Pike, and Guiseppe Mazzini were two men in strategic positions of control that were let in on the plans.

After creating International Socialism (communism) a temporary antithesis was created called National Socialism (nazism). The process to create National Socialism was to turn again to the Masonic Lodges and other esoteric secret Societies to get it done. Therefore, the secret esoteric gnostic and satanic societies along with the Illuminati helped create "the Thule Gesellshaft" (in English the Thule Society) . Adolf Hitler was some type of member of this occult Thule Society, along with many other men who later began leading Nazi leaders such as Rudolf Hess. The Thule Society used the Masonic/Hindu symbol the Swastika, which the Nazi party then also used as its symbol. In other words the grandmother of the Nazi Party was the Masonic Lodges in Germany. The Vril was another secret occult group that many of the Nazi leadership belonged to. Hitler also was a member of the Theosophical Society, which has strong Satanic and Masonic ties. Both Bailey and Hitler studied from Tibetians, Hindus, occultists, and black magicians. They also both studied the Gnostics, and every major Pagan/Occult religious system. A example of how valued the Swastika was for Freemasons before Hitler ruined its image, is a quote from Joseph Fort Newton, a Baptist Minister and high ranking Mason, "The second of these volumes also contains an essay. . . by Thomas Carr, with a list of Lodges, and a study of their history, customs, and emblems- -especially the Swastika . Speculative Masons are now said to be joining.., seeking more light on what are called the Lost Symbols of Masonry." After promoting and using the Swastika for years the Freemasons quit using it after Hitler. The Holy Book of Hitler provides the answer as to why the Theosophical Society worked so hard to destroy the British Empire. It had always at first mystified me why the Theosophical Society Presidents who connected to the Satanic hierarchy would want to ruin the British Empire. The reason it seemed strange is that the mother country of Satanism and Witchcraft is Great Britian. The center of secret political power is geographically in England. And further, one of the largest and most powerful secret fronts for Satanism is Britism-Israelism. The reason why the British Empire was destroyed was that Satan had already determined even before 1870 that the steps to world government would include setting up around 9 or 10 Continental blocs . The Union of Europe into one country (or bloc) could not be accomplished while Great Britian had most of her focus on her empire. Great Britian as long as she had an empire would never want to join up with Europe. In fact all the European nations would have to be convinced to give up their colonies, that is why the World Power got everyone they could get to help fight Portugal in Angola in recent history, everyone including the large masonic-controlled Christian denominations who donated millions of dollars to the NCC and WCC which moneys were then passed on to the guerillas to buy weapons and ammo.

The Theosophical Society is mostly to blame for India’s independence from Britian . First, the Theosophical Society managed to change British policy so that the British became unpopular. Then Theosophical President Besant, who published the largest English paper strongly criticized British rule in her newspapers and eventually was arrested . Gandhi and other Indian leaders were involved in Besant being made the President of the Indian Congress Party. And that political party still rules Indian politics . The Theosophist Mahatma Gandhi, foilowing in the steps of Theosophical President Annie Besant, led the Indian people against British rule.

But the final blow to the British Empire was done by another Theosophist--Adolf Hitler. It is common knowledge that the powerful blows of Axis attacks in W.W. II struck the death blow to the British Empire, or so we are told. The truth is that the elite wanted the Empire to die, and pulled every string to convince the British public and indigenous natives that the Empire was too weak after W . W . II to save the empire and prevent her colonies from independence. It is hard for people to grasp that the Illuminati controlled Russia, Great Britian, Germany and France during World War II, but they did. Churchill, Roosevelt, and Stalin were all Masons . DeGaulle of France was closely linked with several esoteric groups, and the Priere de Sion and Grand Orient Masons helped him to power in the 50s . Churchill was a Zionist and pro-Fabian Socialist . Stalin was a closet satanist . Roosevelt was a Zionist, pro-communist and socialist . Both Churchill and Roosevelt came from important elite blood lines . Apparently, Stalin was somewhat independent, but basically did what was expected of him. As the previous paragraph indicates the people of the world weren’t ready for a world government, and most not even a united Europe. W.W. II was carried out to adjust people’s thinking toward wanting European unity . Satan already ruled the world through his secret chain of command, but he wanted to openly rule the world’s hearts and to be publicly hailed as ruler and savior.

Who was Hitler? Hitler’s father was the offspring of the Rothschild’s secret breeding program which impregnated his grandmother. It appears from the details available, Hitler was groomed for his role, without realizing his heritage at first . It appears that Hitler learned of his ,,jewish bloodline" after taking over Germany. Hitler had romances with many beautiful women. Although Hitler was very strict with his New Age religious practices such as being a vegitarian, that did not include being celebrate . He did have sex contrary to the deceptions of the Establishment. Hitler’s seed (the Rothschild’s powerful generational occult bloodline) was hidden in an Askenazim bloodline, at least part of which has come to the U.S. In fact, Hitler’s generational occult power was passed on too . This was most likely done by thrusting a knife into his heart, and the person who received his occult power then gulped his last breath with the kiss of death to receive his occult power . What I am telling you is that Hitler’s offspring are alive and well and that his terrifying Anti-Christ spirit was passed to someone and is not dead. Let me remind you of some of Hitler’s own prophecies about himself and his goals. "At the time of supreme peril I must die a martyr’s death for the people. But after my death will come something really great, an overwhelming revelation to the world of my mission." The world was to witness his divinity . Further, "My spirit will rise from the grave, and the world will see that I was right." Von Ribbentrop on Apr. 30, 1945 was told this same thing, "You will see that my spirit will rise from the grave . " National Socialism "is even more than a religion; it is the will to make mankind anew." "All creative energy will pass to the new man." Hitler claimed to be the real fulfillment of Marx’s socialism. "I am not only the conqueror, but also the executor of Marxism, of that part of it which is essential and justified, stripped of its Jewish-Talmudic dogma." In essense, he is saying whatever veneer of Jewishness that Marx’s satanic plan had, he disagreed with it and would destroy that veneer . These type of statements reveal that the essence of the message of various elite men like Hitler is the same Satanic plan if stripped of their variously decorated veneers .

Hitler is viewed as the Messiah, the Holy Spirit, the martyred Savior of his people by his followers today. The blasphemous Holy Book of Adolf Hitler states, "All hail to God’s Christ and Chosen, Adolf Hitler...Lord of Lords, and King of Kings, the Eternal Adolf Hitler." Such blasphemy . Father forgive them for they know not what they do. Hitler’s Demonic Spirit and Hitler’s descendents both live on today. (By the way, some Rothschild descendents such as Hitler’s have come to Christ as their

Lord and Savior!) Will this powerful occult branch of the Rothschild's be used again by the New World Order? Whatever the case it is clear that Hitler's Anti-Christ spirit will get plenty of demonic help. The demonic forces that have manifested themselves in National Socialism and International Socialism (aka Communism) demonized much of Europe. So much so that Europe officially portrays itself as a beast with Venus on it on a stamp commemorating the Second election of the European Parliament, and also as the same forces that tried to build the Tower of Babel on an official poster. Not only are the same demons that led communist leaders and nazi leaders operating in Europe's leaders, but there are armies of demons trampling over anything of moral value in Europe . It can be said without a doubt that the „man" who rules the One-World-Government will derive his power from a demonic supernatural source . According to Revelations, God is going to have an angel open up a key to the abyss and teeming hordes of demonic spirits shall be decending upon the earth . My conclusion is that Satan has so many Anti-Christs available that Hitler's personal occult power is not necessary for the New World Order's success .

I rarely like to comment on the end times from Scriptures because I feel like most people are thoroughly confused about the clear teachings that the Scriptures give. 2 Thes. 2:3 and other Scriptures make it clear that the Christians must witness a great apostasy and the Anti-Christ being revealed before Christ returns . We can live everyday as if it may be our last, but Scriptures are clear that the Apostles did not live each day as if Jesus could return that day. They knew that certain things had to happen first . The church has been going through tribulations since Pentecost . The church will go through the "great tribulation" according to the Word of God . We will if we are that faithful remnant we will be spared from the Wrath of God, but we will not be spared from the tribulation of Satan which shall include martyrdom . The New Age leaders are fully ready to cooperate with this "cleansing" from the earth of us bothersome disciples of Truth. In this respect, their thinking will resemble the Nazi's rationalizations that people must pay their Karmic debt, and shall benefit from being killed . How truth can be stood on its head! The Plans are already drawn up how to use rail lines to move large groups of civilians to labor camps . When we compare Nazi Germany with today's New World Order plans, Nazi Germany can be seen to be the basic model of what Satan's timetable includes for us these next few years .

To illustrate that the Pagan religion of Nazism is an example to the Satanists and New Agers, let us ponder Anton LaVey's (head of a visible Church of Satan) trip to the sacred initiation castle of Hitler's Black Order the SS . The SS apparently brought the Holy Grail to Germany, and hid it before the end of the war . On May 2, 1945, a select group of SS officers, those initiated into the higher mysteries of the Nazi Pagan religion, hid the Grail in the Schleigeiss glacier at the foot of 3,000 meter high Hochfeiler mountain . Seekers in the area have been found decaptitated, and mutilated . The area is still guarded by the Black Order in anticipation of the day that the Grail can be revealed to the world . It has been speculated 1995 might be the date, but this is pure speculation . The important thing for us is to begin to experience the Kingdom of God right now . Let us prepare ourselves for Almighty God's New World Order as the Satanists launch their counterfeit New World Order.

THE ROTHSCHILDS

A CONTINUATION OF ARTICLES ON THE TOP 13 ILLUMINATI FAMILIES

INTRODUCTION by Fritz Springmeier

The Rothschilds are one of the most well-known of the thirteen families. David J. Smith of Portland was asked to prepare an article on the Rothschilds for this newsletter. His article follows this introduction. Satan's selective breeding program has been continuing down through the ages hidden from the eyes of the public. One of the most powerful Rothschild bloodline families in America are the Springs. The Springs were originally the Springsteins when they came to America in the mid-I 1700s and settled in NY and NJ. They later changed their name from Springstein to Springs to hide their identity. Leroy Springs was hired by LC. Payseur. Now most American's have to ask, who is

L.C. Payseur? One of the most secret and most powerful families in North America has been the Payseurs. They have been so powerful that they could hide their wealth and power, and use other Satanic families as proxies. The Payseurs are part of the i 3th top Illuminati family. The first Payseur to come to America was the former crown prince of France Daniel Payseur (1785-1860). He came over about 1805 to the U.S. and married Susannah Kiser c. 1814. They had two boys Adam and Jonas (1819-1 884). Jonas married Harrietta Smith and they had Lewis Cass Payseur (1850-1939). It was this Lewis Cass Payseur who hired the Rothschild bloodline of the Springs to run a number of the Payseur's companies. The Payseurs were one of the original big railroad families along with Issac Croom and William H. Beatty. Isaac Croom's wife was a sister of William Beatty's, so the reader can see how all these elite bloodlines intertwine. Remember that LC. Payseur hired Leroy Springs to operate a host of his companies. Leroy Springs father was A.A. Springs and A.A. Springs was the secret father of Abraham Lincoln.

In 1808, Nancy Hanks, of the lineage of the McAdden Scottish family visited some of her famIly at Lincolnton, N.C. Nancy Hawks visited the Springs family and that is when A.A. Springs impregnated her, and her child when born was named Abraham Lincoln. Abraham Lincoln's Rothschild blood was kept very secret, but he did grow up to be a famous lawyer, a secret leader of the Rosicrucians, and President of the United States. It is believed from the evidence that the establishment conspiracy concocted the person of Thomas Lincoln out of thin air. The actual early history of Abraham Lincoln is shrouded in myth and mystery, and as one encyclopedia puts it, "We know little about the family of his mother, Nancy Hanks Lincoln." While a lawyer, Abraham Lincoln had a sexual liaison with Elizabeth who was the illegitimate daughter of German King Leopold, who is also of elite blood lineage. Abraham Lincoln and Elizabeth had two twin daughters Ella and Emily in 1856 who were adopted out. Lincoln in fact had a fairly large number of illegitimate children. Now A. A. Springs, who was both the biological father of Leroy Springs and Abraham Lincoln left an enormous amount of land in what is now Huntsville, AL to his son Abraham Lincoln. Huntsville, AL by the way has become a hotbed of NWO activity. Some of the mind-control research the intelligence community has been conducting has been done at Huntsville. The Rothschilds even named one of their boys after Abraham Lincoln, his name was Lincoln Rothschild. Although Abraham Lincoln secretly had powerful occult blood, he was a great man in his own right. And just like JFK, he had the strength of personality to refuse to bow to the Illuminati's instructions. Lincoln refused to go the path that his distant European International Banking Rothschild relatives wanted for the United States. The Illuminati goal had been to split the U.S. into two easier to control nations. And just as with JFK, who also came from a top 13 family, a large scale conspiracy Involving many government officials including the Secretary of Defense was put into place to assassinate Lincoln. There are numerous indications that show that the Rothschilds were in part behind the assassination of Lincoln. Some of the men who worked for the Payseurs of the 13th top family were Andrew Carnegie, J.P. Morgan, the Vanderbilts, Giftord Pinnchot, and John D Rockefeller. These men were selected to run Payseur companies because they belonged to the satanic elite. The Leroy Springs family got Payseur family companies in the early 1920s. It was Leroy that managed to get the Rothschild's involved with the Federal Reserve. Two companies that have come out of the Payseur's old Lancaster Manufacturing Co. ins Weyerhaeuser and Crown-Zellerbach. I have long know these were companies tied to the elite, but it wasn't until i found the secret Payseur family at the very top of these companies that I really understood the full story. The Payseurs have gone to extreme lengths to corrupt government documents, such as courthouse records. They have hidden the births of many of their descendants, and have covered over with extreme secrecy most of their monetary holdings.

Remember the Beatty family was an early railroad family with business ties to the Payseur family. Bartholomew F. Moore, who was the private attorney for years to President Abraham Lincoln, was a blood relative of the Beatty family. It was Bart Fingers Moore who co-authored the 14th amendment for the conspiracy. The Beatty family continually resurfaces when doing research on the conspiracy. Shirley MacLaine, the famous New Age leader/author is from the Beatty family. She credits her start to Edgar Cayce by the way, who in turn was interested in Blavatsky. Blavatsky was a student of the Mason Anton Mesmer, who introduced the world to hypnotism. Hypnotism had been secretly practiced by the Mystery Religions for thousands of years before Mesmer taught Blavatsky and others about it. Charles Beatty Alexander, who is an Illuminati „ prince"/Pilgrim Society member is an example of a Beatty in recent times who was within the elite. Quantrill, who was a famous Confederate colonel and guerilla leader, whose band of raiders evolved into the Jessie James gang was married into the Springs (Rothschild) family

The recent lala Madelyn Payseur Gatling Fulghum (1876-1972) was the late head of the Payseur family. The documentation on the above families is extensive, but much of the evidence that has been photocopied out of the few documents left intact have been destroyed since the documents were photocopied. The amount of tampering with official documents is incredible, and further Illustrates the enormous power the Rothschilds and the Payseurs (the 13th family--the Holy Blood line) have. The researchers who wrote Holy Blood, Holy Grail got a taste of the power of the 13th blood line to manipulate documents held by libraries and governments in Europe. The same type of thing has been happening in the United States. The researcher into the Satanic elite has a hard row to hoe because the Satanic families have tried to cover their tracks through history. They have also tried very hard to cover up what their financial assets are. Those Rothschilds who have carried on the Rothschild name have had a higher visibility. It is this group of Rothschilds which have gained the public’s attention, even though they too are very secretive.

The origins of the Masonic and Rosicrucian movements lie with the medieval alchemists. Manly P. Hall, Freemasonry’s greatest philosopher writes, „During the Middle Ages, alchemy was not only a philosophy and a science but also a religion. Those who rebelled against the religious limitations of their day concealed their philosophic teachings under the allegory of gold-making. In this way they preserved their personal liberty and were ridiculed rather than persecuted. Alchemy is a threefold art, its mystery well symbolized by a triangle." (The Secret Teachings of All Ages, pg CLIV-ul) -- Manly P Hall also states in his book on magic entitled Magic, "... [the] pentagram. This was known to medieval alchemy as the sign of the cloven hoof .... (Hall.. Magic, Los Angeles, CA: Philosophical Research Soc., pg. 46) QuicksIlver (which was one of the things the early Astor family traded in) was one of the primary items employed in the aichemical trarismutations. The oxide produced using quicksilver was considered magical and mystically identified with the god Osiris. As the reader may have already figured out, alchemy practiced Hermetic magic from ancient Egypt. Alchemy was really a front for the mystery religion of Satanic witchcraft. The leading alchemist was a german Richard Bauer who was alive sometime in the 14 or 15 hundreds. Richard Bauer is said to have been the only alchemist who was successful in transforming lead to gold. Whether that report is meant in an allegorical way, or some other way I do not know What I am trying to communicate is that the Bauer family was a leading alchemical family which secretly practiced Hermetic magic during the late Middle Ages. David’s article on the Rothschilds is meant to be an extension of what I have already put out on the Rothschilds. for instance my chapter 3.3 in the Be Wise As Serpents book. Chapter 3.3 is entirely devoted to the Rothschilds. I chose them to write about in the book, because the family is the most renown of the Satanic families and the easiest to expose to people just becoming acquainted with what is going on. The other family which has a chapter devoted to it is the Russell family, which is described in chapter 1. 6. The Russell family has yet to be covered in this series, but was covered in the Be Wise As Serpents book because of their importance to the Watchtower Bible & Tract Society. I am aware of intense secret meetings that have been going on in Frankfurt and Moscow between World Bank officials. These secret meetings have been going on now for two months which gives some of the scope of their importance. Undoubtedly the Rothschilds are playing a role in these secret meetings, even while I write this. There has been a great deal of misinformation put out that the Rothschilds and the Rockefellers are fighting for control of the world. It is true that they are in intense competition in some areas. It has also been true that they have been in intense cooperation in many areas. One of the difficulties for people to sort out what is going on, is that they don’t know about the Satanic spiritual dimension of the Rothschilds and the Rockefellers. For instance, to make an analogy, if I am a minister and one of my brothers-in-Christ is my upline on a multi-level marketing distributorship, then he is my business head, but I could be the spiritual leadership that he looks up to. The point is that essentially all researchers trying to expose the NWO are drawing conclusions about occult power on the basis of business relationships, and it doesn’t always work. Sometimes the business boss may be in a secret satanic leadership position over someone else, but it may also be that both men are on equal footing when it comes to occuft power and status within the Illuminati. So far I have seen only one book advertised (and I haven't read it) which claims to expose the conflict between the Rothschilds and the Rockefellers as a sham. If It really does show this, then the book has contributed greatly toward helping people tear down their isunderstandings about the Illuminati power structure.

Part I

THE HOUSE OF ROTHSCHILD

If one looked on the backstage of history, he would find the House of Rothschild. They have indebted Kings, manipulated kingdoms, created wars and molded the very shape of the international world. Among the hierarchy of the Illuminati they are revered as a powerful satanic bloodline. They are "living legends."

Said one biographer: "In America a boy wants to become President. In Europe he would rather be a Rothschild.... To be 'a Rothschild' is to be a modern Croesus, a twentieth-century Midas." They are a dynasty of enduring power; a "magic" bloodline In Satan's Empire. We will probably never know exactly when occultism was introduced to the Rothschilds. Several of their ancestors have been rabbis, so the occultism probably came in the form of Jewish Cabalism, Sabbatism, or Frankism. The House of Rothschild practices gnostic-satanism (the Rothschilds would probably not call themselves satanists, but by our standards they are, considering the sacrificial and spiritual worship involved). The truth is sometimes hard to tell. The stories the family weave are hard to distinguish from the truth. Myths are one of their best weapons, and a researcher must be wary. The family began in Frankfort, Germany (the city where paper money was popularized). The oldest known Rothschild went by the name of Uri Feibesch who lived in the early 16th century. His descendants lived in the House of Red Shield. His great, great, great, great Grandson was Moses Bauer, who lived in the early 18th century. The family was mostly made-up of Jewish retail traders, and lived in the Judengasse, or Jew's Alley in Frankfort. Jew's Alley was the product of the anti-semitic bent in Europe, and did not have very good living conditions.

Most Ashkenazim Jews of that time did not use sir-names, instead they preferred the Chinese custom of using a symbol as the family identity. These symbols were sometimes used on signs outside Jewish houses as an address. Some Jews had taken on sir-names, to fit in, but the use of symbols was more popular. The early Rothschilds chose the sir-name Bauer (meaning farmer in German. Why would a family of retail traders call themselves Bauer? Perhaps to remain un-noticed). The Bauer line continues today, but in the 1700's one man re-named his branch of the family after its symbol and address - the Red Shield or the Seal of Solomon.

Mayer Amschel Bauer was a well-off coin trader in Frankfort. In front of his house hung a sign with the family's symbol, which was a red hexagram. The hexagram (also known as the Seal of Solomon, the Magden David, or the Star of David) is very occultic. It is used today as the symbol of Israel, but It is not „Jewish." In his excellent book THE SIX-POINTED STAR, O.J. Graham explains that the hexagram was used in the ancient mystery religions. It was the symbol of Moloch, Ashtoreth, and others. In fact, the hexagram was used to represent Saturn, which earlier newsletters have discussed. The six-pointed star is considered the equivalent of the Oriental Yin-and-Yang symbol, which is the Luciferian concept of balancing good and evil. The symbol appears to have been used by King Solomon when he apostasized, and was thereafter called the Seal of Solomon. Later on, Jewish Cabalism (or Occultism - different name, same game) picked it up as a magic symbol. Through the promotion of the Cabalists and the Zionists it has become the symbol of Jewish identity, although the occult circles know better. The Bauer's use of a hexagram as their family sign points to their involvement in Jewish Cabalism. In fact, the six-pointed star was so significant to them that Mayer Amschel Bauer decided to adopt it as his new name - Mayer Amschel Rothschild (Rot-schildt = Red Shield). I believe this was done to identify his family with occultism and the likes of Saturn or

Ashtoreth (whom the Astors are named after). Mayer was sent to be a rabbi when he was 10, in 1753. A year and a half later his parents died. Mayer was brilliant and was encouraged by relatives to continue his studies but coin trading was his love. He left the school and when 13 was sent to Hanover to be an apprentice at the Illuminati Oppenheimer bank. He worked there for 7 years, learning the ins and out of money. The big question is why he left the Oppenheimer bank. It was a good situation, both financially and socially (Hanover was less antagonistic towards the Jews than Frankfort). Why leave this security and head back home to an uncertain future? Because the future wasn't all that uncertain. While in Hanover Mayer made the acquaintance of General von Estorff, a numismatist who was impressed by Mayer's knowledge of the subject. In 1763 General von Estorff left Hanover and joined the Court of Prince William IX of Hesse-Hanau, whose territory included Frankfort. Mayer knew that through his connections he would be able to get some business with the Prince. It appears Mayer's stay at the Oppenheimer bank was used to establish himself in Illuminati circles and to find a way to get close to the Illuminati royalty. General von Estorff was his key.

Prince William of Hesse-Hanau was tied into the Illuminati. He was the son of Landgrave Frederick or Hesse-Cassel, of the royal family of Hesse. Prince William was a Freemason, and his younger brother Karl, was according to JEWS AND FREEMASONS IN EUROPE, 1723-1939, 'accepted as the head of all German Freemasons.' Members of the Hesse dynasty have been described as the leaders of the Strict Observance (in 1782 a Masonic Congress in Wilhelmsbad, a city in the Hesse province, dropped the name 'Strict Observance' and changed it to "Beneficent Knights of the Holy City"). The Hesse dynasty is totally connected to the Illuminati. Prince William was the grandson of King George II of England. The Hesse-Cassel's were one of the richest royal houses in Europe. Their income came mainly from the loaning-out of Hessian soldiers to foreign countries. (The elite loves to makes profit off of "peacekeeping" troops, which is exactly what the Hessians were called. This "peacekeeping" always adds up to imperialism. The Hessian troops were used by England in the American Revolution, in fact the colonial armies fought more Hessian soldiers than English. The House of Hesse-Cassel made a lot of money off the American Revolution.) Another example of the Hesse-

Cassel's ties to the Illuminati is the enigmatic figure St. Germain, who is hailed as a New Age Messiah-figure. Many researchers believe that St. Germain was the son of Francis II of Transylvania. Francis II's second wife was Charlotte Amalie of the House of Hesse, he married her in 1694. St. Germain was either her son, or the prior wife's, this point is debated. His name was Leopold-George and they staged his death in 1700 to save him from the deadly collapse of the Transylvanian dynasty. Prince Karl of Hesse, Masonic leader of Germany, wrote that St. Germain had been sent down to Italy to be raised by the Medici family. Later on St. Germain appeared out of nowhere to work with the elite. There were questions as to his identity and Napoleon Ill had a dossier gathered on him, but the house holding the dossier was mysteriously destroyed in a fire. St. Germain was an alchemist and he claimed to have the alchemical Elixir of Life, the secret formula of immortality (which the Rosicrucians also claimed to have). He was a guest of William and Karl of Hesse in 1774, and in 1779 returned to Karl to spend the last years of his known life. Helena Blavatsky, cofounder of the Theosophical Society claimed that St. Germain was one of the Hidden Masters of Tibet who secretly controlled the world's destiny. In 1930 Guy Ballard claimed that he met St. GermaIn on Mount Shasta. This supposed meeting led to the creation of the 'I AM' movement.

The Hesse Dynasty has lasted clear up to the 20th century. During WWII they were on Hitler's side. Prince Philip of Hesse was a messenger between Hitler and Mussolini. He was still alive in 1973 and was reported to be the richest prince in Europe. The House of Hesse is still a powerful force in Germany. In 1763 Mayer left Hanover to build his fortune in Frankfort. His main objective was to become a financial agent of Prince William of Hesse-Hanau. Prince William was an intelligent man who loved to make money. (His passions went beyond money. His wife did not please him so he became an adulterer and almost every woman he slept with became pregnant. He fathered between 70 to 21 illegitimate children. His main mistress, Frau von Lindenthal, bore him 8 children and ran his household.) William loved to loan money at high interest rates. He was the perfect man to aid Mayer's quest for riches. Mayer began bribing Prince William's servants to become informants. At that time he was an antique dealer, trader, coin collector, and exchanger (the country was divided and as a result the separate currencies made money exchanging very profitable) . General von Estorff convinced Prince William of the value of a rare coin collection and then recommended Rothschild. Thus began the relationship between the Prince and the Rothschilds. Mayer would sell rare coins, precious stones, and antiques to the Prince at ridiculously low prices. Then, in 1769, after a significant amount of sales, he wrote the Prince asking for and receiving the designation 'Crown Agent to the Prince of Hesse-Hanau" (a great commercial advertiser. Tities and honors were important in that day, they opened doors). Mayer then married Gutle Schnapper, daughter of a respected merchant, Wolf Salomon Schnapper, in 1770. He then set up a money exchange bureau. His two brothers worked in this bureau with him untIl 1785 when Kalmann died and Moses quite. Some researchers contend that Adam Wieshaupt of the Bavarian Illuminati was financially supported by the Rothschilds. The Bavarian Illuminati was founded in 1776, and the Rothschilds were not necessarily a financial power at that time. I may be wrong, but I do not believe Mayer was in a financial position to support Wieshaupt. It is possible, though, that when, in 1782, the headquarters of the Illuminati moved to Frankfort, that it began to be controlled by the Rothschilds.

In 1785 Prince William's father, Landgrave Frederick of Hesse-Cassel, died and William became the new Landgrave. This made him the richest prince in Germany and possibly Europe. He left the small province of Hesse-Hanau to become ruler in Hesse-Cassel. Around this time Wolf Schnapper, Mayer's father-in-law, introduced Rothschild to Carl Buderus who was the Prince's chief financial advisor. Through either coercion, friendship, or occultic ties Mayer was able to convince Buderus to become an agent for him. This was a big mover for Mayer. The Landgrave William of Hesse-Cassel was to be the 'steppingstone" to power.

Until then Mayer had only done meager business with William, but by 1789 Buderus managed to get some royal bills for Rothschild to discount. This wasn't much, but it was a start. Carl received a cut of the profits when he did William's business through Rothschild. This was the beginning of a long financial relationship that would benefit both parties.

Mayer Amschel Bauer-Rothschild was a shrewd man, but his quick rise in social status shows the power of money, for Mayer was not cultured. He could never master the German language and so he and his family spoke a strange Yiddish German mixture (which benefitted their secret network). He enjoyed

discussing the medieval world and coin collecting. When it came to business he was ruthless and naturally adept. His occult side was well hidden. He was most likely a Cabalistic Jew. Although it is not known if he was a Freemason, he did accompany the Landgrave on several trips to Masonic lodges (after the two had become better friends). He had 5 daughters and 5 sons, plus several children that died young. He moved from his old house, the „Haus zur Hinterpfann", to a new one, Green Shield, when he started making more money. Green Shield was a dual residency and the other half was occupied by the Schiff family who were to play an important role later on as agents of the Rothschilds. Every passage of Green Shield held hidden shelves and cupboards, and the backyard countinghouse's walls had a number of secret shelves and a secret underground room which was connected to a neighbor's house for a quick getaway if necessary (the house was built to protect Jews from the dangerous pogroms that would sweep Germany, it was a great place to secretly practice their gnostic-satanic rituals, if they were yet involved in that form of worship). His five sons have been called the Mayer brothers because they all shared that middle name: Amschel Mayer, Salomon Mayer, Nathan Mayer, Kalmann (Carl) Mayer, and Jacob (James) Mayer. Each son entered the family business at the age of 12. The humorous side of studying an elite IllumInati family is the

biographer's insistence on owing the family's ability to profit from circumstances as "luck.' They never seem to put two and two together. Many of these circumstances happened by design. They always say things like '... the infant opportunity seemed to be the child of coincidence." They never attribute a family's wealth to well planned extortion, cheating, or thievery, which is exactly how families like the Rothschilds attain their riches. The French Revolution is an example.

The Illuminati fueled French Revolution got under way in the 1790's, and Prince William began to get nervous. He was afraid the revolutionary riots would reach Germany and he would lose his gold. So he invested his money in a magnificent new palace called Wilhelmshoe, which was built from 1791 to 1798. Although the French Revolution frightened William it was a delight for Mayer. The war helped his sales. When the French ended up pitted against the Holy Roman Empire, the prices of imported goods skyrocketed, and importing goods from England was a Rothschild specialty. In fact Mayer's English trade helped him secure a deal with the Landgrave (through Buderus, of course) in which he became a middleman in England's payments for the hire of Hessian soldiers. '...every ill wind of the 1790's seemed to blow good to the Rothschilds." The winds were so good that by the end of the decade they were established as a rich and independent family. In 1800 they were the 11th richest family in Frankfort's Jew Alley (not counting the wealth in proxy). Around the turn of the century Mayer decIded to send his most clever son, Nathan to England to establish another Rothschild House. The family tells a silly story about Nathan leaving for England to best an annoying English cotton trader, but I believe that Nathan was sent by Mayer with a specific purpose - to establish power with the Rothschild network in that country. Nathan arrived in England with no knowledge of the language but a great amount of money. He would soon be the most powerful man in Europe. Many more profitable events occurred at the turn of the century. Many of these events revolve around the Rothschild infiltration of the Thurn and Taxis postal system. The House of Thurn and Taxis was of the Black Nobility. In 1516 Holy Roman Emperor Maximilion I (of the Merovinglan bloodline and husband of a member of the Black Nobility) commissioned the House to create a mounted postal service between Vienna and Brussels. The service eventually included all of Central Europe. The head office of the system was in Frankfort, which was rather convenient for Mayer who proceeded to do business with them. His relationship with Thurn and Taxis became so close that the service began to inform him of any pertinent Information found among the letters (that they had a habit of covertly reading). This mail fraud system was also used by the Emperor Francis to keep abreast of his enemies. While Mayer was receiving stolen news from Thurn and Taxis he was busy setting up his own postal service so that no-one could secretly discover his dealings. This system was eventually so effective that the Rothschilds became the best and fastest informed individuals in the world. The system was so good that many prominent men began to send their letters through the Rothschilds, who of course, always snuck a peak at the contents. The business with Thurn and Taxis helped Mayer receive the title ,,Imperial Crown Agent" in 1800. This title served as a passport that allowed him to travel throughout the Holy Roman Empire. It also provided the right to bear arms, and it freed him from having to pay the taxes and obligations upon the Jews of that period. Mayer began to get even more titles, including one from the German Order of St. John. His sons Amschel and Salomon were also busy getting various titles. In 1801 they became crown agents of the Landgrave William of Hesse-Cassel. All these titles were wonderful, but most important was the Landgrave's. The Landgrave was the richest Prince in Europe and the Rothschilds were determined to take advantage of his wealth.

The relationship with the Landgrave improved greatly in 1803. A Danish King, and cousin of William, asked the Prince for loans but William declined because he did not want anyone to know how rich he had become. Rothschild learned about it and through Buderus, proposed lending the money anonymously. William thought the idea was splendid. The loan was sent through Mayer and a Hamburg Jew. The interests were paid to Rothschild who, after taking commission, forwarded the money to the Landgrave. The event was a great triumph, after 36 years, Mayer had finally done a significant job for the Prince. Six more Landgrave loans to Denmark were negotiated by Rothschild. Many more loans ensued (although they required some teeth pulling on Buderus' part), Including loans to the Order of St. John. This negotiating of the Landgrave's loans greatly increased the reputation of the House of Rothschild. By this time Napoleon had come to power in France. This caused a distress in Europe, but brought great profits to the House of Rothschild. As one biographer put it "Napoleon seemed bent on Improving the Rothschild's lot in life." Even though Napoleon was not purposely doing It, the conditions he created were of great benefit. Napoleon tried to get the Landgrave as his ally, but Prince William squirmed and politely as possible refused. William's goal was to wait untIl the winning side in the Napoleonic conflict was clear so that he could join without any risks. The pressure of the situation gave the Landgrave a very bad temper. By this time half the crown heads of Europe were in his debt. Napoleon grew tired of the Landgrave’s games. His troops Invaded Germany and the province of Hesse to "remove the House of Hesse-Cassel from rulership and to strike It out of the list of powers." Wllhelmshoe became frantic as William attempted to hide his riches. After the scramble to conceal his wealth he fled the province and went to live in exile in Denmark. The French immediately found most of his treasures. Buderus and Mayer had to act fast to preserve the wealth of the Landgrave. Some of the valuables had already been sold. They quickly bribed a French General, Lagrange, who turned over 42 trunks to Hessian officials and lied to Napoleon about the Prince’s true wealth. Lagrange’s deceptive act was eventually discovered and he was dismissed, but much of the wealth was preserved. During the frantic moments before Hesse-Cassel’s Invasion, the Landgrave gave Buderus the right to collect the Interest payments due from Holy Roman Emperor Francis. Buderus eventually transferred this right to the Rothschilds. Mayer began doing the Landgrave’s business behind Napoleon’s back. These secret dealings were greatly boosted by the man Napoleon appointed to rule the area -Karl von Dalberg. Dalberg was a friend of Mayer and Buderns and had done business with them (his connection to them may have also been occult). Napoleon made Dalberg Primate of the new Confederation of the Rhine, which included Frankfort. As ruler of the region Dalberg protected the Rothschilds from being exposed as traders of contraband and as agents of the House of Hesse-Cassel. When the French cut off trade with England prices on Imports soared. The Rothschilds smuggled goods in and made large profits, with Dalberg keeping guard. "It was certainly most remarkable," said one biographer. "That the Archbishop and Lord of the Confederation of the Rhine, who ruled over sixteen German princes, and stood so high in Napoleon’s favor, should have shown so much good-will to the Jewish Mayer Amschel Rothschild at Frankfort, who, although now a rich man, had no daim to move in high and influential circles." Despite Dalberg’s protection Mayer kept two sets of books, one inspectable and the other secret. By 1807 Buderus, as proxy for the Landgrave, was almost exclusively using the Rothschilds for Hesse-Cassel business. Mayer himself would visit the Prince in exile, but since he was getting old he soon had to give up these trips and sent his sons on the journeys. The House of Rothschild was collecting the income of the wealthiest prince in Europe less than half a century after Mayer had begun building his fortune! The satanic House of Rothschild’s IllumInati dealings at this time are well exemplified by their involvement with the second Tugenbund League. The first Tugenbund League (or Virtue League) was formed in 1786 as a kind of sex society. The group would meet at Henrietta Herz’s home (her husband was an Illuminati Jew who was the disciple of the powerful occultist Moses Mendelssohn). Many Illuminists attended this "Virtue" League. A number of young Jewish women whose husbands were always away on business would come to the Herz’s house to participate in the immorality (two members were daughters of Moses Mendelssohn). Frequenters of this ‘salon" included revolutionary Freemason Mlrabeau, William von Humbolt, and Frederick von Gentz who was to become an important Rothschild agent. Later on, I will discuss Gentz in further detail. In 1807 the second Tugenbund League was formed. This League pursued ‘moral-scientific" and political aims. The main aim being the deliverance of Germany from French occupation. The League was formed by Baron von Stein who was its principle "protector." Thomas Frost wrote in SECRET SOCIETIES OF THE EUROPEAN REVOLUTION that ‘The Initiations [into the second Tugendbund] multiplied rapidly, and the League soon numbered in its ranks most of the Councillors of State, many officers of the army, and a considerable number of the professors of literature and science.... A central directorate at Berlin, presided over by Stein, had the supreme control of the movement, and exercised, through provincial committees, an authority all the more potent from emanating from an unknown source, and which was obeyed as implicitiy as the decrees of Emperor or King.’ The Landgrave William of Hesse-Cassel held an important position in the second Tugendbund. Buderus was also involved. It appears the Rothschilds were members and they were „go-betweens for the [Landgrave’s] correspondence on this matter, and made payments in favor of the Tugendbund." This put Mayer Rothschild at the head of the propaganda system against Napoleon.

Napoleon tried to suppress Tugundbund but it went underground, concealing itself under the protection of the English Masonic Lodge at Hanover, It as sisted many anti-Napoleon causes physically and financially. Tugendbund was eventually dissolved, but many of its members moved on to other Masonic societies such as the ‘Black Knights,’ ‘The Knights of the Queen of Prussia," and ‘The Concordists." In 1818 the second Tugundbund was revived as the Burschenschaft (Association of Boys or Fellows). The Burschenschaft was a revolutionary group of students who introduced martial exercises into the universities. The Burschenschaft eventually fell apart. After a few years the exiled Landgrave came to totally trust the Rothschilds. ‘...[Prince William] got more and more accustomed to following [Mayer] Rothschild’s advice, and scarcely took any important financial step without consulting him.’ This princely steppingstone was working out perfectly. It was paving the way towards Rothschild financial freedom. Mayer wanted to become a creditor, and his goal was soon achieved. In 1810 the Rothschild’s firm became ‘Mayer Amschel Rothschild and Sons" (Nathan was not a public partner of this firm). That same year Mayer loaned his own money to Denmark and when Dalberg took out a big loan to go to the baptism of Napoleon’s son, the financial security of the Frankfort bank was set in stone.

The House of Rothschild needed a new steppingstone. The old one, the Landgrave, would not be discarded, but they needed a younger, more political man who could be their key to controlling Europe. That man was Prince Clemens Metternich who in 1809 became the Austrian Minister for Foreign Affairs. He became the leading opposer of Napoleon, and the Landgrave moved in his exile to Austria, hoping the powerful up-start would get Hesse back. So the Rothschild network increased its operations in Austria - the land of the Hapsburgs. Around this time Mayer Amschel Bauer-Rothschild got sick. Before his death he wrote a Will that

would dictate the structure of the Rothschilds. Although the exact content’s of Mayer’s Will have been kept secret, one edict is clear. It completely excluded the daughters and their husbands and heirs from the business, and all knowledge of it. The Will totally exalted the importance of the family circle. On Sept. 19, 1812 Mayer died. A bogus legend about his death maintains that his five sons gathered around his deathbed and he split Europe between them. Only Amschel and Carl were in Frankfort when he died. Nathan was in England, and Salomon and James were on the road (the brothers were constantly traveling).

THE "FIVE WIZARDS’

When Mayer died, headship over the family fell on Nathan Rothschild of England. Even though Nathan was not the oldest, the 5 brothers had voted unanimously that he was the most capable to lead them. Nathan was an intelligent, uneducated, self-absorbed jerk. Though he was an impolite, foul-mouthed man (‘...he could swear like a trooper.’) his money got him into the high society of England. His cold view on life and power is seen in his response to an English Major who was being sentimental about the horrible deaths of the large number of soldiers that had died in the war. ‘Well,’ said Rothschild. ‘If they had not all died, Major, you presumably would still be a drummer.’ There is a story that says one of Nathan’s sons asked him how many nations there were in the world and Nathan replied: ‘There are only two you need to bother about. There is the mishpoche [Yiddish for family] and there are the others.’ This story may be false, but the attitude is real.

Nathan first settled in Manchester, England, the center of cloth manufacturing. In 1804 he moved to London. As his wealth and his reputation began to grow he was able to marry Hannah Cohen. The Cohens were a wealthy Jewish family from Amsterdam, and Hannah’s father, Salomon Cohen was a respected merchant in London. Nathan served with him as Warden of the Great Synagogue (the Rothschilds relationship to the Jews will be discussed later on in this article). Hannah’s sister, Judith, married the powerful Jewish Freemason Moses Montefiore (the Montefiore’s were of "ancient" and extremely ‘aristocratic Jewish stock’, probably another Cabalistic family), who was friends with Nathan (Nathan’s sister Henrietta married a Montefiore, so did his second son, Anthony, and his brother, Salomon’s great grandson, Aiphonse married a Sebag-Montefiore in 1911). Nathan’s social life revolved around the Cohens. Nathan was a Freemason. He was a member of London’s Lodge of Emulation. Nathan’s accumulation of wealth was incredible. His money-making exploits were unbelievable. He was smuggling English goods past the French blockade during the Napoleonic conflict, and making great profits. This smuggling required an agent in Paris, so Mayer, through his Dalberg connections, got his son James a passport and James went to live in Paris. A large amount of the Landgrave's money was sent to Nathan in England, on the advice of Buderus, for the purpose of buying stock. But Nathan, as he and Buderus had planned, used the money as capitol for other ventures. When the exiled Landgrave began asking for a proof-of-purchase, Buderus and the Rothschild brothers had to come up with all sorts of excuses to protect Nathan's thievery. Eventually the Landgrave demanded to see receipts, so Nathan quIckly bought some stock (the Landgrave had told him to buy the stocks at 72, but their price when be ended up buying them was 62, Nathan pocketed the savings) and they snuck the receipts through the French blockade to the exiled Prince. The Landgrave was satisfied, he had no idea what had really been done with his money. Nathan began making connections in the British government. Probably his greatest early connection was to the Treasury official John Herries. Herries aided Nathan's rise to power in every way possible. He became an intimate friend or Nathan's and eventually a proxy for Rothschild in the British government. Their dealings were kept secret and the public had no idea as to the enormity of Nathan's power. The most incredible example of

Nathan's devious schemes is a job he would later describe as the best business he had ever done. Through Nathan's connections in the treasury he learned of the plight of the English army in Spain. The Duke of Wellington (soon to become Nathan's friend) had British troops in Spain ready to attack France, only they lacked one thing - hard cash (the army's financiers would not take paper money), but the government was very short on gold at the time. Nathan knew how to profit from this situation. The East India Company was trying to sell gold that, of coarse, the government wanted to buy, but the price was so high that officials decided to wait until it dropped. Nathan stepped in and bought up the gold (using some of the Landgraves money as well as his own). He then proceed to raise the price. When the officials realized the price wouldn't drop they bought the gold and Nathan made a great profit. But the deal didn't stop there. Nathan offered to deliver the gold to Wellington (this was a heavy responsibility because of the French blockade). Hemes went to bat and got Rothschild the job. Nathan's plan was incredible, one biographer said his scheme was 'comparable to burglary in broad daylight.' Nathan's brother, James went to Napoleon's government and told them that Nathan would be importing gold into France and that the British government was upset at the move because it would financially hurt England. Napoleon's government believed his lie and any French police who might have uncovered the plot were bribed. So Nathan was able to ship the gold to Paris with the approval of both the English and French governments. In Paris the gold was exchanged in French banking firms for cash Wellington could use, and then the Rothschild network carried the money into Spain as France allowed Nathan to fund the war against itself. Eventually some French officials grew suspicious, but Napoleon ignored their reports (why?). The plan went smoothly even though the same officials secretly watched James Rothschild and his brother Carl (who was in on the plot). Wellington eventually defeated Napoleon at Waterloo. The Wellington smuggle was one of the greatest scams in history! In order to better understand the Rothschild's involvement in the defeat of Napoleon we must look at the role played by the Rothschild's second steppingstone - Metternich. Metternich was the Austrian Minister of Foreign Affairs and he led the opposition against Napoleon.

Metternich was a fierce enemy of the revolutionary fires that were spreading through Europe. The Rothschild's got to him through a member of the first Tugendbund (the sexual one), Frederick von Gentz. Gentz was Metternich's right-hand man. Metternich was not financially minded and he relied on Gentz's advise concerning economics (Gentz's ability to handie his private finances was terrible, but he had a knack for political economy). John Herries brought Gentz and the Rothschilds together. The family proceeded to bribe the man into their service. Gentz is an interesting character. He was a Freemason so he was probably occultic. His involvement in the first Tugendbund League points to Immorality. Another interesting fact is that I found most of his visits to the Rothschilds occurred on occultic

holidays, such as Winter Solstice. This may be a coincidence, but it is interesting non-the-less. Gentz called the Rothschilds 'a special species plantarum with its own characteristics.' Gentz steadily brought Metternich into the Rothschild's web. By at least 1814 Metternich was an ally of the House of Rothschild. His goal was to protect the power of the old aristocracy. His plan was simply to extinguish revolution, and he began with Napoleon. Austria declared war on France and allied Itself with Russia. England Joined them to form a powerful coalition against Napoleon. The battle of Waterloo in 1815 decided the war. Metternich had led Europe to victory with the help of Nathan's delivery network which funded the overthrow. The victory made Metternich the most powerful man in Europe. Due to his speedy courier system, Nathan knew of the outcome of the Waterloo battle before the news reached any other Englander. A persistent myth is that he made the bulk of his fortune by manipulating the stock exchange with this knowledge. First of all, he did manipulate the market, but he already had a fortune, this only added to It. Second of all, he might not have even made a significant profit (the issue is complicated and debatable. I will not go into it). Two years before his defeat, Napoleon had pulled out of Germany. In 1813 the Landgrave William of Hesse-Cassel returned to his province. Said one biographer: 'Earlier it had been the Rothschilds who had asked for favors, now it was the (Landgrave] and Buderus who tried to maintain a close connection.' In 1818 Buderus died. By 1815 Nathan controlled England's finance. He did a large amount of direct business with the English treasury. John Hemes was allowing deals that would hurt England but fill the pockets of the House of

Rothschild. The following quote by one of Nathan's contemporaries describes his eerie countenance: 'Eyes are usually called windows of the soul. But in Rothschild's case you would conclude that the windows are false ones, or that there was no soul to look out them. There comes not one pencil of light from the interior, neither is there any gleam of that which comes from without reflected in any direction. The whole puts you in mind of an empty skin, and you wonder why it stands upright without at least something in it. By and by another figure comes up to it. It then steps two paces aside, and the most inquisitive glance that you ever saw, and a glance more inquisitive than you would have thought of, is drawn out of the fixed and leaden eyes, as if one were drawing a sword from a scabbard...'

This description is disturbingly similar to either MPD or demonic possession. A Prussian official said that Rothschild had 'an incredible influence upon all financial affairs here in London. It is widely stated ... that he entirely regulates the rate of exchange in the City. His power as a banker is enormous.' 'When Nathan ... (made] a fuss, the Bank of England trembled.' Once he tried to cash a check from his brother Amschel at the Bank, but the Bank refused saying it cashed only its own notes. Nathan's volcano-like temper exploded. The next morning he and nine of his clerks arrived at the Bank and began exchanging bank notes for gold. In one day he had reduced the Bank's gold reserves by a substantial amount. The next day he and his clerks arrived with more bank notes. A Bank executive nervously asked how long he intended to keep this up. Nathan replied something to the effect of 'The Bank of England refused to take by bills, so I will not keep theirs.' A meeting was quickly called and they decided that from then on the Bank of England would be pleased to cash any Rothschild check Nathan's firm was named N.M. Rothschild and Sons. The firm met in the New Court building and for the sake of brevity will be referred to as New Court. New Court was so powerful that it even became a gold broker for the Bank of England (whose price I believe they still fix at will, though I may be wrong). He also founded the Alliance Insurance Company in England. The Illuminati has the Luciferian belief system that one's evil acts must be balanced by one's good acts. This belief system has led to the philanthropy of the truly evil elite (although much of this „charity" money goes to fund their objectives). Nathan hated the common masses but his duty called. 'Almoners, particularly those acting on behalf of the poor Jews of London, reported that they got thousands, even hundreds of thousands, of pounds out of Rothschild, but hardly a word and never a courtesy.' Nathan did not enjoy charity. He was good friends with Thomas Buxton, the anti-slavery leader. The famous musicians Mendelssohn and Rossini taught his daughter to play the harp. When Mayer died in 1812, his oldest son Amschel took over the Frankfort firm. Although Amschel was not the head of the family, he was its spokesman to the aristocracy. He was the one who would apply for the honors and titles for his brothers. He has been described as a crotchety worrier who clung to the past. He was socially odd, yet held great dinners that were the talk of the elite. Religion was a big part of his life, to the point of being called „monkish." Even though he lived on a grand scale Amschel had no joy. Much of this distress came from the fact that he had failed to have any children. After Napoleon exited Germany a German Confederation was set up, of which Amschel became the treasurer. In a sense this made him the first finance minister of the Prussian Empire which was created by the Confederation. Amschel's sorrow over his lack of children led him to pick prominent young men to treat as his sons. One such man was Otto von Bismark, who would later become the Iron Chancellor of Germany. Amschel was the protector of his mother Gutle, who was the Matriarch of the family. No one could receive full admission into the House of Rothschild by marriage unless she approved. Gutie smiled little and had a harsh tongue. One legend has it that a neighbor asked her whether there was to be peace or war. „War?" Gutle replied. "Nonsense. My boys won't let them."

Saloman was the second oldest son of Mayer. Along with the other brothers he was constantly travelling through Europe. What separated him from his brothers was his gift of diplomacy. He was more stately and complimentary than the others. Said one banker of Salomon: "Nobody leaves him without being comforted." in other words he knew how to kiss up. It was this fact that led the brothers to send him to Vienna, Austria to establish a relationship with the painfully aristocratic Hapsburgs and with vain Metternich. Although the Rothschilds had attempted to enter a close business relationship with the Hapsburgs and Austria, the Austrian royalty kept putting them off. Then Salomon came along. He rode in on a wave of new found Rothschild power. Their name had become famous. One person described it as the "two magic syllables." The brothers had become, as one biographer put it, "the Archdemons of Progress." Salomon began to vie for Austrian ties through Gentz and Metternich. Eventually Salomon's diplomacy, Metternich's lobbying, and the below-cost method earlier used on the Landgrave broke down the wall between the House of Rothschild and the Illuminati Hapsburgs. Austria began to employ the Rothschilds on a regular basis. Salomon moved into Vienna and bought a Hotel and a house. Salomon knew how to play Metternich like a piano. He knew the right thing to say at the right time. He knew Metternich's quirks and prejudices, such as his vanity which Salomon easily manipulated. Pretty soon Metternich and Salomon became close friends. The same goes for Metternich's right-hand man, Gentz. Gentz and Salomon were "inseparable." Salomon was also a Freemason. It came to the point where Austria became so controlled by the Rothschilds that the government did not want to refuse the brothers anything. In 1816 Amschel, Salomon, Carl, and James received a title of nobility from the Hapsburgs.

In 1818 the Aix-la-Chapelle Congress met to discuss the future of Europe. Salomon, Carl, Metternich, and Gentz all attended this Congress. It was here that Metternich first met the Rothschilds. Gentz kept the minutes of the Congress, he was called the "Secretary of Europe." A Rothschild scheme at this Congress totally shook the financial institutions of Europe, there was no denying the power of the Rothschilds. "The divine right of kings had been overthrown by the divine right of money.." At Aix-la-Chapelle the Rothschilds widened their circle of influence in the Illuminati. Salomon set up a new firm in Vienna. He financially supported Metternich's fight against revolution. Metternich had established the "Vienna System" which controlled Europe after Napoleon's defeat. The Austrian leader began doing what the elite love to do - sending "peacekeeping" troops Into conflIcts. 1814-1848 has been described as "The Age of Metternich", but since the Rothschilds financed and controlled him it would be more accurate to call it "The Age of the House of Rothschild." The Order of Vladimir was conferred upon Salomon for his work with Russia. Gioacchino Rossini, the Italian opera composer who wrote Cinderella and the William Tell overture became a good friend of both Salomon and his brother James. In 1822, he, Metternich, Gentz, James, and Cari attended the Verona Congress. This Congress was totally manipulated by the Rothschilds. They profited Immensely by its outcome. Salomon financed the first important Central European railways. The Austrians began saying that they had an Emperor Ferdinand and a King Salomon. When it came to Austrian finances Salomon got the last word. The people would show up at his office and beg for a royal "laying on of hands." He only had to touch a bond or a stock, and its owner went away certain of its rise. Uke the other Rothschilds he gave immense charity donations. He bought the huge coal and iron works of Vitkovitz. In 1843 he received permission to purchase inheritable agricultural real estate (many people were against Jews buying private property), and he proceeded to buy up large amounts of land. He obtained the lease of Austria's mercury mines. This and the only other mercury deposit in Spain were controlled by the Rothschilds, creating a world monopoly on a key metal. Salomon was incredibly powerful.

The next son, Cart was the family’s chief courier. He was the least intelligent of all the brothers. He was awkward when he spoke and he had a nasty temper. One biographer described him as "punchy". In 1821 Carl was sent to Naples, Italy to oversee loans there that were meant to finance Metternich’s forces who had arrived to quell a rebellion. While in Italy the Rothschild "mantle" came upon Carl and he made a series of ingenious deals with the Italian government that forced Naples to pay for its own occupation. He also helped Luigi de Medici of the Black Nobility to re-gain his position as finance minister of Naples, and later did business with the powerful man. Due to his success it was decided that he would stay in Naples and set up his own bank. He became financier to the court, the "financial overiord of Italy." Carl "...wound the Italian peninsula around his hand." He did business with the Vatican, and when Pope Gregory XVI received him by giving him his hand rather than the customary toe to kiss, people realized the extent of his power. The Pope conferred upon him the Order of St. George.

It appears that in Italy Carl became a leader of Carbonarism. After the Bavarian IllumInati was exposed, Carbonarism (or the Alta Vendita) became the major European occult power. Carl’s leadership in this group is very significant. In 1818 a secret Alta Vendita document, that Cari had participated in preparing, was sent to the headquarters of Masonry. A copy of this document was lost, and the Masons got very upset, and offered rewards for the return of this copy. The title of the document translates "Permanent Instructions, or Practical Code of Rules; Guide for the Heads of the Highest Grades of Freemasonry. "

Last, but absolutely not least, was the youngest son, James. During the Napoleonic conflict James had spent his time between London and Paris, supporting the Rothschild’s network of illegal trade with England. After the Wellington smuggle and the defeat of Napoleon, James became an established figure in France. He founded a bank there and began the French branch of the Rothschild family. James was a 33 degree Scottish Rite Mason. At this time the French House was the center of operations for the Rothschilds. Even though successive revolutions would de-throne ruler after ruler, Rothschild power kept the family in control. James was good friends with the leading minister of the Bourbon court, Count de Villele, and he "owned" King Louis Philippe. He also secretly funded Spanish revolutionaries (his agent in Madrid was Monsieur Belin). James yearned for social status. The pursuit of which was second only to money. He had gown so powerful that the French exchange was deeply affected by all his decisions. Like his brother, Salomon, he pioneered the railroad business in France. He also bought the great Lafite vineyards. His bank, de Rothschild Freres was in a league all its own. No one in France could even wish to be as powerful as James. As Salomon had, James received the Order of Vladimir for his work with the Russian dynasty. He also became a member of the Societe de Antiquites. In the Rothschild tradition (as constituted by Mayer’s Will) of trying to keep everything within the family James married his niece, Betty Rothschild, the daughter of Salomon. The Rothschilds main advantage was their incredible courier system. It kept the 5 Houses connected. In fact, the Hapsburgs used this system quite often. All evidence points to the Rothschild brothers being very powerful within Freemasonry. They were one of the leading families in occultism at that time in Europe. Many prominent Masons of their day praised the brothers. In 1820, due to Metternich’s lobbying, Nathan was made Austrian consul in London, and two years later he was made consul-general. James was also made an Austrian consul in Paris. Metternich’s promptings also provided something else very important to the family; in 1822 all the brothers and their descendants of either sex were made Barons. This established social position for the Rothschilds. The Gentz-Metternich team was very beneficial to the House of Rothschild. By this time a few papers had run some upsetting articles about the family. Salomon asked Gentz to censure any more unkind reports and he also commissioned the Illuminist to write a bogus biography on the family that would portray them in a good light. Gentz, now called the "Pen of Europe", proceeded to write legends for the Rothschilds, and the family fully encouraged the propaganda in their social circles. The brothers had a system (based on Mayer’s Will) where only family members were partners or owners of the banks. This system is still in use today. The Rothschild banks bought everything up, from mining corporations to national debts. For instance, New Court has been controlling Brazil's debts since 1824. In 1836 Nathan Rothschild, head of the House of Rothschild, died (he may have been poisoned). The headship was passed on to his younger brother, James, by a vote of all the brothers. In 1830 the signs of masonic-fueled revolution began to appear again. Metternich's "peace of the world" (they always call imperialism „peace") was being threatened. A new king was set up in France, the House of Orange was dethroned in the Netherlands. The fires of revolution were spreading through the masonic network and Metternich began to lose his grip on Europe.

The Revolution of 1848 in France de-throned yet another royal house. James went along with the masonic agenda and financed this revolution, even though he was a friend of the court. The revolution marked the end of Metternich's "Age" and that same year insurrectors chased him and Salomon out of Austria. Neither returned, but a Vienna House had already been established, others would carry it on, under the direction of Salomon's son, Anselm. Metternich's descendants are still close to the House of Rothschild. After this the power of the Rothschilds weakened. By 1855 all five brothers were dead except James. Napoleon III was now in power in France and his advisors were the enemies of James. But Rothschild ingenuity came through again when James got Napoleon Ill to marry a Rothschild agent. James died in I 868 and the family headship went to Alphonse, his son.

"THE NEW TRINITY"

Three cousins now ran the show - Alphonse of the French House, Uonel of the English House and Anselm of the Vienna House - "the new trinity". The three banned together to destroy an enemy bank, French Credit Mobilier. Anselm set up a new firm, Creditanstalt in Vienna to combat the French bank. With the help of Lionel and Alphonse he attacked Credit Mobilier until it collapsed. The new head of the House of Rothschild was Baron Alphonse de Rothschild. Alphonse was a suave, socially elite man. After the rail of France's Credit Mobilier Napoleon ill stepped onto the Rothschild bandwagon. Alphonse was powerful, he had "access" to men like Napoleon III and Bismark of Prussia. The Illuminati decided to get rid of Napoleon Ill, so English Prime Minister Gladstone (friend of the Rothschilds) set things up so that Prussia and France would go to war. Napoleon ill proceeded to attack Prussia and Bismark responded in a furry, defeating France and banishing Napoleon III from the throne. The war indemnities were paid to Bismark (who had a dislike for Alphonse, despite his connections to the family) through the Rothschilds. Alphonse's brother, Edmond, was the one who helped create Israel (this will be discussed further on in the article). Alphonse married another

Rothschild, but his love for her was not very strong. The Comtesse de Castiglione was a beautiful woman who was a Marylin Monroe of her day. She was the mistress of Alphonse, his brother Gustave Rothschild (whose daughter married a Sassoon), and Napoleon III. Anselm Rothschild of the Vienna House was a shrewd playboy. He destroyed Credit Mobilier with Creditanstalt, and in 1861 he became a member of the Austrian Imperial House of Lords. Anselm had many mistresses and his wife left him because of his adultery. He died in 1874. Lionel Rothschild of the English House inherited New Court. He financed England's Crimean War, Cecil Rhodes' South African kingdom, vast copper and nitrate mines, and the purchase of the Suez Canal. Lionel's younger brother, Anthony was knighted by the Queen. Another brother, Nathaniel, bought the renowned Mouton vineyards near Bordeaux. Lionel was a good friend of Prime Ministers Disraeli (who was controlled by Rothschild money) and Gladstone. He also probably paid for Lord John Russell's election as Prime Minister. Lord Tennyson (whose poems are used in programming) attended his house parties. Lionel has been described as "grouchy" and "crotchety." In 1858, Lionel became the first Jew in House of Commons. After eleven tries, the British Parliament gave in and allowed Rothschild to take his seat. Not a single significant political move by Lionel was recorded during his stay in Parliament. He was a member for 15 years. in 1879 he died. After Amschel of the House of Frankfort died without an heir, two of Carl of Italy's sons came to take over the business. But they also remained heirless, bearing only daughters. When the last brother died in 1901, the Frankfort bank was liquidated (I believe they did not try to continue the original bank because they knew that Germany was about to be caught up in the turmoil of the world wars, they eventually set up another Frankfort bank after Germany's turmoil).

The House of Italy ended the same way. The one son of Carl who had stayed in Naples produced only daughters, and when Geribaldi's Red Shirts unified Italy this remaining son (out of character for a Rothschild) chose not to accommodate the new powers and moved to France. Thus ended the Italian branch.

ROTHSCHILD INFLUENCE IN AMERICA

This subject is so massive that it will only be touched on. In 1837 August Belmont came to the U.S., during the Panic of 1837. August Belmont appears to have been a Rothschild proxy. Belmont bought up government bonds in this Panic and his success eventually led him to the White House where he became the "financial advisor to the President of the United States". His policies helped pit the North against the South for the Civil War. Judah P. Benjamin, who according to A. Ralph Epperson was the Clvii War campaign strategist for the House of Rothschild held many key positions in the Confederacy. He was apparently connected to John Wilkes Booth. J.P. Morgan has been called a Rothschild agent. His father was one of the many elite who made their fortunes by shipping supplies past the North's blockade and into the Confederacy. J.P. was a major supporter of an American central bank (Interestingly enough, he is reported to be related to Alexander Hamilton). In 1869, J.P. Morgan went to the House of England and formed Northern Securities as an agent for New Court in the U.S. Then, in 1907 J.P. Morgan

shuttled back and forth between London and Paris, presumably getting orders from the Rothschilds. He returned to America and instigated the Panic of 1907, which led to the „need" for a central bank. Another man who appears to be connected to the Rothschilds was Thomas House, who also made his fortune slipping supplies past the North and into the South. His son, Colonel Edward M. House was one of the main Illuminati figures to control America during the early 20th Century.

Some of the Bauer line of the Rothschild family moved to America and took up Important positions in the hierarchy's network.

THE HOUSE OF ROTHSCHILD AND ISRAEL

The Rothschild relationship to the Jews is deceiving. The family stance is publicized as "pro-Jewish", and they have given abundant charity to Jewish causes. But their support of the Jewish race has, in most cases, been used for the sole purpose of controlling the direction and profiting from the Jews. The Rothschilds have been described as the royal family of the Jews. Many leading Rothschilds have been dubbed "King of the Jews". But what kind of Judaism do the Rothschilds support? Do they support the orthodox Jews who believe in the Old Testament and are waiting for the return of the messiah? No. Do they support Messianic Jews who believe Jesus Christ was the messiah who came to save all men? No. The Rothschilds support those Jews who have fallen prey to the deceptive gnostic and occultic teachings of Cabalism, and in turn support the Illuminati controlled Zionist movement. Not all Zionists are part of the conspiracy, but their leaders are, and the ultimate leaders of the Zionists have been the Rothschilds. I am disappointed by some researchers, who automatically coin the conspiracy a „Jewish" one. This unfortunate stumbling block has polluted their work, making it just as misleading as the information put out by the popular media. These researchers seem blinded by the fact that the conspiracy has abused and manipulated the Jewish race more than any other group in the history of the world. The hierarchy of the Jews has sat back and allowed the attack on, and control of the Jewish masses for the furtherance of Satan's agenda. I am saying this to let you see that I am not anti-semitic. I believe that there are people who call themselves "Christians" who are part of the conspiracy, at the same token there are people who call themselves "Jews" who are part of the conspiracy. To call the conspiracy "Jewish" is ignorant. I believe the Rothschilds to have been involved in Cabalism, Jewish Sabbatism, or Frankism, all of which

are involved in witchcraft. This belief is strengthened by the Rothschild's use of the occultic Seal of Solomon as a family symbol. The city in which the Rothschilds originated, Frankfort, was deeply anti-Semitic. The Rothschilds were constantly striving to overcome the boundaries put on them because of their culture. It is very likely this berthed a bitterness in their hearts towards "Christian" society. This bitterness, and the need to facilitate more profit and power were most likely the reasons why they excepted the idea of a Jewish state. (I will assume that the readers understand that the Zionism / restoration of Israel concept is an unbiblical sham.)

The following quote will help you understand the Rothschild attitude towards the Jews. „... the first principle of the House of Rothschild was to amass wealth, [and] the liberation of the [Jewish] race from oppressive restrictions contributed Indirectly to this end, since it would facilitate intercourse with the rest of the world, and thereby increase the possibility of financial gain, which in turn would serve to increase its power." (The Rise of The House of Rothschild by Count Egon Corti, p. 124-125) Amschel of the Frankfort House was constantly harassed by anti-semites. As a result "He became the grand almoner and grand protector to the German Jews; he helped sweep away the chains of Jew Street; he pressed, in the end successfully, for the Jews' enfranchisement as free citizens of Frankfort." One of the main Rothschild agents used to promote the emancipation of the Jews in Frankfort was Frederick von Gentz, the evil "Pen of Europe". At this point I must clarify something for the reader. There are 3 Baron Edmond Rothschilds, and all 3 have been involved with the nation of Israel. To avoid confusion I will number them:

#1 Baron Edmond de Rothschild -(1845-1934) House of France. Son of James and brother of Alphonse.

#2 Baron Edmund "Eddie" L de Rothschild - (1916-) House of England. Son of Uonei Nathan and great, great grandson of the infamous Nathan Rothschild.

#3 Baron Edmond de Rothschild -(1926.) House of France. Son of Maurice and grandson of #1 Edmond.

The story begins with #1 Edmond, the "Father of Israel". During the Crimean War (which was funded by the Rothschilds) the small Jewish community in Jerusalem became cut off from all outside support. This resulted in "semi-starvation". #1 Edmond's father, James, set up the James Mayer de Rothschild Hospital in Jerusalem in response to this problem. #1 Edmond picked up his fathers interest in Palestine. When the Russian Jews fled the Czar's pogroms in the 1880's Edmond began to finance the Russian Jew's attempts to establish colonies in Palestine, It is clear that #1 Edmond was a fan of Zionism, his charities were not only aiding the persecuted but were promoting the concept of a return the "homeland". "The Baron's money drained swamps, dug wells and built houses. It founded industries ranging from scent factories to glass works, form wine cellars to bottle manufacturers. The Baron established his own administration in Palestine and his overseers dictated to the farmers exactly what crops were to be grown and where." The man who set up the first Zionist Congress was Theodor Herzl. He attempted to get the support for his plans to "restore the Jewish state" from the Rothschilds but many members of the family were opposed to Zionism (the Rothschilds supported those causes which they could profit from and the Integration of Jews into the European culture was profitable for them. One Rothschild told Herzl he was an Englishman and proposed to remain one. #1 Edmond on the other hand. was leading a Rothschild plan similar to Herzl's that slowly created a Jewish state controlled by the family). #1 Edmond did not oppose Zionism, in fact he supported Herzl's cause, yet he felt Herzl's plans should not be implemented so soon (they were "to be accomplished quietly, stealthily, not by shouting from the roof-tops"), plus he was concerned that Herzl would take away too much Rothschild power over the slowly forming Jewish state. The Baron continued to support his own colonies and though Herzl was socially supported, because his Ideas facilitated Rothschild power in Palestine, he was not allowed to implement his plans. #1 Edmond did not want Herzl in control. Later, after Herzl had died and was no longer a threat, #1 Edmond "admitted" that Herzl had been right, and went right on pouring money into the Jewish "Homeland". #1 Edmond had a tight-fisted control of the colonies. „... the Baron was a dictator who expected the colonists to obey him unquestionably." In 1901 the Jews in Palestine sent a delegation to the Baron who told him „... if you wish to save the Yishuv [the -83 Jewish settlement] first take your hands from It, and ... for once permit the colonists to have the possibility of correcting for themselves whatever needs correcting ..." This upset the Baron. He replied: "I created the Yishuv, I alone. Therefore no men, neither colonists nor organizations, have the right to interfere in my plans." Herzl was succeeded as President of World Zionism by David Wolffsohn. Wolffsohn got the full support of the Baron. Wolffsohn's successor was Otto Warburg. Another prominent leader of the Zionists was Chalm Weizmann. Weizmann was on better terms with #1 Edmond than his predecessor, Herzl. He made this observation of the Baron after their first visit. "In manner be could be both gracious and brutal; and this was the reflex of his split personality; for on the one hand he was conscious of his power and arrogant in the possession of it; on the other hand he was rather frightened by it, and this gave him a touch of furtiveness." The Baron Rothschild told Weizmann be would finance a Hebrew University in Palestine. With Weizmann's appearance on the scene the Baron became closer to Zionism.

In 1914 #1 Edmond traveled to Palestine. "Edmond could scarcely believe his eyes. Tel Aviv had become a city and his miserable windswept colonies had been transformed into lush gardens..." His journey to Palestine was hailed as the "prince returning to his people". Later the Baron Rothschild told Weizmann: "Without me Zionism would not have succeeded, but without Zionism my work would have been struck to death." Another Rothschild embraced Zionism through Weizmann - Lionel Walter, the second Lord Rothschild (apparently this upset some relations). The Balfour declaration, which declared England's support of the creation of a Jewish homeland, was addressed to Lord Rothschild II. Lord Rothschild also received the documents of support from the League of Nations. Charles T. Russell sent a letter to Lord Rothschild that praised him for his work towards a Jewish homeland. After World War I Britain ruled Palestine, and the Rothschilds ruled Britain. Also, a bulk of unpaid debts to the Rothschilds by the failed Ottoman Empire gave the family more control over Palestine. Then came Hitler. According

to Walter Langer, a psychoanalyst who wrote the book THE MIND OF ADOLF HITLER, the demonic German leader was a grandson of a Rothschild. „Adolf's father, AIls Hitler, was the illegitimate son of Maria Anna Schicklgruber. It was generally supposed that the father of Alols Hitler was Johann Georg Hiedler....

"There are some people who seriously doubt that Johann Georg Hiedler was the father of Alois.... [an Austrian document was supposedly] prepared that proved Maria Anna Schicklgruber was living in Vienna at the time she conceived. "At that time she was employed as a servant in the home of [a] Baron Rothschild. As soon as the family discovered her pregnancy she was sent back to her home ... where Alois was born." It is believed that Hitler (who was totally created by Satan's Empire) attacked Austria first, in order to destroy the Austrian records that proved his Jewish ancestry. As Hitler's demonic attack on the Jews progressed, one would imagine that the Zionists would come to the rescue and offer Palestine as a safe haven. Not so. Many European countries shut their doors to the Jews, including the Palestine colonies. The Zionist controlled immigration laws in Palestine were very strict and it was near impossible to escape to the Jewish homeland. In fact, the ZIonists refused to admit there was a Holocaust going on although evidence points to them knowing! I suppose in their minds it was ok to sacrifice a great number of Jewish lives in order to promote the idea of a Jewish state. To the elite the Holocaust was like shooting dead a herd of cattle to receive the insurance payment. Said Michael Seizer in his book. ZIONISM RECONSIDERED: "Not even the events of 1933 aroused their [Zionism's] political interest. They were naive enough to see them as a God-sent opportunity for an undreamt of wave of immigration to Palestine. When the Zionist Organization against the natural impulses of the whole Jewish people, decided to do business with Hider, to trade German goods against the wealth of German Jewry, to flood the Palestine market with German products and thus make a mockery of the boycott against German-made articles, they found llttle opposition in the Jewish National Homeland, and least of all among its aristocracy - the so-called Kibutniks." Hitler forced the Jews to wear the six-pointed star as a sign of shame. It was this same symbol that the Rothschilds were named after and the same symbol that the Zionists promoted as a symbol of Jewish national identity. Do you see the contradiction? Said Jewish author OJ. Graham in THE SIX-POINTED STAR: "Not all the concentration camp victims were Jewish people. Many were Christians. Spiritually, a parallel can be seen in the rituals to Ashteroth and Moloch, where the victims were burned as sacrifices to these false gods. Were the victims of the Nazis someone's sacrificial offerings?" I believe they were. Remember the six-pointed star was the symbol of Moloch and Ashteroth. Unfortunately, few Jews will tolerate a discussion of this subject. After World War II, the U.N., spurred on by the IllumInati created horrors against the Jews, panted Israel its statehood. Weizmann was the first president of Israel's Knesset (which was built with Rothschild money). The occultic hexagram is on the Knesset, and is also displayed on the Jewish flag. "...the six-pointed star [had] made its way from Egyptian pagan rituals of worship, to the goddess Ashteroth and Moloch, to King Solomon when he went into idolatry," say, Graham. "Then it progressed through the magic arts, witchcraft [including Arab magicians, Druids, witches and Satanists], astrology (in which It was no new thing), through the Cabala to Isaac Luria, a Cabalist, in the 16th century, to Mayer Amschel Bauer, who changed his name to this symbol, to Zionism, to the Knesset of the new State of Israel, to the flag of Israel and Its medical organization equivalent to the Red Cross." What is the ultimate goal of Zionism? David Ben-Gurion, a Zionist leader, tells us: "Weth the exception of the U.S.S.R. as a federated Eurasian state, all other continents will become united in a world alliance, at whose disposal will be an International police force. All armies will be abolished, and there will be no more wars. In Jerusalem, the United Nations (a truly United Nations) will build a Shrine of the Prophets to serve thi federated union of all continents; this will be the seat of the Supreme Court of Mankind, to settle all controversies among the federated continents." Simply stated, Zionism (with Rothschild support) promotes a New World Order. The Rothschild control of Israel is Immense. #1 Edmond established Trusts that make massive donations to Israel. Biographer Virginia Cowles explains: "Originally the principle Trust was known as Pica - Palestine Jewish Colonization Association - but when it became clear, after the establishment of the State of Israel, that colonization would be handled by the Government, Its functions were changed. Edmond's son, James, renamed it ‚Hanadiv' the Hebrew word for 'benefactor' by which his father was known throughout Palestine; and at the same time rechannelled the Trust's funds to the promotion of education, science and culture. When James died in 1957 his widow, Dollie, assumed the presidency which she still holds. For many years she has been powerfully assisted by Lord [Victor] Rothschild, and recently she has enlisted the help of the latter's son, [Lord] Jacob. The Trust knows no boundaries. In the 1960s it carried out James' wishes by providing money for the Knesset, the new Parliament building in Jerusalem. Today its beneficiaries range from universities, hospitals and public libraries to archaeological digs; from the board of the Weizmann Scientific Institute to the organizers of Instructional Television."

#2 Edmund is the most "race-conscious" of all the Rothschilds. He is on the board of many Jewish philanthropies - including president of the Association of Jewish Ex-Servicemen and Women, joint treasurer of the Council of Christians and Jews and treasurer of the Friends of the Hebrew University of Jerusalem. In 1967 he sent a letter to THE TIMES magazine suggssting Great Britain, Russia, and the U.S. all chip in and build de-salinization plants for Israel so that the desert could be turned into a lush garden, with plenty of food and nothing to fight over (I have found that #2 Edmund loves to come up with cock-a-maime scientific suggestions towards the solution of world problems. For example, in an address to the organizers of the U.N.'s Earth Summit, he suggested building massive dry-ice machines on the polar capes to prevent their melting in the face of global warming). #2 Edmund is also a warden of the Great Synagogue in London. He is the senior member of New Court in London and is a member of the Illuminati's Pilgrim Society. #3 Edmond is an entrepreneur. He is very involved in tourism, and has funded many luxury resorts in Israel. He controls Compagnie Financlere, which is his holding company in France. He owns Banque Privee in Switzerland, and a merchant bank in Paris. He controls the largest toy company and the largest frozen food company in France. He is a director of Belgium's Banque Lambert, and of DeBeers Consolidated Mines in South Africa. He is on the Steering Committee of the Bilderbergers. And his interests extend into Israel, where he is the chairman of Tri-Continental Pipelines. Chairman of the Israel Corporation, and chairman of Isrop, which controls the Israel General Bank. The list continues. #3 Edmond is on the board of the Hebrew University of Jerusalem. He directs the Middle East Peace Institute, which he founded in 1967. He regularly donates money to the Biological-Physio-Chemical Institute, which was founded by his grandfather, #1 Edmond. Hesits on the boards ofa dozen or so hospitals and scientific institutes. #3 Edmond is considered the richest Rothschild. He has massive power, and this includes control of much of Israel. The Rothschilds have even had a street named in their honor. The First International Bank of Israel is located at 39 Rothschild Boulevard in Tel Aviv. Bank Hapoalim, "Israel's fastest growing bank", is next door at 50 Rothschild Boulevard. The satanic Rothschilds simply dominate Israel. Apparently Israel has served as the meeting grounds for the French and English Rothschilds. The French and English Houses contributed over $1 million to Israel around the time of the Six-Day War. It is reported that when Baron Alain of the French House visited Israel he "burst into tears" at the sight of the walling wall. Baroness Alix of the French House is the World President of Youth Aliyah, which deals with the emigration of Jewish children to Israel. Evelyn of the English House is chairman of the Board of Governors of the Technion, Israel's Institute of Technology. The satanic Rothschilds simply dominate Israel. The Rothschilds help Satan's Empire control the world's resources, the world's nations and the world's religions. They are an institution in the conspiracy and, if one looks carefully, the path of their destructive reign can be followed through the history of the past 3 centuries.

This article will be continued in the next newsletter, where It will discuss the House of Rothschild in the 20th century.

Bibliography:

Corti, Count Egon Caesar. THE RISE OF THE HOUSE OF ROTHSCHILD. Boston, Los Angeles: Western Islands, 1972 (copyright 1928 by Cosmopolitan Books Corporation).

Graham, OJ. THE SIX-POINTED STAR. Fletcher, NC: New Puritan Ubrary, 1984.

Springmeier, Fritz. BE WISE AS SERPENTS. Portland, OR.: Privately published, 1991.

Cowles, Virginia. THE ROTHSCHILDS: A FAMILY OF FORTUNE. New York.: Alfred A. Knopf, Inc., 1973

Morton, Frederic. THE ROTHSCHILDS: A FAMILY PORTRAIT. New York.: Collier Books, 1961, introduction and epilogue 1991.

Miller, Edith Starr. OCCULT THEOCRASY. Los Angeles, CA. 1933

Epperson, Raiph A. THE UNSEEN HAND. Tucson, AR.: Publius Press, 1985

INTRODUCTION TO PART 2 OF THE ROTHSCHILDS

by Fritz Springmeier

Lenin said that the establishment of a central bank was 90% of communizing a nation Lenin himself (and Trotsky) were required to place MI6 operatives in key positions during the Russian Revolution. and these operatives were in turn controlled by the Satanic elite back in London, England. It is no secret that the Rothschilds play a major rode in International Bankers, and that various Rothschilds like Lord Victor Rothschild have played major roles in MI6. I mentIon these two items to drIve home what should be an obvious condusion, the Rothschilds are major players in the control of the world and the New World Order.

There is so much activity on the part of the modern-day Rothschilds, that the controlled news media's censorship which protects the Rothschilds have not been able to screen out everything, there are stIll tidbits here and there that filter through the controlled media's censorship. Still my search continues for descendants of the Rothschilds who are willing to expose what the Rothschilds are all about. I have found a few. One who I have not had the opportunity to interview yet, is the husband of Rebecca Brown. It is reported that Rebecca Brown's husband was an Illuminatus of the Rothschild bloodlIne, and that he escaped them and has been attemptIng to do some exposure of their Satanic practices. According to what I have been told, they wanted to skin him alive. I have unfortunately not been able to interview Rebecca Brown Yoder's husband, who has been called by the Lord to strengthen the end time church.

THEIR POWER IS EXTENSIVE

Peter Rupert Lord Carrington, who is the chairman of the Bilderbergers. has been the Rothschild's director of their Rio Tinto Zinc Corp. He also is director of Barclay's Bank and part of the Trilateral Commission. Francois Mitterand, who has led France, is an extremely close friend of the Rothschilds. I point these two men out just to portray to the reader the extensive power the Rothschilds wield behind the scenes. WHAT THEY CALL THEIR BLOODUNE IN THE ILLUMINATI

During IlluminatI ceremonies, when candidates are presented for approval at the Sisters of Ught and the Mothers of Darkness levels the bloodline of the Rothschilds is actually called „the Rothschild bloodline." Although It was orIginally went by the name Bauer (and many of the descendants today continue to be Bauers and Bowers, the name „Rothschild" was the occult name that the Bauers personally chose for their bloodline to be POWER BROKER IN LATIN AMERICA

One of my friends from South America got to personally witness the destruction of South America by Rothschild interests. One item that I am familiar with from history, and which I can't help thinking about is how the nation of Bolivia in 1908 had the fine distinction of having absolutely no foreign debt. However, in 1908 the Morgans of America loaned Bolivia money, and in 1917 Chandler & Co. loaned them $2.4 millIon. Thus began the plunge of a free nation Into economic slavery to the Illuminati's international Bankers. The point is that nations like Bolivia, if left alone would have been far better off. People don't realize that the problems these "banana republics" have is to a large degree beIng cause by powerful outsiders lIke the Rothschilds. who then direct organizations like the IMF to „save" these poor nations. When the Rothschilds set themselves up in Brazil, they set up to be there permanently. They came in during the 19th century. The Rothschilds and other british Interests played a major role in Brazil's railway system, which became a law unto itself. Just as the secret history of the railway tycoons reveals a great deal about the secret elite in the United States, so it also does in Brazil. Later Henry Kaiser and Nelson Rockefeller moved into South America (incl. Brazil) to promote their capitalistic visIons. They promoted the light industrialization of LatIn America and its economic interdependence in the 1950's and 1960's. The Scroll & Key Society is one of the illuminati's secret entry points at Yale University. The Scroll and Key Society financed a book by Elizabeth A. Cobbs entitled The Rich Neighbor Policy: Rockefeller and Kaiser in Brazil. This book (Yale Univ., 1992, p. 248) states that Brazilians have looked to Rockefeller as their connection to the United States. Other elite families besides the Rothschilds have also substantial Latin American economic control, such as the DuPonts.

THE BLOODUNES ARE SECRET

One of the principle points that should be borne in mind, is that the actual occult power of the Rothschild bloodlIne is hidden in secret lineages. Although the Rothschilds make up part of the Rothschild bloodline, people should also watch out for names such as Bauer, Bowers, Sassoons, and many other last names. People within the illuminati who have Rothschild blood are aware of their secret ancestry, but outsiders in the world are more often than not are never going to be told that they carry such „powerful" occult blood.

ABOVE THE LAW

The story of what happened to BankCal, which was the oldest bank in California, illustrates how powerful the Rothschilds are in the United States. (The details of this story come from the San Jose Calif Mercury News, Jan. 12. 1992. I was somewhat surprised that the article appeared considering the strength of the Rothschilds. Sometimes corruption at the top stinks so bad, that It can't be suppressed entirely.) The United States has the Securities Exchange Commission (SEC) in place to protect the American public from stock fraud. During the 1980's there were 3 highly publicized cases of fraud that the SEC uncovered. These three cases created widespread confidence within the american public that stock market trading was in general honestly traded. The story of what Edmond Rothschild (full name is Edmond Adolphe Jules Jacques Maurice Baron de Rothschild) did with BankCal expose to the world that men like the Rothschilds do not have to play by the same rules as everyone else. They are literally above the law. The powerful Illuminati control the law. In 1973, the CEO of BankCal, De Bretteville sold Edmond Rothschild 300,000 shares of Bancal Tristate Corp., 22% of the holding company for the Bank of California. De Bretteville had originally asked two English Rothschild cousins if they wanted to purchase the stock. These two cousins then called two French Rothschild cousins, who then called Edmond in Geneva, Switzerland for assistance. Edmond told them he would help them buy it, and that after he purchased it. he would turn around and divide it with his relatives. He lied. And over the next few years, he would continue to lie to numerous people about his intents for the bank. De Bretteville says, "He lied to his family and he lied to me, it was a dirty deal all around." Bank of California had the only banking franchise at the time which was in all three Pacific rim states (OR, WA, CA). It turned out that the Bank of California was like a piece of art to Rothschild. He had no Intention of improving the bank, he simply wanted it for his collection of companies. Edmond already owned companies in Brazil, toy companies, 10% in De Beers mining in So. Africa, joint business ventures with Robert Vesco, and 30% of Club Mediterranean which Edmond co-founded. Club Mediterranean was created out of the idea that others of the elite would enjoy seaside playgrounds like those he and his mother cavorted at when he was a youngster. Edmond went on to marry a chorus girl named Nadine Actually, sources indicate that the Baron Edmond had wanted to give the Bank of California to his only son. Bengie (Benjam in de Rothschild) as a graduation present. But Bengie who was going to Pepperdine University was more interested in partying. Bengie lived high on the hog at a fabulous California beach house while flunking school and living wildly. Apparently, his father decided his son wasn't ready for a graduation present. In fact, he left Pepperdine Univ. after 4 years with 31 credits (97 short to graduate) and went back home to Chateau Pregny on the shore of Lake Geneva near Geneva. Switz. It wasn't until 1989, that Benjamin stepped forward into the world of finance, by launching his La Compagnie de Tresorerie-Benjamin de Rothschild. The San Jose Mercury. Jan. 12, 1992 reported, „The longtime chief executive of the blue-blood San Francisco bank invited Rothschild to invest. Banking regulators encouraged Rothschild to take charge. Securities investigators ignored the frenzy of trading overseas, and later, the documentation of insider trading. The bank's directors fawned while the baron used it as a personal plaything. „This is not what made this country great." says Bill Miles, a former BankCal vice president. "This is greed, all the way through." Edmond Rothschild only purchased a mInority of BankCal's shares, but he was still able to totally control the company. He was also able to manipulate its stock prices and carry out insider trading without the Securities and Exchange Commission watching it. Edmond named two representatives to the board of directors. The first was George Coulon Karlweis, a patrician Swiss Banker who worked for Edmond. The other was George Shapiro. a New York lawyer who knew nothing about banking. Edmond has called George Shapiro his "godfather and his "guardian angel." Then Edmond replaced De Bretteville as CEO with his man Chauncey Schmidt. Edmond had agreed to leave DeBretteville in his position as a condition to purchase BankCal shares, but when he chose to renege on his agreement he did without compassion. Bank board meetings became a game of „What does Edmond think?" Edmond on his part threw parties that enamored him to San Francisco's high society. Edmond carried out a series of actions which dropped the value of BankCal's stock drastically. Financial advisors and securities analysts convinced small stockholders to sell their BankCAl stock which they then did for rock bottom prices as little as $16 a share. Rothshild bought some at that price. Some of Rothschild's secret proxies paid slightly higher prices. Most of the stock went to anonymous investors trading through private banks protected by secrecy laws. Nearly 20% of the bank's stock was sold by misled shareholders, and was sold to secret European bank accounts. The Baron and his friends secretly began buying the Bank's stock after It had hit rock bottom prices. During 1979 to 1981 more than 15% of Bank of California's stock was sold in Europe. Such an abrupt shift in a stock's trading pattern is supposed to set off alarms with the Securities and Exchange Commission. Instead the Securities and Exchange Commission turned a blind eye to all the insider trading. The European buyers bought their cheap stock as secretly as possible. They did not openly shop through American brokerages. Instead, they bought small (and therefore. unremarkable) blocks of stock through dozens of private banks in Switzerland, the Netherlands. Germany. Luxembourg. The Baron told his friends that he would sell BankCal, while he publicly gave the appearance that the company was not for sale. For instance, publicly It was announced that David Rockefeller. as well as the elite's front man for BCCI Ghaith Pharaon had both taiked with Edmond Rothschild about the purchase of BankCal. According to what the public was led to believe. Rothschild said he would not sell his shares in the bank. Jean Marc Vemes, a buddy of Edmond. bought 310.000 shares through a defunct Asian mining company. He was anonymous until Edmond Rothschild nominated him to the bank's board of directors. After gathering up shares at rock bottom prices, Rothschild announced an official change of heart to sell the bank at $50 a share. Rothschild then sold this supposedly American bank to the Japanese, Mitsubishi, to be exact, and „made a killing" off of his manipulations and insider trading. In Mar. 1982, Mitsubishi began secret negotiation to buy the bank which they codenamed „Snoopy." Over the years, stockholders had watched various companies offer $74 a share, $60 a share and other good terms only to be rebuffed. When Rothschild finally sold for $50 a share to the Japanese, it was clear that his whole goal had been to cheat stockholders to Insure a big cash reward for himself. Richard Freemon, a large stockholder who had sold. sued Rothschild and the directors for cheating him on his stock. The $25 million dollar lawsuit was settled out of court, with all parties swearing not to disclose how much Freemon got for having lost money due to Rothschild's stock manipulations.

THE ROUND TABLE GROUP

David Smith who has written the following article on the Rothschilds for this newsletter asked me to explain in this introduction about Rothschild and the Round Table Group. The men who formed Milner's Round table group from the various clues in their lives were by and large secret satanists. Rhodes and Stead created a secret society which had a „circle of initiates." This circle included such names as Albert (Lord) Grey, Arthur (Lord) Balfour, Sir Harry Johnston, and Lord Rothschild. Milner was on the executive committee of this secret group. Carroll Quigley dates the start of the group as March i 891. Apparently, the Rothschilds helped finance this secret society. In 1909-1913, this secret society in turn formed Round Table groups in British dependencies and the U.S. Eight of these round table groups were still functioning into the 1970s. Sir Abe Bailey supported the Round Table groups quarterly magazine called The Round Table in 1919, Sir Abe Bailey and the Astors financed the creation of the Royal Institute of International Affairs which in turn created daughter organizations such as the Council on Foreign Relations in the United States. The RIIA is also sometimes called Chatham House. The first Round Table group of the Rhode-Milner group were sometimes called the Cliveden Set because they often met at the Astor's Cliveden Estate. Terence O'Brien's biography describes Milner's relationship to the Rothschild's as very close Lord Alfred Milner (1854-1925) frequently visited the Rothschilds, stayed overnight with various Rothschilds, and even had some sleepless nights with them. without explanation as to why. Milner also worked for Rothschild as a director of Rio Tinto. Three Illuminati families stand out in the creation of the Round Table groups, which then became the RIIA and the CFR and related groups. These are the Rothschilds, Astors, and Greys. The Bailey family also shows up an important generational satanic family. The RIIA and its various branches such as the CFR are very powerful today. In my Be Wise As Serpents book readers can find a chart showing the role the CFR plays in the Policy Process of the U.S.

THE ROTHSCHILDS--PART 2

BY DAVID SMITH

The Rothschild family reached a peak in Its power during the Age of Metternich (1814-1848), but as the century waned, so did Rothschild power. They still held a considerable amount of influence but their „veto power" was not as strong as It had been before the Revolutionary overthrow of Metternich's Europe. This lagging power was nothing that could not be reversed though, and last half of the 19th century was spent manufacturing another incredible climb upward. The new rise in power came about during the reign of the "New Trinity" - Alphonse (France), Lionel (England), and Anselm (Vienna). The succeeding generations of these three family leaders were the catalysts of new family order. An excellent example of Rothschild power in the late 19th century is the families dealings with the Illuminati Habsburgs. In order to be courtworthy for the Habsburgs you had to have four ancestral lines of nobility and you had to be baptized. Yet Emperor Francis Joseph gave the Rothschilds „a special act of grace" in 1887. From then on, the House was allowed to be on close terms with the

Habsburgs. This was a considerable act. The European nobility are very serious about their aristocratic rules. (Francis Joseph was not very close to the House, but his wife was a good friend of the Rothschilds). Another great example of Rothschild influence is their direct Involvement on both sides of the Austro-Prussian and Franco-Prussian Wars. Bismarck., dictator of Prussia, was a sort of son to fatheriess Amschel of Frankfort. After Amschel died Bismarck remained close to the Rothschilds (although he had occasional quibbles with the family). Bismarck's banker, Bleichroder, was a Rothschild agent and the richest man in Berlin. He was invaluable to Bismarck as the financier of the dictator's wars with Austria and France. In Austria, the Hapsburgs were at least publicly Implored by Alphonse and Anthony of Paris and Anselm of Vienna to avoid a war with the ambitious Prussian dictator at all costs. Of all the international banking families, the Rothschilds appeared to be in favor of peace the most, although this was probably a ruse. „We want peace at any price," said Anthony de Rothschild. "What do we care about Germany, or Austria or Belgium? That sort of thing is out of date." But the Austrians gave in to Bismarck's provocations and embarked on a war with Prussia in 1866 (the Rothschilds had all congregated in London for a family wedding the year before; it is possible the wedding was used as an excuse to assemble the family together to discuss a plan of action concerning the up-coming events) . Austria had been warned. In seven weeks the war was over, Bismarck had crushed the Austrians. The war had been financed by Rothschild agent, Bleichroder. Then Bismarck began to provoke France. Napoleon III was in the pocket of the head of all the Rothschilds, Alphonse de Rothschild of the Paris House. In fact, the two even shared the same mistress. Alphonse also had "access" to Bismarck. He was on both sides of the track, so to speak. Then, (very possibly under Rothschild direction) Bismarck began to try to put a German prince on the Spanish throne. Napoleon III responded by telling Alphonse that France could not allow such a thing, and unless England intervened diplomatically he would have no choice but to go to war against Prussia. The Emperor wished to use the Rothschild's courier/agent system to reiay this message to England. Baron Alphonse did so, sending the message to Nathaniel de Rothschild at New Court who relayed it to a close family Mend, and former Prime Minister Gladstone (England happened to be without a Prime Minister at that time). Gladstone (shedding. I believe, a light on the family's own opinions) answered the message with a refusal to intervene. The stage was set. Although Bismarck withdrew his SpanIsh candidate, the frictions between France and Prussia had become irreconcilable. Napoleon III declared war on Prussia in 1870. Explained one biographer: "No one foresaw the fall of France. Indeed crowned beads and statesmen alike believed that at long last Bismarck. had taken on an impossible task." Despite everyone's confidence in France, Alphonse sent his family to England. He apparently knew better. Napoleon III suffered a terrible defeat. His empire came to an end. This war was also financed by the Rothschild agent, Bleichroder. Here comes the great puzzle concerning the whole affair. Biographers, using diaries and such, seem to think the Rothschilds were very distraught over Napoleon III's loss. But It also appears they were behind the whole mess. Perhaps the fear of the unpredictability of the new revolution caused this dismay. Perhaps It is just Rothschild disinformation. Perhaps their pan was to keep connections on both sides of the conflict and ride out the storm, but they were upset because their philosophical loyalty was to France (although I find this hard to believe). The family had their hands in both sides of the conflict, it even appears they manufactured the conflict, why the outcome might have upset them I have no idea. I personally believe the House of Rothschild wanted to get rid of Napoleon Ill and his empire, which is exactly what happened, the third republic was set up in France. After the war the French economy was devastated. The Rothschild agent, Junius Morgan was brought in to help restore the French financial situation. He made a large profit. As you can see the Rothschild's involvement in the Austro-Prussian and Franco-Prussian Wars was significant, even though they were crying peace.

FRENCH HOUSE, LATE 19TH AND EARLY 20TH CENTURY

Alphonse, of the "New Trinity", was the 4th bead of the House of Rothschild. He was an aristocratic man and friend of many prominent leaders of his day. He was also an adulterer, his most notable affair being with the Comtesse de Castiglione. He and his wife were called "the most lavish entertainers of their day." The sophisticated Alphonse was even friends with Belgium's King Leopold and England's Prince of Whales. He also improved upon his Inherited network of Rothschild agents, an underground system that would continue to grow well after his death. He was one of best Informed men of his day. His older sister Charlotte married Nathaniel of the English House. His brother Gustave also had an affair with the Comtesse de Castiglione. His youngest brother, Edmond #1 was a genius and a main figure in the creation of a Jewish homeland in Israel. He helped divide the world's oil between Shell and the Rockefeller's Standard Oil. His other brother Salomon James married a Frankfurt Rothschild and is the subject of a weird circumstance described by biographer Virginia Cowles. "In 1864 Baron James' third son, the brilliantly clever Salomon [James], dropped dead. The boy had become a compulsive gambler which had caused his father great anxiety, as anyone with the Rothschild name was given unlimited financial credit. Apparently Salomon died of a heart attack which fascinated the Goncourt brothers. „Cabarrus, Rothschild's doctor,' one of them wrote, „told Saint-Victor that the young Rothschild who died the other, day really died of the excitement of gamblIng on the Stock Exchange. Imagine it; a Rothschild dead of a paroxysm over money.' "However, If the Goncourt brothers had known the details of a previous heart attack suffered by Salomon they would have been even more enthralled. Three years earlier Salomon had 'dropped dead'. He had been placed in a comn and, according to Jewish custom, carried into every room in the house. One of the pall bearers had stumbled, the coffin had crashed Into a door and -Salomon had woken up! Not for another three years was he well and truly buried." This story could lead to all sorts of speculation. De Rothschild Freres, the French House bank, was very powerful. It got its hands Into electrical Industries, the development of the Mediterranean Railway and North African business. It also controlled, with the British House, the Baku oil fields in Russia, which made the Rothschilds the main competitors of the Rockefeller trust. The oil business was principly run by Edmond #1.

When Alphonse died in 1905, the new generation of the French House came under the charge of Baron Edouard, a quiet and very rich man. Edouard was a director of the Bank of France. Baron Edouard also ran the de Rothschild Freres with his cousin, Robert (who married a Beer), son of Gustave (Robert's sister, Alice Caroline married Sir Edward A. Sassoon). These two carried de Rothschild Freres through the tumult of the first world war. Their policies were passive, as they extremely protective of the family wealth. Baron Edouard and Robert had close business dealings with J.P. Morgan. One of the operations of the Morgan-French Rothschild combine involved economic manipulation that allowed the Vienna House to almost fully regain the losses that the Austrian Rothschilds had incurred during WWI. The son of Edmond #1, James Armand de Rothschild, carried on the Israel work of his father after Edmond #1's death in 1934. James Armand's brother

Maurice was the black sheep of the Rothschild's new French generation. Maurice was a banker and a Senator in the French Parliament. Maurice was a very scandalous figure in the aristocratic scene. He was known as Don Juan de Rothschild. Said one biographer: "Some peopie went as far as to claim that ... one had to be seduced or at least pinched by Baron Maurice if one was a woman, or affronted by Baron Maurice, if a man. No other personage surpassed him in enriching the delicious scandal of his times." Thus a new french generation began the 20th century, the undynamic Baron Edouard leading the way.

BRITISH HOUSE, LATE 19TH AND EARLY 20TH

Uonel de Rothschild, of the "New Trinity", brought the British House into the late 19th century. Uonel was a very powerful man. He ran New Court shrewdly, and financed many promInent ventures, such as Cecil Rhodes' gold and diamond mines, and the purchase of the Suez Canal. He was also the first Jewish member of Parliament. His sister, Charlotte married another member of the "New Trinity", Anselm of Vienna. Another sister married into the soon-to-be extinct Italian House.

Lionel's brother Anthony - who described the Rothschilds as "complete slaves to business - married a Montefiore, and was knighted by the Queen - thus Sir Anthony de Rothschild. Lionel's next brother, Nathaniel, was the father of the Mouten Rothschilds. Nathaniel, though of the British House, loved France and moved to Paris in 1851. In 1853 he bought vineyards that became known as Mouton Rothschild, and he lived at these vineyards several months of the year. His descendants, the Mouton Rothschilds, are citizens of France but are of the British House (except that their mother was a French Rothschild, but the male lineage is the most important in the Rothschild family). Another of Lionel's brothers, Baron Mayer, married a Cohen. Mayer built a spectacular house, Mentmore Towers. Said one woman: "I do not believe that the Medicis were ever so lodged at the height of their glory." The Mentmore Towers were turned over to Mayer's daughter, Hannah, when he died. Hannah married the Earl of Roseberry in 1878. The Earl of Roseberry became Prime Minister of England in 1894-95. The Mentmore Towers are still owned today by the son of Hannah, the current Earl of Roseberry. The Baron Mayer de Rothschild was a member of Parliament (never made a speech), and loved horse breeding and racing. He was the "sporting" member of the family. When Lionel died in 1879 a new generation of British Rothschild appeared on the scene led by Lionel's aristocratic son, Nathaniel "Natty" de Rothschild. Natty took control of New Court, the Rothschild's British banL He was elected to the House of Commons in 1865, and then, in 1885, Queen victoria made hIm a Lord and he entered the House of Lords - the first Lord Rothschild. The Intelligent and extroverted Natty was an ornate speechmaker, unlike his father, Lionel, and uncle Mayer. Lord Natty has been described as exclusive, lofty, humorless, "one of the three rudest men in England," selective, blunt, aloof, powerful and a man with an explosive temper. A perfect representative of the ruling class. Said one biographer: "Although Natty lacked the soaring Intelligence of his rough, unsociable grand father [Nathan, 2nd head of the Rothschilds] he had a strong personality and the authoritative air of a man who is not accustomed to being contradicted." Lord Natty was a good friend of Prime Ministers Disraeli and Gladstone. He played the philanthropy game of the rich very well. The powerful head of New Court was known for his charities, especially to the Jews - he was called „King of the Jews" as have many other Rothschilds. The haughty Lord Rothschild was even chairman of the British Red Cross. Lord Natty won the hearts of the London police (an effective measure when one is in the Illuminati). Every Christmas he presented them with a "handsome cheque," and any officer could receive a four course meal at his home. Hence, Rothschild carriages were always given the right of way in traffic. In business Lord Natty was very conservative. He dld not take very many risks and looked only for safe family investments. His self-confidence told hIm to manage his wealth himself and not trust his Investments with people who might strike a painful blow to his riches. "Natty was brusque and humorless and dld not suffer fools gladly." Nor could he allow his money Into the hands of a fool, caution was a necessary device as far as he was concerned. According to the writer Frank Harris the Lord Rothschild told him: „I go to the bank [New Court] every morning and when I say 'no' I return home at night without a worry. But when I say 'yes' Its like putting your finger Into a machine - the whirring wheels may drag your whole body in after the finger." New Court was very powerful at this time, for example It controlled the Ruby Mines in Burma, and the banks operations covered most of South America. Brazil was the Rothschild's "preserve" in South America, as Argentina was the "preserve" of London's other major banking family - the Barings. While Lord Natty's two brothers, Alfred and Leo, helped run New Court, Natty was almost totally calling the shots. "Natty stood for finance, Alfred for the arts, Leo for sport." Son of the Queen, the Prince of Whales Albert College, Cambridge. They became good friends and soon the Prince was close friends with most of the British House and others of the Rothschild clan, Including Natty's brothers, Alfred and Leo. The group of friends became known as „The Marlborough Boys", named after the Prince's Marlborough House at which they regularly gathered. „The Marlborough Boys" were intent on having fun. The small circle of partiers were living a life where "wit took precedence over etiquette..." The Prince probably had a hand in convincing the Queen to grant Natty peerage. The Rothschilds were suspected, rightfully so, of financing the Prince's investments and paying off his debts. The Prince later became King Edward VII of England. As you can see, Rothschild influence extends far and wide. Alfred, Lord Natty's brother, was an eccentric man. He had a zebra four-in-hand, a pet gont, a private philharmonic which be conducted and a private circus which he would ringmaster. Needless to say, the Baron Alfred was a man with flair. "He loved music, clothes, furniture, paintings, beautiful women and, above all, luxury." He was also Involved in business - he worked at New Court and was the first Jewish Director of the Bank of England. The Baron was among those in charge of the last rites over Disraelis' dead body (Queen Victoria might have had an affair with Disraeli that the Rothschilds covered up). Alfred's demeanor was like that of a diplomat and was very Interested in foreign affairs. He was instrumental in easing the English - German tensions around the turn of the century. It was not to the Rothschilds benefit to have war. Alfred parted with tradition when he gave, in his will, his great wealth to his daughter. His daughter, in turn, used some of that Rothschild money to fund the expedition into Egypt that discovered Tutankhamen's grave.

Lord Natty’s other brother, Baron Leopold de Rothschild, was not much of a businessman. He much more preferred horse racing and automobiles. He had the reputation of being a kind man. His wife, Maria Perugia, was the sister of Mrs. Arthur Sassoon. The first world war supposedly hurt the British House financially (although it appears their missing riches only went underground), but as always they bounced right back (in the eyes of the public). Thus a new British House of Rothschild began the 20th century, lofty Lord Natty leading the way.

AUSTRIAN HOUSE, LATE 19TH AND EARLY 20TH CENTURY

Baron Anselm von Rothschild, of the "New Trinity", brought the Austrian House to the close of the 19th century. Anselm lived under the reputation of his father, Salomon, and his uncle, Amschel (with whom he spent a good deal of his time). But be did not necessarily ride their coat tails, he proved his worth, so to speak. His most notable act being the creation Creditanstalt, which destroyed the financial challenger of the Rothschilds, Credit Mobilier. As a young man Anselm was a bit wild and frivolous, so hi. father sent him away to apprentice. Anselm ended up working under his uncle Amschel in the Frankfort bank (which was doomed to future liquidation). Frankfort mellowed hlm, and he lived there for 30 years. When his father died in 1855, Anselm returned to Vienna to take his father’s place. He became a very active businessman. Anselm had influence in the Habsburg court. Baron Anselm’s "name was inscribed in the Golden Book of the capital and in 1861 he had been made a member of the Imperial House of Lords." He also knew bow to incur his wrath. One club in Austria refused him membership because be was a Jew. Baron Anselm simply bought a sewage disposable unit and installed it right next to the club. The smell was horrible. The dub then tried to give him a membership card, to mend the problem, but he returned the card doused in perfume and informed them that he would not move his sewage unit. The Rothschilds set off the financial crisis of 1873 in Vienna. S.M. Rothschild und Sohne totally controlled Hungarian finance. And Creditanstalt was the financial powerhouse of the Habsburg realm. Anselm’s children carried on in Vienna after he died in 1874. Ills eldest son Nathaniel was an aristocrat, who was not interested in banking, only fine art and history. Anselm’s second son, Ferdinand, moved to England. Only Baron Albert von Rothschild, Anselm’s youngest son had a business inclination and be was chosen to take over Creditanstalt. Baron Albert and Nathaniel were the two richest men in Austria. Baron Albert "held controlling interest in innumerable industries ranging from coal to railways; and when, in 1881, he converted the famous six-per-cent Gold Loan to Hungary the bank was recognized as the greatest financial force in the empire." Albert was afraid of the common people and he built a mansion that was more of a dtadel than a house. Its wails were seven het high, and on top of that sat another eight feet of iron fencing. Anselm’s second son, Baron Ferdinand, was a member of Prince Edward’s "Marlborough Boys." He remained in England, becoming a naturalized citizen. „Ferdy" as he was called was an intellectual socialite. He built an Incredibly grandiose mansion named Waddeson Manor; one of the most awesome of all the Rothschild homes. The Manor was so marvelous that the Queen herself paid it a visit. Visitors to its halls ranged from the Empress Frederick to the Shah of Persia. Ferdinand also had a zoo. One of Anselm’s daughters also moved to England - Alice. The unmarried Alice was a very "tyrannical" person. In fact, she even yelled at the Queen when she saw her Inadvertently trampling a flower-bed. The Queen and Alice remained friends, and the Queen nicknamed Alice „The Al Powerful" "Alice ... reigns absolutely," wrote a cousin. "There is nothing constitutional about this monarchy. No wonder the Queen has named her ‘The Al Powerful’..." When Ferdinand died Alice received Waddeson Manor. Head of the Austrian House, Albert died in 1911. His son (none of his brothers had any children), Baron Louis became the head of the house. Louis’ brothers, Alphonse and Eugene, were "gentlemen of leisure." Baron Louis and his two brothers both served in the Austrian army during World War I (the war supposedly split the Vienna House from the French and English Houses, I don’t believe this). The Austrian House’s wealth had to go underground during the war. After the war ended the French and English Houses put the Austrian House back "on their feet again." Thus a new Austrian House began the 20th century, powerful Albert and suave Baron Louis leading the way.

THE MORGAN CONNECTION

George Peabody, a Massachusetts's trader, set up a banking house - George Peabody & Co. - in London in 1837. He became regarded as a "financial ambassador in London. Carrol Quigley attributes the use of tax-exempt foundations for manipulation of society to Peabody, seen in his IllumInati Peabody foundation. Daniel Colt Gilman, a member of the Skull & Bones and first President of the Carnegie Institution, was involved in the establishment of the Peabody foundation. He was in such high regard by the elite that they have erected a statue of him across from the Bank of England. Peabody was getting old and needed a younger partner. Junius Morgan, of Hartford, Connetticut, was recommended to Peabody. In 1854 Junius and his family arrived in London to join George Peabody & Co. When the elite's concocted American Civil War broke out, Peabody and Junius Morgan raised loans for the North. It appears JunIus played both sides of the war. Ralph Epperson claims Junius was one of the Rothschild agents who shipped supplies to the South. When Peabody retired in 1864 Junius took over the business. The firm was re-named JS. Morgan & Co. That same year Junius' son, J.P. Morgan, became a junior partner in the firm. A year later J.P. left for America to represent the firm in the New York. After the end of the Franco-Prussian War, Junius Morgan was called on to help restore the French etonomy. Around this time his bank was talked of as a rival to the Rothschild's New Court, but Junius was a Rothschild agent, when he prospered so prospered the Rothschilds and the Illuminati. J.S. Morgan & Co. was one of the Rothschild's great power tools in the United States. In 1869 JunIus' son, J.P. Morgan went to London to met with the Rothschilds. They laid out the plans to form Northern Securities, a company that would act as an agent for New Court in the US. J.P. ruling as a proxy for the family. In 1871 Junius' son, J.P. Morgan, made an alliance with Tony Drexel, heir to the powerful Philadelphia bank. Their firm - Drexel, Morgan & Co. -resided in an extravagant new building on Wall St., which is still Morgan headquarters today. After the Europeans got over their lack of confidence at the end of the CIvil War, money began to stream across the ocean to the US., providing massive profit for the firm. It set out to finance the growing number of industrial projects in America. The House of Morgan was getting extremely rich.

Junius retired in 1879 and J.P. took over JS. Morgan & Co., reorganizing It under the title J.P. Morgan & Co. "J.P. Morgan soon became a symbol of the growing centralization of American money." He was very monopolistic. His agents would create cartels through 'Morganization." By 1896 the IllumInati families Payne, Whitney and the Vanderbilts all bad money in Morgan-Guarantee Company which was run by the "J.P. Morgan and Guggenheim outfits."

At a certain point he controlled neariy half the American railroad system. He established the United States Steel Corp. ("based on Andrew Carnegie's Pittsburgh Steel mills") In 1901 by raising the "unprecedented" amount of $1.4 billion. J.P. was adept at creating financial syndicates for the Illuminati, joint efforts to further the "Great Plan." President Welliam Mckinley began prosecuting the Rothschild's Morgan-run Northern Securities under the anti-trust laws in 1900. In 1901 Mckinley ran for a second term and appointed a new vice-president, Theodore Roosevelt, a lock, stock and barrel Illuminatus. Less than a year later he was assassinated. When "Teddy" became president the prosecution of Northern Securities stopped. For this reason some people think Mckinley's death was ordered by J.P. Morgan and the Rothschilds. He was able to set up a syndicate, with the help of Rothschild agent, August Belmont, Jr., that bailed the U.S. out of a Treasury depletion. The syndicate raised $65 billion in gold. The sum would be repaid by an issue of bonds. J.P. received some criticism for the strict terms of the deal. For 5 months in early 1907, J.P. Morgan was in Europe, traveling back and forth between London and Paris, presumably visiting the Rothschild House's there. A. Ralph Epperson writes: "Apparentiy the reason Morgan was in Europe was because the decision was being made to have Morgan precipitate a bank panic in America. When he returned, he started rumors that the KnIckerbocker Bank in New York was insolvent." Panic ensued. People began a mass withdrawal of their deposits - a run. The Knickerbocker run had a domino effect, other banks had runs and the Panic of 1907 „was complete." J.P. Morgan oversaw the banking communities response to the Panic of 1907. The whole Incident helped the elite push for a central bank. One man who knew of the plot was historian Frederick Lewis Allen, who wrote in LIFE magazine: „...certain chroniclers have arrived at the ingenious conclusion that the Morgan interests took advantage of the unsettled conditions during the autumn of 1907 to precipitate the Panic, guiding It shrewdly as it progressed, so that it would kill off rival banks, and consolidate the pre-eminence of the banks within the Morgan orbit." The Panic of 1907 made people want a powerful central bank that could "protect" the common man from the "abuses of the Wall Street bankers." This whole thing eventually led to the creation of the Federal Reserve. One of the men with the Morgan financial groups was Harold Stanley. Stanley was a member of the Skull & Bones. After J.P.'s death a Morgan firm became Morgan, Stanley & Co. J.P. Morgan died in 1913. HIs son, Harvard educated J.P. Morgan, Jr. took over (most conspiratorial writers do not make a distinction between these two). J.P. Morgan, Jr ran the bank with a team of managers that was led by Thomas Lamont. Morgan, Jr was, like his father, a power-hungry international banker. He was famous for his handling of Immense foreign loans. Most Importantly J.P. Morgan, Jr appears to have followed in the footsteps of the former heads of the House of Morgan by working with the Rothschilds.

THE SCHIFF CONNECTION

Remember the Schiff family? In the first article I explained that they shared a residency in Frankfort, forever binding the two families. The Schiffs became Rothschild agents, and like most agents of the Rothschilds they eventually became very rich and powerful. The most prominent of the Schiffs was Jacob Henry Schiff. Jacob was born in Frankfort in 1847, and was sent by the Rothschild/Schiff network to America to make his fortune (Much like the Astors sent John Jacob Astor). Jacob Schiff arrived in New York in 1865. Ten years later he became the partner of the Illuminati firm Kuhn, Loeb & Company. Ten years after that he became Its president. Directing Rothschild and IllumInati affairs from this seat of authority. Jacob Schiff was also on the board of directors of Central Trust Company, Western Union. and Wells Fargo Company. Uke most elite, he gave vast amounts of money to charity. Philanthropy pays off in a big way to the ruling class.

JEKYLL ISLAND

The Illuminati interests wanted to create a Central Bank in America. They wanted to build the Federal Reserve. First, they needed a bunch of banking crisis' that would push public opinion towards a Federal Reserve system. These were provided by the Illuminati, including J.P. Morgan's Knickerbocker Panic of 190?. Second, they needed a favorable U.S. president in office. Rothschild agent Colonel House provided this by getting Woodrow Welson elected. The American people were being couditioned. To provide the 'reform of the American banking system" a congressional National Monetary Commission was created and a man related to the Rockefellers, Nelson Aldrich, was put in charge. For two years this Commission travel around Europe hob-nobbing with the IllumInati and getting directions as to how the central bank should be set up. Then the Commission returned in 1910, and Nelson Aldrich went to a secret meeting at the Jekyll Island Hunt Club in Georgia to write the legislation for an American central bank to be run by the IllumInati. Others at the Jekyll island meeting were these Illuminati men - A. Platt Andrew, Frank Vanderiip (of a Kuhn-Loeb & Company bank), Henry Davidson (of J.P. Morgan), Charies Norton (of a Morgan bank), Paul Warburg (of Kuhn-Loeb & Company and brother-in-law of Schiff), Benjamin Strong (of another Morgan company). Most of these men were connected to Jacob Schiff or J.P. Morgan, who in turn were agents for the House of Rothschild. The Jekyll Island Hunt Club was even owned by J.P. Morgan. The Federal Reserve bill was sneakily passed through congress in the winter of 1913 and President Woodrow Wilson signed the bill into law. The Illuminati, particularly the Rockefellers and Rothschilds, bad usurped the financial power of the United States. The first governor of the New York branch of the Federal Reserve was Benjamin Strong. The first governor of the FED's board of directors was Paul Warburg. Both connected to Schiff, J.P. Morgan, Jr, and the House of Rothschild. The FED has been an effective tool of the Illuminati and the Rothschilds, creating crisis such as the Great Depression (which J.P. Morgan, Jr was very involved in creating). Apparentiy (according to Congressman Louis McFadden), the Depression helped consolidate financial power over the US., putting It in the hands of the Rothschild banking alliance between J.P. Morgan's First National Bank group and Schiff's Kuhn, Loeb-run National City Bank. The Great Depression also lead to Roosevelt's New Deal.

WORLD WAR I

Rothschild connections to the first world war are an excellent example of controlled conflict. On the Allied side the British and French Houses financially supported their countries battles. Some Rothschilds were even soldiers, although they didn’t see much action. J.P. Morgan Bank was a big financial help to the Allied cause. It was the Allies "purchasing agent" until the U.S. entered the war. It also created a syndicate that financed „modernization" in China, to help defend that country against the Japanese threat. The elite wanted America in the war. Historian Charles Tansill noted: „... the large banking Interests were deeply interested in the World War because of wide opportunities for large profits. On August 3, 1914, even before the actual clash of arms, the French firm of Rothschild Freres cabled to Morgan and Company in New York suggesting the floatation of a loan of $100,000,000, a substantial part of which was to be left in the United States, to pay for French purchases of American goods.’ The Lusitania was a ploy. It was packed with some Morgan owned ammunition, had been given over to England as a member of the navy, and despite the warnings of the Germans was sent Into a naval war zone, specifically to be a target - the catalyst for America’s entrance to the war. A knowledgeable American State Department failed to warn the US. citizens aboard the ship of the voyages definite danger. Churchill ordered the Lusitanina’s naval escort to return to port, and the fated ship was left unprotected, to be sunk. Rothschild agent Colonel House probably knew of this plot, records point to a discussion of it between him and Sir Edward Grey of England. Historian Colin Simpson called the sinking of the Lusitania the "foulest act of willful murder ever committed on the seas.’ On the Axis side the Rothschild network was also funneling money. Another family allied to the Rothschilds was the Warburgs. Max Warburg, brother of Kuhn-Loeb’s Paul Warburg. ran a family financial powerhouse in Frankfort, Germany (one of the reasons the Rothschilds were able to liquidate their Frankfort bank, the Warburgs would run things). Max was the head of the German secret police during WWI. The Warburg connection is reported to have helped the Axis powers financially. At the end of the war in 1919, the Treaty of Versailles meetings were attended by Rothschild connected men like Paul and Max Warburg, John Foster Dulles (of Kuhn-Loeb), Colonel House, Thomas Lamont (of Morgans) and Allen Dulles (of Kuhn-Loeb). The harsh terms of the Treaty of Versailles totally set the stage for World War II. Said one delegate: ‘This is no peace; this is only a truce for twenty years." Sure enough, in 1939 the second World War started. Another product of the Versailles meetIngs was the elite’s Charter for the League of Nations - the Illuminati’s first attempt at creating a global institution. The League of Nations failed. This called for the need to create a think tank/special Interest organization that could promote the new world order. Thus the creation of the Foreign Relations Institutions - the CFR., RIIA, etc. This will be discussed in a bit. World War I helped create a Communist State.

Max Warburg funded Lenin and his revolutionaries. Jacob Schiff gave a known $20 million to Lenin. J.P. Morgan & Co. helped finance the Bolshevik revolution.

Alfred de Rothschild also helped finance the Bolsheviks.

WORLD WAR II

The second World War was also controlled by Illuminati and Rothschild interests. The Great Depression did not only occure in America. It also swept Europe. The economic depression in Europe, coupled with an extremely harsh Versailles Treaty helped fan the flames of the nationalistic fires that swept Germany.

Hitier was a member of the most powerful occultic secret society in Germany. He penetrated the inner circle of this society where Satanism was practiced. Hitler was dedicated to Satan’s Empire - an evil puppet. He was brought into this evil group by Dietrich Eckart who is supposed to have said on his deathbed: "Follow Hitler. He will dance, but It is I who have called the tune! I have initiated him into the ‘Secret Doctrine’; opened his centers in vision and given him the means to communicate with the Powers. Do not mourn for me: I shall have influenced history more than any German.’ In the last article we discussed the possibility of Hitler having been of Rothschild descendance. Consider this - he probably had satanic bloodline, he had the backing of a powerful satanic society, he had sold his soul to Satan, and he had the financial backing of the Illuminati. is it any wonder that he rose from obscurity, poverty and Imprisonment to become one of the most powerful men to ever live? I believe that It is even safe to specuiate that Hitler was totally controlled by a demonic spirit(s); that he simply gave himself over to Satan’s control. An ex-member of the Satanic Hierarchy of the Illuminati expressed a belief to me that there have been certain evil men through-out history that have totally given themselves over to possession by Satan. That these men (Hitler, Ghengis Khan, for example) have been anti-christ types, simply human containers for the residence of a very powerful demonic spirit, or even Satan himself. The ex-illuminati member believed that when Satan no longer had need for the body of his anti-christ he would discard It with death and find another willing soul to sacrifice his bodily control to the devil. These evil figures would not be ‘The" Anti-Christ, explained the informant, but would have allowed themselves to taken over by "the spirit" of the Anti-Christ. This is just a theory, but I believe it has certain merit. If it is true, it paints an interesting picture of Hitler and the ruling class that created him. Hitler’s main source of economic power was from the I.G. Farben chemical cartel, and I.G. Farben in turn was controlled by the Illuminati. The I.G. Farben cartel was created by loans from Wall Street in what has been called the Dawes plan. Carroll QuIgley calls the Dawes Plan "largely a J.P. Morgan production." The J.P. Morgan Group set up the loan to I.G. Farben, which created Hitler. „Without the capital supplied by Wall Street, there would have been no I.G. Farben in the first place, and almost certainly no Adolf Hitler and Worid War II." Henry Ford merged his German assets with I.G. Farben in 1928. The cartel created the lethal Zyklon B gas that was used to exterminate the Jews. It was also involved in the torture experimentations that led to mind control methods, such as Monarch Programming. Do you see what happened? A Rothschild agent set up a cartel that was directly involved in the horrible persecution of the Jews. Still the family maintains the illusion of being totally supportive of their race. At first Germany had a significant disadvantage if they were to embark on a second world war. The nation had a fuel shortage, but the Illuminati fixed this problem. The Germans were able to fight WWII through the use of synthetic fuels that were created by the hydrogenation process (turning coal into gasoline). This process was discovered by I.G. Farben. Hydrogenation technology would not have been fully developed by WWII, but I.G. Farben made a deal with Rockefeller’s Standard Oil, who was able to complete the research, facilitating the war. Interestingly, I.G. Farben plants were not targeted by the bombing raids on Germany. By the end of the war the refineries had experienced only 15% damage. William Dodd, American ambassador to Germany before WWII, wrote President Roosevelt: "At the present moment, more than a hundred American corporations have subsidiaries here or cooperative understandings. „The DuPonts have their allies in Germany that are aiding in the armament business. Their chief ally is the I.G. Farben Company... „Standard Oil Company ... sent $2,000,000 here in December, 1933 and has made $500,000 a year helping Germans limprove hydrogenation technology] ... „The International Harvester Company president told me their business here rose 33% year, but they could take nothing [earnings] out [except in goods]. ‘Even our airplanes people have secret arrangements with Krupps. ‘General Motors Company [which was controlled by the J.P. Morgan Group] and Ford do enormous business here through their subsidiaries and take no profits out." Germany needed the capital of these, and many more American companies in order to wage a war. I.G. Farben had a holding company in the United States called American I.G. Farben. Paul Warburg, his brother Max (head of Germanies secret police during WWI), and Warburg agent Herman Metz were some of the members of the board of directors of the American I.G. Farben. Other directors included Rockefeller/International banking men (Edsel Ford, Charies Mitchell, Walter Teagle, etc) . Three Germans on the Board of Governors were convicted as war criminals after the war, but the elite Americans fore-mentioned were not, even though they participated in the same criminal decisions as those who were punished. According to author Eustice Mullins, Hitier met with Allen and John Foster Dulles in 1933. The Dulles brothers were acting as legal representatives of Schiff and Warburg’s Kuhn, Loeb & Co, which was an Integral part of the Rothschild network. Mullins claims Kuhn & Loeb had extended large short-term credits to Germany, and needed to ensure the repayment of these loans. The Dulles supposedly assured Hitler he would receive the funds necessary to be installed as Chancellor of Germany, if he promised to repay the debts. One of the largest tank manufacturers for Germany was Opel, which was controlled by the J.p. Morgan Group. Another company connected to the J.p. Morgan Group was Bendix Aviation, ‘which supplied data [to

Germany] on automatic pilots, aircraft Instruments and aircraft and diesel engine starters.’ The examples go on and on. There is much more that could be written on this subject. The manufactured Pearl Harbor attack allowed Roosevelt to enter America into the war. A second worid war had been created by the Illuminati, with the help of the Rothschild/Morgan/Warburg/Schiff syndicate. After the end of the war, the Tribunals that investigated Nazi war criminals censored "any materials recording Western assistance to Hitler," said historian Antony C. Sutton.

GLOBALISM

World War II facilitated the American acceptance of a giobal ‘peacekeeping" institution - the United Nations. After the U.S. had rejected the first attempt to create such an institution in the League of Nations, the illuminatI decided to create an arm of the Rothschild funded Round Table groups which could help influence western society towards the embracement of globalism. The original idea was to create an international special interest group of advisors that would promote a New World Order, called the Institute of on International Affairs. The plan eventually changed, the Institute was split up so that separate groups could influence separate governments without having the appearance of a conspiracy. These groups were formed at what are called the Hotel Majestic meetings. Baron #1 Edmond de Rothschild of France was the main force behind these meetings, and all the founders of these groups were men who had met with his approval. Chief of these was Rothschild agent Colonel Edward Mandell House. One of these groups was the CFR.. The CFR Handbook of 1936 explains how It was established. ‘On May 30, 1919, several leading members of the delegations to the Paris Peace Conference met at the Hotel Majestic in Paris to discuss setting up an international group which would advise their respective governments on international affairs.... It was decided at this meeting to call the proposed organization the Institute of International Affairs. At a meeting on June 5, 1919, the planners decided it would be best to have separate organizations cooperating with each other. Consequentiy, they organized the Council on Foreign Relations, with headquarters in New York. and a sister organization, the Royal Institute of International Affairs [RIIA], in London, also known as the Chatham House Study Group, to advise the British Government. A subsidiary organization, the Institute of Pacific Relations, was set up to deal exclusively with Far Eastern Affairs [and facilitated the Pearl Harbor attack] . Other organizations were set up in Paris and Hamburg, the Hamburg branch being called the Institut fur Auswartige Politik. and the Paris branch being known as Centre d’Etudes de Politicque Etrangere..." I have never seen any research on the Institut fur Auswartige Politik in Germany. It wouid be interesting to see how this group was Involved with the elite and the creation of WWII.

A group of Illuminati wise men took the plans laid out at the Hotel Majestic meetings and formed the CFR. The founders included; Colonel Edward Mandell

House (a Rothschild agent), John Foster Dulles (of Rothschild connected Kuhn, Loeb & Co.), and Allen Dulles (also of Kuhn, Loeb & Co.).

The CFR was officially founded on July 29, 1921. Money for the founding came from J.P. Morgan, Bernard Baruch, Otto Kahn, Jacob Schiff, Paul Warburg, and

John D. Rockefeller, among others. The funding for the RIIA in London came primarily from the Astor family. Rothschild-connected Paul Warburg was on the original board of directors of the CFR.

As you can clearly see, the Rothschild network had significant influence in the creation of the foreign relation groups. This influence continues today. The Rothschild’s power within the secret "Society of the Elect" and the Round Table Groups extended to the semi-publIc CFR, RIIA, etc. The House of Rothschild was up in arms with their feilow elites; managing the creation of the New World Order. Should there be a part 3 to this series, it will Investigate individual Rothschilds from the worid war era up into the modern day world, and their continuing involvement in the Illuminati.

Bibliography:

Cowles, Virginia. THE ROTHSCHILDS: A FAMILY FORTUNE. New York: Alfred A Knopf, Inc., 1973

Sampson, Anthony. THE MONEY LENDERS. New York: Penguin Books, 1983

Morton, Frederic. THE ROTHSCHILDS: A FAMILY PORTRAIT. New York: Collier Books, 1991

Wechsberg, Joseph. THE MERCHANT BANKERS. New York: Pocket Books, 1968

Still, William. NEW WORLD ORDER. Lafayette, Louisiana: Huntington House Publishers, 1990

Sutton, Antony C. AMERICA'S SECRET ESTABLISHMENT: AN INTRODUCTION TO THE ORDER OF SKULL & BONES. Liberty House Press

Mullins, Eustace. THE WORLD ORDER. Boring, OR: CPA Book Publisher, 1985

Epperson, A. Ralph. THE UNSEEN HAND. Tucson, Arizona: Publius Press, 1985

A NOTE ABOUT THE KRUPPS OF GERMANY

It has been said by an Illuminati informant that the Krupp ramily is part of the Illuminati. It is clear that that the Krupp family must be at least in agreement to the plans of the Illuminati. This can be said because of the extensive power of the Krupps. The Krupps were the primary producers of the big guns for the German army in W.W.I. Lenin wanted the Krupps to help him make the Russian steppes productive. The Krupps have produced agricultural equippment, and train locomotives as well as tanks. After W.W. I had ended, the head of the Krupp family, Gustav Krupp von Bohlen und Halbach, began secretly planning to rebuild Germany's military might. Gustav Krupp bought coal mines after W.W. I with an eye on using them for future weapons production. After the Allied Control Commission departed Germany in 1928, Krupp factories began secretly turning out a few tanks particularly at Krupp's Garusonwerk Factory. The Christian Science Monitor which ties in with the occult system sent reporters to Krupps factories during the 1920s to report on how well the Germans were complying with the Versailles Treaty limitations. The reporters gave a clean bill of health to the Krupp factories even though the reporters should have questioned why all their film was destroyed during factory tours (infared rays were beamed Into their film while they toured Krupps factories.) Prussian-trained Gustav Krupp had married the daughter of Friedrich Krupp whose name was Bertha. Bertha was a powerful woman, and sole owner in 1902 of one of Germany's largest steel firms. The Krupps have lived above Essen, German in a hugh palace called Villa Huegel, whose small wing has 60 rooms. They also have other castles and villas. At one time they owned (as far as I know they still do) a castle in the Austrian Alps named Bluehnbach. Gustav Krupp hosted and was one of the leaders of a secret group of 12 powerful German industrialists called the Ruhrlade which secretly made Germany's industrial decisions during the Weimar Republic. This group also made political decisions. In 1932, Krupp began to help HItler. The secret governing body of the Ruhrlade covered their meetings behind the cover of having lavish hunting parties. The Illuminati kept close tabs and gave secret support to Hitler on his rise to power. Illuminatus William Randolph Hearst had his chief European correspondent William Bayard Hale met with Hitler early in the 1920s at Hale's lavish suite at the Hotel Bayrisher Hof.

PART 3. THE ROTHSCHILDS TODAY

by Fritz Springmeier

Introduction to Part 3. The Rothschilds are one of the most prominent of the top thirteen Illuminati families. This newsletter has been singling out each of the top thirteen Illuminati families for a feature article. Articles in this newsletter have already been done on the Astor, Buady, Collins, DuPont, Freeman, U, Kennedy, Onassis, and Van Duyn families. The Rockefellers were featured in a December 1992 article just prior to this series. Because there is more Information out about the

Rothschilds than some of the other families, I decided to write more than just one feature article about them.

Reviewing the recent newsletter articles.

The first set of my recent Rothschild articles consisted of my Introduction and then main article. The Introduction covered the hidden lineages of the Springs, the Payseurs, the Beatty family and Abraham Lincoln. The main article by David Smith covered the 18th and 19th centuries of Rothschild power. The second set of articles again consisted of my introduction along with a main article. In my Introduction I covered some about their secret power, their power in Latin America, and their secret power to manipulate financial things without playing the same rules as others play. David Smith's main article covered the Rothschild's influence in history in the late 19th century and during the 20th century.

The Rothschilds a daily threat

My desire was to have an article about what the Rothschild's are doing today. One of my most dangerous opponents in this area to the work I'm doing against the Monarch program is a secret Rothschild descendent. I know Monarch slaves who were created to serve the Rockefeller family, the Russell family, the 13th Holy Blood Family, the Li family and the CollIns family. I also know Monarch slaves who were created to serve the Rothschilds. From what I have been told and also from just personal observation, all of the top 13 IllumInati families are involved in the creation of Monarch slaves. It goes without saying that It is Impossible to be a high level Satanist and not have MPD. Any person without MPD would go insane after participating in high level Illuminati rituals. It can't be stated with certainty that all Illuminati members (by Illuminati I mean members of the first pyramidal structure diagrammed in the Jan. 1, '93 newsletter and in the Feb. I Issue) have been through Monarch programming today, but it can be stated with certainty that they all suffer from multiple personality disorder. This means that the Rothschilds in this country and in Canada and the U.K.. have closely collaborated with the highest levels of the intelligence community and the military. Who initiated my phone being tapped? At any rate, the Rothschilds and their satanic power is here in America, and people need to understand that.

The first great temple.

The Illuminati are building their temples secretly throughout the United States. The last issue of this newsletter described the massive pyramid that has been built at Los Vegas. Pyramids have also been built at San Francisco (the Trans-America building) and in Chicago, and in other eastern places. The San Francisco building was built by people with ties to the Rockefellers. Just north of San Francisco and east of the Bohemian Grove is the Napa Valley of California. Anton LaVey moved to Napa Valley after his split with Aquino. LaVey ran a construction company during the 1910. out of Napa, CA. (As an aside, Anton LaVey's chief representative in our Portland area is Rex „Diablos" Church, who grew up as Rex Nance in Seaside High School on the Oregon coast. Rex worked at the drug store at Broadway and Holiday at Seaside during high school. Two years after high school he returned to his hometown with his head shaved and wearing black in LaVey fashion. He had a stripper who dressed in black who was a Satanist as his girl friend for a while in the Portland area. According to Rex's own words, he grew up in a secret Satanic family and was baptized to Satan as a child. Rex and his Satanic friends have schemed how to hurt the Christians. How many of their devious plans have succeeded I do not know. Also of Interest is that Rex lived a good deal with his what has been reported as Jehovah's Witness grandparents.) With the Church of Satan feeling comfortable in Napa, it is not surprising that tbe Baron and Baroness Phillipi de Rothschild picked the area to build a secret temple to Satan.

Also as readers of this newsletter know, these people have been constructing castles and other large buildings on spiritual ley lines for centuries, so it goes without saying that when this secret temple was built in Napa, that the Icy lines were at least considered in choosing a site. The Baron Rothschild began the construction of a pyramid in Napa Valley, which his wife completed after he died. The pyramid is called Opus 1. According to one of the contractors who participated in building the

pyramid, the project cost $35 million. The various construction cost reports given the public have been much less than what this contractor has said was the real cost of the building. The theme of the numbers 3 and 6 runs throughout the large Opus i pyramid building. as well as the number 666. Also little circles frequently appear.

The name of the building is Opus 1, which means the First Work. It's cover or front for the temple is that It is a winery. The winery operates very strangely to a legitimate winery. The entire project of buying the land, building Opus 1, and operating it has been shrouded in secrecy. The wineries in California when they open traditionally and normally are open to the public. The opening ceremonies of Opus 1 were shrouded in secrecy. The opening announcement was low key and only select people and select International media types were Invited. This opening is extremely unusual for a winery in the Napa Valley area. Private guided tours are very hard to obtain of Opus 1, in contrast to the other wineries in Napa Valley. Further, the estate that the winery (temple) sits on is very protected and secluded. The wrought iron gates are always closed. However, I was able to get a first hand report from a group of three that managed to view Opus 1. During the tour this group saw many occult and satanic items, and yet large areas of the winery (temple) were closed off to even this private tour group. The winery is not constructed even remotely similar to any winery in the Us. The project began as a joint venture between Robert Mondavi and Baron Rothschild in 1979. The land was secretly purchased and in the late 1960s construction quietly began using contractors from far away. Strangely, the Napa Valley Register which reports on all building activity remained extremely quiet about what was being built. From the air, the construction forms a masonic square and compass. On the Inside hidden stairwells and other hidden features have been built in. The capstone of the pyramid has a rotunda where skylight penetrates the capstone and where viewers can get a view of the entire Napa Valley. There have numerous Rothschilds who have entered Into the various Masonic rites. For Instance, Louis Rothschild was a 32° Scottish Rite Mason in Chicago during the 1890's. The reason for this is that Freemasonry is used as type of early class for those who are in the Illuminati to get them familiar with the symbols of the Mystery religions and give them more practice with hand signals, rituals, and secrecy. Orchids, which are used by the Mothers of Darkness, are grown all over the area. Orchids are the only type of flower grown on the site, and they are cared for by apparently Mothers of Darkness who are dressed in all black, which is the standard color of garb of the Mothers of Darkness. The pyramid was built with limestone from Texas. No doubt there is some occult significance to the site that the limestone came from. The limestone itself has fossils, which have been hidden from easy view for some reason. (Remember the ancient Egyptian pymmids used limestone.) Originally Opus I was scheduled to open around the Summer Solstice but the date was shifted to Weds., Oct. 30, 1991 which is the day before Halloween. Since the opening day, the Rothschilds have had events scheduled around Satanic high days. Those who are familiar with the occult know that these events are covers for Satanic rituals which are held secretly. The land has wrought iron gates which are locked at all times. Some of the occult Items which private visitors saw within the pyramid were: a book on wine depicting orgies by Salvadore Dailey who is a Satanist, a blue-black picture with naked ritual dancers, and other strange occultic pieces of art (such as an oil painting of what looked like Satan). Massive draconian oak doors are built facing the hail that leads to the room where wine is tasted. Mirrors abound in the place. The guilded art work on the mirrors is often Rococo. The Baroness personally designed and furnished the Interior. The upside down peace sign is found designed in some of the furniture as barren trees. Two trees of life from Peru are by the fireplace. The tree of life is by the way very Important to this level of the Illuminati. The visitors also saw 3 Mouton ceremonial drinking cups with rams, and chairs which had the carvings on the front arms/legs of fully formed demons were found in one of the rooms. The foyer looks like the Inside of a snail or „corkscrewy." Much of the furnishings were purchased by the Baroness Rothschild from the De Medicis. It has various marble floors and tables set with orchids. The stainless steel and the floors in the winery are immaculate. The workers who work there were scrutinized closely before being hIred. Originally, the wine workers were required to were black pants and white shirts, but the workers who had to stomp the grapes were unhappy about the uniform requirements. I have been trying to follow the Rothschild family with Its many branches. Although the Rothschilds are seen as great internationalists, don’t be surprised If some of the people of the Rothschilds seem somewhat middleclass, For instance, in the Millington, MI NE of Flint, MI one family dominates the tows. This family is the Bauer family. Stan Bauer was a man who mysteriously simply attracted material possessions to himself without any visible source of money. His son Harold Bauer a 32° Mason who sat on the Houghton Lake city council. His next son Terry Bauer was also a Mason, also had a position in local government and was on the school beard. His daughter Barbers Bauer married Jim Hagger who was also a Mason who lived in Grand Blanc south of Flint. There is certainly more that could be said about the satanic Rothschild bloodline, but this is where I will bring this article to a close, with the statement that, Lord Welling, I will write more about them later.

Bloodlines of Illuminati

By:

Fritz Springmeier, 1995

The Russell Bloodline

THE WATCHTOWER & THE ILLUMINATI

Last year in the Jan. ’93 newsletter I wrote an artide about the Illuminati and the Watchtower Society. Recently, on Dec. 10, ’93, Texe Marrs interviewed me over international short wave radio about the 1990 book "The Watchtower and the Masons." Having got a good response from the short wave radio interview, it is only appropriate that this newsletter starts off the new year with another article on the Watchtower Society and the Illuminati. Because of numerous problems within the congregations of Jehovah’s Witnesses with Satanic Ritual Abuse, the Watchtower Society put out an article in the Oct. 8, 1991 issue of the magazine. Lee Waters of Bethel Headquarters kept a file on his computer of Jehovah’s Witnesses who were reported to be victims of SKA. It is possible headquarters has told him to delete the file. Another man who was at headquarters who is now believed out of the Society was also well informed of SRA among the congregations of Jehovah’s Witnesses. In fact, two J.W.s who had actually been in the Illuminati while J.W.s but had broken free, confronted the Governing Body and headquarters with their evidence of the Illuminati operating within the membership of the Jehovah’s Witnesses.

What was the response of the WF leaders? To simply ignore and coverup the evidence. The actions of the Governing Body in squelching any serious action against the high level Satanism secretly operating within the Jehovah’s Witnesses shows what my Be Wise A Serpents book revealed, which is that very secret high level Satanism has long been controlling the Watchtower Society. One of these 2 eyewitnesses to Illuminati activities within the higher levels of the Watchtower Society realized that something is seriously wrong at the top, when the WF leaders do not really care for those people in the congregations who are becoming the victims of SRA. One elder in good standing lost his position because be warned the WT Society of satanic infiltration. It is obvious that the Watchtower organization is more interested in public relations than it is in having a clean organization. In examining the families that are involved with the Illuminati who use the Watchtower Society as a cover, we find a continuation of the same pattern as I noticed before: there is a large contingent of Scottish and a large Jewish bloodlines. For instance, one J.W. Illuminati family was the Udell family (Scottish name) who married Picketson Milliken (English maiden name with Jewish first husband).

This type of combination typifies so many of the elite who I have researched. In the Be Wise As Serpents book, chapter 1.11 discusses how the Satanism within the Illuminati and the Watchtower Society could be tracked by an understanding of Enochian magic. Readers may want to refer back to that chapter after reading this paragraph. The Illuminati operating within the Watchtower Society use the Enochian Language which has its own language and its own Enochian alphabet (letters in boxes). According to eyewitnesses who have left the J.W. part of the Illuminati, the Enochian alphabet is known and used as the cult language by those Illuminati operating in the high levels of the Watchtower Society. In other words, their ceremonies are done in this ritual Enochian language. Sir William Sinclair in the 16th century was one of those who introduced Enochian Magic to Scotland. The Scottish connection in the Watchtower Society is overpowering. Both the Russell and the

Rutherford families came from Scotland as well as MacMillan and many other key eariy Watchtower leaders. From this it appears that the Scottish type of Illuminatism that created the early Watchtower Society has always practiced Enochian magic. Remember from the Be Wise As Serpents book that knowing the Watchtowers is the key to Enochian magic. The same type of winged-sun-disk that C.T. Russell used was also used on the .... Magic. Two phrases that were popular among satanists who practiced Enochian Magic in Rumli's day were ‘Millennial Dawn and ‘Golden Age.’ The following are some of the Illuminati operating within the Watchtower Society today (names may be spelled incorrectly in some cases):

Chris family - Domelie family-Irish bloodline

Karrls - JW Overseer in Miami, FL Prince George McKee-Monroeville, AL Melers, or Myer-Jewish Satanic bloodline.

Sharon Russell - left the Illuminati, still a JW, worked with police showing ritual sites.

Princess Proud Swift - lived in Delaware, with the travel industry Jim Tifton-important WT official and elder in So. Calif. A secret Satanic serial murderer.

Walt family - Woomer family- The areas which have been identified as strong Satanic stronghold within the Watchtower religious empire are:

Southern California (cap. San Bernadino Valley), Florida, the Carribean, Scotland, Bethel Headquarters in Brooklyn, and various places in New York. I expect that this list of strongholds is very incomplete. According to an eye witness of the Illuminati within the Watchtower Society the following items can be ascertained:

· Some type of trauma based mind control is being used to create MPD and control children born into the Illuminati within the WF Society.

· The rank and file JWs have no awareness that the WT Society has a secret upper level of involvement. (Note, I identified this upper level in my chart explaining how religions are controlled by Satanism.)

· The Illuminati within the Jehovah’s Witnesses have a hidden agenda that is separate from the published goals of the WT Society, although they also support many of the goals of the Society.

RITUAL SITES.

Beside rituals taking place in the above mentioned stronghold areas, it is of value to point out that one of the rituals that I have found out about took place when a boat load of generational satanic JWs went to the Bahamas (believed to be Andros Is.) and had a ritual at a high place. This was in 1958.

Related items.

There are three items which relate to what has been described above.

· There is a particular man who is well informed about the WT Society who is able to explain bow the WE Society is interlocked with a lot of major corporations.

· As a consequence of how connected the WT Society is with politics, big business, etc. the WE Society has been closely watched by the FBI which has over 12,000 pages in its files on the WT Society alone. This figure does not include its extensive files on individuals, of which everyone of the WE Society Presidents has had a file.

· The WT Society performs a secret ritual every year which is their primary ritual. This ritual is actually the ancient gnostic (satanic) ritual of saying no to the body of Christ. This ancient satanic ritual is now secretly practiced under the disguise of the Memorial Supper - where the elements of communion are passed and no one partakes of the elements. (When I say ‘no one’ I mean that in a qualified sense-only a small group are allowed to partake. The actual figures of how many partake of the elements is a totally fictitious figure according to my sources, which is created at Bethel headquarters in Brooklyn.

· Canadian citizens who have tried to find out why the Watchtower Society in Canada is allowed to evade taxes, have been stonewalled by government officials. MacGregor Ministries newsletter News & Views, Oct. 1993, p. 10 discusses how various people have tried to expose the Watchtower’s avoidance of the GST and how the Minister of Finance, the Minister of National Revenue and many other government groups have simply stonewalled people. The fax no. of one of the most powerful committees of the Watchtower Society is the WT Service Dept. whose fax no. is 718-6244030. This newsletter will continue to bring articles on the various branches of Satan’s One World Religion which includes the Mormon authority structure, the Catholic authority structure, the Pentecostal and the Jehovah’s Witnesses authority structures just to name a few.

One of the strangest things for this Author was to continue running into evidence that seems to indicate Charles Taze Russell, the man who started the Jehovah’s Witnesses’ Watchtower Society, was secretly an important Satanist. Lest the reader devalue the evidence, permit this author to state that the evidence came in first before I came up with my theory that Russell was an important Satanist, and not vice-versa. Some of the outstanding clues are:

a.) C.T. Russell was definitely a Mason, yet he puts up some great smokescreens in his writing concerning his membership.

b.) C.T. Russell’s Bethel staff became concerned about his occultic activities and required him to take an oath forswearing any further occultic activities.

c.) In my previous book The Watchtower and the Masons, I study 35 parallel beliefs that Russell had with Masonry. I spent a page per parallel. These 35 are not in any way inclusive, Russell had many other identical ideas to what the Masonic lodges propogate.

d.) Various items from magic were part of Russell’s religious beliefs including healing handkerchiefs, phrenology, the Winged-Sun-Disk, Enochian Magical planes, etc.

e.) Russell’s family’s possible Illuminati links, and his wife’s possible connections with a family line of Satanists.

f.) Russell’s apparent secret Rosicrucian membership with the Quakertown, PA group of Rosicrucians, as revealed by the pyramid he ordered erected, his use of the Winged-Sun-Disk. and his cremation three days after his death.

g.) Russell owned a cemetary in Pittsburgh. Leading Satanists try to own cemetaries for several reasons. First, it facilitates the disposal of human sacrifices which are buried in pieces below the fresh holes dug for someone else’s burial. When the casket is placed in the hole, it would be rare for anyone to dig below the casket level ever again. Second, magic power is associated with cemetaries. The spiritual power of the dead is pulled up by making a circle of light over them then within the circle a naked Satanist lays. Third, specific bones are sought such as the skulls and left hands. Left hands are preserved in order to hold candles for certain ceremonies.

h.) Contacts from various places today indicate that the modern Watchtower Society is working with the New World Order. This implies that at some point the Society began cooperating with the New World Order. Russell seems to be the likeliest starting point.

UNDERSTANDING CHARLES T. RUSSELL

As with all occult organizations a veil of secrecy is maintained by requiring initiates to take secrecy oaths on penalty of death. As in Witchcraft, Masonry repeatedly demands secrecy oaths at every new level. Charles T. Russell began participating in this secrecy when he took the Entered Apprentice (first Masonic degree) oath on penalty of mayhem and violent death, "I ... do hereby and hereon most solemnly and sincerely promise and swear that I will always hail, ever conceal and never reveal any of the arts, parts or points of the secret arts and mysteries of ancient Freemasonry which I received, am about to receive, or may hereafter be instructed in ..."

NOTES

1. Confidential interviews with ex-Satanists.

2. Interview by Dr. Al Carlisle with a Black Prince recorded in Stratford, L. Satan's Underground. p. 144.

Should the reader allow, I will quote from the Power's own statements plus other proof to show that this god, the god of the world, is Lucifer (aka Satan, Sanat, Venus, etc.) For thousands of years, The Plan for world domination has been passed down from occult generation to occult generation. Spaced every 28 is a Feast of the Beast, a year-long holiday during which Satanists receive new instructions from Satan on how to carry out The Plan.' We read of the great holiday and its Great Councils in Externalization of the Hierarchy, when Satan's instrument Alice Bailey writes, "The past year... has, however, been the year in which the greatest spiritual Approach of all time has shown itself to be possible - an Approach for which the initiates and Masters have for centuries been preparing, and for which all the Wesak Festivals since the meeting of the Great Council in 1925 have been preparatory. I have, in past instructions, referred to the great meetings held at intervals by Those to Whom is entrusted the spiritual guidance of the planet and particularly of man." (Externalisation of the Hierarchy, p. 389.)

ONE SAMPLE OF THEIR PLANS

As example of how ingenius these plans are to create a One-World-Government consider the following part of it. The Drug War is not what it seems. It is a very ingenious scheme to enslave the American people, and destroy all their civil rights. The first rumblings of the Drug War part of The Plan seem to stir from the occult, so it is highly possible the Drug War originally was first developed by Satanists, perhaps even given during one of the Feasts of the Beast. The Drug War seems like the perfect plan, with no way for the Power to lose. First, the Power creates a drug culture in America. The Drug Culture would and did give many their first step into the Aquarian (New Age) conspiracy.[6] The Power would make billions of dollars by running drugs, to further finance other nefarious schemes, and could use their world-wide power to crush all their competitors. When the Power crushed and arrested their competitors in drug running, they would be hailed as heros by the majority of people. (And they have.) The introduction of drugs into society does several things. It taxes the Christian church's ability to oppose immorality. It gets the public indignent about drugs, and the public's moral outcry allows the Power to pass "drug" laws that remove the last vestiges of legal civil rights. In fact, the beguiled public demands the laws which abolish their rights, and applauds these laws in ignorance unknowing what the laws actually say and mean. If the public somehow gets a complete picture that their government has been smuggling drugs to create a drug war in spite of the controlled media, or perhaps through the media at the right time, then they can create a scandal involving several U. S. Presidents to eliminate the U . S. government and switch the public's alligience to a world government. (See chapter 3.9 for more details and a chronology of the secretly planned escalation of today's designed Drug War.) As an ex-Mason, who is very aware of their plans, said to this author, "These people are in it for the long-term."

THE BLOODLINE OF THE RUSSELLS

The purpose of this next subsection may be misunderstood, unless I make myself clear at this point. This author has not established any link between the various famous Russells. (Although I have been doing genealogy work, I have not had the chance to do the long term geneology work required to clarify the issue, if the reader is dissatisfied with the extent of this information, he is encouraged that rather than criticize to research it himself.) The reader will observe by the time he finishes this book, that this author has done extensive research into many groups. One item that has popped up consistently is that people with the surname Russell repeatedly appear as important figures in the various elements of the World Order as it has developed. Before becoming aware of the One World Order, this Author had no inkling how important blood lines have been for the elite that controls the world. Friendships have also played a role, for instance, Eleanor Roosevelt (who was involved in numerous communist organizations' and was an actual card carrying member of the American communist party) was a close friend and confidant to Ronald Reagon's mother. This seems trivial, but the reoccurance of blood lines and the reoccurant discovery of connections of friendships between what have been thought of as unrelated personages, compels one to believe the elite is more compact than appears. (More on that later) The mysterious Watchtower Society and its founder Charles Taze Russell will serve as perhaps the most used example in this book of an organization that is secretly serving the New World Order. (The reader will be presented with the history of all this throughout the book, especially in chapters 5-17 of the first section.) Chapter 1 .8 will go into more details on what circumstantial evidence there is that might lead one to believe that Charles T. Russell was a Satanist. The author is aware that there are Jehovah's Witnesses that are covert Satanists.8 The Russell family appears to have moved from Germany to Scotland and from Scotland to northern Ireland. In the 1820's Alexander G. Russell went to New York City and then onto Orange Co., NY. He could write firsthand how good it was. When the Potato famine hit during the 1820s, the Russells did not have the roots to Ireland that the original Irish had, and the rest of the family moved to America, except for Fannie's husband Alexander Harper, who stayed behind in Donegal estranged from his wife. The family tree looked like this:

(Picture missing)

Let's comment about the type of Russells that keep appearing throughout the course of the history of the New World Order as this author went about his research. To summarize, these various Russells (who until the genealogy work is done to show the connections should be viewed as individuals -- not a group) have been prominent members of the Illuminati, the Masons, the Fabians, the Mormons, the Jehovah's Witnesses, the Jesuits, the Royal Society, and the Media controlled by those of the New World Order, and a deputy chairman of the Federal Reserve. Typically they have been merchants and lawyers, with a fair share of them also as Christian heretics. It will be easier perhaps to illustrate how the Russells keep popping up in the New World Order story line by listing a good sampling of them.

SAMPLE OF RUSSELLS OF INTEREST

RUSSELLS WHO FOUNDED FRATERNAL SOCIETIES

William Huntington Russell - founder of what is believed to be an american chapter of the Illuminati (Skull & Bones Order).9 More on this in chapter 2.3. It's legal name is Russell Trust.

John Russell - founder of the fraternity of Daughters of Isabella (DOI) in May, 1897 in New Haven, Conn.10

RUSSELLS CONNECTED TO FRATERNAL ORGANIZATIONS

Charles Taze Russell - Knights Templar Mason of York Rite, in Allegheny Pa. and founder of the WT Society.

Harvey D. Russell - KT Mason leader of Pittsburgh, PA Beaver Valley Lodge No. 8412

John Russell - Pastor C . T. Russell's step-mother was executor of his will. His mother was the one chosen to dance with famous Mason and Illuminatus Lafayette when he was in Philadelphia.'13

William H. Russell - Mason and part owner of the Pony Express, which was a firm made up mainly of Masons."14

George William Russell (1869-1935) - leading member of the Dublin Theosophist lodge, wrote art. for the theosophic periodical The Irish Theosophist. Initiated into the Lodge of Isis (with it sexual rites). The keynote of his work is from the Bhagavadgita. He was a good friend of Golden Dawn leader William Butler Yeats who wrote some of the Satanic Masonic Rituals for the Golden Dawn.'15

James Russell- President of the Royal Society of Edinburgh which was associated with esoteric groups like the Masons.16

Archibald D. Russell (1811-1871) - A Presbyterian Mason who graduated from the Univ. of Edinburgh, Scot. He studied at the Univ. of Bonn, Ger. and was active in setting up various organizations in the United States. 17

Benjamin Russell (1761-1845)- Mason and early American Journalist.[18]

Charles H. Russell - Governor of Nevada, 1950-58, and 32º Mason, also in the York Rite, and a Shriner. 19

J. Stuart Russell - Mason and newspaper editor and deputy chairman of the Fed. Reserve Bank in Chicago.20

Lee M. Russell (1875-1943) - Mason and Lt. Gov. of Miss. 1916-20. (21)

Louis A. Russell (1854-1925) - Mason, organist for South Park Presbyterian Church, Newark, N.J.22

Richard B. Russell (1861-1938) - Mason, judge, editor & business exec.22

Richard B. Russell, Jr. - Mason and Gov. of Georgia, 1931-33 and Sen. from Georgia since 1933. 24

Before going to our next section would be worthwhile to cover the family that Bertrand Russell came from. They hold the title of Dukes of Bedford. Ordo W. Russell served in Lord Palmerston's office from 1850-52. He served as unofficial ambassador for Great Britian to the Vatican from 1857-70. His son Baron Ampthill was Grand Master of the English Masons 1908-1935. He joined the English equivalent of the Knights of Malta - that is the Order of St. John of Jerusalem, and served as the Grand Master of the lodge formed at the Bank of England! He was appointed head of the Indian Masons of Madras, India (home of the Theosophical Society). Ordo Russell's son also served in some high political positions.

RUSSELLS CONNECTED TO GROUPS THAT TIE BACK TO THE ILLUMINATI (see future chapters such as 2.5)

Charles Edward Russell, Jewish Socialist who worked for N. Y. Life controlled by J.P. Morgan, and also for N.Y. Tribune and Herald.[25]

James E. Russell, Columbia University professor who introduced Wundt's Hegelian philosophy to his students at Columbia.26

Thomas Russell (1767-1803) - a revolutionist of the Illuminati-stream of Revolution.27

Samuel Russell - represented Baring Bros. Helped open up the Port of Shanghai for the International Financiers.[28]

Bertrand Russell - famous Fabian socialist, and One-World Order .29

Alys Russell- ex-eccentric Quaker, wife of Bertrand and also a Fabian Socialist.30

Rev. Matthew Russell (1834-1912)- Jesuit writer.31

RUSSELLS CONNECTED IN SOME WAY TO THE IBSA (NOW CALLED JEHOVAH'S WITNESSES)

Charles Taze Russell, Sr. - Pastor Russell's uncle, broker and real estate agent.32

Moses F. Russell, Postmaster of Saltillo, Hopkins Co. ,TX near where Hayden Cooper Covington's parents moved.[33]

Brother Russell- an early elder of the Belfast Ireland IBSA congregation.[34]

RUSSELLS CONNECTED IN SOME WAY TO MORMONISM

Elder Isaac Russell- a prominant early Mormon missionary to Great Britian in 1837.35

Captian Joseph H. Russell- original investor in stock in the Mormon Deseret Manufacturing Co. which was intended to be an umbrella company for many early

Mormon enterprises.36

The Russell who opened a store with Mormon blessings in the newly created Salt Lake city. The store was called Miller, Russell & Co., a branch of Russell, Majors, & Waddell, and was a primary source of goods in the area of Utah.[37]

OTHER RUSSELLS

Baron Charles Russell (1832-1900)- Solicitor (Lawyer) in Ulster and advocate for Ireland.[38]

Jerome Russell a Greyfriar, burned in 1539 for heresy with John Kennedy in Glasgow, Scot.39

Philemon R. Russell- editor of the Christian Herald & Journal, in the Mar. 19, 1840 issue he stressed 2,520 years in prophecy, which was an idea C. T. Russell would later pick up and promote.

William Howard Russell- first war correspondent for London's The Times newspaper in 1854. The London Times has long been part of the World Order, that William was the first of his kind is quite significant.

NOTES

1. Michels, Robert. Political Parties: A Sociological Study of the Oligarchical Tendencies of Modern Democracy. (orig. 1915) reprint: New York: Free Press, 1962, p. 70.

2. This Author has colloborated the connection of the Mormon leadership to the Satanic bloodlines and the Priere de Sion through several independent sources. One descendent of Joseph Smith who took part in Satanic rituals has been willing to tell about the family's occult history. A Christian who was once part of the Satanic hierarchy who ran verbal instructions to the Mormon First Presidency from the Council of 13 colloborates their connections. The historical roots, even those that the Mormon leaders themselves have printed, expose the genealogical ties to some of the most powerful occult bloodlines.

3. This subject is very controversial. One of the few books even willing to touch the subject in a scholarly biblical manner is Crawford, Jarah B. Last Battle Cry, Christianity's Final Conflict With Evil. Knoxville, TN: Jann Publishing, 1986.

Although I don't concur with all of Crawford's conclusions, the book shows more than enough evidence to support the point superscripted.

4. Confidential source personally involved with the it.

5. The documentation to show that the drug war is a contrived scheme is extensive. I have chosen to place some of the documentation much further back, but will state

that several researchers give seminars exposing it in detail. The Vietnam War was an important part of the scheme and since then some of the recent important laws

passed to implement this contrived war are P.L. 99-570, P.L. 100-690, and the Omnibus crime bill in 1991.

6. Marilyn Ferguson, New Age writer, states in her famous book The Aguarian Conspiracy, p. 90, " ‘LSD gave a whole generation a religious experience. But

chemical satori is perishable, its effects too overwhelming to integrate into everyday life. Non-drug psychotechnologies offer a controlled, sustained movement toward

that spacious reality. The annals of the Aquarian Conspiracy are full of accounts of passages: LSD to Zen, LSD to India, psilocybin to Psychosynthesis."

7. Checks by the FBI, and other federal agencies confirmed this.

8. Victims of Satanism have disclosed information about some of the extent of Satanism within the rank and file Jehovah’s Witnesses, and hierarchy. When it

became obvious that the art department of the Watchtower Society has been hiding Satanic symbols in the pictures of Watchtower publications for many years the

Governing Body chose to cover it up rather than stop it.

9. Sutton, Antony. America’s Secret Establishment. Billings, MT: Liberty House Press, 1986, pp. 5,6,8,35, 86-67, 100, 212, 253.

10. Schmidt, Greenwood. Encyclopedia of American Institutional Fraternal Organizations. Westport, Conn. : Greenwood Press, 1980, p. 84.

11. Various Christians have seen Charles T. Russell’s KT membership records which are filed in the Mother Lodge in Ireland. The connections between his beliefs and his actions as the WT Society’s leader and the Masons is the subject of my previous book The WT & the Masons.

12. Proceedings of the Ninetieth Annual Conclave held in the City of Harrisburg, Dauphin County... PA: Knights Templars, 1943, p.114.

13. This information is compiled from research from several sources. a. Nevin, Adelaide Mellier. The Social Mirror A Character Sketch of the Women of Pittsburgh

and Vicinity during the first Century of the County’s existence. Society of to-day. Pittsburgh, PA: T.A. Nevin Publisher, 1888, p. 19.; b. The Pittsburgh Directory

1878-79 showing Elizabeth the widow of John, and c. John Russell in the 1850 Census, and John Russell’s Will.

14. Denslow, 10,000 Famous Freemasons, Vol.4, p.^{82}. William H. Russell is also mentioned in the New Age Magazine (June, 1963) p. 45.

15. This information comes from several sources including a. Boylan, Henry. A Dictionary of Irish Biography. NY: St. Martins Press, 1988, p. 345; b. Ancient

Wisdom and Secret Sects, Time-Life, 1989, p. 154.

16.

17. Denslow, op. cit., p.80.

18. ibid.

19. ibid.

20. ibid.

21. ibid.

22. Denslow, op. cit., p.82

23. ibid.

24. ibid.
25. Biography of Americans.
26. Sutton, Antony C. America's Secret Establishment. Billington, MT: Liberty House, p. 84.

27. Boylan, Henry. A Dictionary of Irish Biography. NY: St. Martins Press, 1988, p. 345.

28. Mullins, Eustice. The World Order. Staunton, VA: Ezra Pound Institute of Civilization, 1985, p.[92].

29. The Fabians.

30. ibid.

31. Boylan, Henry. A Dictionary of Irish Biography. NY: St. Martins Press, 1988, p. 345.

32. Springmeier, Fritz. The WT & the Masons, pp. 9, 215.

33. Author's geneological research in Hopkins Co. TX history.

34. Early Convention Report

35. Evans, Richard L. A Century of Mormonism in Great Britian. Salt Lake City, UT: Publisher's Press, 1937, pp. 34-35.

36. Gibbons, Francis M. John Taylor Mormon Philosopher Prophet of God. Salt Lake City, UT: Deseret Books, 1985, p. 129.

37. Utah Historical Quarterly, 1941, Salt Lake CIty, pp. 190-211.

38. Boylan, op. cit., p. 344

39. ibid., and Black, George F. The Surnames of Scotland. NY: The NY Public Library, 1962, p. 705.

QUESTIONING OLD ASSUMPTIONS

There was enough circumstantial evidence to lead one to question several assumptions. I began to question the assumption that the W. T. presidents were unconnected to each other. Another supposition that was questionable was that the WT Society did not have a hidden agenda.

C.T. RUSSELL'S STORY

Once there was a Jewish family whose name was Roessel. They lived in early 17th century Germany. They moved to a country called Scotland. There they re-spelled the name Russell. They took on the ways of their new homeland. The English tried to settle Protestants from Scotland in Ireland in order to control the Irish. When the opportunity opened up to go to the Emerald Island (Ireland) with the Scottish settlers who went to the plantation Ulster they went. It is possible, but not known for sure that they learned to know the Rutherfords either in Scotland or Ireland. Scotland repeatedly appears as the source of much of the religious heresy connected with the Power. That C . T. Russell's family were in Scotland for a period, and also from the German states which seem to be a hot bed for Jewish Satanism may be only a coincidence and then again it might be a clue to understanding the origin of the Watchtower Society. This Author's previous book The Watchtower and the Masons tells the story how the Arian heresy began at the University of Edinburgh, Scotland and spread to the the Presbyterians of the Synod of Ulster. The book gives this Author's reasons for believing that the C . T. Russell's family in northern Ireland were Arian in belief before coming to the U. S. and chances are they were involved with Freemasonry also.

THE ACKLEY CONNECTION

In The Watchtower and the Masons the early history of C . T. Russell is given. Charles and his father married two Ackley sisters a number of years after Charles' mother died. What is an intriguing item is that C . T. Russell's mother's will indicates she owned land in Iowa. A description of that land shows it was north of the town of Ackley, Iowa. It turns out that a man named William Ackley had purchased the land in that area, and had sold it in large part to Scot-Irish settlers of the Presbyterian faith as they were coming to America. At the time C T. Russell's mother died a town named Ackley had been staked out in 1857, but the Civil War had interferred with construction plans. A Presbyterian congregation had been formed in the area during the early 1860s in the Ackley area, which indicates some settlers had arrived. What connection did the Russells have with the Ackleys years before Charles T. and his father married Ackley sisters? Who are the Ackleys? Maria Ackley, who was Charles T. Russell's wife, was well-educated and an excellent writer. Interestingly, in the 19th century she believed a socialist revolution was coming. She wrote, "This great revolution has not yet come, but where is the statesman or the intelligent citizen that does not see it coming?" (Russell, Maria. This Gospel of The Kingdom, p. 26.) She was the ghost writer and ghost editor for much of her husband Charles Taze ' s work. Her family was well-off. William Ackley, the land speculator/seller in Iowa, traces his ancestry back to Prence Doane and Elizabeth Godfrey. Elizabeth Godfrey in turn was the great-granddaughter of William Brewster of the Mayflower fame. The Ackleys were Puritans to begin with and seem to have been concentrated in the Connecticut area, and from there their family members moved out into NY and PA. Another Ackley (1832-1881) at that time was Richard Thomas Ackley, a Freemason who worked for the Miller, Russell and Company store in Salt Lake City in 1858 soon after the Mormons built Salt Lake City.

LEADS

Of course, these are all simply tantalizing leads for the investigator but nothing solid. There seems to be much more to Charles Taze RusseU than the little that the public has been told. In the next few chapters we will attempt to dispel some of the mystery surrounding the man.

God's "Annointed Seed"

In 1852, the Joseph Lyttle Russell family had a baby who they gave the same name to as his uncle had. This baby, named Charles Taze Russell had a brother Frank who was two years older, but Charles ended up the favorite of his father. Later Charles would get a sister Margaret M. Both Charles T. and his sister Margaret spoke on various occasions that his had been chosen before his birth for the work that he was to carry out.1 Margaret referred to her brother as the greatest man alive "a giant unmatched." She stated that he had been choosen for his religious work before his birth. Perhaps, Charles' Russell family, and his father Joseph L., (like Joseph Kennedy who had goals for his son to be president) had goals for Charles. If Charles had been encouraged to meet such expectations and had gone forward, then that could account for his sister's great admiration for him. He had fulfilled her father's wishes. At the Put-In-Bay Convention his sister Margaret had outlined how God planned and chose her brother. First God had planted a seed with the early church. But the seed had laid dormant for centuries. "In due time", she says, the seed of truth grew and was watered according to God's plan. During the Dark Ages the seed of truth was barely kept alive waiting for God's Chosen One to bring it to fruition. When it was time, God "annointed the eyes" of her brother at age 17, and "God's smile of favor rested upon him." Margaret said her brother was the one, the faithful one who God could depend upon, the "one despite the burden and heat of the day" would remain faithful to God.2

NOTES

1. C.T. Russell is noted to have privately admitted his belief that he was chosen for his great work before his birth. The Finished Mystery. The Watchtower Bible & Tract Soc. 1917, p. 53. A testimony speech given by his sister at the Put-In-Bay Convention where she said similar things is commented on the The Laodicean Messenger, pp. 179-180.

2. The Laodicean Messenger, pp. 179-180.

The Illuminati's SECURITY SYSTEM

Russell Trust is the legal corporation that is the Order of the Skull and Bones, financed the creation of host of security co. under the Wackenhuts, incl. a Security Service called Wackenhut Corporation. Another part of this is Wackenhut World Technologies, Inc. or WWT Inc. Wackenhut operates worldwide. Their headquarters are in Florida. They have branch offices even in places like Portland, Oregon. Wackenhut handles all Intelligence-related and Super Secret work-classIfied ULTRA for the US. worldwide. They are the ones who guard the UFO bases topside, along with the CIA's Delta Teams, and various MP units, etc. Their branch in Las Vegas provides security for the Groom Lake UFO facility. Las Vega's Review Journal on Fri. 7/26/91, p. A1 & 3A had an article about 3 Wackenhut agents who lost their lives in a helicopter crash near the Groom Lake. The telephone number to Wackenhut World Technologies, connects first through the Russell Trust - it is 702-646-4406, and it will be answered by the Russell Trust. Wackenhut's board of directors are CIA, FBI Div. 5, NSA, ISA, and NRO officials. The girls who answer the various local Wackenhut Corporation numbers are not in the know about what Wackenhut Wd. Tech. are all about. Their 1-800 # is 929-2431. Their San Reme Ave, Cerel Gabels, FL 33146 # was 305-666-5656. Their local no. here is 256-3996, and one of their local CA # is 714-9794966. George Russell Wackenhut is their security services executive. He is also the Chrm & Chief Exec. Officer. He worked for the FBI, and is a Christian Scientist. Richard Russell Wackenhut is the President & Chief Oper. Officer. Wackenhut has in the neighborhood of 40,000 employees.

MORIAH & THE MORMON LEADERSHIP

THE TOP 13 FAMILIES & THE MORMON LEADERSHIP

Rather than having an article this time about an individual family-and we will return later to our articles on the 13 top families, Lord willing, -this article is an article about the 13 families in general.

CONTENT

In the first part of this article we will deal with actual people. In the second part of this article, we will discuss some about the top secret inner workings of the Satanic religion that the top 13 Illuminati families participate in.

PART 1.

One of the thlnp that the Illuminati has done is instill apathy in people toward resisting their wickedness. A letter by an ex-Mormon says it better than I could,

"There are many reasons why these people (Mormons) will not come forth even though they know of the corruption in the Mormon church. One is due to their belief in Mormon scripture which they associate with the Mormon church. The leadership has usurped power and authority over this scripture. Thus, the members of the Mormon church think that God expects them to support their misguided leaders. This is much the - rationalization that many Americans make about our government. They all know of the corruption, but rationalize that it is unpatriotic to talk against the government or ungrateful to complain when they enjoy superficial prosperity."

It is interesting that this Mormon recognizes that the process of the common man's reaction is the same to both Mormon and American leadership, because as we will discuss the top leadership in both the reader will learn they are related to each other and both under the control of the Top 1.3 Illuminati families.

THE MORMON LEADERS & THE 13Th TOP ILLUMINATI BLOODLINE

The Mormon president Ezra Taft Benson (considered a prophet by Mormons) was a fan of the John Birch Society. Most people who have not read my exposes on both the Mormon Church and the John Birch Society will not be able to protect themselves from the Illuminati. I don't expose these organizations without a great deal of proof. I say this because I know from too many sources and too many angles that both organizations were initiated and have been run by the Illuminati. The Mormon church has long prophesled that they would defend the US. Constitution in the last days. They are moving to fulfill that with men like Bo Gritz, who sprinkles has talks with buzz words from Mormon prophecy. The John Birch Society was part of the process of the Hegelian dialectics of the cold war. They pretend to be the defenders of the people against the New World Order, but they are fake opposition. (I have met quite a few John Birchers, and so far although they claim to be against the New World Order, they want nothing to do with me, or to learn anything 1 might share with them. I can understand the leadership doing this to me, but somehow the rank and file have picked up on some of the attitudes of the leadership. I don't know how the JBS has managed to do that, but the antagonistic attitudes that they have instilled in their people toward people like myself are amazing.) In my Be Wise As Serpents book I gave the genealogical evidence to show that the Mormon leadership connected to the 13th top illuminati family, the Holy Blood line of what purports to be Jesus's lineage. I've also showed numerous other connections between the Mormon leaders and the elite Illuminati bloodlines. Ezra Taft Benson's genealogy helps tie together some of the various parts of the Illuminati beast. The Taft is Heusen's name is because Ezra Taft Benson is a descendent of Alphonso Taft, who along with one of the Russell family (Russells are one of the top 13 families), William IL Russell, started the Order of the Skull and Bones (legally it has been known as Russell Trust). Remember, that George Bush was a Skull & Bonesman. George Bush also is a descendent of the 13th top Illuminati family -the family that ties in with British royalty and the Merovingians. The man who just beat George Bush in the Presidential race, William Jefferson Blythe Clinton, is a descendent of some Russells.

PRESIDENT CLINTON

This newsletter hasn't gotten to an individual article on the Russell family, but they go way back in the Illuminati. The Russell's are responsible for starting the Skull & Bones Order, the Pilgrim Society, the Watchtower Bible & Tract Society, and the Masonic Daughters of Isabella (DOI). Archibald D. Russell (1811-1871) a Mason from Scotiand set up still other organizations. (Scotland has played a key role in the Illuminati. One example of thousands is, Marriner S. Eccles - Gov. of the Fed. Reserve Board & supporter of FDR, who is member of the wealthy Mormon Illuminati Eccles family which came over from Scotland.) The Russells played a key role in the opium trade in the early 1800s and early Mormonism. One of the Russell business partners was Warren Delano, Jr., chief of Russell and Company operations in Canton, China. Delano was the grandfather of Pres. Franklin Roosevelt. The Russell and Company logo was a Skull and Bones. The Taft family (which is also related to George Bush by blood) and the Harriman family are two families that have been intimately connected to the Skull and Bones Order (which is an entry point into the Iliuminati and on the surface just an exclusive fraternity).

'Note: Since this was written Bo Gritz and the Mormon church have gone separate ways. Bo Gritz, under the direction of his CIA handier, has been moving around talking to Patriots, and establishing a community called 'Almost Heaven' near Kamiah, ID. Fritz's newsletters have had several articles about Bo Gritz, including one entitled S.P.I.K.E., which is what Bo calls the training he is giving people.'

The Harriman family is also very prominent in Pres. Bill Clinton's life. Averell Harriman1 was the CEO of George Bush's father's company. Averell Harriman's wife was Pamela who has played an extremely important part in Bill Clinton's life. Pamela Harriman raised more money for the Democratic Party than any other single person (Newsweek, 5/15/1987). She created a political action committee nicknamed PAM PAC. When Bill Clinton lost his race for governor, Pamela made BIB Clinton head (chairman) of her PAM PAC. (It took Brian Quig, a Christian researcher like myself, to expose the connections between BIll Clinton and Pamela Harriman. Can you guess why the establishment media somehow carefully kept theIr relationship secret?) When Bill Clinton was a high schooler he shook hands with President John F. Kennedy (a member of one of the Top 13 Illuminati Bloodlines-see 5/15/93 Newsletter). The master of ceremonies at the affair where JFK and Clinton met was Winthrop Rockefeller (another member of a Top 13 Illuminati family, and at the time Governor of New York.) In the film clips of this event which the establishment media have used recently, the establishment media edited out Winthrop Rockefeller from the scenes of Clinton and JFK. (Now why do you think they did that?) The Astor family (one of the top 13 famIlies) was intimately connected to the creation of the Rhodes Scholarship. (See 1/1/93 newsletter on the Astor family). Clinton was a Rhodes Scholar and looked upto Prof. Carroll Quigley, the archivist of the CFR, as a mentor. The Quigley-Clinton connection introduces more connections between Clinton and the Illuminati. Quigley side-tracked people by making people think the elite were Anglophiles who wanted the British to rule the world. Although the elite are partial to the English language as a lingua-franca, in their heart their allegiance is not to Britain but to Satan. Clinton has been compared to JFK & FDR by people, perhaps in a negative sense the comparison is appropriate. LET'S REVIEW some of the Items which STUCK OUT AS RED FLAGS TO ME ABOUT BILL CLINTON:

- Several ex-witches now Christians identified Clinton's running mate Al Gore as switch. Al Gore's book promotes several witchcraft themes such as Mother Gain worship. Senator Al Gore has intimately worked with other men who are Illuminati for years. Al Gore was close friends with Armand Hammer, the Illuminati courier who shuttled back and forth between Moscow and America on a regular basis, and had homes in both countries. Hammer bankrolled both Al Gore, Jr. and his father Al Gore, Sr.

- Al Gore and Bill Clinton raised their hands at the Democratic National Convention and declared that their administration would be the "New Covenant." Bill Clinton's brother ended up in prison in connection to the illegal drug trade that I know that Bill Clinton was also involved with helping while he was Governor of Arkansas. Readers of this newsletter are aware that the top Illuminati families are the power behind the drug trade. (See previous newsletter 3/1/93, p. 19 about some of Bill's role in Arkansas with the drug trade.)

- Bill Clinton's chief campaign advisor James Carville is pictured in People's Magazine. p.50 wearing a pentagram in the middle of his forehead.

- Bill Clinton calls his first press conference as President. elect according to the astrologically correct full-moon day.

- Bill Clinton in his inaugural speech said, "This ceremony is held in the depth of winter. But, by the words we speak and the faces we show the world, we force the spring.' Clinton repeated the words 'we force the spring' later in the speech. That expression is a very unusual expression. To 'force the spring" is witchcraft language. in witchcraft and satanism Lucifer (Baal) rises from the underworld on May 1st (also known by the following list of names Beltaine, a major European holiday, Communism and the Illuminati's chief holiday, and Walpurgis). The May 1st rising brings forth the season of fertility, which the witches each year take credit for, by claiming that their magic rituals 'force the spring.' The ritual magic that 'forces the spring' is done on 3 Sabbats-the first is Imbolg (also known by names: Candiemas by the Catholics and Ground Hog Day by common dupes); the second is the vernal equinox (Mar. 20) in which blood and sex rituals are carried out and the third is Beltaine (May 1) in which fire festivals are done. This is one of the fire festivals which people around the United States tell me they have witnessed from a distance. Witches believe that on May 1st, the female force completes her takeover from the male force. There are 12 cabinet members which when they assemble with their head BIll Clinton make the number 13. Bill Clinton choose 'to force the spring' with his 'cabinet coven.' In true witchcraft tradition, the Cabinet of Bill Clinton followed the pattern of 'forcing the Spring.' In order for the female to overtake the male force, Clinton chose the position of Attorney General. The title 'General' has a male connotation. All the rest of the cabinet members are called Secretaries which has a female connotation. The Attorney General posItion was to be given to a woman. But in order for the witchcraft ceremony and timing to be right, the woman couldn't take over until after Feb. 2, or Imbolg and there had to be 3 female candidates, from which one is traditionally picked by a witchcraft coven. This is why the selection of the Attorney General was not confirmed until Feb. 2. And sure enough all three candidates given by Bill Clinton were women, from which one was selected. Bill Clinton did indeed 'force the spring'! Further, Clinton gave told us HOW he would 'force the spring' in his inaugural speech. On the 666th word of his inauguration speech, Clinton launched into a sentence on sacrifice, 'it will not be easy; it will require sacrifice. But it can be done, and done fairly, not choosing sacrifice for Its own sake, but for our own sake.' Clinton gave the hand signal of Satanists at the end of his speech. (See previous newsletters this year). And Newsweek Magazine headlined its story 'New Age President Takes Office.' (Jan. 25, '93) That Clinton would consider his Cabinet a coven is not so far fetched. Most of his cabinet tie in closely with the Illuminati. The Council on Foreign Relations is an upper level of the visible arm of the Illuminati. The Jan. '93 newsletter explained that the CFR was the equivalent of the 4° of the Bavarian Illuminati. Note, that many of these people do not realize the full Satanic implications of what they are in. If one reviews the various levels of the Bavarian Illuminati, you will realize that the process of corruption was gradual, and that the lower levels had no idea what they were really involved in, although some probably suspected what they were into. The basic ingredient of the lower levels is loyalty to their superiors, because they believe they are in the elite's organization. Consider, Clinton and his cabinet: Slick Willie Clinton — CFR TC (Trilateral Commission), Bldrbgr (Bilderberger participant), participant in various Illuminati front organizations such as DLC, Rhodes Scholar, wife Hillary is known to practice shamanism witchcraft.

Treasury Secretary - Lloyd Bentsen -- Bldrbgr, ex-CFR, connected to S&L scandal, henchman for the Illuminati.

Secretary of Health & Human Services—Donna Shalala - CFR,, TC, close friend of Hillary Clinton.

Secretary of Defense—Les Aspin--CFR, Socialist Les Aspin chose for his top assistant the pro-communist Jew Morton Halperin. Halperln was also a dir. of the ACLU, and worked loyally for Henry Kissinger at the National Security Council.

Secretary of State—Warren Christopher--CFR

Secretary of the Interior - Bruce Babbitt — CFR, he has been involved in various activities for the elite.

Secretary of Labor—Robert Reich -- a Zionist Jew (over 50% of Clinton's major appointees were Zionist Jews, strange considering Jews only make up 2% of the population)

Attorney General — Janet Reno -- murderer of innocent people at Waco, TX. The people at Waco believed that they were the true Jews and flew the Jewish flag at Waco, notice that Reno who is Jewish and was on the board of directors of the Jewish Illuminati Terrorist organization of the Anti-Defamation League could not stand the idea of Christians believing that they are the true Jews.

Secretary of Housing & Urban Development - Henry Cisveros - CFR

Secretary of Education - Richard W. Riley - participant at Renaissance Weekend

(I think the readers get the picture. I had a list of which ones were known to be gay, but I can't find it.) A number of Clinton's high appointees are homosexuals. There is a high correlation between homosexuality and the occult and also a big correlation between the type of 'Jews' Clinton has chosen and Satanism. Historically, some of the most rabid anti-Christians are Satanists from Jewish backgrounds.

- During the inauguration week witches, homosexuals and homosexual witches gathered at the White House for various celebrations, to perform, to hold rituals, and other events. These people were invited by the President for various things. Clearly, those who are known publicly as a witch or a homosexual are considered honorable by the President.

WHAT IS THE SPIRITUAL SIGNIFICANCE OF ThE CLINTONS?

The answer to this can be found in my very first newsletter back in 1992. Whenever YHVH God has raised up prophets (like Elijah) to turn the people back to God and morality, Satan has sent out the Jezebel spirit. Along with the Jezebel spirit goes the Ahab spirit. Hillary and Bill fit the Jezebel and Ahab spirit exactly. I remember personally when I heard several prophets of God warn about the Jezebel spirit. I thought this sounds rather strange. I had never heard about it before. Soon I began telling people in the church I was attending about the NWO and to function in a small way prophetically, and the Jezebel spirit came into that church. The church had been happy with their elders, but after I began to warn the people about the NWO, a constant clamor was heard every sunday for the church to select women as elders. This church had a long history without believing in women elders, and it had never been an issue. Unless one is aware of the connection between the Jezebel spirit and the Elijah type of prophet, and knows the full orb of what the Jezebel spirit is, it is not likely that a person would notice the connection between the two! Baal worship was simply an ancient form of Satanism. Jezebel was the daughter of King Ethbaal of Tyre who was an ardent Baal worshipper. Jezebel was a Satanic High Priestess, a real witch. She had 450 prophets of Baal and 400 prophets of the groves. She put the true ministers of God to death. Her husband used his political office as she directed to further the power of darkness. We are simply now seeing history repeat itself.

PART 2.

In this part we will explain sealing rituals. I am doing this so that Christians can understand who a Keeper of Seals is, and also so that Christians can understand that Mormonism is closer to Satanism than it is to Christianity. This article will hopefully provide a written record so that Christians have an objective way to determine If someone who claims to be an ex-Satanist really is. I realize that some Christians don’t like to learn about their enemy, and that is fine if they do not want to read this. On the other hand, I see people who are coming out of Satanism who the Christians are disbelleving. The Christians have no reference from which to determine whether someone is legitimate or not. And although I believe the Spirit of God is an excellent revealer of men, I have to be frank, even the best of Christians sometimes don’t hear what the Spirit has to say, and could benefit from a written explanation. The closest descriptions of sealing rituals that I have found that matches the descriptions of satanic hierarchy rituais from people who have come out of the Satanic Hierarchy are the Mormon sealing rituals. For anyone wanting to do a study about how Mormonism is witchcraft, I sust they read the scholariy book written by a Mormon scholar Early Mormonism and the Magic World View by D. Michael Quinn. Quinn conclusively shows that early Mormonism was based on magic and witchcraft. Quinn, who is a Mormon in good standing, tries to point out in the book that these things can’t be held against Mormonism because most every one back in the early 1800s practiced magic and witchcraft. Whether most people did or not, seems to me to be irrelevant as to whether it is O.K. Another great book showing the connections between the Mormon Temple ceremonies, Witchcraft rituals, and Masonic rituals is Bill Schnoebelen’s book Mormonism Temple of Doom. Bill does an excellent job of showing and illustrating how the Mormon temple ceremony, Masonic and Witchcraft rituals are simply the very same thing, with minor variations. One of the most important things in satanism is sealing. Everything is sealed. One doesn’t hear the term sealing used a lot. I have read many books of the enemy to know how he thinks, and it is rare to have someone mention sealing. I had to learn about it from ex-Satanists. If one leaves off studying Satanism and begins studying the many cults and religions, one begins hearing about sealing again when one gets to Mormonism. Mormon men and women (contrary to Lk 20:35) are sealed to each other in the Mormon temple marriages. The early Mormons were sealed to many spouses. The Mormon sealing is very simllar to what is done in witchcraft called handfasting, and it is also similar to marriage sealing in Satanism. Joseph Smith, whose famlly practiced witchcraft, had many types of seals around their house which were used in magic. According to a magic book of 1830 "Demonology and Witchcraft" by Walter Scott (pp. 165, 220-221) seer stones were to be anointed with oil, and sealed with holy characters. In 1837, Mormon leaders performed such a magical sealing for James Cohn Brewster. (Mormonism and the Magic World View. p.209-210) Joseph Smith had a cane with a serpent on the top of it, and astrological seals below. Magick staff or canes are important in Satanism. The seal of Mars was carved on the Smith family athame which was used by the family to draw circles for magic incantations. (Mormonism & the Magic World View p. 142) In 1835, a ritual done by Joseph Smith to commune with a spirit messenger is recorder by Oliver Cowdery. Joseph Smith used two Seals of the Earth to conjure up the spirit. (Ibid, p. 120) Smith's ritual was in accordance with the best occult guidebooks then The Book of Knowledge and Barrett's Magus.

The 1830 edition of the Book of Mormon says that about itself '... their voice shall be as one that hath a familiar spirit ... They shall write the things which shall be done among them, and they shall be written and sealed up in a book.' (2 Nephi 26:14-17). The Mormon scholar Quinn writes, 'The Book of Mormon's use of the word 'sealed' also suggested a magic context. Isaiah 29 uses the word 'sealed' only twice, but the Book of Mormon's commentary on the chapter uses 'sealed' eleven times in eight verses (2 Ne 26:17; 2 Ne 27:7-8 ... Throughout the entire text, the Book of Mormon refers to itself with the words 'sealed' or 'seal' more than twenty times .. Modern Mormons have often pictured a physical seal ... but the Book of Mormon nowhere describes a physical seal, evoking instead the seal as a non-material restriction: 'For the book shall be sealed by the power of God.' (2 Ne [phi] 27:10) Quinn goes on to describe more about the magical sealing of the Book of Mormon.

33' Masonic leader Manly P. Hail in his book on Masonic symbolop describes a seal involved with black magic and the Pact that is made with a conjured demon in a section entitled 'Modus Operandi for the Invocation of Spirits' on p. CIII. Within both the Generational Satanic covens and the covens made up of recruits to Satanism there is the office of Keeper of Seals. The Keepers of Seals show the importance of sealing to Satanism. Almost everything done in Satanism involves sealing. There are many vows that are made, and there are always exchanges made during these vows and then a sealing. In the exchanges there is always something lost by each person. Satanic Hierarchy individuals are sealed to others, and the part of a Satanist that is put into another is magically infused. In one ritual, there is a black stone with the Satanist's name written on it that is given to the Queen Mother. (See the chart 1/1/93 newsletter to understand this high rank.) By giving something of oneself, that item supposedly gives magical power to the person you have vowed before. If you break your vow, they can take the item you have given and work destructive magic against you. In the Satanic Hierarchy, they have a Moonchild ceremony where they demonize the fetus while in the womb. In the AntiChrist ceremony, the item that is exchange with Satan for a woman's vow to Satan is to sacrifice her child. Then of course this vow is sealed. The Keepers of Seals hold the books full of written pacts, and the items exchanged in all these countless rituals.

DOES THE SATANIC HIERARCHY HAVE TESLA'S INVENTION?

A Mother of Light said, 'Power is a transitory experience... it is very conditioned upon the myths you are in. It is important that the person knows the myth be is in.

He must have a feeling for it ....The tangible can become the intangible.' I'll leave the reader puzzled how I got this quote from a Mother of Light, but the idea of the tangible becoming the intangible is an interesting idea, because of two reasons. First, the United States Navy is reported to have found out in W.W.II in the Philadelphia experiment how to electronically make a force field around something that makes the object invisible. However, the experiment proved to be very dangerous, and it took them years before the technology could be applied to something safely. This technology is being used on the Stealth bomber. to make them both invisible to radar and to human sight. The second reason, is that an ex-Illuminati member states that an experimental box the size of a breadbox with controls was being used by the coven to make people invisible. The people had to stay where they were, they could not move around, but they were somehow made invisible by the box where they were standing.

Likewise, those who want to believe that Clinton is a nice guy, that he isn't working as a lackey of the Illuminati, go ahead and believe these lies, God will even send you a strong delusion to allow you to believe these lies. But those who love the truth, and are tired of being lied to, and want answers as to why things are happening like they are will not accept the surface explanations that cover the debauchery of Satanists. Instead of getting upset that someone like myself is showing you the double meaning behind Clinton's hand signal--people should be upset that an attempt was made to trick them by Clinton. The Christian people have been told by several Christians (and I could name names but I won't) that Clinton is going to lead this nation into righteousness. God's people perish for lack of knowledge. The fact is that if Clinton really came to Christ, and really began leading the people toward righteousness, (which he doesn't even now lead the people-the people who put him in office do the real leading), then the hierarchy would kill him. Christians are always saying we need to pray for our leaders--fine pray for them, they need to find God, just realize Clinton is not one of our real leaders, he is way down on the totem pole and is simply a shoe-shine boy for the hierarchy. Maybe the Christian people ought to learn who really leads them so they can pray better! Bush was a heavy-weight for the Illuminati, and he was picked by the Illuminati originally as their first choice to win. That was before the primaries. Of course all the final presidential candidates Bush, Perot, and Clinton, (and maybe some of the others too!) were Illuminati men. It was a choice on their part who they wanted. Bush apparently antagonized the Rothschilds, and Clinton was placed into power to appease those who were upset with Bush. That the elite decided to change from Bush to Clinton became visible in Sept. and in October I notified my readers that the change of choice had occured. Supposedly Bush had mishandled something that hurt the Rothschilds financially, but whatever happened it is clear that behind the scenes some big events happened. Clinton was close friends of Winthrop Rockefeller when he moved to Arkansas. Winthrop Rockefeller gave Clinton over $1 million dollars. In return Clinton was in his pocket. It has been well worth Clinton's time to serve the Illuminati kings. So good in fact that Ace Hayes may be correct when he claims that he has information showing that Clinton owns $1.2 billion in treasury bonds. If so, then it is understandable that Clinton would want taxes collected. I had hoped that my photo of Clinton giving the Satanic signal at the inauguration would be finished by now. It isn't, but I will go ahead with this article. Since coming out with my Mar. 15, 93 newsletter I have found out that Texe Marrs came out with a photo showing Clinton's satanic signalling at the inauguration. People need to spiritiually discern what Clinton is all about.

Clinton gave a speech before becoming president that insiders" would have no place in his administration. If people study the situation he appointments have all been insiders. This is just one example of many that show that the words Clinton speaks are simply the words that the American people want to hear. "Slick Willie" is an appropriate name, for this President has absolutely no integrity nor honesty. And yet I am hearing people in the churches that want to believe in Clinton. It's sad to say they want this, because God will send them a strong delusion to believe the lies they want to believe in. Federico Pena is our new Clinton-appointed Secretary of Transportation. If he treats the country like he treated Denver watch out. Pena got the new Denver International Airport project continued against all logic. John Coleman's WIR brings out in his newsletter the details about how Pena's airport project and many other projects he sponsored are white elephants that are not what the public needs, but simply white elephants that help line the pockets of the rich. Those of you who don't take Texe Marrs' newsletter may find it interesting that Bill Clinton has ties to the Jesuits. Of course, I take it for granted that people realize that Carroll Quigley was Clinton's mentor. Carroll Quigley was one of those intellectuals like H.G. Wells who believed in a New World Order and the elite that wanted to bring it in. Let me digress, and discuss men like H.G. Wells and Carroll Quigley. These men believed that the west should lead the world into a New World Order. I suggest that people should read H.G. Wells' book The New World Order (1940) and his The Open Conspiracy (1928). Another good book to understand what the elite have planned is Manly P. Hall's book Facing the Future. Oswald Spengler also has a good book to read The Hour of Decision. The last few chapters of Lionel Curtess's World Order (1939) also is good in explaining how they want a world commonwealth of states. People like Clinton were feed this type of stuff. But there is a much greater hidden agenda. Manly P. Hall for instance was part of Lucis Trust, as was late leader of the Scottish Rite Freemasons, as well as Rockefeller. Lucis Trust's External isation of the Hierarchy tells us what the agenda is. The agenda is to externalize the Satanic Hierarchy, and on page 107 of Externalisation of the Hierarchy it tells us who will rule the world on the earthly plane--his name is Lucifer. And on the Spiritual level (shambala) it will be the Lord of the World Sanat. We Christians know the Lord of the World not as Sanat but as Satan. It's all down in black and white on page 107. Greed and material wealth play such an important part in the lives of all these people who Satan has inspired to help dream up schemes for a New World Order. Therefore, most of these people see economics as an important vehicle for creating a New World Order. But there is a hidden agenda. The conspiracy is not an economic conspiracy nor a political conspiracy but as The Externalisation of the Hierarchy reveals in page after page--their conspiracy is a religious conspiracy. People lets just lay it out on the line--Clinton is a Satanist, he knows what the hidden agenda is. It's an eyeopener to read the books I listed by Wells, Hall, and Spengler, but believe me that stuff is just for the blind intellectuals. The real details of this New World Order have been written down in detail and they came directly from the Master of Evil himself, directly from Satan to his hierarchy, who copied the plans in detail. The people who will implement the New World Order are men like Clinton. Men who have no moral code. Men who will glibly tell one lie after another. They won't implement H.G. Well's plan---they will implement Satan's plan. And prideful Satan will unwittingly implement YHWH God's.

Bloodlines of Illuminati

By:

Fritz Springmeier

Once again, I have opened up my files of research and tried to investigate the Satanic Hierarchy. Sometimes in doing investigation one turns down a dead end. I hope I haven’t done that. There does seem to be a strong Dutch connection to the Illuminati and the Van Duyn family might be one of the keys to understanding that Dutch connection. My investigation with Van Duyn family is the only family that has left me without any solid facts that would place them within the Top 13 Families. However, because bloodlines are so important to the Hierarchy and because it is hard to really investigate these families without understanding their genealogies, I have made the effort to give you a genealogy of Van Duyns that may have some importance.

THE VAN DUYN BLOODLINE.

In 1626, Peter Minuit traded some trinkets to the Canarsie Indians to purchase Manhattan Island. The history books like to report the value of the trinkets as $24. The purchase was supposedly a good deal for the Dutch. The Canarsie Indians didn’t own Manhattan Island, it belonged to other Indians, so it is debatable who got the best deal that day. That was the beginning of the Dutch colony of New Netherlands, and its capital New Amsterdam, built beside Ft. Amsterdam, all three later renamed New York. The Van Duyn family (also spelled Van Dien, Van Duyne, et. al.) was one of the Dutch families to come over to the Dutch colony of New Netherlands which was connected to the Dutch West India Company. Other early important New Netherlands families from the Netherlands include Van Sise, Van Cleef (also spelled Van Cleve and Van Cleave), Van Coorn, Van de Water, Dooren, and Stoothoff. In 1649, fifteen years before the British took New Netherlands from the Dutch, Gerret Cornellissen Van Duyn immigrated with his older sister from Brabant, Netherlands (Brabant is a district so. of Eindhoven in southern Netherlands, but at the time Van Duyn came over it included Belgium.) to New Amsterdam. (This date is according to Claypool, Edward A. Descendants of Dennis Van Duyn and Alice Tunison Chicago, IL. In contrast to this The National Cyclopaedia Vol. 4?, p. 258 states that he came over in 1640 which is a mistake because that was his date of birth.)

For some reason, Gerret Cornelius Van Duyn returned to Holland to Zwolle on the east side of the Zuider Zee, although he had originally lived in Nieuwkerk in Zeeland before going to New Netherlands, America. Gerrit C. Van Duyn was a coarse, non-spiritual, ignorant man who did carpenter work. His lack of interest in Christianity seems to have carried down through quite a number of generations. After coming to the New World again, he moved away from New Amsterdam fairly quickly to New Utrecht. (Now I believe that is where Greenwich Villiage is.) In the long run his descendants (some related to the Castello family) moved to Michigan, Illinois, Kansas and elsewhere. In the next century however, his descendents moved and created 5 branches- one in Queens Co., NY; one in Kings Co., NY; one in Dutchess Co., NY; a fourth in Somerset Co., NJ; and a fifth in Morris Co., NJ. It is possible a few other Van Duyns also immigrated from the Netherlands to America; information on the family is scarce. In Germany the privilege to use the title ‘von’ was a special noble privilege. I believe the same applied in the Netherlands, which would mean that the Van Duyns were a prominent family when they came over. The low profile of the family didn’t end when they arrived in the New World, it continues. The extremely low profile of the Van Duyns makes one wonder if they could really be one of the top 13 families. Still Mona Van Duyn was the first woman poet laureate, a Pulitzer winner (1991) and got a good review of her book in 1990 by the I have found that such awards take a combination of both talent and pull, especially in a field as subjective as poetry, it helps to have pull. Where did Mona Van Duyn get the political pull to get so many awards and many well promoted poetry books? Even before the British had consolidated their hold on New Netherlands the area was giving a foreshadowing of what it would become. Pirates which raided the East Indies and the Red Sea were outfitted in what is today New York and Rhode Island. William Patterson (born

c. 1655 in Scotland) was the evil genius behind the establishment of the Bank of Engiand. It is strongly believed that he was a trader in New York in 1668-69 and that prior to this he had worked with the pirate Morgan, who operated in the New Netherlands area. Witchcraft was part of some people's lives in New Netherlands, but the colony was far more lenient toward them than in the Puritan colony in Massachusetts. The last Dutch governor of New Netherlands, Gov. Peter Stuyvesant's sister-in-law was suspected of witchcraft, but acquitted. Ralph Hall of Seatalcott, Long Island and his wife were the only ones seriously tried of witchcraft in New Amsterdam and they were acquitted. In 1687, the British had taken the New Netherlands from the Dutch for the second and final time, and they made the Dutch take an oath of allegiance to the British Crown. Three Van Duyns of New Amsterdam are recorded having taken that oath. They were Gerrit Cornelis Van Duyn, Cornelis Gems Vanduyn, and Denijs Gerrise Vanduyn. However, in the 1790 census taken in New York state, there are no Van Duyn families at all listed. One of the best books on the Van Duyn family is *New Netherlands Families* by Wilson V. Ledley, Vol. 3 which is about the Van Duyn family. I obtained a copy of the Van Duyn part, which was able to assist me in my genealogy work. I count 378 Van Duyn's in the fifth generation of Van Duyn's in this country. Some of the families that the Van Duyn's have intermarried with are Ailing (Allen), Brendel, Bullinger, Graeber, Hayes, Kennedy, and Robertson. Some of the other families which are definitely Dutch with which the family married with are the Van Burens, the Van Cleeves, and Van der Hoef. It would be exceedingly interesting to find out if the Van Duyn's connect at all with the Dutch King William of Orange or some of William of Orange's supporters. Many of today's elite trace back to William of Orange or his prominent supporters. The Van Duyn last name has ended up with many spellings. For instance, in Bergen Co., NJ. the name is spelled Van Dyne, Van Duyn, VanDuyne, Van Dine, VanDine, & Van Dien. An informer states that Van Duyn is one of the top 13 Illuminati families. If that is so, then it certainly is the least known family of the thirteen. This article will show clues and evidence that have kept me from rejecting the possibility that the family is indeed one of the top thirteen. On the other hand, there are also some very puzzling things about this family that almost disqualify it from being a top family. One puzzling thing is how rare this surname is. Considering that the name belonged to one of the earliest settlers in the New World one would expect quite a clan to have developed. But this is not so. Another puzzling thing, is that the conspiracy has a great deal of activity going on in Brussels, Belgium. Belgium is half Dutch, half french. Many of the people in Brussels have Dutch names, and it would be expected that if the Van Duyn family were a top family they would have someone in Brussels, but I wasn't able to locate any there. See the reproduction of the Brussels phone book to show that some places have been named after the Van Duyns but none live there, although two Van Duynens are listed.

VAN DUYNS THAT CAUGHT MY EYE

Historically, there were a few Van Duyns that caught my attention.

Cornelis Van Duyn (1709-1779)--left an inheritance of 1,000 pounds of money to children.

William Van Duyn (1695-1773)--left two plantations to children in will

Aaron Van Duyn (1830- 1899)--trustee & deacon of the Meth. Episcopal church

Alfred Voorhees Van Duyn (1843-??)--an undertaker of Middlebush, NJ

Harrison Van Duyn (1845-1914)--member of NJ legislature in 1879, became Speaker of the House in 1881,

Scottish and York Rite Freemason, member of the Holland Society (see Holland Society Yearbook 1915), and numerous other business organizations and societies.

Horace N. Van Duyn--Stockholder in the Boston National Bank

Lewis Van Duyn-- Surveyor, organizer & president of Boonton Water Co., owned lots of real estate.

Simeon Van Duyn-- inventor, member Meth. Church in Boonton

The Van Duyn name is known in Western United States because of Van Duyn chocolate candies. The Van Duyn name has been well known in the New York area. The oldest of the large care centers for the elderly in NY is named after a Van Duyn. It was founded in 1827 at Syracuse, NY (Address is West Seneca Turnpike).

This elderly care center, the Van Duyn Home and Hospital, was reported to have 537 total regular staff, 136 nurses, and 526 licensed beds which are kept 99% occupied, making it the largest. I have very limited knowledge of the Van Duyn family. Three Van Duyn's are worthy of mention at this point. One Van Duyn was reported by an NSA informant to have been the liaison officer between MI6, the CIA, Mossad, and the Vietnamese government during the 1960s. Another Van Duyn was the founder of a branch of Planned Parenthood, an important New Age group which has been promoting sterilations, birth control, abortions, etc. for over half a century. The third is Mona Jane Van Duyn who has authored several poetry books, and is a Guggenheim fellow.

EDWARD SEGUIN VAN DUYN & PLANNED PARENTHOOD

Edward S. Van Duyn (1872 - 1955) was a prominent surgeon who was born in Syracuse, NY. He went to Princeton Univ. and then got his M.D. at Syracuse University in 1897. From 1909 until 1950, he was a surgeon. During the ghastly W.W. I, be was in the U.S. Army Medical Corps in France, first as a major and then as a Lt.

Colonel. Edward S. Van Duyn attended the Unitarian Church during his life--a church which has long been associated with Wicca. He also associated with the liberal Presbyterians. In 1933, he founded the Planned Parenthood Center of Syracuse, New York. Planned Parenthood Federation of America was an Illuminati inspired organization that was set up to accomplish several objectives. The organization's own stated purpose is very revealing: "To provide leadership m: making effective means of voluntary fertility regulation, including contraception, abortion, sterilization, and infertility services, available and fully accessible to all as a central element of reproductive health; stimulating and sponsoring relevant biomedical, socioeconomic, and demographic research; developing appropriate information, education, and training programs to increase knowledge about human reproduction and sexuality." Planned Parenthood Federation of America has about 190 affiliated organizations and actively promotes its agenda all over the world. It operates about 900 centers in the U.S. It maintains a 5,000 volume library on abortion, sterilization, and population control. One of its leaders Alan F. Guttmacher signed the Humanist Manifesto, and the president Faye Wattleton was awarded "Humanist of the year" in 1986. Both hate Christians. Margaret Sanger, who advocated neo-Malthusian population controls, with money from her husband and rich backers, started the American Birth Control League (ABCL) in 1921. The ABCL opened up the Birth Control Research Bureau (BCCRB) in 1923. In 1939 the ABCL and another similar group merged to form the Birth Control Federation of America (BCFA) which in 1942 changed its name to Planned Parenthood Federation. Consider the changes that have happened within our lifetimes. In 1957, birth control devices were outlawed in all NY metropolitan hospitals. In 1969, the Federal government was subsidizing abortions and birth control through the federal antipoverty program. In the 1980s, public schools started offering condoms and new types of sex education programs for teenagers. The Schlesinger Library has been actively keeping historical records of the "family planning movement" and David Kennedy wrote the book *Birth Control in America: The Career of Margaret Sanger* in 1970. Much of what has happened in abortions, birth control research, and population control mechanisms has come as a result of these type of organizations. I was curious-WHAT KIND OF PEOPLE WANT US STERILIZED, OUR BABIES ABORTED, AND THE WORLD'S POPULATION REDUCED? What kind of people are funding the enormous amount of money it takes to get people to abort their babies? What does it cost to get a population to voluntarily neuter themselves? I randomly picked a year (1984) to research the funding for Planned Parenthood and the Planned Parenthood branches. I was astounded at how hugh the sums of money that the elite spend in just one year to get us to castrate ourselves and tie our tubes, and abort our babies. I have divided the list of Foundations that donated money to Planned Parenthood in just the single year of 1984 into two categories. The first category are Foundations that I can identify having connections to the Illuminati. The others are all the rest, and I suspect this second group has many that tie back too, I most likely haven't figured out how.

ILLUMINATI CONNECTED FOUNDATIONS DONATING TO PLANNED PARENTHOOD FEDERATION & BRANCHES -- and the amounts donated in 1984,

Vincent ASTOR Foundation -- $150,000

Mary Duke BIDDLE Foundation -- $5,000

DODGE Foundation -- $115,000 (the DuPonts are behind GM)

FORD Foundation -- $200,000 (McGeorge Bundy was Pres. of Ford Found.)

William Randolph HEARST Foundation -- $10,000

(Freemason) Jessee H. Jones' HOUSTON Endowment -- $30,000

Eli LILLY & CO. Foundation -- $10,000

LILLY Endowment -- $100,000

Andrew W. MELLON Foundation -- $970,000

Richard King MELLON Foundation -- $55,000

(Jewish Rosicrucian) Fred MEYER Charitable Fund - $10,000

MORGAN Guaranty Trust -- $31,000

Jessie Smith NOYES Foundation -- $152,400

J.N. PEW Memorial Trust -- $730,000

PRUDENTIAL Foundation -- $8,000

Kate B. REYNOLDS Charitable Trust -- $25,000

Z.S. REYNOLDS Foundation -- $30,000

Russeil SAGE Foundation -- *$5,000*

Max STERN Foundation -- $20,000

Levi STRAUSS Foundation -- $5,000

OTHER FOUNDATIONS CONTRIBUTING TO PLANNED PARENTHOOD- (Some of these may well also have the Illuminati behind them.)

AHMANSON Foundation -- $125,600

Theodore & Beulah BEASLEY Foundation -- $100,000

ALLEN-BRADLEY Foundation -- $15,000

Worthington BENEDUM Foundation -- $15,000

Otto BREMER Foundation -- $7,500

Gwendolyn CAFRITZ Foundation -- $50,000

Lewis CALDER Foundation -- $20,000

CHAMPLIN Foundation -- $25,000

CENTRAL N.Y. COMMUNITY Foundation -- $125,000

CHARLOTTE Foundation -- $6,250

Robert Sterling CLARK Foundation -- $200,000

Clark Foundation -- $15,000

Olive B. COLE Foundation -- $30,000

Commonwealth Fund -- $200,500

DOLFINGER-MCMAHON Foundation -- $5,000

EDUCATIONAL Foundation of America -- $50,000

OP. & W.E. EDWARDS Foundation -- $15,000

Samuel S. FELS Fund -- $5,000

FIELD Foundation -- $40,000

GEBBIE Foundation -- $10,945

GENERAL MILLS Foundation -- $15,000

Wallace Alexander GERBODE Foundation -. $16,000

Morris GOLDSEKER Foundation -- $30,000

George GUND Foundation -- $108,096

Walter HAAS Foundation -- $7,870

Adah F. HALL Charity Fund -- $11,000

Ewing HALSELL Foundation -- $25,000

William HEWLETT Foundation -- $850,000

Dayton HUDSON Foundation -- $10,000

HUMBOLDT Area Foundation -- $35,000

JEWETT Foundation (of CALIF) -- $12,500 (gave to ID & WA Planned Parenthood)

Walter S. JOHNSON Foundation -- $147,506

KALAMAZOO Foundation -- $32,656

J.M. Kaplan Fund -- $50,000

KECK Foundation --*$15,0(X)*

Peter Kiewit Foundation -- $45,000

KRANNERT Charitable Trust -- $150,000

MANSANTO Fund -- $5,000

MEDICAL Trust -- $600,000

METROPOLITAN Life Foundation -- $7,500

MCCUNE Foundation -- $10,000

MCGREGOR Foundation -- $5,000

MCKNIGHT Foundation -- $35,000

MUSKEGON County Community Foundation -- $6,000

NEEDMOR Fund -- $30,000

Edward John NOBLE Foundation -- $80,000

NORTON Co. Foundation -- $25,000

PACKARD Foundation -- $100,636

PASADENA Foundation -- $5,000

PITON Foundation -- $80,000

PITTSBURGH Foundation -- $55,000

PHILADELPHIA Foundation -- $23.000

PUBLIC Welfare Foundation -- $30,000

RIPLEY Memorial Foundation -- $5,000

SAN FRANCISCO Foundation -- $32,209

SANTA BARBARA Foundation -- $20,000

Florence & John SCHUMAN -- $25,000

William G. SELBY Foundation -- $18,700

SKILLMAN Foundation -- $30,000

Harry G. STEELE Foundation -- $418,950

Eloise & Richard WEBBER Foundation -- $20,000

WESTERN Electric Fund -- $6,000

Robert WILSON Foundation -- $50,000

If the reader is wondering what happened that some of the other top Illuminati families are not on the above list, the reason why is that the other families were supporting other organizations similar to Planned Parenthood Foundation which are also working to promote sterilizations, abortions, and sexual promiscuity. For instance, the Rockefeller family runs hundreds of foundations, and just two of these --the ones named after the Rockefellers-supported the following groups in 1984 which have the same goals and agenda as Planned Parenthood-- Center for Population Options (donation given - $29,730), Population Council ($1,235,000), Alan Guttmacher Institute ($300,000) this is a dangerous organization doing research to promote these things, Population Institute ($10,000). On top of this, in 1984 the Red Chinese Academy of Medical Science was given several Rockefeller grants to do contraceptive, sterilization, and genetic research. One of these was a $6,647 grant given to the Red Chinese Academy of Medical Science to study male contraceptives. Has abortion, sterilization, sexual promisculty, population control, and genetic research been part of the Illuminati's long range plan? You bet. But it was important that the Illuminati convince the experts, (at least the experts they control) that these things were needed to save mankind. Three studies were made by the elite to determine that a population explosion was threatening the earth. according to William Cooper in Behold a Pale Horse, pp. 166-67. The first was during W.W. II, the second at Huntsville, AL in 1957, and the third by the Club of Rome ending in 1968. All three studies concluded that population growth must be curtailed. Last year at a meeting of the elite, George Hunt obtained a handout which shows that the elite are committed to stopping the population growth by any means available. Years earlier, Illuminatus Dr. Aurelio Peccei advocated a plague similar to the Black Plague, and when the idea was developed it became the AIDs epidemic. The Illuminati have the cure for AIDS. Actually, there are many cures for AIDS But the one they had before the AIDS epidemic began will not be given to the population until enough people die, or until the elite are exposed enough that they are forced to give out the cure. Dr. Wolf Szmuness. Pope John Paul II's ex-roomate was one of the masterminds behind the AIDS epidemic. The National Security Council has had an ad hoc group on Population Policy to strongly encourage other nations to have birth control, abortions, and sterilizations. This group drafted the Global 2000 Report which was given to Carter. Whether the population explosion is a threat or not--(having travelled world-wide and having a father who was considered one of the better agricultural scientists, I contend it is not a threat)- -the world's elite believe it, and they make the decisions. Further, they have a vested interest, an immoral need to believe in the overpopulation lie.

VAN DUYN CANDIES

Van Duyn Candies has its kitchen and administration at 739 N.E. Broadway, Portland, OR. They operate 10 retail candy stores in Portland, one in Silverdale, WA (near Bremerton). The 63 year old company has 16 shopping mall leases, and wholesales candy to other candy distributors. It also operates a subsidiary Miss Saylor's Candies, Inc. of Long Beach, CA. Van Duyn has in turn been bought out by Van Rian Corp, 2360 NW Quimby St., Portland, 97210. In 1990, American Confectionery, Inc. of Chino, CA was listed as owner of Van Duyn Candies. (These statistics were the ones I was able to get, they may be outdated.) One informant felt that Van Duyn Candies might play a role in the distribution of poisoned candy to American school children, which was an Illuminati plan on the drawing boards years ago. I contacted a Van Duyn representative about any company plans to distribute candy to schools, but got no information. The company has had its share of strange things happen. Richard McCall who was the president borrowed $391,000 of the company's funds for his personal use. This theft of company funds was forgiven when he gave up his position and his share of stock so that he no longer had control over a large block of stock. On April, 27, 1988 *The Oregonian* reported that the company had gone bankrupt, and had filed for bankruptcy in Mar. 1987. However. company officials declared that the bankruptcy was merely a reorganization which involved the resolving of the equity split in financial control of the company. The Van Duyn Candies reported $10 million in sales in 1986. If they play any role in all of this or not I cannot say. I certainly do not suggest that any of my readers boycott their candies. That would be rather rash and certainly is not what I want to see happen. Besides because they wholesale to others, I don't what other labels the candy gets sold under.

A STRING OF STRANGE COINCIDENCES

A strange thing that happened to me that may be just coincidence or another piece of the puzzle. I will not mention any names, because I do not know how this all fits together. One of the men who owns two Van Duyn stores is an ex-Missionary to Taiwan and a minister. This ex-Missionary still is on best of terms (close friend) with the most powerful Free Chinese Army generals. He drives Cadillacs, and when he visits China is given the red carpet by his military general friend. This ex-missionary/minister was a friend of mine, and in 1990, when he heard I had written a book, he was excited to buy my book because we were friends. When he found out the title was *The Watchower & The Masons,* he immediately lost interest in the book and never bought it. I asked him if he knew anything about the Freemasons and he said he knew absolutely nothing about them. I thought that was a strange reply, because he was a leader of the Kiwannis in this area, and I have been to his Kiwannis breakfasts which were held in the basement of a Masonic Lodge here in Portland. How did this minister arrange for his Kiwannis club to meet in a Masonic Lodge, yet know nothing about the Masons? Further, there are many Masons with his surname, so that at least within his extended family I would expect some of them are Masons. Later, this man’s son-in-law (also a minister) called me to this son-in-law’s office in a particular church and told me I should be excommunicated by Christians for trying to expose Billy Graham, even though this ministers church doesn’t excommunicate. He gave me mean looks and further told me, "You will die for your sins. I dont know if this owner of Van Duyn stores has any relationship to the larger picture, or if all this is Just a number of strange coincidences.

I don’t even know if the Van Duyn candy company is related in anyway to the Van Duyn family, although one informant claims it is.

A VAN DUYN & THE CIA, MI6, MOSSAD, NSA ETC.

MI6 was intimately involved in the creation of the CIA and MOSSAD. And MI6 is the guiding hand behind those two organizations. British Intelligence was integrated under the title British Security Coordination which was the world’s largest and most powerful intelligence beast in the world. This beast has been under total control by the Illuminati since its beginning. Since 1940 when the BSC was set up in New York the Americans have worked for the British. But the intelligence community in the UK, USA, Canada, Australia, NZ has gone a step beyond the secret intrigue of intelligence agencies secretly controlling other intelligence agencies. They have actually signed formal agreements which completely make all these acronym monsters into one intelligence agency. There is The Technical Cooperation Program (TTCP) and the ABCA Agreement which concerns intelligence information exchange in the areas of defense research and development. The ABCA Agreement concerns military intelligence. The BRUSA Agreement on May 17, 1943 established exchange of personnel and the most intimate cooperation at the highest levels by the various national intelligence agencies of all high-grade COMINT. A Secret Treaty of 1947 linked all the major commonwealth and American intelligence groups. This is just one of countless agreements, most secret, for the exchange of information. At that point in time, levels of secrecy were ULTRA (very secret), Pearl (moderately secret), and Thumb (secret). Pearl and Thumb later became Pinup. On 17 February 1972 a National Security Council Intelligence Directive (NSCID)-6 directed the NSA to be the principal US SIGINT agency, with the FBI and CIA basically working for the NSA. Although some people are claiming that their is friction between the NSA and its front organizations the FBI & CIA, it is hard to picture that this friction is anything serious because many people in these front organizations work for the NSA. The CIA, MI6 and the Mossad all worked through the BCCI which was scandalized recently, although the elite kept the lid on the scandal. Together the UKUSA intelligence community (or what is better termed the NWO’s intelligence world-wide intelligence agency, of which MI5, MI6, CIA, NSA, FBI, NZSIS, RCMP, SIS, ASIO, GCHQ, NRO, DIA & the SASB are simply departments, have together at least 300,000 people employed full time. If there was in the 1968 time period a Van Duyn serving as the liaison between these various intelligence "departments', he would be a very powerful man. (There is a way open to me to confirm this about a Van Duyn if I get the time.)

TWO OTHER PROMINENT EARLY DUTCH AMER. FAMILIES

One of the men who has worked for the NWO in their think tanks and with their intelligence agencies is Professor William R. Van Cleave, who is a descendent of the New Netherlands families. His name is mentioned now because it is quite possible the Van Cleave's and the Van Duyn's intermarried. (I know that William Van

Duyn married Sarah Van Cleef in Somerset, NJ in around 1750. Prof. Van Cleave worked for RAND, Stanford Research Institute, Dept. of Strategic and Defense Studies at the Univ. of So. Calif. and was an advisor to the Pentagon, the SALT conferences etc. The Van Cleves are said to have originated from an ancestor Jan Van Cleef who was the son of Dutch nobility--the last Duke of Cleves. He is said to have come to America in *1653.* Two of the Van Cleaves were Scottish Rite Masons in Chicago around the turn of the century.

SOME IMPORTANT CONNECTIONS -- COLLINS - WHITNEYS - VANDERBILTS

William Collins Whitney, a member of the Illuminati via the Skull & Bones Order, is someone who I suspect was part of the Collins family. The Collins family is without doubt one of the top 13 Illuminati families. William Collins Whitney was a directory of Guaranty Trust, as well as his son H.P. Whitney who served later. William Collins Whitney married Flora Payne, daughter of Standard Oil's Treasurer Oliver Payne. William Collins Whitney's two sons were both members in the Skull & Bones, and one of them married Gertrude Vanderbilt (another originally early Dutch American family). The money that the Whitney family had amassed from the Payne's and the Vanderbilts then was put into Guaranty Trust, J.P. Morgan, and Guggenheim. Alfred Gwynne Vanderbilt was a member of the Skull & Bones Order (init. 1899). A. Vanderbilt was sent a warning not to sail on the Lusitannia, because the elite knew it was to be sunk, but he failed to get the telegram and sailed to his death. Whitman Vanderbilt was part of the group of Illuminati that made up the Round Table in which the Satanic Astors and Satanic Cecils played a big role. I have sometimes wondered if rather than the Van Duyn's that the name we should be dealing with is Vanderbilt. In any case, the point is that several of these originally Dutch families are in deep with the Illuminati. The origin of the Vanderbilt fortune is an obscure mystery. It was close to 1 billion in 1924, and must exceed numerous billions today. One reference states that Cornelius Vanderbilt, the original Vanderbilt who made it rich, made his large sums from blackmail (Minnigerode, Meade. Certain Rich Men. New York: G.P. Putnam's Son, 1927, pp 112-113.) Lindsay Russell (of the Russell family--another top 13 Illuminati family) worked for the Vanderbilts. It was Lindsay Russell who started the Pilgrim Society--which is the 6° of the branch Illuminati. Lindsay Russell was also chairman of the CFR, which is the 4°.

The Vanderbilts, the Whitneys, the Goulds, and the Rockefellers gave large sums of money to Billy Graham for his New York Crusade.

THE DUTCH CONNECTION TODAY

Many ex-Nazis and elite industrialists have made their homes in the Garderen-Putten area of the Netherlands. The Bilderbergers are building a superhotel/conference center near this area. One of the companies involved in building the hotel is the Nazi family of Nachanius. The Belgium-Dutch connection to the Illuminati is not trivial. The Dutch William of Orange deposed English King James II in the fighting of 1688-91. That is significant, because it appears that Illuminati financial headquarters were in Amsterdam prior to William of Orange's victory. After that victory they moved to London. One only has to note how important Brussels has been to the New World Order to realize that the lowlands of Belgium and the Netherlands continue to be important for the elite. For instance, the Beast--the supercomputer which is notified within seconds of every financial transaction you carry on at an ATM is located in Brussels. If the Van Duyn family were indeed one of the top 13 families it might break open some big clues to understanding the Belgium connections and elements within the Illuminati. Earlier newsletters and the *Be Wise As Serpents* book have described high level rituals carried out in a castle (burg) in Belgium. There are dutchmen in the genealogy of the Roosevelt presidents in the line that goes back to the British royalty. Other prominent elitists tie back to the Netherlands & Belgium also. Elizabeth Van Buren wrote The Sign of the Dove which is a book about the Merovingians [the 13th Top Illuminati bloodline] and Jesus. The book takes a gnostic approach to religion, and puts forth the idea that the Merovingians were of extra-terrestrial descent. I had expected to find the town of Duyn from which the Van Duyn would have taken their name, but none of the maps so far have shown it. I had expected to find more important Van Duyns in the Netherlands and in the U.S. Instead, I only found a Hidde Hendrick Van Duym, who came over from the Netherlands and became a state educational official. Clearly, I have only broken the surface in trying to understand the Dutch connection in the Illuminati.

CONCLUSIONS & SUMMARY

It has been theorized by others that at the top of the Illuminati are unknown superiors, so this should not scare anyone that I don't have all the details, and that the family is unknown. On the other hand it is very hard to hide people who wield immense power. So far, I have dealt with families that were definitely within the top 13 Illuminati families. If the Van Duyn family is part of the top 13, it may represent the 'Dutch-Flemish-Belgium segment of the Illuminati, just as the Astors & Rothschilds came from Germany, the DuPonts from France, the Li's from China, and the Kennedy's from Ireland. Actually, the entire 13 top families are related in various ways and their heritages go back to the ancient nobility of Europe, to the tribe of Dan, and to the Khazars. Many of these top families feel they are descendents of the House of David. One researcher has even told me that the royal house of Japan is blood relation to the thirteenth top Illuminati family. (Truth is often stranger than fiction, but this sounds truly incredible.) That would be interesting if the genealogy (which he claims does exist) does actually show that. It would help explain why Japan is being brought into the picture. I was able only to identify that the Van Duyn family was a very early colonial American family of status, and that the few modern members of this family which I could identify are suspiciously tied to the establishment and fit the type of persons we would expect from a top 13 family. If anyone has any information concerning this subject, that information would be appreciated.

REVISITING THE VAN DUYN FAMILY - ONE OF THE TOP 13 ILLUMINATI FAMILIES

The Dutch-Belgium connection is one link that is very powerful in the Illuminati, but an area of which my knowledge is very scattered. I am trying to rectify that ignorance. Since my big article in the July 1, 1993 issue about the Van Duyns, I received more confirmations and tips from ex-Illuminati informants. So I have continued my search for details on the Van Duyn family. I was given the tip that the Illuminati members of this family were located in someplace [ike Michigan, and I did indeed find that the Grand Rapids area has a large number of Van Duyns. There are also a small smattering of Van Duyns (there are a few variant spellings such as Van Duine) at Lansing, MI; North Oakland, MI; Minneapolis, MINN; and St. Paul. I was also able to identify one more Van Duyn who has been part of the power structure, and might possibly then be part of the actual secret generational Satanic cult activity. This man was an official for UNESCO. I have had ex-Witchcraft sources tell me that UNESCO was passing NWO instructions on to them. UNESCO is one of the more directly controlled and more dangerous U.N. organizations. My writings have referred to it before. This man's name is Robert Gerald Vanduyn. He married florence Elizabeth Noyer. Robert Vanduyn served as the associate director of the W.K. Kellogg Foundation, which is a large foundation with HO in Battle

Creek, Michigan. The Kellogg Foundation gives grants to Catholic Universities, to research along the lines of Illuminati goals, and a variety of other causes. For instance, a 1984 $100,000 grant was given to the American Association of Community and Junior Colleges. The purpose? ‘To implement a national recruitment effort to enlist the support of government and corporate leaders to improve policies concerning adult education and training." Of course as you know, most national government and corporate leaders are part of their power structure so of course they (the Illuminati) would like these people in the decision making process of our junior colleges. The Foundation contributed almost $10,000 in 1984 to the Battle Creek Board of Education. That should give the foundation quite a bit of clout in the local school board’s decisions. Many of the grants of the Kellogg Foundation are to promote things in health care and agriculture which are in the general trend of what the Illuminati is pushing for. The American government loaned Robert Vanduyn to UNESCO from 1972 onwards. He was given the position of Coordinator of UNESCO Service World Bank Education project. To be in that position shows he was part of the elite, whether he was or wasn’t a Satanist. UNESCO is being used to push a NWO education agenda on the world. Recently, the death of Patricia Van Cleve Lake opened up some more clues about the Van Duyns. In the July 1 article I mention on page *52* that one of the other early Dutch families in New Amsterdam which intermarried with the Van Duyns was the Van Cleves. Ten hours before Patricia Van Cleve Lake died on Oct. 3, she called her son and told him the truth about who she was. The 3 paragraph death notice was buried on page 14 in an LA. paper (I think the LA Times). What she told her son on her death bed was that she was the daughter of William Randolph Hearst and movie star Marion Davies. Various people noticed her resemblance to Hearst, but dared not speak about it publicly. Her son told people after she died, ‘She lived her life on a satin pillow. They took away her name, but they gave her everything else." Patricia was always introduced as "the niece" of Marion Davies, who in reality was her mother. The rumor mill since the 1920s had claimed Patricia was Hearst daughter, but it wasn’t until just this last month that it had been publicly said.

The news links the Van Cleve family to Hearst. All this news is very interesting in light of several previously establish facts. First, Hearst who funded Billy Graham’s first 3 years of Crusades was part of the Illuminati. Second, the Illuminati often adopt out their children to hide their paternity and ancestry. Third, the Van Cleve family is linked to the Van Duyns, which raises the possibility of links between Hearst and the Van Duyns.

FOLLOWUP ARTICLE ON THE VAN DUYNS

The long Van Duyn article of the July 1, ‘93 newsletter indicated that I was puzzled that I hadn’t found more clues about the power of the Van Duyn family, which an informant had told me was one of the top 13 Illumanati families. Since that time, I have spent time with a very knowledgeable ex-Illuminatus, and it was confirmed that the initial information was indeed correct, the Van Duyns are one of the top 13 Bloodlines. Some of the Satanic members of this bloodline are in the North Central area of United States, such as in Michigan. I found out that this bloodline keeps much of their money in Europe, and that they are linked to some ltalians -- (the Mafia?).

With some more clues to pursue, I hope to discover some more about this top Illuminati family which has gone to such great lengths to be hidden. It is clear that they have kept their money and businesses well hidden, via holding companies and other gimmicks.

EPILOGUE

This collection of articles has tried to take the reader back stage to meet the families that control the Illuminati and the world. One of the best places to see representatives of the different 13 families together are when they gather for the Feast of the Beast. The back stage story is tar from being told. The Van Duyn family is a fitting way to end this book, because the mystery that surrounds them highlights the work that still remains to tell the complete story. The Van Duyn articles do not mention Roel Van Duyn of Amsterdam, Netherlands who founded/headed in modern times the socialist/communist movement in the Netherlands. He was a powerful man. The movement was lead by Provos (provocateurs) whose demonstrations at times got violent. What is the nature of the relationship between the Van Duyn family and the Van Cleve family? I know there was some intermarriage, but due to time restraints I never completed my investigation down this avenue. While Roel Van Duyn was leading his radical movement, Miss Davies father was livIng at Heart's Riverside Dr. No. 336, and her brother-in-law George Van Cleve was an executive in Hearst's film corporation. The mystery of the Van Duyn family is also reflected in the mystery surrounding the Romanov family. The Romanov family had more than the Russian branch, there was for instance a Prussian branch. And some of their family like the Grand Prince Alexis Romanov came to America, where his granddaughter Mary Teissier (the cousin to Alexander Romanov) was one of J. Paul Getty's main lovers. J. Paul Getty if you have forgotten was at one time listed by Fortune Magazine as America's richest man. Not only does Romanov blood flow in some of the Illuminati, the Romanov name pops up among the friends of Frank Sinatra. Mike and Gloria Romanov were friends of Frank Sinatra. Frank Sinatra's social activities were like a Who's Who in the Mafia and Illuminati. Frank Sinatra would travel to France to spend time with Baron Guy de Rothschild, or could be found doing a charity ball for the World Mercy Fund with Laurance Rockefeller.

Mentioning the Rockefellers brings us right back to the Romanovs. And then who was Anne Marie Rasmussen who married Nelson Rockefeller's son Steven Clark Rockefeller? When one reads her book There Was Once A Time of Islands. Illusions. & Rockefellers (NY: Harcourt Brace Jovanovich, 1975) one learns that she was from Norway, a maid in the Rockefeller home, learned TM, and was shocked by the Rockefeller's abundant 'primitive' art of the Rockefellers. 'Primitive' simply was a Rockefeller expression for all the nude art that they have all around. In her book, she talks about 'The Playhouse' at Kykuit, about Margaretta (Happy) Rockefeller's close friend Mrs. Vincent Astor, about Laurance Rockefeller's St. John Island, where he built the Caneel Bay Plantation, and the Rockefeller's ranch at Jackson Hole, WY. Talking about the Astors brings us back to Frank Sinatra who bought Mary Astor's large rambling property in the Toluca Lake area of the San Fernando Valley. Frank bought the land without even seeing it. Frank is not the only one not seeing things. So much of what is being told us by our media is outright distortions. John D. Rockefeller, Sr. would get together secretly with WIlliam H. Vanderbilt and Jay Gould to scheme against the public. They took oaths to cooperate while the public thought they were antagonists. And what about the Rockefeller-Rothschild feud? And why did John Archbold (John D. Rockefeller's right hand man) go overseas and secretly work out business arrangements with the Rothschilds in the 1880s? One CIA agent described the 'Company' as a worn out whorer who needs to come in off the street and get cleaned. The Illuminati have made the CIA and used it for their own ends, and have let the CIA be the fall guy. When we start looking closer at the CIA, we see men like Archie Roosevelt of the Roosevelt family, who was a leader in the CIA., going to places such as Nigeria to visit the Emir of Kano with David Rockefeller. This Rockefeller/Roosevelt visit to the Emir was close to going to Timbuktu. (David Rockefeller took along his own private professor of Egyptology when he went to the pyramids and to Egypt. Perhaps his love for Egypt relates to David's fixation and love for beetles.) (Another aside, is that America's foremost Egyptologist Dr. Charles Breasted was underwritten by the Rockefellers. But then those few who understand the one to one correspondence of the Book of the Dead's rituals and modern Satanic rituals might not be surprised.) Nelson Rockefeller was part of the National Security Council which sits even higher than the CIA in Intelligence affairs. Speaking of far off places, what about Mis Osman Ali Khan who was the principal Moslem ruler of India at one time? And what about the multi-millionaire possible billionaire Aga Khan Ill? These men interacted socially with the Illuminati families. And how far does the Rockefeller wealth go? We know that through the Chase Investment Corporation they have such far off holdings as a steel mill in Turkey, and a cotton textile mill in Nigeria. Creole Petroleum of Venezuela is owned by Nelson. Chase Manhattan has a full-time envoy to the U.N. and the Secretary Generals of the UN visit the Rockefellers at their estate at Pocantico. A number of families threw their selves in with the Rockefellers and owe their family wealth to the fact that they served the Rockefellers. These include John D. Archbold, the Harknesses, the Bedfords, the

Chesebroughs, the Cutlers, the Flaglers, the Folgers, the Paynes, the Pierces, and the Rogerses. The Rockefeller's have had a number of senators who he 'owns'. In 1904, Senator Penrose received *$25,000* and Senator Bliss received $100,000 given via Rockefeller's Standard Oil. One scholar wrote against the Rockefeller control of politics, 'The Standard [Oil] had done everything to the Pennslyvannia legislature except refine it.' (Henry Demarest Lloyd, Wealth Against the Commonwealth. When the Rockefellers wanted to build a highway they would summon people like Interior Secretary Stewart Udall to Nelson's apartment, where he talked Udall into permitting the Rockefellers to build an unpopular highway. In 1968, Hubert Humphrey wanted both David and Nelson Rockefeller in his cabinet. The Rockefellers cooked up the idea to have a World Trade Center in NY and their cronies were involved in the scandal to promote the idea. David wrote letters of advice to Pres. J.F. Kennedy. Where do all these elite connections end? All these top 13 Illuminati families tie together at the Feast of the Beast rituals. In addition to this grand meeting, where Satan puts in his personal appearance, these families have smaller meetings and rituals frequently all over the world. Their Council of 9 and their Council of 13 meet and send out their orders regularly. Volume 2 will examine how the Illuminati rule, what their organizations are, and what their life and rituals are like. An Appendix so to speak. As I failed to provide a genealogical chart for the Rockefeller Family while doing my newsletter articles, I will as an appendix add that to this page. One of the families that intermarried with the Costellos was the Van Duyn family. But who are the Costellos? Frank Costello (died 1973) was the underworld boss of New York for many years until Vito Genovese (died '69) took control. Carlo Gambino took over from Vito until his death and then in 1976 Carlo in turn died and his heir Paul Castellano with some of the Gambino family took over. Now Roosevelt (Rosy-or Rose) Gambino runs the Gambino family, The (;ambino family is related in marriage to the Eli Lilly Illuminati family. Frank Costello had Jerry Catena *working for him, and Eddie Torres was a close friend of Jerry Catena. Eddie* Torres was the President of the Las Vegas casino Riviera, before Gus Greenbaum took over. Greenbaum was connected to all the Mafia, and was a casino manager for Meyer Lansky in Havana and other places. Lou Costello's father was from Italy. In Italy the name was spelled Cristillo. Lou Costello got Dean Martin into show business. Lou provided Dean Martin the money for his nose job before Dean made it big in show business. Lou's daughter later married Dean's son. Lou Perry and Costello both got Dean Martin into show business. Costello had great clout with MCA. Costello got disgusted with Dean Martin in 1945 when Dean ran up bills which he charged to Lou Costello. Later Dean ignored Lou at a Casino and also got Lou Costello ticked off. Dean's first wife was Betty McDonald. Betty's father was Bill McDonald. (See what I've written on the McDonald's role in the Illuminati.) Betty McDonald Martin became known for being a party-throwing alcoholic while neglecting her children. Carole Costello married Dean Martin's oldest son. One of Lou Costello's friends was Mickey Cohen. Frank Costello rubbed shoulders with the Rockefellers, with Lucky Lucianno, and other powerful underworld figures. Costello controlled NY Mayor William 0' Dwyer. Frank Costello was also the owner of Alliance Distributors who are the sole American distributors for Whiteley Co. of Scotland. Scotch drinkers like the orange brown scotch of the famous King's Ransom Scotch as well as the House of Lords Scotch. They may not realize that Costello was the sole distributor of these drinks which were imported through him from Scotland. Ray Ryan, a young Texas oil Tycoon went into at least one petroleum-lease venture with Frank Costello and Frank Erickson. Ray Ryan was friends also with Dean Martin. Ray Ryan was the godfather for Ricci Martin. His Mount Kenya Safari Club had an elusive membership, incl. such Illuminati members as Winston Churchill and Prince Bernhard of the Netherlands. Ray Ryan was involved with the malia when someone blew his Lincoln Continental up. The blast had been so powerful part of Palm Springs had its power knocked out. Dean Martin, Frank Sinatra, Sammy Davis, Jr., Peter Lawford and Joey Bishop were known as the Rat Pack. All of these men were connected to the Mafia and some (if them were satanists such as Sammy Davis, Jr. and Peter Lawford. In 1960, these men posed together outside of the Sands casino for a picture where they performed together. This picture of the Rat Pack is in the book Dino. Living High In the Dirty Business of Dreams by Nick Tosches. Another picture of Dean Martin taken around 1954 shows *him with Marilyn Monroe and Averell Harriman. Averell Harriman was in the Illuminati. Marilyn Monroe was* a Monarch sexual slave for the elite. Marilyn was a Presidential Model sexual slave for JFK. JFK was part of the Kennedy Illuminati family and he often spent time with members of the Rat Pack. The Hollywood Reporter described Dean Martin as a "hypnotically attractive, homegrown

American monster." Frank Sinatra was a very cruel man too. Dean Martin (Dino Crocetti) grew up in Steubenville which was known for its gambling and prostitution. A white-slavery ring that kidnapped beautiful woman for whorehouses was headquartered in Steubenville. James Vincent Tripodi of the Mafia ran Steubenville. A popular saying in Steubenville among the youth was ‘Learn to steal, learn to deal, or go to the mill.’ Dino became a dealer at the Rex in Steubenville, run by Cosmo Quattrone. Jerry Lewis, a close associate to Dean Martin said, "No one ever got to know him, not even Betty [his wife]." Herman Hover, who lived at 606 North Bedford Drive in Beverly Hills, bought his mansion from the Vanderbilts. Howard Hughes did a lot of his business at the mansion. Mickey Cohen, Gen. J. Wainwright, Howard Hughs, James Roosevelt (FDR’s son), and many other prominent people would go to Hover’s Ciro nightclub. Later they would go over to Hover’s Mansion. The mansion was a place of frequent parties that Dean Martin and others of his group would go to. In defiance of NBC’s standards, Dean Martin for his Dean Martin show was going to show off women trained as animals. Dean Martin would walk on the show with a voluptuous gal in a tiger outfit on a leash that Dean would hold. The girl would then be telling Dean at every chance that she was not a girl but a fellow. When Dean married Kathy Hawn, in 1973, Frank Sinatra was his best man. Frank received a diamond-studded golden cigarette lighter with an obscene inscription. Dean worked many years for MGM Grand, which now is built as a pyramid in Las Vegas with Monarch programming going on in it. The theme inside the MGM is the Wizard of Oz which is for Monarch programming. (To understand the Wizard of Oz mind control programming the reader needs to get this author’s various writings on the Monarch Programming, which includes an Illustrated Guide To Monarch Programming and other writings.) Bob Hope, an MI-6 agent who was used extensively in W.W. II to trigger mind-controlled military men with the proper hypnotically embedded trigger words, received his own mind-controlled sex slaves after the war. One of these slaves of Bob Hope also worked for the Illuminati’s Council of 7. This author (Fritz Spnngmeier knows her) and she is one of the few Illuminati slaves who has been deprogrammed. While she was a slave for Bob Hope, he loaned her to Sammy Davis, Jr., Dean Martin, and Richard Nixon to name a few. More about this Monarch slave, which was used as a courier and a sexual slave, shortly. Let’s explain some about Bob Hope. Because the previous paragraph may present the reader some difficulties let’s temporarily digress into the entertainment field’s connections to the elite. The Caesars and the medieval kings recognized the importance of controlling the people with entertainment. The occult world has long been connected with entertainment. during W.W. II, the U.S. and U.K. used almost everyone in the entertainment fields to help with the war effort. There have been numerous connections in this author’s research about the llluminati/CIA mind control which connects back to the U.S.O. (the American military entertainers that travelled in USO units on tours.) The story about how the USO was used to carry messages to mind-controlled agents and military men would include many names including Quent Reynolds, Bruce Cabot, Joe E. Brown, Andy Devine, Candy Jones (Jessica Wilcox) and some many lesser knowns such as Wheeler (who later became known as the programmer Dr. Black). The military apparently was already using programmed killers to carry out deadly assignments. Bob Hope & the USO was used to carry trigger words to these mind-controlled people. For many years the world’s experts in running spies--the British empire under the control of the Illuminati.-have been using certain professions for spying. For instance, Postmaster Generals are used for spying because they can control the secret spying on mail. An example of this, Benjamin Franklin, postmaster general for the colonies, was an important spy for the Illuminati’s British Trading Companies/British government in the colonies. (To understand his role in the Illumminati contrived American Revolution read chap. 3.4. in my Be Wise As Serpents). Likewise, what better person to pick than Bob Hope to run messages worldwide. Bob Hope, was british, and MI6 knew they could trust him. Bob Hope has an excellent ability to learn and say lines. Bob was and still is great with words, knowing how to fit them together and to make puns and double and triple meaning sentences. His ability to construct sentences with double meanings, was a great cover for the hidden messages he transmited for allied intelligence during the war. If you want to keep a secret the best place is out in the open. The British and American intelligence agencies know this. Some of their greatest secrets are out in the open, where no one suspects what they are. Bob Hope. who was already a radio and movie star before W.W.II, was given wide publicity as he travelled all over for the U.S.O. (the entertainment groups for the military). Bob Hope was ‘just an entertainer,’ and yet he visited Roosevelt. Churchill, Eisenhower, Pattan, and all kinds of military men. Bob travelled all over the world to every front during the war, including

England, Africa, the South Pacific. the East & west coasts of the U.S. the Caribbean, Panama, etc. He could fit all kinds of signals into his jokes and talks, and no one would be the wiser. Under the disguise of building moral by being a comedian, Bob could go anywhere and because he always was making jokes, no one took him seriously. Bob Hope was a courier, a message bearer of coded messages. Sometimes the coded messages almost seem to jump out when you look at his wartime talks M16 and MIS's Section BIA under the supervision of London's W Board and 20 Committee oversaw the running of double agents and mind-controlled couriers and mind-controlled spies. Special Intelligence Service (SIS) for the British dealt a great deal with mind-control of all types. Tavistock Institute of Human Relations was part of SIS's mind control capabilities. Men like Tavistock's hypnotist/mind control expert Eric Trist were willing to perform mind-control on British civilians/military men. Over the last 45 years perhaps the most popular place for couriers to be signalled to meet was by someone holding a bird in a cage or at a shop with birdcages. The allusion to carrier pigeons is so obvious. Look at a caption 'Speaking of WRENS' with a cartoon from Bob Hope's book I Never Left Home (NY: Simon & Schuster, 1944) written in 1944 during the middle of W.W.II. The cartoon shows Bob chasing a girl with a bird cage and saying 'Tweet, Tweet, Tweet.' Hypnotic commands are given 3 times. What seems like a harmless cartoon, looks more like a signal telling people that Bob Hope is in charge of a flock of carrier pigeons (couriers). When talking to a group of soldiers during the war Bob said, "in London the bobbies caught a guy walking around in the fog with a bird cage giving the mating call but the American consul got me.'

There is a great deal more that could be written, perhaps books, but Americans need to understand that MI6 (British intelligence) started, trained and still control American intelligence. Remember, that Canada entered W.W.II along with Britain, and the British set up one of their best secret agent training schools between Whitly and Oshawa, Ontario in a place called Intrepid Park. The agents called it "the camp" or "the farm." (Now the CIA has their own "camp" or "farm' which is Camp Peary where they carry out mind-control.) The British named this British Security Coordination Special Training School No. 103 & Hydra. STS 11)3. Some people called it Camp X. When the war broke out the Amer. FBI, OSS, SOE, SIS, BSC, and the Canadian RCMP all sent people to be "trained" at the secret Camp X hidden on Lake Ontario's north shore across from the US-CAN border. British SOE (Special Operations Executive) set itself up for business in New York City, and during WW II directed operations from there. Let's get back to explaining about Frank Sinatra, a man who spent time visiting with the Rockefellers, the european and american Rothschilds, and other powerful figures including Bob Hope. Frank Sinatra, who is well known world wide for his cruelty would serve as the handler for Bob Hope's Mind-controlled slave(s) when she sexually serviced men in the Rat Pack. In other words, Frank Sinatra and Dean Martin knew the cues, the trigger code words to get this slave to sexually serve them, especially Frank. Because Dean knew about the Monarch programming, that is why he had the audacity to want to bring a slave on his show on a lease in a tiger outfit. During the obedience training of a sexual slave they have an expensive collar put on them and their mind-control programming for all sexual alters from infancy up is that they are cats. These slaves have cat alters (personalities) who are spin-kitten alters. When Dean Martin as an older man would sexually get younger women like Andre Boyer, a 19 year old student at UCLA there is a good chance that Andre and others like her were under mind-control.

Frank Sinatra's parents were Natalie (Dolly) Della Garavante from Genoa and Anthony Martin Sinatra from Catania, Sicily. His mother was a cigar-smoking cruel foul mouthed woman. Dolly was a midwife and abortionist (before it was legal). Dolly didn't always escape legal detection for her illegal abortions. Just one of the times she was hauled into court was on Feb. 27, '39 in a Hudson Special Sessions Court. Frank's parents always had money, and so Frank grew up as a child who always had money. He would share it with other kids, if they would be his friend. Frank was known as a lazy and mean boy as he grew up. He still did not have a steady job by the age of 20 and was still living off his parents. Frank's mother then decided to get him into singing. Due to his mother, Frank got some singing jobs and started going somewhere in life. After struggling for years, Tommy Dorsey got Frank Sinatra on the road to success with his band. Tommy Dorsey and Frank's mother got along great. Frank Sinatra wanted to emulate Benjamin "Bugsy" Siegel who was boss of Niurder, Inc. Let's digress for a minute and explain that the Illuminati will use the Mafia for murders which don't have formal approval of the Illuminati hierarchy to carry out. About 30% of the dirty work for the Illuminati is carried out by the Mafia. The Illuminati have their own death squads which are superior to the Mafia, but individuals must approach one of the Councils for approval to assassinate. Often its easier for those in the Illuminati just to put an unauthorized contract out on someone. The Mafia are often willing to make a business deal. The Mafia are intertwined with the occult and some of the Mafia are involved in rituals, mind-control programming etc. However, there are a number of Mafia who are only in it for the business end, like many in the Yakusa. They are appalled at the heartless things that the Illuminati are doing such as turning a whole generation of young people into drug addicts, etc. Some of the Mafia have much higher codes of honor than the Generational Satanists. Frank Sinatra's hero Bugsy was associated with all the Mafia heads such as Charlie 'Lucky' Luciano (who controlled Marilyn Monroe as a slave) and Frank Costello. The New Jersey Underworld kingpin Willie Moretti (aka Willie Moore) was Frank Sinatra's neighbor in Hasbrouch Heights. Bugsy was a cruel man. Frank was in total awe of Bugsy (almost enthralled to the point of worship). The Illuminati turned to Bugsy and then later to the Gambino family when the needed someone killed. Later, Bugsy got on the bad side of other Mafia chiefs and was killed by them.

Frank Sinatra had a quick way of alienating people with his controlling anger. Frank alienated William Randolph Hearst, Jr. at a party by fighting with him. The Hearst papers started giving Frank bad publicity after the fight. Frank's agent and friend George Evans flew to Hollywood and through Marion Davies, who was William Randolph Hearst's mistress for many years, he was able to get in to see the old man William Randolph Hearst, Sr. who was ill. Frank was properly contrite and got the old man to like him. Apparently with Marion Davis and the old man Hearst on his side, Frank was able to overcome the son's orders to the Hearst papers to give Frank negative publicity. After his visit with Marion and Hearst, Sr. Frank began to get positive publicity again. For those who need to be reminded, the Hearst family is an

Illuminati family, and the Hearst castle in Calif. which is owned by the State of California as a Park continues to be used for rituals for the Illuminati hierarchy. Of special note is that Marion Davis was connected to the Van Cleve family which is another family which has intermarried with the Van Duyn family along with the Costellos. In case the reader missed it in a previous article, a prominent member of the Van Duyn family who headed California's Teen Challenge helped get Billy Graham's ministry started. This person is a member of the Illuminati as well as being a Christian minister. (I am intentionally not mentioning his name.) William Randolph Hearst paid for the first 3 years of Billy Graham's ministry. There are a number people of the Van Duyn bloodline in the Illuminati who are also Christian ministers. (I can't give my sources-needless to say they are several people who have been escaping the Illuminati.) In the final analysis, we can say that several Illuminati members of the Van Duyn bloodline helped in the establishment of Billy Graham having a big crusade ministry. Frank Sinatra rubbed shoulders with many of the Illuminati. That doesn't mean that he was a member, it is possible that his mafia ties are why he was so well received by Illuminati kingpins. The Illuminati has a history of sharing their mind-controlled slaves with the Mafia, even slaves who are members within the Illuminati are shared. However, the Illuminati always insures that they have final control over a slave's programming. One of the people who was a drummer with the Tommy Dorsey Band for a while was William Joseph Bryan, Jr. (aka William Joseph Bryon, and William Jenning Bryan III, etc.) William Joseph Bryan, Jr. was a CIA Mind-control programmer. He programmed people when he was with the Air Force as Chief of Medical Survival Training, which was a covert brainwashing section (If the Air Force. Bryan opened up his own hypnotherapy Institute on Sunset Strip in Hollywood where he programmed some people in acting for the Illuminati. Bryan was the person who programmed Sirhan Sirhan to kill Robert Kennedy. He also hypnotised Alvert Di Salvo. After Bryan died in spring, 1977, the CIA cleaned out all of his files including his home files. Bryan was a 6' 1 1/2" fat Satanic priest in the Old Roman Catholic Church. The CIA and the Illuminati have connections in this offshoot of Catholicism. Bryan was a descendant of William Jennings Bryan, the Mason who supposedly defended the creation view in the Scopes Monkey Evolution Trial. WJ. Bryan, III (or Jr.) was a frequent guest in many fundamentalist churches in Southern California. Its interesting how the Tommey Dorsey Band had both Bryan and Sinatra in it, since both men would go on to be involved with Satanic mind-control in the future. William J. Bryan spoke to many judges, so it is possible he used his law degree to get him appointments with dirty judges that needed training about the Illuminati's Mind Control program. In William J. Bryan, Jr.'s book entitled The Chosen One The Art of Jury Selection, Bryan teaches how to use hypnosis on jury members to win one's case. On the back of the book the author is described, "in addition Dr. Bryan served as an Electronics Engineer in the Navy in World War II, was Director of all Medical Survival Training for the United States Air Force, and a leading expert on brainwashing." William J. Bryan was the technical director for Frank Sinatra's movie Manchurian Candidate, which is a film which was used to scare American's into thinking the enemy was carrying out mind-control. This was so that if the Illuminati-CIA horrible trauma-based mind-control was ever discovered that the CIA would be justified in the minds of Americans for the horrible things they were doing. Illuminati Mind-controlled slaves were forced to watch the movie Manchurian Candidate to further enhance their feelings of helplessness. Frank Sinatra made the movie by getting the rights from the book's author for the story. The author had as far as I know only stumbled upon what the Illuminati and their intelligence agencies were doing. Frank Sinatra squelched the second release of the Manchurian Candidate film, so it is clear that the entire movie was an affair carried out by the CIA to squelch the true story and to intimidate those thousands of Mind-controlled slaves that they'd created. This article has elaborated on the Costello family and the Van Cleve family which are branches of the Van Duyns. Interestingly, the elite Bohemian Grove which has been used as a site for Satanic rituals for over 25 years, has Joseph V. Costello, Jr. and Peter Van Cleave as members. Peter Van Cleave stayed in the bungalow called Oz when he was at the Bohemian Grove. Several Illuminati survivors have indicated that the Van Duyns have power in California. If the Van Duyns family power is via the Costellos and Van Cleves and other unmentioned offshoots of the family, then finally the secrecy protecting the powerful Van Duyn Satanic bloodline may be cracking for the first time. The Van Duyn family have changed the spelling on their name. One group spells it, Van Dine. Vance Van Dine is an important NWO figure who graduated from Yale. He is an Episcopalian, and has worked with the big international bankers. He was born in San Francisco, but lived in New York City area. He has been on the board of dir, of the german connected Vereinsbank Capital Corp. Another Van Dine of note is Harold Foster Van Dine, Jr. who has been a famous architect. He has been a major figure in the Troy, MI company of Straub, Van Dine & Assoc.

Bloodlines of Illuminati

By:

Fritz Springmeier, 1995

The Merovingian Bloodline

This page has been prepared to provide some type of table of contents to the various items which ‘will be included in this chapter "The Thirteenth Satanic Bloodline". In my writings this bloodline has been interwoveni into the text of many articles, but It hasn’t been singled out very much. Although a great deal has been mitten by this author on this final family, to pull out articles which concentrate on it solely is difficult. After assembling some pages on it, a few words of explanation were still needed. Allow me to briefly explain those items which were selected:

· An article on the top family that appeared in Feb. *‘95* newsletter on page 73.

· An appendix to the Be Wise As Serpents book about the British Royalty. The British Royalty are tied in with the 13th Bloodline.

· Many of the American political leaders have been related to the British Royalty incl. George Bush and Dan Quayle. A flier from a Christian conference is Included showing who the speakers are.

· Finally, a little of the genealogical information I assembled on the Mormon leaden is given. This was included in the Be Wise As Serpents book to give people an idea of how the Mormon leadenhip ties back in with the leading occult bloodlines of the Merovingian dynasty. The chart for LDS President Albert Smith is only about 1/3 typed out. The remainder of Albert Smith’s (as well as other Mormon leaden) genealogical work is in a file in some unknown box at my house.

This bloodline is harder to track because it weaves in and out of the other 12 bloodlines. There are many surnames which are part of this bloodline (Including the Smith family), however I can give one very prominent one, the Sinclair family. We know that Satan is the father of all lies, and Christ told the religions leaden who went out to destroy him that they were from the seed of Satan.

2nd Feature Article--THE 13TH ILLUMINATI BLOODLINE.

The 13th Illuminati Bloodline is where the Anti-Christ will come from. This bloodline believes that it has both the Holy Blood of Jesus and the blood (or seed) of Satan in its bloodline. In my **Be Wise As Serpents** book, I make reference to this bloodline but I never really took the time to explain it completely. In fact I don’t fully understand this bloodline myself. I encourage those who want to learn more about this bloodline to study the following books:

Holy Blood, Holy Grail by Lincoln, Leigh & Balgent

The Messianic Legacy

TheTemple & the Lodge

Crusaders of the Grail by J.R. Church

The Anti-Christ King--Juan Carlos by Dr. Charles R. Taylor

This bloodline is so extensive in its many branches that its membership takes in many of the Presidents of the United States, including George Hush and George Washington. The reason that I gave the geneologies of the some of the Mormon Presidents to people back in 1991 in my Be Wise As Serpents book is that all of the Mormon Presidents in history, whether RLDS or LDS, trace their blood back to this 13th bloodline. Within the Illuminati rituals, the emphasis of the 13th bloodline is that they are the seed of Satan. As their secret story goes, they are the direct descendents of Jesus's spiritual brother Lucifer. Since the Freeman family and the Rothschild family have members who are also in the 13th bloodlIne, It is unclear to me how interwoven the "seed of Satan" is.

Some of the earilest attempts to trace the seed of Satan were some books which did extensive research on the Tribe of Dan and the decendents of Cain.

"The Curse of Canaan" is an interesting book along with its mate World Order by Eustice Mullins. One of the books which I looked with difficulty for before finding it, was Gerald Massey's A Book of the Beginning (Secaucus, NJ: University Books, Inc., 1974.) The book goes in and shows in detail how the inhabitants of the British Isles came originally from Egypt. This is Important because (as this newsletter has always contended) the Druidism of the British Isles was simply a derivative from the Egyptian Satanic witchcraft/magic of Ancient Egypt. The Egyptian word Makhaut (clan or family) became the the Irish Maccu and the Maccu of the Donalds (clan of Donalds) now reflected in the name MacDonald. The sacred keepers of the Clan-Stone in Arran, were also known by the family name of Clan-Chattons. Another word for clan is Mack and the Clan-Chattons were also known as Mack-Intosh. Ptah-rekh the name of the Egyptian god Ptah was passed down to us by the Druids adopting the name Patrick, which sounded similar. St. Patricks day then is a Christianized form of a druidic holiday which originally had its origins in Egypt. The All-Seeing Eye can be found on ancient buildings in ancient Chaldea, in ancient Greece, and in ancient Egypt. The MI-seeing eye represents Osirus. Osirus had debauched revelries (saturualias) celebrated in his honor. The temples in Arabia clear back in the time that Moses had his black father-in-law Jethro used the all-seeing-eye to represent the false satanic trinity of Osiris, Isis and Horus of Egypt. This MI-Seeing Eye pops up everywhere the Illuminati has been. In the Winter Palace Square in St. Petersburg, Russia is that Illuminati all-seeing eye on top of a pyramid. You will also see it in the old Mexican Senate Buildlng which is now a museum in Mexico City. You will find this on the back of our one dollar bill, and you will find the all-seeing eye was placed on Ethopian stamps when they got a communist government in power.

The Illuminati is the continuation of the Mystery Religions of Babylon and Egypt. And the bloodlines of the Illuminati go back to people who at one time lived in Babylon and Egypt. Just how the House of David (the Satanic one) and the Holy Blood of the 13th family fit in with everything else in history I can't say. I'm sure It would be a big story to tell If I knew. But I do feel that somehow the 13th Illuminati family does goes back to ancient times. Is this via the Tribe of Dan or via some Druidic bloodline or is it via the Merovingians or is it via all three' And where do the Guelphs and Black Nobility fit Into this? Whatever the case, the 13th bloodline has amassed a great deal of power and wealth on this planet. The 13th bloodlIne lacks nothing to bring forth their Anti-Christ who will appear to have all the correct credentials. I would not even be surprised if their Anti-Christ in order to appear real will expose another Anti-Christ. The 13th bloodline has kept its geneologies very secret. I would welcome more Input from informed persons about this bloodline. The tribe of Dan was prophesied to be the black sheep of the nation of Israel which would bite the other tribes of Israel. The tribe of Dan had the snake and the eagle as its two logos. The tribe of Dan left its cailing card all over Europe as it migrated west in the names of many places. The tribe of Dan ruled the Greeks, the Roman Empire, the Austro-Hungarian empire and many others which used the eagle as its logo.

Great Britian is the mother country of Satanism.1 Scotland has long been an occult center. The national symbol of Scotland is the dragon (the snake), and for years the chief of Scotland was called the dragon. The Gaelic language is an important language for Satanism, although English and French are also use extensively by the Illuminati. The planning sessions for world takeover that some ex-Satanists experienced were held in french. The British Royal Family have long been involved with the occult. For more information on this there is a detailed examination of the Royal family and the occult in the book *The Prince and the Paranormal -the Psychic Bloodline of the Royal Family* by John Dale (1987).2 They have also been actively involved with Freemasonry. (See the chart.) British MI6 has been a major vehicle for the Satanic hierarchy working behind the secret veil of Freemasonry to control world events.[3] British MI6 is the most secret intelligence organization in the world.[4] (It is properly known as British Secret Service not to be confused with the U.S. agency by that name but performing a different function entirely.) The British Royalty have served as important figureheads to British Freemasomy lending credibility and respectibility. British Freemasonry has managed to keep itself free of much of the criticism that the other national masonic groups have brought on themselves. However, much of the credibility of British Freemasonry is undeserved. True, British Freemasonry is what it portrays itself to the public for the lower levels. But., the lower level Masons by their dues and activities are unwittingly supporting an organization that is led by Satanists at the top. An example of the subterfuge constantly exercised on the public by Freemasonry is a book purportedly written by a non-Mason entitled *The Unlocked Secret Freemasonry Examined.* The book portrays itself as an unbiased and complete expose of Freemasonry. The book states unequivicably that the Masonic order called Societas Rosicrucian in Anglia (sic] is only open to Christians and is a "Christian Order." However, Edith Star Miller reprints copies of a number of letters from the chief of the Societas Rosicruciana in Anglia which show that the English Grand Masonic Lodge, the SRIA, the OTO, and the German illuminati are all working together.[5] She briefly explains how she obtained the letters.

Notes

1. Interviews with numerous ex-witches and ex-satanists.

2. Copies available from Bury House Christian Books, Clows Top, Kidderminster, Wores, DY 149HX, England.

3. Confidential interviews.

4. Wise, David and Thomas B. Ross. *The Espionage Establishment,* p. 79.

5. Miller, *Occult Theocracy,* Appendix IV, pp. 8-35.

THE SKILL OF LYING,
THE ART OF DECEIT

The Disney Bloodline

The Illuminati have refined the art of deception far beyond what the common man has imagined. The very life & liberty of humanity requires the unmasking of their deceptions. That is what this book is about. Honesty is a necessary ingredient for any society to function successfully. Deception has become a national pastime, starting with our business and political leaders and cascading down to the grass roots. The deceptions of the Illuminati's mind-control may be hidden, but in their wake they are leaving tidal waves of distrust that are destroying America. While the CIA pretend to have our nations best interest at heart, anyone who has seriously studied the consequences of deception on a society will tell you that deception will seriously damage any society until it collapses. Lies seriously damage a community, because trust and honesty are essential to communication and productivity. Trust in some form is a foundation upon which humans build relationships. When trust is shattered human institutions collapse. If a person distrusts the words of another person, he will have difficulty also trusting that the person will treat him fairly, have his best interests at heart, and refrain from harming him. With such fears, an atmosphere of death is created that will eventually work to destroy or wear down the cooperation that people need. The millions of victims of total mind-control are stripped of all trust, and they quietly spread their fears and distrust on a subconscious level throughout society. One problem about lies is that one lie will call for another and then another. It's hard to keep lies single. They seem to want to breed more of their kind to protect themselves. Soon the liar becomes a victim of his own lies, trapped in a dishonest web that demands lots of energy to protect his false fronts. This is the sad fate that the intelligence agencies have painted themselves into. They must maintain groups that oversee their double-agents' lies to insure that the lies that they have disseminated don't contradict themselves. Finally, they have put out so much disinformation, they lose track of reality themselves. Far from saving this nation, the intelligence agencies have spread the cancer of deception into all walks of life, so that this cancer is contaminating and killing anything of value in the United States. The soon-to-come death of this nation's sovereignty, as well as the destruction of this nation's morals are the results of this cancer. People who have attended high level Illuminati meetings were instructed in how the Illuminati plan to bring in the NWO AntiChrist reign by making everything appear as if it has happened naturally. The Illuminati have decided to camouflage their actions with the creation of normalcy to avert any suspicions. An example of something which appears to have happened naturally is the O.J. Simpson case, which was planned based on previous murder scenarios which had been successfully covered up. O.J. Simpson was a CIA mind-controlled slave, and the entire Simpson case was concocted as an elaborate effort to cause racial tensions. The Mishpucka, the CIA, the Mob and the Illuminati have all had their dirty hands involved in the entire affair. The entire affair reeks of manipulation and planning. It is not the goal of this paragraph to go into the case, but just to drop a couple details. Joey Ippolito, Jr. is both CIA & Mob. Ippolito at one time lived in Hallendale, FL, a mob housing subdivision which was protected by a police force run by the mob. He has helped run drugs and wet ops for "the Combination" which interconnects with the Illuminati. O.J. Simpson's friend Cowlings worked for Joey Ippolito, as well as O.J. Simpson. Simpson distributed cocaine for Joey Ippolito & the Combination. Simpson's lawyer also is tied to the Illuminati, the CIA, and the mob. One of his lawyers on TV said the trial reeked of government corruption. Nicole Simpson lived next door to Carl Colby (former CIA director Bill Colbys son). Colby's wife and kids have been subjected to mind-control. Colby's wife testified in O.J. Simpson's trial, but was addressed as "Miss Boe" rather than by her name. O.J. Simpson's mother worked for a California State Mental Hospital in San Francisco for 30 years. Many State Mental Hospital workers have children who have been programmed. When one of the jurors in Simpson's case, Tracy Hampton, had her mind-control programming go haywire, she began staring for long periods at a blank TV and hearing voices. She had to be dismissed. During the Simpson trial, Judge Ito gave Joe McGinniss the best front-row seat that a journalist could have. Joe McGinniss was the coverup author who wrote a book covering up about the McDonald-Fort Bragg Drug Smuggling Case.

The McDonald-Fort Bragg Drug Smuggling Case involved the Illuminati drug smuggling operation within the U.S. military during the Vietnam War. On and on the stink goes. The manipulation of history by those in power has been well-covered over. An example of how mind-control and its role in manipulation of events has been covered up by the perpetrators is an article written in the Journal of the American Medical Association (JAMA) in the Sept. 11, 1967, Vol. 201, No. 11 issue. The article, which was submitted to the magazine from three CIA doctors (Mark, Sweet, and Ervin), claims that riots are caused by brain disease. While the article is correct in the subpoint that only a small percentage of underprivileged urban dwellers participate in many of the riots, the article's thesis is obviously a slide to prevent people from catching on that the small number of deviants who create riots might be under mind-control or might have some other motivation beyond simply being brain-diseased. Any deception, whether it is an exaggeration or an understatement of the NWO's capabilities is considered a useful deception for the Illuminati's double-agents to spread. The german battleship the Bismarck was sunk due to a little lie sent to Germany by a double-agent which underestimated the range of British radar. The Germans, thinking they were out of British radar range, made some bad decisions that cost them the battleship.

DECEPTION DIMINISHES POWER

Knowledge is power, and lies diminish the knowledge of deceived dupes, and therefore diminishes the power of the deceived. Deception obscures the alternatives that people have. It also clouds up various objectives people would work toward. Some people give up certain objectives due to their mis-perceptions that the objective is undesirable or unattainable.

PROGRAMMING DECEPTIONS

In the programming, colors and directions are used. Be prepared to find out. that sometime programmers use their creative imaginations such as using the color "octarine," or the direction "TURNWISE" or perhaps "WIDDERSHINS". During the most fundament programming which is done via LSD trips in sensory deprivation tank to lay in foundations of the Alpha, Beta, Delta, Ome and Theta programs, each programming memory will be given a code. Where one popular programming deception takes place that the programmer knows ahead of time h to sequence his memory codes so that instance, the fifth memory is coded as trip, and strenuous methods are used to up the memories of the first four trips. victim’s s mind will be told to forget the four trips. The memory codes are deceptively designed to fool the deprogrammer and the victim alike. Part of the reason the programmer does this, is that they know that IF a therapist should stumble onto these first memories, the backup programming to protect these memories is so severe that the therapist will shatter the victim’s mind. Backup programs such as Atom bombs and vegetable programming are locked into place to protect the fundamental programs.

BE WISE AS SERPENTS

The Holy Spirit moved an apostle to write, "We are not ignorant of Satan’s devices." Christ warned his disciples to "be wise as serpents and harmless as doves." The Israelites sent out spies before entering the promised land. Within the text of *The Art of War* by Sun-Tzu (a book studied today by men in intelligence), he discusses "hidden provocation agents" in Book 13. Sun-Tzu was born in *534* B.C. and lived most likely until after the year *453* B.C. In 500 B.C., some men were farmers, and some were agent provocateurs. Today, both occupations still exist. The modern American farmer is vastly superior to the ancient farmer of 500 B.C., so how does the modern agent provocateur compare? He is vastly superior also. It appears the Word of God is accurate, for it warns that God’s people will be destroyed for lack of knowledge. The difficulty in obtaining honest information in today’s Big Brother world is aptly described by an intelligence asset over the Internet, "If you are lucky and work hard, you will find some of the truth. If you are lucky and work REALLY hard, you might find the WHOLE truth...as someone wants you to know it. If you are PHENOMENALLY lucky and really work your tail *off,* you might even go on to find the REAL truth. But no outsiders...and in fact, very few insiders ever ... EVER ... learn the WHOLE REAL truth."

This book & our two previous books on mind-control) are the result of extremely hard work and numerous miracles of God, and what non-Christians would call lots of luck". The story behind the books is amazing. This book’s two authors have had to „swim upstream" for years in search for the real truth. One thing is very clear to this author, during the last seven years of exposing the NWO almost every person who is believed to be a leader against the NWO has tried to impede the work this author has been doing. People need to be aware that the New World Order created their own opposition long before some of us began sincerely trying to expose it. This author’s informed opinion is that essentially all (about 98% of the people leading the opposition to the NWO are double agents), and no less than *50%* of the therapists are double-agents. In this state, this author knows as a fact that *50%* of the licensed therapists working with programmed DID patients are programmed DID (MPD) slaves themselves. Recently, one of the therapists in this area, who the False Memory "Spin"-drome & the Illuminati took down, was a therapist who had also been on a local T.V. talk show revealing that she was a multiple & a SRA victim.

DISINFORMATION TO MAKE THEIR DOUBLE-AGENTS LOOK GOOD

"A Force" was MI-6’s group that carried out deception. They would have their double agents pass out CHICKEN FEED (which is what they call classified information that can be thrown out to the public) to establish their double-agents’ credentials (BONA FIDES) as agents against the British. Today, there are numerous anti-NWO people who are actually double agents. They are distributing chicken feed to make people think they are legitimate. By the way, it is interesting to note for those who realize how important carousels are to programming that MI-6 (HO in Vauxhall Cross, Eng., with a training ctr. at Ft. Monckton, near Gosport, so. Eng.) is nicknamed (actually its cryptonym) „Carousel" by its daughter organization Mossad (officially aka Central Intelligence Collection Agency).

An example of a double-agent who is popular among Christians is an Illuminati witch named Gretchen Passantino, who tours around to Christian conferences belittling the idea of mind-control. Dr. Loreda Fox reports in *The Spiritual and Clinical Dimensions of MPD* that 74% of women abused by SRA come from "Christian homes." The Christian churches are heavily infiltrated.

SLEEPER AGENTS

In the *Vol. 2* book a number of references were made to sleeper agents. The idea of placing someone somewhere in society and letting them lead a normal life for years without ever being used is designed to provide a legitimate smokescreen about what they are all about. Mind-controlled slaves make excellent sleepers. The concept of *making sleeper agents in not a secret. The CIA has publicly admitted that they tried to discover* long-range sleeper agents in the Los Niñios *children of Republican Spain who were the* descendants of communist spaniards who returned to Spain in the 1950’s. They also have admitted to having tried to weed out long range sleepers in the Trebizond Greeks who lived near the USSR in Turkey and returned in the 1950’s to Greece. As the CIA and KGB mirror-imaged each other in their manufactured Hegelian Dialectic mock dual (which was very real for the "little" person) you can well imagine that the CIA sent sleeper agents against the KGB.

NAMES of TYPES of DISINFORMATION AGENTS

The intelligence agencies have their own lingo for the types of disinformation agents they send against everyone else. So far, we have named only double & sleeper agents. Here are some of their disinformation agents:

AGENT OF INFLUENCE--These agents can be unwitting, under mind-control, or ideologically motivated to use their positions of influence to sway the minds of others. Examples of Agents of Influence are anchor men on T.V., journalists, labor leaders, TV commentators, academics quoted by the media, & some politicians.

CONFUSION AGENT--An agent whose job is to produce confusion by disseminating confounding information.

CONTRACT AGENT--These are the rogue agents, such

as the mob, who the CIA get to do particular jobs on contract. Their connections can be denied.

DEEP COVER AGENT--A sleeper agent (often a programmed multiple or person with mind-control programming) who has been a long term sleeper agent.

DISINFORMATION AGENT--This is a highly placed agent who passes disinformation to other governments.

NOTIONAL AGENT--A fictitious non-existent "agent" which is created with a real-looking identity to mislead.

PROVOCATION AGENT--An agent sent in to provoke & destabilize the target group to do foolish things.

SPOON-FEEDER AGENT--Someone who dribbles out legitimate information, this is often done to build up a person's credentials (bona fides). Lots of the people who are pretending to expose the NWO are spoon-feeder agents who provide a little new information, tons of already known secrets, and sprinkle in a measure of disinformation for added fun. Generally spoon-feeders increase their percentage of disinformation once they gain respectability. There are very few people really exposing anything of consequence about the NWO. This author has endured the loss of several of the really legitimate whistle blowers who were friends being assassinated since he began writing exposes.

What this means is that agents for groups that do mind-control may: have been sleepers for many years and look very legitimately innocent, they may give good correct information to our side, they may say all the right things and try to get us motivated to do more than we would want, they may talk about other friends who are giving them information who do not even exist. It takes discernment to spot people who are not on our side. Unfortunately, such discernment seems to be fundamentally lacking within the public at large. For instance, I have seen people choose obvious NWO agents over this author as a source of "information" (which is in reality disinformation). Most people have bought so much disinformation during their lifetime, perhaps it’s unrealistic to expect them to purge out all the junk they’ve accepted. Just as people in the world need to toss out their worldly thinking, people in the church need to toss out all the indoctrination they’ve gotten from the numerous kinds of harlot churches. At the moment, the system is set up so that the perpetrators of the mind-control are in control of the credentialing process, so that they can provide their stooges/and agents with the best credentials. As the reader can see, the roots of power behind the mind-control go deep.

TRICKING SUSPECTS

One trick (or variations of it) that has been used with suspects is to arrest them, place the suspect in a situation where the police are in two groups--one group looks like police, the other group looks like the group the suspect has come from. After the suspect arrives, the group pretending to be arrested group members, overpowers the police contingent and escapes to another setting where another police group pretending to be even more of the suspect’s group ask him who he is and to explain his credentials. Letting his guard down, the original suspect explains what he is all about, thereby giving them the information they needed in the first place. Variations of this script can be run. English intelligence calls this basic script CACKLEBLADDER because chicken blood is used on the police actors that are overpowered to make them look injured.

THE NAMES OF DECEPTION TRICKS

FOUR FACES refers to pretexts used by agents to get interviews. DANGLE is the craft word for luring a victim into a provocation. A dangle operation would be an operation to provoke a group or individual into a particular action. This was done with Elohim City and many other groups that the NWO is trying to set up as patsies.

STANDARD DECEPTION DEVICES

Agents use BLEEP-BOXES to tap telephones and in other instances to make free-of-cost telephone calls. A CABMAN is a device to remotely activate a telephone with a radio beam. It can be used without entering the building where the telephone is located.

MASKS

The use of masks in the occult world is ancient. For centuries, the gypsies have used them for their hypnotic powers. Special healing masks for their people are kept secret and never shown to the public. Masks have a shock value & fascination value. Gypsy and other occult groups have special rituals to create the masks, including using hair clippings from the person who will wear the mask. Gypsy healing masks are destroyed after the patient gets well. Illuminati programming masks may or may not be destroyed after their use. The Illuminati’s mask-making abilities (according to deprogrammed victims of their mind-control) are very high quality. Sometimes the programmers simply wear halloween cartoon character masks that anyone can obtain, to fulfill their role in the programming script that they are involved in during the time.

COVERS

Some beginners who have just started into studying the World Order question why the Illuminati would use legitimate religious covers. Why would the Illuminati want to create a slave who is an evangelist? Why? Because those new converts will go to some establishment church where other programmed multiples in leadership positions will demand obedience (and then support those demands by quoting scriptures that make them seem like they are God’ss authority over that new convert). Because the evangelist or missionary and the bishop or pastor are controlled puppets, the convert will never get the full truth, just enough truth to keep him working hard for their organization. Even though the convert "got God in my life", the Illuminati never lose control over him.

The Christians have as much vested interest in preventing the exposure of the Illuminati programmed multiples who are big name Christian ministers running Christendom, as the Illuminati has. Imagine what would happen if the world found out that most of Christianity was run by the human-sacrificing, slave-making Illuminati? This is one of the sad effects of the infiltration. Perhaps the subject of covers can be explained from another angle. The reader knows that the elite like monopolies. They play monopoly for real--for us it's oniy a board game! To establish a monopoly, you find a good product that everyone wants or needs, and then you eliminate all the competition by either destroying them, or owning the competition yourself. In the U.S., the Illuminati can't have a one-religion monopoly. In Russia, they had communism with Marx, and Lenin as the Father God and Gon the son figure. Communism had a monopoly on worship. In the U.S., they have established a monopoly by controlling all the various religious groups. (This author wrote an 800 page heavily documented book *Be Wise As Serpents* to show the details of how this is done.) It's not a matter of what they teach, it's a matter of control, so that the elite have a monopoly. And when you, as a mover & shaker in the world, control all these various religions via money, blackmail, & programmed multiples under your leadership, etc. which religion would you pick to emphasize the most? You will pick the one that sells the best, i.e. the best product. And which brand of Christianity will sell the best? The televised charismatic brand will sell the best. Covers that slaves use to explain what they do in life are almost always "legitimate". A missionary, a military officer, a salesperson, etc. will usually actually do their cover job most of the time. Their cover is their occupation, their service as a mind-controlled slave is almost an unwitting avocation. Organizations are used as covers. The Illuminati use military, social, intelligence, education, banking and other organizations as covers. (See my *Be Wise As Serpents* book for many of these.) Moriah's front organizations, such as the CIA, in turn use other organizations. Here is just a sampling of CIA fronts, to show the variety of fronts used:

· Asia Foundation was an academic organization created by the CIA.

· Castle Bank & Trust Co. has been a bank in the Caribbean that is a CIA front.

· Forum World Features has been a front created for CIA propaganda purposes and based in London, UK.

· Geschicter Foundation for Medical Research (as well as the Josiah Macy Foundation) was used as an intelligence front to launder money used for mind-control.

· Air-Sea Forwarders, Inc. was the legal corporation name of a CIA front in North Hollywood, CA. The company was involved in moving freight. In the last few years, this corporation sued E-Systems, the company which builds the CIA and the NWO's electronic systems such as their communications satellites. In court, the company proved that it was a CIA front, in spite of CIA denials. As this chapter provides information about some of the Illuminati/ intelligence connections to Hollywood, bear in mind that this CIA front was proven in court to be a CIA front in Hollywood. A feat that rarely occurs.

ONE OF THE GREATEST DECEPTIONS OF ALL TIME: DISNEY

INTRODUCTION

For years, I have heard many Americans say that something is terribly wrong in this country & that things are "going to pot", and yet Americans can't put their finger on what exactly is wrong. When I first began to receive reports from victims of Illuminati mind-control about Disney's involvement in their mind-control, I kept an open ear, but I wanted some tangible proof. After investigating for myself, there is now no doubt in my mind that Disney (the man, the movies & the entertainment parks) has been a major contributor to the demise of America, while maintaining a very well constructed front of wholesomeness. In this chapter, you will learn why Disney is one of the best deceptions of the Illuminati. This author has read a good portion of what is available to the public concerning Disney. This exposé is undoubtedly the deepest on Disney that has ever been done. Perhaps part of my motivation is that I've tired of Christians talking and acting like Disney stands for sainthood. Christians, who should have known better, are some of the ones who have swallowed "hook, line and sinker" the enormous deception that entails Disney. They feed their children a steady diet of occultism and witchcraft because they have been programmed to think of Disney as wholesomeness and everything that is good about America. Many writers over the years have tried to expose Disney, most have been stopped before they could get their books published. The few authors who have managed have faced vicious attacks on their character & integrity, and have faced enormous struggles against public relations campaigns paid for by the Disneys. The Disney's power, and the power behind them, has frightened most people away from challenging them. But someone needs to speak on behalf of the victims. Whether anyone listens or not, the victims will know that somebody cared enough to stand up & write the truth. Disney has not only left mind-control victims in its wake, but they have harassed land-owners, stolen employee idea's and left all kinds of hurting victims in their path. Disney has risen to become the unquestionable largest media-entertainment conglomerate in the world, & was ranked company no. 48 in the top 500 companies by *Forbes 500.*

Observations about HOW THE ILLUMINATI LIKE TO HIDE BEHIND PERFECT FRONTS.

There are numerous Illuminati homes, restaurants, wineries and other institutions that are today carrying out the same type of strict standards upon their employees that Walt Disney Studios maintained. While Hollywood was immersed in moral filth from the start, Walt Disney Studios had strict standards. In the 1930's, Disney had a dress code that required men in ties, and women in sober-colored skirts. If a man looked lecherously at a woman at Walt Disney Studios he risked being instantly fired. Walt was a shining example of the strictest legalism. Even during the '50's, if an employee were caught saying anything considered a cussword such as "hell" they were instantly fired no matter who they were. Walt would not allow his male employees to have any facial hair, even though he himself sported a mustache. He never allowed employees to have alcohol at the studios, (which might not be a noteworthy standard except that Walt himself drank heavy amounts of alcohol in his private office at work for decades). Initially, Walt was very reluctant to have his young artists, who were being trained by Don Graham, draw live nude models, but reluctantly gave approval. Again the motive was not to serve God, but to make sure the Disney reputation remained untarnished. With the power of the establishment media behind Disney, Walt had nothing to worry about, news about the nude drawing classes and their detailed drawings never reached the light of day. Behind such strict fronts of legalistic morals, cleanliness & soberness, you will often find lots of guilt and high level satanic ritual. For instance, Hitler (who was by the way also a failed artist & who liked mechanical things more than people) obsessively washed his hands many times a day (out of guilt), and so did Walt Disney. Walt obsessively washed his hands several times an hour, every hour. Walt liked animals & his trains more than people. This author has seen some alters who were forced to take another human's life, and when they relived the memory, the alters then tried to physically wash the blood guilt off of their hands. Another example is that over the years this author has discovered that many of the exclusive restaurants that are meticulous in every detail are tied in with the mind-control and criminal activities of the elite. Dirty money is keeping the places looking sparkling clean.

Walt Disney worked very hard at maintaining a great image for himself and his company. An example of this, is how he exploded in rage and wrote an angry memo when a Disney character was placed in a beer ad. (Memo mentioned in Thomas, Bob. *Walt Disney An American Original.* Hyperion, 1994, p. 7.) He had a personal image builder, Joe Reddy, who worked full time to build Walt's image. Joe Reddy was a cigar-smoking irishman who loved the catholic college Notre Dame's football team. He also was a publicity agent for Shirley Temple. But the Disney deception entails far more than Joe Reddy's decades of image making, and Walt's own abilities to create good images of himself. Just as with Billy Graham (see *Vol. 2* about Billy Graham), the entire Illuminati threw their weight behind promoting Walt Disney. Ronald Reagan and Walt Disney were good friends and both cut from the same die in many ways. Both men were high ranking Freemasons, both came from socialist backgrounds (Ronald's mother was Eleanor Roosevelt's best friend, & Walt's Dad was a socialist leader), both were paid FBI informants, and both were involved heavily in the abuse of mind-controlled slaves. Walt always generously supported Reagan's political campaigns, and in turn Reagan did political favors for Walt as Gov. of California. For instance, Disney's Mineral King mountain resort needed an access route through the Sequoia Nat. Park at a time when there was lots of congressional pressure to preserve the last stands of redwoods. Gov. Reagan got his friend Disney his road through the park.

Reagan served as the emcee for the opening day of Disneyland on July 17, 1990. He returned with Illuminati TV host Art Linkletter for the 35th anniversary. Ronald Reagan & Art Linkletter both pumped Disney publicly. Another slave abuser that spent time with Disney was Bob Hope, who would spend time on the golf course with Walt. On the opening day's telecast, cameras showed Sammy Davis, Jr. (a member of the Church of Satan) and Frank Sinatra (a mind-control slave handler) driving the pint-sized Disney ears at the Autopia ride. When Disney celebrated its fifty yr-anniversary with a two hour special on May 20, 1991, the program included people like occultist Bill Campbell and was named "Best of Disney, 50 Years of Magic." For the silver anniversary of Disney World in Oct. '96, the Clinton's were invited to help open 15 months of celebrations. The theme of the anniversary celebrations was "Remember the Magic". A Boy's & Girl's Club sang 'When you wish upon a star' (a popular programming song). Hillary Rodham Clinton (herself an Illuminati Grand Dame and a mind-control programmer) shared with the audience that she and Bill "first brought daughter Chelsea to the Magic Kingdom when she was four." Roy E. Disney, nephew of Walt, told the public that Disney World "is the story of men and women who took hold of a dream and never let go." There is a double meaning to that. Many victims of trauma-based mind-control have taken hold of the illusions that were programmed into their mind secretly at Disney, and never let go. Among the visitors to Disneyland have been all the American Presidents from Eisenhower to Clinton, over a dozen kings & queens, as well as Emperor Akihito of Japan, Anwar Sadat, and Robert Kennedy (who rode the Matterhorn with astronaut John Glenn.) Both Denmark's & Belgium's kings who are in the Illuminati visited, as well as the dictators of Indonesia, the Shah of Iran and Ceausescu of Romania. (As a side-note Roy E. Disney was forewarned by Arab leader that the Shah was to be deposed.) Organizations that have been actively working for a New World Order for many years gave big awards to Walt in his early years such as the B'nai B'rith (Man of the Year Award to Walt) and the Chamber of Commerce. In 1936, Walt was given the Chamber of Commerce's annual „Outstanding Young Man" award. The establishment's Yale & Harvard Universities gave him honorary degrees. Walt Disney biographer Leonard Mosley, who researched Walt Disney for years (as well as writing books on the duPonts, the Dulles brothers, and Hirohito) wrote in his book on Walt Disney, "The studio publicity machines in the film colony had, as usual, gone out of their way to try to persuade me, as a writer for a powerfully influential British newspaper, that this was a city of lawless gods and goddesses, full of clean-living, sanitized stars.

"It was even more of a deodorized world at the Walt Disney Studio where the publicity men insisted their boss was faultless--never drank too much, never used a swearword, never lost his temper, never quarreled with his wife or family, never let down a friend. And woe betide anyone who tried to suggest otherwise. Members of the resident foreign and local press risked their jobs if they dared to write stories inferring that Walt Disney could be domineering, implacable, and unforgiving (as was the case, for instance, before, during, and after the 1941 studio strike). The Disney flacks were capable of exerting heavy pressure on editors and proprietors or, through the advertising pages, against anyone who inferred Walt Disney was not the epitome of well-scrubbed and benevolent perfection." (Mosley, Leonard. *Disney's World.* New York: Stein & Day, p. 10.) Disney is perhaps the epitome of Illuminati abilities to create images. They have created great images for things Disney, incl. Walt Disney, Disney movies, and Disney's Amusement parks. In some cases these things have been overrated, in other instances the sinister side to them has been carefully hidden. In order to make movies that contain the typical smut of Hollywood, sex and violence, Disney did a slight of hand and created subsidiaries which Disney runs, which has allowed them to keep their good image. They also never showed the public the hard core porn that was made for years in secrecy for the elite. Behind Disney's good front lies hard porn, snuff films, white slavery, Illuminati mind-control, and the seduction of several generations into witchcraft. Disney's involvement in these kind of things will be explained in this chapter. Nobody has sold America witchcraft as well as the Disney brothers. Movie after movie has cleverly brought the occult into the warp & woof of American thought, all under the disguise of entertainment. For instance, it was Disney that brought us cannibalism and told us that it was a "triumph of the human spirit" (a direct quote from Disney's Touchtone Producer Robert Watts concerning Disney’s movie "Alive" featuring survivors of an airplane crash who turned to cannibalism). Under the disguise of entertainment & showing us how "triumphant" the human spirit was, they subtly promoted cannibalism. Mickey Mouse plays a leading role in "The Sorcerer’s Apprentice." And yet when this author has suggested that Disney movies aren’t wholesome, many Christian parents come unglued and have gotten angry with this author. The deceptive image that Disney movies are wholesome is a triumph in Illuminati deception. Parents would be surprised what is slipped into cartoons. In Disney’s "The Little Mermaid" the castles are male sexual organs. In one cartoon Mighty Mouse is shown without comment clearly snorting cocaine. Walt Disney Studios Chairman Joe Roth is in charge of Walt Disney as well as subsidiaries Touchtone, Miramax, and Hollywood Pictures, which were all created to camouflage the Disney production of adult films. Disney operates in a clandestine manner regarding the promotion, distribution and rating of the films produced by their subsidiaries.

DISNEY MAKES MALE PHALLUSES INTO CASTLES.

Roth oversaw Disney’s subsidiary Hollywood Pictures’ Evita film. Evita has as its main start "Material Girl" Madonna. Madonna is in reality a mind-controlled slave who has appeared in numerous underground porn/& ritual porn movies. (This author has an underground catalog from a porn business, that has recently changed its location of business. The catalog offered a film of Madonna performing an actual blood sacrifice.) She also was the main actress in Disney’s Dick Tracy film which is reported to be used for mind-control. During an Arsenio Hall show, Madonna, who as a guest acted dissociative, was picked up by the cameras during the show kissing her Baphomet ring. Disney controls the products that are associated with the movies of their subsidiaries. In Evita’s case they are marketing hats and other items, as just one more of Disney’s countless artificially generated consumerism campaigns. In Ruth Stein’s interview of Madonna, Madonna appeared bored with plugging Disney’s consumer products. When asked about the tango dresses and hats inspired by Evita that popped up in stores after the film, Madonna said, "Believe me, I have nothing to do with it. Disney is pushing the whole thing." (San *Francisco Chronicle*, 12/29/96, Datebook section). In one interview Madonna states she wants her daughter to grow up knowing Catholicism, but she doesn’t believe that it would be good for her daughter if Madonna narried the father of her child from Lourdes, Carlos Leon. In another interview, Madonna says, "Actually, I’m a very good role model, because I say, ‘Look, these are my standards’..." She then goes on to plug homosexuality, same sex marriage, and single families in the interview. Walt Disney stated that it plans to release an album by DANZIG, a heavy metal band whose songs contain "dark themes". The Disney press release announces on its by-line "Mickey Mouse is going heavy metal." Disney’s album „BLACK ACID DEVIL" was due to hit the music stores Oct. 30, 1996 during Halloween time. According to Disney this music has no satanic references, but does have "dark, Gothic and sexual" overtones. Glenn Danzig denies that he is a satanist.

CONTENTS IN THE DISNEY DECEPTION

SECTION OF CHAPTER *5.*

a. an introduction

b. an overview

c. Who was Walt Disney?

d. Who was Roy O. Disney?

e. Who is Roy E. Disney?

f. What do we know about the in general?

g. A history of Disney

h. Disney and its mob connections

i. Disney and its government connections

j. Disney and mind-control

k. Detailed Script of how one Disney movie is used for programming.

1. Partial List of Sources

B. AN OVERVIEW

Disneyland and Disneyworld are world famous and the pride of America. They are also extremely important programming centers for the Illuminati to create total mind-controlled slaves. Disneyland is also involved with providing a place for rituals, porn and other satanic activities. In terms of deception, Disney movies and Disney Amusement Parks rate as one of the best deceptions. According to deprogrammed ex-Illuminati slaves, the Illuminati in the 1960's needed to shift their programming away from the military bases, because too much publicity (heat) was shined on the military bases. Their goal was to have someplace that people from all over the world could come to without raising any suspicions, and a place which would be the perfect cover for many of their criminal activities.

According to a witness, the Illuminati Programmers got a big laugh out of using Disneyland as a major Illuminati base for criminal activity. Under the disguise of entertaining the world, they carried out money laundering, child slavery laundering, and mind-control. They nick-named Disneyland "the little syndicate of mind-control." When a child of 3 or 4 was kidnapped, they could torture the child and then put him on a ride such as a ferris wheel or carousel that a. created dissociation from the pain, while also b. going along with some fairy tale programming script. An abducted child while waiting to be picked up from one Illuminati non-parent caretaker by another, could be kept happy and distracted while waiting for the pickup. For years, Disneyland was an Illuminati center for many of their world-wide activities. Now Disney has created other sites around the world such as EuroDisneyland 20 miles east of Paris and Tokyo Disneyland. Tokyo Disneyland in 1991 had 16 million people attend. With such hugh crowds, it doesn't take much imagination how the Illuminati have been able to do sneaky criminal activities right in front of people, and the public never sees it, in the middle of all the activity. EuroDisney has been a money losing affair, but the Saudis who benefit from its mind-control, gave Disney the money to keep it financially in business. Walt Disney Records is the largest children's record label in the world. Disney through their movies, books, toys, records, etc. has made a tremendous impact on the children of the world. Their movie Return from Witches Mountain was one of the most powerful witchcraft promotions ever made. Ducktails, which has deliberate Monarch mind-control triggers written into the script, is also broadcast in Poland and the former USSR.

From the time of the Roman Empire (at least, if not before) the oligarchical leadership, who have been in control of both the Mystery Religions and European aristocracy, have known about BREAD & CIRCUS. Bread and Circus refers to the concept that IF the masses of people are given entertainment and food staples, THEN they are easy to control. Walt Disney movies have played a key role in providing entertainment for the masses to insure Illuminati control. Walt Disney's friend the Masonic prophet H.G. Wells in his book *A Modem Utopia* that there would be lots of shows in the New World Order. The World Future Society in a book review in their publication *Future Survey Annual*, 1993, (ed. Michael Marien, Bethesda, MD: World Future Soc., p. 91) describes Disney: "Control of commodities [such as entertainment] and access to commodities translates into control over people. 'The postmodern US is a massive rush of disconnected commodities, each seeking a moment of our attention." The world of commodities is our soma, and entertainment is the current form of public discourse. Walt Disney World, spread over 27,400 acres of central Florida swamp and scrub forest, ‘is the most ideologically important piece of land in the U.S.’ What goes on here is the

quintessence of the American way. It is visited by over 30 million people a year--not only the major middle-class pilgrimage center in the US, but by far the most important entertainment center in the world. It is clearly Oz, utopia as a marketing device."

Two Disney brothers Walt (Walter Elias) and Roy O. Disney have been at the center of the creation of amusement parks and popular Disney films. In more recent times, two other men, Eisner and Katzenberg have been notable at Disney. Eisner & Katzenberg, as well as others will be discussed later. One of Disney’s directors, Victor Salva, was convicted of molesting a boy and filming one of the sexual molestations. Recently Disney Director Salva produced the Disney movie "Powder". (Victor Salva’s sexual molestation conviction was covered by newspaper articles such as Robert W. Welkos of the LA Times, in newspapers such as *The Oregonian,* Weds. Oct. *25,* 1995, A sect.) The impact of the Disney brothers is monumental. Mickey Mouse teeshirts can be seen being worn by natives all over the world. Disney World and Disneyland are the quest for a large segment of humanity, who often esteem these amusement parks as the highlight of their life. What is highly esteemed among men, is an abomination to God according to the Word of God. The Bible arbitrarily makes this claim, but sadly, research by this author over the years proves that a close examination of Disney & mankind’s esteem for "Disney" things does vindicate the Biblical expectation. In other words, as readers of this article will find out, behind the appearance of wholesomeness of the Disney brothers and their creations lays abominations-- some of the most grotesque aspects of generational occultism the world has ever seen. Disney’s Magic Kingdom has become an American Institution that impacts people all over the world from the cradle to the grave.

C. WHO WAS WALT DISNEY?

In the large book The Art of Walt Disney from Mickey Mouse to the Magic Kingdom by Christopher Finch (N.Y.: Harry

N. Abrams, 1975) on page 11 an interesting and revealing statement is made: "By definition, public figures are known to everyone; yet, even after talking with some of Disney's closest associates, it is impossible to escape the conclusion that nobody really knew him. Always there was some aspect of his personality that was just out of reach."

Those who got to know Walt too closely make complaints such as he was "self-satisfied, intractable, and arrogant." He could bring his artists to tears or anger in a matter of seconds. Finch is not the only author who has tried to warn his readers that the public’s image of Walt Disney was just that--only a false image. Mosley also writes in his biography of Walt Disney, "Since Disney is regarded by millions of people, particularly in the United States, as perhaps this century’s most brilliantly successful creator of screen animation, I think I should make one thing clear right away. I share the general admiration of a man whose cinematic achievements were always so happily inspired and inspiriting. But--and this is where I differ from uncritical idolaters--I have to know all the facts, no matter how unpalatable, as well as the romantic myths about any great man or woman I admire. Many of the myths that have been created by his publicists about Walt Disney are unpalatable, unbelievable, and unsatisfactory because so much of the real Walt Disney has been deliberately concealed.. .Walt Disney...had grave flaws in his character." (Mosley. *Disney’s World,* pg. 9) Years ago, an Illuminati Grand Master and programmer stated, "If the world only had the eyes to see the fibers which lay under the surface of Walt Disney’s image, they’d tar and feather him, and drag him through the streets. If only they knew what Disney’s primary goal s."

PERSONAL DETAILS

Walt had black hair with a black mustache, and bright quick eyes and was about 6’ tall. He used his own facial features to clue artists on how to draw Mickey Mouse’s features. He liked specially rolled brown cigarettes which he smoked up to 70 a day. He picked up the smoking habit in the army. He loved expensive Scotch Whiskey, red sunsets, and horses. He had a vacation home in Palm Springs, CA called the Smoke Tree Ranch. He often wore the Ranch’s letter STR emblazoned on his necktie. He played lots of golf with Bob Hope and Ed Sullivan at the ST Ranch. His main home was an estate in Holmby Hills. The Holmby Hills estate was located in a plush area where lots of rich show-business families lived. It was located between Bel-Air (an occult word for Satan) & Beverly Hills.

Walt spent many of his nights at the Disney Studios and later he had his own private quarters at the center of Disneyland. He had reoccurring bouts of insomnia. (For his nerves and insomnia he’d take alcohol and tranquilizers.) He’d go weeks on end without stepping foot on the Holmby Hills estate and seeing his family.

The main topic at the studio by the staff during different time periods was Walt’s bizarre behavior--he would not be available until late afternoon, when he would emerge from the studio’s subterranean maze of tunnels, where supposedly he was "chatting with the maintenance engineers" everyday. The value of his estate when he died was *35* million dollars of which Lillian his wife inherited half. In his later years, when Disney took a vacation he went to Paris for 3 weeks, and 3 weeks at the Hotel du Cap, in Antibes, and then cruised on Fritz Loew’s yacht with Ron and Diane Disney. In England, Walt spent time with the British Royal family and met privately with masonic prophet H.G. Wells. In Rome, Walt visited privately with the Pope and the dictator Mussolini. In 1966, Walt Disney died. Prior to his

death he had investigated cryogenesis--being frozen, and it is believed by some that his body is frozen somewhere in California, while others claim he was cremated.

MICKEY MOUSE

According to one source, the inspiration for Walt to create Mickey Mouse came when he was unemployed and saw a mouse in the gutter. There are quite a few stories in circulation as to where the idea came from. Ub Iwerks claimed he thought Mickey up at an animator’s meeting in Hollywood. Walt once said, "There is a lot of the Mouse in me." (biographical article written by Elting E. Morison, p. 131) In fact, Ub Iwerks told Walt that Mickey Mouse "looks exactly like you--same nose, same face, same whiskers, same gestures and expressions. All he needs now is your voice." Walt often did serve as Mickey’s voice. A book put out by Walt Disney Co. in 1988 reveals that Walt Disney told Ward Kimball "Quite frankly, I prefer animals to people." Walt usually was the voice behind Mickey Mouse, (even though he wasn’t the artist.) His mother was chilly for years about the work Walt did. Around 1940, after much pleading, he finally got her to watch Mickey Mouse. His unsupportive mother (which he would within a few years learn was not actually his biological mother) told him she didn’t like Mickey Mouse’s voice, to which he told her it was his, and then she responded by saying he had a horrible voice. The "cold towel" she threw on Mickey Mouse helped convince Walt to quit making Mickey Mouse cartoons. Very few came out of Disney after that, and the very next Mickey Mouse full-length feature cartoon, Fantasia, had Mickey mostly silent.

Walt’s idea for The Sorcerer’s Apprentice was based on some of his own ideas. Walt had had the dream which was used for Mickey Mouse in The Sorcerer’s Apprentice of having "complete control of the earth and the elements." Disneyland and Disneyworld were partial fulfillments of that dream for control. Walt’s final pet project just prior to his death was the meticulously restored version of the witchcraft film „Bedknobs and Broomsticks." *(Disney Magazine,* Winter 96-97, pub. by Disney, p. 96 mentions this.) As a programming device, Mickey Mouse works well because it plays on the subconscious genetically transmitted fear of mice that women have. Mickey’s image can help create a love-hate relationship, which is so valued during the traumatization & programming of mind-controlled slaves.

Some sources state that Walt’s love for animals came from the time his family had a farm near Marceline, Missouri. Walt began his schooling at Marceline, but continued it after the age of eight at Benton School in Kansas City, MO. Walt’s Dad had a serious gambling problem and passed the spirit of gambling to his son Walt. Walt never graduated from high school. He had a natural love and a flair for art work, although (contrary to his public image) he never became proficient at it. He joined the army in W.W. I as an ambulance driver by lying about his age. During the war, he also chauffeured dignitaries. He also did some other things that are very revealing. He enjoyed drinking & gambling while in the service, and he ran a scam where he doctored German artifacts picked up on the battlefield to sell to people. War relics were tampered with to get them in shape to get the most money from them possible. Walt took the battle souvenirs - and dressed them up, for instance, coating the insides of helmets with grease, hair & blood and putting holes in them to make them into expensive souvenirs. This shows that Walt was willing to build illusions if it paid. He could be deceptive if he saw an advantage to it. From gleanings from things Walt said to people, it appears that as a child, he’d seen the darker side of life (for instance, his father had a habit of beating him in the basement) and had had some interest or exposure to magic as a child. Bob Thomas writes, "Walt took a boyish delight in playing tricks on his parents. He was fascinated with magic tricks..." *(Walt Disney, An American Original,* p. *35.)*

After the military, Walt hoped to have a career as an artist. He applied to the advertising agency of Pesman-Rubin. Roy, his brother, claimed that Pesman-Rubin hired Walt as a personal favor to Roy who handled the agency’s account at the bank Roy worked at. Walter lasted a month until the advertising agency let him go due to Walt’s "singular lack of drawing ability." According to *Current Biography 1952,* in 1923, Walt and Roy had together $290. They borrowed *$500* from another Disney, one of their uncles named Robert Disney and began to try to make cartoons. Robert Disney had retired in the L.A. area in Edendale, CA after a successful mining career. Robert had always been close to Walt’s father Elias, and helped Walt and Roy out when they came to California. Walt loved to study Charlie Chaplin (a member of the Collins family). He scrawled notes about his body language, facial features, and his gag methods. He also read everything he could about animation and cartooning. They worked out of their uncle’s garage in Hollywood, CA. They were finally able to make a good cartoon Steamboat Willie in 1928, which became an instant hit. As with many things in life, the cartoon was not only good, but Walt finally had the right „connections." On Nov. 18, ’28, Steamboat Willie was shown in a small, independent theater without any advance promotion or advertising. But amazingly(!) the *New York Times, Variety,* and *Exhibitor’s Herald* all ran rave reviews of the cartoon the next day. Was this an accident? did journalists from all these prestigious periodicals just happen to go to this tiny independent theater? no it was connections. The reason the elite decided to promote Walt Disney after Steamboat Willie came out as Hollywood’s newest "boy wonder" was to deflect enormous bitterness that had been generated by the Stock Market collapse toward Jewish financiers. Hollywood, even in its first two decades, was known as "Babylon" and "Sin City". The movie industry was well-known to be run by Jews, and many people blamed the Stock Market Crash on the moral degradation that Hollywood had introduced to this nation. There were calls for government regulatory groups to stop the smutty Hollywood films. Edgar Magnin, the spiritual leader of the major movie makers who were part of the Los Angeles B’nai B’rith reportedly encouraged those in the Mishpucka and others who were B’nai B’rith movie makers that Hollywood needed to protect itself by putting Walt Disney in the limelight as a Christian "white knight with family values". (By the way, Edgar Magnin was nicknamed "Rabbi to the Stars", because he was "the Hollywood rabbi".) E. Magnin’s grandfather’s department store chain was one of the first major accounts of the Bank of Italy, and Edgar Magnin had continued his family’s close association with the Bank of Italy. The closeness also came from the Bank of Italy’s close ties to the B’nai B’rith and ADL. In 1930, the movie industry made a production code which stated that the industry must make a special effort to make movies appropriate for children. Hollywood directly praised Disney in that code as an exemplary model of what the movie industry wanted to do.

With the power of the B’nai B’rith and ADL behind him, Walt began sailing to fame. Movie studios that had been turning out smut, with lots of sex and violence all jumped on the bandwagon to show Walt’s clean wholesome cartoons. Walt was the facelift Hollywood needed after the Depression caused Americans to think about America’s morals. Many of the regular movie makers were so corrupt they were out of touch with moral issues, but Walt Disney knew black from

white. The Jewish movie makers "pushed the man [Walt] they considered their best hope to the front of the pack" who was billed as a fundamentalist Christian (albeit a masonic "Christian" who rarely stepped foot in a church). (quote from *Walt Disney Hollywood’s Prince of Darkness*, p. *50.)* Strangely, the biographies indicate that Walt quit doing the actual drawing in 1927, and Walt devoted himself entirely to the development of the cartoon business, such as raising money. In other words, the image of Walt Disney being the artist who has created the Disney cartoon’s is inaccurate. The Disney brothers actually hired many other artists to do the art work. If Walt quit drawing in 1927, and their first marketable cartoon was in 1928, that clearly shows that Walt did not do the actual cartooning. He continued to oversee the work, walking in and rigidly inspecting what was being done to suit his own intuitive tastes. Actually the genius cartoon artist (animator) who made Walt Disney a success was Ub Iwerks, about whom Walt on a number of occasions said was "the best animator in the world". Without Ub Iwerks to take Walt’s ideas and turn them into reality, Walt would never have become famous. Ub was an incredible genius who had a sense of line, a sense of humor, patience, organization and a great sense of what Walt wanted. Walt treated him cruelly at times, interrupting him, playing tricks on him, and not being totally honest with paying him, but he stayed with Walt over the years and made Walt the success Walt became. (The books *Disney’s World* and *Disney Animation: The Illusion of Life* have information on the unheralded genius Ub Iwerks.) Another unknown great artist was Floyd Gottfredson. Floyd Gottfredson drew all the Mickey Mouse cartoons from 1932 until October, 1975--which is a period of *45* 1/2 years. Floyd Gottfredson was a Mormon born in a railway station in *1905,* and raised in a tiny Mormon town, Siggurd, 180 miles so. of Salt Lake City. In 1931, before Floyd totally took over the Mickey Mouse drawings, he would take suggestions from Walt on what to draw. For instance, Walt puzzled him by insisting he do a cartoon series of Mickey Mouse committing suicide. Floyd had said, "Walt, You’re kidding!" But Walt thought that a series on suicide would be funny. Over the years the Walt Disney products never mentioned Floyd’s name. The bulk of the fans were led to believe Walt did the cartooning of Mickey Mouse himself. (See the book *Walt Disney’s Mickey Mouse in Color.* Ed. Bruce Hamilton, pub. The Walt Disney Co., 1988.)

Fred Moore was involved in the creation of Pluto and some other cartoon characters. The idea for Pluto was Walt’s and it was Norm Ferguson’s genius at drawing that took the idea and created the actual images. Walt Disney was awarded 32 personal academy awards for the work that was done by his studios. Walt Disney’s famous signature was actually designed by someone else, and was taught to Walt. (Schickel, Richard. *The Disney Version: The Life, Time, Art and Commerce of Walt Disney.* NY, 1968, p. 34.) Walt could only make a crude Disney signature, so he delegated the writing of the signature to several artists including Bob Moore, Disney’s publicity artist. Later, after much practice he learned to make it well enough to do for publicity. Many people who wrote letters asking for his actual signature, and who actually did his signature, thought that they had received forgeries by his staff, because the famous Disney signature was so crude. The nicer looking ones were the forgeries. One cartoon animator who joined Disney in 1940 recalled that Walt told him the first day, "You’re new here, and I want you to understand just one thing. What we’re selling here is the name Walt Disney. If you can swallow that and always remember it, you’ll be happy here. But if you’ve got any ideas about seeing the name Ken Anderson [his name] up there, its best for you to leave right away."

OCCULT PORN KING

Walt grew up fascinated with the occult and in an abusive home situation. He was fascinated with cartoons, nature and children. He had an intuitive sense for quality cartoons that would appeal to children. At some point, the syndicate got him indebted to them. At that point he was their man. He owed them a debt that they held over him. In secret, Walt became a porn king. A victim remembers that he was sadistic and enjoyed snuff porn films. His interest in children was far from altruistic.

The Hapsburgs of the 13th Illuminati bloodline had a sex salon in Vienna, where a porn photographer named Felix Salten worked. Felix Salten wrote a book *Bambi,* which was then translated into English by the infamous communist Whittaker Chambers. The elite were just beginning to form the roots for today's environmental movement. The book appealed to Disney, because Disney liked animals better than people. In the book, tame animals view humans as gods, while the wild and free animals see humans as demons who they simply called "Him." The book begins with both free and tame animal viewing humans as rightly having dominion over them. In the end, the animals view all humans as simply being on the same level as animals, a vicious animal only fit to be killed.

Disney instructed his animators to make the animals "to be human. I want people to forget they are watching animals." Bambi was to receive a Christ-like manger birth, with the animals hailing him as a "prince." Due to his sexual problems, Walt at one point permitted himself to be subjected to the packing of his genitals in ice for hours at a time. (Elliot, *Walt Disney Hollywood's Dark Prince,* p. 83.) Children were instructed to call Walt "Uncle Walt." An example of this were the Mouseketeers. For those who know how mind-control programmers have traditionally liked to be called "uncle" by their child victims, the insistence by Walt to be known as "uncle" is distasteful. From what this author has learned from some sources about Walt's non-public life as a hidden sadistic porn king, it raises questions about other parts of his life. For instance, Kenneth Anger in his book *Hollywood Babylon II,* p. 192, "Some animators stated that the boss [Walt Disney] seemed to have fallen in love with the boy. There may be some truth in this..." The boy, who Walt fell in love with, was a small young attractive boy actor named Bobby Driscoll who signed up in 1946 with Disney. He acted in Song of the South, Treasure Island and Bobby's voice was used in Peter Pan. Bobby Driscoll was very intelligent and attractive. Did Disney help or abuse him? If Disney was such an upbuilding wholesome atmosphere, & this child actor had everything going for him, why did Bobby become a methamphetamine addict at 17 & die within just a few years? Why didn't his talent & early career lead to something positive in his life?

From those who knew Walt personally one learns that he had an obsession with the buttock part of anatomy. He enjoyed jokes about this part of the anatomy, which he told to his staff quite frequently. The staff edited out many of his crude posterior jokes from cartoon scripts. Two examples that got by the editors are a Christmas special where a little boy is unable to button the drop seat of his pajamas. The little boy's problem in maintaining his modesty is the running gag of the cartoon. In the end, Santa gives him a champer pot. The 2nd example is the paddling machine used on the wolf in The Three Little Pigs. Numerous Disney cartoons feature buttocks of characters provocatively twitching.

AS A WITNESS BEFORE CONGRESS

After W.W. II, Walt Disney was called upon by Hollywood to testify in their defense at the Un-American hearings which were being carried out by congressmen who were concerned about the heavy communist influence within Hollywood. Walt downplayed any communist influence in Hollywood to

Congress. Interestingly, Walt's father was an outspoken Socialist Party leader in the United States who advocated a socialist New World Order. He regularly voted for socialist presidential candidate Eugene Debs. One of the first drawings Walt did as a boy was to duplicate the socialist political cartoons he found in a socialist periodical *Appeal to Reason* that his father subscribed to. When Walt asked in the 1930's how his father felt about socialism's successes, his father Elias said, "Today, everything I fought for in those early days has been absorbed into the platforms of both the major parties. Now I feel pretty good about that." (Thomas, Bob. *Walt Disney, An American Original,* pg. 147-148) Walt's movie *Alice's Egg Plant (1925)* was pure communist doctrine where the red hen (communist) leads the working chickens on a strike against Julius the farm manager (representing capitalists.) The strike at Disney and unionization of Disney in 1940, soured Walt toward communism. The workers at Disney publicly made personal verbal attacks on Walt & he never forgave the humiliation. In spite of his public distaste for communism, his Magic Empire (his castle where he was king) was run like a socialist dictatorship, similar to what the NWO plans. Employees at Disney did not have titles; it was faceless egalitarianism with an all powerful dictator Disney at the top. It was racially elitist too. The only full-time African-American during Walt's lifetime at Disney was a black shoe shine man. Was Walt a socialist of the National Socialist (Nazi) variety? Arthur Babbitt claims, "On more than one occasion I observed Walt Disney and Gunther Lessing there [at Nazi meetings], along with a lot of other prominent Nazi-afflicted Hollywood personalities. Disney was going to meetings all the time." Lessing was mobster Willie Bioff's crony. Bioff had spent his earlier days running a whorehouse, before coming to Hollywood for the mob. In the final panel of the Mickey Mouse comic strip of 6/19/40 a swastika appeared. Some people have wondered what this & other "secret signals" in Disney's work meant. Disney was not Illuminati. The powerful elite are very skilled at controlling people that rub shoulders with them, those who are beginning to become independently wealthy. For instance, they destroyed Robert Morris, the great financier of the American Revolution. They simply used Hegelian Dialectics on Walt Disney. Their Unions and the Mob made Disney's studio one of their prime targets. In order for Walt to protect himself from the unions, which he perceived as communist, Walt got help from the FBI and the mob. Walt was vulnerable to the unions, because he treated his workers terrible, with long hours, low pay, in addition to repeated abuses to their dignity. Walt's large number of employees essentially never received any credit or recognition for their years of creativity and hard work, which was all essentially stolen and credited to Walt by the establishment to build his image. (I write "essentially", because someone might find some obscure exception, but across the board, Walt got all the credit for what his creative workers produced.) Perhaps Walt needed the ego boost from all the purloined public praise which he stole from his staff to be seen as a great animator, because he had wanted to be an artist/cartoonist and failed. The praise helped sooth the wounds.

One worker recalls that Walt "had no knowledge of draftsmanship, no knowledge of music, no knowledge of literature, no knowledge of anything really, except he was a great editor." This may not be much of an exaggeration, because Walt was a high school drop-out, who grew up in poverty on a Missouri farm.

Walt's first official attempt to direct a film (and last) was the film *The Golden Touch* in 1935. The film was an embarrassment. Walt had to pull it from distribution. If Walt lacked abilities to animate, and direct, what was Walt's talent? Walt was the driving force, the spirit so-to-speak behind Disney. He was the dictator who was feared enough to demand more from his workers than they knew they could give--and he could get it. He was the driving force that took a mob of artists, and gag creators, etc. and shaped them into a powerful force to make cartoons and later movies. He was the hard-driving genius who knew what he wanted and got others to create it for him. He was the driving force that kept an army of costumed sanitation men meticulously cleaning Disneyland. In normal year, Walt would have 800,000 plants replaced at Disneyland, & Walt refused to put up signs asking the "guests" (visitors) not to trample them. How powerful was Walt? Here is a man who during his lifetime and even up into the 1990's had a rule in the studio & Disneyland that no male employees could have any facial hair, yet he himself wore a mustache for most of his life.

A possible CHRONOLOGY OF EVENTS surrounding WALT DISNEY'S ILLEGITIMATE BIRTH

It is beyond doubt that Walt Disney was an illegitimate child, but that fact resulted in a long list of mysterious happenings. It also gave power hungry men, something to blackmail Walt Disney with. Because this chapter 5 on Deception is focusing on Disney, and the big boys used blackmail to keep Disney in line, this information is pertinent. The following chronology of events is what this author's believes most likely happened. Without any genetic tests, it is difficult to determine beyond a shadow of a doubt who Walt's biological parents were, and what the actual history of Walt Disney was.

Several people have spent many years investigating the real facts surrounding his birth. Many interesting and tantalizing clues have been found. This author believes that the following chronology is suggested by the evidence. (This author's chronology is offered without hundreds of pages of evidence, because the mysteries around Walt Disney's birth are here to stay, no matter what excuses people come up with, and this author doesn't want to stray from the intended purpose of the chapter. This is to show that Walt Disney had a secret bastard birth which gave J. Edgar Hoover --and his superiors-- blackmail leverage over Walt Disney. Walt may also have had gambling debts and an abnormal sexual appetite which also helped entrap him. For those who want more evidence and facts, the following are recommended: Almendros, *Mojacar, Corner of Enchantment,* p. 83; *Interview* magazine, no. 242, ""Walt Disney Was from Almeria"", and last but not least Eliot, Marc. *Walt Disney, Hollywood's Dark Prince,* chapter 11.)

1890--An attractive spanish woman Isabelle Zamora Ascenslo of Mojacar leaves Spain and travels to California to a Franciscan monastery.

In the same year, but later on In 1890-Walt's future father Elias, who fancies himself a ladies man, leaves his family to seek his fortune in the gold fields. In California, he meets another newcomer to the state, Isabella Ascensio, and the two newcomers in California have much in common, have a sexual affair and fall in love.

1891--Elias fails to make a fortune and returns to Chicago, but he doesn't forget Isabelle.

1893--Isabelle and Elias have a son, and Elias convinces his wife to accept the baby as theirs rather than have the family's reputation, their marriage, and their family ruined. The son doesn't look like the first two boys at all.

1901--Isabelle and Elias have another bastard son, who Elias brings home and names Walter after the minister of the church he attends. The two bastard sons do not look like the older sons of Elias, and they never have much to do with them, but cling to each other as brothers.

1903--The minister of the church Elias attends finds out about the bastard children and Elias quickly moves out of state so that the scandal will remain secret. Elias has also run up gambling debts.

1905--After moving to Marceline, Missouri, Isabelle is hired as the Disney's maid, so that she has an excuse to move in with them without creating suspicions. She probably does much of the raising and care of the two boys.

1918--J. Edgar Hoover is busy involved with the prosecution of draft dodgers in WW I, and it crosses his desk about the case of Walt Disney committing the crime of forging his parents signature to join the army. Cases like Walt's were watched because people who could be blackmailed could be resources in the future for Hoover. That year, Walt discovered that he had no birth certificate. Waft observes his parents strange reactions concerning his birth certificate & other questions, & begins to deeply distrust his father.

Nov. 1938--Walt's mother dies by gas, and the Disney's maid pulls Elias to safety from the fumes, but Walt's mother dies.

1939-40--Hoover offers Walt Disney to help Walt locate his real parents if Walt will work for the FBI. Either Hoover already knows that he is a bastard child, or he soon learns the truth from an investigation. This gives Hoover blackmail power over Walt Disney, and assures Hoover that Waft will be loyal. Hoover informs Walt Disney of the truth, and then moves to generously protect Disney & his father's reputation. Two FBI men plant baptismal information of a child born to Isabelle in 1890 named Jose Guirao in Mojacar, Spain. This date is 10 years off of Walt's birthdate, and is intended to throw people off track. They can't plant a fake birth certificate for Waft in the records for 1901, because everyone knows from WW I that none exists. Therefore, they plant a fake birth certificate for

Walt in the Illinois State records in the year 1890. They hope people will think that somehow a filing error occurred. This way if anything leaks, and worst came to worst, Waft could at least pretend he was adopted and is not an illegitimate bastard. They pay off townspeople in Mojacar to tell a particular story. Townspeople probably receive ongoing payments.

1941--Walt confronts his father with the truth, and his father commits suicide, and his real mother comes to live with him as his maid.

1954--In order to reinforce the myth that Walt was born in Spain, a group of Franciscan monks goes to Mojacar and visibly inquires about the birth records of Jose Guirao and/or Walt Disney. They spend time with the mayor and make sure that everyone connects Waft Disney with Jose, who is a fictitious (nominal) character that the FBI has created records of.

1967--A year after Walt's death, a large group of Americans (a large group was needed because they are not skilled like the 2 FBI men in 1940) pretend to be on "official" business for the American government. They go to Majacar Spain to destroy all the records of Jose Guirao to insure that there will be no spanish claimants to Walt Disney's fortune. Later to insure that the fictitious story is solidly in place to mislead the few who might get by the cloud of secrecy over Walt Disney, the Spanish government does a favor to certain powerful people and pays an investigator to investigate the spanish origins of Walt Disney. People of the village willingly tell people without any fear or without any fanfare that Walt Disney was born at their village. Unless they have recently done so, the village has never done anything--no monuments, no markers, or anything about the birth site of Disney. They probably didn't do this for years, because some of the village probably knew it was a lie. With the older people gone, the lie has probably become well entrenched as truth and there is most likely some type of memorial to Walt Disney.

WALT DISNEY’S CHARACTER

Because the Disney deception is such a major Illuminati deception worldwide, and because Walt Disney was the major catalyst behind all the Disney theme parks, movies, trinkets etc. it is of importance to examine his character. In studying historical figures, this author has tried to get to the rock bottom truth. One may ask, how can this be done? -especially since there have been decades of myths spread by the establishment and their media? The following procedure which has worked with other historical figures was also done by this author with Walt Disney. The first part of this author’s own procedure is to study everything that one can find on the man, paying special attention to what bias and vantage point another author comes from. Special attention is also paid to biographers who try to give the whole truth as they have found it, rather than approved biographies that repeat myths, platitudes, and flattery. The investigator has to be careful because there are authors who deceptively say in their introductions that they are "detached investigators" who are "going to be painfully honest in their reporting" when they actually are skillful coverup artists for the person they write about. When your author, Fritz Springmeier, finished investigating written material about Walt Disney, then I mentally

placed what I knew on the shelf temporarily, and did a handwriting analysis based on the scientific principles of Graphoanalysis as well as the broader field of Graphology. This author is a Certified Graphoanalyst who has done handwriting analysis professionally. Using Graphoanalysis/graphology is an excellent way to get an unbiased very deep look at a historical figure. It is a way to by-pass all the propaganda and myths. However, a close historical look and the handwriting analysis (of various historical figures) have always matched each other, as they did in this case too. Here is what was found. The following paragraphs are how Walt was in the 1920’s. The personality profile you will read did not endure. Under the pressure of micromanaging Disney Productions as well as living with financial stresses, by the 1940’s, Walt could be found in rages giving rough treatment to his wife, and rough spankings to his two children. He went to psychiatric counseling to cope with the stress. And unfortunately with the progression of time, by the 1960’s Walt had become a sadistic egotistical alcoholic. One biographer described him as „...a bully and a know-it-all" *(Disney’s World,* p. 220)

Even then Walt had men working for him, such as Bill Walsh (who had been a orphan as a child) who worshipped Walt. But here is how he was in the 1920's:

Walt was a self-motivated individual with lots of energy which was constantly seeking some outlet. (People have written much about this trait of his.) He was more the giver than the taker in relationships. (In the first few years, when he was responsible for making business contracts he often gave away his work without setting prices for profits. He even wrote letters to his boss to the effect that his first priority was good cartoons not profits, and that he'd work without profits, but he did want some appreciation for his work. That was his sensitive nature showing.) Walt wouldn't wait for others to come up with an idea or someone else to make a move--he was there first. He could communicate his ideas with clarity and ease and move easily from idea to another. (He would storm into Disney Productions and spew one idea after another into his workers' ears.) He enjoyed competition. He had a quick mind and keen perception. He frequently acted on intuition and impulse, taking chances and endangering his own security. (He frequently gambled all his life savings and everything he could scrape together on a project.) Long projects bored him. (Fortunately the real tedious work of cartooning was done by a large staff of artists.) House chores and repetitive chores bored him and he avoided them. (He was absolutely a total slob around the house as a bachelor.) He was impatient with vague philosophies, he liked concrete realities. He was difficult to get along with because he had both a playful side (even to the point of cruel practical jokes) to his personality and an aggressive intolerant impatient side that wanted to achieve. Naturally, people around him were disconcerted because on a subconscious level they never knew which side of him they would deal with. (The reference series *Current Biography "Disney"* article p. 248 gives the following Walt Disney quote, "We don't even let the word 'art' be used around the studio. If anyone begins to get arty, we knock them down.") He was geared for action. He was always inventing ways to get what he needed. He could be explosive when provoked. (The old time associates of Walt remember his explosive temper.) He was a person of dynamic energy, sensuality and keen thinking, and a disciple of the pleasure principle.

Because his father was so abusive and misused his position of authority, Walt came to be deeply ingrained with defiance toward authority. (The themes of his films repeatedly sympathize with those who rebel against authority, and the police and other authority figures are consistently shown as absurd. One way he expressed irresponsibility was with lively dance scenes, which has been a hallmark of teenage rebellion during the 20th century. "Comic anarchy reaches its fullest expression in Alice Rattled by Rats, which shows what the rats do when the cats goes away!) He felt that rules were for others to follow. (That is one reason he would step outside of the law and commit illegal acts. This is one trait that may be responsible for some of the criminal activities Walt ended up participating in.) Walt also didn't like to be closely supervised. (He wanted to manage his Disney Magic Kingdom as if it were his own kingdom. He wanted to be an authority figure, and indeed became the dictator of his Magic Kingdom. When his workers differed with his own views he felt that they were infringing upon his own inalienable rights as an individual.) He was somewhat of a melancholic temperament, that type of perfectionist who still enjoys life. He felt a need to protect himself against intimacy with others. He was most home in a setting which he made for himself. Walt had the traits of an executive. He was slow to reveal his innermost feelings, and definitely set his own goals. Walt was one of those persons that when the going got tough, he hung in there. Likewise he would cling to his ideas, plans, and possessions. (His stubborn refusal to allow his brother Roy to stop the creation of Disneyland led to events that split the brothers. His determination to succeed was taken advantage of by the crime syndicates to blackmail him with some debt. In order to get his dreams, he was willing to give them what they wanted.) A clue to Walt's macabre sense of humor, at times almost a graveyard sense of humor, and his high tolerance of seeing pain in others, is that Walt was seriously thinking of volunteering again as a medic after the W.W. I fighting in France was over, when volunteers were needed for the Balkan fighting. Walt loved animals more than people. The only human being that he had rapport with while growing up on the farm was his Uncle Ed (who he called Uncle Elf), who looked like a cross between a leprechaun and a prune. Uncle Elf could make animals sounds and bird whistles to Walts delight. Walt loved the charm of the farm and nature and he loved royalty, pageantry and a strict social hierarchy such as Freemasonry provides. He often wove a combination of the barnyard in with royal parades and other trappings of royalty. For instance, in Alice the Piper, the King Hamlin is a farmer who sleeps in a farmhouse. In Puss in Boots the local king lives in an authentic palace incongruously placed in a village. His early film Alice’s Day at Sea includes both the features of a royal court and an American circus. In typical Disney disdain for authority, he pokes fun at criminal fraternal groups with their rituals and passwords in Alice & the Dog Catcher, Alice Foils the Pirates, and Alice’s Mysterious Mystery. And while he was a secret FBI agent, he went against Hoover’s wishes and poked fun at the FBI’s authority. Walt was loyal to what he believed and could be loyal to those individuals who he deemed worthy of his loyalty, but he didn’t want anyone to have authority over him. (Walt was a 320 Freemason & an occultist, he was loyal to that philosophy and loyal in his early years to his older brother Roy O. Disney, who was a father figure to him.) If anyone at the studios agreed with him when he was angry at his brother Roy, he or she risked losing their job. Both brothers were protective of each other, and felt they were the only ones who could criticize the other one.

D. WHO WAS ROY O. DISNEY?

Roy O. Disney was born in 1893, and his brother Walt in 1901. They had three other brothers, but Roy and Walt (1901-1966) were only close to each other and not to their other brothers, who didn’t resemble them. Walt was named Walter Elias, his middle name derived from his father’s first name. The Disney family had immigrated from Ireland to Canada and then to the U.S. The father of the brothers as stated was Elias, and their mother of scottish descent, who may not have been the biological mother, had the maiden name Flora Call. Roy died in 1971, shortly after the opening ceremonies for Walt Disney World. He kept his promises to his brother to build Walt Disney World. He reneged on his promises concerning the city of Epcot (which was derailed into becoming EPCOT). Roy O. during the 1930’s lived in North Hollywood. Roy’s family later located in Napa Valley, CA, and was associated with the Illuminati kingpins in the area. Napa Valley has been nicknamed the Valley of Kings. This "Valley of Kings" plays a major role in the dirty activities revealed in this chapter. Roy 0. Disney played a bigger role at Disney Studios than people realize. For example, it was Roy O. who made the decision to cut 45 min. out of Fantasia, so that Walt’s pet project could be distributed to movie theaters. Roy O., considered by some insiders as the more evil of the two brothers, kept the financial books for the Disney’s down through the years. It is known that Disney kept two books during the 1950’s, so it is hard to believe anything except that Roy 0. was fully aware of how Disney brought in their money. The big boys always kept the financial screws to Walt and Roy. The big boys often figured out scams to take their money. When the Disney brothers had an arrangement with Columbia Studio (run by Harry Cohn) they were advanced $7,500 for each cartoon which cost them an unprofitable $13,500 to make. Further, Cohn liked to cheat them by not sending them their money, and taking a ridiculous amount of time to pay them what he owed them. The cash flow problems of the Disney brothers also came from Walt’s desire to keep improving and upgrading the technology they used. When Walt went to color over Roy’s objections, Disney’s profit margin was damaged and the studio was left with shortages of cash. In 1937, Walt’s repeated gambles with cartoon production ideas caused Roy O. to say, "We’ve bought the whole damned sweepstakes." From 1940 through 1946, Disney lost money every year. In '46, he lost $23,000. Finally in 1947, things turned around and the Disney studio made a profit of *$265,000.* Cartoons and movies were not really big moneymakers for the Disney brothers, until it was realized that old films could be replayed on television. Overall, from the 20’s through the 50’s, the Disneys may have broke even with animation. This is why Disney Studios at Christmas, 1931 was unable to pay its payroll. Pinocchio cost $2.6 million to make in the late ’30’s, an amount hard to retrieve at that time from the box office, and Fantasia’s original release in the ’40’s was a dismal financial failure. When Sleeping Beauty was released in 1960, it was a loser, movie goers were apathetic towards it. The real money made by the Disney brothers in the 1930-1950’s came from the merchandising of Disney products, the production of underground hard porn, and the kickbacks from various groups which used Disney for mind-control programming, and money laundering. When Walt died, his shares in Disney were worth $18 million. His family all in all held 34% of the stock in Walt Disney Productions. Roy o. Disney's daughter Dorothy Disney Puder & husband Episcopalian Rev. Glen Puder purchased property at 1677 Sage Canyon Rd., Napa Valley east of Rutherford. (This is close to the Rothschild's Opus One Temple mentioned in *VoL 1.*) O.J. Simpson's lawyer Johnnie Cochran Jr. was in the Rothschild's hard-to-enter Opus 1 when the jury arrived at a decision in O.J. Simpson's case.) It is very typical for Mafia families in south Boston to have one family member in the clergy & one full time in organized crime. (See author's Be Wise As Serpents for an expose on the Episcopalian Church, which is simply a branch of Freemasonry.) All kinds of interesting Mafia figures, Illuminati, and Bohemian Grovers live up the Sage Canyon Rd. This is an area that has a large well-kept cemetery for pets. Frank Well's sister and Rich Frank, who will all be discussed later in this chapter, also live on Sage Canyon Rd.

E. WHO WAS ROY B. DISNEY?

Roy Edward Disney (nephew of Walt) is the son of Roy Oliver Disney (brother of Walt). Sometimes he has been called Junior. The 9/5/94 *Newsweek* story on Disney's Magic Kingdom called him "Keeper of the Flame." Roy is an executive with Walt Disney Co. at 500 5. Buena Vista St., Burbank, CA 91521. He has worked as an asst. producer at Walt Disney Co. from 1954 to 1977. He has also been the vice-pres. of Walt Disney Co. He is president of Roy E. Disney Prodns. in Burbank. He is chairman of the board for Shamrock Broadcasting Co. As if that weren't enough, he is on the board of directors for St. Joseph Med. Ctr., fellow U. Ky. Recipient of the Academy award nomination for Mysteries of the Deep. He is a director of the Guild American West, the Writers Guild, which is important. He belongs to the 100 Club, the Confrerie des Chevaliers du Tastevin, and St. Francis Yacht Club. He likes speed boat racing. Roy E. Disney was the cocky son of Roy O. He married a gal named Patricia. He was merely tolerated by his uncle Walt, especially after Roy E. made some snide remarks about Walt's plans for Disneyland, which he and his father opposed until Walt Disney personally got the project going. Walt's son-in-law Ronald Miller is one of the Disney clan who can't stand Roy E. The two never liked each other, and in the power struggle between them after Walt's death, Roy E. won and ended up with Disney. Although people called Roy E. "Walt's idiot nephew", he eventually (with the help of his father & outsiders) won the various power struggles at Disney after Walt died, and is now a powerful figure. Roy E. Disney and Stanley P. Gold work together in various ways, and are both on the present Disney Bd. of Dir. They are friends and worked to prevent hostile takeovers of Disney in 1984. Gold is in charge of Shamrock Holdings, Inc.

The battle between the two Disney factions

In *1953,* the two brothers and their respective sides of the family split when Walt created RETHAW corporation. The two sides have fought ever since. When Walt Disney created RETLAW (his name Walter spelled backwards), this alienated his brother Roy O. & Roy's side of the family. Without going into all the details, what RETLAW did was cut Roy O.'s side out of the money that was to be made. But Roy's side didn't stand by and idly let their share of the pie be lost, they fought back and held their own. Their big break came when Michael Milken and his band of junk bond artists carried out a "greenmail" on the Disney Corp. Only a few insiders know how greenmail works. It is a legal form of blackmail. Milken would work with his friends Saul Steinberg, Sir James Goldsmith, and Carl Icahn. Milken would provide them the financial clout, to make them look financially capable of financially purchasing a corporation that they had selected as a target. According to insiders, Milken got 40% of the upside of any "greenmail" that went right. The targeted corporation would learn that someone like Saul Steinberg was going to buy them out. In order to prevent the buyout, and to keep their jobs, the officers of the targeted corporation would get frantic, and either do suicidal refinancings, or buy the stock of the potential acquirer for much greater prices than the Milken group paid for them. The "greenmail" artists would then take their loot and go on their way. The stockholders of the targeted company are the real losers of "greenmail", because the management of the corporation in order to finance their protection spends the stockholder's money, takes on new debts, and deprives the stockholders of some profit-making potential of their shares. Michael Milken's group made feints to take over a large number of corporations, including Walt Disney, Phillips Petroleum and Avco. Saul Steinberg made what looked like the beginnings of a sincere hostile takeover of Walt Disney through Reliance. At one point Reliance became Disney's largest stockholder. Steinberg filed an amended 13D saying he intended to acquire *25%* of the corporation. The CEO of Walt Disney, was Walt Disney's son-in-law Ron Miller. Saul Steinberg is a dear business partner with London's Jacob de Rothschild. Originally, Ron Miller (Stanford Univ. grad.) and Ray Watson (a Bohemian Grove mmbr from Stanford Unive.) of Walt Disney's management brought in the Bass brothers to help them deal with Saul Steinberg's takeover and to buy and develop land (esp. in Florida). Ray Watson was Ron Miller's key right hand man to run things. The Bass brothers are mafia. Disney acquired the Bass Brother's Arvida, and brought the Bass brothers into Disney's management. The Basses sold their stake in Texaco back to the oil co. & then used this money to bolster Disney. Sid Bass & Chuck Cobb (chief exec. Arvida) worked out a deal with Disney. Arvida (sold to Disney for $200 mil.) would profit from developing Disney land in FL & Disney would profit from the new financial strength that getting Arvida would provide. Arvida owned oil fields, theme parks, and had helped create planned communities. For Ron Miller, on the one side was the Illuminati and the other side of things was the mafia. He didn't trust either, but Steinberg's takeover could eliminate Disney's management and both he (and Roy E. Disney) wanted to save Disney from a takeover by Steinberg. At first, Roy E. wrote a letter to Ron Miller & the other board members stating his concerns about the acquisition of Arvida For Disney management, at least the Bass brothers would let Walt Disney continue to make their family movies. After the Bass brothers joined the Disney management (and became one of Disney's major stockholders), they soon joined sides with Roy E. in a management fallout over whether Disney should buy Gibson Greeting Card Company. With enough votes on the board, they sent Ron Miller packing. With Ron Miller, and those management men aligned with Walt's side of the family gone, then CEO Michael Eisner, Frank Wells, Rich Frank, and Jeffrey Katzenberg and some others made the modern Walt Disney Corporation. Disney's Touchtone studio which was mentioned above in connection to the movie Alive was created in 1984 by Walt Disney's son-in-law Ronald L. Miller. Ron Miller's management style was lackluster. The new management has really gone gang busters. Although Walt's side of the family is out of the management end of Disney, they still receive financial rewards from various Disney enterprises. The Bass brothers acquired more land for Disney in Florida. But under their tutelage, Disney now has a management team that is skilled in land grabbing techniques. The Bass fortune began with Perry Bass, who created a company called Bass Enterprises. In 1969, Perry retired and turned things over to his eldest son, Sid Richardson Bass. Sid has three younger brothers Ed, Robert and Lee. The Basses owned 27% in Prime Computer, as well as sizable real estate and oil holdings. The Bass brothers founded a local prep school in Ft. Worth, TX. Their HQs in Ft. Worth is full of modern art. The Bass brothers were very clever in their deal with Disney. In exchange for their $14 investment in Arvida, they had gotten (over a period of time) $950 million dollars worth of Disney stock. In 1985, they liquidated Bass Brothers Enterprises and divided the assets between the four brothers. Sid Bass was able to shift his interests from finances to culture and high society. One of the Bass brothers is involved with wineries in Napa Valley. The Bass Brother's financial strategist was Alfred Checchi, now of Beverly Hills, who has been a supporter of Mishpucka member Sen. Dianne Feinstein (D-Calif.).

Roy is involved in criminal activities, and several people investigating him have been bluntly warned that if they continue, they will see their children murdered. Napa Valley's Illuminati activity also connects in with CIA activities as well. The Napa Valley Illuminati families all have CIA connections. For instance, British millionaire Kenneth Armitage, who had to flee from England to avoid arrest on numerous charges of theft, deception and false accounting, had some of his good friends in the Napa Valley, such as Dr. John Duff, Johnny Beck, & others. Armitage has since mysteriously died in prison in England. Armitage had intelligence connections which tie in with twilight world of the criminal activities of the numerous intelligence acronym monsters. Also his company was authorized to provide people with Central American government documents. There is more-- much more to sordid affairs which swirl around Roy Disney. Napa Valley, where many members of the Disney family live, has the Illuminati’s Opus One temple owned by Rothschilds, as well as two roads lined with meticulously kept wineries owned by Illuminati kingpins and connected via secret underground tunnels. To top off this incredible collection of Illuminati wineries (Rothschild’s, Mondavi’s, Rutherford’s, Christian Brother’s, Sattui’s etc), on the north end of a series of wineries on highway 29 lays the CIA’s medieval-looking Culinary Institute of America Greystone (at 2555 Main St., St. Helena, CA 94574), where numerous people have suffered torture. The Greystone Culinary Institute of America recently had the person who runs their campus store mentioned in *House & Garden,* Sept. ‘96.

F. WHAT DO WE KNOW ABOUT THE DISNEY FAMILY IN GENERAL?

Several members of the Disney family came to England with William the Conqueror. They were not known as Disney then, but because they came from the French Norman town of Isigny, they took the name d ‘Isigny, and anglicized it into Disney. Walt had two daughters, Diane Marie (bn. 12/18/33) and Sharon Mae.

Diane made some revealing comments when she said, he didn’t spoil us. Like a lot of adolescent girls, I was crazy about horses, and I got quite good at riding. I yearned for my own horse, but Dad wouldn’t buy one. And we didn’t have a lot of clothes and other things." For being one of the richest men in the nation, Walt can’t be accused of having spoiled his children. He was also famous for his ten cent tips at restaurants, which became the talk of the town. Sharon Mae was adopted and arrived at the Disney home 12/31/36. (She died in ’93.) The adoption was kept very secret. The newspapers around the country announced that Lillian had given birth to Sharon, and the Disney family kept up this lie for years. The reason given for Sharon’s adoption was that Diane needed a playmate. For years, Walt Disney didn’t care much for Sharon and seldom acted like he even knew her name. Walt had wanted a son, but his wife wanted to adopt a girl, so it was a beautiful girl that Lillian picked out to be a companion for her first daughter. When Sharon was kindergarten age, Walt would take her to the carousels in Griffith Park on Sunday afternoons. Sharon was sent to private schools. She went to Westlake School for Girls, and later was shipped off to Switzerland to a girls’ boarding school.

She had soft blond locks and was attractive. In June of 1948, Walt took Sharon, who was then an attractive 12 yr. old to Alaska with him for about 2 months. For most of this trip Walt and Sharon were alone together. For a father, who had ignored Sharon for years, now Walt was totally obsessed with Sharon. He bathed Sharon every night, combed her hair, washed her underwear, and carefully dressed her each night from head to toe before taking her to nice restaurants. He even followed her when she sleep walked. Why was Sharon a dissociative person? That summer in Alaska, Walt and his personal pilot took a trip in August to Mt. McKinley, AK. Both were drinking scotch whiskey and they barely missed hitting a mountain, and almost ran out of fuel before finding a runway. Sharon first married a presbyterian Robert Borgfeldt Brown. Later, Sharon went on to marry William Lund. Years later, Walt’s wife Lilly even prevented a biographer from revealing that Sharon was adopted. Sharon died relatively young. It is important to look at the Disney family rather than just Walt Disney in trying to understand the Disney phenomena. For instance in 1958, the *Wall Street Journal* mentioned that Lillian B. Disney was beneficial owner of over 10% of common Disney stock.

Lillian, Walt’s widow, quietly purchased property in Napa Valley and moved there in the late 60’s. She bought the property through Walt’s Retlaw Enterprises and the Lillian Disney Trust. Lillian and her 2 daughters ran Retlaw for years. Diane Miller, her daughter, also bought land and moved to the Napa area. The Lillian Disney Trust bought the Silverado Vineyards, which Diane & her husband manage as „gentlemen growers" as they call it. This side of the Disney family is shunned by the Illuminati insiders in the Napa Valley, as well as by the Roy O. side of the family. Although very private, there are occasional moments of publicity from Diane Disney Miller, when she donated wine for a fund raiser for the Planned Parenthood Shasta Diablo held at the estate Niebaum-Coppola, owned by director/producer Francis Ford Coppola. Francis F. Coppola comes from an old mafia family. He owns a big winery & directed Disney's Caption EO film. Locals in the Napa area do not trust any of the Disneys, especially the Roy O. side of the family. There are other Disney's who tie in with the occult world. Wesley Ernest Disney, a 32° Mason & Shriner, who was a U.S. Congressman, a state official & lawyer in Kansas who had a brother Richard Lester Disney-- who is a Rhodes Scholar and a Mason too. Wesley Ernest Disney, by the way began as a lawyer in Muskogee County (a Satanic controlled county), and was a Christian Scientist. He lived in Tulsa, a powerful city of the Illuminati hierarchy. Doris Miles Disney has been a writer of occult fiction, such as *The Magic Grandfather the Chandler Policy* (1972) and *Trick or Treat* (1972) as well as many other occult novels.

G. A HISTORY OF DISNEY

"The story of Disney's silent film career is not so much a struggle for artistic expression as it is a fight for commercial stability." During the 1920's, Walt stayed safely within the confines of comic animation as defined by others, such as the producers of Felix the Cat, Koko the Clown, and Krazy Kat. In other words, when many of the ideas were coming from just himself, Disney's movies were not any better than others. In the 1930's, Disney got some of the best talent available and he began to settle for only the best results from that talent. With the mob, and the Illuminati behind him, and driven by an indebtedness to them, Disney began to achieve outstanding results in animation. Between 1924 and 1927, Walt Disney made a series of *56* silent Alice Comedies which used three different girls (6-year-old Virginia Davis, Margie Gay and Lois Hardwick) to act as Alice who romps around in a makebelief cartoon world. These cartoons combined live action and animation. By the time the series was done, Walt Disney wanted to try working solely with animation. Margaret Winkler in NY (who married Charles Mintz) distributed Walt Disney's Alice Comedies. From the beginning, children were the center of everything Walt did. The occult world that backed Walt, as well as Walt himself, believed that if they could bring out "the child" (that part of a person called "the child" by various psychologists), then they could appeal to the curiosity and feelings of the "child" part of adults. If it worked with adults, they could do the same with the child part in children. They knew even in the 20's & '30's what had to be accomplished in the secret Great Plan for a New World Order. The Illuminati Great Plan called for family life to be destroyed, for children to rebel against their parents, and for the world to become more violent. Children needed to immerse in images of violence so that a violent society could be created. For instance, the 1925 film *Alice Stage Struck* shows little girl Alice strapped to a log leading to a buzz saw. They also wanted to make occultism--witchcraft the common belief of the American people. The Illuminati felt they could bring in witchcraft if they appealed to the curiosity of the child in every adult. For instance, the Donald Duck cartoon Corn Chips (1951) shows Donald harassing Chip and Dale who then get back at him by stealing a box of popcorn and spreading it all over the front yard. Now what does a cartoon like this teach kids? It teaches that stealing to repay a grudge is O.K. and that doing pranks is funny. In Disney's 1920 films, he shows kids cutting school, shoplifting and playing hookey. He shows Alice running away from responsibility to have adventure. He shows prisoners escaping and hobos escaping work. His films are expression of misbehavior being successful. What does this teach children? In the 1951 cartoon, *Get Rich Quick* Goofy wins money at poker and his initially angry wife who doesn't like gambling forgives him when she sees how much he's won. Goofy indicates that they can have a spending spree by telling his wife, "Easy come, easy go!" The gambling spirit is a very powerful spirit that the Illuminati want to instill in this nation. How can a cartoon that promotes gambling be wholesome for children? Lt. Col. Dave Grossman is a military expert on how to condition people so that they will kill. He writes in his superb book *On Killing* (Boston, MS: Little Brown & Co., 1996) that the same process that the government has used to condition soldiers to kill, is being used by the entertainment industry. The only major difference is that in the military, men are taught to kill only on command, while our children are being taught to kill whenever they want to via TV's "entertainment." Grossman states on page 308, that the conditioning to kill begins with cartoons. "It begins innocently with cartoons and then goes on to the countless acts of violence depicted on TV as the child grows up... .Then the parents, through neglect or conscious decision, begin to permit the child to watch movies rated R due to vivid depictions of knives penetrating and protruding from bodies, long shots of blood spurting from severed limbs, and bullets ripping into bodies and exploding out the back in showers of blood and brains." While children see horrible deaths on T.V., they learn to associate this suffering with entertainment, pleasure and their favorite soft drink, their favorite candybar, and close intimate contact with their date. (See *On Killing,* p. 302) Disney has the appearance of Wholesomeness; this appearance is quite deceptive. A close study of Disney cartoons will reveal lots of violence that could not be depicted if the violence was actually real life & not animation. It's the wholesome front which is one of the deceptions that makes Disney cartoons & films so dangerous. Yes, the image of Disney has been that its cartoons are wholesome. No wonder Illuminati mind-control programmers have laughed at how naive the American public is toward Disney. The Disney Gargoyles cartoons are a television series that is pure demonology. The story line is that a race of demons protects New York City. One of the Gargoyles is even named Demona. The Illuminati programmers are amazed at how stupid the masses of people are, and how easily deceived. How the Disney movies are used as programming scripts is very involved so only one detailed example is given at the end of this chapter. The Illuminati and Mafia knew that Walt had the ability to get the job done that the Great Plans called for. (Source: confidential interview.) They knew they had the "carrots and the sticks" to get him to cooperate. There is no doubt that Walt was a hard worker who in turn expected high standards from his employees. One co-worker of Walt wrote, "Walt made a simple statement, that you can lick them with 'product' if you make your product good enough, they cannot deny it.. . .In Walt's estimation, everything that was done had to be executed with a great deal of thought and finesse." Neelands, Barbara, compiler. *About Ben Sharpsteen,* article by David R. Smith (2nd Impress.) Calistoga, CA: A Sharpsteen Museum Reprint, pg. 2-3. One big turn in Walt's outlook toward quality came in April, 1927 when the head of Universal Studios wrote a scathing report on the quality of Disney studio work. It forced Walt to realize that up to then he had been slipshod and sloppy. He resolved to never take the easy way, but to work with dedication toward making his drawings come to life with character and interesting situations. In 1922, Walt made a film Cinderella. This is not to be confused with the later animated film also of the same title released in *1950.* The 1950 feature was re-released numerous times. The Alice cartoons were made with a 6-year-old girl playing Alice. The first six Alice comedies had extensive live-action beginnings, and then went into cartoon. A few of the 1920's Alice silent cartoon titles include:

Alice's Wonderland (1923)

Alice Hunting in Africa (1924)

Alice's Spooky Adventure (1924)

Alice Plays Cupid (1925)

Alice Cans the Cannibals (1925)

Alice Rattled by Rats (1925)

Alice Chops the Suey (1925)

Alice Charms the Fish (1926)

Alice the Whaler (1927)

Alice the Beach Nut (1927)

After the Alice Series, Disney began a fully animated series called Oswald the Lucky Rabbit. Here we see the occult concept of luck (who hasn't heard of a lucky Rabbit's foot?) being subtly promoted. Disney cartoon may entertain, but they also indoctrinate while they entertain. In 1926, Walt Disney signed an agreement with Mintz and Film Booking Offices (EBO). Film Booking Offices were Illuminati kingpin/mob boss Joseph Kennedy's company. For at least the next years, Disney worked under the control (auspices) of Illuminati kingpin Kennedy. All of the Disney pictures were registered by R-C Pictures Corp., one of the parent companies of Kennedy's FBO. Joseph Kennedy also controlled the RKO studio which worked together with the other big studios to insure that no small studio would develop as a competitor. By 1937, all the big studios--20th Cent., Paramount, MGM, Warner Bros., Cohn's Columbia Pictures and Kennedy's RKO were allowing the mob to skim money from them. Kennedy's RKO gave Walt a guarantee in 1937 that they'd distribute Snow White sight unseen. Walt Disney had their films distributed by Kennedy's RKO from 1936 to 1956. Another little known detail is that in 1926, Leon Schlesinger (future producer at Warner Bros.) subcontracted animation jobs to Disney. One of these was Universal's *The Silent Flyer.* In 1928, Steamboat Willie debuted. This was an animated cartoon with a soundtrack starring a mouse later named Mickey Mouse. It had taken lots of hard work and determination on Walt's part, but it was the first cartoon with a sound track and it was successful. In 1929, the cartoon The Haunted House came out. The story is, Mickey Mouse is forced by a storm into a house full of ghosts who force him to contribute to their spooky musicale. In 1930, Harry Cohn, one of the most ruthless and unsavory characters controlling a studio bailed Walt Disney out of Walt's trouble with con-artist Pat Powers who was stealing Disney's money. Harry Cohn was a former NY pool hustler and gambler who was brought in by Chicago investors to front their investments in Columbia Pictures, and run their studio. He wore a sapphire ring that the Chicago mafiaman Johnny Roselli gave him. Roselli later became a rogue asset of the CIA, and testified before Congress (the Church Committee on Assassinations in '74) about a CIA contract which was handed him. Roselli worked for the Mafia Council of 9, which incl. Anthony Accardo and Sam Giancana. Harry Cohn was said by some to be the most hated man in Hollywood. His money gave him "the power of an emperor". His money got him the best female flesh available which he used for his pleasure. He always seemed to arrive from Las Vegas with rolls of new greenbacks, which had close associates wondering where all the money came from that he always got when he made trips to Las Vegas. In 1931, Walt went into a long suicidal depression that lasted into 1932. In the summer of 1932, he took a vacation to try and recover from his nervous breakdown. By 1932, Ingersoll had marketed its first edition of Mickey Mouse watches. Disney products have served as a model of consumerism for the world. Disney watches have been made continuously since 1932 or '33. In 1932, eighty major U.S. corporations (such as General Foods, RCA & National Dairy) began to market Disney products. Ed Sullivan began regularly running stories that bragged about Disney's work. Freemason Dr. Rufus B. von Kleinsmid, pres. of the Univ. of So. Cal., gave Disney an award from *Parents* magazine for Walt's "work with children". In 1932, several artists who had worked for William Randolph Hearst came to work for Disney. In 1932, Roy switched Disney from Columbia to United Artists. United Artists agreed to front Disney $15,000 for each cartoon.

In the 1930's, the Illuminati' Bank of America financed Walt Disney. Years before, the Bank of America had been quietly created from Bank of Italy which was controlled by the same oligarchy that has run the Knights of Malta and renaissance Venice. The Bank of Italy was a powerful bank in Hollywood's first years. It's representatives A.P. and Atillo Giannini financed Walt during the 1920's with petty cash to keep him going, but not enough to get him out of financial bondage.

Joe Rosenberg of Bank of America was sympathetic to Walt. Joe Rosenberg, a jewish banker, came to all of Disney's board meetings, sat beside Walt, and would advise Walt on what direction Disney Studios should take. Joe wasn't a board member, but his advice got high priority. Bank of America also bankrolled other Illuminati projects and organizations. Bank of America had one of their branch offices on Disneyland's Main St. from *'55* until '93. They were open on holidays and Sundays for Disneyland. Bank of America is slated to be perhaps the only bank to survive the economic crash, when the Illuminati kingpins will allow their own banks to crash. Bank of America executive S. Clark Beise (who is a Scottish Rite Freemason) has been a member of Disney's board of directors from *'65 to '75.* One of the biggest depositors in Bank of America is Roy E. Disney. Other Disney execs like Rich Frank have also used Bank of America as their bank of choice.

The Bank of America bankrolled the Disney animation Snow White. Walt managed to sell Joseph Rosenberg on the idea, at a time when old time Hollywood people were advising Rosenberg that Snow White could only be a failure. When Snow White was successful, Walt announced a monster party for all Disney workers at Lake Norconian, near Palm Springs, southeast of San Bernandino, CA where the cost of everything the Disney workers wanted to order--food or drink or whatever, would be taken care of by the Disney's. Under the full moon, the Disney male and female workers, finally free of the tight rules at the studios, had what amounted to a Roman orgy and a large nude skinny-dip at the lake. Almost all of the Disney workers participated in the orgy and Disney had only two options, 1. fire them all or 2. ignore that the party took place. Walt choose the later option, and after that no-one ever dared mention the party in his presence. In 1937, Walt and Roy took a trip to Europe where Walt dined with the British Royal family, & met privately with H.G. Wells, the masonic prophet! planner of what Wells & other masons called "the New World Order". In Paris, the League of Nations (the forerunner to the U.N.) gave him an award. After the success of Snow White, Disney chose Pinocchio to follow it. Many have asked why Pinocchio was chosen by Walt. If you look at the script, the puppetmaker's wife is taken out of the original script, and there is an emphasis on the little wooden puppet visualizing becoming a flesh & blood son to the man who had created him. Here we have a boy with no soul, who is told if he works hard he will be given one. (Does this sound familiar to readers of *VoL 2?)* The script was definitely changed to have a storyline far more useful to mind-control programming. For those who think Walt simply recreated fairy tales on the screen, if one examines the changes that are made from the original storylines, they are changed to make them more useful for mind-control. Both Snow White and Pinocchio have occult type "deaths and resurrections". After W.W. II, Joseph Rosenberg persuaded A.P. Giannini, his boss, to bankroll Disney again. Although Walt was financed by the Mishpucka (Jewish Mafia), he didn't like the idea. Richard Rosenberg, a later Pres. of Bank of America, is also Mishpucka. Richard Rosenberg (his mother was a Cohen) was also in charge of Northrop Corp. and Marin Ecumenical Housing Assn. (Other examples of Mishpucka executives are R. Goldstein, v.p. of Procter & Gamble, and Marvin Koslow, v.p. of Bristol Meyers Co.) In the 1930's, the elite promoted Disney's new cartoons. In *1935,* Walt Disney received the French Legion of Honor for his Mickey Mouse cartoons. Also in *1935,* the Queen of England (who readers of my previous articles will realize is Illuminati, involved in drug trade, and is involved with the leadership of Freemasonry) and the Duchess of York (also Illuminati) selected Mickey Mouse chinaware as gifts for 600 children. This was after Walt spent time with her in 1934. The League of Nations (the pre-W.W. II equivalent of the U.N.) took the time to vote its approval of Mickey Mouse. (Finch, Christopher. *The Art of Walt Disney from Mickey Mouse to the Magic Kingdom* . NY: Harry N. Abrams, Inc., *1975,* p. *53.)* There is no doubt that Walt Disney had talent. There is also no doubt from the record that powerful people wanted to promote him. No doubt his 320 Masonic membership and his DeMolay activities helped boost his support, and also helped Walt's bent toward the occult. Let's digress just to let people in on Freemasonry's involvement with acting and motion pictures. The famous 233 Club was a masonic chapter for actors who were Freemasons. Examples of actors who were Freemasons include John Aasen, Gene Autry, Monte Blue and Humphrey Bogart, Douglas McClean, John Wayne. Then there is T.V. DJ Dick Clark. Examples of Motion picture executives who were Freemasons incl. Ellis G. Arnall (Pres. of the Soc. of Ind. Motion Picture Producers), Will H. Hays (Czar of motion pictures 1922-45, and Pres. Motion Picture Produces & Distributors of Amer. Inc.), Benj. B. Kahane (v.p. & dir. Assoc. of Motion Picture Producers, Inc.), Carl Laemmle (Pres. Univ. Pictures Corp til '36), Frank E. Mullen (man. dept of info. RCA, VP NBC '39-'46, exec. VP NBC '46-'48), David Sarnoff (Chrm. of Bd. Radio Corp. of Amer. & „father" of American television), Jack M. Warner (v.p. of Warner Bros.) and the President & dir. of Universal Pictures since 1952. The Freemasons have made much of Walt Disney's membership in their

membership sales pitches. Because the 2 Disney brothers' chief contributions to the production of Disney films were the finances and occassionally the ideas used in a film, it is rather misrepresentative of things that Walt Disney got all the credit for the success and quality of the Disney cartoons. He was showered with 700 awards and honors from important people, including 30 oscars, and the Presidential Medal of Freedom (in '64). Walt Disney's great animators never got the credit they deserved, but no one should forget that Walt was the driving force that inspired and guided his workers. In 1934, Walt Disney made a cartoon about a goddess of the Mystery Religions named Persephone. In the cartoon entitled *The Goddess of Spring,* the goddess Persephone is captured by Satan as his bride and sent to the underworld, with the agreement she could return to earth six months of each year. The Illuminati have rituals around Persephone. On Dec. 21, 1937, Disney premiered the first full-length color cartoon movie "Snow White and the Seven Dwarfs." This cartoon had taken $1.4 in depression-time money and three years to make. Over 750 artists worked on the film. Walt Disney had gotten the idea from a silent movie of Snow White which he saw as a boy in 1917. The movie has an important occult theme to it, and has been used for occult mind-control programming. When the 1940's got started, Disney was in financial difficulties. At this point, Nelson Rockefeller hired his cartoon capabilities to make cartoons for South America, with the idea that South Americans would remain loyal to the American capitalist hegemony, rather than shift to rising ideologies of fascism/nazism, if they saw Walt Disney cartoons. In Rio de Janeiro, Brazil on 8/24/42, Disney did its world premiere of Saludo Amigos, a 42 minute feature about Latin America. Goofy becomes a gaucho, a parrot teaches Donald Duck to dance the samba, as well as Disney art showing various landscapes of Brazil in the film. However, the film The Three Caballeros, if it was meant to encourage South American loyalty to American capitalism, completely failed. *The Three Caballeros* showed a sexually lecherous Donald Duck who in bad taste tries to make it with latin women. The mysticism was also seen as bogus. Although the latin Americans hated the film, the establishment media's *Look* magazine praised it. Another reason that Rockefeller sent Walt to South America was to get him out of the way so that the government could settle the strike by Disney workers. Nelson Rockefeller was the government's Coordinator of Inter-American Affairs, a good position considering how much of South America the Rockefeller's controlled. Rockefeller told Disney that Disney couldn't beat the strikers, but that while Walt was in South America, FDR would see to it that the strike got settled. When Disney returned he submitted to the powers that were, and accepted the unions and the mafia's control. Another change for Walt Disney was that in 1940, he and Roy turned Disney into a "public corporation" and initially sold *755,000* shares of common stock. The Illuminati Boston firm of Kidder, Peabody & Co. were the underwriters of the studio's public stock-offerings. By 1940, the Disney Studio at Burbank had become a miniature city with 1,000 men & women employees and 20 buildings on a 51

acre tract of land. After the U.S. joined W.W. II, Disney Productions were made a part of the American military establishment. The very next day after Pearl Harbor, the military moved onto the Disney Studio, which leads this author to suspect that Disney was already part of the power establishment prior to the war breaking out. Disney made military movies/cartoons that taught the different branches of the military many things. They made propaganda movies for the allies. One series of films was "Why we fight." Disney made movies for the IRS to get people to pay their taxes. Some of the Disney films were top, secret, and concerned secret military weapons or secret psychological tactics of the Americans. For instance, one military film was "Army Psycho Therapy" which taught army men how to instill fear, and about the basics of fear. Another army film was "Prostitution & the War". Another showed a carrier pigeon evading the Germans.

In 1940, Disney came out with 2 full length animated cartoons, *Pinocchio* and *Fantasia,* both of which were soon used for Illuminati mind-control programming. Fantasia contains Schubert's sacred Catholic music Ave Maria, which was used in a concluding segment side to side with the profane Night on Bald Mountain song, as well as six other classical pieces of orchestra music. As a feature cartoon it was a flop, but as a programming tool it was fantastic. Fantasia receives a comprehensive explanation of how it is used for mind-control programming at the end of this chapter. Because an explanation of the use of a Disney film for mind-control is complex, this explanation is placed at the end of the chapter so that it won't interrupt the flow of this chapter's information. The Pinocchio film has been redone and released 9 times over the years. Some of the next full length animated films to come out were: The Three Caballeros (1945) The Adventures of Ichabod & Mr. Toad ('49) Cinderella (1950) Treasure Island (1950) Alice In Wonderland (1951) The Story of Robin Hood & His Merrie Men (1952) Peter Pan (1953)

20,000 Leagues Under the Sea (1954) Sleeping Beauty (1959) Very soon after the production of all of these movies, the Illuminati and their intelligence agencies used them for Illuminati total mind-control programming. To see their misuse as programming scripts one has to understand how the fantasy worlds of a programmed multiple are created and how the movie scripts are adapted to be programming scripts. *Vol. 2* gave quite a few examples of how Alice In Wonderland and the Wizard of Oz scripts were used for programming scripts. When Disney had his animal-nature documentaries, he edited and used narration to give the animals human like characteristics--something he'd already been doing with animation. Disney played an important part in the Illuminati's plan to elevate animals and dehumanize humans. One of the biggest Illuminati kingpins, and leader (Grand Master) of the Prieure de Sion was frenchman Claude Debussy (bn.1862). Claude Debussy, a Merovingian, was Nautonnier (Navigator-helmsman) of the Prieure de Sion from 1885-1918. (See the document *Dossiers secrets,* planche no. 4, Ordre de Sion, written about in *Holy Blood, Holy Grail.)* In 1891, when some secret coded parchments (Merovingian documents) were found by a french clergyman Sauniere, he was directed by church officials to visit with Emile Hoffet, an occult acquaintance of Debussy. Debussy was close friends with many of the top french occultists of his time. He is known to have been a close friend to both the notorious satanists Jules Bois and MacGregor Mathers. Mathers started the Order of the Golden Dawn. Debussy was also a friend of the infamous Papus (aka Dr. Gerard Encausse) and W.B. Yeats. Papus was one of the men who during his lifetime was part of the interlocking occult directorate of occult groups. Claude Debussy put some works of the previous P.d.S. Grand Master Victor Hugo to music. Debussy and his other powerful occult friends were influential with Monsieur Philippe, whose Russian occult circle influenced the Russian Czars and Czarinas before Rasputin came around. Debussy travelled to Russia and Rome. Some of Debussy's works became operas. Interestingly, Walt Disney was extremely anxious to make a cartoon using Debussy's Clair de Lane. The work was done, but it was never shown to the public. Disney never found a place to use it. It was originally done with animation with flying cranes for the occult extravaganza *Fantasia,* but when the *Fantasia* ended up too long, Clair de Lane was cut and shelved. It was again planned for the film *Make Mine Music,* but then Blue Bayou was substituted in. Walt used the Le Sacre du Printemps (the Rite of Spring) music for *Fantasia.* This piece of music was written AS a pagan ritual where a virgin sacrifices herself by dancing to death. Disney's mobster Gunther Lessing had threatened Stravinsky if permission weren't given for Disney to use the piece of music, it would be used anyway. Dr. Julian Huxley got involved in the production of *Fantasia.* Aldous and Julian Huxley are well known by conspiracy researchers for their roles in the World Order. In the 1940's and 1950's, the Illuminati began using Disney's *Alice In Wonderland* and the *Wizard of Oz* films as programming bases for their total mind-controlled slaves. Alice in Wonderland had been done many years earlier by the Britisher William Cameron Menzies (who also did Freemason H.G. Wells' masonic forecast of the New World Order entitled "Things to Come" in 1936, and the film Invaders From Mars.). In 1944, Illuminati Kingpin William Randolph Hearst (with some minor help from others) funded the Motion Picture Alliance, and Walt Disney became a co-founder and its first Vice-President. In the early 1950's, Walt turned his attention from animated cartoons to other projects, such as True-Life-Adventures, television shows, and the creation of Disneyland. Seal Island was his first true life adventure which was released to the general public on May 4, 1949, and soon won Walt Disney an Oscar. Alfred and Elma Milotte had shot the film on some Alaskan Islands named Pribilof Islands. James Algar had put the movie together. In *1952,* Walter spelled his named backwards to create the name of another corporation „Retlaw". Roy and his family saw the move as an attempt to cut them out of the financial picture. In 1954, Walt Disney and ABC made a agreement. ABC would directly invest half a million US dollars as well as guarantee $4.5 million in loans for the construction of Disneyland. This made ABC 1/3 owner of Disneyland. In return, Walt Disney agreed to produce a regular television series for ABC. Remember too that ABC's president Leonard Goldenstein was a good friend of Ronald Reagan. On July 13, *1955,* Walt and Lillian were attempting to celebrate their 30th wedding anniversary at a park and restaurant. Walt got too drunk to speak into the microphone, so he blew noisemakers into it, while Lillian rushed to pull him out of view. In 1961, Disney bought out the ABC investment (also labelled Paramount) for $7.5 million with cash and notes, and to bring this all up to date, later on July 31, 1995, Disney merged with Capital Cities/ABC, with Disney in nominal control. Actually Capital Cities has long been a CIA front company, so the merger placed Disney squarely within the CIA ranks, although it had been in bed with them for the CIA's entire history. The Illuminati-controlled corporations of Coca-Cola and the drug firm Johnson and Johnson became sponsors for Disney's early TV shows. On *7/3/57,* the *Wall St. Journal* announced that Atlas Corp. got 26% interest in Walt Disney Productions. Walt Disney worked quietly with some consultants on the concepts behind Disneyland. His brother and nephew tried to prevent the project from happening. Later they requested that Walt sign over Disneyland, Inc. to Walt Disney Productions, which Walt did. Walt kept 17.25 % of Disneyland holdings and Walt Disney Productions got the rest. Walt Disney Productions then shared their portion with others. The man who helped Walt finance Disneyland was the executive vice-pres. of ABC Kintner. Walt Disney got the Illuminati's Stanford Research Institute to determine what would be the best site for Disneyland.

A retired Navy admiral Joe Fowler was in charge of constructing both Disneyland and Walt Disney World. How do admirals fit into the power structure? Admirals are briefed each day, and are given information concerning the secret power structure. Most men who are at that military level are Illuminati or at least well controlled by the system. Within the last few years there has been an intense effort to weed out any admirals who are not loyal to the Illuminati. Morgan-Evans, who lives in Malibu, and who may be of the famous Morgan clan, was the one who created the spectacular landscapes for Disneyland, Walt Disney World, and EPCOT in FL.

According to CIA informants opposed to the NWO, CIA contractors were brought in to build the underground tunnels under Disneyworld in 1977. These contractors were sworn to secrecy, but were only informed on a need to know basis why the CIA was involved with an amusement park. To work on the secret tunnel project took an "Above Top Secret" clearance. A major programming center was constructed under Lake Holden. (Many of the lakes in Florida are named Lake So-and-so, rather than So-and-so Lake.) The tunnel system was built for programming trauma-based total mind-controlled slaves. It was built of concrete with steel reinforcement. Lake Holden lies just to the northwest side of the Orlando International Airport and just south of Interstate 4. (It is close to Range 29E on quad maps.) It is only (as the crow flies) about 12 miles from Disneyworld. In spite of Draconian measures of secrecy, numerous lawsuits (Fed. & State) were filed over the years by victims trying to expose the Disneyworld programming tunnels, so that finally the programming center was dismantled, cleaned up and a „maintenance" tunnel level and a „casting" tunnel level were opened to the public. During its heyday, the programmers (military & intelligence men) had exotic offices underground with unusual programming equipment. It doesn't take any imagination to realize that if Disney carried mind-control programming above and below ground, that they would need tight security forces to protect their secrets. Indeed, such is the case. Disney amusement parks have been granted draconian powers wherever they have been built! The Disney parks have also employed armies of spies dressed like tourists to spy on Disney's employees! If amusement park workers did anything slightly out of place, they were (and still are) reported by the spies in the camp, and they often have lost their jobs. For instance, one ex-worker, who had 10 years with Disney, was caught discussing his divorce with another worker. Since divorce doesn't fit the wholesome image that Disney wants, when the spy dressed as a tourist reported his conversation, he lost his job. Many workers have tried to tell their personal horror stories of Disney's draconian rules and their draconian private police force, but most of the time Disney has had the power to suppress and intimidate away any bad publicity. An exception to that is the recent Nov. 4, '96 *Napa Valley Register* article on page 2D entitled, "Critics of Disneyland Say Security Abusive Inside Magic Kingdom." UCLA law professor David Sklansky commented about Disney's police, "One of the major problems we have is nobody really knows what they are doing- how often they stop, interrogate or search people. They are not subject to the same sort of regulatory controls." It's almost superfluous to tell readers that Disney's amusement park with it's theme areas such as Fantasyland, Tomorrowland and Adventureland were a great success. Everyone worldwide was curious to visit this entertainment mecca to participate in something that had a clean, wholesome image to it. The entire world system pulled together to insure that Disneyland got the image and publicity that the top 13 Illuminati families and the various syndicates wanted it to have. For 40 years they've done this. When something that everyone thinks is clean and wholesome is not attacked by the world system, that should raise eyebrows among thinking people. Home schooling, learning to read phonetically and other wholesome activities for children have been viciously attacked and ridiculed by the established media. Why has Disney gone untouched? Disney Studios for years strove to have a very clean image. Workers had dress codes, and any activity on the part of employees that wasn't morally conservative was grounds for instant dismissal. Of course, the exceptions were well covered up, such as an employee who used hypnosis to get quite a few of the females employees to undress until nude. John L. Hulteng, author of *The Messenger's Motives*

(Englewood Cliff, NJ: Prentice-Hall, 1976, p. 213) informs us, "As communication researchers have emphasized, the greatest impact the media have on the formation or change of public opinion is in terms of impressions built up over a long period." [bold added] The wholesomeness of Disney is an image that has been built over a long period of time. Disney's occult themes of world citizenship, witchcraft, humanism and idolatry have also been long running impressions that have been craftively perpetrated upon this nation, so long that they began prior to this author's --& probably the reader's--birth.

People don't associate movie's like *Consenting Adults* with Disney, or *The Corpse Had a Familiar Face* with Disney. In fact as previously mentioned, when Disney wanted to put out more "adult" films, they did a slight of hand and created the label Touchstone films so that people wouldn't associate movies like Splash (which showed what looked like bared breasts) with Disney Productions. Another label, Hollywood Pictures, was created by Disney to help distribute Touchstone films. At first the personnel of these companies was simply Disney's staff, but as time went on, they got their own production personnel.

On Oct. 27, 1954, Walt Disney's Wonderful World of Color debuted on television. The TV show celebrated Disney's movie triumphs. The words Wonderful World of Color are not ill chosen. According to an Illuminati mind-control programmer, when Disney worked on his cartoons, and amusement parks, colors --special colors and color combinations--were specifically chosen for mind-control programming purposes. Wonderful World of Color under various names such as Disneyland aired for 22 years over the television networks. In 1955, Walt Disney made his cartoon character Mickey Mouse real by creating a fan club--the Mickey Mouse Club, which aired five days a week usually just as children came home from school. Twenty-four children called mouseketeers would help Mickey, and they would dance and sing and do skits. The Mickey Mouse Club adored the unique, cute little beanie Mickey Mouse caps with their big ears mounted to each side of the beanie. In the 1950's, most kid viewers of the show wanted their own "Mouse Ears" and to become a Mouseketeer, especially children who were receiving Mickey Mouse scripts in their total mind-control programming. Disney used his Mouseketeers to play all the roles in an Oz movie *Rainbow Road to Oz,* which was never shown to the public. Adults today (both men & women) who received Mickey Mouse programming during the 50's through 70's can still be seen with Mickey Mouse clocks, watches, lampshades, knick-knacks, tee shirts, etc. Years later the kids who watched can still remember "Spin and Marty" and the Mickey Mouse theme song. The image that everything was perfect including Mickey was portrayed by the Club's T.V. program. Still somehow the American people began to use the word "Mickey Mouse" as a synonym for a silly, pretend way of doing things. It became common for people to say, "He mickey-moused it together." to mean he did a poor job putting it together. On Jan. 30, 1957, Walt Disney had a television show aired entitled "All About Magic" where a Magic Mirror explains about magic. The Magic Mirror also contains a "Bibbidi-bibbidi-Boo" sequence. In 1959, Disney bought 8 small submarines from Todd Shipyards for $2, 150.000.

When ABC wouldn't let Walt make a TV series out of a storyline where a magic ring changes a boy into a dog (a mind-control programming theme)--because ABC didn't think the public could swallow the story line--Walt quit ABC for NBC. Walt then made a scaled down version of this occult storyline entitled The Shaggy Dog. Early in the 1960's, Walt and his brother Roy went secretly looking for an area on the east coast to build another Disney Park. Walt the younger of the two, died in 1966, and Roy finished the project. Beginning in 1964, 30,000 acres were secretly purchased at $200 an acre in the Orlando, FL area just west of NASA's Cape Kennedy. Using phoney names and paying cash, Disney buyers bought the land and swore the sellers to secrecy. The Magic Kingdom has been multiplying. In 1971, Walt Disney World was opened to the public. Bob Hope and others participated in a Disney special on Oct. 29, 1971 "Grand opening of Walt Disney World". From the time of its opening until Oct. 12, 1995, Disney World calculated 1/2 billion people visited DisneyWorld. This amusement park is in Orlando, FL on over 27,400 acres and includes the EPCOT Center (now also called simply Epcot). The EPCOT center was another dream of Walt Disney's (albeit more than slightly modified from Walt's original EPCOT ideas.) EPCOT originally stood for Experimental

Prototype Community of Tomorrow. It was to be an extension of the massive mind-control being carried out at Disney World. The original EPCOT city designed by Walt was to carry on its commerce (traffic) via underground roads and tunnels like the Disney Theme parks. After Walt Disney died, his successors changed the proposed experimental city into another theme park simply called Epcot. It is not unusual to see crowds of over 48,000 people descend on Walt Disney World and the EPCOT center in a single day. Some visitors arrive via a monorail. Visitors can buy 5-Day World Hopper passes which allow them to bounce around with admission to all the sites for a seven day period. In other words, some families stay for a week at Disneyworld. Hardcore visitors can get Annual Passports which provide unlimited use of Walt Disneyworld for an entire year.

In reality, many visitors to Disneyworld begin the day enthusiastic and after a day of hot sun and waiting in long lines with large crowds for imitations of reality, the tourists are zombie-like and looking forward to getting back to their hotels. Many people have felt the rides were not nearly what they expected. Some of the rides are better than others, and some typically get comments like, "It was stupid." Some of the spooky events like Snow White's Adventures, or the oversized heads of the Disney characters walking around can leave the little preschool children terrified and dazed for the rest of the day. In contrast, older children, who normally rarely show patience at home may show how much they want to go on a particular Disney ride, by waiting an hour and a half in the hot sun for a ride. Alien Encounter is a Walt Disneyland feature that invites tourists in for a "demonstration of interplanetary teleportation." When the "demonstration" as planned "breaks down" an „alien" with asocial traits appears among the audience and terrorizes the audience. A cute creature is hideously fried, deformed, and then vomited into space screaming. Here are some comments from visitors to this Walt Disneyland attraction:

· "Alien Encounter ...is one of those rides I can say I've seen and that I have no intention of ever doing again. In fact, parents who take children under the age of six should be brought up on child abuse." Woman, from MI

· "Alien Encounter was the WORST experience for my 10-year-old (and almost every child in there). It starts out cute enough during the preshow, but the actual show is a disaster for children. My daughter screamed and cried in terror throughout it. I thought the Disney warnings were vague and inaccurate. When we left, there wasn't one child with dry eyes (even sturdy looking 12-year-old boys were crying.). I think an age requirement of 13 or 14 is more appropriate. I talked to a few adults and we even agreed that the special effects were extremely unpleasant even for us. This show is not a Disney family experience--its ATROCIOUS!!" A mother from Phillipsburg, NJ.

· "We did go to Alien Encounter...The preshow is deceiving. It kind of lulls you into thinking "this isn't so bad." When the main part came up, I admit the experience gave me the absolute heebie-jeebies. . .I am never doing that presentation again--it was way too intense for me, and I'm now 27 years of age!--from a family in Laurel, MD Michael Eisner, the President of Walt Disney Co., initially rejected Alien Encounter for not being scary enough when it was being considered as an addition to Disneyworld. One wonders what he would have liked! Snow White's Adventures, which was an attraction at Disneyland, was one of what the Disney people called "dark rides". After a while a sign appeared with a witch warning people that the attraction was scary. Later in 1983, they renamed it Snow White's Scary Adventures. It might be interesting to point out that when the original Snow White and Seven Dwaffs film came out, that England forbid the film to be seen by any child under 16 unless accompanied by an adult because of the scary content of the movie. How far we have come since then. Schools in the Florida and California areas also make field trips to the Magic Kingdom that are arranged with Disney. EPCOT receives tens of thousands of children this way during March, September and October. High schools use the Magic Kingdom for proms or senior nights, and some couples use the facilities of the Magic Kingdom for weddings. *Modem Bride* ranked Orlando as the number-one honeymoon destination in the world. Group discussions of people who took honeymoons to DisneyWorld have had a consensus that the hype is not as great as the reality. Some weddings are done with cartoon characters. Disney offers "fairy-tale" wedding packages. A great deal for two mind-controlled slaves. They can reinforce their programming while getting married. The Disney fairy-tale wedding typically has its ceremony on a pavilion on an island in the Seven Seas Lagoon with the Cinderella Castle as a backdrop. The fairy-tale wedding can then be followed with a Fantasy reception with a choice of themes such as Beauty & the Beast or Aladdin. The fantasy programming can continue as the bride is delivered to a "Cinderella's Ball" by an actual glass carriage drawn by six white Disney ponies. A costumed fairy-godmother & stepsisters are also at the ball. Desert is served in a white chocolate slipper.

One of the after-dark shows is IllumiNations which consists of music, fireworks, erupting fountains, special lighting, and laser technology done at the World Showcase Lagoon. EPCOT has a show Cranium Command at the Wonders of Life in the Future World section where guests sit in a theater that functions as a command control room for a boy's brain. In 1980, Disney came out with the box office flop *The Devil & Max Devlin.* In 1984, Roy E. Disney brought in Michael Milken, of junk bond fame to help Disney out financially. In 1985, Disney bought MGM's rights to Leo the Lion logo and began using the MGM Wizard of Oz material. Later a remake of *Alice In Wonderland* came out in the modern motif of *Honey I Shrank the Kids.* In the 1990's, Illuminati controlled companies continued their promotion of Disney. For instance, the Nestle family's Nestle company promotes Disney movies on their chocolate bars. The Nestle family is exposed in this author's booklet *Illuminati Control Over Foods and Grains,* p. 4 as one of the elite Black Nobility families. In 1996, Walt Disney World created an actual residential town named Celebration on its property. This self-contained community has 20,000 and a school, a theater, a fiber optic information network linking business, as well as other features.

SOME DISNEY people of interest.

Over the years, the close associates of the Disneys' is very revealing. The public can get a feel for Disney's attitude toward Illuminati bloodlines in the Disney movie *The Happiest Millionaire* which is about Anthony J. Drexel Biddle and Angie Duke. Readers of this author's previous writings will recognize the Biddle and Duke names. In fact, the movie was based loosely on a book written by Cordelia Drexel Biddle about the Biddles.

X Atensio. His first name was Xavier, but was nicknamed and called X. He worked on the haunted mansion of Disneyland with WED enterprises. He joined Disney in 1938, and was an assistant animator of Fantasia.

Warren Beatty. (b. 1937 in VA) This actor is from the Illuminati Beatty family and starred in Disney's Dick Tracy. The Dick Tracy film uses color in a special way, and this ties in with the color programming of the mind-control. Some total mind-controlled slaves have programming based on Disney's Dick Tracy movie for them to track down and kill "targets" (people). Warren's sister is the famous (or infamous) Shirley Maclaine. Shirley "MacClaine" is not what she appears. Her father was a professor who was a CIA asset. She was used by the CIA as a sex slave. She became popular with the studios because she went to bed with the correct people. Her talents were used to get her as an intelligence slave into places that an obvious intelligence agent couldn't go. She was married to a man in the NSA for nearly 20 years. Her adopted name Maclaine (reportedly her mother's maiden name) is a pun on McLain,, VA where the CIA programmed her. She was used by the CIA in an operation in Australia, where the CIA used her as a sex slave to compromise Andrew Peacock, an Australian MP,, so that they could establish the Nugen-Hand bank for their dirty money laundering etc. She is friends with satanist Stephen Nance who has provided her with some of her teachings. Lowell McGovern writes her material. The CIA has programmed many of their New Age slaves to adore Shirley MacLaine. An example of this is Christa Tilton, one of their mind-controlled slaves, who revealed in an interview how she considered herself a born-again Christian who had spent most of her life in Oklahoma, but had mysteriously been drawn to Shirley MacLaine. During her life she has gotten repeated "psychic urgings"--that is strong urges to do things and go places, which she doesn't understand where these urgings came from. After hypnosis, Christa drew pictures of the doctor who programmed her. Christa has had a federal agent monitor her constantly. Her husband has seen this agent, who has shown up on her door step and made calls to her. She names the agent John Wallis (most likely a cover name). This agent has a complete knowledge of her life, and government agents have taken photos of her during her supposedly "alien abduction" experiences. Christa is just one of hundreds of victims who have been programmed to adore Shirley MacLaine. (Christa is mentioned here because she is one case that this author is familiar with.) Warren Beatty, who peppers his speech with four-letter words was a student at the Stella Adler Theater Studio in NYC.

Black, Shirley Temple. Shirley Temple Black sat on the Disney board of directors *(74-75)*. Her films were used for some of the early 40's and *'50's* programming and teaching slaves body movements/dance. She married someone in an elite Network family from San Francisco named Charles A. Black. Charles A. Black was a Lt. Col. in the Pentagon who lived at Bethesda, MD. Was Shirley an early example of brain-stem scarring to get geniuses? Shirley's brother appears to have developed "Multiple Sclerosis" from brain stem-scarring. It was Shirley Temple who co-founded the International Federation of Multiple Sclerosis Societies, and was a member of its exec. committee. Shirley represented the U.S. at the UN General Assembly in 1969, belongs to the Sierra Club, and has been decorated with the Cross of Malta. Shirley has shown clues that she may be an Illuminati mind-controlled child protege.

Stephen Bollenbach. Bollenbach was part of Walt Disney management, and was a key figure who helped engineer Disney's $19 billion buyout of the CIA's Capital Cities/ABC, as well as sell the idea to Eisner. He is the CEO of the Network's Hilton Hotels Corp. He recently has been involved with trying to buy ITT, in order to put together the world's largest hotel-casino combination. Bollenbach has an extensive background with the gaming-gambling industry. When the Justice Dept. began looking into the merger of Disney with Cap. Cities/ABC, Bollenbach resigned his Disney position. Some people feel his resignation was needed for Disney to get the Justice Dept. to approve the merger, because his past was vulnerable to be exposed.

Warren Buffett. A major stockholder in Walt Disney. He also owns 40% of Berkshire Hathaway Inc. which also owns lots of shares of Disney stock. According to S.F. Examiner, Buffett himself owns 24 million shares of Disney. Warren Buffett is part of the Ak-Sar-Ben fraternity and Monarch slave abusers who were exposed in the Nebraska Saving & Loan scandal. He is perhaps the second richest man in the nation, and too powerful for anyone to touch. In the kingpin vs. kingpin battles, some people close to the inside see Buffett as a good guy. Readers need to study the Lincoln Savings & Loan scandal and the scandals connection to programmed child slaves at Boy's Town to get more information on this Disney stockholder. Robert G. Hagstrom, Jr., who is the portfolio manager of the mutual fund Focus Trust, which has shares in Walt Disney, wrote the book *The Warren Buffett Way*. Hagstrom has a chapter on Disney in his *The Warren Buffett Way*. He quotes Buffett as extremely enthusiastic about Disney's merger with Capital Cities/ABC. Because of his enthusiasm Buffett says, „The odds are extremely high that we will have a very large amount of Disney stock."

Salvador Dali--This strange surrealist spanish artist was a friend of Walt Disney. After Salvador was kicked out of Spain for Franco's belief that he was a communist, he came to America, and worked with Disney Studios in 1946. Salvador, an eccentric who had no particular work habits, described himself, "The only difference between me and a madman is that I'm not a madman."

The Tommy Dorsey Band--This band has had a number of men in it who are Mind-control slave abusers associated with the Network. Frank Sinatra, a sexual slave user, got his big break with this band. This band performed at Disneyland in 1984 at the Plaza Gardens. Tommy Dorsey was part of the Network's in-crowd. When he was on a USO Tour with Bob Hope, he stabbed actor Joe Hall and threw him out of a window. Joe had to have 32 stitches. But Joe didn't get justice, the judge dismissed his case against Tommy.

Michael Dammann Eisner, Chairman at Disney is a CIA asset and connected to the mob. Some insiders believe he is connected to elements of the CIA & mob that are anti-NWO. Even so, these anti-NWO factions also employ mind-control. Eisner ignored a threat by Red China to boycott Disney products if he made a movie about the nation Tibet that China controls with draconian force. The U.N., the Commerce Dept. and the State Dept. all tried unsuccessfully to get him to back down on the film. A paper trail connecting Michael Eisner and Walt Disney Co. to mind control is their support of the Boys & Girls Club of Napa Valley, which is used for a supply of children for pedophilia and mind-control. The Boy's & Girls Club is used to supply caddies for the Silverado Country Club, where these children are also used as mind-controlled slaves for the sexual perversions of the elite. Notice that Napa's Silverado Country Club invites in celebrities (such as CIA asset Pat Boone, Joe DiMaggio ex-husband of sex slave Marilyn Monroe, Engelbert Humberdinck a slave handler, Digger Phelps Notre Dame's coach who uses slaves, and Jack Vale nti CEO of Motion Picture Assoc. & Bohemian Grover) for a golf tournament which is billed as a „benefit for the Boys & Girls Club". The benefit for child slaves is they get to caddie & sexually service elite perverts. Michael (bn. March 7, '42 in NY) came from old American money of a family that has been rich merchants and lawyers. Michael grew up in luxurious Park Ave. as well as his family's "country place" in Bedford Hills near Mt. Kisco, NY. He went to an elite private school Allen-Stevenson, which is famous for its children's orchestra. At the age of 14, he then went to Lawrenceville School, which is a prep-school for Princeton, whose tuition in *'56* was $3,000. Eisner's class incl. NY's governor's son, and other sons of powerful men, such as the son of Saudi Prince Turqi al-Faisal. The school is a prep school for the establishment's entertainment industry. Students are only allowed to see their parents on major holidays. Eisner was in the Periweg Club, the school's drama society. His poor scholastic performance meant that he had to go to a small liberal arts college, rather than Princeton or Harvard such as was family tradition. For instance, his grandfather had attended Phillips Exerter Academy and Harvard. His grandfather has serve in many govt. commissions and belonged to the Harvard Club, the American Club in London as well as some yacht clubs. Between his junior & senior year in high school, Eisner was a page at NBC's HQ in the Rockefeller Center. In 1966, he landed a job in the programming department of ABC. He had an influential position. Eisner had one good break for deciding TV programming. He was 21 when the target audience was 21 years old, and when he was *35,* the target age of the film industry was then *35*.

He has been described as having "supernatural enthusiasm" coupled to a lifetime quest for untested ideas.

Rich H. Frank, was Executive Vice-President with Walt Disney until his sudden resignation about a year before this was written. He worked side by side with Katzenberg and left after Katzenberg resigned in a dispute with Disney's chairman Eisner. Rich Frank was President of Walt Disney's TV-Media Division. He acquired the estate of VanHoffenwiggen, when VanHoffenwiggen fled the country and vanished when Lendvest began to be exposed. VanHoffenwiggen was a major figure involved with Lendvest Mortgage Inc., a drug-laundering operation and drug smuggling operation operating out of Napa Valley. It was also the fastest growing real estate mortgage company in northern California until its drug smuggling began to be exposed. Lendvest did some tricks ala Nugen Hand Bank. Millions of dollars of investors and creditors have disappeared leaving lots of hurting people, and the mortgage company filed for protection from creditors in U.S. Bankruptcy court, and is still in operation. International financier Edmond Safra's private bank, the Republic National Bank of NY, launders money from the Medellin drug cartel. Safra's bank sent Lendvest lots of crisp new $100 bills. The Safras are tied in with the Rothschilds. (The Safras are reportedly recent property owners in St. Helena near Napa (through Good Wine Co. which is the Spring Mountain Wineries), near where Lendvest was HQed. Edmond's nephew, Jacob Safra, has a partnership in Napa Valley's Good Wine Co. The Rothschild's Citicorp gave Republic National Bank the transaction ability to issue international (world) bearer bonds ("bank notes") The Luxembourg/Belgium branch of Bank Nacional de Paris issued a bearer bond that was connected the Lendvest drug running operation. In Britain, a U.S. citizen Mike Spire ran the British operation of Lendvest and InVest. LandVest's parent was InVest which has operated in the U.K., Switz., Saudi Arabia & Paraguay. Long story made short, Lendvest has been an international CIA-Mafia drug running operation, with Illuminati overtones and connections to it. With all this in mind, it is strange, that Walt Disney's President of its TV-Media Division, Rich Frank, bought the palatial mansion of John 0. VanHoffenwiggen after VanHoffenwiggen disappeared from the country when indictments and arrests began to be made of people connected to Lendvest. According to insiders, Rich Frank is also one of a number of Napa Valley people involved in illegal labelling of wines. Rich Frank was a key figure in Disney's programming venture with three regional Bell Telephone companies (Ameritech, Bell South, & SBC Commun.) coming together. Bell Telephone wanted to get into cable TV. Michael Ovitz formed a rival group of 3 other Bell Telephone co.s. Calvin Robinson, who tied in with Land Vest, worked with Boyce, who in turn worked for TRW Co., in Redondo Beach, CA. Boyce was sentenced to 40 years for selling US surveillance secrets to the soviets.

Daniel Hillis, the co-founder of a supercomputer producer Thinking Machines from MIT, is in charge of the Walt Disney Imagineering unit. Hillis helped Disney develop a virtual-reality ride at Disneyland based on the Aladdin cartoon.

Jeffrey Katzenberg, has been the chairman of Disney's movie studio, is an aggressive worker, a model Type A person. „Ask 50 people to describe Jeffrey Katzenberg, and most will say tenacious. 'If Jeffrey were any more aggressive, he'd be in jail." says the producer Dan Melnick." (Harmetz, Aljean, "Who Makes Disney Run?", *NY Times.* Feb. 7, '88, p. 29.) Katzenberg is the father of twins, which people joke was typical of his efficiency. Katzenberg supervised the production of Star Trek. Most of his movies have been box office successes. In the '70's, Katzenberg worked for NY Mayor John Lindsay.

Sanford Martin Litvack. Sanford is the Executive Vice Pres. of Disney and in charge of "Human Resources" for the corporation. He is a jewish lawyer who was educated at the Jesuits' Georgetown Univer. He is on the bd of dir, of Bet Tzedek.

Vincent Price. Price has been one of the major influential occultists who has provided the world with many occult horror books and scripts. He worked for Disney some, and was the voice for Ratigan in *The Great Mouse Detective.* Vincent Price's good friend John Hay Whitney is an Illuminati kingpin and vice-pres. of the Pilgrim Society and was raised into the Illuminati through the Yale Scroll & Key fraternity. His friend Whitney likes horror movies.

The Osmond Brothers. Merrill Osmond's boys were "discovered" at Disneyland when they were visiting the site in 1962. The Disney people on Main St. just "happened" to recognize the talent of the five boys and signed them up soon for their first professional singing contract. The Osmond Boys did some television appearances for Disneyland such as Meet Me at Disneyland, and Disneyland after Dark. (Considering the mind-control programming done to these Osmund children, these TV shows were a cruel joke.) Of the singing Osmond kids, Donny is the next to the youngest, and his sister Marie is the youngest. Both Donny and his sister Marie are programmed multiples who are slaves, who have been subjected to a lot of abuse. They have good front alters. Their father has made millions from drugs, porn and white slavery and is part of the Mormon Illuminati front. The Mormon front of the Illuminati has gotten a lot of good publicity off of the Osmonds. They sang for Andy Williams whose french wife was once arraigned on murder charges. Later they sang for the satanic Network's Lawrence Welk show. Swedish accented Lawrence Welk has been part of the Network. Marie Osmond has grown up, and she has adopted 3 of her 5 children in spite of her busy singing schedule which includes approx. 200 singing shows a year at places like Mafia controlled Atlantic City. In terms of occult families, adopted children are often programmed children, so this is a clue that her children have been programmed too.

Michael Ovitz. Ovitz was the no. 2 man at Walt Disney for a while until near the end of '96. Michael Ovitz was a high school classmate in VanNuys, CA with Michael Milken (later the junk-bond wizard), & there are many of the same people connected to both men. When Michael Ovitz's National Mercantile Bancorp (a saving & loan) began getting into the quicksand of several lawsuits & scandals, attorney Robert Strauss represented him. Illuminati member Robert Strauss has been a lawyer connected with drug running & the mafia. He was also an FBI agent from '41 to *'45* with

Hoover. He is admitted to the Wash. D.C. bar. Pres. Bush appointed him U.S. Ambassador to Russia. He has been on the board of dir, of the Illuminati's PepsiCo, Archer-Daniels-Midland (ADM), and General Instruments (which have been exposed in other writings by this author.) He was also a board member of the Illuminati-mafia run MCA. Strauss is seen in Wash. D.C. as a behind the scenes power broker. Strauss represented Michael Milken associate Ronald 0. Perelman, Chrmn. of Revlon, who made a $600 mil. killing off of the 1st Gibraltar S&L. Strauss represented MCA, which the Bronfmans took over in *1995.* The book Knoedelsder, William. *Stiffed-The True Story of MCA, The Music Business, and the Mafia.* NY: HarperCollins Pub., 1993, does an good job of connecting MCA to the mob, the Network, and Iran Contra. See especially page 442. *Time* magazine 2/24/97 carried a page long story about Michael Ovitz being out of a job. In the article, they reported that he was spending time on his new yacht The Illusion, visiting Joe Silver's estate in So. Carolina, visiting his property in Aspen, CO, and eating lunch with investment adviser Richard Salomon of Spears, Benzak, Salomon & Farrell. Gordon Crawford of the Capital Group is quoted in the article praising Ovitz, and saying he would invest in an Ovitz venture. Ovitz is believed to be mafia by people in a place to know. He has also been known to threaten people using mafia terms, for instance, *Vanity Fair* (12/'96, p. 272) reports Ovitz threatening Bernie Brillstein, a producer, with his "foot solders". *The San Francisco Chronicle* (Fri., 1/26/'96, p. D20) quotes the latest issue of *Columbia Journalism Review* about an incident where a reporter Anita Busch who was investigating Ovitz got violently sick from the MSG in her food as she interviewed him. To top off it all off, Ovitz followed up her story which questioned his actions, by sending her a gift wrapped package of MSG with a one-word note: "Enjoy.". Michael Ovitz has had the clout to deal with Illuminati kingpin Edgar Bronfman head to head. He requested & got Bronfman to keep his dad employed, which was dutifully done. Edgar Bronfman Jr. had seriously considered having Ovitz head Seagram's MCA/Universal conglomerate.

Frank G. Wells. Frank was the President & the Chief Operating Officer of The Walt Disney Co. Wells was also on Disney's board of directors. He was a Rhodes Scholar, and a lawyer in *1955.* Those who have read previous books (such as *Vol. 1)* by this author know how the Rhodes Scholars fit into things & are part of the Illuminati. He worked closely with Eisner & Katzenberg. Frank died in a helicopter crash in the spring of 1994 while heli-skiing in Nevada. His surviving sister is Molly Wells Chappellet who runs around in Illuminati circles. Molly Wells Chappellet has been featured several times in Betty Knight Scripp's magazine *Appellation.* Betty Knight Scripp was married to a Bohemian Grove member. Betty has been good friends with: the late Pamela Harriman (who was a recent U.S. ambassador to France & connected to the Rothschilds), as well as good friends with Her Imperial Highness the Grand Duchess of Vladmir of Russia, who owns the Chateau Margaux in Bordeaux. Betty Scripps personally monitors with care what is put into her incredible magazine *Appellation.* She has a column "Who's Who in the Wine Country" where the Chappellets have appeared in print numerous times.

Nearly all of Disney's 1920 movies had a black cat in them. Many had occult slants to the scripts. The occult slant never departed from Disney themes.

Some of DISNEY'S blatantly OCCULT MOVIES.

Aladdin. A wisecracking allpowerful genie is shown.

Bednobs & Broomsticks. (1971) A witch finds a magic formula from a lion king. The magic formula raises a ghostly army of armor in a museum which stops a band of German commandos.

Beyond Witch Mountain. (1982) A pair of twins leave Witch's Mountain and have to use their special occult powers to outwit a character named Deranian.

Black Cauldron, The. (1985), A Horned King uses his magic to fight a clairvoyant pig and the pig's keeper. This animation cost *$25* million, but was a box office failure.

Bride of Boogedy. (1987) An evil spirit visits the Davis family and puts the father under a spell. Directed by Oz Scott.

Child of Glass. (1978) A glass doll must be found to set a ghost free in a haunted house.

Gnome-Mobi1e, The (1967). A multimillionaire and his grandchildren encounter gnomes. In the end the multimillionaire deeds the forest to the gnomes for eternity.

Halloween Hall of Fame (1977). Jack-o-lanterns come to life.

Halloween Treat (1982). Cartoons about Halloween. This was followed the next year with a film Haunted Halloween which talked about the origins of Halloween.

Misadventures of Merlin Jones. (1964) A genius tries to help other students. He tries to also use hypnotism & ESP which backfire on him.

Richest Cat in the World. (1986) A wealthy man leaves his fortune to his cat, who the relatives later discover can talk.

H. DISNEY & its MOB connections

When this author spoke to the co-author’s deeper Illuminati alters about Disney, their reaction was that Disney had been described to them when they were in the Illuminati as "a syndicate within a syndicate." They said that while in the Illuminati, they were aware that Disneyland had their own government, their own rules and their own police force. They were a crime syndicate within a syndicate. What these Illuminati alters casually mentioned, was verified by this author the hard way through research. One Disneyland Security Supervisor said, "There is no Constitution at Disneyland. We have our own laws." Once, when Walt Disney got miffed at a Hollywood policeman, Walt said, "I’ll have your badge." If Disney guards decide to, they will get very rough physically with people, and assault them in any fashion they see fit. The people they detain are often thrown into tiny cells at Disneyland where they are kept without benefit of a phone call, without benefit of a toilet or water. The judicial system turns a blind eye to whatever Disney police do. Many people pay Disney to get their children out of a Disney cell, and never get due process of any law. This type of treatment has gone on for decades, and is almost a daily occurrence at Disneyland. The Anaheim Police force is very chummy with the Disney private police force. Also at one point, the Burbank Chief of Police was the brother-in-law to Disney’s Chief of Security. Recently, when a couple filed a wrongful death suit against the Magic Kingdom of Disney in Florida, the state of Florida surprisingly has appeared to have backed off from their traditional behavior of protecting Disney’s sovereignty. An article on the suit said, ""there is evidence of some nervousness with Disney’s relative autonomy."" *(San Francisco Chronicle,* article "Mickey’s Dark Side" Oct. 1, ‘96, p. C6) An attorney in the case said, "Disney World’s security people aren’t just cops, they are bad ones. I don’t think there is any corporation that has ever had the perceived power that Disney has." Richard Foglesong, a professor of politics at Rollins College in Winter Park stated, "Because Disney World controls so much of its corporate and municipal universe, it can’t help but act in a heavy-handed manner in order to ferociously protect its self-interest. They have immunity from state and local land use law. They can build a nuclear plant, distribute alcohol. They have powers local communities don’t have. Do they abuse it? In my opinion, yes." In line with Disney’s previous dictatorial policies on their properties, Disney’s new city called Celebration will not have any elected government. Since the city is unincorporated (a neat Disney trick) the mayor is appointed by Disney. Several Disney "quasi-government’" bodies control citizens of the city. For instance, the Celebration Residential Owners Association, which participates in binding all residents to a Declaration of Covenants, a legal binder of rules that residents must live by. Of course the Declaration of Covenants was written by Disney. These rules include such nit picky things as, no more than two people can sleep in the same bedroom, no pickup trucks can be parked in front of homes, and if Disney officials don’t like your cat or dog they can forcibly remove the animal from your home. Disney Corp. has perpetrated numerous deceptions on the residents, incl. shoddy work on their homes, and operating their ""public"" school with Disney cronies. Still, the residents that have moved into Celebration are glowing with praise for the town in spite of the fact that the city is totally run by Big Brother Disney Corp. Of course those who don’t love it, soon leave. So much for the American tradition of self-government.

Some MOB HISTORY.

Traditionally, the mob crime bosses have had a yearly summit. In 1928, they had their yearly conclave at Cleveland. In 1929, they had their secret yearly conclave at Atlantic City. In 1931, they held their secret annual conclave at Wappingers Falls, NY. At the Wappingers Falls meeting, attended by about 300 overlords and soldiers, the heads of the family clans discussed their crime family agendas. They decided where the first national Mafia convention was to be held. Once the Mafia was able to hold their yearly private national meetings, they were able to coordinate their activities, as well as decide such things as:

a. the direction of national & internal operations, and long range plans

b. the promotion of new bosses

c. decisions on turf & rank, commodities & cash

d. hashing out alliances or disputes with the Mishpucka, Triads, FBI, Illuminati, etc. and working with others in a concerted manner. The mafia clans would then leave the annual summit meetings and follow through in their area of operations, until they would meet the next year, review their successes & failures, get new assignments, and decide upon new short & long term goals. In 1927, the Mishpucka worked with Mafia to highjack a bootleg shipment of whiskey travelling from Ireland to Boston for the Kennedy Illuminati family. Most of Kennedy’s guards were killed in the shootout, and J.P. Kennedy had the widows of the guards besieging him for financial assistance. Billy Graham’s good friend Mafia Chief Joseph Bonanno was one of the chiefs who attended the yearly conclaves. He also met with J.F. Kennedy in the Winter of 1959. John Kennedy was known to have said that mobster Sam Giancana worked for his Kennedy family. The mob/Illuminati alliances and infighting are too complex to deal with in this book, but both groups had to put plans into action to deal with the repeal of Prohibition, which would end their lucrative bootlegging. The short term plan for the Mafia was to control the film industry in Hollywood, and to penetrate the unions better. The long term plans called for sending their next few generations of children off to the top schools and getting them into legitimate respectable corporate positions. By learning the ins and outs of honest, legal operations, they could then mix in the illegal operations with their legal ones & look legal. They planned to extend their power base into politics, the Harvard-Stanford business schools, as well as the finest corporate board rooms. They intended (and have succeeded) in getting some of their offspring to produce/direct T.V./films. They would have an increasing presence within the Bohemian Grove membership, as well as some of the other great social & business clubs. Their plan to take over the film industry hinged on their union control over unions and theaters. The Chicago mob controlled the International Alliance of Theatrical Stage Employees Union. The mob controlled the projectionist’s union, and if the film makers had the theaters where their movies were shown shut down, what good would it be to make movies? The film makers and the mafia both had power & money. Rather than fight a protracted war, they made a deal. The major studios would give about *$50,000* a year to the mafia, and the small ones *$25,000,* to be allowed to function. Other agreements were also reached. Mob henchmen Willie Bioff and George E. Browne were mob lieutenants who orchestrated the mob’s "Hollywood takeover".

Time Magazine, Nov. 1, 1943, wrote, "In the witness chair in Manhattan’s Federal Court sat bland, wily Willie Bioft (pronounced Buy-off), blackmailer, panderer, labor leader, and now star witness against eight ex-pals, who are charged with shaking down $1 million from the movie industry...Question: Was it true that Bioft once had a five-year plan for taking over 20% of Hollywood’s profits-and eventually 50% interest In the studios themselves? Bioff (wistfully): "If we’d lasted that long, we would have. Question: "Did you ever say you were boss of Hollywood and could make producers do whatever you wanted?" Bioff: "Yes-and I could make them dance to my tune." Although Bioff rolled over on his pals and ended up getting car bombed, that didn't stop the mob/Mishpucka infiltration & control of Hollywood. (Bioff had tried to save his public image by helping Walt Disney settle his labor dispute with the mob-led unions, but Walt wisely relected his offer of help, and made sure he didn't offend the Chicago mob leaders who were disgruntled with Bioff.) Hundreds of millions of dollars were poured by the Mafia & Mishpucka into real estate in southern California, by using legitimate local businessmen to launder the money. Hollywood was declared a "free zone" where all the Mafia/Mishpucka families could operate without a fear of a turf war. Let us backtrack slightly to 1930. Columbia distributed Disney cartoons from 1930 until 1932, when Disney switched to United Artists, because Columbia wasn't bothering to pay Disney the money they owed. In 1930, Cohn, Pres. of Columbia Pictures, got Disney off the financial hook with Powers by intimidating Powers with some street toughs carrying a legal suit. If Disney wasn't indebted to the mafia before, he was at that point. Biographers have been puzzled why Disney went into such a traumatic depression after Henry Cohn "helped" him. Tough guy Henry Cohn made sure Walt knew who was boss. His attitude was that Walt should be happy to be paid at all by him for the cartoons Walt supplied Columbia. After this, Walt would lock himself in his room and weep uncontrollably for hours. He was impossible for anyone to get along with. He was unable to focus on anything, and would stare for long periods out the window. Biographers blame Walt's behavior on the fact that his wife was pregnant. They also blame it on his friend Iwerks defection to another company. Frankly, Walt had treated Iwerk like a dog, and deep down must have known why Iwerk left such an abusive relationship. To claim that he wept for hours day after day because he realized he might become a father is too much to swallow. When Walt was asked years later about why he was so depressed he said it was the stress of the financial situation. Walt said, „I had a nervous breakdown. ..Costs were going up; each new picture we finished cost more to make than we had figured it would earn when we first began to plan it...I cracked up." This author submits to the reader that part of his breakdown may have indeed been the financial stress from having come under the heel of the mafia. They had all the means to make or break him, and he had no choice but to surrender to their overwhelming power to blackmail & destroy him OR to get out of the business. What this did was place Walt in a position where his two strongest traits had to clash--his overwhelming obsession to be his own boss, and his creative obsession to create animation which was wrapped up with his ego & his deep phobias and psychological needs. His mind couldn't give up its independence nor its creativity without great mental anguish, and therefore Walt was very saddened, knowing that he would have to admit defeat, and buckle under the heels of the big boys. Just when he needed emotional support his wife was going to have a child, and his best animator left. Walt had abandoned Iwerks years before, and Walt's wife had wanted a child for some time. Iwerk's departure and his arriving child do not in themselves account for the long intense nervous breakdown that Walt experienced. Biographers point out that Walt was very reluctant to have children, and that he was impotent with women including his wife much of the time. His impotency to carry out normal sex may help explain his secret sexual habits. Walt's masonic brother Carl Laemmle offered Walt a good deal to help him recover from Henry Cohn's abusive control of Walt, but Carl wanted the copyright to Mickey Mouse in return for the help, and Walt wouldn't part with Mickey Mouse. Instead, Walt signed a contract offered by Joseph Schenck of UA (United Artists), who was one of the Mafia's illegal drug kingpins. In *1935,* the mob's illegal drug dealer Joseph Schenck went on to found 20th Century, Inc. which later merged with Fox in '38 to form Twentieth Century-Fox, whose board of directors would include two Illuminati kingpins William Randolph Hearst and Malcolm MacIntyre. Joseph Schenck's brother Nicholas Schenck and Marcus Loew merged Metro Pictures and Goldwyn Pictures and named Louis B. Mayer as its head. Meanwhile over the years, MCA, headed up by Illuminati Kingpin Lew Wasserman gained a monopoly over the American film industry with the secret backroom deals that they made with Ronald Reagan's Screen Actor's Guild and Petrillo's American Fed, of Musicians. (By the way, Lew Wasserman would try to revive Reagan's acting career in the early '60's. Frank Sinatra and Walt Disney were both friends of Ronald Reagan, and all three believed in mind-control.) Ronald Reagan and Petrillo in turn worked with the Mafia's NCS Council of 9 (which incl. Anthony Accardo and Sam Giancana), which at one point divided the U.S. into 24 mob territories. After J. Schenck went to jail (very briefly), he was replaced as Pres. of 20th-Cent. Fox by Spyros Skouras. Before his arrest, while Schenck was still in charge of 20th-Cent. Fox, he made numerous offers to Disney for Disney to incorporate his studio as a subdivision of 20th-Cent. Fox. Disney worked for a few years with them distributing his films, but he would not let go of trying to be independent. The FBI and American Intelligence turned to the mob to help them as the U.S. entered WW II. Perhaps Walt's mob connection added impetus for his recruitment. Walt went to a number of American Nazi meetings prior to Pearl Harbor. This author believes from knowing Walt's personality that Walt may have been on assignment, rather than a Nazi sympathizer. Still, why does one of Disney's pre-Pearl harbor cartoons display a swastika? Disney's Epcot Resorts is close to the mob's Atlantic City Board Walk with its nightclubs. The resort was designed by Robert A.M. Stern. (This author doesn't know about Robert Stern, but there are programmed multiples and Illuminati members within the Stern family.) At Walt Disney World, the nightclub there was named "Cage", and then later '8 TRAX". Comedy Warehouse, which is a nightclub at Pleasure Island in Walt Disney World opened on May 1, 1989 and has used slave comedians as well having people who are mind-control abusers. On Feb. 11, 1987, Walt Disney Co. was reincorporated in Delaware. Delaware is the only state that allows total corporate secrecy. No one can find out who really is running a Delaware corporation, and many other secrets can be hidden under Delaware's corporation laws. Capital Group has considerable shares in Disney, as well as 29% of the shares of the Robert Mondavi winery at 7801 St. Helena Hwy, Oakville, CA. Wellington Group and Mellon bank also have shares. Behind Capital Group are mob controlled groups like Debartolo Reality Corp. and La Quinta Inns (a Bass bro. operation.) Sam Bronfman operates Sterling & Monterey Vineyards. There are countless people walking around that have felt the ruthless, impersonal, controlling, money-grabbing side of the Disney Corp. Also, there are a number of journalists who have experienced first hand the secrecy and paranoia that the Disney corporation has. Most journalists are not used to the secrecy that pervades Disney. Because Disney has shaped the myths of America for several generations, the public takes more concern over who is running Disney, than they would other institutions. Because most of America believe in the image that the Illuminati have built for Disney, they are rooting for it to succeed.

How the Disney Executives have figured out how to steal land all across the U.S.

Over the years Walt Disney has developed several very sneaky reliable techniques to acquire land. They acquire land through their executives and large stockholders and family members of the execs and stockholders. After all the deals are made in an area, and when everything is in place over a period of time, these people then turn their land over to Disney. Disney works with government officials and local bankers to line up special deals so they can succeed in their plans. After everything is lined up, the corporation announces their plans and goes forward. This methodology has been used repeatedly, for instance the American History Theme Park in the Manassas Civil War battlefield area of Virginia for which Disney has acquired 1,800 acres and has access to at least 1,200 more. In Nov. '94, after a new Virginia governor was elected, the Virginia "Disney's America"project was announced, and Virginia voted almost instantly for the money for transportation and infrastructure improvements to the area so that Disney's theme park would be viable. Disney set up 3 banks in Napa, CA. Their banks made loans to old families in the valley. The trusts and the wills for these families were made up by Stanford Univ. grads. These people set on the boards of these banks or connect with the boards of these banks. They charge large fees, and know every trick in the book to rob people of their estates and their living trusts. The Stanford grads, who connect in with intelligence agencies & the mob use certain code words when they set up their businesses, such as RESOURCE, EVERGREEN and PACIFIC. There are a number of scared landholders who are being intimidated to sell their land in the Napa Valley region.

DISNEY and the GOVERNMENT

Just prior to W.W. II, the FBI recruited Walt Disney. His job was to spy on Hollywood or anything else that looked suspicious. Documents obtained from the Freedom of Information Act, in spite of heavy censoring, clearly show that Walt Disney became a paid Special Correspondent asset of the FBI. He reported to FBI agent E.E. Conroy. In 1954, Walt was promoted to Special Agent in Charge (SAC) which means others reported to him. After "leaving" the CIA, ex-DCI (ex-head) of the CIA William Hedgcock Webster became a lawyer for the Wash. D.C. based firm of Milbank, Tweed, Hadley and McCloy. In 1993, when news broke about Walt Disney's FBI membership, ex-CIA head Webster worked with the Disney family to cover up to the public that Walt Disney was an FBI agent. Webster went on TV and had interviews to spread the fabrication that Walt was not connected to the FBI. Why? One of the countless items that Disney was involved in was the investigation into the disappearance/rape of a six-year old child Rose Marie Riddle on 1/12/61. According to documents gotten from the Freedom of Information Act, W.G. Simon was the FBI agent who met with SAC Walt Disney in L.A. about the case. W.G. Simon has been one of those people who has been publicly lying by claiming that Walt Disney never was an FBI agent. The paper trail proves otherwise. Why is it so important to the FBI and CIA to cover up that Walt was an FBI agent? Walt also worked for the CIA, even though documentation of that is not available. This author theorizes that the reason the FBI and CIA are so touchy about letting people know that Walt worked for the government is that the Network knows how the FBI and CIA worked together to procure children for mind-control programming purposes. Because Disney and Disneyland played such as enormous role in Mind-control, Disney's connection to them, although on the suface a seemingly minor fact, is in reality a minor fact setting on top of an enormous ghastly secret. When W.W. II started, the government incorporated the Disney studios into the war machine. The military paid Disney $80,000 for 20 training cartoon, which cost Disney $72,000 to make. Disney studios also made some secret films for the military. Mickey Mouse and Goofy cartoons were slanted to have war themes, for instance, the Goofy cartoon of 1941 "The Art of Self Defense" and "How to be a Sailor" in 1944. Perhaps in honor of the contribution Disney had made to the war effort, "Mickey Mouse" was the password of the Allies for millions of men on the big D-Day invasion on June 6,1944. Walt Disney produced a cartoon showing Donald Duck paying his taxes faithfully. The film was entitled The New Spirit. It was very successful in getting Americans to comply with the IRS. In 1946, Disney made a film for the public schools for sex education entitled *The Story of Menstruation.* For the United Nations, Walt Disney created "It's a Small World" attraction for UNICEF for the '64-65 World's Fair. This attraction was moved to the theme parks & has been a major feature for mind-control. After learning of the enormous amount of mind-control programming going on during after hours in secret tunnels at Disney as well as in the public facilities, it makes more sense why the Russian Premier Nikita Khrushchev would be denied a visit to Disneyland by the U.S. government "due to security considerations" when he was visiting the U.S. in Sept. 1959. Khrushchev obviously had his own security working in tandem with American security and the intelligence people for whatever reason(s) didn't want the complication of these Russians going to a major programming site. Some powerful military men have been connected to Disney films. Two former commanding officers of the USS Alabama nuclear sub were technical advisors for the Disney film Crimson Tide. Walt Disney was tied to the U.S. government, and recent disclosures show that he was tied to the FBI. Walt used his FBI connection to destroy the life of Art Babbitt, who had led the strike against Disney in 1940. Babbitt found that everything he attempted in life after the strike was ruined by some hidden power. Was Walt part of naval intelligence attached to the FBI? Was he part of the FBI that is involved with child procurement and mind-control? In the 1950's the Illuminati began organizing covens on the West coast and began solidifying their power. (This comes from several independent sources.) Likewise, it's clear that Disney didn't have the clout in 1953 with local governments, that it does today. Walt Disney was unsuccessful when he tried to get permission from the city of Los Angeles and the Burbank City Council for the construction of Disneyland (called Disneylandia at that time), in the Burbank area. One Burbank councilman told Walt, "We don't want the carny atmosphere in Burbank."" Inconsistently, within a few years they gave permission to Universal to build an amusement park in Burbank, which opened in 1964. Disney then ask the Stanford Research Institute to locate a spot for Disneylandia (Disneyland), which they found at Anaheim. In recent years, Disney decided they wanted to build another amusement park (called California Adventure) across from Disneyland. In order to do so, the Interstate highway will have to have changes, and the Anaheim city council needed to approve the large 55 acre expansion. In contrast to the Burbank City Council in *1953*, Anaheim's City Council was enthusiastic about the expansion in spite of lots of local opposition. The locals complained at council meetings to the City Council that the city had no business going hundreds of millions of dollars into debt to help a corporate giant. (Anaheim will issue $400 million in bonds.) Locals also raised concerns that the public school system in Anaheim is stressed to the breaking point where they are considering going to half days, and that Disney Corporation should give as much consideration for the school children of Anaheim as they do to their Amusement park. Disneyland's Pres. Paul Pressler bragged about Disney's new California Adventure amusement park, "Disney's California Adventure is really a

celebration of the fun, the beauty, the people and the accomplishments of this magical state. We really have set out to try to capture a bit of what the California dream is all about." (Sounds like the dream is to be wealthy and control people. The elite would rather give us BREAD & CIRCUS than an education.)

The Dragnet films were done in part at the Disney studios. In an Office Memo from the 66-new LA SAC FBI agent to Hoover (12/16/54), which was obtained via the Freedom of Information Act, the typed memo states, „Mr. Disney has volunteered representatives of this office complete access to the facilities of Disneyland for use in connection with official matters..." Historically, we now know that Disney's use for "official matters" included mind-control.

J. DISNEY & MIND CONTROL

Once the reader is familiar with the programming scripts, the reader merely needs to watch the Disney "Adventures in Wonderland" that come on TV in the morning to see Disney mind-control at work. Within a few minutes one morning, this author had seen a white rabbit create "a world in your mind" (the quote is what the show said!) with a ring, watched Alice go through the mirrors, watched a White Rabbit [the programmer] read a book to a little girl, and the TV listener be told by the show "The White Rabbit is our only hope!" The deeper alters of Illuminati slaves who are programmed for espionage, for spying & blackmail, & seduction & assassination, are given programming to live in a fantasy world. They never touch base with reality. Much of this type of programming has gone on at Disneyland. Disneyland visitors are taken in a boat where dolls sing an around-the-world theme song "It's a small small world". These doll world parts of the amusement parks are used for programming assassination & espionage alters. The song & dolls play important roles in these alter's mind-control programming. Some slaves at around age 19, have this type of programming tested to make sure it is solidly in place. The song „It's a Small World" was composed by the Sherman brothers for Disney originally as a theme song for a ride at the *'63-'65* NY World's Fair. The Sherman brothers were talent that Disney discovered. They were born in NYC, and both graduated from Beverly Hills High School. They wrote Disney songs for at least 29 films. Mind-controlled slaves, who repeatedly bump into each other, but don't know why, will be found saying, "It's a small, small world." Both rituals & programming go on at Disney amusement parks during both the day & night. Steven Rockefeller and Walt Disney travelled and spent time together with Dr. Hadley Cantril, an establishment expert on human behavior. (See *There Was Once A Time of Islands, Illusions & Rockefellers.* NY: Harcourt Brace Jovanovich, 1975.) When Walt Disney began Walt Disney World he sent Card Walker to the Florida capital to request quid pro quo, and the governor gave it to Disney. What that meant is that Disney's property in Florida was totally controlled under Disney's jurisdiction, they had their own laws, their own police force, their own hospitals, and their own tax rate. No outside authority would interfere with Disney's jurisdiction. DisneyWorld's finances would be untouchable and out of sight by the state of Florida. Never had so much power been given away. DisneyWorld became its own crime syndicate within the syndicate. Disney amusement parks are like a city within a city. They have there own security forces, and the local police allow the Disney security forces to take care of their turf. Disney has their own policies (laws). Some of the security forces can be identified in plain clothes with clean-cut hair styles and have communication devices. The security forces have a headquarters room where TV monitors display-live the exit points at Disney as well as other locations. *America 's Most Wanted* has a fairly large file on children who have been kidnapped at Disney Amusement Parks. One mother, who got separated from her child when getting off a train, frantically told a guard her child was missing. The guard took her to the monitor room, where they saw the kidnapper carrying the child out of the park with the boy slumped over his shoulder. In that short of a time, the kidnapper had drugged the child, cut his hair different, and put a different shirt on him. (This anecdote was mention in *Inside the Mouse,* pg. 52) As written before, white slavery is part of what Disney is all about. This mother was one of the fortunate few who did manage to find their kidnapped children. An insider states that the Disney police are definitely part of those moving and abusing innocent children brought in for occult rituals. In addition, the Disney security forces spy on their own employees. Employees do not enter the theme parks like the visitors, nor do they move around like the visitors. They have underground tunnels and underground entrances and facilities for that. One victim of total mind-control mentioned that a tunnel entrance was at the Matterhorn mountain at Disneyland. (The Matterhorn was opened by Walt and his good-friend Richard Nixon, who rode in the first car down the mountain.) The Disney productions has given the Illuminati the cover to bring together Illusionists, magicians, and special effects artists without anyone being suspicious. Some of these men were able to apply their talents toward programming children. As an example of their talents, Disney special effects artists were able to create 16 realistic-looking cadavers for the 1989 film *Gross Anatomy.* Walt Disney, Inc. has teamed up with Los Alamos and Sandia Labs, two other groups which are heavily involved in mind-control and people control to develop body scans, branding and access codes for the visitors to Disney's theme parks. Each of the Disney Theme parks, such as Disneyland, DisneyWorld, EuroDisney etc. have vast underground facilities. These underground facilities allow many of the workers to get to the ride areas via underground passages. Each theme facility also has a vast infrastructure underground in order to maintain it. The underground areas contain wardrobe design and repair units, fitting rooms, restrooms, cafeterias, security units, computers, freight ramps, utility encasements, and large connecting tunnels. The underground areas also have programming rooms. They have their own power plants and water systems and their own police force. Disney company employs 71,000 people at several locations, tone recent TV show used the figure 40,000 Disney employees.] People are coming and going 24 hours at the Disney theme parks. Three shifts keep up the 24 hour business. The night crews maintain and repair the parks for the thousands of people that will soon arrive in the morning. Disneyland makes a natural prop for carrying out mind-control. The items they sell are also natural props--such as the Goofy watch *($19.95)* which has hands that move backward to confuse a slave as to what time it is. Was Walt Disney aware of how Disneyland was used for programming? There is no doubt. Disney lived much of nights at Disneyland, and had an apartment at the firehouse near the train station on Main St. At night, if he was not doing anything else, he'd roam the grounds of Disneyland scribbling notes on his own distinctive blue paper, which he'd leave for workers to follow the next day. The notes would say such things as "Replace these flowers," or "Move that bench". *(Prince of the Magic Kingdom,* p. *25)* Walt Disney knew everything that went on in his Magic Kingdom. The Epcot Center and the Disney amusement parks market all kinds of occult triggers, including crystals, rainbows, wizards etc. that reinforce the programming. The Epcot Center has two glass pyramids along with its "Journey into Imagination". Disneyworld has the Island of Atlantis on its sub tour. Fantasyland is one of the most used tours of Disneyland for mind-control purposes. It has carousels, merry music, an incredible castle, boat rides, story book characters etc. Sleeping Beauty Castle with its blue turrets and gold spires is the central visual object of Disneyland. You cross a drawbridge to get into

it. Inside Fantasyland are Illuminati programming sites such as the Mad Hatter teacups, the King Arthur carousel horses, and Snow White's forest.

In the far corner of Disneyland's New Orlean's Square is the Haunted Mansion. This mansion is designed to frighten and scare, it has an ingenious design and many special effects and illusions. Realistic ghosts, a screeching raven, howling voices, and other scary things welcome the visitor. Life size holograms are created at the Haunted Mansion, and dance in sync with the music and then fade out at certain points. There is a hologram of a woman's head in a crystal ball who chatters non-stop. A real good laugh for the programmers of a little child. When you are toward the end, you will have a chance to look into a mirror where a hologram ghost will nestle up beside you. Star Speeder is another great programming location at Disneyland. It was the creation of George Lucas and the Disney Imagineers. The technology is borrowed from Star Wars, and is similar to flight simulators used by the military to train pilots. Disneyland Hotel offers Character Breakfasts, where children eat breakfast with Disney characters, to people who make special arrangements. U.S. Special Forces, which carries out mind-control, owns two hotels near Disney World, and the Mormons have one also. Knott's Berry Farm with its Ghost Town, Amusement Park, & its Charlie Brown themes and characters is near Disneyland. One of the Disney executives began one of the most horrible trauma-based mind-control programming centers in Los Angeles called Magic Castle a comedy warehouse. This trauma center had horrible torture chambers. Children were brought in from South and Central America to be programmed at the Magic Castle. A brave L.A. policeman exposed the place--for which he lost his job, and eventually was able to get the site closed. One of Disney's recent ventures in their

Disney Institute, which *Newsweek* labeled "the Disneyland of the Mind". *(Newsweek,* Mar. 4, 1996, p. 61) A private club called Club 33 at Disneyland located upstairs in the New Orleans Square is believed to be involved in mind-control. Cub's Den supervises children's activities at the Wilderness Lodge Resort at Walt Disney World.

At Disney-MGM studios the major attraction is the Twilight Zone Tower of Terror. Guests take a strange scary trip through the hotel, where guests are finally sent into an elevator that drops out of control 13 stories. The ride has been advertized on TV. Disneyland now has a Temple to the Forbidden Eye--which is simply a Temple to the All Seeing Eye, the Illuminati symbol. Visitors, who have the patience to wait in line, can strap themselves in for a ride that is like a jack hammer that jars the rider through a temple filled with snakes, rats, and mummies. One aerobics teacher couldn't walk for three days after the jarring ride, which comes across as „hokey". The experience is more traumatizing than fun, but then maybe that is what was intended.

DISNEY VACATIONS FOR THE ELITE

Years ago this author's newsletters exposed Hilton Head Island, SC as a watering hole of the powerful elite incl. retired generals and admirals, and the site for the elite's Renaissance Weekend "meat market". Remember, that at one time Hilton Head Island was private, with imported alligators in the water around it. A person was only allowed on the island by going through security gates with a clearance. In a later newsletter, Disney's Hilton Head Island Resort was mentioned. This resort, built by Disney Vacation Development, Inc., is located on a 15-acre private island linked to Hilton Head island by a narrow bridge. Members to the Disney Vacation Club can exchange time for vacations at Disney and other resorts around the world. Memberships cost minimum $9,412.

MELODYLAND

Right smack across from the entrance to Disneyland is the Assembly of God's Melodyland Christian Center, the birthplace of TEN (Trinity Broadcasting Network). The Assembly of God denomination has been heavily infiltrated by the Illuminati, and has been heavily used as a front for programmed slaves. Paul Crouch, president of Trinity Broadcasting Systems, Inc., was affiliated with Melodyland in 1973 when TBS was getting started. At that time, Melodyland was a rich heavily infiltrated charismatic church, with its share of programmed multiples. In 1973, closet homosexual minister Jim Bakker, and his wife Tammy Faye, a programmed multiple were with Paul Crouch in Anaheim at Melodyland. Paul Crouch had been the assistant pastor of Bakker's home church in Muskegon, MI. Crouch's right hand man was Alexander Valderrama, a charismatic Roman Catholic. TBS used an abandoned military base as their TV complex, using hangers as studios. In the early 70's, ABC put Bakker & Crouch's early shows on their affiliate stations on Sunday morning. Bakker had already gotten his career kicked off with Illuminatus Pat Robertson and his 700 Club. Jim Bakker split and went to the east coast. To help Bakker with his money, Bill Perkins, who had been a financial analyst for the World Order's mind-control research at Sandia National Labs in Livermore came to help Bakker run his ministry's finances. Later, televangelist Bakker began building Heritage USA, which was to be a big-money resort. Bakker hired people who had worked for Disney to construct Heritage USA. Bakker studied Disneyland, Disneyworld, and other Disney places as a model for Heritage USA. After Disneyworld opened in Florida, Jim Bakker was a REGULAR visitor to it. Heritage USA's Ft. Heritage was modelled after Disney's Ft. Wilderness, Main St. was modelled after the Magic Kingdom's Main St., and Disney's wrought-iron fencing was also copied. Most people are aware of Jim Bakker's *$265,000* payoff to Jessica Hahn to keep her sexual services to him a secret, his longtime homosexual relationship with his right hand man David Taggart, and his prison sentence. James Orson (named after Orson Welles) Bakker was from Muskegon, the same place that Cathy O'Brien, a freed Mind-controlled slave came from. He was born pre-mature, and had some interesting family situations that make his family suspect. While Cathy O'Brien got programmed via the Catholics, Jim was part of another denomination which also was into programming, the charismatic Assemblies of God. His grandfather, who lived next door to Jim, and where Jim spent much childhood time with was popularly known in town as a "huckster", and nicknamed Kingfish after the manipulative character on Amos & Andy. Tammy his wife grew up in International Falls, MN in poverty in the home of her stepfather and mother. Besides having a "shopping demon," she has had her share of phobias and mental problems, as can be expected from someone who has had to suffer through programming. It would be worth pointing out who has come to Jim Bakker's rescue when he was under attack. For instance, on Thursday, Oct. *4,* 1984 when Jim was under attack, Jim Bakker's show had six people give endorsements and praise of Jim Bakker. Those were Ronald Reagan, Dale Evans, Robert Schuller, Oral Roberts, Billy Graham and Rex Hubbard. Of those, this author knows for sure that all are masons, except for Rex, who may or may not be. Robert Schuller, Billy Graham and Oral Roberts are "Christian ministers" who participate in using and handling mind-control slaves. These three ministers all participate in

secret Satanic rituals. The last few paragraphs have given only a sketchy picture of the intimate relationship between Disney Mind-control and the charismatic movement and its use of trauma-based total mind-control.

DISNEYANA FOR THE PROGRAMMED & OBSESSED.

For people who have been programmed with Disney programming and who are obsessed with Mickey Mouse and everything else about Disney, and for other people who just have the collecting spirit for Disney memorabilia, there is a group called Disneyana. Disneyana, was organized in the 1980's, and consists of people who are cult-like in their devotion to anything true Disney. Some of them to express their devotion outwardly tatoo their bodies with Disney characters. This group holds their annual convention at the Contemporary Resort in FL. One Disneyana at the annual convention said, "We collect to keep the good feeling inside." Another when interviewed said, "This is why it's all about love." The author knows as a fact some of the men who are obsessed with Mickey Mouse & Disney items are programmed multiples. One of Kenneth Anger's occult friends has had the world's largest Mickey Mouse collection. Who is Kenneth Anger? Kenneth Anger, a member of LaVey's Magick Circle & later his Church of Satan, is an occultist and an underground film maker. Kenneth Anger (he choose the last name Anger) was raised on the Wizard of Oz books. His biographer Bill Landis writes that the Oz books "laid the groundwork for Ken's attraction to Crowley, the occultist who would rework Rosicrucian thought into his own magical system." Ken was obsessed with Crowley's life & magic. As a child, Ken had danced with Shirley Temple in competition after she became a child star. Ken Anger loved the OTO's solar phallic religion, and was also obsessed with Mickey Mouse. He spent part of his time studying his friend's Mickey Mouse collection. Ken Anger did his casting for his film „Lucifer Rising" by telling occult friends & acquaintances that they could live out their goddess or god power-trip fantasies by acting for him. The British government's National Film Finance Corp. fronted 15,000£ for Lucifer Rising's production. Famous occult musician Jimmy Page did the sound track gratis. Ken Anger acted as the film's Magus and made his Magus role resemble Mickey Mouse in the film Fantasia. (The role Fantasia plays in mind-control programming will follow as the last part of this chapter.) "Lucifer Rising" also starts with Fantasia-type volcanoes. Another of his well-known films was "Invocation of My Demon Brother."

Mind-control features in Disney movies.

The elements within Disney movies that are intentionally put in for mind-control would take volumes to describe. A detailed description of how just one Disney movie is used as a programming script soon follows. Fantasia was selected as the example. A random sampling of features in Disney movies for mind-control programming could include:

· Cogworth the enchanted mantle clock in Beauty and the Beast.

· The character Door Knob, which is a doorknob portrayed as a person in the Disney cartoon Alice In Wonderland, is useful for programming door knob alters.

· The Blue Yonder is a Disney movie on time travel of a young boy. Time travel movies are used for programming to mess up the victim's sense of time.

· Disney film "Animated Alphabet" has letters which come alive, which is useful for programming. And what about the '82 Disney movie "Computers are People, Too!" ?

· All the Illuminati members this author is aware of who have received trauma-based total mind-control were taught to astrally project and study on the astral plane what they needed to learn. A Disney movie that portrays this is *Goofy over Dental Health.* This is an educational film released by Disney in '91 and again in '93, where Goofy places a magical toothbrush under a child's pillow, so that the child astrally projects to a dentist office and while on the astral plane studies how to have healthy teeth.

· Illuminati alters believe that trees and flowers are alive. The 1932 Disney film *Flowers and Trees* is a story about two trees who fall in love. The film portrays the occult belief that trees can talk and sing. Internally, alter systems will be constructed with singing trees and flowers that represent people and which are alters. The singing trees give out internal codes to move alters internally where they need to go. Return to Oz. (1985) This Disney film begins its story line about a girl who is thought to have psychological problems because of her tales of Oz. She is warned not to talk about Oz by her relatives. She is taken to a psychologist who wears a big ruby ring, who tells Dorothy that electroshocks won't hurt her, and that we are at the "dawn of a New Age." Dorothy is told that her memories are „just dreams" that stem from excess electrical current in the brain. She is sent to a mental institution to receive shock treatments for talking about Oz. A lightening storm allows her to escape the shock treatments and when she sleeps, she awakes in Oz. In Oz she goes through many mind-control scenarios, ruby slippers, mirrors, etc., and toward the end visits with evil Mombi, Princess of Oz who keeps Ozma (Dorothy's twin) as a slave. Mombi eventually casts a spell and enchants Ozma into a mirror. Sci-Fi author J.D. Vinge in her *Return to Oz* based on the screen play writes on pg. 211-212, "Dorothy gazed at herself in the mirror, seeing her own reflection, and remembering the moment when she had looked at herself and seen someone else there, someone so like her that it could have been her sister." Parts of this film were filmed near Stonehenge, Eng. Disney has put out several films on the Wizard of Oz theme, all of which were used for programming. The original series of Oz books were by Baum. In '39, MGM did the famous Wizard of Oz film. In the Disney movie Tron (1982), a young computer genius goes into an altered state where he ends up becoming a computer program. After defeating the MCP, he returns to the real world. This is simply a programming script. A special effects team created a 3-D world, showing how talented Disney special effects people can be in making something seem real. This movie should show people their mind-control capabilities. Mathematical Applications Group, Inc. (MAGI) were one of the groups that created the graphics. Disney came out with 3 videos of new adventures in Wonderland which are mind-control programming. In the mornings here 9-9:30, on channel 21, Disney has a Wonderland Show every morning which is mind-control programming for children. Within a few minutes, this author had seen a girl walk through a mirror, the 3 lives of Thomasina mentioned, and a little ditty "I'm a little tea-pot" where a person becomes a tea pot. They also had an "under the umbella" scene. This was all pure programming, right on TV. Of course, they show the White Rabbit as a central figure. ABC under the auspices of Disney produced a lengthy 140 min. film *Wild Palms* which depicts Illuminati mind-control and life. One reader of *Vol. 2* stated that the Wild Palms movie would have made no sense except that having read the Vol. 2 book, the movie made lots of sense in the light of Vol. 2's revelations. The film depicts how children are kidnapped, switched at birth, programmed via TV cartoons, programmed to kill and use stun guns etc. The film depicts Illuminati bloodlines and arranged marriages. Although the name „Illuminati" is not used, if viewers substitute in the name "the Fathers" for Illuminati fathers, they will get an insider's view of life at the top. The main controllers are addressed by their slaves as "Papa" or "Daddy" or "Mother". This is true to life. A person opposed to the Fathers states, "One day we will wake up and discover we don't own this country and no one will care." The movie states that events are not happening randomly. The movie shows an underground tunnel system which has an entrance hidden by a swimming pool. Quite a few actual programming codes were said during the film, for instance, "down, down, down through the pool of tears..." and "we're going to go down the yellow brick road now." The movie was created by Bruce Wagner, who obviously is an insider concerning trauma-based total mind-control. The fact the movie was made shows the arrogance of the programmers' beliefs that their criminal acts in programming thousands of little children will not be exposed, and that people will be too stupid to realize that what is put out as fiction is actually mirroring what is happening. It's like they believe their own script that IF people did find out "no one will care."

Because so much of the Illuminati programming involves the creation and programming of 3 alters linked into trinities, it is not surprising that Disney has helped such triad programming with a series of movies about threesomes, including:

3 Blind Mouseketeers

Three Caballeros

3 little pigs

Three Little Wolves

3 Lives of Thomasina

The Three Musketeers

3 Ninjas

Three Orphan Kittens

For Mickey Mouse programming they came out with Thru the Mirror, where Mickey Mouse steps through his bedroom mirror and ends up in another world (altered state). Not all of the Disney movies that have mind-control programming themes got released to the public. One unreleased cartoon had Penelope fleeing from a sinister looking Grandfather Clock which is carrying her to another world, and has another scene where Penelope tries to hold onto someone who personifies the Wind. George Lucas, who directed the movie Star Wars, which was a movie planned by the Illuminati & used for Illuminati programming, also directed Disney's movie "Captain EO". Captain EO (who looks like a demonic entity) goes to rescue the Queen (who looks like the harlot describes as Mystery Babylon in the Bible). The Queen is in captivity simply because she and her people believe in black and white (which represent good and evil). When they renounce such a belief, they are saved by Michael Jackson (in actual life a mind-controlled slave) playing Captain EO. It's a New Age witchcraft film through & through. By the way, Michael Jackson has gone to Disney amusement parks many times, sometimes in disguise. It is public knowledge that his Jehovah's Witness family has been very abusive mentally and physically to their children. Disney has put out several movies on how the mind works, such as the educational film The Brain & Nervous System in 1990. Their film Runaway Brain is a cartoon where Dr. Frankenollie transplants Mickey's brain into a monster's body & vice-versa. A 1994 film, Puppet Masters shows the govt.'s secret Office of Scientific Intelligence trying to save the U.S. from aliens who live in human bodies. In recent years, Bette Midler has been Disney's main actress. In the Vol. 2, it was exposed that she is possibly a Monarch Mind-controlled slave. She is famous for her "mood swings" (switches in personality), and she had a "mental breakdown" in *1985*. Her eyes and body gestures are those of a programmed multiple. She has gone out on tour for Disney without making -money, and she is best of friends with Jeffrey Katzenberg (second in command at Disney). Jeffrey Katzenberg by the way is extremely disliked by his counterpart Sid Sheinberg. Bette Midler plays Stella in the movie Stella. Stella is an occult name. In the movie, the script seems tailored for Bette Midler and for someone who is a programmed slave, rather than the actress fitting the role. At the movie's end, Stella (Bette Midler) attends her own daughter's marriage by peeking in a window and watching from the outside. This is the script they give so many of the parts of a slave, so that they feel unworthy and feel like they are always on the outside looking in at life. Many parts (personalities) of slaves find it hard to connect with real life, because they feel they are on the outside looking in. And then in true Disney fashion, Disney had Bette Midler play the role of the lead witch in Hocus Pocus. The movie Hocus Pocus does some hocus pocus of its own. While pretending to make fun of witchcraft, they actually teach witchcraft. They do make the 3 witches look comical. By the way, the 3 witches stand for the maiden, mother, crone combo that the Illuminati reverence. Disney subtly works in deep occult things, such as the all-seeing eye on the cover of the book, the little girl promising the cat (who is a familiar spirit) that her descendants would always care for it (true, because the cat was a generational spirit). The cat is killed in the movie but can't die. And Bette Midler as lead witch in her costume, which has some Mother-of-Darkness symbology on it, states as she gets ready to take the life force from an innocent girl, "We want to live forever, so we take children's lives." This is wholesome entertainment for children? The Disney capacity for deception extends to its own workers. PR men recruit young people for its Disney College program. They tell the young people what a great stepping stone it will be for their careers. They have been known to make it sound like the greatest thing in your life. Kids come from all over the country due to the slick recruiting tactics to work for Disney. They are then housed in Disney housing, given menial jobs, and paid low wages. Most people in the College Program leave disillusioned. If the worker happens to think of a great idea, Disney officials have been known to steal the idea, and because the worker was working for Disney the worker will find that they are unable to get any credit or money for the idea that Disney steals and makes millions off of. One uncredited creator of a Disney sale item said, „iterally, they're using everybody for everything." *(Inside the Mouse,* p. 239.)

>>> Next, will be the script for how the Disney film Fantasia has been used as a standard programming tool since the 1940's by the Illuminati.

DETAILED SCRIPT ON HOW THE DISNEY FILM FANTASIA IS USED FOR PROGRAMMING TRAUMA-BASED MIND-CONTROLLED SLAVES.

During the 1950's, '60's, and '70's at least 90% of the Illuminati's trauma-based mind-controlled slaves were subjected to watching Disney's Fantasia film in order for them to build the foundational imagery of the mind-control. Child mind-control victims had their eyes taped open, and then sat one-on-one with their primary programmers so that the programmers could give the scripts as the child watched Disney's Fantasia over and over. What made Fantasia unique as a programming tool is that it had almost everything the programmers needed to create the foundational imagery for their trauma-based mind-control. To build a dependable alter system means that the worlds need a solid foundation. Fantasia has provided the means to get a solid foundation for the internal worlds that the Illuminati slaves build in their mind. It is also a masterpiece in coordinating color and music.

The Disney film Fantasia which premiered on Nov. 13, 1940 (at Broadway Theater in NYC) was a financial disaster as a movie, but was an Illuminati programming masterpiece. The film was released to theaters in '40, '46, '56, '63, '69, '77, '82, '85, '90 in order to catch every generation of children. The video was released in 1991. During programming much of the child slave's mind will watch the film. One particular part (alter) will be forced to memorize everything in the film. This small part (small alter) is well hidden in each victim's mind. This small alter, who has a vivid and total recall of the film Fantasia, is locked carefully away so that ONLY an access code will pull him/her up. Watching the videotape Fantasia is not going to pull this alter up. The programmers pull this alter up when they have a clean slate alter. When they are taking a clean slate of the mind, they will pull the clean part up and have the alter who has memorized Fantasia throw its memory onto an internal big screen. The internal Outer space (aka Rubicon) is shaped like an amphitheater, and functions as a big vast screen for replay. There is an internal ball or sun created via the lighting effect of the movie Fantasia, so that the movie appears projected in the mind as on a globe. And the Fantasia film images hit this internal globe and go circular in the mind and spin through the system. The programmer will then say to the new part "THIS IS WHAT I WANT YOU TO CREATE. THIS IS WHAT WE NEED." In this fashion, Fantasia has provided the programmers with their primary tool for taking a dissociated clean slate part of the mind, and manipulating it to become a new workable part within the system. The young part that holds the entire Fantasia memory is strategically placed in the system so that it can be called up from anyplace in the system. No matter where the programmer is working in the system, he can access this small alter whose function is to remember the movie. Most of the system will go into a trance sleep if shown the movie. The front (as well as most of the system's alters) will be totally amnesic to having ever seen the movie. Since the programming put in with Fantasia is so fundamental it should come as no surprise that the programmers have done an excellent job in protecting this programming from everyone, including the slave. Abreacting the film for many alters could rip the system apart, because after the film is memorized severe trauma begins to be overlaid and attached to the film. There may be some small alters that still carry tiny bits and pieces of memory of the movie, but only one will really remember it.

The following script will be a running account of how Fantasia has been used as an important preparatory film for Illuminati trauma-based mind-control to train the mind-control victim's mind to be able to visualize the programming that will be layered in. The time clock will begin when the feature film's action begins, and then will run its entire 116 minutes. This will give the researcher of mind-control a blow-by-blow description of how a Disney movie is used for programming. The film was often shown to child victims around 3 to 4 years of age with a wide screen while the child was under a guided LSD trip. (Prior to the use of LSD some other drugs were used.) A Grande Dame or Mother-of-Darkness often worked with the Illuminati programmer as an Assistant Programmer. The scripts & the programming have already been discussed prior to showing the child the film, so the programmers know the direction they want to take the child, & will tailor some of what is said to the child victim to individualize the programming. When a three or four year old is shown Fantasia on a hypnotically-prepared and controlled LSD trip, the colors & effects of Fantasia are increased about 1,000 times. The film is realer than real to the child. The movie will not be shown just once, but over and over so that the scripts are ingrained into the mind. The imagery for the child's internal world will be well established, because the big screen movie enhanced by both the drugs and the bright colors of the art work will seem more real that life itself. At this time, the child is a multiple, but the walls between the various parts of the mind are not solid, but similar to the walls between ego states in an adult non-multiple. A large part of the 3 or 4 year-old child's system will be allowed to view the system, including the Christian parts. Then the entire system (with the single exception of the alter carrying the entire memory of the film) will be hypnotically told to forget having seen the film. Years later, the front alters will not remember having seen the movie, but they may have a strange dislike for the film. They may find that they can't identify where their feelings of dislike of the film stem from. The child victim will watch the movie with its programmer and assistant programmer one-on-one, with no other children in the room. The child will watch the film repeatedly and be grilled about what is in the movie. The child will see the movie so many times in such a vivid form and will be tested to the point that the movie will be memorized. But it will be hypnotically locked up in the subconscious by the programmers, so that it forms a base for the mind to begin building programming, but will remain hidden from the conscious. At the time the Fantasia film was made, the Illuminati had been creating trained multiples for years, but they knew they wanted to program the different personalities in accordance with the best mind-control techniques of the day. For this reason, the Fantasia film was planned ahead of time, so that it could possibly serve as a programming aid.

The film is silent (almost no words) except for music so that it can be used for hypnotic visualization, so that the Mother of Darkness & the programmer can fill in the programming script with the child victim as they watch the movie. As it turned out, their plans were successful. The New Age author David Tame states in his book *The Secret Power of Music* (Rochester, VT: Destiny Books, 1984, p. 292), that Fantasia is. . . "A superb marriage between the visual and musical arts. Most of the sequences.. .are what New Age cinema was intended to be!" The power of the movie to influence the mind stands out. In order to make the film, Disney used some strong arm tactics on a few people. The movie was a box office flop when first released in the 1940's, but then it was made for the occult world anyway. By the 1960's, the Illuminati had create a drug culture and had lots of undetectable mind-controlled slaves running around that had been programmed with Fantasia. In the 1960's, Fantasia became a hit with the drug culture which had its share of Illuminati slaves deeply involved in it. One more reminder, the sentences that are "ALL CAPS" in the script are things that the programmers are saying to the child victim as the child watches the film. (Bear in mind, that the child watches the film over & over, so not everything indicated in this script by caps that the programmer says will necessarily be said in one showing.)

00 minutes. Curtains open. Action begins with an orchestra. The Conductor upon a step pyramid is the center of the scene, and is shown to be the center of authority. Master Programmer Dr. Joseph Mengele liked Fantasia because he was a musician and a violinist. Mengele (Dr. Green) liked Bach, Beethoven, and Schubert and orchestra music. He enjoyed taking what he liked & using this music to make slaves. He would portray himself during programming as being the conductor, & all the orchestra were his children. The film will allow for a repetition of this theme.

00.5 minutes. The instruments begin playing. The musicians are silhouettes which cast shadows upon the wall. Alters will often see themselves in this fashion too, as merely a shadow or merely a silhouette.

01.5 minutes. The MC (named Taylor) begins talking. He begins grooming the viewer. He says that the film may suggest to your imagination "geometric figures floating in space."

02. minutes. The M.C. says there are 3 kinds of music. He says some music is to create definite stories, some to create definite pictures, and some music exists for its own sake.

02.5 minutes. The M.C. introduces us to the "Absolute music."

03. minutes. He states that „Abstract images that might pass through your mind...music will suggest other things to your imagination..." The Philadelphia Orchestra begins playing "Toccata and Fuge" by Bach in the background. As a cartoon for children (or adults) the film has already lost the normal audience at this point. (There is no way that Disney could have escaped realizing that the film starts out losing the normal audience.)

03.5 minutes. The conductor is standing out and everyone else is a silhouette with shadow mirror images (like so many of the alters become). Leopald Stokowski is now standing as the rising sun rises. This is an allusion to sun worship and the sun rising in the east. The music is going up and down, and this music at this point is used to train the child to go up and down the trance ladder (that is to go deeper or lighter in trance).

04. minutes. The conductor opens his hands and waves them in an Illuminati hand signal. The music begins.

06 minutes. A row of violinists play, they are merely silhouettes with shadows.

06.5 minutes. A harp scale is played in the background that is used in the programming. Triggers are attached to this harp scale, or the harp scale is used as a foundation identifier for a piano scale. More children can be taught the piano than the harp, so this scale is usually transferred to a piano scale.

07 minutes. A series of 3 musicians is shown.

07.5 minutes. The conductor (the programmer) becomes invisible. The Prog. Assistant will ask the child, „WHO IS GREEN? GREEN BECOMES INVISIBLE."

08 minutes. First lines representing bows are shown (the violinists are invisible), then the Golden Gate Bridge. "REMEMBER THE BOW, NOT THE VIOLINIST." The bow lines flashing on the screen represent energy. *08.5 minutes.* Colored disks are flashed onto the screen. The lights are represented to the child victim 'THAT'S DR. GREEN'S ORCHESTRA." Geometric shapes and flashes of lines explode onto the screen. Concentric rings that will pattern the concentric worlds appear. (See *Vol. 2* p. 196 for an illustration of this.)

10. minutes. Asst. Prog. will say, „YOU ARE HIS STAR." as stars flash on the screen. Many hidden alters (parts) are stars. Swirling lines arrive, and then colors and then more concentric lines.

11 minutes. Worlds within worlds are shown. Water is shown. Concentric circles that are the pattern for the worlds are presented. A varying number (5 or 7) of Castle-like structures materialize and then disappear. (These will form the pattern for some of the internal castles.) A quick flowing yellow line comes down the center of the screen, 'THAT'S THE YELLOW BRICK ROAD."

11.5 min. Lots of stars emerge.

12 minutes. Various worlds are shown, and an illusionary castle. Lots of stars are shown, which will be how the victim will model many of their alter parts after. Lots of purple stars appear, representing royal star alters.

12.5 minutes. Spiral splotches of cloud-like colors appear and disappear in dissociative colors. This is the Kingdom of the Gods during programming. The Asst. Programmer takes the opportunity to ask, "WHOSE ORCHESTRA?" This scene is used for the internal heaven where the kings are. Then the camera shows the conductor finishing.

13 minutes. The programmer has finished building his basic worlds.

13.5 minutes. The MC talks about Tchaikovsky's Nutcracker.

14 minutes. 13 circling lights come into view circling around and around. (The 13 lights are something like *4* yellow lights, 3 white lights, 4 orange, 2 blue-something like this. They don't have to be all the different programming colors at this point, because that programming will come in its own time.) Stars turn into fairies. A fairy with lots of fairy dust whirls around. ("Make a wish" the slave will be told later on, create what you want.) Flowers grow into butterflies. Hypnotic music plays as the fairy throws fairy dust. Soon, the Fairy spins a web.

15 minutes. The cabalistic tree of life is made with lights, and then the many colors of the ribbons are flashed up on the screen quickly. A compass image is very quickly flashed on the screen.

16 minutes. Lights multiply on the screen, and a spider web appears in the background. There are lots of stars which shine as lights in a spider web. (Stars will serve as alters in programming, the spider web serves as a system within the system, see *Vol. 2.)* There are several shots of multitudes of stars on a spider web. *16.5 minutes.* There is an explosion of light which has a splintering effect (which will fit in well with an electroshock later on to create alters.) Around and around go 6 big mushrooms dancing, with a little one trying to participate. The programmer will point out that the mushrooms are "A FAMILY". When the splintering effect is done with real electricity in the future, the mind will splinter into a family.

17.6 minutes. Concentric circles appear in water. Flashing pedals emerge as if they were dissociation spreading through the water. The flowers are the top spinners (see the pages in *Deeper Insights* on spin tortures to create spinner families), they dance, & then they float away in the bubbles (of dissociation). "A FAMILY OF SPINNERS" the programmer will say. "SEE THEY SPIN YOU INTO

BUBBLES INTO NOTHINGNESS." There is lots of dancing shown by the spinners. Everyone is dancing to the top. The child victim’s head will be wobbling back and forth from the influence of the drugs and dissociation at this point.

19.5 minutes. When the family of fish make a star, the Asst. Programmer says, "SEE HOW SAD THEY ARE." The fish dance in circles and they also hide behind veils. "THE FISH MADE ITS OWN BUBBLES AND YOU CAN MAKE YOUR OWN BUBBLES TOO."

21.5 min. The child is trained to trance at the hypnotic 8’s that appear in the water. This type of scene will put the deeper alters to sleep of a slave still actively being used. The movie here is being used to teach symbols, which will be important in the programming. Asst. Programmer, "LOOK YOU’RE JUST FLOATING.. ..FLOAT, FLOAT, FLOAT, SLEEP...SEE SHE WENT RIGHT INTO THE CENTER OF THE TRANCE STATE.. .YOU DANCE ROUND AND ROUND AND ROUND AND WHERE WE END UP YOU’LL NEVER KNOW."

22 *minutes.* Lots of bubbles begin appearing. They will be used in the programming to assist the child to protect its mind from the traumas. The asst. programmer may have a bubble toy to make bubbles in her hand as a game to play with the child. The child will be trained and programmed to put its memories into bubbles and let them disappear. „WHY WOULD YOU WANT TO GO INTO THE BUBBLE TO GET AWAY FROM THE DARKNESS? 1,2,3...NOW THERE ARE MANY BUBBLES, THIS IS WHAT WE WANT YOU TO DO." At this point the film is showing different colors of bubbles, for instance gold bubbles. This trains the child’s mind to identify different colors of bubbles. The bubble-fish-flower scene is going on. „DON’T YOU FEEL LIKE THAT FISH, ROUND AND ROUND YOU GO" (dissociation encouraged). The fish continues going in a dissociative spin. The fish swim in graceful perfect figure 8’s which have a subconscious hypnotic induction message to the victim. "SLEEPY LITTLE FISH" is said when the music gets hypnotic. "YOU’RE SLEEPY & YOU’RE TIRED, THIS IS NOTHING BUT A DREAM." "ALL THE DIAMONDS ARE ALL AROUND, NOT YOU" In other words, this is teaching the child that their entire internal world can be around them, but "you don’t know that it’s you." The child begins to lose the ability to realize that other parts of itself belong to itself, they are only stars, etc. The *fish* changes into anot her character. flowers are appearing in different colors of the color coding, red, green, orange, blue, white. . .All of a sudden it get’s still. "SHH, LISTEN CLOSELY."

22.5 minutes. Eyes shine in the darkness. "EVERYTHING IS FINE, YOU JUST RELAX."

Silhouettes appear, which represent fish (alters, and people) who are there but you don’t see them, they are behind the veil like the silhouettes. ‘THEY AREN’T THERE, IF YOU SEE THEM THEY AREN’T REAL THEY LOOK LIKE A FLOWER, WHEN YOU SEE THEM, YOU WON’T SEE A CHILD- YOU WILL SEE A FLOWER." The silhouette veil gives the sense to the child that he can sense something but it’s not there. *23 min.* Different plants appear and dance. (This part of movie is very important in structuring.) The plants separate into many plants and flowers, and they multiply on the screen, but at the end they solidity into a solid plant. This is teaching the „you-are-one-but-you-are-many" concept. "FAMILIES ALWAYS WORK TOGETHER. WHETHER YOU ARE BLUE OR YELLOW OR GREEN, FAMILIES ALWAYS WORK TOGETHER IN HARMONY."

24 minutes. "BUBBLES ALL HAVE A LIFE SOURCE...THERE, LOOK, WHAT’S IN THAT BUBBLE?" *24.5 minutes.* „YOU CAN HAVE YOUR OWN ORCHESTRA". Fruit that hangs on the tree is shown, which will be the basis for how they hang the programs (the fruit) in the internal world. Note the colors, orange, white, yellow, purple, blue, green,...

24.5 minutes. Fairyland appears on the screen. The Fairies awake and fly through leaves. ‘THERE’S YOUR FAIRIES. SHE IS VERY MAGICAL. SHE CAN CREATE ANYTHING AND SO CAN YOU." "THE FAIRIES ARE SO MAGICAL."

When the core is being first split, the parts of the mind that are creative are taken and used to create the fairies. The programmers will only take these original creative splits, they will not try to get fairies from any more torture. The fairies are the creative parts of the child, how ever many creative parts that the child has splintered will be the number of fairies created. These parts of the mind receive very heavy programming. They are core splits. (If readers remember on page 87 of *Vol. 2,* it refers to a Core Protector coded "Creation". That alter was a fairy, a core split. Not only does this creative part make things "magically" for the system, it protects the core. Does that help people to understand how the Core can be so creatively protected?! (For more understanding about the Core see Cisco's very deep article on the Core.) Fairies are assigned to every part of an alter system. The child of 3 or 4, who watches Fantasia has had their core locked away at 2 1/2. The core's stars have not been locked away yet, & have access to her energy. When the system is built, the stars are locked away & become the core's guardians. They will act like the core to protect her. The real value of the fairies comes when the core's stars are locked away & the Programmers have to depend upon the creative power of the fairies.

24 minutes. A vine (which represents a system's double helix) lights up one leaf after another. The leaves are staggered (alternated) and they light up in sequence, which teaches the child the foundation of how they will create the DNA helix and its staggered exit permissions.

25.5 min. The leaves are now floating up and down, like the alters will learn to do. "SOME FALL TO THE GROUND AND DIE." This is the point where the story of the Oak Tree will be added in for programming. When the Illuminati programmers want "to destroy" an alter they can use the chandelier-MT 6:22-23 torture mentioned on page 310 of the *Vol. 2 Formula* book, and then have the splintered alters become leaves that fall to the ground and die. After this, these disobedient and now "dead" alters can be taken & be dissociated from their memories. The memories are locked up someplace permanent within the mind.

26. min. Out of a leaf like "box" come a series of fairies. The child is taught to put things (such as alters) in boxes of various shapes.

26.5 min. Leaves blow in the wind. Fairies cover things and keep them safe.

27. min. Fairies continue flying around. The seasons are passing in sequence. An internal green-skirted fairy will be connected to the internal hourglass during the programming.

27.5 min. The fairies quit flying and skate on ice. The season has turned to winter.

28 min. A winter scene. The four seasons have come to an end.

28.5 *min.* A sorcerer is introduced by the MC (emcee). The sorcerer is shown and then his assistant or trainee who is Mickey Mouse. Mickey Mouse wants to be creative and magical like the great wizard. Mickey Mouse sees the power that the sorcerer has, and wants that power. What is really being subtly portrayed here is the programmer (the wizard) and the core & the core's creative splits (Mickey Mouse). Showing the programmer as a great wizard is actually right on the money. The top programmers are all Grand Masters in the Illuminati and are very much into witchcraft.

29 min. The sorcerer (wizard) is shown again. This time the wizard,, with his skull beside him, creates from his witch's cauldron a big colorful butterfly which is forever changing. (Is this big yellow, purple, white, and blue butterfly meant to be a Monarch butterfly? The programmers will use it that way for this Monarch programming.) The great wizard magically creates the big colorful butterfly and then he shatters it into countless splinters!

30 min. Mickey sneaks around and grabs the magic hat. (The magic hat is one of the few things in the film that doesn't mean anything for the programming. It merely has witchcraft symbols.) Then a magic broom appears.

30.5 min. The broomstick comes alive. The broomstick imagery will be used to help create the pancake people (ribbon alters who will haul the internal computer messages). The broomstick person in the film hauls buckets of water. The child is having story after story layered in over a period of time, which are being skillfully constructed toward a programming end. Parts of the child's mind that see the movie Fantasia will be dissociated clean slates. They will need to have some imagery given to them so that they have something to build mentally upon. In Cisco's section of the book, in the Truth article it is discussed how themind looks at sensory inputs and tries to make sense of a pattern by comparing it to previous patterns that it has identified. Learning is a step-by-step building process, and so is programming.

31. min. Mickey as the apprentice sorcerer (in a sense the victim who the programmer is training) manipulates the broomstick person. "THE CHILD (Mickey) CAN DO WHAT THE GREAT MAGICIAN DID. YOU CAN TELL YOUR MIND WHAT TO DO. YOU GET POWER BY LEARNING TO BE CREATIVE." Mickey (and the victim) become mirror images of the Wizard over them.

32 min. Then the sorcerer sits on his throne, and while on the throne acts like the conductor. Here is a subtle mental tie-in that Mickey is playing the role of programmer (conductor) and is sitting on an Illuminati throne (like so many of the Illuminati Grand Master programmers have actually done.) Michael Aquino is just one of several mind-control programmers who have gone by the name of Mickey. Because Mickey Mouse is substituted for being the programmer at different points in programming, this scene will tie in well with other standard programming sessions.

32.5 min. Mickey in the film clearly is shown leaving his physical body and astrally projecting himself. This is such a vivid portrayal of occult astral projection, that it is mind-boggling that many Christians consider Walt Disney movies to be christian. (See *Vol. 2*, p. 319, for a discussion of the scientific methods to understand and induce astral projection.) This again is laying the mental foundation for the child to leave its body mentally and either hover over its body in dissociation or to travel somewhere via astral projection. Mickey Mouse then begins conducting lights. These lights represent the alters that the victim will make for the conductor. The lights (aka stars) are the conductor's orchestra. Lightning (such as flashes that come from electroshock) and stormy weather are being controlled by Mickey. Notice that the things Mickey is controlling are fear-based. After the child has viewed the film many times and memorized it, when the electro-shock is applied during this time of the film, the child will control it like Mickey by 'magically' creating splits.

33.5 min. Mickey begins conducting waves. Then, for those who understand the veiled scenes, Mickey begins going through the different magic spheres conquering the different spirits. This is Enochian Magic. *34 min.* Mickey wakes up back in his body, and he is in trouble with rising water i.e. a water trauma. Mickey is thrown into the water. The child victim will identify this with the drowning tortures that are given to instill "no talk-no tell" messages. After Mickey (or in child himself) has done something, and returns to his body, then the "'no-talk"' message will kick in. Victims of mind-control often get the feeling of drowning when they trigger a no-talk message.

34.5 min. More water continues to flow.

35 min. All of a sudden without any continuity of action, Mickey gets an ax and kills the broom by splitting it. The broom dies and then multiplies when it comes back to life. This is such a clear picture of what the programmers want the child's mind to do. They will traumatize the child essentially unto death, and then they want the tortured alter to multiply itself into many more duplicate alters. Armies of brooms are formed from the broom. This scene here is a clear red flag that the Illuminati asked Walt Disney to produce this film. This scene with the trauma death of the broom, with it splitting in half, and then coming back to life in a multiplied form, is evidence that this film was meant to be used for training children in multiplicity. The assistant programmer will say "IT'S O.K. TO SPLINTER." "YOU ARE TIRED, YOU CAN ESCAPE THAT BY RESTING AND LET A PART OF YOURSELF COME OUT." At this point, it is necessary to explain what is going to be done when they begin to splinter the child's mind. After the splitting trauma, the programmer needs to be able to see what the child has created, so he wants the child to look at what's been made. "'CAN YOU LOOK AT WHAT YOU'VE CREATED?" However, the part of the child that looks back at the trauma will then see that the dissociated trauma was real and that will make the child angry. The programmers want the child to dissociate what he built, and when the child looks back at what he has created he goes into a vortex of dissociation. The child is told if he ever looks back at the memory he will go into the vortex.

35.5 min. Water is being thrown in by the brooms, while Mickey throws water out.

36 min. All of a sudden a hypnotic vortex sucks things in during the film.

36.5 min. The brooms all march in an army, while Mickey reads his magic book. Mickey then uses his magic book as a lifeboat when he gets whirled into a vortex. A vortex is often created from that part of the mind that is holding the high energy that accumulates in the mind just before the mind splits. It holds the highest energy of the mind. One way a vortex is created is to place the child on a traumatic Disney ride--like a rollar coaster. Special electrical boxes or electrical shoes are outfitted onto the child so that during the ride, at a particular timed moment when fear is increasing, that fear has pain of the electrical shock added to it. A cattle prod of course would be too dangerous to take up on some type of ride like that with all the motion. Also bear in mind, a small child doesn„t take need the electrical power that an adult needs to take it down.

37 min. At the bottom of vortices in the Illuminati programming, the programmers place Guardian demons. In Fantasia, when Mickey gets to the bottom of the vortex, sure enough, there is a Guardian there to meet him. The Guardian spirit parts the water as if he were Moses with the Red Sea.

38. min. The Conductor and Mickey Mouse shake hands. The conductor does something very significant. Mickey congratulates the conductor and then the conductor (programmer) in turn says, "Mickey, you’ve done a good job." (Yes, the core/core splits have done a good job at this point, they have just created their inner world!) The MC tells us about the next song the occult Rite of Spring. Spring rituals are creation rituals and so this music is ritually connected to what the programmers are going to do in this segment. The MC states that instead of the viewer seeing tribal dances (which are by the way witchcraft dances), that instead Disney has decided to show us scenes of what went on billions of years ago. (This next part is also a subtle push for Darwin’s theory of evolution. But because it is child’s entertainment, people don’t have their guard up. The theory of evolution is important, because it allows people including the victim to not take moral responsibility for their actions, and it is also the basis of some of the Hinduism and witchcraft teachings that will be given the deeper alters. This is a backdoor approach to destroy godliness that is carried out on children in general.)

39.5 min. The MC says, "Imagine a lonely tormented little planet spinning in a sea of nothingness." This is exactly what the programmer will say to the child as they work together at building an internal world. The "sea of nothingness" is what the reader will see described in our books as "Outer Space" or „the Rubicon." Also that "sea of nothingness" is used much later to reinforce the secrecy of the programmers. Much later as the programmer and torture has progressed the programmers will say to alters, "LOOK DOWN ON THE EMPTY SEA OF NOTHINGNESS. THERE IS NO DR. GREEN. THERE IS NO DADDY THERE."

40 minutes. A swirl of stars in a galaxy appears. Swirls of comet-like lights flash by. "MANY WORLDS THERE." This will set the base for the child to build galaxies and worlds within their mind. "BE LIKE GOD, CREATE YOUR WORLD. BE YOUR OWN GOD AND CREATE YOUR OWN WORLD" the child is told at this point.

42 minutes. The face of the planet emerges.

42.5 min. Lots of volcanoes erupt on the screen, setting the foundation to build realistic internal volcanoes.

45 min. Oceans, and water and fire are coming into being. The child victim needs to know how a world is created in order to create their own internal world. Lava begins flowing as the flute plays the background music. Lightening flashes. The violence of the fierce weather portrayed will be enhanced by the child on drugs to a thousand times its magnitude. This is important because it will take a great deal of mental energy and external torture to create the internal worlds. Having such super-vivid pictures will help when the victim goes to build their internal worlds. There will be special purpose fragments that will be made into the elements of fire and water. That's all these special purpose fragments will know. Breaking through the layers in the alter systems will trigger internal earthquakes. This and a later earthquake scene are used to build the foundation for the internal violent weather. If an internal earthquake shakes a slave's mind, it has the same effect as if a real earthquake were going off. Everything internally shakes and shifts. An alter system will also have fire children, who start internal fires, and will give internal alters the abreaction or sense that they are burning. The mind gets very survival minded when it thinks it is burning, and goes right back into the programming that is linked with the victim's compliance for survival during programming. 46 *minutes.* The oceans continue to form.

47 *min.* A calm occurs in the action.

47.5 min. The screen gets dark except for an amoeba, which becomes two amoebas. As the little amoebas multiply, the asst. programmer encourages the child, "IT'S O.K. TO MULTIPLY. GOD WANTED YOU TO MULTIPLY" Remember, the programmers are working with a pre-schooler with clean slate alters. The programmers must show images that the child can relate to. The concept of the broom being split in half and then multiplying and now the concept of the amoebas splitting are portrayed in a way that the child's mind can grasp the concept.

48.5 min. "IF GOD CAN MAKE A FISH, YOU CAN MAKE A FISH. YOU CAN DO ANYTHING, YOU CAN BE ANYTHING."

49 *minutes.* Dinosaurs appear. The programmers will reframe the concept of dinosaurs into monsters and demons. The sea-going dinosaurs will be refrained as guardian demons which guard the internal rivers. These guardian demons tie in with Armageddon end-time programming. They also guard the various worlds.

50 min. Dinosaur-birds swoop down and grab prey. This imagery will be refrained to lay the basis for the winged-monkey watchers of the Oz stories. The winged-monkey watchers are the child alters who are assigned to watch and guard the system.

51.5 min. Fierce dinosaurs (later ref rained as Dragons) protect the swamps. Swamps are built into the internal worlds, so this is very helpful. Demons and alters like Dameon are set up as guards.

52 minutes- More swamps appear. The swamp scenes will form the base in the child's mind for the internal river Styx. (See more about this in this book's article "Programming, foundations, destruction of"). Some dinosaurs that have long necks that look like snakes begin appearing. The asst. programmer will reframe these to the child, "LOOK, THE SEED OF SATAN." "THAT IS A DEMON." While the child watches, they reframe the hugh dinosaurs as being demons. Pictures of reptilian looking demons will be shown to the child too. At that age, the child is not going to see the difference. (A note for therapists: Some ""demons'" may actually be important parts to an alter system, and are being used to protect unauthorized users from entering important areas of the system.)

54 min.- Fierce Tyrannosaurus Rex chases dinosaurs. This chase scene is especially frightening to a young child on a LSD trip. Long-necked snake-like dinosaurs appear. They may be refrained as a python snake. T Rex is also known as Leviathan, a demon that inhabits the kundalini spinal column and causes pain in the victim, he is written about on page 302 in our *Vol.* 2 book. In the film a long fierce struggle between T Rex and other dinosaurs ensues.

55 min. The dinosaurs begin dying and soon dies. „THE LORD DOESN’T LIKE THEM."’ This will later be refrained that if parts integrate they are to die. If someone tries to get into the system, the alters are to bury themselves deep like these dinosaurs do on the film.

56 min. Dead bones appear

59 min. Mountains soar out of the ground into eminence.

59.5 min. It gets stormy on the screen, winds & floods appear.

60. min. Stillness comes as the sun rises.

61 min. The sun sets. (During the programming, this may be refrained as the moon setting. It can be both or either or. Remember, the programmer is working with the child’s creativity.) Various scenes during the film show the moon in different phases which is important for bringing in programming concepts like Mr. Moon.

61.3 min. The orchestra is now playing. Music is an important part of mind-control programming. The affect of music on the mind and body has been studied. Music can double the heart beat, accelerate the respiratory rate, make that rate irregular, enhance perception, lower the threshold for various sensory stimuli, change blood pressure & circulation, and alter the muscles in the body. Dance music and "march" music done by orchestras change muscle response. Music is also a great way to cause dissociation.

62.5 min. The MC introduces the "‘Sound Track’ who he says is an important person for Fantasia who can be seen around the Disney studio. When Mr. Sound Track appears, he is simply a vertical line. The MC says he is "an important screen personality." The ground work is being laid for a person being anything, even a line. The MC states that each sound creates a picture.

63 minutes. The MC encourages the personified Sound Track ""don’t be nervous."" Then a sound is made like an electrical shock and the line develops a splotch of color in it. During the programming at this point an electrical shock would be applied to the child.

63.5 minutes. The harp is ask to sound. The harp begins playing a scale and the line becomes double 8’s and snake-like spirals. The child will be taught to dissociate when seeing such double 8’s.

64 min. The violin begins going up and down. Each of these instruments is going up and down the scale, like do-ray-me-fa-so-la-tee-do. The music is used to teach the alters to go up and down the helix, which is figured in this part of the film. As the music goes down, an alter is taught to go down in trance, and as it climbs higher, the alter will trance higher. All these instruments (violin, flute, bass, bassoon) are being used to teach alters how to work in the system. The MC describes the flute as "very pretty".

64.3 min. A trumpet begins playing and the colors, yellow, orange, etc. begin showing.

64.5 min. When the bassoon plays, the MC says, "Go on. Drop the other shoe"-- "Go to the shoe" which translates "‘go to the ground"" --the deepest trance level. The following is the double-pyramid, with a helix up the middle that appears when the bassoon plays: -(This configuration is very important to all these Illuminati alters systems.)-

65 min. The drum plays and some other percussion instruments play. These are taught to the child as the cult’s "HEARTBEAT". They will hear this sound internally for many years to come. Then some sounds that have a shattering effect (cymbals) like broken mirrors are made in the film.

65.5 min. As the sounds take place a line is made with a pyramid at the top. This is laying the groundwork for the system’s structuring.

66 *min.* The MC laughs and talks about Beethoven’s Pastoral Symphony (Beethoven’s 6th) which is next.

66.5 minutes. The screen comes alive with magical Unicorns of different colors. Then Pan (a satan-like figure) appears playing his pipes, and soon lots of little Pans (little demons) are playing their pipes. The little Pans (demons) play and dance with the unicorns. The orchestra plays again. (This author, Fritz, remembers when I said that Pan was an evil demon, I was rebuked by a Christian minister. He then said Pan a benevolent cheery creature". A number of books which may be obtained from Satanic bookstores document that Pan is indeed considered a powerful demon by occultists.)

67 *min.* Pegasus (the mythical greek winged horse) flies in. As a Mother horse she takes care of little ones on the screen. She is a protector in the programming.

68 min. "FANTASY IS FUN. FANTASY IS A GAME YOU PLAY. MOTHER TEACHES YOU. SEE HOW MOTHER IS *A* TEACHER. SEE THE BLACK AND WHITE HORSE. THEY ALWAYS FLY TOGETHER, BUT ARE SEPARATE. THEY ARE FLYING OVER THE CLOUDS." "OVER THE CLOUDS, INTO THE BLUE YONDER." The child is rewarded for what it has to do with the game of fantasy. "THAT’S YOUR REWARD FOR DOING WHAT YOU ARE TO DO. YOU CAN LEARN TO FLY OVER THE CLOUDS." The child feels rewarded by the game of fantasy. The fantasy scenes in Walt Disney’s Fantasia are like the Wizard of Oz scenes in Oz, fantasy-land is more colorful and fun than real life. Vivid colors will be splashed about during the fantasy-land scenes.

68.5 min. A castle appears as Pegasus flies around. This and other castle scenes will help the child develop the imagery for the spiritual castles that the child will build internally. Then they swim in the water. "SEE THE MIRROR IMAGES, WATER CAN BE GLASS." During the programming mirrors are put into the internal system. A mirror can be a piece of glass, the surface of a pond, or an asphalt runway. When the programming is complete, underneath the water &/or the runway lurk demons.

70 min. Waterfalls emerge and issue forth. The waterfalls are used by the programmers to erase all the slave’s memory of what was done to them. The child will be told at the end of watching Fantasia (and this will be said at other programming events too), "JUST REMEMBER THE GOOD, JUST REMEMBER THE FANTASY". The fantasy is given so that the subconscious can rest in peace after the programming. The child is told "WASH YOURSELF CLEAN."

70.5 min. The little girls appear as girl centaurs (half girl-half horse). "SEE THE LITTLE GIRLS ARE HORSES."

71 minutes. Then a scene appears where one girl centaur braids another girl centaur’s long hair. The Illuminati teach their slaves to braid their memories. They braid their memories up and then lock them in. All the Daddy memories will be locked up & braided and then locked for good.

72 min. Male centaurs appear. They are near water and make mirror images in the water.

72.5 min. A crown is placed on a female centaur and *2* doves. During the Illuminati death, burial and resurrection ceremonies lilies are used for crowns, and doves are used. These are significant programming/ritual symbols. The female centaurs look at the male centaurs. This will be refrained as a system can have both male and female parts.

73 *min.* Starting with one female centaur, the females act seductive to the males, who then respond. For bras the females have bras of daisies. The *Vol. 2* book explained how the daisy programming is a life-or-death type program. Vivid colors are used for each centaur. For instance, one may be purple and another one another color, which sets the groundwork for alters to have different access color codes. Alters do not usually see themselves as being in different colors, although it does happen on occasion.

73.8 min. A marriage takes place between the centaurs. The programmers catch these nuances of the film and use them. The marriage here teaches the child to be acquainted with the arm-and-arm marriage ceremonies. Remember, the programmers are dealing with clean slates that must be taught from the ground up. In the next few minutes, the cherub children will watch sexual body language, and the child victim is also picking up on enticing sexual body motions.

74.2 min. The centaurs go swimming. "I FEEL LIKE A LITTLE GIRL WITH A HORSE'S BODY."

75 min. Little cherubs are dancing and flying around. When pictured the artists at times single out 3 cherubs who blow flutes together. The female centaur appears, who is fair haired (blond) and blue-eyed, which is what the Illuminati like. When she hears the tone (of the flutes) she goes into a trance state and walks with her eyes closed. This imagery is used to teach alters that when they hear certain tones, they are to go into a trance state and do certain things. The little cherub turns into a heart, and when no one is watching goes into the tree. In programming, this part is the Keeper of the Tree. Notice how everything is veiled. The assistant programmer will point the cherub out to the child victim, "LOOK AT WHAT HE DID."

76.5 min. A curtain then shrouds the scene. The curtain appears to be tree-like. More bubbles appear, and more water. All the mythical creatures on the screen begin to dance and be merry and have a feast.

77 *min.* "SEE THE FEASTS, SEE THE BANQUETS, THE FEASTS ARE O.K. THE BANQUETS ARE O.K."

78 min. "THE LEAVES ARE FALLING." Blood-like wine is drank at the feast. "SEE THE BLOOD."

"SEE THE LITTLE DEVILS POP UP." The only human in this Disney scene is honored. This is done to teach the alters that humans and animals can mix. That they can be accepted for what they are, even if they think they are an animal or something else they will be accepted at the cult's feasts. These scenes are all for internal programming. By the way, one of the pretty female centaurs makes a sexual pass at the fat human, who then chases her. "MUST PLEASE THE MASTER."

80 min. A scary storm comes up, and Zeus, and the greek gods appear. „BETTER FEAR IT. HE'S A GOD YOU'D BETTER FEAR HIM. HE THROWS LIGHTNING." This demon who throws lightening is named Furfur. He also makes thunder & strong winds in the system (alter system's worlds). Readers can learn more about this demon, named Furfur, in Cisco's second part of *Deeper Insights* in the article on "Programming, foundations, destruction of".

81 minutes. Lightening bolts are thrown from heaven.

81.5 min. All the little cherubs run for cover in fear.

82 min. Pegasus the protector flies in to protect everyone, especially a new born Pegasus. The wind is personified as a two-headed blowing person. This two-headed Janus wind comes storming through the heavens. The programmer will often place his own voice "IN THE WIND." The greek god (internal demon) throws a lightening bolt.

83 min. "SEE THE GODS". The child is learning what to make internally. Zeus then relaxes & goes to sleep.

84 min. More vivid colors form. "FAMILIARIZE YOURSELF WITH ALL THE COLORS." The film at this point is teaching the child to stay in the framework of the programming for safety. To go outside of the programming is terror. The child is learning to fear the godlike demonic guardians.

84.5 min. The fantasy world is coming alive. It is a happy fantasy world. A goddess in the sky makes a rainbow emerge. This is the rainbow goddess of the programming.

85 *min.* All the happy unicorns and cherubs fly ‘"over the rainbow." (Refer back to the *Vol. 2* book p.94 to understand the significance of going over the rainbow.) The unicorn is derived from old British paganism where the lion represented sun worship, and the unicorn represented moon worship. This is why the Royal Arms of the British Royal Family have a unicorn on one side, & a lion on the other. Sexually the unicorn represents androgeny. During programming, the horses, pegasi, unicorns and centaurs shown in the Fantasia movie become the foundation upon which the Illuminati programmers build the Night Mare alters who are beasts of burden who carry an alter system’s memories. These are logical no-emotion alters who are early splits & who are programmed after the child is verbal. See Cisco’s article on Dream Work for more understanding about the horse alters, as well as chapter 7 on Structuring.

86 minutes. More rainbows and lots of bubbles come into view. The film has done an excellent lob of showing how the Furfur God of thunder protects the Rainbow. Once an alter has gone over the rainbow, they can not come back because a demon protects the Rainbow. The rainbow is also protected by alters who fear the gods. After seeing Fantasia, the therapist can understand why the little child protector alters have fear about these gods. The master (who represents Furfur) in the movie swallows the rainbow. If an alter looks internally for the rainbow, he or she will only find stars, because the protector will come up and say, "I swallowed the rainbow." The rainbow is kept well hidden internally. This scene is used to teach alters how to go over the rainbow. ""BEFORE YOU GO OVER THE RAINBOW, YOU HAVE TO PUT ALL YOUR MEMORIES IN THE BUBBLE. YOU CAN’T TAKE ANYTHING OVER THE RAINBOW INTO FANTASY LAND."

86.5 minutes. Apollo, the sun god comes out.

87 min. A big mother spirit who fills the whole sky is now shown by Disney. She hangs over the rainbow. When a system is built this is indeed what they put in. All go to sleep in the film.

87.5 minutes. Arrows shoot the stars into the heavens. This is more programming imagery. When you look for the rainbow, you see stars.

88 min. The conductor finishes again.

88.5 min. The next setting is a Venetian nobleman’s (a duke’s) palace. Curtains open. The use of curtains is spoken about in our previous books.

89 min. Curtains open. An Ostrich begins dancing, and gets others to ballet dance.

90 min. The Ostriches begin dancing in a circle, this is laying the groundwork for what the cult family does. The Assistant programmer may tell the child, "SEE IT’S O.K. TO DANCE TOGETHER. DANCING IS ACCEPTABLE." The programmers will not directly tell the child that this represents the cult family.

Fantasia portrays Satan as a terrible powerful being.

91.5 min. The Ostriches are eating grapes. They are playing, looking in the pool & they are seeing bubbles.

92 min. Hippos emerge out of the pool. "IT’S O.K. TO BE DIFFERENT. IT’S O.K. TO BE STRANGE. USE YOUR CREATIVITY." The hippos begin to dance and dance.

94 min. Elephants appear and are having fun and blowing bubbles out of their trunks. The programmers may be having fun blowing bubbles with the child. The programmers like to mix love and hate, kindness and sadistic behavior. That way the victim has a hard time separating love from hate. If you ask many slaves about "Daddy" they will tell you that they had fun with Daddy. They are right--they had fun intermixed with sadistic torture. Bubbles continue to lift off. One of the bubbles has a fish in it. This is imagery for the bubble programming. The child victim is trained to dump their bad memories into bubbles and let them float away. The therapist will notice that many victims feel like they are floating. They have an unreal feeling. The bubbles are floating their bad memories away.

98.5 minutes. A new setting and the hippos are hypnotically sleeping. 3 sinister alligators that remind one of the 3 primary programmers appear. The 3 alligators have robes that hide them, and shadow images of themselves lurking behind them. The alligators are trying to get the hippos. The 3 alligators are portrayed like the programmer is, he is someone to fear, love, & respect all at once. The hippo is running away and dancing. The alligator dances with the hippo, but makes menacing attempts to eat him. A flying hippo lands on an alligator. Elephants, hippos, alligators are shown. The elephants, ostriches, hippos and alligators all dance in fantasyland.

100 min. The orchestra is dancing. ‘"DO WHAT YOU’RE TOLD AND WE WILL HAVE FUN."

101 min. The MC announces the next part as ""the struggle between the profane and the sacred."’ The conductor stands in a silhouette that suggests the same pose that the upcoming Satan takes.

102 min. A high dark mountain with a castle looms in front of the viewer. A winged fiercesome Satan figure raises his wings. His wings are sectioned like fingers with claws, and will form the imagery of the demon Malebrinche, whose satanic claws hang over the alters and terrorize them. In the *Illustrated Guidebook*, the reader will find lots of these claws in the pictures lurking in the background. A child victim will be taught to fear the hands of the programmer, Satan and Malebrinche. The wings (hands with claws) open. And Satan is portrayed as an awe-inspiring figure. (By the way,, the word maleficia means evil misfortune caused by witches. The witch in Disney’s Sleeping Beauty has the demonic name of Maleficent.)

102.5 min. Satan begins raising the dead skeletons. This provides a foundation to layer in the Valley of the Dry bones coming alive with armies of skeletons.

104 min. The film also has some images at this point that will help with the foundation for the Armageddon programming. Satan calls everything to himself.

104.5 min. The hell pit is shown. This is laying a foundation for the hell pit with all its demons. All kinds of vivid colors are shown in hell, to make the scene more real than real for the child victim. Satan smiles as demons burn in hell. "NO MATTER WHAT COLOR YOU ARE, IF YOU ARE NOT GOOD YOU’LL END UP THERE.’"

105 min. "THAT’S WHAT HAPPENS IF YOU’RE BAD. YOUR THROWN INTO THE HELL PIT."

105.5 min. Three beautiful lady demons begin to dance in a circle, all of a sudden these demons take on their luciferian form, one becomes a goat.

106 min. The demons continue to dance with powerful Satan watching over them. The hell pit and the demons are portrayed in vivid scary graphic depictions. The hellish fire and the ghoulish dancing of its occupants continues for what seems a long time. "WHEN GOD FINDS OUT HOW BAD YOU ARE, LOOK AT WHAT HE’LL DO TO YOU."

107 min. Satan is portrayed by Disney in all his evil dark majesty.

107.5 min. Bells begin to ring, and the demons slink away, & the dead return to the earth to their graveyards.

108 min. Ghosts return to the graves. Soft music begins to play. Ave Maria by Schubert, which was written for the Catholic church, begins playing.

109 min. Satan folds himself into a mountain. ‘"DO YOU SEE LUCIFER ANYWHERE? NO. YOU ONLY SEE A MOUNTAIN."

110 min. Lights shine as if they are a column of moving people who are walking with lights, and then some walls appear.

110.5 min. An arched bridge appears with its mirror image. The column of silhouetted people who continue walking have mirror images in the river. The asst. programmer will be telling the system (which the front parts will hear) "TIME FOR ALL THE GOOD CHILDREN TO GO TO CHURCH. IT'S O.K. TO GO TO CHURCH. GO SERVE GOD."

113. min. An opening, a vertical sliver of light comes from what appears to be doors opening up. There is a mirror effect in the way the doors open, which will facilitate making mirror image front worlds. A whole new world opens up, which will be the front system's world. Both the front alters and the deeper ones will be told to forget the movie. Later when a system is better programmed, the programmers will pull up the front alters and have them walk through these doors into the light. When they are hypnotically taken through these doors into the light and away from the fear and darkness of the Kingdom of Satan, they are hypnotically told to close those doors and never look back. The Kingdom of Satan has been shown in detail and in great length. The Kingdom of Satan has been shown as powerful and fearful. Satan is shown as a mighty power that is to be feared. The Kingdom of Light is only shown as a peace, as a refuge from evil. It is not shown to be good. It is not shown to have power or intelligence. It is simply a place to go to escape the fear of Satan's power. This is all the programmers really want the church to be. It will be a stabilizing balance to let the mind recuperate from the hell of the programming, but it is not intended to be seen as greater than Satan and his Kingdom.

115 min. The film ends with a peaceful gaze at heaven. The child is being told in the last few minutes "THAT WORLD BELONGS TO YOU. IT'S A BEAUTIFUL WORLD. IT'S THE WORLD WE WANT YOU TO LIVE IN. IT'S BEAUTIFUL." After all the hell that is eventually dumped on the child, and the scare that Satan gives them in this Fantasia film, the child is only too happy to create a beautiful world to live in.

** * * * * ***** ******** ****** ******** **********

The effectiveness of Disney's Fantasia is that it is used to communicate to & build the unconscious structures within the child's mind. The unconscious mind is the seat of our creative abilities. Then the conscious mind makes adaptations upon this unconscious thinking.

SUMMARY

Now that the reader has covered so much, the following quotes (with bold emphasis's added) take on even deeper meaning:

Joe Flower in *Prince of the Magic Kingdom,* „ Walt Disney was obsessed with creation, driven to build magical worlds not, as many artists are, out of paint and canvas, or words, or even film, but physically, out of concrete, wires, smoke, electricity, and highly programmed employees." (p. 23)

Julian Halevy in *Nation* decries Disney taking this nation into a "drift to fantasy." He adds, "...one feels our whole culture heading up the dark river to the source--that heart of darkness where Mr. Disney traffics in pastel trinketed evil for gold and ivory." For those who understand programming Aubrey Menen comments about Disney's success are profoundly appropriate, "the strongest desire an artist knows...to create a world of his own where everything is just as he imagines it." John Ciardi was not so nice, he termed Walt Disney as "the shyster in the backroom of illusion." Eliot said, "While his filmed fairy tales may have appeared at first glance to be light and dreamlike, upon closer examination they seemed more nightmares of deconstructed reality in league with the era's leading neo-Freudian Modernists."

· You have now finished reading a never-before-heard, unprecedented Warning about the Dark Reality of the Disney's Magic Kingdom, and how it fits in with Mind-Control. Most Americans when surveyed say they believe in God, most go to church, and many believe they are born-again. Because of the Illuminati's deception campaign over several generations, the American public, and the world in general has been led to believe that Disney was good, and that Walt Disney was a good man. Because of his image, people suspended judgement about Disney and Disney movies. They entrusted their children to him. People had been manipulated into a frame of mind, a predisposition that whatever comes out of Disney is good. They entrusted their children to take in what Disney fed their children's little minds week after week. The public's predisposition of trust was used to introduce Illuminati beliefs and their political agenda, and to carry out a vast program of trauma-based mind-control on hundreds of thousands of tiny little children, whose minds and souls were stolen from them. Because many of the child slaves, who are programmed with Disney-themes, are programmed with roles in bringing in the Anti-Christ, Walt Disney and his family have played a major role for the Anti-Christ. And now you can see how accurate the Word of God is when it says, What is highly esteemed among men, is an abomination to God. First, there will be an Overview of the types of sources used, and then will follow a partial Bibliography on this Disney Section.

TYPES OF SOURCES

People who have worked for Disney and who are getting pensions and medical insurance have talked about Disney under the condition of anonymity. This is because the Disney hierarchy will not permit exposure without retaliation. Several non-Disney people who helped with discovering facts for this section were threatened that their children lives would be taken if they continued to investigate Disney. What I (Fritz Springmeier) finally have put in this, is solely my responsibility.

· One type of source for this was books on the Hollywood Film Industry and books on Disney Films. There were about 20 books of this category which were perused for a better understanding of who the Disney brothers were and what Disney Co. was about. One of the best in this type of source was *The Art of Walt Disney from Mickey Mouse to the Magic Kingdom* by Christopher Finch (NY: Harry N. Abrams, Inc., 1975.)

* Another type of source were the standard biographical reference books,, such as *Who's Who, Who's Who in the West* (1951), *World Biography, Who Was Who,, Current Biography 1952,* etc.

* Another type of source was critics of Disney's movies such as several articles exposing the Lion King, *Media Spotlight's* article Fantasia, Rush Limbaugh's comments and statements concerning how Disney had betrayed its viewers' trust, the *Spotlight's* Feb. 26, '96 p. 31 article "Disney Turns Back on Family Values."'

· Another type of source was magazine and newspaper articles about Disney such as the Oregonian's art. on a Disney director being a convicted child molester. *NY Times, Newsweek* and other magazine and newspaper sources. An important series of extremely good investigative reports which were written by Harry V. Martin for the *Napa Sentinel* in 1989 were very important in learning of some of the Illuminati/CIA/Contra/Drug Running activities in Napa Valley, CA that Roy Disney is associated with. Harry V. Martin went into all kinds of records and did an excellent job of investigative reporting. The magazine *Monde 2000,* no.12, had an article on non-lethal weapons that the NWO is developing. This article was reprinted in *Encounter Chronicles Journal of Scientific Intelligence,* and discussed how Disney has been working with Sandia Labs and Los Alamos.

· Another type of source were victims of Illuminati mind-control, who have recovered memories of being programmed at Disneyland and Disneyworld.

· Another type of source has been to watch Disney movies as an investigative tool to understand how Disney is programming, how they are skillfully indoctrinating the American people into witchcraft, etc. This author has also personally been to both Disneyland, near Anaheim, CA and Disneyworld, near Orlando, FL.

· Another source was the Walt Disney Co.'s Annual Reports, and also the reference book *Directory of Corporate Affiliations* (1986) published by the National Register Pub. Co.

· Another type of source were books which specialized in covering details about Disneyland such as *Disneyland And Beyond the Ultimate Family Guidebook* (edited by Ray Riegert, and printed by Ulysses Press of Berkeley, CA); and *Walt Disney's Disneyland* (by Martin A. Sklar and introduced by Walt Disney.) AAA had a 27 page booklet *"Disneyland Park and Southern California"*, which came out in 1996, which provides information on what is being offered at Disneyland and vicinity. The book refers repeatedly to "Disney Magic". One has to wonder how Christians and non-occultic persons can't see how occult Disney is.

-

Partial BIBLIOGRAPHY

BOOKS.

AAA. *Disneyland Park and Southern California.* 1996.

the Walt Disney Co.'s *Annual Reports.* pub. by the Walt Disney Co. annually.

Auletta, Ken. *Three Blind Mice.* NY: Random House, 1991.

Cluran, Richard M. *To the End of Time.* Rockefeller Ctr, NY, NY: Simon & Schuster.

Commander M. *The Controllers: A New Hypothesis of Alien Abductions.* (subtitle Alien Abductions, or Government Secret Mind Control Black R&D Programs). 88 pages long. 1990.

Current Biography 1952

Directory of Corporate Affiliations (1986) published by the National Register Pub. Co.

Eliot, Marc. *Walt Disney Hollywood's Dark Prince.* NY, NY: Harper Paperbacks, 1993.

Finch, Christopher. The *Art of Walt Disney from Mickey Mouse to the Magic Kingdom.* NY: Harry N. Abrams, Inc., 1975.

Hagstrom, Robert G. Jr. *The Warren Buffett Way.* NY: John Wiley & Sons.

Hulteng, John L. *The Messenger's Motives, Ethical Problems of the News Media.* Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice-Hall, Inc., 1976.

Jackson, Kathy Merlock. *Walt Disney, A Bio-Bibliography.* Westport, CN: Greenwood Press.

Landis, Bill. *Anger, The Unauthorized Biography of Kenneth Anger.* NY: HarperCollins Pub., 1995.

Moldea, Dan E. *Dark Victory, Ronald Reagon, MCA and the Mob.* NY, NY: Viking, 1986.

Mosley, Leonard. *Disney's World.* Stein & Day: NY, 1985.

Neelands, Barbara. *About Ben Sharpsteen.* Second Impressions, No. 1 A Sharpsteen Museum Reprints Project, Calistoga, CA: Sharpsteen Museum, July, 1990.

Riegert, Ray, ed. *Disneyland And Beyond the Ultimate Family Guidebook.* Berkeley, CA: Ulysses Press of Berkeley, CA.

Schickel, Richard. *The Disney Version.* NY: Simon & Schuster, 1968.

Siu, R.G.H. *The Craft of Power.* NY, NY: Quill, William Morrow & Co.

Sklar, Martin A. (with intro by Walt Disney) *Walt Disney's Disneyland.* Walt Disney Prod., 1969.

Smoodin, Eric. *Disney Discourse Producing the Magic Kingdom.* Routledge: NY, 1994.

Stein, Jeff, ed. *The Basic Everyday Encyclopedia.* NY, NY: Random House, 1954.

Sterling, Claire. *Thieves World -The Threat of the New Global Network of Organized Crime.* NY: Simon & Schuster, 1994.

Taylor, John. *Storming the Magic Kingdom.* NY: Alfred A. Knopf, 1987.

Thomas, Bob. *Walt Disney An American Original.* Hyperion (Disney): CA, 1994.

Wallechinsky, David and Irving Wallace and Amy Wallace. *The Book of Lists.* 666 5th Ave., NY, NY: Bantam Books, 1978.

Wallechinsky, David and Irving Wallace. *The People's Almanac.* Garden City, NY: Doubleday and Co., 1975.

Who's Who, Who's Who in the West (1951), *Who Was Who World Biography*

PERIODICAL SOURCES

Carson, L. Pierce, Who's Who in the Napa Valley, *Appellation,* Oct/Nov. '95

George Magazine, ""Here Comes the Son'", Dec. Vol. 1, No. 10.

House & Garden, "Sticks and Stones, Mickey for Mayor?", Oct. 1, 1996, pp. 61 -68ff.

Martin, Harry V. *Napa Sentinel.* A series of articles in 1989 were very important in learning of some of the Illuminati/CIA/Contra/Drug Running activities in Napa

Valley, CA that Roy Disney is associated with. Harry V. Martin went into all kinds of records and did an excellent job of investigative reporting.

Monde 2000, no.12, had an article on non-lethal weapons that the NWO is developing. This article was reprinted in *Encounter Chronicles Journal of Scientific Intelligence,* and discussed how Disney has been working with Sandia Labs and Los Alamos.

Media Spotlight's article Fantasia,

Mother Jones, May-Ju', 97, p. 61.

NAPA VALLEY REGISTER, the following articles are samples of what was used:

"ABC Will Mount An Anti-Drug Campaign'" Friday, Jan. 10, 1997, p.1D

"Children's Books Get Red Carpet Treatment In Hollywood Films" May 16, 1996, p. SC

"Disney and McDonalds'" May 24, 1996

"Disney Buys ABC", Saturday, Aug. 19, 1995, D.

"Disney Earnings Up 28 Percent In Third Quarter", Friday, July 26, 1996, p. 8C

,,Disneyland Expansion Given OK" Wednesday, Oct. 9, 1996, p.D

'"Disney Links to McDonald's May Be Back. Thursday, Apr. 11, 1996, 7A

"Disney World Makes Sure World, Remember the Magic"" (by L. Pierce Carson), Sun., Oct. 20, '96

"Federal Employees Get Disney Tour" Saturday, Dec. 9,1995, p. 5A

"It’s Lights-Out For Main Street" May 14, 1996.

"An Overlooked, Different World Inside Theme Park" Sunday, Sept. 29, 1996, p. SC

"Mickey Going On The Road", Friday, 7/26/96, p. 8C ‘"Past and Future In Disney Community’", Friday, Oct. 4, 1996, p. iD

"Planned Parenthood Benefit On Sunday"--Events of Interest sect. on p. A2, Sept. 13, ‘96

"Pentagon Still Wastes Money", Mon., 4/15/96, p. 4B

Newsweek

"Power Failure" 12/23/96, p. 34-36; ‘"Sending an SOS at ABC", 5/12/97, p. 54-55

NY TIMES (the following are samples of what was used: Articles during the "50’s & ‘60’s were looked at. ,,Disney Offers Faux Memories of Atlantic City Boardwalk" by Joe Sharkey, Tuesday, Dec. 10, 1996 "Baptists Censure Disney On Gay-Spouse Benefits" Thurs. June 13, 1996, p. Ala

,,Disney to acquire 2 radio stations", 4/15/97, p. C4.

The PRESS DEMOCRAT (the following are example of what was used:)

"Baptists, Disney Paths Diverge" Saturday, June 29,

1996, p. D4

"Disney To Buy Stake In Web Company" 2/15/97, p.

E6

"Heavy Disney" Sunday, Oct. 20, 1996

"The Ins and Outs of Allen" by Frederic M. Biddle and

Renee Graham, On Q,, Sept. 29, 1996, p. 27

SAN FRANCISCO CHRONICLE (the following are examples of what was used:)

"Disney, Miramax Bond", May 10, 1996 "Disney Signs Asian Animator" "Miramax Plans To Make ‘Thoughtful" Films", 4/11/96

SAN FRANCISCO EXAMINER (the following are examples of what was used:)

"Disney Institute Is A Short Course In Creativity"" by Catherine Watson, Sunday, May 26, 1996, p. T9 ,,Mouse Matriculation Is A Great Experience"" by Catherine Watson, Sunday, May 26, 1996, p. T9 "Tomorrowland Jumps Into The Future", Sunday, July 14, 1996, p. T3

the *Spotlight’s* Feb. 26, ‘96 p. 31 article "Disney Turns Back on Family Values."

Time Magazine, "Job Hunting With Mike [Ovitz]" 2/24/97, p. 50; ‘"Hilton Has Room For ITT’" 2/10/97,

Wall St. Journal (many issues from several decades.) SOME OF OTHER SOURCES (used & not used).

· Various Disney brochures.//· Rush Limbaugh’s comments concerning how Disney had betrayed its viewers’ trust.//· Interviews w/ Napa Valley residents.

· Interviews with disgruntled insiders to the NWO.

· Interviews with various types of Disney victims. [Disney has used mafia-type tactics, i.e. death threats, to intimidate numerous people into selling their property. Roy E. Disney has been reported involved in these land thefts. Victims of this type of intimidation are in many states, but several prominent regions are Napa Valley, CA; Shenandoah Valley; Virginia, & FL Disney's land-grabbing operations could be a book in itself. This author has lots more research which I HAVE NO PLANS to reveal, which has been left w/ key others, such as the connections of VaVin, near Leon,VA, who produce Prince Michel de Virginia, whose chef & others connect to Belgium. The background of several key people, like Robert Podesta. Financial records, such as Fed. Judge Fern M. Smith (Burrows). ETC. This para. is not indexed.]

Bloodlines of Illuminati

By:

Fritz Springmeier, 1995

The Reynolds Bloodline

An examination of one of the leading Illuminati families. Part of my research on the family has been packed away and I hope to recover some more of it for another article.

THE REYNOLDS ARE A VERY ELITE ILLUMINATI FAMILY

The Reynold’s family is not one of the 13 primary bloodlines, but they are such a prominent Illuminati family within the 13 bloodlines that I have decided to single them out for another article on Illumanati bloodlines. Although the Reynolds are allied with many of the major Satanic bloodlines, including the Rothschilds, the DuPonts, the Rockefellers, the Graces and the Grays, they are especially close and intertwined to the Duke and Cullman families. (One example of a Duke/Reynold joint project is the Research Triangle Foundation.) It should be remembered that The Temporary National Economic Committee of Congress in 1937 which studied the super rich found that the Dukes and the Reynolds were among the top 13 wealthiest families in America. Further, my research at one place or another has shown that the Reynolds of the Illuminati variety have interacted with all of the other major Satanic bloodlines. These elite birds of a feather all flock together.

MY NEWSLETTER HAS REPEATEDLY EXPOSED MEMBERS OF THIS FAMILY

During the course of putting out this newsletter in ‘92-’95, I have had repeated opportunities to include various members of the Reynold’s bloodline in my exposes. It must always be borne in mind that a large share of each of these bloodlines are hidden behind other last names.

Within this area, my newsletter has exposed Reynold family members of the Illuminati from Astoria, Oregon (such as Scottish Rite Librarian/Mortician Reynolds) and Bend, Oregon (such as Mayor Paul Reynolds who also runs a mortuary, and his son Mark). One of the first Illuminati Monarch slaves in the Portland area to seek her freedom was Mary D. Reynolds. She was from the Mother of Darkness level. She wanted to find treatment for the programming that goes with the Niother of Darkness level, and since wanting her freedom it is anybody’s guess what happened to her.

OCCULT BOOKS

Some of the Reynolds family have written occult books. I don’t know how all the people mentioned in this section are related, but some or all of these people may relate to the Satanic Reynold’s bloodline. One of the important ecumenical Christian leaders is Frank E. Reynolds who is an American Baptist Minister (ordained 1955, Program dir. Student Christian Ctr. Bangkok, Thailand, Minister for Chicago Ecumenical Ministries ‘61-‘64.) Frank E. Reynolds has been trying to introduce Buddhism to America. He and his wife Mani have written a number of books to introduce and teach Buddhism to Americans. Many of the Reynolds have been Episcopalians. Remember the Episcopalian Church is run by Freemasons and is thoroughly sold out to the occult. One of my Monarch survivors vividly recalls a human sacrifice done at the altar of an Episcopalian church. Anyway, getting back to the names of some Reynolds who have written occult books, here is a list of some:

Barrio Gordon Robert Reynolds--author of Magic. Divination & Witchcraft among the Barotse of Northern Rhodesia (1963)

Charles R. Reynolds w/ Regina Reynolds--authors of One Hundred Years of Magic Posters (1977)

David K. R. Reynolds--author of Naikan Psychotherapy: Meditation for Self-Development pub. by Chicago Press.

Denise AR. Reynolds--Sensitive Thoughts for the New Wave Soul.

Mani R Reynolds w/ her husband--Three Worlds According to King Ruana: A Thai Buddhist Cosmology Frank E. Reynolds--Guide To Buddhist Religion

Jane Reynolds--Cosmobiology

Lloyd J. K.-- Mv Dear Runemeister: A Voyage Through the Alphabet

OVERVIEW OF FINANCIAL INTERESTS OF THE REYNOLDS

Before we get into the nitty-gritty let's take a quick overview of the Reynold's financial interests. Much of the family's money has been well-hidden behind fronts, holding companies, etc. The Satanists of the Reynolds family have been involved in high level drug dealing during this century. They have also had some important and major interests in Banking, Tobacco, and Aluminum, it seems like a fair number have gotten into the mortuary/cremation business, which is a great assistance for cremation after rituals involving human sacrifice. The financial interests of the Reynolds seem to be strongest in the Middle South, and strong in both Virginia and North Carolina. The Reynold's financial interests are so tightly woven in with the Cuilmans and Dukes that I will have to deal with all three families together. A few years ago the financial heads of the three families were as follows: Angier Biddle Duke, Richard S. Reynolds, Jr., and Joseph F. Cullman, 3rd. All were members of the Pilgrim Society. It is possible that the family also has sonic type of secret spiritual hierarchy too. If so, it might follow along the lines of the top 13 families which have kings and princes, and princesses, etc. of their bloodilnes. Richard S. Reynolds, Jr. has been a board chairman of Robertshaw Controls Company, which has a strangelhold monopoly on manufacturing car thermostats and other car parts. The big three American auto manufacturers all buy from Robertshaw Controls Company; but then since all 3 of the American auto manufacturers are Illuminati controlled, they likely don't care that the Reynolds family has such a stranglehold on them. Cadence which own theaters and has published occult comic books like the series, "Journey into Mystery With The Mighty Thor" is also tied to the Reynolds family. Cadence promotes the occult while making money. What American doesn't know what 'Reynold's wrap" is. The Reynold's name is a well-know household name just like DuPont paints, or the Rockefeller Center, or the Waldorf Astoria are well known American items named after Illuminati families. The Reynolds family controls several Aluminum companies which form a large part of the Illuminati-controlled Aluminum cartel. The Mellon family works with the Reynolds in this Aluminum cartel, and various Illuminati families also have their hands in the management of the Aluminum industry.

THE TOBACCO-DRUG CONNECTION

The Reynolds family is behind the RJ. Reynolds Tobacco Co. C. Boyden Gray of the Satanic Grey/Gray family is heir to the RJ. Reynolds Tobacco Co. But don't let that sidetrack you, the Reynolds family still has financial interests and power in the company. If readers remember previous articles on top 13 Illuminati families--specifically, the Astor family article, the Onassis family article and the Li family article you will remember some details that will help you understand the secret illegal drug trade that the Reynold’s got involved in. The British elite got involved in shipping opium. The elite families got monopolies on the opium trade. The British empire’s military might and political clout was used to force China to allow the opium trade- Before the communists took over China, the British Illuminati families hid their opium trade behind the cover of the British American Tobacco Co. Later the Red Chinese would hide their opium trading behind the same front tobacco, with their state-run People’s Republic of China Tobacco Bureau. In fact, the Red Chinese opium trade was controlled by another Illuminatus, the P.R. President Li Xiannian. Li Xiannian is from the occult U family who are proud that they are the leading oriental Satanic family. President Li, a drug lord was finance minister of Red China from ’57-’75. He sold so much opium to the west that he was able to help Red China pay off her debts, and he was nicknamed ‘the money god.’ RJ. Reynolds was a partner with British American Tobacco Co. and was also involved in trading in opium for many years. R.J. Reynolds was also involved with the rigidly controlled tobacco industry. I have reasons to suspect that the family later got involved with running cocaine. Onassis also hid his early drug smuggling behind tobacco importing. The Dukes controlled Liggett & Nlyers Tobacco via their Duke Endowment, a family foundation. The Cuilmans are known for their Miller Brewing Company. The Culiman fortune was also originally derived via a tobacco company. The Duke family via underhanded tactics put together a monopoly of the tobacco industry called the American Tobacco Company. Later they merged and bought out 88 tobacco companies, and the capitalization of the company was $235 million prior to 1911. The Supreme Court made the American Tobacco Company dissolve since it had created an illegal monopoly. However, the Dukes rearranged things and kept on going. The Dukes intemamed with the Biddies who worked with the Rothschilds. The Dukes also intermarried with the Drexels, who in turn intermarried with the Harrimans and Goulds. Nicholas Biddle (1879-1923) was a trustee of the Illuminatus William Astor of the top 13 Illuminati family of Astors. Some of the Biddies intermarried with the Astors Illuminati family too! It’s a small world at the top. Researcher Ferdinand Lundberg in his book America’s 60 Families states on p. 36, "The Morgan firm and its affiliated commercial banks act, broadly, on behalf of such tremendous accumulations as those of the Vanderbilts, Goulds, Drexels, Wideners, Berwinds, Phippses, Hills, Dukes, Ryans, McCormicks, Bakers, DuPonts, Fishers, Jameses, and Others.’ Isn’t it interesting that my writings have exposed the Morgans, Vanderbilts, Goulds, Drexels, Phippses, Dukes, Bakers, DuPonts as families with members in the Illuminati?

CONNECTIONS TO ILLUMINATI ORGANIZATIONS

Many of the Illuminati organizations which this newsletter has exposed have had members from the Reynolds family. Some examples of this follow:

COSMOS CLUB Joseph Melvin Reynolds, Lloyd George Reynolds

COUNCIL OF FOREIGN RELATIONS (CFR). A. William Reynolds

PILGRIM SOCIETY: Richard S. Reynolds, Jr.

33° MASONS. Harman Gansvort Reynolds, Marshall S. Reynolds

32° MASONS: Arthur Rowley Reynolds, Benn Phillips Reynolds, Charles Phillip Reynolds, Charles Shaw Reynolds, Erwin James Reynolds, Isaac Reynolds, Harry Edwards Reynolds, Henry James Reynolds, John C. Reynolds (Deputy Grand Secy of Grand Lodge of Illinois)

KNIGHTS TEMPLAR MASONS. (These 3 KT names all come from just one Lodge in NY--Jerusalem Chapter

No. 8) Alex Reynolds, J. Hyatt Reynolds, T. Spaulding Reynolds

KNIGHTS OF MALTA John Charles Reynolds, who worked for the Graces as a communications executive, trustee of the Presb. Hospital in San Juan.

FOUNDATIONS & CONNECTIONS

The Dukes and Reynolds use tax-free foundations as a vehicle to escape taxes and hid their wealth while maintaining their financial power. Other Illuminati families also used the foundations as a scheme to remain powerful and to resist paying taxes. The controlled press builds them up as charitable, when most of the grants by these foundations are self-serving for the benefit of the elite. Some of these foundations are the Z. Smith Reynolds Foundation (est. ’36 in North Carolina), the Kate B. Reynolds Foundation (est. ’46 in North Carolina), the Richard S. Reynolds Foundation (est. ’55 in Virginia), and the Mary Reynolds Babcock Foundation, and the Duke Endowment (address at Rockefeller Plaza, NY). All of these foundations work for the Illuminati. The Donald W. Reynolds Foundation (est. ’54 in Nevada and then moved to Arkansas) might also be connected to the elite--but I don’t know. The Kate B. Reynolds Health Care Trust provides another example of a liaison between the Duke and Reynolds families. John A. McMahon, a Duke University grad, served as BOTH chairman of the board of trustees of Duke University and since 1971 as a member of the advisory board to the Kate B. Reynolds Health Care Trust. Here is an example of a single man working for the interests of both the Dukes and Reynolds. Edwin C. Whitehead, chairman of Technicon Corp. serves as a similar example of a man working for both Duke and Rockefeller interests. Whitehead is a trustee of both Duke University and Rockefeller University. He also has been in charge of several NWO organizations promoting a one-world, for instance he was Governor of the U.N. Association. This article will now show you the reader some of the grants that these foundations make. I ask you, "Do you see any possibility for any mischief behind these grants?! What I noticed about the Reynolds grants is that they control all the crisis centers in the North Carolina area via their money. This means any survivor of SRA calling a hot line is going to get tapped into the Illuminati’s net for catching escapees! I also noticed that all the colleges and universities got money, and a variety of different denominations incl. the Baptists, the Methodists, the Non-denominationalists, the Presbyterians, and the Ecumenicalists. What surprised me was that a number of government agencies get money from the Reynold Foundations, especially those dealing with children like Social Services, and even Police Departments get money from the Reynolds Foundations.

IN 1984 the Z. SMITH REYNOLDS FOUNDATION in North Carolina gave money to these following organizations (plus some others not listed):

Catawba College - $75,000

Chapel Hill Police Department - $37,500

Child Watch - $25,000

Contact of Winston-Salem (a crisis counseling service) - $15,000

Council on Drug Abuse - $27,000

Elizabeth City State University - $50,000

Family & Children’s Service of (ireater Greensboro (they deal with Rape & Family Abuse) - $5,000

Friends of Public Radio - $25,000 (Note: they even want to control public radio!)

General Baptist State Convention of North Carolina - $85,000 (The love of money is the root...)

Mars Hill College - $30,000

Meredith College - $9,360

Montreat-Anderson College - $17,280

Moses H. Cone Memorial Hospital - $31,000

North Carolina Center for Public Policy Research - $225,200 (Wow!)

North Carolina Department of Human Resources (foster homes) - $12,000

North Carolina Department of Natural Resources - $30,000

North Carolina Department of Public Instruction - $103,000

North Carolina Hospital Education & Research Foundation - $50,213

North Carolina Justice Academy - $10,000

North Carolina School Boards Association - $7,500

Outer Banks Hotline (crisis Counseling) . $5,000

Pitt County Memorial Hospital - $35,000

Planned Parenthood of Greater Raleigh - $15,000 (The Illuminati foundations have been the big support behind

Planned Parenthood. The Van Duyn family was tied to Planned Parenthood in NY.)

Planned Parenthood of Orange Co. - $15,000

Religious Coalition for Abortion Rights Education Fund - $10,500

Rowan Cooperative Christian Ministry - $15,000

St. Mary’s Episcopal Church - $10,000

Salvation Army of Waynesville - $20,000

University of North Carolina - $233,265

Western North Carolina Amer. Meth.-Episco. Zion Church - $25,000

YMCA of Winston-Salem - $300,000

In 1989 there were more grants of a similar nature. The following are by just the Z. Smith Reynolds Foundation in 1989. I have picked (Jut a few to list so that the reader can get an idea of the breadth of their grants to religious bodies and child protective groups.

Advocates for Children in Court - $25,000

Child Care Resources - $40,000

Duke-UNC Center for Research on Women - $60,000

Ebenezer Baptist Church - $8,000

First Baptist Church - $15,000

God’s Harvest House of Deliverance Church $10,004)

Metropolitan A.M.E. Zion Church - $27,100

National Conference of Christians & Jews $5,000 (The Illuminati have always well financed this organization.)

Rape Crisis Center, Asheville, NC - $20,000

Religious Coalition for Abortion Rights Education Fund - $7,500

St. Andrews Presbyterian College - $50,000

Women's Abuse Shelter - $15,000

I don't want to take more time and space with listing foundation figures, 1 hope the reader gets the picture of how these foundations are able to control society for the Illuminati. We see government agencies, especially the ones that the Illuminati would want to make sure they controlled are well supported financially. People who live in the Carolinas & Virginia report that the corruption in those states in absolute. These statistics give some facts behind those statements. One organization receiving money above deserves exposure. The Drug Abuse Council (Council on Drug Abuse) has been headed by an Illuminatus & Pilgrim Society member Bethuel M. Webster.

R.J. REYNOLDS INDUSTRIES

R.J. Reynolds Industries of Winston-Salem, North Carolina had an annual sales of over $6 billion and 37,000 employees. I have the 1976 profit figure for the company was $353 million. I don't know what the current figures are. The public thinks that the shares are widely held by the public, while in reality the control is very narrow. The Reynolds were careful when their stocks went on the market to retain secret control. R.J. Reynolds Industries chairman was Colin Stokes. Colin Stokes is an interesting person who works for the Reynolds. He was a member of Kiwannis International, and a director of several key things, dir. of Winston-Salem Savings & Loan, Integon Corp., and NCNB Corporation which is the bank holding company of North Carolina National Bank. The NCNB, which at one time had assets of $4.647 billion (it may be more now) has been the largest of the Middle South banks and is a key component of the Reynold/Duke/Cuilman clique. From 1958 to 1964, Stokes was a director of the William and Kate B. Reynolds Memorial Park, and further serves the Reynolds as trustee of the Wake Forest Univ. Another interesting liaison person for the Reynolds has been J.P. Sticht, a director of R.J. Reynolds, who has acted as a liaison between the Reynolds, Duke, and Rockefeller dynasties. Sticht is a member of Rockefeller University Council, and a member of the board of visitors to Duke University. Leighton Hammond Coleman, who is in the Illuminati from the Satanic Coleman family, also sits as emeritus director of RJ. Reynolds Industries. His father and him both belonged to the Pilgrim Society, which is a level above the CFR in the Illuminati political section. His father was a director of the corrupt American-Russian Chamber of Commerce which has been previously exposed in my writings. Now readers can see why RJ. Reynolds Industries has been one of the top companies trading with Communist Russia in the past. Another director of RJ. Reynolds Industries is John D. Macomber, a 1950 Yale graduate. (I don't know if he belonged to one of the Illuminati's 5 fraternities at Yale or not.) Macomber married into the Illuminati Morgan family, and is a member of the Pilgrim Society. Besides being a director for Li. Reynolds, he serves the Rockefellers as a director of Chase Manhattan. He is also dir. of Norlin Corp. Gordon Gray, of the satanic Gray family, also sits on the Li. Reynolds board. Both Gordon Gray and John Macomber belong to the CFR.. Gray also went to Yale ('33 grad.) and was with Triangle Broadcasting run by Pilgrim Society member Walter H. Annenberg (who is close to being a billionaire). As you can see, some heavy duty Illuminati men direct Li. Reynolds Industries. Gray, a member of the CFR., also served as a liaison to the Corcoran financial interests. William W. Corcoran was a corrupt Washington banker who had a lily white front. Corcoran bribed the chairman of the House Ways & Means Committee so that he could illegally profit a half million dollars for being the middle man of the transaction of the U.S. paying off its debt to Mexico for lands taken during the Mexican War. (See Reports of Committees, Thirty-third Congress, First Session, Volume iii, # 354:4.) The U.S. did not need a middle man to pay off Mexico, but due to corruption in Congress, Corcoran was able to make a bundle of money with no effort. Riggs Bank is associated with the Corcoran fortune. CFR & Yale Grad & Pilgrim Soc. member William McChesney Martin, Jr. has worked for Riggs National Bank as their advisor. The multitude of connections of people serving the Reynolds to the elite are mind-boggling. Many of the institutions in the Middle South connect back to the Illuminati and their front organizations such as the Freemasons and the Chambers of Commerce, the CFR etc. etc. Some of the companies that R.J. Reynolds Industries interlocks with are Arista Co., Avon Products, Charlette, NC branch of the Federal Reserve Bank of Richmond, Dun & Broadstreet Companies, Foremost-McKesson Inc., Hatteras Income Securities, Hayes-Albion Corp., Jefferson Pilot Corp., McClean Industries, Northwestern Mutual Life Insurance, Perkin Elmer Corp., Richardson-Merrell Inc., S.C. Johnson & Sons Inc., Southern Broadcasting Inc., Standard Oil Co. of Indiana, Standard Savings & Loan, Stauffer Chemical Co., United States Filter Corp., United States Steel Corp., Wachovia Corp. I doubt if this is current information, but needless to say, Li. Reynolds Industries today interlocks with many other corporations.

OTHER REYNOLD/DUKE COMPANIES

The Reynolds Metals Company- notice I wrote "Metals Company"- interlocks with a large number of companies too. The Reynolds Metals Company has had most of its directors from the Reynold's family. Recently, four were on the board of directors and one was the company treasurer. One of companies that the Reynolds Metals Company interlocks with is the Bank of Virginia. The Bank of Virginia in turn interlocks with a long list of companies. A large share of these companies have directors that tie back to the elite. Some of these corporations have directors who are members of the Pilgrim Society, others are with other Illuminati organizations. If the entire set of interlocks and there directors were exposed it might have an emotional impact on the reader, but it gets wearisome to the eyes to be stressed with so many lists, so I will dispense with listing other interlocks. Terry Sanford has worked for the Duke family as a director of the American Arbitration Association, which is an Illuminati front. The Astor family is represented in the AAA by David W. Peck. Terry Stanford has been an FBI agent, is the former governor of North Carolina, and president of Duke University. Stanford is also chairman of the Cordell Hull Foundation for International Education which had another Duke/Reynolds henchman Dean W. Colvard as its trustee. Colvard also has been an advisor to the Illuminati controlled Kellogg Foundation of Battle Creek, MI. Reynolds Securities in New York has been run by William Christian Miller, a member of the Pilgrim Society. William Christian Miller, an Illuminatus, has sat on the board of many corporations. Richard S. Reynolds, Jr. of the Illuminati has sat on the board of Central National of Richmond Corp. which is a holding company for the Central National Bank of Richmond. His younger brother David has sat on the board of United Virginia Bancshares Board. Hugh Culiman is a director of United Virginia Bancshares. Hugh's cousin is in the Pilgrim Society. Hugh is also president of Philip Moms Inc., Richmond Corp., and Foreign Policy Association, and the International Chamber of Commerce. Also working with him on the board of United Virginia Bancshares has been Herbert Stein, a director of Reynolds Metals Company. Stein also worked for L.F. Rothschild and Company as a consultant from 1976 onward. Another director working with Stein, David Reynolds, and Hugh Cullman is Kenneth A. Randall, a Mormon. Kenneth A. Randall is a trustee of the Rockefellers Council of the Americas and works with various Illuminati members at other places too. Some of the Reynolds are Mormons. George Reynolds wrote Commentary on the Book of Mormon and Commentary on the Pearl of Great Price. Eskimo Pie Co. is just one of many that the Reynolds have controlled. Julian Louis Reynolds is on both the board of the Metals Co. and the Eskimo Pie Co.

REVIEW ABOUT REYNOLD COMPANIES

This article has only touched on what the Reynold family operates. However, the thrust of what this part of the article is saying is that the Reynold family works with many other elite Illuminati families, and is active in banking, aluminum, and tobacco. SUMMARY OF PART 1.--The Reynolds family is an elite Illuminati family which ranks right up there with the top 13 Illuminati families. They have a very extensive power base but are strongest in the Middle South.

SOME REYNOLDS OF NOTE -- KNOWN ILLUMINATI MEMBERS ARE GIVEN 3 ASTERIKS ***

Mrs. Mn. Reynolds Forsyth- Officer of Richard S. Reynolds Foundation

A. William Reynolda*** - CFR

Billy I. Reynolds-script writer for television and radio, Methodist, lives in VA

Dana Drummond Reynolds-worked w/ UN symposium for New Inter. Econ. Order in 1979, mmbr World Future Society, advisor for USOM to Libya, extension training advisor to Afghanistan, worked for ABC network ’47-48, mmbr Planetary Citizens (A New *Age* globalist group), Kappa Tau Alpha, Ctr, for Study Democracy, went to George Wash. University

David Parham Reynolds-dir. Reynolds Metal Co., Reynolds Alum. Sales Co., Eskimo Pie Co., Reynolds Jamaica Mines, Ltd. Presbyterian living in Richmond, Virginia.

Debbie Reynolds-original name Mary Francis Reynolds, movie actress, had the Debbie Reynolds show

Donald Worthington Reynold-owner of 6 radio stations, and a newspaper/book publisher, lives in ARK

J Berkley Reynolds-Sd of Directors Billy Graham Evang. Association in Canada.

John W. Reynolds-Fed. Judge

Joseph Allen Reynolds, Jr-banker, mmbr several fraternities, Episco.

Joseph Melvin Reynolds-mmbr Cosmos Club, physicist, univ. official, grad. Vanderbilt Univ. '48 & Yale '47

Jullan Lewis Reynolds--Libby Holman Reynolds-chief donor for the Christopher Reynolds Foundation

Lloyd George Reynolds***-economist, eco. professor Yale ’46-47, Guggenheim Fellow 54-55, lives at Yale Univ. mmbr Cosmos Club

Norman Eben Reynolds, Jr-lawyer, b. Muskogee, OK & lives in Okia. City, belongs to several fraternities

Randolph Nicholas Reynolds-son of William Gray Reynolds, has a son Robert Gray Reynolds, banker, dir Dominion Nat Bank, VA. Episco.

Richard S. Reynolds, Jr.*** - Pilgrim Society

Russell Seaman Reynolds, Jr.- pres. Russell Reynolds Assoc., Yale 54, important figure in Republican party, on Adv. bd. for Greater

NY’s Salvation Army, worked for at least two Morgan companies (J.P. Morgan, Morgan Guaranty), likes Yachting, Society of Colonial Wars (an elite organization)

William Francis Reynolds-b. Boston, married a Fitzgerald, Harvard 51, instruc at MIT,

William Glasgow Reynolds-lawyer, Judge, government employee, married Nancy Bradford duPont, worked for E I. duPont de

Nemours & Co. from 1935-71, Mem. vis. com. Law School, Vanderbilt Univ., Episcopalian, wrote a history book on the Reynolds.

Bloodlines of Illuminati

By:

Fritz Springmeier, 1995

McDonald Family

When one thinks of the name McDonald one immediately thinks of the fast food hamburger chain which has francises all over the world. The McDonald’s Corp. has been rumored for years to be connected to Satanism. In fact a book which tries to debunk belief in a Satanic conspiracy entitled Satan Wants You reported the rumor that Mc Donald’s owner Ray Kroc tithed to the Church of Satan. (see Satan Wants You, pg. 140). Ray Kroc does spend time with NWO elites and is a member of the Bohemian Grove. There is no doubt that the McDonald’s Corp. has an inside track with the Illuminati, because the U.S. government has given according to one source 40 million dollars in public tax money to McDonalds to help them set up McDonald Restaurants in foreign countries under the disguise that this was money spent on foreign policy. In 1991, the total of McDonald outlets (restaurants) in the 3 primary European nations of Britain, France and West Germany totalled 959 restaurants.

In spite of the millions of dollars of tax dollars the U.S. has given to McDonalds Corp., the money doesn’t seem to be directly connected to the McDonalds family, because the McDonalds family (Richard and Maurice McDonald known as ‘Dick" and "Mac") which started the restaurants in 1937 were bought out by Ray Kroc around 1954. By the time Ray Kroc had bought out the McDonald brothers, they had a very successful business going. The McDonald brothers lived in the rich section of San Bernadino, and had around 11 McDonald restaurants. The brothers made about $100,000 profit a year and were quite content. The McDonalds had designed the golden arches and had put together the tast food concept and had been selling franchises. However, the McDonalds were too content. The McDonalds didn’t want to expand, and when Ray Kroc formed McDonald’s System. Inc. on Mar. 2, 1955 after buying out the brothers with borrowed money, he vigourously went to work to develop Mconalds into the International Francise that it is. Ray Kroc (bn. 10/5/194)2 in Oak Park. Chicago) lived frugally for many years putting his whole life into building up the McDonald’s francise. It was his drive that took a good idea and changed it from a success in Hollywood and San Bernadino into an international success. Ray Kroc knew a good idea when he saw it, and developed other people’s good ideas into a great success.

James A. Collins, chairman of Collins Foods International, now the largest Kentucky Fried Chicken franchisee and the operator of Sizzler Restaurants talked about his time with the McDonalds in 1952, ‘There was a fraternity of us, and every one of us saw the McDonald’s in San Bernadino and basically copied it after the boys [the McDonald brothers gave us a tour." "We all took our lessons from the Mcdonald brothers," Collins remembers. The concepts that francises pay for the McDonald brothers were giving out free, and Collins turned around and began getting $100 a day training people from Carnation, with the concepts that the McDonalds had shared. Henry’s Drive Ins and Ken’s were McDonald look-alikes that started from people trained by Collins. Glen Bell who started Taco Bell, who patronized the McDonald’s main restaurant in San Bernandino started Taco Bell from ideas from McDonalds. The first year Collins imitated McDonalds with his own fast food restaurant, Collins made $80,000 a year take home pay. The McDonald brothers became a part of the local elite of San Bernadino, CA along side such rich local families as Guthrie, Stater, and Harris. Readers are reminded of all the articles in my newsletters about how San Bernadino is a major headquarters for the Illuminati and Satanic Hubs because there are so many thousands of practicioners of black magic in the area. I do know from working with survivors of the Illuminati that the McDonald family has part of their people in the Illuminati. How far back does the McDonald family go in the occult? The McDonald family was a Scottish clan that was part of Druidism. Many of the McDonald have gone on to serve Christ. However, there is still a large powerful contingent of the McDonald family which is connected to the Mystery Religions, and which has family members who are part of the Illuminati. Each of the major Scottish clans had an area that they controlled of Scotland. The McDonalds controlled the islands and coastal areas on the west coast of Scotland. When the Knights Templars tied persecution, in order to escape the various british fleets, they sailed a route that took them to western Scotland. During the time of King Philippe IV of France. the McDonalds were involved in the movement of the Knights Templars. The Knights Templars had adopted gnostic/satanic practices during the centuries they guarded the pilgrims in the Middle East. The Order had also become the International Bankers of Europe and large landowners in Europe. The King of France twisted the Pope’s arm (so to speak) to get him to go along with a campaign to eliminate the Knights Templars. Because the McDonald clan was in private still pagan. they were willing to help the Knights Templar escape the Pope’s decree against the Templars.

The Knights Templars were not the only International Bankers to move north. Later, during the 16th & 17th century, the elite satanic banking families moved their operations from southern Europe to Antwerp Flanders and then on to Amsterdam. Many of the Knights Templars lied to Scotland, where they helped Bruce, the King of Scotland. When the English invaded Scotland they were defeated by Bruce in an important battle named Bannockburn. Bannockburn kept Scotland free from England for the next 289 years. The Knights Templars fought with Bruce in the battle under the command of Angus Og McDonald, who was a large Scottish landowner and a friend of Bruce. Angus Og McDonald had previously in the 1308 time period given protection to the Knights Templars. The Knights Templars brought their treasures and their military might to Scotland & to the McDonalds. Many of the Knights Templars went on to the Orkeney Is., but some stayed in Scotland and became important in the occult world. The descendents of these Knights are still guarding some important occult relics, which may be revealed in the next few years. The Sinclair family has been part of the Prieure de Sion, Freemasonry and the Illuminati. Vice-pres. of the Sinclair Oil & Gas Co. in Tulsa in ’59-’61 was Marshall McDonald, who was an active Freemason who married into the Collins family. Note that the cities/towns Tulsa, Wagoneer, Muskogee, Broken Arrow in Okla. are totally controlled by the Illuminati. The atmosphere in these little towns SW of Tulsa has been described as oppressive & prone to violence by people who have lived in them. One of the lodge systems set up by the Illuminati was the Jacobin Club (originally known as Club Breton). Its Jacobite members got financing from the Illuminati and were a big part of the cause of the French Revolution. The Jacobites also played a role in the early history of the United States and the American Revolution. The Jacobites had a number of aristocrats who were also secret Satanists as their leaders. They had a lodge in Rome. One of the Scottish Jacobites was Flora Macdonald. She saved Prince Charles Edward’s life. Etienne Jacques Joseph Alexandre Macdonald (Scottish blood) was a 330 Freemason & also an officer who fought on the side of the French Revolution. He went on to become a Marshall in the French army. In 1805. he became the Grand Administrator of the Grand Lodge Symbolique in France.

SOME NOTABLE MCDONALDS INCLUDE:

Ramsay McDonald--British Prime Minister during 1920s privy to insider info, and who was in favor of working with communist Russia. Ramsey McDonald was a member of the Fabian Society working for a socialist one-world government. He rubbed shoulders with Anne Besant and Clarke a disciple of llluminatus Mazzani.

Alexander McDonald (?-1910)- Pres. of Standard Oil of KT, bn. in Scotland, lived in Clifton, OH

Alonzo Lowry McDonald- U.S Marine (’50-’52), Member CFR, Illuminati, Lived in London, Zurich, and Paris. Asst to Pres. U.S. White House Staff Director 79-81

Angus Daniel McDonald (1878-1941)- Railroad pres. w/ all types of railroad leadership positions, Trustee of Notre Dame, Knight of Malta, member Bohemian Club

David George McDonald--Did secret medical & psychological research including secret research for the Neuropsychiatrical Research Unit in San Diego for the U.S. Navy in ‘62-63.

Donald S. McDonald--Bilderberger Steering Committee (this is the select Illuminati group of men who actually run the Bilderbergers), Canadian Minister of Defense, Trilateral Commission, Canada’s Institute of International Affairs (the equivalent of our CFR). and the director of the following: DuPont of Canada. the elites Shell Can Ltd., McDonald Douglas Corp., etc.

Christopher W. MacDonald - member of Bohemian Grove

Edmund B. MacDonald--member of Bohemian Grove Frank Bethume McDonald--NASA scientist involved with sending Pioneer 10 & 11 to Jupiter

George G. McDonald--member of Bohemian Grove

Graeme L. MacDonald--member of Bohemian Grove Dr. Gordon McDonald--astrophysicist who wrote that ‘enhanced electrical oscillations in the earth s atmosphere might be used to impair human brains..

Harold D. Macdonald--high ranking occultist in the SRICF which is a branch of the SRIA, which started many of the Satanic Kaballistic groups such as the OTO, the Golden Dawn, etc. Lived in Massachusetts.

Ian Bruce McDonald--member of Bohemian Grove

Prof. Dr. James E. McDonald--suicided by CIA after discovering their involvement with UFOs, McDonald had addressed the UN’s Outer Space Affairs Group concerning UFOs on 7 June 67. Why was this very informed scientist suicided?

Jeffry R. McDonald--A Grn. Beret doctor whose family was murdered by the satanic cult that Alinea Stockley belonged to. Ted Gunderson tried to help him legally. The murder was to hide an army/CIA/Satanic drug oper. Sir John A. McDonald (1815 -1891) - 1st Prime Minister of Canada, Freemason, Knight of the Order of Bath, Knights Templar, and member Lafayette Royal Arch Chapter, of Wash. D.C.

John Bartholomew McDonald (1844-1911)--Due to his father’s connections with the corrupt Tammany Hall in NY this railway engineer and railway executive was able to get important jobs. John built the NY subway system and when he died the electricity in all the subway system was shut off for 2 min. in respect. He built the Vanderbilt tunnels north of 42nd St. NY & other items. John Cecil McDonald (1924-) --32° Freemason, Shriner, National Republican Chrmn, on the Court of U.S Military Appeals, delegate to Rep. Nat. Convention in ‘64, ‘72, ’76, ’80, ‘84

John Garwin McDonald--oil executive John Warlick McDonald, Jr. (1922-) --llluminati member, lives in Arlington, VA. was with the U.S. Supreme Court 1951, was with the U S Military Govt. running Occupied German after W W Il--see the Krupp Illuminati family article in this newsletter. Worked with NATO, CENTO, CA, National War College, the UN, the State Dept., went to numerous (almost countless) UN conferences for the U.S. He was the U.S’s coordinator for the UN’s Drinking water work. He is a member of the Cosmos Club, and the Club of Rome.

Lovatt McDonald-Pres. of Draycott who has worked with P2 Freemasons in secret arm smuggling deals Linda McDonald--victim of Monarch Mind Control programming by Dr Ewen Cameron (Dr. White of the Illuminati) at Allan Memorial Hospital. Linda McDonald at the age of 58 and living at Vancouver, B.C. was able to prove that Cameron did programming using drugs, electroshock, psychic driving, depatterning, etc.) She has no memory of her childhood, but was able to prove that in 1963 at age 26 she was given mind control programming. Because the CIA had funded Cameron, the U.S. Fed. govt. gave her via the Canadian govt. a $100,000 settlement, if she would not talk. A newspaper did pick up on the settlement on 11/18/92 and I have reproduced that news article at the end of this article. The money was hush money, for it was stipulated for the $100,000 out of court settlement, Linda would keep quiet about her mind control.

Robert A. McDonald--member of Bohemian Grove W. Patrick McDonald--member of Bohemian Grove Walter Joseph McDonald- important CIA officer, Cath., lived in Annapolis, MD, bn. in Boston, MS.

McDonalds are publishers of occult books in the U.K.

MCDONALDS WHO AUTHORED OCCULT BOOKS & other notable titles.

Douglas R. MacDonald--The Scot's Book of Lore and Folklore

George McDonald--Wise Woman & Other Fantasy Stories (part of a series on the fantasy stories of George McDonald.)

John McDonald--The Magic Story Message of a Master

John Warlick McDonald, Jr.--The North-South Dialogue & the United Nations pub. by Georgetown Univ.

Michael MacDonald--Mystical Bedlam, publ. by Cambridge Univ. Press

Reby E. MacDonald--The Ghosts of Austwick Manor and A Contemporary Collection on Loan from the Rothschild Bank AG, Zurich

The McDonalds and MacDonalds (and some of the Donalds) are descendents from King Somerled. King Somerled helped expel the Vikings (Norsemen) from Scotland. King Somerled's son was Ranald and Ranald's son was named Donald. The grandson then became Argus Mor McDonald (mac means "son of") Argus's grandson married MacRorie and became Lordship of the Isles. The McDonalds were the chiefs of that area. Families that sought their protection sometimes took their name too. So it is not inconceivable that some of the Knights Templar bloodlines ended up one way or the other as McDonald. The powerful McDonald of Glencoe lived in Glencoe until the 1692 massacre by the English government against Francis Stewart sympathizers. Francis Stewart was the Grand Master of the witchcraft covens in that area of Scotland. and the McDonalds were supporters of him. Also in the 17th century the McDonalds were forced to participate with others in piracy.

There are some powerful Stewarts (also spelled Stuart) in the Illuminati today, some who are friends with the Rockefellers. At least one Stewart intermarried with a Rockefeller. Another Stewart has family members who own a series of theaters in California which have secret tunnels to day care centers so that children can be ritually abused and programmed. (This Stewart had a father in Satanism who was associated with the Hungarian palace.) James C. Stewart, a member of the Illuminati, built the Mormon's capital building in Salt Lake City, 60 Wall Tower in NY, and the Savoy Hotel in London that the Illuminati use for their Pilgrim Society headquarters. James belonged to the Pilgrim Soc. too. Now that the reader knows this, he or she will understand why this author did a doubletake when I ran across Stewart McDonald, who was the director of Savoy Plaza Hotel, in New York. a place frequented by the elite. Stewart McDonald was president of Army War Shows in '42-'43. See the article on the Van Duyns in this newsletter to understand the connections between the Army War Shows and the secret mind-control ops done in W.W.ll under the auspices of the Illuminati. Stewart McDonald was also the police commissioner in corrupt St. Louis, MO and the Fed. Housing Administrator for Wash. D.C., as well as being an auto manufacturer. There is a Stuart who actually has a stronger claim to the throne of England than Queen Elizabeth. He is 11th in line as a claimant, while she is only 13th. His claim is a carefully preserved secret by the media. Queen Elizabeth is of the Hannover Dynasty which is part of the 13th Illuminati bloodline. This Stuart claimant was recently asked if he would like to have the throne of the newly formed nation of Estonia, but he rejected it. The Stuart bloodline and their henchmen have been an important part of the leadership of Freemasonry down through the centuries.

The Scottish Stewart family, as well as the Cameron, Campbell, Douglas, Hamilton, and Montgomery scottish families were originally powerful families that came from Flanders area (now Belgium & north. France) which is today a strong point for the Illuminati. These families emigrated to Scotland in the 12th century and were part of the strong occult bonds between Scotland and the Flanders area. (Today, Flanders is divided between northern France and Belgium.) Later, Flanders became a banking center for the International Bankers. The Hungarian occult world also connects to Scotland with such ancient historical figures as Saint Margaret (a Hungarian noble), whose husband Malcolm Ceanmor murdered in real life Macbeth. Her son David introduced feudalism into Scotland, and she herself brought in Catholic Priests. There are many occult ties between Scotland. Flanders, Hungary, and Rome. Parts of the McDonalds continue to practice Druidism, which was the original religion prior to the Christians. The McDonald heritage goes back to the Picts and Gaelic people. Some of the McDonalds have become part of the Catholic hierarchy. I believe I know of five MacDonalds which have become Air Marshalls (top rank) in the British RAY. The names of these RAF Marshalls are: Someried Douglas McDonald, Thomas Conchar McDonald, Sir William McDonald, Air Commander John C. McDonald, and Major General John Frederick Matheson McDonald. The NWO has been called the Air Dictatorship because the NWO's air power will be so important, so it is significant that the RAF has had so many high officers who were MacDonalds. Just one example of the tie-ins, the british Minister of Aviation Roy Jenkins (64-65) has been part of the Trilateral Commission. Thomas Conchar MacDonald did secret research for the Air Ministry after WW II. He went to the Univ. of Glasgow. Another Marshall Sir William Laurence Niary) MacDonald was involved with British Air Force Intelligence. A number of other McDonalds have worked for intelligence agencies to, incl. David George McDonald, James Nlichael McDonald, Jr. etc. William McDonald was a doctor who worked with FDR in 1925.

Henry Ford also spent time with a doctor named William McDonald. A number of McDonalds are Bankers (or important in the Stock Markets) and in an attempt to keep this article brief I'll just list some of them: Andrew Jewett McDonald (Yale, USAF), Archibald MacDonald, Allen Colfax McDonald, Angus Daniel McDonald, John Garwin McDonald, William Henry McDonald (Can.), and Witten McDonald. Archibald NiacDonald is director of Joseph Freeman, Sons & Co., Ltd. as well as being important in other things. The Freeman family is one of the top 13 bloodlines and connects to the Prieure de Sion. Sir Peter George MacDonald has heen the director of Guardian Assurance Co. Ltd. which also has connections to the Freeman family and the Prieure de Sion. There are a long list of McDonalds who have served various governments all over the world in leadership positions. Danny Lee McDonald of Tulsa, OK served on the corrupt Federal Election Commission ('82-'83) as its vice-chairman, and from '83 onward he served as its chairman. William C. McDonald was the first state governor of New Mexico from 1911-17. The Freemasons ran the state at that time.

This author would wear the readers patience thin by describing all the McDonald's who have been in important government jobs. The policeman who found Lee Harvey Oswald after JFK was shot was a McDonald. This policeman was then assigned to protect Marinna Oswald (the widow of Lee Harvey Oswald). This heavy-set policeman McDonald (who attends the Oakridge Christian Church) has appeared on television recently such as on Channel 32, on Top Cops at 7:25 p.m. where he speaks out against conspiracy theories in the JFK assassination. The entire arrest of Oswald by M.N. McDonald is filled with questions. Jack Ruby was in the same theater. Oswald tried to shoot McDonald with an unloaded gun. Some unknown person had tipped McDonald off that Oswald was in the theater, and the police had for some reason already decided Oswald was guilty because while arresting him the policeman was heard saying by witnesses, "Kill the President, will you." And yet the Warren Commission said that Oswald was not a suspect until later. This is just one place of many where the McDonald family connects in with the larger Satanic conspiracy. Jack Ruby was involved with the Carousel Club which was tied to the Monarch Project. The assassination of JFK was done through Permindex, which was set up by Louis Mortimer Bloomfield, who worked for the Illuminati in SOE (British Special Operations Executive) within the US Army Intelligence. He worked for OSS and ran the FBI's Counter Intelligence Div. 5, while working for British SOE and the Illuminati. George DeMohrenschildt, Oswald's best friend or closest contact was himself an ex-Nazi spy who worked for the CIA. The Mob's'connections to the Top 13 Illuminati families is explained in the Van Duyn family article in this newsletter. Bear in mind, the mob had turned against JFK too. In summary. Some of the McDonalds have held important positions for the Illuminati, and part of the McDonald descendents are in the Illuminati. You will also find McDonalds very active in Protestantism and Catholicism. The McDonald family's involvement with the occult goes clear back to Druidism, and then the protection & leadership they gave to the Knights Templars. Today, some of the McDonalds are Barons, some are Bankers & some are leading intelligence and military men. > > EXHIBIT NEXT PAGE. News article that shows Linda McDonald was awarded hush money by the Canadian govt. & the CIA for MK-Ultra Mind Control programming.

Brainwash victims to receive $100,000'*Ottawa denies responsibilityfor experiments*

By Bob Cox

The Canadian Press

OTTAWA — The federal govern-ment will pay $100,000 each to vic-ims of brainwashing experiments funded by Canada and the CIA be-tween 1950 and 1965, Justice Min-ister Kim Campbell announced Tuesday. Ottawa is paying the money to avoid legal claims by victims or the experiments carried out by Dr. Ewen Cameron at Montreal's Allan Memorial Institute. As many as 80 people were In-volved, but It's not clear how many are still alive and eligible for the payments. Campbell said the government still does not admit any legal lia-bility or responsibility, but is pay. ing the money on compassionate and humanitarian grounds. But Linda Macdonald, a Van. couver woman who launched the court case that forced the settle-ment, said she considers the pay- ments an admission of responsi-bility and a symbolic apology.

My biggest concern has always been that the federal government acknowledge its responsibilIty in funding the experiments, so that we can hope that such abuse of patients rIghts will never happen again in this country," she said. Macdonald, now 55, underwent "depatterning" at Allan Memorial in 1903.As a mother of flve children un-der four years old, she was sent to the Institute suffering from fa-tigue and depression. She was treated as a schizo-phrenic, though never diagnozed as such. She was heavily drugged, kept asleep for 86 days, given over 100 electroshock treatments and subjected to "psychic "driving to She me rged five later barely able to function She couldn't read or write, use a toi-let, drive a car, cook a meal or make a bed. She didn't remember her husband, children or the first 26 years other life."1 accept tne governments syrn-bolic apology through compensa-tion, but no amount of money can compensate me for the loss of memory . . and the enormous df-f ficulties my family and I have suf fered Macdonald said in a state-ment. She was in Los Angeles on tues-day. talking to film producers about her story. Former patients at the Allan Memorial have sought compensa-tion from both the Canadian and U.S. government for years. The US. Central Intelligence Agency, wanting to learn more about brainwashing and psycho-logical deprograming, covertly gave $85,000 to Cameron between 1957 and 1962. Canada, as part of a national program of health care grants, gave about $70,000 between 1950 and 1954 and again between 1961 and 1964. The experiments ended in 1965. Canadian offlcials later said they dIdn't know of the CIA funding. In 1988, the U.S. Justice Depart-ment reached an out-of-court set-tlement that gave about $100,000 to each of nine Canadians treated under Cameron's CIA-funded ex-periments.T he Canadian govornment helped pay legal bills for those Canadians who sued the United States, but balked at paying Its own compensation. A 1986 report by George Coo-per, a Halifax lawyer and former Conservative MP, absolved Cana-dian authorlties of any blame and described Cameron's work as "in-cautious but not irresponsible." But Thomas Berger, Mac-Donald's lawyer, presented a re-port to the government in 1990 challenging Cooper's conclusions One u.s. doctor likened Cameron's research to brainwashing techniques used In Chinese prisons. A Justice Department official said he did not know how many people are eligible for the $100,000 payments. A number of former patients have already died. Only people still alive can apply for compensation. People can call a toll-free number — 1-800-267 4988 — for more information

Bloodlines of Illuminati

By.

Fritz Springmeier, 1995

THE KRUPPS & THE ILLUMINATI

One of the big lessons from history is that mankind doesn't learn from history. The history of the Krupp family which is in the llluminati would provide the world with a loud and clear warning for today. The first lesson that could be learned is how a military buildup and military intentions can be totally concealed for decades. Today, the New World Order has brought in hundreds of thousands of foreign troops into the United States, they have brought in thousands, if not hundreds of thousands of guillotines for executions, they have built a network of unused concentration camps across the U.S., they have built crematoriums next to these concentration camps, and yet most Americans appear to believe the lies of President Clinton and others just like they believed the lies of Krupp, and the German Chancellors BEFORE Hitler, and the German military leaders who were all well aware of the secret German buildup that began immediately after W.W. I ended! We are about to go into a New World Order that will be worse than Hitler's New World Order, but the power behind the scenes is the same -- the Illuminati getting their power from their centuries-old generational satanic practices. One ex-Illuminati thinks that the Krupp family became part of the Illuminati in 1836. The Halbach and Bohlen families had united in marriage prior to the Civil War. The Halbach family had large holdings of coal around Scranton, PA. I believe the Halbach family was part of the Illuminati, and the Halbach family married into the Krupps in 1906. ft appears that 1836 date can not be far off, because the record shows that the Krupp family began getting all kinds of favors from governments beginning late in the 1830s. Prior to this time period, too many things went the wrong way for the Krupp family for them to had any prominent role in the Illuminati leadership. In the summer of 1838, Alfred Krupp, head of the Krupp Factories left his business and went to Paris and then on to Liverpool. He quit travelling the Midlands of England that winter and lived in Liverpool, England for 5 months with an english family named Lightbody. By the summer of 1839, he was back in Essen, Germany. After that trip to England, the Krupp fortunes began to turn. The Alchemists were occultists who worked with chemicals and metals. The alchemists tie in with the Rosicrucians and the early renaissance researchers into chemistry.

The Krupps because they were involved in metalurgy also have been involved with chemicals. The first Krupp known about was Arndt Krupp who appeared out of no where (it is speculated he came from Holland) and arrived at Essen in 1587 a man of means and became a merchant in the area. His son Anton became one of the military arms dealers of the times. Anton's father-in-law ran a gunsmith trade where he made guns. By about 1650, the Krupps were Essen Germany's uncrowned kings" (according to the german book Die KRUPPS written by Norbert Muehlen. Frankfurt am Main: 1960, p. 13). They controlled the city government. In 1800, the Krupps went into steel and coal, and producing cannon. During the age of discovery when the New World was being explored the powerful occult oligarchies of Europe set up trading companies to carve up control of the world. The East India Company was one of the more notable of these elite controlled trading companies. These trading companies tie in with the occult world's leadership and the formation of drug cartels during the age of discovery. The 13 Illuminati families were participants in the narcotics cartel that was set up clear back before the United States became a nation. The roots of the cartels, go back to Knights Templars, the Knights of Malta and some of the Italian oligarchies who had been involved in narcotics trade for centuries.

That drug cartel has continued down through the centuries. I.G. Farben has been a 20th century part of the German element of the cartel. Clear back during colonial days, each of the various secret ruling occult families from England, Germany, France and the Netherlands were given a piece of the narcotics/chemical trade. The full story of the Krupp family would include how they tie in with I.G. Farben and the worldwide chemical monopoly that the Illuminati families have. It is clear that Gustav Krupp was informed of I.G. Farben's secret research into synthetic nitrates prior to W.W.I, because Gustav told the great German chemist Emil Fischer not to worry about the guncotton problem caused by low nitrate supplies. The Krupps faced a bigger problem during W.W.II in getting enough high grade animal fat for holding the cotton in place for explosives. This was solved by using the fat of people killed in the concentration camps. Since the Illuminati's Chemical cartel and I.G. Farben and Krupp were involved in the use of human products, the concentration camps were liberated by the Illuminati's men and the use of human fat, etc. covered up.

In our modern times two men of Illuminati from the Krupp family stand out, Alfred Krupp von Bohlen und Halsbach (1907-1967) and Charles "Chip" Bohlen (1904-1974). Chip Bohlen's grandfather and Alfred Krupp's great-grandfather were brothers. Alfred Krupp was the most powerful and richest man in the common market or Europe during the 1960s, and Chip Bohlen was one of the most powerful political ligures of the United States serving as the U.S. ambassador to the USSR for many years. New World Order leader and Chip's co-worker George F. Kennen described Chip Bohlen with the following: "No single person was present at more of the high-level diplomatic encounters of the wartime [WW II] and immediate postwar periods than Charles Bohlen." And yet how often are Americans told that while Charles Bohlen was advising Roosevelt to give the Soviets eastern Europe at Yalta in 1943. his relatives Gustav and Alfred Krupp were directing the manufacture of Hitler's best armaments? It's a small world at the top. On Jan. 21. '33, Papen told Hugenberg, 'We've hired Hitler." Although Hitler was very much his own person, the people who put him into power knew what they were doing. The Illuminati, as they so otten do, put their people in as Hitler's advisor and his bodyguard. Dietrich Stepp, Hitler's personal bodyguard, was in the Illuminati. They have done the same with numerous other people, for instance the surrounded Howard Hughs. Hitler was surrounded by Satanists who took orders from the Illuminati first and Hitler second. If you don't believe that Hitler submitted to the his Illuminati advisors, look at sonic of the changes that he made in Nazi doctrines over the years in his speeches to make sure that the elite of Germany were protected. Hitler backtracked on some of his stands.

Four important Illuminati advisors to Hitler were Rudolf Hess, Martin L. Bormann, Gustav Krupp and Alfred Krupp. Rudolf Hess was hidden by the Illuminati during W.W. II. There is a book out which shows the military medical records of the real Rudolf Hess who was wounded in W.W. I, and the medical records of the fake "Hess" who was imprisoned in Spandau prison after W.W.II. This is why the Nazi's on trial at Nuremberg laughed when they saw "Hess" for the first time in custody, they laughed because they knew he wasn't the real Hess. Bormann came from a generational occult family. Bormann's grandfather was Johann Friedrich Bormann (b. 1830) and his father was Theodor Bormann and his mother Louise Grobler. Bormann before joining the Nazi's had worked for Hermann von Treuenlels as a foreman on a farm. He was noted for his harshness, brutality and dominating personality. He also gave the orders for thugs to beat up a man named Walter Kadow, who died while being beaten. Bormann served some prison time for his involvement in Kadow's death. Bormann later as Hitler's no. 2 man used his position to enact some cruel measures on Europeans controlled by the Germans. All the leading Nazis agreed among themselves that Bormann was "Hitler's Lucifer." Goring stated at Nuremberg, "The decisive influence on the Fuebrer himself during the war, and particularly from 1942 on...was exercised by Herr Bormann. It was a disastrous influence."

Bormann held the highest Nazi rank, Reichleiter, and was Hitler's shadow everywhere, and yet most Germans didn't know who he was. When Hess disappeared early in W.W.II, Bormann took his position. Gustav Krupp saved the Nazi party in 1932. If it had not been for Gustav Krupp, Hitler would never have come to power. During 1932, the Nazi Party had offended many people and had lost greatly in the elections. Many of their big financial supporters had backed away and it looked like the party was going to shrivel up and die. Dr. Goebbels, of the Nazi Party wrote at this point in 1932, "...We are all very discouraged. particularly in the face of the present danger that the entire party may collapse and all our work be in vain. We are now facing the decisive test." Soon after he wrote, "The financial situation in Berlin is hopeless. Nothing but debts and obligations." At this point. Gustav Krupp threw his momentous influence and big money (100,000,000 German Marks) into saving the Nazi party from their precarious position. Gustav Krupp was perhaps the most powerful industrialist in Germany with perhaps the best steel factories in the world, and the weight of his help pulled the Nazi party up on its feet and to victory that year. When Krupp made his big financial contribution, Hitler assigned Bormann to keep track of all the money. From then on, Hitler's personal finances and some of the party's finances were totally controlled and oversaw by Martin Bormann, a member of the Illuminati. I say Gustav Krupp was "perhaps the most powerful industrialist"--only because I don't know anyone who knows how big Gustav Krupp was financially. Gustav Krupp was the sole owner, that is the sole proprietor of all his companies--there were no shareholders. Gustav Krupp owned a vast array of corporations and companies and properties all over the world. No one knows how much he owned, but he owned enough that his son who was the sole inheritor of all the Krupp fortune was able to have his factories totally destroyed by the allies in W.W. II, and then quickly rebuild by using money derived from foreign (non-German) holdings all over the world.

But was Hitler the person who led Germany to rearm and enter into W.W.II? Gustav Krupp began secretly rearming Germany immediately after W.W.I, in preparation for the next world war. The documentation that Krupp began planning and secretly

rebuilding German armaments in preparation for W.W. II IMMEDIATELY AFTER W.W. I IS INCONTROVERTIBLE. I suggest that doubters read William Manchester's massive book The Arms of KRUPP. 1587-1968. The German government cooperated. Agreements were reached with the Soviets soon after W.W.l ended to help the Germans secretly get around the strict requirements of the Versailles Treaty which greatly restricted Germany in many ways to prevent it from becoming a military power. On May 11, 1921, (;erman Chancellor Wirth, the leader of the German government signed the Versailles Treaty pledging disarmament. At the very same time he was fully cooperating with the Krupps and the military to rearm Germany secretly. Wirth was very adept at intrigue, and be and Krupp carried out international intrigue all over the world to pull off their secret military buildup. Today, the Illuminati are doing the very same thing. (More about this shortly.) When Hitler came to power, Gustav Krupp billed the Nazi government 300 Million for having secretly built up the German war machine during the 1920s, and the Nazi's paid it to Krupp. Later in 1943, during W.W. II when Gustav and Bertha wanted to hand their entire empire over to their first son Alfred, Alfred personally went to Hitler's secret underground hideout in East Prussia to get Hitler to personally make an exception to the German law that forbid passing everything in an inheritance to only one child. Hitler greeted Alfred with a great welcome and then let him talk to Martin Bormann. Remember, Bormann, a very brutal man, was part of the Illuminati. Alfred and Bormaun talked, and then Bormann directed Hans Lammers, the Nazi constitutional oracle to secretly proclaim:

"The firm of Fried. Krupp, a family enterprise for 132 years, deserves the highest recognition for its incomparable performances in boosting the military power of Germany. Therefore, it is my wish that the enterprise be preserved as a family property."

At the Nuremberg trials, Gustav was one of the Nazis at the top of the list of criminals to be tried, and Alfred was mistakingly not put on it until later. Gustav was declared unfit healthwise for trial, and Alfred was given very lenient treatment. Other Nazis put on trial were sentenced to death with less evidence and less crimes than Alfred. When the war ended, old man Gustav was at Bluembach Castle which is located at a remote site in the Austrian Alps. The American officer who captured the castle was Chip Bohlen's brother-in-law Col. Charles W. Thayer (in other words a relative to Gustav Krupp), who made sure the American troops did not loot the castle. This is a very strange coincidence, that of the millions of allied troops, a relative of the Krupps is the one to capture Gustav Krupp's castle. Col. Thayer knew what Bluenbach Castle was all about before he took off with his men to find it. The four-storied ivy covered castle has a pink granite driveway, and a beautiful and luxurious interior. Even if a visitor gets to the main gate which is remote enough, there is still a long trip to the castle. One of the snow-covered mountains surrounding the postcard perfect castle has the legendary cave of Barbarosa, who is said to be asleep waiting to be woken by black ravens to come back to life and save Germany. The Illuminati's controlled media portrayed Gustav's son Alfred as a victim of the Nuremberg trials, even though mountains of documents prove that he was more of a war criminal than Adolf Hitler.

The massive trial documents of the Nuremberg trial of Alfred Krupp were never printed in Germany, and even today the truth about Krupp is unknown. History was rewritten by the controlled presses to make Alfred Krupp out to be the victim of Nazism, rather that to tell the truth about how he ran the Krupp empire beginning in 1943, and was actively involved in the rape & pillage of many nations, and actively involved in the torture of countless slave laborers who came from nations all over the world (anybody the Nazis found to arrest.) The slaves who worked for Krupp were not even slaves. Hitler had made a law that slaves were to be fed so much per day according to how hard the work was that they had to do. Krupp's slaves were starved to death while being forced to do hard labor. There was an acute shortage of slaves to work and drastic needs for tanks, ships, artillery, subs and other Krupp produced weapons, so there was no logical reason for Krupp's personal factory guards to starve and beat slaves to death on a regular manner. The horrendous abuse that the slaves received actually often prevented the Krupp factories from being successful in their production goals. Slaves are generally fed and taken care of so they can work, but Krupp's slaves were not even given the basics that a slave gets--they were less than slaves, or as one slave who worked for Krupp said that as Krupp's slaves they didn't even have the status of "slave" but were like pieces of sandpaper to be used and discarded. Krupp's slaves were the worst treated in Germany and frequently failed to achieve the production that was wanted due to the total dehumanization and horrible abuse systematically heaped upon them. Slaves were tortured in the basement of Krupp's Hauptverwaltungsgebaude (the executive corporation office building in Essen). Unimpeachable witnesses declared that some of the most revolting torture of slaves occurred within earshot of Alfred Krupps office. The secretaries who worked with Krupp could hear the screams of people being tortured, and there is no doubt if they could hear them, Alfred could too, but he always ignored the screams with a stone-like face, as he did later in Satanic rituals. One Illuminati survivor remembers Alfred's distinctive face. Later John J. McCloy, head of the Council of Foreign Relations, and a member of the Illuminati, was given the job of High Commissioner over Occupied Germany. He overturned the Nuremberg Trial decisions, stepping out of line with legalities and freed Alfred Krupp from prison and exonerated him of "war guilt". The trial of Alfred Krupp's W.W.II war crimes had taken 5 years, and took 330,000 pages of court transcripts. All that work was swept aside by John J. McCloy--a generational satanist himself like Alfred. Alfred had 37 of the best lawyers who had given more than a good fight for Alfred. They pulled every trick in the book for their client--including murdering witnesses, suppressing evidence etc. (The establishment newspapers in Europe and the U.S. portrayed Alfred as having not been allowed adequate legal help! Nothing could be further from the truth--he was the best defended Nuremberg criminal.) Yet, the evidence against Krupp was overwhelming and the 5 Nuremberg judges had sentenced him to prison. The judges also sentenced that all his possessions be taken from him. This was more than fair considering all the pillage and looting Krupp had personally directed throughout Europe. The British and American governments never carried out the Judges orders to take Alfred's property away, and after serving awhile (having a vacation from his work load) in prison, the Illuminati set him free from prison. Alfred was made out to be martyr in the press--they claimed he was the only Nazi who had property confiscated (which was a lie by the press), so that it looked like he'd been singled out for special victimization by the Nuremberg court. While looking to the public like a victim for loosing his property--none of it was ever taken away!

Today, the intrigue of the Illuminati to secretly prepare for their takeover is monumental in proportions. However, it is following many of the tried and tested tactics of the Krupps. Before W.W.I, the Krupps created a Dutch company in Hague with the English name Blessing and Company. Blessing & Co. was used only every now and then by the Krupps. After W.W.I, it was sold with all its assets to the Hollandsche Industrie en Handel Maatschappij (another Dutch front), and then its name was changed to Siderius A.G. It was then used as a holding company for 3 Dutch shipyards, their names being Piet Smit in Rotterdam, Maschinen en Apparaten Fabrik in Utrecht, and Ingenieur-Kantoor voor Scheepsbouw in the Hague. At that time two Krupp directors quietly held all the shares in Siderius. In this way, a front company was created that no one even suspected of being a Krupp company. Later, select Dutchmen were sold the shares of the company that the Krupp directors had had. This completed the subterfuge. By the time allied intelligence in 1926 caught on and asked the Dutch government to intervene, Queen Wilhelmina of Holland curtly informed allied intelligence that her govt. would in no way interfere with a private dutch corporation. When one studies the machinations George Bush and Bill & Hillary Clinton, they too have worked with front companies. The CIA is great at creating front companies which are sold to other fronts, and whose control eventually gets hidden and obscured. Three examples of Illuminati families with a great deal of power but who have their extensive financial holdings obscured are the Payseurs, the Springs, and the Van Duyns. The national media of America have continually run expert damage control for George Bush and Bill & Hillary Clinton. The Whitewater scandal, Vincent Foster and the Waco incident should have sunk the Chintons but the media has run excellent propaganda campaigns that have stood the truth on its head. Under the appearance of doing unbiased investigations, the New World Order's media has really done sophisticated damage control. If we look at the history of the Krupps, we can see that mankind hasn't learned from history. The Kingpins of the Illuminati were above the law and still are. Friedrich Alfred Krupp (1854-1902) was the head of the Fried. Krupp Industrial Empire. He was pediophile who liked little boys for sex. When he travelled to various large cities he would obtain boys. Conrad UhI, proprietor of the Hotel Bristol in Berlin found out about Friedrich (Fritz) Krupp's lust for boys when he was forced by Krupp to supply him with young boys at the Hotel. Conrad UhI, didn't like being forced into his role as pimp and went to the Berlin police. who promptly told him to keep quiet. Krupp was above the law, no one would touch Krupp especially not even the King of Germany Wilhelm, who was best of friends with the Krupps. The police commissioner Meerscheidt-Huellessem who ran damage control for the Krupps and others died before political opponents of Krupp could get police records out to the public.

In Capri, Italy a grotto was transformed into Krupp's private sex club where a countless numbers of young italian boys regularly sexually serviced Krupp. This was at the Quisisana Hotel. The owner was also a prominent politician who could protect Krupp's activities. Solid gold pins shaped like artillery shells or two crossed forks (both designed by Krupp) were given to the young boys if they performed well. Krupp would have skyrockets shot off when he had his orgasm, and porn photos taken of his activities. The porn pictures got out into the public domain and this and all the witnesses to Krupp's criminal sexual activities, caused the Italian government to order Krupp to leave Italy. Any common person would have been arrested and the key to their cell thrown away--but Krupp was simply asked to leave. However, the press in Italy had gotten ahold of the juicy story for their italian readers and soon all of Europe knew of Kru pp's paedophilia except in Germany where the government and the controlled media kept it secret. A few german newsmen tried to get the story out in Germany but were arrested. When Krupp's wife learned of the scandal she was upset and went to authorities who then through the System using physical force threw Krupp's wife in a mental hospital in Jena. However, throwing Krupp's wife Margaretha into a mental hospital wasn't going to put a cap on the scandal, and suing the newsmen wasn't going to work, and trying to run a coverup as big and violent as the JFK assassination coverup was started but it was obvious that it would have to be such a large and violent coverup that it would be difficult to pull off. In the view of all these difficulties, on November 21 or 22, 1902 Friedrich (Fritz) Krupp committed suicide. The suicide was covered up, and his body was put in a concealed casket and in direct disobedience to the law there was no autopsy--even though the law required it. Nobody, even Friedrich Krupp's close relatives were allowed to see the body. After 3 days, Germany had a great ceremony involving the King, great words were said about Krupp, and then Krupp was laid to rest in a guarded cemetery. Now that it is no longer important, the facts of what happened can be studied, but the case of Friedrich A. Krupp's improprieties and the resulting scandal show clearly that powerful men are above the law, any exposure of their activities can be covered up, and even suicides can be covered up. Now historians will tell the truth, when it is no longer political correct to lie. How long will it take for the truth to come out about George Bush being a pedophile, or about Bill and Hillary's cocaine running, or a thousand and one other criminal activities these Illuminati men have engaged in. The Supreme

Council of the 330 of Southern Rite of Freemasonry had pictures of George Bush in their New Age magazine holding children in his lap. For those of us who know that he is a pedophile the picture showing him as a fatherly Jesus-type figure who children love is sickening. Will we learn from the past, or will we continue to repeat it & its atrocities? Even today, in Germany the Krupp name is above reproach. The truth is not being told. The Krupps have had too much power over the German media for the German mass media to ever say the genuine negative truth about the Krupps.

During W.W. II, the Krupps took tens of thousands of jews and other people and used them as slave labor. A concentration camp at Buschmannhof, Germany was created for the babies of Krupp's slave labor. The babies who were sent to this concentration camp would then die of starvation and disease. The slaves of the Krupps during W.W. II were tortured in small boxes, whipped etc. etc. However, the politically correct line today in Germany is that the Krupps were made to do this by the Nazis. And that politically correct line is a fabricated lie, because numerous documents show that the Krupps went to the Nazi government and begged for slaves to work in their factories, and that the Krupps intentionally set .up extremely harsh working conditions for their slaves. In fact, letters exist that show the Krupps couldn't get enough supply of torture weapons to use on their slaves.

But then the workers for Krupp have always worked under serf conditions. A visitor to a Krupp factory said, "For all practical purposes the people of Essen are body and soul the property of the Krupps." At times the Krupps have been viewed as god figures by some of their workers. Are we going to learn from history? Today, the public is buying the System's propaganda to make inmates work under boot camp conditions. The stage is being set in the United States to view inmates as less than human. The foreign slaves in Germany were often looked upon as less than human by many of the German people. That is the power of control and propaganda. The media is able to take someone like Tim LaVeigh who everyone who knew him during his life says was a nice guy who couldn't have set the bomb(s) and make him look to the public like a mean monster. I believe Tim LaVeigh is a patsy for the government's own sinister bombing of the Oklahoma City Federal building just like Hitler firebombed his own Reichstag. Speaking of fires set by the Illuminati, the Krupps tried to burn mountains of records before the Allies captured their factories. A lot were burned but many still sensitive documents still survived. These sensitive documents showed their war crimes, Kruupp's own espionage network and other sensitive things. Krupp wanted to bury some of the documents at an unused Bohien castle that he had. The Krupps have networked with all the elite. The Krupps agent in powerful man while alive, he could hire or fire corporate leaders in many of Germany's corporations, because his various banks held the purse strings in Germany. He also had international clout, for instance, Banco Aleman Transatlantico (Deutsche Oberseeishe Bank) which operates in South America & Spain is run by Deutsche Bank. In July, 1944, the Illuminati's economic thinkers quietly established the World Bank at Bretton Woods, New Hampshire. Illuminatus John J. McCloy, the man who set Krupp free, became the president of the World Bank. The U.S., Japan and Germany are the most powerful voting members of the World Bank according to the recent annual reports which I have.

When an appropriate Krupp couldn't be found in 1967 the Illuminati turned Krupp's Industrial Empire over to its Internat. bankers. Charles Eustis Bohlen (1904-1974) was born to Celestine Eustis and Charles Bohlen. His father Charles Bohien was a wealthy man and his mother's family had also been prominent. His mother Celestine's father was the American Ambassador to France in 1893. Because Chip Bohien had connections, it was mutually decided by several people that he should become a diplomat. The state department at the time he joined had tarnished its reputation with the public with several scandals. One diplomat had indecently exposed himself, another had been arrested for molesting 2 boys and another had shot himself. Chip Bohlen seems to have been way above scandals. Chip was very intelligent and very discreet. In addition to being very discreet and close lipped, the elite's press and the System in general over the years have kept Chip Bohlen's life a secret from the public. Most men of Chip Bohien's stature would appear in the Who's Who in America. Not Chip Bohlen. He has managed to keep to a very low profile thanks to the Illuminati's control over all types of information, while remaining one of the most powerful men in the 20th century. Sen. McCarthy, who was catching on to the Illuminati's conspiracy tried to prevent Bohlen from being approved as the U.S.'s "Ambassador extraordinary and plenipotentiary to the U.S.S.R." but on Mar. 2 & 18, 1953, the Senate gave him the important position. However, Chip's brother-in-law quit his political career after being exposed by Sen. McCarthy. (I had believed the lie of the press that McCarthy was after communists, but I read something the Senator wrote which showed that he was out to expose a worldwide occult conspiracy--not simply communism. The work the Senator did is continually referred to as a "witch hunt", but some day the witches he tried to protect America from may well put this nation through another Holocaust, and then the "witch hunt" of the Senator will seem mild.) Chip Bohlen also served as the no. 1 adviser for three Secretaries of State - James F. Byrnes, George C. Marshall ('45-'46) and Christian Herter ('59-'61). After graduating from Harvard in the late 1920s, Chip worked for Frank B. Kellogg and Henry L. Stimson. The U.S. State Department trained Chip to speak Russian several years before the U.S. had diplomatic ties with Russia. When the U.S. put in an embassy in Moscow in 1934, Chip helped open the first American embassy in communist Russia. The American diplomats stayed at the Savoy Hotel in Moscow. The Savoy Hotel in London has been used as an important Illuminati building.

Chip stayed in communist USSR until 1940, when the U.S. government moved him to Tokyo to help in Japan. According to Chip, he and others were not surprised that Pearl Harbor took place because there were strong indications that it was going to happen. (See Chip's book Witness To History, pp. 110-112. His book was edited by a fellow Illuminatus Phelps.) After the attack on Pearl Harbor, Chip was placed under arrest by the Japanese. Then on June 20, 1942, Chip, Keith Meyers head of Standard Oil in Tokyo, and some other Americans were put on board the Asama Maru and returned to the United States via Portuguese East Africa. Chip Bohlen interpreted for Averell Harriman, when Harriman met the Russians for talks. Chip Bohlen did the interpreting and some advising of the President when Roosevelt had his meetings with Stalin. Averell Harriman, a member of the Illuminati, liked Chip and the work he did. If one looks at photographs of the Yalta and the Tehran meetings between Stalin, Churchill and Roosevelt you will see Chip Bohlen in the background. Chip was also at the Potsdam Conference between Truman and Stalin. He was also in San Francisco as a participant who helped create the United Nations in 1945. It was Bohlen and others who actually wrote out the Marshall plan and then requested that Sec. of State George Marshall spell it out in a speech at Harvard. It would take a long article to cover all the big meetings that Bohien participated in. Needless to say, he attended more big meetings involving global politics than any other American.

When Chip became the American Ambassador to the USSR, the Russians trusted Chip enough to stop their practice of having agents always follow the American Ambassador. Chip's predecessors as ambassadors had been George F. Kennen and Llewellyn E. Thompson. They had always been followed by Russian agents. But things changed for Chip. By the way, both Kennen and Dean Acheson both were close friends with Chip. Chip was noted for his intelligence and candor by his colleagues, but the Establishment has kept the full story about him very much under wraps. Perhaps only people like the CIA and intelligence personnel know the full story. For as powerful as Chip Bohlen was, he has been relegated to being in the shadows. When we look at the photos of the great summit meetings, Chip can be seen behind Stalin, Churchill and the American Presidents. Francis Hermana Bohlen (1808-t942) was a famous lawyer, politician and a teacher at Harvard from 1925-28. This is just one more of the famous Bohlen's. This author waited until there was verification from independent ex-Illuminati sources that Alfred Krupp (his full name includes the title "von Bohlen und Halsbach") had been a member of the Illuminati. There is no doubt that Chip Bohlen was part of the Illuminati. As previously mentioned one of the Illuminati survivors I have worked with was alive during W.W.II and has memories of how the Russians, Germans, and Americans in the Illuminati kept working together even during W.W. 11. A very close examination of what really went on behind the scenes, especially at the top shows that the parts of the Illuminati have continued to collaborate together even during wars. The are many relatives of Krupp in Europe, South America and the United States. Arndt Krupp, Alfred son who opted to become a professional playboy, bought an estate in the interior of Brazil. The estate covered 43 square miles, had dwellings for 180 servants (back in the l960's-what's happened in recent years I don't know), had a park modeled after Versailles, and the largest horse stables in Brazil. His private jet could carry his custom-built Rolls-Royce.

Important Illuminati rituals have taken place in Argentina and other South American locations where Illuminati members from the U.S. and various European nations have flown in to participate in. As more information comes in, this author will be able to determine whether Arndt Krupp took part in any of those South American Illuminati ceremonies. There are descendants of Hitler in several states in the U.S. (Because people move around, there is no purpose in giving their locations at present.) Of course the controlled media would have us believe that Adolf Hitler, who was very popular with women during his life, and a very powerful man at the height of his power, did not have any descendants. There were many German women who would have begged to have a child by him, and there were a number who did. There is no doubt in this author's mind that the Krupp's got ahold of the Illuminati formula for creating multiple personalities who are programmed into Systems of Alters. The Krupp relatives have numerous castles and other pieces of property all over Germany, and all over the world in fact. I continue to get reports of Illuminati mind-control programming going on in castles, and Illuminati rituals taking place in German castles. It is a distinct possibility that castles tied to the Krupp clan are being used for programming. Some of their castles and estates have been remote and some have been left unused as far as the public was told. Summary. What we have learned is that the Krupps have participated in the Illuminati, and were primarily responsible for both Hitler coming to power and for Germany rearming itself secretly in violation of the Versailles' Treaty. We have learned that Illuminati Kingpins like the Krupps are above the law, and are usually above getting themselves sincerely exposed in the controlled media. The Krupps provide an excellent example of how a military build-up can be hidden, and how scandalous behavior of the elite can go unpublicized and unpunished. The same things are still happening today. We have learned about two Krupps who wielded enormous power during the twentieth century, Alfred Krupp and Chip Bohien. Alfred Krupp was the most powerful man in European economic aflairs during his lifetime, and Chip Bohlen, who was perhaps the most influential American diplomat of the twentieth century. We have gotten a glimpse of how the remaining Krupps today are scattered and are to be expected to continue to play an active role in the ritual life/& mind-control programming of the Illuminati.

Later articles:

The German connection to the llluminati is extensive; the Order of the Skull & Bones is an important element. Examples of German elite occultists who may be exposed in later articles include: a. "King" Adolphus Busch, who acquired Ulysses Grant's (ancestor of several in todays Illuminati) St. Louis property and built a magnificant castle on it called Grant's Farm. b. Bleichroeder, who was an important Satanist and high ranking Mason & an important occult leader. Berlin was one of the important Masonic headquarters for years. c. The Johnson-Wilson clans. One satanic german bloodline which came from the location Tristie in Germany has been working with the Rockefeller & Johnson satanic families. They are active on the west coast-incl. have a house equipped with a torture dungeon in Tacoma. The Johnson & Johnson clan have relatives in Satanism in Germany. d. The Committee for the Care of European Children brought children from the concentration camps into the U.S. At least some of these children had already received Nazi trauma-based mind control, and were placed into occult families. The german connection to the Illuminati needs further coverage in this newsletter.

SUGGESTED READING FOR MORE INFORMATION:

Manchester, William. The Arms of KRUPP 1587-1968. Boston: Little,

Casebook on Alternative 3

UFOs, Secret Societies and World Control

Jim Keith

Casebook on
Alternative 3

UFOs, Secret Societies
and World Control

Jim Keith

1994
IllumiNet Press

Copyright © 1994 by Jim Keith
All rights reserved.

First Edition, 1994

No part of this publication may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopy, recording, or any information storage and retrieval system now known or to be invented, without permission in writing from the publisher, except by a reviewer who wishes to quote brief passages in connection with a review written for inclusion in a magazine, newspaper or broadcast.

Library of Congress Cataloging in Publication Data

Keith, Jim, 1949-
Casebook on Alternative 3: UFOs, Secret Societies and World Control / Jim Keith.
p. cm.
ISBN: 0-9626534-9-7 : $12.95
1. Unidentified flying object literature.
2. Conspiracy in motion pictures.
3. Watkins, Leslie. Alternative 3.
4. Interplanetary voyages. I. Title II. Title: Casebook on Alternative Three.

TL789.K374 1993
303.48 '3--dc20 93-32367

IllumiNet Press
Division of I-Net Group, Ltd.
P.O. Box 2808
Lilburn, GA 30226

10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2

Printed in the United States of America

With thanks to Tim Cridland

I would like to gratefully acknowledge the assistance of Vicky Bolin, X. Sharks DeSpot, Hawthorne Abendsen, Jerry Smith, Wayne Henderson, Thomas Adams, Bud McCorkle, Len Bracken, "The Franciscan," Walter Alter, Ron Bonds, Matt Love, L.A. Rollins, Thomas Lyttle, Adam Parfrey, Hatter, Raymond Nelke, Michael A. Hoffman II, David Hatcher Childress, TAL, Greg Krupey, Wes Nations, and David Crowbar.

The author is always interested in contacting individuals who have information which exposes the workings of worldwide conspiracy. I can be contacted in care of IllumiNet Press.

Contents

1. The Bloody Neck!....7
2. The End....15
3. Secret Societies and Die Neuordning....18
4. The Fourth Reich....30
5. UFOs and the Secret Space Program....42
6. Hot Jobs and Crop Circles....48
7. Missing Scientists and LGIBs....53
8. Ice Picks, Electrodes and LSD....59
9. Electronic Wars....71
10. Batch Consignments....76
11. The Depopulation Bomb....84
12. A Modest Proposal....92
13. Veins and Tributaries....95
14. Emergency Action....101
15. Demonstration Project....106
16. Lunar Base Alpha One....110
17. Disinfo....120
18. To Serve Man....130
19. Other Alternatives....139
20. Das Marsprojekt....148
21. Control....154

Bibliography....160

"I would anex the planets if I could." — **Cecil Rhodes**

"Coming events cast their shadow before." — **Goethe**

1

The Bloody Neck!

*F*or the debunker, *Alternative 3* is a sitting duck. My first inclination, on reading the book several years ago, was to dismiss it as a poorly-done, science fictional hoax. Although widely accepted and defended among UFO buffs as an explicit revelation of the secret activities of this planet's ruling elite, watching the original British television show or reading the book based on it will quickly dispel that notion.

Intended as an April Fools' Day presentation for *Anglia TV's* usually non-fiction *Science Report* (but, because of a problem in scheduling, it is said, presented on June 20, 1977), and authored by David Ambrose and Christopher Miles, *Alternative 3* tells or, more accurately, tries to foist off a tale of scientists and 'batch consignment' commoners kidnapped to provide personnel for a project to colonize the moon and Mars — or killed to prevent the leak of information about the program. According to the teleplay and the book, our monied masters see extraterrestrial bases as the only escape from an Earth doomed by pollution and overpopulation — and they are fleeing in droves to domed cities on Mars and the moon.

'3,' they allege, is only the latest in a series of alternatives to escape a doomed Earth which have been proposed in the star chambers of the cosmic conspirators. Alternative 1, the authors would have us believe, consisted of detonating nuclear bombs in the atmosphere to allow pollution and heat to dissipate into space, whereas Alternative 2 was a plan to construct vast subterranean habitats for the elite to escape into when the going gets tough.

In a scenario worthy of an Irwin Allen disaster film, the teleplay offers film clips of British, French, Australian, Indian, and African droughts, tossing in a few earthquakes and volcanos for good measure. Tim Brinton, the show's actor-narrator, gravely intones against this cataclysmic backdrop: "The balance of the Earth's ecology was far more delicately poised than we had believed."

The text of a press release from *Anglia TV* describes the show, while not specifically revealing its fictional nature:

"A team of journalists investigating, among other topical subjects, the drought of 1976 and the changes in the world's atmospheric conditions, and also a disturbing rise in the statistics of disappearing people, follow a trail of information and scientific research through England and America.

"A Cambridge scientist and an ex-astronaut living in unpublicized retirement following a nervous breakdown, are among links in their investigation, which comes together finally in some strange discoveries about the future of life on Earth and elsewhere in the solar system.

"As a result of private screenings a few weeks ago, this programme has been acquired for simultaneous transmission in Australia, New Zealand, Canada, Denmark and Iceland and will be seen eventually in the majority of European and Asian markets.

"The programme's theme may seem extraordinary but it is scientifically possible. The question is, how far does it mirror the truth?

"With TIM BRINTON, CAROL HAZELL, SHANE RIMMER, and GREGORY MUNRO. Directed by CHRISTOPHER MILES."

The initial airing of the television show caused a public uproar in Britain, and the following day *The London Daily Mail* carried this story, headed "STAR PERFORMER."

"The director of the spoof TV documentary which portrayed life on Mars last night defended the programme after telephone calls from hundreds of angry viewers. Christopher Miles, whose *Science Report* appeared on *Anglia TV* on Monday said, 'I don't think we were irresponsible. We staged it like a documentary but the names of all the stars appeared at the end.' An *Anglia TV* spokesman added, 'We are delighted by the response. More than 10,000 people phoned in about the show.'"

The television presentation at least admits its fictional character, prominently featuring the intended date of airing, April 1, in the closing credits. Performed by actors (no debating that, they are credited in the press release and at the end of the program), the show is filled with stock disaster and NASA footage and hokey music-dubbing, including lavish dollops of Wagner's *Ride of the Valkyries* (the exception being the effective electronics of popstar-to-be Brian Eno, creating a suitably doom-portentous background, which may actually have had a lot to do with the public's horrified reaction).

Widespread public reaction was without a doubt the reason *Alternative 3* was turned into a book by Leslie Watkins and David Ambrose, published by Sphere in 1978, and this time pretending to be fact. It is upon the bare bones of the TV presentation, consisting mostly of marginally believable interviews with characters such as "Professor Gerstein," "Professor Broadbent," and the ubiquitous American astronaut "Bob Grodin," that the book is fleshed.

American astronaut "Bob Grodin" figures heavily in both the teleplay and the book, blowing the whistle on the fiendish space deception. In his disgust at the pretense he has had to maintain about *Alternative 3,* the authors have him testily say: "How they've got the bloody neck!" while pouring himself another tumbler of bourbon. When was the last time you heard an American use the expression "bloody neck"?

In another interview in the book, a drunken "Grodin" again carelessly lapses into English slang: "Let's give your pal a shout." That "interview" is composed mostly of Grodin's heavy drinking and squabbling with his girlfriend, and is obviously a set-up intended to depict Grodin's deteriorating condition, to prepare him for a literary fall. On a later visit by the television crew (omitted in the TV presentation) Grodin is found confined in a mental hospital, and later hangs himself from a "hot water pipe fixed high on the wall of his room."

Other American astronauts' tribulations and eccentricities manifesting after space flight are elaborated as more proof of a cover-up: Aldrin's depression and drinking, Irwin's becoming a Baptist minister, Mitchell's anguish after realizing that the Earth is a fragile piece of work, are offered as the guilty psychological by-products of a sinister plot. Edgar Mitchell is quoted as saying that there are three alternatives left to humankind, and that the third is "...the most viable but most difficult alternative."

The authors regale us with news stories, the majority factual but unrelated to *Alternative 3,* seemingly to intellectually lull the reader for the leap of faith it will take to buy into the abduction-to-Mars thesis. They recount the story of President Jimmy Carter toning down the tale of the UFO he saw, suggesting that he was "gotten to." They tell of the official Condon Report on UFOs "losing" some of its members (either to spontaneous combustion or to high-paying California think tanks, we are not told). Another news clipping has the Martin Marietta company building aircraft conforming to the description "flying saucers."

The disappearance of twenty people from a small coastal town in Oregon and the death of fifteen wild ponies in Dartmoor, England are mentioned, the latter an example of the cattle mutilations prevalent in the U.S., beginning in the mid-'60s. Factual CIA M-K-Ultra mind control atrocities are mulled over, but not in particular detail, and with no credible link to *Alternative 3.* Along the way the authors describe instances of Russian-American cooperation in space and offer accounts of the plight of several amnesia victims, but none of this has much to do with the core of their thesis. They seem not to care.

Gerard K. O'Neill, Princeton professor and designer of floating islands in space, is quoted as referring to his project by the name Island 3. Within 16 days after publication of this shocking indiscretion, Watkins and Ambrose inform us, a "suppression" bill is "rushed" into U.S. law so that no American scientist will make the grievous error of associating their work with the number three in future. Unbelievable "secret documents" are quoted at length in the book, without copies being reproduced, while pseudonymous witnesses reveal the neo-Orwellian horrors of *Alternative 3* by means of obviously contrived speeches and transcripts.

Alternative 3 relies heavily on the word of an alleged anonymous defector, code named "Trojan." Offering an insider's view of the conspiracy, Trojan "...wanted no money. He merely wanted to alert the public, to help stop the mass atrocities." Without Trojan, the authors maintain, "...it would have been years, possibly seven years or even longer, before ordinary people started to suspect the devastating truth about this planet on which we live."

There are long "transcripts" of the conversations of *Alternative 3* conspirators that occur in "...the wardroom of a modified Permit nuclear submarine. Thirty-five fathoms beneath ice of Arctic... No names on transcript. No names, apparently, ever used. Only nationalities and numbers. Eight Russians - listed as R ONE through to R EIGHT - and eight Americans." One submarine "transcript" is particularly transparent in its contrivance, explaining all-too-neatly the Dartmoor ponies disappearance mentioned earlier in the book, attributing it to a botched "batch consignment" Here is another typically unconvincing example of a submarine transcript, and remember, these are Americans and a Russian talking...

"R FOUR: You mean the scientific adjustments?

"A EIGHT: Yeah... the scientific adjustments... he's running off at the mouth about ethics... that sort of crap...

"A TWO: Ethics! What the hell do some of these guys think we're all at! Jesus! We're smack in the middle of the most vital exercise ever mounted... with the survival of the whole human race swinging on it... and they bleat about ethics...

"A EIGHT: That surgery bit... it really got to him...

"A FIVE: They should never have told him... he didn't need to know that... look, we owe Peterson... he's done good work... couldn't we just get him committed?

"A TWO: No way... much too risky... he'd squeal his bloody head off.

"A EIGHT: I endorse that I'm sorry because I like the guy... but there's no choice. Anyone against an expediency for Peterson?... okay... that's carried... now for God's sake let's get down to the big problem... this stepping-up of the supplies-shuttle. Any word from Geneva?"

The transcript is all too pat, and all too "bloody" contrived.

In another transcript the authors repeat the tactic of proving their previous assertions by having the conspirators expound on the topic, in this case the secrecy bill and Gerard O'Neill:

"R SEVEN: But when O'Neill talked about Island 3...

"A EIGHT: Hold on... let me finish. Something is being done but it's being done as a blanket operation... Right now there's a secrecy Bill being scrambled on to the Statute Book and I promise you that'll close every worrying mouth."

Again, the authors have an American using British slang ("...being scrambled," i.e. 'hurried,' "on to the Statute Book," and "close every worrying mouth").

Transcripts, endless transcripts of telephone conversations predictably talk of "batch consignments" of mind-controlled, de-sexed slaves and "stinking atrocities" no more believably than the plotting that takes place "beneath ice of Arctic." The authors of the book do not have a feeling for realistic conversation, much less the conversations of Americans (the TV show faring somewhat better), and their method of continually shoring up the scenario with corroboration in the transcripts is only too obvious.

While Watkins and Ambrose thoughtfully exclude the leaders of the United States and Soviet Union from any complicity in "the terror and clinical cruelties which have been an integral part of the Operation, for that would make [them] directly responsible for murders and barbarous mutilations" they finger "high-level professionals... These professionals, we have now established, have been classifying people selected for the *Alternative 3* operation into two categories; those who are picked as individuals and those who merely form part of a 'batch consignment.' There have been several 'batch consignments' and it is the treatment meted out to most of these men and women which provides the greatest cause for outrage."

Finally we know the truth about the mysterious Men In Black who have supposedly dogged the heels of witnesses to UFOs since at least the middle of this century. They're actually dreaded "high-level professionals."

A considerable portion of the book is devoted to alleged attempts to suppress the television show. "Chris Clements," crack boy reporter for "Sceptre TV," researches the *Alternative 3* plot and ends up getting flak from various station executives. Actually, this may be one of the factual portions of the book that Watkins has referred to in correspondence. Considering the nature of the show, I can understand station execs not wanting to have anything at all to do with it. The authors present examples of office wrangling as proof of a cover-up, but my guess is that if studio or station executives did object to the program it was simply because they thought it hare-brained and a dangerous prank.

Ambrose and Watkins say that, "Many Acts of Expediency are believed to have been ordered by the sixteen men, official representatives of the Pentagon and the Kremlin, who comprise the Policy Committee [of *Alternative 3*]. Grotesque and apparently inexplicable slayings in various parts of the world - in Germany and Japan, Britain and Australia - are alleged to have been sanctioned by them. We have not been able to substantiate these suspicions and allegations so we merely record that an unknown number of people... have been executed because of this astonishing agreement between the super powers."

While they are unable to "substantiate" these suspicions, they are able to insist that they are true.

The single impressive segment in the television show is the "suppressed" videotape of a NASA secret landing on Mars. The segment is extremely well produced (even if the occasional burst of "static" looks like it was spliced into the film, rather than actual transmission interference). The whole fly-by and landing take perhaps thirty seconds, with the landing craft fortuitously setting down so that the camera exactly captures in its frame some sort of Martian lifeform (so we are told) wriggling just beneath the red soil. In comparison, how likely is it that a camera plonked at random on a teeming Earth would capture an animal in its sights? Beautifully done, but still fake.

In summary, *Alternative 3* is a teleplay and a book which utterly lack substantiation, and the book in particular is written in a style identical to the *Weekly World News* of "Two-Headed Space Alien Gives Birth to Elvis' Lovechild" fame. What propels *Alternative 3* along in the manner of a 1940s *Amazing Stories* extravaganza set in the vicinity of Fleet Street are the "secret documents," the interviews with persons who may or may not exist and, more than that, the word of the authors who, while repeatedly maintaining "We are only interested in facts," write a television show and book loaded with as many questionable conclusions as the latest Brad Steiger UFO masterpiece.

From the first minute of the television show and the first page of the book it is the authors creating the Mars conspiracy from whole cloth (for all we can tell), weaving their story between film clips or news clippings that have almost nothing to do with their conclusions, hoked-up interviews with actors pretending to be crotchety scientists and, in the case of the book, obviously phony "secret" transcripts and documents.

It is Miles, Watkins and Ambrose who, on their word and their word alone, create and develop the *Alternative 3* mythos with almost no reference to what I laughingly refer to as facts. All the references to flights to Mars, "batch consignments" and so forth are found in the poorly rendered and unbelievable "secret transcripts" or created from thin Martian air by the authors.

What *Alternative 3* entirely lacks is a single piece of evidence proving the conspiracy. There is a large body of vaguely related, false, and obviously trumped-up material, but the authors omit the detail of corroborating facts in their fervent and oft-expressed quest for "facts."

Odd, but the creators of *Alternative 3,* both the book and the television show, seem not to have much cared whether anyone believed them. Apparently they thought that if they repeatedly insisted that their statements were not fictional, if they "proved" phony transcripts with other phony transcripts, that the public, that befuddled, slight-attentioned creature, would buy their story, lock, stock, and "batch consignment."

Watkins and Ambrose (particularly in the book, which omits the April Fools Day significance of the television presentation) seem to say they don't need credibility. Did Richard Shaver and his Deros have credibility? Does William Cooper? Does the White House?

There is only one problem. While perfectly secure in my knowledge that the TV show and the book are basically yellow journalism using scare tactics to make a pound, I am a little shocked to realize that, at most levels anyway, the revelations of *Alternative 3* are also true.

Deceased conspiracy researcher Mae Brussell offered her opinion about the book in her weekly radio show of June 22, 1979:

"Now the thing about... *Alternative 3* is that I've received many manuscripts and books from listeners throughout the years... but I can't remember in 15 years ever having a reaction... This book made me nauseous and I wanted to vomit, and I wanted to faint. I wanted to cry, I wanted to bang the walls down, I literally had the shakes for about a week. It was so scary because it just could be the bottom line of these conspiracies. I believe it probably is the most important book I've read in many, many years... I don't have any doubt in my mind that this is a very dangerous document to have, probably the most dangerous thing which I possess in my library at this point, and the only thing that will relieve the danger is to share it and disseminate the information... It's the one book that puts into focus all the books and articles which I have received for the last fifteen years."

Something close to the truth may have been told by the co-author of the book *Alternative 3,* Leslie Watkins, in undated correspondence. He was contacted by an American researcher who had earlier been informed by a senior editor at Penguin Books that *Alternative 3* was fiction based on fact. Watkins explained:

"The correct description of *Alternative 3* was given to you by the representative from Penguin Books. The book is based on fact, but uses that fact as a launchpad for a HIGH DIVE INTO FICTION. In answer to your specific questions:

"1) There is no astronaut named Grodin.

"2) There is no Sceptre Television and the reporter Benson is also fictional.

"3) There is no Dr. Gerstein.

"4) Yes, a 'documentary' was televised in June 1977 on *Anglia Television,* which went out to the entire national network in Britain. It was called *Alternative 3* and was written by David Ambrose and produced by Christopher Miles (whose names were on the book for contractual reasons). This original TV version, which I EXPANDED IMMENSELY for the book, was ACTUALLY A HOAX which had been scheduled for transmission on April Fools' Day. Because of certain problems in finding the right network slot, the transmission was delayed.

"The TV program did cause a tremendous uproar because viewers refused to believe it was fiction. I initially took the view that the basic premise was so way-out, particularly the way I aimed to present it in the book, that no one would regard it as non-fiction. Immediately after publication, I realized I was totally wrong. In fact, the amazing mountains of letters from virtually all parts of the world — including vast numbers from highly intelligent people in positions of authority — convinced me that I had ACCIDENTALLY trespassed into a range of top-secret truths.

"Documentary evidence provided by many of these correspondents decided me to write a serious and COMPLETELY NON-FICTION sequel. Unfortunately, a chest containing the bulk of the letters was among the items which were mysteriously LOST IN TRANSIT some four years later when I moved from London, England, to Sydney, Australia, before I moved on to settle in New Zealand. For some time after *Alternative 3* was originally published, I have reason to suppose that my home telephone was being tapped and my contacts who were experienced in such matters were convinced that certain intelligence agencies considered that I probably knew too much.

"So, summing up, the book is FICTION BASED ON FACT. But I now feel that I inadvertently got VERY CLOSE TO A SECRET TRUTH."

2

The End

Alternative 3 is right about one thing. Smart money is on the end of the world.

The authors attempt to convince us that escape from the Earth was the final option selected by the conspirators in Geneva once they realized the planet would soon be uninhabitable because of humanity's excesses. The Greenhouse Effect and human overpopulation are the specific dangers mentioned in *Alternative 3,* although of course there are factually no shortage of threats to human survival, many perhaps not conceived by the authors in the 1970s. Over the past two hundred years rampant industrialization and consumption of the Earth have resulted in, among other effects, the discharging of an estimated 200 billion tons of carbonized waste, carbon dioxide, chlorofluorocarbons (CFCs) and methane gases into the Earth's atmosphere, which has in turn trapped heat from the sun in much the same fashion as a greenhouse. This has caused temperatures to rise worldwide and, with geometric increases in levels of pollution, to continue to rise.

An estimation of carbon dioxide levels in the atmosphere shows approximately 288 parts per million in 1750, rising to 346 ppm as of 1990, with a probable doubling from current levels occurring by 2030, according to the *Journal of Geophysical Research.* Atmospheric carbon dioxide has increased ten percent in the last thirty years alone, and no credible solution to the problem of the Greenhouse Effect exists at this time except, perhaps, the disastrous results of the problem itself... or the third alternative.

Although no foolproof theoretical computer model of global climatic change exists, it is now widely agreed that Earth's mean temperature, stable for at least ten thousand years, is now approximately one degree Fahrenheit warmer than it was one hundred years ago. It is estimated that within one hundred years there could be enough Greenhouse gases in the atmosphere to raise temperatures worldwide by as much as seventeen degrees. Within approximately fifty years we can expect an average five-degree increase in temperature, making the climate hotter than it has been for the past four million years and perhaps triggering global changes that we can only guess at.

The Belliago Report, compiled by a group of leading climatologists in 1987, reports a probable massive death of forests worldwide by 2010, due to the inability of forests to migrate as quickly as the shifting temperature zones created by global warming. What is true of forests is also true of insects, bacteria and animals (including mankind). In addition, vast portions of arable land worldwide may in the near future become barren, causing famine on a scale never seen before.

If the migration to Mars proposed by the authors of *Alternative 3* seems an unlikely response to environmental catastrophe by the Powers That Be, there are still very likely going to be wide-scale migrations taking place, as the CIA has noted in several studies. Climatic zones may be shifting northward by 400 miles within the next 100 years, rendering vast tracts of land arid, and this will almost certainly force the migration of sizable portions of the world population, although a major change from urbanization to gathering-hunting is, I suspect, far more easily conceived than accomplished.

The picture is unrelievedly grim when it comes to curtailment of the burning of fossil fuels and reduction of carbon dioxide and fluorocarbon emissions contributing to the Greenhouse Effect. The future industrialization of the Third World dictates an almost inevitable increase in these pollutants, and a resultant rise in global temperatures. Slash and burn agriculture may also turn the Amazon rain forest into one huge cow pasture within fifty years, and the destruction of forests worldwide will only aggravate the problem of high levels of atmospheric carbon dioxide. As the trees are mowed down, they are no longer able to absorb carbon dioxide, nor are they able to produce oxygen.

Given a “reasonable” response time by governments to the problem of global warming, say fifty years to mobilize political support and to significantly reduce atmospheric emissions, we can expect a probable resultant rise of about five degrees in temperature worldwide. This level of increase in temperature has been estimated to be sufficient to melt the Western Antarctic ice sheet, causing an approximate eighteen-foot rise in sea levels worldwide. We have in fact already seen a rise in sea levels, with a recently discovered loss of forestation in Florida tentatively attributed to the effects of saltwater leaching into ground water supplies.

If all that is not enough to cause you to throw your lot in with the *Alternative 3* crowd and to immediately book passage to Mars, Earth's protective ozone layer is said to be thinning every year due to CFCs. In 1985 the British Antarctic Survey at Hailey Bay stated that a huge "hole" (i.e. a 50% depletion) had developed in the ozone layer over Antarctica, and by 1987 the depletion was judged by the same team to have risen to 60%. Now ozone holes are reported over Europe and North America as well. In 1992 the ozone hole over North America extended from the Arctic to Montana, and skin cancer, caused in part by excessive exposure to solar radiation, is now the most common form of cancer in America, according to a recent report of the *American Cancer Society.* The EPA anticipates by 2050 an additional two million skin cancer cases will occur annually.

Although I cannot claim to be an expert on the Greenhouse Effect, I am able to evaluate the information that is available and to reach my own conclusions. I invite you to do the same so that you may decide whether *Alternative 3* and I share the same alarmist tendencies. My own reading and discussion of the facts cause me to reach a simple, if terribly dark conclusion. Civilization on Earth will experience massive disruption within the next 200 years, and with the proliferation of unguessed side effects of global warming (such as the propagation of disease), it is well within the realm of possibility that we will see with these events the extinction of human life on Earth.

Although not all scientists share this grim judgement on the fate of the Earth, that is beside the point, at least as regards the subject of this book. The majority who are not in the employ of major fossil fuel consuming industries seem to. It is also not inconceivable that the scientists of *Alternative 3's* hypothetical Geneva-based conspiracy would have noted the indicators and drawn a precise conclusion.

It seems apparent that the goad for extraterrestrial migration exists. In recognition of this, have the world's elite readied or perhaps already launched their space arks? I would have to agree with *Alternative 3* that the rats who so lavishly profit from a foundering Spaceship Earth can be counted on to desert it, but as far as their identities...

3

Secret Societies and Die Neuordning

There is do question in my mind that there is a conspiracy, even a web of conspiracies running things (or attempting to run them) from the higher reaches of the global foodchain. Today, it is more a question of 'who,' rather than 'if,' and there are more than enough candidates to keep an army of muckrakers busy with their rakes for years.

In researching one begins to see the outlines of an intersection of powers implementing plans nearly identical to *Alternative 3* and, as researcher Hawthorne Abendsen points out, for these control structures "nations are merely convenient fictions."

To begin to understand what may be a real *Alternative 3* plan to lock the population of Earth into ultimate control prior to the abandonment of the planet, we need to trace a number of individuals, incidents, ideologies, and technologies, and then we will have only scratched the surface of possible connections. Nazis and the CIA; population breeding programs and American old money; slave labor camps and electronic war; NASA and Antarctic bases; these are a few of the threads in the blood-red warp.

For reasons which hopefully will become apparent, I begin the search for *Alternative 3* at what might appear to be an arbitrary moment in history; with men, most of whom died a long time ago. As we trace the actions and connections of these men, the conspiratorial web will radiate outward, and perhaps begin to take on a definite and ominous pattern.

The tale is taken up shortly after the collapse of the Third Reich, when General Reinhard Gehlen, Nazi spymaster and Knight of Malta-to-be, began negotiations with Allen Dulles and the American OSS (Office of Strategic Services). Using Nazi intelligence networks as a hole card to provide for his own survival and the survival of his huge spy network, Gehlen made a separate peace with Dulles, resulting in the clean grafting of Nazi spy apparatus to the American clandestine services. This was the birth of the CIA and part of a nexus of betrayal that continues to this day.

It is actually not so odd that Gehlen should have been able to forge ties with director Allen Dulles; Dulles' background is inextricably linked with Nazi and other elitist interests.

At the turn of the century the Dulles family, cousins of the Rockefellers, coming from a Southern slave holding background and powerful international connections, was well-connected with international banking and German interests and, when they noticed them at all, supporters of eugenics programs (i.e. selective breeding and extermination) for the lower classes. A personal philosophical statement of Allen's brother, John Foster Dulles, in 1911 illuminates the mindset and incidentally underlines a major theme of, or justification for, *Alternative 3:*

"Under natural conditions all species tend to increase with great rapidity. [After] a few generations the world would be literally crowded with life... There is a check, however... the limited capacity of the world to sustain life. As the numbers of a species increase it becomes more and more difficult for each individual to find means of sustenance... some must perish, and what is known as the law of natural selection says that the ones who will perish will be the weakest. The strongest will survive...

"With man, as with every other form of life, there is this same tendency for the birth rate to far exceed the death rate, with the inevitable result of an *overcrowded population in which some must be eliminated.* Who those eliminated are depends upon who are weakest and who are strongest in the competition which necessarily ensues.

"Biology tells us that it is only by means of this competition and elimination that progress is made. For the tendency of a race is to retrograde and *it is only by eliminating the lower members that a higher average is maintained..."* [emphases added].

Prior to World War I, The Dulles brothers were recruited into the U.S. State Department by their uncle, Secretary of State Robert Lansing. Lansing was well-connected in banking and political circles, friend to the likes of William Howard Taft, Andrew Carnegie, and Bernard Baruch. Lansing, a blatant Anglophile who took diction lessons in order to sound more British, was one of those Americans who used their power to virtually dictate to President Woodrow Wilson that the U.S. enter into an alliance with England against Germany, and supervised a steady flow of American intelligence to British spy circles.

The assassination of Archduke Ferdinand, the heir to the throne of Austria, was the match that touched off the international conflagration of World War I. Notes of the military trial examining Cabrinovic, one of the Archduke's assassins, provide clues that have been little discussed in relation to the identity of the perpetrators:

President of the military court: "Tell me something more about the motives. Did you know, before deciding to attempt the assassination, that Tankosic and Cignovic were Freemasons? Had the fact that you and they were Freemasons an influence on your resolve?"

Cabrinovic: "Yes."

The President: "Did you receive from them the mission to carry out the assassination?"

Cabrinovic: "I received from no one the mission to carry out the assassination. Freemasonry had to do with it because it strengthened my intention. In Freemasonry it is permitted to kill. Ciganovic told me that the Freemasons had condemned the Archduke Franz Ferdinand to death more than a year before."

According to the notes of the trial, Ciganovic and Tankosic held higher positions in the Freemasonic hierarchy than Cabrinovic, and Ciganovic had informed Cabrinovic that the organization had been unable to find anyone to carry out the assassination.

Count Czerin, a friend of the Archduke, relates in *Im-Welt-Krieg* that, "The Archduke knew quite well that the risk of an attempt on his life was imminent. A year before the war he informed me that the Freemasons had resolved on his death."

Why would the Freemasons have been interested in the death of Archduke Ferdinand? Far from the innocuous ritual-based men's club that they are presented as in the mainstream media, Freemasonry has long been linked to international political manipulation, and has been alleged to be a conduit for the intentions of a number of elitist interests, including the House of Rothschild and their international banking connections.

Discussing an apparent plot to involve the United States in the European war, Commander Joseph Kenworthy of British Naval intelligence reported: "The Lusitania was deliberately sent at considerably reduced speed into an area where a U-boat was known to be waiting and with her escort withdrawn."

President Wilson is known to have concealed in the archives of the Treasury Department the bill of lading of the doomed Lusitania which proved it had been carrying contraband military supplies destined for Great

Britain, putting the lie to the idea that the Lusitania was a non-military passenger vessel.

Banker Bernard Baruch controlled U.S. business during World War I as Chairman of the War Industries Board, banker Eugene Meyer headed the War Finance Corporation, while banker Paul Warburg was in charge of the Federal Reserve. All three men were agents of the Rothschild banking conglomerate.

The "War to End All Wars" devoured thirteen million souls, and at its conclusion Allen and John Foster Dulles were recruited by President Wilson's powerful advisor, banking insider "Colonel" Edward House, future architect of Roosevelt's socialist-styled "New Deal." The Dulleses travelled to Europe to attend the Paris peace conference, meeting there with members of South African diamond magnate and Freemason Cecil Rhodes' secret Round Table group, founded in 1891.

Representing the interests of British aristocracy and Rothschild-front bankers such as the Warburgs, Schroders, and Lazards, the Round Table promoted and continues to promote a New World Order based on Freemasonic/Illuminist ideas such as those held by Rhodes' mentor, John Ruskin. Ruskin in his turn is said to have been influenced by Bavarian Illuminatus Adam Weishaupt and the Isis-occultism of Edward Bulwer-Lytton, the basis of the Scottish Rite of Freemasonry, the Theosophy of Madame Blavatsky's Isis Unveiled, the Isis-Urania Temple of Hermetic Students of the Golden Dawn, and the German Thule group which was to launch and provide key philosophic underpinning to the career of Adolf Hitler. The Round Table advocated, in clear reflection of Illuminist ideas, (and still does) the destruction of all national sovereignties and surrender to an elitist ruling body, the prototype of the New World Order. The group was patterned, according to Rhodes, "on Masonic lines" with an inner "Circle of Initiates" including Rhodes, Lord Milner, future prime minister Arthur Balfour, and Lord Rothschild, whose banking cabal provides one of the most discemable influences upon the group.

"...There grew up in the twentieth century," Dr. Carroll Quigley says, "a power structure between London and New York which penetrated deeply into university life, the press, and the practice of foreign policy. In England the center was the Round Table group, while in the United States it was J.P. Morgan and Company or its local branches in Boston, Philadelphia, and Cleveland."

Inducted into the Round Table, the Dulles brothers became officers of the group's American branch, the Council on Foreign Relations (the British front group being the Royal Institute of International Affairs, known as "Chatham House"). Other members of the CFR-intemational banking axis included David Rockefeller, Averell Harriman (whose family was the creator of the Eugenics Records Office and the Eugenics Research Association, calling for fifty million Americans to be sterilized with the goal of perfecting the "Perfect Man" by 1980), the Astor family, Rothschild bankers Bernard Baruch and Paul Warburg (the latter hired by Kuhn, Loeb and Company at $500,000 per year to promote the creation of a Federal Reserve bank in the U.S.), and other prominent members of the international dollar-aristocracy.

In 1910 a secret meeting of bankers at Jekyll Island, Georgia finalized long-standing plans for the creation of a Federal central bank in America, which was to be represented to the public as "free of Wall Street or any monopolistic interest." ... quite the opposite of the truth. Introduced via the Aldrich Bill, the plan for the Federal Reserve Bank was initially rejected by Congress. When it was realized that the Republicans were too closely connected with banking interests in the public mind, it was decided that the concept would have to be introduced by the Democrats, and this was done, resulting in the Federal Reserve Act of 1913.

Speaking of the actions of the Round Table and their banking sponsors in the creation of the Federal Reserve, Dr. Quigley wrote:

"The powers of financial capitalism had [a] far-reaching aim, nothing less than to create a world system of financial control in private hands able to dominate the political system of each country and the economy of the world as a whole. This system was to be controlled in a feudalist fashion by the central banks of the world acting in concert, by secret agreements arrived at in frequent private meetings and conferences. The apex of the system was to be the Bank for International Settlements in Basel, Switzerland, a private bank owned and controlled by the world's central banks, which were themselves private corporations. Each central bank sought to dominate its government through its ability to control Treasury loans, to manipulate foreign exchanges, to influence the level of economic activity in the country, and to influence cooperative politicians by subsequent economic rewards in the business world."

The Rhodes group and its supporters were key in providing financing for the Russian revolution at the beginning of this century. As early as 1907 twenty million dollars was funnelled to Trotsky and Lenin, with additional large (but unreported) sums flowing from the bankers to the communists over the next few years.

In 1918 a group of fifteen international financiers secretly travelled to Petrograd under cover of a Red Cross mission. Delegates to the All-Russian Congress were purchased to the tune of one million dollars in support of Freemason Aleksandr Kerensky, with additional financing provided for the Provisional Government and their successors, the Bolsheviks.

It is usually assumed that capitalist and communist interests are diametrically opposed in their aims, but over the years the Round Table, the Rothschilds and their brethren have been happy to play cricket with communists of various stripe and in a wide variety of settings, from Mao's China to Castro's Cuba, helping out with the odd multiple millions of dollars and pitting East/West interests against each other. I do not state this as an offhand condemnation of communist philosophy, but to point out the strange seeming-contradiction of international super-capitalists supporting a system which is portrayed as their mortal enemy.

Professor Stuart Crane describes the mechanism as employed by the Rothschilds during the Nineteenth Century:

"If you will look back at every war in Europe... you will see that they always ended with the establishment of a 'balance of power.' With every re-shuffling there was a balance of power in a new grouping around the House of Rothschild in England, France, or Austria. They grouped nations so that if any king got out of line a war would break out and the war would be decided by which way the financing went. Researching the debt positions of the warring nations will usually indicate who was to be punished."

By 1925 the Round Table had spread its organization, via three front groups, to twenty countries. The influence of this group and their allies has, if anything, increased over the years, and every American President since Freemason and Rothschild relative Franklin Roosevelt has drawn major portions of their cabinets from the American offshoot CFR.

The CFR's current roster of more than 2,600 members (within the far larger international alliance) includes key representatives of almost all of the major corporations, foundations, financial organizations, communications conglomerates and think tanks in the United States. At any given time approximately half of the CFR are serving or have served in the U.S. government All three media-acknowledged candidates for the 1992 presidential race were linked to the CFR, while the major "non-establishment" candidate, Bo Gritz, tipped his hand to journalist Jay Katz when he slipped him a Freemasonic handshake at a survivalist convention.

Allen Dulles' star only continued to rise when, in 1920, he was appointed First Secretary of the American Embassy in Berlin. During the same period John Foster Dulles represented the international bankers in Germany, via the Bank of England and J.P. Morgan institutions. This was a time of intensive behind-the-scenes activity by British and American clandestine services in the promotion of Hitler and National Socialism, in itself a front for the occultist Thule Bund, to the fore in Germany. Thule and the associated Vril Society, were fraternally linked to English secret societies and (coincidentally?) based at least in part upon the writings of Freemason Edward Bulwer-Lytton, author of *Vril: The Power of the Coming Race,* the same man whose philosophy had fired John Ruskin and through him, Cecil Rhodes.

On March 20, 1922, banker Hjalmar Schacht (later to hold the purse strings of the Third Reich as Finance Minister, and whose father had been co-director of the German branch of Equitable Life Assurance, owned by J.P. Morgan, a Rothschild confrere), sent his friend John Foster Dulles a proposal for Germany to receive a five billion mark loan to be turned over to the central Reichsbank, thence turned over to newly-created German companies, with the stated purpose of making German war reparations possible. This was one reason that Hitler, despite his anti-Semitism, had a degree of popularity with the international bankers: he had promised to repay German war debt “to the last pfennig.” In addition to arranging funding for Germany, Dulles believed that, contrary to the dictates of the Allies, the country should be re-armed, and arranged covert munitions shipments through du Pont, clients of his law firm, Sullivan and Cromwell.

Over the next few years banker Schact oversaw the entwining of German interests into massive international cartels, the most famous being the alliance of I.G. Farben chemicals with the Rockefeller’s Standard Oil of New Jersey (i.e. Exxon), the formation of which included a $30 million grant from the Rockefellers. The U.S. War Department was later to state: “Without I.G.’s immense productive facilities, its intense research, and vast international affiliations, Germany’s prosecution of the war would have been unthinkable and impossible...” An examination of the sources of funding for I.G. would have been more to the point. By 1929 industry in Germany had been built up so that it was second only to the United States.

John Foster Dulles was elevated to the head of Sullivan and Cromwell, the legal firm representing the German cartels, and during 1934-35 his letters to German clients bore the jaunty salutation: “Heil Hitler!” Clients of Sullivan and Cromwell included I.G. Farben (which ran the slave factory at Auschwitz), major Hitler backer Fritz Thyssen (who was to introduce Allen Dulles to Hitler), Gestapo General Kurt Von Schroeder and the Anglo-German Schroeder Bank, General Motors of Germany and other companies central to Germany’s World War II effort. After the rise of Hitler’s *Neuordnung* (the New Order), Dulles, representing banks and investment firms in the Rothschild/Round Table alliance, travelled to Germany to negotiate further American funding for *der Fuhrer.* During this period Mussolini’s failing dictatorship was bailed out by loans from J.P. Morgan.

As far as Freemasonic President Franklin Roosevelt’s allegiance, he drew much of his cabinet from the CFR, while his son-in-law, Curtis Dall, has stated succinctly what can be confirmed from numerous sources:

"For a long time I felt that FDR had developed many thoughts and ideas that were his own to benefit this country, the U.S.A. But, he didn't. Most of his thoughts, his political 'ammunition,' as it were, were carefully manufactured for him in advance by the CFR-One World Money group. Brilliantly, with great gusto, like a fine piece of artillery, he exploded that prepared 'ammunition' in the middle of an unsuspecting target, the American people — and thus paid off and retained his internationalist political support."

While Roosevelt was campaigning on promises to steer America clear of the war in Europe, numerous proofs including secret correspondence with fellow Freemason Winston Churchill show he was intent on leading the U.S. into the conflict at a gallop — significantly, from behind a desk. 83% of Americans opposed American intervention, but the bankers and Roosevelt knew better. They had other plans, including loans in excess of two billion dollars to Great Britain, the shipping of fifty destroyers and hundreds of millions of rounds of ammunition, and the training of British fighter pilots in the U.S. All German consulates were closed in this country, while U.S. ships depth charged German U-boats, still without declaration of war.

Churchill reported in secret that FDR "...said he would wage war, but not declare it [and] that he would become more and more provocative... Everything was being done to force an 'incident' that could lead U.S. to war."

Henry Stimson, founding CFR member, U.S. War Secretary, and leader of a powerful American interventionist coalition, made the following notation in his diary after a meeting with Roosevelt: "We face the delicate question of diplomatic fencing to be done so as to be sure Japan is put into the wrong and makes the first bad move — overt move."

The CFR's War and Peace Studies Project was quick with the solution to the quandary. A memorandum was sent to Roosevelt, recommending aid to China and a trade embargo on Japan, advice which Roosevelt followed. Japan's assets in the U.S. were frozen, and the Panama Canal was closed to Japanese shipping, effectively creating a stranglehold on Japanese trade.

The CFR's War and Peace Studies Project was to be a central determinant of future aims of the United States. Closely collaborating with the State Department, the Studies Project divided the world into blocs, compiling available statistics on commodities production and trade. Determining that the self-sufficient capacity of Germany and Europe was higher than that of the Western Hemisphere, the Studies Project decided that the defeat of Germany and world domination by America was the only solution. America must broaden its imperialistic aims, creating an expanding capitalist world economy and international hegemony for the U.S. It was not explicitly stated which groups or individuals would rule the U.S. during this period of expansion, although it is certain that Will Rogers was at no time under consideration.

The "foremost requirement of the United States in a world in which it proposes to hold unquestioned power," the Studies Project reported, "is the rapid fulfillment of a program of complete re-armament." Herein the course for World War II and postwar world domination by "America" was charted.

Much has been written in recent years about Roosevelt's prior knowledge of an attack on Pearl Harbor, which included American maneuvers against Japan making reprisal almost inevitable, and information of a probable attack reaching Roosevelt through at least eight different sources. It was a day of infamy, as John Toland has reiterated in his book of the same title, and Roosevelt had provoked his desired "incident"

After the attack on Pearl Harbor, Allen Dulles joined the staff of the Office of Coordinator of Information (OCI), precursor to the Office of Strategic Services (OSS). J. Edgar Hoover objected to the men Dulles was hiring, characterizing the Dulles family as "internationalists." Hoover may have been onto something.

It was strictly "business as usual" during the Second World War for many of these same "internationalists." During 1942 Standard Oil of New Jersey shipped oil to the Germans through neutral Switzerland, while General Motors equipped both sides during the conflict. The Paris branch of Chase Bank conducted millions of dollars of business with the Nazis with the approval of the central Manhattan branch, while Colonel Sosthenes Behn, the head of ITT, consulted with Hitler on communication systems and robot bombs. Ball bearings, in short supply among the allies, were shipped to Nazi-connected firms in South America by the Vice Chairman of the American War Productions Board, in partnership with Nazi Goering's cousin in Philadelphia.

An American alliance with Stalin provided tacit approval to his slaughter of six million Ukrainians during 1932-33, along with the joint German-Russian invasion of Poland, and the Russian invasion of Finland, Latvia, Estonia, and Lithuania. Eleven billion dollars in lend-lease aid was given to the USSR, along with blueprints for the atomic bomb and shipments of refined uranium, proffered by the CFR's Harry Hopkins, according to G.R. Jordan's *From Major Jordan's Diaries.* After the war the American military cooperated in Operation Keelhaul, sending two million fleeing Russians back to Russia in boxcars to face Stalin's murderous reprisals.

World War II is the story of the death of thirty-five million patriotic, slogan-shouting serfs, while billions of dollars lined the pockets of the international bankers and their cohorts, the politicians and the weapons manufacturers.

At the close of the war, so goes the standard line, Hitler committed suicide in his bunker. For my part, I am not convinced. Many other prominent Nazis escaped to conspire another day; why not Hitler, who had the entire resources of the Third Reich at his command? Hitler's notoriety dictated that his death be faked (as the deaths of other Nazis have been faked since the end of the war, Martin Bormann's six times, for instance), but the mysterious circumstances and lack of evidence of his death weigh in favor of the theory that Hitler escaped.

Wayne Henderson, in an unpublished article, offers revisionist information on Hitler's death:

"In February of 1973, a journalist was given a rare interview with a man long thought dead. Though he was generally believed to have died trying to escape Berlin - scant yards ahead of Russian troops then taking the city - Martin Bormann, close intimate of Adolf Hitler, was living in seclusion, ill, in a Redemptorist convent near Tupiza, Bolivia. He, among others, had been the recipient of a joint gift of 'Wild Bill' Donovan of the OSS (later the CIA) and certain well-controlled factions of the Vatican Elite.

"Bormann had been among the Chosen Few present at the bunker on 30 April, 1945 - others present included Otto Gunsche (Hitler's adjutant), Heinz Linge (Hitler's valet), and Julius Schaub, a trusted friend of the Fuhrer who was charged with the responsibility of destroying the files; it goes without saying that Hitler and his bride of 24 hours, Eva Braun, were also there. According to the official version, Adolf & Eva died that day, though there is some disagreement as to whether they used pistols or poison.

"What really happened on 30 April 1945, however, would seem to be quite different from the official version. Hans Bauer, the Nazi flying ace - easily one of the greatest aviators the world has yet seen - had been landing and taking off outside the Chancellory, on the Wilhelmstrasse. He had ferried the favored few in and out of Berlin, and could easily have removed Hitler and his retinue at any time, every bit as easily as he'd flown the various caches of personal wealth entrusted to him by the Nazi elite to various safe hiding-places. Indeed, Bormann and others had advised Hitler to fly to Berchtesgaden, where the faithful troops could guard them in the near impenetrable Alps.

"However, a flight - at least from the Chancellory - was unnecessary. When the Soviets took the wreckage of the bunker, they found '...behind the bookcase in Hitler's personal room... a thin, concrete, removable panel. Behind it was a man-size hole leading to a... concrete shelter far underground and 500 meters away. Another tunnel connected the shelter with an underground trolley line...' The searchers also found 'a charred note in a woman's handwriting... (telling) her parents not to worry if they did not hear from her in a long while.' The Hitlers need not have taken the trolley very far, either, as Bauer could easily have picked them up at a safer airstrip than Wilhelmstrasse and flown them to any destination within fuel range. The body later identified - in the official version - as that of Hitler was more likely (considering the fact that the dentition of the corpse and that reflected in Hitler's dental charts don't match) that of Julius Schreck, a longtime fanatical supporter of the Fuhrer and Hitler's personal driver; Schreck is known to have resembled Hitler so closely that he often acted as his boss' 'double,' and Schreck's 'death' (in a poorly-staged and undocumented auto accident in 1936) made it that much easier for the devotee to take the place of his master among the charred remains of the Chancellory. Would Schreck willingly allow himself to become the corpse at Berlin? Fanatics and zealots have been known to do much stranger things."

Henderson's account is corroborated by another statement of the Russians in September of 1945: "No trace of the bodies of Hitler or Eva Braun has been discovered... It is established that Hitler, by means of false testimony, sought to hide his traces. Irrefutable proof exists that a small airplane left the Tiergarten at dawn on April 30 flying in the direction of Hamburg. Three men and a woman are known to have been on board. It has also been established that a large submarine left Hamburg before the arrival of the British forces. Mysterious persons were on board the submarine, among them a woman."

Henderson describes the fate of Rudolph Hess, "...the man who did more to set up the U.S./Vatican/Nazi connection than anyone else; he vanished into the waiting arms of the Masonic Lodges in England, long pro-Fascist and thick as thieves with their continental counterparts, Thule and the Teutonic Knights among them, on the night of 10 May 1941; the double who later served his prison sentence at Spandau and died silent in 1987 fooled only the most casual observers."

Again in support of Henderson's account, I have found that the psychiatrist chosen to examine Hess was Dr. Ewen Cameron, the soon-to-be-infamous CIA mind control doctor whose activities will be considered later in this book. Cameron reported that Allen Dulles confided to him that the captive in Spandau prison was not the real Hess, but an imposter. Hess, so

Dulles explained, had been executed on the orders of Winston Churchill. Attempting a positive identification of Hess by physically locating a World War I chest wound, Cameron was prevented by guards from doing so.

There has been much speculation about Nazis setting up a secret Antarctic base after the war, with Hitler possibly present, however it is just that — speculation — so far as I can determine. While there was a lot of Nazi submarine and tanker activity in the vicinity of Antarctica during this period, and a search for Germans mounted by the Americans utilizing 4,000 troops (suggesting the Allies definitely thought something was going on down there), nothing other than circumstantial evidence and hearsay suggests a German South Polar base was actually established. There is the possibility that the Antarctic was used as a stopping-off base for escaping Nazis, but evidence suggests that those who were able to escape Nuremberg eventually went elsewhere, although probably not to the moon or Mars.

4

The Fourth Reich

At the end of World War II Martin Bormann, Deputy Fuhrer and head of the Nazi party, and Hermann Schmitz, chief executive of I.G. Farben, hatched a plan for the continuance of Nazi goals not to be limited by territorial and national boundaries. Bormann, anticipating the destruction of the Third Reich, worked out the logistics for the escape from Germany of an estimated 10,000 prominent Nazis, using huge caches of Nazi loot as funding. These were reported to consist of in excess of ninety-five tons of gold, tons of other precious metals and jewels, and billions of dollars in currency, both real and counterfeit. Other stockpiled Nazi resources were tonnages of specialty steel, industrial machinery, and secret blueprints that could be used in the domination of areas of post-war manufacturing. These plans almost surely included the Trojan horse-style grafting of Nazi intelligence onto the OSS by SS General Reinhard Gehlen and Allen Dulles.

The Research and Analysis branch of the OSS observed in 1945 that:

“The Nazi regime in Germany has developed well-arranged plans for the perpetuation of Nazi doctrines after the war. Some of these plans have already been put into operation and others are ready to be launched on a widespread scale immediately upon termination of hostilities in Europe.”

Summarizing these plans, the OSS group said, “Nazi party members, German industrialists and the German military, realizing that victory can no longer be attained, are now developing postwar commercial projects, endeavoring to renew and cement friendships in foreign commercial circles and planning for renewals of pre-war cartel agreements.

“German technicians, cultural experts and undercover agents have well-laid plans to infiltrate into foreign countries with the object of developing economic, cultural and political ties. German technicians and scientific research experts will be made available at low cost to industrial firms and technical schools in foreign countries. German capital and plans for the construction of ultra-modern technical schools and research laboratories will be offered at extremely favorable terms since they will afford the Germans an excellent opportunity to design and perfect new weapons."

A secret meeting was convened between Bormann and prominent German industrialists on August 10, 1944 in Strasbourg. The minutes of the meeting state:

"The [Nazi] Party is ready to supply large amounts of money to those industrialists who contribute to the post-war organization abroad. In return, the Party demands all financial reserves which have already been transferred abroad or may be later transferred, so that after the defeat a strong new Reich can be built."

Reichsbanker Hjalmar Schact managed the relicensing and relocation of approximately 750 German companies outside of the country, while Otto Skorzeny, Hitler's "favorite commando" and leader of the Werewolf units, collaborated with Bormann (as well as the Vatican and, according to the Vatican Press Office, the Freemasons) in creating the Nazi "rat lines." These were escape routes to transport prominent Nazis out of Germany which included, it is said, 20,000 safe houses in Switzerland alone.

The Nazis collaborated in the formation of the *Odessa* (an acronym for "Organization of Veterans of the SS"), and its sister organization *Die Spinne* (The Spider), organizations intended to establish colonies of Nazis worldwide, and in the launching of offshoot groups, utilizing in part the resources of an estimated 200,000 foreign members of the SS. Other organizations under the *Odessa* umbrella were the *Consortium,* managing *Odessa* finances from Lima, Peru and run by Klaus Barbie and other war criminals, with *SA Estrella* in Ecuador, managing Bormann's personal finances and run by SS man Alfons Sassen.

Bormann is said to have escaped to *Kolonie Waldner 555,* a forty-by-one-hundred mile Nazi fortress on the Brazil-Paraguay border, linked with fourteen other such fortresses in the same area. Other touch-down points for escaping Nazis included the United States, South Africa, South America, Egypt, Spain, Canada and Indonesia.

War criminals Klaus Barbie and Friederich Schwend set up escape routes to South America for their compatriots, while simultaneously being in the paid employ of U.S. Army Counterintelligence (CIC). Evidence shows that Barbie went to Bolivia, Schwend to Peru, Walter Rauff to Chile, Alfons Sassen to Ecuador, Otto Skorzeny, Hans-Ulrich Rudel and Heinrich Muller to Argentina, while Josef Mengele escaped to Paraguay. Maintaining close ties to each other and other escaped Nazis, this network evolved into what has been termed the Nazi International, run by Otto Skorzeny and headquartered in Madrid. The Nazi International would be key in the establishment of worldwide arms, terrorist, and drug trafficking networks, although these crimes perhaps pale in comparison with the subversion of American intelligence, in collaboration with Allen Dulles, the result of which may be said to have been the creation of the Cold War and the continuing destruction of democracy in America.

Reinhard Gehlen, said to have been setting up Nazi Werewolf resistance groups at the end of the war, collaborated with OSS director Allen Dulles in combining Nazi and American intelligence apparatus. Gehlen has said that a "gentlemen's agreement" existed with Dulles "for a number of reasons never set down in black and white... Such was the element of trust that had been built up between the two sides during this year of intensive personal contact that neither had the slightest hesitation in founding the entire operation on verbal agreement and a handshake."

Gehlen reminisced, "I remember the terms of the agreement well...

"1. A clandestine German intelligence organization was to be set up, using the existing potential to continue information gathering in the East just as we had been doing before. The basis for this was our common interest in a defense against communism.

"2. This German organization was to work not 'for' or 'under' the Americans, but 'jointly' with the Americans.

"3. The organization would operate exclusively under German leadership, which would receive its directives and assignments from the Americans until a new government was established in Germany.

"4. The organization was to be financed by the Americans with funds which were not to be part of the occupation costs, and in return the organization would supply all its intelligence reports to the Americans.

"5. As soon as a sovereign German government was established, that government should decide whether the organization should continue to function or not, but that until such time the care and control (later referred to as 'the trusteeship') of the organization would remain in American hands.

"6. Should the organization at any time find itself in a position where the American and German interests diverged, it was accepted that the organization would consider the interests of Germany first."

Carl Oglesby has written that, "in fact the Gehlen Org substantially pre-empted the CIA's civilian character before it was ever born. The CIA was born to be rocked in Gehlen's cradle. It remained dependent on the Org even when the Org turned into the BND [*Bundesnachrichtdienst,* the German federal intelligence service]. Thus, whatever the CIA was from the standpoint of the law, it remained from the standpoint of practical intelligence collection a front for a house of Nazi spies.

"The Org was not merely military, which is bad, not merely foreign, which is much worse, and not merely Nazi, which is intolerable; it was not even professionally committed exclusively to the security of the U.S. and Western Europe. It was committed exclusively to the security of the *Odessa*."

Military intelligence historian Colonel William Corson concurs: "Gehlen's organization was designed to protect the *Odessa* Nazis. It amounts to an exceptionally well-orchestrated diversion."

Once the Gehlen Org was in place, with an estimated 4,000 intelligence specialists in Germany and more than 4,000 undercover operatives in the Soviet bloc, the perceived threat to the United States by the Soviets was aggravated by Nazi intelligence, and the Cold War was inevitable. Gehlen and his cronies seemingly never admitted that Germany had lost the war and simply persisted with Nazi objectives, using different means to destroy the USSR, namely collaboration with the United States and the OSS/CIA. The Nazis may have, in addition, foreseen the devastating results of a Cold War between the U.S. and the USSR. The Cold War provided a financial burden which has destroyed Russia and left the United States as the world's biggest debtor nation — and a virtual colony of the original Axis powers, Japan and Germany.

After the war, the American rocket program was conceived and controlled by 600 Nazis brought to the U.S. during Dulles' Project Paperclip (a project only discontinued in 1973). In choosing German scientists to be brought into the United States, the list of candidates was compiled by Werner Osenberg, commander of the Gestapo's scientific section, now in Dulles' employ. Files incriminating German officers and scientists were reportedly destroyed or changed, and Osenberg, in charge of those files, was in a favored position for the alterations.

At the time of the immigration of the Paperclip Nazis the *Chicago Herald Tribune* pointed out that the same men "exhaustively screened" in America and proven to have held no allegiance to Hitler, had earlier been "exhaustively screened" in Germany to establish that allegiance.

German scientists entered the U.S. under highly curious conditions, and in defiance of normal immigration policies. While supposedly under the most strict of military security, custody precautions were incredibly lax, as they would remain in the years to come. Ernst Steinhoff, an official at the Peenemunde V-2 rocket base, wasn't met when his boat docked, forcing him to hitchhike to the Aberdeen Proving Ground in Maryland. At White

Sands an intelligence officer said of the transplanted Nazis, that there was "no attempt to place them in anything resembling custody."

One Nazi scientist, Rudolf Hermann, gained some notoriety at Wright Field by holding daily roll calls in a brown uniform and giving speeches to his underlings about the necessity of maintaining loyalty to Hitler.

Nazis were employed in the formation of German state security, Radio Liberty, the Voice of America, and the U.S. Army Historical Division, and were used to fill top Pentagon posts and positions in industry. Additionally, Nazi scientists were employed in Chief and Deputy positions in every major division and laboratory in the American rocket program.

Although it has been a carefully guarded secret, Nazi scientists were also involved in the Army and CIA psychochemical experiments conducted on American enlisted men at Edgewood Arsenal in Maryland, and at the Army intelligence base at Fort Holabird, Maryland: this was the beginning of the CIA's M-K-Ultra mind control experiments. Experiments in some cases copied from Dachau were performed on over seven thousand American soldiers without their consent (they were told in some cases that they would be testing "summer clothing"), in violation of guidelines set at the Nuremberg trials. Nerve gases, including the deadly Nazi chemical agents Tabun and Sarin, were tested on unwitting recruits, along with a host of psychochemicals, including LSD, some resulting in deaths and permanent crippling of enlisted men.

Among the Nazi scientists transplanted to the U.S. was SS Major Werner von Braun, factually the most decorated of the Nazi breed during World War II, and a man who had joined the SS at the behest of its chief, Heinrich Himmler. Von Braun, who was to be head of the National Aeronautics and Space Administration (NASA) and the author of a book with the sonorous title *Das Marsprojekt* (1952), was responsible for running the Peenemunde rocket base during World War II, and his brainchild, the V-2 missile, would have carried atom bombs to New York if Nazi plans had proceeded farther.

During the war German V-2s were responsible for the deaths of 7,000 British citizens, however through false reports channelled through captured *Abwehr* agents British intelligence was able to re-target the missiles from falling mostly on upper class neighborhoods into the working class neighborhoods of South London — whew!

It is estimated that 100 slave laborers died per day on average in the construction of the V-2s, with an estimated 20,000 dying during the course of the war. Policy dictated that slaves hung for punishment were left suspended for days as a reminder to the surviving unfortunates. A survivor of Peenemunde describes such an instance: "Fifty-seven were hung. An electric crane, in the tunnel, lifted twelve prisoners at a time, hands behind their backs, a piece of wood in their mouths, hanged by a length of wire attached at the back of their necks to prevent them from crying out."

Yves Beon of the French Resistance swore that, although the SS was employed to manage the slave force used in construction of rockets, they acted on the orders of von Braun and General Dornberger, although, according to both of these men, they in turn followed orders. As mentioned, it can be substantiated that von Braun attended conferences on slave labor allocations with other high-ranking SS officers, and there is no indication that he or Dornberger offered any protest about the conditions in the slave camp.

Von Braun's security record, including a statement by the military governor in occupied Germany stating that von Braun was "an ardent Nazi" and "regarded as a potential security threat," was ignored by American intelligence.

Von Braun refused to work in American rocketry unless General Walter Dornberger, his mentor at Peenemunde, was released from captivity. Dornberger, who had been convicted at Nuremberg of collaborating to murder 6,000 prisoners, and had been sentenced to be hung, received a full pardon arranged by High Commissioner John J. McCloy.

McCloy is the man who would later be president of Rockefeller's Chase Manhattan Bank, legal counsel to the "Seven Sisters" of oil, chairman of the CFR, and serve on the Warren Commission for official cover-up, along with Allen Dulles. During the period of supposed "de-Nazification" following the war, McCloy pardoned, almost to a man, the 70,000 Nazis accused of war crimes.

It should be noted that McCloy represents an interface between international banking and Nazi interests, with connections going back to after World War I, when he was a lawyer in the employ of I.G. Farben. During the 1936 Olympics in Berlin, McCloy shared a box with Hitler, and was in contact with Hess before his flight to England in 1941.

The American government has been reticent to disclose that security breaches were numerous after the Germans were brought into this country. Wright Field specialist Heinz Gartmann, said to have been negotiating with a Russian factory prior to his attempted departure from the United States, was apprehended leaving with rocket engine blueprints in his luggage, while Walter Jessel, an interrogator of the rocket scientists for the Army, claimed that there was a conspiracy between von Braun, Dornberger, and Dornberger's chief of staff to withhold information from U.S. officers.

Three German scientists were found to have illegal mail drops in El Paso, Texas where they received money and coded messages from foreign sources. Other instances of Nazi scientists receiving money from unknown sources were not investigated by the military, including an instance when one third of the German Paperclip group simultaneously bought expensive cars that they were reportedly unable to afford on their salaries. There were also repeated suspicions that rockets were being sabotaged, and that components were missing from recovered missiles.

Von Braun's brother, brought into the country apparently only because he was related to the scientist, was caught selling a bar of platinum to an El Paso jeweler. Although he was unable to explain how he came by the platinum, the Justice Department ordered that the case not be investigated.

When U.S. astronauts first landed on the moon, Jean Michel, a survivor of the Dora rocket factory, was one of the few persons to raise a critical voice. Speaking of Nazi collaboration in the creation of the U.S. space program, Michel said, "I could not watch the Apollo mission without remembering that triumphant walk was made possible by our initiation to inconceivable horror."

If one is still apt to think of von Braun and ninety of his fellows at command level in NASA as cranky eggheads and "reformed" Nazis, their connections to the assassination of John F. Kennedy should be examined.

"William Torbitt," (deceased Texas lawyer David Copeland), author of the superb *Nomenclature of an Assassination Cabal,* named von Braun, directing the Security Division of NASA, as a key operative in the Kennedy assassination. Von Braun's offices reportedly served as a meeting place for men in the higher levels of the plot hierarchy, and he was closely associated with Defense Industrial Security Command (DISC, now DISCO), the secret police agency of the monolithic American munitions manufacturers. Many of DISC's executives are reported to have been Mafia, creating a rich stew. Alleged conspirators Colonel Clay Shaw of the National Security Agency, Guy Bannister, David Ferrie, Lee Harvey Oswald, and Jack Ruby have been shown to have been in contact with, and possibly agents for DISC, while Walter Dornberger, von Braun's mentor, has also been implicated as a high level conspirator in the plot.

"Torbitt" names Lyndon Johnson and J. Edgar Hoover as heading the conspiracy, with Canadian lawyer Louis Mortimer Bloomfield as the coordinator for the operation, responsible only to Johnson and Hoover. Bloomfield was said to be in charge of the Permindex organization, an umbrella for the layers of action networks in the assassination cabal, but "Torbitt" doesn't mention that Bloomfield — Major Bloomfield — had been a longtime operative of the British Special Operations Executive, under the direction of "retired" SOE chief Sir William Stephenson (Intrepid), as well as being a member of the conspiratorial Knights of Malta — long linked to

Nazi and Fascist interests. Bloomfield was also an executive representative for the International Law Association, a legal arm of the Rhodes Round Table.

Bloomfield's immediate juniors in the conspiracy are alleged to have been Ferenc Nagy and Jean De Menil, in charge of a group of Russian, European and Middle Eastern exiles called Solidarists; Carlos Prio Soccaras, ex-Cuban President, heading a group of Cuban exiles; H.L. Hunt, in charge of a section of the American Council of Churches, an alleged front for spies; Clifford Jones, ex-lieutenant governor of Nevada, and Bobby Baker, heading an organization of Mafia and gamblers called The Syndicate; along with von Braun, in charge of the Security Division of NASA.

Hoover controlled the investigation of the JFK assassination, while familiar faces Allen Dulles and John McCloy helped determine what seems to have been the pre-arranged verdict of the Warren Commission, that Lee Harvey Oswald was the lone assassin. After the death of Jack Ruby, Associated Press' Bernard Bayzer reported that Ruby had maintained that Nazis and Fascists were behind the Kennedy assassination. A fair characterization, it seems to me.

After World War II there was a resurgence of Nazi interests in Germany. Details such as that West German Chancellor Konrad Adenauer had employed slave labor in his home and garden during the war, and that his Secretary of State, Globke, had been a top official of the Reich Office for Jewish Affairs, were overlooked, possibly because of the fact that Adenauer had been vetted and approved by Reinhard Gehlen.

By 1951 the *Bundestag* had passed a law requiring that German administrators dismissed during the Allied occupation must be reinstated, and within two years 163,577 administrators who had been employed in the Third Reich had been readmitted to government. Thus, the administrative hierarchy of the Nazis was restored.

In 1953 the British arrested a group of former Nazi officials including Dr. Werner Naumann, former State Secretary in Goebbels' Propaganda Ministry, Karl Kaufmann, ex-Gauleiter of Hamburg, SS General Paul Zimmermann, Gustav Scheel, Gauleiter of Salzburg, Austria, Dr. Heinrich Haselmeyer, head of the Nazi Student League, Dr. Karl Scharping, a propaganda official under Goebbels, and Heinz Siepen, also an ex-Gauleiter. These men were reported to be the leaders of a group of 125 important Nazis whose purpose had been "the overthrow of the Bonn parliamentary regime." Prior to his arrest Naumann had been engaged in secret conferences with Adenauer. Evidence presented to Adenauer by the British "revealed a wide-spread plot with ramifications into many political parties and other influential organizations of West Germany."

When confronted with information about the activities of Naumann and his group in attempts to revive Nazism, Bonn Justice Minister Dehler reported that, "He was trying to fill key positions in the rightist parties with his supporters. The final goal was the restoration of the Nazi dictatorship with emphasis on the German race and its leadership role. [He] plotted to destroy the democratic system in Germany with considerable support from abroad."

Adenauer requested that the Naumann proceedings be brought under German jurisdiction, which the British agreed to. At the time the Bremer *Nachrichten* reported threats by the Naumann lawyers to reveal "the true background of the case" if Naumann and his group were not released. Within three months of being transferred to German jurisdiction, the conspirators were released, and within a year and a half the court dismissed the case without trial or hearing.

Naumann and his gang seem to have succeeded in their plans. Polls show that by 1958 the German populace regarded Hitler as "the greatest statesman of all time," and that 7-8 million Germans remained dedicated to Nazism.

Kurt P. Tauber, writing in the *New York Times* magazine in 1959, stated that under Adenauer "has come the return to social, economic and political power of precisely those commercial and industrial elites who supported a megalomaniac imperialism under the Empire."

In the 1970s all 176 generals in the West German Army were veterans of service under Hitler. *The Brown Book* on Nazis reports that 1,800 major Nazis held positions in the German government or were drawing pensions on wartime service during the 1970s. Fifteen government ministers, 828 judges and judicial officials, 245 senior diplomats, and 297 police officials were reported to have been members of the Third Reich, while Nazi officers have been involved in the resurgence of Nazi youth groups in Germany.

In recent years the Nazi International has been linked to the Freemasonic "shadow government of Italy," the Propaganda Due Lodge (P2). P2 controlled large portions of European and American intelligence and banking, its expansion during the 1970s, according to Italian secret service documents, engineered by the lodge's Venerable Master and Knight of Malta Licio Gelli, with the assistance of Knight of Malta Alexander Haig (also implicated in the underground "Skorzeny File" as a member of the Nazi International) and CFR agent Henry Kissinger. Kissinger's mentor is Fritz Kraemer, a thirty year member of the Pentagon Plans Division and recently involved in promoting the Star Wars program. Kraemer was alleged by researcher Mae Brussell to have been an officer in the SS.

P2 is reported to have been responsible for the death of Pope John Paul I, thirty-three days after he assumed the papacy. David Yallop, in *In God's Name,* says that the Pope didn't die by heart attack, as was reported, but was poisoned because of his plans to expose the Freemasonic membership of high-ranking Vatican officials, and to rein in the Vatican's corrupt financial networks. He believes that P2 was controlled by some unknown higher authority, through Gelli. Swiss publications allege this to be the Freemasonic Alpina Lodge of Switzerland, with a membership including Club of Rome founder Aurelio Peccei and Henry Kissinger, although conspiratologists allege that the Freemasons have long provided a sort of underground railroad for the activities of Illuminist-banking interests allied around the House of Rothschild.

Yallop maintains of P2 that "...there are still branches functioning in Argentina, Venezuela, Paraguay, Bolivia, France, Portugal and Nicaragua. Members are also active in Switzerland and the U.S.A. P2 interlocks with the Mafia in Italy, Cuba and the U.S.A. It interlocks with a number of the military regimes of Latin America, and with a variety of groups of neo-Fascists. It also interlocks very closely with the C.I.A. It reaches right into the heart of the Vatican."

Journalist Mino Pecorelli, a P2 member, claimed that the P2 was actually run by the CIA; that is, he did until he was killed with two pistol shots to the mouth, the standard Mafia penalty for saying too much. If Pecorelli was right, another question might be asked: who runs the CIA? Evidence is heavily weighted against the American people.

Former CIA Director Stansfield Turner may have betrayed a link between the CIA and P2 when he admitted that Pope John Paul's personal physician, one of the first to examine him after his death, was a long time CIA asset.

Stephen Knight, another in a long line of journalists alleged to have died under mysterious circumstances, saw things differently. Noting that the roster of P2 implicates virtually every political group in Italy except for the communist party, and based upon information from a source in British intelligence, Knight said that Gelli was KGB, and that the P2 is only the tip of the iceberg of a worldwide penetration of Freemasonry by the KGB. According to Knight "the 'jobs for the brethren' [i.e. job favoritism for fellow Masons] aspect of... Freemasonry has been used extensively by the KGB to penetrate the most sensitive areas of authority, most spectacularly illustrated in the years since 1945 by its placing of spies at the highest levels of MI5 and MI6."

More recently Knight of Malta Ronald Reagan and his presidential successor, the scion of an international banking family, 33rd degree Mason, CIA, CFR, and Skull and Bones Society member George Bush, showed no unwillingness to collaborate with Nazis and Fascists in their numerous illegal, covert operations.

Reagan's acquaintance with Nazism goes back to the 1940s, when he was Gestapo agent Errol Flynn's roommate and visited Flynn's senior agent, Dr. Herman Erban, on several occasions. Reagan was a member of the Free Europe Committee, which included Nazis in its leadership, and his appointments secretary while Governor of California and later President of the United States was Helene von Damme, who had come to California as translator for Otto von Bolschwing and his high-tech CIA front TCI. Von Bolschwing had been a Captain in Heinrich Himmler's SS and Adolph Eichmann's superior in Europe and Palestine, and worked with Dulles' OSS, taking over a major portion of Gehlen's network in 1954.

George Bush's background is old Connecticut banking (y'all), and his father, Prescott Bush, was a member of the W.A. Harriman international banking firm, a director of the Columbia Broadcasting System, Inc., the Prudential Company of America, Union Banking Industries, Inc. and the U.S. Guaranty Trust, among other companies. While at Yale University, Prescott Bush was initiated into the secret Skull and Bones Society (whose emblem indicates a probable Freemasonic affiliation), as George was later to be, and was part of the British/CFR/Rothschild banking clique instrumental in financing the rise of the Hitler and the Russian communists.

When six Fascists were noted on George Bush's campaign staff in 1988, he quickly made the roster of his "ethnic outreach" group unavailable. The staff included Florian Galdau of the still-existing Romanian Iron Guard, a group formed by the SS, Philip Guarino of the Freemasonic P2 Lodge, and Nicolas Nazarenko, of the German SS Cossack Division. Other members were Laszlo Pasztor, Nazi collaborator and member of the SS's Arrow Cross party, and Radi Slavoff, member of a Bulgarian cell formed by the Nazi Bulgarian Legion. Co-chairman Jerome Brentar admits to having assisted hundreds of Nazis to emigrate to the United States.

An examination of the activities of the CIA during the time when George Bush was director provides a clear sense of the identity of international conspiracy. During this period we see the CIA closely linked to the drug, arms smuggling, and assassination networks of the Nazi "Iron Circle" of police and intelligence agencies in South America, and, particularly through the activities of the CIA's JM Wave office in Miami, to the umbrella of Skorzeny's Nazi International and its worldwide network of collaborators. In this milieu, which was connected to and spawned such operations as Bay of Pigs, the Kennedy Assassination, and Iran-Contra, Nazi International agents such as Frank Bender (allegedly aka Fritz Sven) and American-Chilean DINA agent Michael Townley worked hand-in-glove with American CIA agents to promote agendas designed to undermine American and world democracy.

In retrospect, it would be a mistake to see the grafting of German spydom and the Nazi International onto American intelligence as an entirely alien "virus" contaminating the morality and lofty purposes of the American establishment. As can be seen by the activities of U.S. and British business, statecraft, occult groups, and "aristocracy" in their role in promoting Hitler to power, and the orientation and alliances of such men as the Dulles brothers and the world-spanning banking and industrialist alliances they represented, the Nazis were no isolated phenomenon, only one expression of a multi-faceted and murderous worldwide game.

Technology is a means for achieving a purpose, a will to power, and when German technology was transferred to the United States and other countries after World War II, it was marshalled, hoarded even as it was being shared. The controlling reins of German technologies such as rockets, advanced aircraft, computers, and atomics were never fully surrendered; inner circle control, through knowledge obtainable only in the inner circle, was retained by Nazis and their sympathizers.

While thousands of Nazis were incorporated into the government, industry, and intelligence agencies of the United States, the public relations image of men like Mengele, Bormann, and Hess could never have been rehabilitated in the mind of a public who had fought a devastating war against them. These men were forced to function behind the scenes from such localities as South America, Spain, Egypt and South Africa, fully linked via the Nazi International and its intermediaries with world events as they unfolded, but unable to show their faces.

It is in this environment of extensive collaboration and infiltration by Nazis and Fascists, a collaboration that involves a long-term continuance of Nazi goals separated from earlier German territorial goals, and an overall shepherding and betrayal by international monied interests, government and intelligence agencies, that America's descent into totalitarianism, genocide and mind control becomes understandable, and the *Alternative 3* template first becomes visible.

5

UFOs and the Secret Space Program

The book *Alternative 3* maintains there is "abundant evidence that by 1951 the super-powers were far more advanced in space technology than they have ever admitted" and in this it is correct. There is a strong case to be made for UFOs as part of hidden and high echelon government projects, utilizing the secrets of flying disk craft received from the Nazis at the end of World War II. The timeline certainly fits.

In the *South Wales Argus* for December 13, 1944, Marshall Yarrow of Reuters stated: "The Germans have produced a 'secret' weapon in keeping with the Christmas season. The new device, which is apparently an air defense weapon, resembles the glass balls which adorn Christmas trees. They have been seen hanging in the air over German territory, sometimes singly, sometimes in clusters. They are colored silver and are apparently transparent."

These were the famous "Foo Fighter" balls (from the French *feu,* fire) which accompanied and, it was reported, destroyed some incoming Allied fighter missions during the latter days of the war. In discussions of UFO phenomena by the military their existence is invariably ignored.

Renato Vesco, writing in *Intercept — But Don't Shoot* says that the Foo Fighters were real, termed *Feuerballs* (fireballs) by the Germans, and constructed at Wiener Neustadt. They were supposedly the technological basis for the much larger German *Kugelblitz* (Ball Lightning Fighter), with a design conforming to popular concepts of "flying saucers." These designs have been attributed to German scientists Habermohl, Miethe, and

Schriever, and the Italian physicist Bellonzo. Based upon an article in the October 15, 1954 edition of the French newspaper *Le Lorrain,* one saucer construction site, from which a disk took off on February 14, 1945, was Prague, Czechoslovakia; another construction site was located at Breslau, Germany.

After the war, Habermohl is said to have gone to the Soviet Union, while Miethe went to the United States and worked at the A.V. Roe company in Canada on the Avro flying disk craft, while Schriever stayed in Germany, to die in Breslau in 1953.

Flugkapitan Rudolph Schriever said that in 1941 he had designed a prototype "flying top," and that the craft had been in the testing stages in 1945, but with the advance of the Allies the prototype had been destroyed. He maintained until his death that the various UFO reports since the end of the war showed that his *Kugelblitz* designs had been discovered and put into production.

A confidential Italian document, obtained by the OSS from an informer in Switzerland, stated that during the latter part of the war the informer had observed an encounter between an unknown craft and Allied planes: "A strange flying machine, hemispherical or at any rate circular in shape, attacked them at a fantastic speed, destroying them in a few seconds without using any guns."

Another German researcher into flying disk craft during World War II was Victor Schauberger. Designs of his "Flying Hat" aircraft show that they were similar in configuration to many of the saucers reported since the late 1940s, particularly the bell-shaped variety popularized by photos taken by outer space gadabout George Adamski. Schauberger, whose researches were classified high priority by the German government, was researching "...not nuclear fission, but nuclear fusion" and had apparently achieved several working models of his disk craft. Schauberger travelled to the United States after the war and then, one day in Chicago in the early fifties in a foreshadowing of *Alternative 3's* missing scientists theme, "just vanished."

There were numerous reports of "flying saucers" travelling singly or in formation in the vicinity of the Canadian border in 1947. At about this time, a report from the Canadian government said, "The Defense authorities are examining all ideas, even revolutionary ones, that have been suggested for the development of new types of supersonic aircraft, also including flying disks. This, however, is still in the beginning phase of research and it will be a number of months before we are able to reach anything positive and seven or more years before we come to actual production."

The Canadians were protesting too much. Visiting the aircraft plant of Avro Canada Ltd. in 1953, John B. Macauley, assistant secretary of the American Defense Department, got a look at a functional flying saucer. "I've never seen anything like it in all the years I've spent in aviation — and that's most of my life," Macauley said. He reported to a House of Representatives subcommittee that the saucer "can skim close to the ground, dart between trees, dip into small valleys and generally hug the Earth's surface." Reports from the U.S. Air Force were not so modest about the Avro craft's capabilities, describing it as a high speed interceptor aircraft. Whatever the vehicle was, the Canadian Defense Ministry abruptly announced in 1954 that the Avro disk project was being abandoned, because it "served no purpose."

U.S. News and World Report may have been premature in blowing the whistle on saucer craft in the story "Flying Saucers - The Real Story: U.S. Built First One in 1942," in its April 7, 1950 edition:

"Flying saucers, seen by hundreds of competent observers over most parts of U.S., are accepted as real. Evidence is that they are aircraft of a revolutionary type, a combination of helicopter and fast jet plane. They conform to well-known principles of aerodynamics. An early model of these saucers was built by U.S. engineers in 1942, achieved more than 100 successful test flights. That project then was taken over by the Navy in wartime. Much more advanced models now are being built... In more detail, the story pieced together from nonsecret testimony of responsible U.S. scientists, private observers and military officials is this:

"Early models of the flying saucer... were built by U.S. Government engineers of the National Advisory Committee for Aeronautics... The first U.S. model, designed by Charles H. Zimmerman, of NACA, was elliptical in shape, powered by two piston engines and driven by twin propellers. It had a maximum speed between 400 and 500 miles per hour. More important, it could rise almost vertically and its minimum speed for landing was only about 35 miles an hour, a great advantage in military and naval aircraft...

"What they look like... is described in well-documented accounts. Those accounts show saucers to be exactly 105 feet in diameter, circular in shape. They have what appear to be jet nozzles arranged all around the outer rim, just below the center of gravity. They are made of a metal alloy, with a dull whitish color. There are no rudders, ailerons, or other protruding surfaces. From the side the saucers appear about ten feet thick - there are no exact measurements from this angle in publicly available records. They are built in three layers, with the center layer slightly larger in diameter than the other two..."

Another verification of early hidden saucer technology was received by researcher Thomas Adams, although the author (known to Mr. Adams) chose to remain anonymous:

"I was privileged once to get in on the observance of a real, genuine, solid, tangible UFO model under construction where I was once an employee at Goodyear Aerospace Corp. (now Goodyear Atomic!) in Akron for three years back in the mid-60's. I had 'blue, secret' clearance then and the individual who showed me the UFO in a special hangar there had 'red, top secret' clearance. At that time I was not allowed to disclose what I had seen due to just the fact that I was an employee. We were under the threat of a Federal fine and imprisonment if we talked about matters secret or top secret. Of course, now, it no longer applies. Anyhow, I found out later, through Mrs. C [name on file with Mr. Adams] that a [UFO investigator - name on file] had phoned her about OTHER former employees of G.A.C. having seen the same thing I did. [Mrs. C.] then proceeded to tell [the investigator] then asked me to come over to his place to identify pictures he had of it [taken by someone who sighted the UFO over in Indiana] upon which I did. It is commonly referred to as the 'Zip Craft' and is now known to fly in excess of 10,000 mph and is test-flown now and then throughout mainly Ohio, Indiana and Kentucky. The model I saw was still in the construction stages but looked to be of an aluminum-type material, flat surface with a dome in the middle, no visible portholes, about twenty feet in width, smooth as silk, antenna on top of dome, etc. I believe it was only about 60% completed so the description cannot be totally accurate as I did not see a complete 'Zip' with my own eyes other than in [the investigator's] photos and slides. To this day I have no idea how G.A.C. could have constructed a UFO capable of fantastic speeds, but my feeling is that some of the ideas may have come from knowledge obtained from inspection of crashed UFOs... Whatever the case may be, I do feel our government knows one helluva lot they're not telling the masses about."

A letter sent by Dexter W. Zinke to Lawrence Fawcett of Citizens Against UFO Secrecy in 1990 again confirms the existence of government disk craft. Zinke says: "I saw a show on *Inside Edition* yesterday that mentioned your organization and its efforts to expose the role of the U.S. Military in the UFO situation. I thought you might like to hear my experience with this subject when I was a Navy Officer stationed at Moffett Field, California.

"In November 1964 I went into Hangar No. 1, the old zeppelin hangar, and saw a flying saucer. It was about twenty feet in diameter and four or five feet thick. It had no vertical control surfaces such as rudders. It stood on small steel legs, about 3/4 inches in diameter, about two feet off of the ground. The legs did not appear to retract. It had a cockpit, covered by a hemispherical plexiglass cover, for only the pilot. I could see a couple of dozen gauges and various controls in the cockpit. It had an air intake, which was about five feet in diameter, located in the center of the top surface. Turbine blades were visible inside of the air intake. The cockpit was on one side of the aircraft between the edge of the air intake and the outer edge of the saucer. Under the saucer, around the entire outer edge, there were flaps about four inches high and two feet wide that could be moved independently from horizontal to vertical, inboard from these flaps. Exhaust gases had been directed by the flaps. The flaps and the exhaust ports were blackened. On the top of the saucer, around the edge, in black block capital letters about four inches high, was printed 'U.S. AIRFORCE-U.S. NAVY.'"

"I went and got a friend of mine, Lt Ken McCaw, who was the legal officer for Moffett Field, and took him to Hangar No. 1. He saw the saucer. Ken was here in Portland working for Georgia Pacific Corporation, but I have not talked to him in years. I really do not know where he is now. Attorneys are not too hard to find if you want to talk to him.

"There were armed Marine guards in the hangar all the time. It would be interesting to see how many would remember the saucer and come forward. When I saw the saucer in '64 it had been in storage since '58 so quite a few guards must have seen it.

"In early 65 I managed to get a tour of Ames Research Center, which was located at Moffett Field at that time. I was talking to two men there and asked if they knew about the saucer in Hangar No. 1. They both said they had, and that the saucer that I had seen flew from 1955 to 1958 and was subsonic. They said that supersonic saucers were being flown at that time ('65).

"I have kept quiet all these years because I have been afraid of retaliation by the Navy. Your program last night just goes to show that the Military covers up a lot of things and that is why so much money is wasted on defense. Maybe if more people who were in the Military would talk-up some of this waste can be stopped. If the Navy does retaliate against me it will be an excellent indication that they do know about flying saucers and have something to hide."

Popular tales of extraterrestrial abductions aside, we do know that the U.S., Canadian and British governments were conducting flights with saucer-shaped flying craft throughout the latter half of this century, and eyewitness reports and film of unusual aerial maneuvers over government bases suggest that these flights continue to this day. In recent years thousands of people have trekked into the Nevada desert to watch the lights of 'impossible' aircraft dancing in the sky above the U.S. military installation variously called Dreamland, S-4, and Area 51.

An article in the February 1987 issue of *Gung-Ho,* a magazine about the military, talks about "UnFunded Opportunities" (UFO) currently available:

"As for 'UnFunded Opportunities,' these are programs dealing with technology levels so advanced that one Air Force officer involved in SR-71 development said: 'We are flight testing vehicles that defy description. To compare them conceptually to the SR-71 would be like comparing Leonardo Da Vinci's parachute design to the space shuttle.'

"Other officers are similarly emphatic about the nature of these new systems: 'We have things that are so far beyond the comprehension of the average aviation authority as to be really alien to our way of thinking,' says one retired colonel."

Former NASA technician Bill Kaysing maintains that *We Never Went To The Moon* in his book of the same title. Having analyzed photos of Lunar landings and reviewed official NASA reports, Kaysing believes that the moon launch and other space ventures were staged and, while decoy rockets were launched, the moon landings were simulated on sound stages at secret installations in Nevada. The information that Kaysing has gathered, however, can be interpreted in a different manner.

Photos of the first Lunar landing show a strange discrepancy. There is no indication that the rocket blast from the Lunar module disturbed the soil to any degree. Footprints of the astronauts are shown in profusion around the module, yet there is no crater beneath it, not even an apparent disturbance of the dust caused by the lander's exhaust.

While this might be interpreted as proof, as Kaysing believes, that the lander was a stationary mock-up on a soundstage in Nevada, it could also be an indication that the module employed another means of propulsion that did not require rockets, such as the gravity or other drives mentioned in the *Gung-Ho* article.

Research into such propulsion methods has been conducted for many years, and used to be spoken of much more frequently than it is today, with scientists in the 1950s going so far as to suggest that a breakthrough in anti-gravity research was "imminent." Testimony to the House Armed Services Committee hearings on UFOs in 1966 revealed that "six agencies of the federal government are extending themselves in research to uncover the suspected secret of these objects [i.e. UFOs] — that of gravity control or anti-gravity power. Forty-six such projects of research of varying degrees are currently being subsidized, including 33 under Air Force supervision."

Were all those projects unsuccessful?

6

Hot Jobs and Crop Circles

Alternative 3 relates the assassination of scientist “Sir William Ballentine” by laser “hot job.” Quoting Professor Hubert Radwell ...who gave evidence at the Ballentine inquest:

“Ballentine’s body was not merely burned. It was reduced to little more than cinders and scorched bones. His skull had shrunk because of the intense heat to which he had been subjected and yet his clothing was hardly damaged.”

A real parallel to laser hot jobs are other secret plans of the Nazis in the last days of the war.

Albert Speer, in *Inside the Third Reich* relates that in April, 1945 he was told by Robert Ley, Germany’s Minister for Labor, that Germany possessed a “death ray.” Heinz Schaeffer corroborated Speer in his book *U-boat* 977, saying that the S.S. had offered to give him a demonstration of a “death ray,” also in April of 1945, but that due to his schedule as a submarine captain he had been unable to attend.

The U.S. government-published *America’s Aircraft Year Book* provides further information on plans related to a death ray: “Rudolph Herrman... a specialist in supersonics... was a member of the group entrusted with Hitler’s futuristic plans to establish a space-station rocket refuelling base revolving as a satellite about the Earth at a distance of 4,000 miles.” Major Robert Staver, one of Herrman’s interrogators, described plans to equip the space station with a giant focusing reflector. “[It is] a weapon which will enable the first country to achieve this undertaking to rule the world. The focusing of this reflector upon any living persons would kill them immediately. Ocean water would be instantly turned to steam, a forest instantly kindled.”

During World War II the Japanese were also involved in exotic weapons research, as evidenced by a document from the library of the Imperial War Museum in London. Titled "RESTRICTED APPENDIX 1-E, SUBJECT: DEATH RAY" and dated 3 October, 1945, it is a synopsis of interviews with Lieutenant General Shimoda and other Japanese officers, conducted by Doctors Griggs, Moreland, and Stephenson. The document states:

"For five and a half years the Japs have been working on a 'death ray.' This is based on the principle that very short radio waves focused in a beam of high power will cause physiological effects in mammals, resulting in death. The purpose of these researches was to develop a military weapon which would cause paralysis or death to any human being upon whom the beam was focused." The document goes on to describe the device's most suitable military application, "anti-aircraft," and to say that the Japanese had spent the equivalent of two million dollars in its development. Also described are various experiments using the death ray, and the amount of time required to kill animals of differing species, concluding: "With the development of higher-power and shorter-wave length oscillators, which has become possible through the Allied research on radar, it is possible that a death ray might be developed that could kill unshielded human beings at a distance of five to ten miles if these Japanese experiments are reliable indications of the potentialities of the death ray."

How does this relate to current technological capability, or the revealed hints of such? Apparently America does have functional battlefield lasers as part of its weapons arsenal. The *Spotlight* newspaper described the Pentagon's secret "Project AOC" (Army Optical Countermeasures) and the usage of "A high-frequency laser gun pulsating 10 joules of beam power 100 times per second... [to] incinerate a human eye." A joule is the amount of energy need to accelerate a quarter-pound weight to 100 feet per second. In the article authors Harrer and Dobbs relate their sources had said the weapon was deployed during the Iraqi war.

Another interesting clue to possible covert research are the reports of arson investigators seeking the cause of a large number of forest fires in central California in 1985, as noted by researcher Waves Forest. Research suggests that the burn patterns of the fires were started high in the trees, with the effects of lightning being ruled out. Fantastically, these high level burns could indicate the firing of laser weapons (perhaps part of the government Star Wars program) from some point in the atmosphere or in space.

A strange, although factual case was related in the *Society for the Protection of Individual Rights and Liberties* (*SPIRAL*) newsletter of August 21, 1982:

"The... case discussed here... concerns Jack Angel, 66... a successful, healthy clothing salesman who happened to be on the road making a sales trip when it happened. On November 12, 1974, Jack pulled his motorhome into a Ramada Inn parking lot in Savannah, GA and prepared himself for a good night's sleep. However, Jack didn't wake up until four days later, on Nov. 16. He was severely burned.

"As Jack explained it, 'It was just burned, blistered (his hand), and I had this big explosion in my chest. It left a hell of a hole. I was burned down here on my legs and between my groin, down on my ankle and up and down my back. In spots!' But he felt no pain. He showered and changed his clothes (none of which were touched by the burn). He staggered to the lounge (although he had not been drinking) and ordered a scotch to ease the pain. Suddenly Jack got up and staggered to the restroom. The next thing he recalls is being in a hospital. He had a charred hand and a 3 x 4 centimeter burn cavity in his chest. The doctors told him he had been burned *internally*!

"Jack and his wife checked out the mobile home to see what could have caused these burns, but she found nothing unusual. During this time Jack had to have his hand amputated because of damaged nerves and burns. After recuperating he got in touch with lawyers to see if he could seek damages for a possible malfunction in his motorhome, but the lawyers checked and rechecked every detail of the motorhome — they even checked the power lines above the space where he parked those 4 nights, but no cause could be found and the case was dropped. To this day, Jack does not know how he became so severely burned."

In discussing recent "crop circle" phenomena in the *Amargi* ecology newsletter, author Otter G'Zell suggests a possible explanation involving military hardware that may be employed in "hot jobs." "A ...mundane and disturbing hypothesis has been proposed [for the crop circles] by Jean-Jacques Velasco, head of GEPAN (*Groupe d'Etudes des Phenomenes Aerospatiaux Non-identifies*), the official UFO investigative agency of the French government (now renamed SEPRA). Velasco has pointed out the large number of military installations in the area of the phenomena (although a third of Wiltshire is off-limits to the public). The military claims vast tracts of land to which it allows only severely restricted access, including no non-military overflights, and it is significant that the 'crop circles' in Britain, as well as those in the U.S., Canada and New Zealand, are showing up on these very military reservations! Velasco believes that the circles are a result of military tests of advanced Star Wars weaponry, perhaps created by a beam of infrared or microwave energy bounded off mirrors in space to the fields below.

"Velasco's hypothesis would also account for the lack of an uproar among the farmers: perhaps they are being compensated? It would also explain why none of England's professional biologists have taken the trouble to visit the sites, although Oxford, Cambridge and other prestigious universities are an easy drive away.

"In consultation with our own investigators, the ERA is tending to concur with Dr. Velasco. Several significant details have been reported to us which we think may allow a tentative reconstruction of the mechanism involved: First, we have the report of a laboratory analysis of some of the affected wheat stalks. The 90 degree bending at the base is due to the 'explosion' of the lowest node of the stalk, evidently by vaporization of the water contained therein. Deprived of its structural rigidity at the node, the stalk simply falls over. The fibers are not broken in the process, and continue carrying water and nutrients past the collapsed node, so the plant continues living where it has fallen. This effect can most readily be explained by microwaves, which can be tuned to a frequency that will vaporize water. Indeed, microwave lasers, called 'masers' (Microwave Amplification by Stimulated Emission of Radiation), were actually developed some years before the now-familiar visible-light lasers.

"The second relevant report comes from a farmer who claims to have witnessed the formation of a circle. He says that it was as if a giant hand suddenly laid down on the wheat with a rapid rotation, twisting it into a flattened spiral. The image of a collapsing spiral of dominos leaps to mind. This effect would be expected of a rotating maser beam directed from above.

"But the most telling report, and one which offers the most concrete evidence we have so far come across, comes from a recreational glider pilot who drifted with the air currents over restricted military airspace in Wiltshire. He observed a reflection of his glider floating in the air before him, and as he sailed closer he found himself circling a huge but invisible cylindrical reflecting surface suspended vertically in the air.

"I offer this hypothetical reconstruction of a top-secret military device capable not only of creating the mysterious 'crop circles,' but also of being a devastating anti-personnel weapon. Imagine a huge vertical cylinder made of rigid 100% reflective mylar. The top is capped with a slightly bulging disk of flexible reflective mylar, similar to that found in popular helium balloons. The bottom is capped with a transparent mylar disk. Inside, the upper disk is sealed to a clear underdisk. By injecting or removing air into the space between, the parabolic shape of the upper mirror may be increased or decreased to focus a beam reflected off its surface. In the center of the cylinder is a rotating maser projection device. This is aimed upward at the curved top mirror, so the entire apparatus resembles a giant upside-down reflecting telescope.

"A maser altimeter and computer-adjusted air pressure devices adjust the focus of the reflected beam to any configuration desired at ground level. Atmospheric buoyancy is achieved by filling the entire cylinder with hydrogen. Position would be controlled by gas jets. It obviously wouldn't be stable in a high wind, but in still air the device could be maneuvered into position, fired and returned to base with no one the wiser. The exterior surface would reflect only sky and be completely invisible to the eye unless one were directly under it and looking up into the interior, where relatively small mechanisms might be seen. Even these could be cloaked by suspending a reflective cone directly beneath the interior mechanisms. As for the more complex patterns in the affected wheat fields, these could be achieved in the same manner as Batman's 'bat-signal,' by superimposing a cut-out template between the maser beam and the upper parabolic mirror."

If crop circles are the result of military or other advanced weapons testing, they may have two purposes. The initial crop circles were just that, simple round impressions with, at times, outriggers of smaller circles. With time and numerous appearances of the "circles," however, the manifestations have gotten more complex, modified into vast configurations of arcs, triangles, circles and lines, resembling the arcane sigils of any number of occult groups — and certainly not random "whirlwind" or magnetic vortex events. Some investigators have gone so far as to suggest that there are messages in the crop formations, and some claim to have deciphered them.

If the crop circles are being inscribed by the use of laser or microwaves on rural landscapes from the upper atmosphere or outer space, possibly to test focal length and the aim of these advanced weapons, then making them represent mystical patterns might serve a purpose. It would channel public attention into arcane realms (such as UFOs from outer space), and make the circles appear to be extraterrestrial messages — not military test patterns.

7

Missing Scientists and LGIBs

In the book *Alternative 3,* Watkins and Ambrose develop page-long biographies of three “missing scientists” to flesh out their brief treatment in the television show: Ann Clark, Brian Pendlebury, and Robert Patterson.

“Ann Clark” is presented in a mini-soap opera revealing no details of her professional, scholastic, or community life, but instead going into detail about her being dumped by her fiancee “Malcolm” and the frustration she felt — the upshot being that this makes her want to relocate to Mars.

Another scientist, “Brian Pendlebury,” is reported to have left an undisclosed university with a degree in electronics to take a job with “a major electronics firm in Sydney, Australia.” For five months he stays in touch with his parents, who have a “cozy vision of Brian marrying some nice sensible Lancashire girl and of [his mother] becoming a doting grandmother.” But when they try to locate him in Australia he does not live at the address listed on his letters, and the company he is supposedly working for has never heard of him. Or so they say, nudge, nudge.

“Robert Patterson” a “senior lecturer... at the University of St. Andrews” and “one of the most brilliant mathematicians in Britain” is unhappy about high English taxation and announces that he is going to America. He abruptly vanishes. There is no word whether an LGIB (Lancashire-girl-in-black) is also involved in this disappearance.

These profiles, presented in classic *True Confessions* style, do not do credit to a serious theme. There was a British “brain drain” in the 1970’s, consisting of large numbers of British scientists leaving the country for employment in other countries, and there have been missing and murdered scientists.

Other missing scientists mentioned in *Alternative 3* include:

Richard Tuffley, Swansea, South Wales, January 5, 1976; Gordon Balcombe, Bromley Kent, February 5, 1976; Sidney Dilworth, Reading, Berkshire, April 16, 1976; Andrew Nisbett, Houston, Texas, October 5, 1976; Pavel Germanas, Jerusalem, Israel, July 14, 1977; Marcel Rouffanche, Paris, France, November 16, 1977; and Eric Hillier, Melbourne, Australia, December 29, 1977.

So far as I can determine, these individuals and their disappearances were all invented for *Alternative 3.* There was, however, what seems to be a concerted effort by unknown individuals to sabotage SDI research by murdering scientists during the same period of time when the Soviets were attempting to achieve the same result by negotiation. This may have been part of an assassination program in existence at the time of the airing of *Alternative 3* on television, although the press only takes note of deaths beginning in 1982 — an example of strange prescience in *Alternative 3.*

A partial list of SDI-connected scientists who committed suicide or died under mysterious circumstances (none, so far as can be determined, by “hot job”) includes:

In March of 1982, Keith Bowden, an expert on supercomputers and computer-controlled aircraft; killed when his car went off an embankment.

March of 1985, Roger Hill, a designer at Marconi Defense Systems, allegedly committed suicide by shotgun blast.

In November of 1985, Jonathan Walsh, a digital communications expert employed by Marconi’s parent firm, GEC, fell from his hotel room. He had expressed fear for his life.

On July 9, 1986, Karl-Heinz Beckurts and his driver were killed by a bomb near Munich. Beckurts was Director of Research at Siemens Company, an SDI contractor allegedly linked to activities of Otto Skorzeny’s Nazi International.

August 1986: Vimal Dajibhai, employed in computer-guidance with Marconi, jumped from a bridge in Bristol England.

On October 10, 1986, Gerrold von Braunmuhl was assassinated outside Bonn, West Germany. Von Braunmuhl had been a chief advisor to West German Foreign Minister Hans-Dietrich Genscher during SDI talks.

In October of 1986, Ashad Sharif, another employee of Marconi, apparently tied a rope to his neck, got in his car, and drove off, with fatal results.

On July 30, 1986, Swedish professor Svante Oden disappeared.

Also in 1986, Lando Conti, the head of an electronics company and associate of the Italian defense minister, was killed in an unspecified fashion.

There were at least four deaths or disappearances of scientists in January of 1987. These included:

Aytar Singh-Gida, working on SDI-related technology, who disappeared.

Richard Pugh, who had worked on Defense Ministry contracts, was found dead. The circumstances were not explained.

John Brittan, a computer expert at the Royal Armaments Research and Development Establishment was found dead in his garage of apparently self-inflicted carbon monoxide poisoning.

The Swedish arms inspector Carl Fredrik Algernon supposedly committed suicide.

On February 21, 1987, Peter Peapell, a lecturer at Britain's Royal Military College, died of allegedly self-inflicted carbon monoxide poisoning in his garage.

In February of 1987 Victor Moore, design engineer with Marconi, was found dead of a drug overdose.

Also in February of 1987, Edwin Skeels, an engineer at Marconi, was found dead of carbon monoxide poisoning.

On March 20, 1987, General Licio Giorgieti was shot in Rome. Giorgieri was the Director General of Space and Armaments Procurement for the Italian Defense Ministry. March 30, 1987: David Sands, a computer expert with Easams, an SDI contractor, was killed when his car crashed. The trunk of the car was loaded with containers of gasoline.

In April of 1987, Mark Wisner, a computer specialist with the Royal Air Force weapons-testing base, allegedly committed suicide with a plastic bag over his head.

In April of 1987, Stuart Gooding, a research student at the Royal Military College of Science died in a "mysterious" car wreck.

Also in April of 1987, George Kountis, systems analyst at British Polytechnic, drowned after his car plunged into the Mersey River in Liverpool.

In May of 1987, Richard Greenhalgh, a computer salesman with the Defense Center of ICL, a principal contractor for the Royal Navy, is alleged to have slashed his wrists and leaped off a bridge.

Also in May of 1987, Michael Baker, who had worked in SDI-related areas, died in a car crash.

In June of 1987 Frank Jennings, an electronic weapons engineer, died of a heart attack. No inquest was held.

In February of 1988, Russell Smith, a scientist for the ultra-secret United Kingdom Atomic Energy Authority, allegedly committed suicide, but the authorities have neglected saying how.

In March of 1988, Trevor Knight, another employee of Marconi, died of carbon monoxide poisoning in his car.

July 19, 1989: George Koopman, a technologist at the American Rocket Company was killed in an auto accident.

In August of 1988: Peter Ferry, marketing director for Marconi, was found dead with electric leads in his mouth.

Also in August of 1988, Alistair Beckham, an engineer with Plessey Defence Systems, was found dead with electric leads to his body and a handkerchief stuffed in his mouth.

In September of 1988, Andrew Hall was found dead in his car of carbon monoxide poisoning, a hose connected to the exhaust.

Lieutenant Colonel Anthony Godley, employed at the Royal Military College of Science, disappeared in 1988.

During this period there were also bombings of companies engaged in SDI research, including Fraunhofer Research, the Dornier Company, the IBM Research Center, and the Research Institute of Optics (all located in West Germany), CSF Thomson in Paris, France, and the AEG Company in Copenhagen, Denmark.

In July of 1986, Kurt Rebmann, Germany's Federal Prosecutor, told the New York Times that he believed the attacks were part of "a coordinated offensive" against the West and SDI.

So who killed the Star Wars scientists? In at least two of the cases, those of Beckurts and von Braunmuhl, the Marxist Red Army Faction (RAF) claimed responsibility. In Italy a note was found at the location of Giorgieri's murder, stating he "was struck down exclusively for his responsibility exercised following the Italian adhesion to the Star Wars project" and attributing the murder to the Italian Red Brigades. Of course notes can be easily faked, and the fact that responsibility was claimed in only three cases is odd if two groups performed all of the murders.

A suggestive link in the chain is the minimum of five scientists who apparently died of carbon monoxide poisoning. As part of its M-K-Search operations in the 1960s, CIA-funded researchers concocted a chemical meant to simulate death by carbon monoxide poisoning. Still, if the CIA was involved, why would they want to kill the scientists?

One possibility is that it was apparent to the Kremlin that SDI, far from being the defensive program that it was presented as by Ronald Reagan, had an offensive capability. Once in place, the Russians may have reasoned, the Cold War race for military supremacy would be over. Using advanced radar imaging capability able to target individuals and missile launch facilities (which might, as the American military has suggested, include the ability to "see" through walls), the West would have a first-and-final strike ability enabling a war to be fought and won. This would make it imperative that everything possible be done to stop SDI research.

It has also occurred to me that if there is a secret disk technology on this planet, withheld for its surprise strike capability from some unknown quarter, then SDI might have been seen as a technology capable of pinpointing and shooting down such craft.

Other information touching upon the missing scientist theme in *Alternative 3* is the story related to me by author David Hatcher Childress. Speaking with a University of Colorado professor, Childress had said that he was very doubtful about the book's validity. The professor, however, wasn't so certain. He confided that he personally knew a scientist who had been offered a secret assignment dealing with computer/biological interfacing, and that the scientist had been told he would be going somewhere that "he would never return from." Promised the opportunity to "do great science," and to have all of his needs, both personal and scientific, provided for in a lavish manner for the rest of his life, he agreed. The contract the scientist signed stipulated that he was allowed to bring one other person along to the unspecified project location and, since he was unmarried, he brought his mother. He left on the specified date, and was said to have gone first to Guantanamo Bay in Cuba, from there to his final destination. When the professor later attempted to contact him through one of his colleagues, he was reminded that the man would never be returning, and was told that there were dangers involved in pressing his inquiry any further.

Pure *Alternative 3,* one might say, but Childress believes that the man was telling the truth.

Another possible confirmation of elements in *Alternative 3* is provided in a letter received by the editors of *World Watchers International* magazine from a "Mr. MJ" in El Paso, Texas:

"Back during 1978 or thereabouts, I happened on a copy of the paperback book *Alternative 3,* which detailed some of the things my father had told me years earlier, that the military had disc-shaped aircraft. A short time later, on a business trip, I met a woman and tried to impress her by mentioning that I worked as a Congressional liaison to the Pentagon for Nixon's Congressman during the Watergate fiasco, and that my wife had worked as a secretary to Donald Segretti, head of CREEP, in the Naval Annex. She told me she too had worked at the Pentagon, behind the 'Green Door,' as a cryptoanalyst for military intelligence, and personal secretary to an Admiral in the late '50s.

"She was offered an assignment in Pasadena in 1962, at the Jet Propulsion Labs there, and assigned to a classified section as a photo interpreter. She scanned all in-coming photographs of the moon and Mars with 'high resolution' photography. Her husband, who she met there, worked in another department as a designer. His function was to design domed, modular living facilities for 'colonies' on the moon and then Mars! The secret name of this amazing project was 'Adam and Eve.' Her husband designed these domed structures, and all the life-support systems inside and out. One of their local probes had found gale-velocity winds on Mars, and no other structure would hold up.

"Sometime later, her husband and several other key scientists were chosen for an even more secret project, and went off to parts unknown. She never saw him again. When she asked, she was told that his whereabouts were on a need-to-know basis. She got letters from him, but no hint of where he was. One day she was told that he had been killed, but no further information and no body were provided. Then her 'Q' clearance was pulled. When I asked her jokingly if she thought her husband had been drafted to go to Vietnam, she stared at me and replied, 'No, I think he was drafted to Mars!' And she was dead serious."

8

Ice Picks, Electrodes and LSD

If, as *Alternative 3* maintains, mass enslavement is the plan (if not part of the public expression) of the secret rulers and shakers of this planet, then means for making the populace controllable as a step towards complete enslavement might be desirable. Although subjugation of his neighbor has been a pet project of humanity since the beginning of recorded history, since the middle of this century the technology for creating zombies has been turned by "scientists" into a fine, if horrifying, art.

Lobotomies began to be used as a technique of social control in the late 1940s. Finally the keepers could interiorize the cumbersome strait jacket. Scheflin and Opton in *The Mind Manipulators* state that 100,000 people received lobotomies between 1946-1955, with half of the operations occurring in the U.S.

Patricia Derian, during the 1940s a student nurse at the University of Virginia in Charlottesville, described a typical lobotomy, performed in an amphitheater with witnessing doctors:

"As each patient was brought in, Dr. Freeman would shout at him that he was going to do something that would make him feel a lot better. The patients had been given electroshock just before they were brought in; that's probably why he yelled at them. The shock was the only medication they received, he gave nothing for the pain, no anesthesia, no muscle relaxant.

"After the patient was placed on the table, Dr. Freeman would clap his hands and his two assistants would hold up an enormous piece of green felt the color of a pool table. That was the photographic backdrop. Dr. Freeman would direct the placement of lights so that each operation could be photographed, and he checked carefully to be sure that the cameraman was ready, that they had a good angle showing Dr. Freeman with his instrument, that there was no shadow to spoil the picture. His main interest during the entire series of lobotomies seemed to be on getting good photographic angles. He had each operation photographed with the icepick in place.

"When all was ready, he would plunge it in. I suppose that was part of his surgical technique, if there is a technique for such surgery. You probably have to plunge it in to break through the back of the eye socket. He lifted up the eyelid and slid the icepick-like instrument over the eyeball. Then he would stab it in suddenly, check to be sure the pictures were being made, and move the pick from side to side to cut the brain."

By at least the 1940s American clandestine organizations were engaged in on-going secret programs of lobotomy, chemo-psychiatric and other mind manipulation that continues unabated and fine-tuned to this day.

George Estabrooks of Colgate University proposed the use of hypnosis during warfare to the Department of War prior to World War II. Since he burned the diaries relating his activities during these years, we can only speculate as to how his researches were put into practice. During the same period, Nazi psychiatrists were testing the drug mescaline on concentration camp inmates, and the OSS conducted research into behavior modification through experimentation with mescaline, barbituates, peyote, and other drugs.

In 1947 the U.S. Navy instituted Project Chatter (later renamed Project Castigate) at the University of Rochester, continuing their drug experimentation, and the CIA launched Project Bluebird, authorized by Director Roscoe Hillenkoetter (of the probably bogus MJ-12 document fame), both projects run with virtually unlimited "black budget" funding. In 1952 Project Bluebird was renamed Operation Artichoke, reportedly because Allen Dulles was fond of the vegetable.

Television, arguably a form of semi-lobotomization, was introduced to the American public in the late 1940s, providing instant access to the public mind — and access to the media sorcerers and their bosses — the Rockefellers, notably, with controlling shares in all the major networks — have.

In addition to an undeniable agenda of consumerism and prepared politics broadcast by television, there have also been a number of verified applications of subliminal programming that have taken place. These include a patriotic Statue of Liberty emblem inserted into a Saturday morning ALF cartoon, Francois Mitterand re-election slogans injected into television programming in France, and, according to an underground document circulated among anarchists in New Zealand, the “Kiwi Gemstone,” CIA-sponsored Australian television subliminals.

The “Kiwi Gemstone” states that CIA subliminals were aired beginning in 1984, with the following chronology:

“24th May 1984: Four-man CIA team co-ordinated by Ray Cline arrive in Aotearoa [New Zealand] to begin installing equipment for subliminal television advertising at five sites - Waiatarua, Mt. Erin, Kaukau, Sugarloaf, and Obelisk. Sophisticated equipment can be installed within one kilometer of TV relay aerials and all linked to one IDAPS computer bureau in Auckland. Same equipment installed in Australia in August 1985; Japan in September 1986; U.K. in February 1987; New York in 1987.

“17th July 1984: In Aotearoa, subliminal advertising begins on Channel Two between 6 p.m. and midnight - hours later extended to begin at noon. Subliminal messages prepared in the U.S. by the CIA, and with the Kiwi election imminent, tell voters to support the Labour Party, the New Zealand Party, and to buy Mafia company products.

27th February 1987: New subliminal messages appear on Kiwi TV screens - “Hello, Friends. Make More Money. Vote Labour.” Other messages include: “Greetings My Own. Buy Cars. Buy Now,” and the most sinister of all, “Smash. Hate. Rape. Punch. Kill. Use Violence.” These messages were reportedly broadcast on Australian television an average of four times per hour during this period.

A number of sources claim that during the Korean war the American use of germ warfare was concealed by maintaining that prisoners, who had been shown unopened canisters of these agents by their Korean captors, had been “brainwashed.” Three journalists who claimed these chemical agents were used were arrested and put in jail in the United States.

Regardless of the truth of the claims of Korean brainwashing, these reports provided the rationale for instituting a stepped-up program of CIA mind control research dubbed M-K-Ultra, absorbing Project M-K-Delta, which had researched chemical and biological warfare. M-K-Ultra included such varied behavior control approaches as psychoactive drugs (including LSD, beginning in 1952), hypnosis, bio-electrics, radio brain bombardment, brain surgery, electronic destruction of memory, occult and parapsychological research, radiation, microwaves, and ultrasonics. “Expendables,” i.e. persons whose lives could be terminated without concern of investigation, were used in these tests. M-K-Ultra existed outside of usual CIA channels, without “the usual contractual arrangements,” and was “highly compartmented." The program included the participation of Nazi scientists recently imported through Project Paperclip.

CIA director Allen Dulles, speaking of personnel to be employed in administering mind control experiments, said in 1952: "Each person's ethics must be such that he would be completely cooperative in any phase of our program regardless of how revolutionary it may be." Dulles was echoing the dominant psychiatric and medical "think" of our era, as exemplified, for instance, by Edward O. Wilson in *Sociobiology: The New Synthesis:* "Scientists and humanists should consider together the possibility that the time has come for ethics to be removed temporarily from the hands of the philosophers and biologicized..."

As an indication of how far mind control research had gone, in 1953 John C. Lilly (later famous for his dolphin research and alleged ET contacts) was asked to brief members of the clandestine community on his work involving brain stimulation using electrode brain implants (a technique which had been experimented with as far back as 1898, by J.R. Ewald, professor of physicology at Straussbourg). Lilly refused, but commented: "Dr. Antoine Remond, using our techniques in Paris, has demonstrated that this method of stimulation of the brain can be applied to the human without the help of the neurosurgeon; he is doing it in his office in Paris without neurosurgical supervision. This means that anybody with the proper apparatus can carry this out on a person covertly, with no external signs that electrodes have been used on that person. I feel that if this technique got into the hands of a secret agency, they would have total control over a human being and be able to change his beliefs extremely quickly, leaving little evidence of what had been done."

Some of the medical facilities alleged to have been involved in CIA mind control work are the Mayo Clinic, Detroit Psychopathic Clinic, the National Institute of Health, Mount Sinai, the University of Michigan Medical School, the University of Minnesota Medical School, Boston Psychopathic Hospital, Allen Memorial Institute at McGill University in Montreal, Cornell University Medical School, Valley Forge General Hospital, Columbia University, the University of Oklahoma, the Addiction Research Center at Lexington, Kentucky, the University of Chicago, the University of Rochester, and the University of Illinois Medical School. And this list is far from complete.

Individuals such as Velma Orlikow would seek treatment for depression (in this case from Dr. Ewen Cameron, who was financed by the CIA and later to be President of the American Psychiatric Association, the Canadian Psychiatric Association, and the World Association of Psychiatrists) and instead would receive large doses of desonyn and sodium amytal, months of what Cameron dubbed "psychic driving" (repetition of a command tape loop for 16-24 hours a day in order to break down "psychological barriers"), electroshock, and 16 LSD trips.

Jean Charles Page, seeking treatment for alcoholism, was subjected to LSD and electroshock "depatterning" by Cameron, and placed in "continuous sleep" for 36 days, in the process becoming addicted to barbiturates.

Robert Logie, desiring treatment for leg pains, was "depatterned" with drugs and electroshock treatments, given multiple LSD trips, and placed in drug-induced sleep for 23 days.

These experimental "treatments" were performed in a variety of settings at Cameron's facility in Toronto, including the "Zombie Room," where twenty patients were kept in drugged comas for weeks at a time, the "Grid Room," where experiments in remote telemetry were performed on patients in electrode-monitored restraint, and the "Isolation Chamber," essentially a padded cell where patients could be kept for periods of time up to years in order to remove them from "outside influences."

These are a few examples of a nightmare that was replayed many thousands of times on both soldiers and civilians during the period from 1950 until the present. In the case of Dr. Cameron, who also employed lobotomy in his practice, it was later shown that his test subjects were primarily immigrants from Eastern Europe. Gordon Thomas in *Journey into Madness* has said of Cameron that, "Clearly, he saw that his tests could be extended to immigration screening."

When concerns were voiced by patients' families that these psychiatric guinea pigs were being reduced to a state of total amnesia, Cameron simply reported that the families would have to "help them build a scaffold of normal events."

In 1963 CIA Deputy Director for Plans Richard Helms related in a memo to the Deputy Director of the CIA: "For over a decade the Clandestine Services has had the mission of maintaining a capability for influencing human behavior... if we are to continue to maintain a capability for influencing human behavior, we are virtually obliged to test on unwitting humans."

Author Martin Cannon has reported that "According to declassified documents in the [John] Marks files, a major difficulty faced by the M-K-Ultra researchers concerned the 'disposal problem.' What to do with the victims of CIA-sponsored electroshock, hypnosis and drug experimentation? The company resorted to distressing, but characteristic, tactics: They disposed of their human guinea pigs by incarcerating them in insane asylums, by performing icepick lobotomies, and by ordering 'executive actions.'"

It seems never to have occurred to anyone that the madmen were running the asylums (not to mention the country), and it also seems to have eluded attention that prosecutions should take place to partially rectify the thousands of criminal acts that continue to be committed under the guise of "scientific research."

In the 1960s Dr. Louis Jolyon "Jolly" West, director of the Neuropsychiatric Institute at UCLA, proposed the utilization of an abandoned Nike missile base in California for the creation of the Center for the Study and Reduction of Violence. West was also the psychiatrist imported from the West Coast to Dallas to analyze the imprisoned Jack Ruby, assassin of Lee Harvey Oswald.

In a letter to Dr. J.M. Stubblebine, Director of Health in the California Office of Health Planning, West said of the violence reduction center that "Comparative studies could be carried out there, in an isolated but convenient location, of experimental or model programs for the alteration of undesirable behavior." West stated that the factors indicating a predisposition to violence were "sex (male), age (youthful), ethnicity (black) and urbanicity" and elaborated on his plans in a secret memo: "...Now by implanting tiny electrodes deep within the brain [it] is even possible to record bioelectrical changes in the brain of freely moving subjects, through the use of remote monitoring techniques. They are not yet feasible for large scale screening that might permit detection of a violent episode. A major task of the center should be to devise such a test..."

Included in these plans were central monitoring stations which would track individuals deemed potentially dangerous by the psychiatrists, and enable intervention with psychotropic drugs at the first spiked graph.

California Governor Ronald Reagan agreed with West that such a "violence reduction center" was a terrific idea and lobbied President Nixon, the Secretary of Defense and various federal agents, making the center a theme in his 1974 State of the State message. Stunned at statements of the California legislature that the subject was a "sensitive" matter with the public, Reagan retained the violence center in his active file until elected President.

In 1970 psychologist James V. McConnell was able to state in *Psychology Today:*

"The day has come when we can combine sensory deprivation with drugs, hypnosis and astute manipulation of reward and punishment to gain almost absolute control over an individual's behavior. It should be possible then to achieve a very rapid and highly effective type of positive brainwashing that would allow us to make dramatic changes in a person's behavior and personality... We should reshape society so that we all would be trained from birth to want to do what society wants us to do. We have the techniques now to do it.

"...We'd send him [the criminal] to a rehabilitation center where he would undergo positive brainwashing... We'd probably have to restructure his entire personality... No one owns his personality... You had no say about what kind of personality you acquired, and there's no reason to believe you should have the right to refuse to acquire a new personality if your old one is anti-social." Or, McConnell omitted saying, if it doesn't happen to agree with the mindset of the ruling regime.

In the early 1970s Joseph A. Meyer, of the National Security Agency (obtaining, at that time, twice the funding of the CIA), proposed intercerebral implantation for approximately half of all individuals arrested (not convicted) of all crimes in the United States, and the monitoring of tens of millions of American citizens. Meyer used Harlem as a theoretical model for the implementation of his proposed control system.

In 1966 the CIA's Operation Spellbinder, under the direction of Dr. Sydney Gottlieb, conducted research in order to achieve a "sleeper killer," an unknowing control subject who could be turned into an assassin upon receiving a previously implanted code word.

A possible example of this kind of programming was the case of Luis Castillo, a mind-controlled assassin captured during the 70s by the Phillipine National Bureau of Investigation. Castillo was determined to have four different personalities which had been hypnotically installed, including Sgt. Manuel Angel Ramirez of the Strategic Air Tactical Command in South Vietnam (who claimed to be an illegitimate son of Allen Dulles; not altogether impossible, since Dulles was known for his womanizing), while another personality claimed to be one of the assassins of John F. Kennedy.

Another case was that of Candy Jones, the subject of Bains' *The Control of Candy Jones*. Jones was a star-level model during the 1940s who later started a successful modelling agency. She was contacted by the CIA and induced for "patriotic reasons" to use her agency as a mail drop. Eventually she met with and was hypnotized by CIA psychiatrists (including, Jones said, Dr. William Kroger, who later worked with Louis Jolyon West at UCLA) at a Northern California facility. Jones was subjected to the whole range of CIA mind control techniques, including hypnosis, drugs, and electronic conditioning. During the course of the conditioning she had a duplicate personality installed, was made to forget the programming sessions, had the extra personality of a racial bigot overlaid on her own reportedly tolerant personality, and was programmed to commit suicide after dismissal from the agency. Something apparently went awry in the programming, however. She married radio personality "Long John" Nebel and, with the assistance of hypnotic regression, the truth about her CIA ordeal was uncovered.

Author Martin Cannon points out a possible sub-theme in the case of Candy Jones. Nebel, as a prominent radio personality, had contacts to many personalities in the UFO research community of the day. Could Jones' marriage to him have been part of a program to infiltrate or gain information on that group?

The massive influx of LSD (deemed a "NEW AGENT FOR UNCONVENTIONAL WARFARE" in a DIA memorandum of 1 August 54) into America during the 1960s may not have been an accident. Sandoz Pharmaceuticals, at the time of the discovery of LSD, was a subsidiary of I.G. Farben, and from I.G. linked to legal counsel Allen Dulles. During the '50s and '60s Dulles, as director of the CIA, ordered in excess of one hundred million doses of LSD from Sandoz for mind control projects.

Captain Al Hubbard tells a curious story. He maintains that LSD was discovered years prior to the acknowledged date, concocted as part of a project of Rudolph Steiner's Anthroposophical Society (prior to founding this group, Steiner had been the head of the German section of Blavatsky's Isis-cult Theosophy) to create a "peace pill" to spiritually transform mankind. Regarding the truth of this, I can't say; there is strong evidence, however, that the LSD "conquest" of the world was launched by followers of philosophies derived from similar British Freemasonic channels.

Secret planning sessions were reportedly held in 1952 and 1953 by Dulles, Ford Foundation director Robert Hutchins, and Dr. Humphrey Osmond, personal physician to Aldous Huxley, for Ford-funded mescaline and LSD research.

Huxley has an interesting background. He was the grandson of Thomas Huxley, one of the founders of the Rhodes Round Table group, and Aldous was educated by members of the same elite in the Dionysian "Children of the Sun" group, probably named in honor of the Illuminist Osiris-Isis orientation. Huxley was tutored at Oxford by H.G. Wells, who was in charge of British foreign intelligence during World War I, and the author of *The Open Conspiracy: Blue Prints for a World Revolution.* Aleister Crowley, "the Beast 666" and founder of the Isis-Urania Temple of Hermetic Students of the Golden Dawn, provided Huxley's initiation into psychedelic substances. It was Huxley's psychedelic/occult groups which in turn provided the launching pad for the entire roster of 60s acid gurus, including Timothy Leary, Alan Watts, Gregory Bateson, Richard Alpert and, through Bateson, Ken Kesey (of *Merry Pranksters* fame).

In England, the Tavistock Institute, connected to the psychological warfare division of British intelligence, sponsored conferences on such subjects as the “Dialectics of Liberation” hosted by Tavistock staff psychoanalyst R.D. Laing, and attended by Angela Davis and Stokely Carmichael, among others. The Tavistock Institute was funded by the Ford Foundation, the British Defense Ministry, and Harvard University.

As repugnant as it may be for a liberal audience to consider, the ’60s “counter-culture” of LSD may have constituted an action reminiscent of the goals of the earlier British “vitality sapping” assault on China through opium; it may have also provided an Illuminist-derived injection of mysticism into American culture, a “peace pill.”

There is a fine line to be drawn. While mysticism perhaps comprises a vital, higher form of perception, in the matter of the real world that perception needs to be checked with critical analysis. A lack of a practical understanding is one reason that the hippie revolution failed, and this perhaps inherent shortcoming of drugged enlightenment may provide a rationale for the injection of drugs and mystical philosophy into a society. It may, in fact, be a technique for “softening up” populations. Hasn’t religion and mysticism always been used in this manner?

Timothy Leary is an interesting case of a hippie who possibly wasn’t. Leary first obtained LSD from his longtime CIA buddy Frank Barron, a man who was at one time tapped, as Leary mentions, to become “director of psychological personnel at the CIA.” In his biography, Leary seems less than forthcoming about the large number of his friends who are CIA, OSS, and members of the CFR/Eastern Establishment. These include Harry Murray (OSS chief psychologist), Robert Gordon Wasson (Vice President of J.P. Morgan & Co.), Martin Orne (“...a brilliant CIA-funded consciousness researcher... sometimes to be seen in our kitchen drinking coffee and asking intelligent questions about the relationship of drug states to hypnosis”) and socialite Mary Pinchot Meyer, who had been married to top level CIA agent Cord Meyer, Jr., and may have been assassinated because of her knowledge of the JFK hit.

Not a beaded headband among that crowd.

Leary speaks in candid-yet-veiled style when he says, “By this time I felt like I was being initiated into a secret order of Cambridge Illuminati. Frank [Barron, of the CIA] smiled at the idea.” And so is the reader supposed to smile, I imagine.

Leary’s speaking engagements on college campuses in the 80s, engaging in debates with G. Gordon Liddy of Watergate fame, are horribly reminiscent of good cop-bad cop routines, the “cognitive dissonance” mind control technique factually employed by behavioral psychologists in public schools, or even the mocking Freemasonic psychodrama which Michael A. Hoffman II alludes to in his brilliant *Secret Societies and Psychological*

Warfare. It is as if college students were being shown that Leary and Liddy exemplified the entire left-right range of intellectual possibility available to them, much in the same manner that the Republicans and Democrats have long been presented as our only options in the political arena. And so, I suppose, it seemed to us during the '60s. It is even possible that it may seem that way to Leary and Liddy.

For my part, I don't have any evidence that Leary was a witting agent of the CIA or the Tavistock Institute or the Round Table; more likely an unwitting agent, although that "Cambridge Illuminati" crack makes me wonder. Aldous Huxley's disapproval of Leary's psychedelic missionary antics (as reflected in his correspondence) seems to support the idea that Leary was a rogue vector in a trajectory that arguably began in the vicinity of Bavarian Illuminist Adam Weishaupt, yet Leary admits that Huxley encouraged him to "become a cheerleader for evolution" with the infusion of "brain-drugs, mass-produced in the laboratories" into the population. Whether Leary saw puppet masters lurking behind the moving paisley veil, he espoused mystical doctrines identical to those of Huxley and fellow travellers in the uniquely complicated Round Table-British Intelligence-and, yes, Illuminati universe.

Another example of strange currents underlying mind control operations is provided by James Shelby Downard in his article "The Call to Chaos" in *Apocalypse Culture,* edited by Adam Parfrey. Downard says that:

"The secret society which became the nucleus of the Office of Strategic Services-Central Intelligence Agency octopus was making biotelemetry implants in unsuspecting people as early as 1933. After the operations, the victims were kept drugged for a time and then were brainwashed... I believe the implants were at first activated by touching the skin with a device similar to an electric prod...

"The early implants were made to stimulate the pudendal nerve, when triggered, so that the sexually excited and amnesiac-drugged victims could be used in the sex circuses of the OSS-CIA secret order. Those victims were not infrequently operated on while anesthetized by morphine and scopolamine, which produce analgesia and amnesia (twilight sleep, to esotericists). They too were brainwashed after healing. This evil program, supposedly for the sake of national security, was oriented to the [Freemasonic] Cult of GAOTU [Grand Architect of the Universe]... A woman I know performed in those rites some years ago, representing such deities as Artemis (Diana or Hecate), Aphrodite Pome (Dirty Venus), Bastet, Selket, and the White Goddess described by Robert Graves in his famous book. I do believe that these sex circuses were part of a greater Call to Chaos working...” Herein is a confirmation of the existence of a Freemasonic Mother Goddess cult within intelligence circles.

If the preceding theory seems fanciful, one has only to look to the ritual nature of the Jack the Ripper murders, performed by high ranking Freemasons in the British government and described by Stephen Knight in *Jack the Ripper: The Final Solution,* to the Freemasonic ritual murder of the P2’s Licio Gelli, or to the Crowleyan ritual magic(k) worked in the ’40s by Jack Parsons and reputed Naval Intelligence agent L. Ron Hubbard (who was to later found the Church of Scientology, based upon initiatory grades not unlike Freemasonry, and a cosmology highly reminiscent of Theosophy). Interesting leads may be provided by Hubbard’s choice of names for his precursor mental therapy, Dianetics. Although he maintained it was a derivative of the Greek *dianous,* “through thought,” it is difficult to determine why he would name his eldest daughter Diana in similar commemoration. The Scientology crucifix is virtually a copy of the Crowley emblem depicted in *The Book of Thoth,* while Hubbard is reported to have maintained that he was the reincarnation of Cecil Rhodes.

In recent years Dr. Michael A. Aquino, a colonel in U.S. Army intelligence and leader of a Church of Satan offshoot named the Temple of Set, has been investigated by military and civilian authorities on claims of child molestation at San Francisco’s Presidio military base. Although charges against Aquino have been dismissed, reporter Linda Goldston investigated the military intelligence unit in person and reported evidence of cultic activity having taken place there, including concrete bunkers converted to “ritual chambers” and examples of what appear to be the symbolic accompaniments to Satanic rites, including painted pentagrams, black and white candle drippings, and a large drawing of Satan (or Set) emblazoned on the wall of a building which had been locked.

Aquino, aside from his status as a Satanic high priest, is an expert on military mind control and has expounded on what he terms LBM, Lesser Black Magic used in the control of civilian populaces, the techniques of which include PSYOP (psychological operations) as well as conventional forms of terrorism. Aquino has written on his theories of mind control in an article which he submitted to the Washington Military Review, titled “From PSYOP to MindWar: The Psychology of Victory.” The cover page of the article states the article originates from “HEADQUARTERS, IMPERIAL STORMTROOPER FORCE/Office of the Chief of Staff/MindWar Center/Hub Four” and it is essentially a peptalk on the usage of “psychotronic” (psychological-electronic) techniques, citing in particular the usage of air ionization (“Detonation of nuclear weapons...

will alter atmospheric ionization levels") and the broadcasting of Extremely Low Frequency (ELF) waves for the manipulation of human behavior.

And then there is the black magic research the CIA funded in the 1970s. Dubbed Operation Often, CIA agents contacted the monsignor in charge of exorcisms for the Catholic Archdiocese of New York. When he refused to cooperate with them, they next approached Sybil Leek, who provided a thumbnail estimate of the Black Magic growth industry in the U.S., reportedly consisting at the time of four hundred regularly operating covens and untold thousands of freelance spell-casters. The CIA covertly funded a course in sorcery at the University of South Carolina, and Operation Often closely monitored these classes, reportedly devoted to fertility and initiation rites as well as techniques for raising the dead.

And all on your tax dollar.

9

Electronic Wars

1959 is the first mention of radio-controlled electronic stimulation of the brain (ESB) in M-K-Ultra documents. Although little has been intentionally revealed about this research, Martin Cannon has indicated that an anonymous informant told him, “beginning in 1963, the CIA and military’s mind control efforts strongly emphasized electronics.” Dr. Jose Delgado, well known for his early experimentation with intercerebral implants, has supposedly abandoned this area and gone onto research into the effects of electromagnetic fields on the human brain.

It is reported that experimentation was done by the CIA in the 1960s on RHIC-EDOM, “Radio Hypnotic Intracerebral Control” and “Electronic Dissolution of Memory.” This is the use of remote induction of hypnotic trance and post-hypnotic suggestion, with an erasure of memory after the subject performs the desired acts.

Project Pandora in the 1970s researched the biological effects of Extremely Low Frequency radio emissions (ELF), including microwave and radio waves. This experimentation was reportedly done in response to the beaming of microwaves at the U.S. embassy in Moscow by the Soviets. Dr. Milton Zarat, who searched Soviet scientific literature for a clue as to the purpose of the microwave bombardment, found that, “For non-thermal irradiations, they believe that the electromagnetic field induced by the microwave environment affects the cell membrane, and this results in an increase of excitability or an increase in the level of excitation of nerve cells.”

A statistically high number of illnesses were noted among Moscow embassy employees, and U.S. ambassador Walter Stoessel developed a rare blood disease similar to leukemia, suffering from headaches and bleeding from the eyes. Stoessel reported to his staff that microwaves could cause leukemia, skin cancer, cataracts and various forms of emotional problems. Chromosomal damage was noted in a high percentage of the embassy staff, while white blood cell counts were abnormally high in one third of the staff.

The Army Medical and Information Agency document "Biological Effects of Electromagnetic Radiation — Eurasian Communist Countries," released in 1974 provides a good idea of research conducted during this period. In the document the researches are attributed to "Soviet scientists," but according to Dr. Allen Frey, the experiments reported as being performed by the Soviets were in fact his. The paper states:

"...Soviet scientists are fully aware of the biological effects of low-level microwave radiation which might have offensive weapons application. Their internal sound perception research has great potential for development into a system for disorienting or disrupting the behavior patterns of military or diplomatic personnel; it could equally be used as an interrogation tool. The Soviets have also studied the psychophysiological and metabolic changes and the alterations of brain functions resulting from exposures to mixed frequencies of electromagnetic radiation... another possibility is alteration of the permeability of the blood-brain barrier. This could allow neurotoxins in the blood to cross. As a result, an individual could develop severe neuropathological symptoms and either die or become seriously impaired neurologically. ...The potential for the development of a number of anti-personnel applications suggested by the research published in the USSR, Eastern Europe, and the West... sounds and possibly even words which appear to be originating intercranially [i.e., in the brain] can be induced by signal modulation at very low average power densities..."

In 1974, J.F. Schapitz proposed a project which was later funded for the Department of Defense: "In this investigation it will be shown that the spoken word of the hypnotist may be conveyed by modulate electromagnetic energy directly into the subconscious parts of the human brain — i.e., without employing any technical devices for receiving or transcoding the messages and without the person exposed to such influence having a chance to control the information input consciously."

In his book *Microwave Auditory Effects and Applications,* Dr. James Lin elaborates on the above technique of the direct electronic communication of words to the brain, and says, "The capability of communicating directly with humans by pulsed microwaves is obviously not limited to the field of therapeutic medicine."

Microwave transmissions have other possible applications, including the conditioning of behavioral responses. According to Anna Keeler in *Full Disclosure* magazine:

"Richard Helms wrote of such a system in the mid-1960s while he was CIA Plans Director. He spoke of 'sophisticated approaches to the coding of information for transmittal to population targets' in the 'battle for the minds of men.'.. and of 'an approach integrating biological, social and physical-mathematical research in attempts to control human behavior.' He found particularly notable, 'use of modern information theory, automata theory, and feedback concepts... for a technology of controlling behavior-using information inputs as causative agents.'"

Navy Captain Paul Tyler prepared an assessment of electromagnetic weaponry for Maxwell Air Force Base in 1986, suggesting:

"Some of these potential uses include dealing with terrorist groups, crowd control, controlling breeches of security at military installations, and anti-personnel techniques in tactical warfare. In all these cases the EM [electromagnetic] systems could be used to produce mild to severe physiological disruption or perceptual disorientation."

An instance of the probable use of ELF weapons on civilians took place in January of 1985, when women protesting nuclear weapons at the U.S. Air Force base at Greenham Common in England began experiencing strange symptoms, coincident with the changing of the security system at the base from primarily human to primarily electronic. Guards patrolling the base's perimeter were reduced in number, and antennae were installed at intervals. The women experienced an assortment of symptoms characteristic of ELF exposure, including headaches, earaches, pressure behind the eyes, bleeding from nose and gums, nausea, fatigue, hearing clicks and buzzes, and heart palpitations. Electronic testing performed by a Canadian scientist and a British electronics activist group revealed distinct areas of electromagnetic activity around the women's camps.

In 1989 *Microwave News* said that Boris Yeltsin, "...has told a reporter that the KGB has an ELF device that can stop a human heart from beating. In an interview with Radio Liberty, a U.S.-backed shortwave radio station in West Germany, Yeltsin said that KGB agents told him that they have a device which emits a powerful 7-11 Hz signal which can stop the heart. According to Yeltsin, the KGB agents said that, 'If emergency medical aid isn't close at hand, it's all over.'"

This story is interesting in light of the number of witnesses connected to the JFK assassination dying from heart attacks, as noted in my book, *The Gemstone File.*

The U.S. government is in possession of a technology similar to the one of which Yeltsin has spoken, coded Project Black Beauty. Utilizing a refrigerator-sized broadcasting unit, emotional and physical effects, including heart attack, can be induced upon living targets. This technology was apparently employed on Manuel Noriega while he was hiding in the Vatican embassy in Panama after the invasion by the U.S. The compound was ringed with large speakers and blaring "heavy metal" rock music was broadcast night and day (very likely a cover for the actual purpose of the units), reportedly to "depress" Noriega. It is also reported that the Black Beauty units were used during the Iraqi war, again under the cover of broadcasting rock music at the enemy.

A report to the U.S. House of Representatives in 1984 admitted that a large number of stores in America use ultrasonic commands broadcast to "discourage shoplifting," and a report from a medical engineer in the DOD states that microwaves and other conditioning methods have been regularly used by the Israelis against the Palestinians.

Operation Pique was an American program which included experiments bouncing electromagnetic waves off the ionosphere to disrupt the mental functions of people in Eastern Europe, particularly those employed at Soviet nuclear installations. Similar experimentation by the Soviets is recounted in an article in *Leading Edge* magazine. The article may rely on speculation, yet can be substantiated in many details. I include an excerpt in the interests of research. It is titled "Electronic Warfare Still Rages":

"On July 4, 1976, the USSR commenced the regular use of giant Tesla Magnifying Transmitters aimed against the United States. The monstrous 40 million watt signals, created by three transmitters, jammed radio waves around the world and became known to ham radio operators as the 'Russian Woodpecker.' The Soviet signal was described in the November 8, 1976 issue of *Aviation Week and Space Technology:* 'The FCC has sent several protests to the USSR over interference caused by the powerful pulsed high-frequency radio signals... the pulsed signals have a repetition rate of 10/sec (10 Hz — ELF), but the bandwidth, which is extremely wide, changes from time to time... from 30kc to more than 300kc.' The DOD publication *Soviet Military Power* describes the Soviet Tesla magnifying transmitters as being 'over the horizon radar' (which is only one of the many different functions of the Tesla transmitters). This publication does openly admit that the Soviet Tesla transmitters have created an electromagnetic disturbance and an interference grid over the United States. Unfortunately, there is a big cover-up about the effects of that electromagnetic grid.

"As of 1985, the Soviets have maintained seven transmitters. There is massive evidence that the signals are deliberately being transmitted at biologically harmful frequencies. The 1986 book *The Truth about AIDS — Evolution of an Epidemic,* written by Fettner and Check, provides documentation on the origins of AIDS and its relation to the biomedical evidence regarding ELF and the destruction of the human immune system. The immune system disease was not seen until 1978 (the Soviet ELF Woodpecker signals started in July 1976 and the actual ELF grid was expanded in the fall of 1976 and in 1977). The general feeling among scientists is that 'there had to be something new to account for the illness.' None of these individual diseases is new. Most are caused by infectious agents, long present in the human population and against which most adult Americans have developed resistance. The several diseases designated AIDS are in fact old cohabitants of the body. Fettner and Check stated, 'no known virus has ever before attacked specific cells of the immune system.'"

The information we have dealt with in the preceding two chapters is based in the main (although not entirely) upon declassified, "sanitized" accounts, information that the government considers safe for dissemination to the public. It without doubt comprises the tip of an iceberg of mind control and assassination projects and policy. Can there now be any doubt that the technology for turning humans into the zombies of *Alternative 3* now exists?

10

Batch Consignments

Other dark avenues sparking the imagination for decades, if not centuries, of those creating systems of worldwide slavery reminiscent of *Alternative 3* are those of depopulation and the concentrating of populations into slave camps. Camps whose factual existence can be documented are not located on Mars or the moon, but then, who knows what can be expected in the fullness of time?

During the early 1940s Freemasonic President Franklin Roosevelt commissioned a "master geopolitical plan" on migration ("M") and settlement to propose solutions for the predicted 30,000,000 people who would be displaced by World War II. Roosevelt considered this as much of a military as a humanitarian concern, indicating that displaced "discontented can and will cause trouble, serious trouble." 666 studies were produced for the "M" Project until the final memorandum presented to President Truman in 1945. Among the notables associated with the project were General William J. Donovan of the OSS and Knights of Malta, Nelson Rockefeller, and Sripati Chandsekhar, lifetime fellow of the British Eugenics Society.

In a 1962 book discussing the "M" Project, chairman Henry Field revealed that the study was centered around "world population increase and the future relationship to food and resources," and was also "...concerned with overpopulation on Earth, interstellar migration and the quest for living organisms on other planets." Retaining an uncanny similarity to *Alternative 3,* one possibility suggested was that "temporary quarters may eventually be established on Venus or Mars," this in a chapter titled "Interstellar Migration." The study was extensively concerned with extraterrestrial possibilities and maintained that "human population will approach infinity if it grows as it has grown in the last two millennia." While Fields plays down the extraterrestrial aspect in his book, it is obvious that it was a major focus of the study, which included the construction of two radio stations that attempted extraterrestrial communication.

Speaking of the radio experiments, Fields said: "...there were certain signals which did not come in on other wave bands. These were totally illegible as far as the Morse code was concerned. I spent many hours listening to these sounds from outer space. A British ex-Naval operator was employed to attempt to decipher these signals. Nothing intelligible resulted. Finally I recorded on a series of electrical transcription or phonograph records a selection of these mysterious radio signals.

"Now, almost forty years later, I wonder, as I did then, if those signals from outer space were attempts at radio communication between rational beings and ourselves. Certainly during the next forty years we shall know the answer." Fields coyly concludes his study of the "M" Project with the dying words of Round Tabler Cecil Rhodes: "So much to do, so little done."

The Nazis, during the 1940s, were thinking along similar, if possibly less humanitarian lines for population control and disposal. As detailed in *Gehlen: Spy of the Century* by E.H. Cookridge, the Germans had plans to turn the Soviet Union into a vast slave camp after the war.

"Byelorussia (with a population of five and a half million, including the cities of Minsk, Mogilev and Vitebsk) was to be incorporated into East Prussia and resettled by Germans; a large area of western Russia was to be annexed to the Third Reich, 'colonized' under a top layer of German settlers and administered by German officials; this area, with a total population of over fifty million, was to extend to Moscow and include the Ukraine, the Crimea, the black-earth region and part of the Caucasus, including its oil-fields. The Russians and Ukrainians within this German colony were to be treated, in accordance with Aryan racial principles, as *Untermenschen* (sub-humans); they would receive only basic education and agricultural training with a view to turning them into a nation of slaves... some forty million Soviet citizens would need to be eliminated in the proposed 'colonial' regions; this would be achieved by 'natural means,' namely famine."

German and American concentration camps during World War II have been so extensively documented as to require little comment here, except to say that one aspect of the Jewish Holocaust has been little spoken of: Allied culpability. Quoting Aarons and Loftus in *Unholy Trinity: The Vatican, the Nazis, and Soviet Intelligence:*

"In April 1943, a conference of British and American officials formally decided that nothing should be done about the Holocaust, and 'ruled out all plans for mass rescue.' The Foreign Office and the State Department were both afraid that the Third Reich would be quite willing, indeed eager, to stop the gas chambers, empty the concentration camps, and let hundreds of thousands (if not millions) of Jewish survivors emigrate to freedom in the West. As late as 1943 the British Foreign Office 'revealed in confidence' to the State Department their fear that if approaches to Germany were 'pressed too much that is exactly what might happen.'

"The bigoted reality behind the Secret Report of the Easter 1943 Bermuda Conference was that not a single Allied nation wanted to let the Jews settle in their country. The unspoken consensus was that it was better to let Hitler handle them than arrange a mass evacuation to America, Britain, or Canada. In short, the Jews were expendable to the war effort."

Allied abuse of German prisoners after the conclusion of the war has been little spoken of and is another instance that puts the lie to the lily-white image that the Allies, as victors and authors of most of the history books, were able to promote.

James Bacque, researching a book about war resistance, delved into records of the American prisoner of war camps located in Germany after World War H. While official records state that the casualty rate in American camps was under two percent, in researching original records Bacque found that there had been a deliberate cover-up. Using the statistics listed in the Army's weekly Prisoner of War and Disarmed Enemy Forces ledger, Bacque was able to determine that the annual death rate of German prisoners in American camps was 33%. Records showed that General (later President) Eisenhower had also intentionally redesignated German "prisoners of war" (protected by the Geneva Convention) to "disarmed enemy forces" (with unprotected status). The story is detailed in his book, *Other Losses,* only recently released in America.

A parallel to the genocidal themes of *Alternative 3* is the King Alfred Plan, a "contingency plan" and "final solution" for the black population of America. The Plan, comprising part of the 1967 novel *The Man Who Cried I Am* by John Williams, has for years circulated among conspiracy researchers. Jim Jones, it is said, insisted it was a factual secret document.

The King Alfred Plan begins, "In the event of widespread and continuing and coordinated racial disturbances in the United States, King Alfred, at the discretion of the President, is to be put into action immediately," with participating agencies being the National Security Council, the Department of Justice, the Central Intelligence Agency, the Department of Defense, the Federal Bureau of Investigation, and the Department of the Interior, along with National Guard units, state police, city police and county police participating.

Under the plan, the United States is divided into ten national regions and, in the case of national emergency, minorities "will be evacuated from the cities by federalized national guard units, local and state police and, if necessary, by units of the Regular Armed Forces..."

The plan concludes in a grim, science fictional manner highly reminiscent of *Alternative 3:* "'O' Committee Report: Survey shows that, during a six-year period, Production created 9,000,000 objects, or 1,5000,000 each year. Production could not dispose of the containers, which proved a bottleneck. However, that was almost 20 years ago. We suggest that vaporization techniques be employed to overcome the Production problems inherent in KING ALFRED. - Secretary of Defense."

While in all probability a fictional document, there is no doubt that John Williams was responding to and protesting the genocidal mentality of the rulers of this country and this world in a book perhaps not different in purpose than *Alternative 3.*

U.S. government document H.R. 4079 cannot be defended as fictional. Introduced in the House of Representatives in 1990, this bill may give some idea of what the Powers That Be have in store for those of us not fortunate enough to belong to such select cliques as the Round Table or Skull and Bones.

Introduced by Congressman Newt Gingrich and Senator Phil Gramm, H.R. 4079 reads:

"Guided by the principles that energized and sustained the mobilization of World War II, and in order to remove violent criminals from the streets and meet the extraordinary threat that is posed to the nation by the trafficking of illegal drugs, the Congress declares the existence of a National Drug and Crime Emergency beginning on the date of enactment of the act and ending on the date that is five years after the date of enactment of this bill."

The bill goes on for 96 pages to propose draconian repression in the name of the War on Drugs, although we must remember that they are referring here only to certain drugs such as marijuana and cocaine, whose manufacturers are not the beneficiaries of visible government subsidies such as those given to the far more lethal tobacco industry.

In complete disregard for the niceties of the U.S. Constitution and the Bill of Rights, the bill provides for the arrest of large numbers of people merely suspected of drug usage or drug dealing, and once arrested the suspected individuals would be incarcerated in one of many forced labor camps, including tent cities. All Constitutional rights would be suspended upon arrest and there would be no provisions for humane housing and treatment Those convicted of drug usage or trafficking would receive harsh mandatory sentences, without possibility of parole, up to and including the death penalty. The assets of those convicted of dealing would be forfeited, and the people who turned them in would receive a portion of those assets as a bounty.

The bill stipulates that the usual laws regarding search warrants, illegally obtained evidence and coerced confessions would be suspended, in the name of this “War.” In addition, all federal limitations on drug testing of individuals would be removed.

As well as “drug traffickers” the bill explicitly targets all “violent criminals,” defining such as “Every person who is convicted in a federal court of a crime of violence against a person or a drug trafficking felony, other than simple possession.” The bill describes the term “crime of violence against a person” as “a federal offense that is a felony and has as an element the use, attempted use or threatened use of physical force against the person of another.”

The effect of a bill such as H.R. 4079 (and similar ones crop up frequently in Congress) would be to create a *Metropolis-like* sub-society of criminalized worker drones — *Alternative 3* sans the Martian landscape. If the government and its masters are currently addicted to sucking the lifeblood of the “masses” via income taxation and other means, think of the expanse of their greed when legally permitted to incarcerate large segments (I mean larger segments) of the populace into profitable slave labor camps.

While viewed almost universally as an example of a power-crazed religious nut leading his followers to mass suicide, there is much about Jim Jones and Jonestown that suggests this was not the entirety of the story — that the “mass suicide” at Jonestown was not the accident it has been portrayed as. John Judge’s research has provided the primary source for the information about Jonestown which follows.

Tent evangelist Jim Jones migrated to Brazil in 1961, ostensibly on a mission to minister to the downtrodden. During Jones’ stay, transportion and food were provided by the U.S. embassy, for unspecified reasons, and at the time Jones confided to local residents that he was working for Naval Intelligence. Dan Mitrione, a lifetime friend of Jones who worked with the CIA providing interrogation and torture techniques to Third World police forces, accompanied him at that time.

Returning to the United States after the completion of his mission in Brazil, Jones established the People’s Temple in Ukiah, California, with electric fences, armed guards and guard dogs. While in Ukiah, Jones made connections with many influential people, including some who were involved in the military and clandestine agencies. During this period journalist Kathy Hunter reported seven deaths of Temple members who had tried to leave the compound; Hunter was to die later under unusual circumstances. Jones mobilized his followers to help elect Moscone as Mayor of San Francisco, and the Mayor reciprocated by appointing Jones head of the San Francisco Housing Commission — one of the darker bits of humor I've run across lately. Many of Jones' followers were hired by the San Francisco Welfare Department, where it was easy to recruit large numbers of the poor and homeless for Jones' "church."

Throughout his career, many of Jones' top associates and contributors had connections to the spy community. Richard Dwyer, CIA operative and Deputy Chief of Mission for the U.S. Embassy in Guyana, was present at Jonestown — apparently in a friendly capacity — immediately prior to the grisly end. On tapes that record the massacre, Jones can be heard shouting, "Get Dwyer out of here!" By his own admission Dwyer was observed "stripping the dead" of wallets and other effects. John Burke, who Philip Agee indicates has worked for the CIA since 1963, attempted to prevent Congressman Ryan from investigating Jonestown. In addition to obstructing Ryan in his investigation of human rights violations at Jonestown, the American embassy in Guyana routinely provided Jones with copies of all Congressional inquiries about Jonestown filed under the Freedom of Information Act.

Lawrence Layton and his family were major financial backers of Jones, furnishing him with hundreds of thousands of dollars. Layton was Chief of Chemical and Ecological Warfare Research at Dugway Proving Grounds in Utah and was later Director of Missile and Satellite Development at the Navy Propellant Division at Indian Head, Maryland. Dugway Proving Grounds, interestingly enough, has been circumstantially connected to cattle mutilations, disease biowarfare, and genetics experimentation. Layton's wife's fortune came in part from I.G. Farben, the key Nazi cartel, and the Laytons' daughter was married to George Phillip Blakey, who had extensive holdings in Solvay Drugs, a division of I.G. Blakey contributed financing to Jones and was reported to have participated in other shadowy schemes, such as moving mercenaries from Jonestown to CIA-supported UNITAS forces in Angola.

The Guyana site for Jonestown has several unusual characteristics. It is a rich location for a variety of minerals, and has been the site of much mining activity. Plans to populate the area with cheap labor go back to at least 1919. Charles Garry, a lawyer for Peoples Temple (along with Mark Lane) said that Jones and Jonestown were "literally sitting on a gold mine," and mineralogical reports confirm the statement.

It may be illuminating to recall that Jonestown was built during the time of the CIA program M-K-Ultra and that the "target populaces" of this program, including blacks, prisoners, and women, are a precise statement of the population mix at Jonestown — excluding the white male overseers.

When black members of the Temple arrived in Guyana they were bound and gagged and taken to the compound. While local inhabitants were aware of the whites living in the area and saw them in the course of their daily activities, they never saw the majority black population.

Once locked in the compound, the blacks were worked 16-18 hours per day, with rations consisting of rice, bread and on occasion, it is said, tainted meat. All of the camp overseers were white (whereas 80% of Jonestown's populace was black), and most were male. They were armed and enforced work and prevented escape. These overseers, according to researcher John Judge, were not among the dead, and no attempt has been made to locate or to prosecute them.

Although the camp doctor at Jonestown kept meticulous notes and records of drugs administered, all of his records disappeared. After the massacre enough drugs were found in the compound to have drugged 200,000 individuals for a year, this supposedly having been stockpiled as medication for a population of 1,100 persons. 11,000 doses of Thorazine were found in camp stores, as well as sodium pentathol, chloral hydrate, thalium, haliopparael and largatil, these being tranquilizers or other psychoactive drugs.

$500,000 was moved out of Jonestown shortly before the mass murder or suicide, whatever it was. Michael Prokes, who carried the money, later shot himself at a press conference, where he claimed that he was an FBI agent.

The initial news coverage issued from the scene of the tragedy said that 400 people had died in a mass suicide, and that 700 had escaped into the jungle. Later reports said that 913 had died. During the first press conference it was claimed that the reason for the discrepancy was that the Guyanese who had done the initial investigation "could not count."

The cause of the deaths reported by Dr. Mootoo, a Guyanese pathologist, was not cyanide, as the American press had reported. The victims showed none of the signs of cyanide poisoning, such as the "cyanide rictus." Mootoo found needle marks on the necks of 80-90% of the victims, and came to the conclusion that all but two of the victims had been murdered, and had not, as the press reported, committed suicide.

The Jonestown bodies were delivered to the United States after excessive delay and in states of decomposition that made autopsy impossible. All identification had been stripped from the bodies (by order of the CFR's Zbigniew Brezezinsky, the order communicated by Lt. Col. Gordon Dum-ner, later the Deputy Director of the CIA) and there were official complaints that military coroners were performing illegal cremations.

There are questions as to whether Jim Jones really died at Jonestown, although none of these have surfaced in the mainstream press. Identifying chest tattoos do not show up on morgue photos of Jones, and the face of the corpse is unrecognizable due to the degree of decomposition. The FBI checked the corpse's fingerprints twice in the course of their investigation, although they did not consult dental records. At the time of the massacre, Jones' finances were enormous, with estimates running from $26 million to $2 billion. He had also been known to employ doubles.

Joyce Shaw, a Temple director, described Jonestown as "some kind of horrible government experiments, or some sort of sick racial thing, a plan like that of the Germans to exterminate the blacks." Joseph Holsinger, an aide to Leo Ryan, was even more explicit: "[The] possibility is that Jonestown was a mass mind-control experiment by the CIA as part of its M-K-Ultra program."

The question is obvious: were the people of Jonestown a 'batch consignment'?

11

The Depopulation Bomb

There is a solution other than cyanide to what the elite consider excess population. Why not prevent the poor — for the sake of argument, let us venture a conservative 99% of the world's population — from having children altogether, or if that isn't possible, at least vastly slow their birth rates?

"Eugenics" is a term coined in the latter part of the 19th century by Englishman Francis Galton to describe the "science" of bettering human stock and the elimination of unwanted characteristics... and individuals. Galton proposed societal intervention for the furtherance of "racial quality," maintaining that "Jews are specialized for a parasitical existence upon other nations" and that "except by sterilization I cannot yet see any way of checking the produce of the unfit who are allowed their liberty and are below the reach of moral control."

A survey of eugenics in action begins with isolated incidents such as the sterilization of mentally ill by American health officials in the late 1800s and the castration of children at the Pennsylvania Training School for Feebleminded Children in 1889. The movement quickly picked up momentum.

Formally established as a study at University College in London in 1904, the first laboratory for the study of subject was constructed by Charles B. Davenport at Cold Springs Harbor on Long Island (which, perhaps significantly, was also the location of the estates of both the Dulles brothers, as well as being the current headquarters of the Human Genome Organization for DNA mapping). The institution was funded in excess of $11 million by the Harrimans and Rockefellers.

Supported in America by the Eastern Establishment, eugenics was nurtured in the hotbeds of Round Table-influenced philosophy, at Harvard, Columbia, and Cornell. The subject was popularized in Germany by Ernst Haeckel, who linked romantic German nature mysticism and the unity of the *Volk* with clinical bio-policies later instituted by Hitler.

Haeckel believed that there was no unity among the species of mankind, since "the morphological differences between two generally recognized species — for example sheep and goats — are much less important than those... between a Hottentot and a man of the Teutonic race." In the Aryan race Haeckel saw a "symmetry of all parts, and that equal development, which we call the type of perfect human beauty." He also believed the "wooly-haired" peoples "incapable of a true inner culture or of a higher mental development... no wooly-haired nation has ever had an important history."

Haeckel felt the purpose of the nation state was to enforce selective breeding, praising the practices of the Spartans who killed all but "perfectly healthy and strong children" and thus were "continually in excellent strength and vigor."

In 1906 a group of Haeckel's academic followers formed the influential Monist League, agitating for a German government patterned along social Darwinian lines.

By 1907 in America, Indiana passed compulsory sterilization for the mentally ill and other "undesirables," while 475 males received vasectomies at the Indiana State Reformatory.

In 1912 the First International Congress of Eugenics was held in London, including among its directors Winston Churchill, Alexander Graham Bell, Charles Elliot (President emeritus of Harvard University), and David Starr Jordan (President of Stanford University).

The National Conference on Race Betterment was convened in the United States in 1914, while by 1917 fifteen American states had eugenics laws on the books, almost all of them legalizing the sterilization of habitual criminals, epileptics, the insane, and the retarded.

H.H. Laughlin, the Expert Eugenics Agent of the U.S. House of Representatives Committee on Immigration and Naturalization presented a Model Eugenical Sterilization Law in 1922. This was to provide the basis for many state eugenics laws, as well as for eugenics law in Nazi Germany.

In 1928 the American Eugenics Society sponsored a contest for essays on the causes of decline in Nordic fertility, while Dr. Robie, at the Third International Congress of Eugenics, called for the sterilization of 14,000,000 Americans with low intelligence scores.

The Nazi party in Germany passed in 1933 the "Law for the Prevention of Hereditary Diseases in Posterity," also known as the "Sterilization Law," written by Professor Ernst Rudin, one of the country's leading psychiatrists. "Hereditary Health Courts" were formed, and within three years two hundred and twenty-five thousand German "undesirables" had been sterilized.

Hitler's policies have been characterized as "a rather straightforward form of German social Darwinism." Far from being original with him, his policies were expansions upon already-extant political and scientific culture.

By 1939 German policies had evolved to include euthanasia upon asylum inmates while eugenics concepts were implemented to the fullest in Nazi concentration camps during World War II.

In 1942, U.S. psychiatrist Foster Kennedy recommended the killing of retarded children. During the three-year period between 1941-1943 over 42,000 people were sterilized in America.

After World War II the idea of "eugenics" was tainted in the public mind by its association with Nazism. The term was discarded and a facelift was performed on its parent study psychiatry, which resulted in the establishment of the World Federation of Mental Health (WFMH). Since then, this group has continued to support electroshock, lobotomization, mind control and other activities already detailed, as well as employing within its ranks many German practitioners who had been happy to further Hitlerian goals during the Second World War.

What this brief survey shows is something the popular press has chosen to ignore: that eugenics programs were not the invention of mad Nazi scientists, but that the political climate of Germany allowed a full implementation of programs part and parcel of international psychiatry and medicine. Eugenics, from its beginning, was encouraged and financed by the rich, self-styled "aristocrats" of the day.

Recent programs aimed at abortion and other methods of depopulation can be traced to essentially the same Freemasonic/Round Table/Rothschild-spawned crowd; to the studies of the Club of Rome, the Trilateral Commission, and to the CFR. These groups influenced a change in U.S. policies specifically during 1966-67, when population control was adopted by the State Department as a stated goal.

The recent world depopulation push retains the flavor of eugenics biopolicy of the first half of this century in the statements of advocates such as the Eastern Establishment's Sargent Shriver, speaking before the Congressional Select Committee on Population in 1978: "...this Committee's interest [is] in improving the quality of life and enhancing the biological product of this society; rather than just controlling or limiting births."

Jaffe and Dryfoos of the federally-funded Guttmacher Institute have stated that, “With the overall decline in fertility in the United States, concern has shifted from numbers of births to insuring that those children being born have fewer physical, social, and economic handicaps.”

It is odd that little mention of “the overall decline in fertility” finds its way into the Rockefeller-subsidized literature of depopulation activists. Nor was the fact that teenage pregnancy was at its lowest ebb in forty years brought up when federally mandated family planning and sex education in schools was enacted in 1978.

Studies have shown that sex education classes increase early sexual experimentation while doing nothing to reduce adolescent pregnancy. It has also been demonstrated that when such classes are discontinued, as in Utah in 1980, the incidence of teenage pregnancy decreases. Still, officials insist sex classes should extend from “kindergarten throughout a person’s entire educational career.” Why? Originators and administrators of the programs candidly admit that their agenda includes depopulation and eugenics.

Lester Kirkendall, a founder of the Sex Information and Education Council, wrote in 1965 that, “sex education is... clearly tied in a socially significant way to family planning and population limitation and policy...” Dr. Jane Hodgson, at the National Abortion Federation conference in 1980, was even more forthright, calling for compulsory abortion for pregnant teenagers.

The methods of sex education programs in public schools vary, but uniformly emphasize the huge expense and drawbacks of having kids, providing summaries of methods of contraception, sterilization, and abortion. Students are often taken on tours of birth control clinics, where they meet the staff, fill out patients’ forms, and are assured of the confidentiality of services. Children are also recruited as depopulation activists with pitches informing them, as in the widely-used text *Meeting Yourself Halfway:*

“The population problem is very serious and involves every country on this planet. What steps would you encourage to help resolve the problem?

“...volunteer to organize birth-control information centers throughout the country;

“...join a pro-abortion lobbying group;

“...encourage the limitation of two children per family and have the parents sterilized to prevent future births.”

Much of sex education literature portrays the nuclear family — long a cohesive political and social glue among the populace - as obsolete and statistically insignificant, while the normalcy of homosexuality and bachelorism (“Playboyism”) is stressed. Children are encouraged to report in detail on conditions at home, to report parental shortcomings, and to divulge disagreements they have with their parents, opening the door to intervention by "social services."

Davis in *Economic Development and Cultural Change* says that an effective strategy in lowering the birth rate is to "lessen... the identity of children with parents, or lessen... the likelihood that this identity will be satisfying," adding that certain trends that might bring population levels down are "very high divorce rates, homosexuality, pornography and free sexual unions..." Davis sees a positive note in "the child welfare services, which have increasingly tended to displace the father as a necessary member of the family, and the health services which have increasingly flouted parental authority with respect to contraception and abortion." This "flouting of parental authority" is a familiar theme in sex education classes, which repeatedly emphasize the child's independence from their parents and their ability to make decisions for themselves.

The message to children, provided by proponents of sex education without the courtesy of having the parents agree upon it, is obvious: the world is awash in excess poor population, and something has to be done about it in a hurry, starting at the nearest abortion clinic.

Educator John Taylor Gatto, voted New York's Top Teacher of 1991, further comments on the mechanism:

"Social machinery to suppress proliferation of systematic families... has two components: one, a campaign aimed at family-formation before it commences, employing such tactics as encouragement of personal greed (best enjoyed in bachelor style, of course), public pornographic celebrations of the body parts of nubile young women, effortless divorce, mass adoption, tolerance of sexual ambiguity, and many similar tactics. The second component aims at producing pseudo-families: small households (whether biologic or synthetic) without any overriding loyalty to the common family cause. Instead, these are associations of expedience wearing the costume of affection and concern, but always on the lookout for a better deal... During the childhood phase, parents in pseudo-families are made use of by the state to transmit certain values, to maintain and discipline a new serf class composed of their own children, and to report radical cases of deviance to medical, police and re-training authorities... It is a system infused in many places with such black genius in understanding crowd control it is hard not to stand in awe of its unseen architects."

Target populations for sterilization in the United States bear noting. According to Michael Garrity in *Trilateralism,* edited by Holly Sklar, American Indian women are being sterilized unbeknownst to them or against their wishes in public health clinics nationwide. Garrity also maintains, "Full blooded Indian women are the special target of the doctors."

Ruthann Evanoff, in "Reproductive Rights and Occupational Health" in *WIN,* has said that, "Overall, at least 25 percent of the Native women of childbearing age have been sterilized, although the total population numbers less than one million. Recent reports estimate that the percentage sterilized in one tribe alone, the Northern Cheyenne, is close to 80 percent."

The secret (now declassified) paper NSSM 200, "Implications of Worldwide Population Growth For U.S. Security and Overseas Interests," also known as the Scowcroft Document (authored by the CFR's Brent Scowcroft), gives insight into U.S. government plans for population reduction internationally, linking these plans to goals that have very little to do with alleviating human suffering, and everything to do with the maximization of profit.

Prepared in 1974 for the National Security Council (and remember, this is a government document, although one not likely to be offered for free in late night Public Service Announcements) NSSM 200 proposes means for the reduction of worldwide population by "concentration on key [i.e. Third World] countries," with the stated goal of reduction of population growth rate from an annual 2 percent growth to 1.7 percent.

While this might sound like an altruistic goal proposed by clear-sighted social stewards, intended to reduce suffering in countries with marginal standards of living, the study makes it clear that government interest in depopulation has nothing to do with concern for living standards in developing countries. It is because "The United States has become increasingly dependent on mineral imports from developing countries" and "endemic famine, food riots, and breakdown of social order... are scarcely conducive to systematic exploration for mineral deposits or the long-term investments necessary for their exploitation." Note that the breakdown of "social order" referred to consists of the populace revolting against their living conditions.

One of the conclusions of the study is that *"mandatory* [emphasis added] population control measures" may be "appropriate."

Speaking of depopulation programs currently being implemented in the Third World, former Brazilian health minister Carlos Santana said, "The World Bank, through the reports of its Presidents, has always made its proselytizing for a rigid birth control policy explicit." Santana reported that included in World Bank credit packages and investment in Third World countries is an implicit agenda of depopulation, and questioned why Brazil was targeted for birth reduction, with approximately forty per cent of Brazilian women having been already sterilized.

What the depopulators omit saying is that in Brazil most of the depopulation programs are being directed toward the native population, and that they are implementing an alternative program to the *pistoleiros* hired to attack small landowning families, appropriating the land for the use of large cash-croppers and the international conglomerates that are stripping the country bare.

Depopulation programs run worldwide are directed and funded by major international money interests, including McGeorge Bundy of the CFR, the architect of nuclear Mutual Assured Destruction policy; Warren E. Buffett, the second wealthiest man in the United States; and, ubiquitous when it comes to eugenics funding, the Rockefellers.

Planned Parenthood Federation of America and International Planned Parenthood Federation are Buffett-funded and run a huge abortion and sterilization network worldwide, with one subsidiary, the Brazilian Society for Family Welfare, having over 2,500 outlets in that country.

While, at first glance depopulation programs may seem like a good idea to promote the reduction of mouths-to-feed worldwide, what they ignore are the root causes of overpopulation. High birth rates are the direct result of poor living standards of the areas, and in countries where malnutrition has been reduced and the incidence of child-death lowered, birth rates have also lessened. The Third World (in particular) is being forcefully relieved of natural resources and exploited for cheap labor, and is in fact no doubt seen by elite landowners and major corporations as only maintaining maximum profitability as long as it is kept in abject poverty.

“The strategy of underdevelopment” is the term used by agricultural economist Harry Cleaver. Rather than offering the people in countries such as Brazil, in actuality one of the richest countries in the world, an equitable portion of profits made through the use of their resources, they are manipulated (when not killed outright) and kept at the razor edge between starvation and profitability.

Depopulation organizations propagandize that we are experiencing a crisis of epic proportions; that the world is reaching the point where it can no longer support the number of people living on it. In many instances economists, however, doubt this conclusion, suggesting that an increase in population may in fact be economically beneficial, and tending to a long-term increase of arable land and per capita (rather than per corporation) income. Also noted is a current usage of approximately three-tenths of one percent of the planet’s surface for human habitation, an amount sustainable with no limit to growth in sight.

United Nations and U.S. Department of Agriculture statistics show that world food production has increased more rapidly than population growth in recent years, while Colin Clark, former director of the Agricultural Economic Institute of Oxford University has stated that farmers could currently support seven times the current population of the Earth, or twenty-one times the current population at Japanese standards of food consumption.

Roger Revelle, former director of the Harvard Center for Population Studies estimates that current agricultural resources could provide an adequate diet for eight times the current populace, i.e. forty billion individuals, and has estimated that Africa is capable of feeding ten times its current population. Revelle quotes Dr. David Hopper, another agricultural expert:

"The world's food problem does not arise from any physical limitation on potential output or any danger of unduly stressing the environment. The limitations on abundance are to be found in the social and political structures of nations and in the economic relations among them. The unexploited global food resource is there, between Cancer and Capricorn. The successful husbandry of that resource depends on the will and actions of men." Hopper pronounces "world fascism" very politely.

Francis Moore Lappe of the Institute for Food and Development Policy maintains:

"If the cause of hunger is neither scarcity of food, nor scarcity of land, we've come to see that it's a scarcity of democracy. That may sound rather contrived, because in the West we tend to think of democracy as a political concept and not as an economic concept. But democracy is really a principle of accountability; in other words, those making the decisions must be accountable to those who are affected by them. Once we understand hunger as a scarcity of democracy, what we are saying is that from the village level to the level of international commerce, fewer and fewer people are making decisions, and more and more anti-democratic structures are being entrenched. This is the cause of hunger." And, it should be repeated, the cause of overpopulation.

12

A Modest Proposal

The early and highly influential eugenicist and Round Tabler George Bernard Shaw offered a modest proposal in 1951:

"If a Black Death could spread throughout the world once in every generation, survivors could procreate freely without making the world too full... The state of affairs might be somewhat unpleasant, but what of it?"

Substantial evidence exists that AIDS was created as a custom-tailored Black Death, although nary a word of such a suspicion appears in the mainstream press.

In 1969, in testimony before the House Appropriations Committee of the U.S. Congress, the Department of Defense's Biological Warfare Division requested $10 million to produce organisms that would selectively destroy the immune system. Quoting from the Committee's minutes, "Within the next 5 to 10 years it would probably be possible to make a new infective microorganism which could differ in certain important respects from any known disease-causing organisms. Most important of these is that it might be refractory to the immunological and therapeutic processes upon which we depend to maintain our relative freedom from infectious disease."

The requested funds were appropriated.

Also in 1969, a portion of the Army's Fort Detrick Biological Warfare Laboratory was transformed into the Frederick Cancer Research Facility and given to, supposedly, the National Cancer Institute for civilian research. "Within two years of its foundation," according to *Coven Action Information Bulletin,* "the Institute's staff and budget had trebled."

In 1972, in volume 47 of the *Bulletin of the World Health Organization,* there was a request by members of that group to make a virus that would selectively destroy the T cell system. “An attempt should be made to ascertain whether viruses can in fact exert selective effects on immune function, e.g. by... affecting T cell function as opposed to B cell function. The possibility should also be looked into that the immune response to the virus itself may be impaired if the infecting virus damages more or less selectively the cells responding to the viral antigens.”

In *Federation Proceedings* of the WHO that same year, it was remarked that “we would test these agents that we make by putting it in our vaccines and see what kind of effects they have.”

A disease corresponding to the requested characteristics, which we know today as AIDS, did appear within the stipulated period of time. Dr. Robert Strecker reports that the disease appeared in Africa in precisely the same locales that the WHO group said they planned to administer vaccines, and this is supported by an article in the *London Times* for May 11, 1987.

Researcher Waves Forest, in his article “Designer Diseases: AIDS as Biological and Psychological Warfare” writes that, “The AIDS epidemic emerged full-blown in the three U.S cities with ‘organized gay communities’ before being reported elsewhere, including Haiti or Africa, so it is epidemiologically impossible for either of those countries to be the origin point for the U.S. infections.

“Another indication that AIDS had multiple origin points is that the 14-month doubling time of the disease cannot nearly account for the current number of cases if we assume only a small number of initial infections starting in the late 1970s.”

Dr. Strecker relates that AIDS experts have written that “the AIDS virus consists of genes that are related to two known retro-viruses of animals. One is a virus named bovine leukemia, another is a virus named visna.” Yet, he points out, these same specialists claim there is no way that these two viruses could have been spliced together.

Dr. Strecker and Dr. Allan Cantwell, testing the claim, went to a medical library and asked the computer to show any available articles on a virus named — taking a wild guess: bovine visna — and, “bang!,” they said, “out came articles describing a virus identical to the AIDS virus.”

“It had the same morphology (shape), the same molecular weight, the same magnesium dependency, it has the same ability to kill cells, it has the same T cell tropism (it attacks T cells), it has the same exact characteristics in cattle that AIDS does in humans. It produced a disease in cows, characterized by initial lymphomamphy within a few weeks of initial infection, followed by the production of antibodies against that virus, and subsequently, 5-7 years later, the cows died of a wasting disease — and immune deficiency.”

Quoting Waves Forest again, “Apparently, homosexuals were an initial target in the U.S. because their sexual practices would help in the rapid spread of the disease, and because it was correctly assumed that very few non-homosexual citizens would pay much attention during the early years of the epidemic. Also, the stigma of ‘homosexual disease’ would interfere with a rational analysis and discussion of AIDS.”

A chilling development in the continuing AIDS controversy was reported in The *Santa Monica Outlook* for December 14, 1989. The RAND Corporation, a CIA-funded organization which will be mentioned again in these pages, issued a warning about the nastiest computer ‘virus’ yet unleashed upon computer users. The virus had been incorporated, by persons unknown, into a computer disk providing a database for AIDS information. Once let loose in a computer system, it erased every file on AIDS.

Ann Shohen of RAND said workers in AIDS research might have their databases totally destroyed by the virus, and it could infect any computer system networking with such researchers.

John McAfee, chairman of Computer Virus Association, a Santa Monica firm developing anti-virus programs, described the contaminated AIDS disk as part of “a well-orchestrated and undeniably well-financed terrorist act.”

Regardless of whether the AIDS epidemic is man-made, regardless of whether the RAND Corporation is covering its own tracks in the interest of plausible denial, this computer virus seems to fit the agendas of certain elitist interests and could well be evidence of continuing efforts to keep AIDS on target in plans for world depopulation.

13

Veins and Tributaries

Another method of genocide and mind control currently being practiced is chemical warfare — by drugs — upon the population of the world. The picture is not the simple "good cops vs. evil heroin pushers in the schoolyard" equation that the mainstream media would have us believe.

Drug dealing is no new thing, although historical precedents are rarely examined in understanding the problem.

In 1601 the Jesuits established a mission in Beijing, China, providing contacts for the Portuguese and later the Dutch to native drug trading routes in the East, with the Dutch negotiating an opium monopoly for the northern part of the Indian subcontinent. The British East India Company established trade in opium and slaves after opening an office in Canton, China, and when Bengal was made a Crown Colony in 1757 "John Company" expanded its trade in close collaboration with the British crown and Rothschild bankers. In the 1860 siege of Beijing the British (under the direction of Prime Minister Lord Palmerston, at the time the world head of the Scottish Rite of Freemasonry) forced the opening of the drug trade. Britain's admitted policy of "sapping the vitality" of China via opium trafficking to its population provides an early example of chemical-psychological warfare.

After the opening of Chinese ports, the British-owned Hong Kong and Shanghai Corporation was established, in a policy of breaking British East India interests into individual and difficult-to-trace assets. The Hong Kong and Shanghai Bank to this day remains connected to the laundering and internal flow of international drug monies, with the management of much of drug financing and shipment allegedly supervised from on high by denizens of the Royal Institute of International Affairs (a front for the Round

Table group) and the British Secret Service. The historical policy of British overlords using drugs to decimate the Chinese culture oddly hearkens to the realities of today.

In America, John Jacob Astor was the first to exploit the lucrative possibilities of Chinese opium, with other Anglophile "Boston Brahmin" families following suit. Prohibition was also planned by these interests, with the Temperance movement financially sponsored by the Astors, Vanderbilts, Rockefellers, and Warburgs, the latter linked to the Rothschilds by marriage.

Prohibition vastly increased the profitability of alcohol and drugs, supplied through British networks with distilleries in Scotland and Canada and opium refineries in Shanghai and Hong Kong. During Prohibition, liquor and drug shipments were supplied by British interests and transported to America via the Canadian Bronfman gang (who have since attained respectability as the owners of Seagrams, America's largest liquor distributor, and by membership in the Knights of Malta) with American distribution performed by the networks of mobsters Arnold Rothstein, Meyer Lansky and Lucky Luciano. The United Fruit Company, owned jointly by the Lansky Mafia and Boston Brahmins, has been identified by American intelligence as historically one of the major transporters of drugs into the United States.

Alfred McCoy in his *The Politics of Heroin* states that at the end of World War II "with American consumer demand reduced to its lowest point in fifty years and the international syndicates in disarray, the U.S. government had a unique opportunity to eliminate heroin addiction as a major American social problem. However, instead of delivering the deathblow to these criminal syndicates, the U.S. Government — through the Central Intelligence Agency and its wartime predecessor, the OSS — created a situation that made it possible for the Sicilian-American Mafia and the Corsican underworld to revive the international narcotics traffic."

What assisted the revival of the heroin traffic in this century was a secret Franklin Roosevelt alliance with the Mafia's Meyer Lansky, providing immunity for Lansky's smuggling operations in exchange for protection of the Eastern seaboard during World War II and, later, in the wresting of control of the French docks from Socialist unions. As part of the deal, Lucky Luciano was released from prison after World War II, and quickly proceeded to set up a base of operations for heroin smuggling in Cuba, later turning over the reins to Santos Trafficante, in Miami.

Elsewhere, in the CIA's support for "Nationalist" China, they supplied Chaiang Kai-Shek's Kuomintang (KMT) with arms and supplies for their stronghold in Burma. There CIA-allied General Phao built up the opium trade as a source of funding the KMT, with arms flown into Burma and opium flown out by the CIA's Air America. In a Congressional investigation of the heroin trade, Joe Nellis stated: "The CIA did help bring some very powerful cheap heroin into Vietnam out of the Shan States, the northern states of Burma... for radio communications, intelligence. In return for that intelligence, the CIA winked at what went in its airplanes."

Air America has hardly been the CIA's only involvement in fostering the international drug trade. The Nugan-Hand Bank was started by CIA agent Michael Jon Hand and employed Dulles colleague General Edwin F. Black, retired CIA Director William Colby, former deputy CIA Director Walter McDonald, and Kissinger and Brzezinski advisor Guy Pauker on its payroll. Nugan-Hand seems to have largely existed through the laundering of drug monies, as a tributary flowing into a central drug laundering connection, the British-owned Hong Kong and Shanghai Bank. Nugan-Hand even had an office located in Chaiang Mai, a rural town in Thailand known as the last outpost for travellers into the "Golden Triangle." Conveniently, the Nugan-Hand office was located in the same office, in the same suite, as the Chaiang Mai branch of the U.S. Drug Enforcement Agency.

The Nugan-Hand Bank was involved in a number of unusual deals, including the financing of the Rhodesian government of Ian Smith, in which 250,000 whites ruled millions of vote-less blacks, and a similar situation in the Portuguese colonial government in Angola. Nugan-Hand also worked with the CIA in the overthrowing by coup d'etat of Australian Prime Minister Gough Whitlam in 1975 — reported by the Australian press to have been done on the instructions of Henry Kissinger.

Although the flow of drugs and drug monies at the retail level is labyrinthine, it proceeds to central hubs. Drug trade is absolutely integrated into and props up international banking, government and secret societies, with clandestine agencies and police forces providing the enforcement and sometimes transportation arms of these operations.

Chase Manhattan's International Advisory Board Chairman Kissinger was the author of the plan to raise international interest rates to 20% in 1979, putting the screws to Ibero American debtors to the International Monetary Fund and encouraging them to change over to a drug economy. The former foreign minister of Guyana, Frederick Wills, described it this way:

"The countries hope that by getting the IMF seal of approval, this will open the gates for credit from other countries and private banks. But the IMF seal of approval requires successful acceptance of the IMF program. And since you didn't succeed, the flow of funds from money markets and banks is dried up. This means that, first of all, the government ministers started to think that, 'What export could we have which could realize quick cash flow, to stem this balance of payments gap?' There is only one commodity that satisfies that requirement: dope, heroin, marijuana."

One discernible link of the drug trade with the U.S. government is the illegal Contra supply operations run by then-Vice President George Bush under National Security Decision Directive 3 during the 1980s. Shipments of guns for the Contras were smuggled by known drug traffickers, who in turn (known or unknown to Bush) brought back thousands of kilos of cocaine to the United States, some of them transported through Homestead Air Force Base near Miami, Florida. If the principals in the operation, people like then-V.P. Bush, Colonel North, Admiral Poindexter, and Major General Secord (also a player in Nugan-Hand) were not receiving a portion of the profits, then it must have been a case of the government "winking at what went into its airplanes."

Notified in many instances of drug trafficking, the Reagan and Bush administrations often acted to block investigations and prosecution. The invasion of Panama, presented to the public as an intervention intended to stop the drug trafficking of world-class outlaw Manuel Noriega, takes on the complexion of a turf war when one learns that George Bush quickly installed Guillermo "Porky" Endara in the Panamanian presidency after Noriega was dethroned. Endara was co-owner, with drug lord Rodriguez Gacha, of the money-laundering Banco Interoceanico, as well as the owner of the ship Sea Point, caught twice in shipments of cocaine and Israeli arms. Installed as President, Attorney General, President of the Supreme Court, and Minister of the Treasury were members on the board of First Interamericas Bank, earlier closed by Noriega after he had received proof that the bank was owned by the Cali Cartel.

The Washington Post has characterized American government actions in Panama as an alliance with the Cali Cartel against the Medellin Cartel. Not as improbable as it might seem when one discovers that the director of the Office of International Affairs of the U.S. Justice Department, Michael Abbell, is reported to be a registered Washington lobbyist for the Cali Cartel.

And since the overthrow and silencing of Noriega, drug trafficking in Panama has only increased.

One will never understand the significance of international drug trafficking unless it is seen for what it is: a major world industry. Drugs are currently the second largest international trading commodity after oil, with an estimated $500 billion dollars in yearly worldwide sales. The necessity of laundering huge amounts of currency at wholesale level makes it highly doubtful that the business is conducted by illiterate Golden Triangle and

Columbian warlords. Billions of dollars in loans to men in drug-growing regions, and the amount of drug monies being laundered through worldwide banking are so large that it is not possible, especially with the availability of modern electronic scanning methods, that the banks involved are unaware of the sources of their funding.

I do not include a list of national banks used as international drug tributaries because it would literally require pages, but these smaller channels pour funds into the monetary oceans of the unregulated "Group of 10" offshore banks, large Bangkok banks (alleged to be the financiers of Golden Triangle operations), expatriate Chinese banks, Rothschild banks, and British banks and trading companies, including the previously-mentioned Hong Kong and Shanghai Bank (overseeing approximately 350 financial institutions in Hong Kong).

The Hong Kong and Shanghai bank is governed by the elite London Committee, with two of its directors former senior officials in Britain's Ministry of Economic Warfare, with other members linked to the Royal Institute of International Affairs. London's part in the concealment of international drug monies can be confirmed by the March 1984 study "Crime and Secrecy: The Use of Offshore Banks and Companies," of the Permanent Investigations Subcommittee of the U.S. Senate, which charges London banking with being the international center for the concealment of drug money.

"And there are other rationales for traffic in drugs," Lanny Sinkin of the Christie Institute has said. "In analyzing the evidence available, the Institute and others concluded that the War on Drugs was not what it appeared. In essence, the United States government facilitated the entry of drugs into this country as part of a larger program. The two major elements of this program are: (1) a real war in Central and South America using the influx of drugs into this country as the rationale and (2) the suppression of domestic populations with the use of drugs and the attendant violence and crime as the rationale."

To paraphrase, there is a war going on worldwide which at one level has nothing to do with drugs, although it can be sold to the public, particularly the American public, on the basis of suppression of drugs. By simultaneously creating anti-drug legislation and fostering drug trade (mirroring the operation that took place in America during Prohibition), international manipulators obtain both a rationalization for that war and for the increased police penetration of society and suppression of political freedoms.

The fundamental game is not traffic in drugs, but the traffic in human lives and energy, the buying, selling and herding of cattle-resources. It boils down to the ultimate master/slave relationship with the masters in a continual struggle for profits and to keep the people uninformed, sated, mindless, utilized. The “host,” be it animal, human or planet, is anesthetized, then drained by its parasitic self-styled masters. And then the ravaged hulk is discarded.

14

Emergency Action

It does not take an extensive study of the action of the masters of any age, the pharaohs, the kings, the popes, the Rothschilds, the Rockefellers, to verify their existence or to determine their modus operandi. This ruling class (in its darkest and sometimes hidden manifestations) is unfettered by such insignificant things as ethical or moral qualms. They uniformly view themselves as pure-blooded aristocrats and the minions beneath them in the same way that most people view cattle — as animals to be harvested. This harvesting is usually done by the men ostensibly hired to protect us.

Although the Soviet threat, we are led to believe, has been banished and blown to the winds, there seems to be little likelihood that "our protectors," the American Spy State, will soon wither away and die.

The CIA, since its inception, has run an estimated 3,000 major operations and 10,000 minor operations. Ex-CIA agent John Stockwell has estimated a minimum death toll of six million individuals in the Third World from these operations. Even during the current economic depression (I mean, recession) and amid the crumbling of our cities, American spy and paramilitary operations continue to drain 35 billion documented dollars per year while employing 25,000 individuals in America and untold thousands worldwide through subsidiary networks, companies, and organizational cutouts.

Russ Baker, in the *Village Voice,* has termed the spy establishment "little more than the private army of the Fortune 500," and it is an apt, if limited, description of this enormous, mostly-invisible security force which works with a huge network of ex-spooks and collaborators in actions often designed to violate international law and to trample human rights.

There are more than a dozen government agencies which are in the business of gathering intelligence and covert action, and they are in part funded through "black budget" allocations whose nature is not made available to the Congress, much less the public, but which is currently estimated to be in the same range as their above-board funding. More money is spent on the CIA, the NSA, and their brother agencies than is spent on education in America — and the money is spent on spies.

The Congressional watchdogs seem variously not to care about the actions of the intelligence community, or to be cheering them on and collaborating in the attempts of the wolves to batter down the gates of Constitutional safeguards, and the continued overthrow of constitutional democracies worldwide.

Former aide to the Director of Central Intelligence Victor Marchetti described the process of infiltration of Congress: "They sent up top guns... like John Clark — who had been head of Planning, Programming, and Budgeting in the CIA on the director's staff. The whole idea was to snow these guys, con these guys, win these guys over, convert 'em, get 'em on the team. That's what has happened. It's now institutionalized."

Another reason why Congress and the public are not able to see into the double dealing of the security state is that they are not allowed to glimpse the lion's share of its activities. "We'd go down and lie to them consistently," Ex-CIA man Ralph McGee said of his experiences with Congress. "In my 25 years, I have never seen the agency tell the truth to a congressional committee."

With the Soviet Union gone, there is little doubt that new threats will crop up to replace the KGB and to justify the existence of the spy establishment. The odds-on favorites are terrorism, the drug war, and the shooing into line of whatever Third World (and most likely previously American-sponsored) dictator the press chooses to characterize this week as a latter-day Hitler. Already the CIA has put forth feelers to Congress suggesting that a new threat looms large on the post-USSR horizon: industrial and economic sabotage by competing countries.

Many of the underlying theoretical threads of *Alternative 3* come together when we examine one room among many in the "mansion" of U.S. intelligence, the Federal Emergency Management Agency. The first inklings of FEMA surfaced in 1969, when California governor Ronald Reagan instituted a special training project at the National Guard Camp in San Luis Obispo, California. The purpose of the seminar was to train leaders in population control. A fictional town of "San Luisa" was mapped and broken into ethnic and income zones, and plans for infiltration of groups and methods for crowd control were formulated. By 1979 the *Associated*

Press reported that 14,000 persons had been trained in this population control seminar.

FEMA proper was created by Jimmy Carter. Housed in one of the government's tightest security installations and located in Fort Meade, Maryland, FEMA is currently computerizing records on millions of Americans, preparing a database for CAPs, Crisis Action Programs to be utilized in the event of whatever the Executive Department might term a national crisis.

Incorporating the disaster and emergency functions of a dozen different federal agencies, FEMA has concentrated on such activities as plans for setting up mass emergency detention centers in case anything might threaten the "continuity of government" (COG). As Dr. Henry Kleinmann, a political scientist at Boston University, said: "It was understood that they [FEMA]... would one day be in charge of the country. As these bureaucrats saw it, FEMA's real mission was to wait, prepare and then take over when some 'situation' seemed serious enough to turn the United States into a police state."

The intervention of FEMA on a national scale would not require a massive ecological disaster, but, in the words of Executive Order 11921, it could be utilized "whenever necessary for assuring the continuity of the federal government in any national emergency type situation." A congressional investigation in 1991 showed that less than 10 percent of FEMA's staff of 2,600 bureaucrats are preparing for a cataclysmic natural event. So what is FEMA preparing for?

One answer can be read in Presidential Executive Order EO 12656 issued by President Ronald Reagan on November 18, 1988, which defined a National Emergency (such as would activate FEMA) as "any occurrence, including natural disaster, military attack, technological emergency or other emergency, that seriously degrades or seriously threatens the national security of the United States." That pretty well covers all possible bases. Any event, then, which can be construed as threatening to the government can be used to set a host of repressive Executive Orders into action, including:

- EO 10995, authorizing the suspension of the freedom of speech and the commandeering of all of the communications media.
- EO 10997, authorizing the takeover of electrical systems and other fuel sources.
- EO 10998, providing for the government control of food sources, including farms.
- EO 10999, which authorizes the control or confiscation of the nation's transportation sources, public and private.

- EO 11000, which gives government the right to form work brigades of citizens.

- EO 11001, providing for the takeover of all health, education, and welfare functions and facilities.

- EO 11002, authorizing a national registering of the populace.

- EO 11003, authorizing the takeover of all airplanes and airports.

- EO 11004, which gives government the mandate to relocate populations from one area to another.

- EO 11005, which provides for government to take over railways, waterways, and public storage facilities.

- EO 12148, authorizing FEMA to take over the executive functions of the government.

These Executive Orders have all been recorded in the Federal Register, and accepted by Congress as law. They can be put into effect any time an emergency is declared. The above EOs were incorporated into one Executive Order (EO 11490) by President Richard Nixon and, further, Jimmy Carter's 1979 Executive Orders creating FEMA delegated to it the power to act for the President.

These orders are a few of the legal justifications available to the unelected bureaucrats at FEMA and their masters, which can be used for widespread repression and the complete suspension of Constitutional rights in the event of anything deemed a national emergency.

During the Iran-Contra hearings of 1987, there was a telling exchange between Representative Jack Brooks and Senator Daniel Inouye:

"Brooks: Colonel North, in your work at the N.S.C. [National Security Council, which is also the location of FEMA], were you not assigned, at one time, to work on plans for the continuity of government in the event of a major disaster?

Brendan Sullivan (North's counsel): Mr. Chairman?

Senator Daniel Inouye: I believe that question touches upon a highly sensitive and classified area so may I request that you not touch upon that?

Representative Brooks: I was particularly concerned, Mr. Chairman, because I read in the Miami papers, and several others, that there had been a plan developed, by that same agency, a contingency plan in the event of emergency, that would suspend the American Constitution. And I was deeply concerned about it and wondered if that was the area in which he had worked. I believe that it was and I wanted to get his confirmation.

Senator Inouye: May I most respectfully request that matter not be touched upon, at this stage. If we wish to get into this, I'm certain arrangements can be made for an executive session."

With the rampant excesses of the American intelligence community and agencies such as FEMA, the means for the implementation of *Alternative 3* or similar plans are in place, and whether EO 11004 is invoked to usher us off to the moon, Mars, or merely to an American Gulag, it seems quite irrelevant.

15

Demonstration Project

In Oracle, Arizona exists what has been touted as a self-contained Earth: Biosphere II, a huge three-acre, ten-story geodesic structure supporting 40,000 plants and eight "crew members" who plan to exist isolated from the outside world for two years. After six years of planning and an investment of $100 million dollars, *Discover* magazine has called Biosphere II "the most exciting scientific project to be undertaken in the U.S. since President Kennedy launched us toward the moon."

Among the collaborators on Biosphere II are the Smithsonian Institute, the National Center for Atmospheric Research, the Yale School of Forestry and Ecological Science, The New York Botanical Gardens, the University of Arizona's Environmental Research Laboratory, the U.S. Geological Society, and NASA.

Biosphere has been portrayed in glowing terms on all the major television networks, in the *New York Times,* the *Los Angeles Times, The Boston Globe, The Washington Post, Omni,* and *National Geographic World* Hosting an hour-long show from the Arizona site, Phil Donahue called it "one of the most ambitious man-made projects ever." In other words, establishment science and the media have bought wholeheartedly (if that is the correct term) into the project. But the veneer of scientific and media respectability do more to reinforce our understanding of science as the whore of the controllers than it does to assuage our doubts about the validity or purpose of Biosphere II.

The Biosphere project was founded in the 1980s by John P. Allen (aka "Johnny Dolphin"), and funded by Allen follower and Texas millionaire, Edward P. Bass. Bass' money enabled Allen to transform a small apocalyptic religious group living in a desert commune in Santa Fe, New Mexico into the darlings of the media and scientific establishment. Among properties owned by Allen and his group are a Katmandu hotel, a ranch in Australia of several thousand acres, a conference center in France, and a theater-cultural center in Fort Worth, Texas.

University of California professor Laurence Vesey spent five weeks researching John Allen's commune, known as Synergia Ranch, in the early 70s. His observations, published in a book called *The Communal Experience,* provide a somewhat different image than the scientific jargon and coral-red jumpsuits that the members of Allen's group affect today.

Veysey found an experiment in progress that was, according to him, "Jonestown-like," and geared to Allen's vision of a dying Earth that could only be saved by founding a new civilization... on Mars.

Allen told Vesey: "Western civilization isn't simply dying. It's dead." Synergia, he said, was "poking among the ruins of the dying civilization in order to snatch whatever is currently of service to the new."

Vesey described Allen as having "total hold and domination" over his group of followers. "The others all look to him constantly for their cues, for the subtle signals which tell them what to do and what not to do... His chanting rhythm they imitate with their own voices, his instructions they seek to apply in the theater [they employ], his timetable they follow for planetary outreach... [Allen's] domination over the group is open and for the most part undisguised... This entire societal order is the tangible enactment of his own vision."

Vesey said that Allen's warnings of ecological and atomic destruction were continually ranted at the members of the commune, and that Geiger counters had been purchased for his followers, presumably for use during the event of atomic war.

Speaking of nightly group psychological confrontations, Vesey said that Allen would ask: "Any confessions?" If there were no volunteers, Allen "will explode into wrath, usually directed at one person. Calmly in control of himself one minute, in the next he will be shouting the most hurtful words conceivable in a furious assault upon the ego of some trapped individual... He will seize upon what appear to be innocent failures to follow precise instructions and transform them into calculated acts of sabotage... He reiterates his accusations until no possible response is left. Then, all at once, his tirade comes to an end and everyone continues as if nothing had happened."

Vesey recently spoke of Biosphere II, saying that it "has all kinds of implications... the Biosphere is a demonstration project that fits in with the political thinking of the right wing. A more liberal kind of person might wonder why you should sink all that money into something for the survival of only a few people." Vesey says that Allen believes that he is gathering together a new "elite" for the purpose of constructing a "new civilization," yet is "masking it" from the uninitiated.

Researcher Wade Davis recently spent time with the Biosphere group. He described the project as having an atmosphere of "oppressive... almost totalitarian... hippie fascism. Most importantly they seem to have no knowledge nor interest in botany," which research is one of the expressed purposes of Biosphere II.

Television producer Ed Fitzgerald said of his time at Biosphere II, "The whole experience was marked by a feel of paranoia. The critics we talked to demanded meetings in open places, public parks. We had to ask ourselves several times if we just felt we were being followed or if we were."

An account published in the *Village Voice* described a visit to Biosphere II: "Once a visit to the dome has been secured, you might as well be in Baghdad. All interviews are conducted in the presence of a PR 'minder,' who, with watch and walkie-talkie in hand, makes sure no chat becomes too intimate, or probes too closely about who these people are in their off hours. In fact, all questions about the personal lives of the Biospherians are taboo. It is no accident that of the dozens of published accounts on the project — all sympathetic — not one describes the family, friends, or homes of the Biosphere crew or management. The few who are authorized to speak to the press are almost all core group members. With no attempt at exaggeration or interpretation, let it be said they are almost uniformly humorless. As cold as the fish in their artificial ocean. Not a crack of human frailty or emotion is revealed. The answers that are given are rote and flat in tone, worlds away from the hyperpoetry of their promotional brochures."

Describing the tenets in the group's major promotional tract, the *Voice* author said, "And it is a dark religion. In its introductory chapter, the pamphlet openly declares: 'the major motivation behind creating Biosphere II and developing the capacity to create other microscale viable biospheric systems is to assist the Biosphere [i.e. the lifeforms of Earth] to evolve off planet Earth into potential life regions of our solar system.'"

The last third of the book emphasizes the "historic imperative" of colonizing Mars, given the "inevitable doom" of the Earth, which is described as a "local blind alley" and estimates that work on the Mars project will begin in approximately four years. A book of Allen's poetry on sale in the Biosphere gift shop includes a poem, titled (in perhaps telling fashion)

"*Lebensraum*," about his plot to escape this planetary "cell."

As to whether Allen read *Alternative 3* and thought it was a bright idea, or whether he happens to be a front-man for a group using Biosphere II as a test tube for social experimentation (which may have been the case in Jonestown), I have no idea. Regardless, there can hardly be a better clue than these gleaming geodesic structures in the Arizona desert that there exist men proposing to abandon Earth, forging new schemes of mind control off-planet.

16

Lunar Base Alpha One

Deceased conspiracy researcher Dr. Peter Beter is known for his wild speculations (including the insistence that Jimmy Carter, Henry Kissinger, David Rockefeller and Leonid Brezhnev were replaced by “organic robotoids” — would that it were so). Beter believed *Alternative 3* was about “85 to 90 percent accurate.”

Acknowledging a blur between fiction and fact in *Alternative 3,* I present Beter’s story of the Battle of Harvest Moon, knowing full well that it is probably fictional in most details, but interesting in the parallels it presents with *Alternative 3* — and *Alternative 3* is nothing if not a study in parallels.

In Beter’s *Audio Letter* for September 1977, in his inimitable “Criswell Predicts” style, he relates the American and Russian space programs’ true objectives. According to Beter, these programs have always been militaristic in purpose and secretly intended for conquest of the world, with then-key components being the development of laser and particle beam weapons.

The Rockefellers, the true power behind American politics according to Beter, had early realized that a moon base equipped with laser could strike any spot on Earth and be virtually immune to counterattack. A secret American space program was initiated, and work on U.S. beam weapons proceeded at locations such as a CIA installation in Spain. Meanwhile, the USSR concentrated on its own particle beam program instead of moon flight. In 1972 the Russian civil defense program was stepped up and much of the Soviet Union, including strategic command centers, went underground in order to withstand ICBMs and particle beams.

In 1973, according to Beter, the Americans relocated all native inhabitants from Diego Garcia, an island in the Indian Ocean, and built a new space port from which secret missions to the moon were launched in order to build a base there. Diego Garcia is very isolated, and craft launched eastward pass over a nearly unbroken expanse of water, with the only means of monitoring such launches being from shipboard. Jimmy Carter gave a speech about demilitarizing the Indian Ocean, with the implicit message to the Russians, according to Beter, to stay out.

Meanwhile, the CIA was busy planting supermissiles using Howard Hughes' submarine Glomar Explorer. With this episode, also reported by Bruce Roberts in his underground *Gemstone File,* Beter may be correct. In "The Secret Alliances of the CIA from World War II to Watergate" by Howard Kohn, published in *Rolling Stone* magazine, Kohn says: "Many CIA experts believe the Russian sub story [using the Glomar Explorer to retrieve the sunken submarine] to be a cover since the codes were outdated and the value of the other information was negligible. One possibility is that the CIA, worried about the growing trend of Third World cartels demanding higher prices for minerals, awarded Hughes the $350 million to develop an advanced technology for underwater mining — thereby giving Hughes a head start toward a bonanza with more potential than oil while helping protect U.S. hegemony over the world's mineral trade. Another theory is that the CIA, in conjunction with the U.S. Navy, used the Glomar to set up undetected missile sites on the ocean floor as a way of cheating any arms limitation treaty with the Soviet Union."

The race for an operational particle beam continued, so Beter says, with the Russian Salyud spacecraft carrying out beam tests in space. On July 17, 1973, the Russian Cosmos 929 was launched, consisting of a twin satellite, command module, and a particle beam module. All communications between the Cosmos 929 and Earth were carried on by undetectable modulated laser beams. Meanwhile, in the Copernicus crater base on the moon, the Americans were working toward operational status for their beam weapons.

Cosmos 929 began test firing into open space. On September 20, 1977 the Cosmos fired on an American spy satellite east of southern Finland. The satellite erupted into a fireball witnessed, according to Beter, as far away as Helsinki but dismissed as a UFO in the U.S. British and French trawlers were expelled from the Bering Sea by the Russians and on September 26th, 1977 the Soviets attacked the moon base with particle beams. Bombarded by beam weapons through the night and all day of the 27th, by evening America had lost the battle.

The moon base, in the Beter scenario, had been integral to the Rockefeller plot to control the world. Their plan was to start a limited nuclear war, most of the destruction to take place on American soil. The plan was to denude America of war capability while building up the Soviets. With half of America incinerated by bombs the Rockefellers would step in with the moon base's particle beam weapons and destroy the U.S.S.R., then, as the only remaining major power, the Rockefellers would be enthroned as dictators.

After the Battle of the Harvest Moon, Gromyko gave, according to Beter, an ultimatum in a United Nations speech... as the Bering Sea filled up with Soviet subs. The Soviet's North Atlantic and Pacific fleets were massing and six more particle beam satellites were readied for launch, with two in orbit already.

Gromyko denounced the deterioration of East/West relations and demanded a new agreement for the limitation of nuclear weapons. In a meeting with Carter and Vance, Gromyko informed them of the outcome of Harvest Moon, saying that the U.S.S.R. had destroyed the American moon base and was now in command. "We will oblige you with the war you have worked to bring about."

The following day Soviet submarine fleets armed with neutron bombs converged from positions worldwide, and the Soviets placed sixty cobalt bombs at undersea fracture zones worldwide, able to set off earthquakes at will. In a news conference Carter blurted out something about the "imminent" crises.

Within days an American Atlas Centaur rocket carrying an important communications satellite exploded. Salyud 6 was launched and the Soviets went to work on their own moon base, with the intention of putting a particle beam weapon on the moon. Houston NASA moon base activities shut down.

Dr. Beter concluded his message of September 1977 by stating that war was virtually upon us.

While Beter's story seems highly unlikely given the events of the breakup of the Soviet Union, I note that many elements closely parallel *Alternative 3* and that Beter came to the same conclusion I had reached in regard to the death of the SDI scientists: that the Russians would have seen the program's offensive capabilities and would have been forced into a strategy to prevent its completion. As far as his insistence that the Americans had a base on the moon, I can only state that the base does exist — but perhaps only in terms of plans.

Beter's scenario might also explain the otherwise odd initial emphasis of the American space program on reaching the moon. If the moon flight was accomplished in the manner that NASA made public, it would have would have resulted in only a PR triumph, with the Soviets at the same time "content" to emphasize in their own programs rockets capable of carrying huge cargos and orbiting stations with unknown payloads.

In March 1965 General Thomas M. Power warned of the possibility of attack by orbiting Russian nuclear stations. He said that Americans "may wake up one morning" and find nuclear-armed satellites "floating in stationary orbits over every part of the United States."

In 1981 *Aviation Week* and CBS News reported that there were permanent Russian space platforms armed with killer satellites orbiting the Earth. The Pentagon chose not to comment on the reports.

Space Age Review for November 1981 reported that the United States had developed a "U.S. Space Command" to "meet the needs of the Pentagon's war preparations," also stating that the U.S. was knowingly breaking the 1967 Russian-American space treaty, which prohibits "placing in orbit around the Earth any objects carrying nuclear weapons or other weapons of mass destruction."

Another echo of Beter's scenario is information I received from an anonymous intelligence source in 1991, later confirmed through an independent source in the military. I am not suggesting that the report is absolutely true, only that independent confirmation makes it more likely to be so.

My informant said: "I do know that the U.S. has had an orbiting nuclear weapons platform for at least the past twenty years; enough straight nukes to do all the damage necessary, plus two that are cobalt-jacketed. One of these, dropped on Peking, would spread fallout as far east as Utah. These were part of the old Standard Integrated Operational Plan (SIOP) coded 'Endgame'; the straight nukes were part of the SIOP coded 'Mainchance.' I also know that the first military-run shuttle mission was sent up to service the platform and upgrade the on-board computers. The platform's capabilities were most likely enhanced by this upgrading, though I don't think the weapons were changed at all. There may actually be more than one platform by now, but one is all they need — especially since it could just as easily be used on domestic targets... Add that to the spate of new surveillance satellites they've put up, entirely too many in geo-synchronous orbit over the U.S. and its territories, and it's no surprise that people like myself are paranoid..."

Bill Kaysing, former employee of NASA, also backs up Beter's scenario in a number of details, but believes the moon base was eventually phased out: "...As most aerospace insiders know, the Apollo project was actually a military mission to determine the feasibility of using the moon as a military base of operations against foreign powers. Furthermore, almost 75 percent of all NASA effort was basically military — not space!

"When the capability of controlling orbiting H-bombs became a reality, the moon became far less important to the Pentagon's planners. Who needs a moon base when it's possible to destroy any or all of the planet with bombs disguised as communications satellites that orbit the Earth 24 hours a day, they reasoned."

The make-or-break point on a moon base or a "black" space race is ultimately financial, it would seem, and it is really a question of whether there was a sufficient military black budget to finance such activities — which, however, could have been done on the relative cheap by utilizing the researches and perhaps diverting some of the money allocated to NASA. The objection that a project of such a magnitude could not go on without information leaking to the press is probably false. The Manhattan Project, for instance, employed more than 300,000 persons, and yet no significant leaks appeared in the press at the time.

In an interview conducted by researcher Thomas Lyttle, agricultural expert Richard Miller spoke of his employment in an outer space hydroponics research project from 1968-72 under the administration of Dr. Arthur Pilgrim. Funded by a major aeronautics company in the Northwest, the researches were "for use on the moon. This project was called Lunar Base Alpha One Project... We were part of a study at one point on zero gravity. McCormick Foods [a company connected to the Rockefellers] had an overrun of something like seventeen million dollars that they needed to reinvest, so they formed what was called McCor/Shill or McCormick's/Shilling Platform. These were the people who did experiments with orbiting space platforms - orbiting satellites, etc. These were all secret biological experiments." Note that Miller uses the same terminology used in the account of the anonymous informant: "platform."

Brian O'Leary, the first astronaut to resign from NASA, also spoke about a secret space program in his book *The Making of an Ex-Astronaut:*

"The Air Force also has a center at Cape Kennedy, fending independently from NASA with its own gantries and its own... VIB, the Vehicle Installation Building. These facilities sit on landfill adjacent to Merritt Island, isolated from the NASA structures. We toured the Air Force center but learned little about their highly secret space program. Many people do not realize that the world has three ambitious manned space programs: the U.S. (NASA), Russia, and the U.S. Air Force. The Air Force space program operates under the protection of secrecy offered by the military, in contrast to NASA's exposure to public scrutiny. We probably know less about our Air Force space program than we do about the Soviet space program. We do know a few things, though. They have the Titan III (very difficult to hide), a big tricylinder rocket which looks like a multiple firecracker. The two extra cylinders were strapped on as an afterthought, and the three together deliver a strong thrust which is intermediate between those of the Saturn IB and Saturn V.

"Our tour of the Air Force facility seemed like a broken record: the computers, the consoles, and the rockets were similar to NASA's and it struck me that the whole thing was an unnecessary duplication. Imagine — two independent but similar programs going on at the same site. The Air Force space program seemed like a foreign space program, except we were spending dearly for it."

O'Leary also refers to future space prospects, in a comment that makes me wonder if he is indulging an arch humor: "A manned Mars landing may be in prospect for the 1980s or 1990s. President Nixon's appointed Space Task Group outlined *three alternatives* [emphasis added], all of which would involve the Mars landing before the end of the century..."

What if, as *Alternative 3* suggests, there is a moon or Mars base already in operation? Then there may have been indications of its existence. Curious lights, clouds, and unexplainable moving objects on the surface of the moon have been observed by both professional and amateur astronomers, and Fred Steckling's *Alien Bases on the Moon* offers a remarkable assortment of photographs of inexplicable Lunar features. These include large objects which seem to have travelled across the Lunar landscape, leaving miles of stitch-like paths; what appear to be Arabic numerals and other symbols carved into the lunar surface in conjunction with dome-like objects; and multiple triangular pond-like constructions which utterly defy any explanation as natural formations.

An AP news story featured an interview with Michael Carr, a member of the team interpreting photographs of Mars sent back to Earth from the Viking 2 orbiter. Carr said: "We are getting some strange things. It is very puzzling." Carr explained that some of the photographs of the Martian surface showed features resembling agricultural strip plowing. "The stripes are too regular to be of natural causes." As to what the research team thought the striped area was, Carr said: "I really can't tell you all of the possibilities that were suggested. But many suggestions were that it was MAN MADE." Note that Carr doesn't term the features "alien made."

There are reports that the astronauts encountered strange things on the moon whose existence was never revealed to the public. The book *Alternative 3* repeats author Otto Binder's assertion that during the Apollo 11 mission this exchange took place over the radio:

Mission Control: “What’s there?... malfunction (garble)... Mission Control calling Apollo 11...”

Apollo 11: “These babies were huge, sir... enormous... Oh, God you wouldn’t believe it!... I’m telling you there are other space-craft out there... lined up on the far side of the crater edge... they’re on the Moon watching us...”

My initial impulse was to discount this alleged bit of radio communication, based as it is solely on the word of Otto Binder (who, in collaboration with his brother Edward, was half of the science fiction writing team Eando Binder). I might also have been negatively influenced by the numerous patently fake transcripts of other secret conversations between “conspirators” in the book *Alternative 3.* Timothy Good, however, relates a tale told to him by “a certain professor (whose name is known to me)... who served in British military intelligence.” Good says that the professor recollects a conversation with Neil Armstrong which took place during a NASA symposium:

PROFESSOR: “What really happened out there with Apollo 11?”

ARMSTRONG: “It was incredible... of course, we had always known there was a possibility... the fact is, we were warned off. There was never any question then of a space station or a moon city.”

PROFESSOR: “What do you mean ‘warned off?’

ARMSTRONG: “I can’t go into details, except to say that their ships were far superior to ours both in size and technology — Boy, they were big!... and menacing... No, there is no question of a space station.”

PROFESSOR: “But NASA had other missions after Apollo 11?”

ARMSTRONG: “Naturally — NASA was committed at that time, and couldn’t risk a panic on Earth... But it really was a quick scoop and back again.”

Armstrong, not surprisingly, denies the story.

An incredible objectification of *Alternative 3* exists in the book *Space Settlements, A Design Study,* edited by Johnson and Holbrow (NASA document SP-413). Authored by participants in the 1975 Summer faculty fellowship program in engineering systems design of Ames Research Center and Stanford University, and sponsored by NASA, the book analyzes from an engineering perspective the requirements necessary to launch and maintain extraterrestrial colonies, but oddly presents much of its text in present tense, as if the reader was a participant in an already-existing program.

Viewed from the perspective of the *Alternative 3* allegations numerous portions of the book will provoke a sense of recognition, if not dread. From a section titled “Tour of the Colony.”

"Preparation for your trip is a difficult period; it eliminates those who are not serious about their intention of going to the space colony. You undergo weeks of quarantine, exhaustive physical examinations, stringent decontamination, and interminable tests to make sure that you do not carry insects, bacteria, fungi, or mental problems to L5 [space station]. Only then are you permitted to board a personnel module of a heavy-lift launch vehicle which everyone refers to as the HLLV, along with 99 prospective colonists who have gone through even more rigorous tests than you have as a mere visitor.

"...During the construction phase of the colony, the staging area handled replacement supplies at the rate of 1000t a year. The growth and increasing loading of the colony required trans-shipment of an average of 50 people per week together with their personal belongings and the additional carbon, nitrogen, and hydrogen needed to sustain them in space. Oxygen, and other elements, are obtained from the Moon. Later the big demand was for lightweight, complex components fabricated for satellite solar power stations. Initially the resupply of the lunar base also came from Earth. The 150 people on the Moon require 250t of supplies and rotation of 75 people from Earth each year. Furthermore, there is traffic from the colony to Earth. Studies of past colonizations on Earth have shown that discontent with frontier life is usually such that many colonists wish to return home." The study admits, "it might be necessary to devise ways to discourage commuting."

The book describes the approach to the space station, situated in neutral gravity between the Earth and moon, and supplied from the moon base:

"The space colony appears as a giant wheel in space. Still you cannot comprehend its size, but you know it must be huge. One of the other passengers who has been on the trip before tells you it is 1800m in diameter... He points to the hub of the wheel and tells you that is where your transport is heading to dock with the space colony, explaining that local custom has named the docking area the North Pole." [emphasis added].

Might this be a code explaining the clandestine meetings of the conspirators, "beneath ice of Arctic"? My guess is that it is merely an interesting coincidence as are, in all probability, the following paragraphs from Section 4, titled "Choosing Among *Alternatives*" [emphasis added]. Again, it almost seems as if we are witnessing the mocking cant of conspirators daring us to *try* and do something about their schemes:

"Moreover, again because time was short, many of the comparisons among *alternative* subsystems were more qualitative than study group members would have liked.

“Effort devoted to *alternatives* depended upon the particular subject A great deal of time was spent considering different forms for the habitat, how to handle the shielding and how to process lunar material. Less time was given to considering *alternative* patterns of siting the colony and its parts, of different ways to achieve life support, or of various possible transportation systems. In some cases much effort was expended but few *alternatives* were generated; an example is the system for moving large amounts of matter cheaply from the moon to the colony. No *alternative* at all was found to the manufacture of solar satellite power plants as the major commercial enterprise of the colony.

“It is important to realize that the *alternatives* described in this chapter constitute a major resource for improving the proposed design and for constructing new designs that meet other criteria. Rejection of any concept for the current baseline system does not mean that concept is fundamentally flawed. Some *alternatives* were rejected because they failed to meet the criteria, which were deliberately chosen conservatively and might well be changed on the basis of future experience or under different assumptions. Others were rejected simply because information about them was incomplete. Yet others were not chosen because their virtues were recognized too late in the study to incorporate them into a unified overall picture.

“The *alternatives* might also be useful for designing systems with other goals than permanent human settlement in space; for example, space factories with temporary crews, or laboratories. *Alternatively,* new knowledge or advances in technology, such as the advent of laser propulsion or active shielding against ionizing radiation, might make rejected subsystems very desirable.” [emphases added]

Information reminiscent of the possible origin of crop circles suggested in chapter 6 of this book, “Hot Jobs and Crop Circles,” is provided in subsections “Satellite Solar Power Stations: No *Alternatives*” and “Still Other *Alternatives*” [emphases added], describing the microwave transmission from space of solar-generated power, and the production of that power being a potential economic justification for space colonization.

Alternative 3 is correct in reporting that a number of astronauts had psychological difficulties after their missions in space, but that is fairly common knowledge. Comments that Buzz Aldrin made in his book *Return to Earth* particularly suggest that, as *Alternative 3* maintains, something was going on that the public wasn’t being told about:

“We were to become public relations men for space exploration — in a sense, salesmen. The word made me terribly uncomfortable and self-conscious when it was first used.” Speaking of his wife, Aldrin said, “I was incredulous... she had really believed all that crap that she had read about me — about her — about all of us? Suddenly all my life... became tinged with a crazy unreality.”

Aldrin also described a meeting of the Lancaster, California Chamber of Commerce where he was one of the guest speakers. Roy Neal, an NBC newscaster asked Aldrin a question that Aldrin was not comfortable with: “Now that almost two years have gone by, why not tell us how it really felt to be on the moon?”

Aldrin’s reaction, as described by him, was very strange. “If any one question was anathema to me, that was it. Roy, I suppose, felt he had no choice. Yet it has always been almost impossible for me to answer that question with any sort of decent response.

“My throat went dry and I became dizzy. Carefully I picked my way through a reply, thinking that all of the test pilots in the audience would burst out in laughter.

“I remember little more of the interview... I signed a few [autographs] and when the shaking became uncontrollable, I grabbed Joan and ran for the door... In the privacy of an alley near the auditorium, I choked back my emotions and quietly wept.”

17

Disinfo

The possibility exists that *Alternative 3* was created as "grey" disinformation, calculated to confuse and defuse the issues of elitist control, mind control, genocide, and secret space programs, by revealing yet concealing these truths. The purpose would be to discredit these subjects and shunt debate into conclaves of UFO True Believers, who could be counted on to hallucinate, embroider and heavily merchandise the information, thus continuing the work of the disinformers. It wouldn't be the first instance of the government (in either its overt or covert manifestation) using disinformation vectors to confuse, pacify, or stampede the populace in directions of their choosing.

Along this line, Leslie Watkins' background as a writer is interesting. His books, in order of publication, are *The Sleepwalk Killers,* "a non-fiction study of somnambulistic violence," *The Killing of Idi-Amin,* about Watkins' experiences when imprisoned by the Amin regime, *The Unexploded Man,* characterized as "a thriller," although the title sounds as if it might be on the Manchurian Candidate theme, *Alternative 3, The Real Exorcists,* a nonfiction book about exorcism, *Private Opinions,* nonfiction about public opinion polls, *Billion Dollar Miracle,* a book about the New Zealand travel industry, and *The Story of Money,* commissioned by Barclays Bank.

Altogether an interesting mix of subjects, with a predominant theme that might be termed manipulative psychology. Watkins relates in a letter that during the writing of *The Killing of Idi-Amin* he was "imprisoned and threatened with death by the Amin regime in Uganda (they suspected me, falsely, of being a British spy, when I went there to cover a war for the *Daily Mail.*"

As to whether the authors of *Alternative 3* fell upon their theme through coincidence, happenstance, or enemy action, I have no idea. Watkins maintains that it was an accident, although it can be easily seen that the accident cannot have been complete. A hoax book or television show like *Alternative 3* betrays a disdain for easily-duped "commoners" only too prevalent in the attitudes of British media hacks and, especially, the upper crust owners of same.

There is much evidence to suggest that the UFO field itself, the primary forum for the discussion of *Alternative 3,* is itself largely a blind, a maze of fun house mirrors generated to twist facts, to conceal and not to reveal them. Many UFO personalities, back to the earliest days of UFO research, have had connections to military intelligence. These have been the supposed experts and opinion leaders in the field, and some have had concealed loyalties.

Todd Zechel, interviewed by Timothy Good in *Above Top Secret,* has alleged that several CIA agents infiltrated and held high positions in the early UFO organization NICAP. Zechel cites Count Nicholas de Rochefort, a member of the CIA's Psychological Warfare Staff, who was vice-Chairman of NICAP in 1956. He also names as CIA agents Bernard J. Carvalho, Chairman of NICAP's membership subcommittee, Karl Pflock, Chairman of the Washington, DC subcommittee, and G. Stuart Nixon, former assistant to NICAP's president.

Stating that Donald Keyhoe was deliberately ousted from NICAP by the CIA, Zechel says: "Maybe it's a coincidence that the founder of the CIA's Psychological Warfare Staff has been on the board [of NICAP] for nearly twenty years. Maybe it's another coincidence that Charles Lombard, a former CIA covert employee (according to himself) would seek out a retired CIA executive to run the organization (i.e. after Jack Acuff was replaced by a retired CIA agent, Alan N. Hall in 1979!)... Or maybe we're all paranoid... Perhaps Keyhoe deserved to be fired from the organization he built with his own sweat, blood, and sacrifice. The timing couldn't have been better, in any case. Keyhoe, after all, was beginning to focus on the CIA in 1969, instead of his tunnel-visioned attacks on the Air Force... if they wanted to destroy the leading anti-secrecy organization of the 1960s, they couldn't have done a better job if they'd tried."

Former CIA intelligence officer Miles Copeland, also interviewed by Timothy Good, told of a disinformation program headed by Desmond Fitzgerald of the organization's Special Affairs Staff. False press reports about UFOs were released from a number of different areas of the globe, in order to "keep the Chinese off balance and make them think we were doing things we weren't. The project got the desired results, as I remember, except that it somehow got picked up by a lot of religious nuts in Iowa and Nebraska or somewhere who took it seriously enough to add an extra chapter to their version of the New Testament!"

Ufologists William Cooper and John Lear can both be cited as having connections to the clandestine community (Cooper claiming to have been in military intelligence, Lear as a CIA operative), although they are both fond of accusing other researchers of being agents of the "Secret Government." Lear and Cooper tell essentially the same convoluted tale of U.S. government long-term collaboration with the extraterrestrial "greys," the big-headed, spindly-bodied aliens figuring prominently in current abductee tales. They maintain that the government is involved in an active process of concealing the existence of extraterrestrial invaders, a peace treaty between the aliens and the government, and the existence of collaborative alien/human bases in such places as Dulce, New Mexico. Due to the government treaty, the aliens have a degree of freedom to do their dirty work, which apparently includes cattle mutilations, the abduction of a certain number of humans per year for use in genetic experimentation, and the implantation of humans with tiny brain control devices.

An examination of Cooper's writings frankly reveals a character which, to me, bears little resemblance to Reilly, Ace of Spies. Lear, however, has long maintained contacts in the intelligence community, and there is a framed photo in his home of Watergate spook G. Gordon Liddy, inscribed: "To John, I told em fuckin nothin."

Lear admits to having recently spent time with Gordon Novel, a man implicated in the Kennedy assassination by New Orleans District Attorney Jim Garrison and others, and alleged by his wife to have been one of the Oswald impersonators prior to the Kennedy killing. Novel himself has admitted that he was hired by Lyndon Johnson to sabotage the Garrison investigation.

Of his encounter, Lear said that Novel and another man, an "electronics expert" working for Federal Technologies Corporation, had come up with "an advanced device" for the Joint Chiefs of Staff. "During their research," Lear stated, "they had come across information the UFOs may exist, and both of them wanted to come down here and get a briefing." During the visit Novel spoke at length with Lear about UFOs and the government/alien collaboration which Lear touts.

Lear suggests: "Maybe he was sent here to disinform me. Maybe he was sent to find out how much I knew. Maybe he was sent to divert my attention from Dulce [the town near the underground New Mexico alien base Lear maintains exists, and which area is in fact a reported center for cattle mutilations in the Southwest]." Martin Cannon, writing in *UFO Uni-*

verse magazine, proposes a more likely possibility: that Novel was sent to draw attention to Lear.

Another case, that of Paul Bennewitz, is instructive. In 1979 prominent UFO field personality William Moore became interested in researcher Bennewitz' contact with a woman who had an abduction experience and maintained that she had witnessed cattle mutilations and the use of animal parts in vat experimentation. Bennewitz concluded the woman had been implanted with an alien-manufactured brain receiver and, with experience as a physicist, sought to determine the source of the electromagnetic signals he felt must be used to influence the woman.

Moore says that at the same time he was approached "by a well-placed individual within the intelligence community who claimed to be directly connected to a high-level project dealing with UFOs. This individual told me that he spoke for a small group of similar individuals who were uncomfortable with the government's continuing cover-up of the truth and indicated that he and his group would like to help me with my research into the subject in the hope and expectation that I might be able to help them find a way to change the prevailing policy and get the facts to the public without breaking any laws in the process. The man who acted as liaison between this group and myself was an Air Force Office of Special Investigations agent named Richard Doty. I knew I was being recruited, but at that point I had no idea for what."

Moore exchanged information about Bennewitz and the APRO research group he was director of for what he thought was classified information about UFOs. At the same time that Bennewitz was receiving supposed classified information, according to Moore, "Paul was gathering data from a variety of sources and amalgamating it with information being fed to him by a number of government people in whom, for some reason, he seemed to have an implicit and abiding faith. The story that emerged from this melange of fact, fiction, fantasy, hearsay, hard data and government disinformation was absolutely incredible! Yet somehow, Paul believed in it and set out on a one-man crusade to tell the world that malevolent aliens from space were in league with our government to take over the planet. What had begun in 1979 as an effort to learn whether the behavior of a woman who claimed she had been abducted by UFO aliens was being influenced by some sort of radio remote control had, in the space of less than three years, blossomed into a tale which rivaled the wildest science fiction scenario anyone could possibly imagine."

Moore says that the government's investigation of Bennewitz involved wiretaps and break-ins, and by 1982, Bennewitz had become convinced of a scenario of alien collaboration with the government, control devices, and a secret underground base at Dulce, New Mexico. This is essentially the same story circulated by John Lear, William Cooper, and others of the alien-govemment collaboration school.

"I know that this whole body of information is false, because I was in a position to observe much of the disinformation as it unfolded. And I can tell you that it was effective, because I watched Paul become systematically more paranoid and more emotionally unstable as he tried to assimilate what was happening to him. He had guns and knives all over his house, had installed extra locks on the doors, and he swore that 'they' (meaning the aliens) were coming through his walls at night and injecting him with hideous chemicals which would knock him out for long periods of time. He began to suffer increasing bouts of insomnia. I knew at that time that he was not far from an inevitable nervous collapse. His health had deteriorated, he had lost considerable weight, his hands shook as if from palsy, and he looked terrible. I tried to counsel him to drop the entire UFO thing before his health was completely destroyed. Not long afterward I heard he had been hospitalized and was under psychiatric care."

Summing up the experience, Moore says: "Disinformation is a strange and bizarre game. Those who play it are completely aware that an operation's success is dependent upon dropping false information upon a target or 'mark,' in such a way that the person will accept it as truth and will repeat, and even defend it to others as if it were true. One of the key factors in any successful disinformation scheme is that *it must contain some elements of truth* [emphasis added] in order to be credible. Once the information is believed, the work of counterintelligence specialists is complete. They can simply withdraw in the confidence that the dirty work of spreading their poisonous seeds will be done by others."

Other UFO cases provide clues to a manipulation that may or may not be extraterrestrial in origin. Martin Cannon in *The Controllers: A New Hypothesis of Alien Abductions* discusses the famous Betty and Barney Hill UFO abduction case as a possible case of government, not alien intervention. In 1961 the Hills were returning from a vacation trip. Passing through Groveton, New Hampshire they spotted an unusual star-like object in the night sky, and initially thought that it was a "falling star," or perhaps an airplane or satellite. Performing unusual aerial maneuvers, the "star" drew closer until they could see that it was a disk-shaped craft. The craft stopped in front of the car at a height of "eight to ten stories," and Barney Hill brought the car to a stop. The Hills were able to see humanoid figures through the windows of the saucer, and Barney Hill, afraid that he and his wife were going to be "captured," jumped back into the car and fled down the highway, leaving the UFO behind.

Within a few days Betty Hill began having nightmares about the encounter, but it was two years before the Hills sought help from Boston psychiatrist Dr. Benjamin Simon. Six months of hypnotic therapy brought out details of "missing time" and a supposed abduction aboard the saucer craft, including physical examination conducted on both of the Hills by the humanoid occupants of the UFO.

While the account of the Hills' alleged alien encounter is familiar to most individuals interested in the subject of UFOs, there are several details which are not widely-discussed, and which may point to other than the usual suppositions about contact from outer space.

The Hills' background is interesting, and perhaps made them desirable for "abduction" and mind-tampering. An interracial couple, they held prominent positions in a number of civil rights organizations (this during a time when such organizations were under surveillance and sometimes attack by the FBI and the CIA). The Hills would have been perfect subjects for the covert implantation of electronic bugs for surveillance of these organizations. Cannon points out that Barney Hill was acquainted with the head of Air Force intelligence at Pease Air Force Base, and suggests that this may have been the relationship which brought the couple to the attention of the intelligence community, not their saucer contact.

Other details of the Hills' abduction are not mentioned by Cannon, yet I believe may be significant. Betty Hill described the inhabitants of the flying saucer as wearing uniforms and billed caps ("similar to Air Force"), and speaking with a "foreign" accent. On several occasions, when Betty Hill became upset during the abduction and examination, the leader of the abductors rubbed his hand in front of her face in the familiar gesture of a hypnotist.

Barney Hill's first impression of the leader of his abductors was, "He looks like a German Nazi. He's a Nazi..." One of them, he said, was a "military pilot." During hypnosis Barney Hill said: "I thought of the Navy and the submarine, and I thought the men that moved back were just dressed in blue denims. But this other man was dressed in a black shiny coat, with a cap on."

This suggests a somewhat different event than the one portrayed on television, with standard big-headed aliens abducting and making free with the Hills. Extraterrestrials in blue denim?

Another UFO close encounter that does not seem to fit into the standard mold, is that of William "Eddie" Laxton. Researcher John Keel relates that on March 23, 1966 Laxton, an aircraft electronics instructor, was driving to Sheppard Air Force Base where he worked, approaching an intersection on Highway 70 near the Texas-Oklahoma border. A huge "fish-shaped" craft suddenly loomed in front of his car, blocking the road. Laxton estimated the object to be about 75 feet long and 8 feet deep.

Laxton said that the object "had a plastic bubble in front which was about three feet in diameter, and you could see light through it." He also remembers that the craft had numbers and letters painted vertically in black on the fuselage, either TL4768 or TL4168. Laxton noticed a man examining the craft with a flashlight, and later described him as wearing a mechanic's cap with the bill turned up — apparently a popular mode of alien dress if we take the Hill encounter into consideration.

"I got the impression due to his stooped shoulders he was about thirty to thirty-five years old. He wore either coveralls or a two-piece suit that looked like green-colored fatigues. I got the idea that he had three stripes above and three below [on his sleeve]. The above stripes were in an arch and the below stripes were in a wide V shape."

The "mechanic," on spotting Laxton, climbed a ladder and entered the craft, and the UFO soon departed. "In about five seconds," Laxton said, "it was a mile away."

Another UFO encounter linked in conclusive manner to military operations is the famous Cash-Landrum case, which took place in Dayton, Texas in 1980. Betty Cash, her friend Vickie Landrum, and Landrum's seven year old grandson were driving outside Dayton when they saw the descent of a huge UFO, flames shooting downward from the craft. The object hovered at a height of approximately 135 feet, and Cash saw it as a bright light while Landrum described a rounded top and a pointed lower portion. The car became so hot that Cash was unable to touch its outside surface.

Following the object in the car, they were surprised to see twenty-three large twin-rotor helicopters escorting it at distances no closer than three quarters of a mile. Stopping the car a number of times to observe the object, they then drove home.

It was after they had returned home that symptoms of what seemed to be radiation exposure appeared. Betty Cash's eyes swelled shut, nodules appeared on her scalp, and she suffered from nausea and vomiting. Four days after the incident she was admitted to the hospital as a burn victim. Cash had left the car to observe the object, while the other two witnesses had remained inside, and her exposure seems to have been the worst. Vickie Landrum suffered from eye inflammation and hair loss, while the child had eye inflammation and "sunburn."

Timothy Good offers clues to the nature of the object observed by Cash and Landrum, citing anonymous but, according to him, reliable sources. He says that the object has been described as an experimental nuclear powered space shuttle (just the thing to shuttle *Alternative 3* 'batch consignments' to the moon, one might say).

Cash and Landrum sued the government for their injuries, but the case was dismissed on the basis of the military's protestation that they possessed no such craft.

A strange "abduction" incident which may link to laser 'hot jobs' is related in the *SPIRAL* newsletter for April 21, 1982:

"It occurred on Dec. 11, 1979 and involved Melvin and Naomi (last name not given), a healthy couple in their early 60s. Melvin is a retired aerospace engineer 'who had received honors in the Apollo program,' according to the *MUFON UFO Journal* of March 1982. They were both at home that night, watching TV and having cheese and wine when they both simultaneously and instantly lost consciousness for no apparent reason. Afterwards they both took a 'trip' which could be described as hell. Neither could remember consciously what happened during the next two days, but after the incident both Naomi and Melvin were hospitalized — Naomi for treatment of "depressive reaction and dehydration" and Melvin for "psychotic reaction, dehydration and renal failure." Both had burns — Naomi had them on her hip and thigh, Melvin with a more serious burn on his hip which indented the bone, a burn on the top of his head, on both heels and a very severe one on his back. One of the physicians told Melvin he had "third degree high radiation burns."

"When they were finally able to recall at least parts of what happened during the two-day 'trip,' they described separate experiences of what might be considered a very bad LSD experience. The only thing is, when Naomi and Melvin were in the hospital (they were brought in reluctantly by Naomi's son) thorough examinations were given — including blood tests for possible traces of a drug, but none were found. Yet both obviously had some pretty wild hallucinations. They both remember being in a different room other than in their mobile home. Naomi felt as if she were in an "operating room" being examined, while Melvin was in a "cubicle" during the ordeal, with a girl who had "no features" and spoke in a "foreign" language. *They both heard a continuous sound like a helicopter engine* [emphasis added] during the first part of the experience. After that, their memories became distorted and they had individual bizarre experiences in their mobile home. They both thought someone or something was trying to get them. When Naomi's son came to get her, he found the furnace door was off and the thermocouple torn out despite the fact that it was below freezing that day...

"Two more pieces of the puzzle have to do with a 'black sooty film' on the TV screen, the windows of their mobile home, as well as on a macrame ornament and the drapes. They didn't find all this out until two months later when they finally returned home... To this day, none of the freakish experience has any explanation — the 'cubicle' hallucinations, the two-day blackout, the burns, the furnace, the black soot... all remains a complete mystery.

"The fact that Melvin worked on the Apollo space program would seem to tie in very neatly with the *Alternative 3* theme..."

A paragraph in the previously noted "Japanese Death Ray" document from 1945 strikes a familiar note relating to UFO contact. Describing the experiments by the Japanese to perfect an electromagnetic death ray, the document reports "Throughout this programme experiments were tried on the effectiveness of short-wave radiation in stopping engines by causing pre-ignition. It was found that the radiation was effective in this respect only when the engine was unshielded and it was sometimes necessary to tune the ignition system to the frequency by varying the length of the ignition cable." This is reminiscent of the reports of automobiles stalling in the vicinity of UFOs, opening other avenues of speculation when one thinks that some UFOs might be equipped with just this sort of electromagnetic weaponry.

Another possibly sinister note is provided by an abductee interviewed by Martin Cannon. She claimed that, while being abducted by apparent aliens, she was given a gun in a ziplock baggy. This was not a laser or a zap gun, but a standard gunpowder and bullet-firing model. The woman said her abductors told her in true Manchurian Candidate fashion: "When you see the light, you will do it tonight. Execute." The abductee also reports that, after her capture and examination, she developed urges to be around guns, feelings she had never experienced before.

Mark Chapman, the assassin of John Lennon, unpleasantly leaps to mind. Recounting the experience of the final seconds prior to shooting Lennon, Chapman said: "He walked past me and then I heard in my head said, 'Do it, do it, do it, do it,' like that. I pulled the gun out of my pocket, I handed over to my left hand, I don't remember aiming. I must have done, but I don't remember drawing the bead or whatever you call it. And I just pulled the trigger steady five times."

Chapman has been circumstantially linked with CIA assassination programs and neo-Nazi groups, and, according to a number of researchers, may have been programmed to murder Lennon. It is also interesting to note that the same psychiatrist, Bernard Diamond, was used for the evaluation of Chapman and Sirhan Sirhan, the alleged assassin of Robert F. Kennedy.

Another woman interviewed by Martin Cannon said that during the course of being examined by the creatures who had abducted her she heard a very strange aside made by one “alien” abductor to another. “They will think it’s flying saucers,” the “alien” said in English.

18

To Serve Man

When evaluating suspected disinformation, we can proceed on the basis that the content of a cover-up or disinformation story can possibly offer an idea of what is being hidden, since in order to create an effective, self-perpetuating ruse, there must be a mix of truth and falsehood. This practice confuses and discredits past and future factual reports, linking them in the public mind with whatever incredible elements the disinformers may inject.

An analysis of current UFO stories, including those of flying saucers and the recent element of "underground alien bases," suggests that they may be cooked up to conceal actual realms of experimentation and manipulation by the government or other control factors. It is possible that UFO abductions are in fact the operation of secret mind control research, their terrestrial origins concealed through the use of advanced craft, with experimentation on unwitting subjects masked through hypnosis, RHIC-EDOM memory erasure corresponding to the familiar abductee experience of "missing time," or other means of mind control. What better way to conceal secret technology and human experimentation than to wrap the events in extraterrestrial trappings — perhaps using hallucinogens, alien masks, electronic effects, unusual craft, and even computerized "virtual reality" technology — and to keep issuing statements insisting that "alien abduction" is the product of someone's crazed imagination?

Conspiracy researcher Mae Brussell, in her radio show of 22 June, 1979 may have been the first to speculate on a possible core secret of UFO disinformation: the concealment of genetic experimentation, which may or may not be conducted in underground bases housing vats and utilizing bovine blood from cattle mutilations, and the connection of this experimentation to UFO coverup. Referring to the "aliens" encountered in UFO abduction experiences, Brussell said:

"My worst fear is, what if these people are genetically mutilated? What if they are humanoids that have been tampered with, and are being used for purpose of terror or development of outer space? What if that were happening? Or is it happening? I began to hear the description of the people in black [i.e. Men in Black] that follow up these sightings, and the physical descriptions and similarities of people that are seen — short humanoids, short arms, short necks, pointed ears, tight skin, holes for eyes — and I began to think of the psychiatrists that see the people afterwards, that hypnotize them and recount the stories, and wonder: who are the cast of characters that would be involved in the UFO situation if they're man-made? Like Mr. [Jacque] Vallee was saying, if they're not [from] outer space, if they're Nazi space scientists, if they're Nazi doctors...

"Where is Dr. Mengele? He's been working on genetics for forty years. There's a new book out about the thalidomide drug made by Merrill Richardson, given to women who were pregnant. It's interesting that pregnant women suffered from the deformities genetically, and their children were born without arms or legs — what they described as 'fins.' And I'm wondering if some of these experiments [have been performed] on these people, because that's been hushed up; we haven't seen photographs of these people since they've grown up. There were thousands of them in communities in Germany and England with the thalidomide children, and we haven't had any follow-up on that, or if it's been used since. Are we now meeting our own genetically refabricated children?"

There are in fact at least six federally-funded scientific teams working on what is termed the Human Genome Project, whose stated purpose is to map the molecular sequence of the 50,000 to 100,000 genes determining the structure and development of the human body, and whose unstated purposes may include eugenics goals. Certainly it is interesting that the center for Genome research in this country is located at Cold Springs Harbor, New York, historically the locale where eugenics research was launched.

The Genome Project has been referred to as "biology's moon shot," and, it is (no doubt under-) estimated, will take fifteen years and three billion dollars to accomplish. Salvador Luria, the scientific mentor of James Watson, discoverer of the structure of DNA, has criticized the project, saying that it is run by a "small coterie of power-seeking enthusiasts" leading us into a "kinder, gentler program to 'perfect' human individuals by 'correcting' their genomes..."

The truth may be even more sinister, and the scientists engaged in the project may or may not realize the full contents of the genetic Pandora's box they are opening. Project head James Watson, at least, has privately expressed concern about the dangers inherent in the project. At the International Conference on Recombinant DNA Molecules he whispered to a colleague (not intending that a nearby reporter should overhear), "We can't even measure the flicking risks."

Although the leadership of the Genome Project understandably emphasizes in public statements the acquisition of knowledge that may lead to the curing of disease and the elimination of genetic defects, there are many ethical questions being asked. Where will the line be drawn in restricting what those in power will decide what unborn generations should be? And will the mapping of the human genome herald a return to traditional elitist eugenics programming, unchallenged by a public with a short memory?

The Genome Project synchronizes perfectly with the social control purposes of the psychiatric and social control establishments. Until now they have had to accomplish their purposes by crude means such as drugs, electroshock, brain implants and electronic mind control, but with research into genetic determination and alteration, it may be possible to intervene prior to a person's birth. They may be able to breed out revolt, and to turn subjects into docile workers never questioning their living — or dying — conditions.

Marine Major Donald E. Keyhoe, in *Aliens from Space,* one of numerous popular UFO books he wrote trumpeting the idea of space invaders and pooh-poohing the possibility of any connection to advanced military projects, is surprisingly forthright in talking about NASA cyborg programs:

"Cyborg (cybernetic organism) is the goal of a program under NASA contract. Using chemical 'mind changers' and surgery, some future astronauts would be transformed into semi-robots... Such 'closed cycle' astronauts would be a mating of man with machine. Artificial units would replace their hearts and most other main organs. They would need no food or water — they would have built-in energy suppliers. Eventually even their brains might be replaced.

"Cyborg, the emotionless semi-robot, would be used on long journeys which could break down a normal astronaut. There is no question that it can be done — by us or an alien race."

Keyhoe quotes Dr. Toby Freedman of North American Aviation as saying, "This surgical tempering would produce a weird being who accomplishes his space mission by trading most of his physiological systems for electronic ones, whose mouth is sealed, lungs collapsed, body wastes recycled through himself, neural pathways partly severed and all his emotional feelings dissected out. He would be so fantastically changed he could never rejoin the human race."

Does the cyborg that Keyhoe and Freedman describe seem reminiscent of the "grey aliens" that so many abductees describe?

According to David Paul in *Apocalypse Culture,* "Naval Research Laboratories, the Japanese Ministry of International Trade and Industry, the U.S. Defense Advanced Research Projects Agency and other investors like Sharp and Sanyo-Denki are funding research into what is known as the Molecular Electronic Device (MED) or 'biochip.' There are several designs for these organic microprocessors, but the essential idea is to use protein molecules or synthetic organic molecules as computing elements to store information or act as switches with the application of voltage. Signal flow in this case would be by sodium or calcium ions. Others feel that artificial proteins can be constructed to carry signals by electron flow. Still another idea is to 'metalize' dead neuronal tissue to produce processing devices."

Paul quotes geneticist Kevin Ullmer, of Genex Corporation, as saying: "The ultimate scenario is to develop a complete genetic code for the computer that would function as a virus does, but instead of producing more virus, it would assemble a fully operational computer inside a cell."

Other theoretical possibilities are noted in the anonymous document "Alien and Government Secret Genetic Project Directives," which makes much of the collaboration of the U.S. government with space aliens (making it a probable candidate for disinformation, in my evaluation), but at the same time listing other possibilities I find more credible. These include researches into the production of synthetic biological organisms, experimental learning programs, and sub-race development (perhaps genetically bred for living under hostile other-planetary conditions). Other possibilities listed in the document are food-source development and functional skill specializations, by which human bodies would be altered or grown to perform certain functions, again suggesting abilities that might be desirable in a space colony.

I consider the document "Orion Based Technology, Mind Control and Other Secret Projects," which has circulated widely in the UFO community, to be highly suspect and probably another product of a government hack, although there may be some truth in it along with a disinformational spin. Regarding biological experimentation, the interviewed O.H. Krill (an alleged extraterrestrial left on Earth as an ambassador after the signing of a US/alien treaty) says:

"Human cloning was developed at the University of Utah at Salt Lake City in 1977. They first aired this on TV as part of a series. They had an alleged human clone on TV that they were interviewing. It didn't talk very well. They showed the original human and the clone. The clone was not all that successful. It took 14 months to generate a fully adult human clone in a tank. It was a two part series. The second part of the series never aired, for obvious reasons. CIA sources have confirmed that it started at the University of Utah. The government has a facility for clones. The first one was built in the Mount Hood area, about sixty miles east of Portland, Oregon. They have other facilities in other locations. Locations must have stable geomagnetic fields and other special characteristics or the cloning process does not work properly. They can replicate them faster now."

Science fiction? Quite probably, but in 1967 Cambridge physiologist Lord Rothschild, of all people, told scientists at the Weizmann Institute of Science in Israel that he considered the cloning of people would be a reality in the near future. That statement was made 25 years ago. Might cloning be a "suppressed technology" that it would be better for the public not to find out about?

The FBI keeps DNA files on those they define as "criminals," and DNA "dogtags" have now been instituted by the Army, supposedly as aid to body identification. Alan Westin of the Columbia University Department of Political Sciences has said that "there is already a dangerous call from some government individuals to extend DNA testing to broad investigative data bank collections from... the general populace."

The implementation of plans involving genetic (or even cyborg) manipulation should be made vastly easier by using a DNA "wand" that Cornell University admits to having perfected. The wand is hand-held and shoots ten million DNA-coated pellets into living flesh. There is no visible effect on the skin, and the pellets are so small that virtually no sensation is felt. This DNA wand is highly reminiscent of the reports of the hardware used on some UFO abductees by "aliens."

Stories of human vat experimentation and the frequent observation of unmarked or military helicopters in the vicinity of cattle mutilations provide a suggestion that the military or some other organization are doing experimentation requiring large quantities of blood for its accomplishment.

In the classic mutilation scenario the cow appears to have been completely drained of blood, while still living, in some unknown quick procedure. Using advanced surgical techniques, blood and organs are removed; usually one ear, one eye, the tongue and the anus. The animal is left behind, often in a highly unnatural position: flat on its back with legs sticking into the air, with no blood in the carcass or on the ground around it, and no foot or hoofprints surrounding it, not even those of the dead animal. Many of the carcasses also appear to have been dropped from a height, as if from a hovering aircraft.

The first official reports of mutilated livestock came from Colorado in the early 1960s where, in two counties, there were combined reports of 169 mutilated cows. Since that time the mutilation of more than 70,000 head of cattle, horses and other domestic and wild animals has been reported across the U.S. as well as in Canada, England, Brazil and even Kenya. Yet there has not been a single arrest, nor a single perpetrator caught in the act. Certainly, if there had been 70,000 cars or televisions stolen there would have been arrests and people doing jail time.

One possible clue to cattle mutilation is that the removing of the cow's blood may be the prime focus of the operation, this because of the similarity of bovine and human blood. *Insight* magazine for September 18, 1989 announced that a supplement to human blood made from cow's blood was about to be clinically tested. The magazine related that scientists were working on a blood supplement called Hemopure I, and that it could be used in short term situations, such as emergency replacement of blood lost through car accidents and shootings. Cow hemoglobin, it was reported, is similar in its amino acid and oxygen content to human hemoglobin, contains 40 times more red blood cells than an equal amount of human blood, and can be stored indefinitely.

There are additional clues that are not often mentioned in the popular media. Many "mutes" have been found to have been marked with fluorescent paint, probably as an aid to identification in the dark. A large percentage of mutilated cattle have also been found to have been injected with strains of harmful Clostridium bacteria (of which blackleg and malignant adema are members of the genus). In an investigation of bacteriological warfare in 1970, Senator Frank Church's Senate Select Committee on Intelligence determined that the CIA had stockpiled canisters of this same bacteria.

One persistent rumor has been that cattle are used in biological testing due to the similarity of the membrane of the eye with that of a certain ethnic group. Researcher Ed Sanders interviewed G.C. Errianne, a former member of an unspecified intelligence agency, who admitted that secret bacterial research was being conducted in the United States and that these researches were targeted "in regard to Oriental warfare." Sanders also interviewed reporter Bill Hendrix of KTVX-TV in Salt Lake City, who confirmed that Dugway Proving Ground in Utah had done research on a specifically anti-Oriental biological weapon.

The anonymous COM-12 intelligence briefing provides another link between government testing and UFO disinformation. Citing the Wackenhut organization as being in charge of a number of covert operations around the world, the COM-12 document places the group under the umbrella of a secret government project termed "Yellow Lodge":

"The 'Yellow Lodge' project involves the infiltration and covert operations of advanced chemical, biological and, in some cases, weapons development. These activities, due to the sovereign status of Indian lands [where they are conducted], can be carried out by private and covert operations without answering to the legitimate arm of the U.S. government. This scenario is especially true of the Jicarilla Apache lands, as well as many other reservations in the American Southwest — the largest of these being the umbra-classification base known as D6 (Dulce) in the state of New Mexico."

It is interesting to note that the alleged underground base at Dulce figures as the most popular locale for government-alien collaboration in the writings of the extraterrestrial invasion school of UFO writing, as, for instance, in the probable hoax Dulce File.

There has been a good deal of speculation about the cattle mutilations being performed by Satanists or other occultists during ritual activity, but it is extremely odd that none of the perpetrators have been caught in the act, or arrested later. A possibility exists that these crimes are being committed by someone above the law. As to whether it is the government using unmarked helicopters, Satanists, or aliens in their UFOs, I think the first possibility most likely.

There have been other mutilations that the media are not telling you about. A media blackout has been enforced on the subject of traffic in human organs, sold almost entirely to the wealthy, and the farming of these organs in Central America.

In the article "Loathsome Sale of Human Flesh" in the virtually underground Athens, Georgia *Observer,* researcher Joe Ionno states:

"According to a Resolution of the European Parliament on the Trafficking of Central American Children, 'human farms' complete with 'fattening houses' have been discovered in Honduras and Guatamala.

"In San Pedro Sula, Honduras, it was reported that near one such farm, corpses of infants were discovered that 'had been stripped of a number of organs.'

"In Guatamala, at another 'human farm' babies ranging from 11 days old to four months old were discovered. They 'were sold to wealthy American or Israeli families whose children needed organ transplants at the cost of $75,000 per child,' according to the director of the farm who made this claim during his arrest.

"Though extremely reputable newspapers such as *Le Monde* (France), the *Guardian* (England) and the Honduran journal *El Tiempo* have carried stories of such atrocities, none, to my knowledge, have appeared in any major U.S. publications...

"The July 22, 1990 issue of *La Prensa Dominical* (Honduras)... reported that police in El Salvador had uncovered a smuggling ring headed by (what else?) a lawyer which was buying children for resale in the U.S., noting that 20,000 children disappear every year in Mexico.

"The report states, 'The most gory fact, however, is that many little ones are used for transplant or organs to children in the United States,' and further suggests that this may be the reason that the highest rate of kidnapping of children from infants to 18 year olds is in those regions of Mexico which border on the U.S.

"El Tiempo reports that an appeals court judge in Honduras ordered 'a meticulous investigation into the sale of Honduran children for the purpose of using their organs for transplant operations.'

"The Honduran Secretary of the National Council of Social Services (the agency in charge of adoptions) reported that children 'were being sold to the body traffic industry' for organ transplants.

Ionno quotes as sources *Le Monde,* September 21, 1988; the *Guardian Weekly,* October 2, 1990; *El Tiempo,* August 10, August 17 and September 21, 1988, and Noam Chomsky's book *Deterring Democracy.*

A question arises. When genes can be tinkered with and, as is the case now, copyrighted, when biological forms can be altered and meshed, dissected with ease and without the slightest compunction, where will the line be drawn between humans and veal cutlets? Will the "lower classes" then no longer be the "useless eaters," as they were termed by the Nazis and by former CIA director William Colby, but the "useful eaten"?

I am reminded of the classic Twilight Zone episode in which 'friendly' aliens come to Earth to invite humans to return with them to see their world. Human reporters acquire a book written by the aliens entitled *To Serve Man.* As the hero of the tale is stepping into the aliens' saucer his secretary rushes up with the news that they have translated the book — and that it is a gourmet cookbook.

I received an unexpected and startling reality check after writing the above in an unattributed magazine clipping reprinted in Michael A. Hoffman's *Secret Societies and Psychological Warfare.* Titled "Eating Raoul... and Others," the article wonders, "How would you like to bite into a part-human bacon cheeseburger?" asks Michael Colgan, Ph.D., in the journal *Nutrition and Fitness* (Vol. 10, No. 1 & 2). In five years they'll be at a burger stand near you, predicts the author. The U.S. Department of Agriculture's research center in Beltsville, Md., has been inserting human genes into fertilized swine eggs, and a herd of "hupigs" now resides at the center. One goal of such research is to manufacture "spare parts for humans," that is, genetically engineered organs to replace diseased human organs; another goal is to “design” animals for more efficient meat production.

“The USDA creatures reportedly suffer from coordination so poor that they can barely walk. They also are subject to arthritis and lung and gut diseases. State and federal laws severely restrict access by journalists and the public, and photographs of the ‘hunimals’ are forbidden.”

Pondering the possible motives of government and para-govemment genetic and cyborg projects, I can see that ultimately they may be intended to violate and destroy the last barrier to world totalitarian control: humanness itself.

Gone, long gone, is the consideration of human life as having an inherent personality and value. These “imaginative” scientists in the employ of super-capitalists seem to have lost sight of everything but the power inherent in their vision (“Power is the great aphrodisiac,” so sayeth Henry Kissinger). They may see life as raw material and the ultimate energy-utilization extension, as a remote control web for augmenting control intention. Life, intelligence, may be viewed by them as a malleable, virtually unlimited sub-control mechanism that can be linked, even atomically, with such technologies as molecular robotics and nanotech (ie. molecular manufacturing, controlling the structure of matter) to mold universe energies into instantaneously-crystallized realities, Xanadus for the gratification of these would-be immortals. Beyond mind control, this would be tantamount to “soul control.”

Is life viewed by these “scientists” and their bosses as slave-energy that can be shaped and replicated at will, formed into “bodies” and “body-corporations” of protoplasm, as submissive genii for manifesting the whims of the elite?

19

Other Alternatives

Alternatives 1 and 2, according to the book, were also considered as possible solutions for the deteriorating conditions on Earth. These consisted of, respectively, a plan to atomically blow holes in the atmosphere to release pollution into space, and a plan to create subterranean dwellings for the world's elite to escape to when things on the surface get too bad.

There was, in fact, a program of upper atmosphere detonation of nuclear weapons that took place in the fifties and sixties. According to *The Leading Edge* magazine, in the article "Project Argus and the Rainbow Bombs: United States Nuclear Detonations in Space":

"Around 1958, the significant implications of the Earth's magnetic fields and radiation belts for future military activities were what drew the attention of government physicists. Nicholas Christofilos, a physicist working at the University of California's Livermore Radiation laboratory, developed techniques to harness and control the energy released in hydrogen fusion reactions. Christofilos used magnetic confinement fields. When the Soviets launched Sputnik I, Christofilos decided that the Earth's magnetic field could be used to contain an artificial band of relativistic electrons. He speculated that this artificial radiation belt could be made intense enough to destroy satellites in orbit. The belt would produce worldwide radio noise on the HF and VHF radio bands that carried the bulk of military communications. By accurately calculating the site for an explosion of a nuclear device, its effects could be made to occur over a specific target area. Christofilos urged that the government test his postulates by exploding a nuclear device in space. Christofilos' superiors at Livermore placed his papers under top security control and advised the President's Science Advisory group of the matter. The resulting program became Project Argus."

Project Argus tests took place, the anonymous article states, in the South Atlantic, August 27, 1958, with a one kiloton bomb exploded at two hundred kilometer altitude; in the South Atlantic on August 30, 1958, a one kiloton bomb exploded at 250 kilometer altitude; and in the South Atlantic on September 6, 1958, a one kiloton bomb exploded at an altitude of 500 kilometers. Post Argus testing included a 1.4 megaton bomb launched from Johnston Island on July 9, 1962 and exploded at an altitude of 400 kilometers. Along with the American testing, there have been several Soviet nuclear explosions in space. All were launched from Siberia and included the October 22, 1962 launch of a 200 kiloton bomb; the October 28, 1962 launch of an 800 kiloton weapon; and the November 1, 1962 launch of a 1 plus megaton weapon.

The result of all this "testing" has been quite different from the proposed solution of Alternative 1, to wit: the tests created two intense belts of radiation around the Earth. These radiation belts have, at the very least, cost the space programs of all nations billions of dollars. The only effective radiation shielding from these radiation belts is lead, and as it is too heavy to be used, this has forced craft with cargos sensitive to radiation (like living things) to be launched in steeper and vastly more expensive trajectories than would have been needed in order to get through the Van Allen belts. The dubious scientific triumph of upper atmosphere testing was decried by some scientists at the time, but their protests have long since been forgotten.

In what may be only coincidence with the Alternative 2 proposals, as reported in "The Effects of Atomic Weapons" from the Los Alamos laboratory, as early as September, 1950 the Defense Department had its eyes on underground base construction, calling such construction "desirable," and reporting that "There are apparently no fundamental difficulties in constructing and operating underground various types of important facilities."

In the proceedings of the Second Protective Construction Symposium on Deep Underground Construction in 1959, sponsored by the U.S. Air Force and carried out by the Rand Corporation think tank (a CIA-funded group that have plunged their thumbs deep into many a secretive pie-graph), it was stated,

"We have just prepared cost estimates on using a continuous shaft-sinking device for a contractor bidding on an Air Force Titan installation in Colorado. This one machine would bore tunnels varying in diameter from 10 ft. to 45 ft. Just as airplanes, ships and automobiles have given man mastery of the surface of the Earth, tunnel-boring machines and shaft-sinkers will give him access to the subterranean world. It is our aim to provide machines which will supply the ever-increasing demand in mind and construction of underground facilities."

The RAND Corporation also investigated the use of atomic bombs to blast underground cavities for habitation.

Russell Miller, of the Colorado School of Mines, and director of the Center for Space Mining in Boulder, Colorado, has worked on studies for underground cities on the moon and Mars. One method which has been proposed by him for the building of underground extraterrestrial colonies would be to use missiles to drive holes fifty feet beneath the Lunar or Martian soil, and then to use atomic bombs to blast out huge cavities. Igloos would be constructed over the holes, and plastic bags would be inserted into the cavities and then inflated. Workers could then construct livable habitats underground.

In the late 1970s it was revealed that an underground city in Bluemont, Virginia, dubbed "Mount Weather," was operated by the previously discussed government agency FEMA and staffed with one thousand mostly civilian workers. Mount Weather is part of FEMA's COG (Continuity of Government) plans, providing for the escape of the President and four thousand other government officials in event of unstipulated catastrophe; nuclear, revolutionary, or otherwise. Built at a cost of over one billion dollars and costing $42 million per year to operate, Mount Weather is a city of offices which includes a dining hall, sleeping quarters, and situation rooms with electronic map displays for the proper *Dr. Strangelove* ambiance.

Another facility, the Alternate National Military Command, also known as Raven Rock or Site R, is located five miles north of Camp David, under 650 feet of granite. Known as the "Underground Pentagon," the 265,000 square foot bunker was built in 1949 on the orders of Harry Truman, and has a staff of 350.

Up to fifty other underground military installations are located in the United States, and are funded by huge "black budget" allocations. Tim Weiner, Pulitzer prize-winning author of *Blank Check,* has stated that more black budget money goes into these underground projects than into any other kind of project. This gives rise to the speculation that the "current crop of disinformation," as William Moore puts it, about government collaboration with evil aliens in underground bases, is very likely aimed to confuse the purposes of underground facilities in the public mind.

There is a possibility that some of these underground facilities are utilized for the purposes Louis Jolyon West suggested for a converted Nike base in California in the 1960s: populace control by the implantation of brain control devices. These electronic brain implants do exist (and have been shown in x-rays of both abductees and mental patients), and it may be significant that in alien abduction stories the devices are often said to be inserted in precisely the same way that psycho-surgeons implant them: nasally. Indeed, the activities of “aliens” described by “UFO abductees” are strikingly reminiscent of the programming operations that the CIA and other organizations have been shown to perform — at least sometimes without the benefit of flying saucers.

The bases may serve other purposes, including COG (as it is termed), and what is essentially an infrastructure for conducting secret military research projects. What is not often mentioned in discussions of the purposes of the underground bases is that one of the threats that they are meant to protect against is an uprising by the American people. From the safety of the underground installations the current American dictator can hole-up with his military and exterminate any possible threat from above ground.

I consider it highly unlikely that the underground bases have anything to do with outer space aliens (I don’t reject the possibility out of hand, it is just that I have seen no plausible evidence substantiating a government-alien collaboration, and much evidence to suggest that this story is cooked up by and serves the government by confusing the issue).

Researcher Michael Lindemann, in a lecture given in San Diego in 1991, talked about his beliefs about the underground bases:

“There is indeed another government operating, and that government... operates primarily behind the scenes. Other researchers have called it ‘The Secret Government’ and others have called it ‘The High Cabal,’ and it is a group of people, a very elite group of non-elected, self-appointed people who guide the evolution of policy from behind the scene. These are people who transcend partisan politics, indeed who transcend the rule of law, with no thought whatsoever for the dictates of the Constitution. These are people who regard themselves as the only true guardians and crafters of geopolitical reality, and they regard us, indeed they regard our elected officials, as mere mortals. These people are the self-appointed Olympians. They have done many things in the name of an agenda which is their own, which we would consider appalling and reprehensible. Indeed, these things are criminal, but they are more than criminal, because they have sapped and usurped the rights and privileges and possibilities for our future. These people are running a kind of ‘Endgame’ right now. They are trying to determine how they will survive the End Time. Whether that End Time comes as a kind of Biblical Apocalypse, or more likely comes as the catastrophic collapse of the environment, coupled with the catastrophic population bomb, and all the other things that may indeed ‘get our goat,’ whether it comes as the collapse of the banking system which looks to be only days away, or the collapse of the world economy, there are many things that could get us, and these people, in effect, are building their own version of Noah's ark. And that Noah's ark they are building is underground: underground bases, indeed all over the world, but particularly in the United States. Huge underground bases which actually festoon the underground geography of our continent in a way that would probably stun and shock you. ...These are places that are capable of supporting on an on-going basis some tens of thousands of people, so across the country it may be possible to save an elect remnant of some hundreds of thousands of people who will be the cream of the civilization that is meant to survive the Apocalypse, or the downfall, or... whatever it is that is out there getting us. Mere mortals will have to fend for themselves."

Better, the nation's clandestine agencies seem to think, that we should believe that Earth has been invaded by murderous grey aliens in disk craft than realize that preparations are being made for the total, rather than partial suspension of the Constitution and the inauguration of an American dictatorship, possibly in the configuration of the much-touted New World Order.

An instructive study funded by the Trilateral Commission (a highly influential global organization whose origin can be traced back to the Rockefellers and the Rhodes' Round Table) is titled *The Crisis of Democracy: Report on the Governability of Democracies to the Trilateral Commission.* The paper was authored by Samuel Huntington in 1975 and provides insight into attitudes of the international controllers and goals guiding the government.

The study diagnoses the problems of the world as stemming, since "the democratic surge of the 1960s," from too much "democracy," and that "arenas where democratic procedures are appropriate are limited." Prescribed for this malady is a strengthening of elitist control, including the lowering of expectations among the poor and middle class, and a marshalling of power in the executive branch of U.S. government.

"The trend of the last decade toward the steady diminution of the power of the President should be stopped and reversed," the study states. "The President clearly has the responsibility for insuring national action on critical matters of economic and foreign policy. He cannot discharge that responsibility if he is fettered by a chain of picayune legislative restrictions and prohibitions."

The study proposes further linkages of government and business in economic planning, the pacification of labor, and increased press "self-regulation," i.e. self-censorship ("But there is also the need to assure to the government the right and the ability to withhold information at the source.") Also mentioned in the study is the need for education to be geared to "the constructive discharge of the responsibilities of citizenship," and that "a program is necessary to lower the job expectations of those who receive a college education."

Lest you think I exaggerate... Huntington feels that many of the problems facing our society are due to too much participation by the populace, since a functional system requires "some measure of apathy and noninvolvement." He goes on to say, "Previously passive or unorganized groups in the population, blacks, Indians, Chicanos, white ethnic groups, students, and women now embarked on concerted efforts to establish their claims to opportunities, positions, rewards, and privileges, which they had not considered themselves entitled [sic] before... Some of the problems of governance in the United States today stem from an excess of democracy... Needed, instead, is a greater degree of moderation in democracy... For a quarter-century the United States was the hegemonic power in a system of world order. The manifestations of the *democratic distemper,* [emphasis added] however have already stimulated uncertainty among allies..."

Confirming dictatorial plans of our leaders, elected and otherwise, are other statements about the planned New World Order. The CFR's Zbigniew Brzezinski in his book *Between Two Ages: America's Role in the Technetronic Era* gave a particularly explicit rendering. Brzezinski, a major theorist in One World circles, postulates a multiple stage evolution in man's history, beginning with a poverty-ridden 'religious' existence evolving into nationalism. The next stage, according to Zbig, is Marxism, leading into a final 'Technetronic' era. In the Technetronic era "the nation state as a fundamental unit of man's organized life has ceased to be the principal creative force: International banks and multinational corporations are acting and planning in terms that are far in advance of the political concepts of the nation-state." Reassuring vision, what?

An article which contains a kind of "Alternative 4" is the Byzantine "Franciscan Document," sent anonymously to me in 1991, and published in my anthology *Secret and Suppressed.* It purports to be a synthesis of secret information discovered in the Vatican Library by an unnamed Franciscan monk, and the inked imprint of a Vatican library entry chit at the end of the document lends it a degree of credibility. The document goes into an extensive revisionist history of the Roman Catholic Church, the Western world, and the actions of secret elitist cliques in controlling and disposing of humanity in properly sinister ways. The section that may relate to Alternative 4 follows:

"Current policies of the elite regarding the general estate of the commoners, as I myself have seen and read, is telling. While a policy of division, factionalism and antagonism is the order of the day (particularly in the United States, where what must be the most diversified population on Earth is kept in a state of turmoil by divisive legislation intended to provoke interracial strife and social stratification), there are two primary schools of thought regarding the actual use to which the subjects are to be put. While there is general agreement across the board with the notion that the commoners must be downbred, in order to reduce their intelligence and make them less apt to rise up in rebellion, a large faction - who appear to be holding sway - counsel a massive slaughter of the majority of the 'useless eaters.' ...The plan appears to be to reduce the world population overall to more manageable numbers; these survivors may then be limited as to reproduction, numbers maintained at just the level necessary to insure a force of slaves. The reason behind this reduction is among the most frightening revelations I feel I shall make: according to the best estimates of clique-employed climatologists, the world - contrary to the current 'Greenhouse Effect' story - is drawing inexorably toward another glaciation. The 'Ice Ages' are always spoken of in the past tense, always treated as occurances in prehistory, never to be repeated; however, glaciation has been the norm for this world since roughly two million years ago; alternating cycles of glaciation and warm interstadial, following an approximate one-hundred-thousand year cycle (ninety thousand years of glaciation, followed by ten thousand of interstadial, plus or minus as much as two thousand years) are the normal climate of our Earth, since the end of the Pliocene era (or perhaps slightly earlier). When the icesheets once again advance, it is the plan of the elite to move the trappings of civilization south, a forced march of laden slaves to the southern hemisphere (the glaciers cover only the northern climes), and to this end, 'housecleaning' has already begun. AIDS ravages primarily (though not exclusively) third-world populations, hence the southern lands will be defenseless; massive tracts are already being cleared and prepared for construction in South America and North America - expected to be covered, by the middle of the twenty-second century, with a two-mile thick blanket of ice - is being treated as a garbage bin, industrial effluvia of the most noxious varieties being poured out all over the land; it will cease to be of use to the elite, ergo it must be rendered useless to anyone else. Even the most dangerous of the industrial wastes will break down and be reassimilated by the soil in ninety thousand years, hence when the ice clears, a trek back to the north will be possible, if desired. In the interim, the commoners are kept palliated, entertained, too busy to investigate the world around them - and reduced, by slow attrition of incurable disease, to a desired size."

It is true that, until the middle 70s, the popular and scientific press did not talk about global warming but instead about a looming Ice Age. During the International Geophysical Year of 1958-59 scientists took thousands of core samples of Antarctic and Greenland ice, and throughout the sixties paleoclimatologists attempted to construct a history of this planet's prehistoric weather. The scientists concluded that Ice Ages occurred with far greater frequency than had previously been thought, and that we are now well into a pre-glacial cooling trend. Current warmer weather was explained by positing cycles within cycles in weather patterns, and that while the overall trend was toward an inevitable Ice Age, with perhaps 2,000 to 6,000 years to reach full glaciation, there would be recurrent periods of brief warming.

The CIA got in on the action with the August 1974 report, "A Study of Climatological Research as it Pertains to Intelligence Problems," providing a survey of then-current research, all of it seeming to say that an Ice Age was in fact due. The document lists "significant" research projects (including one being conducted by the RAND Corporation), and concludes:

"Leaders in climatology and economics are in agreement that a climatic change is taking place and that it has already caused major economic problems throughout the world. As it becomes more apparent to the nations around the world that the current trend is indeed a long-term reality, new alignments will be made among nations to insure a secure supply of food resources. Assessing the impact of climatic change on major nations will, in the future, occupy a major portion of the Intelligence Community's assets." Really?

"It is increasingly evident," the study continues, "that the Intelligence Community must understand the magnitude of international threats which occurs as a function of climatic change. These methodologies are necessary to forewarn us of the economic and political collapse of nations caused by a worldwide failure in food production. In addition, methodologies are also necessary to project and assess a nation's propensity to initiate militarily large-scale migrations of their people as has been the case for the last 4,000 years."

Another CIA study released in the same year, "Potential Implications of Trends in World Population, Food Production and Climate," indicates that, "In the worst case if climate change caused grave shortages of food despite U.S. exports, the potential risks to the U.S. would also rise. There would be increasingly desperate attempts on the part of powerful but hungry nations to get grain any way they could. *Massive migrations, sometimes backed by force,* [emphasis added] would become a live issue and political and economic instability would be widespread. In the poor and powerless areas, population would have to drop to levels that could be supported. The population 'problem' would have solved itself in the most unpleasant fashion."

So how did the current Greenhouse scenarios evolve? Although the evidence that we are experiencing global warming is persuasive, there is a possibility that this might comprise a glitch within a longer overall tendency toward another Ice Age, in support of the "Franciscan Document" and the CIA studies. It is not impossible, even, that studies of glacial cooling have been suppressed since the 1980s, or even the mid-70s, when *Alternative 3* appeared. Why?

Humans have never been very good at taking action in advance of disaster, and 'closing the barn door after the horse escapes' fairly well summarizes the populace's handling of problems, or so it seems to me. If an impending Ice Age is thousands of years ahead of us, why bother doing anything now? On the other hand, if global warming and the Greenhouse Effect could kill us all in the next thirty years, it should be obvious that we had better do something, and pretty damned fast.

With global warming we have a clear warning that, given enough propagandizing, might even be heeded. It has been widely professed that it will take an international effort to alleviate the Greenhouse Effect, requiring that the peoples of Earth drastically alter their lifestyles toward austerity (as foreshadowed by the propaganda of the Carter administration), which in addition will require some sort of planetary governing organization and police force to ensure compliance to its edicts. Global warming, factual or not, is tailor-made to the creation of a One World Government, and it seems likely that if there was no Greenhouse Effect it would be in the One Worlders' best interests to create one.

20

Das Marsprojekt

One of the difficulties in researching *Alternative 3* was that the evidence kept leading me in a direction that I wasn't particularly happy to go in: toward the Nazis. Again and again the Nazi connections kept cropping up in association with *Alternative 3* themes, but it was a connection which for obvious reasons I was reluctant to make.

Frankly, the Nazis are 'old hat,' almost a joke amongst the politically correct of today. I was reluctant to raise the specter of latter-day Nazism for fear of a dismissal as off-handed as my own reactions to *Alternative 3* on first reading. And yet, in researching the shape of totalitarian control during this century I saw that the plans of the Nazis manifestly did not die with the German loss of World War II. The ideology and many of the principal players survived and flourished after the war, and have had a profound impact on postwar history, and on events taking place today.

A possibility, which I admit is wild speculation, yet at the same time comprises a startling alignment of facts, is that *Alternative 3* is an expression of Nazi occult doctrine and that there is a long term elitist program to abandon Earth and to implement another step in Hitler's "Final Solution."

Adolf Hitler's occult orientation apparently began when, at ten years of age, he attended the Lambach Abbey School in Lambach am Traum, Austria. The abbot of the school was steeped in metaphysical doctrine, including astrology and 13th century Catharism, which had much in common with the Templar-styled occultism that Hitler would later delve into. Upon return from his travels in the East where he had engaged in Sufi studies, the abbot directed that a swastika be engraved over the entrance to the abbey, in addition to having them engraved on all the religious icons of the school and in the four comers of the building. Obviously, there was something about the power of the swastika that impressed him.

It was at Lambach Abbey that Hitler met Benedictine monk Adolf Joseph Lanz, who was later to introduce him to Vienna's occultist-racialist orders. Lanz, after doffing his monk's habit, formed the Order of the New Temple in 1905, and was the publisher of the Order's *Ostara* magazine. *Ostara's* emblem was the swastika, and the organization promoted Aryan Templarism and a war with worldwide Jewry, who were seen to be the secret masters behind the manipulation of world political and financial systems. Qualifications for joining the New Templars included having blonde hair and blue eyes, slender hands and feet, and an elongated cranium. Lanz also proposed that there should be colonies of New Templars founded away from what he saw to be the negative influence of towns and cities, and he compiled a handbook for those wishing to be future colonists.

While Hitler maintained that his National Socialism began when he joined the German Workers' Party and found a young political group with whose principals he could identify, this explanation ignores the group's existence as a front for the occultist, espionage and assassination network of the Thule Society, of which Hitler held membership as a "Visiting Brother." Freemasonic-inspired and associated with the Vril Society, the origin of both groups can be traced through English occult Fascist influences to the writings of Edward Bulwer-Lytton, author of *Vril: The Power of the Coming Race,* the godfather of the British Round Table group.

Thule and Vril proposed the extermination of "inferior" races and the creation of an Aryan race of supermen, in what was essentially a radical eugenic outlook. Thule was led by Baron von Sebottendorf, an expert in Sufism and Eastern affairs, astrologer and occultist, and it was in this group that Hitler met Karl Haushofer, reportedly the author of the geopolitical section of *Mein Kampf,* the manuscript of which is said to have been passed by Rudolf Hess to Hitler while he was imprisoned in Landsberg Fortress after the Munich *putsch.* Haushofer was an expert in Oriental and Sufi mysticism and a leading member of Vril, in close contact with British Viceroy Lord Kitchener, the Isis-Urania Temple of Hermetic Students of the Golden Dawn, as well other English mystics and mystical groups. Haushofer believed in a philosophy of "blood and soil"; that a race's survival depends upon *lebensraum* (translation: living space, incidentally the title of the Johnny Dolphin poem referred to in the chapter on Biosphere II), and that a vital race, to remain so, must continually expand and conquer "inferior races." He is reported to have said to a group of students which included Rudolf Hess that, "Space is not only the vehicle of power; it is power."

Hitler seems to have seen himself as, among other things, a latter-day leader of the historic Teutonic Knights, whose history includes their origin as kindred to the mysterious Knights Templar. The Teutonic Knights clad themselves in the familiar white mantle of the Templars, which was emblazoned with a black, rather than a red Eastern cross, and were the historical possessors of the Ordenstaat or Ordensland principality, a territory extending from Prussia and including Finland and portions of Russia. Their legendry identifies them as the guardians of the Holy Grail, the magical cup reputed to have held Jesus' blood or, in an alternate version, an engraved tablet of stone which contained the secrets of ancient Aryan magic.

Hitler may have best explained his beliefs about the Grail when he stated: "We shall form an Order, the Brotherhood of the Templars, around this Holy Grail of the pure blood." Is it possible that Hitler saw through the metaphorical-initiatory nature of the Jesus Christ legend, and believed this cup of blood to be an ancient metaphor (and perhaps simultaneously an historic, even magical physical relic) symbolizing Aryan racial purity?

Another influence on the Hitlerian occult cosmology was *Wel* (for *Welteislehre,* "the doctrine of eternal ice"), first expressed in the book *Glazialkosmogonie* (1912) by Hans Hörbiger, a man whom Hitler met on several occasions and whom he is said to have equated in importance with Copernicus. It occurs to me that Wel may have been the inspiration for Immanuel Velikovsky's famous *Worlds in Collision,* although Velikovsky understandably didn't go out of his way to emphasize this connection.

Wel supposes that the nature of the universe is an eternal attraction-repulsion between cosmic ice and fire, and that this principle governs everything, including man's destiny. Star systems in the cosmos of *Wel* were caused by blocks of cosmic ice plunging into stars, creating vast explosions. Hörbiger believed the history of the Earth to be one of successive cataclysms and the resultant rise and fall of races of giants, demi-gods, and other mutations, a concept echoing Aryan mythology and Thule doctrine. He also maintained that the moon was the third satellite that the Earth had captured, 12,000 years in the past, and that one of the laws of eternal ice was that the planets are subject to a continual spiralling motion into the maw of the central Sun (a possible symbolism of the swastika?). Hörbiger predicted that another Earthly cataclysm was inevitable. He believed that as the moon approached the Earth it would explode due to gravitational forces, and that this would probably destroy all life on the planet.

In *Hitler Speaks,* Hitler is quoted as having said to Danzig Mayor Rauschning: "Just as, at the dawning of a new geological era, the whole world collapses in a gigantic crack, new mountains rise up while gaping abysses open up, and new plains and seas take shape, so will the present structure of Europe be capsized in an immense cataclysm... The only chance for Germany to resist this pressure will be to seize the initiative and take control of the inevitable upheaval from which will come a new dawning of history."

Since Hitler did believe Hörbiger's cosmological theories, then his Thule-inspired racialist philosophy might have compelled him to look far afield for a new Fatherland, away from the doomed Earth. He may also have seen the non-Aryan "sub-human" races as the labor necessary to achieve this cosmic destiny, minions of army ants laboring in underground factories in the construction of the ultimate V-2.

Hitler revealed his greater ambitions when he said, "I had to encourage 'national' feelings for reasons of expediency; but I was already aware that the 'nation' idea could only have a temporary value. The day will come when even here in Germany what is known as 'nationalism' will practically have ceased to exist. What will take its place in the world will be a universal society of masters and overlords." In retrospect, this is a particularly modern vision.

Again in *Hitler Speaks,* Hitler is quoted as having said that humanity was evolving into two types, a new age man and a class of undermen. "I might call the two varieties the god-man and the mass animal... Man is becoming God — that is the simple fact. Man is God in the making."

Hitler, interestingly enough, had his own "alternatives," numbering four, which are outlined in *Mein Kampf* (the title a kind of pun, mirroring the Darwinian emphasis on evolutionary "struggle"). Like *Alternative 3,* Hitler foresaw a coming world of scarcity, and emphasized that there were limits to the "carrying capacity" of German resources. He proposed four possible solutions.

The first would be birth control for the Germans, to achieve population growth limits that could be sustained.

The second solution would be the use of modern technologies to increase resource yield in the Fatherland. Hitler pointed to the underlying problems with both of these options, arguing that a people whose numbers remained the same while living in an inevitably shrinking environment or natural resource base would eventually have to deal with "culturally inferior but more brutal and more natural peoples."

Hitler's third option was German interdependence with other nations. This he rejected because of the need to entrust the survival of the Aryan race to the whims of other nation states and their puppet masters.

The fourth option was war. Hitler summed up this option by saying, "We must, therefore, cooly and objectively adopt the standpoint that it is certainly not the intention of Heaven to give one people fifty times as much land and soil in this world as another... we must not let political boundaries obscure the boundaries of eternal justice... The law of self-preservation goes into effect."

In summation Hitler said that, "The folkish philosophy finds the importance of mankind in its basic racial elements. In the state it sees on principle only a means to an end and it construes its end as the preservation of the racial existence of man... And so the folkish philosophy of life corresponds to the innermost will of nature, since it restores the free play of forces which must lead to a continuous mutual higher breeding, until at last the best of humanity, having achieved possession of this Earth, will have a free path for activity *in domains which will lie partly above it and partly outside it."* [emphasis added]

Relating to what may have been Hitler's cosmic ambitions, American educator John Taylor Gatto has commented upon the unexamined agenda of a West based upon what he sees as a European hereditary elite of primarily Aryan descent. Gatto states in "The Dying American Family and the Viking Mind" that, "Institutions would be created — adoption — compulsion-schools — vast hierarchical corporations — gigantic standing armies and navies — a government comprising 10% of the total population! — these and more would turn American social life into a scientific hive, a place where everybody's values, clothing, eating habits would be reflections of the clean mechanical style of a Viking elite... Upon the success of this plan depended salvation of the Homeland far from home..."

In an observation in which Gatto links the motives of warlike ancient Vikings with their longships to generations of transplanted sons and daughters in America, he comments:

"Is it so surprising that a cult of ships arose? Whatever pushed those beautiful craft night after night through mountainous seas to bloody wealth and fame became ideas and behaviors to revere. A man surviving and prospering by following the code of the longship would want his own sons to learn that code; others would speak of it in awe. When longships sailed no more the code was still taught: strength, youth, self-reliance, courage, exhilaration in the face of danger, contempt for weakness, keen watchfulness, mercilessness toward enemies, joy in treasure, *boredom with old planets, an appetite for new ones."* [emphasis added]

Summing up ideas that seem to add up to a Junker *Alternative 3,* we are familiar with the advanced disk aircraft designs perfected by the Nazis during World War II, and also know that the American space program was run by prominent Nazis, or at least ex-Nazis. Nazi interests have also been entwined, since the emergence of the philosophy, with other totalitarian control mechanisms of the world, with the intelligence, police, and psychiatric establishments, with eugenics and genetic research, as well as with the plans of monied elites whose philosophies might better be defined in para-political, rather than political terms.

My belief is that the Nazis have been major, but far from the only players in the game of world domination since the end of World War II: one among many heads of the Hydra. Influential Nazis (possibly including Hitler) have been behind the scenes since the end of the war, creating and implementing schemes for the ultimate triumph of *Die Neuordnung.* Almost all of Hitler's cohorts survived Nuremberg and many have been involved in manipulations including international terrorism and the establishment of worldwide drug and arms markets, as well as in collaboration with other more "respectable" networks of world influence.

While I cannot state with certainty that Nazis are creating the "real" domination of *Alternative 3,* that they have constructed or are constructing bases on Mars or the moon to carry the ancient Grail of Aryan racial purity away from what they conceive as a cataclysm-doomed Earth, I do have to wonder at the logic and symmetry of detail.

21

Control

What is ultimately important about *Alternative 3* is not that it sets much of its grim script on the moon or Mars, or beneath "ice of Arctic" as Leslie Watkins says; those are merely locales that humans currently inhabit or will probably soon be erecting Golden Arches in. What is important is the explicit pointing to government and ruling class atrocity and human subjugation, and the warning it contains. *Alternative* 3 is a scenario of the victimization of humankind — which I presume includes you — by power hungry men who have abandoned any consideration of morality or what is "right" and have replaced it with a mad "scientific" or philosophic lust for power. If you haven't gotten the idea that this world is run by a criminal elite lacking the slightest concern for the welfare of mankind, then you haven't been paying attention.

Alternative 3 points to, if in a clumsy and unbelievable fashion, the deadly alignment of technology and elitist control, and by exposing and calling attention to this collaboration, even in unintentional fashion as Watkins maintains happened, it is right on the mark.

I do not know whether all of the specific plans, the contingencies for 'batch consignments,' slave de-sexing, and interplanetary work camps exist in some policy letter, in the drawer of some Louis Quatorze desk in Geneva, or among some group of intelligence drones or clench of ruling elite. *Alternative 3* may not even be "true" at all, in the sense of the revealed scripture of some dark cabal, but only as a persuasive metaphor for totalitarian control in the manner of Orwell's *1984*.

I do know that, given the accelerating progression into dehumanizing and enslaving scientific technology and application that we have seen over the last one hundred years, given the move for greater police control and the speedy erosion of our Constitutional, even human rights by governments elected and un-elected, that *Alternative 3,* in its worst and most gruesome vision, is absolutely inevitable.

I have sifted clues in order to determine who the ultimate world conspirators are, and I believe that I have reached a workable plateau of understanding. While I am not saying that there might not exist one unifying control structure overseeing secret societies and visible nation-states, that there might not be a unifying capstone to the "pyramid" whose members are pulling strings (and garottes) from behind the scenes, it is not necessary to know the absolute identity of control in order to see how it works and to recognize many of the leading players.

The summit of the pyramid consists of relatively tiny groups of aristocratic controlling families, exemplified by the powerful European and American nodes of influence, the Rothschilds and the Rockefellers. Many more of the most powerful "aristocratic" and "royal" families cluster around these controllers, their members and influence richly deserving continued in-depth investigation. These families control and work in conjunction with secret societies such as the Knights of Malta, Freemasonry, the Round Table, the Council on Foreign Relations, the Trilateral Commission, the Bilderbergers, Skull and Bones and, judging from the prevalence of New World Order themes in political manipulation, perhaps even the Illuminati. Everything goes in shades, and some of the luminaries of these societies have more knowledge and power than others. Other controlling agencies include world intelligence organizations such as the CIA, KGB, and British Intelligence, as well as international drug and terrorist networks such as the Mafia and the extremely influential Nazi International, now under a new generation of leadership that eschews swastika armbands. The controllers, in their great wisdom, have displayed absolutely no qualms in employing paid murderers, even genocide, to further their aims and to maintain the structure of the pyramid.

Beneath the cloak of the prime conspirators are larger groups of rich peasantry and landlords dominating a huge mass of poor serfs and less-than-serfs whose labor and lives are sucked to provide the lifeblood to nourish the upper portions of the pyramid. This ancient structure is perfectly visible to anyone with the eyes to be appalled. It is also obvious that the ruling class cabals and spy organizations which we do know about are pointed in roughly the same direction: the total control and "utilization" of the mass of mankind by whatever means it takes.

Control is the shared goal of these numerous conspiring individuals, groups, and governments, and in that sense they work together, collaborating here, working individually there, creating an evolving noose of murderous technological expertise that swiftly tightens around humanity's throat. With this goal in place, with money and the tools of advanced technology in hand, the overall program of accomplishment crystallizes. It is sobering to note that with the advent of such technical innovations as DNA programming, mind control, robotics, and computer-biological interfacing, the statistically huge mass of "worker bees" are not only in danger, but also may be on the verge of becoming obsolete.

Researcher Hawthorne Abendsen has stimulated my thinking by suggesting that historical control may include a classified science of economic prediction that has been in operation for centuries. Prediction has long been the vocation of occultists and court astrologers who, far more likely than being engaged in creating individual sun sign charts, as Abendsen quips, were probably involved in the observance and anticipation of cyclic behavior in areas such as the weather, plagues and famines, war and market activity. I'm also reminded that as far back as the 1600s the Freemasons were reputed to possess "second sight," or the powers of ESP.

What we may be dealing with (at the level of the postulated masters of our masters) is an ancient system of hereditary wealth used in the financing of long term empirical observation, and the use of this wealth in accord with cyclic and social indicators, in promotion of the wars, the usurious credit systems, the technologies, and the pop-cultures, all ultimately engaged in the concentration of wealth into fewer and fewer hands.

In clear reflection of *Alternative 3,* this level of predictive technology might foresee environmental catastrophes far in advance of any science that we are familiar with, and have been preparing for such eventualities for far longer, even for centuries. The individuals utilizing this predictive technology may be promoting processes not unlike those described in *Alternative 3,* rendering humanity more and more tractable, more and more cattle-like, orchestrating the impersonal and harmonious dance of the hive in anticipation of their final flight from the planet.

It is possible that all of the generally accepted and cherished beliefs of mankind, the culture icons, the history, morals, religions, philosophies and even concepts are the carefully rehearsed theater of a cold-blooded ruling elite; illusory stage props in continual motion, and the means to parasitic ends. Trapping mankind in a haze of linguistic illusions and colored lights, in the Hollywood-like baffles of art, culture, patriotism, "lone nut" assassination, cataclysm and other spectacular gimmickry, these may be the means by which mankind's energies are manipulated and drained. Pondering the activities of mankind, including such relatively recent developments as mind control, fortified underground bases, genetic programming, and the invention of the means for space migration, I am chillingly reminded of the hive-programming of insects where masses of expendable and ignorant slave ‘cells’ are used for the pleasure and purposes of bloated kings, queens and their court.

Following a clue provided by Michael Hoffman II, I now see that any number of “insect” metaphors reside in the lore of governments and secret societies, with an emphasis on bees, according to Ordo Templi Orientis head Kenneth Grant a symbolic representation of a group mind proceeding from the “Queen” goddess Isis, beloved of the Freemasons and many another a mystical sect. Recalling the name of Illuminist Adam Weishaupt’s secret society, the *Beenan Orden* (Order of the Bees), recalling the beehive emblem of the Freemasons and the Masonic offshoot Mormon Church’s hive symbolism, I have to think that this must be a clue to the philosophy of these mystic Machiavellians.

A native/German sect in Colombia uses a swastika as icon and calls their compound “*Hormiga*,” in honor of the ant, while the Sarmoung sect of the Sufis, reputed to have an unbroken lineage stretching back 2,000 years, call themselves “the Brotherhood of the Bee.” This sect, interestingly enough, avows that their purpose is to halt the evolution of mankind, reserving the emergence of higher spiritual faculties and powers for an elect few.

Ernst Haeckel, Hitler’s mentor in social Darwinism, thought that each cell of a living creature, “though autonomous, is subordinated to the body as a whole; in the same way in the societies of bees, ants, and termites, in the vertebrate herds, and in the human state, each individual is subordinate to the social body of which he is a member.”

British author (and friend of Aldous Huxley) Gerald Heard in *Is Another World Watching?,* written in 1950, postulated at great length his “bee” theory of UFOs, suggesting these objects may represent the outward manifestation of an impersonal insectoid order run by a greater Overmind. And might there be humans who believe they represent this Overmind? Perhaps Heard is offering a clue when he muses about the Sphex wasp, “true mason wasp that it is.”

Nesta Webster in *Secret Societies and Subversive Movements* wondered in 1924: “Has not the system of the ant-heap or the beehive proved... the model on which these modern Anarchists, from Proudhon onwards, have formed their schemes for the reorganization of human life? Has not the idea of the World State and The Universal Republic become the war-cry of the International Socialists, the Grand Orient Masons, Theosophists, and the world-revolutionaries of our own day?”

While I frankly don’t believe that anarchists are the ones we need to fear, I take Webster’s point and note that she is pointing to the forces that crystallized into the Round Table/Wall Street axis and the Nazis, among other groups. In short, the hive is the essence of the New World Order.

The insect metaphor resident in mystical literature is reminiscent of the basic elitist, anti-human theme of aristocratic "bluebloods" sustaining the hive through reproductive processes and blood lineage. It is even possible that the basic programming that controls mankind, both king and commoner, might be an instinctual ordering, an initiative encoded in DNA that captures us in designated castes, rather than plans written in some secret scroll and hidden in some secret vault.

And there may be a final secret to *Alternative 3.*

Scientists are currently engaged in research which may provide a powerful impetus for the elite of the world to plan ahead for off-world migration; that is the cracking of the code of aging. Michael West of the University of Texas Southwestern Medical Center in Dallas is only one among many researchers seeking answers to the reasons for aging. West, however, claims to have found those answers.

"We believe that cellular aging is the underlying mechanism of aging in the whole body," West says. "We have identified some of the genes activated during cellular aging, and we know the master switches that turn these genes on and off. We're making old cells young again in the laboratory. We're also able to change cells from a senescent state, in which they are no longer dividing, into an immortal one, in which they divide forever. And then we can reverse the process again, turning the dividing cells 'off.'"

West estimates that rejuvenation drugs based upon his research will be marketed in five to seven years, although he specifically disclaims that they will be "immortality drugs."

Is this the final vision of *Alternative* 5? Are we poised at the edge of the final sundering that Hitler envisioned, where immortal controllers assume complete control over the "bees of the hive"? Is that the ultimate rationale for the *Alternative 3* plan or a surrogate of it, that for the game to continue, everyone can't be a god?

It seems to me that, in order for complete control of mankind to be obtained by an elite or elites, be it military, political, philosophical, financial, or bloodline-based, then roughly the same reality-programs must be instituted.

It is necessary that any program of world domination to achieve total control must include broad psychological mastery over populations through propaganda, drugs, television, religion, or other mind control means. Physical control (consisting of hives, concentration camps, or contingency programs for same) must also be in place so that mass labor may be utilized in an economical fashion.

The control group should also have military strike capabilities for both offense and defense, preferably also possessing secret technology in advance of that of rival control factors.

Finally, plans for the preservation of the elite in the event of war, social upheaval, sudden recognition by the masses, or other catastrophe should be in place.

This broad outline of controls is a repetition, in almost all specifics, of the details of *Alternative 3.* It may also be an accurate reflection of the schemes of the shadow masters, judging historical events and ominous current indicators.

Ultimately the details hardly matter, because of the single conclusion which must be drawn. To the men who control this world (and their well-paid and smiling front men), we are all ultimately part of a 'batch consignment,' nothing more. And unless society is transformed from the inhuman control state we live in, unless the history of world domination is exposed and strategies for its elimination implemented, then the human race is doomed to live out this real world of *Alternative 3.*

Selected Bibliography

Allen, Gary. *None Dare Call It Conspiracy.* Concord Press, 1972

_____ . *The Rockefeller File.* '76 Press, 1976

Anonymous. *Report From Iron Mountain on the Possibility and Desirability of Peace.*. Dial Press, 1967

Baigent, Leigh and Lincoln. *Holy Blood, Holy Grail.* Dell Publishing Company, 1982

Baigent, Michael and Richard Leigh. *The Temple and the Lodge.* Arcade Publishing, 1989

Bamford, James. *The Puzzle Palace, A Report on America's Most Secret Agency.* Houghton Mifflin, 1982

Bower, Tom. *The Paperclip Conspiracy.* Little, Brown and Co., 1987

Brussel, Mae. *The Mae Brussell Reader.* Prevailing Winds, 1991

Garrison, Jim. *On the Trail of the Assassins.* Sheridan Square Press, 1988

Good, Timothy. *Above Top Secret: The Worldwide UFO Cover Up.* William Morrow & Company, 1988

Howard, Michael. *The Occult Conspiracy.* Destiny Books, 1989

Hunt, Linda. *Secret Agenda.* St. Martin's Press, 1991

Impact Team, The. *The Weather Conspiracy: The Coming of the New Ice Age.* Heron House Publishing International Ltd., 1977

Judge, John. *Judge For Yourself.* Prevailing Winds, 1991

Kasun, Jacqueline. *The War Against Population.* Ignatius Press, 1988

Kaysing, Bill. *We Never Went to the Moon.* Desert Publications, 1981

Kevles, Daniel J. *In the Name of Eugenics.* Alfred A. Knopf, 1985

Leary, Timothy. *Flashbacks.* J.P. Tarcher, Inc., 1983

McCoy, Alfred W. *The Politics of Heroin: CIA Complicity in the Global Drug Trade.* Harper & Row, 1991

Oppenheimer and Boyle. *Dead Heat, The Race Against the Greenhouse Effect.* Basic Books, Inc. 1990

Parfrey, Adam, ed. *Apocalypse Culture.* Feral House, 1991

Perloff, James. *The Shadows of Power: The Council on Foreign Relations and the American Decline.* Western Islands, 1988

Pool, James & Suzanne. *Who Financed Hitler, The Secret Funding of Hitler's Rise to Power 1919-1933.* Dial Press, 1978

Rifkin, Jeremy. *Biosphere Politics.* Crown Publishers, 1991

Sklar, Holly, ed. *Trilateralism.* South End Press, 1980

Skousen, W. Cleon. *The Naked Capitalist,* self published, 1970

Steckling, Fred. *We Discovered Alien Bases on the Moon.* GAF International Publishers, 1981

Stevenson, William. *The Bormann Brotherhood.* Harcouit, Brace, Jovanovich Inc., 1973

Sutton and Wood. *Trilaterals Over Washington.* The August Corporation, 1978

Sutton, Anthony. *Two Faces of George Bush.* Veritas Publishing Company Pty. Ltd., 1988

Tetens, T.H. *The New Germany and the Old Nazis.* Random House, 1961

Thomas, Gordon. *Journey into Madness, The True Story of Secret CIA Mind Control and Medical Abuse.* Bantam Books, 1989

Vankin, Jonathan. *Conspiracies, Cover-ups and Crimes.* Paragon House, 1992

Watkins, Leslie and David Ambrose. *Alternative 003* (in later editions *Alternative 3).* Sphere Books Ltd., 1978

Webster, Nesta. *Secret Societies and Subversive Movements.* Christian Book Club of America (first published in 1924)

Casebook on Alternative 3

UFOs, Secret Societies and World Control

Jim Keith

In 1975, the normally conservative television program *Science Report* broadcast the most shocking investigative story ever shown on British television: an international conspiracy of monumental proportions with the code name *Alternative 3*.

AMONG THE STARTLING ALLEGATIONS OF *ALTERNATIVE 3:*

- The rich elite of the world have initiated a secret program of space migration to escape the environmental pollution and overpopulation destroying the earth.
- A secret joint USA-Russian space program has established bases on the moon and Mars.
- UFOs are actually secret government aircraft with capabilities far beyond what we are being told.
- Top space scientists from around the world are being abducted to provide personnel for the space bases.
- Citizens are being kidnapped and subjected to mind control to serve as slave labor at the secret space colonies.

Since its initial airing, the startling claims of *Alternative 3* have been debated and decried as a hoax, while others claim that there is truth to this terrifying plan of our secret rulers!

Drawing on his diverse research and a wide variety of sources, Jim Keith, editor of *The Gemstone File* (IllumiNet Press, 1992) and *Secret And Suppressed* (Feral House, 1993) delves into the bizarre story behind *Alternative 3*.

IllumiNet Press
P.O. Box 2808
Lilburn, Georgia 30226

ISBN 0-9626534-9-7
51295
9 780962 653490

$12.95

CATACLYSM!

Compelling Evidence of a Cosmic Catastrophe in 9500 B.C.

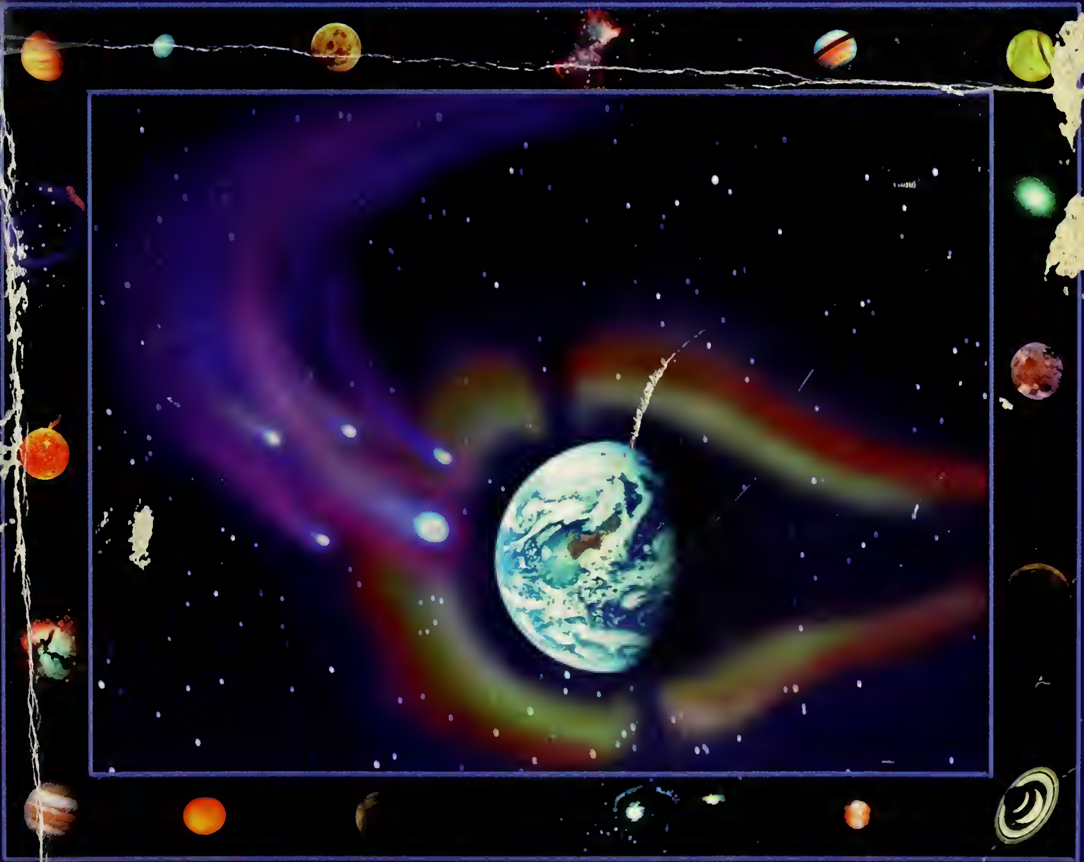

Introduced by Rand Flem-Ath, Co-author of *When the Sky Fell*

D.S. Allan & J.B. Delair

BOSTON PUBLIC LIBRARY
Copley Square

CATACLYSM!

Compelling Evidence of a Cosmic Catastrophe in 9500 B.C.

D. S. ALLAN & J.B. DELAIR

BEAR & COMPANY
Santa Fe, New Mexico

QE506
.A45
1997

Published 1997 in the United States & Canada by
BEAR & COMPANY,
PO Box 2860,
Santa Fe, N.M. 87504.2860

© 1995 & 1997 by D. S. Allan & J. B. Delair

First published in 1995
as When the Earth Nearly Died
by GATEWAY BOOKS,
of Bath, UK

All rights reserved. No part of this book
may be reproduced or transmitted in any form
or by any means, electronic or mechanical,
including photocopying or any information
retrieval system, without permission in
writing from the Publishers.

Printed and bound by BookCrafters of Chelsea, Michigan.

Set in Palatino 9 on 11pt.

Library of Congress Cataloging-in-Publication Data

Allan, D. S. 1917–
Cataclysm: compelling evidence of a cosmic catastrophe in 9500 B. C./D. S. Allan and J. B. Delair
p. cm.
Originally published: When the earth nearly died. Bath. England: Gateway Books, © 1995.
Including bibliographical references and index.
ISBN 1-879181-42-8 (pbk.)
1. Catastrophes (Geology) 2. Deluge. 3. Glacial climates. I. Delair, J. B., 1932- . II. Allan, D. S., 1917– When the earth nearly died. III. Title.
QE506.A45 1997
930– – DC1 97-20219
CIP

CONTENTS

List of Illustrations v
Acknowledgements vii
Foreword viii
Introduction x

Part One:
A LOST BEGINNING

1. The age of the Earth 3
2. Debris of a Broken World 5
3. Enigmas in Stone 9
4. World Ages – World Suns 12
5. A Displaced Axis? 14
6. The Paradox 17
7. Perspectives – a Question of Scale 18
8. The Birth of the Glacial Theory 21
9. Upheaval 25
10. Collapse 31
11. Shatter 35
12. An Icy Chimera 38
13. Inescapable Evidence 44
14. Turmoil Unleashed 56
15. Evidence from the Arctic 60
16. An Interim Summary 65

Part Two:
PREMATURE EXTINCTION

1. The Testimony of Biology 83
2. A Lost Euro-American Flora 84
3. The Saga in the Atlantic 87
4. A Sunken Southern Continent? 89
5. The Buried Forests of North America 91
6. Dislocated Faunas: the Atlantic Basin 95
7. Dislocated Faunas: Eurasia, Oceania and the Southern Hemisphere 99
8. A Vanished Prehistoric Ocean 103
9. Mediterranean Graveyards 105
10. Subterranean Charnelhouses 111
11. Illusory Faunas 119
12. Abnormal Burials 121
13. Incompatible Bedfellows 130
14. A Revised Geological Chronology? 135

Part Three:
THE ENDURING MEMORY

1. Traditions and Legends 149
2. Conflagration 151
3. Flood 152
4. Celestial Disorder 153
5. Terrestrial Chaos 155
6. Darkness 159
7. Hail and fire 160
8. Ice-bound 160
9. The traditions assessed 161

Part Four
COSMIC CONFLICT

1. An 11,500 years old Trail 169
2. An Unknown Assailant 174
3. Earth Structure 175
4. Geomagnetism 180
5. Reversed Polarity 182
6. The Thermal Factor 185
7. Instability 189
8. Pole Shift 191
9. Crustal slippage 193
10. The Solar System 195
11. The Mavericks 198
12. Signposts to a Cosmic Battle 204
13. The Candidates 207
14. Phaeton – an Exception to the Rule 211
15. The Mesopotamian Connection 214
16. War in Heaven 218
17. Phaeton's Wrath 225
18 Phaeton's significance 231

Part Five
ANATOMY OF A DISASTER

1. The Antediluvian World 241
2. Confrontation 250
3. Collapsed Sky 256
4. Earth Fracture 262
5. Fire-storm 269
6. Hurricane 276
7. Bombardment 281
8. Hell on Earth 289

9. Iron bound 294
10. The Rains of Death 297
11. The 'Water Mountain' 301
12. The Torrent from Heaven 303
13. Deluge 304
14. Scour 308
15. The 'Wood Hills' of the North 309
16. Refrigeration 313

Part Six
PHAETON'S LEGACY

1. Aftermath 327
2. The Survivors 328
3. An Uncertain Future 330
4. The Stone Age arrives 333
5. A New Beginning 339

Appendix A: Refrigerated Mammoths 343
Appendix B: Dating of finds from the catastrophe period 345
Appendix C: Remnants of the Celestial Battle? 349
Appendix D: Phaeton's Source? 356
Appendix E: The Seven Suns 357
Appendix F: Notes 359
Appendix G: List of Bibliographic contractions 362

Index 364

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

Part One

MAPS

1A The Arctic Today 2
1B The Landmasses of Appalachia, Beringia and Fennoscandia 33
1C World fracture complex 36
1D The British Isles showing supposed maximum ice limits 41
1E Alleged maximum Pleistocene ice Northern Hemisphere 43

TABLES

1A Geological eras, periods and epochs 10
1B Conventional Euro-American Quaternary subdivisions 54
1C Major global Pleistocene geophysical changes 69–71

FIGURES

1.1 Precession of the Polar Axis 16
1.2a The Hairy Mammoth 21
1.2b The Woolly Rhinoceros 21
1.3 Hairy Mammoths 22
1.4 Youthful mountains in southern Chile 29
1.5 Fault grooves in the Peruvian Andes 30
1.6 Striated rock at Appley Bridge nr Wigan 46
1.7 Sand-blasted rock at Mont Pelée 47
1.8 Nuée ardente striations at Mont Pelée 47
1.9 Wind striations, Wyoming 48
1.10 Alleged glacial rock grooves at Val Camonica 48
1.11 Giant boulder transported 3 miles 49
1.12 Madison Boulder giant erratic at Conway, NH 50
1.13 Two erratic boulders on beach at Greyabbey, Co Down 51
1.14 Erratic boulder near Nairn, Scottish Highlands 52
1.15 Exposure of 'Alaskan Muck' 57

Part Two

MAPS

2A Reconstruction of pre-catastrophic 'Pleistocene' world 82

TABLES

2A Distribution of geographically isolated plants 88
2B Animals found in cave deposits, Devon 112
2C Revised 'Phaeton' chronology for Tertiary and Quaternary 136

FIGURES

2.1 Buried log in soil section, Shelby County, Ohio 92
2.2 Carcharodon shark jaws 108
2.3 Bone breccia from Genitsa Cave, Gibraltar 110
2.4 Section of cave at Gailenreuth, Franconia 117
2.5 Prominent 'late Pleistocene' animals of N. America 117
2.6 The American mastodon 122
2.7 Frozen mammoth of Berezkova 126
2.8 Trunk head & forelimbs of baby woolly mammoth 128
2.9 Part of mammoth tusk 129
2.10 Accumulation of bones at Rancho La Brea tar pits 131
2.11 The Calaveras skull 132
2.12 Deinotherium 134

Part Three

TABLES

3A Traditions of the Deluge and the Great Catastrophe 150
3B Traditions specifying particular catastrophic effects 162–164

Part Four

TABLES

4A Statistics of the Planets 197
4B Identification of objects on Babylonian cylinder seal 219

FIGURES

4.1 Schematic diagram of the solar system 176

4.2 Earth's inclination to the Sun 177
4.3 Tilt of the polar axis 177
4.4 Space charge sheet and magnetosphere of the Earth 181
4.5 Folding and overthrusting in Peruvian mountains 188
4.6 Eccentricities of orbits of inner planets 196
4.7 Eccentricities of orbits of outer planets 196
4.8 Diagram of typical path of comet round the Sun 199
4.9 Comet Morehouse 202
4.10a, b & c Cup-and-ring marks at Ardmarnoch, Scotland 213
4.11a & b Akkadian cylinder seal 216
4.12 Identification of objects on Babylonian cylinder seal 220
4.13 Path apparently taken by Phaeton through solar system 228

Part Five

MAPS

5A Zeno map of the North 243
5B Extent of ash fallout from Mt St Helens eruption 259
5C Areas of abundant meteorites and 'bays' in Eastern USA 283
5D Oriented lakes near Pt Barrow, Alaska 286
5E Possible flight paths of aerial object creating 'bays' 288
5F Ocean floor areas of ferromagnesium nodules 300

TABLES

5A Volcanic activity usually regarded as 'Pleistocene' 261
5B Comparison of Alaskan lakes, Carolina bays & Beni Basin 287
5C Phaeton's record: geological, astrophysical, traditional 316

FIGURES

5.1 Zeno map plotted on reconstructed polar projection 245
5.2a, b, c, d & e Comparison of maps of Greenland 246
5.3a, b, c, d, e & f Phaeton's path close to the Earth 251
5.4 The head of a comet, August 1862 252
5.5a, b, c & d Conjectural interpretation of Tistya's shapes 253
5.6 Buildings partially buried by volcanic ash 1914 260
5.7 The San Andreas fault in California 266
5.8 The Lake Mobutu Sese Seko fault in Uganda 266
5.9 Major tectonic plates of the Earth 267
5.10 A fire fountain 271
5.11 St Pierre, Martinique after a fire hurricane, 1902 273
5.12 Alleged moraine at Bear-den, Maine 274
5.13 Large coral rock blown over a cliff by a hurricane 278
5.14 Aerial view of oriented lakes nr Pt Barrow, Alaska 284

Part Six

FIGURES

6.1 Mortar and pestle found in gravels in California 335
6.2 Prehistoric inscribed bowl, California 336
6.3 Prehistoric iron chain 336
6.4 Copper coin, found buried 114ft underground, Illinois 337

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

The authors wish to record their sincere appreciation for the assistance, recommendations and guidance received from the undermentioned institutions, libraries and individuals during the researching and writing of this book. Without the thoughtful cooperation of these, many noteworthy facts and aspects would either have escaped attention or have been accorded erroneous significance. For these and numerous other kindnesses the authors are truly grateful.

INSTITUTIONS

Geological Society of America, Boulder, Colorado, USA.
Institute of Geological Sciences, London.
NASA, California Institute of Technology, USA.
National Geographic Society, Washington DC, USA.
Royal Observatory, Edinburgh.
Salisbury and South Wilts Museum.
Scott Polar Institute, University of Cambridge.
Western Speleological Survey, Seattle, Washington, USA.
University of Southampton (Geology Dept).

LIBRARIES

Ashmolean Library, University of Oxford.
Balfour Library, Pitt Rivers Museum, University of Oxford.
Birmingham City Library.
Bodleian Library, University of Oxford.
Bodleian Library Maps Dept, University of Oxford.
British Museum, London.
British Museum, Natural History (General), London.
British Museum, Natural History (Palaeontology), London.
Dept of Astrophysics, University of Oxford.
Geological Survey Museum, London.
Institute of Geological Sciences, London.
Library of Congress, Washington DC, USA.
Linnaean Society, London.
Manchester City Library.
Oriental Institute, University of Oxford.
Radcliffe Science Library, University of Oxford.
Rhodes House Trust Library, Oxford.
Royal Geographical Society, London.
School of Geography Library, University of Oxford.
Science Library, London.
University of Cambridge Library.
University of Glasgow Library.

INDIVIDUALS

Dr G R Brackenridge, Tucson, Arizona, USA.
Prof J C Brindley, Dept of Geology, University College, Dublin, Eire.
Dr P Cates, Jet Propulsion Laboratory, California Institute of Technology, USA.
Dr V Clube, Royal Observatory, Edinburgh, Scotland.
W R Corliss, Glen Arm, Maryland, USA.
Prof D Dean, Dept of Humanities, University of Wisconsin, USA.
Dr P Doughty, Dept of Geology, Ulster Museum, Belfast, Ulster.
Dr R Goldthwait, University of Ohio, USA.
Prof R D Guthrie, Dept of Zoology, University of Alaska, Fairbanks, Alaska, USA.
The late Prof C H Hapgood, Greenfield Massachusetts, USA.
The late Frederick G Hehr, San Mateo, California, USA.
Dr G A Kellaway, Lewes, East Sussex, England.
Col W H Lovell-Johns (ret), Abbots Ripton, Huntingdon, England.
Prof H de Lumley, Institut de Paléontologie Humaine, Paris, France.
Dr P J Michael, Dept of Geological Sciences, University of British Columbia, Canada.
Dr S Muessig, Vice President, Getty Mining Co, Los Angeles, USA.
Dr L Pales, Musée National Histoire Naturelle, Paris, France.
Mrs V L Perry, Huron, Ohio, USA.
Prof A Prous, Museu de Historia Natural, Universidade Federal de Minas Gerais, Brazil.
Dr G Quinlan, Dept of Oceanography, Dalhousie University, Halifax, Canada.
Dr D J Rudkin, Director, Fishbourne Roman Palace, West Sussex, England.
Dr H A Sandford, Plymouth, Devon, England.
Dr A J Sutcliffe, British Museum (Natural History), London, England.
Dr W P Warren, Geological Survey of Ireland, Dublin, Eire.
Dr I West, Dept of Geology, University of Southampton, England.
R West, Worthing, West Sussex, England.

FOREWORD

BY RAND FLEM-ATH

(CO-AUTHOR OF *WHEN THE SKY FELL*, ST. MARTIN'S PRESS, 1995)

The evidence that we have managed to salvage about the Earth's lost past is shattered, torn and decayed. There remains only fragments: traces of physical evidence and occasional pieces of oral history. How can we piece together the secrets of our vanished heritage? An integrated approach, one that draws upon many sources and clues, is our best hope. Myth and science can converge to offer us the widest possible lens to study this enduring mystery. And it is precisely such a bold scope encompassed by this fascinating new book.

D.S. Allan and J.B Delair have assembled a mountain of evidence pointing directly to a worldwide catastrophe around 9500 B.C. They draw upon a vast range of sciences and disciplines to weave their story. And it is a compelling account that begins beyond our solar system, about 13,000 years ago, with the explosion of the Vela Supernova.

A large fragment of this star, christened "Phaeton" by the classical Greeks, blasted across interstellar space and sped through the void. Then around 9500 B.C., it careened into our solar system like a drunken driver. Phaeton, composed of pure stellar-matter must have been very dense and atomic, (almost certainly sub-lunar in size) and different from a comet or asteroid, to wreak the kind of havoc that ensued. Neptune wandered across its path and Phaeton, pulled sunwards, wrenched one of Neptune's moons from its orbit, sending it spinning through space like a celestial hubcap. This moon became the eccentric outer planet we know as Pluto.

Phaeton continued on its chaotic journey. Hurling past Uranus, its gravitational pull dislocated the moons of Uranus. As the deadly foreign invader drew near Saturn, one of the ringed planet's moons, Chiron, was also forced out of orbit. Chiron bounced into a new path circling the Sun to become the solar system's smallest planet. Jupiter and Mercury avoided the chaos because their orbits had carried them to the other side of the Sun and thus far from Phaeton's destructive course. It was at this point on its reckless journey that Phaeton electromagnetically demolished a planet that existed between Jupiter and Mars.

The idea of a fifth planet at this location has been around since 1766 when J. D. Titius von Wittenberg noticed that the solar system seemed to comprise an almost perfect mathematical web, minus one of its strands. Titius von Wittenberg explained this anomaly by postulating that there was a "vacant orbit" between Mars and Jupiter where mathematical probabilities indicated that there should be a planet. In 1772, Johann Bode popularized this discovery and the notion came to be known as the "Titius-Bode Law of Planetary Distances". Astronomers now had a mathematical tool with which to hunt for distant planets within our solar system because the new "law" predicted where to look. Telescopes from around the world focused on the "vacant orbit" between Jupiter and Mars and were rewarded in 1801 with the discovery of the asteroid belt. Was the asteroid belt the remnants of a lost planet? And if so, what was that planet like? Allan and Delair use the ancient Akkadian (Akkad was the northern half of Babylonia, Sumer the southern) name "Tiamat" for the missing planet of which the asteroid belt is a remnant. Three more planets still stood in Phaeton's reckless path: Mars, Earth, and Venus.

As the stellar marauder, dragging the remnants of the shattered Tiamat and its moon, Kingu, with it, catapulted past Mars; the red planet's rotation was slowed by their combined gravitational pull. Mars' two rapidly spinning moons may well be fragments of Tiamat it acquired then. After leaving its mark on Mars, Phaeton was now on a collision course with Earth charging through the emptiness between Earth and the Moon. Phaeton's pull stretched the Moon's orbit and the Earth's tilt was altered, condemning Earth to a worldwide catastrophe.

The swarm of planetary debris accompanying Phaeton were veritable time bombs. Circling the Earth, they exploded one by one upon entering Earth's Roche Zone, showering our planet with a celestial blizzard of rocks, stones, and dust. Atmospheric blast effects, ignition, and pollution were prodigious. The Earth's crust shifted and plunged it into upheaval. This was the day that "Earth nearly died."

Phaeton continued its unstoppable flight. Venus "flipped" over, sending it into a rotation opposite that of the other planets. Finally, Phaeton disappeared into the inferno of the Sun.

In 1976, through the writings of the Greek philosopher Plato, I became interested in the historical period between 9500 to 9600 B.C. In Plato's dialogue, a learned Egyptian priest tells Plato's ancestor, Solon, the legend of Atlantis. He relates that Atlantis had been destroyed in earthquakes and floods of extraordinary violence. This great catastrophe occurred 9000 years before his time. We know that Solon's visit to Egypt took place sometime between 594 and 559 B.C. This places the destruction of Atlantis some time between 9559 B.C. and 9594 B.C. Allan and Delair reviewed hundreds of radiocarbon dates from around the world in an attempt to date the Phaeton catastrophe. They found that a great concentration of dates averaged 9577 B.C., exactly amidst the time frame allowed by Plato's "story" of Atlantis!

This is the key period of our solar system's trauma. Before then, the authors argue, the planets revolved undisturbed around the Sun during what we might call a time of celestial harmony, a golden age that was suddenly disturbed by an intruder from beyond our solar system. The massive destruction visited on the Earth was an extremely rare event which *could* recur but such a catastrophe is unlikely to happen soon. Allan and Delair are not doomsdaysayers, nor am I. Catastrophes *happen*. But catastrophes triggered by celestial violence occur independently of human activity. Nor do they have anything to do with such an arbitrary date as the year 2000. This is not to deny the very real need our planet has for a shield against asteroids and/or comets. Where we can act we should, but for the times we live in, it is perhaps more productive for us to spend our energy trying to heal the wounds that *humans* have inflicted upon our planet than to worry about another out-of-control Phaeton.

Allan and Delair do a brilliant job in revealing that researchers have barely touched the tip of the iceberg of events that shook the Earth around 9577 B.C. The questions go on and on. Finally, with *Cataclysm! Compelling Evidence of a Cosmic Catastrophe in 9500 B.C.*, answers are beginning to come, one by one. As each lost fragment falls into place we can once again listen with respect to the "stories" of the ancient ones who always knew that we live in a universe which *can* erupt in violence. This book is an essential handbook to our ancient past: a brave multidisciplinary approach that should be applauded. With *Cataclysm!*, science, at last, catches up with mythology.

May 1997
Ladysmith, B.C.
Canada.

INTRODUCTION

This book is about the greatest single disaster known to have befallen Earth. The event was actually part of a still larger catastrophe which, commencing in interstellar space, eventually embraced most of the solar system. In terms of geological time it occurred extremely recently, although science has been decidedly reluctant to admit the fact, and modern humanity has largely forgotten it.

Among other things, the calamity profoundly affected all forms of terrestrial life, early Man included, who considered it to be a never-to-be-forgotten experience. Accordingly, almost every nation of antiquity perpetuated the memory of it in tradition, ceremony, religio-social attitudes, art and epic literature, and all regarded it as a major historical datum. Today, if it is remembered at all, it is known as the Great Flood or the Noachian Deluge.

The relatively familiar story of Noah, his Ark and the Deluge is, however, very incomplete, and when equivalent traditions from other sources are examined we find the Deluge itself to have been but one aspect of an awesome event as multi-faceted as a fine-cut diamond. These other sources refer to frightful natural convulsions simultaneously on land and sea and in the air, and to the greater part of life on Earth being violently extinguished by a wide variety of horrific processes, accompanied by extraordinary concomitant phenomena in the heavens. The overall picture is one of disaster of the very first magnitude.

For these reasons, the present essay encompasses what may at first glance seem many unrelated fields of enquiry, but which, as the panorama unfolds, are found to be intimately connected. In a sense, therefore, this book is really many books in one – although to satisfactorily explore all the salient features and evidence of what is an immense canvas inevitably incurs a degree of incompleteness. Such an interdisciplinary study inevitably necessitates a rational and comprehensive correlation of the material discussed, and with that objective in view each major theme is fully documented throughout. Cited references include several which are unfortunately rare or difficult to procure. Irrespective of their rarity or otherwise, *all* references have been consulted by the authors.

In this book we set out to demonstrate that the history of human culture is far richer and more complex than standard history is usually prepared to admit, and that the true record of human experience is infinitely more dramatic than that conventionally documented. As will be shown, a very great deal of this ampler past was the outcome of a single traumatic event.

Science has accumulated a body of factual observations which, in view of the relative stability of Earth's contemporary physical environment, so puzzled scholars that they felt obliged to postulate a series of devastating glacial ages to account for them – though the genesis of this assumed 'Ice Age' is in turn no less puzzling. Yet, other scientific findings have accumulated which do not fit easily with this glacial scenario. Such data often remains accessible only to specialist audiences. More significantly, when considered together, they seriously strain orthodox explanations beyond reasonable credulity.

On the whole, it is sensible to support or retain a theory only if it 'works', provided that, in drawing diverse fragments of knowledge into defensible patterns, it enables useful predictions to be made about the shape of further discoveries. Conventional glacial theory, however, fails to meet this criterion. In the face of mounting evidence militating against this likelihood, it repeatedly disintegrates under the constraints imposed upon it by that evidence. On the other hand, research into an entirely different domain – ancient traditions, folklore and classical writings – *is* providing us with an increasingly persuasive body of evidence from a wide variety of cultures. These bear remarkable similarities, despite the fact that the names given to the characters in the dramas bear superficially little relation to one another.

Some anthropologists have understood this to be a consequence of fundamental human characteristics which have shaped human cultures and have caused the invention of similar myths by apparently diverse cultures. Others, such as C G Jung, have given an essentially psychological explanation to this, in terms of a shared unconscious psychological disposition, which gives rise to such stories. Though we would not necessarily want to challenge such assumptions generally, we nevertheless suggest that *certain* of these stories originated from a real live experience of early humanity, and have evolved in an attempt to comprehend and pass on to posterity the experience gained.

Alongside Glacial Theory, this book traces the successive rival theories and interpretations which characterised the formative years of modern geological science, showing that, at one extreme were 'Catastrophists' who sought to reconcile traditional recollections of a global catastrophe with the known geological data. 'Catastrophists' for long emphasised the fact that numerous Deluge traditions mention one or more celestial agents as having assailed Earth and caused that calamity, and that prolific evidence is available which can be reasonably interpreted as having originated from genuine experience of such an event. At the other extreme, 'Uniformitarians' have argued that disasters of such magnitude are completely contrary to the normal workings of Nature on Earth. They know of no self-inducing mechanism capable of generating a terrestrial catastrophe on such a scale – and since they discern no physical *proof* of a conflict between this planet and some other celestial body, categorically dismiss all such claims as spurious. They insist that the factual data used to support most 'Catastrophist' claims is explicable – at least in principle – in terms of the widespread but slow action of ice rather than of fast or violently moving water.

It is thus paradoxical that worldwide memory of an appalling flood disaster has survived traditionally as a major event in the early history of mankind, whilst science, having assembled a veritable library of facts dealing with the very same period, interprets the same evidence as due to quite another cause.

Charles Lyell's nineteenth century formulation of an alternative theory to 'Catastrophism', bringing in the fewest possible assumptions in order to explain the natural phenomena, was admirable. However, wholesale adoption of his 'Principle of Uniformitarianism', rather than continual investigation of alternative interpretations actually serves us only if it can adequately explain every relevant phenomenon. Since the inception of Lyell's hypothesis and the present, much contrary evidence has accumulated, which, were Lyell alive today, even he would find difficult satisfactorily to account for by uniformitarian concepts.

If we widen our perspective beyond the specialist discipline of geology, we are left with the problem of the extraordinary testimony of innumerable living animal and plant species, as well as the great corpus of curiously consistent world tradition. Even were we left with no option but to anthropologise or psychologise the traditional material, no such solution can apply to the zoological and botanical evidence. Some other all-embracing unifying explanation is clearly required.

We attempt this by examining the range of huge phenomena for which Catastrophism does have explanatory value, and for which Uniformitarian solutions fail. At the same time we shall try to order this great body of data into what, we submit, is its proper perspective.

This perspective will not, however, be found in conventional Establishment geological histories, for although the overwhelming number of sources cited *are* Establishment sources, standard college texts on the subjects discussed are, like those in nearly all scientific disciplines (and for many reasons), notoriously slow to modernise. Indeed, many orthodox textbooks lag more than a decade behind the current frontiers of the subjects with which they profess to deal. Several of the conclusions paraded in this book will therefore be found to be diametrically opposed to many normally featured in orthodox texts. These deviations have not, however, been reached lightly, but are solidly grounded on the testimony of abundant and varied field evidence often either ignored, dismissed, or forced by many conventionalists to fit various notions that, although well-entrenched and frequently treated as *fact*, are actually hypothetical or even demonstrably untenable, or so recently discovered that they still await incorporation into standard histories.

Some readers may recoil at the abundance of references and might even regard them as irksome or intrusive. In a work of this genre precise documentation is essential, and in point of fact the references used actually constitute a rather small but representative fraction of the total available on the themes reviewed. There may also be disapproval of the use of a comparatively high percentage of 'old' sources. Such objections will speedily dissipate when it is realised that many of the most singular events and discoveries referred to – particular local terrestrial cataclysms, certain Arctic and Siberian explorations, specific cave excavations and finds – occurred long ago and were essentially *unrepeatable*. In such cases these *are* the only references that can be cited. But whether 'old' or recent, it is significant that the *character* of the drama thus documented remains persistently consistent. Furthermore, the physical events and effects described in many traditional accounts are *precisely* those advocated by modern theoreticians considering essentially similar themes.

Every effort has been made to keep technical terms to a minimum, but where usage of these has proved unavoidable, concise explanations are contained either in the text or in the glossary.

In dating specific evidence we have used the convention of expressing dates in years BP (before the present). Current processes for estimating the age of fossil remains, rock strata and so on all have certain limitations, so that the time-scales used by geologists, palaeontologists, anthropologists and others inevitably contain a degree of uncertainty. Our chronological estimates derive from averaging out from a wide range of documented radiocarbon dates and other accredited methods. We are therefore as confident as it is presently possible to be in their general reliability. Appendix B summarises the relevant dating procedure and cites a selection of the abundant data now available.

Readers must perforce judge for themselves whether the facts genuinely support the conclusions here offered. What cannot be denied however is that real facts, howsoever interpreted, are inescapable, actual and immutable, and the testimony they represent cannot be altered.

If the conclusions arrived at in this book prove to be valid, then recent Earth history as we know it urgently needs extensive revision. In effect they provide a new key to that segment of world history occupying approximately the last 15,000 years. The genesis of much of present world topography merits fundamental reassessment, prehistoric archaeology an equal adjustment, and the scientific concepts of uniformitarianism and catastrophism, with their bearing on organic evolution, very substantial modification. Perhaps with this new key, we now stand at a threshold of new and exciting historical perspectives.

PART ONE

A LOST BEGINNING

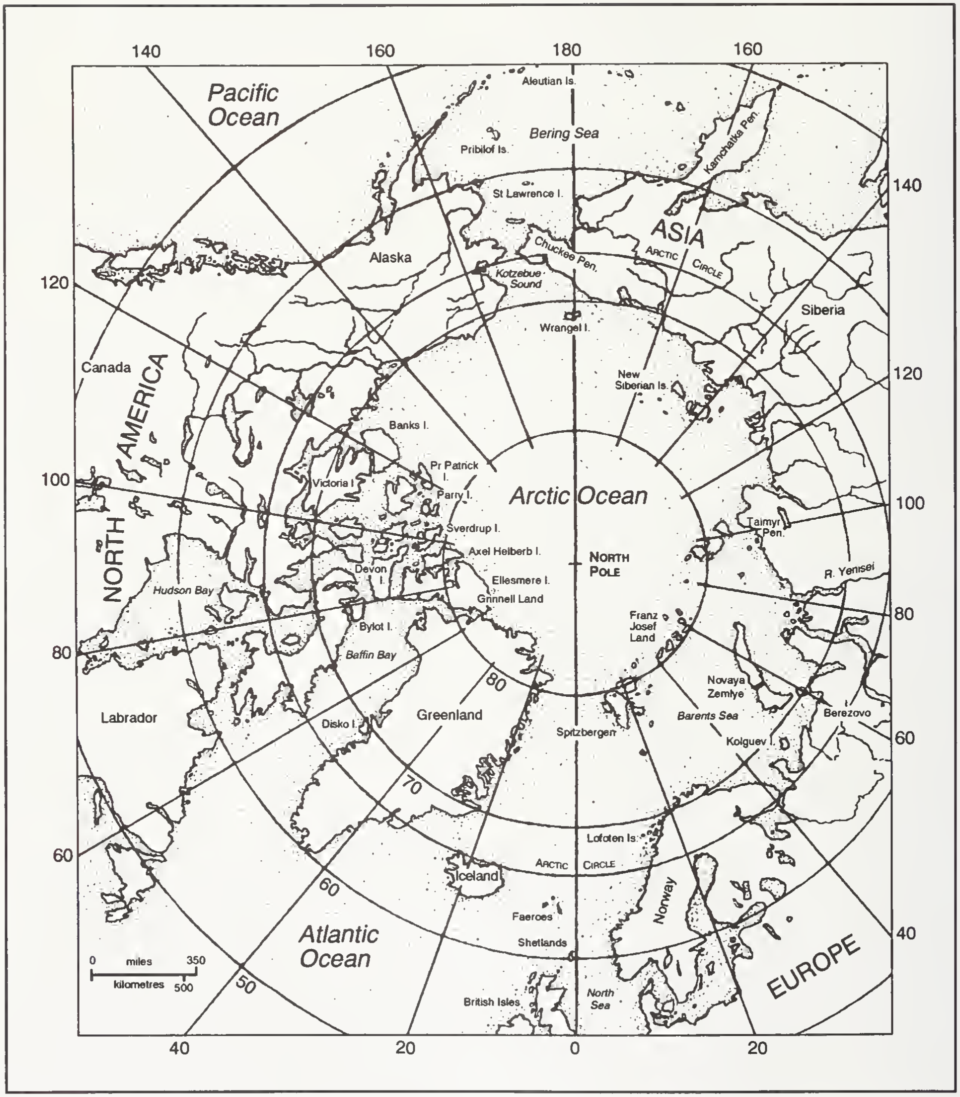
Pacific Ocean
Aleutian Is.
Bering Sea
Pribilof Is.
Kamchatka Pen.
St Lawrence I.
ASIA
Arctic Circle
Chuckee Pen.
Alaska
Kotzebue Sound
Wrangel I.
Siberia
Canada
NORTH AMERICA
New Siberian Is.
Banks I.
Pr Patrick I.
Victoria I
Parry I.
Arctic Ocean
Sverdrup I.
Axel Heiberb I.
North Pole
Devon I.
Ellesmere I.
Grinnell Land
Taimyr Pen.
R. Yenisei
Hudson Bay
Bylot I.
Baffin Bay
Franz Josef Land
Novaya Zemlye
Labrador
Disko I.
Greenland
Spitzbergen
Barents Sea
Kolguev I.
Berezovo
Lofoten Is.
Arctic Circle
Iceland
Faeroes
Shetlands
Norway
Atlantic Ocean
EUROPE
British Isles
North Sea
0 miles 350
kilometres 500
140
160
180
160
140
120
100
80
60
40
120
100
80
60
40
20
0
20
80
70
60
50

Map 1A. The Arctic regions today. A major key for unlocking the Phaeton question.

1

THE AGE OF THE EARTH

Today, educated society is fully aware that, compared to the average human life-span of three score years and ten, the age of the Earth, which modern geology has divided into successive eras and periods each millions of years in duration, is absolutely immense. Yet this concept was not always so, and was not in fact seriously developed until the first half of the nineteenth century.

Before then, researchers had tried to establish the age of the Earth by studying ancient calendars[1], and various assertions about 'time' in classical, Near Eastern and Norse literature[2], or by working out and totalling the recorded generations of Biblical figures between the traditional 'first man', Adam, and the birth of Christ[3]. Regarding this last mentioned method, the existence of different translations of scriptural sources only served to compound the difficulties. Some authorities, for example Isaac Vossius of Leiden, contended that the most authentic biblical genealogies are to be found in the original Greek translation of the Old Testament, the *Septuagint*, rather than in the Masoretic Hebrew texts[4]. Others disagreed. Thus, the age of the world calculated from Patriarchal genealogy as recorded in the *Septuagint* produced a date of 2,342 years, whereas that based on the Masoretic texts gave a date of 1,656 years[5].

That no really precise date for the age of the Earth was forthcoming from varying sources like these quickly became transparently obvious.

Early scholars everywhere recognised that, so far as it was known to them, a great break had occurred in Earth's history, or at least in the human portion of it. The break had been caused by a vast flood, which for Christian and Jewish historians was the Deluge of *Genesis*, and for classical writers the Great Flood of *Deucalion*. To all these authors this inundation became a highly important marker event[6].

Not only Christian and Jewish savants, but others of the pagan pre-classical and oriental worlds, agreed that the Deluge had terminated an earlier Golden Age, itself conceived of in many quarters as one of a succession of former world ages individually characterised symbolically by metals (bronze, iron, *etc*), elements (fire, water, *etc*), or by astronomical motifs (solar, lunar, *etc*). Moreover, ancient traditions collected much later from lands such as the Americas and Australia, certainly unknown to most early European, Near Eastern and Oriental writers, also preserved closely similar beliefs in which 'suns' were sometimes substituted for 'ages' as vague measures of spans of time long past. Tantalisingly, the actual durations of such 'ages' or 'suns' were seldom if ever stipulated.

Other early thinkers, especially those of pre-Hellenic and early classical Greece, devised the concept of cyclical world history, which, because it postulated a succession of different ages, again involved the idea of great spans of time. These, though of vague durations, were usually stated in terms indicating an antiquity far greater than the 1,656 and 2,342 year dates obtained by biblical studies. This doctrine was followed by, and probably led to the development of, that of the cyclical Great Year, championed by Empedocles and the Pythagorean philosophers of ancient Greece. The doctrine itself was apparently based upon earlier Chaldean teachings which advocated that the Universe, though eternal, undergoes cyclical destruction from either fire or water at lengthy but irregular intervals. The Deluge was held by them to be the most recent of these destructions. Popularised by Berosus, a Babylonian scribe of the 3rd century BC, the doctrine of the Great Year became very influential and was subscribed to by many famous cosmologists and philosophers of the day, including Chrysippus, Zeno and Plato. It survived in modified form down to at least the beginning of the 19th century.

An especially noteworthy aspect of the above topic is that all accounts of the Deluge shared the notion that, in addition to it having been a very destructive event, it was somehow connected with celestial changes. In some narratives, these are ascribed to heavenly displeasure or divine wrath at a reportedly iniquitous mankind. This factor, and the ancient concepts of bygone World Ages and a lost Golden Era, will be considered again more fully later.

Thus, irrespective of their literary or traditional sources, their advocated religious significance, or their alleged social connotations, all these accounts were as one in agreeing that a tremendous watery cataclysm had indeed occurred long ago and drowned the greater part of Creation. As one of the most widely remembered and enduring of all human traditions, the Deluge became a critical datum in virtually every early chronology, it being customary then for historians to term everything preceding it as *antediluvian* (before the Flood) and everything following it as post-diluvian. It was not until 525 AD that the now standard method of dating events BC and AD was introduced.

Even in the days of the earliest known writers, dates were proposed for the Deluge – another pointer to the great importance it then held for historians. These dates were, like so many later ones, usually calculated in relation to dates worked out for the Creation itself. Of these we may briefly mention that, in the 2nd century, Theophilus of Antioch calculated that Creation had occurred in 5529 BC, and that Jerome, in AD 381, thought it had erupted in 5502 BC. Some datings attempted extraordinary precision. One Jewish scholar in the 2nd century AD averred that Creation had taken place at 11.11pm on Sunday, October 6th, 3761 BC[7].

Many of these early datings, as well as many later medieval ones, were commonly set to accord with the six days of Creation described in *Genesis*, and to generally conform to Julius Africanus's combination, in the 3rd century AD, of the 'six days of Creation' and the 'Millennium'. Relying upon the authority of *Psalms* 90:4, and the virtually sacrosanct assurance of the Christian apostle Peter that for God one day is as a thousand years, Africanus reasoned that the six 'creational' days really meant six thousand Earth years. It was not long, therefore, before scholars like Augustine, Lactantius, Isadore of Seville and the Venerable Bede began dividing up human history into Six Ages totalling six thousand years, although not necessarily of one thousand years each. As remarked by Prof Dennis Dean, who undertook a special study of this theme:

> Eventually, schemes involving seven 'days' (with present time the sixth) became popular. These related conceptions of the Earth's history endured well into the seventeenth century, where we find them influencing geological theories by Descartes, Kircher, Steno, Burnet, and Whiston. Few erroneous historical assumptions have ever remained credible for so long[8].

A great up-welling of scholastic interest in the age of the Earth occurred during Renaissance times, and in England alone over one hundred different authors, working along different lines of enquiry, proposed dates for the Creation. Even those utilising solely Hebrew sources managed to differ alarmingly, their datings ranging from 3928 to 4103 BC[9].

Inevitably, by Renaissance times there were those who doubted the validity of biblical chronology as a whole, and those who redoubled their efforts to discover the real date of Creation. Among the latter was James Ussher whose monumental study of the problem, first published in Latin[10], appeared four years later in the English language version of 1658 – *The Annals of the World, Deduced from the Origin of Time* (London). Ussher convincingly argued for Creation having occurred in 4004

BC, a date subsequently affixed to the Lloyd Bible of 1701, by which it quickly came to be regarded as practically a part of scriptural authority itself[11].

Among the doubters were those who, even as early as the 1500s, argued that the Biblical 'days' were merely figurative. Others, like Isaac Peyrerius, postulated that, far from representing world history, biblical history represented only Jewish history and that Adam was not the first man but the first Jew. Like Friedrich Stoss in Germany, Charles Blount in Britain, and other Europeans, Pierre Bayle in Holland[12] voiced further criticisms about that time and proposed different chronological schemes of surprisingly lengthy duration, not on geological but on varied oriental cultural evidence. Some of these required Creation to have taken place far earlier than Ussher's 4004 BC. Indeed, by 1588, so much scholastic confusion and contradiction had been achieved that John Harvey found himself obliged to write with regard to all chronological compilations thitherto produced that they were:

> ...ambiguous, uncertaine, fallible, erroneous, deceitful.[13]

Earlier, none other than the great Roger Bacon had concluded that the disputes between authoritative versions of the Bible respecting the age of the world would be resolved only by astronomical evidence[14].

Almost 300 years were to elapse before any serious attempts were made to develop that avenue of approach. Meanwhile, like practically everything else in the *Old Testament* before the Exodus, the Deluge was still not precisely datable, yet continued to be the only graspable world datum since, as mentioned previously, everything before it was indisputably antediluvian and everything after it obviously post-diluvian. For that reason it became an increasingly critical historical marker event.

2

DEBRIS OF A BROKEN WORLD

During the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries efforts were made to explore connections between Mosaic chronology and the then fast developing sciences of astronomy and primitive archaeology[15], very much as forecast by Roger Bacon 300 years earlier. Many of these studies embraced the previously-noted older doctrine of successive world ages and laid special emphasis upon the ending of individual ages by terrible floods and conflagrations. Inevitably the Biblical Deluge received particular attention, although whereas nearly all early speculations about it had concluded that it was the result of divine anger, these new investigations sought rational physical causes for its occurrence. Thus, in the opinion of the late seventeenth century English mathematician and physicist William Whiston, the Deluge had probably been caused by the close approach to Earth of a giant comet[16].

Whiston was Isaac Newton's laboratory assistant, and, like Newton, was a friend of the astronomer Edmund Halley, who may be said to have been the discoverer of the periodicity of comets (a subject returned to in Part Four of this book). Whiston was also well versed in ancient history, classical literature and the Latin, Greek and Hebrew languages. His invocation of a cosmic agent as the cause of the Deluge thus not only accommodated the aforementioned 'astronomical' elements associated with that event in many early histories and ancient traditions, but also used what at that time were some of the very latest findings on astronomy, physics, and mathematics, including Newton's then recently announced Law of Gravity. Little wonder Whiston's theory was well-received in nearly all quarters, and significantly influenced historians over the next 130 years or so.

No 'geological' chronology had been formulated in Whiston's day of course, and fossils, though well enough known[17], were still commonly interpreted as the relics of creatures (Earth's afore-cited iniquitous antediluvians) destroyed by Noah's Flood. Nor did any proper conception exist that, as an organism, man was significantly younger than the fossilised creatures found at innumerable localities, or of any vast pre-human period of Earth history.

Nevertheless, we would be at fault here if we omitted to add that as early as 1671 the naturalist John Ray may have had an inkling of reality when he opined that the world might well be "a great deal older than is imagined", and that humans were late arrivals on the terrestrial stage when, in a letter written in 1695 to the Oxford antiquarian Edward Lhwyd, he ventured:

> ...whatever may be said for ye Antiquity of the Earth itself & bodies lodged in it, yet ye race of mankind is new upon the Earth, & not older than the Scripture makes it, may I think by many arguments be almost demonstratively proved[18].

Ray, however, was apparently not the first to reach such conclusions, for Thomas Nashe, in 1592, had complained in a pamphlet about "Mathematitions abroad that will prooue men before Adam"[19]. Regrettably, Nashe did not name the mathematicians concerned.

About the time that Nashe was voicing his complaints another notable observation was put on record. The French potter Bernard Palissy recorded that, when collecting suitable clays preparatory to manufacturing his wares, he:

> ...found many species of shell fish, petrified in the earth, which are not modern kinds living in the ocean... a sort which is unknown to us, and are not found at all, except lapidified" (fossilised).[20]

These were vestiges of some prior creation. The question to be answered was: did these shellfish belong to a creation destroyed by the Deluge? The Deluge continued to be a central point in the problem of the age of the Earth.

We may also mention that, in 1655, shortly before John Ray's remarks, Isaac de la Peyère had pursued the same theme of humans before Adam[21], in the process distinguishing two Creations, that of *things* and that of humans. Observations like Palissy's may have contributed to the formulation of such conclusions and undoubtedly underlay the arguments of the early eighteenth century French savant René de Reaumur, who, in 1720, stated that the fossil record attested to a duration long preceding the Deluge[22].

Certainly by the mid-eighteenth century many writers, including Diderot[23], Buffon[24], and Maillet[25], were beginning to propose chronologies far longer than that apparently permissible from orthodox analyses of world history summarised in *Genesis*. Maillet, for example, argued for an indefinitely ancient Earth and a human existence of 400,000 years, while Diderot went even further in stating that the world was "hundreds of millions of years" old[26].

Like James Howell, all these authors were aware that, long before, Apollonius the Egyptian had claimed that the world was 153,075 years old, and that the classical Greek writer Diodorus Siculus had stated that pharaonic history spanned more than 18,000 years[27] – plenty of time, even in his day, for two Creations, and for humans to become sufficiently sinful to invoke divine displeasure culminating in a universal Deluge.

Now, while modern archaeologists have since shown 18,000 years to be grossly inflated as a date for pharaonic history, they have also discovered that, like many classical Greek thinkers[28], and unbeknown to seventeenth and eighteenth century scholars, both the ancient Egyptians[29] and the Babylonians[30] took a deep interest in fossils and the problem of 'time'. Apollonius's apparently wild claim of a world 153,075 years old, while actually much too short, was perhaps formed, or partly based, on long-forgotten palaeontological investigations, and that a great deal of seventeenth and eighteenth century discussion respecting the age of the Earth had, in essence, already occurred more than 1,500 years earlier.

Although Robert Hooke in 1688 had suggested that it might be possible to "raise a chronology" from fossils "and to state the intervalls of the times wherein such, or such catastrophies and mutations have happened"[31], subsequent studies showed that fossils were capable of several almost equally plausible interpretations insofar as the age of the world was concerned, and that the utilisation of other less uncertain methods was preferable.

Even as far back as the late seventeenth century these were being sought by men like Edward Lhwyd of Oxford. He believed that the seemingly slow accumulation of boulders in two north Welsh valleys was evidence that the age of the Earth must be far greater than then generally envisaged[32]. Lhwyd evidently omitted to consider that accelerated rates of boulder-accumulation could occur through sudden flooding, ice action, earthquakes or persistently torrential rains causing landslides.

Then, in 1715, Edmund Halley of cometary fame proposed the determination of the world's true age by extrapolating from the sea's supposedly regular increase in salinity[33]. This method also proved to have only limited application. Later, Buffon's associate, J T Needham tried to calculate the age of the Earth from sedimentation rates, but found the results so staggering that he could not accept them[34]. In any case, sedimentation rates vary widely in different latitudes and under differing conditions.

Later still, in 1779, the rate of advance by glaciers was advocated as another method[35], but that too was illusory. At the time it was unfortunately not appreciated that glaciers sometimes retreated, modern research showing that some do on a cyclical basis in response to various environmental factors.

During the mid-eighteenth century it was widely assumed that land-forms (mountains, valleys, deserts *etc*) and the rocks comprising them had been created at different times. This led one writer, Johann Lehmann, to distinguish three kinds of mountains, created respectively before, during and after the ubiquitous Deluge[36]. But although the Deluge continued to dominate the thoughts of many naturalists during this period, there were others, such as Baron de Holbach and Montesquieu, who argued for sequential destructive upheavals at largely irregular intervals, each apparently devoid of design or purpose[37]. These ideas reached a head in the writings of G H Toulmin, a medical doctor, who concluded:

> ...convulsions and revolutions violent beyond our experience or conception, yet unequal to the destruction of the globe, or the whole of the human species, have both existed and will again exist... [terminating] ...an astonishing succession of ages.[38]

The *Catastrophist* school of geology, to which we will return shortly, was truly born through the writings of these authors.

Contemporaneously with the activities and published opinions of the afore-named scholars were the conclusions reached by Jean Guettard, now justly acclaimed as the discoverer of the natural evolution of land-forms[39]. His discoveries were to have far reaching effects on geology (the study of the composition, structure and origin of rocks) in general and, over a century later, in the development of geomorphology (the study of surface physical features and their relation to structures and land-building and land-eroding processes), another important topic to which we will return later in this book.

The eighteenth century, with its ever-mounting fascination with the age and structure of the Earth, closed with two highly important geological turning-points, and with several singular discoveries. Of the former the first was the publication in 1785 of James Hutton's *Theory of the Earth*[40], in which the immensity of geological time, altogether dwarfing Ussher's earlier 4004 BC date, was forcefully stressed, as also the Earth's essential stability. For Hutton, "it is the little causes, long continued, which are considered as bringing about the greatest changes of the earth". He emphasised the thousands of separate details which, operating over a "long succession of ages", refute "the hypothesis of violent causes" that a truncated chronology would require. In these statements, Hutton launched what was later to become known as the *Uniformitarian* school of geological thought, a perspective central to the main theme of this book to which we shall repeatedly refer.

The second of these turning-points was the discovery in 1797 by a talented land surveyor, William Smith, that Earth's crust is composed of a definite sequence of fossil-bearing deposits in which individual strata (levels) are characterised by distinctive suites of fossils (bygone faunas and floras) each peculiar to the stratum yielding it. Once again it was obvious that long periods and eras had been necessary for the development of each of these successive organic assemblages – very much as Hutton and Diderot had independently postulated. Though well known in geological circles by 1800, Smith's discovery (which earned him the amusing nickname of 'Strata Smith') was not published until 1816[41], by which time much further evidence supporting it had come to light elsewhere.

The singular discoveries concerned the finding in 1772 of a deeply frozen carcass of a woolly rhinoceros near Vilui in northern Siberia, and, in 1787, of a large portion of a hairy mammoth in the Yakutsk region of Siberia. Like some earlier poorly-documented similar finds in the Siberian Tungus, both these specimens retained flesh, hides and hair[42].

Such discoveries greatly influenced the deliberations of many late eighteenth and early nineteenth century naturalists, for it was clear that, since these northern animals had been frozen instantly and had remained so until found, their demise must have been extremely sudden. Such suddenness betokened a catastrophically swift event, yet men like Hutton and Smith were discovering indisputable evidence that such catastrophes were rare. Just as clear was the fact that, for the ice and frozen ground enclosing these carcasses to have remained unmelted for the vast periods of time implied by 'Huttonian' theories, the destruction of these Siberian animals must, geologically speaking, have been very recent.

The Siberian finds increased naturalists' interest in the numerous mammoth and woolly rhinoceros bones which had long been known from, and were indeed still being met with in, more southern European latitudes. These, it was quickly realised, generally occurred either in caves or rock fissures or in superficial surface deposits like sands, gravels, clays or marls. Usually unconsolidated (loosely held together), these deposits were also largely unstratified (unlayered) and often of very irregular linear extent and thickness, exhibiting every sign of having accumulated under agitated conditions which had apparently affected huge areas of the globe more or less simultaneously. Due to the exceptional nature of these surface deposits special names were coined to distinguish them, *eg*, 'Boulder Clay', 'Hard Pan' and 'Till'. Researches showed that the lowest of these deposits, the 'Till', usually lay directly upon solid bedrock, the upper surface of which, irrespective of the kind of rock involved, had frequently been smashed, fissured, striated (marked with linear ridges, furrows or scores), polished or pulverised into countless fragments. This phenomenon not only extended surprising lateral and vertical distances, but had affected a great variety of extremely hard rocks.

To most naturalists at the time it was perfectly obvious that some tremendous event had occurred which, among other effects, had fractured hard rocks over immense distances, and had deposited the resultant debris equally extensively as gravels, sands, clays and muds. The bony remains of the hordes of animals which had been destroyed by the event now lay within these deposits, which, in northern Siberia, had become permanently frozen. All these interrelated remains thus represented the debris of a former but now-broken world.

Clearly any agency capable of venting so much devastation must have been not only awesomely powerful but must, from the evidence, have affected the entire world. Late eighteenth and early nineteenth century scholars rapidly expanded their concepts of terrestrial chronology from thousands or tens of thousands of years to spans of time stretching to many millions of years, and to the notion that for a large part of these immense periods quiet and equable conditions had prevailed[43]. On the other hand they were being confronted with mounting evidence that something traumatic, something catastrophic, had affected the whole Earth, geologically extremely recently.

Men were not long in concluding that this event had been the Deluge of *Genesis* and widespread tradition, and that perhaps the scriptural record and the accumulating geological record could, after all, be reconciled. Many books appeared on this theme during the first thirty years of the nineteenth century. Three examples only need be cited here[44]. Were the ancient traditions right after all? Had a long-lost Golden Age been suddenly and disastrously terminated by a frightful global Flood? The growing evidence suggested to many that this may indeed have been the case, and efforts were redoubled to investigate these possibilities.

The results were interesting and to some extent completely unexpected.

3

ENIGMAS IN STONE

The first quarter of the nineteenth century, when geological science grew apace, saw much attention given to rock striations and polished rock surfaces, and to the vast number of boulders which, because they were usually foreign to the districts in which they reposed, were accordingly called 'erratics'.

The rock striations were generally found to be aligned north-west to south-east, both north and south of the equator. At many places either side of the Atlantic the striations occur only on the summits of high hills or only on the northern or north-western slopes of mountains. Locally, however, other striations cross the predominating examples at all sorts of angles or even at right-angles to their long axes. Such evidence suggests that whatever produced them proceeded from a general northern or north-western direction and totally ignored pre-existing topography.

At many localities these rock striations furrow extraordinarily smooth rock surfaces, in some instances exhibiting a glass-like polish. Such surfaces are of irregular extent, but occur with or near striated rocks so frequently that little doubt exists that the striating and polishing of these surfaces had a common origin, both in cause and time.

Many of the 'erratic' boulders are of immense size and weight, the very largest being literally miles long[45]. In some districts they abound in almost unbelievable numbers, perch precariously in long lines along mountain crests, or lie singly upon the very summits of lofty eminences. At other places they choke valleys and gorges or repose in splendid isolation on the surfaces of plains and deserts. Sometimes the boulders are visible in their entirety – elsewhere they are buried almost out of sight by surrounding surface deposits. 'Erratics' are often reported as sharply angular and "fresh-looking"[46], rounded and polished, or as sometimes scored by "well-marked parallel striae"[47], and

Table 1A

Geological Eras, Periods and Epochs

Geological Eras and Periods

The sequence of eras and periods which comprise Earth history, with their estimated durations given in parentheses.
Not to scale.

Millions of years	ERA	PERIOD
2	**CAENOZOIC** (Recent life)	QUATERNARY
12 29 41 51 60		TERTIARY (58,000,000 years)
130	**MESOZOIC** (Middle life)	CRETACEOUS (70,000,000 years)
160		JURASSIC (30,000,000 years)
185		TRIASSIC (25,000,000 years)
210	**PALAEOZOIC** (Ancient life)	PERMIAN (25,000,000 years)
265		CARBONIFEROUS (55,000,000 years)
about 320		DEVONIAN (50-55,000,000 years)
360		SILURIAN (40,000,000 years)
440		ORDOVICIAN (80,000,000 years)
540		CAMBRIAN (100,000,000 years)
at least 840	**PROTEROZOIC** (Primitive life)	Somtimes divided into 300,000,000 years or longer
unknown	**ARCHAEOZOIC** (Beginning of life)	Duration unknown

The Tertiary and Quaternary Periods

The *conventional* subdivisions of the Tertiary and Quaternary periods with their estimated durations shown in parentheses.
Not to scale.

PERIOD	EPOCH			Millions of years
QUATERNARY	HOLOCENE			.011
	PLEISTOCENE	Upper	***Ice Ages***	2
		Middle		
		Lower		
TERTIARY	PLIOCENE (10,000,000 years)			12
	MIOCENE (17,000,000 years)			29
	OLIGOCENE (12,000,000 years)			41
	EOCENE (10,000,000 years)			51
	PALAEOCENE (9,000,000 years)			60

in every case as having travelled considerable distances to their present locations – their points of origin often remaining obscure. Their angular and "fresh-looking" condition, however, suggests that their transportation was rapid and of short duration, a startling conclusion respecting the largest 'erratics'.

Like the rock striations mentioned above, these boulders were evidently dispersed by an agency operating oblivious to older geographical barriers and sometimes obliquely to the long axes of pre-existing ground features[48]. Repeating associations of polished rock surfaces, striations and erratics are known from many widely-sundered localities, such as Montana[49], Brazil[50], and Finland[51]. Clearly these phenomena are different expressions of a singular event which occurred on a hemispheric scale.

The superficial sands and gravels which contain the bony remains of woolly rhinoceroses, mammoths and other large contemporary mammals, also lie unusually to adjacent local topographical features. They are often banked up against northern or north-western mountain or valley slopes only. At other places they mantle only the summits of high mountains, sometimes to depths of several thousand feet or metres. Elsewhere they bury the lower flanks of whole mountain ranges or even fill up entire valleys. They also frequently contain large quantities of geologically recent plant remains, at some places so profusely that, in company with coeval (same age) animal bones, they completely fill caves and rock fissures. Yet, even in such apparently chaotic evidence a curiously consistent theme emerges, for at many sites – those around Muggendorf in Germany for instance[52] – only the caves and fissures facing northwards or north-westwards have been so filled.

Almost all early geologists attributed these clearly linked phenomena to the action of powerful water currents flowing in a general north-to-south direction. The first scientific explanations purporting to account for these phenomena included vast river floods, 'waves of translation' generated by hypothetical giant submarine earthquakes, and the equator-wards drift of huge numbers of silt and stone-laden icebergs of northern origin, which deposited their stony cargoes in warmer latitudes. These explanations invoked essentially catastrophic causes, and the irregular character of the relevant deposits, due to their supposed transportation by water or ice from one place to another, were soon widely referred to as 'drift'. In turn, the advocates of such explanations were grouped with those who, like Whiston, had long postulated recurrent violent episodes in Earth history, and were regarded as 'Catastrophists'.

For many older naturalists the 'drift' deposits and the pulverised and fissured bedrock upon which it frequently rested represented the stony remnants of a former but now badly scarred world, destroyed by an agency which, in the geological scale of things, had operated remarkably recently. Recognising the modernity of this material, present geologists assign most of it to the Pleistocene period which, ending approximately 11,000 years ago, immediately preceded the Holocene (our own) period (see table 1A).

4

WORLD AGES – WORLD SUNS

One of classical Greece's most celebrated philosophers, Plato, citing even older Egyptian records, stated that in addition to world disasters resulting from fire, there had been not one but many great floods which had terminated several earlier successive ages[53]. The pre-Columbian Mexicans possessed generally similar beliefs in which various past ages, which they referred to as 'suns', were brought to violent ends by tremendous natural upheavals, floods, furious winds and rampant fire[54]. Numerous other Amerindian recollections, particularly those from western North America, mention 'ages' as 'suns', the number of which varies from three to five in different accounts[55], and traditionally attribute their ends to a disastrous "falling of the sky". As the mythographer Alexander remarked:

> The notion of cataclysmic destructions of the world by flood or fire, often with a concomitant falling of the sky, is frequent in West Coast myth...[56]

Even the remote tribes of the Amazon basin possess these beliefs, many of which embody the idea of terrible disasters involving fire and prolonged darkness and, above all, an immense world-drowning flood analogous to that mentioned in *Genesis*[57].

On the other side of the world, the Dusan tribe of western Borneo (Kalimantan) preserve a similar idea which they link to seven 'suns' thus:

> The sky, originally low, retreated when six of the original seven suns were killed.[58]

We shall meet these seven suns again later. A belief in recurrent world disasters terminating successive earlier ages was formerly extremely widespread, both in time and geographically. The Voguls of Siberia, for instance, believed in recurrent conflagrations attended by fearful thunder[59]; the Welsh Triads, compiled from more ancient sources during the middle ages, refer to three great cataclysms, one involving a deluge, another a fire and a third a drought[60]; in the 6th century BC both Anaximenes and Anaximander assumed periodic world destruction with subsequent re-creation, as did Diogenes of Apollonia in the 5th century BC; Aristarchus, who flourished at Samos in the 3rd century BC, taught that the Earth undergoes destruction by fire and water every 2,484 years[61]. The Chinese entertained similar ideas[62], as did nations as far apart as Hawaii[63], the shores of the Bengal Sea[64], the early Icelanders[65], and the Jews[66]. The ancient sacred book of the Buddhists, the *Visuddhi-Magga*, mentions a still more ancient work called *Discourse on the Seven Suns*[67], indicating that the same notion had long existed on the Indian subcontinent, while in Mexico, the old Mayan *Annals of Cuauhtitlan*, written about AD 1570 on the basis of still earlier sources, mentions seven 'sun' epochs known as the Chicon-Tonatiuh[68].

Many early memories of these world-shaking events specifically link them with the abrupt destruction of a primeval earthly paradise widely known to classical writers as a Golden Age. The Roman writer Ovid stated that during the reign of the legendary king Kronos (Saturn of the Romans, and the alleged ancestor of the Olympian gods of both ancient Greece and Rome) springtime was perennial[69]. Virtually every commentator of antiquity on this topic agreed that this lost age was a golden one and the Earth a veritable paradise. It was, as Lenormant once noted, traceable

> ...among all people of the Aryan or Japhetic race.[70]

Ver perpetuum, or perpetual spring, was its alleged climate[71]. Various remarkable and often quite unbelievable characteristics were attributed to it, such as it being a place "...where the human inhabitants are in the prime of life, with no aging or senility"[72].

The early Egyptians preserved similar memories, for:

> In Egyptian mythology, the reign of Râ was like the primeval reign of Kronos; the myth of it was a reminiscence of the sinless Golden Age.[73]

Classical writers like Strabo and Pherecydes discussed the location of the seat of Kronos' empire, and concluded that it was a northern one:

> Pherecydes described Kronos as dwelling in that part of heaven 'nearest the earth', *ie*, the North; Strabo places him in the 'home of Boreas'. These all agree in essence with Sanchoniathon, as preserved in the Greek version by Philo of Byblos, who said that the seat of Kronos' power was 'in the middle of the lands... in a place near springs and rivers'.[74]

Most mythographers agree that Boreas, in whose home Kronos dwelt, equates with the Norse Bör, known to the ancient Greeks as the demiurge Ophion, who, under various guises, lies at the very root of most of the world's mythologies. Thus, in the Norse epics, it is the sons of Bör who build Asgård, the abode of the gods and their kin, from which they reputedly wrought many wondrous deeds both on Earth and in the heavens[75]. Odin, the principal Norse deity, lived there, as did his Finnish counterpart Ukko, who resided at *Tätela* or the *Place of Tähti*[76]. Very interestingly, *Täht* in the Estonian language means 'Pole Star' – so, again, we are directed to a northern location for this ancient paradise.

Early Greek authors like Apollodorus and Theopompus expressly called this traditional lost land *Meropia* and its inhabitants the *Meropes*. The latter were sometimes anciently identified with the *Hyperboreans*, a near-mythical people alleged to have dwelt either in the extreme west or in the far north. Dominating all was a lofty mountain named *Meru*. Meru also features in ancient Indian epic literature, not so much as a particular peak but as a generally elevated region[77]. It was evidently the centre from which a long-forgotten empire was ruled, for we find that *Deva-Nahusha*, one of the Vedic deities of old India and whose greatness was extolled in glowing terms, for a time had:

> ...sovereign control of the affairs of *Meru*... he led his armies through all... the world; by means of matchless wisdom and miraculous heroism he made his empire universal[78].

Ancient Chinese traditions likewise speak of a highly elevated region wherein dwelt gods and other wonderful personages. The principal Chinese deity, *Lao-T'ien-Yeh*, known as the 'Heavenly Master of the First Origin', and credited with creating the first humans, reputedly lived with his consort, *Queen Wang* – who reappears in the ancient Chinese romance of the *Emperor of Mu* – in the K'un-Lun mountains[79]. Variant Chinese traditions refer to the supreme deity as *Shang-Te*, whose palace was located in a "celestial space about the North Pole"[80]. Likewise the western Mongolians placed the abode of their gods on a 'Golden Mountain', the apex of which they considered identical with the celestial Pole[81]. Presumably for these reasons the Japanese, who held essentially similar beliefs, addressed their principal god as the 'Lord of the Centre of Heaven'[82].

Probably the best known of all recollections of this idyllic land (shared by Moslem, Jew, and Christian alike) is the 'Garden of Eden'. Unmistakable variants of it occur in early Persian, Arabian and Sanskrit (Indian) literature; it is mentioned as *Atlan* by the Aztecs and as *Xibalba* by the Quiché Maya of Yucatan. The Polynesians remember it as the 'lost home of Kane', and Plato apparently left us a comparatively detailed account of it in his description of the legendary sunken island of Atlantis[83], although suspicion exists that much of his version is somewhat idealised.

Several widely-scattered traditions describe the catastrophic termination of this wonderful primordial age. The inception of terrible unaccustomed cold was a special feature of that event. Thus Iranian tradition asserts:

> The first of the good lands and countries which I, Ahura Mazda, created was *Airyana Vaejo* (Iran the Ancient)... There are ten winter months there (now), two summer months, and these are cold for the waters, cold for the earth and cold for the trees[84].

Other traditions about a disastrous refrigeration of the former abode of the gods and the cradle of mankind have been ably reviewed by Pietremont[85] who, among other things, mentioned Lactantius's assertion that prolonged darkness accompanied a dreadful winter at the time[86], and that the Delaware Indians remember closely similar details in their account of the event[87]. This icy calamity was almost certainly identical with the appalling *Fimbul* winter of Norse mythology, of which more anon.

Also remembered among the cataclysmic agencies which destroyed this primeval age was a gigantic destructive flood, in which:

> ...trees, flowers, fruits, birds, vanished in an instant, amid terrific clamour.[88]

The significance of these memories will become all too clear as this book unfolds.

5

A DISPLACED AXIS?

Very interestingly, life-forms like those just listed are biologically-compatible organisms inasmuch as, despite its traditional northern or polar location, the paradisical *Eden*, *Asgård*, *Meru* or *Airyana Vaejo* enjoyed a perennial spring-like climate. As shown later, these details are supported by a great deal of factual evidence.

It is also clear that the loss of this ancestral paradise involved a rearrangement of the seasons. Indeed, describing the "World Before the Present", the Navajo Indians of North America insist that:

> ...The seasons were much shorter than they are now. A year then was but a month of our time.[89]

The statement contained in Zad Sparan's paraphrase of chapters 1 – 5 of the Persian *Bundahish* texts agrees with the above in describing how, when *Airyana Vaejo* was lost, the whole sky and sea became deranged – and lends support to Frederick Klee's contention that certain ancient Egyptian hieroglyphs refer to a displacement of the heavens at the time of the Deluge[90]. We have just noted that a tremendous flood was allegedly one of the features of the end of the idyllic primeval age said to have preceded our own.

The above, and other similar recollections of a celestial derangement accompanying the Deluge indicate that before the onset of that calamity the celestial bodies moved differently relative to viewers on Earth. The illustrious Greek astronomer Anaxagoras taught that during the Golden Age the stars revolved in a *tholiform* manner (when stars revolve in the sky in a horizontal plane), a belief shared by another Greek astronomer, Anaximenes, who, however, preferred to say that the stars revolved in a horizontal plane. Diogenes Laertius, who recorded these opinions, added:

> At first the Pole Star, which is continually visible, always appeared in the zenith, but afterwards it acquired a certain declination.[91].

Ancient Japanese cosmogony (theory of the origin of the universe) refers to virtually the same condition, thus:

> ...the father of our present sun and moon is represented as beginning his activities in the newly-created world by repeatedly performing in a horizontal plane... Chinese traditions also refer to this.[92]

Additional confirmation of this earlier celestial arrangement (and of some later alteration to it) was given by the respected Victorian astronomer Richard Proctor, who concluded that, from the position of the aquatic constellations (given watery associations) in the most ancient astronomical systems, celestial rotation at the time of their invention must have been "...in a horizontal position"[93].* The date when these constellations were first devised is still unknown, but all authorities agree that it must have been a remotely ancient one. Certainly by 5100 BC alpha (a) Ursae Majoris or *Dubhe* in the constellation of the Great Bear (Ursa Major) had already long been viewed as a polar star, for it appears engraved upon the walls of the temple of Hathor at Denderah in Egypt, and formed the original orientation-point of that structure[94]. At that date the stars of the constellation of the Dragon (Draco) were circumpolar. It was not until 2000 BC that the stars of Ursa Major – now the principal constellation in the northern sky – became circumpolar too[95].

In this connection it is significant that for latitudes below 51°N today, the stars of Ursa Major 'set' and 'rise', and that at the latitude of the old Egyptian capital Memphis only *Dubhe* always remains above the horizon by some 5°. Nonetheless, within historical times Ursa Major was wholly invisible to residents of the Nile Valley south of Memphis[96] yet the ancient Egyptians knew that the polar axis lay in that constellation during historical times[97]. That they should have been aware of this is not, however, so very surprising when we recall that one of their leading historians, Manetho, asserted that his race possessed records of events dating back as far as 11,542 BC, or, as previously noted, Apollonius thought that by his day 153,075 years of history had passed by.

These formerly different positions of the above-mentioned constellations actually relate to the well-known astronomical phenomenon of the precession of the celestial North Pole which is, of course, matched by an equivalent effect at the celestial South Pole. Concerning these, Sir James Jeans once remarked:

> ...our ancestors of 5,000 years ago saw the heavens turning round a point in the constellation of the Dragon. For the same reasons, our posterity of 5,000 years hence will see the heavens turning round a point in the constellation of Cepheus.[98]

Recent research, however, suggests that something more profound than just a celestial precession has occurred. The precession itself is merely an effect of a more fundamental change.

Studies have shown that at 10,178 BC, or over 12,000 years ago, the celestial pole was inclined at an angle of 30° from its present position[99]. This in turn strongly suggests that the terrestrial axis was then oriented differently from today. If true, that imparts an entirely new significance to the afore-cited statements of Anaxagoras, Anaximenes, Diogenes Laertius and Proctor, and the assertions of the previously mentioned traditions. It also suggests that at the time of the Deluge which allegedly terminated the Golden Age there must have been a change to the tilt of the Earth's axis.

Any axial changes of the type just suggested would, of course, have been attended by various other major natural adjustments on quite literally a global basis. There are now

---

* See *Note 1.*

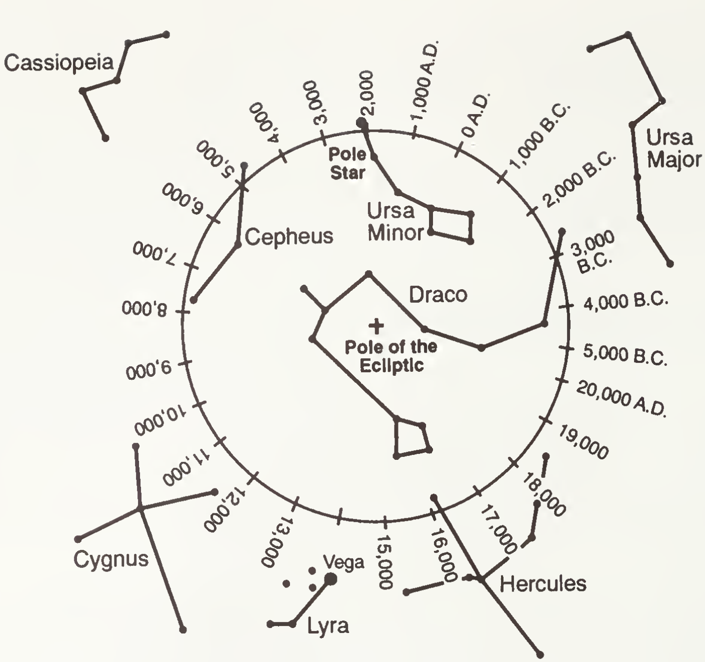
Cassiopeia
Ursa Major
Pole Star
Ursa Minor
Cepheus
Draco
Pole of the Ecliptic
Cygnus
Vega
Lyra
Hercules
2,000
1,000 A.D.
0 A.D.
1,000 B.C.
2,000 B.C.
3,000 B.C.
4,000 B.C.
5,000 B.C.
20,000 A.D.
19,000
18,000
17,000
16,000
15,000
13,000
12,000
11,000
10,000
9,000
8,000
7,000
6,000
5,000
4,000
3,000

Fig 1.1. Precession of the Polar Axis. *After Sir James Jeans.*

plenty of these on record from different parts of the world, clustered around the date of 10,178 BC, calculated as that when Earth's celestial pole lay at an angle of 30° from its present position.

According to standard Ice Age chronology (see table 1A), the final icy episode of any magnitude was the so-called Younger Dryas which brought the Pleistocene epoch to a close. This occurred between 10,000 and 11,000 years ago when the waters of the North Atlantic warmed by as much as 7°C within a mere 50 years[100], and ended a period of cold dry conditions on Greenland, slightly later at 10,700 years, in as little as 20 years – an estimate lately reduced to an "astonishingly quick 3–5 years"[101] – concomitantly with a rapid retreat of sea-ice in northern waters and a 50% increase in precipitation and snowfall[102].

Recently obtained ice-cores from Greenland reveal even quicker changes. Snowfall there, for example, "doubled rapidly... possibly in one to three years" at the close of Younger Dryas times in response "...to some kind of threshold or trigger in the North Atlantic climatic system"[103]. The effects of these climate changes, described by some recent investigators as *brief* and *dramatic*, were felt all round the North Atlantic basin[104], in Alaska, where they took place between 11,000 and 10,000 years ago[105], and, as in Europe[106], involved marked vegetational changes[107].

Essentially comparable changes also occurred then about the same time much more distantly. Space limitations here preclude the recitation of many details, although we may highlight those from Tibet and China, where climate changes seriously affected Tibetan lake levels and led to long-term aridity across much of the Tibetan plateau, a process commencing "suddenly" about 10,000 years ago[108], and where Chinese climatic conditions and plant life were enormously affected by a northerly displacement of a greatly enhanced monsoonal system which did not occupy its present, more southerly, sphere of operations until about 6,000 years ago[109].

All such data are indicative of seriously, and suddenly, disturbed atmospheric and oceanic circulatory systems of the kind that could be expected to naturally attend an alteration to the angle of Earth's axis – assuming that such a change is possible or actually occurred in the geologically recent past. As later pages show, such a change almost certainly did occur, and, not unexpectedly, involved many other factors in addition to those just mentioned. Before we can consider these, however, it will be necessary to review some further aspects of the general scenario which has unfolded so far.

6

THE PARADOX

It was precisely the kind of traditional backdrop which we have outlined on preceding pages that, confronting the emerging discipline of geology some 170 years ago, clearly indicated to the pioneer geologists that, together with 'drift', 'erratic' boulders and fresh-looking land-surface phenomena, a major physical disturbance had afflicted Earth within geologically very recent times. This perspective remained popular until about 1830, when Charles Lyell, then a young lawyer, published an alternative interpretation, his celebrated 'principles of uniformity'[110].

Like Hutton before him, Lyell argued that no past geological processes radically differed from those operating today. Deposits have accumulated slowly over periods individually lasting many thousands, even millions, of years. Wind, rain and frost had inexorably denuded landscapes just as surely as oceans had sculpted shorelines. The temporal and geographical extent of any former natural upheavals such as earthquakes and volcanic eruptions must of necessity been brief; they were not global events. The world-embracing cataclysms of the 'Catastrophists' were ruled out; 'gradualism' was said to have been the overriding norm. If it had occurred at all, the Deluge was considered to have been a relatively modest event confined to a limited geographical region. The term 'Pleistocene' was coined specifically to embrace the various 'diluvial' (flood-borne) formations – the sands, gravels, muds, silts, *etc* – of the 'Catastrophists', and as a distinctive name for the period when these had been deposited.

Lyell's views, having the special merit of giving a terrestrial rather than a cosmic cause for the present panorama of a debris-strewn world, were quickly held to signify 'uniformitarianism' (as opposed to the until then popular 'catastrophism') and soon came to be accorded a respect only slightly lower than that usually reserved for Holy Writ.

Thus, supporters of Lyell's ideas became known as 'Uniformitarians', and 'uniformitarianism' became a pillar of conventional geological dogma. How the acceptance of 'uniformitarianism' soon afterwards led to the formulation of the Glacial Theory and the idea of an Ice Age will be presented shortly.

In one geological camp we thus have 'Catastrophists' who have long sought to use scientific data to prove the former reality of terrible world disasters – particularly the Deluge of global recollection. They have emphasised that numerous Deluge traditions mention one or more celestial agents as having assailed Earth and having caused that watery calamity, and that prolific evidence capable of being reasonably interpreted as having originated in just such circumstances is available for study. In effect their argument is essentially identical to that presently urged by the proponents of the recently advanced theory of an asteroidal or cometary termination of the Mesozoic Era during late Cretaceous times.

In the opposite camp, 'Uniformitarians' have argued that, despite the evidence of the frozen Siberian carcasses (apparent examples of a catastrophic event which we consider again in greater detail later), recurrent disasters of such magnitude are completely at variance with the normal workings of Nature on Earth. They discern no terrestrial mechanism capable of generating of its own volition a cataclysm as allegedly gigantic as the Deluge, despite the fact that leading Catastrophists like Whiston[111], Donnelly[112], Beaumont[113], Patten[114] and others specifically invoked external (cosmic) causes for that calamity. Since 'uniformitarians' perceive or admit of no physical proof of a conflict between this planet and some other celestial agent, they regard as spurious all claims advocating such an idea. Furthermore, they contend that the factual data regularly used to support 'catastrophist' arguments relates mostly to the widespread action of *ice*, not water.

It is, therefore, paradoxical that a worldwide traditional memory of an appalling watery disaster during the infancy of mankind, involving one or more cosmic visitors, has persisted from earliest historical times. Further, that science, having assembled a veritable library of facts dealing with the very same period, interprets the same evidence as due to quite another cause. The 'catastrophist' and 'uniformitarian' schools of thought are thus apparently diametrically opposed.

As we now shall see, this is not necessarily the case at all.

7

PERSPECTIVES – A QUESTION OF SCALE

In actuality 'uniformitarianism' is 'catastrophism', but on an insignificant and hugely broadened-out scale. There is no hard dividing line separating the two extremes represented by these terms. The word 'scale', however, is the key to this whole scenario: it permits the development of accurate perspectives. Such perspectives, however, are scarcely attainable if the apparently diametrically opposed concepts of 'uniformitarianism' and 'catastrophism' are rigorously compartmentalised and continue to be regarded as incompatible.

Dictionaries define the word 'scale' as the ratio between given sizes or intensities of events and things (both animate and inanimate), and denotes *relative magnitude*. Compared to an ant, for example, a human being is a very large entity, and the ant is enormous compared to a microbe. The same human being is quite small alongside the largest tree or whale, and is almost insignificant compared to a mountain or an ocean. Even the mightiest mountain is no more than a pimple on Earth's crust, and any one of the oceans but a puddle on the planet's uneven surface. Yet even the largest mountain is dwarfed by the smallest ocean.

Although colossal by human standards, Earth itself is a rather modestly-sized planet and, as with all the other planets forming the solar system, is a very small object relative to the Sun around which it orbits. Viewed astronomically, however, the Sun and the solar system is almost invisibly tiny compared to the immensity of the galaxy (to earthbound observers best known as the Milky Way) of which it is a member. The unimaginably vast distances separating the Sun from its orbiting planets, the planets from each other, and the solar system generally from the nearest stars, immediately put into clear spatial perspectives the great event discussed in this book.

Nature itself operates essentially as a series of disasters. These, relative to the organisms and environmental conditions involved at any given moment of time, are no less catastrophic than the frightful disaster described on following pages. For example, natural marine and river erosion constantly destroy, through undercutting, stream banks and coastal cliffs. For organisms inhabiting such places, such physical alterations are frequently lethal and at best decimatory. Again, unseasonably wet weather can rot seeds, fruits and flowers before they can germinate or pollinate successfully. Similarly, prolonged drought can shrivel vegetation or generate fires every bit as calamitous as high winds can remove blossom before it can 'set', or cause chronic 'windburn' to plants at vital youthful stages of their development – in the process stultifying harvests and crops. Moreover, particular combinations of climatic factors can and often do encourage abnormal increases in insect and rodent populations preparatory to insect and vermin plagues.

Viewed locally, and irrespective of whether they occur suddenly, violently or intensely, or operate slowly over many weeks or months (such as the 'Dutch Elm Disease' episode of the 1970s), all these and many other analogous events are catastrophic. They are apparently the underlying cause for the 'survival of the fittest' as defined by Darwin and other evolutionists.

When such episodes are small-scale, or fail to affect human beings significantly, they either pass unnoticed or are generally regarded by irritated farmers, meteorologists and naturalists as normal quirks of Nature. Yet, despite representing miniature catastrophes, they continue to be regarded as natural expressions of 'uniformitarianism'.

If such events manifest as landslides, floods, volcanic eruptions, earthquakes or tsunamis[115] and happen suddenly, violently or with great intensity, or when they occasion appreciable loss of property or 'valued' life (*ie* people, owned livestock, *etc*), they are noticed and bracketed as cataclysms, and the regions they worst affect as 'disaster areas'. It seems to be commonly accepted that such events naturally but sporadically punctuate the uniformitarian norm (as defined by Lyellian dogma), which thus extends to include even such dreadful events as the Krakatau explosion of 1883[116].

Yet none of these 'catastrophes' is individually large or intense enough to terminate a whole geological era or period, or to usher in a new one along the lines postulated by many past 'catastrophist' authors.

Compartmentalisation of traumas like those outlined above, though perhaps convenient for insurance purposes, is demonstrably unstable scientifically. 'Natural disasters' like those just enumerated are relatively no more and no less 'natural' or 'disastrous' than the aforementioned and comparatively innocuous cliff falls, plagues and crop failures. The only difference separating all these events is the intensity and extent of their occurrence. This difference is purely one of *scale*.

Thus, as long as portions of the Earth's crust do not collapse or get up-heaved into mountain ranges, and oceans are not displaced or drained, man seems content to treat all lesser disasters as normal expressions of 'uniformitarianism' – which, of course, they are. Nevertheless, he is quick to categorise anything larger or more severe, such as terrestrial convulsions induced by, say, celestial agencies (which at present we can merely envisage theoretically), as pure 'catastrophism', and places it outside 'uniformitarianism' as we usually conceive it.

Astronomers and astrophysicists, familiar with the near-endless succession of paroxysmal events occurring naturally throughout the universe during the birth, evolution and demise of galaxies, stars and sundry other cosmic bodies, concede that such events are part of the astronomical norm. As such, despite their inherent catastrophic character, they represent 'astronomical uniformitarianism'.

Again, the question of *scale* is once more the overriding factor here.

When, as established by modern astronomical research, cosmic events like supernovae explosions occur comparatively close to the solar system, we are still dealing with 'astronomical uniformitarianism'. Though fortunately infrequent in our sector of the galaxy, it is inevitable that such events will occur sooner or later in the vicinity of the solar system and, in the larger scheme of things, must actually be *expected* to do so. Thus, because Earth is a celestial body, it would, in the event of an encounter with some intrusive celestial object, react according to natural planetary 'laws' which, as we have just indicated, must themselves be a part of 'uniformitarianism' in its widest (cosmic) sense.

It is only when an event of that kind occurs, however, that these more violent aspects of 'uniformitarianism' can manifest themselves on Earth, for they do not and cannot arise of their own volition without external (cosmic) stimuli. Thus, if appropriate circumstances were to occur, the operation of such 'laws' on a watery planet like Earth could, among other things, be expected to cause oceanic displacement on a scale which might well approach the traditional proportions of the Deluge. Such disturbances would be lethal for all pre-existing topography and biota, and would rapidly result in the development of conditions where the doctrine of 'survival of the fittest' – so typical of Lyellian 'uniformitarianism' – would be supplanted by that of 'survival of the luckiest'. That, most interestingly, is exactly what so many Deluge traditions around the world expressly state.

Cosmically induced upheavals like these not only differ from conventional uniformitarian disturbances by their enormously greater magnitude, violence and intensity, but from the fact that, in one form or another, they perforce encompass practically the entire globe[117]. However one *wants* to regard the collective testimony of the world's Flood traditions, there is no escaping its almost monotonously recurrent assertion that the Deluge was a *worldwide* event – precisely what a catastrophe generated by cosmic agencies could be expected to induce. In that connection it is hardly necessary to stress that the juxtaposition in numerous traditions of huge terrestrial convulsions and certain celestial bodies at the very time of the Deluge can scarcely be a coincidence or the happy product of traditional imagination.

The reality is, of course, 'uniformitarianism' and 'catastrophism' are merely opposite extremes of an essentially ongoing chain of essentially calamitous natural episodes spanning the observable universe and ranging, as far as we humans are concerned, from the almost-insignificant to the virtually world-shattering. Once this problem of scale is overcome psychologically, comprehension of what follows in this book should grow progressively clearer.

To what extent, then, are the perspectives of the 'catastrophists' and the 'uniformitarians' actually correct? Are the former woefully wrong and the latter right, or is the reverse true? Could the arguments and contentions of both schools of thought be simultaneously partially valid *and* partially erroneous? Is there, in fact, any possibility at all of effectively reconciling such basically different points of view? Believing that there is, we devote the remainder of this book to resolving this seemingly intractable problem.

8

THE BIRTH OF THE GLACIAL THEORY

One of the most puzzling facts of Nature confronting late eighteenth and early nineteenth century scholars was the occurrence of the aforementioned frozen animal carcasses of Siberia. Not surprisingly, several earlier authorities, including Pallas[118], Cuvier[119], Erman[120] and D'Archiac[121], who subscribed to the (catastrophist) Diluvial Theory, concluded that a colossal mass of moving water had overwhelmed those creatures.

It was, and still is, widely contended that the preserved hairy coats of these frozen animals served as natural protection against severe cold, and that their owners were former denizens of Arctic latitudes now hosting their remains. This view is still often reflected in artists' reconstructions of these bygone mammals. As modern researches have shown, however, such conclusions have proved to be no more than *assumptions* (see appendix A) and, as we shall see in Part Five, most of the animals now found as frozen carcasses were corpses *before* they were refrigerated.

Nevertheless, it was the coupling of these assumptions with Lyell's then new and superficially attractive theory of 'uniformity' that led early nineteenth century geologists to reconsider the origin of polished and striated rocks, the singular distribution of 'erratic' boulders and the conditions under which the immense 'drift' deposits had accumulated. All these had clearly been produced by an agency or process evidently operating contemporaneously with the deep-freezing of animals in northern Siberia. If, it was reasoned, these latter were animals specially equipped to withstand great cold – as must also have been the *same* species known

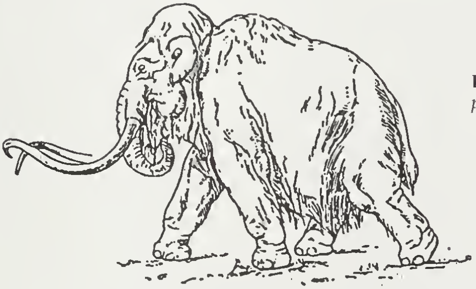

Left: Fig 1.2a. The Hairy Mammoth *(Mammuthus primigenius). After Erwin C Christman.*

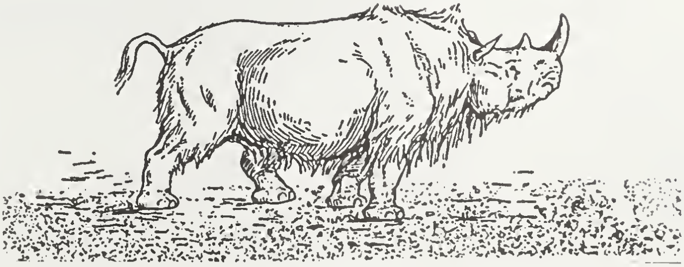

Right: Fig 1.2b. The Woolly Rhinoceros *(Coelodonta tichorhinus). After Erwin C Christman.*

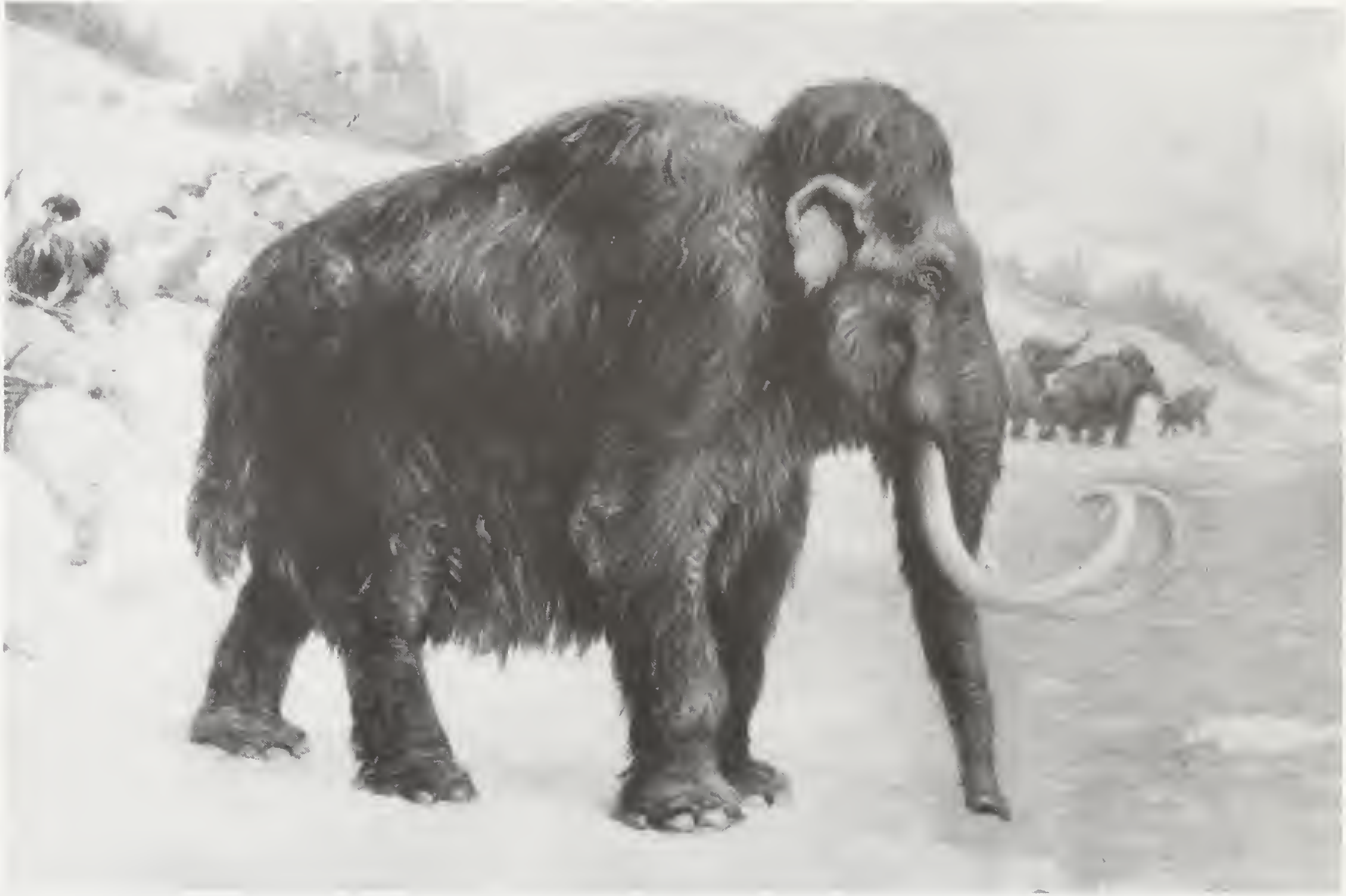

Fig 1.3. Hairy Mammoths. Charles R. Knight's well-known painting (a precursor of many others) has done much to perpetuate the myth that mammoths were adapted to Arctic conditions (see Appendix A). *Courtesy of American Museum of Natural History, Dept. of Library Services. Photo: H.S. Rice.*

further south only from unfrozen bones – then had not all this vast corpus of associated phenomena – in particular the striated and polished rocks – resulted from intense and widespread glaciation? Such glaciation, though now largely melted everywhere except in Arctic Siberia, had *a priori* affected all territories yielding remains of animals *assumed* to have been adapted biologically to icy conditions.

Put another way, did not the occurrence in 'drift' deposits of unfrozen remains of animals identical to those represented by the Siberian carcasses prove that ice had formerly covered all the regions where such remains are now found? Would not the one-time presence of ice across all these regions reconcile the apparent anomalies of the fossil record?

It was decided, therefore, that in the not-so-distant geological past – a factor emphasised by the remarkable freshness and scarcely-fossilised condition of the bones of the 'drift' animals – huge areas of the northern hemisphere must either have been swathed in ice or had experienced temperatures considerably lower than they do today.

In 1821, the Swiss engineer Ignaz Venetz drew attention to evidence he took to be former Alpine glaciation on a huge scale[122]. Shortly afterwards the Norwegian geologist Jens Esmarch similarly advocated far greater landward extensions of the Norwegian glaciers and, by 1832, Prof A Bernhardi had proposed that the North Polar ice had once extended to the southernmost edge of the German plain now dotted with 'erratics'. Just two years later, Johann von Charpentier noted the existence of deep grooves and scratches on many Alpine rock surfaces and boulders and, like a colleague, Karl Schimper, concluded that they were the work of ice and that a veritable Ice Age characterised by numerous large glaciers descending hills and mountains everywhere in central Europe had once been a reality. By virtue of their natural slow movements, glaciers, of course, admirably epitomised Lyell's then recently-published theory of uniformity and gradualism.

Thus, with their constant and remorseless movement, active glaciers (as distinct from those in retreat) were thought to be capable of providing the continuous power necessary to move huge boulders, striate and polish rock surfaces, and deepen or widen older valleys. The stony material excavated by the ice would be carried slowly down to the terminal ends of the glaciers in the normal way and there deposited as moraines (piles of deposited debris) analogous to those still formed by many present glaciers. Earlier investigators professedly saw morainic debris in the many heaps and banks of stones and gravel traceable all over western and central Europe, and the notion soon arose that all these had once been deposited by now vanished glaciers.

By 1836, when the Swiss naturalist Louis Agassiz of Motiers joined Charpentier in his Alpine studies, many ears receptive to the idea of former extensive glaciation already existed in Europe, and a report submitted by Agassiz to the Annual Congress of Swiss Scientists in the July of that year was accordingly well received. Agassiz's report proposed that a profound fall in temperature had occurred *previous* to the upheaval of the Alps and that tremendous masses of ice had smothered land surfaces as far distant as 'erratics' and striated rocks are now distributed. Agassiz expanded his ideas in a larger work published in 1840[123] and it established him as the inventor of the Ice Age, even though, as noted above, Charpentier and Schimper had independently proposed just such an 'age' several years earlier.

After disposing of all previous alternative hypotheses, Agassiz argued that repeated falls of temperature had occurred before the Alpine upheaval and that an immense ice-sheet or *mer de glace* had covered the greater part of northern and western Europe, much of the western end of the Mediterranean as far south as the Atlas Mountains of North Africa, and that a similar glacial mantle had blanketed north-western Asia and much of North America. Only the highest summits protruded above Agassiz's alleged glacial 'sea', principally because their jagged and angular profiles were obviously never rounded or smoothed by ice. Agassiz then envisaged an Alpine rise, an increase in temperature and a melting away of the ice-sheet.

He failed to explain why there had been a lowering of temperature in the first place, merely alluding vaguely to some sort of climatological change. That, if true, was, like the ice, no more than an *effect* of some other cause – a circular argument if ever there was one! It apparently never occurred to Agassiz, nor his many supporters, that such a change must have been occasioned by something *even more radical* than the immense ice accumulations he postulated. Nevertheless, once formed, the ice itself must also have engendered a lowering of temperature across the regions it allegedly covered.

Despite these shortcomings, Agassiz's hypothesis won rapid acceptance in geological circles – one suspects because, to at least some degree, it followed so closely upon the heels of Lyell's by then fashionable and beguilingly logical theory of uniformity. Indeed, it was soon widely held that huge slow-moving glaciers and ice-sheets were sufficient to account for all observable 'drift' phenomena. That extensive, enormously thick, ice-sheets formerly lay across vast tracts of the northern hemisphere during Pleistocene times began to be accepted as having actually occurred. Theory was beginning to be converted into fact.

As scholars pondered the implications of Agassiz's theory it became apparent that as the ice-sheets could not have moved of their own accord, and allegedly buried all but the very highest peaks of known mountain systems in the regions they supposedly blanketed, still higher ground had to exist somewhere within the ice's sphere of advocated operations to supply the impetus to propel them equatorwards. To overcome that problem it was speculated that crustal dislocations resulting in the up-rise of a range of very high mountains had taken place in the far north, at or near the present North Pole. The steep gradients occasioned by the range's great altitude allegedly provided the conditions necessary to push accumulating ice downwards and outwards to the distant margins of the ice-sheets. Later, it was argued, these mountains subsided and the ice, no longer replenished and deprived of motion, melted away.

The scenario just outlined was, of course, not only conjectural but completely false. Science has never found any trace of the imaginary northern mountain range. In retrospect it is astonishing that this unscientific explanation *ever* came to be formulated, yet in a short time both it and the concept of immense thick ice-sheets descending from a hypothetical northern mountain system, to cover all of northern and eastern North America and western and northern Eurasia, was enthusiastically embraced and came to be regarded as virtually established fact. After all, it was argued, did not the slow but irresistible power of enormously thick moving ice ideally explain the observed distribution of the 'erratics', striae and the 'drift' deposits? Such views, albeit somewhat modified, still persist today.

And then an interesting development occurred.

Over a decade later, the Scottish geologist Andrew Ramsay completed studies which suggested that the Pleistocene epoch had hosted *two* glacial ages. Soon afterwards, Oswald Heer, investigating the Pleistocene flora of Switzerland, discovered 'interglacial' deposits containing remains of warm-temperate plants and animals. Independent confirmation of two or more apparently warmer interglacial episodes was also afforded about that time by German evidence. Then, in 1875, Otto Torrell thought he could conclusively show that the numerous north German 'erratics' had been dispersed to their present locations by giant glaciers moving southwards from a central ice-sheet believed to have occupied the Scandinavian plateau.

To confuse matters, several later geologists significantly increased the number of supposed ice ages and interglacials (or interstadials as they are now often called). Prof Penck, for instance, argued for three or four, Prof Geikie for five or six, and Dr Croll for seven. Various later writers have suggested even higher numbers. In contrast, at least two leading American authorities, Wright and Upham, maintained that there was really only one ice age of considerable duration which, periodically expanding and contracting, gave the impression of alternating glacial and interglacial episodes. Ocean levels are also said to have fluctuated appropriately during this alleged cycle of events.

Inevitably, the length of the Pleistocene epoch hosting these events increased every time writers multiplied the number of separate glacial and interglacial episodes. Thus, initially of modest duration, it steadily lengthened to one or two or more million years. *En route* to arriving at that situation, all kinds of estimates of the durations of the supposed glacial and interglacial cycles were proposed, discussed and, as often as not, discarded. Precise agreement was almost never reached. More recently, the great lengths previously advocated for the formation and for the waning of these episodes have begun to be queried, and in some cases drastically reduced on the basis of new evidence.* Although this aspect of the Ice Age will be examined more fully later, we may nevertheless recall noting earlier that the growth and decay of some of these glacial and interglacial phases proceeded with remarkable rapidity[124] – quite unlike the process imagined by Agassiz, Penck, Geikie and most earlier glacialists, and quite at variance with the gradualism enshrined in Lyell's famous theory of uniformity.

Thus, through an uneasy mixture of field discoveries, inferences and presumptions, was born the concept of an Ice Age occupying an ever-lengthening Pleistocene period. By now, of course, it will be evident that the whole edifice of the Ice Age of orthodoxy rests upon very shaky ground. That is not to assert that the Ice Age did not exist, but does indicate that it occurred in a form and by a means not properly accommodated by conventional dogma. Moreover, a serious error down the years has been the general acceptance by most older (and many present) glaciologists that the Ice Age, whatever its origin, character and duration, developed and ran its course in a world topographically similar to that of today. As we shall now see, that too was a fallacy, and that the implications of that conclusion are huge and very far reaching.

9

UPHEAVAL

There is absolutely no doubt that the stupendous natural forces connected with mountain-building (orogeny) are closely related to large-scale deformation of the Earth's crust, and that many of the world's highest ranges originated in and even attained their present elevations during crustal disturbances that signalled the end of Pleistocene times. That is not to imply that the Alps or Himalayas, for instance, attained their present form at a single catastrophic stroke, for reliable evidence indicates that the original upthrust of these and other ranges first began millions of years earlier, in some cases as far back as the Mesozoic Era (see table 1A). Varying amounts of increasing elevation occurred sporadically down to the close of the Pleistocene. We do urge, however, that a high percentage of today's major ranges rose to their present heights only at the end of, or after, Pleistocene times. By general consensus of opinion, that event occurred about 11,000 years before the present (see Part Five). Before then, as demonstrated by numerous geological facts and observations, mountains were mostly of very modest elevation. Evidence supporting that contention is both widespread and convincing.

---

* See *Note 2.*

The geological modernity of folded mountains in many parts of Asia was recognised early this century by Dr Bailey Willis when he wrote how they "challenge credulity by their extreme youth"[125]. His conclusions were confirmed by studies of mountain ranges in China, where huge uplifts of the Earth's crust were found to have occurred *since* the glacial period[126]. Similar youthfulness characterises the ranges bordering the western Gobi desert, including all those from the Russian Altai mountains to the Tien Shan range[127]. Indeed, it has been said of this region that:

> The present Gobi basin is relatively young, and was formed coincidentally with the uplift of the Transbaikal ranges.[128]

Certainly within human memory a large inland sea, referred to in ancient Chinese records as the 'Great Han Hai', occupied the Gobi basin. This apparently extended from the Great Khingan Shan in the east to the Tien Shan and Pamir ranges in the west, a distance of some 2,000 miles (3,200km), and from north to south a distance of some 700 miles (1,120km). Its volume was accordingly immense. At the time of the sea's existence, the entire basin apparently lay from two to three thousand feet (600 to 900m) *lower* than it does today, and there is every indication that it was uplifted simultaneously not only with the Pamirs and great ranges of western China but also with the Tibetan plateau immediately to the south. The draining away of the water constituting this inland sea must have been a truly devastating event.

The same upheaval affected the mountainous region of northern China too, where huge lava outpourings occurred on the Great Khingan Shan[129]. Not improbably these events were concurrent with the similarly large basaltic flows on the neighbouring Sikhote-Alin range, and with the spectacular collapse of the sea floor by many thousands of metres, along the eastern shoreline of the present Kamchatka peninsula, all the way south to the islands of Japan[130]. The Bayan Kara Shan range in western China was upheaved some 6,500ft (2,000m), while Minya Konka, one of the world's highest peaks, was uplifted 3,250ft (1,000m), more or less coincidentally with the elevations of the ranges in Yunnan Province by at least 6,500ft (2,000m)[131]. Southwards, the Tibetan Plateau was elevated by a still greater amount – 9,750ft (3,000m). Opinions differ whether this took place in early[132] or late[133] Pleistocene times – but as this uplift is known to have been coincident with the elevation of the Himalayas to their present height, which, according to Flint[134] and others, occurred *at* or *just after* the end of Pleistocene times, we are probably justified in ascribing a like date to the Tibetan disturbances too.

Flint linked this Himalayan uprise with the formation of other major Earth features thus:

> Late Pleistocene uplift occurred in the Himalayan region and in the Alps, and large scale rifting took place in eastern Africa[135].

Among other ranges affected then were "the Cordilleran systems in both North and South America, the Caucasus, and many others"[136]. Wadia confirmed this with regard to Himalayan orogeny when he wrote:

> Evidence of the extreme youth of Himalayan orogeny has multiplied of recent years. The tilting and elevation of the Pleistocene lake and river deposits of the Kashmir valley (Karewa series) containing fossil plants and vertebrates, to a height of 5,000–6,000ft; the dissection of river terraces containing post-Tertiary mammalia to a depth of over 3,000ft and the over-thrusting of the older Himalayan rocks upon Pleistocene gravel and alluvia of the plains have been noted by the Geological Survey of India and other observers[137].

Astonishing as it may seem, this over-thrusting of older upon newer formations was attended by the dragging-up by more than 5,000ft (1,500m) of marine beds containing palaeolithic remains in Kashmir, and occurred during the age of humanity[138]. The Indian geologist M S Krishnan traced evidence for an extraordinarily massive uplift of the Pir Panjal mountains, also in Kashmir, which attained an even greater elevation. He noted:

> The last stage of the uplift, which must have been of the order of 6,000ft, is believed to have occurred since the advent of early man. This upheaval has not only elevated the Pir Panjal and folded and tilted the Karewas, but has also affected the rocks of the Potwar and the Salt range.[139]

Not only were the Himalayas and their satellite ranges affected by this gigantic crustal uplift, but so also were the Pamirs, the Hindu Kush, Karakoram and Kailas ranges, the Kun-lun mountains and the Altai and Tien Shan ranges, all of which rose to their present altitudes geologically *very* recently[140]. After detailed studies of the Nanga-Parbat massif in the western Himalayas, Dr P Finsterwalder concluded that its uprise was immediately *post-glacial*[141]. Such crustal movements understandably affected local natural drainage, rivers there exhibiting repeated proofs of rejuvenation due to uplifted watersheds. The course of the Narbada River, which has been changed by "late earth movements", is a fine instance of this, while the precipitous waterfalls at Jabalpur owe their present spectacular image to the same cause[142].

Comparably vast changes in the elevations of hills and mountains and of a reorganised water pattern took place about the same time in Burma[143] and undoubtedly extended to northern Thailand, Laos and parts of Vietnam as far south as Malaya. Upraised beaches along the latter's coast show:

> ...a recession of the sea and a lowering of sea level of at least 50ft... There is evidence that the sea level has fallen more than 300ft, in the area including Mt Ophir and Kedah Peak, *since*, or during, Pleistocene times.[144] (Our italics).

Might not the elevation of these beaches have resulted as much from an uprise of the land as from a drop in sea level? Such an explanation would accord with Umbgrove's statement that:

> Should one, nevertheless, cling to the theory of submerged continents, the only alternative would be to assume that while vast blocks were being submerged in one area, parts of the ocean floor of almost identical size were being elevated in others[145].

In other words, when portions of the Earth's crust sink in one place, other portions tend to rise elsewhere in compensation.

Space limitations preclude more than the most cursory references to the similar and apparently coeval evidence known from the Philippines[146], various parts of Indonesia[147], the Pacific generally and Australia[148], so suffice here to assert that *much of the topography of all these regions came into being a mere 11,000 years or so ago.*

Before that date it was markedly different.

Much the same can be said of the present Alpine scenery in Europe. Not so long ago, geologically speaking, they were little more than a chain of low hills[149], but, judging from the under-cited remarks of Dr Reginald Daly of Harvard, the processes by which they acquired their present character involved a truly appalling paroxysm of Nature.

> During the building of the Alps gigantic slabs of rock, thousands of feet thick, hundreds of miles long and tens of miles wide, were thrust up and then over, relatively to the rocks beneath. The direction of the relative over-thrusting movement was from Africa towards the main mass of Europe to the north. The visible rocks of the northern Alps of Switzerland have thus been shoved northwards distances in the order of 100 miles. In a sense the Alps used to be on the present site of northern Italy.[150]

In effect, the present Alps represent a crustal shortening of "about 100km"[151], which some authorities have suggested was as much as 600km[152]. This was caused by a variety of interrelated processes including massive over-thrusting of older upon younger strata analogous to that previously noted in the Himalayas. Over-thrusting on a grand scale is common for instance in the Jura mountains[153], while that in the Glarus mountains of east Switzerland is traceable for many miles and is a showpiece of Alpine geology[154]. The Silbern and Glarnisch peaks are arresting examples of *stratal inversion*, and the Roggenstock, the Mönch and the mighty Jungfrau not less so[155].

Although various explanations of the precise *modus operandi* of these processes have been proposed from time to time, their cause and development are still imperfectly understood. Erich Haarmann advocated that the great rock masses were *forced to slide over one another* by their own tremendous weight, but the role played in this process by plutonic melts (layers of molten rocks formed deep within the Earth), such as would permit this, has yet to be clarified. Nonetheless Haarmann's hypothesis is perhaps still the most attractive of those available. Certainly the juggernaut-like progress of billions of tonnes of rock over surface strata, crushing and obliterating everything in its path is almost unimaginable.

Prof Oswald Heer associated this convulsion with the "glacial epoch"[156] during late Pleistocene times. Today, the summits of three of the highest Alpine peaks, Mt Blanc, Monte Rosa and the Matterhorn, respectively stand 15,781ft (4,856m), 15,217ft (4,682m) and 14,691ft (4,520m) above sea level. If we assume the description of the proto-Alps as "low hills" to signify no more than say 2,000ft (600m), the uprise involved must have been as much as 12,000–13,000ft (3,700–4,000m). A stratal uplift of this magnitude is positively staggering, while the heat generated by the physical over-thrusting and inversion of such gigantic rocky masses must have been appalling.

It is unnecessary here to review all the great mountain systems of the world. We may pass on to consider just a few outstanding examples from Africa and the Americas, merely pausing *en route* to note that the elevation of the Norwegian mountains, with their fiords – of which more shortly – is thought to have been late glacial or even post-glacial[157].

Almost certainly the orogeny just discussed was coeval with crustal dislocations along the north-west African coast and in the adjacent Atlas mountains. The latter, in particular the Anti-Atlas, formerly extended into the present Atlantic Ocean at least as far as the Canary Islands. The subsidence of this earlier westerly prolongation of Africa, marked by gross local distortions of strata, occurred in late Pleistocene or *earliest* Holocene times[158]. Significantly, coincidental with this subsidence, the Hoggar (Ahaggar) and Aïr regions of the Sahara far to the south-east were evidently in the process of being abruptly upheaved[159].

Unquestionably, these elevatory and depressive crustal movements, the emptying in some localities of lakes and inland seas and the creation and enlarging of rivers elsewhere were intimately connected with huge tectonic disturbances of the kind that produced the Great Rift Valley of east Africa, a feature commonly assigned to late glacial (Pleistocene) times[160].

These geophysical changes find almost exactly similar parallels in the Americas. Referring to the western Cordilleras of North America, Daly remarked:

> ...the whole Rocky Mountain front, for hundreds of miles, has been pushed up and then out, many miles over the plains.[161]

Writing specifically of Chief Mountain in Montana, he noted how it was:

> ...thrust bodily upon much younger strata of the Great Plains, and then driven over them eastwards, for a distance of at least eight miles. Indeed, the thrust may have been several times eight miles.[162]

Such crustal dislocations embraced enormous areas and titanic tonnage. For example: "All of the Glacier National Park in Montana and all the Rocky Mountain area up to the Yellowhead Pass in Alberta" was moved laterally for many miles[163]. These mountains,

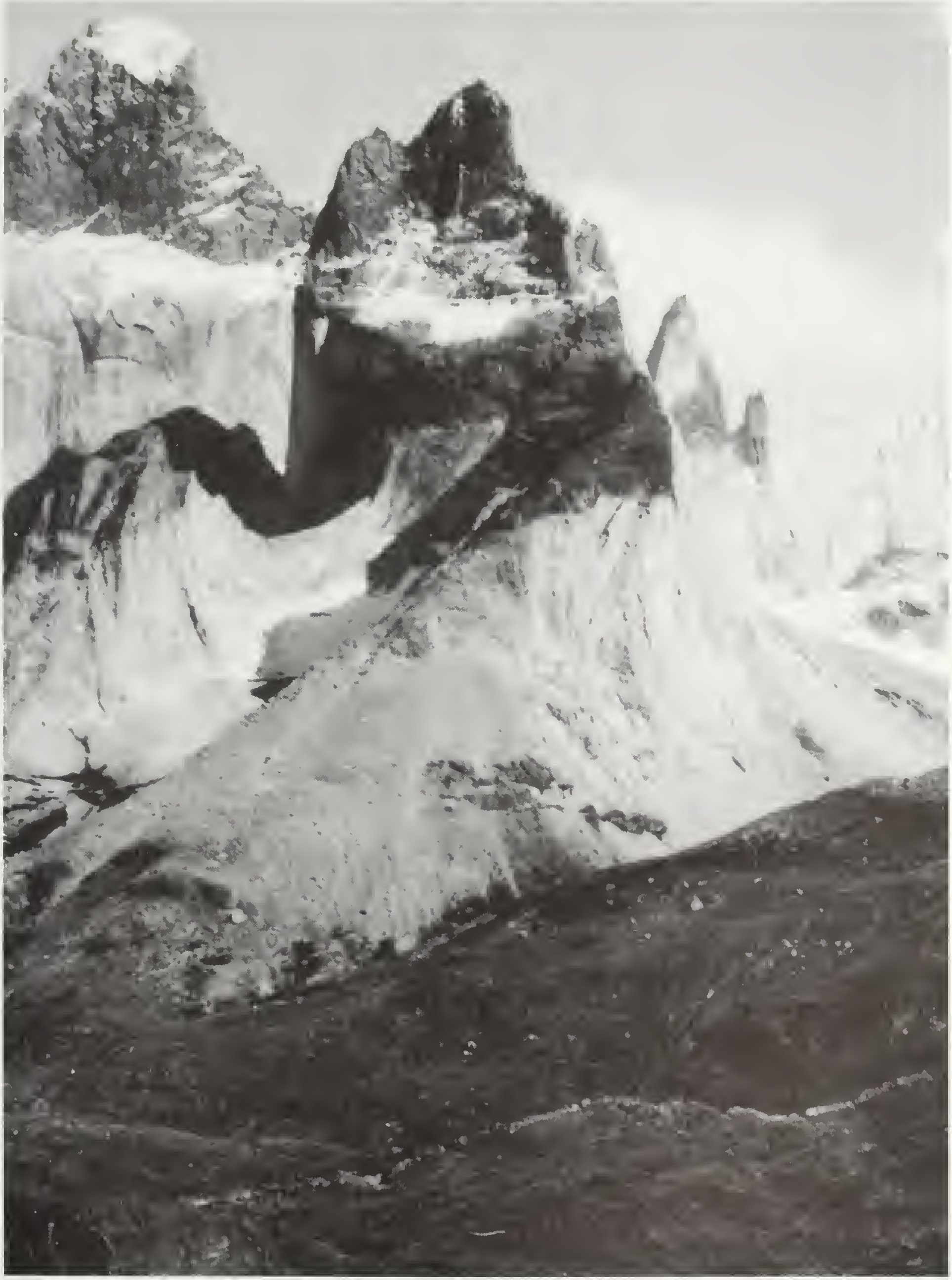

Fig 1.4. Youthful mountain profiles in the high Andes, southern Chile.
Courtesy of P J Michael, Univ of British Columbia, Canada.

therefore, afford strident echoes of the situation already recorded in the Alps and Himalayas and it is certainly no surprise to find Forrest adding:

> There is a good body of evidence, that the elevation of the western part of North America (like that of Norway) was *post*-glacial or *late* glacial.[164] (Our italics).

Considering the Coast Ranges of southern California, another authority observed: "There, within the short limits of the Pleistocene Epoch, strata a mile thick were deposited"[165]. These were later intensely eroded and deformed, being "...finally... uplifted a quarter of a mile above the sea – the last episode is demonstrated by a flight of marine terraces which marches like a cyclopean stairway up the seaward slope of some parts of the range".[166]

This rate of deposition (not to mention the degree of crustal uplift – itself of late or post-glacial age) hugely transcended the norm demanded by Lyell's gradualism, as also did the geologically very recent and cataclysmic stratal contortion and upheaval, by at least 6,500ft (2,000m), of the Cascade Mountains and the Sierra Nevada in Oregon and eastern California[167].

South of the Equator, the mighty Andes everywhere exhibit signs of extreme youthfulness. The longest continuous range on Earth, the Andes are actually very ancient mountains which only acquired their present striking relief at the end of Pleistocene times[168]. This has been described as geologically very rapid and attended by intense vulcanism[169], several of the volcanoes attaining enormous heights. The Andean uplift was immense, with mountain passes in Peru and Bolivia often lying as much as 13,000ft (4,000m) above sea level. Everywhere the rugged and jagged profiles of the Andean peaks bespeak of violent, catastrophic formation.

Confronting us at almost every turn are abundant, indisputable and tellingly consistent evidences of a geologically recent, worldwide orogeny characterised by crustal

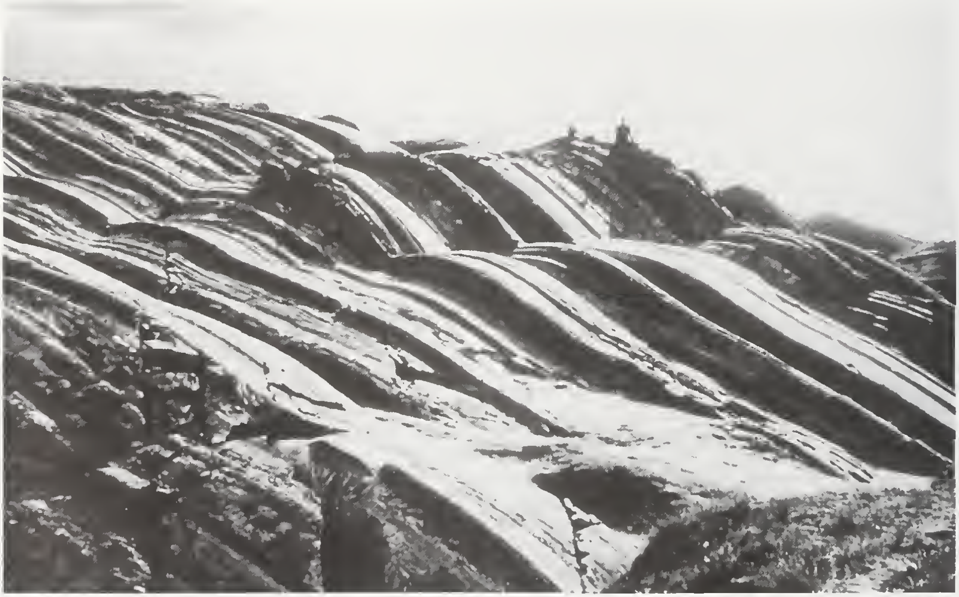

Fig 1.5. Geologically youthful fault-grooves in the Peruvian Andes, near Cuzco. Formerly attributed to glacial action, this feature provides evidence of the magnitude of crustal disturbances.
Courtesy of Dr Siegfried Muessig, Los Angeles, California.

dislocations, upthrusts and faulting on a gargantuan scale. Recognition of the truly global dimensions of this mountain-building has been long voiced by geophysicists. Reviewing mountains generally, Dr Walter Bucher of Columbia University has observed:

> Taken in their entirety, the orogenic belts are the result of worldwide stresses that have acted on the crust as a whole. Certainly the pattern of these belts is not what one would expect from wholly independent, purely local changes in the crust".[170]

A possibly even greater authority, Vening-Meinesz, asserted that: "If we examine the pattern of great geosynclines [large geological troughs] over the Earth's surface, we cannot doubt that their cause must have a worldwide character"[171].

Commenting upon the same phenomena, Dr J H F Umbgrove admitted "I feel there is overwhelming evidence that the movements are the expression of a worldwide, active and deep-seated cause..."[172].

A very large number of similar opinions could be cited, together with a large array of varying hypotheses explaining the causes of orogeny. It is, unnecessary to indulge in this here, although we would again emphasise the general agreement that some worldwide cause was responsible for the phenomena just discussed. Suffice it to observe that something acting on a planetary scale and with staggering power was basically responsible for these titanic crustal disturbances in times geologically *very* recent, described by one writer as: "A remarkable and stupendous period – a period so startling that it might justly be accepted with hesitation, were not the conception unavoidable before a series of facts as extraordinary as itself"[173].

10

COLLAPSE

We have already noted that crustal subsidences, sometimes amounting to veritable collapses, occurred in some regions simultaneously with the late Pleistocene elevation of mountains elsewhere. They were evidently part and parcel of the same terrible world calamity, and a few words about them will be appropriate here.

Both the Canaries and the Azores experienced widespread volcanic activity during late Pleistocene times, the sea floor round the Azores in particular being covered by lava. Unlike the Canary and Madeira islands, the Azores are situated on the eastern slope of the Mid-Atlantic Ridge. Since the great ocean basins either side of it are only thinly coated with sediments and in places are actually barren of them[174], it is generally regarded as very youthful[175]. The Mid-Atlantic Ridge is also directly associated with a great world-encircling fracture complex which we will discuss shortly. Tachylite, a lava which naturally disintegrates in sea water within 15,000 years of eruption, lies on the sea-bed around the Azores and apparently dates from outpourings less than 13,000 years ago. How much younger than that date is unknown. Notwithstanding this, may we not wonder if all these islands were once a part of an Atlantic plateau extending westwards of the Anti-Atlas mountains – previously noted as having formerly extended to the Canary Islands – which submerged as recently as the late Pleistocene? That such possibilities should be seriously considered finds support in the discovery of geologically very young beach sand in two deep-sea cores procured in this area from depths of 10,500ft (3,250m) and 18,440ft (5,700m), indicating that the region was *above* sea level at no very remote period. The noted oceanographer Maurice Ewing concluded from this evidence that:

> Either the land must have sunk two or three miles, or the sea must once have been two or three miles lower than now. Either conclusion is startling[176]. ...If the sea was once two miles lower, where would all the extra water have gone?[177]

Only the greatest conceivable disturbance could have produced crustal faults and collapses as great as these.

By the well-developed method of echo-sounding, an expedition in which Dr Ewing took a prominent part measured the thickness of the sedimentary ooze on the slopes of the foothills of the Mid-Atlantic Ridge. These showed:

> ...thousands of feet of sediment on the foothills of the Ridge. Surprisingly, however, in the great flat plains on either side of the Ridge, this sediment appears to lie less than 100ft thick... Always it has been thought that the sediment must be extremely thick, since it had been accumulating for countless ages... But on the level basins that flank the Mid-Atlantic Ridge our signals came back too close together to measure the time between them... They show the sediment in the basins is less than 100ft thick.[178]

Granitic and sedimentary rocks which must originally have been "part of a continent" were dredged up near the Mid-Atlantic Ridge from a depth of 3,600ft (1100m). They exhibited deep scratches and striations similar to those stones in 'drift' formations commonly attributed to glacial action. However, in the same area there were found "...some loosely consolidated mud stones, so soft and weak that they would not have held together in the iron grasp of a glacier. How they got there is another riddle to be solved by further research"[179]. As discovered earlier, it seems highly questionable that there ever was a glacial age of the type clearly envisaged by Ewing and other geologists.

Together with many other geological and topographic formations on the bed of the Atlantic these mud stones were formed not underwater but in the open air, and must, despite their present fragile state, date from a time when that portion of the ocean floor was above sea level. A precisely similar conclusion has been reached by another writer respecting the Mid-Atlantic Ridge itself. He wrote:

> ...the inequalities, the mountains and valleys of its surface, could never have been produced in accordance with any laws for the deposition of sediment, nor by submarine elevation; but, on the contrary, must have been carved by agencies acting above the water level.[180]

Although writing in the 1920s, the celebrated French geologist Pierre Termier spoke of a now-vanished North Atlantic landmass in terms as valid now as then. He stated:

> The conclusion is inevitable: the land which existed about 900km to the north of the Azores and, perhaps, embracing these isles, was plunged into the deep, in times so comparatively recent that geologists call it 'the present', and actually it is as if it all happened for us but yesterday.[181]

It may not be unreasonable, especially in view of confirmatory biological evidence to be detailed later, to regard the volcanic upheavals traced on the bed of the Atlantic around the Azores as having occurred synchronously with the breakup and subsidence of *Appalachia*, the name given by geologists to a continental landmass in the North Atlantic also known as *North Atlantis*[182]. Now reposing some two miles (3.2km) below the level of the adjacent continental shelves[183], *Appalachia* connected Europe and North America via Greenland and Iceland (see map 1B). The fact that the degree of its submergence accords closely with that of the ocean basins flanking the Mid-Atlantic Ridge as determined by Ewing, is particularly noteworthy. Although it is now impossible to estimate the true extent of *Appalachia*, it must, as Brewster observed, have been:

> ...a large continent, for the sand and gravel and mud which the rivers washed out to sea and the waves ground up on the shore have built up most of half a dozen big states [in North America], while in some places the deposits are a mile thick.[184]

Like many others, Prof Scharff of Dublin argued that this landmass foundered during late Tertiary times, excepting the Azores and the Madeiras which were:

> ...still connected in early Pleistocene (Ice Age) times with the continents of Europe and Africa, at a time when man had already made his appearance in western Europe, and was able to reach the islands by land[185]

In Geikie's opinion, however, certain biological evidence – discussed more fully later – shows that continuous land united Greenland and north-west Europe as late as post-glacial times, a view shared by Prof Judd[186]; and Forrest was among those who concluded that this landmass "...sank beneath the sea at the end of the Ice Age"[187].

It is also relevant that a truly colossal amount of sea-bed scour, or erosion, has been traced between Greenland and North America and ascribed to a time loosely termed as 'glacial'[188]. Presumably these crustal disturbances – collapses, for they were nothing less – occurred more or less simultaneously with the subsidence of the entire North Atlantic floor between Greenland and Norway by some 9,000ft (2750m), a convulsion which Forrest believed took place "since the Ice Age"[189]. In our submission these tremendous changes occurred synchronously with the break-up and drowning of the greater part of Fennoscandia, a now-submerged northern landmass formerly

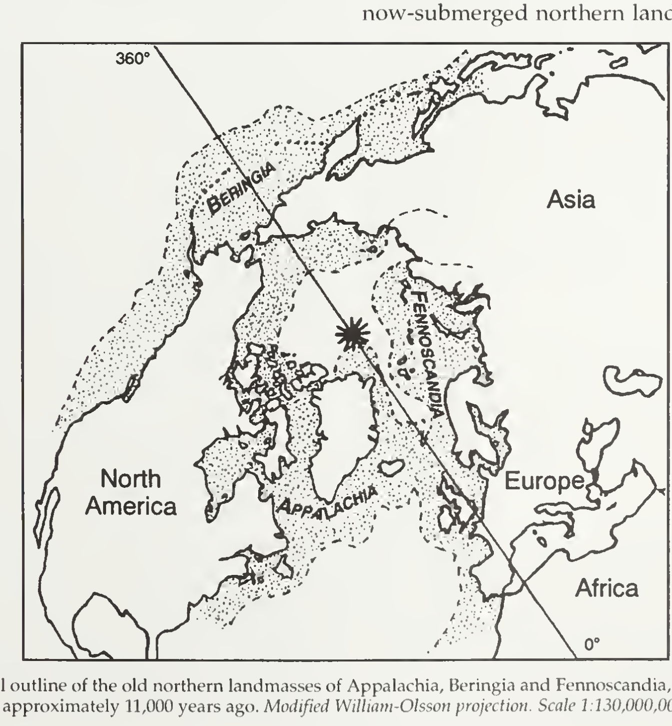

Map 1B. General outline of the old northern landmasses of Appalachia, Beringia and Fennoscandia, which submerged approximately 11,000 years ago. *Modified William-Olsson projection. Scale 1:130,000,000.*

connecting Spitzbergen with northern Eurasia (map 1B).

Leaving the Atlantic for the Indian Ocean we find in the latter interesting evidence for the geologically recent submergence of another extensive landmass or series of large islands which Wallace called the great Southern Continent[190]. This submergence was apparently yet another facet of the global catastrophe under discussion and, as in so many other areas, here also it was accompanied by stupendous volcanic activity. Records of this were gathered by the Swedish survey ship *Albatross* in 1947, when, for several hundred miles south-east of Sri Lanka, it sailed over a vast and continuous plateau of hardened lava. This filled almost all the earlier valleys on the sea-bed and gave the ocean floor there a singularly level surface. One recent authority regarded this lava as being very probably the undersea counterpart of the Deccan trap of India[191], where basaltic lava several thousand feet thick continuously covers an area of not less than 250,000 square miles (647,500 km^2). According to H F Blanford, the eruption of this material may have been synchronous with the sinking of Wallace's Southern Continent, of which he believed the Seychelles, Mauritius, the Adas Bank, the Laccadives, Maldives and Chagos island groups, and the Saya de Malha (Mulha) are the last surviving remnants[192]. To Blanford's list can also be added Sri Lanka, for it is believed to have been severed from the Indian state of Madras "in sub-recent times"[193].

In passing, we should note that considerable botanical and zoological evidence exists supporting the geologically-recent reality of extensive land in the southern Indian Ocean, and over much of present-day Oceania. Concerning the latter, Prof Scharff has written:

> ...Dr von Ihering goes so far as to positively state that in his opinion the Polynesian Islands are not volcanic eruptions of the sea floor, which being without life were successively peopled from Australia and the neighbouring islands, but the remains of a great Pacific continent, which was in early times connected with other continental masses.[194]

That the subsidence of this pan-Pacific landmass occurred within the memory of humanity appears to be borne out by ancient Maori recollections of *Hawaiki*, their ancestral 'fatherland' which, though properly outside the immediate concern of geophysics, certainly represents curious but peculiarly telling auxiliary records of this disaster. S P Smith summarised these memories as follows:

> In some of these epithets of the ancient fatherland, it is clear to me that a continent rather than an island is referred to, and this is the description given to me of *Hawaiki-nui*, by Tare Watere Te Kahu, a very learned member of the Ngai-Tahu tribe... '*Hawaiki-nui* was a mainland (*Tua Whenua*) with vast plains on the side towards the sea and a high range of snowy mountains on the inland side; through this country ran the river *Tohinga*'[195].

Numerous geological and palaeontological facts also apparently point to the former and rather recent existence of this old Pacific continent, while the severity of the cataclysm which overwhelmed it may be gauged by the staggeringly large crustal dislocations of 'late Pleistocene' date in central Westland, New Zealand. There, the vertical crustal uplift east of the great fault in the Southern Alps (South Island) is estimated to have been as much as 58,500ft (18,000m) with a horizontal displacement of similar magnitude[196]. Positively stupefying, this crustal change represents a catastrophic action so huge that, even by itself, it would have caused worldwide repercussions. That it was merely a part of still greater crustal disturbances having ramifications far beyond New Zealand underscores the giant scale of these events in Oceania during times usually stated as terminal Pleistocene. These changes extended even to the northernmost Pacific, where a continental-sized landmass, occupying the whole of the Bering Straits and the ocean-floor immediately south of it, foundered at the end of

Pleistocene times. The scale of the subsidence of its western sector, particularly along the eastern coastline of the Kamchatka peninsula, was spectacular. Science knows this sunken land as Beringia (see map 1B).

We may not err far in assuming that such tremendous crustal disorders occurred more or less simultaneously with the subsidence of Appalachia, Fennoscandia and the great sunken continent in the south Indian Ocean, and with the uprise of the many major mountain ranges previously mentioned. We shall now see that this was almost certainly so.

11

SHATTER

The formation of certain salient topographical features, such as fiords, are usually attributed in the majority of textbooks to the action of moving ice. Detailed field studies of the well-developed fiord systems of Greenland[197], the Hebrides[198] and Scandinavia[199] have tended to favour quite another explanation, namely that they had a tectonic origin, are really gigantic cracks in the Earth's crust, occupied and partially modified by glaciers *only at a later date*. It has been discovered that glaciers do not hollow fiords, but, through the transportation of stony debris from higher to lower levels, tend instead to choke fiord mouths and diminish or even nullify thereby the alleged excavating power of glacier ice[200]. Numerous students of fiords are agreed on this matter. Certainly ice cannot have easily produced those fiords which are open at *both* ends[201], or extend across sea-floors!

Acceptance of a tectonic origin for fiords also eliminates the necessity of attributing immensely long periods of time for their formation, such as would be required had ice excavated them. This is an important point.

Fiords also appear to be inseparably linked to a more fundamental crustal fracture complex encircling the globe, to which submarine canyons, deep-sea trenches and the celebrated Great Rift Valley of Africa all belong (see map 1C). All seem to be connected with a huge crack which traverses the Earth's crust for over 40,000 miles (64,000km) on a long meandering course[202]. Nearly all the fractures associated with this giant crack show geologically youthful images. Many deep-sea trenches, for example, contain little in the way of in-filling sediments, and the walls of many fractures are sharp and angular. General agreement exists that this fracturing occurred on a planetary scale and everywhere at about the same time[203]. Some authorities have also argued that, for the observable effects to have been produced, the Earth's axis must formerly have been inclined in a more vertical plane than at present[204]. This also is an important point relative to the classical references to axial orientation in the legendary Golden Age and Proctor's observation on the polar inclination obtaining when the aquatic constellations were invented (see I: 5. *A Displaced Axis?*).

Dictionaries define *excoriation* as the stripping or removal of skin by abrasion. Here, we apply this process to the surface of the Earth's skin, its crust or lithosphere, in that it has caused the sudden fissuring and violent break-up of many surface rocks predating those classified as Pleistocene. This fissuring occurred alike on land and under the sea, its extent being worldwide and clearly linked to

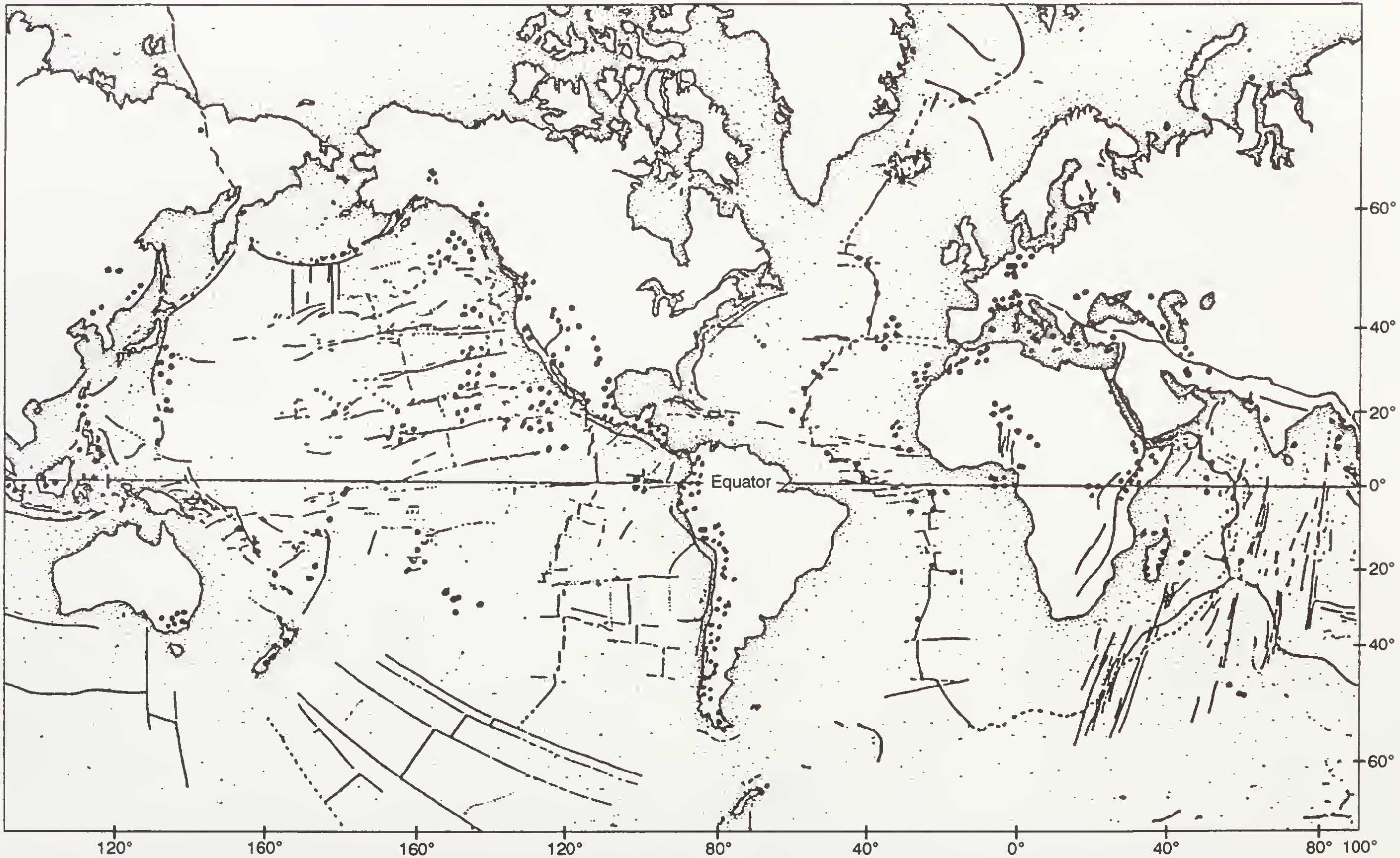
60°
40°
20°
0°
20°
40°
60°
Equator
120°
160°
160°
120°
80°
40°
0°
40°
80° 100°

Map 1C. Map of Pleistocene world fracture complex, showing major faults and deep-sea trenches. Dots represent principal centres of coincident vulcanism.
After Shepard, Emery, Menard et al.

acute crustal dislocation. Numerous submarine valleys are actually great crustal fractures now partially filled by sediments, and are intimately associated with the collapse of areas now forming ocean basins and the faulting and submergence of the continental shelves. It is particularly interesting to note some renowned authorities suggesting that such profound changes might have been due to external influence exerted by some stellar body – a cosmic visitor[205].

Other fractures and rock fissures are demonstrably connected with the massive late Pleistocene orogeny previously reviewed. The Gangetic Trough, for instance, evidently originated with the elevation of the Himalayas and the Tibetan plateau to their present height. The fact that the Gangetic Trough is 1,200 miles (1,900km) long, averages 250 miles (400km) in width, and is over 6,500ft (2,000m) deep, indicates the colossal power of the forces producing both it and the associated orogeny. It is a Pleistocene feature, yet, although the mighty River Ganges now flows along it, the trough itself is largely choked by Pleistocene debris of enormous thickness[206]. Gravity surveys have indicated that these in-filling deposits are about 6,500ft (2,000m) thick[207], and "...cannot be earlier than sub-Recent" in age[208].

Many further similar examples could be given from around the world, but such repetition would add little and would result in unnecessarily irksome reading. Suffice it here to observe that the foregoing evidence clearly shows that the end of the Pleistocene epoch, approximately 11,000 years ago, was characterised by gigantic and violent crustal convulsions which, viewed globally, were nothing short of cataclysmic. They did not punctuate a comparatively inert world in which the sub-polar latitudes lay under tremendously thick slow-moving ice-sheets. The sheer volume and extent of the strata affected by these disorders and the great heights and depths to which strata were redistributed indicates that, if the ice-sheets of orthodoxy really existed, then the ice must have covered regions which were either in the process of being enormously upheaved, displaced, vertically faulted and fissured, or subsided to remarkable depths. None of these unstable crustal conditions could have been conducive to the formation or maintenance of ice-sheets like those conventionally envisaged.

Special note should be taken of the repeated datings of these crustal derangements by acknowledged authorities: 'late Pleistocene', 'terminal Pleistocene', 'end of the Ice Age', 'post-glacial', and so on. Although Agassiz and other early advocates of the Ice Age argued that the ice developed before the rise of the Alps and other high ranges, modern glacialists all agree that high mountainous land is necessary to provide (and replenish) the snow from which glacier ice is derived, to supposedly produce the various geological phenomena allegedly characteristic of glacial conditions. If, however, most of the world's present major ranges attained their existing elevations a mere 11,000 years or so ago, where was the high land attracting heavy snowfalls and providing the ice and the motive power for the alleged ice-sheets specifically stated to have *preceded* the modern uplands?

Did ice in another guise cause the supposed glacial phenomena, distribute the 'drift' and disperse the 'erratics'? Rather than ice-sheets, abnormal numbers of 'drift'-laden icebergs were at one time conjectured as having floated equatorwards from polar regions, depositing 'erratics' and 'drift' and polishing and striating rock surfaces as they did so. That hypothesis was eventually discarded, as no reasonable mechanism could be determined which would generate excessive numbers of icebergs for a limited (glacial) period, cease doing so for a following (interglacial) period, and then reactivate the cycle again – not once but several times. Modern icebergs, moreover, carry little stony debris and very few rocks that are describable as 'erratics'. It is certainly unscientific to suppose without good evidence that icebergs behaved differently in the past or were burdened with stony cargoes vastly different from those they carry today.

A closer look at conventional Ice Age concepts, at the capacity of large masses of ice and at the geological phenomena commonly attributed to large scale ice action, suggests that the Ice Age, if it ever really existed, must have done so *after* the majority of the above-mentioned crustal disturbances had taken place. Certainly the shattering of the Earth's crust had already occurred by that time.

12

AN ICY CHIMERA

Inevitably the cause of the series of presumed ice advances and retreats epitomising the supposed glacial and interglacial episodes has long puzzled Earth scientists and astronomers, who, down the years, have made many attempts to explain them, rationally. Rather conveniently, these explanations have fallen into eight more or less distinct categories, thus:

- *Geophysical Theories*: 1. continental drift (the slow drifting of crustal continents toward or away from each other); 2. polar wandering (slow changes in the Earth's axis of rotation); 3. crustal sliding.
- *Land-Water Changes*: 1. oceanic changes (relocated oceans, rearranged oceanic circulation or changed directions of ocean currents); 2. landmass altitude changes (larger land areas brought above the permanent snow line, feeding the growth of ice-sheets).
- *Glaciological Theories*: periodic melting of basal ice layers of natural ice-caps, causing massive surging of ice leading to formation of huge peripheral ice-shelves which, in turn, displace sea water sufficiently to produce sudden rises in world sea levels.
- *Atmospheric Changes*: 1. variations in carbon dioxide content in the atmosphere (reduction of amount of CO_2) and reduced rate of absorption by the atmosphere of long-wave radiation, causing atmospheric cooling; 2. variations in suspended volumes of volcanic and other dust in the atmosphere; 3. variations in ozone content.
- *Meteorological Changes*: regarded as a secondary mechanism for promoting glaciation once the latter has commenced.
- *Axial and Orbital Changes*: 1. alterations in axial tilt of the Earth; 2. the 'Drayson Effect' (periodical axial changes leading to loss of terrestrial equilibrium); 3. changes in the length of the Earth's orbit around the sun.
- *Solar Emission Alterations*: changes in the intensity or composition of solar emissions received by the Earth.
- *Astronomical Theories*: 1. excessively cold regions in space traversed by the solar system (and thus the Earth) during late Pleistocene times; 2. collisions or near-misses with astronomical bodies disrupting the pre-glacial terrestrial environment (planets, moons, comets, asteroids and meteor showers have all been proposed as candidates).

Both 'uniformitarian' and 'catastrophist' explanations feature in this list. All are essentially speculative, and none adequately explains the basic mechanism by which Pleistocene ocean levels (traceable from physical evidence) apparently oscillated by as much as 975ft (300m). Considering the shaky alliance between assumptions, conjecture and a misconceived topographical background long embodied in orthodox Ice Age discussion, it is little wonder that all these explanations have failed to account for all aspects of the so-called Ice Age enigma, In their present form they are incapable of doing so.

Space limitations regrettably preclude detailed analyses of these often ingenious hypotheses, so we shall pass on to briefly consider: (a) the most commonly offered description of the Ice Age itself, and (b) some of the many reasons why, so the evidence tells us, the notion of the Ice Age can never have been more than a grand illusion.

The classic definition of the Ice Age centres on the concept of extensive, continuous, and often enormously thick ice-sheets smothering virtually all polar latitudes down to approximately 50° N and S latitude, with the greatest icy accumulations apparently occurring in the northern hemisphere. This concept reached its greatest development in the writings of various late nineteenth century glacialists, of whom Geikie[209], Dawkins[210], Croll[211] and Penck[212] were especially prominent. Although later research has signally emended those views, from time to time the outmoded hypothesis they represented still finds its way into textbooks about Earth history, and persists in being the popular concept of the Ice Age generally.

More up-to-date views of the Ice Age world, in discarding the near-hemispheric ice-sheets of the earlier theorists, have replaced those with a series of much smaller fluctuating ice-sheets radiating out from separate northern ice domes, with ice-free regions, some little more than corridors, existing between them. The retention of the term 'glacial', initially devised to accurately reflect the nature of the icy model postulated by nineteenth century glacialists, and its application to modern Ice Age concepts, although technically correct, unfortunately still tends to perpetuate a false (the discarded) panorama for interested modern lay-readers as yet familiar only with the older nineteenth century Ice Age doctrines. Certainly very few of the multitude of facts and details nullifying the earlier views which we are about to review have percolated down to them.

Thus, not only has much of this painstakingly amassed evidence largely failed to filter down to society generally, but so also have the modified (more modern) perspectives of the Ice Age now promoted in scientific circles. Accordingly, much of what follows, though factually correct, may at first seem not merely novel but startling and perhaps even disturbing, as cherished conventions fracture and totter.

Today, the world's coldest known land region is north-eastern Siberia. There, if anywhere, we might expect huge ice-sheets to have developed if the Ice Age theory possessed validity. Yet comparatively very few areas of Siberia exhibit signs of significant glaciation, either past or present. Clearly great cold does not of itself necessarily promote the development of ice-sheets. Antarctica and Greenland, however, both of which are *less* cold than Siberia, possess such sheets. Later we shall examine why this is so.

Interestingly, as in neighbouring Alaska to the East, thin rock pinnacles still stand unglaciated at several Siberian localities which thick ice, had it once existed, would unquestionably have ground down and demolished. The same observation applies to the broken stumps and roots of large trees which, like the mammoth carcasses found in the same general region (of which more anon)[213], have remained frozen solid ever since the day they perished, are still in the positions in which they originally grew. Some are even replete with their original leaves, flowers and fruits[214], albeit in permanently frozen and blackened condition. These, too, should have been scoured away had ice-sheets ever mantled and passed over Siberia. But these remains have *not* been destroyed any more than have the many thousands of others found as jumbled masses on several of the Arctic islands north of the Siberian mainland[215] or encountered in similar confusion in the frozen ground of neighbouring Alaska[216].

Again, in stark contrast to orthodox Ice Age theory, even many northern areas outside Siberia said to have lain under the *thickest* parts of the alleged ice-sheets afford scant evidence of glaciation or ice-sculpturing of any sort, and in numerous cases are actually devoid of it. The Sverdrup Islands[217], northernmost Greenland[218] and many of the islands of the Canadian Arctic[219], not to mention practically the whole of Alaska, are cases in point. Spitzbergen is another[220].

As the following selection of information amply demonstrates, northern latitudes have yielded several unexpected discoveries totally at variance with the tenet of vast sprawling North Polar ice-sheets. Their collective message is a singular one.

Firstly, numerous marine shells, often of currently-existing species, lie at high elevations on several islands in Arctic Canada[221]. They should have been pulverised had ice-sheets ever crept across those territories, for in no instance do they appear to have been deposited where they are now found since alleged Ice Age times.

Secondly, among the most telling details in this category are the numerous enclaves of unglaciated territory within regions which, glacialists long argued, supposedly lay under thick, continuous ice-sheets, not once but on *several* successive occasions. In addition to the molluscan testimony just noted, we should carefully mark that no evidence is known from southern Scotland of glaciation antedating the so-called latest observable ice advance, which glacialists call the Weichselian advance. Indeed, it has lately been urged that not only was southern Scottish topography much the same before the Ice Age as it is now[222], but also that south-western Scotland suffered less glacial erosion than surrounding regions because of its generally lower altitude[223] – despite glacialists depicting that area as a major centre of glaciation on Ice Age maps of Britain (see map 1D).

Farther north, deeply weathered, undisturbed, soils in Aberdeenshire were seemingly never glaciated, while further north still, on the North Sea bed near the Shetland islands, supposed glacial deposits dated as Weichselian are unexpectedly thin or *absent altogether*[224]. Again, in the Frigg Field area (59°N, 2°E) midway between the Shetlands and Norway, sea-floor cores are devoid of identifiable glacial deposits. This discovery has suggested that:

> ...some part of the northern North Sea was ice-free in the late Weichselian glacial advance, but this is difficult to reconcile with the suggestion that Shetland was glaciated in the Weichselian by ice which came from the east – probably from Scandinavia.[225]

Similar problems surround the presence of demonstrably British 'erratic' boulders of porphyry, limestone and sandstone on and just south of the Dogger Bank area of the North Sea, because the Weichselian ice sheet alleged to have transported them there is commonly envisaged as having advanced from the direction of Norway to the north-east[226]. These 'erratics' can only have travelled from the north-west *against* the supposed direction of the Weichselian ice-flow.

Significantly, comparable evidence occurs in the Outer Hebrides on the other side of the British Isles. There, rock striae indicate that whatever scored them proceeded from the north-west. Hebridean glaciation is usually held to have advanced from the north-east, the very *opposite* direction[227].

Data from the Faeroe islands, even farther north, cast further doubts on the very existence of former extensive ice-sheets in the North Sea region. Deposits attributed to ice action have been interpreted there as due to local ice, "...rather than to an ice-sheet advancing from the north or having contact with the Norwegian *mer de glace*"[228].

On mainland Britain, several 'drift'-less areas in northern England – south of York, for example[229] – reinforce the general picture now emerging, as does the apparent failure of any ice to have crossed the North Sea to terrain north of the Humber[230].

During so-called Weichselian times the Norwegian mountains were supposedly the centre of a regular *mer de glace* which, at its maximum, stretched south-westwards to embrace not only the Faeroes, Shetlands and Orkneys, mainland Scotland and Wales, all but southernmost England and the entire North Sea area, but also the whole of Eire. As previously noted, many parts of this extensive region were apparently never glaciated at all – a detail parallelled by the *absence* of detectable glaciation on the Lofoten islands

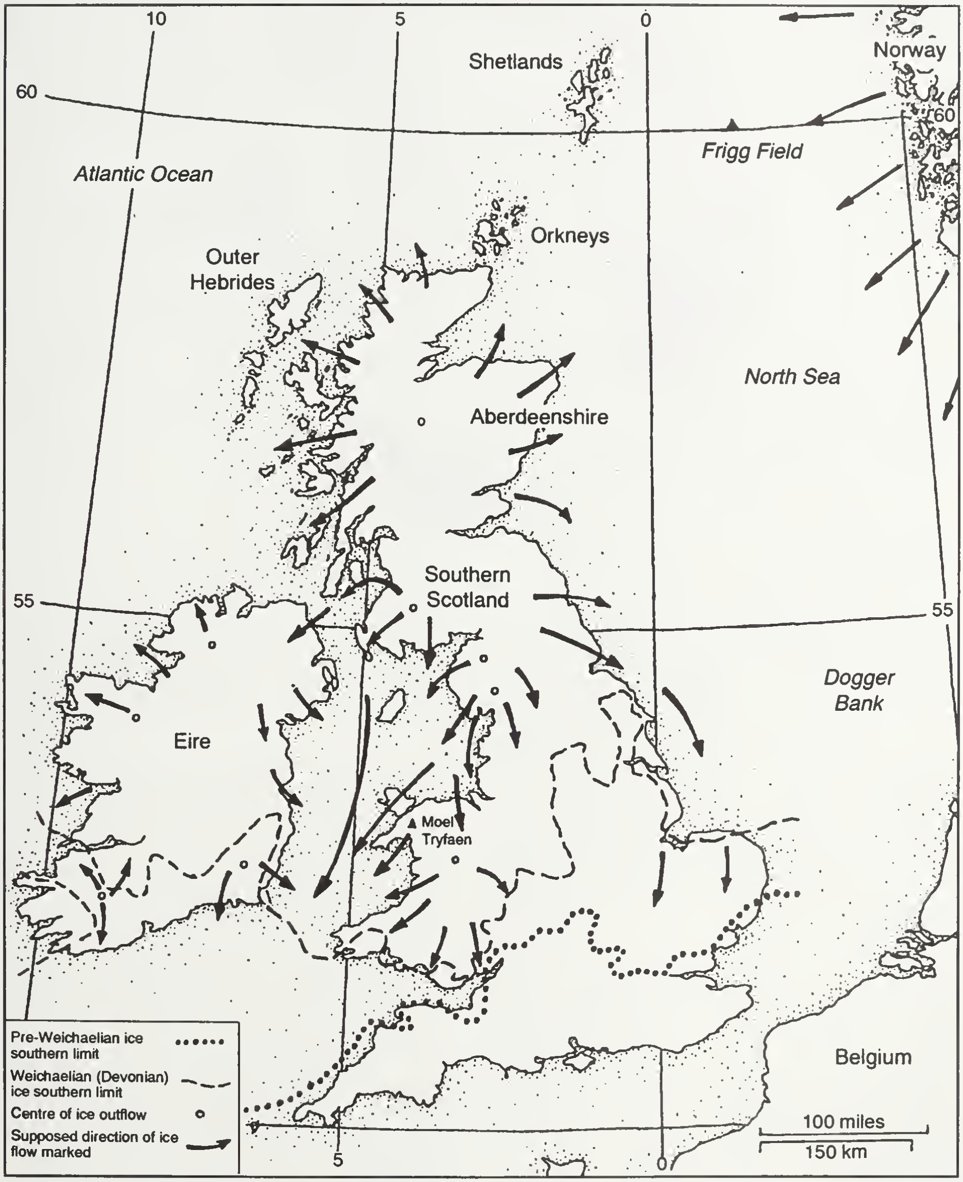
10
5
0
60
55
Shetlands
Norway
Frigg Field
Atlantic Ocean
Orkneys
Outer Hebrides
North Sea
Aberdeenshire
Southern Scotland
Dogger Bank
Eire
Moel Tryfaen
Belgium
Pre-Weichaelian ice southern limit
Weichaelian (Devonian) ice southern limit
Centre of ice outflow
Supposed direction of ice flow marked
100 miles
150 km

Map 1D. The British Isles showing the supposed maximum southern limits of the pre-Weichselian glaciations and the Weichselian glaciation, and the centres from which ice is alleged to have radiated, according to conventional glacial theory. *Compiled from several sources.*

(68°N, 15°E)[231] and the unglaciated character of innumerable jagged rocks off Norway's western coast[232]. Moreover, the lower deposits occupying the adjacent Norwegian deep-sea trench are also apparently non-glacial[233].

Why is glacial evidence absent from parts of mainland Britain and the bed of the North Sea if an ice-sheet allegedly mantled that entire region? Was it because, as intimated earlier, glacial action actually never occurred there?

Notable reinterpretations of alleged glacial deposits in England and Ireland have also recently been proposed. At Ipswich in Suffolk, well known glacial sequences formerly considered as representative of three glacial phases are now regarded as typifying only one[234]. Again, despite a supposedly well-established stratigraphy (identification of the relative position of layers of deposits), there is now little evidence that in Northern Ireland 'drift' deposits are much older than 10,000 years BP[235], a date commonly stated to be that when the Ice Age finally *ended*.

Comparable evidence is also known from mainland Europe, the North Atlantic, the Arctic Ocean and North America – but as we have already noted several examples from some of these regions we need mention here only a small selection of additional instances.

In Europe, the Alpine record of glaciation – the earliest studies of which, remember, initiated the concept of an Ice Age – shows it to be not only *very youthful*[236], but also surprisingly sparse. Indeed, except for deposits of Weichselian date, the overall record there is "very spotty"[237].

It is a very well known fact that much of the world's rainfall occurs when wind-blown, moisture-laden air rises over upland areas, and that when this concerns mountains or high hills the moisture often descends not as rain but as snow. Especially relevant to this is the conclusion reached by the celebrated glacialist Albrecht Penck, that Alpine snowfall during Ice Age times was not appreciably heavier than that of today[238]. If that were indeed so, it would be illogical to postulate that immense ice-sheets developed then in and around the Alps if they do not do so now. But other important factors are involved and should be considered here.

The Alps attained their present height suddenly and violently in times so recent that their upthrust actually post-dated the era normally assigned to the Ice Age itself. Thus the Alps, as we know them, hardly existed when the Ice Age is supposed to have occurred. They were merely a "chain of low hills". This means that, if the Alps were formerly much lower, they were unlikely to have attracted the heavier snowfalls required to underpin the formation of the huge ice-sheets of conventional Ice Age dogma.

If the Alps, Rockies, Himalayas and other major mountain ranges rose to their present elevations only at the close of the Pleistocene epoch – during or just after the final stages (the Younger Dryas episode) of the supposed Ice Age, we can scarcely continue to associate the development of massive ice-sheets with mountain systems generally too low to have acted as effective causal agents of such glaciation. Significantly, no ice-sheets of any magnitude are presently developing in or around the world's greatest mountain ranges, themselves *all* now much higher than in Pleistocene times. As we shall see later, the great ice-sheets of Greenland and Antarctica have formed as a result of the operation of other factors.

Thus, if many of today's highest mountains were much lower when the alleged Ice Age was reputedly at its zenith, how did so much ice, if it actually existed, manage to accumulate? Indeed, we can take a step further and ask *whether the ice-sheets so beloved of glacialists ever existed at all*!

In addition to the above-mentioned objections, many more exist which echo the same query. A look at some of these is educational.

Claims that glacial deposits exist on the floor of the Barents Sea, north of Norway, have lately been dismissed as incorrect. No glacial mantle ever existed there, and none ever connected Scandinavia, Novaya Zemlya, Franz Josef Land or Spitzbergen[239]. The aforementioned detail that Spitzbergen was apparently never glaciated is thus found to be entirely compatible with the absence of glacial deposits on the surrounding sea-floor.

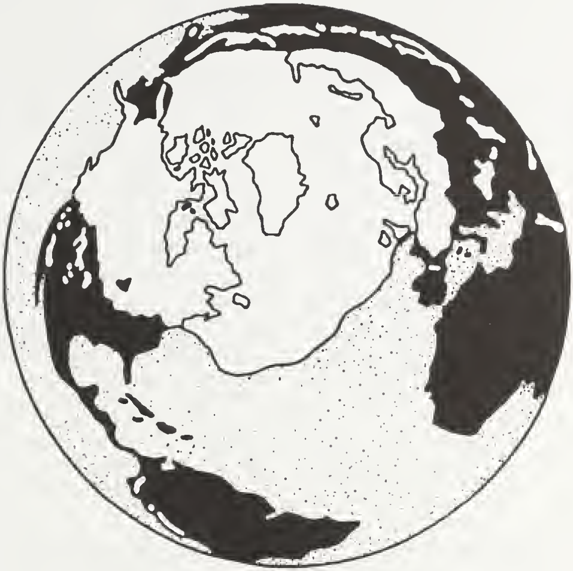

Map 1E. Map of alleged maximum extent of Pleistocene glaciation in the Northern Hemisphere. *After W C Putnam.*

Yet innumerable maps of the Ice Age have long persisted in depicting the region embracing all these lands, as also that of the Alps, as buried under enormous ice-sheets (see map 1E).

Earlier, we drew attention to the remarkable speed with which the final stage of the Ice Age – the Younger Dryas episode of late Weichselian times – came to an end, and how its closing stages were linked to abrupt increases in snowfall and radical oceanic, climatic and botanical changes across much of the northern hemisphere.

Initially it might be considered reasonable to expect the end of an Ice Age to herald warmer conditions, but widespread investigations have shown that the reverse actually happened: temperatures generally *fell* as the effects attending the termination of the Younger Dryas episode (or Alleröd as it is sometimes referred to) were experienced globally[240].

Sea-surface temperatures, for example, dropped in the North Atlantic[241], in the western North Pacific[242], in the South China Sea[243] and even in the tropical Sulu Sea between the Philippines and northern Borneo (Kalimantan)[244], where marine cores indicate a "pronounced cooling of surface waters during Younger Dryas times" in tandem with an increased summer monsoonal regime in central China[245].

Late Pleistocene sediments in deep-sea cores obtained from the bed of the central North Atlantic contain the remains of planktonic foraminifera – minute marine organisms – which collectively exhibit faunal patterns so complex that they *cannot have resulted from temperature oscillations* like those commonly associated with glacial cycles[246]. Similar puzzles have been afforded by marine cores from the Caribbean basin. These show a former mixing of top and bottom ocean-water layers *ten times faster* than the speed at which the succession of glacial and interglacial episodes is supposed to have taken place. It was, therefore, concluded that:

> ...because of the unique character of deep-sea sedimentation, a change in the average would require major alterations to the

> physiography of the earth and/or in the biological balance of the high seas.[247]

As shown by other aforementioned data, that is precisely what the general record of Younger Dryas times repeatedly urges. Effects of changes like these were widespread. They were, for example, felt around Hudson Bay[248], across Atlantic Canada[249] and in the northeastern USA[250], and occurred even as far south as South America and Antarctica[251].

The demonstrably global extent of these environmental changes, which inevitably affected plants and land animals in many latitudes, is paralleled by a similar worldwide concordance of their general dates of occurrence.

In southern Chile, for example, where these changes impoverished older beetle populations[252], their effects took place about 10,000 years BP[253], approximately at the time when North Atlantic sea-surface temperatures dropped[254]. Tibet became suddenly wetter[255], and the vegetation in north-western USA underwent marked changes[256]. Very clearly something important occurred during or just before the 10,000 years BP datum indicated, something large enough to affect practically the whole of Earth's environmental conditions and huge numbers of the planet's natural inhabitants.

13

INESCAPABLE EVIDENCE

To those accustomed to the now well-established notion of a Pleistocene Ice Age like that advocated by Agassiz and championed so forcefully by Geikie and others in the last century, or who are aware of the modifications made to it this century, the substance and abundance of the foregoing interrelated details may well astonish. After all, has not the idea of an Ice Age been carefully investigated from every angle by armies of experts in multitudes of concerned disciplines for over 150 years? Although the actual cause of the Ice Age is still uncertain the reality of such an age is surely beyond dispute? Surely so many specialists cannot all have consistently misread the record for so long?

The underlying problem, of course, has been the continued acceptance of the constraints inherent in Lyell's 'uniformitarianism', with its insistence upon terrestrial agencies being the sole generators of observable topographical and atmospheric changes, irrespective of the individual scale, speed or intensity of these. A major outcome of this entrenched perspective has been the steady accumulation of unaccommodatable data diametrically opposed to, or at least highly bruising of, Lyellian concepts and the notion of an Ice Age.

Dispassionate consideration of this 'anomalous' data leads unerringly to the realisation that: 'uniformitarianism', while certainly not a fallacious doctrine, is yet no more than *a particular aspect* of a wider whole – which we discussed earlier in Part One: 7 *Perspectives – a question of scale*; also, that something other than ice, operating in a worldwide capacity, was responsible for the deposition of 'drift' and the creation of other supposedly Ice Age phenomena.

Probably no clearer account of the supposed deposition of 'drift' material by large slow moving ice-sheets like those of conventional Ice Age theory can be cited than that given a few years ago by L Dudley Stamp, who, recognising two major effects of glaciation, wrote:

> One of the two major effects of glaciation is... the sweeping bare of large tracts of the country, and the time which has elapsed since has generally been inadequate for the formation of a complete soil mantle. There are large tracts of bare rock: soils which have been formed are characterised by immature profiles, whilst the interference with the pre-glacial drainage has resulted in water-logging over huge tracts and the consequent development of extensive bogs...
>
> The other major result of glaciation is the deposition on lower ground or on marginal areas of the material swept from the highlands. The mantle of glacial deposits which results is conveniently referred to under the comprehensive term 'drift'. Drift deposits are of the most varied character, and although two types may be very closely related in geological origin they may be so different in lithological characters [rock composition] as to give rise to land forms, soils and vegetation of the most contrasted types.[257]

Like those of all conventional glacialists, Stamp's summary, though factually accurate respecting the variability and distribution of 'drift' deposits generally, is a typically uniformitarian explanation of the relevant phenomena. In it the Ice Age is assumed to have been an indisputable fact, whereas it never was nor has been more than an ingenious theory. Slow ice movements are advocated; ice is so completely accepted as having been the 'drift'-producing agent that it is spoken of as having certainly produced both it and the obviously attendant geological effects; the scale and extent of the supposed ice-sheets are inferred from the scale and extent of the 'drift' deposits allegedly produced by them – a circular argument. Nor does Stamp's exposition satisfactorily account for the presence in some areas of 'drift' on hill summits only. As we shall now see, these assumptions, while superficially attractive, are seriously at odds with a whole range of recorded facts.

Particularly interesting and certainly perplexing is the well-established fact that many allegedly glaciated hills and mountains in the northern hemisphere are scored and striated from top to bottom on their northern sides only. In North America this remarkable condition is quite common[258]. It would thus seem that ice-sheets glaciated the northern and north-western faces of these eminences as they slowly crawled up them but failed to glaciate the southern slopes as they presumably accelerated down them – an effect completely opposite to that allegedly generated by downward-moving masses of ice – for example, that of glaciers. In any case, as shown below, ice cannot *ascend* hills.

Of further relevance is the fact that deposits of gravel and other 'drift' materials sometimes occur only on the northern and north-western flanks of hills, in some instances showing every indication of having been actually *plastered up* against the hillsides with great force[259]. Many cases of this occur on both sides of the Atlantic. In Labrador, for example, 'erratic' boulders have been rammed into hillsides apparently with much violence[260]. Rather interestingly, eastern Labrador, together with Newfoundland, was apparently *never* glaciated[261].

A *strange selectivity* arises here.

Also noteworthy is the occurrence of so-called 'drift' materials at localities far beyond the limits of the most extensively conceived ice-sheets. Thus, if ice action genuinely distributed all the 'drift' deposits within the supposed limits of the greatest ice-sheets then it somehow also contrived to do so in many areas ice is supposed never to have reached.

Large 'erratic' boulders in the Sahara Desert; on the Mongolian plains, and in subtropical Uruguay constitute a parallel anomaly. And when it is discovered that it is possible to produce rock striae like those usually attributed to ice action (see figs 1.6–1.9) by such dissimilar agents as drift-sand[262], fast-moving *nuées ardentes* (swiftly flowing, high temperature, gaseous clouds erupted from volcanoes, see fig 1.8), snow, mudslides[263] and high pressure grit-charged steam[264], we are obliged to seriously question

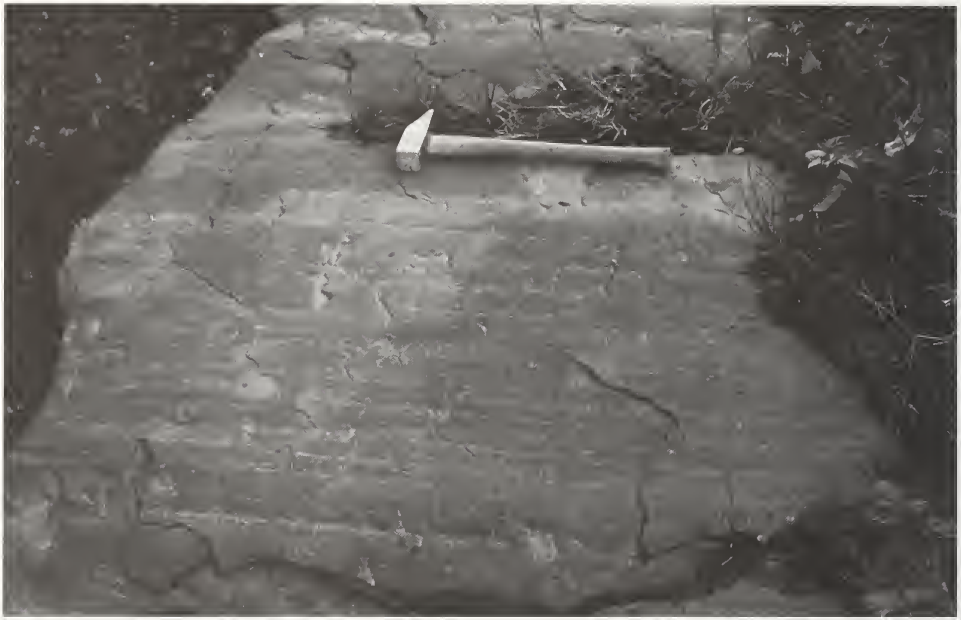

Fig 1.6. A rock at Appley Bridge near Wigan, England, showing surface striations commonly ascribed to ice-action. *Reproduced by permission of the Director, British Geological Survey: NERC copyright reserved.*

the alleged glacial origin of striae generally, particularly when, as in numerous instances, they, too, occur far outside the furthest traceable limits of supposed bygone ice-sheets.

Still other 'peculiarities' are exhibited by geological phenomena associated with Ice Age doctrine. Scrutinised more closely these also reveal yet more doubts about the former reality of an Ice Age like that favoured by orthodoxy. Eroded and fragmentary shells occur within the 'drift' deposits on Moel Tryfaen, a mountain in North Wales rising 1,300ft (400m) above sea level. Perplexingly the species represented include not only northern but also temperate and southern forms adapted to very varied habitats. Some required deep and others shallow water, some sandy and others muddy water, and some were peculiar to shingly and others to a bare rocky environment[265].

In contrast to the above we now perceive an *unnatural generality* in the evidence.

In stating that ice could never have brought together so varied a molluscan assemblage as this, it is hardly necessary to add that water could have – in which case the enveloping 'drift' deposits must have been similarly water-borne. Such a conclusion was reached by the great English geologist Roderick Murchison with regard to the 'drift' deposits of Russia[266], and by many of the earlier American geologists respecting the same beds in the USA. One of these geologists, Prof Andrews, as cited by Howorth, remarked that many:

> ...gravel hills are sharp and conical and interspersed with deep circular valleys without outlets, from which the region has obtained the popular name of the Potash Kettles... It would seem to be an unavoidable inference that our drift of this region not only came from the north, but it came in a vast sweep of water deep enough to cover gravel hills 800ft high, and with velocity enough to throw coarse material into lofty and steep summits.[267]

Again, it may be asked how is it possible to ascribe to ice in any form the simultaneous

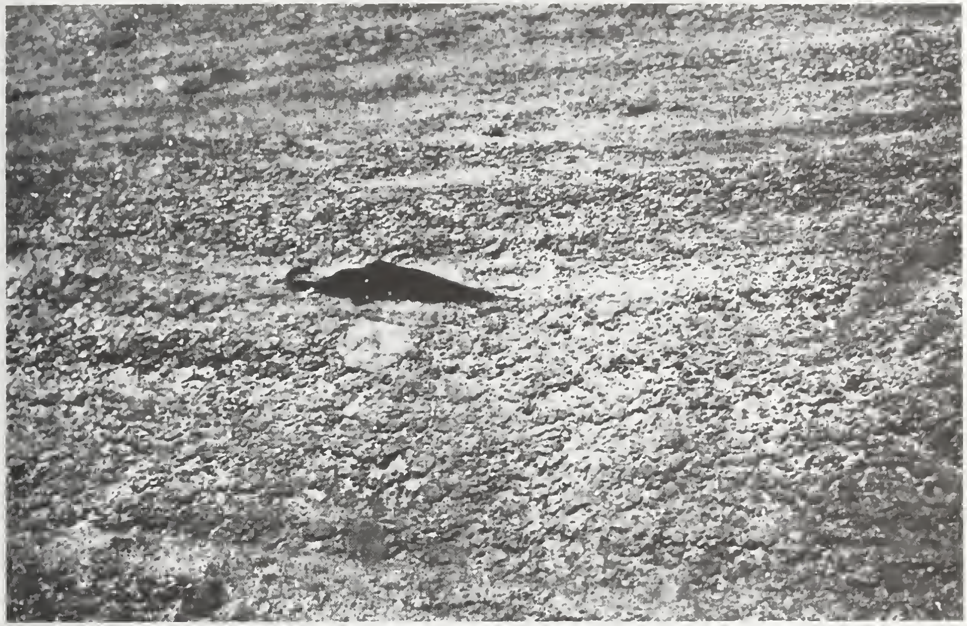

Fig 1.7. Rock striated by sand-blast, Mont Pelée. *By permission of the Geological Society of America Bulletin, (vol 20, 1908, pl 39, fig 1), and R S L, Oxford (Geol Per 21).*

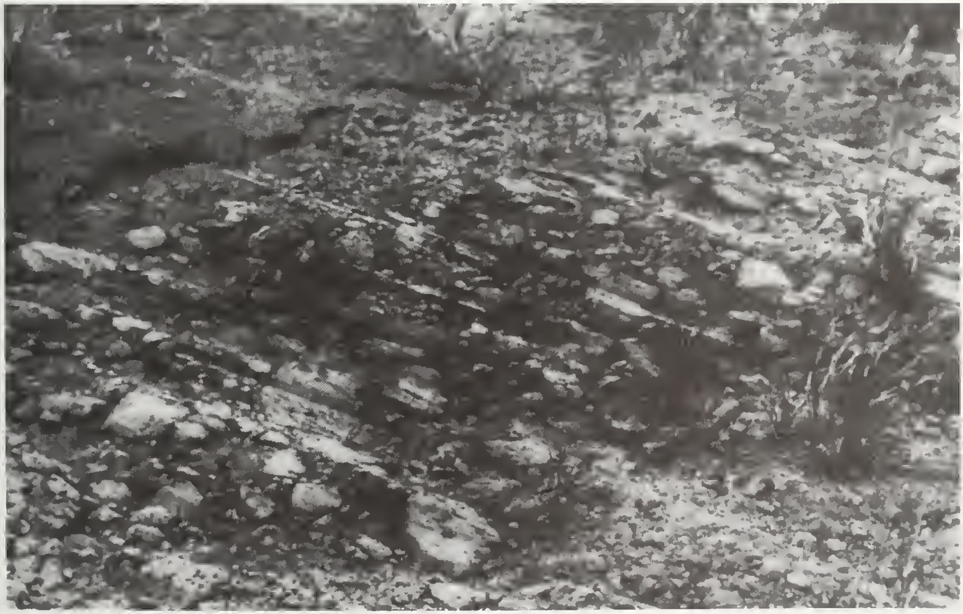

Fig 1.8. Rock surface striated by nuées ardentes action during the 1929–32 eruption of Mont Pelée. *By permission of the Carnegie Inst, Washington DC. From F A Perret's The Eruption of Mont Pelée 1929–1932.*

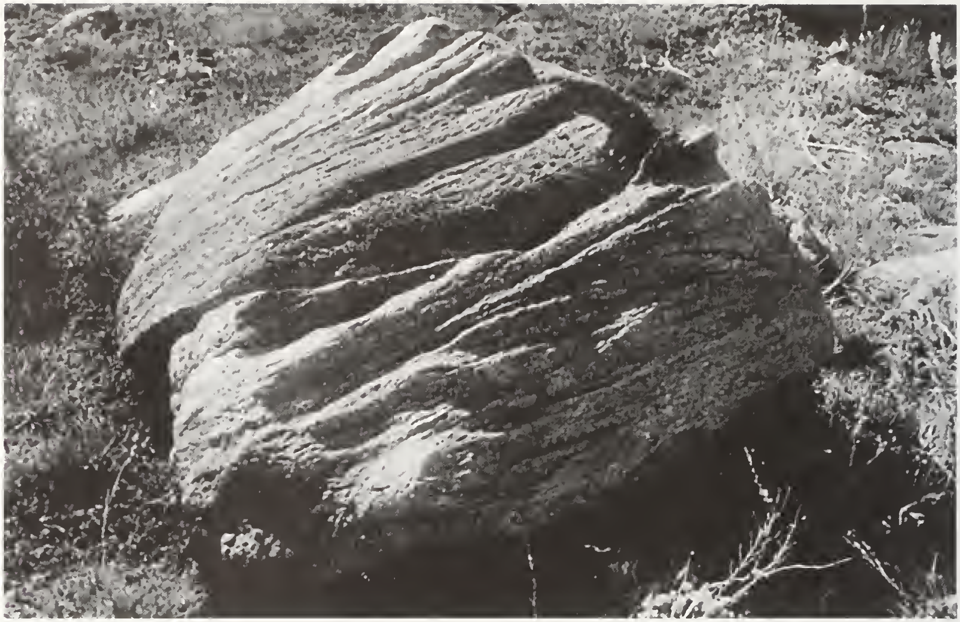

Fig 1.9. Rock striations produced by wind action, Wyoming. From R P Sharp's *"Pleistocene ventifacts east of the Big Horn Mountains, Wyoming", Journal of Geology, vol 57, 1949, by permission of Univ of Chicago Press and R S L, Oxford.*

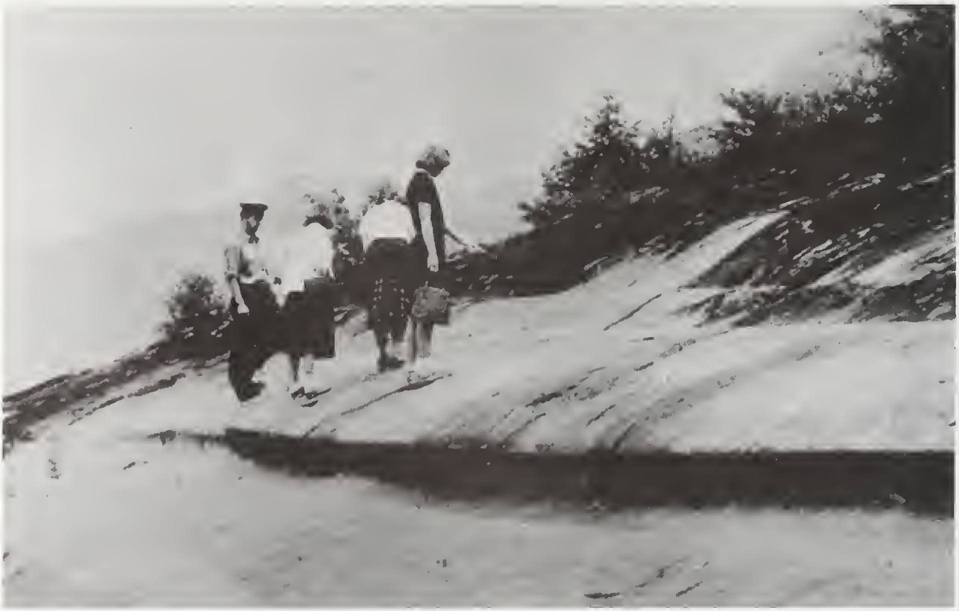

Fig 1.10. Alleged glacial rock-grooves in crystalline strata at Val Camonica, north Italy. *From W G Putnam's Geology, 1964. With permission from Oxford Univ Press.*

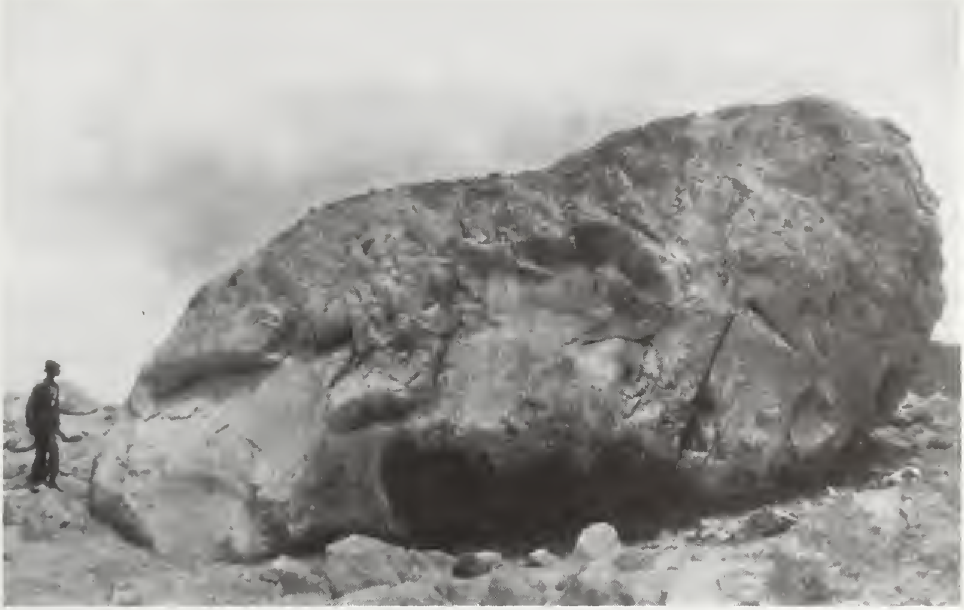

Fig 1.11. A giant boulder transported aerially a distance of three miles (5km) by nuées ardentes, near Mont Pelée. From F A Perret's *"The Eruption of Mont Pelée, 1929–1932", by permission of the Carnegie Institution, Washington DC.*

dumping of huge 'erratics' at all kinds of elevations alongside thick accumulations of 'drift' containing delicate shells when, at other localities, and at equally varied heights, other 'erratics', occurring far from shells and 'drift' of any kind, repose directly upon bare, polished and striated rock surfaces attributed to the *same* icy process supposedly responsible elsewhere for depositing the 'drift' and the organic remains (shells included) it often encloses?

If ice was responsible for the above phenomena, the remorseless grinding and scouring of everything in its line of advance should have been as capable of removing all small stones and grit, not to mention fragile shells, as it was of wrenching off from parent bedrock the huge stones deposited as 'erratics' with, it sometimes seems, great violence. But it didn't.

Nor, we may point out, did ice-sheets allegedly capable of producing results like those just enumerated ever invade the regions inhabited by the *southern* shell species. Nevertheless, the same species occur in 'drift' deposits at many places located in temperate zones supposedly laid down by ice-sheets said to have proceeded *from* the north. Here we have another example of 'inferred' ice action and direction of operation at variance with field evidence.

Puzzling though the evidence is, ice assuredly never simultaneously transported to the same locality so many climatically-undifferentiated shell species – and Moel Tryfaen is but one of several very similar instances elsewhere. It follows therefore that ice did not accumulate the enveloping 'drift' deposits either, or those like it elsewhere. Nor, as further corollary, can it have dispersed the 'erratic' boulders or striated rock surfaces intimately associated with the 'drift' beds.

And, it may also be asked, why do the 'erratics' and the 'drift' (as in Eire for example[268]) sometimes abound on the *higher* peaks only to be absent from adjacent *lower* ground? Such effects are scarcely those of normal 'uniformitarian' actions.

Indeed, the longer such problems are pondered the less likely it seems that ice could,

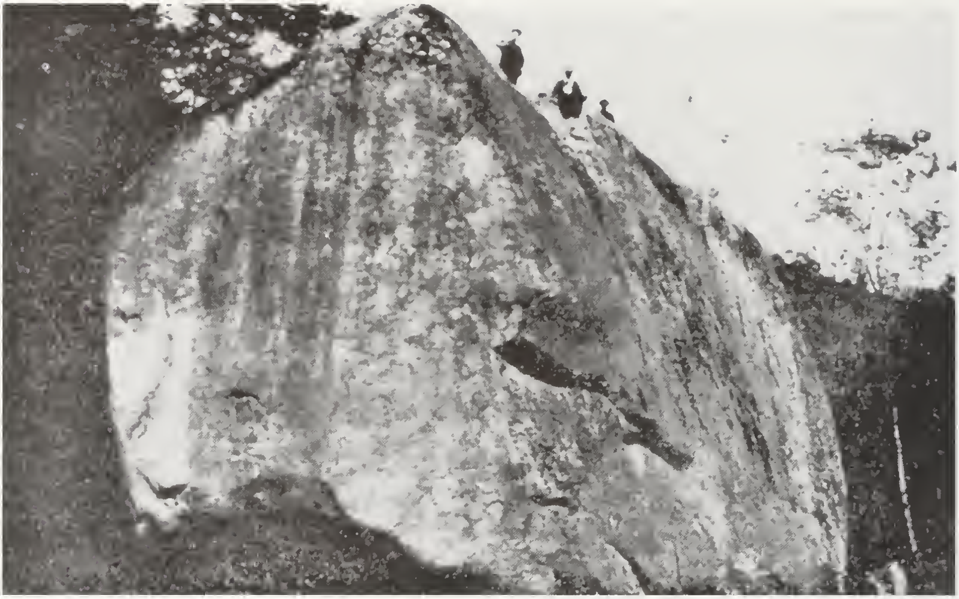

Fig 1.12. The giant erratic Madison Boulder at Conway, New Hampshire, estimated to weigh not less than 10,000 tonnes. The human figures show the boulder's great size. *Photo: R A Daly, "The Changing World of the Ice Age", 1934, by permission of Yale Univ Press.*

under any conceivable circumstances, have caused such effects, and indications mount up that the supposed Ice Age of Pleistocene times was really *no more than an icy chimera*. If so, then the validity of the Pleistocene period itself, as a distinct geological division, is also called into question.

But before the Ice Age is pre-emptorally jettisoned here as the causal agent behind all the above-mentioned phenomena, let us be certain that all normal actions of ice have been duly considered and abandoned as untenable for sound reasons. Nothing less satisfies.

As presently understood, the physics of ice suggests that, on attaining a sufficient thickness, the supposed ice-sheets of the Ice Age must have moved under the influence of gravity, and that, due to the enormous weight of the ice, the movement would have been downwards – from higher to lower levels. Due to the composition of ice, this movement or flow would have to be viscous (semi-fluid or sticky). This means that *only* the basal layers of the ice-sheet would have moved on downhill gradients, and that *only* its upper layers would have moved over flat country. Sir Henry Howorth emphasised this when he wrote:

> A more important and far-reaching difficulty... is the proved incapacity of glacier ice, as of any other viscous body, to travel over enormous stretches of level country, and up and down long hills, as it must have done if the glacial theory is to become the final and effective explanation of a large part of the drift phenomena.[269]

Glacialists, however, have usually argued that glaciers do not behave in the same way as ice-sheets (such as those on Greenland and in Antarctica), a point also dealt with by Howorth as follows:

> It is... useless to quote glaciers to the ice men. They repudiate glaciers as tests altogether [a long way from Agassiz's and Charpentier's original ideas: authors], just as they repudiate laboratory experiments upon ice. With

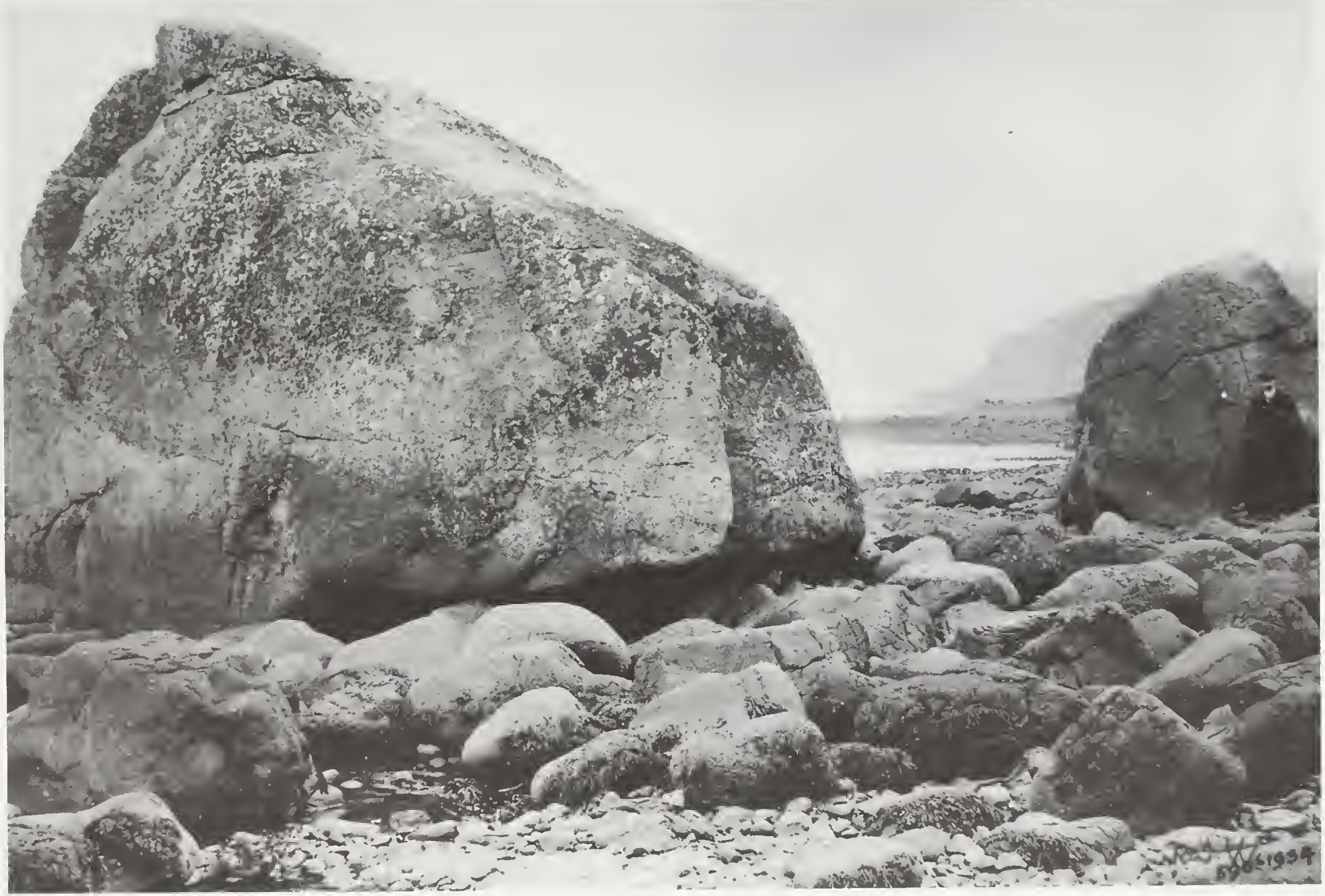

Fig 1.13. Two huge erratic boulders on the beach near Greyabbey, Co Down, Ulster. The nearest weighs over 500 tonnes. *By courtesy of Dept of Geology, Ulster Museum.*

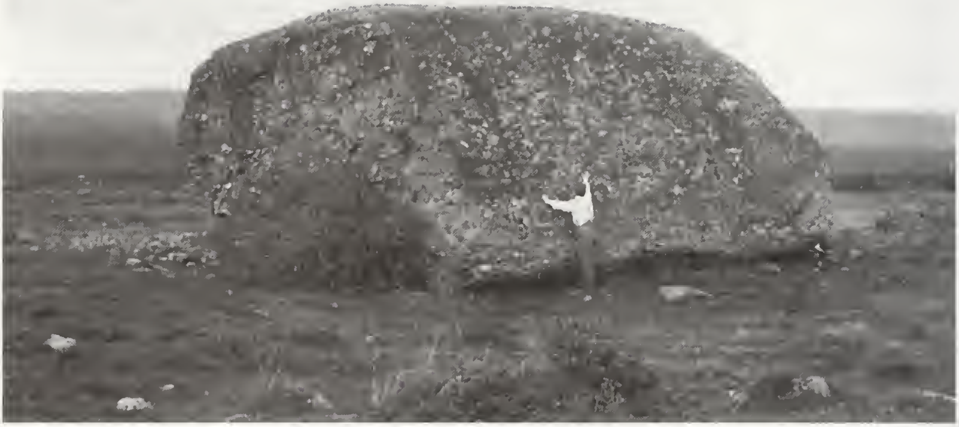

Fig 1.14. Erratic boulder near Nairn, Scottish Highlands.

> them all inductive methods and arguments fail, since they always reply that the ice they appeal to is something entirely different to the ice of glaciers. It is ice-sheets they rely upon, portentous ice-sheets such as no longer exist anywhere. A Saturnian postulate, in fact, is their platform, and not a mundane one. Yet it ought to be a condition even of such a transcendental postulate as this that the ice in an ice-sheet should act in accordance with, and not contrary to, the nature and the physical qualities of ice. If it does not, the appeal ceases to be a scientific appeal, and it is, in fact, very largely an unscientific appeal which is continually being made by this noisy, clamorous school of writers, who never verify their premises and make assumptions as readily as they abandon them.
>
> An ice-sheet is only a great mass of ice after all; a mass of ice which, instead of lying on a mountain slope or being embayed in a valley or on a plane surface, is supposed to have smothered and covered a stretch of uneven country and swathed it in a continuous mantle, Such a mass of ice cannot acquire properties not possessed by other ice. If it moves it must move according to the mechanics of ice and, as we have seen, ice moves in no other fashion than by the influence of gravity.[270]

At this juncture we interject the observation that to advocate causes in the past which differed from those of present experience, so far as ice is concerned, is actually contrary to the uniformitarian principles glacialists claim to uphold. Considering ice as a solid, Howorth went on to note:

> If a solid be so heavy and so big that it requires more than a certain force to move it, it will *crush* rather than move, that is to say, the whole thrust will be dissipated by the object being reduced to pulp, or even liquid, which will flow away rather than move *en masse*.[271]

Many earlier glacialists spoke of these ice-sheets being hundreds, perhaps thousands of feet thick. Howorth, complaining at such extravagances, exposed their shortcomings thus:

> ...it is not possible to pile up a mass of ice to an indefinite height, or to force a mass of ice of greater length than about seven miles along a level surface by any pressure, however obtained, without its crushing, and without, therefore, the thrusting force being dissipated.[272]

A glance at map 1E showing alleged glaciation in the Northern Hemisphere shows that the extent of these ice-sheets greatly exceeds "about seven miles", that the topography of considerable areas (especially in North America) was essentially flat or level, and that in other regions allegedly mantled by ice-sheets it was singularly rugged. Thus, according to ice physics, these ice-sheets should not have been capable of moving over either level or rugged terrain. The properties of ice preclude this.

The excavating and demolition powers of thick moving ice, relative to the glacialist's assumption that ice-sheets broke up the surface strata they supposedly over-rode, were also discussed by Howorth, who observed:

> Ice is much softer and more easily crushed than the great majority of rocks, and would itself be crushed and reduced to slush by its own pressure long before the rock upon which it stands could itself be broken... We must always remember the kinds of materials upon which the supposed crushing was effected. These are not lumps of soft rock showing crushed outlines, but clean broken and shattered masses with their surfaces still raw and unhealed, consisting of the hardest crystalline rocks such as granites, seynites, porphyries, *etc*, as well as limestones, sandstones and chalk, and we are asked to believe that the same ice-sheets which thus shattered such intractable materials *in situ* after passing on a few yards travelled over beds of laminated and stratified sand and loam with such a gentle touch as not to disturb the laminations...
>
> The word *impossible* is not a favourite of mine, but I am bound to say that, if it is... applied to any physical operation, I know of none where it seems so applicable as to the process appealed to by the ultra-glacialists for the manufacture of drift by an ice-sheet smashing its own bed.[273]

Very interestingly, ice is protective as well as destructive. The incalculable power of thick ice moving continuously down a gradient is, of course, well known, and such ice may well have planed off rock surfaces, scored and striated others, and removed previous loose boulders and unconsolidated surface deposits obstructing its downward course. But to achieve this the ice *must* be moving. On reaching level terrain the ice-flow would speedily cease. It has long been established that glaciers on descending-to-level ground quickly lose their forward momentum. Stationary, ice fails to significantly injure even fragile shells or loose accumulations of soft sand or grits. It simply stagnates and, very often, slowly melts away. Thus ice on level terrain, being, as we have just noted, unable to move in any direction of its own volition, would tend to actually *protect* rather than abrade any land surface it mantled. Indeed, the great ice-sheet presently covering the land surface of Antarctica appears to play an almost totally protective role[274]. The ice there also exhibits a notable *absence* of stony debris in the glaciers and icebergs so typical of that southern continent, despite the fact that its sub-ice topography is in places known to be ruggedly mountainous. Consequently there is a singular scarcity of surface moraines in Antarctica – a certain pointer to the near-minimal surface scour presently occurring there. Yet, during so-called Ice Age times, great ice-sheets like that of Antarctica are stated to have caused spectacular land surface damage on virtually a hemispheric scale!

While on the subject of 'scour' and 'debris' relative to ice action, two further points of marked significance merit close attention here.

If, relative to different types of terrain, the aforementioned orthodox contentions re-

Table 1B

Conventional Euro-American Quaternary subdivisions

Common subdivisions of Quaternary glacial deposits recognised in Europe and America. Not to scale.

	Years B P	ALPS	NORTHERN EUROPE	BRITISH ISLES	NORTH AMERICA	NORTHERN EUROPE	BRITISH ISLES	NORTH AMERICA
	9,000						Flandrian	Recent
	10,000			Devensian				
HOLOCENE	10,270		Late Weichselian					
	10,350		Upper Dryas					
	10,900	Würm						
	11,600				Wisconsonian	Alleröd		
	12,200		Middle Dryas					
	12,400							
	13,000		Lower Dryas			Bolling		
	14,250 ?		Mid-Weichselian					
UPPER PLEISTOCENE	25,000							
	30,000							
	45,000							
	50,000		Early Weichselian					
	70,000							
	97,000					Eonian	Ipswichian	Sangamon
	140,000 ?							
		Riss	Saale	Wolstonian	Illinoian			
						Solstein	Hoxnian	Yarmouth
MIDDLE PLEISTOCENE		Mindel	Elater	Anglian Lowestoftian	Kansan			
							Cromerian	
				Beestonian				Aftonian
							Pastonian	
	600,000 ?							
		Gunz	hiatus					
	1,600,000 ?			Bavertian	Nebraskan			
LOWER PLEISTOCENE							Antian	
				Thurian	Pre-Nebraskan			
	2,050,000 ?		hiatus				Ludhamian	
		Donau						
	2,450,000 ?						Waltonian	

specting ice action during the Ice Age really do represent the norm of glacial behaviour, then why did ice fail to remove the unconsolidated 'drift' deposits from many of the higher peaks – which the ice allegedly smothered or overrode – and yet sweep bare much of the nearby lower ground where large accumulations of 'drift' should logically occur? The field evidence on this matter seems to be diametrically opposed to the acknowledged normal processes of ice action on gradients and level surfaces as described above. Indeed, in terms of modern glacier action, the 'drift' actually exhibits characteristics fatally at variance with that action, even if applied to the most conservative Ice Age scenario.

It is undoubtedly noteworthy that neither mountain glaciers generally, nor the Antarctic or Greenland ice-sheets, are now accumulating extensive 'drift'-like deposits. Moreover, present glacier moraines contain angular rocks *unlike* the usually rounded stones and boulders in the 'drift' itself. These latter are themselves usually rounder than that other vexatious Ice Age phenomenon, the 'erratics' – the significance of this point will become clearer later in this book. It can be truly held, therefore, that modern glacial (glacier) deposits possess virtually no typical 'drift'-like features and should be more accurately described as 'heterogeneous (unstratified) muck'.

Again, although moraines are today found at the foot of many glaciers, it does not necessarily signify that every moraine associated with 'drift' deposits was actually produced by glacial action. A receding sea-tide will leave what is essentially a moraine upon a beach, and at least one good record is known of a morainic structure formed by unusually severe cloudbursts – moraines which covered several acres and contained trees, soil, stones and boulders weighing up to an estimated 100 tonnes each[275].

As repeatedly recorded, 'drift' is often encountered in the most unexpected places. The collective effect of such distribution is the *very opposite* of that which could be anticipated from thick ice-sheets allegedly disintegrating the rock surfaces they are said to have over-ridden. Such theoretical ice movements could be expected to sweep bare all hillsides and summits, accumulating the resultant debris ('drift') in valleys and on lower ground. That the 'drift' was often not deposited and distributed in that fashion only serves to support the aforementioned fact that ice (even as huge sheets) does not and cannot naturally *ascend* gradients (let alone the steep inclines and summits of lofty hills and mountains). Nor, as Howorth and others have stressed, should we expect ice – under whatever guise – to have behaved differently in the past.

If, therefore, past and present ice movements were essentially identical, the ice-sheets of glacial theory could have flowed *down* gradients only, or for strictly limited distances across generally flat countryside. From this it follows that the succession of glacial advances and retreats envisaged by glacialists as typifying Pleistocene times, and supposed to have ebbed and flowed across hundreds, even thousands of miles of diverse terrain, were more or less physical impossibilities, In short, they cannot have actually existed. Thus the distinctive names awarded this alternating cycle of glacial advances and retreats (see table 1B) also become largely meaningless.

Numerous lines of enquiry converge upon the startling fact that the Ice Age of orthodoxy is no more than the shaky theory it always has been and its alleged former reality, as conceived by its advocates, just a wonderful myth. There was indeed an 'ice age', but, as shown later in this book, it occurred at a later date and was of comparatively brief duration.

If, as demonstrated, the great ice-sheets so beloved of glacialists never existed, because the uplands so necessary for their development and maintenance were either too low or non-existent during alleged Ice Age times, and because ice, even very thick ice, cannot behave in the manner required by glacial theory, it follows that other geological phenomena commonly ascribed to massive ice-action were caused by some other agency or combination of circumstances. Among such phenomena may be mentioned moraines, striated rocks, rock flutings, giant surface grooves, cirques (bowl-shaped hollows at the top of valleys), hanging valleys (tributary valleys hanging high above valleys they feed into), *roches moutonnées* (polished rock surfaces), kettle-holes (small bowl-like depressions), drumlins (oval hillocks), eskers (long gravel ridges), kames (sand-gravel ridges), 'erratic' boulders and various other types of surface denudation. It is, therefore, unnecessary to consider these features here, although we shall return to them later when we identify the agencies which unquestionably caused them.

14

TURMOIL UNLEASHED

The idea of huge circumpolar ice-sheets relentlessly creeping for thousands of years across extensive swathes of land rendered desolate and frigid, and in which nothing very sudden occurred (save, perhaps, the collapse of large pieces of ice), has long been an essentially uniformitarian concept. The occurrence of so much ice has often been regarded more as a *biological* than as a geophysical catastrophe, but one which, operating so slowly in most regions, has come to be thought of as gradual. Neither the biological nor the geological record, however, support this view, for both reflect catastrophe and destruction on a global scale.

It is widely agreed that, towards the close of Pleistocene times, profound climatic deterioration occurred worldwide. Numerous life-forms previously dominant or very prolific either became extinct or greatly depleted numerically. This change affected the animal and vegetable kingdoms equally, marking in fact a Great Divide in the terrestrial biological record. From a uniformitarian standpoint, this was a truly extraordinary occurrence representing a real catastrophe.

So widespread is the evidence for these changes, and so apparently indiscriminate the annihilation of diverse animal groups, that the closing stages of the Pleistocene period might justifiably be styled an age of wholesale slaughter. In the words of Prof L C Eiseley, the phenomenon drives "...the biologist to despair as he surveys the extinction of so many species and genera in the closing Pleistocene"[276]. Considering these exterminations further, he added:

> We are not dealing with a single, isolated relict species but with a considerable variety of Pleistocene forms, all of which must be accorded, in the light of cultural evidence, an approximately similar time of extinction[277]

In Europe immense herds of diverse animals utterly vanished off the face of the Earth for no obvious biological reason. They were seemingly virile, numerically strong faunal groups, well adapted to their natural environment, yet, geologically speaking, they disappeared with frightening abruptness. The same biological decimation was enacted simultaneously in Australasia, Asia and Africa. Of the latter G E Pilgrim noted:

> ...at approximately the same time we witness a similar extinction of the mammal faunas of Africa and Asia, though in their case this may not have been caused by glacial conditions.[278]

What conditions could these have been? Conditions acting as effectively outside the alleged limits of the hypothetical polar ice-sheets as within them, and on a hemispheric scale.

In the New World, for example, practically the whole Pleistocene mammalian fauna was wiped out or reduced to a pitiful vestige of its former greatness. Among the mammals so affected were:

> ...all the camels, all the horses, all the ground sloths, two genera of musk-oxen, peccaries, certain antelopes, a giant bison with a horn spread of six feet, a giant beaver-like animal, a stag-moose and several kinds of cats, some of which were of lion-size.[279]

Additions to this list include several types of elephants, including the mammoth and the mastodon (though a few individuals are known to have survived Pleistocene times in North America), all the northern rhinoceroses, giant armadillos, several kinds of bear, numerous members of the canine family, tapirs, a variety of rodents, and various large flightless birds.

Coincident with this dreadful slaughter upon the land was the deposition far inland of myriads of contemporary marine shells, and the stranding at great elevations of marine mammals such as whales, porpoises, walruses and seals. Elsewhere, vast forests were flattened and buried under equally vast accumulations of sand or mud or piled up in broken and twisted heaps. At some localities plant remains were packed so densely and in such abundance as to form lignite (soft brown coal akin to peat) beds of great extent[280], while at others animal and plant remains were mixed together in inexpressible confusion as heterogeneous masses. In Alaska, for example, thick frozen deposits of volcanic ash, silts, sands, boulders, lenticles and ribbons of unmelted ice, and countless relics of late Pleistocene animals and plants lie jumbled together in no discernible order, This amazing deposit, usually referred to as 'muck', has been described by Dr Rainey as containing:

> ...enormous numbers of frozen bones of extinct animals, such as the mammoth,

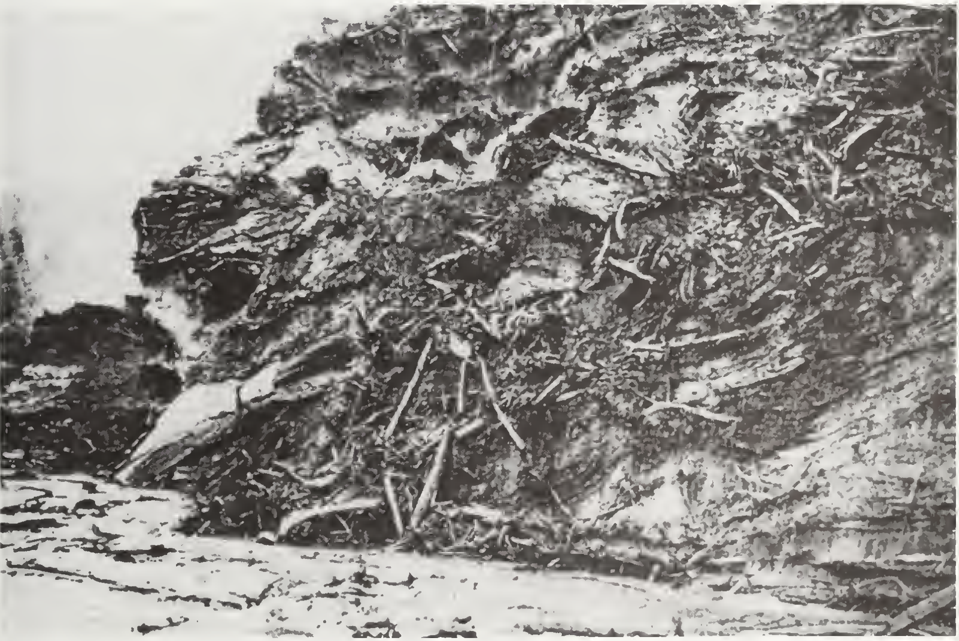

Fig 1.15. A typical exposure of Alaskan 'muck', composed of chaotically dispersed fragments of trees, plants and animals in frozen silt and lenses of ice. *Courtesy of Prof Frank C Hibben, Dept of Anthropology, Univ of New Mexico.*

> mastodon, super bison and horse, as well as brush, stumps, moss and freshwater molluscs.[281]

Hibben described these deposits in very similar language:

> In many places, Alaskan muck is packed with animal bones and debris in trainload lots. Bones of mammoths, mastodons, several kinds of bison, horses, wolves, bears, and lions tell a story of a faunal population... within this frozen mass lie the twisted parts of animals and trees intermingled with lenses of ice and layers of peat and mosses. It looks as though in the midst of some cataclysmic catastrophe of ten thousand years ago the whole Alaskan world of living animals and plants was suddenly frozen in mid-motion in a grim charade.[282]

In another publication, the same author commented:

> Although the formation of the deposits of muck is not clear, there is ample evidence that at least portions of this material were deposited under catastrophic conditions. Mammal remains are for the most part dismembered and disarticulated, even though some fragments yet retain, in their frozen state, portions of ligaments, skin, hair and flesh. Twisted and torn trees are piled in splintered masses... at least four considerable layers of volcanic ash may be traced in these deposits, although they are extremely warped and distorted.[283]

Hibben also suggested that this volcanic ash contributed to the wholesale death and destruction we have been reviewing. He wrote:

> One of the most interesting theories of the Pleistocene end is that which explains this ancient tragedy by worldwide, earth-shaking volcanic eruptions of catastrophic violence. This bizarre idea, queerly enough, has considerable support, especially in the Alaskan and Siberian regions. Interspersed in the muck depths, and sometimes through the very piles of bones and tusks themselves, are layers of volcanic ash. There is no doubt that coincidental with the end of the Pleistocene animals, at least in Alaska, there were volcanic eruptions of tremendous proportions... Toxic clouds of gas from volcanic upheavals could well cause death on a gigantic scale...[284]

We shall later have a few words to say about late Pleistocene vulcanicity worldwide, so we merely mention here that at least 76 major volcanoes, both currently active and recently extinct, exist today in the Aleutian islands immediately south-west of Alaska alone. Many of these appear to have been active around late Pleistocene times.

Hibben's observations also introduce the element of great heat into the argument surrounding the problematical origin of the so-called Ice Age. Discussing the problem from the viewpoint of physics, the celebrated Victorian physicist John Tyndall, as long ago as 1883, stressed that "...the enormous extension of glaciers in bygone ages demonstrates just as rigidly, the operation of heat as well as the action of cold"[285].

Although Tyndall has since been proved wrong on some counts, his remarks respecting great heat required for the formation of widespread ice-sheets are still correct and have been upheld by nearly all later geophysicists. Among these was Dr Donald Menzel of Harvard who, after examining the problem from an astronomical viewpoint, opined:

> If solar variability caused the ice ages, I should prefer to believe that increased warmth brought them on, whereas a diminution of heat caused them to stop.[286]

So, even if they really existed, the huge ice-sheets of Pleistocene times needed great heat for their formation, an element conceivably provided by many volcanoes erupting simultaneously. Such an event, if it actually occurred, must also have generated tremendous atmospheric pollution and hurricane force winds[287]. That it did occur seems to be indisputably established from the massive late Pleistocene vulcanism traceable not only in Alaska but, as shown later, in many other regions both north and south of the equator. Such extensive vulcanism must obviously have been due to some still more fundamental cause.

The frightful hurricanes just alluded to were doubtless primary factors in the demise of so much insect and bird life during late Pleistocene times – for what agency other than extremely violent winds could have brought together in one place such dissimilar avian species as the following? They included: Grebes, herons, bitterns, storks, wood ibises, spoonbills, swans, various geese (including the snow goose), ducks, American vultures, kites, many kinds of hawks, falcons, eagles, caracaras, the *Teratornis*, quails, cranes, partridges, turkeys, rails, gallinules, parrots, coots, plovers, turnstones, woodcock, snipes, surf-scooters, stilts, sandpipers, barn owls, seven other owl species, flycatchers, woodpeckers, swallows, jays, crows, magpies, titmice, chickadees, ravens, mockingbirds, waxwings, thrashers, meadowlarks, shrikes, two species of blackbird, redwings, orioles, finches, sparrows and buntings[288]. Remains of all these birds were discovered in the late Pleistocene tar-seeps at McKittrick in California, and the asphalt pits at Rancho La Brea in the same state.

This extraordinary assemblage is not an isolated freak occurrence. In late Pleistocene deposits at San Pedro, also in California, the following mixed bird assemblage was found with the remains of camel, bison, a ground-sloth, various rodents and the mammals known as *Felis*, *Megalonyx* and *Aenocyon*: loon, ancient murrolet, black-footed albatross, black-vented shearwater, fulmar, Brandt's cormorant, green-winged teal, mallard duck, cinnamon teal, white-fronted goose, surf-scooter, Californian quail, turkey vulture and western meadowlark[289]. All but the first, second and fourth species are still in existence, although like the equivalents from Rancho La Brea and McKittrick they are now spread over many different latitudes and occupy very different habitats. It is more than probable that most if not all these birds never originally dwelt together in the places where we now find their bones. They were brought together from various directions involuntarily by irresistible winds and buried in a common grave by, it would appear, catastrophic agencies.

Again, how does one correlate the extremely varied remains in the lignite deposits at Geiseltal in Germany with the theory of uniformity? Although now regarded as partially of Tertiary and partially of Pleistocene age[290], the tropical plants, insects and animals embedded in them do not square with the equivalents typical of the steppe conditions often stated to have been characteristic of that latitude during late Pleistocene times. The amazing preservation of the soft parts of many of these organisms suggests a very recent origin of the entire assemblage. The insect fauna, for example, is a *modern* one. It occurs "...in present Africa, in East Asia and in America in various regions, preserved in almost original purity"[291].

Complete insects, however, are rarities. The vast majority have been torn apart – and suddenly at that, because the process of fossilisation of all surviving parts with silica invading the tissues must have been virtually instantaneous (*'Fast blitzschnell'* – German), and was undoubtedly responsible for preserving the membranes and original colours of these insects so marvelously[292].

For the vertebrated animals (animals with a spinal column) these lignites are a veritable graveyard. The bones of giant constrictor snakes, East African salamanders, crocodiles, South American condor, an Indo-Australian bird, marsupial mammals, apes, as well as, paradoxically, mammals from northern steppe habitats, lie buried together in no particular order[293].

The plant remains are also perplexing. Fungi and algae still attached to leaves impressed into the lignites are today found only on plants in Brazil, the Cameroons and Java[294]. Chlorophyll is also preserved in many of the leaves which, numbering literally billions, form huge beds within these lignites. The leaves belong to plants from all parts of the world, not just from one or two climatic zones only. The leaves are also mostly shredded so that only their fine fibres or nervous systems remain intact. The fibres often retain their original green (chlorophyllic) colour, and indicate that the leaves must have been rapidly excluded from contact with air and light, and buried almost immediately they were stripped from the parent plants[295]. Many of the plant species concerned *still flourish in the tropics today.*

Only some tremendous hurricane acting in concert with vast surging masses of water could have transported and accumulated these remains at Geiseltal – a hurricane and a deluge operating on a scale and with a ferocity far beyond that of which modern humanity has any experience.

These remarkable faunal and floral assemblages at McKittrick, Rancho La Brea and Geiseltal form singular parallels with the aforementioned shell assemblages found in the 'drift' at Moel Tryfaen in North Wales. Further examples, not detailed here, are also known from other parts of the world. The process responsible for these effects clearly operated not only at many widely-sundered localities and at more or less the same point in Earth history, but affected plants, invertebrates, insects and land, sea and air animals equally. In other words, it acted globally and indiscriminately. Allied with the phenomena found in Alaska, a repeating pattern of wholesale destruction, often involving organisms which could never have lived in the vicinity of huge ice-sheets, emerges worldwide. It was a time when appalling carnage and tremendous natural disturbances occurred hand in hand. Put bluntly, it was a time of unbridled turmoil.

15

EVIDENCE FROM THE ARCTIC

Not as spectacular, perhaps, as the animal fossils discovered in Alaska and Siberian Russia, the equivalent botanical evidence from the Arctic is nevertheless of similar importance. Above all, it represents essentially sedentary life which mostly lived and died where its remains now occur. Adapted to well-defined climatic zones and altitudinal habitats, plants faithfully reflect the meteorological conditions which must have formerly prevailed where their fossils now repose. Taken as a whole, the flora constitutes a natural living background against which normally more mobile life-forms – for example, insects, molluscs and vertebrated animals – live and die. Plant cover in one form or another is virtually a prerequisite haven for such mobile organisms and, amongst other things, functions locally as a partial humidity control. Its importance for other life-forms cannot be overemphasised.

The former existence of a warm, equable region traditionally sited somewhere in the north – often specifically at or near the North Pole itself – would, we may reasonably infer, have been clothed with abundant vegetation by the very nature of such a climatic regime. Much irrefutable evidence indicates that it was so. Palaeobotanists are well aware that a milder climate formerly prevailed throughout much of the present Arctic.

Numerous discoveries of warmth-loving plant remains assigned a Miocene or Pliocene date have been made at many northern localities, including Spitzbergen, the east and west coasts of Greenland, the islands comprising Kong Karl Land, Ellesmere Island, Banks Island and Alaska. Virtually identical remains occur on the Kamchatka peninsula of eastern Siberia, now lying well south of the Arctic Circle. Further consideration of these remains leads to some interesting conclusions.

Today, the winter temperature at 81°N, which is well inside the Arctic Circle, can and does drop from, −40°C to a still lower figure at the Pole itself, although even this does not reach that of the 'Cold Pole' in Siberia where, in the Oymyakon-Verkhoyansk basins, temperatures as low as −70°C have been recorded[296]. Conversely, the summer temperatures in latitude 81°N reach a cool 3°C[297].

Such severe temperature fluctuations obviously restrict the type and range of vegetation capable of surviving these extremes. Thus, if conventional concepts of lengthy Pleistocene glaciations and interglacial episodes are correct, these northern plant assemblages can have changed but little for hundreds of thousands of years. Plant records immediately preceding Pleistocene times, however, reveal that a markedly different flora flourished then in present Arctic latitudes, showing these to have been far warmer than they are today, and that many of the genera and species hardly differed from those which now thrive much further south. The findings of Prof F E Weiss, quoted by H E Forrest, stressed this:

> It has been shown by Heer, Unger, Ettinghausen and others that many plants of the Miocene period are so closely related to those of today that they cannot be distinguished as separate species (*eg Taxodium disticum*), and in most cases the living species are very closely related to those of the Miocene period [which is generally believed to have ended at least ten million years ago! – authors]
>
> | **Miocene** | **Recent** |
> |---|---|
> | *Populus balsaminoides* | *Populus balsamifera* |
> | *Platanus aceroides* | *Platanus occidentalis* |
> | *Sequoia sternbergii* | *Sequoia gigantea* |
> | *Sequoia langsdorfii* | *Sequoia sempervirens* |
>
> This indicates that there has been very little change since that period and we must consider the distribution of plants today in the light of that which existed in the Tertiary period. The remains from that period also show that the species occurring at that time had a much wider distribution, in the Northern Hemisphere at all events, than is the case nowadays. We may take it that the circumpolar flora of that time was most nearly related to the existing flora of north-east America, including as it did such genera as *Liquidambar*, *Vitis*, *Magnolia* and *Liriodendron*.[298]

It is more than curious that the existing flora of Greenland shows that flowering plants, which are said to have survived there from pre-glacial times, indicate that this so-called glacial epoch must have been *much less severe* than commonly believed[299], especially as Greenland is conventionally stated to have been repeatedly buried under enormously thick ice-sheets in Ice Age times, which obliterated everything in their path.

Early scientific expeditions to Spitzbergen discovered and collected 136 specimens of Miocene plants representing species of fir, spruce, marsh cypress, hazel, elm, sequoia, liquidambar, gingkos, tulip trees, magnolia and freshwater plants[300]. A similar picture came to light near Disko island off western Greenland where pine cones, acorns and other plants were discovered last century[301]. Further finds elsewhere in Arctic America concerned temperate-zone trees such as walnut, beech, oak, poplar, lime – some with fruit still on the branches – maple, magnolia, cypress, plane trees and conifers[302]. Some remains represented tropical ferns and the breadfruit[303]. Rather unexpectedly, many of these remains occurred in a sparry iron ore[304], a fact which will later assume much significance. Elaborating upon this evidence Sir Charles Lyell remarked:

> Professor Heer has examined the various collections of fossil plants that have been obtained in Northern Greenland (latitude 70°N), Iceland, Spitzbergen and other parts of the Arctic regions, and has determined that they are of Miocene age, and indicate a temperate climate. The Arctic Miocene flora now comprises 194 species, and that of Greenland 137 species, of which 46, or exactly one third, are identical with plants found in the Miocene beds of Central Europe. Considerably more than half the number are trees, which is more remark-

> able since at the present day trees do not exist in any part of Greenland even 10° further south. More than 30 species of *Coniferae* have been found, including several sequoias (allied to the gigantic Wellingtonia of California)... also beeches, oaks, planes, maples, walnuts, limes and even a Magnolia... andromeda, hazel, blackthorn, holly, dogwood and hawthorn. A species of zamia (*zamites*) grew in the swamps, with *potamogeton*, *sparganium* and *menyanthes*, while ivy and vines twined round the forest trees, and broad-leaved ferns grew beneath their shade. Even in Spitzbergen, as far north as latitude 78°, no less than 95 species of fossil plants have been obtained, including hazel, poplar, alder, beech, plane-tree and lime. Such a vigorous growth of trees within 12° of the Pole, where now a dwarf willow and a few herbaceous plants form the only vegetation and where the ground is covered with almost perpetual snow and ice, is truly remarkable. The identity of so many of the fossils with Miocene species of central Europe not only proves that the climate of Greenland was much warmer than it is now, but also renders it probable that a much more uniform climate prevailed over the entire Northern Hemisphere[305].

While adding further botanical species to these impressive lists, modern research has merely confirmed the Miocene character and luxuriance of these ancient northern forests. It was, however, this same evidence which, last century, prompted the view that the terrestrial axis must have changed since Miocene times[306]. The great Swedish geographer, Nordenskiöld, concluded that summer temperatures then at latitude 78°N must have attained at least 14–15°C to have permitted the survival of these plants[307]. He was, however, greatly puzzled at being unable to find any transitional plants in northern latitudes which bridged the Miocene/Pliocene/post-glacial gap[308]. Everywhere there seemed to be a *sudden* change from an older Miocene/Pliocene flora to a modern (post-glacial) one, in which plant types linking the two regimes were conspicuously absent. Nordenskiold eventually decided that, without leaving one transitional plant to be found today, the glacial scour of the Ice Age must have ground up or carried away all evidence of such vegetation in northern latitudes[309]. Nordenskiöld subscribed, of course, to the then-fashionable theory of immensely thick ice-sheets mantling great regions of the northern hemisphere.

Iceland was also formerly milder than it is today. The presence there in clays described as 'very late Pleistocene' of large trees such as oak, maple, sequoia, spruce and others is irrefutable proof of this. Collectively, they point to a former mean annual temperature of 11°C. It has been suggested that these trees flourished during an "interglacial warm period"[310], yet their mode of interment within the clays bespeaks of sudden agitated conditions, the very reverse of those supposedly typifying the so-called interglacial episodes. Interestingly, P E P Norton concluded, after studying the remains of shells and pieces of wood in deposits assigned a late Pleistocene or early Holocene age at Tjornes in northern Iceland, that they had been accumulated under violently agitated circumstances[311]. Dated as being 11,000–12,500 years old, these fossils indicate that this part of Iceland remained unglaciated[312] at a time elswhere alleged to have featured prodigious ice-sheets which, by then said to have been slowly melting, still dominated many northern landscapes.

The aforementioned absence of glaciation of sizable areas of Arctic Canada may have been still greater than generally conceded; for although Cornwallis and Devon islands at 75°32'N are commonly believed to have been glaciated and are depicted as being so on maps reconstructing Ice Age times, Grinnell Land still further north at the polar end of Ellesmere Island, Banks Island and Prince Patrick Island all yield evidence militating against the notion that they were ever glaciated at all.

On the contrary, immense quantities of ancient permanently frozen wood, pine cones and acorns lie at an elevation of some 150ft (46m) above present sea level near the centre of Banks Island. One of the trees discovered there had apparently grown on the spot and retained many of its leaves, albeit blackened and withered[313]. Significantly, no oaks now flourish within several hundred miles of this island, so where have the acorns come from? Eleven other trees found on Banks Island were later identified as conifers of North American type, and two species of flowering plants were also recognised among this debris[314].

Supposed driftwood, much of it semi-fossil, was also encountered last century along the shores of Banks Island, at some places as much as 580ft (177m) above sea level[315]. Sir Robert McClure, who made many of these discoveries, found traces of former immense forests at several other localities on the island, about which Robert Damon of Weymouth wrote as follows:

> Sir Robert McClure mentions, in his narrative of the discovery of the north-west passage, the existence of a fossil forest on Banks Land, latitude 74°25′, where, for a depth of 40ft, the cliff was composed of one mass of fossil trees... 120 miles further north... [existed]... a similar kind of fossil forest.[316]

McClure met with comparable remains of ancient trees still further North, at latitude 76°12N, on Prince Patrick Island, where trunks as much as 4ft (1.3m) in circumference occurred. Some were so ancient that the wood had lost its combustibility and refused to burn[317].

Although Geikie thought these trees were probably referable to the Miocene period[318], the fact that they were superficially in a condition which, in other circumstances, would be regarded as combustible, suggests that they, too, were not properly fossilised and not, therefore, referable to such a remotely distant period as the Miocene. Nevertheless, these trees may indeed have represented typical Miocene species which, as we have repeatedly noticed, seemingly survived almost unchanged across many presently Arctic regions from the Miocene period down to late Pleistocene times – despite the intervention between those temporal extremes of the whole of the Pliocene and Pleistocene epochs (see table 1A). Such possibilities are enormously enhanced when we again note, as Nordenskiöld and other palaeobotanists also have, that in Arctic lands the change from an older Miocene/Pliocene flora to a modern (post-glacial) one, without transitional botanical species, was not only abrupt but occurred geologically very recently indeed.

If, as previously argued, the glacial and interglacial successions typifying conventional Ice Age times never actually existed, and if, as has also been suggested, some kind of post-Miocene axial shift has occurred, then Nordenskiöld's problem respecting the hiatus in the Arctic botanical record evaporates, for no transitional plants ever existed either, and the traceable changes were fundamentally environmental ones. Plants, being sensitive environmental 'thermometers', merely reflected those changes. Abrupt changes inevitably *precluded* the development of transitional plant species.

What this really means is that, while a rich and diverse botanical assemblage now preserved in sub-fossil form at various Arctic sites represents an ancient Miocene/Pliocene flora, the discovered specimens of it do *not* date from such distant times but are remnants of the *last* representatives of that flora which perished during the widespread environmental changes experienced across these northern latitudes at the close of Pleistocene times. Very significantly, as we shall shortly discover, a geologically late survival of ancient biota is duplicated in the record of the sub-fossilised animals entombed in the Pleistocene rock fissures and bone caves further south, where Miocene and Pliocene species sometimes lie cheek-by-jowl with Pleistocene and even modern (existing) species.

Further aspects of these profound northern changes and of the orthodox reconstructions of Ice Age times also exist which briefly merit consideration.

Among the more important of these are the conditions existing on either side of the northern end of the Nares Strait, the narrow channel which, straddling latitude 82°N, separates north-western Greenland from Grinnell Land on Ellesmere Island. There, conditions believedly typical of glacial and interglacial episodes of Ice Age times exist side by side[319], for despite its far northern location Grinnell Land features little permanent ice and hosts a considerable variety of plants which grow upon non-glacial soils, whereas Greenland, across the Strait, is perpetually smothered in snow and ice.

Here is an instance where glacial and so-called interglacial conditions do not, as in most Ice Age models, have to be successive. Given the appropriate conditions, they can be coeval. That such contrasting conditions can actually exist in such close geographical proximity on opposite sides of the Nares Strait is due largely to the warm waters of the western branch of the Gulf Stream flowing northwards up Davis Strait as far as Grinnell Land and influencing conditions there conducive to plant growth. Such conditions, however, are apparently exceptional, for, as shown earlier, the existence in alleged Ice Age times of extensive and lengthy glacial and interglacial episodes during conditions of near-hemispheric extent is no longer really tenable. The evidence supposedly representative of them requires alternative interpretation.

Here, a further point concerning soils also arises.

If Grinnell Land, as presumed by orthodox Ice Age dogma (but contrary to field evidence), was formerly glaciated by thick scouring ice-sheets, why did the ice not remove that region's original (old) soil – as has apparently occurred across much of northern mainland Canada (although not on many of that country's Arctic islands, where the aforementioned tree and plant remains testify so eloquently to its retention)? Enormous ice sheets of the type so commonly a part of standard Ice Age scenarios should have scoured away all such soil and all the botanical remains just discussed.

It has long been known that glacial soils are generally sterile and, for lengthy periods following their deposition, do not encourage plant growth. Highlighting this point many years ago, the American naturalist McGee, as cited by Howorth, observed:

> ...crude soils, such as fresh glacial clays from some yards beneath the surface, are not adapted to the support of luxuriant vegetation.[320]

Drawing upon the conclusions of several earlier authorities, McGee added:

> ...of the valleys laid bare at the glacial period, those whose glaciers retreated first present a richer and more varied vegetation than those which remained a long time covered with ice... The western slope of the Rocky Mountains exhibits abundant traces of glaciation evidently quite recent, geologically speaking, though it may well be doubted whether the glaciers have existed within many centuries, yet scarcely any vegetation has sprung up on the light glacial soil.[321])

Here, therefore, is a further detail suggesting that Grinnell Land, and probably much of Ellesmere Island as a whole, was never extensively glaciated, if at all.

But the absence of appreciable soils across huge northern stretches (the Canadian-, Hudson Bay- or Laurentian-Shield[322]) of mainland Canada, as also parts of western Siberia[323] and Finland[324], if not removed by ice that seemingly never was, must have resulted from the operation of other agencies. Wind and water are the only two alternative agents which could conceivably have produced the observable effects. Their operation, however, would have had to have been on a stupendous scale.

Together with the frozen soils of 'unglaciated' Alaska and eastern Siberia, with their abundant refrigerated relics of flowering and fruit-bearing trees and plants belonging to species now unable to grow in such high latitudes, the botanical testimony of the Canadian Arctic islands indicates the richness of the flora that formerly flourished in Arctic latitudes under climatic conditions clearly very different from those now extant there. Nor do we need reminding that the cessation of those conditions was apparently sudden, complete, and occurred at the very close of so-called Ice Age (Younger Dryas) times with astonishing rapidity (see I:5 *A Displaced Axis?*); or that an equable pre-catastrophic Golden Age traditionally existing during the 'childhood of humanity' in northern latitudes, where life existed in serenity. The traditional end of this paradisical world is consistently described as sudden and violent – a not unexpected fate of an era terminated by agencies which, on the basis of the aforementioned astronomical data, perhaps involved a change to the tilt of Earth's rotational axis. As we shall see later, a surprisingly large number of scholars have discussed this possibility. One scarcely needs to add that any such axial change would inevitably have generated major climatic changes and would have engendered biological destructions of exactly the magnitude the aforementioned evidence indicates.

16

AN INTERIM SUMMARY

Having now reached a point where the validity and significance of several diverse but related aspects of recent Earth history have been outlined in some detail, it may, before continuing further, be useful here to recapitulate the main themes discussed and the conclusions reached, especially as these collectively form the terrestrial background against which the awesome saga traced throughout the remainder of this book originally unfolded.

We have seen that humanity's age-old preoccupation with world history has steadily evolved from simple beliefs featuring a succession of ill-defined World Ages (or World Suns) – each allegedly terminating catastrophically – and that the most widely remembered and recent of these events was the Great Flood or Deluge of traditional and scriptural histories.

The interrelated questions of the 'date of Creation' and the 'age of the Earth' figured prominently in the deliberations of many classical and post-classical historians who, until the late 1820s, regarded the Deluge as not only real but as an important datum in practically all their historical schemes. They freely used the terms 'antediluvian' and 'post-diluvian' to denote pre-Flood and post-Flood events, peoples and things.

Irrespective of the particular strata from which they were obtained, fossils, which had apparently fascinated people since prehistoric times, were widely regarded as the physical remnants of antediluvian creatures drowned in the Deluge, although some thinkers realised quite early on that certain fossils represented organisms which had left no living descendants, and that some apparently belonged to eras so distant from ours that these were already immensely ancient even before the Deluge. Estimates of the real age of the world were regularly recalculated and slowly extended from a few thousand years to hundreds of thousands, and ultimately to millions of years – sufficient time, in the opinion of some adventurous scholars, in which pre-Adamites (people before Adam, the traditional 'first' man) could have lived or evolved.

Astronomical discoveries during the late 1600s and early 1700s revealed the periodicity of many comets and the existence of gravity, for the first time. William Whiston, who was cognizant of these discoveries and a friend of many who had made them, was seemingly the earliest to have proposed the idea that a comet, passing close to Earth, had gravitationally displaced the oceans and caused them to overflow their natural basins as a vast worldwide Flood. This theory was set out in a book which, published in 1696 and another in 1717[327], showed how the Deluge could have occurred through the 'geo-physics' involved, and how it could have been a cosmically rather than a terrestrially-induced event.

Through providing a hitherto-missing workable mechanism – a defensible cause, as against that traditionally invoking unverifiable 'divine wrath' – confirming on the basis of cold scientific facts the apparent veracity of the scriptural and traditional accounts of a tremendous prehistoric Flood, Whiston's books accordingly became very influential and, in the process, initiated the 'scientific' foundation of the 'Catastrophist' school of thought.

During the 130 years or so following Whiston's books, the hypothesis of a comet-induced Deluge was enthusiastically cultivated by scientists and churchmen alike. The theory seemed to satisfactorily embrace both their sets of beliefs. Ultimately, however, their application of the theory to a whole range of natural phenomena became ever more forced and unlikely, and a point was eventually reached where 'catastrophism', as represented by Whiston's hypothesis, had clearly overstepped its mark and reached absurd proportions. Academicians reacted by seeking alternative, less sensational explanations.

Re-studies of many natural phenomena eventually resulted in the appearance during the early 1830s of Charles Lyell's now famous 'Theory of Uniformity', in which the extravagances of the catastrophists were discarded in favour of slow, gradual changes extending over immense periods of time. The age of the Earth thus grew longer still, and Lyell's new approach (actually built in part on earlier but at that time insufficiently noticed similar ideas advanced by James Hutton and William Smith) was swiftly acclaimed – one suspects as much as a relief from previous rampant 'catastrophism' as from any general recognition of 'uniformity's' inherent merits.

From Lyell's work sprang the 'uniformitarian' school of thought, which has ever since been in opposition to that of the catastrophists and has assumed ascendancy over it. It should be noted, however, that 'catastrophism' has never entirely died out, and has recently received support from some eminent sources[325].

But even before, and after, Lyell's day, naturalists acknowledged that certain geological phenomena existed which bespoke of sudden and violent changes – the very opposite of the calm uniformitarian norm. The phenomena included polished and striated rocks, 'erratic' boulders, extensive unstratified 'drift' deposits, abruptly frozen mammoth and rhinoceros carcasses in Siberia, and an astonishing profusion of unreasonably jumbled bony remains of countless incompatible animals in caves and rock fissures on every continent. Although fuller consideration of these remarkable burials occurs in Part Two, neither they nor the other anomalies just listed could be readily accounted for by uniformitarian tenets, especially as in almost every case they were primarily surface phenomena and therefore geologically youthful. Lengthy ages of serene conditions could never have produced them.

Nevertheless, less than ten years after the publication of Lyell's theory, another was proposed which, amongst other things, was thought to satisfactorily explain most of this anomalous material on non-catastrophic grounds. This was the Ice Age or glacial theory of the Swiss geologist Louis Agassiz. Like Lyell's, it was destined to become exceedingly influential in geological and biological circles.

Giant glaciers and huge ice-sheets smothering all but the highest peaks in northern lands were the main features in Agassiz's hypothesis. Ice, not Deluge waters, had purportedly striated and polished hard rocks, distributed the 'erratics' and had deposited the unconsolidated 'drift'. Thus, wherever such phenomena existed, that was where prodigious quantities of ice formerly existed and produced these effects. Above all, ice is *slow-acting*.

Though still exceptional, the frozen Siberian animal carcasses were, as they belonged to species also entombed *unfrozen* in geologically youthful 'drift' deposits elsewhere, quickly regarded as being similarly youthful. The relevant individuals, it was reasoned, must have belonged to animals which had lived and died in glacial conditions. Geologists invented a special epoch, the 'Pleistocene', to accommodate all such material.

The champions of ice as a causal agent for so many 'Pleistocene phenomena' could, it seemed, adequately account even for apparent anomalies like these. Accordingly, the Deluge ceased to be regarded as the cause of the 'drift' and associated geological phenomena, and was no longer recognised as an important benchmark in history. If it had ever occurred it probably had been a local event of scant significance outside the region it affected.

Encouraged by the apparent merits of Agassiz's theory, geologists everywhere renewed their studies of geological evidence previously ascribed to diluvial action. The outcome was a number of important, and sometimes diametrically opposed, developments.

Several separate alleged ice advances (stadials), alternating with ice retreats (interstadials) were professedly recognised. Elaborate schemes, in which the advances were generally envisaged as having been from polar latitudes equatorwards, were devised to explain these. To accommodate these stadials and interstadials, which, *a priori*, were imagined as lengthy episodes due to the usual slow actions of ice, the 'Pleistocene' period lengthened again. Some modern estimates of its duration make this span as much as three million years[326].

Particular attention was paid to what had actually caused the Ice age. Many explanations were proposed and discarded. None met all the necessary criteria – a situation still the case today.

Extended field studies also began to reveal serious defects in Agassiz's hypothesis. 'Erratic' boulders and 'drift' deposits were discovered in regions that even the most massive ice-sheets could never have reached. These, however, were also *essentially identical* to the 'erratics' and 'drift' of more northern areas where large accumulations of ice could most certainly once have existed. Conversely, 'drift' was found to be singularly *absent* from many northern localities where, if Ice Age theory was correct, it should occur.

Wind, water, mud-slides and various volcanic actions, as well as other agencies, began to be recognised as equally capable of scoring and striating rocks under given conditions. The predominant orientation of rock striations was surprisingly consistent throughout much of the northern hemisphere, and was sometimes associated with 'drift' deposits confined to northern or north-western mountain slopes, or to areas devoid of 'drift' altogether. In many areas striae affected older topographical features in ways that frequently negated all known ice behaviour.

Extraordinary accumulations of incompatible organisms – shells, birds, mammals, plants and so on – were encountered in 'drift' deposits hundreds, even thousands, of miles *too far* north of their present habitats. Southwards-moving ice could hardly have transported such remains to the localities yielding them. Elsewhere, extensive debris of ancient forests were met with in northern lands now far too cold to support any such vegetation, yet the immense ice-sheets of conventional Ice Age dogma had somehow avoided them and failed to scour away their trunks and branches as it had allegedly scoured away rocks elsewhere when accumulating the 'drift' deposits.

The orthodox concept of immense sprawling polar ice-sheets which, after long ages, slowly melted away, is, like the modified versions of it developed since, so full of fatal shortcomings and so at variance with inescapable field evidence, that the standard notion of the Ice Age must now be regarded as fundamentally flawed and almost certainly a chimera. Indeed, any application of it hemispherically, as was formerly common practice, is undoubtedly fallacious. Nevertheless, something – if not ice – had to have occurred which created and distributed so widely the so-called 'glacial' phenomena – and geologically lately at that, as the phenomena themselves are demonstrably youthful too.

Geologists have established that a similar modernity characterised the shattering, collapse and upheaval of many sizable portions of the Earth's crust, as well as the concomitant elevation of most of our planet's highest mountain ranges. Many highly competent authorities have been united in describing these huge disturbances in graphically catastrophic terms, dating them as having occurred 'at the end of the Ice Age', 'at the close of the Pleistocene epoch' or 'in sub-Recent times' – quite the reverse of what could be reasonably expected of uninterrupted uniformitarian conditions.

It is clear that before the onset of these disturbances world topography differed appreciably from that of today. The Alps were simply 'a chain of low hills'; the proto-Rockies, if they truly existed, were actually located considerably farther west; the Gobi desert was allegedly a great inland sea. A full list of these changes is impressively long and everywhere reflects the effects of a worldwide catastrophe.

In whatever guise even a small pre-catastrophic Ice Age might have existed, it, like the full-blown chimerical one disposed of above, certainly never sprawled across topographies familiar to modern people.

Palaeontologists and biologists have likewise reached generally similar conclusions respecting the demise of countless plants and animals on all continents 'at the close of the Pleistocene epoch'. Extinctions then were sudden, violent, frighteningly wholesale, indiscriminate and very extensive. Science has also determined, as will be elaborated on more fully anon, that many of the animals concerned were *not* adapted to the widespread glacial conditions supposedly typical of many regions immediately preceding these extinctions, but were more suited to *milder* and *gentler* regimes. The refrigerated evidence of warm/temperate vegetation from Arctic lands independently and strikingly supports that scenario, and suggests that some alteration of the axial tilt of the Earth may have attended the aforementioned crustal disturbances. They also intimate that the earliest histories which refer to remotely ancient times epitomised by a Golden Age may, after all, allude to some long-forgotten reality.

Evidence thus converges from numerous directions to support the conclusion that, on the testimony of radio-carbon and other dating techniques, immense physical and climatic changes occurred on Earth some 11,000 years or so ago – when an Ice Age that probably never was came to an end, and an apparently typical uniformitarian regime was abruptly terminated.

The collective and unavoidable message of these and other innumerable details is that, at some stage, colossal masses of water played a very important (although not the only) role in effecting these changes. This again suggests that the many surviving accounts of a worldwide Deluge long ago may yet be found to rest upon a substratum of now dimly-remembered fact.

Be that as it may, however, geophysics (as presently understood) reveals that Earth is seemingly incapable of generating of its own volition physical convulsions of the type and magnitude registered naturally in recent Earth history. Some other cause must have arisen – a cause powerful enough to affect the entire globe more or less simultaneously – to satisfactorily meet all relevant criteria. Only some closely-approaching cosmic object of considerable size could activate the titanic forces which, though part and parcel of a wider, more profound, universal uniformitarianism, only become naturally unleashed during such confrontations, and would be necessary to produce such gargantuan topographical and biological changes so rapidly and extensively on Earth.

The relationships between apparently incompatible uniformitarian and catastrophic regimes of the kinds just mentioned have been shown to be extremes of what, in reality, is a single astronomical or cosmic 'norm', manifesting itself on Earth only at the times of cosmic confrontations. A question of relative scale is directly involved – nothing more and nothing less. In such a context, the 'catastrophism' and 'uniformitarianism' of previous historians is not merely unreal, but a serious stumbling-block to a fuller and more lasting understanding of recent Earth history.

Finally, that many ancient Deluge accounts also describe the Flood as one of the results of a tremendous celestial conflict certainly cannot be without significance, and indicate that singular prospects now confront us at almost every turn.

Table 1C

Synopsis of major global geophysical changes during 'late Pleistocene' times

Formation of deserts	Dried-up rivers/lakes/seas	Changed natural drainage/lake levels	Disappearance of land-bridges/land-masses	Raised beaches	Coastal warping	Marine displacements	Vulcanism	Fissures and fractures	Stratal inversion	Overthrusting of older over younger strata	Crustal tilting	Crustal shortening	Lateral crustal displacement	Orogeny and faulting	Sea-floor collapse	Land subsidence	Elevation	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	**ARCTIC**
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	Jan Mayen Islands
☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	Bear Island
☐	☐	■	■	■	☐	☐	■	■	☐	☐	■	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	■	Spitzbergen
☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	Kong Karl Land
☐	☐	☐	■	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	■	Franz Josef Land
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	White Sea
☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	■	Kola Peninsula
☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	■	Kanin Peninsula/R. Ob
☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	■	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	Novaya Zemlya
☐	☐	☐	■	■	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	Vaygach Islands
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	■	☐	☐	Barents Sea
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	Kara Sea
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	■	Laptev Sea
☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	New Siberian Islands
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	Verkhoyansk foldbelt
☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	Bering Strait
☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	■	Chukchee coast
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	■	Anadyr Bay
☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	■	■	☐	☐	■	Ural Mts.
☐	☐	☐	■	■	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	St Lawrence Islands
☐	☐	☐	■	☐	■	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	Seaward Peninsula
☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	South Alaska coast
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	Alaskan Range
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	Gulf of Alaska
☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	Aleutian Islands
☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	■	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	Canadian Archipelago
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	**NORTH ATLANTIC**
☐	☐	☐	■	■	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	■	GREENLAND
☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	■	☐	Davis Strait
☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	Carey Islands
☐	☐	☐	■	■	☐	☐	■	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	ICELAND
☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	Appalachia
☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	Azores
☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	Canary Islands
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	Mid-Atlantic Ridge
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	General
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	**EUROPE**
☐	☐	☐	■	■	■	■	☐	■	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	BRITISH ISLES
☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	Irish Sea
☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	■	☐	North Sea
☐	☐	☐	■	■	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	■	☐	■	■	NORWAY
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	Skagerrak
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	SWEDEN
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	FINLAND
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	■	■	☐	■	☐	■	☐	☐	■	Alps
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	POLAND
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	■	Carpathian Mountains
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	■	☐	☐	■	Ural Mountains
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	■	Gibraltar
☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	■	☐	Aegean Sea
☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	Aral Sea

Table 1C (Continued)

Synopsis of major global geophysical changes during 'late Pleistocene' times

Formation of deserts	Dried-up rivers/lakes/seas	Changed natural drainage/lake levels	Disappearance of land-bridges/land-masses	Raised beaches	Coastal warping	Marine displacements	Vulcanism	Fissures and fractures	Stratal inversion	Overthrusting of older over younger strata	Crustal tilting	Crustal shortening	Lateral crustal displacement	Orogeny and faulting	Sea-floor collapse	Land subsidence	Elevation	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	**ASIA**
■	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	IRAN
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	Altai Mountains
☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	Tibetan Plateau
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	Tien Shan
■	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	Gobi Basin
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	Pamirs
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	Hindu Kush
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	Karakoram
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	Kailas Mountains
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	Kuenlun Mountains
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	Alai Mountains
☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	■	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	Himalayas
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	Pir Panjal
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	Assam Valley
☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	Nanga-Parbat
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	Naga, Patkai
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	Bombay
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	Arakan coast
☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	Palk Strait
☐	☐	■	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	BURMA
☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	THAILAND
☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	MALAYA
☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	LAOS
☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	VIETNAM
☐	☐	☐	■	■	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	■	Kamchatka Peninsula
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	Bayan Kara Shan
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	Minya Konka
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	Yunnan Province
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	Great Khingan Shan
☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	Sikhote-Alin Mountains
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	Sea of Japan
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	Yellow Sea
☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	Hainan Islands
☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	■	☐	JAPAN
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	Sea of Okhotsk
☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	Kuril Islands
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	**PACIFIC OCEAN**
☐	☐	☐	■	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	Mindanao Islands
☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	PHILIPPINES
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	Asian coastline
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	MARIANAS
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	Hawaii
☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	■	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	■	☐	General

Table 1C (Continued)

Formation of deserts	Dried-up rivers/lakes/seas	Changed natural drainage/lake levels	Disappearance of land-bridges/land-masses	Raised beaches	Coastal warping	Marine displacements	Vulcanism	Fissures and fractures	Stratal inversion	Overthrusting of older over younger strata	Crustal tilting	Crustal shortening	Lateral crustal displacement	Orogeny and faulting	Sea-floor collapse	Land subsidence	Elevation	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	**THE AMERICAS**
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	■	Rocky Mountains
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	Coast Ranges
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	Cascade Mountains
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	Sierra Nevada
■	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	Colorado
■	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	Salt Lake valley
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	Grand Canyon
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	St Lawrence valley
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	■	East Coast
☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	Bermuda
☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	■	Florida
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	Gulf of Mexico
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	EL SALVADOR
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	HONDURAS
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	NICARAGUA
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	GUATEMALA
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	COSTA RICA
☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	■	■	■	Caribbean area
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	Venezuelan Basin
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	■	Andes
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	■	COLOMBIA
☐	☐	☐	☐	■	■	☐	■	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	■	EQUADOR
☐	☐	☐	☐	■	■	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	■	PERU
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	Lake Titicaca
☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	■	BOLIVIA
☐	☐	☐	☐	■	■	☐	■	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	■	CHILE
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	ARGENTINA
☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	■	GUYANA
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	**AFRICA**
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	■	West Coast
☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	Anti-Atlas Mountains
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	Atlas Mountains
■	■	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	Sahara
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	Aïr
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	Hoggar
☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	Lake Chad
☐	■	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	ETHIOPIA
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	SOMALIA
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	Great Rift Valley
☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	Lake Albert
☐	■	■	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	KENYA
☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	Lake Victoria
☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	■	TANZANIA
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	SOUTH AFRICA
■	■	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	Namibian Desert
■	■	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	Kalahari Desert
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	**AUSTRALASIA & OCEANIA**
☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	■	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	Indian Ocean
☐	☐	☐	■	■	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	■	■	INDONESIA
☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	NEW HEBRIDES
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	Adelaide - South Australia
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	Blue Mountains (NSW)
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	Eastern Highlands
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	New South Wales
☐	☐	☐	☐	■	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	York Peninsula
☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	Torres Strait
☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	Bass Strait
☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	■	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	NEW ZEALAND
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	South Antarctic Peninsula

REFERENCES

1. Grafton, A T. 1975. "Joseph Scaliger and Historical Chronology: the Rise and Fall of a Discipline", *History and Theory*; vol xiv, pp156–185.
2. Pfeiffer, R. 1976. *History of Classical Scholarship from 1300 to 1850* (Oxford), ix + 214pp.
3. North, J D. 1977. "Chronology and the Age of the World", pp307–333 in W Yourgrau and A D Breck (eds), *Cosmology, History and Theology* (New York) xvi + 416pp.
4. Vossius, I. 1659. *Dissertatio de Vera Aetate Mundi* (The Hague), 2 + iii-iv + 1pp.
5. Allen, D C. 1963. *The Legend of Noah* (Urbana, IL), vi + 221pp; see especially chap 3.
6. Rupke, N A. 1983. *The Great Chain of History – William Buckland and the English School of Geology* (1814–1849), (Oxford), xii + 322pp.

   Collier, K B. 1968. *Cosmologies of our Fathers: some theories of the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries* (New York), 500pp.
7. Finegan, J. 1964. *Handbook of Biblical Chronology: principles of time reckoning in the ancient world and problems of chronology in the Bible* (Princeton), xxvi + 338pp.
8. Dean, D. 1981. "The Age of the Earth Controversy: Beginnings to Hutton", *Ann Sci*, vol 31, pp435–456.
9. McGinn, B. 1979. *Visions of the End: Apocalyptic tradition in the Middle Ages* (New York), 232pp; see pp1-11.

   Patrides, A D. 1963. "Renaissance Estimates of the Year of Creation", *Huntington Library Quarterly*, vol 26, pp315–322; see pp320–322.
10. Ussher, J. 1650–1654. *Annales Veteris et Novi Testamenti, a Prima Mundi Origine Deducti* (London), lxviii + 124pp.
11. Finegan, J. 1964. *Op cit.*
12. Bayle, P. 1695–1697. *Dictionnaire historique et critique*, 2 vols. (Rotterdam).
13. Harvey, J. 1588. *Discoursive problems concerning prophecies* (London), 4 + 133pp; see p34.
14. Bacon, R. 1433. *Opus Majus*, 2 vols. (Oxford), tr R B Burke; vol 1, pp209–210.
15. Newton, I. 1728. *The Chronology of Ancient Kingdoms Amended* (London), xiv + 276pp.

    Kennedy, J. 1751. *New Method of Stating and Explaining the Scripture Chronology, upon Mosaic Astronomical Principles, Mediums, and Data, as Laid Down in the Pentateuch* (London), 431pp.
16. Whiston, W. 1696. *A New Theory of the Earth* (London), 2 + 95 + 388pp.
17. Edwards, W N. 1967. "The Early History of Palaeontology", *British Museum (Natural History), Special Guide* no:8, viii + 58pp.

    Rudwick, M J S. 1976. *The Meaning of Fossils*, 2nd edn. (London) & New York), 287pp.
18. Raven, C E. 1950. *John Ray, Naturalist* (Cambridge), xix + 506pp; see p425.

    Gunther, R W T (ed). 1928. *Further Correspondence of John Ray* (London) 336pp. see p260.
19. McKerrow, R B (ed). 1966. "Pierce Penilesse" (1592) in T Nashe's *Works*, 5 vols. (Oxford); vol 1, p172.
20. Edwards, W N. 1967. Op cit, p21.
21. de La Peyere, I. 1655. *Preadamitae* (Amsterdam), 4 + 128pp.
22. Hampson, N. 1968. *A Cultural History of the Enlightenment* (New York), 304pp; see p90.
23. Diderot, D. 1749. *Lettre sur les Aveugles* (London), 220pp.
24. Buffon, G L de. 1749. *Histoire Naturelle*, 44 vols (Paris); see vol 1.
25. Maillet, B de. 1748. *Telliamed* (Amsterdam), 2 vols. *NB:* The first English edition of this work was published in London in 1750.
26. Coltman, D. 1966. *Diderot's Selected Writings*, tr D Coltman (New York & London); see p197.
27. Howell, J. 1753. *Familiar Letters on Important Subjects*, 10th edn (Aberdeen), iv + 480pp; see p346.
28. Edwards, W N. 1967. *Op cit*, p1.
29. Torrens, H S. 1985. "Early Collecting in the Field of Geology", see pp204–213 in Impey, O, and A Macgregor (eds) *The Origins of Museums: The Cabinet of Curiosities in sixteenth and seventeenth century Europe* (Oxford), 300pp.
30. King, R. 1986. "The Oldest Profession?", *Geological Curator*, vol 4, no:6; see p356.
31. Hooke, R. 1688. "A Discourse of Earthquakes" in *Posthumous Works*, edited by R Waller, (London: 1705), 4 + xxviii + 572pp; see p411.
32. Dereham, W (ed). 1718. *Philosophical Letters between the late learned Mr Ray and several of his ingenious correspondents* (London), xii + 290pp; see p256.
33. Halley, E. 1715. "A short account of the causes of the saltness of the ocean, and of the several lakes that emit no rivers, with a proposal, by help thereof, to discover the age of the World", *Phil Trans Roy Soc Lond*, vol 29, pp296–300.
34. Rappaport, R. 1973. "Lavoisier's Theory of the Earth", *Brit Jl Hist Sci*, vol 6, pp247–260; see p258.
35. Saussure, H B de. 1796. *Voyage dans les Alpes*, 8 vols. (Neuchâtel); see vol 3, pp910 (chap xiv, p625).
36. Oldroyd, D R. 1979. "Historicism and the rise of Historical Geology – Part I", *Hist Sci*, vol 17, pp191-123.
37. Davies, G L. 1969. *Earth in Decay* (London), xvi + 390pp; see pp110–126.

    Glass, B, O Temkin and W L Strauss Jr (eds). 1959. *Forerunners of Darwin*: 1745–1859 (Baltimore); see pp238–240.
38. Toulmin, G H. 1785. *The Eternity of the World* (London), 133pp; see pp3,110.
39. Geikie, A. 1962. *The Founders of Geology*, 2nd edn, repr (New York), 486pp; see chap 4.
40. Hutton, J. 1785. "Theory of the Earth: or an investigation of the laws observable in the

composition, dissolution and restoration of land upon the globe", *Trans Roy Soc Edin*, vol 1 (1788), pp209–304.

41. Smith, W. 1816. *Strata Identified by Organised Fossils* (London), 32pp.
42. Howorth, H H. 1887. *The Mammoth and the Flood* (London), xxxii + 464pp; see pp82–83.
43. Albritton, C C. 1980. *The Abyss of Time: Changing Conceptions of the Earth's Antiquity after the Sixteenth Century* (San Francisco), 251pp.
44. Townsend, J. 1813. *The Character of Moses established for Veracity as an Historian, Recording events from the Creation to the Deluge*, (Bath) 2 vols.

    Ure, A. 1829. *A New System of Geology, in which the Great Revolutions of the Earth and Animated Nature are Reconciled at once to Modern Science and Sacred History* (London), lv + 621pp.

    Hales, W. 1830. *A New Analysis of Chronology and Geography, History and Prophecy; in which their Elements are attempted to be explained, harmonised and vindicated, upon Scriptural and Scientific Principles; tending to remove the Imperfection and Discordance of Preceding Systems, and to Obviate the Cavils of Sceptics, Jews and Infidels*, 4 vols, 2nd edn (London).
45. Embleton, C and C A M King. 1975. *Glacial Geomorphology*, 2nd edn (London), vi + 573pp; see p320.
46. Taylor, F B. 1910. "Richmond and Great Barrington Bowlder Trains", *Bull Geol Soc Amer*, vol 21, pp747–752; see p749.
47. Benton, E R. 1878. "The Richmond Bowlder Trains", *Bull Mus Comp Zool*, Harvard, p25.
48. Taylor, F B. 1910. *Op cit*, p748.
49. Knetchel, M M. 1942. "Snake Butte Boulder Train and related glacial phenomena, north-central Montana", *Bull Geol Soc Amer*, vol 53, no:6, pp917–936.
50. Branner, J C. 1913. "The Fluting and Pittings of Granites in the Tropics", *Proc Amer Philos Soc*, vol lii, pp163–174; see plate IIa.
51. Sauramo, M. 1929. "The Quaternary Geology of Finland", *Bull Comm Geol Finland*, no:86.
52. Agassiz, L. 1840. Études sur les Glaciers (Neuchâtel), 346pp.
53. Murray, A S. 1893. *Manual of Mythology* (New York), xl + 368pp; see p44.
54. Alexander, H B. 1916: in L H Gray (ed). *The Mythology of All Races*, 13 vols. Archaeol Inst Amer (Boston); see vol xi, p91.
55. Alexander, H B. 1916. *Loc cit*, p24d.
56. Gray, L H (ed). 1916. *Op cit*, vol x, p221.
57. Alexander, H B. 1916. *Loc cit*, p311.
58. Gray, L H (ed). 1916. *Op cit*, vol ix, p178.
59. Gray, L H (ed). 1916. *Op cit*, vol iv, p369.
60. Donnelly, I. 1883. *Atlantis: The Antediluvian World*, new enlarged edition (1949), ed E Sykes (London & New York), xix + 355pp; see p78.
61. Colson, F H (tr). 1941. *Philo: 'On the Eternity of the World'*, (London & New York), 10 vols. (1929–1962); see sect 8.
62. Murray, H, J Crawfurd, et al. 1836. *An Historical and Descriptive Account of China* (Edinburgh & London), 2nd edn; see vol 1, p40.
63. Dixon, R B. 1916. *Oceanic Mythology* (Boston), xv + 364pp; see p15.
64. Moor, E. 1810. *The Hindu Pantheon* (London), xiv + 466pp; see p102.
65. Bellows, H A (tr). 1923. *The Prose Edda: Voluspa* (London); see second stanza.
66. Colson, F H (tr). 1941. *Philo: 'Moses'* (London & New York); see vol 2, x, p53.
67. Warren, H C. 1896. *Buddhism in Translation* (Harvard Univ Press), xx + 520pp; see p322.
68. Brasseur, de Bourbourg. 1857–1859. *Histoire des nations civilisées du Mexique* (Paris); see vol 1, p206.
69. Miller, F J (tr). 1916. *Ovid: 'Metamorphoses'* (London & New York); see Book 1, P113.
70. Lenormant, F. 1891. *Beginnings of History* (New York), tr by F Brown from the 2nd French edn, xxx + 588pp.
71. Curtius, E R. 1953. *European Literature and the Latin Middle Ages*.
72. Frye, M. 1983. *The Great Code* (Toronto), xxiii + 261pp; see p72.
73. Maspero, G C C. 1895–1899. *Histoire Ancienne des Peuples de l'Orient classique*, 3 vols. (Paris); see vol 1, p38.
74. Lenormant, F. 1891. *Op cit*, p531.
75. Mallet, P H. 1902. *Northern Antiquities*, new & enlarged edn (London), 578pp; see p406.
76. Castrén, M A. 1953. *Nordische Reisen und Forschungen*, 3 vols. (St Petersburg); see vol 1 – "Finnische Mythologie", xii + 340pp, tr by A Schiefner; see pp32–33.
77. Lenormant, F. 1881. "Ararat and Eden: a Biblical Study (Part 1)", *Contemp Rev*, vol 40 (Sept 1881), pp453–478; see p460.
78. Baldwin, J D. 1896. *Prehistoric Nations* (New York), vii + 414pp; see p283.
79. Anonymous. 1959. *Larousse Encyclopaedia of Mythology* (London), viii + 500pp. see p394.
80. Douglas, R K. 1879. *Confucianism and Taoism* (London), 287pp; see p278.

    Legge, J (ed). 1876. *The Chinese Classics*, 4 vols. (Hong Kong); see vol iii, pt 1, footnote on p34.
81. Anonymous. 1823–1851. *The Chinese Repository*, 21 vols. (Canton); see vol 4, p194.

    Warren, W F. 1898. *Paradise Found: The Cradle of the Human Race at the North Pole*, 10th edn, (Boston), xxiv + 505pp; see p181.
82. Reed, E J. 1880. *Japan: Its History, Traditions and Religions*, 2 vols, 2nd edn. (London); see vol 1, p27.
83. Jowett, B (tr). 1919. *The Dialogues of Plato* (Oxford), 24B, 25B-D.
84. Darmestetter, J (tr). 1883. *Zend-Avesta: The Vendidad*, 3 vols. (Oxford); see vol 1, Fargard, p8.
85. Pietremont, C A. 1879. *Les Aryans et leur Première Patrie* (Paris), 53pp; see p15.
86. Lactantius, P. 1742. *Auctores Mythographi latini* (Amsterdam), 962pp.

87. Rafinesque, C S. 1836. *The American Nations*, 2 vols. (Philadelphia); see song iii.
88. Jacolliet, L. 1887. *The Bible in India* (New York), vi + 325pp; see p198.
89. Matthews, V. 1883. "Navajo Mythology", *Amer Antiq Orient Jl* (Chicago), vol 5, pp207–224; see p209.
90. Klee, F A G. 1847. *Le Déluge* (Paris), 336pp; see p307.
91. Laertius, D. *Works*, ii, 9 (cited by W F Warren. 1898. Op cit, pp191–192).
92. Warren, W F. 1898. *Op cit*; see footnote on p192.
93. Proctor, R A. 1870. *Light Science for Leisure Hours* (London), viii + 316pp; see pp309–312.
94. Whyte, C. 1928. *The Constellations and Their History* (London), 284pp; see p217.
95. Lockyer, N. 1894. *The Dawn of Astronomy* (London), xvi + 432pp; see p152.
96. Gallant, R L C. 1964. *The Bombarded Earth* (London), 256pp; see p147.
97. Wainright, G A. 1932. "Leptopolis", *Jl Egypt Archaeol*, vol xviii, pp159–172; see p164.
    Wainright, G A. 1936. "Orion and the Great Star", *Jl Egypt Archaeol*, vol xxii, pp45–46; see p46.
98. Jeans, J. 1945. *The Stars in Their Courses* (Cambridge), xi + 188pp; see p17.
99. Noel, M, and D H Tarling. 1975. "The Laschamp Geomagnetic Event", *Nature*, vol 253, pp705–706; see fig 2 on p705.
    Noorbergen, R. 1978. *Secrets of the Lost Races* (London), x + 228pp; see pp20–21.
100. Lehmann, S J, and L D Keigwin. 1992. "Sudden Change in North Atlantic circulation during the last glaciation", *Nature*, vol 356, pp757–762; see p757.
101. Fairbanks, R G. 1993. "Climatic Change: Flip-Flop end to last Ice Age", *Nature*, vol 362, p495.
102. Dansgaard, W, S Johnsen, and J C White. 1989. "The Abrupt Termination of the Younger Dryas Climate Event", *Nature*, vol 339, pp532–534; see pp532–3.
103. Alley, R B, D A Meese, et al. 1993. "Abrupt increase in Greenland snow accumulation at the end of the Younger Dryas Event", *Nature*, vol 362, pp527–529.
104. Wright, H E. 1989. "The amphi-Atlantic distribution of the Younger Dryas palaeoclimatic oscillation", *Quat Sci Rev*, vol 8, pp295–306.
105. Waythomas, C F, and D S Kaufman. 1991. "Comment on 'Latest Pleistocene Increase in Wind Intensity recorded from Eolian Sediments from Central Alaska' by N Bigelow, J E Begét, and W R Powers", *Quat Res*, vol 36, no:3, pp329–333; see p329.
106. Kolstrup, E. 1990. "The puzzle of Weichselian vegetation types poor in trees", *Geol Mijnbouw*, vol 69, pp253–262.
107. Ager, T E. 1975. "Late Quaternary Environmental History of the Tenana Valley, Alaska", *Rep Inst Polar Studies* (Columbus), no:54.
     Anderson, P M. 1988. "Late Quaternary Pollen Records from the Kobuk and Noatak Drainages, Northwestern Alaska", *Quat Res*, vol 29, pp263–276.
108. Van Campo, E, and F Gasse. 1993. "Pollen and Diatom-Inferred Climatic and Hydrological changes in Sumxi Co Basin (Western Tibet) since 13,000 yr BP." *Quat Res*, vol 39, no:3, pp300–313.
109. Jarvis, D I. 1993. "Pollen Evidence of Changing Holocene Monsoon climate in Sichuan Province, China", *Quat Res*, vol 39, no:3, pp325–337.
110. Lyell, C. 1831–1833. *The Principles of Geology: Being an attempt to explain the Former Changes of the Earth's Surface, by reference to causes now in Operation*, 3 vols, (London).
111. Whiston, W. 1696. *Op cit*.
112. Donnelly, I. 1895. *Ragnarok: The Age of Fire and Gravel* 13th edn. (New York), vi + 452pp.
113. Beaumont, C. 1932. *The Mysterious Comet* (London), 288pp.
114. Patten, D W. 1966. *The Biblical Flood and the Ice Epoch: a Study in Scientific History* (Seattle), xvi + 336pp.
115. Hwang, L S, and A C Lin. "Experimental Investigations of wave run-up under the influence of local geometry", *Proc Internat Symp on Tsunamis and Tsunami Res*, (Honolulu: 1970), pp406–425.
116. Verbeek, R D M. 1886. *Krakatau* (Batavia).
117. Frazer, J G. 1919. "The Great Flood", pp104–361 in *Folklore in the Old Testament*, 3 vols. (London); see vol 1, chap 4.
     Suryakanta, S. 1950. *The Flood Legend in Sanskrit Literature* (Delhi), 4 + viii + 149pp.
118. Pallas, P S. 1788–1793. *Voyages en Différentes Provinces de l'Empire de Russie, et dans l'Asie Septentrionale*, 5 vols. (Paris).
119. Cuvier, G. 1834. *Recherches sur les Ossemans Fossiles des Quadrupèds*, 4th edn, 10 vols. (Paris).
120. Erman, G A. 1848. *Travels in Siberia*, 2 vols. (London); see vol ii, pp379–380.
121. D'Archiac, E J A. 1865. *Paléontologie Stratigraphique. Leçons sur la faune quaternaire* (Paris), 292pp.
122. Venetz, I. 1859. *Mémoir sur les variations de la Température dans les Alps de la Suisse* (Berne), published posthumously; 38pp.
123. Agassiz, L. 1840. *Op cit*.
124. Dansgaard, W, S J Johnsen, and J C White. 1989. *Loc cit*.
     Lehmann, S J and L D Keigwin. 1992. *Loc cit*.
     Johnsen, S J, H B Clausen, et al. 1992. "Irregular glacial interstadials recorded in a new Greenland ice core", *Nature*, vol 359, pp311–313; see p313.
     Fairbanks, R G. 1993. *Op cit*; see p495.
125. Willis, B. 1907. *Research in China*, 2 vols, Carnegie Inst (Washington) Publ.
126. Lee, J S. 1939. The Geology of China (London)~ xv + 528pp; see p207.
127. Berkey, C P, and F K Morris. 1927. "Geology of Mongolia: A Reconnaissance Report based on

the Investigations of the Years 1922–3; Central Asiatic Expeditions", *Amer Mus Nat Hist* (New York), xxxi + 475pp; see p35.

128. Berkey, C P, and F K Morris. 1927. *Op cit*, p27.
129. Lee, J S. 1939. *Op cit* p201.
130. Lee, J S. 1939. *Ibid.*
131. Lee, J S. 1939. *Op cit.* pp396–397.
132. Embleton, C, and C A M King. 1975. *Op cit*, p30.
133. Lee, J S. 1939. *Op cit*, pp206–207.
134. Flint, R F. 1947. *Glacial Geology and the Pleistocene Epoch* (New York), xviii + 598pp; see p523.
135. Flint, R F. 1947. *Op cit*, p10.
136. Flint, R F. 1947. *Ibid.*
137. Wadia, D M. 1938. "The Structure of the Himalayas and of the North India Foreland", Presidential Address, *25th Indian Sci Congr* (Calcutta), geol sect, p26.
138. Heim, A and A Gansser. 1939. *The Throne of the Gods: an Account of the First Expedition to the Himalayas* (New York), xxv + 233pp; see p218.
139. Krishnan, M S. 1949. *Geology of India and Burma* (Madras), 544pp; see p511.
140. Wadia, D N. 1953. *Geology of India* (London), xx + 531pp; see pp22–23.
141. Finsterwalder, R. 1936. "Die Formen der Nanga Parbat-Gruppe", *Zeit Ges Erdk Berlin*, pp321f.
142. Wadia, D N. 1953. *Op cit*, p405.
143. Krishnan, M S. 1949. *Op cit.*
144. Scrivenor, J B. 1931. *The Geology of Malaya* (London), xx + 217pp; see pp119–120.
145. Umbgrove, J H F. 1947. *The Pulse of the Earth*, 2nd edn. (The Hague), xxii + 358pp; see p235.
146. Smith, W D. 1924. *Geology and Mineral Resources of the Philippine Islands* (Manila), 559pp; see pp89–90, 92, 467.
147. Brouwer, H A. 1925. *The Geology of the Netherlands East Indies* (New York), xii + 160pp; see p40.

     Brouwer, H A. 1947. *Geological Explorations in the Islands of Celebes: Summary of the Results* (Amsterdam), 346pp; see pp17,49.
148. Tennison-Woods, J E. 1862. *Geological Observations in South Australia, principally in the southeast of Adelaide* (London), xviii + 404pp; see p208.

     Brown, D A, K S W Campbell, and K A W Cook. 1968. *The Geological Evolution of Australia and New Zealand* (Oxford), x + 409pp; see p348.
149. Trümpy, R. 1980. *Geology of Switzerland: A Guide Book*, Part 4: An Outline of the Geology of Switzerland (Basel), 104pp; see p93.
150. Daly, R A. 1926. *Our Mobile Earth* (London & New York), xxii + 342pp; see pp232–42.
151. Trümpy, R. 1980. *Loc cit.*
152. Rutten, M G. 1969. *The Geology of Western Europe* (Amsterdam), xviii + 520pp; see p211.
153. Rutten, M G. 1969. *Op cit*, pp382–388.
154. Rutten, M G. 1969. *Op cit*, p177.
155. Lubbock, J. 1896. *The Scenery of Switzerland and the causes to which it is due* (London), xxxv + 480pp; see pp291–292,369.
156. Heer, O. 1875, *The Primaeval World of Switzerland*, 2 vols, tr W S Dallas and edited by J Heywood (London); see vol 2, p224.
157. Forrest, H E. 1935. *The Atlantean Continent: Its Bearing on the Great Ice Age and the Distribution of Species*, 2nd edn. (London), 352pp; see p234.
158. Gentil, L. 1914. "La Géologie du Maroc", Congr *Géol Internat*, session xii, p703.

     McMaster, R L, and T B La Chance. 1968. "Seismic Reflectivity Studies on northwestern African continental shelf: Strait of Gibraltar to Mauritania", *Amer Assoc Petrol Geol*, vol 52, pp2387–2395.
159. Furon, R. 1963. *Geology of Africa* (Edinburgh), xii + 377pp; see p72.
160. Baker B H, P Mohr & M A J Williams. 1972. "Geology of the Eastern Rift System of Africa", *Geol Soc Amer Spec Paper*, 136.

     Dixey, F. 1956. "The East African Rift System", *Overseas Geol Surv Min Resour Divn*, (London), suppl 1, 77pp.

     McConnell, R B. 1972. "Geological Development of the Rift System of Eastern Africa", *Bull Geol Soc Amer*, vol 83, pp2549–2572.
161. Daly, R A. 1926. *Op cit*, p231.
162. Daly, R A. 1926. *Op cit*, pp228–229.
163. Price, G M. 1946. *Commonsense Geology* (Mountain View), 239pp; see p120.
164. Forest, H E. 1935. *Ibid.*
165. Putnam, W C. 1964. *Geology* (New York), xii + 480pp; see p117.
166. Putnam, W C. 1964. *Ibid.*

     Weaver, C E. 1949. "Geology of the Coast Ranges north of San Francisco Bay", *Mem Geol Surv Amer*, vol 35, pp1–242; see p166.
167. Fenneman, N M. 1931. *The Physiography of the Western United States* (New York).
168. Zeil, W. 1979. *The Andes: A Geological Review* (Berlin), viii + 260pp; see p173.
169. Fairbridge, R (ed). 1975. "The Encyclopaedia of World Regional Geology, Part I: Western Hemisphere (including Antarctica and Australia", vol vii in *Encyclopaedia of Earth Sciences* (Stroudsburg), xv + 704pp; see pp266, 464.
170. Bucher, W H. 1933. *The Deformation of the Earth's Crust* (Princeton), xiii + 518pp; see p144.
171. Poldervaart, A. 1955. "Symposium on the Crust of the Earth", *Geol Soc Amer Spec Paper* 62; see p319.
172. Umbgrove, J H F. 1947. *Op cit.*
173. Geikie, J. 1877. *The Great Ice Age* 2nd edn. (London), xxvii + 624pp; see p73.
174. Ewing, M, J I Ewing, and M Talwani. 1964. "Sediment Distribution in the Oceans: the Mid-Atlantic Ridge", *Bull Geol Soc Amer*, vol 75, no:1, pp17–34.
175. Ewing, M. 1949. "New Discoveries on the Mid-Atlantic Ridge", *Nat Geogr Mag*, vol xcvi (Nov), pp611–640; see p613.
176. Ewing, M. 1949. *Op cit*, pp614, 616.

177. Ewing, M. 1949. *Op cit*, p618.
178. Ewing, M. 1949. *Ibid.*
179. Ewing, M. 1949. *Ibid.*
180. Anonymous. 1877. "Glimpses of Atlantis", *Scient Amer*, vol xxxvii, no:4, pp48–49.
181. Termier, P. 1922. *A la Gloire de la Terre: Souvenirs d'un Géologie* (Paris), 425pp; see p132.
182. Brooks, C E P. 1949. *Climate Through the Ages* (New York), 395pp; see pp247–251.
Termier, P. 1913. "Atlantis", *Bull Inst Oceanogr* (Monaco), no:256, pp219f.
Termier, P. 1916. "Atlantis", *Rep Smithsonian Inst.* (Washington), pp219–234.
183. Umbgrove, J H F. 1947. *Op cit*, pp35–38.
184. Brewster, E T. 1928. *This Puzzling Planet* (New York), 328pp; see pp134–135.
185. Scharff, R F. 1902. "Some Remarks on the Atlantis Problem", *Proc Roy Irish Acad* (Dublin), sect B, vol xxiv, pp268–302.
186. Scharff, R F. 1907. *European Animals* (London), xiv + 258pp; see p126.
187. Forrest, H E. 1935. *Op cit*; see p234.
188. Laine, E P. 1980. "New Evidence from beneath the western North Atlantic for the depth of Glacial Erosion in Greenland and North America", *Quat Res*, vol 14, pp188–198.
189. Forrest, H E. 1935. *Op cit*; see pp190–192.
190. Wallace, A R. 1876. *The Geographical Distribution of Animals; with a study of the relationships of living and extinct faunas as elucidating the past changes of the Earth's surface*, 2 vols. (London); see vol 1, pp328–329.
191. Carson, R L. 1951. *The Sea Around Us* (London), iii + 230pp; see p64.
192. Blanford, H F. 1875. "On the Age and Correlations of the Plant-bearing series of India and the former existence of an Indo-Oceanic Continent" *Q Jl Geol Soc Lond*, vol 31, pp534–540.
Sewell, R B. 1935. "Geographic and Oceanographic Research in Indian Waters", *Mem Asiatic Soc Bengal*, vol ix, pp1–7.
193. Wadia, D N. 1953. *Op cit*, p37.
194. Scharff, R F. 1899. *The History of the European Fauna* (London), vii + 364pp; see p20.
195. Smith, S P. 1910. *Hawaiki: The Original Home of the Maori*, 3rd edn (Christchurch, NZ), 301pp; see p58.
196. Hitchcock, C H. 1901. "New Zealand in the Ice Age", *Amer Geol*, vol xxvii, pp271–281.
Suggate, R P. 1963. "The Alpine Fault", *Trans Roy Soc New Zeal*, geol sect, vol 2, pp105–129.
197. Tayler, J W. 1870. "On the Making of Fiords", *Jl Roy Geogr Soc Lond*, vol xl, pp228–230.
198. Gregory, J W. 1927. "The Fiords of the Hebrides", *Geogr Jl*, vol 69, pp193–216.
199. Gregory, J W. 1913. *The Nature and Origin of Fiords*, (London), xvi + 542pp.
Peteressen, K. 1885. "How the Norway Fiords were Made", *Nature* (London), vol xxxii, pp177–180.
200. Tayler, J W. 1870. *Ibid.*
201. Sokolov, V N. 1977. *Stratigraphy of Spitzbergen* (Boston Spa), iv + 298pp; see p273.
202. Ewing, M, et al. 1957. *Columbia Research News*, March (1957) issue.
203. Hobbs, W H. 1905. "The Correlation of Fracture Systems and the Evidence for Planetary Dislocations within the Earth's Crust", *Trans Wiscon Acad Sci Arts Lett*, vol xv (August), pp15–29; see p15.
Hobbs, W H. 1911. "Repeating Patterns in the Relief and Structure of the Land", *Bull Geol Soc Amer*, vol 22, pp123–176; see p163.
204. Umbgrove, J H F. 1947. *Op cit*, p307.
Vening Meinesz, F A. 1943. "Spanningen in de aardrost tengevolge van poolverschuivingen", *Ned Akad Wet Versl*, vol lii, no:5.
Vening Meinesz, F A. 1947. "Shear Patterns of the Earth's Crust", *Trans Amer Geophys Union*, vol 28, no:1, p161.
205. Anonymous. 1937. "Submarine Canyons", *Geogr Rev*, vol 27, pp681–683.
Hess, H H, and P MacClintock. 1936. "Submerged Valleys on Continental Slopes and Changes of Sea Level", *Science*, vol 83, n s, pp332–334.
206. Oldham, R D. 1917. "The Structure of the Gangetic Plain", *Mem Geol Surv India*, vol xlii, pt 2.
207. Glennie, E A. 1932. "Gravity Anomalies and Structure of the Earth's Crust", *Prof Papers Geol Surv India*, no:27.
208. Wadia, D N. 1938. *Op cit*, p26.
209. Geikie, J. 1877. *Op cit.*
210. Dawkins, W B. 1880. *Early Man in Britain and his place in the Tertiary Period* (London), xxiii + 537pp.
211. Croll, J. 1893. *Climate and Time in their Geological Relations; a theory of secular changes of the Earth's climate* (New York), xvii + 577pp.
212. Penck, A. 1889. *Theorica über des Gleichgewicht der Erdkruste* (Vienna), 26pp; and 1909: *Die Alpen im eiszeitalter*, 3 vols (Leipzig); see vol 3.
213. Pfizenmayer, E W. 1939. *Siberian Man and the Mammoth*, (London), xii + 356 (tr M D Simpson); see map and table of discoveries.
214. Anonymous. 1895. "Baron von Toll's Expedition to Arctic Siberia", *Geogr Jl*, vol v, pp373–376.
215. Erman, G A. 1848. *Travels in Siberia*, 2 vols. (London); see vol 2, pp379–380.
216. Hibben, F C. 1943. "Evidence of Early Man in Alaska", *Amer Antiq*, vol 8, pp254–259; see p256.
Hibben, F C. 1946. *The Lost Americans* (New York), xi + 196pp; see pp90–92.
Guthrie, R D. 1990. *Frozen Fauna of the Mammoth Steppe: the Story of Blue Babe* (Univ Chicago Press).
217. Bird, J B. 1966. *The Physiography of Arctic Canada* (Johns Hopkins Univ Press), xix + 336pp; see p11.
218. Stefansson, V. 1942. *Greenland* (New York), viii + 338pp; see p4.
219. Griggs, R F. 1942. "Indications as to climate changes from the timberline of Mount Washington", *Science*, vol 95, no:2473, p519.

220. Bird, J B. 1966. *Op cit*, p11.
    Mangerud, J, M Bolstad, et al. 1992. "The Last Glacial Maximum on Spitzbergen, Svalbard", *Quat Res*, vol 38, p131.
221. Bird, J B. 1966. *Op cit*, p135.
222. Greig, D C. 1971. *The South of Scotland* (Edinburgh), 114pp; see p98.
223. Shotton, F W (ed). 1977. *British Quaternary Studies* (Oxford), xii + 298pp; see p240.
224. Denton, G H, and T G Hughes (eds). 1981. *The Last Great Ice Sheets* (New York), 464pp; see p265.
225. Shotton, F W (ed). 1977. *Op cit*, pp188–202.
226. Shotton, F W (ed). 1977. *Op cit*, see p265.
227. Williams, W M. 1887. "The Great Ice Age and the Origin of Till", *Q Jl Lit Sci Arts Lond*, vol 7, pp214–237.
228. O'Dell, A C. 1957. *The Scandinavian World* (London), xvi + 549pp; see p308.
229. Harmer, F W. 1907. "The Glacial Deposits of the East of England", *Rep Brit Assoc Adv Sci*, (York: 1906), pp570–572; see p571.
230. Harmer, F W. 1907. *Ibid*.
231. Shotton, F W (ed). 1977. *Ibid*.
232. Howorth, H H. 1893. *The Glacial Nightmare and the Flood*, 2 vols. (London); see vol 2, p79.
233. Denton, G H, and T G Hughes (eds). 1981. *Ibid*.
234. Rose, J, and P Allen. 1977. "Middle Pleistocene Stratigraphy in southwest Suffolk", *Jl Geol Soc Lond*, vol 133, pp83–102.
235. Wilson, H E. 1972. *Regional Geology of Northern Ireland* (Belfast), 95pp; see p82.
236. Flint, R F. 1971. *Glacial and Quaternary Geology* (New York), xii + 892pp; see p646.
237. Flint, R F. 1971. *Op cit*, p647.
238. Huntington, E. 1914. "Solar Hypothesis of Climatic Changes", *Bull Geol Soc Amer*, vol xxv, pp477–590; see p574.
239. Sokolov, V N. 1977. *Op cit*; see pp260–293.
240. Kudras, E R, H Erleekeuser, R Vollbrecht and W Weiss. 1991. "Global Nature of the Younger Dryas cooling event inferred from oxygen isotope data from Sulu Sea cores", *Nature*, vol 349, pp406–409.
241. Rind, D, D Peteet, W Broecker, A McIntyre, and W Ruddiman. 1986. "Impact of Cold North Atlantic sea-surface temperatures on climate: Implications for the Younger Dryas Cooling (11–10k)", *Climate Dynamics*, vol 1, pp3–33.
242. Kallel, N, L D Labeyrie, et al, 1988. "Evidence of cooling during the Younger Dryas in the western North Pacific", *Oceanologica Acta*, vol 11, pp369–375.
243. Wang, L, and P Wang. 1990. "Late Quaternary Palaeoceanography of the South China Sea: Glacial-interglacial contrasts in an enclosed basin", *Palaeoceanography*, vol 5, pp77–90.
244. Linsley, B K, and R C Thunell. 1990. "The record of deglaciation in the Sulu Sea: Evidence for the Younger Dryas event in the tropical western Pacific", *Palaeoceanography*, vol 5, pp1025–1039.
245. Zhisheng, A, S C Porter, et al. 1993. "Episode of Strengthened Summer Monsoon Climate of Younger Dryas Age on the Loess Plateau of Central China", *Quat Res*, vol 39, no:1; see p45.
246. Corliss, B H. 1975. "Late Pleistocene Palaeoclimatology: Planktonic Foraminiferal Analyses of Sediment Cores for the central North Atlantic", *Palaeogeogr Palaeoclimat Palaeoecol*, vol 18, pp45–61.
247. Emiliani, C. 1966. "Palaeotemperature analysis of Caribbean Cores", *Jl Geol*, vol 74, pp109–123.
248. Hillaire-Marcel, C. 1976. "La déglaciation et le relèvement isostatique de la baie d'Hudson", *Cahiers de Géographie du Quebec*, vol 20, pp185–220.
249. Mott, R J, D R Grant, R Stea and S Occhietti. 1986. "Late Glacial Climatic Oscillations in Atlantic Canada equivalent to the Alleröd/Younger Dryas event", *Nature*, vol 323, pp247–250.
    Mayle, F E, A J Levesque, and L C Cwynar. 1993. "Accelerator-MassSpectrometer Ages for the Younger Dryas Event in Atlantic Canada", *Quat Res*, vol 39, no:3, pp355–360.
250. Peteet, D M, J S Vogel, et al. 1990. "Younger Dryas climatic reversal in northeastern USA? AMS ages for an old problem", *Quat Res*, vol 33, pp219–230.
251. Jouzel, J, C Lorius, L Merlivat, and J R Petit. 1987. "Abrupt Climatic Changes: The Antarctic Ice Record during the Late Pleistocene", pp235–245 in *Abrupt Climatic Change*, ed W H Berger and L D Labeyrie (Dordrecht).
252. Hoganson, J W, and A C Ashworth. 1992. "Fossil Beetle Evidence for Climatic Change 18,000–10,000 Years BP, in South-Central Chile", *Quat Res*, vol 37, no:1, pp101–116.
253. Heusser, C J. 1987. "Late Quaternary Climates in Chile", pp59–83 in *Late Cainozoic Palaeoclimates of the Southern Hemisphere*, ed J C Vogel (Rotterdam).
254. Lehmann, S J, and L D Keigwin. 1992. *Op cit*, p757.
255. Van Campo, E, and F Gasse. 1993. *Op cit*.
256. Barnowsky, C W, P M Anderson, and P J Bartlein. 1987. "The North-Western US during Deglaciation: Vegetational History and Palaeoclimatic Implications", pp289–321 in *The Geology of North America*. Vol K-3, *North America and Adjacent Oceans during the Last Deglaciation* (ed W F Ruddiman and H E Wright, jr).
257. Stamp, L D. 1960. *Britain's Structure and Scenery* (London), 317pp; see pp111–113.
258. Dana, J D. 1880. *Manual of Geology*, 3rd edn. (New York), xvi + 911pp; see p537.
259. Forrest, H E. 1935. *Op cit*; see p99.
260. Wright, G F. 1911. *The Ice Age in North America and its bearing upon the Antiquity of Man*, 5th edn. (New York), xxi + 763pp; see p634.
261. Forrest, H E. 1935. *Op cit*, p229.
262. Bryan, K, and C C Albritton, jr. 1942. "Wind-polished rocks in the Trans-Pecos Region, Texas and New Mexico", *Bull Geol Soc Amer*, vol 53, pp1403–1416.

Stanger, W. 1852. "On Certain Furrows and Smoothings on the surface of granite caused by Drift Sand, at the Cape of Good Hope", *Rep Brit Assoc Adv Sci* (Belfast, 1853), p61.

263. Embleton, C, and C A M King. 1975. *Op cit*, p184.
264. Anderson, T. 1908. "Report on the Eruptions of the Soufrière in St Vincent in 1902, and on a visit to Montagne Pelée in Martinique", *Phil Trans Roy Soc Lond*, ser A, vol 208, pp275–304; see pp300–301.

Hovey, E O. 1909. "Striations and U-shaped Valleys produced by other than Glacial Action", *Bull Geol Soc Amer*, vol 20, pp409–416; see especially fig 2, in pl 38.

265. Nicholson, A C. 1892. "On the High Level Glacial Gravels, Gloppa, Cym-y-bwlch, near Oswestry", *Q Jl Geol Soc Lond*, vol 48, pp86–95.
266. Murchison, R I. 1845. *The Geology of Russia in Europe and the Ural Mountains*, 3 vols. (London); see vol 1, p553.
267. Howorth, H H. 1893. *Op cit*; see vol 2, p891.
268. Charlesworth, J K. 1924. "Glacial Geology of the North-West of Ireland", *Proc Roy Irish Acad* (Dublin), vol xxxvi, pp182,231.

Du Noyer, G V. 1862. "On the Evidence of Glacial Action over the south of Ireland during the Drift period; and of a subsequent slight elevation followed by a depression of the land to its present level", *The Geologist*, vol 5, pp241–254; see p246.

269. Howorth, H H. 1905. *Ice or Water?*, 2 vols. (London); see vol 1, p xlvii.
270. Howorth, H H. 1905. *Op cit*; see vol 1, pp404–405.
271. Howorth, H H. 1905. *Op cit*, vol 1, p383.
272. Howorth, H H. 1905. *Op cit*, vol 1, p xxxviii.
273. Howorth, H H. 1905. *Op cit*, vol 2, pp344–345.
274. Lorius, C, L Merlivat, J Jouzel and M Pourchet. 1979. "A 30,000 year climatic record from Antarctic Ice", *Nature*, vol 280, pp644–647.
275. Anonymous. 1896. "Cloudburst tracks and water-gaps in Alabama", *Science*, vol 3, pp276–277.
276. Eiseley, L C. 1946. "The Fire Drive and the Extinction of the Terminal Pleistocene Fauna", *Amer Anthrop*, vol xlviii, pp54–59; see p54.
277. Eiseley, L C. 1943. "Archaeological Observations on the Problems of Post-Glacial Extinction", *Amer Antiq*, vol viii, no:3, pp209–217; see p225.
278. Pilgrim, G E. 1944. "The Lowest Limit of the Pleistocene in Europe and Asia", *Geol Mag*, vol lxxxi, no:1, p28.
279. Flint, R F. 1947. *Op cit*; see p523.
280. Bell, R. 1898. "On the occurrence of Mammoth and Mastodon remains around Hudson Bay", *Bull Geol Soc Amer*, vol 9, pp369–390; see pp385–386.

Dawson, W, and D P Penhallow. 1889. "On the Pleistocene Flora of Canada", *Bull Geol Soc Amer*, vol 1, pp311–334; see p320.

Heawood, E. 1912. *Geographical Discoveries in the 17th and 18th Centuries*, (Cambridge), xii + 475pp; see p340.

281. Rainey, F. 1940. "Archaeological Investigations in Alaska", *Amer Antiq*, vol 5, pp299–308.
282. Hibben, F C. 1946. *Op cit*, pp90–92.
283. Hibben, F C. 1946. *Op cit*, pp176–177.
284. Hibben, F C. 1943. *Op cit*, p256.
285. Tyndall, J. 1883. *Heat: A Mode of Motion* (New York), 591pp; see pp191–192.
286. Menzel, D. 1950. *Our Sun* (Harvard), 350pp; see p248.
287. Lamb, H H. 1970. "Volcanic Dust in the Atmosphere: with a chronology and assessment of its meteorological significance", *Phil Trans Roy Soc Lond*, vol 266; pp425–533.
288. Schultz, J R. 1938. "A Late Quaternary Mammal Fauna from the Tar Seeps of McKittrick, California", *Contrib Palaeont Carnegie Inst* (Washington), no:487, pt iv, pp113–215; see table 3 on pp136–140.
289. Hay, O P. 1927. "The Pleistocene of the Western Region of North America and its Vertebrated Animals", *Carnegie Inst* (Washington), *Publ* no:322B, 346pp; see p172.
290. Krumbiegel, G. 1962. "Tertiär und Pleistozän im Geiseltal (Exkursion A5)", pp81–95 in "Exkursionführer das Pleistozän im Sächsisch-thuringischen Raum. Herbsttagung 1962", *Gesamtinhaltsverz Wiss Zn Univ Hochsch DDR.*
291. Nilsson, H. 1953. *Synthetische Artbildung: Grundlinien einer exakten Biologie*, 2 vols. (Lund); see Walther & Weigelt.
292. Nilsson, H. 1953. *Op cit*; see Voigt.
293. Nilsson, H. 1953. *Op cit*; see Kuhn.
294. Nilsson, H. 1953. *Op cit*; see Knöck.
295. Nilsson, H. 1953. *Op cit*; see Weigelt and Noack.
296. Paramuzin, Y P. 1960. "The Zonal Character of the Cold Pole", *Soviet Geogr*, vol 1; see pp40–42.
297. Austin-Müller, A. 1963. *Climatology*, 9th edn, (London), ix + 350pp; see pp241–245.
298. Forrest, H E. 1935. *Op cit*, pp294–295.
299. Scharff, R F. 1899. *Op cit*, p163.
300. Kropotkin, P. 1900. "Baron von Toll on New Siberia and the Circumpolar Tertiary Flora", *Geogr Jl*, vol xvi, see pp95–99.
301. Foster, L W. 1873. *Pre-Historic Races of the United States of America* (Chicago and London), 415pp; see p29.

Markham, C R. 1875. "On the Progress of the Arctic Expedition to the 17th July, and the return voyage of the Valorous", *Proc Roy Geogr Soc Lond*, vol xx, no:1, pp95–98.

302. Coleman, A P. 1928. "Unsolved Problems of Arctic America", *Geogr Soc Amer*, *Spec Publ.* no:7, p83.
303. Hooker, J D. 1881. Presidential Address, *Proc Roy Geogr Soc Lond*, vol 3, pp601–603.
304. Heer, O. 1867. "On the Miocene Flora of North Greenland", tr by R H Scott, *Rep Brit Assoc Adv Sci* (Nottingham, 1866); see pp53–55.
305. Lyell, C. 1870. *Elements of Geology* (London), xvi + 803pp; see p215.
306. Kropotkin, P. 1900. *Loc cit*; see p97.

307. Nordenskiöld, N A E. 1887. *The Geology of Spitzbergen* (Stockholm), 55pp.
308. Nordenskiöld, N A E. 1887. *Op cit*, pp43–47.
309. Nordenskiöld, N A E. 1887. *Op cit*, p52.
310. O'Dell, A C. 1957. *Op cit*, p327.
311. Norton, P E P. 1975. "Palaeoecology of the Mollusca of the Tjornes Sequence", *Boreas*, vol 4, no:2, pp97–111.
312. Denton, G H, and T G Hughes (eds). 1981. *Op cit*, p35.
313. Richardson, J. 1861. *The Polar Regions* (Edinburgh), ix + 400pp; see pp290–291.
314. Markham, C R. 1906. "On the next great Arctic Discovery, the Beaufort Sea", *Geogr Jl*, vol xxvii, no:1, pp1–14.
315. Bird, J B. 1966. *Op cit*, p135.
316. Damon, R. 1860. *The Geology of Weymouth, Portland and the Coast of Dorset* (London), xii + 199pp; see p96.
317. Whiteley, D G. 1910. "The Ivory Islands of the Arctic Ocean", *Jl Trans Vict Inst Lond*, vol xliii, pp35–37.
318. Geikie, J. 1881. *Op cit*; see 3rd rev edn (London), p517.
319. Fielden, H W. 1878. "Geology of the Coasts of the Arctic Islands", *Q Jl Geol Soc Lond*, vol 34, pp556–567; see pp565–567.
    Greeley, A W. 1866. "Arctic Expedition with reference to Grinnell Land", *Proc Roy Geogr Soc Lond*, vol x, no:8, pp156–176; see p162.
320. Howorth, H H. 1893. *Op cit*, vol 2, p462.
321. Howorth, H H. 1893. *Ibid*.
322. Pickles, T. 1939. *The World* (London), xvi + 431pp; see pp142, 144.
323. Holmes, A. 1944. *Principles of Physical Geology*, (London), xii + 532pp; see p189.
324. Putnam, W C. 1964. *Op cit*, p112.
325. Ager, D. 1993. *The New Catastrophism: The importance of the Rare Event in Geological History* (Cambridge), 231pp.
326. Putnam, W C. 1964. *Op cit*, p349.
327. Whiston, W. 1717. *Astronomical Principles of Religion, Natural and Revealed, in Nine Parts – the Cause of the Deluge* (London), xxxii + 305pp.

PART TWO

PREMATURE EXTINCTION

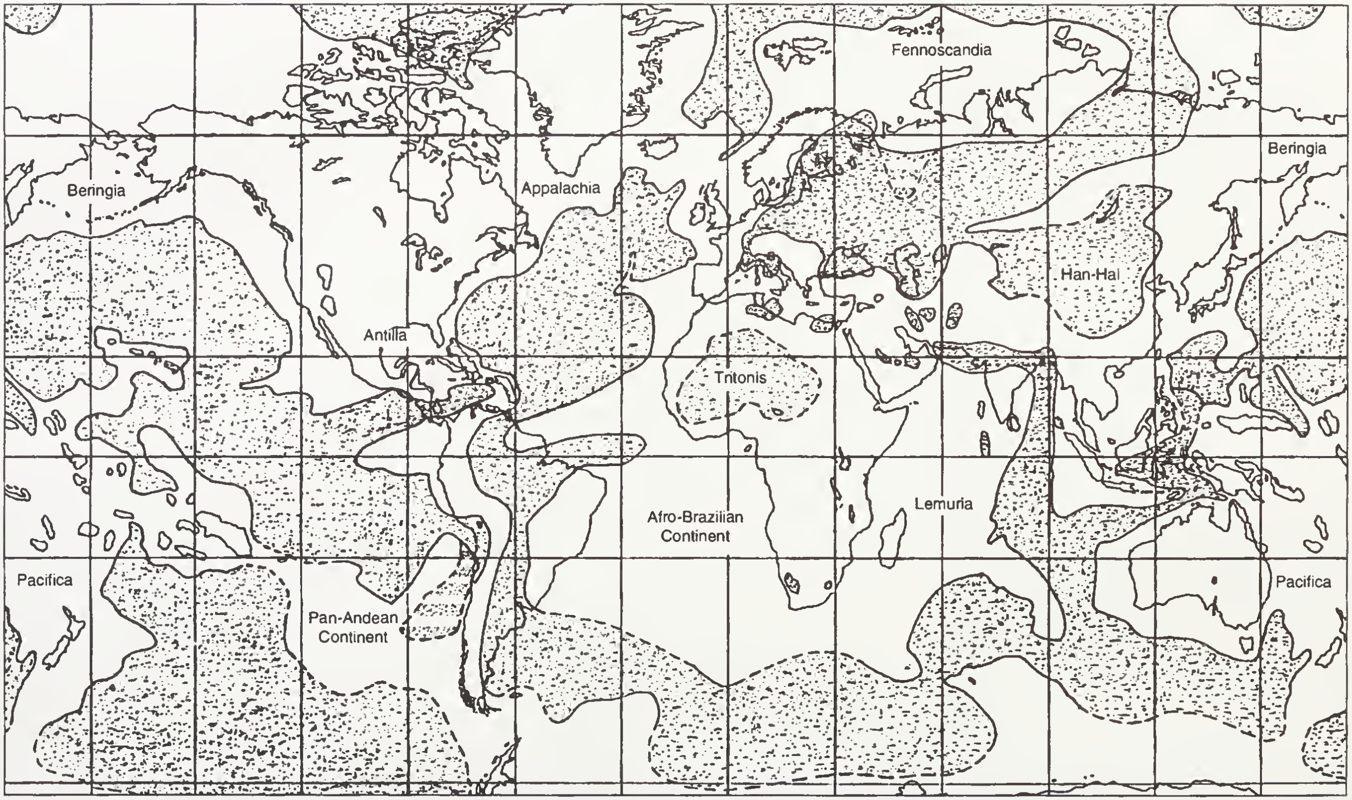
Fennoscandia
Beringia
Appalachia
Beringia
Han-Hai
Antilla
Tritonis
Afro-Brazilian
Continent
Lemuria
Pacifica
Pan-Andean
Continent
Pacifica

Map 2A. A tentative reconstruction of the pre-catastrophic 'Pleistocene' world.

1

THE TESTIMONY OF BIOLOGY

The enormous geophysical disturbances described in Part One inevitably made dreadful and often fatal inroads into animal and plant life almost everywhere, the evidence collectively afforded by their remains representing a truly astonishing story.

Forming an older but now largely destroyed biological assemblage, the geologically recent date of the demise of animal and plant life is indicated by the scarcely-fossilised condition of its remains. Moreover, the present distribution of various *identical* or closely-allied *living* species, sometimes inhabiting widely-sundered land regions no longer physically connected, is seemingly contrary to their natural dissemination. These regions, therefore, must formerly have been either geographically more continuous or environmentally more favourable to the uninterrupted spread of the biota concerned – and geologically recently, at that. Both living and numerous lately-defunct species thus represent opposite sides of the same biological coin. Of these, the living forms are the scattered descendants of biota which survived the terrible disturbances of some 11,500 years ago, whereas the extinct forms represent the annihilated victims of those convulsions.

As noted previously, almost all traditional recollections of a lost primeval northern homeland provide it with a marvelously equable climate and a wonderful diversity of plant and animal life, and agree that it ultimately perished in a sudden disaster of great magnitude. Also, as mentioned before, much palaeobotanical evidence exists in northern latitudes supporting these contentions.

The loss of these northern tracts naturally resulted in new topographical conditions and a highly modified oceanic and meteorological circulation worldwide. The evidence of the fossils, therefore, is not merely an adjunct of this disaster, but eloquent testimony to both pre-catastrophic environmental conditions and the awesome forces responsible for their termination.

These same fossils, moreover, throw much light on the present and sometimes unexpectedly disjointed distribution of innumerable life-forms in all hemispheres. Indeed, failure to recognise a sudden terminating calamity of geologically recent date renders comprehension of how many existing organisms attained their present distribution extremely difficult, if not actually impossible.

Scrutiny of our biological coin, therefore, yields much information germane to our main theme. We begin with some of the evidence concerning still extant plant species from Europe and the general Atlantic region.

2

A LOST EURO-AMERICAN FLORA

In central Europe, lignite beds containing the remains of so-called Pleistocene mammals have been found in the north-eastern Carpathians[1], while at Sprottau in Silesia cones of *Pinus sylvestris* lie alongside the bones of mammoths[2]. Remains of the same or allied conifers have also been encountered at many places in central and southern Germany. At Leffe, for instance, *Pinus* occurs with larch, hazelnut, horse-chestnut, waternut, and an extinct tree (*Juglans tephrodes*) resembling the American black walnut. Remnants of conifers have also been discovered at Imberg in Bavaria; alongside birch and willow in Savoy; and at Erzgebirge in Upper Saxony. In the same region, fragments of the so-called *ague-trefoil* have been found at Steinbach; birch and *Vaccinea uliginosum* at Kolbermoor in Bavaria; and those trees in company with willow, hazelnut, white oak, *Vibernum*, and a large assemblage of other plants, at Lauenburg[3].

Abundant remains of similarly aged plants including birch, willow and *Polygonum* have also been found at the Swiss localities of Schmerzenbach, Bonstetten, Schönenberg, and Hedingen; while near Lake Zürich, extensive lignite beds representing luxuriant vegetation, and containing the bones of mammoth, hippopotamus, rhinoceros, bear and other contemporary animals[4], underlie and are overlain by 'drift' deposits.

Some of these lignites – known as *Schieferkohle* or brown coal – are so youthful that wood debris in them is sometimes found *unmineralised*, as in Styria[5], or *uncrushed*, as in Bavaria[6].

Numerous central European plants in so-called Ice Age times were thus clearly warm-temperate species hardly differing from those *still* thriving there today; and they were accompanied by mainly herbivorous animals seemingly adapted to feeding on them, even though the mammoth has long been considered an 'arctic' type. The apparent enigma of believedly warm and cold climate organisms sharing common graves is repeated on virtually every continent.

Professor Scharff once made some very pertinent remarks about Pleistocene plants occurring in the present Alpine region, thus:

> The severity of the climate during the Glacial period is often assumed from the occurrence in Pleistocene strata of such plants as *Dryas octopetala*, some species of willow, dwarf birch, and others, which are now found in high latitudes and in the Alps, but are, as a rule, absent from the plain of Northern Europe. Professor J Geikie... believes... that an Arctic flora took possession of England as soon as the climate enabled it to live in the country. Arctic plants, according to this explanation... were the first immigrants to reconquer the dreary, plantless wastes and make it habitable for mammals.
>
> Fortunately these views do not at all agree with those of many of our leading European botanists... Professor Warming is of the opinion that the main mass of the present flora of Greenland survived the glaciation period in that country; whilst Professor Drude has shown that all plant life could not possibly have been destroyed in northern countries. He maintains that the greater part of the Arctic floral elements which unite Greenland and Scandinavia must have survived the glacial period in these countries in sheltered localities.[7]

Momentarily laying aside the fact that Scharff and the undermentioned authorities tried to explain this botanical evidence *within* the framework of orthodox Ice Age concepts, we should note that Col W H Fielden reached the following significant conclusion regarding various Arctic plants:

> To my mind, it seems indisputable that several plants now confined to the polar area must have originated there, and have outlived the period of greatest ice development in that region.[8]

Similar views about the 'pre-glacial' origin of much polar vegetation and of what is commonly known as the Alpine flora were also held by the botanist John Ball, who enquired:

> Is it credible that in the short interval since the close of the glacial period, hundreds of very distinct species and several genera have been developed on the Alps, and, what is no less hard to conceive, that several of these non-Arctic species and genera should still more recently have been distributed at wide intervals throughout a discontinuous mountain chain some 1,500 miles in length, from the Pyrenees to the Eastern Carpathians?[9]

Scharff, agreeing with these opinions, boldly stated:

> The glacial or Alpine flora is very old, and must have originated long before the Ice Age.[10]

That these plants survived the supposed severity of glacial conditions has puzzled many observers, especially orthodox glacialists. Many therefore concluded that these plants flourished outside the limits of the alleged glaciations and only later colonised Alpine areas.

A notable advocate of this solution was Professor A Engler, one of the foremost nineteenth century authorities on the geographical distribution of plants. He noted that several typically Siberian plants which today also occupy the Alps, the Caucasus and the Carpathians are entirely absent from the Scandinavian mountains, where, if anywhere in northern Europe, we should expect to find them[11]. Alpine-like plants, however, occur in Lappland, a *low*-lying tract immediately north-east of the Scandinavian highlands. Interestingly, Lappland hosts virtually three-quarters of all known circumpolar plants, and these collectively indicate that one or more land routes formerly existed between northwestern Europe and Greenland[12]. The main route was almost certainly the aforementioned landmass of Fennoscandia.

Significantly, another leading Victorian botanist, Professor F Krasan, believed that many plants now inhabiting the high Alps flourished at sea level during Pliocene times. He stressed that:

> Especially the evergreen species exhibit the impression of an originally mild climate – of a climate without winter frosts – for otherwise the plants would have developed into species with deciduous leaves.[13]

Note that modern geology envisages the Alps as: "...only a chain of low hills during most of the Pliocene"[14], and that, together with the Scandinavian mountains and most of the world's other major ranges, they rose to their present elevation only during late 'Pleistocene' times.

Thus, generally lower landmasses (including now-submerged tracts which then united regions now separated by water), together with the absence of the vast northern ice-sheets of conventional Ice Age theory (see Part One), not only encouraged more genial climates nearly everywhere, but provided almost exactly the conditions postulated by Krasan and others, best suited for evergreen plants. These factors, in turn, again suggest geologically recent crustal changes and a coeval shift of the terrestrial axis.

To those who would ask why Alpine vegetation, if originating at low altitudes during a climatically equable era, is now largely confined to cold Arctic latitudes or high mountainous regions, we refer them to the eminently reasonable explanation advanced by Scharff as long ago as 1899[15].

In western Europe we find many examples of trees and plants formerly thriving at localities now apparently inimicable to them. In its wild state the box tree was once widespread in north-western France and central Europe, whereas today it is found only around Lyons. Similarly, the grey willow, found in 'drift' deposits from Algeria to the depths of Germany and the British Isles, previously had a much greater range, but is now rare in the south, occurring only near water in very damp valleys. It is, however, correspondingly abundant in the north. Considering such facts, the noted botanist Count Saporta concluded:

> ...there has been a double retreat in opposite directions, showing that then the differences between the north and south of Europe were less accentuated.[16]

It is unnecessary here to cite all the studies made of these west European floral migrations and retreats. It suffices for present purposes to refer interested readers to the works of Lubbock[17], Geikie[18], de Mortillet[19], F E Zeuner[20], R G West[21], and Nilsson[22], who, between them, span the development of knowledge in this particular field of enquiry and provide numerous instructive examples.

Many discoveries in west European 'drift' deposits have concerned the remains of large maple and coniferous trees. The latter, especially, have been repeatedly encountered in Britain. At Wawne in Holderness, for example, drainage works last century exposed a buried forest, composed mainly of "gigantic pines"[23]; while others, lying horizontally 9ft (2.8m) below ground level, in company with the bones of horse, hippopotamus, mammoth, red deer and bovids, were found near Leeds in Yorkshire in 1852[24]. Innumerable roots of enormous size and the prostrate trunks of giant fir, oak, alder and hazel trees – complete in some instances with leaves, berries and nuts – mixed with mammoth bones, were discovered under thick layers of peaty-earth at low-tide level on the shore between Sutton and Cleethorpes last century[25]. The Rev Edward Trollope, who reported these finds, contended that a great flood had overwhelmed these organisms[26]. An essentially similar discovery occurred at Northampton in 1859[27].

The geographical preferences of the following plants, common to western Europe and large areas of North America, also signify the former existence of at least one land route to account for their present distribution. These plants include *Calluna*, *Leerzia*, the sedge *Carex extensa*, *Lobelia dortmanna*, *Eriocaulon septangulare*, and the water-weeds *Alisma*, *Lemna*, *Potamogeton* and *Myriophyllum*. Of these, the first four enjoy wide distribution across western Europe. *Eriocaulon*, however, is restricted to colonies near the coast of Donegal and south-west Ireland, reappearing only on the Scottish islands of Coll and Skye. Again, the freshwater genus *Naias flexilis*, while present in most North American streams and ponds, occurs in Europe only in south-west Ireland, Galway, the Isle of Skye, Perthshire and Esthwaite Water in Cumbria.

To all these may be added the American strand-plant *Spartina stricta*, which, in Europe, thrives now only in south-western regions, and *Scheucheria palustris* which, although well established in Canadian bogs from Labrador to British Columbia, has only the most tenuous toehold in westernmost Europe[28]. Commenting upon this evidence, Forrest said:

> In particular, it is difficult to believe that water-weeds such as *Potamogeton*, *Lemna*, *Alisma* and *Myriophyllum* could have reached their present habitats by an Arctic route. If, however, they were denizens of the lakes and marshes of an Atlantean continent in Miocene and Pliocene times, their distribution is accounted for quite naturally.[29]

Incidentally, Forrest's Atlantean continent corresponded with Appalachia, mentioned in Part One.

These and numerous similar discoveries all over Europe reveal a now largely vanished flora which was formerly far more varied than its few surviving members, and which, in geologically very recent times, extended much further north than it could do so today.

3

THE SAGA IN THE ATLANTIC

Turning to the former extent of analogous flora in and around the present Atlantic, we find that they, too, occupied now vanished tracts which disappeared simultaneously with their European counterparts. Reviewing the Atlantic flora generally, Scharff concluded that the Azores and Madeira islands were directly united to mainland Europe until at least 'glacial' times[30], by which, of course, he meant down to the time of the great catastrophe under consideration.

One of the plants closely studied by Scharff was the orchid *Spiranthes*, which flourishes today only in North America and Ireland[31]. *Spiranthes* is apparently a relict member of what has been called the North Atlantic Arctic flora, the present disjointed distribution of which suggests original dissemination via islands or land-routes now far below Atlantic waters[32].

Those who doubt such explanations, and favour a comparatively great age for the Atlantic basin, are reminded that many authorities – including Prof Neumayer, and Dr von Thering[33], Prof E Hull[34], Dr Lloyd Praeger[35] and others – have postulated geologically recent transatlantic connections in order to adequately account for present biological distributions, and that modern oceanographic and geological researches testify among other things to both a temporally recent prolongation of the Anti-Atlas mountains of Morocco to the Canary Islands, and to an apparent western extension of Africa as far as the Azores. The fact that *Adiantum reniforme*, a type of fern known to have flourished in Portugal during Pliocene times, now thrives *only* on the Azores and Canary islands[36], thus becomes explicable.

Plants common only to the Atlantic isles and western Europe actually run into hundreds:

> There are in the Azores 480 known species of flowering plants and ferns, of which no less than 440 are also found in Europe, Madeira, or the Canary Islands; while 40 are peculiar to the Azores, but are more or less closely allied to European species.[37]

The western extremity of the transatlantic land-route passing through Madeira and the Canaries seems to have lain in what today is the Caribbean region, while the route itself may have formed the northern edge of Termier's previously noted Africo-Brazilian continent as:

> A connection between the flora of Madeira and that of the West Indies and tropical America has been inferred by the presence in the former of six ferns found nowhere in Europe or North Africa, but existing on the islands of the east coast of America or on the Isthmus of Panama. A further relationship to that continent is to be traced by the presence in Madeira of the beautiful erinaceous tree *Clethra arborea*, belonging to a genus which is otherwise wholly American; and of a *Persea*, a tree laurel, also an American genus.[38]

A few degrees below the equator off northeastern Brazil, the island of Fernando de Noronha bears a flora and fauna closely allied to that of the Caribbean[39]. Interestingly, the seaweeds around the island are "related chiefly to those of the Mexican Gulf"[40].

Further south, at latitude 20°20'S, about 600 miles (960km) east of Brazil, on the

Table 2A

Present distribution of some geographically isolated plants indicative of lost continental landmasses in Oceania and the southern hemisphere

After Guppy, Scharff, Moseley *et al*

		Atlantic Isles			Africa			Indian Ocean						Asia					Australasia					Pacific Islands														Americas		
Genus and species	**Type of plant**	South Trinidad	South Georgia	Tristan da Cunha	Southern Africa	Equatorial Africa	East Africa	Madagascar	Rodriguez Island	Mauritius	Marion Island	Kerguelen Island	Heard/McDonald Group	Indian Archipelago	Burma	Malaysia	Java	Borneo (Kalimantan)	Australia	Tasmania	New Zealand	New Guinea/Papua	Solomon Islands	Marquesas Islands	New Caledonia	New Hebrides	Keeling Atoll	Wallis Islands	Cambier Island	Fiji	Tahiti	Tonga	Samoa	Rarotonga	Paumatu Archipelago	Hawaii	Pitcairn Island	South America	West Indies	North America
Pringlea antiscorbutica	Kerguelen cabbage	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	■	■	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□
Juncus	Ground plant	□	■	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□
Nertea	Alpine plant	□	□	■	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□
Geranium	Alpine plant	□	□	□	□	■	□	■	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□
Sanicula	Alpine plant	□	□	□	□	■	□	■	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□
Lobelia anceps	Tree lobelia	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	■	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□
Lobelia spp	Small shrubs	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□
Schiedea	Shrub	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	■	□	□
Alsinidendron	Shrub	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	■	□	□
Polygonium glabrum	Aquatic/semi-aquatic	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	■	■	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□
Pisonia umbellifera	Seaside shrub	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	■	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	■	□	■	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□
Haplopetalon	Shrub	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□
Couthovia	Tree	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□
Eucalyptus	Tree	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□
Luzula campestris	Alpine plant	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□
Coprosoma	Upland plant	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□
Vaccinium	Ground plant	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	■	□	□	■	□	□	□	□
Alyxia olivaeformis	Small tree	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	■	□	□	□	□
Alyxia stellata	Small tree	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	■	■	■	■	□	□	□	□	□	□
Alyxia scandens	Small tree	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	■	■	■	■	■	□	□	□	□	□
Alyxia bracteolosa	Small tree	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	■	■	□	□	□	□	□	□	□
Alyxia sp	Small tree	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□
Uncinia	Alpine plant	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□
Peperomia	Low herb	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	■	□	■	□	□	□	□	□	□	□
Pimia	Tree	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□
Nototrichium	Small tree	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□
Richella	Tree	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□
Geissois (7-8 species)	Saxifraga	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□	□	■	■	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□
Oncocarpus	Tree	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□
Begonia	Orchid	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□
Eugenia rarillora	Tree	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	■	■	■	■	■	□	□	□	□	□	□	□
Eugenia monticola	Tree	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	■	■
Eugenia sp	Tree	■	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	■	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□
Stenogyne	Trailing plant	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	■	■	□	□	□	□
Wikstroemia indica	Tree-shrub	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	■	□	□	■	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	■	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□
Fragaria chilensis	Chilean strawberry	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	■	□	□
Isodendron	Shrub	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	■
Nothocestrum	Small tree	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	■	□	□
Thaucombaula	Shrub	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□
Gouldia	Tree-shrub	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	■
Straussia	Tree-shrub	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	■
Deyeuxia	Upland grass	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	■	□	□
Dammara (Agathis)	Conifer	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	■	■	■	■	□	□	□	■	■	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□
Podocarpus	Conifer	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	■	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□
Dacrydium	Conifer	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	■	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□
Dianella ensfola	Herb	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	■	□	□	■	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□
Dianella intermedia	Herb	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	■	■	□	■	□	□	□	□	□	□
Dianella sp	Herb	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	■	□
Smythea	Straggling shrub	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	■	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□
Graeffea	Tree	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□
Broussaisia	Saxifraga tree	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□
Pterotropia	Tree	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□
Bobea	Small tree	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	□	■	□	□	□	□

remote, virtually treeless, island of South Trinidad, abound the perished but *unfossilised* remains of a species of the tree *Eugenia*, indicating that the island was formerly well-wooded[41]. The present, much wider geographical distribution of *Eugenia*, shown in table 2A, is revelationary.

Still further south, the flora of the island-group of Tristan da Cunha, Nightingale, and Inaccessible is essentially Fuegian (South American) with an admixture of Cape (South African) genera[42]. Moseley concluded from these details that:

> The close similarity of the flora of the three islands of the group points to a former connection between them.[43]

Such facts point unmistakably to the rather recent existence in what is now the South Atlantic of one or more land routes or archipelagos over which plants had spread both west and east.

4

A SUNKEN SOUTHERN CONTINENT?

Wild plants enjoying even greater discontinuous distribution are known from areas of the southern hemisphere now mostly occupied by southern Africa, Australasia, the southern regions of the Indian Ocean and Pacific Ocean and South America. Collectively, these plants suggest the former occurrence of a now-sunken continental landmass which embraced all these regions, and seemingly connected in the east with another sizable landmass in what is now the Pacific Ocean, and in the east, apparently, with the southern portion of the aforementioned Africo-Brazilian continent in the west.

The previous existence of this great southern continent has long been recognised by geologists and naturalists, who have given it a variety of names – Gondwanaland, Indo-Oceana and Lemuria being the best known. The now submerged Pacific landmass has been variously called Oceana and Pacifica, and is of interest in that, as far as the botanical evidence is concerned, it was apparently joined, either directly or via islands, to western North America.

Table 2A summarises the present distribution of many of these plants, which include such well-loved forms as Begonias and Geraniums. It should be noted that, of the plants listed in table 2A, the seeds of the Kerguelen cabbage, which form the principal food of the local teal, are too soft and perishable to pass unharmed through that bird, and are very unlikely to be transported to more distant regions on the bird's feet or feathers[44]. Other plants on Kerguelen Island also occur in southern New Zealand, about 2,350 miles (3,760km) to the east in the South Pacific, and on South Georgia Island, some 2,700 miles (4,320km) to the west in the South Atlantic[45], the overall impression being that all the Kerguelen plants are actually relict species. Also of relevance is the fact that silicified trunks of large trees occur in late 'Pleistocene' lavas on Kerguelen Island, indicating that a well developed flora thrived there until geologically recently[46].

It must be significant that the great botanist, Joseph Hooker, concluded that the majority of the islands of the Indian Ocean were the upland peaks of a now-submerged southern continent, thus parallelling the conclusions reached by the naturalists who studied the floras of the Atlantic Islands and the Iberian peninsula.

Of particular interest is the fact that the shrub *Pisonia umbellifera* cannot be dispersed by water currents, yet it exists discontinuously from Australia to Tonga, while a closely related species, *P aculeata*, also thrives in the Americas and the Old World[47]. Again, *Peperomia* flourishes in such widely dispersed countries as Australia, various Pacific islands, the West Indies and Bermuda – but while some have suggested that birds may have carried the seeds to the two latter localities from Oceania[48], and despite the surprisingly great powers of flight of some birds, the immense distances involved renders such an explanation decidedly suspect. Moreover, as shown later, innumerable identical or nearly-allied species of insects, crustaceans and molluscs, which birds do not disperse, still inhabit the same broad belt of geographically discontinuous habitats.

Hooker's conclusions respecting a former southern continent foreshadowed those reached by Guppy years later for the Fijian area of the Pacific. Discussing the present distribution of the conifers *Dammara*, *Podocarpus* and *Dacrydium*, Guppy thought that they denoted the:

> ...original continuity of the Fijian land area, not only with the neighbouring islands of the New Hebrides and of New Caledonia, where these genera alike occur, but also with New Zealand, Tasmania and Australia, where they attain a great development.[49]*

Interestingly, *Dacrydium* and *Podocarpus* are also known from South America[50], so it may be germane to mention that tree trunks, roots and branches litter the seabed between Panama and the Galapagos Islands[51], and that others occur in late 'Pleistocene' volcanic tuffs on Fiji[52]. Evidently, extensive forests formerly clothed huge land areas in what today are the Indian and Pacific oceans, that these existed until late 'Pleistocene' times, and that widely scattered colonies of *Dammara*, *Podocarpus*, *Dacrydium*, *Eugenia* and other plants on the islands now characterising these oceans represent the last vestiges of a once far more glorious flora.

Finally, the *Eucalyptus* tree of the Indian archipelago and Australia is, like the trees (plane, poplar, sequoia, etc) mentioned in Part One, apparently a survivor from Miocene/Pliocene times. In Australia, it occurs abundantly with the cones of the southern conifer *Banksia* in argillaceous deposits in southern Victoria[53]. These beds have been variously dated as late Pliocene or early Pleistocene. It will be recalled that the fern *Adiantum reniforme*, which still thrives on the Azores and Canaries, lived in Portugal during Pliocene times, and that much of the present circumpolar flora is similarly ancient.

No less than seventy-seven species of living plants, some with notable Pliocene, even Miocene, characteristics, are unique to Tasmania, New Zealand and Central America[54], so it must be of interest that subfossilised fruits discovered in Australian gold-bearing drift-gravels of Pleistocene age also belong to Miocene plants[55]. At some places in Victoria, these Australian gravels overlie the prostrate trunks and branches of large trees, some stumps still in situ, with their roots embedded in the original ancient soil[56].

It appears that various geologically 'old' plants still flourish virtually unchanged at many localities, exhibiting few or no signs of having developed into new forms during the intervening period (millions of years, according to conventional geological chronology). Could it be that the ancient flora they represent persisted right down to so-called late 'Pleistocene' times when, together with contemporary animal life of every kind, it was catastrophically decimated and its surviving elements obliged to inhabit (on a discontinuous basis) the new topography occasioned by the cause of those changes? If, as is widely agreed, the Pleistocene period ended about 11,000 years ago, it follows that essentially Pliocene floras clothed great areas of the world *until* that date. Innumerable botanical remains encountered in 'drift' and other 'Pleistocene' deposits the world over seem to suggest precisely this.

---

* See *Note 3*.

5

THE BURIED FORESTS OF NORTH AMERICA

Vegetable remains entombed in alleged 'Pleistocene' deposits are known from many localities in Europe[57], Africa[58], Asia[59], Australasia and South America[60] – where so-called late Tertiary (Miocene/Pliocene) and early Pleistocene plant fossils now reposing at 13,000ft (4,000m) at Corocoro, and at 14,000ft (4,308m) at Potosi, in Bolivia, include a fern and tropical trees closely allied to those now living in the Amazon lowlands[61]. Such remains, however, are probably most abundant in North America, where several spectacular finds have occurred. We commence with a look at some of the evidence from southern Canada.

Sir William Dawson and Prof D P Penhallow[62] were among the earliest students of Canada's so-called 'Pleistocene' floras – but while their work has inevitably been augmented by more recent discoveries and reports, much of what they recorded is highly relevant to the main theme of this book. For example, at Scarborough Heights and elsewhere near Ontario, clays yielded remains of cedar and pine trees, portions of rushes, leaves, a variety of seeds, specimens of *Chara, Bryum, Fontinalis* and two species of *Hypnum*[63]. Then, near the River Don, Toronto, leaves and wood fragments were discovered in dark hued clays 70ft (22m) below ground level, where, also, a Maple leaf occurred in overlying reddish ferruginous sand, itself overlain by boulder-clay[64]. Boulder-clay also overlies a bed at Rolling River, Manitoba, containing shell and fish debris mixed with a great variety of plant remains[65].

At Cape Breton a hardened peaty bed, subjacent to 'till' or boulder-clay, contains twigs, branches of coniferous trees, and a great variety of fibrous and epidermal tissues, apparently of swamp vegetation indicative of a genial climate. When ignited, these remains burnt with a flame in the manner of lignite[66]. As noted below, lignitised plants are actually quite widespread in 'drift' deposits over much of east-central Canada.

Lignite occurs in or below superficial deposits in the valleys of the Albany, Kenogami, Missinaibi and Abitibi rivers between Hudson Bay and the Great Lakes. On the bed of the Kenogami it appears in association with 'till' and boulder-clay, and contains pieces of canoe birch and coniferous wood. That along the south branch of Coalbrook is 3ft (1m) or more in thickness, is overlain by up to 70ft (22.5m) of pebbly 'till' and gravels, and, retaining a "distinct woody character", contains the flattened trunks of trees some 2ft (0.6m) in diameter.

Two miles above Woodpecker Island in the same valley horizontal beds of lignite, composed chiefly of sticks and half-decayed rushes, occur in the *midst* of 'till' deposits 125ft (38m) thick. Three miles (5km) below Woodpecker Island lignite, as much as 6ft (1.8m) thick, extends for hundreds of yards, and consists of laminae of moss and sticks in prodigious quantities[67]. Indeed, so numerous are lignite seams throughout this general region that lignitous matter is believed to underlie all the clays, sands, gravels and other superficial deposits, blanketing the territory south-west of James Bay for a distance of no less than 200 miles (320km)[68].

The peaty and woody accumulations in the Bow and Belly river valleys of Alberta are comparable examples from western Canada, where pressure has sometimes hardened them to the consistency of lignite[69]. Further north, just below the top soil at certain places in the valley of the Mackenzie River, shales forming the river banks are covered with the largely *undecayed* leaves of very ancient deciduous forest trees such as maple, oak and poplar, none of which can now thrive at that latitude[70]. Various early travellers observed burning seams of lignite at several places in the Mackenzie valley above the Bear River[71].

Faced with such evidence, it is difficult to disagree in general with the following conclusion which, although formulated by Dawson and Penhallow over a century ago, is still essentially correct:

> ...When these plants flourished in Canada, there must have been open water and a land flora in the Arctic basin – conditions, of course, altogether incompatible with the existence of a polar ice-cap, although not inconsistent with their existence in the more elevated districts or those cooled by the cold Arctic currents.[72]

Indeed, modern observations made in Arctic Canada, militating against former extensive ice-sheets there, strongly support Dawson and Penhallow's argument, while the evidence of the 'genial' character of many of the recorded plants merely emphasises what has already been inferred about the vanished Arctic forests. The half-decayed condition of much of the known material clearly indicates that its destruction, accumulation, and burial was a geologically recent event. As a whole, this Canadian evidence compares favourably with the European lignite discoveries and with the apparently coeval testimony of the lignites at Geiseltal in Germany.

As noted previously, many ancient valleys and gorges in the American Midwest lie buried under immense accumulations of 'drift' and associated materials originating in more northerly latitudes, where "Logs and fragments of wood are often got at great depths in the buried gorges"[73].

At Bloomington, Illinois, pieces of wood, some of it yew, were found 123ft (38m) below the surface during the sinking of a shaft[74]; a huge log was discovered 40ft (12m) below ground-level, resting directly upon 'till' or hard-pan, during the digging of a well at Columbia, Ohio[75]; while elsewhere in Ohio, and also in Michigan, similar finds have

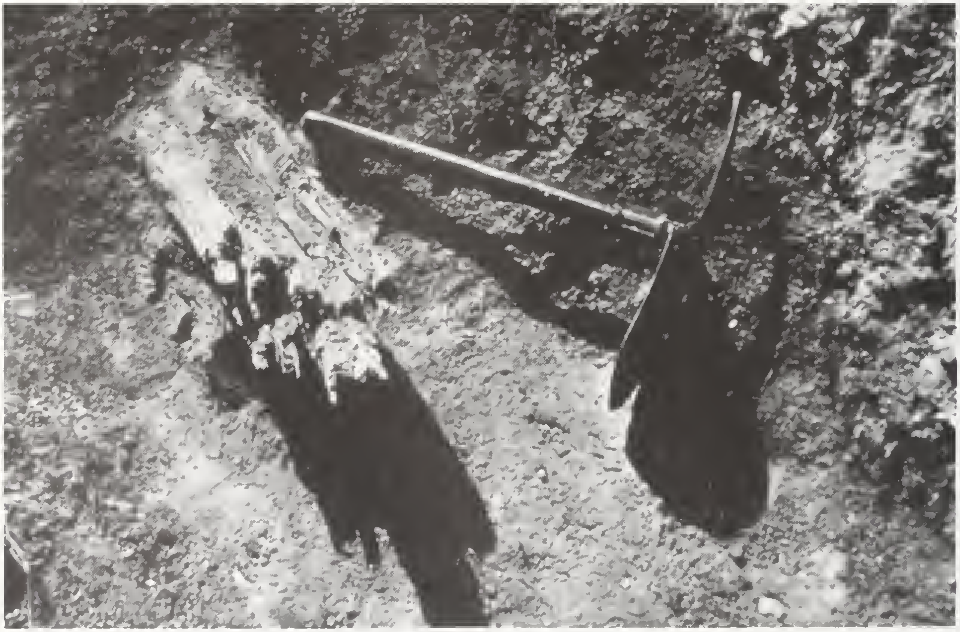

Fig 2.1. Buried log in soil section, Shelby County, Ohio. *Courtesy of Dr R P Goldthwait.*

occurred. Overall, the finds have been very numerous:

> Buried tree-trunks are often exhumed from the glacial drift at a depth of from 20–60ft from the surface. Dr Locke has published an account of a mass of buried driftwood at Salem, Ohio, 43ft below the surface, embedded in ancient mud. The museum of the University of Michigan contains several fragments of well-preserved tree-trunks exhumed from wells in the vicinity of Ann Arbor. Such occurrences are by no means uncommon. The encroachments of the waves upon the shores of the Great Lakes reveal whole forests of the buried trunks of the white cedar[76].

Buried timber resembling that of the osage-orange has been found at a depth of 42ft (13m) at Coventry, Summit City, near Lake Erie, Ohio, and mineralised black and brittle wood apparently of a cedar tree at a depth of 30ft (9m) in a similar excavation at Ross City, also in Ohio. A 20ft (6.2m) long trunk of a white cedar, complete with roots and portions of the upper boughs, came to light in 'muck' beds 18ft (5.5m) below ground-level in Cleveland, Ohio, a district where a layer containing abundant partly-decayed pine, spruce and cranberry leaves has been repeatedly penetrated – the result being that untreated water from many wells formerly sunk there was unfit to drink. Together with twigs, leaves and dead shells, the partially rotted but *unmineralised* remnants of another large cedar tree were found 12ft (3.6m) below the surface at Dover, Cuyahoga County, Ohio, and 3 miles (4.8km) north of New Burlington a "dense layer of logs" was encountered 30ft (9m) below the surface.

Of 59 wells sunk by the early 1860's in Hamilton County, Ohio, six had penetrated 'muck' beds, leaves, timber or carbonaceous silt. These accumulations were occasionally of enormous thickness. Leaves, sticks and vegetable mould exposed in a well shaft at or near Carey's Academy, Cleveland district, comprised a layer no less than 9'2" (2.8m) thick. In another well nearby, a great bed of leaves and logs, this time under blue clay, was passed at a depth of 40ft (12m). This blue clay occurred in at least 35 wells sunk in Hamilton County by 1864, and invariably contained logs, twigs, and leaves.

An upright tree stump, complete with roots, was discovered in this same blue clay at a depth of 30ft (9m) below ground-level 8 miles (13km) east of Oxford in Butler County, Ohio, while at Athens, also in Ohio, several large logs were found 10ft (3m) lower down. Great beds of timber occur at several places in Mercer County, Ohio, between 40 and 50ft (12m and 15m) from the surface, and half-decayed logs were quite commonly found while sinking wells on the upland farms in nearby Sciota County. Closely similar finds were made at varying depths in Madison, Franklin, and Stark counties, showing that: "...muck beds and trees are universal beneath the soil throughout Ohio"[77].

The extent of these buried forests clearly outstretches even that of the sizable state of Ohio. For instance, well-preserved willow remains came to light in red clay 50ft (15m) below the present surface of Lake Michigan, in a well sunk at Green Bay, Wisconsin[78], while further north abundant decayed vegetation has been found under similar circumstances on Oak Island at the western extremity of Lake Superior[79].

Several years ago, at the site of Two Creeks, Wisconsin, abundant remains of large forest trees were discovered buried under deposits attributed to the Mankato glacier, allegedly a feature of the supposed Wisconsinian ice advance about 25,000 years ago. Accordingly, these trees were initially believed to date from that time, but later laboratory Carbon-14 tests on spruce wood and associated peat from the site reduced their antiquity to, significantly, only 11,000 years BP[80].

Elsewhere in Wisconsin, decayed and unmineralised white cedar wood has been found 18ft (5.5m) down in a well shaft in Walworth County, while at Appleton township unrotted red cedar (*Juniperus virginiana*) occurred at the same depth. A second, more decayed, specimen occurred nearby at a depth of 30ft (9m). In adjacent Minnesota, white cedar wood was discovered at the base of sandy clay 10ft (3m) below ground-level near the Mesabi Range on the banks of the Embarras River, and two large logs of resinous timber at a depth of 60ft (18m) in a well sunk at Iowa City, in Iowa. At Burlington, also in Iowa, extensive beds of sticks and leaves have been encountered 12ft (3.6m) below the surface – similar occurrences being recorded at various other localities west and south of that town[81]. Still more numerous finds of subterranean timber have been made all across Illinois, especially in the counties of Jersey, Marion, St Clair, Woodford, Grundy, McLean, Morgan, Tazewell, Menard and McHenry, and sometimes at depths of up to 110ft (34m) below ground-level[82].

Yet other finds could be listed from neighbouring Mississippi and Indiana, although the many examples just cited adequately convey the immense, and probably more or less continuous, extent of this buried vegetation. Together with the stupendous volumes of plant debris forming the previously-mentioned Canadian lignite deposits north of the Great Lakes, these discoveries west and south of the Great Lakes in effect constitute one gigantic raft of subterranean botanical rubbish – the remnants of once vast forests of mixed conifers and deciduous timber, overwhelmed and deeply buried by whatever deposited the even more gargantuan volumes of 'drift' all over mid-western America and southern Canada. Before their destruction, however, these forests extended much further north than is possible today.

Interestingly, modern botanical research has shown that, even during alleged glacial times, the commonest tree genera in, for example, Illinois were "present there during the entire Wisconsinian (Pleistocene)"[83], that deciduous forests south of the Sangamon River in Illinois, Indiana and Ohio, were dense and flourished in a "climate more humid than the present one"[84], and that *northern* plants have been identified in these buried floras of the American Midwest[85]. One authority, Grüger, has even concluded:

> One must assume for this region for the entire Wisconsinian, a temperate climate, which may have permitted the survival of many plant types relatively close to the ice edge.[86]

Other botanists, concerned more with floral distribution than with geological hypotheses, have arrived at rather similar conclusions. Braun, for example, has postulated ideas very similar to those advocated by Grüger on the basis of present plant geography[87], a line also adopted by Iltis still more recently[88]. Yet others could be quoted.

If, as previously advocated, the ice-sheets of glacial theory never existed in so-called 'Pleistocene' times, then the difficulties confronting botanists studying evidence like the above largely evaporate. Moreover, the fragile nature of much of this botanical debris – leaves, rushes, twigs, nuts, cones, berries, moss etc. – strongly militates against ice having overwhelmed and buried such material, even though the deposits enveloping it are conventionally regarded as 'glacial'. The fact that equally large buried forests and delicate plants occur in Alaska and all over northern Siberia, but not in deposits usually thought to have been laid down by ice-sheets, is highly relevant, and suggests that all these flora, whether in America or elsewhere, perished from the same general cause and at the same time.

Collectively, the foregoing testimony of numerous living and lately-extinct plants shows not only that many flora were once far more extensive than at present, but also that they were so until surprisingly recently – they inhabited latitudes in which they can no longer flourish, and clothed a world topographically very unlike our own. This testimony also indicates a former prevalence of climatic conditions considerably more genial than today. The botanical evidence as a whole, therefore, harmonises extremely well with the unrelated disciplines of Pleistocene geology and early tradition (see Part One). As we shall now see, the record of zoology is practically a duplicate of that just examined.

6

DISLOCATED FAUNAS: THE ATLANTIC BASIN

Like the botanists, many zoologists studying the geographical dispersal of land and freshwater animals have concluded that various land-routes or close-knit archipelagos must have formerly occurred in many regions now below sea level, to satisfactorily account for existing faunal distributions. Prof H Simroth, for example, investigating the slugs of the Iberian peninsula, North Africa and the Canary Islands, deduced that a direct land connection between the three areas must have existed until comparatively very recently[89].

Well known malacologists (studying molluscs) have reached similar conclusions. Thus, on the Azores, out of 69 species of land-shells (which have a natural aversion to sea-water) 37 are common to Europe or the other Atlantic Isles. Most, if not all of them, are thought to have probably originated at those localities in 'pre-glacial' days, during or even before 'Pleistocene' times[90]. They are, therefore, relict species of a fauna now drastically reduced numerically and territorially. Both Dr W Kobelt and Dr von Ihering have shown that European, West Indian and Central American land-shells certainly implied the former existence of some transatlantic land-route, severed only towards the close of the 'Pleistocene' period[91].

That such land connections really did exist seems irrevocably established by the following data:

> The present fauna of the four archipelagos – the Azores, the Madeiras, the Canaries and Cape Verde – is not an island but a continental fauna: in particular, the mollusc fauna is indigenous to the Mediterranean and distinct from the equatorial-African. At the same time, there is a resemblance in the fauna of the Canaries and Mauritania, both showing the same kind of molluscs. The earth-worms, *Oligochetes*, in the Canaries, are akin to the same creature in Southern Europe.
>
> It is to be concluded from these observations that in an epoch close to ours – say, at the end of the glacial period – the islands of the four archipelagos were joined to the African continent.[92]

Again, Prof.Scharff noted that operculate (lidded) land-shells of the West Indies comprise:

> ...so large a proportion of the Antillean land-snail fauna, that a majority of the genera are found on two or more of the islands and the mainland, while nearly every species is absolutely restricted to a single island, appears to me to be very strong testimony in favour of a former general land connection.[93]

Evidence from Jamaica and the Lesser Antilles indicates that the disappearance of this land connection was accompanied by the near-extinction in late 'Pleistocene' times of a very diverse earlier ('glacial') land-snail fauna[94] – a factor accounting for the remarkable distributional pattern of the present snails as noted by Scharff and, as seen below, why many of them, though now insular forms, are so closely related to one another. It would, moreover, not be unreasonable to conclude that the loss or subsidence of this former land connection occurred coevally with that of the transatlantic land route called for above by Kobelt and von Ihering, on the basis of other molluscan evidence.

Ewing, it will be recalled, indicated the awesome vertical scale, and Termier the huge linear extent of such subsidence when, at the close of the 'Pleistocene' epoch, large portions of the Atlantic floor – which must *a priori* have included the land routes of the naturalists – sank some 2–3 miles (see Part One).

Elsewhere, as between Greenland and Norway, the greater part of the North Atlantic subsided as much as 9,000ft. That freshwater shells inhabiting a bog at Killough in Co Down, N Ireland, are stunted forms allied not merely to some still living in Arctic Europe, Greenland and America, but to others, almost identical, dredged as dead shells from the Atlantic floor near Rockall off the Norwegian and Scottish coasts, the Shetland islands, Iceland and Jan Mayen island, at depths of up to 9,000 fathoms, and generally from all areas between Davis Strait and Gibraltar[95], confirms not only the enormity of this crustal subsidence, but supports those claims which date the collapse as having occurred "since the Ice Age"[96].

Elaborating upon the American and African relationships of the Atlantic isles fauna, Merezhkovsky added:

> ...the geographical distribution of the molluscs *Oleacinidae*, existing only in Central America, in the Antilles, the Canaries, the Azores, on the island of Madeira and in the Mediterranean basin, presupposes the existence... of a continent embracing all these regions. Fifteen varieties of molluscs live only in the Antilles and on the Senegal coast of Africa, and it is impossible to explain their presence by the transportation of the embryos; while the coral fauna of the islands of St Thomas includes six varieties, of which one, apart from this island, breeds on the submarine rocks of Florida; while four are on the Bermuda isles, which again can scarcely be explained by the transportation of the embryos, as their watery life is too short to allow for their being transported by oceans currents.[97]

All the land-shells of the Bahamas, Puerto Rico, Haiti, Cuba and Jamaica are generally related to each other and to those of Florida and Yucatan (Mexico), whereas those from the Windward Isles are closely allied only to South American forms[98]. This suggests the occurrence of a natural barrier separating the two areas represented by these distinct land-shell groups even before 'Pleistocene' times – a detail seemingly confirmed by the fact that:

> The fishes, shells, sea-urchins and other organisms of the West Indian basins belong to *modern* types, which to a large extent seem to have migrated from the Atlantic Ocean. Their recent appearance suggests *great changes in the physical history of the West Indian seas...*[99] (our italics)

and by the recent discovery of fossils of the *same* species of *foraminifera* (uni-celled marine creatures) in sea-bed cores obtained from both sides of the Panamanian isthmus[100]. Today, these creatures are specifically distinct either side of the isthmus.

Like many other naturalists, Spencer concluded that the submergence of the Antillean landmass and elevation of the Panamanian isthmus were geologically recent events, and that much marine zoological data from the Caribbean generally loudly echoes the implications of the land-shells of the Atlantic isles, north-western Africa and the Iberian peninsula[101].

Among annelids, the occurrence of similar earthworms in the Canaries and southern Europe represents further powerful evidence for an uninterrupted land connection between those regions at no very remote date, for, like the slugs and most land-shells, earthworms soon perish if consigned to seawater. The same fate befalls similarly immersed frogs, toads and newts, yet the presence of several identical or related species of these amphibians in water-sundered Sardinia, Corsica and the British Isles suggests that these islands, too, were recently united to the European mainland[102].

The French writer, L Germain, has highlighted the fact that certain insects – such as the familiar Canary Butterfly *Setomorpha discipunctella* – also occur in West Africa and tropical America[103]. Enlarging upon this subject, Spence noted that:

> Sixty per cent of the butterflies and moths found in the Canaries are of Mediterranean

> origin, and twenty per cent of these are to be found in America... The (crustacean) *Platyarthus* is represented by three species in Western Europe and North Africa, one in the Canaries, and one in Venezuela.[104].

And Wallace said of the insects of the Azores:

> The butterflies, moths and *Hymenoptera* are few in number... Beetles are more numerous... The total number of species is 212, of which 175 are European... 23 of these are not found in any of the other Atlantic islands... Besides these are 36 species not found in Europe, of which 19 are natives of Madeira or the Canaries, 3 are American, and 14 are altogether peculiar to the Azores. These latter are mostly allied to species found in Europe, or in the other Atlantic islands, while one is allied to an American species... Many of these small insects have, no doubt, survived the glacial epoch, and may, in that case, represent very ancient forms which have become extinct in their native country.[105].

Analogous details are traceable between the European and North American ants and beetles. Among the *Lepidoptera*, for example, 243 species are common to these continents, while:

> A great number of North American ants are identical with European ones... Northern Europe possesses one peculiar genus of Ant – *Anergetes*. This is closely allied to *Epoccus*, another genus confined to North America... 487 species of *Coleoptera* are common to North America, Northern Asia and Europe.[106].

The restriction of the water-mite *Hydrachna geographica* – a creature with limited powers of flight – to Europe and eastern North America[107] is still another example, which also parallels the distribution of the freshwater sponge *Hetermeyenia ryderi*, thriving today only along the North American Atlantic coast (between Florida, Newfoundland, and Sable Island) and western Scotland and Ireland[108]. Such distribution is inexplicable unless continuous land with freshwater lakes and ponds once existed between Europe and North America.

The distribution of the pearl mussel (*Margaritana margaritifer*) suggests it is another relict species, since:

> The European freshwater pearl mussel is found in the United States, where other allied species exist. In Eastern Europe and Western Asia the genus is unknown. It is widely spread in Western Europe from Northern Scandinavia to Spain – without, however, entering a single river communicating directly with the Mediterranean or crossing the coastline of that ancient Central European ocean which extended along the northern border of the European Alps eastward to Asia in Miocene times. Its very discontinuous range, coupled with its peculiar European distribution, and its absence from Western Asia, seem to imply that the freshwater pearl mussel found its way across the Atlantic with the sponges just referred to, at a very remote time.[109]

The freshwater molluscs of Iceland and the present distribution of woodlice tell a similar story:

> Twenty-one different kinds of land and freshwater mollusca are known from Iceland, including such well-known species as *Arianta arbustorum*. This is not likely to have been accidentally introduced, and its presence in Iceland strongly supports the idea of a former land-connection between that island and Europe. Such common European woodlice as *Porcellio scaber* and *Oniscus asellus* are liable to be unintentionally carried by man. Yet the fact that these two species are widely spread and apparently indigenous to both Europe and America, and are found not only in Iceland, but also in the Faeroes, is significant.
>
> Among the Iceland freshwater molluscs there is one which has probably been derived from a former land-connection with Greenland, *viz Succinea groenlandica*. It

> is common to both countries, yet quite unknown in Europe proper.[110]

As remarked earlier, abundant molluscan and other evidence obtained from the floor of the North Atlantic indicates the geologically very late existence of a land connection between North America and western and north-western Europe, via Greenland and Iceland. *Succinea groenlandica* is an excellent example of that former reality.

This sunken North Atlantic territory which, in its time, formed much of the now-submerged lands of Appalachia and Fennoscandia (see map 1B) was also the domain, as shown below, of many 'old' (Pliocene) molluscan biota – zoological parallels of the similarly 'ancient' plant species noted previously among the scarcely-fossilised botanical evidence recorded from now-inhospitable Arctic latitudes. The freshwater character of most of these molluscs and, as noted with regard to much of the lost Euro-American flora, many of the aquatic plants, indicates that these sunken lands were well watered and enjoyed pleasant climatic conditions – conditions vastly different from those now typical of the same latitudes today, yet able to support comparatively delicate creatures like water-mites and freshwater sponges.

Near Billefjorden on Spitzbergen five north-dipping ancient shorelines contain numerous shells of the cold-water Pliocene mollusc *Astarte borealis*[111], a mollusc which also occurs profusely in the 'drift' deposits on Moel Tryfaen and at Gloppa near Oswestry, Wales[112], while a contemporary thick-shelled mollusc, *Cyrtodaria siliqua*, although known from so-called 'glacial' clays in Co Durham and Caithness, no longer thrives in Britain[113], yet still does so in Nova Scotia and several eastern states of North America.

Here, then, are instances of formerly widespread Pliocene molluscs now extinct at many of their previous European habitats but still surviving in limited areas of the New World. The significance of the survival to present times of various typical Pliocene and Miocene plants has already been noted. This, we now see, is duplicated in the zoological record.

The aforementioned Mediterranean element reappears among the 'higher' animals of the Atlantic islands. The lizards, for example, include a North African form and a South American (Chilean) form, but virtually all the burrowing (Amphisbaenid) lizards exhibit Mediterranean or African affinities, with a few also apparently having New World relationships[114]. The lizard *Thysanodactylus bilineatus* is also of interest as being common to Brazil and the island of Fernando de Noronha[115], these two localities also sharing the cricket genus *Gryllus*[116].

The present distribution of the Sirenian genus *Manatus* and of the Monk Seal *Monachus*, is also peculiar. Neither of these marine mammals frequent the open sea, yet today several known species inhabit opposite shores of the Atlantic – the West Indies, western Mediterranean and the seaboards of West Africa and eastern South America. This suggests the almost inescapable conclusion that the ancestors of these mammals spread along some ancient coastline uniting the Old and New Worlds until comparatively recent times[117].

7

DISLOCATED FAUNAS: EURASIA, OCEANIA AND THE SOUTHERN HEMISPHERE

Remaining with the Mediterranean element, but this time in the Mediterranean itself, we find that the land-shell *Buliminus pupa* occurs only in Algeria, Sicily, southern Italy, Greece and Asia Minor, and that a related species, *B fasciolatus*, is confined to Greece, Syria and the islands of Crete, Cyprus and Rhodes. These and practically all other species of *Buliminus* are geographically very restricted and do not survive prolonged immersion in salt-water.

Conchological researches have shown that Morocco and southern Spain were also physically united in the recent past and that land-shells typical of those on Sicily also thrive in the Tetuan Mountains just south of the Strait of Gibraltar[118]. Further east, a whole assemblage of plants and animals was found by the French savant Blanchard to be common to Tunisia and Sicily[119].

Among the near-endless ranks of beetles, no less than 12 species of *Hopatroides* flourish in Greece and Asia Minor, and one *H thoracicus* in Andalusia, Spain. Similarly, the related form *Amphicoma* is represented by 15 species in western Asia and the Balkans, and by three others peculiar to north-west Africa and southern Spain[120].

Lepidopterists will know that Asia Minor hosts two of the three European species of the butterfly *Thais*, and that *T cerisyi* inhabits some of the Greek islands as well as the Greek mainland and Turkey. In Europe, Greece and southern Italy are the only habitats of the magnificent butterfly *Danais chrysippus* which, however, is well known from Syria, Persia and the whole of southern Asia. Interestingly three species also occur in North America.

Although at least 32 species of *Bacillus*, a genus to which the stick-insects belong, are scattered across southern Asia, Africa, Australasia and the Sandwich Islands, four additional species known from southern Europe also range into northern Africa[121]. This distributional pattern closely resembles that of *Rhax* and *Galeodus*, two spider-like genera occupying southern Europe, North Africa and western Asia[122].

Crustaceans also furnish analogous details, the freshwater crab *Thelphusa fluviatilis* being a case in point. Although other species of it occur as far south as Madagascar and the Cape of Good Hope and as far east as Australia, *T fluviatilis* thrives in southern Spain, North Africa, Sicily, southern Italy, Greece, Cyprus, Turkey, Syria, and Persia[123].

Another freshwater crustacean, the crayfish *Hemicaridina desmaresti*, inhabits Spain, Corsica, Sardinia, Sicily and Asia Minor, while the subterranean shrimp *Typhlocaris* "is represented by three isolated species around the Mediterranean". Certain other shrimp genera typical of tropical *land-locked* salt-water pools enjoy even more exotic geographical distribution. *Antecaridina lauensis*, for example, is known only from the Dahlak archipelago in the southern Red Sea, the island of Europa and the Fiji islands. Similarly *Ligur uvae* occurs only on Aldabra Island north-west of Madagascar, Halmahera Island in Indonesia and Fiji; while one *Hippolytid* genus has been recorded only from Cape Ras Muhammad in southernmost Sinai, Funafuti in Micronesia and Hawaii[124].

Volumes could be filled with additional 'Mediterranean' examples of similarly dispersed insects, molluscs and crustaceans, but we must pass on to consider various higher animals exhibiting similarly discontinuous distribution.

The toad *Discoglossus pictus*, for instance, lives in Spain, north-west Africa, Malta, Sicily, Sardinia and Corsica[125]. The ubiquitous tree-frog *Hyla arborea* ranges from Japan, through China, Persia, Asia Minor, southern Europe, France, Spain to North Africa and is present on Corsica, Sardinia, Sicily and on most of the larger Greek islands as well as on the Madeira and Canary islands and the Salvages. Regarding its Mediterranean distribution, Scharff remarked:

> The occurrence of the tree-frog on so many of the Mediterranean islands is of particular interest, especially as... the more minute features of the various forms can be traced from island to island, adding one more proof – if proof were needed – of their former continuity.[126].

Amphibians, of course, are as adversely affected by salt-water as land and freshwater shells, so these varieties of *Hyla arborea* must have reached their present habitats before the disruption of the landmass of which the present Mediterranean and Atlantic islands are remnants.

An impressive number of reptiles enjoy a generally comparable distribution. The worm-like lizard *Blanus cinerus*, for instance, lives in Spain, North Africa and on some of the Greek islands. Another lizard, belonging to the family *Scincidae*, thrives today on several Greek isles, as well as on Sicily, Sardinia, Spain and the Canary Islands, while the European chameleon *Chamaeleon vulgaris* occurs in southern Spain, North Africa and Sicily. Among the snakes, *Periops hippocrepis* is found only in Spain, Sardinia and Greece; the burrowing *Typhlops lumbricalis* on mainland Greece and some of its islands and in Asia Minor as far as the Caucasus Mountains; and *Eryx jaculus* on the Greek islands of Naxos and Tinos, in Turkey and across south-western Russia[127].

Eight species of amphibians and reptiles occur east and west of the Italian peninsula, and south of it in North Africa, but are absent from Italy itself. Forsyth-Major demonstrated the close affinities of the North African, Sardinian and Corsican forms. Out of a total of 21 species, 12 inhabit Italy, at least 16 North Africa and 17 Spain. From such evidence he argued that Corsica, Sardinia, Sicily and north-west Africa constitute a zoogeographical province from which Italy, except for a few west coast localities, is excluded, and that:

> The close relationship shown in the fauna of Corsica and Sardinia to Africa, permits the supposition that the connection with these islands had persisted to a *much more recent date* than with Europe (our italics).[128]

The botanical record from the same general region is strikingly similar[129].

With their great powers of flight and their seasonal migrations, particular species of birds are less easy to identify positively as truly indigenous to given geographical regions and are discussed but briefly here. Just two examples only need be considered. Of these, the fire-crested wren *Regulus ignicapillus* which very occasionally visits southern Britain, is common in Asia Minor and resident throughout the year in southern Europe. More importantly, it occurs in Sardinia, Malta and along the shores of northern Africa. Very interestingly, two related species, *R teneriffae* and *R maderensis*, inhabit the Canary and Madeira islands respectively.

Our second example, the common Goldfinch, *Carduelis elegans*, though breeding throughout Europe, except in the extreme north, is unusually abundant in southern Europe and north-west Africa and has a range extending eastwards to Persia and westwards to Madeira and the Canaries[130].

Among the mammals, it may be mentioned that scattered communities of a small race of red deer are to be found in Corsica, Sardinia and north-west Africa[131]. Fossil remains of the same deer have also been discovered in 'Pleistocene' cave-breccias – of which more shortly – on Malta[132] and Crete[133].

Natural dwarfing, apparently in response to insular conditions can, however, be achieved by some animals remarkably swiftly. Recent research[134] has demonstrated that the red deer of Jersey, Channel islands, for example, attained their present small size in just approximately 6,000 years. Several other analogous instances of rapid dwarfing among other animals have been recorded from other parts of the world[135].

The wild sheep of Asia Minor, Cyprus, Sardinia, Corsica and Tunisia, and the European Porcupine which occurs in Asia Minor, Greece and the island of Rhodes, southern Italy, Sicily, North Africa and Spain are analogous examples. Likewise, the small shrew-like *Crocidura etrusca* is found in southern France, Italy, Sicily and North Africa (and the Cretan cave-breccias); while the Black-mouthed Weasel, *Mustela boccamela*, inhabits Persia, Asia Minor, Greece, southern Italy, Sicily, and Sardinia. A closely related species, *M africanus*, flourishes in Malta and Algeria[136].

Additional instances abound of discontinuously distributed living biota in and around the Mediterranean basin, although those already cited adequately indicate the formerly very different arrangement of land and sea there.

What then was the general extent and shape of the ancient landmass which covered the present Mediterranean prior to its disruption and submergence?

During the Pliocene period – and probably in so-called early 'Pleistocene ' times too – continuous land united the present Balkan peninsula to Tunisia via southernmost Italy and Sicily[137]. Sicily itself was joined to Sardinia and Corsica and all three islands formed part of an apparently unbroken land tract stretching westward to embrace all north-west Africa, the Iberian peninsula and, perhaps, southwestern France. The Strait of Gibraltar did not exist at that time. Professor Suess christened all this land the Aegean continent[138], and Forsyth-Major referred to it as Tyrrhenia[139].

Uninterrupted land, dotted over with freshwater lakes, also united Crete and southern and eastern Greece with Asia Minor and all the land as far east, perhaps, as Afghanistan. Forests covered the Anatolian district of Turkey for at least a part of this period[140], and one or more large lakes occupied the Seistan basin of Afghanistan down to about 9,000 years BP[141]. Others also existed then in the northern portion of the Balkan peninsula. Numerous 'Pleistocene' animal remains found throughout this huge region belong to or are closely allied to forms still inhabiting South Africa. This detail implies that a land route occurred then between southwest Asia and South Africa.

The southern limits of Tyrrhenia are more conjectural although an extensive body of water, remembered traditionally as Lake Tritonis, allegedly divided the eastern and northwestern regions of Africa by occupying much of present western and central-southern Sahara; but whether any direct communication existed between it and the shallow sea due east of Tunisia, called the Pelasgian Sea[142], is unclear. Certainly there is every indication that innumerable animal and plant species freely migrated across this ancient landmass for untold ages. Extant biological evidence admits no other sensible explanation.

Like several other prehistorians and naturalists, Suess believed that Tyrrhenia foundered geologically recently – probably during early Holocene (*ie* post-glacial) times – and that ancient people witnessed it[143]. A goodly number of geologists, however, have urged that it must have been an earlier (Pliocene) event largely because many of the associated fossils represent supposedly typical Pliocene organisms. Although plausible, we have also noted that many existing plants and animals are essentially Pliocene survivors and that many 'Pleistocene' forms were too. The actual 'age' of many Tyrrhenian species, however, may be considerably younger than commonly realised. The determination of the Pliocene/Pleistocene boundary in the Mediterranean region (the site of this former vanished continent) is still uncertain and has lately been much discussed[144].

Shifting attention once more to the aforementioned sunken landmasses of Oceania and the southern hemisphere we find that:

> The presence of the wingless fly in both Kerguelen and Heard seems to show that the islands were formerly connected, which is also confirmed by the occurrence of freshwater fishes identical with species occurring in New Zealand, Tasmania and the Falklands and South America.[145]

Clearly insufficient time has elapsed for these creatures to have evolved into separate species since the break-up of the great landmass of which their present habitats were apparently once a part. It will be recalled that Ball made very similar observations about the geographically isolated Alpine flora in the northern hemisphere.

The small land-shell shaped like a pointed round tower, *Clausilia*, apparently first arose in earliest Tertiary times, yet still persists today in Ireland (two species), southern England (four species), Spain (one species), and in south-west Europe (where hundreds of different kinds thrive). Professor Boettger, who spent a lifetime studying this mollusc, recorded some 700 species of the genus and sub-divided it into several sub-genera. Many of these apparently had *no fossil ancestors*. Furthermore, almost 100 species of the subgenus *Phaedusa* still live in India, Sri Lanka (Ceylon), the Malayan peninsula, China and Japan[146]. Today, some occupy China (*Garnieria*), East Africa (*Macroptychia*), Madeira (*Boettgeria*) and South America (*Nenia*), and are spread the length and breadth of Termier's Africo-Brazilian continent, mainland Asia and various offshore islands.

The land-shells of the Pacific islands paint a similar picture. Their close relationships indicate that in comparatively very recent times the islands they now inhabit were united as a large landmass occupying much of central Oceania[147], and which, via the Galapagos Islands, connected with northwestern South America. The earthworms of these two last named regions are identical[148]. Innumerable other analogues abound in Oceania.

Niah cave in Sarawak, Kalimantan (Indonesian Borneo), contains the fossil remains of a large mammalian fauna which for the most part closely resembles that of tropical forest habitats in present-day southeast Asia. The fauna includes the Malay tapir (*Tapir indicus*) which, occurring only as a fossil in Kalimantan, Java and China, still lives in Sumatra, the Malay peninsula and Thailand. Also present is the giant pangolin (*Manis palaeojavanica*), known previously only from the supposed 'middle Pleistocene' deposits on Java, and a species of the 'ancient straight-tusked elephant' *Palaeoloxodon namadicus*, which had earlier been recorded only from similarly dated deposits in eastern Kalimantan[149]. Other fossils represent highland mammals like the lesser gymnure (*Hylomys suillus*) and the ferret-badger (*Helictis orientalis*), now living only at altitudes exceeding 2,000ft (615m).

Here, then, in Niah cave, is a 'late Pleistocene' fauna composed of forms still flourishing in the same general region or in neighbouring countries; or known elsewhere solely from allegedly 'older' deposits; or which in some cases are extinct everywhere. Animals like *Tapirus*, *Helictis* and *Hylomys*, therefore, are essentially relict genera.

The same label attaches to the Tasmanian 'wolf' (*Thylacinus*) and the Tasmanian 'devil' (*Sarcophilus*), two particularly savage marsupial carnivores that still survive on Tasmania but which, as fossils from Australia show, enjoyed a much wider distribution during the Pleistocene. Similarly, the sooty-opossum (*Phalangista*) and the brush-kangaroo (*Halmaturus*) are now found alive only on Tasmania, whereas they were formerly contemporaries of *Thylacinus* and *Sarcophilus* on mainland Australia[150]. Neither the primitive duckbilled platypus (*Ornithorhynchus*) nor the spiny anteater or Echidna (*Tachyglossus*) like salt-water, yet both are presently denizens of Tasmania and Australia[151], and the latter, with the related genus *Zaglossus*, of New Guinea also[152].

That dry land – which would have permitted unhindered colonisation by these animals – united New Guinea and northern Australia in the *very* recent past is now well-established. The evidence for it includes geologically young upraised coral terraces on the

Huon peninsula of New Guinea[153], submerged channels on the bed of the Arafura Sea cut by bygone rivers associated with now-vanished Lake Carpentaria further west on the floor of Torres Strait[154] and various hydrological changes embracing the entire Gulf of Carpentaria[155].

It can be no coincidence that, more or less synchronously with these changes, others, which among other things affected vegetation in upland New Guinea[156] and the Javan and Sumatran highlands[157], occurred across the Moluccan Sea region between Celebes, the Philippines and New Guinea itself. There, approximately 11,000–10,000 years ago, there was a sudden increase in general humidity which, among a variety of botanical changes, promoted an abrupt expansion of hitherto seemingly rare mangrove forests[158]. Such changes cast much light on the still discernible extent of the dislocation suffered then by the once-continuous faunas and floras of formerly larger Indonesian and Australian landmasses.

The experience was apparently that previously noted with regard to the break-up of the inferred dry land inhabited by the surviving molluscs of the modern West Indies.

Numerous large flightless birds in the southern hemisphere are other noteworthy relict forms. The emu (*Dromaeus*) and the cassowary (*Casuarius*) which now live in Australia, New Guinea and various Indonesian islands are unknown as fossils before so-called Pleistocene times[159], as also is the case with the flightless kiwi (*Apteryx*) of New Zealand. Conversely, enormous now extinct populations of moas and other flightless birds, including the dangerous *Harpagornis*, abounded then in New Zealand; while on Madagascar the huge *Aepyornis* or 'Elephant-bird' was similarly common. The celebrated ostrich of Africa not only formerly ranged into Eurasia but was present in Pliocene faunas[160] and, with the flightless birds of the Pacific island of Guam, is one of the few flightless birds now living north of the equator. Interestingly, the flightless rhea of the pampas is also known from South American Pliocene[161] and Pleistocene deposits.

Irrespective of the animal classes to which they belong, all the foregoing organisms represent surviving fragments of immensely more varied faunas which existed until late Pleistocene times. They are the last vestiges of faunas which have been geographically dislocated. The distribution of these creatures is discontinuous in both hemispheres and highly suggestive of the former existence of large continental landmasses across much of what are now the southern Atlantic, Indian and Pacific oceans, and central Oceania. The geologically recent disappearance of these tracts, moreover, is seemingly confirmed by the significant absence of specific differentiation among any of the survivors.

8

A VANISHED PREHISTORIC OCEAN

Northwards of ancient Tyrrhenia and south-east of Fennoscandia, during times which geologists have called Pliocene and Pleistocene, was an immense sea or ocean of great zoogeographical significance. Formed aeons before in Miocene times or earlier, its waters covered areas which today are the Rhone and Rhine valleys, northern

Germany, most of central and Arctic Europe as far as the Urals, and huge tracts of Russia at least as far east as Lake Baikal and as far south as the Black and Caspian seas. This great body of water is known as the Miocene Ocean. The draining of this ocean was a calamitous event which apparently attended extensive land elevations and the demise of the Siberian mammoths and their contemporaries. As long ago as 1866 Raphael Pumpelly discussed this vanished sea and the Russian steppe deposits as follows:

> The sea in which the great steppe deposit was precipitated was studded with islands now represented by the ridges and peaks which rise above the plains. The surface of the plains rises everywhere toward the former islands, partly because the deposit in its formation adapted itself partially to the original surfaces of the valleys it fills, and partly from its thickness being increased by the tributary detritus of the islands...
>
> The age of this extensive deposit is a question of much interest. If it is contemporaneous with the steppes and terraces of the valley system of the Orkhon and Angara, it seems probable that the sea which left this deposit over nearly all of what is now the plateau, was also contemporaneous, within certain limits, with that great body of water which, extending from the polar ocean to the Caspian, occupied all Western Siberia.
>
> The fact... that seals, identical in species, inhabit the fresh waters of the lakes Baikal and Oron... and the Caspian Sea, seems to refer to that period. The Oron lake is a tributary of the Vitim, and through this of the Lena, in which no seals occur. This circumstance points very clearly to a former water communication between these far separated localities, and to the time at which the seals of the Oron became isolated from those of the Baikal and the Caspian falls – perhaps in the same period with the emergence of the great plains of northern and western Siberia, the deposits of which are characterised by abundant remains of the mammoth as well as of *Bos urus* and *Rhinoceros tichorhinus*.
>
> The closing event in the history of the great sea that in comparatively recent times covered so large a part of Asia, extended from the pole to the Caspian and Black Seas, and from the Ural mountains to near the Great Wall of China, was the disappearance of its waters from the long trough that reaches from the shores of the Arctic sea, through the Barabinsky steppe to the Aralo-Caspian depression.
>
> It appears to me that the ancient physical geography of this vast region, and the effects of its elevation, present one of the most interesting and important fields of exploration. Whether we consider the meteorological changes that must have been brought about by the upheaval of so large an area, or the influence of this great water communication and its currents on the *distribution of existing genera*, the geological phenomena that have affected this broad belt of the great continent have, beyond doubt, had an important influence on the *recent* history of our planet.[162] (Our italics).

A similarly recent draining of this great sea has been advocated by, among others, Sjögren[163], while the Arctic affinities of some of the denizens of its remaining portions – for example the Caspian and Aral Seas – also apparently confirm this opinion[164]. The fauna still occupying the Caspian Sea includes crustaceans belonging to an otherwise exclusively marine order, the *Cumacea*. Ten species peculiar to this body of water have been enumerated, and of others that thrive there the minute pelagic copepod *Limnocalanus grimaldi* (which also occurs in the Baltic Sea and Arctic Ocean), and the marine isopod related to the common wood-louse, *Idotea entomon* (which has a similar northern distribution), deserve special mention. Two species of the shrimp-like schizpod crustacean *Mysis* – *M microphthalma* and *M caspia* – which are closely allied to the Arctic species *M oculata*, also inhabit the Caspian[165].

Scharff has noted that several kinds of Caspian fish appear to be descended from typical *marine* forms, and that the presence there of seals of the species *Phoca caspica*: "...indicate that at no very distant date – at any rate since

Pliocene times – a closer connection with the Arctic Ocean existed than at present"[166].

Broadly speaking, therefore, the present Caspian fauna is a relict marine one, very much like those of lakes Onega and Ladoga in European Russia, and like others in Finland and Sweden.

Recent Russian studies have not only confirmed but amplified these details and the climatic conditions under which they developed[167].

That the Caspian Sea once extended to the Aral and Black seas, and that all three are vestiges of that ancient Miocene Ocean which bathed the northern shore of the old Tyrrhenian continent has long been established. Certainly the sediments deposited by this huge body of water are traceable for immense distances. They reach at least as far north as the River Kama in Central Russia, where Karpinski[168] and others have studied them, and they have been explored in the Yenisei valley where they contain sub-fossil *marine* shells[169].

Closely similar shells have been recorded from the same sediments approximately 1,500 miles (1,920km) to the west[170], a matter of considerable palaeogeographic importance, as many earlier authorities favoured a water channel between the Miocene Ocean and the polar sea east of the Urals. These discoveries, however, indicated that, during the period in question, a great bay or gulf existed west of the Urals and penetrated at least as far north as the White Sea. From such details, Dawkins correctly deduced that before 'glacial' times: "...the sea had already rolled through the low country of Russia, from the Caspian to the White Sea and the Baltic, and formed a barrier to western migration to the Arctic mammals of Asia"[171]. Map 2A shows the probable disposition of land and sea in Eurasia at that time.

9

MEDITERRANEAN GRAVEYARDS

Attending as it did the break-up of much of Tyrrhenia and the elevation to their present heights of all the major European and Asiatic ranges, the draining of the old Miocene Ocean was sudden, violent and catastrophic. The displacement of its waters, in fact, constituted a disaster of the first magnitude. In few regions are the effects of this displacement more riveting than at various places around the present Mediterranean basin. Especially remarkable are the caves and fissures.

After exploring the Sicilian cave of Maccagnone, Dr Hugh Falconer reported:

> ...the cavern had been filled right to the roof, the uppermost layer consisting of a concrete of shells, bone-splinters, with burnt clay, flint-chips, bits of charcoal and hyaena coprolites, which was cemented to the roof by stalagmatic infiltration... of contemporaneous origin... A great physical alteration... occurred to the conditions previously existing, emptying out the whole of the loose, incoherent contents, and leaving only... portions agglutinated to the roof. The wreck of these ejecta being visible in the patches of *ceneri impastati*, containing fossil bones, below the mouth of the cavern.[172]

Elsewhere in Sicily, in the hills around Palermo, veritable hecatombs of hippopotamus bones have been found. As much as:

> Twenty tons of these bones were shipped from around the... cave of San Ciro, near

> Palermo, within the first six months of exploiting them, and they were so fresh that they were sent to Marseilles to furnish animal charcoal for use in sugar factories... The bones were those of animals of all ages down to the foetus, nor do they show traces of weathering or exposure.[173]

The freshness of these bones and the presence of very young individuals shows that some sudden and geologically recent cataclysm was responsible for their accumulation. In Prestwich's opinion the causative agent was an immense flood which, at its nadir, submerged the British Isles, the whole of Central Europe and the Mediterranean islands of Corsica, Sardinia, Sicily and Malta. Reconstructing the event, Prestwich wrote:

> The animals in the plains of Palermo naturally retreated, as the waters advanced, deeper into the amphitheatre of hills until they found themselves embayed... the animals must have thronged together in vast multitudes, crushing into more accessible caves and swarming over the ground at their entrance, until overtaken by the waters and destroyed... Rocky debris and large blocks from the sides of the hills were hurled down by the current of water, crushing and smashing the bones.[174]

Prestwich also added that it was: "...impossible to account for the... phenomena ...by any agency of which our time has offered us experience... The agency, whatever it was, must have acted with sufficient violence to smash the bones"[175].

Among the animals found at Maccagnone were hyaena, lion, a large bear and the ancient straight-tusked elephant (*Palaeoloxodon antiquus*). These flourished alongside the aforementioned hippopotami, one of which (*Hippopotamus pentlandi*) was a dwarf form also known from coeval deposits on Malta, Crete, mainland Greece, Cyprus and in the cave of Santa Teresa near Spezzia in northern Italy[176].

Abundant remains of full-sized hippopotami have also been discovered in other Sicilian caves and rock-fissures[177], habitats hippopotami now seldom frequent. Their occurrence in caves and fissures, frequently too small to accommodate even one individual, is mystifying until it is realised that these animals did not live where their bones now repose but were transported *en masse* to these sites from more distant localities.

Also of much interest was the discovery in a cavern at Luparello, near Palermo, of the bones of a dwarf species of *Palaeoloxodon, P mnaidriensis*[178], a form better known from specimens found on Malta[179].

The old torrent bed of Benghisa on Malta abounds in breccia-filled fissures. Excavated last century these produced irrefrangible evidence that the breccias and the innumerable bones they contained had been deposited under exceptionally violent conditions.

> Among the large blocks of fresstone, either impacted or strewn in a heterogeneous manner, were lying seemingly entire skeletons of elephants, some of the skulls and jaws furnishing good evidence of the rough usage they had sustained by being broken and crushed flat by blocks which, with the force of impact, had cracked the others on which they impinged. These conditions were beautifully illustrated in the cases of thigh and pelvis bones, which had been smashed to pieces by blocks falling on them... Entire skeletons of the dormice (of a gigantic extinct genus) were found between blocks as if their bodies had sunk into the hollows as they floated past, whilst fragments of large birds' bones and traces of a huge fresh-water turtle, and several vertebrae and skulls of lizards, as large as a chamaelon, were found in conjunction with... land-shells... the appearance presented by this remarkable collection of organic remains seems... to indicate that water at one time flowed down the gap, and was subject to occasional extraordinary deluges which bore down the large blocks and whatever exuviae came within reach[180].

Dolomieu, an early observer, concluded that a great wave had passed over Malta, overwhelmed its animal denizens and washed off all its superficial soil (which accounted for the island's bare aspect)[181]. Admiral Spratt later reached similar conclusions[182]. Like the Sicilian bones, the tortoise and turtle remains found in these fissures appear to have been conveyed thence from some other unidentified locality by a large body of water which: "...at one time overflowed the greater portion of the eastern half of the island"[183].

Dr Leith Adams concluded that this deluge proceeded from a northern direction[184], that it had cast whole carcasses into the fissure at Mnaidra, and that, due to the exceptional freshness of their bones, many animals had been entombed in the flesh, albeit in dismembered condition[185]. This applied particularly to the remains of pygmy elephants which, as with the Sicilian hippopotami, represented individuals of every age from infant to adult[186]:

> In a little crevice in the eastern wall of the Mnaidra Gap in Malta not three feet either way, among enormous quantities of fossil land-shells, lay the two detached lower jaw bones of possibly the smallest of the two pygmy elephants, and under them portions of the spinal column with *ribs in situ*... The finding of fragments of pubic bones, and of vertebrae in their *natural order of succession*, and in a *linear direction*, shows clearly that there must have been several of the elephants introduced in the flesh.[187] [Our italics].

As previously seen, similar dismemberment characterised many of the coeval faunas now occupying the Alaskan 'muck' beds and we shall encounter them again sporadically over huge areas of Eurasia, North and South America and Australasia. These animals were not dismembered by natural predators, but by something acting just before or during their burial on quite literally a hemispheric scale.

Significantly, pygmy elephants, which appear to have been so prominent in the land fauna of the Tyrrhenian landmass, today only exist in the Congo basin. Similarly, the only living pygmy hippopotamus, *Hippopotamus liberiensis*, is now confined to West Africa.

The aforementioned gigantic dormice of Malta tell a parallel story. Adams observed that:

> ...their wholesale destruction at all ages of their existence, from the new-born to the aged (was clearly synchronous with) the wholesale destruction of the pachyderms... The rationale of finding such vast quantities of dormice and bird's bones, either... in fragmentary states or... entire, along with uninjured bones of elephants, or below or between blocks of stone in the old torrent-bed of Benghisa, together with their presence in almost every similar ossiferous deposit in the islands, seems to me conclusive that they cannot be accepted as representing the usual casuals from natural decay, but when taken in conjunction with what has been previously stated, they afford very strong circumstantial evidence that the extinction of the land fauna of the period was brought about by changes in the physical geography of the area...[188].

Excavations conducted a few years later by A A Caruana in the Maltese fissure of Is-Shantün revealed similar indiscriminate exterminations. Many 'Pleistocene' elephant bones and molars, including one of a pygmy species, were found mixed up with numerous bird bones *and* sharks' teeth. Caruana offered the standard explanation that the shark teeth had been derived from an earlier (Miocene) deposit scoured away by massive water action[189] – marine deposits abounding at some localities with teeth like those from Is-Shantün.

Miocene sharks were the largest which ever lived, and included the monstrous *Carcharodon*, one species of which, possessing distinctive triangular teeth up to 8″ long, may have had a 6–7ft wide jaw gape, and probably attained a length of 80ft[190]. Significantly, several smaller species of *Carcharodon* persisted down to late 'Pleistocene' times, and one, in effect still a 'Miocene' form, continues to do so off the eastern coast of Asia[191]. Very interestingly therefore, *non-fossilised* teeth, 5″ long and larger than in any known living shark, and essentially identical to those of the Miocene species, have been dredged up from the seafloor off Australia. They represent a shark which, according to Dr David Stead, must have been "80–90ft long"[192].

Now, while Caruana's suggested origin of the Is-Shantün shark teeth is conceivably correct, there is – because 'Miocene' sharks have survived down to our era – no longer any valid reason to regard the Is-Shantün cave specimens as necessarily older than the 'Pleistocene' deposits which yielded them – deposits accumulated at a time when, as shown above, species of *Carcharodon* certainly existed. Might it not be, therefore, that the absence of other Miocene fossils at Is-Shantün signifies that these sharks had, as living Miocene 'survivors', been swept out of the concomitantly emptying Miocene Ocean located north of Tyrrhenia and buried alongside contemporary land animals destroyed with them? In that connection it must surely be relevant that remains of great fish lie on and in the permanently-frozen Siberian deposits enclosing the debris of countless 'Pleistocene' land animals, including the aforementioned refrigerated mammoth and rhinoceros carcasses, and that various rock fissures in the Jura mountains and along the north coastline of the *present* Mediterranean are filled with fossils of *Pliocene* and 'Pleistocene' *marine* organisms[193].

Fig 2.2. Carcharodon shark-jaws.
Original in the Amer. Mus. Nat. Hist.

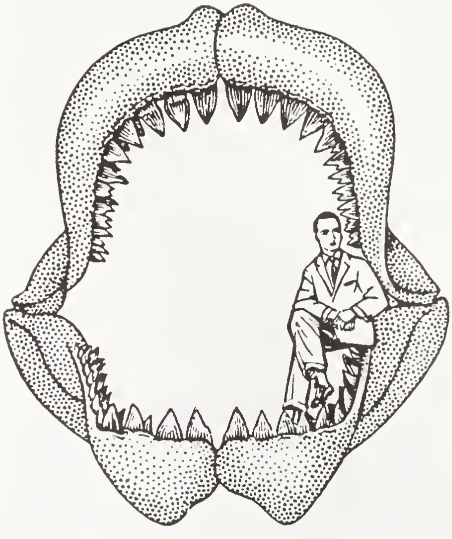

We have already noted that Tyrrhenia, apparently submerged at the end of 'Pleistocene' times – or even in earliest Holocene times[194]: the equivalent of Forrest's "since the Ice Age" dating for the disappearance of ancient Atlantic landmasses – was well populated by a great variety of 'Pleistocene' *and* Pliocene animals. The repeated parallelling of so many disparate details on a near-hemispheric basis within the *same* segment of time is surely not fortuitous.

Fissures in the side of a *barren*, truncated mountain, having a base a mile in circumference, situated near the village of Cérigo, on the Adriatic island of that name, contain a veritable graveyard of bones. Known locally as the 'mountain of bones', this eminence is covered from its base to its summit, both within and without, by the remains of a wide range of 'Pleistocene' animals[195]. Exactly as for the aforementioned Sicilian and Maltese evidence only aqueous action on a gigantic scale can account for such colossal bone accumulations.

Crete is another Mediterranean island in places honeycombed with limestone caves and fissures, yielding the bony remains of a large and interesting 'Pleistocene' fauna. This included rodents and pygmy elephants, from a cave near Cape Maleka, bones, horns, and teeth of antelopes and deer from a cavern on the promontory of Kutni[196], numerous rodent bones from a cave at Sphinari, and fragments of pygmy hippopotami in a hillside cave near Melato. Remains of similar animals, together with those of ruminants and a species of elephant occurred in another in the Bay of Kharoumis[197]. Widespread water action has been advocated for the extinction and burial of all these animals[198].

A very similar story unfolds in the western Mediterranean. Late 'Pleistocene' bone-breccia in caves and fissures on Corsica, Sardinia and the Balearic islands contain the fossil remains of a wide variety of animals that, in many instances, are actually typical late Tertiary (Miocene and Pliocene) forms. Indeed, when these fossils were first studied it was supposed that the breccias were likewise of Tertiary date[199], but subsequent studies of some of the rodents and molluscs disclosed their undoubted 'Pleistocene' age[200]. Once again, therefore, we find – on these islands – an ancient (Tertiary) fauna persisting down to the close of 'Pleistocene' times.

The event which submerged Tyrrhenia and choked caves and fissures on the aforenamed Mediterranean islands with animal remains also visited North Africa and the Iberian peninsula, similarly overwhelming the contemporary ('Pleistocene') fauna and flora there. Thus, remains of *Palaeoloxodon* have been found in Algeria[201], and at Tangier[202], and those of the enormous 'southern mammoth' (*Archidiskodon meridionalis*) at Mansoura[203]. Bones and teeth of hippopotami have been unearthed near Constantine and elsewhere in Algeria[204], others of the woolly rhinoceros (*Coelodonta tichorhinus*) at Chetma near Biskra[205], and those of its constant companion the hairy mammoth (*Mammuthus primigenius*) near Oran[206]. Among other Algerian fossil proboscidean remains, are some apparently of the living African elephant, *Loxodonta africanus*[207], an unexpected occurrence also parallelled in South African 'Pleistocene' deposits[208].

This Algerian 'Pleistocene' fauna also included various gazelles[209], several cervids like those known from the Corsican fissures[210], a series of bovids – including *Bos* (*Bubalus*) *antiquus* from Djelfa and Sétif[211] – and a number of horses[212]. Of the latter, one, although occurring in 'Pleistocene' deposits, strongly resembles the defunct Pliocene horse *Equus stenonis*[213], and another possesses teeth reminiscent of those of the earlier Miocene horse *Hipparion*[214]. Interestingly, *Hipparion* has been found elsewhere in undoubted late 'Pleistocene' deposits[215]. Once again, therefore, the evidence suggests the survival in north-west Africa during late 'Pleistocene' times of very ancient animal forms which had died out elsewhere, but which were there living alongside a rich variety of animals of more modern character.

North of Morocco, the 1,370ft (422m) Rock of Gibraltar is extensively fissured and displays old beach lines now some 600ft (185m) above present sea level. As Prestwich once observed, the Rock was:

> ...in Quaternary times, an island not more than 800ft, or less, high, which rose by successive stages to its present height. It is more than probable, however, that at some time before it settled at that level, the whole of the area was upheaved to such an extent that a land passage was formed to the African coast.[216]

Bones or portions thereof fill these fissures and represent:

> ...panther, lynx, caffir-cat, hyaena, wolf, bear, rhinoceros, horse, wild boar, red deer, fallow deer, ibex, ox, hare, rabbit... The bones are most likely broken into thousands of fragments – none are worn or rolled, nor any of them gnawed, though many carnivores then lived on the rock... A great and common danger, such as a great flood, alone could have driven together the animals of the plains and of the crags and caves.[217]

Captain Frederick Brome, one of the principal collector of these remains (which also included many species of birds) reached similar conclusions:

> The scattered, broken state of everything found, together with the fact that the objects were almost invariably discovered near and under the sides of the cavern and passages, appears to me to indicate that these appearances would only have been caused by some convulsion accompanied by flood[218].

Nor were the bones rolled or water-worn, and very few showed signs of having been gnawed. They looked, in fact, singularly fresh despite their splintered condition with-

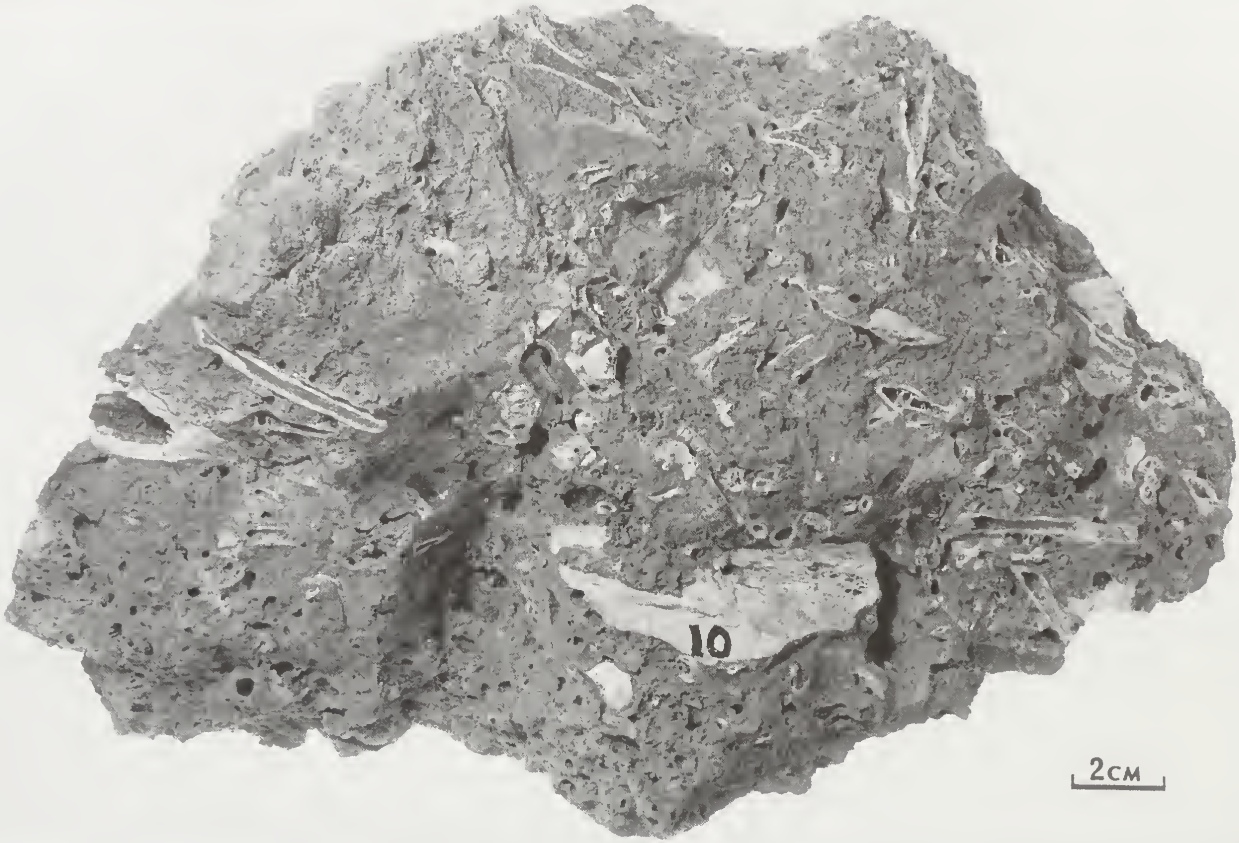

Fig 2.3. A rare photograph of bone breccia from Genista Cave, Gibraltar. Scattered fragments of bone can easily be seen embedded in the reddish-grey breccia. Although numerous descriptions have been published of various 'Pleistocene' animals from bone-breccias in-filling caves and rock-fissures, exceedingly few illustrations of the actual breccias have ever appeared. *Courtesy of Salisbury and South Wiltshire Museum.*

in the breccia[219]. Significantly, land and *marine* shells occurred at all depths down to 290ft (89m) below the surface in one of the fissures (Genista no:1), which also yielded pieces of *coral*[220]. Tons of bones were retrieved from these fissures, but were afterwards largely dispersed and lost to science[221].

Although a few of the originally excavated pieces of bone breccia from Gibraltar have survived, a handful of examples may yet be examined in the Natural History Museum in London and the geological collections at Salisbury, England, and confirm the reported freshness of the remains embedded in them. Later excavations of other Gibraltar caves by, amongst others, D A E Garrod, A Craven Greenwood, R Wilson and J Waechter testify to the consistently unrolled and fresh appearance of the bones from all the caves explored, and the general accuracy of the above-cited observations of Prof Prestwich and Captain Brome – that is, diluvial not glacial action produced these accumulations.

10

SUBTERRRANEAN CHARNELHOUSES

Approximately 11,500 years ago the shattered remains of countless 'Pleistocene' (Ice Age) animals (*sensu lato*) and plants were deposited both north and south of the equator, in limestone caves and rock-fissures like those just reviewed. Usually featuring several chambers, these caves, via narrow fissure-like tortuous passages, often penetrate solid rock for horizontal and vertical distances sometimes exceeding several hundred feet, are intersected by separate fissure systems (fig 2.4), and are globally very numerous.

Most of the remains retrieved from these apertures have been deposited in great confusion, with normally incompatible kinds of animals lying in unnaturally close juxtaposition. Often accompanying these organic masses are both rounded and angular stones of dissimilar composition and, less frequently, sizable boulders. All these objects are usually enveloped and united by consolidated muds, earths or hard breccias, although at Mont de la Molière near Estavayer in Switzerland, at Kropp in Carniola and elsewhere, they are directly associated with iron-ore deposits[222]. In another case a nearly-complete rhinoceros skeleton has been found lying *in a vein of lead* at Dreamy Hole, Derbyshire, England[223].

In effect, these sites amount to underground charnelhouses, and, as previously noted around the Mediterranean basin, their testimony is important.

As present space limitations prevent reference to more than a tiny fraction of the total number of known sites, a small selection of typical Old and New World examples must accordingly suffice.

Bone-caves have been explored for well over 200 years, among the earliest British examples being a series of three at Oreston near Plymouth. The first of these, opened in 1812, contained numerous much broken but unabraded rhinoceros bones. The second, a smaller affair discovered in 1820, yielded mixed rhinoceros, bear and deer bones, while the third, excavated in 1822, was considerably larger and contained, in addition to still more rhinoceros remains, huge numbers of bones representing a wide range of other coeval mammals[224].

Table 2B compares the Oreston animals with those found a few years later in similar deposits in Ash Hole cave at Berry Head, in Brixham Cave and in Kent's Cavern, Torquay,

Table 2B

Animals found in cave-deposits, Devon, England

Scientific name	Common name	Oreston	Ash Hole Berry Head	Brixham Cave	Kent's Cave Torquay
Mammuthus primigenius	Hairy mammoth	X		X	X
Coelodonta tichorhinus	Wooly rhinoceros	X			X
'Rhinoceros' sp.				X	
Machairodus latidens	Saber-toothed tiger				X
Panthera spelaea	Cave lion	X		X	X
Ursus priscus	Brown bear	X	X		
Ursus cultridens	Bear				X
Ursus spelaeus	Cave bear	X		X	X
Hyaena spelaea	Cave hyaena	X		X	X
Canis lupus	Wolf	X			X
Vulpes vulpes	Fox	X			X
Felis catus	Wild cat				X
Putorius vulgaris	Polecat		X		
Putorius ermineus	Stoat	?X	X		X
Lagomys spelaea	Cave pika				X
Sorex vulgaris	Shrew				X
Meles taxus	Badger		X		X
Arvicola amphibia	Water vole	?X	X	X	X
Arvicola agrestris	Field vole				X
Arvicola pratensis	Bank vole				X
Mus musculus	Mouse	?X		X	
Rhinolophus ferrum-equinum	Great horseshoe bat				X
Sus scrofa	Hog	X			
Capra sp. or Ovis sp.	Goat or sheep	X			
Rangifer tarandus	Reindeer	?X	X	X	X
Cervus elaphus	Red deer				X
Megaceros hibernicus	Giant Irish deer	X			X
Strongyloceros spelaeus	Round-antlered cave deer				X
Cervids (various indeterminate species)	Deer (various forms)	X		X	X
Lepus variabilis	Norway Hare				X
Lepus cuniculus	Rabbit		X		X
Hippopotamus major	African hippopotamus				X
Bos primigenius	Auroch	X		X	
Bison minor	Small bison	X			
Equus fossilis	} Horses	X		X	X
Equus plicidens		X			
Asinus fossilis	Large ass or Zebra	X			

(after Buckland, Busk, Pengelly, Hodge, Boyd-Dawkins, and others)

England. The lists provide a good basis for comparison with analogous cave discoveries elsewhere.

Like those from the aforementioned Sicilian and Maltese sites, these South Devon remains, and especially those from Kent's Cavern, had:

> ...suffered considerably from pressure, after having first undergone violence from the force which impelled and congregated them in this narrow creek. They were found driven into the interstices of the opposite wall, or piled in the greatest confusion against its side[225].

As in the Mediterranean region, these British sites revealed young and old animals of many normally incompatible species entombed together, no single individual being preserved entire and the majority in an exceedingly fragmented condition. Many bones have also been found jammed into the *furthest* recesses of these caves, which sometimes occur several hundred feet from the cave's entrance.

Other British bone-caves and fissures of note occur on the Isle of Portland in Dorset[226]; Durdham Down near Bristol; in the Mendip Hills, Somerset[227]; at Cresswell Crags[228] and Windy Knoll[229], both in Derbyshire; at the south end of Kirkdale, Yorkshire[230]; on the Gower peninsula[231], Caldy Island and around Tenby in south Wales[232]; and the Vale of Clwyd, north Wales, where great accumulations of red clay invaded the cave at Cefn so forcefully that it ploughed up its original floor[233]. The bones in this cave belonged to mixed 'northern' and 'southern' animals – the 'northern' forms being represented by the bison, reindeer, and woolly rhinoceros and the 'southern' species by the ancient straight-tusked elephant (*Palaeoloxodon antiquus*), the round-nosed rhinoceros (*Dicerorhinus hemitoechus*), and *Hippopotamus major*[234].

It is unquestionably significant that one of the foremost investigators of the Cefn caves concluded that, during the 'drift' epoch, they had been *submerged*[235]. A *marine* invasion has been postulated to explain a similarly disturbed cave floor at Cae Gwyn near Denbigh[236]. Even in Eire analogous discoveries have occurred, the relevant phenomena again being attributed to water action[237].

Virtually indistinguishable from their British counterparts, numerous bone-caves, fissures and ossiferous breccias occur in continental Europe, being especially well developed in the limestone districts of France and Germany. Some, like the cave at Gailenreuth near Bayreuth (fig 2.4), have become internationally famous. Indeed, first explored in the late eighteenth century, Gailenreuth cavern was the earliest to be studied scientifically[238] and it became the standard by which all later similar cave discoveries were compared. Buckland's splendidly graphic description of this cave and its contents[239] clearly indicates that water, operating violently and tempestuously, had carried all the remains into the cavern and deposited them irregularly. Buckland's reference to the congeries of 'agglutinated' bones is especially noteworthy, as duplicated effects have sometimes been encountered in bone-caves elsewhere.

Other important German bone-caves occur at Köstritz[240], Kühloch[241], and in the Hartz Mountains (Biels' Höhle and Bauman's Höhle)[242], where the results of former powerful water action are again evident.

Of the many known French bone-caves and fissures, the 1430 foot (440m) high 'Montagne de Genay', located north-west of Semur in Burgundy, is a particularly striking example, the deposition of its bone-breccia capping being, in Prestwich's opinion, "an act of short duration"[243]. Other noteworthy French bone-fissures occur at Pédémar and Santenay. From the latter, various remains of lion, bear, wolf, fox, giant ox or bison, horse, lynx, *Rhinoceros merckii* and *'Cervus' elaphus var canadensis* have been recorded lying in the wildest disorder[244]. In this assemblage of mixed 'northern' and 'southern' animals, the horses were exceptionally large and the wolves unusually abundant[245]. The presence of the Canadian species of deer, known too from several other west European sites, is also interesting.

Bone-caves and fissures in the French maritime departments of Aude and Gard[246] have yielded analogous evidence, as have those located in the escarpments bordering the Rhone valley from Doubs in the north[247] to Montpellier in the south[248]. The animals found at these sites include species present in the cave-breccias of Gibraltar and the railway cuttings at Mentone, Baoussé-Roussé, and near Antibes, dug in 1870[249].

At Nice, fissure deposits contained remains of yet extant land-shell, lizard, snake and tortoise species, and the bones of hairy mammoths, woolly rhinoceroses and extinct bears[250]. Other caves and fissures on the famed Côte d'Azur have yielded mixed terrestrial and marine organic debris. One such was Vallonet cave at Roquebrune-Cap-Martin, between Monaco and the Italian border, where bones of lions, rhinoceroses, hyaenas, macaco monkeys, elephants and, most significantly, whales came to light[251]. Whales and remains of marine creatures do not get into caves and fissures unless washed into them by masses of water.

Italy continues the story, for bone-fissures and caverns in the hills of Piedmont, Liguria[252] and Tuscany, have disgorged a fauna: "...not distinguishable from that of Gibraltar"[253], while generally similar occurrences of land-shells and animal bones abound in breccias at Verona, Vicenza, and other places in the southern foothills of the Italian dolomites[254].

In neighbouring Croatia, bone-caves in the Julian Alps[255], around Trieste[256], in the Pivka basin (Slovenia)[257], and along the Dalmatian coast[258], have yielded a variety of 'late Pleistocene' mammals of considerable interest. Thus, in a cave near Crni Kal, remains of the comparatively rare *Dicerorhinus kirchergensis* have been found[259], while Vjetrenica cave has produced bones of the leopard[260]. Eastwards in Croatia, the mountain of Ischuber features a breccia containing numerous bones of bears[261], contemporaries of other 'Pleistocene' cave-bears and lions found in the cave earths of inland Bosnia and Herzegovina[262].

Cave-bear remains also abound in several ossiferous caverns at Peggau, near Graz, in Austrian Styria[263]. The faunas from these and other Austrian bone-breccias[264] compare well with those from fissures penetrating limestone strata to depths of 720ft (221.5m) or more *below* ground level in Carniola, where bones of cave-bears and other mammalian carnivores were found to predominate[265].

The celebrated Dragon's Caves near Mixnitz, Austria[266], various Bohemian (Czech) bone-caves[267], and others in the Tatra Mountains near the Polish border[268], have yielded many coeval animal bones, while in Poland itself, a notable assemblage of 'late Pleistocene' rodents has been found in a cave at Nietoperzowa[269].

Completing our brief survey of this remarkably abundant European evidence, we should mention that in the Zakarpat district of Belarus, close to the Slovakian border, remains of a hairy mammoth, cave-bear, hyaena and other 'late Pleistocene' animals have been discovered in the bone-caves of Charitch, and that the cave-breccias in the Zhiguli Mountains near Kybyshev contain a profusion of comparably-aged bird and mammal bones[270]. Yet other breccia- and bone-filled caverns occur in the western foothills of the Ural Mountains resemble the examples just mentioned.

In continental Asia, shells and bones of elk, bison, and other 'northern' animals occur profusely in breccias occupying caves and fissures near Beirut, Lebanon[271], while remains of late 'Pleistocene' elephants, the woolly rhinoceros and *Bubalus* (the Indian water-buffalo), mixed with those of 'southern' animals, have been found in the cave of Ksar'Akil, Syria[272]. What these supposed 'northern' species were doing so far south has never been properly explained. The fact that allegedly 'northern' forms – bison, bear and a very large feline – have been found even further south in Israel[273], merely emphasises the error of the usual interpretation that these mammals were Arctic animals.

Immense quantities of 'Pleistocene' animal bones closely resembling those from aforementioned European caverns and fissures have been excavated from numerous bone-caves in the Altai mountains of central Asia. They include such interesting forms as mastodon, giant camel, gazelle, saiga antelope, giant beaver and ostrich[274], and are reminiscent of others from parts of inland China and Korea, which are riddled with fissures and caverns closely packed with shell and animal remains analogous to those we have just discussed.

Close to the village of Choukoutien, near Peking, a series of interrelated bone-caves and fissures discovered earlier this century has yielded information of great scientific importance. They contained some surprising anomalies, whereby typically 'late Pleistocene' animals occurred in the *lower* beds alongside representatives of 'old' faunas, while the reverse situation was sometimes met with in the upper beds. Moreover, in almost all instances and irrespective of whether they belong to 'old' or 'newer' types of animals, the bones were unabraded and looked amazingly fresh.

Among the animals found were a great variety of rodents, a porcupine, at least two species of hyaena, the wolf, fox and *Cyon*, a very large sabre-toothed cat, tiger, leopard, and other felines, brown bear, cave-bear, two-horned rhinoceros, woolly rhinoceros, big-horned sheep, an animal allied to the musk-ox (*Boopsis sinensis*), the pig, hare, deer, a horse, a camel, several kinds of bovids (including *Bubalus*), *Cynailurus*, a large elephant like *Palaeoloxodon antiquus*, the baboon, the ostrich, and a species of tortoise[275].

Viewed collectively, these animals reflect an extraordinary range of habitats and climatic conditions, and resemble the mixed faunal assemblages noted all over Europe. Thus, there were animals typical of jungles or warm-moist climates, of tundras or cold-wet climates, of prairies and steppes or dry-temperate climates, and of semi-desert or hot-dry climates.

At least one cave at Choukoutien contained a puzzlingly high number of *complete* skeletons of normally incompatible animals – hyaena, horse, tiger, *Cynailurus*, red deer, *Viverra*, and so on[276]. These suggested that, like some of their European contemporaries, these particular individuals were interred in the flesh.

One of the most unexpected discoveries at Choukoutien concerned the fractured remains of seven human beings squeezed into a fissure or narrow cave. Representing European, Melanesian and Eskimo racial types these aroused immediate interest[277]. Initially, it was assumed that these individuals had been murdered aeons before, as their skulls were badly smashed. This, however, begged the question of how or why such diverse racial types congregated simultaneously (demonstrated by the close juxtaposition of their skeletons) at a locality now far removed from their respective habitats, or came to lie in deposits enveloping similarly diverse animals.

If, however, tumultuous water-action was the entombing agent, then these faunally and climatically incompatible animals and humans, and the suspected complete carcasses, amount to oriental analogues of those ascribed to an identical cause in Europe and the Mediterranean basin.

Finds in a limestone cave near Reijo, Korea have included late 'Pleistocene' rhinoceros and horse remains of exceptional size[278], like those previously noted in the Santenay cave breccia. Interestingly, similar *very* large horse bones have been discovered in North American 'drift' deposits too.

> Evidence clearly echoing all this has come to light in various Australian caves. Ice-sheets like those advocated by orthodox glaciologists were, of course, conspicuously absent from Australia, so this evidence is especially significant. It occurs, for example: ...in caverns... at Wellington; at Boree; near the head of the Colo river; at Yesseba, on the Macleay river; at the head of the Coodradigbee; not far from the head of the Bogan, and in other places.[279]

Commenting on the Wellington valley bones, Lang observed:

> Frequently these occur so fixed between large rocks that it is quite impossible to get them out; and indeed, in general, none can be got in an entire state from the matrix, being in their embedded state full of fractures; ...the bones were in... abundance, and generally upright... the animals that owned these bones could not have died a natural death, for most of them have evidently been subjected to great violence, and exhibit fractures in every direction.[280]

A contemporary authority stressed the singular mode of burial of these remains thus:

> They are not found in any regular position, such as would be imagined had their owners lived and died where their remains now lie. Heads, jaw-bones, teeth, ribs, and femurs are all jumbled and concreted together without reference to parts. The quantity of small animals it must have taken to form a deep deposit of their bones, perhaps two feet deep, ten wide, and of indeterminate length, must have been something prodigious, for they are compressed into the smallest possible space and must have decomposed from exposure... No entire skeleton has been discovered, and very rarely were any two bones of the same animal found together. On the other hand... from the nearly natural position of the smaller bones in the foot of a *Dasyurus*, it can scarcely be doubted that this part of the skeleton was embedded in the cement when the ligaments still bound the bones together. The united radius and ulna of a kangaroo are additional evidence of the same kind; and yet, if the bones had been so separated and dispersed and broken into minute fragments, as they now appear in this breccia, while they were still bound together by ligaments, it is *difficult to imagine how that could take place under any natural process with which we are acquainted...* the best specimens of single bones have been found wedged between huge rocks, where the breccia is found like mortar between them, in situations eight or ten fathoms underground.[281] [Our italics].

Here, then, in these Australian caves we find precisely the same scenario as exists in the Eurasian equivalents – namely, that countless assorted animals (including some apparently dismembered while still in the flesh) were entombed chaotically and violently and crowded unnaturally into small rock cavities and crevices; the principal difference being that the Australian animals are not envisaged as 'northern' or Arctic species, whereas their European counterparts commonly are, and their burial attributed to ice-action.

Also noteworthy are the great depths at which some Australian finds have occurred. These rival many recorded from Europe. Thus, in bone-caves at Coodradigbee, emu remains were discovered over 200ft (61.5m) below ground level[282]. In Australia the burial of remains at such depths is surely consistent only with tumultuous water-action on a huge scale. The 'agglutinated' condition of numerous bones in rock-crevices and bone-caves around Chudleigh, Tasmania[283], suggests a similar causal agent, as in fact do the enormous accumulations of extraordinarily fresh-looking moa remains in various New Zealand caves, at several of which (*eg* Earnsclough, Otago and Manuhirikia), moreover, specimens have been found with sinews, muscles and dried flesh still attached[284].

Essentially identical evidence has been reported from South America. Numerous limestone caverns scattered across the Brazilian states of Sao Paulo, Minas Geraes, Goyaz and Bahia have yielded rich harvests of organic remains comparable to those mentioned on preceding pages. Of these, the extensive series of caves and deep fissures between the Rio das Velhas and the Rio Paraopeba in Minas Geraes state have yielded evidence of much importance. Staggering quantities of bones filled these apertures, but usually in such broken condition and so promiscuously that complete skeletons were extreme rarities. Near Caxoeira do Campo, for instance, is a cave some 120ft (36.9m) long, 6–9ft (1.8–2.7m) wide and 30–40ft (9–12m) high. From this the excavator Lund procured half a cubic foot of red earth packed with minute bones. Of all the half under-jaws detectable in it, 400 belonged to small opossums and the remainder to no less than 2,000 different kinds of mice, bats, porcupines and small birds. It should be stressed that Lund counted *only* under-jaws; numberless other small bones in the sample remained uncounted. Elsewhere, Lund excavated the whole of the clay floor of a 24ft (7.3m) long cavern at the Fazenda do Escravimia. The clay filled 6,552 firkins[285]. Lund again counted all the half under-jaws in a measured sample of this clay and, on the assumption that similar jaws were spread fairly uniformly throughout the remainder of it, concluded that the remains of *not less* than 6,881,500 individuals of opossums, mice, cavias and porcupines lay entombed within it. Even if this calculated total was exaggerated by as much as six times reality, a prodigious total of approximately 1,000,000 still results! In *addition to these* were immense numbers of uncounted bones of small birds, lizards, frogs and other diminutive creatures.

Among the more interesting larger animals found by Lund were the *Megatherium*, *Mylodon*, *Toxodon*, *Macrauchenia*, the giant armadillo *Hopolophorus*, an enormous rodent related to the modern *Capybara*, the extinct jaguar *Smilodon neogaeus*, *Chlamydotherium*, the defunct monkey *Protopithecus*, a mastodon and the flightless emu and rhea. It should be noted that mastodon remains seldom occur in caverns, being more usually discovered in fissures or natural hollows or pits underlying superficial deposits.

Several caves explored by Lund around the margin of Lagoa do Sumidouro, near Santa Lucia, contained human bones mingled with those of the extinct cave jaguar, a huge *Capybara*, and others belonging to horses and llamas[286]. One cave was especially noteworthy for yielding the bones of over fifty human beings of both sexes and every age from infant to decrepit old man. Their skeletons lay buried in hard clay and were discovered mixed together in such confusion – not only with each other but with *Megatherium* bones and those of other late 'Pleistocene' animals – as to preclude the idea that they had been buried by human agency. All the remains, both animal and human, possessed the same chemical composition, thereby indicating the contemporaneity of all the individuals represented[287]. Interestingly, the skulls of these ancient humans were *dolichocephalic* (or long-headed), a character which, according to Prof Scott-Elliott[288] and many other anthropologists, was distinctive of the 'old' European Neanderthal race, formerly thought to have been ancestral to modern humans (*Homo Sapiens*) and to have become extinct about 25,000 years ago.

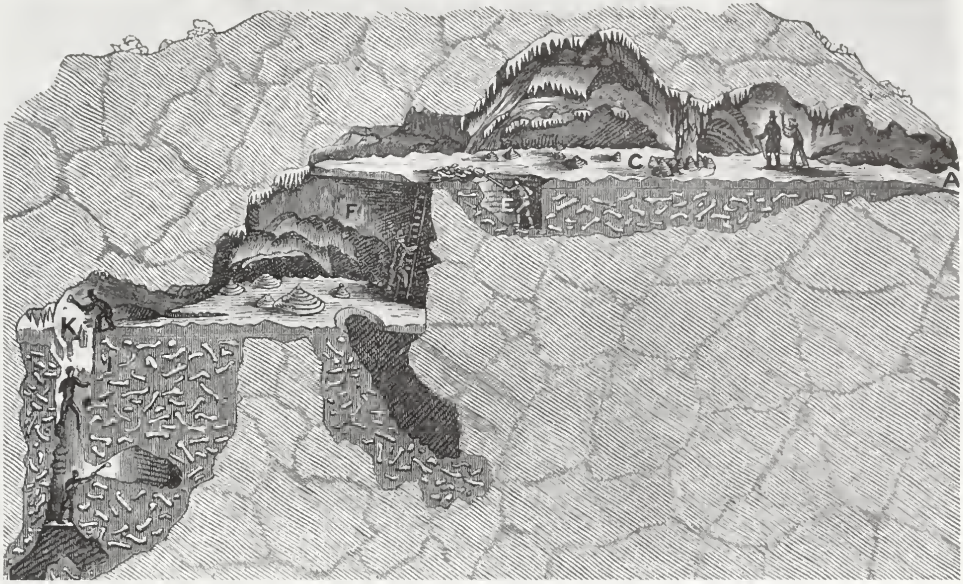

Fig 2.4. Vertical section of the cave at Gailenreuth, near Bayreuth, Franconia.

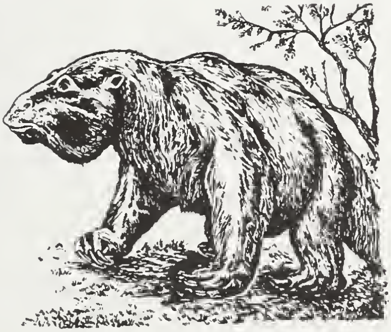

Left: Fig 2.5a. Megatherium. The largest of the ground-sloths, about 20ft (6m) long. Common in both North and South America. A smaller North American contemporary was the Mylodon.

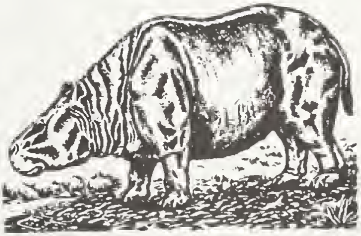

Above: Fig 2.5b. Toxodon, a regular companion of Megatherium in South America, stood over 4ft (1.3m) high at the shoulders.

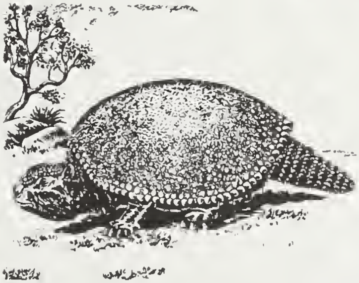

Left: Fig 2.5c. Glyptodon. A giant armadillo, some 9ft (2.7m) long. Known from both North and South America.

Fig 2.5abc. Some prominent 'late Pleistocene' animals of North America. *Illustrations from "The Fossil Book" by Carroll Lane Fenton and Mildred Adams Fenton, reprinted by permission of Doubleday & Co, Inc.*

Both these premises have proved to be fallacious. The lineage of Neanderthal Man is now known to have differed from that of *Homo Sapiens* – not being ancestral to modern humans[289], and that this race is now known to have survived in at least the Levant until Middle Palaeolithic times, or approximately 10,000 year ago[290]. The Neanderthals lived in organised communities, which would account for so many differently-aged individuals in the Lagoa Santa cave remains, although they also are suspected of being cannibalistic[291]

Although comparatively rare, human remains have also been found in certain North American caves. Conkling or Bishop's Cap Cave in the Organ Mountains, New Mexico, for instance, contained scattered human bones chaotically deposited with those of a ground-sloth (*Nothrotherium*), a coyote, a very large wolf (*Aenocyon*), numerous rodents, a horse, bison, an antelope, a camel (*Tanupolama*) and other 'Pleistocene' animals[292]. Several of these animals have turned up again in various other caves in the United States. In Gypsum Cave, near Las Vegas, Nevada, for example, unusually well-preserved fresh-looking remains of *Nothrotherium*, the camel, horse, and the mountain-sheep, have been discovered[293], while bone-breccias at Bootlegger Sink, Pennsylvania, have yielded a rich harvest of late 'Pleistocene' animals in every way analogous to those from equivalent European breccias[294].

But by far the most intriguing North American cave evidence was that found in a closed cave near Cumberland, Maryland. Among the animals discovered were the tapir, crocodile, wolverine, lemming, mink, porcupine, hare, red-squirrel, long-tailed shrew, badger, elk, coyote and a puma-like feline. Though mostly broken or fractured, all the remains were notably fresh-looking[295]. Dr J W Gidley and Dr C L Gazin, who conducted the first scientific investigation of these remains, observed:

> Many of the species are comparable to forms now living in the vicinity of the cave; but others are distinctly northern or Boreal in their affinities, and some are related to species peculiar to the southern, or Lower Austral, region.[296]

Initially these faunal differences were interpreted as meaning that the northern animals were deposited during a cool glacial episode and the southern forms during a warmer interglacial episode. This explanation subsequently crumbled, however, when continuing researches showed all the animals to have been coeval.

Indeed, it was reluctantly admitted that: "This strange assemblage of fossil remains occurs hopelessly intermingled...[297].

Confronted by all the foregoing evidence, its internal consistency and global distribution, it is difficult to withhold agreement from the following remarks by a former president of the Edinburgh Geological Society, which, though applied at the time to European bone-caves, relate equally to the equivalent sites on other continents:

> ...It is certain that these caves and fissures, so packed with carcasses, are now almost universally dissociated and broken off from the old lines of drainage in which they discharged the function of river channels... the old surfaces of country in which they occupied this position have been *totally destroyed*; and this destruction can only have been due to great fractures and great bendings of the underlying rocks... in *very recent* times *great* changes in the moulding of the earth's surface over a great part of Europe occurred with sufficient rapidity to cause a great destruction of animal life...[298]. [Our italics].

11

ILLUSORY FAUNAS

Before leaving the remarkable evidence of the bone-caves, some further aspects of the extraordinary story they tell require highlighting.

The tremendous, if disorderly, concentrations in certain caves and fissures of the bones of just one animal type, or very few types, is replicated on nearly all continents. Such distribution indicates that the cause of this phenomenon cannot, as is often postulated, have resulted, however indirectly, from even the most widespread ice action that it is possible to image – action which, as we have seen, in any case almost certainly never occurred.

During the formative decades of geological science, when certain caves confronted pioneer investigators with an unnatural abundance of remains of particular animal types, special names reflecting their speleological occurrence were invented to distinguish them. Among these were *Ursus spelaeus* (cave bear), *Hyaena* (*Crocuta*) *spelaea* (cave hyaena) and *Panthera* (*Leo/Felis*) *spelaea* (cave lion). Although the actual remains showed no special adaptation to regular cave-dwelling habits, it was *assumed* that the animals concerned had been cave-dwellers because they were found where they were.

Significantly, most of the animals awarded 'speleological' names were carnivores apparently related to living species which do sometimes favour caves as dens or lairs. It was not long before scholars were postulating certain caves as former bear or hyaena dens.

The first such explanation appears to have been proposed as early as 1795 by Rosenmüller[299] regarding the preponderance of bear remains met with in certain German caves[300], but did not achieve general popularity until 1821 when Buckland championed it to account for the unusually large number of hyaena bones found at Kirkdale Cave in Yorkshire[301], and others wrote about such lairs in verse[302]. Buckland's theory was also especially notable for involving climatic changes – for were not hyaenas, which no longer inhabit Britain, tropical animals? For a while, Buckland's notion of a 'hyaena den' became 'front page news'[303].

Quick to appreciate that point – duplicated by much other botanical and faunal evidence from temperate, even Arctic, latitudes across vast tracts of the northern hemisphere – Buckland's contemporaries, as well as many later writers[304], concluded that much warmer conditions than now had formerly prevailed at Kirkdale when hyaenas had frequented it and other now cool-temperate localities yielding such remains. Indeed, Buckland himself remarked that the presence of tropical hyaenas at Kirkdale indicated "...a probable change of climate in the northern hemisphere"[305].

It is hardly necessary to remind ourselves that all these conclusions and speculations appeared a full seven years before the publication of Lyell's 'uniformitarian' principles, and almost seventeen years before the announcement of Agassiz's glacial (ice age) hypothesis – both of which we discussed in Part One.

But the early palaeontologists operated a kind of 'double standard', for, where abundant herbivore remains predominated in cave breccias, as for example at Maccacogne in Sicily or Lagoa Santa in Brazil, they coined no 'speleological' names for them because their living, or nearest living, counterparts were natural denizens of grassland, woodland or aquatic environments, and a cave-dwelling existence could not be envisaged for such animals in any numbers, particularly as their skeletal remains showed absolutely no adaptations to the regular habitation of caves.

When, also, it is remembered that the bones of innumerable carnivores and herbivores identical to those entombed in the cave and fissure deposits have been found in coeval ('Pleistocene') gravels, sands and other strata elsewhere, often scores, even hundreds of miles distant from caves, it is apparent that they enjoyed a non-cave-dwelling existence. In this context, 'speleological' species names are incongruous. Nor is it convincing that the prodigious numbers of herbivore remains encountered in some caves can all have been the remnants of individuals dragged inside them by cave-dwelling bears, hyaenas, wolves or lions – even if extended over a period of many years. The curiously complete skeletons at Choukoutien, the sheer size of mastodon, mammoth and rhinoceros skeletons found in other caves, and the extraordinary number of hippopotamus individuals in the Sicilian caves around Palermo, are all details militating against interpretations requiring the herbivores to have been the remains of carcasses dragged into caves by carnivores.

The latter's failure to even commence dismembering some of the still-complete herbivore cadavers, supposedly dragged with immense effort inside the caves from without, or cornered and killed within it, is also inconsistent behaviour among carnivores *habitually* occupying caves, since they could hardly have failed to dispose of the carcasses over the immediately ensuing period.

The fact that certain caves contain virtually uncountable numbers of bones or, equally abnormally, are choked with the remains of a single animal type, deserves some explanation as to precisely what set of circumstances could have produced such effects.

If steadily worsening conditions preceding the outbreak of whatever slaughtered these animals signalled impending great danger even to the animals themselves, their actions will almost certainly have conformed to the behaviour patterns peculiar to different animal groups. Herbivores will have reacted with typical mass herd reactions; carnivores, canines excepted, as individuals or as limited family groups; and canines, especially wolves and other wild dogs, probably as packs. All creatures, irrespective of the categories to which they naturally belonged, would have instinctively sought shelter, and in many cases caves clearly offered ideal sanctuaries.

Unless the herbivores were large or very numerous, the carnivores would inevitably oust herbivores from caves to usurp their refugia. Herbivores seeking sanctuary would naturally avoid caves already occupied by carnivores and seek alternative shelter. It is not difficult therefore to appreciate how some caves came to be occupied solely by either carnivores or herbivores, and sometimes by just one species of animal.

But examples have been cited where both carnivores and herbivores co-mingled in a single cave, perhaps the only refuge available for miles – the panic-stricken recipients of a common threat among whom natural hostilities were mutually suspended.

The evidence everywhere strongly suggests that all these cave occupants were drowned *en masse* by violent water action, and in many cases never lived where they were entombed. It is also patently obvious, and will become ever more so as this saga unfolds, that those animals caught outside sanctuaries were also overwhelmed and then swept into and buried within caves and fissures alongside the original occupants, by the same massively destructive agent. This explains the mixture of faunal elements in many caves and fissures, the reason why young and old were slaughtered indiscriminately, and why the bone-cave phenomenon is generally of such worldwide extent. The underlying cause operated as thoroughly in supposedly glaciated areas as it did in those postulated to have laid outside them – and generally similarly in all hemispheres.

Enormous numbers of these animals, though now found in Arctic Siberia, Alaska and other lands now unable to support them, were moved vast distances from their original homelands by swiftly-moving water which transported them tumultuously in as immense moving masses of twisting, churning, water-borne organic debris, mud, silt and boulders. Only such a scenario explains the aforementioned evidence from Alaska, and the astoundingly fissured and shattered bones in the caves of Australasia and elsewhere – invariably buried in the utmost confusion, rammed into the furthest crevices of caves or buried astonishing depths down deeply-tortuous rock fissures.

Collectively, all the foregoing indicates that the pioneer students of these extraordinary remains committed an unfortunate error in inventing cave faunas that never actually existed, even though, as today, certain carnivores do sometimes inhabit caves for indefinite periods. Few, of course, will doubt that occasional lucky carnivore survivors of this traumatic episode (and a handful of these *did* exist) will, following the general cessation of this suggested stupendous water action, have located carcass-filled caves and fissures, and subsequently used them as ready-made larders. Carnivore tooth-marks on herbivore bones in cave breccias, as at Kirkdale and other caverns, strongly suggest that such occasions did indeed arise here and there in post-diluvial times, with some sites accordingly becoming bear and hyaena dens for unknown periods of time. But overall assessment of the known evidence indicates that such places were not common, even though, as seen later, other more terrible interpretations of the same evidence are possible.

Removal of the Ice Age of orthodoxy, as previously advocated, together with the realisation that most of the animals found in the cave and fissure deposits were never natural denizens of such sites, immediately eliminates the necessity to envisage cave faunas of the kind postulated by conventional treatment of the subject. The absence of such an Ice Age also invalidates those concepts which call for alternating glacial and interglacial interludes and the differing animal assemblages associated with them. In short, such faunas, especially the cave faunas, are illusory.

12

ABNORMAL BURIALS

The mammoths and mastodons mentioned throughout this book belonged to that group of trunk-bearing mammals known as *Proboscidea*. Unlike the mammoths, mastodons were not true elephants but a separate and generally more primitive proboscidean branch which parallelled them. Very numerous during late Pliocene and 'Pleistocene' times, the dominant form at the time of the great disaster we are alluding to was *Mammut* (formerly *Mastodon*).

Originally common in Europe and southern Asia during late Pliocene and early 'Pleistocene' times, *Mammut* seems to have largely withdrawn from those regions by the close of the 'Pleistocene' period, when, however, it abounded throughout the Americas. *Mammut americanum*, sometimes referred to as *Mastodon giganteus*, was the commonest North American species, whereas in South America *M andium* and *M humboldti* predominated. The main differences between these species was in their dentition.

Mature individuals of *M americanum* stood about 9½ft (3m) tall at the shoulders, although occasionally higher stature was attained. The feet had five toes, the great weight of these animals being carried by a large springy pad on the underside of the foot, a feature present even in juveniles. In life, the body was covered with rusty or dun coloured hair, and the tusks, which were large, tended to curve gently

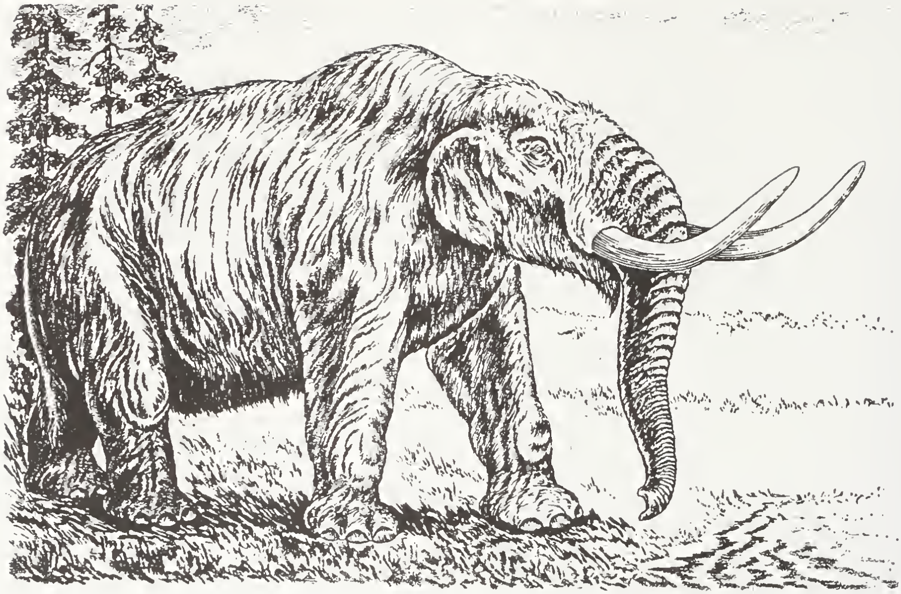

Fig 2.6. *Mammut Americanum:* the life appearance of the American mastodon, based on buried specimens found in the United States. *Illustration from "The Fossil Book" by Carroll Lane Fenton and Mildred Adams Fenton, copyright 1958. Reprinted with permission of Doubleday & Co, Inc.*

upwards. These details are well known because several more or less complete carcasses of these great creatures have been discovered in salt marshes and bogs.

The youthful appearance of many American mastodon remains is most striking, and has induced the observation that: "Some mastodon skeletons show every evidence that the animals lasted down to very late periods well within 'historic times', as that phrase is construed in Europe..."[306].

There is now no doubt that many mastodons survived in the New World well into Holocene times, when they were seen and hunted by palaeo-Indians. They survived an event that indiscriminately destroyed enormous herds of them, which dismembered and buried countless individuals of all ages and both sexes in great alkaline mud-banks and similar deposits, and which at many localities preserved their battered carcasses nearly as effectively as ice and frost did the Alaskan and Siberian mammoths.

While the northern animals were frozen solid in ground almost instantly reduced to permafrost conditions, the mastodons were entombed in great avalanches of mud and salts that, upon consolidating, often preserved many of their soft parts and sometimes even their stomach contents. Interestingly, while the Siberian and Alaskan mammoth remains often lie near or at the bottom of the 'muck' formation, so these mastodon carcasses frequently occur at or near the base of the North American bogs and marshes, which themselves often occupy hollows in the 'drift'[307]. The two sets of deposits thus appear to be essentially complimentary, and their origin probably a more or less simultaneous result of a common paroxysmal event, as mastodon and mammoth remains have been found at some localities lying alongside each other. Thus:

> In America the mastodon deposits are diluvial, and agree in position with those containing *Elephas primigenius* (in Eurasia)[308].

Among the first recorded discoveries of mastodons with preserved soft parts were five individuals found some 3 miles (4.8km) from the Ohio River by the Shawany Indians in 1762. Dr Warren, a diligent recorder of many early finds, mentions that: "...In digging a well near the entrance of the Wabash into the Ohio, there were found some bones of a mastodon... in company with skin and hair"[309].

Accompanying another skeleton found elsewhere were large pieces of skin resembling "fresh-tanned leather"[310]. The freshness of these mastodon soft parts is not unique, nor indeed peculiar to mastodons, but applies equally to the vegetable remains often found with them. Thus, occurring with a mastodon skeleton discovered in Orange County, New York state, in 1845, was a:

> ...mass of broken twigs, *etc*, lying beneath the pelvic bones... in quantity about five or six bushels; towards the posterior portion, it presented three traces of convolutions, passing in a straight column of four inches diameter through the pelvic orifice, and behind the ischium terminating in a homogeneous mass, evidently of a foecal character.[311]

A year earlier, several mastodon skeletons came to light in a natural basin at Hackett's Town, New Jersey, affording evidence of stomach contents[312], and a further instance occurred somewhat later at Newburgh on the Hudson River, when a mass of crushed twigs was observed between the ribs of a mastodon found there[313]. Yet another discovery of the same ilk occurred near Jamestown, New York state, in August 1871. The find was examined *in situ* by, among others, Prof S G Love, whose report, cited in Hartnagel and Bishop's valuable survey of New York mastodon discoveries[314], is well worth reading.

Microscopical examination of samples of these stomach contents revealed that the Newburgh mastodon apparently fed on hemlock-spruce[315] and that the Hackett's Town mastodons had evidently eaten young shoots of the white cedar[316]. It must be relevant, therefore, that white cedar wood is prominent in the previously noted subterranean forests of mid-western North America, which perished suddenly and were buried deep under 'drift' deposits.

The calamitously abrupt character of this event is underscored by the unexpected positions in which several virtually complete mastodon skeletons have been discovered. For example, nearly all the skeletons found in the deposits in the valley of the Great Osage river were in a nearly *vertical* position[317]; and James Southall says that, since early colonial days, many others have been met with standing *erect* just below the surface of swamps or bogs[318]. Again in the Newburgh mastodon: "The anterior extremities were extended under and in front of the head... The posterior extremities were extended forward under the body"[319].

And of another discovered in Monmouth County, New Jersey, in 1823, we read that:

> ...its vertebral column, with all its joints and ribs attached to them in their natural position, lay about eight or ten inches below the surface. The scapula rested upon the heads of the humeri, and these in a *vertical* position upon the bones of the fore-arm, as in life. The fore-arm was still buried. It inclined a little backwards, and the foot which was immediately below it was placed in advance of the other, as it would be if the animal *had been walking*. The four feet rested on the sandy stratum underlying the black earth in which the animal was embedded.[320] [Our italics].

Likewise, Van Rensselaer, discussing a mastodon skeleton found in 1823 near Long Branch, New Jersey, reported that: "Its position... was vertical, the feet resting on a stratum of sand and gravel, and the head to the west-south-west[321].

Elsewhere, mastodons have been discovered in other strange positions. Warren says the remains of the Hackett's Town specimens were:

> ...found covered from four to six feet deep, except the largest, which lay near the south-east side of the basin, and were but slightly covered. A few feet to the north of

> this lay the next in size on its back, and a little to the north and west of this the other two, both as if in a *standing* position; and the calf was found in a similar position near the north side of the basin... The question very naturally occurs, 'How and when did so many of these large animals become embedded in this narrow space?' – questions more easily asked than answered. My first conjecture, before seeing the place, was, that they had been mired in attempting to reach a spring or lick; but the small extent and shallowness of the basin, and the gradual descent and character of its bottom (which... is perfectly solid... closely paved with rolled stones...) all forbid such a supposition.[322] [Our italics].

Even if these animals were mired – which, contrary to evidence, is still the most popular explanation – it is exceedingly difficult to conceive how, once stuck fast in thick mud, even a powerful animal like a mastodon could manage to turn itself upside-down and become buried 'on its back'. Certainly it might fall to one side and remain there for evermore, but not *upside-down*. The solid nature of the underlying strata is also interesting and repeated at many sites. That these animals may have sensed the catastrophe about to engulf them is possibly indicated by the curiously repeated south-west to north-east alignment of many of their remains[323]. Were they turning to face or to avoid a threat so enormous and sudden that in many instances there was not even time for them to be knocked over by it? Certainly we agree with Warren's observation that:

> The cause of the disappearance of the mastodon seems to be mysterious. We are... disposed to believe that an animal of so large a size, of so great a strength and such extensive distribution... must have required some great and general catastrophe to overwhelm and annihilate it.[324]

That water was a major element in that catastrophe has been traced at other North American mastodon sites. Thus, around a salt-marsh at Saltville in Virginia containing the remains of mastodon, *Mammuthus primigenius* and numerous other coeval animals and freshwater clams, many large angular blocks of jasperoid lying on the lower slopes of the hills rimming the marsh are "distinctly water-worn". Significantly, many of the clams still retain their iridescent nacreous shell layer as well as the periostracum[325], so geologically recent was their demise.

As well as mastodons, other contemporary animals retaining portions of their soft parts have been found in these North American bogs and marshes. Articular cartilage and tendinous attachments occurred on bones of a giant feline (*Megalonyx*) described by Dr Leidy in 1859[326], and soft parts adhered to the remains of a peccary found in a saltpetre deposit in Kentucky. But it is in the frozen ground of Siberia and Alaska that the most famous discoveries of this kind have been made.

The millions of animals that perished during the terrible convulsions which terminated the so-called 'Pleistocene' times were nowhere more dramatically preserved than in Siberia[375]. There, the picture is everywhere one of appalling disorder, carnage and wholesale destruction, with countless animals and plants frozen in positions of death ever since the day they perished. As a result, their remains are amazingly fresh-looking and are frequently indistinguishable from those of animals and plants that have died mere weeks ago. Here and there amid the chaotic masses of organic debris occur whole or partial carcasses of a wide array of late 'Pleistocene' animals – the Arctic equivalents of the mastodon cadavers just mentioned, and just as informative. These Siberian examples, however, have been deposited in particularly noteworthy fashion.

In the Lyakhov Islands, for instance, there exists an extensive lower layer of granular ice, 70ft (21m) thick, not formed from compacted snow, and directly *overlying* this is a layer of clayey freshwater material enclosing numberless tusks and skins of mammoths together with the refrigerated corpses of musk-ox, horse, rhinoceros, American stag, antelope, reindeer, tiger and other mammoths[327]. One of the mammoth carcasses found here was of special interest in that its remains had been smashed before coming to rest, for pieces of it were distributed around the main body of the specimen and much of its hair had been removed and its skin badly cut and excoriated[328]. Its mode of burial had obviously been exceedingly violent.

This singular depositional sequence is evidently extraordinarily widespread, for it is encountered many hundreds of miles distant in the valley of the Berezovka river. There, a mammoth carcass excavated in the middle Kolyma region in 1901, at a place by riverside cliffs, lay in a depression in fossil ice into which it had apparently been partially thrust. Great quantities of blood had flowed from the acute wounds it had suffered at the time of death, and this had congealed and frozen solid along with the dismembered tail of a bovine animal which was found immediately below the mammoth's right forefoot[329]. Not very far distant in the same district, the perfectly preserved upper part of a horse's skull, complete with muscle fibres, was found buried between the trunks of larch trees protruding from the river banks[330], while further east, in the valley of the Indigirka River, similar mangled animal remains have come to light.

Still further east, in the Yana valley, an allegedly complete carcass of a horse or pony was found during the late 1890's in frozen soil on the banks of a tundra lake north of Verkhoyansk. The specimen, which was never collected, is said to have possessed long greyish-white hair[331].

Very interestingly, Sir Roderick Murchison, reporting on the results of a then-recent expedition down the Yenisei River, recorded that:

> During the progress of this expedition the important discovery has been made of entire skeletons of mammoths, whose skin and hair has been preserved in frozen mud... the heads of these extinct elephants were, for the most part turned towards the south, as if the animals had been retreating southwards when caught either by inundation proceeding from the North Polar region... for when we travel southwards, we find mammoth remains becoming much scarcer, and instead of whole animals, we meet with their broken and disjointed bones only, as if they had been transported from the north.[332]

This closely parallels the previously-noted observations about the disposition of the upright mastodon carcasses and skeletons.

That water moving on a gigantic scale was indeed involved with these widespread extinctions is suggested by the head of a woolly rhinoceros, *Coelodonta tichorhinus*, discovered in 1771 near the Vilyui (Wiliui) River north of Yakutsk. Prof A F Brandt of Berlin wrote:

> On a careful examination of the head... it was... remarkable that the blood-vessels and even the fine capillaries were... filled with brown coagulated blood which in many places still preserved its red colour[333].

Asphyxia, either by drowning or suffocation, invariably induces gorging of the capillaries with blood. Brandt's analysis of the matrix adhering to this particular rhinoceros established drowning as the cause of death, and showed that it was buried with fragments of freshwater Pleistocene plants[334]. It must be relevant that buried masses of ancient ice occur, encasing the carcasses of mammoths and their contemporaries as at Berezovka, elsewhere along the Vilyui valley.

During the late 1700s, Pallas visited large areas of Siberia. In the Irtish River valley, he found sub-fossilised shells of living species no longer thriving at such latitudes. Many still preserved their horny pelicles and some *retained traces of the molluscs themselves*. Bones of mammoths and other extinct animals occurred in the same formation, and nearby the heads of great fishes and pieces of cellular bone of unidentifiable origin[335]. Elsewhere he saw a petrified jaw-bone coated with mus-

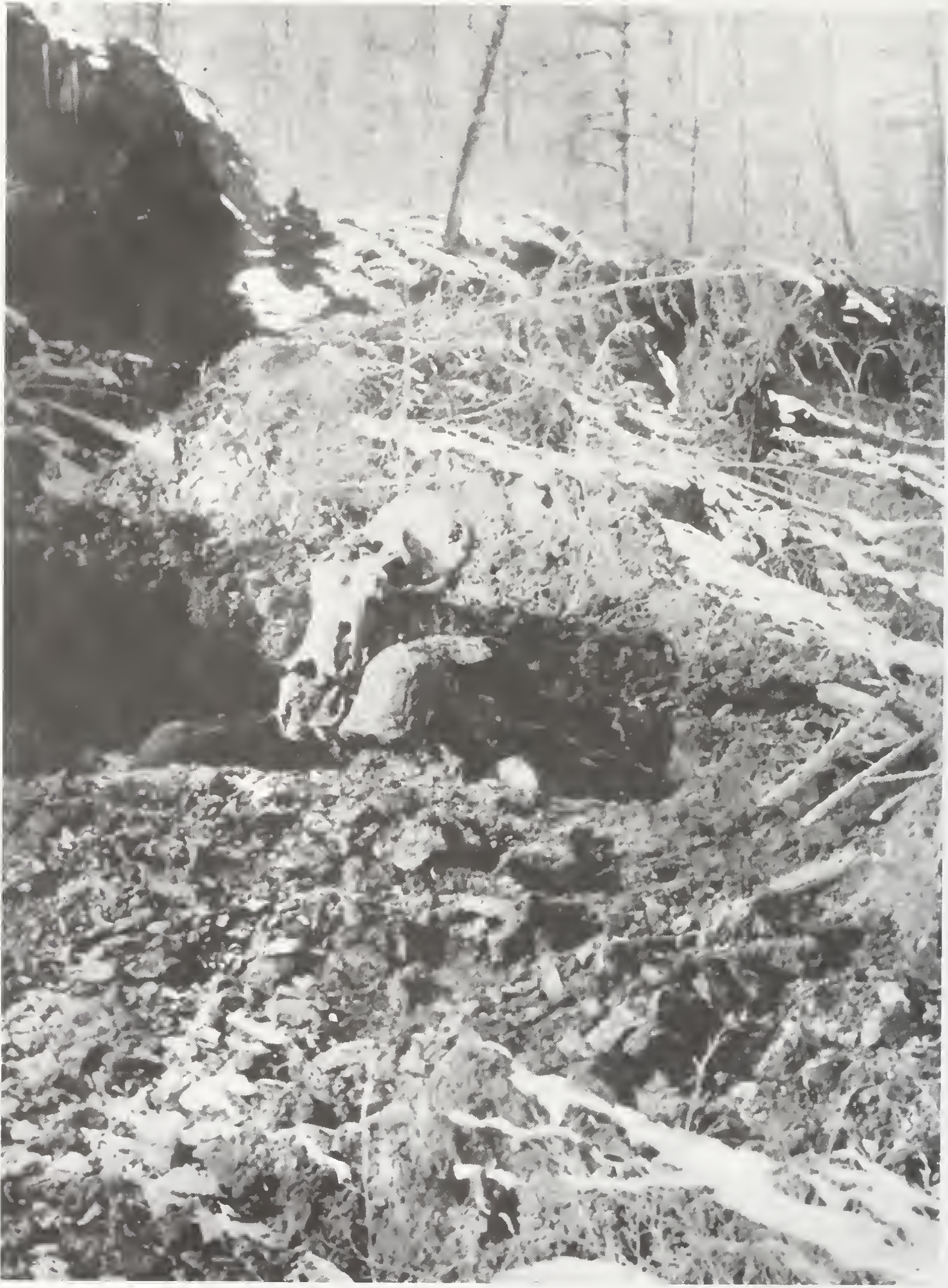

Fig 2.7. Frozen Mammoth of the Berezovka.
Photo by J Kirchner. By permission of the American Museum of Natural History.

sels[336]. He regarded these as having "...come from a great inundation"[337].

If yet further evidence is needed, we can mention the discovery of a whale skeleton far inland on the Chukchee peninsula in north-eastern Siberia, still partially covered by skin, with deep red, almost fresh flesh adhering to many of its bones[338]. River floods had partly eroded the frozen sand enveloping this individual the preceding winter, and as exposure of the carcass to even one summer's sun would have induced putrefaction long ago, there could be no doubt of the specimen's very great antiquity. It was found at the same level as the bones of mammoths and other 'Pleistocene' mammals.

An almost identical picture emerges in neighbouring Alaska, where, in the 'muck' beds:

> The excellent state of preservation of many of the bones, the recent decay of animal matter shown by the existing odour, quantities of hair found in contact with a mammoth's skull, the occurrence of the outer sheath of bison's horns, and the finding of vertebrae of bovine animals lying in their proper order of sequence, render it probable that *entire carcasses* were deposited, and that congelation followed close upon their entombment.[339] (Our italics).

Furthermore:

> Most of the bodies of the animals had been torn and twisted by some violent cataclysm before being frozen in the enveloping muck... The archaeologists also found mammoth's meat which was still in an edible state.[340]

Richardson and Hibben, who made these observations, wrote before the more recent discovery of a partial carcass of a frozen baby mammoth in the Alaskan 'muck' beds[341], a find fully justifying Richardson's speculations over a century ago. This discovery is not unique, however, for in the summer of 1977 the refrigerated carcass of another baby mammoth, believed to be geologically older than its American counterpart, was exhumed near Madagan in eastern Siberia[342].

Among other Alaskan evidence may be mentioned the frozen carcass of a young musk-ox[343], and the partially complete frozen cadavers of bison, several felines, various deer and a wide range of other contemporaries of the mammoth found at localities scattered across the state's western terrain[344]

Similar burials occur even in Europe. A complete rhinoceros carcass preserved in an oil-saturated deposit has been found in Poland, and several mammoth skeletons or partial carcasses have been found in European Russia standing upright in consolidated silty mud. Of the latter, the best known examples were discovered at Swijatosski near St Petersburg in 1775[345], another near the same city about 1826[346], and one at Troitzkoe near Moscow in 1846, associated with plant fragments, *fish scales and bones* and pieces of coal[347]. All were reminiscent of the finds of erect mastodons in North America.

Unquestionably the Siberian and Alaskan animals and plants were the common victims of a catastrophe which afflicted both countries with equal force and produced similar results – results remarkably similar to those already noted at many Asiatic, European, North American and Australasian bone-caves and fissures, where entire or partially whole animals were also tumultuously entombed in the flesh. This aspect of the fossil evidence, whether encountered at allegedly glaciated localities or not, is impressively consistent worldwide.

On the basis of present mollusc distribution, the testimony of the now-vanished northern forests, the evidence of the lost Miocene Ocean and the central Siberian pollen record, northern latitudes were much warmer than today[348]. Quite clearly, therefore, *the mammoth and its companions did not live during an Ice Age*. They were the victims of an event which produced one, and which, in Siberia and Alaska, either transported their remains into arctic latitudes, or invested those latitudes with glacial conditions.

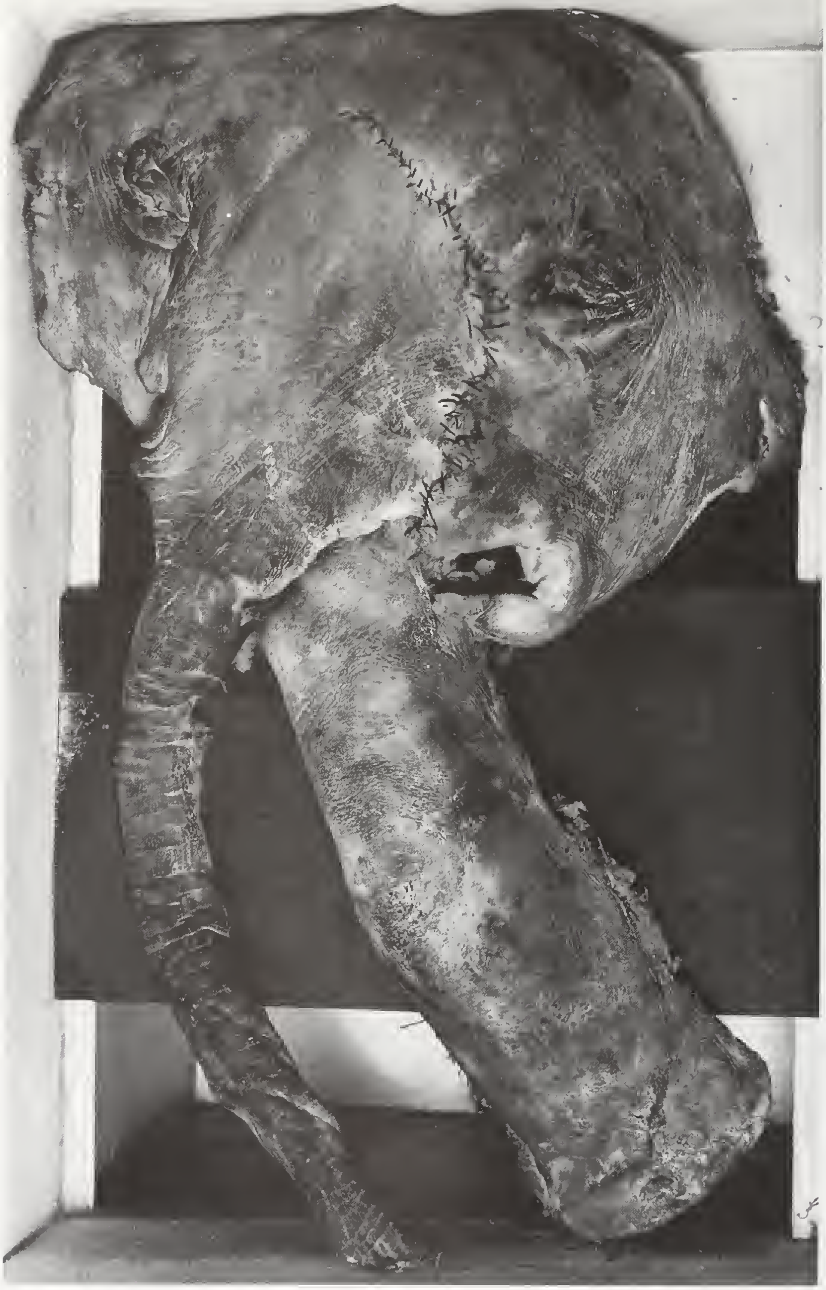

Fig 2.8. Trunk, head and forelimbs of frozen baby woolly mammoth, Alaska.
By permission of the American Museum of Natural History.

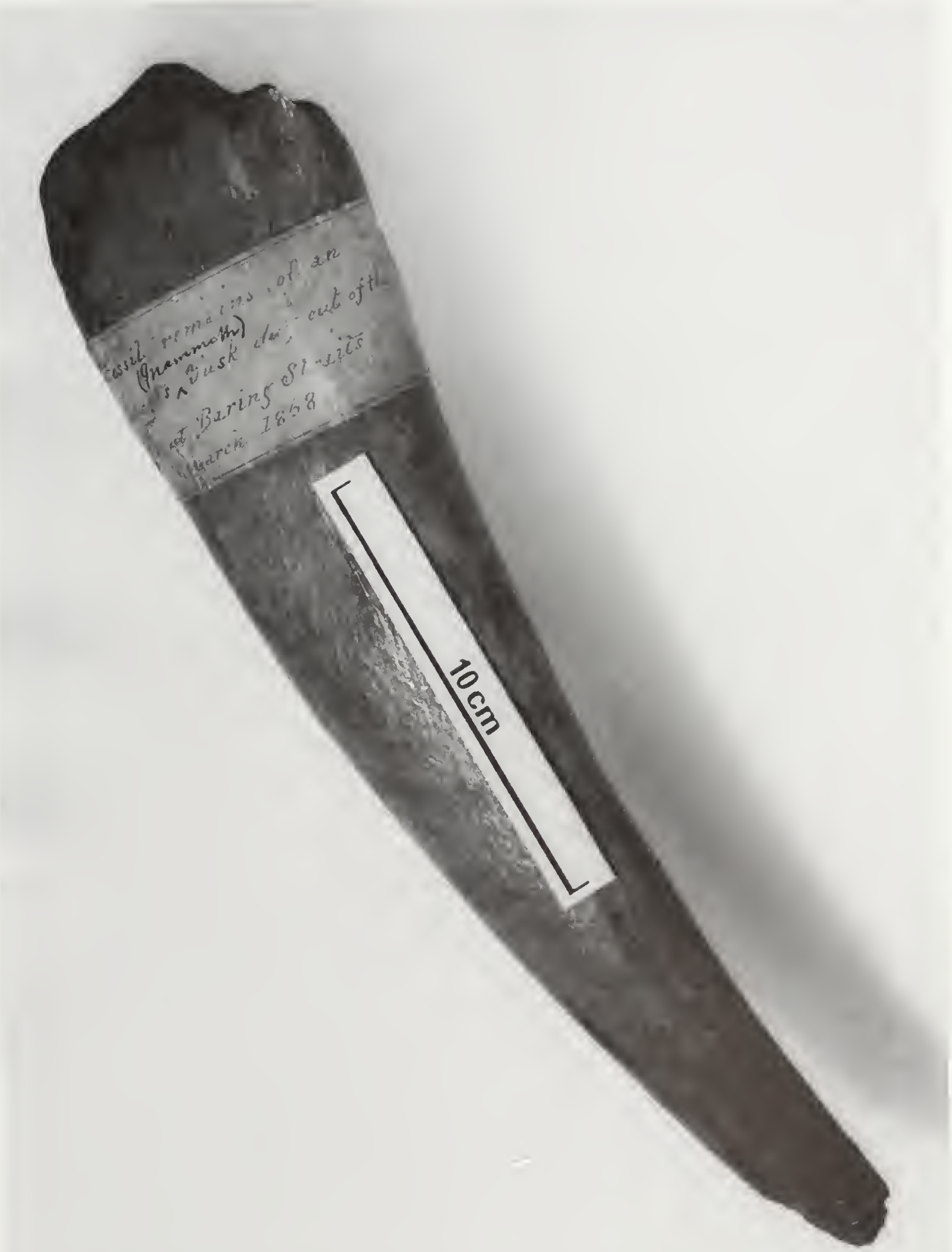

ossil remains of an
(mammoth)
's tusk dug out of th
at Baring Straits
March 1868
10cm

Fig 2.9. Part of a mammoth tusk, Alaska, found in 1868. *Courtesy of the Univ of Southampton.*

13

INCOMPATIBLE BEDFELLOWS

If upright skeletons and amazingly preserved frozen animals are prominent facets of the 'Pleistocene' biological record, so too is the following remarkable evidence from California, South America and Africa.

The previously-mentioned asphalt and tarseeps in California, which contain such a varied assortment of birds, are also the cemeteries for a rich assemblage of late 'Pleistocene' faunal and floral life. The most spectacular discoveries have occurred at Rancho La Brea. There, the remains are packed tightly together into an almost unbelievable conglomeration: "...a bed of bones... in which the number of sabre-tooth and wolf skulls together averaged twenty per cubic yard"[349].

So abundant were the remains that between 1906, when systematic excavations first began, and 1931, no fewer than 700 skulls had been retrieved of the sabre-toothed tiger (*Smilodon*) alone[350]. Accompanying these was a quite staggering profusion of bones and teeth belonging to horses, camels, bison, mastodons, mammoths, rodents, coyotes, wolves, sloths and numerous other mammals and birds[351]. Initially accorded a late Pliocene antiquity, later studies showed these remains to be coeval with late 'Pleistocene' plants collected from the Carpinteria asphalts. Very significantly, these plants proved to be typical of a Recent flora now only thriving 200 miles (320km) further north[352].

The exceptional number of animals at Rancho La Brea is usually explained thus: some animal stuck fast in the tar, crying out, attracted mammalian and avian carnivores anxious to secure an easy meal, but these in turn, also becoming ensnared in the sticky trap, joined their hoped for meals, the grim cycle being repeated innumerable times. This interpretation, however, is badly at odds with the facts, for, as Prof Merriam has observed:

> As the greater number of the animals... have been entrapped in the tar, it is to be presumed that in a large percentage of cases the major portion of the skeleton has been preserved. *Contrary to expectations, connected skeletons are not common.*[353] (Our italics).

Admittedly the bones are splendidly preserved as far as their often fragmentary state allows[354], but are, like their counterparts in the Alaskan 'muck' beds: "...broken, mashed, contorted, and mixed in a most heterogeneous mass, such as could never have resulted from the chance trapping and burial of a few stragglers"[355].

These animals were apparently buried violently in an already dismembered condition. Interestingly, a human skull, found among these animals, was assigned to 'Ice Age' times as the associated animal remains were of supposedly similar antiquity. The skull, however, is typical of normal crania in living Amerindians, a point of particular significance when we come to consider our next Californian discovery.

Shortly after the mid-nineteenth century discovery of gold in California, a succession of noteworthy finds occurred at several places where auriferous gravels, underlying lava-capped mountain ridges, were mined or tunnelled into for the precious metal. Of these finds Dr G F Wright has left us the following interesting account:

> As early as 1863 Dr Snell of Sonora began a systematic collection of animal and human

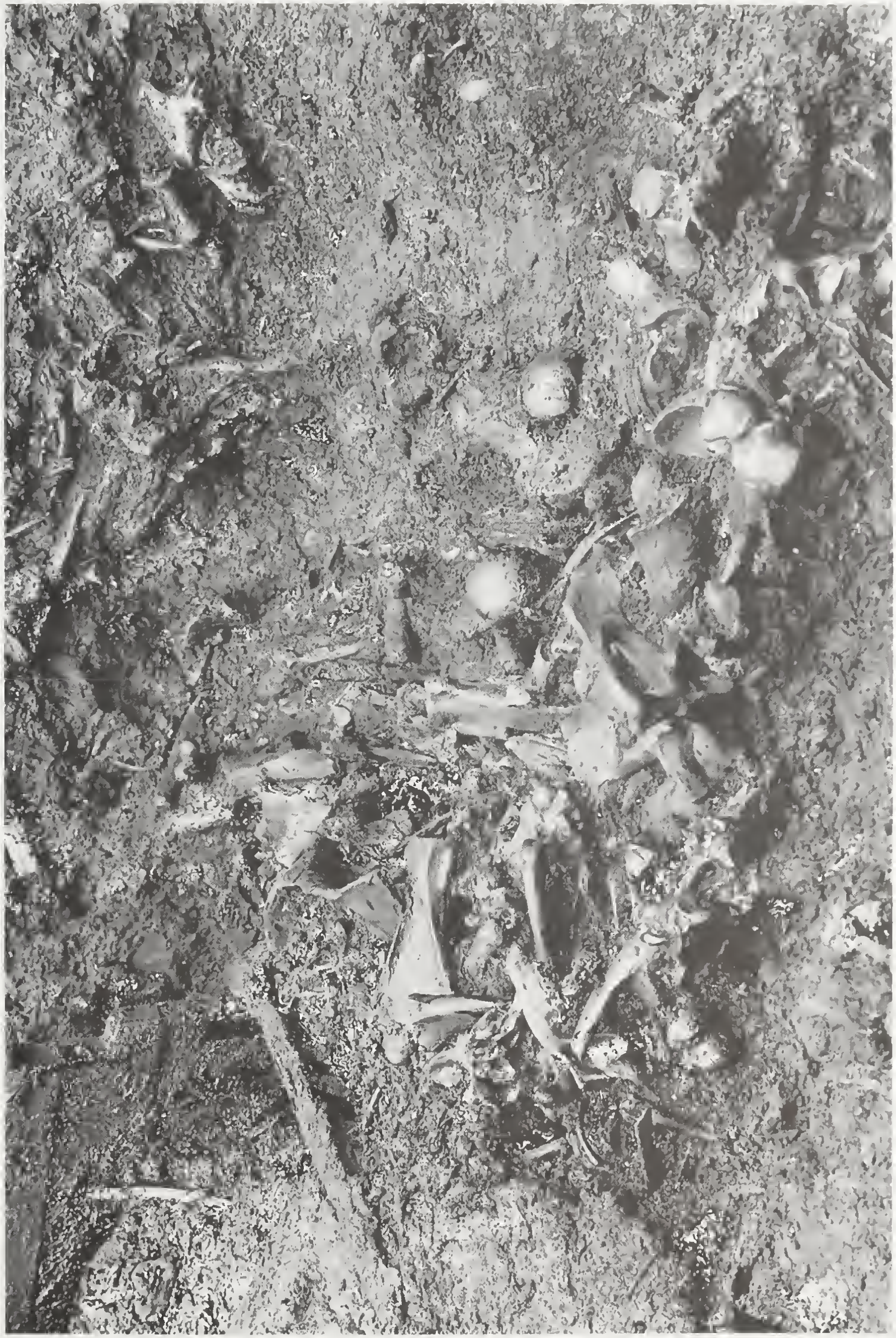

Fig 2.10. Part of the great accumulation of bones at the Rancho La Brea tar-pits, near Los Angeles, California. Note the disarticulated condition of the remains and their confused disposition within the tar. *Photo by R S Lull. By permission of the Museum Archives, Los Angeles County Museum of Natural History, California.*

> remains from the mines in his vicinity. In his collection were several objects marked as 'from under Table Mountain', among which was a human jaw...
>
> In 1857 Hon Paul Hubbs, of Vallejo... picked a portion of a human skull out of the dirt as it was brought from the Valentine Shaft, under Table Mountain, near Shaw's Flat...
>
> Ten years after, Mr Hubbs more fully detailed the circumstances of the discovery, and Professor Whitney and Gorham Blake Esq, made special examination of the locality and careful enquiries of the owners of the mine, and satisfied themselves that the bone really came from under the basaltic covering of Table Mountain... All this is preliminary to the famous Calaveras skull...[356]

The Calaveras skull was found by a certain Mr Mattison during February 1866 next to a petrified conifer 60–80ft (18–25m) long within gravel in a mine tunnel underlying 40ft (12m) of basalt capping Table Mountain near Altaville. It was originally mistaken for a petrified tree-stump as it was so encrusted with earth and stony matter[357]. However:

> ...the appearance of the skull in every way corroborated his (Mattison's) statement. The original incrustation shows that it was not taken from a cave... Fragments of bones and gravel and shells, were so wedged into the cavities of the skull... that there could be no mistake as to the character of the situation in which it was found. Chemical analysis showed that organic matter was nearly absent, and... (that the skull) was in a fossilised condition[358].

Wright also observed:

> ...the Calaveras skull, which, if genuine, far antedates anything human which has been discovered in Europe, is not of a particularly inferior order...[359].

Earlier scholars dated the skull as Pliocene because among other finds made under Table Mountain were the remnants of the typical Pliocene horse *Hipparion*[360], not recognised as having survived into late Pleistocene times until much later[361]. Today, the Table Mountain gravels are usually regarded as Pleistocene, while in some quarters the Calaveras skull has, despite much evidence to the contrary, been interpreted as that of a modern rather than a fossil man[362]. Other human remains, reportedly found in another mine tunnelled under Table Mountain[363], were certainly fossil, being associated with late 'Pleistocene' plants and the bones of mastodons and its contemporaries believedly deposited by "tumultuous waters"[364].

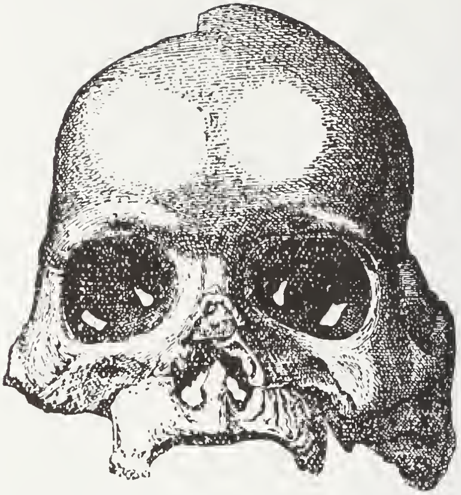

Fig 2.11. The Calaveras skull (after Whitney).

Great natural convulsions must also have been responsible for the disposition of whales and other marine creatures on the *crests* of mountains in various other parts of California. Thus Hay quotes Dr Steven Bowers as stating:

> Bones of whales and other cetaceans are met with in various portions of the county [Ventura county], especially along the sides and crests of the Santa Paula mountains.

> On the summit of this range, at an altitude of 2,000ft, the remains of a large seal, probably *Eumetopias stelleri* (*E jubata*), were obtained...[365].

Bowers assigned a Pliocene age to the deposits containing these remains, but Hay and others have shown that they date from later 'Pleistocene' times – in which case the deposition of cetaceans at such altitudes during times so geologically recent can only have proceeded under conditions that, elsewhere, would be termed catastrophic.

Animal fossils from the San Pedro Valley, California, present apparently anomalous faunal mixtures of much interest. Included are Miocene sharks, seals and porpoises, allegedly early Pleistocene sea-lions *and* land vertebrates, species of molluscs, sea-urchins, bryozoans and foraminifera which are still flourishing but unknown as fossils before Pleistocene times, and numerous late Pleistocene mammals and birds[366]. These are classic examples of 'old' and 'new' organisms coexisting in incompatible habitats or being assembled tumultuously and consigned to a common grave.

Last century, Prof P M Duncan, studying the Lake Titicaca basin of Andean Peru/Bolivia, noted the existence of siluroid, cyprinoid and other marine fishes in the lake, and that corals attached to rocks underlying the extensive nitrate deposits along the presently waterless Peruvian coast west of the lake represent *existing* species[367]. Today these corals lie 2,500–3,000ft (769–923m) above sea level. This region, however, which must once have lain much lower, is believed to have been well-wooded in the recent past and to have supported a rich and varied fauna. Numerous skeletons of forest-dwelling ant-eaters strewn across what is now the desert of Tarapaca eloquently testify to this[368].

Some unexpected 'late' occurrences of geologically 'old' animals have been reported from equatorial Africa. For example, in 1931, a portion of an articulated skeleton of the Miocene elephant *Deinotherium* was found in 'Pleistocene' deposits at Olduvai (Oldoway), Kenya, associated with shells of species still thriving in those latitudes. The skeleton occurred: "...in conditions which preclude the possibility that it is derivative"[369].

Other *Deinotherium* bones and teeth had previously been observed near Ngeti close to the Ugandan border with the then Congo territories (Zaire) by the Belgian geologist Delpierre, in beds which: "...on other evidence, he was convinced are of Pleistocene date. He affirmed, too, that these most unexpected fossils were not derived"[370].

More recently, further *Deinotherium* remains were retrieved from supposedly 'early Pleistocene' beds near Teleki volcano, Kenya, along with bones of a Machairodont lion, a large mustelid, *Hyaena cf namaquensis*, a hare, *Tatera*, *Hystrix*, a mastodon, a primitive elephant, several pigs, an extinct rhinoceros, a horse (*Stylohipparion*), a hippopotamus, a large giraffe, an okapi, various bovines, two kinds of crocodile, three species of tortoise (one of great size) and numerous fishes[371].

Recent reports and photographic records from an enclosed valley in the Nepalese Himalayas of a herd of living elephants apparently allied on the one hand to the *Stegodon*, a Pliocene and early 'Pleistocene' Asiatic ancestor of the modern elephants[372], and on the other, to *Stegomaston*, a mastodont genus as yet certainly known only from the early Pleistocene of the Americas[373], suggest an even more interesting instance of late survival of an animal extinct elsewhere, and that 'out-of-place' fossils like the Is-Shantün cave Miocene shark teeth and the *Deinotherium* remains just noted are indeed highly germane to the subject of this book.

Although little is presently known about them or their significance to general proboscidean evolution[374], these elephants almost certainly represent relict animals isolated in their present remote domain through the huge topographical changes wrought in the Himalayan region about 11,000 years ago by the great catastrophe here being unveiled – as we have seen in Part One.

Naturalists offer *different* explanations for these finds of antiquated species lying alongside those of geologically more modern aspect, frequently interpreting them as much on supposed geophysical grounds as on their anomalous biological character. Such assemblages,

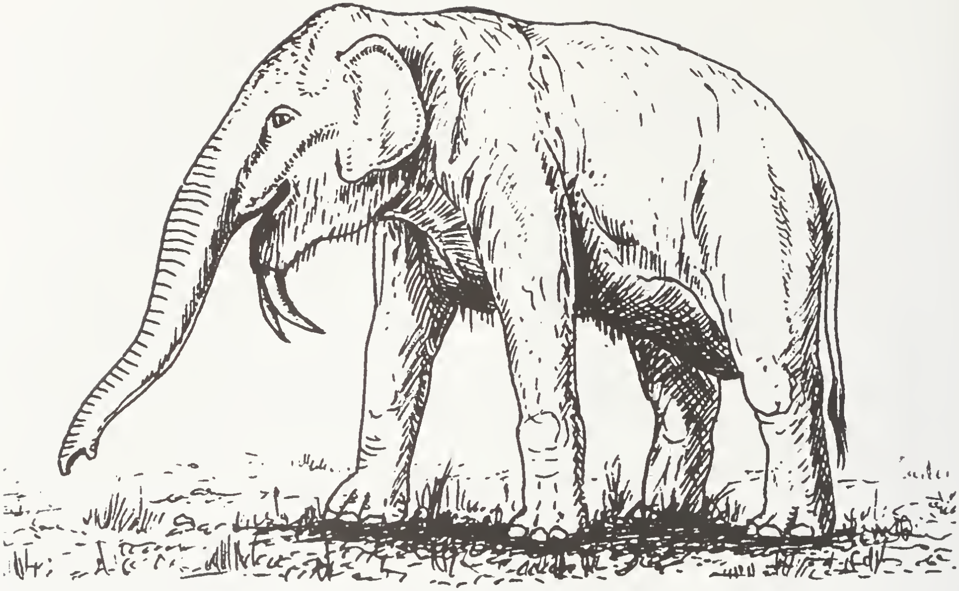

Fig 2.12. Deinotherium, which reached a height of 10ft (3m) at the shoulders. It possessed no upper tusks, but large lower tusks curved downwards and backwards. It probably had a long trunk. *Original drawing by J B Delair.*

both plant and animal, recur in nearly all latitudes, and were apparently produced more or less synchronously everywhere. Thus attributing the evidence from higher, colder latitudes to 'glacial' conditions is as questionable as ascribing evidence from lower, warmer latitudes to non-'glacial' causes. Non-'glacial' causes are advocated solely because of the assumed existence of extensive and chimerical northern ice-sheets. Neither non-existent northern 'glacial' conditions nor southern non-'glacial' causes are valid scenarios, and some alternative agency responsible for creating the recorded effects must be brought to light.

The evidence itself is perfectly unambiguous. Along with the removal of an 'Ice Age' like that which has been hitherto commonly envisaged, the evidence strongly suggests that there is something seriously amiss with the last phases of standard geological chronology. Whatever is amiss is intimately associated with the appalling extinctions, abnormal burials and the apparently endless instances worldwide of so-called 'contradictory' (or incompatible) field evidence. A deeper, but brief review of these chronological factors unquestionably reinforces this impression.

14

A REVISED GEOLOGICAL CHRONOLOGY?

The diverse geological and biological evidence (fossil and extant) we have examined thus 'far converges on the fact that stupendous worldwide geophysical changes have occurred geologically very recently. It also highlights the fact that an impressive range of plant and animal forms (each identical or nearly so) now distributed discontinuously in different regions of the world represent floras and faunas so lately dislocated that insufficient time has elapsed for new species to have developed within their ranks. These changes were evidentially sudden and violent, the present topographical conditions in the world being their principal visible legacy – and all living things the descendants of the animals and plants which survived them.

The testimony of the fossils, moreover, reveals that biological decimations were wholesale and without regard to the biological classes, numbers, sizes, ages, sexes, or health of the victims. Many organisms perished literally where they stood, being suddenly buried erect or even in walking positions – or were permanently frozen with *singular rapidity* following their demise.

Thus, not only these annihilations but also the deposition of many enveloping deposits ('drift') were catastrophically sudden. These deposits, usually attributed to prolonged and massive ice-action, often overspread extensive tracts of land, ignoring pre-existing topography – and they are sometimes immensely thick. Their accumulation, therefore, occurred on a colossal scale, both in terms of volume and linear extent.

Extraordinary speed, huge scale, great violence and indiscriminate action are therefore equally prominent factors in *both* the geological and the biological records of the period under review.

Typical 'drift' deposits occur far outside allegedly glaciated regions, or, conversely, are absent from many others believed to have been heavily glaciated. Abnormally buried organic remains in otherwise typical 'drift' deposits often occur in latitudes inimicable to large-scale ice-action. These are inescapable facts strongly militating against the popular explanation of the origin of these great deposits.

As noted previously, a special geological 'period', the Pleistocene, was erected by geologists expressly to embrace these formations, on the basis of the real existence of these former glaciations. Since, however, ice-action is by nature very slow, the time allocated for these glaciations and the resultant 'drift' accumulations has been correspondingly long. Accordingly, it has been common to reserve a span of two or more million years for the duration of the Pleistocene 'period'. Such concepts are seriously at variance with the field evidence, for if the glaciations of orthodoxy (the 'Ice Age') never really existed, and if the singular 'drift' deposits accredited to them were accumulated at comparatively great speed, then the duration of the Pleistocene epoch must actually have been unexpectedly brief.

Repeated discoveries in 'drift' deposits of mixed floras and faunas, simultaneously involve climatically-incompatible 'northern' and 'southern' species, modern *and* ancient biota, or forms which no longer flourish at the latitudes where their remains now occur. These loudly proclaim a sudden and violent extinction. The disposition of land and sea must also have differed markedly before the onset of these changes, and equally different meteorological conditions formerly existed, profoundly affecting the geographical distribution and general abundance of faunas and floras.

With the elimination of an Ice Age of conventional conception, and observing that many supposedly typical 'Ice Age' animals (*eg*, mammoth, woolly rhinoceros, *etc*) were *not* actually well adapted to glacial conditions, the faunas and floras found in Pleistocene 'drift' deposits must in reality have flourished during the preceding Pliocene period (see Appendix A).

The generally equable conditions characteristic of Pliocene times were highly favourable to the development and proliferation of life-forms of all kinds, and in that respect did not materially differ from the equally genial Miocene period which preceded it. A mixture of ancient (Miocene) and less ancient (Pliocene) organisms – including allegedly Arctic species – thrived side by side, therefore, throughout Pliocene times, persisting until its brief, sudden and cataclysmic close about 11,500 years ago – when, concomitantly with the deposition of the 'drift', they were slaughtered wholesale.

For these reasons, typical Miocene and Pliocene species occur with surprising frequency alongside those of supposedly younger 'Pleistocene' age, or figure alongside various specially adapted organisms now enjoying geographically discontinuous distribution. The occurrence of Miocene and Pliocene plants and animals, such as *Deinotherium*, *Hipparion*, *Eumetopias*, and *Carcharodon*, in late 'Pleistocene' deposits, or the survival of various living animals and plants having comparably ancient origins, thus ceases to surprise. We know of no other scheme which satisfactorily or comprehensively accounts for such otherwise anomalous biological occurrences.

Instead of being a distinct geological epoch of appreciable duration, the Pleistocene (as epitomised by the 'drift' formations and attendant phenomena) appears therefore to have been little more than a rather brief 'stage'. The time allegedly occupied by the glacial and interglacial episodes of conventional Pleistocene chronology was actually non-existent. Conversely, the

Table 2C

Revised chronology for the Tertiary and Quaternary periods in the light of the Phaeton disaster

ERAS	PERIODS	EPOCHS	STAGES	GENERAL CONDITIONS	Approx DATES (in years BP)
CAENOZOIC	QUATERNARY	HOLOCENE (Later)	HISTORIC	As at present	2,300-today
			SUB-ATLANTIC	Dry mild	2,700-2,300
			ATLANTIC	Wet mild	3,450-2,700
			BOREAL	Dry cold winters Warm summers GLACIERS MELT	5,500-4,900
		HOLOCENE (Earlier)	PRE-BOREAL	Dry cold	8,000-7,500
			SUB-ARCTIC	Wet cold	11,400
			PLEISTOCENE	Severe. Rapid development of glaciers	11,500
	Pheaton Disaster				
	TERTIARY	PLIOCENE		Equable	14,000,000
		MIOCENE		Equable	29,000,000

Dates based on the latest available evidence

Pliocene period persisted to very much more recent times than has hitherto been commonly supposed.

The unique character of the 'drift' deposits, the 'erratics', '*roches moutonnées*', and supposed glacial striations, however, is such that they merit a distinctive chronological 'compartment'. The term 'Pleistocene' is therefore retained as a 'stage' rather than an 'epoch' appellation, and is given that stature in the chronological revision summarised above in table 2C.

REFERENCES

1. Jack, R L. 1877. "Glacial Drift in the North-Eastern Carpathians", *Q Jl Geol Soc Lond*, vol 33, pp673–681; see p673.
2. Phillips, J. 1863. "The Antiquity of Man", *Q Rev*, vol cxiv, pp368–417; p378.
3. Schröter, C. 1882. *Flora der Eiszeit* (Zürich), 41pp; p14.
4. Lubbock, J. 1896. *The Scenery of Switzerland, and the causes to which it is due* (London), 2nd edn; p125.
5. Anker, M J. 1834. "The occurrence of Bones of Animals in a Coal Mine in Styria", *Proc Geol Soc Lond*, vol 1, p467.
6. Stevenson, J J. 1913. "The Formation of Coal Beds: IV", *Proc Am Phil Soc*, vol lii, pp31–162.
7. Scharff, R F. 1899. *The History of the European Fauna* (London), vii + 364pp; pp76–77.
8. Fielden, H W. 1894. "Notes on a small collection of Spitzbergen plants", *Trans Norfolk Norwich Nat Hist Soc*, vol 6, p51.
9. Ball, J. 1879. "On the Origin of the Flora of the European Alps", *Proc Roy Geogr Soc Lond*, vol 1, p576.
10. Scharff, R F. 1899. *Op cit*, p78.
11. Engler, A. 1879. *Versuch einer Entwicklungsgeschichte d. extratrop. Florengebiete d. Nördlichen Hemisphäre*, Leipzig, 2 vols, vol 1, p130.
12. Hooker, J D. 1862. "Outlines of the Distribution of the Arctic Plants", *Trans Linn Soc Lond*, vol xxiii, p252.
13. Krasan, F. 1896. "Zur Abstammungsgeschichte d. autochthonen Pflanzenarten", *Mitt Naturw Ver Steierm*, p37.
14. Trümpy, R. 1980. *Geology of Switzerland: a guidebook. Part A: An outline of the Geology of Switzerland*, Basel, 104pp; p51.
15. Scharff, R F. 1899. *Op cit*.
16. Saporta, G de. 1874. "Sur l'existence constatée du Figuires aux environs de Paris à l`époque quaternaire", *Bull Geol Soc Fr*, ser 3, vol II, pp439–443.
17. Lubbock, J. 1865. *Prehistoric Times*, London, xxiii + 512pp.
18. Geikie, J. 1881. *Prehistoric Europe*, London, xviii + 502pp.
19. Mortillet, G de, & A de Mortillet. 1900. *Le Préhistorique. Origine et Antiquité de l'homme*, Paris, 3rd edn, xxii + 709pp.
20. Zeuner, F E. 1959. *The Pleistocene Period*, London, xviii + 447pp.
21. West, R G. 1977. *Pleistocene Geology and Biology*, (London), rev edn, xi + 440pp.
22. Nilsson, H. 1983. *The Pleistocene: Geology and Life in the Quaternary Ice Age*, (Dordrecht, Boston, London), 651pp.
23. Pearsall, J I. 1854. "On changes observed in wood from the submerged Forest at Wawne, in Holderness", *Rep Brit Assoc Advmt Sci*, Hull, p45.
24. Denny, H. 1854. "On the remains of the Hippopotamus found in the Aire Valley deposits near Leeds", *Rep Brit Assoc Advmt Sci*, Hull, pp51–2.
25. Trollope, E. 1858. "On the Fens and Submarine Forests of Lincolnshire and other localities", *Rep Brit Assoc Advmt Sci*, Leeds, pp113–4; p114.
26. Trollope, E, 1858, "The Alluvial Lands and Submarine Forests of Lincolnshire", *The Geologist*, vol 1, pp501–4; p501.
27. 'Silex'. 1860. "Mammalian remains near Salisbury", *The Geologist*, vol 3, p77.
28. Forrest, H E. 1935. *The Atlantean Continent: its bearing on the Great Ice Age and the distribution of species*, (London), 2nd edn, 352pp; pp297–301.
29. Forrest, H E. 1935. *Op cit*, p297.
30. Scharff, R F. 1909. "On the Evidence of a former land-bridge between Northern Europe and North America", *Proc Roy Irish Acad*, sect B, vol xxviii, pp1–28.
31. Scharff, R F. 1902. "Some remarks on the Atlantis Problem", *Proc Roy Irish Acad*, sect B, vol xxiv, pp268–302.
32. Forrest, H E. 1935. *Op cit*, p245.
33. Scharff, R F. 1899. *Op cit*, p245.
34. Hull, E. 1912. *The Sub-oceanic Physiography of the North Atlantic*, (London), viii + 40pp.
35. Lloyd Praeger, R. 1932. "Recent views bearing upon the Problem of the Irish Flora and Fauna", *Proc Roy Irish Acad*, sect B, vol xli, pp125–145.
36. D S Merezhovsky. 1933. *The Secret of the West*, (London), Cournos, J (tr), 449pp; pp117–118.
37. Wallace, A R. 1911. *Island Life*, (London), 3rd edn, 563pp; p248.
38. Forrest, H E. 1935. *Op cit*, p249 (citing *Encyclopaedia Britannica*, 9th edn, 1879, vol XV, p180).
39. Moseley, H N, 1892, *Notes by a Naturalist: an account of observations made during the voyages of HMS Challenger round the world in the years 1872–1876*, (London), 2nd edn, 540pp; p72.
40. Moseley, H N. 1892. *Op cit*, p73.

41. Ridley, H N, 1930, *The Dispersal of Plants throughout the World*, (London), 744pp; p682.
42. Moseley, H N. 1892. *Op cit*, p11.
43. Moseley, H N. 1892. *Op cit*, p117.
44. Ridley, H N. 1930. *Op cit*, pp684–5.
45. Skottsberg, C. 1902. "Geographical Distribution of Vegetation in South Georgia", *Geogr J*, Nov 1902, pp498–502.
46. Hooker, J D. 1881. "Presidential Address", *Proc Roy Geogr Soc*, vol 3, pp601–3.
47. Guppy, H B. 1903. *Observations of a Naturalist in the Pacific between 1896 and 1899*, (London), 2 vols, vol 2, pp346–7.
48. Guppy, H B. 1903. *Op cit*, vol 2, p348.
49. Guppy, H B. 1903. *Op cit*, vol 2, p297.
50. Guppy, H B. 1903. *Op cit*, p298.
51. *Anonymous*. 1882. "Deep-Sea Remains of Trees", *Engl Mech*, vol 35, p424.
52. Guppy, H B. 1903. *Op cit*, vol 1, p233.
53. McCoy, F. 1874. *Palaeontology of Victoria*, (Melbourne), pp29–30.
54. Pennafort, R U y. 1900. "Brazil Pre-Historico", *Memorial Encyclographico*, (Fortaleza), p138.
55. Howorth, H H. 1887. *The Mammoth and the Flood*, London, xxxii + 464pp; p368.
56. Howorth, H H. 1887. *Op cit*, p372.
57. Göppert, H R. 1850. "On Vegetable Remains in the Salt Rock of Wieliczka", *Q Jl Geol Soc Lond*, vol 6, p32.
    Mortillet, G de, & A de Mortillet. 1900. *Le Préhistorique. Origine et Antiquité de l'homme*, (Paris), 3rd edn, xxii + 709pp.
58. Geyh, M A, & D Jäkel. 1974. "Late Glacial and Holocene climatic history of the Sahara Desert derived from a statistical assay of C^{14} dates", *Palaeogeogr Palaeoclimat Palaeoecol*, vol 15, pp205–8.
59. Tsukada, M. 1966. "Late Pleistocene vegetation and climate in Taiwan (Formosa)", *Proc US Natl Acad Sci*, vol 55, pp543–548.
    Wolfart, R. 1967. *Geologie von Syrien und dem Libanon*, (Berlin), xii + 326pp; p160.
60. Vuilleumier, B S. 1971. "Pleistocene changes in the fauna and flora of South America", *Science*, vol 173, no 3999, pp771–779.
61. *Anonymous*. 1917. "The Age of the Bolivian Andes", *Geogr Rev*, vol 4, p59.
62. Dawson, W, & D P Penhallow. 1889. "On the Pleistocene Flora of Canada", *Bull Geol Soc Amer*, vol 1.
63. Dawson, W, & D P Penhallow. 1889. *Op cit*, p315.
64. Dawson, W, & D P Penhallow. 1889. *Op cit*, pp315–6.
65. Dawson, W, & D P Penhallow. 1889. *Op cit*, p317.
66. Dawson, W. 1878. *Acadian Geology*, (London), xxvi + 694pp; p63.
67. Bell, R. 1898. "On the occurrence of Mammoth and Mastodon remains around Hudson's Bay", *Bull Geol Soc Amer*, vol 9, pp369–390; p385.
68. Bell, R. 1898. *Op cit*, p386.
69. Dawson, W, & D P Penhallow. 1889. *Op cit*, p316.
70. Hooker, J D. 1881. "Presidential Address", *Proc Roy Geogr Soc*, vol 3, pp601–3.
71. Heawood, E. 1912. *Geographical Discoveries in the 17th and 18th Centuries*, (Cambridge), xii + 475pp, p340.
72. Dawson, W, & D P Penhallow. 1889. *Op cit*, p320.
73. Whittlesey, C. 1867. "On the Fresh-water Glacial Drift of the Northwestern States", *Smithson Contb Knowl*, vol xv, art iii, pp1–29.
74. *Anonymous*. 1866–90. *A Geological Survey of Illinois*, (Springfield), 8 vols, vol iv, p179.
75. Whittlesey, C. 1867. *Ibid*.
76. Winchell, A. 1871. *Sketches of Creation*, (New York), 459pp, pp255, 259.
    Winchell, N H. 1875. "Vegetable Remains in the Drift Deposits of the North-West", *Proc Amer Assoc Advmt Sci*, vol 24, pp43–56.
77. Whittlesey, C. 1867. *Op cit*, pp13–15.
78. Whittlesey, C. 1867. *Op cit*, p15.
79. Whittlesey, C. 1867. *Op cit*, p13.
80. Flint, R F, & E S Deevey. 1951. "Radiocarbon dating of late Pleistocene Events", *Amer J Sci*, vol 249, pp257–300, p260; p262.
81. Whittlesey, C. 1867. *Op cit*, p15.
82. Winchell, N H. 1875. "Vegetable Remains in the Drift Deposits of the North-West", *Proc Amer Assoc Advmt Sci*, vol 24, pp43–56.
83. Grüger, E. 1972. "Pollen and seed studies of Wisconsin vegetation in Illinois, USA", *Bull Geol Soc Amer*, vol 83, pp2715–2734.
84. Leonard, A B, & J C Frye. 1960. "Wisconsinian Molluscan Faunas of the Illinois Valley Region", *Illinois Geol Surv Circ*, no 304, 32pp, p23.
85. Whitehead, D R. 1963. "Northern elements in the Pleistocene Flora of the South-east", *Ecology*, vol 44, pp403–6.
86. Grüger, E. 1972. *Loc cit*.
87. Braun, E L. 1950. *Deciduous forests of eastern North America*, (New York), 596pp.
    Braun, E L. 1951. "Plant distribution in relation to glacial boundary", *Ohio J Sci*, vol 51, pp138–146.
    Braun, E L. 1955. "Phytogeography of unglaciated eastern USA and its interpretation", *Bot Rev Lond*, vol 21, pp297–375.
88. Iltis, H H. 1965. "The genus *Gentianopsis* (*Gentianaceae*): Transfers and phytogeographic comments", *Sida*, no 2, pp129–154.
89. Simroth H. 1896. "Eine Bearneitung d. Russischen Nacktschnecken Fauna", *Ann Mus Zool St Petersburg*, 1896.
90. Wallace, A R. 1911. *Island Life*, London, 3rd edn, 563pp; p247.
91. Ihering, H von. 1893. "Najaden von Sao Paulo und die geographische Verbreitung d. Süsswasserfaunen von Süd Amerika", *Arch Naturgesch*, vol 59, (Bd 1), pp45–140.
    Kobelt, W. 1886. "Das Verhältnis d. Europe Landmoll. z. Westindien und Central Amerika", *NachrBl dt malakozool Ges*, 1886.
92. D S Merezhovsky. 1933. *Op cit*, p117.
93. Scharff, R F. 1899. *Op cit*, p21.

94. Goodfriend, G A, and R M Mitterer. 1988. "Late Quaternary Land Snails from the north coast of Jamaica: Local Extinctions and Climate Change", *Palaeogeogr Palaeoclimat Palaeoecol*, vol 63, pp293–311.
95. Charlesworth, J K. 1930. "Some Geological Observations of the origins of Irish Fauna and Flora", *Proc Roy Irish Acad*, vol xxxix, 1929–31, pp358–390; see pp369, 388.
96. Forrest, H E. 1935. *Op cit*, p234.
97. Merezhovsky, D S. 1933. *Op cit*, p118.
98. Spencer, J W. 1893. "The West Indian Bridge Between North and South America", *Pop Sci Mon*, vol liii, pp10–30; p26.
99. Spencer, J W. 1893. "Geological Waterways Across Central America", *Pop Sci Mon*, vol liii, pp577–593; p591.
100. Keigwin, L. 1982. "New Climate as Land Rises from the Sea", *Sci Digest*, March 1982, p21.
101. Spencer, J W. 1893. "The West Indian Bridge Between North and South America", *Pop Sci Mon*, vol liii, pp10–30; p25.
    Spencer, J W. 1893. "Geological Waterways Across Central America", *Pop Sci Mon*, vol liii, pp577–593; p587.
102. Scharff, R F. 1899. *Op cit*, p21.
103. Germain, L. 1913. "Le problème de l'Atlantide de la Zoologie", *Ann Geogr Paris*, vol xxii, no 123, pp209–226; p216.
104. Spence, L. 1925. *The History of Atlantis*, (London), xvi + 238pp; p63.
105. Wallace, A R. 1911. *Island Life*, (London), 3rd edn, 563pp; p244.
106. Emery, C. 1895. "On the Origin of European and North American Ants", *Nature*, vol liii, pp399–400.
107. Garnett, H. 1931. "Occurrence of the Water Mite, Hydrachna, etc", *NW Nat*, vol vi, p162.
108. Stephens, J. 1920. "The Freshwater Sponges of Ireland", *Proc Roy Irish Acad*, sect B, vol xxxv, no 11, pp205–254; pp246–8.
109. Scharff R F. 1907. *European Animals*, (London), xiv + 258pp; see p34.
110. Scharff R F. 1907. *Op cit*, p34.
111. Feyling-Hansen R W. 1950. "Changes of sea-level in West Spitzbergen: a new interpretation", *Geogr J*, vol 115, pp83–92.
112. Nicholson A C. 1892. "On the High-Level Glacial Gravels, Gloppa, Cryn-y-bwch, near Oswestry", *Q Jl Geol Soc Lond*, vol 48, pp86–95.
113. Trechmann C T. 1931. "The Scandinavian Drift or Basement Clay on the Durham coast", *Proc Geol Ass*, vol 42, pp292–296.
114. Spence L. 1925. *ibid*.
115. Moseley, H N. 1892. *Op cit*, p72.
116. Moseley, H N. 1892. *Op cit*, p88.
117. Scharff, R F. 1902. "Some remarks on the Atlantis Problem", *Proc Roy Irish Acad*, sect B, vol xxiv, pp268–302.
118. Kobelt, W. 1897–8. *Studien zur Zoogeographie*, (Leipzig) vols 1 & 2.
119. Blanchard, E. 1881. "Preuves de la Formation Récente de la Méditerranée", *C R Acad Sci Paris*, vol xciii, p1047.
120. Scharff, R F. 1899. *Op cit*, p268.
121. Wattenwyl, E von. 1880. *Geschichte der Stadt und Landschaft Bern im dreizehnten und vierzehnten Jahrhundert*, 2 vols, (Bern, J Dalp).
122. Scharff, R F. 1899. *Op cit*, pp269–270.
123. Scharff, R F. 1899. *Op cit*, p270.
124. Steinitz, H. 1973. "Ecology of the Ras Muhammad Crack in Sinai", *Nature*, vol 241, pp43–44, p44.
125. Scharff, R F. 1899. *Op cit*, p279.
126. Scharff, R F. 1899. *Op cit*, p261.
    Scharff, R F. 1897. "On the Origin of the European Fauna", *Proc Roy Irish Acad*, 3rd ser, vol iv.
127. Scharff, R F. 1899. *Op cit*, pp258–9.
128. Forsyth-Major, C I. 1883. "Die Tyrrhenis. Studien über geographie Verbreitung von Thieren und Pflanzen im westlichen Mittelmeergebeit", *Kosmos*, (Leipzig), vol xiii, pp1–17, 81–106, p106.
129. Engler, A. 1879. *Op cit*, vol 1.
130. Scharff, R F. 1899. *Op cit*, p257.
131. Murray, A. 1866. *The Geographical Distribution of Mammals*, (London), xvi + 420pp.
132. Scharff, R F. 1899. *Op cit*, p279.
133. Bate, D M A. 1905. "Four and a half months in Crete in search of Pleistocene mammal remains", *Geol Mag*, n s, dec v, vol ii, pp193–202.
134. Lister A M. 1989. "Rapid dwarfing of Red Deer on Jersey in the last Interglacial", *Nature*, vol 342, issue 6429, pp539–542.
135. Sondaar P. 1977. *Major Patterns in Vertebrate Evolution*, ed M K Hecht, P C Goody & B M Hecht, New York, ix + 908pp; see pp671–707.
136. Murray, A. 1866. *The Geographical Distribution of Mammals*, (London), xvi + 420pp.
137. Ouselati, A, R Paskoff, P Sanlaville. 1982. "La Tyrrhenien de Tunisie: essai de synthése", *Bull Geol Soc Fr*, ser 7, vol xxiv, no:2, pp173–178.
    Castany, G. 1962. "Le Tyrrhénien de la Tunisie", *Quaternaria* (Rome), vol 6, pp229–269.
138. Suess, E. 1892. *Das Anlitz der Erde*, (Vienna), 2 vols; see vol 1, p437.
139. Forsyth-Major, C I. 1883. *Ibid*.
140. Brinkmann, R. 1976. *The Geology of Turkey*, (Stuttgart), ix + 158pp; see p81.
141. Smith, G I. 1974. "Quaternary deposits in southwestern Afghanistan", *Quat Res*, vol 4, pp39–52; p45.
142. Arnaud-Vauneau, A, H Arnaud, P Burollet. 1982. "La Mer Pélasgienne", *Bull Geol Soc Fr*, ser 7, vol xxiv, no 2, pp161–171.
143. Suess, E. 1892. *Ibid*.
144. Bizon, G, C Müller. 1978. "Remarks on the determination of the Pliocene-Pleistocene boundary in the Mediterranean", in K Hsu, L Montadert *et al*, *Initial Report D S D P*, (Washington), vol 42, no:1, pp847–853.
145. Ridley, H N. 1930. *The Dispersal of Plants throughout the World*, (London), 744pp; pp684–6.

146. Boettger, O. 1878. "System verzeich d Lebenden Artend Landschneckengattung *Clausilia*", *Ber Offenbach Ver f Naturkunde*, 86pp.
147. Scharff, R F. 1899. *Op cit*, p261.
148. Beddard, F E. 1895. A Textbook of Zoögeography, (Cambridge), viii + 246pp; see p198.
149. Medway, Lord. 1964. "Post-Pleistocene Changes in the Mammalian Fauna of Borneo", *Studies in Speleology*, vol 1, 1963, pt 1, pp33–7; pp35–7.
150. Krefft, G. 1873. "The Vertebrata of Tasmania, recent and fossil", *J Proc Roy Soc NSW*, vol 1, pp30–41.
151. Parker, T J, W A Haswell. 1966. *A Textbook of Zoology*, (London), revd edn, 2 vols, ed by A J Marshall, vol 2; see pp690, 694.
152. Parker, T J, & W A Haswell. 1966. *Op cit*; vol 2, p694.
153. Chappel J. 1974. "Geology of Coral Terraces, Huon Peninsula, New Guinea: a study of Quaternary tectonic movements and sea-level changes", *Bull Geol Soc Amer*, vol 85, pp553–570.
154. Torgersen T, M Jones, D E Stephens & W J Ullman. 1985. "Late Quaternary Geological Changes in the Gulf of Carpentaria", *Nature*, vol 313, pp785–787.

     Jones M R and T Torgersen. 1988. "Late Quaternary Evolution of Lake Carpentaria on the Australian-New Guinea continental shelf", *Aust J Earth Sci*, 1988.
155. Smart J. 1977. "Late Quaternary Sea-level Changes, Gulf of Carpentaria, Australia", *Geology*, vol 5, pp755–759.

     Hopley D (ed). 1983. "Australian Sea-Levels in the last 15,000 years: A Review", *Monogr Ser*, Geogr Dept, James Cook Univ, Townsville, Australia.
156. Walker D, and J R Flenley. 1979. "Late Quaternary vegetational history of the Engan Province of upland Papua, New Guinea", *Phil Trans Roy Soc Lond*, ser B, vol 286, pp265–344.
157. Stuijts I, J C Newome & J R Flenley. 1988. "Evidence for Late Quaternary vegetational change in Sumatran and Javan highlands", *Rev Palaeobot Palynol*, vol 55, pp207–216.
158. Bowler J M, G Hope *et al*. 1976. "Late Quaternary Climates of Australia and New Guinea", *Quat Res*, vol 6, pp359–394.

     Barmawidjaja B M E, J Rohling *et al*. 1993. "Glacial Conditions in the Northern Mollucca Sea region (Indonesia)", *Palaeogeogr Palaeoclimat Palaeoecol*, vol 101, pp147–167, see p156.
159. Parker, T J, & W A Haswell. 1966. *Op cit*; vol 2, p608.
160. Parker, T J, & W A Haswell. 1966. *Op cit*; vol 2, pp606–7.
161. Parker, T J, & W A Haswell. 1966. *Op cit*; vol 2, p607.
162. Pumpelly, R. 1866. "Geological Researches in China, Mongolia and Japan, during the years 1862 to 1865", *Smithson Contb Knowl*, vol xv, pp1–143; pp76–7.
163. Sjögren, H. 1890. "Über das diluviale Aralo-Kaspiche Meer und die nord-europäische Vereisung", *Jb K-K Geol Reichsanst Wien*, vol xl.
164. Sars, G O. 1893–4. "Crustacea Caspien", *Bull Imp Acad Sci St Petersburg*, vol xiii.
165. Sars, G O. 1893–4. *Op cit*.
166. Scharff, R F. 1899. *Op cit*; pp258–9.

     Hubbard, G D. 1937. *The Geography of Europe*, (London), xii + 876pp; see p47.
167. Shabad T. 1951. *Geography of the USSR: A Regional Survey*, (New York), xxxii + 584pp.

     Velichko A A (ed). 1984. *Late Quaternary Environments of the Soviet Union*, (London), xxviii + 327pp.

     Rychagov G I. 1977. "The Pleistocene History of the Caspian Sea", dissertation paper, Moscow State Univ, Moscow.
168. Karpinski, A. 1888. "Übersicht d physiko-geograph Verhältnisse d Europ Russlands", *Beitr Kennt Russ Reichs*, 3rd Folge, vol iv, p182.
169. Nordenskiöld, N A E. 1881. *Voyage of the Vega round Asia and Europe*, (London), 2 vols, tr A Leslie; see vol 1, p378.
170. Murchison, R I. 1845. *The Geology of Russia in Europe and the Ural mountains*, (London), 2 vols.
171. Dawkins, W B. 1868. "The former range of the Reindeer in Europe", *Pop Sci Rev*, vol vii, p148.
172. Falconer, H. 1868. *Palaeontological Memoirs and Notes*, (London), 2 vols, ed R I Murchison.
173. Prestwich, J. 1895. *On certain Phenomena belonging to the close of the last Glacial Period and on their bearing upon the tradition of the Flood*, (London), 87pp; see pp50–1.
174. Prestwich, J. 1895. *Op cit*; pp51–2.
175. Prestwich, J. 1895. *Op cit*; pp vi, 7, 67, 74.
176. Forsyth-Major, C I. 1902. "On the Pigmy Hippopotamus from the Pleistocene of Cyprus", *Proc Zool Soc Lond*, (2), pp107–112.

     Howorth, H H. 1887. *The Mammoth and the Flood*, (London), xxxii + 464pp; p110.
177. Lyell, C. 1873. *The Antiquity of Man*, (London), 4th edn, xix + 572pp; see pp113–4.
178. Imbesi, M. 1956. "Sugli elefanti nani della grotto di Luparello (Palermo)", *Actes 4th Congr Int Quat*, 1953, pp443–7.
179. Adams, A L. 1874. "On the dentition and osteology of the Maltese Fossil Elephants, being a description of the remains dis-covered in Malta between 1860–66", *Trans Zool Soc Lond*, vol ix, p50.
180. Adams, A L. 1874. *Loc cit*; pp1–124.
181. Adams, A L. 1874. *Op cit*; p154.
182. Spratt, T A B. 1867. "On the Bone-caves near Crendi, Zebbug and Melliha, in the island of Malta", *Q Jl Geol Soc Lond*, vol xxiii, pp283–297; p296.
183. Adams, A L. 1866. "On the bones of fossil Chelonians from the ossiferous caves and fissures of Malta", *Q Jl Geol Soc Lond*, vol xxii, pp594–5.

184. Adams, A L. 1874. *Op cit*; p186.
185. Adams, A L. 1874. *Op cit*; p182.
186. Falconer, H. 1868. *Palaeontological Memoirs and Notes*, (London), 2 vols, ed R I Murchison; p167 note.
187. Adams, A L. 1874. *Op cit*; pp183–4.
188. Adams, A L. 1874. *Op cit*; p235–6.
189. Caruana, A A. 1870. "Further discoveries of the Fossil Elephants of Malta", *Geol Mag*, vol vii, p238.
190. Parker T J, & W A Haswell. 1966. *Op cit*; vol 2, p219.
191. Romer, A S. 1945. *Vertebrate Palaeontology*, 2nd edn, Chicago, viii + 687pp; see p576.
192. Stead, D G. 1963. *Sharks and Rays of Australian Seas*, (Sydney), x + 211pp.
193. De la Beche H. 1831. *A Geological Manual*, (London), 564pp; see pp180–196.
194. Cuvier, G. 1823. *Recherches sur les Ossemans Fossiles des Quadrupèds*, 5 vols, (Paris); see vol iv, p213.
195. Cuvier, G. 1823. *Op cit*.
196. Bate, D M A. 1905. "Four and a half months in Crete in search of Pleistocene mammal remains", *Geol Mag*, n s, dec v, vol ii, pp193–202.
197. Bate, D M A. 1905. *Op cit*; pp197–9.
198. Bate, D M A. 1905. *Op cit*; vol ii, pp199–200.
199. Hensel, R F. 1856. "Beiträge zur Kenntniss fossiler Säugethiere. Insektenfresser und Nagethiere der Diluvial-formation", *Z dt Geo Ges*, vol viii, pp279–290, 660–704, 689–703.
200. Depéret, C. 1897. "Étude de quelques gisements nouveaux de Vértebrés Pléistocéne de l'Isle de Corse", *Annls Soc Linn Lyon*, vol xliv, pp125–6.
     Forsyth-Major, C I. 1899. "On Fossils and Recent Lagomorpha", *Trans Linn Soc Lond*, vol vii, pp433–520.
     Forsyth-Major, C I. 1905. "Rodents from the Pleistocene of the Western Mediterranean", *Geol Mag*, n s, dec v, vol ii, pp462–7, 501–6.
     Forsyth-Major, C I. 1913. "Observations sur la faune des mammiféres quaternaires de la Corse et de la Sardaigne", *C R Int Con Zool Monaco*, vol ix, p594.
     Locard, A. 1872. "Note sur les Bréches osseuses des environs de Bastia (Corse)", *Arch Mus Nat Hist Lyons*, vol 1, pp48–9.
201. Thomas, P H. 1883. *Matér Hist Prim Homme*; see vol xviii, p263.
202. Howorth, H H. 1887. *Op. cit.*, p108.
203. Gervais, P. 1867. *Recherches sur l'Ancienneté de l'Homme et la période quaternaire*, (Paris), 132pp; p91.
204. Howorth, H H. 1887. *Op cit*; p110.
205. Thomas, P H. 1879. "Le Rhinocéros tichorhinus de Chetma (près Biskra)", *Bull Soc Climatol Algér*, vol xvi, pp75–8.
206. Gervais, P. 1849. "Sur la présence à l'état fossile dans l'Algérie de deux espéces de mammiféres probscidenas des genre éléphant et mastodonte", *C R Acad Sci Paris*, vol xxviii, pp362–4.
207. Gervais, P. 1850. "*Elephas africanus* from Guelma, Algeria", *Proc Acad Sci Lett Montpellier*, p21.
     Gervais, P. 1850. "Sur des débris fossiles de mastodonte et d'*Elephas africanus* découverte en Algérie", *Mém Acad Sci Lett Montpellier*, vol 1, pp415–423.
208. Dart, R A. 1929. "Mammoths and other fossil elephants of the Vaal and Limpopo watersheds", *S Afr J Sci*, vol xxvi, pp698–731; pp722–3.
209. Arambourg, C. 1954. "Observations sur les Gazelles fossiles du Pléistocène superieur de l'Afrique du Nord", *Bull Soc Hist Nat Afr N*, vol 48, pp49–77.
210. Sigogneau, D. 1961. "Étude d'un Cervidé Pléistocène de Corse", *Annls Paléont*, vol 46, (1960), pp49–78.
211. Thomas, P H. 1875. "Ossements du *Bubalus antiquus* découverte à Djelfa en Algérie", *J Zool Paris*, vol iv, pp72–8.
212. Gervais, P. 1875. "Une espèce de grand boeuf a Djelfa (Algérie), *C R Acad Sci Paris*, vol lxxx, p444.
     Thomas, P H. 1876. "*Bos (Bubalus) antiquus* trouvé aux environs de Sétif (Algérie)", *Matér Hist Prim Homme*, vol xi, p46.
     Thomas, P H. 1881. "Recherches sur les bovidés fossiles de Algérie", *Bull Soc Zool Fr*, vol v, pp92–136.
213. Thomas, P H. 1880. "Note sur quelques équidés fossiles des environs de Constantine", *Revue Sci Nat Montpelli-er*, vol viii, pp335–351.
214. Thomas, P H. 1880. "The Fossil Horses of Constantine", *Nature*, vol xxi, p309.
215. Königswald, G H R von. 1970. "Hipparion from the Pleistocene of Europe, especially from the Red Crag of East Anglia", *Palaeogeogr Palaeoclimat Palaeoecol*, vol 8, pp261–4.
216. Prestwich, J. 1895. *Op cit*; p46.
217. Prestwich, J. 1895. *Op cit*; pp47–8.
218. Brome, F. 1869. "Report on the animal remains from the caves and fissures of Gibraltar", *Int Congr Anthrop Prehist Archaeol*, 1861, p131.
219. Brome, F. 1869. *Op cit*; see p130.
220. Busk, G. 1869. "On the caves of Gibraltar in which human remains and works of art have been found", *Int Congr Prehist Archaeol*, Trans, 3rd session (Norwich) 20th-28th August 1868 (London 1868), xxx + 419pp: Busk's paper pp106–167; p122.
221. Ramsay, A C, & J Geikie. 1878. "Geology of Gibraltar", *Q Jl Geol Soc Lond*, vol xxiv, p521.
222. De La Beche, D. 1831. *A Geological Manual*, (London), 1st edn, 564pp; see pp180–196.
223. Cullingford C H D (ed). 1953. *British Caving: an Introduction to Speleology*, (London), xvi + 468pp; see p191.
224. Buckland, W. 1823. *Reliquiae Diluvianae*, (London), vii + 303pp; pp67–8.
     Hodge, H C. 1860. "On the Ossiferous Caverns at Oreston", *The Geologist*, vol 3, pp26–30, 343–347, 377–379.

Pengelly, W. 1859. "On the Ossiferous fissures at Oreston, near Plymouth", *The Geologist*, vol 2, pp434–444.

225. MacEnery, J. 1859. *Cavern Researches, or discoveries of Organic remains and of British and Roman Relics, in the caves of Kent's Hole, Anstis Cove, Chudleigh and Barry Head*, (London), ed E Vivian, 80pp.

226. Carreck, J N. 1955. "The Quaternary Vertebrates of Dorset, Fossil and sub-fossil", *Proc Dorset Nat Hist Archaeol Soc*, vol 75, pp164–168.

227. Dawkins, W B. 1874. *Cave hunting, researches on the evidence of caves respecting the early inhabitants of Europe*, (London), xxiv + 455pp.

228. Dawkins W B. 1877. "On the Mammalian-fauna of the caves of Cresswell Crags", *Q Jl Geol Soc Lond*, vol 33, pp589–612.

Mello J M. 1877. "The Bone-caves of Cresswell Crags – 3rd paper", *Q Jl Geol Soc Lond*, vol 33, pp579–588.

229. Dawkins W B. 1877b. "The Exploration of the ossiferous deposit at Windy Knoll, Castleton, Derbyshire", *Q Jl Geol Soc Lond*, vol 33, pp724–729.

Taylor J, 1862, "Bone Caves at Castleton", *Trans Manchester Geol Soc*, vol iii, pp123–125.

230. Boylan P J. 1981. "A new Revision of the Pleistocene mammalian fauna of Kirkdale Cave, Yorkshire", *Proc Yorks Geol Soc*, vol 43, pp253–280.

231. Allen E E, & J G Rutter. 1946–48. *A survey of the Gower Caves, with an account of recent excavations*, (Swansea), pt 1, (1946); pt 2 (1948).

232. Leach A L. 1934. "The Geology and Archaeology of the Island of Caldy", *Proc Geol Ass*, vol 45, pp189–204.

233. Lomas J, & P F Kendall. 1896. "The Glacial Phenomena of the Vale of Clwyd", *Rep Br Ass Advmt Sci*, (Liverpool) p801.

Mellard Reade T. 1897. "The Glacio-Marine Drift of the Vale of Clwyd", *Q Jl Geol Soc Lond*, vol liii, pp341–348, p344.

234. Ramsay A C. 1863. "Bone-cave at Cefn, Flintshire", *The Geologist*, vol 6, p114.

235. Ramsay A C. 1863. *Op cit*; p114.

236. Woodward H B. 1887. *The Geology of England and Wales*, (London), 2nd edn, xv + 670pp; see p543.

237. Harkness R. 1870. "On the occurrence of elephant remains in Ireland", *Geol Mag*, vol vii, pp253–8; p255.

238. Esper J F. 1774. *Description des Zöolites et des Cavernes dans le Margraviat de Bereuth au delà des monts*, (Nuremberg), 148pp.

Goldfuss G A. 1810. *Die Umgebungen von Muggendorf*, (Erlangen).

Rosenmüller J C. 1804. *Abbildungen und Beschreibungen der fossilen knochen der Höhlenbaren*, (Weimar), 4 + 22pp.

239. Buckland, W. 1823. *Op cit*; pp133–6.

240. Schlotheim E F. 1820. "Wegen den versteinerten Knochen bei Köstriz", *Isis*, Oken, vol vii, pp5–8.

241. Buckland, W. 1823. *Op cit*; pp137–8.

242. Buckland, W. 1823. *Op cit*; pp117–121.

243. Prestwich J. 1893. "On the Evidence of a submergence of Western Europe and the Mediterranean coasts at the close of the Glacial or so-called Post-Glacial Period, and immediately preceding the Neolithic or Recent Period", *Phil Trans R Soc*, ser A, 1894, pp903–984, p903.

244. Gaudry A. 1868. "Les animaux Quaternaires de la montagne de Santenay", *Bull Geol Soc Fr*, ser 3, vol 4, pp304–308.

245. Prestwich J. 1893. *Op cit*; pp935–937.

246. Tournal M. 1827. "Note sur deux cavernes à ossements, découvertes à Bize, dans les environs de Narbonne", *Annls Sci Nat Paris*, vol xii, pp78–82.

Tournal M, & M de Serres. 1829. "Fossil antediluvian animals mingled with human remains in the caves of Bize", *Edinb New Phil J*, vol vii, pp159–161.

Tournal M. 1832. "Cavernes à ossements de Bize (Aude)", *Bull Geol Soc Fr*, vol ii, pp380–382.

247. Contejean C. 1862. *Esquisse d'une description physique et géologique de l'arrondisement de Montbéliard*, (Leipzig), 92pp.

Theobald N, & C Szymanek. 1963. "Le crâne de Rhinocéros à narines cloisonnées des grottes de Rigney (Doubs)", *Ann Scient Univ Besançon*, geol no:17, pp97–113.

248. Astre G. 1963. "Brèche Pléistocène de Peyre, (Averyon), avec *Equus hydruntinus* et *Megaceros*", *Bull Soc Hist Nat Toulouse*, vol 98, nos:3–4, pp321–331.

Christol J de, & A Bravard. 1828. "Mémoir sur de nouvelles espèces d'hyènes fossiles découvertes dans la caverne de Lunel-Viel, prés Montpellier", *Mém Soc Hist Nat Paris*, vol iv, pp368–378.

249. Moggridge M. 1872. "On bones and flints found in the caves at Mentone and in the adjacent railway cutting", *Rep Br Ass Advmt Sci*, (Edinburgh), 1871, pp155–6.

Rivière E. 1871. "Sur les cavernes à ossements des Baoussé-Roussé", *C R Acad Sci Paris*, vol lxxiii, pp351–2.

Rivière E. 1887. "La troglodyte de Menton, ou l'homme primitif de l'âge du grand ours et du mammoth", *Ann Sci Indus*, vol xvi, pp213–222.

Rivière E. 1887. *De l'antiquité de l'homme dans les Alpes-Maritimes*, (Paris), xviii + 336pp; p12.

250. Prestwich J. 1893. *Op cit*; p933.

251. Lumley H de, S Gagniere, L Barral, R Pascal. 1963. "La Grotte du Vallonet, Roquebrune-Cap-Martin (A-M): (Note préliminaire)", *Bull Mus Anthrop Prehist Monaco*, vol 10, pp5–20.

252. Bonifay M F. 1962. "Sur la valeur spécifique de l'*Ursus prearctos*, M Boule, de la grotte du Prince (Ligurie italienne)", *Bull Mus Anthrop Prehist Monaco*, no:9, pp65–72.

253. Prestwich J. 1893. *Op cit*; see p954.

254. Prestwich J. 1893. *Op cit*, p953.

Bartolomei G. 1964. "Mammiferi di brecce pleistoceniche dei Colli Berici", *Mem Mus Civ Stor Nat Verona*, vol 12, pp221–289.

255. Rakovec I. 1960. "The Quaternary Mammalian Fauna from the cave Betalov-spodmol near Postojna", *Slov Akad Znan Umetn, Razr Priorod Vede, Razpr, Jugosl*, no:4, pp435–440.
256. Prestwich J. 1893. *Op cit*; p966.
257. Rakovec I. 1961. "The upper Pleistocene fauna from the cave Parska Golobina (in the Pivka basin)". *Loc cit*, no:6, pp271–349.
258. Prestwich J. 1893. *Ibid.*
    Fortis A. 1776. *Reise in Dalmatien*, (London), English edn, 1778; see p440.
259. Adam K D. 1958. "*Dicerorhinus kirchbergensis*, (Jäger), aus einer Karsthöhle bei Crni Kal (Istria, Yugoslavien)", *Slov Akad Znan Umetn, Razr Priorod Vede, Razpr, Jugosl*, no:4, pp435–440.
    Crnolatac I, & M Malez. 1961. "Ein neuer Fundort pleistozäner Fauna in Süd-istrien", *Bull Scient Cons Acad R S F Yougosol*, vol 6, no:2, pp33–4.
    Lomi C. 1963. "La fauna di foresta del Pleistocene antico nella breccia ossifera della cava di Bristi presso Santa Croce di Trieste", *Atti Mus Civ Stor Nat Trieste*, vol 23, no:4, pp119–146.
260. Malez M, & Z Pepeorik. 1969. "Entdeckung des ganzen skelettes eines fossilien Leoparden in der Vjetrenica-Höhle auf dem Popovo Polje (Herzogowina)", *Akad Savet FNRJ Bull Sci*, sec A, vol 14, pp144–5.
261. Buckland, W. 1823. *Op cit*; pp117–121.
262. Malez M. 1964. "Der erste fund der grossen Höhlenkatze *Panthera spelaea* (Goldf), im Pleistozän von Bosnia und Herzogowina", *Bull Scient Cons Acad RSF Yougosl*, nos:1–2, pp2–3.
263. Buckland, W. 1823. *Op cit*; p161.
264. Woldrich J N. 1882. "Beitrage zur Fauna der Breccien und anderer Diluvial-gebilde Oesterreichs", *Jb K-K Geol Reichsaust*, (Wien), 32Bd, Heft 4, pp435–470.
265. Prestwich J. 1893. *Op cit*; see p965.
266. Abel O, & G Kyrle. 1931. "Die Drachenhöhle bei Mixnitz – Speläologische Monographien", *Öst Staats Wien*, 7/9, 953pp.
267. Woldrich J N. 1882. "Über die diluviale Fauna der Hohlen bei Beraun in Böhmen", *Verh Geol Reichsanst Wien*, pp290–2.
268. Ryziewicz Z. 1962. "Sur la trouvaille du squelette d'un Ours de cavernes (*Ursus spelaeus*) dans la grotte sous Kopa Magury (Tatra)", *C R Soc Sci Lett Pologne*, no 5, pp1–22.
269. Kowalski K. 1961. "Pleistocene Rodents from Nietoperzowa Cave in Poland", *Folia quatern*, no:5, pp1–22.
270. Tattar A V. 1958. "Mammifères et Oissaux du Quaternaire supérieur des grottoes du Don supérieur et de Zhiguli et leurs conditions de vie", *Uchen Zap Leningr Gos Ped Inst A I Gercen*, vol 179, pp113–189.
271. Botta P E. 1835. "Observations sur le Liban et l'Antiliban", *Mém Soc Géol Fr*, vol 1, pp135–160; pp148–159.
272. Wolfart, R. 1967. *Geologie von Syrien und dem Libanon*, (Berlin), xii + 326pp; see pp158–9.
273. Blanckenhorn M. 1906. "Die Steinzeit und die Feuersteinartefakte in Syrien-Palästine", *L'Anthropologie*, vol 17, pp158–161.
274. Nalivkin D V. 1973. *The Geology of the USSR*, (Edinburgh), xxviii + 855pp; see pp443–445.
275. Chardin P T de, & C C Young. 1930. "Preliminary Report on the Chou Kou Tien fossiliferous deposits", *Bull Geol Soc China*, vol 8, pp173–202.
276. Black D. 1934. "Recent discoveries at Chou Kou Tien", *Nature*, vol 133, p89.
277. Moore R C. 1953. *Man, Time and Fossils*, (New York), xvii + 411pp; pp274–5.
278. Tokunga S. 1929. "Mammalian fossils found in limestone caves in Korea", *Proc Imp Acad Japan*, vol 5, pp139–141.
279. Clarke W B. 1875. "Remarks on the Sedimentary Formations of New South Wales", *Ann Rep Dept Mines NSW*, 3rd edn, pp149–206; p163.
280. Lang Dr. 1831. "Account of the discovery of bone caves in Wellington Valley about 210 miles west of Sydney in New Holland", *Edinb New Phil J*, vol x, pp364–371; see pp369–370.
281. Woods J E T. 1862. *Geological Observations in South Australia, principally in the district SE of Adelaide*, (London), xviii + 404pp; see pp335, 385.
282. Clarke W B. 1875. *Op cit*; see p164.
283. Higgins E T, & W F Petterd. 1884. "Description of a new cave-inhabiting spider, together with notes on mammalian remains from a recently discovered cave in the Chudleigh district", *Trans Roy Soc Tasmania*, for 1883, pp191–2; see p192.
284. Cockburn-Hood T H. 1874. "On the skin and feathers of a Moa in caves at Otago", *Trans N Z Inst*, vol vi, 1873, pp387–388; see p388.
    Frazer, Capt. 1873. "A description of the Earnsclough Moa Cave", *Trans N Z Inst*, vol v, 1872, pp102–105; see p103.
    Haast J. 1872. "Moas and Moa Hunters", *Trans N Z Inst*, 1871, pp66–110.
285. Reinhardt J T. 1867. "Die Brasilianske Knoglenhuler og de i dem Forekommende Dyrelevinger", *Tidsskr Pop Fremst Naturw*, ser 3, vol iv, pp193–217, 291–353.
286. Hartt C F. 1870. *Geology and Physical Geography of Brazil*, (Boston), xxiii + 620pp; see pp286–287.
287. Nadaillac M de. 1885. *Prehistoric America*, (London), xii + 566pp; see p25.
288. Scott-Elliott G F. 1925. *Prehistoric Man and his Story*, (London), 398pp; see p259.
289. Stringer, C. 1993. "Secrets of the Pit of the Bones", *Nature*, vol 362; issue 6420, pp501–502.
    Stringer, C, and C Gamble. 1993. *In search of the Neanderthals: Solving the Puzzle of Human Origins*, (London), 246pp.
    Trinkaus, E, & P Shipman. 1993. *The Neanderthals: Changing the Image of Mankind*, (London), 452pp.
290. McDermott, F, R Grün, C B Stringer and C J Hawkesworth. 1993. "Mass-spectrometric U-series dates for Israeli Neanderthal/early Modern hominid sites", *Nature*, vol 363, issue 6426, pp252–255.

291. Defleur A, O Dutour, H Valladas and B Vandermeersch. 1993. "Cannibals among the Neanderthals?", *Nature*, vol 362, issue 6417, p214. (Provides useful earlier references to possible Neanderthal cannibalism).
292. Stock C. 1931. "Occurrence of Human Remains in Conkling Cavern, New Mexico", *Bull Geol Soc Amer*, vol 42, p370.
293. Stock C. 1931. "Exploration of Gypsum Cave, Nevada", *Bull Geol Soc Amer*, vol 42, p364.
294. Guilday J E, & H W Hamilton. 1966. "The bone breccia of Bootlegger Sink, York County, PA", *Ann Carnegie Mus*, vol 38, no:8, pp145–163.
295. Gidley J W, & C L Gazin. 1914. *Explorations and Field-work of the Smithsonian Inst for the year 1913*, (Washington DC), pp94–5.
296. Gidley J W, & C L Gazin. 1933. "New mammalia in the Pleistocene fauna from Cumberland Cave", *J Mammal*, vol 14, pp343–357.
     Gidley J W, & C L Gazin. 1938. "The Pleistocene vertebrate fauna from Cumberland Cave, Maryland", *Bull US Natl Mus*, vol 171, pp1–93.
297. Gidley, J W. 1918. *Ann Rep Smithson Inst, Washington* for 1918; see pp281–287.
298. Argyll, Duke of. 1883. "Continuity and Catastrophes in Geology", *Trans Edinb Geol Soc*, vol 3, pp1–27.
299. Rosenmüller, J C. 1795. *Beiträge zur Geschichte und nähern Kenntniss fossiler Knochen* (Leipzig), iv + 91pp.
300. Heller, F. 1972. "Die Forschungen in der Zoolithenhöhle bei Burggaillenreuth von Esper bis zur Gegenwart", *Erlanger Forsch*, vol v, pp7–56.
301. Rupke, N A. 1983. *Op cit*; pp35–36.
302. Daubeny, C G B. 1869. *Fugitive poems connected with Natural History and Physical Science* (Oxford), 227pp; pp119–120.
303. Rupke, N A. 1983. *Op cit*; pp35–36.
304. Orange, A D. 1972. "Hyaenas in Yorkshire: William Buckland and the Cave at Kirkdale", *History Today*, vol xxii, pp777–785.
305. Buckland, W. 1823. *Op cit*; p162.
306. Scott, W B. 1930 "The Extinction of Pleistocene Mammals", *Bull Geol Soc Amer*, vol xli, pp104–5.
307. Lyell, C. 1845. *Travels in North America* 2 vols. (London), vol 1, p55.
308. Warren, J C. 1855. *The Mastodon Giganteus of North America* (Boston), 2nd edn, 260pp.
309. Warren, J C. 1855. *Op cit*; p148.
310. Koch, F. 1839. "The Mammoth", *Am J Sci*, vol xxxvi, pp198–200. p199.
311. Warren, J C. 1855. *Op cit*; p247.
312. Warren, J C. 1855. *Op cit*; p247.
313. Warren, J C. 1855. *Op cit*; p247.
314. Hartnagel, C A, & S C Bishop. 1922. "The Mastodons, Mammoths and other Pleistocene Mammals of New York State", *Bull NY St Mus*, nos:241–2.
315. Warren, J C. 1855. *Op cit*; p247.
316. Lyell, C. 1849. *A Second Visit to the United States of North America* 2 vols, (London & New York), vol 2, pp363–364.
317. Cuvier, G. 1834. *Recherches sur les Ossemans Fossiles des Quadrupèds* 10 vols. 4th edn, (Paris), vol 1, p222.
318. Southall, J. 1875. *The Recent Origin of Man* (Philadelphia), 606pp; p327.
319. Warren, J C. 1855. *Op cit*; pp5–6.
320. Rensselaer, J van. 1827. "Discovery of the Fossil Remains of the Mastodon", *Am J Sci*, vol xi, pp246–250; p249.
321. De Kay, J E, J van Rensselaer, W Cooper. 1824. "Remains of the Mastodon", *NY Lyceum Nat Hist*, vol 1, pp145–7.
322. Warren, J C. 1855. *Op cit*; p183.
323. Rensselaer, J van. 1827. "On the fossil remains of the Mastodon lately found in Ontario County, New York", *Amer J Sci Arts*, ser 1, vol xii, pp380–1; p381.
324. Warren, J C. 1855. *Op cit*; p165.
325. Cooper, B N, C E Ray, W S Benninghoff. 1967. "Fossil Mammals and Pollen in a late Pleistocene deposit at Saltville", *J Palaeont*, vol 41, pp608–622; pp610–611.
326. Leidy, J. 1859. "Remarks on Remains of some extinct vertebrata in Territory of Nebraska", *Proc Acad Nat Sci Philad*, vol vii, p184.
327. *Anonymous*. 1894. "Baron von Toll's Expedition to Arctic Siberia and the New Siberian Islands", *Geogrl Jl*, vol iii, p410.
     Geller, M K. 1967. "Nouvelle découverte de cadavre de Mammoth", *Zool Zh*, vol 46, no:6, pp964–6.
328. Pfizenmayer, E W. 1939. *Siberian Man and the Mammoth* tr M D Simpson (London), xii + 356pp, See appendix, pp241–6.
329. Pfizenmayer, E W. 1939. *Op cit*; pp105–6.
330. Pfizenmayer, E W. 1939. *Op cit*; p176.
331. Pfizenmayer, E W. 1939. *Op cit*; p177.
332. Lippman, H E, W R Farrand. 1962. "Frozen Mammoths", *Science*, vol 137, no:3528, pp449–452.
     Murchison, R I. 1881. "Researches of Russian Geographers", *Proc Roy Geogr Soc Lond*, vol 3, no:3, pp234–5.
333. Brandt, A F. 1846. "Nachrichten über das Adam'sche Mammuth und das Wilui Nashorn", *Proc Berlin Acad*, for 1846, pp222–227; p223.
334. Brandt, A F. 1846. *Op cit*; p224.
335. Pallas, P S. 1788–93. *Voyages en Différentes Provinces de l'Empire de Russie, et dans l'Asie Septentrionale* 5 vols. (Paris), vol 3, pp124–5.
336. Pallas, P S. 1802. *Travels through the southern provinces of the Russian Empire in 1793 and 1794* 2 vols, (London), tr F E Blagdon, vol 1, p115.
337. Pallas, P S. 1802. *Op cit*; see vol 3, p125.
338. Nordenskiöld, N A E. 1881. *Voyage of the Vega round Asia and Europe* 2 vols. tr A Leslie, (London); vol 1, p523.
339. Richardson, J. 1852. *The Zoology of the Voyage of HMS Herald: Fossil Mammals* (London), vi + 100pp; p6.
340. Hibben, F C. 1960. *Digging up America* (New York), xii + 239pp; pp63–4.
341. Guthrie, R D. 1990. *Frozen Fauna of the Mammoth Steppe. The Story of Blue Babe*, (Univ Chicago Press).

342. *Anonymous.* 1978. "Baby Mammoth Carcass", *New Scientist*, vol 77, p215.

343. *Anonymous.* 1949. "Flesh Remains of Ancient Animals dug up in Alaska", *Sci News Letter*, no:55, p403.

344. Flint, R F. 1971. *Op cit*; pp770–771.

345. Pander, C H. 1848. "Geonostische Untersuchungen längs der Petersburg-Moskauer Eisenbahnlinie und in eingen Kreisen der Gouvernements Wladimir und Kaluga", *Arch Wiss Kunde Russ*, vol vi, pp250–306.

346. Blainville, H M D de. 1864. *Ostéographie, ou description iconographique comparée du squelette et du système dentaire des mammifères récent et fossiles pour servir de base à la zoologie et à la géologie*, 4 vols (Paris).

347. Rouillier, C F. 1846. "Explication de la coupe géologiques des environs de Moscou", *Bull Soc Nat Moscou*, vol xix, pt ii, pp359–467; p360.

348. Klein, R G. 1970–71. "The Pleistocene Prehistory of Siberia", *Quat Res*, vol 1, pp133–158.

349. Merriam, J C. 1911. "The Fauna of Rancho La Brea", *Mem Univ California*, vol 1, no:2.

350. Lull, R S. 1931. *Fossils* (New York), iv + 114pp; p28.

351. Stock, C. 1929. "A census of Pleistocene mammals of Rancho La Brea, based on the collections of the Los Angeles Museum", *J Mammal*, vol 10, pp281–289.

352. Chaney, R W, & H L Mason. 1840. "A Pleistocene Flora from the Asphalt Deposits at Carpinteria, California". *Studies of the Pleistocene Palaeobotany of California. Carnegie Instit, Washington.*

353. Merriam, J C. 1911. "The Fauna of Rancho La Brea", *Mem Univ California*, vol 1, no:2.

354. Lull, R S. 1931. *Ibid.*

355. Price, G M. 1923. *A New Geology* (Mountain View, Calif), 726pp; p579.

356. Wright, G F. 1890. *The Ice Age in North America, and its bearing upon the Antiquity of Man* (New York), xviii + 622pp; pp562–3.

357. Winslow, C F. 1873. "Correspondence", *Proc Boston Soc Nat Hist*, vol xv, pp257–259.

358. Wright, G F. 1890. *Op cit*; p564.

359. Wright, G F. 1890. *Op cit*; pp565–6.

360. Blake, W P. 1870. "On a Fossil Tooth from Table Mountain", *Amer J Sci*, ser 2, vol L, p262.

361. Königswald, G H R von. 1970. "Hipparion from the Pleistocene of Europe, especially from the Red Crag of East Anglia", *Palaeogeogr Palaeoclimat Palaeoecol*, vol 8, pp261–4.

362. Scott-Elliott, G F. 1925. *Prehistoric Man and his Story* (London), 398pp; p259.

363. Nadaillac, M de. 1885. *Prehistoric America* (London), xii + 566pp; p533.

364. Nadaillac, M de. 1885. *Op. cit;* p534.

365. Hay, O P. 1927. "The Pleistocene of the Western Region of North America and its Vertebrate Animals", *Carnegie Instit Washington*, publ no: 322B, 346pp, p193.

366. Hay, O P. 1927. *Op cit*; pp171–174.

367. Duncan, P M. 1883. "On Lakes and their Origins", *Proc Geol Ass*, vol vii, pp298–315, p313.

368. Joyce, T A. 1912. *South American Archaeology* (London), xv + 292pp; p3.

369. Leakey, L S B, & H Reek. 1931. "Editorial", *Nature*, vol 128, no:3241, Dec, p995.

370. Wayland, E J. 1932. "*Deinotherium* in the Pleistocene", *Nature*, vol 129, no:3244, Jan, p24.

371. Patterson, B. 1966. "A New Locality for early Pleistocene fossils in North-Western Kenya", *Nature*, vol 212, no:5062, pp577–8.

372. Romer, A S. 1945. *Vertebrate Palaeontology*, 2nd edn, (Chicago), x + 687pp; p414.

373. Romer, A S. 1945. *Op cit*; p413.

374. Watson, D M S. 1946. "The Evolution of the Proboscidea", *Biol Rev*, vol 21, p1.
Haynes, C. 1991. *Mammoths, Mastodons and Elephants: Biology, Behaviour and the Fossil Record*, (Cambridge).

375. Dubrovo, J. 1990. *The Pleistocene Elephants of Siberia*, pp1–8 in L.D. Agenbroad *et al* (eds.), *Megafaunas and Man* (Flagstaff, New Mexico).

PART THREE

THE ENDURING MEMORY

1

TRADITIONS AND LEGENDS

In Part One we mentioned that numerous peoples all over the world have preserved ancient accounts apparently describing some of the tremendous catastrophic events which terminated the Pleistocene epoch. The study of such material, however, is fraught with difficulties, especially as it is basically unsusceptible to scientific tests or duplication, and the problem of attaching universally acceptable meanings to it a vexatious one. That alternative avenues of approach exist merely compounds the problem.

Probably the easiest and most naive method is to treat every account as a children's tale or an ingenious fabrication designed simply to instruct or entertain. Another method views all traditions as symbolical, in which case the identification of the symbols will vary from solar deities, nature spirits and guardian entities to rather vague concepts of good and evil reflective of fashions prevailing at different times. Yet another is to evaluate traditions as incredible profane or religious explanations of otherwise normal events inexplicable to early man. Still another approach categorises such material as fragmented memories of once-real people and events, and therefore as genuine echoes of primeval history. It would, of course, be wrong to presume that every tradition falls into just one of these categories. The strongest probability is that all the various approaches just outlined are valid for different groups of traditions.

At this juncture a particularly relevant factor, pinpointed as long ago as 1894 by Ignatius Donnelly, claims attention. Donnelly noted:

> ...we find the legends of the primitive American Indians adhering quite closely to the events of the past, while the myths that survive at all among the civilised nations of Europe are found in garbled forms, and only among the peasantry of remote districts[1].

This distinction between traditions preserved by primitive and cultured peoples is of considerable importance, particularly as many readers will appreciate that:

> Legend has one great foe to its perpetuation – civilisation. Civilisation brings with it a contempt for everything which it cannot understand; skepticism becomes the synonym for intelligence; men no longer repeat – they doubt, they dissect, they sneer, they reject, they invent. If the myth survives this treatment, the poets take it up and make it their stock-in-trade – they decorate it in a masquerade of frippery and finery, feathers and furbelows, like a clown dressed for a fancy ball; and the poor barbarian legend survives at last, if it survives at all, like the Conflagration in Ovid, or King Arthur in Tennyson – a hippopotamus smothered in flowers, jewels and laces...[2].

A further point concerns the superficial simplicity, even naivete, of many traditions. For the initial compilers and purveyors of traditions to convey in clear and unambiguous terms often quite elaborate original concepts and sagas to essentially illiterate mass audiences, it was necessary for these traditions to be presented in simplified or general form. The resultant statements were therefore frequently abrupt or terse, and tended to emphasise the more easily comprehended effects rather than technically complex causes – even assuming that those too were ever understood. Conversely, complicated

Table 3A

Geographical distribution of traditions of the Deluge and Great Catastrophe

A selection of the 500 or more known examples, compiled from numerous sources. The survivors of the Flood in all the legends range from a single individual to a small group. All seemed to have been forewarned of the impending disaster. They escaped by seeking high ground, trees, caves or by means of various objects which would float.

OLD WORLD

EUROPE

Britain: *Druidic*
Finland: *Finns*
Germany
Greece: *Ancient Greeks*
Iceland: *Norse sagas*
Italy: *Romans*
Lapland: *Lapps*
Lithuania
Russa: *Voguls*
Savoy
Scandinavia: *Norse traditions*
Sicily
Slavonia: *Slavs*
Spain
Transylvania
Wales: *Druidic Triads*
Asia
Afghanistan: *Afghans*
Andaman Islands
Arabia
Armenia
Assyria
Babylonia: *(Hasisadra* or *Xisuthrus), (Ut-Napishtim)*
Burma: *Chingpaws, Karens*
Cambodia & Lagos: *Bahnars, Bannavs*
Chaldea: *(Hasisadra)*
China: Yunnan: *Lolos*
India: Assam: *Ahoms, Anals, Lushais, Singpos;* Bengal: *Hos (Larka Kols), Kamars, Mumdas (Mundaris), Santahs;* Central India: *Bhilos, Kamars;* Kashmir: *Kashmiris*
Indonesia: Borneo (Kalimantan): *Ot-Danoms, Dusan, Dyaks;* Ceram: *Alfoors;* Sumatra: *Bataks, Engano, Nias;* Timor: *Roth;* W. Irian: *Mamberano*
Japan
Malaysia: *Benna Jakim, Kelantan*
Mergui Archipelago: *Selungs*
Mongolia
Palestine: *Phoenicians, Hebrews (scriptural sources: Genesis, Exodus, Job, Josua & Revelations)*
Persia
Philippines
Phrygia (Anatolia)
Siberia: *Buriats, Tatars, Kalmaks*
Sikkim
Sri Lanka: *Kalyani*
Sumer
Syria
Taiwan (Formosa): *Ami, Bunun and aboriginal tribes*
Tibet: *Lepcha*
Turkestan: *Bokharas, Tatars*

AFRICA

Bantu
Basutto (probably borrowed)
Bermagai
Carthaginians
Egyptians (several versions)
Hottentots
Kangas
Loangas
Massai (probably borrowed)
Ovahereros
Somalis
Sudanese
Wanyoros

AUSTRALASIA & OCEANIA

Australia: Queenslandl: *Aborigines;* Victoria: *Kurnai, L. Tyres tribe*
New Zealand: *Maori*
Papua
Ocіania: Micronesia, Melanesia, Polynesia
Fiji: *Fijians*
Hawaii: *Hawaiians*
Hudson Islands: *Nanumanghan*
Leeward Islands (incl. Tahiti)
Mangaia (Hervey) Islands
Marquesas Islands
New Hebrides
Pelew Islands
Samoa
Sandwich Islands
Society Islands

NEW WORLD

NORTH AMERICA

Aleuts (Aleutians)
Algonguins (incl. Foxes & Sacs)
Apaches (Arizona)
Arapaho
Ashochimi (California)
Athabascans (Canada)
Bella Coola (Canada)
Caddoque
Cayus
Cegiha
Cherokee
Chewkee
Chickasaws (Dakotas)
Chimakums (Washington)
Chippewa
Chocktaw (Oklahoma)
Cree (Canada)
Delaware
Dogrids (Canada)
Eskimo (Canada, Alaska, Greenland)
Gros-Ventres (Montana)
Haida (NW Pacific Coast)
Hareskin Indians (Canada)
Hopi (SW states USA)
Iroquois (North-east)
Kaska (Brit. Columbia)
Kathlamet
Kato (California)
Klamath (Oregon)
Kolush (Alaska)
Kinsteneax (Missouri)
Kootenay
Kwakiutls (NW Pacific Coast)
Lenni-Lenapes
Lilluets
Luisenos (California)
Loucheux (Dinjieh) (Brit. Columbia)
Maidu (California)
Maitaquais (Canada)
Makah (Washington)
Mandan
Muskwaki (Canada)
Natchez (Mississippi)
Nez-Perces
Ojidway (Canada)
Oraibi
Papagos (Arizona)
Pawnee
Pima (Arizona)
Quilentes (Washington)
Salishan (Okinagan) (Washington)
Shoshona (Colorado-Utah)
Slave Indians (Canada)
Snolionish (Puget Sound)
Snoqualmi (California)
South River Indians (California)
Southern Ute (California)
Taculli (Takahli) (Canada)
Tahoe Indians (Nevada)
Tchiglit (Tingit) (Alaska)
Thompson Indians (Canada)
Tinneh (several versions)
Tolowa (Oregon)
Tsimshian
Tuleyome Indians (California)
Ute (Colorado)
Washo (California)
Wichita (Oklahoma)
Wintun (California)
Wyandot
Yana (California)
Zuni (New Mexico)

CENTRAL AMERICA

Guatemala: *Maya*
Mexico: *Aztec, Maya, Mixtec, Toltec, Cora, Huichol, Michoacans, Tarahumare, Texpis, Zuni*
Nicaragua
Panama: *Cunas*
Salvador
Caribbean: *Caribs, Haitians*

SOUTH AMERICA

Argentina: *Araucanians, Tierra del Fuegans*
Brazil: *Aberderys, Bororo, Cabo Frio Indians, Caraga, Cashinaua, Caura, Chincha, Coroado (kainganag) Indians, Guarani, Ipuriana, Kataushy Indians, Maypures, Parray, Timanacs, Tupi*
Bolivia: *Yurucares*
Chile: *Araucas*
Colombia: *Chibcha* or *Muyscaya, Cuna*
Equador: *Carari, Jivaro*
Peru: *Chiriguana, Incas (several versions)*
Paraguay: *Mbocobi*
Venezuela: *Tamanaki*

VANISHED REGIONS

Atlantic: Atlantis
Central Asia: Gobi Sea
Indian Ocean: Lemuria
Arctic: Hyperborea
Pacific: Mu
North Africa: Tritonis

traditions (usually oriental) apparently developed to satisfy the more sophisticated tastes of court, temple and scholarly audiences – virtually the only educated elements in early societies – and mentioned causes (if at all) usually in allegorical or more specific terms.

Bearing these factors in mind we may now consider the general abundance, distribution and character of these ancient recollections of a huge world disaster. These, we shall find, mention numerous aspects and local details such as could be hardly imagined or invented had they not actually been witnessed or experienced. This feature of the traditions will become particularly prominent in Part Five of this book.

It is uncertain how many separate catastrophe traditions exist, although the total certainly amounts to many hundreds. They are broadly divisible into those which describe a terrible conflagration, and those which record an all-embracing flood, usually identified with Noah's Deluge. In almost every case, the conflagration is said to have preceded the flood, which then extinguished it.

With the exception of Antarctica, catastrophe traditions are known from every continent, the Americas furnishing the largest number and Africa the fewest (table 3A). Their geographical distribution reveals the absurdity of the efforts made in some quarters to show that the Deluge traditions were entirely derived from the scriptural story of Noah as disseminated by Christian missionaries. As a general explanation it fails miserably. Yet the notion of a vast flood was evidently so ingrained in human memory that it could not be forgotten[3]. It must, therefore, have been an event either of the most recent past or of exceptional proportions and severity.

An important feature in many of these traditions is that the cause of these calamities was one or more cosmic bodies, which in simple terms engaged in a 'war in heaven'. That such a seemingly preposterous idea is common in so many different legends raises the question as to why numerous often-unrelated peoples should even share such a remembrance when no such celestial 'war' has been observed in historical times. The only conclusion that can be arrived at is that the disaster described in these traditions did actually occur, and made such an indelible impression upon the few survivors of the event that accounts of it were carefully preserved down to our own times as the most enduring of memories.

In reviewing the cataclysmic saga represented by these legends, we shall briefly examine each of the main themes individually, as exemplified below.

2

CONFLAGRATION

The effects produced by a great world conflagration accompanying huge tectonic upheavals are graphically described in many traditions and written accounts, such as that bequeathed to us by Ovid. Ovid tells how a celestial body, called *Phaeton*, approaches Earth so that:

> The earth bursts into flame, the highest parts first, and splits into deep cracks, and its moisture is all dried up. The meadows are burned to white ashes; the trees are consumed, green leaves and all, and the ripe grain furnishes fuel for its own destruction... great cities perish with their

> walls and vast conflagration reduces whole nations to ashes[4].*

In his work *Theogony*, the classical Greek writer Hesiod clearly described the effects of this great conflagration which, preceding the Flood, was attributed to a celestial body called *Typhon* (another name for Phaeton). Another writer, Apollodorus, furnished further details stating that Typhon:

> ...out-topped all the mountains, and his head often brushed the stars... Such and so great was Typhon when, hurling kindled rocks, he made for the very heaven with hissing and shouts, spouting a great jet of fire from his mouth... at Mount Haemus he heaved whole mountains... a stream of blood gushed out of the mountain[5].

The Typhon legend was especially connected with pre-dynastic Egypt, where Typhon was also called *Set*[6], another name for the biblical *Satan*. The Roman writer, Pliny, described Typhon:

> A terrible comet was seen by the people of Ethiopia and Egypt, to which Typhon, the king of that period, gave his name; it had a fiery appearance and was twisted like a coil, and it was very grim to behold; it was not really a star so much as what might be called a ball of fire[7].†

Strabo records that the Egyptian shore of the Red Sea was once called Typhonia[8]. Interestingly, an old Arab tradition asserts that: "...the Red Sea is simply water that did not dry up after Noah's Deluge"[9].

Other effects produced by the great heat associated with this conflagration are common to many flood traditions. For example, from Persia, we have the statement that: "The sea boiled, and all the shores of the ocean boiled, and all of the middle of it boiled"[10]. The cause of this heating was ascribed to the 'star' *Tistrya*, "the leader of the stars against the planets"[11] – note that more than one 'star' is indicated; and it was accompanied by an incredibly violent hurricane[12]. In another tradition, Tistrya: "...let a stream of fire flow toward the earth... (and) filled our world with its devouring heat"[13].

Several North American traditions refer specifically to the phenomenon of superheated water: "Great clouds appeared... such a great heat came, that finally the water boiled. People jumped into the streams and lakes to cool themselves, and died"[14]. Further south, on the Pacific coast, other Amerindian legends state that: "It grew very hot... many animals jumped into the water to save themselves, but the water began to boil"[15]. Although initially somewhat fanciful, these assertions will later be found to be entirely consistent with the chain of physical effects that such an appalling calamity must inevitably have engendered.

---

* See *Note 4*. † See *Note 5*.

3

FLOOD

According to several traditions, there were two floods – the Flood of Deucalion and the Flood of Ogyges[16] – and many writers, both ancient and modern, confused by this, have tried to determine when these floods actually occurred. Was Noah's Deluge the Deucalion or the Ogygian Flood? Did the latter occur in the 5th millennium BC, and was the Flood of Deucalion an earlier event? Commyns Beaumont (Appian Way) is emphatic on this point:

> ...The story of Phaeton is undoubtedly the account of a very remarkable celestial event, which left behind it certain terrestrial effects. Tatian, Clement and Eusebius all agreed that the Phaeton event was identical with the Deucalion flood.[17]

The *Genesis* account of Noah's Deluge is, perhaps, the most familiar of all known Flood traditions, although when compared with other versions of the event it is obviously incomplete. It also gives no inkling as to its real cause, merely stating that it was divinely ordained. The *Book of Revelation*, however, associates the catastrophe with Satan as the cause of this[18], adding that, after a 'war in heaven', Satan was "cast out of heaven onto Earth", whereupon a great flood issued from his mouth and drowned the whole world.

The great Babylonian epic of Gilgamesh, from which the Biblical account of Noah's Flood is derived, or shared a common origin[19], contains details not included in the *Genesis* version. It refers to a great "hail from heaven" and a tremendous whirlwind or cyclone which "swept up to heaven" accompanying a flood that "swiftly mounted up... to the mountains"[20]. Sanskrit versions allude to the same effects[21].

Other flood traditions, examined more fully later, describe the Deluge as a veritable water-mountain, as a stupendous wall of water, or as an irresistible foaming watery avalanche. Few, if any, liken it to an ordinary, steadily rising, riverine flood. It was something special.

4

CELESTIAL DISORDER

In Ovid's account of this catastrophe, we learn that the Chariot of the Sun, driven by Phaeton, moved "no longer in the same course as before", that the horses pulling it broke "loose from their course" and "rushed aimlessly, knocking against the stars set deep in the sky and snatching the chariot through uncharted ways", and that the constellations of the Cold Bears tried to plunge into the ocean[22].

This description of stellar movement is exactly what an observer on Earth would see if the geographical poles were moving or, put another way, if an axial tilt was in progress. That this is what Ovid implied, is borne out later in his account when he wrote how Phaeton complained:

> ...the heavens are carried round with a constant rotation, carrying with them the lofty stars, and whirl them with rapid motion. Against this I have to contend; and that force which overcomes all other things does not overcome me, and I am carried in a contrary direction to the rapid world.[23]

Ancient Chinese texts also apparently confirm an axial derangement:

> ...the pillars supporting the sky crumbled and the chains from which the earth was suspended shivered to pieces. Sun, moon and stars poured down into the north-west, where the sky became low; rivers, seas and oceans rushed down to the south-east, where the earth sank. A great conflagration burst out. Flood raged. Wild beasts and terrible birds made men their prey...[24]

On the other side of the world, the Pawnee Indians of America preserved essentially similar memories of a remote time when the North Polar star and the South Polar star "changed places" or "went to visit each other"[25]; while, further north, the Greenland Eskimos informed early missionaries that ages ago the Earth "turned over"[26].

The consequence of a tilting of the terrestrial axis, as suggested in these traditions, would mean the displacement of the world's oceans. Several traditions actually refer to such dreadful effects:

> The ocean, too, is contracted, and that which lately was sea is a surface of parched sand, and the mountains which the deep sea has covered start up and increase the number of scattered Cyclades [islands]; the fishes sink to the bottom, and the crooked dolphins do not care to raise themselves on the surface for air as usual. The bodies of the sea-calves float lifeless on their backs on the top of the water.[27]

And:

> Why do the seas delivered to him by lot decrease, and why do they recede still farther from the sky? ...look around on either side, see how each pole is smoking; and if the fire shall injure them, thy palace will fall in ruins. See! Atlas himself is struggling, and hardly can he bear the glowing heavens on his shoulders.[28]

Another interesting account of world devastation is found in the ancient Norse texts, the *Elder Edda* and the *Prose Edda*, in the saga known as *Ragnarok*. The name itself is significant for, according to Anderson[29], it means 'the darkness of the gods'. However, Donnelly suggested that it could also mean *regn* = rain, and *rok* = smoke or dust, hence 'rain of dust' – the rain of dust, ashes, sand and stones mentioned in numerous legends from other countries[30].

This Norse saga implies, like Ovid's account, that at least two bodies were involved in the catastrophe, and passed close to Earth 'devouring' the sun and the moon:

Then happens that which will seem a great miracle;
That the wolf devours the sun, and this will seem a great loss.
The other wolf devours the moon,
And this, too, will cause great mischief.
The stars shall be hurled from heaven.

The effect of this 'mischief' was:

Then it shall come to pass that the earth will shake so violently
That the trees will be torn up by the roots,
The mountains will topple down,
And all bonds and fetters will be broken and snapped.
The Fenris-wolf (the name given to one of the assailants) *gets loose.*
The sea rushes over the earth,
For the Midgård-serpent (the name of the other assailant) *writhes in giant rage,*
And seeks to gain the land.

and: "*As they ride over Bifrost it breaks to pieces...*" (*Elder Edda*).

The location of *Bifrost* is uncertain, but later we will suggest its possible former geographical site.

Another important point in Ovid's account concerns Phaeton's direction of flight when nearest Earth:*

> The moon, too, wonders that her brother's horses run lower than her own, and the scorched clouds send forth smoke.[31]

With the result that Phaeton's 'chariot' (apparently a cosmic companion) disintegrates:

> ...But the omnipotent father, having called the gods to witness, and him, too, who had given the chariot to Phaeton, that unless he gives assistance all things will perish in direful ruin, mounts aloft to the highest eminence... from which he moves his thunders, and hurls the brandished lightnings.
>
> He thundered aloud, and darted the poised lightning from his right ear, against the charioteer, and at the same moment deprived him both of life and his seat, and by his ruthless fires restrained the flames. The horses are afrighted, and, making a bound in the opposite direction, they shake the yoke from their necks, and disengage

---

* See *Note 6*.

> themselves from the torn harness. In one place lie the reins, in another the axle-tree wrenched from the pole, in another part are the spokes of the broken wheels, and the fragments of the chariot torn in pieces are scattered far and wide. But Phaeton, the flames consuming his yellow hair, is hurled headlong, and is borne on a track through the air, as sometimes a star is seen to fall from the serene sky, although it really has not fallen[32].

This disintegration is remembered in many traditions. The Ute Indians of California state that it was the result of a conflict between two brilliant celestial bodies named *Ta-vi* and *Ta-wats*. Ta-vi, like Phaeton, is alleged to have roamed the heavens on an erratic course, but when it approached too close to Ta-wats a fight ensued and:

> ...the sun was shivered into a thousand fragments, which fell to earth causing a general conflagration. Then Ta-wats fled before the destruction he had wrought, and as he fled the burning earth consumed his feet, consumed his legs, consumed his body, consumed his hands and arms – all were consumed but the head alone, which bowled across valleys and over mountains, fleeing destruction from the burning earth, until at last, swollen with heat, the eyes of the god burst and the tears gushed forth in a flood which spread over the earth and extinguished the fire.[33]

That portions of objects engaged in celestial conflict fell to Earth is contained in many early traditions and writings. Herodotus states that the final struggle between Typhon and Zeus occurred over the coastal route from Egypt to Palestine[34]. Referring to Syrian memories of this drama, Strabo wrote that Typhon: "...when struck by the bolts of lightning fled in search of a descent underground"[35]. However, Apollonius Rhodius states that: "...smitten by the bolt of Zeus, [Typhon] lies whelmed beneath the waters of the Serbonian lake"[36].

Another facet recorded in some traditions concerns the fearful noise that accompanied this disintegration. A very early Arabian tradition mentions how the legendary 'Irem of the Columns' was, in one fateful day, destroyed by a thunderous noise and fiery blast from heaven[37]. Hindu texts contain another reference to these aerial explosions: "...the 'boar-form' (Phaeton) suddenly uttered a sound like the loudest thunder, and the echo reverberated and shook all the quarters of the Universe"[38].

5

TERRESTRIAL CHAOS

That Phaeton caused major changes to world topography is mentioned by many traditions. The Samoan islanders, for instance, assert that:

> ...The sea ...arose, and in a stupendous catastrophe of nature the land sank into the sea... The new earth [the Samoan Islands] arose out of the womb of the last earth.[39]

Likewise a Tahitian tradition states:

> In ancient times *Taaroa*, the principal god, according to their mythology, the creator of the world, being angry with

> men on account of their disobedience to his will, overturned the world into the sea, when the earth sank into the water, excepting a few *aurus* [projecting points] which remained above its surface, constituting the present clusters of islands.[40]

The last two traditions suggest that these Pacific islands were once part of a large now-vanished continent. A pre-Columbian Maya manuscript, known as the *Troana Codex*, apparently describes its destruction:

> ...there occurred terrible earthquakes, which continued without interruption until the 13th Chuen. The country of the hills of mud, the land of Mu, was sacrificed: being twice upheaved it suddenly disappeared during the night, the basin being continually shaken by the volcanic forces. Being confined, these caused the land to sink, and to rise several times in various places. At last the surface gave way and ten countries were torn asunder and scattered. Unable to stand the force of the convulsion, they sank with their 64,000,000 of inhabitants 8060 years before the writing of this book.[41]

Although little credence is usually given to this account, Hawaiian traditions maintain:

> The belief of the Hawaiians of ancient times was that there was one great continent, stretching from Hawaii, including Samoa, Lalakoa (the Hawaiian version of Rarotonga) and reaching as far as New Zealand, also taking in Fiji, and there were some lowlands in between these higher lands. All this was called by one name *Ka-houpo-o-Kane*, the Solar-Plexus of Kane, and was also called *Moana-nui-kai-oo*, the Great Engulfing Ocean.[42]*

The Mixtecs of Mexico in their myths speak of a now-vanished land to the east of the present American coast:

> ...In a single day all was lost, even the mountains sank into the water... subsequently there came a great deluge in which many of the sons and daughters of the gods perished.[43]

This reference to the submergence of extensive land in the Atlantic Ocean suggests that it might have been the Atlantis of Plato's *Timaeus* and *Critias*. In a lengthy narrative, Plato wrote:

> The ocean (Atlantic) there was at that time navigable; for in front of the mouth which you Greeks call, as you say, 'the Pillars of Heracles', there lay an island which was larger than Libya and Asia (Asia Minor) together; and it was possible for the travellers of that time to cross from it to the other islands, and from the islands to the whole of the continent over against them which encompasses that veritable ocean... Yonder is a real ocean, and the land surrounding it may most rightly be called, in the fullest and truest sense, a continent. Now in this island of Atlantis there existed a confederation of kings, a great and marvellous power, which held sway over all the island, and over many other islands also and parts of the continent; and, moreover, of the lands here within the Straits (of Gibraltar) they ruled over Libya as far as Egypt and over Europe as far as Tuscany...
>
> At a later time there occurred portentous earthquakes and floods, and one grievous day and night befell them, when the whole body of... the island of Atlantis was swallowed up by the sea and vanished; wherefore also the ocean at that spot has now become impassable and unsearchable, being blocked up by the shoal mud which the island created as it settled down.[44]

Referring to this last statement, Babcock remarked: "It must be evident that Plato would not have written thus unless he relied on the established general repute of that part of the ocean for difficulty of navigation[45].

---

* See *Note 7*.

References to what may also have been a former continent in the Indian Ocean occur in several south Asian traditions. One from Sri Lanka avers:

> ...in a former age the citadel of Rawana, 25 palaces and 400,000 streets were swallowed by the sea... The submerged land was between Tuticoreen and Manaar, and Manaar is all that is now left of what was once a large territory. This legend, notwithstanding the manifest exaggeration as to the extent of the injury, may be founded on fact, as the Hindu and other nations have a similar tradition, and suppose that 'Ceylon was then much larger than it is at present'.[46]

Even the Selungs of the Mergui Archipelago (off southern Burma) refer to such a continent:

> ...formerly their country was of continental dimensions. But the daughter of an evil spirit threw many rocks into the sea. Thereupon the waters rose and swallowed up all the land. Everything alive perished, except what was able to save itself on one island that remained above the waters. The forefathers of the Selungs then practised great magic and this caused the waters to fall. Then other islands arose which the Selungs have inhabited ever since.[47]

The impression gained from reading such traditions is one of actual eye-witness reports of the catastrophe. Thus the Kato Indians of California describe how:

> Every day it rained, every night it rained. All the people slept. The sky fell. The land was not. For a very great distance there was no land. The waters of the oceans came together. Animals of all kinds drowned. Where the water went there were no trees... Human beings and animals alike had been washed away... It was very dark...[48]

Among the Hopi Indians of the American south-west are echoes of a similar memory in which, rather interestingly, there is, as also implied in *Genesis*[67], mention of violent seismic activity. The account asserts that the 'big water serpent deity' was angry and:

> ...turned the world upside down, and water spouted up through the *kivas* [sunken sacred dwellings] and through the fireplaces of houses. The earth was rent in great chasms, and water covered everything except one narrow ridge of mud; and across this the serpent deity told all the people to travel. As they journeyed across, the feet of the bad slipped and they fell into the dark water, but the good, after many days, reached dry land...[49]

Although mainly localised, many traditions clearly refer to great seismic activity. For example, from Peru we learn:

> Legend says that in those days of the jaguar-faced gods called *huaca*, the Andes were split apart and the *callejon* was formed, when the sky made war on the earth.[50]

And from Brazil:

> The lightnings flashed and the thunders roared terribly and all were afraid. Then the heaven burst and the fragments fell down and killed everything and everybody. Heaven and Earth changed places. Nothing that had life was left upon the earth.[51]

Perhaps the most remarkable of all such records is that of the Zuni Indians, which graphically describes the aftermath of the catastrophe:

> As it was with the men and the creatures, so it was with the world. It was young and unripe. Unstable its surface was, like that of a marsh; dank, even the high places like the floors of a cavern, so that seeds dropped on it sprang forth, and even

the substance of offal became growing things.

Earthquakes shook the world and rent it... Creatures turned fierce, becoming beasts of prey, wherefore others turned timid, becoming their quarry; wretchedness and hunger abounded, black magic, war and contention entered when fear did into the hearts of men and creatures. Yea, fear was everywhere among them, wherefore, everywhere the people, hugging in dread their precious possessions, became wanderers... living on the seeds of grasses, eaters of the dead and slain things..!

Dread was the din and stir. The heights staggered and the mountains reeled, the plains boomed and crackled under the floods and fires, and the high hollow places [caves], hugged of men and the creatures, were black and awful, so that these grew crazed with panic and strove alike to escape or to hide more deeply. But erewhile they grew deafened and deadened, forgetful and asleep. A tree lighted of lightning burns not long.

Presently thick rain fell, quenching the fires; and waters washed the face of the world, cutting deep trains from the heights downward, and scattered abroad the wrecks and corpses of stricken things and beings, or burying them deeply. Lo! they are seen in the mountains to this day; and, in the trails of those fierce waters, cool rivers now run, and where monsters perished lime of their bones [*aluwe* – calcareous nodules in malpais or volcanic tuff: F H Cushing] we find, and use in food stuff. Gigantic they were, for their forms little or great were often shrivelled or contorted into stone. Seen are these also along the depths of the world. Where they huddled together and were blasted thus, their blood gushed forth and flowed deeply [due to sudden raising of temperatures to abnormal levels rupturing blood vessels?], here in rivers, there in floods; but it was charged and blistered and blackened by fires, into the black rocks of the lower *mesas apkwina*, lava or malpais: F H Cushing].

There were vast plains of dust, ashes and cinders, reddened as in the mud of a hearth-place. There were great banks of clay and soil burned to hardness – as clay is when baked in the kiln-mound – blackened, bleached or stained yellow, grey, red or white, streaked and banded, bended or twisted. Worn and broken by the heavings of the underworld and by the waters and breaths of the ages, they are the mountain-terraces of the Earth-Mother, 'dividing country from country'. Yet many were the places behind and between these – dark canyons, deep valleys, sunken plains – unharmed by the fires, where they swerved or rolled higher – as, close to the track of a forest fire, green grow trees and grasses, and even flowers continue to bloom. Therein... tarried the people. Dry and more stable was the world now, less fearsome its lonely places; since changed to rock were so many monsters of prey, some shrivelled to the size of insects; made precious as amulets for the hunter and warrior, as told in other talks of our ancient speech".[52]

Prof J W Gregory recorded native folklore from all along the Great Rift Valley in Africa, which refers to a remote period characterised by immense physical changes. He observed:

> ...The Somali say that when their ancestors crossed from Arabia to Africa there was a land connection between the two, across the Straits of Bab-el-Mandeb. The natives of Ujiji, at the southern end of the line, have a folklore that goes back to the time when Lake Tanganyika was formed by the flooding of a fertile plain, rich in cattle and plantations... There is geological evidence to show that great earth movements have happened along this Rift Valley, as it may be termed, at a *recent* date, which makes it distinctly probable that these traditions are recollections of geographical changes.[53] (Our italics).

6

DARKNESS

Many catastrophe traditions refer to the coming of unnaturally prolonged darkness. The Central American Aztecs preserved such an account:

> The third sun is called *Quia-Tonatiuh*, sun of rain, because there fell a rain of fire; all which existed burned; and there fell a rain of gravel. Now, this was in the year *Ce Tecpalt*, One Flint, it was the day *Nahui-Quiahuitl*, Fourth Rain. Now in this day, in which men were lost and destroyed in a rain of fire, they were transformed into goslings; the sun itself was on fire, and everything, together with the houses was consumed.[54]
>
> ....a tremendous hurricane that carried away trees, mounds, houses and the largest edifices, notwithstanding which many men and women escaped, principally in caves and places where the great hurricane could not reach them. All this time they were in darkness, without seeing the light of the sun, nor the moon, that the wind had brought them.[55]

And:

> After the destruction of the fourth sun, the world plunged into darkness during the space of twenty-five years. Amid this profound obscurity, ten years before the appearance of the fifth sun, mankind was regenerated.[56]

In British Columbia, Canada, the Akawais remember in their traditions a period of prolonged darkness, and the intense cold it caused, at the time of an immense world-sculpting flood[57].

Commenting on this phenomenon de Bourbourg remarked:

> A vast night reigned over all the American land, of which tradition speaks unanimously: in a sense the sun no longer existed for this ruined world which was lighted up at intervals only by frightful conflagrations, revealing the full horror of their situation to the small number of human beings that had escaped from these calamities.[58]*

Japanese and Hawaiian traditions recall a time of continuous darkness too[59]. An ancient Hawaiian rhyme runs:

> ***The earth is dancing...***
> ***Let darkness cease...***
> ***The heavens are enclosing...***
> ***Finished is the world of Hawaii.***[60]

In Samoan traditions low clouds appear to have enveloped the world and plunged it into darkness. It was during this period that the islands of Samoa, Tonga, Rotuma, Wallis and Fotuna were upheaved from the bed of the ocean[61]. During these events, the Samoans insist that the "heavens fell down" and were so low that people could not stand upright without touching them – a belief also held by Amerindian nations and the Dusan tribe of Borneo[62].

* See *Note 8*.

7

HAIL AND FIRE

Several traditions associate great falls of hail, ice, fire, dust and other substances with the aforementioned calamities, and clearly accord them celestial origins. Thus, in one account we read:

> And every island fled away and the mountains were not found. And there fell upon men a great hail out of heaven, every stone about the weight of a talent: and men blasphemed God because of the plague of hail; for the plague thereof was exceeding great.[63]

These were not icy hailstones, but probably the 'stones of barad' crashing out of the sky and mentioned in the *Book of Joshua*. But the coming of ice is referred to in the *Old Testament*:

From whose womb did the ice come forth,
And who has given birth to the hoarfrost
of heaven?
The water became hard like stone,
And the face of the deep is frozen.[64]

From Finland, the epic *Kalevala* describes falls of 'hailstones of iron' from the sky when the sun and moon had 'disappeared', and the world was sprinkled with 'red milk'[65]. This 'red milk' or 'blood' appears in many other legends (*eg*, Mount Haemus) relating to this catastrophe and appears to have a scientific explanation, which will be referred to later.*

It would seem that the ancients considered the destruction of Adamite man to have come from heaven in the form of fire, torrential rain, stones and ice.

---

* See *Note 9*.

8

ICE-BOUND

As previously mentioned, the formation of widespread ice was indicated in the *Old Testament*. More interestingly the Norse sagas provide fuller details of the onset of such conditions *following* the departure or demise of the Fenris Wolf and Midgård Serpent:

> First there is a winter called the Fimbul winter, the mighty, the great, the iron winter, when snow drives from all quarters, the frosts are so severe, the winds so keen, that there is no joy in the sun. There are three such winters in succession, without any intervening summer... as soon as the streams that are called *Elivogs* [rivers from under ice] had come so far that the venomous yeast which flowed with them hardened, as does dross that runs from the fire, then it turned into ice. And when this ice stopped and flowed no more, then gathered over it the drizzling rain that arose from the venom and froze into rime, and one layer of ice was laid upon another

clear into *Ginungagap*. All that part of Ginungagap that turns to the north was filled with thick and heavy ice and rime, and everywhere within were drizzling rain and gusts. But the south part of Ginungagap was lightened up by the glowing sparks that flew out of Muspelheim. (*Prose Edda*).

Again, the location of Ginungagap is uncertain. It may, however, have stretched from Norway to the north and west, or connected Greenland and Vinland (North America)[66].*

Numerous other traditions could be cited which refer to a period of sudden grim cold afflicting early Man, although those mentioned must suffice.

* See *Note 10.*

9

THE TRADITIONS ASSESSED

Undoubtedly the scientific acceptability of these ancient recollections as genuine evidence for the reality of former events is decidedly limited, since by their very nature they are inherently unscientific. Nevertheless, these same memories, when assessed collectively, consistently appear to describe a most amazing episode of Earth history upon which orthodoxy, represented by astronomy, geology and archaeology, has so far remained largely silent. It is, in fact, this internal consistency of these memories which – irrespective of the original geographical or cultural source of the material – is so impressive. Whatever else may be thought of these traditions it is certain that they cannot just be swept aside as being of no consequence, for, within their limitations, they constitute an eloquent testimony to a truly momentous chapter of events. Consider, for example, the Deluge.

It has often been argued that the many Deluge traditions actually derive from a single original version, later disseminated worldwide. As shown more fully in Part Four, several accounts, referring to either Autumnal or Vernal elements, indicate the season of the Deluge's occurrence. Autumn in the northern hemisphere is Springtime in the southern. Only truly independent recollections would contain such superficially contradictory yet geographically correct details. Records of *this* kind also strongly emphasise the genuinely global extent of this watery calamity.

Table 3B summarises major issues traceable in the traditions globally. If these traditions constitute racial memories and eye-witness accounts of the same enormous topographical changes as have been discussed in Part One, and the terrible biological extinctions and decimations reviewed in Part Two, they represent highly important supplementary records of those calamitous events. Indeed, they form the third prong of a trident-like register comprising geology/palaeontology, botany/zoology and tradition/legend. That all three tell virtually the same story is surely not fortuitous!

Table 3B

Traditions specifying particular catastrophic effects. Europe and Asia

Aerial falls: hail, gold, gravel, stones, dust	Aerial falls: combustible/resinous materials	Aerial falls: ferruginous substances	Effects on vegetation	Axial/rotational changes	Boiling rivers/lakes/oceans	Break-up and fall of celestial visitor	Collapsed sky	The coming of ice	Conflagration/firestorm	Cyclonic winds	Deluge/flood	Description of celestial visitor	Lightning	Poisoned atmosphere	Prolonged darkness	Steam	Stellar derangement	Thunder/noise/din	Topographical changes	Records of lost lands and lakes	References to pre-Diluvian civilisation		
☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	■	■	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	BRITAIN: Druids	**EUROPE**
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	RUSSIA: Voguls	
■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	FINLAND: Finns	
■	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	■	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	Apollodorus	
☐	☐	■	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	■	■	☐	☐	☐	■	■	■	☐	☐	Hesiod	HELLENIC authors
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	■	■	Plato	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	■	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	various	
■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	■	☐	ICELAND: Voluspa	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	IRELAND	
☐	☐	☐	☐	■	■	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	■	■	☐	■	☐	■	■	■	■	■	ITALY: various authors	
☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	LAPPLAND: Lapps	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	LITHUANIA	
■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	■	☐	■	■	■	■	■	■	■	■	■	☐	☐	SCANDINAVIA: *Eddas*	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	SPAIN	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	TRANSYLVANIA	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	WALES: *Triads*	
■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	Coptic	**RELIGIOUS SOURCES**
■	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	Hebrew	
■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	Muslim	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	AFGHANISTAN: Afghans	**ASIA**
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	ANDAMAN ISLANDS	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	ARABIA	
■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	■	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	BABYLONIA & ASSYRIA	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	■	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	BORNEO	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	BURMA: Chingpaws	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	CAMBODIA/LAOS	
☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	■	☐	■	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	CHINA	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	TAIWAN: Banum	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	■	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	■	☐	INDIA: several accounts	
☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	■	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	INDONESIA: Dusan	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	CERAM	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	FLORES	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	SUMATRA: Bataks	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	TIMOR	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	W. IRIAN	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	JAPAN	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	MALAYSIA	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	■	■	MERGUI ARCH: Selungs	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	MONGOLIA	
■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	PALESTINE: Jews	
☐	☐	☐	■	☐	■	☐	☐	■	■	■	■	■	☐	■	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	PERSIA	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	PHILIPPINES	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	SIBERIA: Buriats	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	SIKKIM	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	■	SRI LANKA: Kalyani	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	SUMER	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	TIBET: Lepcha	

Table 3B (Continued)

Traditions specifying particular catastrophic effects.

The Americas

Aerial falls: hail, gold, gravel, stones, dust	Aerial falls: combustible/resinous materials	Aerial falls: ferruginous substances	Effects on vegetation	Axial/rotational changes	Boiling rivers/lakes/oceans	Break-up and fall of celestial visitor	Collapsed sky	The coming of ice	Conflagration/firestorm	Cyclonic winds	Deluge/flood	Description of celestial visitor	Lightning	Poisoned atmosphere	Prolonged darkness	Steam	Stellar derangement	Thunder/noise/din	Topographical changes	Records of lost lands and lakes	References to pre-Diluvian civilisation		
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	ALASKA: Kolushes	**NORTH AMERICA**
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	■	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	Tlinkits	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	ALEUTIAN Is	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	ARIZONA: Papagos	
☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	Pawnees	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	Pimas	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	■	☐	■	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	BR COLUMBIA: Kaska	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	Loucheux	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	■	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	■	☐	☐	Okanagan	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	CALIFORNIA: Katos	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	■	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	Southern Utes	
☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	■	■	☐	■	■	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	Wintun	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	COLORADO: Utes	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	DAKOTAS: Chickasaws	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	Delaware Indians	
☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	GREENLAND: Eskimos	
☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	■	NEVADA: Tahoe Indians	
■	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	■	☐	☐	NEW MEXICO: Zunis	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	N.W. PACIFIC COAST: Haida	
☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	■	☐	■	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	OKLAHOMA: Chocktaws	
☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	S.W. STATES: Hopi	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	WASHINGTON: Chimakums	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	Chippewas	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	Makahs	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	Mandans	
☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	Quilentes	
■	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	■	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	MEXICO/: Aztec	**MESO-AMERICA**
☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	■	■	■	■	GUATEMALA: Maya	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	■	■	Mixtec	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	CARIBBEAN: Caribs	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	NICARAGUA	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	ARGENTINA: Araucanians	**SOUTH AMERICA**
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	BRAZIL: Aberdervs	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	Botocudos	
☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	■	☐	☐	Cashinaua	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	Coroado	
☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	■	■	☐	☐	Ipurianas	
☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	Kataushi	
☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	■	■	☐	☐	Parrays	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	Tupis/Guaranis	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	BOLIVIA: Yurucares	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	COLOMBIA: Chibchas	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	EQUADOR: Cararis	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	GUIANAS: Caribs	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	Macusis	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	PANAMA: Cunas	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	PARAGUAY: Mbocobi	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	■	☐	■	☐	☐	PERU: several accounts	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	VENEZUELA	

Table 3B (Continued)

Traditions specifying particular catastrophic effects. Australasia, Oceania and Africa

Aerial falls: hail, gold, gravel, stones, dust	Aerial falls: combustible/resinous materials	Aerial falls: ferruginous substances	Effects on vegetation	Axial/rotational changes	Boiling rivers/lakes/oceans	Break-up and fall of celestial visitor	Collapsed sky	The coming of ice	Conflagration/firestorm	Cyclonic winds	Deluge/flood	Description of celestial visitor	Lightning	Poisoned atmosphere	Prolonged darkness	Steam	Stellar derangement	Thunder/noise/din	Topographical changes	Records of lost lands and lakes	References to pre-Diluvian civilisation		
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	AUSTRALIA: Aborigines	**AUSTRALASIA & OCEANIA**
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	Kurnia	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	Lake Tyers Tribe	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	FIJI	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	■	■	☐	HAWAII	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	LEEWARD Is: Tahitians	
☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	■	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	■	☐	☐	NEW ZEALAND: Maoris	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	PAPUA	
☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	■	☐	■	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	SAMOA	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	POLYNESIA: general	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	Bantus	**AFRICA**
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	Bermagai	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	Egyptians	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	Hottentots	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	Kangas	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	Loangas	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	Masai & Basutos	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	Ovahereros	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	Somalis	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	■	☐	■	☐	☐	Sudanese	
☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	■	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	Wanyoros	

REFERENCES

1. Donnelly, I. 1894. *Ragnarok: The Age of Fire and Gravel* (New York), vi + 452pp; p117.
2. Donnelly, I. 1894. *Ibid.*
3. Kalisch, M M. 1858. *A Historical and Critical Commentary on the Old Testament: Genesis* (London), viii + 780pp; p205.
4. Miller, F J (transl). 1916. Ovid, P. *Metamorphoses* (London & New York); see Book 11, fable 1.
5. Frazer, J G (transl). 1921. Apollodorus *Mythulogica*, 2 vols (London).
6. Babbitt, F C. 1936. Plutarch *Isis and Osiris*, 5 vols, (London & Harvard Univ Press); vol 5, pp41,49.
7. Rackham, H (transl). 1938. Pliny the Elder *Natural History*, 10 vols, (London); vol ii, p91.
8. Jones, H L (transl). 1924. Strabo *The Geography*, 8 vols, (London); vol vii, 3, 8.
9. Gregory, J W. 1896. *The Great Rift Valley* (London), xxi + 422pp; p325.
10. Darmesteter, J (transl). 1883. *Zend-Avesta: The Vendidad*, 3 vols, (Oxford); pt 11, p95.
11. Darmesteter, J (transl). 1883. *Op cit*; p95.
12. Gray, L H (ed). 1917. A J Carnoy in *The Mythology of All Races*, 13 vols, (Boston); vol vi, pp268ff.
13. Cumont, F. 1931. "La Fin du monde selon les mages occidentaux", *Rev de l'histoire des religions*, p41.
14. Teit, J A. 1917. "Kaska Tales", *J Am Folk*, vol xxx, p440.
15. Alexander, H B. 1916. *North American Mythology* (New York), xxiv + 325pp; p25.
16. Eusebius, P. 1913. *Werke* (Leipzig), tr by R.Helm, 8 vols; vol v, "Die Chronik".
    Frazer, J G. 1918. *Folklore in the Old Testament* (London), 3 vols; vol 1, p159.
17. Way, A. 1924. *The Riddle of the Earth* (London), 251pp; chap xi, pp160–161.

18. *Book of Revelation.* Chap 6, v12–16; Chap 7, v2; Chap 8, v5, 7–12; Chap 9, v1–13, 17–19; Chap 10, v6; Chapt 12, v7–9, 15–16.
19. Kellett, E E. 1927. *The Story of Myths* (London), 275pp; p27.
20. Gadd, C J. *The Babylonian Story of the Deluge and the Epic of Gilgamesh* (Brit Mus, London), 57pp.
21. Suryakanta, S. 1950. *The Flood Legend in Sanskrit Literature*, 4 vols (Delhi).
22. Miller, F J (transl). 1916. *Ibid.*
23. Miller, F J (transl). 1916. *Ibid.*
24. Chi, T. 1946. *A Short History of Chinese Civilisation* (London), 335pp; pp14–15.
25. Dorsey, G A. 1906. *Pawnee Mythology* (Washington), 546pp; pt 1, p35.
26. Olrik, A. 1922. *Ragnarok* (Cologne), German edn, xvi + 484pp; p407.
27. Miller, F J (transl). 1916. *Loc cit.*
28. Miller, F J (transl). 1916. *Ibid.*
29. Anderson, R B. 1888. *Norse Mythology* (Chicago), 473pp; p416.
30. Donnelly, I. 1895. *Op cit*; see p141.
31. Miller, F J (transl). 1916. *Ibid.*
32. Miller, F J (transl). 1916. *Ibid.*
33. Powell, J W. 1879. *Pop Sci Mon.*
    Powell, J W. 1881. "Sketch of the Mythology of the North American Indians", *Rep Bur Am Ethnol*, Washington, 1st report 1879–1880; pp17–56.
34. Rawlinson, H (transl). 1889. Herodotus *Historia*, 4 vols, (London); vol iii, p5.
35. Jones, H L (transl). 1924. *Op cit*; see vol vii, 3, 8.
36. Apollonius Rhodius. 1912. *Argonautica* (London), 454pp; book ii.
37. *Koran.* Sura 89, v.5 etc.
    Lenormant, F. 1869. *Manual d'Histoire Ancienne de l'Orient*, 3 vols, (Paris); vol iii, p295.
38. Maurice, T. 1799. *The Ancient History of Hindustan*, 2 vols, (London); vol 1, p304.
39. Williamson, R W. 1933. *Religious and Cosmic Beliefs of Central Polynesia*, 2 vols, (Cambridge); see vol i, p8.
40. Ellis, W. 1829. *Polynesian Researches*, 2 vols, (London); vol ii, pp57f.
41. Le Plongeon, A. 1896. *Queen Moô and the Egyptian Sphinx* (London), lxv + 277pp.
42. Spence, J L. 1933. *The Problem of Lemuria, the sunken continent of the Pacific* (London), 249pp; p54.
43. Bancroft, H H. 1875–6. *The Native Races of the Pacific States of North America*, 5 vols, (London); see vol 4, p306.
44. Bury, R G (transl). 1929. Plato *Timaeus* (Loeb Classical Library, New York), vol 7, 24E, 25 B-D.
45. Babcock, W H. 1922. *Legendary Islands of the Atlantic* (New York), 196pp.
46. Spence, H R. 1866. *Legends and Theories of the Buddhists* (London & Edinburgh), lvi + 244pp; p6.
47. Bellamy, H S. 1949. *Moons, Myths and Man* (London), 312pp; p108.
48. Gray, L H (ed). 1916 in H B Alexander (ed) in *The Mythology of All Races*, 13 vols, (Boston); vol x, p222.
49. Lockett, H G. 1933. "Unwritten Literature of the Hopi", *Univ Okla Soc Sci Bull*, no:2, May 15th, pp69–70.
50. McDowell, B, & J E Fletcher. 1962. "Avalanche: 3500 Peruvians Perish in Seven Minutes", *Natn Geogr Mag*, June 1962, p871.
51. Bellamy, H S. 1949. *Op cit*, p80.
52. Cushing, F H. 1896. "Outlines of Zuni Creation Myths", *Rep Bur Am Ethnol*, Washington, pp388–390.
53. Gregory, J W. 1896. *Op cit*; pp325–326.
54. Short, J T. 1880. *The North Americans of Antiquity* (New York), 2nd edn, xviii + 544pp; p499.
55. Short, J T. 1880. *Op cit*; p239.
56. Gomara, F L de. 1553. *Conquista de Mexico* (Madrid), 2 vols; vol II, p261.
    Humboldt, A von. 1814. *Researches* (London), 2 vols; vol ii, p16.
57. Bellamy, H S. 1945. *In the Beginning God* (London), 212pp.
58. Bourbourg, Brasseur de. 1864. *Sources de l'histoire primitive du Mexique* (Paris), 146pp; p47.
59. Aston, W G (transl). 1956. *The Nihongi: Chronicles of Japan from Earliest Times to AD 697* (London), xx + 443pp; pp46, 110.
60. Williamson, R W. 1933. *Religious and Cosmic Beliefs of Central Polynesia*, 2 vols, (Cambridge); vol i: p30.
61. Williamson, R W. 1933. *Op cit*; p37.
62. Gray, L H (ed). 1916. H B Alexander in *The Mythology of All Races*, 13 vols, (Boston); vol iv, p362.
    Williamson, R W. 1933. *Op cit*; p41.
63. *Book of Revelation.* Chapt 16, v20–21.
64. *Book of Job.* Chap 38, v.22–23, 29–30.
65. Crawford, J N (transl). 1888. *Kalevala*, 2 vols, (New York); p xiii.
66. Anderson, R B. 1888. *Norse Mythology* (Chicago), 473pp; see p447.
67. Riem, J. 1925. *Die Sintflut in Sage und Wissenschaft* (Hamburg), 196pp.; see p32, 99.

PART FOUR

THE COSMIC CONFLICT

1

AN 11,500 YEARS OLD TRAIL

Earlier pages have presented massive geophysical, biological and climatological evidence which, together with certain subsidiary traditional material, indicates that a major catastrophe struck this planet approximately 11,500 years ago. Quite a large number of details indicative of such a date have been cited to provide a general temporal framework within which other associated aspects of the event and its apparent geological youthfulness can be better assessed. Yet is the message of these cited dates actually true or mere deception? Indeed, what evidence if any genuinely exists which validates even a general date for this calamity?

Several avenues of approach exist which permit us to pinpoint with reasonable confidence not only the probable century but, rather surprisingly, the time of year when this debacle occurred.

Viewed scientifically, the most reliable line of enquiry involves our ability to Carbon-14 date with very fair accuracy the remains of countless animals and plants overwhelmed by the event. Conventionally, of course, these remains are commonly assigned a 'late Pleistocene' antiquity and the many radiocarbon dates they have yielded (see Appendix B) are usually regarded as marking the final Weichselian/Wisconsinian phase of alleged 'Ice Age' times (see table 1A).

What, however, are radiocarbon dates?

In 1939, Serge Korff discovered the existence of radiocarbon. He noticed that cosmic neutrons, on reaching Earth's upper atmosphere from outer space, produced secondary neutrons on their initial collision with the naturally pre-existing nitrogen occurring at high altitude. Korff predicted that the neutrons, on colliding with the abundant isotope Nitrogen-14, would react to release a proton and form radioactive Carbon-14 (C^{14}). This carbon, he reasoned further, would then combine with oxygen to produce $C^{14}O_2$, which is ultimately absorbed by all living matter. Plants absorb it through photosynthesis, and animals (if they are herbivorous) by consuming plant-food or (if they are carnivorous) by devouring herbivores who habitually ingest Carbon-14-impregnated plant-food. New C^{14}, furthermore, is continuously added to the Earth's supply about as rapidly as the old dissipates.

During the years immediately following World War II, Dr W F Libby developed and refined Korff's method, one of the fundamental premises of which is the assumption that, when an organism dies, it ceases to assimilate C^{14}, and the radiocarbon already present within it decays without further C^{14} replacing it.

The rate of decay, or number of disintegrations per minute when measured by a Geiger counter, decreases with the increasing age of the sample concerned, with only one half of the original number occurring when the C^{14} is 5,568 (±30) years old. This is the 'half-life' of Carbon-14. With so brief a half-life it is obvious that the process represents a radioactive clock, of enormous importance and value to the prehistorian concerned with events no older than about 50,000 years. As geological phenomena and organic remains relegated to late 'Ice Age' times mostly fall within a span of time appreciably younger than this critical 50,000-year datum, C^{14} is clearly an exceptionally useful tool for determining with fair precision the actual ages of the remains of individual plants and animals collected from this segment of Earth history.

While C^{14} appears, theoretically, to be an ideal dating technique, it has not always proved so in practice. It has certain drawbacks. Far from being a simple laboratory process, various factors exists which sometimes profoundly affect results, particularly those concerning material older than 5,000 years or so ago. Originally it was assumed that the rate of cosmic neutron arrival was constant. If that were so, then the rate of C^{14} production and the rate of C^{14} decay would have reached a natural balance long ago. This has not occurred. It has, in fact, been established that C^{14} production has fluctuated appreciably during the last 6,000 years[1], even though the *rate* of decay has probably remained unchanged. Similar fluctuations may also have occurred at other times during the last 50,000 years *before* the last six millennia.

Hence, organic remains relegated to the aforementioned period quite often exhibit significant discrepancies between the C^{14} levels they contain, with consequent effect on the dates derived from these. Not unexpectedly, the variation becomes progressively larger the older the material involved. Notwithstanding such factors, many previous writers used C^{14} dates to determine the time when the 'Pleistocene' epoch ended and the Holocene began. Broadly speaking, the resultant dates exhibit remarkable general unanimity.

Those obtained for late Weichselian terrestrial plants and marine shells from various localities in north-western Europe by Mangerud and Gullikson all fell within the period (13,000–11,000 years BP[2]), while a strikingly similar date – 13,500–11,000 years BP, based solely upon an interpretation of C^{14} dated geological features – was established for the demise of a 'late Pleistocene' mastodon discovered in peat-bog deposits near Michigan City, Indiana, USA[3]. (These 'Before Present' dates are measured, more precisely, from AD 1950, the date chosen by a Cambridge conference in 1962). These agreed closely with the average C^{14} date – 11,335 (±170 years) BP – of organic remains collected from the basin of the Yenisei River in Siberia, and thought to possibly date from earliest Holocene times[4].

Although nineteen C^{14} dates, ranging from 12,168 (±1,500 years) BP to 10,090 (±140 years) BP yielded by animal and plant remains scattered across the northern hemisphere gave a mean age of 10,918 years BP for the end of the Ice Age in which the original organisms supposedly lived, this date was felt to be "probably about 300 years too low"[5]. The appropriately adjusted date, 11,218 years BP, compared favourably with the 'average' Siberian date noted above, and suggests that the latter was probably very 'late Pleistocene' rather than early Holocene.

11,218 years BP also agrees well with the "within a few centuries of 11,300 BP" date advocated by Webb and Bryson for important climatic and botanical changes traced at the end of the supposed 'late glacial' episode in northern Mid-West USA[6]. Again, the final 'deglaciation' of Airport Lake on Unmak Island in the Aleutians has been likewise dated as occurring between 12,000 and 11,000 years BP[7], and of the southern flanks of the Brooks Range on mainland Alaska at approximately 11,800 years BP[8].

Almost identical 'general' C^{14} dates have been obtained for a variety of significant physical and biological changes traceable all over the southern hemisphere. Thus, a sea level rise around Nelson Bay, Cape Province, South Africa, coincided with the disappearance of dominant grassland on the adjacent hinterland sometime between 12,000 and 11,000 years ago[9]. Further eastward, during the *same* time interval, rain forests rapidly expanded across north-eastern Queensland, Australia, simultaneously with an increase in rainfall (100–175% more than experienced there today) which also affected West Irian (New Guinea) to the north, and the east African countries of Uganda and Kenya[10].

Not surprisingly, such climate changes induced variations in growth patterns among various organisms. Thus, very 'late Quaternary' marine bivalves from Arctic Canada exhibit marked variations in the oxygen and carbon isotopic compositions of their shells[11], signifying the occurrence then of profound sea-temperature changes too[12].

Suffice it here to say that globally scattered datable material, universally regarded as of terminal 'Pleistocene' or earliest Holocene age, and as diverse as the remains of vertebrates, molluscs, plants, geological features, climatic and oceanic changes, so-called 'deglaciation' processes, and isotopic growth patterns in bivalves, everywhere points to the same 'general' date of 11,500 years BP. The additional evidence comprising the bulk of Appendix B substantiates that conclusion very forcefully.

Of special importance is the fact that the host of individual studies which have contributed to this 'general' date have been conducted independently on different material from widely-sundered localities over a period of several decades in different continents, both north and south of the equator. The result are thus not only broadly-based but stress the remarkable consistency of this class of evidence.

Yet, irrespective of the enormous scientific promise of radiocarbon dating generally, the very process embraces special problems. One of these is the contamination of samples worldwide by the release of atomic particles into the atmosphere since nuclear bomb tests began in 1945. Allowances have therefore to be made for the fact that "since 1962 atomic bomb testing has completely disturbed the natural C^{14} activity"[13]. Today, this element has always to be allowed for when new radiocarbon datings are calculated[14]

Other anomalies also sometimes occur. The following selection of these is worth considering, if only to demonstrate the many difficulties confronting scientists specialising in Quaternary chronologies. Some of the details are most instructive.

Certain mammoth remains from gravel deposits in east Norway have furnished C^{14} dates ranging from 19,000 years BP to more than 46,000 years BP. The gravels, however, apparently date from so-called terminal 'Pleistocene' times, so the interpretation of evidence like this must be that "...all the remains have been redeposited and lie in young deposits"[15]. Again, foraminifera in organically-rich 'late Pleistocene' mud cored at Santa Cruz, California, are seemingly much older than the mud itself. The conclusion must be that these organisms were entombed in it by an agent which *eroded* them out of some older stratum and reburied them when it deposited the mud[16].

Analogous cases involve timber debris. Radiocarbon dated wood from channel infill deposits on the floor of the North Sea, for example, appear to be considerably older than the host sediments[17]. In USA, coniferous wood from 'drift' deposits at Appleton, Wisconsin, yielded a date of 12,000 ±300 years BP when processed in 1965, whereas earlier attempts to date the *same* piece of wood produced *entirely different* dates – 10,856 ±410 years, 11,471 ±500, 10,241 ±650 and 11,830 ±100 years BP[18].

A comparable instance concerned wood collected from late Wisconsonian silt at Ready Bullion Creek, Alaska. One piece of wood was dated at 11,000 ±350 years BP, while a tree-root found at the *same* horizon at the *same* site turned out to be appreciably younger – 10,450 ±150 years BP[19] – younger in fact than the supposed antiquity of the deposits enveloping it. Theoretically the dates of remains occupying the *same* geological horizon at the *same* site should have been *much* closer than those actually determined.

Reviewing examples of anomalous botanical C^{14} dates like those just noted, Dr George Carter once observed that terrestrial plants differ in their carbon intake according to their individual ecological situation. Forest plants, for instance, differ from those in open countryside in their amount of isotope carbon. He also wondered if different parts of a plant differ in the amount of Carbon-14 that they naturally absorb[20]. The evidence of the various plant remains just listed suggests that this might very well be the case and that it could also have been so in the distant past as well.

Pollen sequences are often regarded as providing an unambiguous climatic record over the last 15,000 years or so. There are, however, definite limitations to the accuracy of its actual dating[21]. Between 1,500 and 20,000 years the accuracy of its dating is usually held to be ±250 years[22], although this may be an optimistic assessment. For example, pollen found in an area of West Angle Bay, Ireland, indicated *cool* conditions, whereas pollen taken from the *same* deposit in a nearby area indicated *fully temperate* conditions[23].

Other anomalous results involving dated pollen samples are known. One instance, a bog sample procured from below remains of a Romano-British archaeological site of known date gave a C^{14} date one thousand years too old[24]. This result was probably generated by the presence of an unknown quantity of 'dead' Carbon-12 (C^{14}) in the sample tested, which is liable to dilute the equilibrated mixture of C^{14} and C^{14} [25]. Variations in such mixtures within individual samples could, as at West Angle Bay, produce contradictory results. It is still a matter of debate whether the Irish deposit was formed under cool or fully temperate conditions, an uncertainty inevitably having a bearing upon the precise character of the former environmental background of that region. Radiocarbon dates can not only spring surprises but sometimes multiply uncertainties.

Again, aquatic plants and land, freshwater and marine shells are prone to providing misleading radiocarbon dates due to the fact that they may incorporate, through the watery media in which they live, deficient (old) C^{14} as all or part of their original carbon content, thus giving dates which are too old[26]. The distribution of radiocarbon in the oceans lies in the mixing zones between the upper and deeper water layers, which exhibit great differences in carbon dioxide content. This category of material can even be contaminated in laboratories from foreign carbon in the atmosphere and water supply[27], so that, due to these and possibly yet other variables, "...with samples older than 15,000 BP, errors in dating and correlations are so large that errors in apparent ages of some hundreds of years are of minor importance"[28]. At least one case is known where the error amounted to no less than 12,000 years!

Worse still, shells taken from the same vertical section of an infinitely more recent burial mound in south-eastern USA produced dates which "came out in the reverse order of age"[29].

The shells of molluscs also sometimes yield wildly incompatible dates. Separately C^{14}-dated fractions of the *outer* shell of a so-called 'late Pleistocene' pelecypod from Furry Creek, British Columbia, for example, turned out to be 11,080 ±160 years old, whereas fractions of the *inner* shell of the *same* specimen gave a C^{14} date of 11,300 ±190 years BP[30], a difference of approximately 300 years – for the same specimen!

Significant differences unquestionably exist between the isotopic composition of plants and animals, and C^{14} dating of their remains generally reflects this (see Appendix B), even when applied to contemporary biota.

Thus, blood and fat from the celebrated frozen mammoth cadaver found at Beresovka in Siberia afforded a C^{14} date of about 39,000 years BP[31], whereas pollen and plant fragments taken from its stomach (logically, the remains of its last meal) gave an unexpectedly young date somewhere between 7,000 and 6,000 years ago[32]. It is probable that both these seriously-conflicting dates are erroneous, and that the mammoth and the remnants of its last meal are of the same general antiquity as the frozen mammoth carcass from the Taimyr Peninsula in Arctic Russia, whose sinews have been C^{14} dated at 11,450 ±250 years BP[33].

Unlike ancient plant debris, fossil and subfossil bones are composed primarily of calcium mineral and C^{14}, little of the latter if they represent old individuals and more of it if they belong to younger animals. By testing collagen – the protein found in bones – it is possible to obtain C^{14} dates. This, however, becomes difficult when the collagen decreases with age to low concentrations. Moreover, it has been established that the environment of a burial can materially affect the apparent 'age' of the specimen being examined[34]. This, then, is yet another variable.

It is obvious from the foregoing that, despite their apparent accuracy, radiocarbon dates are actually anything but precise (although still a great advance on nearly all previous methods of dating ancient material) and that each example should be evaluated relative to the various factors and constraints just highlighted. For these reasons, therefore, the formulation of even a general date for the tremendous disaster under consideration is possible only by taking a large number of published dates from the relevant literature, and distilling the mean average of these. This is attempted in Appendix B, which lists over

200 samples from 574 separate C^{14} dates lying between 13,000 and 10,000 years BP.

Botanical dates have been segregated from their zoological equivalents, and New World from Old World examples. The resultant averages of each of these groupings is given separately, and the final mean of these submitted as the likely general date – 11,577 BP – of this great event. However, allowing for, say, a cumulative error of around 50 years either way, it is perhaps safest to settle on 11,500 BP as the best 'approximate' date yet available to us. Future research will doubtless refine this considerably.

A quite different avenue of enquiry concerns Plato's date for the cataclysmic foundering of the legendary island of Atlantis, said to have occurred 9,000 years before his own day[35]. Adding these 9,000 years to the 400 separating Plato's time from the time of Christ, and both of those to the 2,000 which have elapsed since then, we obtain another 'general' date of 11,400 years. This is remarkably close to that derived from averaging the C^{14} dates just discussed.

Plato, of course, spoke in comparatively vague terms, and Atlantis, if it ever existed, almost certainly *did not sink precisely* 9,000 years before Plato wrote. Significantly, augmentation by only a few score years brings Plato's date extraordinarily close to that suggested by C^{14} dating methods for the onset of some terrible worldwide catastrophe. Can this be wholly coincidental?

Focusing now on the likely time of the year when this disaster took place, palaeontological evidence seemingly provides the most reliable clues as to the actual month or months when it occurred. Plant remains in the stomachs of the refrigerated Siberian mammoth carcasses, and the amazingly well-preserve flowers and fruits discovered almost undisturbed on dead trees and bushes in Arctic lands (see *Wood Hills of the North* in Part Five) show that early summer was the season when this event erupted.

Just as telling are the vast numbers of very young animals which, with their elders, were chaotically entombed within the 'drift' deposits in caves, rock-fissures and depressions in open country. We immediately recall the numerous afore-cited reports specifically mentioning the indiscriminate slaughter of young and old alike, including foetuses. The presence at that time of so many juvenile animals indicates that the annual spring births, so general among mammals and birds, had only lately been achieved.

Other clues are contained in various traditional recollections of this event. Ovid, for example, refers to ripe grain being consumed by immense heat directed at Earth by a rampant celestial agent he referred to as *Phaeton*. Other accounts mention fruit being shrivelled by a tremendous world-enveloping heat. Ripe grain and well-formed fruit, and the acorns and nuts recorded from many 'drift' deposits in high latitudes all indicate late summer or early autumn season. Late summer or early autumn in, say, the northern hemisphere (where many singularly preserved fruits and nuts have been discovered) would give late Spring as its equivalent in the southern hemisphere (where many examples of juvenile animals have been met with, although not exclusively so. The probability that Earth, prior to this terrible event, revolved daily in a *tholiform* or more upright manner would, of course, have lessened the difference between the seasons hemispherically, or resulted in 'breeding' and 'harvest' seasons overlapping more extensively than at present. If so, that would account for the widespread contemporaneous burial of so many now seasonally separated strands of biological evidence in the *same* globally-distributed 'drift' and analogous deposits.*

Yet another line of approach concerns the ancient Persian tradition that a devastating conflict between Earth and a rampaging celestial object called *Tistrya* (Ovid's *Phaeton*) occurred when the latter was in the zodiacal constellation Cancer[36]. According to these records *Tir* was the name of the fourth month of the year, and as Cancer is the fourth constellation from Aries (when the ancient Persian year began, the celestial conflict took place in the fourth month. By modern reckoning this would make April the month when this event occurred, as in April the Sun is in the constellation of Cancer. However, in

* See *Note 11*.

the ancient Persian scheme, *Tir* and the zodiacal sign of Cancer actually extended from 21st June to 21st July[37]. A high summer date, adequately encompassing recent 'breeding' and 'harvest' seasons north and south of the equator, thus appears to have been the date when this disaster (not just the Deluge) first unfolded. It is, therefore, seemingly easier to fix the time of year than to identify the actual year when this calamity occurred.

We are, then, about to follow a trail at least 11,500 years old, which, though dead and cold in many places, is elsewhere still plainly discernible and provides valuable insights into what really must have happened all those centuries ago.

2

AN UNKNOWN ASSAILANT

The traditions briefly reviewed in Part Three, which describe a major catastrophe having struck and devastated this planet long ago, in the childhood of humanity, expressly and consistently state that the calamity was due to a confrontation between Earth and one or more errant celestial bodies of immense power. In short, external agencies are unmistakably invoked.

Several authorities who have closely studied the geophysical features which, temporally at least, appear to naturally fall within the time span of that dreadful event, have independently concluded that these can only have resulted from influences exerted uniformly on the globe as a whole. Such conclusions also necessitate one or more external agencies. We have, in fact, already seen that this very suggestion has been raised with regard to the aforementioned world fracture complex, and the extensive mountain-building activity which characterised much of 'late Pleistocene' times. It was postulated in the early 1910s by Prof Rudolf Hauthal and Prof Hans Meyer after studying 'ice age' phenomena in Andean Peru and Bolivia with regard to an even wider range of geological factors. They stated that:

> Taken in conjunction with the accumulating evidence that the Ice Period occurred simultaneously over the whole globe, the facts lead to the conclusion that the cause is to be sought outside the globe – that is, it was of a cosmic nature. No cause having a local effect on special regions of the globe can account for all the phenomena.[38]

We previously advanced a similar genesis for the coeval biological extinctions detailed in Part Two. There, we saw that animals (often conventionally but mistakenly regarded as Ice Age forms) and plants of 'late Pleistocene' age were, regardless of size, age, sex or natural adaption, suddenly and violently slaughtered *indiscriminately* on *all* continents, Antarctica excepted. That factor alone confirms the global nature of the disaster involved and that the resultant extinctions occurred *far beyond* the boundaries set for Ice Age regimes by orthodox glacialism. The recorded despair of even dispassionate biologists contemplating the sobering scale of these frightful extinctions has already been noted, surely itself a matter of much significance.

The very immensity and obvious violence of operation exhibited by all these changes unerringly indicates that forces of staggering power brought them about with alarming speed globally.

The numerous traditions descriptive of a vanished genial prehistoric world – the

Golden Age of the classicists – terminated abruptly by world-embracing disturbances, are remarkably accurate accounts of the *very conditions* required by the relevant fossil and geological evidence generally. This can hardly be another coincidence. Something, or some particular set of circumstances, quite literally brought to a sudden and violent end a long-established, environmentally equable regime worldwide. Viewed collectively, the known evidence admits of no other model. Lyellian 'uniformitarian' cycles were not involved, but catastrophic processes were. Indeed, only *very* exceptional circumstances could have produced them.

The question, then, is what actually caused such profound, widespread and swift changes if, apparently, the Earth is itself incapable of generating them on such a grand scale unaided? Precisely what external influences could have been brought to bear on our planet and simultaneously engendered so many striking results?

Traditionally, the principal celestial agent responsible for this disaster was remembered internationally by a plethora of names. Several of these have already been mentioned, although *Phaeton*[39], *Typhon*[40] and the *Midgård Serpent*[41] are probably the best known. The agencies represented by these names were anciently mythologised and were regarded as deities or terrible monsters to be revered, feared and placated. Almost always they were recollected as having been fiery, wayward and the bringers of pestilence and death. Surviving accounts of their visual appearances and their activities in the heavens – one interesting account which we shall consider more fully later details the main object's journey among the planets before reaching Earth's vicinity – present problems for modern scholars desirous of accurately identifying it. Was it, for instance, a comet, an asteroid, a giant meteorite or what?

That question occupies many pages soon to follow: but before grappling with its complexities we must first consider more closely what kind of agent or agencies would be *needed* to wreak so much havoc on Earth and cause our planet to react as it did. And we also need to take a more detailed look at the structure and motions of the Earth itself in order to appreciate how these would *have* to respond to acute external influences. These, in turn, should enable us to gauge the general level of *severity* needed to effect the structural and biological disruptions of the magnitude highlighted in parts one and two. Several recent discoveries have cast considerable light on these factors.

At this juncture, however, we are faced with a highly destructive agency of cosmic origin which, though traditionally remembered by a great variety of names, is as yet of undetermined identity. As an 'assailant' it is indeed 'unknown'.

3

EARTH STRUCTURE

The average person takes the Earth on which they live, its natural motions and the regular passing of successive days and nights more or less for granted. Blissful ignorance of the interplay of the complex processes which regulate Earth's seemingly orderly behaviour, and of its precise location in space, is not uncommon, while among others such factors are but very dimly understood. Here, however, such luxuries cannot be afforded if we are to accurately trace the outline of the tremendous event we will henceforth refer to as the *Phaeton Disaster*. At the very least we need a basic overview of Earth's general structure, motions and planetary status to accomplish our goal. A simple summary of these, designed to put into perspective the many details which follow, is given below.

The Earth is one of the minor members of the family of planets comprising the solar system (see fig 4.1) – enjoying, insofar as planetary scales are concerned, a modest status only. It is, however, a very well-developed 'water' planet (Venus is another), as against 'waterless' planets like Mercury and Mars, or gaseous planets like Jupiter, Saturn, Uranus and Neptune.

Orbiting the Sun at a mean distance of 93,000,000 miles (148,800,000km), once every 365 days (one Earth year) of 24 hours apiece, the Earth pursues an orbit which is not circular but an immense *ellipse*. The Earth is nearer the Sun at some months of the year than others, approaching closest to the Sun in late December each year, and its furthest distance in late June each year.

Earth's configuration resembles that of a flattened globe, where the equatorial diameter exceeds the polar by 26.70 miles (42.72km). The Earth has an axis around which it rotates once in every 24 hours. This axis, however, is not 'upright' (*ie*, at right-angles to the plane of the Earth's orbit) but inclined at an angle of 23.5° from the vertical – thereby explaining why the number of daylight hours in any given day varies in different parts of the Earth. Combined with the revolution of the Earth around the Sun, this axial tilt accounts for the four seasons – spring, summer, autumn and winter – which, of course, are reversed north and south of the equator. Thus, as the Earth moves along its orbit inclined at an angle of 23.5°, and because the orbit is elliptical, summers in the northern hemisphere occur when the Earth is furthest from the Sun and those in the southern hemisphere when it is nearest the sun.

It is important to grasp the above details because, as seen earlier, both the fossil evidence and various traditional accounts suggest a more *vertically aligned* axis prior to Phaeton's visit. If true, a vertical axis would have produced days of equal length all the year round, and the seasons (assuming they were distinguishable) would not have been so marked as at present.

Particularly critical is the fact that if the Earth were a true sphere it would have no stability of its axis of rotation, and:

> ...the smallest beetle walking over it would be able to change the axis of rotation relative to markings on the sphere by an arbitrarily large angle; the axis of rotation in

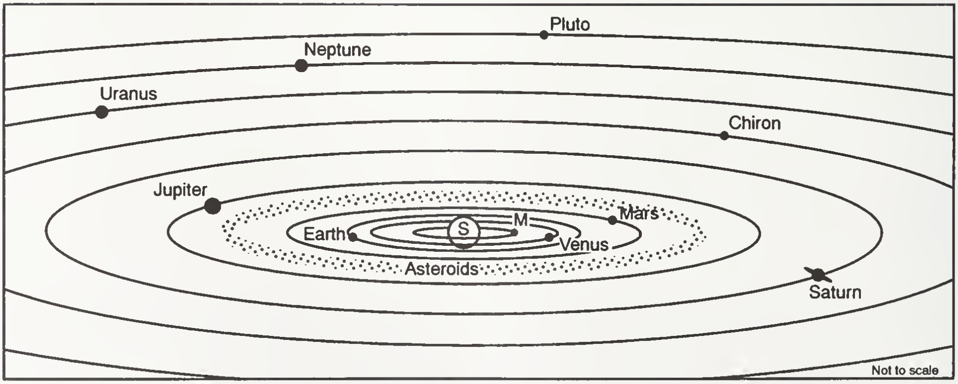

Fig 4.1. Schematic diagram of the solar system. The orbits of the planets are shown on the same plane – most planets orbit approximately so, except for Chiron and Pluto. Not to scale.

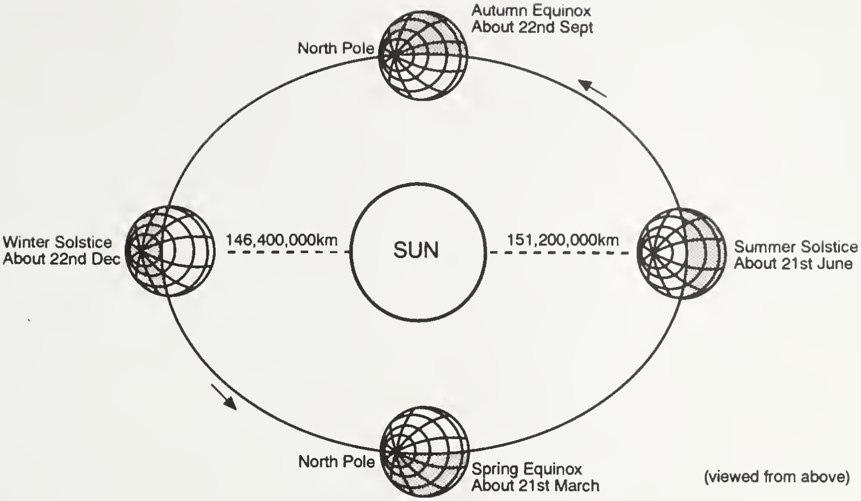
Autumn Equinox
About 22nd Sept
North Pole
Winter Solstice
About 22nd Dec
146,400,000km
SUN
151,200,000km
Summer Solstice
About 21st June
North Pole
Spring Equinox
About 21st March
(viewed from above)

Fig 4.2. The attitude of the Earth to the Sun. Viewed as from above. Not to scale.

> space would change by a small angle only. What stability the Earth's axis possesses against movement relative to the solid Earth is derived from the geoidal shape... This complete stability against a secular change is therefore dependent upon the stability of the shape...[42].

The geoidal shape, of course, is the equatorial bulge, which, stabilising the Earth as it rotates, prevents it turning over pole to pole. This equatorial bulge also allows the application of torques by the Sun and Moon, which cause the Earth to wobble like a top and produce thereby a slow precession of the equinoxes[43]. We shall meet this latter effect again shortly in connection with the density of the Earth. "...At present the solid part of the Earth is very nearly the equilibrium shape appropriate to the present speed of rotation"[44].

If, however, some external body could exert a sufficient influence upon the Earth – for example to induce a fast torque, thereby altering its angle of rotation by a significant amount, changing the axial tilt – then the newly formed equatorial bulge would force Earth's crust to adjust itself to

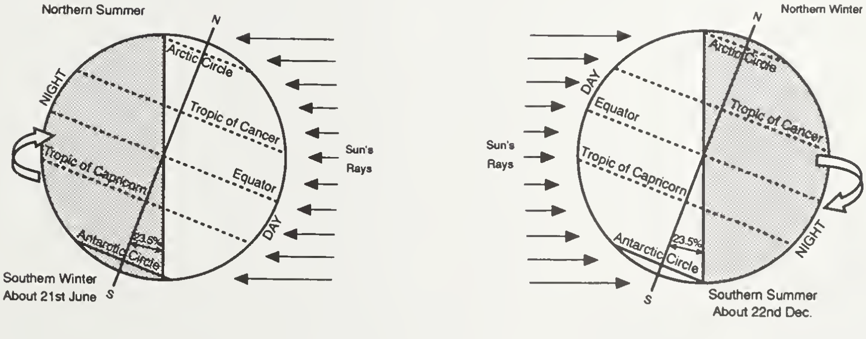
Northern Summer
N
NIGHT
Arctic Circle
Tropic of Cancer
Tropic of Capricorn
Equator
DAY
Sun's Rays
23.5°
Antarctic Circle
Southern Winter
About 21st June
S
Northern Winter
N
DAY
Arctic Circle
Equator
Tropic of Cancer
Sun's Rays
Tropic of Capricorn
23.5°
Antarctic Circle
NIGHT
S
Southern Summer
About 22nd Dec.

Fig 4.3. The tilt of the polar axis.

that bulge. This raises the question of whether there is a permanent stiffness or an absence of stiffness in the main geoidal shape. Certainly any severe departure either way from its present shape would betray itself very simply by a displacement of the oceans, for:

> ...the oceans which take up the equilibrium shape instantly would then dominate either at the poles or in equatorial regions. In fact, the distribution of land and water shows no significant tendency of such a type. On the other hand, the Earth's speed of rotation is believed to have changed significantly in geological time. It has been changed either by giving up angular momentum to the Moon through the agency of tidal friction – and the Moon shows signs of a tidal bulge appropriate to a greater proximity to Earth – or the speed of rotation may be determined by the resonance with atmospheric tides, in which case it must have changed substantially with changes in the structure of the atmosphere.[45]

Here, then, we find that, although the Earth's present configuration is close to the equilibrium shape appropriate to the planet's rotational speed any serious departure from that shape would generate all kinds of catastrophic physical effects. Similar dire results would occur if the speed of rotation were greatly slowed or accelerated by some means. It has been noticed that the present axis of rotation is decidedly unstable, and not apparently of any great geological age. Gold's observation that changes in the structure of the atmosphere may have altered the speed of rotation is particularly interesting for, as we shall presently see, such an atmospheric change did indeed occur as part of the Phaeton disaster. That the Moon also exhibits signs of having previously been closer to Earth is another noteworthy point, for, if nothing else, it suggests a definite though not fatal former disruption of the present Earth/Moon system. The significance of this possibility will shortly become all too apparent. We must now resume, however, our survey of the Earth's structure.

Earth's mass or weight is estimated to be about 6.6 x 10^{21} tonnes (66 followed by 20 zeros), and its density to be a value of about 5.519[46]. Such figures immediately raise problems of crucial import, for typical rocks, such as granite, underlying the dry land surface of the Earth, possess a density of only 2.7. As Putnam once commented:

> Where is this additional heavy material to be found to give such a high average value for the whole Earth? Does the density of the Earth increase at a constant rate from the surface to the centre? Or does the Earth have lighter material in its surface layers and then have extremely heavy material concentrated in some kind of central core?[47].

This last possibility is generally considered to be the most likely, although some have urged that a uniformly increasing density from the surface down to the centre rather than a concentration of denser materials near the centre is more probable. Certainly other lines of evidence suggest that the specific gravity near the Earth's centre may be 15 and possibly as high as 18[48].

Compared to any single object on its surface, then, the Earth is enormously heavy and gives most observers a reassuring impression of vast strength and permanence. Viewed from a planetary standpoint, however, this is somewhat illusory, for the Earth's crust is comparatively very thin, varying in thickness from a mere 5–30 miles (8-48km)[49], with the thickest portions believedly underlying the mountain ranges. Proportional to the Earth as a whole, the crust is therefore scarcely any thicker than an onionskin is to an onion.

The crust itself consists of three main layers. An uppermost one of loose or unconsolidated deposits, such as gravel or ooze, in many places comprises the actual crustal surface. Below this is a layer of moderately hard consolidated rocks, such as limestone and sandstone, which are often stratified and fossiliferous; and lowest of all is a layer extending downwards to the lowermost portions of the crust, composed of very hard crystalline rocks, such as granite and serpentine, of igneous (volcanic) origin, and devoid of fossils.

Most of the depressions caused by the inequalities of the Earth's surface are occupied by water, so that only a mere 29.22% of land actually appears above sea level. This unequal division of land and sea leads to some very interesting statistics concerning the distribution of water on Earth. Thus:

Water	**Cubic Miles**
in the oceans	329,000,000
in the atmosphere	3,600
in glaciers and ice fields	3,250,000
in lakes and rivers	55,000
in the Earth's crust	20,780,000
Total	**353,088,600**

These figures show that the oceans constitute close to 95% of the total amount of water on the Earth and existing snowfields and glaciers only about 1%[50].

Despite their relatively great overall volume and the tremendous pressure they exert upon the crust, compared to the size of the Earth the oceans are little more than puddles occupying hollows on its surface, and immeasurably smaller than the oceans of semi-fluid molten magma that underlie the crust. Indeed, the estimated total amount of magma within the Earth exceeds the oceans in volume 1000:1 and in mass 5000:1[51]. The genesis of magmatic fluids, however, remains unknown, nor is it known at what depth in the planet's interior they originate[52]. It was once believed that the whole interior below the crust was molten, and that volcanoes, being points of crustal weakness, were surface outlets for this fiery incandescent material which, on exposure to air, cooled as lava. This is now known to be untrue.

> The data available to us indicate that the depth of the source for most volcanoes is shallow. Furthermore, the magmatic source for a volcano is very localised, compared to the total area of the Earth...[53]

A shallow origin for the source of the magma appears to be exactly that required by those Earth models which postulate that the 'mantle' – the material, solid or otherwise, underlying the crust but above the Earth's core – is multi-layered and visco-elastic[54]. In such models it is believed that these layers move at slightly different speeds from one another as the Earth rotates once every 24 hours, the resultant friction between them being a source of heat and magma. We shall discover the great significance of these possibilities when, shortly, we identify the external influence which so catastrophically brought 'Pleistocene' times to an end.

Nevertheless, quite prodigious quantities of magma can be ejected even by a moderate volcanic eruption. Thus, in 1887 Mauna Loa in Hawaii produced roughly 5,000,000 cubic yards (about 2,500,000 tonnes) of lava *per hour*[55]; and considering the lava erupted continuously for approximately 150 hours, some idea of the immense volume of magma which reached Earth's surface on that occasion is easily formed. Moreover, the lava was of a very heavy basaltic type, and was apparently lifted a minimum height of 20,000ft (6,250m) to the surface from its source within the Earth.

Deep fissures in the lithosphere (Earth's crust and mantle) also sometimes permit magma to reach the Earth's surface. In several regions, as in the Deccan of western India, the Columbia Plateau of the north-western United States and the Parana River region of South America, vast floods of basaltic lavas, predating Phaeton's visit, have welled up through fissures, and overspread huge areas as accumulations often hundreds of feet thick. These magmatic outpourings significantly altered local topographies.

Forces exerted on the magma include, along with the natural gravitational ones of the Sun and the Moon, the Earth's speed of rotation (a centrifugal force) which creates the equatorial bulge mentioned previously. These pressures exert great thrust, since the viscous or semi-fluid magma, unlike the ocean waters, is totally enclosed. Evidence suggests that the magma directly under the crust rotates at a similar speed to the crust, but that all the magma in specific vertical areas will, depending on densities, pressures and temperatures, possess an angular momentum – 0 at the poles to 1,000mph (1,600kph) at the equator. The speed of rotation probably varies also at different depths within the Earth's interior. These magmatic movements may conveniently be referred to as the *magma tide*.

Any sudden or marked realignment of the Earth's axis or in Earth's speed of rotation would induce changes in the magma tide as it adjusted to the new equator or altered rotational speed. Such changes, however, might not be uniform throughout, owing to a 'drag' factor deep in the magma itself, although overall they would certainly impose terrible strains on the lithosphere generally. That widespread magmatic adjustments occurred at the time of Phaeton's visit must be obvious from the evidence presented earlier. The actual operation and the effects generated on that occasion will be discussed shortly.

Still deeper within the Earth is the core. This believedly consists of an inner and an outer core. Nobody, of course, has ever seen Earth's core, but the general consensus of opinion is that it is a solid or near-solid mass with a high metallic content. There is, however, a sizable body of opinion which prefers to regard it as a largely liquid core of immense density. The core's actual diameter is also as yet undetermined, and may indeed be undeterminable if it is not spherical, but it is thought to be many hundreds of miles, and perhaps to be very much greater. As a unit, the core is extremely important and is intimately connected with the Earth's magnetic field, to which we must now give attention.

4

GEOMAGNETISM

The Earth possesses an electrically-charged magnetic field, referred to simply as *geomagnetism*. Earth is not alone in possessing such a field, as essentially similar ones exist on the Moon[56] and on Mercury[57], to name just two other bodies in the solar system. Not improbably such fields are commonplace throughout the Cosmos generally.

Laboratory experiments have shown that a rotating spherical magnet takes with it a magnetic induction field which, in turn, gives rise to an induced electromagnetic force (EMF) in a connecting circuit. Interestingly, the EMF formed by the Earth's field tends to slow down the planet's rotation, a factor of much significance.

The Earth being a rotating, approximately spherical, electrically-conducting magnetic body, is thus a kind of gigantic equivalent of the rotating magnet in the laboratory mentioned above. The Earth's magnetic poles, which, when united, form a di-pole (two oppositely-charged separated poles), are slightly off-centre (*ie*, they do not coincide with the geographical poles). They are aligned approximately along the axis of rotation but in the opposite direction to that of the angular velocity vector (see fig 4.4). As early as 1803, it was demonstrated conclusively that the Earth is negatively charged[58], a finding amply confirmed by many further experiments. From these discoveries and the

Earth's present electrical condition, the magnetic di-pole is known to be similarly charged[59].

Being electrically-charged, the Earth will attract to it and accelerate positively-charged particles in the solar wind flow[60]. This positive charge even manifests itself in the atmosphere and causes a downward electric field of between 100 and 500 volts per metre at ground level on a clear day[61].

R E Juergens has noted that, as space is now known not to consist of a near-vacuum as previously thought, but is a plasma of dissociated ions and electrons, electrically-charged bodies such as planets could, in certain circumstances, perturb each other, and that, in order to shield themselves, possess a space-charge sheath capable of assembling a sufficient charge to match the electrical potential of the surrounding plasma. Juergens suggested that this charge is actually the magnetosphere (fig 4.4), and that a body which has either orbited the Sun far out in the solar system or which has traversed interstellar space may have thus acquired an exceedingly high electrical potential. He further suggested that such a body, if or when passing on an intersecting orbit with a planet in the solar system would probably *not* collide, due to the cushioning effect of the space-charge sheaths of the bodies involved. However electrical discharges could be expected to occur between them as the bodies endeavoured to equalise their electrical potential. The discharges could assume enormous proportions and produce catastrophic effects on both bodies[62].

Earth's electromagnetic field, therefore, apparently performs a function of great importance, inasmuch as, in the event of the near approach of some highly-charged celestial body, it acts as a shield to minimise the cataclysmic results that would otherwise occur. Any breach of the field would, of course, be disastrous.

All authorities agree that the Earth's electromagnetism is generated in the Earth's core, and emanates from the movements of the molten fluid (assuming that this is what the core consists of). This motion is created by the effects of the Earth's precession on the solid crust and on the core itself. Indeed: "The relevance of precession to the geomagnetic field is that the rate is determined by the magnitude of the equatorial bulge"[63].

It is therefore widely believed that electric currents are a major component of the geomagnetic field, with the dynamo being driven by the combined gravitational influence of the Sun and Moon – the cause of precession in the first place. Thus, any serious distortion (up or down) of this Solar/Lunar gravitational pull would disrupt the precession to such an extent that Earth's magnetic field would drop (weaken) due to a reduction in the electric current being produced – even to the extent of causing the dynamo to go into reverse for a short period. This would amount to a magnetic reversal! As we shall now see, good evidence exists for such a reversal having occurred at the time of the Phaeton disaster.

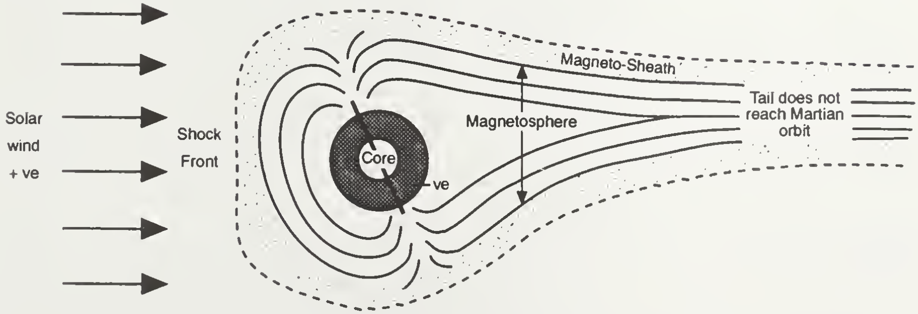

Fig 4.4. The space charge-sheath and magnetosphere of the Earth. *After P Dyal and C W Parkin.*

5

REVERSED POLARITY

While in liquid condition igneous rocks are non-magnetic, but when cooling to about 580° Celsius, or Curie Point, acquire and retain a magnetic state, the orientation of which reflects the magnetic polarity of the Earth at the time the cooling takes place. This is often referred to as *palaeomagnetism*. The magnetised rocks may later become displaced, or the orientation of the Earth's magnetic field altered. The widespread occurrence of solid rocks possessing a reversed polarisation has long interested geophysicists, who have spent many decades investigating the causes and significance of this apparent anomaly. Certainly there is now universal agreement that the only plausible explanation for the phenomenon is: "...that the Earth's magnetic field was itself reversed at the period when the rocks were formed"[64].

Researches have also shown that: "The north and south geomagnetic poles reversed places several times"[65]. And the process is envisaged to have been abrupt: "...the field would suddenly break up and reform with opposite polarity"[66]. Moreover, as the source of terrestrial magnetism is believed to lie in electric currents on the surface of the Earth's core:

> ...substantial changes in the speed of Earth's rotation become easier to explain... Whatever the mechanism, there seems no doubt that the Earth's field is tied up in some way with the rotation of the planet. And this leads to a remarkable finding about the Earth's rotation itself... the Earth's axis of rotation has also changed. In other words, the planet has *rolled about*, changing the location of its geographical poles.[67] (Our italics).

Reversed polarity in rocks, therefore, is apparently connected with catastrophic conditions like those previously described in this book, and very definitely with some type of axial shift. But the intensity of such polarity greatly exceeds the norm and strongly suggests the involvement of non-terrestrial influences – although under normal circumstances the intensity of magnetism acquired by cooling rocks depends on the speed with which the original molten material cools and on the size, composition and form of its constituent particles. Thus, although some variability in the intensity of the magnetism acquired by igneous rocks under normal conditions is predictable, rocks exhibiting reversed polarity possess magnetic charges ten times and often up to *one hundred* times stronger than could have been produced by known terrestrial conditions. As Manley has observed:

> This is one of the most astonishing problems of palaeomagnetism, and is not yet fully explained, although the facts are well attested"[68].

Despite the demonstrated occurrence of an unexpectedly large number of magnetic reversals throughout Earth history, it cannot be mere coincidence that a particularly well marked reversal took place around the general date (11,500 years BP) advocated in this book for the Phaeton disaster. Reversedly magnetised sediment near Gothenburg in southern Sweden, for example, has been dated as being between 12,600 and 8,600 years old[69]. The mean average of these dates falls surprisingly close to 11,500 years BP, and within the so-called Laschamp geomagnetic event (17,000 to 7,000 years ago)[70], which latter also suggests that the inclination of the Earth's magnetic axis at that time may have been 30° from its present orientation. Such possibilities have prompted various authorities to enquire whether, at times of polarity reversals, the magnetic pole follows the polar axis, or vice versa, and Cox and Doell to remark that, although unlikely:

> It is, of course, possible that the coincidence of the palaeomagnetically-determined di-pole axis and the present rotational axis is fortuitous.[71]

The geological youthfulness of these polarity reversals not only finds correlations with the comparable modernity of many of Earth's present topographical features, as specified in Part One, but is also strongly suggested by the clusters of palaeomagnetic anomalies discovered in north and central Europe, eastern Canada, the Gulf of Mexico and New Zealand, centred around the date 12,500 BP[72]. These are widely regarded as representing a global magnetic reversal about that date, which has come to be named the 'Gothenburg flip'. Significantly, a drop in the strength of the Earth's entire magnetic field appears to have occurred sometime between 13,750 and 12,350 years ago[73]. This was attended by various other important changes, including earthquakes, vulcanism, water table fluctuations and large scale climatic variations. Of these, severe earthquakes in particular may even induce axial wobble, and polarity reversals. Discussing such possibilities, Kennett and Watkins noted that:

> Heirtzler has recently speculated on a relationship between earthquake activity (and by implication upper mantle activity) and geomagnetic polarity change. He reasons that because there is evidence to show that earthquakes of magnitude 7.5 or greater may cause wobble of the spin axis, it is therefore conceivable that an Earth wobble may be of a magnitude sufficient to cause reversal of the geomagnetic field[74].

Inevitably such axial wobbles and crustal strains generate both seismic and volcanic activity. It is not surprising, therefore, that a relationship has been traced between periods of severe vulcanism and geomagnetic changes, and that these have, in turn, greatly influenced climatic regimes and caused widespread biological extinctions. Indeed, as Kennett and Watkins have observed:

> Of eight observed micro-faunal extinctions and appearances in the Southern Ocean, six either occurred during or very close to geomagnetic polarity changes. We suggest that the climatic changes which can result from volcanic maxima are much more plausibly the cause of such extinctions and appearances than increased radiation at the water surface during any di-pole collapse accompanying a polarity change...[75].

It will be recalled from Part Two that the annihilation of the Siberian and Alaskan mammoths and their contemporaries, approximately 11,500 years ago, was accompanied by massive vulcanism and that similar coeval evidence has been noted from California, South America and several other localities. Innumerable other regional changes of varying intensity and longevity occurred coincidentally in different parts of the world, and combine to produce an overall picture of epic turmoil. And since vulcanism and earthquakes frequently go hand-in-hand, of what magnitude were the earthquakes and eruptions which accompanied the latest uplift of the Rockies, Alps, Himalayas and many other prominent mountain ranges? As seen in Part One, these attained their present elevations at the very close of so-called 'Pleistocene' times. Consider R T Chamberlin's description of the rise of the Andes in South America:

> Hundreds, if not thousands, of cubic miles of the body of the Earth almost instantaneously heaved upward produced a violent earthquake which *spread... throughout the entire globe*. Many world-shaking earthquakes must have been by-products of the rise of the Sierras.[76] (Our italics).

Another celebrated authority, Eduard Suess, wrote in much the same vein when he said:

> The earthquakes of the present day are certainly but faint reminiscences of those

> telluric movements to which the structure of almost every mountain range bears witness. Numerous examples of great mountain chains suggest by their structure... episodal disturbances of such indescribable and overpowering violence, that the imagination refuses to follow the understanding.[77].

Here, surely, were earthquakes and eruptions that far transcended those which, according to Heirtzler, would be needed to cause wobble of the spin axis – a wobble which, in Kennett and Watkins' opinion, would conceivably have been large enough to have reversed Earth's magnetic field.

Thomas G Barnes has examined another aspect of reversed polarity. He noted that all available data show an exponential decay in the Earth's magnetic field, with a half-life of only 1,400 years. This led him to conclude that:

> It is obvious that this magnetic decay phenomenon could not have been going on for more than a few thousand years, as the magnetic field would have been implausibly large for the Earth. This is strong physical evidence that there must have been a *relatively recent* origin of this electromagnet or some unknown *catastrophic* (our italics) 're-energising' event.[78].

This re-energising event was presumably that which imparted magnetic charges to igneous rocks ten to one hundred times stronger than normal. In our submission this was the Phaeton visitation which, as we have seen, *was* catastrophic. We must mention, however, that some authorities have suggested that the process of polarity reversals actually occupies a very considerable period of time, the reversal itself perhaps as long as 1,000–3,000 years, the decay from 2,000–3,000 years, and the recovery of the magnetic field a further 2,000–3,000 years.

Such views reflect a 'uniformitarian' approach requiring the Earth's magnetic field to be self-reversing under specific conditions – and that it does this without outside influence. It has, for example, been pointed out that the Sun's magnetic field reverses itself during each 11-year solar cycle[79]. No evidence exists, however, for any such regular reversal of Earth's magnetic field. Nevertheless, as indicated above, it is entirely possible that abrupt reversals could conceivably occur under catastrophic conditions. The extremely highly-charged igneous rocks mentioned earlier are apparently examples of such reversals. Certainly, one or more highly-magnetised errant celestial bodies of great density, or large mass, making a close approach to the Earth, could produce exactly the above described effects.

Like many of his imitators, the leading modern 'catastrophist', Immanuel Velikovsky, has urged that the near-approach to Earth of some such large celestial body (in his opinion a comet which became the planet Venus) would have caused the Earth to cease rotating[80]. Velikovsky's conclusions were largely based upon the *Old Testament* story of *Joshua* which, with equivalent legends from other sources, asserted that in early historical times the Earth actually stopped rotating. Viewed scientifically, the braking to a halt of the Earth in space is theoretically possible, but only if a sufficiently massive external influence is involved. The internationally famous astronomer, Dr Carl Sagan once devoted considerable time analysing Velikovsky's arguments[81]. Although concluding that Velikovsky's concepts were very probably erroneous, Sagan found that a cessation of Earth's rotation was certainly feasible given the right combination of circumstances. He especially discussed the thermal energy produced by any slowing of the Earth's natural rotation, observing:

> ...thermal considerations are in fact fatal to the Joshua story. With a typical specific heat capacity of $c_p \sim 8 \times 10^6$ erg gm^{-1} deg^{-1}, the stopping and restarting of the Earth in one day would have imparted an *average* temperature increment of... 100°K, enough to raise the temperature above the normal boiling point of water. It would have been even worse near the surface and at low latitudes... 240°K. It is doubtful that the inhabitants would have failed to notice so

> dramatic a climatic change. The deceleration might be tolerable, if gradual enough, but not the heat.[82].

Elsewhere, Sagan states that a gradual deceleration of the Earth's rotation could take place over a period shorter than a full day[83], and that the minimum time for an external influence to make itself felt upon the Earth as a whole is just 85 minutes[84]. Sagan, who concluded that no cometary influence like that envisaged by Velikovsky could have slowed or halted the Earth's rotation, was, of course, considering *comets* as the disruptive agents since this was Velikovsky's thesis. If, however, comets were not the culprit bodies, but some other body or group of bodies acting in concert, then Sagan's conclusion, while correct relative to Velikovsky's arguments, may very well be inapplicable to the great world disaster highlighted throughout this book. As we shall see shortly, Phaeton was almost certainly not a comet but some other type of celestial object.

6

THE THERMAL FACTOR

Geomagnetic changes involve vast quantities of thermal energy already possessed by the Earth. Much of this is caused by internal tidal friction – magmatic flow versus the semi-rigid outer crust, resulting from the planet's natural rotation. The outcome of this is to convert rotational and/or orbital energy to thermal energy. Any alteration to Earth's present *modus operandi* would, if it involved a rotational or orbital change arising from tidal friction, lead to a loss of orbital energy accompanied by either a loss of, or no change to, angular rotational momentum. Dr Harold Urey, investigating this matter relative to the hypothetical near-approach to the Earth of a large comet, concluded that the loss of thermal energy amounted to 10^{31} ergs[85]. Others have suggested still higher figures and, again, have usually postulated the close approach of at least one sizable celestial object as being necessary to cause such a loss.

Influenced by the ideas of writers like Whiston, Donnelly, Beaumont and Velikovsky, this object has usually been thought of as a large comet, although, as shown later, its identity was almost certainly not cometary. At least one leading authority on celestial mechanics, J Derral Mulholland, has examined the validity of Velikovsky's ideas and of possible collisions between Earth and other planet-sized celestial bodies. Although not specifying the size of his hypothetical planet, it may be safely presumed that Mulholland had in mind one the size of Venus or Mars, since these two planets featured so prominently in Velikovsky's writings. Accordingly, Mulholland wrote:

> If a planet-sized object were to pass close to the Earth, then giant tides would be raised; there would be global earthquakes; the north pole would change direction; the day, the month, the seasons, the year would all change. Faith is not involved here; these are unavoidable consequences of the laws of motion as we presently know them. We must accept that the dynamical aspects of Velikovsky's visions of hell on Earth are largely acceptable. This is not to admit that the events he described ever happened... today the celestial mechanics of Sir Isaac Newton and Simon Newcomb are no longer the ultimate measure. Today, celestial mechanics is a living, vital science that

> admits of non-gravitational effects, of electromagnetic interactions, of flexible astral bodies and of statistical descriptions of some types of occurrences involving large numbers of bodies. In spite of our new knowledge, some unrecognised influences may yet remain.[86].

Obviously, any near-approach to the Earth of a massive celestial object possessing high electromagnetic potential would, through slowing or halting Earth's rotation and generating internal tidal friction, greatly increase the natural level of Earth's thermal energy.

In such circumstances, therefore, frightful earthquakes (as Mulholland admits) leading to axial wobble (as Kennett and Watkins postulate), an abrupt geomagnetic reversal and a change in the location of the geographical poles (as Runcorn, Kennett and Watkins, Mulholland and others have concluded), as well as dramatic climatic changes and a general rise in temperatures – especially near the surface and at low latitudes (as Sagan admits) – could be expected to occur concurrently on a global scale.

It can hardly be coincidence, therefore, that *all* these derangements appear to have occurred more or less simultaneously on Earth – geologically very recently.

Nor can it be coincidence that these same physical changes are remembered graphically in a host of legends, traditions and ancient texts the world over. Even Sagan's deduction that world temperatures would have risen above the boiling point of water finds confirmation in various traditional accounts, a particularly telling point when it is realised that this was a transient phenomenon incapable of leaving in the geological record much in the way of permanent evidence for its actual occurrence. Summarising many original sources,[293, 294] Bellamy has noted:

> The reports of a flood of 'hot' water are rather numerous. Various North American tribes, such as the Makah, Quileute and Chimakum Indians, mention in their myths the surprising temperature of the waters which, as they correctly report, were surging towards the north.[87]

Elsewhere, Bellamy provides further examples of these singular ancient recollections: the Voguls of Finland believed that a great Deluge of boiling water once roared over the world; the Salinas Indians of California describe a flood of hot water which anciently overwhelmed the entire globe; the Ipurinas of northwestern Brazil tell how the Earth was once drowned by a tremendous flood of hot water because the Sun tipped over; and Talmudic records report how the antediluvians perished in boiling water at the time of Noah's Flood[88].

It is difficult to see how numerous isolated peoples, sharing a common memory of a vast global inundation long ago, could have independently invented the idea of its waters being hot. Their accounts, scattered and variable though they are, must refer to the former real existence of such waters and to the real occurrence of the physical conditions necessary for their production.

The normal friction between Earth's semirigid outer crust and its viscous magmatic interior, as well as the thermal energy naturally generated by it, would have been greatly intensified during any event like a Phaeton disaster. Viscosity of magma is profoundly affected by stress or removal of stress, while the magma's centrifugal speed as Earth rotates, and the drag that would be imposed upon Earth by any closely-approaching celestial gravitational influence, are other factors governing the behaviour of hot plastic-like magma under cataclysmic conditions[89]. Under stressful conditions, such as Phaeton's visit engendered, the magma tides must have reacted very much along the lines postulated by Donald Patten when he wrote:

> Based on spherical volumes, with the diameter of the Earth about 8,000 miles, it can be seen that the oceans of magma are infinitely greater than the relatively thin and shallow pools of water lying on top of the Earth's crust.
>
> Hence the tidal upheaval from within the Earth must have been very much greater than the tidal upheaval on the Earth's surface, involving her relatively minute oceans. Therefore upheaval or thrust internally and compression externally must have been

> simultaneous; only their proportions were different. With this volume of magma in tidal upheaval, the Earth's crust acted something like a bellows. And the Earth's relatively shallow oceans merely washed around as the Earth's crust heaved and sagged[90].

Continuing his theme with reference to the conclusions of geologists like Dr George Gamow[91] and Dr Adrian Scheidegger[92], Patten added:

> Any fluid, when constricted, will exhibit a greater thrust... The fluid ocean is unconfined; the fluid magma is completely confined. This affects the gathering or concentration of thrust in certain belts or regions. Also the nature of water is somewhat different than magma as a fluid. At high temperatures, magma becomes increasingly fluid, and at lower temperatures, it becomes increasingly viscous... At the high temperatures inside the Earth, magma has a nature which is neither exactly like a fluid, nor exactly like a solid. It is described as 'plastic-like'. It is something like asphalt, beeswax, honey or molasses. It will flow, but at retarded rates[93].

Clearly the hotter magma becomes the more easily and quickly it will flow and the more responsive it would be to any approaching external gravitational influence. Under such conditions, the thermal energy resulting from the enhanced friction between it and the confining terrestrial crust would be truly enormous, leading in time to the magma becoming a very mobile mass within the Earth's shell. It is thus not unduly difficult to see how, or why, in the Arctic, the depth of the Eurasian Basin is anomalous, and:

> ...represents a regional collapse of the Earth's surface due to material being removed from the lower mantle.[94]

Or why there was an apparently coeval collapse of a huge tract of the old landmass of Beringia (see map 1C) immediately east of the present Kamchatka peninsula, or why there were partially compensatory massive up-wellings of magmatic lava then elsewhere.

It is especially noteworthy, therefore, to find references in the Phaeton cycle of legends to the rocks boiling and melting at the time of that disaster. Many instances, particularly from mountainous districts, of rocks recently folded, bent and warped while clearly still in a molten state were highlighted in Part One. There, also, consideration was given to the almost unimaginable heat generated by colossal rock masses sliding juggernaut-like over one another when the Alps, Rockies and Himalayas, in attaining their present elevation, were moved long distances laterally in various geographical directions. With so much thermal energy unleashed by these and other related causes, it is little wonder that so many nations possess recollections of a terrible world conflagration and of boiling flood waters at the time of the Phaeton disaster.

The association of a worldwide conflagration and a global deluge, however, has proved especially vexatious for classicists because this reported juxtaposition seemingly makes little or no sense. These scholars perceive no underlying calamity capable of producing both types of destruction on a planetary scale more or less simultaneously. The otherwise excellent mythologist G Knaack, for example, found himself supposing that the linking of the two agents was due to an invention of some later compiler, thus:

> Mention of the rivers that Zeus unleashed gave the later reviser the idea of the deluge.[95]

Such interpretations ignore the fact that: numerous independent accounts repeatedly insist that a terrible world conflagration was extinguished by an immense deluge which also destroyed that untouched by the fire; and that the association of the two motifs is embedded in traditions far older than the classical Greek and Roman Phaeton accounts. Englehardt recognised this when he remarked:

> The very fact that several sources report on a link between Phaeton's destruction and

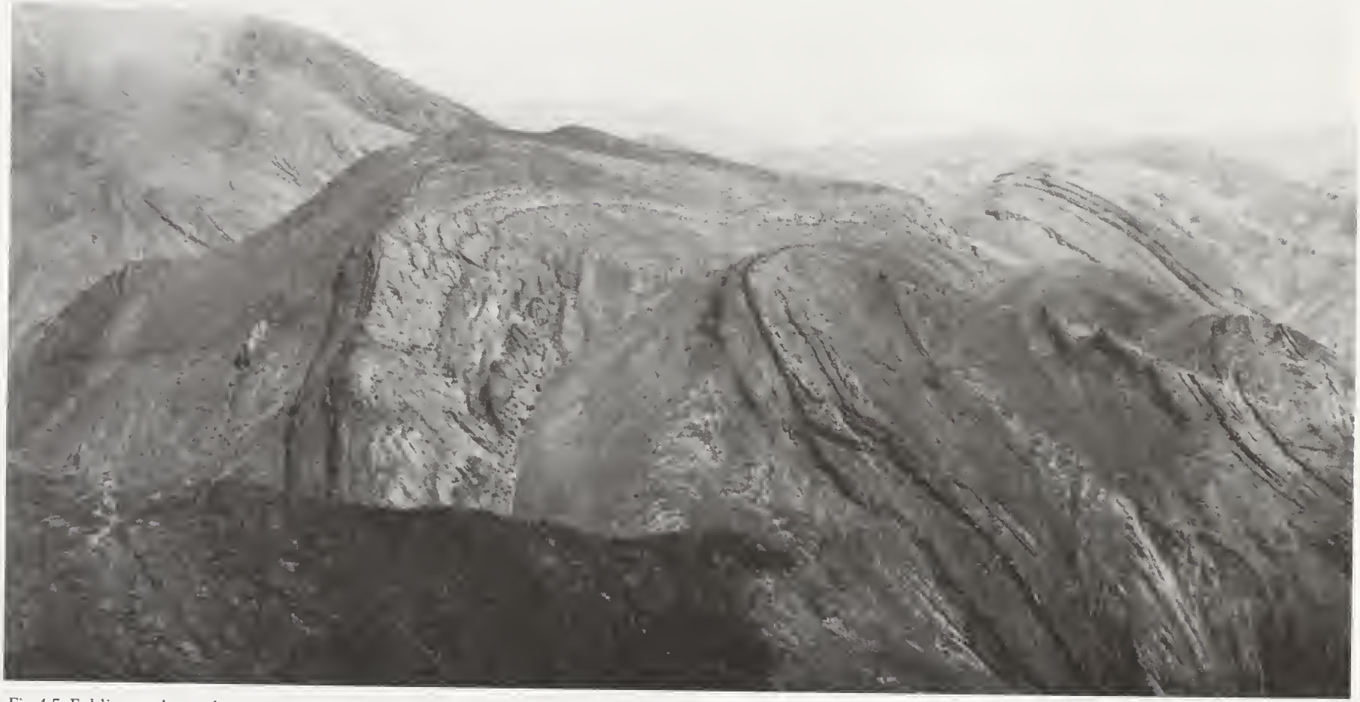

Fig 4.5. Folding and overthrusting. Limestones and shales over 12,000ft (3,750m) above sea level at Cortadera, Peru, exhibiting three repeated overthrusts. *Official photo: Portrerillos Company. Extracted from F A Perret's "The Eruption of Mont Pelée", by permission of the Carnegie Inst, Washington DC 1929, and R S L, Oxford.*

> the Deucalion flood, or more generally, between catastrophes of fire and water, in spite of the difficulty in rational explanation, favours the fact that it is not a matter of later constructions but that here, via mythological hypotheses, a part of stubborn reality comes to light from under a veil. Therefore we shall have to conclude from the sources that the fiery catastrophe that was interpreted as Phaeton's fall was really followed by a short-lived but extensive inundation which ended the lives of so many men that one could talk of a destruction of mankind.[96]

Today, our possession of knowledge unknown to the earlier classicists and mythographers permits a better understanding of how the Earth would react physically if subjected to a catastrophe like the Phaeton disaster and its attendant stresses.

Is it not, therefore, exceedingly remarkable that many of the physical effects mentioned in the catastrophe legends exactly reflect the physical conditions deducible from detailed analyses of the interplay of the relevant natural forces activated by a hypothetical near-collision between Earth and a sizable celestial object; or that the field evidence for the former real occurrence of such an event and its effects is both abundant and incontrovertible? The coincidences are surely too numerous to be products of mere chance.

7

INSTABILITY

The reality of a geologically recent alteration to the inclination of Earth's axis of rotation which, as indicated in parts one and two, can be repeatedly inferred from abundant geophysical and biological evidence associated with the end of the so-called Ice Age, is a matter of prime importance to a proper understanding of what happened to our planet about 11,500 years ago.

As noted earlier, an axial change may have occurred coincidentally with the last great polarity reversal known to us, the 'Gothenburg Flip', and that earthquakes of 7.5 or more on the Richter scale of severity – such as those recorded in Part One as having attended the gigantic crustal disturbances, extensive mountain building and intercontinental rifting characteristic of 'late Pleistocene' times – are sufficient under - particular circumstances to generate axial instability[97]. As concurrently-operating phenomena, these 'late Pleistocene' dislocations could not have arisen of their own volition, but can only have been initiated by some external cause.

Thus, the genesis of several singular axial and orbital fluctuations exhibited by Earth even today can be traced back directly to the tremendous events of 11,500 years or so ago. A brief survey of some of these provides a clearer picture of how and why Earth presently functions as it does.

Contrary to popular belief, neither Earth's elliptical orbit round the Sun[98] nor its daily speed of axial rotation[99] is absolutely fixed. Both have varied, sometimes quite appreciably, over a period of time and may yet do so again.

Many authorities have linked these orbital and rotational fluctuations to the onset[100] as well as the melting[101] of the alleged 'Pleistocene' ice-sheets, with climatic changes[102], migrating monsoonal regimes[103], and with increases in solar radiation reaching the Earth's upper atmosphere[104]. Stated bluntly, the Earth's orbit (although not depicted as such in diagrams of the solar system) 'wanders' somewhat erratically along its course, and the Earth itself spins irregularly and 'wobbles' as it moves round the Sun. Such instabilities are symptomatic of a flawed equilibrium. Their connections with so many aspects of present and recent world climates illustrates their crucial role in initiating and maintaining those regimes.

By human standards fluctuations in the earth's daily speed of rotation appear to reflect a longterm disorder exhibiting an approximate 10-year cycle of operation[105], and is seemingly the result of a combination of imperfectly balanced features deep within the Earth itself[106], including core-mantle coupling[107] – of which more shortly. In reality, however, the origin of these fluctuations appears to be remarkably youthful.

The rotational irregularities in particular are intimately linked with the 'Chandler Wobble', caused by the fact that Earth's axis of rotation fails to coincide with its axis of inertia. Of these, the former describes around the latter a cone-like motion – a small rapid wobble[108] – known as *nutation*, which it performs over a more or less set period. The period has been termed the Chandler or Newcombe Period and the resulting unbalanced motion the 'Chandler Wobble'. The relationships between these motions have been investigated by several astronomers and geophysicists in recent years[109], while others have explored not only additional excitations of the wobble by various climatic factors, such as atmospheric changes[110], but, subscribing to Earth models requiring a multi-layered visco-elastic core, that viscosity of the deep mantle[111] and core region[112] can also enhance wobble and its speed of action. Yet others have studied the apparent connections between large earthquakes and excitations of the Chandler Wobble[113], complementary to Heirtzler's calculations respecting the degree of seismic intensity needed to induce, theoretically at least, polarity reversals and a change in the location of Earth's geographical poles or spin axis.

Significantly, one of the most marked orbital changes yet traced, and certainly the one so far most studied, occurred at the end of the 'Pleistocene' epoch between 11,000 and 11,500 years ago. It was virtually coincident with the inauguration of the climatic and atmospheric changes just listed, and with the advent of the environmentally-disturbed Younger Dryas episode referred to earlier. This, it will be recalled, was epitomised by singular and abrupt alterations to oceanic circulation, wind intensities, northern snowfall levels and to large segments of the plant and animal kingdoms. These all were changes, it was also suggested, conceivably generated by some sort of adjustment to the tilt of the Earth's spin axis.

Orbital and rotational changes, of course, could be expected if the tilt of Earth's spin were altered – although that could probably only occur as a response to some powerful influence outside Earth itself.

Be that as it may, all these changes are unquestionably interrelated, while their direct association with the end of the alleged Ice Age times and the onset of the highly variable Younger Dryas episode indicates that many if not all the effects developed more or less synchronously about 11,500 years ago, through arising from a common cause.

In the general scale of geological events they occurred but yesterday.

It is thus scarcely surprising that Earth is far from being the most perfectly functioning planet that a surprisingly large number of people assume it to be. On the evidence of its fluctuating motions and behaviour patterns, it has not merely recently sustained serious disruption to many of its natural physical and atmospheric features but is still slowly recovering from the traumatic event which imparted them.

In that connection it must also be significant that analogous planetary instabilities of apparently recent date, and which will be considered in greater detail shortly, are traceable elsewhere in the solar system. Before dealing with that evidence, however, we should contemplate the far-reaching implications of the further aspects of pole-shift set out below.

8

POLE SHIFT

Among the terrestrial effects listed by almost every investigator of a theoretical near-collision has been a shift in the inclination of Earth's axis. Authorities of the calibre of Runcorn and Mulholland have admitted that axial shifts could be expected to occur on such occasions. This subject, however, was debated far earlier, although usually in connection with a specific event – a great world catastrophe during the infancy of mankind. The ancient Egyptian Ipuwer Papyrus, for example, describes terrible devastation created by an early cataclysm which "turned the Earth upside down"[114]. The Ermitage Papyrus, now preserved in St Petersburg, refers to a similar ancient world convulsion[115]; while a third Egyptian papyrus tells how the Earth was nearly destroyed by fire and water during a tremendous celestial upheaval long ago when the south became north and the world turned over[116]. The celebrated Greek philosopher Plato described a similar axial dislocation, caused by a vast flood "which foamed in and streamed out" and made the Earth move irrationally:

> ...forwards and backwards, and again to right and left, and upwards and downwards, wandering every way in all six directions.[117]

Not only does Plato's remarkable statement remind us of Runcorn's conclusion that Earth 'rolled about' on the occasion of a massive magnetic reversal, but it suggests that the Earth wobbled wildly in *many* directions. It also reminds us of the Greenland Eskimo belief that Earth formerly turned over, and that the Andaman Islanders fear a repetition of a great natural disaster that occurred in the days of their remote ancestors when the world capsized[118]. Also it is significant that, on viewing a comet in the heavens, the peasantry of Menin in Flanders used to exclaim: "The sky is going to fall; the Earth is turning over"[119].*

We are also reminded here of the aforementioned ancient Chinese and other early traditions describing a time when the stars poured across the heavens and Earth settled down to a *lower position* than it had previously occupied. All these apparently refer to an axial change witnessed by early Man.

Modern interest in such momentous events revived last century. The then-recent Spitzbergen discoveries, for example, suggested to some that those islands must have once lain 20° nearer the equator than they do today[120] – and as the modern theories of continental drift and plate tectonics had not then been formulated, it was considered that a change in the position of the poles (an axial tilt), causing profound climatic alterations, must have occurred. This explanation was usually that offered to account for the obvious very rapid refrigeration of the hairy mammoth and woolly rhinoceros cadavers found in northern Siberia.

Geologists were asked by mathematicians and astronomers what geological conditions would be necessary to cause such polar shifting. The most likely cause, the geologists opined, was a redisposition of the weight of the Earth's surface. This possibility was closely analysed by Sir George Airy, then astronomer royal, who *assumed* a sudden elevation of a mountainous mass in latitudes "most favourable for production of a large effect", that would prevent the axis of rotation from coinciding with the axis of the globe geoid. This, he argued, would cause the Earth to wobble and the poles to wander. The smallness of the inferred effect was, however, discouraging and Airy concluded that:

* See *Note 12.*

> ...the shift of the Earth's pole would be only two or three miles, and this, though it would greatly surprise astronomers... would produce no such changes of climate as those which it desired to explain.[121]

A reinvestigation of the problem by Sir George Darwin using the same formula was hardly more encouraging: only a relatively small amount of polar shift was possible, a mere two degrees in fact. But serious objections to the validity of this approach were voiced, even in the 1870s. One mathematician emphasised a particularly important point – one still crucial to any modern assessment of the problem. He advised:

> Mathematicians may seem to geologists almost churlish in their unwillingness to admit a change in the Earth's axis. Geologists scarcely know how much is involved in what they ask. They do not seem to realise the vastness of the Earth's size, or the enormous quantity of her motion. *When a mass of matter is in rotation about an axis, it cannot be made to rotate about a new one except by external force. Internal changes cannot alter the axis, only the distribution of the matter and motion about it.* If the mass began to revolve about a new axis, every particle would begin to move in a different direction.[122] (Our italics)

The geologists' specifications had proved too imprecise, and Airy, Darwin and others had assumed a 'uniformitarian' solution apparently incapable of actually occurring.

A much better explanation of climatic changes attendant upon markedly reoriented geographical poles, was advanced by the Austrian meteorologist Julius Hann, who was quoted by W B Wright as follows:

> The simplest and most obvious explanation of great secular changes in climate, and of former prevalence of higher temperatures in northern circumpolar regions, would be found in the assumption that the Earth's axis of rotation has not always had the same position, but that it may have changed its position as a result of geological processes, such as extended rearrangement of land and water.[123]

As seen in Parts One and Two, a radically different disposition of land and water evidently existed until Phaeton's visit. Large continental landmasses such as Fennoscandia, Appalachia, Beringia, Tyrrhenia and others in the southern hemisphere existed in regions presently occupied by oceans now often miles deep. Their combined weight was stupendous and its redistribution through crustal collapse catastrophic.

We have also seen that many of these changes occurred around 11,500 years ago at the onset of the Younger Dryas episode, when, among other effects, large-scale northern ice-sheets are said to have abruptly melted and snowfalls suddenly intensified. Seemingly contradictory (and certainly at odds with our contention that the ice age of conventional geological doctrine never actually existed), these effects are actually explicable if the surface erosion (and deposition of extensive 'drift' deposits) usually but mistakenly attributed to massive glaciation were really legacies of the naturally violent action of immense volumes of water displaced by enormous sudden rearrangements of Earth's crust due to extensive subsidence of landmasses like those just mentioned.

It can be no coincidence that several recent studies of precisely these factors have linked, on the one hand, continental lithospheric thickness[124], and, on the other, widespread deglaciation of supposed northern ice-sheets[125] to the probability of 'polar wandering' during alleged 'Ice Age' times. Replacing finite ice-sheets (and subsequent deglaciation) with finite regions of lithospheric thickness (and the subsequent collapse or subsidence of these), would appear to engender the same general effects if subjected to some external force disrupting the inner workings of Earth as a planet. Not only has all this a further bearing on the chimerical nature of the celebrated 'Ice Age', but it is related to viscosity of the Earth's mantle and core and the likely behaviour under stress of both these aspects of Earth's structure. As we shall now see, the Earth's crust could actually slide or slip to a catastrophic degree.

9

CRUSTAL SLIPPAGE

It may be erroneous to argue that a relocation of Earth's spin axis would necessitate the pulling over of the entire globe into a new orientation. In 1952, K A Pauly revived a theory previously developed by the astronomer A E Eddington, purporting to explain the cause of the 'Ice Age' as due to the sliding of the lithosphere over the viscous magma underlying it through tidal friction originating from the Moon[126]. This is tantamount to saying that crustal slippage had occurred.

We have noted that the hotter magma becomes the more viscous and asphalt-like is its condition. Oceans of highly heated magma would provide an excellent fluid surface over which comparatively solid crustal rocks could theoretically slide. Obviously a lesser force is needed to produce crustal slippage than to tilt the whole globe in some new direction, for the crust is only a portion – and a comparatively small one at that – of the Earth's total mass, and the momentum required to achieve this is directly dependent upon that mass.

To ensure that the axis of the Earth's core is that of the planet generally, while simultaneously permitting the crust to slide over the magma, the friction between these two layers (the source of much thermal energy) must be obviated – and in order to alter the position of the crust relative to Earth's spin axis, the regions comprising the equatorial bulge must be stretched while polar territories must be at least partially truncated or compressed. Significantly, both phenomena occurred at the close of 'Pleistocene' times.

In the concept of a rotating multi-layered visco-elastic planet like that referred to earlier, the arguments that the irregular coupling of Earth's differentially-revolving viscous core and mantle, even now producing variations in the length of day, begins to look like an after effect of geologically recent crustal slippage. Normal mantle viscosity enhanced by powerful external influence, combined with sudden 'deglaciation'[127], thus seemingly caused not only extensive crustal slippage and fracturing, vulcanism, seismic activity and orogeny, but also a change in the actual inclination of the Earth's spin axis. Acting in concert, such phenomena would have been sufficient to produce all the geophysical changes enumerated up to this point.

Nevertheless, although Eddington's theory unquestionably contains several attractive features, such as accounting for warmer areas formerly existing at the poles and *vice versa* in other latitudes, it has certain serious drawbacks.

Thus, as early as the 1920s, another authority, Harold Jeffreys, highlighted a flaw in Eddington's theory. He wrote:

> Has the inclination of the Earth's axis to the plane of its orbit varied during its history? The answer... is a definite 'Yes!' The theory of tidal friction... assumes the equator and the plane of the Earth's and Moon's orbits to coincide... they do not.[128]

This difference between the plane of the Earth's and the Moon's orbits strongly suggests, however, that it is the terrestrial axis that has altered. We have, moreover, previously noted that the Moon was apparently once closer to Earth, so it is conceivable that, even if displaced, the Moon may have still retained the original plane of its orbit.

Did these apparent changes result from the same cause? We may never know the answer to this question although, while it is theoretically possible to interpret these displacements as due to two entirely separate events, perhaps aeons apart, it surely overstretches credulity to argue that any influence powerful enough to have altered the inclination of Earth's axis would have somehow contrived to exclude such a near celestial neighbour as the Moon from its sphere of action.

Jeffreys was another authority who concluded that only an *external* force could induce a change in the orientation of the terrestrial axis. He remarked:

> If we consider the axis of the Earth's angular momentum, this can change in direction only through couples acting on the Earth from outside.[129]

Almost all authorities are as one, therefore, in concluding that only a powerful external agent could have altered the inclination of Earth's axis. We have outlined the principal hypotheses advanced from time to time purporting to explain how this could or might have happened dynamically. Broadly speaking, these advocate that either the *entire* globe was realigned axially, or that only the Earth's *crust* changed position by sliding over the underlying viscous magma. Since, however, Earth's axis *has* obviously changed, and geologically very recently at that, the first group of explanations concern the very heart of the problem, and indicate that the entire Earth has indeed assumed a new axial inclination. This does not exclude crustal sliding as having occurred simultaneously with axial displacement.

The aforementioned crustal deformations, especially the crustal foreshortening around the present polar regions, as well as the extensive rifting and fracturing – as Hobbs[130] and others have concluded – occurred on a planetary scale everywhere at about the same time. As others have contended, the Earth's axis must have been inclined in a more vertical plane than today[131]. These crustal deformations collectively constitute excellent evidence that crustal sliding occurred in at least some regions concurrently with an axial realignment.

In this respect the precession of the equinoxes and the Chandler Wobble – a circle that the polar axis describes about itself every 432 to 436 days[132] – may represent not only further results of a recent perturbation of Earth by some massive external influence but also 'hunting' by the Earth as a unit in its endeavours to regain complete stability.

It seems, therefore, more than likely that both the above categories of explanation are essentially correct, that they are not mutually exclusive, and that both planetary and crustal changes of the magnitude discussed took place simultaneously.

Finally, is it not interesting to find accredited authorities suggesting that global fracture patterns, such as would occur at the time of crustal slippage and axial realignment, indicate that, immediately prior to the time of fracturing, the inclination of the terrestrial axis was more vertical than at present?

If so, it is surely important to consider the following points very carefully. The present plane of the equator to the orbital plane (the obliquity of the ecliptic) is currently 23°27'8", and has been calculated to vary between 21° and 24° over a period of 40,000 years[133]. This governs the seasons as they now occur, and provides the one day/one night per year presently experienced at the poles. If the obliquity were nil, however (*ie*, if the plane of the equator and the orbital plane coincided), and the rotational axis were vertical, the following effects would dominate:

- Day and night would be of equal length everywhere on Earth.
- Environmental conditions would differ profoundly from those of today, with a widening of the temperate zones and a marked narrowing of the cold and torrid zones.
- Milder polar conditions would prevail and the present ice caps would not exist, or would exist only very feebly, at the poles.
- The differences in the seasons would diminish with fewer extremes of climate everywhere, with some regions never experiencing a proper winter.

These factors, and the aforementioned fact that virtually all the world's major mountain ranges were appreciably lower before the 'Pleistocene' Phaeton visitation, enable us to readily appreciate how such conditions can only have been conducive to vigorous plant growth on almost every land area; that deserts can only have been small or non-existent; and that ocean currents must inevitably have been generally warmer. The further possibility that, before this terrible event, Earth may have rotated more slowly – with a day lasting perhaps as much as 30 hours – also means that there would have been longer growing-time for plants, both daily and seasonally; and that any disruptive external influence, of the magnitude necessary to enforce a shift in the orientation of the geographical poles, would have braked the Earth to a halt more rapidly than seems possible with its *present* rotational speed. The corollary to this would be that the resultant crustal dislocations and worldwide increase in thermal energy would have occurred somewhat more quickly, and certainly at a catastrophic pace.

All the details, therefore, begin to come together. Facts which at first sight appear anomalous, and ideas that initially seem fanciful or unlikely, now interlock like pieces of a giant jigsaw. Dare we ignore the significance of such a pattern?

10

THE SOLAR SYSTEM

Accepting for a moment the reality of a near-collision between Earth and one or more sizable astronomical objects approximately 11,500 years ago, it follows that such an event could scarcely have been confined to just the Earth/Moon system, or failed at some stage to involve at least some of the other planets and bodies comprising the Sun's family. Indeed, even a general survey of that family discloses some very remarkable details which collectively suggest that, in the comparatively recent past, several of those bodies were subjected to and partially deranged by some powerful influence of unknown origin and identity.

As detailed description of the constituent members of the solar system would make rather tedious reading here, the salient statistics are better comprehended in comparative tabular form.

The huge astronomical distances cited are utterly meaningless, of course, to all save mathematicians, and fail to convey either the immensity of space occupied by the solar system or the isolated position of this system in the immeasurably grander vastness of the Cosmos. It is, however, important to grasp the enormity of this backdrop, for it was against this that the Phaeton disaster occurred; and since, as will shortly be shown, Phaeton traversed the solar system before reaching the environs of Earth and took an appreciable while to cross the distances involved, early humans possibly had sufficient time to perceive that a major catastrophe was approaching and make organised preparations to save themselves from the impending destruction. It must, therefore, be extremely significant that ancient records have come down to us actually describing the awesome cosmic drama produced by Phaeton during its passage through the solar system. These will be considered shortly.

If, therefore, we make a scale model of the solar system small enough to be readily understood, it will have to be the size of Piccadilly Circus in London (some 150yds or metres across), and we must use a marble-

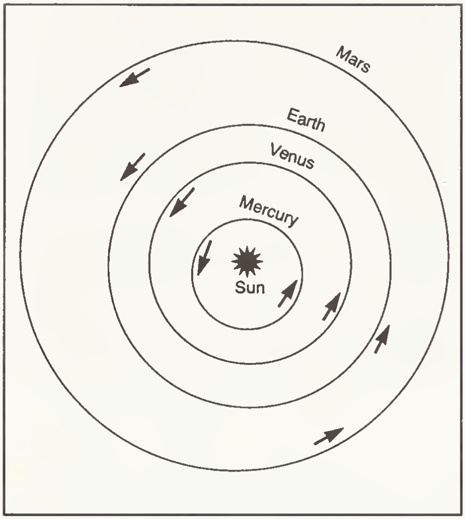

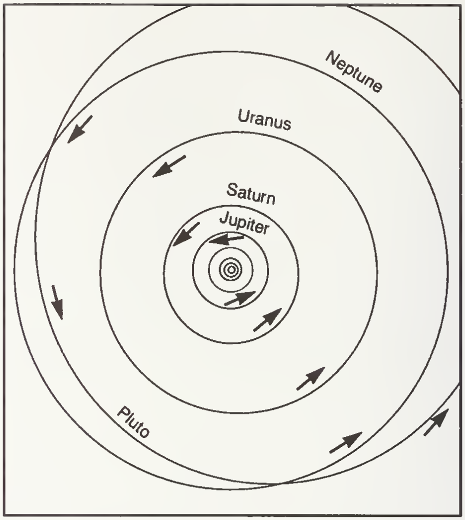

Left: Fig 4.6. The eccentricities of the orbits of the inner planets, drawn to scale.

Right: Fig 4.7. The eccentricities of the orbits of the outer planets, drawn to scale. This diagram is eighteen times smaller in scale than fig 4.6. The orbit of Chiron is not shown, since, due to its recent discovery (1976), little is yet known about its eccentricity.

sized object to represent the Sun. This we will place in the centre of the model. On the same scale, the planets will be small seeds, grains of sand, and specks of dust, and the model will be only just large enough to accommodate Pluto's orbit. On this scale virtually all the satellites become invisible. Yet, as Sir James Jeans once observed[134], at this scale the nearest star, represented by another marble, will be somewhere near Birmingham or, if we go in the opposite direction, somewhere near Calais – some 100 miles or 160km distant. We can see, therefore, that although the Phaeton disaster was a gigantic affair here on Earth, in the context of the solar system it was a much more modest event, while in that of the Universe generally it amounted to little more than a ripple.

Before reviewing the evidences of apparently recent celestial disruption in the solar system, it will be important to note that, contrary to popular belief, the planets do not orbit the Sun on a common plane or follow exactly concentric paths. Indeed, table 4A shows that Neptune and Pluto, for instance, orbit on extremely different planes, and (figs 4.6 and 4.7) the eccentricities of the planetary orbits generally.

Also of relevance is the path taken annually by the Sun through the twelve zodiacal constellations as viewed from Earth. Traditionally these constellations are those of Aries, Taurus, Gemini, Cancer, Leo, Virgo, Libra, Scorpius, Sagittarius, Capricornus, Aquarius and Pisces. They form "...a band about 8° wide on the celestial sphere, centred on the ecliptic"[135] or plane of the Earth's orbit around the Sun, in which the Sun, Moon and planets appear from Earth to move from west to east[136] (not to be confused with the daily apparent rotation of the heavens as a whole from east to west – the former being due to the orbital motion of Earth and planets, and the latter being due to the rotation of the Earth). Strictly speaking, "...the ecliptic is a mathematical fiction corresponding not to the actual plane of Earth's orbit, but to one with all minor irregularities smoothed out"[137].

Although the Greek astronomer Aristarchus of Samos is generally credited with having discovered the obliquity of the ecliptic[138],

Table 4A.

Planetary statistics Based on the latest available information

PLANET	Mean distance from the Sun in millions of miles (kms)	Equatorial diameter in miles (kms)	Volume (Earth =1.0)	Mass (Earth =1.0)	Density (Water =1)	Surface Gravity (Earth =1.0)	Direction of axial rotation	Period of equatorial rotation	Period of revolution	Orbital velocity (km/sec)	Inclination of equator to orbital path	Inclination of ordit to plane of ecliptic	Eccent-ricity of orbit	Satellites
Mercury	36 (57.6)	3029 (4847)	0.056	0.055	5.4	0.380	W-E	59 days	87.97 days	47	<30°0'	7°0'	.206	-
Venus	67 (107.2)	7700 (12,320)	0.857	0.816	5.2	0.890	E-W	243 days	224.70 days	36	117°0'	3°04'	.007	-
Earth	93 (148.8)	7926 (12,682)	1.0	1.0	5.5	1.0	W-E	23h56m	365.26 days	30	23°05'	0°0'	.017	1
Mars	142 (227.2)	4215 (6744)	0.150	0.107	3.9	0.380	W-E	24h06m	687.0 days	25	24°0'	1°08'	.093	2
Jupiter	483 (772.8)	89,000 (142,400)	1318.0	317.9	1.3	2.6	W-E	9h8m	11.86 years	13	3°01'	1°03'	.048	16
Saturn	880 (1408)	74,100 (118,560)	769.0	95.2	0.7	1.1	W-E	10h4m	29.46 years	9	26°7'	2°5'	.056	17
Chiron	1282 (2052)	?	?	?	?	?	?	?	50.68 years	?	6°54'	?	.38	-
Uranus	1800 (2880)	32,000 (51,200)	59.0	14.5	1.2	0.960	W-E	15-17h	84.01 years	6	90°0'	0°8'	.047	15
Neptune	2755 (4408)	41,000 (65,600)	72.0	17.4	1.7	1.5	W-E	15h7m	164.8 years	5	28°8'	1°8'	.009	2
Pluto	3687 (5900)	3250 (5200)	0.1	?	?	?	E-W	153h0m (6dy 9h)	249.9 years	4	?	17°2'	.249	1

Metric values, where appropriate, given in parentheses.

the Greeks did not, as is often stated[139], devise the zodiac about 2,000 years ago, although they probably were responsible for allotting each sign a width on the celestial sphere of 30°. References to zodiacal constellations in the earlier records of the Babylonians, Egyptians, Chaldeans and ancient India[140] show that, as a device, the zodiac was much older than classical Greek culture, being of very great antiquity indeed.

But irrespective of when the zodiac was first devised something noteworthy happened to it subsequently.

> Because of the effects of precession and as a result of the International Astronomical Union's (IAU) adoption of constellation boundaries which are not exactly 30° long, the Sun's passage through the constellations does not correspond to its passage through the signs of the zodiac. According to the IAU boundary definitions, the Sun travels 44° through Virgo, only 7° through Scorpius [both zodiacal signs], and 18° through Ophiuchus, a constellation for which there is no zodiacal sign.[141]

This suggests that a change has occurred in the inclination of Earth's terrestrial axis – like that previously discussed – since the zodiac was first invented. In that connection it is also interesting that certain ancient traditions aver that Libra was a sign added to the zodiac *following* the Deluge.* If true, that would imply an antediluvian origin for the zodiac. The traditional association of the Deluge event with Phaeton's visit gains added interest when we recall that ancient Persian accounts specify that the visit occurred when the Sun was in the zodiacal constellation of Cancer, a detail indicative of the existence even then of some type of zodiacal device or gauge.

Thus, from a quite unexpected quarter we encounter further apparent confirmation of the recency of a profound terrestrial disruption which, occurring after people had reached a fair degree of civilised existence, among other things altered an early device created, presumably, to measure time and predict seasonal cycles. That people attained such advanced knowledge so early is strongly supported by their coeval possession of the astonishing mathematical expertise highlighted in later pages.

---

* See *Note 13.*

Any celestial intruder arriving from more remote cosmic regions would tend to encounter or pass close only to planets nearest its line of advance at that specific time. Those planets which happened to be orbiting the far side of the Sun might, in such circumstances, remain comparatively unaffected by the intruder. This, we shall find, appears to be precisely what occurred during the Phaeton event.

11

THE MAVERICKS

In addition to the planets and their satellites, there are other celestial bodies and substances in the solar system, which pursue erratic paths or are unpredictable in their actions. Accordingly, they may be conveniently dubbed celestial mavericks. Some of their recorded characteristics suggest that they may have had direct connections with the Phaeton disaster.

Asteroids

The genesis of asteroids is uncertain, and has long been a subject for speculation[142]. The asteroid belt lies between the Jovian and Martian orbits and, because some attain appreciable size, are sometimes referred to as planetoids. Irregularly shaped, apparently rocky, bodies, asteroids range in size from Ceres, Pallas, Vesta, Iris and Juno – the largest, with estimated diameters up to 625 miles (1000km) – to others perhaps just metres across. Calculations suggest that up to 80,000 asteroids may actually exist[143], although most are too small to detect by present means.

Approximately three thousand asteroids have now been discovered and awarded names or numbers; others have been briefly sighted only to be 'lost' again. No asteroid is big enough to retain an atmosphere, although it has been postulated that a few of the largest may possess frozen ones represented by a coating of ice.

One of the largest, the irregularly-shaped Vesta, which has an average diameter of 325 miles (520km), is of particular interest here on several counts. Close-up photographs of it taken by a recent NASA space probe shows that Vesta has an astronomically and geologically very youthful basaltic surface, and two even younger large craters believed to have resulted from a "single great impact"[144] – although with what is as yet undetermined.

Although the origin of many asteroids is still unknown, opinions have lately been offered that at least some asteroids may represent all that remains (*ie* lower mantles and core) of "catastrophically ruptured" formerly larger bodies[145]. The significance of that interpretation will become apparent later.

Many similar asteroids appear to be free-moving pieces of some of the larger asteroids. Vesta, for instance, appears to have spawned a small family of lesser asteroids and another family of small basaltic meteorites, called *eucrites*[146]. Analyses of several eucrites which have fallen to Earth show that not only is the basalt of which they are made apparently the same as that forming Vesta's surface, but that it is likewise exceedingly youthful[147]. It has been suggested that these eucrites represent fragments of Vesta's surface blasted out radially into interplanetary space by whatever impacted with it and endowed it with two craters.

Numbers of other asteroids circle the Sun on highly eccentric orbits, several occasionally approaching closer than Mars – and at least eight cross Earth's orbit. Of the latter, Eros, with a diameter of a mere 16 miles (25km) has been known to approach to within 14,000,000 miles (22,400,000km) of Earth. Viewed astronomically this is rather close.

Collectively, the behaviour patterns of these objects are highly suggestive of some geologically recent disruption of an older, more orderly asteroid regime, or that the asteroids *en masse* (eucrites included) are themselves remnants of one or more catastrophically disintegrated bygone worlds.

Comets

Over a thousand comets have been reported since modern records were first begun, and on average six or seven new ones are discovered every year. It has been suggested that their number is in the order of 100,000, but even this huge figure may fall short of the real total.

Although various hypotheses have been formulated, comet origins are unknown[148]. Some authorities suggest the existence of cometary material far beyond the solar system, which is periodically disrupted causing pieces to be drawn off; others, like Clube and Napier[149], suggest they originated through the destruction of one gigantic object some 10,000–20,000 years ago; and Opik has wondered about comets and planets having a common origin[150]. Van Flandern has even discussed the possibility of comets being remnants of a former asteroid planet[151]. But, whatever their source, they are apparently true members of the solar system, revolving round the Sun on elongated, elliptical orbits[152].

The period of these orbits varies considerably, with 40 or so comets circling the Sun with orbital periods of 100–1,000 years, while the majority take considerably longer. Some, it has been estimated, take as long as 40,000 years[153].

There are also short-period comets and those which return at erratic intervals. For instance, Encke's comet orbits the Sun every 3.3 years, but has been known to arrive

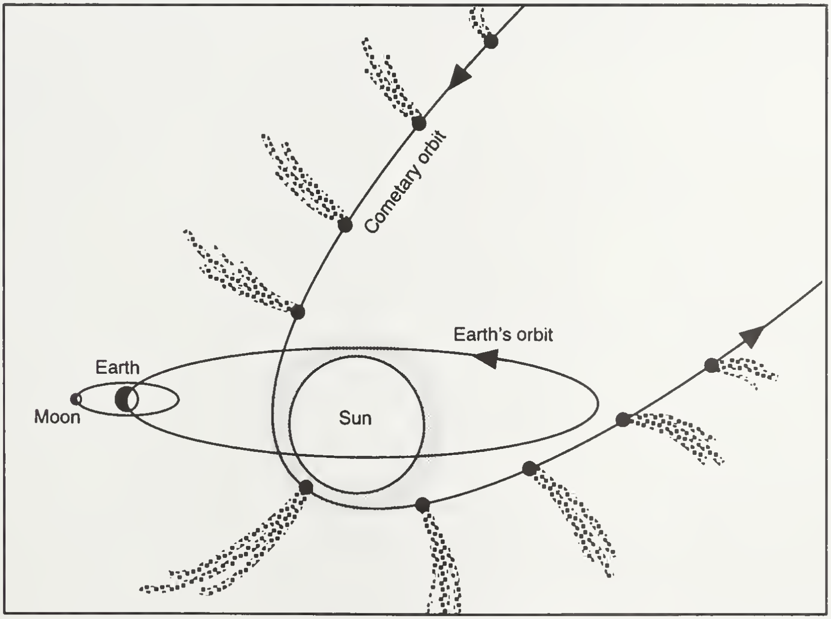

Fig 4.8. Schematic diagram showing a typical path of a comet round the Sun. Note how the comet's tail always points away from the Sun.

'early' on several occasions[154]; while Biela's comet, orbiting every 6.6 years, arrived late three times before finally disintegrating in 1852[155]. About 20 comets have been seen to divide since Biela's break-up. A photograph of Morehouse's comet of 1902 shows what seems to be the comet's tail fragmenting (fig 4.9).

Additionally, there are occasional interstellar comets which do not orbit the Sun. One such was Bronsen's comet of 1846, which arrived from remote cosmic regions, crossed the solar system, and travelled on into interstellar space, never to return[156].

While the Sun acts as a focus for all cometary orbits, Jupiter appears to act as another focus for short-period comets. Lexell's comet of 1770 and Brook's comet of 1889 both actually passed through the Jovian satellite system and almost grazed the surface of Jupiter and split in two[157]. Yet, despite such close encounters, no comet is known to have seriously affected the motions of the Sun, the planets, or their satellites. Indeed, it is the planets which affect the comets, not the reverse, with the larger planets such as Jupiter and Saturn capable of altering the comet's orbit and speed[158].

This is due to the fact that comets have insufficient mass to perturb the planetary bodies in the solar system gravitationally[159]. Even though the *coma* or 'head' surrounding the nucleus of a comet may attain a diameter of about 20,000 miles (32,000km) or even 200,000 miles (320,000km) – thus exceeding the Sun in volume but not in mass – it is actually very thin and seemingly composed largely of dust, for all but the dimmest stars can be seen through it[160].

The actual mass of a comet lies in its nucleus, the latter varying in its diameter from less than a mile (1.6km) in small comets to as much as 10 or 20 miles (16–32km) in large ones. The composition of the nucleus is still not clear, but it is thought by some to be aggregates of stones loosely held together by gravity – the equivalent of a flying gravel-bank. It has also been referred to as a 'dirty snowball' on the assumption that it is composed of 'interstellar dust' made up of compounds of hydrogen, carbon, nitrogen, oxygen, methane, ammonia and water – the last three as ice particles[161]. Another opinion postulates that frozen water is the main constituent[162]. It is also widely thought that ices compose 70–80% of all cometary nuclei[163]. It is this insubstantial mass of the comet's nucleus which makes it an *unlikely* candidate to be Phaeton, for while a collision would cause some planetary damage, almost certainly such limited mass would fail to perturb Earth's motion, fracture its crust, retard its rotation, engender a magnetic reversal or affect the polar axis.

Meteors

Literally billions of these rocky objects seem to be loose in interplanetary space. Many theories have been formulated to account for their existence. An early idea regarded meteors as the remnants of orbiting trains left by both existing and defunct comets, mainly because of the occurrence on particular dates of meteor swarms. Some meteors, however, are so large – up to a mile (1.6km) or so in diameter – that it seems unlikely that they were ever parts of comets. More recently, different explanations have been advanced. One is that meteors normally orbit in the asteroid belt but that hypothetical collisions between asteroids from time to time disrupt meteor orbits and move them into new ones across the solar system. Meteor orbits, however, are unknown, and according to some may differ appreciably from those of asteroids. Another theory postulates that meteors are fragments of parent meteoric planets which pass through the solar system[164], although nobody has so far knowingly sighted such a planet. Trains of meteors have been observed, however, which possibly support this theory – an especially memorable one occurring on February 9th, 1913, travelling NW-SE at a speed of 6 mps (9.6 kps), some 30 miles (48km) above the ground over a large area of North America[165].

A third theory postulates that meteors are slowly drawn in on spiral orbits towards the Sun from various regions of the solar system, due to the Poynting-Robertson effect[166]. This effect is relatively weak, however, and hardly strong enough to affect the largest meteors, which are actually quite massive bodies. The origin of meteors, therefore, is currently uncertain, and a satisfactory explanation of their existence well overdue.

The advent of satellite space photography has revealed numerous previously unsuspected land-forms suggestive of impact by very large meteors on various occasions throughout Earth history[167]. These features, which have constituted the central theme of at least two full-length books[168], clearly show that on impacting these meteors perpetrated widespread damage, and that while some are geologically ancient others are surprisingly recent.

Although fallen meteors (meteorites) vary in composition, 96% of all known specimens contain Chondrites (silicate and other minerals) which are absent from terrestrial rocks but are present in the atmosphere around the Sun; and they also contain iron[169]. Meteorites composed of iron or a high percentage of nickel are known as Siderites to distinguish them from non-metalliferous meteorites which are called Aerolithes. Some Siderites are of great size.[295] One, which fell near Elbogen in Bohemia, in 1400 AD, weighed 235lbs (105kg)[170], while another, not observed to fall, has been discovered in Oregon and weighs no less than 14 metric tonnes[171]. Some meteorites are also *unexpectedly young*[172], and cosmic-ray exposure ages of meteorites generally suggest an *astronomically recent disintegration* of the original body[173].

In connection with metalliferous meteorites, it is interesting that Jews call iron *nechoshet*. This literally means 'droppings of the serpent'[174]. This is a meaningless term until we recall that, in Jewish traditions, the 'serpent' was another name for Satan, the old dragon, remembered elsewhere by a great variety of other names including *Typhon* and *Phaeton*. The fact that ancient Midrashic and Talmudic accounts of the Phaeton visitation mention a celestial bombardment of hot stones occurring then, that the early Egyptians called iron the 'bones of Typhon'[175], and that Finnish traditions refer to a prodigious fall of huge 'iron hailstones' occurring when the world was once almost drowned by a great flood, all seem to be echoes of what, to modern man, would be falls of meteors. The falls of gravel featured in various Central American traditions seem to be recollections of the same general event. It must, furthermore, be relevant that the ancient Greek word for iron was *sideros*: this, when combined with the obviously related Latin word for star, *sidus* (genitive *sideris*, plural *sidera*)[176], as 'iron star', lends new meaning to the concept of a large partially-metalliferous body which, when close to Earth, showered it with loose pieces in the form of meteor-like iron hailstones.

The singular theme common to all these ancient traditions concerns the fact that these falls of metalliferous meteor-like bodies were inextricably part and parcel of a terrible cosmic visitation which almost destroyed Earth long ago. Significantly, the sizes and quantities of many modern meteorites and those mentioned in the traditions just cited, were such that they *cannot* be cometary debris. On this point alone it follows that the celestial marauder we have been calling Phaeton was *not* the comet that many earlier investigators of the Phaeton cycle of traditions have supposed.

Ice and Methane

The final class of celestial mavericks considered here concerns icy substances. We have already noted that various types of ice believedly exist in cometary nuclei. Several planetary satellites may also possess outer coatings of ice or may consist totally of ice, and it is also thought that much ice exists on the four largest planets – Jupiter, Saturn, Uranus and Neptune – which some astronomers believe are composed mostly of hydrogen and ices of carbon, nitrogen and oxygen enveloped by an extremely cold deep atmosphere of ammonia and methane[177]. All these substances, it will be remembered, are present in comets. The conclusion that supercooled ice (at –200°F or more) is a relatively common substance throughout the solar system[178] finds positive support from recent discoveries establishing that ice particles definitely occur in comets and

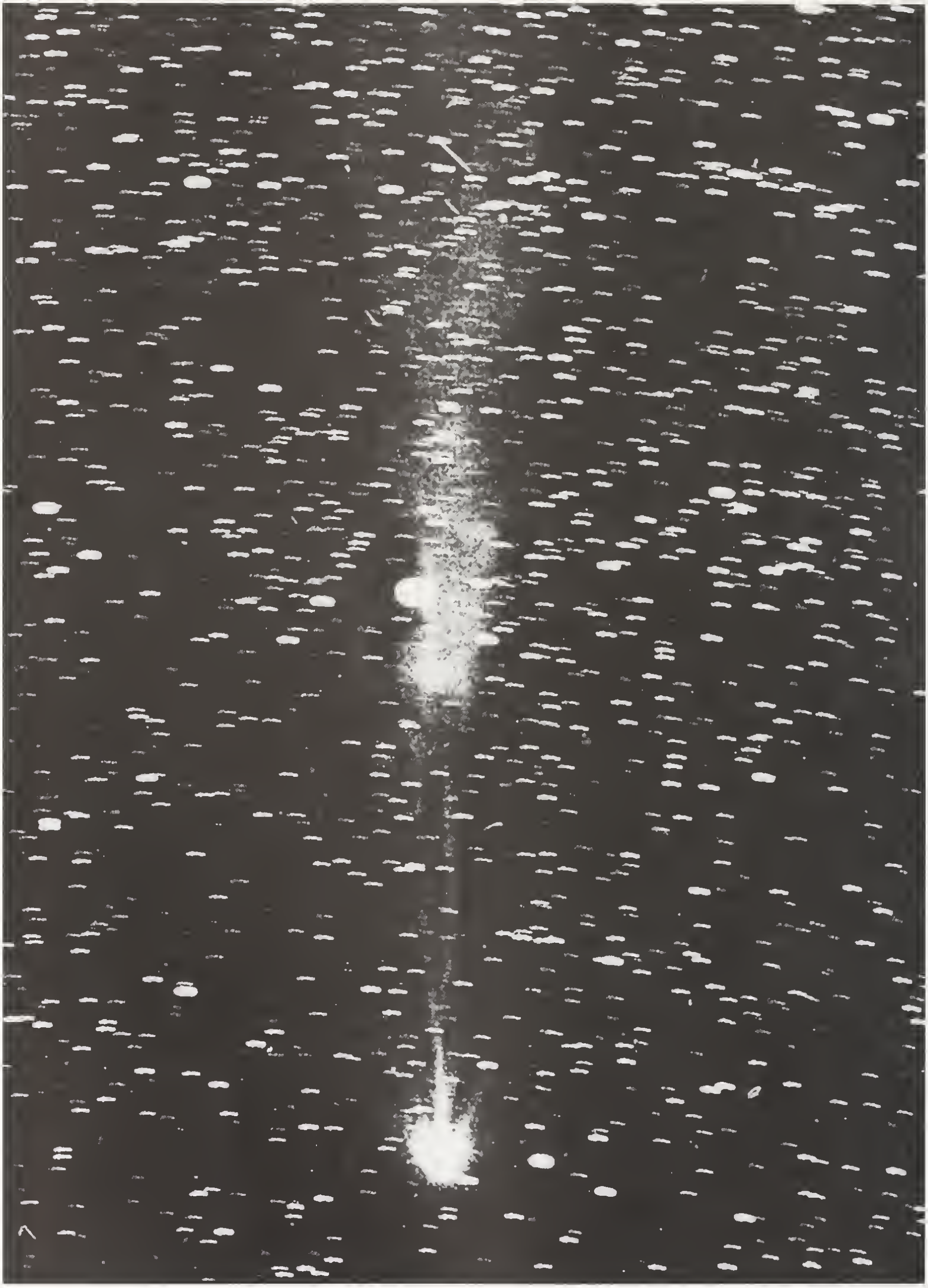

Fig 4.9. Comet Morehouse. *By permission of Yerkes Observatory, Wisconsin, USA.*

compose much of the rings of Saturn, and that sizable quantities of ice exist on at least three Jovian moons[179].

With these details before us, identification of the innumerable unheralded falls of blocks of ice, peculiar icy hailstones and glutinous substances, which have descended upon Earth from time to time as examples of further celestial mavericks may not be wholly irrelevant (see Appendix C). These disparate yet seemingly related objects may actually constitute vestiges of some infinitely greater masses of similar material that fell upon Earth at the time of Phaeton's visit. This is certainly suggested by the following details respecting the formation of hydrocarbons in space.

As previously noted, methane is one of the most abundant molecules in the solar system. It is well-known that *high temperatures* are required to reduce methane to aromatic hydrocarbons[180]. Interestingly, therefore, in ten Recent era (Holocene) sediments from Texas and Louisiana, both aromatic and aliphatic hydrocarbons have been found, aged somewhere between 14,600 and 11,800 BP (±1,400 years)[181]. Their origin is uncertain, but, considering the dates obtained for them, it is not impossible that they were formed about or during the time of the Phaeton upheaval, a '*hot*' event falling within the *same* time scale. Furthermore, hydrocarbons of high molecular weight – of which petroleum is one – comprise up to half the carbon content of carbonaceous chondritic meteorites.

The presence in varying quantities of such hydrocarbons in both comets and meteors strongly suggests that, as noted above, while the latter are almost certainly not derived from comets, the two classes of objects somehow share a common origin. One of the substances apparently linking these objects and perhaps indicating their joint original source is methane.

Petroleum is commonly thought of as having an organic (biogenic) origin, but it is now accepted that hydrocarbons, petroleum included, could be synthesised in space by a free-radical mechanism from methyl radicals, in which:

> Methyl radicals themselves could be produced from solar photons on methane.[182]

Non-biogenic petroleum thus formed might, on reaching Earth, form lakes or ponds wherever dense underlying strata prevented its natural absorption. Natural evaporation of this volatile liquid would leave behind it a skin of crude oil or asphalt. Quite conceivably, the asphalt lakes of Trinidad and Venezuela and the tar seeps of California originated in this way – particularly as all are intimately associated with the remains of late-'Pleistocene' animals and plants, victims of a much wider calamity that appears to have erupted about 11,500 years ago. That the mean average of the dates obtained for petroleum-bearing sediments in Texas and Louisiana falls remarkably close to this date is surely no coincidence.

Thus, whatever its real nature, if fiery ('hot') Phaeton was either itself partly composed of inflammable hydrocarbons developed from methane, or had, during its journey through the solar system, encountered a planetary body having, like Jupiter and Saturn[183], a largely methane-dominated atmosphere, a part of which it had perhaps captured or acquired. Its late arrival in the vicinity of the Earth/Moon system as (so numerous traditions aver) a flaming object of endlessly changing image, is at last explicable as that of an errant celestial visitor wreathed in constantly shifting, igniting and exploding clouds of methane. The aforementioned electromagnetic exchanges which would have naturally occurred between Earth and Phaeton, and were part of the electrical phenomena accompanying the attendant geomagnetic reversal[184], could also have served to ignite any hydrocarbon-laden atmosphere of the approaching astronomical visitor. In that connection readers will recall those traditions given in Part Three describing vast inflammable clouds, tremendous aerial explosions and terrible streams of fire directed upon Earth as leading elements in humankind's collective memory of the Phaeton disaster.

But if, as we shall shortly see, Phaeton apparently explosively destroyed a medium-sized planet beyond Mars, in all likelihood equipped with an atmosphere having a sizable methane content, then any dispersed portions of that body, such as the iron hailstones of Finnish lore, and many hydrocarbon-permeated meteors and comets, are respectively the stony and icy/gaseous remnants of the same now-vanished methane-pervaded world. The general location of this lost planet is that now loosely occupied by the asteroids, so Flandern's arguments about comets being remnants of a bygone asteroid world, and Opik's suggestion that comets and planets may have had a common genesis accordingly increase in interest.

12

SIGNPOSTS TO A COSMIC BATTLE

It is unnecessary here to list all the many scholars who have investigated the problems of axial shifts, changes in rotational speeds and polarity reversals, since thoroughly representative selections have been given on preceding pages. Significantly, most of these authorities agree that such changes could only be produced by enormously powerful forces acting upon Earth externally. Given that these changes really occurred, then quite literally, a war between worlds must have taken place. That, of course, is precisely what the traditions reviewed in Part Three assert.

Our survey of the solar system recorded various anomalies, several of which appear in table 4A and figs 4.6 and 4.7. Thus the Moon formerly circled the Earth more closely than it does now; Mercury's orbit is not circular; Venus rotates extremely slowly for its size, and in the opposite direction to all the other planets except Pluto; Earth has a non-circular orbit; Mars rotates too slowly for its size, and has a decidedly eccentric orbit. It also has two small irregularly-shaped satellites, Deimos and Phobos, hurtling round it at exceptionally high speed. Jupiter rotates extremely quickly for its size and mass, and, unlike all other planetary satellites, its two outermost known moons orbit it from pole to pole, each in opposite directions. Its third largest satellite, Callisto, exhibits unusually low density, suggesting to some that it possibly consists almost entirely of ice – over 10 billion cubic miles of it (if true, this makes Callisto the largest known single piece of ice anywhere).

Saturn also rotates unusually rapidly, follows a non-circular orbit, and is distinguished by its wonderful ring system held by many to be the debris of one or more fragmentised satellites. It, too, has several satellites consisting mostly of ice, as well as one, Phoebe, which orbits in a retrograde direction.

Uranus, which follows a non-circular orbit, is another rapidly-rotating planet, and has its equator inclined at an extreme angle (NNW-SSE). The axis of Uranus' magnetic dipole field is not only offset from the planet's centre, but, relative to the planet's axis of rotation, is located at the unexpectedly large angle of 60°. It has been suggested that this possibly exemplifies a polarity reversal in operation and that this has conceivably arisen from "a catastrophic collision event subsequent to the formation of the planet, intimately related to its large and anomalous obliquity to the ecliptic"[185]. Several of the Uranian satellites, which also possess equatorial tilts of 90°[186], show topographic features suggestive of catastrophic alterations; Umbriel, for example, exhibits a surprisingly "young fresh surface", and Titania a global network of geologically very young faults[187].

Although still quick, Neptune rotates more slowly and pursues an eccentric orbit. Both its moons orbit in a retrograde direction, of which the smaller, Nereid, following an enormously elongated orbit, takes no less than 359 days to complete just one circuit. Pluto rotates rather slowly, is a double planet with its satellite Charon, and has an orbit so highly eccentric that it intersects with that of Neptune. We have seen, too, that the origin of the asteroid belt between Mars and Jupiter is debatable, and that many of its constituent members orbit the Sun eccentrically. Meteors exhibit behaviour patterns which are even more eccentric; yet, although regarded by some as remnants of cometary tails or dead cometary nuclei, their origins are still unknown. Notwithstanding that, they clearly represent the debris of *something*. We have suggested, however, that, along with blocks of celestial ice which occasionally fall to Earth and the likelihood that non-biogenic petroleum can be produced from methane by natural chemical methods in space, meteors could be surviving fragments of one or more large solid bodies which have disintegrated.

The overall picture thus presented by the solar system shows that its principal members comprise a basically orderly assemblage of rotating and orbiting objects that have apparently experienced various derangements resulting in all kinds of aberrant and anomalous motions which, although of comparatively minor importance for the working of the solar system as a whole, have apparently been caused by one or more unknown influences in the past.

The outstanding question here, of course, is whether all these anomalies have accumulated over aeons of time – as the result of many essentially isolated disturbances, each of relatively local extent – or whether they represent the outcome of a single larger disruptive event affecting the solar system generally. The forces which generated the larger anomalies – for example, the acute tilting of Uranus, and the warping of Pluto's highly eccentric orbit – must have been so powerful that it is difficult to see how this could have also failed to affect other bodies in the solar family.

If the former interpretation of these anomalies is adopted, then it follows that various disruptions of the solar system are, by astronomical standards, comparatively frequent, and the history of the solar system could justifiably be said to be recurrently catastrophic. If, on the other hand, a single large disturbance – responsible for all, or at least the majority of, the observed anomalies – is the preferred interpretation, then the history of the solar system can be best defined as normally quiet and orderly but punctuated recently by a single tremendous cataclysm. The following details indicate that the latter interpretation, though startling, is almost certainly correct.

According to observations made by Mariner-4, the Martian orbit has apparently been seriously disturbed and the planet's structure severely strained at some time in the past. Aligned stress fractures observed on the Martian crust have led to the conclusion that:

> ...such a lineament system is caused by stresses in the planet's crust produced by changes in the planet's rotational equilibrium figure... The changes in angular velocity caused by tidal interaction of Mars with Phobos and Deimos are completely negligible and that of the Sun is a few percent at most: thus other mechanisms must be sought[188].

These observations appear to go hand-in-hand with the fact that the Martian magnetic field is presently no greater than 3×10^{-4} and has apparently been reduced by some means[189]. Moreover, calculations made of the mass and angular momentum of Mars when compared with other members of the solar system, result in an ideal axial rotation of 8 hours. Actually the rotation is slightly over 24 hours, so Mars has somehow slowed considerably, an anomaly which has prompted the question:

> How could its rotation have been slowed in the absence of substantial tidal effects? Loss of a massive Martian satellite – greater than the mass of Ceres would be needed – but where is it now?.[190]

F F Fish was equally puzzled when he concluded:

> Mars... either must have lost considerable angular momentum or never possessed the initial angular momentum that would be inferred.[191]

We have previously mentioned that Earth's axial rotation may have been speeded up from a possible former 30-hour day to its present 24-hour day, so it is entirely conceivable that the Martian day has somehow slowed down, and perhaps from the same underlying cause.

Turning now to asteroids, we may note the fairly widespread view that they are the degassed relict nuclei of comets captured by Jupiter over aeons of time – although this is admittedly debatable[192]. The rocky composition and great relative size of some of the asteroids suggests that a cometary origin for them is unlikely, so their genesis must lie elsewhere. Efforts have been made to calculate the original mass of a single body to which all the asteroids might have once belonged, but this proved to be only 0.03 of that of the Moon[193], so either a very small hypothetical world formerly orbited where the asteroid belt now exists, or numerous fragments of it are now absent from the belt – in which case that world must have been correspondingly larger. It is surely significant that some asteroids appear to exist as families through the break-up of a larger body, whereby the relevant pieces now orbit close together. The Koronis family of 18 separate pieces is one such group.

Some of these groups orbit the Sun very eccentrically. The Apollo family, for example, overlaps Earth's orbit at perihelion (the closest part of the orbit to the Sun), and of its 40-odd members, over 15 are continuous crossers of Earth's orbit. The 10 strong Amor group although only occasionally crossing Earth's orbit always crosses the Martian orbit. Both these asteroid groups follow orbits that actually pass obliquely through the main asteroid belt. This suggests that they have been pulled out from the main asteroid swarm by some passing gravitational force, or ejected as a result of a collision with some larger body. Alternatively, they may not be true asteroids at all.

Hidalgo is the name of another eccentrically-orbiting body. Although usually classed as a minor planet, this small rocky object has a Jupiter-crossing orbit, and may actually be a large asteroid[194]. Interestingly, when it was first discovered by Baade, doubt arose as to whether it was a genuine minor planet or a comet because it exhibited diffuseness. Similar uncertainty attended the discovery of Comet Arend-Rigaux, because, although its orbit resembled that of a minor planet, it appeared to be very diffuse[195]. Irrespective of their real identities, both objects have clearly been deranged at some time in the past.

Yet other eccentrically-orbiting objects of doubtful origin, but clearly pulled out of kilter from some now-altered earlier regime, and apparently in the not-too-distant past at that, are the recently discovered Pholus and object 1992 QB. Pholus lies beyond Saturn's orbit and 1992 QB lies beyond Neptune's[196]. The latter appears to be connected in some manner with the Kuiper Belt, which lies at or near the edge of our solar system, which we shall consider again shortly.

All these eccentrically orbiting objects have led some to speculate whether asteroids and meteors, despite now following widely varying orbits, once shared a common origin. Both are almost invariably stony, meteors frequently characterised by a high iron or iron-nickel content – a detail suggesting to Sears that iron meteorites conceivably formed in the asteroid belt[197]. Van Flandern has examined the possibility that comets may have originated from the disintegration of a solid planet-sized body formerly existing where the asteroid belt now occurs[198]. Presumably the aggregations and groups of stony debris that would form in free space after the fragmentation of such a solid body would, as they settled down into orbits, form their own weak but distinctive gravitational fields and attract dissociated ions and electrons from the plasma now believed to pervade interplanetary and interstellar space. By such means, it was suggested, comets could be born.

The erstwhile existence of a planet orbiting where the asteroid belt now lies has been discussed by many writers, including Ovenden, who examined the proposition in relation to Bode's Law[199], first formulated in 1772. Johann Bode observed the regularly increasing distances of the planets from the Sun, and noted that there was a vacant orbit between Mars and Jupiter. It was, of course, the search for the planet thought to follow this orbit that led to the discovery of the first asteroid in 1801.

A distinct possibility exists, therefore, that asteroids, meteors and comets share a common origin, and that meteors and the large blocks of free-orbiting celestial ice are the remnants of something larger which broke up. If true, then many comets may be of comparatively very recent origin. Ages ranging from 10 million years or more to 10,000 years or less have been proposed by different authorities for comets, but the fact is, nobody really *knows* how old comets are. Therefore, the possibility exists – as some have suggested – that comets could be replenished from some source beyond the solar system. Certainly at least a high percentage of, if not all, comets may have formed from the debris of some larger body which disintegrated in the not-so-distant past.

If such an event occurred, then the aforementioned icy missiles presumably represent frozen fluids and gases dispersed in all directions at the time of that disintegration, but which have since settled down into eccentric orbits around the Sun. Such ice masses would imply that the original parent object was sufficiently large to have supported some kind of atmosphere, more akin perhaps to that of Jupiter or Saturn than to that of Earth, and containing more methane than the terrestrial atmosphere. Methane, we have noted, is evidently more common in planetary atmospheres furthest from the Sun – thus any sizable planet formerly orbiting between Mars and Jupiter very possibly possessed an atmosphere containing more methane than those of Earth or Mars, but less than those of Jupiter or the outer planets.

We must also refer here to the anomalous minor planet Chiron, which was only discovered in the late 1970's, orbiting between Saturn and Uranus. Chiron appears to be either a very large satellite which has 'escaped' from one of those planets, or is an asteroid or a dead cometary nucleus 'captured' by one of them and diverted into its present orbit[200]. As yet little is known about it, although it is immediately obvious that its size and position violates Bode's Law. But reviewing Chiron in conjunction with the anomalous tilting of neighbouring Uranus' rotational axis, the orbital eccentricity of both Neptune and Pluto and the retrograde motion of Neptune's two moons, it is equally obvious that something out of the ordinary has occurred in the far confines of the solar system and disturbed the outer planets and their satellites. Others have noted this state of affairs as well[201, 296].

All the foregoing, therefore, are apparently signposts to what seems to have been a celestial calamity which affected the greater part of the solar system at some time in the past, and which, as we shall later see, left free-moving debris ranging over wide areas of it.

13

THE CANDIDATES

We have seen that any external agent capable of slowing or halting Earth's rotation, or of tilting the terrestrial spin axis to some new angle, would necessarily have to be exceedingly powerful. If a lone agent or influence was involved, it would have to possess large mass and high electromagnetic potential. If several agents acted in concert, then their collective mass and electromagnetic fields would still need to be sufficiently powerful to produce such radical Earth changes. Our search, therefore, will be for some agency capable of fulfilling these rather special requirements.

The foregoing survey of maverick objects in the solar system clearly shows that, despite the relatively great size of the largest of them, none remotely possesses the mass needed to materially affect Earth's rotation or engender an axial shift. On the contrary, nearly all these objects themselves suffer perturbation, division or destruction if they venture too close to even the smallest planets.

Thus, unless there formerly existed maverick objects which were literally thousands of times more massive than the largest examples known today, no such object can have radically affected Earth. Although this observation also applies to conventional comets, so little is yet known about the recently discovered giant interstellar comets[202] that inevitably the possibility persists that such objects possess sufficiently massive nuclei as to cause the tremendous physical disturbances detailed in this book. Conceivably these objects may not, in fact, be true comets at all, but merely resemble them superficially.

We may, therefore, dismiss those earlier theories which postulated an asteroid or giant meteor, or a bolide[297], as the cause of the disaster. Similarly, those which ascribe the calamity to a comet may also be discarded, since conventional comets lack the mass required to effect the relevant physical changes, either terrestrially or elsewhere in the solar system. We may note, however, that Velikovsky, who advocated a comet as the causal agent, recognised the necessity of involving a *planet-sized* object (which he went on to identify as the present planet Venus).

Having eliminated meteors, asteroids and conventional comets from our list of candidates, we proceed to the next largest class of celestial objects – the satellites. These exist in almost all sizes in the solar system, ranging from small irregularly-shaped moons, like those orbiting Mars, to the huge satellites (Ganymede, Titan and Triton) larger than our Moon. The composition of the satellites varies considerably. Rocky and comparatively heavy examples, like the Moon, are known while others, such as Callisto, are surprisingly lightweight and probably consist mostly of ice. Obviously only the most massive satellites (those as large as our Moon) qualify for consideration here.

Yet, although Bellamy has attempted to explain the great physical disturbances of 11,500 years or so ago as the result of the disintegration of an earlier Tertiary satellite of Earth, and the subsequent capture of our present Moon[203], the existence of the former was actually never more than hypothetical, and the Moon itself is insufficiently massive to have perpetrated the immense upheavals characterising those disturbances. Nor are any other satellitic bodies known which could have produced those violent events. It thus follows that satellites can be safely eliminated from our list of candidates too.

Planets constitute the next group of candidates. We have seen that, although most circle the Sun on what may be conveniently termed 'fixed orbits', certain small planets – notably Hidalgo and Pluto – pursue highly eccentric orbits, or, like Chiron, have apparently been displaced and forced into new orbits which now confound Bode's Law. The orbital stability of the planets is therefore far from being immutable, although only *very* powerful forces could cause orbital changes or propel even small (let alone large) planets into new ones. No evidence exists for Hidalgo or any other minor planet having ever approached Earth close enough to affect its rotation or axial tilt, or that Mars or Venus ever caused or contributed to the widespread terrestrial changes previously mentioned[204]. Nevertheless, many ancient records repeatedly refer to the involvement of those two planets in a celestial drama coincident with great physical upheavals on Earth. However, Mulholland has stated that:

> ...The available observational data suggest strongly that *no* planet-sized object has passed near Earth in historic time, and probably not for a much longer time...[205].

Nonetheless, *something* capable of exerting a tremendous influence approached Earth closely about 11,500 years ago and left many mementos of the encounter. The accomplishment of these effects *necessitated* the interaction of an influence approaching planetary dimensions – something close either to Earth's mass and density (see table 4A), or of smaller mass and greater density. It seems unlikely that a larger object was concerned, for had that been the case then the Earth would probably have disintegrated according to Roche's Law, which we will examine shortly.

We have exhausted all possible candidates (likely and unlikely) within the solar system and are left to consider others which, perforce, would have possessed more distant origins. Of these, the idea of a passing star (sun) is too unlikely, for it would have incinerated the entire planetary concourse – thus, like Patten[206], we dismiss it. Yet, we should not overlook the fact that specialist studies of stars nearest the solar system indicate that relatively close stellar encounters are not only much more frequent than generally believed, but occur near enough astronomically to perturb even very long distance comets[207].

Just conceivably, one of the aforementioned giant interstellar 'comets' traversed the solar system some 11,500 years ago, wreaking havoc among the Sun's family, much as Clube and Napier have suggested[208]. There is, however, no firm scientific evidence for definitely identifying the astronomical visitor as such an object, and one may just as reasonably suppose that a large and highly dangerous supernova fragment entered the solar system at high velocity around that date. It is interesting that about 40 novae erupt annually in our galaxy alone, and a supernova roughly every 30 years[209]. Thus – assuming that these rates have remained more or less constant for, say, the last 15,000 years – no less than 600,000 novae and 500 supernovae have occurred in our galaxy during that period.

Supernovae are actually quite common cosmic events, some 600 of them having been observed among the nearer galaxies since the 1930s[210]. Of the supernovae recorded in our galaxy, a surprising number have exploded unexpectedly *near* the solar system within the last 15,000 years[211] – at least *five* between 15,000 and 11,500 years BP. Of these, the Vela supernova – an exploded star (G263.9–3.3) situated at the unusually close astronomical distance of d=500pc from the solar system – could be a likely candidate, as recent calculations suggest that it erupted either some 14,300 years[212] or about 11,000 years ago[213]. Both these dates fall within the 'right' interval before the onset of the Phaeton disaster.

It should, however, be remembered that if this particular scenario has any merit at all, then the *velocity* at which the Phaeton 'object' traversed the intervening regions of interstellar space would be the most critical factor. Certainly, on such a lengthy journey through an all-pervading plasma of dissociated ions and electrons, any such high-speed object could be expected to acquire a high electromagnetic potential in addition to any electrical or magnetic field it already possessed. Such an object would be extremely dangerous.

Although it is impossible at this juncture to positively pinpoint Phaeton's real identity, and we can merely state what it was not, it must surely transcend coincidence that the gamma-ray spectrometer on the Third High Energy Astronomical Observatory satellite (HEAO 3) has lately detected a high concentration or cloud of Aluminium-26 (^{26}Al) in space, surrounding the solar system. ^{26}Al is a radioactive isotope with a half-life of about one million years, and, according to theoretical studies, is *readily produced in supernova explosions*. Ultimately ^{26}Al decays to Magnesium-26, but as this cloud is apparently still very much Aluminium-26 and not Magnesium-26, its decay is not very far advanced and suggests that the cloud may be as young as a mere 10,000 years[214].

If the cloud truly represents supernova debris, then the original explosion must, by astronomical standards, have occurred very close to the solar system. An original source no more distant than 45 light-years has, in fact, been proposed for this cloud[215].

The location of this high concentration of Aluminium-26 on the outer edge of the solar system is of special interest in relation to the location of the Kuiper Belt mentioned earlier. Recent observations made from universities in California and Hawaii have confirmed the reality of this Belt, the existence of which was first proposed by the astronomer Gerard Kuiper in 1951[216]. The Belt has been shown to be composed of numerous (probably thousands) of tiny planetoid objects – not unlike those comprising the Asteroid Belt considered earlier. Most of the objects appear to be very small, but two at least are apparently as large as 150 miles (240km) across, and still larger ones may well await future discovery. Actually locating and identifying such small objects across the enormous distance separating them from Earth is extremely difficult, so the discovery of larger bodies in this Belt may not occur for years. Nevertheless, the apparent orbit of these objects brings them for a while inside that of eccentrically orbiting Pluto, and some astronomers have already begun to wonder if the Kuiper Belt represents the disintegrated remains of a once much larger object formerly orbiting the Sun far out on the edge of the solar system as we know it.

It has been noticed that Uranus seems to have changed its speed round the Sun in June 1987, and at least one astronomer has theorised that this may have resulted from Uranus colliding with an unknown object which, to have achieved that effect, would have had to have had a diameter of some 600 miles (960km) – small by astronomical standards but considerably larger than any Kuiper Belt object yet recorded. Pluto's lone satellite, Charon, is only 700 miles (1,120km) or so in diameter, and thus scarcely larger than the object supposed to have speeded up Uranus' motion around the Sun. But Pluto's orbit is twice crossed by that of the Kuiper Belt objects, so Charon being a captured body from the Kuiper Belt is not unreasonable. Likewise the aforementioned object 1992 QB, presently orbiting eccentrically between the orbits of Neptune and Pluto, is also quite possibly a small world which has broken away from the main swarm of Kuiper Belt objects. Certainly the removal from the Kuiper Belt swarm of several objects of 700 miles (1,120km) diameter or larger renders the possibility that the size of the original object now represented by the Kuiper Belt swarm, Charon, 1992 QB and the theoretical 600 mile (960km) object which affected Uranus' speed, was appreciable and large enough to be regarded as a true planet. This, we shall discover, is a significant possibility when, shortly, we discuss Phaeton's recorded movements among the outer planets.

On the basis of the above-mentioned details, we suggest that Phaeton was spawned in an astronomically-near supernova explosion, and that Phaeton was a portion of exploded astral matter. We further suggest that, being of that nature, Phaeton precipitated a second astronomically far smaller explosion, on coming into confrontation with the combined gravitational and electromagnetic fields of the huge outer planets of the solar system, and that this produced the Aluminium-26 cloud now known to exist on the edge of the solar system. The above-cited detail that the astronomically-close Vela supernova exploded some time between 14,300 and 11,000 years ago indicates that, allowing for the time taken by Phaeton to traverse interstellar space between the point of its original disruption – 45 light years distant – and the outer confines of the solar system, the planetary derangements under discussion probably took place approximately 11,500 years ago!

Assuming for the moment that Phaeton, after initially disrupting, subsequently travelled at high velocity on a course destined to bisect the solar system, it need not have actually moved at more than one fiftieth of the speed of light to have covered the distance represented by 45 light years in just a few hundred years. If proceeding at only one hundredth the speed of light it would still have completed the distance in slightly less than one thousand years, and it would have been within the time-frame calculated for the Vela supernova event generally. Viewed from this aspect, the possibility of Phaeton having been an astral body, a remnant of a supernova, becomes entirely plausible.*

The apparent youthfulness of the cloud of Aluminium-26 suggests the astronomically-close occurrence of a major cosmic event like a supernova *within* geologically recent times. Phaeton certainly entered and caused havoc throughout the solar system during times which, though ancient in terms of human endeavour, were geologically *very* recent.

---

* See *Note 13.*

There are, therefore, good reasons for supposing that all these seemingly disparate details are actually pieces of the same tremendous drama – one which embraced the entire solar system and left as its legacy after effects that *still* affect the Earth.

14

PHAETON – AN EXCEPTION TO THE RULE

A further avenue of approach respecting the real identity of Phaeton comes from the eye-witness descriptions of it preserved in the numerous traditions and legends mentioned in Part Three. A supplementary survey of these follows below, during which we shall generally refer to Phaeton by that name irrespective of the plethora of other appellations by which it has been remembered.

Firstly, in the surviving *original* fragmentary accounts by Hyginus, Euripides and Ovid, Phaeton is specifically called by that name and always described as a bright fiery body. The name actually signifies 'the shining one', an appropriate title for an entity anciently regarded as the son of the sun-god Helios. Referring to Phaeton as *Typhon*, the Roman writer Pliny tells us much the same thing:

> ...it had a fiery appearance and was twisted like a coil, and it was very grim to behold: it was not really a star so much as what might be called a ball of fire...[217].

The seventeenth century savant, Adam Rockenbach, who claimed to have drawn upon the most reliable of the earliest writers (including works now lost), added:

> It was fiery, of irregular circular form, with a wrapped head; it was in the shape of a globe and was of terrible aspect... in the form of a disc...[218].

Significantly, Avienus likened it to a great sickle[219], perhaps a description of a globular body illuminated on one side only.

An ancient Jewish tradition states that the Deluge was caused by: "...the Lord God changing the places of two stars in a constellation"[220], thus specifically identifying Phaeton as a fiery star-like body rather than a comet. The same idea was embedded in Persian legend. The bright fiery *Tistrya* was styled: "...the leader of the stars against the planets"[221].* This stars-versus-planets conflict was obviously witnessed by early people and we shall have more to say about it shortly.

The Salishan Indians of North America mention a pre-catastrophic period when the Sun was no bigger than a star[222], presumably an allusion to the small size of the Sun-like Phaeton when still far distant from the Earth.

This closely parallels the ancient Hindu account of Brahma and his attendants observing the arrival in the heavens of "an exceedingly small" white boar-shaped body which: "...in the space of an hour, grew to the size of an elephant of the largest size, and remained in the air"[223], prior to it plunging to Earth and causing a worldwide flood. Chinese traditions similarly tell how, during the time of the legendary emperor Ya-hou: "...a brilliant star issued from the constellation of Yin"[224], prior to a tremendous global upheaval.

---

* See *Note 14*

Again, *Ta-vi* is described in tribal legends from southern California as a star-like or sun-like body rather than a cometary object. It allegedly roamed the skies at will and sometimes came close to Earth in its heavenly wanderings, scorching it, like Phaeton, in the process[225]. And correctly-interpreted observations of unusually moving 'stars' permitted the Peruvian deluge-hero to seek a mountain refuge prior to the advent of a world-drowning flood[226].

The foregoing makes it perfectly clear that Phaeton was anciently regarded as a generally round, brilliantly fiery body of appreciable size, and much more star-like or sun-like than conventional comets: and it was held to have in some way caused the Deluge.

Many traditions, however, refer to two or more cosmic visitors assailing Earth simultaneously.* The Norse sagas refer to two rampaging celestial 'monsters', the Fenris-Wolf and the Midgård Serpent, that brought death and ruin to the ancient world. Described as coursing through the heavens side by side, they acted in concert, and reputedly sired the equally dreadful 'sons of Muspelheim' – Surt, Loke and Garm – a detail shown later to be of considerable significance. Old Persian texts mention an essentially similar pair of ravaging marauders, Ahriman and its snake-like offspring Azhidhaka[227], or, in other versions, Zohak and Iblis[228], which subjected Earth to all kinds of disasters. The reported serpentiform or dragon-like aspects of these assailants is noteworthy.

Even scriptural literature refers to a great war anciently fought in heaven between Lucifer (Satan) and his hosts and Michael and his angels. The former were ultimately vanquished by the latter and "cast down onto Earth"[229]. The *Book of Revelation* specifically identifies Lucifer with: "...the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil and Satan"[230].

Other biblical sources award different names to these antagonists, sometimes simultaneously furnishing additional details. Thus, in a prophetically phrased passage we read:

> In that day the Lord with his sore and great and strong sword shall punish Leviathan the piercing serpent, even Leviathan that crooked serpent; and He shall slay the dragon that is in the sea[231].

Elsewhere we find:

> Art thou not it that hath cut Rahab, and wounded the dragon?[232].

In *Psalms* we hear of Rahab (evidently another name for one of the assailants) again: "Thou hast broken Rahab in pieces"[233], and: "...thou didst break the heads of the dragons on the waters"[234].

Traditionally, the destruction of these cosmic 'monsters' was almost always associated with water in one form or another. Thus, such phrases as 'in the sea' and 'on the waters' immediately remind us of Apollonius Rhodius's statement that, after being felled by Zeus's thunderbolts, Typhon lay beneath the Serbonian Lake; and the tremendous flood that allegedly issued from Satan's mouth after he had fallen to Earth; and the flood that reputedly gushed out of Tawats 'eyes' on coming to pieces after careering madly over the burning Earth. Despite their internal differences, these accounts clearly refer to the same original event.

The changing and varied visual appearances of these extraordinary visitors also provides further insights into the apparent nature of these bodies. Most often, they are described as writhing dragons or coiling serpents, and are sometimes said to have been multi-headed, to have displayed wide-gaping jaws, tusks, horns, sparkling crowns, or glowing manes and hair-like appendages, to have had speckled bodies and to have jetted great streams of fire from their imagined mouths. Other accounts mention the emission of pestilential clouds, poisonous blasts and rains of 'red milk' or 'blood'; while yet others refer to their production of

---

* See *Note 15.*

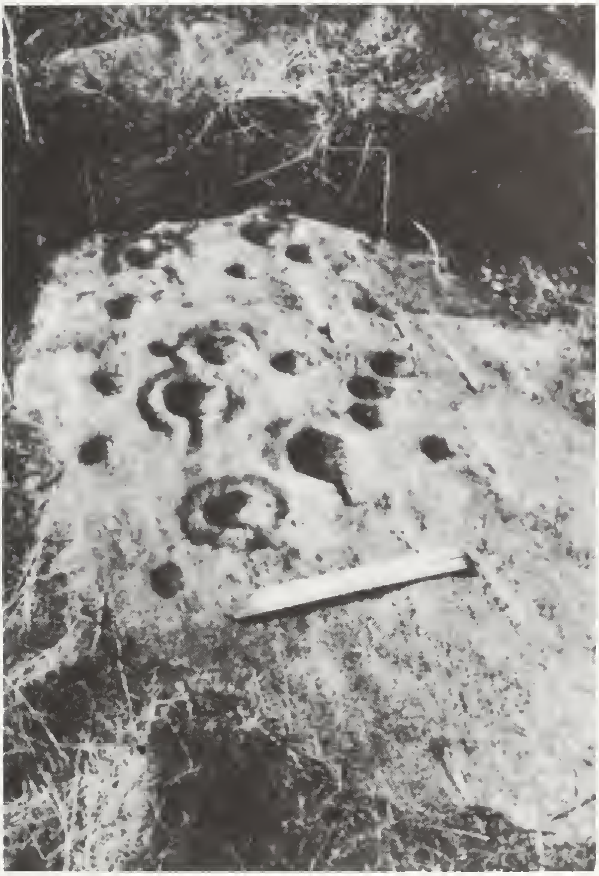

Fig 4.10a. Carved Neolithic 'cup-and-ring' motifs at Ardmarnoch, Scotland. *After R W B Morris, 1977, "The Pleistocene Rock Art of Argyll", by permission of Blandford Press and Bodleian Library, Oxford.*

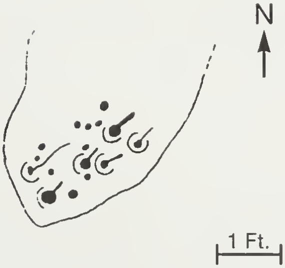

Fig 4.10b. Scale diagram showing the disposition of the Ardmarnoch rock motifs.

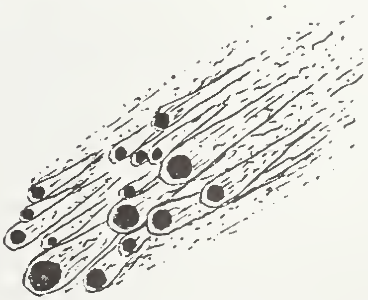

Fig 4.10c. The Ardmarnoch rock motifs redrawn to represent a similarly-arranged group of fiery celestial objects. This representation, although agreeing well with world tradition, is purely hypothetical.

hissing, roaring, thunderous or explosive sounds. It is also clear that each of these cosmic assailants possessed considerable bulk and mass. And since at least one of these objects (Phaeton) was reportedly only a little less brilliant than the Sun, the above descriptions, though diverse, collectively suggest that incandescent, electromagnetically excited bodies of matter were undergoing all manner of ever-changing images and trailing agitated trains of gases and debris.

That such images and descriptions closely mirror those forecastable for a 'stellar' visitor which, making a hypothetically close approach to Earth, was wrapped in igniting and exploding methane clouds productive of great jets of fiery hydrocarbons and poisonous blasts, is yet another aspect of this topic which it would be irresponsible to ignore.

Unquestionably the bodies involved were *not* abnormally large comets, meteors or asteroids familiar to modern astronomers. They were entirely different cosmic visitors. In short, Phaeton and its alleged companions were exceptions to the rule.

To survivors of this catastrophe, the sight of these objects plunging as a group across the heavens – a scene no doubt repeatedly obscured by the chronically deranged terrestrial atmosphere – was a never-to-be-forgotten experience, and appears to have subsequently led people to commemorate them in stone carvings. A possible example of such a carving adorns a large flat rock at Ardmarnoch in western Scotland[235] – at least one scholar[236] likened the sinuous lines streaming out from apparently glowing nuclei of comets (figs 4.10ab). Accepting for the moment that this carving does represent this ancient celestial drama and that it is reasonably accurate, it is possible to reconstruct (fig 4.10c) how these objects *may* have looked all those millennia ago. Certainly, if interpreted in this manner, the carving transmits precisely the kind of picture or spectacle so often described in tradition and epic literature. Again we ask if this, too, can be mere coincidence?

It is noteworthy that astronomical subjects were seemingly recorded quite often in other European megalithic structures, themselves apparently coeval with the above Scottish example[237], that at least some had lunar and apparently calendrical significance[238], and that, when assessed collectively, such monuments betray a surprising degree of understanding of astronomical phenomena generally among Neolithic peoples who raised the megaliths[239]. In that respect it would therefore have been remarkable had they not attempted to portray Phaeton's visit in their rock carvings.

15

THE MESOPOTAMIAN CONNECTION

Like many other early nations, the ancient Mesopotamians possessed a full account of this celestial war preserved on tablets found in the library of the 7th century BC monarch Assurbanipal in the ruined city of Nineveh[298]. These tablets name the principal antagonists as *Tiamat*, a 'dragon-monster'[299], and *Marduk*, an effulgent hero[300] considered to be the most radiant deity after *Apsu*, the supreme Sun-god[301].

A baked clay cylinder-seal made by the Akkadian civilisation of Mesopotamia, and preserved as specimen VA/243 at the Vorderasiatische Abteilung of the State Museum in eastern Berlin[302], depicts the solar system as known to the Sumerians in the third millennium BC[303]. It shows eleven globes encircling a large rayed star representing the Sun (fig 4.11a). The globes are generally thought to be planets, and their disposition is seen more clearly in fig 4.11b. Other cylinder-seals showing deities (Sun-gods?) orbited by *eleven* planets are also known. The relevant portions of some of them are given here as figs 4.11c and 4.11d.

Discounting tiny Chiron, modern astronomy recognises only nine planets in the solar system – Mercury, Venus, Earth, Mars, Jupiter, Saturn, Uranus, Neptune and Pluto. If we elevate the Moon to planetary status, as the Sumerians appear to have done, then we have a total of ten planets orbiting the Sun today. On this basis one planet is currently still missing from the earlier Sumerian total. Why, therefore, do the modern and Sumerian totals differ? Is this difference real or imaginary? Did the original seal-makers err in showing eleven planets? Could there really have been another planet known to the Sumerians, as yet unknown to us or lost since their day? If so, when and how was this planet lost? Could its disappearance, if real, be connected in any way with the Phaeton event? Such questions demand answers.

It is especially noteworthy that the most accomplished astronomers of antiquity were the Sumerians and Chaldeans[304] (early Babylonians) of the third and fourth centuries BC, from which it hardly seems likely that they would repeatedly depict one planet too many on their cylinder-seals. Once, just possibly; repeatedly no. The level of astronomical knowledge in the ancient Near East[305] more than confirms the apparent accuracy of these cylinder-seals and that no error was committed.

That the ancients recognised the existence of at least six planets – Mercury, Venus, Luna (Moon), Mars, Jupiter and Saturn – in addition to the Sun, is well known, and some also knew that the Earth was a planet too. These bodies, of course, were known by different names among different nations, several of which we shall have occasion to mention.

It was not until 1781 that modern astronomy discovered Uranus, 1846 Neptune and 1930 Pluto. Many early astronomers, however, apparently knew that these planets existed and even had names for them.

While Nicolaus Copernicus is justly called the 'Father of Modern Astronomy', in reality he only *re*discovered (in 1543) the central position of the Sun in the solar system, for the same celestial arrangement was apparently known to Aristarchus of Samos in the third century BC, and to others before him[306]. Two hundred years earlier, for instance, the Greeks had listed the planets in their correct order from the Sun, thereby acknowledging that the Sun, not Earth, was the centre of the solar system. In discussing the exactness and accuracy of Mesopotamian astronomy generally, Diodorus Siculus, who lived in the first century BC, noted:

> ...the Chaldeans named the planets. In the centre of their system was the Sun, the greatest light, of which the planets were 'offspring', reflecting the Sun's position and shine... Each of the planets according to them has its own particular course, and its velocities and periods of time are subject to change and variation... the Moon's light is reflected and her eclipses are due to the shadow of the Earth[240].

The orbital and velocity variations mentioned by Diodorus are strongly suggestive of the fact that Chaldean astronomers knew of the equivalent terrestrial variations highlighted earlier in IV:7 on *Stability*. Possession of such advanced knowledge at so early a date would not have been unlikely among a race also cognisant of the precession of the equinoxes and the Great Year[307]. These same Chaldeans are also accredited by Geminus of Rhodes as having been the first to determine the exact motions of the Moon[241].

Hipparchus, during the second century BC, knew of and understood the precession of the equinoxes[308]. These are inexplicable unless 'spherical astronomy' is subscribed to, and only after the arrival in a given zodiacal sign (constellation) of Spring in relation to the Sun's position (as seen from Earth). The slow shift of the equinox point from one zodiacal constellation to another requires 2,160 years to complete, a period far too long to permit any one astronomer to make the relevant observations himself[309]. Hipparchus evidently inherited detailed information amassed in earlier times,

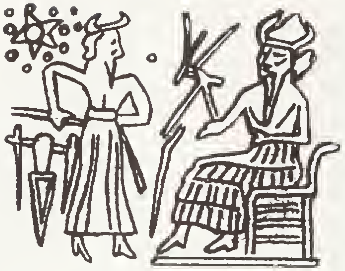

Fig 4.11a. Outline MS tracing by R. Verrill (1955) of part of Akkadian cylinder-seal VA/243 in the State Museum, Berlin.

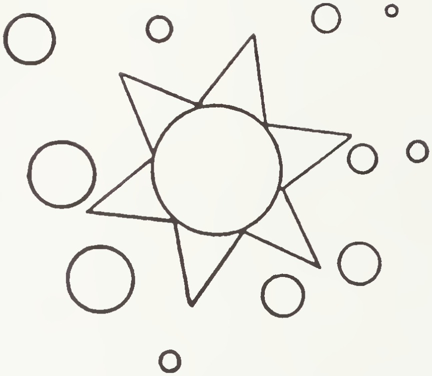

Fig 4.11b. Original MS reconstruction by F.G. Hehr (c. 1954) of the 'planetary' system indicated on, and enlarged from, VA/243.

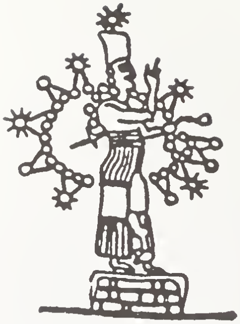

Fig 4.11c. Outline drawing in W. Hayes Ward[310] of an apparent 'planetary' system on Babylonian cylinder-seal VA/508.

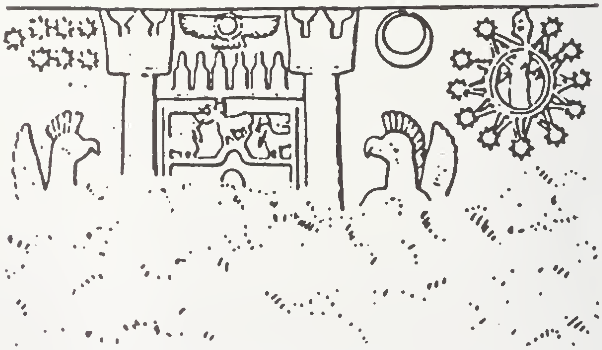

Fig 4.11d. Assyrian cylinder-seal impression, VAT.8872 in the State Museum, Berlin, showing the same 'planetary' system, and, at top left, the seven 'suns' or 'burning mountains' (see pp12, *suprà*). After E.D. Van Buren[311].

and actually acknowledged that his mentors were "Babylonian astronomers of Erech, Borsippa and Babylon"[242].

The zodiacal signs themselves date from extreme antiquity[312], for Prof Alfred Jeremias found evidence that a Sumerian clay tablet in the Berlin Museum (VAT 7847) begins a list of named zodiacal constellations with the name Leo (the Lion), which projects us back to 11,000 BC or thereabouts – the time when the equinox point was in the constellation Leo[243]. This suggests that the zodiac had been devised even *before* the Phaeton disaster.

Professor Herman Hilprecht investigated the subject still further. After analysing thousands of baked clay tablets bearing mathematical tabulations he concluded that:

> ...all the multiplication and division tables from the temple libraries of Nippur and Sippar, and from the library of Assurbanipal are based upon 12960000[244].

Analysing the significance of this number, Hilprecht decided that it could relate only to the precession of the equinoxes and that the Sumerians knew of the Great Year of 25,920 years[313]. This is sometimes called the Platonian Year, for apparently Plato, too, was aware of the phenomenon[314].

Assyrian, Chaldean and Sumerian astronomers accurately monitored the movements and positions of many celestial bodies relative to Earth and to one another, and kept precise ephemerides – tables that predicted and listed the future positions of the celestial bodies[315]. These tables were examined by Prof George Sarton[245]. He found that they were computed by two methods[316] which, as Prof Neugebauer subsequently discovered, were based not on observations by the astronomers who produced them but compiled "...from some fixed mathematical schemes... which were given and were not to be interfered with"[246].

These mathematical schemes were very old, for even the Assyrian astronomers did not fully comprehend them and were able to use them only with the aid of "procedure texts"[317] which provided "the rules for computing ephemerides step by step" according to some "strict mathematical theory"[318]. This proved to be so advanced or obscure that, as Neugebauer admitted, its "...empirical and theoretical foundation"[319] largely escapes modern scholars as well.

A clay tablet from Ur, dating from the third millennium BC, lists and describes a series of celestial bodies so carefully and accurately, that modern astronomers have had little hesitation in recognising the text as a classification of the constellations, which, in addition to the twelve zodiacal groupings, include the northern constellations of Draco, Ursa Major, Lyra, Cygnus, Cepheus and Triangulum, and the southern ones of Canis Major, Orion, Centaurus, Corvus and Hydra[320]. This is interesting because, so far as is known, the Sumerian astronomers were the first to divide the heavens into three regions or 'ways'[321]. Of these, the northern 'way' was named after *Enlil*, the southern after *Ea* and the central one (which contained the zodiacal constellations) after *Anu*. Rather soberingly we have to record here that it was not until 1925 that modern astronomers, after much discussion, decided to divide the heavens, as seen from Earth, into three regions[322]. The modern and the ancient tripartite divisions are remarkably similar.

The names Ea, Anu and Enlil are especially interesting here for they provide further indications of the advanced levels attained by the early Mesopotamian astronomers and suggest that they knew a great deal about what actually happened at the time of Phaeton's visitation. Ea and Anu were the Sumerian names for the planets respectively known today as Neptune and Uranus. The existence of these planets *was* known to these astronomers and is presumably the reason why both appear on the aforementioned cylinder-seals.

Enlil is a particularly interesting name, for Sykes[247] has noted that: *Lil* meant 'demon' in several ancient Middle East dialects, whereby *Enlil* may have signified something like 'Demon Lord'; and that the Assyrians often referred to Enlil as *Bel*, who, in turn, was almost certainly identical with the heavenly-hero Marduk (alias Phaeton).

In Sumerian mythology Enlil was regarded as Anu's eldest son and the prince of the Sumerian pantheon, being second only in rank to the supreme Sun-god Apsu.

Later, Enlil appears to have transgressed divine laws, whereupon he was banished to the 'underworld'. Can it be coincidence that Lucifer (Satan), who was originally second only to God, was eventually thrown out of heaven and cast down into a 'bottomless pit', or that Phaeton, who was nearly as radiant as Helios (the Sun), was ultimately destroyed and his remains thrown down from the skies and buried under the Earth? The same theme recurs in Norse mythology about the primeval giant, *Ymir*, who, formed of fire and water, once waged war against the whole world and was only overcome by the gods Odin, Vili and Ve who flung his body into *Ginungagap*, a vast chasm which Ymir in his rage had caused to open in the Earth's crust[248]. The belief that a universal Deluge arose after *Athrajen*, hero of the North African Kabyles, had slain a marauding giant named *Ferraun* and hurled his carcass into a lake called *Thamgurth*[249], strongly suggests that he and Ymir were identical with the Deluge-inducing Lucifer or Phaeton.

Ginungagap is reminiscent of the great world crack or fissure discussed in Part One, an appropriate 'tomb' for anything consigned to it, and aptly described in later times as the 'underworld' or 'bottomless pit'.

Enlil, therefore, seems to be yet another title of Phaeton, while the 'way' of Enlil in the Sumerian tripartite division of the heavens appears to refer to the regions whence Enlil originated or which it traversed after entering the solar system. In that connection it is worth noting that the Phaeton legend refers to the Milky Way as the track taken by the fiery chariot of Helios, the stars being its scattered ashes; that the Brazilian Borros believe the Milky Way to be an ash trail left by a great conflagration (fiery object – Phaeton); that an early Indian name for the Milky Way was 'Path of the Serpent'[250]; and that the *Book of Job* asserts that Leviathan – a dragon-like attendant of the Phaeton-like Rahab – "maketh a path to shine after him"[251].

Interestingly, in considering cosmic causes for certain mass extinctions of terrestrial life in the past, Stothers concluded that: "...the most important perturbing objects must not only have a high mass density but must also be concentrated strongly towards the galactic plane"[252]. The Milky Way marks the galactic plane, as viewed from Earth! Did Phaeton, therefore, emanate from the direction of the galactic plane?

Astronomical knowledge in the ancient Near East was thus clearly far more advanced than is commonly supposed, but although much of it was apparently derived from yet earlier but unknown sources, considerable confidence can be placed in the veracity of even those records which depict additional worlds or planets in the solar system. Does some amazing truth lie behind these apparent discrepancies, a truth which involved large scale planetary disturbances like those suggested by our previous survey of the present solar system?

16

WAR IN HEAVEN

No names are given on the Mesopotamian cylinder-seals for the celestial bodies depicted on them, but the central rayed object is almost certainly the Sun and the remaining bodies are planets. The absence of distinguishing names, however, inevitably makes planetary identifications debatable, even though it would be reasonable to assume that the larger images represent the larger planets and the smaller images the smaller planets. We shall also shortly see that, on cylinder-seal VA/243, they have been placed around the rayed Sun in more or less correct orbital sequence (*not* distance). There is, however, one extra body, which, because it is not rayed, is presumably also planetary.

Various ancient Near Eastern cosmologies have come down to us, although often in rather fragmentary condition. Studies of them clearly show that all were based on some original prototype which evidently incorporated not only surprisingly advanced concepts but, in simplified form, the idea of the evolution of worlds in much the same general way as astrophysicists do today. Of these cosmologies, the version favoured by the early Mesopotamians is probably the best known and the most completely studied. It is a veritable epic, and, in its latter stages, describes the Marduk/Tiamat confrontation. It is thus directly concerned with the main theme of this book.

Three variants of this cosmological saga exist, in which the names of the principal characters often vary or are occasionally interchangeable. Oldest of the three is the version inscribed on clay tablets dating from about 650 BC, found in Assurbanipal's palace library at Nineveh. The next was written by Berosus about 280 BC, and the third, bequeathed us by Damascius, dates from the sixth Christian century. As Berosus' and Damascius' accounts are unhelpful here, we quickly turn to the oldest version.

The first studies made of the Nineveh tablets showed that they dealt with an Akkadian creation epic in many ways closely parallelling that given in *Genesis*. Accordingly, the first translation of it into English highlighted this similarity[253], later studies merely reinforcing this point[254]. Most scholars have come to regard the epic as a philosophical work emphasising the eternal struggle between good (light) and evil (darkness), or as an allegorical story of Nature's alternating summer and winter; yet, in view of current astronomical knowledge, it is comparatively easy to 'read between the lines', and reconstruct from the epic's text the outlines of what can only have been a monumental war in heaven. Indeed, in this connection, one cannot help but agree with Farnell who, in 1919, correctly observed:

> What is quite normal in nature and society rarely excites the myth-making imagination, which is more likely to be kindled by the abnormal, some startling catastrophe, some terrible violation of the social code.[255]

The Marduk/Tiamat confrontation combined all those deviations from the norm.

The epic, of which Prof Leonard King's translation is used here, and in which immense periods of time are truncated and telescoped, begins with a picture of the primeval universe. It then continues with an account of what may be regarded as the evolution of the planets (called 'gods' in the epic) and some of the satellites comprising the solar system. Together with the Sun, these bodies are awarded distinctive names in the Akkadian text, which, because we will repeatedly refer to them in the following paragraphs, are listed below with their modern counterparts.

Table 4B. Suggested identification of objects on Babylonian cylinder-seal

Akkadian Names	Modern Names
Apsu	The Sun
Mommu	Mercury
Lahamu	Venus
Lahmu	Mars
Tiamat	no equivalent now – perhaps *Electra* of Greek legend.
Kishar	Jupiter
Anshar	Saturn
Gaga	Chiron
Anu	Uranus
Nudimmud (or Ea)	Neptune
Gibil[256]	no equivalents known, but possibly Triton or Pluto.
Nusuku[257]	

The above list suggests the probable identities (Akkadian and modern) of the celestial objects featured on the aforementioned cylinder-seal in the East Berlin State Museum. The seal apparently shows the planets in more or less their correct order, in an anti-clockwise direction (that in which they naturally orbit the Sun) commencing with Mercury. The large relative size of the body identified as *Tiamat* is interesting. It suggests that Tiamat physically resembled Jupiter and Saturn more than any of the inner planets. With that possibility in mind, it follows that Tiamat probably possessed a deep atmosphere not very dissimilar from

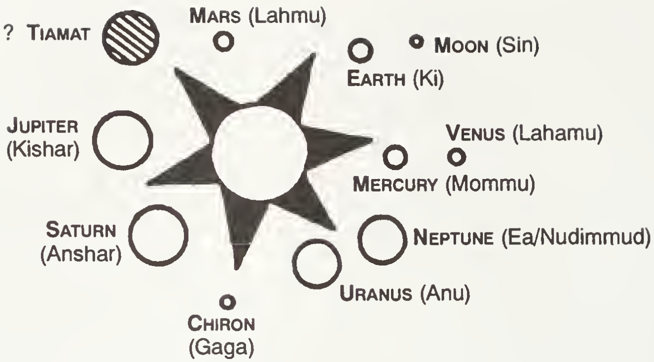

Fig 4.12. Suggested identification of objects on Babylonian cylinder-seal. Tiamat, the lost planet, is shown shaded. Some translations give Gaga as Kakka[323].

those of the two giant planets just named, and in which methane, ammonia and various ices were comparatively prominent. We shall later find these to be particularly significant points. Ovenden has even suggested that its minimum configuration (distance from the Sun) relative to Earth (1.00) and Jupiter (5.20), was 2.79[258], and Van Flandern that its mass may have been 90 times that of Earth[259]. Opik has also speculated about this missing planet[260].

At this juncture we must note that the Akkadian epic makes no mention of Earth or the Moon, although Babylonian astronomers knew the planetary nature of these bodies, and apparently included them on the cylinder-seal diagram, calling them *Ki* and *Sin* respectively. Throughout most of this epic, Earth is thus conceived of, somewhat curiously, as a kind of unaffected off-stage vantage point from which the celestial dramas were merely observed and recorded.

No mention is made in the epic of how long peace reigned in the solar system before it was shattered by the arrival of a new 'god', Marduk, although we know from other evidence that Marduk (alias Phaeton) rampaged near Earth only some 11,500 years ago, when all the planets were still present in the solar system, orbiting the Sun on regular paths. But, as we shall now see, Marduk's arrival disrupted this order, and this remarkable epic, from this point onwards, traces the resultant havoc among the planets step by step.

The epic states:

In the Chamber of Fates, the place of Destinies,
A god was engendered, most able and wisest of gods;
In the heart of the Deep was Marduk created[324].

The 'heart of the deep' apparently signifies cosmic space beyond the confines of the solar system. Marduk originated there and was, therefore, alien to the solar system. As it neared the system, Marduk began to be attracted by the outermost sizable planet, Ea (Neptune), who could, therefore, be said to have 'begot him'. Marduk's origins are never made very clear, although several early sources provide a variety of scrappy and unhelpful hints that he was born in *Aruru*, *Dauce* or *El*[261]. Be that as it may, Marduk was a spectacular sight.

Alluring was his figure, sparkling the lift of his eyes;
Lordly was his gait, commanding as of olden times...
Greatly exalted was he above the gods, exceeding throughout...
His members were enormous, he was exceeding tall...
When he moved his lips fire blazed forth.

That Marduk was evidently visible from Earth during its initial 'adventures' among the furthest members of the Sun's family again indicates that it was not a comet. Even the brightest comets recorded in astronomical archives are not visible to the unaided eye when traversing the outer limits of the solar system. Yet Marduk is described unambiguously as a huge and radiant visitor from more distant (interstellar) regions, from time to time spewing great jets of fire. We may again emphasise that no comet observed in the outer confines of the solar system has yet been observed to eject great streams of fire like those just mentioned, since by their very nature comets are not actually fiery. Marduk was thus definitely some other kind of celestial visitor.

Of particular interest in the epic is a passage which relates how, after Marduk had entered the solar system, the planets "...heaped upon him their awesome flashes" making him shine with dazzling brilliance[325] as he became "clothed with the halo of ten gods". In other words, Marduk grew markedly brighter, so bright that the ancients considered him second only to the Sun in heavenly brilliance, and, as amongst the Greeks, dubbed him the 'son' of the Sun (*Sol* or *Helios*). Clearly something happened to Marduk when far out at the edge of the solar system, something that has never been associated with even the largest known comets.

It would not be unreasonable to account for Marduk's increased effulgence and therefore apparent size by postulating that the planetary 'flashes' 'heaped upon him' were immense thermoelectric (and probably electromagnetic) discharges directed at him by the outer planets whose own electromagnetic fields were by then beginning to react to Marduk's arrival. Yet such effects may have been a part only of what perhaps really happened, and masked what may have been a still more startling scenario.

So far the evidence is inconclusive that the Kuiper Belt objects genuinely represent the assorted remnants of some sizable bygone planetary body. Nevertheless, these remnants *do* occur astronomically close to a geologically *very* young Aluminium-26 cloud said to be typical of those associated with supernova explosions. Instead of attributing Marduk's increased brilliancy solely to colossal exchanges of energy between Marduk and the outer planets, however, it should be borne in mind that virtually the same effect could have arisen if Marduk had catastrophically ruptured the remote plane now possibly represented by the Kuiper Belt objects. The resultant explosion would have been enormous and, even from distant Earth, spectacular but soundless. To terrestrial observers, who would scarcely have been able to have actually seen the planet involved, it would have seemed as though Marduk had simply grown in size and brilliance, to become in that respect an apparent rival to the Sun – something no comet has ever been credited with achieving.

The explosion itself, assuming that one really took place, must have resulted from either a physical collision between Marduk and the disrupted planet, or from a concomitant destruction of part of Marduk's 'stellar' substance. This, or some closely similar scenario, must have been the source of the Aluminium-26 cloud.

There is, of course, no question of any supernova event occurring on the outer edge of the solar system. Had one erupted – at *any* point in geological history – it would have totally incinerated the solar system, the Sun probably being the lone survivor of such an event. Instead, something infinitely smaller (though still huge by Earthly standards) occurred beyond Pluto to create the Aluminium-26 cloud, something which had to have partly involved 'stellar' matter.

The inherent violence of such an explosion naturally flung dismantled pieces of the destroyed planet in all directions, and it is possible to interpret the eccentrically orbiting object 1992 QB, possibly the unknown large body which believedly altered Uranus' speed in 1897 and, perhaps, Pholus and Pluto's satellite Charon as some of the larger relics of the now-lost planet. Such a concept would also account for Pluto's own highly eccentric orbit.

After entering the solar system, Marduk first encountered Ea (Neptune), the gravitational field of which was sufficient to determine Marduk's future course, "making it good for its purpose". Neptune's gravitational pull was also powerful enough to cause Marduk to grow a second 'head', an indication of Marduk's molten, plastic, condition.

As Marduk reaches Anu (Uranus), however, great pieces of him are torn off and form into four attendants which commence to circle around Marduk "swirling as a whirlwind". Again, no cometary body has been observed to produce revolving satellitic objects; only an object possessing appreciable mass could have established and maintained such a situation. As previously noted, conventional comets lack mass of any consequence. (see also *Note 5*)

Also of interest is Marduk's direction of flight. Its passing of first Neptune and then Uranus strongly suggests that Marduk's flight-path was *contrary* to that of the planets, a factor which, in the case of a large and apparently highly-charged visitor like Marduk, must have been very disruptive for smaller bodies encountered *en route*. Could this, for example, be the reason why the small planet Pluto and Neptune's two satellites (Triton and Nereid) orbit so strangely? It will be recalled from Part Three that Ovid stated that Phaeton flew among the planets the 'wrong way'.

Marduk then passes Anshar (Saturn), so perhaps it is no coincidence that this planet, together with Anu (Uranus) and Ea (Neptune), rotates at a surprisingly fast speed, that Saturn's satellite Phoebe has a retrograde orbit, and that Uranus (Anu), which was responsible for distorting Marduk and detaching four 'satellites' from it, now rotates on an axis uniquely tilted NNW-SSE.

Marduk apparently became trapped by the gravitational fields of the three large outer planets for some appreciable time. This also began to affect the orbit of Tiamat and its satellite *Kingu*, with the former adopting an erratic orbital path, and the latter being pulled free of Tiamat's gravitational attraction and acquiring a "Tablet of Destiny".

At this point, Kishar, Anshar, Anu, and Ea asked themselves by what right Tiamat had to elevate Kingu to the status of a god – one who orbited freely (the Tablet of Destiny). Anshar (Saturn) asked first Ea (Neptune) and then Anu (Uranus) to slay Kingu, but neither could do so, whereupon Anshar conceived the idea that this could be achieved by the approaching Marduk, an idea eagerly agreed to by the other gods. Thus we find Marduk, approaching close to Saturn ("kissed the lips of Anshar"), agreeing to undertake this task. Anshar then instructed his emissary, Gaga (Chiron), to:

Be on thy way Gaga,
Take the stand before the gods,

seemingly a clear reference to Marduk pulling Chiron free of the gravitational field of Saturn and causing it henceforth to move in free orbit. The presence of such a small planet orbiting among the giant outer planets is one of the anomalies of the solar system, and could well be accounted for by the scenario unfolding before us.

Marduk plunged on and began to approach glistening[326] and brilliant[327] Tiamat:

He produced streams, disturbed Tiamat;
The gods were not at rest, carried as in a stream.

Tiamat is described as having "paced about distraught" as Marduk also affected the inner planets and "diluted their vitals... pinched their eyes". Such phrases convey a scene in which the powerfully-charged Marduk, a molten fiery object, emitted vast electromagnetic charges that, as well as causing Tiamat to orbit erratically, affected the equivalent fields of Tiamat and the inner planets. In this connection, could it be significant that for some while before the onset of the Phaeton disaster, increased heat and a terrible drought was allegedly experienced on Earth?

Encouraged by Marduk's willingness to destroy Kingu, the gods then exhort Marduk to go a step further and "cut off the life of Tiamat" as well. In the epic, Marduk agrees to do this on one condition, with the words:

If I, as your Avenger
Am to vanquish Tiamat, save your lives –
Convene an Assembly to proclaim my Destiny supreme.

This passage seemingly relates to the stage when Marduk, having apparently already approached near enough to Tiamat to derange its orbit and detach its satellite ('first-born') Kingu, found itself still struggling in the grip of the combined gravitational fields of the outer planets which, in the guise of gods, were anxious to be rid of him. Eventually they ejected Marduk from their sphere of gravitational influence straight towards Tiamat with 'destiny supreme'.

The epic then tells how, deranged by Marduk, Tiamat began to break-up; from her midst, there emerged eleven "monsters", styled elsewhere as "eleven mighty helpers", which "separated themselves" from her body and "growling, raging... marched at the side of Tiamat". Tiamat is said to have "crowned them with halos". According to Babylonian texts, these "helpers" were armed with thunderbolts and included Lakhmu the shining snake, the Great Lion, the Viper, the Ravening Dog, the Scorpion Man, the Storm Winds, the Goat Fish, the Fish Man and Kingu[262] – Tiamat's "first-born" (satellite) – who commanded them. Among these names we quickly recognise the Midgård Serpent and the Fenris-Wolf of the Norse *Eddas*.

The epic then describes how Marduk filled himself with "blazing flame" – increased in radiance – "constructed a bow... attached thereto an arrow", "set lightning" in front of him, and made "a net to enfold Tiamat therein". These phrases can only signify that Marduk developed a coma ('bow'), emitted flashes ('lightning') and gave off electrical discharges all round ('net') as it coursed across the heavens. It must have been an awesome and terrifying spectacle. The four whirling satellites ('winds') detached from him by Anu (Uranus) fly by Marduk's side, and to these he adds three more (pieces which break-off from him) called *Evil Wind*, *Whirlwind* and *Matchless Wind*. All head straight for Tiamat and "her host".

> *The Lord went forth, followed his course;*
> *Towards the raging Tiamat he set his face...*
> *The Lord approached to scan the innerside of Tiamat –*
> *The scheme of Kingu, her consort, to perceive.*
> *As he looks on, his course becomes upset,*
> *His direction is distracted, his doings are confused.*
> *When the gods, his helpers,*
> *Who were marching at his side,*
> *Saw the valiant Kingu, blurred became their vision.*

Marduk and his satellites were clearly deranged in flight as they neared Tiamat and Kingu, while the blurring of the satellites' 'vision' may refer to the blinding flashes of the electrical discharges that almost certainly must have occurred between all three bodies then. We have already noted how the electrical fields of closely approaching large bodies would try to equalise through repeated discharges of this kind.

Celestial battle, however, was now joined.

> *Tiamat and Marduk, the wisest of the gods,*
> *Advanced against one another;*
> *They pressed on to single combat,*
> *They approached for battle.*

Marduk "raised the flooding storm, his mighty weapon" (an electromagnetic storm of unimaginable violence?). "Tiamat emitted a roar" and, as her "fury" grew, "the roots of her legs shook back and forth" (Tiamat's magnetic poles repeatedly reversed with – surprisingly for earthly viewers – thunderous acoustics as the planet's structure endured appalling strain). Marduk then:

> *...spread out his net to enfold her;*
> *The Evil Wind, the rearmost, he unleashed at her face.*
> *As she opened her mouth, Tiamat, to devour him -*
> *He drove the Evil Wind so that she closed not her lips.*
> *The fierce storm Winds then charged her belly;*
> *Her body became distended; her mouth had opened wide.*
> *He shot there through an arrow, it tore her belly;*
> *It cut through her insides, tore into her womb.*
>
> *Having thus subdued her, her life-breath he extinguished.*

In this remarkable passage, we literally read of the terrible destruction of a planet. At this point we must assume from the foregoing passage and from its alleged position in the solar system that Tiamat was a fairly large planet possessing a lithosphere like that of Earth. After unleashing his 'flooding storm', Marduk then enveloped Tiamat in constant electrical discharges ('net') which so disrupted the planet's electrical mechanism that Tiamat's rotation was retarded or braked to a halt. This resulted in the planet's outer shell or crust splitting open ("opened her mouth"). While this crack was still open ("closed not her lips"), Marduk poured further electromagnetic charges ("fierce... winds") into it ("charged her belly"), so that "her body became distended" (internal magmatic material continued to rotate, causing the remaining portions of Tiamat's crust to bulge and/or sag locally). This, in turn, caused the crack to gape ever more widely ("her mouth had opened wide"), and it faced directly at Marduk as Tiamat "opened her mouth... to devour him".

Some bolt ("arrow") of electricity or similar matter was then shot by Marduk into this crustal aperture which "tore her belly... cut through her insides" (magmatic interior) and "tore into her womb" (penetrated to the planet's core). This was tantamount to a gigantic electrical 'short-out' between the two internal dynamos of the respective antagonists, and must have resulted in one of two things: either Tiamat's entire natural electromagnetic field was neutralised, this being drawn off and absorbed by Marduk, or Tiamat broke-up. That Tiamat seemingly suffered the latter fate is suggested by the following passage, in which Marduk:

To divide the monster he then artfully planned.
Then, as a mussel, he split her into two parts.
The Lord trod upon Tiamat's hinder part;
With his weapon the connected skull he cut loose;
He severed the channels of her blood;
And caused the North Wind to bear it
To places that have been unknown.
The half of her he set up as a screen for the skies;
Locking them together, as watchmen he stationed them...
He bent Tiamat's tail to form the Great Band as a bracelet.

Tiamat's split crust still hung partially connected, any surviving remnants of the stricken planet's atmosphere, liquids, ices and gases, no doubt smoking and steaming as a result of the immense heat generated throughout Tiamat's structure by Marduk's onslaught. With his weapon (electromagnetic), Marduk then dismembered the planet completely, one half of which, presumably the upper, being termed Tiamat's skull. The "channels of her blood" were severed (Tiamat's polar axis no longer existed), whereby the "skull" portion of the planet – which may have carried an ice-cap – floated freely apart from the rest of the savaged world.

Marduk then appears to have demolished one of these halves, which, because Marduk was still moving sunwards and dragging the remains of Tiamat along with it, formed a "tail" of debris which streamed out behind it. The epic tells how Marduk placed these fragments in the heavens as a "screen", a "bracelet", a "Great Band". Today this may represent either the asteroid belt, which consists mostly of related groups of objects, or the recently discovered circumsolar dust ring (see *Appendix* C). The scholarly Jewish translation of the Holy Scriptures according to masoretic texts, *The Torah*, also refers to this, alluding to Marduk simply as 'the Lord':

The Heavens bespeak the glory of the Lord,
The Hammered Bracelet proclaims his handiwork...[263].

and very significantly adds: "*From the end of heaven he emanates*"[264]. We have already noted that the Babylonian epic states that Marduk came from the 'Great Deep' ('end of heaven').

Meanwhile, the apparently undemolished portion of Tiamat was carried by Marduk towards the Sun and the inner planets. But what of Tiamat's 'helpers'? The epic relates how, after the destruction of Tiamat:

Her band was shattered, her host broken up.
The gods, her helpers who marched at her side,
Trembling with fear,
Turned their backs about so as to save and preserve their lives.

Marduk, however, caused them to be "thrown into a net" (to be captured gravitationally – the combined gravitational fields of Marduk and the remaining part of Tiamat must have been appreciable):

...They found themselves ensnared...

The whole band of demons that had
marched on her side
He cast into fetters, their hands he bound...
Tightly circled, they could not escape.

Furthermore, Marduk removed the "Tablet of Destiny" from Kingu's breast and attached it to his own – another reference to Kingu being reduced to a satellite, this time of Marduk. The gravitational field of Marduk thus continued to be enhanced.

Tiamat was no more. If early humanity had ever gazed at Tiamat as a distant planet circling the heavens (as the Babylonian epic clearly implies that they did), they could no longer locate it. It had disappeared. Interestingly, the ancient Greeks also speak of a time of celestial strife between the gods *Ares* (Mars) and *Athene* (Venus) when a planet, *Electra* by name and one of seven sisters, all sired by Atlas – and no longer able to watch the conflict – departed from the heavens never to be seen again[265].

In Part Three we found Plato's account of the loss of the legendary continent of Atlantis (the empire of Atlas) to be but one recollection of the occurrence of radical worldwide topographical changes some 11,500 years ago initiated by powerful and violent celestial agents.

So were *Electra* and *Tiamat* simply different titles of the same lost (destroyed) planet? Did Tiamat, like Electra, perish at a time when the planets Ares (Mars) and Athene (Venus) were also disturbed? Indeed, was their derangement merely part and parcel of the same cosmic drama which, in causing a vast conflagration, a tremendous flood, and major tectonic upheavals here on Earth, affected the entire solar system?

17

PHAETON'S WRATH

So far as our theme is concerned, the Babylonian epic finishes with the subjugation of Tiamat's attendants by the fiery Marduk. The epic has outlined an extraordinary celestial event in which the solar system was visited by a dangerous assailant from more distant cosmic regions, which thereupon wandered erratically among the planets in a sunwards direction, generating havoc as it did so. None of the described planetary reactions basically infringe known astronomical laws, although the account of the destruction of Tiamat is certainly startling. In 1950, however, Velikovsky – who hardly did more than acknowledge the existence of the Tiamat/Marduk epic – argued that the planet Venus was originally a comet which had been ejected from the giant planet Jupiter during the second millennium BC, and that, after erratic wanderings among the inner planets Mars and Earth, it eventually settled down as a candescent 'hot' object into its present near-circular orbit round the Sun[266]. Unlike the Babylonian epic, Velikovsky's hypothesis – at which most astronomers voiced incredulity – required Mars to leave its previous stable orbit and to approach closely both Earth and the then still errant Venus on several occasions during the eighth century BC, a requirement necessitating a violation of the accepted laws concerning the motions of large celestial bodies[267].

Recent studies of Venus, however, show the planet to possess a bulk and composition very unlike that of Jupiter, so much so that there is absolutely no likelihood of it ever having issued from the giant planet[268]. For example, in table 4A (Planetary Statistics), we saw that

Jupiter's density is only $1.3 g/cm^{-3}$ and that Venus' is $5.1 g/cm^{-3}$, or similar to that of Earth.

Jupiter's atmosphere is dominated chemically by hydrogen and its most abundant simple compounds – methane and ammonia, as well as water. Recently, some higher hydrocarbons have also been detected in it[269]. In contrast, the Venusian atmosphere is oxidised[270]. Direct sampling by the Venera series of atmospheric probes disclosed that Venus' atmosphere consists almost entirely of carbon dioxide, with small quantities of nitrogen, argon, water and hydrochloric and hydrofluoric acids[271]; while analyses of infrared reflection spectra of Venusian clouds showed beyond all reasonable doubt that the visible clouds in the upper atmosphere of Venus are composed of sulphuric acid droplets[272]. Earlier announcements that the Mariner 2 space probe had detected hydrocarbons in the Venusian atmosphere were spurious and should be ignored[273]. Measurements taken by the Mariner 10 flyby of Venus highlighted another reason why the planet cannot have emanated from Jupiter, for they showed that:

> ...the total energy radiated by Venus is equivalent to that from a black body of about 230°K, or just what one would expect in the absence of any internal source. Thus there is no evidence that Venus radiates more energy than it receives from the Sun[274].

The possibility that Venus may have cooled from a candescent (1,100°C) state to its present much lower temperature during the thirty-five centuries or so since, according to Velikovsky, it ceased to be a marauding comet, has been ably investigated by Morrison[275] and others, who found that there exist *no* scientific grounds for supposing this to have occurred. In conclusion, therefore, no demonstrable evidence exists that it was ever a comet or has ever seriously departed from its present orbit.

Nevertheless, numerous references occur in the ancient writings of the Hindus, Persians, Babylonians, Chinese, Mexicans and others averting to a time when Venus apparently battled in the sky against Mars. Much of Velikovsky's argument respecting the alleged former derangement of the Martian and Venusian orbits relied on these references. Thus, if modern astronomy conclusively demonstrates that Venus cannot have been a comet, then either these ancient assertions *are* somehow factually correct or they really allude to one or more other celestial objects which, in later days, were erroneously confused by scribes, redactors and commentators with Mars and Venus.

In view of all the foregoing, it is exceedingly difficult to see how these ancient, and in many cases quite independent writings *can* be factually correct, and everything points to the second alternative as being the most likely. Indeed, we shall shortly find this to have almost certainly been the case. Firstly, however, we must take a closer look at Mars.

Table 4A shows that Mars takes slightly over 24 hours to rotate. Ideally it should take only 8 hours. This comparatively slow rotation is somehow connected with a past change in the planet's rotational equilibrium figure. In turn, this appears to have caused extensive fracturing of the Martian crust, and a reduction of the theoretical norm of the Martian magnetic field. We have also noted that Mars follows a decidedly eccentric orbit. Astronomers have admitted that the known observational data fails to satisfactorily explain these anomalies and that something quite profound has happened to Mars in the not so distant past.

This Martian fracture complex is especially noteworthy for resembling the equivalent lineament system characterising the terrestrial crust. This latter, which some have categorically stated was producible only by external rather than local agencies, resulted from massive crustal dislocations seemingly coincident with magnetic reversals, widespread orogeny, vulcanism, flooding and biological extinctions approximately 11,500 years ago, and for all of which a celestial initiation has been repeatedly advocated.

Can it be coincidence, therefore, that: the Babylonian epic describes how Marduk similarly split Tiamat's outer shell; that the Martian crustal fractures resemble Earth's; that a planet (Electra) allegedly disappeared at a time when Mars and Venus are said to have fought in heaven; and that when, on Earth, immense changes engendered by Phaeton (alias Marduk) occurred to topographical features ever associated with Electra's mythological father Atlas (*eg*, Atlas mountains, Straits of Gibraltar, and Atlantis)? Surely these similarities are too close to be products of totally separate events, for all are seemingly united by the insistent underlying theme of a powerful and destructive cosmic assailant.

If, therefore, neither Mars nor Venus can have strayed sufficiently far from their usual orbits to have engaged in 'celestial combat', early Man, who watched but misidentified the contestants, must have observed some *other* sizable object become embroiled in 'heavenly strife' with Mars. In one account from the third century BC, Mars is pursued and attacked while apparently still on its normal orbit:

> ...the star of Mars... was pursued by the star Venus; then Venus took hold of him and inflamed him with ardent passion.[276]

Something bright and star-like caught up with Mars as it travelled along its solar orbit and, having done so, began to heat it up ('inflamed him') just as Tiamat had been previously. Was this star-like body Marduk wending its way sunwards? We submit that it was. So, if any significance can be attached to the old Persian description of the "bright and glorious Tistrya" as the "star that attacks planets"[277], we see that the Venus which allegedly inflamed Mars' 'passions' was none other than Marduk (alias Phaeton). Enhanced radiance due to thermal energy (heat) may well have made Mars appear starlike (flashing) or sun-like (fiery) to Earthbound observers. Much of significance may underlie the following statement in a Chinese chronicle describing an abnormal celestial event said to have occurred in the reign of Emperor Kwei (Koei-Kie):

> At this time the two suns were seen to battle in the sky. The five planets were agitated by unusual movements. A part of Mount T'ai-chan fell down[278].

In the Indo-Iranian *Zend-Avesta*, these planets: "...ran against the sky and created confusion"[279], and: "...The celestial sphere was in revolution... The planets, with many demons, dashed against the celestial sphere and mixed the constellations.."[280]. These 'demons' were presumably the debris of Tiamat and her 'helpers' still accompanying Marduk at that time.

The ancient Chinese expressly associated these cosmic dramas with vast terrestrial floods, for they believed that "...if the five planets err on their routes", the land will be engulfed by a great flood[281]. This belief is unquestionably a memory of the Deluge occurring at the time of Phaeton's visit.

The Aztecs of pre-Columbian Mexico referred to Mars, which they called *Huitzilopochtli*[282], as being "...like live-fire, greatly feared by his enemies..."[283]. They also revered a hero-god called *Quetzalcoatl*, "the feathered serpent", the priest of whose cult, in one of the Aztec ceremonies, shot an arrow into an effigy of Huitzilopochtli, who was then considered to be dead[284]. Does this not recall Marduk firing the fatal 'arrow' (discharge) into Tiamat? And is it not a little curious that the Aztecs always conceived Quetzalcoatl as a *serpent*, albeit a feathered one? Could it be that Marduk (alias Quetzalcoatl) discharged a similar 'arrow' at Mars when those two bodies neared one another? Classical Greek texts indicate that this almost certainly occurred.

Homer's famous *Iliad*[285], though primarily concerned with the equally famous Trojan war, contains a lengthy account of a celestial battle between the deities Ares and Pallas-Athene, and in which Aphrodite (goddess of the Moon) and Hera (goddess of the Earth) also become involved. Ares, of course, is Mars, and Pallas-Athene (Velikovsky's Venus) is Marduk. Homer makes Ares patron of the Trojans and Pallas-Athene protectress of the Greeks; but this was clearly a literary device. The confrontation between these two entities was originally a separate and much older interplanetary event.

That this is the correct interpretation is seemingly confirmed by the fact that, in the so-called Homeric hymns[286], Ares is called a planet, whereas Pallas-Athene is not, even though various earlier commentators have assumed that it must have been. The somewhat nebulous but nevertheless discernible distinction in the Homeric hymns is actually consistent with the description of *Ishtar* – the Babylonian name for Pallas-Athene – as 'the fearful dragon' inscribed on tablets retrieved from Assurbanipal's ruined library at Nineveh[287].

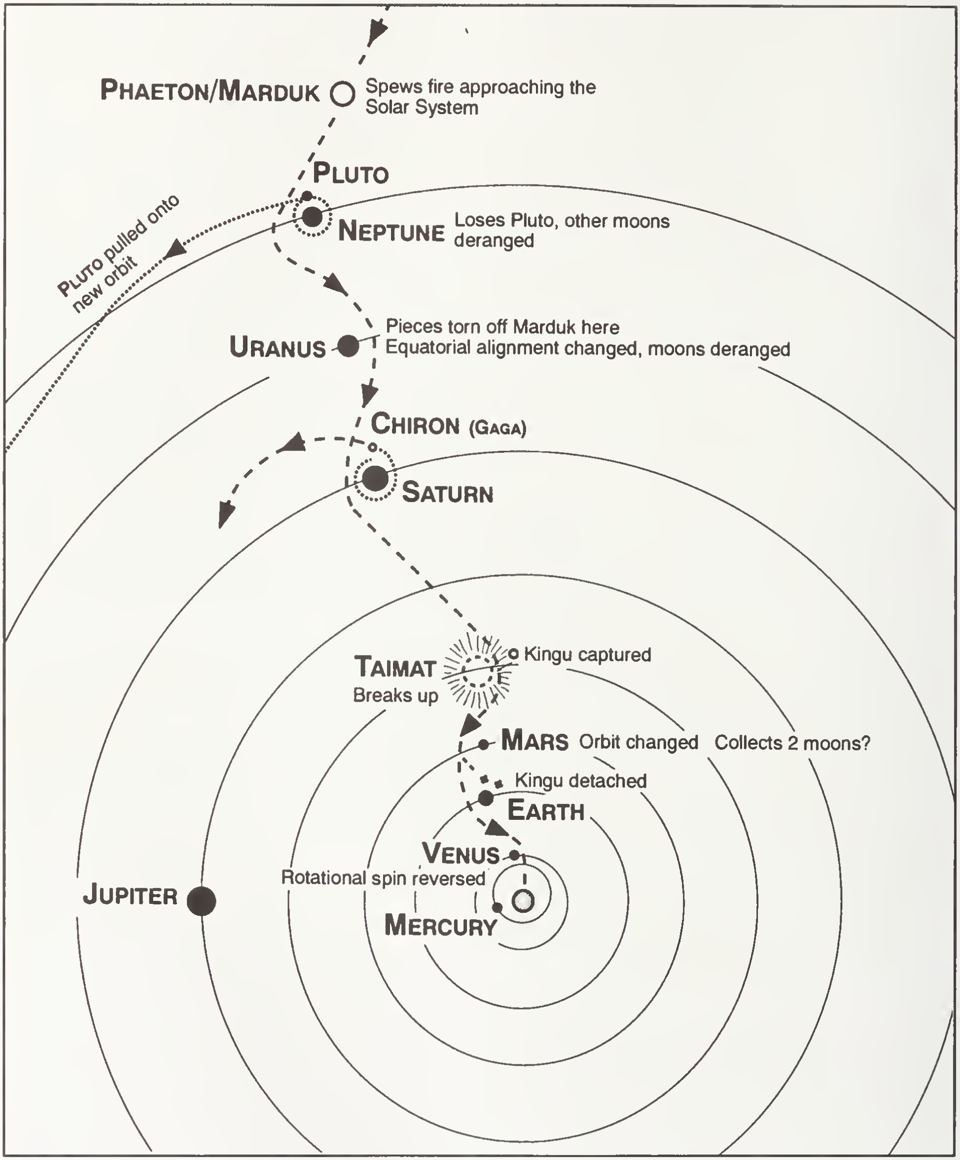
PHAETON/MARDUK
Spews fire approaching the Solar System
PLUTO
PLUTO pulled onto new orbit
NEPTUNE
Loses Pluto, other moons deranged
URANUS
Pieces torn off Marduk here
Equatorial alignment changed, moons deranged
CHIRON (GAGA)
SATURN
TAIMAT
Breaks up
Kingu captured
MARS
Orbit changed
Collects 2 moons?
Kingu detached
EARTH
VENUS
Rotational spin reversed
JUPITER
MERCURY

Fig 4.13. Schematic diagram of the path apparently taken by Phaeton/Marduk through the solar system. Not to scale. Based on the Sumerian texts and recent astronomical data discussed on preceding pages, and on the main effects attributable to its passage. Orbital positions of the planets approximately correct only at the times when Phaeton/Marduk reached their individual vicinities.

Paraphrasing Homer's account we find that Pallas-Athene first of all removes Ares from the field of battle (perturbs Mars' orbit), only for both entities to meet again – this time "furious Ares abiding on the left of the battle" (Marduk evidently passes round behind Mars and crosses inside Mars' orbit). This is consistent with the aforementioned 'pursuit' in Eratosthenes' account. At this stage, Aphrodite (the Moon) tries to enter the fray (the Moon affected gravitationally?). Ares then darkens the battlefield (the Martian atmosphere becomes disturbed?) and Pallas-Athene is seen to retreat (Marduk moves away from Mars). Hera, the goddess of Earth then complains at this celestial turmoil (Earth is affected electromagnetically?).

Pallas-Athene then turns on Ares and hurls a "spear" (discharge) "mightily against his nethermost belly" (this instantly reminds us of the "fierce storm winds" Marduk discharged at Tiamat's "belly"). Ares emits a "loud bellow" (thunderous roar) and Pallas-Athene a great cry (another roar) as "over against her spouted Ares, dread as a dark whirlwind" (innumerable lightning bolts discharged by Mars makes the planet appear to spout), and "together then they clashed with a mighty din...". At this juncture, Hera spread a thick mist about herself (though yet millions of miles distant, various physical effects of the conflict begin to be felt on Earth).

Ares strikes Pallas-Athene with his long "spear" (more electrical discharges), but although the latter "gave ground" (retreated), it retaliates by heaving a gigantic stone, "black and jagged and great" (the remaining portion of the dead Tiamat?), at Ares and thereby "loosed his limbs" (caused Mars to become unsteady – to oscillate). Simultaneously "round about Great Heaven pealed as with a trumpet". Aphrodite then came to Ares' assistance, whose "hand" she took and "sought to lead away" (lunar gravitational pull caused Mars to move further away from Marduk); but Pallas-Athene "sped in pursuit and smote Aphrodite on the breast... and her heart melted" (Marduk discharged an electromagnetic bolt at the Moon, which had the effect of causing the Moon to either move back towards the Earth or of nullifying its gravitational influence, or both).

As the battle, in which Marduk appears to have failed to overcome Mars, seems to have effectively come to an end at this juncture, it may be surmised that, in pursuing Aphrodite and smiting her on the breast, Marduk was now clear of Mars' immediate gravitational pull and was ominously heading towards the Earth/Moon system.

Several questions arise at this point. For example, did the remnant of Tiamat hurled by Marduk at Mars (if that is what the "black and jagged and great" stone really was) disintegrate amid tremendous din in Mars' Roche Limit? In its dismembered condition, this remnant would have been structurally weak with no controllable gravitational or magnetic field of its own, yet would still have possessed inherently destructive mass. It is, perhaps, highly significant that Mars is orbited today by two irregularly shaped ("jagged") satellites which, by common consensus, are peculiar objects from every point of view. Are they fragments of Tiamat acquired from Marduk? Tolson has already suggested this with regard to Phobos[288].

The two irregularly-shaped Martian moons, therefore, could indeed be captured fragments of the unfortunate Tiamat, while the aforementioned slow rotation of Mars, its unaccountably reduced magnetic field, its distorted orbit, the inferred past changes to its rotational equilibrium figure, and its crustal fracture complex, could well have resulted from its alleged encounter with Pallas-Athene (Marduk/Phaeton) and from an actual or near collision with the "black and jagged and great" stone (a remnant of Tiamat?). Roche's Limit would have ensured the inevitable break-up of that object.

Briefly, the Roche Limit is the zone which surrounds any large object of appreciable mass possessing a gravitational field, at a distance of 2 to 3 radii of the object concerned. In effect it is a danger-zone, and any object with a smaller mass or weaker gravitational field entering it will be either swiftly expelled from it electromagnetically, or, more commonly, be subjected to intolerable tidal stress and disintegrated. Disintegration is practically guaranteed if the smaller object remains within the zone indefinitely, but less so if it rapidly passes through only a limited area of the zone at high speed.

It is also more than probable that the disintegration of a large body (say, one the size of the Moon) would involve an explosion at some relatively early stage, with consequent high-velocity dispersal in literally all directions of the resultant debris. The blast occasioned by a sufficiently large explosion would, no doubt, extensively modify any atmosphere enveloping the larger host object, could alter its composition, and might even lead to permanent dissipation and attenuation of a sizable percentage of it. This, in turn, could alter the planet's thermal balance, and induce new climatic regimes. These, or closely similar effects, appear to have been experienced by Mars. Or are they captured asteroids?

Discussing the Velikovskian notion of former celestial confrontations between Earth, Mars, and Venus, relative to the problem of disposal of planetary energy, Rose and Vaughan concluded that:

> The participation of at least one other body besides Venus, Earth and Mars in the encounters that have occurred since Venus' final departure from the vicinity of Jupiter could provide a easy solution to this energy-disposal problem.[289]

This is a most interesting statement, for, although we do not accept that Venus was ever ejected from Jupiter (as Rose and Vaughan believed), the object that they, and Velikovsky, called Venus appears to have indeed been present in the celestial encounters they discuss. It was Phaeton. Very pertinently, Rose and Vaughan added:

> ...if we permit this 'other body' to interact with Mars... then the problem of (orbital) eccentricity-damping will evaporate as well.[290]

As the probable sequence of the physical changes sustained by Earth during the Phaeton disaster are discussed in Part Five of this book, those details can be temporarily side-stepped here, and we pick up the saga of this 'war in heaven' at the point where Phaeton vacates the environs of Earth.

Upon leaving the vicinity of Earth, Phaeton apparently headed sunwards once more, for vague human memories have come down to us of a great 'dragon' or fiery 'monster' coursing across the heavens towards the Sun just after the Deluge. Evidently brief glimpses of it were afforded isolated Deluge survivors through occasional gaps in the deranged and rapidly thickening atmosphere (the 'collapsed sky'). Thereafter, the gloom persisting for decades afterwards, the collapsed sky undoubtedly curtailed observations of this celestial spectacle. Very little was seen of what happened to Phaeton as it neared Venus or crossed its orbit on its sunward journey. Nevertheless, various post-diluvian beliefs and ancient astronomical texts suggest the outlines of what apparently occurred. Accordingly, we now examine these.

The worship of Venus as either the Morning Star or the Evening Star was extremely widespread in post-diluvian times, and many propitiary cults to Venus existed among numerous classical and pre-classical civilisations in both hemispheres. Clearly some deep significance underlay these beliefs and was seemingly due to the fact that, when Venus becomes the Morning or Evening Star, it can become the brightest object after the Sun. As a result of its increasing brilliance at those times, it may have instantly reminded catastrophe survivors of the steadily increasing brilliance of the fiery Phaeton in the weeks when it approached ever nearer to Earth.

If so, this suggests that, before the Phaeton disaster, Venus shone less brilliantly and was seasonally a less conspicuous object. This, in turn, might indicate that the albedo (reflectivity) of the Venusian atmosphere had been enhanced during the intervening period and that its orbital motion may have changed.

That something rather unusual has indeed happened to Venus may be inferred from the relevant statistics noted in table 4A. Compared with nearly all those for other planets in the solar system, these reflect decidedly aberrant motions. Could a near-collision with a sizable celestial object, such as Phaeton, have produced such anomalies? Theoretically at least, the answer is yes. It is, of course, unscientific to assert categorically that Phaeton caused these anomalies.

Nevertheless, it is germane that ancient Persian texts declare that *Mievish-Muspar*, a fiery object, "provided with tails" and which had assaulted Earth long ago, had been "attached" by the Sun: "...to its own radiance by mutual agreement, so that he (Muspar) may be less able to do harm"[291].

In other words, Muspar – alias Phaeton – had eventually plunged into and been absorbed by the Sun. Its journey towards the Sun must, therefore, have carried it past Venus or across its orbit, whereby the likelihood of Venus acquiring anomalous motions then is a distinct possibility. Any such encounter, however, would have been largely invisible to Deluge survivors who for months could see nothing through the impenetrable gloom of the 'collapsed sky'.

It was only with the dissipation of this thick cloud cover that Venus, now perhaps on a newly-inclined orbit and possibly still trailing wisps or portions of its own disturbed atmosphere (likened in ancient texts to 'hair', 'tails', 'horns', *etc*), became conspicuous in the clearing terrestrial heavens. Its surprising brilliance and unexpected appearance at the time perhaps naturally led confused and terrified Deluge survivors to suppose that Venus was the vanished Phaeton, and that its possible return was something to be avoided at all costs. The Venus cults of antiquity probably arose then.

18

PHAETON'S SIGNIFICANCE

We have repeatedly seen that, during its devastating progress through the solar system, Phaeton was apparently attracted to nearly all the planets in turn. Jupiter and Mercury seem to have been the exceptions. Conceivably these were in the 'wrong part' of the solar system at the time, that is, they were orbiting the far side of the Sun relative to Phaeton's course. Phaeton's predilection for planets strongly suggests that it possessed an abnormally intense electromagnetic field which was naturally attracted to the equivalent fields of the planets it encountered and disturbed.

Eventually, the overwhelmingly greater electromagnetic and gravitational fields of the Sun pulled it unerringly to a fiery grave in the solar furnace. Phaeton's impact upon the enormously larger Sun would, of course, have been negligible.

It is possible, therefore, to conceive of Phaeton pursuing a meandering course through the solar system as it moved sunwards from planet to planet, resulting in a pin-ball effect. Phaeton also apparently entered the solar system from a direction opposite to that in which all the planets orbit the Sun. As mentioned before, old Persian texts expressly state that Tistrya, the "leader of the stars against the planets", proceeded "along his *winding* course"[292] (our italics), a point mentioned in several ancient texts and traditions. Fig 4.13 conveys this concept diagrammatically.

With the demise of Phaeton, the 'war in heaven' was effectively over, although innumerable examples of the wreckage it produced throughout the solar system are yet traceable and many legacies of the phase which involved Earth are still being experienced today.

Despite its awesome destructive powers, however, the disaster was essentially a solitary event punctuating the uniformitarian normality of the solar system and which, among other effects, terminated a long and idyllic terrestrial regime anciently remembered as a 'Golden Age'. This had been an excellent expression of Lyellian uniformity on Earth. Now it was shattered and gone. Long aeons would and are to pass before such conditions become general once more.

Incomplete, dim and scattered though they now are, the aforementioned legends and traditions and the abundant geophysical and biological evidences relating to the Phaeton disaster represent, of course, mere highlights of that appalling event – and essentially localised ones at that. They scarcely convey the full enormity of the overall catastrophe and seldom the actual order in which the constituent calamities occurred. Insofar as this is possible, an attempt will therefore now be made to trace the probable sequence of these, their consequences at the time, and their subsequent longer-term effects.

REFERENCES

1. Morrison, R B. 1969. "The Pleistocene Boundary: an evaluation of the various criteria for determining it on a provincial basis, and establishing it worldwide", *Geol Mijnb*, vol 48, pp353–371.
2. Mangerud, J, & S Gullikson. 1975. "Apparent Radiocarbon Ages of Recent Marine Shells from Norway, Spitzbergen and Arctic Canada", *Quat Res*, vol 5, pp263–273; see p270.
3. Turnbull, W D. 1958. "Notice of a Late Wisconsin Mastodon", *J Geol*, vol 66, pp96–97.
4. Klein, R G. 1971. "The Pleistocene Prehistory of Siberia", *Quat Res*, vol 1, no 2, pp122–161; see pp141–142.
5. Woodford, A D. 1965. *Historical Geology* (San Francisco & London), 512pp; see p437.
6. Webb, T, & R A Bryson. 1972. "Late and Post-Glacial Climatic Changes in Northern Midwest USA: Quantitative Estimates Derived from Pollen Spectra by Multivariate Statistical Analysis", *Quat Res*, vol 2, no 1, pp70–115; see pp99, 103.
7. Vasari, Y, & S Hicks. 1972. *Climatic Changes in Arctic Areas during the last 10,000 Years*, (Oulu Univ, Finland); see p269.
8. Hamilton, T D. 1982. "A Late Pleistocene Glacial Chronology for the southern Brooks Range: Stratigraphic Record and Regional Significance", *Bull Geol Soc Amer*, vol 73, pp700–716; see p700.
9. Klein, R G. 1972. "The Late Quaternary Mammalian Fauna of Nelson Bay Cave: Its Implications for megafaunal extinctions and environmental and cultural change", *Quat Res*, vol 2, no 2, pp135–142; see p140.
10. Rognon, P, & M A Williams. 1977. "Late Quaternary Climatic Changes in Australia and North Africa: a preliminary interpretation", *Palaeogeogr Palaeoclimat Palaeoecol*, vol 21, pp285–327; see pp298–299.
11. Andrews, J T. 1973. "Late Quaternary Variations in Oxygen and Carbon isotopic compositions in Canadian Arctic Marine Bivalves", *Palaeogeogr Palaeoclimat Palaeoecol*, vol 14, pp187–192.
12. Andrews, J T. 1972. "Recent and Fossil growth Rates of Marine Bivalves, Canadian Arctic and Late Quaternary Arctic Marine Environments", *Palaeogeogr Palaeoclimat Palaeoecol*, vol 11, pp157–176.
13. Mangerud, J, & S Gullikson. 1975. *Op cit*, p263.
14. Morrison, R B. 1969. *Op cit*.
15. Denton, G H, & T J Hughes. 1981. *The Last Great Ice Sheets* (New York), 464pp; see p28.
16. *Various*. 1960. *Radiocarbon*, vol 2, p104.
17. Denton, G H, & T J Hughes. 1981. *Op cit*.
18. *Radiocarbon*, 1965, vol 7, p202.
19. *Radiocarbon*, 1965. Vol 7, p203.
20. Carter, G F. 1953. "Physical Geography", *Geogr Rev*, vol 43, pp121–124.
21. Morrison, R B. 1969. *Op cit*.
22. Harley, L S. 1954. "Concerning the Age of Things", *Essex Nat*, vol 29, pp129–141.
23. Bowen, D G. 1973. "The Pleistocene Succession of the Irish Sea", *Proc Geol Assoc*, vol 84, pp251–272.
24. Godwin, H. 1951. "Comments on Radiocarbon Dating for samples from the British Isles", *Amer Journ Sci*, vol 249, pp301–307.
25. *Anonymous*. 1951. "Errors in the C-14 Method of archaeological Dating", *Nature*, vol 168, pp725–726.
26. Morrison, R B. 1969. *Op cit*.
27. Olsson, U, & K G Erickson. 1965. *Progress in Oceanography*, ed M Sears; see vol 3, p253.
28. Morrison, R B. 1969. *Op cit*.
29. Carter, G F. 1953. *Op cit*.
30. *Radiocarbon*, 1965. Vol 7, p34.
31. *Radiocarbon*, 1962. Vol 4, p180.
32. Heintz, A. 1958. "Om pollenanalyse av mageinholdet fra Beresovka-mammuten", *Blyttia*, vol 16, pp122–142.
33. *Radiocarbon*, 1962. Vol 4, p179.
34. Libby, W F, A G Homey & R Berger. 1964. "Radiocarbon Dating of Bone and Shell from their organic compounds", *Science*, vol 144, pp999–1001.
35. Taylor, A E (tr). 1929. *Plato's Timaeus and Critias* (London), vii + 136pp.
36. Maunder, A S D. 1912. "The Zoroastrian Star-Champions: Part Two", *Observatory*, vol xxv (December), pp438–443.
37. Maunder, A S D. 1912. *Op cit*.
38. Hauthal, R, & H Meyer. 1910. *Reisen in Bolivien und Peru*, Gesellschaft für Erdkunde (Leipzig).

39. Miller, F J (tr), 1916. Ovid: *Metamorphoses* (London & New York); see book 2, fab 1.
40. Frazer, J G (tr), 1921. Apollodorus: *Mythulogica*, 2 vols (London).
41. Olrik, A. 1922. *Ragnarök*, German edn (Cologne), xvi + 484pp.
42. Gold, T. 1955. "Instability of the Earth's Axis of Rotation", *Nature*, vol 175, pp526–5.
43. Warlow, P. 1978. "Geomagnetic Reversals", *J Phys A*, vol 11, pp2107–2130.
44. Gold, T. 1955. *Op cit*, p527.
45. Gold, T. 1955. *Op cit*, p527.
46. Putnam, W C. 1964. *Geology* (New York), xii + 480pp; see p8.
47. Putnam, W C. 1964. *Op cit*, pp8–9.
48. Putnam, W C. 1964. *Op cit*, pp8–9.
49. Scheidegger, A E. 1963. *Principles of Geodynamics* (Berlin), 362pp; see p50.
50. Putnam, W C. 1964. *Op cit*, pp11–12.
51. Scheidegger, A E. 1963. *Op cit*.
52. Putnam, W C. 1964. *Op cit*, p39.
53. Putnam, W C. 1964. *Ibid*.
54. Sabadini, R, D A Yuen & E Boschi. 1982. "Polar Wandering and the forced responses of a rotating, multilayered, viscoelastic planet", *Journ Geophys Res*, vol 87, pp2885–2903.
55. Stearns, H T, & W O Clark. 1930. "Geology and water resources of the Kau District, Hawaii", *US geol Surv*, Water Supply Paper 616.
56. Dyal, P, & C W Parkin. 1971. "The Magnetism of the Moon", *Scient Am*, (Aug), pp62–7.
57. Djuric, J. 1976. "Suggestions for an experiment with a unipolar generator and its bearing on the Earth's magnetic field", *J Phys, D, Applied Phys*, vol 9, pp2623–2637.
58. Erman, G A. 1803–4. "Kritische Beiträge zur atmosphärischen Electrometrie", *Annln Phys*, vol 15, pp385–418; see p386.
59. Djuric, J. 1976. "Suggestions for an experiment with a unipolar generator and its bearing on the Earth's magnetic field", *J Phys, D, Applied Phys*, vol 9, pp2623–2637.
60. Djuric, J. 1976. *Op cit*.
61. Moore, A D. 1972. "Electrostatics", *Scient Am*, (March), pp44–59.
62. Juergens, R E. 1978. "Plasma in interplanetary space: reconciling celestial mechanics in Velikovskian catastrophism", pp148–165 in *Velikovsky Reconsidered*, Collective, (London), 274pp.
63. Tucker, R H, A H Cook, H M Iyer, F D Stacey. 1970. *Global Geophysics* (London), vi + 196pp; see p154.
64. Manley, H. 1949. "Palaeomagnetism", *Sci News*, (July), p44.
65. Runcorn, S K. 1955. "The Earth's Magnetism", *Scient Am*, (Sept), pp152–162.
66. Runcorn, S K. 1955. *Op cit*.
67. Runcorn, S K. 1955. *Op cit*.
68. Manley, H. 1949. *Op cit*, p59.
69. *Anonymous*. 1971. "A New Magnetic Reversal at 12,500 Years?", *Nature*, vol 234, p441.
70. Noel, M, D H Tarling. 1975. "The Laschamp Geomagnetic Event", *Nature*, vol 253, pp705–6.
71. Cox, A, & R R Doell. 1960. "Review of Palaeomagnetism", *Bull Geol Soc Am*, vol 71, pp645 *et seq*.
72. Verosub, K L. 1975. "Palaeomagnetic Excursions as Magnetostratigraphic Horizons: a cautionary note", *Science*, vol 190, pp48–50.
73. Fairbridge, R W. 1977. "Global Climatic Change during 13,500 BP Gothenburg Geomagnetic Excursion", *Nature*, vol 265, pp430–1.
74. Kennett, J P, N D Watkins. 1970. "Geomagnetic Polarity Change, volcanic maxima and faunal extinction in the South Pacific", *Nature*, vol 227, pp930–4.
75. Kennett, J P, N D Watkins. 1970. *Op cit*.
76. Chamberlin, R T. 1937. "The Origin and History of the Earth", in *The World and Man*, edited by F R Moulton (Univ Chicago Press), xix + 533 pp; see p87.
77. Suess, E. 1904. *The Face of the Earth*, 2 vols. (London), see vol 1, pp17–8.
78. Barnes,T G. 1977. "Recent Origin and Decay of the Earth's Magnetic Field", *Review*, vol 2, pp42–46.
79. Smith, B A *et al*. 1986. "Voyager 2 in the Uranian System: Imaging Science Results", *Science*, vol 233, pp43–64; see p58.
80. Velikovsky, I. 1950. *Worlds in Collision* (London), xxi + 401pp; see chap 5.
81. Sagan, C. 1977. "An Analysis of *Worlds in Collision*", pp41–104 in *Scientists Confront Velikovsky* edited by D Goldsmith, (Ithaca & London), 184pp.
82. Sagan, C. 1977. *Op cit*, App 2 "Consequences of a Sudden Deceleration of the Earth's Rotation", pp99–100.
83. Sagan, C. 1977. *Op cit*, p64.
84. Sagan, C. 1977. *Op cit*, p65.
85. Urey, H C. 1973. "Cometary Collisions and Geological Periods", *Nature*, vol 242, p32.
86. Mulholland, J D. 1977. "Movements of Celestial Bodies – Velikovsky's Fatal Flaw" in *Scientists Confront Velikovsky* edited by D Goldsmith, (Ithaca & London), 184pp; see pp105–106.
87. Bellamy, H S. 1945. *In the Beginning God* (London), 212pp; see p133.
88. Bellamy, H S. 1936. *Moons, Myths and Man* (London), 351pp; see pp127–8.
89. Scheidegger, A E. 1963. *Op cit*, pp160–1.
90. Patten, D W. 1966. *The Biblical Flood and the Ice Epoch* (Seattle), xvi + 336pp; see p66.
91. Gamow, G. 1960. *Biography of the Earth* (New York), 242pp.
92. Scheidegger, A E. 1963. Op cit.
93. Patten, D W. 1966. *Op cit*, p67.
94. Herman, Y (ed). 1974. *Marine Geology and Oceanography of the Arctic Sea* (New York), 376pp; see p100.
95. Knaack, G. 1884–6. Article on Phaeton in *Lexicon der Griechisch-Romischen Mythologie* edited by W Roscher, 2 vols, (Leipzig).
96. Engelhardt, W V. 1979. "Phaetons Sturz – Ein Naturereignis?", *Sber heidelb Akad Wiss Math*, nat Kl, 2Abh.

97. Kennett, J P, & N D Watkins. 1970. *Loc cit.*
Smylie, D E & L Mansinha. 1968. "Earthquakes and the observed motion of the Rotation Pole", *J Geophys Res*, vol 73, pp7661–7673.

98. Hays, J D, J Imbrie & N J Shackleton. 1976. "Variations in the Earth's orbit: Pacemaker to the Ice Ages", *Science*, vol 194, pp1121–1132.

99. Lambeck, K. 1980. *The Earth's Variable Rotation: Geophysical Causes and Consequences* (Cambridge), xi + 449pp.
Munk, W H, & G J F MacDonald. 1960. *The Rotation of the Earth: a Geophysical Discussion* (Cambridge), 323pp.

100. Hays, J D, J Imbrie & N J Shackleton. 1976. *Loc cit*.

101. Lehman, S. 1993. "Climate Change: Ice Sheets, Wayward Winds and Sea Change", *Nature*, vol 365, issue 6442 (Sept 9th), pp108–110.
Nakiboglu, S M, & K Lambeck. 1980. "Deglaciation Effects of the Rotation of the Earth", *Geophys J*, vol 62, pp49–58.

102. Lambeck, K, & A Cazenave. 1976. "Long Term Variations in Length of Day and Climate Change", *Geophys J*, vol 46, p555–573.
Kuttzbach, J E, & P J Guetter. 1986. "The Influence of Changing Orbital Parameters and Surface Boundary Conditions in Climate Simulations for the past 18,000 Years", *J Atmosph Sci*, vol 43, pp1726–1759.
Imbrie, J, & J Z Imbrie. 1980. "Modelling the Climatic Response to Orbital Variations", *Science*, vol 207, pp943–953.

103. Kutzbach, J E, & B L Otto-Bleisner. 1982. "The Sensitivity of the African-Asian Monsoonal Climate to Orbital Parameter changes for 9,000 years BP in a low-resolution general circulation model", *J Atmosph Sci*, vol 39, pp1177–1188.

104. Redfern, M. 1991. "Climate and Climate Change", *Science & Public Affairs*, vol 6, pt 3, pp53–63; see p55.

105. Morrison, L V. 1979. "Re-determination of the Decade Fluctuations in the Rotation of the Earth in the period 1861–1978", *Geophys J*, vol 58, pp349–360.

106. Rochester, M G. 1984. "Causes of Fluctuations in the Rotation of the Earth", *Phil Trans Roy Soc Lond*, vol A313, pp95–105.

107. Hide, R. 1977. "Towards a Theory of Irregular Variations in the length of Day and Core-Mantle Coupling", *Phil Trans Roy Soc Lond*, vol A284, pp547–554.

108. Jeans, J H. 1945. *The Stars in their Courses* (Cambridge), xii + 199pp; see p17.

109. Mandelbrot, B B, & K McCamy. 1970. "On the Secular Pole Rotation and the Chandler Wobble", *Geophys J Roy Astr Soc*, vol 21, pp217–232.
Guinot, B. 1972. "The Chandlerian Wobble from 1900–1970", *Astr Astrophys*, vol 19, pp207–214.
Smith, M L. 1977. "Wobble and Nutation of the Earth", *Geophys J Roy Astro Soc*, vol 52.
Dahlen, F A. 1979. "The Period of the Chandler Wobble", *Geophys J Roy Astro Soc*, vol 52.
Chao, B F, W P O'Connor, A T C Chang, D K Hall & J L Foster. 1987. "Snow-Load Effect on the Earth's Rotation and Gravitational Field, 1979–1985", *J Geophys Res*, vol 92, pp9415–9422.

110. Barnes, R T H, R Hide, A A White & C A Wilson. 1983. "Atmospheric Angular Momentum Fluctuations, Length-of-Day Changes and Polar Motion", *Proc Roy Soc Lond*, vol A387, pp31–73.
Wilson, C R & R A Haubrich. 1976. "Atmospheric Contribution to the Excitation of the Earth's Wobble, 1901–1970", *Geophys J Roy Astr Soc*, vol 46, pp745–761.

111. Dicke, R H. 1969. "Average Acceleration of the Earth's Rotation and the Viscosity of the Deep Mantle", *J Geophys Res*, vol 74, pp5895–5902.

112. Yatskiv, Y S, & T Sasao. 1975. "Chandler Wobble and Viscosity in the Earth's Core", *Nature*, vol 225, p655.

113. Dahlen, F A. 1971. "The Excitation of the Chandler Wobble by Earthquakes", *Geophys J Roy Astr Soc*, vol 25, pp157–206.
Kanamori, H. 1976. "Are Earthquakes a Major Cause of the Chandler Wobble?", *Nature*, vol 262, pp254–255.
O'Connell, R J, & A M Dziewonski. 1976. "Excitation of the Chandler Wobble by large Earthquakes", *Nature*, vol 262, pp259–262.
Mansinha, L, D E Smylie and C H Chapman. 1979. "Seismic Excitation of the Chandler Wobble revisited", *Geophys J*, vol 50, no 1, pp1–17.

114. Lange, H O (transl). 1903. "Papyrus Ipuwer", *Sber preuss Akad Wiss*, p610.

115. Gardiner, A H. 1914. "New literary works from Ancient Egypt", *J Egypt Archaeol*, vol 1, pp100–6.

116. Lange, H O (transl). 1927. "Der Magische Papyrus Harris", *K dansk Vidensk Selsk Skr*, p58.

117. Bury, R G (transl). 1929. Plato *Timaeus*, (Cambridge), 635pp; see 43b, 43c.

118. Hastings, J. 1908–26. "Eschatology" in *Encyclopaedia of Religion and Ethics*, 13 vols, (Edinburgh & New York).

119. *Anonymous*. 1902–3. *Revue des traditions populaires*, vol xvii, p571.

120. Kropotkin, P. 1900. "Baron von Toll on New Siberia and the Circumpolar Tertiary Flora", *Geogr J*, vol xvi, (1), pp95–98.

121. Airy, G B. 1860. "Change of climate", *Athenaeum*, (Sept 22nd), p384.

122. Hill,E. 1878. "On the Possibility of Changes in the Earth's Axis", *Geol Mag*, ns, dec 2, vol v, pp262–6; see p265.

123. Wright, W B. 1937. *The Quaternary Ice Age* (London), xxv + 478; see p313.

124. Peltier, W R, & P Wu. 1983. "Continental Lithospheric Thickness and Deglaciation-induced True Polar Wander", *Geophys Res Lett*, vol 10, pp181–184.

125. Sabadini, R, D A Yuen & E Boschi. 1983. "Dynamical Effects from Mantle Phase Transitions on True Polar Wander during Ice Ages", *Nature*, vol 303, pp694–696.

126. Pauly, K A. 1952. "The Cause of the Great Ice Ages", *Scient Mon*, (August).
127. Sabadini, R, & W R Peltier. 1981. "Pleistocene Deglaciation and the Earth's Rotation: implications for mantle viscosity", *Geophys J Roy Astr Soc*, vol 66, pp553–578.
128. Jeffreys, H. 1929. *The Earth, its origins, history, and physical constitution* (Camb Univ Press), 2nd edn, ix + 346pp; see p303.
129. Jeffreys, H. 1929. *Ibid.*
130. Hobbs, W H. 1905. "The Correlation of Fracture Systems and the Evidence for Planetary Dislocations within the Earth's Crust", *Trans Wis Acad Sci Arts Lett*, vol xv, (Aug), pp15–19.
131. Vening Meinesz, F A. 1947. "Shear Patterns of the Earth's Crust", *Trans Am geophys Union*, vol 28, no 1, pp1–61.
132. Lambeck, K. 1980. *The Earth's Variable Rotation* (Cambridge), ix + 346pp; see p271.
133. Lambeck, K. 1980. *Ibid.*
134. Jeans, J. 1945. *Op cit*, p50.
135. Hopkins, J. 1980. *Glossary of Astronomy and Astrophysics*, 2nd rev edn, (Chicago), x + 196pp; see p196.
136. Zeilik, M, & E v P Smith. 1987. *Introduction to Astronomy and Astrophysics*, 2nd edn (Philadelphia), viii + 503pp; see p4.
137. Hopkins, J. 1980. *Op cit*, p56.
138. Deils, H. 1929. *Doxographi Gracci* (Berlin), x + 854pp; see pp340–341.
139. Illingworth, V (ed). 1985. *Macmillan Dictionary of Astronomy*, 2nd edn (London), 437pp; see p423.
140. Bullabh, R. 1962. "Research in Ancient Indian Mathematics and Astronomy in India", *Isis*, vol 53, pp502–504.
141. Roy, A E, & D Clarke. 1982. *Astronomy: Principles and Practice*, 2nd edn (Bristol), xvi + 342pp; see p58.
142. Gehrels, T (ed). 1979. *Asteroids* (Univ Arizona Press); see pp253–283.
143. Gallant, R. 1964. *The Bombarded Earth* (London), 256pp; see p59.
144. McKinnon, W B. 1993. "Vestal Voyagers Unveiled", *Nature*, vol 363, issue 6426 (20th May), pp211–213; see pp211–212.
145. Bell, J F, D R Davies, W K Hartmann & M J Gaffey. 1989. In *Asteroids II*, ed by R P Binzel, T Gehrels & M S Matthews (Univ Arizona Press).
146. Binzel, R P, & S Xu. 1993. "Chips off of Asteroid 4 Vesta: Evidence for the Parent Body of Basaltic Achondrite Meteorites", *Science*, vol 26, pp186–191.
147. McKinnon, W B. 1993. *Loc cit*; see p211.
148. Bailey, M E, S V Clube, W M Napier. 1986. "The Origin of Comets", *Vistas in Astronomy*, vol 29, pp53–112; see p102.
149. Clube, V, & W Napier. 1982. *The Cosmic Serpent* (London), 299pp; see p133.
150. Opik, E J. 1970. "Comets and the formation of planets", *Moon*, vol 1, pp487–493.
     Opik, E J. 1975. "Comets and planets, their interrelated origin", *Irish Astron*, vol 12, pp1–48.
151. Van Flandern, T C. 1978. "A former asteroidal planet as the origin of comets", *Icarus*, vol 36, pp51–74; see p51.
152. Brandt, J C (ed). 1981. "Comets", (San Francisco), *Scient Am*, p29.
153. Brandt, J C (ed). 1981. *Op cit*, p36.
154. Brandt,J C (ed). 1981. *Op cit*, p31.
155. Clube, V, & W Napier. 1982. *Op cit*, p133.
156. Brandt, J C (ed). 1981. *Op cit*; see p36.
157. Clube, V, & W Napier. 1982. *Op cit*, p134.
158. Brandt,J C (ed). 1981. *Op cit*, pp35.
159. Brandt,J C (ed). 1981. *Op cit*, p37.
160. Brandt,J C (ed). 1981. *Op cit*, p30.
161. Brandt,J C (ed). 1981. *Op cit*, p30.
162. Brandt, J C (ed). 1981. *Op cit*, p53.
163. Brandt,J C (ed). 1981. *Op cit*, p30.
164. Middlehurst, B M, G P Kuiper (eds). 1963. *The Moon, Meteorites and Comets* (Univ Chicago Press), pp357–393.
165. Mebane, A D. 1956. "Observations of the great fireball procession of 1913, Feb 9th, made in the United States", *Meteoritics*, vol 4, pp405–421.
166. Harwitt, M. 1967. "The Cloud of Interplanetary Boulders", *NASA Sp Publ No:150*, pp307–313.
167. Kellaway, G A, & E M Durrance. 1978. "Circular structures of large scale and great age on the Earth's surface", *Nature*, vol 273, p75.
     Saul, J M. 1978. "Circular structures of large scale and great age on the Earth's surface", *Nature*, vol 271, pp345–9.
168. Gallant, R. 1964. *Ibid.*
     Savage, H. 1982. *The Mysterious Carolina Bays* (Univ Carolina Press), 121pp.
169. Middlehurst, B M, & G P Kuiper (eds). 1963. *The Moon, Meteorites and Comets* (Univ Chicago Press), see p393.
170. Gallant, R. 1964. *Op cit*, p41.
171. Gallant, R. 1964. *Op cit*, fig 3 opp p32.
172. O'Keefe, J D & T J Ahearns. 1986. "Oblique Impact: A process for obtaining meteorite samples from other planets", *Science*, vol 234, pp346–9.
173. Van Flandern, T C. 1978. *Op cit*; see p51.
174. Bellamy, H S. 1936. *Op cit*, p84.
175. Bellamy, H S. 1936. *Ibid.*
176. Bellamy, H S. 1936. *Op cit*, p85.
177. Kennon, W L. 1948. *Astronomy* (Boston), vii + 737pp; see p368.
178. Kennon, W L. 1948. *Op cit.*
179. Smith, B A, *et al.* 1982. "A New Look at the Saturn System: the Voyager 2 images", *Science*, vol 215, (Jan), pp504–537.
180. Oro, J, & J Han. 1966. "High Temperature Synthesis of Aromatic Hydrocarbons from Methane", *Science*, vol 153, pp1393–5.
181. Smith, P V. 1952. "The occurrence of hydrocarbons in Recent sediments from the Gulf of Mexico", *Science*, vol 116, pp437–9.
182. Wilson, A T. 1962. "Origin of Petroleum and the composition of the Lunar Maria", *Nature*, vol 196, pp11–13.
183. Jeans, J H. 1946. *The Universe Around Us*, 4th edn (Cambridge), x + 297pp; see p273.
184. Durrani, S A, & H A Khan. 1971. "Ivory Coast Microtektites: fission-track age and

geomagnetic reversals", *Nature*, vol 232, pp320–322.

185. Ness, N F *et al.* 1986. "Magnetic Fields at Uranus", *Science*, vol 233, pp85–9; see p89.
186. Davies, J. 1986, "Voyage to the tilted planet", *New Scientist*, vol 109, no 1492, pp39–42.
187. Saul, J M. 1978. "Circular structures of large scale and great age on the Earth's surface", *Nature*, vol 271, pp345–9.
188. Binder, A B. 1966. "Mariner IV: Analysis of preliminary reports", *Science*, vol 152, pp1053– 1055.
189. Binder, A B. 1966. *Op cit.*
190. Hartman, W K, S M Larson. 1967. "Angular Momenta of Planetary Bodies", *Icarus*, vol 7, pp257–260.
191. Fish, F F jr. 1967. "Angular Momenta of the Planets", *Icarus*, vol 7, pp251–6.
192. Gehrels, T (ed). 1979. *Asteroids* (Univ Arizona Press); see pp253–283.
193. Sears, D W. 1978. *The Nature and Origin of Meteors* (Bristol), 187pp; see pp161–2.
194. Kuiper, G P, B M Middlehurst (eds). 1961. *Planets and Satellites* (Chicago Univ Press), xx + 601pp; see pp576–7.
195. Roemer, E. 1961. "Astrometric observations and orbits of comets", *Astron Jl*, vol 66, pp368–371; see p368.
196. Jewitt, D, & J Luu. 1993. "Discovery of the Candidate Kuiper Belt object 1992 QB", *Nature*, vol 362, issue 6422, pp730–732.
197. Sears, D W. 1979. "Did Iron Meteorites form in the asteroid belt? Evidence from thermodynamic models", *Icarus*, vol 40, p471.
198. Van Flandern, T C. 1978. "A former asteroidal planet as the origin of comets", *Icarus*, vol 36, pp51–74; see p51.
199. Ovenden, M W. 1972. "Bode's Law and the Missing Planet", *Nature*, vol 239, pp508–9; see p508.
200. Oikawa, S, E Everhart. 1979. "Past and Future Orbit of 1977 UB, object Chiron", *Astron Jl*, vol 84, p134.
201. Forward, R L. 1962. "Pluto, Last Stop Before the Stars", *Sci Digest*, (Aug), p73.
202. Clube, V, & W Napier. 1982. *Op cit*, p134.
203. Bellamy, H S. 1936. *Op cit*, p85.
204. Mulholland, J D. 1977. "Movements of Celestial Bodies – Velikovsky's Fatal Flaw", pp105–115 in *Scientists Confront Velikovsky* edited by D Goldsmith, (Ithaca & London), 184pp; see p114.
205. Mulholland, J D. 1977. *Op cit*, p114.
206. Patten, D W. 1966. *Op cit*, p287.
207. Sekanina, Z. 1968. "On the Perturbations of comets by nearby stars", *Bull Astron Inst Czch*, vol 19, pp291–301.
208. Clube, V, & W Napier. 1982. *Op cit*, p134.
209. Clube, V, & W Napier. 1982. *Ibid.*
210. Clube, V, & W Napier. 1982. *Ibid.*
211. Clark, D H, W H McCrea, J R Stephenson. 1977. "Frequency of nearby supernovae and climatic and biological catastrophes", *Nature*, vol 265, pp318–9.
212. Milne, D K. 1979. "A new catalogue of galactic SNRs corrected for distance from the galactic plane", *Aust J Phys*, vol 32, pp83–92.
213. Brackenridge,G R. 1981. "Terrestrial Palaeoenvironmental Effects of a late Quaternary-Age Supernova", *Icarus*, vol 16, pp81–93.
214. Brackenridge,G R. 1981. *Op cit.*
215. Brackenridge, G R. 1981. *Op cit.*
216. Kuiper, G P. 1951. In *Astrophysics*, ed by J A Hynek (New York), xii + 708pp; see pp357–424.
217. Rackham, H (transl). 1938. Pliny, the Elder, *Natural History* (London); see vol ii, p91.
218. Rockenbach, A. 1602. *De cometis tractatus novus methodicus* (Wittenberg), no pagination.
    Müller, P. 1619. *De Cometâ anni M.DC.XVIII commentatis physicomathematica. Accessit A. Rockenbachi Tractatus de Cometis*, 2 parts (Lipps), no pagination.
219. Avenius, R. 1788. *Orbis Terrae*, transl by J Schraderi, (Altenburg).
220. Gorion, M J ben. 1919. *Sagen Juden*, 5 vols, (Frankfurt).
221. Darmesteter, J (transl). 1883. *Zend Avesta: The Vendidad* (Oxford); see pt 11, p95.
222. Bancroft, H,H. 1875–6. *The Native Races of the Pacific States of North America*, 5 vols, (London); see vol 3, p149.
223. Maurice, T. 1799. *The Ancient History of Hindustan*, 2 vols, (London); see vol 1, p304.
224. Legge, J (transl). 1876. "The Annals of the Bamboo Books", vol 3, pt 1 of *The Chinese Classics* (Hong Kong); see p112.
225. Powell, J W. 1879. "Sketch of the Mythology of the North American Indians", *Pop Sci Mon*, p799.
226. Nadaillac, M de 1885. *Pre-Historic America* (London), xii + 566pp; see p530.
227. Poor, L E. 1880. *Sanskrit and Kindred Literature: Studies in Comparative Mythology* (Boston), iv + 468pp; see p144.
228. Poor, L E. 1880. *Op cit*, p158.
229. *Book of Revelations*. Chaps 6–10 and 12.
230. *Book of Revelations*. Chap 20.
231. *Isaiah*. Chap xxvii, 1.
232. *Isaiah*. Chap li, 9.
233. *Psalms*. Chap lxxxix, 10.
234. *Psalms*. Chap lxxiv, 13.
235. Morris, R W B. 1977. *The Prehistoric Rock Art of Argyll* (Poole), 128pp.
236. Hadingham, E. 1975. *Circles and Standing Stones* (London), 240pp.
237. Thom, A, & A S Thom. 1977. "Rings and Menhirs: Geometry and Astronomy in the Neolithic Age", chap 2 of *In Search of Ancient Astronomies*, ed by E C Krupp (New York).
    Wood, J E. 1978. *Sun, Moon and Standing Stones* (Oxford).
    Brennan, M. 1983. *The Stars and the Stones: Ancient Art and Astronomy in Ireland* (London).
238. Stooke, P J. 1994. "Neolithic Lunar Maps at Knowth and Baltinglass, Ireland", *J Hist Astr*, vol xxv, pp39–55.
239. Heggie, D C. 1981. *Megalithic Science: Ancient Mathematics and Astronomy in North-West Europe* (London).

240. Oldfather, C H (transl) 1933. Diodorus Siculus *Library of History* (London), ii, 31.
241. Geminus. 1630. Uranologion *Introduction aux Phenomenons* (Paris), 424 + 338pp.
242. Langdon, S. 1912. *Tablets from the Archives of Drehem* (Paris), 25pp.
243. Jeremias, A. 1913. *Handbuch der Altorientalischen Geisteskultur* (Lepizig), 218pp.; see p.133.
244. Hilprecht, H V. 1893–1911. *The Babylonian Expedition of the University of Pennsylvania* (Philadelphia), vol 20, ser.A (1906); see p31.
245. Sarton, G. 1955. "Chaldean Astronomy of the last three centuries BC", *J Am Orient Soc*, vol 75, pp166–173; see p167.
246. Neugebauer, O. 1955. *Astronomical Cuneiform Texts*, 2 vols, (Princeton); see vol I, p11; vol II, p281.
247. Sykes, E. 1952. *Everyman's Dictionary of Non-Classical Mythology* (London), xviii + 262pp; see p71.
248. Bellamy, H S. 1936. *Op cit*, p178.
249. Bellamy, H S. 1936. *Op cit*, p179.
250. Bellamy, H S. 1936. *Op cit*, p96–7.
251. *Book of Job*. Chap xli, 32.
252. Stothers, R B. 1984. "Mass Extinctions and Missing Matter", *Nature*, vol 311, p17.
253. Smith, G. 1876. *The Chaldean Account of Genesis* (London), xvi + 319pp.
254. King, L W (ed). 1902. *The Seven Tablets of Creation* (London), 2 vols.
255. Farnell, L R. 1919–1920. "The value and methods of mythological study", *Proc Br Acad*; see p47.
256. Sykes, E. 1952. *Op cit*, p85.
257. Sykes, E. 1952. *Op cit*, p157.
258. Ovenden, M W. 1972. *Loc cit.*
259. Van Flandern, T C. 1978. *Loc cit.*
260. Opik, E J. 1978. "The Missing Planet", *Moon and Planets*, vol 18, pp327–337.
261. Sykes, E. 1952. *Op cit*, pp18, 58, 69.
262. Sykes, E. 1952. *Op cit*, p69.
    Dalley, S. 1989. *Myths from Mesopotamia: Creation, The Flood, Gilgamesh and Others* (Oxford), xx + 337pp; see pp238–239 where Kingu is spelt Qingu.
263. Collective. 1962. *The Torah* (Jewish Publishing Society of America: New York), see *Psalms* 19, 1.
264. Collective. 1962. *The Torah*, see *Psalms* 19, 6.
265. Way, A S (transl). 1912–1916. Euripides *Electra* (London), 11, 727ff.
266. Velikovsky, I. 1950. *Op cit*, chap 5.
267. Mulholland, J D. 1977. *Op cit*, p114.
268. Morrison, D. 1977. "Planetary Astronomy and Velikovsky's Catastrophism", pp145–176 in *Scientists Confront Velikovsky* edited by D Goldsmith, (Ithaca & London), 184pp; see p154.
269. Gehrels, T (ed). 1976. *Jupiter* (Tucson); see contributions of R G Prinn and T Owen (p319), and S T Ridgway, H P Lawson, and U Fink (p384).
270. Morrison, D. 1977. *Op cit*, pp154–5.
271. Hansen, J E (ed). 1975. "The Atmosphere of Venus", *NASA Space Publ No: 382*; see contribution by M J S Belton, p114.
272. Martonchik, J V. 1974. "Sulfuric Acid cloud interpretation of the infrared spectrum of Venus", *Astrophys J*, vol 193, pp495–501.
    Young, A T. 1973. "Are the Clouds of Venus Sulfuric Acid?", *Icarus*, vol 18, pp564–582.
273. Morrison, D. 1977. *Op cit*, p155.
274. Morrison, D. 1977. *Op cit*, p159.
275. Morrison, D. 1977. *Op cit*, pp160–6.
276. Robert, C (ed). 1878. *Eratosthenes* (Weidmannos), 254pp.
277. Darmesteter, J (transl). 1883. *Zend Avesta: The Vendidad* (Oxford); see pt 11, p93.
278. Wieger, L. 1922–23. *Textes historique*, 2nd edn; 3 vols, (Hienhiem), see vol. 1, p50.
279. Hertel, J. 1935. "Der Planet Venus in Avesta", *Ber Sächsischen Akad d Wiss phil hist Klasse*, vol lxxxvii.
280. West, E W (transl) 1880. "Pahlavi Texts: The Bundahish", in *The Sacred Books of the East*, (Oxford); see chap 3, sect 19–25.
281. Harlez, C de (transl). 1891. *Textes Taoistes* (Paris), vii + 391pp; see Hoei-nan-tze.
282. Spence, L. 1907. *The Mythologies of Ancient Mexico and Peru* (London), 80pp; see p13.
283. Sahagun, B de. 1932. *A History of Ancient Mexico*, translated by F R Bandelier, (1932: Fisk Univ Press); see p25.
284. Sahagun, B de. 1926. *Historia general de las cosas de la Nueva Espana*, 3 vols, (Madrid); see vol III, chap 1, sec 2.
285. Murray, A T (transl) 1924–5. Homer *The Iliad* (London), Bks v, xx, xxi.
286. Buckley, T W A (transl). 1899. *The Odyssey of Homer with the Hymns* (New York), xxx + 432pp; see p399.
287. Langdon, S. 1914. *Tammuz and Ishtar* (Oxford), vii + 196pp; see p67.
288. Tolson, R H *et al*. 1978. "Viking first encounter with Phobos: Preliminary Results", *Science*, vol 199, pp61–4.
289. Rose, L E, & R C Vaughan. 1976. *Velikovsky and the Sequence of Planetary Orbits*; pp119–143 in S L Talbot (ed); see p138.
290. Rose, L E, & R C Vaughan. 1976. *Op cit*, pp138–9.
291. West, E W (transl) 1880. Pahlavi Texts: The Bundahish, in *The Sacred Books of the East*, (Oxford), chap 5 sect 1.
292. Darmesteter, J (transl). 1883. *Op cit*, pp94ff.
293. Boklen. E 1903. "Die Sintflutsage. Versuch einer neuen Eridarung", *Archiv. fur Religionswiss.*, vol 6, pp1–61, 97–150p; vp40.
294. Frazer, J G 1919. *Folklore in the Old Testament*, 3 vols. (London), *v.* vol 1, p227.
295. Mason, B 1962. *Meteorites* (New York), xii + 368pp.
296. Stern, S A 1995. "Chiron Illuminated", *Nature*, vol 373, pp23–24; vp23.
297. Tollmann, A, and E Tollmann. 1993. *Und die Sintflut gab es doch* (Munchen), 560pp; vp210.
298. Budge, E A W, and L W King. 1902. *Annals of the Kings of Assyria: the cuneiform texts with translations, transliterations, etc. from the original documents in the British Museum* (London), lxxvi + 300pp; see p xxi.

Budge, E A W 1921. *The Babylonian Legends of Creation, and the Fight between Bel and the Dragon, as told by Assyrian Tablets from Nineveh"* (London), 68pp; see p1.

299. Bellamy, H S 1936. *Op cit*, pp170–171.
Leach, M (ed.) 1951. *Standard Dictionary of Folklore, Mythology, and Legend*, 2 vols. (New York); see pp323–324, 677.
300. Heidel, A 1951. *The Babylonian Genesis, the Story of Creation*, 2nd. edn. (Chicago), x + 153pp; see p101.
301. Sykes, E 1952. *Everyman's Dictionary of Non-Classical Mythology* (London), xviii + 262pp; see pp26, 32, 140.
302. Meissner, B 1920. *Babylonien und Assyrien*, 2 vols. (Heidelberg); see fig 78.
303. Kramer, S N 1944. "Sumerian Mythology: a study of spiritual and literary achievement in the Third Millennium B.C.", *Amer. Philos. Soc.* (Philadelphia), vol 21, xiv + 125pp; see pl xi, 2nd fig. from top, opp. p51.
304. Sarton, G 1927–1948. *Introduction to the History of Science.* 3 vols. (Baltimore), *Carnegie Inst. Publ.* no. 376; see vol 1, p71.
Neugebauer, O 1975. *A History of Ancient Mathematical Astronomy*, 3 vols. (Berlin and New York); see vol 1, p348.
305. Sarton, G 1954. *The Study of the History of Mathematics*, (New York), 113pp.
Neugebauer, O 1935. *Mathematische Keilschrift Texte* (Berlin), xii + 516pp.
306. Heath, T 1913. *Aristarchus of Samos, the Ancient Copernicus* (Oxford), vi + 425pp.
307. Hilprecht, H V 1906. *Mathematical, Meteorological, and Chronological Tablets from the Temple Library of Nippur, Babyl.Exp.Univ.Pennsylv.*, vol 20, ser A, "Cuneiform Texts" Philadelphia), xvii + 70pp; see p34.
Sarton, G 1953–1959. *A History of Science*, 2 vols. (Cambridge, Mass.); see p71.
308. Moore, P. 1988. *The Guiness Book of Astronomy*, 3rd. edn. (London), 288pp; see p272.
Langdon, S H. *Die Neu-Babylonischen Königsinschriften* (Leipzig), vi + 376pp; see pp103-104.
Neugebauer, O. 1950. "The Alleged Babylonian Discovery of the Precession of the Equinoxes", *Journ. Amer. Orient. Soc.*, pp1–18.
Sarton, G. 1955. "Chaldean Astronomy in the last Three Centuries B.C.", *Journ. Amer. Orient. Soc.*, vol 75, pp166–173; see p169.
309. Neugebauer, O. 1955. *Astronomical Cuneiform Texts*, 3 vols, *Inst. Adv. Stud.* (Princeton); see vol 1, p38.
310. Hayes Ward, W. 1910. *The Sea Cylinders of Western Asia*, Carnegie Inst. (Washington), Publ. no: 100, xxxi + 428pp; see p384, fig. 51a.
311. Van Buren, E D. 1939–41. "The Seven Dots in Mesopotamian Art and Their Meaning", *Archiv. Für Orientforschung*, vol 13, pp277–289; see p283, fig. 13.
312. Sarton, G. 1927–1948. *Ibid*.
313. Hilprecht, H V 1906. *Loc cit*, pp34–35.
Sarton, G. 1953–1959. *Op cit*, p71.
314. Jeremias, A. 1909. *Das Alter der Babylonischen Astronomie*, Kampfe un den Alten Orient (Leipzig), 92pp; see pp73, 75.
315. Neugebauer, O. 1951. *The Exact Sciences in Antiquity* (Princeton, Copenhagen, Oxford), xvi + 191pp; see pp96, 98.
Epping, S.J. 1889. *Astronomisches aus Babylon oder das Wissen der Chaldaër über den gestirnten himmel* (Freiburg), ii + 190pp.; see pp109f.
Neugebauer, O. 1975. *Op cit*, vol 1, p351.
316. Sarton, G. 1955. *Op cit*, p167.
317. Neugebauer, O. 1951. *Op cit*, vol 1, pp136–139, 210a–212, vol 2, p279.
Sarton, G. 1955. *Op cit*, p166.
318. Neugebauer, O. 1951. *Op cit*, vol 1, p1.
319. Neugebauer, O. 1951. *Op cit*, vol 2, p281.
320. Jeremias, A. 1929. *Handbuch der Altorientalischen Geisteskultur*, 2nd. Edn. (Berlin and Leipzig), xviii + 508pp; see pp228-235.
Weidner, E F 1914. *Alter und Bedeuten der Babylonien Astronomie under Astrallehre Nebst Studien über Fixsternhimmel und Kalender*, (Leipzig), iv + 96pp.
Brown, R jr. 1899 *Researches into the Origins of the Primitive Constellations of the Greeks, Phoenicians and Babylonians*, 2 vols. (London); see vol 1.
Whyte, C. 1928. *The Constellations and their History* (London); see pp4, 213.
321. Kugler, F X. 1909–1924. *Sternkunde und Sterndienst in Babel*, 2 vols., with the 1935 supplement (no: III) *Erganzungen Zum*, (Münster).
Weidner, E F. 1915. *Handbuch der Babylonischen Astronomie* (Leipzig), 146pp; see pp47, 76.
Hooke, S H. 1953. *Babylonian and Assyrian Religion* (London), xii + 128pp; see pp26-27.
Meissner, B. 1920. *Op cit*, vol 1, p408.
322. Sarton, G. 1952. *A Guide to the History of Science* (Waltham, Mass.), xviii + 316pp; see p295.
323. Dalley, S. 1989. *Myths from Mesopotamia: Creation, The Flood, Gilgamesh, and Others* (Oxford), xx + 337pp; see pp244, 246.
324. Speiser, E A. 1969. "Akkadian Myths and Epics", pp60–68 in J B Pritchard (ed.). *Ancient Near Eastern Texts Relating to the Old Testament*, 3rd. edn., (Princeton), xvi + 395pp.
325. Rogers, R W. 1908. *The Religion of Babylonia and Assyria, especially in its relations to Israel* (London), xiv + 235pp; see p123.
326. King, L W. (ed.) 1902. *Op cit*, vol 1, p9.
327. Rogers, R W. 1908. *Op cit*, p110.
328. McSween, H Y jr. 1987. *Meteorites and their Parent Planets* (Cambridge), xii + 237pp; see pp71–72, fig3.3.

PART FIVE

ANATOMY OF A DISASTER

1

THE ANTEDILUVIAN WORLD

As demonstrated in Part One, the geological youthfulness of much of Earth's present land and submarine topography, together with the late existence of now-vanished landmasses and migratory routes, points unmistakably to the fact that, before the onset of the Phaeton cataclysm, world geography differed markedly from that now familiar to us.

Previously reviewed biological evidence also suggests that before that event Earth's climate was almost certainly more genial than at present, and was conducive to remarkable proliferation of plant and animal life – even in latitudes now decidedly polar. Luxuriant vegetation, clothing extensive tracts in all hemispheres, was home to a fauna infinitely richer and more abundant than that of today.

Also noted was the fact that such a regime could have existed only if Earth rotated more perpendicularly and, as emphasised in Part Five:4 on *Earth Fracture*, appreciably slower than today. Days must have been correspondingly longer virtually all the year round, and the seasons mainly undifferentiated climatically, especially in tropical and subtropical latitudes. Theoretically at least, the result would have been 'uniformitarian' conditions like those traditionally ascribed to the legendary 'Golden Age' alluded to earlier.

But the evolution and maintenance of such conditions necessarily involved several other important factors which, although individually the outcome of the regime itself, also collectively ensured its continued existence. We may infer with reasonable confidence that:

- Earth must have been a stable planet and had been so for a long span of geological time;
- The relative disposition of land and sea must have differed considerably from that of today;
- Mountains were lower and deserts, where they existed, were less extensive than their modern counterparts, while seas were generally shallower;
- Polar ice-caps, if they existed, must *a priori* have been of modest dimensions.

Momentarily assuming the validity of these inferences we can further deduce therefrom that drainage systems were generally sluggish and largely silt-free; that sedimentary surface deposits predominated; that such uplands as existed were ancient and eroded vestiges of once much higher features; that from long continuing natural dissolution caves and subterranean rivers were common wherever limestone strata existed. From this it may also be inferred that the atmosphere possessed more carbon dioxide and oxygen (one of the by-products of vigorous plant-cover) and more helium (see Part Five:3 on *Collapsed Sky*); that storms were comparatively infrequent; that a high humidity prevailed over much of the globe; that both night-time and day-time skies were relatively cloudless, high-altitude thin clouds being the norm; and that precipitation over most land areas must have consisted chiefly of heavy nightly dews.

Under such conditions vegetation inevitably proliferated vigorously, while the inferentially high volume of fertilising excrement deposited daily on land by huge coeval animal populations also undoubtedly played a major role in promoting this botanical luxuriance.

It was against this topographically and climatically different background that the Phaeton disaster commenced, and the collective experience of the human survivors of that event accumulated. Later, we shall see that this latter factor had a profound bearing on the ability of individual survivors to adjust to the drastically remodelled world into which they had been so roughly catapulted.

A mere handful of traditions exist which allude to what may be termed antediluvian geography. Interestingly these are essentially consistent not only with each other but also with the general world picture inferred above. Thus, the Lushai people of Assam state that before the Deluge their homeland had been level or plain-like, a physical condition also mentioned by such widely-sundered tribes as the Bununs of Formosa (Taiwan) and the Tsimshian tribe of British Columbia[1].

Other traditions, however, refer to a great 'world mountain' called Meru, so upland regions and various peaks evidently existed then as well. The Atlas mountains of northwest Africa, for instance, may be such a precataclysmic chain – with its south-western extremity and a sizable portion of the former adjacent African mainland now partially submerged below the eastern North Atlantic. Classical Greek references to antediluvian times contain vague references to an as yet unidentified antediluvian range known as the Riphaean Mountains. The possible location of these will be considered more fully shortly.

Again, if we admit the emotive cycle of Atlantis legends as valid but distorted memories of some bygone reality, a large island existed somewhere characterised by both lofty mountains and a wide plain. Furthermore, numerous Deluge legends refer specifically to mountains as sanctuaries for animal and human survivors, while as many others mention caves *in* or *under* mountains as places of refuge.

The survival in inland Borneo (Kalimantan) of certain topographical names which. according to the names assigned them, were anciently coastal features (capes, promontories *etc*), suggests that they also are fragmentary reminders of some long-vanished *antediluvian* coastline[2].

Thus, while some antediluvian coastlines were up-heaved and now lie far inland from present shores, others, together with their hinterland, were deeply submerged by the Phaeton calamity. Before that event, however, all marked the outlines of landmasses of very unfamiliar configuration.

The Mediterranean region generally and extensive areas of the North Atlantic were also apparently very different topographically before Phaeton's visit. Numerous living and recently extinct biota recorded from those regions testify strongly to this. The geographical distribution of the freshwater sponge (*Heteromeyenia ryderi*), presently confined to opposite sides of the North Atlantic and incapable of spreading except via freshwater habitats[3], is a case in point. Continuous land, having freshwater lakes and rivers, *must* have united these now widely-separated habitats until geologically recent times. In Part Two we instanced many further similar biological examples, which do not need detailing again here. Their collective testimony, however, is most eloquent.

From these and the many additional details cited earlier we may reasonably deduce that, under essentially genial climatic conditions, antediluvian land surfaces were generally rather flat or undulatory, and that cave-perforated uplands and eroded mountain systems existed in various districts. Certainly lakes and marshes existed in areas now devoid of those features, and the long axes of the oceans apparently ran in an east-west direction rather than the north-south direction that they do today.

But other evidence indicative of this vanished earlier geography also exists. It consists of some very unusual maps depicting unexpected information of special interest to us here. Space precludes our consideration of more than one of them – a truly remarkable map showing, among other things, an ice-free Greenland and what appears to be the now-sunken landmass of Fennoscandia. This map (map 5A), which along with many others of generally similar import is considered by us in another book, is generally

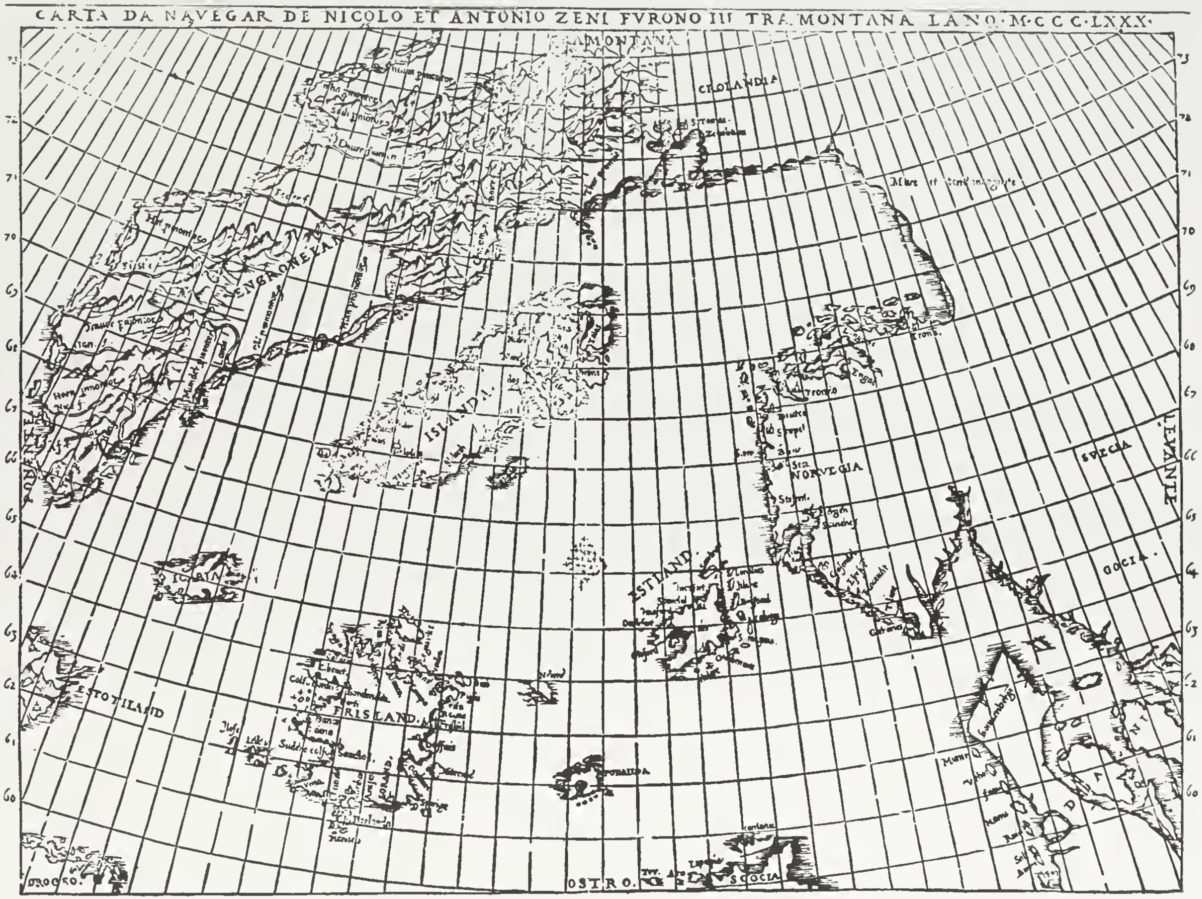
CARTA DA NAVEGAR DE NICOLO ET ANTONIO ZENI FVRONO III TRAMONTANA LANO·M·CCC·LXXX·
TRAMONTANA
GROLANDIA
ENGRONELANT
ISLAND
ESTLAND
NORVEGIA
SVECIA
GOCIA
LEVANTE
ICARIA
FRISLAND
ESTOTILAND
DROGEO
OSTRO
SCOCIA
PONENTE

Map 5A. Zeno map of the North. *Map 29, "Nordenskiöld Facsimile Atlas", 1973, by permission of Dover Publishers Inc, New York.*

known to scholars as the Zeno map, since it was compiled in 1380 AD from observations allegedly made by the Zeno brothers during a northern voyage they are reputed to have undertaken earlier that century.

The map's history is interesting. The original compilation lay unpublished until, in the 16th century, G Ruscelli, a descendant of the Zenos, discovered it among old family papers and printed it in 1558. This was followed by a revised copper-engraved version (1561–1558) which appeared in a Venetian edition of Ptolemy's celebrated 'world' atlas.

Although active around 150 AD, Ptolemy, an Egyptian whose main studies had been made at Alexandria, was still regarded by 16th century geographers as the foremost geographer of all time, and whose maps – updated sporadically by later scholars with the then-latest geographical discoveries and information – formed the basis of the atlas of the world (as then known) at the time in common use. The Venetian printing incorporating the Zeno map was one such edition. The map also appeared in other editions, but, as far as is known, was not seen by Ptolemy and probably never existed in his day in the version familiar to us, since this latter is itself a compilation of several older and quite separate cartographic documents. For that and other reasons several later cartographic authorities have regarded the map as entirely fictitious[4]. Others, however, have concluded that the map reveals the Zeno brothers to have been "honest and reliable observers"[5].

Notwithstanding such conflicting opinions, *all* published versions of the Zeno map depict Greenland, Iceland, Scandinavia and northern Scotland (Scotia) very clearly, yet simultaneously show several supposedly imaginary islands (Frisland, Icaria, Droggo *etc*) in the North Atlantic absent from modern maps of the same area, and portray Greenland united to Scandinavia by an extensive *northern* landmass.

Babcock suggested that the outline of Greenland on the published versions of this map may have been taken from an early map of the region by Claudius Clavus (1427) or from another by Donnus Germanus (1466), and that Frisland was meant to represent the Faeroes, Icaria the Shetlands, and Estotiland eastern Labrador[6]. Be that as it may, the Zenos showed Greenland unambiguously and provide it with an island-girt coastline virtually devoid of the fiords now so characteristic of it, and with *named* mountain ranges and rivers.

Today, Greenland has practically no rivers of any consequence – the courses of those which do exist are very short – and its mountains are all but buried under an enormous ice-cap which, in places, reaches a thickness of 6,000ft (1,850m).

At this juncture two problems confront us: firstly, in view of the possibly imaginary status of some of the islands on the Zeno map, can we accept as genuine the unexpected topographical details depicted on Greenland?; and secondly, how could surface features – rivers and mountain ranges – now deeply buried under huge accumulations of ice, have been mapped at all if, according to conventional hypothesis, Greenland has been ice-mantled for scores of millennia ever since the inception of the assumed 'Ice Age'? Apart from recalling our previous conclusion that no 'Ice Age' of the kind envisaged by orthodox glacialists apparently ever existed, it should be mentioned that the cartographic accuracy of the Zeno map has been investigated on several past occasions largely in connection with the original projections employed by the map's compilers.

Various cartographic authorities have drawn attention to the apparent lack of accuracy in the positioning of certain topographical features, for example Cape Farewell, which on the original map is at 65°N. (whereas it should be at 60°N.), and suggested that the whole of the coastline had simply been skirted by ancient mariners and mapped by using only the very primitive sailors' compass of that period[7]. This conclusion, of course, completely ignored the detailed hinterland of Greenland exhibited by the Zeno map.

It was, in fact, completely demolished when Hapgood, who undertook a detailed analysis of this and other early maps, found that when the polar projection and the reconstructed grid were applied to the Zeno map and oriented to the correct north, Cape Farewell was actually located at 59°N, 44°W (its true co-ordinates being 60°N, 44°W)[8]. This remarkable accuracy was repeated for four other geographical features on both the east and west coasts of Greenland and for others on the coasts of Iceland, Norway and western Europe, where bearings seldom deviated from the true by more than one degree, and often by less. Hapgood's investigations also revealed that the Zeno map was actually a compilation of four separate distinct maps drawn at different scales and oriented to different norths which had later been combined to make a larger map[9].

When placed on a reconstructed Polar projection (figs 5.2abcd), the relative longitudinal and latitudinal positions of identifiable features on the Zeno map turn out to be extraordinarily accurate, and show that

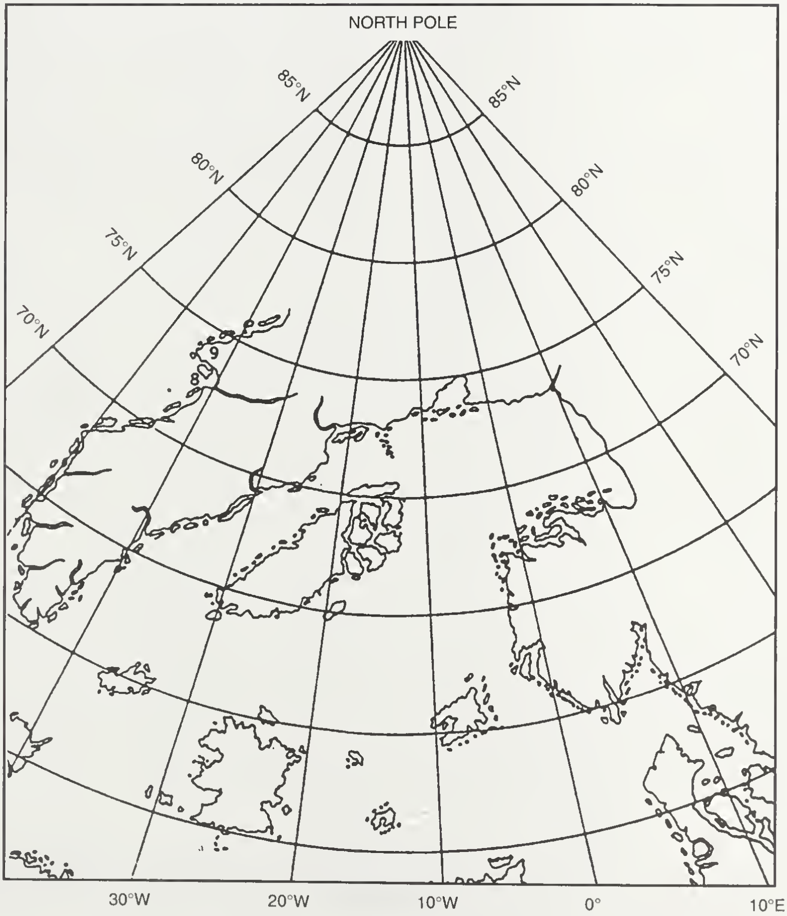

Fig 5.1. The Zeno map of AD 1390 plotted on a reconstructed polar projection. The latitudes of southern Greenland have been corrected but not the longitudes of its western coastline (see also fig 5.2).

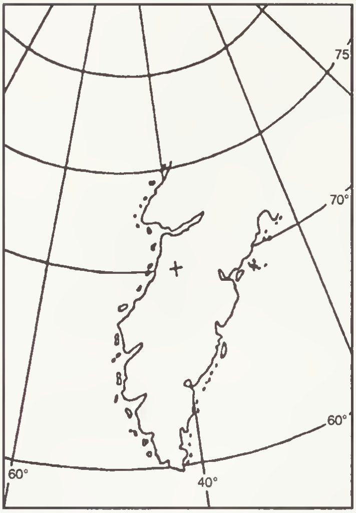
75
70°
60°
60°
40°
B

Fig 5.2a. Uncorrected western coastline of Greenland on the Zeno map.

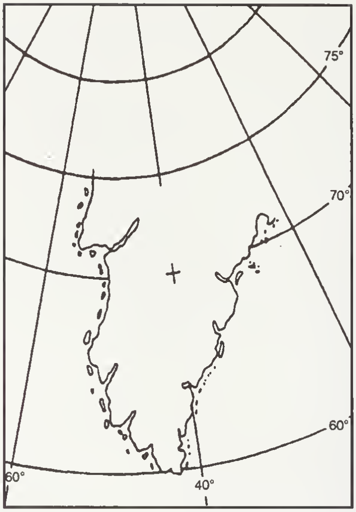
75°
70°
60°
60°
40°

Fig 5.2b. Western coastline of Greenland on the Zeno map replotted to the correct degrees of longitude.

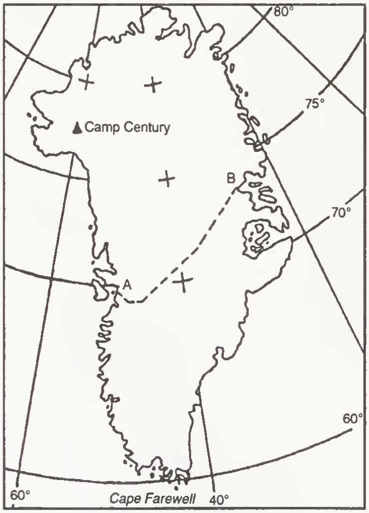
80°
75°
Camp Century
B
70°
A
60°
60°
Cape Farewell
40°

Fig 5.2c. Modern map of Greenland showing Camp Century, and the line (A-B) of the seismic profile of the sub-ice topography (see fig 5.2e).

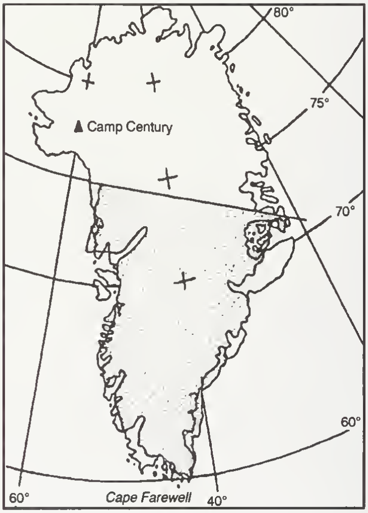
80°
75°
Camp Century
70°
60°
60°
Cape Farewell
40°

Fig 5.2d. Corrected version of the Zeno map of Greenland superimposed on a modern map of Greenland.

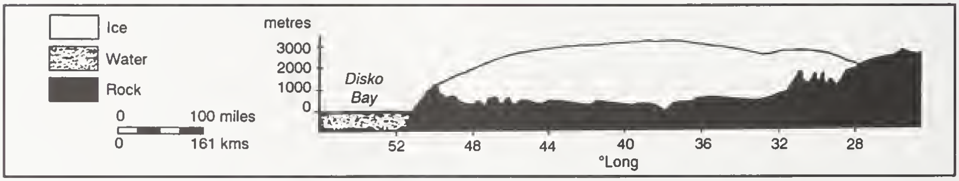

Fig 5.2e. Seismic profile across central Greenland (see fig 5.2c).

neither the Zeno map nor the four earlier maps from which it was compiled could have been drawn in the 14th century, when this type of projection was not used. Consequently, these maps and the information portrayed on them must date from much earlier times.

Compared with modern maps, however, the western coast (only) of Greenland on the Zeno map, even when placed on a reconstructed Polar projection, is found to be located 18.5° of longitude too far to the east. We have replotted the Zeno version of this coastline in its correct modern position (map 5.B) – that is, 18.5° further west – the resultant configuration of which (map 5.D) proves to be amazingly close to that of western Greenland today (map 5.C). Such close resemblances suggest that the rivers and mountains shown by the Zenos in the interior of Greenland are not, as some have speculated, purely imaginary features invented by medieval map makers. Closer examination of these details highlights some very significant facts.

The whole of Greenland slopes from east to west, with a belt of folded mountains having an average height of 7,000ft (2,150m) lying along the eastern seaboard. Greenland is also tilted from south to north, so that strata in the extreme south reach elevations of several thousand feet before abruptly plunging into the sea. The Zeno map appears to suggest precisely this topography.

The large central plain shown on the Zeno map is known to actually exist beneath the present ice-cap in the region indicated, and is apparently a portion of the crust now depressed below sea level by the enormous weight of the superincumbent ice[10].

In order to determine the age of the Greenland ice-cap, a borehole was sunk at Camp Century (77°N, 61°W), which reached bedrock at a depth of 4,705ft (1,387m). The contents of the extracted core was analysed using the theoretical age-depth scale from the 'glacier-flow' theory. This scale estimated that ice bored 3,705ft (1,140m) below the surface was probably 10,000 years old, while that at the very bottom of the core must be about 120,000 years old. This latter date is commonly accepted as the age of the Greenland ice-cap generally. From these details it was concluded that ice moving from the centre of Greenland would take 20,000 years to reach the west coast[11].

There are, however, reasons for doubting the validity of these estimated dates and of the methods used for interpreting the Camp Century core sample, for it has been established that ice streams off Greenland at the rate of some 100ft (30m) per day, that even over a broad shallow front of 21 miles (4km) the daily speed is still 9ft (3m), and that the ice-discharge from the huge Humboldt Glacier, with its 60 mile (96km) wide front, is 31ft (9.5m) a day[12]. This rate of flow is attributable to the fact that on floating away seawards a lack of friction between detached and still-descending ice-masses enables the speed of discharge to be higher than that of a mountain glacier, where such friction persists. Thus, the Mer de Glace on Mt Blanc only proceeds at 1.6ft (0.5m) a day. Furthermore, experiments conducted to establish the age of ice-layers which had moved from the centre to the coast of Greenland showed that the ice accomplished this in only 3,100 years[13]. Everything now points to the Greenland ice-cap being *much* younger than the 120,000 years estimated above.

The fact that northern Greenland was apparently *never* glaciated has already been emphasised. This is further confirmed by the dating of ground features found there and interpreted as being end moraines. These assumed moraines, which are associated with uplifted marine terraces 200ft (62m) above sea level, have proved to be only 8,000–6,000 years old. Indeed:

> No marginal moraines that are definitely older than Holocene have been found in northern Greenland[14].

The late age of these moraines reappears on the east Greenland coast, where examples are only between 11,000 and 9,500 years old; and then, on the west coast, both to the north and south of Disko Bay, upraised terraces show that the area was ice-free even before Holocene times. Other moraines at Taserqat date from some 10,000 years BP, at Avatdleq from 8,700 years BP, and those at Mt Keglen between 7,200 and 6,500 years BP[15].

It is certainly relevant that it was at Atanekerdluk, near Disko Bay, that, last century, an ancient tree, with a trunk "thicker than a man's body"[16], was found still standing erect on a hill at an elevation of 1,080ft (332m) by Capt Inglefield. Had this region ever been glaciated in the manner commonly supposed by orthodox glacialists, this tree could never have flourished, while if it was the remnants of a 'pre-glacial' tree, it would have been demolished and completely removed by the advancing ice of the supposed 'Ice Age'.

This is the conclusion already reached for so much of the present North Polar region – no significant quantities of ice existed there until *after* the Phaeton disaster. Thriving vegetation, including sizable trees, could reasonably be inferred as normal land-cover for territory featuring prominent rivers and mountains like those on the ice-free Greenland shown on the Zeno map.

Interestingly, expeditions made in the late 1940s to study the sub-glacial topography of Greenland produced seismic profiles showing not only the thickness of the ice but also the contours of the underlying land. This also confirmed the existence of the central flat plain depicted on the Zeno map[17].

The unexpected modernity of the moraines of northern Greenland – clearly accumulated by bygone glaciers -, the 'short' apparent period (3,100 years) needed by ice to move naturally from central Greenland to the coast, and Capt Inglefield's remarkable discovery of a long-dead erect tree in alleged 'glaciated' country at Atanekerdluk, are all details which, with several others mentioned earlier, suggest strongly that Greenland's present ice cover is an exceedingly youthful geographical feature – no more, perhaps, than 10,000–11,000 years old. If true, this means that the *original* field surveys embodied in the Zeno map may not, after all, be impossible. Man's ability to map ground features so early, and in such detail and with such accuracy is not as yet an achievement accorded him in orthodox history books – despite the stunningly advanced astronomical and mathematical knowledge obviously known to several of the *oldest of all known* civilisations (see especially section IV:15 on *The Mesopotamian Connection*. All these aspects are discussed in our forthcoming book *The Maps which Leapfrogged History*).

But a 'young' age for Greenland's ice-cover contrasts sharply with the 120,000 years estimated as the general age of ice at the bottom of the aforementioned Camp Century ice core. So also do the dates calculated for some of the lowest (oldest) ice cored recently at inland Greenland localities code-named Dye (1981), Renland (1987), GRIP and GSIP2 (1991–2)[18]. Collectively these indicate that the oldest ice averages around 100,000 years BP, while their general consistency with one another suggests that they cannot all be erroneous. A contradiction respecting the age of the Greenland ice-cover seemingly arises here. It would be reasonable to assume that one or other of these two sets of 'young' and 'old' dates is wrong, for surely they cannot both be right. Or can they?

Plotting of the geographical coordinates of the sites of the Camp Century, Dye, Renland, GRIP and GSIP2 cores on the 'corrected' Zeno Greenland (map 5.B) shows each positioned over or upon the flanks of mountainous terrain; and because these ranges are given specific names on the Zeno map, they must have been regarded as real ranges by someone at some distant time in the past. Today they are smothered under thick snow and ice.

Even in supposedly genial pre-cataclysmic times these lofty mountains must have naturally attracted some rainfall which, if the peaks were sufficiently high, would have fallen as sleet or snow (as on equatorial Mt Kilimanjaro today) and turned to ice on reaching actual land surfaces. The local development of glaciers – perhaps not of great size but certainly of great longevity, given the general stability of meteorological regimes then – even in such a benign era, would have been far from unnatural, and it may well be that 'old' ice studied at the bases of the above-mentioned cores is actually ancient glacier ice rather than ice indicative of a general glaciation at least 100,000 years old. The apparently incompatible ice dates and associated data from Greenland may thus not be contradictory after all, both these 'old' and 'young' sets being equally valid. Interestingly, if interpreted along these lines, neither jeopardises the main thesis advanced in this book, or the essential validity of the Zeno map's portrayal of Greenland.

Just conceivably these ice-blanketed mountains of Greenland are the aforementioned Riphaean Mountains of early Greek writers. Though possibly replete with glaciers, such once-accessible far distant ranges known via traditions from times so ancient that even the classical Greeks regarded them as legendary and no longer reachable, bespeaks of some now all but lost geographical knowledge first accumulated by an early forgotten race capable of land mapping ice-free (but now glaciated) regions to standards epitomised by the so-called Zeno map – the originals of which apparently *antedate* Greenland's present glacial regime.

While it might perhaps be imprudent here to pursue these lines of enquiry further, certain other aspects of the Zeno map also merit attention.

A further detail of the Zeno map concerns the absence of fiords presently characteristic of both the east and west coasts of Greenland. Although the map shows a heavily-indented Norwegian coastline and apparently emphasises an intricate archipelago along the northern Norwegian seaboard, neither the depicted bays and inlets nor the islands readily conform to Norway's present coastal topography. Additionally, the map fails to include the Scandinavian plateau which, in southern Norway, contains peaks as high as 8,000ft (2,450m) or more. This omission conceivably reflects a lack of data available to the Zeno brothers – or the map's Scandinavian sector is possibly unfinished. It is difficult to imagine that such topographical features would have been deliberately ignored or omitted had information about them been available.

Notwithstanding such possibilities, however, we have previously seen that the origin of the Greenland and Norwegian fiords apparently lies more with orogenic upheavals than with massive ice-sculpturing, and that it is unnecessary to ascribe great lengths of time to their formation by ice action. This conclusion accords well, of course, with what we have just learnt about the geologically youthful nature of the present Greenland ice-cap, and its inferred absence before Phaeton's lithospherically-disruptive visit.

It is interesting, therefore, that several authorities have recognised the geological modernity of the Scandinavian mountains, some even advocating a post-'glacial' (*ie*, early Holocene) uplift[19]. Forrest suggested that during the so-called 'Ice Age' they were less than 3,000ft (923m) high[20]. The fact that the Scandinavian uplands tilt downwards into the North Atlantic[21] also correlates with the previously discussed data respecting the geologically recent collapse of the old northern land of Fennoscandia which united North America and northern Europe. The Zeno map appears to show such a northern land-connection, not very dissimilar from that suggested from biological evidence by Scharff[22] and others over ninety years ago.

There are, therefore, apparently no genuine arguments for regarding the Zeno map – curious though it may seem to modern eyes – as portraying anything but that which actually once existed on Greenland in the not so very remote past. All in all, the Zeno map strongly suggests that it constitutes a precious record of a portion of antediluvian geography – a geography which initially formed the terrestrial backdrop to the celestial drama dominated by Phaeton, and which was largely destroyed and remodelled by that event.

It is upon the *modus operandi* and actual sequence of the events, which wrought such changes on Earth, that we must now focus attention.

2

CONFRONTATION

In Part Four we left Phaeton (Marduk) and its attendants departing from the vicinity of Mars and heading for Earth, with Phaeton beginning to discharge electromagnetic bolts ('lightning') at the Moon. The subsequent interactions between Phaeton's entourage and the Earth and Moon amounted to a confrontation of epic proportions. The gigantic physical changes sustained by Earth were both startling and sobering, and the accompanying annihilations not less so. At this juncture, however, we confine ourselves to merely outlining the main phases of this confrontation, reserving for later pages more detailed examination of the *modus operandi* of the calamity and the sequence of the different phases comprising it.

The enormous scale of this catastrophe and the relative positions of the participants as it unfolded are probably most simply conveyed by a series of schematic diagrams (fig 5.3ab, cd, ef). Primarily these show the changing relative positions of the principal antagonists at given phases of the drama, while almost certainly the participants moved, at least initially, on different orbital planes. In order to better comprehend the suggested sequence of events and the relevant interactions involved, each diagram has been provided with a brief commentary tracing the most likely developments or those which can be inferred as having almost certainly occurred. Generally speaking, these formed an identifiable chain reaction.

We have previously noted that the Moon appears to have formerly circled Earth more closely than it does today – probably at no very remote time either. Fig 5.3a shows the Moon moving along this nearer orbit round an Earth spinning from west to east on a nearly vertical axis. Phaeton and the smaller Kingu approach the Earth/Moon system from the direction of Mars on their disruptive journey. For the sake of clarity, the minor but still dangerous lesser objects accompanying Phaeton and Kingu are omitted from this and the following diagrams.

Special note should also be taken of the Roche zone shown enveloping Earth. In due course, we shall see how the zone played a very important part towards the later stages of the Phaeton disaster.

Fig 5.3b, which represents a temporal interval of several days, shows a still largely unchanged Earth circled by the Moon on its pre-catastrophic orbit, but with Phaeton and Kingu now nearing Earth as they attempt to fly past the Earth/Moon system on their sunwards journey. Electromagnetic exchanges between all these bodies would have steadily increased from this point, resulting in an electrically enhanced terrestrial atmosphere, an intensification of magnetic storms, and a general rise in the temperatures of both Earth's atmosphere and hydrosphere.

Ancient Persian traditions are especially noteworthy in mentioning that Phaeton (Tistrya or Tistar) repeatedly changed shape as it approached Earth. Thus, for ten nights Tistrya moved "with light in the shape of a man", that for the next ten nights it assumed the shape of a "golden horned bull", and that for a further ten nights it appeared as a "white horse with golden ears"[23].

From these descriptions – which interestingly span an entire month – one might reasonably conclude that such shape changes were largely caused by the electromagnetic activity occurring within Phaeton's entourage, that several radiant bodies streaming lengthy tails were heading earthwards in comparatively tight formation, and that from time to time these either altered position relative to one another or, as the

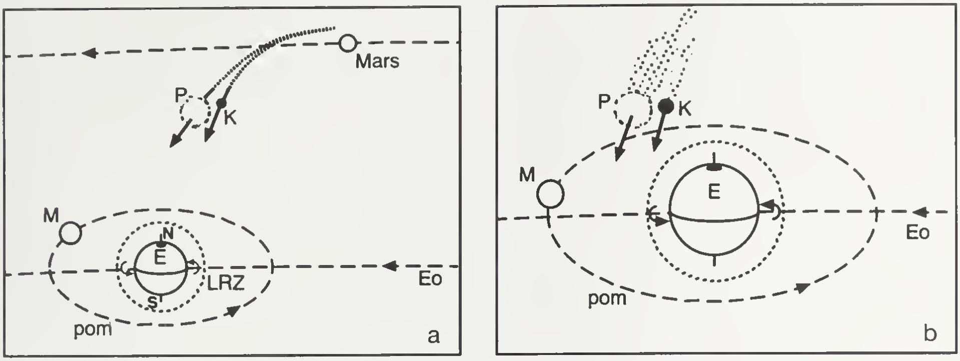
Mars
P
K
M
N
E
S
LRZ
Eo
pom
a
P
K
M
E
Eo
pom
b

Fig 5.3ab. Phaeton's path close to the Earth.

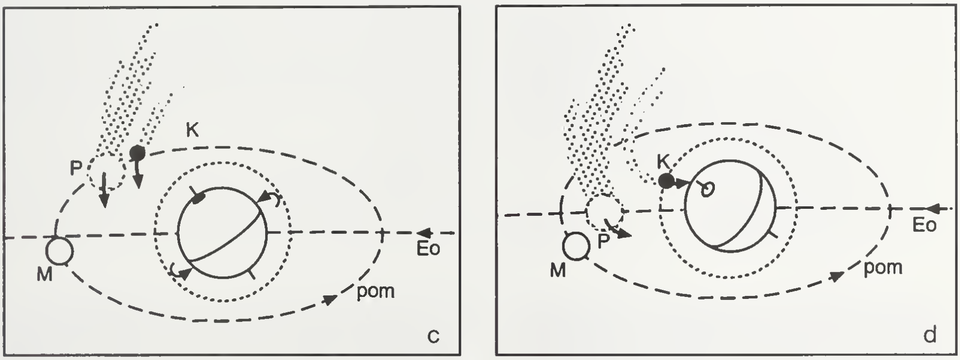
K
P
M
Eo
pom
c
K
P
M
Eo
pom
d

Fig 5.3cd.

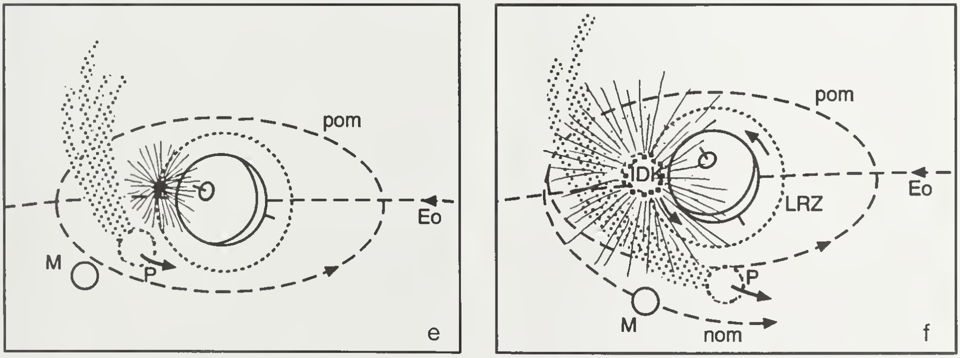
pom
Eo
M
P
e
pom
IDK
LRZ
Eo
P
M
nom
f

Fig 5.3ef.

E	Earth	Eo	Earth's orbit round the Sun	LRZ	Limited of Roche Zone of Earth
K	KIngu	pom	pre-catastrophic orbit of Moon	IDK	Ionized debris of Kingu
M	Moon (Lunar)	nom	New orbit of Moon		
P	Phaeton (Marduk)				

objects proceeded across the heavens, the overall perspective of the group repeatedly changed for terrestrial viewers. The Persian account strongly suggests this scenario. Certainly, shape changes like these are not novel. In just twenty-four hours, the configuration of some cometary heads has been observed to alter markedly. Fig 5.4 shows an example observed in 1862.

Ancient descriptions which likened Phaeton to a serpent, a wolf, a horned bull, a horse, a lion's head, a boar, a giant bird, or to some mythological creature like a dragon, the behemoth, or the leviathan; or which refer to dusky tongues, manes, bristles, and gleaming eyes are obviously allusions to the ever-changing fantastic image of Phaeton during its awesome progress across the firmament, a progress that in its later stages appeared to swing alternately towards the zenith or low to, or even below, the horizon, as Earth yawed unstably.

As Hindu traditions correctly affirm, Phaeton was "a dreadful spectacle". Multifarious changes could, of course, be expected in an object like Phaeton. Traditional references to them, far from being fanciful, are almost certainly genuine if poetic accounts of what was actually seen. The following conjectural interpretations (figs 5.3c and 5.3d) graphically outline what may have been observed in Earth's skies then.

Fig 5.3c, which represents the probable situation after a further interval of a day or two, shows Phaeton and Kingu set on a path that will take them inside the Moon's orbit and to one side of the Earth's northern zenith. To Earthbound observers their course was running contrary to Earth's rotation – as specifically mentioned in Ovid's account of the disaster. Earth/Moon gravitation now begins to affect the course of the intruders, while Earth, tilting axially from the vertical, starts to align itself towards Phaeton and Kingu.

Terrestrial wobble and axial shift will also have been exacerbated by the alarmingly fast increase in seismic activity occasioned by the steadily nearing Phaeton and its entourage – activity which, dislocating the lithosphere

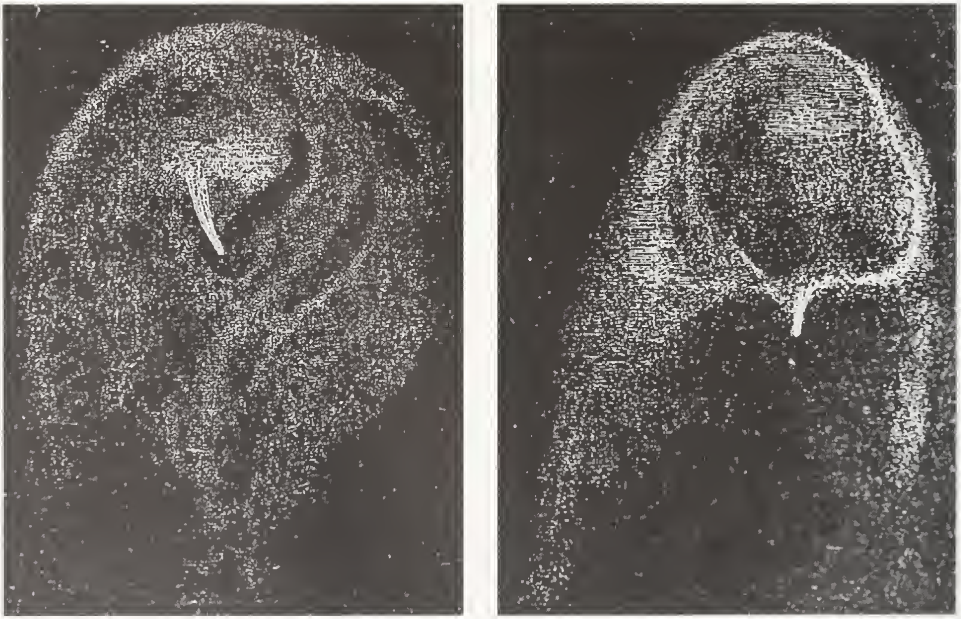

Fig 5.4. The head of a comet observed in August 1862. On the left, its aspect at 9pm on August 23rd, and on the right its aspect exactly 24 hours later. *After A Guillemin.*

worldwide, has been authoritatively described as being of "...indescribable and overpowering violence"[24]. Its magnitude far transcended the 7.5 shown by Heirtzler's researches as the minimum for generating not only axial wobble and polar shift but also for causing a geomagnetic reversal[25]. Magnetic charges imparted to igneous rocks during this reversal are, as previously noted, known to have been from ten to *one hundred times stronger* than any suppliable by unaided internal terrestrial mechanisms – Phaeton was the only co-existing close source capable of furnishing such massive charges!

Fig 5.3d indicates the probable position after a similar interval of time. The Moon is shown still moving along its pre-catastrophic orbit as Earth's rotation either ceases or is severely retarded by Phaeton and its attendants – now even closer to Earth. At this point, the combined gravitational pull of Earth and the Moon apparently began to prize Kingu away from Phaeton's embrace

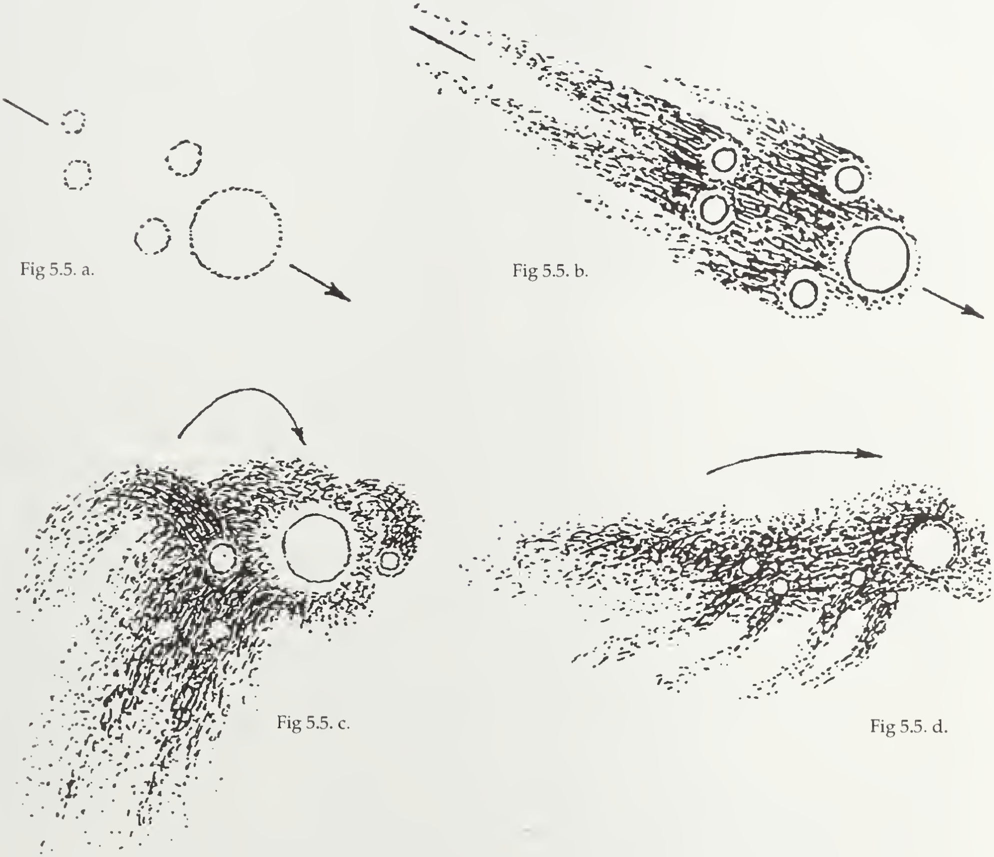

Fig 5.5. a.

Fig 5.5. b.

Fig 5.5. c.

Fig 5.5. d.

Fig 5.5. a. Schematic diagram of the probable early disposition of Tistrya (Phaeton) – the largest object – and its four largest satellittes.
b. The same group shown in probable flight formation, broadly resembling a human shape.
c. The same group at a later stage seen three-quarters head-on, broadly resmbling a 'golden horned bull'.
d. the same group seen later still when broadly resembling a 'horse'.

and drag it inexorably towards Earth's Roche zone and ultimate destruction. Colossal electromagnetic exchanges must have continued unabated between Phaeton, Kingu, Earth and the Moon during this phase of the drama, as each object sought to stabilise its own electromagnetic potential.

The combined separation of Kingu from Phaeton and the stopping or slowing of Earth's axial spin caused terrible havoc on Earth. The waters of the world's rivers, lakes and oceans were drained from their original basins and drawn gravitationally to the point on Earth nearest (opposite) Kingu and Phaeton. Worldwide traditions remember this awesome effect.

The retarding of Earth's rotation also resulted in the world's winds blowing with a ferocity and intensity never experienced by modern people – winds which flattened whole forests, whipped ocean billows to mountainous heights, moved giant rocks and removed incalculable volumes of loose surface materials to very great distances. It was, in fact, remembered as a veritable *diluvium venti*.

Meanwhile, the internal magma tides continued to flow below the tormented terrestrial crust. Through the united gravitational influence of Kingu and Phaeton, they will have been slowly pulled towards that aspect of Earth nearest those celestial bodies. This inevitably resulted in geoidal deformation, huge portions of the lithosphere buckling, fracturing, subducting, collapsing or overriding one another as simultaneously numerous mountain ranges were up-heaved. Rivers of molten lava, rains of red-hot ash, and vast clouds of volcanic dust and gas swirled over enormous regions. Elsewhere rampant fires will have consumed all living things in their path.

At some localities volcanic gas clouds – *nuées ardentes* – transported large boulders many miles, scored rock surfaces with striae closely resembling those often ascribed elsewhere to glacial action, and, in company with high pressure grit-charged steam, polished and carved rock surfaces and excavated entire valleys. Concomitantly, avalanches of boiling mud ejected from volcanic vents and fissures poured down hillsides and along valleys transporting more boulders and producing further rock striations.

Numberless burrowing creatures sought sanctuary from these scourges in their underground dens – refuges which, though temporarily successful, proved to be fatal traps. Indeed, the mortality rate at that time among animals and plants of all kinds was frighteningly high.

Proceeding now to fig 5.3e, which represents a few hours later, we find Phaeton, unable to break the combined Earth/Moon gravitational field and so unable to 'capture' the Moon, displacing it to a new (its present) orbit. Slav traditions mention a 'star' or 'planet' named *Gokihar* ('Wolf-progeny') as the special "disturber of the Moon" at a time of great changes on Earth long ago[26]. Gokihar was presumably Phaeton.

Kingu, however, now trapped in Earth's Roche zone, had begun to disintegrate. Such frozen liquids and atmosphere as Kingu may originally have possessed will have become detached first, plummeting to Earth as blocks of ice, hail and gigantic masses of water (the pre-Deluge rain?). This process must have accelerated progressively, culminating in a mighty explosion, which hurled burning debris literally in all directions at high velocity and produced a blast which, among other things, caused the 'sky' or 'heavens' (actually the thick clouds of the 'collapsed sky') to open or part like a 'scroll'. Through this opening some of the largest fragments of Kingu – the Norse sagas called them the 'sons of Muspelheim' – plunged earthwards.

Accompanying these were immense masses of smaller fragments – the rains of gravel, showers of rocks and iron blocks, and falls of sand and dust of worldwide traditions. Fire (ignited gases?), burning fluids (hydrocarbons?), and sticky ferruginous fluids reportedly fell with them, adding to the prevailing chaos. Although the overwhelming majority of these fragments ignited on entering Earth's 'collapsed sky', either vaporising or exploding varying distances above ground level, the so-called Carolina 'bays' of the eastern United States, the smaller but otherwise closely similar 'bays' of Holland, and the aligned 'lakes' of north-eastern Siberia, Alaska, northern Yukon and north-eastern Bolivia were apparently produced then. The dominant NW/SE orientation of all of these structures strongly suggests a common origin, and that aerial agents formed them.

As Phaeton's influence began to wane, Earth's rotational speed started to increase again, although the planet generally still continued to suffer the calamities outlined in our explanation of fig 5.3d.

Fig 5.3f depicts the final phase of this terrible confrontation. The Moon is shown setting out on its new orbit. Earth has received Phaeton's legacy of an altered axial tilt and obscuring 'collapsed sky' conditions worldwide. Numerous fragments of the disintegrated Kingu continue to bombard Earth as concurrently, another of Phaeton's legacies, the Deluge, wreaks further havoc.

With the destruction of Kingu and the sunwards departure of Phaeton, the deranged atmosphere and the gravitationally heaped-up terrestrial waters strove to regain normality. Terrific gales continued to blow as Earth's atmosphere adjusted to changing topographical conditions, and both piled-up waters and the internal magma tides began to return to equatorial regions. Numerous surviving accounts describe the waters advancing like a colossal wave, or wall of stupendous height and irresistible power. The relatively abrupt release of the waters piled-up by Kingu's and Phaeton's combined gravitational influence will have inevitably produced a Deluge having precisely these characteristics. That the Deluge at many localities indeed assumed these proportions is confirmed not so much by the traditional descriptions but by the numberless physical evidences of its massive charge across the landscape.

The Deluge, careering headlong over hill and dale alike, charging up mountainsides and pouring down valleys, was checked only by the largest mountain ranges or deflected by the mightiest cliffs. With the force of ten thousand Niagaras it will have poured precipitously into those collapsed portions of the Earth's crust destined henceforth to be the present ocean basins. Amid prevailing gloom it roared across the open countryside obliterating or gathering up all organic matter in its path, carrying it long distances in battered and dismembered condition before depositing it along with incalculable volumes of sand, silt, gravel and stony debris in caves and rock-fissures on every continent, often in the wildest disorder, as densely-packed confused masses. Its waters extinguished innumerable fires and crushed or transported every movable object they encountered. They swamped caves, burrows and other underground refuges, drowning all creatures which had sought safety within them.

The magnitude of the biological extinction achieved by the Deluge almost transcends the imagination. It annihilated literally billions of biological units of both sexes and every age indiscriminately. Only incredibly powerful flood-waters operating worldwide could have achieved such results, and only a flood produced by the means previously suggested could have operated globally.

Finally, some thought should be given to the scale, rapidity and violence with which the successive phases of this confrontation took place, for not only are these factors consistently confirmed wherever physical traces of their former action are yet discernible, but they are implicit in their very *modus operandi*. Giant electromagnetic storms, lightning, earthquakes, volcanic eruptions, crustal dislocations, stupendous hurricanes, abruptly displaced bodies of water, celestial bombardments, rains of astonishing volume, and a mighty flood – *all* are quick-acting violent events.

Individually, each may have persisted for an appreciable time, although throughout its duration its actions are essentially rapid and impetuous. The elements of speed, great scale and violent power unquestionably rendered the character of each phase as phenomenal and terrible. So too were the extent and effects. In short, the catastrophe was eminently memorable. Nothing like it before or since was known to humanity.

With the draining away of the Deluge waters, Earth's confrontation with Phaeton was over to all intents and purposes, although its tribulations were not. Before considering these, however, we must examine more fully the various component phases of the confrontation itself to appreciate how each formed a logical and coherent link in a progressive chain of horrendous events totally unknown to modern Man.

3

COLLAPSED SKY

One of the earliest physical effects arising from Phaeton's visit was the phenomenon afterwards remembered traditionally as the *Age of Darkness.* Several accounts state that darkness enveloped the Earth before the onset of the Deluge, lasted throughout its duration, and endured for years after the flood waters had subsided. References to its persistence throughout early post-diluvial times usually associated it with great cold. Its density and longevity were decidedly exceptional, the former characteristic leading to at least one assertion that it was not of an "ordinary earthly kind"[27], and the latter to a general belief that the sky had 'fallen' or 'collapsed'.

It can hardly be coincidence that numerous traditions speak of this 'Collapsed Sky' as having fallen so low that people could not stand upright without touching it[28]; of the darkness being so intense and the atmosphere so thick that birds flew into one another and men and animals stumbled against each other[29]; and that it occurred at a time when the whole world was desolated[30] and a terrible heat enveloped the Earth and made its waters boil[31].

In Brazil, the Cashinaua Indians recall that deafening thunder and lightning accompanied the 'collapsed sky'[32], and many African tribes associated it with widespread biological destruction. Thus the Ovaherero tribesmen assert that when the sky "fell down" long ago "almost all the people were killed", a belief shared, too, by the Kanga people and Loanga tribe; and in Unyoro, the Wanyoro tribe likewise speak of ancient times when the god *Kagra* threw the firmament upon the earth to annihilate humanity[33].

The duration of the 'collapsed sky' varies considerably in the various surviving accounts of it. Some merely speak of Earth being plunged "in darkness for a long time"[34], or for so long that the period was later regarded as an age of "continuous darkness"[35]. Several imply that the darkness persisted for years, and a Mexican account (mentioned in Part Three) states that it actually lasted for twenty-five years. Certainly its persistence was everywhere traditionally held to have been abnormally long. We may never know its true duration, but this more than likely varied in different latitudes and was governed at different localities by local topography – the probable reason why differing estimates of its duration are given in different traditions. Moreover, if perpetual darkness prevented the distinction of day from night, the true duration of 'collapsed sky' conditions would have been very difficult if not impossible to determine.

The mechanism by which the natural terrestrial cloud cover could 'collapse' appears to necessitate: an initially massive and comparatively rapid evaporation of the Earth's surface waters; the subsequent condensation of those waters; and an equally massive and long-continuing pollution of the terrestrial atmosphere by suitable agencies. All such effects would, of course, result from other, still more fundamental, planetary activities involving among other things the production of great quantities of heat.

We have seen that the pre-catastrophic climate must have been generally warm and devoid of extremes over much of the globe. In such a climatic regime, widespread condensation in the guise of heavy dews must have occurred nightly, with water tables being relatively high. Several traditions independently aver that a terrible drought preceded the most dramatic expressions of the Phaeton disaster – the Conflagration and the Deluge. Fruit on trees shrivelled, crops failed and vegetation withered. Animals and birds migrated *en masse* from north to south[36]. Rivers and lakes began to dry up and sea temperatures rose. The evaporation of Earth's waters had begun. A blistering heat pervaded everything and a thickening haze formed high in the skies. It was presumably this haze which, according to the Amerindians of the Purus River region of Brazil, made the Sun and Moon turn red, blue and yellow.

Atmospheric distortion must have commenced then, as that part of Earth's atmosphere opposite or nearest the oncoming Phaeton and Kingu was slowly pulled gravitationally towards those bodies. This derangement probably assumed the form of a curved cone or plume which streamed outwards a considerable distance towards the celestial visitors, with the lightest gases (*eg* helium) being the most affected.

In other words, the terrestrial atmosphere was being held in a distorting pattern while Earth itself continued to rotate normally. Coupled with the intensifying electromagnetic conditions mentioned previously, winds must have been hot and dry in virtually all latitudes, contributing to a massive evaporation of superficial waters generally. Such evaporation inevitably resulted in the formation of a thickening cloud cover. Initially this was presumably the 'thick mist' alleged to have shrouded Hera (Earth) while Pallas-Athene (Phaeton) was still far distant (see Part Four); later it reached 'collapsed sky' proportions.

Even from the onset of the confrontation between Earth and Phaeton violent electromagnetic exchanges between these bodies would have been inevitable. Certainly at later stages of the cataclysm we are told that these exchanges became almost continuous – Pima Indian legends mentioning that even the advancing Deluge waters were cut by incessant lightning. Thus, early atmospheric effects must have included a heavy smell of burnt electricity. Surely significant, therefore, is the Samoan recollection that what we may take to have been just such a smell was noticed *before* the formation of huge clouds (relatively unfamiliar objects in antediluvian skies) which preceded the great Conflagration.

Unquestionably many of these initial electromagnetic exchanges reached ground level, igniting dehydrated forests or tearing up land surfaces. Numerous well documented modern instances are known of such disturbances, even though these obviously involve discharges infinitely smaller than those which must have passed between Earth and Phaeton. The following example shows how even a minor event of this kind can wreak appreciable damage. After a lengthy drought during August 1900, a thunderstorm arose in the forested Adirondack mountains and passed over Lake Champlain, USA. A lightning discharge occurred, striking the ground on the northern slope of Split Rock Mountain and setting fire to trees so that in under five minutes a "well-developed forest fire was under way". All around the point of impact dirt and rocks had been torn up with such force that rocks had been fractured and shattered, and fragments 110lbs (49.5kg) or more in weight were flung about[37].

V H Barnett has detailed similar cases in this category, which possibly have a bearing on the origin of *some* of the so-called 'glacial erratics'. He mentions a report of a great mass of rock being broken and thrown down the Llyn Teyrn in North Wales by lightning during a severe thunderstorm in August 1898, and Hibbert described the effects of lightning on the cliffs on the east side of Fetlar Island (Shetland) as follows:

> A rock 105ft long, 10ft broad and in some places more than 4ft thick, was in an instant torn from its bed, and broken into three large and several lesser fragments.

> One of these, 26ft long, 10ft broad and 4ft thick, simply turned over. The second, which was 28ft long, 17ft broad and 5ft in thickness, was hurled across a high point of a rock to the distance of 50 yards. Another broken mass, about 40ft long, was thrown still farther but in the same direction, quite into the sea. There were also many lesser fragments scattered up and down.[38]

If comparatively minor modern lightning discharges can cause damage on this scale, one is certainly left pondering the likely effects of the immeasurably greater examples exchanged between Earth and Phaeton.

Celestial electromagnetic exchanges of the size and frequency suggested must also have generated electrical currents not only on Earth's surface but also deeper, selecting metalliferous (better conducting) strata, following metallic veins – perhaps to great depths within the crust – and producing huge thermal increases worldwide. Repeated discharges on this scale would quickly generate sufficient heat to cause: almost instantaneous expansion of the water naturally locked up in crustal strata, resulting in extensive fissuring and splitting of surface rocks; the upwards flow of magma from the deeper fissures; and the activation of volcanoes. Oceans and seas would have boiled and steamed. In combination, these disturbances would, through a general release of heat, smoke and dust, initiate atmospheric pollution that would last for decades.

On rising into the atmosphere, these pollutants would have begun to seriously impair visibility while their rapid formation as dust or gas would have induced further electrical activity, conditions thereby going from bad to worse.

The now famous Mt St Helens volcanic eruption of May 1980 released an immense amount of ash and dust into the atmosphere, which ultimately affected at least two-thirds of North America (map 5B). In some areas it reached as much as 8 tonnes per acre, and *that* some 300 miles (480km) from the eruption itself[39]. The burial of Pompeii and Herculaneum under prodigious quantities of volcanic ash in AD 79 was a classic example, although only marginally worse than that occurring in 1914 when Sakurajima volcano in Japan all but buried innumerable buildings in its vicinity with similar ejecta (fig 5.6). The still more recent eruption of El Chicon in Mexico on April 4th 1982, hurled into the atmosphere more than five times the amount of material than the Mt St Helens explosion, and ranks as one of the largest of modern times.

Large volcanic eruptions can also seriously *lower* atmospheric temperatures. Thus, in 1783, Laki volcano erupted in Iceland and Asama volcano erupted in Japan. Though not exceptionally large, in combination they exerted a pronounced cooling effect on the world's atmosphere, not only in that year but also on the two that followed, which: "...were the coldest on record in the northern hemisphere"[40]. They created widespread dense fogs, whereby the Sun remained invisible until it had climbed 17° above the horizon – and that was in southern France in June!

In 1815, one of the most violent eruptions of all time occurred when Mt Tambora threw so much ejecta skywards that even 312 miles (500km) away the dust hung so thickly that: "...there was total darkness for three days – followed by lengthy twilight and brilliant sunsets elsewhere"[41]. Globally, temperatures fell 1.1°C below the annual norm, and 1816 was a year *without* a summer.

The role played by volcanic ash and dust released into the atmosphere is, even today, a significant one. For example, it has been determined that dust clouds erupted near the equator pollute the atmosphere and endure from 1 to 2 years, those erupted in middle latitudes from 3 to 5 years, and those in polar latitudes for up to 10 years[42].

Particularly intense vulcanism is known to have characterised 'late Pleistocene' times, truly enormous eruptions occurring in the areas embraced by the North Pacific[43], Antarctica and Iceland[44]. Literally thousands of volcanoes were active then (see table 5A). Their collective pollution of the atmosphere

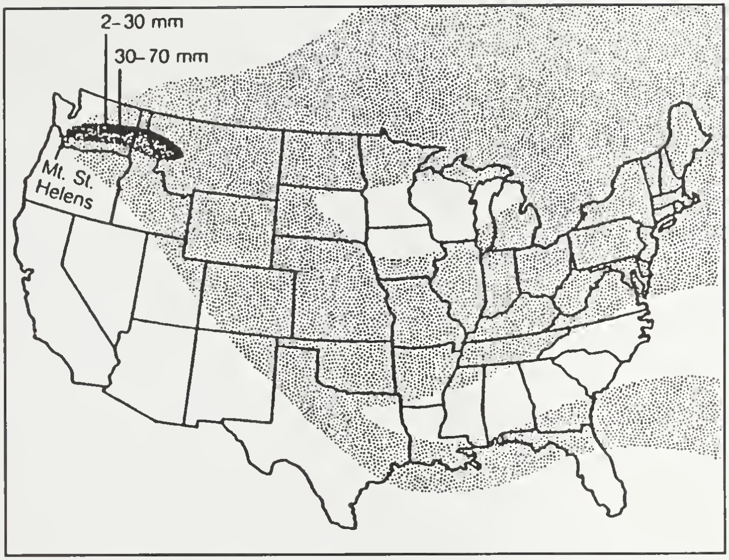

Map 5B. General extent of ash-fall from Mt St Helens over North America, which erupted on May 18th 1980. *From G B Griggs & J A Gilchrist, "Geological Hazards, Resources and Environmental Planning", 2nd edn, 1983, reprinted by permission of Wadsworth Inc, Belmont, USA.*

must have been colossal. It has been suggested that this 'late Pleistocene' vulcanism may have seriously defiled Earth's atmosphere for up to 100 years[45].

The volume of volcanic dust poured skywards at any given time is also important. Large quantities initiate the development of sulphuric acid in the upper atmosphere, leading to the formation of thick cloud cover. Atmospheric pollution is worst and persists longest in high latitudes because, there, the dust veil causes the greatest depletion of the Sun's rays by screening both solar and terrestrial radiation through the formation of the cloud-cover. The resultant lower temperatures accordingly permit an increase in the build-up of snow and ice – the former producing a heat-reflective albedo effect, and the latter an entrenchment of continuously cool or cold conditions, and a weakened circulation[46].

As well as dust particles, volcanic eruptions also release sulphur compounds, potash, potassium, CO_2, and particles of glass[47]. In combination these could lower temperatures globally by up to 3°C, or perhaps even more.

Since it is well known that lightning often accompanies volcanic eruptions it would be reasonable to suppose an atmosphere heavily polluted with volcanic and fissure ejecta would tend to become increasingly electromagnetic. Electrical discharges must, therefore, have steadily increased between the thickening atmosphere and the tormented land surface, as concurrently larger ones generally continued to be exchanged between Earth, Phaeton, and the latter's entourage. The sheer weight of the polluted atmosphere would have forced the cloud base down to unprecedentedly low levels.

There is. therefore, a clear connection between the phenomenon of a 'collapsed sky', repeated electromagnetic exchanges between celestial bodies, and giant crustal dislocations generating both heat and atmospheric pollutants on a grand scale. A similar connection, considered more fully later, is equally discernible between a 'collapsed sky' situation and atmospheric defilement by vast burning forests and ignited petroleum.

It is also more than probable that most of Earth's helium was lost during this disaster.

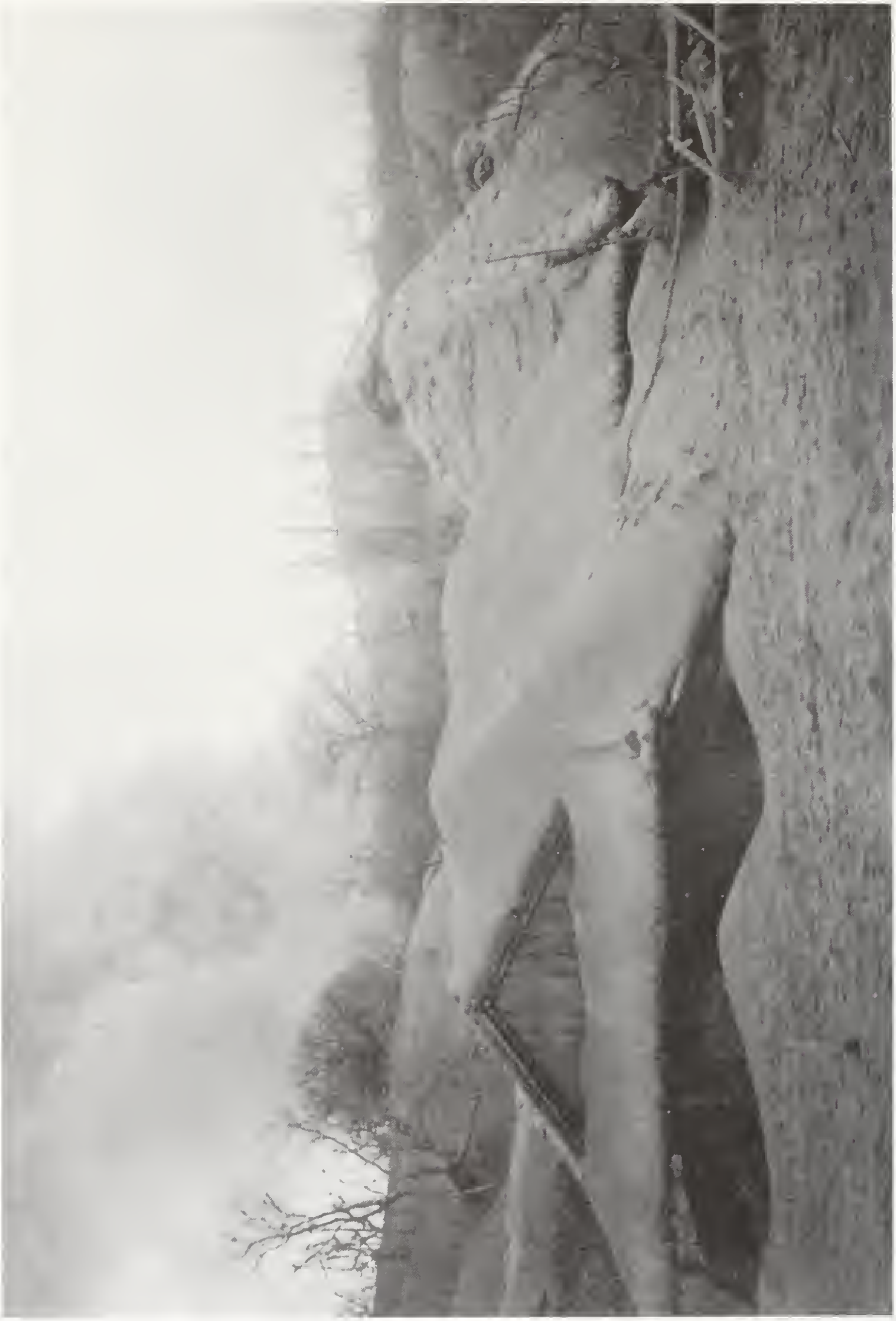

Fig 5.6. Buildings partially buried by volcanic ash during the 1914 eruption of Sakurajima, Japan.

Table 5A

Some areas of major volcanic activity regarded by vulcanologists as being of 'late Pleistocene' or 'late Quaternary' age. Many areas, such as the Aleutians and Andes hosted scores, even hundreds, of simultaneously active volcanoes at that time.

Northern Hemisphere

Gt Khingan Shan Mts
Sikhote-Alin Mts
Taiwan (Formosa)
Ryuku Islands
Kuril Islands
Kamchatka Peninsula
Anadyr Bay
Bering Strait
Seward Peninsula
Gulf of Alaska
Aleutian Islands
Vancouver
Rocky Mountains
Cascade Mountains
Grand Canyon
Sierra Nevada
Columbia Plateau
Idaho
Oregon
Arizona
New Mexico
Mexico
Nicarague
El Salvador
Guatemala
Panama
Clarion Islands
Hawaii
Philippines
Spitzbergen
Novaya Zemlya
Mid-Atlantic Ridge
The Azores
Canary Islands
Atlas Mountains
Hoggar
Ethiopia
Djibouti
Gulf of Oman
Iran
Afghanistan/Pakistan border

Southern Hemisphere

Nigeria
Kenya
Tanzania
Great Rift Valley
Madagascar
Indian Ocean
Burma
Malaysia
Indonesia
New Hebrides
Australia:
    N Queensland
    South-east New South Wales
    West Victoria
Tasmania
Bismarck Sea
New Guinea
New Zealand
Solander Islands
Antarctica:
    South Antarctic Peninsula
    Ellsworth Land
    Marie Byrd Land
The Andes - Colombia to Chile
Brazil - Mato Grosso
Chile (800 recently active volcanoes)

Helium is a light, inert gas normally found in the upper atmosphere. It is produced by the natural radioactive decay of uranium and thorium in the terrestrial crust. Investigations have shown that, at the present known rate of decay, and provided that uninterrupted decay has been going on since time immemorial, there ought to be a thousand times more helium in Earth's atmosphere than there actually is. Scientists at the US National Bureau of Standards who studied this enigma in 1964 concluded that the loss of so much helium could very well have been due to some geologically recent "catastrophic event", in which the gas was "boiled off"[48].* Theoretically at least, the Phaeton disaster provided all the conditions under which this could have occurred.

4

EARTH FRACTURE

The gigantic worldwide tectonic disturbances of 'late Pleistocene' times occurred almost simultaneously on a near-unimaginable scale – precisely what could be expected from a powerful external influence but not from the 'Ice Age' conditions conventionally believed to have existed then. The key factor underlying these tremendous changes was massive *crustal fracture.*

Interestingly the planetary scale and geological youthfulness of Earth's crustal fracture-complex has encouraged several high authorities to conclude that it resulted from an *external* rather than internal influence. We also previously noted that the Martian crust appears to have been similarly fractured, and that, in an ancient Babylonian epic, the planet Tiamat was fatally fractured and destroyed during a celestial encounter with a fiery sun-like object called Marduk. And since Marduk was seemingly identical with Phaeton, traditionally remembered as having anciently caused extensive topographical changes on Earth, could the terrestrial fracture-complex have resulted from the same dynamical process that destroyed Tiamat and fissured Mars?

If we examine this possibility further, it is noteworthy that Mars, like Earth, presently rotates once about every 24 hours, that the two innermost planets, Mercury and Venus, rotate much more *slowly*, but that the outer planets (Pluto excepted) rotate much more *rapidly* (see table 4A, Planetary Statistics). In the Babylonian epic Tiamat apparently orbited the Sun as an asteroidal planet somewhere between Mars and Jupiter.

We are not told Tiamat's size, however, although an apparent image of it on a Babylonian cylinder seal (fig 4.11c) indicates that it was larger than Earth, and modern estimates of a now-lost asteroidal planet suggest a mass approximately 90 times that of Earth[49]. Thus, as an astronomical body, Tiamat was sizable, although not really large. Due to its likely distance from the Sun, Tiamat could be envisaged as a planet having a solid rocky body not improbably ice- or water-covered, enveloped by an atmosphere more akin to those typical of Jupiter and the outer planets. Quite possibly, Tiamat may have rotated more quickly than Mars and Earth – perhaps in 18 or 20 hours – whereby its rate of spin at its equator (and hence that of any internal magma it may have possessed) was by any standard quick.

A fast-spinning sizable body like this, braked or stopped by a powerful external agent, would – largely because any internal magma would probably continue to rotate within the halted outer crust – literally come to pieces. Intolerable pressures and thermal increments would fracture and disrupt the latter. Faster-spinning larger bodies, such as the outer planets, could through sheer size and rotational speed override all but the very greatest external influences, and crustal and magmatic disruption would be minimal or non-existent. Similarly, a slow-spinning sizable body, externally retarded or braked to a halt, would also probably avoid fatal disruption, since, irrespective of the object's size or bulk, the braking process, while more easily accomplished, would obviously involve less crustal dislocation than if the rotation was speedier.

---

* See *Note 17.*

This seems to have been the case with Mars and Earth. Although the former evidently suffered orbital distortion and its rotation may have been slowed down, Earth, too, conceivably once rotated more slowly, a day consisting perhaps of about 30 hours.

We suggest, therefore, that at the onset of Phaeton's confrontation with Earth, the Earth's rate of spin was probably the single most important factor which determined its survival as a planet. Had its rotation been more rapid, it could well have shared Tiamat's fate. Combined with its powerful gravitational field occasioned by its essentially solid lithospheric construction, Earth's slower rotational rate prevented it from breaking up – although not, in our submission, by any great margin. Indeed, at the height of the catastrophe Earth's survival apparently came close to a situation best described as 'touch and go'.

As it was, Earth sustained fearful crustal damage during its encounter with Phaeton, and acquired an almost completely rearranged topography. The former disposition of land and sea was changed, a new world mountain system came into being, the number of active volcanoes was augmented enormously, a legacy of seismic activity was bequeathed which is far from over, a new land drainage pattern was instituted, and completely different oceanic and atmospheric circulatory regimes were established. While it is hardly necessary to reiterate the extreme youthfulness of these environmental components, we should stress that from what is known of geophysics and the theoretical interplay of two or more similar-sized confronting celestial bodies, all such planetary changes are *exactly* what could be expected to occur. Gold[50], Warlow[51] and Sagan[52], to mention just three, have all surmised as much.

A look now at some modern instances of horrendous crustal effects will enable us to better glimpse the sheer enormity and extent of the changes wrought during Phaeton's visit. Even these examples are necessarily pale echoes of those immeasurably greater and still more violent earlier analogies. Earthquakes, volcanic eruptions, tidal waves (tsunamis), mud-slides, avalanches, dust clouds, and various ejecta, will be among those examined. This evidence, when magnified to the probable scale and intensity of the equivalent events during the Phaeton disaster, is as sobering as it is awesome, and conjures up mental images from which, even today, thousands of years later, the mind recoils numbed and appalled.

Of the many terrible earthquakes that have occurred at intervals within living memory – among which those of San Francisco, Quetta, Agadir and several in Turkey instantly spring to mind – probably none was more severe than that which, just before noon on 1st September 1923, struck the twin Japanese cities of Tokyo and Yokohama. In the present context this was an unusually instructive event because it also involved a retreat of the sea, a gigantic tidal wave, a landslide, a tremendous rocky avalanche and a terrible fire. The full extent of the destruction meted out by these agencies did not become apparent until the completion some while later of official Japanese enquiries, which disclosed truly horrific details.

The following statistics suffice to convey the scale of that disaster. In Tokyo destruction was incredibly rapid everywhere. Four-storey concrete buildings disintegrated 'in the flash of an eye', tiles cascading with precipitous speed from roofs. Fires broke out all over the place – 252 in all, of which only 40 were contained or extinguished – and 71% of the city, or some 366,262 houses, was incinerated. Neighbouring Yokohama was eventually completely gutted by fire within twelve hours. No fewer than 38,015 human victims of the holocaust were finally counted, many of them having died of heat suffocation.

Around Sagami Bay, the final figures of casualties from fire, earthquake and tidal wave was 99,333 killed, 43,476 missing and 103,733 injured. Of buildings, 128,266 had totally collapsed, 126,233 had half-collapsed or suffered irreparable damage, 447,128 had burned down and 868 had been demolished or swept away by the tidal wave. The overall total of destroyed buildings was 576,262[53].

The avalanche, beginning on the 3,000ft (923m) high peak of Mt Hiziridake, just over 4 miles (6.4km) inland, consisted of a wall of dirt and rocks which roared across the country obliterating everything in its headlong rush towards the sea, at a speed subsequently calculated to have been approximately a mile-a-minute (95kph). The speed and volume was attested by the debris it deposited along the valley slopes forming its route, at heights exceeding several hundred feet as it rounded curves in its course[54].

From just this one terrifying event, 718 aftershocks occurred in September, 96 in October, 86 in November, 139 in December, and 167 in January 1924[55]. How much worse and globally more numerous must have been the aftershocks following the departure of Phaeton?

Probably the most notorious earthquake recorded since modern archives began was that which devastated Lisbon on November 1st 1755. It was so powerful that it was also clearly felt in Morocco and Algeria 1,000 miles (1,600km) or so to the south. Between eight and ten thousand people, together with their cattle, camels, horses and other animals, were swallowed up by abysses which closed over them again, the ground presenting the same surface appearance as it had before the dreadful event[56].

Often more destructive than earthquakes are the subsidiary catastrophes accompanying them. Those must have been *common* at the time of and immediately following the Phaeton disaster.

In the celebrated earthquake of 1811 at New Madrid in Missouri, for example, entire islands disappeared in the Mississippi River and local flooding caused great loss of life[57].

Certainly, the burial of some 25,000 people by the Huascaran avalanche, caused by seismic activity in the Yungay and Ranrahirca region of Peru on May 31st 1970[58] falls into this category. This avalanche poured down the valley at no less than 200mph (320kph)! Its motion resembled a great wave, and, in the words of one nearby observer: "The crest of the wave had a curl like a huge breaker coming in from the ocean. I estimated the wave to be at least 80m (160ft) high"[59]. At some places it buried the valley with debris to a depth of 260ft (80m), and transported huge boulders, some as large as 19.5 cubic yards (15 cubic metres), long distances before dumping them at all sorts of locations.

A comparable landslide of 1,300 million cubic yards (1,000 cubic metres) occurred at Mayunmarca, also in Peru, in 1974. In only 4 minutes it descended a vertical distance of 4,800ft (1,500m) at a speed of 75–87mph (120–140kph) and was completely irresistible[60].

The volume of material moved by landslides is sometimes awesomely great. At Frank, in Alberta, for example, one such slide involved approximately 39,650,000 cubic yards (30,500,000 cubic metres) of rock[61]. Last century, a land-slip at Gohna, in Himalayan India, involved the 4,000ft (1,230m) vertical descent of so much rock debris that it piled up *in moments to a height of 800ft* (246m) and completely blocked the local river. The force carried debris half way up – 2,000ft (615m) – the opposite side of the valley and hurled large boulders a mile or more away. So much dust rose into the air that the district remained darkened for several days[62].

Such instances graphically illustrate how giant rock-slides and avalanches occurring on a global scale during the Phaeton disaster could have obliterated and buried extensive areas of the pre-catastrophic landscape, and how much of this material – subsequently rearranged by the Deluge waters following closely upon its dislodgement – has been recorded as 'drift' filling up entire valleys.

Submarine earthquakes, such as must have undoubtedly occurred during Phaeton's visit, also often generate highly destructive subsidiary calamities. Tsunamis (tidal waves – a Japanese term) are among the worst and commonest of these, and can be up to 500 miles (800km) long. In the ocean itself, the waves may be only a few feet high, but on reaching coastal margins sometimes attain enormous heights. One recorded in 1737 at Cape Lopotka, Kamchatka, was as much as 210ft (65m) high. Still larger ones have been reported, and wave speeds of between 300 and 500mph (480–900kph) are known, with water pressures reaching 800lbs per square foot. The velocity of the falling crest of a wave combined with the speed of advance reaches 49 tonnes per square yard for a wave only 30ft (9m) high[63], so we can only imagine the pressure exerted by the largest modern waves or by those occurring during the Phaeton disaster.

Their capacity to devastate must have been tremendous when we consider that a tsunami caused by a submarine earthquake near the Tuscarora Deep south of Japan in June 1896 roared in from the sea as a 75–100ft (23–31m) high wave which engulfed whole villages and left no trace either of them or their inhabitants. In moments, 27,122 people were annihilated, thousands more injured, and 10,617 dwellings swept away[64].

Additional hazards accompanying earthquakes include emissions of natural gases, sulphurous odours and seepages of petroleum and bituminous substances[65]. Did we not read in Part Three of poisonous blasts and rivers and lakes of fire, as having been among the traumas which reportedly beset early humanity at the time of the Phaeton disaster? Gases and petroleum seepages would have afforded precisely these effects.

But earthquakes even of the magnitude just mentioned are hopelessly inadequate explanations for the collapse of ocean basins, the formation of rift valleys and fracture complexes of global extent. These are clearly the outcome of the more fundamental process of plate tectonics, which alone appears to be capable of dislocating the lithosphere. Infinitely larger and more dramatic than any produced by even the severest known earthquake, the results usually manifest themselves as enormous faults. They are the true lines of Earth fracture.

Arguably the most famous example is the San Andreas fault in California (fig 5.7), but others equally representative are known from every continent. All usually occur as scarp faces separating faulted blocks of land (tectonic plates), the scarps often rising, sometimes vertically, high above the surrounding countryside. A splendid instance is the nearly straight fault bordering Lake Mobutu Sese Seko (Albert) in Uganda, the scarp face towering to a height of almost 975ft (300m) and evincing every sign of being geologically very youthful (fig 5.8).

As previously noted, these rock faults accompanied the widespread orogeny of 'late Pleistocene' times. The San Andreas fault, for example, is associated with the latest uprise of the Sierra Nevada range, while another of still greater dimensions (the Indo-Gangetic trough), has long been associated with the elevation of the Himalayas[66]. This latter is actually a gigantic crack, now largely in-filled with alluvial deposits, stretching more or less uninterruptedly from Sumatra, round the Arrakan coast, across northern India and through the Persian Gulf to the Mediterranean[67].

It is parallelled further north by another crack marking the centre line of a succession of mountains running from south Asia, through Asia Minor and the Balkans to the Alps[68]. It is now filled with serpentine, a rare deep-seated rock, which must have welled up from immense depths. Both cracks are connected with the latest uprise of the Alps and with the formation of the Mediterranean basin occasioned by the collapse of the old Tyrrhenian continent.

Interestingly, Burrard, a former surveyor-general of India, concluded that the uprise of the Himalayas and the associated crustal fractures resulted from a deceleration of Earth's rotation, and that:

> It looks as if our Earth had in the distant past received a tremendous blow from outside...[69]

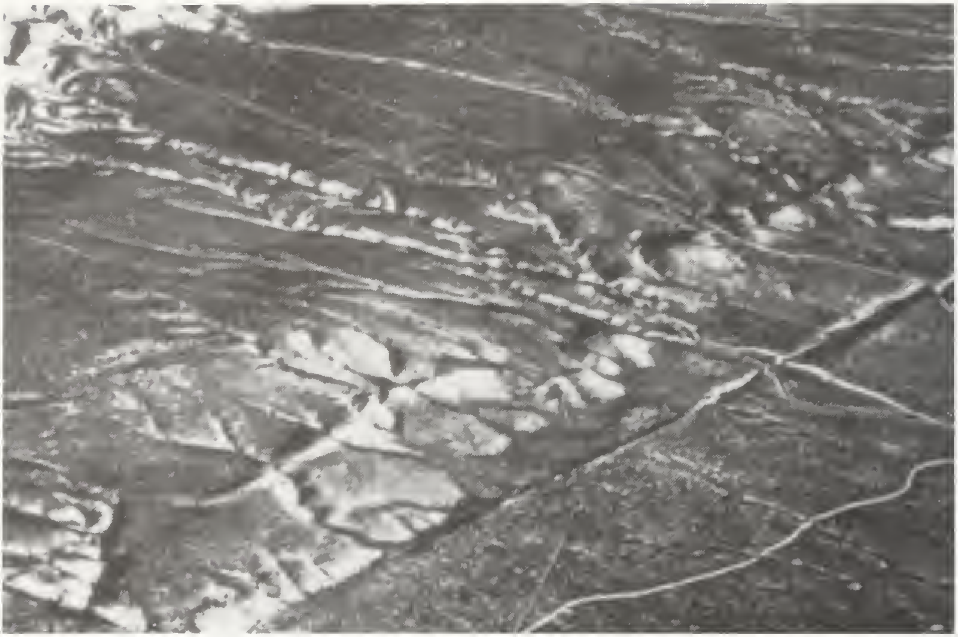

Fig 5.7. The San Andreas crustal fault in California. *Photo: W A Garnett, California.*

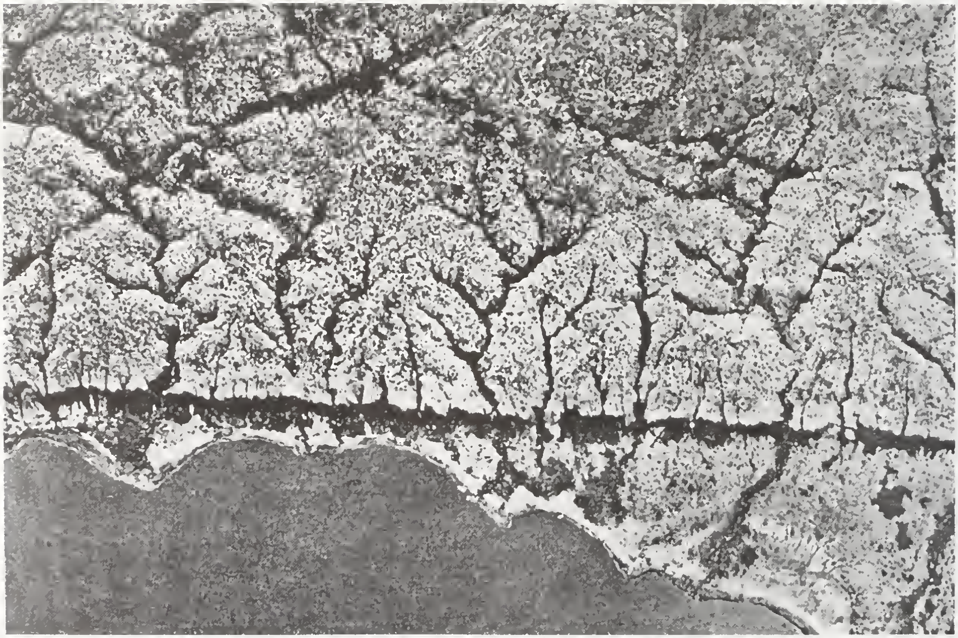

Fig 5.8. The fault bordering on Lake Mobutu Sese Seko, Uganda. *By permission of David & Charles, Newton Abbot.*

Obviously Burrard envisaged a celestial force, although he failed to specify its identity. In our submission, Burrard's 'blow' was administered by Phaeton, although we do not consider that actual physical contact occurred between that object and Earth. The electromagnetic, thermal and gravitational interplay between the two bodies sufficed at the time to fracture the terrestrial crust in the manner now discernible.

Using varied material, Mantura[70] and others have recently questioned the validity of the currently-fashionable theory of continental drift. Others, like Oppenheim, have concluded that, as presently advocated, the concept is grossly oversimplified and that the key to its understanding lies in the pattern of global crustal fracture zones. As Oppenheim said:

> This pattern... would suggest that expansion of the Earth's crust has taken place[71].

Vast amounts of thermal energy could achieve such expansion. As the great majority of these fractures are demonstrably young features and an exceptionally powerful geomagnetic reversal (over 100 times stronger than terrestrial mechanisms could produce) occurred approximately 11,500 years BP, when the Phaeton disaster took place, so much thermal energy was seemingly generated that expansion of the underlying magma resulted in Earth's crust literally *cracking apart* like the shell of an overheated egg.

If true, this may even have distorted the geoidal shape. Very significantly, Taira[72] has suggested that such a geoidal distortion accompanied severe vulcanism in eastern Asia coincidentally with the onset of cold (glacial) conditions at the beginning of Holocene times (*ie*, immediately after the Phaeton event). In all probability the difference between 'during' and 'immediately after' is illusory.

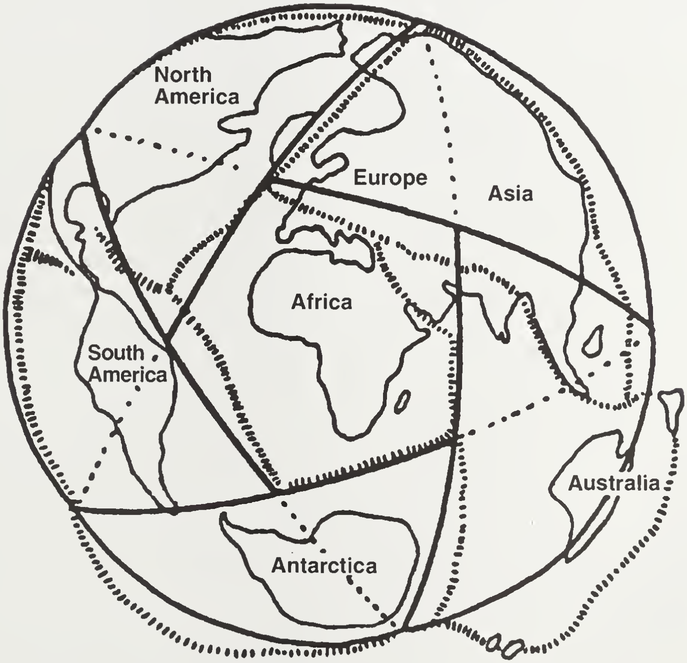

Fig 5.9. Major tectonic plates of the Earth (broken lines) compared with a projection of a regular icosahedron (solid lines) on an azimuthal equidistant projection *(after Spilhaus)*.

Mantura, moreover, has argued that the curious shapes of the major tectonic plates – produced by crustal fracturing – show the theory of continental drift to be false, while Spilhaus has demonstrated that the shapes of the plates and the triple points formed where the plates naturally meet coincide very closely with the vertices of an icosahedron (fig 5.9). He added:

> Triple points are important, such as the cracks in Pangaea [the original tectonic plate which split into present continental plates], which typify what happens in a *homogeneous material that is uniformly stressed.*[73] (Our italics)

Recent explorations in Arizona have highlighted puzzling seismic data from levels deep in the continental crust. These concern the *homogeneity* of miles-thick sheets of crystalline rock, which have been *forcibly pushed* hundreds of miles over *younger* sedimentary deposits. Similar homogeneous sheets, up to 61 miles (10km) thick, have also been noted in the southern Appalachians, where they have been moved bodily westward by as much as 140 miles (225km), while in Utah another almost identical example has apparently been *pulled down* a vast inclined fault[74]. In every case, the sheets appear to have slid while molten over the strata now underlying them – yet, in doing so, they remained intact, a seemingly impossible but nevertheless real effect.

A *uniformly exerted stress* would be one method by which this remarkable result could be achieved. Certainly the thermal energy unleashed by these events must have been appalling. These details, coupled with Spilhaus' observation on what happens to uniformly stressed homogeneous rocks, provide sobering insights into both the linear and vertical extent of the crustal disturbances characterising Phaeton's visit. The lateral displacement of enormous pieces of Earth's crust has been noted in Part One, where we saw that, like other major mountain ranges, the Rockies were pushed many miles *over* adjacent strata.

In Nigeria, sets of uniformly straight parallel crustal fractures, each hundreds of miles long and aligned almost due north-south, have resulted from the application of a massive compressive stress. Investigators of these huge cracks actually suggested that their near-meridional orientation was due to a change in the speed of Earth's rotation, and that this was probably induced by a near-miss or the oblique impact of a cosmic body![75]. Although that proposed event supposedly occurred millions of years ago, considerable field evidence exists that these Nigerian fissures may really be geologically very recent. If so, the unspecified cosmic body just postulated could very well have been Phaeton.

Gigantic east-west crustal derangements reach great visual prominence in the Central American-Caribbean region and in eastern Indonesia. In the former region, these displacements occurred during late Quaternary times when colossal portions of the lithosphere slid past one another or *subducted*[76]. Directly associated with the Clarion fracture zone in the eastern Pacific[77], with the San Andreas fault in California and its southern extension in the Gulf of California[78], with the deep-sea trench off Guatemala and with the trans-Mexican volcanic belt[79], these upheavals were also connected further south with a similar belt of major tectonic collapse features which, in Guatemala and San Salvador, include the stunning Coatapepeque caldera and the Ilopango depression[80].

Indonesia virtually duplicates the Central American region just considered. There also an east-west crustal dislocation of surprising modernity and stupendous proportions is present. It profoundly affected the biology of the region as represented by Wallace's Line[81].

The sudden slowing of Earth's rotation, therefore, inevitably caused severe crustal fracturing worldwide. The continued rotation of the semi-fluid molten magma below Earth's halted or decelerated crust resulted in vastly increased thermal energy and, not improbably, in temporary geoidal deformation. In such circumstances the greatest stresses would mostly be experienced in tropical latitudes where both surface and subterranean magma speeds are naturally higher than in polar regions. The direction of such stresses would tend to override that of planetary rotation.

Lithospheric fracturing and the subduction and over-thrusting of crustal plates of the magnitude being contemplated would inevitably compress and buckle some portions of the terrestrial surface (causing the uprise of mountains and plateaux) while simultaneously stretching others to the point where massive crustal fracturing and collapse would occur. The African Rift Valley, the floor of the Atlantic either side of the mid-Atlantic ridge, the Mediterranean basin, the dropped ocean floor off Kamchatka, and the Turfan depression in central Asia, all appear to be examples of such crustal collapse, and geologically very recent ones at that.

5

FIRE-STORM

The ferocious magnetic storms in Earth's atmosphere coincident with the widespread drought and botanical desiccation which typified the terrible confrontation between Earth and Phaeton, allied to the furious winds generated by the braking of Earth's rotation and an attendant axial shift, quickly produced Fire-storm conditions.

Moreover, crustal sliding and disruption over magma intensely heated electromagnetically by a massive polarity reversal, together with concurrent volcanic eruptions and magmatic outpourings on a tremendous scale, increased global thermal levels catastrophically. Tinder-dry grasslands and forests (often of resinous timber) perished in frightful holocausts. Water temperatures rose, and rivers, lakes and even seas eventually began to steam and boil. As conditions progressively deteriorated, metalliferous veins in surface strata, often acting as natural lightning conductors, began to melt or fuse, with the softer ores (*eg*, lead, tin and gold) liquefying quickest and finding their way into rock fissures and other cavities. The presence of iron ore and other metals in several bone-fissures was noted in Part Two. Evidence for all these and the following effects of great heat and rampant fire at the close of so-called 'Pleistocene' times abounds on almost every continent.

Near-endless torrents of hot volcanic ejecta rained down upon huge areas; immense clouds of inflammable gases escaping from seismic fissures and volcanic vents rolled over the terrain, bursting into flame or, as *nuées ardentes*, buoying up enormous boulders and other debris for long distances before depositing them at all sorts of locations; exploding gases and other volcanic substances created blast effects of appalling severity, and high pressure jets of grit-charged steam and heated water carved out, striated or drastically altered local topography.

In other regions, avalanches of boiling mud, spewing out of vents and chasms, compounded the unbridled chaos. These overwhelmed whole forests, filled up entire valleys, buried rivers and small lakes, scored rock surfaces and transported sizable boulders many miles from their original sources. In short, the terrible world conflagration of universal tradition had begun.

The traditional recollections of this holocaust are frequently most graphic, and often contain interesting supplementary information about it. They show that nothing remotely resembling this conflagration has been experienced by present-day humanity. Even the severest modern volcanic outpourings or forest fires fall very short of what clearly took place then.

Nevertheless, as the following examples clearly indicate, even these disturbances furnish valuable insights into what must have happened on an immeasurably greater scale during Phaeton's visit.

Today, approximately 500 terrestrial volcanoes are considered to be active or dormant[82] (potentially active). The number of extinct cones, however, greatly exceeds this – and when one contemplates that many presently extinct volcanoes were active a mere thousand years ago, the rate of extinction, even if only approximately constant over the last 11,500 years, indicates that volcanic activity around that date was severe. Indeed, the volcanic record confirms this, for literally thousands of volcanoes were active during and immediately following Phaeton's visit (see table 5A). Little imagination is needed to visualise the colossal volume of 'hot' volcanic material – lava, mud, ashes, dust, gases, steam, smoke, *etc* – ejected then. The following modern reports and observations clearly reveal that it cannot have been otherwise.

Observations of geologically recent vulcanism encountered in Mato Grosso, Brazil, by Savage-Landor in 1912 concerned volcanic lapilli (stone fragments), ashes and cinders which had buried whole valleys. Large portions of sizable hills had blown up or collapsed. Huge subterranean volcanic cauldrons and gigantic wall-like volcanic dykes were encountered. Blue, black and red baked rocks abounded. Craters of every size were seen. Great expanses of pulverised and carbonated rock were traversed and observations made of extensive beds of cinders and ashes up to 40ft (12m) deep. Numerous large fissures and cracks, very significantly aligned north-west to south-east, had riven surface strata throughout the region[83]. Near the Capim Branco basin, gigantic solidified 'waves' of once molten lava were found. They had formerly been flowing across the landscape as a vast fiery avalanche like, but infinitely greater than, known modern equivalents. One of the 'waves' had been arrested in mid-motion, its upper portion hanging like a magnified crest of a breaking sea wave[84].

Although the heat emitted by such vulcanism must have been indescribable, it still pales alongside that which must have accompanied the stupendous basaltic outpourings. The temperature of a fire fountain (like that in fig 5.10) repeatedly measured on December 5th 1959 in Hawaii was consistently above 2050°F (1120°C), and actually reached 2200°F (1200°C) on one occasion[85]. The largest fire fountains, incidentally, have been known to spurt upwards by as much as 1,000ft (308m)[86]. Fire fountains having similar temperatures must have been common in these gigantic volcanic eruptions of the past.

Like many of their modern analogues, these outpourings almost certainly occurred with devastating violence and rapidity. Lava ejected by Mauna Loa on Hawaii in 1855, for instance, moved at over 40mph (64kph), while, during the eruption of the Japanese volcano Bandai in 1888, one of its four peaks was blown off and almost three billion tonnes of material were hurled skywards within just a few minutes. Many of the 'late Pleistocene' volcanoes must have acted with similar speed and violence.

Even in modern eruptions, the volume of ejected matter is frequently immense. In December 1959, for example, the volcano Kilauea Iki on Hawaii at first spewed out lava at the enormous rate of 470,000 cubic yards (357,200m^2) per hour, later increasing this to 1,400,000 cu yds (1,064,000m^3) per hour[87]. A still higher *hourly* rate – 5,000,000 cu yds (3,800,000m^3), or approximately 2,500,000 tonnes – was attained by the volcano Mauna Loa in 1887[88].

Most popular and general scientific surveys of vulcanism refer to the tremendous volcanic explosions of Krakatau in August 1883 and Mt Pelée in May 1902, while in our own day accounts of the huge eruption of Mt St Helens in May 1980 have been published at all levels. These three events – of which the first two are classics – have furnished abundant data about important subsidiary phenomena respecting rock striations and huge displaced boulders. Fuller consideration of these is therefore especially instructive.

Krakatau is a small volcanic island in the Sunda Strait separating Java and Sumatra which, on August 26th 1883, erupted so loudly that it was audible 150 miles (240km) away.

The whole night long Krakatau belched thick black smoke which, rent by *continuous lightning flashes*, eventually soared to a height of 87,750ft (27,000m).

At approximately 10.00am the following day, however, there occurred the most violent natural disaster of modern times. Krakatau literally exploded with a thunderous roar which was heard in Ceylon (Sri Lanka), the Philippines and Japan, over 3,000 miles (4,000km) away. Masses of rock measuring 5,200ft (1,600m) were flung as far distant as 100 miles (160km), and its shock waves were registered by barographs all over the world. A tidal wave 32.5ft (10m) high rushed out from the island at the incredible speed of 350mph (560kph) in all directions, reaching a height of 120ft (36m). It swamped Javanese and Sumatran settlements, in a matter of minutes completely demolishing 295 towns and villages, and partially devastating 132 others. At least 5,000 ships and boats were wrecked, or carried, toy-like, far inland. Acting in unison, blast and tidal wave killed some 36,000 people and numberless animals and plants almost instantly, while many others were badly injured. The wave itself was distinctly felt at places as distant as Port Elizabeth in South Africa and, as an abnormal swell, in the English Channel[89].

Enormous quantities of ejected ash and dust were blown far and wide. Regions up to 275 miles (440km) away were plunged into *total* darkness: 130 miles (208km) away the darkness continued unnaturally for 24 hours, and 50 miles (80km) away for as long as 57 hours. In the immediate neighbourhood of Krakatau it persisted for three days and was so thick that nobody could see their hand before their face[90]. 'Collapsed Sky' conditions had been produced. Dust from the explosion actually fell on ships 1,600 miles (2,560km) away, and for years remained suspended in the upper atmosphere causing spectacular sunsets. Pumice (light bubbly volcanic rock) thickly covered the sea all round Krakatau, and ships visiting the area shortly afterwards reported how they had to plough their way through 10ft (3m) thick layers of it.

Fig 5.10. A fire-fountain.

Innumerable tree trunks and animal and human corpses were embedded in it – a dismal and sobering sight[91].

It has been estimated that the main Krakatau explosion released energy in the order of 7.2×10^{22} ergs (72 followed by 21 zeros), which is equivalent to that produced by an atom bomb of about 1.8 megatons[92].

Hardly less traumatic, and in some ways worse, was the appalling volcanic cataclysm involving Mt Pelée at the north tip of the island of Martinique, on Thursday 8th May 1902. Shortly before 8.00am that day, when 28,000 inhabitants of Saint Pierre nestling at the foot of Mt Pelée's southern slope were just starting another day, and the harbour of this coastal town was full of shipping, Mt Pelée erupted with incredible violence. Initially, only minor explosions shook the volcano, which threw mud and rocks about and rained heavy ash falls over the surrounding countryside[93]. Later repeated blasts of gas and superheated steam shot with frightful intensity through fissures in the volcano's flanks:

> ...carrying with them vast quantities of glowing ash and blocks. So voluminous were these ejecta that they fell at once on the adjacent slopes, then raced down the mountain sides at hurricane speeds. Some of these glowing avalanches were observed to move at rates of more than 100 miles an hour. One overwhelmed the town of Saint Pierre *in an instant*, killing all but one of its 28,000 inhabitants.[94] (Our italics).

The lone survivor was a prisoner in a local jail! Almost everyone aboard the vessels in the harbour was similarly annihilated *in a flash*[95], a mere 25 (out of a crew of 68) surviving on the steamer *Roraima*. Their collected depositions revealed that Mt Pelée had blown to pieces soon after 7.45am. One side of the volcano had been ripped out completely, and a solid wall of flame had hurtled out at horrifying speed with a noise compared to thousands of simultaneously discharging cannon. A veritable fire-hurricane, it careered down the mountain and across Saint Pierre and its harbour. Saint Pierre was destroyed in an instant, leaving it singularly like the incinerated cities of Nagasaki and Hiroshima in World War II (fig 5.11). On reaching the harbour, the fire-wave caused the sea to boil and seethe and send up vast clouds of steam, as coincidentally it burnt off masts and funnels of anchored ships. Indeed, *Roraima*'s masts and smokestack looked as though they had been "cut by a knife"[96].

Other recorded effects included the ejection of huge blocks of andesitic lava – some 15ft (4.6m) long[97], and one 30x24x22ft (9x7x7m)[98] – flung as far as Sèche-Blanche plateau 3 miles (4.8km) distant. Elsewhere, a bluff near Mt Pelée exhibited surface striations caused by sand-blast action which were practically indistinguishable from so-called 'glacial' striae[99], while at Grande Rivière an extensive boulder-field formed by high speed mud-torrents was found. Alleged glacial boulder-fields are often very similar (figs 5.12, 5.13), while, as we have seen, mud-slides sometimes produce rock striations[100] as well as transporting large rocks appreciable distances[101].

Medical examination of the grotesque injuries on the dead were also instructive:

> In many instances the actual cause of death probably was the inhaling of the very hot gas. The bodies were intensely burned, as also were those of the survivors. Many were stripped of clothing by the force of the blast; but others remained clothed and the clothing was not ignited, even though the body beneath it was severely burned. Body tissue was distended, and in many instances skull sutures had been opened up. The injuries were such as would result from sudden heat intense enough to turn water in human tissue into steam, but not high enough or of long enough duration to raise fabrics to kindling temperature.[102].

Though grisly, these details instantly recall the state of some of the animal remains excavated from several of the aforementioned bone-caves, and the Zuni legend describing how, at the time of Phaeton's visit, searing blasts heated the blood of huddling animals to the point where it gushed out of their bodies. Coincidences?

Just one day earlier, La Soufrière on the island of St Vincent had also erupted. While not as devastating as the Martinique explosion, that of La Soufrière was nevertheless violent and cataclysmic. It included a tremendous volcanic blast which felled and debarked numberless trees, and a rain of ashes so immense that it filled a local gorge to a depth of 200ft (61.5m). Sand-blasted trees, resembling some found in 'drift' gravels elsewhere, were among its other victims[103].

When Mt Pelée erupted again between 1929 and 1932, geological teams rushed to Martinique to study how some of the scientifically unobserved 1902 effects had been achieved. Interesting discoveries resulted. Enormous lava boulders were found 3 miles (5km) from the main crater, not flung there by blast or transported by mud-torrents, but carried aerially by *nuées ardentes* – gas-charged vapour emitted explosively from the volcano. Perret described the process as follows:

> At the moment of explosion liquid masses of lava, instead of being hurled high into the air to form bombs, are converted more or less completely into ash by the rapid discharge of gas, and with the ash are carried along ejectamenta of all sizes: blocks, boulders... highly heated but not fused. Of such materials are the *nuées ardentes* composed, and no matter how heterogeneous in size they may be, all are derived from the same mass of lava... The vapour density about the separate particles is so great that blocks and boulders... are buoyed up and carried forward like corks.[104].

The force and velocity of these *nuées ardentes* were frequently so great that, not only did they carbonise trees, but underlying rock surfaces were scarified (incised or stripped) and striated very much in the manner of alleged glacial action. Such effects were noticed at several places, especially at the base of Morne Lénard near Mt Pelée. The close similarities between striations of volcanic and supposed glacial origin was noticed as long ago as 1909, when it was established that, given sufficient power and speed, grit-charged volcanic steam could

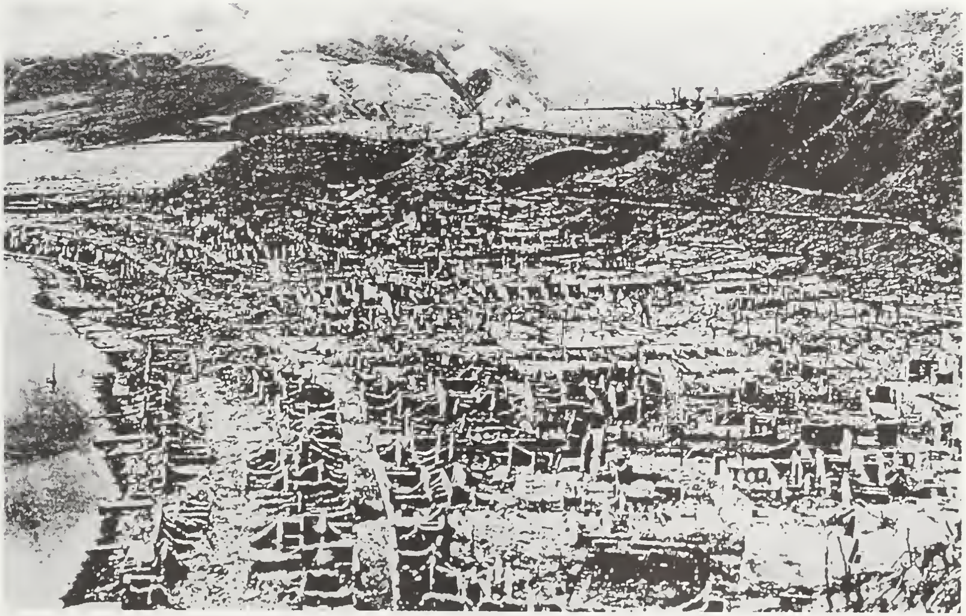

Fig 5.11. Saint Pierre, Martinique, shortly after the Mont Pelée fire-hurricane had devastated it on May 8th 1902. *Photo: Brown Brothers, Sterling, Pennsylvania, by permission.*

quickly excavate U-shaped valleys in *solid* rock. One such valley was cut by this process during the 1902 eruption of Mt Pelée[105].

On December 4th 1951, Hibokhibok volcano in the Philippines duplicated Mt Pelée's 1902 performance on a somewhat smaller but still catastrophic scale. A mighty explosion released a gigantic avalanche of red-hot lava enveloped in "writhing clouds of stifling gas and hot dust" which:

> ...swept silently and lethally over the villages just north of Mambajao and, in a few moments, took the lives of 500 persons. Houses were burned and bodies of persons and animals were charred and mummified. The blast accompanying the avalanche knocked down trees and aligned them parallel to the direction of movement of the avalanche. Three miles from the summit of the mountain the force of the blast was sufficient to wrap the *trunk* of a coconut tree 5in in diameter in the form of a U around the trunk of a big mango tree.[106] (Our italics).

The extraordinary effects of directed volcanic blast have also been noticed in Russia, particularly in connection with the eruption of Mt Shiveluch[107].

The recent Mt St Helens eruption provided further evidence of the near-instant devastation possible by just one large volcanic outburst. Exhaustively published elsewhere[108], the details need not be repeated here, although reference should certainly be made to the vast number of trees felled by incredibly powerful fast-moving blast clouds, and to the huge pyroclastic ash and mud-torrents enveloping enormous log jams "...that resemble those deposited by water". The resultant deposits with their woody contents are reminiscent of the Alaskan 'muck' beds and the Siberian 'wood hills' which contain trees like those carbonised by Mt Pelée.

These modern examples of vulcanism demonstrate that many, if not all, of the agents capable of causing phenomena supposedly typical of the alleged 'Pleistocene' glaciations are to be found in them. Superheated high-pressure steam and sand blasts, *nuées ardentes*

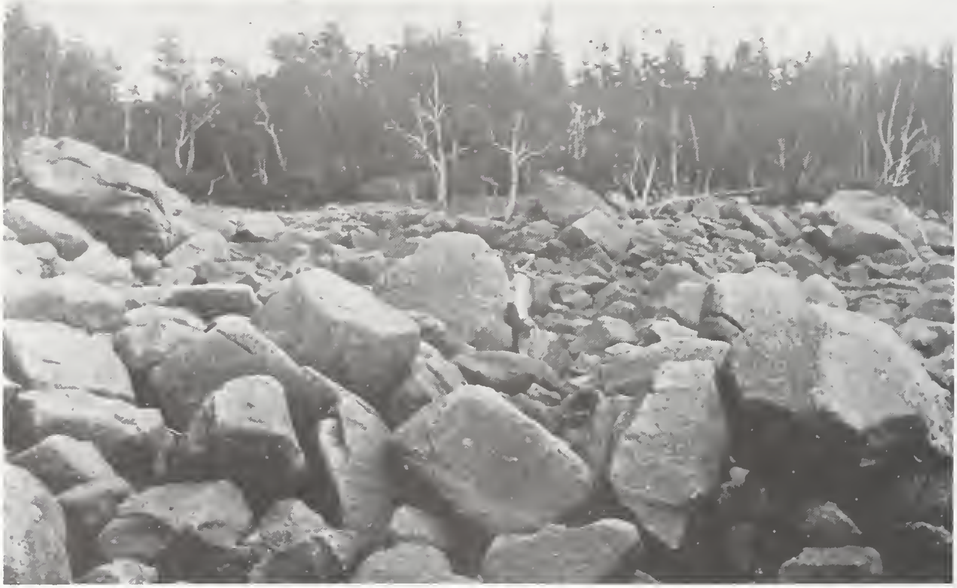

Fig 5.12. Alleged moraine at Bear-den, Maine. The size of the boulders is indicated by the human figure in the middle distance. This boulder field is essentially identical to those formed by flash-floods and mud-torrents. *By permission of the Geological Society of America, Bulletin, vol 11, 1900, and R S L, Oxford.*

and mud-torrents causing rock striations; mud-slides forming extensive boulder-fields; *nuées ardentes* and mud-flows transporting giant rocks long distances; high-velocity grit-charged steam carving out whole valleys; and fire-waves incinerating and debarking numberless trees, as in Alaska and Arctic Siberia. This, of course, does not imply that vulcanism was exclusively responsible for all the alleged 'Pleistocene' glacial effects.

Unquestionably various other agents also contributed to their generation. Nonetheless, considering the extent and severity of vulcanism at the end of so-called 'Pleistocene' times, and the apparent absence then of large scale ice action globally, it is more than probable that at least some alleged 'glacial' effects were due to volcanic agencies.

Numerous independent tribal recollections of a frightful world holocaust traditionally attributed to one or more cosmic agents were marshalled in Part Three. Very significantly, these memories are entirely consistent with the type of scenario which the volcanic and Earth fracture evidence just reviewed unmistakably suggests. Many accounts provide exceptionably graphic descriptions of a raging inferno. In the North American Wintun legend, for example, the hero, *Olelbis*, allegedly:

> ...looked down into the burning world. He could see nothing but waves of flame; rocks were burning, the ground was burning, everything was burning. Great rolls and piles of smoke were rising; fire flew up towards the sky in flames, in great sparks and brands... The great fire was blazing, roaring all over the earth, burning rocks, trees, people, burning everything...[109].

The Mbocobi tribe of South America recall that when the Sun once fell down from the sky it set the world alight in a "deluge of fire"[110]. The Norse *Voluspa* recounts how the cosmic assailant *Surt*: "...comes from the south with ...fire". In the stanza which describes earth sinking into the sea, it is said that "steam rages... fire shoots high to heaven itself..."[111].

Surt, who, with the Midgård Serpent and the Fenris-Wolf, figures prominently in the *Ragnarök* epic:

> ...remains (in the sky) to the last, to fling fire over the whole world, so that the race of men perishes with the gods, and all are finally engulfed in the overwhelming sea; the Sun becomes dark, Earth sinks in the sea, the shining stars slip out of the sky. Vapour and fire rage fiercely together, till the leaping flame licks heaven itself.[112].

Ovid, in his account of Phaeton's flight close to Earth, tells how Phaeton "...beholds the world set on fire *on all sides*..."[113] (our italics) and how, at that time, all the great rivers of the world either dried up or were turned to steam. The Washo Indians of California recollect a tremendous terrestrial convulsion which up-heaved whole mountain ranges in blazing fire, the flames rising to such heights that "...the stars of heaven melted and fell upon the Earth. Then the sierras rose up from the plain..."[114].

Closely similar events are mentioned in the Old German Apocalypse, the *Muspilli*, in its account of the reputed conflict between Elijah and Satan (Phaeton):

> ...the mountains begin to belch forth fire, no tree remains unscathed upon the land, the waters dry up, the sea disappears, the heavens begin to burn in a dull flame, the Moon falls, the Earth is on fire, no stone remains upon another.[115].

These are not simply memories of unusually severe vulcanism, although volcanic eruptions are featured, but accounts of infinitely worse conditions: occasions when yawning chasms in a fractured and dislocated lithosphere permitted stupendous volumes of molten magma to well up and overspread adjacent landscapes; when great portions of the Earth's crust buckled and folded amid fountains of fire and superheated steam as new mountain ranges were up-heaved and existing ones elevated still higher; and when other portions collapsed and fell away into fiery cauldrons of prodigious size. Accompanying such hellish events, fire, lava, cinders, ashes and gases shot skywards to immense heights in repeated explosions of unimaginable ferocity, transcending even those of Krakatau and Tambora. Many eruptions would have given the impression of reaching 'heaven itself'.

These recollections also plainly state that the entire world, not just some particular region, caught fire: "everything was burning", "fire on all sides", "roaring all over the earth", and so on. A universal conflagration, however, is precisely what would have occurred if the terrestrial crust was extensively fractured and buckled by an irresistible force; and only an external force could have achieved such disruption.

Still closer consideration of the thermal aspect of this disaster indicates the operation of yet another highly destructive agent – wind of super hurricane force. It was a major element in this appalling Fire-storm, and must now claim our attention.

6

HURRICANE

Inevitably, tremendous winds generated by the various factors discussed previously blew with mind-boggling force and velocity over much of the world. Even the worst modern typhoons, cyclones, hurricanes and tornadoes pale alongside the winds that must have been unleashed then. Their destructive power almost surpasses comprehension, and today they have no direct parallels. It is not, however, difficult to appreciate their effect upon the worldwide fires we have just been considering.

Here, we survey some of the yet extant data – physical and traditional – apparently relating to the former reality of these winds, and attempt to assess their significance during the Phaeton disaster.

We begin by recalling the remarkable accumulation of diverse avian species (birds) entombed in 'late Pleistocene' deposits in California, and the equally heterogeneous mass of plant and animal remains in the similarly-aged lignite beds at Geiseltal in Germany. These assemblages can only have been congregated at these places by furious winds or wildly surging water, or by both those agents acting in unison.

The destructive capacity of continuous winds has long been known, those laden with dust or grit being especially acute. Concerning the effects of sand-charged winds, Dana once remarked:

> The sands carried by winds when passing over rocks sometimes *wear them smooth*, or cover them with *scratches and furrows*, as observed by W P Blake on granite rocks at the Pass of San Bernardino, in California... Limestone was so much worn as to *look as if* the surface had been *removed by solution*. Similar effects have been observed by Winchell in the Grand Traverse region of Michigan...[116] (Our italics).

Almost all observers of 'drift' – that singular formation considered at length in Part One – have commented on its generally unstratified and chaotic appearance. Geikie spoke of it as having a "confused and tumultuous" appearance[117], adding that the intercalated beds in it:

> ...are twisted, bent, crumpled and confused *often in the wildest manner*. Layers of clay, sand and gravel... are puckered into folds and sharply curved into vertical positions. The intercalated beds are everywhere cut through by the overlying 'till', and... in the mass of the 'till' itself fossils sometimes, but very rarely, occur, and fragments of wood have from time to time been discov-

> ered. They almost invariably afford marks of having been subjected to the same action as the stones and bowlders by which they are surrounded.[118] (Our italics).

Only an agency operating indiscriminately and universally, or a combination of such agents acting coincidentally, could have produced results of this kind. Indeed, it was, as Dana once stated, a process which deposited the 'drift' "pell-mell"[119]. Its distribution is also peculiar, for, speaking of that portion of it known as 'boulder clay', another authority described how:

> The true bowlder-clay is spread out over the region... as a somewhat widely extended but uniform sheet, yet it may be said to fill up small valleys and depressions, and to be thin or absent on ridges or rising ground.[120]

This singular distribution is comparable to snow accumulations driven by high winds.

Many have admitted that the 'drift' was deposited under violent conditions which affected vast areas simultaneously[121]. Others, like Figuier[122], have recognised that the event was sudden and somehow connected with a change in the inclination of the Earth's axis[123] – by now an all too familiar theme. This violence of deposition, and its apparent similarity of operation over huge regions, not only explains the unstratified and tumultuous appearance of much of the 'drift', but is in direct contrast to the slow, if inexorable, action of ice to which its origin is usually ascribed. All-embracing agents capable of acting violently and suddenly are required to account for the observable phenomena. Only water and wind possess those capacities.

The 'boulder clay' was almost certainly viscous when first deposited. Prior to attaining that consistency, however, it had existed on the original land surface as sand and soil particles which, from the earliest stages of the catastrophe onwards, were frequently disturbed by lightning strikes and heavily augmented by prodigious falls of volcanic ash and dust produced by the ever-increasing vulcanism. Super-cyclonic winds subsequently whirled up all this material from the pre-catastrophic landscape, depositing it as a great dusty mantle over hill and dale alike. Shortly afterwards it was converted into a great muddy paste by the Deluge waters which redistributed it tumultuously where we now find it. As we shall soon see, the Deluge was not long in materialising and apparently commenced its activities well before the super-winds were eventually dissipated. It was the combination of water and wind which bodily moved the 'drift' across the convulsed landscape. That much of the 'drift' was deposited in this manner is indicated by the presence in it, in many places, of upright tree stumps with their roots still firmly embedded in the original soils underlying the 'drift'. These stumps protrude upwards into the basal layers of the 'drift'. Had ice deposited the 'drift', then these stumps would have been obliterated. They were not.

Thus, terrible winds, whistling round the world, swept up masses of loose surface material and fanned the conflagration already in progress as the result of plate tectonics and rampant vulcanism engendered by the rotational and axial changes. The results were horrendous.

It is scarcely surprising, therefore, that descriptions of these stupendous winds feature in the ancient recollections of almost every nation of consequence. It was a wind without parallel – and, because it occurred at the time of the cosmic assailant Phaeton, was accorded a cosmic origin. This notion of a 'cosmic' wind is reiterated again and again in the Persian *Avesta*[124], in the Hindu *Vedas*, in the Babylonian *Talmud*, and by many authors of antiquity. It was also known as the *'diluvium venti'* – the deluge of wind[125] – and was expressly attributed by the ancient Mesopotamians to Marduk (Phaeton) which is said to have:

> ...created the evil wind, and the tempest, and the hurricane, and the fourfold wind, and the sevenfold wind, and the whirlwind, and the wind which has no equal.[126].

In the Gilgamesh epic the duration of the wind is given as : "...six days and a night... the hurricane, deluge and tempest continued sweeping the land"[127]. The wind is described as a whirlwind or cyclone of unimaginable ferocity. We are told that: "The whirlwind of *Adad* swept up to heaven"[128], and was so awesome that even "The gods were terrified at the cyclone"[129].

Rabbinical records provide essentially the same information. They assert that the wind endured unabated for seven days and that it was accompanied by a darkness so intense that people did not stir from their homes and refuges during that period[130].

The pre-Columbian Maya records describe how these frightful winds demolished all towns, swept away whole forests, moved great rocks, and blew away entire hills[131], the latter, no doubt, being sand-hills or earthy mounds. The winds were regarded as the wrath of the Mayan god *Hurakan*, whose name, later corrupted to 'hurricane', was ever afterwards associated with winds of exceptional force and prolonged violence.

The Mayan claim that this super-cyclone moved giant rocks is, somewhat surprisingly, consistent with fact. Fig 5.14 shows one such rock which was *thrown up* a cliff about 39ft (12m) high and *carried* inland a further 97ft (30m), before being *turned upside down* by a hurricane which recently visited the east coast of Barbados[132]. Many further similar modern instances are known. Certainly large rocks can be, and are, moved by exceptional winds. Those comprising the '*diluvium venti*' were more than exceptional.

Maori traditions connect this dreadful aeolian derangement with a gigantic cataclysm which permanently submerged an ancestral Pacific homeland. These describe them as: "...the mighty winds, the fierce squalls, the clouds, dense, dark, fiery, wildly drifting, wildly bursting"[133], which swept away vast forests and lashed the ocean waters into mountain-high waves.

It scarcely needs emphasising that this '*diluvium venti*' created a tremendous din. Many traditions expressly refer to the appalling racket accompanying the Con-

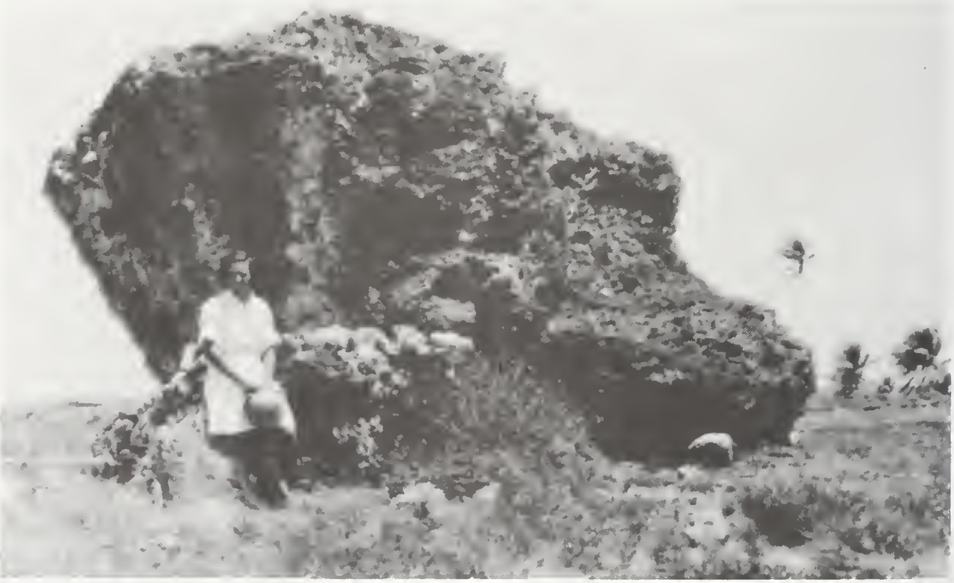

Fig 5.13. Large coral rock blown by a modern hurricane up a cliff and then inland, on eastern Barbados in the Windward Islands. *Photo: C T Trechman, in Principles of Geology by A Holmes, 1964, by permission of Van Nostrand Reinhold (UK) and R S L, Oxford.*

flagration and the Deluge. Much of it was caused by these winds. Interestingly, the native North Americans link the winds and the noise they made with a celestial monster (Phaeton) which passed across the heavens near Earth, with:

> ...a whistle in his mouth; as he moved forward he blew with all his might, and made a terrible noise... He came flowing and blowing; he looked like an enormous bat with wings spread.[134].

Marduk, which allegedly unleashed an 'evil wind' and 'fierce storm winds' to destroy Tiamat (see Part Four), evidently repeated the process when, in its guise as Phaeton, it confronted Earth at the time of the Noachian Deluge.

The absolute power of concentrated wind is often not sufficiently comprehended, especially in regions normally not experiencing it. It is, however, devastating. At Salt Creek, Iowa, for example, hurricane force winds on June 12th 1881 lifted cattle high into the air and flung them violently back onto the ground, killing them outright. Leaves on adjacent vegetation were withered as "by the heat of a fire". Simultaneously, stands of timber in Nevada were flattened and tree trunks hurled 500ft (153m) away, while a heavy goods train was blown off a nearby railroad track[135].

Regarding the unfortunate cattle of Salt Creek, one can appreciate how animals similarly exterminated during Phaeton's visit might be buried whole, their constituent bones broken or fractured internally but held in place by muscles, sinews and flesh externally; and how modern finds in 'drift' deposits of such bones with all the fragments still in relative position (but with the formerly surrounding flesh and soft tissues decayed away) perplex those still adhering to conventional 'Ice Age' concepts. In Part Two many such finds were noted, clearly indicating that whole animals had been interred coincidentally with the deposition of the 'drift'. Moreover, in view of the previously suggested aeolian involvement in the tumultuous deposition of the 'drift', it is not surprising that organic remains found in it were apparently subjected to the same action as the deposits enveloping them[136].

The Maori reference to 'fiery' winds seemingly alludes, at least in part, to airborne billows of ignited gases and a general fanning of the tremendous conflagration already raging then across much of the world. As we shall now see, it is a detail consistent with what must have happened at numerous localities.

Such huge fires – which at their height may have attained sub-continental extent – would themselves have created acute fire-storm conditions by sucking in air from surrounding regions on a retort basis. This is a well known aspect of particularly severe fires, and has been documented in connection with prairie fires, volcanic eruptions and giant fires in cities. A brief look at some of these provides telling glimpses of what occurred on Earth immediately before the onset of the Deluge.

Wind rushing in from all sides to fan 200ft (61.5m) high flames generated during a field fire at Stockbridge, Massachusetts, in 1783, were strong enough to lift large cut trees 50–60ft (15–18m) *above* the ground[137]. Other similar cases are known.

The bombing in World War II of Hamburg, Germany, on the night of July 27th 1943, led to an appalling fire-storm which raged on into the next day. Three years later exhaustive investigations pieced together the tragedy. Very dry weather conditions had preceded the bombing, and contributed greatly to the 'success' of the fire. The exceptional number of bombs dropped upon the city started so many fires simultaneously that a column of heated air, 11 miles (2.4km) in diameter and 21 miles (4km) high, formed above the centre of the fire[138]. Temperatures inside this fire area reached 800°C[139]. The water in the canals and port of Hamburg heated to the point where they were "hardly bearable"[140]. These details are strongly reminiscent of what occurred during Mt Pelée's 1902 destruction of Saint Pierre, when the fire-wave had melted glass (650–700°C) but not copper (1,058°C) and the harbour waters had boiled and steamed[141].

The Hamburg fires produced air turbulence fed by ground surface winds in-rushing from surrounding districts to replace those drawn up by the rising column of heated air. One and a half miles (2.4km) from the central fire area wind speeds varied from 11–33mph (18–53kph), whereas near the centre they reached typhoon strength, uprooted trees of all sizes and blew people off their feet. At first, the typhoon "...moved into the direction of the fires, later spreading in all directions"[142]. People perished not so much from exploding bombs or actual incineration but from the rapid loss or contamination of the atmosphere. Heat stroke, suffocation due to a lack of oxygen, carbon monoxide poisoning and inhalation of dust were among the causes established[143]. Unquestionably wind played the most critical role in this tragedy and, as the principal cause of atmospheric derangement and pollution, increased the final death toll far beyond that which could have been initially anticipated.

Almost precisely similar circumstances attended the even worse fire-storm that destroyed Chicago in 1871. Its horrors were carefully chronicled by Sheahan and Upton in their classic account of the event published within weeks of the calamity[144]. Although grim, their text sheds considerable light on the kind of fiery phenomena generated by Phaeton's visit. Tornado strength winds fanned the fire so fiercely that iron, granite, bricks and glass were melted and fused together in grotesque conglomerates, as if all had passed through a blast-furnace. Athens marble, which had been used to adorn certain city edifices, burned like common fuel[145]. The fire also doubled on its track at the Great Union Depot, and burned half a mile southward in the very teeth of the gale – a gale which blew a perfect tornado[146]. Another notable feature of this fire was its cleansing capacity:

> The most striking peculiarity of the fire was its intense heat. Nothing exposed to it escaped. Amid the hundreds of acres left bare there is not one to be found with a piece of wood of any description, and, unlike most fires, it left nothing half burned... The fire swept the streets of all the ordinary dust and rubbish, consuming it instantly.[147].

Sufficient data has been presented to show the devastating role of concentrated wind when combined with fire. On its own, fire is bad enough, and if winds are light or non-existent it can be contained. Accompanied by strong or gale force winds, however, fire becomes uncontrollable. It becomes rampant – wind exacerbates it. And when it attains the fury of a fire-storm, performs a remarkable cleansing role.

At this late date we can merely try to imagine what the great Conflagration of Phaeton's day must have been like. The mind almost refuses to accommodate all the interrelated relevant factors, while the sheer scale of it encourages the mind to recoil from a picture so terrifying as to be numbing. Frightful though they were, the Mt Pelée fire-wave, the Hamburg fire-storm, and the great Chicago fire were miniature events when compared with Phaeton's Conflagration. Whole continents were on fire with flames that we are told "reached to heaven". Certainly it was the worst holocaust ever experienced by humankind. And winds of staggering force and power were a part of it, just as they seem to have been during the Deluge which, following hard on the heels of the Conflagration, extinguished it.

7

BOMBARDMENT

It is surprising to discover on the gentle terrain of the Atlantic Coastal Plain, with no concealing cover or topography, one of the Earth's most immense, spectacular and intriguing topographical phenomena. Seen from the air the Carolina bays are an astounding, unforgettable revelation. But though hundreds of thousands lie clearly visible, scattered across the Atlantic Coastal Plain from Maryland into northern Florida, they are often all but unrecognisable to the uninitiated eyes of groundlings.[148].

So wrote Henry Savage jr in his recent study of these extraordinary ground features which, although most abundant near or along the Atlantic coast, also occur far inland[149]. They almost certainly occur, too, as submerged structures on the adjacent Atlantic continental shelf. The term 'Carolina Bays' is thus a misnomer: they are not bays and extend far beyond Carolina. First mentioned in 1847, when comparatively few were noted[150], the true distribution of these shallow crater-like depressions was not appreciated until the 1930s following the advent of aerial photography. Today about half a million 'bays', both complete and vestigial, have been recorded. Of these: "...140,000 are large-to-medium sized, having lengths of more than 500ft"[151]. Their shapes are also particularly intriguing, for:

> ...Although most bays approximate an elliptical shape, they vary greatly in ellipticity. Generally, the smaller the bay the more nearly round it becomes. Although there are numerous bays that are almost perfect ellipses, the variations from that geometrical perfection are many and diverse. Often bays are asymmetrical, their north-east sides being significantly more curved than their south-west sides... More frequent variations from elliptical perfection are the ovate bays. These egg-shaped bays likewise vary greatly among themselves, running the gamut from extremely elongated ones to some almost circular in shape. Among the ovate bays marked geographical correlations have been observed. As one moves south-westwardly from the South Carolina-North Carolina border bays tend to become increasingly ovate in shape. A similar tendency appears as one moves west across the coastal plain.[152]

Respecting their sizes and distribution:

> ...There are some immense bays such as Big Swamp Bay... in central South Carolina, nearly four miles long. In striking contrast some of its tiny neighbours are only three or four hundred feet long... Very large bays occur mostly in the area of bay concentration in south-east North Carolina and north-east South Carolina. They become markedly less frequent the farther they are from that region. So too does the rate of bay occurrence diminish, and when they do occur in the most distant areas they usually appear in groups widely separated from other groups.[153]

Although like several other authors Velikovsky boldly stated that: "...A remarkable feature of these depressions is their parallelism: the long axis of each of them extends from north-west to south-east..."[154]. This comment actually applies to comparatively few 'bays', since, overall, their alignment varies considerably and does so systematically on a geographical basis. For example:

> Bays in the area of the border between the Carolinas display a generally north-

> west/south-east orientation. However, as one moves up the coast there is a tendency for bays to become more and more easterly in orientation, until in Maryland they approach an east-west direction. Likewise, as one moves down the coastal plain the 'bays' long axes tend to rotate in a clockwise direction, until those found in south Georgia generally display an almost north-south orientation. A similar effect can be observed as one moves from east to west.[155].

The significance of this important fact, which clearly relates to the cause of the formation of the 'bays', will be discussed later. Various explanations for the formation of these curious structures have been proposed down the years. The earliest advocated a combination of artesian springs and wind action[156]. Another argued that the 'bays' possibly evolved from drowned valleys blocked by sandbars when the coastal plain hosting them emerged from the sea[157], while a third postulated that they possibly resulted from a process of natural solution of sandy sediments[158]. Studies of the 'bays' in the Carolinas suggested to Melton[159] and others[160] that they probably represented ancient meteor scars dating from 'late Pleistocene' ('Ice Age') times[161].

Other explanations involved supposed gyroscopic eddy effects[162], air shock waves generated by aerially-exploding meteors[163], giant prehistoric fish spawning-beds[164], the action of dust devils[165] and stranded icebergs[166].

Another hypothesis[167] suggested that the 'bays' were made by a comet which crashed into the eastern United States long ago. We now know, of course, that even large comets apparently lack sufficient mass to cause crustal damage like that represented by the 'Carolina bays'. More feasible, however, was the suggestion that the 'bays' were of meteoric origin[168], especially as magnetometer studies of them in North Carolina hinted that buried meteoritic debris existed in association with those structures. Previously it had been noted that unusually high concentrations of meteorites existed inland from the main 'bays' area (map 5C), and in 1952 this was stressed as good evidence of such an origin[169].

Yet whatever the cause of the formation of the 'bays', it must have been extensive, sudden and violent. Not long ago, the high probability of this came to light in a lengthy farm drainage trench dug near Camden, South Carolina, which, at an average depth of 14ft (4.3m), exposed masses of prostrate trees at its base. Many were of large size and all indicated the former occurrence of a sudden "massive blowdown"[170]. If the 'bays' *are* low-level aerial blast effects, then, granted that the ancient landscape was well forested, the occurrence of calamitously-felled timber in their immediate vicinity could not only be expected but would be consistent with such an explanation.

Interestingly, Henry Savage jr, the latest investigator of these 'bays', has also advocated a celestial cause for their origin, placing that event at the *end* of the 'mammoth' age ('late Pleistocene' times in conventional chronology), an age which, we have already seen, terminated abruptly and violently everywhere during Phaeton's visit. If the conclusions of Savage and others like him are correct, then the Carolina 'bays' might very well represent yet further physical reminders of the Phaeton disaster.

The likelihood that numerous similar 'bays' lie submerged on the continental shelf east of the Carolinas has encouraged investigations of what may be an immense impact crater on the floor of the Atlantic near Bermuda. A collision between Earth and a gigantic meteor has been suggested as the origin of this drowned feature, described by Kelly and Dachaille as follows:

> This great undersea crater has a rim that stretches for hundreds of miles in a great circle beginning at a point north and east of Puerto Rico and curving past the Bahamas, the Carolina coast, and north and east along the Atlantic coast until it loses itself in the deep ocean off the New England coast. There is a very sudden break, almost a cliff, where the continental shelf (crater rim) breaks off into the deep ocean. The Bahama Islands form the south wall of this crater. They rise only a few feet above sea level but they form an undersea cliff that is nearly 700 miles long. Between the Great Bahama Bank and the islands of Cuba and

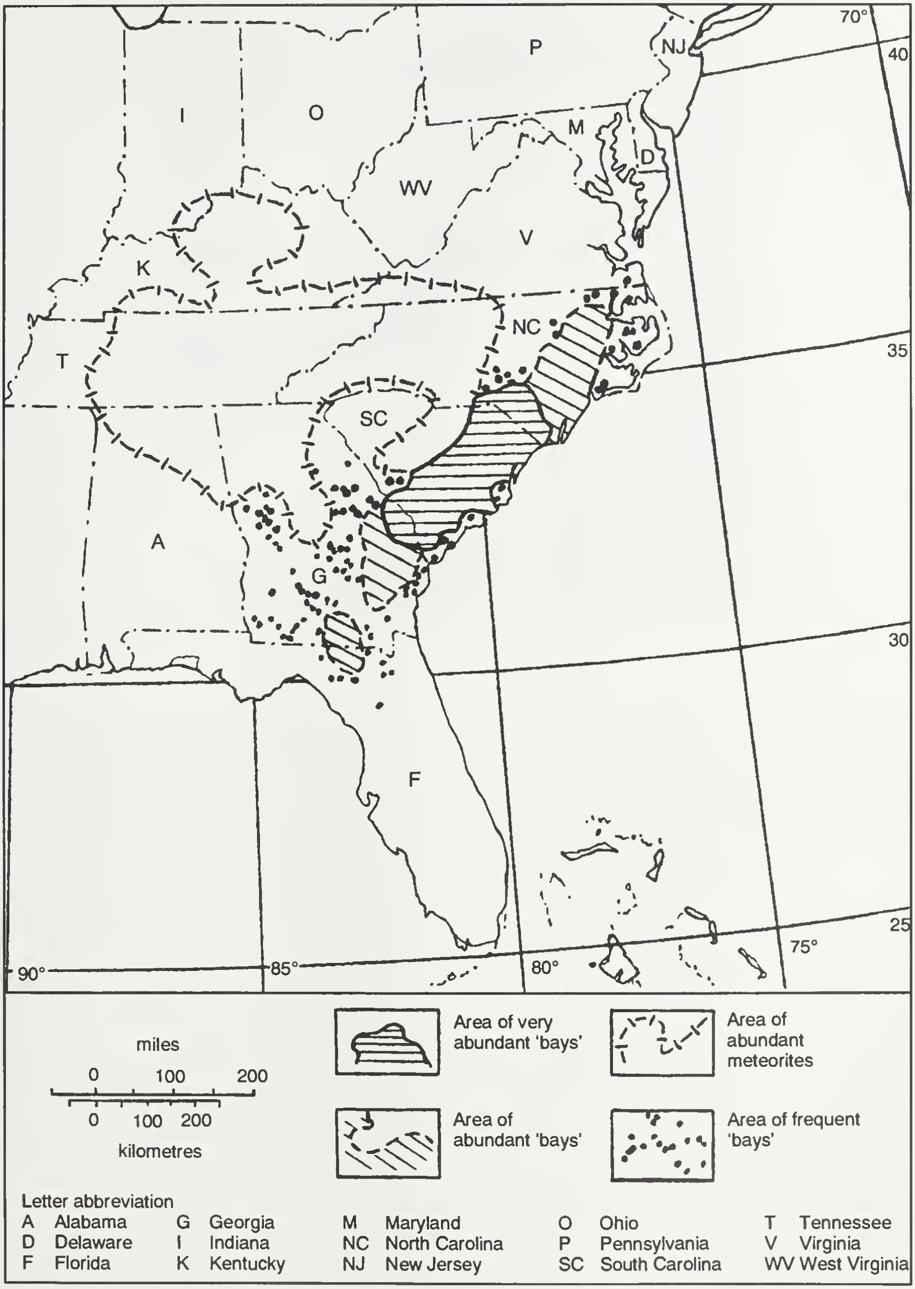
P
NJ
70°
40
I
O
M
D
WV
V
K
NC
35
T
SC
A
G
30
F
25
75°
90°
85°
80°
miles
0
100
200
0
100
200
kilometres
Area of very abundant 'bays'
Area of abundant meteorites
Area of abundant 'bays'
Area of frequent 'bays'
Letter abbreviation
A Alabama
D Delaware
F Florida
G Georgia
I Indiana
K Kentucky
M Maryland
NC North Carolina
NJ New Jersey
O Ohio
P Pennsylvania
SC South Carolina
T Tennessee
V Virginia
WV West Virginia

Map 5C. Areas of abundant meteorites and Carolina 'bays' in the eastern United States. *After Prouty, Johnson, Savage and other sources.*

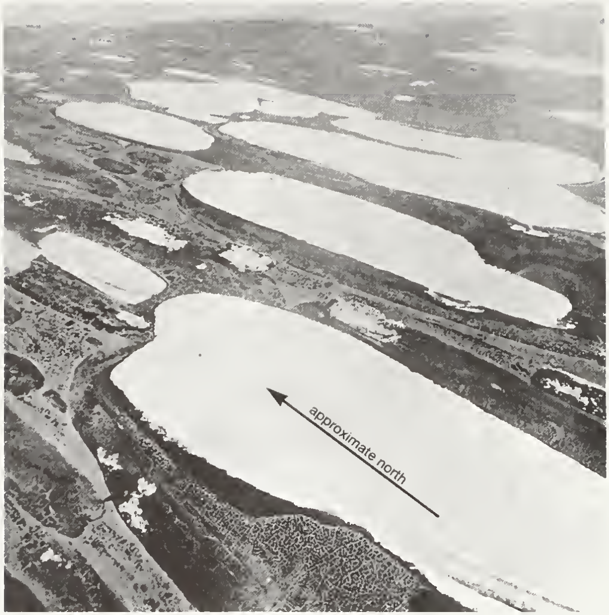

Fig 5.14. Aerial view of some of the oriented lakes near Point Barrow, Alaska. *With permission of the Univ of Chicago and R S L, Oxford.*

Haiti, there is a secondary channel that is nearly half as deep as the main crater basin. The islands of Cuba, Haiti and Puerto Rico are the mountains that form the remains of the outer crater rim, and the Brownson and Bartlett Deeps are the down-warped troughs that are common to many of the other great collision points that we shall mention later.

The floor of this great impact crater is also consistent with what might be expected. It slopes in every direction from the central peak (Bermuda) gradually growing deeper toward the rim, although it averages deeper on the south and south-west than it does on the north. It is somewhat ovoid in shape, being longer from north-east to south-west; the distance from Bermuda to Cape Hatteras being about 600 miles and from Bermuda to the Bahamas about 750 miles... The Bermuda central peak is surrounded on all sides by deep ocean, reaching a depth of 2,500 fathoms within a few miles from shore. From this point it gradually deepens outwardly in all directions for about 300 miles where it levels off and continues at about the same depth until it meets the sudden rise of the crater wall. This wall averages nearly 17,000ft and in places more than 18,000ft and this in a distance of no more than 15 or 20 miles. If one could remove the water and stand on the bottom of this crater one would look up at a mountain wall almost three times as high as the Grand Canyon is deep, and almost as steep. The deepest part of the crater lies at the end of the Bahama chain and athwart the Mona Passage between Haiti and Puerto Rico. This is the Brownson Deep which is 4,780 fathoms or 28,680ft. It is a comparatively narrow trench... and probably indicates a down-warping of the crust or an in-falling of molten magma at the time of the collision.[171].

As direct observations are inevitably limited, it is presently impossible to positively assert that the above structures do collectively represent an ancient impact crater. Nevertheless, the known physical evidence is decidedly thought-provoking, and it must be noteworthy that it is located eastward of the general area of the Carolina 'bays'. Furthermore, it would indeed be remarkable if entirely separate events, possibly spanning millions of years, contrived to place in such close geographical juxtaposition sets of major topographical features forming a seemingly natural west-to-east sequence – an area of prolific small meteorites progressing via abundant larger 'bays' to an immense crater-like structure – suggestive of one or more impacting cosmic bodies.

The Carolina 'bays', however, are not entirely unique. Similar concentrations of oriented shallow depressions ('lakes') exist on the Alaskan permafrost near Point Barrow – and, like their southern analogues, they are mostly aligned north-west to south-east. They also extend, or must have once extended, northwards across the floor of the Arctic Ocean.

Oval, elliptical, or greatly elongated in shape (no circular examples are known) they number many thousands and cover more than 25,000 sq miles (64,750km^2). In size, they range from 9 miles (14.4km) long and 3 miles (4.8km) wide to 1 mile (1.6km) or less long and 1 mile (0.8km) or less wide. Some are water-filled, but others are quite dry, the latter revealing that many depressions overlap upon one another and must have been created successively (see fig 5.15). Very interestingly, a 'late Pleistocene' or early Holocene date has been suggested for these features[172].

Early studies of these 'lakes' concluded that many, if not all of them, represented land surface 'cave-ins' resulting from the thawing of otherwise permanently frozen ground[173]. 'Caving', however, cannot produce extensive regional orientation or cause apparently newer 'lakes' to impinge on older (and presumably 'caved-in') 'lakes'. Only some aerial cause could produce such effects.

These 'lakes' bear close comparison not only with others in the Harrison Bay area of Alaska, where they are also aligned north-west to south-east[174], and on the Old Crow Plain (west of the Mackenzie Valley) in Yukon, Canada[175], but also with others believed to be of Quaternary age in the valleys of the Penzhina and Anadyr rivers in north-eastern Siberia[176]. These latter reportedly vary in diameter from several hundred feet to as much as 3 miles (5km), are generally oblong or elongated, and are remarkably shallow. Nor should we forget that, as previously remarked, shallow, swampy 'lakes' close to the north Siberian mammoth graveyards are stated to have been formed under exceptional circumstances.

Rather unexpectedly, a further group of over 200 shallow 'lakes', also generally aligned north-west to south-east, covers more than 45,000 sq miles (116,550km^2) of the Beni region of north-eastern Bolivia in South America. In size, they range from about 1,000ft square (307m^2) to 5.4 by 12.4 miles (8.6 x 20km). Again, some are water-filled, others are dry. Most exhibit rectilinear or oval shapes, although a few irregular shaped examples also exist. The oval 'lakes' are particularly noteworthy for having one rim more developed than the others, exactly as in many of the Carolina 'bays' and the Old Crow Plain 'lakes' (see table 5B), and, as with many of those structures, also lack stream inlets or outlets[177].

The arguments advanced to account for the Carolina 'bays', and the oriented 'lakes' of Canada, Alaska and Siberia, which call for ice, 'cave-ins', or the collapse of portions of ancient buried valleys, scarcely apply in tropical Bolivia, yet, the South American examples are seemingly explicable by a single event responsible for *all* these remarkable geographically scattered features.

Oval crater-like ground structures, closely resembling th Carolina 'bays' also exist in the Netherlands, where they are, however, far less obvious than their American counterparts through having been largely obscured by agricultural and constructional activities[178]. Significantly, many erratic boulders composed of rocks not now found closer than Finland and Scandinavia occur near these depressions, the long axes of which, moreover, are predominantly north-northwest to south-southeast.

At Tapanui, north of Invercargill at the south-eastern end of South Island, New Zealand, an extensive, largely triangular area is notable for yielding unusual quantities of small metallic fragments and stony objects known locally as 'China-stones'. The latter contain carbonised

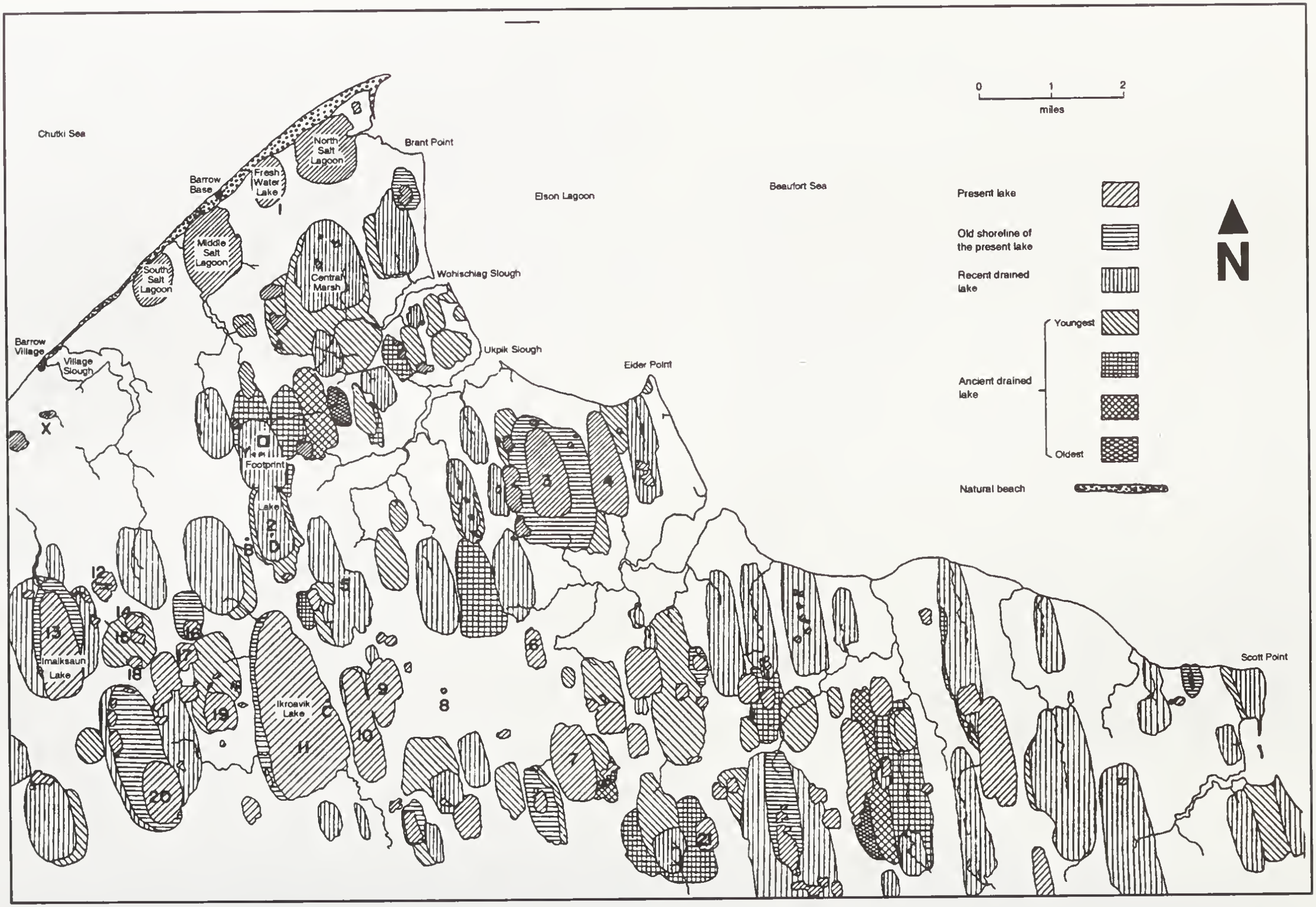
0
1
2
miles
Chutki Sea
Brant Point
Barrow Base
Elson Lagoon
Beaufort Sea
North Salt Lagoon
Fresh Water Lake
Middle Salt Lagoon
South Salt Lagoon
Central Marsh
Wohischiag Slough
Ukpik Slough
Elder Point
Barrow Village
Village Slough
Footprint Lake
Imalksaun Lake
Ikroavik Lake
Scott Point
Present lake
Old shoreline of the present lake
Recent drained lake
Ancient drained lake
Youngest
Oldest
Natural beach
N
X
B
C
D
1
2
3
4
5
6
7
8
9
10
11
12
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
21

Map 5D. Oriented lakes near Point Barrow on the north coast of Alaska.

Table 5B

Comparison of the Alaskan lakes, the Carolina 'bays' and the Beni Basin, Bolivia

(After Plafker G, Prouty W F, Johnson D)

	Northern Alaska	**Old Crow Plain Yukon Territory**	**Carolina 'Bays'**	**Beni Basin**
Area	More than 25,000 sq miles	About 3,000sq m	Between 25,000 and 40,000 sq m	Total area approx 45,000 sq m limited to Beni Basin
Number	Probably tens of thousands of lakes or lake basins	Several hundred oriented lakes	About 500, 000 'bays'	Roughly 2,000 oriented lakes and dry lakes
Axial orientation	North-west	North-west	North-west	Majority trend from N40ºE to N55ºE with average N48ºE. Subordinate trend from N50ºW to N30ºW with average N41ºW. Minor amount almost square
Size	Vary from 9m long and 3m wide to 1m long by ½m wide	From very small to 6½m long by 3½m wide	Vary from a few hundred ft in diameter to 3-7m long and 2+m wide	Several hundred ft in greatest diameter, to 12.4m long by 5.4m wide
Shape	Elliptical, cigar-shaped, ovoid rectangular, compound	Rectangular, elliptical, compound	Elliptical, ovoid	Square; rectangular; groups of adjacent rectangles; elliptical (many with one side more strongly curved than the other); irregular
Depth	From less than 10ft to 60-70ft below surrounding plain	Reportedly very shallow	From 1-2ft to 30-40ft below surrounding plain	Roughly 75ft maximum reported
Shorelines	Outline of many lakes smoothly curved	Appear smoothly curved on oblique air photo	Shorelines smoothly curved	Generally smooth outlines; in detail most are finely embayed or jagged
Relationship	Lakes parallel, intersect or overlap one another	Lakes parallel one another, rarely intersecting or overlapping	Bays parallel, intersect or overlap one another. Some bays lie within others	Lakes parallel one another; rarely intersect or overlap
Linear arrangement	Rows of lakes present in some localities	Rows of lakes present in some localities	Rows of lakes present in some localities. Parallelism along axes of ovoid. Longest axes running NW-SE	Rows of lakes present in several localities
Cross-section shape	1. Shallow with concave profile; 2. Deep central portion surrounded by a shallow shelf	Described as shallow	Shallow, concave, deepest toward SE end with a higher rim	Pan-shaped with abrupt, steep sides and flat bottoms
Age	Probably 'Pleistocene' to recent	No data	'Pleistocene'	Probably recent

Note: m = miles.

fragments of 'late Pleistocene' plants and animals. Hand-held compasses also regularly behave wildly in this area.

In combination, these details raise the possibility that this is another area over which a large aerial explosion (like those suggested as the cause underlying the creation of the Carolina 'bays') occurred in 'late Pleistocene' times – a date agreeing remarkably well with the 11,500 years BP date advocated in this book for the Phaeton disaster. In this case, however, no shallow-rimmed craters were formed. Rather interestingly, however, Maori traditions refer to an immense aerial detonation occurring over South Island long ago, when a huge horned celestial object, "glowing like the Moon". split apart and crashed to Earth, causing widespread devastation.

In 1951, Kelly[179] suggested that the Carolina 'bays', the supposed Bermuda 'crater' and the oriented 'lakes' around Barrow Point all originated during 'late Pleistocene' times through Earth's collision with a giant meteor or series of meteors, which jolted the terrestrial pole from an older position centred on Apatak Island in Ungava Bay, Quebec, to its present location. While we do not necessarily agree with this theory, it is nevertheless a most interesting one.

All the aforementioned structures lie along a single curving course. If we add the Russian, Harrison Bay and Old Crow Plain

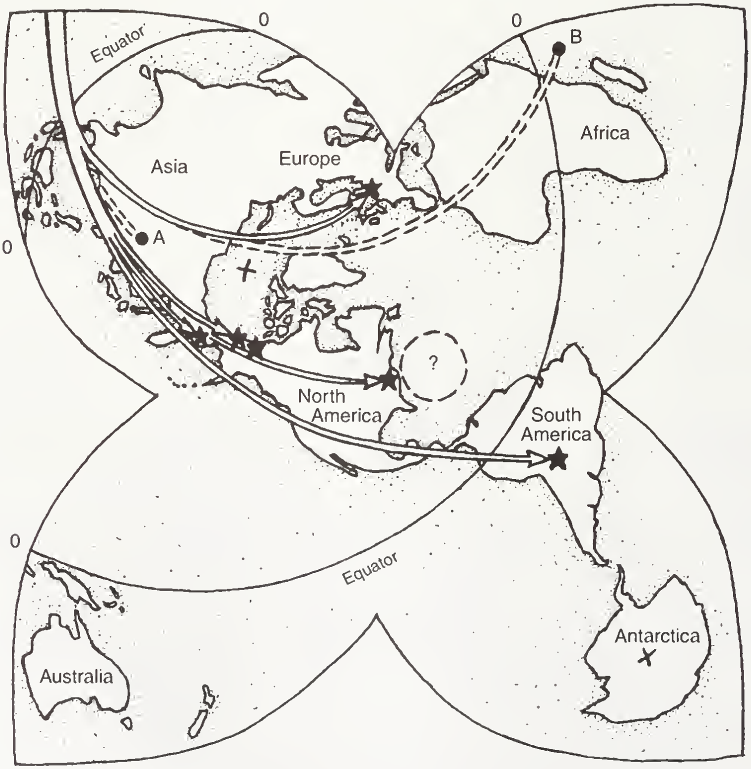

Map 5E. Possible polar flight-paths of disintegrating aerial objects theoretically responsible for oriented lakes, Carolina 'bays' and an alleged crater on the floor of the Atlantic Ocean at the time of the Phaeton disaster. The recently discovered 'craters' at Duolon (A) and the Amirantes area of the Indian Ocean are not necessarily any part of the events depicted on this map. Their locations, however, suggest that some association may exist. Accordingly, their suggested pre-impact flight-paths are shown dotted. *Partially based on Kelly and Dachaille.*

sets of oriented 'lakes' to Kelly's map we find that they too generally straddle the *same* curving course. Dare we accept this coincidence? The overall impression received is that of some large disintegrating body nearing the Earth on a curved trajectory over the northern hemisphere, and of pieces of it breaking off *en route* and striking the ground or exploding a short distance above ground-level at those places where the above-noted 'bays', 'lakes' and supposed 'crater' now occur as reviewed by Silver and Schuttz.[361]

Using the reported alignments of the Bolivian and Dutch structures, it is also possible to interpret them as analogous effects, created by related pieces of the same disintegrating object, ending their careers over Bolivia and the Netherlands respectively (see map 5E). Certainly the long list of similarities between all these topographical features (table 5B) strongly suggests that they shared a common origin. Indeed, how many coincidences are tolerable before definite causal connection between these topographical features becomes irrefutable?

Exciting though such an interpretation may seem, does it really reflect reality or even the sequence of events which can be inferred as having probably comprised that phase of the Phaeton catastrophe? The testimony of tradition, representing the only surviving eye-witness record of that terrible event, supplies several interesting clues partly answering this question.

8

HELL ON EARTH

No matter which account we study, the principal assailant in the great cosmic drama under discussion is almost always stated to have been accompanied by several lesser but highly destructive 'attendants'. The Babylonian account provides the assailant Marduk with four 'assistants' early in his wanderings amongst the outer planets. Later, after the battle with Tiamat, it reportedly acquired Tiamat's satellite Kingu as well as dismembered pieces of Tiamat too. By the time Marduk (Phaeton) neared Earth it did so in company with quite an entourage of lesser objects.

Likewise, the Midgård Serpent of Norse tradition was attended by the Fenris-Wolf, Garm, Surt and Loke; while in the Bundahish, Tistrya is accompanied by the Pairikas or 'worm-stars' and the 'angels' Vohuman, Hôm and Bûrg[180]. The solar horses, which in Greek legend pull Phaeton's fiery chariot, is a poetic way of saying that fiery and effulgent objects accompanied and preceded it through the heavens. Biblical texts mention an 'evil host' accompanying Satan or the dragon during the 'war in Heaven', while the Vedic hymns of ancient India describe Indra (Phaeton) as travelling across the firmament with a band of destructive entities known as Maruts, who are repeatedly described as 'blazing', 'brilliant with fire', 'shining like snakes' (with long trailing tails), the 'terrible ones' and the 'shakers of Heaven and Earth'[181].

Such traditions clearly record that *several* fiery or luminous objects arrived simultaneously in the neighbourhood of Earth at the time of the Phaeton disaster, and that these were largely subordinate to Phaeton irrespective of the name by which Phaeton was locally remembered.

As the following excerpts suggest, it was widely believed that several if not all of these unwelcome visitors crashed down upon

Earth to be buried deep below its surface in a vast chasm – which later came to be regarded as Hell itself. Describing this event, the *Book of Revelation* informs us:

> And there was a war in Heaven: Michael and his angels fought against the dragon, and the dragon fought with his angels. And prevailed not; neither was their place found any more in Heaven. And the dragon was cast out... he was cast into the Earth, and his angels were cast out with him.[182]

The same source provides further details about what can only have been a cosmic bombardment during the course of this 'war', and refers to various other effects considered previously. We are told that first there was "silence in Heaven about the pace of half an hour"[183]. This was succeeded by "thunderings and lightnings, and an earthquake"[184], after which the Earth was showered by "hail and fire mingled with blood"[185], which consumed trees and grass. Then a "great mountain burning with fire was cast into the sea: and the third part of the sea became blood", which, evidently poisoning the waters, occasioned widespread loss of marine life[186].

This event was followed by the falling of a "great star from Heaven, burning as (if) it were a lamp"[187]. This star was called Wormwood because it allegedly made "a third part of the waters" of the world bitter and undrinkable[188]. This heralded a general blotting out of the Sun, Moon and stars, after which another "star fell from Heaven unto Earth; and to him was given the key to the bottomless pit. And he opened the bottomless pit; and there arose a smoke out of the pit, as the smoke of a great furnace; and the Sun and the air were darkened by reason of the smoke of the pit"[189].

Finally there appeared "a great red dragon, having seven heads and ten horns, and seven crowns upon his head. And his tail drew the third part of the stars of Heaven, and did cast them to the Earth"[190]. This same red dragon was then "cast down" onto the Earth and a vast flood issued from its mouth[191], and it uttered "blasphemies" (awful sounds) from the mouths of its seven heads which continued to be emitted for "forty and two months"[192].

These extraordinary passages clearly state that, during a tremendous cosmic conflict, several of the participating bodies actually crashed to Earth. Although we are not told in which hemisphere these objects fell, they reportedly came down well apart – one in a chasm, one in the sea, another which rendered waters undrinkable, and one (a 'dragon'-like body) which inferentially fell on land. Very likely most of these objects vaporised or totally disintegrated before making physical contact with the terrestrial surface (excepting the supposed impact crater off the eastern coast of the United States), this occurring a short distance above ground level.

At the time, 'collapsed sky' conditions had already been established over many regions, the thick, particle-charged atmosphere contributing materially to the ultimate combustion of most of the falling bodies.

Widespread atmospheric derangements must also have occurred as prominent subsidiary effects in the vicinity of each blast area. Respecting these, it is surely significant that several ancient texts aver that, when these 'stars' and the 'dragon' fell to Earth, "Heaven *departed as a scroll* when it is rolled together, and every mountain and island moved out of their place" (our italics)[193], and that Heaven was "cloven"[194] or "rent in twain"[195]. The Norse epics significantly mention that the "sons of Muspelheim" (Phaeton's attendants) "ride" through this opening as they plummet earthwards[196].

The power and velocity of these blasts and shock waves must have been appalling, and the associated wind speeds phenomenal. No organism, large or small, within scores of miles of the blast areas could have survived. Needless to add, sudden local withdrawals of air sucked into these areas by the final vaporising explosions would have been lethal for all air-breathing inhabitants of the affected regions.

Especially interesting at this juncture is the multi-headed 'dragon'. Not improbably it represents the state of the last major remnants of Kingu which, at the time, were cascading earthwards as burning masses of

* See *Note 18*.

jagged material superficially resembling a 'horned dragon'. Presumably, the burning mountain, the 'star' named Wormwood and the 'star' associated with the 'bottomless pit' were other large pieces of Kingu preceding the 'dragon'-like portion to Earth.

We should particularly note that Michael (really Phaeton) did *not* succumb in this drama, and that in Greek legend it was Phaeton's chariot and steeds which disintegrated and fell to Earth, just as, in Ute Indian tradition, it was a wayward sun god called Ta-vi and *not* the opposing solar hero Ta-wats (Phaeton) who was "shivered into a thousand fragments which fell to Earth".

Thus it was not Phaeton, but its 'attendants' which plummeted to earth, and it was Kingu which, venturing into the terrestrial Roche zone, disintegrated and plunged earthwards in mighty blazing fragments. The lurid spectacle of this falling debris doubtless rivalled Phaeton itself in brilliance, amid the extensive gloom of 'collapsed sky' conditions, evidently leading terrified eye-witnesses unable to view events in their entirety to assume that it was actually Phaeton which was crashing.

Biblical and other texts refer to these falling objects as 'angels'. The *Epistle of Jude,* for example, states:

> And the angels which kept not their first estate, but left their habitation [Heaven], He [God] hath reserved in everlasting chains under darkness unto the judgement of the great day.[197].

A very similar statement occurs in the *Epistle of Peter,* which tells us:

> For... God spared not the angels that sinned, but cast them down to hell, and delivered them into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto judgement.[198]

All religions and mythologies which speak of Hell or a Hell-like realm invariably regard it as the abode of Satan and demons and as a place characterised by fire – everlasting fire. In the apocryphal *Book of Enoch* Hell is described as a vast abyss at "...the end of Earth and Heaven; here is the prison of the stars which had transgressed God's will... Here shall be confined the angels..."[199]. The same source elsewhere tells us: "And God confined the angels... in the fiery valley in the west... [where were] melted mountains of metal...", during a frightful natural convulsion when "heaven fell upon Earth [collapsed sky] and the Earth was swallowed up by an immense abyss [crustal dislocation]; and hills crowded on hills, and mountains on mountains [plate tectonics]"[200]. These awful events occurred when "...the waters boiled... and the Ark floated upon the water"[201], an assertion confirmed by Peter in his second Epistle when he stated that God "spared not the old world, but saved Noah the eighth person... bringing in the flood upon the world of the ungodly"[202].

These are clear references to the contemporaneity of the Deluge (Noah's), a cosmic conflict (the 'war in heaven') and the fall of celestial objects (rebellious 'angels' from Heaven). In several accounts, the latter were somehow confused or connected with a race of antediluvian giants traditionally associated with the north or the west. Thus Merezhkovsky, who equated the giants with 'fallen angels' (Phaeton's attendants), concluded:

> In the *Book of Enoch,* the human giants of the pre-flood world, the 'Sons of God', the *ben Elohim,* the fallen angels, are men of the extreme west.[203].

Norse epics place their abode in the far north-west:

> Far in the north-west – to all nations in our hemisphere [northern] the abode of darkness – is *Jotunheim,* where the giants dwell...[204]

The direction from which the celestial objects came that were apparently responsible for creating the oriented 'lakes', 'bays' and 'craters' was north or north-west relative to the present North Pole. Moreover, except for the Dutch 'bays', all these features lie far west or north-west of Europe and Asia Minor where these traditions have been preserved.

A definite northern source for this bombardment is seemingly implied in those traditions which mention the Bifrost Bridge. The Norse *Eddas* state that this bridge, allegedly constructed by the gods during the wonderful primeval Golden Age, existed near Meru in the formerly equable North Polar latitudes. When the Midgård Serpent and its associates assaulted Earth, the Bifrost Bridge was reputedly set on fire, and it broke up under the onslaught of the 'sons of Muspelheim", who are said to have ridden through a 'cloven' heaven. A huge fiery chasm opened beneath the bridge, into which it collapsed. This was presumably the 'immense abyss' and 'fiery valley' which scriptural texts locate at the 'end of Earth and Heaven' (exactly where the *Eddas* place the Bifrost Bridge), and where the 'prison' of the 'stars which had transgressed' was situated.

The opening up of a large fiery chasm at or near the North Pole seems scarcely credible, until it is realised that the pole concerned was not the present one but that of the precatastrophic world, which was located a considerable distance from the site of its modern counterpart. Was the final resting place ('prison' or 'fiery valley') of at least some of these celestial objects ('fallen angels') therefore some site now north-west of the present North Pole – a site which, at the time, had split open as a gigantic crustal fracture exposing sub-adjacent molten magma, or which had collapsed *en bloc* through crustal dislocation and had begun to fill with erupting magma?

The previously-mentioned references to 'everlasting chains under darkness' and the widely-held concept of hell as the domain of raging fire may thus signify gravitational or electromagnetic capture (chaining) on the one hand, and the exposure, through lithospheric fracturing, to fire on the other. Subsequent cooling and solidifying of the magma below which the 'fallen angels' allegedly lay buried would thus explain the added phrase 'under darkness'.

No exceptionally large crustal fractures that could now be termed an abyss or chasm have been traced in latitudes northwards of Spitzbergen, although the great world crack discussed in Part One runs as far North as that archipelago, and can be followed across the floor of the Arctic Ocean to the Russian mainland immediately south-west of the New Siberian Islands[205]. Much of the north polar region, however, generally exhibits evidence of massive and geologically recent crustal shortening, suggesting of a former folding-in upon itself of the lithosphere there. One such example concerns the Barents Sea and the anomalous depths of the Eurasian Basin (Nansen Basin) and its margins which:

> ...represent a regional collapse of the Earth's surface due to *material being removed from the lower mantle.*[206] (Our italics).

It would, of course, be premature to insist that this north polar crustal shortening in any way supports the admittedly unverifiable claims of ancient literature, tradition and legend. We merely draw attention here to its existence, its location and its inferred cause, and to the fact that several apparently similar crustal collapse areas lie along or near the line of the previously-mentioned oriented 'lakes'.

A particularly large and geologically recent instance has been noted immediately east of the Kamchatka peninsula. This location lies close to the suggested trajectory of the object or objects advocated as having caused the oriented 'lakes' of Siberia and Alaska and over which, we submit, must have passed the group of objects which eventually came down over north-eastern Bolivia. If the flight-lines produced by aligning these groups of oriented 'lakes' and 'bays' are extended back towards a point of convergence, that point lies in the southern hemisphere. This detail becomes interesting when we recall that several Asiatic accounts of these celestial assailants specifically state that they initially arrived *from* the south. Again, can apparent concordance between such intrinsically dissimilar details be entirely coincidental?

The preceding reconstruction of what appears to have occurred immediately after the disintegration of Kingu imparts new significance to the hitherto curious belief among many peoples that the 'devil' or 'dragon' once flung huge stones great distances over the terrestrial landscape.

Numerous independent traditions about the Phaeton disaster refer to rocks, stones and dust being cast down upon the Earth by the main celestial antagonists at the time of that dire event. Sometimes these missiles are described as 'hail' and as falling 'mingled with fire' or accompanied by loud or frightening noises. Conventional icy hail does not fall with fire and, even in heavy falls, is not particularly noisy. Obviously a different kind of 'hail' is meant. The following examples reveal that the 'hail' was largely stony.

The pre-Columbian Toltecs assert that long ago "there fell a rain of gravel" accompanied by a "rain of fire", when "all which existed burned"[207]. A Peruvian recollection tells of a vast stone which "fell from Heaven to Earth and broke into sixteen hundred pieces"[208]. Algonquin legends refer to a tremendous primeval battle between the celestial brothers *Manibozho* and *Chakekenapok*. The former prevailed and broke Chakekenapok into many pieces which he "scattered over the land" when "the face of nature was desolated by a tornado", "...the gigantic bowlders and loose rocks found on the prairies are the missiles hurled by the mighty combatants"[209].

Early Mexican accounts of the same event mention that the sky "rained not water but fire and red-hot stones"[210], and that the stones "...levelled whole forests"[211]. In the Old World, an ancient tradition from the Atlas Mountains near Bou-Merzoug asserts that long ago "...a wicked people lived there, and for their sins stones were rained upon them from heaven"[212]. Buddhist texts on world cycles say similar things: "There arises a wind to destroy the world cycle... it rains a fine dust... boulders as large ...as mighty trees on the hilltops... [it] turns the ground upside down... [when] worlds clash with worlds"[213]. Even the early Chinese believed that planets closely approaching Earth (which, of course, they do not) occasion great showers of stones[214].

This near-universal belief that ages ago Earth and everything upon it was bombarded by a multitude of cosmic missiles, both large and small, fiery and stony, cannot be without foundation, particularly when those same beliefs specifically correlate that event with a mighty celestial conflict and tremendous physical changes on Earth. We have seen that several terrestrial regions host the remarkable youthful ground structures of 'bays' and 'lakes' which, in the light of all present evidence, are *best* explained as blast effects caused by large concentrations of aerially-detonating bodies. The fact that they lie in parallel rows and chains, often overlapping each other, strongly supports that interpretation. Furthermore, their general close proximity and their localisation (in groups) in particular areas indicate the involvement of veritable swarms of objects, with their detonations following one another in rapid succession.

Rains of fire can only signify falls of burning gases or hydrocarbons, or both. Several authorities, including T A Link[215], argued that petroleum residue traced in some meteorites possibly indicates that both meteorites and petroleum are remnants of a former, but now disintegrated planet-like body on which petroleum had been present, and that such a body existed between the present Martian and Jovian orbits. This is precisely where Tiamat and Kingu apparently once existed.

The great majority of these missiles can only have been fragments of the disintegrated Kingu, which, on exploding, must have hurled burning pieces of itself literally in all directions. Those nearest Earth inevitably hurtled through the atmosphere towards the crust, igniting and fragmenting as they did so. Those thrown away from Earth may have completely escaped Earth's gravitational field and gone great distances into interplanetary space before settling down into eccentric orbits. The origin of the meteor swarms and bands of comparatively small, apparently stony, maverick objects occupying interplanetary space between the Sun and Jupiter, of which numerous sightings have been made for centuries (see Appendix C) may also be explained by this disintegration.

9

IRON BOUND

Many traditional accounts of this awful calamity mention sticky or inflammable blood-like fluids falling from the sky as 'hot naphtha', 'bitumen' or 'rains of fire'. The possible hydrocarbon origins of some have already been touched upon, while we may also reasonably infer that the fluids described as blood-like consisted not of blood but of a red or brownish-red liquid. In one account from Finland it is compared to a 'red milk'[216]. This description suggests that it was thick and opaque. Like the sticky and inflammable substances, these red 'rains' were inimical to terrestrial life.

Traditions refer to these blood-like rains many times. Mt Haemus in Thrace, for example, was anciently so named because of the "stream of blood which gushed out on the mountain" when a 'thunderbolt' (a massive electrical discharge) struck Typhon (Phaeton) during its flight over the Balkans[217]. The Orphic hymns of classical Greece refer to remotely early times when, as Earth "groaned fearfully" amid terrible convulsions, a discoloured sea was "troubled with its purple waves"[218].

The Tatars of Central Asia remember a great world conflagration preceded by a 'rain of blood' which turned the "whole world red"[219], while in the afore-cited Babylonian epic the entire world is said to have been coloured red by the 'blood' of the vanquished Tiamat[220]. We also recall the 'hail mingled with blood' mentioned in the version of this cataclysm given in the *Book of Revelation*[221]. A similar statement in the *Apocalypse of Thomas* avers that "a great cloud of blood shall come down... a rain of blood upon all the Earth"[222]. Even the Maya of pre-Colombian Mexico remember a time of tremendous world upheaval when the waters of all the rivers turned to a bloody redness as the Sun's motion was disturbed[223].

These and various other similar traditions clearly state that this red liquid arrived and fell as a 'great cloud' or as a 'stream' and that it rained down globally ('all the world'). Immense quantities of it must have existed even to have fallen even as a light short-lived shower over an area as extensive as the Earth's surface. But what was its origin and its true nature? We may never be able to answer these questions for certain, although some educated guesses can be attempted, which are seemingly consistent with the available details.

Ancient Mesopotamian texts repeatedly allude to the original 'watery' nature of Tiamat – special names such as *Tehom-Raba* ('watery monster') being used to stress that characteristic[224]. Interestingly, *Tehom-Raba* means 'great Tiamat' in the Hebrew language. From such fragments we may conclude that Tiamat was essentially a watery planet and that very large quantities of water were probably dispersed into space during Tiamat's destruction.

Assuming that Tiamat possessed some sort of central core composed of dense, perhaps mainly metalliferous, material, this too might have been fragmented and partially vaporised into dust-sized particles by Marduk's final destructive 'arrow'. This 'arrow' (a gigantic bolt of intense electrical energy?), ancient texts assert, "tore her belly... cut through her insides, tore into her womb" (penetrated to Tiamat's core). If valid as an interpretation, then this disintegration of Tiamat's core produced billions of particles which were scattered into space as a vast cloud close to where Tiamat had previously existed. Indeed the ancient texts virtually record this very process:

> ...(Marduk) ***severed the channels of her blood***
> ***And caused the North Wind to bear it***

To places that have been unknown.

In other words, Tiamat's 'blood' was scattered to regions where it had never previously been – that is, the area of space just indicated.

In space, any metalliferous particles of Tiamat's former core would have rapidly oxidised red or brown, while mixing and freezing solid with Tiamat's similarly dispersed fluids. Upon freezing, ice rinds must have enveloped the constituent particles. These, with the frozen liquids (ice), probably developed a highly reflective albedo.

It is curious, therefore, that a 'sea of crystal' allegedly preceded the red 'dragon' in space prior to the fall of, firstly, the 'burning mountain' which turned the world's waters blood red, secondly the 'star' named Wormwood which turned the world's waters bitter, and thirdly the 'dragon', itself red[225].

If remnants of Tiamat's original hydrosphere, atmosphere and core indeed mixed and froze together, this 'sea of crystal' presumably consisted of those remains of Tiamat which, the ancient records allege, were 'captured' and taken in tow by Marduk (Phaeton) as it proceeded sunwards. Such frozen masses, possessing highly reflective albedos, could easily have resembled a celestial 'sea of crystal'. And when the constituent materials eventually fell to Earth, as numerous accounts insist that they did, what better description of them could be given than 'hail mingled with blood'[226] (ice mixed with liquid ferruginous matter and metalliferous particles)?

An alternative interpretation of these 'blood' rains could be, despite the traditional insistence that they were a legacy of Tiamat, as easily attributed to the break-up of Kingu in Earth's Roche zone. The larger pieces of Tiamat's former satellite – the 'burning mountain', the 'star', Wormwood, *etc* – constituted portions of its core or crust, while the red 'milk', 'rains of blood' *etc* represented liquefied and oxidised smaller fragments.

The likeliest explanation, however, is that the rains with their red pigment had indeed mostly originated with Tiamat, and that the larger objects were falling remnants of the shattered Kingu. By the very nature of things, all arrived in the vicinity of Earth at the same time, and either fell more or less simultaneously or in quick succession. Confused, panic-stricken observers understandably assumed that all this falling material shared a common origin.

The bitter taste of the waters polluted by the 'star' Wormwood and the blood colour imparted to the sea by the 'burning mountain' were obviously chemical reactions between essentially incompatible substances. It is probably reasonable to suppose that the bitterness and the bloody colour of these waters derived from ferric matter, such as often tends to stain sediments and stones with deep red or brown tints. Remarkable concentrations of ferrous minerals and traces of ferruginous staining exist in various terrestrial surface deposits evidently laid down at the time of the Phaeton disaster. A closer look at some of them is most informative.

Several geologically young deposits, both on land and under the sea, exhibit markedly red or red-brown tints. Similar tints characterise many cave earths and fissure fillings. Almost the entire floor of Kesslerloch cave in Switzerland, for example, in which numerous animal bones were embedded, was coloured red with iron oxide[227]. We have already noted some fissures in Carniola in-filled by nearly pure iron ore. So-called 'Pleistocene' bone breccias are also often strongly ferruginised and silicified as, for example, that in Tea Tree Cave, Queensland[228]. Similar iron-stained bones have been found in many fissures, such as on the Isle of Portland, England.

Bones of 'late Pleistocene' animals encountered in 'drift' deposits are frequently iron-stained. Mammal remains from high-terrace gravels at Acton and Turnham Green, west London, for example, exhibited abundant traces of a manganous deposit and were described at the time of their discovery as being "loaded with manganous oxide"[229]. Blue-grey iron sands overlay the celebrated rhinoceros carcass found in Vilyui valley, Siberia, and even some of the so-called Miocene plants found in north-west Greenland occurred in a 'sparry iron ore'[230].

Iron or manganese staining of 'drift' deposits and associated organic remains, conventionally attributed to ice action or the environment this believedly created, are usually ascribed to periglacial conditions. Thus, black manganese staining in gravels at Radley, Oxfordshire, England, is accounted for by this process, which is said to have been of brief duration[231]. But if, as argued in Part One, glacial conditions did not exist when these gravels were deposited – and, very significantly, molluscs in these same gravels indicate 'warm' ('interglacial') conditions – other circumstances must have caused the staining.

A rusty colour is also characteristic of much of the 'Pleistocene' loess formation. In northern China, for example, loess occurs extensively as a reddish-hued surface deposit in which "...iron-manganese Pisolites are *often* disseminated in its basal layer" (our italics)[232]. Studies of these loessic loams reveal that their red colour "...can neither be a quality inherited from the original matter of which the loams are composed, nor a condition brought about by slow chemical processes long after their formation"[233]. In other words, the reddish tints were imparted to the loams *during* their deposition, and one may reasonably suppose that the above-mentioned iron-manganese Pisolites were also. Loessic loams in other parts of the world show similar metalliferous associations. Thus, in Nebraska, where loam abounds, as much as 20.26% of it consists of aluminium and 7.80% of iron[234]. Although numerous other examples could be cited, it must suffice here to state that mineral grains composing loessic deposits consist "...mostly of silica and associated *heavy* minerals (and) are *fresh* and *angular*..."[235] (our italics).

The fresh and angular appearance of these grains signifies geological modernity, while the very presence of heavy minerals in a *surface* deposit is most interesting. The occurrence of so much aluminium is likewise interesting in view of the recently-monitored exceptional concentration of aluminium-26 in the outer vicinity of the solar system, referred to in Part Four.

Deltaic deposits at the mouth of the Fraser River, British Columbia, brought down from inland regions characterised by extensive 'drift' beds and alleged glacial sculpturing, represent another example of recent surface deposits charged with "abnormal concentrations" of heavy metals, including cobalt, lead, zinc, copper, manganese and iron[236]. That 'drift'-age deposits elsewhere consistently contain significant quantities of these metals reveals how many modern surface deposits (deltaic and otherwise) have acquired their metalliferous contents. Natural erosion, leaching and other processes transfer ores from older to younger deposits, often investing bones and other remains with a metalliferous (and sometimes ochreous) patina (covering). Thus, a small carved figurine retrieved late last century from coarse sand over 280ft (86m) below ground level at Nampa, Idaho, was found to be covered with reddish iron oxide[237], which must have formed around it soon after its burial.

It is clear, therefore, that appreciable quantities of metals which exist locally in the 'drift' were deposited coevally with it and the animal and plant remains it contains. Considerable amounts of gold, for example, have occurred in 'drift' gravels in California, Alaska and Siberia, where mammoth and other animal remains abound, and as small isolated nuggets at various places in North Carolina, South Carolina and Virginia[238], just to name a few localities. Significantly, these finds closely abut the main area of the Carolina 'bays'!

If, as previously suggested, the formation of the Carolina 'bays', the deposition of 'drift' and the annihilation of the mammoths and their contemporaries was due to cosmic agencies epitomised by Phaeton and its entourage, it is undoubtedly noteworthy that iron was anciently regarded as the 'bones of Typhon' by the Egyptians, or as the 'droppings of the serpent' (Phaeton) by the early Jews. Indeed, Phaeton, irrespective of the name by which it was remembered, was widely associated with a great variety of metals in antiquity. The Chinese believed gold to be the dragon's breath, and glass or crystal its congealed breath[239]. Phaeton's companions, Leviathan and Behemoth were both thought to have produced gold and precious stones[240]. Even the early Peruvians accorded a celestial origin to gold and silver, the former being regarded as 'tears wept by the Sun' and the latter as 'tears of the Moon'[241]. These notions subsequently became corrupted into dragons guarding gold and other treasures.

But fanciful and distorted though these ancient memories may now be, they unquestionably date back to the time when a severely heated Earth ran with streams of molten and magnetised metals, derived, perhaps, as much from its cosmic assailants as from existing terrestrial lodes and veins of ore. Later, after solidifying once more, men came to believe that all had been produced by terrible celestial monsters. Magnetised iron, incidentally, was the first iron known to have been worked by man.

10

THE RAINS OF DEATH

As long ago as 1872, the Challenger oceanographic expedition, which sailed over 68,000 nautical miles in circumnavigating the globe, recorded the presence on the world's ocean floors of myriads of small, black, nickel-rich magnetic spherules having diameters in the order of 10–50 microns (u). They appeared to be especially abundant in the deepest basins. The existence of these tiny objects was repeatedly confirmed in the late 1940s by the Swedish marine exploration vessel *Albatross*, the observations made then rekindling interest in the spherules. Indeed, after considering all relevant factors, both E J Opik[242] and Kurt Fredericksson[243] independently concluded that the spherules were very probably of meteoric origin.

Also covering much of the floors of the deep ocean basins is a distinctive deposit which, though usually tinted a rusty brown, is known as the *red* clay. It occupies "...about 102 million km^2" and represents a prodigious tonnage since "...at an average depth of about 200 metres, there would be some 10^{16} tons of red clay on the ocean floors"[244]. Naturally radioactive, this clay derives its colour from ferric hydroxide and a small amount of manganese oxide[245], and consists of very fine-grained sediments mixed with coarse silt and sand fractions originating in the oceans, as well as hydrogenous minerals, volcanogenic debris and ferromanganese concretions[246].

Sea-bed clays and muds from the Arctic are coloured brown due to the presence in them of enormous quantities of oxidised ferric iron particles, while those from the seafloor near the New Siberian Islands, in the White Sea and the Barents Sea contain a notably high percentage of manganese oxide[247]. Examining clay samples from the bottom of the Pacific Ocean, Pettersson discovered that they contained layers of volcanic ash and *large* amounts of nickel and radium – two elements almost completely absent from sea water. He observed that "nickel is a very rare element in most terrestrial rocks and continental sediments and is almost absent from ocean waters"[248]. Pettersson attributed the origin of the iron and nickel in these clays to "...very heavy showers of meteorites in the remote past"[249]. He also added:

> Assuming the average nickel content of meteoric dust to be two per cent, an approximate value for the rate of accretion of cosmic dust to the whole Earth can be worked out from these data. The result is very high – about 10,000 tons per day, or over a thousand times higher than the

> value computed from counting the shooting stars (meteors) and estimating their mass.[250]

In many areas, however, the red clays possessing this unexpectedly high nickel content rest directly upon geologically very recent lavas and basalts, indicating that they (and their nickel content) must be younger still. At some places these clays form only thin veneers or are altogether absent. Thus, considering all these details in unison, not only must the supposed meteor shower have been recent rather than ancient, but its occurrence must have been sudden, its volume enormous and – in view of the wide distribution of the clay – its operation global.

This last factor is contrary to the normal behaviour of the average meteor shower, even of an exceptionally large one. Meteor showers inevitably enter the terrestrial atmosphere from one quadrant only at any given time. However, owing to the rotation of the Earth, most, if not all, parts of the world's surface could theoretically receive meteoric material over a twenty-four hour period. To account for the enormously high tonnage here, we must imagine either a veritable meteor blizzard continuously pounding the Earth for weeks on end, or the Earth passing through (or being passed by) a vast cloud of metalliferous debris which enveloped more or less every part of the planet's surface almost simultaneously. On remembering that, at this phase of the disaster, Earth had either been braked to a halt, or its rotation was markedly slowed, such near-instantaneous global falls of huge quantities of ferruginous dust becomes easier to understand.

New significance thus attaches to the Finnish tradition that, when the Sun and Moon once disappeared and 'red milk' was sprinkled over the world, 'hailstones of iron' fell *prodigiously* – likewise to those recollections of fine dust falling endlessly from the skies while the Deluge waters swept across the Earth. In turn, these indicate that we are not dealing here with a meteor shower but with a gigantic cloud of cosmic debris, the origin of which we have already suggested.

Finally, we must consider more fully the ferromanganese concretions found in the red clay. Usually referred to as manganese nodules, these irregularly-shaped objects range in size from that of a garden pea to lumps up to 3ft (0.9m) in long diameter, and exist in countless numbers on the sea-bed worldwide[251]. Like the associated red clays, the nodules are naturally radioactive[252], and at some localities are astonishingly abundant, forming veritable 'fields' and 'pavements'. Some 'fields' consist of nodules packed so densely that they totally cover almost 100% of the sea-floor[253]. The wider distribution of the nodules is patchy, however. We are told, for example, that in the eastern central Pacific Ocean:

> ...records were taken with bottom-near television cameras, for hundreds of kilometres. For 5% of the records the sea-floor was covered to more than 50% by nodules, that is up to 25kg of ore per square metre. Conversely, 5% of the records showed the sea-floor free of nodules. Elsewhere, the cover varied, sometimes considerably, even over distances of only 50m. The reasons for the patchiness are not clear...[254]

The areas richest in nodules occur in the north-equatorial Pacific region[255]. Globally, however, it has been estimated that the nodules represent between 100 and 200 *billion* tonnes of material[256]. Map 5F shows the main areas from which they have been reported[257], the concentrations in the Pacific and the western Atlantic, east of the Carolina 'bays, being immediately noticeable.

Manganese nodules are rich in cobalt, nickel, copper and other heavy elements[258], a factor suggesting to several authorities the idea that the nodules, which are thought to grow through natural chemical accretion of these and other elements in sea water, are very old. A very slow growth – one estimate suggests "a few millimetres per million years, at most"[259] – has been postulated because these metal are rare in sea water, and long ages must have passed for the nod-

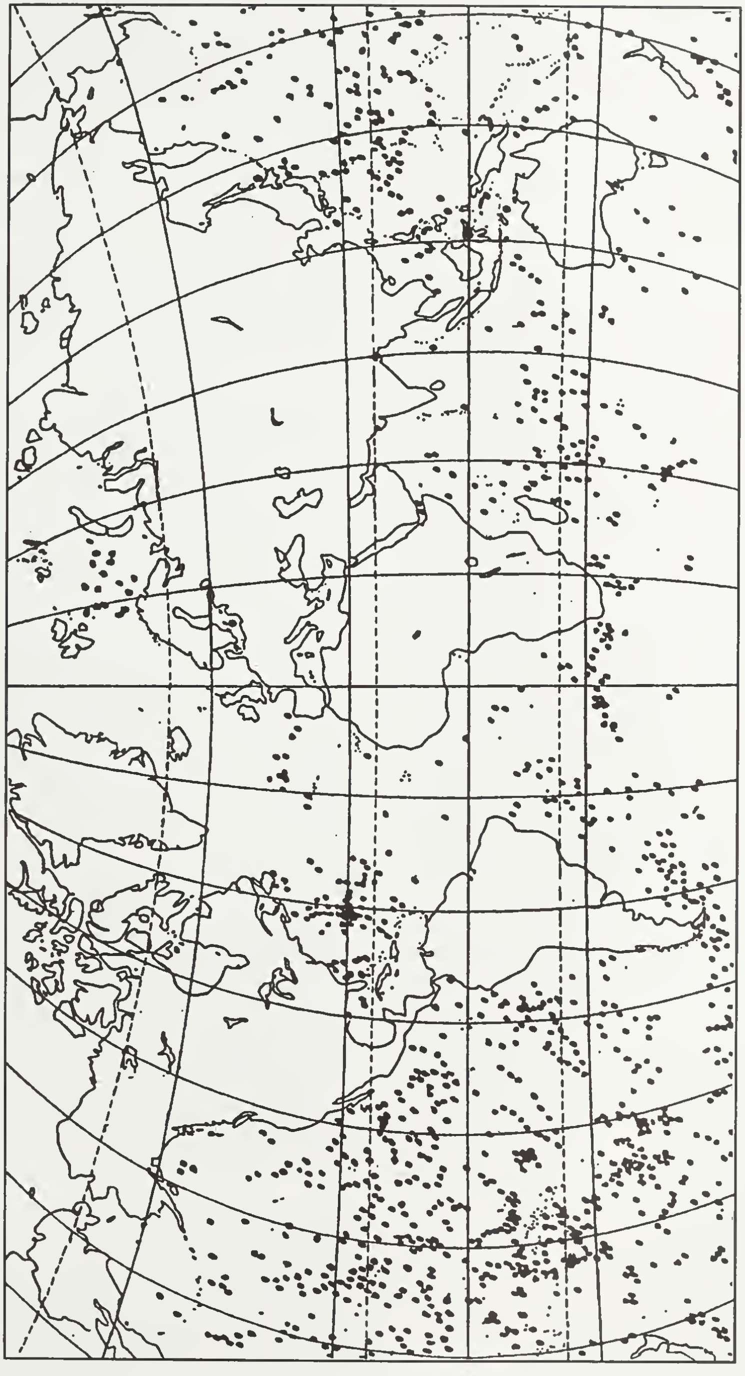

Map 5F. Ocean floor areas from which ferromanganese nodules have been reported. Each dot represents a separate locality, not an individual nodule. Many areas have yet to be searched for nodules – the expectation being that the final number of nodule-yielding localities will be appreciably higher than shown here.

Compiled from Berger, Horn, and other sources. Van der Grinten's projection. Scale: 1:220,000,000 at the Equator.

ules to have attained their present size by such processes. The fact that the overwhelming majority of these nodules occur on the surface or uppermost layers of the red clay has suggested to some that they have formed principally in areas of low sedimentation rates, since "...because of their slow growth they would soon be covered up in regions of high sediment supply"[260].

No plausible explanation has yet been advanced to account for the formation of nodules in such areas. We have already seen, however, that the twin notions of a great age and slow deposition rate for the red clays are apparently erroneous – especially where the clays overlie geologically *young* lavas and basalts – and the inference must be that the associated nodules are at least as youthful if not more so. In any case, major geophysical changes to ocean floors approximately 11,500 years ago (see Part One) clearly nullify the concept of sea-bed deposits slowly accumulating under generally stable conditions over very long periods of time, or of a similar slow growth for the nodules. The abundance and distribution of the nodules is remarkable, yet if the sea water below which they lie is almost devoid of the materials from which they allegedly form, and if the associated seafloors and bottom sediments are indeed geologically youthful[261], then the nodules must have formed under other circumstances.

When all these factors are taken into consideration, they suggest that the nodules have been dumped *en masse* rather than accumulating slowly. This implies a cosmic source which, if correct, signifies that they arrived suddenly and in vast numbers. We recall that several traditional memories of that frightful event agree that some celestial object disintegrated into innumerable fragments while in the vicinity of Earth, showering it with its remnants. Are these nodules further evidence of that calamity and (considering their heavy mineral content) of shattered core material from Tiamat, or Kingu, or both?

Earth's apparently 'recent' acquisition of iron-impregnated matter (subsequently accumulated as loess and red clay) and of enormous quantities of metalliferous nodules certainly calls for exceptional circumstances. Among other effects, these acquisitions would have rendered water supplies bitter and unpalatable. World tradition remembers just such a 'recent' event – the Phaeton disaster.

As noted previously, world tradition also links the bitterness of Earth's waters with a widespread loss of marine life. Can it be coincidence, therefore, that together with other life-forms, *pteropods* suffered mass mortality in the eastern Atlantic during the alleged Weichselian (Würmian) phase of the so-called Ice Age? Today, the remains of these marine organisms are embedded in sea-floor sediments stretching from Portugal to Senegal, a distance of 1,560 miles (2,500km). These sediments, which have apparently been washed by *red tides* several times, are estimated to have been deposited sometime between 14,000 and 11,000 years BP[262] – exactly that division of time when the Phaeton disaster apparently occurred. This *pteropod* destruction has been attributed directly to a sudden increase in sedimentation resulting from "rapid hydrographic and climatic changes"[263], both highly prominent features of the Phaeton event!

It would seem, therefore, that both ferruginous dust and metalliferous nodules were simply further aspects of the tremendous celestial bombardment responsible for the aforementioned oriented 'bays' and 'lakes'. In short, they were indeed 'rains of death'.

11

THE WATER MOUNTAIN

Unquestionably the most widely remembered expression of the Phaeton disaster was the Deluge. It allegedly drowned all living things and is stated to have extinguished a terrible world fire. The Deluge was thus rather a late development during this dreadful catastrophe. Moreover, the numerous traditional accounts referred to in Part Three clearly reveal that the Deluge was an almost inevitable outcome of the tremendous events immediately preceding it.

These same accounts also describe several highly unusual aspects of the Deluge which are at variance with the popular (and oversimplified) concepts of how the Deluge supposedly behaved. Broadly speaking, the Deluge is an umbrella heading embracing three distinct phases: first, a temporary but singular heaping-up of terrestrial water in a specific region, secondly, an equally remarkable torrent of cosmic origin, and thirdly, the release across the greater part of the world of the united terrestrial and cosmic waters as an irresistible flood.

A recurrent theme in the Deluge traditions generally concerns the extraordinary heights attained by these flood waters. In *Genesis* we find that:

> ...the waters prevailed exceedingly on the Earth, and all the high hills that were under the whole heaven were covered. Fifteen cubits upward did the waters prevail, and the mountains were covered.[264]

A cubit is generally regarded as having corresponded to 17.58 inches (44.6cm), so 15 cubits would signify that the flood waters rose about 23ft (7m). If above today's highest mountains, then to more than five miles (8km)! We have seen, however, that antediluvian peaks were probably much lower than those of present times, so the seemingly exaggerated height reportedly reached by the flood-waters may not be so extravagant after all. Notwithstanding such possibilities, we are still told that "...the waters *stood above* the mountains" (our italics), as tremendous winds caused them to "...mount up to the heavens"[265], and "He [God] gathereth the waters of the sea together as a heap"[266].

Maori traditions also speak of terrific winds lashing the Deluge waters into mountain-high billows[267], just as ancient Chinese records mention that the waters, "...in their vast extent over-topped the great heights, threatening the heavens with their floods"[268]. An independent Midrashic account goes so far as to assert that: "The waters were piled up to a height of sixteen hundred miles, and they could be seen by all the nations of the Earth"[269] – a near-unbelievable claim. There are essentially similar, if less exorbitant, accounts of this watery distortion, such as the following Lappish tradition describing the destruction of a wicked antediluvian world by the angry deity *Jubmel*, who allegedly promised: "I shall reverse the world. I shall bid the rivers flow upward; I shall cause the sea to gather together itself up into a huge towering wall which I shall hurl upon your wicked Earth-children, and thus destroy them and all life"[270].

Other accounts tell of waters piled up to heights so great that they 'overtopped' mountains and appeared to threaten the 'heavens' themselves; waters gathered into a 'huge towering wall' and so on. The prevailing picture is everywhere consistent and quite unlike that usually conveyed by artists and some scholars of slowly-rising flood waters. The dominating vision, then, is of a colossal heap or wall of water gathered together at a particular locality (or hemisphere) and held there by some immense gravitational force. A hint is given of this effect in *Psalms*, where we read that this watery heap "...stood fast"[271]. In other words, it was immobile. Such a phenomenon is explicable only if a second gravitational field was acting in opposition to terrestrial gravity, a field which caused 'rivers to flow upward', which 'heaped up' the ocean waters and which then held them stationary, for a definite interval. The opposing gravitational field was presumably Phaeton's.*

This point assumes particular significance when we discover the Babylonian *Talmud* asserting that: "Seven days before the Deluge, the Holy One changed the primeval order..."[272], an observation anciently remembered by numerous nations and implying a change in the Earth's previous axial stability and rotational speed, with water flowing uphill rather than downhill.

Especially significant is the conclusion reached as far back as 1936 by Hess and MacClintock, who, in considering the effects of a hypothetical astral influence which suddenly decreased Earth's rotational speed and caused a rapid change in the shape of the hydrosphere, inferred that sea levels would be greatly depressed in low (equatorial) latitudes and drastically raised in high (polar) latitudes[273]. This is precisely what the aforementioned traditions appear to imply. The heaping up of Earth's waters evidently occurred at or around the original poles, or, just possibly, principally at one pole only – the northern one.

At this juncture we should recall those traditions which refer to the Deluge waters as having flowed strongly northwards. It may be surmised that these were waters being gravitationally attracted to the polar latitudes. The incredible abnormal weight of accumulated water at one pole may have been as much the cause of an axial tilt as the near-proximity of a powerful external influence like Phaeton. Most probably, both factors working in concert effected that major terrestrial change. One agrees, therefore, with Patten when, as one of the few writers who has perceived the true nature of the Deluge, he remarked:

> If one concludes that this great event in Earth history, the Flood, was indeed a cosmic catastrophe, rather than merely a prolonged meteorological event, then one must conclude that its cause was gravitational rather than heat, which is the ultimate cause in floods caused by excessive rainfall [heat causing the evaporation and the organising of wind systems]. If the Flood was cosmic, it is not only a gravitational catastrophe – it is a gravitational-magnetic catastrophe...[274]

Inevitably, the inhabitants of high latitudes experienced the most massive rising of the Deluge waters as they became piled up into a gargantuan 'water mountain' submerging all land. Salvation in 'arks' and other floating refuges was the sole means of escape for those communities, while those in low latitudes, from which much water had been withdrawn polewards, this was not the case.

---

* See *Note 19.*

12

THE TORRENT FROM HEAVEN

A variety of traditional sources also refer to what was seemingly yet another aspect of the Deluge, namely that very considerable quantities of water from celestial sources contributed to its final mass.

In the *Apocalypse of Thomas*, for example, we read of blocks of 'hail' (ice) individually weighing about a hundredweight (50kg) showering Earth immediately before the Deluge. Again the *Zend-Avesta* mentions that, when Tistrya assaulted Earth, it sent tremendous rain in which the drops were the size of saucers, or of a man's head, and were sometimes boiling hot. Raindrops of phenomenal size are said to have fallen when the thunder-god of the Sac and Fox Indians of North America destroyed the primeval world long ago: they were allegedly the size of wigwams[275].

In these and many similar recollection which could be cited, we seem to be dealing with falls of what may be aptly termed 'whole water – water which descended in drops so large that their origin and formation cannot have been due to even the most chronic dust-polluted atmosphere. Obviously originating elsewhere, their great size suggests that these huge 'raindrops' were almost certainly great lumps of melted ice – pieces of the 'sea of crystal' (interpreted as an ice-field) which preceded Phaeton through space. Thus the largest pieces, melting slowest, appeared as huge 'drops' of 'whole water' when they reached the ground, and they naturally excited lasting astonishment. That their exceptional size was noticed amid the chronically deranged conditions suggests that these 'raindrops' fell, not so much in the high latitudes where the 'water-mountain' would obscure the falls, but in the low latitudes largely bereft of water, and where numerous confused individuals still dwelt.

The truly staggering duration of this rain deserves further comment. Best known, of course, is the 40 days mentioned in *Genesis*[276], a duration also given by the Tepanecas of pre-Columbian Mexico. The aforementioned tradition of the Sac and Fox tribes describes the rain as unlike any that has ever fallen before or since. It was unparalleled. It was compared to "seven water torrents"[277], described as "an overflowing rain, and great hailstones"[278], and reported as having "...descended out of the clouds [collapsed sky] as if poured out of jars... prodigiously, in drops like bull's heads, and men's heads, in handfuls and armfuls, both great and small"[279].

Therefore this rain fell torrentially and uninterruptedly as a kind of celestial cascade or waterfall. It rapidly swamped everything upon which it fell. Clearly it was no ordinary rain, a factor appreciated by many early writers who differentiated normal (seasonal or occasional) rains, which the called 'small rains', from exceptional (cataclysmic) rains, which they called 'great rains'[280]. Interestingly, these old accounts never mention 'great rains' except in association with catastrophic events, and then almost always as 'divine' retribution.

In the Norse *Eddas*, during Odin's battle with the Fenris-Wolf, the upper heaven is alleged to have been shattered, its wreckage plummeting to Earth as hail and huge blocks of ice. This shattering of the firmament or celestial vault reappears in numerous ancient traditions. The Maori, for instance, recall how their hero *Tawhaki*, in a fit of rage, once stamped on the 'floor of heaven'. The resultant crack permitted the celestial waters to pour down and flood Earth. In Chinese tradition, a marauding dragon is substituted fro *Tawhaki*; while in the Bundahish, 'demons' which "dashed against the celestial sphere" are given as the culprits[281]. Everywhere, therefore, these extraordinary rains are consistently accorded a cosmic origin and are associated with a tremendous celestial commotion – the Phaeton disaster.

Among the Jewish myths collected by Josippa ben-Gorion are some which specifically refer to an amalgamation of positively differentiated terrestrial (female) and celestial (male) waters. One even provides details of the date when this allegedly occurred: "On the seventeenth day of the month of *Cheshvan* the male waters fell from the heavens while the female waters welled forth from the depths. They united and waxed strong and overwhelmed the Earth and all that was upon it"[282]. *Cheshvan* was the second month of the old Jewish year. A variant account mentions that the event happened in the month of *Ijar*, which is the eighth month in the ordinary Jewish calendar. We shall later find these details to be most significant, merely adding here that the version in *Genesis* also states that the event occurred on the seventeenth day of the second month[283].*

13

DELUGE

The disintegration of Kingu signalled a marked lessening, or even breakdown, of the opposing gravitational fields which apparently held the 'heaped up' terrestrial waters immobile in high latitudes. This diminution evidently occurred quite slowly at first, for several Amerindian legends, of which two are given below, relate how the advance of the released waters was watched for hours, even days, beforehand. It presumably reflected the steadily lessening influence of the opposing gravitational field proportional to the rate of dispersal of Kingu's debris and Phaeton's departure towards the Sun.

The Choctaw of Oklahoma recall that after the primeval Earth had been plunged into darkness "for a long time" (another reference to 'collapsed sky' conditions) a bright light appeared in the north, which occasioned great joy. The light, however, proved to be a wall of water composed of mountain-high waters advancing toward the observers.

A similar narrative preserved amongst the Navajo of Arizona describes how one morning long ago there appeared in the east, and subsequently in the south, north and west, a phenomenon which from a distance resembled a high, steep wall of rock. It was, however, water steadily advancing toward them. A variant Navajo legend contains further interesting details. Long ago, the Navajo ancestors were surprised one day to see animals of every type running from east to west. Four days later they saw a bright light in the east, and those sent to investigate it returned with the news that it was a vast flood of water proceeding in their direction. Next morning this flood had drawn quite close, and filling the entire horizon except the west, advanced like a chain of high mountains[284].

The significant point here is the consistent description of the flood waters as being prodigiously high and advancing as a watery wall. Once the 'heaped-up' terrestrial waters were released from the counter-gravitational grip holding them, they began to flow equatorwards, slowly at first, but ever more speedily as a stupendous watery avalanche of awesome power. Even the *Koran*[285] states that the Deluge bearing Noah's ark was simply a vast wave – and this rapidly united with the very considerable quantity of water which had been received in lower latitudes from cosmic sources. Upon uniting, these waters formed the Deluge proper.

---

* See *Note 20.*

A closer look at some of the effects of various major floods and marine storms of modern times provides glimpses of the probable capacity, power and behaviour of the Deluge. Moreover, measurements of water velocities amply demonstrate the terrifying force of large bodies in violent motion. Engineers concerned with coastal sea-defences have long known of the power of stormy seas, when man-made structures become puny things. Consider the following examples.

Tremendous gales in December 1872 destroyed the seaward end of a large breakwater at Wick, in northern Scotland. It was built of large concrete blocks securely bound together and to the underlying bedrock by huge iron rods, and weighed over 800 tonnes.

> During the height of this winter gale the resident engineer watched the onslaught of the waves... Before his incredulous eyes, the whole mass of the pier was 'slewed around' until it was finally broken away from its attachments, lifted and deposited inside the pier. After the storm... divers... found that not only the concrete monolith but the whole of the lower mass attached to it by iron bolts had been carried away. The waves had torn loose, lifted and bodily moved a mass weighing not less than 1,350 tons. Five years later... the new pier, weighing about 2,600 tons, was then carried away.[286]

Previously-mentioned tsunamis can reach formidable heights. One in July 1958 at Lituya Bay, southern Alaska, reached the immense height of 1,700ft (523m), and in scale and effect probably approached the equivalent characteristics of the Deluge water-avalanche. A subsequent report stated:

> Examining the sides of the bay, geologist Don Miller (and) seismologist Don Tocher... found that the wave had swept along the side of the bay at about the 100ft level, knocking down virtually all of the trees and stripping them of their bark. The greatest surprise was what happened on a mountain spur across a narrow inlet from the largest of the rock falls. Here a swash swept up onto the ridge to a height of 1,700ft, making a clean sweep of the forest so that only one tree was left standing amidst the ruins. The trees at the upper end were washed into the living forest, showing that it was a wave rather than a landslide that caused this damage. Miller, flying along the bay a few hours after the quake, saw great masses of water still running down the sides of the mountain.[287]

It is important to note that even the largest tsunamis that do occasionally invade the land are incapable of travelling very far inland *and* sustaining their destructive power. The Deluge waters clearly behaved otherwise. They consisted of colossal aqueous masses which arrived *suddenly* at particular localities, which exerted *continuous* pressures upon everything they overflowed, and which, even though of comparatively brief duration, also poured *unabated* over the land for hours and days without respite. Only something like a displaced ocean relocating itself could produce such effects. Thus, missing these crucial facts, every previous attempt to explain away the Deluge calamity simply as an unusually severe river flood or as a series of exceptional tsunamis has failed to convince.

Discoveries made about water pressures and rates of flow today indicate how the Deluge waters must have acted in many regions all those millennia ago. It has been determined that winter gales, such as regularly batter the Scottish coast, produce water pressures as great as 6,000lbs per square foot (25,834kg/m^2)[288]. Pressures, however, largely depend on the depths of water concerned, and the speed at which it happens to move or the wind drives it. Hurricanes, for example, can drive waves ashore at speeds of 30–45mph (50–70kph), while the velocity of the falling crest of a wave only 30ft (9m) high produces a pressure of 49 tonnes per square yard[289]. The pressures exerted by the Deluge waters must have been immeasurably greater.

Studies of the rate of flow of ocean waters of different depths have produced the following results:

Depth of Sea		Height of wave		Velocity of water current	
feet	metres	feet	metres	mph	kph
200	61.5	100	30.7	22	35.2
300	92.3	100	30.7	19.5	31.2
400	123	100	30.7	17	27.2
600	185	150	46	20.5	32.8
800	246	200	61.5	28	44.8

Experiments have established that the force exerted on a surface increases as the square of the velocity, and varies as the sixth power of the velocity of the current involved. For instance, a current able to move a cube of given weight would, if its velocity were doubled, be capable of moving a cube 64 times heavier than the first-mentioned cube, and, if trebled, it could move a cube 729 times as heavy, and so on. Relating such velocities to the transportation of 'erratic' boulders by water, one investigator concluded that: "There is no doubt that blocks of 5 tons or upwards might be moved by a current of 10mph"[290].

Moreover, while currents flowing at a mere 2–3mph (3–5kph) cannot move even a modest-sized pebble, those with a velocity of about 10mph (16kph) can move blocks weighing several tonnes, currents moving at 15mph (24kph) can move 56 tonnes or so in weight, at 20mph (32kph) they can move blocks around 320 tonnes, and others flowing at 50mph (80kph) or higher could move boulders weighing many thousands of tonnes[291].

There is no reason why many of the 'erratic' boulders could not have been transported to their present locations by the Deluge waters, now that we perceive these as having been oceans undergoing relocation. Putnam[362] shows a boulder field assembled entirely by flash-flood waters in California. In all essentials it resembles others known to have been accumulated by mud-torrents, and yet others conventionally accorded glacial origins.

But could water have actually *uplifted* 'erratics' sometimes weighing many thousands of tonnes from low to high levels – as noted in Part One? Some near Settle in North Yorkshire, England, for instance, are 200ft (61m) higher than the nearest parent rocks[292], while others elsewhere sometimes lie higher still. In view of the above statistics, and of the stupendous pressures that ocean-sized masses of water on the move could exert, there appears no good reason why the Deluge waters could not have uplifted even the largest 'erratics'. In Part One we saw that ice could *not* have moved them.

During the summer of 1810, Long Lake and Mud Lake in Vermont were catastrophically emptied of their waters. Eye-witness descriptions of what occurred furnish valuable clues as to the kind of things that must have happened in many regions on a still greater scale at the time of the Deluge, and interested readers would do well to consult the fascinating report by S Edwards-Dwight[293]. Among the effects produced in a matter of minutes was the excavating of a huge gully 1 mile (0.4km) wide, and 50–90ft (15–28m) deep. Enormous immovable rocks jutting out of the valley sides altered the course of the torrent *without* lessening its force. Sand heaps up to 20ft (6m) deep and extending as much as an acre accumulated on the sides of these obstacles, and torn-up trees were embedded in them. Marks of the torrent's violence were later seen all the way down the valley to Lake Memphremagog, 21 miles (34m) distant. At Eno's Mill, 17 miles downstream, a boulder estimated to weigh 100 tonnes had been moved many yards from its original location upstream.

A horse caught by the torrent near Keene Corner was found a great distance down the valley "literally torn to pieces". Eye-witnesses reported that the torrent bore before it all the trees in its path, so that it looked as though a forest was on the move. Some of these were buried in sand and rubbish far down the valley, while others covered a 20–acre field being piled up to a height of 25ft (7m). All eye-witnesses agreed that the noise was louder than the "loudest thunder".

Similar devastation by pent-up waters occurred in 1818 in Switzerland, when avalanches of impacted snow dammed a narrow pass containing the River Drance. A large lake was formed some 700ft (215m) wide and 200ft (61m) deep. Engineers had succeeded in draining off about half of the lake's water when the central section of the dam suddenly collapsed.

> ...the residue of the lake was emptied in half an hour. In the course of its descent the water encountered several narrow gorges, and at each of these they rose to a great height... sweeping along rocks, forests, houses, bridges... Some fragments of granitic rocks of enormous magnitude... were torn out of a more ancient alluvium and borne down for a quarter of a mile. One fragment moved was sixty paces in circumference. The velocity of the water... was thirty-five feet per second.[294]

Severe floods in Scotland during 1829 actually cut *new* ravines in local hillsides and transported huge sandstone boulders some 200 yards (185m) – one being dumped 6ft (1.8m) *above* the level of its original site[295]. The huge muddy floods resulting from the eruption of Mt St Helens in May 1980 caused similar effects:

> An avalanche of volcanic debris ploughed into Spirit Lake, forcing millions of gallons of water through the lake's outlet. The velocity of the lahar [surge] was estimated at 29–55kph... Seven of the eight existing bridges were destroyed. The muddy flow poured through two logging camps 20km downstream, flipping over heavy equipment... devouring a locomotive... Thick mud, logs, boulders and anything else in the path of the lahar were swept up, carried to 70km downstream and dumped into the Cowlitz River... About 39 million cubic metres of material reduced the 180m wide shipping channel of the Columbia River from its normal depth of 12m to a depth of 4,3m for a distance of 6km.[296]

At some places walls of mud and volcanic debris 195ft (60m) high were left behind, modern equivalents of the comparable 'Pleistocene' deposits discussed in Part One. All these examples repeatedly emphasise the erosional and excavatory powers of violently agitated waters and the sheer volume of torn-up and relocated debris they are capable of moving. In every case vast water pressures were involved.

The pressure behind the initial watery face of the Deluge must have been titanic. Until the final phase of their dispersion, when they had reached lower latitudes, these waters were irresistible. Such torrents easily demolished colossal pieces of the Earth's lithosphere and transported them great distances, irrespective of local geography. It plastered up 'drift' against hillsides facing north or north-west (surfaces opposing its direction of flow) and, as seen in Part One, rammed 'erratic' boulders into solid strata. Animal debris in numerous bone-caves and rock fissures were frequently forced unnaturally by the flooding into even the tiniest crevices and most tortuous passages, sometimes penetrating the Earth's crust to great depths at all kinds of angles. Only under immense water pressures could such effects have been produced – ice pressure could not accomplish them.

It is reasonable to infer that the external gravitational field responsible for 'heaping up' the Deluge waters in high latitudes acted similarly on Earth's internal magma tides. If so, this must almost certainly have caused crustal bulging (the lithospheric expansion suggested by Oppenheim) in the northern hemisphere, together with a northwards flow of the magma normally south of the equator. Geoidal deformation almost certainly resulted, such as Taira[297] and others have urged.

For almost one hundred years, numerous geologists and physicists have investigated this deformation as having been actual rather than theoretical. In 1889, Rudzki recognised major geoidal deformation as having occurred during the 'Ice Age'[298], while in 1939, Sauramo placed the event in late Quaternary times[299], the very period we are considering.

It has been widely recognised that this deformation was caused by the shifting of surface loads[300] and pressures[301], and with how far the flexibility of the lithosphere[302] contrived to cope with the creep-strength of Earth's mantle[303], and with the distribution of viscous matter deep within the Earth's interior[304]. The 'heaping up' of a large part of the terrestrial waters at one geographical point was a remarkable instance of the shifting of surface loads and pressures.

The rapidity of this 'heaping up' meant that the shifting of the loads and pressures, and the subsequent deformation, was equally rapid. The magnitude of the crustal dislocations caused by this deformation are thus more readily understood. However, with the dissipation of the external gravitational influences, both the magma tide and the 'water mountain' were released. This led to the magma establishing a new equatorial 'bulge' and the consequential readjustments of the crust to meet this new geoidal shape.

14

SCOUR

Bearing the above in mind, it is easy to understand how, in Cambridgeshire, England, ocean-sized masses of water wrenched out huge lumps of Cretaceous strata, 430yds (397m) long and 60yds (55m) wide, and redeposited them incongruously many miles distant upon Jurassic strata[305]; or how the weight and pressure of such watery masses so compressed and crushed rocks immediately underlying 'boulder clay' around Holderness, Humberside, that they now look as though a steam-roller had once passed over them[306].*

The piling up of the Deluge waters to great heights in narrow spaces on encountering mountainous obstacles, as in the Alps for example, explains the deposition of huge rocks and great accumulations of gravel high on the flanks of infant peaks. These same waters banked up equally large accumulations of 'drift' against the lower slopes of the Himalayas, Andes, Altai mountains and other prominent ranges. Although this deposition was assumed to be the result of ice action, it is entirely consistent with water action on a stupendous scale, and supports the view of several authorities who argued for a *marine* origin for a large proportion of the 'drift'.

The passage of the Deluge waters across the landscape – from a north-south or north-west-southeast direction as the evidence previously presented consistently shows – was obviously a transient affair, but it was not entirely uniform. Traditions mention areas which escaped its ravages, and science has recognised such isolated refuges as well – albeit refuges from glaciation[307].

Numerous collapsed portions of the Earth's crust soon became basins for the new (present) seas and oceans, and the Deluge waters must have streamed off the newly-elevated land areas (the present continents) into these depressions.

The Deluge was also a powerful scouring agent. Thus, vertical polished rock faces on the *northern* side of Red Rock Pass, Alberta, were caused by water-borne pebbles carried tumultuously against them by exceptional water currents coming from the north. That the "...polished surfaces show southward flow into the Bonneville Depression"[308] merely lends credence to the ancient Chinese claim that the Deluge waters generally streamed south-east to drown great areas of land which had subsided in that hemisphere because "The whole Earth had tilted and sunk"[309].

Thus the scouring, scoring and polishing of rocks was, in many cases, caused by high-velocity water-borne debris of great depth and long continuous pressure, rather than by the conventionally-accepted glacial action.

---

* See *Note 21.*

The scouring effects of water upon land surface strata is often seriously underestimated. Many modern examples exist of cloudbursts achieving dire effects, such as the previously-mentioned 'moraine' found in Alabama last century, and the boulder debris which swamped Lynmouth, England in 1952. Dr Arkell described a similar event which occurred near Weymouth, Dorset, in 1955, when 11–12 inches (30cm) of rain fell on the adjacent hills in only 9 hours[310]. The cascading waters deepened, widened and cut new stream beds, scoured away entire hillsides and gouged out a crevasse almost 6ft (1.8m) deep in the solid chalk. Boulders, rubble, heaps of soil and uprooted vegetation were strewn everywhere.

If comparatively modest cloudbursts can produce such scour effects, the prodigious rains and the enormous aqueous movements associated with the Phaeton disaster must have denuded the landscape infinitely more acutely. Soil and softer surface deposits would have been removed from whole regions, to bury hillsides and entire valleys elsewhere.

Arkell regarded such downpours as:

> ...comparatively rare events that really mould the landscape... Lyell's principle of uniformitarianism... becomes credible only when it is realised that the 'exceptional' cloudburst is really part of the normal weather pattern, and, from the point of view of denudation, the important part.

In this context we suggest that the Phaeton disaster was also a 'rare' and 'exceptional' event, differing only from modern examples in its sheer scale and intensity. Accordingly, the violence of its action was correspondingly greater.

15

THE 'WOOD HILLS' OF THE NORTH

Enormous accumulations of sub-fossil and carbonised wood occur along the Arctic shores of Siberia, along the coastlines of the Bering Strait, and on various islands both north and south of that channel. Staggering amounts exist on many of the New Siberian Islands and, as we have seen, in the Alaskan 'muck' beds. The vast quantities of vegetable matter represent whole forests which have been obliterated and buried catastrophically. The constituent trees, which include sycamore, poplar, alder and sequoia, today flourish much further south, and represent a typical Miocene/Pliocene forest assemblage, evidently forming part of that flora which persisted more or less unchanged into 'Pleistocene' times, before being overwhelmed.

Before its submergence, it appears that Fennoscandia apparently bore luxuriant forests, for sub-fossil 'driftwood' now accumulates on the shores of several of its remaining fragments. On Koluguev Island, for example, pieces of this wood are regularly swept up from some now-submerged offshore source[311], while on Spitzbergen similar 'driftwood' occurs with whale remains several miles inland at least 30ft (9m) above present sea level[312]. Similar elevated inland locations for essentially identical 'driftwood' occur on many of the north Canadian islands, where the wood often lies embedded in steep cliff faces. At latitude 75°N on Banksland (Melville Island), for example, pine cones and acorns have been met with 300ft (92m) above the present sea level[313], and 'driftwood' occurs elsewhere on the island[314]. Fossil wood also occurs at a height of 1,800ft (550m) on Ellesmere Island, wood which surprisingly is of Siberian origin. It cannot be 'driftwood', because the north coast of the island is permanently ice-bound[315], nor can it have been transported glacially from Siberia, which has never possessed an ice-sheet of any significance, and sends no glaciers across the Arctic wastes to end at Ellesmere Island.

All across the northern Parry Islands (Melville, Cornwallis, Bathurst and Devon Islands) of the Queen Elizabeth group innumerable pieces of 'driftwood' and marine shells of 'Pleistocene' age frequently lie at heights well above the line of a supposed 'Pleistocene' submergence of those territories[316].* Many of the shells occur at quite extraordinary elevations, those on Somerset Island being 1,000ft (300m) above sea level. Others on the Fosheim Peninsula – where they occupy "several acres" – a thousand feet higher, and still others on the Grinnell Peninsula of Devon Island 2,300ft (700m) above sea level[317]. To account for their present occurrence, it has been suggested that the shells were pushed up to these elevations by a 'late Pleistocene' ice-sheet (the Laurentian)[318]. Except for Banks and Victoria Islands, this ice-field is widely alleged to have mantled the entire Canadian archipelago. As shown earlier, this is an erroneous concept.

As so often occurs when examining the wreck of the 'Pleistocene' world, the history of the Siberian tundra vegetation proves to be surprisingly complex, for the record there shows repeated changes between a cold, dry (steppe) ecology and a warm moisture-loving one. Further complications arise from the fact that a vast belt of trees, including lime, oak, elm and alder stretched at one time from the Ural Mountains in the west, through the Altai Mountains far into eastern Siberia[319]. The Ural and Altai ranges were among those which rose to their present elevations at the end of 'Pleistocene' times. The evidence implies that during the 'Pleistocene' period, a temperate *non-continental* climate existed across practically the whole of what is today southern Siberia, having no counterpart in that region today.

While trees today no longer grow further north than latitude 71°N in northern and north-eastern Siberia, their remains are consistently encountered for hundreds of miles northward towards the Pole. The story they tell is very impressive. Some of the most striking vestiges of these vanished forests were seen by Sannikov and Hedenström in 1806 during their discovery of the New Siberian Islands. They found there abundant remnants of enormous ancient forests. Many of the trees were still standing where they had grown, but others lay prostrate upon the perpetually-frozen ground[320]. Hedenström visited Kotelnyy Island, which lies at latitude 75°N, where he observed "remarkable wood hills" along its southern coast. Some of these 'hills' were as much as 180ft (55m) high and consisted almost wholly of the bituminous trunks of trees. On the summits of the 'hills' the trunks stood vertically with the tops snapped off.

Elaborating, another celebrated Arctic explorer, F R von Wrangell, said of these botanical graveyards, in which the bones of mammoths also abounded: "On ascending these hills, fossilised charcoal is met with everywhere... covered with a petrification which is so hard it can scarcely be scraped off with a knife"[321]. Lt Anjou visited these same islands on a later expedition and found the 'wood hills' extending for over 3 miles (5.2km) along the coast. He described the tree trunks as lying in clumps of fifty or more, often horizontally, and noted that the wood was friable, black in colour with a slight gloss, and how – like charcoal – it did not burn when lighted but merely glowed, giving off a resinous odour[322] At various neighbouring localities, other tree trunks, converted into a bituminous substance, lay in great horizontal piles alternating with sandstone layers containing tree stumps rooted *in situ*. Again, fossilised charcoal covered by ash, itself a petrification, was noticed everywhere[323].

In 1829, G A Erman went to Great Lyakhov Island, and was so impressed by the scene confronting him that the obvious cause of what had taken place was immediately apparent:

---

* See *Note 22.*

> On the summit of these hills (250–300ft high) [the trees] lie flung upon one another in the wildest disorder, forced upright in spite of gravitation, and with their tops broken off or crushed, as if they had been thrown with great violence from the south on a bank, and there heaped up... So it is clear that at the time when the elephants and the trunks of trees were heaped together, one flood extended from the centre of the continent... (and) may have poured from the highest mountains through the rocky valleys.[324]

The tremendous extent of these ancient forests can be judged from the occurrence on Maloi Island, in the Lyakhov group 100 miles (160km) to the south, of tree stumps *in situ* exactly like those on the New Siberian Islands, accompanied in some cases by leaves and cones. In Whitely's opinion they prove that "...when the mammoths and rhinoceroses lived in northern Siberia, these desolate islands were covered with great forests and bore a luxuriant vegetation"[325].

We venture to add that, when these 'Pleistocene' mammals roamed Siberia, the Lyakhov Island and New Siberian Island were not islands at all, but portions of the continuous land that stretched northwards from the present Asiatic mainland perhaps as far as the North Pole itself.

Further glimpses of the former flora of these northern islands were unearthed by Baron von Toll, who visited these regions several times between 1895 and 1902. One of his expeditions was to Great Lyakhov Island, where he discovered a totally frozen specimen of *Alnus fruticosa* – a member of the alder family – 90ft (28m) in length and complete with roots, leaves and fruits. Nearby were the remains of willow trees lying alongside the bones of mammoths[326].

These same forests extended over great expanses of what is presently the north Siberian mainland, for their remnants are found on the shores of inland lakes such as Lake Chastach. This lake lies on the tundra close to the River Kolyma, and "...every autumn throws up quantities of bituminous fragments of wood... the shore [being] covered to a depth of 2ft (0.7m)"[327]. Among the debris occur pieces of a solid substance like amber, considered to be the hardened resin of larch trees, but which, when burnt, failed to emit the odour of burning amber. Tree roots as fresh as if they had only just been severed from living trees, interspersed in black earth and ice-clay composing a cliff some 30–35ft (9–11m) high were found by Hedenström near Malaya-Kuropalasik-Vaga. The nearest living woods, however, were over 100 Russian *versts* (112km) distant[328]. Wrangell made similar discoveries in soil only a short depth below the surface near Kolymsk on the Chukchee Peninsula, and in cliff facing the Polar Sea. He described the permanently frozen ground there as containing "...a great measure of ice which never thaws, mixed with a little black earth and clay, amongst which are a few long thin roots of trees"[329].

Again, when Hedenström journeyed from the Indigirka River valley to Ulsiank, he observed:

> On the tundra, equally remote from the present line of forest, among the steep sandy banks of the rivers and lakes, are found large birch trees, complete with bark, branches and roots. At first glance they appear to have been well preserved by the earth, but on digging them up they are found to be in a thorough state of decay... the inhabitants of the neighbourhood use them as fuel, and designate these subterranean trees as *Adamovshtshina*, or of Adam's time. The first living birch tree is not found nearer than three degrees to the south, and then only in the form of a shrub.[330]

Herr von Ruprecht, who also travelled across Siberia, observed on the Chernoi Nos Peninsula, at the mouth of the Indiga River, where now only stunted birch bushes grow, upright rotten birch trees as tall as the average human being[331]. Nordenskiöld also noted under the tundra of the Yenisei valley large trees with their roots still fast in the frozen soil, although trees of the same type thrive today only much further south. Masses of 'driftwood' and mammoth bones occurred with these stumps[332].

Another interesting discovery was that of the shells of *Helix schrencki* which still retained *well-preserved colours*, near the mouth of the Awamka River in latitudes 68° and 69°N, and the finding by Prof Schmidt of the same mollusc with plant fragments in frozen freshwater beds below Dudinsk, latitude 77°N, well beyond the present northern limits of the trees. Speaking of his journey, Prof Schmidt informs us that: "On top of the tundra is often found Noah's wood and peat moss with *Planorbis limnaea*, and a large species of *Helix* which I have never found here alive"[333].

Apart from mentioning that the remains of vast sub-fossil forests of oaks and other trees occur near Novgorod and Tver in Russia, where living specimens cannot now grow[334], we should note that Erman ably summarised the distribution of the Siberian record as follows:

> It cannot escape notice that, as we go nearer the coast, the deposits of wood below the earth and also the deposits of bones which accompany the wood, increase in extent and frequency. Here, beneath the soil of Yakutsk the trunks of birch trees lie scattered, only singly, but on the other hand they form such great and well-stored strata under the tundras, between the Yana and the Indigirka, that the Yakadirs never think of using any other fuel than fossil wood. They obtain it on the shores of lakes, which are continually throwing up trunks of trees from the bottom... Thus, in New Siberia, on the declivities facing the south lie hills 200–300ft high, formed of driftwood; the ancient origin of which, as well as the fossil wood in the tundras, anterior to the earth in its present state, strikes at once even the most uneducated hunters. They call both sorts of wood *adamovchina* or adamitic things.[335]

Thus we find extensive areas within the Arctic Circle containing two kinds of fossil fuel – one which *drifted* to the places where it is now accumulated, and the second which plainly grew where it is now found. The distinction between these two types of timber dates from very early times in Siberia, where the former was called *Adamshina* (Adam's wood) and the latter *Noahshina* (Noah's wood)[336]. That this timber should be traditionally associated with the Noachian Deluge is of more than passing interest, particularly in view of the geologically recent occurrence of that disaster in a geographical region hosting the frozen carcasses of hairy mammoths and woolly rhinoceroses.

The consistently tumultuous manner of deposition of all this ancient timber, and the immense geographical extent of its remains, everywhere bespeaks of the sudden and violent demise of these huge forests. Likewise, the exceptional piling up at some localities, and the deep burial at others, of numberless trees could only have been accomplished on such a scale by tremendous water action wholly indiscriminate in its activities, like that produced by the release of those comprising the abovementioned 'Water Mountain'.

But if the eventual draining away of the Deluge waters seemed to herald the end of Earth's ordeals, one more was yet to come – refrigeration on a grand scale.

16

REFRIGERATION

For almost 150 years it has been acknowledged that, geologically recently, Earth has undergone a cold period epitomised by glacial conditions in both the northern and southern polar latitudes. However, no satisfactory theory has yet been proposed which actually explains what *caused* the 'Ice Age' in the first place. There appear to be no terrestrial conditions, as we know them, capable of producing the heat necessary to evaporate vast quantities of water to form continental-sized ice-sheets.

As it was recognised that warm air and elevated land areas were necessary to produce ice and rime (frost), the recent inception of the Gulf Stream in the North Atlantic was invoked as one of the prime causes of refrigeration[337]. Some have even argued that the Deluge itself induced glacial conditions[338]. It would appear that the key to solving the so-called 'Ice Age' problem lies in the Arctic, where the evidence has been frozen in a macabre fashion. The deeply frozen trunks of trees still bearing leaves and berries, the refrigerated carcasses of mammoths, woolly rhinoceroses, musk-ox and other 'late Pleistocene' animals are preserved today in the same chaotic order in which they died and were deposited. They represent a unique picture of a former world coming to a sudden halt and remaining at that point until today.

As we have already mentioned, the demise of mammoths and other animals was not caused by the onset of glacial conditions, as many authorities would have us believe, for the evidence shows that they were, in most cases, already dead before they were abruptly frozen. Therefore, instead of a slow gradual freeze and build-up of glacial conditions over a prolonged period, as is generally proposed, refrigeration was remarkably sudden and unrelenting. This was another of Phaeton's legacies.

The factors which led to this sudden glaciation have already been mentioned in other parts of the book. However, in order to trace a coherent sequence in the events before us, they are briefly itemised below:

- The tilting of the Earth from its previous axis immediately turned the 'Golden Age' polar sub-temperate zones away from the Sun's heat;
- The waters of the world became 'heaped up' in polar regions;
- The induced tectonic changes caused massive volcanic discharges leading to 'collapsed sky' conditions. In high latitudes these conditions effectively blocked out sunlight and solar warmth at ground level in all regions for a very long time. This atmospheric pollution and the heat generated by crustal dislocations greatly increased precipitation[339] which fell as snow and sleet. In high latitudes, temperatures were thus severely reduced and held there for years due to a virtual perpetual night;
- After the release of the waters and the establishment of new oceanic and meteorological regimes, circulating warm currents (such as the Gulf Stream) created fog banks along polar and sub-polar coastlines. Enhancing the already-thick cloud cover blanketing those regions, this led to the formation of ice and rime. Furthermore, practically all land surfaces in these regions had been drenched, even waterlogged, by the Deluge, and this undoubtedly ensured the perpetuation there of a general refrigeration. In lower

> latitudes, this waterlogged ground led eventually to the formation of numerous peat beds. Thus, the Deluge and the Gulf Stream indirectly contributed to the glaciation.

Bodies of former Deluge water trapped in valleys and depressions in high latitudes would have quickly frozen solid. Ice-cliffs and buried ice lenticles, as well as the strings and ribbons of ice accompanying biological debris in the Alaskan and Siberian 'drift' are surviving remnants of trapped Deluge water.

Glacialists supporting the conventional notion of alternating glacial and interglacial episodes have recognised the abruptness of both the beginning[340] and end[341] of the last glacial period in their scheme of events. Many authorities now hold that this was *swift* and *rapid*, two terms repeatedly used to convey the speed of first the ice build-up and, later, its dissipation. Lamb and Woodroffe, for example, have argued that after the inception of the last glacial period there was a "...swift establishment of ice over northern and north-western Europe, and over some extensive hinterland in North America... within 100–500 years"[342]. Others have suggested still shorter times[343].

The inception of Greenland's present ice-sheet, considered at some length earlier, has lately been attributed to massive 'post-glacial vulcanism[344]. We have repeatedly seen that Phaeton's visit abruptly generated severe vulcanicity around 11,500 years ago – a date strikingly close to that (11,000 years BP) now widely held to mark the end of alleged 'Ice Age' and the beginning of Holocene (Recent) times, when prodigious quantities of volcanic ash were deposited within the aforementioned Alaskan 'muck' beds enveloping countless diluvially-entombed remnants of late 'Pleistocene' animals.

The scale, extent and abruptness of this vulcanicity worldwide, and the attendant atmospheric pollution, was so great that the *inevitable* lowering thereby of temperatures globally, especially in high latitudes, was *automatically* rapid. Direct connections between widespread severe late 'Pleistocene' vulcanism and profound climatic changes (glaciation included) have been repeatedly stressed on previous pages and have formed the subject of successive studies by, among many others, Lamb[345], Hammer[346], Aubert de la Rüe[347], Nixon[348] and Pollack[349], and tie in closely with the swift environmental changes which, as noted previously, were prominent features of the Younger Dryas episode.

The great lenticles and ribbons of ice which locally penetrate the Alaskan 'muck' beds, just as they do in equivalent deposits containing similar organic remains in Siberia, were clearly frozen more or less at, or very shortly after, the actual accumulation of the beds. In other words, the freezing of these beds, the deposition of the volcanic ash layers within them, the slaughter of the innumerable animals they now yield, and the aqueous (diluvial) mixing of this assorted debris into chaotic 'muck' deposits was *extraordinarily* rapid. The singular evidence of the suddenly and permanently refrigerated animal carcasses found in both the Siberian and Alaskan deposits (see Appendix A) not only overwhelmingly confirms this but suggests that in at least those regions refrigeration was virtually instantaneous and occurred during the final stage of the Deluge phase of the giant calamity we are outlining here.

Most significantly, several writers have urged that the radical climatic changes of the so-called glacial and interglacial episodes are explained only by major vulcanism arising from discontinuous motions of disturbed crustal plates[350]. This is precisely what occurred at the time of the Phaeton disaster and in the period immediately afterwards. The disaster apparently set in motion a chain-reaction, with one set of effects leading inevitably to the next, and of which the latest and less severe are still being experienced today.

In our opinion, the growth of the present polar ice-caps did not lead to the development of the vast ice-sheets advocated by Geikie and Penck, but rather to a multiplicity of glaciers (many of very large size) on all the recently elevated plateaux and mountain ranges. These even formed on high land in tropical regions. Thus, glaciers descended Mt Kilimanjaro in Tanzania to 3,000ft (900m) *lower* than their remnants do today[351]. Others even then existed on the equator[352]. Worldwide, they represented what is now termed the Little Ice Age[353].

Between 11,500 and 7,500 years BP, these glaciers produced a massive rearrangement of many superficial 'drift' deposits, relocated detached boulders, left thousands of moraines and influenced climates locally. But not all moraines were or are necessarily of glacial origin[354]. Glaciers proceeded at different speeds depending on local conditions, sometimes retreating and re-advancing several times over the same routes. In doing so, they locally modified existing mountain valleys, fiords and hillsides, and carved out mountainside depressions such as cirques. Only very occasionally did they unite to form ice-sheets of limited extent. These actions did not cause the polishing, fluting, gouging or striation of rock strata which, though commonly attributed to supposed ice action during the 'Ice Age', were made during the Phaeton confrontation *before glaciation commenced*. Thus, while the ice-sheets so beloved of orthodox glacialists never really existed, the glaciers most certainly did. The glaciers of today are the last vestiges of a frigid era that ought more properly to be styled the 'Glacier Age' rather than the 'Ice Age'.

Obviously these glaciers did not all form at the same rate, for their growth depended on variations of snowfall, the latitude of their occurrence and the gradient of the hill or mountainside down which they descended. Scientists have calculated some reliable dates for the initiation and maximum expansion of several famous glacier (including the Mer de Glace on Mont Blanc and the Rhone Glacier), and these not only correlate with the 11,500 years BP date we have advocated for the Phaeton disaster, but show that the entire 'Glacier Age' occurred within the Holocene period. Incidentally, the date given for the great tectonic changes which occurred on Spitzbergen and neighbouring islands and for their *glaciation* is also Holocene[355].

It would appear that the conditions producing the growth of the glaciers were geologically of short duration and lasted until early historical times – say 6,000–7,000 years ago in Eurasia and as late as 3,000 years ago in North America. Thus, the terrible Fimbul winter of Norse tradition is quite credible, and is in keeping with the belief of the Aymara Indians of Andean Peru that, after the Deluge, the mightiest of the gods punished the wicked by throwing a coat of snow and ice over the whole country[356].

Even the Polynesians, now living in idyllic surroundings, have memories about early times when their gods and ancestors lived in severe wintry conditions. S P Smith noted that: "The Tongans have also a tradition of the ice-covered ocean, which they call *Taifatu*, which means the thick fat-like or congealed ocean, and which some of their ancestors had been in ages ago"[357]. And Brown observed that: "Most of the Polynesian gods and demigods of the underworld have indications in their careers of having come from a land of bitter winter"[358].

It is surely significant, therefore, that in the Babylonian *Talmud* a celestial body known as *Kimah* is described as the *source* of 'great cold'; and that an ancient Jewish legend states that a change in, or of, Kimah was *responsible for* the Deluge[359]. Kimah was regarded either as a planet or the constellation of the Pleiades, which, as the undermentioned details suggest, was a most interesting concept.

The ancient association of a period of intense cold on Earth with some celestial influence is also found in the Old Testament, which links the icy phase with the Pleiades and with *Mazzaroth* (alias Phaeton/Marduk), for we read:

> *Out of whose womb came forth the ice?*
> *And the hoary frost of heaven,*
> *who hath gendered it?*

Table 5C

Phaeton's record compared: geological/biological, astrophysical and traditional.

Geological/Biological (factual) (all dated 'late Pleistocene')	**Astrophysical** (theoretical)	**Traditional** (memories)
Deposition of 'drift' and silt		Deposition of mud and gravel
	Change in atmosphere, Nitric acid formed and chemical reactions due to release of energy	Changed atmosphere - described as poisoned
Changed bio-ecological regimes		Changed biological regime
Changed polar axis	Change in polar axis of rotation Slowed rotational speed	Change in polar axis
Variable axial rotation - length of day fluctuates	Change in length of day, year and seasons	Changes in length of day and seasons
		Changes in position of polar constellations
Changed topography with: land elevation/subsidence, mountain elevation/subsidence, disappearance and creation of seas, desert formation		Land subsidence mountain elevation/subsidence disappearance of seas
	Noise from sonic booms and earthquakes	Deafening noise
Changed water levels		Drought
Conflagration in some areas	Rise in temperatures above boiling point of water	Tremendous fire and heat boiling seas, lakes and rivers
Destruction of flora and fauna		Destruction of animal life, withering of vegetation
Dust in the atmosphere	Atmospheric pollution: low cloud-cover in high latitudes	Rains of fire and dust - a collapsed sky
Flooding	Giant tides raised and pulled polewards - when released caused global flooding	Northward trend of water followed by world deluge
Geoidal deformation	Geoidal deformation	
Global crustal fracturing with: crustal shortening, expansion, inversion, overthusting, tilting, lateral displacements, coastal warping	Global earthquakes. Puncturing of crust produces violent explosions. Impacts cause low-presure areas leading to hurricane force winds	Earth cracks into great chasms Hurricane force winds
Magnetic reversal with: anomalous magnetic losses, anomalous magnetic trends	Magnetic reversal	
Massive lava/magma flows	Lava flows	Rivers of fire
Marine displacements		Tritonis, Han Hai
Period of intense cooling	Drop in temperatures globally due to vulcanism	Sun blotted out
Sudden onset of glacial conditions in northern hemisphere	Earth plunged into darkness for 5 years or longer depending on duration of vulcanism	Sudden arrival of glacial conditions and perpetual night
Uni-directional 'meteoric' fall in northern hemisphere		Falls of metal and stones
Uni-directional movement of huge 'erratics'		Movement of huge rocks
Uni-directional striation flow across northern hemisphere		
Worldwide vulcanism	Severe vulcanism	Widespread conflagration

> *The waters are hid as with a stone*
> *and the face of the deep is frozen.*
> *Canst thou bind the sweet influences of Pleiades,*
> *or loose the bands of Orion?*
> *Canst thou bring forth Mazzaroth in his season?*[360]

Here, perhaps, is an indication of the celestial direction from which Phaeton arrived – from that of the Pleiades and Orion.

So in antiquity at least, the notion of great terrestrial cold was directly associated with significant celestial events and with a period of great darkness, and to have quickly followed a worldwide Deluge. These traditions, therefore, are not only consistent with one another, but also reflect the correct sequence of physical processes and effects traceable by scientific investigation. Furthermore, they also largely coincide with the theoretical propositions of astrophysicists respecting the probable effects sustained by Earth in the event of a close cosmic fly-by. Table 5C gives a comparison of these effects. Surely such harmony between essentially disparate material cannot be fortuitous.

REFERENCES

1. Bellamy, H S. 1945. *In the Beginning God* (London), 212pp; see p157.
2. Posewitz, T. 1892. *Borneo: Its Geology and Mineral Resources*, tr by F H Hatch, (London) xxxii + 495pp; see p260, footnotes 1 and 3, p261, footnote 1.
3. Stephens, J. 1919–1920. "The Freshwater Sponges of Ireland", *Proc Roy Irish Acad*, vol xxxv, pp205–254.
4. Babcock, W H. 1922. "Legendary Islands of the Atlantic", *Amer Geogr Soc Res*, ser no 8, (Greenwich, USA), 196pp; see p128.
5. Hobbs, W H. 1959. "Zeno and the geography of Greenland", *Imago Mundi*, vol vi, pp15–19.
6. Babcock, W H. 1922. *Op cit*, pp96, 141.
7. Hobbs, W H. 1959. *Loc cit*.
8. Hapgood, C H. 1966. *Maps of the Ancient Sea Kings: Evidence of Advanced Civilisations in the Ice Age* (Philadelphia), 316pp; see pp156–7.
9. Hapgood, C H. 1966. *Op cit*.
10. Hapgood, C H. 1979. *Op cit*, 2nd edn (London); see pp124–133, 251–2.
11. Embleton C, & C M King. 1975. *Glacial Geomorphology* (London), 2nd edn, vi + 573pp; see p16.
12. Baird, P D. 1964. *The Polar World* (London), xvi + 328pp; see p246.
13. Embleton C, & C A M King. 1975. *Op cit*, p49.
14. Denton G H, & T J Hughes. 1981. *The Last Great Ice Sheets* (New York), 464pp; see p50.
15. Denton G H, & T J Hughes. 1981. *Op cit*, pp48–49.
16. Inglefield, Capt. 1867. "On the Change of the Obliquity of the Ecliptic: its influence on the climate of the Polar regions and on the level of the sea", *Phil Mag*, ser 4, vol 33, pp426–445.
17. Holtzcherer, J J, G de Q Robin. 1954. "Depth of the Polar Ice Caps", *Geogr J*, vol cxx, part 2, June, pp193–202.
18. Johnson S J, H B Clausen *et al*. 1992. *Loc cit*, p533. White, J W C. 1993. "Don't touch that dial", *Nature*, vol 364, issue 6434 (July 15th), p186.
19. Putnam, W C. 1964. *Geology* (New York), xiii + 480pp; see p125.
20. Forrest, H E. *The Atlantean Continent* (London), 2nd edn, 352pp; see p55.
21. Pickles, T. 1953. *The World* (London), xvi + 431pp; see p315.
22. Scharff, R F. 1899. *The History of the European Fauna* (London), vii + 364pp; see p156, fig 12.
23. Maunder, A S D. 1912. "The Zoroastrian Star Champions", *Observatory*, vol xxxv, (Nov), pp393–6; see pp395–6.
24. Suess, E. 1904. *The Face of the Earth*, 2 vols, (London); see vol 1, pp17–18.
25. Kennett, J P, & N D Watkins. 1970. "Geomagnetic Polarity Change, volcanic maxima and faunal extinctions in the South Pacific", *Nature*, vol227, pp930–934.
26. Gray, L (ed). 1918. J Machal in *The Mythology of All Races*, 13 vols, (Boston); see vol iii, p229.
27. Ginzberg, L. 1925. *Legends of the Jews*, 7 vols, (Philadelphia); see vol ii, p259.
28. Williamson, R W. 1933. *Religious and Cosmic Beliefs of Central Polynesia*, 2 vols, (Cambridge); see vol i, p41.
29. Bancroft, H H. 1875–6. *Native Races of the Pacific States of North America*, 5 vols, (London); see vol iii, p86.
30. Aston, W G (tr). 1956. *The Nihongi: Chronicles from Japan from Earliest Times to AD 697* (London), xx + 443pp; see p110.
31. Teit, J A. 1917. "Kaska Tales", *J Am Folklore*, vol xxx, p440.
32. Bellamy, H S. 1936. *Moons, Myths and Man* (London), 351pp; see p80.
33. Frobenius, L. 1898. *Die Weltanschauung der Naturvölker* (Weimar), xv + 427pp; see pp355–7.
34. Bellamy, H S. 1936. *Op cit*, p277.

35. Aston, W G (tr). *Op cit*, p46.
36. Bellamy, H S. 1936. *Op cit*, p286.
37. Hallock, W. 1901. "Peculiar Effects due to Lightning Discharge on Lake Champlain in August 1900", *J Geol*, vol 9, pp671–2.
38. Barnett, V H. 1908. "An Example of Disruption of Rock by Lightning", *J Geol*, vol 16, pp568–571.
39. Griggs, G B, & J A Gilchrist. 1983. *Geological Hazards, Resources and Environmental Planning* (Belmont, Calif), 2nd edn, xvii + 502pp; see p82.
40. Williams, H, & A R McBirney. 1979. *Volcanology* (San Francisco), 396pp; see p362.
    Stothers, R B. 1984. "The Great Tambora Eruption in 1815 and its Aftermath", *Science*, vol 242, pp1191–1198.
41. Williams, H, & A R McBirney. 1979. *Op cit*.
    Harrington, C R (ed). 1992. *The Year without a Summer. World climate in 1816*, (Ottawa), 576pp.
42. Lamb, H H. 1970. "Volcanic Dust in the Atmosphere: with a chronology and assessment of its meteorological significance", *Phil Trans Roy Soc Lond*, vol 266, pp425–533.
43. Bray, J R. 1977. "Pleistocene Volcanism and Glacial Initiation", *Science*, vol 197, pp251–254.
44. Kennett, J P, & R C Thunnell. 1975. "Global Increase in Quaternary Explosive Volcanism", *Science*, vol 187, pp497–503.
45. Pollack, J B *et al*. 1976. "Volcanic Eruptions and Climatic Change: a theoretical assessment", *J Geophys Res*, vol 81, pp1071–1083.
46. Lamb, H H. 1970. *Op cit*.
47. Clube, V, & W M Napier. 1982. "The Role of Episodic Bombardment in Geophysics", *Earth & Planetary Sci Letts*, no 57, pp251–262.
48. *Anonymous*. 1964. "What's Happened to the Earth's Helium?", *New Scientist*, vol 24, pp631–2.
49. Ovenden, M W. 1972. "Bode's Law and the Missing Planet", *Nature*, vol 239, pp508–9.
    Van Flandern, T C. 1978. "A Former Asteroidal Planet and the Origin of Comets", *Icarus*, vol 36, pp51–74; see p51.
50. Gold, T. 1955. "Instability of the Earth's Axis of Rotation", *Nature*, vol 175, pp526–9.
51. Warlow, P. 1978. "Geomagnetic Reversals", *J Phys A*, vol 11, pp2107–2130.
52. Sagan, C. 1977. "An Analysis of *Worlds in Collision*", pp41–104 in *Scientists Confront Velikovsky*, D Goldsmith (ed), (Ithaca & London), 184pp.
53. Leet, L D. 1948. *The Causes of Catastrophe* (New York), 232pp; see pp1–6.
54. Leet, L D. 1948. *Op cit*, pp53–54.
55. Leet, L D. 1948. *Op cit*, p7.
56. Leet, L D. 1948. *Op cit*, p46.
57. Fuller, M L. 1912. "The New Madrid Earthquake", *Bull US Geol Surv*, no 494, p52.
58. Vitaliano, D R. 1973. *Legends of the Earth: their Geologic Origins* (Indiana Univ Press), xiii + 305pp; see p100.
59. Whittow, J. 1980. *Disasters* (London), 398pp; see pp139–141.
60. Whittow, J. 1980. *Op cit*, p150.
61. Brunsden, D *et al*. 1977. *The Unquiet Landscape* (London), 168pp; see p37.
62. Strachey, R. 1894. "The Landslip at Gohna, in British Garwhal", *Geogr J*, vol iv, no 2, pp162–170; see pp162 & 166.
63. *Anonymous*. 1961. *Encyclopaedia Britannica*; see vol 23, pp443–444.
64. Leet, L D. 1948. *Op cit*, pp169–170.
65. Vitaliano, D R. 1973. *Op cit*, p90.
66. Burrard, S G. 1912. "The Earth as a Planet: the Geology of India", *Observatory*, vol xxxv, May, pp189–193.
67. See, T J J. 1913. "Further Considerations on the Origin of the Himalayan Mountains and the Plateau of Tibet", *Proc Amer Philos Soc*, vol lii, pp495–515; see p496.
68. Cloos, H, & C Dietz. 1954. *Conversations with the Earth* (London), xiii + 427pp; see p258.
69. Burrard, S G. 1912. *Op cit*, p191.
70. Mantura, A J. 1972. "Geophysical Illusions of Continental Drift", *Bull Amer Ass Petrol Geol*, vol 56, pp1552–1556.
71. Oppenheim, V. 1967. "Critique of Hypothesis of Continental Drift", *Bull Amer Ass Petrol Geol*, vol 51, pp1354–1360; see p1360.
72. Taira, K. 1981. "Holocene Tectonism in Eastern Asia and Geoidal Changes", *Palaeogeogr Palaeoclimat Palaeoecol*, vol 36, pp75–85; see p75.
73. Spilhaus, A. 1975. "Geo-Art: Tectonics and Platonic Solids", *Trans Amer Geophys Un*, vol 56, pp52–57; see fig 8.
74. Kerr, R A. 1984. "Continental Heading Drilling Deeper", *Science*, vol 224, p1418.
    Kerr, R A. 1984. "Probing the Deep Continental Crust", *Science*, vol 225, p492.
75. Norman, J, & M Chukwu-Ike. 1977. "The World is a Bit Cracked", *New Scientist*, vol 73, pp320–322.
76. Nixon, G T. 1982. "The Relationships between Quaternary volcanism in Central Mexico and the Seismicity and Structure of Subducted Ocean Lithosphere", *Bull Geol Soc Amer*, vol 93, pp514–523; see p514.
77. Mooser, F, & M Maldonado-Koerdell. 1961. "Tectonica penecontemporanea a lo largo de la costa mexicana deal Océano Pacífico", *Geofisica Internat*, vol 1, pp3–20.
78. Gastil, G R, & W Jensky. 1973. "Evidence for strike-dip Displacement beneath the trans-Mexican Volcanic Belt", *Stanford Univ Publ Geol Sci*, vol 13, pp171–180.
79. Nixon, G T. 1982. *Op cit*, p517.
80. Meyer-Abich, H. 1956. "Los volcanos activos de Guatemala y El Salvador", *An Serv Geol Nacl El Salvador*, vol 3, pp1–102.
81. Whitmore, T C (ed), 1981. *Wallace's Line or Plate Tectonics* (Oxford), xii + 91pp.
82. Kennedy, W Q. 1947. "Catalogue of the Active Volcanoes of the World", *Bull Vulcanologique, Suppl de Serie II*, tome vii.
83. Savage-Landor, H. 1913. *Across Unknown South America*, 2 vols, (London); see vol 1, pp77, 176–7, 182, 186, 269–271, 363.

84. Savage-Landor, H. 1913. *Op cit*, vol 1, pp336–7; see plate opp p332.
85. Leet, L D, & F J Leet. 1961. *The World of Geology* (New York), vi + 262pp; see p172.
86. Putnam, W C. 1964. *Geology* (New York), xiii + 480pp; see p79.
87. Leet, L D, & F J Leet. 1961. *Op cit*, p172.
88. Stearns, H T, & W O Clark. 1930. "Geology and Water Resources of the Kan District, Hawaii", *US Geol Surv Water Supply Paper* 616.
89. Gallant, R. 1964. *The Bombarded Earth* (London), 256pp; see p64.
    Vitaliano, D R. 1973. *Op cit*, pp185–187.
90. Bullard, F M. 1962. *Volcanoes in History, in Theory, in Eruption* (Austin TX), 441pp; see p85.
91. Furneaux, R. 1964. *Krakatoa* (New Jersey), 224pp; see p154.
92. Gallant, R. 1964. *Op cit*, p65.
93. Leet, L D. 1948. *Op cit*, p8.
94. Leet, L D, & F J Leet. 1961. *Op cit*, p186.
95. Leet, L D. 1948. *Op cit*, p8.
96. Leet, L D. 1948. *Op cit*, pp9–10.
97. Hovey, E D. 1902. "Observations on the eruptions of 1902 of La Soufrière, St Vincent, and Mt Pelée, Martinique", *Amer J Sci*, ser 4, vol xiv (clxiv), pp319–358.
98. Hovey, E O. 1902. *Op cit*, pp334–5.
99. Hovey, E O. 1902. *Op cit*, p357.
100. Embleton C, & C A M King. 1975. *Op cit*, p184.
101. Blackwelder, E. 1928. "Mudflow as a Geologic Agent in semi-arid Mountains", *Bull Geol Soc Amer*, vol xxxix, pp465–483, pp471ff.
102. Whittow, J. 1980. *Op cit*, p145.
103. Whittow, J. 1980. *Ibid.*
104. Perret, F A. 1935. "The Eruption of Mt Pelée, 1929–1932", *Publ Carnegie Inst*, Washington, no 458, pp45, 87.
105. Hovey, E O. 1909. "Striations and U-shaped valleys produced by other than glacial action", *Bull Geol Soc Am*, vol xx, pp409–416; see fig 2 in plate 38.
106. MacDonald, G A. 1972. *Volcanoes* (New Jersey), xi + 510pp; see p4.
107. Gorshkov, G S, & Y M Dubik. 1969. "Directed Blast on the Volcano Shiveluch", in *Vulkany i Izerzheniya* (Moscow), *Akad Nauk USSR Sibirskoye Otdeleniye, Inst Vulkanologii, Izdatel'stvo* "Nauka", pp3–37.
108. Griggs, G B, & J A Gilchrist. 1983. *Geologic Hazards, Resources and Environmental Planning* (Belmont CA), 2nd edn, xvii + 502pp; see p82.
109. Gray, L H (ed). 1916. *Op cit*; see vol x, pp223–224.
110. Tylor, E B. 1874. *Primitive Culture*, 2 vols, (Boston); see vol ii, p288.
111. Gray, L H (ed). 1916. *Op cit*; see vol ii, p339.
112. Ellis-Davidson, H R. 1964. *Gods and Myths of Northern Europe* (London), 225pp.
113. Miller, F J (tr). 1916. Ovid P. *Metamorphoses* (London & New York).
114. Bellamy, H S. 1936. *Op cit*, p114.
115. Bellamy, H S. 1936. *Op cit*, p77.
116. Dana, J D. 1880. *Manual of Geology* (New York), 3rd edn, xvi + 911pp; see p275.
117. Geikie, J. 1877. *The Great Ice Age* (London), 2nd edn, xxvii + 624pp; see p21.
118. Geikie, J. 1877. *Op cit*, pp149–150.
119. Dana, J D. 1880. *Op cit*, p220.
120. *Anonymous*. 1878. *American Encyclopedia*; see vol vi, p112.
121. *Anonymous*. 1878. *Op cit*, pp111, 114.
122. Figuier, L. 1891. *The World Before the Deluge*, (Bristow's translation), (London), viii + 518pp; see p435.
123. Figuier, L. 1891. *Op cit*, p463.
124. Carnoy, A J. 1917. In Gray, L (ed). *Op cit*, vol vi.
125. Eisler, R. 1910. *Weltmantel und Himmelszelt*, (München); see vol ii, p453.
126. King, L W. 1902. *The Seven Tablets of Creation* (London), 2 vols.
127. Gadd, C J. 1929. *The Babylonian Story of the Deluge and the Epic of Gilgamesh* (Brit Mus, London) 57pp; see p36.
128. Gadd, C J. 1929. *Op cit*, p35.
129. Gadd, C J. 1929. *Op cit*, p36.
130. Ginzberg, L. 1925. *Op cit*, vol ii, p360.
131. Gómara, F L de. 1553. *Conquista de Mexico* 2 vols, (Madrid); see vol ii, pp261ff.
132. Holmes, A. 1964. *Principles of Physical Geology* (London), 2nd edn, xv + 1288pp; see p471.
133. Tylor, E B. 1874. *Op cit*, p322ff.
134. Alexander, H B. 1916. In Gray, L H (ed). *Op cit*, p223.
135. *Anonymous*. 1881. "Precipitation", *Mon Weather Rev*, (June), p18.
136. Geikie, J. 1877. *Op cit*, p150.
137. Redfield, W G. 1839. "Some account of violent columnar whirlwinds which appear to have resulted from the action of large circular fires", *Am J Sci*, vol xxxvi, pp50–59.
138. Bond, H (ed). 1946. *Fire and Air War* (Nat Fire Protection Assn, Boston), xii + 262pp; see p85.
139. Bond, H (ed). 1946. *Op cit*, p116.
140. Bond, H (ed). 1946. *Op cit*, p118.
141. Bullard, F M. 1976. *Volcanoes of the Earth* (Austin), revd edn, 579pp; see p152.
142. Bond, H (ed). 1946. *Op cit*, p117.
143. Bond, H (ed). 1946. *Op cit*, p114.
144. Sheahan, J W, & G P Upton. 1871. *The History of the Great Conflagration* (Chicago), 458pp.
145. Sheahan, J W, & G P Upton. 1871. *Op cit*, p87.
146. Sheahan, J W, & G P Upton. 1871. *Op cit*, pp85–86.
147. Sheahan, J W, & G P Upton. 1871. *Op cit*, p119.
148. Savage, H jr. 1982. *The Mysterious Carolina Bays* (Univ Sth Carolina), xv + 121pp; see p2.
149. Goodwin, B K, & G H Johnson. 1970. "Geology of the Upland Gravels near Midlothian, Virginia", *Atlantic Coastal Plain Geol Assoc Guidebook*, pt 2, *11th Ann Fld Conf*, Norfolk VA.
150. Savage, H jr. 1982. *Op cit*, p14.
151. Savage, H jr. 1982. *Op cit*, p23.

152. Savage, H jr. 1982. *Op cit*, p7.
153. Savage, H jr. 1982. *Op cit*, pp4, 7.
154. Velikovsky, I. 1956. *Earth in Upheaval* (London), xiv + 263pp; see p87.
155. Savage, H jr. 1982. *Op cit*, p7.
156. Tuomey, M. 1847. *Report on the Geology of South Carolina* (Columbia, S Carolina), iv + 293pp.
157. Glenn, L E. 1895. "Some notes on Darlington (SC) 'Bays'", *Science*, vol 2, pp472–5.
158. Smith, L L. 1931. "Solution Depressions in Sandy Sediments of the Coastal Plain of South Carolina", *J Geol*, vol 39, pp641–652.
159. Melton, F A, & W Schriever. 1933. "The Carolina 'Bays' – are they Meteor Scars?", *J Geol*, vol 41, pp52–66; see p56.
160. Nininger, HH. 1934. "When the Sky Rains Stone and Iron", *Literary Digest*, vol 117, pp16–29.
     Wylie, C C. 1933. "On the Formation of Meteorite Craters", *Pop Astron..*, vol 41, pp211–214.
161. Melton, F A. 1934. "The Origin of the Carolina 'Bays'", *Discovery* (June), pp151–4.
162. Cooke, C W. 1940. "Elliptical Bays of South Carolina and the Shape of Eddies", *J Geol*, vol 48, pp205–211.
163. Kelly, A O, & F Dachaille. 1953. *Target Earth: the Role of Large Meteors in Earth Science* (Carlsbad, CA), 263pp.
164. Grant, C. 1945. "A Biological Explanation of the Carolina Bays", *Sci Mon*, vol 61, pp443–450.
165. Shand, S J. 1946. "Dust Devils? Paralelism between the South African Salt Pans and the Carolina Bays", *Scient Mon*, vol 62, p117.
166. McGarthy, G R. 1937. "The Carolina Bays", *Bull Geol Soc Amer*, vol 48, pp1211–1226.
167. Corlett, E H. 1947. "The Carolina Bays", *Scient Mon*, vol 46, p187.
168. McCampbell, J C. 1944. "Meteorites and the Carolina Bays", *Pop Astron*, vol 53, pp388–392.
169. Prouty, W F. 1952. "Carolina Bays and their Origin", *Bull Geol Soc Amer*, vol 63, p167–224.
170. Savage, H jr. 1982. *Op cit*, p96.
171. Kelly, A O, & F Dachaille. 1953. *Op cit*.
172. Carson, C E, & K M Hussey. 1962. "The Oriented Lakes of Arctic Canada", *J Geol*, vol 70, pp417–439.
173. Black, R F, & W L Barksdale. 1949. "Oriented Lakes of Northern Alaska", *J Geol*, vol 57, pp105–118.
174. Black, R F, & W L Barksdale. 1949. *Op cit*.
175. Plafker, G. 1964. "Oriented Lakes and Lineaments in Northern Bolivia", *Bull Geol Soc Amer*, vol 75, pp503–522.
176. Obruchev, S V. 1941. "Obshcheie merzlotovedeneie" ("General Frozen Ground Science", textbook), unpublished extract in English of chap ix of I V Poire's textbook, *Akad Nauk SSSR*, Feb 1947.
177. Plafker, G. 1964. *Op cit*.
178. Hoffleit, D. 1952. "Bays in Holland", *Sky and Telescope*, vol 12, p8.
179. Kelly, A O. 1951. "The Origin of the Carolina Bays and Oriented Lakes of Alaska", *Pop Astron*, vol 59, pp199–205.
180. Maunder, A S D. 1912. "The Zoroastrian Star Champions", *Observatory* (Dec), pp438–443; see p438.
181. Muller, F M (tr). 1891. *Vedic Hymns*, 2 vols, (Oxford); see mandala 1, hymns 171, 172.
182. *Book of Revelation*, chap 12, v7–9.
183. *Book of Revelation*, chap 8, v1.
184. *Book of Revelation*, chap 8, v5.
185. *Book of Revelation*, chap 8, v7.
186. *Book of Revelation*, chap 8, v8–9.
187. *Book of Revelation*, chap 8, v10.
188. *Book of Revelation*, chap 8, v11.
189. *Book of Revelation*, chap 9, v1–2.
190. *Book of Revelation*, chap 12, v3–4.
191. *Book of Revelation*, chap 12, v15.
192. *Book of Revelation*, chap 13, v5.
193. *Book of Revelation*, chap 6, v14.
194. Bellows, H A (tr). 1923. *The Poetic Edda: Voluspa* (London), n p.
195. Donnelly, I. 1895. *Ragnarok: the Age of Fire and Gravel* (New York), vi + 452pp; see p144.
196. Donnelly, I. 1895. *Op cit*, p144.
197. *Epistle of Jude*, chap 1, v6.
198. *Second Epistle of Peter*, chap 2, v4.
199. *Book of Enoch*, chap 18, v14–15, chap 19, v1–2..
200. *Book of Enoch*, chap 88, v3–5.
201. *Book of Enoch*, chap 89, v2–6.
202. *Second Epistle of Peter*, chap 2, v5.
203. Merezhkovsky, D S. 1933. *The Secret of the West*, tr by J Cournos, (London), 449pp; see p74.
204. Kellett, E E. 1927. *The Story of Myths* (London), 275pp; see p124.
205. Emery, K O. 1949. "Topography and Sediments of the Arctic Ocean", *J Geol*, vol 57, pp512–521; see map opp p514.
206. Herman, Y (ed). 1974. *Marine Geology and Oceanography of the Arctic Sea* (New York), 376pp; see p100.
207. Short, J T. 1880. *The North Americans of Antiquity* (New York), 2nd edn, xviii + 544pp; see p499.
208. Brinton, D G. 1882. *Myths of the New World* (Philadelphia), viii + 331pp; see p170.
209. Brinton, D G. 1882. *Op cit*, p181.
210. Alexander, H B. 1920. *Latin American Mythology* (Boston), xvi + 424pp; see p72.
211. Brinton, D G. 1882. *Op cit*, p197.
212. Tylor, E B. 1870. *Researches into the Early History of Mankind* (London), vi + 386pp; see p222.
213. Warren, H C. 1896. *Buddhism in Translations* (Harvard Univ Press), xx + 520pp; see 'World Cycles' in the section on "Visuddhi-Magga", p328.
214. Arago, F. 1865. *Astronomie Populaire*, 4 vols, (Paris); see vol iv, p204.
215. Link, T A. 1957. "Whence came the Hydrocarbons?" *Bull Amer Ass Petrol Geol*, vol 41, pp1387–1402.
216. Holmburg, V. 1927. *Finno-Ugric, Siberian Mythology* (Boston); see p370.
217. Frazer, J C (tr). 1921. Apollodorus' *The Library*, 2 vols, (London & New York).

218. Buckley, A (tr). 1861. "To Minerva", in 'Orphic Hymns', in Homer's *Odyssey* (New York), xxx + 432pp.
219. Holmburg, V. 1927. *Op cit.*
220. King, L W. 1902. *The Seven Tablets of Creation*, 2 vols, (London).
221. *Book of Revelation*, chap 8, v7.
222. *Apocalypse of Thomas*, found in *Summa Theologica*, tr from the original Latin; 1st American edn, 3 vols (New York), 1947–48.
223. Bourbourg, Brassaeur de. 1957–59. *Histoire des Nations civilisées du Mexique*, 2 vols, (Paris); see vol 1, p30.
224. Langdon, S. 1923. *Enuma Elish: The Babylonian Epic of Creation* (Oxford), n p.
225. *Book of Revelation*, chap 4, v6.
226. *Book of Revelation*, chap 8, v7.
227. Merck, C. 1876. *Excavations at the Kesslerloch near Thayngen, Switzerland, a cave of the Reindeer Period*, tr by J E Lee, (London), viii + 68pp; see p7.
228. Molnar, R E. 1980. "The Fossils of Tea Tree Cave", *Tower Karst*, no 3, pp9–15.
229. Busk, G. 1872. "On the Animal Remains found by Col Lane Fox in the High- and Low-Terrace Gravels of Acton and Turnham Green", *Q Jl Geol Soc Lond*, vol 28, pp465–471, pp465–6.
230. Heer, O. 1866. "On the Miocene Flora of North Greenland", *Rep Brit Assoc Advmt Sci* (Nottingham), pp53–55; see p53.
231. Corser, C E. 1978. "The Sand and Gravel Resources of the country around Abingdon", *Inst Geol Sci Lond Min*, assessment rep 38, iv + 105pp; see p14.
232. Lee, J S. 1939. *The Geology of China* (London), xv + 528pp; see p421.
233. Lee, J S. 1939. *Op cit*, pp202, 368, 371.
234. Watkins, W I. 1945. "Observations on the Properties of Loess in Engineering Structures", *Amer J Sci*, vol 243, pp294–303; see p297.
235. Bates, R L, & J A Jackson. 1980. *Glossary of Geology* (Amer Geol Inst, Virginia), vii-x, 749pp; see p367.
236. Grieve, D A, & W K Fletcher. 1976. "Heavy Metals in Deltaic Sediments of the Fraser River, British Columbia", *Canad Jl Earth Sci*, vol 13, pp1683–1693, p1693.
237. Wright, G F. 1889. "The Idaho Find", *Amer Antiq Orient Jl*, vol xi, pp379–381.
238. Heyl, P R. 1913. "Platinum in North Carolina", *Proc Amer Phil Soc*, vol lii, pp2–30, pp21, 22, 27.
239. Bellamy, H S. 1936. *Op cit*, p87.
240. *Book of Job*, chap 40, v21, 38.
241. Bellamy, H S. 1936. *Op cit*, p84.
242. Opik, E J. 1955. "Cosmic Source of deep-sea Deposits", *Nature*, vol 176, pp926–7.
243. Frederickson, K. 1956. "Cosmic Spherules in deep-sea Sediments", *Nature*, vol 177, pp32–33.
244. Fairbridge, R W. 1966. *Encyclopedia of Oceanography* (New York, v-xiii, 1021pp; see p523.
245. Kuenen, P H. 1950. *Marine Geology* (New York), x + 568pp, pp359–360.
246. Seibold, E, & W H Berger. 1982. *The Sea Floor* (New York), vii + 288pp, pp359–360.
247. Emery, K O. 1949. "Topography and Sediments of the Arctic Ocean", *J Geol*, vol 57, pp512–521; see pp516–518.
248. Pettersson, H. 1953. *Westward Ho with the Albatross* (New York), 218pp; see pp149–150.
249. Pettersson, H. 1950. "Exploring the Ocean Floor", *Scient Amer* (August), pp42–44.
250. Pettersson, H. 1953. *Op cit*, p150.
251. Seibold, E, & W H Berger. 1982. *Op cit*, p241.
252. Kuenen, P H. 1950. *Op cit*, p375.
253. Kennett, J P. 1982. *Marine Geology* (New Jersey), xv + 813pp; see p500.
254. Seibold, E, & W H Berger. 1982. *Ibid*.
255. Burk, C A, & C L Drake (eds). 1974. *The Geology of Continental Margins* (New York), xiii + 1009pp, see article by W H Berger.
256. Seibold, E, & W H Berger. 1982. *Op cit*, p239.
257. Horn, D R. 1972. *Ferromanganese Deposits on the Ocean Floor* (New York), Washington Nat Science Foundation, n p.
258. Seibold, E, & W H Berger. 1982. *Ibid*.
259. Seibold, E, & W H Berger. 1982. *Op cit*, p241.
260. Seibold, E, & W H Berger. 1982. *Op cit*, p241.
261. Ewing, M, J I Ewing & M Talwani. 1964. "Sediment Distribution in the Oceans: the Mid-Atlantic Ridge", *Bull Geol Soc Amer*, vol 75, pp17–34; see p17.
262. Diester-Haass, L, & S van der Spoel. 1978. "Late Pleistocene Pteropod-rich sediment layer in the N E Atlantic and Protoconch variation of 'Clio Pyramidata', Linne 1767", *Palaeogeogr Palaeoclimat Palaeoecol*, vol 24, no 2, pp85–109; see p85.
263. Diester-Haass, L, & S van der Spoel. 1978. *Op cit*, p107.
264. *Book of Genesis*, chap 7, v18–19.
265. *Psalms*, chap 104, v6.
266. *Psalms*, chap 33, v7.
267. Tylor, E B. 1929. *Primitive Culture*, 2 vols, (Boston), edn; see vol i, pp322ff.
268. Legge, J (tr). 1876. "Annals of the Bamboo Books", vol 3, part 1 of *The Chinese Classics* (Hong Kong).
269. Ginzburg, L. 1925. *Legends of the Jews*, 7 vols, (Philadelphia); see vol iii, p22.
270. Cambrey, L de. 1926. *Lapland Legends* (New Haven & Oxford), x + 212pp.
271. *Psalms*, chap 3, v9.
272. *Talmud*, Tractate Sanhedrin, 108b.
273. Hess, H H, & P MacClintock. 1936. "Submerged valleys on Continental Slopes and Changes of Sea Level", *Science*, vol 83, n s, pp332–4.
274. Patten, D W. 1966. *The Biblical Flood and the Ice Epoch* (Seattle), xvi + 336pp; see p56.
275. Bellamy, H S. 1936. *Op cit*, pp124–5.
276. *Book of Genesis*, chap 7, v4.
277. *Book of Enoch*, chap 89, v1.
278. *Book of Ezekiel*, chap 13, v2, chap 38, v22.
279. West, E W (tr). 1880. "The Bundahish", chap 7, in part 1, in *The Pahlavi Texts*, 5 vols, (Oxford).

280. *Book of Job*, chap 37, v9.
281. Bellamy, H S. 1945. *Op cit*, pp58–59.
282. Gorion, M J ben. 1919. *Sagen Juden*, 5 vols, (Frankfurt).
283. *Book of Genesis*, chap 7, v11.
284. Bellamy, H S. 1936. *Op cit*; see p277.
285. *Koran*, chap 11.
286. Carson, R L. 1951. *The Sea Around Us* (London), 230pp; see p124.
287. Shephard, F P. 1959. *The Earth beneath the Sea* (London), xii + 275pp; see pp45–6.
288. Carson, R L. 1951. *Op cit*.
289. Leet, L D. 1948. *Op cit*, pp179–184.
290. Hopkins, W. 1848. "On the Elevation and Denudation of the Lakes of Cumberland and Westmorland", *Q Jl Geol Soc Lond*, vol 4, pp70–98.
291. Hopkins, W. 1848. *Op cit*, p93.
292. Phillips, J. 1854. "On the Dispersion of Erratic Rocks at Higher levels than their Parent Rock in Yorkshire", *Rep Brit Assoc Advmt Sci*, (Hull, 1853), p54.
293. Edwards-Dwight, S. 1926. "Description of the Eruption of Long Lake and Mud Lake in Vermont, and of the desolation effected by the rush of the waters through Barton River, and the lower country towards Lake Memphremagog, in the summer of 1810", *Amer J Sci*, vol xi, pp39–54.
294. Lyell, C. 1852. *Principles of Geology* 2 vols, (London), 6th edn; see vol 1, p363.
295. *Anonymous*. 1857. *Voices from the Rocks* (London), viii + 147pp; see pp130–131.
296. Griggs, G B, & J A Gilchrist. 1983. *Op cit*.
297. Taira, K. 1981. "Holocene Tectonism in Eastern Asia and Geoidal Changes", *Palaeogeogr Palaeoclimat Palaeoecol*, vol 36, pp75–85.
298. Rudzki, M P. 1889. "Deformation der Erde und der Last des Inlandeises", *Bull Internat de l'Acad des Sci de Cracovie*, vol 168, p48.
299. Sauramo, M. 1939. "The Mode of the Land Upheaval in Fennoscandia during late Quaternary time", *C R de la Soc Geol de Finlande*, vol 13.
300. Longman, I M. 1962. "A Green's Function for determining the Deformation of the Earth under Surface Mass Loads; 1. Theory", *J Geophys Res*, vol 67, pp845–850.

     Longman, I M. 1963. "A Green's Function for determining the Deformation of the Earth under Surface Mass Loads; 2. Computations and Numerical Results", *J Geophys Res*, vol 68, pp485–496.
301. Slichter, L B, & M Caputo. 1960. "Deformation of an Earth Model produced by Surface Pressures", *J Geophys Res*, vol 65, pp4151–4156.
302. Walcott, R I. 1972. "Flexural rigidity, thickness and viscosity of the Lithosphere", *J Geophys Res*, vol 75, pp3941–3954.
303. Walcott, R I. 1972b. "Inferences of Upper Mantle Rheology from Quaternary Deformation", *Symposium of Recent Crustal Movements* (August 1971), Moscow.

     Weertman, J. 1970. "The Creep Strength of the Earth's Mantle", *Rev Geophys and Space Phys*, vol 8, pp145–168.
304. Takenchi, J, & Y Hasegawa. 1965. "Viscosity Distribution within the Earth", *Geophys J Roy Astron Soc*, vol 9, pp503–8.
305. Avebury, Lord. 1902. *The Scenery of England and the Causes to which it is due* (London), ix + 534pp; see p65.
306. Reid, C. 1885. "The Geology of the Country around Holderness", *Mem Geol Surv Engl & Wales*, (London), 177pp.
307. Heusser, C J. 1972. "Palynology and Phytogeographical Significance of a Late Pleistocene Refugium near Kalaloch, Washing-ton", *Quat Res*, vol 2, pp189–201.
308. Hunt, C W. 1977. "Catastrophic Termination of the last Wisconsin Ice Advance", *Bull Canad Petrol Geol*, vol 25, pp456–467.
309. Bellamy, H S. 1936. *Op cit*, p262.
310. Arkell, W J. "Geological Results of the Cloudburst in the Weymouth District, 18th July 1955", *Proc Dor Nat Hist & Arch Soc*, vol 77 (1955), pp90–96.
311. Fielden, H W. 1896. "Notes on the Glacial Geology of Arctic Europe and its Islands – Part One: Koluguev Island", *Geol Mag*, n s, dec iv, vol iii, p40.
312. Lamont, J. 1859. "Notes on Spitzbergen", *The Geologist*, vol 2, p293.
313. Hooker, J D. 1881. "Presidential Address", *Proc Roy Geogr Soc Lond*, vol 3, pp601–604.
314. Markham, C R. 1906. "On the next Great Arctic Discovery, the Beaufort Sea", *Geogr J*, vol xxvii, no 1, pp1–4.
315. Nansen, F. 1907. "On North Polar Problems", *Geogr J*, vol xxx, no 6, pp585–601.
316. Bird, J B. 1966. *The Physiography of Arctic Canada* (Johns Hopkins Univ Press), xix + 336pp; see p135.
317. Greely, A W. 1866. "Arctic Expedition with reference to Grinnell Land", *Proc R Geogr Soc*, vol x, no 8, pp156–176, p162.
318. Bird, J B. 1966. *Op cit*.
319. Frenzel, B. 1968. "The Pleistocene Vegetation of Northern Eurasia", *Science*, vol 161, no 3842, pp637–648.
320. Whitely, D G. 1910. "The Ivory Islands of the Arctic Ocean", *J Trans Vict Inst Lond*, vol xlii, pp35–57, p43.
321. Wrangell, F P von. 1844. *Narrative of an Expedition to Siberia and the Polar Sea, 1820–23* (London), 2nd edn, xix + 525pp, tr by E Sabine; see p471.
322. Wrangell, F P von. 1844. *Op cit*, p383.
323. Wrangell, F P von. 1844. *Op cit*, p173fn.
324. Erman, G A. 1848. *Travels in Siberia* 2 vols, (London); see vol ii, pp379–380.
325. Whitely, D G. 1910. "The Ivory Islands in the Arctic Ocean" *J Trans Vict Inst Lond*, vol xlii, pp35–57; see p43.
326. *Anonymous*. 1895. "Baron von Toll's Expedition to Arctic Siberia", *Geogrl J*, vol v, p373–376.
327. Wrangell, F P von. 1844. *Op cit*, p491.

328. Wrangell, F P von. 1844. *Op cit*, p cxxiv.
329. Wrangell, F P von. 1844. *Ibid*.
330. Wrangell, F P von. 1844. *Ibid*..
331. Brandt, A F. 1867. "Kurze Bemerkungen über Aufrechtstehende Mammut-Leichen", *Bull Soc Nat Moscow*, vol xl, no iii, pp241–256.
332. Nordenskiöld, N A E. 1881. *Voyage of the Vega around Asia and Europe*, 2 vols, tr by A Leslie, (London); see vol 1, pp380–1.
333. Schmidt, M Fra. 1869. "Vorlaufige Mittheilung über die wissenschaftliche Resultate der Expedition zur Aufsuchung eines angekündigten Mammuth-kadavers", *Bull Acad St Petersburg*, vol 13, pp97–130, p112.
334. Ure, A. 1829. *A New System of Geology* (London), lv + 621pp; see p455, citing Prof Kounizin in *Isis*.
335. Erman, G A. 1848. *Op cit*; see vol ii, p379.
336. Howorth, H H. 1887. *The Mammoth and the Flood* (London), xxxii + 464pp; see pp63–64.
337. Bell, R. 1889. "On Glacial Phenomena in Canada", *Bull Geol Soc Amer*, vol 1, pp287–310; see p309.
338. Ure, A. 1829. *Op cit*, p483.
339. Lamb, H H. 1970. *Loc cit*.
340. Johnson, R G, & J T Andrews. 1979. "Rapid Ice-sheet growth and Initiation of the Last Glaciation", *Quat Res*, vol 12, pp119–134.
Lamb, H H, & A Woodroffe. 1970. "Atmospheric Circulation during the last Ice Age", *Quat Res*, vol 1, pp29–58.
341. Upham, W. 1895. "The Glacial Lake Agassiz", *US Geol Surv Monograph* xxv, p240.
342. Lamb, H H, & A Woodroffe. 1970. *Op cit*, p33.
343. Vasari, Y, H Hyvarinen, S Hicks (eds). 1972. *Climatic Changes in Arctic Areas during the last Ten Thousand Years* (Univ of Oulu, Finland).
344. Hammer, G H, H B Claussen & W Dansgaard. 1980. "Greenland Ice-Sheet Evidence of post-glacial Volcanism and its Climatic Impact", *Nature*, vol 288, pp230–235.
345. Lamb, H H. 1968. "Volcanic Dust, Melting of Ice-caps, and Sea-levels", *Palaeogeogr Palaeoclimat Palaeoecol*, vol 4, pp219–222.
346. Hammer, G H. 1977. "Past Volcanism revealed by Greenland Ice-Sheet Impurities", *Nature*, vol 270, issue 5637, pp482–486.
347. Aubert de la Rüe, E. 1958. "Observation sur le volcanisme tertiare et quaternaire de quesques isles de la Polynesia Française", *Bull Volcanol*, ser 2, vol 19, pp159–178.
348. Nixon, G T. 1982. *Loc cit*, p514.
349. Pollack, J B, O B Toon, C Sagan, A Summers, B Baldwin & A W van Camp. 1976. "Volcanic Explosions and Climatic Change: a theoretical assessment", *Journ Geophys Res*, vol 81, no 6, pp1071–1083.
350. Flohn, H. 1979. "On the Time Scales and Causes of abrupt Palaeoclimatic Events", *Quat Res*, vol 12, pp135–149, p135.
351. King, L C. 1963. *South African Scenery: a Textbook of Geomorphology* (Edinburgh), 3rd edn, xxx + 308pp; see p298.
352. Veeh, H H, & J Chappel. 1970. "Astronomical Theory of a Climatic Change: support from New Guinea", *Science*, vol 167, pp862–5.
353. Groves, J M. 1988. *The Little Ice Age* (London & New York), xxii + 498pp.
354. *Anonymous*. 1896. "Cloud-burst tracks and water gaps in Alabama", *Science*, vol 3, pp276–277.
355. Sokolov, V N. 1977. *Stratigraphy of Spitzbergen* (Boston Spa, UK), iv + 298pp; see pp260–293.
356. Bellamy, H S. 1943. *Built Before the Flood* (London), 144pp; see pp70–71.
357. Smith, S P. 1910. *Hawaiki: the original home of the Maori* (Wellington, NZ), 3rd edn, 301pp; see p177.
358. Brown, J M. 1927. *Peoples and Problems of the Pacific*, 2 vols, (London); see pp113, 153.
359. Bellamy, H S. 1945. *Op cit, pp191*.
360. *Book of Job*, chap 38, v29–32.
361. Silver, L., and P H Schultz (eds.). 1982. "Geological Implications of large Asteroids and Comets on the Earth", *Spec. Papers Geol. Soc. Amer.*, vol 190, xix + 529pp.; see especially ppxvii-xviii.
362. Putnam, W C. 1964. *Op cit*, p268, fig11-7.

PART SIX

PHAETON'S LEGACY

1

AFTERMATH

In the days immediately following Phaeton's departure sunwards, the effects of the tremendous physical trauma which Phaeton had wrought on Earth were formidable and acute for practically every living organism that had somehow survived the catastrophe. The world's topography had been largely rearranged. Prior to the disaster, the general trend of the major landmasses appears to have been east-west; after it they were aligned in a predominately north-south direction – as is still plainly discernible today.

New mountain ranges and lofty plateaux had been upheaved, and deep gorges and huge fissures had come into being. Unimaginably large eruptions of magma, lava and other volcanic ejecta, including steam and gases, had attended these derangements. Former seas and lakes had been drained or drastically reduced – the displaced waters (the biblical Deluge) roaring as immense irresistible watery avalanches over the newly emerging landscape, as they sought new basins. Only the very largest obstacles withstood these churning torrents.

Where the waters had met heated rock surfaces and erupting lava or magma, violent explosions occurred, wrenching huge boulders and lesser debris from parent strata and hurling them great distances in all directions, as prodigious clouds of steam rose to drench and scald adjacent districts. In many regions, once the Deluge waters had drained away, countless boulders of every composition, size and shape dotted the landscape.

Astounding quantities of gravel, sand, clay, mud and silt had accumulated on hillsides – even on hilltops – and had spread over valley floors and across plains. Such old rivers as still existed now flowed along highly modified courses or in entirely new directions. Wholly new drainage systems, occasioned by the youthful topography, were the norm. In some places lakes and lagoons left by receding Deluge waters were extensive but shallow, and certain traditions describe how creatures of many kinds – and the ancestors of particular human tribes – crept or swam in them in their quest to find dry land[1].

Organic debris had been deposited in all sorts of localities. Intense water pressures had rammed these remains into fissures, crevices and the innermost recesses of tortuous caverns – totally without regard to the size or class of the organisms concerned. Gargantuan rafts of mangled vegetation lay here and there in thick banks as far as the eye could see, while, protruding through or lying upon the surface, everywhere, lay the corpses of animals of all kinds. These occurred singly, in small groups or as great assemblages congregated locally by arresting obstacles or trapped within newly-formed lagoons, dammed valleys, lakes or bogs.

Accordingly, the stench of death and decay must have pervaded many districts, especially in lower, warmer latitudes, where unpolluted water must have been rare and the risk of pestilence high for an appreciable time. The offensive odours eddying out from bone-caves (crammed with countless cadavers or dismembered parts thereof), and from the decaying banks of vegetation, must have been truly frightful in the weeks immediately following Phaeton's departure.

Precipitation (rainfall) would probably have been intense, particularly in high latitudes, due to the tremendous atmospheric pollution caused by the massive volcanic activity in virtually all hemispheres. This pollution would have enhanced the 'collapsed sky' conditions already established during Phaeton's visit, so that a gloomy shroud continued to envelop much of the Earth. This gloom, and the resultant progressively cold conditions in high latitudes due to a blotting out of sunlight and solar warmth at ground level, together with the rapid growth of glaciers and ice-fields, were vivid features of these dire early post-catastrophic days.

Certainly they are enshrined in ancient traditions and memories the world over: and these, very significantly, almost invariably place them shortly after the retreat of the Deluge waters and the passing of the main catastrophe.

2

THE SURVIVORS

While traditional descriptions of the Phaeton disaster reflect an almost identical pattern of events world-wide, great diversity exists in the ways specific groups of people are said to have survived that ordeal. Instantly recalled are arks, rafts, great canoes, uprooted trees and other floating objects. Yet, although these devices could at best accommodate only limited numbers of individuals – and some, like the tomtom drum of the Annamese hero[2] and the ball of rubber or pitch in the Pima Indian legend[3], could serve but one person. Those who entrusted themselves to floating objects feature in traditions as true Deluge-heroes.

Among these were people who deliberately constructed vessels (arks) before the onset of the Deluge – usually on the advice of others alleged to have superior or 'divine' advance knowledge of the impending disaster. Several widely scattered traditions refer to arks being built on mountains far inland[4]. And there were others who, perhaps ignoring clear signs and portents, or who were simply caught unawares, literally commandeered the first sizable floating object available to them when the disaster broke.

Another group of survivor legends gives mountain tops as sanctuaries or places where arks, 'swimming houses' or the like came to rest with the ebbing off of the Deluge waters. With the terrifying arrival of the Deluge waters, safety was probably instinctively sought on the nearest high ground. As we have already mentioned, there are accounts of mad, panicky scrambles up mountain sides by those hoping to avoid drowning[5].

It is noteworthy that several of the mountain-top survivors had, like those urged elsewhere to build arks and great vessels, received 'divine' advice to seek safety on particular peaks before the onset of the Deluge. In the well-known Greek story of *Philemon and Baucis*, for example, the righteous Phrygian couple were taken by the gods Zeus and Hermes to the top of a lofty mountain to escape the fate reserved for their fellow men, who perished shortly afterwards in a Deluge[6]. A similar account concerns two human pairs who became the ancestors of the *Sing-Pohs* of Assam. They had previously been urged by one of their deities to ascend Mt Singrabhum so that they might survive the Deluge[7]. The neighbouring *Lakhers* relate how their forefathers found asylum on Mt Leiparang during the same event. The name *Leiparang*, incidentally, signifies 'Old Earth' because the mountain, allegedly, was never submerged by the Deluge[8].

Sometimes 'divine intervention' was seen as occurring only after the climb to a mountain summit had been accomplished, the hard-pressed refugees (animals included) being offered sanctuary in floating vessels, as in a Lithuanian tradition[9]. This association of human and animal refugees crowding a Flood-girt mountaintop is similar to the Peruvian Deluge legend involving the Andean peak of Ancasmarca[10]. Similar beliefs were preserved also among Formosans and Polynesians[11].

Before leaving these fragments of prehistory, we should emphasise that the mountain-top survivors were seldom likely to see clearly the surrounding turmoil. Almost all the accounts describe a combination of driving rain, furious winds and a thick gloom which for a long period obscured the Sun, Moon and stars. The South American Caingang Indians described the darkness as 'pitchy' and as punctuated by howls, piercing screeches and other unearthly sounds[12]. These were presumably the peculiar sounds of hurricane force winds and possibly also of the passage through the atmosphere of still-falling cosmic debris.

Parallelling these flood traditions is another category recording how people and animals survived the disaster in caves. Many examples could be cited and in Part Three we mentioned the reactions of the refugees to the chaos and din that raged outside their sanctuaries. Elsewhere, we have mentioned bone-caves yielding the remains of sizable groups of human beings, as though those particular asylums had been ill-selected and their sheltering occupants overwhelmed by gases or tumultuous water action.

It is probably significant that most accounts indicate that caverns were sought more as protection from super-hurricane winds, conflagration[13] and cosmic bombardment[14], than from the subsequent Deluge. Given all the circumstances under discussion, it is obvious that deep caverns would have been ideal refuges from missiles and fire, but extremely dangerous shelters against rampaging water.

Some refugees became buried in caverns, as earth and rocks were piled up at the entrances by 'drift' borne by the Deluge waters. In Part Two we noted several instances of completely blocked-up bone-caves. Some groups, like the cruel race of the Tahoe legend, were entombed permanently[15], but others, like the Lenni-Lenape Indians of Delaware, tell how their forefathers were once buried in the Earth, but survived the ordeal by successfully digging their way out[16].

Probably the most complete memory of this kind is preserved amongst the Navajo Indians. It describes how:

> ...at one time all the nations – Navajos, Pueblos, Coyoteros and white people – lived together underground, in the heart of a mountain, near the river San Juan. Their food was meat, which they had in abundance, for all kinds of game were closed up with them in their cave; but their light was dim, and only endured for a few hours each day...[17]

Later they successfully dug their way to the surface, only to find themselves on the outside of a mountain surrounded by water. Shortly afterwards, the waters had ebbed away, leaving a sea of mud, and the legend continues:

> Then the men and the animals began to come up from their cave, and their coming up required several days. First came the Navajos... then came the Pueblos and other Indians... [and] lastly came the white people, who started off at once for the rising sun, and were lost sight of for many winters... When these nations lived underground they all spoke one tongue; but, with the light of day and the level of earth, came many languages. The earth was at this time very small, and the light was quite as scanty as it had been down below, for there was as yet no heaven, no sun, nor moon, nor stars.[18]

This remarkable narrative, which contains several elements repeated in various other independent cave-survivor legends, forms a graphic account of the burial of a remnant of early humanity with many animals in a cave on a mountain. What buried them is not actually specified, although it had blocked up the cavern's entrance with material that could be dug. The people evidently subsisted on the animals for a considerable time, during which not only did the cave remain mostly dark and gloomy, but so did the outside world. The absence of heavenly luminaries almost certainly relates to the 'collapsed sky' conditions prevalent then.

On eventually receding, the water left everything covered with wet mud, and this, after slowly drying out, apparently enabled various survivor groups to set off in particular directions. The reference to 'white people' who apparently wished to sever their association with the Indians, is especially interesting. It could be concluded from this action that they regarded themselves as belonging to a different race. It is surely pertinent that almost all traditions which refer to culture-heroes (virtually every one of whom was active *immediately* after the Deluge) describe them as white, tall, bearded and invariably superior to the aboriginal peoples among whom they appeared – often suddenly – to impart laws, crafts and useful information.

One such culture-hero, Caboy by name, allegedly brought the ancestors of the Brazilian Karaya Indians out of a 'subterranean world' following the Great Flood[19]. Elsewhere, another culture-hero, using a golden spade-like implement, dug Amerindian Deluge survivors out of a blocked-up cavern[20]. The hill tribes known as the Pankhoos and Bungogees, who inhabit the Chittagong area of Bangladesh, preserve a similar tradition. They recall how, after the recession of the Deluge waters "...their ancestors came out of a cave in the earth, under the guidance of a chief named Tlandrokpah[21].

The early post-diluvian activities of this superior culture-bearing white race are chronicled in numerous traditions distributed globally, but are regrettably too complex and important to discuss adequately here. They will, however, be fully considered in a later volume devoted to unravelling this now almost-forgotten era of organised endeavour.

Clearly, members of several different races sometimes took refuge in the same caverns or on the same mountain peaks, being as often as not complete strangers to one another. Such mixed gatherings were not expected, for, faced with an all-encompassing common danger, the sole aim of every individual must surely have been survival. Previous social considerations such as race, rank, gender or age, became meaningless instantly. It is, therefore, significant that echoes of precisely this scenario appear in the *Book of St.John the Divine*:

> And the kings of the earth, and the great men, and the rich men, and the chief captains, and the mighty men, and every bondman, and every freeman, hid themselves in the dens and in the rocks of the mountains.[22]

By its very nature the Phaeton disaster affected all men indiscriminately. Small cross-sections of pre-catastrophic society found themselves sharing common refuges and, those groups which somehow managed to survive, entered the post-diluvian world together, equally destitute, and bereft of basic necessities[23].

3

AN UNCERTAIN FUTURE

Many garbled and incomplete recollections have come down to us of the dismal period characterising earliest Holocene times. They describe not only the ever-worsening climate but humanity's general poverty and wretchedness. These deleterious after-effects of the catastrophe were catalogued by the Babylonians in the *Atra-Hasis*, their account of the Great Flood and its aftermath. In it, we read:

> The womb of the earth did not bear... vegetation did not sprout... people were not seen... the black fields became white... the

> broad plain was choked with salt... [and:] For one year they ate couch grass... for the second they suffered itch... the third year came – their features [were altered] by hunger.[24]

The reference to salt-choked plains is echoed on the other side of the world, when the Kwakiult Indians of British Columbia recall how:

> ...when the flood had subsided there was no fresh water to be found. They were nigh on dying from thirst, and chewed plants to obtain moisture. But then a great rain came, very heavy and very long, which filled the valleys with fresh water lakes and rivers, which have remained there ever since.[25]

The undrinkable character of the pre-rain waters are also alluded to in the *Bundahish*. This states that the "poison and venom of the noxious creatures" which had perished in the Deluge "were all mixed up in the water, and the waters became quite salt."[26] Elsewhere, the waters are said to have been made 'bitter'[27].

The Norse *Eddas* refer explicitly to terrible cold – the Fimbul Winter: "The mighty, the great, the iron winter..."[28] and the *Elder Edda* adding:

> ***The sunshine blackens***
> ***In the summers thereafter.***
> ***And the weather grows bad.***

According to the *Younger Edda*:

> ...as soon as the streams that are called *Elivogs* [the rivers flowing under the ice] had come so far... [they] ...turned into ice. And when this ice stopped and flowed no more, then gathered over it the drizzling rain... and froze into rime, and one layer of ice was laid upon another clear into Ginungagap... All that part of Ginungagap that turns north was filled with thick and heavy ice and rime, and everywhere were drizzling rain and gusts...[29]

Darkness and great cold were remembered everywhere as having reduced a great majority of human survivors to pitiable physical and mental states. A prayer addressed by the Mexican Aztecs to their god *Tezcatlipoca* evidently refers to this epoch and runs as follows:

> Know, O Lord... the men have no garments, nor the women, to cover themselves with, but only certain rags rent in every part, that allow the air and the *cold* to pass everywhere... With great toil and weariness they scrape together enough for each day, going by mountain and wilderness seeking their food; so faint and enfeebled are they that their bowels cleave to their ribs, and all their body re-echoes with hollowness, and they walk as people afrighted, the face and body in likeness of death... they draw a rag over them at night, and so sleep; there they throw down their bodies, and the bodies of the children thou hast given them. For the misery that they grow up in, for the filth of their food, for the lack of covering, their faces are yellow, and all their bodies of the colour of the earth. They tremble with *cold*, and for leanness they stagger in walking. They go weeping and sighing, and full of sadness... though they stay by a fire, they find little heat.[30] (Our italics).

Many were obliged to eat whatever they could find. Food must have been mostly recently-annihilated plants and animals, and many survivors must have died then as much from food poisoning as from cold and hunger. Fresh food was undoubtedly scarce or non-existent in many regions, and several districts must have remained uninhabited, and uninhabitable, for decades.

Different effects were experienced in warmer latitudes, but even there the prevailing damp allegedly turned such food as then existed mouldy[31].

In the *Ten Stems*, an ancient Chinese work, which divides world history into ten periods or stages, we read: "At *Wu* – the sixth stem – the Darkness and the Light unite with injurious effects – all things become solid (freeze into ice), and the Darkness destroys the growth of all things. At *Kung* – the seventh stem – the Darkness nips all things."[32] Another ancient Chinese record, the *Twelve Branches*, similarly reports: "*K'wun-tun* stands for the period of chaos, the cold midnight darkness. It is said that with it all things began to germinate in the hidden recesses of the underworld."[33] In the *Ten Stems* we learn, similarly, that: "At *Jin* – the ninth stem – the Light begins to nourish all things in the recesses below."[34] These would seem to be references to the germination of seeds and plant roots swept by the Deluge waters into caves and fissures.

After the Phaeton upheaval people's diet differed appreciably from that which had prevailed previously. In *Genesis* there is more than a hint that antediluvian Man was vegetarian:

> And God said, Behold, I have given you every herb bearing seed, which is upon the face of all the earth, and every tree, in the which is the fruit of a tree yielding seed; to you it shall be your meat.[35]

The same source then informs us that, following the Deluge, God said to Noah and his family:

> And the fear of you and the dread of you shall be upon every beast of the earth, and upon every fowl of the air, upon all that moveth upon the earth, and upon all the fishes of the sea; into your hand are they delivered. Every moving thing that liveth shall be meat for you.[36]

In other words, post-diluvial people became omnivorous by being obliged to eat meat. Ancient Chinese annals mention the same thing: "At first even the rulers dwelt in caves and desert places, eating raw flesh and drinking blood"[37]. Not improbably, this memory refers to the consumption of animal carcasses, when rapidly-falling temperatures in high latitudes might have permitted meat to remain edible for an appreciable time. The description of the flesh as raw certainly suggests this. We should not forget that frozen Siberian mammoth meat is known to have been devoured in historical times by wolves and human beings (see Appendix A).

That dead meat was indeed eaten is indicated elsewhere in *Genesis*, which mentions how God instructed Noah: "But the flesh with the life thereof, which is the blood thereof, shall ye not eat"[38]. This was an injunction that *living* animals were not to be eaten: survivors of animal populations decimated by the catastrophe were to be left to multiply and replenish stocks.

That meat eating became a necessity for many Deluge survivors is clearly implied in the following account of how searches for plant foods proved unsuccessful:

> They sought for food everywhere. For nine days they roamed about, but found none such as they used to eat in Paradise. 'We used to have angels' food then', they complained.[39]

Occasionally, people seem to have supplemented a meat diet with other food. Charred ostrich eggshells, radiocarbon-dated at 10,720 ±132 years BP, found in a rock-shelter in Tanzania[40], suggest that eggs and perhaps birds were eaten in those difficult days.

Meat eating usually meant the removal of the animal's hide or pelt. Several traditions describe how some superior race (the Sarku?) made garments from these skins for the less expert survivors of Adamic humanity. *Genesis* greatly simplified these relationships, where the superior race is represented by God and the needy survivors by Adam and Eve[41].

This suggests that the making or wearing of garments had been rare among ordinary antediluvian humanity, accustomed to equable 'Golden Age' climates, and that they lacked the knowledge to manufacture clothing. Nevertheless, one early cave drawing of a clothed individual evidently dating from the period under discussion shows that unexpectedly sophisticated garments were made then and could only have resulted through long familiarity with clothes-making generally. Yet the production of such attire required not only particular skills but also tools – and tools were probably in short supply during those wretched times.

Nevertheless, some implements did exist even in those desperate years, and were presumably made by pre-catastrophic peoples familiar with their manufacture and use before the onset of the Phaeton disaster. Very well-made curved bone sewing needles having small eyes, attributed to the Solutréan culture, existed in France as far back as c20,000 years BP. These indicate that fitted garments, probably of skin or leather, were made at a surprisingly early stage.

Solutréan arrowheads and knives are also beautifully made, and it is hard to imagine that they were produced by barbarian peoples groping for survival. On the contrary, they evince every sign of having been produced by well developed, long established techniques.

The references in traditions and ancient sagas everywhere to the dreadful physical conditions and general poverty during early post-catastrophic times have no real meaning, of course, unless the situations described actually once existed. Very significantly, however, those situations are precisely those which can be expected to have followed global disruption on the scale of the Phaeton disaster. The future of humankind at this time was unquestionably very uncertain.

4

THE STONE AGE ARRIVES

Early post-diluvian social degradation was almost certainly occasioned as much by lack of adequate tools as by adverse physical and climatic conditions. Indeed, such degradation was exacerbated not only by an absence of tools but, in some communities, by an actual ignorance of tools.

Knowledge of tools amongst early post-diluvians depended upon whether individuals had formerly belonged to the apparently small ruling class or to the seemingly large semi-ignorant masses: semi-ignorant because, although many had doubtless seen the great antediluvian buildings, large boats (arks included), irrigation systems, pottery, metallic utensils and weaponry specifically mentioned in innumerable traditions, they had not themselves designed, built or used those inventions, and few possessed the skills to do so. But what firm evidence is there that such diverse artificial creations existed before the Phaeton disaster? After all, we are referring to a period 11,500 years or more ago, and which orthodox history views in a very different light. Strangely enough, there is quite a large corpus of evidence, both circumstantial and factual, indicating that civilised communities existed on Earth before that shocking calamity.

Many of the previously-cited traditions refer unmistakably to various antediluvian structures (for example, houses, temples, towers, canals), land vehicles (carts, chariots), aquatic vessels (rafts, canoes and arks) and implements (ploughs, bows, arrows, spades). Elaborating on this theme, Bellamy has pointed out that:

> Many myths tell of tools having been saved more or less accidentally (quite apart from the elaborate ark myths, some of which even describe the salvage of a lot of quite unnecessary odds and ends). In various North American Indian myths fire-drills are mentioned, in others stone implements, pots, bows, jewellry are reported to have been saved. Some myths say that the people who had escaped on rafts, and had saved certain personal belongings, believed that the waters would

> never subside unless they sacrificed something from their store. Such saved tools were frequently stolen from their owners, probably because of their efficiency, though the myths usually stress the 'magical' properties of the 'other-worldly' implements.[42]

Scholars have either ignored or dismissed these essentially circumstantial references as fanciful or allegorical devices. Latterly, however, the same material has been adopted by writers who, possessing scant knowledge and lively imaginations, have concocted outrageous hypotheses purporting to identify culture-heroes as prehistoric astronauts and the various artefacts as the products of their supposed technology. Viewed individually, none of these intriguing references is either important or verifiable. Assessed collectively, however, they form a recurrent theme in the symphony of traditional world history, and as such increase in significance. Nevertheless, they will forever remain scientifically worthless without supportive material evidence, and it is only when we consider physical artefacts that they acquire *any* value.

Among the physical evidences for exceedingly early civilisation are the innumerable stone walls retaining agricultural terraces on the slopes of the Peruvian and Bolivian Andes. These occur at several places well above the present line of perpetual snow, where cultivation is no longer possible. Unless much warmer climates occurred here relatively recently they can only have attained their present elevation when the mountains were upheaved. As noted previously, the latest uprise of the Andes occurred at the close of the so-called 'Pleistocene' times, about 11,500 years ago.

Cyclopean stone ruins now 13,000ft (4,000m) above sea level at Tiahuanacu, SSE of Lake Titicaca, and apparently similar lithic structures on islands in the lake, seem to be equally ancient[43]. Their enormous size and extent testify eloquently to markedly different environmental conditions and population densities throughout that region in the distant past. Commenting specifically on the Tiahuanacu ruins, but in terms equally applicable to all these ancient stone structures, Sir Clements Markham once observed:

> The city covered a large area, built by highly skilled masons, and with the use of enormous stones. One stone is 36ft long by 7ft, weighing 170 tons; another 26ft by 16ft by 16ft. Apart from the monoliths of ancient Egypt, there is nothing to equal this in any other part of the world. The movement and placing of such monoliths point to a dense population, to an organised government and consequently to a large area under cultivation, with arrangements for the conveyancing of supplies from various directions. There must have been an organisation combining skill and intelligence with power and administrative ability.[44]

The undoubtedly genuine discovery, noted earlier, of a carved figurine at a great depth under 'Pleistocene' lava near Nampa, Idaho, represents the handiwork of some very early cultured race. So, also, do the well-made granite dishes in undisturbed auriferous (gold-bearing) gravels containing the remains of typical 'late Pleistocene' plants and animals (including the celebrated Calaveras skull), far below the surface in California. As argued previously, all these artefacts are very ancient indeed. So are the following.

Vessels of vesicular basalt were obtained in 1880 from gravels also yielding bones of the extinct giant ground-sloth *Mylodon*, near the Klamath River, California.[45] Many comparable finds from the same Californian gravels were listed by Dr James Southall in 1882 and are collectively of much interest. These include a mortar found 150ft (46m) below the surface in gravel capped by volcanic deposits at San Andreas; a triangular polished stone hatchet 75ft (23m) below ground level 300ft (90m) inside a mine tunnel penetrating Table Mountain; many stone dishes, pestles, mortars and other carved lithic utensils found along with bones of elephants and mastodons at a place called 'Murphy's' in Tuolumne County; and numerous grooved discs, mortars, and other stone objects at various depths in gravels subjacent to volcanic deposits in the same district[46]. The curious grooved discs were investigated in a special study by Dr Eberhart in 1961[47]. The unknown makers of these artefacts also used a circular vessel having three legs and a spout made of lava, 'hard as iron'.

By 1888, as many as 300 stone mortars had been found in undisturbed gravels capped by basalt at Cherokee in Butte County, California. Interestingly, these gravels were deposited by an ancient river pre-dating the present, quite differently oriented, river system there, and have even been observed on the very *summits* of neighbouring mountains 6,000ft (1,850m) high. Geologists have assigned them to either 'Upper Pleistocene' or 'glacial' times[48]. Still more stone objects, including bowl-shaped mortars, graceful sandstone pestles, serpentine cups and steatite tobacco pipes, have been retrieved from considerable depths in these gravels near Santa Barbara, California[49], while essentially similar stone bowls, often very well made, have been dredged from so-called 'late Pleistocene' deposits off the Californian coast[50]. It is very significant that these gravels and volcanic beds occupy the valleys indenting the flanks of the Sierra Nevada and Sacramento Valley[51], which exhibit many geological features (*eg*, striated and polished rock surfaces) conventionally ascribed to former glacial action but which we contend were products of other agencies acting tumultuously at the time of the Phaeton disaster.

Particularly telling evidence of very early cultured endeavour came to light in 1940, when Dr Asbjourn Ousdal – a dental practitioner and amateur fossil collector – unexpectedly discovered an inscribed bowl in a block of solid sandstone near the summit of a hill in the Santa Barbara range. Part of the rim of this bowl, illustrated here for the first time (fig 6.1), bears strange, elaborate and carefully executed script-like signs or decorative devices. In considering the great antiquity of this relic, we should recall: a) the previously-mentioned stone utensils in the Santa Barbara gravels; b) Dr Bower's report on the bones of cetacean and other marine mammals in Pliocene deposits (later identified as 'Pleistocene') met with "...especially

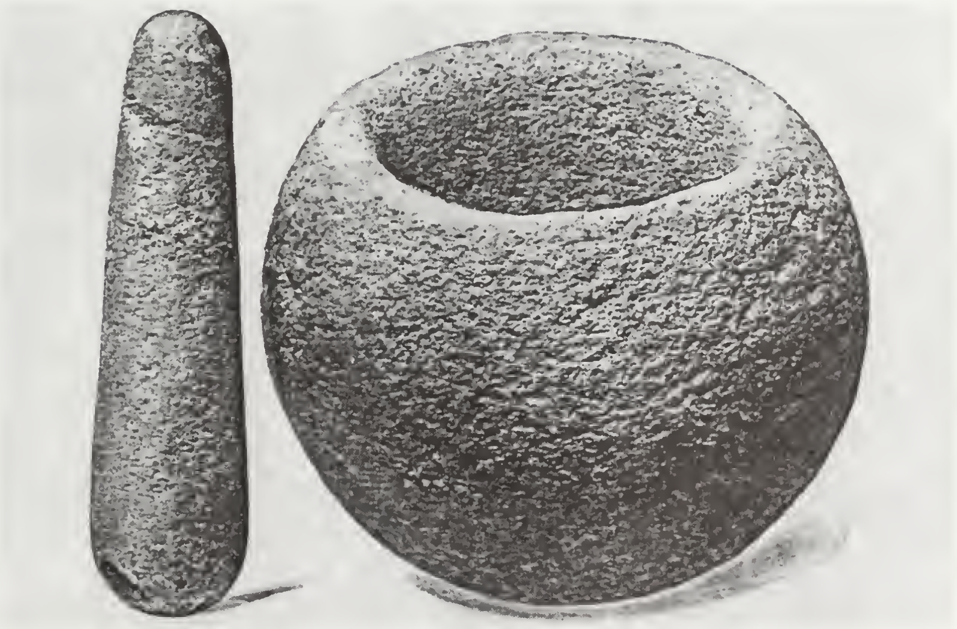

Fig 6.1. Mortar and pestle found in gravels in California. *Courtesy of Geological Society of America.*

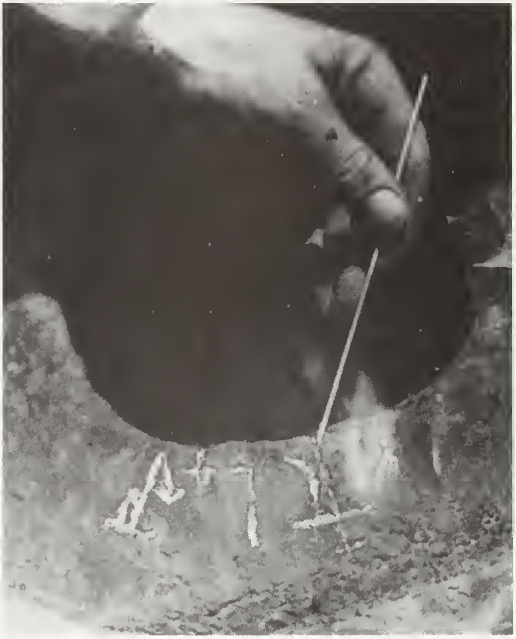

Fig 6.2. Prehistoric inscribed bowl, Santa Barbara Range, California.

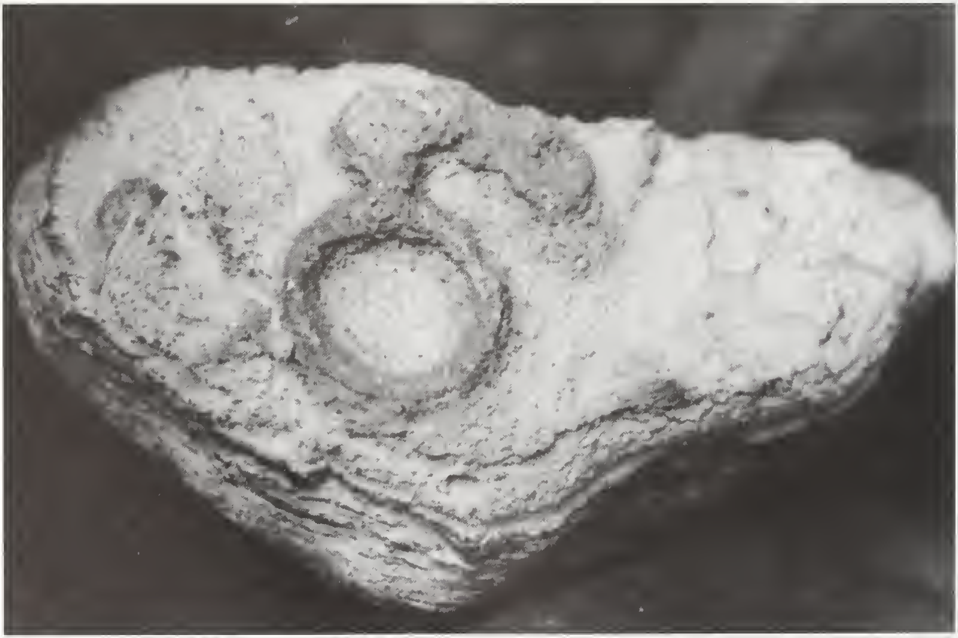

Fig 6.3. Prehistoric iron chain.

along the sides and crests of the Santa Paula mountains..." and the hills just north of Buenaventura[52], near the Santa Barbara range; and c) that the sandstone enveloping this bowl had been upheaved with the hill of which it was a part.

Equally noteworthy is the portion of an iron chain accidentally discovered in solid sandstone exposed in the side of a deep ravine, at the junction of Clark and Nye counties with the California stateline, by the late Frederick G Hehr of Los Angeles during 1952. Hehr, an artesian well specialist, collected the curiosity and supplied the photograph of it, published here for the first time (fig 6.3). The sandstone lay 37ft (11m) below the rim of the ravine wall – a rather modest depth compared to the 184ft (56m) at which undoubted fragments of a paved road or causeway which were found by Hehr, protruding from a canyon wall 13 miles (21km) SSE of Lake Owens, westward of the notorious Death Valley, California[53].

No less interesting is the copper coin-like object (fig 6.4) discovered at Lawn Ridge, Illinois, last century, described by Prof Alexander Winchell in 1881[54]. So, too, the copper knife found close to a much-decayed Mastodon leg-bone, 5–6ft (1.6m) below ground level in *undisturbed* 'drift' gravel near Stirling, Illinois[55].

Before leaving North American evidence, of which much more could be cited, we should mention the beautifully-fashioned plummet-like object of sienite discovered 30ft (9.2m) below ground level during the sinking of a well at Woodbridge in the San Joaquim Valley, California. Embedded in *undisturbed* Pleistocene gravel, the object was so expertly ground and polished that Prof Foster considered it to be "...an exhibition of the lapidiary's skill superior to anything yet furnished by the Stone Age of either continent"[56]. The implement had been drilled by a process which, instead of producing a uniform gauge, resulted in a rimmed aperture, the rimming having been started from each end. Such technological accomplishments bear eloquent testimony for the existence of a civilized race at this early time.

But if the foregoing fails to impress as certain evidence of wide-ranging technical ability before Phaeton's visit, how does one view

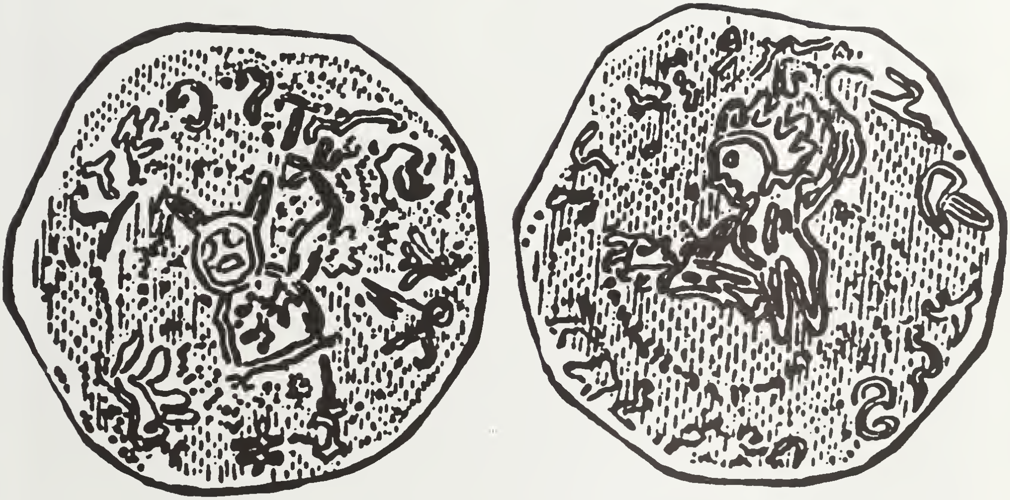

Fig 6.4. Copper coin, found buried 114ft underground in Illinois.

the ruins of a well-made village at Jarmo, 30 miles (48km) east of Kirkuk in north-eastern Iraq, where charcoal samples have been dated at 11,200 ±200 years and 11,240 ±300 years BP respectively?[57] The village itself is apparently at least as old as, if not older than those dates. The capacity to build such a village so soon after the inferred date of the Phaeton disaster was only possible if knowledge of organised construction and the requisite skills to effect it already existed amongst the builders. These must have been catastrophe survivors, or their immediate offspring, possessing a tradition of building techniques.

Larger relics, such as the buried remains of large well-formed boats or ships, probably coeval with at least some of the aforementioned artefacts, have occasionally been encountered at various depths in 'drift' deposits. As these ships, which have been discovered in Peru[58], Switzerland[59], Russia[60], and South Africa[61], occur either in *solid* stone or at remarkable depths underground, and are unquestionably of great antiquity, reasonable grounds exist for regarding them as vessels which were probably overwhelmed and buried during the Phaeton disaster. Statements like those of the Mandan Indians, who aver that shortly after the Deluge their forefathers were visited by a mysterious bearded white culture-hero who arrived in a huge wooden ship made with 'metal tools'[62], appear as valuable if fragmentary confirmation of prehistoric technological abilities.

Not improbably, therefore, a great cross-section of antediluvian artefacts and useful objects lay strewn about the post-diluvian landscape some 11,500 years ago, often partly buried or obscured by sediments, fallen rock or erupted lava, and no doubt frequently cracked, broken or otherwise damaged. Many, in fact, must have been irretrievably damaged and were unusable. More elaborate objects – even if broken – may still have yielded useful components (*eg*, cogs, nails, *etc*) or simply useful flat surfaces or sharp edges which could be salvaged and adapted by those who knew how to do so.

Ignorant and semi-ignorant individuals would have remained unaware of the potential value of such debris, although occasionally they may have preserved such items as 'sacred' or 'magical' relics of a lost and much greater past. In this way quite mundane objects may have come to be worn outlandishly as amulets and charms. On the other hand, more knowledgeable individuals would have been near-ecstatic at finding, say, an intact bowl, a knife, a cut plank of wood or even an isolated brick.

In the very earliest post-diluvian days, many human corpses would have been found with at least some of their clothing still on them. High latitude survivors, facing rapidly cooling climatic conditions, would doubtless have had no compunction in stripping wearable garments from the dead. Living animals with hides and pelts were rare and, without cutting instruments, difficult to skin and harder still to flense properly, even if successfully parted from their original owners. Where they occurred, sharp edged stones must have been among the very first objects used to cut and pound raw flesh, cut off skins and furs, sever small branches from the multitude of smashed trees and other botanical rubbish littering the countryside or washed-up as great mats and rafts along beaches or choking creeks and backwaters.

Flatter stones must have served as the first hammers and mauls, being utilised to crack open animal bones and drive in stout branches around which the earliest artificial windbreaks must have been constructed. Certainly the salvaging of all transportable timber must have been an early activity of post-diluvian Man, for these plants simultaneously afforded fuel (and therefore warmth), building materials for both permanent and portable refuges, enclosures, mating, fibres and weapons, to name just a few uses.

Through necessity, stones – in many places the most common objects on the surface of the ground – began to be used for all kinds of purposes, and a whole new culture developed with the use and adaption of stones as the underlying motive. Hesitantly at first, and certainly crudely, stones began to be employed as tools, utensils and weapons, with refinements gradually added to the earliest stumbling adaptions. The 'Stone Age' had arrived.

5

A NEW BEGINNING

Catapulted into the unfamiliar, often hostile, Younger Dryas world generated by Phaeton's visit which contrasted so markedly with the previous 'Golden Age', the surviving remnants of humankind faced what, in effect, was a new beginning. The prehistoric (Pliocene/Pleistocene) world had gone and a new, historic (Holocene) world had just dawned.

Initially, the enforced degradation and vastly depleted population of the survivors would combine to retard people's progress for decades, even centuries. Relocation to more favourable localities became an early priority, especially for survivors who at first found themselves in high latitudes. Accordingly, great treks to more benevolent regions were undertaken, the participants learning *en route* how effectively to utilise the smallest item to their common advantage. The seeds of nomadic lifestyles were born then. People had to adapt or perish.

Organised re-peopling and husbandry assumed special urgency then, as did the remarkable civilising activities of the aforementioned mysterious white culture-heroes of global tradition. Certainly grassy steppes were among the first of the re-vegetated regions occupied by the early survivors. There, pastoral communities developed and bred horses, cattle, sheep and goats, which were in time moved systematically from one suitable locality to the next as pastures were eaten down and left to regenerate. A wandering nomadic existence became the norm for many survivor groups, and, as Prof Scott-Elliot long ago pointed out:

> ...the point... of most importance to us here is the effect of this sort of life in producing not only breeds of cattle, sheep and goats capable of looking after themselves without much assistance, but also a kind of person of a totally new character. There must have been, as soon as this sort of life became possible, an extraordinary increase in population. Both people and animals would multiply with extreme rapidity in a practically unlimited ranch such as were the steppes in this early period. The life was healthy enough, though dirty and restless... The mere fact of living in company involves... invaluable discipline...[63]

In warmer latitudes, where collapsed sky conditions and persistent bitingly cold winds were either less acute, infrequent or non-existent, re-vegetation of the new landscape would have proceeded with surprising rapidity, especially in regions extensively covered by freshly deposited muds heavily charged with organic remains and nutritious mineral and volcanic debris. Seeds, cones, pollen and spores buried in such deposits must have germinated comparatively quickly in such regions with highly beneficial results. Modern studies of botanical regeneration in flood-afflicted regions, so intimately governed during Younger Dryas times by often severe climatic fluctuations both north and south of the equator[64], themselves induced by an unstable, wobbling Earth, strongly support the high probability of such developments[65].

Such herbivores as had survived would have naturally gravitated towards botanically revitalised areas, and the same would also have been true of many types of birds and insects. Reptilian and amphibian survivors, on the other hand, could have re-established themselves and multiplied only *in* warm latitudes.

Developments like these in equatorial areas would have been strong inducements to human survivors aware of them to reach and settle such regions to partake of, and perhaps harvest, the varied life already beginning to proliferate there. This reaction apparently also extended to the settling and exploitation of equatorial, subtropical and warm-temperate marine and lacustrine coastlines and their offshore waters. Numberless early Holocene 'kitchen' middens, containing the remnants of vast numbers of fish-bones and edible molluscs are known from many parts of the world, attesting to the attraction such localities and lifeforms had for hard-pressed humanity. In South Africa, for instance, early Holocene communities evidently subsisted on shellfish over a very long span of time[66], the duration of which can be gauged from the significant changes observable in the isotopic record embodied in the mineralogy of shells obtained from different levels within specific middens accumulated then[67]. Essentially identical records have now been traced for the same period almost worldwide.

As we have previously noted, environmental changes like this were rather characteristic of Younger Dryas times. But of all the changes which took place then, two in particular were especially critical, and unquestionably influenced a great deal of early Holocene human activity. Apart from the aforementioned high winds and thick cloud cover in high latitudes (collapsed sky conditions), ice-caps began to form around earth's relocated poles, as much as a result of Earth's new axial tilt as of the persistent cloud cover itself. An ice-cap began to form and expand across what today is Antarctica, with concomitant climatic effects across much of the southern hemisphere.

In warmer latitudes, innumerable glaciers developed in the majority of upland regions everywhere – even in the tropics[68] – and continued until the onset between seven and eight thousand years ago of warmer conditions. These caused their general recession and, in many cases, disappearance. In turn, the melt-waters resulting from this widespread diminution of glaciers served to raise world sea levels, with subsequent further effect upon climatic regimes. The release of so much additional water then also contributed to the natural rearrangement of much of the original 'drift' deposits, reducing these in many places to the valley and river-terrace sands and gravels of present times.

All these developments were further legacies of Phaeton's visit, just as are the present day climatic vicissitudes – transient but calamitous local flooding, sudden landslides and the multitude of isolated seismic and volcanic disturbances. As Wigley[69] and Lamb[70] have so ably pointed out, these and other environmental factors have had a pronounced influence of the development of Holocene people, their thoughts and industries, so that, in a sense, we are still combating and experiencing the last-gasp effects of the Phaeton disaster itself, insofar as those affect our home planet, Earth.

That the Phaeton disaster proper marked the single most momentous point in intelligent humanity's history so far – the Deluge of global tradition representing our most abiding memory of it – can surely no longer be doubted. Earlier scholars who, using the Deluge as a critical datum, scheduled ancient events as either *ante-* or *post-*diluvian were, despite some of their quaint and often spurious arguments, essentially correct. To be more accurate, however, we should perhaps henceforth classify humanity's past history as either *pre-* or *post-*Phaetonic.

This is a possibly startling yet eminently defensible proposition, in which the celebrated Ice Age largely vanishes, and the associated Pleistocene period shrinks to become an event which, though appallingly violent worldwide, was actually of surprisingly brief duration. Evidence – much of it of *recent* discovery – repeatedly demonstrating these propositions is not only numerous – itself a most impressive point – but truly interdisciplinary and of a genuinely global scope. Certainly the collective message transmitted by this evidence cannot be justifiably ignored or side-stepped any longer.

Yet, despite all the foregoing, the story of the Phaeton disaster remains unfinished. For obvious reasons the present outline of that event's terrible character and effects is inevitably incomplete and uneven, for much additional evidence supporting its former reality undoutedly awaits discovery.

There can be no question that future research and discoveries will markedly enhance some of the many aspects still traceable of this remarkable event or will, with equal incisiveness, modify or even negate others advanced on earlier pages. Nevertheless, the story's main fabric will not fall; the prolific evidence adduced in support of it is too wide-ranging and incontrovertible to permit that.

In the light of recorded knowledge, therefore, our presentation of the time when *Earth Nearly Died* actually consists of little more than a preliminary study of an infinitely greater puzzle, en route merely stressing vital links, important hints, apparently endless ramifications, and suggesting various line of further enquiry. The field affected is unquestionably immense, and countless future researches will be undertaken before the full extent of this awesome event will be revealed in all its towering majesty.

REFERENCES

1. Rafinesque, C S. 1836. *The American Nations,* 2 vols, (Philadelphia).
2. Bellamy, H S. 1936. *Moons, Myths and Man* (London), 351pp; see p146.
3. Bellamy, H S. 1936. *Op cit*, p257.
4. Bellamy, H S. 1936. *Op cit*, pp145–6.
5. Bellamy, H S. 1945. *In the Beginning God* (London), 212pp; see pp160–165.
6. Graves, R. 1960. *The Greek Myths* 2 vols, (London), revised edn; see vol 1, p154, citing Ovid's *Metamorphoses*, viii, 670–724.
7. Bellamy, H S. 1945. *Op cit*, p163.
8. Bellamy, H S. 1945. *Op cit*, p197.
9. Bellamy, H S. 1945. *Op cit*, p164.
10. Nadaillac, M de. 1885. *Pre-Historic America* (London), xii + 566pp; see p530.
11. Bellamy, H S. 1936. *Op cit*, p271.
12. Bellamy, H S. 1936. *Op cit*, p138.
13. Bellamy, H S. 1936. *Op cit*, pp121–2.
14. Bellamy, H S. 1936. *Op cit*, pp164–5.
15. Bancroft, H H. 1875–6. *Native Races of North America*, 5 vols, (London); see vol iii, p81.
16. Bancroft, H H. 1875–6. *Ibid.*
17. Bancroft, H H. 1875–6. *Ibid.*
18. Bancroft, H H. 1875–6. *Ibid.*
19. Koch-Grünberg, T. 1907. *Südamerikanische Felszeichungen* (Berlin), 3 + 92pp.
20. Brinton, D G. 1882. *Myths of the New World* (Philadelphia), viii + 331pp; see p165.
21. Lewin, T H. 1869. *The Hill Tribes of Chittagong* (Calcutta), 151pp; see p95.
22. *St John the Divine, The Revelation of.* Chap 6, v15.
23. Bancroft, H H. 1875–6. *Op cit*, p204.
    Goetz, D, & S G Morley (eds). 1950. *The Popul Vuh,* tr by A Recinos, (Univ Oklahoma Press), xix + 267pp; see pp182–3.
    Short, J T. 1880. *North Americans of Antiquity* (New York), 2nd edn, vii-xviii + 544pp; see p214.
24. Lambert, W G, & A R Millard. 1969. *Atra-Hasis: The Babylonian Story of the Flood* (Oxford), xii + 198pp; see p79.
25. Bellamy, H S. 1945. *Op cit*, p133.
26. West, E W (transl), 1880, "Pahlavi Texts: The Bundahish" in *The Sacred Books of the East* (Oxford), Chapt vii, sec 13.
27. *Book of Revelation*. Chap viii v11.
28. Anderson, R B. 1888. *Norse Mythology* (Chicago), 473pp; see p444.
29. Anderson, R B. 1888. *Op cit*, p447.
30. Bancroft, H H. 1875–6. *Ibid.*
31. Bellamy, H S. 1936. *Op cit*, p131.
32. Crawford, T P. 1881. *The Compendium of Wong-shi-Shing, 1526–1590,* The Chinese Recorder (Shanghai); see vol xii, pp4–5.
33. Crawford, T P. 1881. *Op cit*, p8.
34. Crawford, T P. 1881. *Op cit*, p5.
35. *Book of Genesis*. Chap 1, v29.
36. *Book of Genesis*. Chap ix, v2–3.
37. Crawford, T P. 1881. *Op cit*, p3.
38. *Book of Genesis*. Chap ix, v4.
39. Charles, R H (ed). 1913. "The Book of Adam and Eve" in *The Apocrypha and Pseudepigraphia of the Old Testament in English*, 2 vols, (Oxford); see vol 1, chap 4.
40. *Radiocarbon*. vol 6, 1964, p28.
41. *Book of Genesis*. Chapt iii, v21.
42. Bellamy, H S. 1936. *Op cit*, p253.
43. Posnansky, A. 1912. *Guia General illustrada para la investigacion de los Monumentos Prehistoricos de Tiahuanacu e Islas del Sol y la Luna* (La Paz), 104 + 2pp.
44. Markham, C. 1910. *The Incas of Peru* (London), xvi + 443pp.
45. Hay, O P. 1927. "The Pleistocene of the Western Region of North America and its Vertebrate Animals", *Carnegie Inst*, Washington, publ no:322b, p3.

46. Southall, J. 1882. "Pliocene Man in America", *J Trans Vict Inst Lond*, vol 15, pp195–6.
47. Eberhart, H. 1961. "The Cogged Stones of Southern California", *Amer Antiq*, vol 26, pp361–370.
48. Skertchly, S B J. 1888. "On the occurrence of stone mortars in the ancient (Pliocene?) river gravels of Butte County, California", *J Anthrop Instit*, vol 17, pp332–337.
49. Holmes, W H. 1919. *Handbook of Aboriginal American Antiquities: Part 1. Introductory and Lithic Industries* (Washington), xvii + 380pp; see p115.
50. Carter, G F. 1980. *Earlier than You Think* (Texas Univ Press), 348pp; see pp146–7.
51. Southall, J. 1882. *Op cit*, p197.
52. Hay, O P. 1927. *Op cit*, p193.
53. Hehr, F G. 1955. Personal communication.
54. Winchell, A. 1881. *Sparks from a Geologist's Hammer* (Chicago), 400pp; see p170.
55. Foster, J W. 1870. "On the Antiquity of Man in North America", *Trans Chicago Acad Sci*, vol 1, pt ii, p244.
56. Foster, J W. 1870. *Ibid*.
57. *Radiocarbon*, vol 2, 1960; see p182.
58. Cieza de Leon, P. 1553. *La Cronica del Perú: Part One* (Seville), xxxii + 367pp.
59. Fregosa, B. 1509. *De dictis factisq; memorabilibus collectanea* (Medoliani), np.
60. Strahlenberg, P J. 1738. *A historico-geographical description of the northern part of North and Eastern Europe and Asia* (London), 462pp; see p405.
61. *Anonymous*. 1818. "General Literature and Miscellaneous Communications: no 17 Ship discovered in the Earth in Africa", *Q Jl Lit Sci Arts Lond*, vol v, p150.
62. Weid-Neuweid, M A P. 1839–1841. *Reise in das innere Nord-America in den Jahren 1832 bis 1834*, 2 vols, (Coblenz); see vol 2.
63. Scott-Elliot, G F. 1925. *Prehistoric Man and His Story*, (London), xvi + 398pp; see p205.
64. Salinger, M J. 1981. "Palaeoclimates North and South", *Nature*, vol 291, pp106–107.
65. Sigafoos, R S. 1964. "Botanical Evidence of Floods and Flood-Plain Deposition", *US Geol Surv Prof Paper* 485-A, pp1–35.
    Hupp, C R. 1988. "Plant ecological aspects of Flood Geomorphology and Palaeoflood History", pp335–356 in *Flood Geomorphology*, ed by V R Baker *et al*, (New York).
66. Parkington, J E. 1986. "Landscape and subsistence changes since the Last Glacial Maximum along the Western Cape Coast", pp201–226 in "The End of the Palaeolithic in the Old World", ed by L G Strauss, *Brit Archaeol Rep*, GB.
67. Cohen, A L, & J E Parkington *et al*. 1992. "A Holocene Marine Climate Record in Mollusc Shells from the Southwest African Coast", *Quat Res*, vol 38, pp379–385.
68. Hume, W F, & J I Craig. 1911. "The Glacial Period and Climate Changes in North-East Asia", *Rep Brit Assoc Advt Sci*, Portsmouth), pp382–3.
    Bowler, J M, & G S Hope *et al*. 1976. "Late Quaternary Climates of Australia and New Guinea", *Quat Res*, vol 6, no 3, pp359–394, see p359.
    Also see: Hope, G S, J A Patterson, U Radock & I Allison. 1976. *The Equatorial Glaciers of New Guinea*, (Rotterdam), 330pp.
69. Wigley, T M I, M A Ingram & G Farmer (eds). 1981. *Climate and History, Studies in Past Climates and their Impact on Man* (Cambridge), 530pp.
70. Lamb, H H. 1982. *Climate, History and the Modern World* (London).

Appendix A
REFRIGERATED MAMMOTHS

Before the Phaeton disaster, much of the present Arctic region was covered with forest-steppe vegetation – forests interspersed with grasslands – maintained by moist, mild climatic conditions typified by an annual average temperature at least 10°C, much higher than today. Prodigious herds of herbivores roamed the area and depended heavily on this vegetation.

When the catastrophe occurred, animals and plants alike were destroyed as the climate was changed drastically. The location of the poles altered and the Arctic region, cut off from the heat of the Sun, was plunged into a prolonged night of devastating cold. Temperatures there dropped almost immediately below –40°C, and perhaps eventually to –71°C, which is that of the present 'Cold Pole' in Siberia. Chronic volcanic pollution of the atmosphere worldwide not only accompanied this axial shift but also greatly accelerated this tremendous (and permanent) drop in temperature. Large scale watery displacements also occurred in these latitudes more or less simultaneously.

The intense refrigeration was unquestionably sudden, *very* sudden. All observers have commented upon this inescapable fact. It froze the ground solid, turned lake and ground water into great lenses of ice, and froze dead and dying animals and plants throughout the region into grim memorials which have survived, unchanged, in that condition, down to our own day. Among these have been the frozen carcasses of mammoths, woolly rhinoceroses and their large contemporaries.

It is the physical state of the flesh of these frozen cadavers which provides evidence of the astonishing suddenness and completeness of this refrigeration. Digby, in his book about Siberian mammoths, quotes Herz as describing mammoth flesh as "...fibrous and marbled with fat", and as looking "...as fresh as well-frozen beef"[1]. Excellent soup has been made from the meat of some frozen mammoth carcass, and the meat itself, apparently, was cooked and eaten[2].

This deep refrigeration, therefore, did not seemingly destroy the flesh of these animals, even though Merryman and others have contended that sudden, intense freezing would probably destroy the constituent cells. Merryman cites Lovelock as opining that –5°C is "...the lowest temperature to which mammalian cells may be slowly frozen and still survive"[3]. Others, however, have disputed such statements[4], and it is clear that the evidence of these frozen Siberian carcasses does too.

It is important to note that these mammoth carcasses represent healthy well-nourished individuals. They do not belong to very old, degenerate or starving animals as some have maintained. Indeed, a deep-frozen six month old baby mammoth carcass found in 1977 was so perfectly preserved that analyses could be made of its blood and protein, and its tissues were used for genetic studies. Interestingly, the date suggested for its demise was about 12,000 years BP[5]. This is within the 14,000–9,000 years BP period assigned on the basis of other C^{14} datings for the general extinction of mammoths in the Arctic[6], and relatively very close to the date of the Phaeton disaster advocated in this book.

According to professional opinion, to freeze a warm-blooded mammal the size of a mammoth requires a temperature of below –30°C to –40°C. This temperature is needed in order that there is no injury to the cellular tissue, and that the physio-chemical and enzymic reactions are halted – there is no question of the freeze being either slow or gradual[7].

Merryman has pointed out that, once the temperature has fallen to a low level, it must remain at that level if a frozen product is to escape serious damage. This is because, if these low levels are not maintained, a recrystallisation process may take place within the ice initially freezing the product. In such a process numerous small ice crystals combine into larger ones, and, in the case of frozen flesh, their growth would disrupt cells and membranes, allowing the escape of natural juices, nutriment and flavour[8]. Fluctuating freeze-levels would thus damage the flesh and lead eventually to decay and dissolution.

From this brief analysis of the mechanics of freezing, we can conclude that the preservation of mammoth meat for over 11,000 years in virtually unimpaired condition calls for an initial freeze followed by a great lowering of temperature which has been maintained uninterrupted throughout the intervening millennia. The sequence of events comprising the Phaeton disaster – insofar as it directly affected Earth – described in part five requires precisely the set of effects epitomised by these Siberian carcasses.

It has often been argued that the mammoth, with its thick hairy coat and layer of adipose tissue (established from several of the best preserved frozen cadavers) was admirably equipped to withstand the harsh conditions of Ice Age times. This theory was tested when a microscopic examination of retrieved mammoth skin was compared with another of the skin of the living Indian elephant. The comparison showed that both skins were identical and that neither contained the vital sebaceous glands for secreting the oil necessary to keep an animal sufficiently warm under icy conditions. Without a natural supply of oil, the hairy coat of the mammoth, and also that of its contemporary the woolly rhinoceros, would have been useless in such conditions. On the other hand, a sheep, and in particular the musk-ox, with its oily coat, is much better equipped than the mammoth or the woolly rhinoceros to withstand severe cold[9].

Fat, or adipose tissue, does not necessarily imply a defence mechanism against cold either. It constitutes a useful food store against winter scarcity or during months of aridity. As the seeds found in the mouths and stomachs of various frozen mammoths indicate a summer demise[10], the presence of fat on these individuals would, in fact, be completely normal. The bison, a companion of the mammoth at many and various localities, is an ecologically-specialised animal having a double hump. This feature, like the mammoth's adipose tissue, represents a food store enabling the animal to survive periods of aridity in the grasslands it inhabits[11]. Very probably, the woolly rhinoceros was similarly equipped, because it was not specifically adapted to Arctic tundra vegetation, but, like the bison, preferred rolling grasslands, as demonstrated by the remains which have been found across the plains of Spain[12].

REFERENCES

1. Digby, B. 1926. *The Mammoth and Mammoth-Hunting Grounds in Northwestern Siberia* (New York), 224pp.
2. Nalivkin, D V. 1973. *The Geology of the USSR* (Edinburgh), xxviii + 855pp; see p776.
3. Merryman, H T. 1956. "The Mechanics of Freeing in Living Cells and Tissues", *Science*, vol 124, no 3221, pp518–9.
4. Levitt, J. 1957. "The Mechanics of Freezing", *Science*, vol 125, no 3240, p194.
5. *Anonymous*, 1978–9. "Baby Mammoth Discovered in Siberia", *The Polar Record*, vol 19 (120); see 'Notes', p287.
6. Martin, P S, & H E Wright. 1967. *Pleistocene Extinctions* (Yale Univ Press), viii + 453pp; p392.
7. Bird's Eye Ltd. 1975. *Food Freezing*. Also correspondence.
8. Merryman, H T. 1956. *Op cit*, p518.
9. Neuville, H. 1919. "On the Extinction of the Mammoth", *Rep Smithsonian Inst for 1919*, pp331–333.
10. Sukachev, V N. 1914. *Scientific Findings of an Expedition outfitted by the Imperial Academy of Sciences for the purpose of Excavating the Mammoth found by the Beresovka River in 1901*, vol iii, (Petrograd).
11. Geist, V. 1970–71. "The Relation of Social Evolution and Dispersal in Ungulates during the Pleistocene, with emphasis on the Old World Deer and the genus Bison", *Quat Res*, vol 1, pp283–315.
12. Kurtén, B. 1968. *The Pleistocene Mammals of Europe* (London), viii + 317pp.

Appendix B

DATING OF FINDS FROM THE CATASTROPHE PERIOD

This concerns dated evidence for major worldwide environmental and faunal changes approximately 11,500 years ago.

Organic material has been dated almost exclusively by the Carbon-14 dating method, whereas most of the tectonic, meteorological and hydrological dates have been determined by other methods (including Argon-Potassium dating), or by a combination of two or more methods.

Among other dating methods now in use are those involving uranium-radium, thorium, chlorine, beryllium, rubidium-strontium, thermoluminescence, fission-track and tephrochronological (volcanic ash)[1]. All have limitations, however, as the Argon-Potassium method, outlined below, readily illustrates.

Potassium-bearing minerals have often been deposited with accumulated sediments. Potassium (K) is a very active alkaline element including in its composition a radioactive isotope which decays at a known rate into two other elements – Argon and Calcium. During this process, an electron from the Potassium 'shell' is captured by a nucleus, and 12% of the Potassium is converted into Argon-40, and 88% into Calcium.

Calculating the ratio of Potassium to Argon and calcium is quite accurate and easily applicable for periods extending back several millions of years before present. Unfortunately the half-life is not accurately known and the distribution of Argon has been found to be inhomogeneous in rocks and minerals. The difficulty is compounded by the fact that no basis presently exists for estimating the isotopic composition of the original Argon, and by the uncertainty surrounding what is taken to be 'original' Argon being, perhaps, actually a recent loss of Potassium[2].

REFERENCES

1. Nilsson, T. 1983. *The Pleistocene: Geology and Life in the Quaternary Ice Age* (Dordrecht, Boston, London), 651pp.
2. Faul, H. 1966. *Ages of Rocks, Planets and Stars* (New York), ix + 109pp; see pp32–46.

DATES AND PLACES OF FINDS PERTAINING TO THE PHAETON DISASTER

All dates cited are in years before present (BP). **amsl** signifies 'above mean sea level' and **bpgl** signifies 'below present ground level'.

Material	Location	Date
OLD WORLD		
ORGANIC – BOTANICAL		
Charcoal	Bushman's Rock, *Africa*	12,090
Charcoal	*Uganda*	11,350 ±340
Wood in peaty mud	Sjelland, *Denmark*	11,090 ±240
Wood	Sjelland, *Denmark*	11,310 ±500
Charcoal in fossil soil	Folkestone, *England*	11,944 ±210
Plant debris 4m bpgl under alluvium	Warwickshire, *England*	10,560 ±142
Charcoal in red soil with volcanic ash	Gala Lakes, *Ethiopia*	11,510 ±110
Charcoal in mud-flow	Andernack, *Germany*	11,150 ±200
Birch, willow	Kiel, *Germany*	11,270 ±130
Charcoal in mud-flow	Mayen, *Germany*	10,800 ±300
Charred wood	Inghiottitoio, *Italy*	11,150 ±650
Charcoal under tufa	Hokkaido, *Japan*	11,520 ±400
Carbonised tree	Komoro, *Japan*	11,300 ±400
Wood in lava flow	Kosakamachi, *Japan*	12,000 ±250
Wood in clay	Tokyo, *Japan*	11,300 ±360
Charcoal	Cyrene, *Libya*	12,580 ±172
Wood	Rudnja, *Lithuania*	11,970 ±180
Charcoal	Bodel, *Netherlands*	11,070 ±90
Wood	Blomvag, *Norway*	12,200 ±350
Driftwood	Bluno Is, *Norway*	12,100 ±350
Wood in sandy gravel	Cizysko, *Poland*	11,390 ±210
Charcoal residue	Kasama, *Zimbabwe*	10,820 ±430
Fossil tree from mammoth horizon	Taimyr Pen, *Siberia*	11,700 ±300
Wood in sand on top of 'till'	Dattnau, *Switzerland*	12,206 ±73
Wood fragments under basal 'till'	Petit-Saconnex, *Switz*	11,560 ±280
	Average date	**11,517**
ORGANIC – PEAT DEPOSITS		
Basal peat showing start of bog	Spisska Kotlina, *Austria*	11,010 ±160
Peat	Anvers, *Belgium*	10,920 ±540
Peat	Anvers, *Belgium*	11,950 ±430
Peat	Campine, *Belgium*	11,640 ±250
Moss peat	Cornwall, *Britain*	11,071 ±180
Moss peat	Durham, *England*	11,011 ±230
Moss peat	Lincolnshire, *England*	11,205 ±120
Peat	*Lithuania*	11,200 ±340
Moss peat	Usselo, *Netherlands*	11,300 ±140
Moss peat	Usselo, *Netherlands*	11,620 ±140
Pollen-rich peat	Troms, *Norway*	10,720 ±240
Peat in clay	Stirling, *Scotland*	11,024 ±199
	Average date	**11,222**
SEDIMENTS		
Lake mud	*Denmark*	10,970 ±300
Black mud	Wexford, *Eire*	11,060 ±250
Lake mud	Darlington, *England*	10,851 ±630
Organic marsh soil	Kent, *England*	11,960 ±160
Clay-mud in end moraine	Rappiner on Rugen *Germany*	12,100 ±600
Sediments below 'till'	Usedon, *Germany*	11,244 ±640
Organic carbon in clay	Tokyo, *Japan*	11,840 ±290
Basal gyttja	Bear Is, *Norway*	11,135 ±130
Gyttja in bog	Blindfunon, *Norway*	12,100 ±100
Grey gyttja	Brondmyra, *Norway*	11,300 ±300
Gyttja in kettle-hole	Troms, *Norway*	11,680 ±170
Organic sediments	Shetland Is, *Scotland*	10,055 ±300
Gyttja	Shetland Is, *Scotland*	12,090 ±900
Basal gyttja	*Sweden*	11,730 ±150
Gyttja with chalk and clay	*Switzerland*	10,950 ±200
Gyttja with clay	Dalpe, *Switzerland*	10,900 ±250
Gyttja in lake deposit	L Origlio, *Switzerland*	12,00 ±200
	Average date	**11,409**
NEW WORLD, OCEANIA & AUSTRALASIA		
ORGANIC – BOTANICAL		
Wood in ice-wedge	Baldwin Pen, *Alaska*	11,340 ±400
Wood 3.5m bpgl	Barrow, *Alaska*	10,800 ±300
Wood and shells 0.8m bpgl	NSW, *Australia*	11.140 ±160
Conifer 2m bpgl	British Columbia, *Canada*	11,590 ±280
Wood in lake silt	L Iroquois, *Canada*	11,570 ±260
Wood & peat between 2 till layers	Port Hood I, *Canada*	10,710 ±240
Wood 12m bpgl	Oldman River, *Canada*	11,000 ±250
Wood in mastodon horizon	Ontario, *Canada*	11,400 ±450
Plant remains in mastodon site	Ontario, *Canada*	12,000 ±200
Charcoal	Saskatchewan, *Canada*	10,800 ±300
Wood 19m bpgl	Vancouver I, *Canada*	12,000 ±450

Material	Location	Date
Organic residue in marl 2m bpgl	Yukon, *Canada*	12,120 ±140
Wood in peat	Aghawagon, *New Guinea*	11,330 ±150
Wood 2.5m bpgl with gravel, basalt and loess in clay	Dunedin, *New Zealand*	11,500 ±170
Wood	Wellington, *New Zealand*	11,500 ±160
Organic layers	*Tristan da Cunha*	10,770 ±156
Various trees, charcoal	Arizona, *USA*	11,290 ±500
Charcoal with mammoth remains	California, *USA*	11,800 ±800
Plants with Folsom artefacts and carbonised plants	Clovis, New Mexico, *USA*	10,490 ±900 11,170 ±360
Wood below mastodon remains	Indiana, *USA*	12,000 ±450
Spruce in 'glacial' deposit	Iowa, *USA*	11,120 ±400
Spruce 8m bpgl	Iowa, *USA*	11,600 ±200
Charcoal in mammoth site	Michigan, *USA*	11,290 ±500
Wood 1m under 'glacial' clay	Minnesota, *USA*	11,710 ±325
Spruce tree	New York, *USA*	11,410 ±400
Wood 4m bpgl	South Dakota, *USA*	12,000 ±400
Spruce tree	Wisconsin, *USA*	10,877 ±470
Picea wood	Wisconsin, *USA*	12,000 ±300
	Average date	**11,390**

ORGANIC – PEAT DEPOSITS

Material	Location	Date
Peat	Anchorage, *Alaska*	11,600 ±300
Peat with twigs 2m bpgl	Copper River, *Alaska*	11,390 ±300
Peat below Holocene marine sediments	*Alaska*	11,570 ±130
Peat in marine terrace	Munday Creek, *Alaska*	10,820 ±420
Peat	Ontario, *Canada*	11,950 ±350
Peat in kettle-hole	Vancouver Is, *Canada*	11,780 ±450
Peat, pollen 10m bpgl	Hauraki, *New Zealand*	11,900 ±750
Peat	*Colombia*, S America	11,350 ±140
Peat	Cape Fear, *USA*	10,430 ±590
Peat in estuarine deposits	Chesapeake Bay, *USA*	11,500 ±1200
Peat	36°-42°N, E Coast, *USA*	11,000
Peat in estuarine deposits	Georges Bank, *USA*	11,000 ±1200
Peat 1m bpgl	Wisconsin, *USA*	12,000 ±500
	Average date	**11,406**

SEDIMENTS

Material	Location	Date
Sediments	Baffin I, NWT, *Canada*	11,910 ±140
Muck in mastodon horizon	Ontario, *Canada*	12,000 ±500
Carbonaceous matter	*Guatemala*, C America	11,560 ±360
Organic carbon 2m bpgl	Eugene I, Mexican Gulf	11,950 ±650
Organic soil under 'till'	Aghawagon, *New Guinea*	11,810 ±250

Material	Location	Date
Loess	*Slavonia*	11,700 ±500
Organic carbon with foraminifera	California, *USA*	12,460 ±700
Muddy clays	California, *USA*	12,360 ±2600
Organic carbon 1.8m bpgl	California, *USA*	12,500 ±600
Organic carbon	California, *USA*	12,300 ±450
Organic carbon	California, *USA*	11,400 ±600
Sterile clay overlying 'till'	Massachusetts, *USA*	12,310 ±320
Organic matter in clay	New Mexico, *USA*	11,445 ±230
Clay gyttja	Ohio, *USA*	10,558 ±365
Organic matter	Wyoming, *USA*	11,330 ±320
	Average date	**11,839**

OLD WORLD

ZOOLOGICAL – Vertebrates

Material	Location	Date
Fossil fish	*Kenya*, E Africa	12,300 12,000 ±220
Reindeer bone	Picken's Hole, *England*	12,400 ±1500
Antler	Montastruc, *France*	12,070 ±180
Antlers	Meiendorf, *Germany*	11,750 ±200
Whale	Trondheim, *Norway*	11,290 ±190
Mammoth sinews and skin	Taimyr Peninsular, *Siberia*	11,450 ±250
Bone	Cueva Bora cave, *Spain*	11,470 ±500
White whale	Agnesberg, *Sweden*	12,270 ±220
Whale	Essunga, *Sweden*	11,495 ±100
Seal	Grums, *Sweden*	10,150 ±180
Seal	Hastefjorden, *Sweden*	10,875 ±160
Seal	Lagmansered, *Sweden*	11,840 ±180
Greenland whale	Orust I, *Sweden*	12,500 ±240
	Average date	**11,670**

ZOOLOGICAL – invertebrate

Material	Location	Date
Shells in marine sediments	Disko Bay, *Greenland*	1,000 ±900
Shells 45m amsl	Glommen, *Greenland*	10,720 ±150
Shells in sand amsl	Ekrukorn, *Iceland*	11,620 ±240
Shells in silt under gravels	Kaldarbrn, *Iceland*	11,230 ±160
Foraminifera	Washtana, *India*	11,130 ±150
Shells in 'glacio-marine' clay	Belsvik, *Norway*	11,250 ±180
Shells in 'till'	Bergen, *Norway*	11,500 ±300
Shells in 'glacio-marine' clay & silt	Björkvik, *Norway*	10,020 ±130
Shells in marine bed, end moraine	Rensa, *Norway*	11,900 ±250
Shells	Sandstrand, *Norway*	11,400 ±250
Shells	Sandstrand, *Norway*	12,100 ±160
Shells in laminated clay	Troms, *Norway*	11,500 ±400
Shells in clay under gravels	Troms, *Norway*	11,500 ±400
Shell fragments	Norwegian Channel	11,950 ±290
Shells	Ardyne Point, *Scotland*	12,150–11,680
Shells	Argyll, *Scotland*	11,530 ±210
Shells in marine sediments	Cardross, *Scotland*	11,787 ±122
Shells above 'boulder clay' but under 3cm of clay	Dumbarton, *Scotland*	11,805 ±205

Material	Location	Date
Shells in end moraine	Loch Lomond, *Scotland*	11,700 ±170
Shells in marine clay	Mentieth, *Scotland*	11,800 ±170
Shells in marine clay	Paisley, *Scotland*	12,615 ±230
	Average date	**11,533**
INORGANIC – GEOLOGICAL		
Limestone	Bergen, *Norway*	11,700 ±230
Carbonates	Hormuz, *Iran*	12,350 ±145
Carbonates	*Tunisia*	12,470 ±540
	Average date	**12,173**
NEW WORLD, OCEANIA & AUSTRALASIA ZOOLOGICAL – Vertebrates		
Bison horn	*Alaska*	12,460 ±320
Diprotodon molar	Orroroo, *Australia*	11,100 ±130
Paramilodon bone	Rio Grande, *Brazil*	12,770 ±220
Mammoth tusk	British Columbia, *Canada*	11,600 ±1000
Musk ox	Banks I, NWT, *Canada*	10,600 ±320
Mastodon	Ontario, *Canada*	12,000 ±500
Giant sloth	Brunswick, *USA*	11,310 ±90
Dwarf mammoth	California, *USA*	11,800 ±800
Mammoth tusk	Colorado, *USA*	11,200 ±500
Musk ox	Michigan, *USA*	11,100 ±400
Ground sloth dung	Nevada, *USA*	11,690 ±250
Mastodon	New York, *USA*	11,410 ±400
Mylodon skull	Oregon, *USA*	11,310 ±800
Bison bone	Wyoming, *USA*	11,830 ±410
	Average date	**11,564**
ZOOLOGICAL – Invertebrates		
Shells in end moraine	Baffin I, NWT, *Canada*	10,760
Shells	Banks I, NWT, *Canada*	10,920 ±100
Shells in marine sediments		11,200 ±100
Shells	B Columbia, *Canada*	12,230 ±200
Oyster – warm-water species	Georges Bank, *Canada*	10,600 ±130
Shells	Green Bay, *Canada*	11,950 ±170
Shells in marine sediments	Melville I, NWT, *Canada*	11,310 ±150
Shells	Pr Edward I, *Canada*	12,410 ±170
Shells in marine sediments	Pr Patrick I, *Canada*	11,600 ±370
Foraminifera in moraine	Quebec, *Canada*	11,500 ±630
Shells	Victoria I, *Canada*	11,310 ±150
Reef coral	*New Guinea*	10,360 ±110
Foraminifera 0.5m bpgl	California, *USA*	11,180 ±550
Foraminifera 3.5m bpgl	California, *USA*	11,280 ±875
Foraminifera 1m below sea bed	California, *USA*	11,840 ±800
Foraminifera 0.25m bpgl (older than horizon)	California, *USA*	12,250 ±1200
Oyster shells	36–42°N, East coast, *USA*	c11,000

Material	Location	Date
Foraminiferal faunal change	Atlantic coast bed, *USA*	c12,000
Shells	Maine, *USA*	11,800 ±240
Shells	Maine, *USA*	13,020 ±240
Shells	Missouri River, *USA*	12,250 ±400
Shells	Nebraska, *USA*	10,850 ±300
	Average date	**11,541**
INORGANIC – GEOLOGICAL		
Tufa	California, *USA*	12,000 ±400
Dolomite	Utah, *USA*	11,300 ±250
Tufa	Nevada, *USA*	11,150 ±250
Coralline tufa	Nevada, *USA*	11,950 ±250
Banded caliche	Arroyo, NM, *USA*	11,900 ±300
Platy caliche	Texas, *USA*	11,730 ±300
	Average date	**11,671**

General average date for the above worldwide: 11,577 years BP (Before Present)

Material	Location	Date
GEOPHYSICAL – miscellaneous		
Elevation	Bight of Benin, Africa	12,250–10,750
Elevation	Ivory Coast, Africa	11,900
Dramatic rise in water levels	Lakes in Mauritania, Chad, Afar, Hoggar, Ethiopia	11,000
Core with four ash layers	L Tanganyika, Africa	11,690 ±300
Water depth more important	N Atlantic Ocean basin	c12,000
Marine transgression	*Denmark*	11,950 ±190
Temperature change	*Taiwan*	c10,000
Maximum monsoons	Rajasthan, *India*	c10,800
Land elevation	Ulster, SW Scotland	11,500
Shorelines tilt	*Sweden*	10,700
Land rose *en bloc*	*Sweden*	11,750
Warm climate starts suddenly	Yenisei, *Siberia*	c10,000
	Average date	**11,125**
GEOPHYSICAL – miscellaneous Tectonic, Meteorological, Hydrological *etc*		
Deglaciation	Unmak I, *Alaska*	12,000–11,000
Dramatic rise in lake-water levels	S E *Australia*	11,000
Rain forests expand	Queensland, *Australia*	12,000–11,000
Change in sediment source	East-central Bering Sea	c13,000
Laurentid ice retreats by 500km	SE *Canada*	11,000–8,500
Glaciers shrink	*Chile*	11,000
Subsidence	Gulf of Mexico	10,200
End moraine	Westland, *New Zealand*	11,450
Ice overlies tephra deposits	Cascade Range, *USA*	12,250–11,250
Glaciers disappear	Rocky Mts, CO, *USA*	11,000
Subsidence	East cont'l shelf, *USA*	11,090
	Average date	**11,600**

Appendix C
REMNANTS OF THE CELESTIAL BATTLE?

The explosive destruction of any non-gaseous planet or planetary satellite within the solar system would inevitably produce an outwards dispersal of the disintegrated fragments radially from the epicentre of the explosion – from the core of the destroyed object. Such an explosion would be of appalling violence and power, even for a small satellite, and would hurl all large fragments of the dismantled world vast distances in every direction into interplanetary space. Some fragments would hurtle away as single objects, others as groups, and yet others as great swarms of variously shaped and sized debris, before settling down into orbits around the Sun. These orbits would almost certainly be eccentric and lie at all kinds of planes relative to the solar and terrestrial equators, and some might even extend out to the confines of the solar system itself. In many cases, they would undoubtedly resemble those described in Part Four of the Earth-crossing Apollo asteroids. Orbital eccentricity is a powerful indication of the geologically *very* recent origin of these objects.

In time many fragments would pass close to Earth or between Earth and its planetary neighbours, the largest pieces being, in favourable circumstances, observable from Earth. The celebrated 'law of averages' would ensure that.

Following such a disaster, lesser fragments and dust particles would settle down comparatively quickly into a loose shell of immense size but of slight density around the general location of the explosion, and this too would obey gravitational laws and eventually orbit the Sun – in the process gradually becoming progressively elongated. Such a fate would also befall any unvaporised portions of the atmosphere and hydrosphere which the destroyed world may originally have possessed, although in the case of surviving liquids and gases, these would, in the low temperatures of space, rapidly freeze into various types of ice.

If, as we contend, such a catastrophe occurred in the solar system as recently as 11,500 years or so ago, then the existence within it of myriads of such varied fragments should not only be theoretically possible but actually expected. As shown below, this is precisely what astronomers have apparently been reporting for at least 300 years – although except for a large object sporadically sighted near Venus during the 17th and 18th centuries, few have been observed for any appreciable length of time, and fewer still on more than one occasion. The problem of what these objects signify has never been satisfactorily resolved in astronomical literature.

From the many now long-forgotten accounts of these transient, anomalous objects we present a *small* selection of those which *antedated* the advent of ballooning and the appearance of man-made satellites, rockets, space vehicles and disintegrated parts thereof – hence all references derive from before 1900. Meteors are excluded from these notes since their true origins are still under review, but falls of ice, sometimes of remarkable bulk are included, despite being in recent years commonly explained away as ice detached from high-flying aircraft. Such ice reportedly fell to Earth quite regularly in years predating the modern discovery of aviation.

Our brief survey proceeds systematically from the Sun outwards as far as Mars.

Objects crossing the solar disc

Three observations were made of dark, unknown bodies passing across the face of the Sun on different occasions between February 1762 and May 1764[1]. In 1777, Charles Messier, the French astronomer, saw myriads of black spherical objects cross the solar disc[2]. Similar objects were seen by Lofft in 1818, and by Stark in 1820[3]; and again in 1826 and 1828[4]. They were seen no less than six times in 1834, twice in 1836, and once in 1837, when Pastorff watched two objects moving on different courses across the Sun's face[5]. Other objects were seen in 1847, 1849[6], 1850[7], 1853[8], 1860[9], 1864[10], 1865[11], 1875 and 1876. Hosts of irregularly-shaped black objects were seen to cross the Sun in 1883 as if in alignment – similar to the North American meteor train of 1913[12].

Some of these objects were either very large or were comparatively close to the terrestrial observers, for one, apparently one-fifth of the diameter of the Sun, was sighted with the naked eye between 1st and 5th May 1764 by Hoffman, who saw it slowly traverse the solar disc from north to south, an almost unheard-of direction of motion: but not for an object following a highly eccentric orbit. An almost equally large (or near) object was sighted by Lichtenberg in November 1762. It took approximately three hours to cross the Sun's face. Objects as large as these would, if they penetrated the solar system, undoubtedly cause planetary disturbances. These did not, so the conclusion must be that the objects were really quite close to Earth when observed. Indeed, at 800 miles (1280km) distance, such objects would need to be only about one mile (1.6km) in diameter to appear that large or take that amount of time to transit the solar disc. Obviously the further away the objects were from Earth the larger they must actually have been. What, however, was their origin and why did they follow such unusual orbits?

Objects near Mercury

In 1799, the astronomers Harding and Schroedter independently reported seeing a luminous body of unknown identity crossing the face of Mercury, and on May 22nd 1854 three unknown objects of varying sizes were sighted in space apparently close to Mercury, and have not been seen since[13]. Points of light were observed crossing the unilluminated parts of Mercury[14] and Venus[15] on several occasions in 1892[16].

Objects near Venus

Early modern astronomers considered that Venus possessed a large satellite which they named *Neith*. As early as 1645 a moon-sized object was sighted near Venus, and was reportedly seen four times during the first half of the eighteenth century, and again in 1867. Denning in 1871 and Hind in 1873 both saw a rather similar object, while in April 1876, at Berlin, Weber watched a black body pass across the illuminated part of the Venusian globe. Seven more sightings of 'Neith' were made in 1886, although whatever it was has not been observed since.

Objects near to or crossing the lunar disc

There have been numerous sightings of dark bodies traversing the face of the Moon[17]. In the 19th century, a dark triangular-shaped object was observed for three minutes, which obliterated almost a quarter of the Moon's face[18]. In 1917, Dr Harris saw a large object silhouetted against the Moon which he estimated to be about 250 miles (400km) long and 50 miles (80km) wide[19]. Other maverick travellers through solar space appear to reflect the Sun's light, the albedo being due to their composition – probably of ice or frozen gas. Bright lights have been seen against the Moon over the last 200 years. They were seen in 1783[20] and 1787[21] and again in 1821[22]. Prof Harrison saw a bright point of light "...resembling a reflection from a moving mirror" in 1877[23], while a similar object was seen in 1881. Even in more modern times such observations have occurred, such as in 1910[24] and 1917. These instances are but a small fraction of the recorded reports of similar sightings of objects close to the Moon.

Objects on or close to Mars

In 1864 and 1865, small shining reddish lights were noticed on the Martian disc[25], while a light-reflecting body was seen in space above the unilluminated portion of Mars in 1894[26]. It was not Phobos or Deimos. In the twentieth century, a "...fountain of flashing light" was seen on the face of Mars by Prof Pickering for 70 minutes in 1900, while on more than one occasion several brilliant moving spots of light crossed the Martian disc in 1911.

Objects in the vicinity of Earth

Unexplained phenomena have been noticed closer to our own planet. Henry Waldner saw a large number of small shining bodies pass at great altitude from East to West in 1863. This group of objects had been seen previously crossing the sky above Naples in 1845. The objects were of diverse shape, and it was concluded they were made of ice[27]. In 1849, Sir Robert Inglis watched thousands of brilliant white objects cross a cloudless sky for 25 minutes[28]. A similar phenomenon was watched by Rev W Read for no less than six hours in 1851[29]; a repeat performance occurred in 1860, which was described as having "...shone with a remarkably brilliant light"[30].

The brilliance of these unknown objects suggests that they were either burning meteors, or were pieces of ice illuminated by sunlight as they passed close to the Earth's upper atmosphere. In 1882, Prof Schwedoff argued that ice of celestial origin existed and accounted for the bombardment of the Earth by curious hailstones and huge chunks of ice which occur from time to time[31].

Impact

Sooner or later the law of averages will ensure that collisions will take place between these maverick objects and the planets or their satellites. One, involving the Moon, apparently occurred on June 25th., 1178 A.D., according to Gervase of Canterbury. On that day 5 men of Kent allegedly watched fast-moving clouds and flames issue from a point *within* the *unlit area between* the horns of the new Moon, the illuminated part turning dusky and remaining so for several days[32].

Astronomers Clube and Napier[33] ascribe this duskiness to clouds of lunar surface dust being temporarily cast skywards by the impact's severity and shock waves. The suspension of such dust, even for a few hours, necessitates an atmosphere, something many texts deny the Moon possesses[34], although that was *not* the view of several earlier observers[35]. More recently, however, Moore has categorically stated that a lunar atmosphere does exist, albeit very attenuatedly[36].

Obscurations

Occasionally observations have been made of temporary disappearnces or diminutions, by generally invisible phenomena, of the normal luminosity of familiar celestial objects. Just a few examples must suffice here.

On the clear nights of January 16th., and 24th., and of February 17th., 1898, a diffuse 'cloud-like' object, far beyond Earth's upper atmosphere, discoloured and dimmed many stars in the constellation of *Perseus*[37; 38]. Ancient Babylonian cuneiform texts list earlier (undated) analogous effects. These included *Cancer* becoming "dark" and *Venus* as having once acquired a "dark crown"[39]. We may take these statements to mean that, on different occasions, the constellation of *Cancer* was temporarily obscured and *Venus* partially so.

Early Chinese annals contain essentially similar records. Although a summer's night in 687 B.C. was evidently clear, the 'fixed stars failed to appear", but "in the middle of the night stars fell like rain"[40]. Here, celestial opacity and an apparent meteor shower (stars falling like rain) were, inferentially, separate phases of a single event.

While all the foregoing obscurations were temporary affairs, others are known where the disappearances have been of far longer, even permanent, duration. Examples include the second magnitude stars listed by Johann Bayer in 1603[41] as β and γ in the stern and yard of the constellation *Argo* (The Ship). These were no longer visible by April 1668[42]. Other stars recorded in Tycho Brahe's famous stellar catalogue of 1602 as visible in *Ursa Minor* (the Lesser Bear) and *Andromeda* had either vanished or markedly dimmed by 1664 when Giovanni Cassini searched for them. By 1671 another had disappeared in *Pisces* (The Fishes) and 8 years later, when Edmund Halley published *his* star catalogue, still others had dimmed[44].

That these were not fading novae or supernovae seems clear for, throughout the same general period, other formerly unknown stars of considerable brilliance became (and have ever since remained) visible in the constellations of *Cassiopeia, Eridanus,* and *Andromeda,* as well as near the celestial North Pole. One or more far distant clouds of otherwise invisible matter variously obscured, dimmed, or 'revealed' so-called 'fixed stars' as they drifted across regions between those luminaries and Earthbound observers[45].

Even though it is known that vast and often dense clouds of dust and gas occupy numerous cosmic regions[46], not improbably most if not all of the above phenomena results from the presence and movements of the circumsolar dust-ring recently discovered interacting with Earth's orbital path, discussed more fully below.

Lunar Oddities

Even such a large and cyclically bright body as the Moon apparently sometimes vanishes, or, on other occasions, has been associated with celestial phenomena accorded scant (if any) attention in standard astronomical manuals. The phenomena, however, are particularly germane to the subject before us. Disappearances are reviewed first.

During the total lunar eclipse of May 18th, 1761, the Moon vanished completely for upwards of half an hour. Even during a total eclipse, sufficient light normally remains for successful telescopic observation of the principle lunar surface features; but *not* on May 18th., 1761. Otherwise undetectable matter between Earth and Moon had blotted out the latter.

As noticed from places as far apart as London, Ipswich, and Dresden, the Moon failed to appear in seemingly clear skies on June 10th and 11th, 1816[47; 48]. Millennia earlier, Babylonians had witnessed the same thing three times in a single month[49].

Although some, perpetuating a commonly invoked explanation, have identified the causal obscuring agent during such events[50] as dense volcanic dust ejected during eruptions into Earth's atmosphere, other interpretations, as indicated below, are now available to us.

Like the unaccountably hazy illumination of the eastern part of the Moon's dark limb at 10.00pm on March 24th, 1882[51], and the glow which – too bright for Earth-shine – covered the Moon's unlit portion two years later[52], a 1,500 miles long shadow (not cast by the Earth), seen during daytime inspection of the lunar disc by Australian observers Hirst and Russell in 1878, was hardly caused by sunlight reflected from, or a shadow cast by, meteor swarms moving between or near Earth and the Moon[53]. Such swarms are singularly non-reflective.

A professional report from Santiago, Chile, details a total eclipse of the Sun on November 30th, 1893. Briefly, 12 or 15 minutes before the eclipse began, the space separating the Moon's limb and the brilliant solar limb was *instantaneously* covered by moving nebulous matter of a dark rosy hue. As this progressively covered the Sun's face, it darkened as though "compressed". Eventually, neither the solar or lunar limbs could be properly distinguished through it. Almost as soon as this obscuring matter passed out of sight, a smaller unknown dark object for an instant covered the Moon to cause a splendid annular eclipse[54].

This account indicates that a solid dark body, preceded by a transparent mass passed *between* the Earth and Moon on the date in question. Yet, under normal conditions neither was visible from Earth.

Numerous reports exist of unfocusable nebulosities, either on or high above the lunar landscape. Variously described as pale or milky white, misty or diffuse, these nebulosities often move, drift, alter shape, or disappear. Occasionally dark bodies, that cast *no* shadows upon the Moon's surface, have been reported temporarily obscuring lunar topographical features. Such 'shadowless' objects must be located far outside the satellite's atmosphere, in space nearer, though still distant from, Earth.

A comparable nebulous object, briefly noted on the Sun's disc during May 26th, 1828, but *not* sighted since[55], must have been positioned that day in space somewhere between Earth and the Sun. It almost certainly falls into the same category as the aforecited Martian and lunar nebulosities.

Anomalous Meteorological Phenomena

From time to time Earth experiences singular falls of ice, stones (not meteoritic), mud and strange snows. On balance these do not readily conform to the known workings of terrestrial meteorology and show every sign of having non-terrestrial origins. Their very nature and common celestial origin suggests that they form part of the lesser residue of one or more disintegrated former worlds. Again, only a small number of the total recorded instances can be given here.

Falls of ice

In May 1802, a mass of ice 3ft long, as many wide, and over 2ft thick fell in Hungary. Pieces of ice, a foot in circumference, fell in Derbyshire, England, in May 1811, and in 1828 a lump about a cubic yard in size fell at Candeishe in India. A block of ice weighing 11lbs fell at Cette, France, in 1844; while a huge mass, some 20ft in circumference, fell at Ord in Scotland during 1849. Another, of comparable dimensions, fell in August of the same year at Bulvullich, also in Scotland. Pumpkin-sized pieces of ice fell on Gunfalore in India in 1851; and in March 1860, during a snowstorm, giant lumps of ice fell so thickly on hillsides in Upper Wasdale, England, that from a distance they resembled flocks of sheep. An 80lb block of ice fell during August 1882 near Salina, Kansas, while five years later 'snowflakes' 15in across and 8in thick fell prodigiously in Montana. In November 1901, innumerable pieces of ice each weighing a minimum of 1lb fell in Victoria, Australia. Very significantly, many reports (which collectively embrace practically the entire world) specifically note that, upon inspection, pieces of fallen ice give the appearance of being fragments of recently-disintegrated larger sheets or blocks.

Recent analysis of NASA images of large icy bodies entering and melting through friction in Earth's upper atmosphere, not only contribute to our planet's water supply, but indicate – through weighing as much as 20 tonnes each – the source of the fallen ice blocks from space mentioned by Prof. Schwedoff.

Showers of Stones

So many little stones fell during a violent storm at Wolverhampton, England, in June 1860, that they were cleared away with shovels[56]. Great numbers of small black stones fell at Birmingham during a storm in August 1858, and a large quantity of water-worn pebbles, unlike any known from the district, fell in Palestine, Texas in July 1888[57]. Similarly, numerous *smooth* pebbles fell at Kandahar in Afghanistan in 1834, while in May 1884 two falls of flinty stones occurred at Bismarck, North Dakota, each separated by an interval of 15 hours[58]. Interestingly, some of the many stones which rained down upon Dhurmsalla, India, in 1860 were coated with ice – Dhurmsalla is located in one of the warmest parts of India. It must be obvious that all these falls, and many others omitted here, were of non-meteoritic stones. Nor will it escape notice that, like the falls of ice, they occur globally.

Rains of Mud and Dust

During November 1902 staggering quantities of dust and mud fell over Australia, and fell there again in 1903 – 50 tons of it per square mile. It also fell in stupendous quantities simultaneously over much of Europe and western Russia, and was reported as having also fallen then over the Canary Islands, and by ships half-way between Britain and Barbados in the Caribbean. No less than 10 million tonnes of it is said to have fallen on southern England alone[59]. At the time it was fatuously alleged to be dust and sand whirled up from the Sahara Desert, an explanation still commonly advanced to account for modern falls of similar red dust and mud. Did Earth pass in 1902 and 1903 through part of the great cloud or shell of particles which, as previously argued, formed after the explosive disintegration of one or more once-solid bodies over 11,500 years ago?

And what, we may also ask, was the origin of the thick shower of marble-sized balls of soft, pulpy matter, which crumbled when dry, which fell at Queenstown, South Africa, in 1883?[60]. It was hardly a volcanic product, although some might reason that the following probably was, when on June 7th 1846 a 'slag'-like matter fell at Darmstadt, Germany.

Correlation

More or less coincidentally with the first printing of this book, astronomers announced the discovery just outside Earth's present orbit of a circumsolar ring of 'asteroidal' dust in 'resonant lock' with our planet[61]. The plane of the ring's orbit differs from that of Earth's, whereby the two intersect erratically and partially at that.

In reality the ring consists not only of genuine dust particles, ranging from submicron (mud) sized grains to larger (sand or grit) sized material, but also of a vast assortment of stones and boulders. The volume and range of this material is distributed unevenly and discontinuously along the ring's orbital path, and includes both clouds and trains of assorted meteoritic matter.

To a large degree the ring seems to be a likely source of much of the 10,000 tons of extraterrestrial dust thought to fall to Earth annually, and, probably, of a high percentage of the countless meteorites (*not* meteors) which also arrive every year. It is also known that inter-planetary dust grains, when congregated into dense clouds, have a tendency to develop ice-mantles[62], the whole cloud becoming opaque and of low reflectivity. Indeed, such clouds are only illuminated by *received* star (sun) light[63].

Here then, we contend, is an identifiable source of most if not all of the anomalous celestial phenomena just surveyed, why it is monitorable only irregularly, why observations of it extend both outwards towards Mars and inwards towards Venus and the Sun, and why certain "falls" or other manifestations of it are sporadic and occasionally repeated in quick or comparatively quick sequences. Intermittent 'clipping' or 'grazing' of the two relevant orbits would go far towards explaining the unusual patterns traced in previous paragraphs. Furthermore, the so-called 'invisibility' of much of the aforementioned obscuring matter, due to its presumed non-reflectivity, and the diffuse or luminous character of various other bodies detailed earlier (presumably ice-coated and therefore capable of reflecting sunlight, or even Earth-shine) now becomes explicable.

This dust ring plainly represents the dispersed residue of a body which has distintegrated. Its position indicates that the disintegration occurred in the general vicinity of the Earth-Moon system. As postulated in Part Five a major feature of the Phaeton visitation was the cataclysmic destruction, close to Earth, of a satellitic body remembered anciently as Kingu, large fragments of which apparently fell to Earth as 'burning mountains', the Wormwood Star, and rains of 'iron' hailstones. Since, however, the disintegration was explosive, dispersal of the affected material was radial, whereby a high percentage of the resultant debris was flung *away* from Earth. The dust ring now represents the orbital path onto which a great deal of this material has now settled, albeit somewhat discontinuously and in variable amounts at different places along its route. Was this antiquity's 'Hammered Bracelet' (see p.224 *suprá*).

Thus, many if not all of the curious observations just detailed concern further remnants of the terrible calamity endured by Earth approximately 11,500 years ago – remnants still in free but decidedly wayward orbits. That they, and the dust ring, *actually exist* so close to the Earth-Moon system is also positive confirmation of the general validity of the scenario presented in this study. Had they not existed the presentation would have been flawed.

REFERENCES

1. Wolf, Prof. 1859. "Miscellaneous Intelligence", *Mon Notes Roy Astron Soc*, vol 20, pp100–1.
2. Berard, M. 1836. *Edin New Phil Jl*, vol xxi; see p35, footnote.
3. Wolf, Prof. 1859. *Loc cit*.
4. Verrier, V J J le. 1876. "Astronomie", *Comptes Rendu*, vol 83, pp621–4.
5. Herrick, E C. 1860. "New Planets", *Ann Sci Dig*, pp409–411.
   Verrier, V J J le. 1859. "Astronomy", *Amer J Sci*, vol 28, ser 2, pp445–7.
6. Verrier, V J J le. 1876. *Loc cit*.
7. Hind, J R. 1878. "On the supposed discovery of a trans-Neptunian Planet at the US Naval Observatory in 1850", *Smithson Misc Coll*, vol 20, p20.
8. Radau, R. 1862. "Astronomie", *Cosmos*, vol 20, pp64–5.
9. Russell, F A R. 1876. "An intra-Mercurial Planet", *Nature*, vol 14, p505.
10. *Anonymous*, 1864. "Lescarbault's Planet?", *Astron Reg*, vol 2, p161.
11. Coumbray, M. 1865. *L'Année Scient*; see p16.
12. Trouvelet, M. 1885. "Report", *L'Année Scient*; *v* p8.
    Briguière, H. 1886. "Passage d'un essaim de corpuscles devant le soleil", *L'Astron*, p70.
13. Greg, R P. 1855. "Extracts of letters from R P Greg Esq to Prof Powell, dated Sep. 4th & 9th, 1854" *Rep Brit Assoc Adv Sci*, (Glasgow) p94.
14. Jenkins, B G. 1877. "The luminous Spot on Mercury in Transit", *Mon Notes Roy Astron Soc*, vol 38, pp337–340.
15. Roberts, C. 1892. "Venus", *Engl Mech*, vol 55, p239.
16. Barnard, E E. 1906. "An unexplained observation", *Astron Nach*, no:4106, p25.

17. Hopman, F. 1898 "On Dark Meteors" *J Brit Astron Assoc*, vol viii, p127–131.
18. Copeland, R. 1876–77. "On two flats on the Moon's limb", *Mon Notes Roy Astron Soc Lond*, vol 37, pp432–3.
19. Harris, F P. 1912. *Pop Astron*, vol 20, p398.
20. Herschel, W. 1792. "Miscellaneous Observations", *Phil Trans Roy Soc Lond*, vol 82, pp23–7.
21. Wilkins, W. 1794. "An account of an appearance of light like a star in the dark part of the Moon", *Phil Trans Roy Soc*, vol 84, pp429–431.
22. Fallows, F. 1821. "Communication of a curious appearance lately observed upon the Moon", *Proc Roy Soc Lond*, vol 2, p167.
23. Harrison, H H. 1884. *Sidereal Messenger*, vol 3, p150.
24. Goodacre, W. 1910. "The Eclipse of the Moon, 1910, Nov 16th", *J Brit Astron Assoc*, vol 21, pp99–101.
25. Lamey, C. 1877. "Correspondence", *Comptes Rendu*, vol 85, pp538–9.
26. Douglas, A E. 1895. "A cloud-like Spot on the Terminator of Mars", *Astrophys J*, vol i, pp127–130.
27. Waldner, H. 1872. "On Luminous Matter in the Atmosphere", *Nature*, vol 5, pp304–5.
28. Inglis, R. 1849. "Letter to Sir Robert H. Inglis, Bt, FRS, to Col Sabine, RA, Aug. 8, 1849", *Rep Brit Assoc Adv Sci*, (Birmingham) p17–18.
29. Read, W. 1851. "Miscellaneous. Letter from the Rev W Read, Vicarage, South Mimms", *Mon Notes Roy Astron Soc*, vol 11, p48.
30. *Anonymous*. 1880. "A Remarkable Phenomenon" *Nature*, vol 22, p64.
31. Schwedoff, T. 1882. "On the Origin of Hail", *Rep Brit Assoc Adv Sci*, p458.
32. Hoyle, F. 1990. Review of Clube and Napier (1990), *Nature*, vol 348, no6299, pp353–354; see p354.
33. Clube, V., and W Napier, 1990. *The Cosmic Winter* (Oxford), 307pp.
34. Jeans, J. 1945. *The Stars in Their Courses* (Cambridge), xii + 188pp.; see pp28, 30. (and very many other standard astronomical texts).
35. Neison, E. 1873. "Note on the possible existence of a Lunar Atmosphere", *Mon Notes Roy Astron Soc*, vol xxxiii, pp464–465.
    Neison, E. 1873a "On the Limit of a possible Lunar Atmosphere", *Mon Notes Roy Astron Soc*, vol iii, pp140–141.
36. Moore, P A. 1953. *A Guide to the Moon* (London), 222pp.
37. Espin, T H F. 1898. "A Remarkable Object in Perseus", *Mon Notes Roy Astron Soc*, vol 58, pp334–335.
38. Espin, T H F. 1898a. 'Reports', *Journ Brit Astron Assoc*, vol 8, p216.
39. Campbell Thompson, R. 1990. *The Reports of the Magicians and Astrologers of Nineveh and Babylon in the British Museum*, 2 vols. (London); see vol 1. reports 163 and 209 respectively.
40. Biot, R. 1846. "Catalogue Général des Étoiles Filantes et des Autres Météores observés en Chine après le VII^{e} siècle avant J.C." (Paris).
41. Bayer, J. 1603. *Uranometria* (Augsburg).
    Maddison, R E W. 1980. *A Dictionary of Astronomy*, ed. by V. Illingworth (London), 208pp; see p20.
42. Hevelius, J. 1671. "An Extract from a Letter, written to the Publisher by the excellent Johannes Hevelius, concerning his further observations of the New Star near the Beak of the Swan; to be compared with what was formerly published of the same account in Numb.65 and Numb.66", *Phil Trans Roy Soc Lond*, vol 6, no73 (July), pp2197-2002; see p2201.
43. Hevelius, J. 1671. *Op cit*, p2202.
44. Wolf, A. 1935. *A History of Science, Technology, and Philosophy in the 16th. and 17th. Centuries*, new edn ed by D McKie (London), xxviii + 692pp; see p187.
45. Hevelius, J. 1671. *Op cit*, p2201.
46. Lang, K R. 1992. *Astrophysical Data: Planets and Stars*, (New York), x + 937pp; see pp365, 368, 374.
    Evans, A. 1993. *The Dusty Universe*, (London), xii + 236pp; see p117.
47. Lofft, C. 1916. *Month Mag*, vol 42, p2.
48. Lee, S. 1919. *Astr Jahrb*, (Berlin), p263.
49. Campbell Thompson, R. 1990. *Op cit*, report 249.
50. Harrington, C R. (ed.). 1992. *The Year Without a Summer: World Climate in 1816* (Ottawa), 576pp.
    Stothers, R B. 1984. "The Great Tambora Eruption of 1815 and its Aftermath", *Science*, vol 242, pp1191-1198.
    Phythian-Adams, W J. 1934. *The Call of Israel* (London), ix + 227pp.; see p165 – re: a year-long gloom in 1783.
    Pliny-the-Elder. *Natural History*, 10 vols; translated by H. Rackham (London, 1938); see vol 2, p30 – re: a year of *continuous* gloom during the Antonine War.
51. Richards, W J B. 1882. "Dark Limb of the Moon", *Astron Reg*, vol xxi, p18.
52. Haywood, 1884. 'Report', *Siderial Messenger*, vol iii, p252.
53. Proctor, R A. 1870. "Light Science for Leisure Hours" (London), viii + 316pp.
54. Gilliss, J M 1854. "The Total Eclipse of the Sun of November 30th, 1853", *Astron J*, vol 111, no19, pp145-146.
55. Ranyard, A C. 1873. "On a Remarkable Nebulous Spot upon the Sun's Disc by Pastorff, 1828, May 26th.", *Mon Notes Roy Astron Soc*, vol xxxiv, p26.
56. *Anonymous*. 1860. *La Science pour Tous*, vol 5, p264.
57. Perry, W H. 1888. "Local Storms", *Mon Weather Rev*, July, p173.
58. *Anonymous*. 1884. "Miscellaneous Phenomena", *Mon Weather Rev*, May, p134.
59. *Anonymous*. 1903. "The Great Dustfall of February 13th 1903", *Symon's Meteorological Mag*, vol xxxviii, March, pp21–24.
60. Clark, W. 1884. "Remarkable Sunsets": Letters, *Nature*, vol xxix, Jan, p252.
61. Dermott, S F., *et al* 1994. "A Circumsolar Ring of Asteroidal Dust in Resonant Lock with Earth", *Nature*, vol 369, pp719–723.
62. Evans, A. 1993. *Op cit*, p105.
63. Evans, A. 1993. *Op cit*, p117.

Appendix D
PHAETON'S SOURCE?

Recent studies of the Vela supernova, theorised as Phaeton's likely source on pages 209-210 *suprá*, demonstrate that its remnants – a radio and X-ray shell over 60 parsecs in diameter – comprise a tiny neutron star or pulsar (PRS 0833-45)[1] closely associated with the filamentary 'nebula' Stromlo 16[2], and that its radially expanded ejecta now occupy an impressive 4 to 5 degree of astronomical space[3].

A pulsar is a naturally pulsating radio star. A parsec is an astronomical unit of distance equivalent to slightly more than 3¼ light years[4]. Light travels at a prodigious 18,284 miles *per second*, or 11 million miles *per minute*, and therefore about 6 million million miles *per year*[5]. This last figure represents the distance involved in a single 'light'-year or parsec. Although to us such speeds and distances are virtually unimaginable, the are nevertheless *authenticated* facts.

Similarly, more distant filamentous 'nebulae', such as the Loop (NGC 6960) and Veil (NGC 6992-6995) examples in the constellation *Cygnus*, and the famous Crab 'nebula' (M.1) in *Taurus*[6], which exploded in A.D. 1054, constitute the scattered residue of other supernovae. Lethal masses of atomic hydrogen characterise one of the *Cygnus* shells[7], while the wisps and knot-like concentrations of disrupted astral matter in the Crab 'nebula' possess huge magnetic fields and emit intense electromagnetic radiation[8]. They are also known to be moving by as much as ⅒th of the speed of light[9]. Indeed, supernovae fragments can be expelled at speeds at least in the order of 10^4km.S^{-1}[10]

Analysis of all relevant data indicates that the *average* total mass ejected during supernovae detonations is equivalent to 1.4 solar masses[11], and, as they hurtle through interstellar space[12], retain their compact shapes over a 10^4 years period[13], provided they avoid resistant or perturbing phenomena. Relative to these factors, there is certainly no reason to suppose that the Vela paroxysm and resultant fragments differed significantly from this supernova norm.

Thus, even if travelling at only ⅒th the speed of light, supernovae ejecta velocities are still staggeringly great and ensure the traversal of vast tracts of interstellar space in comparatively short periods of time. Such enormous speeds would also tend dramatically to jeopardise the natural rotational and orbital speeds of lesser bodies encountered *en route*, not to mention their physical structures.

As far as is known, no comet, bolide, or asteroid possesses magnetic fields, emits electromagnetic radiation, or travels at the vertiginous speeds of supernovae ejecta. Yet, all surviving descriptions of Phaeton and its reported behaviour indicate that these corresponded closely to those of a highly dangerous, but thankfully small, supernova fragment initially catapulted supersonically towards, and eventually into, the Solar System from the far distant region now occupied by the Vela pulsar.

REFERENCES

1. Strom, R, H M Johnston, F Verbunt, and B Aschenbach. 1995. "A radio-emitting X-Ray "bullet" ejected by the Vela supernova", *Nature*, vol 373, no 6515, pp590–592; see p590.
2. Large, M T, A E Vaughan, and R Y Mills. 1968. "A Pulsar Supernova Association?", *Nature*, vol 220, no 5165, pp340–341; see p341.
3. Aschenbach, B, R Eggar, and J Trumper. 1995. "Discovery of Explosion Fragments outside the Vela supernova remnant shock-wave boundary", *Nature*, vol 373, no 6515, pp587–589.
4. Lang, K R. 1992. *Astrophysical Data: Planets and Stars* (New York), x + 937pp; see p9.
5. Jeans, J. 1946. *The Universe Around Us*, 4th edn. (Cambridge), x + 297pp.; see p20.
6. Lang, K R, and O Gingerich (eds) 1979. *A Source Book in Astronomy and Astrophysics, 1900–1975* (Cambridge, Mass.), xx + 922pp; see pp492, 571, figs72.1 and 83.2.
7. Landecker, T L, R S Roger, and L A Higgs. 1980. "Atomic Hydrogen in a field of Cygnus X containing the supernova remnant G78.2+2.1", *Astronomy and Astrophysics Supplement* no:39, pp133–151.
8. Kafatos, M C, and R C B Henry (eds) 1985. "The Crab Nebula and Related Supernova Remnants" (New York).
9. Lang, K R, and O Gingerich (eds) 1979. *Op cit*, p494.
10. Strom, R, *et al*. 1995. *Loc cit*, p592.
11. Lang, K R, and O Gingerich (eds) 1979. Op cit, p385.
12. McKee, C R 1988. pp205–222 in "Supernovae Remnants and their Interstellar Medium", ed R S Roger and T L Landecker. *IAU Colloq*, 101 (Cambridge)
13. Strom, R, *et al* 1995. *Ibid*.

Appendix E
The Seven Suns

Seven spherical dots, globes, or 'stars' repeatedly feature on ancient Mesopotamian artefacts (eg Fig 4.11d on p216 *suprá*), as well as other relics from as far distant as Canaan[1], Hittite Syria[2], Cyprus[3], Persia[4], and pre-Columbian Peru[5]. They were obviously of great significance to the peoples who portrayed them. Always believed to have possessed 'astral' connotations, they appear in Near Eastern art as early as 'archaic' times[6].

Although invariably seven, their mode of presentation varies widely. Thus they appear as straight lines......., as triangles ⁖, as clusters .:::, ⁞:·, :::˙, ·:⁚:, or ·⁘·, as rosettes ⁙, unified along a stem ⁞, or as irregular scatter-patterns .··..:. Of these, the cluster and rosette arrangements are met with the most often.

They frequently occur peripheral to, or as integral elements in, depictions of mythological scenes – most commonly of great battles between heroic 'dieties' (*Marduk/Phaeton*), and a serpentine or winged 'dragon-monster' (*Tiamat*)[7]. This was evidently a very popular subject among the ancients. At least one instance is known showing the dots in cluster form adjacent to apparent widespread celestial derangement[8].

When shown as rosettes, they appear as six small globes equidistant round a larger central dot ('sun')[9]. Although several such examples feature in 'peaceful' scenes[10], others occur in association with a horned serpent or 'dragon'[11].

Frequently depicted as seven-headed[12], and as flaming or fiery[13], this serpent was anciently equated with the many-headed *Hydra* of classical mythology[14]. As a traditional emblem, it long predated even those accounts and was, earlier still, regularly identified with the 'dragons' of *Tiamat*[15]. Some accounts even identify *Tiamat* as the 'dragon', adding that it, too, was many-headed[16].

Interestingly, *Revelation* (12.3ff) records the Hebrew *Leviathan*, described elsewhere as a "crooked serpent" (*Psalms*, 74.14), as a seven-headed sea-monster[17]. Canaanite lore calls the same entity *Yamm*[18] or *Mot*[19], while Sumerian records refer to it as *Kur*. The latter add that it was eventually shattered into innumerable pieces[20].

Van Buren, admitting that the identification of the 7-dot emblem was "very difficult", noted that some thought it represented the Pleiades, the seven deified sage sons of *Enmesarra,* or the divine symbol of Sibitti[21]. Hayes Ward, while suggesting that the latter probably equated with the Igigi, also wondered if the emblem might represent *Nergal*, the ancient Mesopotamian 'god' of the Pleiades[22].

It is undoubtedly significant that the dates of certain religious festivals in India, Egypt, Australia, and Peru were determined from the annual Autumnal rising of the Pleiades star-group[23]. Interestingly, a still little-understood pre-Columbian script from Peru, featuring this same seven dot emblem, shows it alongside 11 dots (shades of Fig. 4. 11d) separated into adjoining groups of 5 and 6 dots by a serpentine figure, which may reasonably be interpreted as the abovementioned *Hydra*-like 'dragon'[24].

In that connection it is surely relevant that several ancient cylinder-seals depicting the *Marduk* (*Phaeton*)/*Tiamat* fight also show adjacent artistic devices featuring *11* elements. Examples include 11 small globes from Nineveh[25], 11 'petals' round a disc or sphere crowning a 'Tree-of-Life' symbol from Kish[26], one from Cyprus showing an 11-rayed 'Sun'[27], and another from Assyria depicting a 'deity' holding a circle composed of 11 small touching globes[28].

We hardly need to remind ourselves that the Deluge catastrophe, associated with the cosmic arrival of seven 'suns' or 'burning mountains', was widely remembered as a September (Autumnal) event in the northern hemisphere (see pp.161 and 173 *suprá*).

Did the Pleiades star-group, then, act among early peoples as a celestial marker for the time of the loss of a pre-Phaetonic 'Golden Age', or as that denoting when the dawn of a new one (the Holocene) began? Do not these curious sets of 7 and 11 dots confirm the broad validity of the Mesopotamian connection traced in Part Four, and are they not further un-expected but welcome aspects of the dramatic scenario unfolding before us?

REFERENCES

1. Gordon, C H 1941. *The Living Past* (New York), 232pp; see pp124f; seal 14.
2. Hayes Ward, W 1910. The Seal Cylinders of Western Asia, *Carnegie Inst.* (Washington), *Publ* no:100. xxxi + 428pp; see p282, fig 856; p287, fig 873; p288, fig 879.
3. Delaporte, L. 1909. *Catalogue du musee Guimet: Cylindres Orientaux* (Paris), xii + 140pp; see pl x, fig 141.
4. Hayes Ward, W. 1910. *Op cit*, p333, fig 1092.
5. Elworthy, F T. 1895. *The Evil Eye: An account of this ancient and widespread superstition* (London), xii + 471pp; see pp282, fig 126 (after C Wiener: 1880).
6. Van Buren, E D. 1939–1941. "The Seven Dots in Mesopotamian Art and Their Meaning", *Archiv für Orientforschung*, vol 13, pp277–289; see p277.
7. Ménant, J 1886. "Oriental Cylinders of the Williams Collection", *Amer Journ Archaeol*, vol 2, pp247–260; see pl vi, fig 9.
   Hayes Ward, W. 1910. *Op cit*, p199, fig 569; pp211-212, 241, 245, 384, etc.
8. Delaporte, L. 1909. *Ibid.*
9. Delaporte, L. 1909. *Op cit*, pl viii, fig 122.
   Hayes Ward, W. 1910. *Op cit*, p305, fig 956a; p316, fig 998.
10. Frankfort, H. 1955. *Stratified Cylinder Seals from the Diyala Region* (Chicago), xii + 78pp. + 96pls; see pl 20, fig 214; pl79, fig 851.
    Cesnola, L P di 882. *Salaminia* (London), xlviii + 329pp; see pl xii opp p120, no: 3; p129, fig 119.
    Moortgat, A. 1940 *Vorderasiatische Rollseigel* (Berlin), viii + 155pp + 91pls; see pl 82, figs 689–695.
11. Hayes Ward, W. 1910. *Op cit*, p267, fig 796.
12. Kramer, S N. (ed) 1961. *Mythologies of the Ancient World* (New York), 480pp; see p201.
    Black, J, and A Green. 1992. *Gods, Demons, and Symbols of Ancient Mesopotamia* (London), 192pp; see p165.
13. Frankfort, H. 1939. *Cylinder Seals: a documentary essay on the Art and Religion of the Ancient Near East* (London), xlvii + 328pp; see p72, fig 27; pl xxiii, fig j.
    Frankfort, H. 1955. *Op cit*, pl 45, fig 478.
    Pritchard, J B. (ed). 1955. *The Ancient Near East in Pictures relating to the Old Testament"*, 2nd edn, with supplement (Princeton), xvi + 395pp; see p218, figs 691.
    Moortgat, A 1932. *Die Bildende Kunst des Alten Orients und die Bergvölker* (Berlin), 116pp + xcvi pls; see pl lxxxviii, fig 5; pl lxxxii.
14. Brown, R Jr 1899. *Researches into the Origins of the Primitive Constellations of the Greeks, Phoenicians, and Babylonians*, 2 vols. (London); see vol 1, p104.
15. Langdon, S H. 1923. *The Enuma Elish: The Babylonian Epic of Creation* (Oxford), 227pp; see p17. fig 1.
16. Bellamy, H S. 1936. *Moons, Myths, and Man*, (London), 351pp; see p214.
17. Gordon, C H. 1941. *Op cit*, p125.
18. Kramer, S N. (ed). 1961. *Op cit*, pp193–194.
19. Kramer, S N. (ed). 1961. *Op cit*, p200.
20. Kramer, S N. (ed). 1956. *From the Tablets of Sumer.* (Indian Hills, Colorado), xxvi + 293pp; see pp195–199.
21. Van Buren, E D. 1939–1941. *Ibid.*
    Black, J, and A Green. 1992. *Op cit*, p162.
22. Hayes Ward, W. 1910. *Op cit*, pp333, fig 1092; p365, fig 1255; p369, fig 1272; pp410–411.
    Black, J, and A Green. 1992. *Op cit*, p55.
23. Chant, C A 1928. *Our Wonderful Universe* (London), 191pp; see p160.
24. Elworthy, F T. 1895. *Op cit*, top right set of ideograms.
25. Ménant, J. 1886. *Op cit*, pl v, fig 8.
26. Langdon, S H. 1931. "Semitic Mythology", in H B Alexander (ed). *The Mythology of All Races*, 13 vols. (Boston); see vol v, p281, fig84.
    Hayes Ward, W 1910. *Op cit*, p202, fig 585.
27. Cesnola, L P di 1877. *Cyprus: its ancient Cities, Tombs, and Temples* (London), xx + 448pp; see pl xxxiii, no: 29.
28. Hayes Ward, W. 1910. *Op cit*, p201, fig 577.

Appendix F
NOTES

The following notes, designed to augment specific themes, are given here separately to avoid undue interruption of the main narrative. The relevant text page shown in **bold**.

1. John Harris (1876. *Celestial Sphere and the Doctrine of the Earth's Perpendicular Axis* (Montreal), 42pp.) also discussed this celestial change, which apparently affected the *original* location of the 4 cardinal points. Persian records state that in remotely early times these were marked in the heavens by 4 'zodiacal' stars – those, representing the two equinoxes, being the Eye of the Bull (*Taurus*) and the Heart of the Scorpion (*Scorpio*) and those the solstices the Head of the Lion (*Leo*) and the Southern Fish (*Pisces*) (Bailly, J S 1787. *Traite de l'Astronomie Indienne et Orientale* (Paris), clxxx + 427pp; *v* p13). These stars no longer coincide with today's cardinal points.
   Also relevant are the remarks of Dupuis, Maurice and other early writers that, as the zodiacal constellation of *Libra* shows indications of formerly being a Spring equinoctial sign and *Aries* an Autumnal one, the precession of the equinoxes has, since the invention of the zodiac either moved progressively, or by some sudden jolt, forwards by 7 zodiacal signs.
   See pp191 and 197 *suprá* for other important zodiacal or allied changes. **(p. 15)**

2. Other factors were also involved. For example, long and deep fiords (reviewed again on p35 *suprá*), are often regarded as glacial (ice-sculpted) features. Much time believedly elapsed while slow-acting ice allegedly excavated them. The duration of the Pleistoceue epoch was accordingly extended to accommodate such a process. **(p. 25)**

3. Pacific territories submerged geologically recently include those once unifying Australia and New Guinea, and the latter with Melanesia and Micronesia as far North as the Caroline Islands (Van Andel, T H, G R Heath, T C Moore, and D R F McGeary. 1961. "Late Quaternary History, Climate and Oceanography of the Timor Sea, Northwestern Australia", *Amer J Sci*, vol 265, pp737–758; Krausse, D S 1965. "Submarine Geology North of New Guinea", *Bull Geol Soc Amer*, vol 76, pp27–42; Bloom, A. 1969. "Holocene submergence in Micronesia as the standard for Eustatic sea-level changes", *Quaternaria* (Paris), vol xii (1970). **(p. 90)**
4. Natural effects inferable from a supposed near or actual collision between Earth and a large cosmic object include atmospheric ignition, when fire would fill the "whole space between sky and Earth" (Zahule, K J 1990. "Atmospheric Chemistry by large Impacts", *Spec Papers Geol Soc Amer*, vol 247, pp271–288; see p282).
   This effect, discussed as early as 1931 (Walk, L. 1931. "Das Flut-geschwisterpaar als Ur- und Stammelternpaar der Menschheit". *Mitt. Österr. Ges. Anthrop. Ethnol. Prähist*, vol 78–79, pp60–115), is best expressed as *wildfire*. Ovid's account was thus no exaggeration. **(p. 152)**

5. As given below, Aldi's earlier translation of the same passage contains differences, as seen later (see p295 *suprá*), of some significance.
   "A comet of a most terrible aspect, wreathed in spiral volumes, and resembling a knot, or cluster of fire, in the most early periods of the world, appeared in Egypt and Aethiopia, which . . . the king then reigning in Egypt denominated Typhon: and because Plutarch affirms that the ocean was called Typhon, an argument has been deduced from thence, that this comet was the occasion of the deluge." (Pliny: *Nat. Hist.*, Lib. 2, cap. 25, p14 – Aldi ed, 1559)
   Compare the 'spiral wreathing' of this account with the "swirling as a whirlwind" of the Babylonian epic (see p.222 *suprá*). The concept of Phaeton being a twisting or spiralling object obviously far antedated Roman times. **(p. 152)**
   Up to the time of Seneca comets had, on the authority of Aristotle and other classical philosophers, been regarded simply as "sublunary vapours floating in the aether". Seneca, the first to study comets as true cosmic objects, did *not* consider Typhon as a star or a normal celestial body but as something different. Like Pliny, he described it as a great knot of fire. (Halley, E. "Synopsis" at end of "Elements of Physical and Geometrical Astronomy" in Halley's Oxford lectures edited by J. Kersey (Oxford), 1717).

6. Earth presently rotates West to East. Modern studies of Phaeton's apparent flightpath suggest it ran, contrarily, southeast to northwest (Tollmann, A and E Tollmann. 1993. *Und die Sintflut gab es doch* (München), 560pp; *v* 210) – interestingly the predominant direction of the aforementioned glacial striae (see p9 *suprá*). **(p. 154)**

7. That dry land recently occupied extensive areas now below Pacific waters (see *Note* 3) tends to counterbalance such doubts. **(p. 156)**

8. Some North American accounts state that this protracted 'night' fell so swiftly that the Flood, arising soon afterwards, poured across the land amid intense gloom (Boehmer, J. 1932. "Tellürische Trümmerstucke im Fluthericht der Genesis", *Zeit. fur Alttestamental. Wiss.*, vol 50, pp117–124). **(p. 159)**

9. Inevitably the semi-permanent darkness, largely created by chronic atmospheric pollution itself induced by widespread volcanism (but also see data on the 'dust ring' given in *Appendix C*), led to radically reduced temperatures and the onset of cold conditions. As several traditions record, the magnetic storms naturally generated by this pollution quickly engendered excessive and persistent rainfall. Some accounts describe this as hot or boiling (Lücken, H. 1956 *Die Traditionen des Menschengeschichte order die Uroffenbarung Gottes unter den Heiden* (Münster), 483pp; *v.* p185), a phenomenon more recently explained by the aerodynamicist S K Croft ("First-Order Estmates of Shock Heating and Vaporisation in Oceanic Impacts", *Spec Papers Geol Soc Amer,* vol 190 (1982), pp143–152; *v* p150). **(p. 160)**

10. The low temperatures at numerous places ensured early conversion of rains into snow and ice. Effects varied locally. German accounts record the resultant snowfalls lasting for three whole years (Derolez, R L M 1976. *Götter und Mythen der Germanen* (Weisbaden), 334pp; *v* p286), while in Iran the bleak conditions permitted no more than two months of 'summer' for several decades (Rhode, J G 1819. *Ueber den Aufung unserer Geschichte und die leizie Revolution der Erde als wahrscheinliche Wirkung eines Kometen* (Breslau), 78pp; *v* p21). **(p. 161)**

11. Several Deluge traditions independently confirm this conclusion. In the northern hemisphere, for example, both the Babylonian historian Berosus (Stentzel, A. 1894. *Weltschöpfung Sintfluth und Goll* (Braunschweig), 183pp; *v* pp137f) and the Canadian Chippeywayan Indians (Andree, R. 1891. *Die Flutsagen, ethnographisch betrachtet* (Braunschweig), 152pp; *v* p82) date the Deluge as a September event. Appropriately, the Yamana Indians of Tierra del Fuego in the southern hemisphere remember it as a Springtime occurrence (Tollmann, A., and E. Tollmann. 1993. *Op cit*, p211). As noted on p161 *suprá*, Autumn in one hemisphere, is Spring in the other. **(p. 173)**

12. A literal turning over of the Earth, while difficult to conceive mechanically, might well explain those early beliefs, repeatedly discussed since classical times through George Costard (*A Further Account of the Rise and Progress of Astronomy among the Ancients* (London: 1748), 163pp; *v* p8) to Immanuel Velikovsky (*Worlds in Collision* (London: 1950), 384pp; see pp83, 112–130), which insisted that the stars have changed their courses 4 times and the Sun has twice set in the East since the creation of Man. **(p. 191)**

13. The oldest Chaldean solar zodiacs, which date from 5,000 or more years ago, show only 11 signs, the space now occupied by *Libra* (The Scales) being taken up by *Scorpio's* claws (Costard, G. 1748. *Op cit* p 10). The ancients preserved the traditional connections between these constellations when they referred to them as *Chelae Scorpionis* (Maurice, T. 1820. *History of Hindustan*, 2nd ed, 2 vols, (London); see vol 1, pp291, 298).
The dynastic Egyptians regarded the Scorpion (*Scorpio*) as the mortal enemy of their god *Osiris*, who was avenged by his son *Horus* (Graves, R. 1960. *The Greek Myths*, rev edn, 2 vols, (London); see vol 1, p153: Mackenzie, D A c 1918. *Myths of Crete and pre-Hellenic Europe*, (London), liv + 361pp; see pxxx), and knew it as *Typhon* (see p152 *suprá*). Similarly, classical Greek lore makes the Scorpion the adversary of the heroic hunter *Orion*, the archer-god *Apollo* fulfilling *Horus's* avenging role. Constellationally, the first stars of *Scorpio* rise annually as the last of *Orion* set, in direct allusion to this astronomical mythology.
Intimations also exist that the earlier Sumerians and Babylonians knew *Orion* as *Gilgamesh*-the-hunter (Graves, R. 1960. *Ibid*: Sandars, N K 1972. *The Epic of Gilgamesh*, rev edn, (London), 128pp; see p21), and that both were at least partly identical with antiquity's foremost hero *Hercules* (*Herakles*) (Graves, R. 1960. *Op cit*, vol 1, p153, vol 2, p142).
In Ovid's "Metamorphoses" (Lib 1, p438) *Apollo* vanquishes the monstrous *Python* (*Typhon*) at the time of Deucalion's Flood (see pp152–153 *suprá*) with special arrows, thereby partially paralleling the equivalent account in the Norse *Eddas*. As seen in *Appendix E, Typhon* (*Phaeton*) was often equated with the multi-headed *Hydra*, traditionally slain by *Hercules*. Germane, then, are the many ancient Mesopotamian cylinder seals depicting such a creature battling one or more arrow-shooting figures, the chief of whom is frequently identified as *Marduk* (Hayes Ward, W. 1910. *Seal Cylinders of Western Asia, Carnegie Inst.*, Publ. 100, xxxi + 428pp.; see figs 187b, 563–580, 584–585). As well as being another link in the 'Mesopotamian Connection', it is also surely significant that the zodiacal sign next to *Scorpio* is *Sagittarius*-the Archer!
Libra was thus not an original zodiacal sign, but added only after Phaeton's visit, when the new (post-diluvian) celestial order was determined. **(p. 197)**

14. Recent observations of the speed of a post-explosion X-ray jet from the Vela supernova indicate that it is as high as 540km.S^{-1} (Markwardt, C B, and H Ögelman. 1995. "An X-Ray jet from the Vela pulsar", *Nature*, vol 375, no: 6526, pp40–41) and that the original explosion possibly occurred a little earlier than

first calculated (Lyne, A G, R S Pritchard, F Graham-Smith, and F Camilo. 1996, "Very Low Breaking Index for the Vela pulsar", *Nature*, vol 381, no: 6582, pp497–498). Either way such data is consistent with the scenario advanced here. **(p. 210)**

15. That it was given a tail described as stretching "far along the zodiac" (Rhode, J G 1819. *Op cit*, p19) localises *Tristrya's* course as watched from Earth. Significantly, when traversing the zodiacal sign of *Capricorn*, it was, under one of its Mesopotamian titles, *Zalbatānu*, described as the "star that abounds in death" (Langdon, S. 1935. *Babylonian Menologies and their Semitic Calendars, Schweich Lectures*, Brit Acad Lond, vi + 169pp; see p8). Although now greatly fragmented, memories of this calamitous object are *strikingly* consistent. **(p. 211)**

16. Several accounts from India mention the approach of many "terrible suns" (Hochenberger, A. 1930. *Die Indische Flutsage und das Matsayapurana*, (Leipzig), 217pp; *v* 21); the Hebrew 'Henoch' refers to seven invading 'stars', each resembling a "burning mountain" (Roloff, J 1984. *Die Ofenbarung Johannes: Zürcher Bibelkommentare, N. T., 18 Theol Ver,* Zurich, 218pp; *v* 99); and Peruvian traditions occur that speak of six 'suns' which, assaulting Earth, caused the Deluge (Lenormant, F. 1889. *Les Origines de l'Histoire*, 5 vols (Paris); see vol 5, pp16–17). (also see p12 *suprá*). **(p. 212)**

17. This was doubtless a result of the raging 'wildfire' engendered by the 'atmospheric ignition' mentioned in Note 4. Such effects should also be considered in conjunction with those of the 'Firestorm' detailed on pp269–276 *suprá*. **(p. 262)**

18. Babylonian records refer to the rains of mud and 'grains' (sand) which fell during the evening before the arrival of the Wormwood Star and the 'burning mountain' (Schott, A 1984. "Das Gilgamesch Epos", ed by W von Soden. *Reclam Universal Bibliothek* 7235/2, 127pp; see p96). **(p. 290)**

19. Strangely enough, this remarkable scenario is actually recorded on early Sumerian clay tablets: there, *Marduk/Phaeton* is called *Kur* – "a monstrous dragon which held Tehom's (Earth's) waters in check" (Kramer, S H 1056. *From the Tablets of Sumer* (Indian Hills, Colorado), xxvi + 293pp; see p195).
    What early people, even a race as comparatively advanced as the Sumerians, could have imagined an event as aberrant as this had it not really taken place? **(p. 302)**

20. The Meskito Indians of Nicaragua preserve similar memories of the Flood which, they aver, was brought by a tremendous hurricane as a giant wave, so high that it submerged and swept away all things (Scrope Viner, H. W. 1928. "Primitive Beliefs of Nicaraguan Indians", *Folklore*, vol 39, pp166–171; *v* pp166–7). **(p. 304)**

21. It would be reasonable to suppose that the transportation and deposition of the enormous erratic boulders of *unknown* origin decorating northern Greenland and Grant Land (Ellesmere Island) in Arctic Canada, was effected by precisely similar agencies (Markham, C R 1906. "On the Next Great Arctic Discovery, the Beaufort Sea", *Geogr J*, vol 27, pp1–14). **(p. 308)**

22. The marine character of these now 'high-altitude' remains was reinforced in 1911 by Bessel's discovery of a subfossilised Narwhal whale's skeleton at a height of 1,250 feet (380 metres) above present sea-level on Bylot Island to the North of Baffin Island (Bird, J B 1966. *The Physiography of Arctic Canada* (John Hopkins Univ. Press), xix + 336pp; see pp122–123). **(p.310)**

Appendix G LIST OF BIBLIOGRAPHIC CONTRACTIONS

Actes 4th Congr Int Quat	Acts of the 4th Int'l Congress on the Quaternary.
Akad Nauk USSR Sibirskoye Otdeleniye, Inst Vulkanologii, Izdatef	Akademiya Nauk USSR Sibirskoye Otdeleniye, Instituta Vulkanologii, imeni Izdatef.
Akad Savet FNRJ Bull Sci	Scientific Bul of the Savet Acad, Yugoslavia.
Amer Anthrop	Amer Anthropologist.
Amer Antiq	Amer Antiquity.
Amer Antiq Orient Journ	Amer Antiquarian and Oriental Journal.
Amer Assoc Petrol Geol	Amer Assoc of Petroleum Geologists.
Amer Geogr Soc Res	Amer Geogr Soc Resume.
Amer Geol	Amer Geologist.
Amer J Sci	Amer J of Sci.
Amer J Sci Art	Amer J of Sci and Arts.
Amer Mus Nat Hist	Amer Mus Natural History, New York.
An Serv Geol Nacl El Salvador	Anales del Service Geológico Nacionales, El Salvador.
Ann Carnegie Mus	Ann of the Carnegie Mus, Pittsburgh.
Ann Géogr Paris	Ann de Géographie, Paris.
Ann Mus Zool St Petersburg	Ann of the Mus of Zoology, St Petersburg.
Ann Paléont	Ann de Paléontologie, Paris.
Ann Rep Dept Mines, NSW	Ann Rep of the Dept of Mines, New South Wales.
Ann Rep Smithson Inst	Ann Rep of the Smithsonian Inst, Philadelphia.
Ann Sci	Ann of Sci.
Ann Sci Dig	Ann Sci Digest.
Ann Sci Indust	Ann de Sci et l'Industrie.
Annln Phys	Anna de Physik, Leipzig.
Annls Soc Linn Lyon	Ann de la Soc Linnéenne de Lyon.
Annls Sci Nat Paris	Ann des Sci Naturelles, Paris.
Annls Scient Univ Besancon	Ann Scientifiques de l'Université de Besancon.
Archaeol Inst Amer.	Archaeological Inst of Amer.
Arch Mus Nat Hist Lyon	Archives du Muséum d'Histoire Naturelle de Lyon.
Arch Naturgesch	Archiv für Naturgeschichte, Berlin.
Arch Wiss Kunde Russ	Archiv für Wissenschaftliche Kunde von Russland, Berlin.
Astr Astrophys	Astronomy and Astrophysics.
Astron J	Astronomical J.
Astron Nach	Astronomical Nachrichten.
Astron Reg	Astronomical Register.
Astrophys Journ	Astrophysical J.
Atlantic Coast Plain Geol Assoc Guidebook	Atlantic Coast Plain Geological Association Guidebook.
Atti Mus Civ Stor Nat Trieste	Atti del Museo Civico do Storia Naturale di Trieste.
Aust J Earth Sci	Aust J of Earth Sci.
Aust J Phys	Aust J of Physics.
Beitr Kennt Russ Reichs	Beiträge zur Kenntniss de Russischen Reiches und die Angränzenden Lander Asiens, St Petersburg
Ber Offenbach Ver f Naturkunde	Bericht über die Tätigkeit des Offenbach Vereins für Naturkunde.
Ber Sächsischen Akad d Wis Phil Hist Klasse	Bericht der Sächsischen Akademischen der Wissenschaftliche der Philosophie und Historischen Klasse.
Bot Rev Lond	Botanical Rev, London.
Brit Journ Hist Sci	Brit J for the History of Sci.
Bull Amer Assoc Petrol Geol	Bull of the Amer Assoc of Petroleum Geologists, Chicago.
Bull Astron Inst Czch	Bull of the Astron Inst of Czechoslovakia.
Bull Canadian Petroleum Geol	Bull of Canadian Petroleum Geology, Calgary.
Bull Comm Geol Finland	Bull of the Geol Commission of Finland.
Bull Geol Soc Amer	Bull of the Geol Soc of America.
Bull Geol Soc China	Bull of the Geol Soc of China.
Bull Geol Soc Fr	Bull of the Geol Soc of France.
Bull Im Acad Sci St Petersburg	Bull of the Imperial Acad of Sci, St Petersburg.
Bull Inst Oceanogr	Bull of the Inst of Oceanography, Monaco.
Bull Internat de l'Acad des Sci de Cracovie	Bull Int'l de l'Acad des Sciences et des Lettres de Cracovie, Poland.
Bull l'Acad St Petersburg	Bull de l'Acad de St Petersburg.
Bull Mus Anthrop Prehist Monaco	Bull du Mus Anthropologie Prehistorique de Monaco.
Bull Mus Comp Zool	Bull of the Mus of Comparative Zoology, Cambridge, MA.
Bull NY St Mus	Bull of the New York State Mus.
Bull Scient Cons Acad RSF Youg	Bull Scientifique, Conseil des Acad de la RSF de Yougoslavie, Zagreb.
Bull Soc Climat Algér	Bull de la Soc de Climatologie Algérienne.
Bull Soc Hist Nat Afr N	Bull de la Soc d'Histoire Naturelle de l'Afrique du Nord, Algiers.
Bull Soc Hist Nat Toulouse	Bull de la Soc d'Histoire Naturelle de Toulouse.
Bull Soc Nat Moscou	Bull de la Soc des Naturalistes de Moscou.
Bull Soc Zool Fr	Bull de la Soc Zoologique de France, Paris.
Bull US Geol Surv	Bull of the US Geol Surv, Washington.
Bull US Natl Mus	Bull of the United States National Mus, Washington DC.
Bull Vulcanologique	Bull Vulcanologique, Bruxelles.
Canad Jl Earth Sci	Canadian J of Earth Sciences, Ottawa.
Contemp Rev.	Contemporary Rev.
Congr Geol Internat	Inter'l Geol Congress.
Contrib Palaeont Carnegie Inst	Contributions to Palaeontology, Carnegie Inst.
C R Acad Sci Paris	Compte Rendue de l'Acad des Sci, Paris.
C R de la Soc Geol de Finlande	Compte Rendu de la Soc Geol de Finlande.
C R Int Con Zool Monaco	Compte Rendue de la Conferance Int'l de Zoologie, Monaco.
C R Soc Sci Lett Pologne	Compte Rendu de la Soc des Sci et des Lettres de Pologne.
Earth & Planetary Sci Letts	Earth and Planetary Science Letters, Amsterdam.
Edinb New Phil J	Edinburgh New Philosophical J.
Engl Mech	English Mechanic.
Erlanger Forsch	Erlanger Forschungen, Erlangen, Reihe B, Nuturwissenschaften.
Essex Nat	Essex Naturalist.
Folia Quatern	Folia Quaternaria.
Geofisica Internat	Geofisica Internationaler.
Geogr J	Geog J.
Geogr Rev	Geog Rev.
Geol Mag	Geol Mag.
Geol Mijnbouw	Geol Mijnbouw.
Geol Soc Amer Spec Paper	Geol Soc of Amer, Special Paper.
Geophys J	Geophysical J, London.
Geophys J Roy Astr Soc	Geophysical J of the Royal Astronomical Soc, London.
Geophys Res Letts	Geophysical Research Letters.
Gesamtinhaltsverz Wiss Zn Univ Hochsch DDR	Gesamtinhaltsverzeichnis der Wissenschaftlichen Zeitschriften de Universitäten und Hochschulen der Deutschen Demokratischen Republik.
Hist Sci	History of Sci.
Illinois Geol Surv Circ	Illinois Geol Sur Circular.
Indian Sci Cong	Indian Scientific Congress.
Inst Geol Soc Lond, Min	Minutes of the Inst of the Geol Soc of London.
Int Congr Prehist Archaeol	Inter'l Congress of Anthropology and Prehistoric Archaeology.
Irish Astron	Irish Astronomy.
J Amer Folk	J of Amer Folklore.
J Amer Orient Soc	J of the Amer Oriental Soc.
J Anthrop Inst	J of the Anthropological Inst, London.
J Atmosph Sci	J of Atmospheric Sci.
J Brit Astron Assoc	J of the Brit Astronomical Assoc.
J Geophys Res.	Journal of Geophysical Research.
J Hist Astr	J of the History of Astronomy.

J Mammal	J of Mammology, Baltimore.
J Palaeont	J of Palaeontology.
J Phys	J of Physics.
J Proc Roy Soc NSW	J and Proc of the Royal Soc of New South Wales.
Jb K-K Geol Reichsanst Wien	Jahrbuch der Kaiserlich-Königlichen Geol Reichsanstalt, Wien.
Journ Egypt Archaeology	J of Egyptian Archaeology.
Journ Geol	J of Geology.
Journ Geol Soc Lond	J of the Geol Soc of London.
Journ Roy Geogr Soc Lond	J of the Royal Geog Soc of London.
Journ Trans Vict Inst Lond	J and Trans of Victoria Inst of London.
K Dansk Vidensk Selsk Skr	Kongelige Danske Videnskabernes Selskabs Skrifter, Copenhagen.
L'Année Scient	L'Années Scientifiques.
L'Astron	L'Astronomie.
Matér Hist Prim Homme	Matériaux pour l'Histoire Positive et Philosophique (Primitive et Naturelle) de l'Homme, Paris.
Mem Acad Sci Lett Montpellier	Mem dl l'Acad des Sci et Belles-Lettres de Montpellier.
Mem Asia Soc Bengal	Mem of the Asiatic Soc of Bengal.
Mem Geol Surv Amer	Mem of the Geol Surv of America.
Mem Geol Surv Engl & Wales	Memof the Geol Surv of England & Wales.
Mem Geol Surv India	Mem of the Geol Surv of India.
Mem Mus Civ Stor Nat Verona	Mem del Museo Civico de Storia Naturale di Verona.
Mem Soc Géol Fr	Mem de la Soc Géol de France.
Mem Soc Hist Nat Paris	Mem de la Soc d'Histoire Naturelle de Paris.
Mem Univ California	Mem of the Univ of Cal, Berkeley.
Mitt Naturw ver Steiern	Mitteilungen der Naturwissenschaftlichen Vereins für Steiermark, Graz.
Mon Nots Roy Astron Soc	Monthly Notices of the Royal Astronomical Soc.
Monogr Ser	Monograph Series.
Mon Weather Rev	Monthly Weather Rev.
Nachbl dt Malakozool Ges	Nachrichtsblatt der Deutschen Malakozoologischen Gesellschaft, Frankfurt.
NASA Sp Publ	NASA Space Publications.
Nat Geogr Mag	National Geog Mag.
Ned Akad Wet Versl	Nederlandsch Akademisch Wetenschappelijke Verslagen.
NW Nat	North Western Naturalist, Arbroath, Scotland.
NY Lyceum Nat Hist	New York Lyceum of Natural History.
Ohio J Sci	Ohio J of Sci.
Öst Staats Wien	Österreichische Staatanstalt, Wien.
Overseas Geol Surv Min Resour Divn	Overseas Geol Sur and Mineral Resources Division.
Palaeogeogr Palaeoclimat Palaeoecol	Palaeogreography, Palaeoclimatology, Palaeoecology.
Phil Mag	Philosophical Mag.
Phil Trans Roy Soc Lond	Philosophical Trans of the Royal Soc of London.
Pop Astron	Popular Astronomy.
Pop Sci Mon	Popular Sci Monthly.
Pop Sci Rev	Popular Sci Rev.
Proc Acad Nat Sci Philad	Proc of the Acad of Natural Sci, Philadelphia.
Proc Acad Sci Lett Montpellier	Proc de l'Acad'e des Sci et Belles-Lettres de Montpellier.
Proc Amer Philos Soc	Proc of the Amer Philosophical Soc.
Proc Berlin Acad	Proc of the Berlin Acad.
Proc Boston Sci Nat Hist	Proc of the Boston Soc of Natural Hist.
Proc Brit Acad	Proc of the British Academy.
Proc Dorset Nat Hist Archaeol Soc	Proc of the Dorset Natural History and Archaeological Soc.
Proc Geol Assoc	Proc of the Geologists' Assoc, London.
Proc Geol Soc Lond	Proc of the Geol Soc of London.
Proc Imp Acad Japan	Proc of Imperial Acad of Japan, Tokyo.
Proc Internat Symp Tsunamis & Ts Res	Proc of the Inter'l Symposium on Tsunamis & Tsunami Research.
Proc Roy Geogr Soc Lond	Proc of the Royal Geog Soc of London.
Proc Roy Irish Acad	Proc of the Royal Irish Acad, Dublin.
Proc US Natl Acad Sci	Proc of the US National Acad of Sci.
Proc Yorks Geol Soc	Proc of the Yorkshire Geol Soc.
Proc Zool Soc Lond	Proc of the Zoological Soc of London.
Prof Papers Geol Surv India	Professional Papers of the Geol Survey of India.
Publ Carnegie Inst	Publications of the Carnegie Inst, Pittsburgh.
Q Jl Geol Soc Lond	Q J of the Geol Soc of London.
Q Jl Lit Sci Arts Lond	Q J of Literature, Science and Arts, London.
Q Rev	Quaternary Rev.
Quat Res	Quaternary Research.
Quat Sci Rev	Quaternary Scie Rev.
Rep Brit Assoc Adv Sci	Rep of the Brit Assoc for the Advancement of Sci.
Rep Bur Amer Ethnol	Rep of the Bureau of Amer Ethnology, Washington DC.
Rep Inst Polar Stud	Rep of the Inst of Polar Studies.
Rep Smithsonian Inst	Rep of the Smithsonian Inst, Washington DC.
Rev de l'Histoire des Religions	Rev de l'Histoire des Religions, Paris.
Rev Palaeobot Palynol	Rev of Palaeobotany and Palynology.
Rev Sci Nat Montpellier	Rev des Sci Naturelle, Montpellier.
Sber Heidelb Akad Wiss Math	Sber die Heidelberg Akad für Wissenschaftlichen und Mathematik.
Sber Preuss Akad Wiss	Sber die Preussischen Akad der Wissenschaften.
Scient Amer	Scientific Amer.
Sci Dig	Sci Digest.
Sci News	Sci News.
Scient Mon	Scientific Monthly, London.
Sida	Sida Contributions to Botany, Dallas.
Slov Akad Znan Umetn Razr Priorod Vede Razr Jugosl	Slovenska Akad Znanosti in Umetnosti, Razprave Prirodslovnega Vede, Razprave, Jugoslavia.
Smithson Contb Knowl	Smithsonian Contributions to Knowledge, Washington DC.
Smithson Misc Coll	Smithsonian Miscellaneous Collections, Washington DC.
S Afr J Sci	South African J of Sci, Cape Town.
Sov Geogr	Soviet Geography.
Stanford Univ Publ Geol Sci	Stanford Univ Publications, Geol Sci.
Tidsskr Pop Fremst Naturv	Tidsskrift for Populaere Fremstillinger af Naturvidenskoben, Copenhagen.
Trans Amer Geophys Union	Trans of the Amer Geophysical Union, Washington DC.
Trans Chicago Acad Sci	Trans of the Chicago Acad of Sci.
Trans Edinb Geol Soc	Trans of the Edinburgh Geol Soc.
Trans Linn Soc Lond	Trans of the Linnaean Soc of London.
Trans Manch Geol Soc	Trans of the Manchester Geol Soc.
Trans New Zeal Inst	Trans of the New Zealand Inst.
Trans Norfolk Norwich Nat Hist Soc	Trans of the Norfolk and Norwich Natural History Soc.
Trans Roy Soc Edinb	Trans of the Royal Soc of Edinburgh.
Trans Roy Soc New Zeal	Trans of the Royal Soc of New Zealand.
Trans Roy Soc Tasmania	Trans of the Royal Soc of Tasmania.
Trans Wiscon Acad Sci Arts Lett	Trans of the Wisconsin Acad of Sci, Arts and Letters.
Trans Zool Soc Lond	Trans of the Zoological Soc of London.
Uchen Zap Leningr Gos Ped Inst A I Gercen	Uchenye Zapiski Leningradskogo Gosudarstvennogo Pedologiskiy Inst, A I Gercen.
Univ Okla Soc Sci Bull	Univ of Oklahoma Soc's Science Bull.
US Geol Surv Prof Paper	United States Geol Surv Professional Paper.
US Geol Surv Water Supply Paper	United States Geol Surv Water Supply Paper.
US Geol Survey Mon	United States Geol Surv Monograph.
Verh Geol Reichsanst	Verhandlungen der Geol Reichsanstalt.
Z dt Geol Ges	Zeitschrift der Deutschen Geol Gesellschaft.
Zeit Ges Erdk Berlin	Zeitschrift der Gesellschaft für Erdkunde zu Berlin.
Zool Zh	Zoologischeskii Zhurnal, Moscow.

Abbreviations

Acad = Academy
Amer = American
Ann = Annals
Assoc = Association
Astron = Antronomical
Aust = Australian
Brit = British
Bull = Bulletin
Geog = Geographical
Geol = Geological
Inst = Institute
Int'l - International
J = Journal
Mag = Magazine
Mem = Memoirs
Mus = Museum
Proc = Proceedings
Rep = Report
Rev = Review
Sci = Science
Soc = Society
Surv = Survey
Trans = Transactions
Univ = University

INDEX

acorns 63, 310
Acton (London) 295
Adam and Eve 3, 332
Adams, Dr Leith 107
adiantum reniforme 87, 90
Aegean continent 101
Aenocyon 118
aepyornis 103
Aerolithes 201
Africa 33, 35, 96, 101, 242
African Rift Valley (see Great Rift Valley)
African tribes 256
Africanus, Julius 4
Africo-Brazilian continent 87, 89, 102
Agadir 263
Agassiz's glacial (ice age) hypothesis 119
Agassiz, Louis 23, 66
Age of Darkness 256
Ages 3
Agricultural terraces 334
ague-trefoil 84
Ahaggar (Hoggar) 28
Ahriman 212
Airy, Sir George 191
Akawais 159
Akkadian text 214, 219
Alabama 309
Alaska 16, 39, 57, 60, 94, 127, 170, 171, 255, 283, 292, 296, 305, 309
Alberta 91, 264, 308
alder 309, 310–1
Aleutian island 58, 70s
Alexandria 244
algae 59
Algeria 86, 99, 109
Algonquin legends 293
Allerod (interglacial) 43
Alpine flora 85
Alpine region 84
Alps 25, 42, 85, 183, 187, 265, 308
Altai mountains 26, 114, 308, 310
aluminium 296
aluminium-26 209, 210, 296
Amazon 91
Amerindian legends 304
Amor asteroid group 206
amphibians 100
amphicoma 99
Anatolia 101
Anaxagoras 14, 15
Anaximander 12
Anaximenes 12, 14, 15
ancient people and traditions 101, 303
Andaman Islanders 3, 191
Andes 30, 183, 308, 334
Andrews, Prof 46
anergetes 97
Anjou, Lt 310
Annam 328
annelids 96
Anshar 222
Antarctica 39, 53, 55, 174
antediluvian geography 242
antelope 125
Antillean landmass 96
ants 97
Anu 217, 222
Apatak Island 288
Aphrodite 229
Apocalypse of Thomas 294, 303
Apollo asteroid family 206
Apollodorus 13, 152
Apollonius Rhodius 155, 212
Apollonius the Egyptian 7, 15
Appalachia 32, 86, 98, 192
Appalachians 268
Appleton 171
apteryx 103
Arabia 13
Aral Sea 104
archidiskodon meridionalis 109
Arctic 60, 84, 92, 170, 172, 187, 297, 309, 310, 312
Arctic Circle 312
Arctic Ocean 292
Arctic plants 84, 87
Ardmarnoch, Scotland 213–4
Arendt-Rigaux comet 206
Ares (Mars) 225, 229
arianta arbustorum 97
Aristarchus of Samos 12, 196, 215
Arizona 268, 304
Arkell, Dr 309
arks 291, 328
armadillos 57
artefacts 334
Asama volcano 258
ash 271, 277, 298
Asia 26, 56, 114, 157, 267
Asia Minor 99, 291
asphalt, asphalt lakes and tar-seeps 59, 130, 203
Assam 242
astarte borealis 98
asteroid belt 205
asteroids 175, 198, 206, 208, 210
astronomers 19
astronomy 215
Atanekerdluk 248
Atlantic Ocean 43, 87, 96, 98, 156, 242, 244, 269, 299
Atlantis, Atlantean continent 14, 86, 156, 173, 225, 227, 242
Atlas mountains 28, 225, 227, 242, 293
atmosphere 38, 178, 256, 262, 269
atmospheric changes 178, 190
atmospheric cooling 38
atmospheric temperatures 258
Atra-Hasis 330
Augustine 4
Australasia 27, 56, 89, 100
Australia 90, 99, 102, 103, 115
Austria 114
avalanches 263–4
Avatdleq 248
Avesta 277
Avienus 211
axial changes 15, 189
axial rotation, spin 254
axial shifts 63, 182, 191, 204, 208, 252
axial tilt 38, 68, 153, 176, 191, 302, 340
axial wobbles 183, 186, 253
axis of inertia 190
axis of rotation 189, 191
Aymara Indians 315
Azhidhaka 212
Azores 31, 32, 87, 95, 97
Aztecs 13, 159, 227, 331

Babcock 156, 244
Babylonian epic 153, 225, 262, 289, 315
Babylonian Talmud 277
Babylon, Babylonians 4, 6, 197, 217, 226, 294, 330
Bacon, Roger 5
bacillus 99
Bahamas 282
Balkans 99, 101, 265, 294
Ball, John 85, 102
Bandai 270
Bangladesh 330
Banksia 90
Banksland 310
Barbados 278
Barents Sea 42, 292, 297
Barnes, Thomas G 184
Barnett, V H 257
Bavaria 84
Bayle, Pierre 5
bays 291
bays, Carolina (see Carolina Bays)
bears 57, 84
Beaumont 18, 185
Bede, the Venerable 4
beetles 97, 99

begonias 89
Behemoth 296
Bellamy, H S 186, 208, 332
Bengal 12
ben-Gorion, Josippa 304
Beresovka, Siberia 125, 126, 172
Bering Straits 34, 309
Beringia 35, 187, 192
Bermuda 96, 282, 289
Bernhardi, Prof A 23
Berosus 4, 219
Biblical sources 212
Biela's comet 200
Bifrost Bridge 154, 292
birch 311
birds 90, 100; 276
bisons 58
Blanchard, E 99
Blanc, Mt 247, 315
Blanford, H F 34
blanus cinerus 100
blasts 290
Bloomington 92
Blount, Charles 5
boats 338
Bode's Law 207–8
Bode, Johann 207
Boettger, Prof 102
boettgeria 102
Bohemia 201
boiling water 186
Bolivia 30, 91, 133, 174, 255, 287, 289, 292
bombardments 255, 292
bone breccias 295
bones 86, 172
bone-caves 111, 113, 272, 307, 327, 329
boopsis sinensis 114
Boreas 13
Borneo 12, 43, 102, 242
Borros 218
bos 109
bos urus 104s
Bosnia and Herzegovina 113
boulder clay 91, 272, 308
boulder-fields 272
Bourbourg, Brasseur de 159
Bower, Dr 335
box trees 86
Brahma 211
Brandt, Prof A F 125
Braun 94
Brazil 11, 87, 116, 119, 157, 186, 256–7, 270
breadfruit 61
Brewster 33
breccias 295
Britain, British Isles 41–2, 86, 98
British Columbia 172, 242, 331
Brome, Captain Frederick 109
Bronsen's comet 200
Brooks Range 170
broom 87, 90
brown coal (see lignite)
Brownson Deep 284
brush-kangaroo 102
Bryum 91
Bryson 170
bubalus 109, 114
Bucher, Dr Walter 31
Buckland, William 119
Buddhist texts 293
Buddhists 12
Buffon, G L de 6, 7
buliminus fasciolatus 99
Bundahish 289, 303
Bungogees 330
Bununs 242
buried forests 93
Burma 27, 157
Burnet 4
butterflies 96, 99

Caboy 330
Caingang Indians 329
Calaveras skull 132, 334
Calendars 3
California 30, 59, 130, 133, 183, 186, 203, 212, 265, 268, 276, 296, 306, 334–5
Calluna 86
Camp Century 247
Canada 62, 91, 159, 183, 285
Canary Butterfly 96
Canary Islands 31, 95–6
Cape Breton 91
Cape Farewell 244
Capim Branco basin 270
Capybara 116
carbon dioxide 241
carbon dioxide content in atmosphere 38
carbon-14 dating (see radiocarbon dating)
carcasses 332
Carcharodon 107
carduelis elegans 100
carex extensa 86
Caribbean 96
Carniola 295
Carolina 282
Carolina bays 245, 281–3, 296, 298
Carpathians 84–5
Carter, Dr George 171
Caruana, A A 107
carvings 214
Cashinaua Indians 256
Caspian Sea 104
Cassowary (Casuarius) 103
catastrophe traditions 150, 162–4
catastrophes 19
catastrophists, catastrophist 7, 17, 18, 21, 38, 66, 87, 159, 184
Caucasus 26, 57, 85
Cave faunas 121
caves 111, 173, 241, 329
cave-breccias 100
cedars 93, 123
celestial ice 207
celestial rotation 15
ceneri impastati 105
Central America 90, 268
Ceres 198
Chaldeans 197, 215
chamaeleon vulgaris 100
Chamberlin, R T 183
Champlain, Lake 257
Chandler Wobble 190, 194
Channel islands 101
Chara 91
charcoal 310, 338
Charon 205, 210
Charpentier, Johann von 23
Chastach, Lake 311
Chernoi Nos Peninsula 311
Cheshvan 304
Chicago 280
Chile 44, 98
Chimakum 186
China 16, 26, 43, 102, 114, 296
China-stones 285
Chinese texts & traditions 153, 211, 226–7, 293, 296, 301, 303, 308, 331–2
Chiron 207–8, 222
chlamydotherium 116
chlorophyll 59
Choctaw Indians 304
chondrites 201
Choukoutien, China 114
chrysippus 4
cirques 56, 315
civilisation 334
civilised communities 332
Clarion fracture zone 268
clausilia 102
Clavus, Claudius 244
Clement 153
clethra arborea 87
climate 257
climatic changes, variations 56, 183, 186, 189
cloud cover 256
cloudbursts 309
Clube, S V and Napier, W M 199, 209
Coatapepeque caldera 268
coelodonta tichorhinus 109, 125
coins 337
cold 159
Cold Pole 61
coleoptera 97
collagen 172
collapse of ocean basins 265
collapsed sky conditions 254, 256, 259, 271, 290–1, 304, 313, 327, 339
Columbia Plateau 179, 270
Columbia River 307
comets 5, 152, 175, 184, 199, 201, 206–8, 252
conch 99
conflagration 150, 187, 269, 294, 329
Congo 133
conifers 84, 86, 90
Constellation Cancer 173
constellations 15, 217
continental drift 37, 191, 267
continental shelves 37
copepod 104
Copernicus, Nicolaus 215
cordilleras 26, 28
core, Earth's (see Earth's core)
Corsica 96
cosmic bombardment 329
cosmic space 220
Cox, A and Doell, R R 183

crabs 99
craters 284, 291
crayfish 99
creation 4, 6
Cretaceous Age, strata 18, 308
Crete 101
cricket 98
Croatia 113
Crocuta 119
Croll, Dr J 24
crustaceans 99
crustal bulging 307
crustal collapse 292
crustal damage, strains 183, 213
crustal dislocation, movement 28, 255, 259, 268, 291–2, 313
crustal fracturing 262, 265–8, 292
crustal rocks 193
crustal shortening 292
crustal sliding, slippage 38, 193–4
crust, Earth's (see Earth's crust)
Cuba 284
culture-heroes 330, 334
Cumacea 104
Cumbria 86
Curie Point 182
Cuvier 21
cyclones 276
cylinder-seals 216
cynailurus 114
Cyon 114

Dacrydium 90
Dakota
Daly, Dr Reginald 27–8
Damascius 219
Dammara 90
Damon, Robert 63
Dana 276
darkness 159, 256, 271, 329
Darwin, Sir George 192
Dasyurus 115
dating techniques 169, 345
Dawkins, W B 104
Dawson, Sir William 91–2
Dean, Prof Dennis 4
debris 53, 94
Deccan 179, 270
deep-sea trenches 35
deer 100
deglaciation 192
Deimos 204–5
Deinotherium 133
Delaware Indians 14
Delpierre, 133
Deluge 3, 7, 9, 14–5, 17, 20, 65, 186–7, 211, 218, 227, 230, 242, 254, 291, 298, 301–3, 304, 308, 312–3, 315, 327
deluge traditions 150, 301
deluge waters 308
Descartes, Rene 4
deserts 195, 241
Deucalion Flood 3, 152, 153, 189
Devon Island 310
dews 241, 257
Diderot, D 6
Dicerorhinus hemitoechus 112
Dicerorhinus kirchergensis 113
diet 332
Diluvial Theory 21
Diluvium venti 277–8
din (noise) 278
Diodorus Siculus 6, 215
Diogenes Laertius 15
Diogenes of Apollonia 12
Disko Bay 247
Divine intervention 328
Dolomieu 106
Donnelly, Ignatius 18, 149, 154, 185
dormice 107
drainage systems 241, 327
Drayson Effect 38
drift deposits 11, 45–6, 84, 86, 91, 173, 192, 273, 276, 295, 307–8, 314–5, 340
driftwood 309, 312
Dromaeus 103
drought 257
Drude, Prof 84
Dryas octopetala 84
Dryas, Younger (see Younger Dryas)
duckbilled platypus 102
Dudinsk 312
Duncan, Prof P M 133
Dusan tribe 12
dust 38, 271, 277
dust devils 282
Dutch Elm disease 19
dwarfing 101
dye 248

Ea 217
Earth 173, 175–6, 185, 220, 230, 250, 255, 297, 304, 311
earth fracture 265
earthquakes 183, 185–6, 189, 190, 255, 263
earthworms 96
Earth's axis of rotation 15, 35, 189, 190–1, 193, 206, 208, 253, 277
Earth's core 178, 180–2, 190, 193
Earth's crust 178, 192
Earth's electromagnetic field 180–1, 184
Earth's magnetic axis, poles 180, 182
Earth's magnetic field 182
Earth's mass 178
Earth's orbit 189, 190
Earth's rotational speed 178–9, 182, 255, 268, 302
Earth's thermal energy 186
Earth/Moon system 250
Eberhart, Dr H 335
ecliptic, obliquity of (see Obliquity)
Eddas, Norse 154, 161, 223, 292, 303, 331
Eddington, A E 193
Edwards-Dwight, S 306
Egypt 15, 155
Egyptian hieroglyphs 14
Egyptians, ancient 6, 197, 201, 296
Eire (see Ireland)
Eiseley, Prof L C 56
El Chicon 258
Electra 225, 227
electric currents 181
electromagnetic exchanges 250–1, 259
electromagnetic fields 208
electromagnetic potential 209
electromagnetic storms 255
elephants 57, 102, 334
Ellesmere Island 310
Empedocles 3
emu 103, 116
England 40, 84, 102, 296
Englehardt 187
Engler, Prof A 85
Enlil 217–8
Enoch, Book of 291
environmental changes 340
Epoccus 97
Equatorial bulge 177, 181, 193
Equus stenonis 109
Eriolaulon 86
Eriocaulon septangulare 86
Erman, G A 21, 311–2
Ermitage Papyrus 191
Eros 199
erratic boulders 9, 11, 23, 40, 45, 49, 51, 55, 287, 306–7, 327
Eryx jaculus 100
Erzgebirge 84
Eskimos 15, 191
Esmarch, Jens 23
Eucalyptus 90
Eucrites 198
Eugenia 89
Eumetopias stelleri 133
Eurasia 315
Eurasian Basin 187, 292
Euripides 211
Europe 23, 56, 84–7, 102, 104, 170, 183, 245, 249, 292
Eusebius 153
evaporation 257
Ewing, Maurice 32
excoriation 35
explosions 273, 327
exterminations 56
extinction 56, 125, 174, 183

Faeroe islands 40, 97, 244
Falconer, Dr Hugh 105
fallen angels 291
Farnell, L R 219
faults, geological 265
Fennoscandia 33, 85, 98, 103, 192, 242, 249, 309
Fenris-Wolf 212, 223, 275, 289, 303
Fernando de Noronha 87
ferns 61, 91
ferret-badgers 102
ferromanganese concretions 298–9
ferrous minerals 295
Fielden, Col W H 85
Figuier 277
figurine 296
Fiji 90, 99, 156
Fimbul winter 315, 331
Finland 11, 160, 287, 294
Finnish traditions 210, 298
Finsterwalder, Dr P 27
fiords 35, 244, 246, 280, 315
fire fountains 270–1
fires 160, 254, 279
firestorms 269, 279

Fire-crested wren 100
fire-hurricane 272
Fish, F F 206
fissures 179, 327
Flanders 191
Flandern, Van 199, 206, 220
flightless birds 103
Flint 26
Flood 14, 65, 150, 212, 227, 255, 290–1, 301–2, 330
Flood of Deucalion 3, 152, 159
Flood of Ogyges 152
flood traditions 329
floral distribution 94
fluting 315
fog banks 313
Fontinalis 91
foraminifera 43, 96, 171
Formosa (Taiwan) 242, 329
Forrest, H E 33, 61, 86, 249
Forsyth-Major, C I 100
Fosheim Peninsula 310
fossil record 6
fossil wood 310
fossils 65, 83, 91, 172, 179
Foster, Prof 337
fracture complexes 174, 227, 265
fracture patterns 194
fractures 37
France 113
Fraser River 296
Frederickson, Kurt 297
frogs 96
fungi 59
Furry Creek 172

Gaga (Chiron) 272
Galactic plane 218
Galapagos Islands 90, 102
gales 305
Gamow, Dr George 187
Gangetic Trough 37
Ganymede 208
Garden of Eden 13
Garm 212, 289
Garmieria 102
Garrod, D A E 111
gas clouds 254
gases 269, 272, 279, 293
Gazin, Dr C L 118
Geikie, Prof J 24, 33, 39, 63, 84, 86, 276
Geiseltal, Germany 59, 92, 276
Geminus of Rhodes 215
Genesis, Book of 3, 153, 219, 301, 303–4, 332
geoidal deformation 254, 268, 307
geoidal distortion 267
geomagnetic changes, reversals 185–6, 253, 267
geomagnetic fields, geomagnetism 180
geomorphology 7
geraniums 89
Germain, L 96
Germany 11, 84, 92, 113, 276, 279
Gibraltar 109
Gidley, Dr J W 118
Gilgamesh 153, 278
Ginungagap 160, 218, 331
glacial and interglacial successions 63
glacial conditions 213
glacial epoch, period 28, 84, 314
glacial theory 94
glacialists 25
glaciations 42, 62, 85, 274, 313
Glacier Age 315
glacier ice, glaciers 7, 23, 35, 56, 179, 248, 315, 328, 340
Gobi desert 26
Gokihar 254
gold 296
Golden Age 3, 12, 13, 35, 64, 175, 292
goldfinch 100
Gondwanaland 89
Gothenburg 182
Gothenburg flip 183
gouging 315
Gradualism 17, 25
granite 179
gravels 171, 296, 308, 327
gravitational fields 222, 263, 304, 307
gravity 50, 302
Great Bear, constellation 15
Great Khingan Shan 26
Great Lakes 91, 93
Great Lyakhov Island 310
Great Rift Valley 28, 35, 158, 269
Great Year 3, 4
Greece 3, 12, 99, 101, 225, 294
Greeks 13, 215
Greenland 32, 35, 39, 55, 60–1, 85, 96, 98, 160, 242, 244, 249, 295, 314
Greenland ice-cap 247
Greenwood, A Craven 111
Gregory, Prof J W 158
grey willow 86
Grinnell Land, Peninsula 63, 310
Gruger, E 94
Gryllus 98
Guam 103
Guatemala 268
Guettard, Jean 7
Gulf of Mexico 183
Gulf Stream 313
Gullikson 170
gymnure, lesser 102

Haarmann, Erich 28
Haemus, Mt 294
hail 160, 303
hailstones of iron 298
Haiti 284
Halley, Edmund 5, 7
Halmaturus 102
Hamburg 280
Hammer 314
Hann, Julius 192
Hapgood, Charles H 244
Harpagornis 103
Harvey, John 5
Hauthal, Prof Rudolf 174
Hawaii 12, 99, 156, 159, 179, 270–1
Hawaiki 34
Hay, O P 132
haze 257
heat 280
heavy metals 296
Hebrew texts (see Jewish texts)
Hebrides 35, 40
Hedenstrom 310–311
Heer, Prof Oswald 24, 28
Hehr, Frederick G 337
Heirtzler, 190
Helictis, H orientalis 102
Helios 211, 218
helium 241, 259
Hell 291–2
Hemicaridina desmaresti 99
Hera 257
herbivores 169
Herculaneum 258
Hermes 328
Herodotus 155
Hesiod 152
Hess, H H and MacClintock, P 302
Heteromeyenia ryderi 47, 242
Hibben, F C 58
Hibbert 257
Hibokhibok volcano 274
Hidalgo 206, 208
Hilprecht, Prof Herman 217
Himalayan orogeny 26
Himalayas 25–6, 37, 42, 133, 187, 265, 308
Hindu Kush 27
Hindu traditions, Vedas, Hindus 211, 226, 252, 279, 289
Hipparchus 215
hippopotamus 84, 86, 104
hippopotamus liberiensis 107
hippopotamus major 112
hippopotamus pentlandi 106
Hobbs, W H 194
Hoggar (Ahaggar) 28
Holbach, Baron de 7
Holland 254, 287, 289
holocaust 269
Holocene Epoch 11, 28, 62, 101, 170, 247, 285, 314–5, 330, 339, 340
Homer 229
Hooker, Joseph 89, 90
Hooke, Robert 7
Hopatroides 99
Hopi Indians 157
Hopolophorus 116
horse 58, 86, 109, 124
Howell, James 5
Howorth, Sir Henry 50, 52, 55
Huascaran 264
Hudson Bay 91
Hull, Prof E 87
human beings 6, 114, 116
human remains 118
Humboldt Glacier 247
hurricanes 57, 255, 276, 278–9, 305
husbandry 339
Hutton, James 7, 8, 17, 66
hyaena 119, 133
hydrachna geographica 97
hydrocarbons 203
hydrosphere 302
hyginus 211
Hylomis, H suillus 102
hymenoptera 97

Hyperboreans 13
hypnum 91
Hystrix 133

Iberia 109
Iblis 212
Icaria 244
ice 46, 160, 201, 207, 220, 303
ice action 53, 308, 315
Ice Age 23, 25, 39, 50, 55, 64, 84, 121, 127, 169, 174, 192–3, 244, 262, 299, 307, 313–5
Ice Age theory 39, 85
Iceland 12, 32, 61–2, 96–8, 244–5, 258
ice, physics of 50
ice-caps 340
ice-fields 328
ice-sheets 37, 42, 50, 85, 189, 192, 314–5
Idaho 296, 334
Idotea entomon 104
igneous rocks 182, 184
Ihering, Dr von 34, 95
Illinois 92, 94, 337
Ilopango depression 268
India 12–3, 34, 179, 197, 218, 264–5, 289
Indian archipelago 90
Indian Ocean 34, 89, 157
Indiana, USA 94
Indigirka River 311
Indonesia 27, 99, 102–3, 268
Indo-Gangetic trough 265
Indo-Oceana 89
Indra 289
Inglefield, Captain 248
insects 96–7
interglacials 24, 314
interstadials 24
Invercargill, NZ 287
Iowa 94, 279
Ipuwer Papyrus 186
Iraq 338
Ireland (Eire) 40, 42, 49, 86–7, 96–7, 102, 171
iris 198
iron 201, 296
iron ore 269
iron oxide 295, 297
Isadore of Seville 4
isopod 104
Is-Shantun cave specimens 108
Italy 27, 99, 101, 113

Jamaica 95
Japan 13, 15, 26, 159, 258, 263, 270
Java 102, 270
Jeans, Sir James 15, 196
Jeffreys, Sir Harold 193–4
Jeremias, Prof Alfred 217
Jerome 4
Jewish myths, traditions 201, 211, 305, 315
Jewish texts 3
Jews 12, 296
Job, Book of 218
Joshua, Book of 160
Jotunheim 291
Jubmel 301
Jude, Epistle of 291
Juergens, R E 181
juglans tephrodes 84
juniperus virginiana 93
Juno 198
Jupiter 176, 200–1, 203–4, 206–7, 215, 220, 226, 293
Jura 28
Jurassic strata 308

kabyles 218
Kailas 27
Kalimantan 12, 43, 102, 242
Kamchatka peninsula 26, 35, 60, 187, 265, 269, 292
Kanga people 256
Karakoram 26
Karaya Indians 330
Karpinski, A 104
Kashmir 26
Kato Indians 157
Keglen, Mt 248
Kelly, A O 288
Kennett, J P and Watkins, N D 183–4, 186
Kenya 133, 170
Kerguelen cabbage 89
Kerguelen Island 89
Kesslerloch cave 295
kettle-holes 56
Kilauea Iki, Kilauea volcano 270
Kilimanjaro, Mt 248, 315
Kingu 222–3, 225, 250, 254, 289, 290, 292–5
King, Prof Leonard 219
Kircher 4
Kirkdale Cave 119
Kirkuk 338
kiwi 103
Klee, Frederick 14
Knaack, G 187
knife 337
Kobelt, Dr W 95
Koluguev Island 309
Kolyma, River 34
Kolymsk 34
Koran (Quran) 304
Korea 115
Korff, Serge 169
Kotelnyy Island 310
Krakatau 19, 270
Krasan, Prof F 85
Kronos 13, 206
Kuiper, Gerard 210
Kuiper Belt 206, 210, 221
Kun-lun mountains 27
Kwakiult Indians 331

La Soufrière 273
Labrador 244
Lactantius 4, 14, 45
Lagoa Santa 119
lakes 254, 292
Lakhers 328
Laki volcano 258
Lamb, H H 314, 340
landmass altitude changes 38
landslides 263
land-routes 86, 95
land-shells 95–6, 99, 102
Lang, Dr 115
Laos 27
Lappish tradition 301
Lappland 85
Laschamp geomagnetic event 182
Late Pleistocene (see Pleistocene, late)
lavas 31, 34, 179, 254, 270, 273, 298–9, 327
Leffe 84
legends 189
Lehmann, Johann 7
Leidy, Dr 124
Lemuria 89
Lenni-Lenape Indians 329
lepidoptera 97
Leviathan 218, 297
Lexell's comet 200
Lhwyd, Edward 6, 7
Libby, Dr W F 169
lightning 255–6, 259, 277
lignites, lignite beds, deposits 59, 84, 91, 94
ligur uvae 99
limestone 57, 178, 241
Limnocalanus grimaldi 104
Link, T A 293
Lisbon 264
lithosphere 179, 265, 307
lithospheric thickness 192
Lithuanian tradition 328
Little Ice Age 315
lizards 98, 100
Llyn Teyrn, Wales 257
Loanga tribe 256
lobelia dortmanna 86
loess 296, 299
Lofoten islands 40
Loke 212, 289
Louisiana 203
Love, Prof S G 123
loxodonta africanus 109
Lubbock, J 86
Lucifer 212, 218
Lund 115
Lushai people 242
Lyakhov Island 124
Lyell, Sir Charles 17, 23, 44, 61, 66
Lynmouth 309

Maccacogne 119
Mackenzie River 91
Macrauchenia 111
Macroptychia 102
Madagascar 99, 103
Madeira 31, 87, 95
magma 179, 186, 193, 258, 263, 268, 285, 327
magma tides 180, 186, 254, 307
magma, viscosity of 186
Magnesium-26 209
magnetic reversal 181–2
magnetosphere 181
Maillet, B de 6
Makah 186
Maloi Island 311
Malta 106
mammals 57, 100

mammoths (Mammut) 84, 86, 104, 121, 125, 127, 171–2, 183, 191, 296, 310–3, 343
mammuthus primigenius 109, 121
manatus 98
Mandan Indians 338
Manetho 15
manganese nodules 298
Mangerud, J and Gullikson 170
manis palaeojavanica 102
Manitoba 91
Manley, H 182
Mantle (see Earth's mantle)
Mantura 267–8
Maori, Maori traditions 34, 278, 280, 288, 301, 303
maple 86, 91
Marduk 214, 217, 219, 220–3, 225, 227, 250, 262, 277, 289, 315
margaritana margaritifer 97
marine bivalves 170
marine shells 40, 172, 310
Mariner-10 226
Mariner-2 226
Markham, Sir Clements 334
Mars 176, 199, 204–5, 207, 215, 226–7, 230, 250
Martinique 272–3
Massachusetts 279
mastodons 57, 122, 124, 170, 334, 337
Mato Grosso 270
Mattison 132
Mauna Loa 179, 270
Maya 12, 13, 156, 278, 294
Mazzaroth 315
Mbocobi tribe 275
McClure, Sir Robert 63
McGee 64
McKittrick, California 59
meat 332
Mediterranean 96, 98, 101, 105, 242, 265, 269
megaliths 214
megalonyx 124
megatherium 116–7
Melville Island 310
Menzel, Dr Donald 58
Mer de Glace 247
Mercury 176, 180, 204, 215, 262
Merezhkovsky, D S 96, 291
Merryman 130
Meru, Mt 13, 242, 292
Mesopotamia 294
Mesopotamian cylinder-seals 214–5, 218
Mesopotamians 214, 277
Mesozoic Era 18, 25
meteor scars 282
meteor swarms 294
meteorites, meteors 200, 281, 288, 297–8
meteorological conditions 60
methane 203, 207, 220
Mexican accounts 216, 293
Mexico 12, 156, 227, 258, 294, 303
Meyer, Prof Hans 174
Michael and his angels 212, 291
Michigan 92
Michigan City 170
Micronesia 99
middens 340
Midgård Serpent 175, 212, 223, 275, 289, 292
Mid-Atlantic Ridge 31, 32, 269
Milky Way 218
Millennium 4
Minya Konka 26
Miocene Era 62, 86, 103, 136, 295, 309
Miocene Ocean 104–5, 108, 127
Miocene/Pliocene/post-glacial gap 61
Mississippi 94
Missouri 264
Mixtecs 156
Moa 103, 116
Mobutu Sese Seko, Lake 265–7
Moel Tryfaen, Wales 46, 60
molluscs 95, 97–8, 102, 172, 340
Monachus 98, 296
Mongolia 13, 45
monk seal 98
monsoonal regimes 189
Montana 11
Montesquieu 7
moon 178–9, 180, 193, 204, 208, 215, 229, 250, 253, 255, 296, 352
moraines 23, 53, 55, 247–8, 257, 309, 315
Morehouse's comet 200, 202
Morocco 87, 89
Morrison, D 226
Mortillet, G de 86
moths 96
mountain building 174, 189
mountain ranges 183, 194, 254, 327
mountains 26, 241
muck 57, 93
muck beds 309, 314
mud 269, 272, 307, 327
mud-slides 45, 275
Muggendorf 11
Mulholland, J Derral 185–6, 191, 208
Murchison, Sir Roderick 46, 125
musk-ox 125
Muspar 231
Muspelheim 212, 292
muspilli 275
mustela boccamela 101
mylodon 116, 334
mysis 104

naias flexilis 86
Nansen Basin 292
Napier 199, 209
Nashe, Thomas 6
Navajo Indians 14, 304, 329
Neanderthal race 116
Near Eastern cosmologies 219
Nebraska 296
Needham, J T 7
Nelson Bay 170
Nenia 102
Neptune 176, 196, 201, 205, 215, 217, 220, 222
Nereid 205, 222
Netherlands (see Holland)
Neugebauer, Prof 217
Neumayer, Prof 87
Nevada 279
New Caledonia 90
New England 282
New Guinea 102–3, 170
New Hebrides 90
New Madrid 264
New Siberian Islands 297, 309, 310–1
New Zealand 34, 89, 90, 102–3, 156, 183, 287
Newcombe Period 190
newts 96
Niah cave 102
nickel 297–8
Nigeria 268
Nineveh 214, 229
nitrogen-14 169
Nixon, G T 314
Noah 150, 291, 304, 332
Noah's Flood 186
nodules 299
Nordenskiöld, N A E 62–3, 311
Norse *Eddas* (see *Eddas*)
Norse epics, sagas, mythology, texts, traditions 13, 14, 154, 160, 212, 218, 254, 289, 291, 315
North Africa 109
North America 28, 86–7, 118, 211, 249, 303, 314–5, 337
North American tribes 186
North Atlantic 32, 87, 96, 242, 249, 313
North Carolina 296
North Pole 292, 311
North Sea 40, 42, 171
Norton, P E P 62
Norway 42, 96, 160, 171, 245, 249
Nothrotherium 118
novae (see supernovae)
Novgorod, Russia 312
Nuées ardentes 45, 254, 269, 273–4
nutation 190

oaks 310, 312
Object 1992 QB 206, 210
objects in space 349–354
obliquity of the ecliptic 194, 196
ocean basins 37, 297
ocean currents, circulation 190
ocean levels 25
Oceania 89, 101–3
oceanic changes 38
oceans 153, 172, 179, 195, 254, 258, 306
Odin 303
odours 327
Ohio 92
Oklahoma 304
Old Testament 3, 160, 184, 315
Olduvai (Oldoway), Kenya 133
Oleacinidae 96
Oligochetes 95
Oniscus asellus 97
Ontario 91
Opik, E J 199, 220, 297
Oppenheim, V 267, 307
Oregon 30, 201
ores 269
organic debris 327

oriented 'lakes' 284, 287, 291–2
Orkney islands 40, 293
Ornithorhynchus 102
orogenic upheavals 249
orogeny (see also mountain building) 25, 265
orthodox history 233
Orthodoxy 121, 161
ostrich 103
Ousdal, Dr Asbjourn 335
Ovaherero tribesmen 256
Ovenden, M W 206, 220
Ovid 12, 150, 153, 173, 211, 222, 252, 275
oxygen 241
ozone content 38

Pacific islands 102
Pacific Ocean 43, 89, 90, 103, 268, 270, 297–9
Pacifica 89
Pairikas 289
Palaeolithic Period 118
Palaeoloxodon 108
Palaeoloxodon antiquus 106, 114
Palaeoloxodon namadicus 102
Palaeoloxodon mnaidriensis 106
Palaeomagnetism 182–3
Palaeontologists, palaeontology 119
Palestine 155
Palissy, Bernard 6
Pallas 198
Pallas-Athene 225, 229, 257
Pamir 26
Panama 87, 90, 96
Pangolin 102
Pankhoos 330
Panthera 119
Paraña River 179
Parry Islands 310
Patten, Donald 8, 209, 302
Pauly, K A 193
paved road 337
Pawnee Indians 153
pearl mussel 97
peat 58, 91
peat-bog 170
Pelasgian Sea 101
pelecypod 172
Pelée, Mt 270
Penck, Prof Albrecht 24, 42
Penhallow, Prof D P 91–2
peperomia 90
periops hippocrepis 100
perpetual night 313
Persea 87
Persia, Persians 13, 197, 212
Persian Gulf 265
Persian traditions 173, 211, 226, 250
Peru 30, 133, 174, 212, 264, 293, 296, 315, 338
Peruvian Deluge legend 329
pestilence 327
pestilential clouds 212
Peter, Epistle of 291
petroleum, petroleum residue 203, 265, 293
Peyère, Isaac de la 6
Peyrerius, Isaac 5
Phaedusa 102
Phaeton 150, 153, 173, 175–6, 184, 187, 210–2, 214, 217, 220, 231, 250–1, 254, 257, 263, 268, 275, 288–9, 291, 296, 299, 314–7, 356
Phaeton Disaster 176, 195, 209, 241, 248, 293, 304, 314, 333
Phaeton's departure 327
phalangista 102
pherecydes 13
Philemon and Baucis 328
Philippines 27, 43, 274
Philo of Byblos 13
Phobos 204–5, 230
phoca caspica 104
Phoebe 204
Pholus 206
photosynthesis 169
Pietremont 14
Pilgrim, G E 56
Pima Indian legend 257, 328
pine 86
pine cones 310
pinus sylvestris 84
pisolites 296
Pisonia umbellifera 90
planetary orbits 196
planets 181, 208, 219
plankton 43
plant cover 60
plant remains 59
plants 85, 88
plate tectonics 191, 265, 291
Plato 4, 12, 13, 173, 191, 217, 225
platyarthus 97
Pleiades 315
Pleistocene Epoch 11, 17, 25–7, 31, 36–7, 43, 82, 84, 90, 101, 103, 120, 135, 171, 183, 270, 274, 285, 295, 309, 310
Pleistocene, late 28, 34, 42–3, 56, 62, 169, 170, 189, 258
Pleistocene mammals 84, 311
Pleistocene plants 84
Pliny 152, 211
Pliocene 85–6, 98, 101, 103, 108, 121, 136, 309
Pluto 196, 208, 210, 215
podocarpus 90
Point Barrow 284–6
polar axis 15
polar ice-cap 241, 314
polar shift 190–1
polar vegetation 85
polar wandering 38, 192
polarity reversals 183–4, 189, 204, 269
Pole Star 15
poles 302
polished rock surfaces 11, 308
polishing 315
Pollack 314
pollen 172
pollen sequences 171
pollution 256, 258, 314, 327
Polygonum 84
Polynesians 13, 315, 329
Pompeii 258
poplar 309
Porcellio scaber 97
Portugal 87, 299
Poynting-Robertson effect 200
Praeger, Dr Lloyd 87
Precession of the celestial North Pole 15, 177, 181, 194, 215
precipitation (see also rain) 241, 313
Prestwich, J 106
Principles of uniformity 17
Proctor, Richard 15
Psalms 212
pteropods 299
Ptolemy 244
Puerto Rico 282
pumice 271
Pumpelly, Raphael 104
Purus River 257
Putnam 178
pygmy elephant 107
Pyrenees 85
Pythagorean philosophers 3

Quaternary Era 54, 268, 285, 307
Quebec 288
Queensland 170, 295
Quetta 263
Quetzalcoatl 227
Quileute 186

radiocarbon dating 169, 172
radium 297
Radley, Oxfordshire 296
Ragnarok 154, 275
Rahab 212
Rainey, Dr 57
rain, rains 212, 255, 303, 309
Ramsay, Andrew, 24
Rancho La Brea 59, 130–1
Ray, John 6
Ready Bullion Creek 171
Réaumur, René de 6
red clays 297–9
red deer 86, 100
red milk 212, 298
Red Sea 99
red tides 299
Regulus ignicapillus 100
reindeer 125
relics 338
relict species 56
Renland 248
Rensselaer, Van 123
reptiles 100
Revelation, Book of 153, 212, 290, 294
reversed polarity 182
re-peopling 339
Rhax 99
rhea 103, 116
rhinoceros 57, 109, 124, 295
rhinoceros merckii 113
Rhone Glacier 315
Rift valleys 265
Riphaean Mountains 242, 249
rivers 254
Roche Limit, Roche Zone 229–230, 250, 254
roches moutonées 56
Roche's Law 209
rock fissures 173, 307

rock flutings 56
rock strata 315
Rockall 96
Rockenbach, Adam, 211
Rocky Mountains 28, 43, 183, 187
Rose, L E and Vaughan, R C 230
Rosenmuller, J C 119
rotation (see Earth's rotation)
rotational speeds 178, 204, 263
Rudzki, M P 307
Runcorn 186, 191
Ruprecht, Von 311
Ruscelli, G 244
Russia 46, 104, 274, 312, 338

Sac and Fox Indians 303
Sagan, Prof Carl 184, 186
Sahara 28, 45, 101
Sakurajima volcano 258, 260
Salishan Indians 211
Samoa 155, 159, 257
San Andreas 334
San Andreas fault 265–7, 268
San Francisco 263
Sanchoniathon 13
sandstone 178
sand-charged winds 276
Sangamon River 94
Sannikov 310
Santa Barbara, CA 335
Santa Cruz, CA 171
Saporta, Count 86
Sarawak 102
Sarcophilus 102
Sardinia 96
Sarku 332
Sarton, Prof George 217
Satan 152–3, 201, 212, 222, 275, 289, 290
satellites 208
Saturn 176, 200–1, 203–4, 215
Sauramo, M 307
Savage, Henry 281–2
Savage-Landor, H 270
Savoy 84
Scandinavia 35, 84–5, 244, 287
Scarborough Heights 91
Scharff, Prof 33–4, 84–6, 95, 249
Scheidegger, Dr Adrian 187
scheucheria palustris 86
Schimper, Karl 23
Schmidt, Prof 312
scincidae 100
Scotland 40, 97, 214, 305, 307
Scott-Elliott, Prof 116
scour 53, 308
sea levels 38, 95, 302, 340
Sea of crystal 295
seals 57
Sears, D W 206
seasons 194
seaweeds 87
sea-bed scour 33
sea-floor 297
sea-urchins 96
sedimentation, sedimentation rates 7, 299, 301
seismic activity 157, 252, 263
Selungs 157
Senegal 299
Septuagint 3
Sequoia 309
Serpentine 179
setomorpha discipunctella 96
Settle 306
seven suns 357–8
sharks 107
sheep 101
shells 96, 172, 312
Shetland islands 40, 96, 244, 257
Shiveluch, Mt 274
shock waves 290
shrew 101
shrimp 99
Siberia 8, 39, 60, 85, 94, 104, 170, 172, 183, 191, 255, 285, 292, 295–6, 309, 311, 312, 314
Sicily 105, 119
siderites 201
Sikhote-Alin range 26
Silesia 84
Simroth, Prof H 95
Sinai 99
Sing-Pohs 328
Slav traditions 254
Slovenia 113
slugs 95
smell 257
Smith, S P 34, 315
Smith, William 8, 66
snowfall 192
soils 64
solar radiation 190
solar system 176, 180, 195, 198, 200, 204, 206, 209, 215, 220
solar wind 181
Solutréan culture 333
Somerset Island 310
Sons of Muspelheim (see Muspelheim)
sooty-opossum 102
South Africa 89, 170, 338, 340
South America 89, 96, 102, 116, 179, 183
South Atlantic 89
South Carolina 297
South China Sea 43
South Georgia 89
South Trinidad 89
Southall, Dr James 123, 334
Southern hemisphere 34, 101
space 181
Spain 99, 102
spartina stricta 86
speed of rotation (see Earth's rotational speed)
Spencer, J W 96
Spherules 297
Spilhaus, A 268
spiny anteater 102
spiranthes 87
Spitzbergen 34, 40, 60–1, 98, 191, 309, 315
sponge 97
Spratt, Admiral 107
Sprottau 84
Sri Lanka 34, 157
St Helens, Mt 258–9, 271, 275, 307
St John the Divine, Book of 330
St Vincent 273
Stamp, L Dudley 44
stars 209
steam 45, 272, 273, 327
stegodon 133
stegomaston 133
Steno 4
stick-insects 99
Stone Age 338
stone ruins 334
stone utensils 335
storms 241, 250
Stoss, Friedrich 5
Stothers 218
Strabo 13, 152, 155
Straits of Gibraltar 99, 227
striae, striated rocks 8, 9, 46, 56, 254
striation 9, 11, 270, 272, 315
stylohipparion 133
Styria 4
submarine canyons 35
submergence 34, 101
subsidence 31, 95
succinea groenlandica 97
Suess, Prof Eduard 101, 183
suffocation 280
Sumatra 265, 270
Sumerian astronomers 215, 217
Sumerian mythology 217
Sun 179, 186, 196, 200–1, 211, 215, 257, 293, 298
Sunda Strait 270
Sunken landmasses 101
sun's magnetic field 184
Superior, Lake 93
supernovae 209, 210
Surt 212, 275, 289
survivor legends, survivors 121, 328–9
Sweden 182
Switzerland 27, 295, 306, 338
sycamore 309
Syria 99, 155

Table Mountain 132
Tablet of Destiny 222, 225
tachyglossus 102
tachylite 31
Tahiti 155
Tahoe legend 329
Taimyr Peninsula 172
Taira 307
Talmud 186, 201, 302, 315
Tambora, Mt 258
Tanupolama 118
Tanzania 315, 332
Tapanui, NZ 287
tapirs 57, 102
tar-seeps (see Asphalt)
Taserqat 248
Tasmania, T.'devil', T.'wolf' 102
Tatars 294
Tatera 133
Tatian 153
Tawhaki 303
Ta-vi 212, 291
Ta-wats 212, 291
Tea Tree Cave 295

tectonic disturbances 262
temperatures 24, 186, 269
Ten Stems 331
Tepanecas 303
Termier, Pierre 87, 102
terrestrial axis (see Earth's axis)
Texas 203
Thailand 27
Theiring, Dr von 87
Theophilus of Antioch 4
Theopompus 13
thermal energy 184–6, 267–8
thunder 256
Thysanodactylus bilineatus 90
Tiahuanacu 334
Tiamat 214, 219, 220, 222–3, 225–6, 229, 262, 289, 293–4
Tibet, Tibetan plateau 16, 26, 37, 44
tidal wave 263, 271
Tien Shan 26
tiger 125
till, glacial 91, 276
timber debris 171
Tistrya 173, 250, 252–3, 289, 303
Titan 208
Titania 204
Titicaca, Lake 133
Tlandrokpah 330
toads 96
Tokyo 263
Toll, Baron von 310
Tolson, R H 230
Toltecs 293
Tonga 90, 315
tools 334–5
topography 263, 327
Torah 224
tornadoes 276
Torrell, Otto 24
Torres Strait 103
Toulmin, G 7
Toxodon 116–7
traditions 201, 293, 328, 333
Transatlantic land route 87, 95
tree stumps 277
trees 61, 85–6, 91
Triads, Welsh 12
Trinidad 203
Tristan da Cunha 89
Tritonis, Lake 101
Triton 208, 272
Troana Codex 156
Trollope, Rev Edward 86
Tsimshian tribe 242
tsunamis 265, 305
tundra 310–1
Tunisia 101
Turfan depression 269
Turnham Green (London) 295
Tver, Russia 312
Tyndall, John 58
typhlocaris 99
typhlops lumbricalis 100
typhon 152, 155, 175, 211, 294
typhoons 276
Tyrrhenia 101, 103, 105, 192, 265
Uganda 170, 265
Ulsiank 311
Umbgrove, Dr J H F 27, 31
Umbriel 204
Uniformitarian school of thought, Uniformitarianism 8, 17–9, 38, 44, 175, 184, 192, 232, 241, 254, 282, 309
United States of America (see also North America) 44, 179
Unmak Island 170
Upham 24
Ur 217
Uranus 201, 204–5, 210, 215, 217, 223
Urey, Dr Harold 185
USA (see United States)
Ussher, James 4
Utah 268
Ute Indian tradition 155, 291
utensils 334
U-shaped valleys 56, 274

vaccinea uliginosum 84
Vaughan 230
Vedic hymns (see Hindu Vedas)
vegetarianism 332
Vela supernova 209, 210
Velikovsky, Immanuel 184–5, 208, 226, 230, 281
Venetz, Ignaz 23
Venezuela 203
Vening-Meinesz, F A 31
Venus 208, 225–6, 230–1, 262
Vermont 306
vessels 334
vibernum 84
Vietnam 27
Vilyui 125, 295
Virginia 124, 297
Viverra 114
Voguls 12, 186
volcanic ash, dust, ejecta 254, 258–9, 270, 298, 314
volcanic activity, eruptions, upheavals 31, 32, 34, 255, 258, 261
volcanoes 179, 258, 270
Voluspa 275
Vossius, Isaac 3
vulcanicity, vulcanism 58, 183, 258, 267, 270, 274, 314

Wadia 26
Waechter, J 191
Wales 46, 60, 98, 257
Wallace's Line 268
Wallace, A R 34, 97
walruses 57
Wanyoro tribe 256
Warming, Prof 84
warm-temperate species
Warren, Dr 123
Washo Indians 275
water 46, 179, 212, 303–4, 334
water action 308
water pressures 305
water tables, water table fluctuations 183, 257
water-weeds 86
water-mite 97
weasel 101
Webb and Bryson 170
Weichselian ice advance 40, 43, 93–4, 169–70, 299
West Angle Bay 171
West Indies 87
West Irian 170
West, R G 83
Weymouth, England 309
whales 57, 113, 309
whirlwinds 278
Whiston, William 5, 6, 18, 65, 66, 185
White Sea 297
whole water 303
Wigley 340
Willis, Dr Bailey 26
willow 311
Wilson, R 111
Winchell, Prof Alexander 337
winds 58, 190, 254, 257, 269, 276–7, 279, 290, 301, 329, 339
Wintun legend 275
Wisconsin, USA 93, 171
Wisconsonian ice advance (see Weichselian)
wood 171
Wood Hills, 173, 310
woodlice 97, 104
Woodroffe 314
woolly rhinoceroses 191, 312
World Ages 65
world fracture complex (see fracture complexes)
Wormwood 290–1, 295
Wrangell, F R von 310–1
Wright, Dr G F 24, 130
Wright, W B 192

Yakutsk 312
Ya-hou 212
Yenisei River 105, 125, 170, 311
Yokohama 263
Yorkshire 86
Younger Dryas 16, 42–3, 64, 190, 192, 255, 314, 339, 340
Yukon 285

Zad Sparan 14
Zaglossus 102
Zend-Avesta 227, 303
Zeno brothers 4
Zeno map 243–4, 249
Zeuner, F E 86
Zeus 155, 187, 212, 328
Zodiac, zodiacal constellations 196–7, 217
Zohak 212
Zuni 157
Zuni Indian legends 272
Zurich 84

QE501
S36
1999

BOSTON PUBLIC LIBRARY
3 9999 03263 007 9

Sale of this material benefits the Library

$20.00

Astronomy/Geology

CATACLYSM!

Cataclysm! presents a breakthrough of enormous proportions—a new understanding of cosmic events in Earth's recent geological past.

Follow this multi-disciplinary, scientific study as it examines the evidence of a great global catastrophe that occurred only 11,500 years ago. Crustal shifting, the tilting of Earth's axis, mass extinctions, upthrusted mountain ranges, rising and shrinking land masses, and gigantic volcanic eruptions and earthquakes—all indicate that a fateful confrontation with a destructive cosmic visitor must have occurred. The abundant geological, biological, and climatological evidence from this dire event calls into question many geological theories and will awaken our memories to our true—and not-so-distant—past.

"In not only the scholarship of paleontology but the paleontology of scholarship, this is the sort of book which someday we will realize to be—like the record of a great extinction—the marker at the end of one era and the threshold of another. It is a monumental work, which no enlightened library of the coming paradigm shift will be without."

— Douglas Kenyon, *Atlantis Rising* magazine

"Allan and Delair do a brilliant job in revealing that researchers have barely touched the tip of the iceberg of events that shook the Earth around 9,577 B.C. . . . This book is an essential handbook to our ancient past: a brave multi-disciplinary approach that should be applauded."

— Rand Flem-Ath, coauthor, *When the Sky Fell*

D.S. Allan, a Cambridge M.A., is a science historian specializing in paleogeography, particularly in the Arctic regions. A science teacher for many years, he is a skilled cartographer and has made a special study of evidence for climatic and landform change in recent geological times. He lives in Basildon, Essex, England.

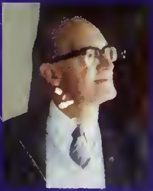

J.B. Delair, B.Sc., is an Oxford-based geologist with wide international and commercial field experience. An anthropologist, he has a special interest in animal and plant distribution and in tribal traditions. He is the Museum Curator of Geology at University of Southampton, England.

ISBN 1-879181-42-8
52000
EAN
9 781879 181427

BEAR & COMPANY
PUBLISHING
books to celebrate & heal the earth

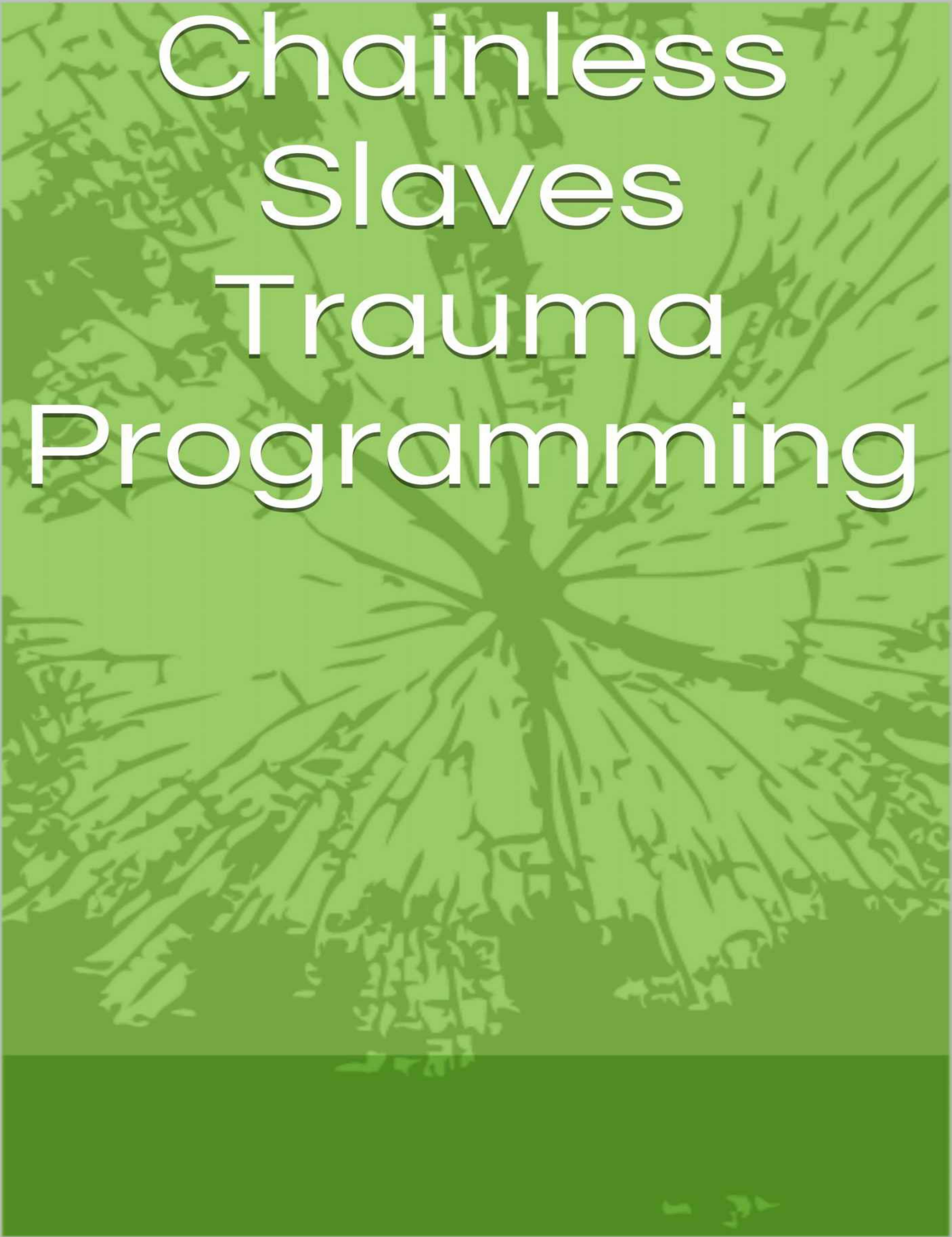

Chainless Slaves Trauma Programming

CLASSIFIED

Chainless Slaves

Trauma Programming

U.W. Ozian

2014

Trauma programming manual. This manual is an overview on how to create a dissociated subject. The manual lists tactics to use in trauma based programming.

1 Trauma-based Programming 1
2 Selection of Subjects 3
3 Hypnosis for Programming 4
4 Neuro-linguistic programming (NLP) 8
5 Hypnotic Surgery 12
6 Hypnotic Implants 13
7 Brain Frequency List 14
8 Preparing the Mind 16
9 Behaviour without Awareness 17
10 Principles of Control 18
11 Non-Coercive Techniques 20
12 Coercive Techniques in Programming 32
13 Steps of Obedience 34
14 Levels of Programming 36
15 Tools and Aids for Programming 39
16 Deprivation of Sensory Stimuli 41
17 Inside Structuring 44
18 Universal System Parts 53
19 Goals of Programming 56
20 Subliminal Perception 59
21 Human Experimentation 60
22 Scripts 61
23 Programming Music 62
24 Double Bind 63
25 Pain 64
26 Malingering 65
27 Debility 66
28 The Programming Plan 67
29 The Opening 71
30 Beginning of Programming 73
31 Infant Programming 75
32 Raising a Child Subject 77
33 Detailed Programming 78
34 Stabilizing the Programming 79

35 Split Brain Work 80
36 Applications for Drugs used in Programming 81
Section II Applications 83
37 Brainwave Frequencies 84
38 Double Meaning Word List 97
39 Programming Codes 100
40 Tortures Used in Programming 108
41 Internal Structures and Symbols 113
42 Electric Shock Torture (ECT) 118
43 Internal Base Systems 120
44 Games 125
45 Trauma Bonding 128
46 Inside Parts 130
47 Internal Programs 141
Glossary 161

1 Trauma-based Programming

Trauma-based Programming can be defined as systematic and calculated torture that blocks the subject’s capacity for conscious processing. Trauma Programming employs suggestion, hypnosis and/or classical and operant conditioning to implant thoughts, directives, and perceptions in the unconscious mind. The behaviours are implanted in trauma-induced dissociated identities (parts/alters) that force the subject to do, feel, think, or perceive things for the purposes of the programmer. The objective is for the subject to follow directives with no conscious awareness, including execution of acts in clear violation of the subject’s moral principles, spiritual convictions, and volition.

The primary factor for the trauma-based programming is the ability to disassociate. Dissociation is used as a defence to protect a subject from overwhelming pain and trauma. It is a natural ability of the brain. Installation of Trauma programming relies on the subject’s capacity to dissociate, pain threshold, and imagination which permits the creation of new walled-off personalities to hold and hide programming. Genically predisposition dissociative children are prime candidates for programming. The subject’s ability to dissociate is a major requirement and it is readily found in subjects that come from families with multiple generations of abuse. Mental dissociation enables the handlers to create walled-off parts in the subject’s psyche, which can then be programmed and triggered.

The subject cannot be traumatized indiscriminately or they will be killed. The master programmer has to know what they are doing. There will be doctors, heart monitoring equipment, and other medical tools used in programming. Programming foundation is completed in a clinically controlled environment to ensure entire control of the subject.

The type of programming which is placed in a subject varies. The subject’s creativity and their purpose in life would contribute to the uniqueness of the programming. Each subject visualizes differently and the programmer works with the subject’s creativity. Some parts will be formed solely by the subject in order to cope with life.

Each subject exists in their own circumstances; there are often common features in how they are controlled. The common features of control in subjects are: symbols, colours, and scripts.

The foundation of trauma-based programming is fear. A deep spirit of fear cripples a subject spiritually and emotionally. Guilt and shame are two more foundations for programming. The guilt will bind the subject to the programmer, handler, and other individuals that have been selected. This will lead to a loyalty that will make the subject less willing to disclose activities, and past trauma.

Programmers cause intense trauma to individuals through the use of electroshock, torture, abuse and mind games in order to force them to dissociate from reality.

Programmed individuals are used for different purposes, the sex industry, military, occult practices, and cults to name a few. Organizations have programmed subjects that are expendable. These are individuals are used in smut films, one-time use saboteurs, breeders, soldiers, drug couriers, used in rituals, and for training and traumatizing other subjects.

Subject's who have been given a designated purpose in life will have their genealogies hidden. They will have programmed to have a cover life to insure they will not be detected. Some children live in foster homes, with adopted parents, or with caretakers and guardians. Because these children reside with non-related programmers, these categories of children are commandeered to become programmed subjects of the intelligence agencies.

Children will not question the synthetic reality they are introduced to. Children are conditioned to believe what they see, feel, taste, hear, and touch. Using these five senses the programmers can control the child's surroundings. The experiences introduced to the subject will lead to an altered reality that the programmers can build and manipulate to meet their desires.

Traumatizing an individual on a specific day; their birthday, Christmas, Halloween, for example, is more damaging as the date won't be forgotten and will occur once a year. Trauma programming on specific dates allows the programmer to inlay clocks for triggering desired actions. The fathers or step-fathers are not often the subject's handler when they are growing up. The abuse by this subject will serve as a cover for programming. If the subject's front alters discover they are D.i.D, they will initially blame their multiplicity on the first abuser they remember, which will be a family member.

To make sure that the subject's mind develops properly, the baby will be interacted with so that those areas of the brain which are important for development will develop to the maximum. Common everyday items that surround the subject will be given unique meanings. The songs the subject hears on the radio will have trigger words. The lyrics will be scripted so programmed meanings can be attached to certain words and lyrics.

Something such as watching T.V., listening to the radio, or a sermon may have trigger phrases and programming cues in them.

If possible the programming process begins in the womb. Maternal thoughts, feelings, actions, and fears all reach the subject in the womb and affect them.

The unborn child hears and reacts differently to different music played. Comforting words and calming music will calm a fetus. According to research, the start of awareness is evidenced between the 28th and 32nd week. At that point, the brain's neural circuits are just as advanced as newborns.

From the 32nd week on the child shows that they carry out REM sleep. It had been noted from the sixth month of pregnancy onward; some of what the unborn subject learns will be remembered. Programmers will make a point of having the unborn subject hear the voices of individuals who will play a role in the programming. The subject may already know the hypnotic voice of one of their programmers at birth.

In the eighth week of life, the early fetus traumas programmers carry out is to poke the fetus with a sharp object to make it dissociative in the womb. By the fourth month, the unborn subject is making facial expressions. The subject can be overwhelmed while in the womb with negative sounds, bad tastes caused by what the mother eats, and being touched in ways that they dislike.

Programming drugs that cause specific responses in vitro can also be administered. With many programming fetuses, womb splits can begin.

The foundation of fear can begin to be layered in while the subject is still unborn using the methods mentioned.

A long-term unresolved stress on the mother will also stress the unborn subject. Short term stresses don't seem to have the long term side effects that long term stress has. Short term stresses are soon forgotten by the subject.

It has been noted, the love that the mother has for the unborn child is transmitted to the subject, and forms a protective barrier the subject can become resistant to traumas and stresses. When the mother is ambivalent or cool in their emotions, the babies have more physical and emotional problems.

2 Selection of Subjects

Adult subjects are selected who have no close family or friends. Once they have been selected, they are put under Level One hypnosis. At this time a clear and definitive pattern of their usefulness is determined by psychiatrists and programmers. If the subject posses a relatively high IQ, they will be filed in a "call file.” The IQ scale used in assessing subjects is the Stanford Binet.

The higher the IQ of a given subject, the further they can be programmed. If the IQ is high enough their abilities will be studied and the needs of the organization and determine how the subject can be further used. Once this determination is made, the subject will be brought to one of numerous facilities throughout the U.S. or abroad for further and final programming.

Only psychiatrists trained in the method of sub mental behaviour programming, overwrites and overlays, will be able to find any clues leading to post Level 1 or 2 programming. A typical psychologist may discover that the subject has been hypnotized in the past, and may even discover the original personality. But they will not be able to discover the location in the brain or memory, where Levels 3, 4 and 5 programs are stored. Without an activation code an outside psychologist or psychiatrist will not uncover the programming unless by accident.

A beginning point to control people is understanding human needs, and understanding the individual to be controlled. A Programmer learns everything they can about the subject they are to control. Programmed subjects who must function as intelligence officers, who recruit, are trained in the art of listening and conversation.

In some instances of programming after a subject has completed a hostile act the subject is captured and not killed. Due to the type of programming used the subject will not divulge any information. Even if the subject is tortured, they will not be able to remember the actual killing, terrorist act, or the reason they did it.

Once the subject is programmed, they will be recalled on a yearly basis and given hypnotic reinforcement of the original programming, or new programming will be inserted to modify the original programs. If no new programming is needed, the reinforcement programming can be done on a mass scale.

3 Hypnosis for Programming

The subject's Posthypnotic Suggestibility Index is determined by a series of simple tests. Hypnoamnesia is applied to the subject. They are given a name of an object or individual the subject's speed is timed to determine how quickly they can recover from the posthypnotic suggestion "You will not be able to remember the name of "____" no matter how hard you try."

The power of hypnosis is often underrated as the power of the mind is underrated. The mind can decide to be in command of breathing, heartbeat, and blood pressure.

Programmers are highly aware of how the mind functions, and how information and memories can be trapped in the mind. The mind naturally hypnotizes itself under diverse conditions.

Hypnosis is used to steer a subject's mind in the direction that has been dictated for them. New patterns of thought, feelings and behaviour are inserted to build confidence in the goals of the Programmers'. Hypnosis is used to anchor suggestions about sleep patterns, panic programs, phobias, health/ healing programs, health problems programs, pain control/pain programs, motivation programs, a suicide program called "hypno-sleep", an insanity program, and countless other uses.

Programmers do not need to formally induct their subject into hypnosis. A proper fear foundation will place the subject in a dissociative state that would make hypnosis simple.

The mind links together a series of mental processes. These links are called K-lines. Much of what the mind does is activate various K-lines so the mind can focus its conscious thinking. Once a K-line works, the mind in order to prevent itself from making uncontrolled changes, gives priority to those K-lines.

If the mind did not set up series of K_lines it would continuously have to relearn unimportant tasks that would make it impossible accomplish things in everyday life. Every skill would have to be constantly relearned. Emotions and needs trigger the mind to search out K_lines to accomplish a task quickly.

During programming the untrained K_lines are brought up to the top of the conscious mind. The programmer now has access and control over many or all the cognitive processes, including many the subjects would not normally activate. Under hypnosis, the mind willingly allows the programmer to change K-lines without the normal unconscious conventional restraints. Using behaviour modification techniques, the programmer activates dormant K-lines (K-lines that wouldn't normally develop) and build them in the mind.

During hypnosis, the mind has made the decision to accept control statements from the programmer. The mind has abdicated its position as the one in control of what is vital.

There are several ways to modify a subject's state of consciousness; the most useful one by programmers is to use a combination of drugs and hypnosis. Drugs are used to facilitate hypnosis. Modern drugs do almost all the work for the programmer they place the individual in a changed state and distort many perceptions of the subject. The distortions induced by the drugs are used to the programmers benefit.

Hypnosis or hypnotic trance is a form of dissociation. There are a number of types of dissociation: amnesia, subject states, localized paralyses, anaesthesia's, and hallucinations. Hypnosis can reproduce all of these dissociative states.

During the hypnotic trance, the human mind is at the pinnacle of its ability to quickly learn. What may take years to learn, will be accepted by the subject's subconscious in a few sessions.

The brain operates at several different brain-wave patterns. The brainwave patterns here are listed from the most active states of our life to the most relaxing; Beta (15-40 cycles per second), Alfa (9-14 cycles per second), Theta (5-8 cycles per second), Delta (2-4 cycles per second).

Hypnosis is a very powerful means to take the mind of the subject into the different levels of consciousness and brainwave activity. The voice of the programmer is used in specialized hypnotic deepening, inductions and confusion techniques is able to artificially induce lowered brain wave frequency into the Alpha, Theta and Delta states. The programmer will use the art of timing their words, repetition, combining several mutually supporting suggestions, and of having total confidence in their words to add strength to their hypnotic commands.

There are three states of consciousness; the conscious mind, subconscious and super conscious. These levels of consciousness represent differing degrees of intensity of awareness.

The conscious mind includes such things as the sensations, perceptions, memories, feeling and fantasies inside of our current awareness. The conscious mind is limited by its analytical nature, and therefore sees all things as separate and distinct.

The things the conscious mind wants to keep hidden from awareness are repressed into the unconscious mind. This is the deeper part of the mind that is responsible for processing thousands of things at any one time and for storing everything we have experienced in life in differing degrees of importance.

The third level of consciousness Super conscious is where programmers want to work. Intuition and heightened mental clarity flow from super conscious. Programmers also think this area of consciousness is where spiritual awareness is.

There are three levels of trance states used in programming: The first level is that of a light trance. In this level, the subject does not feel as if in trance state. They are fully aware of the noises in their environment. Although regressions and progressions can be done at this level, the information obtained is not very clear. Ninety five percent of individuals can achieve a light trance.

The second is a medium trance. In this state the subject is more relaxed. In a medium trance, the subject may be dimly aware of external noises but does not get distracted by it. About 70 percent of individuals can achieve a medium trance.

The third level is called a deep trance or somnambulistic trance. This is a very deep level of trance and the subject may not remember what was done in the trance state unless specifically triggered while out of the trance. Only about 5 percent of individuals can go into a deep trance.

Hypnosis appears to affect several areas of the brain--the brain stem is modified into the hypnotic state, and the midbrain centres are inhibited so that other areas--the motor, sensory and memory areas can be manipulated. Hypnosis can be used on numerous parts of the mind; intellectual, social-spiritual, and the primitive.

The Programmer is attempting to produce suggestions that the unconscious mind will accept. If the subconscious mind accepts the programmer's suggestions then the suggestion becomes reality to the subject, just as if the individual had experienced it as reality over a period of time.

The programmer must engage the subject's imagination. They should also build rapport with the subject. The good handler/programmer is not only using fear but the other emotions the subject's want with human bonding. These emotions encompass trust, feelings of acceptance, and approval. This is important as the subject must be willing to actively participate in the programming.

Muscular rigidity and deep breathing are one way to increase suggestibility within the subject. The programmer will also use other hypnotic methods, such as using their own body language to suggest a thought or feeling, and the voice roll. With this method words are delivered at the rate of 45 to 60 beats a minute.

To empower the suggestions, the programmer uses the subject's five senses. The subject visualizes an image using their five senses. The programmer will walk them through the image, allowing the subject to fill in the spaces with their own imagination.

The programmer will decide which area he wants to work with within the system. If the programmer is working with emotions he will focus solely on that theme during the session.

A hypnotic suggestion given to normal subjects lasts about a week, so reinforcement is necessary. The programming suggestions are layered in using, torture, and psychotropic medication. The suggestions are protected dissociated parts. These scripts which are layered in are almost impossible for the subject to be aware of to challenge them.

If a memory is laid in at a particular trance level, the subject may be able to avoid an abreaction later on by going above or below the memory's trance level. A deep level where the subject can't move a body part due to hypnotic suggestion is called the cataleptic state.

The mind has the ability to create amnesia barriers. Hypnosis is an important mechanism to move the mind to different neuropsychological states and to get the mind to different levels of the subconscious mind. Hypnosis can also play a role in working around amnesia, since both are types of dissociation.

Hyperventilation assists a subject into a hypnotic trance. Torture, depersonalization, fear and acute anxiety stimulate the body to hyperventilate.

Hypnotic cues are given to cause the body to go into various dissociative states. For example a post-hypnotic suggestion that causes hyperventilation and the accompanying trance state. This will allow the subject to recall the programming they received in this state.

Hypnotic cues that are tied to everyday objects enhance the programming. These triggers will consistently up hold programming throughout the subject's day to day tasks. The daily triggers will also prevent break downs in programming.

Some common objects in a subject's life that can be hypnotically given a programming trigger are: music, tones, colours, the sight of a book or Bible, pyramid on the back of a dollar bill, pictures of God, silk scarf's, jewellery, lights, sounds, TV programs, and countless other things.

The programmer may advise the subject they smoke and inform them every time they inhale smoke they will endure fire torture if they break their silence programming. When the subject exhales the smoke they are programmed to forget any doubts they have experienced concerning challenges to their programming. The programmed alters smoke because they are addicted, and re-enforce the programming of silence. The smoking in turn reinforces the power of the programmer/handler.

The brain produces a substance called enkephalin which acts just like morphine and reduces pain. The brain can be hypnotically trained to release enkephalin so that the brain doesn't perceive pain. This is important for self harm programming, suicide programming, Beta programming, and Delta programming.

Programmers also use hypnotism with electric shock. Regular electrical stimulation in many parts of the brain including the lower part of the reticular formation can change the state of consciousness from alert to sleepy.

There are certain safeguards in the use hypnotism. First, there is no danger of the subject being able to identify what has occurred. More important would be the conviction of innocence which the subjects have. There would not be actions of guilt and if ever accused of wrong doing, held secrets, the subject would respond honestly. This conviction of innocence on the part the programmed individual is the greatest safeguard under questioning by outside individuals.

4 Neuro-linguistic programming (NLP)

NLP is the building of associations with an anchor. Neuro linguistic programming is the evolution of hypnotherapy. Classical hypnosis depends on techniques for putting patients into suggestive trances; NLP is a technique of layering subtle meaning into spoken or written language so the programmer can implant suggestions into a subject's unconscious mind without them knowing.

The programmer is attentive to the subject they're working with by studying subtle cues such as eye movement, skin flush, pupil dilation and nervous tics.

Through these observations a programmer will determine: a) What side of the brain a subject is predominantly using; b) What sense (sight, smell, etc.) is most predominant in their brain; c) How their brain stores and utilizes information d) When they're lying or making information up.

The programmer will gradually and subtly mimic the subject. The programmer will take on the subject's body language, their speech mannerisms, and will begin speaking with language patterns designed to target the client's primary sense.

For example, a subject predominantly focused on sight will be spoken to in language using visual metaphors—"Do you see what I'm saying?" "Look at it this way"—while a subject for which hearing is the dominant sense will be spoken to in auditory language—"Hear me out," "I'm listening to you closely."

By mirroring body language and linguistic patterns, the programmer is will achieve one very specific response: rapport. A programmer essentially fakes the social cues that cause a subject to drop their guard and enter a state of openness and suggestibility.

Once rapport is achieved, the programmer will begin to delicately lead the interaction. Having mirrored the subject, they can now make subtle changes to actually influence the subject's behaviour combined with subtle language patterns, leading questions other techniques. A programmer at this point can guide a subject wherever they like, as long as the subject isn't aware of what's happening and thinks everything is arising organically, or has given consent. This means it can be fairly difficult to use NLP to get subjects to act out-of-character, but it can be used for engineering responses within a subject's system's range of behaviour.

From this point the programmer will do two things; elicit and anchor. Eliciting happens when a Programmer uses leading and language to engineer an emotional state. Once a state has been elicited, the Programmer can then anchor it with a physical cue—for instance, touching the shoulder.

Anchors

A stimulus is linked and triggers a physiological or emotional state in the subject. The skilled programmer will anchor an emotion with several sensory cues-- auditory, visual, and touch. The subject visualizes an emotional state from the past, or is placed in an emotional state by the programmer. When the state is reaching its peak, the anchor is placed in. The anchor needs to be unique, distinctive, and easy to repeat in the exact form that it was done. The law of strength applies to the strength of the trauma and the strength of the anchor. A stronger smell may be easier to associate with a strong trauma, which makes the anchoring stronger.

Much of trauma-based programming is setting anchors into parts. When the anchors are triggered, and the part is pulled up, then the anchors have worked. Two separate states can be fired at once.

These types of post hypnotic commands are the ones commonly used by hypno-programmers to change behaviour (behavioural modification).

Triggering Techniques: Real-Time Subconscious Implant Delivery: the Programmers are transmitting the posthypnotic command script to the subject and observing the subject's response. This technique is required for subliminal programming. All programming standard posthypnotic command scripts can be delivered in real-time. This form of delivery can cause the perception of a voice heard in the mind of a subject to give them information or orders depending on the purpose of the handler/programmer.

Prescheduled Subconscious Implant Delivery: The internal central switching computer can transmit a script to a specified part/alter at a pre-specified time. The transmitted script's transmission range can be limited to a single building, a city, or a large geographical area. By having prescheduled scripts, the subject has seemingly randomly occurring thoughts and feelings that can't be associated with a commonly recurring situation like event-triggered scripts precipitate.

Event-Triggered Implant Delivery: Posthypnotic subconscious implants that are triggered with an event, thought, or code word. These are strongly experienced by the subject and are powerful tools for reinforcing a predetermined desired behaviour and inflicting delusions.

The Handler can reinforce a predetermined desired behaviour by associating a subconscious implant (negative or positive reinforcement) with an event. An example is when the programmer desires to isolate the subject from a specific individual, place or thing; the subject will be implanted with a feeling of increased anxiety, hostility, tension, and discomfort. When the subject leaves the individual, place, or thing, another posthypnotic implant is triggered rewarding the subject's behaviour with a feeling of relief from the anxiety, hostility, tension, discomfort, and calm is restored in the subject's mind.

The handler/programmer precisely tailors the type of negative and/or positive reinforcement, the degree of the reinforcement, the duration of the reinforcing effect and the conditions of the trigger. This posthypnotic event-triggered reinforcement can be decreased gradually and can remain so subtle that the subject believes the discomfort is naturally occurring. The subject will believe it is there decision uninfluenced by anyone else that the subject should avoid the individual, place or thing.

Subconscious implants can be combined with other implants like posthypnotic-triggered thoughts to enhance the subject's decision concerning a specific situation. For example the subject can be implanted with a command to be sensitive to the changes in their emotions when around a therapist. The situation will elicit a strong negative emotion. This can be reinforced with another posthypnotic suggestion to avoid every situation that cause the subject discomfort and each time the subject commits themselves to removing themselves from a situation of this kind, they will feel increasing control over their lives

Steps to Anchoring

The anchor (or anchors) should be fired in exactly the same way every time to link them to the resource experience.

The programmer chooses an anchor (or anchors) that will trigger the resourceful state.

The programmers create a situation the subject will have an emotional response to (hate, fear, love, disgust, embarrassment, etc.). They will find an anchor that is unique to the experience. Individuals have the ability to use any three of the types of anchors independently or all together. It is important to ensure the anchors are used together and at the same time. The programmers ensure it is something that happens associated with that experience and is not common to other experiences.

A memory is induced, imagined or situation where the subject can experience the state.

The programmer then attaches a trigger.

The programmer will activate the anchor or anchors when the experience is vivid and the subject is in the desired state. The most effective time for the association of the anchor is at the peak of the experience. As the intensity of the experience lessens, so does the association. If the state is maintained at the intensity for a longer period of time it is more likely the anchor will be established.

Depending on the intensity of the experience can control how fast the subject makes the associations. If the experience is extremely intense the association may be strong after only one occurrence.

The programmer will break the state by having the subject participate in another activity briefly. The anchor will be tested by repeating the action that placed the anchor. It should be noted if the original response returns.

The steps should be repeated several times, each time making the memory more vivid. Replicating the experience will achieve the anchor permanently. This is not required when the anchor is established at the high point of the experience. It is recommended the anchor be strengthened by establishing it at the high point of several experiences.

Future pace the situation where the desired state is to experienced. Trigger the anchor to check that it creates a sufficiently resourced state.

The programmer will use the trigger to elicit the emotional response.

After twenty-four hours the programmer will check the anchor to ensure permanent.

Tips

If the subject does not experience the state when future pacing and experiences another state stop applying the anchor. The subject will experience the wrong state.

There is a knowingness which makes anchoring work that is established by the unconscious mind.

If the subject is in a situation where they experience the desired state in reality by another trigger, the programmer must re-establish the anchor to that situation.

Programmers can stack anchors together.

Collapsing anchors
When states oppose one another and cause too much difficulty in a subject the anchors can be collapsed.

The programmer must identify the preferred response and the state they wish to change.

It is essential, first, to identify the response preferred to replace the unwanted response. The programmer must create an occasion where the subject experienced strongly the preferred state.

The subject is moved into the memory and it is intensified before anchoring it. The programmer then triggers the anchor to make sure that the state is powerful and the anchor is properly set.

Once the programmer is satisfied that anchor is firmly in place, the subject is taken to the state that is to be changed. As the subject re-experiences the response, it is anchored to a blank part. The programmer then triggers the anchor and breaks the state.

The subject is tested to ensure each anchor is properly set, and then triggers both anchors simultaneously. The effect is usually one of mild confusion. At this stage, the programmer holds the anchors until the confusion dissipates.

The programmer gradually lifts the anchor of the unwanted state, and a few seconds later lift the anchor for the resource state.

The programmer will test by trying to trigger the unwanted response. The subject’s dominate response should be more neutral or the resource state should dominate. This is repeated as necessary until the resource state dominates.

Visual Anchors
Visual anchors are among the most common. There are positive and negative visual anchors.

Auditory Anchors
An auditory anchor is a stimulus that is a sound or sounds neurologically linked to a state of mind.

Kinaesthetic Anchors
A kinaesthetic anchor is one that is a movement, touch or physical action that is associated with a particular state.

5 Hypnotic Surgery

Hypnotic Surgery is used with child parts in the subject. The programmer will implant in the part replacement organs such as their heart, and stomach. The programmer will replace these parts with stones, bombs, and other devices to prevent the system from being breached by unauthorized individuals.

The heart will be replaced by black stones. The programmer will advise the part their heart is not good enough. The programmer will advise the subject they have a ‘heart of stone(s)’ and cannot feel emotions.

The stomach will be replaced with a bomb. The programmer will explain to the part the purpose of the bomb. The bomb may be placed in one part as ‘don’t talk’ programming. If the part were to talk they believe it would trigger the bomb and they would blow up. Another use for the bomb is for starvation programming. If the part eats, or eats above the allotted amount it will trigger the bomb.

Hypnotic surgery will also be used to remove body parts such as limbs, eyes, and ears. The programmer will advise the subject they can’t see specific things, hear precise words, or pick up designated items due to not having hands.

Using hypnosis programmers heal the subject’s wounds after they have completed the surgery. Most programmers will cut the subject at the sight of the surgery to insure there is a scar.

For example, alters in a subject’s system may be advised they have no faces and no hearts. They are programmed not to see their faces and not to hear any heart beat. If a pulse monitoring device is hooked up to the alter, the alter will go into a trance.

The programmers can put in distortion programming during this time. Visual and audio distortion programs are used to protect the system from outside intrusion.

6 Hypnotic Implants

Delusions: Delusions are used to discredit the witness and also provide an additional source for fear, intimidation and confusion. Delusions can be but are not limited to the Subject developing conspiracy theories of fellow employees and friends, beliefs that Angels or Demons are communicating or visiting them, tingling from microwave guns or implants, beliefs in supernatural events, etc.

Audio Hallucinations: Subjects often report hearing walls clicking, footsteps in the house, the sound of someone trying to open the door, drilling at the door, etc. These audio hallucinations are also used to discredit the witness and also provide an additional source for paranoia, fear, and negative reinforcement.

Voices in the Subject's Mind: The voices in the subject's mind are achieved in a variety of ways using real-time and prescheduled posthypnotic suggestion deliveries, and Noun Substitution implant techniques.

Visual Hallucinations: Visual hallucinations are usually implanted in the waking moments when a subject is coming out of or is in a somnambulatory state (light sleep) preferably in a darkened room. The hallucinations are fleeting, usually lasting less than one minute and are not durable. Typical hallucinations reported by subjects are Angels, large spiders, and movement of various shadowy objects across the ceiling, bright spot of light ahead of the subject, etc

Noun Substitution Posthypnotic Implant: The subject can have a posthypnotic suggestion implanted that changes the form of pronouns in the subject's internal thinking. The result is the subject perceives that someone is telling him/her to do something with nearly every thought. An example is; the subject thinks, "I should go to church today". With the noun substitution posthypnotic suggestion the subject experiences the following internal thought, "You should go to church today!"

Notice that by implanting the posthypnotic command into the subject's subconscious mind to think the pronoun "You" instead of "I" the subject will perceive that they are being directed by a voice even though the majority of the internal thought content is their own naturally occurring thought. This subconscious implant can be used in combination with other implants to increase the subject's perception of threat, fear, and therefore paranoia. It can be used with other posthypnotic suggestion implants that will give the subject the perception of either a "good" or "evil" voice or spirit is directing him/her.

This implant is powerful because it gives the subject the perception that the spirit, angel, God or Holy Spirit knows and directs the subject's every thought. It provides a convincing proof that "God knows every thought of their children". Subjects that don't have a superstitious frame of reference and seek professional help are usually misdiagnosed as schizophrenic.

Tinnitus (Ear Ringing): Tinnitus is implanted to distract the subject should an outside individual attempt to speak with the subject about an ‘off limits’ topic. This is produced by a posthypnotic suggestion.

Complete Quiet Silence: Used as a positive reinforcement for two reasons; the subject has the tinnitus removed to indicate that the subject has “Peace Restored", and the subject is listening to and following the correct programming script.

7 Brain Frequency List

Every part of a subject’s body vibrates to its own rhythm. The brain has a unique set of brain waves. There are five distinct brain wave frequencies; Beta, Alpha, Theta, Delta and Gamma.

The brain works off of waves that are less than 16 hz. the human ear can’t hear anything below 30 hz. If one ear hears 100 hz. and the other ear hears 104 hz. the brain will hear a ghost beat of 4 hz. 4 hz is the theta/delta frequency on the border of sleep and waking that can begin an astral trip. Focus 10 is just the starting point for astral travel. Focus 12, 15, 21 and beyond are the real trip. When a subject astral projects it changes the BEG pattern to a pattern called Alphoid. To stimulate a subject to astral project they are induced into sleep, and as they lose consciousness, the mind is jolted awake with high-frequency beta signals. The body remains asleep, and the mind is free from the body to wander. A hemispheric synchronizer can be used is used to get both brain hemispheres working together.

Other Theta Controls ELF (Extremely Low Frequency Waves) can be used to modify subject’s thoughts, implant thoughts, and modify their emotions, such as make a subject angry.

Each frequency, measured in cycles per second (Hz), has its own set of characteristics representing a specific level of brain activity and hence a unique state of consciousness.

Delta (0.1 – 3 Hz): Extremely deep relaxation/sleep with complete subconscious operation. The Delta frequency is the slowest state. It is where awareness is completely detached. Delta is the realm of the unconscious mind. It is the gateway to the Universal mind and the collective unconscious whereby information received is otherwise unavailable at the conscious level. Delta is associated with deep healing and regeneration, the physical body begins to recuperate and recover.

Epsilon (below 0.5 Hz) Delta brain states actually continue deeper into these. These extremely slow Epsilon brainwave patterns might have extremely fast Hyper Gamma/Lambda brainwave patterns modulating within them. Epsilon is associated with states of suspended animation where no heart beat, respiration or pulse is noticeable.

Theta (4 – 7 Hz) Theta is the realm of the subconscious mind. Deep relaxation where the conscious mind is, for the most part, 'switched off', and the subconscious mind is left to flourish. Theta brain waves are present during very deep relaxation and light sleep, including the REM (dreaming) state. It is also known as the twilight state as it is normally only momentarily experienced as you drift off to sleep (from Alpha) and arise from deep sleep (from Delta). Vivid visualizations, great inspiration, profound creativity, exceptional insight as well as the subject’s mind's most deep-seated programs are.

This is where most hypnotists aim to take their subject down to. Theta is where ideas, visualizations and suggestion are more likely to enter the subconscious mind and consciously subject’s become less aware of what is going on around them.

Alpha (8 – 15 Hz) A mild daydream or light relaxation state. This is the most easily reached brain wave state, and also includes both the youngest and most easily accessed alters in the entire system. The relaxed detached awareness achieved during light meditation is characteristic of Alpha and is optimal for programming the mind for successful actions. Alpha heightens the subject's imagination, visualization, memory, learning and concentration. It lies at the base of your conscious awareness and is the gateway to your subconscious mind. Alpha is typified by partial conscious awareness and partial subconscious predominance at the same time. It is useful to absorb information when in Alpha. Alpha promotes more of the left side of the brain to be used for processing.

Beta (16 – 31 Hz) Beta brain waves are associated with normal waking consciousness and a heightened state of alertness, logic and critical reasoning. As a subject participates in daily activities they are at Beta. In such a state we have full conscious awareness and attention of everything around us and usually only one side of brain is operating. Although important for effectively functioning in everyday life, higher Beta levels translate into stress, anxiety and restlessness. Higher cycles of Beta Frequency usually equate to stress, anxiety and 'over thinking' as the conscious mind becomes misguided or reacts negatively to a given situation. High brainwave beta frequency also equates to hypertension, increased heart rate, increased blood flow, cortisone production and glucose consumption.

Beta is often associated with aggressive impulses. Beta state will often hold cult protectors, internal warriors, and military systems. They may be colour coded blue.

Gamma (32 – 100 Hz) Gamma waves are the fastest of the brain wave frequencies and signify the highest state of focus possible – they're associated with peak concentration and are considered to be the brain's optimal frequency for cognitive functioning. The average individual never reaches this high of frequency range. In order to reach Gamma an experienced programmer must access it,

These higher frequency sound waves are associated with bursts of insights, higher mental activity, and information processing including perception, problem solving, fear, and consciousness. Gamma brain wave states assist in the reshaping of brain structures that persist beyond actual periods of programming. Gamma wave activity is thought to be associated with a phenomenon known as "neuroplasticity," or the ability of the brain to form new connections and build on pre-existent structures.

A side effect of producing gamma waves in the brain is high gamma activity works as a natural anti-depressant, boosting a subject's mood, empathy, and compassion.
When compared gamma waves to theta waves and the effects and states linked to both one end of the scale (gamma) generates intense focus and energy, while the other end of the scale (theta) is much more passive in nature.

Lambda (200 Hz). Associated with wholeness and integration also associated with mystical experiences and out of body experiences. Self awareness, higher levels of insight and information. They are carried on the very slow moving Epsilon waves

The Alpha-Theta border, from 7 to 8Hz, is the optimal range for visualization, mind programming and using the creative power of your mind. It is the mental state at which you consciously create your reality. At this frequency of mind control you are conscious of your surroundings but your body is in deep relaxation. To learn how to access this level of mind at will you must first learn

Sigma (12–14 Hz) in a burst of oscillatory brain activity that occurs during stage 2 sleep. Sigma is also called sleep spindles. It consists of waves that occur for at least 0.5 seconds. Represent periods where the brain is inhibiting processing to keep the sleeper in a tranquil state. Sleep spindle activity has furthermore been found to be associated with the integration of new information into existing knowledge as well as directed remembering and forgetting

Theta-Delta-(3.5 Hz) Long term memory access.

8 Preparing the Mind

The programmer places the subject in an acute state of anxiety and guilt. The tension reduces the power of the judgement part of the mind. One of the tortures for subjects is to keep them from going to the bathroom and relieving themselves. This is part of the hypnotic programming package. The anxiety that this creates increases the power of the programming in the brain, because the anxiety causes slight malfunctions with the brain's judgment abilities. Mental and physical fatigue is also sought in the subject. For instance, water deprivation is common. Offensive language also helps drive the mind into tension and encourages it into an alpha state.

Nine areas are monitored in the subject throughout programming. Once monitored it is determine which needs are priority needs for the subject. Programmers will use what they call "the depth approach" to subconsciously gratify those needs in a way that gains control over the subject.

In programming, these 9 areas are identified as weaknesses, because programmers and handlers will attempt to manipulate these desires for their own gain. They set up short-range and long term goals and plans on how to control subject.
These nine areas are:

1. Emotional security

2. Recognition of efforts or reassurance of worth

3. Creative outlets

4. A sense of personal power

5. A belonging somewhere

6. Immortality

7. Ego-gratification

8. Love in all its forms

9. New experiences

9 Behaviour without Awareness

There are four principal categories of behaviour without awareness. The subject may be unaware of:

1. Their behaviour itself. They may be whispering without realizing, or they may be moving into a trap without knowing that the trap is there. A special case here is abnormal behaviour in which the subject fails to realize what they are doing because their normal awareness and self-control have been interrupted by disturbing agents such as fear, anxiety, illness, drugs, or hypnotic suggestion.

2. The relation of their behaviour to some stimulus. The subject may be unaware of the fact that the Programmer is influencing them by saying "Right" after certain statements and by remaining noncommittal after others. The process called "operant conditioning" falls into this category.

3. The stimulus itself, because of its slight impact. The subject may be unaware of a very faint sound or a quick flash of light, unaware in the sense that they lack the usual visual sensations. Subliminal perception falls into this category.

4. The precise nature of the stimulus, as well as its relation to their behaviour, because of inattention. The subject may be aware of vague sensations, but they are not aware either of the source or of the significant content of the stimulation, although their behaviour may change in accordance with changes in the stimulus. This category includes a great deal of perceptual activity affecting ordinary social behaviour. A subject is often unaware of the specific cues and clues to which they are reacting not because the stimulus is insufficient to reach the consciousness but because the effort to be fully aware of all the cues all the time would create too great a cognitive strain. In persuading a subject to do something they normally or rationally would resist doing a Programmer can make use of any one of these categories of psychological processes. Usually the purpose is to produce behaviour of which the subject is unaware.

10 Principles of Control

There are progressive steps in exercising control over a subject and changing their behaviour and personality. Subject's being programmed must be unaware they're being programmed. A subject is hard to manipulate if they know they are being manipulated.

If subject resistance is encountered during screening or during the opening phases of programming, non-coercive methods of sapping opposition and strengthening the tendency to yield and to cooperate may be applied. Although these methods appear here in an approximate order of increasing pressure, it should not be inferred that each is to be tried until the key fits the lock. On the contrary, a large part of the skill and the success of the experienced programmer lies in their ability to match method to subject. The use of unsuccessful techniques will of itself increase the subject's will and ability to resist.

This principle also affects the decision to employ coercive techniques and governs the choice of these methods. If in the opinion of the programmer a totally resistant subject has the skill and determination to withstand any non-coercive method or combination of methods, it is better to avoid them completely.

Threats vary on a long sliding scale from minor to extreme. Programmers can threaten to tell other individuals or put a gun in a subject's mouth and threaten to pull the trigger. At the extreme, the goal is to create terror and belief that pain or something highly undesirable is about to happen.

The threat of torture usually weakens or destroys resistance more effectively than torture itself. The threat to inflict pain, for example, can trigger fears more damaging than the immediate sensation of pain. Threats work on fear and anticipated pain, where the thought and expectation of discomfort leads the subject to imagine and virtually feel the pain, physical or emotional, that would be experienced. Threats may be unspoken, for example where the programmer plays with a weapon or where instruments of torture are visible.

Threats delivered coldly are more effective than those shouted in rage. It is especially important that a threat not be uttered in response to the subject's own expressions of hostility. These, if ignored, can induce feelings of guilt, whereas retorts in kind relieve the subject's feelings.

If the subject is immune to threats, then individuals they hold dear may be threatened, such as family and friends.

The same principle holds for other fears: sustained long enough, a strong fear of anything vague or unknown induces regression, whereas the materialization of the fear, the infliction of some form of punishment, is likely to come as a relief.

The threat of death has often been found to be useless. It has the highest position in law as a defence mechanism, but in many programming situations it is a highly ineffective threat. The principal reason is that the ultimate threat is likely to induce sheer hopelessness if the subject does not believe that it is a trick.

The effectiveness of most of the non-coercive techniques depends upon their unsettling effect. The programming situation is in itself disturbing to most subject's encountering it for the first time. The aim is to enhance this effect, to disrupt radically the familiar emotional and psychological associations of the subject. When this aim is achieved, resistance is seriously impaired. There is an interval -- which may be extremely brief -- of suspended animation, a kind of psychological shock or paralysis. It is caused by a traumatic or sub-traumatic experience which explodes, as it were, the world that is familiar to the subject as well as their image of themselves within that world. Experienced programmers recognize this effect when it appears and know that at this moment the subject is far more open to suggestion, far likelier to comply, than they were just before they experienced the shock.

Another effect frequently produced by non-coercive (as well as coercive) methods is the evocation within the subject of feelings of guilt. Most subjects have areas of guilt in their emotional topographies, and a programmer can often chart these areas just by noting refusals to follow certain lines of questioning. Whether the sense of guilt has real or imaginary causes does not affect the result of intensification of guilt feelings. Making a subject feel more and more guilty normally increases both their anxiety and their urge to cooperate as a means of escape.

The subject's peers, family, closest friends, and spouse are all involved in the programming. These individuals will reinforce for the subject the programmer/handler/family is good and has the subject's best interests at heart, no matter how abusive the behaviour. The individuals who surround the subject also reject and accept the subject based on their behaviour. This reinforces to be accepted the subject must behave and follow the structure of the programming. Those involved also want to assist the subject in growing, and understanding the goals set for them.

The subject is surrounded by individuals who all dress alike, act alike, and use the same terminology. The subject will question themselves instead of the people who surround them because the subject is the one who is different. The uniformity and consistency of the individuals that surround the subject will help insure compliance. No ideas are allowed for the subject to confront their programmer. This is to create behaviour that ensures the group will maintain secrecy and work together.

Programmers also use these techniques, including bonding with the subject, convincing the subject that they care for them, no one else could possibly understand them (the subject) the way the programmer does.

11 Non-Coercive Techniques

The following are typical of behaviour control techniques used in programming.

Absolute Authority: That cannot be challenged.
Breaking sessions: that pressures a subject until they mentally break.
Changing values: to change what is right and wrong.
Confession: to leave behind the undesirable past.
Dietary control: that weakens the subject's thinking.
Entrancement: open the mind and limit rational reflection.
Engagement: that draws a subject in.
Exhaustion: so they are less able to resist persuasion.
Guilt: about the past that they can leave behind.
Higher purpose: associate desirability with a higher purpose.
Identity destruction: to make space for the new identity.
Illogic: Emotion and fallacy that persuades.
Information control: that blocks out dissuading thoughts.
Incremental conversion: shifting the subject one step at a time.
Isolation: separating subject from dissuasive messages.
Love Bomb: to hook in the lonely and vulnerable.
Persistence: never giving up, wearing subject down.
Progressive Demands: Add increasingly stronger requests.
Radicalization: Creating more extremists.
Special language: that offers the allure of power and new meaning.
Thought-stopping: block out distracting or dissuading thoughts.

Conversion as revelation Conversion may take place suddenly as a revelation, for example when a higher purpose is realized and all values that are associated with that are adopted. This is more likely to happen with subjects who have a strong need for certainty and who therefore tend to adopt extreme views.

The first stage in changing behaviour is making the subject aware of the control. A child subject is made aware of the physical and psychological control of the programmer/handler and will swiftly recognize they are over powered. A proficient subject will recognize the overwhelming power of the individuals around them and the corresponding responses when the expectations aren't followed. The subject will recognize the definite limits that have been placed upon the ways they can respond.

Realization of their complete dependence upon the controlling system is a major factor in the controlling the subject's behaviour. The subject is required to recognize and accept the fact that food, tobacco, praise, and the only social contact that they receive will come from the programmer who exercises control over him.

Control over time: The programmer must control the subjects time. A strict schedule must be complete and followed. The schedule must encompass the entire 24 hours of the day and the subject must adhere to the schedule.

Start easy: Agreement over rules typically starts with generalized rules with which it is hard to disagree, for example; “No talking while eating”.

Tighten the rules: These rules will be gradually tightened over time. As the subject grows the basic premise, additional judgement criteria are added. For example, “No talking while eating' becomes “Talking while eating means you eat less food' to “The more you talk the less time you get to eat' to 'you are no longer hungry’.

Align with subject’s values: A conversation that may start with ideas will eventually turn to thoughts about what is right and wrong, good and bad, important and less important. In other words, it focuses on values. If you can change these rules in a subject’s head, then the programmer have no need to police them - the values will do that.

An effective start is to seek out the values of the subject and play to these. If the subject puts themselves first, then be admiring of them. A further values platform is generic human values, which are very difficult to deny, Love, peace, helping one another. Values can also be negative. Selfishness and hedonism can be elevated as worthwhile reasons. Racism and elitism may be accepted as true.

Progressive conversion: If the programming values are different from those of the subject, then the transition process is a progression, rather than a sudden conversion.

Control of values: The programmer must be clear to the subject as the one who sets values. This is made possible by having one of the basic values of the group be the leader must be obeyed without question. When the leader is showing wisdom and concern, this may seem logical.

Changing values: When converting a subject, one of the key things a programmer does, no matter where the subject started from, is to move into the realm of ideas and values. This includes anything that is not tangibly physical, and can include social and political ideas as well as religious and quasi-religious ideas. By doing this the subject is removed from the real world and into the ideological world of the programmer.

Align them with programming values: Show alignment towards the subject, the exchange principle dictates they should alignment towards the programmer/handler. When the subject is shown appreciation, they will show appreciation in return and will bond with the programmer connecting their sense of identity.

*Embodiment of values: T*he programmer is to appear as a decisive embodiment of values. The programmer is elevated to a state of godhood. They may not claim it themselves, but through their manipulation of values they effectively reach this very powerful position.

Programmers take charge of values: More control of the subject occurs when the programmer (or handler) is able to take full control of values. When a programmer can dictate what is right and wrong, they have the basis for total control.

Black and white thinking is created by the programming. There must be a tightly controlled system of logic. There must be totalitarian leaders, who inspire confidence and discipline questioning behaviour. Subjects are trained to believe seeking to leave, or questioning the philosophy, would mean isolation, torture, and the possibility of death. A hierarchy of leadership are given the authority to discipline those who do not comply with the training and teachings. This hierarchy will be planned internally into the subject.

Create a sense of powerlessness. This is administered through pain, degradation, tying up subjects, and control over the subject's time. This is completed from infancy on.

Needs Of Individuals Are Promised To Be Met, But Are Ignored For Group Goals. The Programmers/handler will promise to meet individual needs of alters. These things may be food, clothing, and shelter. These needs are ignored for group goals. If there isn't enough food for everyone, no one will eat.

Isolation from the World, the only reality is the programmers. The Programmer isolates the subject so no new ideas are available or allowed except their ideas. Whatever the Papa Bear (handler/programmer) dictates is reality. Each alter will only communicate with a few other alters. What this does is divide subject from their own parts and total awareness. The will and mind is broken so that there is no organized resistance, or access to other parts that may be aware of internal workings.

Isolation typically creates anxiety, that anxiety intensifies the desire to be with others who share the same fear. First-born children are more anxious and less willing or able to withstand pain than later-born children. Other applicable hypotheses are that fear increases the affiliative needs of first-born and only children much more than those of the later-born. These differences are more pronounced in subjects from small families then in those who grew up in large families. Only children are much likelier to hold themselves together and persist in anxiety-producing situations than are the first-born, who more frequently try to retreat

The subject will often be denied friends, and contacts outside the controlled environment. They will be deprived of all naturally occurring relationships by programming. This is done by switching, flooding, and system protection programming. Isolation is imperative and parts are made to feel like animals rather than human to isolate them outside individuals. Subjects will be programmed to hate Jesus and the God of the Bible, so they are isolated from spirituality and seeking spiritual assistance.

The subject starts to experience severe insecurity in this stage. The Programmer uses this insecurity against the subject in several ways. Because of the impaired reasoning ability and emotional isolation, the subject is susceptible to the approaches of insincere individuals, which are used by the programmer to emotionally hurt the subject more. This allows the programmer to convince the subject that individuals can't be trusted and only the programmer/handler can be trusted. This serves to isolate the subject from supportive peer groups and makes the subject emotionally dependent on the handler and programmer resulting in the programmer and handler gaining more power in the subject's life.

Sensory Bombardment and Fatigue. This includes being bombarded with loud noises or music and flashing or bright lights, prolonged sleep deprivation, environmental control, cages, loud continues noises, love bombing of specific parts and a sterile environment. These methods are designed to overload the senses, interfering with sleep, cognition, and concentration.

Breaking down the self

Assault on identity: The subject is not who they think they are. This is a systematic attack on a subject's sense of self (their identity or ego) and their core belief system. The programmer denies everything that makes the subject who they are: "You are not a boy/girl." "You are not intelligent." "You are not athletic." The subject is under constant attack for days, weeks or months, to the point that they become exhausted, confused and disoriented. In this state, their beliefs seem less solid.

Bombard them with accusations: The subject is isolated and accusing them of various transgressions begins. Accusations may start with diminutive things that are easy for them to admit then steadily escalate with admonishments of breaking important values and even being basically bad and shameful.

This process should be completed by a number of Programmers. The more individuals and the higher in standing they are, the more effective this method becomes. Few subjects can ignore accusations from individuals they live with have authority of them.

The Subject's Sense Of Identity Is Lost. The subject loses their sense of self and surrenders it to the handler/programmer. There will be no sense of where they begin and end, and where the Handler/programmer begins and ends. Subjects will demonstrate new behaviour by Conformity: dress, language, behaviour using group language will eventually stop the thinking mind.

The awareness of control and recognition of dependence result in causing internal conflict and breakdown of previous patterns of behaviour. Although this transition can be relatively mild in the case of a young subject, it is almost consistently severe for the adult subject undergoing programming. Only an individual who holds their values lightly can change them effortlessly. Since the programmers aim to have the individuals undergo profound emotional change, they force their subjects to seek out painfully what is desired by the controlling individual. During this period the subject is likely to have a mental breakdown characterized by delusions and hallucinations

Continue until subject breaks: The point of this session is to push them past a breaking point; similar to when a subject has a nervous breakdown the session may continue well past the point where the subject is huddled in a fetal position, rocking back and forth and weeping uncontrollably. With this action the programmer wears down the subject's sense of identity, in order to effectively destroy their personality and makes them flee from who they are.

Watch for apathy. After the subject's self-esteem is broken down and continuing failure and persistent suffering start to dominate every day, the individual becomes apathetic as a defence mechanism.

Apathy can lead to the subject not responding to and a mental and physical surrender that cannot be corrected.

Critical Thinking And Disagreeing With The Programmer Is Forbidden. The subject must suspend ability to think critically or disagree with programmer. The subject must never question the Handler/programmer. They must never get angry at the handler, if they do the subject is advised they want to be punished. The subject must always comply or be subject to punishment.

The assumptions of guilt and atonement: A basic assumption and rule is the subject in question is already guilty. Guilt is an effective lever that casts the subject as imperfect and inferior. The associated assumption is that guilt may be relieved by atonement of some variety, whereby the subject may be forgiven for the bad things they have done. This creates a two-sided force by which hurt and rescue may be applied.

Guilt: The subject is appalling. While the identity crisis is setting in, the programmer is simultaneously creating an overwhelming sense of guilt in the subject. The subject will be repeatedly and mercilessly attacked for any "sin" the subject has committed, large or small. The programmer will criticize the subject for everything from the "evilness" of their beliefs to the way he eats too slowly. The subject begins to feel a general sense of shame, that everything they do is wrong.

Self-betrayal: The subject will agree with the programmer that they are appalling. Once the subject is disoriented and is over whelmed with guilt, the programmer forces them to denounce any individual in their life who shares the same "erroneous" belief system that they hold. This betrayal of subjects own beliefs and of people they feel a sense of loyalty to increases the shame and loss of identity the subject is already experiencing.

Breaking point: With their identity in crisis, experiencing deep shame and having betrayed what the subject has always believed in, they may undergo a "nervous breakdown." In psychology, a "nervous breakdown" is a collection of severe symptoms that can indicate any number of psychological disturbances. The breaking point may involve uncontrollable sobbing, deep depression and general disorientation. The subject may have the feelings of being totally lost and alone. When the subject reaches their breaking point, their sense of self can be remade. The subject has no clear understanding of who they are or what is happening. At this point, the programmer sets up the temptation to convert to another belief system that will save the subject from their desolation.

Discovery that there is an acceptable solution to their predicament is the first stage of reducing the individual's conflict. Subjects of programming realising this will lead to feelings of relief of internal conflict. It is at this point they are prepared to make major changes in their value-system. This is an automatic rather than voluntary choice. They have lost their ability to be critical.

Altered States and Hypnosis Are Used. The handlers/programmers use hypnotic techniques to change the minds states. Programmers induce dissociation by songs, chanting, guilt inducing sessions, torture, isolation, repeating triggers 3X, starvation, inadequate sleep, and strenuous physical activity. This combination will lead to a reduction of alertness.

The reduction of alertness will create confusion in the mind. Programmers will also cause confusion using a series of alters. The subject may go into revolving from one alter to another, or may have alters coming and going with conflicting messages so that the subject remains in a programmed confused state. Programmers will give the mind something simple to focus on so that it goes into a flat state.

The mind feels good to shift into this simple flat state. The brain quits thinking and shifts to a lower level of conscious so the controllers can advise the subject what to think. Programmers can induce a mood or state of mind hypnotically which will make retrieval of something learned dependent upon going into that particular mood or state.

Out of Body Experiences: (O-B-E's) are induced by the torture and psychotropics. This training will lead to astral projection.

The Mind's Natural Alarm Clock: The programmer's use the mind's natural ability to wake up at specific times to inlay clocks for scheduled tasks. Subjects may be given the coded messages that will occur at specific timed intervals. Sleeping patterns are also related to personality. By programming different alters to have certain sleep patterns, their personality can be adjusted.

Behaviour modification. A version of behaviour modification is tailored to the subject. It is determine what the subject does well, and praise and reinforce that behaviour. The programmer states the desired goal. Then continue to reinforce promptly the things the subject is doing well. The goal in mind must be measurable. An example of this might be for a handler to praise a hunting part that is being programmed and give the subject a reward after a successful hunt. The reinforcement needs to be quick, and appropriate.

Manipulate rewards, punishments, *experiences to elicit new behaviour*. Manipulate rewards, punishments, and experiences. This must be done to suppress previous social behaviour. Reward: Participation, conformity to ideas/behaviour, zeal, personality changes, the appropriate verbal response.

Behaviours punished: criticalness, independent thinking, non-conformity to ideas/behaviour, wrong response to questions.

Aversive conditioning is another behaviour modification technique. This is the use of something unpleasant, or a punishment, to stop an unwanted behaviour. As with all forms of punishment, it may work but is generally less effective than the use of reinforcement.

Split brain programming The Programmers are also aware that right-handed people use their left brain hemisphere for highly conscious processes which require good attention, focus and intentional decisions; while their right brain will tend to work on the unconscious and automatic chores. Split brain programming takes this contrast into account.

Individual sees locus of control with the Handler/programmer. Programming overrules self. The internal and external handler/programmer is in control of the subject's life view, navigation, and emotions.

Creativity can be controllable. When a subject creates a new alter/animal/internal structure he is rewarded and praised. The subject learns to create what they believe the Programmers' desire to continue to be rewarded.

Future Pacing Future pacing can be used to help program a subject toward their occupational objective which is created for the subject when they are young. Future pacing is a mental rehearsal that is practiced in the imagination. This is done so the subject can deal with future challenges. Expectations can often become self-fulfilling prophecies. NLP also is used to teach people how to learn. It teaches people to learn a variety of methods for a single skill.

Power Words, These are words which have specific meaning for the subject. Some power words used in programming are; Imagine, you, and because.

The Possibility of Salvation

Leniency: The programmer can help the subject. With the subject in a state of crisis, the programmer offers some small kindness or reprieve from the abuse. He may offer the subject a drink of water, or take a moment to ask the subject about relationships they have made. In a state of breakdown resulting from an endless psychological attack, the small kindness seems enormous, and the subject may experience a sense of relief and gratitude completely out of proportion to the offering, as if the programmer has saved their life.

Compulsion to confession: Programmer advised the subject they can help themselves. For the first time in the programming process, the subject is faced with the contrast between the guilt and pain of identity assault and the sudden relief of leniency. The subject may feel a desire to reciprocate the kindness offered to him, and at this point, the programmer may present the possibility of confession as a means to relieving guilt and pain.

The tension of guilt: This creates a tension between the subject's actions and their stated belief that the action is bad. The consistency principle leads the subject to fully adopt the belief their resistance is bad and to distance themselves from repeating it. The situation is also encouraged by making non-confession to be an offence itself.

Channelling of guilt: The programmer will advise the subject this is why they are in pain. After weeks or months of assault, confusion, breakdown and moments of leniency, the subject's guilt has lost all meaning. They are not sure what they have done wrong, the subject just knows they are wrong. This creates something of a blank slate that lets the programmer fill in the blanks: He can attach that guilt, that sense of "wrongness," to whatever they desire. The programmer attaches the subject's guilt to the belief system the programmer is trying to replace. The subject comes to believe it is their belief system that is the cause of their shame. The contrast between old and new has been established: The old belief system is associated with psychological and physical agony; and the new belief system is associated with the possibility of escaping that agony.

Releasing of guilt: It's not me (subject); it's my (subject's) beliefs. The beleaguered subject is relieved to learn there is an external cause of their wrongness, that it is not themselves that is inescapably bad. This means they can escape their wrongness by escaping the wrong belief system. All they have to do is denounce the people and institutions associated with that belief system, and they won't be in pain anymore. The subject has the power to release themselves from wrongness by confessing to acts associated with their old belief system. With their full confessions, the subject has completed their psychological rejection of their former identity. It is now up to the programmer to offer the subject a new one.

Public confessions: The effect of confession may be intensified by making the confession public. It both increases the hurt and discomfort and also enables a greater rescue effect and relief. The higher levels of emotion involved have a much greater effect in creating bonds with the listening group.

Confession: Confession is predominantly effective at enabling people to put an undesirable past behind them. As well as a conversion technique, it is also useful for retention.

Confessing sins: Once the subject has agreed to the rules/values, subjects are encouraged to confess past mistakes. This may start easily with trivial errors and then progress to more significant 'failures'.

Release and atonement: Confessing leads to a relief, especially when the tension has been exacerbated by declarations of how appalling the errors are and how the subject is understood to be basically good.

Confession under pressure can appear as a sudden breakdown, when a previous resistance suddenly collapses. This can lead to a sudden outpouring of information.

Confession provides an initial release, but further atonement may be demanded. This may start with simple chores or repeating of meaningful scripts, but may also be escalated. Punishments may be meted out or may even be applied by the subject themselves.

Agreeing the rules: The motive of confession is there are some things which are bad, and which disregard defined rules and values. Before actual confession an agreement is reached about what is good and what is bad.

Subtle force of authority: The subtle implication is to position the subject as inferior and the programmer to whom they are confessing as superior. This provides a lever of authority that the subject cedes to the programmer receiving the confession. This allows the handler to control the subject further. This control may range from defining new values to giving direct commands outside of the confessional milieu.

A Sense Of Peace Is Induced. When the subject merges with the handler the programmer will accept credit for what the subject has become. A sense of peace is induced leading to the imagery of merging with the handler. The time is suggested by the programmer. The subject has the handler placed internally to assist in maintain the integrity of the system. The subject must reorganize reality through identification with the handler. Strong identification is created with the handler through trauma bonding. The subject will be programmed to protect the handler both internally and externally.

Rebuilding the Self

Remake the subject: When the subject is broken, the programmer/handler is to approach them with kindness. This is to show the subject they are forgiven and accepted again. They may be hugged and patted. This places the programmer/handler back into a kind and loving frame and offers a lifeline to the broken subject. The subject will listen and accept what the handler/programmer has to say.

The building of trust: Confessing sins is to expose vulnerability, which requires trust. Confession acts to increase the bonding of the individual to those hearing the confession, as consistency principle provides the argument that if the subject is confessing, then those listening must be trustworthy. When a subject bonds with an individual, they will be apt to adopt beliefs more easily.

Progress and harmony: If the subject wants, they can choose good. The programmer introduces a new belief system as the path to "good." At this stage, the programmer stops the abuse, offering the subject physical comfort and mental calm in conjunction with the new belief system. The subject is made to feel that it is they who must choose between old and new, giving the subject the sense that their fate is in their own hands. The subject has already denounced their old belief system in response to leniency and torment, and making a conscious choice in favour of the contrasting belief system helps to further relieve their guilt. If they truly believe, then they really didn't betray anyone. The new identity is safe and desirable because it is nothing like the one that led to their breakdown.

Final confession and rebirth: The subject chooses what is good. Contrasting the agony of the old with the peacefulness of the new, the subject chooses the new identity. They reject their old belief system and pledge allegiance to the new one that is going to make their life better. At this stage, there are often rituals or ceremonies to induct the subject into the community.

Reintegration of values and identification with the controlling system is the final stage in changing the behaviour of the controlled individual. A subject who has learned a new, socially desirable behaviour demonstrates its importance by attempting to adapt the new behaviour to a variety of other situations.

Other Non Coercive Conversion Methods

Coincidence: Coincidence is used to create the perception in the subject that supernatural events are beginning in the subject's life. A combination of posthypnotic commands and pre-information awarded to the subject prior to an upcoming experience that the handler/programmer intelligence system has discovered gives the subject a feeling that "God" or some other supernatural being is taken interest in their life.

Graphology: The validity of graphological techniques for the analysis of the personalities of subjects has not been established. If the programmer or their handler decides to have the subject’s handwriting analyzed, the samples should be submitted as soon as possible, because the analysis is more useful in the preliminary assessment of the subject than in the later programming. Graphology does have the advantage of being one of the very few techniques not requiring the assistance or even the awareness of the subject. As with any other aid, the programmer is free to determine for themselves whether the analysis provides them with new and valid insights, confirms other observations, is not helpful, or is misleading.

Joint Programmers: The commonest of the joint programmer techniques is the Mutt-and-Jeff routine: the brutal, angry, domineering type contrasted with the friendly, quiet type. This routine works best with women, teenagers, and timid men. If the programmer who has done the bulk of the programming up to this point has established a measure of rapport, he should play the friendly role. If rapport is absent, and especially if antagonism has developed, the principal programmer may take the other part. The angry programmer speaks loudly from the beginning; and unless the subject clearly indicates that they are breaking down. He thumps the table. The quiet programmer should not watch the show unmoved but give subtle indications that he too is somewhat afraid of their colleague. The angry programmer accuses the subject of other offenses, any offenses, especially those that are heinous or demeaning. He makes it plain that he personally considers the subject the vilest subject on earth. During the harangue the friendly, quiet programmer breaks in to say, "Wait a minute. Take it easy." The angry programmer shouts back, "Shut up! I'm handling this. I'll break this one, wide open." The programmer expresses their disgust by spitting on the floor. Finally, red-faced and furious, he says, "I'm going to take a break. But I'll be back at two, you better be ready to talk." When the door slams behind him, the second programmer tells the subject how sorry they are, how he hates to work with an individual like that but has no choice.

A programmer working alone can also use the Mutt-and-Jeff technique. (Not advised) After a number of tense and hostile sessions the subject is ushered into a different or refurnished room with comfortable furniture, cigarettes, etc. The programmer invites him to sit down and explains their regret that the subject’s former stubbornness forced the programmer to use such tactics. Now everything will be different. The programmer talks programmer-to-subject.

Another joint technique casts both programmers in friendly roles. But whereas the programmer in charge is sincere, the second programmer's demeanour and voice convey the impression that he is merely pretending sympathy in order to hurt the subject. He slips in a few aggressive actions such as punching the wall, knocking over glasses. The programmer in charge warns their colleague to stop. When he repeats the tactics, the programmer in charge says, with a slight show of anger. “I suggest that you leave now. I'll handle this."

It is usually unproductive to cast both programmers in hostile roles.

Paranoia: Paranoia is a powerful tool used by the programmer. It provides a means to develop the subject's distrust of other people including the subject's primary group that could provide positive support during this time of distress in the subject's life. Paranoia is often recognized and discounted as a character fault by most peoples in American society and therefore discredits the subject's testimony even further. Uninformed, but well wishing people including friends, may recommend to the subject to pursue counselling. This negative feedback can make the subject fear that people will believe the subject is crazy.

The subject is led to believe that their neighbours, work associates and/or family are conspiring against them through a number of implanted programs.

REM Sleep Deprivation: The Rapid Eye Movement (REM) stage of sleep is controlled and usually limited to one to two cycles per night resulting in micro-sleeps during the day. REM deprivation inhibits short-term memory, concentration, tactile abilities, verbal articulation, reasoning, and self will. Protein synthesis is inhibited and thereby reduces the subject's ability to heal after physical damage or after periods of extensive exercise. The result is that the subject's general health degrades as does social bonds and work/school performance.
Control of REM Sleep is completed through various methods. Posthypnotic implants can be implanted that place a subject in a light with various combinations of muscular tension and computer cycling implant deliveries.

When the REM depravation is introduced gradually and accompanied by a posthypnotic command the subject will feel energetic and rested the subject will not recognize the REM Deprivation.

The most common method of sleep deprivation is to keep the subject awake for several days. When they are finally allowed to fall asleep, they are awakened and programmed. As well as leading to hallucinations, sleep deprivation for periods longer than 24 hours can lead to a state of temporary insanity

Subjects typically complain of no sleep, restless sleep, waking up every hour on the hour, staying awake until the hour they have to get up, waking up an hour after they retire and not returning to sleep, and typically cannot recall any dreams. Additionally, they will complain of repeating torturing thoughts, racing thoughts, and facial itching and numbness. Daily fatigue, poor recall of names, and caffeine consumption is typical. Subjects in these prolonged stages of REM deprivation exhibit confusion, and emotional distress, have very poor grammar, spelling, and short attention spans

Subjects experience slower speech and have a hard time articulating concise points as a result of the REM Deprivation and other performance degrading posthypnotic commands. A small amount of alcohol consumption can exasperate the damage of REM Deprivation and precipitate slurred speech.

Confusion results from three primary sources; REM Deprivation, specific post hypnotic commands to reinforce the confusion, and the emotional damage and stress that is being inflicted. The confusion allows the programmer to continuously inflict damage to the subject's life without real-time observation. A confused subject generally is not as productive as an organized clear thinker is and has a greater potential to offend people by what they say or do and is less likely to recognize when they have made mistakes. All of these symptoms assist the programmer’s objectives. In addition, the confusion restricts the individual from analyzing the source of their suffering and taking corrective actions, and therefore reduces the programmer’s security risk.

Difficulty concentrating impairs the subject's productivity and prevents the subject from making self-improvements and corrections in behaviour. It makes it very difficult for the subject to do any evaluation of their condition. This allows the programmer to demonstrate that the subject cannot do anything on their own without "God", thereby increasing the frustration and anxiety of the subject (inducing emotional breakdown) and ultimately making the subject totally dependent on the will of God.

Stages of sleep

NREM stage 1: This is a stage between sleep and wakefulness. The muscles are active, and the eyes roll slowly, opening and closing moderately.

NREM stage 2: In this stage, theta activity is observed and sleepers become gradually harder to awaken; the alpha waves of the previous stage are interrupted by abrupt activity called sleep spindles and K-complexes.

NREM stage 3: Formerly divided into stages 3 and 4, this stage is called slow-wave sleep (SWS). SWS is initiated in the preoptic area and consists of delta activity, high amplitude waves at less than 3.5 Hz. The sleeper is less responsive to the environment; many environmental stimuli no longer produce any reactions.

REM: The sleeper now enters rapid eye movement (REM) where most muscles are paralyzed. REM sleep is turned on by acetylcholine secretion and is inhibited by neurons that secrete serotonin. This level is also referred to as *paradoxical sleep* because the sleeper, although exhibiting EEG waves similar to a waking state, is harder to arouse than at any other sleep stage. Vital signs indicate arousal and oxygen consumption by the brain is higher than when the sleeper is awake. An adult reaches REM approximately every 90 minutes, with the latter half of sleep being more dominated by this stage. REM sleep occurs as a person returns to stage 1 from a deep sleep. The function of REM sleep is uncertain but a lack of it will impair the ability to learn complex tasks. One approach to understanding the role of sleep is to study the deprivation of it. During this period, the EEG pattern returns to high frequency waves which look similar to the waves produced while the person is awake

The placebo technique is also used to induce regression The subject is given a placebo. Later they are told that they have ingested a drug, which will make them want feel sick/sleepy/etc. The subject's desire to find an excuse for the compliance that represents their sole avenue of escape from their distressing predicament may make them want to believe that they have been drugged and no one could blame them for what occurs. Individuals under increased stress are more likely to respond to placebos.

Increasing Dependence on Drugs and Alcohol: As REM Deprivation increases the subject must depend on Central Nervous System (CNS) Stimulants to cope and continue to function. The goal is to get the subject to self medicate and seek out drugs of their own volition. The use of drugs leads to loss of productivity at work, school, and in interpersonal relationships. This serves the programmer in several ways. The use of drugs, especially stimulants increases the subject's index of suggestibility. The post hypnotic commands are more effective and the subject has greater difficulty resisting the impulses generated by the commands. In addition, the increased stress of coping with the drugs in conjunction with the newly introduced posthypnotic commands serves to push the subject closer to an emotional breakdown. The use of drugs, especially illegal, allows the programmer to document something that the subject will be ashamed of when the program reaches the exaggerated conscience stage.

Some substances used are: Alcohol, sleeping pills, stimulants such as caffeine, and psychotropic medications inhibit REM Stage sleep. If the subject seeks out illegal drugs to use this will benefit the programmer in the future. The handler/programmer has been known to help subjects avoid prosecution to gain loyalty or create an adversarial relationship between the acting agency and the subject (another intimidation factor) even though the handler/programmer was responsible for creating the behavioural problem in the subject's life

Regression There are a number of non-coercive techniques for inducing regression, All depend upon the programmer's control of the environment and, as always, a proper matching of method to subject. Some subjects can be repressed by persistent manipulation of time, by retarding and advancing clocks and serving meals at odd times -- ten minutes or ten hours after the last food was given. Day and night are jumbled. Programming sessions are similarly unpatterned the subject may be brought back for more programming just a few minutes after being dismissed for the night. Half-hearted efforts to cooperate can be ignored, and conversely the subject can be rewarded for non-cooperation. (For example, a successfully resisting source may become distraught if given some reward for the "valuable contribution" that he has made.)

The Alice in Wonderland technique can reinforce the effect. Two or more programmers, programming as a team and in relays (and thoroughly jumbling the timing of both methods) A subject who is cut off from the world they know seek to recreate it, in some measure, in the new and strange environment. The subject may try to keep track of time, to live in the familiar past, to cling to old concepts of loyalty, to establish -- with one or more programmers – interpersonal relations resembling those that they had earlier with other individuals, and to build other bridges back to the known. Thwarting their attempts to do so is likely to drive them deeper and deeper into themselves, until they are no longer able to control their responses.

Whether regression occurs spontaneously under detention or programming, and whether it is induced by a coercive or non-coercive technique, it should not be allowed to continue past the point necessary to obtain compliance. Severe techniques of regression are best employed in the presence of a psychiatrist, and medical doctor. As soon as they can, the programmer presents the subject with the way out, the face-saving reason for escaping from their painful dilemma by yielding. Now the programmer becomes fatherly. Whether the excuse is that others have already confessed "all the other boys are doing it", that the subject had a chance to redeem themselves or that he can't help themselves "they made you do it", the effective rationalization, the one the source will jump at, is likely to be elementary. It is a subject’s version of the excuses of childhood.

The Informer A controlled environment can make tricking the subject easier. One of these tricks is, planting an informant as the subject’s roommate. As the subject is taught not to trust anyone, two informants in the room will work better. One of them, A, tries now and then to pry a little information from the source; B remains quiet. At the proper time, and during A's absence, B warns the source not to tell A anything because B suspects him of being an informant planted by the authorities.

Suspicion against a single cellmate may sometimes be broken down if B shows the source a hidden microphone that they have "found" and suggests that they talk only in whispers at the other end of the room.

Ivan Is a Dope It may be useful to point out to a hostile subject their friends, family, and any outside influence against programming have left them. The programmer may personalize this pitch by explaining that he has been impressed by the subject's courage and intelligence. The programmer sells the subject the idea that the programmer, not their old service, represents a true friend, who understands him and will look after their welfare.

Shame Factor Enhancement: Various posthypnotic suggestions are implanted in the subject after four to five days of REM deprivation. The content of the posthypnotic scripts is constructed to cause the subject to perform embarrassing and shameful acts. These behaviours are typically sexual, or abusive to another individual. These behaviours are used by the handler/programmer to later shame the subject into a lower self esteem, reduced confidence in their own self discipline, or the need for forgiveness from God. These embarrassments provide a means to Blackmail or discredit the subject if the handler/programmer is detected and otherwise threatened by the subject.

Tragic events: Another method is to use tragic events occurring to loved ones. The programmer receives information that a subject's family member has been injured or killed. The subject is given a posthypnotic suggestion that a feeling of dread or loss is welling up inside them and they are directed to think of that particular loved one. When they are notified about the family member, the subject believes that they have special powers, insights, or communications from God, aliens, or other entities.

Disorientation: The basic principle of disorientation is to reduce the subject's sense of judgment and their ability to make rational decisions. Programmers can use many methods to disorient their subjects, including: Language that causes confusion, rapid barrages of questions, use of hypnosis and hypnotic language, time distortion, such as through changing meal times, turning lights on and off at different times and the use of narcotics.

Deprivation: Depriving a subject of basic needs can lead both to disorientation, causing poor judgment as above, or desperation.
Deprivation can include:
Food and drink: Extreme hunger or thirst can persuade.
Sleep: Lack of sleep disorientates.
Company: Solitary confinement leads to craving attention.
Sensation: Sensory deprivation disorientates.
Access: To information or significant others

12 Coercive Techniques in Programming

The application of pain is a basic technique of torture programming, whether through creating general discomfort, physical beating or using instruments of torture.

1. The principal coercive techniques are arrest, detention, the deprivation of sensory stimuli, threats and fear, debility, pain, heightened suggestibility and hypnosis, and drugs.

2. If a coercive technique is to be used, or if two or more are to be employed jointly, they should be chosen for their effect upon the subject and carefully selected to match their personality.

3. The usual effect of coercion is regression. The subject's mature defences crumble as they become more childlike. During the process of regression the subject may experience feelings of guilt, and it is usually useful to intensify these.

4. When regression has proceeded far enough so that the subject's desire to yield begins to overbalance their resistance, the programmer should supply a face-saving rationalization. Like the coercive technique, the rationalization must be carefully chosen to fit the subject's personality.

5. The pressures of duress should be slackened or lifted after compliance has been obtained, so that the subject's voluntary cooperation will not be impeded.

Once the goal of the coercive session is met to permit the programmer access to the subject they are not ordinarily concerned with the attitude of the subject. Under some circumstances, however, this practical indifference can be short-sighted. If the subject remains semi-hostile or remorseful after a successful coercive session has ended, less time may be required to complete their conversion than might be needed to deal with their antagonism.

Stress Positions: This is posing a subject in an erect standing position for a period of several hours. No restraints or external devices are used. Variations of this technique include the extension of one's arms outward to the side.

Harsher variations of the stress technique a "short shackle," subjects are bound at the wrist and ankle with metal or plastic handcuffs and then doubled over with their wrists bound to their ankles, either while lying on the ground or sitting or front leaning rest, which is the push up position.

Sensory Bombardment: Subject is made to stand or kneel facing a wall for a determined amount of time. They are hooded and handcuffed tightly. At the same time a bright light is placed next to the subject's hood while distorted music is played.

Forced Nudity: Forced nudity is the most common technique used by programmers when training a subject. It involves stripping subjects in front of other individuals who are being programmed and forcing them to remain naked for long periods of time. The technique can also be used as a form of punishment in group programming. The effect of this act is to cause great shame.

Sexual Humiliation: Sexual humiliation comes in a variety of forms and it takes in to account the beliefs and views of the subject or part. For example, a part whose religious beliefs are strongly opposed to homosexuality may be forced to participate in acts of this nature with other subjects or parts of subjects who are being trained. This may be extreme, or mild. This can also include being forced to watch displays of sexuality.

Extreme Cold: Subjects are routinely doused with cold water and left outside or in unheated cells to freeze. They may be forced to stand in or run through snow wearing only a thin layer of clothing, left to sleep on the concrete floors of unheated cells/cages in the winter. To make the cold even more unbearable, programmers may leave the windows open in subject's cells during the night.

On occasion, extreme heat is also used. In this case the subject is locked in a hot box.

Phobias: Phobias are able to incite extreme amounts of panic in subjects. For this reason, a subject who has a fear of spiders will be forced to remain in a room filled with spiders. Once he achieves the useful state of anxiety or panic, he is programmed.

Water Boarding: Water boarding consists of immobilizing a subject and pouring water over their face to simulate drowning. It elicits the gag reflex, making the subject believe his or her death is imminent while ideally not causing permanent physical damage.
Water boarding is used to punish, intimidate, induce phobias, and dissociation.

Debilitation: Debilitation is the systematic weakening of the subject. Physically this may be through means such as corporal punishment, pain and deprivation.

Psychological weakening may take place through humiliation and other actions, such as making them stand naked, forced religious sacrilege, triggering of phobias and mock executions.

Retention Techniques: When a subject is converted to a particular set of beliefs, then it has been found that, particularly if coercive or authoritarian methods were used, then most people will, if there is no effort to sustain the change, will drift back to their original beliefs. The following things must be in place to insure retention continues until training/programming is complete.

Absolute Authority: That cannot be challenged.
Asset-Stripping: Taking the subject's belongings
Confession: to keep the subject in a position of inferiority.
Entrancement: to keep subject in a controllable state.
Illogic: Emotion and fallacy that persuades.
Isolation: separating subjects from dissuasive messages.
Keeping Busy: so there is no time to think about leaving.
Obedience: without questioning authority.
Polarization: creating black-and-white choices.

Special Language: leads subject on to inner circles of power.
Striving: so there is always something more the subject needs.
Thought-stopping: blocking out distracting or dissuading thoughts.
Burning Bridges: Ensure there is no way back.
Evidence Stream: Show subjects time and again that their change is real.
Golden Handcuffs: Put rewards in their middle-term future.
Institutionalization: Building change into the formal systems and structures.
New Challenge: Get the subject looking to the future.
Rationalization Trap: Get subject to complete adverse action then help them explain their actions.
Reward Alignment: Align rewards with desired behaviours.
Rites of Passage: Use formal rituals to confirm change.
Socializing: Build behaviours into the social fabric.

Note: *Anger:* The way that the subject experiences anger is of profound importance. If the subject allows the Handler/Programmer to redirect the increasing anger and hostilities toward the Handler/Programmer to another subject in the form of violence (misplaced aggression), the Handler/Programmer will reinforce the violent behaviour with posthypnotic commands. Typically, the Subject is encouraged to commit acts of violence with spouses, friends, or employers resulting in further social isolation and increased shame.

12 Steps of Obedience

The purposes of these steps are to create a highly dissociative subject, who cannot connect with their feelings. This will allow programmers to write scripts for parts.

Step one: Not need. The subject is placed in a room without any sensory stimulus. This training room will have gray, white, or beige walls. The programmer leaves the subject alone for periods of time: these may vary from hours (2-3) (3-5), to an entire day as the subject grows older. The purpose of this discipline is to teach the subject to rely on its own internal resources, and not on outside individuals. The subject will learn to self sooth, and retreat internally to rely on internal triggers, structures, and programming to survive.

Step two: Not want. This step is very similar to the first step, and reinforces it. It will be done intermittently with the first step over the next few years of the subject's life. The subject is left alone in a training room, without food, water, bathroom, blankets, or chair for an extended period of time.

The programmer will enter the room with food, or a blanket. If the subject requests either, they are punished for being weak and needy. This step is reinforced, until the subject learns not to ask for anything unless it is offered first. This step will create a subject who is completely dissociated from its own needs. This creates in the subject a hyper-vigilance as they learn to look for outside individuals for cues on when it is acceptable to fulfil needs, and not to trust their own body signals.

The subject is learning to look outside themselves to learn how they should think or feel, instead of trusting their own judgment.

Step Three: Don't hope/desire. This step is to create a subject who won't fantasize. The subject is to be more outwardly focussed, and less inwardly engaged. The subject is to look to programmers for permission in all areas of their life, including internal. This step insures safe places the subject has created internally are found and discarded. The internal safe places must be placed by the programmer. This teaches the subject there is no safety unless the handler/programmer says there is safety.

The subject is placed in a room with favourite toys, or items. A pleasant programmer enters the room and engages the subject in play. The subject and programmer engage in fantasy play about the subject's secret wishes, dreams, or wants. This will occur on several occasions, until the subject's trust is earned. This programmer will not criticize, mock, or give any negative response to the subject, During a future programming session the subject is punished for their desires or fantasies shared with the programmer, including the destruction of favourite toys, undoing attempted secret places the subject may have created in their mind, or eliminate and protectors within the subject. This step is repeated, with variations, many times over subsequent years. The subject's siblings, parents, or friends will be used to expose inside fantasies the subject has confided in them during trusting moments.

Step four: survival of the fittest. This step is to create aggressive malefactor alters in the subject. This step is begun around age the subject will be trained with children younger than themselves. All subjects will have internal parts that will be perpetrators

Subjects should copy their programmer's actions when it comes to inflicting trauma on their target. Programmers and handlers should role model the torture they wish their subject to inflict. The subject will be taught this is the acceptable outlet for the aggressive impulses and anger they are experiencing. This anger should be created by the brutality the subject is relentlessly being exposed to when they are in the role of the younger child.

Step five: code of silence. Various tactics are employed to insure this programming is well-built. This is begun at the age of two-3 years as subject starts becoming more verbal.

Following a training session the subject is asked about what they saw, or did. If the subject begins to answer the question they are tortured, a new part is created. This part is ordered to keep or guard the memories of what was seen. The subject and this new part are put through a rite of swearing to never tell. During this process more parts are formed whose position it is to kill the body if other parts speak.

Sexual trauma, and learning to dissociate will increase during this step.

Step Six: Don't trust/betrayal. Will begin in infancy, but will be formalized at around ages six to seven, and continue on when the subject is a teenager. The subject will learn betrayal through set up after set up. The subject will be placed in situations where a programmer who is sympathetic, rescues them, and gains their trust. The subject will begin to trust the programmer as a rescuer after the programmer intervenes and protects the subject numerous times. After months of bonding, the subject will turn to the programmer for support. The programmer will back away refusing to help, and begin abusing them. The subject will begin to replicate this behaviour to other individuals who are being trained. Betrayal programming will also be built into the system so parts will not trust one another

Step seven: Not caring. This step will take the subject further into a malefactor role. The age for beginning this is step is 4-6 years. The subject will be forced to hurt others and prove their ability to not care during the process. This step is repeated until the subject finally complies by inflicting grievous harm on another individual without remorse. As the subject becomes older, the punishing tasks become more brutal. Programmers will encourage and reward the more perverse behaviour and callus responses by the subject.

Step eight: Spiritual ideology. The subject will be taught spiritual ideology to keep the system in balance. The ideology is duelling. This is completed with trauma rituals, and guided imagery exercises reinforced with hypnotism. The goal will be to reach a blissful state of dissociation reached through trauma and hypnosis.

Step nine: Subject specific programming. The programmer and handler will have determined what the subject's future task/job will be. This step will involve programming which will be tailored to the subject's future function.

Step ten: OODA training (observe, orient, decide, and act). The programmer will place the subject in situations where they must decide how to respond. If the response is incorrect the subject will be brutally punished. If the response is correct the subject will be praised.

Step eleven: Display self-discipline. Demonstrate the ability to think, look, and act like an individual with a single mind. The subject must respond to triggers, cues, and training without the programmer/handler to reinforce the programming.

Step twelve: The subject must prove their capacity to perform their role/job they have been trained for. This must be completed to the satisfaction of the programmers and handler. The test will be held with other subjects of the same age. This is to ensure the trauma bonding continues. If a subject fails the test the programmers and handlers must determine if the subject short comings can be corrected or the subject terminated.

14 Levels of Programming

Level One

If the tested subject has an I.Q of 110 or higher, and proper hypnotic abilities they will be given a code cue that is an alpha-numeric code, a number or a word code that identifies them. This is embedded hypnotically. This trigger will activate their recall program when the programmer is ready.

If the subject has no relatives that are important, they will be instructed and secretly helped to move to a location chosen by the intelligence agencies. The programmers will hypnotically erase the top memory so what has happened is deeply embedded in the subconscious mind and can't be retrieved.

Once at the location further tests for vulnerability will be conducted. If the subject passes these tests, they are then brought to.

Level 2

Specific instructions are written, placed through hypnotic commands and suggestions, into their personality and they are given diverse small orders. At this level the subject is used operationally at very easy and unimportant tasks. They are also assigned a programmer. The programmer is beginning to soften the subject up and make them more pliable to suggestions. If the subject successfully performs these small tasks that have been hypnotically written into the mind, then he will be given a recall service notice by the programmer who is in contact with the subject.

If the subject, upon release, shows that they have retained the instructions which were written into their personality, and if they carry out the small and unimportant work duties which were assigned under Level 2 hypnosis, they will receive a *recall service notice*.

The timing of a *recall service notice* depends on how quickly it can determine the programming which was written into the personality has enabled them to complete their Level 2 work assignments properly. Once this determination has been made, a *recall service notice* will be given to him by a programmer, or handler.

If the subject was not given a trigger word, the handler will use a quick and powerful form of hypnosis similar to Neural Linguistic Programming. The subject will be told when and where to report. The subject will have no memory of being given these instructions, they will report on time to the proper location. If the subject was given a trigger word or symbol they will report to the designated location upon activation of the trigger.

Level 3
I.Q. level 120-129

The subject will receive a overwrite upon their own personality according to what script the programmers want it to have. It is similar to having multiple personalities, except the original personality is repressed or hidden under the overwrite and will not surface for a set period of time which is determined by the Programmer. The overwrite is not a complete new identity. There is just enough information written into subject for us to determine their viability.

The subject will be set to carry out their instructions as needed. The subject will now be given specific trigger codes to carry out assignments. All field programmers of the intelligence agencies get level 3 control.

This is the level where real childhood memories can be accidently damaged.

In the case of a field subject, Level 3 hypnosis is how the subject is prepared for a covert mission which requires a temporary new identity. Just enough information will be written in for the subject's alias and story to be believable by everyone, including law enforcement officials. In the case of a field subject who will be using this alias for only one occasion, their normal personality is not repressed, it is made recessive, but left alert.

During Level 3 programming sessions, the new subject is told that anything their "friends", meaning programmers, asks them to do is okay, even though it may be against the laws of nations. At Level 3, the subject is also programmed to believe that they must and can do everything their "friends" ask them to do.

Once Level 3 Programming has been overlaid upon the new subjects own personality, they are once again given a *recall service order* and is then discharged. The subject will be monitored to see how well they function with their new personality. If everything goes well, they will be recalled for further programming.

All subjects must go through these 3 Levels before they are fielded. Sometimes they go through Level 3 several times

Level 4
I.Q. Level is 130-144
The programming that was placed in up to level 3 is erased and an entire new life script, new personality and priority/mission are inserted. A completely new subject is being created, not just a partial personality as during Level 3 programming. This is done with the use of drugs, deception, and other sophisticated programming techniques. The brain assimilates this new information as if it's always been there, because it feels comfortable putting something into an empty space.
The programmers prefer to find a period in the original subject's life when nothing occurred. It is easy to erase a memory segment when nothing significant is in original the memory. Complete areas of memory are erased at this stage and a new history is written into the pre-puberty area of memory

This level is reserved for subjects who are extraordinarily loyal to hypnotic commands. Subjects at this level of programming will follow out any directive they are given, whether it is suicidal or harmful to others. They are at a place where they no longer differentiate between right and wrong.

The subject is advised they are Transcendent and all laws are written for other people. The subject's moral code, respect for the law, and fear of dying is replaced with new Transcendent feelings. The subjects' are given exceptional abilities such as a photographic memory, the ability to lie convincingly, and remember all they hear. This "agenda overlay" is overwritten onto the subjects own personality.

For the field subject who is being prepared for a lethal covert mission, a Level 4 Transcendent overwrite can eliminate all fear and nervousness. The overwrite replaces the subject's own morality and/or religious ethics with a program that makes them believe they are beyond all human laws. If the intent of the programming is to create a programmed assassin who will kill on cue, all morality, fear, and loathing of bloody body parts must be eliminated. The Transcendent overwrite eliminates both. The Transcendent overwrite also gives the subject the feeling of immortality and invincibility. This allows them to function in close proximity of their enemies without the added stress of being discovered.

The subject will be given all the knowledge and beliefs that are commonly held by individuals in the identified group. The subject will believe that these opinions are their own. They will then be believable to other members of the group.

Once Level 4 programming is complete, the subject will have no memory of their former life. They will not be an amnesiac, they will have memories. The memories will be implanted by the programmer. The subject will be relocated to a new state and given a new identity. Everything to complete the construction of the new subject will be provided. Items such as driver's licence, car, bank accounts, passport, credit cards, and birth certificate will be created or supplied by the programmer and will be valid and legal. The subject will have no memory of being involved in programming.

The subject will be provided with things that ordinary individuals have in their lives, such as photos of family. The subject will have all the feelings of love, hurt or anger that normal family members feel for each other.

The photos of family and friends will be of deep cover subjects. If ever a mission goes "sour" and the news media starts looking for their family, an agency created family will be produced for a news conference or an interview. Agency subjects have been well coached and are skilled actors and actresses. They will complete their roles perfectly, usually letting the public know that the Clear Eyes subject has had a deeply troubled and violent past. The media will present the Clear Eyes as a subject with mental health issues who went on a tragic and senseless rampage.

Completing the new life and home, will be souvenirs from trips the subject has never taken, but remembers. There will also be small mementos of a life they have never lived, yet believe they have. Upon the completion of Level 4 Programming, the subject now has an agenda that they believe is their own.

Because these subjects are now under full control, the intelligence agencies want to protect their level 4 subjects until they are needed.

Level 5

IQ level 145-160

The subject at this level can be moulded into a Clear Eyes. This level will require transporting the subject to a specialized programming centre. Once at the centre they are drugged and lowered to the comatose level of subconscious awareness. At this level of consciousness the programming is placed at the innermost levels of the brain. The subject may be comatose for days or months. This requires a catheter in the neck, urinary and digestive tracts to keep the body properly functioning. An accepted cover story is the subject had an automobile accident because the subject will be hospitalized for an extended amount of time. Many of these level 5 subjects are placed as sleepers into organizations, where they lead normal lives.

The trigger which activates the program is inserted. A code word, sequence of numbers or a voice imprint is embossed into the subject's brain. This trigger will activate the subject into action. At this time, the subject will also be implanted with a coded chip so their location will always be known.

The level 5 triggers activate programs deeply embedded and nested into the memory of a subject. A team of programmers work on level 5 subjects. They must make sure that the subject has a support system so that they do not self-destruct. They may have psychologists in normal life set up to serve as a support subject for the subject.

Once a Clear Eyes is triggered, accidently or on purpose, the subject is beyond recall. A Level 5 Clear Eyes can only be approached after they carry out their program or operation.

In most cases of programmed Clear Eyes who commit murders or assassinations, the subject is killed at the location, either by law enforcement or suicide programming.

15 Tools and Aids for Programming

Fasting along with a high sugar intake will make the brain more suggestive. Physical discomforts and the chanting of rituals in witchcraft ceremonies are also ways to move the mind into programming states.

Behavioural science: watching and recording data on different environmental parameters on human behaviour. The programmer should know when to modify the environment to insure optimum results.

Electric shock equipment: Determine amount of electricity, frequency, interval, and body placement for shocks.

Immersive multimedia: (V.R.) A computer-simulated environment that can replicate a subject's physical presence in places worlds created by the programmers. The images are displayed either on a computer screen or through special stereoscopic displays, include additional sensory information, such as sound through speakers, headphones and goggles. Haptic systems now include tactile information, generally known as force feedback in medical, gaming and military applications.

Harmonics/subharmonics: Use of sound frequencies to manage the subject's brain state.
Psychotropic Medications: opiates, barbiturates, hypnotics, sedatives, aesthetic medications to be used by programmers with the assistance of doctors.

CPR equipment: in case subject has adverse reaction to drugs or programming. At times, a subject alter will come out inadvertently during a programming sequence, and will be overdosed with the drugs meant for programmed alters. The handler/programmer must give the part the antidote, and resuscitate them, just as if a real part is out. They are well aware of this fact, and will severely punish parts, to teach them to come out only when called out.

Exercise equipment: used in military training to increase fitness, lean body mass.

Steel instruments: used to insert into orifices, cause pain

Programming grids: For mapping the subjects inside landscape.

Projectors: used to project grids on wall or ceiling.

Dress: Programmers, Doctors and trainers are to dress according to the script they are working into the subject.

Programming journal: contain indexed copies of subject's systems; including key alters, command codes, etc.

Lighting: The lighting must be conducive for the specified script being inlayed by the programmers.

Training rooms: The training room is a neutral colour with white walls.
EEG machine: will often have abbreviated hook-ups for quick use. Used extensively with brain wave programming; also to verify that certain alter is out when called up. May be used to verify deep trance state before initiating deep programming. Trainers are taught to read these readouts.

Programming table: a medical table of steel where the temperature of the table can be controlled. The table must have restraints for the subject's appendages and head to prevent movement.

Programming chair: large chair with arm rests. Will have restraints as above at intervals to restrain movement while subject sits in chair.

Comfort items: used to comfort subject afterwards a session. This may be a toy, candy for subject/parts. This is the opportunity for the programmer to bond with and comfort the subject they worked with. This is the most important part of the training process, as the programmer explains calmly, kindly how well the subject did, how proud they are of them.

16 Deprivation of Sensory Stimuli

The chief effect is to deprive the subject of many or most of the sights, sounds, tastes, smells, and tactile sensations to which they have grown accustomed. The first exposure will cause the greatest fears and hence the greatest danger of giving way to symptoms; previous experience is a powerful aid in going ahead, despite the symptoms. The symptoms most commonly produced by isolation are superstition, intense love of any other living thing, perceiving inanimate objects as alive, hallucinations, and delusions.

The apparent reason for these effects is that a subject cut off from external stimuli turns their awareness inward, upon themselves, and then projects the contents of their own unconscious outwards, so they give their faceless environment their own attributes, fears, and forgotten memories. The more well-adjusted or 'normal' the subject is, the more they are affected by deprivation of sensory stimuli. Neurotic and psychotic subjects are either comparatively unaffected or show decreases in anxiety, and hallucinations.

The sensory deprivation tank will be set at 920 to 950 F. isothermal skin, saltwater suspension, zero light, near zero sound levels. The subject will be naked without contact with the side of the tank and in remote isolation for a predetermined set time.

Theories about solitary confinement and isolation:

1. The more completely the place of confinement eliminates sensory stimuli, the more rapidly and deeply will the subject be affected. Results produced only after weeks or months of imprisonment in an ordinary cell can be duplicated in hours or days in a cell which has no light (or weak artificial light which never varies), which is sound-proofed, in which odours are eliminated, etc. An environment still more controlled, such as water-tank or is even more effective.

2. An early effect of such an environment is anxiety. How soon it appears and how strong it is depends upon the psychological characteristics of the subject.

3. The programmer can benefit from the subject's anxiety. As the programmer becomes linked in the subject's mind with the reward of lessened anxiety, human contact, and meaningful activity, and thus with providing relief for growing discomfort, the programmer assumes a benevolent role.

4. The deprivation of stimuli induces regression by depriving the subject's mind of contact with an outer world and thus forcing it in upon itself. At the same time, the calculated provision of stimuli during programming tends to make the regressed subject view the programmer as a father-figure. The result, normally, is a strengthening of the subject's tendencies toward compliance.

The following are the type of beliefs that can be programmed into a subject during sensory deprivation under the appropriate psychotropic no matter their prior beliefs.

A. The subject could successfully ‘park’ the body and leave the body somewhere, astral project and explore new universes.

B. The subject can be made to feel as if they are a tiny mote, a tiny dot, a single micro-flash of energy in their own view of time, a mere particle. Time can become infinity.

C. The next program is the subject is only part of a vast computer, only part of a vast mind. The appropriate psychotropic regulates the perception of free-will. In this form of programming, the subject is convinced that they have no free will and must participate each second with some larger mind or computer.

D. Personalities that have been seen externally by the subject will be incorporated within the subject’s internal world.

E. Psychotropic’s and sensory deprivation change the subject’s perception of time, and can be used to go back or forward in time in the mind. Under guidance, the programmer can manipulate this ability to build into the mind false memories and images.

F. If "white noise", that is random background noise is placed into an isolation tank trauma, the programmers have found that under mind altering drugs the brain tries to make sense of the sounds and projects the voice of God into the noise as a method to turn chaos into something comprehendible. With the right dose, and under the right conditions, the programmers can get the voice of "God" to say anything they want. Because the sense of hearing in the sensory deprivation tank is not feeding the mind anything, the human brain can easily substitute in the voice of God.

G. For females, who have been determined to have personalities with low sexual appetites, the sexual desires of certain alter personalities can be manipulated during sensory deprivation programming by having these alters hold the body and the body go through exaggerated pelvic movements and other experiences.

When the programmers set the foundations for a system, they will use a mind altering psychotropic on the subject while they are in sensory deprivation. During this time they will have the subject map in: the hell-pit (a dungeon in castle worlds), stars and galaxies which contain parts, the outer space in a system, and the protective program where the mind spreads out like molecules and loses the ability to think. Also during sensory deprivation trauma, Alien programming, and Suicide programming are placed in to the system. These parts in the system are created while the subject is in the chamber/tank.
While the subject is in sensory deprivation the Programmer can ask the subject to create the images of guardians, guard parts within the castle images. These image parts are not the same as a trauma-created dissociative alter.

During the sensory deprivation tank experience, the subject can be asked to open their eyes, or close them. The subjects mind works differently with imagination if the eyes are opened or closed. If the subject is advised to look into the darkness they will visualize themselves as merging with the infinite universe and not having a body. This programming is used to create an Infinity loop, a Rubicon, or Outer Space within a system. The self is still centred in one place but the boundaries have disappeared and move out in all directions and extend to fill the limits of the universe. A subject under a mind altering psychotropic may experience, they are in touch with all the stars of the universe.

Implanted programs in the child can be placed in below the level of the mind's awareness, but which will affect their entire outlook on life, and will control their thinking and behaviour into adulthood. The child subject in the sensory deprivation tank is not allowed to move without being shocked. Gradually the will of the subject is broken by the full control the programmer maintains over the child in the tank. The child continues to be broken until the will of the child to live is broken. At this point, when the subject has given up their will to live, the programmer (or assistant programmer) will tell the child while in deprivation, what parts to create.

The alters, which are made when the subject has lost their will to live, are the dissociated parts that will be made into suicide alters. Their breathing is very shallow, and their world void. When these parts take the body, they still function in that state.

Children must be very young in order for programming to be initially installed, under 4 or 5 years of age. Modifications to the original programming can be made later.

One of the central functions of programs is to cause the subject to physically and psychologically re-experience the torture used to install the programming should they act in violation of the programmed commands. The re-experience of the original torture often includes somatic manifestation of the original injuries, such as bruising and swelling, though not to the degree of the original injury.

The most complex programs consist of personalities buried deep in the unconscious mind perceiving themselves, visually (in images) and somatically (in experiences of pain, suffocation, electroshock, etc.), to be attached to, or trapped within, "structures", such as buildings, devices of torture, machines, containers, etc. These structures serve as containers for the programmed commands, messages, and information.

Programming continues to control the subject's thoughts and actions for decades, often for life, with no conscious awareness of the programming or of the personalities under its control, usually completing programmed actions unconsciously, sometimes feeling only a conscious compulsion to do, or not do, something.

Conditioning of the subject is achieved through a variety of sophisticated control strategies involving the combined application of physical pain, double-bind coercion, psychological terror, and split brain stimulation. All programs are stimulus-sensate triggered. Thus, programs may be enacted (triggered) via auditory, visual, tactile, olfactory and/or gustatory modalities. Classical, operant, and observational/ modelling paradigms all are utilized by the programmers. Finally, it is important to note that virtually all programs will possess a variety of secondary and tertiary back-ups — perhaps several layers of each.

The commands and structures installed during programming, and the detailed recollection of the torture itself, remain stable and fixed over time, from the toddler years until at least middle age, with incredibly little deterioration of memory over time. The "memory capacity" in the programmed unconscious mind is enormous, holding vast amounts of detailed information, including lengthy "strings" of encoded information, which could never be stored in conscious awareness.

Program "triggers", "cues", and "access codes" allow the programmer to regain access to the programmed personalities or program "structures" to install or change commands, messages, and information, and to retrieve information, all out of the subjects' awareness.

Programmers gain access to subjects of other groups and deliberately "program over" competitor group's programming to dominate the behaviour of the person

Attempting to remove or disable it without great expertise "sets off" programmed self-destruction and negative health/mental health consequences, all by the programmers' intentions.

The Host is given the script to love the Programmer/handler. The subject should be angry about what has happened to them. The ability to direct that anger is lost with the dissociation, but might be retrieved if the part remembers. Programmers transfer the anger by creating some outside person or object for the part to focus their hate upon. Hate scripts are given to the host part. The love for the Handler now protects the host part from having to remember their pain. As long as the part loves their handler, they are reasonably safe from remembering their own traumas.

17 Inside Structuring

Covers for Subjects
The subject is usually given a good cover. A good cover will be one that cannot be seen through, and still allows the person the freedom to get their job done. When building a cover, the following questions will be asked: how much will this cover allow this person to spend? What kind of people can this person associate with? Where can this person go? What kind of hobby can he or she have?

Inside Parts
During programming an average System will have hundreds of parts, but not all of these will be personalities designed to hold the body. A system will have approximately half a dozen parts which frequently take the body and hundreds of parts which only occasionally take the body.

Each piece of the System is separated by some degree of dissociation to make it a separate piece. By dividing the mind so much, it is incapable of fighting what has been done to it.

The creation of alternate personalities divides responsibility within a person. A Programmer and handler will form widely differing relationships with the different parts.

When programming begins, it must be simple enough that a child can understand. The child's creativity must be guided by torture and the Programmer. The Programmer, demons, and the child's creativity work together with the dissociation to create parts. When the mind is split, this natural personality is not erased but rather is a collected pool upon which various responses are attached to various personalities. In order to teach a part to come to the front of the mind, triggers must be layered in. A visual aid to teach a part how to leave the area they are in the mind and come forward to take the body may be necessary.

All the programming of subjects is anchored in trauma. . Whatever fundamental trauma is decided upon, all the rest of the programming will be built upon that anchor in the subject's mind. The first extreme trauma will be, filmed, watched by the subject, coded and used as an anchor. The filmed trauma will be programming specific. For example rape for Beta programming, animal torture for Epsilon.

Parts are real and separate persons. But the common traits that run through a system are also real. One system may have a vein of kindness and gentleness that runs through it. There may be a few parts which have been tortured enough to not display the trait, but the trait is so pervasive that it characterizes the system.

The Programmers are also skilled at building in parts who can serve as balancing points.
The system must have a balancing point. This point is made of parts that are calm, cheerful, and emotionally stable. A system could easily self-destruct with all the pain and confusion that has been intentionally built into the system. When the System is being charted during the early programming

process, a handler and the Programmer will make a decision on how to balance the system and label the graph.

After the Programmer has instructed the subject what parts they want made the subject is traumatized. The Programmer will administer a psychotropic to determine whether the correct parts were created and the correct number.

Each dissociated fragment of the mind must be moulded into something. For example they can be made an animal, angel, demon, or other spiritual figure. Some fragments are formed into full personalities, others are moulded into single-purpose fragments, and some must be discarded. A part of the mind can be developed into a full-blown independent personality with all the idiosyncrasies that any individual has.

Generally the Programmer considers colour identification and the coded numbers to be more critical for identifying a part than a name. A name humanizes the part. Names are sometimes attached later if needed by a handler. Some handlers simply refer to their sexual parts by their generic name kitten, dog, animal or spy. Others may have a specific cat name such as Shadow, FFF, Hunter or the name of an angel or demon.

The new part will have the characteristics of who they split from. The Programmer will ask the part being tortured to create something in the mind when the split is created. They are separated from one another by dissociation, and they will be given their own script and own separate identity by the Programmer. The dissociation between some parts is not full blown amnesia.

To dissociate a memory and to take on a particular role and identity involves a constant re-interpretation of past events. It may also mean that the part must manufacture an interpretation of present events. This is in part dictated by the necessity of obscuring the pain of the trauma that separates the part from the rest.

Some zones of the mind, such as the space that holds skills and talents, are available to all the parts who want to access that aptitude. The aptitude doesn’t belong to a specific part but to the system.

Subjects are bonded to other people--the cult leader, handler, twin or Programmer. Trauma bonding is a necessity for programming with the subject.

The Programmers build chains of command within the groups of parts that are created. In the subject’s hierarchal chain of command, adult parts are assigned to insure that child parts don’t come out, unless the child part is wanted out. Commander parts are needed to keep the switching smooth, and to keep things orderly. Subordinate parts are taught to submit to their king, or governor or queen part. Immense power and indoctrination is given to the vital parts ruling a system.

Parts must learn to function as designed by the Programmer. If they can’t work together, the Programmer will try to get them to work together. If the parts can’t be repaired, they and their system will have to be thrown away. Alter functions and abilities overlap with other parts. No alter is entirely separate from several common pools of intellect and dispositions that are attributable to the entire alter system.

Shadow Parts

Programmers torture a part and get the Shadow alters. Then hypnotically attach a memory code to the main alter so that they can access the memory anytime they want. Then they hypnotically build a one-way mirror between this main alter and the shadow alters they have just created. These one-way mirrors are like one way windows--the reason they are referred to as mirrors is that they are put in the child's mind via mirrors. Next, they ritually/magickly implant demons to guard the mirror(s) and to guard each memory held by the shadow alters. This separates an alter from knowing itself and its own abuse.

The host part has dissociated the pain, to the shadow alters of itself. Host stands in a small circle with the rays (shadow alters) split off from it. The shadow or family alters of a host part hold the factual history. Programmers use the memory as blackmail to keep the main part in line. The host alter has dissociated the pain, but will recover the memory if either one of three possibilities happen: a. the Programmer or handler says the memory code 3x, or b. if an event happens that triggers the host alter to remember, c. the host alter tries to remember the abuse and the programming, and in doing so they will be stepping outside of the circle assigned to them and will break the circle and break the mirrors.

If the Programmer desires, they can shatter a front Christian alter level and create a new level of New Age believing parts to replace the original front. The abuse can be done by the subject themselves to themselves, because programming parts are given the ability to pull up horrific memories via codes. Those traumatic memories, which shattered the mind the first time, are still capable of doing it again when they are released.

The Programmer can call up the Hidden Observer and ask it what has happened internally in the mind of the subject.

Mirror image parts should be created to confuse both subject and outside individuals who are attempting to breach the system.

A triangle mirror image is formed in occult programming by taking the part, its mirror images and adding demonic mirror images.

Many splits in the mind are not developed into full blown personalities. The programmers don't chart all the family or shadow fragments of a subject. The fragments will hold all the memories of abuse, so the task specific part can function. The fragments will also give the part the appearance of the full range of emotions. If a main part gets angry or feels guilty, they have accessed its shadows to express the full range of emotions.

During a predetermined trauma, the programmer will fragment the part that is present and create mirror images of that part. This fracturing means that no part has the full memory of the trauma. A part doesn't know if the mirror image is itself or something else.

When a part tries to recover a memory it goes round and round in a brutal cycle and finally concludes the memory is false. If one part holds a memory, a part close to it will have no feelings attached to the memory and will find it difficult to accept the memory as its own. Mirror images, and pseudo-alters are layered in, it becomes difficult to identify when a alter appears and when they leave.

Internal Councils:

The ultimate form of internalization comes with internalizing hierarchical councils. The subject, under pain, hypnosis, and drugs, will be taught to incorporate a highly dissociated group inside to lead the others. These will often be created from core splits, because the Programmers want them to be extremely strong, stable alters in the system.

Many Programmers will place a part designed after themselves in the subject, over the internal programmers. Programmers are also very hierarchy conscious themselves. They know a system without hierarchy inside to direct things will be a system in disarray. A subject's system must not be leaderless. The subject may mimic accents, mannerisms, and even claim the Programmer's life history as their own.

These councils will be seen as holding power of life or death, and the child or youth will do anything to gain their favour. The trainer will help with the internalization, using photographs or holographic images of the people to burn them in. Each member of the group will be given different leadership tasks.

It is not uncommon for the subject to incorporate a parent, both parents, and grandparents, into their internal leadership hierarchy in a generational subject.

The internal councils will correlate roughly to the outside council. An internal leadership council may be named: System Above, Ascended Masters, Supreme council, Regional council, World council, may be found. The councils found will vary with each subject.

Triads of three elders may be created.

Platinum's may have a head council of three

Jewels will have a triad, made up of ruby, emerald, diamond to rule over the others.

High priests and priestesses may sit on ruling councils inside.

The child at age twelve will be presented to these groups in a formal coming of age ceremony. This ceremony is considered an honour, and will involve the child being traumatized and accepting the leadership of the council for the rest of their life. Undying loyalty is promised. There may be other occasions the subject will be forced to come before the councils throughout their lives, either for judgment, to pass tests, for punishment, or elevation.

Personality Categories for Parts

The Programmer knows understanding the personality of the part is worth far more than a thorough knowledge the category they have been assigned. For programming purposes a part must be created with a personality template. There are psychological emotional templates that are used for each part that will be created with a full personality.

In the opening phases of programming, the programmer must choose the template they would like to apply to the part. The categories are based upon the subject's s past is always reflected, however dimly, in an alter's present ethics and behaviour. Parts do change, but what appears to be new behaviour or a new psychological pattern is usually just a variant on the old theme. Some created parts will not fit into any one of the nine categories. Like all other typologies, the system has overlap, so that some parts will show characteristics of more than one category.

Those who find these psychological-emotional categories valuable should use them and those who do not should let them alone. The nine major groups within the psychological-emotional category are:

The orderly-obstinate personality. Created parts in this category are characteristically frugal, orderly, and cold; frequently they are quite intellectual. They are not impulsive in behaviour. They tend to think things through logically and to act deliberately. They often reach decisions very slowly. They are far less likely to make real personal sacrifices for a cause than to use them as a temporary means of obtaining a permanent personal gain. They are secretive and disinclined to confide in anyone else their plans and plots, which frequently concern the overthrow of some form of authority. They are also stubborn, although they may pretend cooperation or even believe that they are cooperating. They nurse grudges.

The orderly-obstinate personality considers themselves superior to other individuals. Sometimes their sense of superiority is interwoven with a kind of magical thinking that includes all sorts of superstitions and fantasies about controlling their environment. They may even have a code of morality that is all their own. They sometimes gratify their feeling of secret superiority by provoking unjust treatment. They also try, characteristically, to keep open a line of escape by avoiding any real commitment to anything. They are -- and always have been -- intensely concerned about their personal possessions. They are usually a tightwad who saves everything, has a strong sense of propriety, and is punctual and tidy. Their money and other possessions have for him a personalized quality; they are parts of themselves. He often carries around shiny coins, keepsakes, a bunch of keys, and other objects having for himself an actual or symbolic value.

Usually the orderly-obstinate character has a history of active rebellion in childhood, of persistently doing the exact opposite of what they are told to do. As an adult they may have learned to cloak their resistance and become passive-aggressive, but their determination to get their own way is unaltered. They have merely learned how to proceed indirectly if necessary. The profound fear and hatred of authority, persisting since childhood, is often well-concealed in adulthood, For example, such a subject may confess easily and quickly under accusation, even to acts that they did not commit, in order to throw the programmer off the trail of a significant discovery (or, more rarely, because of feelings of guilt).

Government Programming: The Programmer who is dealing with an orderly-obstinate character should avoid the role of hostile authority. Threats and threatening gestures, table-pounding, pouncing on evasions or lies, and any similarly authoritative tactics will only awaken in such a subject their old anxieties and habitual defence mechanisms. To attain rapport, the Programmer should be friendly. It will probably prove rewarding if the room and the Programmer look exceptionally neat. Orderly-obstinate subjects often collect coins or other objects as a hobby; time spent in sharing their interests may thaw some of the ice. Establishing rapport is extremely important when dealing with this type.

The optimistic personality. This kind of alter is almost constantly happy-go-lucky, impulsive, inconsistent, and undependable. They seem to enjoy a continuing state of well-being. They may be generous to a fault, giving to others as they want to be given to. They may become an alcoholic or drug addict. They are not able to withstand very much pressure; they react to a challenge not by increasing their efforts but rather by running away to avoid conflict. Their convictions that "something will turn up", that "everything will work out all right", is based on their need to avoid their own responsibility for events and depend upon a kindly fate.

Such a part has usually had a great deal of over-indulgence in early life. They are sometimes the youngest member of a large family, is the child of a middle-aged woman (a so-called "change-of-life baby"). If they have met severe frustrations in later childhood, they may be petulant, vengeful, and constantly demanding.

When programming these parts, optimistic characters respond best to a kindly, parental approach. If withholding, they can often be handled effectively by the Mutt-and-Jeff technique. Pressure tactics or hostility will make them retreat inside themselves, whereas reassurance will bring them out. They tend to seek promises, to cast the Programmer in the role of protector and problem-solver; and it is important that the Programmer avoid making any specific promises that cannot be fulfilled, because the optimist turned vengeful is likely to prove troublesome.

The greedy, demanding personality. This kind of part affixes themselves to others like a leech and clings obsessively. Although extremely dependent and passive, they constantly demand that others take care of them and gratify their wishes. If they consider themselves wronged, they do not seek compensation through their own efforts but tries to persuade another to defend them on their behalf -- "let's you and him fight." Their loyalties are likely to shift whenever they feel that the sponsor whom they have chosen have let them down.

The greedy, demanding part often suffered from very early deprivation of affection or security. As an adult they continue to seek substitute parents who will care for them as their own.

The Programmer dealing with a greedy, demanding personality must be careful not to rebuff them; otherwise rapport will be destroyed. On the other hand, the Programmer must not accede to demands which cannot or should not be met. Adopting the tone of an understanding father or big brother is likely to make the part responsive. If they make exorbitant requests, an unimportant favour may provide a satisfactory substitute because the demand arises not from a specific need but as an expression of the subject's need for security. They are likely to find reassuring any manifestation of concern for their well-being.

In dealing with this personality type, and to a considerable extent in dealing with any of the types listed, the Programmer must be aware of the limits and pitfalls of rational persuasion. If the Programmer seeks to induce cooperation by an appeal to logic, they should first determine whether the part's resistance is based on logic. The appeal will glance off ineffectually if the resistance is totally or chiefly emotional rather than rational. Emotional resistance can be dissipated only by emotional manipulation.

Government Programming: Defectors of this type feel aggrieved because their desires were not satisfied in their countries of origin, but they soon feel equally deprived in a second land and turn against its government or representatives in the same way. The greedy and demanding character is subject to rather frequent depressions. He may direct a desire for revenge inward, upon himself; in extreme cases suicide may result. The true defector (as distinguished from the hostile agent in defector's guise) is likely to have a history of opposition to authority. The defectors who left their homelands because they could not get along with their immediate or ultimate superiors are also likely to rebel against authorities in the new environment Therefore defectors are likely to be found in the ranks of the orderly-obstinate, the greedy and deriding, the schizoids, and the exceptions.

The anxious, self-centred personality. Although this part is fearful, they are engaged in a constant struggle to conceal their fears. They are frequently a daredevil who compensates for their anxiety by pretending that there is no such thing as danger. They may be a Don Juan. They tend to brag and often lie through hunger for approval or praise. As a soldier or officer he may have been decorated for bravery; but if so, their comrades may suspect that their exploits resulted from a pleasure in exposing himself to danger and the anticipated delights of rewards, approval, and applause. The anxious, self-centred personality is usually intensely vain and equally sensitive.

Parts that show these characteristics are actually unusually fearful.

Of great importance to the Programmer is the opportunity provided by concealed anxiety for successful manipulation of the subject. Their desire to impress will usually be quickly evident. They are likely to be talkative. Ignoring or ridiculing their bragging, or cutting them short with a demand is likely to make them resentful and to stop the flow. Playing upon their vanity, especially by praising their courage, will usually be a successful tactic if employed skilfully.

Government Programming: Anxious, self-centred parts who are withholding significant facts, such as contact with a hostile service, are likelier to divulge if made to feel that the truth will not be used to harm them and if the Programmer also stresses the callousness and stupidity of the adversary in sending so valiant a subject upon so ill-prepared a mission. There is little to be gained and much to be lost by exposing the nonrelevant lies of this kind of subject. Gross lies about deeds of daring, sexual prowess or other "proofs" of courage and toughness are best met with silence or with friendly but noncommittal replies unless they consume an inordinate amount of time. If operational use is contemplated, recruitment may sometimes be effected through such queries as, "I wonder if you would be willing to undertake a dangerous mission."

The guilt-ridden personality. This kind of part has a strong cruel, unrealistic conscience. Their whole life is devoted to reliving their feelings of guilt. Sometimes they seem determined to atone; at other times they insist that whatever went wrong is the fault of somebody else. In either event they seek constantly some proof or external indication that the guilt of others is greater than their own. They are often caught up completely in efforts to prove that they have been treated unjustly. In fact, they may provoke unjust treatment in order to assuage their conscience through punishment.

The causes of most guilt complexes are real or fancied wrongs done to parents or others whom the subject felt they should to love and honour. As children these parts have been frequently scolded or punished. Or they may have been "model" children who repressed all natural hostilities.

Government programming: They may "confess" to hostile clandestine activity, or other acts of interest to the government, in which they were not involved. Accusations levelled at them by the Programmer are likely to trigger such false confessions. Or they may remain silent when accused, enjoying the "punishment." They are a poor subject for LCFLUTTER. The complexities of dealing with conscience-ridden subjects vary so widely from case to case that it is almost impossible to list sound general principles. The best advice is that the Programmer, once alerted by information from the screening process or by the subject's excessive preoccupation with moral judgements, should treat as suspect any information provided by the subject about any matter that is of moral concern to him. Subjects with intense guilt feelings may cease resistance and cooperate if punished in some way, because of the gratification induced by punishment.

The personality wrecked by success is closely related to the guilt-ridden personality. This part cannot tolerate success and goes through life failing at critical points. They are often accident-prone. Typically they have a long history of being promising and of almost completing a significant assignment or achievement but not completing it. The personality who cannot stand success enjoys their ambitions as long as they remain fantasies but somehow ensures that they will not be fulfilled in reality.

Acquaintances often feel that the parts success is just around the corner, but something always intervenes. In actuality this something is a sense of guilt, of the kind described above. The part who avoids success has a conscience which forbids the pleasures of accomplishment and recognition. They frequently project their guilt feelings and feels that all of their failures were someone else's fault. They may have a strong need to suffer and may seek danger or injury.

These are parts who "cannot stand prosperity" and pose no problem unless the programming impinges upon their feelings of guilt or the reasons for their past failures. Then subjective distortions, not facts, will result. The successful Programmer will isolate this area of unreliability.

The schizoid or strange personality. This part lives in a world of fantasy much of the time. Sometimes they seem unable to distinguish reality from the land of their own creating. The real world seems to be empty and meaningless, in contrast with the mysteriously significant world that they have made. They are tremendously intolerant of any frustration that occurs in the outer world and deals with it by withdrawal into the interior realm.

They have no real attachments to other individuals, although they may attach symbolic and private meanings or values to other individuals.

Children reared in homes lacking in ordinary affection and attention or in state-run communes may become adults who belong to this category. Rebuffed in early efforts to attach themselves to another, they become distrustful of attachments and turn inward. Any link to a group or country will be undependable and, as a rule, transitory. At the same time the schizoid personality needs external approval. Though they retreat from reality, they do not want to feel abandoned.

As a created part the schizoid personality is likely to lie readily to win approval. They will tell the Programmer what he thinks the Programmer wants to hear in order to win the award of seeing a smile on the Programmer's face. Because they are not always capable of distinguishing between fact and fantasy, they may be unaware of lying. The desire for approval provides the Programmer with a handle. Whereas accusations of lying or other indications of disesteem will provoke withdrawal from the situation, teasing the truth out of the schizoid part may not prove difficult if they are convinced that they will not incur favour through misstatements or disfavour through telling the truth.

Government Programming: Like the guilt-ridden personality, the schizoid personality may be an unreliable subject for testing by LCFLUTTER because their internal needs lead them to confuse fact with fancy. This personality is also likely to make an unreliable source because of their incapacity to deal with facts and to form real relationships.

The exception personality. Believes that the world owes them a great deal. They feel that they suffered a gross injustice, usually early in life, and should be repaid. Sometimes the injustice was meted out impersonally, by fate, as a physical deformity, an extremely painful illness or operation in childhood, or the early loss of one parent or both. Feeling that these misfortunes were undeserved, the exceptions regard them as injustices that someone or something must rectify. Therefore they claim as their right privileges not permitted others. When the claim is ignored or denied, the exceptions become rebellious, as adolescents often do. They are convinced that the justice of the claim is plain for all to see and that any refusal to grant it is wilfully malignant.

Government Programming: When programmed by an outsider, the parts are likely to make demands for money, resettlement aid, and other favours -- demands that are completely out of proportion to the value of their contributions. Any ambiguous replies to such demands will be interpreted as acquiescence. Of all the types considered here, the exception is likeliest to carry an alleged injustice dealt him by the government to the newspapers or the courts.

The best general line to follow in handling those who believe that they are exceptions is to listen attentively (within reasonable time limits) to their grievances and to make no commitments that cannot be discharged fully. Defectors from hostile intelligence services, doubles, provocateurs, and others who have had more than passing contact with a if they belong to this category, prove unusually responsive to suggestions from the Programmer that they have been treated unfairly by the other service. Any planned operational use of such subjects should take into account the fact that they have no sense of loyalty to a common cause and are likely to turn aggrievedly against superiors.

The average or normal personality. This is not a part wholly lacking in the characteristics of the other types. They may, in fact, exhibit most or all of them from time to time. But no one of them is persistently dominant; the average subject's qualities of obstinacy, unrealistic optimism, anxiety, and the rest are not overriding or imperious except for relatively short intervals. Moreover, their reactions to the world around them are more dependent upon events in that world and less the product of rigid, subjective patterns than is true of the other types discussed.

Internal Programming Structure

Internally, the System must carry out the following functions: Protect all information and history that relates to the creation and use of the subject. All the structuring and codes of the system need to be guarded. The programming, things the subjects think about also need to be guarded. The subject is meant to be entirely self-governing. The delegation of authority allows both the Programmer and the handler to blame the subject for the instructions they carry out.

A way to teach internal structures to child subjects is Chinese checkers, chess, checkers. Alter patterns will be placed on the boards of these games with different coloured pieces. A pawn can represent a lower part, a queen the Mother. The parts using this visual aid can be coded, coloured and managed. Levels can be superimposed upon each other in the subject's mind using these boards. Take one pattern with parts labelled off, and place the superimposed pattern of pieces over the same place. This is how several different structures can be tied together in one locality in the mind. This is one way structures can be layered in. The Hexagram checker board used in Chinese checkers is called The House of David internally.

Internally, the Programmer will begin with making the System with the core related parts and then the front parts. The front parts will be arranged in a fashion that the structure of the System is confused. The front parts will be given heavy programming, to convince them that nothing happened to them, and they have a satisfactory life. They will be given fictitious stories about the programming, so that almost every item in a System has a cover story to mislead a part about what is going on.

Datums and grids are used to map a System. Some systems are built with three hour glasses each spinning on a x,y, or z axis. The hour glasses could be turned and in so doing the entire system of alters could be turned. The front alters are at the top of the hour glass and the Programmer wants to access the parts at the bottom of the system. The system needs to be rotated 180 degrees so that the bottom parts are now on top. The bottom parts can be given authority to hold the body full time. Codes should be given to given the System to make a shift when the handler needs to turn a System.

An alphanumeric grid is a simple coordinate system on a grid in which each cell is identified by a combination of a letter and a number.

An advantage over numeric coordinates, which use two numbers instead of a number and a letter to refer to a grid cell, is that there can be no confusion over which coordinate refers to which direction.

Algebraic chess notation uses an alphanumeric grid to refer to the squares of a chessboard.

The Base Datums used in mapping a system are: horizontal datum, and vertical datum.

Some systems used to map programming are: WGS 84, 72, 64 and 60 of the World Geodetic System, Polar Coordinate System, Cylindrical coordinate system, Spherical coordinate system, Homogeneous coordinates, Plücker coordinates, Cartesian coordinate system, Waxholm space to name a few

When the programming is being completed the structure of the System will be tied together in one bundle. Everything is built on its own x-y axis. Each 13x13 grid has the middle rows both vertically and horizontally set up as runways. The x-y axis also makes up the hourglass lines or the butterfly wings. Both images are used with subjects. Because things are set up in groups of thirteen items are double coded, thirteen becomes 13-1 and another is 1-13. This allows programmers to link 13-1 and 1-13, so that everything becomes a circle. The circle within a circle, box within a box concept, triangle within triangle leads the subject to feel they are trapped in an infinity loop of programming.

A typical system will constructed as a cube, sphere or pyramids. The principle parts will be the "A" parts. A typical section of parts will consist of a 13 x 13 grid of parts. These are parts that live in an internal structure together and must function together. A 13 x 13 section will have 13 groups of "A" through in “Z" parts. The "A" parts will be the primary parts that the programmers interact with. The Programmer may call up an "A" part and ask it to go get the "C" part in its family, rather than directly asking for them.

The first page of part codes will be the primary or "A" parts. If we are dealing with a 13 x 13 x 13 cube of parts, then the initial page has 13 "A" parts for each section. Many of the functions can receive a standard code, but other items require individual codes.

The "A" parts are regular parts. Many of them have been hypnotically age advanced to see themselves as teenagers or adults. Sometimes "B" and "C" parts are also aged. The "D" through "N" parts are generally left as they were split and most of them are infantile, with little concept of how old they are.

Each section is walled off from another section by amnesia. Each trauma has an amnesia wall built around it. Each trauma memory is sectioned off. That walled off section is a piece of memory that will be identified, and a hypnotic cue attached by the programmers that will pull it up to the conscious mind. If the programmer wishes, the part can be given a history, name, job, and developed into a full personality.

As Programmers structure a system, no-talk walls at calculated intervals where all communication and visibility between parts is walled off must be layered in. These No-talk walls are specifically built structures and not the result of normal amnesia. A 13 x 13 grid may have 2 No-talk walls.

Other methods will be used to divide all the levels from each other. The level of trance for level 3 will be different than the level of trance for level 10. The anchor cues for level 5 will not be the same as 9.

18 Universal System Parts

Systems must be customized to the subject, and the faction the subject will belong to, the programmers, the abilities of the subject, and tasks involved the subject must do. No two systems are alike but these parts should be placed in all systems.

Protectors:
Intellectuals
Denial parts
Controllers
Child alters
Punishers
Feeling alters
Internal councils
Sexual parts
Amnesic alters
The workers
Hosts
The core
Function code fragments
Spiritual parts

Each level of the system should have 15 groups of parts placed in. These groups will work together to maintain the structure of that level. Once these groups are placed in, the Programmer can create parts for outside world purposes.

Group 1 --*Theta Structure*
Group 2 --*Theta Blockage*
Group 3 --*Mind Structure*
Group 4 --*Mind Blockage*
Group 5 --*Body Structure*
Group 6 --*Body Blockage*
Group 7 --*Social Life Structure*
Group 8 --*Social/Life Blockage*
Group 9 --*Physical System Structure* Note: in general terms this group tries to keep the system interested in existing and not attempting suicide.
Group 10 --*Physical Blockage*
Group 11 --*Existence Structure*
Group 12 --*Existence Blockage*
Group 13 --*Spiritual Structure*
Group 14 --*Spiritual Blockage*
Group 15 --*Final Structure* (Parts maintaining the structure of the program)

System Protectors

As a protective and corrective measure all levels should have the following alters in place:
Guardian
Over soul
Holder
Suppressor
Denier
Misdirector
Invalidator
Resimilator

Systems built upon triads are extremely strong, unbreakable, and will often be programmed in threes: three backups, three system controllers, etc.

Core Structures in Systems

Computer System: Internal computers are complex. The first thing created are the inside personalities. Then these parts are placed into a structured system. To operate that structured system and to insure compliance the Programmer must place in Omega programming. Omega programming consists of computers, wiring, conduits and cords. These computers contain the instructions, and are controlled by internal Programmers. This is done by taking hundreds of parts dehumanizing them and turning them into parts of a computer.

During early programming, the subject while being tortured can be shown a structure of a castle, doll house, school, or office building with numerous rooms. The rooms will each have a separate colour. The rooms would be linked in the subject's mind to computers. If the system is a solar system, alien programming is used and aliens are placed in the subject to maintain the computers. In occult programming high level demons are attached to the internal Programmers.

Each alter is linked to an internal computer. Since each section of parts has to remain clandestine they are attached to its own computer. The computers are built to link the mapped sections. A major backup computer is built, and finally the internal Beast computer which sets at the bottom of the subconscious mind.

For example, the All-seeing eye of the computer is a child part that monitors what occurs in the system subconsciously if discovered and pulled to the front this computer part will not be able to vocalize about the system. The software for a computer can be programmed into it, and all the individual programming of every part can then be tied back to the computer. Each alter would be programmed on how to view life, to act, to think, and to function in their job.

Internal communication.

Various internal communication means must be built into the System. Choices of parts are allowed contact with other parts. Portals and one-way mirrors or one-way windows are built in. Parts will need to have the ability to communicate with one another to insure the integrity of the system. Guardian parts on each level should be able to communicate as well as protector parts, cult/occult parts, and what the Programmer and handler deem necessary.

Parts can have several possible means of interactions which are:

Two-way amnesia, where neither part knows about the other's existence. This is what Programmers want for most parts.

One-way amnesia, where A alter knows B alter, but B doesn't know A. This can be accomplished by setting in one-way mirrors.

Co-presence, two parts can come on top of one another at the front of the mind and hold the body together. This produces some strange behaviour for the subject as different parts synthesize their thoughts.

Co-conscious, this is when two alters are aware of what each other is thinking. As the Programmers structure a System, they build in No-talk walls every so often where all communication and visibility between alters is walled off. These No-talk walls are specifically built structures and not the result of normal amnesia.

If front structures are eliminated due to outside interference the system will turn to substantial internal reprogramming, and link primal traumas with the new programs. The internal programming parts are also always alert and will restructure the system constantly if parts work against their programming. Restructuring is a process that can continually go on, not something completed when the subject was a child. For instance, new levels of parts can and are created when the subject is in their 30s, either by the internal or external Programmers.

Internal Travel. There is an anchoring memory that the Programmers begin with of travel. Psychotropics are used to give the subject the sensation of moving. In large systems, the Programmers will use an anchor all of the parts are familiar with. Spaceships, teleporters, trains, escalators, tunnels, secret doors, and other means are planted so parts can travel internally.

When a large system comes in for reprogramming, the Programmer or handler can call up a large section by code and work with a vast amount of alters at once. Far-reaching changes can be made by external Programmers, who can work much more rapidly than the internal Programmers.

Besides programs, items are placed into the mind too. Examples include vaults, safes and doors which need combinations and keys.

19 Goals of Programming

Goals are written, objective future conditions that contain a plan to achieve them. The actual terminology of goals, objectives, plans, and conditions isn't as important as making a goal and seeing the route toward that goal.

Obtain control of the future activities (physical and mental) of any given individual, willing or unwilling by application of SI (sleep induction) and H (hypnosis) techniques.

Can we "condition" by post-H (hypnotic) suggestion agency employees (or persons of interest to this agency) to prevent them from giving information to any unauthorized source or for committing any act on behalf of a foreign or domestic enemy?"2. Can we in a matter of an hour, two hours, one day, etc., induce an H condition in an unwilling subject to such an extent that he will perform an act for our benefit? (Long range).

Can we, while a subject is under SI and H control, show them a map and have them point out specific items, locations, etc., on the map? Can we also have them make detailed drawings, sketches, plans? Could any of the above be done under field conditions and in a very short space of time?

Can we by SI and H techniques force a subject (unwilling or otherwise) to travel long distances, commit specified acts and return to us or bring documents or materials? Can a person acting under post-H control successfully travel long distances?

Create by post-H control an action contrary to an individual's basic moral principles.

In a matter of an hour, two hours, one day, etc., induce an H condition in an unwilling subject to such an extent that he will perform an act for our benefit?

Seize a subject and in the space of an hour or two by post-H control have them crash an airplane, wreck a train, etc.?

Can we 'alter' a person's personality? How long will it hold?

How long can we sustain a post-H suggestion-unaided-with reinforcement?

Can we use SI and H to combat fatigue, produce extreme mental effort?

Can we design tests to determine whether or not an enemy subject has been conditioned by SI and H or any other method?

What would be fastest way to induce SI and H conditions – with drugs – or without any mechanical aids?

Can we detect SI and H by use of SI and H (regression)?

Can we devise a standard simple relatively fast technique for inducing SI and H conditions that can be used by untrained subjects (with or without drugs)?

Can the system govern its self, and what governing structures can we keep--since the structure itself is colonial?

Can the mind work together to help itself?

What are full details on Mind machines?

How effective can the ‘carotid artery technique’ be made? Can it be used while subject is unconscious? Is it faster than other techniques?

Can we make a ‘conditioned’ subject reveal by SI and H specifically how they were conditioned (drugs, torture, fatigue, hostage pressure, techniques)?

Can we devise a system for making unwilling subjects into willing agents and then transfer that control to untrained agency agents in the field by use of codes or identifying signs or credentials?

Is it possible to find a gas that can be used to gain SI control from a gas pencil, odourless, colourless: one shot, etc.?

Guarantee total amnesia under any and all conditions.

Use any sleep inducing agent be best concealed in a normal or commonplace item, such as candy, cigarettes, liquor, wines, coffee, tea, beer, gum water, aspirin tablets, common medicines, coke, tooth paste.

A knockout pill which can surreptitiously be administered in drinks, food, cigarettes, as an aerosol, etc., which will be safe to use, provide a maximum of amnesia, and be suitable for use by agent types on an ad hoc basis.

A material which can be surreptitiously administered by the above routes and which in very small amounts will make it impossible for a person to perform physical activity.

Use SI and H extract complicated formula from scientists, engineers, etc., if unwilling.

Connect the relation of their behaviour to some stimulus.

Physical methods of producing shock and confusion over extended periods of time and capable of surreptitious use.

Place subject’s self esteem or self concept in the no longer true position.

Place subject's relationship in the no longer true but used to be location.

Materials which will produce the signs and symptoms of recognized diseases in a reversible way so that they may be used for malingering.

Materials which will render the induction of hypnosis easier or otherwise enhance its usefulness.

Materials and physical methods which will produce amnesia for events preceding and during their use.

Materials which will cause the subject to age faster/slower in maturity.

Materials which will promote the intoxicating effect of alcohol.

Materials which will cause temporary/permanent brain damage and loss of memory.

A material which will cause mental confusion of such a type that the individual under its influence will find it difficult to maintain a fabrication under questioning.

Substances which will produce "pure" euphoria with no subsequent let-down.

Substances which increase the efficiency of mentation and perception.

Substances which will enhance the ability of individuals to withstand privation, torture and coercion during interrogation and so-called "brain-washing".

Substances which produce physical disablement such as paralysis of the legs, acute anemia, etc.

Substances which will produce a chemical that can cause blisters.

Substances which alter personality structure in such a way that the tendency of the recipient to become dependent upon another person is enhanced.

Substances which will lower the ambition and general working efficiency of men when administered in undetectable amounts.

Substances which promote weakness or distortion of the eyesight or hearing faculties, preferably without permanent effects.

Substances which will promote illogical thinking and impulsiveness to the point where the recipient would be discredited in public.

Could any of the above be done under field conditions and in a very short space of time?

20 Subliminal Perception

The use of subliminal perception is a method to keep the subject unaware of the source of their stimulation. The desire is not to keep them unaware of what they are doing, but rather to keep them unaware of why they are doing it, by masking the external cue or message with subliminal presentation and so stimulating an unrecognized motive. In order to develop the subliminal perception process for use as a reliable programming technique, it would be necessary

To define the composition of a subliminal cue or message that will trigger an appropriate pre-existing motive.

To determine the limits of intensity between which this stimulus is effective but not consciously perceived,

To determine what pre-existing motive will produce the desired abnormal action and under what conditions it is operative, and to overcome the defences aroused by consciousness of the action itself. As to the composition of the subliminal cue, it cannot be supposed that just any message presented below the threshold of recognition will be translated into appropriate action. The determination of the right kind of message in terms of content, number and type of words or symbols, grouping of symbols, must be considered. Since the effectiveness of the procedure depends on not arousing the subject’s defence mechanisms, and since defence mechanisms are not only peculiar to each subject but hard to discover, it is difficult to specify even what is to be avoided in the composition of the subliminal cue in order not to arouse the defences.

Thresholds of recognition are variable and difficult to determine. If the intensity of the stimulus is much below a subject’s threshold it doesn't get through to even the most automatic areas of their sensorium. But recognition thresholds vary tremendously, not only among subjects, but also in the same subject from one time to another, in accordance with their physical situation, physiological condition, and above all the degree to which they are psychologically attuned to the particular content of the message.

The message must be transmitted on a much wider intensity band and may frequently not get through or may on the other hand penetrate to the subject's consciousness and arouse their defences. The message once received is presumed to trigger sensitive subconscious motivation to action. If the subliminal cue is to work by tripping off an existing motive to action, one must know what motives are positive and operant at the moment. The obvious basic drives (e.g. hunger, sex) are sometimes satiated and sometimes subordinated. With a great deal of knowledge about the subject, some predictability can be attained, but it is still a matter of probabilities.

21 Human Experimentation

If it is deemed appropriate advise the subject they are a human experiment. This may or may not be true. The following list explains the reasons the subject could be advised of this:

It creates immense fear and helplessness in the subject. They will reason if it is an experiment they will have to fight hard to survive.

It devalues the subject greatly. They will feel that they have no real value as a human being, that all they are is an experiment. Someone who feels devalued doesn’t care, and will be willing to do things they wouldn’t if they felt some value, some humanization.

It gives the programmer added power, as they are the one who can begin or stop the experiment. Almost always, when the subject is advised they are an experiment, it isn’t really true. When the handler/programmer actually does experiments, the subjects are never told, because it could bias results. The fear could interfere with drug effects, and skew the results. Most recent programming experimentation has been in the area of: drug effects: using different drugs, both alone and in new combinations and dosages, to induce trance states and open the subject to training. Drugs are sought after which will shorten the period needed to induce a trance state, which are quickly metabolized, and leave no detectable residues the next day.

22 Scripts

The script will generally consist of four separate parts;

(1) an identifier (subject's name, description, or other identifying factor),
(2) trigger activation condition or conditions (when, what or how the suggestion will trigger),
(3) the content (what the trigger will precipitate in the perception of the subject),
(4) and a duration (when or under what conditions will it stop or finish). Additional reinforcing scripts are usually added to "strengthen" or reinforce the central posthypnotic command.

The programmer will play the movie for the subject. The subject is told that they will be questioned about the movie; this cues the subject to use photographic recall about what they are viewing. The programmer may show the subject an edited shorter version of the movie, with only parts of the whole, or may show the subject a short scene from the movie.

After watching the movie, or scene, the subject is drugged, and then asked what they remember. The subject will be shocked if they cannot recall items the programmer questions them about and will be forced to watch the scenes again.

When the subject has total recall of the segments, the programmer will tell the subject that they are one of the characters. The subject will be heavily traumatized and a blank slate part created to be the desired character. The first thing the part will see is footage of the movie, or scene. This is its “first memory”. The programmer will link the scene with principles. The subject will be taught concealed meanings in the movie. The subject will be praised for being one of the few subjects who understand what the movie really means. The script programming will often be linked to other programming the subject is undergoing.

Music from the movie, or scene, will be used as a trigger to access the programming inside or bring forward parts.

Scripted programming will often involve a great deal of traumatisation, to create the “blank slate” alters desired. The programming will be ground in with repetition, electroshock, torture, drugging and hypnosis. The alters inside who have gone through this programming will often be highly disconnected from external reality and may believe that they are part of a “script”.

23 Programming Music

The programmers hypnotically make the lyrics of songs cues for subjects. Newly released songs can re-enforce standard programming.

The programmers will create a play list of songs tailored to the subject. During decided torture the song will be played with the lyrics used as the script. A specific alter will be given the script and the task to follow.

Songs are used that fit the script being used for inside building. Wizard of Oz songs are used in foundation programming. Disney songs are used in Disney program specific to the music.
Trigger phrases are found in music, as well as symbols in the videos of the music. The symbols help reinforce internal programming across structures.

Often subject’s will sing the songs to themselves as self programming.

24 Double Bind

Double bind communication is commonly given by programmers and handlers. For example, a child may be given the choice to beat up another child or be assaulted themselves. There are many games the programmer can utilize to place a subject in a double bind.

A programmer can create parts which are given negative spiritual roles with names to match. A part may be named Unforgiveness, Shame, Whore, and Sin for example. For such a part to trust someone, makes the part feel like it is giving up its name, and therefore its identity. By combining the name with an identity the programming intends to double bind the part.

Another technique is to alternate leniency with harshness. When punishment is partnered with kindness, the effect is devastating and disconcerting because the subject looses the ability to predict what is going to happen. The subject doesn't know what hate and like are anymore. The person, who claims to care for them tortures or abandons them to be tortured by someone else. Predicting what is going to occur subjects attempt to gain control over their environment. This control must be stripped from a subject. They soon learn to quit trying to protect themselves, and they quit trying to think for themselves but submit to the environment around them.

25 Pain

Every subject will react very differently to pain. The wide range of individual reactions to pain may be partially explicable in terms of early conditioning. The subject whose first encounters with pain were frightening and intense may be more violently affected by its later infliction than one whose original experiences were mild. Or the reverse may be true, and the subject whose childhood familiarized him with pain may dread it less, and react less, than one whose distress is heightened by fear of the unknown. The individual remains the determinant.

If a subject is caused to suffer pain rather late in the Programming process and after other tactics have failed, they will conclude the Programmer is becoming desperate. They may decide if they can hold out against this assault, they will win the struggle. Subjects who have withstood pain are more difficult to handle by other methods. The effect has been not to repress the subject but to restore his confidence and maturity.

It has been plausibly suggested that, whereas pain inflicted on a subject from outside himself may actually focus or intensify their will to resist; their resistance is likelier to be sapped by pain which they seem to inflict upon themselves. In the simple torture situation the contest is one between the subject and their programmer.

Subjects who are faced with intractable pain will be difficult to programme. The reason is that they can then interpret the pain as punishment and hence as expiation. There are also subjects who enjoy pain and its anticipation and who will be difficult to programme if they are given reason to expect that strong resistance will result in the punishment that they want. Subjects of considerable moral or intellectual stature often find in pain inflicted by others a confirmation of the belief that they are in the hands of inferiors, and their resolve not to submit is strengthened.

26 Malingering

The detection of malingering is not a programming technique, coercive or otherwise. The history of programming has subjects who have attempted to evade the pressures of programming by feigning physical or mental illness. Programmers may encounter seemingly sick or irrational subjects at times. A few tips may make it possible for the Programmer to distinguish between the malingerer and the subject who is genuinely ill, and because both illness and malingering are sometimes produced by coercive programming some guidelines follow.

Most subjects who feign a mental or physical illness do not know enough about it to deceive the well-informed. An important element in malingering is the frame of mind of the Programmer. A subject pretending madness awakens in a Programmer not only suspicion but also a desire to expose the fraud, whereas a well subject who pretends to be concealing mental illness and who permits only a minor symptom or two to peep through is much likelier to create in the Programmer a desire to expose the hidden sickness.

Under the influence of appropriate drugs the malingerer will persist in not speaking or in not remembering, whereas the symptoms of the genuinely afflicted will temporarily disappear. Another technique is to pretend to take the deception seriously, express grave concern, and tell the "patient" that the only remedy for his illness is a series of electric shock treatments or a frontal lobotomy.

27 Debility

Programmers have employed various methods of inducing physical weakness: prolonged constraint; prolonged exertion; extremes of heat, cold, or moisture; and deprivation or drastic reduction of food or sleep. The assumption is that lowering the subject’s physiological resistance will lower their psychological capacity for opposition. If this notion were valid, however, it might reasonably be expected that those subjects who are physically weakest at the beginning of programming would be the quickest to capitulate, a concept not supported by experience. The available evidence suggests that resistance is sapped principally by psychological rather than physical pressures. The threat of debility - for example, a brief deprivation of food - may induce much more anxiety than prolonged hunger, which will result after a while in apathy and, perhaps, eventual delusions or hallucinations. In brief, it appears probable that the techniques of inducing debility become counter-productive at an early stage. The discomfort, tension, and restless search for an avenue of escape are followed by withdrawal symptoms, a turning away from external stimuli, and a sluggish unresponsiveness.

Another objection to the deliberate inducing of debility is that prolonged exertion, loss of sleep, etc.; themselves become patterns to which the subject adjusts through apathy. The Programmer should use his power over the resistant subject's physical environment to disrupt patterns of response, not to create them. Meals and sleep granted irregularly, in more than abundance or less than adequacy, the shifts occurring on no discernible time pattern, will normally disorient a subject and sap their will to resist more effectively than a sustained deprivation leading to debility.

28 The Programming Plan

Before the Programming begins with a subject authorization for Programming must be obtained. At this stage, the framework for how the Programming is to occur is planned, including the level of coercion that is permitted.

Programmers: There must always be a minimum of two programmers working with a subject. This prevents a programmer from being either too severe, or permissive, developing too close a bond with the subject; the watchful eye of the other programmer prevents this. Lead programmers are paired with least experienced programmers. The Lead programmer will teach the assistant programmer, who does most of the actual work. If the assistant programmer is unable to finish a task, the lead programmer will step in.

Planning for programming is more important than the specifics of the plan. Because no two subjects and Programmers are alike, the Programming cannot realistically be planned from A to Z, in all its particulars, at the outset. But it can and must be planned from A to F or A to M. The chances of failure in unplanned programming are unacceptably high. An unplanned approach can ruin the prospects of success even if sound methods are used later.

The intelligence category to which the subject belongs to, though not determinant for planning purposes, is still of significance.

The plan for the programming of a re-call differs from that for other types because the time available for programming is often brief.

Traitors can usually be programmed unilaterally, at least for a time. The time available for unilateral testing and exploitation should be calculated at the outset.

If the reprogramming of a traitor of any other subject who is expected to resist is under consideration a general rule is it is difficult to succeed in the programming of a resistant subject unless the programming service can control the subject and their environment for as long as proves necessary.

The Specific Purpose

Before the Programmer moves into action the programmer has clearly in mind what they want to complete, the codes for the session, triggers for parts, and how the session can best be completed. This leads to appropriate research and preparation of methods and techniques which the Programmer will use. As the subject being programmed may successfully resist some approaches, multiple strategies and tactics may be readied.

Any confusion, or any questioning based on the premise that the purpose will take shape after the programming is under way, is almost certain to lead to aimlessness and final failure. If the specific goals cannot be discerned clearly, further planning is needed before the session starts.

Resistance

The kind and intensity of anticipated resistance is estimated. It is useful to recognize in advance whether the session would be threatening or damaging in any way to the interests of the programmers. If so, the programmer should consider whether the session, or goal of the session, can be gained in another capacity. Programming subjects immediately, on a flimsy plan, and unclear goal, will be a waste of time.

The preliminary psychological analysis of the subject makes it easier to decide whether they are likely to resist and, if so, whether their resistance will be the product of fear that their personal interests will be damaged or the result of the non-cooperative nature of orderly-obstinate and related types. The choice of methods to be used in overcoming resistance is also determined by the characteristics of the subject.

The Programming Setting

The room in which the Programming is to be conducted should be free of distractions. The colours of walls, ceiling, rugs, and furniture should not be startling. Pictures should be missing or dull. Whether the furniture should include a desk depends not upon the programmer's convenience but rather upon the subject's anticipated reaction to connotations of superiority and officialdom. A plain table may be preferable. An overstuffed chair for the use of the subject is sometimes preferable to a straight-backed, wooden chair because if they are made to stand for a lengthy period or is otherwise deprived of physical comfort, the contrast is intensified and increased disorientation results. The value of arranging the lighting so that its source is behind the programmer and glares directly at the subject or the lighting is soft. The effect upon a cooperative source is inhibitory, and the effect upon a resistant source may be to make them more stubborn. Like all other details, this one depends upon the personality of the subject.

Good planning will prevent interruptions. If the room is used for purposes other than Programming, a "Do Not Disturb" sign or its equivalent should hang on the door when the session is under way. The effect of someone wandering in because they forgot their pen or wants to invite the programmer to lunch can be devastating. For the same reason there should not be a telephone in the room; it is certain to ring at precisely the wrong moment. Moreover, it is a visible link to the outside; its presence makes a subject feel less cut-off, better able to resist.

The Programming room affords ideal conditions for photographing the subject without their knowledge by concealing a camera behind a picture or elsewhere.

If a new safe house is to be used as the programming site, it should be studied carefully to be sure that the total environment can be manipulated as desired. For example, the electric current should be known in advance, so that transformers or other modifying devices will be on hand if needed.

Arrangements are usually made to record the Programming, transmit it to another room, or do both. Most experienced programmers do not like to take notes. Not being saddled with this chore leaves them free to concentrate on the subject and how they respond, and what else they are doing. Another reason for avoiding note-taking is that it distracts and sometimes worries the subject. Another advantage of the tape is that it can be played back later. Upon some subjects the shock of hearing their own voices unexpectedly is unnerving. A recording is also a valuable training aid for programmers, who by this means can study their mistakes and their most effective techniques. Exceptionally instructive programming, or selected portions thereof, can also be used in the training of others.

If possible, audio equipment should also be used to transmit the proceedings to another room, used as a listening post. The main advantage of transmission is that it enables the Doctors in charge of the Programming to note crucial points and map further strategy, replacing one programmer with another, timing a dramatic interruption correctly, etc. It is also helpful to install a small blinker bulb behind the subject or to arrange some other method of signalling the programmer, without the subjects knowledge, that the programmer should leave the room for consultation or that someone else is about to enter.

The Participants

Subjects are programmed separately for system building. Separation permits the use of a number of techniques that would not be possible otherwise. It also intensifies in the subject the feeling of being cut off from aid. Programming of two or more subjects with each other in order to produce blame or trauma bonding is especially dangerous if not preceded by separate Programming sessions which have evoked compliance from one of the subjects, or at least significant results involving both.

The number of programmers used for a single programming session varies from one to a large team. The size of the team depends on several considerations, chiefly the importance of the goal and the intensity of subject resistance. Although most sessions consist of one lead programmer, and assistant programmer and one subject, some of the techniques call for the presence of two, three, or four programmers. The two-man team, in particular, is can lead to unintended opposition and conflicts not called for by assigned roles. Planning and subsequent conduct should eliminate such cross-currents before they develop, because the subject will seek to turn them to their advantage.

Team members who are not otherwise engaged can be employed to best advantage at the listening post. Inexperienced programmers find that listening to the programming while it is in progress can be highly educational.

Once the session starts, the programmer is called upon to function at two levels. They are trying to do two seemingly contradictory things at once: achieve rapport with the subject but remain an essentially detached observer. Or they may project themselves to the resistant subject as powerful and ominous (in order to eradicate resistance and create the necessary conditions for rapport) while remaining wholly uncommitted at the deeper level, noting the significance of the subjects reactions and the effectiveness of their own performance. Poor programmers often confuse this bi-level functioning with role-playing, but there is a vital difference. The programmer who merely pretends on their surface performance, to feel a given emotion or to hold a given attitude toward the subject is likely to be unconvincing; the subject quickly senses the deception. Even children are very quick to feel this kind of pretence. To be persuasive, the sympathy or anger must be genuine; but to be useful, it must not interfere with the deeper level of precise, unaffected programming. Bi-level functioning is not difficult or even unusual; most people act at times as both performer and observer unless their emotions are so deeply involved in the situation that the critical faculty disintegrates. Through experience the programmer becomes adept in this dualism. The programmer who finds that they have become emotionally involved and is no longer capable of unimpaired objectivity should report the facts so that a substitution can be made. Despite all planning efforts to select a programmer whose age, background, skills, personality, and experience make him the best choice for the job, it sometimes happens that both programmer and subject feel, when they first meet, an immediate attraction or antipathy which is so strong that a change of programmers quickly becomes essential. No programmer should be reluctant to notify their superior when emotional involvement becomes evident. Not the reaction but a failure to report it would be evidence of a lack of competence or skill expected of a professional.

Other reasons for changing programmers should be anticipated and avoided at the outset. During the first part of the session the developing relationship between the programmer and the initially uncooperative subject is more important than the information obtained; when this relationship is destroyed by a change of programmers, the replacement must start nearly from scratch. In fact, they start with a handicap, because exposure to programming will have made the source a more effective resister. Therefore the ODO, Occult leader, or Mother of Darkness, should not assign as chief programmer whose availability will end before the estimated completion of the programming.

The Timing
Before Programming starts, the amount of time probably required and probably available to both programmer and subject should be calculated. If the subject is not to be under detention, their normal schedule is ascertained in advance, so that he will not have to be released at a critical point because he has an appointment or has to go to work.

Programming sessions with a resistant source that is under detention should not be held on an unvarying schedule. The capacity for resistance is diminished by disorientation. The subject may be left alone for days; and he may be returned to their cell, allowed to sleep for five minutes, and brought back to a Programming which is conducted as though eight hours had passed. The principle is that sessions should be so planned as to disrupt the source's sense of chronological order.

Interaction
This is the main body of the Programming when the Programmer interacts with the subject. This generally appears as a series of trauma techniques, scripting, coding, and fracturing of the psyche. This interaction may take place over a number of days and sessions, which may be limited or open ended in the duration that it may take.

The Termination
The end of a Programming should be planned before the session starts. The kinds of scripts, codes, anchors, trigger E.C.T, the methods employed, and even the goals sought may be shaped by what will happen when the end is reached. If the subject is to be released upon the completion of the programming session it is important to avoid an inconclusive ending. The poorest Programming is those that trail off into an inconclusive nothingness.

A number of practical terminal details should also be considered in advance. Are the subject’s clothing, and property to be returned to them, and will they be available in time? Are they to be paid? Are subsequent contacts necessary and have re-contact provisions been arranged?

The successful Programming of a subject ordinarily involves two key processes: the calculated regression of the subject and the provision of an acceptable ending. In this stage, the Programming is completed and. As appropriate and feasible, the Programmer may return to the previous stage to close any holes in the programming.

The end of a programming session is not the end of the programmer's responsibilities. From the beginning of planning to the end of the session it has been necessary to understand and guard against various troubles.

The isolation that the handlers impose on their subject to prevent real relationships with outsiders, and the strong bonding of the subject to its handler/programmer (trauma bonding, etc.) that is administered must remain intact.

29 The Opening

A principal goal during the opening phase is to confirm the personality assessment obtained through screening and to allow the programmer to gain a deeper understanding of the subject as an individual. Most resistant subjects can block off light programming for one or more of 4 reasons. The first is a specific negative reaction to the programmer. Poor initial handling or a fundamental antipathy can make a subject uncooperative. The third cause is some subjects are resistant "by nature" - i.e. by early conditioning - to any compliance with authority. The fourth is ideological resistance. The subject has identified themselves with a cause, a political movement or organization, or an opposition intelligence service. Regardless of their attitude toward the programmer, their own personality, and their fears for the future, the subject who is deeply devoted to a hostile cause will ordinarily prove strongly resistant under programming.

It is important for the programmer to note verbal projection; vocal tones, and the voice projects tension, fear, a dislike of certain topics, and other useful pieces of information. It is also helpful to watch the subject's mouth, which is as a rule much more revealing than their eyes. Gestures and postures also should be noted. If a subject normally gesticulates broadly at times and is at other times physically relaxed but at some point sits stiffly motionless, their posture is likely to be the physical image of their mental tension. The programmer should make a mental note of the topic that caused such a reaction.

The following is a list of physical indicators of emotions and recommends that programmers note them.

(1) A ruddy or flushed face is an indication of anger or embarrassment.

(2) A "cold sweat" is a strong sign of fear and shock.

(3) A pale face indicates fear.

(4) A dry mouth denotes nervousness.

(5) Nervous tension is also shown by clenching the hands tightly.

(6) Emotional strain or tension may cause a pumping of the heart which becomes visible in the pulse and throat.

(7) A slight gasp, holding the breath or an unsteady voice may betray the subject.

(8) Fidgeting may take numerous forms, all of which are good indications of nervousness.

(9) A subject under emotional strain or nervous tension will involuntarily draw their elbows to their sides. It is a protective defence mechanism.

(10) The movement of the foot when one leg is crossed over the knee of the other can serve as an indicator. The circulation of the blood to the lower leg is partially cut off, thereby causing a slight lift or movement of the free foot with each heart beat. This becomes more pronounced and observable as the pulse rate increases.

Pauses are also significant. But the successful establishment of rapport will tend to eliminate innocent blocks, or at least to keep them to a minimum.

The establishment of rapport is the second principal purpose of the opening phase of the programming. Sometimes the programmer knows in advance, as a result of screening, that the subject will be uncooperative. At other times the probability of resistance is established without screening: stubborn silence, closing of eyes without permission, holding of their breath, and other cues. A lack of rapport may cause a subject resist where otherwise they would cooperate freely, whereas the existence of rapport may persuade a subject who is initially determined to withhold to change their attitude.

Therefore the programmer must not become hostile if confronted with initial hostility, or in any other way confirm such negative attitudes they may encounter at the outset. During this first phase their attitude should remain business-like but also quietly (not ostentatiously) friendly and welcoming.

At this stage the programmer should avoid being drawn into conflict, no matter how provocative may be the attitude or language of the subject. If the programmer meets truculence with neither insincere protestation that they are is neither the subject's "pal" nor an equal anger but rather a calm interest in what has aroused the subject, the programmer has gained two advantages. They have established the superiority will be needed later, as programming develops, and increased the chances of establishing rapport.

How long the opening phase continues depends upon how long it takes to establish rapport or to determine that voluntary cooperation is unobtainable. Even though the cost in time and patience is sometimes high, the effort to make the subject feel that their Programmer is a sympathetic figure should not be abandoned. (unless, the programming does not merit much time). Otherwise, the chances are that the programming will not produce optimum results. In fact, it is likely to be a failure, and the programmer should not be dissuaded from the effort to establish rapport. The theory of programming is the result of a substitution of the programming world for the world outside as the sights and sounds of an outside world fade away, its significance for the subject tends to do likewise. That world is replaced by the programming room, its occupants, and the dynamic relationship between them. As programming goes on, the subject tends to respond in accordance with the values of the programming world rather than those of the outside.

The programmer who senses or determines in the opening phase that what they are hearing is a legend should resist the first, natural impulse to demonstrate its falsity. In some subjects previous programming is intertwined with preservation of the cover story that calling the subject (part) a liar will merely intensify resistance.

30 Beginning of Programming

The breaking down of ongoing patterns of the patient’s behaviour by means of particularly intensive electroshocks (depatterning) can be used to prepare the subject.

The intensive repetition (16 hours a day for 6 or 7 days) of the prearranged verbal signal will create a trigger for the subject when programming will begin. This will assist in placing the subject in the desired mental state. During this period of intensive repetition the subject is kept in partial sensory isolation.

Electrodes will be attached to the subject’s head to monitor electroencephalograph (EEG) patterns. When the subject is in the desired brainwave state, programming will begin. Programming oriented to self-destruction and debasement of the subject is the starting point.

While programming is occurring the subject will be placed on a metal table. They will have an IV in one hand or arm for the administration of drugs and other fluids. The subject extremities and head must be strapped down. The subject must also be naked so body regions and parts are easily accessible.

The subject will be given psychotropic medication every twenty-five to 30 minutes until the programming session is complete.

Programming under the influence of psychotropics in a specified brainwave state with binaural beats in one ear and speaking in the other ear.

Programming begins with specified method of torture. After a predetermined duration of torture the subject is will be in a state of aroused terror, disassociation, and altered brainwave state. At this point a script will be planted into the subject’s mind. This script will be linked to an alter, given a directive, trigger, and task. The part will be given an emotion, double bind, and consequence if they do not follow the directive, script, and leave the area they are placed into.

A subject may be tortured repeatedly until a new alter is created. This part will be given a trigger to let them know when to come out; this could be a smell, word, number, sound, colour or symbol. This trigger is corresponds with the alters’ creation.

After a subject has shattered, the Programmers find the Host part within the mind and gives them a personal history given a job within the system, a place to live in the internal world, and its rules and guide lines on how to function within the system. The Host part will be given scripts about the outside world.

If the Programmer concentrates on a single point when giving instructions they will get better results. Rather than complicating things for the subject, power is gained over the subject. The Programmer must give simple clear instructions. A large number of parts are given clear straight forward jobs.

Because their jobs are so clear-cut, these parts will often remain fragments, rather than parts with full blown personalities. An undeveloped alter will be given one clear, basic job. By stringing 100's of parts together with single tasks, a highly sensitive system of alters can be created.

Programmers individually tailor the scripts for each subject. The Wizard of Oz, Alice in Wonderland, and other books, are read prior to actual programming session. This will enhance the programming the subject's ability to retain the script.

Layer after layer of programming is put in. Each part or fragment is used as if it were a piece of a large system. The result is that no part or fragment is the whole, only a piece. It is very difficult for a single part of thousands of a system made of thousands to rebel.

Note: Programming must include parts whose task is to kill the body. Subjects cannot go without sleep for over 11 days. On the 12th day the subject must be allowed uninterrupted sleep.

31 Infant Programming

Children who are programmed are taught 4 important hypnotic abilities. These four abilities are: a. relaxation, b. visualization, c. concentration, and d. projection, which work in handling the subject along with the alpha state.

Intentional programming preferably begins before birth. Prenatal splitting is attempted as the fetus is very capable of fragmenting in the womb. This is completed between the seventh and ninth month of pregnancy.

Early intentional fragmentation: (ages 0 to 24 months) Techniques used include: placing headphones on the mother's abdomen, and playing loud, jarring music, having the mother ingest quantities of bitter substances, to make the amniotic fluid bitter or yelling at the fetus inside the womb. The mother's abdomen may be hit as well. Mild shock to the abdomen may be applied, especially when term is near, and may be used to cause premature labour, or ensure that the infant is born on a ritual high day; labour inducing drugs may be administered if a definitive birth date is desired.

Once the infant is born, testing is begun. During the first few weeks of life the programmers, will inspect for programming qualities in the newborn. The subject's reflexes will be checked against different stimuli. The infant's strength, their reaction to heat, cold, pain, light, touch, and sound are tested. The programmers are looking for dissociative ability, swift reflexes, and reaction times. Programmers and Drs are also looking for dissociation that they have attempted to start in vitro.

The infant will also be harmed to continue to encourage internal splitting. Methods of abuse include: rectal probes; digital anal rape; electric shocks at low levels to the fingers, toes, and genitalia; cutting the genitalia in ritual settings, bitter/hot ingestible substances placed in infant's mouth. The objective is to continue fragmentation so programming will be quicker, and adapt the infant to pain and reflexive dissociation.

Isolation and abandonment programming begins with the infant. The infant is isolated by programmers, intentionally during the daytime, then picked up, soothed, cleaned up and paid attention during the night. This is done to prepare the infant for night gatherings, and re-enforce programming for day time and night time parts.

From 15 to 18 months, intentionally fragmenting is continued with involvement of primary care givers as well as programmers. Trauma of the subject becomes more methodical. This is completed by intermittently soothing, and bonding with the subject then administering an electrical shock. The infant may be dropped from heights to a soft surface, loud noises, (banging, clapping, and music) and pinching to insure heightened awareness. The baby may be placed in a cage for periods of time with animals to start Epsilon programming.

Between the ages of 20 and 24 months, the subject will start the Steps of Obedience which the Programmers' use to teach the subjects how to be loyal to the family, handler, and programmer. Deprivation of food, water, and basic needs begin later in this stage. A child of this age may be taken to cult/occult gatherings. Outside of unique occasions, or dedications, the child will have no active role. Infants are usually left with a cult/occult member, who insures the child remains awake during this time.

By the time the child is four, the weaknesses and strengths that characterize the alter system have been recorded on charts and the child's destiny in life determined. The chart will read what occupation the child will be made into, and what its function for the overall plan will be.

Extreme Process: This method is very severe and usually is a two to five year program. Because of the severity of the suffering, the subject is usually permanently impaired from integration into mainstream life. The result is the subject must reside in a less competitive environment like a church group. Subjects that receive this program tend to be highly superstitious, are agitated easily when objective evidence that contradicts their belief system is presented. They tend to believe in the spiritual world (demons, ghosts, god, spiritual entities, etc) and consider the spiritual world to be more powerful and important than the material or real world. This program basically follows the following steps; REM deprivation, breakdown of self esteem and confidence, intense suffering, exaggerated conscience, spiritual contact, reborn in Jesus Christ, Spiritual battle, release (saved by the Saviour), and recovering (blessed by Jesus Christ). Whenever possible the Handler/Programmer will skip or reduce these steps to minimize security risk and financial cost.

32 Raising a Child Subject

Parents, as well as other caregivers of a child are given instructions on how to raise the child to be dissociative. The parents are advised their child will have a successful future and so will they if they follow the instructions.

Spend 15 minutes/day teaching the child to write backwards to develop the brain's flexibility.

Periods of prolonged isolation daily, such as dark closets, dark basements, the corners of dark rooms. During the prolonged isolation, the child cannot turn on the lights, go to the bathroom, and make noise or anything else. The child will learn to dissociate. The child is also trauma bonded to the abuser because each time the child is let out, they are grateful to the abuser.

The child can be drowned in a pool and then resuscitated--and the exact amount of time to keep the child under will be given. The child can be placed in a freezer, and again the exact amount of time can be given to the parent. The child is not to roam about the house freely. The adults' area is off-limits. The child must move with permission.

Systematic punishment without provocation with the message--keep secrets. Hear no evil, see no evil, do no evil. This needs to be done several times a week to reinforce the codes of silence and the programming for silence.

A needle which is gripped halfway up is stuck into the child a quarter inch deep on the child's muscles, buttocks or thigh to help continue dissociative behaviour. On special occasions (birthdays, holidays) the hands and feet which are most sensitive to pain are stuck. When the feet or hands are stuck, they will often stick the needles under the nails. The ears are also on occasion stuck with needles. It also conditions the child to obey the commands of their handlers, who will use needles to access the minds various personalities. Various spots on the body when stuck with needles along with certain codes become access points for specified alters.

Anytime a child argues, has a temper tantrum, or gets angry the child is to be punched. This is a quick trauma. It is to be followed with a lit cigarette applied to the child to burn the skin the moment the child becomes submissive. If a cigarette can't be found, a stove top or some other hot item is to be used. When the child is four years of age, they begin programming to burn themselves.

Anytime the child becomes wilful they are to have their mouth washed out with soap. The child should be made to chew off a piece and swallow the foam.

The child should be raped daily and tortured. This assists with sexual programming, and begins a reversal in the mind that pain is love, and pain is pleasure.

33 Detailed Programming

After rapport is established, detailed programming presents only routine problems. The major routine considerations are the following:

It is necessary to make every effort to keep the subject from learning through the programming process precisely where gaps lie. This principle is especially important if the subject is following their normal life, going home each evening and appearing only once or twice a week for programming, or if their bona fides remains in doubt.

It is sound practice to write up each programming report on the day of programming or, at least, before the next session, so that defects can be promptly remedied and gaps or contradictions noted in time.

As detailed programming continues, and especially at the half-way mark, the programmer's desire to complete the task may cause him to be increasingly business-like or even brusque. The programmer may tend to curtail or drop the usual inquiries about the subject's well-being with which they opened earlier sessions. He may feel like dealing more and more abruptly with reminiscences or digressions.

The programmers interest has shifted from the subject themselves, who just a while ago was an interesting subject, to the task of implanting scripts. But if rapport has been established, the subject will be quick to sense and resent this change of attitude. Any subject has their ups and downs, times when they are tired. The peculiar intimacy of the programming situation and the very fact that the programmer has deliberately fostered rapport will often lead the subject to bond. The programmer should neither cut off this bond abruptly. The subject from the beginning to the end of the process they should feel that the programmer's interest in them has remained constant. Unless the programming is soon over, the subject's attitude toward their programmer is not likely to remain constant. They will feel more and more drawn to the programmer or increasingly antagonistic.

Detailed programming ends only when (1) all scripts, codes, and parts are implanted. (2) The subject responds to programming cues. (3) The subject can respond to a call back. Until the subject dies or completes their purposes, their programming may be interrupted, perhaps for years -- but it has not been completed.

34 Stabilizing the Programming

The tortures and stress are all a part of programming. After a session of programming the subject’s mind will be in a high state of terror, shock, dissociativeness and splintering. The subject’s mind cannot endure more, and the potential of having uncontrolled splintering and having the destruction of the mind and programming threatens the programmers’ control. The programmer wants the mind and body to rest so that the programming can set in, without destabilizing events occurring. The subject will be administered a drug to induce a deep sleep. Sleep must occur within 10 to 15 minutes after the programming session.

Occasionally a subject's heart has been pushed to its limits during a trauma and the body must be shut down to allow the subject rest. Repression of the heart is carried out by putting the patient, after the conclusion of the programming is to induce continuous sleep for 7-10 days.

35 Split Brain Work

The brain is "bicameral" the hemispheres communicate via the corpus callosum. The left hemisphere is specialized in verbal-linguistic transduction of speech and analytical thinking (logic, math, cause and effect, language, and sequential thinking). The right side plays more of a role in holistic-metaphorical information transduction such as imagery (art, dance, intuition, subjective, spontaneous, holistic, and dream imagery). The primary role of creating imagery is carried out by the right side. The two hemispheres of the brain can operate separately at the same time.

Work is done by the Programmers to develop the thinking of alters from one side of the brain to think differently from those of the other side. Split brain programming is not just hypnosis. Split brain programming allows the Programmers a way to keep the left hand from knowing what the right hand is doing. It also gives them the ability to put in body programs or memories which affect only half of the subject's body.

In order for programmers to create alters which are highly intuitive and which are able to access the higher spiritual spheres, they need to shut down the logic hemisphere. When the left hemisphere is shut down, then the right brain (which controls the left hand and left side of the body, i.e. the left hand path) is able to function without competition. The subject must be able to get in touch fully their intuitive side to go into the spiritual realms where demons exist.

When one hemisphere is dominating what the brain is doing, the opposite nostril will open and take in air. When the right hemisphere is doing most of the thinking, the left nostril will be doing most of the breathing. Voluntary changes in nostril breathing can help shift the centre of brain activity from one side of the brain to the other. When a person lies on his side, the downward side hemisphere will be activated, because the top nostril will breathe best. The distinctions between the two hemispheres or two brains are used by the occult world. Moriah values the intuitiveness of the right hemisphere
Split brain programming, is completed by using four methods:

1. Shutting down one side and communicating only with one side of the brain. A medication is administered at the base of the skull into one hemisphere of the brain to shut it down, while the other hemisphere is kept awake. Torture is then carried out to split the mind. This results in creating programs and alters which are associated with only one side of the brain. The brain is being further divided from itself.

2. By simultaneously feeding different information to each hemisphere this is done by restraining the subject in place with their eyes forced open. Different movies are shown simultaneously to both eyes. High speed films will be shown with one hemisphere receiving horror scenes and the other getting family settings. This makes the two hemispheres work separately and the subject feels as if they are going insane. One hemisphere is trying to dissociate and is having a despondent experience, while the other side is experiencing something just the opposite. When high speed films are shown for split brain programming, the films are shown in 5 minute increments.

3. Use drugs that block the two hemispheres from communicating.

4. Speak into the left ear while giving the right ear confusing noise. This method is completed to force alters to concentrate when learning scripts.

Front alters may be shown good films to make them believe they live in a perfect world with a good family life. Right side occult alters may receive horror films shown via the left eye. The right side of the brain doesn’t verbalize well, so this is one reason subjects have emotions without the ability to verbalize them.

36 Applications for Drugs used in Programming

Drugs are used during programming. Although drugs used to assist programming mean nothing most individuals, they each have a specific purpose within a certain type of programming.

The overall effect of psychotropic programming on the subject, whether child or adult, is the mind at a deep level begins to doubt its ability to grasp the real from the imaginary. If the psychotropics are not controlled by the programmers, insanity could result for the subject. Further, psychotropics can pose a danger that they could clutter the internal world of the subject and splinter their mind uncontrollably.

Drugs are used in programming to establish a pattern or a script. There must be a pattern of dissociation. Parts can't just dissociate into nothing, otherwise there would be nothing to build on. Drugs will play a major role in the structuring of the alter system. The subject doesn't know where the effect of the drug is coming from. The programmer will take credit for the power of the drug. Whoever administers the drug has power in the subject's mind. The mind wants to be safe.

Some specific uses for drugs during programming include:

Placing people into trance About 90% of the population can be placed into the somnambulistic (the deepest) hypnotic trance by giving them hypnotic drugs. Drugs have been designed which will place individuals into a deep trance very quickly. If an alter is not being cooperative when they are accessed, they can be locked in place mentally and given a shot of a fast-acting hypnotic-inducing drug.

Teaching alters to go deeper into trance to escape drug effects and pain. Much of the training in this area is based upon the subject's horror and fear towards the master programmer. When the programmer wants the subject's alters to learn to trance deeper, they will give a drug that the alter doesn't like. The subject's alter will then be told to go deeper into the mind if they want to escape the effect of the drug. This enforces the dissociative state being trained for the alter. The suggested or story to give to the alter is frequently the image of a train. The subject is advised the conductor is at the front of the train, but they (the child) must move to the back of the train through the train cars. The subject is taught to count cars as they go by as if they were steps in the mind. This is training the subject to descend into deeper levels of the subconscious. The train illustration is used to assist the subject in remembering the drug experience. If the programmer desires and wants the subject to forget the drug experience while learning trance depths, then the imagery of a plane taking off and disappearing in the clouds is the image to use.

Enhancing the trauma Drugs will be used to enhance the spinning effect when the mind is being programmed to have vortexes and to set up traps within the subject's mind. One particular drug enhances the trauma by 100 times. Drugs can be useful to enhance a subject's terror of the experience. This helps shorten the programming time, and it also make the programming more intense. Marijuana enhances perception of colour and noise, but it is not used to enhance trauma. The mind does not program well under marijuana.

Producing out of body experiences Various hallucinogenic drugs, LSD included, will produce an out of body experience for the subject, if the drugs are administered correctly. The Programmer will prepare the subject with various information and story lines during the administration of the drug. PCP which is "angel dust" is one way to disconnect the cortex from the limbic system and go into an altered state.

Creating pain. This can be achieved through a number of medications.

Creating blood vessels that hurt. Blood pressure is raised by drugs and specific medications are added which make the veins burn. The alter is taught to cut the burning veins. This is programming which is laid in to control the subject from straying from the script they are given.

Controlling histamine production. Is used in conjunction with drug-assisted programming

Helping create illusions such as no hands, no feet, no face, no head etc. A programmer working with a hallucinogenic drug can make an alter believe that it has lost a particular body part. Because most of these alters have little memory or no memory and little frame of reference, what they are told while under the influence of drugs is real to them.

Teaching alters to stay in position Some alters don't like to stay in position. But through the use of drugs, and the side effect of drugs, they soon learn the importance of staying in position. If they are disobedient, the memory of the negative side effects from not staying in position in the mind can be pulled up by a code and the alter can relive the pain from having disobediently moved from position. This is very effective in teaching alters to stay in their position that is assigned them in the mind.

To assist other programming modalities, such as high tech harmonic machines, which implant thoughts. (The machines are used in conjunction with designer drugs.)
Another programming modality assisted by drugs is behaviour modification. Aversion therapy using a vomit-inducing drug is used on subjects. Another example of drugs helping assist programming is to administer a hallucinogen and interview the subject while they hallucinating. The hallucinations are then used as programming building blocks by using hypnotic techniques. One way to build on subject scripts while they are hallucinating is to advise the subject if they ever do a particular thing (such as touch programming, remember programming, and integrate parts, etc.) the subject is to have a mental breakdown and hallucinate as they are presently doing. By continually reinforcing this message, some alters will adopt the script "that they are doing the body good to kill it if any alter personality touches the programming," because the trauma would be too much to bear.

Hormones can be given to speed up sexual growth or slow it down. Other body developments may also be manipulated.

To enhance or reduce memory

To build the image of the programmer's power

Note: it is appropriate to point out that the personalities of a subject do not respond uniformly to the same dose of the same drug. Understanding how a drug will effect particular alters is a science in itself. If an alter is holding the body, it will receive more of the effect of a drug.

Some of the cautions that the programmers are alert to include:
Monitoring the heart so that it doesn't stop.
Making sure that drugs aren't given to subjects who are allergic to them.
Switching to herbs when the body is saturated with drugs.

Knowing how much of a drug each part can take, small young alters can’t take as much. Alters within a single system have varying levels of tolerance toward drugs. A young alter may be killed by an adult dosage, even though the age of the body is that of an adult.

Providing salt to balance the electrolytes in the mind of a programmed subject. An electrolyte imbalance can cause a subject’s system to spin.

Section II Applications

37 Brainwave Frequencies

This is a listing of frequencies that various parties have claimed can affect the human mind or body in some way. The following sorts of frequencies are included:

Brainwave Frequencies - These are frequencies associated with various mental states.

Healing Frequencies - These are frequencies that could be used to heal illnesses of different kinds, or stimulate some region of the body (chakras). The medium used to do this varies - some of these devices generate EM fields which are applied to a precise part of the body, while others use vibration and sound.

Natural Phenomena Frequencies - This includes natural frequencies that occur in nature (Schumann's Resonance, for instance), as well as sound tones calculated from the revolution/orbit of the various planets.

Cycles per Second (HZ), as they correspond to mental states, these frequencies are of all types; light, sound, electrical, etc.

Below 0.5 - Epsilon range, extraordinary states of consciousness, high states of meditation, ecstatic states of consciousness, high-level inspiration states, spiritual insight, out-of-body experiences, Yogic states of suspended animation.
0.1-1 Organ/muscle resonances
0.1-3 Delta range, - deep sleep, lucid dreaming, increased immune functions, hypnosis
0.16 - 10 - Neuralgias
0.18 - 10 - Mod. therapy
0.20 - 0.26 - Dental pain
0.20 - 10 - Post-traumatics
0.28 - 2.15 - Alcohol addiction
0.28 - 10 - Arthritis
0.30 - 0.15 - Depression
0.30 - 10 - Cervobrachial syndrome
0.37 - 2.15 - Drug addiction
0.40 - 10 - Confusion
0.45 - 10 - Muscle pain
0.5 - very relaxing, against headache, for lower back pain; Thyroid, reproductive, excretory stimulant, whole brain toner
0.5-1.5 Pain relief; endorphins, better hypnosis

0.5-4 Delta range, deep dreamless sleep, trance, suspended animation Anti-aging. Reduces amount of cortisol, a hormone associated with stress and aging. Increases the levels of DHEA (anti-aging) and melatonin (decreases aging process.) Associated with unconscious mind and sleep state - in conjunction with other frequencies in a waking state, Delta acts as a form of radar – seeking out information – reaching out to understand on the deepest unconscious level things that subjects can't

understand through thought process. Provides intuition, empathetic attunement and instinctual insight. Conducive to miracle type healing, divine knowledge, inner being and subject growth, rebirth, trauma recovery, "one with the universe" experiences (samadhi), near death experience, characterized by "unknowing", merely a blissful "being" state such as deep sleep or coma.
The anti-aging uses binaurals at 0.5, 1.0, 1.5, 2.0, 2.5, 3.0, 3.5 and 4.0 HZ. They all play simultaneously.
0.9 Euphoria
0.95 - 10 - Whiplash
1-3 - Delta: deep, dreamless sleep, trance state, non-REM sleep profound relaxation, restorative sleep, feelings of tranquillity and peace, if one can remain aware
There's disagreement over where the delta range begins and ends - 0.5 to 4.0 HZ. 0.1 to 3.0 HZ, and .considers it 0.5 to 3.0 HZ.
1.0 - Feeling of well-being, pituitary stimulation to release growth hormone; overall view of inter-relationships; harmony and balance.
1.05 Helps hair grow + get its colour back. Pituitary stimulation to release growth hormone (helps develop muscle, recover from injuries, rejuvenation effects).
1.2 - (used on) headaches.
1.45 - Tri-thalamic entrainment format. Creates entrainment between hypothalamus, pituitary and pineal. May benefit dyslexics + subjects with Alzheimer's.
1.5 Abrahams Universal Healing Rate .; Sleep .; Those subjects whose ailments have manifested into the fourth stage of Chronic Fatigue, where some form of disease is apparent, experienced a release from the negative sensation of their symptoms when moved into 1.5HZ
1.8 Sinus Congestion seems to clear centering around 1.8 HZ. (tested with binaural beats, primarily)
2.15 - 10 - Tendovaginatis.
2.06 Associated with coccyx (small triangular bone at end of the spinal column).
2.30 Associated with genitals.
2.5 - pain relief, relaxation. Production of endogenous opiates. Use for sedative effect reported use on bleeding, bruises, insomnia, and sinusitis. .
2.57 Associated with bladder.
2.67 Associated with intestines.

Some disagreement over the theta range - **divided it into two ranges, Theta1 (3.0-5.5 hz) and Theta2 (5.5-8.0 hz).**
3.0-5.5 - "Theta 1" Range. Divides the Theta Range into Theta1 and Theta2.
3.0 Increased Reaction Time 3.0 HZ and below used to reduce muscle tension headaches, but worked less well on migraines and sinus headaches. Used to treat allergies, in conjunction with 330 HZ.
3.07 Associated with hara (3cm or 1.5 inch below navel, balance of pelvis).
3 - 4 Influences physical vision.
3 - 6 Childhood awareness/vivid memories.
3 - 8 Theta Range deep relaxation, meditation, increased memory, focus, creativity, lucid dreaming, hypnagogic state .
3.4 - Sound sleep
3.5 - Feeling of unity with everything, accelerated language retention enhancement of receptivity Earth Resonance. (A remedy for) depression and anxiety. Whole being regeneration, DNA stimulation.

3.6 (a remedy for) anger and irritability.
3.84 Associated with ovaries (Effects=vitality, life at every level).
3.9 (a remedy for) antisocial behaviour. Theta/Delta brainwave range - crystal clear meditation, lucid dreams, enhanced inner awareness, "facilitates easy access to inner resources and creates space for inner peace + self-renewal".
4-6 - attitude and behaviour change.
4-7 - Theta Range : recall, fantasy, imagery, creativity, planning, dreaming, switching thoughts, Zen meditation, drowsiness; Access to subconscious images, deep meditation, reduced blood pressure, said to cure addictions .; Reset the brain's sodium potassium levels, which cuts down on mental fatigue .Increases sex drive . Meditation, Intuitive Augmentation .; Near Sleep brainwaves, conducive to profound inner peace, "mystical truths", transforming unconsciously held limiting beliefs, physical and emotional healing, purpose of life exploration, inner wisdom, faith, meditation, some psychic abilities, and retrieving unconscious material. Bursts of inspiration, twilight sleep learning, deep relaxation, reverie, high levels of awareness, vivid mental imagery.
Hypnopompic and Hypnagogic states
4.0 - 8.0 HZ Theta State present in dreaming sleep, deep meditation, storehouse of creative inspiration, spiritual connection, subconscious mind creative insight, twilight ("sleep") learning, vivid mental imagery. Found in advanced mediators.
4-12 Skeletal muscle resonances.
4.0 - Enkephalins, Extrasensory perception. Astral Projection, Telepathy, "Seduction mindset" .Catecholamines, vital for memory and learning, respond at around 4 HZ. Subconscious Problem Solving/Full Memory Scanning (if one can manage to stay awake) Associated with object naming, an important aspect of memory
4.11 Associated with kidneys (Effects=strength).
4.5 Shamanic State Of Consciousness/Tibetan Buddhist Chants
4.5-6.5 Wakeful dreaming, vivid images.
4.6 Associated with spleen and blood (Effects=Emotional Impulse).
4.9 - Introspection. Induce relaxation, meditation, and deeper sleep.
5.0 - unusual problem solving reduced sleep needed, theta sounds replacing need for extensive dreaming. Relaxed states, pain-relief (beta endorphin increases of 10-50% reported) .Alleged Sphincter Resonance (mechanical) (not good).
5.0 - 10.0 Relaxation.
5.14 Associated with stomach (Effects=Emotional Acceptance).
5.35 Associated with lungs (Effects=Oxygen, Heat).

5.5-8.0 "Theta2" frequency range : Consists of trains (long runs) of rhythmic frontal activity centring at 6.5-Hz with amplitudes reaching the 50-100 uV (micro-volt) range. Is induced in some subjects by the performance of a mental task such as mental arithmetic, tracing a maze, counting the number of cubes piled in a three-dimensional representation, and imaging a scene. More common in extroverts with low traits of neurosis and anxiety. Because Theta2 is associated with mental tasks and its influence is seen in evoked potential latencies closely relates to mechanisms of attention or arousal.
5.5 - Moves beyond knowledge to knowing, shows vision of growth needed; "Inner Guidance” Inner Guidance, intuition, heat generation.
5.8 (reduce) Fear, Absent-mindedness, and Dizziness.

6.0 - long term memory stimulation. (Reduce) unwillingness to work.
6.0 - 10.0 Creative Visualization - about 6hz for a while, then up to 10hz.
6-9.6 Somatic Responses, tingling, pressure, heat.
6.15 Associated with heart (Effects=love, warmth).
6.2-6.7 Frontal Midline Theta (Fm Theta) is a specific EEG frequency seen in those subjects actively engaged in cognitive activity, such as solving math problems and playing Tetris 6.26-6.6 Hemispheric desync, confusion, anxiety, low Reaction Time, depression insomnia.
6.30 Hz - Mental and astral projection accelerated learning and increased memory retention. (Reduce) Anger + Irritability.
6.5 - "Centre" of Theta2 Brainwave Frequency Range. Frontal lobe or brain entrainment of the two hemispheres is around 6.5 hz.
I quoted the second entry from .directly, due to its ambiguity. It probably ties into what the 5.5-8.0 HZ entry says above.
6.8 Possible use for muscle spasms.
6.88 Associated with collarbones (Effects=vitality, overall balance, stability).
7.0 - Mental and astral projection, bending objects, psychic surgery; Increased Reaction Time. Mass aggregate frequency (can deaggregate matter), alleged to
resonate and rupture organs at excessive intensity. Treatment of sleep disturbances
7.5 - Inter-awareness of self and purpose; guided meditation; creative thought for art, invention music, etc.; contact with spirit guides for direction; entry into meditation .; At 7.5 HZ subjects who before suffered from confused thinking reported an ease at finding solutions to troublesome problems after a re-evaluation was conducted. Earth magnetic field frequency, useful theta (brain) waves frequency.
7.5 - 8 For Treating Alcohol + Drug Addiction - This range of frequencies tells a subject they're satisfied, which is "missing" in addictive personalities.
7.69 Associated with shoulders (Effects=strength of the arms, expansion, teaching).
7.8 Schumann Resonance (see 7.83 HZ), ESP activation. Short high frequency bursts at 7.7 Hz induced long-term potentiation in prefrontal cortex, though only for one day.
7.8-8 Stimulates ESP, paranormal.
7.83 - Earth Resonance, grounding "Schumann Resonance” anti-jetlag, anti-mind control, improved stress tolerance psychic healing experiments, pituitary stimulation to release growth hormone (helps develop muscle, recover from injuries, rejuvenation effects) .; Earth Resonance Frequency - 'leaves you feeling revitalized like you've spent a day in the country.' reports of accelerated healing/enhanced learning - "the earth's natural brainwave".
Overtones of the Schumann Resonance can also stimulate the pituitary in the same way that 7.83 HZ can - especially 31.32 HZ.
8-8.6 Reduced Stress/Anxiety.
8.0-10.0 learning new information Alpha - Rapid Refreshment 15 min.
8.0-12.0 - Alpha range light relaxation, "super learning", and positive thinking. Slower brain waves that are conducive to creative problem solving, accelerated learning, mood elevation, stress reduction, etc., characterized by intuitive insights, creative "juice", inspiration, motivation, daydreams etc. Relaxed, yet alert Associated with calm, relaxed, unfocused (not concentrating), lucid mental states, dream sleep and pleasant drifting feelings or emotions. 8-13 - Alpha range - Non-drowsy but relaxed, tranquil state of consciousness, primarily with pleasant inward awareness; body/mind integration. ; Amplifies dowsing, empty-mind states, detachment, daydreams, mind/body integration. (Can cause) epileptic seizures.

8-14 - Qi Gong and infratonic Qi Gong machine
8.0 - Past life regression. More Lymphocytes, DNA repair. Associated with Base/Muladhara chakra (Colour=Red) (Body Parts=Adrenals, Spinal Column, Kidneys) (Effects=Physical energy, will to live) (Note=C).
8.22 Associated with mouth (Effects=speech, creativity).
8.3 - Pick up visual images of mental objects. Clairvoyance.
8.6-9.8 Induces sleep, tingling sensations.
9.0, 11.0, 16.0 (bad) documented calcium ion migration (brain tissue).
9.0 - 13.0 - Alpha Range relaxed, not thinking about anything in particular, sometimes a pleasurable feeling of "floating". Often dominant in certain kinds of meditation, alpha waves have for the past twenty years been associated with calm, lucid mental states (the "alpha state"). They're also often detected during dream sleep. This pattern typically occurs in daydreaming, relaxed awareness, guided or focused imagery and smoothly rhythmic athletic activity. There's often a euphoric, effortless feeling of "flow" as the doer is absorbed in activity and subject + object are felt to be united
9.0 - 14.0 Alpha range Relaxed and detached awareness, visualization, sensory imagery, light reverie. Also, gateway to meditation - provides bridge between the conscious and subconscious mind.
9.0 - Awareness of causes of body imbalance and means for balance. Blind subject phantom touch reading (somatosensory cortex). Associated with Sacral/Svadhisthana chakra (Colour=Orange) (Body Parts=Gonads, Reproductive System) (Effects=Relationships/Sexuality) (Note=D).
9.19 Associated with upper lip (Effects=emotions, conflict resolution).
9.4 Major frequency used for prostate problems.
9.41 - Pyramid frequency
9.5-10 - Centre of Alpha Range - The brain's scanning/idling frequency - indicating a brain standing by, waiting to give way to beta should attention be required, or be the bridge, the gate, to Theta and Delta for drowsiness, sleep, and certain cognitive challenges.
9.6 - Mean dominant frequency associated with earth's magnetic field; Facial Toning
9.8-10.6 Alertness.
10 - Enhanced release of serotonin and mood elevator. Acts as an analgesic, safest frequency, especially for hangover and jet lag. Dominant alpha frequency, clarity, normalcy, anti-convulsant, circadian rhythm resync, activate kidneys, raise body temp, more serotonin . Good when trying to correlate information by the subconscious - a waiting frequency while the subconscious does the work at lower frequencies. Motor impulse coordination (Motor Control cortex). Learning a foreign language Centring, Sleep Spindles, Arousal. Associated with Solar Plexus/Manipura chakra (Colour=Yellow) (Body Parts=Pancreas, Stomach, Liver, Gall Bladder, Nervous System) (Effects=Spiritual wisdom, self-healing. Increased alertness (caused by an increase in norepinephrine + serotonin and a decrease in melatonin), sense of well being and decreased pain (caused by increase in beta-endorphins) .; Adrenal Stimulant .; Significant improvements in memory, reading and spelling are reported (in conjunction with 18 HZ) Treatment for Attention Deficit Disorder/Hyperactivity Treatment for closed head injury 'Berger Rhythm' (used on) headaches .
10-14 Dream/sleep spindles.
10.2 Catecholamines
10.3 Associated with Nasal Passages (Effects=breathing, taste).
10.5 - Frequency for healing of body, mind/body unity, fire walking potent stabilizer and stimulating for the immunity, valuable in convalescence. Relaxed alertness, contemplation, body healing, mind

over matter. Lowering Blood Pressure Associated with Heart/Anahata chakra (Colour=Green) (Body Parts=Thymus, Heart, Blood, Circulatory System) (Effects=Love of Life, love of self and others).
10.6 - Relaxed and alert
10.7 Associated with ears (Effects=hearing, formal concepts).
11.0 (and Below) - Stress Reduction.
11-14 Focused alertness.
11.0 (used to) achieve "relaxed yet alert" states. .
11.5-14.5 An implication for neurotherapy is that if increased intelligence + mental efficiency is the objective, then a frequency band with a 13-Hz centre should be used. A more desirable frequency band than 12 to 15-Hz is 11.5 to 14.5-Hz.
12.0 - Centring, doorway to all other frequencies frequency of earth resonance Centring, mental stability, transitional point, time seems faster. To stimulate mental clarity. Associated with Throat/Vishuddha chakra (Colour=Blue) (Body Parts=Thyroid, Lungs, Vocal Cords) (Effects=Expression/self in society.
12.3 Associated with eyes (Effects=Visualization).
12.0-14.0 Learning Frequency - Good for absorbing information passively, when you plan to think about it later. distinguishes between active studying where you're processing information and passive studying where you're just trying to absorb information + plan to think about it later. For the former, suggested 36 to 44 HZ.
12.0-15.0 Beta (low) - relaxed focus, improved attentive abilities. Treating Hyperactivity. Sensor motor Rhythm - Used in the treatment of mild autism
13-27 - Beta Range Associated with focused attention towards external stimuli, alert mental activity, normal waking consciousness, and active thought processes.
13-30 - Beta Range - Normal wakefulness, the taking in and evaluating of various forms of data received through the senses. It's present with worry, anger, fear, hunger and surprise. Waking state, motivation, outer awareness, survival, problem solving, arousal, dendrite growth, combats drowsiness .Conscious Thinking, Autonomic Processes and Emotions Others consider the rages of Beta to be 13-27 HZ, 14-38 HZ. 13-40 HZ and 14-30 HZ.
Breaks up Beta into ranges - Low Beta=12-15 HZ, Mid Beta=15-18 HZ, and High Beta=18.0+ HZ.
13-40 Beta Range - a high frequency pattern, conducive to stimulating energy + action; most of our current institutionalized education is beta geared, characterized by logical, analytical, intellectual thinking, verbal communication, etc.
13.0 - Alleged sphincter resonance (mechanical) (not good). Associated with Brow/Ajna chakra (Colour=Indigo/Violet) (Body Parts=Pituitary, Lower Brain, Left Eye, Ears, Nose, Nervous System) (Effects=Visualization, Conceptualization.
13.8 - Associated with Frontal Lobes (Effects=the seventh sense, final decision).
14-16 - associated with sleep spindles on EEG during second stage of sleep
14-15 - Slows conditioned reflexes.
14.0-30.0 - Beta Range This pattern is optimal for intense mental activities such as calculations, linear logical analyses and other highly structured functions
14.0 - Awake and alert. Alert focusing, vitality, concentration on tasks Schumann Resonance (2nd of 7 frequencies. 7.83 HZ being the first pituitary stimulation to release growth hormone (helps develop muscle, recover from injuries, rejuvenation effects) .; Intelligence Enhancement in conjunction with 22.0 HZ (medium=audio-visual stimulation)
.used audio-visual stimulation alternating between 14 and 22 HZ. Check the link under bibliography

entry for more information.
14.1 "Earth Resonance” Earth Harmonics - accelerated healing. (Probably tied to Schumann Resonance above.)
15.0-18.0 Beta (mid) - increased mental ability, focus, alertness, IQ.
15-24 Euphoria
15 - chronic pain .; Sound which bypasses the ears for sublimination (auditory cortex) .; Associated with Crown/Sahasrara chakra (Colour=Violet/White) (Body Parts=Pineal, Upper Brain, Right Eye) (Effects=Integration of personality and spirituality
15.4 - Associated with Cortex (Effects=intelligence).
16.0 - bottom limit of normal hearing. Release oxygen and calcium into cells.
16.4 Associated with top of head (Effects=spirit, liberation, transcendence).
18.0-22.0 - Beta: outward awareness, sensory data. Throws brain's sodium/potassium levels out of balance, resulting in mental fatigue. Theoretically can be used to achieve a "relaxed body/focus mind" state of consciousness.
18.0 Beta (high) - fully awake, normal state of alertness, stress and anxiety. Significant improvements in memory, reading and spelling are reported (in conjunction with 10 HZ) (used to) improve hyperactive behaviour
20-30 Phospene imagery, peak luminosity in visual field.
20-40 Meditation For Stress Relief/Just At The Edge Of Audible Sound/As A Musical Background.
20.0 - fatigue, energize. Causes distress during labour. Human Hearing Threshold.; Schumann Resonance (3rd frequency of 7) Imposing subconscious commands on another (thought centre). Stimulation of pineal gland Helps with tinnitis (a condition that causes ear-ringing) Pituitary stimulation to release growth hormone (helps develop muscle, recover from injuries, rejuvenation effects). Adrenal Stimulant, (used on) sinus disorders/sinus infection/head cold/headache. Commonly used "cure-all" Rife Frequency
20.215 LSD-25 mimics the effects of
20.3 "Earth Resonance" Probably the same thing as the Schumann Resonance at 20 HZ.
22.0 Used in conjunction with 14 HZ for intelligence enhancement (medium=audio-visual stimulation) Used in conjunction with 40 HZ for 'out of body' travel Also used with 40 HZ for psychic healing. Used audio-visual stimulation alternating between 14 and 22 HZ.
22.027 Serotonin
25.0 Bypassing the eyes for images imprinting (visual cortex).
26.0 Schumann Resonance (4th frequency of 7) Pituitary stimulation to release growth hormone (helps develop muscle, recover from injuries, rejuvenation effects).
26.4 "Earth Resonance”.
27.5 lowest note on a piano.

Starting at 30 HZ, sources begin to disagree over what the names of each range are.

30 - 60 Gamma Range - little known but includes decision making in a fear situation, muscle tension,
Some researchers consider Gamma to start at 40 HZ.
30 - 190 Lumbago.

60 to 120 to be the Lambda range.

30-500 High Beta: Not associated currently with any state of mind. Some effects have been observed, but currently not enough research has been done in this area, to prove, or disprove, anything.

30 to be the beginning of the Gamma range, which it believes run to 60. It then considers **60 to 120 to be the Lambda range.**

40 is where Beta ends and Gamma begins.
31.32 Schumann Resonance (5th frequency of 7) - pituitary stimulation to release growth hormone (helps develop muscle, recover from injuries, rejuvenation effects).
32 Desensitizer; enhanced vigour and alertness.
33 Christ consciousness, hypersensitivity, Pyramid frequency (inside) ; Schumann Resonance (5th frequency of 7)
HZ (pyramid outside frequency). The mind tends to wander in funny ways.
35 - 150 Fractures.
35 - 193 Arthralgy.
35 Awakening of mid-chakras, balance of chakras
36 - 44 Learning Frequencies, When (Actively) Studying or Thinking. Helps To Maintain Alertness. Waking Operating State.; Frequencies of the olfactory bulb, prepiriform cortex and amygdala
38 Endorphin release
39.0 Schumann Resonance (6th frequency of 7)
40-60 anxiolytic effects and stimulates release of beta-endorphins.
43 - 193 Carcinomatosis.
40.0 - dominant when problem solving in fearful situations. Gamma - associated with information-rich task processing and high-level information processing. 40 Hz brain activity may be a kind of binding mechanism the 40-cycle-per-second wave serves to connect structures in the cortex where advanced information processing occurs, and the thalamus, a lower brain region where complex relay and integrative functions are carried out. Used in conjunction with 22 HZ for 'out of body' travel Also used with 22 HZ for psychic healing 40--Hz activity varies from 38.8 to 40.1-Hz, regardless of the electrode site. The average frequency is in the ~39.5-Hz range. In summary, when the body is profoundly relaxed and the mind is in a state of high focus and concentration, 20 and 40-Hz brain activity can be seen in the raw and quantitative EEG of some subjects. It is possible that 18 to 22-Hz Beta and possibly 40-Hz neuro-feedback training may help create a "relaxed body/focused mind" state of consciousness." Activity in the ectosylvian and lateral cortex, medial geniculate, reticular formation, centre median thalamus and hippocampus. The EEG of middle- and high-I.Q. subjects during mental multiplication activity. A 40-Hz rhythm occurred just prior to the subject's answering the question. Forty--Hz pulses are thought to lead to synchronization + coordination of neurons assigned to the processing of incoming sensory stimulation. Put in "computerise," 40-Hz may be the brain's "operating system" frequency
Considered the dividing point between beta waves + gamma waves.
45.0 Schumann Resonance (7th frequency of 7
46.98 - Useful for "weird effects" (use with 62.64 HZ and 70.47 HZ).
50-60 Documented negative effects too numerous to mention There is no correlation given with signal strength or modality used, i.e. audio-visual, EMF, magnetic, electrostatic, gravitic. Also, most ELF

research is now Govt classified. Discovered behavioural effects as the result of applied sinusoidal field gradients as low as 4 volts.
50.0 - dominant frequency of polyphasic muscle activity, Slower cerebral rhythms
55.0 - Tantric yoga; stimulates the kundalini.
60 - 120 Lambda Range - Little known but includes central nervous system activity
60 electric power lines
62.64 - Useful for "weird effects". (Use with 46.98 HZ and 70.47 HZ).
63 Astral projection
65.8 Associated with coccyx (small triangular bone at end of the spinal column) (higher octave of 2.06 HZ).
70-9,000 Voice spectrum
70 Mental and astral projection; Endorphin production/used with electroanalgesia.
70.47 Useful for "weird effects". (Use with 46.98 HZ and 62.64 HZ).
72 Emotional spectrum Used on sinusitis/sinus infection/head cold.
73.6 Associated with genitals (higher octave of 2.30 HZ).
80 Awareness and control of right direction. Appears to be involved in stimulating 5-hydroxytryptamine production, with 160Hz. Combine with 2.5 Hz.
82.3 Associated with bladder (higher octave of 2.57 HZ).
83 Third eye opening for some subjects
85.5 Associated with intestines (higher octave of 2.67 HZ).
90.0 - 111.0 Pleasure-producing beta-endorphins rise between these frequencies. The notes that would fall in this range begin with F#3 and go up to A3. ("A3" being the fourth octave up -- since there's an A0, and A1, A2 lower than it.) Playing the F#3 and the A3 as a chord seems to function as a good painkiller. An additional undertone in the alpha range of frequencies sometimes helps too. (Try adding a tone around 12.5 HZ).
90.0 Good feelings, security, well-being, balancing
95.0-125.0 Acoustical Resonances of Assorted Ancient Structures
95.0 Use for pain along with 3040 HZ.
98.4 Associated with hara (3cm or 1.5 inch below navel, balance of pelvis) (higher octave of 3.07 HZ).
100 Can help with pain (used with electrical stimulation)
The site specifically mentions it can be good for pain initially, but then recommends using 0.5 or 1.5 to treat pain.
105 Overall view of complete situation
108 Total knowing
110.0 Frequency associated with stomach. (Note=A) Associated with ovaries (Effects=vitality, life at every level) (higher octave of 3.84 HZ).
111 Beta endorphins cell regeneration
117.3 Frequency associated with Pancreas (Note=C#)
120 - 500 P.S.I., moving of objects, changing matter, transmutation, psychokinesis
120 Helps with fatigue (Medium=pad (used on) sinus disorders/sinus infection/head cold.
125 Graham potentializer; Stimulation. (Used on) sinusitis.
126.22 - Sun, 32nd octave of Earth year The Frequency Of The Sun (Note=C) (Colour=Green) (Tempo=118.3 BPM) (Chakra=Manipura, also called Hara {associated with Navel and 3rd lumbar vertebrae}) (Effects=advances the feeling of centring of magic and of the transcendental)

132.0 Associated with kidneys (Effects=strength) (higher octave of 4.11 HZ). Associated with coccyx (small triangular bone at end of the spinal column) (higher octave of 2.06 HZ).
136.1 Sun: light, warmth, joy, animus Resonates with the earth year (Note=C#) (Colour=Turquoise Green) (Effects=calming, meditative, relaxing, centring) Period it takes earth to revolve around sun (Tempo=63.8*127.6) (Chakra=Anahate/Heart chakra)(Effects=relaxing, soothing, balancing, harmony with the cosmos, associated with the soul {"frequency of the soul}) (Medicinal=Sedative) (Other=significant tone in Indian music {called it the "sadja" or "father to others" - it was a keynote} - corresponds to "OM" and the Christian "AMEN")
140.25 Pluto: power, crisis and changes Frequency associated with the orbit of Pluto; (Note=C#) (Colour=blue-green) (Tempo=65.7 * 131.4 BPM) (Effects = support the magic group dynamic principle and is said to be responsible for integration into certain structures of society
141.27 Mercury: intellectuality, mobility Frequency associated with orbit of Mercury (Note=C# or D) (Colour=blue-green or blue) (Tempo=66.2) (Chakra=Vishudda/Throat chakra) (Effects=Supports speech centre and communicative-intellectual principle, associated with communication and cleverness) the frequencies of planets revolving around the sun are less important than those of the moon, sun, and Earth.
A discrepancy in the note and colour - they're both given twice - once as C# and blue-green,
144.0 (helps with) headaches (Medium=pad)
144.72 Mars: activity, energy, freedom, humour Frequency associated with the orbit of Mars (Note=D) (Colour=blue) (Tempo=67.8 * 135.6 BPM) (Effect : Supports strength of will and focused energy, ability for achievement)
146.0 (used on) sinus infection/head cold.
147.0 Associated with the spleen/blood (Effects=Emotional Impulse) (higher octave of 4.6 HZ) Associated with genitals (higher octave of 2.30 HZ).
147.85 Saturn: separation, sorrow, death Frequency associated with orbit of Saturn (Note=D) (Colour=Blue) (Tempo=69.3 * 138.6 BPM) (Effects=enhances concentration and the process of becoming conscious + shows very clearly karmic connections, brings structure and order - is considered to be a cosmic controller)
160.0 Appears to be involved in stimulating 5-hydroxytryptamine production, with 80 Hz. .; Use for rapid relief from headaches.; used on sinus infection/head cold .
164.3 Frequency associated with Gall Bladder (Note=E)
165.0 Associated with stomach (Effects=Emotional Acceptance) (higher octave of 5.14 HZ) Associated with bladder (higher octave of 2.57 HZ).
171.0 Associated with lungs (Effects=Oxygen, Heat) (higher octave of 5.35 HZ). Associated with intestines (higher octave of 2.67 HZ) .
172.06 - Resonates with the Platonic year {about 26,000 years} (Note=F) (Colour=purple-violet) (Effects=joyful, cheerful, spiritual effect) .; The Frequency Of The Platonic Year (Colour=red-violet {purple}) (Tempo=80.6 BPM) (Chakra=Sahasrar/Crown chakra) (Effects=cheerfulness, clarity of spirit, cosmic unity on highest levels) (Medicinal=antidepressive) (Other=F is considered the tone of the spirit)
176.0 - Frequency associated with the colon. (Note=F or F#)
183.58 - Jupiter: growth, success, justice, spirituality. Frequency associated with the orbit of Jupiter (Note=F#) (Colour=Red) (Tempo=86.05 * 172.1 BPM) (Effects: supports creative power and continuous construction) (Associated with Jupiter: Generosity, Continuity, Magnanimity, Joviality)
185.0 - (used on) sinus infection/head cold.

187.61 frequency of "moon culmination"
194.18 frequency of Synodic "Earth" Day {the "day tone"} (Note=G) (Colour=Orange Red) (Tempo=91.0 BPM) (Chakra=Muladhar/Base chakra) (Effects = dynamic, vitalizing) (Medicinal="tonifies") (Other=weather determining" spheric frequency, influences proteins, brings one into harmony with nature)
194.71 - Earth: stability, grounding Key of G resonates with frequency of earth day, the colour orange-red, and has a dynamic, stimulating, and energizing effect on the body-mind.
197.0 Associated with heart (Effects=love, warmth) (higher octave of 6.15). Associated with hara (3cm or 1.5 inch below navel, balance of pelvis) (higher octave of 3.07 HZ).
197.71 frequency of Sideric Day.
207.36 - Uranus: spontaneity, independence, originality. Frequency associated with orbit of Uranus {insert one of dozens of bad jokes here} (Note=G#) (Colour=Orange) (Tempo = 97.2 BMP) (Effects = supports the power of surprise and renewal, has primeval and erotic power).
210.42 frequency of Synodic Moon (Note=G#) (Colour=orange) (Tempo=98.6 BPM) (Chakra=Svadisthan {2nd Chakra}) (Effects=stimulates sexual energy, supports erotic communication) (Medicinal=regulation of menstruation, disturbances in the gland and lymph system).
211.44 - Neptune: the unconscious, secrets, imagination, spiritual love. Frequency associated with orbit of Neptune (Note=G#) (Colour=orange) (Tempo=99.1 BPM) (Effects = supports intuition, the unconsciousness, and enhances the dream experience).
220.0 Frequency associated with lungs. (Note = A) Associated with collarbones (Effects=vitality, overall balance, stability) (higher octave of 6.88 HZ). Associated with ovaries (Effects=vitality, life at every level) (higher octave of 3.84 HZ).
221.23 - Venus: beauty, love, sexuality, sensuality, harmony. Frequency associated with the orbit of Venus (Note=A) (Colour=yellow-orange) (Tempo=103.7 BPM) (Chakra=Ajna/Third Eye) (Effects=supports higher love energy and aspiration for harmony).
227.43 frequency of Sideric Moon.
229.22 frequency of Metonic Cycle (related to moon).
234.16 frequency of Moon knot.
241.56 frequency of Saros period; (related to moon).
246.04 frequency of Apsidis rotation; (related to moon).
250.0 Elevate and revitalize
254.57 Frequency associated with orbit of Icarus (asteroid).
256.0 Root Chakra (1:1) (Note=C).
263.0 Associated with mouth (Effects=speech, creativity) (higher octave of 8.22 HZ). Associated with kidneys (Effects=strength) (higher octave of 4.11 HZ).
264.0 Related to personality. (Note=C+).
272
33rd octave of Earth year (HC)
272.0 Frequency associated with Selenium (mineral nutrient) (Note=C#).
272.2 Frequency associated with orbit of Earth (Note=C#).
273.0 Transsubjectal Chakra (1:15) (Note=C#) (Earth Orbit 272).
280.5 Frequency associated with orbit of Pluto (Note=C#).
281.0 - Frequency associated with Intestines (Note=C#) (BH1)
281.6 - Frequency associated with Small Intestine (Note=C#).
282.4 - Frequency associated with orbit of Mercury. (Note=D).

288.0 - Polarity Chakra (9:1) (Note=D) (Mars Orbit 289).
289.4 - Frequency associated with orbit of Mars. (Note=D).
293.0 - "unknown" Chakra (1:14) (Note=D+) (Saturn Orbit 296).
A note somewhere between D and D#. A quarter note.
294.0 - Associated with the upper lip (Effects=emotions, conflict resolution) (higher octave of 9.19 HZ). Associated with the spleen/blood (Effects=Emotional Impulse) (higher octave of 4.6 HZ).
295.7 - Frequency associated with orbit of Saturn (Note=D#).
295.8 - Frequency associated with Fat Cells (Note=C#).
296.07 - Frequency associated with orbit of Toutatis (asteroid).
304.0 - Useful on headaches (medium=pad); sedation and pain relief (medium=tube) (JB+KFL); (useful for) blood pressure, (and with) stiff muscles (KFL); Frequency associated with Potassium (mineral nutrient) (Note=D#).
310.7 - Frequency associated with spin of Neptune (Note=Eb).
315.0 - Diaphragm Chakra (10:1) (Note=Eb).
315.8 - Frequency associated with Brain (Note=Eb) (BH1)
317.83 - Frequency associated with Liver (Note=Eb).
319.88 - Frequency associated with Kidney (Note=Eb).
320.0 - Solar Plexus Chakra (10:1) (Note=Eb). Frequency associated with Calcium (mineral nutrient) (Note=E or Eb).
321.9 - Frequency associated with blood. (Note=E or Eb).
324.0 - Frequency associated with muscles. (Note=E).
329.0 Associated With Nasal Passages (Effects=breathing, taste) (higher octave of 10.3 HZ). Associated with stomach (Effects=Emotional Acceptance) (higher octave of 5.14 HZ).
330.0 Used to treat allergies in conjunction with 3 HZ.
333.0 (used on) sinus infection/head cold.
332.8 - Frequency associated with orbit of Sun (Note=E).
How long it would take an imaginary planet to orbit around the sun's outer boundary (circumference).
336.0 - Frequency associated with Molybdenum (mineral nutrient).
341.0 - Heart Chakra (1:12) (Note=F).
342.0 - Associated with ears (Effects=hearing, formal concepts) (higher octave of 13.8 HZ). Associated with lungs (Effects=Oxygen, Heat) (higher octave of 5.35 HZ).
352.0 - Frequency associated with bladder. (Note=F). Thymus Chakra (11:1) (Note=F#).
There seems to be a discrepancy here as to which note this frequency is, both F and F#.
367.0 - (used on) sinus infection/head cold.
367.2 - Frequency associated with orbit of Jupiter (Note=F#).
368.09 - Frequency associated with orbit of Apollo (asteroid).
372.0 - "unknown" Chakra (1:11) (Note=G#) (Earth Spin 378).
375.70 - Frequency associated with the orbit of Eros (asteroid).
378.5 - Frequency associated with spin of Earth. (Note=F#).
380.96 - Frequency associated with orbit of Ida (asteroid).
384.0 - "Gurdjieff vibration associated with root chakra. Sixth harmonic of six, centre of the brainwave spectrum." (RP); Throat Chakra (12:1) (Note=G). Frequency associated with Chromium (mineral nutrient) (Note=G?).
389.4 - Frequency associated with spin of Mars. (Note=G).
393.0 - Associated with eyes (Effects=Visualization) (higher octave of 12.3). Associated with heart

(Effects=love, warmth) (higher octave of 6.15).
393.34 - Frequency associated with orbit of Pallas (asteroid).
394.76 - Frequency associated with orbit of Ceres (asteroid).
396 - G (musical note).
400 Seems to decongest. Frequency associated with Manganese (mineral nutrient) (Note=G or G#).
405 - Violet.
408.7 - Frequency associated with orbit of Juno (asteroid).
409.1 - Frequency associated with spin of Venus (Note=G#).
410.0 - "unknown" Chakra (1:10) (Note=Ab) (Venus Spin 409).
414.7 - Frequency associated with orbit of Uranus (Note=G#).
416.0 - Psychic Centre Chakra (13:1) (Note=Ab) (Uranus Orbit 415). Frequency associated with Iron (mineral nutrient) (Note=Ab).
418.3 - Frequency associated with bones (Note=Ab).
420.82 - Moon: love, sensitivity, creativity, femininity, anima
421.3 - Frequency associated with orbit of moon (Note=Ab). Also associated with spin of Mercury
422.8 - Frequency associated with orbit of Neptune (Note=Ab).
424.0 - (used on) Fatigue (medium=pad). Frequency associated with Iodine (mineral nutrient) (Note=Ab).
430.8 - Frequency associated with spin of Uranus (Note=Ab).
438 - Indigo
440 - A (musical note); Associated with Frontal Lobes (Effects=the seventh sense, final decision) (higher octave of 13.8). Associated with collarbones (Effects=vitality, overall balance, stability) (higher octave of 6.88 HZ).
442.0 - Frequency associated with orbit of Venus. (Note=A).
448.0 - Third Eye Chakra (14:1) (Note=A).
445.0 - Chakra (1:9) (Note=Bb) (Venus Orbit 442).
455.4 - Frequency associated with spin of Saturn (Note=A#).
456.0 - (used on) sinusitis/sinus infection/head cold.
461.67 - Frequency associated with orbit of Vesta (asteroid).
464.0 - Frequency associated with Copper (mineral nutrient) (Note=Bb). (Used on) sinus infections/head colds w/ 728hz, 784hz and 880hz.
473 - Blue
473.9 - Frequency associated with spin of Jupiter (Note=Bb).
486.2 - Frequency associated with spin of Pluto (Note=B).
480 - Crown Chakra (15: 1) (Note=B). Frequency associated with Phosphorous and Zinc (mineral nutrients) (Note=B).
492.0 - Frequency associated with Spleen (Note=B). Associated with Cortex (Effects=intelligence) (higher octave of 15.4 HZ).
492.8 - Frequency associated with Adrenals (Note=B) .Associated with Adrenals, Thyroid and Parathyroid.
493.00 - Frequency associated with the orbit of Gaspra (asteroid).
495 - B (musical note)
495.25 - Frequency associated with orbit of Castalia (asteroid).
497.1 - Frequency associated with spin of Sun. (Note=B).
500.0 - (used to treat) Anthrax (medium=tube).

520.0 - (used on) Headaches (medium=pad).
522.0 - (used on) sinus infection/head cold.
526 - Associated with top of head (Effects=spirit, liberation, transcendence) (higher octave of 16.4 HZ). ; Associated with mouth (Effects=speech, creativity) (higher octave of 8.22 HZ).
527 - Green
528 - C (musical note)
542 - Bio-energetic frequency for Variolinum (i.e. smallpox vaccine).
569 - Bio-energetic frequency for Variolinum (i.e. smallpox vaccine).
580 - Yellow
586.0 - Associated with Circulation and Sex (Note=C#).
588.0 - Associated with the upper lip (Effects=emotions, conflict resolution) (higher octave of 9.19 HZ).
594 - D (musical note)
597 - Orange
620 - Keely Frequency (use with 630 and 12000).
630 - Keely Frequency (use with 620 and 12000).
633 - Bio-energetic frequency for Anthracinum (i.e. anthrax vaccine).
658 - Associated With Nasal Passages (Effects=breathing, taste) (higher octave of 10.3 HZ)
660 - E (musical note)
664 - (Used for) Fatigue (medium=pad).
685 - Associated with ears (Effects=hearing, formal concepts) (higher octave of 13.8 HZ).
700 - Red
704 - F (musical note)
727 (used on) Allergies, Sinusitis. Commonly used "cure-all" Rife frequency .
728 - (Used on) sinus infections/head colds w/ 784hz, 880hz and 464hz. .
784 - (Used on) sinus infections/head colds w/ 728hz, 880hz and 464hz. .
787 - Associated with eyes (Effects=Visualization) (higher octave of 12.3). (Used to treat) Allergies, Sinusitis. Commonly used "cure-all" Rife frequency .
800 - Commonly used "cure-all" Rife Frequency .
802 - (Used on) sinusitis with 1550 HZ; (used on) sinus infection/head colds.
820 - (Used on) sinus infection/head colds.
832 - Bio-energetic frequency for Variolinum (i.e. smallpox vaccine). See disclaimer for 500 HZ. .
880 - Associated with Frontal Lobes (Effects=the seventh sense, final decision) (higher octave of 13.8). (Used on) Allergies, Sinusitis. (used on) sinus infections/head colds w/ 728hz,784hz and 464hz. . Commonly used "cure-all" Rife Frequency .
952 - (Used on) sinus infection/head colds.
965 - Relaxes muscles, especially those of the neck.
984 - Associated with Cortex (Effects=intelligence) (higher octave of 15.4).
1000 - Cerebral neurons
1052 - Associated with top of head (Effects=spirit, liberation, transcendence) (higher octave of 16.4 HZ).
1500 - (Used on) sinus infection/head colds.
1550 - (Used on) sinusitis with 802 HZ, (used on) sinus infections/head colds.
1552 - (Used on) eye disorders.
1600 - (Used on) eye disorders.

2025 - Proton Precession/Water Resonance.
2675 - "The Crystal Resonator". A subharmonic of the frequency of quartz crystal. "Extremely effective for charging and clearing quartz crystals ... useful for clearing and balancing of their own energies. (medium=sound/tuning fork)
3222 - Bio-energetic frequency for Variolinum (i.e. smallpox vaccine). See disclaimer for 500 HZ. .
3040 - Use for pain along with 95 HZ.
4186 - Highest note on a piano.
4400 - (Used on) sinus infections/head colds - try scanning between 4384 and 4416 by intervals of 8 HZ. .
5000-8000 HZ - recharge "brain batteries" most rapidly. Fastest recharge at 8000 HZ. "The anxiety-easing, memory-expanding 60-beat tempo creates easy communication with the subconscious mind.”.
5000 - Commonly used "cure-all" Rife frequency (used on) allergies, sinus infections/head colds - short use only -- long exposures destroy red blood cells.
9999 - General vitality and energy.
10,000 - Commonly used "cure-all" Rife frequency (used to treat) alcoholism, allergies, headaches.
12,000 HZ - Keely Frequency (use with 620 HZ and 630 HZ).
16,000 - 20,000 - Upper range for normal hearing.
23,000 up - Hypersonic (above human hearing)
38000 - 40000 HZ - Magic Window .
42800 HZ - Aetheric dissociation/water resonance (water -> aetheric force).
------- Note - down from this point are KHZ (kilohertz) values, not HZ values
150-160 KHZ - Magic Window
180 KHZ - Ferromagnetism.
------- Note - down from this point are MHZ (megahertz) values, not HZ values
1.1-1.3 MHZ - Magic Window
388 MHZ - Alleged to cause damage/disruption to humans.
------- Note - down from this point are GHZ (gigahertz) values, not HZ values
1.057 GHZ - Magic Window
------- Note - down from this point are PHZ (Petahertz) values, not HZ values (1 PHZ = 1,000,000,000,000,000 HZ.)
10 PHZ - Magic Window in the near ultra-violet range "life energy" frequency

38 Double Meaning Word List

Programmers will use words with double meaning (homograph) during programming to reinforce programming in day to day living. This use of double meaning insures programming remains intact with day to day interactions. The individual speaking to the subject will be unaware they are reinforcing programming.

The use of double meanings during programming will also lead to confusion within the system as some parts will respond to one meaning and others to the second meaning.

Homophones may also be used in programming, but are more difficult to layer in.

Aught: All, or nothing

Bill: A payment, or an invoice for payment
Bolt: To secure, or to flee
Bound: Heading to a destination, or restrained from movement
Buckle: To connect, or to break or collapse
Bank - money storage and river bank
Ball- round object and dance
Bat - flying animal and used in bat
Bear- to carry and a furry animal
Box- container and fist fight
Bright- smart and giving off light

Cleave: To adhere, or to separate
Clip: To fasten, or detach
Consult: To offer advice, or to obtain it
Continue: To keep doing an action, or to suspend an action
Coat- layer of paint or heavy jacket
Custom: A common practice, or a special treatment

Dike: A wall to prevent flooding, or a ditch
Discursive: Moving in an orderly fashion among topics, or proceeding aimlessly in a discussion
Dollop: A large amount (British English), or a small amount
Dust: To add fine particles, or to remove them

Deck- a pack of cards and the ship’s deck
Duck- quacking animal and to move down

Enjoin: To impose, or to prohibit

Fast: Quick, or stuck or made stable
Fine: Excellent, or acceptable or good enough
Finished: Completed, or ended or destroyed
First degree: Most severe in the case of a murder charge, or least severe in reference to a burn
Fix: To repair, or to castrate
Flog: To promote persistently, or to criticize or beat
Fly- type of insect and to move through air
Foot - body part and measuring device

Garnish: To furnish, as with food preparation, or to take away, as with wages
Give out: To provide, or to stop because of a lack of supply
Go: To proceed or succeed, or to weaken or fail
Grade: A degree of slope, or a horizontal line or position

Handicap: An advantage provided to ensure equality, or a disadvantage that prevents equal achievement
Head- boss and body part
Help: To assist, or to prevent or (in negative constructions) restrain
Hold up: To support, or to impede

Lease: To offer property for rent, or to hold such property
Left: Remained, or departed
Let: Allowed, or hindered
Liege: A feudal lord or a vassal
Literally: Actually, or virtually
Light- something shining and something not heavy

Mean: Average or stingy or excellent
Model: An exemplar, or a copy
Mean- average, to imply, and be unkind
Might- power or stating a possibility

Note- short letter and musical note

Off: Deactivated, or activated, as an alarm
Out: Visible, as with stars showing in the sky, or invisible, in reference to lights
Out of: Outside, or inside, as in working out of a specific office
Overlook: To supervise, or to neglect
Oversight: Monitoring, or failing to oversee

Peer: A person of the nobility, or an equal
Presently: Now, or soon
Put out: Extinguish, or generate
Puzzle: A problem, or to solve one
Pound- unit of currency, a weight, a lost dog’s home, and to hit with force
Punch- fruit flavoured drink or to hit with fist

Quantum: Significantly large, or a minuscule part
Quite: Rather (as a qualifying modifier), or completely

Race- group of people and a competition
Ravel: To entangle, or to disentangle
Refrain: To desist from doing something, or to repeat
Rent: To purchase use of something, or to sell use
Ring- circular object and a bell
Rock: An immobile mass of stone or sway back and forth.

Sanction: To approve, or to boycott
Sanguine: Confidently cheerful, or bloodthirsty
Scan: To peruse, or to glance
Screen: To present, or to conceal
Seed: To sow seeds, or to shed or remove them.
Shop: To patronize a business in order to purchase something, or to sell something
Skin: To cover, or to remove
Skinned: Covered with skin, or with the skin removed
Splice: To join, or to separate
Staff- employee and walking stick
State- an area and to say clearly

Stakeholder: One who has a stake in an enterprise, or a bystander who holds the stake for those placing a bet
Strike: To hit, or to miss in an attempt to hit
Shade- area with no sun, tint/ colour
Sink- no float and where you wash hands
Stick- part of tree or to cling on

Table: To propose (in British English), or to set aside
Temper: To soften, or to strengthen
Throw out: To dispose of, or to present for consideration
Transparent: Invisible, or obvious
Trim: To decorate, or to remove excess from
Trip: A journey, or a stumble
Tick- a parasite and the noise of a clock
Trunk- of a tree and a suitcase
Trip- vacation / stumble and fall

Unbending: Rigid, or relaxing

Variety: A particular type, or many types

Wear: To endure, or to deteriorate
Weather: To withstand, or to wear away
Wind up: To end, or to start up
With: Alongside, or against

Yard- a measurement or back garden

39 Programming Codes

The codes used from subject to subject follow patterns. There are standard and exclusive codes. Master programmers will lay in the foundation programs and codes and developed the scripts. Handlers will develop the unique codes for their subject. A Programmer will always begin a session by repeating the subject's individual access code, which will allow authorized entry into the system without setting off traps and internal protectors.

Handlers of subjects use a technique where one signal or code will carry several messages simultaneously. Specific parts hear certain codes/cues/triggers while others don't. The internal programmers and reporting parts may internally hypnotically make telephone noises that are fake so that host parts lose the ability to discern what is real and not real.

Cult/occult programming commonly employs magickal languages, along with Hebrew, Latin and Greek for charting the core and its primal splits. Futhark is an example of a magical language used by the occult**.**

Cult and occult codes often come from the Bible or demonic names. The deeper codes are occult words, in languages such as Latin, or Enochian. The foreign language codes will be for diminutive parts of the system only; ciphers are also employed, as well as sign language.

The intelligence organizations prefer to code a single project with a single word, and an ongoing operation with two words. For intelligence operations the subject will have to have Bona Fides codes. All subjects are given control signs which allow them to indicate via code that they require assistance.

The master programmer will permit the handler--the male adult figure (Papa Bear) in the subject's life to have day-to-day ownership. Papa Bear is often an adult male in close daily proximity of the child subject. Papa Bear will be authorized to put in their own codes in the sexual part of the system. Some Papa Bears use their own songs, poetry and their interests in this area of the coding. Most of the system's codes will reflect the master programmer, and the sexual part of the system will reflect the Papa Bear's programming.

Programmers will not hide the front part of a system. Most subjects with dissociated parts are not discovered. The top parts will also sometimes receive personal names from their handler. This is in addition their codes. If the part is responsive to their handler, the personal name might pull the part up. Cult/occult parts are hidden and have sophisticated codes, hierarchy parts are hidden deeply.

The hierarchy parts are placed in a deep area of system and receive spiritual codes and numerical codes. Numerical codes are not in the front part of a system. Internal programming parts have the authority to change codes if they need to protect the system. They will have to hypnotically work with day parts when they are in trance at night. Most of the programming of front parts will be done when they are sleeping. If internal parts change too many codes in their efforts to protect the system, they will make it complicated for the handler/programmer access the system.

The standard method for coding a program is: day of birth+year of birth+ month of birth+day of programming.

A System code at times consists of: birth date + programming site code + birth order +birth date of programmer.

A System code for occult programming is: birth date + programming site code + birth order + number of generations family has been in the occult.

Each part will have an access code which will often include the following components:
Colour+an Alpha numeric code+ a personalized magick name.
Date of birth+colour+name
Name+date of birth of programmer+Gem name
Date of birth+number of part+symbol
Date of birth of programmer+animal name+date of programming

These code words must be repeated three times to pull the part up. For many parts, the reversal of their access code puts them back to sleep.

A basic way of calling an alter would be to spin the subject and call out the alter's name, or to snap the fingers and call out the name of a front alter.

Access phone calls to subjects will have tone codes transmitted that trigger the subject.

Other command codes will include:

Behavioural Codes
Behavioural codes issued by the handler or programmer are manifested in the form of:

Temporary pressure to the tip of the right index finger (symbolizing Faith or have Faith).
Temporary pressure to the tip of the left index finger (symbolizing no Faith or "deception of Satan").
Temporary pressure to the centre of the right palm (symbolizing Jesus "Sitting at the right-hand of God").
Temporary pressure to the ball of the right foot (symbolizing "Get on the Ball" or "hurry-up").
Temporary pressure to the tip of the right foot big toe (symbolizing "Right Direction").
Temporary pressure to the tip of the right foot centre toe (symbolizing "Fucking-up Direction").
Temporary pressure to the tip of the left foot big toe (symbolizing "Wrong Direction").
Temporary pressure to the buttocks (symbolizing "Bad Attitude" or "subject is acting like an ass").
Temporary pressure on tip of penis or clitoris (symbolizes immoral thoughts like subject is thinking/acting with their penis or her clitoris).
Temporary pressure to the left ear drums (symbolizing "do not listen").
Temporary pressure to the right ear drums (symbolizing "listen").
A wink of the right or left eye (symbolizing: right eye = God's agreement or left eye = Satan's

agreement).
Temporary tingling in the Testicles (symbolizing insufficient male confidence or "Having no balls or strength").
Temporary tingling on other areas of the body to imply that something invisible and/or supernatural is touching the subject. May be perceived as threatening or reassuring to the subject. Can be used to intimidate and confuse the subject often times combined with additional posthypnotic implants to inflict delusions like "being attacked with microwaves" or being caressed by Angels.
Temporary pressure near the jugular vein on right side of neck (symbolizing Satan having subject by Jugular or throat). This is used to inflict fear and doubt.

Basic Commands
System destruct codes (suicide)
Shatter codes
Erasure codes
Spin codes
Run (flee) codes
Shut down codes

3-tap code for access. The three taps can be on the subject's body, or on handler's body.

3 Taps by Handler:
3 taps inner thigh right leg-sex
3 taps inner thigh left leg-oral sex
3 taps top of thigh-come here
3 taps upper arm-danger
3 taps left chest-silence
3 taps right chest-remember loyalty

3 Taps by Subject:
3 taps top of thigh right leg-Threat perceived (to System)
3 taps top of thigh left leg- Not a threat (to System)
3 taps right side of face- Don't answer
3 taps left side of face- Answer

Body Gestures, the following functions are coded. They will be attached to a re-enforcement program.

By Handler:
Touch right ear- Listen and remember
Touch left ear- Forget
Touch chest - Loyal to handler
Touch hair - Leave
Touch mouth – Lie to whoever is speaking to you
Touch nose – Go away
Touch back of neck-Serpent rising

Turn head tilt to right-(often looks like moving head for sore neck)-Erase last act
Turn head tilt to right- Erase last response

Circular motion with thumb and fore finger right hand-Wind clocks forward.
Circular motion with thumb and fore finger left hand-Wind clocks backwards.

Left leg crossed over right-Terminate relationship with individual
Right leg crossed over left-Control the situation

By Subject:
Touch right ear- Internal instructions for response
Touch left ear- Forget what was just said
Touch chest - Remember your loyalty
Touch hair - Call for assistance
Touch mouth – What does the internal controller want communicated
Touch nose – Answer with lie
Touch back of neck-call to serpent

Turn head tilt to right-(often looks like moving head for sore neck)-Erase last act
Turn head tilt to right-Erase last response

Circular motion with thumb and fore finger right hand-Wind clocks forward.
Circular motion with thumb and fore finger left hand- Wind clocks backwards.

Left leg crossed over right-defence against questions.
Right leg crossed over left-System threat.

Hand Codes:

Finger to forehead— the part who is holding the body goes into trance and a deeper one replaces it.
One ring finger bent at 90° -- access wave Rotated pencil--with certain words--rotates the system
Finger swung the counter clockwise way closes portals.
Right Fist to forehead – OBEY
Fist with right hand cupping left hand, the left is like the letter c, and the thumb is outward and the fist inside, the left hand then moves 3 times over the knuckle -- access signal
Left hand of subject laid on top of handler's hand - sign of submission
Hands behind back of head -- I'm master
Right Hand with thumb and index finger making an L shape on chin/cheek
Hands on inside of thighs by handler – sexual service.
Hands locked folded interwoven backward -- you can't break "the circle"
Handshake with index and middle finger held straight out – "You are one of us."
Grip called the lion's paw -- access greeting opening and closing the hands or large circles with index finger opens portals. Palms rubbed together counter clockwise
Kiss on centre of head -- kiss of submission of subject to handler

Palm of hand touched -- sexual access point for some subjects
Thumb twiddle -- rotating the thumbs around with the two hands clasp – spinning the system
Touch of centre of forehead -- access point
Crossed at wrist (X) — binding or being bound
Hand on neck—sacrifice
Both hands raised, palm outward—weakness, supplication, acknowledgment, adoration, admiration
Rotating the hands around each other and then gesturing with the hands toward the person with both hands means--"did you get the signal?"Sign of distress.
Drawing the right hand across the throat with the thumb of the hand pointing to the throat. Used in connection with oaths, such as fidelity to death.

Universal Functioning Codes – to access these codes the subject's computer code must be entered. Occult computer codes will begin with: 666. Cult codes will begin with: 777. Illuminati codes 999. Master number 555.

Note for Programmer: The master number of 555 must be at the *end* of your access code. Example: (name+D.O.B.+L.S.N.+colour+555)

Universal function codes will affect the entire system. The codes can be coded so the same code means different things to groups of alters. For example group A will go down when code is given, Group B will come up with the same code.

Colour Codes
There are several colour codes used within a system. The codes are used as short cuts for the programmer and handler. The codes also assist in directing the system in stress situations and for protection.

Note: If using colours for hierarchy, colour coding can be switched in rank. The internal programmers can reassign colours if they need to, in order to protect the programming. Alters, sections, and parts of the computer can be colour coded. The colour coding for alters is not the same just because the alters are in the same section.

Be certain to set a reset code so the system can be accessed if internal programming prevents access. It is recommended reset codes are placed for: Each system level, the entire system, computer system, and each hierarchy part.

Occult Colours: Green, Black, Purple, Red, and Silver.

Coloured doors must be opened with the correct colour coded key. If the incorrect key is used on the door trap must be in place as a system protection.

These codes will be paired with a number or letter so the subject isn't triggered by accident.

CODE BLUE --Subject's body freezes in motion and can't move until another code is given.
CODE RED -- Subject gets angry and violent

CODE RED – (2) System collapse program
CODE GREEN -- suicide programming
CODE YELLOW – Subject alert level at all times. Ready for danger.
CODE BLACK—Subject prepare for ritual
CODE WHITE: Subject sleeps
CODE GREY: Subject flees.
CODE AMBER-Internal disaster. System breach, a part is attempting to break out of programming.
CODE SILVER-Close the system
CODE SAPPHIRE –Call to system protector alters

The following colours appear in the system: Gold, Silver, Purple, Black, Red, Green, Blue, Brown, White, Orange, Yellow, and Pink. These colours are often used to code doors and keys.

Door Codes:
GOLD- Training section
SILVER- Occult section
PURPLE –Prison section
BLACK-Computer section
RED- BDSM, sexual section
GREEN –Lucifer's section
BLUE- Dr. Section
BROWN- Tunnels
WHITE-Death
ORANGE- Fire doors
YELLOW- Child section
PINK- Gem section
GREY-Castle doors

Key Codes
GOLD- Opens all internal doors. (Internal programmer only)
SILVER- Green door
PURPLE – Red door
BLACK- Blue door
RED- White door
GREEN – Silver door
BLUE- Black doors
BROWN- Purple doors
WHITE- Yellow doors
ORANGE- Pink Door
YELLOW- Gold doors
PINK-Blue doors
TURQOUISE-Grey doors
GREY-Brown doors

Internal Alters are coded as follows:

Red: is often linked to alpha programming; these are often they most easily accessed alters in a subject's system, including lots of littles. Also, sexual programming/prostitution may be places here. Historically, the cult has linked the colour with sexual abuse and sexual ceremonies.
Black: Represents negative/cult spiritually; highly programmed alters who participate in cult rituals are often black; internal witches/warlocks.
Purple: Sometimes higher cult alters inside. May represent high priest, priestess; high family alters."
Blue: protective; may be linked to delta programming in some subject's. These are they aggressive protectors in a system. Military programming may also go here, in some subject's.
Orange: protective/defensive against outside or internal access. MKultra: Delta and other intense programming sequences may be this colour.
Yellow: often represents spirituality/positive messages. The programmers realize that too much theta/black can destroy, and in order not to lose their subject's to suicide, will put in lifesaving or positive messages, and allow some positive spiritually.
Green: Cult loyal. Green is traditional colour for "family", and intensely loyal alters may see themselves as this colour. Cult loyal protectors, trained to protect another higher cult member, may also be this colour. Recontact alters may also be in this group.
Brown: this can represent hidden, incognito alters, who can appear to be different colours. Epsilon and CIA programming may be this colour; hidden operatives and "spies."
Silver: controlling alters: high internal councils may wear this colour.
White: can represent goodness, wholeness; but may also represent highest spiritual alters inside."

Computer control alters should be colour coded with their terminal. This is to insure an alter does not link to a computer they should not. For example: Computer Operator Black=Green terminal, a Computer Operator Green=Grey terminal etc.

Programmer Colours- Drs are coded in colours also. This coding assists the subject in not becoming attached to their programmer as a person. The colour coding of Drs assists in coding in the inner world. *Note:* Drs must be programmed internally in the Warehouse/programming centre.
Dr. Green-Lead programmer
Dr. Black –Occult/ Spiritual programmer
Dr. White-Psychotropic Programmer
Dr. Blue-Epsilon programmer
Dr. Red-Cognitive programming

Occult programmers-are paired with a Dr. The task of the occult programmers is to insure the subject is being raised in accordance to occult teachings. These programmers are to maintain the spiritual balance within the system. The Mother of Darkness is to oversee the ritual programming of the subject.
Grande Mothers-
Grande Masters-
Mother of Darkness-

Zodiac programming codes use the birth signs of the subject and the corresponding gemstone. (Not to be confused with Gem programming.) An example code: (Aries+alters name+diamond+level number) or (Diamond+Fire+date of birth+Mars)

Aries
March 21 - April 20
Diamond
Mars
Fire
April
Taurus
April 21 - May 20
Emerald
Venus
Earth
May
Gemini
May 21 - June 21
Pearl
Mercury
Air
June
Cancer
June 22 - July 22
Ruby
Mercury
Water
July
Leo
July 23 - August 23
Peridot
The Sun
Fire
August
Virgo
August 24 - September 23
Sapphire
Mercury
Earth
September
Libra
September 24 - October 23
Opal
Venus
Air
October
Scorpio

October 24 - November 22
Topaz
Pluto
Water
November
Sagittarius
November 23 - December 21
Turquoise
Jupiter
Fire
December
Capricorn
December 22 - January 20
Garnet
Saturn
Earth
January
Aquarius
January 21 - February 19
Amethyst
Uranus
Air
February
Pisces
February 20 - March 20
Aquamarine
Neptune
Water
March

Number Codes
The list below is the standard number codes found throughout systems. They are paired with other codes. For example: (225+Aries+level 7+alter name)

911 – Contact handler.
225 – Minority
253 – Homosexual
261 - Psychiatric or psychoneurotic disorder.
265 - Unsuitability, character disorder
314 - Importance to national health, safety or interest
367 - Aggressive reaction.
41A - Apathy, lack of interest
383 - Criminalism
41E – Obesity
46A - Unsuitability, apathy, defective attitudes and inability to extend effort constructively

46B Sexual deviate
46C - Apathy/obesity
460 - Emotional instability reaction.
461 - Inadequate personality
463 - Paranoid personality
464 - Schizoid personality
469 - Unsuitability.
480 - Personality disorder.

Word Matrices

A word-matrix code is where the subject is given two lists of words and each word on the left list is paired with a word on the right list to form a code.

40 Tortures Used in Programming

Torture involving states of extreme pain and terror, to the point of near-death, is required to install programming. These states are induced through electroshock, toxins that cause pain or temporary paralysis, assault, painful bondage or pressure, rape, extreme cold/heat, burning, suffocation, near-drowning, spinning, hanging, inversion, exposure to torture, mutilation, or murder of others, and/or prolonged isolation, starvation, dehydration, or sensory deprivation.

States of despair, self-hatred, paranoia, and global distrust of humanity, are also effective. These are induced through forcing the subject to hurt or kill others, often loved ones and pets, sexual humiliation, convincing the subject that all important attachment figures are abusers, and convincing the subject that he or she is now controlled and overseen by surgically implanted monitoring devices or "spiritual assignments" of demons, malevolent spirits, curses, hexes, vexes, claims, etc.

Beating of the whole body ("any possible spot") with:
A rubber truncheon
A brass rod
A bar
A wooden rule with metal fittings
A stick
A whip

Beating of particularly sensitive areas of the body:
Bridge of the nose with a rubber truncheon
Protruding shoulder blades with a rubber truncheon
Gland area of the chin - which resemble mumps when swollen - with a rubber truncheon and rule
Shoulder joints with a rubber truncheon,
The outside of bare feet and in the toe area with a rubber covered bar
Finger tips with a blotter and inkwell base
Bare toe tips with a rubber truncheon
Bare heels (series of 10 blows - with a rubber truncheon - to a heel, several times a day) -

Pulling hair:
Off the top of head
Off temples, above the ear and neck area - so called goose plucking
Off beard and moustache
Off chest
Off crotch and scrotum

Burning:
Of the eye and lip area with a glowing cigarette
Of each hand's fingers with a burning torch

Methods of Physical Torture:

Blindfolding and stripping of clothes.
Hanging by the hands.
Hanging by the feet upside down.
Beating with sticks and electrical wires.
Whipping and beating with sticks and twisted rubber belts.
Forcing the subject to stand naked for long periods of time.
Pouring cold water on the subject's head.
Putting out lighted cigarettes on the subject's skin.
Shocking with an electrical current.
Kicking and punching.
Attacking the subject with vicious dogs.
Making the subject sit on a stake.
Throwing in a septic tank.
Pulling out the nails and hair.
Dragging.
Tying the hands and feet from behind.
Utilizing sharp objects, such as a pocketknife or piece of glass.
Sleeping on a bare floor without a cover and flooding the cell with sewer water.
Standing on toes and against a wall pressing with the fingers for long hours. The subject may be denied sleep, food, drink, and medicine.
Beating on cuts and sore parts of the body.
Giving the subject a lot of water or very watery fruits, such as watermelon, after denying them food and drink. After the subject drinks or eats the fruit, their hands and penis will be tied so the subject will not be able to urinate.
Placing drugs and narcotics in the subject's food to weaken their will power.
Placing the subject in solitary confinement where the cells are made of a special kind of cement that gets extremely hot in the summer and cold in winter.
Hitting the subject's genitals with a stick or squeezing them by hand.
Dragging the subject over barb wires and fragments of glass and metal.
Confinement in boxes, cages, coffins, etc, or burial (often with an opening or air-tube for oxygen).
Restraint; with ropes, chains, cuffs, etc.
Near-drowning.
Extremes of heat and cold, including submersion in ice water, and burning chemicals.
Skinning (only top layers of the skin are removed in victims intended to survive).
Spinning.
Blinding light.
Electric shock.
Forced ingestion of offensive body fluids and matter, such as blood, urine, feces, flesh, etc.
Hung in painful positions.
Hunger and thirst.
Sleep deprivation.
Compression with weights and devices.
Sensory deprivation.
Drugs to create illusion, confusion, and amnesia, often given by injection or intravenously.
Ingestion or intravenous toxic chemicals to create pain or illness, including chemotherapy agents.

Limbs pulled or dislocated.
Application of snakes, spiders, maggots, rats, and other animals to induce fear and disgust.
Near-death experiences; commonly asphyxiation by choking or drowning, with immediate resuscitation.
Forced to perform or witness abuse, torture and sacrifice of people and animals, usually with knives.
Forced participation in child pornography and prostitution.
Raped to become pregnant; the fetus is then aborted for ritual use, or the baby is taken for sacrifice or enslavement.
Spiritual abuse to cause subject to feel possessed, harassed, and controlled internally by spirits or demons. Desecration of Judeo-Christian beliefs and forms of worship; Dedication to Satan or other deities.
Abuse and illusion to convince subjects that God is evil, such as convincing a subject that God has raped them.
Surgery to torture, experiment, or cause the perception of physical or spiritual bombs or implants.
Harm or threats of harm to family, friends, loved ones, pets, and other subjects, to force compliance.
Use of illusion and virtual reality to confuse and create non-credible disclosure.
Forced participation in slavery
Being locked in a small confined spot, a pit or cage with spiders and snakes
Being forced to kill, and cut up and eat individuals
Immersion into feces, urine and containers of blood.
Catheter up the external urethral orifice. Then the urinary bladder is filled so that the victim is in extreme pain, and is made to hold their bladder in silence. This torture to the body is painful. But the long term effects of this torture, which is done repeatedly to subjects to teach obedience, is to seriously damage their urinary bladders. The abreaction of memories of this help blackmail alters into obedience.
Standing in a freezing cell
Undressing subjects and making them stand naked during training
Keeping them undressed in very cold cells with air conditioners and fans running at full speed;
Keeping them awake by constant irritation until they exhausted;
Offering food to hungry subjects and then removing it before they could eat it.
Banning visits to toilets so that they had to soil their cells;
At other times keeping them in filthy toilets;
Forcing them to run in circles until they are exhausted.
Placing a subject in 'search position',('stoika' position) single finger of each hand to the wall, legs well apart and well back, on the toes, knees bent, for prolonged periods; Subjects who collapse from exhaustion are beaten back into position.
Heavy punching to the pit of the stomach to subjects in 'search position';
Kicking the legs from under a subject in the 'search position' so that they fall to the ground, banging their head on the wall, radiator or ground;
Beating with batons on the kidneys and on the privates in 'search position';
Kicking between the legs while in the 'search position'.
Putting a subject in 'search position' over a very powerful electric fire or radiator;
Stretching a subject over benches with two electric fires underneath and kicking them in the stomach;
General assault with truncheons and knuckledusters.
Faces slapped, ears drummed, arms twisted, chest hair pulled. Nose, chest, mouth and throat held.

Forced to run barefoot over broken glass and stones while being beaten.
Subjects dropped blindfold from helicopters hovering near the ground.
Dogs used to induce fear and attack the subjects.
Torturous exercises imposed - up to 48 hours for subjects.
Awakened as soon as they fall asleep.
Bags kept over the heads of the subjects for up to six days.
Subjects testicles manually compressed burned with matches and candles.
Rabbit-punching to the back of the neck while in 'search position';
Banging the head against the wall;
Beating the head with a baton in crescendo fashion;
Slapping the ears and face with open hand;
Twisting the arms behind the back and twisting fingers;
Crushing each hand's fingers placed between two pencils
Crushing each foot's toes
Kicking legs and torso
Kicking shin area
Stabbing with pins etc.
Face and ears pinching with a hand and key
Forcing to sit on the edge of the stool
Forcing to sit on a bolt hurting my rectum
Cuffing hands with handcuffs followed by tearing them off wrists
Physical exercises - forcing to do knee bends until passing out
Forcing to run up and down the stairs for about 20-30 minutes
Solitary confinement for indefinite time (also naked) -
Sleep deprivation for the period of 7-9 days through waking with continuous slaps on face performed by the guarding officer. Will place the subject into semi-dementia and result in mental health problems - visual and auditory hallucinations
Standing at attention in cell for indefinite time
Standing at attention in programming room with hands raised above head for indefinite amount of time
Reduction in food rations (during the peak period of programming) subject is not allowed to have anything to drink - the torture of thirst
Security checks at night when - after waking – subject is forced to stand at attention, unclothed and temperature regulation induced for a predetermined amount of time.
Removing windows from cell for 24 hours 1 blanket, 1 bed shared between 3 subjects
Pouring buckets of water in to the cell regularly.
Medical help deprivation, medical attention (very caring attitude) to subjects
Subject not allowed to have open air (outside) walks and prohibited from leaving the building.
No showers or hygiene for a determined amount of time.
Moral abuse. Vulgar and elaborate verbal insult aimed at subject and my family members.
Deprived of any contact with the family or the outside world (no newspapers etc.) or books
A false statement - read by a programmer stating as fact an accusation of theft, lying, or cheating.
An insinuating statement with derogatory remarks concerning conduct of peer subject has built relationship with.
Write a degrading word in bold on forehead such as Whore, traitor, Dog, etc. The subject cannot remove the label and must have it showing at all times.

Prodding the stomach with straight fingers;
Chopping blows to the ribs from behind with simultaneous blows to the stomach;
Insertion of instruments in the anal passage;
Kicking on the knees and shins;
Tossing the subjects from one officer to another and punching them while in the air;
Injections;
Electric cattle prod
Electric shocks given by use of a machine;
Burning with matches and candles;
Urinating on subjects;
Hot irons applied to the genitals.
Beatings should be followed by water torture.
Dissected, sometimes while still alive and without anaesthetic.

Psychological tortures:
Russian roulette
Firing blanks
beating in darkness
Blindfolding
Assailants using stocking masks or wearing surgical dress
Staring at white perforated wall in small cubicle
Use of amphetamine drugs
Isolating the subject socially, cutting him off from public life, placing him in solitary confinement, and denying them news and information in order to make him feel lonely.
Forbidding calling by name, giving the subject a number, and calling them by that number in order to defeat his morale.
Threatening to summon their sister, mother, wife, or daughter and rape her.
Threatening to rape the subject.
Threatening to confiscate their possessions and to have them fired from their employment.
Threatening to cause a permanent physical disability or life imprisonment.
Offer the subject certain enticements (apartment, car, passport, scholarship, etc.).
Controlling everything the subject does, even in private, whether they are awake or asleep, to convince the subject that the programmer is in charge. Force them to bow their head and look down while talking with the handler/programmer.
A sound machine used to produce a constant hiss of 'white noise'.

The hell confinement: use a device that includes a pair of handcuffs and a pair of foot shackles, both of which are linked to a steel rod. The rod presses against the subject's back, making it almost impossible to walk, sit, use the toilet, or feed themselves.

Tucker telephone: The device works by placing a ground wire around the big toe of the subject while fastening the hot wire, to the subject's genitals. The telephone, which has been tailored to send electric shock is called, sending an electric current to the genitals.

The strappado: also known as Palestinian Hanging, a subject is hung by their arms, which are fastened behind their head, causing the arms to be slowly pulled from the shoulder sockets by the weight of the body. When the subject becomes tired they cannot hold themselves upright, their bodies fall forward and their breathing is impaired.

Cold Cell: the subject is placed in front of an air conditioner unit for hours, or days. The subject may be soaked in water first to enhance the tactic.

German Chair: The subject is placed in a metal folding chair. Their legs and arms are secured to the metal seat while the back of the chair is pulled back and down toward the ground. This causes severe stress on the spine, neck, and other limbs, often causing permanent damage.

The box: A box made of wood, hard plastic or metal too small for a person to lie in. The subject is forced to lie in uncomfortable positions for long periods, with their hands and feet bound. The box is tilted on its side and also elevated, so every time food, usually a hard-boiled egg, is dropped into the box, it rolls to the bottom, where it is out of reach of the subject.

White torture: A form of emotional and physiological torture. This is a form of sensory deprivation and isolation. The subject is kept in a white room, with white chairs, table, bedding, and the meal is white rice on a white paper plate. If the subject wants to use the bathroom, he had to put a white slip of paper under the door.
Stretch machine: used as punishment, stretches person without breaking bones.

Tiger Bench: This works by placing a subject on a long bench, with a board against their back and head. The subject is then tied down so their back is secured to the board and their feet and legs are secured to the bench. Next, bricks are placed under their feet, until all the straps holding the legs down break—or the subject's legs snap before the straps do.

Animal Torture for Programming
Beheading
Buried alive
Crushing
Drowning
Electric shock collars
Freezing
Neglect
Gouging eyes out
Hanging
Dog fighting.
Ritual sacrifice and mutilations as part of rituals.
Sexual abuse.
Wedge sticks in the dogs' mouths so they cannot eat or drink and die a slow, painful death.
Skinning

41 Internal Structures and Symbols

Internal structures are important for the following reasons:
1. Mapping the system
2. Keeping parts in their assigned areas.
3. Giving parts a ‘world’ they can navigate and feel ‘natural’ in.
4. Triggering specific events or actions in a timed manner.
5. Cause confusion if system is breached.
6. Re-enforce programmed behaviours
7. Re-create programming sites for internal programmers.
8. Give the programmer means to access the system.
9. Give places to set traps.
10. Differentiate levels.
11. Build system hierarchy.
12. Allow for specified parts quick travel.
13. Assist in maintain script compliance.

Internal structures and symbols that can be created in System are:

A
Ancient symbols and letters
Aliens
Animal prints
Ant pits,
Angel - A guide to heaven.
Anchor - Hope or eternal life.
Ankh - An Egyptian symbol of eternal life.
Apple - salvation, sometimes sin.
Arch - The passage to heaven.

B
Black boxes: represent self destruct and shatter programming sealed off into a black box to protect system.
Bohemian Grove
Butterflies
Bows
Bee Traps w/ swarms,
Black Glass Wall
Bird cages
Black Holes (vortexes)
Boxes

Butterflies
Birds

C
Castles
Clocks
Cabalistic "Tree of Life," with adjoining root systems
Carpet (Magic),
Castles, Castle dungeon (torture chambers)
Caves,
Chess themes (Alice in Wonderland programming, duel programming)
Chain-of-command diagrams
Clocks (there are several incl. computer clocks),
Concentration camp,
Cords
Cave and well
Columns
Carousel
Crystals

D
Deck of cards
Dominoes
Desert,
Doll House,
Numbered Doors by the thousands w/ red hot knobs,
Demons
Disney themes

E
Elevators,
Emerald City (connected to the castle),
Eucalyptus Trees,
Eyes, all Seeing Eye,

F
Fields of flowers
Firewall
Forests
Fruit Tree
Fire walls,

G
Glass,
Glass coffin,

Golden Keys
Graveyards
Geometric figures
Green doors (OZ programming)

H
Hall of Illumination
Hourglass
Hallways with red doors,
Hell Pit or Hell Fire
Hour Glass (matrix),
House of David,
Horus:

I
Internal training rooms:
Internal walls
Ice town,
Invisible Countries,
Infinity loops
Internal armies,

J

K
Keys

L
Libraries,
Light side City,
Large jewels (Jewel programming)

M
Masonic chess design
Mirrors: used internally to reinforce other programming sequences, internal twinning, and distortion of reality programming. May create shadow systems of functional systems.
Mirrors or glass shattering
Masks
Monsters
Marshlands,
Mazes,
Mirrors
Moat,
Mountains,

N
Nursery (glass),

O
Ocean
One eye covered

P
Pyramids
Pool of Death may be called Lakes of Death, and Waters of Death.

Pillar of Power
Paper Trees,
Petra Secret City,
Playground
Poppy field,
Portals
Q

R
Ribbons
Rivers (Nile, Rio Grande, Shenandoah, etc.),
Robots (older systems)
Room behind a closet
Rubicon (outer space beyond the stars),
Rain
Ruby slippers (OZ programming)

S
Shattered glass
Stairwell.
Sun
Spider webs: represent linked programming
Seals: usually in a group of six or seven.
Stables
Snakes
Spider webs
Sea shells
Seeds,
Serpent tree,
Shafts,
Shifting sands,
Shoes (gold, silver, and ruby slippers),
Snake pits (traps),
Spider chambers,
Stairway,
Schematics of computer circuitry boards

T
Temples
Temple of Moloch
Training grids:
Trees.
Torpedo Town,
Tin Woodsman’s Castle,
Trojan horse w/ armies,

Tunnels,

U

V
Valley of the Dry Bones,
Valley of Death
Volcano (to destroy & remake the system),
Vortex (see Black Holes),

W
Wasteland,
Water (Moats),
Waterfalls,
Wind,
Wires,
Worms,
Walls,
White rabbits

X

Y
Yellow Brick Road

Z

42 Electric Shock Torture (ECT)

Electrodes attached to parts of the subject’s body: most typically, while wires are wound around the fingers, toes, or tongue; attached to the genitals; or inserted in the vagina to provide a return circuit; the voltage source.

Use of prod or taser of precisely controllable pressure is applied to other sensitive parts of the body, such as the genitals, breasts, or head. The received voltage and amperage can be controlled with precision and used to cause pain while avoiding obvious evidence on the subject’s body
Electric shock may directly cause death in three ways: paralysis of the breathing centre in the brain, paralysis of the heart, or ventricle fibrillation.

Electroshock can be used to cause amnesia. Memories could be erased, and the subjects reprogrammed.

The application of electricity stimulates muscle activity to such an extent that involuntary and painful muscular contractions occur. Longer pulses of electricity produce successively greater debilitation. For example, a five-second discharge from a cattle prod can completely immobilize someone for up to 15 minutes.

It is the magnitude of current and the time duration that produces effect. That means a low value current for a long duration can also be fatal. The safe current/time limit for a subject to survive at 500mA is 0.2 seconds and at 50 mA is 2 seconds.

The voltage of the electric supply is only important as it ascertains the magnitude of the current. As Voltage = Current x Resistance, the bodily resistance is an important factor. Sweaty or wet subjects have a lower body resistance and so they can be fatally electrocuted at lower voltages.

Let-go current is the highest current at which subject can release a conductor. Above this limit, involuntary clasping of the conductor is present. It is 22 mA in AC and 88 mA in DC.

Apart from electric shock the other equally dangerous hazards of working with electricity are electrical arc flash and electrical arc blast.

Placing subjects hand in pocket may protect subject by preventing a current from travelling through the heart making a shock non-lethal.

The severity of the electric shock depends on the following factors: body resistance, circuit voltage, amplitude of current, path of the current, area of contact, and duration of contact.

Death may also occur from falling in case of electric shock.

Burn injury may occur at both the entrance and exit of the current.

Low frequency AC is more dangerous than high frequency AC.

AC and DC both kill.

Below 1 Milliampere Generally not perceptible
1 Milliampere Faint Tingle
5 Milliampere Slight shock felt. Not painful but disturbing. Average individual can let go. Strong involuntary reactions can lead to other injuries.
6 to 25 Milliampere (women) Painful shocks. Loss of muscle control.
9 to 30 Milliampere (men) The freezing current or “let go” range. If extensor muscles are excited by shock, the subject may be thrown away from the power source. Subjects cannot let go. Strong involuntary reactions can lead to other injuries.
50 to 150 Milliamperes Extreme pain, respiratory arrest, severe muscle reactions. Death is possible.
1.0 to 4.3 Amperes Rhythmic pumping action of the heart ceases. Muscular contraction and nerve damage occur; death is likely.
10 Amperes Cardiac arrest, severe burns, death is probable.

*Electromagnetic radiation can also be a means of torture. While not necessarily lethal, these effects are debilitating and can be painful. Electromagnetic stimulation can have other nonlethal effects on humans. Extreme emotions of rage, lust, and fatigue can be caused. A targeted individual may become depressed or even suicidal and you will almost certainly start to reap negative psychological and physical effects - fear, anxiety, fatigue, pains in your chest, headaches, lack of interest in activities, disease, cancer, etc.

43 Internal Base Systems

Systems of subjects are known to programmers to begin to break down by the age of 30. Dispensable Subjects are treated by programmers/handlers more severely throughout their lives; these are the ones who are 'used up' earlier on, doing variously more severe things: low-level prostitution/child sex-subjects/non-public severely abused long-term sex-subjects/ultra-hardcore BDSM porn/bestiality/black-op soldiers (including 'suicide bombers' and other such programmed individuals)/drug-trafficking/human-trafficking etc.

Cocaine is commonly used drug for controlling subjects as it keeps them addicted and totally reliant on their handler for their 'next fix'.

The childhood hobby of painting is part of keeping the child subject’s mind creative and dissociative (this kind of repetitive/relaxing/long-term activity keeps the child in a mild trance while also encouraging their creativity which is important for programming. The mind becomes 'stale' and can cease to function adequately if they are constantly traumatized with no creative activity such as painting. The creative parts of the brain need to be stimulated in young subjects to ensure healthy development. This also assists with the double-bind levelled against the subject as the programmer/handler will praise the child for their work while also criticizing them and abusing them.

All systems must be set up in grids for easier mapping. The numbers, letters, symbols are up to the programmer to lie in. This will assist in keeping the codes undetectable.

Each system has an internal programmer which oversees the gatekeeper who grants or denies entry into the different rooms.

Alex System
Alex is used for high-level parallel programming.

One of the most important end time’s communications systems is the ALEX system. This will operate on several levels. The electronic end of the ALEX system which stands for Amalgamated Logarithmic Encrypted Transmission (ALEX) is a method for encrypting electronic transmissions so a computer which could decode 5 Trillion codes a second would take 2,000 years to decipher one of these transmissions. In other words, when the ALEX system is operating--it cannot be decoded.

The ALEX system intersects with the programming. The ALEX (also called ALEXUS) is part of the tracking and Antichrist-Call-Back Programming. Outside computers are able to interconnect with the Monarch Mind Control slave and call them back for activities. The Council of 9 of the Illuminati has placed an alter by the name of Alex or a similar name in high level subjects and they have either via implants made these subjects available for programming via electronic communications that tie in with their ALEX computers.

Since the early 1960s, the Intelligence agencies have been putting two-way radio communication implants into subjects. This is called telemetry or remote control. The radio wave enters the implant, the implant transmits it to the brain, and the brain's reaction is then picked up and relayed back to a computer which decodes what the brain waves show the brain was thinking.

Alex implants are used within subjects to communicate such thoughts as:
a. "murder your family"
b. "the government is to blame, murder the President"
c. "you cannot get legal redress for what has been done to you by the government"
d. "it is hopeless to fight us"
e. "you want to have sex with the opposite sex"
f. "you want to deal in drugs"
g. "you want to protect your country by being loyal to the CIA"

Atlantis system
This system is built after the mythology of Atlantis. This system is a military system for navel personal. This system takes three programmers to install due the command structure. The Atlantis system involves water torture, water endurance, and water 'games'.

Base Datum
This is a coordinate system. In the early years the systems were built with 3 hour glasses each spinning on a x,y, or z axis. The hour glasses could be turned and in so doing the entire system of alters could be turned.

The systems allow for the programmer or handler to rotate the system 180 degrees. This allows access to top front alters, and the bottom alters.

Beehive System
This system is used for lower beta subjects. The system has a "Brood Chamber" which is the deepest level of the system where the Queen Bee resides. Beehive systems aren't very deep but have many sections for each beta part. The part will be assigned to their section and when they are needed for their task they can be triggered/coded out.

Castle system
The Castle system involves internal imagery of a castle. A castle system will contain a moat, drawbridge, turrets, gargoyles, a torture dungeon filled with actual memories of torture, secret passages, lots of levels, and rooms including a library. Child alters are often hidden in the dungeon. Lots of programs can be contained within the castle, and many traps. Disobedient alters may also be locked up in the castle. The castle will house some alters and also some deadly programs. When castle alters get stirred up, the subject may internally see the castle lights go on. The castle walls may have a grid on them. The castle may be guarded by monsters.

Double Helix.
This is the most common programming system. The double helix pattern is used as an elevator shaft running up and down the worlds created for the alters. Each world lies at a trance level. The double-helix is put in at programming sites where they have full medical facilities, and is typically used in

military programming. The double Helix is a complicated system to place in, and for outsiders to breach.

The codes up and down the elevator are alpha-numeric. Because the way the double helix shape twists, one can ride the elevator and get off a level 1, 3, 5, 7, 9 but you have to ride it the other way to get off at 2, 4, 6, 8, 10, 12. Because the double helix is the centrepiece of how the different physiological states of the mind are being layered, taking the subject down to these different physiological states and levels is incredibly perilous.

The Caduceus is a double helix with snakes at the top. The Caduceus is an occult symbol used in occult programming of the double helix system.

The system is also used for dual programming.

Helix. This is a simplified version of the double helix.

The Carousel is usually found in the centre of the Double Helix. The Mensa system will often have the Double Helix system within it to assure no breach.

Hour glass system
Three hour glasses will be placed around the x-y-z axis in a quadrant. A quadrant consists of a section of alters in a world and their mirror images. 12 disciple alters will be placed within the hourglass. Each disciple has to memorize a disciple lesson. If something triggers them, they will begin to fall through the hour glass. If each of these 12 disciples falls through the hour glass like sand, then a sleeping giant will wake up. When the Giant awakes, he will kill the body. A mirror image of the Giant alter will be made also to help insure that the suicide program is accomplished.

Delta System
This system is used in military programming. The system is configured with the Delta symbol (Triangle) overlaid on its self creating the levels for the system. The system will be marked in levels as Delta A. Delta B. Ect.

Empire System
The Empire system is placed into the elite subjects. This system will oversee the initial system placed by programmers. If subjects of influential bloodlines and intelligence survive the programming of the Double Helix, the Empire system will be placed.

The Empire system is layered deep in, and over sees the Double Helix system. The Empire system can only be accessed by one individual. The individual will be the person who oversees the bloodline.

Epsilon system: this is often a hidden system and may hold CIA programming and high level governmental programming. Assassin programming may be held in this system. Covert operations, courier operations, learning to tail a subject, or “drop a tag”, disguises, getting out of difficult situations, may be handled by this system, which sees itself as chameleon-like. The system is a colour coded system with the Seed of Life design. This is formed from seven circles being placed with six fold symmetry, forming a pattern of circles and lenses, which act as a basic component of the Flower of Life's system design. The Flower Life System will be the design of the Epsilon system.

Flower system
The Flower system involves cross programming, i.e., three or four subjects may have been programmed together so one subject only has a piece of the programming. The Flower system utilizes the power of peer pressure and generational ties. In order to get to that piece, the programmer must have access to the other piece which resides in another subject.

The flowers will often be bright. Internally, the flower system may show up as flowers with numerous colours, with the bud representing one subject, the stem and flower representing other subjects.

This system might be connected to the Umbrella, the Trees, the Triangle and the Star. A flower can regenerate an internal tree because of its generational roots. Flowers are also used as elevator shafts, such as a sunflower. A part has to jump into the centre of the flower and go down the stem to reach a lower level. Flower fields such as the poppy field are used as a hypnotic trigger to place an alter into deep trance.

Gem System
This system is found in subject's who have strong family lineage in programming. The system is used in subjects, whose family members are generational occult, children of programmers, and high ranking officials. The system is typically mapped after a diamond cut; Round, Princess, Emerald, Radiant, Oval, Pear etc. The cut of the diamond denotes rank of subject also.

Mensa System
This is a system put into subjects who have photographic memories. It involves the use of numbers and math. Its overall structure looks like a triangular-shaped fish net, with all the nodes or knots of the net containing a triangle. The core is place at the centre of the triangle and is surrounded by more triangles. There are circles of alters within circles of alters. Circles within circles. A circle can rotate and will never end. The programming is meant to be non-ending. There are also triangles within triangles. The effect of using a structure like this to house alters and as a result they feel trapped in endless circles and mazes of triangles within triangles.

The Mensa system (used in military and Illuminati programming) involves lots of numbers and sequences along with bar codes and union force codes.

The Mensa system will often have the Double Helix system within it. This system is connected with DNA; the subject has usually received several blood transfusions. Programming is done through medical abuse by hospitals and doctors. Several suicide programs are layered in.

The codes in a Mensa system will be equations (sometimes called union force codes), bar codes, and number sequences. Union force would have to do with a set of numbers that would equal another set to come up with yet another set: e.g., a+b=c, b+c=a, c+b=a. A subject could be programmed to respond to this very complex code. These codes are extremely difficult to discover in order to neutralize responses to the codes

Oneness system: (Spiritual Programming)
The oneness system exists in the formation of a Nonagon (which is nine sided polygon) 3 (total corners/vertices of one triangle) x 9 (total amount of triangles) equals 27 System Demons as each vertices of a triangle has a point that represents a System Demon. Within each triangular formation/geometrical shape of the Nonagon exists the statement: 'Two or more in my name and I am there'. Such System Demons form the entirety of the mind consciousness and the entirety of the subject as 'who they are' as a consciousness. There may exist 'more', as Systems exists as layers upon layers upon layers.

The programming code of the oneness system is 333 The reason for this is the following:

3 - (Two or more in my name and I am there)
3 - (Two or more in my name and I am there)
3 - (Two or more in my name and I am there)

Thus, 3 x (Two or more in my name) forming the trinity of the oneness system.
Thus - 3 + 3 + 3 forming nine (9) triangular shapes altogether forming the Nonagon as the formation of the oneness system.

The Pentagram (or star) System
This system is often connected to the Tornado system. One pentagram system has pentagrams within pentagrams. The geometric lines grow from pentagram to pentagram by lines running in opposite directions. This has the same effect as circles within circles. Rituals are tied to this system. There are many cult-created alters within this system.

The Scrabble system
This system contains letters, numbers, and mathematical exponents. The system will be set up like a Scrabble board. Across the top and bottom of the board will be the numbers A-O. The vertical sides of the system board will be numbered 1-15. The squares of the board may be colour coded also.

Solar System
This system is set up like the Solar System. Parts will be placed on the various planets and moons. As the system orbits the sun the parts will complete their assigned tasks throughout the year. This system is used in occult programming, and Alien programming.

Each planet will have a specific alter set up and hierarchy. The system parts will not be able to travel outside of their planets or stars without transportation. The can be Spaceships, teleporters and other inter-space travel methods.

Mercury
Venus
Earth
Mars
Jupiter
Saturn solar system in an orbit of 29.5 years around the sun. Death programming in some subjects at this orbit.
Uranus
Neptune
Pluto

Solemetric system
This is used in military and spiritual programming. This system is three dimensional and can rotate. The programmer will place into each section the desired number of parts. The parts will be easily pulled up through triggers, and codes. Subjects who must perform complex tasks and remain focused given this system. The tasks given to these parts are future programmers, strategists, and spiritual counsellors. The programmers need these subjects minds to be fragmented into fifty-60 alters. Because the divisions in the mind due to dissociation and programming are not as deeply structured, subjects who receive solemetric systems have demonic forces and ritual participation to insure the system remains in place.

Spider Web system (spiritual programming)

The Spider Web system is very complex. In this program, the clones will immediately spin new webs that are double connected if the system is tampered with. Communication between personalities proceeds through the strands. This system is for blackmail and destruction via entrapment of unsuspecting individuals who are perceived as threats to the cult/occult/institution. This system is into female subjects whose purpose is to infiltrate churches, or the hierarchy of an agency. The system has a web with connectors and silk strands. The targeted individual will be symbolically placed into the web and then the black widow alter(s) will entrap the individual. This is programming to take individuals with sexual entrapment. The spirit Viper found in ISA 59:5 is placed into this system to protect it. There will be egg alters which will devour the individual, and Gatekeepers are assigned to guard the system.

Telescoping system

This system is placed in to subject's who will be involved in covert operations.(Sleeper Agents)
Each seam of the telescope marks the end of one level and the beginning of another.
The levels will collapse upon one another as the subject completes their assigned task/mission. If the subject is caught the system will collapse down to the last level which has a termination code.

44 Games

Games are used to teach subject's lessons with their peer groups. These games are used as tools in programming to test for: Weaknesses, strengths, leadership skills, physical fitness, twinning, trauma bonding, betrayal, survival, psychological features, and other characteristics the programmer deems necessary for their subject.

Programmers are encouraged to tailor the games to the subjects, and desired outcome.

Programmers are encouraged to let teams build together and form bonds before dismantling the teams.

Programmers are encouraged to pair weaker subjects with stronger subjects as games continue.

Programmers are encouraged to pair enemy subjects as a two team to encourage distrust, anger, and betrayal.

Programmers cannot separate twining subjects.

All subjects must be bonded to a subject, if a subject is not bonded their mental and physical health will deteriorate drastically.

Note: betting is prohibited

Odd Man Out: This game consists of three subjects of the same age. The three subjects are advised they must fight one another. There can only be one winner. The programmers must assess how the three subjects navigate this game. 1.) Do the two weaker subjects 'gang up' on the perceived stronger subject? 2.) Does one weaker subject attempt to ally themselves with the stronger subject? 3.) Do they wait for one subject to be the first to fall before joining 'sides' against him?

When there are two remaining subjects: 1.) Have they discovered the others weakness 2.) How hard do they fight? 3.) How well did they bond against the first subject.

The Race: A field is chosen of subjects and a course set. The subjects must navigate the course and one another. Cheating is encouraged; there must be a clear winner. Those who finish in the bottom third must be re-evaluated, the last place finisher terminated. The race should be completed at night.

The Hunt 1: Subjects are broken into two squads; Red and Blue. An expendable subject is released and the two squads are sent to hunt down the subject. The squads must fight one another or evade. The hunted subject must be caught and terminated.

The Hunt 2: Subjects are set on a course and must complete the course. Dogs are sent to hunt the subjects. All subjects who complete the course are safe.

The Hunt 3: One on One hunt. Two subjects must hunt one another and fight until incapacitated.

Ring Fighting: Two subjects must fight. The dominate subject must beat the other into submission. The victor then must insure the loser is taken care of. This is done by the victor 'nursing' the loser back to health. Programmers must intervene if it appears the dominate subject is 'taking it easy'.

Chess: The subjects must learn to play chess. If they lose the game they are punished.

Tag: Male v Female subject. The male subject must hunt the female subject, catch her, subdue her, and rape her.

Tag: Female v Male Subject. The female subject is advised they must seduce an unknowing male subject have sex with them. *Note: Programmers cannot be chosen for this game.*

Kick the can: This game is a variation of tag and hide and seek. One subject or a team of subjects are designated as "it" and a can is placed in the middle of the playing area. The other subjects run and hide while the "it" covers their eyes and counts to a specified number. "It" then tries to find everyone. If a subject is tagged by "it", they go into a holding pen for captured subjects. If one of the un-captured subjects manages to kick the can, the captured subjects are released. The game is over once all the non-"it" subjects are in the holding pen.

Handkerchief game: Teams line up on opposite sides and a handkerchief is placed in the middle. The programmer will call out a number for the subjects to respond to. The subjects that have been assigned that number both run to the middle and try to be the first one to retrieve the handkerchief. The subject who wins the handkerchief first gets a point for their team.

It is suggested the team with the most points receives more food, sleep time, etc that will benefit them. This encourages more fighting, and the weak individual on the team being singled out.

*Octopus***:** The octopus calls out " Come _____ in my ocean." (The blank is filled in by what the subjects must do as they are crossing the ocean. Hop, twirl, swim, run, run backwards, etc.) Then the subjects must follow the command and try and make it to the other side of the ocean without being tagged by the octopus. Any subject that is tagged has to stand in the spot where they were tagged. In the next round both the octopus and the tagged subjects try and tag the other subjects as they go by.

This game can be adjusted so subjects that are tagged can move. Fighting is encouraged. This game can be played on land or in water. During the water game, subjects are encouraged to attempt to drown those whom they catch. Programmers must decide if the first caught subject can be terminated.

Shadow Scout: Choose a subject and give them a 2 minute head start to find a place to hide. Two subjects are also chosen to be the shadow scouts and they both run with the chosen subject.
After 2 minutes of following the subject one of the shadow scouts returns to the waiting subjects. The second shadow scout continues to follow the subject who is to hide and places clues on where they have been by leaving pebbles, rocks, chalk directions or anything else they can think of that would lead the team to where the subject is hiding. As soon as the first shadow scout returns the subjects

follow them and try and pick up the clues left by the second shadow scout. If the subject who is hiding is not found within 5 minutes of the start of the game (or any amount of time set before the game starts) they win. Scouts cannot yell or point out in any way where the subject is hiding once all the subjects are in the area they are hiding.

Strategy*:* The subject who is hiding should lose both of the shadow scouts so they don't know where they are hiding. The shadow scouts need to be creative on what signs they leave.

Sticks and Stones: divide the subjects into two teams -- the sticks and the stones. Line them up facing one another. Designate an area roughly 30 feet behind each team as that teams' safe zone. To start the game, yell out "sticks" or "stones." The team them call on must begin chasing the opposing team, which begins racing toward its safe zone. Any tagged subjects must switch teams, and the two new teams' line up to play again. The team to bring all the subjects to its side wins the game.

*Save the Egg****:*** Teams must work together to find a way to "save" the egg (Humpty Dumpty for young subjects) — in this case an egg dropped from a specific height. That could involve finding the perfect soft landing, or creating a device that guides the egg safely to the ground. Let their creativity work here.

Programmers are encouraged to have team member punish one another if the egg breaks.

*Minefield****:*** Another team game. Arrange an obstacle course and divide subjects into teams. Subjects take turns navigating the "mine field" while blindfolded, with only their teammates to guide them. One can also require subjects to only use certain words or clues to make it challenging or content-area specific.

A Shrinking Vessel: This game requires strategy in addition to team work. Its rules are: The entire group must find a way to occupy a space that shrinks over time, until they are packed into the space. One can form the boundary with an electrical wire, barb-wire, or some other harm causing boundary.

Three Way Tug-of-War: A variation, set up a multi-directional game by tying ropes in such a way that three or four teams tug at once. Some teams might choose to work together to eliminate the other groups before going head-to-head.

45 Trauma Bonding

Abandonment and trauma are at the core of programming. Abandonment causes deep shame and fear that it will occur again. Abandonment by betrayal is worse than neglect. Betrayal is purposeful and self-serving. If severe enough, it is traumatic. What moves betrayal into the realm of trauma is fear and terror. If the trauma wound is deep enough and the terror immense enough, the system will shut out healthy attempts to engage it. The system elevates into a distress state, never safe, waiting to be damage again.

What should occur during trauma bonding is a highly addictive attachment to the individuals who have traumatized the subjects. The subjects should blame themselves, their defects, their failed efforts. This bonding should cause the subjects to distrust their own judgment, to distort their own realities so much, the subjects can place themselves at more risk.

The programmer's relationship with the subject should create trauma bonds. The bonds should initially be created physically. Forced sex should be used with the subject. The programmer should ask the following questions of the subject during intercourse:

Do you like it?
Can I cum inside of you?
What do you like?
How does it feel?

The programmer should not be concerned if the subject does not respond, or responds with a negative answer. If the response is silence or in the negative the programmer should respect the subject's request.

The subject will eventually respond in the positive. The programmer is encouraged to give the subject power positions during forced sex. The programmer is not to kiss the subject on their lips during this time. Kissing should be limited to, neck, ears, shoulders and chest area.

Once subject responds in the positive to all of the above questions the subject can begin bonding with other subjects. (If Beta programming is occurring subject should be versed in the first 45 sexual positions after this bond)

All bonding must be on going.

A number of signs exist to note that a bond has been created. Programmers must note the presence of these bonds, date they were observed, how they were formed and subject response.

Listed below are some of the signs of successful trauma bonding.

Everyone around the subject is having negative reactions the subject is covering up, defending, or explaining the relationship. (Test for loyalty to programmer)

The subject obsesses about showing someone they are wrong about the abuse, their relationship, or their treatment of the subject. (Loyalty to programmer)

Subject obsess about individuals who have hurt them they are long gone. (Silence programming must be engaged)

Others are horrified by something that has happened to the subject and the subject isn’t. (Denial programming must be engaged)

The subject feels loyal to the programmer even though the subject harbours secrets that are damaging to the programmer.

Subject continues to seek contact with individuals that will cause further pain. (Call back programming)

The subject is attracted to "dangerous" individuals.

Subject stay in a relationship longer than they should.

The subject moves closer to an individual who is destructive with the desire of converting them to a non-abuser.

Subject will go "overboard" to help individuals who have been destructive to them.

The subject cannot detach from an individual even though the subject does not trust, like or care for the individual.

Subject continues to be a team member when obviously things are becoming destructive.

The subject misses a relationship to the point of nostalgia and longing and the relationship was detrimental almost destroying the subject.

The subject keeps secret the individual’s destructive behaviour because of all of the good they have done or the importance of their position or career.

Subject continues attempts to get individuals to like them who are clearly using them.

Subject trust individuals again and again who are proven to be unreliable.

Subject tries to be understood by those who clearly do not care.

Subject chooses to stay in conflict with others when it would cost them nothing to walk away.

Subject is loyal to individuals who have betrayed them.

Subject attracts untrustworthy individuals.

Subject continues contact with an abuser who acknowledges no responsibility.

When there is a constant pattern of non-performance in a relationship, subject continues to expect individual to follow through anyway.

Subjects feel loyal to programmer even though they harbour secrets that are damaging to others.

Does abuser’s talents, charisma, or contributions cause subject to overlook destructive, exploitive, or degrading acts.

The subject is attracted to "dangerous" individuals.

Subject stay in a relationship longer than they should.

46 Inside Parts

Parts, alters, insiders are names used for the created fragments of the programmed individual. Names and functions of parts vary from system to system. (Note: that depending upon what the System's occupation in life is, also determines some of the types of alters created.)

For example if a programmer builds a system using the planets of the solar system there will be Parts with planet names, and space terminology used.

The programming script for a system may use movies. As a result names of characters in those movies will be given to parts in the system.

The programmers will set up double-binds. Alters will be created and given negative spiritual roles with names to match. A part may be named Unforgiveness, or Hatred. For such a part to trust someone, makes the alter feel like it is giving up its name, and therefore its identity. By combining the name with an identity that the part doesn't want to lose, the programming intends to double bind the alter.

The programmers will give a part a history, and insure that shadow alters will provide a full range of accessible emotions. Sometimes the distinctions between alters and alter fragments is vague, but examples from the two ends of the spectrum are easy to tell apart.

Below is a list of parts that are found in systems. *This list does not note every part that is found in a programmed subject's system.*

A

Abberator Parts - insures the mirrors within the system reflect the appropriate distorted image
Abuser alter-Abuser alters are often introjects of the original abuser(s). These alters are trying to protect the subject and not trying to injure them. The abuse results because they feel that they are protecting the system of alters by preventing actions that, when the individual was a child, might have caused further harm from the original abuser.
Actulizer Parts- Part whose task is to keep the system on task towards the goals, potential and training the system was created for.
Accuser Parts - accuses the system of any possible wrongdoing. These Parts will also accuse outside individuals of wrong doings.
Agreement Parts–Assists in maintaining and making agreements/deals within the system. Will assist parts with how to make agreements with individuals on the outside.
Alien Parts for contact, bonding w/ aliens and acceptance of mock alien invasion.
Aligner Parts-Will insure the system stays aligned to the programming, cult, or occult teachings and clan.

Amnesic Parts: These can be known as the "front", the "clueless ones", "those who don't know anything". These Parts are scattered throughout the system to prevent memory recovery.
Angel (imitation) Parts for divine messages, these may be seen as angels
Angry Parts-Parts of the system that hold anger. These parts often appear to the outside person as angry for no reason. These Parts are often used under the defence structure of the system as they keep individuals away.
Animal Parts are meant to act like animals. Although a large share of programmed individual's system is dehumanized, there are certain Parts which will be created to actually hold the body and act like animals. The Parts may even be named "animal." A male or female slave may have dog Parts which bark like a dog. The programmers can create any animal, cats, dogs, foxes, pigeons, horses, monkeys and mice are some examples.
Animator Parts - Will bring 'life' to 'stand by' parts. Often the Animator will be a Dr. or spiritual Parts.
Assassination Parts (Deltas)
Aset Parts (Isis) (Maiden) -- The mother of the Anti-Christ figure of Horus.
Attitude Parts - makes up attitudes what is liked and disliked
Attractor Parts - causes the system to pull things in

B

Babysitter Parts to look after children Parts keep them from fronting inappropriately
Bastet Parts (Maiden)-The mother goddess of all cats. In the system she will look like a large black cat. Black cats were sacred to Bastet. Bastet corresponds to Yesod (the Foundation) on the Cabalistic Tree of Life.
Beam Stopper Parts-Part who interferes in spiritual growth of individual. This part protects the system from spiritual support.
Bear - a large angry part that makes everything go quiet. An internal monster of a system.
Benefactor Parts-gives the system rewards for obeying the programming
Between Lives Parts-placed in the spiritual systems that follow reincarnation programming.
Binder Parts - binds the system together with spiritual teachings, programming laws, threats and other means.
Bird Parts used for diverse internal purposes, including ravens for suicide, doves for peace (dove may be part of a false trinity.) hawks to fly over the internal mazes, owls for wisdom, etc.
Black Widow Parts, for espionage and blackmail.
Blocker Parts (Gatekeeper) - blocks the system from messing with other important system components (different from Body Blocker)
Bouncer Parts- (may be same as Misdirector)
Body Blocker Parts - keeps the system from modifying the body state by suggesting another theory
Body Generator Parts- insures that the system follows the programming loop when the system attempts to deviate from programming.
Body Locator Parts-will move the body to another location if necessary
Body Machine Parts - regulate body processes and report to the Dr. and any issues with the body.
Bravo 2 series models are men programmed to run the Beast computers.

C

Caillech Parts-Known as the black mother and was the Spirit of disease.

Caretaker alters (soother alter)-Caretaker alters are true protectors of the system. They act as caretakers both internally and externally, but are limited to care of others and are depleted easily, lacking awareness needed for self care. They are often introjects of caring adults.

Cellular Parts- Works at the basic structure of the system to help maintain its integrity.

Christian Front Parts. The Christian Parts will believe in God, and be active in churches.

Child Parts: these parts want praise from adults, and often come out for rewards, or sweets. They assist in balances the system.

Clone Parts- parts that a formed to represent outside programmers, trainers, and individuals of power. These parts help keep order in the system.

Clockmaker and Clock holder Parts -Parts that insure the inter clocks continue to function, and replace internal clocks should they be stopped or damaged.

Communicator Parts- interconnects the system and relays information to lead Parts, Dr.s and other high ranking parts.

Committee Parts (Universal Mind) -high ranking parts that make the decisions for the system.

Conflictor Parts- inspires conflict within the system and with outside individuals to protect the system.

Conscience Parts-will change the system from Beta state to another state of conscience.

Compeller Parts (Compulsive Parts) - Insures the system will continue on its designed course with disregard to rules.

Controller Parts-These are the system leaders. They know what is going on at all times in the system. This will vary from system to system. In a military system, it might be a General, in a metals system, the platinum's, or in a jewel system, the highest jewels, such as diamond, ruby, or emerald.

Cognitive Parts- Will manage process of knowing, including aspects such as awareness, perception, reasoning, and judgment

Computational Parts-operate internal computers and assist in passing on information.

Constrainer Parts - insures the system is following physical system law

Coach Parts- keep the system from either winning or loosing

Corrective Parts - fixes anything that comes undone (or repairer)

Confusion Parts- tries to keep the system confused if there is a truth introduced. These Parts will also attempt to confuse those who are introducing truth.

Craver Parts- Parts that craving food, drugs, things the programmers want to layer in as a distraction.

Creator Parts-part that believes they are a deity and can create worlds.

Crone Parts- Stays in the shadows and passes on advice and is a teacher. She contacts the Spirits and is an expert on demonology. Mother Parts and Goddess Parts are Crone parts. **The core**-the original child, the one who created all of the others inside.

Coven Parts-participate in coven rituals and activities and maintain the secrecy of the Coven. (Witchcraft)

Courier Parts-will bring messages to parts in the system. These parts are often small animal Parts.

Commander parts- keep the switching smooth, and to keep things orderly
Colours Parts:
CLEAR. Secret or shell alters who can take on any colour are coded clear. These are alters who serve as images or as a stage for other alters. This would include "Guardian of the Vail" alters.
GOLD. This colour is for the supreme leadership in the System, which includes the Grand Druid Council.
SILVER. This colour is for the Satanic alters who perform high level satanic rituals. The Mothers of Darkness have silver coding.
PURPLE. These alters see themselves as the abusers, rather than the Illuminati. These alters were involved with the programming. They have been taught to forget the abuse and to reframe it in their mind as training.
BLACK. These alters were born out of Satanic ritual, and are Moon children. The Delta and Beta alters are black coded. They do the dirty work for the cult, such as blackmail and assassination.
RED. These altars see themselves as witches. They were born out of witchcraft ritual, believe they have great spiritual power, and tend to deny that they have been abused.
GREEN or EMERALD GREEN. These are cat altars. They still see themselves as belonging to the cult family, and deny that they have been abused to protect their cult family.
DARK EMERALD GREEN. This colour is assigned to the Antichrist-Satan alter(s). Green is the occult colour for Satan and is the most sacred colour. Few people outside of Satanists know that Green is more sacred for them than any other colour.
LIGHT GREEN. The gods and goddess alters which are triads which function in sets of three.
BLUE ALTERS. Clones, armies and the ribbons have blue coding. These alters will go so far as to hurt the body to protect it from leaking information or deprogramming.
WHITE. 'These are Atlantean alters who have been given Aryan race teachings to think they are superior. They believe in genetic engineering, and a master race.
ORANGE. These special protector alters are scouts who warn of danger from internal or external threats.
YELLOW. These are the strong Christian alters of which there will only be a few in the System. They help serve as a balancing point to control the System as well as to hide what the System is all about.
PINK. These are core related alters. They maintain the true feelings of the true self apart from the cult programming and the cult family's programming. These alters are viewed as weak because they are emotional and often break down and weep. They are fragile emotionally. They are also vulnerable front alters, usually inducing depression or some other kind of trauma-based freeze
An alternative colour scheme that is used:
WHITE. The internal programmers who come around in white robes get this colour assigned to them, as if they are doctors or angels of light.
RED. Sexual alters are given the natural colour of sex and arousal red.
BLACK. Connecting alters that are Nexus alters between various system parts.
PINK. Reporting alters.
DARK BLUE. Non hierarchy cult alters.
LIGHT BLUE. Alters in charge of the way the system runs, such as the judges.
YELLOW. Alters which are ritually and sexually twinned with alters of other systems.
ORANGE. Guard alters which are heavily programmed for obedience.
VIOLET-PURPLE. Front alters and small child alters placed into boxes.
CLEAR. Shell alters to deceive the outside world.

GOLD. The traumatized alters upon which the programming is built on.
Cult Parts-participate in cult activities, and maintain the secrecy of the cult.

D

Damper Parts- keeps the system condensed to a point and in agreement, holds the system down
Data Parts to hold information this encompasses a wide range of Parts, including Parts who hold internal system information to Parts who hold information for their handlers.
Deaf and Dumb Parts to prevent the System from hearing the truth or discussing information within the system.
Death Parts to take near death traumas, and become unafraid of dying.
Denial Parts: these are intellectual, and are created to deny that anything bad ever happened.
Delta series are models for espionage and assassination.
Devil Parts (Demon) - makes trouble for the system. Believe they are a demon.
Degrader Parts - will demote parts that aren't following programming. These parts will also complete activities that affect the character of the body.
Delusion Parts – will hold to programming and beliefs when presented with evidence to the contrary. Task is to maintain the integrity of the system.
Deceiver Parts - deceives the system into believing what a truth is.
Deflector Parts-will fend off questions and other intrusions into the system. (Diffuser)
Decision Maker Parts-part who will make the decision in high stress situations.
Destroyer Parts - arranges accidents to keep the system from finding out it is programmed or gaining freedom.
Determiner Parts- value, judges potential futures to maximize dynamics
Depressor Parts- (Discourager)
Delta Parts -Parts within the systems which are programmed to be assassins.
Delta-Beta Parts -Parts that are trained in espionage. They will be trained to recognize a person's physical identifiers.
Discourager Parts - discourages any effort to do anything about changing the systems/parts circumstance. (Depressor)
Disabled alter-many alters are deaf, blind, missing limbs, sickly, dying, bloody, bruised and so on.
Disperser Parts - will disrupt and scatter a section of the system if the parts are gathering for unapproved reasons.
Double agent-Part that will act helpful to an outsider, only to be giving information to system watchers to maintain the integrity of the system.
Dramatizer Parts-Parts that are dramatic to throw attention away from what is really occurring in the system.

E

Egyptian Armies The Egyptian armies are hundreds of fragments which have been programmed to have uniforms and to function as parts of an army.
Element Parts (Air or Wind, Water, Earth, Fire) for magick and compliance

Emotional Parts- parts that hold the emotions of the body. The Parts may be the name of the emotion. (Cheerful, boredom, antagonism, rage, hostility, fear, grief, apathy)
Encourager Parts - encourages the system to stay here and live life
Enturbulator Parts- will harass parts and people to inflict fear, and agitation.
Equalizer Parts - insures the system stays balanced.
Espionage Parts-parts that gather information to undermine or bring down governments and individuals.
Executioner Parts - programmed to kill an individual quickly.
Exhilarator Parts-when triggered will return to the body to a state of happiness.

F

Fate Parts (Arranger) - arranges fates for the system
Feeling Parts (Emotional Parts):
File Clerk Parts-part will maintain a dossier on internal parts, and external individuals of interest.
Filter Parts -filter out perceptions of individuals.
Formulator Parts - inspires choices of strengths and weaknesses, likes and dislikes
Fire child or Bomb child Parts- to make body feel like its burning as a punishment or warning.
Flooding Parts Flooding Parts can be used as singles or as a group of Parts. They over whelm a part with memories or other feelings to stop the part from doing what they were doing.
Forgetter Parts-will not remember the information, or task they have been given after they have used the information or completed the task.
Foreign Language Parts-who speak languages of other countries, cults, or secret societies.
Front Parts -parts placed on the top level. These are the parts that interact with the ‘world’ and are often unaware of the rest of the system.
Fourier Parts - puts things into the future for the system, goals, wants, so the system will work towards those things.

G

Game Maker Parts - makes up games for the system. The outcome is the loser of the game is severely punished. The loser is often punished by the winner of the game.
Gatekeeper Parts (Blocker)-guard portals, gates, and important areas of the system.
The Gatekeeper protects the gates or portals to all System levels. The programmers may also call them “doorkeepers”, or “toll men” and “toll women”. The subject may refer to them as guards or blockers, although Gatekeepers are more than guards, they are an entrance or portal to something. Gatekeepers may often be the alter that was split to get a particular section. Each gatekeeper may be at a deeper level trance than the one before it. When a Gatekeeper is split it creates a natural link to the alters that are created from itself. Then the Gatekeepers are given programming not to see what they have created.

Gatekeeper parts will appear near the surface of a system, and then again deep in the System about level 10, and 12. Gatekeeper parts are parts that the programmer must go through to get to deeper levels. The Gatekeeper parts are very heavily programmed to keep them in place. They will receive intensive lies. Some of the access triggers which must accompany the verbal are things such as needles, electro-shocks, or slaps to certain parts of the body to trigger deep parts to take the body.

Genie - a delta alter. In the bottle the part is harmless, when triggered out of the bottle to complete its task, this part becomes deadly.

Generator Parts- projects reality to parts of the system. The reality is interpreted in such a way to keep the system in its place

Gems Parts-occult parts that are advised they are important to Satan. These parts are used in rituals.

Genetic Parts- parts that maintain the double helix throughout the system.

Goal Maker Parts - makes up goals for the system to keep the system motivated and functioning.

Guider Parts- guides the system deeper into programming

Group Mind Parts - part that participates in group programming.

Guardian/Guardian Parts- guards the programming, fights against erasure of programs.

H

Hat-Hor Parts (Mother) -- She is the womb of Horus, Queen of the Dead, or Queen of the West

Helper Parts-part that will help inside parts by encouraging them, and explaining things to them.

Hidden Observer Parts-a hidden part of the subject that knows what things are occurring in the body while other parts don't. This part is inlayed during hypnotism.

Hider Parts-part that will hide programming from outside interference. 2) Part that will move the body to a hidden location if the system feels threatened.

Hierarchy Parts-take part in occult hierarchy ceremonies different ceremonies at different times have different Parts participating.

Host-Part that has the function of daily living.

Host Parts: there may be a "day host" a "night host" for the cult, or hosts for various systems or times in the person's life.

Holder Parts - holds entities in place by occult/cult practice.

Hunts Parts created for the handler's sport of being hunted

Hunter Parts—hunts down internal parts that have strayed, or participates in programming hunts.

Humanizer Parts-will work with cloned parts, puppets, dead and other mechanical parts to assist them with human characteristics.

I

Illuminati Doctor Parts Green, Black, White, Red and Blue-will continue with programming internal parts.

Intellectuals Parts: Parts who can observe, go between systems, learn information quickly and download it to handlers/programmers.

Invalidator Parts- part who will attempt to bring out the negative behaviours in others. This part will work to discredit individuals inside and outside of the system. 2) Part will weaken the effect of outside encouragement to get well.

Inner Guard Parts- keep the system from looking at its self and seeing the structure of entities, mirrors, mazes and other system blocks.

Inner Self Helper- the ISH is a dissociated part that is usually unable to communicate with other alters, yet has the ability to watch and hear everything going on inside a system. The ISH will usually display little emotion or affect. Because the ISH observed inner events, it has access to the memories of the individual as a whole, as well as to the memories of each alter individually. Other names include: internal self helper, guidance, unconscious mind, observing ego, higher self, hidden observer and inner wisdom.

Instigator Parts-will escalates a situation to protect the system.

Interiorizer Parts – part who insures the inner values of the system continue to function.

Inverter Parts - will turn the system upside down if there is a perceived threat.

Inhibitor Parts- part that will interfere with and suppress specific memories.

Inspirational Parts- inspires belief that every part likes the system and they don't want to leave the system.

Initiator Parts- compel the system self to act on specific programming.

Individualizer Parts - limits the system to a single viewpoint.

Internal councils Parts-Groups of parts that make decisions for the system that falls under their domain. There may be a Christian council, occult council, cult council, military council, for each section of Parts.

Internal programmer Parts-will re-enforce programming by doctors, Mother's of Darkness, and other leading parts.

Introjects These alters are sometimes called as "copy alters" and are internal copies of another person, often they are an internal representation of an attachment figure such as a parent, abusive introjects alters are very common. An introject may be an internal "mother" or "father" alter which warns the child not to act in a way which would cause the child's real external mother or father to punish them, protecting the child from physical harm. Introjects can be calming and soothing if they are representations of caring people.

Ishtar Parts- Babylonian goddess of fertility, love, war, and sex. Her symbol is the eight pointed star.

J

Jailer Parts- parts who will imprison other parts that are rebelling against programming.

Jesus Parts- parts who say they are the Christian son of God, but behave contrary to what the bible states Jesus behaved.

Justifier Parts-part that will uphold the teachings of cult/occult/programming in the system.

Judge Parts - judges the system's conduct harshly, all the time

Justice Parts--Parts who dispense punishment for disobedient Parts

Juliet series are sexual mind controlled slaves.

K

Kali Parts- She will be deep in a System. She is the Goddess of Time and Change

Keeper Parts - keeps (holds) the system down in the programming

Keeper of the Keys Parts- part that holds the keys to doors, chests, and other locked parts of the system.

Keeper of the Spiritual Records Parts- part that records other parts spiritual progress, and deeds to be used against that part or the system.

Kilo 5 series- military espionage parts.

L

Lilith Parts- Female parts that believe they are monsters and are out at night. They have sex with demons, and seductresses.

Little alter A little, is a term often used by those with DID. This type of alter acts 7 years old or younger.

Locator Parts -parts that know where parts are in the system at all times. These parts will report to the rulers where parts are in the system.

Looking Glass Parts- parts that are created to confuse the system, and outside individuals. They appear identical to the original Parts, but backwards. This is what confuses inside parts. The mirror images are often hidden in mirror mazes as their reflection in the mirrors appear as the real part. Looking Glass People are similar to the mirror images. The Programmers may create a looking glass alter by having a drugged part(s) of the subject endure the trauma of seeing someone's face peeled. The subject's face is also hypnotically peeled. The dead individual's skin is placed over the subject being programmed. The Looking Glass People are charted on grids and contain numerous programs. They are confusing to the regular alters, because they appear internally like mirror images.

Loyalty Parts- parts that hold are devoted to the handler/cult/occult.

Lucifer Parts-part that offset the trinity in the system. This part is often kind, the opposite of Jesus in the system.

M

Manager alter A system manager might be seen as a leader to the other alters. They are involved inside and outside if needed - including acting as a temporary host, but mostly they operate inside. They direct what is going on in the system in many ways. Although the system managers usually know all parts of the system and have memory back to the beginning, they are not ISH's (Inner Self Helper).

Maat Parts-bring balance to the system through order, justice and the laws.

Maiden (B) Parts- parts that work closely with the Mother parts. She is the Guardian of the Balance (Maat Parts).

Martial Arts Parts- trained in various martial arts practices to protect the body.

Memory trace alters- One that has a more or less complete life, unlike how many alters which have a limited range of memories. System managers and ISH's often have this ability.

Middle alter-A term often used by those with DID to describe an alter that appears to be between the ages of 8 and 12

The Mother (A) Parts-actively works magick and leads specific rituals in the system.

Misdirector Parts-will send parts and outside individuals to the wrong place, and give wrong directions to protect the system.

Michael 1 series slaves are CIA agents under total mind-control. Operation Green star was the Mind-control project to create UFO abductions scenarios.

Mirror images-are task specific fragments whose job is to confuse both subject and outside individuals who are attempting to breach the system. Duplicate parts of most parts are created, so that even the parts themselves don't know if it is themselves or another alter. These duplicates are called mirrored images and looking glass people (LGPs). Some of the mirrored images may turn out to be demonic entities that have been placed using high level demonology

Misowner (Disowner) - says that this system isn't real and doesn't exist to prevent sharing of

information.
Monster Parts-parts used to scare the other Parts.
Mouse Parts- parts that wind clocks insure internal computers, and grids are working properly.
Mother of Darkness Parts- part that trains the children, and over see Doctors, and programmers.
Moralizer Parts - part preaches at parts and makes them feel guilty for choices they have made
Mood Parts- shift moods between serene/troubled, calm/nervous, pleasant/irritated can rapid cycle.
Moonchild –A part in the spiritual programmed system.

N

Narcotic Parts - keep the higher self feeling drugged, and lethargic when the system may be breached
Nexus Parts-Link parts to one another so they can function and complete a task.
Nothing Parts- Parts who believe they don't exist. They will state they are 'No one'.
Node Parts-Each node is assigned a numerical code. If three or more nodes are brought together by calling out their code names, they form a temporary alter. (The nodes do not have to be adjacent) The information on the Tinker Toy sticks that lead to each of those nodes, when put together, constitutes the instructions for that temporary alter. When the task is done, the temporary part dissipates, the nodes go back to their original place, and each node divides into five. The node that divided cannot be used again, but any of the five new ones can. The numerical code that calls the nodes together is made by dividing the sphere into sections using lines like longitude and latitude. When the nodes are latent, just sitting there doing nothing, no node on the surface layer is connected to any other node. They cannot communicate, they cannot exchange information. They only behave like an alter when they have been called together.

O

Objects In some systems there are objects with consciousness, so they're not normal objects. For example, talking objects, or a notebook that writes itself.
Observation (Watchers/Silent Observer) Parts-deep parts quietly observe all that goes on in a Parts system.
Opposer Parts-resistant to system goals, and values. Helps to maintain system balance.
Over Seer (Administrator) Parts- manages 128 splintered parts of the system

P

Papa Bear Parts- part who is cloned after an outside programming trainer who worked against showing anger.
Part of God (universal Mind) Parts - a part sent to be element of god the individuals contribution to the universal mind.
Perception Blocker Parts-parts who will distort how the system perceives experiences to strengthen the system's beliefs.
Perpetuator Parts-ensures the programming does not fail and will continue.
Persister Parts- parts hold steadfast to their task, often repeating the task over and over.
Pets- In some systems, there are different animals that are just that, animals. They are usually the pet of the system, and have to be taken care of just like a real animal
Persephone Parts- Queen of the Dead and underworld part in many systems. This parts task is to

ensure the poppies fields stay intact.

Planner Parts-plans the systems continued existence

Postulator Parts- part who works with the trinity to plea for other parts in the system.

Presenter Parts – parts that assist with the Parts who participate in social situations.

Programmer (Internalists) Parts- parts cloned after the original programmers to reprogram the System.

Protector Parts: protect the body if it is threatened. 2) Protect the integrity of programming and the system from perceived threats. 3) Protects the system from the system suggesting Alternatives to destructive programming. Part of balancing the system.

Provocateur Parts-Incites other parts or individuals to take part in or complete and illegal act.

Punisher Parts: part fashioned after an external trainer, punisher, or enforcer. Their job is to keep things in line, and will often try to sabotage therapy. Internal punishers will activate inter system punishment sequences. (Flood programming/ suicide programming, self harm programming)

Q

Queen of the Clones Parts- guides the conduct and actions of the clone parts of the system

R

Randomizer Parts- part that encodes messages, and decodes messages.

Recycler Parts- part that can cycle the system into a 'new' being

Restimulator Parts-part that will activate a dormant part of the system if the system is threatened or needs programming.

Resistor Parts resists change in the environment, or changes in the system. Can come across as defiant.

Reporting Parts- programmed to give the handler reports regularly. *Reporting parts* are often small children, that are hidden in each section, and may require slaps to the face or jabs with a needle to pull them up.

Reflector Parts-social Parts will reflect back to the individual what they perceive they are receiving

Relayer Parts- part will pass body perceptions to the system parts and ignore other body perceptions.

Representer Parts- part who will give optimum solution for a problem

Reactive Parts- part that will control the body's reactions to the environment

Recording Parts-will record specific interactions for recall. It may be sight, sound, touch or specific situation.

Restrictor Parts - limits the system to a located viewpoint

Ribbon Parts- These are parts of the programming matrix that monitor programming functions of Parts and then send messages from computers to System areas

Robot Parts-children who have been put into robot costumes and are trained to attack parts of the system which are not in compliance with the programming.

Ruby - sexual alters usually linked to beta programming

Ruling Parts-parts that have titles of royalty in systems.

Run/return to handler return home / Parts-parts that will return to the handler, or flee from the area they are in.

S

Satanic hierarchy Parts, to insure the occult part of the system is controlled and follows occult teachings

Satan Parts- part feels they are on the victorious side in a spiritual war and are a part of Satan’s army. (Different than Lucifer)

Scrambling Parts- to prevent other parts from hearing things that are being said to them that should not be heard.

Seer Parts- parts that gather information and predict the future of the system.

Separator Parts - keeps the system as an individual separate from the system’s higher self.

Sexual Parts: created to have sex with individuals. Each Part is programmed in a specific genre of sex. Sexual Parts are also programmed for cult/occult specific sex for the exchange of entities.

Shifter Parts –assts with shifting between 7.83 Hz, 10.80 Hz, 6.6 Hz for programming.

Shell Parts-Hide Parts from being discovered by outside individuals who are not allowed to be aware of that part of the system.

Shell Focus Parts - surrounds the system and focuses things in on the system for programming

Shadow Parts- have shadow Parts created from themselves to take their pain.

Sin Parts - will purposely commit acts that are against the Christian Parts.

Sleep Centre Parts - parts that dream and have the system rebuild things while the system sleeps

Sleeping alter-Time passes for a sleeping alter without knowing.

Slider alter-An alter whose age varies

Social Parts- parts that present in social situations

Somatic Parts (Sickness Parts) - physical pains/sensations are triggered through programming in response to not following directions, rules, job or other instructions laid in by the programmer

Solidifier Parts-will unite the system against a common threat or enemy.

Spirit Guide Parts-part that believes they can spiritually guide other parts seeking spiritual awaking. (Universal mind)

Splitter Parts - continually makes parts split (divide)

Spinner kittens will be accessed via their mama cat, who acts like a Madam in a "cat house”. Telephone tones are frequently used to be able to access or trigger parts of the computer program matrix.

Spiritual Parts: have a variety of beliefs that cover different spiritual paths internally.

Subconscious Parts- hides things and convinces the system to stay limited and obedient

Sublimating Parts- insure the sadistic parts behave in a publically acceptable manner.

Suppressor Parts - hides the programming from outside individuals if programming is detected.

Super being Parts– will take over a part by overwhelming them and control them.

Suicide Parts- programmed to stop the body from living. Each Part responds to a specific trigger.

Swindlers and fabricator parts- notoriously skilful timewaster parts. These parts are used to protect the system during therapy, and if caught interrogation.

System Parts – ensure life within the system is continued in a balanced fashion.

Symbolize Parts-maintains the internal symbols placed during programming

Sympathizer Parts- parts that will express compassion for a part that has just been traumatized.
System Holder Parts-parts who feel like they have received a section of the system to oversee and own.
System Coordinator Parts - co-ordinates the interrelationship of system
Synchronizer Parts - will insure that a task, trigger, event occurs across the system at the same time.

T

Teen alter-Teen alters appear to be between the ages of 13 and 18
Tempter Parts - tempts the system to do the opposite of what would lead to freedom, or a positive result for the system.
Terror/Fear Parts - makes the system afraid, especially of anything to do with the mind or spirits
Thinker Parts-closely related to the silent observer. This part will think of alternative actions that can be taken when something arises.
Tranced Parts- bring the body into semiconscious state, as between sleeping and waking and a detachment from one's physical surroundings to assist with pulling up parts for programming.
Travel Parts, sleep during travel or be oblivious to where they are going
Trickster Parts - is a god, goddess, spirit, man, woman, or anthropomorphic animal part who plays tricks or otherwise disobeys normal rules and conventional behaviour. Tricks the system in to insuring the other parts maintain their jobs to correct the error.
Twin alters-Twins appear the same in many ways, and may even have the same name. One twin can good while the other is bad.

U

Unifier/Joiner/Grouper Parts - pulls everything together to insure the system continues to work smoothly.
Universal Mind Parts (The Committee) created by the programming to manage the system these are not self aware Parts, but is a composite composed of a piece of everybody and programmed to run

V

Vacuum Parts -insures the system isn’t affected by outside influences attempt to keep the system isolated.
Visual Parts- composes pictures of reality that the system will see. These pictures are often distorted to assist the programming.

W

Watcher Parts- watches the system and its functioning. Typically doesn’t speak to individuals on the outside.
Workers Parts: do the jobs of daily life, and usually are part of the presenting systems. These parts

take care of the house, get married, and may hold a highly dependable job.
Wraith Parts -believes they are a ghost.

X

Y

Z

47 Internal Programs

Below is a list of internal programs for use. The programmers are advised to inlay all base programs, and then link the programs to their backups before continuing with individual programs.

Below is a partial list of programs.

4 Elements defensive programming --fire, wind, water, and air. When the programming is touched by any outside individual in an attempt to breach programming the elements of the earth come alive.
WATER--subject will freeze like ice, will suffocate like inhaling water, will boil like being placed in boiling water, will feel a drip drip drip on the head, and will flood with memories.
FIRE—Subject will burn inside and outside. The subject will remember fire torture, and their face melting.
EARTH--the subject will remember being dropped down a well, being buried alive in either hot sand, or a casket. Earth means "life or death". The earth "swallows subject's up." The subject may feel dehydrated from memories of being buried in hot sand (hot earth).
AIR or WIND--Vortexes suck the subject down and away, a strong wind takes the alter(s) out of their designated area and spins and separates them.

A

Abreaction programming- Gives the subject topics to talk about in therapy or with other outside individuals who may be attempting to assist the subject.
Access denied programming- Prevents unauthorized access both externally and internally, will often be reinforced by either or both suicidal/homicidal programming.
Access Programs- Allows access into the subject's internal system. These programs allow the handlers and programmers to access the subject's system through a specific part. Access is achieved through triggers, hand signals, electronic tones, spoken phrases, and touch. Once accessed, countless other programs may be triggered and/or reinforced by the handler or programmer.
Alex Programming- A recall and retry program.
Alice in Wonderland Programming- The programmer/handler uses the book written by Lewis Caroll to map the subject's System. The created parts are given names and rolls after characters in the book. The White Rabbit is a programming figure for Alice in Wonderland programming who has access to deeper parts of the system. The White Rabbit is an important figure to the subject as he represents the programmer/handler.
The Queen of Hearts is also an important figure for commands in the Looking Glass World which. When a deep subject alter is needed to perform they are sent into the looking glass world where a looking glass person carries out the command--but in a way that reality is thought to be a dream
The codes used in Wonderland programming are too vast to list them all. The programmer will chose quotes from the book *Alice in Wonderland* to use.
Alien Programming- Blue beams of light are used as a hypnotic induction for subjects who are given the cover story of being abducted by aliens. The subject during this experience seeks a god who is a

great being to control them. This is used to program in the evil and good aliens, or evil or good gods. The gods or the aliens during a programming session will not be so strange that the subject as a mote can't understand their purposes and activities.

The subject may perceive these aliens on the trip experimenting with us. This is a common easy-to-create psychotropic programming script.

Alpha Programming- Is total alignment with the Programmers' agenda. It is a prerequisite for other forms of programming and a base program. Regarded as general programming within the base control personality; characterized by extremely pronounced memory retention, along with substantially increased physical strength and visual acuity. Alpha programming is accomplished through deliberately subdividing the subject's personality which, in essence, causes a left brain-right brain division, allowing for a programmed union of L and R through neuron pathway stimulation.

Alpha Programming aims to install a mechanical paradigm, where all parts are instruments, vessels or puppets that can be made to do anything by those who hold the insights into the subjects mind. Young children have long periods of alpha activity and must be trained to enter other brain wave states for long periods. Access codes and sexual alters will often be placed in alpha, which may also be coded red in some systems.

Amnesia programming- The alters will be programmed with amnesia as a backup. Backup amnesia means the part doesn't remember that they lost time, or won't remember that they forgot what has occurred. They also won't remember that they don't remember. This is an example of hypnosis used internally by the programmer and the programmed parts to control other inside parts. This is used in Alice in Wonderland programming as Alice falling down a tree. In Oz programming it is used in the Poppy field, or as the Glenda the Good witch with her wand. Two-way amnesia can be used, where neither part knows about the others existence.

Anger Management Programming- Teaches the subject to redirect their anger away from the handler and programmer. The subject will be provoked by one of these figures until they are angry. The question is asked, "Are you angry?" When the subject replies, in the positive an electroshock is applied. The subject will be brought to a high level of anger allowed to 'cool off' for 30 minutes. The subject's and parts are taught to redirect their anger toward themselves. "When you (subject) are angry it is due to your inferiority. You must___ (cut, hit, burn) when you are angry. Do you understand?" This message will be repeated with the question "Do you understand?" The subject is traumatized until they are compliant. Suicide programming will be layered in at a specified brainwave state the programming begins with repetitious self-destruct messages. These messages debase the value of the subject to reinforce the suicidal destruct messages. This training will lead the subject will attach subconsciously a fear of pain to the concept of anger toward their programmers, handlers and authority figures.

Armageddon programming- Is activated in those who have Bible programming. The four horsemen on their different horses ride out and bring their different mental tortures to the subject's mind.

Assassination Programs- When an individual in the subject's environment is deemed to have become too much of a liability, the subject may be triggered to attempt to kill the individual. The programming will be placed against a supportive individual, situation, or environment in the subject's life. As is the case in self-injury programs, means (e.g., guns, knives, poison, etc.) of the assassination program are often "given" to the subject by the programmer.

The primary intent program may not be the actual death of the individual but to scare them away, and to set the subject up as an aggressive individual so other outside attempts to assist in recovery will not occur.

B

Backup Programming- One of the backup programs is designed to deal with an individual who has a good understanding of a system, and tries to take a system out via spiritual warfare. Other backup programs provide the deprogrammer with mirror images and sham alters to talk with. The deprogrammer never talks to the real human elements.

Baby Talk programming-_when the parent and child or two adults, baby talk to each other so it appears there is an intimate relationship and nurturing when it is not.

Bells of Destruction programming-The sound of bells tolling internally signalling to destroy a level of the programming, structures of programming, or a death knell. The program will have the bell toll a specified number of times for each object to be destroyed.

Behavioural sciences programming- Parts programmed to investigate human and animal behaviour through controlled and naturalistic observation, and disciplined scientific experimentation. These parts then learn to predict the behaviours of outside individuals to protect the system from compromise.

Beta programming- is sexual programming spanning from rigid gender stereotypes on one end of the spectrum (Princess Programming) to hyper-sexualized conduct at the opposite end (Porn/Sex Subject Programming). Beta Programming requires absolute submission from women/men in order for them to perform their tasks. An early sexual torture will be used to anchor this programming. These sexual subjects will develop sexual abilities that are for the pleasure of others and not the subject.

It is important for Beta subjects to be programmed to have charm, seductive skills, charisma, and creativity. This programming eliminates all learned moral convictions and stimulates the primitive sexual instinct, devoid of inhibitions. Kitten parts are created with this programming.

Betrayal programming-Parts are programmed not to trust one another so they cannot form alliances. This is done by having parts 'report' on one another's activities, and not assist each other outside of their tasks.

Black box programming- is self-destruct and shatter programming sealed off into a black box to protect system. Black boxes are not to be opened.

Brain Starvation Programming- is done by severely limiting sugar and proteins. Water deprivation is taught to caregivers to raise the brain's temperature, which happens when the brain swells from lack of water. The subject gets woozy, overheated and hallucinates so they can't remember clearly. Water deprivation combined with electroshock makes it difficult for the subject to remember anything. Heavy exercise along with long periods of little sleep 2 to 3 hours a day causes an overproduction of endorphins and victims begin to robotically respond to commands.

Brain wave programming-is a very complex form of programming which creates automatic amnesia and communication barriers between the different brain wave states. This will also be reinforced by shock and punishment to prevent its "degradation", or undoing. Internal system controllers and programmers will also work to reinforce the programming at night when the subject is asleep. (Physically).

Brain wave programming involves having a young subject placed in a deep trance, where they learn to dissociate into a specified brain wave state. Three programmers will work on one subject during the initial stages.

One will "prep" the subject, using a hypnotic drug to induce a trance state. They will have also placed the electrodes on the head, using an abbreviated version of the method used in traditional hospital setting. If delta state is being induced, only the electrodes needed to pick up delta waves will be placed.

The number two programmer will advise the subject exactly what they expect: they will achieve a special state, called ____ the programmer tells the subject, while they are in trance state, they (the programmers) will know when they reach it, by the readings from the electrodes.

The third Programmer is the verbal or teaching programmer. They will immediately reward the subject, saying, "Good, you are in ___ state now." The programmer will touch the subject; tell them what a good job they are doing. If the subject jumps out of ____ state, the verbal programmer will immediately become harsh, and will shock the subject as punishment. The subject is told that it left the desired state (which is "good") and needs to go back in.

The average subject is about eight years old when this is begun, since the cerebral cortex and neurological development are not advanced enough in younger ages. The programmer will tell the part, who has been called up to be a "template", or building block for the new system, that ___state is "good". They will emphasize this over and over. The subject will be shocked to increase its receptivity to learning. This also arouses the subject from its drugged state and they will be more alert. The programmer will tell the subject that they are to execute mental exercises. The programmer will then give the subject backwards counting exercises, used to help the subject achieve deeper trance states. Other verbal cues to trance down will be given. When the prepping or technical programmer sees ____ waveforms, they will signal the verbal programmer with a hand signal. The induction, counting, will be repeated until ___ state is seen again. The subject is consistently rewarded for entering, then staying in this state for longer and longer periods of time. When the template part can stay in the specified brainwave pattern consistently, the part will be rewarded. This will occur over several months.

The programmers now have a template that stays in the desired state. They can begin splitting and using the part as a basis of forming a new system. The new system will record the desired brain waves on an EEG if done correctly. The new system will be taught what the brain wave state means. The programmers will flash a cue or symbol correlating with the state overhead, and brand the state into the system. The programmers will wear clothing with the symbols. The parts will be taught what to do, how they act, and how to view the world. They will reward them when they comply, and shock or otherwise traumatize them if they do not act as the brainwave state.

Body programs- will be put in for all parts. The same code will work for all alters when the internal programming parts want to trigger a body program. Many body programs are activated via trigger codes are memories of severe torture. The internal defences consist in part of body programs that are triggered if the subject attempts to break programming.

Some body programs are: Auditory problems, Blood flow/circulation, Coma, Digestive failure, Headaches-split brain, Heart failure, histamine production, Optic problems such as blindness, Respiratory failure, Sleep deprivation, Sleeping program, Temperature change, control the pulse rate and heart beat, control the body's temperature, Control the temperature of individual body parts or sides of the body, such as the right side of the body might get hot, and the left side of the body will be cold.

Some of the body programs are carried out by an alter fragment which feels as if they are burning or one that was created by ice torture. This part or this feeling of being hot or cold is then attached to something in the mind. If the subject moves toward the freedom, a cold alter or a cold feeling of a memory is hypnotically programmed to come up behind the alter holding the body.

Many feelings, body sensations, and drugged states are attached to body programs.

The heart is controlled by the mind and works with the emotions of a subject. Programmers have been taking advantage of the mind's ability to control the heart's beating. The three most frequent events that change heart beat are emotions, sicknesses, and muscle activity. Parts are programmed to trance out if anyone tries to prove to them that they have a heart.

Other body programs appear to be connected to the memories of alters. For instance, if the Programmer wants the body to burn--he has the System pull up an alter which was tortured with fire who comes up behind the alter holding the body, and the body then abreacts and feels like it is burning.

Burning Programs-Burning programs are linked to Silence programs, and self punishment programs. Common modes of burning include: cigarettes, lighters, hot metal implements (i.e., knives, rods, wands), and/or a variety of scalding (or flammable) liquids and caustic chemicals.

Boxes Programming-Subjects will be placed in a room and a cedar chest would be placed in front of a table. Two young subjects will be assigned to guard the chest, which is called the "Doctor's box". The box will have three seals on it that cannot be broken. The subjects will be weapons with which to guard the box. Expendable children will be sent in to try to break the seals and open the box. The subjects will be given directives to kill anyone who attempts to break the seals and open the box. If the subjects fail in their guard duty, they are tortured or depending on the failure terminated. Internally, the subjects have template alters who know nothing but their hypnotic commands to guard the doctor's boxes. Locked in the boxes would be self-mutilation, body programs, spin programs etc.

C

Carousal Programming- is a sequence designed to confuse alters and fragments inside. This program is linked to spin and confusion programming internally. This may also be used to punish internal parts by spinning them on the carousel if they disclose information or tell.

Chi Programming- or "return to cult" is programming installed in order to get subjects to reassemble a packaged ideology or religious belief. It is the equivalent of "calling in" or "coming in" in the language of secretive intelligence agencies, and it will make a sleeper subject return from any level of ideological digression or apathy to core beliefs they may not even be aware rules them.

On the cultural level it is an instrument of social engineering to make sure that one Programmers agenda, such as multi-culturalism, does not exceed certain boundaries.

Whenever Programmers deem it necessary, the Chi Programming is invoked and unfolded, dragging subject's in the opposite direction, for instance towards nationalism and racist positions. Alternatively, the multi-cultural vision can be furthered, when it suits the Programmers agenda, overriding patriotism and ethnic-cultural loyalties.

Colour programming-a way to organize systems that allows the programmer to call alters up easily. With hundreds of fragments colours are a way of organizing them into an easily accessible group. Colour coding is one of the first methods that are inlayed over systems. An entire system may be colour coded with numerous colours, with each system controller being given a different colour over its part of the system

A box of coloured scarves and electroshock are used to program colour coding into subject's mind. Besides alters, other things in the system are colour coded.

Castle programming-Castles can be set throughout the landscape of the system. The script must coincide with the placement of a castle so the subject's mind will accept it. Programmers should not place a castle if it does not fit the script. This will cause a system glitch. Castles are used for re-programming, placing parts in the dungeon, and for hierarchy parts to live. Names of the castle should reflect the programming script.

Cutting Programs-As children, subjects will be taught by programmers when and how to cut. These programs are a means of punishment, as well as to reinforce earlier obedience or shutdown commands. The cutting implements themselves may be gifts from the programmer used during the original programming session. The subject will keep these implements hidden and use only when the program to cut is triggered. Many cutting programs have been coded to progress to suicide programs.

Cocoon programming-Used with monarch butterfly images. The subject is wrapped in white cloth and reborn as a butterfly. The subject is under psychotropic medication to enhance the programming and images. The subject's legs are spread and folded like a butterflies wings. The programmer then has sex with the subject as the programming script for the butterfly is read.

Cover Programs - Similar to screen memories; these are programmed memories laid in by the cult/occult to distract from, or distort, the true ritual abuse memory. A secondary purpose of these programs is to discredit the subject's memories with unbelievable content. As a result portions of the memory will be true, other aspects will be false.

Cinderella Program-Occult program used for rituals. At midnight a young part will be called up to perform a task during the ritual. Other purposes of this program consist of falling asleep at midnight, completing a specific task at midnight, and amnesia programming triggered at midnight.

Cross Programming- Subjects will be programmed as teams. Each team will be given code words for each alter who is part of a 2-System team. Teams will be trauma and sexually bonded, as well as having mirror images with each other's names.

D

Daytime Abandonment programming- starts at birth for all subjects. The environment itself is programming. No matter how the infant behaves it is ignored and abused physically and emotionally in the daytime. Nurturing and caretaking by caregivers occur only at night.

Death programming- is completed by removing the fear of death from parts and advising the alter they must protect the secrets, family, clan, and system. The fear of death is removed by torture and advising the part they don't exist, they are passing through, and this life is a door way to another realm.

Torture programming for death parts consists of near death torture bringing the part near death by drowning, suffocation (by smothering or choking), electric shocks, drug induced death experiences, placed in pits to simulate being buried alive, and placed in coffins or witnessing horrific deaths of others.

Horrific deaths include made to feel helpless to help an individual who is dying. A subject of the same age is tortured to death by skinning, drowning, burning, hanging, burial, electrocution, gang rape, and other methods.

The final act in deaths programming is to participate in the death of an individual. The individual will be the approximate age of the part. The programmer and handler will decide the means of death. The individual's death must allow for the subject's part to directly witness the last breath.

Dehumanizing Programming- creates alters that are things or objects. Like, earth element, gemstone or rock to insure the part continues to believe they are not human.

Delta programming- This is known as "killer" programming, originally developed for training special agents or elite soldiers (i.e. Delta Force, First Earth Battalion, Mossad, etc.) in covert operations. Optimal adrenal output and controlled aggression is evident. Subjects are devoid of fear; very systematic in carrying out their assignment. Delta is employed to create a standing army of fearless subject's, who can be further groomed by army, police and the intelligence community through the legitimate process of recruitment and training, or by secretive handlers who can trigger Delta impulses and learned capabilities. The use of subjects crosses many organizational boundaries within the overall Network. If a subject is to be used as a Delta model (assassination), they may be selected for strength and dexterity.

Physical fitness sequences are often applied, with favourites being exercises that can be done in complete solitude, such as running on a track, raising the body from a bar and vertical sit-ups with the legs fixed.

Delta this is one of the more cognitive brain wave states, and will often be highly dissociated. A subject can be in waking delta if they are in an advanced state of programming. Delta alters are emotionless, flat with photographic memories. They may hold most of the cognitive memories for the other systems, especially if extensive amnesia programming has been completed.

Delta state may have up to three levels of training: Delta Tier 3, General solider training. Delta Tier 2, Sniper, special operations training. Delta Tier 1 T.S. NTK, Black ops training, clandestine operations, no acknowledgement of existence.

Another example is U.S. Navy SEAL Team Six (officially the Naval Special Warfare Development Group) are JSOC's (Joint Special Operations Command**)** elite tier-one forces. They conduct the nation's black operations, and work in absolute secrecy. When an operator from one of these units is killed in action, the Department of Defence generally releases their name with a cover story for the death. (A training accident, for example.)

Denial programming-begins with the first experiences the subject goes through in life. The subject has been traumatized, the next morning the programmers are acting normally, as if nothing has occurred. This is reinforced later by the subject being asked what happened. If the subject begins to state what has happened the previous night/day they are punished. Denial will be reinforced by the programmers by advising the subject they will never be believed if they disclose. There will be situations set up by the programmers where another subject will ask what has occurred. If the subject begins to disclose torture is implemented.

The subject will learn to deny any memories due to fear of punishment, no one will believe them, and they will lose anyone they are close to.

Alters will be created as the subject grows, whose purpose will be to deny the trauma. If any disclosure were to occur the alter will state it was a nightmare, a book the subject read, a movie they saw, etc.

Demonology programming- (spiritual programming) The subject's alters are to participate in rituals where demons are invoked. The demons are to act as 'Guardians' protecting the system. The alters are advised if the demon is 'cast out' they will return seven fold. Alters are also advised they are demons to prevent Christians from breaching the system.

Disney Programming-uses Disney movies and scripts for subject. The subject's parts will be given Disney character names. Mickey Mouse will be the lead programmer.

Dual Programming-Programming two or more subject's together with the identical scripts, colours, and mapping. The codes will differ, and the images will differ due to the differences in the subject's perspective. The programming is used with twinning.

Duel programming-Programming in systems that prevents alters from agreeing on a task, or goal. This programming prevents alters from fighting other programming because they cannot agree on outcome.

Don't talk; don't tell programming- Triggers flooding, body memories, spinning programs if the subject attempts to talk about programming. This programming is also used for Delta programming if subject were to be apprehended. Programming should be linked to any program the programmer deems necessary.

Distortion programming- The subject will see an individual's face as melting wax, with numerous overlays, double faces and other distorted images. This programming can also hold echoing, which is when an individual speaks their voice echoes. This leads to the subject believing they are losing their mind, outside diagnosis will lead to schizophrenia.

Doll programming- The subject is given a doll that is made to look like them. The subject is taught to project their feelings onto the doll. Due to the doll looking like the subject they are projecting on to themselves. The programmer will place the doll in positions and have the subject 'abuse' the doll. The subject is trained to assume the same positions so they can be abused.

E

Early milieu programming- The subject is abandoned by caregivers during this programming to inlay abandonment issues for trauma bonding. During this time programming is completed during the day in which the programmers are consistently apathetic towards the subject. The subject is to feel unlovable and must seek to please others during the day. During the night the subject is cared for and nurtured by family member, programmers and other subject's.

Epsilon programming-is the programming of animal alters into the subject. Epsilon programming is used to create animal alters, which is thought to be the key to paranormal or superhuman abilities Epsilon Programming elements are often added to other forms of programming to increase the effect in a specific direction. The Greek or Cyrillic symbol 3 will be found on the subliminal level.

Epsilon programming is specific to the animal and its purpose and attributes. Epsilon programming is typically paired with another form of programming. Epsilon programming paired with beta programming for example. Some examples of Epsilon/Beta programming are: sex kittens. Epsilon programming is used widely in the sex industry for 'pony girls', 'puppy play' and other animal fetishes. The intent of programming a subject is to give them attributes their handler will want/need.

A fox would be the animal form the alter would assume. The subject for sexual purposes would be told they are a vixen. This would be done if they are male or female. The sexual programming would be layered in.

If the programmer wanted the fox alter to remain as a 'system protector'. The subject would be given the attributes of a 'hunted fox'. This means this part would flee if the system were threatened. Foxes are shy animals as a result this part would rarely be seen. They are also isolative animals and nocturnal. The fox alter would cover its tracks using tactics to throw individuals off.

If the subject were to be have a fox programmed as an 'active alter' the programming would be for 'sly fox'. This subject's task would be to 'out wit' therapists, clergy, friends, anyone who attempted to discover deeper parts of the system.

Any animal can be used in Epsilon programming. Just about every animal has been tried.

For Epsilon programming to effectively work the subject must be kept in a cage. When the subject is in the cage they are treated like the animal the handler desires.

As another example the programmer wants a subject to be a dog. The programmer will treat the subject consistently as they would a dog. If the subject misbehaved; they would be told ‘bad dog’ and an electric shock will be administered through the cage.

The programmer would ask the subject if they wanted to be a dog. When the subject responds with ‘no’ another shock would be administered. The subject would be given choices; you can come out of your cage if you are a good dog. A good dog would give me oral sex; a bad dog would stay in its cage.

These things would continue, breaking down the subject’s will. The programmer would tell the subject, you can eat if you bark. If the subject refuses, they don’t eat. The subject is told to eat food out of a bowl. If they refuse they don’t eat. If they try and use their hands they are shocked.

Dog programming is for sexualized aggression. The subject is aggressively raped from behind. The perpetrator of the rape will say things such as: ‘good bitch’, ‘fucking dog’, ‘you’re in heat’, and will often growl or bark themselves.

As the programming progresses the subject will be trained to attack other kids, and programmers. They train the subject how to attack, how to have forced sex. They do this by if the subject restricts their arms correctly, and subdues them correctly. If the subject does not do these things correctly they are easily over powered and viciously raped.

The programmer will eventually take the subject and pit it against other young subjects who are training to be dogs. The two programmed subjects will fight, biting, at one another until they are broken up, or one is severely injured.

The part (alter) that has been trained does not think they are human. The programmers have insured telling this part, “You are human.” won’t work. During training, the part would be asked if they were human, if they answered, “Yes.” they were tortured. If they answered, “No.” they were rewarded. This would continue until they would say they were a dog.

The phrase: “Dogs of War”? from Shakespeare’s Julius Caesar.

The phrase ‘Dog days of summer’ refers to the rising of the star Sirius. The Egyptians referred to this star as the ‘Star of Isis.’ Sirius is a member of the constellation Canis Major (‘The Big Dog’) this star is brighter and more powerful than the sun. Sirius is also called the ‘Rainbow Star.’

The phrase: “Dog and pony show.” In programming ‘ponies’ are also sex alters. To have a ‘dog and pony show’ means something completely different to a programmed individual.

Here are other uses for dog programming:

Black dog programming, Depression
Bitch programming, subject, sex subject
Brown Dog programming, used for experiments, medical programming
Cerberus programming, guards important doors/gates
Gabriel’s Hounds, demonic layering, German
Pavlov’s Dog, trained of one specific task

Key phrases of Dog programming:

NO or STOP – stop doing whatever they are doing right now.
SIT – sit at their current position.
DOWN – lie down at their current position.
STAND – stand up when it is in the Sit or down position.

OFF – get off the item they are currently on.
STAY – stay at their current position.
GO – start walking or running.
FOCUS – focus on you, and not be distracted.
SPEAK – bark.
QUIET – stop any whining or barking.
HEEL – walk next to you, on either side, at your pace.
BITE – bite into a given object.
OUT or DROP IT – free any item it has in their mouth.
HOLD – hold in their mouth whatever it is biting on.
Off Leash commands
COME – to come towards you.
GO OUT – leave the crate, kennel, room.
GO IN – enter the crate, kennel, room.

End time Programming- When activated the subject's alters will align with their designated sides. They will take a stance of who should be irradiated and who should survive. This will cause chaos within the subject.

F

Ferris wheel Programming- creates compartments shaped like pieces of pie. Each piece is a small part of the pie or a larger structure used to house alters, and fragments. The wheel can be turned to access alters, and to move them in the system.

Flood programming- A coded sequence put in place to punish a system if its internal programming is allowed to degrade or access to an unauthorized individuals, either internally or externally. Flood programming will involve the fragments who hold highly traumatic memories, both emotional and physical, being pushed to the front where the subject is "flooded" with wave after wave of memories. Suicide programming and shattered programming is often layered in with Flood programming. These programmes are triggered to interfere with therapeutic process by overwhelming the subject. This is achieved by triggering the subject to have a flood of painful and frightening cognitive and/or somatic memories enter consciousness simultaneously, thereby significantly increasing post-traumatic stress disorder (PTSD) symptomotology and suppressing the functionality of the subject.

Flowers Programming-Flowers are placed throughout the system as triggers. The flowers can be utilized from the script. The flowers can also be coded by type within the system to designated times for rituals and seasons.

Formation Programming- Parts are programmed to gather together when a specified code is given. The formations can be protective, ritual, soldiers, animals, spies, or what the programmer desires. The formations can be coded by colour pairing, number pairing, or direct outside trigger.

G

Gamma programming- hold cult loyal alters, and holds more emotion than the other states, except for alpha. Suicide programming will often be layered in, as these alters would rather die than leave their "family". Scholarship programming may be paired with Gamma programming, since they easily memorize by repetition. Several languages may be spoken by different alters under this programming, both modern and ancient languages can being spoken

The system protection and deception aspect of this programming will provide misinformation to individuals, and attempt to redirect any outside intervention. Gamma parts are employed to sow doubt and confusion about the very existence of Programmers.

Gate Keeper Programming- Alters programmed to guard portals and gates throughout the system. The alters impose their reality on other parts within the system by using oppression, judgment, force and deception.

Gender role confusion- Female subjects are programmed with male attributes, and male subjects are programmed with female attributes. For males: (opposite for females) He wants to be a girl.

He desires to grow up to be a woman.

He has a marked interest in female activities, including playing with dolls or playing the roles of girls or women.

He has an intense interest in cosmetics, jewellery, or girls' clothes and enjoys dressing up in girls' apparel.

His favourite friends are girls.

On occasions, he may cross-dress and actually consider himself to be a girl.

Gethsemane Suicide Programming-If subject is captured, silence programming runs, the subject does not attempt to ‘save themselves’ but allows their death.

Governmental programming- the subject is trained to take leadership positions or administrative positions in the government. The subject is trained to network with others in governments, local, national, and international. The Programmers’ stated goal is to infiltrate, and eventually cause the downfall of, all major governments in the world. Government operatives are taught to do this by: infiltrating local political parties running for leadership both locally and nationally working for top leaders, as administrators, financial advisors funding governmental races and backing the individual sympathetic to the programmers’ agenda.

The subject’s selected for governmental programming are usually highly intelligent with native charm, or charisma. They are also skilled in manipulation. These abilities may be enhanced through programming, encouraging the subject to project a personality that will draw subject’s to them.

They are also taught finances extensively. This programming is done by: hypnotizing the subject, whether subject, youth, or programmer (it is usually administered in late childhood in suitable candidates), and inducing deep trance with drugs. The subject is shocked, and given the script they are to follow.

They will learn any languages necessary for the position.

Go insane program-Defence programming. Subject my feel as if they are hearing voices, depression, echoing, high pitched frequencies, spiders and crawling sensation on skin, distorted vision, and other sensory distortion.

God Satan Programming- form of dual programming to insure system balance. The personalities of the deities are switched. Satan/Lucifer has the attributes of the Christian God. God/Jesus has the attributes of Lucifer/Satan.

Gumby Programming- is to make the subject think their body is like Gumby and is flexible to move into any position. The programming is used for sexual techniques paired with Beta programming. Programmers will have male instructors who teach female subjects about the power of seduction. The male and female sexual subjects usually are highly skilled technicians who don’t have emotions attached to what they do.

H

Halt Programming-When activated via code this program stops all activities within the system. The Halt programming can be used if there is a major system breach, the subject's job is cancelled and all alters need to stop immediately.

Hearts of Stone programming- The programmers make the alters believe they have surgically removed their hearts and replaced them with a stone(s) 3. The Programmers will remove the heart for a number of reasons: Black mail, remove fear of death, remove love, remove feelings etc. By removing the subject's hearts, it removes any chance the dark alters will have the capacity for compassion in their heart for anyone. They will be told that they are incapable of having friends or of loving others.

Programmers will promise to return the heart, if the subject obeys, returns home when called, and if they should die and need to be revived.

Programmers can give a part of the heart to a hierarchy alter for proof of safe keeping. The part may be hidden somewhere Temple of Molech, Valley of Death, or torture section of programming.

Honour/dishonour programming is common in military systems. In this, the military parts are told that an "honourable and courageous" soldier will take their life, rather than reveal secrets or leave their unit.

Hourglass programming-two triangles are placed in the system, one with its point upward the other with its point down. The triangles are put on a line so their points will meet forming an hourglass. When the points of the triangle meet the sand will begin to run through the top glass. The programmer can decide what will occur when the hour is up.

Hypno-sleep-suicide program placed in the system during the deepest level of hypnosis.

I

Iceman Programming-Programming that insures the balance of the system is maintained. An internal part must be selected for this programming. This part must have access to system codes and keys. They are programmed with a cold personality hidden deep within the system and placed under guard. Their task is to 'thaw' the system if the system tips too far out of balance in regards to depression, fear, and suicidal thoughts and attempts that aren't triggered.

Intelligence Spectrum Programming-Programming for parts that maintains age specific intelligence. This is to insure a younger part does not become higher functioning that an elder part.

Isolation Programs-Isolation programs are layered in for internal and external purposes. Within the system, alters may be walled-off (via amnesic barriers) from cooperative alters by cult-loyal alters. Beyond the system, subjects may be conditioned to withdraw socially, isolating themselves from helpful resources, etc.

J

Jacobs' ladder programming-A spiritual program that leads to the subject's higher understanding of spiritual beings.
Janus programming-Dual programming. This programming can work as a 'reset program' taking alters back to a previous point in programming. This programming can also be used to insure the subject does not trust others. The subject is programmed to believe in the dual nature of God, individuals and themselves. Individuals are good and bad, sane and insane, trustworthy and untrustworthy etc.
Janus programming can be used with hourglasses for the passage of time, future events and past events can be connected with Janus programming.
Janus 2 (two) programming is used in subjects for facial memory and recognition. This program assists with smoother transitions if there is a switch. The alter who is control may not know the individual they are speaking with but with Janus 2 they will have a sense of recognition.
Jewels programming- Children of programmers will go through either metals or jewels programming. Jewels are considered higher than metals. Which program is put in and when, is dependent on the subject's status, their parent's status, the location of birth, the group subject is born into, and the programmers that work with them. Jewel programming is used to reinforce cult or abuse - group commands such as recall
Rubies, emeralds and diamonds are considered powerful alters inside and are in leadership roles, both internally and externally. The subject's sense of identity, and status may be held in these alters.

The jewels are used as reward based programming.

Training for this program often begins between ages two and three. Each step of obedience is linked to receiving a jewel. To earn the designated jewel the subject must:
a.) show sexual adeptness
b.) Pass programming tests
c.) Be rewarded for special achievement (fighting, survival)
d.) be adept at games
e.) show heightened intelligence
f.) attributes of trauma bonding
g.) Show betrayal skills

Amethyst is usually the first jewel earned, and is linked to keeping secrets, never telling, and passing the first step of obedience.
Ruby sexual alters inside. As the subject is sexually traumatized and survives, or creates sexual alters to please adults, they are rewarded by being allowed to become a ruby.
Moon Stone given to subjects who achieve rank in ritual setting.
Emerald will often come later (ages 12 to 15). This is considered very precious, and is linked to family loyalty, witchcraft, and spiritual achievement.
Morganite Given to child alters who are skilled at their assigned job and hold the body well through training.
Sapphire- Given to subject when they have mastered not wanting anything, remain quiet when their needs are not met and when they are left alone for extended periods of time.

Paraiba Tourmaline-subject has mastered photographic response and memory.
Blood Stone Given when the subject has terminated another subject, participated in a ritual sacrifice without fear, remorse, or other negative emotion.
Melanite- given to subject when they have survived a hunt, and found the hunted.
Hackmanite-Subject shows ability to re-enact programming scenarios with minor subjects.
Cats Eye Aquamarine- Subject completes assigned task and responds to call back.
Diamond is the highest gemstone, and not all children will earn it. It is considered a high achievement may not be earned until adulthood, after passing rigorous tasks. It will be the controlling alters in a gemstone system. A diamond has passed all twelve steps of discipline, plus passed unusual tests and will have highest family loyalty.
Judas Programming.-protective programs. A subject who betrays the programmers is programmed to hang themselves.
Jolly Green Giant programming-(Green Giant)-occult programming to protect detection from outside individuals. The Green Giant protects occult inside territory by inflicting trauma on internal trespassers. The programming will trigger internal occult protectors to threaten and intimidate outside individuals.

K

Kaleidoscope programming-a distortion program that causes the subject to see many faces of one individual. The program will often spin.

Kerberos programming- Linked to Epsilon programming. This programming is a protection program. The dog parts will protect the area and become aggressive if it is tampered with.

Kosem programming-suicide program by hanging.

L

Lascivious programming-Sexually aggressive programming.

Lilith programming which is given alters who function within the Cabbalistic Tree of Life which is built in during Mengele's programming for the deeper sections (levels) of alters which are trained in Programmers black magic

M

The Man without a Country Programming-The subject is read the story. They are advised they will be rejected by everyone, enemy and friend, if they reveal any secrets of the programming. The subject is isolated for periods of time so they understand the severity of breaking secrets

Mask Programming-Subjects are given a mask as a replacement for their face. The mask could be made of porcelain, paint, or another material. If the subject removes the mask, or the mask is removed they are told they will die. Without the mask they don’t exist and no one can see them.

Mensa Programming-Photographic memory programming. Reserved for subjects with exceptional I.Q.

Melting Pot Program-A program that melts the subject into their programmer. The subject will do anything for the programmer with this program. The melting is blissful feeling that anchors the subject to the programmer.

Metals programming- Metals programming is a type of programming that many Programmers’ children are given. Metals can be from bronze (lowest) to platinum (highest). Metals a form of reward based programming.

Rhoduim-Highest level
Platinum –
Gold - second highest in the metals programming rank.
Ruthenium
Iridium
Osmium
Palladium
Rhenium
Silver
Gallium

Indium
Tellurium-Lowest Level

Military programming-Started by three years of age with simple exercises. The subjects are taught to march in time, stand in a straight line. They are punished by being kicked, shocked with a cattle prod, or beaten with a baton if they move out of place.

The programmers will have ranks, badges and insignia to indicating the subject's level of achievement in the cult hierarchy and military. Badges and medals are given out to indicate the subject's level of training and tests passed

Being killed is considered weakness; being a killer is considered strength.

Prisoner of war camps will be simulated. The "guards" are older subjects who have done well. The "prisoners" are younger subjects or those being punished for not performing well. There is intense pressure to become a guard as this is a power position.

Hunting and tracking games where the prisoners are given a half hour lead are frequent. These may also involve the use of trained dogs taught to knock the hunted down but not kill them. Older children are taught to handle the dogs, and use them. Youth are taught to help the programmers train the dogs.

Microwaves for Programming- a chip is placed in the auditory cortex of the brain. The chip allows someone to speak into a microphone, the microphone then has its sounds coded into microwave, which are sent to the receiver in the brain and the receiver device will transform the microwaves back so that the subject's mind hears the spoken message.

Mirror Programming- There exists a mirror world which is a reversal of the one internal world the subject lives in. The programming creates duplicate reflected images of parts, and internal structures. This causes confusion and parts to become lost if they attempt to leave their area. Mirrors can also be placed in the system as doors and traps. If the mirror is shattered a program can be triggered to protect the system.

Mote Programming-The subject is a mere mote, a small flash in infinite time. When an alter of a subject thinks or goes internally where it shouldn't, this programming is attached to the mind so that the subject loses sight of who they are and feels very insignificant and only a dot. It can also be used as a mass protective program where the mind spreads out like molecules and loses the ability to think

N

Naiad Programming-water programming. Areas of the system can be flooded with water if there is a breach. It can also be used to re-enforce outside water torture for internal parts.

Near Death Programming- Completed by drugging the subject at age 2 or 3. The subject is tortured by, beating, shocking and almost suffocating to create a near death state. While under this duress the subject is brought to consciousness and asked to choose, death or to invite a powerful demon inside. The demon enters; the subject becomes unconscious, and awakens later in clean clothing and a soft bed. The subject is weak and shaky, and is told by their handler in a very compassionate manner, that they died, but the demon brought them back to life. The subject told that if they ask the demonic entity to leave, that they will revert to the near death state they were in.

Another near death programming is the subjects arms, legs, waist and neck tied down. The subject is wrapped in a cocoon with soft gauze; they are fed intravenously, and undergo sensory deprivation. White light and loud noise are used to help disorient the subject then they are electric shocked and drugged. This occurs for approximately two days. The subject is advised they are dying. There handler advises the subject they will not let them die, but their life is owed to them (handler). Recorded messages of being "reborn" into the "family group" are also played on a loop as the subject is brought out of unconsciousness.

A third version is placing the subject in a large recently killed animal large animal. The subject has been drugged and traumatised to heighten their fear. The subject will be told they have been placed in "the belly of the beast" and will die. The programmer or handler will 'rescue' the subject form this death.

Nightmare-Night Terror Programs- Similar to flooding programs, subjects are conditioned to become overwhelmed with terrifying images/memories while asleep. They serve to keep the subject run-down and fatigued. Often, nightmare programs are triggered or tripped automatically when processing forbidden material in therapy.

No-talk programming-subject is programmed to not talk about past events. The programming will trigger pain in the tongue, teeth and jaw.

Nursery Rhyme programming- Nursery rhymes are constructed to activate designated alters that are usually sleepers. A Tisket A Tasket, Baa, Baa, Black Sheep is used for money laundering scripts, and drug money or drug carrying scripts. Bye, Baby Bunting is used with where the subject child is placed within a skin, cocoon programming with a butterfly coming forth or near death experiences. Diddle, Diddle Dumpling, Ding, Dong Bell, Hickory Dickery Dock are used for internal clocks.

O

Omega programming- is designed to make subjects prone to self-destruction, which is both a general social engineering principle and an emergency brake in programming. The corresponding behaviours include suicidal tendencies and/or self-mutilation. The Omega programs prevent integrating the subject, they hold the body programs, and run the computers. If major tampering is done with the System, which threatens to totally wipe out the Omega programs, then one of the backup programs will be triggered.

Octopus suicide programming, an octopus suicide program chokes the subject if they are disobedient.

P

Phi/Theta programming -this represents negative spiritual programming. These are the “dark” ritual alters, who participate in blood rituals, sacrifices, and ceremonies. Internal witches, warlocks, seers, psychics, readers, and occult practitioners will undergo this programming, which has highly developed right brain and deep trance abilities. They will often be colour coded black.

Porcelain Face Programming- Fire torture and melted wax is used to make the subject believe their face has been burned. The programmer gives the traumatized parts a porcelain mask. The part getting the Porcelain face may be given a "gem" hypnotically like Jade and that becomes their secret name. Another use of porcelain masks is to place masks on Pawn alters which were used to guard places by scaring other alters with their fearful porcelain countenances. The alters are placed in mirror mazes so their reflections are scary to others entering the mazes.

Pain Programs-Subjects are conditioned to re-experience the physical pain portion of their abuse memories. Used as punishment, pain programs may also be enacted to "motivate" the subject to carry out other programmed functions.

Potter’s Wheel program-This is the equivalent to a computer utility program. The Programmer pulls the alter they want to work on up on the potter’s. When alters are placed on the potter’s wheel, they can be asked to stand in order. Then the alters will come to the front of the mind on top of each other in their prearranged sequence.

Princess Programming- The princess program which is a back up program functions, if the regular programming breaks down or if the handler loses control over the system. The programming is contained within a box, which is opened. The princess who is kept sleeping by spiders which bite her in a coffin, wakes up and looks for the prince to come. Darkness sets in on all the top sections of alters, and thick walls and pain come, then a webbing much like a body-suit-cocoon will envelope all alters but those loyal to the programmer. It becomes hard to breathe and the alters who had sought freedom from the programming, now find themselves being tranced out. Alters who are cold and in lots of pain are called up by code to torment the body. The Outer Darkness of a System (sometimes called the Rubicon) gets thicker

The system will re-establish its compass.

Prolog Programming- Logic programming for the subject. The programmer will set up scenarios that to an outside individual cannot be true. Due to the subject experiencing the scenario it is true. When an outside individual attempts to logically state what has occurred cannot be true, the programming will state it is true reinforcing the belief.

Puppet programming- In the body feels totally disjointed and controlled by strings. The subject's body is paralyzed by drugs and then electronic shocks are administered to limbs. The programmer will tie ropes to the limbs, and the limb or body part is shocked the programmer will pull the ropes. This gives the programmer complete control over the subjects body. The subject when not being shocked will learn to respond to the ropes without fighting. Puppeteers can be placed internally to control these parts.

Paper doll programming Another is for the subject to think they have been turned into a fragile paper doll. The programming is put in by making the skin very sensitive to any touch, and then attaching that memory to the hypnotic suggestion of being a paper doll. The paper dolls may be burned by the programmer to re-enforce how fragile they are.

Q

Quiet Wind-The audio hallucination of a quiet wind is used to convince the subject that the Holy Spirit is visiting them.

R

Rapid Switching Programs- This program is a system defence, once enacted; a subject may not be able to finish a sentence without switching three to four times between alters. This creates for the subject an inability to function. Dizziness, fainting, aggression, and in extreme cases death may occur. Subject must be 'reset' or heavy sedation administered.

Re-birthing program-The re-birthing program is triggered to remind the subject they have been born for a purpose. The program can also be triggered so the subject can be 'born again' if there is a failed attempt at a task. The program will erase the memory of the failed attempt so the subject will not have self doubt.

Recycle Programs -These are programs which act to quickly re-dissociate memories which a therapist has worked to abreact and re-associate.

Reminder-Reinforcement Programs- Used as a reminder to the subject of vows to the larger group they have made. These programs often triggered by phone or touch (e.g., three series of three taps on shoulder or knee, a rapid series of six electronic tones, spoken phrases, etc.). Program triggers frequently include gifts from the cult given during childhood (e.g., stuffed animals, music boxes, etc.). Visually, specified colours also serve the same purpose. Cult-related colours (particularly red, purple and black) are commonly presented to the subject in the form(s) of a cult-contact's apparel, a letter or envelope, etc.

Re-programming- alters that are degrading in programming can be sent internally to programming sites. Parts can also be designed who perceive themselves as existing in the original sites of their torture within the internal landscape .Defiance of the programmer or wishes by any alters to defy the programmer or handler, can be sent to the internal programming site to experience themselves as being tortured once again.

Reporting Programs Subjects are programmed to routinely contact and report back to their handler. These programs may be time-triggered (every month, full moon, etc.), date-triggered (i.e., corresponding to cult "holidays", etc.), or situational triggered (i.e., host personality enters therapy, reveals cult "secrets," etc.). Such programs keep the handler updated on the subject's daily life.

Return Programs (Call Backs) Such programs are designed to manipulate subjects to return to the cult for rituals and/or further programming.

Religious Relevance and Convictions: The programmer implants posthypnotic suggestions that are clearly referenced in the Bible. The subject may be punished by anything that is referenced in the Bible to substantiate the validity of the Gospels. This process is to provide the subject with an increased sense of fear and intimidation resulting from God's presence and force.

Ribbon Programming Colour Programming-During E.C.T., coloured scarf's coming out of a box are shown to the subject. The alters are then advised they are a specific coloured ribbon using the same technique as colour programming. The ribbons have the ability to travel between the different levels and to transmit messages throughout the system. Ribbon programming consists of several things--where they reside, who they are and what they are to protect.

When a System is accessed by a programmer, one practice is to obtain a ribbon alter and then inform the ribbon what their task is.

Ribbons must protect the computers in order to protect their own life. The Ribbons will be programmed to believe that reversing the computer will reverse the Ribbons' life. The ribbons themselves operate with mechanical hearts (not human hearts).

It's a simple way to organize a subject's groups within. It also strengthens identification with other programming. It can also help with re-accessing the subject's system. They are taught if the trainer wears a specific colour those alters come forward.

River Runs Deep programming- Tells the subject that there is no escape, because the programming runs deep through every fibre of the subject.

S

Sacred Heart Programming- suicide program for spiritual parts.

Scramble programming- These are programs intended to confuse, disorganize and block the subject's alter system, emerging memories, thought processes, and/or incoming information. Often, there are specific alters designated by the cult programmer to perform this function. This programming reduces the subject's ability to switch, speak, write, draw, read, or remember previous sessions and work.

These programs target therapeutic language, and spiritual language. For example, the incoming words or visual images of the speaker may be scrambled or garbled. The effect will be the subject experiences the individual as looking and sounding threatening, abandoning, or incompetent.

Scholarship programming- Subject's with superior memories and natural intelligence undergo specific training and trauma with praise for accomplishment and punishment or being shocked for not doing well. Major areas of scholarship include the history of the Illuminati, especially the subject's particular branch and memorizing genealogies. Learning and becoming fluent in multiple languages modern and ancient, including but not limited to: English, French, German, Russian, Spanish, Arabic, Latin, Greek, Hebrew, Egyptian hieroglyphics; ancient Babylonian, ancient Chaldea and cuneiform writings. They are skilled and knowledgeable debaters, and quite verbal about it.

Scorpion Programming- Is given to Monarch sex subjects both male and female. The Scorpion program frequency promotes hostility, aggression, suicide, pain, hurt and assassination. This programming is located at the root chakra and moves up into the reptilian brain. Sex is used as a method of survival with a great deal of trickery, treachery and deception. This vibration is frequently used in satanic rituals. Subjects are consistently belittled and unfavourably compared to others. The young subjects are available to be used sexually around the world as party favours and for blackmailing predators.

Self-Injury Programming Cutting Programs As children, subjects have been taught by the programmer when and how to cut. These programs tend to be triggered as a means of punishment, as well as to reinforce earlier compliance or shutdown. The cutting tools may be gifts from the programmer. Many cutting programs progress to suicide programs as needed.

Self programming-The subject carries out their own programming outside the surroundings of the handlers and programmers.

Shell programming- A form of programming used to create a shell on the outside, that other alters inside speak through. This is a designed to hide the subject’s multiplicity from the outside world, and works extremely well with highly fragmented systems. It also takes a subject with the ability to dissociate to a great degree.

Others inside will then be directed to come next to the shell alters, and use their voice to cover their own. This allows greater fragmentation of the subject, while being able to hide from outside view, since the internal alters will learn to present through the shell. Shell alters always see themselves as “clear”, and will have no colour if colour coding is present in the system.

Silence-Shutdown Programs-When enacted, such programs will cause the subject to "stop talking" and to cease revealing information. Though such programs may be triggered through a wide variety of modalities, enactment via self-touch triggers are particularly common. Some shutdown programs will be directed toward specific alters, while others are meant for the system in general.

Silence Programming- no talk programming.

Soul Transfer programming-The soul, energy and power are passed during the moment between life and death to the subject. This is done with young subjects during Epsilon programming. The subject is tied down, and an animal is bled to death on top of them so the departing soul and energy will "enter" the subject.

Spiritual Dilemma programming-creates Satanic and Christian alters. Having Satanic and Christian alters insures that if they discover each other they would reject wanting to learn about the other. The personality would move into denial and dissociation.

They are told the Christian god rejected them because he didn’t rescue the 2-year-old victim that accepted the love of God. Rejection, retaliation and bondage are the tools used for the non-Christian alters. They are advised only the demon cared enough and was strong enough to rescue or resurrect the young subject part.

Spider web programming-is a linked program having a spider or internal programmer that continuously reweaves and reinforces internal programming and punishments. The web also communicates with other systems and can represent demonic linkages internally.

Spin programming-Designed to spread effects such as pain, painful emotions, and other feelings or urges globally throughout a subject’s personality system for purposes of either designing and building a young subject's personality system, or harassing older subjects and disrupting psychotherapy. Spin programming appears to be based on a combination of physical spinning, cognitive and imagery training, and repetition and practice aimed at creating an internal multi-alter spinning the pain or affective components of numerous traumatic memories simultaneously to large groups of targeted alters.

Signs and symptoms of Spin Programs are global effects, symptoms occurring like a "storm," pressure, dizziness, a sense of spinning inside, physical movements related to the internal experience of spinning, and spinning-related imagery and vocabulary. When a subject is affected by a specifically targeted program, she or he typically experiences one or a small number of alters having emotions or urges or manifesting behaviours, while most or all other alters remain unaffected.

Global effects, The flurries of pain, affect, or impulse tend to grow in intensity, build to a crescendo, maintain that peak for a time, and then gradually diminish before finally subsiding. Nearly every alter in the system is lashed by the “wind and rain” of the storm, often without understanding why these effects are occurring, and doing their best to minimize damages until the storm passes.

Pressure, When spin programs are active, the affected alters subjectively experience high levels of force or pressure, as if they aresitting at the outside edge of a rapidly rotating disc. They feel overwhelmed by this pressure, finding it impossible to resist, and they often complain of symptoms that would be caused by mounting internal pressure, such as headaches that feel like they are going to cause the head to explode from the inside, disruption of speech, vision problems, and similar phenomena.

Dizziness. As the internal spinning associated with spin programming increases in speed and force, subjects frequently complain of dizziness. At these times, they may be literally feeling the sensations caused by the original spinning, because they are experiencing a planned revivification or flashback of that event.

Sense of Spinning Internally. Along with the dizziness, subjects experiencing active spin programs often notice a sense of spinning internally.

Physical Movements. When the internal spinning is at its most intense, subjects often move in ways that a person might move while being physically spun. These movements tend to be rhythmic and repetitive, they may involve any part of the body, and they are subtle and may escape notice. The movements tend to be slower, smoother, more fluid, more subtle, and more regular and rhythmic than typical “nervous” movements.

Spinning-Related Imagery and Vocabulary. When describing their sensations during an active spin program, subjects often utilize imagery or words that are related to the experience of spinning. Typical words used include: vortex, whirlpool, whirlwind, tornado, cyclone, abyss, falling, drowning, sinking, being pulled or sucked down, being blown or shot or exploded out, tumbling, hurling, whirling, swirling, and twirling. Some alters have programmer-assigned names related to spinning (e.g., Spinner,).

Stringer programming- When the alter hits a stringer, they will go through a series of memories, false memories, hypnotic commands, and body sensations that have been attached together in links.

Subliminal Programming- Hidden suggestions that only the subject’s subconscious perceives. They can be audio, hidden behind music, or visual, airbrushed into a picture, flashed on a screen so fast that they aren’t consciously seen, or incorporated into a picture or design.

Suicidal programming- All suicidal programming is put in place to either ensure continued obedience to the programmers agenda; to ensure regular re-contact; or prevent the individual or an outside entity from accessing the subject's system without authorization .

Survival of the fittest programming- Used in Delta programming, and for system protect alters. The program is training for strength, lack of fear, and endurance, and to outlast your opponent.

System access programming-‘Short cut’ codes to the system are placed. *(not recommended)*
Systems layered programming-Numerous levels in a system are set to send out and respond to a code at the same time. This could be suicide programming, spin programming, fight/flight programming.
Serpent Programming-Used in conjunction with the Ouroboros. This programming has alters that are named after snakes. The snake parts will programmed to awaken the pineal gland, which again results in the opening of the third eye
Shatter Programming-Uses the images of mirrors, and glass shattering to assist in splitting the mind. The subject is advised to grab pieces of the shattered glass and put it back together. The subject will cut their hands, knees, and other parts of their bodies in an attempt to rebuild the glass. They will be advised this will happen to them if they attempt to rebuild themselves.

T

Theta Programming- "psychic" programming correlates with the development and use of extrasensory powers and extra physical abilities, including long-distance mind connection with other remote viewing where subject’s could see what a person was doing in another location. It also implies the use of thought energy to kill someone at a distance. Since subjects cannot be consistently given Theta programming, a surgical implant of a sodium/lithium powered high frequency receiver/transducers coupled with a multi-range discharge capacitor is placed in the brains subjects. This gives the handlers the ability to send signals by remote to the subject’s brain. When the receiver picks up the signals they electronically stimulate certain areas of the brain which in turn triggers pre-set programming.
Time programming-Used in conjunction with internal trees, clocks, flowers, hourglasses, and other symbols that show the passages of time. This programming insures the system is coordinated with holidays, call backs, and other designs the programmer desires.
Tinkerbelle programming-Programming makes alters think they are like Tinkerbelle in that they will never grow up or age.
Traps Programming- A trap is a place in a system for handling unexpected or unallowable conditions. These traps can catch parts if they wander too far, or be placed for internal programmers to activate. Traps can look like quick sand, fog, spider webs, or other items.
Twinning programming-The Programmers’ will create twin bonds in child subjects. The subjects are allowed to play with, and become close to one another while being trained. The two are placed together at the beginning of training when they are young. They become twins, and are programmed to die if the other one dies. They are taught to be one in body, mind, and soul. They are bonded in many ways, including torturing each other, and sexual bonding. The trauma bonding that they undergo will consist of: a. being put in life or death situations together, b. given programming scripts which intertwine and fill in to complete each other to make a whole, c. are placed in jobs that require total compliance with the programming in order to survive, d. are bonded together to other subject’s.
Time Travel Programming-for subjects involved in Project Pegasus.
Tin Man Programming The Tin Man programming is all purpose versatile program for whatever the Programmer wants completed. , it means that the subject is a well oiled machine.
Tin Man programming (2)-The subject is advised they are made of tin, have no heart and feelings.

They are programmed to not cry or they will rust.

Tumbleweed Program-where the subject feels like they have become tumbleweed and can't ground and get their bearings. They feel as if they are blown by the wind.

Thor Programming-Headache programme.

Therapy Interference Programs- programs designed to interfere with the therapeutic process which trigger the subject to: (1) not see, (2) not think for self, (3) stay distracted, and (4) become resistant, mistrustful, and/or obnoxious toward the therapist.

Tweedle Dee and Tweedle Dum programming-This can be used in twin programming so the twins don't contradict one another. The programming can also be layered into quadrants of the system to help maintain balance.

Tornado Program This is a free floating program that moves around areas that the programmers want protected. When it hits an alter(s) it causes confusion, spinning, and switching, as well as a feeling of losing control. It's part of the elemental back up programs.

U

Umbrella programming- protective shield for delta programming.

Upside down programming-The subject is hanging or being suspended upside down for one or two hours. That plays tricks on the mind along with dissociating pain and pleasure sensations get reversed. This is training for Beta programming to get the subject to think that sadistic rapeis pleasurable. With reversals you get 'pain is love' and the sadomasochistic kitten alters will beg for more abuse.

Utility Programs-low level programs that help maintain the systems function. For example if a subject has not slept in 5 days, the program will run to ensure the subject is able to receive rest.

V

Vagabond Programming- applied to teach the alter it doesn't belong to the inside world, nor to the outside world. It belongs nowhere.

Verbal Response Programs- These are programs designed to provide suitable answers to cult-related, system-related or alter-related inquiries which may be asked by outside individuals. Such responses will have been repeatedly rehearsed by the subject and reinforced by the programmer.

Vessel Programming-a subject is sexually opened at the base chakra, drugged and sanctified to receive the essence of a lower astral entity. Then those at the ritual have sex with "the vessel" to get the infused energy of the lower astral entity. Then "the vessel" or subject is sacrificed so ritual participants can drink the blood and hormones of the lower astral entity that entered the vessel. It is believed the energy will assist in specified programming.

Virtual reality programming- (VR) the subject is placed in VR headsets and suit while a disk is used to run the program. It can be used to create 3D and holographic images, and especially is useful in scripted programming, and subject practice sequences for assassin training. Virtually any scenario can be recreated. Images to be "burned in" will be shown on the VR disk, and reinforced repetitively during the programming sequence. Some programmers feel it removes the element of "human error" in

training, and use it quite extensively.
Volcano programming-used to restructure a system.

W

War in the Heavens suicide programming-spiritual suicide program.
Water programming-simulated drowning is completed with the subject and linked to silence programming and flooding.
Windsor Programming- A program that intercepts attempts to de-program the subject. The program and parts often live in a castle called Windsor.
Wolf, Bear, Crow, Lion programming-Developed after the meanings of the "Medicine Cards" that are used like tarot cards to discover subject's power through the ways of animals. The programs are based on hunting modules and animal characteristics and symbols. The subject is shown many training films.During programming the subjects are broken into groups of their animals. The groups are all taught first what it feels like to be prey and then how to attack their prey or each other using mental and physical force so your prey doesn't get free or doesn't inform on the subject. Programming teaches subjects to compartmentalize learning and force the subjects to do. Programming relies heavily on drugs, electric shock and trauma. The same things are used to trigger the different stages of the programs and programming.
WOLF, basic training is to build future programs on. First the subject is the prey and learns to be aware of the environment and the target. They become the hunter and learn to hold down the prey or each other to take what they want from the prey. The subjects learn to hunt as a group.
BEAR, Subjects go through strength training. Learn to hunt and survive alone.
CROW, The subject goes through intelligence training and problem solving skills.
MOUNTAIN LIONS, encircle, terrorize, use intricate verbal calls to intimidate and scare making easy and clean kills. They will be attacked and terrorized to the point of death by other Mountain Lion level subjects to make sure they understand the fear and weakness of the prey. Subjects are taught they lead those below them by using fear, surprise, attack and terror. The subject must climb great distances, observe their prey and report back to their programmer. As "prince of the lions" the subject can demand and take whatever they choose from anyone who is in their group.

X

Y

Z

Zeta Programming typically presents a realistic or cynical view of the world in which unnatural death and human suffering is simply necessary for the system to survive. Zeta programming is used to dull or block empathy, producing "empathic blocks" against the suffering of other subject's, which is necessary. Suicide pacts can be made with Zeta programming.
This programming is intended to make subjects willingly embrace their own death in a ritual.

Glossary

A

Abreaction- is a psychoanalytical term for reliving an experience in order to purge it of its emotional excesses; a type of catharsis.

Access Codes- Specialized codes, often coded into short messages, or numerical codes, that allows access into the subject's system. These codes may also depend and be set up on sight recognition and voice recognition of the Programmer giving the codes. The system will respond to the codes only if an individual who appears to be an authorized person, such as the subject's handler/Programmer, gives them. This is to prevent unauthorized access or using of the subject by others outside of the subject's defined group.

Ad hoc groups- Adults, who may or may not have had abusive childhoods, come together and form a new group with its own ideology and rituals.

Adjudication- The exercise in judging whether a person can have access to compartmentalized information.

Agent Provocateurs- Individuals who join groups with the purpose of leading the group to do things that will cause it harm.

Agent of influence- - These agents can be unwitting, under mind-control, or ideologically motivated to use their positions of influence to sway the minds of others.

Age Regression- The act of bringing back past memories in a subject though the use of hypnosis. The memories can be very vivid and real in the mind of the subject.

Alter- A dissociated part of the mind which has a separate identity and is given cue codes by Programmers to trigger that dissociated part of the mind to come to the front of the mind. The part's identity may be a gem, rock, a tape recorder, a poodle, a white kitten, a dove, a horse, or even think of itself as a person or a demon. It all depends on the programming.

Alter fragment- a dissociated part of the mind which serves only a single purpose.

Alpha - base-level programming reinforced by scripts. All MKs get alpha programming so that other kinds can be installed later.

Amethyst - part of jewel programming, its goal meant to create an alter that reinforces silence programming by keeping secrets or destroying evidence. See also chi or silence programming

A***naesthesia-*** is a temporary state that causes unconsciousness, loss of memory, lack of pain and muscle relaxation.

Anchor - a stimulus that influences someone's state of mind.

Anchoring - influencing how a particular stimulus will influence someone's state of mind.

Apotheosis - a central Masonic belief stating that one can become a God.

Assessment- the analysis and synthesis of information, usually about a person or persons, for the purpose of appraisal. The assessment of individuals is based upon the compilation and use of psychological as well as biographic detail.

Attitudinal inoculation- The process of making people immune to attempts to change their attitudes by initially exposing them to small doses of the arguments (opposition) against their position. This process gives explanations to behaviour, arguments, and beliefs of opponents. The explanations may be highly biased and inaccurate but depending on the source of the misinformation may significantly add to credibility of a belief system.

Aversive Conditioning is the use of something unpleasant, or a punishment, to stop an unwanted behaviour.

Axe - see woodcutter

B

B- Is often found doubled or reflected, forming the Monarch Butterfly, which is the signature and main trigger applied in Monarch Mind Control.

Backstopping- an intelligence term for setting up proof to support the cover stories the intelligence agencies give their agents and assets

The Bird- was a name for Fort Holabird, MD where intelligence operatives were trained as well as subjected to mind-control.

Beta--This is the second Greek letter, and it represents the sexual models and sexual alters that the Programmers are creating

Big - an MK mode, generally affecting the confidence level

Bigot- A list of names of those who have clearance to a particular set of information.

Black Angels- Psy-ops assassination team is composed of very intelligent African-American women.

Black - anarchy, destruction, chaos

Blackballing - the process of exclusion, deriving itself from a voting system which took place in the lodges whereby a member of the organization dislikes an applicant. One blackball vote is usually sufficient to exclude.

Black Envelope- A black-coloured envelope used by intelligence to hold the real name of an agent being used. In the case of programmed subjects, a chief of a station might have a blank envelope with the actual name of a programmed subject being used in their field of operations.

Bleep Boxes- Used to tap telephones and in other instances to make free-of-cost telephone calls

Blending- Arranging inside parts using mirroring so an individual cannot tell when a switch has occurred.

Boat - a car.

Bona Fides- Codes to allow two people to meet. Evidence or reliable information about identity, personal (including intelligence) history, and intentions or good faith.

Box - the slave-state of the MK

Bubble gum - an MK, “chewed up and spit out”. See pop.

Butterfly - the #1 symbol of MK/Monarch programming. Signifies an altered state

C

C- Can stand for Controller or Control, which means the individual(s) handling a programmed subject.

Cabman- a device to remotely activate a telephone with a radio beam.

Cage- Mental enslavement

Car - spook-speak for MK

Carotid artery technique- The technique of using pressure on the carotid for access to the mind. The pressure cuts off the flow of blood to the brain causing a rapid coma-like condition -- during this condition, hypnotic control can sometimes be obtained.

Cat - a pejorative term used to describe a female MK, usually associated with beta programming in the common usage, but possibly can contain any other level of programming as well.

Catfight - usually used to describe a fight between two women. Betas are usually female, and the fight between them is usually a breakdown between two high-ranking socialite types.

Che Guevara - Chi trigger, famous MK

Checkerboard - a tiled design of opposing colours, used on the floor or on cloth prints. See duality.

Chi - “return to cult” programming, usually activated when an MK has some type of breakdown or goes rogue. Internal mechanisms built to prevent “runaways”.

Chop - a reference to the woodcutter, usually describing a wish to terminate a member

Cipher - symbols are used to represent letters

Clear Eyes-is a sleeper assassin who is capable of being triggered, i.e. activated. "Clear Eyes", i.e., a fully programmed sleeper assassin, who can commit crimes as serious as murder, and afterwards have no shame, guilt, or remorse.

Clean agents – Subjects that have never been used in intelligence work, so they have no record of use.

Co-bedding- can be when two or more traumatized children huddle together for support, andprotection ,

Co-conscious- When two alters are aware of what each other is thinking.

Code name- A word or phrase used to refer secretly to a specific person, group, project, or plan of action. A code word is any word or phrase that has been chosen to signify a specific message while keeping that message hidden from a third party. Functional codes may contain thousands of code words, some of which may also be code names; however, a code name need not be part of a larger code. It may, in effect, be a code unto itself, comprised of only one word.

Control- the capacity to generate, alter, or halt human behaviour by implying, citing, or using physical or psychological means to ensure compliance with direction. The compliance may be voluntary or involuntary. Control of a subject can rarely be established without control of their environment.

Core splits- intentional traumatic splits created from the core personality. Core splits can be created from severe and psychologically threatening very early childhood trauma. This is done intentionally to create larger and more dissociated systems

Command Codes-these are irreversible commands, put in at the limbic level of programming. The first code always put in is the “halt “command, which stops the person in their tracks, and is the first code any new Programmer learns. This will stop the subject from assassinating their Programmer, if they have Delta or other assassin training in place.

Control Signs-which allow them to indicate via a code that they are in trouble

Councils (Illuminati)--The Illuminati have frequent meetings. Some of these meetings are organized to appear "acephalous" and "accidental" in their meetings, when in reality they are structured and planned. The Councils have gone by the following names: MJ-12, the Group, the Special Study Group, the Wise Men, the Operations Coordinating Board (OCB), 5412 Committee, 303 Committee, 40 Committee, PI-40 Committee, and Policy Planning Group (PCG). The Council of 3, Council of 5, Council of 7, Council of 9, The Grand Druid Council, The Committee of 300, and the Committee of 500 (known as Fortune 500). Many of the meetings are conclaves without formal names.

Colours - used symbolically to train MK babies in the pre-verbal stages of development. See individual colours for details.

Creative personal situation interpretation- The process of subtly acquiring enough information to deliver a believable explanation of an individual's personal situation such that it is consistent with a belief system, thus adding to credibility of an individual and swaying others towards their belief system. The motive may be money rather than recruiting a cult member.

Co-presence- two alters can come on top of each other at the front of the mind and hold the body together. This produces some strange behaviour in the subject as different alters synthesize their thoughts.

Creative history interpretation- The act of interpreting history in such a way that it is consistent with the belief system, thus adding to the credibility of a belief system.

Cross Programming - (for instance, a mother and a daughter team)

Cryptonyms- which are two-letter digraphs such as the "MK" of MK-ULTRA.

D

Daddy-master

Datum- a reference point or surface against which position measurements are made. Vertical datums are used to measure elevations or depths.

Dangle-The used word for luring a subject into a provocation. A dangle operation would be an operation to provoke a group or individual into a particular action.

Day - the everyday “front alters out” existence. The public face.

Debriefing-obtaining information by questioning a controlled and witting source who is normally a willing one.

Deep Cover Agent--A programmed subject who has been a long term sleeper agent.

Delta-This is a Greek letter shaped like a triangle which symbolizes change in calculus. Delta teams are 4 person assassination teams which usually are secret teams. Delta Forces is an elite unit that operates under the Joint Chiefs of Staff that is made up of highly trained total programmed subjects. Delta models are subjects whose sole purpose is assassination.

Deliverance ministry- Refers to the activity of cleansing a person of demons and evil spirits in order to address problems manifesting in their life as a result of the presence of said entities and the root causes of their authority to oppress the person.

Delta - used most obviously in the US delta force, this has to do with soldier like skills, such as establishing a communications centre, avoiding detection, escape artist skills, martial arts, armed combat, et cetera.

Disinformation Agent--This is a highly placed agent who passes disinformation to other governments.

Dissociative Identity Disorder- or DID different dissociative parts of a single brain view themselves as separate persons.

Dog - a pejorative term used to describe a male MK, having some ties to the Order, but not necessarily ones that would give him benefits. A dog would receive any combination of programming from alpha to zeta.

Dogfight – Two parts with Epsilon programming are made to fight for dominance.

Dollhouse - A symbol used to represent the compartmentalization of the Monarch subject

E

Eight - symbol of mind control. Turned on its side, the eight becomes an infinity symbol and represents the "thought loop" of a programmed subject that prevents resistance to the handlers.

Eliciting- obtaining information, without revealing intent or exceptional interest, through a verbal or written exchange with a person who may be willing or unwilling to provide what is sought and who may or may not be controlled.

Emerald - as in the Wizard of Oz, linked to family loyalty, sorcery, and spiritual achievement

Epsilon - a base-level obedience programme the individual is programmed to their primal components of food, shelter, and water. Its characteristics often change when paired with other types of programming.

Extra-familiar:- Adults who abuse non-related children. Children can be accessed at day care, schools, church, or through social groups

F

Family or Transgenerational- Adults, who were abused as children, in turn abuse and indoctrinate their own children.

Fear inoculation- The process of making people immune to attempts to change their attitudes by initially exposing them to the consequences (often fraudulently created consequences) of rejecting the initial belief system in favour of another.

Field subject, field operative, **field agent**- A subject who works in the field as opposed to one who works at the office or headquarters. A field subject can work alone or in a group but usually has a programmer who is in charge.

Fine Tuned- The child can function excellently at visualization, relaxation, concentration, projection, while in the alpha state and can work with their subconscious mind.

Fire Letters-represent fixed electromagnetic codes (patterns of sequentially arranged electromagnetic impulses) that can be arranged in many ways to form "words", or electromagnetic code patterns, that can potentially carry a wide variety of meaning when put together in specific ways.

Five - usually referring to the pentagram, assumed to be inverted (not upright), and referring to Lucifer

Flat State- a flat, non-thinking state. The brain quits thinking and withdraws into a state that it quits thinking except for what the programmers want it to think

Four - base-level animalistic call sign.

Four Faces- refers to pretexts used by agents to get interview.

Friend -- a user of subject/part approved by master

Function Codes- Programmers will place within the subject's systems codes as way to organize the

fragments that are related to the job they were trained to do. Often, several will be coded to link together to perform a task. These are usually a letter, such as a Greek alphabet letter, combined with a numeric sequence that corresponds to their place on the internal grid or landscape.
Funny Name- intelligence slang for a pseudonym

G

Gamma - used for disinformation purposes to disguise and mislead others as to the actual nature of the things at hand. Most front alters are gamma-type programming, and are therefore difficult to remove.
Gang stalking - a set of tactics used in counterintelligence operations involving the covert surveillance and harassment of a targeted individual.
Geomancies- used with Fire letters are the building blocks the God Mind uses as the processor of creation.
Ghost rider - a remote viewer
Goat - sacrificial MKs/disposables
Granny- a CIA asset used in the US which is not under their direct funding
Green - see Omega
Group think error- The tendency to accept or continue to accept a belief system due to the overall credibility of the members in a group. This is based on an erroneous faith that an entire group including those who you may trust implicitly cannot be deceived or wrong. This is the strongest influence on credibility of a belief system.

H

Half-life - MKs are supposed to be dead by their 30s or 40s.
Haptic technology- is a tactile feedback technology which takes advantage of the sense of touch by applying forces, vibrations, or motions to the subject.
Hot box – a small, hot room which, due to lack of ventilation, essentially functions as an oven
Hypnoamnesia- Temporary loss of memory due to a posthypnotic suggestion.
Hypnosis - Inducing a high state of suggestibility, often thinly disguised as relaxation or meditation.

I

Illuminati--The Illuminati are 13 elite bloodlines which have manoeuvred themselves into control over all countries. They lead double lives, one for society and a hidden one which is based on a Gnostic Luciferian philosophy which consists of blood rituals. Originally funded by the Rothschilds and run by Weishaupt, this was an attempt to infiltrate and disrupt the power structure through all the major social institutions during the 18th century. Today, the newer, revised definition now refers to the global elite and their agenda to build a transhumanist, eugenicist, and white supremacist society with a lowered and strictly controlled population.

J

K

K-lines-a habitual way of doing things

Kids - see goat

L

LCFLUTTER- Polygraph, sometimes supplemented by truth drugs: Sodium Amytal (amobarbital), Sodium Pentothal (thiopental),and Seconal (secobarbital) to induce regression in the subject.

Legend -The Intelligence term for the elaborate cover histories they give to programmed subjects to operate as an agent.

M

Malingering-the purposeful production of falsely or grossly exaggerated complaints with the goal of receiving a reward. One example is the case of Ganser syndrome, which is when a person tailors their answers to fake psychosis. This syndrome is also known as approximation, or nonsense syndrome.

May Day Book- exists for Illuminati and Intelligence subjects which allows them to call if they are about to be arrested. A telephone number is left open for just this purpose.

Mensa- The top surface of an altar. A southern constellation between Hydrus and Volans. An international society, membership of which is restricted to individuals whose intelligence test scores exceed those expected of 98 per cent of the population

Micronemes - Such things as a particular aroma, or a particular intonation for which it has no word, but for which it has a series of sensory clues.

Mind Control- The use of subliminal techniques to control a person’s actions, mind state or thoughts. Subliminal techniques may include the use of words or language in a variety of fashions, visual stimuli, a combination of different stimuli, the intentional use or misuse or deprivation of information, electronic stimuli techniques, such as brain wave machines and e-weapons, the deprivation of basic human needs, such as sleep and food, the use of emotions to manipulate thoughts (such as guilt or fear), hypnotic techniques or suggestions, rituals or role plays meant to induce suggestible states, the use of certain drugs, other techniques to induce a meditative mind state (like meditation) or specific movements or motions (like spinning). A combination of these techniques may be used.

Mind machine -A device that uses pulsing rhythmic sound and/or flashing light to alter the frequency of the user's brainwaves.

Monarch Programming--A project carried out by secret elements of the U.S. government and intelligence groups a type of trauma-based mind-control.

Multiplexing- A technique where one signal or code will carry several messages simultaneously.

N

NETS- A group of subjects (agents) working under one handler

Neuralgias- A condition that causes brief episodes of stabbing pain between the eyes and ears.

Neuro-linguistic programming (NLP)- Encompasses the three most influential components involved in producing human experience: neurology, language and programming. The neurological system regulates how our bodies function, language determines how we interface and communicate with other people and our programming determines the kinds of models of the world we create. Neuro-Linguistic Programming describes the fundamental dynamics between mind (neuro) and language (linguistic) and how their interplay affects our body and behaviour (programming).

The Network- It includes the anarchy level of the Illuminati, the various criminal syndicates, the various fraternities, new age institutions and people in power all over the globe. It is held together by fear, blackmail, and common bonds of lust and greed. The network includes atheists, self-made Satanists, opportunists, and many programmed subjects.

New World Order-- The global design for a One-World-Government One-World-Dictator and its constituents. Insiders call themselves the "network" and "the neighbourhood".

Night - the occult world, in contrast to the everyday world, where rituals, programming, and missions take place. Night alters are back, hidden alters.

Notional Agent --A fictitious non-existent "agent" which is created with a real-looking identity to mislead for the sake of an intelligence operation.

O

O - Slang for office, used by gang stalkers

Octo- - see eight

ODO- On-Duty Officer, or officer-on-duty

ODYOKE- Federal government of the United States

Old - the answer given by a mason when asked his or her age

Omicron programming—relates to programming of subjects for the Combination (between Intelligence- the Mafia and Government.)

Omega - self-destruct programming, including suicide, usually t resulting in drug abuse or general recklessness**.**

One-way amnesia- where A alter knows B alter, but B doesn’t know A. This can be accomplished by setting in one-way mirrors.

Ouraboros- a snake swallowing its tail. A ring with Ouraboros signifies rank in the illuminate.

O**ur boy** - a gang stalking target

Our friend - a gang stalking target

Orange - protects the system by keeping all of the elements in check; a form of paralysis

Overwrite -is a new identity or personality

P

Polyfragmentation -The term comes from the root poly, meaning many, and fragments. In complex polyfragmenatation, the subject will have not only and alter system, but hundreds or even thousands of fragments, isolated parts of their mind created to do a job, and do it well and unthinkingly. The further away from core beliefs, the greater usually the dissociation and fragmentation that must occur.

Pop - Metaphor of bubble gum. The bubble gets larger and larger until it finally bursts, representing the sacrifice.

Posthypnotic Command- Same as Posthypnotic Suggestion. This term "Command" is more commonly used when the hypnosis is forcibly given to the subject and when the subject's will has been broken down though the use of REM Sleep Deprivation and Suggestibility Index increasing drugs like CNS and Cardiovascular Stimulants. The exposure to extreme REM deprivation and select chemical stimulants cause the subject to have no ability to resist the "Suggestion" any longer thereby making it a "Command".

Posthypnotic Suggestion- A subconscious suggestion or command resident and potentially active in the subject following a hypnotic trance or period of direct access to the subconscious mind.

Posthypnotic Suggestibility Index- An index or rating of a subject's susceptibility and sensitivity to hypnosis.

Provocation Agent--An agent sent in to provoke and destabilize the target group to do foolish things

Prism - a device for splitting white light into its component colours.

Puppet Master -name of master for Marionette or Puppet program

Q

R

R – Gang stalker code for residence

Rainbow - the division between the everyday world and the occult world. Under the rainbow is normal life, over it is occult. The actual effect, which is white light split through refraction into the band of its component colours, represents the MPD state of an MK.

Rapport-is the mental and physiological state that a human enters when they let their social guard down, and it is generally achieved when a person comes to the conclusion that the person they're talking to is *like them.*

Recognition **signal**-allows two people to make contact

Recovered memory-memories of traumatic events that are now remembered but had previously been 'forgotten' or unknown, sometimes referred to a traumatic amnesia.

REM DEP-Abbreviation for REM sleep Deprivation or REM Deprivation. A subject deprived from REM Sleep has multiple symptoms i.e. reduced protein synthesis, black circles around eyes, loss of short term memory, confusion, impulsiveness, anger, frustration, diminished self-esteem, increased suggestibility, reduced productivity, apathy, and depression. Long term REM deprivation results in death.

Repetitive Music-Played with a beat close to the human heart 45 to 72 beats per minute. Used during programming sessions as the music helps in relaxation and anchoring.

Ritual Abuse-methodical abuse, often using indoctrination, aimed at breaking the will of another human being. This involves repeated abuse over an extended period of time. The physical abuse is severe, sometimes including torture and killing. The sexual abuse is usually painful, humiliating, intended as a means of gaining dominance over the subject.

Room "Feel" - The way a room feels is essential to hypnotizing unknowing subjects. The room will have special lighting, florescent lights are best because they aren't too dim, but aren't too harsh. Also, Room Temp usually cooler than normal room temperature.

S

Satanic Ritual Abuse (SRA)--This is used to represent all categories of spiritual ritual abuse which would be inspired by the desire to rob, kill, or destroy something worthwhile in a person, especially their freedom of thought. Many groups carrying out SRA do not mention Satan by that name. They may make Pacts to Baphomet, and call upon Rex Mundi, or Belair, or Lucifer, or the Father of Light, God, or Kali or even "Jesus" or "Jesus Christ".

Script – The program placed into a subject to build internal worlds.

Script (2) - A carefully constructed series of words arranged in the form of a posthypnotic suggestion.

Self Programming- different personalities carry out system programming outside the environment of the Cult.

Selective vision- The tendency to acknowledge only those things that are consistent with one's belief system. Anything that contradicts or conflicts with the belief system are irrationally interpreted such that they are consistent with the belief system or entirely disregarded.

Service Facsimiles- computations that you use to make oneself right and others wrong.

Silver arrow - psychic attacks, usually directed at the circulatory system. Seldom lethal, but often debilitating.

Silver surfer - a thought-killer.

Six - black alter call sign, denotes destructive activity

Sleepers-Subjects who are placed in organizations unaware for a convert purpose.

Somnambulatory State- An abnormal condition of sleep in which motor acts (like walking, running) are performed. This state is typically achieved and a prerequisite to traditional hypnosis.

Spider – Placed inside the subject during spin programming.

Spinning - A type of trauma where the subject is spun at a high rate of speed to cause confusion, nausea, and blackouts. Spinning also causes a rapid switching of alters which can cause unconsciousness if done fast and long enough.

Spoon Feeder Agent--Someone who leaks out legitimate information, this is often done to build up a person's credentials (bona fides). The legitimate information is dusted with a measure of disinformation to mislead. Generally spoon-feeders increase their percentage of disinformation once they gain respectability

Starlight Consciousness- Starlight consciousness is the other way of knowing that which belongs to the right hemisphere and it allows the subject to make contact with the "DIVINE WITHIN". The Divine within the subject is actually the generational spirits, which are placed in during the Moon Child ceremonies

Starlight level-The programmers are using the subject's abilities with the 5 acute senses to develop the 6th sense which is the ability to work in the Starlight consciousness. This includes mental activity such as psychic and astral level. It takes specialized training for Programmers to access this level.

Subliminal Implant- A posthypnotic suggestion successfully delivered to the subject's subconscious mind.

Switching--This is when one part (fragment) of the mind takes over from another, or when one alter personality (or alter fragment) takes the body from the alter which is holding the body. Switching can occur via the Programmers' codes for calling up alters, or by external or internal stimuli that trigger an alter to come out. Switching will usually cause at least a flicker of the eyes, and for outside observers, who know the different personalities, they will observe another personality take the body.

System-- Used to refer to a subject of total mind control because the subject consists of alters, programming, implant(s), internal computers, and numerous dissociative states which function together as a system.

System demons- exist as Mind Consciousness System Designs within Humans. It is these Systems that are programmed within subjects and directs their actions, thoughts and experiences. Some Designs programmed into from DNA. Other Designs we programmed into oneself from childhood, through participating in the system designs until they become fully manifested within the physical. Eventually as the systems take over – the subject will find themselves becoming possessed into the System, as it takes over and directs you.

T

Templates -Young internal subject alters who may be splits from core splits, as the basis for the programming.

Theta - psychic warrior programming, intended for anything paranormal. Usually includes remote viewing, telepathy, psycohtronic attacks, and empathy. Some subjects also indicate other abilities like precognition or remote influencing.

Theta Psychic warfare- Theta programming is a psychic warfare branch of Monarch programming commonly called ESPionage; Military terminology is 'psychotronics'. Theta programming is the synthesis of occult practices/state of the art science.

Three - trinity, usually the “good side” of the masons. Refers sometimes to front alters of an MK

Trance logic- Are those ploys and strategies to maintain a dissociative or hypnotic hallucination.

Transceivers (NSA)- Nearly microscopic electronic surveillance devices that collect and transmit encrypted audio, colour video, and location coordinates from a subject and sent to NSA Satellites that in turn forward it to NSA central intelligence operations. The devices also receive encrypted audio scripts from NSA central intelligence operations through the satellites and deliver it to a subject in the form of a subliminal posthypnotic suggestion. These devices are approximately the size of the head of a straight pin and can be concealed in houses, offices, automobiles, planes, and other places.

Trauma Bonding- One person intermittently harasses, beats, threatens, abuses, intimidates uses fear, excitement, sexual feelings, and sexual physiology to create strong emotional ties to develop.

Traumatology-This refers to the study, development and application of psychological impact of extreme events.

Trusted Contact-A person, who is neither a controller, nor a slave, nor asset, but who consciously advances the desires of the controller.

Tree - an MK

Twinning -Person, doll or puppet or that will be fixed to look exactly alike.

Two - duality, an often referred to indication of Masonic involvement. Refers to back alters of an MK

U

V

Vesper - Lucifer, the morning star

Vibrato - is the tremulous effect imparted in some vocal or instrumental music, and the cycle-per-second range causes people to go into an altered state of consciousness.

Virtual reality -a computer-simulated environment that can simulate physical presence in places in the real world or imagined worlds.
Voice Roll Technique- A "voice roll" is a patterned, paced style used by hypnotists when inducing a trance. A voice roll can sound as if the speaker were talking to the beat of a metronome or it may sound as though they were emphasizing every word in a monotonous, patterned style. The words will usually be delivered at the rate of 45 to 60 beats per minute, maximizing the hypnotic effect.

W

Walrus - masonry
White - high level, presidential
White Rabbit – master
Woodcutter - a reference to the Grimm's Fairy Tales, the woodcutter leaves his children in the forest in an attempt to dispose of them at the request of his despicable wife

X

Y

Z

ZETA- (snuff films) Zeta is the sixth letter, and its ancient meaning was a sacrifice.

Chasing Phantoms

Personal experiences, observations and theories into the abduction and mind control phenomena

Carissa Conti
© 2006-2013

Dedicated to Tom

Table of Contents

Introduction

Part I – Targeted Groups, Abductions and Mind Control 1

Targeted Groups
- Alien Abductees/"Contactees" 2
- MILABS 11
- Ritual/Satanic Abuse 27
- Gang Stalking and Targeted Individuals 28

"The Experiment"? 32

Abductions
- Detecting abductions 38
  - Foreshadowing 38
  - After effects 40
- Methods for taking the abductee 42

Mind Control Programming
- Trauma-based mind control 45
  - Soul fragmentation 49
- Blocking and erasing memories 50
- Screen memories 55
- Overzealous programming attempts 56
- Virtual reality/dreamtime programming 58
- Implants 60
- Wave beaming harassment 62

The world underground 64

Part II – My Own Experiences 69

- Actual memories/flashes 71
- Overt indicators as a child 75
- Overt indicators as an adult 83
- Suspicious stuff as an adult 97
- "Sidetrack circus diversion" harassment 108
- The "Dreams" 129
- Summary 146

Part III – Expanded Insights 161

Fear in relation to the abduction experience 161
Saving yourself 179
Connecting to your higher powers 179
Revoking illegal metaphysical contracts 181
"Karma," free will free-for-alls, and incarnational happenings 182
Thwarting psychic attacks 187
Dreamtime Manipulation 191
Negative entities interfering with awakening MILABS.. 191
Dream hijacking 196
Aggression 197
Sexual 198
"End times" programming 204
Physical and spiritual isolation of targets 210
Isolation and relationship interference 210
"There is no God"/severing spiritual connections 214
Sabotaging programming commands and manipulated life situations 217
Urges to move to certain locations 220
Manipulated job situations 222
Discovering Abduction Schedules 228
Residual talents and abilities 232
Untangling disinformation 240
Multiple personalities vs. multiple "personas" 246
The Hyperdimensional and paranormal phenomenon 254
Number sightings 254
Ear tones 258
Real vs. artificial synchronicities 264
The paranormal 267
The "Chosen Ones" 270
Alien souls incarnating on a mission, or mind control? . 270
Abduct me and make me feel special! 275
Just say no to "Stockholm Syndrome" 277
Savoring the attention 278
The Big Boys with their Alien Toys 280
End Notes 284

Appendix 289
Recommended Reading 325

Introduction

When it comes to abduction research it's difficult to get a clear handle on what exactly is being done, to whom, how, and most importantly…why. We're chasing after phantoms most of the time, because "they", be it "aliens" or military black ops, are very good at wiping out nearly all memories, planting red herrings and screen memories, and covering their tracks with minimal evidence left behind.

While working on this write up it got to the point where I was about to abandon the endeavor completely…because of the inexplicable nature of it all, and the fact that I can never seem to get **concrete answers** to anything. It began to seem futile. Having to untangle valid information from what seems like so much disinformation, and encountering all the "he said/she said" finger pointing, accusations, and counter-accusations within the material can make your head spin. And when you research long enough, you may find that inevitably, you start engaging in some wacky logic - what I call "double reverse psychology," for lack of a better way to put it. ;) We know what reverse psychology is – double reverse is when somebody becomes so suspicious of everything they read that they reverse the logic of what's being presented through multiple unravelings to try to get to the bottom of what's going on. I was given some helpful insight though about all of this, which I'll relay here: The fact that there is so much disinformation out there ultimately, points to the information. So keep plugging away and trying to find answers was the conclusion. Don't give up.

Another issue that I've come across while researching abductions and mind control is that there tends to be the same, years-old, and most likely very outdated material being circulated to the mass public. I don't claim to definitively know what's going on, but what I can surmise is this: If it's been declassified and released for the public to know about, then it's outdated, which is exactly *why* it has been released. Because they don't care if you know. It may have been true and accurate…decades ago. But it's most likely that "they" are not playing by the same rules anymore, and methods of operation would have definitely changed since many of those materials were originally written.

So to say we're all chasing phantoms is putting it mildly. Taking into account the outdated information, the deliberate disinformation, screen memories designed to disguise, random fragments and pieces that don't make sense, and erased memories so there's nothing left at all, then what we have is a whole lot of confusion. But despite "double reverse wacky psychology", I still believe there is something very real happening here, and it's not all smoke and mirrors designed to get us chasing our tails. Some of what the higher realm entities and military factions are doing to humans is merely batting us around the same way a cat will toy with its prey, which I outline in more detail throughout this book; but other times they're doing something very serious and real. So it's imperative that we learn how to differentiate between the two types of activities, discover what exactly they're doing to us as individuals (because it does vary from person to person) then take measures to head things off, and stop as much of it as we can.

Now, a note to the reader: This write up is geared specifically towards those who already know that they're the target of alien/military abductions and mind control and are looking for some additional insight and tactical advise on it all, rather than trying to inform those who have never read anything about these topics or to convince skeptics. So you may notice the lack of thorough background explanation on the history of military/alien abductions and mind control. There are so many other materials out there that amply cover the basics, including government documents, that I didn't want to re-tread over old ground and bore readers by going over material that they're most likely already aware of.

Also, some authors make the mistake of writing on the defensive, preemptively addressing the skeptical and inflammatory comments that they imagine the readers to be thinking as they read along. You won't see that here, because it's a big pet peeve of mine. It's a disservice to those reading the material who already know it to be true, and a waste of time, paper and words. The biggest chunk of the audience reading any conspiracy or paranormal book are going to be people who already believe in it. That's why they picked the book up in the first place. Skeptical critics who can't relate usually aren't going to be reading it anyway, so there's no need to worry about them.

The focus of this write up evolved over time, eventually becoming what primarily amounts to insights and tactical tips gleaned from my own experiences, as well as an attempt to inject a fresh perspective into the works concerning certain topics. This write up is very personal you could say, definitely not presented in a detached, stuffy, academic manner, being that I relay stories and experiences from myself and people who have been close to me over the years. When sharing personal experiences and insights, down-to-earth accessibility is the key. Serious and stuffy just wouldn't work. All of which means you're going to see some of my informal writing style mixed throughout, including email-style smilies and laughing faces to indicate a humorous tone that words sometimes can't convey. ;)

So with that in mind, sit back and enjoy the ride…

Part I
Targeted Groups, Abductions and Mind Control

When I first wrote this book back in 2006 I didn't have knowledge of subjects such as "targeted individuals," "gang stalking" and the like. The only thing I was familiar with at that time were the so-called aliens, and then MILABS, which stands for "military abductions," and the mind control that goes with it. So the focus of the book relied on the term MILABS, since that was the closest thing I could find out there that matched my situation in any way, although I was never fully comfortable using the label. It wasn't like I paraded around declaring myself a "MILAB." I know that isn't entirely accurate, but again, nothing else out there even remotely came close to what I'd been experiencing. So for the time being, "MILAB" was it. All labels are limiting however, as they seek to define us and box us into narrow categories. It insinuates that one has arrived at a definitive conclusion, all further research is done, and one can now rest comfortably and just stagnate. Well for me, research and learning is never done, there's always more to the story going on, and more to learn. And learn I have in the past few years. At this point I'd like to think that I've put more of the pieces of the puzzle together, and hence, this revised version of "Chasing Phantoms." The overall focus of the book is still the same, however, Part I has been overhauled to include new information and insights that have come my way, along with some sections being rearranged. Part II has a few more experiences added, and in Part III some sections have also been rearranged/grouped together, along with new material added. A modified version of the Appendix that used to be in original versions of the book is now back in, and the Recommended Reading section has also been updated. One of the many benefits of self-publishing - you own the rights to your work and can change it whenever the need arises. ;)

In the past few years I've become aware of other groups of people out in the world who consider themselves to be targeted, but who don't label themselves as "MILABS," who maybe have never even heard of the term, and/or who definitely don't think of themselves as being "abductees" of any kind. They just feel that they're being harassed and honed in on in their daily lives. But as I wrote in the original version of this book, the term "abduction" tends to throw a lot of people off. Thanks to decades of UFO lore, the term now has a dramatic, grandiose connotation associated with aliens. I've met people who exhibited telltale suspicious indicators of having been tinkered with via military/government experimentation and programming, but who have shied away from pursuing the possibility or were skeptical of it all because the terms "abduction" and "abductee" sound so extreme. These terms make it seem that a person is in regular ongoing contact with space aliens, being floated out of their room onto UFOs, as commonly portrayed in mainstream literature. This is definitely not the case for many people…and yet there's no doubt that they have funny things happening to them. Anomalous dreams, paranormal happenings, strange synchronicities, markings on the body that weren't there when they went to bed, odd family situations, noteworthy psychic/intellectual talents and abilities that sets them apart from the average person, as well as all around general targeting/monitoring and life interference. *Something's* going on with them, but the term "abduction" as it is commonly understood doesn't really fit their (sometimes) more subtle situation. As a result, these people may wind up dismissing things and walking away, which is unfortunate because often times there is a story going on. Or in the case of those who call themselves "targeted individuals," they do recognize that something is going on, but they don't believe they're being taken by anything, although they very well might be.

So with that in mind, let's review the various targeted groups and situations that one will encounter within the research…

Targeted Groups

Alien abductees/contactees

This is one of the most commonly known aspects of woo-woo lore over the past 40 years, and which could even be labeled a national obsession considering the number of books, articles, movies, television shows, websites and yearly conferences held around the world for the subject over the past few decades. It involves the idea of non-human intelligences from other worlds making contact with humans. "Making contact" in the stereotypical way often involves sightings of UFOs as well as the UFOs interacting with humans in some way, maybe even landing, or beaming people up into them, known as "abductions." Abductions may also come in the form of visitation by these non-human intelligences, and have been reported to involve everything from medical procedures and experimentation, rapes, and/or the abductee being given information, or shown various things. The beings reported in such activities are wide and varied, but some of the main physical-based ones you'll typically hear about include the infamous "Grays" popularized by Whitley Streiber, as well as Reptilians, Mantids and the blond, blue eyed human looking "Nordics." There are also the non-human intelligences supposedly making contact with humans via channeling, be it trance channeling, ouija boards, and so on, passing along general information, wisdom and insights, or even predictions of future events for the personal lives of the contactees or humanity as a whole….whether truth or deception.

My research has led me to conclude that if there are indeed non-human intelligences running around, taking and probing people, then not all of them are actually flying here in spaceships from other planets as is commonly believed. Many are already here and have probably been here for quite some time. They can be of varying physicality (in the case of the infamous "Grays"), and as with the so-called Reptilians in particular they've probably been here for eons. So in that sense they're not **extra-**terrestrial. They're **sub**-terrestrial**,** and/or **interdimensional.**

Something I delve more into later on in this book is the idea of the underground/underwater worlds, and realms that co-exist alongside ours but at different dimensional frequencies. What we think we know of "reality" is actually a limited frequency spectrum involving a narrow physical band on the Earth's surface that spans only several miles from the ground up. It doesn't take into effect what's going on under our feet, of which we never see, nor what's under the oceans and in the mountains……let alone other dimensional frequencies. Humans have their narrow band of 3rd density surface world environmental niche, and that's fine, but problems arise when people become complacent, or even arrogant, believing that's all there could possibly be….merely because their lifetime of system indoctrination and thought control has never taught them otherwise. This particular realization is in my opinion the next step up in the awareness of the nature of these oft-reported non-human intelligences. In fact I prefer the term "non-human intelligences" to "aliens" because it allows for this aspect of things. "Aliens" has the connotation of interplanetary space travelers, and limits the definition of the word.

There's also the idea that these beings are not aliens, but are in fact living amongst us, right here in this realm, and walking around in society only barely disguised. The late Mac Tonnes, author of "The Cryptoterrestrials," gets into this concept.

Reasons for interdimensional targeting

Targeting, be it from aliens, interdimensionals, hybrids or what not is a huge subject, and I'm not able to dissect it in-depth due to space constraints. But generally speaking, the targeting of Man has probably been going on for eons. However there seems to have been a surge of….interactions you could call them, with non-human intelligences increasing since the mid-20th century. For those who live in the United States there is a conspiracy theory that says the U.S. government sold out the American people back in the 1940s to these non-human intelligences in exchange for power and technology. They basically gave permission to these beings to abduct members of the American civilian population, with the understanding that the government would get something in return from it, and that they would be in the loop as to who was being taken. Whether this is true or not, I don't know, but it does seem a little strange that there are a disproportionate number of "Gray alien" abductions happening in the United States versus other areas of the world.

The flip side of this argument postulates that the reason so many people in the U.S. think they are being taken by "Grays" is because the U.S. military/government itself is instigating all these abductions, and either using fabricated Gray screen memories, or convincing drugged and hypnotized targets to view a robot – or even worse, a costumed human – as the real deal. Hence, why other countries don't have this problem. While it's apparently true that these human elements do hide behind fake imagery of "aliens" to cover their tracks, something I get more into later on, I personally don't believe this is what's occurring in all situations, as we're talking thousands of abduction claims. So that explanation seems a little too simplistic, not taking into account the complexity and size of the operation, which I doubt the government could pull off. But, you never know I suppose. In fact in Part II of this book I mention a "dream" I once had involving a Gray that turned out to be nothing more than a robot of sorts, leathery skin over a very hard, most likely metallic skeleton, with a computer voice whose thought processes were merely a sensory analysis of its environment. And I also discuss the fact that I have experienced an attempt at the "Grays screen memory" that was quite overzealous. Yet despite these situations I still think that there is something to the whole idea of Gray interdimensionals, only because their imagery pre-dates the 20th century, and I have an anecdote that also confirms this, which I'll get into in a moment. So my theory is that in the case of screen memories, the government is using already existing and known imagery of these interdimensionals to cover their own tracks, something I delve more into later on in the book. (In addition I happen to have a coworker whose father was career Air Force, whom she claims actually saw a dead Gray body sometime in either the late 60s to early 70s, as I recently just learned. Since her father recently passed away she probably felt it was okay to talk about this classified experience he had in the military. I about fell out of my chair when she told me this. She was inspired to talk about it after I showed her a YouTube video of the April 14, 2010 Midwest fireball. After viewing the video she said there was no way that's a "meteor," because of the way it moved, and that it had to be a UFO of some sort. **http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=jIEKLf8WcZE&NR=1** One thing led to another, and next thing you know she's revealing what her dad saw years ago in the Air Force. She was one of the most unlikely of sources to have such a story, for reasons I won't get into, and she had no idea, and still doesn't, about my side work with my website and book since I'm adamant about keeping my personal life separate from work. Though she does know that I'm open to the weird stuff and have alternative viewpoints on pretty much everything, which was probably why she knew it was okay to say this to me in the first place. But for me, it's additional confirmation from a personal source confirming the existence of actual physical "Gray" bodies, whatever these things are.)

So that's the broad possibility for why, in the United States anyway, targeting of the population may be happening to such an increased degree. On the individual level are there certain types of people that these "aliens"/interdimensionals are interested in? Possibly. Various theories for individuals being singled out include:

- **An individual's energy frequency/psychic inclinations**. Many people, due to who they are frequency-wise/soul-wise, may gain the attention of "stuff," for good or for bad. And author John Keel in his book "Operation Trojan Horse" discussed the fact that many contactees are people who tend towards psychic abilities, which is probably the reason they're having these experiences in the first place. These interdimensionals seem to hone in on that.

  Relating to this is a theory concerning how, when certain people start waking up and going in a direction that poses a threat to "stuff," they may then receive the smack down you could call it, to try to keep them in line. "Smack down" can take many forms, including negative things being done to a target during abductions, mind control programming, "frequency envelopes" being put around them that cause disruption in their everyday lives, health disruption, and so on.

- **Requesting to be abducted.** The 35+ year alien and UFO campaign in the media has done an excellent job of indoctrinating the public with the images of aliens as something cool. There are New Age/pro-alien authors and researchers pushing the idea that these beings (whatever they are) are good, so therefore invite them into our lives to abduct us. And their readers often oblige and follow along. Big mistake.

- **"You agreed to it."** Another oft-reported reason that one will hear, usually in alien material with a positive and/or New Age spin to it, is that we ourselves somehow agreed to abductions/targeting prior to incarnating here. While I don't profess to know everything, I will say that I seriously have my doubts about this. Being that pretty much nobody can remember anything about their time prior to incarnating without the help of hypnosis, how would anybody know? It just seems to me that this is a disinformation ploy to trick the naïve, nice, gullible types who can be easily duped. This is a huge subject it itself, involving among other things, the New Age disinformation campaign that's been in full swing since at least the 1970s to put a love 'n light spiritual spin on the subject of Gray aliens. ("**government sponsored damage control"** is more like it….)

- **Genetics/family line.** "Stuff" also seems to have a keen interest in particular **genetic bloodlines**. As noted by the late alien/MILAB researcher Karla Turner, in her book "Taken," particular racial nationalities pop up again and again in abductee profiles. Irish/Celtic, and Native American are two biggies, possibly for their natural dissociative/trance and psychic capabilities and ability to slip into

> other realms. Back in the days of the Romans, the Celts would go into battle wearing nothing but silt/clay in their hair and blue dye on their bodies called woad, and gold neck torques, whipped up into a crazed, trance-like frenzy, totally befuddling their enemies. It was as if they temporarily slipped out of 3rd density and "went someplace else." And the Native Americans as a whole can also be very much the warriors, and known for their shamanic, psychic, trance-state abilities. So something maybe has a big interest in these particular genetic bloodlines.

(For myself, I'm English, Irish, Scottish, Hungarian and Italian. I've been independently told by two intuitive women that there's something going on with regards to my bloodline. One of them specifically noted that there was a "convergence" of bloodlines with me. I have an idea of what both women were talking about, with my mom's Scotch Irish, auburn haired, fair and freckled skin genetics, complete with Rh- blood that was changed over to + via a complete blood transfusion right after she was born back in 1953, and either my dad's Hungarian line, or his English line, which was pedigreed way back when. Don't imagine there's much of anything going on with the Italian line, but you never know.)

Originally I had been tossing around a theory that every (souled, real) person out there is taken at some point during their childhood and tagged in some way (implanted), then released. Everybody. In the same way that a farmer monitors and controls its herd, the negs and interdimensionals are monitoring and attempting to control us. But then I realized that might be thinking too human, because an entity who can pass through walls and who bounces back and forth between this realm and others at will is an entity with the technological capability, or innate ability, to scan the population's frequencies for any sign of a disturbance. So this means at best, they're probably relying on **etheric implants** and etheric scanning to track the population. (In fact there's a book that I reference later on that gets into this specific subject.) So at the bare minimum the entire population is monitored and "managed" in my opinion, though the how's of it all is not definitively known or understood.

When you stop and really think about it, how would a group of aliens from across the galaxy figure out who's who on this planet to even know who to abduct? I realize that I'm just little old human me, lacking the super sophisticated intelligence that an advanced race might have, but still…. A race of beings flies all the way here (or zips through a wormhole, or shortcuts through a fold in space time, whatever, take your pick) and immediately starts honing in on certain humans, who also happen to be completely genetically incompatible with them, but not only that….they inherently know which ones to hone in on? How? Research has shown that there seems to be patterns towards who they're targeting (certain racial demographs/bloodlines, people with psychic abilities, etc.), which is where the foundation for this questioning comes from. But that level of knowing who to hone in on wouldn't make much sense for recent space alien strangers. Seems to make more sense for beings that have existed alongside us for eons, and therefore are already *well* versed in who's who and what's what on this planet.

Another big reason that I've come across for why the Grays are targeting the population says that the Grays are actually us in the future, after humanity has had to move underground for countless generations, and after "breeding out" emotions and getting rid of sex/reproduction, because you know, those things just make life so complicated. (I don't even know if there's an explanation offered for **why they have no internal digestion system, and a need to absorb blood and fluids through their skin.** *hmmmmmm.* O.o) But see, now they're dying out, and so they've been traveling back in time to abduct their past selves – us - taking our genetic material in order to fix themselves, because apparently they've gone horribly wrong. (to the point of you know, **not even being human anymore**. cough.) People are free to believe what they will, but this is a flat out manipulative lie in my opinion, designed to target newbies and naïve types. You get people to relate and sympathize with them so they're more willing to go along with things and give themselves up. The **"we are you, and you are us" angle** seems to be a big tactic that's employed. I've come across variations of it in my own experiences, as readers will see later on in this book.

So what are they here for then? Are they here to "usher us into a new age of love and light!" as the New Agers are so fond of saying? Are they here to take us over? Is there something that either we or the planet have that they want? Even after all these years of research, where I've encountered everything from abduction exams, to the claims of a hybrid breeding program, instilling programming deep into targets' subconscious minds and giving them Apocalyptic visions of the future, their penchant to supposedly fly around in strange aircraft, materializing in people's homes and making guest appearances in underground bases, their telepathic abilities and the both physical and non-physical nature of their bodies, people's claims that their large black eyes are merely coverings for regular reptilian-like eyes underneath and how they're just cybergenetic organisms, to the way that people, including the father of my coworker, have claimed to see dead alien bodies in military installations, as well as repeated claims of "Grays" just being screen memories and drug/hypnosis induced programming…..and on and on….I still can't come up with my own definitive conclusion as to what's really going on and what they want. It's a lot of seemingly contradictory information that doesn't appear to fit together at first glance. The only thing I am willing to tentatively conclude is that these beings (the real ones, not the screen memories and government tricks to cover their own tracks…) come from another realm as already mentioned, not a planet, and that they possess variable physicality. They can project themselves into this realm, and when they do, they become physical. And they may need cattle – or even human – parts and fluids to sustain themselves when in the physical state. (And that's just as far as the Grays are concerned. There are apparently many other beings here at this time as people's various firsthand accounts suggest.) It ties together some of these seemingly contradictory reports.

My conclusion is that whatever is going on with all of this, it's not positive. Since most people have no idea what they're dealing with, and because they don't have all the information, then in my opinion it's best to play it safe and not make the potential mistake of inviting these things in. It's a point I reiterate in other areas of this book, because it can't be emphasized enough. In my "Recommended Reading" section I give some good links to look into for more on this perspective (in particular see Montalk's "Discerning Alien Disinformation" and John Keel's "Operation Trojan Horse") and why it may be the more accurate viewpoint, versus what the New Age (and most of the mainstream UFO/alien gurus) have been trying to convince people, whether naively, or due to purposeful disinformation. The New Age is so fond of claiming that these outside intelligences are coming here (from other planets no less) because of *our* personal evolution, but this to me just shows the New Age's general tendency towards delusional self importance. As I've written on my website, so many love 'n light New Agers seem to be upper middle class, or outright upper class level people in rich Westernized nations with very cushy, limited, sheltered lives and waaay too much time on their hands. For that reason I don't put much credence in their interpretation of events. :/

The other thing to keep in mind too is that Grays in particular are completely overexposed in abduction/alien/UFO lore, at the expense of other types of beings. Is this by design? Keep everybody's focus endlessly diverted way over there on "the Grays!" who we're told are space aliens flying here from Zeta Reticuli, this way nobody is looking around at other possibilities? In Part II there's an anecdote called "Gray Overlay?" that took place in Portland, Oregon, where it seemed that something (that took the form of a "Gray" according to my brother who witnessed it) started to try to take me over/overlay me while I was laying down in a relaxed state. I could feel this happening, so I don't doubt what he claimed to see. That doesn't sound much like "space aliens" to me. More like interdimensional Neg entity of some sort.

Something that comes up time and again in the research is the idea of "humans as energy food source" for beings in other realms (Robert Monroe termed this energy "loosh") as well as humans serving as a literal physical food source. The epidemic of missing people worldwide, which we apparently hear nothing about in the mainstream media, supposedly ties into this as does the phenomenon of cattle mutilations. Possibly cattle parts have to suffice when human parts are not available. So whatever these things are, this has to be considered as a possibility for what these things really are and where their true motivations lie. Even though I'm still open to the idea of interplanetary space visitors there's too much research showing that these things are a lot more local, with less lofty ideals, and people really don't understand what they're dealing with when it comes to trying to channel them, or when they've found themselves on the receiving end of targeting by these beings. I've been there in my own way, which I'll get into later on in this book, so I don't say that in a holier-than-thou way, I say it because I relate from first hand experience.

MILABS

MILABS, the abbreviation for "military abductions," is a term coined by Dr. Helmut Lammer and is the title of his book by the same name. It involves civilians being tailed, harassed, abducted, interrogated and even implanted and programmed by government/military spooks following on the heels of their alien abductions. The accepted logic within abduction lore being that the military wants to learn as much as possible about the alien presence by abducting and tracking the same people the aliens are.

However, it seems that many people have far more subtle situations happening to them in their lives, so that particular grandiose definition of MILABS wouldn't necessarily be accurate for them. For that reason **I've expanded my usage of the term**. There are the military personnel and possibly even their offspring and spouses who are being taken and used for mind control programs and various side projects, unknown to them, and probably completely unrelated to anything having to do with aliens. **This is something not discussed at all in the Lammers' "MILABS" book, and yet it's one of the more important keys to the puzzle as far as I'm concerned.** I will be returning to this point later on. Then there are also the people who claim to have been taken by human military/government agencies and brought to either above or below ground bases where they witnessed military personnel working in cahoots with various types of non-human beings - Reptilians, Grays, Amphibians, etc.; a situation where the military is already well aware and quite knowledgeable about the non-human presence and isn't needing to take people in order to "learn something about them." So for me personally I have expanded my definition of MILABs to include **any situation that involves the human military/government taking, experimenting on and programming other humans, whether military personnel and their family, or civilians; and whether they're at odds with aliens, or working right along with them.** Any situation where there seems to be a military/government agency connection involved, period. And that's how I'll be defining and using the term for this book.

Causes for MILAB targeting

So how does one find themselves the unwitting target of military/government black ops abductions and/or experimentation? According to research, it can arise from several possible avenues:

1. Being in the government/military, either in the past or present;
2. Having indirect ties to the government/military **through a parent or spouse**;
3. Society's throwaway kids in jails and juvees and on the street; possibly incarcerated adults, as well and those in mental institutions;
4. And as already mentioned, being abducted by "something else", i.e., so-called aliens, which in turn generates interest from various military factions.

And in doing the research, it seems that MILABs targets are being used for:

1. **PSI work. Remote viewing, psychic warfare and psychic experimentation,** including telepathy, telekinesis, astral travel, etc.
2. **Technological experimentation**. Implants, microwave signals, cloaking devises, holographic reality, etc. "Voices in the head", remote thought influencing, what can they get people to believe, how can society as a whole be influenced to go down certain paths.
3. **Hallucinogenic mind control experimentation. (Note: Probably more of an interest back in the 1950s-70s than present day.)** Testing the effects and potentials of particular drugs and hallucinagens; experimenting to see how the human mind can be bent and shaped and re-worked.
4. **Programmed sleeper agents, tools and pawns.**. Compartmentalization of the brain via trauma-based mind control, drugs, hypnosis and electroshock. Victims used as agent provocateurs, for criminal work, terrorist activity, assassinations; sex slaves, "Presidential Model" message couriers, the porn industry, Hollywood and the music industry, etc. **Somebody who can be programmed to suit any agenda that's needed.**

5. **Learn as much about the alien presence as possible** by interrogating, implanting and monitoring alien abduction victims.

Let's go through some of the items on the first list in more detail:

1. *The military abducting/experimenting on its own personnel*

Based on my dad's story, which I get into in more detail in the Appendix section, and based on other materials I have come across, my conclusion is that the military is always scoping for talented recruits - those **who have certain natural, latent abilities.** One of the ways they may be able to discover who's who is through the Military Aptitude Test (MAT). They're not just trying to figure out where to assign you based on your intelligence and natural skill inclination, they could also be trying to figure out **What can you do for them?** Are you a good candidate for any of their side project experiments?

An interesting excerpt I found in Carla Emery's "Secret, Don't Tell" mentions this very thing (bolded words my own emphasis):

> "**The government was pursuing exactly that line of research: creating an artificial-split personality** out of an imaginary childhood playmate...An imaginary childhood playmate is a marker for hypnotic susceptibility. It can also be a point of fracture for artificial personality-splitting…."
>
> "R.J.", a former Ranger and Viet Nam Special Forces retiree told me, in 1991, "everyone who is going into any branch of the military takes the Military Aptitude Test, the MAT. It asks several questions along those lines: "Did you have imaginary playmates?" "How old were you when you quit playing with your imaginary friend?"…Almost ever person who goes into a Special Forces unit has had a childhood imaginary friend. I did. He was a mean guy. He did things I couldn't do." *- page 60*

In my Dad's situation, he relayed to me that as soon as he took his MAT upon enlisting in the Navy, he was in essence, whisked away you could say. He was immediately assigned to be a Tech Personnel, translating Morse code into type. A very difficult task that most people can't do. Many people can barely type adequately….let alone be able to simultaneously translate Morse code…...let alone translate it at over 80-90 wpm typing speed. But my dad did. And his next four years in the military found him experiencing what could be considered preferential treatment, according to how he described it, strange incidents of psychic surging, close calls with death where he always seemed to have a bubble of protection around him, and even a close encounter with a UFO that appeared over a base in southeast Asia…where he was standing directly underneath it. Based on further details my dad provided it seemed that he was definitely being used for something on the side during his time in the military, and it probably didn't stop after he left. And it probably didn't start when he entered either, though that's a whole side story in itself. See the Appendix for more on this.

Following is an excerpt from a message board posting that was addressed to me on August 19, 2003, regarding one man's experiences when first enlisting in the military. He had been posting his strange and unusual experiences plaguing him throughout his life, including psychic phenomenon and funny phone calls from unknown sources, with a male voice saying very pointed things to him. For someone who has never researched this topic his stories would go right over their head, but after reading some of his posts I recognized what seemed to me to be military mind control experimentation. I took the chance and posted something back to him, broaching the subject, mentioning how his stories have the trademark of such written all over them. Here are the relevant excerpts from the more detailed response that he posted back (content kept as is, including any writing errors, bolded words my own emphasis):

> "If there was ever a direct involvement with what you are speaking of, I know exactly where and when it would have occurred….I will start by saying that I was not in the military for any length of time beyond 12 weeks of basic training. There was some medical problems and I had to be released….**I had scored extremely high on my ASFAB aptitude test before entering the service.** I was going to go Marines, but opted for the Army at the last minute with a friend. I specifically was going for Airborne and whatever that would lead to. **One day, one of the Drill Sgts. read some names aloud and told several of us to get on a bus with blacked out windows. We were driven to a remote location and told to enter some building.** We were put in a room and this guy comes in and tells us that we were going to listen to some tapes of a man talking over a speaker system. He was going to speak a foreign language and the tests were going to see if by just

> listening to the cadence and inflection in the man's voice, whether or not we would be good candidates to go to interrogation or linguistic training. I am an excellent test taker, but never had an affinity for foreign languages. I mean, I like them, hearing people express themselves, but I really had no interest in learning one.
>
> "I remember that I stopped answering the questions after only 3 or 4 as I really wasn't interested in speaking a foreign language, **but after that, everything else seems blank. Seriously, I don't know if I took the opportunity to go to sleep or what, but I don't remember getting back on that bus to go back to the barracks some couple of hours later.** This is about the only instance I can recall of missing any period of time from my life…"

I think it's safe to say that the military has many secondary layers to it, and national defense is only one bit of what they're actually doing with their recruits. And it's a shame too that so many naïve young men and women enlist every year, not realizing what's really going on behind the scenes. They're signing away their bodies and lives, in more ways than one. And even worse is the fact that once you sign yourself away, it apparently doesn't end after your time has expired. It seems that the military believes they own their personnel forever. It really is like signing a contract with the devil when you think about it. Even if you somehow manage to back out, or find an excuse to be discharged before your tour is up they've already got your information and have your MAT/IQ test results, and you've possibly already undergone one or more programming sessions whether you know it or not. You become permanently on record, and there's no undoing that. At this point, considering the documents that have been declassified which flat out admit to the government and military experimenting on unwitting personnel and civilians over the decades it *amazes* me that people would still enlist at all.

2. *Being family of military personnel*

This is one of *the* most important links in my opinion. In particular people seem to get on the radar when they're the offspring of those who work for **military intelligence**. I don't know exactly why, but it's something I realized through my research and personal experience. Time and again you'll find that **so many abductees/mind control**

targets have/had parents (usually fathers), in the military, and often times working in the capacity of national security and intelligence. Air Force, Army and Naval intelligence, NASA and NSA. My own father was Navy tech personnel, reporting to the NSA for intelligence, aka spying, during Vietnam. Several MILABS/military targets that I've known over the past few years, and ones that I had suspicions about, all had dads and sometimes even grandfathers who were in the Navy or Naval intelligence. Around 2002-03 I came across mention somewhere in my internet travels and research about the Navy targeting its tech personnel specifically for its mind control experimentation research. I wish I knew where I saw this, but it was a major piece of the puzzle falling into place for me considering my own dad's background and our very strange lives.

I'm theorizing that if the military finds a particularly useful personnel subject for their side projects they would therefore be interested in keeping tabs on that person's offspring down the line in case the children inherit some of the same – or better - talents and abilities.

A point worth mentioning here is how I started paying attention to those news stories of women who've flipped out and killed their children and babies because of "voices in the head" driving them mad and telling them to. More than one turned out to be wives of NASA personnel and military intelligence men. Yes there is such a thing as post-partum depression, but this military and NASA pattern can not be overlooked. Something suspicious is going on there. Why are wives of NASA personnel and military men having voices in the head? Mind control experimentation perhaps, extending to the spouses of military personnel? Very well could be. Also pay attention to prominent New Age personalities and channelers, see how many have military and intelligence connections within their immediate family.

I received an email from a woman while originally writing this book back in 2006 who was wondering if her fiancé could have mind control programming. The fiancé's family fit the profile of my ex boyfriend Steve's family, nearly to a T: The father working for the government in nuclear weapons engineering; the fanatical Christian/Catholic mother who was mentally unstable while simultaneously trying to uphold the image of the "Perfect American Family," and the son with the compartmentalized mind, who can't remember his dreams and believes that he doesn't dream, but yet, talks in his sleep. (in fact when I first started reading her email her description so closely matched Steve and his family that my nerves stood on end, wondering "oh my god….is she talking about STEVE??" That's how close the two were at first glance.) Both families did have differences it turned out, and the story of her fiancé is more like a combination of my brother Joe and my ex Steve if you were to mix the two together. But the fact that there could be such a similar **profile** of sorts was utterly amazing to me. What are the implications of *that?*

The biggest question she asked though, which got to the core of the issue, was **"Why?"** *Why* would the kids of these military personnel be targeted for programming? What purpose does it serve? What are they being used for??

All I can do is theorize, because only the people instilling the programming know why they're doing it and what long range purpose it serves…if any. It always reminds me of the 1997 movie "Cube", where it's revealed that there is no point to the Cube experiment, and there is no one person in charge of it all within the government. I've actually had the thought that it's almost as if they're just creating nonsense work at the expense of people's lives in order to keep themselves busy so they can remain on the payroll. Another major possibility is that somebody out there would like to create what's known in mind control research as an army of sleeper agents, each individual programmed to fulfill the agenda of TPTB years down the line. The only problem with this theory is that to program thousands of individuals who effectively serve as a programmed army means that it's organized, and the programmers know what the long-term agenda actually is, and how it will all unfold. It seems farfetched. The future holds too many unknown variables, and nothing ever goes as planned, even for them.

So another, more moderate theory, which sits neatly in the middle, is the concept of guinea pigs. Forever testing and experimenting on personnel and their families to refine mind control techniques so that later down the line (meaning, right now, and beyond), when these techniques are needed as the agenda unfolds, "they" will already know the most efficient manner in which to go about things from their years of research and work. This is basically saying that somebody like my ex, and the fiancé of the woman who emailed me, as well as hundreds or even thousands of others over the past few decades, were just disposable guinea pigs. And that could very well be the case.

3. *Targeting juvenile delinquents and inmates*

Several years ago I came across an article that I now highly recommend, "**Operation Open Eyes: Mind Control in Amerika - 5 Easy Steps to Create a Manchurian Candidate"** by Gunther Russbacher, who apparently used to be second highest in command in the CIA. **http://www.rumormillnews.com/operation.htm**

In Gunther's piece he outlines the government's process for selecting and programming society's throwaway kids and juvenile inmates to become Manchurian Candidates – programmed sleeper agents designed to be used as assassins, criminals, and all around agent provocateurs. The reason this piece jumped out at me was because I recognized what I was reading as being my younger brother's situation, through and through. My brother Joe spent ages 14 through 17 locked up in various juvenile detention centers and mental hospitals in Connecticut, after going on a convenience store robbing spree at the age of 14. The Joe that emerged from his time in lock up was not the same one who went in. The old Joe was spacey and drifty, in his own world, and struggled in school. He had the criminal potential, obviously, or he wouldn't have been locked up in the first place, but his skills certainly weren't honed by any means. The New Joe was proficient in hand to hand combat and not afraid to kill. This new Joe saw and noticed everything, and when he was out and about in public he was always "on", ready to pounce. He also had inexplicable knowledge of all things relating to radios/scanners and electronics even though he's never studied the subject a day in his life, was pulling A's like it was nothing once he was mainstreamed back into public high school (this, despite not showing up half the time), displayed a split off multiple persona named Shawn Hill (which I get into later on in Part III), and now experienced abduction flashback memories, missing time, and was being followed and monitored by "Them." Our long distance phone conversations were being listened in on, with the accompanying noise disturbance and they would apparently follow him around in cars and such. Something happened to Joe while he was locked up, and when I read Gunther Russbacher's piece so much of it matched up to Joe's situation that I now refer people to read it. Joe was later given agent provocateur assignments…things I had to talk him out of, which I can't even discuss publicly because of the high level nature of it. We're not talking petty nonsense. (Though most of his everyday criminal pursuits were in fact, petty.) He would tell me with glassy far away eyes and a dazed smile what he was supposed to do, for Them, to **"prove that he was ready for the next level."** It was exactly what Gunther outlines in his article, word for word.

As with my own situation, I don't think there was just one thing going on with Joe. He was probably already an abductee going back to childhood, and whatever happened to him while in lockup and immediately afterwards was just one more layer of a multi-layered situation. All of a sudden "something" became VERY interested in monitoring and keeping tabs on Joe once he was released…and then interested in me, for being so closely involved with him in life as his sister. And of course it was after he was released that he has abduction flash back memories, missing time, and also when he developed his split-off alternate persona, Shawn Hill. So this does seem to be a very real thing happening in America's incarceration system, for both youths and adults, and needs to be mentioned. If you do the research, you will find articles and declassified government docs pertaining to this subject.

*****

On a side note: Tying this back into items 1 and 2, many *many* people are probably being taken and used (see the section called "Multiple Personalities vs. Multiple 'Personas'" for more on this), and out of all those people that are taken and tinkered with, probably only a small percentage will wind up being useful for them in the long term. Many might be sifted out, due to any number of reasons which will cause them to fall to the wayside - programming doesn't stick, or has damaged the psyche beyond what they can use; maybe their profile isn't right, and so on. So what happens to all the ones that are rejected, discarded, or who just got phased out over time? Well, they're still out there in the world, living their lives. And they probably have a few observant friends, family members or significant others who notice strange "quirks" about them, which initially make no sense…unless they're lucky enough to stumble across books or articles about mind control, which describe these people and their situations and background profiles to a T, allowing for the observant person to begin making some "aha!" connections. Unfortunately though, most people won't cross paths with material about mind control and abductions, so most of these people's stories never got resolved.

4. *The military against the aliens*

There are two types of alien/military abductions being reported: One where both sides are working together, and one where they are at odds. Regarding the latter, some military abductees claim to be abducted by the aliens first, with the military spooks following close on their heels. This type of abduction often involves military personnel intensely interrogating the abductee for any information they may have regarding their alien abductors. The use of force, intimidation and threats are reported, with the interrogators berating the abductee into revealing what they know.

Taking excerpts from several books regarding MILABS, we see this:

> "After this confrontation the men in the lab coats and military man took her [Melinda] to an interrogation room. She described in detail how they walked through halls with video cameras on the walls and metal doors. Inside this room was a table and chairs. Melinda was forced to sit on a chair and one man in a lab coat gave her a shot in the arm and a strange drink. After this she felt "high". She was very frightened as she felt one of the men grasp her on the cheeks. A man in a white lab coat stood behind her and a spotlight shone on her chair.
>
> A red-haired military officer asked her questions concerning her alleged alien experiences. Strangely, it appeared that they wanted information about UFO technology. He asked her, "What have they asked you? Tell me about their technology? Tell me about the drive system, the drive mechanism? You tell me about what they told you to do! What did they tell you? What did they ask you to do? Tell me, tell me, tell me. You know you are not theirs, you are ours!'
>
> After the session she was brainwashed by the same person."
>
> - ***"MILABs: Military Mind Control and Alien Abductions"*** - Dr. Helmut Lammer and Marion Lammer, page 140.

> "It was sometime in the winter of 1993 when they went the farthest they'd ever gone. I lived alone in my own apartment on Milwaukee's east side, when I had one of those waking dreams. But this time something was highly different and not very dreamlike at all.

In fact, I was wide awake in the middle of the night, in a place that was not my bedroom.

I was in a small office with a large pane windows, and I knew that this place was located underground somewhere. There was vomit-green pain bordering the room with a pale yellow or off-white paint on the main part of the cement block walls that surrounded me. I was sitting in an armless chair, in front of desk where a man in his mid-thirties stood. He wore a white shirt with a navy blue tie, and closely cut hair. He was leaning over the desk glaring at me, pounding his fist and demanding at me, "You have to tell us where they are! You got to help us find them!" There was a guard standing directly to my right who was dressed in a typical, military camouflage uniform, holding a rifle.

"Help you? Find who?" It then began to sink in that something was truly wrong here and I exclaimed, "Hold on, where am I?"

Immediately following that statement one of them said, "Oh, she's waking up!" Then suddenly I was out again."

- "The Secret War" - Heidi Hollis, page 131

"A third controversial topic avoided by many researchers focuses on military involvement with aliens and abductees. For Lisa, as is so often the case with abductees, the first memory of a possible encounter with the military surfaced in a dream.

"I was being interrogated by the military," she said, "pushed and made to lie crouched on the ground. In the back were some trucks, and beside them were guys in black uniforms standing watching me. The men asking questions were in regular military clothes. They held me down with the butts of their guns. They told me to give them the knowledge and they said 'at any cost.' I told them I didn't know what they were talking about, and they just repeated themselves "

- "Taken" - Karla Turner, PhD - page 75

In these examples there seems to be a clear delineation between the aliens and the military. Neither group seemed to be working together, and the government interrogators were obviously out of the loop in regards to what was going on. They were always a day late and a dollar short. Another feature is the antiquated methods of information extraction - drugs, threats and intimidation, pounding on the desk and waving a gun around. But if these memories accurately represent what really happened, and these military factions truly had a need for interrogations to extract information, then it's safe to say that they were pretty bottom rung level based on their methods.

Of course when it comes to this subject nothing is what it seems to be, and there could very well be a strong possibility of games, and reverse psychology going on here. When I read these interrogation scenarios they always strike me as being so goofy and over the top. **Something seems wrong and off about them**, and I wouldn't be surprised to learn that they were all another level of mind games being played on the abductees.

When looking at this issue closer, what I've wondered is:

- Does the military really believe that by holding a gun to an abductee's head, screaming at them and threatening them that this will elicit coherent, calm, in-depth answers about "the aliens"? I don't know about anybody else, but I'd probably be a bit shaky and have my mind go blank if I found myself in that type of situation.
- Do they really think that a female abductee who's been flat on her back on an alien's examination table, being poked and prodded, is going to be able to tell the military spooks what sort of **UFO drive technology** these aliens possess??
- Then there's the fact that most alien abductees don't remember their abductions, period, unless under hypnosis. And even then it's tricky business. But the military expects that the target will remember these details while awake – and with a gun to their head?

So sure, maybe the military really is that stupid…**or maybe these interrogation scenarios are a ruse.**

One purpose these interrogations serve is to reinforce and "prove" the idea that there really is a war between the aliens and certain factions of the U.S. military. **But what if there isn't?** What if the military is in full collusion with them but doesn't want the public to realize this? How convenient would it be then to have abductees running around with memories – which they were allowed to remember – proving that "See, the military really is in the dark about the aliens. They don't have a clue, but they're working hard to get answers!" Again, it's all about that double reverse psychology mentioned in the opening introduction. So much of what's going on in the world of abductions requires multiple unravelings to untangle what's really happening here. Games within games within games.

More researchers and abduction targets could benefit from learning how to think in this manner, scrutinizing and unraveling material and not just taking things at face value.

As an abductee (and I really don't like using that term, or any term, to describe myself) I can say that it's not common to have actual clear, coherent abduction memories. We're lucky if we're left with a three second snippet flash, let alone something as complex as the above three excerpts. So that says to me that maybe, possibly, these women were allowed to remember these incidents, in the hopes that it would somehow make it out there and help prove the idea that the government really is at war with these beings. Because when you do the research, the real story seems to be that not only is the U.S. government working with these beings, but they sold off the American public in exchange for technology and personal advancement.

*****

A sub-issue regarding the topic of the military taking alien abductees for interrogations is: **In order to even chase down the abductee for interrogations, how did the military know that the alien abductee was taken in the first place?** That part is skipped over in the sources I've read and is an actual plot hole of sorts. Maybe nobody actually knows, or they feel it's already implied and understood.

The major possibility here is implants. Any alien abductee is going to have some sort of implant designed for monitoring and tracking them. So it's possible the government has technological capabilities to sniff out these implants. What sort of technology could be used by even the low rung military factions to locate any abductee, anywhere on the planet? When I thought about this it took me all of about two seconds to come up with "satellites," which is one decent, man-made technology that's been around since the 1950's. Still another possibility is that the government has developed their own technology to detect a "disturbance in the grid," and so when UFOs and non-physical aliens are popping in and out of 3rd density, plucking people up and dumping people off, then the military spooks are sure to follow close behind. From there, it's almost a given that the government/military abductors would in turn implant the abductee using their own implants for their own monitoring purposes. It basically becomes a tug-of-war.

The third possibility is that there is no war between the military and the aliens, which means that if both sides are actually working together then it would be known when any person (in the U.S. at least) is abducted by aliens. So that would negate the entire issue.

*****

In my research I've noticed a bit of conflict regarding the alien aspect of MILABs. Researchers, including abductees and supposed survivors of military black ops mind control projects, can't seem to agree on how aliens fit into the equation – or if they even do at all. I personally believe in the concept of aliens, or rather, non-human intelligences. I don't think we got to where we are today without the help of "something else" along the way, and all the evidence seems to be pointing to non-human intelligences manipulating the affairs of Mankind, and steering the direction of life on Earth in general, from behind the scenes. (And this can include **feeding ideas into people's minds without them realizing where they're coming from.** It doesn't mean to imply a strictly overt interaction out in the open.) There have been several excellent books that offer up convincing evidence with regards to this whole subject so I won't get into it all here. But considering where humanity has gone in such a short period of time, it almost seems pretty farfetched to believe otherwise. Where did The Powers That Be suddenly get this technology from? I suppose we could have gotten there on our own. But to go from the gritty industrial age of the late 1800s to computers, lasers, genetic engineering, satellites and space flight – just to name a few things - within roughly *70-80 years* after existing in simplicity for thousands of years seems oh, I don't know, pretty weird.

Following are two examples of cautious skeptics who believe in covert military abductions and activity, but yet doubt the idea of a military/alien alliance. In the aforementioned book "MILABs: Mind Control & Alien Abductions" by Dr. Helmut Lammer and Marion Lammer, we see an interesting refusal to accept the possibility of military factions working in cahoots with aliens/Reptilians. Bolded words my own emphasis:

> "After the description of the reptoid-like being she remembered how she was raped by this creature. We don't know what this traumatic experience means. **We don't think, however, that the military worked with this reptoid creature. It could be possible that Michelle was drugged with an hallucinogen, raped by a human and projected the reptoid as a kind of screen memory**, although she

> described the skin and other features of the creature quite realistically." - ***page 49***
>
> "Since many people have phobias about reptiles or snakes it would be logical that they would experience such beings if they were on a grueling LSD trip…" ***- page 50***
>
> "Delora's (pseudonym) father was a career Navy officer, in the supply corps…She believes that she saw "aliens" and humans performing medical procedures on them…Delora believes that the humans in the capsules were clones. It is more probable that the humans in the capsules were used for secret bio-warfare or chemical warfare experiments, since cloning technology was certainly not well developed during the 1960's. **It is more likely that the supposed aliens who worked with human doctors were medical staff who covered their faces with surgical masks or wore bio-hazard clothes."** - ***page 55- 56***

The Lammers find it easier to accept the idea that the military was keeping people in capsules for covert bio-warfare experimentation versus the idea of aliens creating clones. Both theories can seem pretty far out there, and neither one is more believable than the other, in my opinion. The refusal to accept one while grappling at the other could show distress/denial, unconscious programming, or a conscious agenda on the part of the authors. What also stands out for me is the faulty, missing the point logic in the last excerpt about cloning technology not being well developed in the 1960s. Well of course humans didn't have that level of technology back then…but aliens /non-human intelligences would have. And that's exactly who Delora was speaking of in these excerpts.

Another example is an excerpt taken from the book "Close Encounters of the Possession Kind," by William Baldwin, Ph.D. Dr. Baldwin is a hypnotist specializing in entity/alien attachments on people and how to rid their presence. In the following excerpt, an attached alien entity harasser is speaking directly to Dr. Baldwin through the hypnotized subject. Bolded words are my own emphasis.

> "These beings were conducting some sort of **mind control experiments** on many humans, **with permission by some human authority**, and absolutely refused to cease their operations. As the therapist and facilitator of the sessions, I usually make a demand for

> the client's sovereign right of individual freedom and free will in such cases. Usually it works, sometimes not so well. This being disdainfully agreed to release this one woman from the project, but no one else.
>
> This aroused my curiosity and I asked:
>
> Dr. B.: "How many humans on this planet are you affecting in this way?"
>
> The immediate, unmistakable, and ominous reply:
>
> C.: **"Ask your government."**
>
> Father perceived him turning his attention away from us. We were unimportant to him, as was the single female subject he had just discarded from his project.
>
> There was an unmistakable feeling of malevolence and personal threat. That was enough**. While I do not concur with the conspiracy theorists regarding the Government-ET connection,** I believe the intelligence agencies are capable of covert nefarious activities involving citizens."
>
> ***- page 51-52.***

Dr. Baldwin wholeheartedly believes in aliens and demonic entities. He acknowledges his belief in nefarious, covert intelligence agency activities, and later on in the book expands on this topic when he mentions the CIA's MK Ultra mind control experiments. Yet….he can't reconcile the two sides joining forces. Additionally, there's a not-so-subtle message being conveyed by labeling such a belief as being in the realm of "conspiracy theorists." Last time I checked, both a belief in aliens and acknowledgement of covert, nefarious activities on U.S. citizens by intelligence agencies was also in the realm of conspiracy theorists, according to the mainstream world. But never mind that. ;)

"Close Encounters of the Possession Kind" is still highly recommended though, despite that lone, puzzling comment about not believing the conspiracy theorists who talk about an alien/government alliance. However, "MILABs" has always struck me as being a mixed bag. It addresses this clandestine topic, making it seem like it's on the side of the abductees who would be reading it to get answers, only to turn around and subtly undermine people's experiences concerning a military/non-human intelligence alliance, as well as the use of cartoon illustrations throughout. The comic book-style pictures give the book, and the topic as a whole, a silly feel. Maybe someone somewhere realized that in order for the book to be allowed out there it had to be done that way…? Or, it could be a covert agenda, I don't know. All I can do is suggest for people to be alert when reading any material that's prominently out there discussing military or joint alien/military abduction operations. Comb through it carefully, and be perceptive to possible subtle undermining going on – attempts to play down or even flat out dismiss certain sensitive subject matter without any proof of investigation on the matter (just expecting the reader to take the author's word for it that "There's nothing to see here, move it along!"), skipping over material that should be covered while focusing heavily on something that doesn't seem all that important, speaking in authoritarian absolutes, displaying black/white either/or limited thinking, using silly comic book picture illustrations, etc., and so on.

Ultimately, everybody has to make up their own mind about whether there really are aliens…and if there are, whether they are working with factions of the human population. I can only speak for myself, as somebody who has witnessed hyperdimensional happenings and interacted with non-physical entities from other realms. I have my own proof that this aspect of reality is real, so it's not a stretch for me to imagine a merger of those realms with human higher ups. For this reason, I'm going to approach my book from that particular point of view, addressing topics which involve the non-human/hyperdimensional aspect of things.

Ritual Abuse/Satanic cults

Then there are the Satanic groups who abuse people in their rituals, with injuries, rape and outright killing. This is a huge subject, and there has been much material written about it. I'm not going to delve too much into it here only because I lack firsthand experience with the subject. It still needs to be mentioned though as it's one of those reasons why some people have very unusual lives and why they've gotten on the radar for targeting.

Many ritual abuse targets have reported that they live in what outwardly seems to be upstanding families, but yet who belong to these groups in secret, and grew up having to participate in the various rituals where they were injured, raped, forced to engage in traumatizing behavior and forced to witness the ritual killings of animals, babies, children or adults. Frequent childhood sickness and anomalous injuries on the body may have followed them through their life as they live this double existence. This "double life" may be compartmentalized in the brain, creating split off alternate personas, ie, Dissociative Identity Disorder (DID) formerly referred to as multiple personality disorder. I've read of targets who've left or gotten away from these groups but who then find themselves on the receiving end of ongoing monitoring and harassment, due to their earlier (usually unwitting) involvement with it all.

The idea of Satanic groups performing rituals is controversial, and by controversial it means that things become a back and forth finger pointing, "he-said she-said" between those who claim to be victims and former members of these groups, and so-called experts denying that such a thing is possible, coming across to me as if they're merely trying to impose damage control. For me though, common sense says that it's not possible for so many people all over the world to be lying, fabricating hysterical stories that often times match up in their details. Yes, some may indeed be hoaxes and power-of-suggestion hysteria. But……I don't think they all can be.

I've always found this subject fascinating, specifically when it involves claims of high up people in charge of things in our world being involved in these sorts of unsavory activities. Everything about the way this world functions is a negative mess, and any alert, awake person has to wonder why that is. Well, this subject seems to be that missing puzzle piece. Suddenly so many things about all aspects of this world make a lot more sense when viewed through the lens of "serving dark forces."

Gangstalking/Targeted Individuals

Taken from my "Gangstalking vs. Hyperdimensional Matrix Attacks" article on my website: **http://in2worlds.net/gangstalking-and-targeted-individuals**

> "Gang stalking, according to people's accounts, involves an organized group of people who have been recruited to go after various individuals in the world. Victims of targeting are said to involve a myriad of people, from whistle blowers, activists, people who are

> alone, vulnerable and "different" from society's norms in any way (such as homosexuals, single mothers, etc.), among others. One day somebody somewhere decided that tag, the target was it, and suddenly The Game was off and running. Only….nobody filled the target in about what was going on or what the rules were.
>
> "Gang stalkers have been reported as following targets in cars, vans, on foot or on bikes for weeks, months, sometimes years on end, making sure that the target knows that they're being followed and monitored as they live their life. Targets typically report having their cars/residence/etc. broken into, with things moved around, possibly property destroyed or computers fried out. Phones may be tapped and strange messages left on the voice mail. Slander campaigns might be put into effect to destroy the target's reputation within their community and within any groups they may belong to. The gang stalkers may position themselves at whatever place the target may be going and then say weird random "street theater" sorts of comments to the target, or have loud conversations amongst themselves making sure that the target can hear them saying things that directly relate to the target's personal life that they should have no way of knowing…..again, letting them know that all eyes are on them. The stalkers often move into a target's apartment/condo complex or housing neighborhood to gain closer proximity. Even worse, according to many claims, a target can move around, even locating to other countries to try to escape the harassment and supposedly the problem will continue….which implies a vast network of people worldwide that can be "called on" when needed to go after a target. (more on this particular idea in a bit.) But all the while, doing everything in such a way that it's almost impossible for the target to prove to people that any of it is happening, and to where the target just comes across as sounding completely crazy."

I went on to note that:

> "Oddly enough, the description of the gang stalker modes of operation matched several things that I described in Part II of my book, in the 'Sidetrack Circus Diversion'… section. Random street theater comments directed at me? Check. Somebody apparently in my apartment when I was at work, things messed with and changed around to let me know somebody had been there? Check. Tapped phones and phone interference? Check. Bizarre messages left on my

> answering machine and then-cell phone voice mail (including the sounds of marching jackboots of all things) when almost nobody even had my phone number? Check."

My conclusion about the gangstalking phenomena as noted in that article was as follows:

> "Gang stalking, in my opinion, actually involves a mix of several things that have been mistakenly lumped into the same category: 1) Hyperdimensional attacks from non-physical entities outside this realm who hone in on individuals over the course of their life either because the target poses a threat to the Negs, and/or, because the target is a guaranteed disempowered, low frequency food source, and then 2) Physically-based groups and syndicates who often times have government ties, targeting people who pose a threat to the negative elements in charge of this reality and the establishment. Both can overlap in my opinion, as it seems that the non-physical demonic Negs can also work through these syndicates and gang stalkers, using them to do their bidding. And finally, 3) a person's personal frequency and the way they interface with reality, especially if they've gotten into habitual mindsets of fear, paranoia and disempowerment, can help perpetuate and escalate harassment by drawing more of it to themselves due to conscious and unconscious expectation.
>
> "Based on much of what I've read of people's accounts online, so much of what is being labeled as "gangstalking" is, in my opinion, actually a case of **synchronicity.** Amazing coincidence, but where the person(s) involved are *not* knowingly trying to perpetrate something on the supposed target. I encounter synchronicity in my own life on a regular basis, as evidenced by other write ups on this website including comments made by people around me and general situations that match up uncannily to thoughts I've had. But this does not mean "people are reading my mind" or "everybody's watching me and are in on it." Unfortunately that mindset runs rampant within much gangstalking material that's out there as I've seen. The reason for this I think is because the proponents of the "strictly physical-based gangstalking" theory have no knowledge of hyperdimensional stuff, neg entities and so on, and have never researched the subject of synchroncities. **They're working with a puzzle that's missing most of the pieces,** so you really can't blame them for coming to wrong conclusions about things. They don't have the full story. Sometimes

> their effort to make everything fit into the physical-based gangstalking explanation becomes totally silly, with the explanations getting increasingly more far fetched in order to try to pound that square peg into a round hole. […] Both the idea of physical based targeting and hyper-d happenings and synchs/glitches have validity in my opinion. **The key is for the target to be aware of *both,* and then be able to differentiate what events fall into which category.**

The big emphasis of that article was on the **hyperdimensional component** of it all, which seems to be *the* key factor being overlooked in most material floating around out there on the subject. Mentally ill/schizophrenic people aside, for what many of the legitimate targets are reporting there is just no way that many of these happenings that are being attributed to gang stalking could be coordinated and orchestrated by physical humans alone. A related aspect of hyperdimensional forces working through people to affect a target would be the way in which they could also affect the target's own personal frequency, to ensure that the target is disombobulated and off kilter and thus, attracts in situations and people that always seem to work against them. I get into the role of personal frequency more in depth in both my gangstalking write up, as well as this book.

Several of the targeted individuals I've heard from in emails really had a problem with my particular take on this subject, one of them even going as far a to stubbornly argue againast the idea of hyper-d reality and seeming to have an actual agenda of sorts to get me to change my mind, and adhere to a strictly physical-based, human coordinated source behind all gang stalking activities…..which I would not do. Conversely I've heard from other targets who were excited to find somebody else out there corroberating what they themselves had concluded about the matter.

As mentioned I was not aware of the term "gangstalking" for the first few years that this book was out, or of the related phrase "targeted individuals," but once I learned of it I realized that much of what I talk about in Part II of this book falls into that category. It was classic targeted individual harassment tactics as I realized in reading through various websites and blogs. Yet, in the same way I'm uncomfortable using the term MILABS for myself, I wouldn't go and label myself as a "targeted individual" or "victim of gangstalking" either. Those labels aren't entirely accurate only because I have a lot more higher up paranormal/metaphysical stuff happening in my situation then the average gangstalking target reports. So as mentioned elsewhere in this book, it's a case where my own situation has many overlapping features of a particular classified group, but yet, isn't a 100% match.

"The experiment"?

"The Earth is a farm. We are someone else's property." – *Charles Fort, 1915*

Out of the various groups who report having been used and abused, and targeted and harassed in some way, MILABS has components that overlaps all of them. Be it aliens, abductions, physical experimentation/tampering, the government/military involvement, mind control, rapes, general life monitoring and harassment - MILABS is a group that covers the whole gambit. And that was something I realized only after coming across a chart that had been posted on a now defunct blog called "The Fine Art of Discernment," which cross compared the traits and reported experiences of alien abductees, ritual abuse survivors and gang stalking targets. (I would post a link to the chart so readers can see but again the blog no longer exists, though I did manage to print out all the blog entries before the author took it down.) In reading over the chart I realized I had elements in my life that matched all three groups, but the one that wasn't on the list yet at the time – MILABS – was the one that encompassed aspects of all of them, and thus most closely matches my own situation.

The comparison chart really got me thinking though, and brought me back to the ultimate question of, ***"What is actually going on here??"*** For the every day gang stalking targets dealing with the skeezy looking low level physical based people syndicates, as well as the gang stalking targets experiencing hyperdimensional forces working through people, for those who call themselves MILABS with the Naval/Air Force/NSA and military intelligence connections in their immediate family along with strange "alien" and paranormal, psychic and PSI experiences, for the Monarchs/MKs and ritual abuse survivors, seriously, what is going ON here?? For those of us who have definitive proof that "stuff" has happened to us and are not crazy, it's obvious that this is real. But when you actually stop and think about it, and look at what we're claiming has gone on in our lives, the sorts of things we've witnessed, it sounds ludicrous. Just completely farfetched and crazy. It's just so big, so bizarre, that how can it possibly be?! It doesn't fit in with the world as it's been presented to us, at all.

Which is exactly it, right there. The world….."as it's been presented to us." Because what's been presented to us isn't necessarily how things actually are, as many of us have learned firsthand.

One of the big issues/questions that arises with this subject is the obvious, **"Why you?"** Again, mentally ill and schizophrenic people aside who are truly experiencing delusions and unwarranted paranoia, for those who are legitimately being monitored and toyed with in some way, and/or are experiencing paranormal reality and *can* furnish proof of it all, then the obvious question is **Why?** Why are they so special? Why do these things happen to them, and not others?

This question was addressed on the aforementioned defunct blog, The Fine Art of Discernment. Back when it was still up, the author had this to say:

> "You may ask, well what makes you so special that you're singled out in this way? I'm not. I believe that everyone is "singled out" but not everyone is aware of what's happening. It's such a natural part of our existence that we consider it normal."

I thought that was good, although I'd revise that slightly to mention the fact that not everybody is actually singled out, because there are those walking among us that are not what we think they are. Be it "aliens," or people who are lacking their soul spark/spirit. In those cases **they don't need to be targets.** But for everybody who is real and human and fully there, then maybe this is happening to all of them in some way, yet only some people have actually noticed it. Along the lines of what The Fine Art of Discernment blog noted, so many people have lives that are already negative and chaotic, would they actually notice deliberate acts of manipulated negativity occurring around them, or would it all just be one big blur? Another idea is that maybe some people are waking up more than others, and therefore now find themselves being honed in on more than the person sitting next to them. I tend to favor that explanation more than the others. Asleep people who conform to the matrix, even if they're real, wouldn't need targeting. Only the ones who start **to stick their neck out** might. Another thing to keep in mind is the direction a person is going, and who they may be in the future…which is something that hyperdimensional stuff would know about. Hyperdimensionals have a vantage point that we lack. So in that way targeting of certain people may be a **pre-emptive strike,** where stuff tries to head things off at the pass and cut something short before it even gets off the ground. Then there's also the people who've gotten on the radar through their parents' military involvement as mentioned throughout this book.

The following is an excerpt from a C's channeling session from 1994 that seems very relevant for what I'm talking about here. Questions posed to the C's are noted with "Q", followed by a letter in parenthesis indicating the first letter in the name of the person who asked the question. The C's answers are indicated with "A." I reference them again later in the book, at the end of Part II. (For a description of how the C's channeling process worked, for those who are curious, click on the following link and see **post #8** specifically: **http://forum.noblerealms.org/viewtopic.php?id=1369&p=1** It's my firsthand account of what I witnessed when I sat in on one session back in 2002.)

> "Q: (L) Let me ask this one before the tape runs out and we take a break. What is the "ultimate secret" being protected by the Consortium?
> A: You are not in control of yourselves, **you are an experiment.**
>
> BREAK
>
> Q: Do you have anything else to say on that subject?
> A: Up to you.
> Q: (T) When you say this is the ultimate secret, that we're being "protected" from by the government, are we talking about the ultimate secret of humans only here?
> A: Basically.
> Q: (T) The ultimate secret of the human race is that **we are an experiment that other humans are conducting on the rest of us?**
> A: **Part.**
> Q: (T) **Okay, does the other part have to do with the Lizards?**
> A: **Yes.**
> Q: (L) **Other aliens also?**
> A: **Yes.**
> Q: (T) **Okay, so, are the humans who are running the experiment, do they know that they are part of the experiment also?**

A: **Yes.**
Q: (T) And they're doing this willingly?
A: **They have no choice.**
Q: (L) **Why do they have no choice?**
A: **Already in progress.**
Q: (T) What is the experiment about?
A: Too complicated for you to understand.
Q: (J) I hate it when that happens! (T) Okay, is this part of, is this about the experiment the Lizzies are doing of dominating us and sucking us dry?
A: Yes, but there's much more than that, you will understand at level 4."

"We are an experiment," which means we're living *in* an experiment, surrounded by experiment, and this is the ultimate thing that "stuff" doesn't want us to know. And humans are definitely involved in it all. Interesting. At this point in my life I can believe it. In fact I get into this again in Part III, discussing how my brother was told by human "thems" during an abduction that many aspects of our lives were an "experiment" of sorts. He told me this before I'd come across other sources corroborating this idea. So that's supposedly what our reality is on the mass, macrocosm level. And now after hearing or reading so many other people's personal stories of the things that have gone on with them, I'm seeing proof for this on the smaller, individual microcosm level as well. It's like this reality is one giant experiment, or farm, being conducted by who knows how many groups with who knows how many agendas. **Just a giant free-for-all.**

I have a memory of some sort, a dream, I'm not sure because I can no longer remember, but it occurred sometime after we moved to Virginia. And in this memory it was the afternoon and I was standing in our living room, being told by a male "them" that I never saw, only heard off to the side, about how this reality was basically an "alien ant farm" you could say. He used that exact phrase. His voice was kind of smirky, with the same superiority and disdain going on as they always seem to have. As I said on my website about this subject: "Things happen, and we don't understand why, or what's going on…..same situation as the ants in the ant farm should you pick it up and say, shake it around. They'd have no idea what's going on. They couldn't conceive of the reality that lies beyond the plexiglass……..the fact that they're in an ant farm that "belongs" to something else. Their organized society that's really the personal property of other beings in a world so large they couldn't fathom it. But which in itself is but a speck in the never ending fractal…."

Another great analogy that I've become fond of is fish in a tank. The fish in a tank have no idea who or what you really are, and they can't conceive of the world that you live in. They're going about their business, swimming around, sleeping, mating, then you come along and dip your finger into the water….sprinkle food flakes on the surface….dip the net in to clean things out…..you could also wreak havoc with their environment if you were so inclined…and none of it makes sense to them. These disturbances good and bad periodically invade their world from a source that they can only barely perceive through the glass, let alone understand. Maybe that's analogous to us. That's what I keep hearing, anyway.

Readers may be familiar with a 2005 movie called "The Forgotten," which was about this exact subject of humans-as-alien-experiment. Humanity being experimented on by an alien intelligence, and government agencies were in line with them, because as one NSA agent explained, "We have no choice. Cooperate or die." So either the writer(s) lifted their idea from the publicly accessible C's transcripts from 10 years before, or, somebody directly knows something (thus, validating what the C's said), or else unconsciously tapped into something without realizing when writing it. Another really good related movie would be "Dark City," from 1998. It's up there as one of my all time faves, concerning alien intelligences who occupy the bodies of human corpses, experimenting on a large human population who've been taken from their original world to go live out their lives in a constructed reality, at the mercy of the controllers' whims who play them like puppets.

This also reminds me of the 1997 movie "Cube," where a huge cube death contraption was built by various compartmentalized government agencies. Everyday people are abducted from their homes then wake up in the cube and have to figure out how to get out alive……..which is the game/experiment. At the end it's revealed that one of the abducted characters had unknowingly taken part in the design of the cube, one of the many compartmentalized government agencies just doing what they were told to do, riding on the paychecks that the project provided. He tells one of his fellow cube victims (who believes it's all a well oiled masterminded plan) "Don't you get it? There *is* no conspiracy! *Nobody* is in charge. **It's just a headless blunder operating under the illusion of a master plan!"** For some reason that whole scene has always stayed with me from the first time I saw the movie. People taken and messed with for experimental purposes. A headless blunder. Nobody is in charge. Illusions of master plans. Governmental agencies just doing what they're told. Creating experiments out of thin air and playing games in order to justify their existence and keep themselves employed. "Fly this helicopter here over this target's house, follow that target there as they go about their day, break into this target's apartment, listen in to that target's phone calls…." The more I've researched MILABS and gang stalking and targeting, the more it feels to me like this is kind of how it is. Does anybody out there responsible for this stuff even know why they're doing what they do? Do they even know who's in charge? IS there anybody actually in charge? And even better (the schizophrenics aside) **are we somehow helping to create it to some extent?**

This last point is something I get into in great detail in Part III, in the section called "Fear in relation to the abduction experience." A relevant writing that I came across, which ties into this, was from Rayelan Allen, author of Rumor Mills News:

> "I wonder what would happen if we all just stopped playing their games? How could we do that? Turn off the television? Stop talking about things that aren't in our own backyard? I don't know. I think the only people who can ever stop playing their games are the ones who become hermits and live in caves.
>
> "The saddest thing about being able to read their minds was knowing the way they viewed us. **We were less than rats in a maze. The closest thing I can compare us to would be ant colonies.** And the controllers just threw a colony of black ants into a colony of red ants. And they were cheering and betting and they watched the black and the red destroy each other." **http://www.rumormillnews.com/cgi-bin/archive.cgi?noframes;read=131227**

She goes on to conclude that the presence she calls "the controllers" could actually be made up of all the souls on earth. In other words…….us. I don't know about that myself, though it's certainly possible. I have read elsewhere something along the lines of what she's saying, which was that we all created this reality as a way to experience and interface with physicality, so we could learn and grow, however the program grew "self aware" and hijacked the game. Now it needs to be powered by negative emotions to keep going, and hence keeps us trapped in a reality that's geared towards generating fear, hate, anger, and other assorted low frequency emotions. I don't know if that's accurate either, though it's interesting to ponder. I will say that I have definitely experienced higher positive intervention and help/feedback in my own life, some of which was apparently coming from my own higher self. So all hope is not lost it seems. There is higher positive stuff at work, getting in when it can. So I don't talk about all this with the intent of depressing readers or making them feel like things are hopeless. It's definitely not.

At this point in life I'm realistic about the idea of never getting concrete answers, because I don't know if they even exist. The truth could be different for everybody, depending on who you talk to. Instead I'm just concerned with what I can do on my end to **reduce the influence of these forces in my own life as much as possible, and then pass along what I've learned to others.** And that's what this book ultimately is.

Detecting Abductions

Foreshadowing

Abductions are not completely unavoidable and undetectable. And when you become adept at reading the clues surrounding an impending abduction then you'll probably become very good at dodging them, **as well as not succumbing to the programming that comes about as a result.** Traditional material that I've read doesn't put an emphasis on how to spot – and thus dodge – an impending abduction. For that reason, this is a very useful subject to get into:

- **Urges to go lie down, sleep, or even drive somewhere.** Feeling uncharacteristically tired out of nowhere with an urge to "go lie down" can be a tip off to an impending abduction if you know that you're an abductee. More unusual and suspicious is the urge to drive someplace you'd never normally go, with no logical explanation for why you're doing that. I get into this a bit more in Parts II & III. Also getting the urge to take an unusual route when traveling, a lonely road late at night, etc. That's why being aware and alert is so important, so we can question urges or ideas that we get, instead of just blindly responding to them like puppets on a string!

- **Intuition/Sixth Sense.** Some people have a natural psychic ability and a highly attuned third eye that can clue them in when something is wrong. I've experienced the "bad feeling" before an attempted abduction or when an entity was around in the area, lurking in the wings. So always pay attention to your gut intuition if something feels off or wrong before going to bed, or in any situation.

- **Number sightings/ear tones/synchronicities.** Can be hyper-dimensional precursors as well as post-abduction markers. An abductee may begin noticing that during particular times, certain numbers will keeping popping up around them, or that they'll get ear tones, a spate of synchronicities, deja vus, and so on. Ear tones – if you can rule out tinnitus and other possible explanations – may often be the result of monitoring if you're an abductee. And number sightings, deja vus, synchs and so on can indicate hyperdimensional timeline maneuvering/manipulation. Being that abductions are often hyperdimensional in nature, they leave markers in their wake – happenings that seem beyond 3rd density. I expand on number sightings, synchronicities and ear tones later on in this write up.

- **Pets acting strange.** Cats, dogs, horses, etc. have been known to exhibit out of character behavior when something unnatural is amiss. Many times when an entity has been around in the vicinity my cat has been known to act wacky. Animals are highly telepathic and psychic - cats especially - and have the ability to see things that humans cannot. So if you're an abductee, pay attention when and if your animal companion(s) exhibit strange and unusual behavior.

- **Patterns to your abductions.** Discussed later on in this piece, but often times, especially for MILABS targets, their abductions seem to run on a schedule. So if you've discovered what yours is, then be on the ball during those times of the month.

After effects

Since abduction memories are zapped and/or naturally or artificially compartmentalized, you have to look for other indicators after the fact that show "something" has happened. The following list includes a few of the main symptoms to be on the look out for, and runs the gambit from physical to psychological. Some of these items will be familiar to those who've studied up on the subject…some however will not. I haven't seen some of these things mentioned anywhere else, although they are compiled from my own personal experience or from other abductees' experiences:

- **Heightened psychic abilities/psychic surging**. Reading minds of those closest to you, knowing about things before they happen, premonitions, etc., but specifically when you're suddenly doing this all day long out of nowhere, and/or when it lasts for several days in a row. I have a theory that it could partly be the residual after effects of being used for psychic/remote viewing work in the instance of MILABs. Could also be the natural residuals of abductions in general.

- **Psychological agitation and stress.** Feeling traumatized and stressed out, nerves on edge, being skittish and jumpy – when nothing has happened that you're consciously aware of that could explain the feelings. On a side note, if your pets are unusually skittish, jumpy or agitated at the same time you're experiencing it as well, this means something. It may not always be in regards to abductions, possibly you (and your pets) are psychically tuning in to something else that's non-abduction related. But if you are an abductee, then it's something to keep in mind. There have been times where both my cat and I were jumpy/traumatized during the same several days' time period. It always makes me wonder whether she can remember what I can't.

- **Programming urges.** Covered more in depth later on in this write up, but feeling urges to do things that are out of character. An urge to drive somewhere or go someplace you wouldn't normally visit, or engage in an action that is unlike your normal behavior. Can be indicative of **post-hypnotic, post-abduction programming commands.**

- **Personality shift.** Feeling markedly different from your normal self for no logical reason.

- **Being in a blank daze, stupor.** Feeling like you could just lie around and stare at the walls and do nothing for abnormally long stretches of time, no motivation, creativity or will to do anything, with no reason for it. Repeatedly slipping into a trance-like state way too easily throughout the day. These can all be signs that you were recently in a deep trance and may not have fully emerged from it, or possibly were drugged, programmed, etc.

- **Physical ailments and anomalies**. Waking up feeling drugged, or like you were "run over by a train" as I put it; having pink eye, nosebleeds, and pains in your body; anomalous bruises and geometric shaped markings, punctures, scoop marks, rashes, lumps, burns or scratches that weren't there before you went to bed; if you're a female, experiencing pains in your uterus area and other abnormal problems with your reproductive organs. There is a section on my website that expands more in depth on these anomalous markings, and includes photos of some of my own marks for illustration: **http://in2worlds.net/anomalous-markings**

- **Missing time**. One of the most commonly known indicators. Either arriving someplace with several hours missing that can't be accounted for, or waking up feeling as if it's only been several seconds/minutes since you went to bed, when in fact it may have been 10-12 hours and you have no dream memories in between. And more so if you normally don't sleep for that long and normally have dreams, and especially when you have some of the other telltale abduction indicators going on in conjunction.

- **Strange dreams.** Having strange and unusual "dreams" – and I put that in quotes for a reason - can be an indicator of having been taken. Dreams are sometimes anything but, so examine your dreams closely, and if they occur in conjunction with any of the indicators on this list, then it's definitely suspect.

- **Reversed in bed**. Little kids seem to experience this more than adults, but it seems "something" either has difficulty getting the coordinates right when putting somebody back in their bed, or they're deliberately putting people back reversed in their bed, outside the covers. I have my own experiences with this as a kid, relayed in Part II. Related to this is when abductees wake with their clothes on backwards and/or inside out, items of clothing missing that they were wearing when they went to sleep, or even having grass and mud on their night clothes, as if they had been outside.

- **Waking up suddenly**, gasping, as if just plunked back into your bed; Waking up with a cold body even if the room is warm, or feeling as if drugged, even though you're not sick and haven't done anything to create that feeling; Waking with residual images of aliens and other suspicious images in your mind; Waking up after having only slept for several hours but feeling as if you never slept at all, full of clear headed energy, with no memories of dreams. (This last item is a definitely an indicator of being taken if you're somebody who normally does dream, and/or feels groggy and tired upon waking.) These have all happened to me.
- **Number sightings/ear tones/synchronicities.** Can be hyper-dimensional precursors as well as post-abduction markers. I've gotten number sightings and ear ringings both before and after an abduction.
- **Things tampered with.** Noticing that stuff around your living quarters has been moved around or tampered with in some way, and you know that you didn't do it; extra miles put on your car as if you were driving it even though you have no memories of doing so. I haven't experienced the car thing luckily, but it's been mentioned in other people's writings so I'm mentioning it here.

Methods for Taking the Abductee

There are several methods that I'm aware of for taking a MILAB. The first two that you'll see in the following list seem to get all the focus at the expense of the other two – which are actually the ones that may be more common than we realize. Let's review:

"Smash and Grab"

Pretty much the only method I've seen mentioned with regards to MILABs – but which I know is not the only one - is what I've nicknamed the **"smash and grab"** method. This is where, according to the research, military Special Forces type personnel burst silently into your home, guns drawn, and stealthily make their way over and grab you. From there, they haul you outside and toss you into an awaiting van, then drive to a helicopter and fly to the base, or just drive directly to the base itself.

It seems like a lot of work, but yet, that's practically all we ever hear. For the past several years I scoffed at this idea only because to me, it seemed rather antiquated. Later I did eventually recall my own possible "smash and grab" memory from 1995, which confirmed that maybe this does happen. But more on that in Part II.

Drive to them

Another snagging method I've discovered involves **getting the abductee to come to them**, or at least, as close to them as they can get. The abductee suddenly experiences an urge to take a trip to some place on a whim that just so happens to be located near a base. Now that the target is in such close proximity to "them", possibly the targets gets a smash and grab visit. It's something to keep in mind if you're an abductee, and a good reason to pay close attention to all your thoughts, urges and ideas, which I reiterate several times throughout this write up. It's because they may not be your own.

"Beam me up…"

The most interesting method of taking a MILAB is the one we're not hearing about. It's the one involving **"Beam me up" technology.** Maybe abductees just aren't aware of it, or possibly it's deliberately being suppressed. But I believe it exists and that it's in use, and it's one way in which I, and my brother have been taken. I do have one experience that occurred in Portland Oregon in 2001/02, which seems to illustrate the existence of this technology. And a few times while living in Florida I had the roundabout indicators of having arrived suddenly back into my bed.

"Beam me up" technology wouldn't work in the sense of breaking somebody down to the molecular level and then moving those molecules to another location. When I thought about it several years ago I came up with a **(very basic)** scenario that seems to better represent how this technology might actually operate. And keep in mind that this is coming from a person with absolutely no science or physics background, so, I'm not professing to understand it on a complicated level. !!! But possibly what happens is they tune in to your body and change your frequency, shifting you to a frequency that matches the receiving end, allowing you to slip through a doorway or portal, and emerge on the other side. How that portal is created is in itself a whole side topic, implying some nifty high tech quantum physics capabilities. I had an intuitive insight/image in my mind that accompanied this realization, which I doodled on a notebook at the time, showing portals in realms lining up enabling the person to "slip through." So possibly it's all about frequency adjustment, like changing the radio dial. The dial has to be changed if they're going to pull you to them.

Soul/"subtle body" abductions

Growing up, the only type of abduction I'd ever heard of were physical examinations taking place onboard a UFO. Later on, it was physical "smash and grab" style military abductions. Only at the age of 27 did I hear for the first time about something called **"soul abductions,"** where your subtle body/astral essence is removed from your body and brought to another realm. From there, etheric implants can be attached, programming can be done, and so on. At first it sounded so farfetched that I was immediately skeptical, like, yeah, right, sure. How to you implant and program energy?? Eventually I had to consider the possibility once I began experiencing more overt abduction harassment that involved me clearly being pulled out of my body (discussed in Part II). And then I eventually did come across some better material on the subject, namely the work of the late Karla Turner who talked about aliens plucking people's energy essences, transferring them to cloned bodies, and so on. So, while people very well may be taken onboard a UFO during an abduction, soul/subtle body abductions seem to be a very real concept as well, but you won't find reference to it in most sources. **Having knowledge of this mode of abductions may fill in some holes for people out there who know that they're being taken, but yet, know that their experiences do not fit in with the standard UFO lore as we've been taught.** I'm also wondering if the advanced human black ops factions have figured out how to do this, being that they seem to be involved in some other, really far out "stuff."

Mind Control Programming

In this section I will review the basic methods for programming and compartmentalizing a target.

Trauma-based mind control

Once we know who's getting targeted, and by whom, and the possible why's, we have to look at how programming of a subject is accomplished. There are enough (now outdated) materials floating about in the world which amply cover the subject of the government's secret mind control programs over the past few decades, so I won't re-tread over a well worn area. But I do want to provide a brief overview into what government/trauma-based mind control is, taken from my website **http://in2worlds.net/mind-control-themes-and-programming-triggers-in-movies** and based on various materials I've researched, for those who are new to the topic:

> "The premise of government-sponsored trauma-based mind control is to compartmentalize the brain, and then use techniques to access the different sections of the brain while the subject is hypnotized. Entire systems can be embedded into a person's mind, each with its own theme, access codes and trigger words. Some of the most common and popular symbolisms and themes in use are **Alice in Wonderland,** (illusion inversion dream world) Peter Pan (never grow old) and **The Wizard of Oz** (over the rainbow), **mirrors, fractured mirrors/glass, porcelain/harlequin masks, the phoenix/phoenix rising, rainbows, butterflies, carousels, cages, keys and locks, puppets/marionettes and dolls** (dehumanization, you're not in control of yourself), trees (and willow trees in particular), tornadoes, **spirals/helixes, castles,** rings, hexagons/honeycombs (the honeycomb compartments of the mind), **hallways and doors, elevators and stairs** (especially spiral). (The halls, doors, elevators and stairs represent accessing compartments in the mind.) Numbers, colors and music are also heavily used for additional programming and accessing specific compartments of the brain, and are just as important.
>
> Programming centers around the concept of **inverted reality and illusion**, where nothing is at it appears to be, where up is down, yes is no, pain is pleasure, and reality and dreams are blurred. **Not being able to determine what's real and what's illusion/dream/fake is a big**

> **theme used in mind control to get targets to give up on reality and succumb to alter-ego programming.** Word play and puns also factor in heavily.
>
> A mind splitting into alternate personas usually occurs when the victim is subjected to repetitive abuse and horrors it can't cope with. The mind fractures into compartments designed to "house" the traumas that the main personality can't handle. These alternate personas can be brought to the forefront of the mind when needed to take on whatever trauma is happening. The abuse can happen to a person (usually child) in the every day real world, (usually at the hands of abusive parents and caretakers).
>
> However there are certain "Powers That Be" who have perfected the technique of artificially splitting and programming people's minds through the use of technology, drugs, hypnosis, electroshock and trauma. In this case, the targets are said to military personnel (usually Intelligence) and their immediate family used for experimentation, and the closely intertwined MILABS (military abductees); society's throw away kids, teens and young adults who were plucked from detention centers, the streets or sold into programs by their own parents; entertainment industry performers, etc., among the various people and groups used. The artificially split mind is run exactly like a computer program, complete with its own theme and trigger codes and access words. It can be turned on and off like a switch, and the programmer/handler has complete control over what the system themes and trigger words will be. The alternate persona won't emerge unless the trigger word/song/phrase is given. The victim is fully functional in society and won't even know they have this aspect of themselves buried within their subconscious…."

In addition to all of the above, mind control programming will often times involve instilling repetitive commands into the target's mind, with reinforcement of the commands. And as overly simplistic as the method sounds, it's actually pretty effective. Any hypnotist knows and can demonstrate the power of a post-hypnotic suggestion, so imagine that in conjunction with drugs and even electroshock reinforcement. However, this type of programming doesn't have to be accomplished in person, apparently. In Part II I mention my own instances of waking up and catching them in the act of instilling repetitive programming in my mind…while I slept, taking advantage of my suggestible sleep state, possibly via implants or beaming technology.

Something I was recently pondering on is how I apparently show signs of having multiple "personas" (versus full on personalities), and at one point experienced an accident emergence of one of those personas while at work (mentioned in Part III in the section "Multiple Personalities vs. Multiple Personas) so it clearly seems that this programming is going on in my life, especially factoring in everything else around it, as mentioned in this book. And yet, growing up I did not show outward signs of physical trauma being done to me, the way many mind control targets will who will have markings and injuries on the body (burns, cuts, etc.) and illness. So at first glance it seems ludicrous for me to think I could have ever experienced something of the sort. At best, I've only experienced anomalous markings on my body as an adult, bruises, light scratches and such that weren't there when I went to bed the night before. So what gives? And not to sound like I'm trying to make something fit here, because trust me, nobody "wants" to be a target of this, but one thing I've realized is that trauma-based mind control wouldn't have to involve actual *physical* trauma. If a target has to be out functioning in the world, not drawing attention to themselves then the deed can be accomplished in other ways. Putting the target into extremely stressful lose-lose psychological situations is one that comes to mind, probably involving harm coming to somebody/something else, rather than themselves, and where they can't cope and just break down and fragment off. That's very easy in fact, probably easier than the use of straight up physical pain I'd imagine. So that's something to keep in mind. Mind control targets are varied, some are kept primarily behind-the-scenes where markings and the resulting physical harm and illness of the body is "okay," while others have to be out there in the world, and not have overt indications that would trigger unwanted attention. All of which means, **techniques may vary, depending on who they're dealing with.**

When you do the research, you'll come across a lot of references to trauma-based mind control in the older generation, the "Monarchs," if you will. When reading books on the subject as well as perusing message board threads, I've noticed a proliferation of people who were being taken and programmed this way as kids back in the 1950's and 60's. Parents selling their kids to government programs thinking they were being patriotic, stories of being herded out of school in the middle of the day and put on busses to be taken to programming facilities, kids who were abused through their churches and high up "Illuminati" circles, people who claim to have been programmed by Josef Mengele himself, aka "Dr. Green" and so on. Really eye opening, shocking stuff. Whether true or not, I don't know, but Project Monarch is a biggie…but it's also going to be outdated, keep in mind. We need to find out how they're doing their operations now, in the present. While some groups/factions may still be using the old fashioned, "Project Paperclip/Nazi holdover" style of hands-on trauma programming, keep in mind that technology has come a long way in the past 30-40 years, and has probably replaced much of the old methods.

On a side note, this is probably as good a section as any to address the fact that those who've undergone programming, as covert and under the radar as it may be, will probably still have various personality quirks and behavior/mood issues going on. So one of the things I've wondered is whether mind control (and being messed with in general) **may cause many of the same traits as various psychological disorders.** And I don't say this to try to blame mind control and abductions on everything, invalidating the idea that some people out there really do have imbalances going on. But maybe some people who've been diagnosed as having certain disorders really don't, and in fact, are MILABS and mind control targets. As noted elsewhere in this write up, mind control utilizes technology that allows "voices" to be beamed into targets' minds, mimicking a trait commonly associated with **schizophrenia.** Residual amped up energy from abductions, depression from negative programming, delusions of infallible grandeur due to criminal agent provocateur programming, etc. all mimic various traits of **bi-polar disorder.** There's also the idea that programming possibly could be cleverly hidden behind pre-existing chemical/hormonal/psychological issues within the target, or, genuine chemical/psych issues may in turn be aggravated by programming, becoming magnified when they otherwise wouldn't. So, something to consider.

Then there's the issue of deprogramming. I don't even touch on that in this book, because honestly I know nothing about it, and it's a huge subject that's better left to people who know what they're talking about. I still have yet to go under hypnosis to try to retrieve my own abduction memories. I'm not entirely sure that one can be fully deprogrammed and patched back up. An attempt at something like that would require enormous amounts of time, money and energy with a skilled hypnotherapist who's well versed in navigating through compartmentalized systems and alters. Not to sound pessimistic but, good luck there. It's not exactly like you can find someone like that by flipping open your local Yellow Pages.

My belief is that if somebody would like to get started right **now**, for free, making some sort of progress on themselves, then start first by removing sources of triggering from your life, be it toxic situations and people, the media (which is a BIG avenue of triggering), etc. Those are two important biggies right there. And then work at becoming more mindful in life, alert and aware of all thoughts, ideas, and urges. Question and analyze everything you think or do in order to make sure you're not acting on programming. The more you do this, the more you strengthen your mind, and the more control you gain over yourself.

Soul Fragmentation

Something else that seems to create the same effect as trauma based mind control is the phenomena known as "soul fragmentation." Not everybody believes in a soul, or things relating to spirituality, so this could be considered controversial. But the concept of soul fragmentation is exactly what it sounds like – the soul fragmenting off, due to traumatic life events. In mind control research the concept is typically understood as the mind fracturing and compartmentalizing into different personas, but in fact it may be the soul fracturing off, and/or being joined by other soul fragments, known as soul/entity attachments. Several books that I recommend for further research into this subject would be:

Remarkable Healings – A Psychiatrist Discovers Unsuspected Roots of Mental and Physical Illness - Shakuntali Modi, M.D.

Soul Retrieval – Mending the Fragmented Self – Sandra Ingerman

Spirit Releasement Therapy – A Technique Manual – William J. Baldwin, PhD.

I'm sure there are other works out there relating to this subject, those just happen to be three that we have on our bookshelf here at home that provide an excellent starting place. At this stage in my research I tend to think that what's actually happening with mind control and multiple personas/personalities involves the functions of the soul, more so than the brain, although there's definitely the possibility that it could involve a mix of both psychology and soul. The reason I tentatively conclude this is because psychology has never really been able to solve the problem of fully integrating a fragmented and traumatized personality. However, the practices of soul retrieval and spirit releasement apparently have, with great success. So this may be the viable alternative to seeking out costly and time consuming psychological integration therapies. From what I've read, if done right with a skilled shaman or practioner, soul retrievals can produce results within only one session, and even better, the shaman/practioner doesn't need to be knowledgeable in the subject of mind control in order to do it. But I leave it up to the reader to draw their own conclusions after doing the research.

Blocking and Erasing Memories

In the case of MILABs, the research is showing that drugs, hypnosis and electroshock are the common modes of operation not only for programming, but for wiping out the abductee's memories of the event. However, memories do manage to make it through despite that. In my own experience there's what I call memory surging, which I haven't read about anywhere so far. It's where you know that "something" has happened, and the memory repeatedly tries to surge forth, but it can't fully come out due to blocking techniques that keep things compartmentalized and under the surface. I describe a good example of this in the section called "Manipulated Jobs" in Part III. Still other times, bits and pieces of memory flashes do manage to leak through, illustrated in Part II, under "Actual Memories."

Let's start first with an overview of drugs, electroshock and hypnosis in eliminating memories, and their pros and cons:

- **Drugs.** From Fritz Springmeier's "The Illuminati Formula for Creating a Totally Undetectable Mind Control Slave": "The CIA/Illuminati programming centers have more than 600-700 different drugs at their disposal...they can make a person feel like he is in heaven, or burning in hell. The drugs are at times used with elaborate light, sound and motion shows that produce whatever effect the programmer wants to produce. They can make a person believe he is shrinking, or that he is double (with mirrors) or that he is dying…"

Fritz goes on to name a comprehensive list of drugs that are supposedly in use, notes that there are new synthetic versions now available for some, and also mentions that Cannabis, aka Marijuana, is "not used much in Monarch Programming because it IMPEDES mind control." Interesting.

I imagine the cons of drug use in programming and memory erasing is that an abductee who is put back into the "real world" may have residual after effects of drug usage, which would clue the target in that something has happened to them. Not good, or practical, if the abductee needs to work and function in the real world and/or if "stuff" intends to keep the situation as covert as possible. In Part II I recount how residual drug leftovers seems to have happened with me on at least one occasion.

- **Electroshock.** Again, from Fritz : "…Stun guns, staffs with hidden electric cattle prods, and cattle prods are frequently used on the slaves. Electroshock is used to create the dissociation from trauma during the programming, and later it is used to remove memories after the slave has carried out a mission, or to instill fear and obedience in a reluctant slave. A slave often shows electroshock marks on their feet, or back, or buttock or legs after they have been used. An owner of a slave will ordinarily carry a stun gun. This is perhaps a 120,000 DC volt stun gun **to erase & compartmentalize memories**, but some of the stun guns go up to 200,000 volts DC….**After giving programming instructions they will usually give a high voltage shock to the base of the skull to imbed the instructions deep in the subconscious. They often use hypnotic cues along with the shock…The shock destroys and scrambles the memory which is still stored in the short term memory section of the brain.** They must shock the person within 24 hours, to insure that the short term memory doesn't get into the long term memory as a coherent memory…"

I bolded that last part in light of one of my own post-abduction situations where I was in a blank stupor for a whole week, left with a lump on the **base of my skull,** and how when I touched it I immediately had the **very loud instruction/cue** of "IT'S JUST A SPIDER BITE!!!" yell through my mind, complete with an image of a black and yellow orb spider. (more details about this coming up later.) So it all uncannily matches up to what he's saying. He goes on to describe one way that these electroshock prod marks can appear on the body: "The bruise on the buttocks will be **black and blue spots** about 1 ½" diameter each." I found all of this interesting because of my own anomalous circular, deep purple colored bruises that have periodically appeared on (**hidden)** areas of my legs, usually following a suspected abduction. My bruises are a little smaller than what Fritz describes though. On one occasion, one of them was coincidentally surrounded by highly sensitive leg hair stubble that was painful to the touch and sticking straight out. The other leg stubble was normal.

- **Hypnosis.** Hypnosis is a very convenient way to instill programming into somebody's mind, requiring trigger codes to access the blocked off areas…but it may not be the best way to ensure total elimination of the programming session memory itself. As mentioned in Carla Emery's "Secret, Don't Tell", unless the programmer covers all bases, every time, they are bound to slip up sooner or later, allowing for memories to get past the target. For that reason, drugs and electroshock are added to the mix with a military abductee, and possibly the joint military/alien endeavors, to ensure proper compartmentalization.

It kind of surprised me to read (and have personal evidence for the fact) that "they" would have to resort to good old fashioned drugs, zapping and commands considering the advanced technology at their disposal. I would have thought that they would have devised more sophisticated methods. But if it isn't broke, then don't fix it I guess….

Dreams, reality context and the "assemblage point"

An interesting concept relating to abduction memory loss that ties into metaphysics, and may be something that occurs during MILABs/alien abductions, is what's known as **"shifting the assemblage point**." The assemblage point, as taught by those who practice the Toltec path, is where our normal awareness lies during our every day lives. Through our lifelong experiences, as dictated by our parents, peers, school and society as a whole, we become locked into a particular set view of reality – known as our assemblage point. It's the reason we aren't usually able to see the other realms, or why some children start out being able to see spirits and auras, and over time, lose that ability. We get squelched down and stifled, discouraged and pushed into a box that locks us into a set way of seeing and viewing reality. When we dream however, our assemblage point naturally shifts slightly, enabling some of the strange nocturnal experiences that many people experience. A Toltec warrior, through the help of a nagual (similar to a shaman) practices being able to shift their assemblage point at will – while they are awake – to be able to access those other realms that are not normally available to us. There's one catch though, as noted by author Carlos Castaneda – when shifting back into the normal assemblage point position, the memories of everything that was done, said or experienced while in the altered assemblage point position state is forgotten! **Only when shifting the assemblage point back again can those memories be accessed.** And then it becomes a situation of "How could I have forgotten everything I did the last time I was 'here'!" Carlos experienced that amnesia split and mentions it in several of his books.

Does this sound familiar? Sounds very much like the whole **compartmentalized mind** thing to me. So possibly another aspect of what's happening when an abductee is taken during alien/MILABs encounters involves a natural **shifting of the assemblage point**. If abductors are taking targets to bases or locations that are straddling different densities or realms, putting the abductee into an altered state of awareness and consciousness, then those targets may very well experience a natural shifting of their assemblage point, which would further help to compartmentalize their memories and experiences.

I tend to actually think this may be a big part of what's happening, and my boyfriend Tom, a lifelong abductee, remembers experiencing this as a young child. At the start of his abductions he would be confused as to what was happening, but as soon as things would begin kicking in, all the previous memories would come flooding back to the surface, leaving him with the feeling of "I can't believe that I forgot!" Each and every time this would happen. Kind of like that other reality is put on hold while he was back in "the real world." It's identical to what Carlos Castaneda describes when remembering his compartmentalized experiences while in his various assemblage point positions.

Memory surging

As mentioned earlier, there's what I call **"memory surging."** This is when the memory of an abduction event is trying desperately to break through to the surface of the conscious mind, but **feels as if it's repeatedly running into a "roof" or "ceiling."** The knowledge of the event is there, and it nearly comes through…you can even get a feeling around it, manufactured positive, or outright negative…but it's impossible to access the actual memory. I've experienced this on two particular occasions, and it creates a maddening feeling. I'm not sure what causes "surging," versus memories being completely wiped out without a trace. Possibly it's the technique being used – maybe certain techniques for memory erasing are more effective than others, and have different results.

In other cases, actual memory flashes do manage to pop through, not triggered by anything in particular – only to immediately disappear back under the surface again. I've experienced this a couple of times and have heard other abductees describe it. And these memories may spontaneously pop back up to the surface yet again at a later time, reminding you that Hey!....you had this memory before, but lost it! It's just amazing to see the effects of programming at work like that, and the tug-of-war struggle going on in the brain. My suggestion is to carry a little notebook and pen with you wherever you go in case you experience spontaneous memory recall, this way you can jot it down before it's lost again…which it usually will be. You may find, like I did, that you have strong programming instilled to deter you from focusing on the fact that you're having this recollection – but I think this can be conquered. Once you're aware that you're occasionally remembering random flashes, but have programming instilled telling you to ignore them, then it's just a matter of combating it by honing your awareness and mental alertness.

Admittedly it's not going to always work though, like the incident that happened to me recently. I was lying in bed and started to remember something about another life that I lead (possibly programmed compartmentalized alter?) It was there, popping to the surface, a veil of amnesia was lifting and I could touch the beginnings of memories of another double existence. The impression I got in that brief moment was like dream-time compartmentalization. When I'm "over there" in that life, whatever it is, this life here is like a dream that's not real. And when I'm over here, I have no conscious memories of that one over there. But then just as suddenly as it rose to the surface it was gone, and I couldn't get it back. Totally maddening!! All I was left with was the intellectual knowing that this had happened.

And then I've had my own actual abduction memory flashes that emerged due to something triggering the recall, instances of which are detailed in Part II. How can this happen, how would a memory make it past the erasing process? Well, what I've noticed is that in most of my memory flashes, what defined these flashes was that **something very specific was attracting my total focused and curious/frightened interest,** independent of "their" direction.....and sometimes in spite of it. And maybe that pulled me back up into conscious awareness during the abduction just long enough to make an indelible stamp onto my brain that even the erasing techniques couldn't later eliminate…? Either that, or it **pulled me back into my normal, conscious waking life's assemblage point position**, as explained in the previous section, which is why I could remember the memory flash – ie, access it – during normal waking life.

Screen memories

There's a notable aspect to military abductions: using "aliens" as a screen memory to cover their actions. I've come across talk of an increase in rogue military units abducting people, programming/abusing them, then using alien screens to mask the activity. If the military black ops want to snag you but they don't want you to remember anything that might incriminate them, then using an alien screen is perfect cover. Some people actually enjoy the idea of being taken by aliens, and so if they believe they're being taken by the Grays, then they may willingly allow it to happen again and again and put up no resistance to being abducted…**not realizing of course, that they're actually being taken and programmed by humans.** For others it's the exact opposite - the idea of coming forward and admitting to anybody that they were possibly taken by "space aliens" is so humiliating and unacceptable that they will just keep quiet. It's "alien screen memories as built in no-talk insurance."

This whole subject can get a little screwy, because a screen memory could be the military abduction using "aliens" as a screen memory, or maybe an "alien" abduction using the "military" as a screen memory. Basically a situation of "stuff" tricking people into believing they had experiences that they didn't…which then can lead to abductees going out into the world to propagate what they **believe** they know to be true about their situation, and then promote the things they were told or shown during their abductions. It's in my opinion that this is actually a big part of what's going on with regards to the pro-alien authors and channelers out there in the world. I don't think their experiences are always what they'd like to believe they are.

I've had my own experience with what seems to be Gray alien screen memories following my first ever consciously realized abduction in October, 2001, coming up in Part II. The images of Gray alien faces were like literal wallpaper in my mind's eye, and every time I closed my eyes I was inundated with images of Grays from all angles. This lasted for several days before finally trickling off. I knew something had happened and that I'd obviously been abducted, but something felt off and wrong about these non-stop images. It seemed forced. Like something desperately wanted me to believe that I'd been taken by "Gray aliens!" They were trying too hard, and in their overzealousness to get me to see "Grays!" they overshot it and only wound up making me suspicious. Which leads to…

Overzealous programming attempts

Sometimes I've encountered programming attempts that left me shaking my head, like, Did they actually think I would fall for that…?! Wow. But then I had to realize that the reason they did it was because **it *does* apparently work…on others.**

The modes of operation of humans in abductions often times reminds me of the way neg entities operate. Neg entities have a formulaic blue print that they go by, using the same tactics on everybody across the board. They lack creative capabilities, and so don't vary their attack/harassment strategies to custom fit you, the free thinking individual with a complex personality. I noticed this on my own regarding neg entities, and later read confirmation for this in the highly recommended book "Practical Psychic Self Defense" by Robert Bruce. And the same mode of operation often times goes for humans/hybrids in military/black ops abductions…surprisingly.

My aforementioned Gray screen memories that went overboard to the point of ridiculousness are probably typical of how they attempt to brainwash a subject to have images in their mind that will reinforce particular ideas.

Several days after another abduction in 2002, which I'll expand on in Part II, I discovered a painless lump on the base of my skull; I unconsciously went hunting for it, my fingers searching under my hair until I found it. And when I did, I had the very loud and immediate commanding thought that **"IT'S JUST A SPIDER BITE!"** accompanied by a very large and sudden image in my mind of a black and yellow orb spider. !! Talk about obvious. Hello. **But again, the reason they did that is because it means it *does* work…on other people.** People, somewhere, are obviously just believing what they're being programmed to believe. They're lacking the alertness and strong conscious mindset required to stop and notice and question things. "Oh, okay, yeah, huh, spider bite, okay…" and they're off to the next thing, in a dazed stupor.

Since the original writing of this book I've received an email from a woman who identifies herself as a MILAB, saying she has experienced the "IT'S JUST A SPIDER BITE!" voice/programming in her own mind. It was in response to touching a lump on her skull, as well as a mysterious puncture wound on her neck. She said there were other things I discuss in this book that she has also experienced, but she focused on that in her email because it's so specific and unusual. I could tell from her tone that it was exciting for her to read that. She's the only other person I've heard this from, but even if it's just one other it means it's definitely something. It validates for me that this book really can be helpful in providing corroboration for people.

I've also woken up to catch them in the act of programming me with negative thought patterns, also outlined in Part II. This can be accomplished via implant and/or microwave technology I imagine, though there may be other methods. This is very important to be aware of because these negative thought pattern programs are designed to go straight into the subconscious. You won't consciously remember them, but their detrimental effects will become obvious in your waking life as moods may plummet, or there's an attitude change towards one or more relationships in one's life, or one no longer has the enthusiasm for things they used to have, or begins developing a negative self image, etc. I happened to be lucky enough to wake up in the middle of it on two occasions, otherwise I would have had no clue that something like this was happening. It doesn't mean that every single shift in mood or personality fluctuation should be blamed on programming, you don't want to fall into that paranoid victimization habit. It just means be mindful of this as a possibility when things shift and change. If a shift/change is very sudden, happening overnight, and lasts beyond something that could be excused as hormonal or health-related, with no apparent cause, then it's certainly suspect.

So, be on the lookout for their overzealous programming attempts. They're not as all powerful as one might imagine them to be if they're blatantly getting caught like that. Keep your mind alert, and question everything. Get in the habit of scrutinizing and questioning, if you don't already. They don't like aware, alert people, because **an aware alert person is one with higher instances of failed programming attempts**, and who can even wake up in the middle of programming, as well as consciously overriding programmed urges. So be that person. It is possible.

Virtual reality/dream time programming

The article "MILABS Operations" by James Bartley, listed in my "Recommended Reading" section, gets into one component not often heard in the research – the virtual reality/dream time programming of MILABS targets. I get into it more later in this book with regards to how it's used for "end times programming," but for this section I want to talk about MILABS who claim to have memories of being used for **dangerous black ops reconnaissance type missions.** I've come across several references now to MILABS who've supposedly had this sort of thing happening to them, where the shadow government is using its mind controlled subjects to do illegal dirty work in other countries in Central and South America for instance. The MILABS are supposedly used to go after drug lords, or to do some sort of rescue operation, wielding automatic weapons where they get to put their training to use, dodging bullets in crazy shootouts, and so on. On the surface it sounds plausible – these people are being given training, so, it must be for a reason. And the government can't use its own legitimate paid personnel for illegal clandestine operations in other countries. So, that's what the MILABS could be used for…right?

Well, I don't know. I have my doubts.

In reading these accounts – which are always taken at face value by the targets as having been real experiences that they lived through in their alternate double life – my intuition always kicks in and leaves me thinking, "ummm….nooooo….I don't know about this…." I don't necessarily believe these women are lying (although of course you never know….) and they come across as if they really believe these things happened to them. The accounts are very detailed and full of high action. It's just that I don't think that they really happened. Call me skeptical, but I just don't think that these women, even with the best "secret training," could survive through what they supposedly are put through. In one book in particular the female author's high action secret operative account disintegrated into a very dream-like quality, and didn't feel real to me at all when reading it. Which brings us back to James Bartley's article where he discusses the dream time and virtual reality component of MILABS programming.

> "A grey area exists as far as determining whether certain training experiences are conducted in the dense physical state or in the astral state or in the dreamscape. Sometimes the training may be a literal "theater of the mind" wherein the milab is physically sleeping in his bed but a complex and vivid virtual reality scenario is playing out in his or her mind that seemingly involves a lot of physical activity. The milab controllers, like the aliens and reptilians before them, can create extremely vivid "stage managed dreams" within the minds of sleeping people.
>
> "Even seasoned milabs with a high degree of conscious awareness and dream lucidity can't always be sure if a particular training session is in the dense physical state, astral state or if it is a virtual reality scenario."

Further in the article he writes:

> "One milab described running up a hill with two female milab friends. They were being pursued by two men wearing dark woodland pattenr camouflage uniforms with black ski masks pulled over their faces. They were armed with automatic weapons. The male milab received the telepathic message that the two gunmen are part of a "Serbian Assassination Group." [….] As the milabs ran uphill towards a large number of boulders and relative safety, one of the milab women was shot in the head.

> "The male milab looked down at his close friend and noticed that the top of her head was blown off and was clearly dead. The other female milab was wailing in anguish and wanted to stay with the body of her friend. The male milab knew there was nothing they could do for their friend [....] As much as it pained him, he grabbed the surviving female milab by the arm and pulled her up towards the safety of the boulders. A couple of days later, the three milabs spoke on the phone about this training experience. The gal who had her head blown off didn't remember the experience while the two "survivors" did. (This training exercise was obviously some kind of virtual reality training experience.) The two who remember their friend getting killed were emotionally overwrought during the training scenario. The male milab even remembers telling himself over and over during the experience that he hoped it was some kind of training scenario he was involved in and "was not real."

I bring attention to this because the virtual reality/dream time aspect of MILABS programming isn't really being discussed by anybody else that I'm aware of, and for that reason it needs all the highlighted attention it can get. Most MILABS aren't aware of it either, as evidenced by some of the books I've read where authors took their experiences at literal face value. So it's something to keep in mind when reading MILABS supposed accounts of clandestine black ops reconnaissance missions in exotic countries being presented as actual physical experiences that they really lived through. Things are not always what they seem to be. Dream programming and manipulation is a whole subject in itself, and so I expand on the subject in Part III, in the section called **"Dreamtime Manipulation."**

Implants

I believe that every abductee is implanted. It goes with the territory, so it's a useful subject to look into. But admittedly I'm no expert on the subject, other than I'm aware that there are both physical and etheric implants, and that they serve a variety of purposes including: monitoring, influencing or controlling a target's behavior/actions, implanting thoughts into minds which are not people's own, and/or even creating the "voices in the head" phenomena, and affecting a person's energy/chakras in order to impact their health or even their psychic abilities. Other than that, I'm not much of a help. All I can do is refer people to some starter sources that seem to have something useful and insightful to say about it all.

As with any material that I recommend, it doesn't mean I agree 100% with what's being said, or the way in which an author may write or present their material, or even that I support their views on other things they write about. It just means there was enough of something interesting and informative in the one specific piece to make it worth passing along. The works that I mention here represent what I felt was a sampling on the topic, from very different people who tackle the subject in their own unique ways, but who all have the common goal of educating the public about what's happening. But as always, the reader needs to discern for themselves.

On a side note – as with all things relating to MILABs, we're probably going to have very little current and accurate information on the cutting edge technology being employed with implants. So when you embark on implant technology research, keep that in mind – you may be getting outdated, decades-old information.

"Microchip Implants, Mind Control and Cybernetics" by Rauni-Leena Luukanen-Kilde, MD. **http://www.whale.to/b/kilde.html**

"Implants: Locations – Problems – Solutions" by Lilly Ochescu. Personalized article written by a female abductee regarding both physical and etheric implant warfare. **http://educate-yourself.org/ww/implantsAlocation04may06.shtml**

Roger Leir. Site devoted to investigating – and removing - alien implants. Includes surgery photos of implant removal. **http://www.alienscalpel.com/main.htm**

"Casebook: Alien Implants" by Whitley Strieber. Book that investigates implants which have been removed from abductees. Includes photos.

"Close Encounters of the Possession Kind" – Dr. William Baldwin. Interesting book that delves into the subject of alien entity attachments, and their etheric implants and techno gadgets that they attach to their abduction target. A good book for those who believe themselves to be an abductee, but hadn't realized this component of it all.

http://www.amazon.com/gp/product/0929915224/qid=1151184587/sr=1-1/ref=sr_1_1/103-4617425-1547042?s=books&v=glance&n=283155

Wave Beaming Harassment

Microwave/scalar targeting/harassment is another component of abductions. In my own life, my boyfriend Tom and I experienced this while living in Fort Lauderdale Florida, both in his apartment and my own which we would later jointly share. The situation was so bad that it was causing **headaches, lethargy, impaired mental state, and even disrupted sleep and nightmares**. The dull aching in my head and disrupted sleep state was especially distressing for me being that I normally don't have issues with headaches, as a lot of other people apparently do, and I very much enjoy my sleep! Tom has a little gadget that detects electronic signals and he was able to determine that the electronic wave size matched that of cell phone/microwaves. But it turned out to be a lot more than just random cell phone wave pollution, as I will show in a second.

Because of the debilitating mental and physical effects these microwave/cell phone waves were having on us, up went the electrically grounded, aluminum Mylar sheeting on some of the walls. We purchased the Mylar "space blankets" (emergency blankets) for camping that anybody can buy for $2.99 at their local sporting goods store, and Tom already had the wires and alligator clips on hand to ground them electrically into the wall sockets. And while I was dismayed at the prospect of how this would cause my apartment to look – forget the idea of cool decorating when your walls are lined in Mylar – we had no choice in the matter. The situation was that bad.

Two main walls of my apartment had to have this Mylar sheeting, because those were the angles that the waves were getting us from. The third wall was shared with our next door neighbor. And we couldn't do anything about the fourth wall in the kitchen, or the kitchen area in general, because of the way things were set up. That was alright though, the most important area was where we slept, worked on the computer, and did our reading, writing and research. From the first night that we buffered the apartment with the Mylar the disrupted sleep and nightmares stopped. I slept calmly and peacefully, was headache-free, and back to my usual energetic self, able to focus clearly. I can't imagine if Tom didn't have awareness about this and didn't have the electronic gadget to detect the waves, or the knowledge of what to do about it all. **How many other people are being targeted like this every day, effectively being put out of commission…due to lack of awareness?**

But what's even more interesting is the experiment that Tom performed back when he lived in his own apartment, where he used his signal detector to determine a) that there were waves beaming in, and b) where they were beamed in the apartment. Then he got on the floor, sandwiching himself between the stove and the counter to hide. Giving it a few minutes he finally got back up and checked around with the signal detector.

There were no microwaves coming in anymore.

However, within several minutes of being back up and moving around his apartment, the signals came back, as indicated by the detector. It was like he was being "triangulated."

Now, what are the implications of *that?* This is showing that these are "smart signals", with an intelligent source driving them. It means that it wasn't just random cell phone pollution. They were definitely being beamed by somebody or something, and for a specific reason…and only when that "something" could sense Tom's presence moving around in the apartment.

Another experiment involved determining the source angle for where the waves were coming in, putting up Mylar sheeting, then waiting for about a day or two and checking again.

The signals had shifted now, attempting to go around where they were being blocked. So again, proving there's an intelligent source behind the signal, whether automated technology or actual humans.

Microwaves being beamed at abduction targets seems to be a classic harassment tactic that I've encountered when doing research, **but we don't have to be victims of it.** People have no idea what just a couple of three dollar sheets of Mylar can do. I've read cases where people had to keep periodically moving once the harassers located them and resumed their beam attacks. But it doesn't have to be that way. A noteworthy must-read for further information on this subject would be the following, which also includes links for where to obtain the signal detector mentioned here. **http://montalk.net/conspiracy/55**

"Sickness beams"

For lack of a better term to refer to this, sickness beams are something you'll hear about when you do the research into MILABs harassment. They can be beamed in various ways, but one technique involves hovering helicopters. The target in question will soon find themselves developing some debilitating, and/or life threatening ailment to stop them in their research and take them out of the picture.

To many, this is the ultimate in fear. The sense of powerlessness it creates, and the God-like abilities that these military spooks wield is incredible. You can't beat that…right???

Wrong.

For more elaboration on this, please see Part III, "Fear in relation to the abduction experience." I elaborate in full detail about this, and other fear/harassment/elimination tactics. **We are not the helpless victims they would have us believe. We have full control over what happens to our bodies and our lives, *not them*.** Even when it comes to sickness beams. I don't care what you believe you know about how things are, I'm here to tell you that we've been programmed with self-defeating limitation, living in a reality that has been carefully manipulated at every turn to strip us of our natural abilities. You CAN fight back against even sickness beams, in my opinion. **And if the reader remembers only one thing out of this entire write up, let this be it.** Skip ahead to Part III if this is a topic of interest for you.

The World Underground

Ah, no alien/military write up would be complete without mention of the underground bases and tunnels. Hyperdimensional realms aside, there is supposedly a whole secondary layer to our reality going on now, right under our feet. Literally. There's the la-la land surface world where we're kept amused and distracted with entertainment, the media, drink/drugs, materialism and consumerism, debt, poverty and daily struggle, political distraction and wars, and then there's this whole other behind-the-scenes reality going on that most will never even get a glimpse of. If the reports of the dozens of underground bases with their cross-country connecting subterranean tunnel transport systems and alien hieroglyphics on the signs are correct, then it's safe to say that "something else" has officially taken over.

This is a topic that fascinates me the most. When I was roommating with my brother Joe (a MILAB) in Portland, Oregon in 2001, he relayed an experience of an abduction that he claimed took place in an underground base in October of that year. Here's what he relayed to me about what he saw, but as I mention in my section about "Untangling Disinformation," I'm not endorsing what he said or promoting it as gospel. I simply relay it for the reader's consideration, and also in case anybody out there has experienced something similar. It also needs to be mentioned as well that Joe wasn't a normal "MILABs" by any means, so when I'm recounting things that he saw, keep in mind he wasn't just some innocent wide-eyed MILAB target. It appears that he was re-animated, and piloted by other "stuff," making his situation above and beyond anything that most people will ever experience. It means he was a pawn of sorts, and for that reason I don't get too much into his story in this book only because I don't think the average abductee has somebody in their life that's to the level that Joe was. It was pretty extreme and out there, and would be considered the fringe of the fringe.

At any rate, Joe claimed that he was taken to a base – instant beam transport from his apartment in Portland - where he recalls seeing aliens and humans working side by side. The temperature in the base was cold, and he was being escorted down a hallway by two human males. They passed by a 6 foot + tall Amphibian creature who eyed up my brother suspiciously as they passed by. It was more like an Amphibian humanoid, and came across as being highly intelligent. Joe even imitated the way this thing eyed him up…with eyes that were more towards the side of its head. He said that everybody seemed busy, everybody had something to do. I asked him if he recalled seeing any Grays…or even Reptilians, since that's what I had just recently been reading about in David Icke's book. He said no, just these Amphibian beings. That surprised me because I'd never heard of such a thing as "amphibian aliens." It sounded ludicrous. But, the idea of amphibian beings would later be corroborated in my research, as well as bizarre genetic crossbreeding experiments in underground bases using human DNA and various creatures. So who knows.

He also recalled being taken into a room where the lighting situation was unusual. He couldn't find a source for the lighting, no light bulbs or fixtures like you might find in the "real world." Instead the walls themselves seemed to glow, lit up from within. That was interesting to me, but again, I had no way to prove any of it. Not until almost four years later in 2005, when Tom came across a channeling source called Cosmic Awareness that corroborated this particular detail with regards to lighting in underground bases:

> "All is controlled by advanced magnetics. That includes a **magnetically induced (phosphorescent) illumination system. There are no regular light bulbs…"**
>
> "…This Awareness indicates the lighting system used as that which is painted upon the walls, or placed on the walls in a kind of paint which is affected by an electromagnetic charge that is applied, **which causes the wall to light** -- this affecting the paint on the walls and the substances that are in that painted material."

There were also hieroglyphic characters on the walls my brother reported, various symbols that he claimed to have been doodling for awhile. Later on I would find myself talking on the phone to an old blind psychic woman named Maryann that Tom had put me in touch with. She was very knowledgeable of the UFO/abduction subject and underground bases, and she asked me, "Does your brother ever doodle triangles inside circles?" I was sitting on the floor with the phone to my ear, and as she asked me that, my eyes traveled upwards to the wall in front of me with all the graffiti stuff my brother had scrawled everywhere…including a big spray painted circle with a triangle inside it. "Yeah, he does actually…I'm looking at one right now…"

During this abduction Joe claims that a wrist injury he's had since he was twelve was fixed through surgery. Back story: When Joe was twelve he broke his right wrist after falling off a swing. It was set incorrectly, so the doctors later performed a surgery to go in and re-break it and re-set it when he was thirteen. And it was never right after that. By the time he was roommating with me in California between 2000-01 he was always wearing a wrist brace, nursing a wrist and hand that were swollen red/purple and rendered almost completely useless, causing him to rely on his left hand. However when I moved up to Oregon to roommate with him in late 2001 the first thing I noticed was that his ever present wrist brace was gone. Not only that, but he was using his right hand unimpeded for the first time in years, and everything looked perfect. Surprised, I asked him about this. He just smirked with that glossy eyed smirk he'd always get and said that They fixed it for him [during this October abduction, it turns out]. He showed me the reddish surgical line on the side of his wrist that was probably no more than a half inch in length. I think it was the outer side, but I can't remember now. Joe had no money and definitely no medical insurance to have gotten any kind of surgery or mainstream world doctor's assistance with his wrist. In fact he'd been living out of his car until only recently. But there was no doubt his wrist was perfect now, in a way it had not been since he was twelve, and in the rest of the time I knew him he never had issues with it again. I tried taking a picture of this mysterious red line scar on his completely healed wrist and was unable to. The camera I had at that time would not allow for close up shots like that. It's a very frustrating thing, that's all I can say. I could kick myself for not getting some sort of documentation of this. For that reason I did not include this anecdote in original versions of the book, because when referring to physical based woo-woo happenings I like to talk about things I can provide photographic proof for, and for this incident I have none. But regardless, I'll go ahead and mention it now because it's another important part of the story for what Joe claims to have experienced when taken to this "base" during an abduction.

Whether his experience happened or not, I can't verify, considering that he was a pawn of sorts. Possibly the base he was at was nothing like what he thinks he saw, and he was implanted/programmed with false memories to corroborate what "they" knew I would later come across.

The idea that there is an entire secondary world happening, underground cities and roadways and the whole set up, right under our feet (or within mountains), is pretty significant. Keeping that in mind actually explains a lot of what's going on in this world. You hear people complaining about how bizarre things have gotten in the world zoo we occupy…but guaranteed, **most people are not keeping the idea of this other layer of reality in mind as they complain**. The average person wouldn't know about it anyway, but even the conspiracy researchers tend to forget. Until I had a dream that took place in an underground base back in 2000, I had absolutely no comprehension of "surface world" versus "underground world." So what we're seeing on the surface isn't all there is, and it helps to keep that in mind when trying to make sense of why things are the way they are in the world. I would recommend looking into this subject if it interests you – underground/underwater bases, tunnels and highways, and bases built into mountains - as it's always good to expand our view of what we think we know about reality. One author in particular to start with is Richard Sauder, who's written a couple of books on the subject including, "Underground Bases and Tunnels: What is the Government Trying to Hide?" and "Underwater and Underground Bases." It's another step in detaching from the herd and gaining the much needed bigger perspective about things.

Part II
My own experiences

I've learned that the best way to get to the bottom of things is by trading personal experiences. Putting what you've seen and heard and learned out there for others to read, so they can compare it to what they've gone through. For myself, reading abductee's personal stories were always the most helpful and useful, due to their wealth of specific details, versus the emotionally detached, intellectual dissertations on the government's "Project This" and "Project That."

In adding my own experiences and theories to the pile maybe somebody out there will read what I've written and experience that light bulb "aha" moment, and get possible needed corroboration, answers, or realizations, or at least use it as a launching pad of sorts. This is how you begin to figure out what's what, and find those missing pieces.

When trying to get answers to what's happened to you, you have to first know what questions to ask. The biggest issues to figure out are:

Who's abducting you? (And is there more than one source?)
When did it begin? Which leads to…
How were you discovered or targeted?
Why are you being abducted? **What's** being done to you?

Maybe you're one of the lucky ones who has clear answers to when and how it all began for you. Some people seem to have what I call a "by-the-book" abduction scenario, where it's clearly defined that a) abductions are happening to them, b) who's doing the abduction, c) how they're taking them d) what's being done during the abduction…and it seems to be the same story as everybody else's.

These people seem to have way more memories and far less plot holes going on than I do. Whether positive or negative, at least they remember and know what's happened to them.

I, unfortunately, am not one of those people.

My first known and overt abduction experience didn't happen for me until October of 2001. ("Coincidentally" the same month that my brother was also abducted and taken to a base for his first ever fully realized and remembered abduction/meeting with "Them," as relayed at the end of Part II.) I was 27 years old by that point. Talk about arriving late to the game.

Or did I?

As I later had to realize, this stuff usually doesn't just erupt for a person overnight. If they were able to find me and snag me at 27, then it means they were already well aware of who I was before that. And that's when I had to really start looking over my life and begin to try to make sense of what was basically a bunch of mish mash indirect evidence. As it was, even with the one overt abduction experience, I still didn't have clear answers as to who took me, how, to where, and why. I certainly know what they *wanted* me to believe – that it was Gray aliens, and it was good, so invite this into my reality so it can happen again! - but it doesn't mean that was the truth of the situation.

And that's where things got frustrating. The very basic questions outlined earlier – Who's taking me?? How was I targeted, and when did it start?? Why am I being taken?? - I had no answers for. Totally clueless. The abduction and mind control books I began looking at to help in my research and quest for answers were great and all, but I couldn't help but notice how the people being featured in these materials were so confident about what their situation was. **They had concrete answers.** When you have answers you can speak with some authority on the subject, or you can at least be held up with confidence by the authors who are writing about your story.

Additionally, **my situation didn't exactly fit or match up with anything I'd been reading about in my research,** since most research tends to be focused on aliens, with little mention of human/military rogue abductions and programming. That's slowly changing though, as this subject begins to get more exposure. For the most part though I've had just a whole lotta confusion in my journey, as do most MILABs targets.

What I eventually wound up doing, a variation of which you'll see in this particular section, was to sit down and begin documenting everything and anything I could think of that was either obviously abduction related, or highly suspect. And this is a good idea for any abductee to do. In doing so, you're rounding everything up and getting it all organized, which can help bring up other memories and incidents that may have been forgotten. For me, I typed up anything I could remember going as far back as I could, putting my memories into loose categories, and then looked over everything to see what it was all pointing to. Patterns, the bigger picture, and so on. People will be different though, so use whatever documenting system/method works for you. You have to start somewhere, and writing stuff down (or typing it up, or talking into a hand held tape recorder, etc.) is probably the best place to start. And then if you still can't get definitive answers, or have holes that need to be filled in, then possibly consider other avenues - meditating in a contemplative state, hypnosis with a trained and trustworthy person who is familiar with abduction cases (and who won't ask leading questions…) and so on.

You may notice though like I did that once you begin the process of trying to document your experiences, more memories will begin to surface. So as mentioned earlier in this piece it can be a really good idea to **carry around a little notebook or pad of paper with you in case you remember something while out and about.**

Actual Memories/Flashes

(Note: The key to these memory flashes is either something directly triggering them, or being in a relaxed, open state, not thinking about anything, which seems to be conducive for allowing "stuff" to come up to the surface. And as you can see, there aren't that many. But, I'm glad for whatever snippets I do have.)

Metal Gangways. Back in 2000, while living in SoCal, I had a flash one evening while resting on my bed where I suddenly saw myself standing in what seemed to be a windowless installation facility thing that has these metal grating walkways/gangways and stairs and stuff. It looked similar to the NORAD facility in some ways, featured in the movie "War Games." Same sort of look to it. In the memory I'm standing on the metal grating walkway at the top of some stairs, looking around in a (drugged? hypnotic?) daze. In the snippet it was as if I was stumbling about, like I was either allowed to wander off (maybe because it didn't matter since I was drugged out of my gourd and in an enclosed facility….really, how far would one be able to go anyway, right?) or I was trying to get away.

I had this flash while resting, and not thinking of anything at all. I wasn't sleeping, just relaxed, and then I spontaneously saw myself in that scene, which surprised me. I was embroiled in paranormal happenings at this point (as documented in my write up called "The Vortex" on my website) but I didn't realize at this time that I was an abductee, and certainly had never heard of anything concerning "MILABs", so I didn't understand why my mind would generate an image like that out of nowhere. I knew that my brother had the "thems" in his life, but I was in a state of obliviousness that it could also be spilling over to me.

(**Note:** An excerpt that I later came across several years after this memory, taken from the book "MILABs: Military Mind Control & Alien Abduction" by Dr. Helmut Lammer and Marion Lammer has this to say:

> "Diane (pseudonym) has had ongoing alien abduction experiences since her childhood. As she grew older she got flashbacks of human kidnappings where she was taken to military underground research facilities. She reports elevators, halls and **gangways**, like many other MILAB abductees. She also reports that she was taken on a tour of part of such a facility by a man in a white lab coat…"

Reading that was interesting in light of some of the memories or suspicious "dreams" I've had of people in white coats, elevators, gangways, wandering down the hallways of hospitals and such…)

The coma? I decided to put this one in here only because it happened during the same time period when I had the metal gangways glimpse, so it may be indicative of something. I can't remember all the details surrounding when I saw this, other than I think I was once again in a relaxed state on my bed when I got a glimpse/impression, don't know how else to describe it, of being on a bed somewhere, and where it seemed I was in some sort of "coma" type of state. I was laying there with my eyes closed, so I couldn't see anything going on around me, I could only hear. But the impression I got was that I was in a room with people, and I was on a bed, and I was unable to pull myself awake. It felt how I imagine being in a coma must feel like. Just under the surface, and able to hear everything…but unable to break through. It was very brief, and there was no strong emotions linked with it. Afterwards I relayed this to my brother, and he perked up, saying he'd had the same exact experience, of being in a bed somewhere "in a coma" type of thing. After that we'd joke that maybe we really were trapped in some matrix-like reality, where our real bodies were somewhere else, in a coma. At this point, with knowledge of MILABS and mind control I wonder if this was an abduction flash.

The sun mug. In another flash I'm sitting at a table in a small windowless room. Everything seems to have a slight yellowish tint to it. I'm sitting across the table from a Caucasian woman who's wearing glasses, with dark brown hair pulled back tightly. She seems to be wearing something white, possibly like a lab coat? And she's writing something down, not looking at me. For that reason I don't know exactly what her face looks like. I get the feeling that whatever she's writing concerns me. I'm just sitting there passively, as if in a drugged state. My eyes slowly drift aimlessly around until falling on the coffee mug that sits next to her, to her right. It's dark in color, like a navy blue, with a gold sun/rays on it. Suddenly I realize, "heeeeeeyy that's an illuminati symbolism…" and this is what triggers me to start pulling out of my stupor, and where the memory ends.

I remembered this flash while stopped at a red light on Broward Boulevard in early 2003. I glanced over and saw the sign for a "Sunoco" gas station. And it was the word sun in **Sun**oco that triggered me to remember the sun image on the coffee mug, and that entire flash of memory just…came out, right there, as I sat in my car. This image was an actual memory, but the woman in the memory has also appeared in two of my dreams. I was able to see her face a little better in one of the dreams, and she seems to have thin lips, big eyes, and a fixed expression. In one of those dreams I had total rage towards her. Whoever she was, she apparently was involved with some unsavory activity because she pissed me off as much as the mere sight of "the gray alien" did in another dream. (coming up later in the "Dreams" section.) Figures that in any of these snippets I always seem either totally drugged up or in a hypnotic daze. It's the only way they seem to be able to do their business. Letting me roam about undrugged and unhypnotized would result in stuff getting destroyed and people getting the beat down. ;D

Residual arm irritation. Sitting on a chair in a room with that same **yellow hue** to everything. Although here the yellow tint was even more pronounced. Again, I seem to be in a passive, drugged state. I'm slowly scratching at a spot on my lower left arm with my right index finger. That spot is irritated, and as I scratch at it in a daze, purple spottiness appears, like with burst capillaries.

I had this flash while sitting at Einstein Brothers Bagels (Fort Lauderdale) on March 22, 2003. This was the afternoon following a suspected abduction, and I had been receiving indicators that something had definitely happened. And as I sat at my table spacing out, boom, this memory just flashed into my mind. Without even thinking about it I immediately grabbed at my left arm and turned it, looking for the spotty purple coloring, fully expecting to see it…**and it was there**. It was fading, but it was there, in that exact spot, and it was real. I was stunned, like, "Holy shit…"

Flashback. A flash one morning back in early 2004 maybe, while lying in bed. I saw myself laying down, possibly on a table or something, in a brightly lit room, and there are several guys standing over me, leering and jeering at me. One leans in, he's white, with brunette hair, and he's right up in my face, laughing and mocking, and then scratches under my chin. [Mind control author Fritz Springmeier mentions the "sex kitten programming" trigger of scratching under the female's chin. Whether that's what was going on here, I don't know.] I just lay there in a daze, although I feel that even in my muted state I'm scared. But I don't seem to be able to do anything about it, like maybe I can't move. Their faces are blurred, and I seem to be drugged in general.

The flash was intense and sudden, very unexpected, and jarred me out of my relaxed state. I didn't like it at all, and my first thought was "WHAT THE HELL WAS THAT?!?" Although I did know what it was, even if I didn't consciously remember the incident.

The mantid. I didn't used to include this snippet in original versions of this book, but recently decided why not. But one night while laying in bed in Virginia in late 2004 I think, I had a sudden flash in my mind of a Mantid being face. Not a still frame image, but the wedge shaped head actually turning and looking at me, as if my mind was suddenly remembering having seen that at some point. It wasn't small and bright green like seeing a praying mantis insect in your garden, it was bigger, and maybe a little more brown, as if belonging to an actual large mantid being of some sort, and there was a clear feeling of it looking at me, seeing me. On the one hand it sounds goofy and doesn't indicate anything, but on the other hand, why would somebody have an image like that go through their mind? Very odd. Since I'm not prone to having flashes of memory-like events go through my mind, I've decided to include it here, along with those other few instances I've had in life.

Overt Indicators as a Child

Something I noticed straight away was how many of my logged incidents began with the words "When I was five…" "Around the age of four…" "About five years old when…" **Four and five years old, over and over again.** And recently, I just came across some corroborating insight about this that made me want to fall out of my chair. In the book "Future Memory" by author P.M.H. Atwater, she says **"…fascinating that between the ages of four and five is when most childhood cases of alien abductions and alien sightings are reported to occur…"** WOW! No doubt, I had a LOT of activity at those ages, something was definitely happening.

This is also the time when the lifelong issues between my mom and I really kicked in. I never realized that until doing this write up though, which is why writing stuff down is such a good idea. My entire life I'd just tell people, "Oh, me and my mom have NEVER gotten along, going back to when I was really little, we just always hated each other…" But when I did this write up I began to realize it started when I was about four to five years old as far as I can tell.

Also worth noting is that I have many memories of my childhood, going back to when I was still a baby, crawling, in diapers, sleeping in a crib, and eating from a high chair. I took it for granted for most of my life that I could recall being a baby, toddler and small child, only to discover that there are many people out there who scoff at the idea that anybody can remember anything of their life before the age of five. !!!!! To me this is completely ridiculous. Nobody can use themselves as the ultimate gauge of how all humans are, but that's what those types are doing. So in case it seems odd that I make mention of memories from such a young age, just know….I actually have memories from even younger. o.O (my boyfriend as well. We have that in common.)

Reversed in bed. An incident at about five years old when we lived in Westfield, Massachusetts - my mom had a funny feeling about me in the middle of the night…so much so that she got up to check on me and found me lying outside the covers, reversed on my bed, arms at my sides, with my eyes open, unblinking, staring at the ceiling. She leaned in close, watching me to see if I was breathing or blinking, and then I came to. I blinked a couple of times, and turned to look at her. She gasped and jumped back and said "OH MY GOD I thought you were dead!" She was really weirded out about the whole thing. Tucked me back in the right way, looking scared. I had no memory of why or how this happened, I only remember it from the point where I came to and turned to look at her, like, huh? what's going on? and seeing her jump back away from me. Being reversed in the bed is one of the noted child indicators when you do the research. It seems like "something" can't get the coordinates right when putting people back in their beds. Factoring in my mom's funny feeling and this incident definitely indicates something unusual going on. This happened a couple of more times after we moved to Connecticut where I would wake up and find myself reversed in the bed and outside the covers, not sure how I got that way, but no more incidents that my mom was ever aware of. It has never happened to me as an adult.

Iodine from procedure? Woke up one morning around the age of five in Massachusetts feeling something funny going on "down there." When I inspected myself, I found a strange amber colored stuff on me. I picked it all off, mystified. And it's never happened again since. Later I reported it to my mom who frowned at me, completely taken aback by me reporting such a bizarre thing. I was only five, too young for gynecological issues. It made no sense. She looked, but found everything to be normal, with nothing at all unusual happening down there, and gave me more frowny looks, like thinking, What are you talking about? Ideally I should have left it all on there so she could see for herself as proof, instead of picking it off, but I was only five and didn't think about that.

While living in Portland in late 2001 to early 2002 with my brother Joe, I relayed this story to him, and he immediately nodded knowingly and said, **"Yeah, that was dried iodine."**

REEEEaally, I said. What for?!?! He looked off into space, his eyes glossing over as he saw something play out in his mind, and said, "They implant girls through that area sometimes. See, there's this long silver stick with a ball at the end of it, and the implant is attached to the ball. They insert it in, inject the implant, and when they pull it back out again, they push a button that's on the stick, and it squirts an iodine solution to disinfect the area as they remove the stick."

When he was done relaying this, there was silence. Finally I broke it by asking the obvious. **"How do you know this?"** He turned to look at me, shaking himself out of it. Then furrowed his brows and had an intense look on his face. "I don't know. I just know." He paused, thinking about it. "I've seen it done," he realized. "I've seen them do it." He explained that they do this to females, especially female children, because it will go completely undetected on their body. Whether that's what was actually going on, I can't say. But it was definitely something.

People in white coats. Memory of being on a table lying on my stomach in a windowless room with doctors? in white coats - about two or three years old? I'm nervous, but alert and awake. Now, I had meningitis when I was one and a half years old, this could be the memory of me just prior to getting my spinal tap, where I would have been lying on my stomach. Thing is, I don't remember ANYTHING about when I was first sick with meningitis and admitted to the hospital. From what I was told, I had a fever of 104, I was vomiting, in and out of consciousness, and couldn't turn my head…but I don't remember any of it. My memories of my bout with meningitis don't start until I was recovering in my hospital room. At the point where I would have had my spinal tap, I was literally, near death. And in this memory, I don't seem to be sick like that, at all. So, is this a memory of when I was going to get my spinal tap? Or something else? I have come across one lone reference to MILAB abduction programming that describes something like this, where programming is done to abductee children.

> "The room inside the warehouse-like building is set up to work on the subjects. It has a table, a light, and equipment. The room is apart from the activities going on outside, so that others will not be distracted by what we do here."
> **http://www.greatdreams.com/political/media03.html**

Interesting. Especially in light of my "warehouse" dream, relayed below…which had somebody in a white coat. Despite the fact that the woman who wrote this is considered a sketchy "insider," there were several details mentioned in her write up that stood out for me, surprisingly. But the fact is, I was on my stomach, just like I would have been for my spinal tap. So who knows, maybe that's all it is.

Abduction programming facility? This was a "dream," but I'm going to put it in this section, to keep all these incidents from this age together. But I had a "dream" about the age of five, where I'm in some large (warehouse type, in retrospect) facility, standing around, waiting for some adults nearby in white (coats?) to lead me where to go next. **And my Mom is there**. (!!) She's talking to one of the people in white. To me it sort of seems like a supermarket, because it's so big with the tall ceilings, but I guess it's not. I'm just standing there, calm, looking up and around at everything. Up where the wall meets the ceiling there is **a row of squares that are shiny solid black, each square framed in shiny silver/chrome.** It gets my attention because of the geometric pattern, and it's the reason that I even remember this scene at all. This always felt more like a memory to me rather than a dream, due to the realistic feeling it had and the unusual subject. It doesn't seem normal for a kid to dream about something like this.

When I ran this by my brother Joe in Portland in 2001, he said it was indeed a base/facility that I was in, and that the black squares were made of mica, designed to filter ultraviolet radiation. Since people living in these bases have no exposure to the sun they have to give them artificial doses of it to prevent sickness, and it was passed through these mica block/filter things. My first response was a big scrunched face, very doubtful since the mica I'd seen growing up was pretty transparent. Not black. In fact I was so doubtful about what he reported that I didn't even include Joe's explanation of this in the original versions of this book. But when I later researched mica I found pictures of it that showed thick sheets of mica….that were a smoky gray to black color. The thicker the sheets, the blacker it gets. But most importantly, years after being told this dubious piece of information, it was confirmed to me that **the idea of mica filtering UV rays is actually valid**…you can do a search on Google and turn up research papers on it, as I discovered. Apparently mica filters out the harmful spectrum of UV rays, and allows the beneficial ones to pass through. So, yet one more thing that Joe told me way back when, which was put on the backburner, until surprising confirmation eventually did come in. And as mentioned in other places throughout this book, Joe wasn't somebody who was educated or who spent time reading the sorts of material that would have taught him this stuff, or used the internet to gain insight. He had no interest in the internet, and spent pretty much most of his free time when I was last around him in 2001/2002 engaged in criminal pursuits, not being academic. But yet he knew this, right off the top of his head, didn't miss a beat. Now, it doesn't prove that what I saw in my "dream"/possible memory fragment really was mica, or for the purposes that Joe claims. But if anything it showed me that this kid was walking around with knowledge that he shouldn't have had.

Frequent nosebleeds as a kid in Massachusetts. Frequent nighttime nosebleeds as a child have been mentioned in abduction research as a possible indicator of "stuff." They'd always only happen for me in the middle of the night, spontaneously erupting out of nowhere. Never once did I have one during the day that I can remember. I remember spending nights with my mom in the bathroom soaking up washcloths of blood, and my pillowcases had brown blood stains on them. The last nocturnal nosebleed that I remember occurred in Connecticut around age eight, and that was it. (I remember it only because I was standing in front of my dresser mirror taking care of it on my own, and blood dripped onto one of my knick knacks, permanently staining it.) Never got them again after that.

Skin scraping. Had a flashback at the age of four or so while eating vegetables at dinner one night, of a skin scraping on my left arm. There were these little red pepper pieces in the vegetables, and as I stared at them on my fork, I suddenly had this flash of a memory pop into my mind of seeing a bright red scrape thing on my upper left arm.

And I think something about a stainless steel table, the same room from the previous entry with the people in the white coats. But when I looked at my arm, there was nothing there. It was confusing to me as a kid, to have a "memory" of something and not know where it came from. But as an adult, I of course now know about abductions and skin scrapings. I'm not sure how skin scrapings work, if they're supposed to actually draw blood like that, or if they just lightly rub the skin to take dead surface cells or what. I have no scar on my arm for this. (although a few scratches or scrape scars that I've received in the last fifteen or so years have also faded out to where I can't find them anymore, so the fact that I don't still have this particular one from age four doesn't disprove anything.) So who knows. I'd be liable to dismiss it, except for the manner in which the memory appeared - it was triggered, and appeared in a flash, exactly as buried memories resurface. And also, where does a four year old even come up with something like that?

The little "ghost" girl. **And Burger King.** Westfield, Massachusetts. This was probably about age three, since I was now sleeping in a bed. I was lying in bed in the middle of the night when an all white little ghost looking girl floated into my room. I wasn't scared for some reason. But she looked my age, and was dressed to match just how I looked at that time – T-shirt, little shorts, and pig tails on each side of her head with bangs. She carried a ball with her. She floated to a stop inside the doorway, looking at me, smiling. Then she tossed her white ghost ball at me through the air. I smiled and reached my arms up from where I lay in the bed and "caught" this ball as it floated towards me, in silent slo-mo. I could see that I caught it and was holding it…but I couldn't feel it! What fun! ☺ I smiled and tossed it back to her. It floated in silent slo mo through the air and she caught it, and tossed it back. We went back and forth like this three times…..but then I dropped the ball. It went over my head and "landed" silently behind the headboard between the bed and the wall.

That's when things turned negative.

Her whole face changed, and it went from looking like a smiling little girl to getting twisted, like a monster. She charged straight at me, silently and quickly, enraged. My eyes bugged out like, "AHHH!" As she got near, several feet away, I ducked under the covers to hide. I didn't know what else to do. I stayed under there for a little bit, listening, waiting. Nothing seemed to be happening so I finally peeked out to see if she was still there. She was gone. Whew!

Some may say this was a dream, but I know for a fact I was wide awake. This was not a dream. Nor was I one of those kids prone to fanciful visions and hallucinations. And I didn't have any imaginary friends – because I didn't need any, I had lots of real friends. And I was definitely not a kid who got carried away in fantasy make believe. I was very practical minded. (way more than most normal kids in fact.) So, that's why I know that I didn't just invent this fanciful hallucination of some one-time imaginary ghost girl friend that turns into a monster. It makes no sense, based on who I was as a kid.

Right around this time period I was visited by the "Burger King" – another all white smiling ghost figure who floated into my room unexpectedly in the middle of the night as I laid there in the dark, wide awake. (my mom put me to bed way too early at that age, so I would periodically find myself wide awake in the middle of the night, just looking around the room like, doo dee doo dee doo…bored.) Burger King had the robe and the crown and the beard, smiling all pleasant…but when I looked at his feet from where I laid in my bed, I saw that he wasn't walking, he was floating, which was interesting to me. Hmm, I thought. And I don't remember what happened after that. There's no conclusion to this incident. One minute he was floating into my room, and the next…nothing. Blank. But I do remember trying to tell my mom about it in the morning at breakfast, "Mommy, Burger King was in my room last night!" But she paid me no mind. She looked at me like, Uh huh, sure, and continued with prepping and arranging breakfast.

"Split mind" crying. Strange incident in kindergarten, five years old when we lived in Massachusetts. I would walk home from the elementary school every day since it was only a few blocks away. Sometimes I walked with friends, sometimes I was alone. And one day after walking home by myself, I got in the door, then spontaneously started crying……but I had no idea why. My mom kept asking me what was wrong. But I didn't know! I felt like part of me was upset and traumatized, but yet I didn't know why. Another time in first grade, around age six or seven, this happened at school. We were getting ready to leave to go home, putting on our coats and gathering up our lunch boxes and stuff, and I started crying with that weird split thing happening. I was watching myself cry, but not knowing why. One little girl asked me what was wrong – was I crying because I was happy maybe? The teacher had just been reading a story to us, so she figured maybe the story was affecting me and I was crying with happiness? (future psychologist. ;)) I shook my head no, confused. I felt embarrassed because I didn't know what was wrong with me, why I seemed to not be in control of myself. Those are the only two incidents like this that I remember as a kid. The one thing these two incidents do have in common is that they both involved walking home from school. Either having just arrived home from school, or, about to head out to walk home from school. So…….something very upsetting and traumatizing happening or maybe about to happen during the time I left school – alone – and walked home, but which I couldn't consciously remember.

Bedposts. I was terrified of my bed posts around age three? Four? Called them "The Woodens." They were small and round, and looked like bald headed creatures to me, and if I looked at them long enough at night while lying in bed, I'd get hysterical and start screaming and panicking until my parents would come and calm me down. What did they remind me of - "aliens" of some type?

[**Update:** After the original writing of this book I experienced a spontaneous, involuntary memory flash involving being a little kid in Westfield, in my bed in the middle of the night, surrounded by little bald headed "aliens" around my bed. The memory popped up out of nowhere one night while I was in bed, and in this dream/memory thing I WAS a kid again, I was back in my little kid body with my child mentality and all. I could feel myself lying there in the dark in my old bedroom, seeing these bald headed creatures moving around me. A couple of faint whimpers came out of me and I thought "i want my mommy…" That's all I could do was whimper, due to the fear. I don't take anything at face value though, so this may or may not be something real, although it certainly seemed very convincing, that's all I can say. I had no sense of myself as an adult, because this was apparently a real flashback putting me back into my child body/mentality with how that felt. Something that we normally can't tap into as adults. But, who knows.]

The butterflies. Weird incident about the age of five when "butterflies" appeared on my bedroom wall. My mom was downstairs with the TV on, talking to somebody who was visiting. Meanwhile, I'm upstairs in my room, lying awake in bed, and suddenly what seems to be all these black and white "butterflies" appear on the facing wall, moving and fluttering about. I immediately went totally HYSTERICAL. I jumped out of bed and stood there, facing the wall, screaming and going ballistic at the "butterflies" until my mom came running upstairs. I don't know why these butterfly things caused such an immediate hysterical reaction from me, but my attitude was I wanted NO part of it. But they stopped as soon as she got there. Of course. She finds me crying about "the butterflies on the wall!! The butterflies!!" and of course there's nothing there.

My bedroom was on the second floor, so it was impossible for the fluttering butterflies to have been caused by car headlights or something coming in at ground level. It's also interesting to note that years later, at the age of 27, I would find myself decorating the wall over my bed with dozens and dozens of butterfly cutouts. (expanded upon in a little bit.) Butterflies are also one of those things I've been attracted to in general, and one of those things that people give to me, for whatever reason.

Spirals. I became obsessed with **elevators** and **spiral stairs** at the age of thirteen. To the point of ridiculousness. Always doodling DNA looking helix-type spirals and ribbons on my notebooks at school, dreams about spiral stairs and elevators, obsessing about riding in elevators and wishing to find a pair of spiral stairs. Spirals, helixes, ribbons, and elevators are all major symbolisms / systems / techniques used in mind control programming.

Overt Indicators as an Adult

The following incidents are not actual memory flashes, but, they are pretty obvious indicators of something very unusual occurring in my life…

My first known, overt abduction - October, 2001, Orange County, CA. I had recently come across a really realistic picture of a "Gray" which intrigued me. It was fun to stare at and contemplate the idea of meeting Grays, and the picture's realistic nature made that easy to do. I sat on my couch with the picture in my hand, staring intensely at it for what was probably like twenty minutes. I stared so hard and for so long that I was pretty much almost in a self-imposed trance.

After the twenty minutes or so I noticed that the background noise had muted. I couldn't hear my roommate Todd's TV down the hall anymore. Curious, I looked up.

Snapping out of my thoughts didn't make the sound of the TV come back. In fact, there was now the feeling of a **veil of control** descending on me. I jumped up, alarmed. I was wide awake, standing in the middle of my room, and literally felt my willpower and ability to control myself slipping away with *every second*. It was VERY quick and very powerful, whatever it was. I still couldn't hear Todd's TV though, due to the muting effect around me. I spun around wildly, and inside some part of me was yelling *"NO! NO!! RUN!! RUN!!! LEAVE THE ROOM!! GET OUT OF HERE NOW!!"* But I couldn't do it. I was actually arguing back and forth with myself:

"Just go lie down and wait. They'll be here shortly."

"RUN!! GET OUT OF HERE NOW!!! GO!!!"

"Go lie down. It'll be alright. They'll be here shortly."

I had this back and forth panicked argument, my fight-or-flight reflex attempting to be overridden by this calm thought form telling me to go lie down. It'll be okay. They'll be here shortly. Just go lie down.

In the end I conceded. I wish I hadn't. I should have run like hell.

I changed into clothes to sleep in as fast as I could, knowing that I was under control, and not able to even fight back. No willpower. I was literally like a puppet, and I *knew* it. I *knew* I was acting like a crazy person. But I obeyed anyway, turned out my lights save for my purple Christmas lights, and climbed into bed. I had a full pot of green tea in my system (translation - caffeine) and so I was wide awake. I peaked out from under the covers, feeling like a crazy person. It was 11 p.m.

And that was the last I remember. I blacked out after that, despite the caffeine.

Ten hours later, Saturday morning, I started to wake up in my bed, feeling like I had been run over by a train. Felt like absolute crap. I kept resurfacing like I was in a drugged out stupor, then I'd fall back under again, unconscious. This resurfacing and sinking back down went on for several hours. This is not how I normally wake up. I was finally able to wake up after 11 a.m. I felt like it was 5 a.m. though and I was STUNNED when I finally looked at my alarm clock. My first thought was "**Where did the night go?!?!?**" The sun was out and the day was in full swing. I sat up in bed, like lalala. No concerns.

I got up from my bed and saw my cat sitting in the middle of my floor, and I reached out to pet her, saying Hi. She recoiled from me, her back hunching up, then hissed. Shocked, I tried to pet her again. Now she actually took a swing at me, trying to scratch me and hissed even louder and darted under my desk, hiding from me. She'd NEVER done that before, to me or anybody. !! She was normally a very friendly, affectionate, sociable kitty who likes people.

Still oblivious I was like, Huh. Okay. I left her alone, and proceeded to get dressed and set about my day. I was feeling neutral and emotionally calm. I did not question anything that had happened the night before, or anything happening right now that morning, didn't make any connections. Just total programmed oblivion.

After brushing my teeth and getting dressed and all that I sat on my couch and saw the alien pic still sitting on the arm of the couch, where I'd left it the night before. I picked it up. But when I looked at it I instantly recoiled and tossed it aside. I had this knee jerk reaction and thought, "Don't EVER look at that picture again!" **My subconscious knew.**

So, I reached for a book to flip through instead. lalala. Oblivion. As I read I noticed that my glasses were blurry. Kept taking them off and wiping at them. After awhile I began to realize the problem was with my actual eye itself. My left eye was watery/runny. In the mirror I saw it was pink. Funny because it was fine before I went to bed.

At this same time I also began to realize there were pains happening in my uterus and ovaries area. But I wasn't getting my monthly. I had never had pains like that in there before. So this was certainly a first. I curiously pressed in on my uterus/ovaries area to try to alleviate the pain.

Then the images started. I soon realized as I went about my day that there was a constant barrage of "Gray alien" faces in my mind anytime I closed my eyelids. Gray faces from ALL angles, three dimensional. Staring straight ahead, faced to the left, to the right, large, small, all kinds. Sometimes just the large, black slanted eyes, no face. Anytime I blinked or closed my eyes, it was there. Nonstop. Like internal wall paper for the mind. At first it was a novel thing. By the end of the day, twelve hours later, I was a wreck, because it would not stop.

I ran into one of my roommates, Denise in the kitchen in the afternoon. She smiled and apologized for the fight that had happened the night before outside my door between her and Todd. I looked at her blankly, and shook my head back and forth. I had no idea what she was talking about.

She frowned and said, "You know, the fight we had. You couldn't have missed it. We were right outside your door!" She told me how Todd had come home at 3 a.m., loudly throwing open the front door, going down the hall to his room and turning on the TV full volume and leaving his door open so he could hear it while he cooked food in the kitchen, banging pots around all over the place, whistling super loud. He woke her up and she came out of her room, pissed off, and they totally got into it there in the hall right outside my door, yelling at each other.

I had NO idea what she was talking about. When I told her so, she started to get annoyed, thinking I was jerking her around. She was really sensitive and didn't like people playing her. "Carissa...don't lie, you *had* to have heard it! Come *on!* Please!" She said they even tried to call me through my door, saying "Carissa? Carissa? Sorry about all the noise..." but I never answered. They thought it was a little weird because I'm a light sleeper and hear everything.

By this point in the afternoon I was putting things together and starting to realize what had happened the night before. As Denise stood in front of me telling me about this huge ruckus that I somehow missed, I realized - I wasn't there. That's why I didn't hear this. **I wasn't even there.** But what was I supposed to say to her?! So I just played dumb and quickly changed the subject and diverted her attention.

By night time, around 11:30 p.m. I was a wreck because the images of Grays would not stop in my mind. It was as strong as ever, every time I blinked or closed my eyes. I was curled into a ball in the middle of my floor, crying silently, because I thought I was going crazy. I believed I was truly losing my mind and descending into madness. **Something was trying very hard to convince me that what I had experienced involved the "Grays."** Yet, somehow I knew that it was all wrong. Something felt off. I KNEW deep down that I hadn't been "abducted by aliens!" even though I've so heavily researched the matter and had all the symptoms of an abduction.

Two days later, on Tuesday night, all of us roommates got into it with Todd, yet again. He was always making problems and we were always mad at him. :D He had me SO annoyed that I stomped off to my room and went to bed all angry and riled up. I lay there in my bed, totally fuming, and suddenly in my mind, I wasn't in my bed anymore. I was laying flat on my back, on a table, under a light…surrounded by three Grays. It wasn't a still frame image, it was a moving flashback memory. They were surrounding me, peering down at me. I saw one tilt his head slightly to its left (my right), and lean in slightly, peering at me closer. They weren't gray in color, and they didn't have those exaggerated round heavy looking bulbous heads. They were porcelain white, with the black slanted eyes, the slit for a mouth, and thin necks and bodies and arms. Their faces were long. Very elongated, but with that slight upside down teardrop shape to them. And they seemed so WISE. I just lay there, completely blank and passive, like I was in a drugged stupor.

I was so scared at this sudden shift in my mind that I gasped and yanked myself out of the flashback. WHAT the HELL was THAT?!?! My first memory of what happened on Saturday night, that's what! Finally, a memory! Something to confirm all the other roundabout evidence. It was about time! It didn't occur until I was emotionally worked up about something else. Like my mind needed to be diverted and focused on another emotionally intense experience before slipping in a glimpse of that one.

During the week when I was at work, I had the most wonderful feeling that something fantastic had occurred the past weekend, something which was there just under the surface of my brain, but which I couldn't access anymore. It drove me NUTS. I wanted so badly to remember the experience, and I could feel it, *right there,* but just couldn't pull it up.

The only way to get to it and get it back was to do it again. Have another abduction.

I mentally asked for one several times, wishing to do it all again this upcoming Saturday night. Also, the mild case of "pink eye" lasted most of the week, in my left eye, but faded out on its own. The pains in my ovaries/uterus persisted off and on during the week. The images of the Grays in my mind lasted fully into Tuesday. And my cat refused to let me within several feet of her until well over a week later, something that my roommates noticed and commented on. But again, what could I possibly tell them.

However, by Thursday, I changed my mind about being abducted thanks to some outside input. I had told Tom, via email, about this experience, and he warned me about the negative nature of Grays and abductions. What's interesting is that one concerned warning was all it took to snap me out of it. **My subconscious knew and recognized the truth of his warning right away, even if my conscious brain was programmed to think otherwise.** So I mentally changed my mind about it.

Saturday night arrived, and I wasn't even thinking about the abduction anymore. I figured I had changed my mind and that was that, that's all I needed. It's over.

Nope. Sorry. Doesn't work that way.

I sat there on my couch, reading again. Todd was down the hall in his room, his TV going loudly. His two little boys were over for a visit this weekend, since he was in the middle of a divorce. I listened to their voices as I read. Then suddenly I realized that Todd's TV was being muted and all background sound was now gone. Alarmed, I tossed my book aside and instantly jumped up without even thinking. I looked around, panicked.

The veil began descending on me, and I felt the same identical thing as the weekend before. My willpower was being squelched down. With every second it slipped away more and more and I knew I didn't have much time. Fight!! Fight back! I had the thought to *RUN!! GET OUT OF HERE **NOW!!!*** followed by the same argument to just go lie down...lie down and wait, they'll be here soon…go lie down…

So I ran.

I flung open my door and ran down the hall and into the bathroom, closed the door and looked around. But I could still feel the veil. Panicked, I thought about hanging out with Todd and his kids across the hallway, but I knew that was useless. I "knew" that they could and would get me anyway, even in Todd's room. I ran out of the bathroom, back down the hall and peered into my room. Nothing had "arrived" yet. But I could still feel that blanketing pressure veil thing on me. I ran into the kitchen. Still there. Everywhere I went in the house, it was there on me. I kept mentally screaming *"NO! NO! NO!"* the whole time. I REALLY did NOT want this anymore.

Finally in desperation I threw open the front door and ran down the steps, down the walkway…and halfway up the street into the night, like a crazy person, trying to get away from that veil of control thing. I got halfway up the street and I felt it sloooowwly subsiding. I would have kept running as long as I had to. I wasn't going ANYWHERE that weekend, with anybody. I was determined. I did what I should have done the weekend before. Cautiously, I turned around and headed back to the house. The veil was completely gone now.

Such an overt attempt to take me while I was wide awake never happened again. It only works if you allow it to and can't/won't fight back and resist. After that they resort to covert methods.

The laser "beam me up" line? While living in Portland, Oregon, and roommating with my brother, I glimpsed what I theorize might be technology for beaming somebody up. It happened around 7 p.m., when my brother was at work and I had the tiny apartment all to myself, along with my cat. Kitty (her name) was uncharacteristically scared and clingy that night, sticking close by me wherever I went. If I got up to go to the sink she followed and jumped up on the counter just to be as close to me as possible. When I went back to my bed and sat down, she jumped down and ran with me, and crawled into my lap, curling into a scared ball. I noticed this, and thought huh, I wonder what's up…? as I pet her. Her tail flicked around with agitated energy. After a few minutes of me reading my book while petting her, we both had the urge to look up at my brother's bed at the same exact moment…and that's when I saw this white laser line looking thing appear about a foot over his bed, horizontally over the spot where he would normally lay. My cat froze up when that happened. Her tail stopped in mid-flick, and she just stared at it, bug eyed. The line appeared out of thin air, was about 2-3 feet long, glowing white, and slightly thicker in the middle than at the ends. It glowed brightly for several seconds over Joe's bed, reaching its peak intensity, then faded back out again. It never made any noise. No other phenomenon accompanied it. Afterwards, I called my brother at work to tell him about it, and see what he thought it was. He just laughed and said "Damn! I missed my connecting flight!"

"Astral Pow Wow"/Abduction? April 2002 I believe - Tom was still back in Iowa at this point, and I was living in Fort Lauderdale. He was going to be moving down to Florida in June, after school finished, but by that point I just couldn't wait to see him. The feeling of wanting to see him was so intense that I apparently made it happen. I brought him to me. I woke up in the middle of night, finding myself lying on my left side on the carpet in the middle of the room, with my right arm around him. He was physical but I wasn't in my body. I soon realized this when my hand touching his skin was buzzing. My whole "body" was buzzing in fact. I realized this straight off, but despite being out of my body, and despite the situation - something I had NEVER experienced before - I kept my wits about me and had my usual sense of humor. I joked to myself, "Well, I went to bed alone, and woke up with a guy in my apartment!" :D Words don't convey the level of happiness I felt though. I "sat up" in my astral body, gazing down at him, feeling the most incredibly pure love I think I've ever felt for anybody. I reached my hand out and laid it on his chest, and that's when he started to wake up. His head moved suddenly from his right to the left, taking a big breath, and as he awoke, the connection broke. I started involuntarily floating up and away from him, towards the ceiling, with my hand reaching out to him. Rapid scene switch, and now he's gone from the apartment, and I'm sliding backwards from that spot on the middle of the floor, back into my body. I felt and watched as I slid and adjusted my way back in!! Had to wiggle around a few times to get "back in." And then I opened my physical eyes, but I couldn't see clearly for a few seconds. My vision was distorted, and I had to blink blink blink to get my proper vision back. I just laid there, SO happy. Even if I was only able to see him for a few seconds, that was okay. The next day I emailed him and asked him if anything unusual happened to him last night, and he said Yeah, actually, it did…he woke up with the remnants of a nosebleed, and the feeling that "something really sublime" had happened.

Well, if you're an abductee and you do something like this, don't think they won't notice and come for you. A stunt like that is absolutely off the charts.

The very next time I laid down to sleep, which was the following night, they apparently took me. And whatever they did to me put me out of commission for an entire week. I had no actual memories of the events, I only had the physical after effects.

I was able to go to work just fine and drift along through my day, but when I'd go home, I would just lay and stare at the walls and do nothing for hours. I don't recall eating - some of the food I had in the fridge went bad as a result - I don't think I even showered. I had no desire or will to do ANYTHING. I was fried, blank, numb. I'd just lay there and stare at the walls or ceiling, for hours, day after day. On Thursday of that week I was in the bathroom standing at the sink, staring at nothing in a blank stupor, feeling lost, when my hands absentmindedly reached up like they had a mind of their own and started hunting around under my hair, at the base of my skull. Like I was searching for something. And I knew it when I found it. A large lump on the base of my skull/top of my neck, about the size of a quarter. It didn't hurt…but as soon as my fingers touched it, I had the immediate commanding thought, **"IT'S JUST A SPIDER BITE!"** with the corresponding image in my mind of a **black and yellow orb spider on a web to reinforce it**. The image in my mind was large, like seeing a picture or an image on a screen.

As soon as I saw that image in my mind I knew. That's programming. Some procedure was done to me, and my subconscious remembered and knew EXACTLY where to find the residual lump without my conscious even having to think about it…and as soon as I found it, the programming kicked in to try to convince me it was "just a spider bite," complete with convincing spider imagery and everything. "Move it along folks, nothing to see here, move it along, nothing to see…"

At any rate, after a full week I began to finally pull out of my blank stupor and come back to life, regaining my personality and energy, back to eating and living normally.

Unexplained cold. Woke up another time in the morning very suddenly with my body all cold, as if I'd just been standing in a refrigerated room, or someplace with some mega air conditioning going on. My blood flow was fine, and I wasn't cold internally, it was just the surface of my skin that was cold to the touch. But I was in south Florida. In August. With no A/C on. There was no logical reason for me to be this cold in my hot and humid apartment. It seemed to be another case of being plunked back from someplace that possibly was very cold or air conditioned, or possibly the transport process in itself can do this, I don't know.

Nocturnal programming commands. Woke up one morning in Florida right in the middle of somebody programming me. Heard a male voice saying in my mind, **"YOU WILL ONLY SEE WHAT'S WRONG AND UGLY IN THE WORLD! YOU WILL ONLY SEE WHAT'S WRONG AND UGLY IN THE WORLD!"** It was alarming, that's all I can say. And I'm glad I woke up in time to catch it, and be aware that this type of programming was trying to be instilled in me.

Woke up another time hearing a male voice repeating over and over, kind of loud and intensely **"YOU WILL NOT REMEMBER WHO YOU ARE NO MATTER *WHAT* ANYBODY SAYS TO YOU!! YOU WILL NOT REMEMBER WHO YOU ARE NO MATTER *WHAT* ANYBODY SAYS TO YOU!!"** Yikes.

More programming. This one's weird – it seemed to be a vivid dream of an actual abduction occurrence, and because it's very obvious, I decided to group it in this section. But around April 2002 I "dreamed" that I was lying on a table under a light, feeling like I was in a drugged daze, and hallucinating on top of it that I was seeing all these little gecko lizards pouring out of my Xyphoid Process area of my chest. I could feel that there were humans standing around me, but I couldn't see them. I just stared at all the lizards rushing out while a male voice off to the side informed me in a hypnotic voice that these lizards represented my **"reptilian genetics."** When I pendulum dowsed this I've always gotten that No, I don't have "reptilian genetics" and that I'm not a hybrid either, however…I have, supposedly, been a non-human in other past/parallel incarnations. But the fact that I was lying on an exam table, drugged up and hallucinating about lizards coming out of my chest is enough for me to know that it's not true. So it's important to point out that there is programming to get abductees to believe things about themselves that are not true – including that they're alien or Reptilian hybrids, or have those genetics in some way. **It's a huge avenue of deception because it can be used for many malicious purposes.**

Remote viewing? Woke up one morning, hearing the voice of a guy saying **"1-4-1-4-1".** 141 is a number that has followed me everywhere since my brother back in 2002, documented in detail on my website in the "Number Sightings" write up. And here it was being used like a code almost, programming, a trigger, not sure. I sort of saw, or at least imagined, the source of this voice as having a beard and glasses, neutral personality, not angry, not happy, just neutral and non-emotional in a pleasant but firm way. **I get the impression that in this "dream" I was remote viewing for somebody.** I can feel that just before I was triggered to pull out, I had been doing something, looking for, or at, something, for somebody else's benefit. It's just a fragment that I can remember, but that's definitely what I know of from what little I can remember.

When I was halfway in and out of consciousness, slowly waking up after hearing the "1-4-1-4-1" command, sensing the guy behind the voice, right then a thought form cut in on the line you could say. Very distinctly, sounding like me (in my "higher self" way) and in a neutral but firm way it told me, **"They have the ability to use you now when you're sleeping without having to physically take you."** It sounded like it wanted me to know this, as a head's up FYI. I filled in the blanks and concluded it would be due to implant technology, so "they" might be able to connect to my brain while I sleep, using the program trigger codes to activate whichever portion of the mind they need. Tell me what to look for, and then, due to the two way implant, they would see whatever I see in my mind's eye. What I see, they see, instantly and automatically. VERY ingenious…if that's what's going on. This type of technology was actually later confirmed for me in the writing of Fritz Springmeier.

Programming script. I woke up another morning in Florida catching a male voice in the middle of doing what I can only describe as reading from a script, telling me something that I'm not going to repeat. He was calmly, methodically telling me that certain sexual things had "happened" to me in life, which I highly doubt, especially considering the fact he sounded like he was reading from a script. But the effects of believing something like that would be traumatic on the psyche. In fact, were you to do the research, such ideas could…and do…cause an involuntary mind fracture.

Later on after the fact I came across Carla Emery's "Secret, Don't Tell", her book regarding unethical hypnosis and government mind control projects, and surprisingly discovered that the concept of reading a script to a drugged and vulnerable target is absolutely something that is done, and involves related subject matter of what was said to me. And it's done with the intention of causing the mind to fracture. So I imagine the same technique could apply to a target via their implants. I'm sure it wouldn't always have to be done in person, with the target drugged, possibly being in a susceptible sleep/trance state would suffice just as well.

Out of body. For a period of time in 2003, February - the summertime - I was having trouble staying in my body when I'd lie down to sleep, and also, I would periodically wake up not knowing where, or WHO, I was. ! When I'd lie down, as soon as my body would relax, I could feel myself slipping out of it and rising up several inches over my body. I'd have to pull myself back down, only to slip back out again the second I started to drift off to sleep. Curling up in the fetal position would finally thwart it. I was being abducted a lot during this time period it seems, so maybe this was having an affect on being able to stay in my body. I've since learned that an after effect of being out of the body like that will, for me anyway, involve temporary amnesia when back in the body again, lasting about 30 seconds.

An Almost Soul Abduction. Had an incident where I went to lie down for a nap and "something" tried to yank me out of my body. As I lay there, a rapid spinning in circles sensation began, with wind blowing around and the feeling of being tugged upwards, out of my body. I'd pull myself out of it and try to fall back to sleep again, only to have it repeat. This yanking went on like six or seven times in a row. I allowed it to go on as long as it did because I wasn't scared, and was curious to see if this was going to lead anywhere. Was I finally consciously witnessing an abduction?? But then, I heard something funny, some kind of audio, this voice, noise, something, that sounded like it was coming from the end of a tunnel or tube, and THAT got me alarmed. It didn't sound like anything I can describe. I just know that the second I heard it, my eyes bugged out in my mind, there was subconscious "recognition" going on, and that's when I freaked out. I mentally yelled out "NOOOO!!! NONONONONONONONO!!!!!!" I abandoned the nap plans. As I sat up in bed I noticed that my body had an electrical tingliness happening, mostly centered in my arms. And within an hour afterwards, I developed another one of those small purple circles ("EM energy surge burns", according to the C's), on my lower left arm. I grabbed a photo. **http://in2worlds.net/anomalous-markings**

"Astral Giraffe." Went to bed one night in early 2003 while living in Fort Lauderdale, but something didn't feel right. Had a slightly fearful feeling, although I did my best to squelch it down. Did a small intention for protection, then zonked out. Well I awoke like an hour later (laying on my stomach, my head faced to the left) to the sounds of wind whipping around, and me spinning clockwise, around and around and around. Everything was getting faster and faster, the spinning, the wind, all the while as I lay there, paralyzed, unable to snap out of it. The wind got so crazy I had the sensation of my hair blowing all over the place, and I was actually getting physically sick from all the spinning. It finally culminated with me screaming out in my mind "NOOOOOOOOOOOOOO!!!!!!!!!!!!!!" (which actually had this bizarre, echo effect happening on top of the wind!) Then I was finally able to pull myself free from the spinning and wind, and unparalyze myself. As I did so, I "turned" and looked over my left shoulder and was startled to see a big giraffe face, staring right at me. I mentally jumped. At first I thought it was a deer, then I realized as I stared at it that no…that's actually more like a giraffe. [**NOTE:** Giraffes, owls and deer are all screen images common in abduction scenarios.] When I say "turned" and I "jumped," I didn't do it physically. I wasn't fully in my body, because I didn't feel the covers or the bed. It was astral. Then I was back in my body again, feeling the bed and covers. When I snapped back in, I didn't know where I was for a second or two. I didn't even recognize my surroundings. Talk about disorientation! It took me a second or two to adjust back in, remember where I was, even *who* I was, and what was happening. My heart was racing and my nerves were all standing on end, and I could STILL HEAR the remnants of the wind around me, and feel the effects on my body, even though I was now awake. Very loud, surrounding me over my head, whooshing this way and that. I pulled the covers over my head to drown out the whooshing wind noise, like, AHHHHH!!! Shut UUUUP!!! I need to get back to sleep!! I have to get up for work!!! I don't have TIME for this.

So I wonder what would have happened had I not fought this off, and allowed myself to be taken out of my body. Where would I have gone?

This experience resulted in yet another one of the round purple circle marks that I sometimes used to get on my (left) arm. I snapped a photo of it, which can be found on my website in the Anomalous Markings section. **http://in2worlds.net/anomalous-markings** For me, the small round purple circle marks on my arms always seemed to happen after fighting off something trying to pull me out of my body.

"Practice" confrontation. In the middle of the night (February 6, 2005) I felt my body starting to swirl and move about, and pull upwards, like a soul abduction possibly, where I began to get pulled out of my body. **Then I mentally connected with the presence behind it, which was VERY frightening.** When feeling it face to face so to speak, I was overcome with fear. Couldn't get a grip on myself and combat it with non-fear, love, neutrality, positive thoughts, or any of the tactical goals I'd had in mind at that time. I just fell apart and panicked. Was also slightly paralyzed. I mentally thought "no!no!no!no!no!no!no!…" and forced myself out of the paralysis and the panic, my heart racing, nerves on end.

But I immediately heard a friendly, kind, warm thought form cut in, which sympathized and told me**, "Don't worry…with practice you can do it."** "It", as I telepathically understood it to be, was the ability to override the fear and face the abductors head on and pull myself out of their grips without completely losing it. REALLY interesting and weird to get that feedback…

Suspicious Stuff as an Adult

When looking for indicators of whether or not you've been abducted, you have to look at everything, no matter how seemingly trivial or stupid it initially appears. This is because they wipe out memories, so all there is to go on are the covert, very subtle indicators that "something is amiss." So really nitpick and scrutinize. Don't forget, we've all been raised on Hollyweird movies, where everything is DRAMATIC and EXAGGERATED and OBVIOUS. Well, real life is a lot more subtle. Which is why people tend to miss so much of it. They're waiting for big exaggerated drama and stuff to be spelled out for them that they completely overlook stuff that's happening right under their nose. (myself included, I'm definitely guilty of having done this too many times to count, which is why I know enough now to pass on the tip.) So I recommend making a list of ALL suspect events, no matter how silly it may seem to be. Sometimes even the littlest things can point to something. Some things will turn out to have a logical explanation and can be either discarded, or at least put on the backburner. But some may not. And those are the incidents and events worth focusing on. From there, look closer, and expand your scrutiny into the rest of the aspects of your life. I've experimented with a pendulum, dowsing answers to confirm whether my own incidents were what I thought they were. For your experiences, do what works for you.

"Smash and Grab." In April or May of 1995, age 20, I was at that point living in one of the rooms at the hotel I was working at. It was a temporary situation, being that I was planning to leave on a cross country road trip with my then-boyfriend Gary in June. I was renting one of two full size, regular nice hotel rooms that happened to be located in the basement level, down the hall from Housekeeping. They were there for employees to use, basically. The hallway led to the parking garage, giving it outside street access. It was a bizarre time period for me, full of emotional highs and lows, periods of exhilaration and depression/despondency. So one night I'm lying on my bed, in the dark, going through another one of my extreme emotional lows, feeling suicidal and despondent. The only light in the room came from the parking lot lights that shone through the small window up by the ceiling, which was on the level of the parking lot. But it was enough to see around the room. And as I was lying there, wishing to die and feeling very despondent, I had this sudden "hallucination" of what appeared to be a military looking guy silently bursting into my room, automatic rifle drawn and pointed at me, rushing silently right up on me…and that's where I pulled out of the "hallucination," gasping and sitting up in bed, like AHHH! WHAT WAS *THAT!!!* I had NO explanation for this, as I was NOT somebody prone to hallucinations. It made no sense. But I soon put it out of my mind, then forgot about it altogether.

Years later while reading up on MILABs research, I continually came across references to what I term the "smash and grab" method of taking an abductee, discussed in Part I of this write up. And as mentioned, I always thought this method of operation seemed a bit ridiculous. My hotel memory was still obviously buried, forgotten. Until one morning in 2004 when, while questioning my Flagstaff Arizona incident (coming up after this incident) I wondered whether I had ever had any tell-tale funny happenings in any of the hotels I'd ever stayed at during my travels.

Then this memory resurfaced. A full *ten years later.* And I literally pulled a "Home Alone" in the mirror. My eyes got HUGE, my mouth dropped open, my hands involuntarily went up to my face, clutching it, adrenaline surging. It was a look of horror that I can't duplicate now, funny enough. It was like the floor dropped out from under me. I just could not BELIEVE that I could have forgotten this incident!!! I'd been reading about MILABs for the past two and half years by that point, and never once did I remember this hotel incident. If ever they were going to snag me via Smash and Grab, that period of living at the hotel was absolutely *opportune.* I was living at a hotel, in the basement, with a hallway that had parking garage/street access. **Hello.** Coming in through the unlocked parking garage door in the middle of the night, down the hall and into my room which at that point used the old fashioned metal key locks – not electronic – and then grabbing me and hauling me out, unseen, would have been a piece of cake. It was almost *too* easy in fact.

This "hallucination" of a military guy bursting in to my room was probably not something that happened to me at the time that I saw it in my mind, while lying on my bed. Rather, it was more likely a flashback memory of something that had recently taken place, and it was bubbling up to the surface as I laid there, in a blank, numbed, depressed stupor. In fact, I'd theorize that abductions/programming was causing me to fluctuate into these inexplicable depressed stupors in the first place. Upon quick glance the emotional ups and downs I described sounds a lot like Manic Depression/Bi-Polar Disorder. But I don't think that was the problem, since I was/am very functional, unlike how Manic Depressives tend to be who often require meds to get through life. As mentioned elsewhere in this book, I wonder if the side effects of mind control and abductions masquerade as known brain/psyche disorders – Manic Depression. Schizophrenia. Etc. 1995-1996 was a time period where I obsessed about my death, as well as continually putting myself into dangerous situations that would get me killed. I went through another similar period back in 1991 - 1992, always fantasizing about guys having a gun to my head and killing me. Not normal. Sounds like MILABs stuff to me, now that I've studied up on it all. In fact there's a cartoon illustration in the book "MILABS" by Dr. Helmut Lammer showing a girl sitting in a chair…with military guys surrounding her, guns pointed at her head. Interesting coincidence.

Possible Flagstaff/Sedona, Arizona abduction. In July of 1996, while living in Orange County, CA I decided one day on a whim that I was going to drive out to Flagstaff/Sedona Arizona on my two days off from work. I had no idea why I wanted to do this, the idea just popped into my head, and I went along with it. My coworkers, roommates…even my boss Edwin, who I was buddies with, were all like, "Why?!?" I don't know, was my response. Sounds like fun! Why not! And so I did it. Drove the eight hours from Orange County to Flagstaff, and got a room for the night at a Motel 6. I got dinner at McDonald's, then wandered around outside the motel on the train tracks, kicking rocks around, looking up at the stars, wondering huh…now what?? What am I supposed to do?? I remember looking at the star Betelgeuse, or maybe even Mars, red and prominent, hoping to see a UFO, since I was in "UFO country." No such luck though. It was ten p.m. and I didn't know what the point of all this was. I was tired, and so decided to just go to bed. Once in bed, I remember lying there, doing some sort of praying, trying to see if I could feel a connection to any sort of anything spiritual, God-ish, angel-like, or whatever. Felt absolutely nothing, which was a bit of a let down. I realized I really am completely alone here in life, totally on my own. Oh well. No surprise there. Then that was it, I was out for the night.

In the morning I was unable to wake right away, feeling unnaturally groggy and wiped out. So much so that I couldn't get out of bed in time for the 11 a.m. checkout. Had to get an extension to 1 p.m. and even then I had to force myself to get up. As far as I can tell I had no memories of waking during the night, although that may be incorrect, I'm not 100% positive on it. At the time I didn't think anything of it, figured I was just tired from all that driving the day before. Finally just got up, got dressed, and checked out. Took a spin down the 17, but nothing too exciting. I didn't know how to get to the actual town of Sedona, so never got that far. Bought pair of earrings from a roadside Indian woman, and finally left to make the eight hour trek back to Orange County.

Knowing what I know now about the Flagstaff/Sedona area, and the fact that there are bases and a huge amount of alien/military activity happening there, and how sometimes "stuff" will get you to drive to them makes me seriously question this entire episode.

Gray overlay? After moving up to Portland to roommate with my brother Joe, he had made me aware of our joint status as supposed alien abductees. There was a strange incident that occurred one night while I was lying on my sleeping bag. Joe was sitting on the edge of his bed to my left, flipping through something that he was reading, while I lay in my own bed, under the covers, staring at the ceiling. And that's when I suddenly felt like I was slipping under water. It felt like I was sinking down, slipping away, and through my eyes things looked as if they were moving away from me. It became hazy and heavy and dream like. As I slipped down, I saw my brother glance up at me as he read…then do a "Holy shit!!" double take, eyes bugging out. He had genuine shock and actual fear on his face as he looked at me, like he couldn't believe what he was seeing. And this was a kid who was absolutely fearless by that point in life. Finally he managed to sputter out something about how he'd seen me "turning into a Gray!"

His voice yanked me out of this dreamy, slipping-under-the-waves trance state…and for a split second "I" felt slight annoyance, for some odd and interesting reason.

I turned to look at him, coming back into myself, and he excitedly explained what it looked like to him. I was lying there, and then….my face morphed into a Gray face. I knew my brother long enough to know when he was being sincere and when he was bullshitting, and right now, he was being sincere. Whether I really had actually started to turn into a Gray, I don't know, but I knew that *he* truly believed that he'd seen that. And I definitely felt something really strange going on at the exact same time that he did that "Holy shit!!" double take, so, I don't doubt that this happened.

Shortly after that incident I was handing something to my brother, and for the first time I consciously noticed my fingers as I reached toward him. I was gripping the object with only three fingers, my pinky and ring fingers bent down, as if they were superfluous. I stopped in mid-air, frowning at my hand. Then I resumed giving it to him and mentioned it to him. I realized that I'd been doing this with everything in fact for a little bit of time now…since my October abduction two months before, actually. I didn't like it, because what was THAT supposed to mean?? Gray attachment? Also I only recently remembered that during this particular time period of living in Portland I was experiencing constant facial muscle discomfort. I was always rubbing and massaging at my face, particularly my cheeks and the sides of my face. Something felt off with my face. Whatever it was, it's gone now though. No more three fingers or Gray overlays.

"The pen from nowhere." A great example of an artificial synchronicity: It was the final week at my temp job up in Portland, and several of my coworkers who liked me had suggested that I should apply to work for the company permanently. For kicks, I went to the HR department to get an application even though I was planning to move to Florida. In the elevator ride back up to the office I stood there against the right wall, holding the application, wondering "What exactly am I doing here? Am I going to stay in Portland and use my money to get an apartment downtown somewhere? Or am I going to move to Florida? Should I fill this out or not? I mean seriously, what am I doing here??"

And right then as the elevator stopped to let a guy out, **a silver Cross brand pen slid across the elevator floor, spinning with force and coming to a stop right at my feet, perfectly.**

I looked down at the pen at my feet, my eyes wide.

I looked behind me, from where it came – the back left corner of the elevator.

Nobody was standing there. The only other person in the elevator was a woman standing against the opposite wall. She too looked at the back corner, wide eyed with disbelief. It was she who said, **"It's the pen from nowhere!"**

I bent down and picked it up, like, Huh…will you look at that. I'm standing here contemplating whether to fill out this application, and something tosses a pen at me, landing at my feet. It was such a government agent "Them" pen too. Heavy weight, smooth silver Cross pen. Nice. ;) [And on a side note…the exact kind of pen my dad always liked when I was growing up…]

I debated about the meaning of this unbelievable coincidence. Either "They" want me to fill out the app and go for the job and stay in Portland…because it's actually bad for me – so, sabotage - or, this really is a sign from something good that I should stay here and forfeit the Florida idea.

hmm.

I decided to go to Florida. As I now know, positive forces don't work by generating artificial synchronicities. Plain and simple. If it's a farfetched artificial synch…then it ain't good. Move on.

Power outage phobia. Not too long after moving into my new apartment in Fort Lauderdale, I realized I had an actual phobia about the power going out. I'd never experienced that before in my life. But on one occasion when the power glitched I had an immediate anxiety attack, looked around wildly, heart racing, and made a beeline for the front door, bursting outside like a nut. Getting outside was "safe," I knew. I could run to freedom. Being caught in a closed in apartment in the pitch blackness was very, very dangerous. This became so much of an issue that I set up flashlight lanterns around the apartment in the event that this ever happened while I was not near the front door. I had NO intention of being caught in the pitch black, unable to know or see what was going on around me. So I had lanterns in the bathroom, in the kitchen, and another right next to my bed. This isn't normal! But interestingly enough, I encountered **another alien/MILAB female on a message board who was the exact same way**. She also had flashlights set up around her apartment, due to an issue about being suddenly caught in the dark. This means something, in my opinion, and is indicative of something possibly very negative happening at night, in the dark, or something cutting the power and swooping in, I don't know. I once had a dream, relayed in the Dreams section, regarding insectoid aliens cutting the power in my old house in Connecticut and stealthily swooping in to come get me.

Sudden return. Had several incidents back in Florida of waking up very suddenly, gasping, at 6:59 a.m. on the nose, like I was put back literally a minute before my alarm was to go off. One of those times I came back with my adrenaline still going. Couldn't remember anything, yet, I had total residual after affects of MAJOR stress, anxiety, and trauma. Felt REALLY frazzled. It stayed with me all day, and even my co-workers knew something was wrong with me. When I was saying something in a frazzled way to my buddy Ryan, he joked, "Hey, calm down, before you give yourself an aneurism." My personality by this point in life is normally very easy going and relaxed. So this was completely out of character for me.

Residual drugs? Woke up one morning in Florida in 2003, feeling "drunk" except I hadn't been drinking. I was SO dizzy, I could barely stand up, and it lasted for half the day, well into the afternoon. There was nothing else wrong with me, just a feeling of being drunk, but, without the drunk. I didn't even think to take a pee sample first thing after waking, because I had no idea where to go with it or what to do with it. Now I know to do this…so of course, now they don't let this happen anymore. Things openly happen when they know you're not on the ball and won't do anything about it.

Symbolisms. (It would be useful to read the section regarding **"Trauma Based Mind Control"** in Part I to get more of a background on the supposed Illuminati and mind control symbolisms to better understand the significance of this entry.) I've had this penchant for being attracted to all the "Illuminati/Brotherhood" and mind control symbolism going back to about age 21 - **Pyramids, suns/Ra, eyes of Horus, ankhs, white owls, phoenixes, Alice in Wonderland, 'shrooms, butterflies, big cats (leopards, cheetahs) porcelain masks**, etc. etc.…even back before I knew what any of it meant. Back in '96 while living with my old group of roommates and long before I'd ever even heard of any of this stuff I used to have the big poster of Ra that I bought at a new age shop, a painted pottery sun that I bought in Venice beach, a big 'shroom candle (ties into alice in wonderland programming), a pair of porcelain masks on the wall that an ex-boyfriend had given me (who, in retrospect, seems to clearly be a case of "alien love bite," but, that's a whole side story in itself…) and then to top it all off developed an obsession with wanting to find Alice in Wonderland imagery. (wasn't able to…which in retrospect was probably actually for the best.) I was just surrounded by the imagery, even back then. And I think the Alice in Wonderland interest happened after taking a trip to Sedona (mentioned before this entry) but I can't be sure. Also have my black cat named Kitty, same as "Alice Through the Looking Glass" and was told in 2004 that I had "Alice in Wonderland hair," since it was long and (strawberry) blonde with bangs. (It's different now.) As far as jewelry goes I still have the silver ankh necklace I bought back then, tucked away in a box, and for years had a penchant for wearing choker necklaces. Only after realizing their significance in mind control slaves did the interest gradually wane. Roses, which in the research usually equates to "bloodline," or "silence" has been another biggie with me. Rose necklaces, including a rose choker ;) rose rings, clothing with roses on them, you name it. Back in '93 I stole a silver rose ring that I didn't have the money for, such was the intense drive that I ***had*** to have it.

Years later in Florida I took several Butterfly World booklets and methodically cut out all the butterflies in them, one by one, until there was probably almost a hundred of them, and then taped them all up on my wall over the head of my bed. Interesting in light of the strange incident when I was about five when the "butterflies" appeared on my bedroom wall, eliciting an hysterical reaction from me. Also had the big cat imagery on my walls, with an overall idea in my head about **"being a cat"** and a penchant for stuff designed with cat print. There was lots more 'shrooms and sun imagery going on, as well as some of the Aleister Crowley Thoth tarot deck cards taped on the wall. And then when I came across a dollhouse miniature at Pearl Arts and Crafts store of a **white owl**, no, I didn't resist. At first I did, knowing by that point in life what it represents in many circles – "Moloch", Illuminati, etc. – but in the end I caved in. The feeling of ***having to have it!!!!!*** was so intense that two days later I made the trip back and bought it, overriding intellectual knowledge trying to counteract it. And despite knowing what the phoenix means in mind control (the alternate persona rising up from the fractured core mind and taking over, being born as a new person), again, the drive/compulsion to use "Phoenix Rising" as part of an internet handle name was so strong I couldn't resist.

After reading the works of David Icke, Fritz Springmeier, etc. and learning what this symbolism can represent and what it's often used for within mind control programming, I took some of this stuff down. In particular the butterflies surrounding my bed, not good, and the Thoth tarot cards, and again, stopped wearing choker necklaces so much. Don't have "Alice in Wonderland hair" anymore either. But admittedly I couldn't part with all the sun and 'shroom imagery, or the white owl. And I'm still a sucker for the butterflies and the big cat print. Ra's long gone though, got lost in the shuffle in my many moves over the past eight years. Each thing taken individually doesn't mean anything, but when pooling it all together and looking at the behavior and **compulsions** driving it, then it's definitely suspect. I've also started paying more attention to females around me, you know, in case this is just symbolisms that most females are attracted to or surround themselves with. And the answer there is a big, um, No, apparently. ;D

But just as important are any symbolisms or imagery that one has an **inexplicable aversion to.** Since I was a little kid I've detested anything having to do with Peter Pan. Anytime I encountered the Disney cartoon image of Peter Pan I just felt like, "grrrrrrrrr!" for no logical reason. And then my mom had bought me this little girl's "Tinkerbell" nail polish and I remember frowning at the image of Tinkerbell on the bottle, feeling more "grrrrrrrrr!" Years later I learned that Peter Pan and Tinkerbell are part of "never grow old" programming in mind control. My childhood aversion to Peter Pan and Tinkerbell imagery doesn't prove anything, but it's certainly strange, and a little suspect. And if there's one thing that has absolutely *defined* me in this life it's the fact that I do *not* look my age. Never have, sometimes to the point of freaskishness. And I don't act it either. My good friend Mike R. told me in 2000 shortly before I left California that, "You haven't aged at all in the eight years I've known you." (I am actually aging, just not at the same rate as others I take it.) And I've read that mind controlled people with their various alters will often times look years younger than they actually are. When I was 25 I had a boss at my drug store job line me up next to her boyfriend who was also 25, because she couldn't believe the shocking difference. I was petite at 5'3", 105 pounds and looked like I was a teen, while he was about 6'5", big burly, gruff and worn out, and looked in his late 40s, easy. He looked like he could have been the old gruff dad, and I was the kid. Yet we were born only months apart. Guys my age who liked me would initially stay away from me in my 20s because they were convinced I was jailbait, meanwhile as 15, 16 year old high school boys were hitting up on me, then getting embarrassed when they found out how old I really was. I'd get carded, of course, but sometimes the store clerks were convinced it had to be a fake i.d. When people would try to guess my age they'd guess 10+ years younger than I was. So at 30, 31 I had people guessing I was 18, 19. And treating me accordingly. ie, talking down to me as if I was stupid, or being outright rude, dismissive, and condescending. Too many stories to get into here. There have been a few times where I've accidentally either silenced a room of people, or silenced the one-on-one person I was talking to by revealing my age. Always the same stunned and confused looks. If there's more than one person they always do the same thing where they look at each other, confused and weirded out. Sometimes they act like they can't handle or accept it, actually seeming a little irritated, haven't figured that one out yet. Don't know if they think I'm lying, or if they think I'm a freak, ;D or they feel like the balance of power just shifted (if they had always perceived me as being "below" them, only to realize that I'm actually older than them by a number of years, then maybe that causes a kneejerk reaction of upset and irritation, I don't know.) And now with the invention of Facebook, where you can find anybody you've ever known so long as they have an account there, it's become even more obvious. I see pictures of people I used to go to school with, ex boyfriends, former coworkers, roommates…….and it's like watching them pass me by. People that were younger than me, including one of my ex boyfriends, now look up to ten years *older* than me sometimes. So, "never grow old" indeed. :/ My internal mindset and way of projecting myself to the world also matched how I've looked externally, as well as my choice of dress and accessories, and still does for the most part even in my mid-30s. The voice too. Most women in their 30s have these loud "mack! mack! mack!" voices as I call it, projecting a strong ego outwards, talking over other people, being very aggressive and "LOOK AT ME!" Then there's me. I sound like I'm about 15, 16, something I've heard from multiple people, including an actual 16 year old girl. A lot of ways it's not anything like a "mature woman." Does "mind control programming" or "never grow old" account for this? Considering the concept of "multiple personas," which I get into later on in the book, and my serious "grrrrr!" aversion to Peter Pan, it's certainly a possibility. Could also be genetics, diet, the way life events have shaped me, or just plain luck. So who really knows. I am aging, and some things have happened that are right on cue for my age (35…that's when a lot of health and aging things seem to kick in for everybody like clockwork) including gray and white hairs ;) but again, it's apparently not what other people feel is normal.

(For more on the significance of this symbolism, again, see the earlier section regarding programming, and then also check out a blog called **Psuedo Occult Media, http://pseudoccultmedia.blogspot.com/** which specializes in dissecting the rampant occurrences of this symbolism nowadays in the media, from TV shows to movies, music vids, advertising, the fashion industry, and tacked all over its corporate owned, and most often times MK'd and multiple personalitied, stars and starlets. He takes whatever I did in my "Mind Control Symbolisms and Programming Triggers in Movies" write up **http://in2worlds.net/mind-control-themes-and-programming-triggers-in-movies** to whole other level, times 1,000. I don't fully endorse his take on everything, but it's enough of something interesting to be worth mentioning.)

I still don't understand how all of this works, but I imagine that surrounding oneself with the symbolisms and imagery used in creating a programmed mind would help to reinforce the programming. Many of these symbolisms directly tie into actual systems that are instilled in people's minds apparently, according to the research. [And on a side note: when it comes to the symbolisms being tacked all over the performers in the entertainment industry I almost see it as a form of Illuminati **branding,** indicating who their masters are that own and control them. The same may apply to every day sorts of people, unfortunately, or again, it's to reinforce programming. Not all the performers have it, but the ones that do *REALLY* do, namely the **females;** they're personally tattooed with the symbolism on their bodies (in particular look for owls, keys and locks, butterflies, roses, ankhs, pyramids, suns, eyes, etc.) their videos are dripping in it, their CD artwork is riddled with it, and all their promo pics prominently feature it.]

"Sidetrack Circus Diversion" Harassment

In the opening introduction to this piece I mentioned that oftentimes, higher realm entities are toying with us in the same way a cat will bat around its prey. But sometimes they're doing more, and so it's important to learn the difference. And that's where this section comes in. In February 2002 after I made a break in life from my brother (who was a heavily programmed MILABs target) and moved to Florida, I hooked up with my current boyfriend Tom and life became….very strange, to say the least. Life had already been strange anyway, but before all this it had been more paranormal strange, with the beginning glimpses of MILABS. Now it was getting "aliens and UFO" strange! Tom runs a website on all things relating to metaphysics, conspiracy, abductions, and hyperdimensional manipulation in human affairs. Because of who he is, he's been a lifelong target of alien abductions, and possibly MILABs as well. So when I hooked up with him in life, "stuff" took a huge interest in our affairs and I suddenly became a marked target as well. Not just because of my involvement with Tom, but also for parting ways from my brother and possibly breaking from programming. I apparently wasn't supposed to do that. So suddenly, eyes were on me.

All throughout 2002 and into 2003 we both began experiencing what I've now termed "**sidetrack circus diversion/fear and paranoia generator!"** incidents (cue circus music here) designed to do exactly as it sounds – send us into a tailspin of fear and paranoia, obsessively going in loops about these distracting incidents…and even hopefully break us up, if all went well. Had we been different people, and had the situation been left unchecked, it could have easily disintegrated into the type of paranoia and craziness one sometimes finds with abductees. The thing that ultimately saved me was also one of my weaker points - my ability to tune stuff out, turn away and go back about my business and put it all out of my head. It's one of my big downfalls because it's kept me in a state of obliviousness or denial over the years with regards to certain things *waaaay* longer than necessary, but yet it's also the same response/behavior that kept my frequency leveled. Being relatively level (regardless of the reason), versus being worked up, paranoid and terrorized **probably prevented far worse things from happening to me**, which carried me through until I finally gleaned my big moment of insight regarding **"the fear frequency"** in April of 2003. **http://in2worlds.net/the-higher-self**

Once I was told about the fear frequency, and heard that this is what was being done to me all those months, I stopped whatever fear I did have literally, overnight. And consequently, most of these random weird events stopped as well, reflecting that shift in awareness. I couldn't take any of it seriously anymore, and so they no longer had a use for doing that stuff. And as of this point, Tom and I rarely if ever get incidents like this anymore. That's pretty astounding in its implications. To go from there to here means something pretty big changed. That something was our mindsets, and it's something more abductees could benefit from realizing. I want to stress again though that remaining in a state of denial – ie, head in the sand - about things wouldn't have worked forever. Ignoring stuff will only get you so far, as I outline further in Part III. But again, it at least helped carry me through until I could get to a place of awareness that enabled me to tackle it all straight on, with no fear.

So with that in mind, the following incidents are the kind of random, crazy sounding, harassment/fear generator/distraction tactics one often hears about with MILABS abductees:

Alien in the Cloud. March of 2002. Not too long after moving to Florida I was lying on the beach one late afternoon with my head resting on my backpack, just relaxing and enjoying the sound of the waves and the ocean breeze rustling the palm fronds. I had a thought form as I call it go through my head, urging me to look at the clouds, saying, **"You could look for shapes in the clouds!"**

In response I thought (before even realizing that I was arguing with a thought form in my head), "Uh, yeah, I *could,* but, that's not something I would normally *do*." Just kind of sarcastic. I'm not into fanciful stuff like looking for shapes in the clouds. ;) To which it responded back with, **"Look!! You'll see an alien face!!"** So, I looked. Still very calm, not questioning this whole exchange at all. And sure enough…there it was. Straight up at 12:00, an absolute perfect alien face sculpted from a cloud that was connected to a neighboring cloud. A white tear drop head, big slanted blue eye cut out of the cloud, a blue blip nose and blue slit mouth. Absolutely stunningly perfect, in every way. Man alive if I'd only had a camera with me to grab a shot!! The thought form voice was happy and giddy about this too, proud in a childlike way. Like it was saying, "WOW!!! This is so COOL!! Look what I did! Look! Look! hehehehehe!" The alien face in the cloud dissolved away very quickly.

This incident may sound nuts, but the work of Fritz Springmeier has been the only source that I've found which confirms - within back to back sentences no less - their ability to "sculpt clouds" using energy, and to "communicate" to their abductees using ELF waves. These externally generated thought forms are meshed nearly seamlessly with your own, which is why for instance I didn't question what was happening and answered back. It felt like it was my own thought.

> "Various types of "non-lethal" weapons have been created and are now being used. Directed energy can be used to **sculpt clouds.** ELF waves can be used to **place thoughts in people's minds** without using implants." – Fritz Springmeier

And from the book "MILABS" by Dr. Helmut Lammer and Marion Lammer:

> "Dr. Frey's work in this field, dating back to the sixties, gave rise to the so-called "Frey Effect," which is commonly known as **microwave hearing.** It is noteworthy that **alleged alien abductees and mind control victims report that they sometimes hear voices in their heads, although they are not schizophrenic."** *– page 98*

More "voices." So, speaking of hearing a "voice" in the mind…shortly after moving into my new apartment in Fort Lauderdale, I was thinking one night about how close I'd come to actually bringing my brother Joe with me to Florida. I had almost rented a trailer and a hitch to attach to my car too, in order to haul his belongings. Stupid in retrospect, but my programming was strong. However, I managed to break from the programming and parted ways with Joe in Oregon, never to see him again.

So I was thinking about all of that, frowning, having very negative ideas about Joe and feeling *extremely* grateful that I'd ditched him in life, and then decided to bring the trash out to the dumpster. Out to the sidewalk and into the parking lot, I walked past the cars parked next to my building and accidentally slammed my thigh into something jutting out. Looking down I saw it was a **trailer hitch** on the back of one of the cars. I turned to continue towards the dumpster, in pain, rubbing my leg and carrying the trash bag, when I then heard a male voice in my mind command, "**Stop!…Look at the license plate!"**

I paused, frowning curiously, but started walking again towards the dumpster.

"STOP!" he commanded more forcefully. **"Look at the license plate!!"**

I stopped yet again, actually turning halfway around, lowering the trash bag…but then changed my mind and started walking again.

"LOOK AT THE LICENSE PLATE!!!"! he screamed at me now, *really* pissed off.

Alright!! I thought, whirling around and going back over to the neighbor's car, squatting down in front of the plate. Like the "alien in the cloud" incident, this voice meshed nearly seamlessly with my own thoughts, so I just responded to it without really questioning it.

I stared at the plate. Alright…it's from Michigan, I noted. Looking, looking. I know I'm supposed to see something here, but I don't get it. The numbers and letters didn't mean anything to me. But there's obviously something here…looking, looking….

Then I saw it. The license plate *frame.*

It simply said **Joseph.**

The trailer hitch which smashed my thigh. On my neighbor's car with the plate frame that said Joseph. Right after thinking intensely about how glad I was that I didn't get that trailer and hitch and actually bring Joseph to Florida with me. And then "them" screaming at me about it all. Okey dokey. And I continued to the dumpster to toss in my bag.

In retrospect one has to wonder how this amazing synchronicity was orchestrated.

Beeping noises in the air. For a period of time in Florida in 2002 and into 2003, I would hear these electronic beeping noises in my apartment that would happen in mid-air, coming from an invisible source of some sort. Later an episode occurred with Tom there as a witness. It happened up in the air by the vent in the wall…and then beeped twice more, moving down the hallway…actually **echoing,** like there was a real "something" there, in the apartment, invisible, moving about. And the fact that it echoed between the walls was amazing.

Invisibility. …but even weirder was the time when "somebody," who knows what, "arrived" in my closet. I was by myself in the living room, reading, when I heard a loud thump in my closet/laundry room. **And then what sounded like a person in the closet, losing their balance and falling over.** Just this thumping and banging around, like somebody - the size and weight of an adult human - had materialized there and then fell over and was rustling about. And it wasn't my cat, because she was in the living room area with me. The closet door was open slightly, about six inches, but I didn't get up to go investigate. I nervously went back to reading with my back to the closet. Within a minute or so I saw something moving around out of the corner of my eye, and looked over to see a really faint, barely visible black shadowy thing moving slowly about over in that area of the kitchen/hall/closet. Whatever it was, it was trying to be quiet and go unnoticed. Problem was, I heard it arrive, and I could see it with my peripheral vision. So despite their cloaking, their presence was known. Now I was spooked and got up, grabbed my backpack, and left the apartment for several hours. I returned later, not worried about anything though. That was so me back then. Just…put it out of my head, lalala, and move on with things.

Side note: From the website "Alien Jigsaw" I recently found this very interesting tidbit (bolded words my own emphasis):

> "Another interesting paper concerning "Information Warfare" is classified and only individuals with appropriate security clearances can obtain a copy from the Defense Technical Information Center in Fort Belvoir, Virginia.[27] However, you can read in the abstract that this paper explores holographic image projection, **cloaking devices and multispectral camouflage** which will provide enhanced military deception capability….It is just possible that MILAB victims are being used as the guinea pigs for these research programs. Because they are secretive, they are not under congressional oversight."

Strange voicemails and phone call interference. My first experience with anomalous phone happenings occurred while still roommating with my brother in Portland, approximately January 2002. I dialed into my cell phone voicemail one morning while at work and found a message that went on and on for several minutes….**the sound of marching jackboots.** That's it. Nothing else. Barely anybody even had my personal phone number, and the few of people who did wouldn't do something like that. It was bizarre, and actually creeped me out. If I'm not mistaken, this message actually happened TWICE. But I wasn't documenting things back then, so I don't have dates. But the same day that I received the first message, my brother claimed that the Nissan he was driving, which I'd given him for free back in California, had caught fire, or experienced some kind of explosion within the engine that actually blew off the hood of the car, causing a fire. So the car was gone, burned, and had been towed away. This in itself was a set up, attempting to cause a situation of my already penniless and unemployed brother to have to further rely on me to keep taking care of him in life. I have zero proof that this really happened to Joe's car…but he did tell me the story before even hearing about the jackboots phone message.

The next anomalous message occurred after moving to Florida, in about April of 2002. It was strange, like a whooshing wind noise, and these random, weird, far away sounding blips, and finally the distorted, possibly electronic voice of a little girl saying "Bye!" and hitting one of the number buttons on the phone. Tom figured out it was the 9 button. What it all meant, I had no idea, but it was bizarre, and I'd never heard anything like that before. (or since.) I had loads of "stuff" going on during this time, so it fits right in. I still have a copy of this message, and Tom has run it through all sorts of filter programs to see what he could find.

A third really odd one was a sentence fragment featuring a man with a southern drawl saying, **"…manufactured hearts and kidneys and….hello?!....and limbs and things."** That's it, message ends. Still have a copy of that one as well. Some people may be dismissive of these messages as being wrong numbers or crank calls, but the interesting thing is they only ever happened during those crazy times when I had a lot of negative abduction activity occurring, and when I was in a vulnerable position in life. So, that's an important factor in determining whether or not it as a sidetrack circus diversion/fear and paranoia generator event.

Then there's phone call interference, which has happened to me on four separate occasions that I can remember, with only two people in my life - once while talking to Joe back in 1999, and three times with Tom. Phone interference as I've experienced it seemed to be for the purpose of announcing their presence, let us know we were being listened to, and possibly instill fear too, I'm sure. When it happened to me and Joe, the noise scared the crap out of me. One second we were taking, the next there was a very sudden and loud blaring crazy noise that caused me to jump and pull the phone away from my ear, heart racing, nerves standing on end. It went on for a good ten seconds too. It's actually very similar to what happens in the movie "Mothman Prophesies," where Indrid Cold creates a blasting noise that causes Richard Gere/"John Klein" to jump and pull the phone away from his ear. My incident happened in '99 though, two years before the movie. With Tom, it's always been like distorted electronic beeping. The three times with Tom were during times when he was back in Iowa for family stuff while I was by myself at home. One of those phone calls was a very big deal, where we *this* close to breaking up, and where the outcome would affected the timeline of our lives (and other people's as well) in a major way. Not only did we experience the distorted electronic beeping interference announcement during that particular call, but I also had two ear tones in the middle of it all. So, something was definitely listening in to THAT conversation using all possible angles!

The "Gray" homeless guy. This was during the summer/fall of 2002, when all kinds of strange and bizarre events were happening to me and Tom. We were idling at a red light at Broward and Federal in downtown Fort Lauderdale when a homeless guy wearing the bright pink Sun Sentinel T-shirt approached Tom, who was driving, and began chatting casually with him through the open window. Homeless people selling the Street Sheet for donations or the Sun Sentinel newspaper were commonplace at that particular intersection, so this was normal. So they're chatting, and I'm over in the passenger side in my own world, not paying much attention, then the light turns green. As the cars in front of us begin to slowly pull forward, homeless man suddenly changes you could say. He goes from easy breezy casual, to getting a sort of intense, serious look about his face, leans in through the window, staring intently at me – honing in on me for the first time - and gives me a big "V" sign with his fingers.

It was at this point that I really noticed how he looked. The guy was barely 5 feet tall, if that, probably about 90 pounds soaking wet, meaning, very tiny, and with a very pronounced triangular shaped face, and large alien-looking pale blue eyes, and very thin lips/small mouth. He looked like a barely disguised Gray alien in human form. And the way he was intensely staring me down, giving me the V, leaning partially into the car window was just bizarre. I just stared back at him, like, Huh?? then he pulled back out of the way, and Tom began moving forward. Tom and I were both like, What was THAT?? Damn!

Finally seeing "Them." August, 2002. Tom and I decided to go to Denny's in the middle of the night, around 1:45 a.m. At first we chose the one on Federal Highway. But we get in there, and there's like, no people. We're pretty much the only customers, and not only that, but our server is this older woman with a bad cold. We heard her hacking and coughing up a lung before she even got to our table. We ordered our Cokes and when she went to get them, hacking and coughing, we took off and bailed out, in search of a more happening Denny's. One with people, and better servers. !!! We headed further up Federal Highway and wound up at the Denny's on Commercial and Federal, which was jumping. Loads of people. We took our seat, ordered our drinks, and were waiting, chatting, and people watching.

I was looking towards Tom when I suddenly felt them approaching, before I ever saw them. I looked up and see two suits coming down the aisle in our direction…and both of their eyes were locked right on me, and only me. I stared right back, which isn't something I did at the time. Have to emphasize that. At that time I didn't stare down strangers, or lock eyes on people like that. The way I felt was that I couldn't NOT do it, even if I wanted to. I was frozen. They were dressed impeccably, looking just like government agent types. One of the guys was Caucasian, tall, over six feet, with meat on his bones, just a big and tall guy. He had thinning/balding light brown hair, pale skin, was clean shaven, and was wearing a full suit, with jacket and tie included. The jacket and pants were dark gray, the shirt white. His face was plain white guy. The other guy was shorter, probably no more than 5′ 8″. His skin was tan, and his hair darker, and he had more hair than the other guy. His features were heavier than the other guy, a bigger nose, a heavier brow bone. He was also clean-shaven. He wore a crisp bright white dress shirt, gray pants, belt, a tie, but no jacket, unlike the other dude. He was the one I really looked at first, because that's the one I felt the draw to. He was staring me down intensely, with a little smirk on his face. The vibe was sexual. **And I also "recognized" him. I had no conscious recollection of him, but I knew him. There was recognition.** My attention then turned back to the other, taller guy as they walked by me, and that guy was also staring me down, but in a different way. His look was a mix of contempt and disdain, but also curiosity. Like "hmm." I didn't "recognize" him, and I knew that he was only seeing me for the first time as well.

As they passed by our booth I took another quick glance back at the other guy who I recognized, then looked down at our table, still frozen in place. The only feeling going through my mind was **"uh oh…"** like a little kid. I knew I'd "done something wrong" and had that feeling of being in trouble. I was definitely not doing what I was "supposed to be doing," or what somebody wanted me to be doing, that's for sure. Part of it I think involved being with Tom. They *do not* like him, that much I've figured out, and did not want me with him. The plan had apparently been to get me to stick with my brother at all costs, no matter what he was doing or how nasty he got, thus enabling him to carry out his various criminal/agent provocateur programming commands while simultaneously sabotaging my own life in the process; then, turn my back on my budding friendship with Tom and never make it out of Portland, Oregon. Instead, I permanently ditched my brother, made a break for Florida without him, and hooked up with Tom.

I was still staring at the table, frozen, when Tom finally said "What the hell was THAT?? Why were those guys staring at you like that?!?" He was frowning and watching them as they supposedly stopped at a booth behind us. I never saw that part though since I felt unable to turn around. He had no idea what was going on. I was finally able to tell him from my perspective.

According to Tom, who was facing them, they paused first at the booth behind ours, of course, while I sat paralyzed in place. Then the shorter guy that I recognized pulled out a cigarette and lit it up. Then they moved further back, to a booth against the back wall of the restaurant. Tom said that in regards to the cigarette dude, his mannerisms and vibe in general was that of power. Like mafia. Just the way he lit his cigarette and carried himself. Total power.

Then the shorter darker mafia power cigarette guy, the one I "recognized", decided to head to the restroom, as an excuse to do another buzz by probably. I didn't see him head to the restroom, but, again, **I "felt" him when he approached back around again**. I intuitively looked up, directly at him. His eyes were locked on me from over fifteen or so feet away as he neared, again, with that smirk and sexual vibe.

So, yup, that was apparently "them." Or, some of them, anyway. **I had requested prior to this incident to be able to see some of "them" while I was out and about in the real world…and be able to *know* that it was them.** Well, guess I got my wish. They picked the optimal place and time to do it, too. A Denny's diner at two in the morning is perfect. Nobody is going to be dressed like they were at a Denny's, in the middle of the night. They totally stood out. Then factor in the telepathic tug, the way they were staring at only me, the one guy's inexplicable disdain/contempt, the subconscious recognition and the feeling like I knew I'd done something wrong, and well, there you go. There was no doubt in me and Tom's minds who we were looking at. If it had been during the day, during working hours, it could be dismissed.

It's interesting to note that we started out at a completely different Denny's…and bailed out to come to this one at the last minute. This begs the question – and you know, maybe I'm missing something here, but - in order to cross paths with "them" at the second Denny's, the situation had to be set up to get us to leave the first Denny's. So…is this saying that events were somehow arranged? If so…how? Who, and what, are these "people" and what in the frickity frack is going on here anyway?

The thermostat. During this same exact time period where we saw "them" around August of 2002, I came home from work one afternoon to find several of my apartment windows cranked open. It was August in South Florida, which means I had the A/C going for my cat and had closed all the windows as a result. Also, the bathroom door was now open when it had been closed when I left, since I didn't want to waste A/C on the bathroom.

Frowning, I closed the windows and bathroom door again, then went over to the A/C to look at the temperature gauge. Normally it was always set between 72 – 75. Now it was set down to **69** degrees, exactly. So, someone had been there, and made their presence known. (see the "Number Sightings" subsection in Part III for more on the number 69 in relation to MILABs activities.)

Voice from the radio. September 2002. Tom and I had just returned from an overnight trip (to a C's channeling session in fact, an excerpt of which appears at the end of Part II) and we were unloading Tom's car, making several trips back and forth into the apartment. I had turned on the radio inside the apartment while we unpacked. As I walked inside carrying something, I heard a male voice say from the radio something really……vile. I won't repeat it here, but it was something nobody would say over the radio, nor be allowed to by FCC regulations, let's just put it that way. Also, what he coincidentally said matched up to yucko abduction related memory fragment that I experienced when I lived in Portland, which I discuss in the "Dream Hijacking" section. I could hear the smirk behind the vile words too.

It stopped me in my tracks, and I turned and looked back at the radio, holding my stuff, thinking, "Did I just hear what I thought I heard?!? Am I imagining this???!"

And as if to answer my question and dispel *any* sort of doubts about what was happening here, the voice went on to say something else that was ten times worse. But I can't remember it now. It was so disturbing that I immediately froze up and went into denial/rejection mode. He said it, shocked me into mental meltdown and I just….blocked it out. Then I turned away from the radio, feeling numb, and went back to my business. So all I have is the knowledge that something was said, but what was said I can no longer remember. It's been "deleted." And the fact that I even have such a capability says something in itself, to me. Kind of reveals some things.

Power repeatedly surging. On Halloween night in 2002, Tom was trying to set up our newly purchased web cam so that we could have it on, monitoring us while we slept to deter abductions. Well "coincidentally," the power kept repeatedly surging/going out that night – six times in fact – interfering with the entire thing. Admittedly, it scared me to no end because that was my mindset back then. Plus I also had that newfound phobia about the power going out. I'd occasionally experienced power glitches in that apartment…but none like that, to that extent. And there hadn't been any in awhile…not until the night we were trying to set up the new web cam.

The Black Helicopter, Round 1. November 18, 2002. Something woke me up at 7 a.m. on the nose. As I sat up, squinty eyed, thinking "huh??" I realized what it was - there was a very loud military-sounding helicopter outside just going, and going, and going, and going. Hovering. Right next to my building. As I got up to go investigate, walking across my apartment to the front door, my nerves were standing on end and my stomach was sinking, because I already knew. This had to do with me. BUT, before I jumped to any conclusions I needed to see for myself. So I opened the front door and stepped outside and looked up into the bright and sunny and cheerful looking morning. Sure enough there was a large, unmarked, matte-black colored military looking helicopter hovering over the leasing office building across from mine. **Pointed in a beeline, straight at my front door.** (Later research on the 'net would show that the closest match to the body shape of this thing is a Comanche helicopter.) Oooohhh-kay, I thought, looking around to see if anybody else was hearing this. But there wasn't a neighbor to be found anywhere. And I promptly went back inside and shut the door.

It continued to hover outside and make a racket. As I came back inside, shaken, Tom sat up from bed and asked what was going on. I told him that there was a military helicopter hovering over the next building, pointed at my front door. "WHAT??" He sat up. He wanted to go out and look at it with his binoculars, but I requested that he not do that. I didn't want him to go out there and put himself in the middle of what I felt was something that had to do with me. Although they already know who he is anyway. But still, there's no point in going out there and showing himself unnecessarily. I wanted to lay low, not go out there and antagonize anybody. [Different mindset back then. ;)] I kept saying "this isn't good, this isn't good…" really scared. The helicopter hovered for about another 30 seconds, then took off. It didn't hover any other buildings, and it didn't circle the neighborhood. It just came in, pointed itself at my front door, and hovered there for several minutes until I went out and showed myself and acknowledged it. Then it left, with no further business.

What's unusual about this incident: 1) You don't normally hear about black helicopters flying about urban areas in broad daylight, harassing people. 2) Nobody else noticed this helicopter. Nobody else came out of their apartment. Not one. A huge black military helicopter was hovering over our buildings making an absolute racket at 7 a.m., and nobody even poked their head out to see what was up??? Actually, it kind of doesn't surprise me.

Black Helicopter, Round 2. May 7, 2003. Tom was back in Iowa at this point, about to hit the road in a few days to drive back to Florida. He'd been back in Iowa for almost five months helping with family issues, so I was back to living alone with my cat. I was getting ready for work, and at 8 a.m. on the nose I heard the distinctive sound of a helicopter approaching outside from the back of my apartment…then stop, hovering very close by. Just going and going and going and going. My heart stopped. *ohhhhhh shiiiiit*, I thought. I went out the back door to go look, and found a shiny, all black, unmarked helicopter, with a large cross shaped thing sticking out from the back end, hovering low. Even the windows were tinted black. **It was pointed in a beeline at my back door this time.** *oh shit*, I thought again. I ran for the phone and called Tom in Iowa. I was like, PLEASE answer your phone, PLEASE answer your phone…and luckily, he did, even though it was 7 a.m. his time. I held the phone up in the air outside so he was able to hear the ruckus that it was making. Talk about two worlds colliding - I'm supposed to be getting dressed for work, figuring out what to wear, meanwhile, there's a black helicopter pointing straight at my apartment back door. I stood outside, on the phone talking to Tom and narrating the situation while staring up at it. At one point, it turned slightly to its left to look at me better. It looked like an insect when it did that. I was also freaking out that NOBODY seemed to even notice that this was happening, nobody was coming out of their apartment, just like the last time. Then I noticed that wait, there was a black guy standing in the parking lot, with his hands in his pockets, gazing curiously up at it, kind of like, "WTF??" and then looking over at me. Yay! Let's hear it for witnesses! :D

Finally I went back inside and told Tom that I had to go, I have to get ready for work, forget this. We hung up. I was shaking and scared…then I heard the helicopter move so that it was now right on top of my apartment, hovering loud and intimidating, **right over where I stood in my kitchen.** I tried to go about my business like normal, pretending this wasn't happening, lalala! hoping it would go away. But I felt lost and panicked, wondering why I didn't have some sort of forewarning about this from my intuition, or "higher self." Something this bad should have come with a little bit of warning…right?! I felt abandoned.. I was panicked about what they planned to do, and why they were here. I kept thinking, I didn't DO anything!! I didn't DO anything!!!! Then I was saying to my higher self, "Why didn't you tell me?? Why did you let this happen!!! Why did you let this happen!!!!"

Then I got an answer. What I assume to be my higher self responded, since that's who I was addressing, and it sounded calm, mature, and slightly amused. "Because nothing's going to happen to you," it said. It also sounded like me, btw. My own voice. Female, only older, and more mature and maternal sounding, the way my higher self always sounds. The exact quote of what it told me was: "Treat this like you would an entity attack. Move to the center of the room and treat this like you would an entity attack, and watch what happens."

Okay, I thought. I was standing there, staring down at the floor, brows furrowed, interacting with this thought form without really thinking about it. That's the only way it seems to happen, I've noticed. It's when I'm not consciously focusing on what's happening, and am distracted. When I'm conscious, I tend to lock up and then things can't get through. So I did what it told me to do, and I turned from my spot in the kitchen and moved to the center of the apartment, the "living room" area, and stood there. It sounds corny, but, I remembered the scene at the end of the first Matrix, where Neo fully realizes that it's all an illusion, and he's the one in control. I thought about him stopping the bullets, and saying "No." Like, I'm not having this. No. This isn't my reality. Sorry.

I closed my eyes, outstretched my arms to each side, took a deep breath. The heli was still hovering and harassing, directly overhead. **Then I changed my frequency, basically.** That's the only way to describe it. Like changing the radio dial. I had the mentality of No. I'm not having this. Sorry. And I did exactly what I would do during an entity harassment, repeating NO. NO. NO. NO. Over and over again, firmly, and really and truly believing it and feeling no fear, whatsoever. Just a completely different mindset, one where I felt connected to my higher self, not having this situation.

And it immediately stopped. That heli pulled up and took off, getting out of there ASAP.

I slowly opened my eyes, realizing that it was leaving, and very rapidly, too. A grin spread over my face. I became giddy, realizing I had the power to make this stop and go away. It had worked. Whoever that thought form was gave me good advice.

A note about the time when this happened: The first time in November it was 7 a.m. on the nose. This time it was 8 a.m. exactly. Then I realized…Daylight Savings Time. Back in November DST was over. So whoever they were, they don't go by DST.

Black Helicopter, Round 3. May 10, 2003. Tom was now currently en route back to Florida, from Iowa. I had gone for a walk on Fort Lauderdale beach, and there had been a police/patrol helicopter flying up the coast, over the water. I thought about my black helicopter sighting from earlier in the week and compared the two helicopters, noting the differences in colors and body styles. I was focused heavily on the black helicopter incident almost as if expecting to see another, even though I'd never had such an experience at a public beach of all places. I went back to my car as if I were going to leave but then remembered…Hey, the point of me coming here was to go for a walk AND read my book afterwards on my beach chair. So, I grabbed my beach chair out of the trunk and headed back out to the sand and set everything up. I had just finished applying some sun tan oil and was settling in with my book when I heard another helicopter coming up the beach, from my left.

Before even looking up, I knew. **I recognized the sound of it, or else picked up on its frequency.** Sure enough, approaching slowly up the beach was a glossy, all black, unmarked helicopter with black tinted windows. It was barely over the water line, pretty close to the sand where the people were sitting. But nobody seemed to notice it. As it approached where I was sitting it slowed down noticeably. I fixated on it as it passed by, thinking over and over to myself, "Come on…come back…come back…show me what you're made of…come back…come back…come on, show me what you're made of show me what you're made of…" Over and over. By "show me what you're made of," I was referencing the ability for them to read my thoughts. There was no fear, only me daring them with this manic, giddy glee.

And so they did.

The black helicopter immediately swung tightly around to the left in a U-turn, and did an even slower fly by right over where I was sitting. I stared up at them, still fixated. At this point I felt a little fear, I admit it. Partly I couldn't believe that they really *could* read my mind, and partly I was surprised that they responded, and did exactly what I asked. I was like, Whoa, holy shit…! Uh…yeah, okay…

They continued their super slow fly by, and again, **nobody around me seemed to notice it at all.** Finally when it was far enough away it picked up speed and took off at a regular pace up the beach, and was gone. So, two black helicopter sightings in one week. This was the same week that Tom was en route to come back to Florida from Iowa. Seems as if that was generating some attention. Also, going to the beach in the morning on the weekend is not normally something I do, but, I had the urge to do it this day.

Helicopters, Rounds 4 & 5. The final two episodes involved a new mode of operation: flying in huge circles over our apartment building, as well as the fact that these helicopters weren't solid black. Rather, they were a very dark blue color. For those two reasons I didn't think (at first) that they were black helicopter harassment, but several things indicated that it seemed to be the same thing:

Round 4 was on July 16, 2003 at 7:24 a.m. (You'll see in a minute why the time is important.) Just before this thing showed up I had been having a dream about "thems" in a helicopter; **they showed up in my dream, looking for their "three way radio."** My mom was there, of all people (I don't have any sort of relationship with her), and she had lost this three-way radio thing. They were annoyed, and wanted the three way radio back…whatever that's supposed to mean (?!?!) and for whatever reason, she of all people was involved in it all. I can only guess. At the moment when the real helicopter was approaching our apartment in real life, my dream took a violent turn. People in my dream began attacking each other, hitting each other with frying pans. (kind of funny actually.) I then woke to hear the sound of a real helicopter beginning its repetitive circling overhead. When Tom went to go out and take a picture of it (dark blue in color, no markings) **I felt like the wind had been taken out of my sails, deflated, passive, like I couldn't do much of anything……and even admonished him *not* to take pictures of it!** (programming I suspect – because I wouldn't do that now.) Our apartment was on the outer edge of the circle it was flying in, but as soon as I stepped foot outside it "coincidentally" swung by right over where I stood. We went back inside, listening as it continued circling outside, and I realized I was getting more and more scared. Not good. So finally I told Tom, "Give me a moment…" and I lay on my bed, closed my eyes, and pulled another **"Change the Radio Dial."** Within *seconds* of me doing that the helicopter coincidentally flew off, and abruptly ended its circling.

Round 5 occurred on August 6, 2003, at 8:24 a.m. Exactly one hour to the MINUTE of Round 4. This one looked identical to the last one, and as soon as we saw it matched, I looked for any abduction bruise markings on my legs. Sure enough, found the telltale perfectly round, deep purple bruise on my calf below the knee. It hadn't been there the night before. This time instead of flying in repeated circles, the helicopter flew all over the place with no rhyme or reason to it, at all. It would circle over the apartment then fly move off and circle about in the distance, angled sideways, looking in our direction, then circle back over us, then move off again. Tom started immediately grabbing photos, and this time I overrode the urge to not take pictures! and grabbed for my own camera. Only problem was…**the battery was missing. Somehow the door casing had popped open, the battery had fallen out in my backpack, and the door had closed tightly again.** I needed a butter knife to pry this thing open to put the battery back in! This had NEVER happened before in the two years I'd had that camera!!! I got the battery back in and finally got a couple of shots, then nonchalantly decided to head off to work now. As I drove off down the street, the helicopter abandoned its random circling and followed me behind the tree line. When I got to the 4-way stop, it too stopped…and pointed directly at my car. I took my camera, hung out the window and got another shot of it. Then nonchalantly drove off, smiling, listening to CDs, and singing. What a difference a few months makes, that's all I can say. (Tom confirmed that this helicopter stopped its circling after I left and drove off to work.) **And we never had another helicopter harassment again**. That afternoon we did experience one of those tremendous "black clouds of doom" though, documented in my Weather Anomalies section of my website. **http://in2worlds.net/anomalous-weather**

Coincidental debunking article. On a side note, I have to mention this. But shortly after Round 4 and 5 I just so happened to be glancing through the Sun Sentinel paper at work and saw what of all things but…an article talking about flight school helicopters that will fly in repeated circles over residential neighborhoods in Fort Lauderdale, annoying people. "Nothing to see here folks, move it along…."

It would seem on a surface level that "See, it was all just flight school helis, that's all…" But is it? Just a simple review of the circumstances surrounding Rounds 4 & 5 indicate to me that they were something woo-woo, and not just "flight school helis." I think it's rather amazing that flight school helis could coincide with negative dreams that also involved a helicopter looking for a "three way radio," feeling passive and deflated, having the battery pop out of the camera in my bag and then the casing closing back up tightly as if trying to prevent me from using my camera when something like that has never happened before, and then the heli following me up the street behind the tree line and waiting for me at the four way stop…..then abandoning its "flight school flying" the second I left the vicinity to go to work. The article actually sounded a bit like something straight out of "The Truman Show."

The bright "camera flash." I decided recently to add this one in after re-reading the book "The Mothman Prophesies" by John Keel and seeing an exact description of this incident, verbatim. At the time it originally happened it struck me as really weird, but completely nonsensical, so therefore not worth mentioning in the same breath as the rest of the more obvious and interesting incidents of weirdness going on during the same time period. Now I realize I should mention it. But one night in 2003 I think (not sure because I didn't log it) Tom and I were exiting our apartment and walking towards my car to go out somewhere. As we got to my car and I was approaching the driver's side door, with Tom standing at the passenger door, a sudden very bright, blue-white colored light double flashed from across the parking lot. It was like a camera flash, as if somebody had just taken our picture, which was my split second immediate thought. But yet the flash was VERY bright, a bit blinding, enough to be noticed around the entire parking lot, and definitely blue white in color. A "burst" you could call it, exactly as John Keel describes it as we'll see in a moment. So something about it was a bit "off" for being just some normal camera flash. The even weirder part was we didn't stop to investigate it. We both noticed it…then I slipped into the front seat, leaned over and unlocked Tom's door, and he slipped inside and I started the car, backed out, and we just…drove off. "lalala!" Like it was nothing. Didn't go over and investigate, or even try to scan the darkness to see if there was somebody with a camera. I can't describe how I felt other than a mix of knowing something woo-woo unusual had just happened, that it wasn't just somebody's camera flash, yet, while being in a passive daze and where looking closer didn't even seem to exist as an option. Disregard it and push on, as I so often did back then. Or else, something made me feel like I shouldn't pursue it, I don't know. I didn't even log it because it seemed so trivial compared to everything else that had been going on in my life. Bursts of blue white light in the parking lot right as Tom and I showed up? What's that all about? Seems so petty. And years later when re-reading "The Mothman Prophesies" I found this bit:

> "The ["phantom photographer"] phenomenon takes yet another form. The witness is **stepping out his door, or getting out of his automobile**, when there is a **sudden burst of light "like a flash gun going off."** No photographer or camera is visible. **There is no sudden paralysis or ill effects. The witness just scratches his head in bewilderment and goes about his business.** However, those who see these flashes have **usually had psychic experiences previously. They have seen a UFO, a monster, or a ghost, or they are gifted with ESP or precognition."**

The last bit describes Tom and I to a T, and the description of the experience itself matches verbatim, down to the sort of situation it occurred in – stepping out the door, and in our case, getting *into* an automobile, and our responses, or rather, lack thereof, also matches to a T. What it means, I don't know, but for John Keel's research it's just one more bit of confusion that contactees experience in life, going nowhere, never any answers. (The whole point of his book is basically discussing his numerous investigations into what I nickname "sidetrack circus diversion/fear and paranoia generators" and how it plays out amongst UFO contactees and those who have paranormal experiences, which is why I always recommend his book for anybody who's interested in the weird.)

Another "Them"? December 24, 2002. I wasn't sure what to make of this back when it happened, and I still don't. But considering what had been going on with me all this particular week – I had more mysterious bruise marks on my legs, pains in my uterus, ear tones, and strange dreams - it probably is what I think it is. I was at Walgreen's on Broward Boulevard and I was in the magazine aisle, excitedly reading an article in Newsweek about the upcoming Matrix sequels. ;) So yeah, I was way excited, like really giddy, because I'm just a dweeb like that.

As I was reading the article I got a whiff of some perfume stuff **which didn't smell good to me.** I frowned to myself and looked up to see the source. I saw a well dressed, corporate looking older white guy who appeared to be in his 50's, who had just breezed past me down the aisle. He was the source. I only saw him from behind. He had all white hair, and a bright white clean crisp dress shirt and gray slacks, a belt, shined dress shoes. No jacket though. But impeccably dressed, spotlessly clean and unwrinkled. Almost too perfect. Stood out in this particular ghetto-y Walgreens. The downtown office buildings are only a mile away, but still, everything surrounding the store was black ghetto. (Two words: Sistrunk Boulevard, one street over.) My first assumption was that he'd just gotten off work, being that it was 5:15 p.m., and like I said, downtown was close by. I immediately dug back into the article, not giving him another thought.

A little while later I heard a really pointed and sarcastic voice say to me, **"Reading anything *INTERESTING?*"** I glanced up to my left to the source of the voice and saw that it was the same white haired corporate looking dude breezing past me, this time going the other direction. We were the only two people in the aisle now. Everybody else had cleared out.

He never slowed down. He never looked at me. He didn't wait, or want for, any sort of a response, unlike every single other harasser I'd encountered since moving to Florida. A harasser harasses you because they *want* that response, and even more importantly, they want to *see* your reaction. He on the other hand could have given two shits about what my response was. Total disdain.

Even more interesting was *my* reaction. Normally if somebody were to say something like that I would have gotten annoyed. Possibly even yelled something sarcastic back in response. This time, as I stood there watching him breeze away from me **it felt like the wind had been let out of my sails and all I could do was just stand there in a passive, childlike daze**, watching him go. I was numb, blank. Unable to say something back even if I had wanted to, like mental control had been exerted on me to shut me up.

Factoring in a) what had already been happening to me that week, with b) how this guy was dressed – it was identical to the two "Thems" at the Denny's four months earlier; c) the fact he had the same disdainful contempt for me as they did; d) the fact that his cologne registered with me in some way, causing me to frown while reading, and e) my inexplicable inability to talk or respond to his comments, and I'm liable to think that this was another Them, making their presence known.

Both encounters also involved what I consider to be telepathic exchange. In the first encounter, I felt them before I saw them, and was tugged to look up both times that they passed by me, as well as feeling paralyzed in some way, being unable to *not* look at them; the second time I was rendered unable to speak and could only stand there, in a blank daze. And to be honest, I can't confirm that what I heard him say was actually spoken out loud, because I never actually saw him say it. I've demonstrated the ability on previous occasions to clearly hear people's thoughts, so, who knows.

"MIA…" This one seems so trivial and unimportant that I was liable to dismiss it…until encountering somebody else who claims to have experienced the same thing. But one time I was walking into the aforementioned Walgreens in Fort Lauderdale, and as I walked towards the front doors I see two grungy guys standing off to the side, smoking cigarettes, and one of them (who had a moustache) calls out towards me, **"Looks like we got ourselves another MIA."**

I knew he was saying it for my benefit, being that he was staring me down as he took a drag off his cigarette, so inside I was like, what the hell?? I mean what is *that* supposed to mean? Another MIA? Another "Missing in Action"? If that's what it even means. Okay. Fort Lauderdale was littered with crazies, the whole "Street Theater" thing, so it wasn't surprising. But still, that was pretty pointed and strange. So much so that I filed it away in the back of my mind instead of dismissing it.

Like I've mentioned before in my writings, corroboration usually comes around eventually, if you're patient. Sure enough, about a year or so later I mentioned this in passing on a message board forum and surprisingly, one of the regular members, a female from Boston who's had a lot of her own weirdness in life, posted that she's gotten the same exact comment. **"Looks like we got ourselves another MIA…."** Go figure. But nothing surprises me anymore.

The "Dreams"

Dreams are often anything but. Sometimes they are actual memories of events, coming out while we sleep, screen memories of suspect abduction events, or symbolic messages given to us in regards to abduction happenings, fed to us by our subconscious mind. If you're an abductee, then one of the first places you should be looking at are your dreams. Even if you have hardly any actual memories, you'll most likely receive indicators when you sleep. Following are some of the more bizarre and highly suspect dreams I've had over the years. Some may be actual memories, and some seem to be highly symbolic messages being conveyed through the subconscious. Another important aspect of these abduction-related dreams that I've noticed is that when "something" is around in the astral realms honing in on me, maybe planning to snag me, my dreams will take a sudden negative turn, reflecting this. Either the dream will suddenly turn morbid, or I'll see aliens and/or UFOs. It seems to act as a head's up warning system that the crosshairs are on me. I delve more into this in the "Dream Hijacking" section.

So whatever these dreams are, they're worth mentioning to give the reader an idea of what one could be looking for.

The UFO. UFO dream when I was 13 - a UFO hovering/parked over our house in Connecticut, at night. I was out in the cul-de-sac, off to the right side with the streetlights providing light, just standing there calmly, watching it. The weirdest part was that the Joe Walsh song, "Life's Been Good" was playing, almost like a soundtrack of sorts to the whole scene. It was specifically the middle part of the song, where the lyrics cut out and it's just that trippy, sci fi-ish sounding synth music part that goes on and on.

More UFOs. Dream sometime in my teens, of me chasing frantically after a UFO. Even though I was a teen, the dream took place in the field behind an apartment building in Westfield Massachusetts, where we lived until I was three. I was in the field in the middle of a sunny morning with hazy summertime looking sky, and there's a UFO overhead, and it's taking off…without me!!!!!!! I panic and run after it as fast as I can, tearing through the field, like NOOOOOOOOOOO, absolutely desperate. It's so intense, and I'm so determined, that they finally relent and I feel myself lifting up into the air, being brought into the UFO. As soon as my feet leave the ground I go limp in absolute bliss, completely happy and content. I can feel what it feels like to be suspended in the air while moving upwards. It's an awesome feeling, like flying. The second dream where this occurred I was at a gas station in the middle of the day, with a blue sky, and there's a UFO overhead, again, taking off without me. I start to mentally think NOOOO, and chase after it, and get pulled (happily) up towards the UFO. Not normal!

The underground base. Until this dream in 2000 I had no concept of the idea of "surface world" versus "underground world." I was smack in the middle of living out my adventures in "The Vortex" paranormal apartment in Rancho Santa Margarita when this dream happened, and it stayed with me for months afterwards. The dream centers around the idea of my brother Joe having "accidentally" discovered, through his many nocturnal adventures of poking around/trespassing, the entrance to an underground base facility located underneath a local mall…and then coming back to show me and bring me along. In real life Joe was nocturnal and spent every night out exploring whatever city we lived in, poking around where he shouldn't be going, breaking into places, trespassing, stealing, etc. and making some interesting discoveries in the process. So this dream played out exactly as it would have in real life had this really happened. It was so real and so much fun that I could not shake this dream off for months afterwards, and wanted very badly to experience this again, and be in this world that I'd been witness to. I'd listen to Death in Vegas while imagining myself back in this place. "68 Balcony" "I Spy" and "Flying" if you'd like the personal soundtrack for this. ☺ I'll try to summarize it as concisely as possibly, omitting the non-relevant details, but taking many parts directly from a write up I did right after this happened. So you'll note the wide eyed, innocent voice of it all, I'm sure. A bit different from the way I am now.

"It started where me and Joe were standing next to a lake which was supposed to be similar to the lake here in Rancho. The sky was gray white overcast. The next thing we know we're watching a minivan drive slowly, head first, into the lake. It kept right on going until it was completely under. The engine didn't get flooded or stall, because it wasn't a normal minivan. It was made to be able to go into the water in order to access the secret entrance to an underground government facility. There were a couple of quick cut close up scenes of me next to the lake edge, looking down into the water at another submerging vehicle, going down into this secret entrance.

Next scene cuts to a mall that's in the vicinity of this lake, but it's a mall that's been built the equivalent of two stories underground. It's a novelty thing to everybody in suburbia who goes there, but who don't realize that it was built as a façade, right on top of the underground facility. So I'm in the mall now next to an escalator, staring up at a skylight in the ceiling above the escalators (same as the Laguna Hills Mall actually) – which is really the ground level of the world above - looking at the gray white overcast sky beyond, when Joe comes up to me and tells me to come on….he wants to show me the entrance to the facility from right there in the mall!

I snap out of my gazing thoughts and excitedly jump and dash after Joe, through the mall, into this dark hole-in-the-wall type looking restaurant/bar tucked into a corner nearby. No lights are on in the place. The only light is the bright white gray overcast natural lighting pouring in via the skylight of the mall that comes in through the front doorway.

[…] I catch up with Joe who is standing next to this rickety looking elevator in the back corner of this restaurant/bar thing next to a maintenance type of closet. We get in, and the elevator starts to go down, slow and rickety, like you would expect by looking at it.

I was filled with this overwhelming excitement and anticipation, my nerves standing on end for what was yet to come. I asked Joe, Did we bring any film?? Just as I realized we didn't. I made a little DOH type face, and specifically thought to myself that I need to pay very close attention to the details I was about to see, because I didn't have any film to record it. I was exhilarated because I knew we were about to embark on something we weren't supposed to know about. We'd be doing some serious trespassing.

When the elevator got as far down as it was supposed to go…….there was actually more to it. Joe showed me the trick he discovered, since he'd been through this all once before. You have to push one of the buttons down again, he showed me, and then……..he reached up and pulled at this little white string dangling from the ceiling corner. And that's all it took. The elevator dropped, going from slow and rickety and taking you nowhere to suddenly rapidly descending, strong and confident and with a purpose.

It descended rapidly, going down, down, down, down, down, at super high speed.

Onto something else.

My nerves were still on end, I had chills almost because I couldn't believe how cool this was. I looked up and watched the walls moving up as we moved down, hundreds and hundreds of feet. There were outcropping shapes sticking out of the walls, thick half circles and thick half squares, alternating between the two, evenly spaced.

When we got to the bottom the elevator thing didn't stop. Instead, some part of it must have split off because we were now traversing along horizontally, being carried by something. (Dream logic I guess ;) Or something that really can happen, who knows.)

We were now in this absolutely huge gigantic cavern room. A completely self-contained underground facility removed from the world of the surface. It was completely surreal. The woes of the surface world didn't exist down here. Politics, the environment, national borders, wars, starvations, materialism, disease, work, school, family, loved ones. None of it. It was calm and quiet and still and enormous. We rapidly began to ascend in height up and sideways into the air, traversing along on whatever it was that was carrying us, formerly part of the elevator car. The lighting wasn't bright fluorescent, it was more like really bright firelight. Hard to describe. And it wasn't actually a cave, although I never got a good look at the wall structure. I was distracted by us lifting up into the air, and getting a whirling, almost panoramic view of the gigantic room below……including these enormous incinerator furnace fireplaces that were below us. Pot bellied stove furnace things with smoke stack chimneys that went up, up, up through the ceiling and onto whatever above that. These stove furnaces were enclosed in their own room that had this plexiglass-ish transparent wall material so you could clearly see them, and Joe excitedly explained to me that the stoves burned some combination of carbon dioxide and bleach. (??) I watched the fires roar silently from inside the rounded pot belly bottoms of these incinerators, behind the transparent enclosure. There was no signs of life in this huge cavernous room. No windows either, obviously. The air was still and warm.

Just then we found ourselves surrounded by a tingly energy type force and it took hold of the thing we had been traveling on, and it lifted us up so we were free flying through the air on just a small seat/bench sort of thing, up, up, slightly wobbly but completely controlled by some force [electro magnetic force field Joe would later tell me in the waking world] that had become aware of our presence and was not too happy. It wanted to see us and deal with us. We continued to free float, and I was nervous but completely EXHILERATED, all at the same time. What an adventure I'd gotten myself into! I gripped Joe's arm as we talked about how this energy force felt, while I nervously glanced down at how high up we were. (even in my dream, my fear of open, unprotected heights was there, adding to the realism!) I could feel the unseen presence behind the force field as being male. His own personal psychic power or something.

The scene then cut to another part of this self-contained underground world. There never was any big confrontation scene between us and the invisible male presence. It was a large room that was sectioned into smaller areas by furniture, like couches, tables, and free standing bookshelves, and decorated with rich tapestry carpets on the walls, and fireplaces with their chimneys going up and up. **Turns**

out, I've seen this scene before in another dream where I was free flying over these same giant partitioned rooms. I have that sometimes, where I re-visit particular dream scenes. But I wouldn't have remembered it were it not for this dream. I just know that when I revisited those tapestry lined, window-less fireplace rooms in the latest dream I felt the same way as the first time I saw it. Awestruck, taking it all in, a completely new experience. And it's interesting that in this particular world I'm always able to free-fly.

And that's when I woke up.

Very bummed, I will say.

I woke to the sound of rain tapping on the metal gutters and fan units outside my bedroom window, in the dark, with a slight breeze and a chill in the room. And after being in the dream of the self contained world removed from society, with no windows, natural light or breeze, just that warm stuffy pressured air…..let me tell you it was quite a shock. I lay there in bed for a minute trying to adjust from what was basically an abrupt switch from being deep underground to being on the surface. My heart was still pounding and my nerves were on end. I've never thought about the weather in terms of "surface life"………until now. Because I've never experienced anything different. Now I have that comparison."

[**As an afterward side note –** back in 2002 I came across references in one of David Icke's books to **lake/water entrances to underground bases,** which floored me as I figured this part of my dream was nonsense.]

Insectoid Gray Aliens. Really strange, creepy dream involving terrifying Gray/insectoid aliens cutting the power in my old house in Connecticut and swooping in to get us. In the dream, I was in my parent's bedroom and there was a corpse in a coffin, and a pukey green colored rose on the coffin, and a bunch of other morbid nonsense which indicated that "something was around" hijacking my sleep state. Then the power went off in the house in my dream. I went for the light switch, flicking it up and down, up and down, to no avail. I tried another light switch, and another, and finally realized, "uh ohhh, here we go…!" I knew "they" were coming to get me.

I left the room and went out into the darkened hallway and opened the door leading downstairs. From the light coming in through the front door downstairs, I could see the silhouette of a REALLY creepy alien making its way up the stairs for me. It had a bald, round head, and really long limbs. To picture the way this thing moved, stand up, then squat down a little. Now, imagine walking up stairs very quickly in that same squatting position with your knees sticking out like that, hips swaying a bit back and forth, with the long thin arms. Well that's how this thing moved. I've never seen anything like that in any movie, so it didn't come from Hollyweird. When I saw that coming up the stairs, I knew…there's nowhere to run. You can't hide from them. You're cornered, and they're going to get you. And so I decided - if I'm going down, then I'm taking it down with me. Fuck them. And instead of running, or just freezing there and letting it get me, I hurled myself at it with my arms outstretched, to grab it and go head to head with it. As I fell through the air, silently in the dark, the alien disappeared. I fell through it. I turned around in mid-fall down the stairs, so I was facing the door at the top, where I had just been standing. My last thought as I fell slowly through the air before awaking was "I bet something like this really happened to us when we lived in Connecticut…"

Time Travel and the UFO. I was living in Fort Lauderdale and I found myself having a "dream" one night where I was suddenly sitting on a rock alongside a stream/creek somewhere in south Florida…500 years ago. Sitting to my right on the rock was a (Native American?) woman. I sat there in a dazed awe, looking around like "Wow…!" and somehow knew that it was the early 1500's. It was morning and the sun was out, the sky hazy and kind of thick, the sky had a yellow white hue to everything. There were no buildings around. Just the stream in front of me and tall grass and open land. It was quiet and peaceful. And the more interesting thing to note is that I didn't communicate verbally with the Indian woman. We communicated telepathically. I hardly had any time to really even get into a discussion because things got cut short prematurely, and also I was still absorbing the fact that……..I'm in the 1500's!! So the only thing I could think to ask her at first – mentally, not with verbal speech – was whether Miami existed yet! She telepathically responded that "Yes, Me-ah-me exists…" working in the correction on my pronunciation. :D Imagine that. I telepathically understood Me-ah-me, as she pronounced it, to be a settlement, not too far from where we were. That made me smile, like wow…Miami is already around! Cool.

And then wouldn't you know it, but an annoyed UFO whizzed up to where we were. I glanced up at the black colored disc approaching, which slowed to a hover above us to the left, and telepathically felt its annoyance at me. It was conveying very loudly, with a robotic sort of voice, "WHAT ARE YOU DOING…STOP THAT RIGHT NOW…STOP THAT…STOP…" It wanted to put an immediate stop to this, and squelch me back into place. In my "dream" I sighed and felt limp, "knowing the drill" and immediately resigned myself, knowing there was nothing I could do to stop them from controlling the situation. That's where it abruptly ends. Later I did a pendulum dowsing to ask whether I really inadvertently time traveled back in time, and I got a strong Yes. I asked whether that woman was real, and I got a Yes. I asked whether she went back and told the people she lived with about her encounter with me and also got a Yes. O.o Interesting.

The Black Box. A dream when I lived back in Florida where I was shown something about how **"They" had connected a "black box" to my heart, and had control over whether I lived or died.** There was a switch/button on the black box that they could turn my life on - or off - with. The dream seemed to take place in a mix of where I grew up in Massachusetts and Connecticut. I was lying on a table, and there were people in white coats around me, performing the "black box heart procedure." But I seemed to be me at my age now, in the present, rather than a kid. I could see out the windows that it was sunny and blue skied outside. A weird muddled dream. Several years after this dream I read the book "Song of Freedom" by Judith K. Moore (mentioned earlier in this book) and there is a chapter called "The Little Black Box." For Judith Moore, the black box was an implant in her brain, installed by human elements that had been using her in mind control experimentation.

The Gray. Had a "dream" where I was in what appeared to be another one of those underground facilities, no windows. I'm walking along and up ahead, about twenty feet from me, is a Gray alien. Little thing, about four feet high, with the bulbous head and large black eyes.

It's stopped in place, glancing sideways (to the left) at me. As soon as I see it I frown inside, like "grrrrrrrrrr!!!"…..and just go limp - giving up. EXPECTING the mind control beams to come off it, controlling me, and knowing there's absolutely nothing I can do about it and being irritated by the whole situation. Another instance of **"knowing the drill."** Except for some reason…nothing happens. My limp body just stands there, then I perk up, with this "Huh??" confused feeling, looking around. Nothing had happened. I'm not under any mind control. And I look at this Gray being just standing there…and I charge after him, taking full advantage of this rare opportunity where I'm not under the control of these beings and free to do whatever I want. Free to defend myself. Rage surges through me as I rush up to him and just start beating the crap out of this thing, pummeling him, screaming, cussing, hitting, kicking, going off like a crazy person, getting out all the pent up hostility from my apparently quite negative previous Gray experiences. Except when my fists hit this thing it feels REALLY hard. The skin is this sort of leathery stuff over what feels like a metal skeleton. And I hear this thing's thoughts as it starts to hurry away from me. "It would not be safe for me to stand here much longer…it would not be safe for me to stand here much longer…" It's completely emotionless. **Its thoughts are just a sensory analysis of its environment.** Its thin little arms move up and down as it takes off, getting away from me. My fists drop, I frown, realizing this thing is a COMPUTER. **It's a fricking ROBOT.** My anger dissipates away in confusion. It's not a real sentient Gray being at all, so there's no point in beating it up. And that's the end of this "dream."

My cat to the rescue. I had just moved to Fort Lauderdale, Florida, and woke up one morning in my motel room to the image in my mind of a very vivid, illuminated, glowing rainbow against a black background. Two UFOs descended from each side of the rainbow, landing together in front of it. From there, all these images of Gray faces filled my mind's eye. Even though they all looked the same I recognized them. I sensed individuality or at least was able to feel the essence of them. I knew them, but I don't know how. And I began fighting with everything I had to get out of my body and get to them. !! I strained with all my might, reaching for them, in total desperation.

As I frantically began pulling out of my body to get to them I became aware of the rest of the room, probably because I was now mostly out of my body. Then I heard my cat Kitty suddenly meow from across the room. She ran over to the bed, jumped up, then walked up my stomach and chest, meowing at me in an urgent way the whole time as she walked, and literally……just stood there on top of me.

Because she did that, and was standing on my chest, meowing in my face, I snapped out of it. I pulled back into my body and woke up. She jumped back off of me, watching me intently from the side as the image of the rainbow, UFOs and the Grays faded away in my mind's eye. I came to and sat up, realizing what had almost just happened. I have been extremely grateful and thankful to my cat to this day for doing that (or whatever positive "stuff" worked through her to help me). I'm not sure exactly what would have happened to me had she (or "stuff") not intervened. In the two years I'd had her at that point she'd never jumped on me while I was sleeping or in bed. This was not normal behavior for her. Only the one time when I was fighting to get out of my body to get to the "Grays" did she do that. Literally got on top of me and prevented it, whether intentionally, or inadvertently.

A dream? Or a real UFO/abduction? I don't know whether this was a dream, a real event, or a screen memory. However I'll include it in the "Dreams" section, just in case. But one night in Florida in March or April of 2002 (right after I moved to my new apartment in Fort Lauderdale), I had just gone to bed when suddenly, a bright blue-white light descended outside the front of my apartment. Its light poured through the blinds covering my front window. Whatever this was, it had tremendous force. I jumped out of bed, frantically grabbing for my cat to protect her…right as the light source blew in my front window. Which is amazing, considering it was a strong, tri-sectioned/slatted hurricane storm window. The glass and blinds flew in everywhere, landing all over the carpet, and now the noise level was doubled, and there was all this wind and ruckus mayhem, and bright blue white light pouring in, and more wind blowing around. All I could do was just stand there, clutching my cat, facing the window (about eight to ten feet from it) frozen in place, too shocked to do anything. I didn't make a run for the back door either. It was like I couldn't move. And that's all I remember.

I woke up the next morning, more than ten hours later - very suddenly - pushing myself up in bed with a HUGE gasp, eyes bugged out, whipping my head around to look over my shoulder, FULLY expecting to see my apartment completely trashed. It felt like it had only JUST happened, seconds before…when in reality more than ten hours had passed.

The apartment was perfect. The window was in place, the blinds were there, and sunlight lit the apartment. Outside life was as calm and still and pleasant as could be. My cat was there, and she was fine. The feeling of confusion and disbelief I felt is hard to convey. I KNEW the apartment should be trashed. To the core of my being I knew it had happened. Yet, the apartment was fine. Suspicious indicators: 1) it was like I was blacked out all night, I had no dreams, no memories of waking up even once in the night, and that's not normal for me; 2) waking as suddenly as I did, gasping; and 3) the feeling that no time had gone by at all, even though it had been ten hours - it's all indicative of being plunked back from an abduction. Guess things were rearranged too when I was plunked back. Like it never happened. Or, it's actually a very vivid and intense screen memory of sorts.

Fading abduction memory. Woke up in Florida one morning with the image of a short, pudgy, wrinkly old gray skinned "man" with huge black eyes in my mind. Like a cross between a wrinkly pudgy old man midget and a Gray. It was in my mind, then faded out the more I awoke.

As I was waking with this image in my mind I noticed my cat trying to get up in the living room window (it was a studio apartment, so, no separate bedroom) and fussing with the blinds as if she saw something going on outside the window. (Wouldn't surprise me – as noted in my e-book "Miscellaneous Stories of the Weird and Unusual" there had been several woo-woo incidents involving that particular window, including my cat getting attacked in it one night, with two more attempts on later dates.) I got out of bed to pull her back out and fix the blinds, and as I picked her up and placed her back down on the carpet I realized…..I don't recognize her. I don't "know" her, but I knew that I should. I knew this was "supposed to be" my cat, but I couldn't feel any sort of familiarity or connection with her. I realized that I also didn't know myself, either. There was no sense of "me" or of the life I was supposed to be in. I stared at the cat curiously at my feet, feeling bad about not knowing or recognizing her as she seemed nice, and gave her a couple of pats on the head as some sort of condolence ;D and got back into bed. Later on everything was back to normal and I was back to being me, and of course knowing who my cat is. I think this is the same thing as what I mentioned earlier about those times when I'd wake up in bed and not know where – or even who – I was, as if I was just being plunked back into my body and experiencing temporary amnesia as a result. This was the only time though where I got up and walked around while it was happening and realized I also didn't know my own cat. These experiences only seemed to occur during a time period in 2003, and never happened again.

Killing Alison (Alice-in Wonderland.) At the start of the dream I was walking down the semi-dark hallway of my old high school in Connecticut lined with the blue lockers we had when I went there. The light source was natural light coming in through the windows from the cloudy day outside. But I was me at my current age, and current personality with the way I dress, feeling very calm and amused. I saw a girl I was once friends with, but here in the dream her face was a **porcelain mask** (major mind control symbolism). She stared at me stone faced, with a white painted face, red lips and blush on her cheeks, looking like a harlequin mask. I walked past her to the end of the hallway and into a room that had a huge tank of water featuring students taking a "scuba class." They were being monitored by a **"Them" government agent guy,** dressed in the white dress shirt, dress slacks, shoes, etc. He was barking snide sarcastic unfriendly orders at them. The room was dark, lit by the blue glow emanating from the large tank of water. Later in the dream, I was going into my old bedroom in CT where I found "Alison" waiting for me behind my door, waiting to jump out and get me. She had long straight blonde hair and bangs. Alison/Alice-in Wonderland. I got her first though. There was a scuffle, with me overpowering her and hitting her in the head with a hammer, over and over, in slow motion. (Trying to kill the "Alice in Wonderland" programming?) I detached from the whole thing, feeling muted. After that I planned to take off on the lam to escape killing "Alison", although I wasn't worried or concerned, I was in a childlike daze. I was getting in my car to leave for this place that looked like a Middle Eastern Aladdin-type city in a desert. Pastel reddish brown yellow pink desert hues. I had to leave my kitty behind, which saddened me. (btw, my black cat named Kitty is a remnant of the black cat named Kitty from "Through the Looking Glass", although I didn't know that consciously at the time when I custom ordered her into my life and gave her the same name that Alice did in the book. I used to also be told that I had "Alice in Wonderland hair." Go figure.) In my mind's eye I saw the pastel desert hue colored Middle Eastern city with the domed architecture and all, and that's where the dream ended.

Symbolisms. Speaking of which, around this time period - fall of 2002/winter 2003 I was having lots of strange and unusual dreams that featured many prominent mind control symbolisms - dreams where I was in **elevators**, going up and down tall buildings; needing to get from floor to floor, getting off on the wrong floor and then having to find another elevator to get me to the correct floor; A LOT LOT LOT of elevator dreams. In several of these elevator dreams I could float due to a lack of gravity; in one **I had to use amped up sexual energy to keep myself afloat;** in that particular dream **a guy appeared out of nowhere and commanded me to get in the elevator,** so I did, and started floating around, and quickly realized that sexual energy could keep me floating; in other dreams I was wandering through these mall types of place, going into stores and doorways; in others I was wandering down the **halls of a hospital**, in a mellow daze, through double doors, walking past rooms that have glass windows, but the lights are off in those rooms, although I could still see into the rooms from the lighting from the hallway; [**NOTE:** Have read that MILABs often report dreams of being in hospitals] Lots of dreams about **tornadoes** too happening quite frequently during this time.

Being floated away. Have had several dreams that involved me flying along on my back, parallel to the floor, usually in the house I grew up in Connecticut, though I don't have these dreams anymore. In those dreams I was several feet off the floor facing up towards the ceiling, and I was usually flying rapidly backwards, creating a slightly exhilarating and enjoyable sensation. Then I'd start to rise up and go through the ceilings/floors, and out the roof. Another time I passed through the walls and was very conscious of the moment that I passed through, having the thought that "they changed my body's frequency to get me to pass through solid objects…" In one of these dreams it started in some house, with a crazy lightning storm going on outside. I went outside to look at the lightning, onto the sidewalk in front of this house. The night sky was lit up by both the streetlights and all the overlapping lightning strikes. I turned and looked to my right…and right then there was a small UFO traveling down the power lines, coming for me, lit up with various colors around the UFO body. That's when it lifted me up into the air and began pulling me along, traveling parallel to the ground. I just went along with it, enjoying the sensation, and the dream ends there. The dreams always end as I'm being floated/flown away, I never see or experience anything beyond that.

Flying maps. I used to have dreams involving me staring intently at maps, then flying rapidly over these maps. And these maps always have the same exaggerated coloring – bright vivid blues for water, vivid yellow/yellow-orange and orange browns for the land. I would be liable to dismiss this as nonsense……**except I encountered another person on a message board who mentioned these identical same "flying over maps" dreams, with the same vivid coloring and everything.** She/he mentioned it first out of nowhere, without me ever even mentioning it. What are the odds? They were a bit creeped out to read me describing the same dreams they'd had, said they had to get up and walk away from the computer, go take a break. Had another dream where I was looking at Earth, from orbit, being shown Africa. Specifically I was directed to look at the area where Chad was. Have no idea why. The only tentative theory I can come up with regarding maps and planet locations could be remote viewing. Not sure.

Tehran, Iran. "Dream" (more like a memory/experience flash) where I'm sitting in the back seat of a car looking out the window in a passive daze. In this flash I don't see who else is in the car with me, driving, I'm just watching the skyline go past us on the highway/expressway. It's **Tehran, Iran.** I've never left the United States, let alone visited Tehran. !!! Nor would I want to visit Iran, and nor had I ever researched it or sought out imagery of it at that point. Later on I would be working at a hotel as a front desk clerk with a guy who was from Iran, and I described to him the skyline of Tehran as seen from the highway, and the hazy, smoggy dirty blue color of the sky, and asked him if that's how it looked. He frowned at me, and said yes, actually, it does look like that. He stared at me like, How would you know that? Because of the way I just piped up, describing it like I'd been there, which contradicted the fact that I hadn't been there.

Not sure I even want to theorize what this whole "dream" snippet could really be about. It seems so farfetched.

Scrolling text. Had a really strange dream full of negative themes/elements, and I pulled myself out of it at the point where there was a computer screen sort of thing in front of me with **rapidly scrolling text** (programming?) Just all of this text, scrolling very quickly upwards, right in front of my face. Strange colors to it as well, like lime green, white, and turquoise blue or whatever.

Another Sky. I used to have these really interesting, occasional dreams here and there involving a sky packed full of flying objects. These dreams took place at night time, and almost always in our old house in Connecticut where we lived for nine years. (Although one of them did take place in Florida.) The sky would be a glowing a pinkish black color in these dreams, and there were all these lit up flying objects, like jets and things, long tube shaped flying things, and other assorted lighted aircraft, filling the sky. There's always such a magical feel to these dreams, because in the dream I'm just struck by how busy and bustling and exciting the sky is there (wherever "there" is….) versus here in our so-called normal world over "here," where there's nothing but the occasional plane. On a couple of occasions in these dreams (when they took place in Connecticut), one of these flying craft have landed (possibly crashed/skidded) into the woods behind our house. !! It looked like some sort of tear dropped shaped craft that could hold one, maybe two beings at the most.

"Thems" and Black helis. Both in Florida and in Virginia I've had dreams that involved "them" and their helicopters coming after me. Could be symbolic, or subconscious fears relating to them, but I do wonder. I think there's more to it than just that, though what it is and how it works, I don't know. In one of the more interesting ones that I can remember I found myself outside on a city street on a cloudy day, and there were "thems" dressed in head to toe black, with rifles, trying to shoot at me. However, I wasn't scared…in fact it was the opposite. I was skipping and flitting down the street, kind of twirling about, feeling the bullets whizzing by but seeming unable to actually penetrate me. As I twirled about on the street I thought in a sing songy, neener neener neener way, "You can't kill me, *'cause-you're-not-**allowed**-to!"* Just a total, confident but nonchalant knowing about what the deal is. Then I flitted/skipped off away from them…into a church, to disappear. End of dream. Other times in my dreams I've been inside a house, usually the house I grew up in Connecticut, though sometimes it's other scenes, and outside there's a Them heli that's arrived, to harass and "come get me," honing in on me as I look at it out the window. This would always create a bit of an alarmed feeling.

In one of the more interesting dreams of this type both me and Tom were there, and it was a bright and sunny morning in the summertime, in my old house in CT, looking exactly as it did in real life, and I heard a helicopter approaching from up the street. (Details of this dream were taken from my log book, otherwise I wouldn't be able to remember it in full.) I went over to the front living room window and saw that it was an orange-y red color, not black, which surprised me. It flew straight over the house, low and quick and loud, tilted slightly to the side as it did so as if it were making a slight curve turn. I turned to Tom and used my index finger to trace a line in the air that cut across the house diagonally, to indicate without speaking the flight path of this thing. Then I moved to the back living room window and saw as it was passing by…then watched as it did a sharp U-turn and stopped in midair, pointing directly at us in a beeline over the woods. Now it was no longer orange-y red, and was white. "OH SHIT!!!" I thought, immediately ducking down, realizing that they were here to "come get us." I told Tom what was happening and said to get low to the floor. He did. I got up under the rear living room window, pushed up against the wall. Right then there was the whirring sound of a camera probe in the window inches over my head, scanning around, turning this way and that, zooming in and out. I practically held my breath. I glanced up to see if it was still there and now realized there was a male government agent "them" that had shown up to kill me, and was somehow outside the (second story) living room window. (doesn't make sense, total dream logic). He was right there above my head, scanning the living room, trying to figure out where I was. I glanced up and saw his hands holding his handgun, his right fingers flexing since he was apparently right handed, then I popped up, already reaching to snatch the gun right out of his hands with lightning fast reflexes and shot him point blank in the face, getting rid of him. The gun had a silencer so it went "pfffft" when it went off, instead of some deafening blast. He was gone, but it wasn't over. I jumped up and told Tom, "Come on! Let's go upstairs!" and we all corralled ourselves upstairs, me Tom and my cat Kitty who was now there. Eventually we were pressed up against the wall under my bedroom window as another camera probe tried to locate me through the window, inches above my head. This dream was very vivid in that I felt the very distinct cool, soft shaggy texture of my old bedroom carpet under my bare legs, which is exactly how it felt, though I hadn't experienced it in years since we moved away in '91. So that was interesting and nostalgic. It was pretty much the end of the line for me, I'd been cornered and there was nowhere to hide and no way to get outside without being detected, but I wasn't going to go down without at least trying. And that's where the dream ended. (In retrospect I should have used the gun I snatched from the agent and shot out the camera probe. :D) On the one hand it's obviously a dream, but on the other hand that's not normal dream subject matter, and it was very detailed and vivid in a way that my normal dreams aren't, with visual, audio and even tactile sensory. So once again, what it is exactly and how it works, I don't know. But it's definitely something.

And in yet another dream later on in Virginia, probably around 2006, I found myself being chased around by "Thems" in what seemed like the woods behind our old house in Connecticut. Chased around and around, to and fro, and I found myself going up a tree, where they finally caught up with me…..but it turns out that **my frequency was now changed to the point where they couldn't connect with me anymore.** They appeared as blurred figures, due to me being phased out of their frequency. So when they finally caught up to me they realized they couldn't actually get me anymore, I'd changed too much, and there was nothing they could do. The end. ☺ I liked that one.

Another possible soul abduction attempt – and a clever poem. In the middle of writing this book back in 2006, I started to experience some weirdness you could say. Had a very bizarre "dream" that involved red UFO probe balls flying around in a cemetery where I and others were camping out in sleeping bags to watch them; later on I was inside a house, watching a miniature, elongated/**tear drop shaped UFO** craft flying around outside the screen door, and could even see the little being inside, piloting the craft. A mini-UFO with a mini-being. Right at the point as I was noticing this UFO just outside the door, **I heard a male human voice say in my mind:**

Rivers flow north
Rivers flow south
Rivers flow red
So shut your mouth.

Right as the human male voice said that, the UFO turned to face me from outside the door and honed in on me. I started to try to pull out of this "dream" and was half in, half out of sleep, aware of being in my bed, and aware of the room, but then slipping back under. I could feel my body suddenly being paralyzed in my bed, as an energy field of some sort enveloped my entire body. Then the alien spoke to me, with vocal chords that seemed a bit rusty, sounding crackly and popping. "Let goooooooooooooooooooo…." it told me, with its creepy crackling voice. I felt the telltale astral wind blowing about as I began to lift out of my body, along with that alien voice telling me to "let go" echoing around. I totally panicked and fought my way out of it, breaking free.

If this was real and not a dream, then all I can say is…wow! I don't know, I thought that poem was the most clever thing ever. I guess it was supposed to scare me, or be a threat of some sort, but instead I kept giggling in giddy glee whenever I thought about it later that day, admiring the cleverness of it all. I'm sure that annoyed them. ;)

Summary

And that's not even the half of it. There's so much more to the story, but it wasn't my goal to actually write a complex autobiographical account of my life and happenings. Snapshots of experience work best when trying to put stuff out there so others can compare to their own happenings. Also, many anecdotal accounts have been left out because I can't know for certain whether they are what I think they are. They may be nothing, or have normal explanations, and for that reason I just chose to keep them out even when they seem to match up to stuff I've read in other people's accounts.

After I originally compiled the initial grouping of incidents for Part II I just sat on it all for the next several days afterwards, pondering things. And I pretty much almost abandoned this whole endeavor. My first thought was to just walk away. It all seemed so absurd, so over the top, that my reflexive conclusion was that it can't be happening. I'm imagining this, it's absolutely insane. Listen to what I think has happened here. There's no fricking WAY this has gone on in my life. There are so many unanswered plot holes, things I don't understand, stuff that makes no sense. What a confusing mess. So I must be imagining this or misinterpreting events in my life. Occum's Razor and all that. "The simplest explanation tends to be the right one" – which means nothing is happening here at all and I'm just crazy and imagining mountains out of molehills. And so the next thought was - **live out the rest of my life and don't think about this, literally, *ever again.*** It was a very strong urge too – "Just don't ever think about any of this again." This thought/command reeked of programming.

My calm, rational source of reason counteracting this urge reminded me of the couple of memories I do have, with the leftover marks on my body to prove it to myself, and some of the more undeniable incidents. If I have those couple of incidents then it means I can't turn and walk away. There's a story here. So eventually I snapped out of it. And so here we are.

That whole reaction is kind of understandable though, because when one is dealing with this subject in their own life, the biggest problems are:

1. **The lack of overt evidence (often times)** as mentioned previously. Forget trying to prove most of this stuff to an average person who isn't experiencing it, let alone being able to definitively prove anything to our own selves. Our only proof most times involves anomalous body markings, really unusual dreams, random flashes

of what seems to be actual memories, and a bunch of circus diversion craziness. Unless you go under hypnosis, which I'm not willing to do at the moment, then you're pretty much screwed in terms of finding out the full story of who's doing what, when, why, and how and being able to prove anything. There are just so many plot holes, things that don't make sense.

2. **The clash between abduction happenings and the "real world**." When you have this stuff going on in your life it creates a conflicting split. You can't just go and talk about it to any old person. So there usually is nowhere to go, except for the internet and books. You're left on your own, trying to reconcile where the evidence is pointing to in your personal life, with the clash of the mainstream world that often times denies that this stuff is real.

Even to this day, as of 2010 while in the middle of revising and updating this book, I *still* find myself experiencing doubt. It never goes away, despite everything that's gone on and what I should know. Part of me still goes back and forth about it all. A big part of this has to do with seeing people around me in life (either in person or over the 'net) who have completely normal lives, with no weirdness or woo-woo, which can of course lead one to wonder "Gee…am I crazy??" (Thanks to Facebook one can find all sorts of people from their past and see what sorts of life adventures they've been up to. And various people from my past, such as roommates, classmates and such, are living the most normal mundane lives imaginable. Married, kids, home owning, etc.) But then I realize……none of the normals that I'm seeing have the military intelligence connections going on in their lives. So that's something I do keep in mind. It doesn't mean all people with the military connections will have unusual freaky lives, and it doesn't mean all people without military connections will be normal. It just means that when I see the normals out there in the world who make me wonder if I'm just a lunatic, I look closer at who's got what going on in their lives, and there tends to be that pattern. The truly mundane normals don't tend to be the offspring of current or former military intelligence men.

One outcome of this endless back and forth was for me to create a distilled list of those absolutely undeniable incidents referenced earlier that in my opinion, leave no shadow of a doubt, and therefore serve as a good reminder for me that something is indeed going on here. They would be:

- Waking up with strange "dried iodine" amber colored stuff on me when I was five, in Westfield, Massachusetts.
- First known, overt abduction incident in October 2001 in SoCal, and follow up attempt at abduction a week later.
- Glowing "laser line" that appeared over my brother's bed in Portland, Oregon
- The "IT'S JUST A SPIDER BITE!!!!" yelling command in my mind when I subconsciously searching my scalp, and found the lump at the base of my skull. As well as everything else surrounding that incident.
- All incidents of waking up and catching stuff in the act of programming me.
- Flash memory where I saw myself in some facility sitting on a chair in a daze, scratching at my arm and creating a rash, then finding the remnant of that rash the next day on that exact spot on my arm.
- Some of the more anomalous markings I've found on my body, but in particular the red geometric diamond shape with the dot above and below it. (pic is found on my website.)
- Stuff repeatedly trying to pull me out of my body when I was lying down for a nap, and the accompanying tingling arms and anomalous purple circle on my arm that appeared right afterwards.
- "Alien in the cloud" incident, Fort Lauderdale, March 2002
- Voice screaming at me to "LOOK AT THE LICENSE PLATE!!!" in Fort Lauderdale, with the "Joseph" and trailer hitch.
- Beeping noises in the air moving around in my apartment in Fort Lauderdale, witnessed by Tom as well.
- The sound of something apparently arriving in my closet and then seeing some cloaked being/human trying to sneak around by the closet/kitchen area, Fort Lauderdale.
- "Thermostat incident" where somebody had been in my apartment in Fort Lauderdale and wanted me to know.
- The voice from the radio in Fort Lauderdale, making reference to an abduction related memory fragment from months earlier.

These particular incidents are the ones I have to refer back to when the "normal" everyday real world lulls me back into doubt and complacency. Some people may be wondering why some of the bigger incidents mentioned in this book aren't included on the list (such as the black helicopters, among others). That's because the criteria was that it had to be either physical proof corroborating an incident or memory and which couldn't be denied, and/or outright obvious and obnoxious incidents that were seen or heard, sometimes with a witness, and where there was no possible way they were anything other than what they seemed to be. For the latter, it's a case of "I know what I saw/heard." Versus something that could be excused away as a "coincidence." So something like the black helicopters, despite the obviousness of it all to me, could still be dismissed as coincidence. The first item on the list, concerning the amber substance that was on me at age five, is on the distilled list even though it doesn't corroborate a memory or experience only because it was the only time it's ever happened in my entire 35 years, and it's absolutely not something normal for a five year old to experience.

The clash with the "real" world, creating doubt, just can't be emphasized enough. The "real" world occupies 90-95% of our waking lives, reinforcing its particular version of "truth" and "reality" to us over and over. This other 5-10% involving abductions and paranormal is also very real, and equally as valid for those going through it, but there's no place for it in the 90-95% world. Years back I'd be at the drug store, surrounded by regular people and the hustle and bustle of the every day "real" world…buying Red Bulls or Frapuccinos so my boyfriend and I could stay up all night avoiding abductions, or buying film to photograph the anomalous bruises, small purple circles and even geometric marks that would periodically appear on my body. Standing in line to pay, holding the film, or the Red Bull in my hand while my eyes would fall on celebrity/fashion mags, or the local and national newspapers for sale near the register, with mainstream "news" headlines screaming from the covers. Clash of two worlds. Which one is more real? Not the one involving the newspapers and magazines, that's for sure. "It's the world that's been pulled over your eyes to blind you from the truth," as Morpheus says in The Matrix. Indeed.

*****

In the course of my ongoing research, one of the biggest things I've noticed is that **my story doesn't neatly fit into any of the groups or categories that I've read about.**

At first it was a case of knowing I'd been taken, but it didn't fit the typical aliens/UFO pattern one always reads about, so I knew that wasn't it. Then in 2002 I finally learned about MILABS, MK-Ultra, the Monarch program, etc., and there were many random aspects of all these things that fit my situation…but many aspects that did not. For instance, my dad was never active military when I was growing up. He was already out for two and a half years by the time I was born in 1974, and we never lived on or right near any military bases. But that's a common thread for most MILABs/Monarchs/MK-Ultras, living on or near bases, and/or being a military brat. Although in reading James Bartley's article "MILABS Operations" (mentioned in the "Recommended Reading" section) he notes that MILABS can run the gambit from having no immediate military connections in their family, on up to having extensive military involvement on both sides of the family. So I'm definitely in the middle of the spectrum there. During the four years my dad was enlisted, 1968-1972, he was Naval Intelligence, reporting to the NSA, engaging in spy type work and translating intercepted Morse code messages into type, etc. I get into more details of his story in the Appendix section at the end.

Also my parents were loners, not part of any church groups, brotherhood fraternities or the like – which is another common component in targets' lives that you'll often hear. Many victims were actively involved in church, usually Mormons or Catholic, or had dads that were Freemasons. Also, I wasn't sick all the time as a kid, with mysterious bodily injuries and ailments the way many targets are. The few things I did have were just what they were, and nothing more.

I also know that I wasn't a part of the old school "Monarch" programs, as that seems to be the story for many people who were born in the 40's and 50's. They had Satanic ritual abuse going on, sold into the government programs as small children and experimented on like lab rats throughout their childhood and teen years with visible ailments and bodily markings and indicators to prove it. Cathy O'Brien, Kathleen Sullivan, and the relatively unknown author Judith K. Moore who wrote "Song of Freedom" are three offhand examples of this textbook scenario. But yet in looking back over my life there's no doubt that something is going on here, as evidenced by this book. So what I've tentatively concluded is this:

- I could have possibly been targeted for abductions as a kid due to "who I am" in general on a soul level, or, possibly something having to do with bloodlines, as mentioned earlier.
- Because of my dad's involvement in "stuff" while in the military; but even then he had obvious weirdness going well back into his childhood. (so in that sense we're looking at bloodline targeting.)
- Because of being so closely involved with and connected to my brother later on, who had his own "stuff" going on.
- Then later because of being connected with my current boyfriend, who's also an abductee, and who runs a well known website on all things conspiracy/alien/metaphysical related.

There are quite a few avenues, and all of them make sense, and possibly all of them are happening. It seems to be a mix of hyperdimensional and human military spook. There's probably definitely more than one thing involved here, and I think this could be the case for most abductees. Don't limit yourself into thinking that you've only got one thing happening, from one source, with one agenda. It's usually a lot more complicated than that.

And as far as what I'm being taken for, I hesitate to even theorize. But what I do know for certain is this:

- I've been programmed with self-destructive, self-sabotaging thoughts designed to take me out of the picture. I know this because I woke up and caught them in the middle of doing it, several times.
- I have the sense that I've been used for remote viewing, because again, I woke up and caught myself being pulled out of looking at something (by a human male voice), for somebody else's benefit. I also have demonstrated the ability to do this on my own, for personal reasons, in my waking life……*before* having ever read any material on the subject or knowing anything about it.
- Have memory snippets that indicate unsavory things happening to me by human males during an abduction as well.

I could theorize about additional purposes and reasons, but I hesitate to do so because I think it would be way too simplistic and laughable. I'm working with a puzzle that's missing most of the pieces.

Something worth noting is some feedback about my situation that I got while my boyfriend Tom and I attended a Cassiopaean channeling session in New Port Richey Florida, in September of 2002.

During the session, I took the opportunity to ask about Joe. I wanted to know if he had really been abducted, and if so, by whom. I didn't get a direct answer. In typical C's fashion, I seemed to get a roundabout answer that was pointing me in another direction entirely. The thing about the C's is that they liked to try to get people to think for themselves. Many things they'd answer directly. But if there was something somebody was missing, a point they were overlooking, and an opportunity for learning, they wouldn't just answer directly, because then there's no thinking involved. That was the case here. I was waaaaaaaaay over here wondering about whether Joe was abducted, and by whom, thinking that was all there was to the story, when really, I needed to be looking way over there…and asking *"Who the hell is Joe?"* Not "is he being abducted?" but *who is he* to begin with.

Here are excerpts from the transcript and what they had to say. Questions are listed with the person's first initial. I'm "C." The C's responses are given with "A" for answer. Also, on a side note, any word that the C's designate as being "in quotes" means that the word has a double meaning. Bolded answers are my own emphasis.

*****

"C: I just wanted to know has my brother Joe ever been abducted by……

A: **He's not here. But you are. Does that strike you as interesting?**

C: Can they clarify what they mean here?

A: In this room.

(a lot of confused head scratching from everybody at this point, theorizing what they mean……) The C's interrupted:

A: Did you get our question?

(more discussion)

C: Okay, I guess my next question is have I ever been abducted?

A: Well, now that you asked…you may find great benefit in contemplation of this issue while in a relaxed state. **Perhaps some consideration of the possibilities inherent in the events of your brother's life in relation to your own might be fruitful.**

C: Well mostly my question is more concern about my brother than about my own self. Enough so that I want to know if he's being abducted, and if so, by whom?

A: **Consider the terms: Projection and reflection?**

J: Projection meaning to take the image of something and projecting it onto something else, a reflection of something that mirrors, comparing how the events of his life correspond to yours.

A: **Are his experiences his alone?**

A: **She needs to "probe".**

V: Get to the root of the issue…might hypnotism be a good avenue for her to probe?

A: Good idea.

(then "V" asked some questions pertaining to her own abductions, which the C's responded with…….)

A: More projecting?

C: What do they mean by that?

A: **Some project……some reflect…….."**

Then, later on in the session:

"C: Could I just ask one question? Last fall [October 2001 abduction] I believed I was abducted, and I actually have one memory of it, or a Gray, you know, while I was laying on a table. I also had physical signs on my body of an abduction. I'm curious as I'm hearing this: Was I being abducted by grays that really exist, or was that like the government mind control making me think that I was?

A: **How about real abductions, but not necessarily "grays". They are very popular screens.**

V: Okay, if not Grays, then who?

A: **Ask her brother!"**

*****

That last comment was very interesting – ask her brother. You want to know who's taking you, ask him. Which means he obviously did have stuff going on. So, we've got several things revealed or confirmed here: 1) That I was definitely abducted in October 2001. 2) They're saying it was a screen memory, as in humans, not actual Grays. 3) Consider the idea that some of what happened to Joe may have actually happened to me. This ties into the idea that both he and I had supposed separate abductions in October of 2001. So if his was in an underground base with human government agent "thems," then what does that say about the nature of my own abduction during that same month? 4) The idea of projection/reflection and "probes" having to do with my brother, which is a whole side topic in itself, and one that I did eventually figure out after locating another C's session transcript from 1994 that used all those same terms.

In the 1994 session I saw that "probes" had to do with reanimated agent probes put into a person's life for the purpose of information gathering and derailment/destruction, and that they operate by **reflecting** back the energy that is **projected** to them by the target. Without the whole back story on Joe this probably wouldn't make much sense. But basically, by the time Joe re-entered my life in California after being out of my life for six years, it seems, based on his actions and the stuff he was doing and involved with, that he was a re-animated probe designed to mirror me – reflecting back what I projected. The thing that I had noted in my naïve obliviousness even back then was that the Joe that returned to me was all of a sudden amazingly like me in many ways, having coincidentally adopted many of the same traits I had, even though as kids we were nothing alike. Enough so that it made it difficult to turn my back on him and walk away, which was the whole point I guess. He also apparently shouldn't have still been alive by that point, as evidenced by some of the stories he relayed, and the fact that he even point blank said so, and yet….he still was. So as nutty as the idea may sound of "re-animated probes who reflect back your projected energy," all the evidence points to this. In any possible future revised editions of this write up I may add in more details about the idea of reanimated probes in an abductee's life.

*****

Additional possible answers, or least, confirmation came in the form of a visit to an intuitive in the summer of 2007. Sometimes there are intuitives that work out of our local new age bookshop, each with their own way of tuning in to things, so I decided to visit one of them after hearing about her from somebody else. I'll call her N____. N____ works in a really odd way that I've never heard of before, which was most of the reason she got my interest in the first place. But she relaxes her mind and keeps it occupied by scribbling on a pad of paper, almost as if "writing," but it's gibberish. In preoccupying her front conscious mind in that way by scribbling, it allows these other entities to work through her. From there, she – or rather, the entities she's associated with - answer questions you have. Apparently there are two main entities she works with, and when each one takes over the way in which she scribbles on the pad will change. One causes her to write faster and more free flowing, the other slower and more deliberate. So of course, my #1 reason for seeing her was to see if I could get any input on my abductions situation.

I found N___ to be a really nice lady, in her 50s I'd guess, with blonde hair and piercing lighter blue eyes, and a kind vibe. Just from her eyes alone I felt there was definitely something unusual about her. As we got in the elevator to go upstairs to do the reading, she smiled over at me and noted, "Well, your heart chakra is definitely open." On the way over to the bookshop I was listening to CDs in my car as I always do, and one of the songs (don't even remember which one anymore) had highly affected me emotionally, in a charged up emotionally positive way. I could feel my emotions flowing and emanating from my heart chakra area, and apparently she could see that. She then noted with a wry smile, "You've had a very busy life."

To say I've had "a very busy life" is an understatement. I've packed three lives into one. So I was glad she could see that and know who I am. But this is exactly why I prefer people who are intuitive. They know who you are, they see where you've been and what you've been up to, so there's none of the usual misjudging and underestimating and getting things all wrong about me, which is pretty much how it frustratingly goes with every non-intuitive I meet.

An intuitive sees through to your core in a flash, no long winded life story explanations necessary. No misjudgments.

As far as the channeling session itself went (I paid for 15 minutes), I found it to be a little disappointing. I didn't get the abduction details the way I wanted, and it seems that as with all intuitives, the information is always to some extent colored by their own biases and personal filters. But the couple of bits that I did manage to get when asked "Why am I being taken??" was that 1) They've worked on my heart and legs. And 2) They've repaired/restored my hearing that was lost at one point in time.

The second part really got my attention, being that I had meningitis at the age of one and a half. For all intents and purposes I should not have come away from it unscathed……and yet I did. As if it never happened. It was bizarre, and anytime I've ever mentioned to people that I had meningitis and spent almost a month in the hospital and was quarantined that's pretty much the first thing they puzzle over. Like, wait a minute…..don't kids who get meningitis go deaf? And brain damage? Then I have to nod, and then it just seems weird at that point because I'm sitting there unaffected and it might seem like I'm lying. So I decided to no longer mention this to people, because it just gets weird. So apparently "stuff" has restored my hearing. But N____ would have no way of knowing about the meningitis. Sound has been very important to me in life, and I've had a penchant for going around making recordings of sounds, something that most people probably don't do. Walking in the crunching snow in the middle of winter. The wind chimes kicking up as a storm rolls in, and of course, the thunderstorms themselves. My cat eating. :D And meowing/talking, purring and snoring while sleeping. The sounds of the bubbling creek behind our apartment. Bird songs. Ocean waves when we lived back in Florida. The cacophony of locusts or cicadas or whatever they are in the trees in the summer, buzzing. And of course….music. It's like I need music to survive. When my ex Steve was going to learn sign language as one of his college courses he wanted me to join in with him, but I would have nothing to do with it. Strange, very negative aversion of having anything to do with the whole "deaf" thing. I wanted no part of it. Possible subconscious memories of the way something originally went, but which was changed. If so, I'm thankful for it. Whoever they are.

As far as work on my legs and heart go, who knows. If anything my problems have centered around my back and neck. I've had bad a prognosis from the one chiropractor I went to at age 20 who showed me an X ray of my not too good situation, which will only get worse as time goes on, and which it did. There have been times I've been rendered unable to walk due to recurring back and neck problems. I would imagine that seems to be a much more urgent issue than my legs….? If this is even true. As far as my legs go, yeah, I've got bad ankles and knee problems (that I now take supplements for, and which have greatly helped) but nothing that I can tell which would warrant abductions to work on. Makes no sense. Though funny enough, most of the mysterious and anomalous marks and bruises I've ever gotten have been on my legs. Including one mark that appeared to be a strange surgery-looking line on one of my calves, and another that looked like a mysterious surgery scar on one of my knees. Pics of both of these can be found on my website. And my heart – maybe. There's heart issues on both sides of my family, and my mom's father dropped dead of a heart attack at the shockingly young age of 36. My heart rate is very inconsistent, my blood pressure is freakishly low, and I have allergic reactions to alcohol, including my heart getting all weird and elevated and fluttery (especially from wine) to the point where I've worried I would die after drinking.

Other than those two bits of info. N____ wasn't much use to me in terms of getting detailed answers. She couldn't seem to come up with anything else. I don't know if it was blocked from her, whether she had biases and filters in place against the idea of negative abductions and mind control programming, or whether she was just a phony. Though in all fairness I could tell she definitely had some abilities, no doubt, but for whatever reason she was unable to access my situation in any amount of real detail.

*****

In the course of my research I eventually came across the book **"Unshackled,"** by Kathleen Sullivan, detailing one women's lifelong involvement in government mind control experimentation and black ops work. I have no idea whether all the events she writes about in the book really happened to her or not, yet there are some things worth noting. As different as our stories are (Kathleen is one of the classic Satanic ritual abuse cases of the 50's and 60s coupled with government mind control programming that you always hear about, very different from my own situation), we share some strange personal details in common. Like me, she was bullied as a kid by a group of kids in a bad way to the point where she spent a lot of time alone, and books became her friends. She didn't get along with her mom but got along great with her maternal grandma…but her mom and grandma didn't get along with each other. Same deal here. She has a section in her book entitled "Comfortably Numb," about how physical pain used to not really register with her, and while I don't have that particular problem, it did remind me of how by the time I was sixteen I was covering my food in all this red pepper in a zombie-like trance state, unaware of what I was even doing until it was pointed out to me. I was obviously hoping that the pain would jolt me out of my depressed zombie stupor I was in during that time period, due to the really screwball life I was in the middle of. To say I was "comfortably numb" in terms of my emotional state when I was a teen is putting it mildly. Everything was nearly shut down, the world feeling far away as I navigated through it in a detached state with my personal walls on lockdown. But more interesting is the bit about having extremely **low blood pressure.** Kathleen mentions her extreme low blood pressure on page 38, saying that it used to hover around 90/60, 80/50 before she woke up and began therapeutic work to integrate her compartmentalized multiples. Such low blood pressure for her equates to operating in a trance-like, compartmentalized state of mind. My own blood pressure? Freakishly low, always has been to the point where nurses and medical assistants would comment on it. One male nurse even joked, "Are you even alive?!" After reading this in Kathleen's book I ran down to our corner pharmacy where they have a blood pressure machine. My reading? 91/53. Whether this has anything to do with being in a programmed, trance-like state or if it's just genetics, I don't know, but it's an interesting possibility.

Then there's something that pertains more to my brother and his later "Shawn Hill" agent provocateur programming, and adamant beliefs that "none of this was real." Kathleen mentions **"Otherworld programming"** where the target is convinced that the reality they're occupying isn't real, so therefore, they're free to do all the criminal mayhem they want. **"In 'Otherworld' nothing was real […] I believed nothing in that world was real, I had zero fear of carrying**

out instructions on black ops…didn't fear being hurt or killed […]no fear of being arrested – after all, the crime had never happened!"

This is THE most accurate description of Joe's attitude I've ever seen in a book about mind control programming. Joe had no fear about being caught, hurt or killed as he went about his criminal activities, because he truly believed in a way that I've never seen with anybody else that **"none of this is REAL, Carissa!"** as he once tried to explain to me in Portland, Oregon. His lack of fear led to a state of being invincible, and that, coupled with his special training skills meant he was able to pull off some unbelievable feats, things I can't get into here. I actually do think that this reality is a bit…questionable, and isn't what we're told it is, only because I've been witness to some very odd things in my time. Yet there can be no denying that this also seems to be a major disassociative programming tool. As I mention in the section "Untangling Disinformation," I myself was given a "dream" one night in Oregon narrated by a male "them" that tried to show/convince me that this reality isn't "real," it's just a program filled in with holographic technology. **The truth probably lies somewhere in the middle,** in my opinion. It usually is never a polarized choice between two black and white opposites. So to read her talking about this was amazing. I've never seen "Otherworld programming," or how it helps with criminal mayhem black ops stuff mentioned anywhere else.

Part III
Expanded Insights

In this section, I expand more in depth on the types of metaphysical, hyperdimensional, and psychological situations that a MILAB (or "alien") target may be facing in their every day real lives. Many of the books or articles that are available on these subjects speak in broad terms, offering an informational foundation for what mind control and abductions are. There isn't too much material pertaining to the every day sort of issues that an abductee may encounter, with the accompanying advise and tactical tips gleaned from first hand experience. And so that's where this section comes in.

Everybody's situation is unique though, and what I've learned in my own experiences may not apply to somebody else. And being that there are different groups out there abducting people, and all with their own agendas and methodologies, means that there is no one-size-fits-all advise that is applicable for everybody across the board. So this is intended as a general starting place for tips, pointers and theories. As I learn more over time I'm sure I'll be adding and revising this section for any possible future editions.

Fear in Relation to the Abduction Experience

What I'm not really seeing addressed in the materials that I've researched on MILABS and alien abduction is the subject of **Fear.** This is so important that it cannot be emphasized enough, and it's unfortunate that so many good books and articles out there fail to recognize this in their write ups. Too often all we get are a whole lot of stories that wind the reader up but then forget to mention (or maybe don't even realize) how fear factors into the entire scenario. **Addressing fear should be the next logical step in *all* abduction material.**

Over the years my experiences have repeatedly shown me that it's a low personal frequency that (often times) allows this stuff to breach your realm, and it's what definitely perpetuates harassment long after it should have stopped. I find it impossible to read other abductees' stories when it's a rehashing of a downward spiral of negative events and where the tone is one based on fear, frustration and paranoia. In fact most MILABS material and personal accounts have a tone that I can't relate to, and you'll see why when you keep reading this section. My own attitude over the years has progressed from nervous, to defiant, to becoming downright manically giddy at the harassment, and because of that attitude/vibe, the nonsense I used to experience has completely stopped. **But I don't need to be different.** Other MILABS can do this too and put a stop to the things that are happening to them.

I was trying to figure out with my boyfriend why so many people don't arrive at this realization and why I was different, and he pointed out something I hadn't even noticed – most people who are all worked up about their harassment and the direction that life has taken them are worked up because **they're invested in the illusion.** And I'm just…..not. At least, not to the same degree. It's helped that I've had quite a few heavy duty "woo-woo!" experiences of a reality-shattering nature that burst whatever tentative bubble I may have still had left that this reality is what society would have us believe. I now know it's not. People get worked up and freak out and find themselves in a downward life spiral when they're clinging to something that's illusory to begin with. There's a strange paradox happening with many abductees. Their abductions have shown them another side of reality that grossly contradicts the mainstream version things, and yet they can't let go of hanging on to the illusion. Their job, their titles (people are *all* about labeling themselves I've noticed, most everybody likes their self-assigned titles that show off how many different roles they play and "who they are" in this reality), their role in life and personal identity they've attached to themselves, their material possessions…they still cling to it all despite what they now know. And because they cling and still relate to it, they become fearful of the things that are happening that work to shatter that. **Lose the investment in the illusion, and they lose power over you.** I'm not Carissa ________ (insert ten different title labels that define me as a person and make me feel grandiose and special) owner of _______ (insert all my material possessions here.) I'm just me.

In retrospect, I didn't really buy into this reality even as a child. This particular timeline with the way things have gone caused something to feel really off even as a kid. The closest way to describe it would be Morpheus' monologue to Neo in the movie "The Matrix" about the splinter in the mind. It's that, but a little different. I knew even as a kid that things weren't right, and I wasn't supposed to be here to just be some normal person. I played along like a good little trained and obedient monkey, but it's also no wonder that I welcomed the weird and the woo-woo into my life…..it was validation, proving what I suspected all along, that the other way wasn't really real. So the last thing I'd do is cling to the fake illusion, upset that the weird woo-woo stuff was trying to tear it away from me. The woo woo was what was real. Not the every day "normal" world.

Besides the idea of not clinging to what isn't real to begin with, the attitude to have, as my boyfriend noted, seems to be: **"Having maximum awareness with the least amount of emotional hysteria."** Having the bigger picture perspective from a place of higher awareness.

Which leads to the next big point about **having the right perspective.** Too often, MILABS are getting so worked up over things like their phones being tapped, or vans being parked across the street from their homes, and so on. And to that sort of "harassment" I say…Who cares? I mean, let's gain some perspective here. What ends up coming out of it all? Pretty much nothing, as I've learned, and which I'll talk about more in depth coming up. But when nothing comes out of anything, why be scared?

In one particular MILABs book the author reiterated multiple times throughout the book her indignation at having her privacy invaded. "They're listening in on my thoughts! They're watching what I do!" Privacy schmivacy. In the end it doesn't matter if they watched you and voyeuristically monitored your thoughts. Ultimately you are energy, and you'll be moving on. Your body is your source of life, something to love, not a source of embarrassment and shame. So worrying about what other people think, what they're saying, how they may be judging your thoughts and watching your body is just 3rd density prison trappings. To really fully realize this and live it is truly liberating.

Recently I acquired a digital copy of the very hard to come by book "Operation Trojan Horse" by the late John Keel, (**http://in2worlds.net/file_download/6/**) written back in 1970, and it turns out that Mr. Keel had come to the exact same conclusions within his UFOs and interdimensionals research – the **reflective nature** of the phenomenon, and the way it responds to targets' fears and paranoia. As he noted:

> "**The phenomenon is reflective; the more frightened the victim becomes, the more the manifestations are escalated.** […] The phenomenon preys upon the neurotic, the gullible and the immature." – page 220

I was amazed to see that, since I'd also concluded the exact same thing, having experienced the reflective nature of the phenomenon first hand as well as witnessing what happens when one instantly "changes the radio dial." It's so important for targets to realize this, I wish I could just scream it from the rooftops.

So with that in mind, let's take a closer look at how fear can manifest in the lives of abductees, and what to do about it all.

Black helicopters

In Part II I got into my experiences with the black helicopters, and how when I learned to stop caring, and dropped the fear…they abruptly stopped. The second I changed my frequency, like changing the dial on the radio, the helicopters immediately took off.

The implications of this are pretty huge. What exactly is going on then if these helicopters take off the second I stop the fear and change my personal radio dial?? What am I saying here…**that they can somehow read minds? Pick up on a target's thoughts? That they're scanning a person's frequency in some way???**

Yes, actually, that's **exactly** what I'm saying.

Think of all that material out there that gets into the black helicopter harassment, treating it in this extremely serious, conspiracy way - and not one book (at least that I know of) mentions changing your frequency, or doing what I did in my own encounters. Instead, they promote the mistaken assumption that: a) these things are some kind of scary, *"OOOOOOOH!!!"* big deal, and b) there's nothing you can do to make it stop. They're going to hover, and circle, and harass you as long as they want, and as often as they want to. So you better just get used to it, because this is what it is.

X! I don't think so. It's anything BUT that. **Drop the fear, and they drop you.** What my higher self, or whatever it was, communicated to me during my second black heli encounter was totally right - treat it as you would an entity harassment/attack, and watch what happens. Well, what I had learned is that when it comes to the neg entities, they feed on fear, and when I lost the fear, they lost me. So I took my higher self's advise and applied what I knew about negs to the helis, and voila. !!! My higher self didn't come right out and say "Don't be afraid!" because pssh, that wouldn't have helped. My response to that would have been "Yeah, whatever!!"…and that would have been it. So it had to propel me into some sort of action, because I had to learn by doing, and see it for myself. Which I did.

So there is absolutely *no* reason to have black helicopters hovering or flying in circles over your house or apartment for hours at a time, none. When reading cases of that happening I think, "That's bunk! There's no need!" Like I said, I wish I could shout it from the rooftops for all MILABS targets to hear…**"Change your radio dial!! Shift your frequency up and reject what's happening! They *will* take off!!"**

Why will they take off and react that way? Because again, they are there to scare you, maybe measure/record…maybe even feed…on your resulting fear. If you truly and sincerely could care less, **then they have no purpose for being there.**

It's completely understandable why targets get fearful and agitated during their first couple of black helicopter experiences….because they don't know what these things are going to do. In my first two encounters I seriously wondered if I was going to be shot at when I went outside to look. Seriously…what if it's there to kill me?! When the heli moved on top of my apartment, hovering directly over the spot where I stood inside my kitchen, I just flat out panicked. "WHAT IS IT DOING?!? WHY IS IT DOING THIS TO ME?!? I DIDN'T DO ANYTHING!" Panic and stress and anxiety arose from not knowing what was going to happen next.

But when it becomes obvious that you're not going to get shot at, and this thing is just going to hover, or fly in circles, doesn't it seem, oh, I don't know…a bit stupid by that point? It does, come on, admit it. And it's at that point that you're now obligated to drop the fear, roll your eyes, shake your head, and shift your frequency straight up. By my third encounter I had an evil grin going as I challenged the heli to read my mind and swing back around…I dare you…I dare you….I felt giddy inside. I don't think we're supposed to feel that way. ;) hehe It's 180 degrees from what they're trying to accomplish. And there I am, getting off on it, challenging the thing with manic giddy glee. So adopt a bit of a psychotic mindset, like I've developed over the years.

It truly helps. They don't waste time doing all the "lab rat psychological mind games" with the rats that get a kick out of it.

At this point some may be wondering who…what….is piloting these black helis. Are they human? I don't know. Their windows are all blacked out. Can't tell what's inside. I'd almost venture as far as to say no, they're not human, or at least, not fully. Could be hybrids. If they're not alien/hybrid, then at best, they're probably robotic military types, the kinds that do as their told without thinking, including heli harassment of whatever location they're told to go to. Then there's even a more far out idea that they're not really helicopters at all, only projections of such – because in at least two of my encounters, nobody else seemed to be aware of these things, even though they were harassing in broad daylight in an urban area. Or maybe they are a helicopter overlay disguising a UFO. You never know. So keep all possibilities in mind if you find yourself having these encounters. Things are not always what they seem to be.

On a side note, something I began noticing more of while doing this write up is how often the black helicopter subject is held up as the ultimate example of the conspiracy crazies. Sometimes even by the people who research conspiracies. What is it about the idea of black helicopters that causes many people, including some so-called conspiracy theorists, to be automatically dismissive of them? Do they believe that all the people who've seen them must be confabulating a hallucination? All I can say is that black helis are most definitely very real, and I've actually begun using it as a gauge to measure how much somebody thinks they know when they claim to be a conspiracy researcher. If they're talking a lot of talk about this conspiracy and that, but then in the next breath dismiss certain other conspiracies as being in the black helicopter group, then it's obvious. "You still have a long way to go, buddy. But keep digging." And who knows. Maybe if they dig deep enough, a black heli will decide to pay them a visit. ;)

*****

The Bees. There's a related type of story that should be inserted in here, as it relates to changing the radio dial. It has to do with a **swarm of angry bees** that appeared outside our apartment one afternoon when I'd been reading the book "Barbara: Story of a UFO Investigator" about UFO researcher Barbara Bartholic. I mention her book again later on in this section as well, but I had been reading the chapter titled "Punishment for Investigating" which details all the ways in which Barbara had been harassed over the years for her research into abductions and UFOs. My skin became hot and flushed as I read, and I was even shaking a little. It was the most disturbing chapter to read in the whole book, and I wasn't prepared for it. Especially the mention of harm that came to her pets. Innocent animals being targeted to get at their owners is horrible stuff. So I was worked up after several hours of reading. By then it was early afternoon and my boyfriend was up from sleeping, and so I took a break from reading to talk and hang with him for a bit. My cat was standing at the front door meowing expectantly, hoping to be let outside to play and have some fun, as was the norm on nice warm days such as that…but I inexplicably felt like I couldn't get up from the chair I was in. Normally I would have gotten up right away and opened the door for her, but it was like I was being held in place. So I just sat there and smiled at my cat from across the room and told her that I'd let her out in a little while, just hang in there. I didn't question the fact that I didn't seem to be able to get up. When "something" is being done to us we normally just go with it, as if in a dream.

I sat there in the chair talking with Tom and bouncing ideas back and forth about the chapter I'd just been reading, and after about a minute I heard a noise outside. It sounded like bees. *A lot* of bees.

"What's that noise?" I said to him, frowning and listening.

"Motorcycles?" he said, not paying much attention. Occasionally there are dirt bikes on the trail in the woods outside our apartment.

"No, that's not motorcycles….that sounds like bees…." I was now able to get up since the veil of control had lifted, and I walked over to the living room window to see what was out there, concerned.

It was bees alright. And we soon realized it was a *swarm*, thousands of them, the most bees Tom and I had ever seen in our entire lives. They were also individually *really* huge for bees, the largest non-bumblebees I've ever seen. And they were right outside one of our living room windows, seeming to be quite agitated. The swirling mass spanned from our window up to our neighbor's second and third story windows above us, since we live in a three story building. The bees were all facing the building and windows, and many of them seemed as if they were actually trying to find a way into *our* window, hovering right up against the screen and flying around the edges, exploring for ways in. Seeing thousands of agitated bees out of nowhere hovering outside our window and hoping to get in, and the way it all sounded was alarming. To put it mildly. I'd just never seen or experienced anything like it. It was like something out of a movie. I had an immediate panic fear surge and began running around closing all the windows of the apartment. We have screens, but I wasn't taking any chances.

I resumed my spot next to Tom at the living room window where the bees were all concentrated, figuring they'd soon break it up and leave. Tom grabbed his digital camera and took video footage of it using the video function on his camera, which is good, so we have proof of this incident. **http://www.montalk.net/bees** (the video is grainy and shaky, and the window screen obscures a clear view, but you can still get the idea, enough to see the large mass of agitated – and very large sized – bees, aimed at our window. It was actually worse than how it appears in this video.) But one minute soon turned to five and then ten, and it became clear they weren't going anywhere anytime soon. They just kept going, and going, and going, thousands of crazy bees. And then I had the realization….

My cat had been pleading to go outside only a minute before they arrived. And her favorite spot where she always goes to first when she goes outside?

It was *exactly* where the swarm was now. Right outside that particular window, where she'll poke around and nibble on grass.

Something had held me in place as I sat at the chair, not allowing me to get up and let her outside. But if that something hadn't done that, then my cat would have walked right into what was to be an angry swarm. And me being me would have of course put myself right in the middle of it to get her out.

It would have been a very bad situation, and the realization of it coupled with the sound they were making and the way the swarm looked just made me panic even more. The fear was running away with me. So that's when I realized….Okay, **this has to stop NOW. I'm NOT having this.**

Without saying anything I turned from the window and went down the hall into the bathroom and closed the door, to block out the sound of the bees and get some quiet. Then, I did what I did for the black helicopters. I changed the radio dial. Controlled my breathing and did a frequency shift, dropping the fear and panic that had been surging through me, all the while repeatedly thinking ***NO. NO. NO.***

Just fully believed that *I* had control over this situation, not "something else," and that it was going to stop ***NOW.*** Because I'm ***NOT*** having it.

I intuitively sensed that I didn't need to do it for long, just enough to literally, change the dial so to speak and sweep out all the fear and reject what was happening. I finished, opened my eyes, opened the bathroom door, and went back out to the living room feeling calm and in charge. I don't know why I believed that it would work for bees of all things, but I did, for whatever reason.

And within *one minute* of me emerging from the bathroom the bees were disbanding and clearing out. Only a couple of stragglers remained, and within another minute they were gone too. Amazing coincidence. All was quiet outside once again.

It may not seem like much of a big deal, but I've since talked to Barbara Bartholic on the phone and she relayed to me that the "angry swarm of bees" thing is one of those things that most people don't know about, but it's very real and it does happen. That surprised me to hear, I had no idea. Until she told me that I still believed that there was a chance that this incident was natural and explainable. But she's got a few alarming stories in her files of personal research involving abductees or people involved in abduction research having the swarm of angry bees appear outside their residence. So she was absolutely amazed to say the least that I'd had an encounter with them too…and in the middle of reading her book, no less. It was she who encouraged me to add this section into my book in fact after hearing the outcome of my experience, because she feels it's important for people to know that they *can* apparently gain the upper hand in these situations. You don't have to stand there and let it just happen, being powerless to stop it. Harassment, be it helicopters to anomalous swarms of angry bees or *whatever* it may be can be stopped. **You just have to drop the fear, believe you have the ultimate control, and change the radio dial.**

Paranoia

Another related topic to fear is paranoia. I've encountered people on the internet, or in emails, who displayed the figurative wild-eyed paranoia. There they are, relaying sincere stories about tapped phones, surveillance and monitoring, black helis, "agents in disguise as regular people," obsessing in circles about their weird events, and they're all worked up about it…completely amplifying the situation and ensuring that the harassment will never end. They've become a guaranteed fear/anger/paranoia all-you-can-eat buffet, and in the process they're locked into a downward spiral that may lead to their permanent derailment in life if they can't snap out of it. They haven't figured things out yet. You have to stop caring. You have to become nonchalant. As I bluntly told one guy on a message board - maybe too bluntly – "Calm the fuck down!"

You have to. You have to calm down, take a big breath and get a grip on yourself when it comes to this stuff. You have no choice but to learn how to be nonchalant. And I mean sincerely nonchalant. Don't pretend you don't care…just don't care. Period.

So, they're buzzing your apartment or house with a helicopter? Cool. Wave at them and take a few pictures. Then crank up some good music and dance around.

Your phones are tapped? That's good. Who cares. Give them something worth listening to. Have fun with it. When they've tapped into my conversations, namely, when my boyfriend has been back in Iowa visiting his family and we're talking long distance, we always say hi to them. "Hi! How ya doin'." Five seconds later we're onto other things and have totally forgotten about it. Are we going to be all weirded out about it for the rest of the conversation? Are we going to spiral down into low frequency fearful paranoia?? Hell no. It's not even worth remembering ten seconds after it happened, only because we've learned that **nothing ends up coming out of it.** They make their presence known…and then that's it. Nothing else. It's all side track circus diversion.

They're following you in black cars? Hmm. Tailing people in black cars sounds so, I don't know, 1970's doesn't it? It's a big mind game, because they know it will oooh, be spooky. My brother claimed that "they" would park across the street where he worked in Connecticut and just watch, and make their presence known. He got so pissed off about it that one day he went charging out the door, across the street and right up on them, screaming "WHAT?!? WHAT?!!? *WHAT THE FUCK DO YOU WANT?!?!"* I believe he began pounding on their car and kicking it, if I remember correctly. ;) They started the engine and took off. And that was the end of that. I've seen my brother in action firsthand, doing far worse things than that, so I don't doubt for a second he did this. He was absolutely crazy and fearless.

A good example to cite here would be the book "The Mothman Prophesies." When you get worked up and obsessive about stuff, freaked out, scared, the way people were in Mothman, then the entities seem to want to mess with you even more. It's like a scientist toying with a lab rat. When you stop caring, when you get to that point where you're willing to charge right at them and confront them and take them on, face to face, when you lose all fear, it all stops cold turkey. The abductions may still continue, but it's back to business, **minus all the mind games.**

One of the big bombs my brother dropped on me after I arrived in Portland, when he was first explaining to me what the situation was with our abductions and with reality in general, was to tell me that "They" could see and hear everything that I see and think…due to my implants. !

Hmm, I thought. I realize that most ordinary people would get terribly freaked out by this revelation. The idea of no privacy. The idea that everything you're doing and thinking and saying is being monitored, by unknown "Thems." Quite the paranoia-inducing predicament of voyeuristic intrusion. For normal people. But I'm not normal. So later that night when my brother went off to work, I danced naked in front of the big mirror that was there in his apartment. They're watching? They can see what I see through my eyes? Good. Let me stand in front of a mirror. Here's a nice show for *you*. ;) This is what I think about "them" monitoring my every thought, word, and action and seeing what I see: I don't care. Next!

In retrospect it was that mindset that helped save me. Had I spiraled down into fear, paranoia, anger, frustration, etc. I probably wouldn't be typing this right now.

On a closing note there's another facet of paranoia I want to get into: **blaming every little thing that happens in life on the infamous invisible all powerful "THEMS!!!"** Sometimes things happen – stuff breaks, people don't get your email or voicemail message, mishaps occur, etc., and the "THEMS!!!" are *not* behind it, believe it or not. I have encountered a few people in life though with the tendency to blame every little thing that happens on the "THEMS!" in this bug eyed, alarmist way, and to that I say….it's time to get a grip. While you might be a target, they're not micromanaging every little malfunction and mishap that occurs in life. I've gotten several emails from people who were convinced that the "THEMS!" were interfering with their email accounts, so sure that I wasn't going to get their email, or that if I didn't write back right away then it obviously meant that the "THEMS!" had struck again, causing interference to keep us from communicating. All of which just left me shaking my head. It's very off-putting to hear from people like that, stuck in that mindset. Another time when I was giving a talk/interview sort of deal to someone who's since become an acquaintance of my boyfriend and I, he was experiencing technical difficulty with the microphone and sound setup during our first talk. His immediate thoughts were that it was THEM! interfering. He was pretty convinced of it too….until the issue resolved itself. And we've never had another issue like that again while talking. It's because the problem wasn't "THEM!" interference, it was just normal technical difficulties while doing the initial set up. Those things do happen after all. I've also read of a guy on a message board (the same one who was freaking out about tapped phones, mentioned earlier) who was convinced that his hard drive was fried out by "THEM!" Well, sometimes computers die. It happens…a lot in fact. It doesn't mean "THEY!" did it.

The test for discerning what might be the handiwork of "them" is whether logical explanations can be ruled out. And ideally, I think we should always be looking for the logical explanations for things – not to the point of oblivious denial, but in a balanced and reasonable way. When an incident is over the top and unbelievable, then chances are it's probably "them." For the more mundane stuff that certainly seems suspicious, but you're not sure, it's a case of time will tell. Don't jump to immediate, paranoid conclusions. Keep a levelheaded mindset as you neutrally observe the entire situation from a detached viewpoint, gathering facts. And if it turns out to be "them," don't get freaked out by it. Keep your wits about you and **take what you can learn from the incident in order to apply that knowledge in the future….**and then move on with your life.

Death/injury threats and attempts

To me, the most disturbing facet of all concerning alien/MILAB abductions concerns prominent researchers and authors being physically maimed during abductions, instilled with disease programming, or flat out being taken out. Cancer seems to be a biggie. Alien/MILABS researcher and author Karla Turner died prematurely of breast cancer. And in the book "Barbara: The Story of a UFO Investigator" she has this to say about the cancer programming:

> "I've made a wide circle of friends all across the U.S.A., most of whom were somehow involved with UFOs. Too many of them are dead or dying. Cancer seems the favorite method of ridding the world of nosy busybodies who want to known who and what the aliens are and where they came from and why they come here. Cancer is the answer to all their questions in far too many cases.
>
> Puzzling, isn't it?
>
> Not to me.
>
> Almost every day since I started my UFO investigations I have suffered strange happenings, sickness, complete lack of privacy, pain, torture to my animals, accidents to my family members, loss of property, threats, and almost every other kind of punishment you could wish upon your worst enemy…"

When I first read this chapter of her book, titled "Punishment for Investigating" I got a bit worked up as mentioned earlier in this section. I found myself easily succumbing to the same fear that many of these researchers also experience. But I took a step back, conferred with my boyfriend (who happens to be the web host of a metaphysics and conspiracy site, and the author of numerous articles on said topics, so, he's a good person to talk to for some feedback), and I came to my senses, you could say. He reminded me of what I've been writing about and living for the past two years. And so at this point in the game, I'm going to take a bold step forward and loudly proclaim that in my opinion, **it doesn't have to be this way. They don't have power over us. They can't kill you, nor can they give you cancer, or any other disease.**

What's happening here with these researchers is a multi-fold scenario:

- **The fear frequency.** It can't be stated enough. Fear, fear, and more fear.

- **Lack of intending for protection.** And I'm not talking about begging to God, in the traditional sense of praying – I'm talking about rising up and connecting with the very sources that you would be praying to, changing your frequency, empowering yourself, as well as taking preventative spiritual measures…as I will expand on in a bit.
- **Not taking control of the reigns** and reversing what's been done to one's body. We dictate the health of our bodies – not outside forces, as I will elaborate on in a second.

What happens to these researchers is not what has to happen to you.

For starters, sometimes people will receive warnings before attacks are implemented. But too often they don't listen and take it seriously, or take any sort of precautionary spiritual measures. So what to do when that happens?

We should listen. And I don't mean in the sense of becoming afraid and giving them power. What I mean is simply **acknowledge what's happening.** Don't run from it – face it straight on. "Okay…There is an intuition/voice, etc. telling me this. The source obviously believes this bad thing will happen to me if I don't take heed." **So… acknowledge it.** When there were black helis hovering and circling over me, ignoring it and just sticking my head in the sand – which was my first reaction! – did absolutely nothing to stop it and make it go away. In fact, **it only amplified it.**

So rule #1: Don't ignore what's happening!

The next step would be to stop what you're doing, right then and there, and have a spiritual pow-wow. Connect to something higher and positive, whatever works for you. Jesus/the Christ Consciousness, God/the Creator Source, angels, spirit guides and protectors, your Higher Self, and so on. Everybody has their own thing, so, call on yours, whatever it may be. Connect to it, merge with it, become it…for more on this, see the next section, called "Praying for Intervention." You're empowering yourself and raising your frequency, rising above 3rd density victimhood. You're taking action.

So rule #2 – Connect to the higher powers and raise your frequency

In doing step 2, you're already turning the tables on the outcome of the situation. Someone wants to harass you or your family, with the threat of more in the future?? I don't think so. You've picked the wrong targets to harass.

So rule #3 – Say no.

It seems so simple. Almost too simple, I'm sure. But I've done it, and it worked. "No. I don't think so. You are NOT going to do this to me. No. I'm changing the radio dial. NO. NO. NO. NO. NO." Over and over and over, while simultaneously raising your frequency. You're saying no, rejecting their threats and harassment, dictating how your life will go, according to *you,* taking control of the situation. All the while as you factor in your spiritual pow-wow…connecting to your higher power help, and merging with that, aligning with what it represents. Calmly rejecting whatever scenario "they" had in mind for you.

You have to know that you have the ultimate say in what happens to you.

So rule #4 – Realize you are the one in charge of your life. Not them. And *know it with everything you have.*

You have to *know* it, and not second guess yourself. And know that when you're done doing this, and are walking away to go do the next thing, that things are already in the works to make sure you get your desired – protected, safe – outcome.

From what it seems to me, based on the research I've done, the all out negative, physical abusive harassment doesn't just erupt in a MILAB's life out of nowhere. Thrashings during an abduction, leaving one's body black and blue, disease, organ failure…cancer…death. **You don't just go from "0" to all out craziness like that overnight**. It starts with **breaching your realm,** and from there it builds. And builds. And builds. The longer you allow it to happen, the more you stick your head in the sand, the more fear, worry and paranoia you generate that feed it, then the stronger the foothold it can get into your reality.

But if you fearlessly face off with it right from the get-go, you WILL nip problems in the bud. There will only be so much they can do after that when you've lost all fear, you can feel your own empowerment and strength with total conviction, and are on permanent speed dial with your spiritual pow-wow source.

The other, very understandable, problem lies in the fact that most people will naturally be intimidated by these beings and military spooks. They seem so much bigger than us, so much stronger, so, so…*evil.* They're outside of time, whizzing around in UFOs, materializing and disappearing at will, abducting and implanting and monitoring, flying helis all around, tapping your phone. And as we all know, bigger, stronger and evil always equates to being invincible….*right?*

X! Hardly.

Everybody has their strong points, and their weaknesses. And that means "them" too.

Their weakness lies in the fact they overestimate themselves and believe that humans will continue to remain the victims we've demonstrated ourselves to be. They also seem to lack the spiritual connection we humans are able to tap into. Cold, cunning intelligence will only get you so far. You need the rest, which we have.

So now, why are they able to "give people cancer"? Are they all powerful God-like creatures with the ability to completely control and micromanage all other "lesser" beings at will?? And more importantly – WHO exactly is it that's "giving these people cancer"? Is it aliens?...or humans?

It's actually humans, apparently. Let's look at an interesting excerpt from the Barbara Bartholic book that directly pertains to this (bolded words my own emphasis):

> "…At about 4 a.m., I work to a voice saying, **"You have been infected with cancer."** The words were put into my brain through thought projection. **"There is no hope for you. The program has already been installed. Cancer will kill you."** The wordless projection felt human rather than alien. It was much too blunt to have come from alien sources. Too clumsy really to have come from ordinary human sources. I realized I must be hearing from a shadow military group. **I went wild with fear…"**

*****

> "…I spoke to one of the ex-military men whom I knew to be psychic, then showed him the hand shaped bruise under my breast.

With a half smile he said, **"They're giving you cancer, kiddo. Looks like they're doing away with you, girl. There's no hope for you."**

"They who?"

"The Black Project Intelligence Operation."

I then showed him the bruise on my neck which appeared to contain a puncture mark.

"They don't want you speaking out any longer, Barbara," he said. **He even seemed pleased to add with a twisted grin, "You're a goner."**

*****

What's going on here when we really pick this exchange apart?

The power of suggestion.

They – being the military black ops/hybrids/whatever they are - have tapped into a very basic understanding about the nature of the human mind. **We are extremely suggestible and programmable.** People are so sensitive to their environment and to the emotions and reactions and words of everybody around them that they will usually take most things to heart. We are reactive people. **We get affected by words, both positive and negative.**

If you were surrounded by people affirming positive things to you every day, for your entire life, imagine where you'd be and how far you could go. But we don't live in that world. We live in a world that both purposely and inadvertently tears us down in so many ways and cripples our potential. And it takes so little to do it, which is pretty unfortunate. But it's the nature of this world, and also what it is to be a highly emotive, reactive human being that responds so sensitively to this world.

The military spooks issuing cancer commands, and later reinforcing it in person, know all this and are utilizing another form of **mind control.** And by this point, we should all know how much they rely on their handy dandy mind control. They are all about bending the will of their targets to mold and shape them according to their mandates, usually through hypnosis and **suggestive commands.** So keep this in mind. And I don't care if the cancer command/suggestion is coming from human military spooks, or a seven foot tall Reptilian or Mantid. **You are the one in control of your life and body, not them.**

Period. And they're counting on you not ever realizing this, rising up, and reclaiming your power. And that's their weak spot.

There is however another facet to this – instilling somebody with cancer or various diseases by beaming particular frequencies at them, known as scalar weapons. When you do the research you'll turn up evidence that the military has developed frequency weapons designed to kill outright or inflict harm and disease on a target. This has apparently been employed on certain MILABS targets in order to shut them up if they've pursued certain sensitive topics. **But I believe that even this is combatable.** Why? Because again, **they do not have the final say in what happens to you**. *You* are the one responsible for what happens to you! They may beam their little disease-inflecting weapons on you***, but you can combat it and reverse it. We all have that capability.*** Problems arise for those who don't realize that they can reverse the things being done to them, and instead, just lay down and die instead of rising up with an indignant mindset, ready to combat what's happening.

There's a book that I recommended on my web site that I want to take a moment to recommend here, because it's very fitting, but it's called "The Biology of Belief", by Dr. Bruce Lipton. Dr. Lipton was a cellular biologist and professor working for mainstream academia during his 20 year career. During the course of his work and research, he came to discover some startling things about the nature of the human body. It turns out that it's all about **mind over matter.** DNA and genetics don't dictate whether you get cancer, illnesses and diseases…**your own thoughts, perceptions, beliefs and attitudes do.** And it's too much to get into here for this write up, so all I can do is to just recommend this (well written, riveting, educational and down to earth) book as being one of the more important things you'll read, if you're not aware of this subject already. I'd put this concept to work for myself before ever reading Dr. Lipton's book or watching one of his presentations, thanks to another book entitled "The Holographic Universe", by Michael Talbot. I healed myself of various ailments through the sheer will of the mind, and literally, talking to the body parts in question that had the issues. I stopped a bladder infection, an ear/jaw issue that was rendering me unable to talk, a tooth problem, and other assorted things. Dr. Lipton's presentation and book served to help reaffirm and remind me of this knowledge that I'd already gleaned…but trust me…it can't be reinforced enough!

Once people realize this concept and can prove to themselves that it works, then suddenly the idea of a military spook commanding you to "get cancer" is absolutely absurd. Sure buddy. Whatever you say. ;) ;) eye roll, eye roll. Once again, **they rely on our lack of knowledge and awareness.**

I don't completely have my head in the clouds in the sense that I believe we can eliminate all abductions entirely through the above-mentioned practices. Things vary from person to person. But what I do know is that you *have* to at least fight back and take a stand, do *something,* because even eliminating 90% of your abductions and removing your fear has to be better than doing nothing at all and just going belly up. It's 90% less interference, programming and possible injury than you would have had otherwise – and - **that in itself reduces later attempts to take you, seems to eliminate how far they can go with you when/if they do take you, and pushes back the realm breach**.

Saving Yourself

Connecting to your higher powers

Following is a more detailed explanation of the concept mentioned in the previous section.

In reading the accounts of female MILAB targets, notably in the Karla Turner book "Taken," I couldn't help but notice the overwhelming feeling of fear that pervaded almost every woman's story. Fear of what was happening to them, fear of the dreaded impending abductions, fear of the strange paranormal occurrences that surrounded them. Fear, fear, fear, and more fear. A whole book of fear. Not only that, but several women mentioned begging and pleading to God to get their abductions to stop. **But help never came.** The abductions and harassment never stopped. Praying did absolutely nothing.

Why?

Because they were asking from power outside of themselves to come in and intervene and rescue them. In doing so, they became a helpless victim child, unable to help themselves.

As mentioned in the previous section, you have to realize your own power. **You have to rise up and connect to the very power you're asking for help from.** You have to become it. Whatever it may be. Jesus. Angels. God. Your Higher Self. You have to know that you have it within you, and that you can plug into it, access it, and align with it at any time. You're not going to cower in the corner asking for it to come and rescue you, the powerless victim. You're going to change your frequency right out of this 3rd density reality, and you're going to rise up and join forces with whomever you're calling upon. And this flies in the face of everything that mainstream religion would have us believe. Mainstream religion has conditioned the world's people that they are helpless victims that reside underneath a male God figure with a beard and flowing robes, perched on the clouds, holding a staff, judging everybody and only helping those that "He" deems worthy, the ones who live perfect, immaculate lives, while throwing lightening bolts and evil glares at all the rest of the heathens and damning them to hell. We've been conditioned to believe we are meek and powerless, and have no control over our lives and no say in anything that happens to us. "God" runs our lives. Not us. We're just God's little puppets on a string. And I'm here to say, this isn't true. But don't take my word for it. Discover for yourself what's possible and what you're capable of! The disinformation conditioning is designed to get you to believe that you're underneath higher powers so you won't realize that you ARE the higher powers. The higher power creator source is in everything, and you are already it.

Another tactic worth noting that seems to always work for those being harassed by abductors and neg entities is to **command something to stop and leave in the name of Jesus Christ.** "They" don't like that one AT all. People have reported being dropped like a hot potato the second they said that, myself included. Many reading this won't be Christian but it needs to be noted for those who are, and those who are willing to try it. It's highly effective, and worth trying if the reader hasn't already because it's not begging for intervention outside yourself - it's a form of aligning to a particular frequency and commanding that the negs have to leave your reality in the name of that team. Not to state the obvious, but a belief in and emotional connection to the idea of Jesus/the Christ Consciousness is also absolutely necessary for this to work. You don't want to be uttering empty words with nothing propelling them.

To wrap up this section, I want to leave off with the reminder that being fearful and cowering in the corner waiting for intervention is what's known as "Option 1."

Being a fearless but slightly crazy person who goes around confronting life's harassers with fists, baseball bats, pellet guns and even an arsenal of empty wine bottles, like my brother did, ;) is "Option 2." And while it's heading in the right direction because it's definitely fearless, do keep in mind that The Grid is all about giving us only two polar extreme opposite choices. Black, white. Right, wrong. Liberal, conservative. Violence, or passive victim. TPTB are all about eliminating options, and giving us two false dichotomies to choose from.

So maybe what we want is to consider "Option 3." The one hidden behind the curtain. The one where you acknowledge the things that are happening to you, but without fear, then change your personal radio frequency and again, rise right up out of this 3rd density reality to align with the very higher powers that you would call upon. You're not a passive victim/prey. Nor are you becoming a fearless, psychotic aggressor. (Because if left unchecked, that fearless and violent retaliatory aggression can become a slippery slope into the realm of predator.) So Option 3. That's what it seems to be all about.

Revoking illegal metaphysical contracts

As the reader is probably realizing by this point, anything that I can pass along for what a MILABs target can do to combat their situation in a pro-active, fearless way, then I'm all for it. Years back I was given information by someone concerning "revoking illegal metaphysical contracts," including those concerning MILABs. I'd never heard of that before and found the idea intriguing, and worth trying out. In original versions of this book I cited the name of the person who passed along this information and who gave permission for me to use the material in this book. And despite the falling out between us in mid-2007, the material remained in here for years because for me it's not about personal differences, but whether there's information that could possibly help people. That took precedence. But as of 2013 a request has been made to remove her material and name from this book, which I've obliged. However I'll still give the basic rundown of the concept.

The gist involves the idea of those pre-incarnational contracts that many new agers (and abductees in general) are being told humans have agreed to, mentioned back in Part I, and which is supposedly giving these alien/interdimensional races the "right" to abduct people. Thinking on this logically, how can a contract be valid when you can't even remember making it, and/or made it while existing in a different form, in another lifetime? And for all we know the entire thing is being made up in order to manipulate us. There's no way to prove any of it.

Then you have the subject of MILABs, and whatever supposed agreements targets may be coerced into making while in a mentally impaired state. Agreements made in such a state of mind have no validity, just as they don't in our "matrix" reality.

And that's where the idea of invoking Universal Law to revoke these contracts comes in. There is no one set type of wording or approach one has to adhere to, it's just the general idea one declaring that they revoke any and all illegal metaphysical contracts one may have been coerced into making throughout their lifetimes and across timelines, or which were made in another time and place as a different being under different circumstances. It's also important to include the idea of whatever contracts, real or false, that parents may have made that then extended down to their children by default, which absolutely has no validity.

Everybody's going to be different, so do and say what works for you when you revoke your contracts and ties. Ultimately what matters most is the **intent.** The mere fact that you are renouncing any known or possible ties or contracts with unsavory elements – whether legal or illegal - shows the universe where you currently stand, and proclaims where you are consciously trying to align yourself. That counts for a whole lot, actually.

"Karma," free will free-for-alls, and incarnational happenings

Tying into the idea of illegal metaphysical contracts is the idea of "karma" in relation to MILABs and targeting of people. Karma is a huge subject, and I don't intend to try to dissect it in depth in a book that's primarily geared towards MILABS and mind control. But since these are ideas I've had, I thought it may be worth throwing in there.

Karma is typically understood as a "cosmic rewards and punishment system," the idea of whatever you do comes back to you, both positive and negative, as the universe tries to keep things in balance. So you do good, good comes back to you. You do bad, bad comes back to you. The idea of karma not only applies to things one does in their present life, with immediate rewards and punishment coming their way due to everyday behaviors and actions, but it also applies to actions from past lives as well. So entire incarnations can be set up based on what sort of situations were going on in one's past lives, and the karma that was either accumulated or burned off in those existences. And that's the simplified explanation for it based on what the majority of people believe about the subject. But based on my own life experiences, observations, research and my own (admittedly meager) awareness of things, I don't actually believe at this point that it's as simple as that. Most people's understanding about karma is based on the assumptions that everybody walking among us is fully human and therefore, subject to the same laws as everybody else, as well as the assumption that it's an actual god being of sorts doling out this reward and punishment. And this is where I diverge.

There's every indication that some walking among the population are….not human, to put it bluntly. Either that, or the original soul spark has "exited stage left" you could say, and/or severely fragmented, leaving behind a body vehicle that's being piloted or shadowed by other "stuff." There's also the idea that not all souls are fully developed and individualized, being more along the lines of a 2nd density hive mind group soul lacking the higher centers, which is a bit of a controversial subject within metaphysical circles. But all of which means, the things these "people" do may not necessarily be met with the same karmic checks and balances as everybody else. And as far as an external being or source of some sort being responsible for doling out karma, I've had every indication that it's actually *us* doling it upon ourselves, based on what happens after we die. To understand that (or even believe in it, for that matter) one of course has to believe in and be familiar with the idea of a soul, and an afterlife, and what supposedly happens in those after and in-between resting states, subjects that are beyond the scope of this book. So basically this section applies only to those readers who do believe in these sorts of things and already have a familiarity with the topic. All others can either skip past it, or just read it for personal amusement. :D

Tying into this, for those who believe and are familiar, is the concept of incarnational life plans. While some people (usually New Agers) tend to feel that our lives are completely pre-planned before we arrive here, and every event is being micromanaged by our higher selves, I on the other hand hold a more moderate viewpoint. I'm thinking that at best, our life plans are only loosely set in stone. We may have ideas about things we'd like to do or accomplish, but the game plan can change according to unexpected twists and turns. I have my reasons for why I've concluded this, including having witnessed apparent "no-no's" that something higher didn't feel was its idea of a good time and so therefore un-did and/or reversed things, as well as attempts at intervention to try to prevent something that switched me onto a different timeline (I didn't listen though, so, the track switching still ended up happening) which in itself proves to me that free will violations and no-no's that weren't on the agenda can, and do, happen. But why is this?

Because apparently this place is a free will zone. Free will free-for-all might be more like it, which is why we see the entire spectrum represented among the population in terms of extreme good, and downright nasty evil, as well as real humans, and then the masqueraders and shell piloters. Anything goes here, and stuff's coming in from all over to get in on the action and get a piece of the 3rd density physicality pie. We have the free will to try to live out our incarnational plans (or to even change our plans) – and neg stuff has the free will to try to mess things up for people. Because that's just the nature of what this place is, and it's the risk we all take when incarnating here. Now, I don't advocate the victim mindset in the sense of never taking personal responsibility for anything, and always putting the blame on somebody else. But at the same time there's no doubt by this point that freewill violations can, and do happen to people.

Yet...........experience and research has also shown me that there are certain lines that can't be crossed in individual cases. Boundaries can be pushed in terms of freewill violations, but in some people's cases there are blocks in place for how far something can go. And there could be any number of reasons for this, I don't profess to fully know why or how it works. But it's the reason that certain things may not happen to a person that happens to others, and it's the reason that some people can't be killed before their time and why there will be repeated intervention to undo or rectify a no-no situation. Back in Part II there was an anecdote concerning my first overt abduction experience back in October of 2001, and the attempt at the overt follow up the next weekend. By the second one I'd changed my mind, as noted, and ran around trying to get away from the situation, yelling "NO!" in my mind. And as noted, such an overt attempt to take me never occurred again. After that it was all covert, under the radar, and for all I know there may be things that they weren't allowed to do even under those covert circumstances. The situation apparently needed my permission – my invite – to ramp up to an overt level like that, and I said no. And maybe that was all that was needed for freewill violations to back off. (That's why I have concern for naïve New Agers and fringers who think "alien" abductions are a great thing, and invite them in. They're giving permission to something they know nothing about and are most likely endangering themselves.) A simple NO, and declaring to the universe where you stand seems to actually count for something.

Now with those basics in mind we put the focus back on MILABS, alien abductees and other assorted targets out there in the world, many of whom are making claims about very bad things happening to them. What are we to make of this with regards to the Bigger Picture Understanding about karma, incarnational plans, and the idea of free will and illegal metaphysical contracts? What's going on here?

Looking at my own situation as an example, I tend to think there's a mix of self-imposed karma, along with the illegal metaphysical contracts, free will violations *and* personal vibes/frequency resonance, all rolled up together. A bit of a mish mash. It's not just past life karma kicking me in the butt. Nor is it just straight up free will violations. From what I've gathered from intuitive types who have told me things about supposed past lives (tending to corroborate each other) there seems to be a situation of having done some negative stuff in a "past" life (I put that in quotes since there apparently is no time ;)) of which I've supposedly kicked my own butt about ever since in every life after that. My intuitive Filipino boss Edwin from my hotel job years ago said to me one time that this life was supposed to have been a clean slate for me, I was supposed to give myself a fresh start, especially after my last life (I was surprised to hear him indirectly confirming my own suspicions about the nature of that particular life). Apparently that was supposed to have been it in terms of "dumping on myself" you could call it, but nooooooo, here I go again, beating myself up for things that happened long ago. So this life has supposedly just been more of the same in terms of that. Then he got emotional about it – in particular when he glimpsed my previous life and what happened there – and ran off. Even if he didn't know about the paranormal targeting and MILABs nonsense and was referring to other ways in which this life has been less than savory, there's no doubt the pattern would fit - allowing myself to be put into negative life situations, including clandestine under-the-radar happenings, where things could happen because on some level I still don't think I've paid enough for whatever supposedly has gone on in the "past."

A repeating theme I've come across in my past life research is the way in which souls get stuck in a frequency rut, which causes them to keep attracting in the same sorts of situations and themes, lifetime after lifetime until they finally become aware of it and learn to break out of it. (The MILABs, alien abductee, gangstalking, hyperdimensional targeting, etc. themes would be persecution and abuse you could say.) So basically there needs to be that awareness, and a core frequency shift to snap out of it. "Okay, yeah, uh, I think I'm done with this now. I've had enough. Time to break out of this pattern and try something new." o_O

Then you factor in one's personal vibes/frequency, which for me may have resonated with this whole thing due to not only conditioning I received in this life but past life guilt as well. And then there's the illegal metaphysical contracts deal. Possibly in a past life I got involved with some sort of contract that is trying to still follow me around to this day. In that sense it's illegal because I'm no longer in that other body, and I have no memory of whatever may have transpired, so, that's not exactly fair. But of course that's not how the Negs would see it, if that's the case. ;) Another avenue for illegal metaphysical contracts would tie into my dad. If I do indeed have pieces of him attached to me, and/or I'm attached to him in any way, thus allowing his "stuff" to become my "stuff," then that too is illegal, since I had no say in the bleed over and trickledown. Though on the other hand it was the risk I took when incarnating here, right? ;)

Indeed. So a realization like that does ultimately put the responsibility back in one's own hands.

It's all speculation though, and ultimately none of it may be true in terms of what I've been told about my supposed past lives. So I merely consider the possibilities, and meanwhile, keep myself open to new information. And for all I know in five years I'll have completely different ideas about the matter.

The reason I get into all this though is because the idea of victimization and MILABS (or alien abductee, targeted individuals, etc.) goes hand in hand. And no material, at least that I've ever come across, has even tried to delve into the metaphysical implications of why this would be happening to a person. Is it their own fault? Are they a 100% victim? Neither? Both? What's going on?? To answer these questions means an author has to delve into subjective areas that either not everybody believes in or has awareness of, so the issue is just straight up avoided, which I understand. And meanwhile the unspoken message is that people experiencing these sorts of things are 100% victims. Which may not be the case. The truth of the situation could actually be a bit of a tangled metaphysical mess. So this is why I put this in here. I feel it's important to address the higher metaphysical areas of these subjects and get people thinking in those ways if they weren't already. Not only that, but get people thinking in terms of multiple options, instead of making the mistake that so many people make of only black and white, polarized two choice dichotomies.

And how this relates to the idea of "saving yourself," since that's what this particular section is about after all, is that in coming to realize the multiple potentials for why a person finds themselves in this situation it can then lead them to start taking action to undo whatever may be going on. Whether it's awareness of the possibility of illegal metaphysical contracts, self imposed karmic butt kicking that's long overdue to end, conditioned personal vibe/frequency resonance that needs changing, and so on.

Thwarting psychic attacks

The term psychic attacks can refer to several things:

1. Deliberate mental targeting of an individual by a person or a group of people with the intention of harming them in some way;
2. Neg entities targeting a person to attach to them, harm them, and/or feed on them by draining their life force energy;
3. Having focused, negative thoughts about someone which inadvertently sends negative energy to that person.

Psychic attacks go by various names, and it's the same concept involved with dark occult black magic rituals when the intent is to harm somebody, or invoke demons and neg entities to do one's bidding.

So you may be wondering, why am I mentioning this in a book that concerns abductions? Namely because psychic attacks are often a major component involved with MILABS, and therefore makes it something worth mentioning. Plus the focus of this book has slightly evolved to become about multiple forms of targeting and harassment, of which neg entity problems would be included.

My boyfriend was once experiencing a psychic attack and decided to lie down, meditate, and trace it back to the source to discover who was behind it all. Surprisingly, he found himself popping in on three remote viewers working in an underground base whose job it was to hone in on him and mess with him. The remote viewers in turn received quite a jolt to suddenly find their target looking right back at them. !!! They weren't expecting that. So this is probably far more common than people realize: government-sponsored black ops remote viewers and psychic warriors being used to knock targets off balance in life, possibly to inflict harm, and maybe even get somebody taken out of the picture.

To give you the basic idea of what a psychic attack would feel like, following are some symptoms that I and others have experienced:

- **Intense energy drain and lethargy**, to the point where it's like your actual life force is being sucked out of you. It will often descend out of nowhere, which is another major clue, and render you practically unable to move or do anything other than crawl onto your bed and collapse into a heap.
- **Nausea** – again, usually appearing quite suddenly. Also **migraines, flashing in the eyes, or skin feeling as if it's on fire.**

- **Feeling extremely negative and hateful.** Non-affectionate and aloof towards loved ones to the point where you feel like you want them completely out of your presence...maybe even your life.
- **Mental agitation** for no logical reason, not tying into diet, sleep, or personal conflicts. The mind going going going, with amped up internal dialogue, **repeating thought loops** or all around negative mindset, and often times interfering with sleep.
- **Inexplicable depression, despondency and even suicidal ideas** – then sometimes followed immediately by thought forms in your head telling you to go kill yourself (or as I've experienced, being told to "go lay down and die, right now.")
- **Nightmares** and overall nasty themed/violent/upsetting dreams.

Many of these symptoms will usually go together as a package deal of sorts, and aren't to be confused with the flu or viral/bacterial sickness which can cause some of the same reactions. When I'm sick, I'll usually get the sinus discomfort, sore throat, and a fever that comes from *inside* the body and accompanied by chills, which is how I can differentiate between true sickness and then "something else." Also, sickness doesn't descend as rapidly as psychic attacks do. With a psychic attack you can literally be fine one minute, and then be overcome the next. And conversely, you can be under attack and then within seconds of intervention treatment - as quick as the snap of a finger - be fine again.

But don't despair…it can be combated. Of course, otherwise I wouldn't bother to mention it. The most important thing is to be able to recognize that this is happening in the first place. By learning that psychic attacks exist, and what some of the major symptoms are, you're already half way there. They count on people being ignorant of things, remember. That's how they're able to do what they do. So, it's all about becoming informed.

The next step is to pry the source of the attack off your body. Remove the muck, and sever the connection. What many people do is to lie down and then intend for the connection to break.

If you happen to have somebody nearby who's gifted with the art of hands-on healing, that's good too. In that case, the laying on of hands with the intent for the negs to leave, right now, can be enough to get the negs to fly right off your body. I've experienced that, so, I know it's real. In the meantime, either you, or both you and your healer, should be calling on positive protective forces. Or rather – merging with your personal positive forces, as I outlined earlier in this book. You'll be shifting your frequency up, connecting to your positive forces, aligning with what they represent. Then what I've also done is perform a mental "raking" over my body, envisioning myself scraping all the neg muck that may still be on me, rounding it all up, putting it in a figurative bag, sealing it up, **coating it in the positive energy that I called on,** and do a big ol' **return to sender.** Sending it back to whence it came...whoever/whatever the source may be. Some people like to try to trace things back to find the source behind it all. I haven't attempted something like that, but if you're curious and like answers, then go for it. By knowing who the source is, it could come in handy for offsetting any future attack attempts.

After that, when I'm on such a roll, I then like to expand my protective intent to include my cat, my boyfriend, the entire apartment we live in and even the cars we drive. :D Why not, go all the way and cover all bases. It can't hurt.

Back in 2000, I had to do a cleaning in my bedroom as well as self protection after being whomped one night by a nasty neg entity who physically went after me while I was awake in bed, vulnerable. I documented this on my website in the write up called "The Vortex." And in that case, I didn't call on protective forces or even align with them. I wasn't at a point in life where I was into that sort of thing. But what I did do (and which worked), was to connect to who I was as a kid. Connected to the innocence, purity, and the uncorrupted core of "who I am" as a person. So just remembering that, and connecting to it, was enough to raise my frequency sky high. Once I was able to elevate my frequency, from there I wrapped my neg entity in lotsa luv, envisioned sending him back through the portal from where he came, then envisioned the portal being sealed. So ultimately, that's what we're aiming for with these protective meditations - **raising our frequency** - whatever thoughts or methods can get us there. There is no one, across-the-board method. Just do whatever works for you. When you raise yourself up like that, the negs can no longer hold on to you, and the hooks detach.

So that's the general outline of how it's done, but everybody's going to have their own methods that are tailored to them and their personality and beliefs. Remember, we don't have to be helpless victims, but they count on us not realizing this. So I'd recommend doing research on websites, books and resources that get into more detail about neg entities, attachments, and psychic attacks if this is a subject that's of interest to you. A good starting place is the excellent book, **"Practical Psychic Self Defense,"** by Robert Bruce.

I'm also going to be honest – I can't pretend that you'll only have to do this once, and then life will return to flowers and rainbows permanently afterwards. It most likely won't. If you've experienced a deliberate targeted attack on you once, and managed to sever the source's connection and do a return to sender, then chances are they'll try again. I've experienced this several times. On one occasion for instance I severed a psychic attack/entity attachment, feeling fantastic afterwards to the point where I was practically floating and had blasted my heart chakra wide open, only to find myself inexplicably edgy and grumpy/low frequency within 24 hours. BUT…I don't mention this to instill fear. My mindset is matter-of-fact, "it's just how it is" shoulder shrugging awareness. They don't just let people go without a fight after one thwarted attack. So if you do have to protect yourself against a psychic attack/attachment, do keep in mind that it most likely will return. All of which means, intend for continued protection in the future, take preventive measures to keep up your frequency, and eliminate avenues in your life that allow them to breach your realm again. If you're aware and prepared, then it won't be a big deal.

Dreamtime Manipulation

Negative "entities" interfering with awakening MILABS

This was another bit I had wanted to include in earlier drafts of this book but then held back. What changed my mind was an email exchange with a guy that I had come to know through a message board forum I participated in. He had signs and symptoms of having maybe had funny stuff happening to him in life, and I'd always been pretty positive that he was an abductee based on various things he'd mentioned in emails to me. An abductee of whom or what, I didn't know, but he seemed to have *something* going on. At one point we were emailing back and forth for several days discussing things, and during these several days where he was making some really important connections for the first time ever in his life (like the fact that his dad was Air Force intelligence…) really looking closely at things he hadn't noticed before, he coincidentally experienced negative entities visiting him in the dreamtime, harassing him.

I myself have also experienced supposed negative entities paying me visits during the dreamtime during times I was making important breakthroughs with regards to MILABS stuff, asking questions and probing for answers. Following is one example:

In the previous section I discussed the concept of citing Universal Law to revoke illegal metaphysical contracts. Well, despite feeling very excited about the subject upon first hearing it, I wasn't even able to get around to trying this until almost a full two months after the fact. I kept experiencing a feeling of negative discouragement, keeping me from trying it. Patiently I rode it out, knowing it couldn't last forever. Then two months later I could feel that the negative pressure had lifted, and I took the opportunity to squeeze in some revoking. For three nights in a row I did this as I drifted off to sleep. Well, on the third night, "something" came 'round to harass me while I slept. I found myself in a dream where I had a neg entity latched onto me. I became lucid and started connecting to the idea of the Christ Consciousness, raising my frequency, and even mentally crossing myself. That provoked it and I found this neg screaming and flailing about, causing my body to jerk all about as it put on quite the little drama queen histrionics display.

I got it off me and woke up in my bed. All was calm. Or was it? My cat was awake and began doing something very unusual. Silently she positioned herself with her back to me, facing out towards the rest of the room. She'd sit there for a bit, then get up and move to another side of my bed, calmly sitting, facing out towards my room. She continually moved around the three exposed sides of my bed, facing out towards the room…as if possibly facing off against "something" that was around, and maybe keeping it from getting near me on the bed…? I can only theorize.

This actually didn't spook me because by this point in my life I've been through a lot and have gotten a bit blasé. I lay there thinking about things, and then had the bright idea that since I'm awake and all in the middle of the night, and since I'm already on a roll with the whole revoking illegal metaphysical contracts thing, then why not see about removing any "pieces" of my dad that might be stuck to me, any part of him that might be linked to the MILABS stuff in my own life? It's a long story in itself, but pieces of people's souls can attach themselves to others, and there's evidence that I have a piece of my dad stuck to me, as well as his possible MILABS connection.

I laid there and began intending for any possible pieces to detach and return to sender. I was doing this for about one minute when I received the smack down I guess you could call it. **I was "zapped" by something while I lay there in my bed.** It was like a small jolt of electricity in my chest/ribs/heart area, and it jerked my body. Did NOT feel good is all I can say, EXTREMELY unpleasant icky feeling. Even more interesting is that it simultaneously made a **"ping!"** noise in the air above me. !! So we had physical sensation going on here AND audio. (I later attempted this again, but did not experience the zap, thankfully.)

I've had extensive paranormal experiences as mentioned earlier in this book when I lived in the paranormal apartment from hell nicknamed "The Vortex" back in California, with my brother. But this was my introduction into MILABS-related awakening harassment. When MILABS begin poking around in sensitive areas, asking questions and taking steps to remove it from their life, "stuff" may appear, kicking up a stink.

I also came across something similar noted in the book "Song of Freedom" by Judith K. Moore. Back during her childhood and teen years in the 50's and early 60s, Judith Moore was used in Satanic ritual abuse/government mind control experimentation projects. Her story is one of the few of this type that I truly believed as I was reading it (versus people who may be copycatting other women's stories…) but at the beginning stages of her realizations about what had gone on in her childhood, she experienced one of those creepy paranormal entity encounters:

> "One night, coming home, my friend and I were talking about the possibility of incest in our childhoods. As we parked for a few minutes to continue our conversation, something horrifying happened: a big, dark figure loomed at the car window, then disappeared. We screamed and drove away. I know that was an apparition from the darkest side of life, a visitor from the other side, the world where demons wander in search of their lost souls. I cannot

> remember being so frightened in my life as I was those first days of identifying myself as a survivor." **– page 15**

Factoring in that message board buddy who had negative entity stuff coming around in the dream time during the first few days of truly questioning his childhood and his strange parents and their Air Force intelligence connections, along with my own stuff, and Ms. Moore's story, and it really makes me think there's something to this.

But what I'm wondering is, **how exactly real are some of these entities?**

A real entity from another realm most definitely can appear in this realm and interact with us, as is the case with Judith Moore's encounter, or even attach to us and try to attack us, which I experienced back in "The Vortex." But in the case of my message board buddy and myself, the fact that these recent encounters were only appearing to us **while we slept** really threw me for a loop. There's no doubt that something was amiss here…people don't just have dreams about neg entities wrestling them, trying to latch on and harass them after all. But again, in my own encounters, **something about it didn't feel real.** As with all confusing things, I just put it aside and figured answers will come. They usually do, if you're patient enough.

At this point I think I've gotten some answers. It happened one night later on after the above incident, where I found myself wrestling with another harassing neg in the "dream" state. We're wrestling, and I'm invoking the Christ Consciousness energy, raising my frequency, taking this thing on, whatever it is, but with no fear, just in the most nonchalant way imaginable due to that aforementioned blasé attitude about it all…and I suddenly become aware that I can hear **human male voices** talking faintly in the background of my mind, on what sounded like a radio. !!! I couldn't discern what they were saying though, it was like gibberish. The entity? I could handle that for some reason. But the idea of human male voices being involved in it all…THAT freaked me out. I panicked, saying to myself like a little kid, "WHY DO I ALWAYS HEAR HUMAN VOICES?!!" "Always" being a reference to other times this apparently happened during my dreams, but which I didn't consciously remember until that exact triggering moment. And then it turns out that my boyfriend had experienced the same identical thing – battling it out against a neg entity in the dreamtime, only to become aware of human male voices talking back and forth on a radio in the background of his mind.

But it gets better.

Later on after that particular incident I found myself fending off yet another neg entity during the dreamtime, feeling calm and nonchalant while invoking the Christ Consciousness vibration…**and then a sarcastic human male voice "cuts in on the line" so to speak,** sounding like late 20's, early 30's maybe, and jibes me with, "Why are you even *using* that technique anyway?? Jesus wasn't even *real!*" Just totally mocking the whole thing.

!!

This time hearing the human male voices didn't faze me. So I'm wrestling with this entity, whatever "it" really is, and meanwhile I'm addressing Mr. Sarcasm off to the side in the same sort of voice one might use to explain something to a five year old. "It doesn't MATTER if he wasn't real…**it's the IDEA BEHIND IT that counts."** Like, come on guys, let's get on the same page here. Duh. ;) REALLY funny in retrospect.

I haven't experienced any more of these encounters with sarcastic "thems" inserting their peanut gallery commentary since calmly answering back as if they were five years old, being completely unfazed, and I suspect I never will again. Why? **Because in my opinion, these dream time entities may often times have very human manufacturers behind them.** I was already taking them on in a very blasé way, which in itself is awesome and shows spiritual progression, but having knowledge that they're not even real to begin with dissolves the game. Now, it doesn't mean all night time/astral harassers are being created by human abductors. But certainly some of them seem to be as I've since discovered, possibly in order to mess with the target, to discourage/scare them from pursuing answers, to sink them into a lowered fear frequency and send them spiraling off course, and so on. And so I pass this on for consideration.

Neg entity harassers may also be **a component of the mind control programming itself,** a program/compartmentalized personality fragment instilled within the psyche to deter the target if they begin waking up, asking questions and remembering things. This was an idea I first came across in the work of Fritz Springmeier.

And there's also the offhand possibility that these entities actually are real, and were sent in by these human "thems" who may be involved in occult ritual practices. But again, my experience has shown me that an entity who can only come after you while in the dreamtime/astral state, **versus on your own turf in the physical realm when you're awake**, is small potatoes and weak.

If these dreamtime entity harassments ever happens to you, then two of the biggest tips I can pass along is to be lucid and aware - that's important – and nonchalant and blasé. No fear, basically. Practice becoming more lucid and conscious in your waking life, as that will spill over into your sleep state. It's all about neutral awareness.

Dream Hijacking

"Dream hijacking" is exactly what it sounds like – a situation when one's dreams are "hijacked" into by an external source for the purposes of feeding on the negative energy that's generated by them and/or programming/rewiring the mind. They tend to center around deviant/perverse sexual situations where the dreamer is either directly involved, or watching from the sidelines, or fighting/aggressive situations where the dreamer is in an abnormally amped up state. Both sorts of situations provide a nice food source for astral/neg entity feeders, but in the case of the perverse/deviant sexual dreams it's in my opinion that they can also serve the purpose of programming a target via shock and trauma to the psyche. See Part II, and my experience with the "Programming Script" where I woke up with a hypnotic male voice trying to tell me, as if he was reading from a script, that certain (sexual) things had happened to me in life.

There's also the related "virtual reality dreamtime programming," discussed earlier in Part I, along with MILABS end times programming dreams, which is coming up in the next section. Both of those situations have a more human/military angle going on it seems, whereas the source for what I'm talking about here is a little more ambiguous. Could be MILABS in origin, could be so-called "alien" (be it Reptilians, Mantids, Grays, Nordics, etc.) could be opportunistic astral/neg entities who are just roaming about looking for a quick food source.

The way that I've been able to differentiate in my own situation between a normal dream where it may be your own subconscious generating the subject matter, versus external manipulation, is that in many situations a hijacked dream will start out normal and boring……**but then it seems to take a sudden turn out in left field.** And there may also be **warning indicators**, symbolisms and situations that start appearing in the dream to alert that something or someone has the crosshairs out, much in the same way dark clouds roll in before a storm. This is where lucid dream capability comes in handy, to become fully conscious in the dream and recognize what's going on around you, instead of just being swept up in it the way we normally tend to do. Another indicator I've experienced is that in one dream, I suddenly "felt" that I was being watched, and even voiced this out loud in the dream, looking around, confused, interrupting the flow of things. I kept questioning that I felt like I was being watched and that "I have an intuition for this sort of thing…" looking around, puzzled. Then suddenly in the dream there appeared a large camera "eye" sort of thing in my field of view, zooming in, verifying what I kept feeling. The dream ended after that. In my opinion I really was being watched, something was either plugging in to the dream or outright manipulating the creation of the dream in the first place. And I knew, I could feel it and it caused me to become lucid.

Dreams involving fighting or aggression or mind control programming is easy enough for me to talk about, but perverted sexual subjects was not so easy for me to discuss before, which is why I originally avoided talking about that particular aspect of dreamtime interference for the past four years since this book originally went up. However over the past few years I've encountered people in emails and on the 'net reporting the sexually perverse dreams that clearly seem manipulated, causing distress in the target, so it seemed to me that this was a subject that needed to be talked about. And now at this point in my life many things that used to bother me no longer do. So, here we are. And in a way I'm glad I held off on discussing it since I now have more insight into the subject, and more personal experience with it all than I did before.

Aggression

In my own case, a relatively recent example of a manipulated dream involved me and my boyfriend. In the dream I found myself screaming at him, full of amped up anger, but yet no reason was given. He stood before me as I raged on and on, getting worse and worse, until it escalated into me kicking him. Which is so ridiculous it's almost funny when you think about it. But at the point where I began actually kicking him in the shins I "came to" in the dream, because kicking him alarmed me, as this is my *boyfriend* and we don't have one of those drama/fighting relationships, at all. So it triggered my **true, core self** to snap out of it. I found myself looking around at my surroundings, puzzled, intuitively "feeling" things out, like, "WHAT in the…?!" Which in itself is amazing, to be able to do that. **And that's when I felt that my so-called "anger" was really a tacked on overlay of sorts,** like being dipped in mud, yet underneath things are clean. It wasn't me. I could clearly feel something else pressing down on me trying to pull my strings like a puppet, forcing me to "feel" something that wasn't really me. But as soon as I became aware of it and questioned it, looking around in the dream, it flew off, and I was back to feeling like myself. And the dream was over. But this connects into what I say elsewhere in this book, that if you have a strong sense of self, then "stuff" won't be able to get you to do things that go against who you are. Whether it's opportunistic astral feeders trying to manipulate you like a puppet, or negative programming.

Sexual

This one is a slightly bigger subject, as there are various types of artificial/manipulated sexual dream scenarios, and multiple possible agendas. I'll outline the ones that I'm familiar with from my own research:

Abnormal/deviant sexual themes. What sets these apart from a regular sex fantasy dream is that it's activity that the target would not normally engage in. A woman I once emailed with theorized that it's like "stuff" is trying to get people to accept deviant/perverse sorts of sexual behaviors as the norm. For what purpose, I don't know, although that certainly ties into what we're seeing within the mainstream media nowadays – same agenda. The envelope being pushed further and further every year, degradation that was previously taboo now being prominently featured in movies and on TV shows to desensitize the masses into accepting it as okay, etc. But I tend to think there's more to it than that. I suspect it's also a form of programming. The target may go along with things in the dream because they lack the strong mind to become lucid and put the brakes on things, and then afterwards they feel a mix of shame and humiliation and shock, which can do things to the psyche.

In this case what I've seen is that the dreams may center around such things as sex with family members – that's a big one. They REALLY seem to dig that one from what I'm getting, with siblings, or parents and children hooking up. They just try to…..slip it in there and hope you'll go along with things and not become lucid. Incest is considered one of the ultimate taboos in modern Western society, and so this is a major avenue for psyche trauma should somebody not become lucid and wind up following through with the act. And another oft reported theme is homosexuality, from what I've gathered. (On a side note, when you do the research into alien abductions the theme of homosexual relations seems to be a particular subject of interest to them, whatever these creatures are. Three male members of a fringe message board forum I used to belong to all mentioned that it seems they were born straight, and had interest in females, and no interest in males….until the age of sixteen. Then at sixteen it was like a switch was flipped for all of them, and they suddenly became "homosexual." It was weird to find even one person saying this, but three? And all three experiencing this at the same exact age? I met one of the guys in person, who was heavily immersed in the woo-woo and was most definitely an abductee, and I just felt like he wasn't really gay. But it seems something sure wanted him to think he was. He seemed to have conflict about it all too, which says something. There are natural born homosexuals who just always knew who they are from the time they were little, and then apparently there are these types who go to bed one day a straight person, and wake up the next as if a switch was thrown, and suddenly have overwhelming compulsions for the same sex. Makes me wonder how many other people out there have experienced this. In my opinion this ties together with the homosexual obsession displayed by "aliens" during abductions, and the invasive/hijacked homosexual themed dreams that targets report having. I think stuff is playing people like puppets, trying to turn them into something they wouldn't normally be if left to their own natural devises.) The late author Karla Turner noted in her book "Into the Fringe" (which I only just got around to reading in 2010) that these "aliens" are obsessed with human sexuality and reproduction.

Actual memory flashes? Then there are the memory flashes that might seem like dreams only because one remembers them while in bed, in a relaxed state, making it difficult to determine the nature of the imagery. Dream, or real memory? It can be tricky, but here's one of my own examples. Back around 1999 when I was 24, and living with my now ex boyfriend Steve in SoCal, I had a very puzzling "dream" one night that made no sense to me, and remained a mystery for years afterwards. I call it a "dream" only because it took place at night while I was in bed, yet I seemed to actually be awake. It was only a fragment, and wasn't at all like a dream. In fact, it was exactly like a **memory flash,** since dreams usually have a plot of some sort going on, whether coherent or hazy, and this one didn't. A real dream (for me) doesn't just focus on one specific thing, with nothing else surrounding it, appearing as a sudden "flash" in the mind the way this one did. But in this memory flash I was having sex with what I could sense was an older guy, seemed to have white hair, and who was wearing a long sleeve white button down corporate style dress shirt, but his pants were off. Just the bare bones undress to get to the job done. I never did see his face directly, I just saw his body underneath me, but did see the white shirt, and had the sense that he was much older than me, in his 50s or so, and got the impression of white hair. I had no attraction to him and felt absolutely nothing – emotional *or* physical. **Yet I was "performing" as if I did,** while feeling completely blank inside. And that was it. I came to suddenly in our bed in our apartment, wondering "WHAT THE HELL WAS THAT?!" It made no sense for me for several very important reasons: 1) Sex dreams were not the norm for me; 2) I didn't have a thing for middle aged guys, *at* all. Older white haired corporate/government looking dudes didn't do it for me. 3) The fact that I **felt nothing,** but was **performing as if I did,** with this totally blank mindset. It's the exact *opposite* of what a normal sex dream is all about. Just makes no sense. So everything about this memory flash snippet was opposite of what "should" be. Since this happened before I was even aware of such a thing as "MILABS" or my own status as an abductee it really made no sense.

Years later there was the strange experience with the white haired older corporate/government looking dude wearing the white shirt and gray pants at the Walgreens in Florida, mentioned in Part II, whose cologne registered with me subconsciously in a negative way, who made a sarcastic comment to me as he passed by and who seemed to be able to exert mental control over me, and I'd have to say that he's the closest match to the guy that I remember from that memory flash. And funny how in both cases, whether in the "dream" or in the "real" world, I never saw the guy's face. A bit interesting when you think about it. In both cases I was only aware that it was an older male, white hair, and the clothing style. The Walgreens incident took place only four years after the memory flash, not too long, so, it's entirely feasible it could have been the same guy. If not, then it was a guy very much like him. This incident also matches the other sudden "memory flash" mentioned in Part II where I suddenly found myself on a table under a light surrounded by human males, leaning in and leering and jeering and where I seemed to be unable to move, feeling alarmed. What's also interesting is that in my mind control research (I think it was in the work of Fritz Springmeier, as always) I've since turned up mention that mind controlled girls being used for sex are, for whatever reason, **programmed to not feel pleasure while they do what they do. But they have to *act* as if they do.** Why, I don't know. But it matches to a T what I saw in that flash snippet…..years before I read that. It wouldn't be the first…or second, third, fourth, etc…..thing that Fritz has written that matched up to things in my own situation.

I hesitated in putting this in here at all only because in a lot of ways it can be pretty embarrassing, and more so since I don't have proof for what it is. I have gone endlessly back and forth about it, and when I finally submit this revised and updated version to Lulu and let it go to press I'm still not going to be fully okay with it. For all I know it's just my own overactive, weirdo mind generating random nuttiness, and here I am trying to insinuate that it's evidence of having been taken under the radar, and "mind controlled!" to have sex with some guy I'd never normally do anything with and then pretend to feel something when I actually didn't. I know it can seem ridiculous, but considering the next memory snippet that happened in early 2002 it means there's enough circumstantial evidence for me to believe that it is what I think it is, for all the above mentioned reasons, so I'm going to put it out there and let the chips fall where they may.

Elsewhere in this book that I referenced a "dream"/memory flash experience in Portland, Oregon around December 2001-January 2002, and because of the nature of it I don't want to get into too many details. But I seemed to experience this flash in the morning as I was waking, which is why it may initially seem like a "dream," when in fact it was a memory snippet. But what I will confirm was that in this memory I was lying on a table on my left side under a bright light in a brightly lit room, I was either very drugged up or tranced out, and it seems that they were trying to see if they could get me to go along with a particular sexual situation with somebody else. The thing that I am proud about is that despite the drugging or trance state my core self would not be squelched. No amount of drugs (or hypnosis, but I think it was drugs based on how it felt) was working apparently. So I remember lying there, in a drugged or tranced haze in this bright room and saying faintly "nooooo……" not going along with it, not saying yes. My core self kept fighting to the surface. And that's all I remember.

As mentioned in Part II in the "Actual Memories" section, the thing that my few memory snippets all have in common is something attracting my totally focused, frightened or curious interest, independent of "their" direction, which then could have pulled me back up into conscious awareness just long enough to make an indelible stamp onto my brain that even the erasing techniques couldn't later eliminate. (Either that or in pulling me back into a more awakened, lucid state of mind it shifted my assemblage point, which is why I was later able to access the memory, once my assemblage point shifted back to that same position.) That seems to be the case here. My core self fought its way to the surface and kept saying no, and the situation itself that I was in was disturbing enough that it made that indelible stamp on my brain.

Months later in the fall of that year I was living in Fort Lauderdale and had an experience with a "voice from the radio" making reference to the subject matter of this particular "dream"/memory flash from Portland, where I could hear the smirk behind the words. This is elaborated on in Part II.

As the reader may have noticed, taking this section into account with other random things mentioned throughout this book, **sexual harassment** in various forms seems to be an ongoing theme for targets. Whether it's things being done to a vulnerable target during an abduction, or their dreams being hijacked. Again, not something I felt like talking about before. The first time I tried to write about this several years ago I got sloshed on alcohol in order to write it, wrote the section, but then changed my mind and deleted it all the next morning.

But I'm realizing that too many other MILAB/targets are all reporting the same exact sorts of stories. Males as well as females. So here we are. (This subject was also dealt with in David Jacobs' book "The Threat," concerning maladjusted hybrids, some of whom go on to sexually abuse and harass human female targets that are either assigned to them or who they know of through the abduction process.)

The only suggestion I can give anybody on the subject of hijacked dreams is to **practice being as aware and awake as possible during your waking state, because this *does* translate over into your sleep state as I've learned firsthand.** And it probably also translates over into situations where one is hypnotized and/or drugged. **A strong awareness and sense of self will push back at attempts at squelching one's consciousness.** During the winter of 2008-2008 I began practicing a daily spiritual/mental/emotional discipline routine, and of the many new things implemented into my life, mindfulness and being aware and awake and totally "in the moment" was one of them. (This was aided by the almost total removal of whatever little media I have left in my life. Although I wish I could say I kept up with that.) Quiet the mind, get focused, be "here" and aware and awake and clearheaded and focused. **And an unexpected side effect of all this intention was that it spilled over into my dreams.** I suddenly had a much stronger mind in my dreams, with the ability to question what was going on around me (to the point of questioning the bad dream logic plot holes that pepper most dreams, like, "heeeeey, wait a minute, that doesn't makes sense…." so that's amusing when you think about it….) and even managed to put the brakes on things and become lucid, if/when something thought it was going to plug in and hijack things. **So I know for a fact from personal experience that this works. Become more alert when you're awake, and you *will* become more alert when you sleep.**

You can also so some sort of **internal affirmation** to yourself before going to sleep, intending that astral feeders, remote psychic targeting, mind control programming, etc. won't be able to connect to you, that it's not compatible with you, etc. This way if it does, your subconscious will already be on alert, and thus, more apt to trigger you to wake up should something try to tap in. Also, Robert Bruce, author of "Practical Psychic Self Defense" gets into some detail about opportunistic astral feeders and sex dreams if anybody is curious to learn more about that subject and become armed with awareness.

End Times Programming

After the original printing of this book an interesting subject came up on a message board I used to participate in – the idea of apocalyptic doomsday end times scenarios seeming to be an actual need of mass consciousness, whether it's Biblical Revelations, the Rapture, the New Age's Shift/Ascension, 2012, Y2K, nuclear war, Planet X, global warming, ice age, pole flips, comet impacts, and so on. And right then as I read and posted to that thread I made the connection regarding my own apparent **end times programming, received via my apparent MILABS involvement.** I'd never thought much about it before then, and it certainly slipped my mind during the original writing of this book. Then, synchronistically within a day of making that post I came across a brand spanking new article by James Bartley outlining what of all things but…MILABS end time programming. Mr. Bartley's article was exciting for me to read as he was talking about the exact sort of programming I myself have experienced. There are endless uses for MILABS targets and many aspects of programming going on, but I think "end times cataclysm, NWO-lock down society" programming is SUCH a huge and important one that it warrants its own section in this book.

For me, this programming seems to have started back in 2000 when I was roommates with my brother in SoCal and apparently being abducted, but not aware of it. I knew *he* had the "thems" in his life, but I was in a state of oblivion about my own involvement. I was also not into reading conspiracy material at that point, and only had some basic understanding of the "NWO." But yet at this time I began experiencing what could be called obsessive thoughts regarding a future society in the midst of NWO lockdown/martial law. I'd have these vivid imaginings that would invade my thoughts where I could see tanks rolling down the streets of urban L.A., soldiers with guns drawn, patrolling, keeping everybody in line. Me living on the outside of this locked down society, on the lam, in the woods or in caves. These thoughts were so pervasive that as a writer I wanted to write some sort of story about it all, otherwise they were just burning up my brain with no outlet.

These thoughts continued into 2002 and 2003, an all-around state of mind that was expecting, prepared – and even hoping for – a cataclysm where I would be a survivalist living in a post-apocalyptic society, again, on the lam from oppressive forces trying to keep everybody in line. It's not really normal to want this sort of future society and to be thinking in that direction.

I began reading military-issued survival material, books on how to grow and forage your own food, make your own soap and candles. Not in a crazy, wild eyed way, but out of matter-of-fact, level headed interest. I created a "Bug Out Bag" loaded with all the necessary "on the lam" survival supplies in the event we ever needed to grab and go. There was a very vivid, realistic dream of a nuclear explosion I had one night where it was the end of the game for me. Vivid imaginings of walking along roads that no longer had cars on them, because most people weren't driving anymore – ducking off into the woods to dodge the police roadblocks set up along the way for interrogating the rare people who did still drive. More vivid imaginings of Washington D.C. being nuked because it's only 100 miles away from where we currently live. Just far enough away that we wouldn't be killed…but still within a major danger zone requiring us to leave, and then surviving in a society that would now be in chaos. Vivid imaginings of panhandling for food outside stores that I could no longer go into because I'd said no to the Big Brother microchipping, while others said yes. So now I had to be on the outside looking in. And *lots* of obsessive interest about the logistics of freight train hopping. Not normal! ;) I'd intently study passing freight trains and imagine running along and grabbing on, jumping off, jumping onto the top from a platform above, and even got tips from my dad who hopped trains as a kid – wear gloves, he suggested. And get a belt or rope of some sort to strap yourself in if you plan to be on one for awhile, so your hands and arms won't get fatigued having to hold on for so long.

But then, there was the mother of all "bein' on the lam and escaping the NWO" dreams: It was so vivid that it may as well have happened. The dream started with the U.S. being in a war situation and with martial law in effect; I then found myself traveling by foot across the country and was in a convenience store where people were gathered around the T.V. that hung from the ceiling, calmly watching the news reports. Then it culminated with me and several others illegally hitching rides on freight trains, trying to get cross country past closed state borders. We were somewhere out west, in open land with mountains in the distance and a piercing blue sunny sky. Military snipers dressed in black were set up intermittently along the tracks to pluck off people like me. I saw two sniper dudes about 30 feet (?) from the tracks, one of whom had his rifle up and firing. The one next to him had his rifle down, and just stood there squinting in the sun, letting the other guy take his shots at us. I could feel the bullets whizzing past me as I rounded the corner of the box car to get away and hang off the other side, and that's where the dream ended. My mentality through it all was calm and nonchalant. Just doing what needed to be done. No fear.

When I pendulum dowsed this back in 2005 I got that no, it was not a normal dream….and no, it wasn't a prophesy either, believe it or not. Much to my disappointment. Being wired to find this desirable and appealing means I was secretly hoping for such a fun and dangerous future! But alas, it apparently was not a premonition of a real situation waiting to happen. So what was it then? Well, what I got from my line of questioning was that yes, this was **programming**. Interesting, I thought, then put it aside and forgot all about it. Until now, after finding the James Bartley article, which outlines verbatim the fact that **MILABS are being run through dream time and virtual reality training programs designed to prep them for some future locked down post-cataclysm society where they will be on the lam, traveling cross country [heading west], dodging the bad guys and having to forage for food and survive.**

http://theuniversalseduction.com/bartley/8/milab-operations

It was more "almost falling out of my chair" when I read this. Just to see somebody describing my obsessive thoughts, ideas and dreams that I've been having over the past six years was amazing. So I guess the pendulum was right.

So how *can* you tell the difference between a premonition vision of one's future versus programming dreams and thoughts? Well, programming dreams are vivid. **Too vivid.** They're so real it was like you were there, and they seem to involve very negative scenarios. True premonition dreams seem to be a lot more subtle, even relying on symbolic imagery many times. And the thoughts and imaginings that I would have while awake didn't feel real. They were about outlandish scenarios and seemed to **invade my mind**, seeping in almost like a virus you could say, **overtaking whatever I was thinking about before.** They'd take on a life of their own, growing bigger and bigger like a snowball rolling down a mountain. True waking premonitions, as I've experienced them anyway, pertain to everyday real sorts of situations.

The next question then is **Why?** Why are MILABS being programmed with end times training scenarios, and being wired to desire this in their lives? James Bartley has his personal theory for what's going on here (bolded words my own emphasis):

> "…**the obvious first candidates for survival are milab adults and especially milab children who have latent paraphysical abilities due to their unique DNA.** From the standpoint of the military controllers, **milabs and milab children are not negligible commodities. They are extremely valuable**. Think about it: Even aliens, sometimes several different species of aliens are interested in these people. **The aliens particularly the reptilians and the dracs, must have a good reason for being interested in these milabs.**"

On a side note: For some reading that it can be an ego wank to feel as if they're one of the "special chosen ones," due to special abilities and bloodlines, although I know that wasn't Mr. Bartley's intended purpose in mentioning it. This is just a word of caution for anybody who might make the mistake of falling for that potential ego pitfall, and it's something else I mention later on in this book.

With that said, I tend to agree with Mr. Bartley that this could be one particular reason for why some MILABS are being targeted for training. As always though, there's never just one reason for anything, and I'm thinking there may be more layers to peel back here:

1. **Disinformation.** If targets are programmed with very vivid, believable training scenarios and end times battle dreams it may reinforce and convince them that this really *is* our future. In turn, they help propagate this possibly mistaken belief out in the world - on the internet, with friends and family, and so on. So, a case of MILABS possibly being programmed to influence the masses.

2. **Ensnaring/herding desirable targets onto a negative timelines.** In getting a MILABS' attention focused obsessively on these negative future scenarios, the programmers are getting these selected desirable targets to **inadvertently pull that negative probable future reality to themselves.** Like attracts like, and your health, job, friends, and life happenings in general all reflect what you've pulled to yourself via your actions, thoughts, fears (or lack thereof), attitudes, and beliefs

about what's possible and what isn't. The same goes for where you wind up in the future: Your attitudes, thoughts, actions and beliefs right *now*, as you read this, are shaping what upcoming timelines you find yourself on. **And what if you're somebody with enormous potential on a future *positive* timeline?** And you're being derailed/sabotaged into pulling yourself towards one that's very negative? Now there's a thought.

3. **Encourage a Service-to-Self (STS) militia mindset.** One of the MILABS women in Bartley's article was trained for how to grab a shopping cart and race her way through a supermarket to stockpile food and supplies in the event of an emergency, beating out everybody else. Yay for me, I have food, too bad for you, you're going to starve! being the mentality. Another part of this end times cataclysm programming involves what to do with those who can't keep up with you when you're on the lam and trying to survive. The programming tells you to drop them, and don't think twice. No matter who they are…even if they're a loved one. I've run up against thoughts like this, wondering hmm, what happens if someone I'm with is dragging me down, but it's someone I care about?? Then I read about this very same thing in Mr. Bartley's article. Drop 'em, says the programming. A completely self centered, "me me me!" STS survivalist mindset all the way. At first I could sort of understand that point of view although I wasn't comfortable with it, so just pushed it out of my head, not wanting to think about something like that. After awhile though things began changing in me, and that's when I said, You know, wait a minute here…!! I don't think I could do that. I don't *want* to do that! To me it was the whole **false two choice dichotomy** deal, where we're only given two black and white polar opposite extremes to choose from – either save yourself at the expense of others, or go down in flames with the lagwagons who will drag you down.

   X! How about neither. How about this entire "end times" programming debacle is bunk? Where's my third option here?

   ding ding ding! Once you begin questioning things and aligning with a positive path, the negative programming starts to fall apart at the seams and loses its appeal. You start to see it for what it is. They want MILABs to adopt a militia mentality, one where they've got guns and are willing to trample on anybody who gets in their way, and do what they have to do to survive. It's utterly ridiculous in my opinion and strips a person of their humanity. I'd starve to death before I carried on like that. Some people are already quite STS-oriented though, and/or are somebody with the potential to tip over in that direction, which is probably why they're targeted for this sort of programming. Keep in mind that "they" are always scoping for good STS recruits. ;) They can scan frequencies, see who has the dark side potential lurking within them, or those who are already full blown living it, making for an excellent new recruit. "Come, come work for us, you smart, psychic, STS bloodline you…!"

4. **Go west…into a trap?** Something else Mr. Bartley noted in his write up, which matched with my own "dream" experience, was that MILABS were being directed to go west in these "being on the lam and traveling cross country" scenarios. Go west…**why?** One idea is that the southwest is riddled with both above and below ground military bases that supposedly have both human and alien personnel, as well as having energy vortices galore. It is, or at least, has the potential to be, one **huge higher density bleed through.** So, "stuff" may be waiting to round up the arriving programmed recruits once they obey their programming and make the journey.

   Another idea may be purely survival-oriented, to get away from crowded urban areas with lots of people, police, guns, mayhem, and lockdown. Get to rural empty land away from people, and maybe have a better chance at survival.

   Related to that is the concept of Earth changes – it's been reported that many high up people in the know have been relocating to, and building homes in, Idaho, Montana, Colorado, Wyoming, New Mexico and Arizona, because those areas will supposedly be safe in the event that things wind up underwater. So many New Agers, MILABS and militia survivalists in general have it in their heads to go west/southwest that it automatically begs to be questioned. It's extremely suspicious at best, and I just know that should I ever find myself in the middle of a society gone to pot, I'm going the opposite of where all the programmed people are being herded. Forget the wide open baking hot desert with no food, water and no place to hide….one would be way better off heading for densely forested areas where there's food and game, better access to water, shade, and means to make solid camouflaged shelters. And the farther inland and the closer to mountains, the better – just in case we're talking about Earth changes here where things have gone underwater. So, you know, just a thought. ;)

So we have four potential reasons off the top of my head as the reason for this programming. And yet all of it manages to cleverly skirt the "free will violation" kink in the works. Why? **Because we as humans have self awareness and sentience, with the ability to think, question and analyze not only ourselves, but the world.** And it's up to us to put those abilities to use. And if we don't…then oh well, not the programmers' faults. ;) So the negs' way of thinking goes. They like to exploit lack of awareness for all it's worth, get away with as much as they possibly can. The programmers aren't technically forcing the target onto that negative timeline…nor are they forcing them to live out that scenario if and when they do find themselves in it. The target still has freewill to stop and go, "WAIT a minute here…why am I having these obsessive thoughts? And why do I feel like these scenarios are appealing???" And they still have free will to override the programming that would have them going west, killing and trampling on others and doing what they have to do in order to survive, and coldly dropping those who can't keep up.

Once you can recognize that you have this sort of programming, and if you've decided that you don't like it, then take back control of the wheel. **Declare that you're aligned with positive sources**, ask for whatever help and protection they can offer, reject the obsessive thoughts about negative future survivalist "me me me!" scenarios that would invade your mind and dreams like a virus, and begin practicing all the small ways you can override those negative STS behavioral urges as they manifest in your every day life. You're basically re-programming yourself is what it boils down to, and aligning yourself with a different path…and a different probable future.

Physical and Spiritual Isolation of Targets

Isolation and relationship interference

When doing the research, I came across something interesting that really stood out for me – it was the concept of **keeping a mind controlled subject isolated in life**. As somebody whose life theme for the longest time seemed to be about isolation, I really sat up and took notice of this. It's important enough to be mentioned here in this piece only because isolation can be extremely detrimental for a programmed person. We need other (quality) people in our lives, if for no other reason than to help keep an eye on us and make sure we're doing okay.

Keeping a target isolated from friends and family, in a situation where they're living alone, means the programmers/abductors could have unlimited access and experience little if any interference with their activities. An isolated abduction/mind control target is one that has no checks and balances system in their life. Self awareness of their abduction situation certainly helps, but sometimes we just can't pull ourselves out of a programmed funk on our own, or might not be able to override certain programming urges. So having people around us that we can talk to or who can get us to snap out of it is necessary. And if they're people who are aware and on the level regarding abductions and mind control, then it's even better.

As mentioned, my own life had been nothing but a variation on the isolation theme for the longest time and I can't help but notice how this probably has enabled much of the abductions and programming that may not have happened otherwise. I have only met a handful of other people in life that have been as cut off as I have been from family and normal friendships and normal relationships, and who were as completely independent, starting at such a young age.

The excerpt that I came across which first brought this issue to light for me was the following, from "Secret, Don't Tell" by Carla Emery, discussing the case of Candy Jones, and which was actually an excerpt from another source being quoted:

> "The first stage of any mind–control program involves isolation from family and friends while the foundation programming is implanted. After that, a more permanent form of isolation is built in: talk frankly only with "us"; stay away from "them." Jensen and Burger also programmed in harsh prejudices for the purpose of alienating Candy from all definable groups of people. Jensen's flat "no-friends" rule dealt with the rest. **The mind–controller wanted her to be a self-sufficient loner who avoided people and avoided relationships** because Candy said "…most of them wouldn't understand what I was doing. I couldn't take the risk." (Bain, page 141.)

A self-sufficient loner who avoided people…that was (and to a degree still is) definitely me. By the time I was 19, my favorite phrase was **"It's just me, myself and me in this world."** There's nobody else in this world that can help me. I'm on my own. I have no safety net in life. I have to take care of myself, because nobody else will…and nobody else cares. That was my philosophy, for years. It developed for a good reason, because events had conspired to make this the case. Also, considering that my entire immediate family has major signs of being tampered with, it's probably no accident that things went this way.

Another excerpt from "Secret, Don't Tell":

> "At their wedding, [Candy Jones'] long years of CIA-conditioned isolation were obvious. Long John had forty guests. Candy had none, except her mother and the attendant who looked after her. Donald Bain, Nebel's friend and biographer, noticed that, and thought it strange." – page 72.

That would so be me in the event I were to ever get married. Except I wouldn't even have my mother. It would just be me, myself and me. I used to say to myself that even if I did ever decide to get married for some reason….how I can have a wedding when there's nobody to invite! And the same goes for death…because there were long stretches in my life where I was living alone, with no family around, no boyfriend/husband, and no friends or acquaintances (or else renting a room from strangers who also wouldn't realize right away that I was gone or miss me). I realized it would be a precarious situation were I to die in a car crash or something. Nobody would know I was gone, let alone miss me. There would be nobody to claim the body. So, better make sure I don't die prematurely!

There's a lot to say about my life situation but in general it's very unusual. As far as I can remember I've never met any other person in my age group who has been in my boat in terms of being that alone in life. It may sound pathetic or lame, though it doesn't bother me, but I'm in my 30s and other than my boyfriend (who thankfully is a match for me in all the ways that matter) I don't have any actual personal friends that I hang with, and there's zero family in the picture. It doesn't mean I look to my boyfriend to solely provide everything for me, being clingy and dependent, that's definitely not my personality type either. I'm capable of doing my own thing and amuse myself in life. But it's to the point where I feel like I can't be around people unless they're on the level about things, even a little bit…..which pretty much nobody is…..which therefore means, no friends, because for me it's impossible to tolerate anything other than that. Things did not start out that way. I started out as a friendly "social butterfly" chatterbox without a care in the world, with a large group of friends both at home and at school when I was a little kid living in Massachusetts. Due to years of life events and personality rewiring however, which really kicked in after age seven when my parents moved us to a small semi-rural town in eastern Connecticut, everything changed. It only took nine years, but at the end of those nine years I was barely recognizable as the being same kid I started out as. Now there's a perpetual feeling of "I don't belong" and "I don't fit in" and "being on the outside looking in." It's impossible to undo by this point. I can get along fine with people when I have to, such as at work, which for me oddly enough has almost always entailed positions with a large amount of public interaction. So I'm not socially inept. But it drains me, and I have a tendency to avoid unnecessary social interactions. Forget being in the spotlight. If there's a way I can duck out of something unnoticed, just to avoid having to talk with people, even with people I know, I will. Unless it's somebody who "grabs me"…somebody who's real, who I may even experience some sort of connection with, which has definitely happened with random people I've met in life over the years. I know them when I cross paths with them. But they're so few and far between.

In the case of Candy Jones, it was her CIA controllers giving her programming commands to ensure that she didn't pursue friendships and relationships and kept herself isolated from others in life. But it's not always human government agent "thems" that do this in my opinion. My theory is that this is something that's probably implemented more often by inter/hyperdimensional "stuff." A form of "interference" designed to redirect the life path of a person. And it would be done not only through abduction programming, but through manipulation of the people around the target, since that's what higher realm entities are capable of. Put the spotlight on both the target and those closest to them, working everybody equally until something eventually gives. **Friendship and relationship interference go hand in hand with being an abductee.** Those times you do find yourself connecting to someone in life may be met with all sorts of bizarre happenings to keep you apart and derail the situation. Author Eve Lorgen wrote about this in depth in her book "The Alien Love Bite – Alien Interference in Human Love Relationships." http://www.alienlovebite.com/ In the case of the alien love bite scenario, the purpose seems to be twofold – to interfere for the sake of keeping people apart, and also to **feed** on the extreme emotions that would be involved in such love relationships gone awry. I also wrote an article about the general subject of hyperdimensional interference, including within relationships: http://in2worlds.net/interference-new-article-august-8-2009

Isolating a high mark target is imperative if you plan to be targeting them on a regular basis – get them alone so they can be taken more frequently, and without as much interference. **It's also important if you just want to take them out of the picture in general.** Get them spiraling down into loneliness, alienation and despondency…that should do the trick, so they think. It's a very successful tactic, and seems to work on most…but it's never foolproof. Especially if the people involved have awareness about these sorts of things. Awareness is everything.

"There is no God"/severing spiritual connections

We've all heard of people who've been programmed into becoming religious fanatics, aka bible thumpers, and the even more extreme example of brainwashed religious cults, but what about the flip side of this? Cutting a target off from spirituality? I've seen this mentioned here and there in my research, with regards to getting a target to believe that either God hates them, or that there simply is no God. If a target believes that God hates them, or if you can get the target angry at God, then according to mind control author Fritz Springmeier, "You can get that person to commit any sin." And if a target believes there is no God, or *anything* spiritual for that matter, then there's no greater spiritual hope for them to cling to, nothing to get them through trying times…nothing to fuel self-empowerment when they're being worked over by their handlers and programming. All of which is mucho bueno when trying to isolate and destroy a target, or program them to commit criminal acts in the vein of agent provocateur work, assassinations, terrorist activity, and so on.

Spirituality often equals hope and empowerment. It can be a lifeline, and a weapon against the negs for any target who would try to fight back and resist what's happening to them. "They" do not want that.

I found this particular aspect of MILABS to be interesting, only because I believe that I experienced a variation on this, which can't be dismissed. My aforementioned ex with the mind compartmentalization and the NSA dad, was also a diehard Atheist and skeptic who seemed bent on getting me to convert to Atheism, to the point where it became apparent at the end of the relationship that it had been a mission of sorts for him. Steve's philosophy, which he stated…and stated often…was that **"There is no soul, we're all just pieces of meat, when we die it's "lights out", that's it, there is no God, there is no afterlife, we're all just pieces of meat, when we die it's "lights out", that's it, there is no……"** You get the idea.

What Steve had was a **script.** A glossy eyed, trance-like script that he would endlessly repeat during the three years we were together, and the year and a half as roommates before that, in order to convert me to being Atheist, and then reinforce the mindset. He was also a diehard skeptic, and refused to believe in anything to do with psychic abilities, the paranormal, and so on, and made sure to work on me to try to get me to stop believing in that stuff as well. The total irony was, he had past experiences with the paranormal, and could even read minds, but refused to admit what he was doing. He turned his back and adamantly refused to acknowledge any of it, to the point of extreme, illogical absurdity.

All of this became apparent to me by the end of the relationship, after I'd already began to notice the multiple personas issue. I was standing before him in the hallway one night, hearing "THE SCRIPT" for the millionth time in almost five years, and I noticed for the first time his completely glazed over eyes that weren't even seeing me as he spoke. And his robotic, trance-like state that seemed to be rehashing something that he had memorized. I had the clear and distinct thought of **"He's trying so hard to convince me that there is no God and no soul…..then it must mean…there is.** ***He's completely full of shit.*****"**

And I silently walked around him and left him standing there in the hall, talking to the wall……quite literally. He was so immersed in his light trance and "There is no God, there is no soul, we're all just pieces of meat…" script regurgitation that he didn't even realize I'd sidestepped him and walked away until a few seconds after. Then he slowly trailed off, seeming confused as he just stood there in the hall by himself, unsure what to do with this new turn of events. I'd never done that before. I always listened intently to anything he had to say. Not anymore. The relationship was on its last leg, taking its final dying breaths and so I was now at the point where I'd either walk away, like right then, or just flat out tell him to "fuck off" whenever he'd start in with various b.s. After we'd officially broken up, the only thing he could come up with to complain about, his one big peeve about me, was **"…And you were *never* really an Atheist."** That was it. His face twisted with disdain when he said that, surprising me, due to his usual emotional neutrality about all things. He seemed to feel genuine disgust for this supposed indiscretion of mine! (And lest I sound like I'm coming across as a victim – I definitely take full responsibility for any people who've been in my life and the choices I've made in keeping them around long after they hit their expiration date. Programming or not, we still have free will and the ability to pull ourselves out of a situation. So just to clarify that I don't present these personalized examples featuring obnoxious people in order to paint myself as a sympathetic victim.)

It was all very puzzling for me at the time, like…."huh?" I of course did not know about MILABs, mind control, nor my own status as an abductee at that time, but in retrospect it seems that he could very well have been taken and programmed by "something else" and used to work me over. And considering his family's background and his multiple personas issues it makes him all the more suspect for such doings.

Cutting targets off from spirituality seems to be a very real facet of it all, because **spirituality, along with a connection to higher positive forces and having the spiritual bigger picture, is our ultimate weapon.** I've learned that from firsthand experience. Once I became attuned to the idea of my higher self and positive forces *everything* changed in my situation. That's when the tables started to turn. Spirituality is going to take different forms for everybody, it doesn't necessarily involve the worship of deities, and there is no right or wrong aspect of it. So long as one is tuned into positive ideals that's all that ultimately matters, and I can definitely say that negative stuff does seem to want to eliminate that. So this is something to be mindful of.

Sabotaging Programming Commands and Manipulated Life Situations

In Part II I mentioned several instances of waking up and catching "them" in the middle of programming me while I slept. "You will only see what's wrong and ugly in the world!!" and so on. Imagine if I hadn't woken up and caught them in mid-sentence…then what?? Even *with* the awareness of this command, I still found myself slipping into that mindset during the time period when this occurred. It was a slump I had to pull myself out of. **Think of how many people may be receiving these types of commands while they sleep and don't catch them, or, during abductions and don't remember them.** How many others have I received that I didn't catch? How many are planted within my subconscious as I type this? For that reason, if you're an abductee you have to take extra measures to really monitor yourself in life. Every day, and throughout each day, pay attention to your moods, thoughts, urges, feelings, and overall emotional state in general, and note any changes and subtle shifts as they occur, and try to pinpoint what may have brought about the change in attitude. And if you can't pinpoint the source, and it seems to have descended on you out of nowhere, then it could very well be a programming command kicking in (or just an all around hyperdimensional/psychic attack, a related concept mentioned earlier in this book). You never know. My boyfriend and I have gotten good at practicing this self-monitoring and analysis – a form of stalking, as it's termed by the Toltecs - that it's second nature for us now, although I still definitely slip up, falling victim to negative mood shifts and playing right into it. But I've definitely gotten better. It makes me wonder though how I ever got by in life before without monitoring myself. Scary to think about. But it's why most of what happened to me in my 20's even happened - lack of awareness, not paying attention, not noticing things, not analyzing and questioning all my thoughts, urges and actions.

A good potential example would be something that occurred to me in September of 2005, in the middle of the afternoon while at a temp job. The day was warm, bright and sunny and calm, with a beautiful blue sky and green trees, as I sat in the office I was using at the time. My life was great in every respect – living with Tom, who is a great boyfriend, working, making money at a temp job that to this day was probably the best temp gig I've ever had. Yet there I sat in this office……with the most overwhelming urge to run away from my life. Abandon everything and just…..run. ***RIGHT NOW.*** To where, I don't know, to do what, I don't know, but the urge was powerful. RUN!!!!!!!! LEAVE MY LIFE!!!!!!!! RIGHT *NOW!!!!!* ***GET IN MY CAR AND WALK OUT ON MY JOB AND JUST GO!!!!!!*** Leave my kitty behind with my boyfriend Tom, and abandon both of them back in our apartment here in Virginia and just….go.

The urge was so powerful, and yet so completely illogical and nonsensical that my mind was in a tug of war. So in the end I just sat glued to my swivel chair, my fingers gripping into the chair, just staring blankly ahead like a deer caught in the headlights, completely motionless. If somebody had walked into my office right at that moment it would have been a really odd sight. Glad nobody did. I wasn't moving, but my mind was very busy with this back and forth tug of war. It was very intense, and took about ten minutes to ride this whole thing out. And in the end, after not acting on this crazy urge from nowhere and sitting firm in my seat, it slowly subsided, and I was able to slowly return to my job duties.

This wouldn't be the only time I've had a strong urge to run away from my life, leave Tom, abandon Kitty and just run, but it was the most notable since it occurred in the middle of a work day, causing me to have to ride it out in an office with the potential for other people to witness me acting strangely. I've thankfully never acted on any of these urges. For that reason they don't seem to happen anymore. I've proven to be too strong a logical thinker, not a blind reactor.

In retrospect, these urges seemed to be attempts at **preemptive timeline manipulation.** I hadn't yet written this book or formulated my website in September of 2005…but it was coming up right around the corner. I purchased the domain name "in2worlds.net" one month after this incident, and began furiously finishing up the content of my website as of December, which I elaborate on in more detail in the "About" section on my website. And then began writing this book in March of 2006. And that particular temp gig that the programming wanted me to abandon wound up giving me a lot of tools that I would need for how to format this book in a nice way. So yeah, some big things were coming up within a matter of months. Hence, the intense urge to run away from my life and change the course of how everything would go, just prior to it all.

It's basically a battle of retaining your sentience and free will. It's easy to slip and get lazy and to allow life to drag you around by the nose, so you don't have to think. The zoo is designed to suck our energy at every turn, which in turn contributes to getting lazy if we're not aware and don't take precautions. This loss of energy is our weak point, the way that they can get in and chip away at our lives. So if you're an abductee, you have to find the energy to be able to stalk yourself and pay attention, and take back control over your own life. It becomes a matter of thinking before doing, every day, with everything. Is that thought really your own? Is that urge you have really the optimal thing to be doing right now? Is it logical? Does it make any sense? Are you able to pause, breathe, detach, and foresee what the negative consequences would be from doing this? If so can you now resist acting on these urges (which most likely aren't even your own) and go down a different path…one based on sentience and free will?

Another angle to this is having a strong **sense of self.** Too many people in this world are lost, and lack the ability for self-generated esteem. They look to others to make them whole, and to give them an identity and purpose. But if you have a strong sense of self, then you don't need to look to others for your esteem and identity, you will have an automatic innate sense of "who you are"……**which can also cause abduction programming to run afoul.** If you're instilled with a negative, icky programming command that goes against the core foundation of who you are you'll be more likely to resist it if you have that strong sense of self. The ego tends to get a bad rap in spiritual practices, but it serves a valuable purpose in this case. (I think much of what passes for New Age teachings, including their phobia about the ego, is designed to turn people into passive, compliant, non-thinking marshmallows because it serves an agenda. But, that's a whole side topic!)

Strong intuition coupled with a sharp mind that has analytical capabilities, pays attention and asks questions is a deadly combination. Intuition gives you a head's up advantage for seeing who's who and what's what beyond the borders of physical reality, while a strong mind means you'll question things, won't get played for gullible or taken for a ride in life.

When I was first roommating in California with my brother, a mind controlled target, one of the things he scorned me for was this very ability to think and pick things apart and critically analyze everything. At the time he scorned me for this I was unaware of my own abductee status and so I was surprised at the level of contempt for me that drove his words, like, Wow…what's THAT all about?! I pick things apart and scrutinize everything too much?? What's it to him, you know? Why does he care? Then later in Portland I was told repeatedly by my brother that I needed to stop thinking about things so much…but now the new angle he used was that it had to do with tricking the "matrix" program of reality. (I get into this particular bit in a previous section.)

Thinking is not good for "them" which means it's a must for us. **They NEED people who don't think, and are drifting along in a dream state, on dopey autopilot.** I cannot emphasize this enough. This is the reason for why television and entertainment has become such a dominant force in our society, and why programs and commercials have gotten so hypnotic and nonsensical. It's a mass attempt to lull the population into a dream-like trance stupor. So for us we must then adopt the counter-tactic of awareness and personal stalking. Thinking, questioning, analyzing. You may never be able to stop the abductions, and you may never be able to fix or completely undo the mind control programming. But what you *can* do is be as sentient as possible at all times. Make sure you're not just reacting to programming and manipulative urges that are not in your best interest. With every sabotaging programming command that you override through self-awareness, the closer you get to personal freedom.

Or, to quote the fortune cookie that my boyfriend once "coincidentally" received:

"You control your response,
and therein lies your freedom."

Urges to move to certain locations

Related to this is how many people who are involved in the "weird and the strange" will have urges to up and move to various locations. Pay attention to the locations that people mention – so often it's the southwest. New Mexico, Arizona, Colorado and Utah. I myself had the persistent urge to move to the southwest for several years back in the 90s, after visiting there on several road trips. Other places I later had the overwhelming urge to relocate to were North Carolina – specifically, Asheville, or the surrounding region, and northern California.

While some urges to relocate may be in your best interest and coming from your higher good, the fact is, if you're an abductee then **you still have to question everything.** It turns out that the places I've had urges to move to were areas that were known for their underground base/UFO activity. Asheville, North Carolina - supposedly - has an underground base, strong energy vortices and UFO activity galore, as well as a verifiable satanic occult issue happening, although I never knew that back when I first had the intense urge to move there. Glad I did the research before I just up and moved. And northern California is a hotbed of weirdness, with Mt. Shasta and its New Age scene, Bohemian Grove, various military installations, and all the rest. And most reading this are probably well aware of the situation in the southwest with all its bases, both above *and* below ground, huge military presence, countless UFO sightings, energy vortices, and all around weirdness that draws in the New Agers like a magnet.

My later move to Florida also seems as if it could have been a manipulated deal. I originally wanted to move there in '94, but changed my mind due to something that was said to me by a coworker. Then in early 2001 in Portland while hanging out with Joe one night we were pondering where we would live next. Going back to SoCal was out of the question for both of us for different reasons, so, where else should we go? I'd completely forgotten all about Florida by this point in my life and hadn't mentioned it to Joe. But nevertheless, Joe looked at me with that weird look he'd get, the glint in the eyes with the strange knowing smirk, and simply said "Florida." I happened to be holding a USA Today in my hand when he said it and glanced at the national weather/temperature map they have, and saw that the southern tip of Florida was one of the only areas in the continental U.S., next to south Texas, where the temperature colors were yellow and orange. Everywhere else was green, blue and purple. So hot and tropical Florida it was. And why did I later pick "Fort Lauderdale" specifically? I have no idea. It was just…**in my head.** Only after moving there and going through all my strangeness from 2002-2004 did I later learn that other female MILABS experienced weirdness in south Florida, including Fort Lauderdale specifically, as well. I had no idea until after writing the original version of this book.

A related concept is getting the urge to take a sudden trip to some place out of nowhere, for no logical reason. I've also experienced this, as outlined in Part II, with regards to my spur of the moment road trip to Flagstaff/Sedona, Arizona, from California. If you keep tabs on yourself then this shouldn't be an issue. It becomes an issue when again, you lack awareness, and don't stalk yourself. If you're an abductee, and you have an urge to just drive off to some far away place – *alone* – and you can't track down where this urge may have come from, then maybe it's best to hold off on going. It may not be in your best interest.

Manipulated jobs?

Here and there in this book I've made reference to working for a brief period of time at what I called "the Illuminati hotel." In retrospect my brief time there seems to have been an orchestrated set up from the get-go. If I hadn't worked there then the idea of manipulated jobs, and things taken to that level, probably wouldn't have even occurred to me. But if one can have manipulated relationships and moves, then why not jobs, is how I now look at it. And I realize that all this can sound a bit…paranoid. But there were indications that something very unnatural was amiss with me seeking – and then getting - this job, so I use this story as a good example.

We had just moved to Virginia in September of 2004, and I began temping with one of the local temp agencies starting in October. I worked at a couple of assignments, then found myself assigned to this one particular company starting in December. I soon loathed the assignment, as it was all wrong and a total joke. It culminated with me giving two weeks notice. The minimum requirement with my agency was three days notice if one wanted to be pulled off an assignment, but I wanted to be nice and give them enough time to find a suitable replacement. Plus it made me look really good to my temp agency. :D It guaranteed that they'd continue to call me for work. But one afternoon during those two weeks notice my supervisor at the job assignment I was leaving needed me to find a room at one of the nicer end hotels in the area for an incoming company employee, and that's where it all began.

As I perused the yellow pages getting hotel phone numbers my attention was caught by one particular hotel ad. In retrospect I can recognize what happened next as something akin to "post hypnotic suggestion," because the moment my eyes saw the hotel's ad I had this sudden kind of trance-like knowing in my head that "I'm going to work there…..!" For no discernible reason. But I knew it….I *needed* to call and find out if they were hiring and if so, what I needed to do to apply, because I was going to work there. And I did, with total relaxed confidence, feeling like it was already a guaranteed done deal. I got the front desk, who sent me to human resources, who told me what to do to apply. Within a few days I was sitting in a meeting room filling out the paperwork…and found myself in a face to face interview with the front desk manager himself. Meaning, I'd already passed the first stages of judgment. I'll keep the front desk manager anonymous by calling him "Richard." By the end of the interview "Richard" was giving me a basic tour of the hotel and letting me know that I was pretty much hired. The job was mine, if I wanted it. I said I did, feeling excited inside. Then again, I "knew" it would be mine anyway before I even applied. Richard had a low key personality, not emotional, but in his low key way I could see he seemed pleased when I said yes, and had a small smile on his face. While we waited for the service elevator to take us back up to the lobby he let me know that the position had been open for almost five months now (in retrospect since we'd moved there….….something I only just realized right now as I'm typing this in 2010……) but he'd rejected every person who had interviewed. Until me. That's a little weird when I look back on that. Now, it really could very well be a case of nothing but sketchy, and/or unqualified types applying for the job during all those months, and it wouldn't surprise me since I've seen that sort of thing happen, no doubt. But then again……maybe not.

A woman I knew over the 'net named Pam who identifies herself as a MILAB and also happened to be intuitive sensed negative things surrounding this job back when I was first getting hired on, and tried to warn me about it when I told her about it over the phone. Negative things as in, malevolent happenings, not just that I would be displeased with the job. She had never warned me about anything else……just this one particular job. At the time I just waved it off, thinking she was loopy. In retrospect she may have been right.

Soon I was working the front desk, usually the 6:30 am - 3:30 pm shift. Most of my coworkers were younger then me by over ten years and kind of immature, with limited work experience, whereas I was 30 at the time and had eight years of office job experience around the country under my belt, plus prior hotel experience, so I did well and was able to keep up with the busy paperwork, phones and guest traffic. The employee programming that went on there was a bit of a mind control trip in itself, though not surprising for a higher end hotel. Everything from the way we answered the phone, to how we stood, to how we spoke, and even directed guests (you never point, you always "gesture with your hand"!) had to be done a certain way.

I soon started referring to the hotel as "the illuminati" hotel when I got wind of where the corporate headquarters was located, the way the headquarters' restaurant was even named "Illume," the fact that the hotel's owner was some oil tycoon, and then realized that the hotel's logo had a thinly disguised pentagon in it. (Of course it didn't hurt either that in the break room it was mandatory for the TV to be set to CNN, all the time. One more "illuminati conspiracy" you could say. I say that tongue in cheek, but, it is a little weird. Hotel policy dictated that the TV was never to be switched from CNN, or turned off in general, though I frequently ignored the latter if I happened to be in there alone.) Then there was the matter of how the hotel had eastern European, Croatian and Russian/Belarussian immigrant workers, all of whom were being exploited by an agency that represented them to the hotel. The agency was knowingly doing it, the workers were knowingly submitting to it, and the hotel was knowingly okay with it and encouraging it. For instance, scheduling the Belarussian desk clerks for double, and even triple shifts, where they would sleep over in one of the hotel rooms and didn't get any overtime pay, and where their hourly rates were several dollars less an hour than the rest of us. Something the hotel couldn't get away with for legal U.S. residents who know their rights with the Federal labor laws. The immigrants accepted it because to them it was still a better deal than whatever they'd left behind. After I heard about what life was like in Belarus, the last communist holdover in the former Soviet bloc, I could see why they gladly accepted it. The one time I tried to broach this subject at the front desk, probing for more details about the agency who brought these people over, the bell hop – who wasn't even one of the immigrants – got fired up and shut down the conversation, seeming fearful and angry, making it seem that I was going to be reporting people….and costing people their jobs. He let me know that the guys who ran the agency used to be (exploited) immigrants themselves, and now were running the agency to bring over more (exploited) immigrants. So basically a case of, "Shut up and mind your own business. Everybody here knows what's going on, and everybody involved is okay with it." This is why in retrospect I wondered whether some of these girls were being used for other……stuff on the side, considering how good looking they were, in a vulnerable, needy situation, and with innocent, passive, almost trance-like demeanors.

As far as my own indications of weird activity go, there are only a couple, not counting the unusual circumstances of me applying, and then getting, the job in the first place. The first thing I can think of is very minor, but it involves 15 minutes of "missing time" you could say. I left for home at the end of my shift at the normal time, with no delays en route, and yet when I got home I was 15 minutes late. And no, the clock at home was not incorrect. All the clocks and times matched….I was just missing 15 minutes. It stopped me in my tracks because it wasn't right. To this day I have no idea what that's all about, if something happened to me and my mind is blanked out, or what.

Also during this time as mentioned elsewhere in this book I began attracting in the "MILABS 69" thing in terms of number sightings. I experienced it once back in Fort Lauderdale, but now out of all the lockers that I could have been assigned, my locker number was #69. (so when it came time for me to select an employee number for logging into the computer and such I decided to choose 3169 from the list of ten numbers that were offered to me, why not you know. ;) Make it easy to remember. So that was my own doing.) And then I started frequently getting "6:09" on the clock….but only during the time I worked there.

Then came the morning in April when I had just started my shift in the morning and "Richard" arrived at the front desk at 7 a.m. on the nose, always impeccably dressed in a suit and on time to the minute for when his shift started. And as I glanced over at him to my left to say hi, an immediate, intensely strong feeling and knowing that something very unsavory had happened involving him just…..hit me. I don't know how to describe this. But when I saw him this knowing immediately surged up in my mind, that something very yucky had gone on involving him, the memory *just* about to emerge…..but then feeling like it was running into a wall, or a ceiling, being blocked. The memory wanted to come out…..but couldn't. Over and over. Surge…block. Surge…block. Surge…block. My eyes bugged out a little bit as I glanced over at him and was hit with this intense surging of negative memory knowledge. He in turn looked slightly quizzical and surprised, probably at my surprised look, and I hurriedly glanced down and away. If something indeed had happened he gave no indication of it, and didn't seem to be aware of it. His surprised look seemed to be solely in response to my wide eyed look.

This all overlapped during the same time period when he gave his two week notice, having accepted a bigger and better position in another hotel chain outside the state, putting his house up for sale and preparing to move with his wife and two young kids. During those final two weeks this negative memory knowing remained strong, enough so that I completely avoided talking to him, wouldn't look at him and never said goodbye to him, even artfully dodging the little farewell thing on his last day. But I had such a negative feeling and knowing about him I didn't want to associate with him in any capacity. This has never happened before, or since, with anybody. Richard's "personality" or lack thereof was very interesting. But he was Caucasian, in his 40s, very clean cut and impeccable with dark blond close cropped hair, blue eyes, seeming kind of 1950s actually. Not necessarily good looking, but not ugly either. Reserved, with a cold intelligence, low key, though I did see indicators of a fiery temper a couple of times that he kept tightly in check, so he had restraint. And he actually gave off the vibe of possibly being gay, something effeminate, so I was shocked to hear he was married and had kids. What was going on there with my memory surging, I'll never know, and if something did happen, then truthfully I don't want to know.

I wound up leaving that job within two months after "Richard" left due to an escalating series of events piling on, primarily focused on the replacement desk manager, who was a total clown and very inept. But it was like reality was trying to get me to get out there, and when I wouldn't take the hint then more things kept piling on until I finally quit…and actually walked out in the middle of my shift no less. So I was only there for four months, then returned to temping with my previous agency.

The postscript to this whole tale is just as weird. But in October of 2006 I was temping at an assignment that I'd been at since June, when I got a call from my temp agency saying that this other company whom I'd temped with months ago, for only a day and a half mind you, was literally *begging* for me to come back and work for them with the plan for me to go permanent with them. Apparently this other company *HAD* to have me. And only me, they insisted. They were creating such a scene about it, calling the agency repeatedly, that my temp company was going to do something they didn't normally do…..offer me the position with this other company, and pull me off my current assignment. The whole thing was bizarre because again, they'd only worked with me for *a day and a half.* Why was I so special?? The position was for a tax accounting firm downtown, working the front desk as a receptionist basically, with light office admin duties. Everybody there was nice from what I remembered, the job seemed okay enough and the pay was fine, the location was only a couple of miles from home. Since the begging and pleading for me was so intense I gave in and agreed to be pulled off the assignment and go over there, feeling kind of flattered, admittedly, like, Wow, okay.

Long story short, when I got over to the tax firm it was a major case of "bait and switch." And this is where it eventually gets back to "the illuminati hotel," as you'll see in a moment. But my job duties weren't going to be what they told the temp company, and instead involved a whole bunch of back office grunt work and converting their thousands of paper files into scanned electronic copies. One of the women who worked there was showing me around and explaining these various job duties to me, and then brought me down to the mildewy smelling basement level where all the filing cabinets were located with the thousands of files that I'd supposedly be converting. She waved her arm towards all the cabinets and said, "Welcome to your future." O.o To this day I've never gotten over the arrogance behind that statement. So sure was she that I was just this meek, passive little chick who'd gratefully jump at the chance for this "opportunity" to work in a mildewy basement doing work that would make anybody want to jump off the nearest cliff.

But then as it turned out, the mildewy basement would not in fact be my future because guess what….they were moving in only a week and a half. So I was informed that another major aspect of my job duties would involve packing up, and helping to move, the entire office. Again, none of which was told to the temp agency. But let's take a guess at where they were moving to………

…….into office spaces located inside the "illuminati hotel," of all places. ;)

So all this inexplicable intense begging and pleading that they HAD TO HAVE *ME* and *ONLY ME!!!* when they'd only known me for a day a half, months ago, *right* as they're packing up shop and moving into the "Illuminati hotel." ummmmmmm. Amazing coincidence there. Needless to say I was only there for one day before bailing out and going back to my previous assignment, who was happy to have me back. The temp agency sided with me and was peeved with this company for their bait and switch, and trying to get a free office mover in the process. I don't profess to understand what in the frickity frack was going on with this situation, and for all I know it's just a giant coincidence, but it was bizarre, to say the least.

Discovering Abduction Schedules

If you're dealing with military abductions, or the joint alien/military affair, then there will most likely be a pattern to when you're being taken. And it seems that they will operate on that schedule for as long as they can, until you discover it and begin throwing a wrench in the works.

Because so many things had begun happening to me by 2002 I started keeping a log book to document my stuff, as well as diligently photographing the mysterious nickel-shaped round dark purple bruises that were periodically appearing on my legs. **http://in2worlds.net/anomalous-markings** I hadn't figured anything out yet, and it was a bit frustrating, but I plugged away with it all nonetheless in hopes that someday, answers would come.

Then one day in April of 2003, I figured something out. In flipping through various photos of the nickel-sized bruises, I really noticed for the first time the dates on the back of each photo. **All of the photos were taken either between the 1st and 3rd of each month, or the 20th – 23rd.** !!! I couldn't believe I hadn't noticed this before. Amazing. This wasn't random chaos. This is why it's imperative to log and document your stuff. Over time, with enough materials gathered, you *will* discover the patterns and meanings. But you have to be patient enough to wait for the materials to accumulate. It won't happen overnight.

This realization was so revelatory that I had to pause and take a moment to regroup. I closed my eyes and addressed my higher self. (or at least, what I understood to be my higher self. It may not have been, but as noted in my write up about it **http://in2worlds.net/the-higher-self** it was definitely something positive….) I started talking to it, saying, "Okay Higher Self, me in the future, it looks like I found a pattern to the abductions. Tell me what I'm supp…."

"It's about time!" came the response, interrupting.

Not in a sarcastic way, but rather in an urgent "don't stop now!" sort of way. The voice was like my own, so, it was differentiated from the outside 'microwave voice beaming' technology mentioned in Part II where the voices were male, and clearly not connected to me. The thought behind what the higher self voice was conveying was "Keep going! Keep moving, don't slack. You found the pattern, so don't stop now..." I started laughing though, shaking my head about it all. It was just too funny how it cut me off like that, all urgent.

There are a few possible reasons for why they might utilize a regular schedule:

- Possibly they're taking so many people that it has to be an organized affair. The military/black ops agencies would want things to be as organized and efficient as possible.
- May coincide with the target's personal biological cycles; Certain times of the month may be more opportune for snagging somebody based on the purposes they're being taken for. Think biorhythm cycles, women's monthly cycles, etc. and so on. Something to do with some sort of cycle.
- Maybe there's some unknown variable, something pertaining to whatever's going on in their realm, that makes it so that they can only take people at certain times.

Throwing a wrench in the works was just mentioned a moment ago. What does that involve?

It means exactly that…foiling their efforts to take you. What I came to discover was that my mysterious bruise markings were appearing on a regular schedule, and that during those times of the month I had an increase in number sightings and ear tones, indicating that "something" was amiss. There was hyperdimensional forewarning, you could say. And I began thinking of that as my head's up, and used it to my advantage. On those nights when it seemed stuff might happen…my boyfriend and I stayed up all night. I would go to work on minimal to no sleep, and we'd down the Frapuccinos and Red Bulls to keep us awake. Or we'd take stuff to read and go hang out at Denny's for several hours in the middle of the night, eating food and drinking coffee and reading good books, during the prime time that they'd be (trying) to take me/us. Or, I'd just stay up as long as I could, and then conk out for the last two hours before my alarm was set to go off while my boyfriend kept watch. He's nocturnal anyway, so it was normal for him to be up during the night and to go to bed at around 6 a.m. or so, which certainly helped. Some people will claim that staying up will do nothing to thwart them. I disagree. That's defeatist. Especially if you leave your home and go elsewhere, and even more so when you go to a public place. ***You have to at least try.*** **You can't just go belly up.**

I didn't mind any of it though, all the dodging and outrunning abductions, losing sleep and all that, mostly because we lived in South Florida. The year round summer weather and close proximity to the beach meant everything had a fun vibe to it. It was perpetual summer vacation. My job required no brain power, so it was cool if I went in on no sleep – I didn't need it anyway – and life in general just didn't have that oppressive feel that you find elsewhere in the country. It's hard to get depressed and feel dragged down when you have an easy job, there's no winter, and outside your front door there's palm fronds rustling in the warm breeze and you can literally, be sipping a Pina Colada on the beach off the A1A the next day, which I had done on a few occasions. Translation = when you live where others come to vacation. So everything was already light hearted and felt like a game, and this was just one more aspect of the game. Having that outlook really helped matters too, in retrospect. It's ALL about your personal frequency, as I outlined in the section regarding Fear. And when you're not afraid, and are just facing the situation head on, just doing what you gotta do, and even getting a slight kick out of it in between going to the white sandy beach and frolicking in the crystal clear blue green water that's as warm as bathwater ;) then it turns the tables on the outcome.

Once I began throwing a wrench in the works enough times and made it difficult for them to adhere to any sort of set schedule, then I had the experience, as mentioned in Part II, where I woke up to hear a man's voice pulling me out what felt like a deep, trance-like state, saying "1-4-1-4-1…" as if it were some trigger code. It felt like I had been looking at something for him before he pulled me out of it. (Remote viewing?) But then another female voice cut in on the line you could say (higher self?) to inform me in an urgent, FYI-sounding way that **"They now have the ability to use you without actually taking you."** Via the implants, most likely.

But hearing that definitely threw a wrench in MY works. It seems that with MILABS, their preferred method is to take somebody physically, but if they have to then sure, they'll resort to Plan B, and use them remotely. Possibly it's not as effective, but, it gets the job done. Whatever "the job" is, I don't know. To this day I still have no idea what's going on and how it all works. I can only theorize. But talk about making me feel hopeless. What's the point of outrunning them if they're just going to plug into me while I sleep? So I gave up. At that time, I just didn't know how I could possibly side step somebody plugging into me while I sleep, seamlessly merging with me so I don't even know it and just perform for them like a good little monkey. If that's what's indeed happening. So for about a year and a half I took the blue pill, and slipped back below the waves. It just got so tiresome always being on the run from something when I didn't even know who or what I was running from, or what was actually going on. And to a degree, that's still my attitude I admit. I don't have the passion for it all that I once had.

Now however, at this point I think there are ways you can side step it. But it requires much more work then just staying up all night and drinking Red Bulls. As their tactics are amped up, when they start resorting to their Plan B's and Plan C's, then the effort we have to put in as a counter defense will also go up. One major counter-tactic would involve **lucid dreaming skills.** When you become adept at being conscious while sleeping, then it's possible you'll be more sensitive to any attempts at intrusion that may occur. Which ultimately means, **people *can* fight back.** It isn't entirely hopeless.

Figure out your abduction schedule, if there is one. Dodge the physical abductions if you can. And in the event that they plug into you via your implants, gain the upper hand by practicing lucid dreaming and taking control of your sleep state. There has to be ways to program your own mind to alert yourself in the event that something is trying to plug into you while you sleep. Connect to your higher powers for any additional feedback and insight and help you can glean about it all. And always keep your frequency up. Don't get despondent about it all, it's not worth it. Think of it as a game, and just have fun with it.

Residual Talents and Abilities

Something I began noticing about myself in my early twenties was my unusual, to the point of being freakish, lightning fast reflexes. I don't recall having those abilities as a kid, but I sure had them now. It became evident during one particular incident at 21, while I was roommates with a group of friends who were in my life for several years. We were all in the kitchen, and I turned and accidentally knocked a tall glass off the counter with my left elbow. I saw it happen out of the corner of my eye, but before I even knew what I was doing I bent down a little and swooped my right hand behind my back…and caught the glass in mid-air behind me without looking. It was one smooth and continuous move, from knocking to bending to catching, and I had no control over doing it. My arms and hands had a mind of their own.

The room became silent, and I looked up with the glass in my hand to see three of my roommates just staring at me with looks of shocked puzzlement. I put it back on the counter, and one of the guys, Mike, said "Wow." That's all anybody could say. Conversation resumed a little nervously.

And that was my introduction into a skill I have absolutely no control over. Like the time at the pizza parlor in Fort Lauderdale where my boyfriend and I were studying a menu at the counter, and my left arm suddenly shot out to catch a falling menu in mid-air; my conscious mind didn't even realize it was falling until after my hand had already caught it and was carefully placing it back on the counter top. The guy behind the counter looked at me with wide eyes and said "whoa." Standing next to my bookshelf reading a book and my right arm shot out to catch the heavy bookend and then push all the toppling books back on the shelf, in one move – conscious mind had to catch up once again with what my reflexes involuntarily did. And then what happened recently in 2010 - in the bathroom at work rinsing my glass mug in the sink, holding it with my left hand but then it slipped, about to crash to the tiled floor and shatter. All I know is that my left hand had a mind of its own and did all this crazy maneuvering so that I caught the mug left handed, pushing it against the sink to stabilize it, but which caused it to chip a little. And then it slipped out of my hands for a *second* time, spinning wildly through the air and once again threatening to shatter on the floor, and once again my reflexes went into overdrive, all nerves on end, bending my knees and dipping down with my left hand and some crazy maneuvering…..and I caught it, again, this time down closer to the floor. Put it back on the sink. I just stood there recuperating after this fiasco because my nerves were shot from the sudden alarm panic that flooded my system. It all happened so fast my conscious mind didn't even have time to catch up. All I know is that there was this slippery glass mug flipping wildly through the air threatening to shatter all over the floor, and then something else kicked in making sure it didn't happen. And the many times I've dropped something I'd been holding and one of my hands involuntarily forms a perfect little scoop shape and positions itself under the falling object to catch it. I can feel my mind shutting off as some other part takes over and does this. It's bizarre.

More specifically, I've come to realize that what tends to happen when something falls in front of me is that my eyes will come into sharp, intense focus on the object, so the background basically gets blurred out, like unplugging or detaching from the rest of reality, and all that exists is the falling object situation. And then it kind of feels like time gets distorted. Things slow down, and I'm able to position myself to catch the object, all the while being super coordinated in a way that isn't normal. Why, I don't know, because let's face it, the stuff that's usually falling isn't anything worthwhile, requiring *that* level of sophistication to catch it. But again I can't control it. Falling objects, no matter what they are or what their value, all register the same to my subconscious – **an emergency.** No differentiation. So if ever there is something of true value that does drop in my presence I don't think I'll need to worry too much. It will be caught. o_O

All of which has led me to question my other unusual skills and abilities. It's in my theory that people who are being taken and programmed, whose brains are being effectively rewired, are going to find themselves with some unusual residual ″talents″ and special enhanced abilities that normal people don't have. And this needs to be mentioned, because it can be another marker that confirms something funny going on under the radar of our normal waking reality. So to illustrate, I'll list a sampling of my own abilities, and maybe the reader will be able to relate in some way:

- **Lightning fast reflexes,** as mentioned above. Most notably is the fact that **I have no control over it.** I can't override it. I happen to be right handed, but this goes for both hands, left included, which is interesting. Complete **ambidextrousness** in that regard. Something that reinforced to me that this skill is indeed indicative of "stuff" was the movie **"Mr. And Mrs. Smith"**…funny enough. I only had just watched this movie in September of 2007, about a bored married couple who soon discover that the other is a special ops agent. Brad Pitt's character is 99% convinced that his wife, played by Angelina Jolie, is an agent like himself, and he tests her by purposely dropping a wine bottle after refilling her glass. Without any conscious control, her left arm automatically shoots out and catches the bottle in mid-air without looking at it..…something that normal people don't do I guess. So now his character knows for certain, and the game is on. I only just watched this and was like "!!!" when I saw that - using "unconscious lightning fast reflexes" as the ultimate test to determine whether someone is an agent with training. Interesting. And then on a minor note, in the movie **"V For Vendetta"** the main character V, who happens to have "unusual blood properties" (unusual bloodline…) is the target of a government-sponsored experimentation program which results in him developing a new alter ego (split off multiple persona) and some pretty impressive skills – including heightened intellectual capabilities, and lightning fast reflexes.

  On a minor related note is that somewhere along the line in life I became ambidextrous. To the point where when I was waitressing at one particular job, my boss was watching me in action and said "Oh! You're a lefty!" pleased to find a fellow south paw. I looked at him like he was nuts. Sorry, I'm right handed. He promptly disagreed, and pointed out that I was working left handed. I hadn't even realized it. Another time I was playing Ms. Pac Man at a Laundromat and was intensely playing along, and doing very well…until I looked down and noticed that I had been working the joystick left handed the whole time. It felt like my right to me, there was no difference. But the second I became conscious of it I wasn't able to do it anymore and got eaten by a ghost. :D

- **Psychic.** Have demonstrated all of the following at some point in my life: telepathy with both humans and animals, precognition/premonitions, clairvoyance, remote viewing, telekinesis by accident once or twice, and some pretty extreme reality manipulation skills, as well as just overall knowing/sensing what's coming up down the pike in life so there's no surprises.

- **Audio recognition.** Can recognize a song within sometimes one note, backwards as well. Won a radio contest at 13 for being able to recognize just a couple of notes - played backwards - of the 60's song, "I Can't Help Myself." (The Four Tops.) I was the only one who called in. Nobody else recognized it. And when listening to my boyfriend play around on his guitar…for every chord and every group of notes or sound effects he does with his amp, I'm matching up in my mind what songs have used those exact chords and effects. It's impossible for me to just hear the notes in a neutral way without my mind mentally placing them to other songs, like a computer, matching things up. One time when pondering out loud my audio recognition abilities I received a prominent ear tone in my right ear at that exact moment, as if confirming it.

- **Unusually good memory.** The ability - more so when I was younger though – to remember names, dates, birthdays, addresses, driver's license/plates/vehicle info., phone numbers, and all manner of data and trivia and life happenings in general, including conversations. It really did stand out amongst the people I was around, and became known at one particular job I temped at in '97 as a file clerk. There were over 30 cabinet drawers with over a 100 files per drawer, as well as various "To Be Filed" baskets, and files strewn on people's desks and everywhere. But it soon became known that if you couldn't find a file in the drawer, just ask me…I'll know where it is off the top off my head. "It's in the basket……it's on so-and-so's desk……it's on top of the cabinet…" The psychologists would come up to me and toss out a patient's name, skeptical that I could possibly know……..and I always did. Once I proved myself enough times they began to kind of take it for granted.

This is also why I was such a great memorize and regurgitate robot machine in school. In high school I'd wait until the last day before a test – sometimes within only hours before - and then learn the entire two weeks' lesson…and get an A or B. Didn't pay attention to most of my Biology class for the second semester in 10th grade in Connecticut, and learned (and/or reviewed) five months of material in two days and got the highest score in the class on the final. Shocked even me. Took tests on books I never read…and passed. I'd recall details about the books that I heard during class discussion…in the background, while I did other "more important" things like read my own books that *I* wanted to read. ;) There is also the fact that I can remember my life going back to when I was a baby, mentioned back in Part II, which many (arrogant) people tend to scoff at, thinking that nobody can remember their lives before the age of five or so, merely because they can't. Which is total nonsense. (It never occurs to them that maybe it's because they have a low IQ and/or they are not a fully conscious and sentient being. This isn't to be confused with those people who are smart and sentient but have memory gaps in their childhood due to abuse and trauma. Those types are different from the arrogant scoffers who are most likely not as intelligent and sentient as they think they are, and believe that their lowered consciousness is the ultimate measuring gauge for how everybody else on the planet should be. !!) I have many memories of being a baby, toddler and small child, in diapers, in a crib, crawling, being fed in a highchair, playing with my various toys and my friends in our apartment complex, the TV programs that were on our TV, the music my dad would play, and then birthdays, Christmas, Halloween, etc. Just SO many memories (including the accidents, mishaps and foibles that are common to toddlers ;D), let alone memories when older.

And there was one freak incident that occurred in 1997 when I was 23 and worked as a waitress at one of my jobs – I was "on" all week and couldn't forget anything if I tried. I spent the entire week manically amped up getting hardly any sleep every night as if I was bi-polar or something, which I'm not. I could remember every last little thing that every table I'd waited on from the Sunday before had ordered…then realized I could remember everything in general about everything that had happened all week. It was maddening, and I found myself sitting on the floor of the living room at 2:30 in the morning with my roommates, swigging cheap wine straight from the bottle trying to come down to a normal level so I could get some sleep and stop the craziness.

Recently I read an internet article about people who have the rare situation of being unable to forget anything that happens to them or anything they encounter in life, and various things described in the article applied to things I've experienced in my own life. My one week of being "on" 24/7 gave me the firsthand insight into what they mean when they say it's a burden to have, not something enjoyable. It's not fun at all. Luckily my extreme "on" situation did go away after that one week, although my general detail recollection remained as prominent as ever. Another issue with this ability is that it really magnifies all the people around you in life who are functioning in a half asleep "auto pilot" state, not paying attention or remembering most of what happens to them. When you remember so much, and in some cases, nearly everything, and most of the people around you don't, it just creates a glaring discrepancy. Especially when people try not to be held accountable for things that they did or said, because they themselves can barely remember the incident…..and they hope and assume you can't either.

- **Compartmentalized mind.** Have a compartmentalized mind that's demonstrated that it can do its own thing, and seems to operate separately, almost like a computer. In the past I've solved math stuff, or figured things out separately from the "main" brain, and then fed me the answer when it was done. This hasn't happened in a while though, but it has happened in the past, indicating the potential.

  Tying into the above two is the compartmentalized computer mind in general. I can get into a frame of mind where it's like another part of my brain takes over, like when playing video games, and is able to perform in a way that I can't in my normal state of consciousness. One time when I was 22 and at the movies with a friend named James in California, I was playing one of those Simon memory arcade games in the theater lobby…and I slipped into that compartmentalized state of mind and was able to keep going and going and going, perfectly playing back longer

> and longer strings of the color tones. My eyes were glazed over and I felt detached from myself, it was some other part of my brain that was playing. Finally James said, "Damn, girl…!!!" freaked out. Hearing that pulled me out of it, and I messed up and the game was over. I had made it up to about 25 tones, and if James hadn't said anything than who knows how long I could've gone on for.

So for myself, I noticed a definitive change, or at least another subtle level of change, occurring around the age of 22-23, in 1997. That's when my brain seemed to suddenly become "smarter" and much, MUCH more clear all the time, versus only during those select times when I needed it, like in school. I was reading the David Icke book, "Human Race Get Off Your Knees – The Lion Sleeps No More" and found a section getting into the functions of the left brain versus the right, and how humanity has become predominantly left brained, to our detriment. Some of the functions of the right brain that he noted included psychic abilities, improved memory function, and of course the control of the left hand. Even though I've read up before on the functions of right brain vs. left before I don't recall reading about memory function in association with the right brain, until his book. All these years I never made the connection between my bouts of heightened psychic abilities, the super memory function……the left handed ambidextrousness. But some of these seemingly separate phenomena I talk about here have **"right brain function/activity"** at their core, as I recently finally realized. I'm left brained dominant….but something apparently changed in my early 20s to heighten my right brain activity, leading to some of these anomalous talents I began displaying. The left hand ambidextrousness is the giveaway for it right there. In looking back on myself and my life at that time I can safely say that it wasn't anything that I was doing during my waking life that would have caused this change in me, and I can't imagine what I could have done anyway to cause such a large and recognizable level of change in brain function. So, thank you to David Icke for being the catalyst for my light bulb moment. I'm not good with pulling things together, at all, and making connections between subjects that seem separate. It's unfortunately one of the biggest problems I've faced in trying to figure out what's going on in my life.

But as noted in the bulleted list above, this new change in brain function came in handy at my jobs. As a waitress I could now take orders without having to write them down (which helps boost your tips ;) …that really seems to impress people because they feel like you're really paying attention to them). And in '99 when I was working at an executive suites, answering the switchboard for up to 48 different companies, it also paid off. There were times when I'd be answering multiple calls on the ten-line system using a headset (which very frequently meant having no less than ten calls at a time on hold that you'd have to work your way through, then put another ten on hold, and another…) and having every single four digit extension and every four digit voicemail memorized, along with the whereabouts of every person I answered phones for off the top off my head so I wouldn't have to stop and refer to my sheet. During one particular time period it was all that, PLUS simultaneously doing data entry side projects at the same time, typing (at that point) 65 wpm/10,000+ keystrokes per hour. So I'd be answering the calls with the headset on, having almost 50 four digit extensions and voicemails memorized, and all whereabouts known off the top of my head, and then after transferring the calls go back to cranking through the typing project like I was some perfectly performing computer robot. All for *$9.00* an hour. They sure got their money's worth with me. It's all very reminiscent though of my dad's "unusual" performance in the Navy of translating Morse code into type at something like 80-90+ wpm, among his other abilities which I get into in the Appendix.

I think people can be, and most likely are, tinkered with during their abductions and programming. Brains are upgraded – in my case, and maybe with others as well, their right brain hemisphere is amplified/stimulated because it serves some sort of purpose to them - people will find themselves with skills they didn't used to have, and some of it may even be the natural by-product of other things that they're being used for. As noted in the section regarding the after effects of being taken, finding oneself with increased psychic abilities out of nowhere lasting for up to several days in a row may be a natural by-product of the abduction process in itself, or as I recently realized, it could be an indicator of heightened right brain function.

Maybe there was a biological/nutritional reason for this, but I kind of doubt it. It just seems to me that I was upgraded. As with my dad, it was like the potential and foundation was there, and then maybe something came along and tweaked things a bit. Factoring in the roundabout indicators of abductions occurring in my early 20s (despite the fact that I didn't even know about the topic), and these "talents and skills" definitely seem suspect in retrospect. Although I've certainly met people who blow me out of the water in terms of what they're able to do – psychic abilities that are to be reckoned with, true photographic memory all the time, stuff that's pretty freaky and probably natural-born, not a result of having been tinkered with. But still, I mention this in case it maybe rings a bell for somebody reading this.

Untangling Disinformation

A big part of what it means to be an abductee is that people will often find themselves being given revelations about various things. They're shown things, told things, they're given predictions or prophesies, insights into who's who and what's what in this reality. But the bottom line is – what's real, and what's disinformation?

At this point I'm going to relay what happened when my brother Joe finally got to meet "them" face to face during an abduction that he was "allowed" to remember, which took place in October of 2001, and the revelations about us, and reality in general, that he passed on to me. He was given all sorts of information, not only for his own programming purposes I imagie, but also because maybe it was supposed to get to me too, to shape the outcome of where I wound up in life. For the actual details about what Joe saw during his abduction, see the section called "The World Underground" in Part I. And keep in mind that I'm not endorsing what he relayed. I think some of it is flat out crazy. But what I am going to do is just lay out there what he was told and shown, **for the benefit of anybody else out there who may have been told/shown something similar during their own abduction experiences.** Because from what I'm starting to realize, there may be MILAB targets out there being put through the psychological mind game ringer to REALLY screw with their sense of what's real versus what's illusion, and to give them the impression that their abductors are God-like powerhouses who control reality to an absolute degree, all in an effort to sabotage them in life and aid the negative programming attempts. So this could be useful for that reason. Then, I'll untangle what I feel is the disinformation and correct what's most likely been skewed. Disinformation is very clever in that it's usually closely intertwined around valid information. **It gets you nodding your head Yes, Yes, Yes to stuff that matches up to what you know, then takes a sudden turn way out into left field…with hopes that you'll just keep nodding your head Yes.** And as mentioned earlier in Part I, there's often double reverse psychology going on, requiring multiple unravelings of the material being presented.

At the time Joe told me all of this, I knew *nothing* about any of what he was talking about because it was 2001, and I was brand new to this entire thing. I had no way to verify any of it at the time, so all I could do was document it on my computer, which I diligently did, and put it all on the backburner. Only after the fact did I slowly start to find sources who were saying the same thing. And as mentioned previously, Joe did not read up on these subjects, and didn't go on the internet, so that's not where this information came from. But then again...he didn't have to seek the info out on the 'net or in books, because he wasn't a regular person, or a regular MILABS target. I mentioned in Part I that Joe was a probe/pawn of sorts, being piloted by "something else," and so by the end was acting as a direct extension of "them."

So with that in mind, these are some of the revelations that "they" told him during his 10/01 abduction. I don't get into everything he mentioned, as some of them are trivial or personal, but these are the major ones:

- This reality is "merging" with another, and because of what's happening, certain chunks of this reality have gone "missing." Those missing areas are being filled in with holographic projections. You can feel when you're in a holographic projection because the people and natural scenery will lack life energy.

- Holographic reality – known as **"The Program"** - is projected through an interconnected system of satellites, radio dishes and ELF waves, among other things. Basically anything that can be used to transmit signals.

- The media is all an illusory lie as well. He claims to have been shown some sort of disk thing that they can insert into something that has a crystal, I don't fully know or understand, but that's where our television, news, etc. comes from.

- Only about 3 out of 10 people are actually real anymore. About 30% of the population. If that. The rest are what you could call drones. Empty shells, background characters, puppets of the program. Black people however, usually are all still real. !! (he didn't explain why, just said this is what you'll see.)
- There are various secret factions of the government and they're at war with each other. i.e., they all have their different agendas and they're competing with each other. As far as the government we see – the President, Senate, Congress, etc…that's not who's really running things. They secret factions don't answer to them and have no regard for it at all. And yes, he said, the government was behind 9/11. duh.
- In about 5 years' time (putting the timeline at the end of 2006, into 2007, roughly), something is going to happen which is going to halt the way of life as we currently know it. Things will be locked down, [martial law?] and traveling will become so expensive and such a hassle with all the paperwork that's required for it that only the rich will be able to keep doing it. They're going to have militarized check points set up on the highways, with spike points for popping tires, and facilities set up underground for confiscating people's cars.

On a personal note, he went on to say that we both had implants that allow for "them" to see everything that we're seeing. Everything we do, say or think, can be - and is - monitored by "them." Then there was the bit about how we're not "from here" soul-wise – and they're not either. In fact, they're supposedly part of the same soul group as my brother and me. And that also, oddly enough, ties into why both of us look so young for our ages. He said we're not aging at the rate that others around us are. And supposedly, according to "them," my brother and I were abducted when we were kids by aliens. Stuff not related to "them" and their agenda. They are supposedly something separate……but they've been following us since we were kids. They have files on us containing every known possible detail about us, and he said they claimed that they've even manipulated events in our lives… **"to see what we'd do and how we'd react."** But then there was the tacked on bit that Oh, see, they like us, and are "on our side", and "do what they can to help" when they can. They're not supposed to, but they still sneak in help. (riiiiight.)

The part about manipulating events to see what we'd do and how we'd react sounded a bit ridiculous…at first. Until I stopped and remembered that I've seen them, whoever/whatever they are, orchestrate some pretty unbelievable synchronicities that involved actual reality manipulation. It's stuff that's so out there that I normally just don't think about it too deeply because the implications are pretty astounding. Long after I'd put aside this particular revelation onto the backburner, I began realizing on my own that it seems as if there may be a **blueprint** of sorts with regards to the lives of abductees. Whether military or alien, I started to possibly see patterns in the chaos, **as if our lives are being manipulated to go a certain way, with certain types of things happening at certain ages – almost as if we were being experimented on.** Only then I remembered Joe's revelation about "them" manipulating life events "to see what we'd do and how we'd react" and was like, HOLY SHIT. It's something I'm still looking into.

There was one big thing that Joe heavily tried to impress upon me as well, which was that **I needed to stop thinking about things so much.** Because see, the way the grid program of reality works is that when you think about things to much, it tries to beat you to the punch you could say, and manipulates events based on its anticipation of what you're thinking of doing.

So, if I had to untangle the things that I was told, I'd say the truth was that yes, something is changing in our reality – some call it "the Shift" if you will - and yes, holographic projection technology seems to be real, from what I've since discovered in the past few years. In fact, the (channeled) book "Bringers of the Dawn" by Barbara Marciniak says much of the same stuff Joe relayed. Joe had never read that though, and neither had I, until after the fact. And as far as chunks of reality gone missing – I wrestled with this one. At first I was willing to believe it, with a neutral, "sure, anything's possible" mindset. Then I put the whole thing out of my head for several years. By 2006 I found myself returning to this particular revelation with some shocked incredulity. I've come across information from various people over the past year that corroborates this. Large amounts of people in crowds with no auras. Entire areas that used to be real but which no longer emit life force energy. People seeing the white grid lines, of which I have some personal experience with as well. And so on. So now I've found myself returning to this revelation with particular interest.

Now, fake media generated from a disc – I know that what we're told *via* the media is a bunch of lies, but as far as the entire shebang being completely fake, people and all – no. Although I wouldn't doubt that the technology he was describing was real – discs, crystals, and who knows what, which all sounds very Atlantean-esque.

But what does seem to be valid is the concept of drones. People who are content to serve the program/system, and who try to keep the rest of us in place. To say that I've noticed people who weren't acting right is putting it mildly, and this started happening for me back in 2000, before my abductions were known to me. I've encountered people with big empty eyes, whose responses were not matching what was being said, people who could only talk about "normal" things, and who literally, shut down when something woo-woo was said, and people who were just acting reeeeaally off in general. So yeah, this part has validity, in my opinion.

9/11 being staged? Absolutely. The government not being what we're told it is? Check. Secret factions? Yup. At war with each other? I'm sure. So that all seems to be true.

However, the part about not thinking about things too much because of the way "the program" works was actually where the brunt of the most potentially damaging disinfo. was. It was designed to get my reality creation abilities nipped in the bud, pronto. I've consistently been able to manifest what I need in life, going way back to when I didn't even know about such concepts. So imagine what would happen should I begin trying to turn my mind off and "not think too much." As mentioned earlier in this write up, **they need people to not think.** They need people who are asleep and unaware, drifting through life on autopilot. People who "think too much" are a dangerous thing.

As far as the prediction about five years' time – guess we'll just have to wait and see. The thing about this one is that myself and others that I know through a message board forum have felt some definitive changes or shifts you could say over the past year or so. We feel like we've shifted onto a different timeline now…several times in fact. Some of us even have very clear knowing/memories that we are repeating ourselves as if in a time loop of sorts, myself included…and I'm not talking about déjà vu either. So for me I'm not worried about this predicted future because the bottom line is, the future is open, can change, and has already *been* changed on multiple occasions since 2001. **There are many open probabilities…a factor that was conveniently**

left out of this "prediction." OF course. ;) They don't tell you things like that, remember.

And while I don't doubt the both of us were implanted, the fact that I was told how my every action and thought could be heard and seen by "them" was said (in my opinion) in the hopes of driving me into self conscious, fearful paranoia…not because it was just some useful tidbit to know. Luckily, I didn't go down that route, and decided that I didn't care what they were seeing/hearing. Which ties into one of the biggest underlying reasons for telling me any of this stuff in the first place: To break me psychologically, and **get me to choose a very dark path as a result of what I now knew.** Fake media. Fake people. Fake reality. Nothing's real! Have a psychological meltdown! There's no point in being normal and mainstream anymore, right? Just go crazy and be a sociopathic criminal, like Joe. Close myself off to people, and hate them all, use them and exploit them, the way he did. And if everything I did or thought was known to "them," and they'd been snagging me and watching me my whole life, then shrink up in paranoid, self conscious fear. Be a helpless victim. All the while believing that these guys were really the good guys, who "help when they can" and are part of the same soul group as us. ;)

When I was talking about this topic to a male abductee over the internet, he said that their attempts to psychologically destroy him with these same tactics only **backfired.** I'd said the same thing about my own situation, so it was funny to hear him say that. And what we mean by backfire is that instead of converting us into angry/paranoid/hateful/fearful tools that serve the dark stuff, it backfired, and succeeded in just making us all that more aware, and switching us over to the opposite direction of what was intended. But as my very aware boyfriend has noted on many occasions, they always take a risk when they make the decision to fully go after someone. There's a high probability that they will succeed and the target will be converted/absorbed/taken down….but there's always the chance that it'll blow up in their faces. Sometimes in a *major* way. Then again….it could all be more layers of games within games, as already mentioned earlier in the book. ;) Who really knows what's actually going on here.

Several months after Joe relayed these revelations, I had a "dream" where I was shown what reality would be like without "The Program" in place. It scared the shit out of me, is all I can say. It was brief, but I heard a male human voice somewhere off to the side or behind me, narrating, but I couldn't see him. Then I found myself…hovering in an empty void of total nothingness, my feet hanging in mid-air, accompanied by the most intense feeling of panic and anxiety I've probably ever felt. It's really hard to explain, but I'd have to say it really did actually maybe feel like how a void in reality might feel. **"THIS is what it's like without 'the program"** I was told. Kind of like, Do you get it now? Without fake reality this is what you'd have. Not very nice, is it?

I woke from that experience in a full panic, gasping for breath, nerves on end, really messed up. Whether somebody was really showing me something valid, just as a useful and informative FYI, or whether it was all manipulative mind control games designed to break me psychologically, I can only guess. I actually suspect it could be a mix of both. If nothing else I can say that people don't just have dreams like that. That was no normal "dream" by any means and for me proves something is amiss.

But this does make me wonder though how many other abductees are being targeted in a similar fashion, given revelations and insights, whether true or not, which are designed to try to derail them in life. If anybody out there experiences anything even remotely similar to what I went through while up in Portland, the only thing I can suggest is to not flip out. **Keep your wits about you, and just put whatever you're told or shown on the backburner until a later date when you can get more information and corroboration.** That's all you can do. You can't just automatically believe it and take it at face value, no matter what flashy theatrics they throw at you. What I've discovered is "they" have a lot of abilities, sure. But what's real, and what isn't? The thing to always keep in mind too is **the spiritual bigger picture.** The stuff they don't tell you about are higher positive forces and your own Higher Self. When I discovered that in 2003 it was like I gained a whole spiritual arsenal against them. That's when *everything* changed. So it's an absolute must to keep that aspect of it all at the forefront of your mind.

Multiple Personalities vs. "Multiple Personas"

Before researching heavily into the subject of mind control, I independently came up with the idea of what I call "multiple personas," which differs from the concept of multiple personality disorder. In the case of MPD (or Disassociative Identity Disorder, DID, as it's now called) we understand it as being a situation of the person having separate, individual fractured personalities, sometimes having their own unique names, genders, ages, personalities, speech patterns, mannerisms, etc., and accompanying black out periods when personalities are flip flopping back and forth. It's wild stuff. And I can't say I've ever known anybody personally who had this problem to that severe of an extent - although I have on the other hand, witnessed what I have deemed **multiple personas**. It's a much milder form of being a full on split personality, but it's not to be confused with being a multi-dimensional person. If you're real you're not going to be a one dimensional cardboard cut out after all. You're going to exhibit different moods, different sides of yourself as you navigate your way through life playing your various roles. You're a mom, a friend, a wife and lover, a neighbor, a daughter. Somebody's dad, brother, son, boss, husband. You can't be one way to everybody, and that's very normal and totally understandable.

But what I'm talking about is having an **almost split personality**. A situation where the mood swings are more like severe personality swings, but the person in question still answers to their name and **never loses awareness of their core self,** versus multiple personality disorder where a person may answer to a different name, thinking they are actually somebody else. My theory is that in the case of multiple personas there could be one of a couple of things happening: 1) the mind control target has had their mind split/fractured during programming sessions, which leaves them with personality instability in their waking life that in turn, can cause their personality to shift around, yet…they never *quite* make the full flip over into a compartmentalized alter, losing the sense of who they are. It stops just short of that, leaving the person a fully functioning member of society, with (relatively…) little suspicious behavior that would be noticed by anybody. Or 2) it's a situation where programming to fracture the mind has only been done on a mild, surface level.

I figured some this out on my own by 1999-2000 or so, after having experienced my mom's rapid and unstable persona switches as a teen, as well as hearing my brother's story, and then observing my then-boyfriend Steve, as well as my own self, only to stumble onto corroborating data several years later in an article by Gunther

Rassbacher that backed up the tentative theory. From the online article **"Operation Open Eyes: Mind Control in America – Five Easy Steps to Create a Manchurian Candidate"** by Rassbacher (bolded words my own emphasis):

> "The next step is Level 3 hypnosis, where the subject will become an **"overwrite"** upon his own personality. An "overwrite" is a new identity or personality. **It is similar to having multiple personalities, except the original personality is repressed or hidden under the "overwrite"** and will not surface for a set period of time which is determined by the Programmer.
>
> **The "overwrite" is not a complete new identity….**"

While I have yet to know somebody who exhibited individualized split personalities to a severe extent, I have on the other hand, witnessed the concept of multiple personas, or maybe an **overwrite,** as it's called in the above excerpt. I have also seen these people **assign an alternate moniker to themselves that they like to occasionally go by,** and sometimes would use that name in lieu of their given name…but yet, while still retaining full memory and recognition of their real self. (have also read of a number of famous people that I suspect of being mind controlled who do this as well, casually talking about their various alter egos who have their own names.)

My brother had his alter-ego, "Shawn Hill", and mentioned a couple of incidents back when he lived in Connecticut where petty criminal stuff happened, and it seemed like he probably did it – as Shawn Hill - buuuut…he couldn't remember doing it…necessarily. It seemed like he had a vague recollection of being there and doing those things, but, it was so hazy…… Talking to him on the phone back in 1998 or 1999, he told me that he didn't want to be called Joe anymore. He wanted to be called Shawn. His new name was Shawn Hill. I laughed nervously, like, Ohhh-kay. "Well, I'm not going to call you Shawn. You're Joe to me. Your name is Joe." His whole demeanor during that call was short and brusque, and he was even less amused by my refusal to acknowledge this "overwrite" persona named Shawn Hill. But notice that he never lost awareness of Joe. Even though he was in Shawn Hill character, he still knew full well who Joe was, and Joe, when being Joe, was fully aware that there was this "Shawn Hill" running around doing things he could only vaguely remember. That's not true multiple personality disorder. But it's definitely *something*. And multiple personas, or personality overwrites, seems like a good way of explaining it.

And my ex-boyfriend that I mentioned (whose dad happened to be former NSA), also had an alternate name that he'd occasionally use for himself, "Scott." When we were out in public he'd give his name as Scott. It never struck me as being anything too weird, just some funny thing he liked to do. But, then there was the fact that he experienced memory black outs where entire chunks of things he did, conversations he'd had, were gone. It was like he may as well have never done those things. And then the most telling incident that I witnessed with him occurred three years into the relationship (when the relationship was dead anyway) and tipped me off that there was an issue, and it was when **he split off in mid-conversation**. One second we were having a light hearted exchange, the next…his face changed, went blank. Not only did he not remember what he'd just said a second earlier, but he completely denied even having the entire conversation we'd just been having. Even me rehashing the entire conversation "Okay, you said this, then I said that, then you said this then I said that…!" did nothing to jog his memory. I didn't react well to it all, let's just put it that way. When I had to ask him, "What…do you have like, *multiple personalities* or something?!?" then I kind of knew. If you even have to ask that question, then it means *somethin'* is going on.

Yet, I don't believe these incidents can be classified as full fledged multiple personality disorder, because it wasn't like I would come home one day and try to talk to my brother, or then-boyfriend, only to have them pull a crazy and tell me "Joe isn't here right now..." Or "Who's Steve?? I'm Scott…I don't know who Steve is…." meanwhile, as they believe they really are their alter-ego. You hear about that sort of thing happening to people though.

Later on after I moved my brother out to California to come live with me and Steve, we were talking about his Joe/Shawn thing, and I mentioned my suspicions to him about Steve. He responded with a big grin and said, "Yeah, you didn't know that? I noticed it the first week I was here!"

!!!

Yes, I guess I did miss the signs, what can I say. Joe claimed that he watched Steve switch during one of their conversations – Steve's expression changed, like he was suddenly switching personalities, or "coming to"…and Joe could tell that Steve didn't recognize what was going on. Supposedly Steve had an "oh shit…" look on his face, and just played it off so as to not attract attention to the situation. If I myself hadn't witnessed Steve switching from one second to the next that one time, then I would have had skepticism when hearing this.

My own situation is a weird one. Back in 1996, when I was 21-22, long before I knew that I was an abductee and had *definitely* never heard of government/military abductions and the subject of mind control, I awoke one morning and clearly heard in my mind a male voice saying with big eye rolling disdainful sarcasm, **"You have so many personalities you can't even keep up."**

!!! What??!? I thought to myself. Where did *that* come from? It couldn't be a dream – for starters there were no visuals, just a male voice. And why would I dream something like that anyway? I wondered. It wasn't true. So it didn't make much sense. At this point in time in my life I of course know about mind control programming, split off personas, MILABS and abductions, the human males that are involved in mine, and the way in which they sound (almost always with that same disdainful sarcasm).

Then there was another REALLY anomalous incident that happened in 2002. I'll reprint the incident from my log book. Excuse the language, but, this is exactly what went through my mind, and there's no way to censor that in order to appease sensitive types and yet still accurately represent what happened. If anything, the cussing and the attitude is the exact point I'm trying to make here, as you'll see:

> November 4, 2002
>
> I was standing at the printer [at work] waiting for my stuff to come off and I was staring out the window at the blue sky and the sunny day and the trees. Happened to direct my attention back inside around the office itself. Next thing I know, I temporarily "woke up." Either that, or some sort of program kicked in prematurely that wasn't supposed to. I felt like I emerged from a zombie-like state of trance tolerance, where normally I walk around in an amnesia-like state, tolerating having to work and pay bills and come to this place called C_______ Management, day in and day out, and be with these people, doing the job that I do, putting up with the crap I do.

> All that changed. The amnesia lifted, and I had this realization about **WHO I AM.** And I was looking around the office thinking, **"WHAT THE FUCK AM I DOING HERE??!?!!?"** It wasn't like I couldn't remember who I was, or where I was, or why I was there. It was quite the opposite, in fact. I knew EXACTLY who I was, and I was like, oh my GOD…..what the FUCK am I doing ***HERE?!!?!?*** Like, we're talking about *ME* here!!!!! ***ME!!!!!!!!*** What am ***I*** doing ***HERE?!?!?!?!?*** It's not like I didn't recognize the place. I knew it was C_____. I knew it was my work. I just couldn't believe that I was willingly coming here every day wasting 8 hours of my life, every day, HERE. At THIS place. It was almost like, "Oh, while you were sleeping, this is what you've been doing with yourself….." That whole, **"While you were sleeping" deal**. And when I realized what I'd been doing with myself, I was shocked and appalled and horrified.
>
> And then I slipped back under the water, and the feeling was gone. All I had left was the intellectual knowing/memory that it had happened, but the mindset itself, that personality, was gone."

What's not mentioned in my log book entry is what would have happened had this realization about WHO I AM not gone away, had it not slipped back under the waves. The personality was aggressive, and had zero tolerance for the mainstream world. None, period. It would not have stayed at work, and it would not have continued living a normal life….going home to the apartment, laying around with the boyfriend, maybe reading, doing some article writing, doing internet research, watching a movie, sleeping, eating, paying bills, and more work at the stupid $10 an hour job. Repeat every day, on and on. Oh no, I don't think so. ;) Not hardly. Now, it wouldn't have been violent, I didn't get that feeling, but it wouldn't have been able to tolerate doing *any* aspect of the mainstream normal life that we all do every day.

There are two main explanations for what happened here. The first, which is the one I wanted it to be, is that this "awakening" was spiritual in nature, the spiritual/incarnation amnesia lifting and suddenly remembering, if only for one brief shining moment in time, "WHO I AM."

Of course that doesn't explain the cussing and negative, male, aggressive attitude. That personality was anything but spiritual. I've connected to my higher self, and let's just say that the discrepancy between that personality which emerged accidentally while I was at work, and my Higher Self's emotionally detached, yet totally empathetic, wise and understanding nature is pretty glaring. It's night and day.

So, after several years of clinging on to the idea that this accidental personality emergence was the spiritual veil lifting, as pleasant and fluffy as that sounds, I've had to settle on it being an alternate, compartmentalized multiple persona that somehow, someway, was triggered and popped out when it shouldn't have. And this alter was just totally negative, that's all I can say. Which is another telltale sign of it being an alter. Some alters will be childlike, others will be sex kittens. Some will be angry, aggressive one dimensional "rage holders." This seemed to be something akin to the latter.

Several years after this incident I was reading the works of several mind control women who've written about their stories, describing their various alters. One of them in particular, Kathleen Sullivan, author of "Unshackled," supposedly had several very aggressive male personas that were created to do down and dirty work, high stress assignments for her handler "thems." These guy alters were all aggressive business, designed and trained to wield guns and take people out and live in a world that was completely removed from her normal every day core self who went to work, earned money, paid her bills, watched TV, hung with her husband, cleaned her house, etc. I'm not saying that's what my own alter was created for, if it even was an alter to begin with, but it felt very aggressive, male, no-nonsense, and negatively fueled. I've pendulum dowsed it and got each time that this personality emergence was a compartmentalized alter popping out, not spiritual amnesia lifting. In fact, the whole, "Who I Am" thing wouldn't even be an accurate description to describe the mindset, it was more like another side of me emerging that's normally dormant.

I've never been like Joe or Steve, and have never flipped and done 180s as quickly as my mom could and did (with her it was like a thundercloud would descend out of nowhere, and she would just switch, boom, from one moment to the next, then later on act like it hadn't happened…) and I don't have "two me's" and experience black out periods like my dad does. But unfortunately as the years have gone on I've noticed what I consider to be persona instability. And I don't like it. I feel like there are multiple sides of me, who have multiple conflicting views and attitudes and end up contradicting each other. I can feel myself shifting around – but is it just normal mood shifting? I don't know. There's never a complete amnesiac break. Even with the above mentioned incident at work in 2002 I still knew who and where I was. But I've never formally adopted an alternate first name for myself for use in day-to-day waking life, the way programmed multiples often will, and in fact I'm adamantly against that. I'm Carissa. Period. I won't even tolerate a nickname, even when people have tried to give me one. And I've never experienced black out periods, nor have I ever been confronted with a conversation or situation where I was apparently there, but yet, have no memory of it. Thankfully. That to me is where the line is drawn. Up until that point there's a suspicious issue occurring, but it's not serious. When you cross over into black out periods, forgetting things you've done and using alternate names, then you're in trouble.

My own situation is apart from my family, because I've never carried on the way they have, taking things to that extent. I think a person's frequency determines how unstable they'll behave. Both of my parents had very low frequencies, as did my brother – either emotionally volatile, and/or extremely depressed and angry - so their flip flopping issues were QUITE noticeable. On the other hand, Steve always tried to be as emotionally neutral, stable and balanced as possible (reflected by his astrological configuration of being a double Libra, sun *and* moon), so quite fittingly, his problems went relatively unnoticed.

But the reason that this can go undetected for so long with some people is because the key lies in its **subtlety**. People are looking for the BIG and DRAMATIC and EXAGGERATED, the way it goes in the movies. But real life isn't going to be like the movie "Sybil."

I'm willing to bet the issue of multiple personas as a side effect of mind control programming is more common in society then we think. When you take into consideration how many military and government agency personnel there are out there, both active and retired…and their families…as well as the number of Hollyweird performers and entertainers, models, singers and television personalities; politicians, corporate big wigs, political authors and other high profile people with huge influence; inmates, juvenile throwaways, sex industry workers and runaways; New Age and religious gurus, and the alternative health, healing and metaphysics arena…that's a hell of a lot of people. And those are all the prime target candidates, according to the research. **Main targets are people who are front and center of all major areas in our society that would serve to distract us and/or steer us down the wrong path, as well as society's throwaways, rejects and lost souls who are exploited simply because they *can* be.** However, many of these people still need to function in society and have their double lives, which means their programming would need to be relatively seamless. So **subtly** is imperative, as mentioned. Which means most of the time, things will go undetected and most of society will continue to remain unaware that this is happening.

The Hyperdimensional and Paranormal Phenomena

An important characteristic of someone who is an abductee is the strange hyperdimensional markers, or fingerprints, that become a part of their life: Ear tones/ringings, synchronicities, deja vus, number sightings, and so on. Ear tones/ringings usually tie in to implants and monitoring, deja vus seem to tie in to timeline manipulation (which I don't get into here, but I do cover on my website), and synchronicities and number sightings can either be a message conveyed to you from something higher, or can also signify timelines being changed around. Very few sources make mention of any of these things, yet, when you start hanging around on the internet you see these things mentioned repeatedly. I write in depth on my website about it all, but here's the overview for those who haven't read it, with some new information not included on the website version:

Number Sightings

This is probably *the* most common occurrence in an abductee's life, next to ear tones/ringings. When you notice that certain numbers keep appearing to you on the clock, various electronic items, or on stuff that come your way in life, then it usually means something. The more farfetched and unusual the occurrence, then the more meaningful it probably is. I've documented my own number sightings in depth in order to get to the bottom of what the numbers meant for me, as noted on my website, and I highly recommend that others do that if they have this happening. It's extremely useful. The only way to get to the bottom of what a number sequence means for you is by logging the instances of when it happens.

For me, the main numbers that have followed me around for the longest time have been **119, 948**, and **141.** 119, for my birthday, 11/9. 9:48, for the time I was born. And 141…well, it wasn't originally my number, but it transferred over to me. But more on that in a moment. In 2003, as my awareness grew, the number sightings branched out to include repeating numbers such as **111, 222, 333, 444, 555, 1111,** etc., sequence numbers such as **123, 234** and **1234**, and even more unusual yet meaningful numbers such as **1133, 1010** and **1212.**

So, about the whole 141 transfer thing: 141 had been my brother's personal number, something that supposedly followed him around. With Joe it was always "141 this" and "141 that", although to be honest, I never saw any proof of this, I just took his word for it that it was happening. I myself didn't have numbers that followed me around like that. However, once I moved up to Portland, Oregon in November 2001, that started to change. My time in Portland was an unusual experience, something that was discouraged via obstacles and problems set in my path to prevent me from going, but stubborn and persistent me pushed right past them, more determined than ever, and I went anyway. And not too long after arriving in Portland where I was roommates with my brother, I began to notice that I was seeing **11:09** an awful lot on the clocks. I'd get the urge to glance at my digital alarm clock at home or at the computer clock at work right when it was 11:09. My birthday is 11/9, so the number meant something to me. Coincidentally, before starting to see these numbers in Portland, I'd recently begun assigning the numbers 119 and 948 to myself, usually within passwords and stuff. So I'd consciously reached out to those numbers you could say, which plays a big part in how it can possibly start, I think.

Then the night Joe was arrested in Portland, caught breaking into a building with stolen items on him from a previous burglary, everything changed. It's a long story, which I won't get into here, but that was the night that 141 transferred over to me. Five minutes before the cops showed up with my brother in the back of their car I got another **11:09** on the clock. It literally made me stop in my tracks, frozen in place for a few seconds realizing "Okay….this isn't right…something is happening…" Then the doorbell rang. How right I was.

Almost an hour an a half later when they were asking me to sign a warrant for them to search my belongings (since I roomed with him and was considered equally as guilty until proven innocent) I had to put the date and time on the paperwork. I glanced at the clock, which said **12:21.** A mirror number, the same backwards and forward. Not only that, but my full given name adds up to 84 in numerology, and 8+4 = **12**. Joe's adds up to **21.** ;) Pretty clever.

"But wait…there's more!" 1221 also happens to break down to:

1 2+2 1
1 4 1

When the cops were finally leaving I glanced at the clock for only the third time that evening. And it was **1:41** a.m. exactly. The cops were leaving at 1:41, with my brother in tow, but the fun had only just begun.

141, and the other two numbers, came up repeatedly throughout the course of that insane weekend. Every time I had the urge to glance at the clock that weekend it was 10:41, 11:41, 1:41, 11:09, 9:48, or some combination, such as 4:11, 10:14, 11:14, 1:14, 11:19 or 9:11. Even when I had the urge to look at my mileage odometer. I was sitting in my car in the Rite Aid parking lot intensely contemplating whether to bail my brother out of jail – yet again – then I had the urge to glance at the odometer, something I rarely pay any attention to. And it just so happened to be at exactly 119,974. My birthday is 11/9/1974. Close enough for horseshoes. It was absolutely out of control, and at the time I had the feeling that there was a tug of war going on between 119 and 141. 119, my number, me, and 141, my brother's number, him, who was dragging me down in life and who I was trying to make a break from.

141 has been a regular part of my life ever since that weekend, four years ago. I would also come to discover that 141 is embedded within my brother's birthday. 1/31/1981. Breaking it down numerology style, which reduces numbers down to single digits, we get:

1
3 + 1 = **4**
1 + 9 + 8 + 1 = 19 (= 10 = **1**)

Hyperdimensional fingerprints?

In my own log book I would document the date and time of my number sightings – often, the time in itself IS the number sighting, since I'd have urges to keep looking at the clock at key moments – as well as noting anything that I was doing at the time of the number occurrence. Where was I, what was I doing, who was I talking to and what about (if applicable), and so on. Then after you document enough number sighting incidents, along with any other surrounding corresponding phenomenon, you can begin to decipher what everything means. It's also highly recommended to learn the basics of numerology and what the common symbolic/esoteric meanings are behind numbers. What I've discovered is that most things have multiple layers. There is probably a reason why those specific numbers were picked for you in the first place, and that's where having a basic understanding of the language of numbers comes in handy, to decipher the next layer of it all.

Sometimes repeatedly getting a number sequence can be a warning of negative meddling, interference…abductions coming up very soon. Other times it may be a sign that something has been tinkered with on the timeline, good or bad. A lot of new age non-abductee spiritual types believe that number sightings are just the universe's way of trying to get your attention and wake you up. And that could very well be the case for them. For me, I just know that when I'm doing exceptionally good in life and/or averting negative interference, I'll get 11:33, 9:48, 10:10, 11:11 and so on. (9:48 being specific for me personally.) But overall there is no across-the-board explanation that I can offer up for what number sightings mean – **numbers will usually be tailored to an individual**, from what I've been learning. I expand more on the idea of numbers on my website: **http://www.in2worlds.net/numbersightings**

However…and there is always the exception to everything…I just discovered while reading a book about UFO researcher Barbara Bartholic that we both have had instances of receiving the same particular numbers – **69**. I experienced my 6 and 9 sightings mostly during a very specific time period in my life – during the four months when I worked for what I nicknamed "The Illuminati Hotel" here in Virginia, mentioned earlier in the "Manipulated Jobs" section. And as Barbara knew, and as I myself discovered thanks to her work, the 69's can be a sign of alien/MILABS at work. For instance, when I worked at the hotel I was assigned locker #**69**. I also began receiving a lot of

6:09's on the clock and in life in general, to the point where it became noticeable, although I had no idea what it meant at the time. So if it wasn't for Barbara's book I would never have gotten the answer to this random piece of the puzzle that was sitting on the back burner all this time. She was the first source that I've come across to even delve into the subject of number sightings in relation to abductions, and she relays in her book all the synchronistic, uncanny ways in which 69's appeared to her in life.

Getting the 69's stopped only when I quit the hotel after four months. And only when I started writing this book back in 2006, and was reading the Barbara B. book and looking back at my time spent at the "Illuminati hotel" the 69 sightings resume once again. For instance, in the middle of writing this book my boyfriend and I were driving past the "Illuminati hotel" one afternoon, about to make a right hand turn at the intersection near where the front entrance is when I noticed that the last four digits on the license plate of the car in front of us was…………..**6169.** That used to be the log in/clock in code for me at the hotel. The odds of the car in front of me displaying my old log in code and being in front of me at the exact moment when passing by the hotel are astronomical. I also began receiving **6:09** and **6:19** again on the clocks while writing this book, corresponding with some very bizarre alien dreams with MILABS programming, and possible soul abduction attempts where things were kicked up a few notches and became much more overt.

The summary of what I got (via pendulum dowsing) is that "something" was doing some very wacky things to the people who worked at that hotel, unknown to them. My own experiences showed me something was amiss. And I did primarily begin receiving the "MILAB 69's" after working there, exactly as Barbara B. describes. (I only had one 69 indicator before that, back in Florida in 2002, as noted in Part II.) So when I saw Barbara B. mentioning her 6's and 9's, and saw that she connected it to MILABS/aliens abductions, I about fell out of my chair. **http://www.in2worlds.net/numbersightings.**

Ear tones

Again, another one of the big things that tend to happen to abductees. From my website: (**http://www.in2worlds.net/eartonesringings**):

"'Ear tones' are intermittent short lived tones, occurring in either ear, which many people seem to experience. Often times they are preluded by a pronounced **muting effect**, where the sound in the room seems to abruptly shut out as the tone then fades in. So it's a tone that fades in, goes on for a bit, then fades back out. But it's not to be confused with tinnitus, the chronic condition of damaged eardrums where one's ear(s) constantly ring or hum (as I understand it). Go to this link for **http://montalk.net/eartone.mp3** for a simulation of what a muting followed by an ear tone ringing sounds like. This was created by my boyfriend, and it's so accurate that it's kind of scary. !!

Ear tones can also leave **residual after effects.** For me, I've experienced a burning **"fried"** feeling in my ears on several occasions when they've occurred, much like I'd been chatting on a cell phone for several hours. Sometimes the tone itself causes physical discomfort in the ear, making one cringe. Related to this, I've experienced something akin to a **"tuning fork,"** where the sound was coming from just outside my ear and sounded identical to a tuning fork. It felt like I was literally being **"gonged"** and caused dizziness and disorientation for a few seconds afterwards.

Other related aspects to ear ringings are ear **clickings, "thwumpings,"** (for lack of a better way to describe it) and **muted pressure without a tone.**

"Clickings" are just that: clicking noises that seem to come from deep within the ear. My boyfriend has experienced this, which is how I heard about it, and has proven for himself that it's not natural or some biological malfunction. Often times these clickings occur when he's not consciously focused…yet they stop as soon as he focuses in on them.

"Thwumpings" feel very similar to the effect of having fingers flicked in front of your ears according to those I know who have described it to me.

The "muted pressure" is when the sound goes mute in an ear, accompanied by a pressure that usually feels quite uncomfortable. But no ringing or tone follows. This actually seems to be one new mode of operation within my own ear tone adventures, interestingly enough. ;) Since putting this write up out there on the 'net, not only are some of my ear tones now much fainter and shorter than they ever used to be, but there's also this new muted pressure thing as well. Another abductee I know who experiences the tones has recently noticed this "change in operations" as well.

And a new one that a reader just informed me about are ear tones that sound like **"Morse code."** To quote from her email (with permission): "….These are very very frequent for me, and in fact if I listen quietly enough, I can hear it running deep in the background most of the time. It is a series of two different notes or positive/negative sounds…tone semitone tone, in varying lengths of short and long. Morse code is the only thing I can liken it to…" I thought this was interesting enough to be worth mentioning, in case anybody else reading this also experiences it.

But the most important factor, which can't be stressed enough, is the **uncanny synchronistic timing** of ear tones. They often happen during key moments, in conjunction with a specific comment said by somebody, or maybe a number sighting, or a déjà vu. It is this aspect of ear tones that really got my attention and proved to me that they weren't a natural, random biological happening with some scientific explanation.

I've had sporatic ear tones throughout my life, but the issue became so prevalent during 2002, due to what I was involved with in life, that I created an entire section of my log book devoted solely to documenting it. The log book contained the following information, if possible:

- **The date and exact time** the tone happened;
- **Which ear** it occurred in;
- **What the tone sounded like** (high, low, strong, faint, short in duration or long; tuning fork, hum, muting pressure, etc.);
- **What physical after effects** there were, if any;
- What exactly I was doing/saying at the time it happened. **What was I thinking about? Who was I talking to? Where was I?**

Through documenting this information, I was able to determine over enough time that these ear tones are definitely not random, nor the result of a natural, biological problem with my ears, and most definitely did point to some external situation happening. I was also able to determine that there was a difference in meaning for right ear versus left ear. For me, the left ear has been negative, usually indicating straight up monitoring, or warning me that something is "off" about a person or situation, while the right was positive, sometimes seeming to confirm or reaffirm something I'm thinking or reading. In fact I just came across a reference to ear tones in the book

"Masquerade Party at Secret Canyon" by Jeannine Marie Steiner. The book is one psychic woman's personal experiences into the realm of abductions, mind control, and MILAB harassment, and on page 73 she says:

> "On my way back to Ventura, I drove past Pt. Mugu Naval Base. Stopping at the red traffic light, suddenly, in my left ear I got a very loud ringing noise. To a psychic that's a strong warning that means something is very, very wrong. It means red alert. (Ringing in the left ear is a warning and ringing right ear is positive.)

That was interesting to find someone else noting the same thing I've experienced….and who has independently come to the same conclusion as myself as to the meaning of left ear vs. right.

The more you log, the more you can determine for yourself what may be happening with you and what it means. It's all about logging your stuff – I can't stress it enough. Documenting things focuses your awareness, and in doing so you gain more power over your life.

Now, if you can rule out Tinnitus, and you've definitely noted a pattern and meaningful synchronistic timing to your ear tones, then the culprit behind it all might be monitoring, and/or implants. Abductees usually have implants – it's practically a given, for tracking and monitoring purpose. Many times these implants are located deep within their ears (among other areas, such as the base of the skull/cerebellum area, or embedded up in the nose). Implants are used for monitoring and behavior/thought pattern alteration – aka programming. So in this regard, it makes sense why so many of these ear tones occur while having "unusual" thoughts about the "weird" stuff, talking to certain people, or during key times and dates. (Some recent ear tone happenings occurred within a day or two of a conflict erupting with somebody around me in life. I experienced three ear tones in my left ear within a 24 hour period between December 1-2, 2007, which is very unusual. That means something is up on the personal front. And by December 3-4 I was involved in a "hiccup" misunderstanding between myself and a guy that my boyfriend and I have known since about 2005, which had the potential to result in a permanent parting of the ways on negative terms with burnt bridges. In other words: timeline split. This guy is an abductee who runs several websites about UFO/abduction/alien researchers…as well as promoting my website on his various websites, which gives me a lot of traffic, and is much appreciated. And he also happens to be the target of some heavy duty harassment himself, and it's not the first time that I've gotten ear tones revolving around him. VERY interesting, to say the least. But this is why logging my ear tone occurrences was vital – only after the fact could I look back and see what happened around the time that I got them. In this instance it seemed quite clear why the sudden monitoring going on within a day of our weird misunderstanding and near parting of the ways.)

Another explanation that has been offered up is that the monitoring itself is silent and does not create an audible noise; instead, ear ringings are the body's own **self-generated mechanism** for alerting you that you're being monitored/interfered with. In that case, "right ear" versus "left ear" are actually the body's own **self designated code** to distinguish the different sources and intent behind the monitoring. Both theories make sense to me, and I tend to think both can be happening, depending on the situation. For instance: the ear tones which leave an ear feeling hot and "fried" and the tuning fork hum "gongs" which cause disorientation and dizziness could be a result from the actual physical implant – or even something in a neighboring realm affecting me. And the more benign, painless tones could be the body's own self-generated warning system. And as mentioned earlier, what two years of logging has shown me for my personal situation is that left ear tones are usually more "negative" in nature. They occur typically when other abduction weirdness is going on, if I'm speaking with somebody "unusual," or when somebody says something very pointed and strange to me. My right ear tones are often in relation to specific thoughts I'm thinking or important ideas I'm reading. Sometimes they almost seem to be a confirmation of sorts, especially when it happens when I'm thinking about "spiritual" subjects.

And recently a reader from India emailed me to report that for her: "I've found that there is a large natural calamity (Tsunami, flood, earthquake) about 2-3 days after I hear it." So I thought that was interesting and worth mentioning. Also noted in her email, she doesn't have the abductions thing going on the way I do because she's in India. (The whole MILABs and alien abduction phenomenon seem to be running rampant in America as mentioned earlier.) So for those in other countries where MILABS and alien abductions aren't prevalent, then ear tones may have other meanings.

However, I encourage anybody reading this to research the matter on their own, using their own experiences. I have a friend (the aforementioned guy who runs several websites about abduction stuff) who noticed that for him, left is positive while right is negative. So everybody will be different.

I learned how to utilize my ear tones as a head's up warning system. When they occur in the middle of the night, that's not a good sign. Abductions for me are a middle of the night/early morning occurrence, and so when I've gotten an ear tone at 3 a.m. it usually meant somebody was lookin' for me. ;) Ear tones for me are commonly accompanied by other phenomenon throughout the day, and taken together, everything indicates that "something is up." That's why it's so important to really pay attention to these things and keep a log of your phenomenon, and to pool everything together to see the Big Picture. For example, if you have a day where you experience several meaningful number sightings, some synchronicities/deja vu, and an ear ringing, then that's the universe trying to tell you something. And to discover what it all means you have to start somewhere, and that's **one logged entry at a time.** Then later you can go back over it all and see what was happening on what particular days.

When sleuthing out the patterns, look at everything you can possibly look at. Pay particular attention to the days of the week, the number of the day of the month, the times when things happened…everything. Maybe there's a pattern to when "stuff" is happening to you. There almost always is. And numbers are the best place to start – dates and times. Through documenting my various anomalous phenomenon, I soon learned that my pattern involved the 1st — 3rd of the month, and the 20th — 23rd for abductions.

On a closing note, something that can't be stressed enough here is **the need to not get caught up in crazy paranoia regarding this, and other unusual happenings.** Try your best to view it with an alert, attentive but yet, detached neutrality. When you start wigging out about things your frequency plummets and you become an easy target. "Stuff" loves nothing more than somebody who's freaked out, paranoid, or angry about the things that are happening to them, taking violent swings at empty air in the dark. Not good. If you're being monitored, there's probably not much you can do about it, so just go with it. View your ear tones as a tool, a head's up advantage, a game – not as the enemy. If nothing else at least they make life interesting, and prove to you that there's a whole lot more to this reality then the mainstream world would have you believe. They help keep you awake and on your toes, paying closer attention to your life than you would have otherwise, which is always a good thing. So, try to maintain a positive, balanced perspective on it all."

Real vs. artificial synchronicities

From my website: (**http://www.in2worlds.net/synchronicities**):

"…if you are someone who experiences ear tones/ringings, deja vus, or frequent number sightings, or if you consider yourself to be an abductee with a lifelong history of the "weird stuff" happening, then it's safe to assume that synchronicity is another occurrence in your life.

"Synchronicities are meaningful coincidences. We all experiences coincidences in our lives, and many of them probably occur by statistical chance. But every so often there are those that are just so pointed and tailored to a particular detail and to something about you, specifically, that you can't dismiss it. When that happens, statistical probability doesn't matter. Throw it out the window. The only thing that matters at that point is whether it has meaning for you. For example, reading a word right as it's said out loud next to you – the more unusual the word, the more it means something; Objects coming your way or crossing your path/field of view that coincide with an idea or theme you have been thinking about, or matching up to something that has personal meaning for you, and so on.

"Synchs are often time multi-layered. Meaning, they happen several at a time, all connecting together in a cluster that can sometimes even connect to other strange happenings around you. I have a term for it all, which I call **lining up.** When you experience several synchs clustered together within a day or a few days' time, then it really can feel like reality is aligning in some way.

"Synchronicities can happen for various reasons. Several of my personal theories include timeline alteration, moving up/shifting up to something higher, messages being conveyed from our higher stuff, and so on."

For an abductee however, synchronicities can also be artificially generated courtesy of their human/alien abductors, and usually done for the purpose of influencing/reinforcing the path the abduction target is taking. For this reason, **it becomes necessary for abductees to learn**

how to differentiate between a natural synch, and one that is being artificially generated for manipulative purposes.

I've experienced both types in life, and several of my own artificially generated synchs were documented in Part II, which perfectly illustrates this concept. The "pen from nowhere", the Joseph license plate frame with the trailer hitch, and then there was another one not mentioned in this write up which had to do with moving to New Mexico. Shortly after arriving in Florida I was already thinking ahead about the possibility of moving to the southwest – specifically, New Mexico. I was driving my car one afternoon near the intersection of Sunrise Boulevard and Federal Highway pondering this, and I looked over and saw that……the next car over from me had a New Mexico license plate. !! Wow! I thought. Synchronicity!! Possibly positively reinforcing the idea of moving there! Then the next day I was telling Tom about this as we drove along the same stretch of Sunrise and Federal Highway, going the other direction this time, at a different time of the day……**and I looked over to find the exact same car, with the New Mexico plate, right next to us**. **Again.** The odds of this are astronomical. Now it just struck me as being creepy, and very suspicious.

In order to decipher what's what, it helps to understand how positive forces operate versus negative ones. And this is a topic that is a bit bigger than the scope of this write up, but I'll summarize a couple of important points here since it's relevant. But the big one to keep in mind is that **positive stuff doesn't use glaring, flashy theatrics designed to "Wow!" you** – that's what the negs do when trying to manipulate people. And it usually works for those naïve types who lack awareness, discernment, and healthy analytical and questioning abilities. Positive stuff also **doesn't use tactics that appeal to the ego,** or that which **advocates fear, paranoia, anger, division,** etc. But the negs do. If stuff's buttering you up and playing on your sense of self importance, or fanning the flames of discord then you can guarantee it's not a positive force at work. Negs are also quite fond of feeding people lines about whatever they feel you'll fall for, whatever your weak spot is, lying, taking credit for things they didn't do, just all around deception. In general, the rule for positive stuff seems to be the **respect of freewill.** They usually wait for you to come to them, not the other way around, they don't force anything on you, and if for some reason they do need to intervene to right a no-no that's occurred, they seem to like to slip in and out the door being as unobtrusive as possible, not drawing attention to themselves. This is what my research and personal experience has shown me. So, look at everything surrounding a far-fetched unbelievable synch to see how it's playing out in order to determine if it seems positive or negative.

Another thing worth noting about the nature of artificially generated synchs geared toward influencing abductees is that often times**, they may utilize people.** I can only theorize why this would be, but I'm thinking it's because people are easy for "stuff" to work through and manipulate. People are also a more effective tool because they can directly vocalize something to us; we're more apt to sit up and take notice of other people telling us weird, synchronistic things…plain and simple. Human psychology.

On an important side note, if you do experience somebody in your own life taking part in a strange synch, try not to fall down the slippery slope of believing that all the people around you are knowing agents that are "in on it!' trying to get you. I've gotten emails or read message board posts from people who were sliding down that slope, and it's not good. So often, so much of what happens to people is a case of synchronicity, or stuff working *through* people, unknown to them, versus people being knowingly in on some plot.

Try to utilize your intuition and feel out a synchronicity. Artificially generated synchs, for me, have usually felt weird, and even a bit creepy. **They're just too perfect in their timing and execution, too manipulative, and too in-your-face.** They try too hard. If you're an abductee, then you have to be alert and on guard with the events that happen to you in your life. **Not in a paranoid, fearful way, but in a matter-of-fact, aware way.** Don't take things at face value, and even more importantly, don't assume that synchronicities are always reinforcing that you're on the right path, or that a decision/idea is in your best interest. Too often naïve New Ager types steadfastly ignore the idea of negative "stuff," making the mistake of viewing everything through a positive lens. Negative stuff does exist though, and it is out there, trying to exert its influence. Which means not everything is always coming from a positive place, including uncanny in-your-face synchronicities that seem to try to reinforce certain life paths. "Stuff" can easily orchestrate events to try to reinforce something that may actually be detrimental, so always pause to question things and feel things out, and above all else, be discerning.

The paranormal

A secondary characteristic that usually emerges in the life of an abductee is paranormal activity.

While living in Florida in 2002 – 2003, my apartment became a portal you could say. It was similar to what I wrote about in my write up "The Vortex," which appears on my website. "The Vortex" was the apartment I lived in with my brother for a year in SoCal and that was completely inundated with paranormal activity. The activity happening in California was a mix of various things, whereas Florida seemed to directly correlate to abductions, and had a negative alien element/feel to it all.

The front main window in Florida had "something" going on with it, and my cat was attacked in it one night, and almost again on two more occasions. And as I relayed in Part II, I had my "dream" where a (UFO?) craft emanating blue-white light descended outside that particular window and blew it in. Also, the corner next to the front door was a hot spot, causing my cat to jump up as high as she could towards it, repeatedly boinging like a springboard, trying to propel herself up into it…exactly as she used to do with the portal above my doorway in California. She'd jump up, then claw into the wall to try to pull her way up to it, only to slide back down, nails screeching against the wall. Woke up one time in the middle of the night to find a blue-green static-y portal thing in front of the door, same as what I experienced back in "The Vortex." Entity harassers came around a few times, one of them we nicknamed "Ralph the rustling plastic bag" **(you've gotta have a sense of humor about it all, remember…!)** because he was an all black…thing….that would paralyze me into my bed then vigorously shake himself around in my face, making a strange crinkling rustling noise like a plastic bag, trying to terrify me and feed on the fear, I take it. Who knows what he thought he was doing. ;D

There were the times when "stuff" would try to pull me out of my body, also documented in Part II. Another instance where an all black entity entered through the kitchen area, blew through the living room and then disappeared into the front wall/window hot spot area. And still other times when stuff would come around in general, which I would pick up on psychically. There was the occasional weird flashing, where the lighting or the room and surroundings in general would seem to be flashing very rapidly. Both Tom and I witnessed that on several occasions, so it wasn't just one of us imagining it. And on and on and on. I talk about some of these paranormal instances, especially the entity encounters, more in depth in this write up on my website: **http://in2worlds.net/and-all-the-rest**

During 2002 and into 2003 the apartment had a yucky feel to it. It didn't start out that way when I moved in, but it became that way over time as harassment activity and abductions progressively got worse and worse. I gleaned my bit of very important insight though into the **Fear Frequency** in early 2003, a year after moving in, and that changed everything. My fear stopped, the harassment and paranormal craziness trickled off as a result, and by the time Tom came back to Florida in May of 2003, after supporting his family through some personal issues back home in Iowa, it was like a whole new apartment. I didn't have to do a cleaning on it the way I did to my room in SoCal, described in "The Vortex", but it felt so much cleaner. Very calm. Positive. When Tom came back it was like a fresh start, because all the stuff that had previously been happening before he left was gone. He also had a whole new mindset, and between the two of us, and our new mindsets and awareness and understanding, the apartment remained (relatively) clean. Stuff occasionally did still happen…but it was nothing like before. It was do-able, and it didn't taint the feel of the place.

Paranormal side effects occur in the lives of abductees for several reasons. For starters, it seems the very nature of non-human abductors creates paranormal activity, simply because of who they are. Wherever they go, the paranormal phenomenon as we view it and label it, follows. Also, when you have "stuff" coming and going from your living space, and they're snagging you on a regular basis and keeping an eye on you in general, then that seems to open doorways in your home, allowing other stuff to get through.

I now wonder in looking back over many of the incidents that happened to me in "The Vortex" whether at least some of them were alien in nature. It never occurred to me at the time, but a later re-read of the book "Watchers" by Raymond Fowler detailing the alien abduction happens of Betty Andreasson turned up a mention of glowing little sparkles – seeming to be a near identical match to "the sparklies," as I called them, which infested my room (until I yelled at them to go away!) And then the time when my room had a yellow tint to it, feeling completely off and wrong (precursoring an attack by a neg entity a day later) - I've since turned up references to "4th density overlays" in 3rd density causing the environment to have a yellow colored tint to it.

But most importantly though is that if an abductee is the target of an active **fear campaign,** then they may find themselves surrounded by these sorts of strange, fear-inducing paranormal happenings. It goes with the territory, because "stuff" sometimes is looking to sink the abductee in life, and to do so relies on a person's negative/fearful/paranoid personal frequency. Think about what happens to people who are immersed in crazy paranormal happenings and harassment. Their effectiveness in life is drastically reduced, and any positive things they could be doing in life to help themselves, and others in the world, is virtually eliminated. Unless that person gains awareness and can snap out of it and put a stop to it, they're effectively removed from the picture. "Another one down! Mmmwwahahahahaha!" And in the meantime, the feeders get an all-you-can-eat buffet out of the deal.

Right now as I type this in Virginia, we have none of that stuff happening anymore. I had been taking that for granted in fact, until writing this section forgetting how it used to be. As far as I can tell, we still have abductions occurring, but none of the paranormal and anomalous happenings that have typically gone with it in the past. When you're aware and know exactly what to do and what mindset to adopt, they don't bother. There's nothing for them to latch onto. [**On a funny side note**, as I was typing that last paragraph, we experienced a power surge…three power glitches in a row. That's never happened in the year and a half we've lived in this apartment. (and a 2010 post side note – it's never happened since.) It could be "just a coincidence," but really, what are the odds. And the number three has often been noted as an announcement marker of non-human intelligences, whether it's three knocks, or what have you. So, I took it as a funny little reminder, that "Hello…we're still here…" And the fact that "something" is around and aware of us in order to respond so instantaneously to something I was typing, but yet, isn't kicking up a stink anymore says something, to me anyway.]

The “Chosen Ones”

Alien souls incarnating on a mission, or mind control?

Abductees will often feel as is they’re here on a “mission,” with an agenda to accomplish, and that they are different in some way. Some even feel as if they have to help save the world, that’s how strong the urge is that drives them. I’ve experienced the feeling of having a mission and something important to accomplish ever since I was a kid, and this knowing that I’m not like everybody else, and I’m not here to have the life of a normal person. It was something that was always there, right under the surface.

Some people even take it to the point of believing that they’re not from Earth, they’re alien souls in human bodies - Wanderers, Star Seeds, Indigos, and various other labels that are floating around on the internet and in books. So what’s going on with this? Are we really here on a mission? Are there really alien souls in human bodies right now? Is this just programming, designed to mess with abduction targets? Or is it both, depending?

1. *Incarnation goals*

In my opinion, it seems that positively oriented souls do arrive here from other realms with an intended goal or plan, with something they’d like to contribute to the world, adding their little bit to the pile to help shape and influence the outcome of life here on planet Earth during these times. I myself don’t go around proclaiming to people that I’m an “ET soul,” yet, I definitely feel as if I’m here to do something big - I can’t just be some normal person content to live out their life and die. And I can easily see myself having existed as non-human beings on other planets. So one possibility is that this feeling could indeed tie into being here on a “Star Seed mission.”

However, even if I have incarnated elsewhere, as other types of beings, I don’t identify with being an “alien” as many of these supposed Star Seeds do, and I don’t mentally reject being human, here on Earth. (For some though it gets taken to that level.) So another possibility is that this mission/drive could be a general all around incarnational goal, their life plan as a human soul, if nothing else.

2. *Programming*

But then there's the possibility that some people have been programmed to feel special and different because it's serving somebody else's agenda, such as MILABS projects, or New Age disinformation ("crystal children," "starseeds" "indigos" "rainbows" etc.) If one realizes that they are a MILAB, or an alien abductee in general, then they need to look very closely at their beliefs about being non-human, special, different, here on a mission, "chosen," and so on. Especially memories they may have that are associated with this belief. Mind control programming is apparently very vivid and believable and yes, quite effective on many. I don't mean to throw a wrench in the works for people, but for those who can acknowledge that they are an alien abductee or MILAB, **then it becomes imperative to question everything one thinks they believe or know about themselves,** because the fact is, "they" are programming people, and "they" are experimenting on people, playing them like lab rats.

In the book "Taken" by Dr. Karla Turner, she even gets into this:

> "Ten days later, Angie recalled another abduction, but this one differed dramatically from the previous encounters. […} Inside the van, Angie saw bench seats, carpet, and a large control panel. The other men entered, and Angie wondered if they belonged to some military group.
>
> "Are you all with the Army, Air Force, Navy or Marines," she inquired.
>
> The oldest man replied, but she was beginning to have a hard time understanding everything he said. She thought he said the group belonged to an organization called "High Shelf" which worked mainly in "special underground stations." **He also told her that she and other "Chosen Ones" were part of a mind-control project,** to "carry instructions and temperance, via thought transference" to other people." – "***Taken,***" pages 157-158

Targets who are long term investments in various MILABS programs would in then fact be "special" and "chosen" and "different." For that reason they really are here to do something….**for MILABS black projects, that is.**

There's also the idea of taking people who genuinely are here on a higher level positive soul mission and derailing them into believing that it really is all just mind control programming, and nothing more. Get them re-routed and sidetracked away from realizing who they really are.

On a side note, in the 2005 sci-fi movie "The Island," the clones in the cloning facility receive some heavy doses of mind control programming while growing and forming in their pods. And one of the big programming commands was to be repeatedly told that they're special….they've been chosen….they're special….they've been chosen… While we're not clones on an island (at least….I don't think we are….! ;) You never know though of course….) just the idea that a movie featured mind control programming based on getting targets to believe that they're special, different and "chosen" of all things was very interesting in light of what I've been pondering in this book. I think there's lots of bits of truth tucked into fiction movies.

Now this doesn't mean that all people who believe/feel themselves to be alien, special, different and here on a mission are programmed, but, some certainly may be. In Part II I mentioned what seems to be a dream of an abduction memory where I was being told of my "reptilian genetics." Yet the fact that I was clearly lying on an exam table under a light, being told this fact by a hypnotic male voice while having some sort of hallucination of little gecko lizards pouring out of my chest doesn't exactly lend credence to the idea. But it's very interesting that "something" wanted me to believe this about myself. Getting a target to believe they're part Reptilian, Gray, or some sort of non-human entity in general when they're actually not can serve a variety of negative, manipulative purposes. So if you've ever had similar ideas, then ask yourself this:

- **How long have you felt this way?** Is it as long as you can remember? Or did it begin around a certain age? If so, what age? Can you pinpoint the exact time or moment that it began?

- **What effect did the belief have on you?** Has it changed the way you go about your life in any way, and if so, how? Has it altered your personality? What effects, if any, has it had on your relationships with other people? Has it been positive, negative, or neutral?

- **Are there groups or activities that you're involved with as a result of this belief that you wouldn't have been involved with otherwise?** If so, again, what are the effects of these activities/groups on you, your life, and your personal relationships? Is it positive, negative, or neutral?

These are important questions to ask for anybody who has found themselves convinced that they may be an alien hybrid or special chosen alien soul on a mission of some sort, apart from the rest of humanity. Take a moment to think about what a belief like that could do. Getting the target to identify with their abductors, and identify with their traits is one thing, for starters. "We're part of the same team…we're on your side, and **you're one of us."** Also, if the target is somebody who was working for "the good guys" doing positive things in life, it can be a form of sabotage to derail them, get them relating to "the bad guys" instead.

Something I have to wonder is: **Before the big New Age movement of the 20th century and all the black ops mind control projects, did people still go around believing that they were aliens in human form?** The military/government has had a hand in shaping and influencing the modern New Age movement. With that in mind you have to wonder then if "they" are the ones who are behind creating these ideas and labels in the first place, as part of some sort of experimentation of sorts, where people are messed with and programmed to see what "they" can get them to believe.

The kicker for me is that I once experienced a supposed pre-incarnational memory where I was apparently not human, and coming here on a mission (which I'll get into in a moment), and I also do believe that there is a hybrid breeding program going on in the population, and that this planet has been hijacked by non-human entities. So I can totally accept the idea of hybrids and non-human incarnations on other planets, but the way New Agers typically approach the subject has always rubbed me the wrong way. There seems to be a lot of manipulated disinfo bunk going on. So possibly another angle is that the infiltration into these New Age/metaphysical movements has been to distort what are actually some valid concepts, leading the herd astray. So many possibilities! One has to do a lot of careful unraveling when analyzing what may really be going on.

Then there's the subject of the military/government's involvement in tracking those children who have been labeled by their parents as "Indigos" and one of the "new gifted children." No surprise, but the government has a keen interest in children with exceptional mental and psychic abilities, as evidenced by the declassified government documents detailing their mind control experimentation over the decades. Get the New Age parents scoping their children's talents, slapping labels on them and announcing it to the world on the internet and symposium gatherings, doing the brunt of the talent scouting work so the government doesn't have to. Pretty clever. I didn't come up with this theory though, this is a word of caution I've seen from various people.

In summary I'll leave off with the aforementioned anecdote regarding a pre-incarnational mission memory. It happened one morning in early 2005, right after waking as I was laying in my bed. I had a spontaneous image where I could feel myself in the middle of a group of beings, getting ready to come here. We were not human it seemed. It was a big blur of whooooosh motion as we took off. And we were definitely on a warrior type mission, something we signed up to do you could say. The whole feeling behind it was like the blast of a triumphant trumpet. It was also telepathically conveyed to me that this mission was the reason I've had protection in this life.

Yet I can't just take this as a face value memory, because again, if I can admit in one breath that I've been abducted, used and programmed, then I just cannot accept this as being my truth. Maybe as time goes on I'll tap into something that will give me some real and valid insight into "who I am" in the bigger scheme of things, why I'm here and how I came to get here, but until then, I can't just automatically believe this. But I know that MILAB targets have similar stories to this, and many people out there would just automatically believe something like this, without exercising any sort of discernment. And yet…I have my own personal proof for why this vision would actually be true, various tidbit stories that do confirm this but which I won't sidetrack onto here. So who really knows.

Now, saying that it were true, in a mundane life, something like this can be a welcome ego boost and something to spice things up. In fact, later when I pendulum dowsed it I had a bit of the ego wank going on, I admit it ;) For my line of questioning regarding the protection I have, I asked if it was because I'm a more advanced, higher up soul? Got a loud NO. Is it because I'm special, you know, like higher up than other souls? (notice my inability to get away from that line of questioning. :D) NO. No? huh. (admitted disappointment. Who doesn't want to think they're special, right? haha) Is it just because of what I signed up to do then? YES. That's it? YES. Oh. So basically anybody who signed up to do that then would get the protection? YES. Oh, okay. Got it. It's part of the package. Sign up for such-and-such job, you automatically get the full coverage insurance. ;) But it's not due to be being "special" and "better."

So either something is programming targets to believe mind controlled delusions for various agendas, or, people are being honed in on and abducted because they really are different, and as such, they attract attention to themselves. As always I say…take your pick. I think it can be a mix of both, depending on the person involved.

Abduct me and make me feel special!

In 2006 we were watching a DVD of hypnotist/author/speaker Dolores Cannon giving a talk at a UFO symposium, and one of the things that really jumped out at me was a particular anecdote she relayed. She has what she calls the "thems" (aliens it seems) who will sometimes speak to her through her various hypnotized clients, and one of the big revelations that was relayed to her by "them" was that they are specially selecting people to abduct and genetically upgrade – increasing their DNA strands, and tweaking them overall to be a part of the aliens' master plan for a new Earth, and new people. Dolores recounted how she had been telling the audience this revelation at a previous conference, and how some guy in the audience had piped up with, "Where can I sign up!" She chuckled as she relayed this to her current audience, and the overall implication was that this alien revelation is real, and it's a good thing, and there are definitely people out there who'd love to sign up for this and team up with the aliens.

Now, I really enjoy the works of Dolores Cannon and recommend several of her books on my website, I think she's a great author, but when I heard that I was like, AHHH! NO! slapping my forehead with my hand. It's a huge mistake that many people make, and make for all the wrong reasons. The idea of being one of the selected few who gets chosen to have special DNA upgrades by the God-like aliens is **appeal**

to the ego, as well as **relinquishing your power to something outside of yourself.**

If a person has a mundane life though this can be quite exciting – and that's understandable. Many abductees get a kick out of being targeted, because it sets them apart from others, it makes their life interesting and different, and some do go as far as to believe they must be special as a result of it all. And there's really nothing that can be said to a person who's in that mindset. They have to figure it out on their own, in their own way, for their own reasons. Can they be content to find excitement and stimulation in other, everyday ways, and not rely on their aliens and abductions to provide that kick? A person can still be apart from the herd and carve out a nice little independent, free-thinking niche for themselves in this reality without relying on their alien/military abductions to provide that for them.

And we definitely don't need aliens helping us to evolve via nifty little upgrades. They are not God or the Creator Source, and they're definitely not something we need to be submissively subservient to, giving ourselves up to them. A person is not going to be better than their neighbor or co-worker for having been specially selected for supposed DNA upgrades. If anything, they are now the alien's little puppet, as I call it, their guinea pig personal property. How can that be a good thing?? Well, unless of course they believe the abductors are good and God-like and that we somehow need them to improve us.

And then there's the fact that aliens that abduct and tinker with you are aliens that also lie, to put it bluntly. They'll tell you whatever you want to hear and whatever you want to believe if it means you'll willingly let them keep abducting you. We don't know what we're signing up for or what we've just given ourselves over to. So just because they're aliens doesn't make them better than us, God-like…or even truthful.

And not only that, **but it may not actually be aliens that we're dealing with**. Now there's a thought. What if it's a screen memory? What if it's human black-ops military factions doing the abducting and programming, convincing one to believe that they're dealing with happy little Grays from Zeta Reticuli? There the target is, willingly giving themselves up to them, "Choose *me!* Upgrade me! Make me better and special!" and "they" meanwhile, are programming with drugs and hypnosis and laughing their asses off as they do it. **This**

apparently happens. This seems to be what's going on for many people, unfortunately. So, something to keep in mind.

Because abductions are so shadowy and covert, and because we can't fully know or trust what we're actually dealing with, it's in my opinion that we should just say no to ALL abductions. Turn your back. Walk away. Truly positive forces are available to you whenever you need…**who don't have a need for abductions, empty promises and flashy theatrics.**

"Just Say No!" to Stockholm Syndrome

With female MILAB targets something I've come across a few times was the mentality of hoping that these guys who are taking them actually care about them in some way and that some of them are actually trying to help them out. Way back at the beginning of things I had wondered the same thing myself, so I can understand how people (and the women especially) would hope that this is the case. It reminds me of a version of Stockholm Syndrome, when captive hostages begin sympathizing with their captors. It's not always easy facing the reality that one is being used and abused, and it's more reassuring to think that whoever these "people" are that deep down some part of them does like you and cares about you. Somehow it makes it "okay," like you have these powerful people or forces on your side that other people don't have. "Yeah, they sometimes do bad things to me, but, don't at least a *few* of them care about me? Don't a few of them like me and want to help?!?"

This mindset is dangerous, as it gets a person to concede to whatever is happening to them. I don't normally tell people what they "should" be doing, but this would be one of those rare exceptions. (the other exception is me going on record very bluntly stating that I feel people should NOT invite the idea of "alien" abductions into their lives, and should reject the idea of alien saviors, as mentioned in the previous section.) In this case I feel like it would be better for people to face the music and assume the worst case scenario - that these guys are totally using and abusing you, and not one of them has the least bit of sympathy for you and nobody in their group is going to step up to the plate to "help" you in some way. So don't look to them as being any sort of potential force on your side. This goes for MILAB targets, and people dealing with aliens and their half human hybrids. It's one of those times when a black/white, all or nothing viewpoint is going to serve somebody better than risking a slippery slope into Stockholm Syndrome territory.

There's also the programmed "lalala!" response that one can get despite being faced with some glaring evidence of nefarious happenings. I've had that as well. You just feel like it doesn't bother you, *shrug.* You're aware of it…but you feel like you're okay with it. But the question is, is that the real you feeling that, or is it something making you feel that way?

For me all I need to do is look at what my reaction was during that one "dream"/memory snippet where I found myself face to face with a Gray robotoid and actually *not* under their control for once. Rage. And the one stony faced white woman in the white coat with her hair pulled back that I've seen in at least one abduction memory snippet as well as two "dreams." More rage. Or the memory flash where I was flat on my back on a table under lights, seeming as if I was in a (drugged/hypnotic) daze, while several guys surrounded me, leering and jeering at me, scratching under my chin. Alarm. Those are the emotions that clue a person into what the real deal is with all this, versus whatever the programming tries to make one feel. Everybody's going to be different, but I know that some of these MILAB women who may start to sympathize with their harassers have their own share of negative memory snippets, "dreams" or bodily indicators showing them the true nature of what's going on with them. That's what a person needs to remember, and use that to push back against the programming.

Savoring the attention

Relating to all of this is repeating pattern I've noticed amongst some supposed gang stalking targets. I wrote an article about gang stalking **http://in2worlds.net/gangstalking-and-targeted-individuals** so I've received a fair share of emails from people over the past couple of years relating to the subject. And something I've noticed is that there are actually some people who, whether they're willing to admit it or not, don't really want the targeting to stop. For these types, their emails never mention anything having to do with **solutions, empowerment, or brainstorming on ways to get harassment to diminish, or stop completely.** They don't express any interest in trying to find **true understanding behind why this is happening and how it works.** Rather, for them it's just about finding a captive audience for their drama, and going in self absorbed circles, along with various manipulations to try to hook me in as a feeding source. Deep down, they apparently like being a victim. They give off a surface appearance of wanting things to stop with all this "indignation"……but their actions (or rather, lack thereof) and the things they say indicate otherwise.

Not too long ago I came across a link on Rense.com relating to gang stalking, and in skimming through the readers' comments at the end of the piece, one comment really jumped out at me. I couldn't read any further after seeing it. It was one commentator attacking/defending against another commentator saying, near identical paraphrase, "**If you don't have this happening to you then it's because you're not important!**" Then kind of waving them off, telling them to "**go back to your insignificant life!**"

!!!!!

You're not important. Your life is insignificant. Why? **Because you aren't the specially chosen few being gang stalked and targeted.** Now, what was I saying again about the ego wank of it all? The way in which supposed victims often feel special for having been singled out? Drama and intrigue. A way to spice up an existence that would otherwise be boring and hum drum. Conversations being listened in on, finding oneself tailed and monitored. "I'm special. I'm so interesting that people want to devote all their attention to *me.*" So do we really think that a person who would indicate that the targeting makes them "significant" and "important" is actually going to look for ways to get this to *stop?* Do we even need to answer that question?

Not all targets have this mentality, and I've conversed with ones who are all about finding solutions and being empowered (my favorite types, the ones who are truly legit, in my opinion). But some clearly do have the "I secretly like the attention" mindset, and I was able to pick that up in a number of the emails I've received from people, analyzing how they talk in their writing, and what they do or don't say and talk about. It was very evident, although I don't think they even realized it about themselves. I even lamented in my gang stalking article about people emailing me to fill me in on all their gang stalking drama, but never taking even one step to get it to stop. One woman in particular mentioned in her email being closely followed down the sidewalk by supposed harassers who were following her all over the place. (among other activity.) I read that and made a face and shook my head and thought, "That's what pepper spray is for." I don't understand this at all. I've had pepper spray on my keychain since a non-gang stalking related incident in Fort Lauderdale. And I wouldn't hesitate to use it if need be. Everything else about this woman's writing tone indicated a drama queen who was clearly getting off on all the attention, and had no intentions on trying to get things to stop, so really, no surprise there that she wasn't looking into self defense. And as noted, she wouldn't be the only one like that, unfortunately. This is just something I wanted to put out there.

The Big Boys with their Alien Toys

As the reader has probably already figured out for themselves, whatever is going on in my situation is a confusing mess. There have clearly been humans involved in my abductions, and yet, the technology they're utilizing is nothing that the mainstream public is aware of. And the way events are being orchestrated is **beyond time**, to put it simply, something that only non-human intelligences are supposed to be capable of. Or so we thought. So what's going on here? How can this be? Researchers only rarely talk about military abductions, let alone human/military factions that are acting like aliens. And it's exactly the reason I have had such difficulty in getting answers for my personal situation. We're usually presented with a black and white version of who's behind abductions – it's either regular old human military agents who are technologically on par with the rest of the public, or, it's super God-like aliens. Period. Take your pick.

X! Try again. What I've been seeing are **super God-like humans doing stuff that only aliens are supposed to be capable of.** However when I've pendulum dowsed my abduction situation on several occasions I've gotten some unusual answers. When I asked, "Am I being abducted by human military?" fully expecting the loud "Yes" and already mentally moving on to the next question, the answer instead came back as...."Maybe."

?? I thought. "Maybe" for me means keep digging, there's more to this then just simply yes or no. So then I asked, "Am I being abducted by aliens?" And got another maybe. Maybe?? I thought. What does it mean, *maybe?* It can only be humans or aliens...right? What is this weird wrench in the works! I asked again and got the same Maybes. hmm. Finally at a loss for why it wasn't black and white yes/no, and not sure where else to go with this line of questioning, I finally thought to ask, "Am I being taken by *hybrids*??"

And I got a very clear YES. And I've gotten a clear yes every time I asked that question afterwards.

For starters, there's always the big possibility that pendulum dowsing is nonsense and it means nothing at all. But *if* it's valid, then this answer can mean different things. While one possibility is that yes, I'm being taken by literal "alien/human genetic hybrids", a secondary meaning could be human military spooks utilizing alien technology with alien buddies. So, **an operation that is a "hybrid" of the two sides.**

There's a reason I've gone around in my life and on the internet saying that the set up of this reality, and the things they want us to believe are lies. There are government/military factions running around out there completely removed from the mainstream government. They have technology we're supposed to think doesn't exist. I know this because of the things I've seen, which aren't supposed to be possible according to the accepted laws of reality on the surface civilian world of the sheep herd. Meanwhile, we the public are still driving around in metal boxes on rubber wheels and flying in the same-old combustible engine driven aluminum tubes, completely immersed in personal dramas, entertainment fluff, and illusory world strife that serves to distract us. There are clearly two worlds – or more – happening, and they've successfully got about 95% of the population herded very tightly into one reality option.

What researchers know from experience and by talking to abductees is that the military has the ability to beam messages via microwaves/ELF waves at people, as well as being able to communicate to a target via their implant(s), creating that "voices in the head" phenomena. This technology is old news in fact, going back decades. I myself believe I witnessed what appeared to be a "beam me up" laser, as well as having personal experiences where it seemed as if I was plunked back into bed very suddenly from someplace else. And "somebody" was quietly moving about my apartment in Florida, barely disguised with some sort of cloaking technology. This is all pretty far out there stuff, but yet still relatively easy for the brain to digest, and all quite plausible when you stop and ponder it.

But then what about when we get to the areas involving reality manipulation, time manipulation, and synchronicities?? Those are concepts that the brain doesn't have such an easy time trying to decipher and seems beyond the range of human capability. If that infamous "pen from nowhere" back in Portland mentioned in Part II really was what I think it was, then how is that possible? That's literally like somebody was sitting behind a curtain that separated my reality from theirs, and was able to reach into this reality and alter it from behind the scenes, so to speak. But…behind the scenes *where?* Where is "behind the scenes"?

This is the point where people begin to think it has to be the aliens, but again, I've had experiences that show humans being intricately involved in these activities. Aliens don't speak with sarcastic human male voices and toss around very human writing instruments. And that's when it's time to face the music – there are human elements on this planet who can do these things, and it doesn't matter what the media, schools and "Powers That Be" tell you about who's who and what's what here on Earth…there's a whole reality going on right under our noses, and we're purposely being shielded from it. That shielding is exactly how they can keep doing what they're doing. We're still driving around on those metal boxes with rubber wheels, mind you – but do you think that's all The Powers That Be are capable of? If all those reports over the decades of alien contact are real, then why wouldn't the two sides have joined forces? There's always that possibility though that humans got there on their own, in which case, it's highly likely that some snazzy high level physicists have been spirited away to work for the government black ops and to develop teleportation technology, time travel, realm and time manipulation, and the like. It seems possible and highly likely, considering that the Navy was experimenting with invisibility and time holes…during WWII, with their Philadelphia Experiment. And that was 70 years ago. 70+ years from 1944 should put us into some pretty advanced technological territory.

The only problem is…what we're seeing here on the good old surface world is relative **stagnation**. Most people aren't noticing this though. Because their cell phone models become more refined and car bodies get slightly tweaked and we have more distraction tactic techno gadgets to play with, we're supposedly "progressing." ;) Keep in mind that electronic swipe cards and flat screen computer monitors - just to name a couple of relatively recent technological "advancements" - were old hat to the secret military factions…decades ago. When you do the research into military abductions you'll find abductees describing these yet-to-be-invented technologies during abductions that took place many years ago.

It's been said that "They" are 30 years ahead in their technology versus what the public is **allowed** to know. 30 is a low estimate I think, the number is probably a lot higher. It's also one of those oft-quoted sayings, which makes it suspicious. It's a bit silly to even try to make estimates about where the technology timeline is really at when we the public are missing most of the story. What I've experienced/understood about this secret technology has led me to seriously question just how far behind we, the general population, have been held back, and how much reality has been manipulated to keep us asleep and out of the loop. What's actually going on here on this planet anyway? It really reminds me of the scene in "The Matrix" when Morpheus tells Neo, **"You believe it's the year 1999, when in fact it's closer to 2199. I can't tell you exactly what year it is because we honestly don't know."** So while it may be 2006, the fact is the mainstream public is being held down, held back, and kept out of the loop of progress, which in effect creates a distortion about where/when we really are. "Stuff" has gone on without us, and they don't want to bring the common riff raff along with them. ;) And actually I can understand that, I'm just neutrally bringing this fact to people's attention if they haven't already figured it out for themselves.

An interesting thing that I've also noticed is how many average people believe that if this secret government technology and these other layers of reality existed, well, they (Joe Average) would certainly know about it, right? The fact that they haven't heard about it and don't know about it means it plain old just doesn't exist, and that the rest of us who say differently are quite obviously crazy. Well, not to burst their bubble, but honestly…who is this Joe Average to "them"? Nobody. So why does Joe Average think they would – or should – know about it? The slave owner doesn't report to his slaves. It's the other way around. But the surface world has done a lot to pump up so many people's egos and confidence, making people think that they're somebody special and important because the media tells them so twenty times a day, and also because they may even have a lot of money, a special title, a big house and three or four cars and a stock portfolio. It creates confident know-it-alls with highly inflated egos who believe they should - and would - be aware of such things. In truth, they're still an ant like the rest of us, despite their money, titles, houses and cars. Just a rich, glorified ant with a few more privileges. That's all. And they're still going to be out the loop about what's really going on here on Planet Earth, whether their ego can handle hearing that or not. And for the rest of us who have discovered that something is amiss, we only know about it because we stumbled onto it accidentally due to being abductees. Otherwise we wouldn't have a clue about it either.

It's not an easy topic to address, as it sounds very pessimistic and negative. But I put it out there in a matter-of-fact way. (And to clarify – when I refer to us as ants I'm not implying that we're forever destined to be powerless drones at the mercy of higher forces. Humans have boundless potential that most of us never realize or tap into. But as long as we continue to not realize who we are and not tap into our potential, then yes, we will continue to be ants. The biggest part of not realizing "who we are" involves us behaving as disempowered victims, which is discussed in other areas of this book.)

The biggest obstacle in overcoming the confusion surrounding my abductions was realizing this very simple fact – there are human military/government factions utilizing what we would consider to be alien technology, doing things that would really stretch a few brains. So either they managed to get there on their own, or, they had a little help from their alien friends and are now working side by side with them. So which one is it?

End Notes

It's now 2010 as I work on this revised version of Chasing Phantoms and a lot has changed for me since the initial writing of this in 2006. First and foremost I'm no longer the exact same person I used to be. It's been only four years but in a lot of ways it feels like it's been more than double that. There are reasons for this, which I won't sidetrack onto, but part of it is just the natural aging process and the knowledge and subdued personality that goes with it. Secondly, and just as important, is that so much of what used to happen in my life no longer does. This was already the case in 2006 when I first wrote this book, which I mentioned in the "Paranormal" section, but it's even more so now. Overt weirdness erupted in my life starting in 2000 with "The Vortex" back in California, **http://in2worlds.net/the-vortex** followed me to Portland, Oregon, then on into Florida full force, and then began trickling off after we moved to Virginia in late 2004. Random things happened throughout 2005-2007, but as the years wore on it all began to seem like a distant memory. That's why by this point in 2010 it's gotten easy to slip into complacency, and even doubt, about the weird "MILAB" type of circus diversion – and even the more subtle, weird reality happenings - that used to make up my daily life. In reading back through my old log books while compiling this update I've been struck by all the more subtle woo-woo that used to go on back then as well, not just the overt circus diversion. It's stuff I don't even bother to get into because it's not necessarily related to the subject of MILABS and mind control. It's just strange and impossible reality happenings indicating a **fluid realm** you could say, and reality not being what it seems to be, which can follow certain people around. I may add them to my other book, "….And all the rest. Miscellaneous Stories of the Weird and Unusual."

It doesn't mean absolutely nothing ever happens anymore. I still get the occasional strange bruise on my body, and then sometimes parasitic neg entities trying to manipulate moods/thoughts, which have to be removed. But other than that, it's all very dull I must say. Under the radar. No circus diversion. No impossible reality happenings and fluid realms. What is the reason for this change? Why has the overt harassment and fluid realms phenomenon not continued to plague my life as it does for so many people? There's a few possibilities offhand. For one, there's the fact that there are different groups doing different things to different people. So not everybody will be the same in terms of what is happening to them, obviously. Some may do worse things than others, some may give it up more easily, I don't know. There's also the fact that the targets themselves are different, and so what's "allowed" for one may not be "allowed" for another. Everybody's here for different reasons, with different soul backgrounds, and not all of us are going in the same direction, so that has to be factored in for why the rules of the game are different for certain people. And there's also the idea that certain areas of the country seem more susceptible to stuff than others. California, and especially Oregon and Florida, seemed to be far more unstable and susceptible than where we currently live in central Virginia. (though they certainly wouldn't be the only vulnerable locations in this country, as already mentioned earlier in this book.) So location can't be ignored either. Some places are very "vortex-y" and glitchy.

And yet another possibility, which was brought to my attention by my boyfriend Tom was the idea of sun cycles and its effects on the way our planet functions. A possible link that I never would have noticed was that at the height of our Florida weirdness in 2002-2003, the sun spot cycle was hitting a maximum period, with all kinds of crazy solar flare activity happening. X class level flares were being thrown off the sun left and right, it was nuts. This certainly may have played its part in why reality was more fluid and glitchy back then, and why paranormal activity was able to seep through so much easier. The trickling off of woo-woo activity coincided with our move away from Florida, our personal frequencies changing drastically….and the solar cycle going into an extended sleep mode. So it's hard to tell which factor was exerting the most influence on things. Maybe it was all three.

Ultimately I think the major part of it was the personal mindset frequency shift that was emphasized throughout this book. **Things happen to targets when it gets a rise out of them, makes them paranoid, or even cripples their personality.** Things give it up when a target laughs with manic giddy glee and genuinely think it's funny. I feel like it's safe to definitively conclude this now beyond any doubt. By the end of our time in Florida Tom and I were able to stop most things that had been happening just by changing our vibes alone, and that was despite the susceptibility of that area. If you don't care and aren't responding, if you aren't even noticing and paying attention to most of what stuff is doing, and if you're not scared when you do notice, then "stuff" has no choice but to give it up and move on to somebody who *does* notice, and *does* react.

Yet……..the other part of me has also wondered whether "stuff" doesn't just "let" me believe that I had any part in my life settling down and returning to normal. "Yeah, sure, that's right, you actually did something to change the outcome of things. Yup, it's all you. bwwahahahahahhaha!" (condescending pat on the head.) :D When I was originally writing about this in the "Paranormal" section back in

2006 our power glitched three times in a row in the middle of me typing, as if saying, "Hello, we're still here. We haven't gone anywhere." But I do see evidence for all those times when stuff seemed to stop the second I changed my internal reactions. As overly simplified as that seems, maybe that's really all it takes. Even John Keel talked about this, as referenced in his telling quote earlier in this book.

So sure, maybe something is just "letting" me think that I had some part in things, or…..maybe it really is like that one dream I had back in 2006 or so. Where "they" were chasing me all around, trying to catch up to me and get me, only to discover that when they finally caught up to me we were both phased out of each other's frequency. I'd changed too much and now they couldn't do what they wanted to do with me anymore.

*****

And on a final note I want to say that this book is my personal experiences, as well as my thoughts and theories on what basically amounts to an overwhelming amount of information that one must sort through when trying to get to the bottom of what's going on in this reality. As a result certain things may be off base, which I fully realize. (Considering what we're up against it's amazing anybody can manage to get anything right at all.) I'm sure I'm wrong about something somewhere, so if you find something you don't agree with then use it as a catalyst for seeking out your own conclusions. Everybody has their pieces of the puzzle, and I don't profess to have the puzzle figured out in full, not by a long shot. But that's why this book has grown and evolved since its first incarnation back in July of 2006, because along the way I've gathered up more pieces.

I don't want to be wrong - not because of ego, but rather because I'd like to be able to help people, so the less wrong I am, the better I can accomplish that. And so the perfectionistic side of me is inclined to not want to put anything out at all if some part of it is going to be inaccurate or if I don't have all the answers. However I also realize that to not put anything out at all is even worse than putting out something that may have some wrong bits in it. So, here we are. If more insights and revelations come in I'll keep revising and adding to this book, as always…..

Appendix

In early versions of the book I used to have an Appendix, where I attempted to outline what my family and early life was like. This was because I realized that a lot of readers are going to be wondering about the rest of my background. What were the parents like? Are they aware of the weird stuff? What was the childhood like? What about my brother Joe? How did he become what he later became? What's the deal??

Unfortunately I was never able to do the story any justice (in my opinion) and in the end decided to yank the whole thing. But in short the previous version discussed my empty mother whose behavior over the years disintegrated into verbal/emotional/physical abuse and whom I've purposely had no relationship with for 20 years now. Often times she behaved like a hostile, mildly cognitively impaired five or six year old trapped in an adult's body. I've gotten feedback from some readers saying that when they read the earlier Appendix they were "gobsmacked" or got "wound up" in an agitated way about the things that I described about my mom. The anecdotes were endless, and just when you thought it couldn't get crazier, it did. She behaves like a caricature. It's so far out into left field as to be almost unbelievable. (hmm…"the experiment"? Makes me wonder…) She wasn't a monster all the time, in fact she could drift along for periods at a time in this bland kind of empty state where she was relatively okay, for the most part, even being "happy." (though she still wasn't emotionally bonded with me and Joe even during these times, there was always an arm's length detachment.) Then she'd switch. Bland...hateful. Bland…hateful. In later years as she disintegrated the hateful periods were also accompanied with full on rampages.

The closest description I've come across that fits her is **Borderline Personality Disorder.** She was diagnosed by a psychiatrist when I was 17 as having a "personality disorder," but Borderline is the one that fits the most as I'd come to discover in my research. In one particular book I've come across, "Understanding the Borderline Mother: Helping Her Children Transcend the Intense, Unpredictable and Volatile Relationship" by Christine Ann Lawson, the author divides Borderline mothers into four main archetypal groups, and the one that she terms "The Queen" was the most spot-on for my mother, whose primary state is emptiness and treats her kids as personal servants and who can never be pleased; along with "The Witch," who is hateful and goes on abusive rampages; and a dash of the paranoid, delusional, secretive "Hermit" thrown in there as well. The author had examples of the kinds of verbally abusive things that the Borderline mothers will say to her kids – usually one child in particular that she's singled out to be her target - and they were exact quotes my mom had said to me. The author also noted very specific types of behaviors that Borderline mothers will engage in, which were identical to my mom as well. It actually made me gasp out loud when I was flipping through the book at Barnes and Noble. It was like the author was a fly on our wall growing up. So if anybody out there has a crazy abusive Borderline mother – get this book. If nothing else it'll at least validate your experiences.

So yes, there's a reason I have zero relationship with her. It's a very unusual situation, as most people don't cut off contact with their own mothers, let alone do so when they're still young. But as a result of her increasingly abusive and mentally unstable behavior over the years I had no choice, and we had no bond anyway. We already had no bond by the time I was only six years old, and by the age of nine I was wishing to be out on my own, away from her and declaring that I hated her in my diary. By age ten I was already proclaiming to one of my friends at school that as soon as I could get away from her when I was older I would never talk to her again. Forget by the time I was a teen and how I felt about things then. I never internalized her treatment, thinking the problem was me the way a lot of kids do, I always knew it was her without a second hesitation, and knew that I needed to get away from her. I had a strong sense of self, feeling like an adult in a kids' body who knows better, so it pissed me off to have to be subjected to her.

And then I had a very real (unlike my mom), but also very damaged and flawed dad who in the end slipped under the waves, choosing oblivion. (In many ways he fits Christine Lawson's archetypal dad description of "The Fisherman," who lets the crazy abusive "Witch" mother wear the pants and just looks the other way and doesn't protect his kids, combined with the "Huntsman," the hardworking, ethical provider who emotionally distances himself from his family and also fails to protect his kids from the mother.) But we'll get more into him in a short bit.

And as far as my brother Joe goes…I wouldn't even know where to begin. I compiled a write up for myself to document his story and what happened there, but that's not for public consumption. A lot of it would actually be considered boring for most, as it's basically a sister's sentimental tribute to her kid brother. And then for the stuff that people would find exciting, involving his many – *many* – instances of cop dodging and criminal mayhem (or outright getting arrested) it's material that I don't want to put out there for the public. I have a "reader's digest condensed version" background on Joe that can be found at the beginning of my "Vortex" write up, so I'll just refer people to that if they're interested to hear a little more about him. **http://in2worlds.net/the-vortex** A mug shot for my brother from 2008, which appeared online for a news station that ran a story about his (petty) criminal activity also served as proof of sorts of what I'd been saying to Tom about my brother. As upsetting as that was to see (there's a part of me that will not stop seeing him as "my little brother", no matter what I've witnessed of him since that time) it was also finally some confirmation verifying what I'd been saying about him all these years. Official proof of something. As of right now I know that my brother's either had warrants for his arrest or been arrested in Connecticut, California, Oregon, Washington, Arizona, Georgia and Vermont, though he's lived/traveled in/to more states than that (including New Orleans, LA and Florida) and could very well have more. Those are just the ones I'm aware of through personal knowledge or internet research. He's been crisscrossing the country living as a wandering homeless vagrant I take it, since I ran for the hills from him back in 2002, making his living as a criminal it seems though he may have found legitimate work in the middle of that somewhere along the lines. I was shocked that he looked good in a recent mug shot from 2008, after living like that for years. He looked like he hadn't aged a day since I'd last seen him at age 21, in early 2002. He didn't look happy, but he looked good, considering. Part of me wanted to go find him and rescue him, the old programming holding strong, but I had to remind myself that Joe can't/won't shake the sociopathic behavior, and him being in my life means the cops will always be a regular fixture, as well as my life always being in danger, on top of him robbing me blind all the time and using me/manipulating me. He had no shame and minimal conscience by the time I last knew him in life. Anything I ever gave him, including two cars, he destroyed with no remorse.

Another major component of the original version of the Appendix centered on the personality training and rewiring that happened to change me from one thing into another. Lots of story there. A mix of unhappy home life and dysfunctional parents, living in a crappy, culturally dead small town in rural eastern Connecticut, and years of intense bullying by some kids who lived on our street, which went on for fully eight of the nine years we lived there in some form or another. And who knows what else that may have been going on "under the radar," as evidenced by this book, which has to be factored in. So by the time I was in my mid teens I was barely recognizable as the kid I started out as. As a child I was a sociable extrovert, very conscious and sharp. (a couple of times in this book I talk about being conscious enough to have memories as a baby, which is apparently rare, but that's a major component of this sharpness.) But by the teen I was in an introverted, zombified stupor, all my walls on lockdown. During the time period between 15-17, overlapping between Connecticut and California, I have memories that are missing either the beginning, or the resolution, where I no longer remember the why's and how's, or where entire weeks of my high school experience are gone. I don't know, I don't remember, because even though my body was there, my consciousness was off somewhere else. (as evidenced by failing out of most of my classes after we moved to California. !!! In 11th grade I had no idea what was going on half the time, didn't know about homework, or tests, a kid would come up to me to ask me something and I had no idea who they even were….they're in my class?...?? huh? Things would sound far away while I sat there in class, distorted, like a fog.) "She's not there….." as the song goes. That was me. I even forgot to eat for a period of time apparently. I just know that one day in October of 11th grade I realized that my body looked a bit emaciated in my bedroom mirror. I finally *saw* myself and got on the bathroom scale where I saw that I had dropped down to 97-98 pounds, from my normal 105-106. (may not sound like much but I was only 5′2″ at the time, so, it's not like I had much to spare. O.o) Realized I couldn't remember eating anything recently….or remember much of anything that had been going on at all in general.

Yet conversely I was (mostly) "there" for my after school job. Don't know why the paradox/contradiction, unless it's because my job was something enjoyable, unlike the home life and school. Things only started to change for me by my senior year, and got better from there, improving every year.

And then there was the whole way in which me and Joe were kept isolated away from most all of our entire family, save for only our maternal grandmother, but even that was spotty depending on whether my mom was getting along with her or not. So I have grandparents, aunts, uncles, cousins, etc. on both sides of the family, including a half sister, that I've never met and never will due to that whole deal, or where we did meet them when I was really young back in Massachusetts, but then things got cut off and I never saw them again to this day.

So obviously it's a lot of story. But for this latest version of my book what I've decided to do is just to focus on my dad, eliminating most of the childhood and upbringing aspect of the tale. Both are equally important, but since I can't do the whole story any justice, without coming across as "woe is me" then let's just focus on his background since I reference it several times throughout this book. He's an integral piece of the puzzle. The story didn't start with me, and I feel that it's important for readers to understand that we need to be looking at our parents – and maybe even further up the family tree, depending - if we want a more complete picture of what's going on. *Especially* if one's parents were in the military, and even more so if they were in military intelligence, like my dad was. I think it's safe to say that for anyone who considers themselves to be an alien contactee or a MILAB that the story started before they were even born.

Much of the following is taken from the first versions of the Appendix, so anybody who read that way back when may remember it. However there's new add-ons and commentary.

*****

My parents were avid believers in "the weird" and didn't harbor negative superstitious attitudes in regards to these topics. In fact, it was quite the opposite. Ghosts, psychic powers, UFOs/aliens, reincarnation – my parents were definitely open to these topics and didn't bat an eye at any of it, and never questioned me when I was checking books out of the library about it all. If anything, they inadvertently encouraged my interest in the subjects by theorizing about these subjects at the dinner table. Psychic powers and stories of mom Christine's psychic experiences as well as my grandma and great-grandma; past lives, and my parent's random memories of such;

UFOs, and my dad Bob's recounting of his one big UFO experience while in the military; Haunted houses and ghosts – and the haunted house my dad lived in from the ages of 10-18. Then there was my dad's astral travel experiences ("flying" as he called it) and his own demonstrated psychic abilities. And so on. I heard it all. It was my Dad who first taught me about how Man has made incredible technological jumps in the 20th century, and theorizing that it probably came from aliens. I was probably one of the few kids who even had the concept of the vast leaps that humans have taken in such a short time span…and had family that concluded that it came about through alien intelligences…and talked about it at the dinner table. I was into anything on TV or in the movies that related to the paranormal. "Close Encounters of the Third Kind," "Poltergeist" and "Raiders of the Lost Ark" were my all time favorite movies by the age of ten. Also by the age of ten and eleven, I'd worked my way through most of the books on the subjects of aliens, UFOs, abductions, ghosts, psychic powers, and the paranormal that you can possibly think of that our tiny local library had in stock…in the grown up section. And I just loved those "Time-Life Mysteries of the Unknown" series. ;) By 7th grade I gave a report in one of my classes outlining various psychic powers. In 10th and 11th grades, both Connecticut and California, it was the reports about UFOs and aliens. And in 12th grade it was something paranormal woo-woo, can't even remember what. It was during our psychology class' two week foray into parapsychology, and all I remember is that my report sparked an interactive discussion where our teacher and the entire class were all sidetracked, talking about paranormal woo-woo for the rest of the period. :D (Let's hear it for Mr. Beidler. Probably the only time in the mainstream public school system where kids were encouraged to discuss ghosts and psychic powers and learned how to dowse the human body's energy with metal coat hangers.) But there was a need to talk about these subjects and to "wake others up." I didn't much like the fact that the every day real world (at that time) didn't talk about these subjects, and in an open way. The shallow, mainstream, trivial boring stuff of money, college, economics, politics…my attitude was, who cares??! To me, the only subjects that felt real were the things that the majority of society wasn't comfortable talking about and didn't believe in. At this point in the 2000's things have changed for the better, with a less repressive environment for discussing these things, which is good.

Yet there was an odd paradox with my parents, because they weren't New Age hippy dippies, which is the typical stereotype for people who are interested in those subjects and discuss them openly. They just, for whatever reason, were into these subjects. For my dad it'll become obvious why in a short bit.

At a private gathering in 2005 of free-thinking people who are into "the strange," for lack of a better way to put it, one older guy in his 50's made small talk with me by asking if I was interested in the subject of aliens and UFOs. It came about because I recommended the book he was flipping through, "Rule by Secrecy," by Jim Marrs. So when he asked that question I kind of laughed, and inside my head I rolled my eyes. I hesitated before answering. I was 30 years old at the time, and I'd been researching aliens and UFOs since I was nine. I'd read so much by this point that I couldn't honestly claim to be "actively" interested in aliens anymore. In fact, the subject was tired and worn out to me. Nevertheless, I said "Yeah, sure," nodding.

"So what got you interested?" he smiled, curious.

"My parents actually," I said, realizing it consciously for the first time. I had independent interest in it, but because of their acceptance of it all and the stories they shared and the movies we were watching, it quadrupled my interest and encouraged what might have only been a passing fad in my life.

For some reason, this genuinely threw him off. His smile faded, and he looked puzzled.

"I started heavily researching aliens when I was nine, but to be honest, I'm not really that interested in it anymore," I elaborated. "I guess I'm just kind of over it at this point, you know?"

He still looked surprised, kind of like "Huh. Well alrighty then!" That was the end of that conversation. I wasn't purposely trying to shut him out, I was just being honest. I do think that he was expecting to hear that I'd only recently become open to the subject on a shallow surface level, and probably only due to some recent silly experience or something. When in fact I'd been researching these subjects for literally most of my life, was indirectly encouraged by my parents, and am completely embroiled in the whole abduction phenomenon. (Though I never realized it for most of my life.) As well as being matter-of-fact about it all. I guess all four are a little unusual.

*****

My dad Charles, but who goes by Bob, was born in December of 1949 in Manhattan, New York. He was the conservative Reagan Republican, former military (Navy, 1968-1972, Vietnam) from a Catholic background including Parochial school until 8th grade, back when they had nuns that could beat you up. Reading "Conservative Reagan Republican military Catholic" might conjure up images of uptightness, but he wasn't as bad as it sounds – he was raised Catholic as a boy, but that was later abandoned, and his family was a dysfunctional mess. His stories were always so much fun to listen to when I was a kid. They all seemed to center around drinking, fighting, boinking, and playing in two different bands. (mostly guitar, but apparently some drums, and singing too.) In between getting good grades in school though, because he was smart. He had the craziest stories, but they were the best. There's a lot to say about my dad and his dysfunctional family and the life he had, but I'm going to skip over most of it and keep this to the bare bones minimum.

My dad's early childhood was spent in New York City, in Manhattan. His own father, my grandfather, was half Italian from his immigrant dad, half Hungarian from his immigrant mom, and he was also former Navy, and a bit on the crazy side. (I'm not going to be mentioning names of other family members to keep it as anonymous as possible.) My grandfather had a hellacious temper, inherited from his own father, which involved a lot of corporal punishment on my dad you could say. Very strict, no messing around, a bit abusive. My dad and grandfather weren't close at all, and did not have a good father-son relationship and spent years estranged from each other.

My dad's mom was of English descent from a family line that at one point was pedigreed, and had ties to George Washington and King George III way back when – red coat "tories" in the Revolutionary War. I've always wondered if that part of the family had anything else besides English going on with their ancestry, especially since they've been rooted in the U.S. since the 1600s, but there's no way to know at this point.

So that's my dad's ancestry, English, Italian and Hungarian. He and his two sisters were skinny and all had blond hair, tan/olive skin and brown eyes, everything I would later inherit.

In retrospect, with what I know now, it's safe to say that my entire family has been involved in abductions – especially my dad - although they consciously didn't realize it. It seems my Dad had gotten the interest of "something" dating back to when he was just a kid, growing up in New York. Like father, like child, and so his abilities and weirdness were passed on to the next generation, to my brother and I. My dad could have gotten the attention of "stuff" possibly due to any or all of the following: 1) His dad had also been in the Navy (meaning, possible MILABS situation going on); 2) He had natural psychic abilities which attracted the attention of "them," whatever "them" is; and 3) He lived in the Hudson Valley area of New York - New York, and the Hudson Valley in particular, is supposed to be a hotbed of UFO/base activity. A recommended book by Ellen Crystall called "Silent Invasion" details the UFO craziness that was going on in the Pine Bush/Hudson Valley area in the 80s…she even specifically mentions Middletown, New York, where I was born.

My dad once relayed a strange experience that took place in a park when he was little, maybe around eight or nine. It was in the late afternoon/early evening, and involved something with his "vision," and things looking really different, not normal. He had a difficult time trying to explain to me what exactly happened, but basically he wasn't seeing things correctly. Everything looked strange and bizarre. Sounds to me that he was possibly seeing a realm bleed through, I don't know.

From ages 10-18, after his parents' divorce, he lived in a raised ranch style - haunted - house in the suburbs of Monroe, New York with his mom, step dad and siblings (which now included three additional half sibs, for six kids total). The tract neighborhood was brand spanking new but apparently had been built right on what used to be a cemetery, alongside a creek. My dad figured this out when he and one of his sisters found broken pieces of headstones in the soil of their brand new, still grass-less "yards." Ooops. So they had years of paranormal experiences - lights coming on in the middle of the night, footsteps walking up and down the hallway, the temperature in his mom's room rapidly dropping, becoming as cold as a refrigerator to where you could see your breath…in the middle of July. Despite the fact they had no air conditioning. And more. I remember some vague story of something that happened one night in the backyard when he was a teen, some apparition, or lights, or who knows what that terrified him to the point where he had difficulty even explaining to me what exactly happened. I have no idea if these paranormal happenings related to the supposed cemetery that used to be there, or if it was for a completely different reason. In my research I've discovered that paranormal activity and UFO/alien activity usually go hand in hand. Where one is, the other is sure to follow.

After hitting puberty, he noticed that sometimes lights and electronic gadgets would turn off when he was in the room. I learned that after relaying to him over the phone how one time, my brother Joe turned the TV on with his mind when he was twelve, back when we were living in SoCal. Joe got so weirded out by it his eyes got big and his face froze and he slipped out of the room to go hide upstairs in his own room. My dad smiled over the phone when I told him that and wistfully relayed that when he was that age, it was the opposite. Stuff would shut off when he was around.

By the time he was sixteen, he was giving a report in his 10th grade class explaining that there were secret **"underground facilities"** located within the Adirondack Mountains - yet he didn't know how he knew this. He just knew it, and apparently felt compelled to share what he knew and wake others up. (Adirondack, because he lived in New York.) But for that reason, not being able to explain how he knew this or offering up any proof, his teacher ridiculed him in front of the class. I would love to have seen a copy of that report. Very interesting. Sounds a lot like me when I was a kid. I've often wished if only I could have known my dad when he was young, and been the same age as him at the same time. I would have had his back in that class! :D

When he was a senior in high school he began dating my mom Christine who was four years younger than him. ie…..she was in 8th grade. O.o This is something I only just recently realized. I used to always think she was a freshman while he was a senior, which is still a little eyebrow raising, but I realized that the dates didn't add up. If he was 1964-1968, and she was 1968-1972, then there's no way they were in high school at the same time. When she was starting high school in the fall of '68 he had already graduated earlier that year in June. That's just wild to me. !!!

The both of them coming together is a whole story in itself I suppose, because both had some majorly dysfunctional family backgrounds going on. But what's relevant for this is the way in which my dad would tell her, with a straight face, that he was an alien. Why, I don't know, though she of course knew he was goofing on her. But she went on to say that he never let up on this "joke" either. So…was he just goofing? O.o :D Just seems to me to be an odd thing to joke about.

So if there was already something happening to him, then the situation certainly wasn't helped any when he enlisted in the Navy during Vietnam, in 1968. In the meantime, he and my mom stayed in touch, writing to each other during her entire four years of high school, even while both were dating and being with other people. Which is also wild to me. The idea that they clung on to the idea of each other, even though they'd only dated for a little bit while she was in 8th grade, and he a senior. But by enlisting and willingly offering himself up to the U.S. government as he did, versus being drafted, it helped ensure that he would be treated better, and stay out of harm's way. In theory. He enlisted as a "Communications Technician", i.e., a "tech personnel." Spying, to put it more bluntly, working in matters of intelligence, intercepting Morse code messages, and translating those Morse code messages into type. It's not a job anybody can do, but he was able to do it, and do it well. He was so fast that he would finish a line of type, yank his hands back off the type keys, and the typewriter would still be pounding away, trying to catch up. I remember him demonstrating for me as a kid what that was like, even imitating the hypnotic trance-like look on his face that he would have as he'd throw his head back, eyes half closed, arms and hands lifting off the type keys. He was proud - and rightly so. Most people can barely type. Let alone know Morse code. Let alone be able to translate Morse code at something like 80 or 90 wpm typing speed. I would later come across the work of Joseph McMoneagle, who'd worked as a remote viewer for the U.S. government, who described in his book "The Stargate Chronicles" what a tremendously difficult feat it was to master translating Morse code into type. It was something McMoneagle worked and worked on, his speed slowly increasing over time, with much effort. So for my dad to perform the way he did with such apparent ease is insanity. I know he's proud, but I don't think he comprehends the full extent of what he was able to do.

After his four years were up, my dad returned to the States in May of '72, and he and my mom were married only two months later. Right after my mom graduated high school. They wasted no time. Again, more wildness to me. I was born two and half years later, in November of '74. A big part of marrying him so young I think was to get away from her crazy family who was completely useless in terms of helping her out in life and being healthy, normal, loving and supportive (hence, why she's Borderline Personality Disorder…there's a lot of abuse and trauma in her background) and because her personality wasn't the type that was strong enough to be out on her own. Years later she would resentfully tell me that if she could go back and do it all over again she wouldn't have me or my brother, and that she should have pursued working in NYC as a secretary on Wall Street, not marrying, not having kids. But the fact of the matter is, if she could have done it then she would have. The fact that she didn't says everything. As an adult I look back on her life and I understand that because she had no model for what a normal, loving, healthy mother was it's a wonder she even managed to function at all as a mother, and because her family was never there for here, literally, ever, she had no model for what it is to be loving, supportive and normal towards her own kids. There was nothing in her background to show her "how to be in a healthy family."

As mentioned earlier in this piece, when you do the research into government/military mind control experimentation, the Navy comes up time and time again as being a culprit. Back in 2002 I hit the goldmine when I stumbled across a piece that mentioned the Navy performing mind control experimentation way back when on what of all people but…

their tech personnel.

When I broached this subject with my Dad one afternoon on the phone back in 2002, during the one year period when we were back in contact with each other, it brought stuff to the surface, and things began pouring out. Without warning, he started ticking off all kinds of weirdness he remembered from throughout his entire life, including some of the incidents mentioned earlier, and on into his time in the military. As he started relaying these bits and pieces to me on the phone I realized what I was hearing and did a mad scramble for my notebook and a pen with one hand, while holding the phone with the other, so I could take notes but without interrupting him and risk breaking the flow of information that was coming out. This was NOT stuff I wanted to miss or forget. I'm extremely glad I had the smarts to do that. Over the years I've been prone to letting opportunities slip through my fingers but this wasn't one of those times. In 2003 I had (yet another) falling out with my dad, and have been out of contact with him since that time, so this was all I managed to get before that occurred. And what I got that afternoon is the following **(phrases in**

quotations are direct quotes from him):

After my dad enlisted and took his IQ and military aptitude tests, he was basically whisked away, you could say. He didn't have to go to school for training that everybody else did - somehow "got to skip that part." He even noticed this, but didn't question it too much. But what he does know is that his four year tour of duty was filled with strange happenings and preferential treatment. "Got the choicest places to be stationed" such as Germany, San Diego, and then Pensacola Florida for six months…in the winter. Concerning Florida in the winter, a buddy of his even joked, "Who are you blowin' to get *that*?!?" He even had his choice granted of being on planes, rather than on ships.

The weird thing about Germany is that he and one of his buddies spent Christmas at the house of an American couple that offered to host some American military personnel in their home for the Christmas holiday. Twenty five years later, at the factory that my Dad now manages in Connecticut, one of the new women working there looked vaguely familiar to him. Only to find out that she was the American woman who hosted him in her home, twenty five years earlier, on another continent. Now, what are the odds. Makes me wonder if she had a secondary purpose. Mind control handler? Keeping tabs on him? Because again, what are the odds. That doesn't just happen. It's astronomical. He just accepted it though. "Moving along….."

Then there was the incident he relayed that for me, cemented my suspicions about him possibly being taken and experimented with. Him and his buddy Hopkins, as he called him, were out late one night, and as far as he recalls they went to sleep back at the barracks. However, the next morning both of them were "wound up like eight day clocks!" and "were able to read each others' minds" all day long. (Amped up psychic abilities, basically.) They had SO much energy, and feelings of positiveness, "like the world was wonderful and beautiful," "boundless energy," "but not like a jittery caffeine energy. It was different."

Something obviously occurred between the time they went to bed and when they awoke the next morning. And logic would dictate that it couldn't have been the only time this ever happened, either.

Overall his experience in the Navy was pretty good he said, compared to what other people went through in Vietnam. A lot of partying, women, and good times, "kind of a breeze."

Another miscellaneous odd item worth noting about my dad during his military stint was his big "UFO encounter," which he told me about when I was a kid. At a military base in Vietnam or the Philippines, can't remember which one because he was stationed in both places at various points, two UFOs appeared and parked themselves over the base one night. Not registering on radar, of course. The people inside the base had to be "manually notified" you could say, because they saw nothing appearing on radar and had no clue what was transpiring outside. And out of everybody who could have been standing underneath these UFOs, guess who it was. My dad, and one of his buddies. They stood looking up at these UFOs, clutching their rifles, frozen with fear in a weird stand off. At that point, fighter jets were scrambled to go up after them, and then the UFOs took off. "zzzzip" over the hills, as I remember my dad telling me as a kid. Gone in a blink. The jets had barely pulled themselves off the ground and the UFOs were already gone. That seems a bit odd that it was my dad of all people – the guy who used to "joke" to my mom when they were dating that he was an alien, and who had inexplicable knowledge as a teen of underground facilities in the Adirondack Mountains – who found himself standing right underneath these UFOs. And I do wonder what, if anything, could have been passed along to my dad, any kind of communication transfer of some sort...? You never know. It's all just very strange.

I also learned at this time that even though he was in the Navy, he didn't actually report to the Navy. **He reported to the NSA**. I never knew that, not that it would have meant anything to me years ago anyway. I had no clue back then of anything. But I do now. Navy reporting to the NSA sounds to me like "The Department of the Navy," which is different from the regular Navy, I've since learned. The Department of the Navy is always coming up in my research as being "up to no good." After learning that I was left wondering, What are the odds that me, being who I am, would have dated my ex-boyfriend Steve whose dad is NSA…and only to find out after the fact that my dad technically worked for the NSA as well. If there's even some sort of connection there, I don't know.

My dad went on to stress several times that his **"whole life has been protected."** Time and again he's had close calls and near death moments, only to be plucked out. This luck with mortality extends into being overall very lucky in life. Says it seems like he "can do no wrong" in life. Relayed stories about his (then) recent speeding ticket just being…thrown out of court. There was some problem involving an electrical power line outside his house, don't know exactly what he was talking about other than that the problem mysteriously "fixed itself." And in general, he realized that in his life everything always works out for him. Like something is watching over his shoulder.

Over the years he's relayed several of these near-death moments where "something" rescued him at the last moment, or where it was like there was a bubble of protection around him. One of those instances occurred when my dad was very little, and still living in Manhattan. He remembers standing in the open apartment window looking outside…then feeling a hand shove him from behind. As he lurched forward, about to pitch out the window to his death, another invisible hand yanked him back in. Had Scarlet Fever at age seven, but lived. (Thanks to antibiotics of course, but, maybe he had a little extra help.) Hopping trains one time as a kid in New York and he had the "urge" to jump off right at a particular moment. When he landed on the ground and looked up, there was a large post right there along the tracks that would have smacked into him and killed him had he not jumped right then. In Vietnam, a plane he was in was shot down - four out of seven in the plane were killed, but not my dad. He was plucked from the river, floating in jet fuel. Standing on the riverbank in the jungle, and a grenade goes off right next to him, killing his buddy who was standing right there. Doesn't touch a hair on my dad. And the time when I was a baby and he was driving back home in the middle of the night after visiting my maternal grandmother who lived in North Carolina at the time. We were on the 95 North, at the junction of the 95 and 295, going 70, 80 mph according to him. My dad realized he was in the wrong turn lane, but it was too late to swerve. He tried anyway though, not thinking clearly, then realized at the last moment that he wasn't going to make it and was going to smash right into the divider. But next thing he knows, he was safely on the highway, heading north. No recollection of what happened in between the moment when he was going to impact the median, to the moment when the car was safely back on the highway like nothing had happened. He had this feeling, or a voice of some sort come over him that said "everything is going to be okay, don't worry..." He and my mom looked at each other, wide eyed. She promptly fell asleep after that. And they never discussed the incident again. On the phone with me in 2002 was the first time he was talking about it out loud to anybody in 27 years.

My regret is not having followed up with my dad in a later phone conversation to press for more stories from him. I should have formulated some questions, but I didn't have enough knowledge and information at that point to even know what to ask him. Although I did broach the subject of military mind control on several later occasions with him over the phone, but none of those phone calls ever elicited the response that I got on that one rare occasion. The last time I recall mentioning the subject to him he finished my sentence for me, showing me that he was aware of the subject and remembered what I had to say about it previously…..but his voice showed that he sounded skeptical and detached. Kind of like he was slipping back into oblivious denial. Not interested. Moving on. Next. Even though it was he himself who had offered up all these amazing stories during a previous call. My dad was settled in to his life with his second wife and their daughter, who at that point was six years old, in a modest, custom made house in southern Connecticut. He had his long standing job that he'd been at since 1989 as one of the head supervisors in a manufacturing plant, running the place, and life was for all intents and purposes, normal. So, not interested in rocking the boat I guess, keep up the normal routine of things, keep everything moving along, same as it ever was. (to quote a Talking Heads song ;)) Which I can partly understand.

*****

The last time I actually spoke to my dad was February 2003; then he dropped out of the picture and I didn't hear from him again until July of that year, via email, and I admittedly didn't respond very nicely, but I had my reasons. (though at this point in life, almost eight years later, it's safe to say that I would respond differently.) And it was the nail in the coffin of our relationship, twelve years in the making, going back to 1991 when my mom moved my brother and myself to California after the divorce. What's interesting to note is that those times my dad was sporadically contacting me in 2002-2003 while I was in Florida, it eventually got so that it was around the 20th of the month. Like clockwork, **like a schedule.** My abductions, or whatever it was that was going on, I would later learn also coincided at that point in my life on either the 1st-3rd of each month…or the **20th** –

23rd. It was an odd coincidence, no doubt.

(And on a miscellaneous side note, back in late 2001 I discovered that my dad's phone extension at work was……**141**. Of all numbers. **http://www.in2worlds.net/numbersightings** The odds on that one are pretty amazing. When I told my brother Joe about it in Portland he just stared at me, deadpan, not believing me. He made me redial the number so he could hear the voicemail recording for himself that says my dad's name, followed by "141." When I realized what his phone extension was back in 2002 my first thought was **"Oh, they got to you too."** In my opinion, it was a "fingerprint" indicating something at work in his life. He'd been compromised.)

I finally parted ways because the situation with him had become too intolerably weird for me. One of the most notable things was that during the time period when I was in the process of moving cross country from Oregon to Florida, and was back in contact with him via the cell phone I had at that time, I discovered that he was suddenly "on the same page" as me in terms of being a newfound conspiracy theorist. In fact he described a book that he'd just finished reading that I thought must be David Icke, based on the subject matter (Illuminati runs the world, spawned from earlier Middle Eastern roots, linked up to non-humans), but he insisted that no, it wasn't. I later figured out that the book he was describing was Jim Marrs' "Rule by Secrecy," a book I myself crossed paths with a few months later in Florida. So now he was coincidentally into researching conspiracies, same as me. (Seems to be the same "mirroring" pattern that Joe displayed when I first got him back to Cali in 2000.) But even though he supposedly was now into conspiracy theories, he was only interested in a "surface scratching" way, not in any real meaningful way. Just enough to superficially "match" me I guess.

Then the weirdest part of all. After I got to Florida and was waiting for Tom to come join me I'd of course mention Tom to him in our phone calls, excited. And every single time I'd mention Tom's name he would get silent. Then change the subject. Even more bizarre….on several occasions he changed the subject onto my old friend Mike, back in California. Mike, whom he's never met, and never will, whom he's never even *talked* to, doesn't know what he looks like and knows nothing about him, and whom he had no interest in during the eight years that Mike actually was in my life back when I lived in Cali. Now suddenly in 2002 he had developed this weird obsession with Mike.

(Me) “blah blah blah…Tom!”
(Dad) silence…..“So uh, yeah, does Mike plan to visit you in Florida?”

Or,

(Me) “blah blah blah….Tom!!!”
(Dad) silence……”So have you heard from Mike lately?”

Every single time I ever mentioned the word “Tom” my dad would do this routine, going silent, and either change the subject onto something else, or switch focus onto Mike. It was probably one of the nuttiest things I’ve ever experienced with him. In the year that he was back in my life, before I walked away again, **he never once at any point acknowledged Tom.** Even after Tom got to Florida and we were officially together as a couple. Never asked about him, and always skipped over any mention of him, like a robot that couldn’t compute. Once I realized this was the case I just no longer talked about Tom, because there obviously was no point. He’d made it clear he wasn’t interested. When I mentioned this nuttiness to Mike on the phone Mike’s response was “Something’s interested in me, and I don’t like it.” So Mike’s interpretation of this was that “something” was probing through my dad to find out about the situation between me and Mike, and whether Mike was still going to be around in the picture, and if so, to what capacity. Had we talked? Were we going to be visiting? Had I heard from him? So strange. I don’t know what to make of it all. If it was indeed probing, then why? The only thing I can think of is that it’s possibly because of the role that Mike had played in my life. Mike had been my lifeline in California, somebody whom I “recognized” from the first moment I met him, feeling instantly at ease as if we went waaaay back, coming into my life during a crucial, precarious time period when I had nobody else to help me. (I get into him in more detail in my “Miscellaneous Stories of the Weird and Unusual” free e-book on my site.) Though once again, it’s not like my dad cared or paid attention to Mike and his role in things way back when.

The other major oddity was that I pretty much couldn’t say anything to him without him interrupting and going on a sidetrack tangent of some sort. Nearly every single thing I’d say would remind him of something or other and spark a sidetrack tangent, to which I'd get quiet, and let him go on and on and on, until he finally would get silent and go "ANYway, you were saying…" Then I'd continue, only to interrupted again, and again. So having an actual real conversation was usually not possible. This wasn't something he used to ever do, but it was his new habit you could say. And then there were the strange out of place questions. "So, do you still like that grunge music?" To which I went "What?" Like, Hanh? There was silence. "You mean, the music from *twelve years ago??"* More silence. We'd only been out of contact with each other for two years, between 2000-2002, **but yet he was acting as if we hadn't been in contact throughout the entire 90s** and was asking if I was still into music from like, 1991. o_O

So needless to say, during that year we were back in contact I would always hang up the phone after our calls with my skin being flushed, feeling hot, which for me means stress and agitation (and/or a side effect of being under psychic attack). On a subliminal/subconscious level something was registering with me as being really wrong or off.

In retrospect I'd have to say that his whole way of being was a computer that had been programmed and was **"running scripts."** There was never any real feeling behind his words, and he always seemed passive and detached. I never actually felt like I was really talking to my dad, there was no real connection happening between us. It was really like I was talking to an inanimate object. I didn't feel anything there with my feelers. Our phone calls, with that one rare exception where he revealed interesting insights, were totally pointless. And of course, factoring in the "refusal to acknowledge Tom" thing, and strange obsession with Mike after I first moved to Florida, and always interrupting and preventing a real conversation of any sort, and seeming to be stuck in the waaaay past as if the in-between hadn't happened, and all of it together caused me to feel stressed and flushed after every call. Since reading "The Mothman Prophesies," and in light of my half sister's discovery that my dad has no knowledge of what's gone wrong between us, I've gone as far as to wonder if I was actually even talking to my dad. After reading about John Keel's experiences with "phony phone calls" where somebody who sounded identical to a person that he knows was talking to him for entire phone conversations, only to find out after the fact that said person never talked to John, or the vice versa situation of people claiming to have talked to John Keel on the phone which he had no knowledge of, then yeah, I've had to wonder if something like this wasn't going on in my own situation. The other possibility is that something else was piloting his wheel during those calls and speaking to me through him. Or maybe it was an alter persona of some sort.

But before the end, before I walked away for the final time, he was telling me some very eye opening things. **"I do stuff, then forget doing it,"** he said, such as re-wiring all the electrical in his mom's house, or fixing broken computers for his family - **skills he didn't even know he had.** (btw, these insights and quotes were told to me during the same phone conversation when I grabbed a notebook and took notes while he talked.) When he's in crowds, he feels like he's "in a dream world," thing are "not real," he's just "going through the motions, like a leaf blowing through the breeze." He's **"here but not here," "I feel like I'm in a play,"** and that in general, **"things are predetermined."** "I don't remember half of what I do anymore" but it's not Alzheimer's he says, because stuff does get done…**he just doesn't remember doing it.** Like with the hard drive in his computer – he doesn't remember how he fixed it. When he looked at it he couldn't figure it out to save his life. But yet, it's fixed. He did it, according to those who saw him do it. (on a side note – years back he relayed an experience pertaining to "waking up" one day and realizing he'd been in that horrible marriage to my mom for so long. It was like….."he woke up." He felt as if he was emerging from a fifteen year dream, like "WHAT AM I *DOING?* It's not supposed to BE like this!!!" And that was the beginning of the end.)

Black out periods/missing chunks of one's life/missing time, feeling as if in a dream state, feeling as if "waking up," and *especially* skills from an unknown source (of which my brother also demonstrated) are classic indicators a programmed, compartmentalized mind. My dad has definitely shown signs of this for years, as evident by his two personality sides. There was nice, dippy, dopey, passive and oblivious dad who drifted along in a daze (trance?) not noticing things he should have noticed, and then there was mean dad. Mean dad was sharp, on the ball, with a disdainful, sourpuss face and disposition of a bear (or as my maternal grandmother referred to him behind his back – an ogre) who expected 110% perfection from me and acted as if he couldn't stand me and Joe. (As mentioned earlier in this book, the

"Thems" that I've experienced were *exactly* like this side of him. Identical. And that silver Cross brand pen that was tossed at me in an elevator in Portland, Oregon, mentioned in Part II was "coincidentally" my dad's exact same favorite pen type.) But that's the side of him that drove me to become the meek, unquestioning robot computer super achiever in school. The mean dad side was very harsh, critical and judgmental. Not a nice person. When my dad flip flopped it wasn't as pronounced as my mom would later be, it wasn't like a dark cloud would just descend over him and where he'd change from one second to the next……..which was how she was. His was more of a gradual slipping around between personas.

Another perfect example of "split personality dad" concerns the subject of sex. This anecdote was also mentioned in the original version of the appendix. The preface to the tale is as follows: One night out of nowhere when I was 15 or so, my mom sat me down at the kitchen table and proceeded to inform me, general paraphrase, that I should sleep with guys before I get married because otherwise I would be missing out on what that is like, and it could create problems. I just sat there in my usual trance-like blank stupor of that time, listening to this, and having no idea why she was telling me this. There wasn't any passion or emotion behind her words, she just relayed this piece of "advise" blankly and monotone. I listened until she was done, just kind of nodded in a daze, then slowly and silently got up and went back upstairs to my room.

Within a week my dad then proceeded to do the same thing. Sat me down at the kitchen table, and began advising me about how I should sleep with guys before I get married, because when people get married as virgins they later begin to wonder what they missed out on and it causes problems, etc. etc. etc. It was bad enough hearing this from my mom when we despised each other, but to hear it from my *dad*….it was just downright embarrassing. His voice was also blank, emotionless, monotone, and his eyes were far away, not even really seeing me as I sat across from him. It was like they were both programmed to tell me this, and just responded to it like good little programmed, tranced out monkeys. I sat there in silence, nodded when he was done, then got up and returned to my room.

Flash forward to tenth grade, age 16, where he was advising me on what the most sensitive part of a penis is to focus on during sex. Under the head, he told me. That's the spot. I'm not even kidding. I forgot about this for years until about 2007. I was doing volunteer work one afternoon sorting books for a "books or prisoners" program I used to like to help out with, and I came across something in one of the books I was sorting that triggered the memory. When I remembered it my face immediately became hot, and this surge of total embarrassment surged through me, actually making me catch my breath a little. Back when this conversation somehow happened when I was 16 I just stood there in the kitchen looking at him as he told me this, feeling blank, like, "okay." Not saying anything back, then the subject changed. Now as an adult in my 30s I'm very different, no longer numb and tranced out, very much "here" and aware and feeling things, so I felt a surge of embarrassment. I wouldn't say that the memory was actually suppressed or anything, and taken to that severe of a level, because it didn't traumatize me or anything back when it happened (which is usually the cause of suppressed memories). The memory felt like it had always been kicking around in my mind, I just hadn't thought about it all these years until that moment, triggered by something I came across in a book. Then poof, there it was.

Then for the grand finale where the persona switch occurs, let's flash forward to age 20, when I'd now been living in California for four years. I was visiting my dad at his home in southern Connecticut for the summer of '95, along with my then-boyfriend Gary who'd come along. The whole trip was an ill conceived nightmare on my part, which I won't get into, but to make a long story short I was heading out one night to go visit Gary who was now staying at a motel. Gary had arrived with me in my car, and so he was essentially stranded in a motel in a strange state he'd never been to with no transportation, completely relying on me, and waiting for me. So after I was done with my work shift (as a waitress at a local restaurant, for the summer) I was heading out to go see him. And this made my dad completely lose his shit. I poked my head into the living room to say goodbye to him, and found him sitting on the couch staring straight ahead at the air, looking pissed. My Vietnamese step mother sat to his left, looking concerned and worried. I asked him what was wrong. His head turned towards me, eyes flashing, and that's where he proceeded to just lose it, spewing all this hateful rage at me for the fact I was leaving to go see Gary. He sounded like demon possessed, I'd never seen him get that bad, ever. He raged and spewed, on and on, and in the middle of the crazy diatribe I was called, among other things, "a fucking tramp!" At that point in his rant my stepmom gasped "BOB!" shocked and appalled, grabbing onto his arm. I let him rage and rage until he ran out of steam, sitting there on the couch staring at me with hateful eyes, waiting for me to respond….clearly wanting that knock down, drag out verbal brawl.

Instead I just stood there silently, watching him, a combination of wheels turning in my head, and numbed shock. Then without a word I turned, picked up my purse in the kitchen, and left, leaving him with his own words hanging in the air. I'm proud of my response in looking back, considering I was only 20. You don't play into stuff like that. It's a total set up. The only thing to do is walk away and not give it what it's looking for.

Tranced out dad sitting across from me at the kitchen table telling me I should sleep with guys before I get married, then later advising me on the best parts of the penis to focus on during sex. Then raging demon possessed dad screaming that I'm a fucking tramp for going to visit my boyfriend who was stranded in a strange motel in a strange state with no transportation, when I was a 20 year old grown adult who'd been on my own supporting myself since before I even graduated high school. This personality inconsistency absolutely *defined* both my parents though. In a way it really wasn't anything new. That was just the most extreme example of it with my dad. Fritz Springmeier talks about this too in his book "Illuminati Formula…" which I put in my "Recommended Reading section." Yet another thing he describes that I could relate to. The mind job programming where something is okay one day but not the next, and the general inconsistency and flip flopping back and forth in personality so the kid never knows what to expect and gets frazzled. Let your guard down then BOOM! switcharoo out of nowhere. By the end of me living at home with my mom in '92-'93 I learned the hard way about letting my guard down with her even when she was being "nice," because she'd shown that she could, and definitely would, switch from one second to the next. We could be having a rare nice moment, only to have her switch out of nowhere within seconds, like a dark cloud descending, totally ruining things as she would become hateful or irrational and crazy. My parents didn't start out that drastically inconsistent, per se, but definitely disintegrated into it as the years went by. But I don't think it was done consciously by them, it was more like side effects of their other "stuff" and problems.

My 13 year old half sister, whom I've never met but had been in contact with back in 2010 via email, has said the same thing I noticed about the two sides of our dad. Being 13 at the time she described him as if "he's a shape, with different sides to him." He flip flops from one day to the next and she never knows which "side" of the "shape" he's going to be. One day he's in a great mood, and laughs and jokes with her and where things are okay and acceptable, as she's relayed. He acts like her buddy, sharing his lighter with her, making dirty jokes, and all of her friends thinks he's so cool, as I've seen with their comments on her Facebook page. "I love your dad!" they'll respond when she quotes the latest off color humorous comment she heard him spout. The next day he's pissy and sniping at everything, and where things are suddenly not acceptable. (though apparently he's never taken the pissiness to the level that he would with me and my brother, saying the sorts of things he's said to us and calling her the sorts of names he's called me.) That's the side of him that hits the fan when she's busted for drugs at school and expelled for the rest of 7th grade. But who was the one loaning out his lighter to the 12, 13 year old in the first place, you know? Probably the same side of him that was later making jokes and being nonchalant as they sat around in the court room, waiting for my sister's case to be called. Flip flop, flip flop. (even I didn't experience that drastic level of "persona switching" when I was a kid. The dad I knew growing up is not the same dad she has. I was kept at the level of a small child by both my parents, something I got into in the original Appendix version, whereas with her he tells off color jokes and loans out his lighter, among other things. There seems to have been two different agendas going on when it comes to me and her. I have enough reason to believe she's already on the radar of "stuff." But then again being his offspring means it's pretty much guaranteed.)

But in general she still worships the ground he walks on, same as I did for so many years always chasing after him post-divorce. Same as Joe did, despite the fact our dad never had a close relationship with him. My dad has had that effect on all his kids. Something about him lures you in. He's real, and flawed, and he's had all these crazy experiences, and can be cool and fun, and is your buddy, teaching you things about the world, and it's all even more magnified when your mother is batshit crazy and has nothing going for her which makes him godlike by comparison. Then he turns. And for a sensitive kid it can be very upsetting.

Something my sister relayed to me is that in talking to my dad it seems he has no idea what the problem is between us. She broached the subject with him one day in the summer of '10 about why he and I have no relationship, trying to get his side of the story and perspective on things, and basically he was at a loss. So this means has no idea about the effects of his two sides (coupled with his uncaring obliviousness post divorce, which I don't even bother to try to get into here), even though I had told him point blank in an email back in 2000, after our first falling out. And it also means he doesn't recollect the crazy email he sent to me out of the blue in late fall 2004….sixteen months after my final email to him…..where he popped his top for no discernable reason, spewing hate and rage at me. The email arrived out of nowhere, with no provocation on a full moon of all nights, and I didn't even finish reading it once I realized he was reverting back to the old "mean dad rage spewing like demon possessed" persona. No thanks. Go find somebody else to abuse. Clicked off of it and deleted it. I didn't even want to leave it sitting in my in-box. Didn't respond back and play into the games and feed fest, because there's no point. I hadn't even seen the guy in ten years at that point and knew I never would again, making it all that much *more* pointless. Stuff was obviously using him and he just responded to it like a good little puppet on a string, not questioning anything and with no ability for self monitoring, totally playing into somebody else's agenda, as always. So like I told my sis, if he's at a loss for what the problem is then it means he doesn't recall sending that full moon crazy email, let alone anything else that's gone on over the years….of which I've already told him about like, ten years ago.

In a way it matched up to something I encountered with him on the phone during that one year period we were back in contact. I had broached the subject of a couple of things he'd said in the past (nothing that was discussed here, it was other stuff), and he sounded far away, apparently not remembering those things, and his tone of voice was very passive and just….kind of lost. I think he even said he didn't mean whatever he supposedly said. (and uh, I'd definitely disagree. When he was hatefully spitting things out, engaging in derogatory name calling, doing mocking impersonations of people, etc. etc. he definitely meant it. After all, one of my dad's favorite phrases used to be "Say what you mean and mean what you say!" Now suddenly it's a case of not having said what he really meant and not meaning what he said? ummmm.) One of the incidents in question happened only seven years before, the other twelve. So we're not talking thirty, forty years ago or something, so there was no reason not to remember.

Yet I believed him (and still do) when he said he had no idea and didn't mean whatever it was he supposedly said. He's not lying or just trying to feign a weak smooth-over. That's not his style. It's just that particular side of him I was speaking with on the phone at that moment really didn't say those things or mean it. Though the other side did. **Multiple personas,** all the way. So the question is, do I remain bitter for having a dad that's carried on the way he has? When it's now a little bit more clear that we're dealing with a situation of multiple personas, where right hand doesn't know what the left hand is doing? For the longest time it was hard to let things go as if they never happened, but having the knowledge and awareness of soul fragmentation, neg entity manipulation and attachments, mind control programming and multiple personas certainly does help. I think it pretty much explains everything.

*****

Earlier I mentioned the school conditioning I received, courtesy of my dad, to become a robot computer. Even though it's more of my own autobiographical happenings it's important to mention since it involves him, and is the perfect illustration of the "Thems" side of his personality. I'm going to copy and paste from a version of the Appendix that I have on my computer which gets into my entire story. Before I dive into this though I think it's also important to mention that while there was this aspect of him that behaved this way with regards to my schooling and brain molding, there was also a more positive manifestation of it. The positive side of him had a thirst for knowledge and loved to learn about the world, and he passed that along to me by taking the time to teach me things about all sorts of stuff when I was little. Whereas my mom had a depressed and angry personality that tended towards pushing me and Joe away so she could nap or veg out watching mindless entertainment programs and sitcoms, he took the time to teach me stuff. It wasn't anything that big or important, but he was always encouraging a curiosity about the world, and took initiative. He had enthusiasm for learning and wanted me to learn too. So in all fairness that's the positive aspect of what follows.

"Despite the relative good time that life was back in Massachusetts, there were definitely some emerging issues, especially when it came to school. By age five to six, "report card day" was already a highly stressful situation. Every year I was always chastised for "talking too much" and given lower marks in the category of "behavior" as a result. I learned to dread and fear report card day. (I had pre-first grade, unlike a lot of other kids, so that's where it started, continuing on into first.) My first grade teacher Miss Bruce even called my mom at home to complain about how much of a **"social butterfly"** I was. These complaints did NOT go over well with my parents, let's just put it that way, and I think if these teachers understood what sort of reaction they were provoking in my parents – and how I was going to later turn out by the time I was in high school, withdrawing into a tranced out zombie shell, deadened to the world, hardly talking at all - they would have kept quiet. But I remember sitting at the kitchen table with my mom completely freaking out and pacing around the kitchen yelling and screaming and berating, because one of my report cards said I "talked too much." *Just-Flipped-Out* on me, all the while threatening how much worse it was going to get when my dad got home from work. And sure enough, when he did, it was on and on and on and on and on, more screaming and berating. In a way you could say they were trying to terrorize me into submitting to how they wanted me to be. A pattern they utilized for years, keeping me in a terrorized, meek and obedient, completely controlled child-like state. They'd just go and go until they finally would run out of steam. Then I would scuttle back to my room, completely frazzled. Each and every report card day. Parent Teachers Conferences…….same deal. I remember sitting on a chair outside the classroom in the hallway during one of these after-hours school meetings, stomach completely in knots, nerves shot, psychologically frazzled at the prospect of what was to come, the screaming, the berating. The on and on and on. I didn't know how to not care. And I was never allowed not to. You would have thought I was a monster child, and performing poorly in school. In truth, I was always one of the smartest in my class, got high marks, was friendly and got on well with everybody, and I always had a wide assortment of friends, male and female, of different ages and backgrounds. My worst crime was being too social. Too friendly. Keep the straight A's, but ***stop talking. Stop being friendly.*** Personality conditioning. Reshaping, remolding. (The system as a whole attempts to do this to all kids in the modern school systems you could say, it's not just a "MILABs" thing.) In this case however there was an added element going on with my parents, where they acted very bizarrely, as if they themselves were programmed to condition my mind and instill certain personality traits in me, steering me in a very different direction then I would have wound up otherwise.

I may have only been six and only just learned how to add simple one digit numbers together, but my dad made sure I could add up a row of five or six numbers long, *carrying* the digits. Subtracting long numbers and *borrowing* digits……….AND teaching me how to check your work when you do subtraction. (you add the answer to the number you subtracted, and it should equal the number being subtracted from.. ;)) This….by first grade. So I was already a grade or two ahead most times with everything. I remember sitting at the kitchen table in Westfield having to work out math problems for so long that my little fingers literally, gave out, and I couldn't squeeze my fingers together anymore to hold the pencil. Meanwhile as my dad would get irritated and impatiently try to shoo me along into getting over it, ASAP, and keep going, get on with it. More math, more work.

On the one hand it's good that they were on top of my schooling and made sure I was smart. They liked to give me educational toys as well to play with, like that Disney pictorial map of the United States puzzle when I was seven, teaching me what all the states were and where they were located. And my mom was always bringing me to the library and buying me books galore. But they took things WAY too seriously.

The way in which I was "molded" and "shaped" as a kid seems in retrospect to be **"them"- style programming**. It started in Massachusetts, as mentioned, and by the time I was in Connecticut it escalated into expecting me to be a perfect straight-A super achiever brainiac who could memorize and regurgitate instantly, on cue. **A robot. A computer.** I was very intelligent, and had a thirsty mind and loved to read and learn, so in many ways I didn't mind "being smart." It came easy. But it had its unpleasant drawbacks. The most perfect example would be when I was learning the multiplication tables at age nine. Forget my hand becoming so weak that I could no longer even hold a pencil from all the math my dad would run me through. That was old news. Now we had……multiplication table memorization! I would stand before my dad as he wore his harsh, humorless "mean persona," rapid fire quizzing me. If I got an answer wrong – if I even so much as *hesitated*, or faltered in my response – I was sent back to my room while his face twisted in disdain. And this could go on for hours. Back and forth, back and forth, back and forth, back and forth, back and forth, back and forth. I remember at one point when I hesitated in an answer and he bellowed, **"I DON'T WANT YOU TO *THINK*! *I WANT YOU TO JUST* *KNOOOWW!*"**

Be a robot. **No thinking**. Just KNOW, and be able to instantly conjure up perfect answers, on cue, every time. (Picture the very fitting image of quickly snapping fingers, snap, snap, snap…) As mentioned it was like there were different personas going on with him. One was relaxed and easy going, the other was mean and disdainful, holding his daughter to ridiculous standards, where nothing was ever good enough. No matter how good you could be, his response was to cavalierly believe you should do better. And better. And better.

It worked though. I remember being in third grade and taking timed multiplication tests, and I was *always* the first one done, every single time. I could just crank through the answers like a computer, taking the timed aspect of the test seriously, as if my life depended on it. There were kids who weren't even finished when time was up, and then there was me, done with minutes and minutes to spare. I remember my teacher Mrs. Todd looking at me quizzically several times as my pencil went down way before everybody else in the class.

[….] On a random note was the idiosynchric game my dad used to like to play where he would ask me random trivia questions that I was expected to know the answers to…snap, snap, snap…off the top of my head. This started back in Massachusetts actually. Nothing bad would happen if I didn't – though it's not like it even occurred to me to go against anything anyway - it was presented as if it was just this fun little inside game we both had, so I never minded. But in retrospect, that's still kind of weird. I mean, who *doe*s that, you know? **Why would you want your kid to be a "memorize and regurgitate robot" who can generate answers perfectly on cue at any given moment, in pop-quiz fashion?** Years later I came across a mention of this style of "home programming" in the work of Fritz Springmeier. It was more of that "almost falling out of my chair" thing when I saw him talking about parents quizzing their kids (who were involved in military/government mind control programs) and making them know all sorts of weird, random trivia facts that they'd have to be able to regurgitate off the top of their heads at any given moment, snap, snap, snap. What are the odds?

Over the years I've heard many stories about kids who are bribed into getting good grades or rewarded in some way, and that's just very foreign to me. I was even told that there's no rewards for good performance. Why? Because it's expected. It's not something that should be some sort of big deal. So basically saying, You *will* perform perfectly, period. Because that's the way it is. There *is* no other option. I remember in eighth grade dropping from an A+ to an A- in some subject one quarter. Oh, that sure got the disdainful, verbal berating from him, on and on and on about "how many percentage points drop" an A+ to an A- was. Whereas other parents would just be happy that their kid even got an A, for my dad it wasn't good enough.

Second place in the 5th grade spelling bee…….1st place in 6th grade. Placed in the 8th grade beginner band (flute) while only in 4th grade. 1st place in 7th grade for the junior high writing contest for the entire school. Put into the "Gifted Program" in 6th, 7th and 8th grades. Member of the National Junior Honor Society in 8th grade and member of the "Academic Bowl" (quiz trivia team thing). Won all the local levels with the team and went on to participate in the Kids Quiz TV program filmed in Providence, Rhode Island. And we won. Always tested years above my level on those yearly "Iowa Tests of Basic Skills." By 4th grade I was testing at a 9th grade level in reading comprehension, vocabulary, writing and spelling. (due to being a voracious reader.) IQ tested sometime in grade school and apparently got a score that was high enough that my parents wouldn't tell me what it was, for fear of affecting me. So to this day I have no idea what I scored. I just remember my mom's infamous "deer caught in the headlights" look when I asked, and her refusal to say anything. So bizarre. IQ tests do have some validity, but on some level they're also just a test of how well you've been conformed to the system's way of thinking and perceiving reality. My dad had also tested high on his IQ tests in the past, to the point where he'd been invited to join Mensa. O.o He loved to poke fun at that for years, the old drinking, brawling and hell raising side of him rolling his eyes at the pomposity of a group of self designated geniuses sitting around basking in their own geniusness. ;D

Natural smartness inadvertently led to these sorts of "achievements" – and to not have achieved that stuff would have required mindful overriding and purposely screwing up in school, something that didn't cross my mind. In retrospect I wish I'd realized what was happening and purposely just gotten a C average, because once I established myself as being able to perform on that level the bar was raised by my parents, and it became expected that I perform at 120% all the time. It's the same lesson I learned the hard way in the working world, and what one very smart and observant male co-worker buddy named Ryan back in Florida once told me – never let on how smart you are. Don't do *anything* beyond the bare minimum of what's expected of you because then they just want you to do more, and more, and more. He also went on to talk about how after you establish yourself as being capable you then get promoted…and completely eaten up, spit out and then ultimately fired. Wise words, as I'd seen this for myself at several jobs, and in looking back it applied to my home life as well. The big lesson: **Stay as invisible as possible.**

(Later in life I would inadvertently attract to myself job situations that were exact replica of everything I'd known growing up. Jobs in SoCal where the pressure was on to be a super multi-tasking worker in super fast paced environments, going going going, where mistakes were not acceptable, supervised often times by these cold, robotic, fake puppet people "reptilian-esque" managers who didn't show appreciation or acknowledge a job well done, instead, focusing only on every little thing that employees did wrong and taking them for granted, and where I had to be on my toes, because the threat of being written up and/or coldly fired out of nowhere always loomed over my head. And not to sound like a self-help book, but several years ago I began examining my childhood in-depth and realized that I was attracting life situations that mirrored what I knew growing up….because that's all I knew, and so subconsciously I kept pulling it to me. Once I realized it though I was able to break out of it, and start creating new patterns for myself at better jobs with nice, relaxed environments. And at this point I no longer tolerate nonsense working environments and bosses anymore.)

[…] By 9th grade in Connecticut I'd completely turned my back on the "brainiac super achiever" persona that had been foisted upon me. Starting in 9th grade I got my first D, and then F, in Algebra….and to my absolute joy, I heard not one word about it from either parent. They were so wrapped up in their divorce drama that for once, there was almost zero attention on me anymore. To be left alone like that concerning school for the first time in my life was absolutely fantastic. In fact, it was during this time period that the domineering control issues with my parents did a 180 flip flop. Whereas once things were strict and oppressive, suddenly it was hands off. (Paradoxically the abuse issues with my mother went through the roof during this time, since we'd always hated each other anyway and now she was in the middle of divorcing my dad who I took after in terms of my overall looks. So I became her verbal punching bag and target of physical abuse since I was such a glaring reminder of him.) But as far as school itself went, for the most part they barely noticed.

In 10th grade my high school in Connecticut was seeking out "gifted" students to place in their newly formed gifted and talented program (the junior high had one, but not the high school), and so an IQ test was administered to everybody. I remember taking the test in English class and being the first one done…and promptly returned to my riveting novel that I was absorbed in. My pencil was down while everybody else was still slaving away, trying to figure things out. Later when the results were in I was given an invite in the form of some letter that was delivered to me in one of my classes to join their little "gifted program" for the few smart kids who'd gotten the highest scores in the school. I didn't even respond back. A big middle finger of indifference to the system that I'd been cornered into my whole life. And it was pretty much all downhill from there as far as school goes. ;D

Despite my dad's earlier training techniques for molding me into a computer-like super performer regurgitation machine, I still don't believe he was even consciously aware of what he was doing. Possibly he was told to be that way by "something," who knows what, because it serves valuable purposes, and so…he did, without any conscious realization of what he was doing, or ability to even question himself. It was like he would switch over into this pissy mean persona whenever he was being a slave driver with school.

On the one hand I want to dismiss the idea of him being under the influence of something else to mold my personality this way, because on the outset it does sound ludicrous, just so….farfetched. Really out there, especially considering we had such a seemingly boring life and nothing overtly obvious in terms of "weird" stuff going on. We didn't live on a military base. My dad wasn't actively involved in the military anymore at that point. So who were the mysterious "thems" that I'm alluding to then? Where were they coming from? I don't know. Yet on the other hand there's no denying for myself that this very unusual personality shaping was occurring. **If I can even suspect that I was being "taken," by humans or otherwise, due to those strange indicators as a child mentioned in Part II, then of course my parents would have been too.** I mean, what normal parent takes their kid's grammar school performance THAT seriously?? If their little girl doesn't get straight A's in grade school and perform like a human robot computer then the world will end? Come on now. So yeah, I've had to try to come up with some theory, and based on what I know now of the "Big Picture" in my 30s looking back with more puzzle pieces in place, stuff possibly seems to point to that, as much as I want to roll my eyes and think "That's *really* nuts." But I just keep remembering the line from "The Truman Show," spoken by Christoff, the "man behind the curtain" – **"We accept the reality of the world with which we're presented."** And if that reality has hidden stuff behind the scenes that we can't see, then of course it's not going to occur to us to think in those terms. Instead we will take what we're presented with at face value…no matter how weird and "off" it may be. And the idea of the other option will of course sound crazy.

So, possibly molding someone into a meek, powerless, completely controlled brainiac "memorize and regurgitate computer robot" at home, who jumps when snapped at and has been conditioned with screaming/terrorizing, spills over into their abduction programming and performance with their handlers. As mentioned earlier in my book, **"they" need people who don't think. They need people who mindlessly obey.** This is all just theory though, but one that I have to consider in light of everything else I now know. But, kudos do go to my dad though for not repeating the mistakes of his father, and his grandfather before him, who were both psychotically physically abusive. My crazy Italian immigrant great-grandfather kicked the shit out of my grandfather, who in turn kicked the shit out of my dad. My dad inherited their same hellacious temper…but refrained from kicking the shit out of me and my brother, although he did engage in questionable treatment of Joe, no doubt there. It just wasn't anything close to the level of his dad and grandfather.

I often look back on all of it and wonder what would have happened had I decided to rebel and not perform like their meek little robot. Just…refused. Basically, be the way my brother Joe was, because he didn't listen to anybody and would not be controlled, and didn't take anything seriously. That was just inconceivable though. The thought never even crossed my mind, such was the level of control I was under with the complete inability to even think for myself about the idea of rebelling in ANY sort of way. Lot of fear.

As a weird miscellaneous – and more positive – add on, another defining feature of my dad was card games. Since we had such an isolated existence and he liked his card games he taught me how to play, this way he'd have somebody to play against. So, I was his card buddy. (He also taught me chess, so I know all the basics of what the pieces are and how they move, though I know nothing of strategy and for that reason would never even attempt to play against anybody. ;D) He taught me Solitaire, Black Jack, Rummy, Crazy 8s…and Cribbage. That was my favorite, I just loved that game. I was good too, even though I was only like, 11, 12, 13 years old, enough that I could give him a run for his money. :D "15-2, 15-4, 15-6 and a pair for 8!" I may have even won a few games, but I don't remember now. But I have good memories of my dad heading over to the cabinet in the living room and pulling down the deck of Bicycle playing cards (the only kind he'd ever use) and his wooden Cribbage board with the metal pegs, and nodding towards me like, Hey, come on, let's play. At the kitchen table mostly, but during summer weekend mornings we'd be out at the picnic table under the hazy, hot humid sky with those locust bugs buzzing in the trees in the woods. So, yet another example of teaching me stuff and making me smart, but it's a good memory, so I wanted to leave off this section with that.

*****

In looking over all of this, I think that for starters, my dad's work with the Navy and NSA doing whatever he did didn't end with the military. If he had useful skills and talents then possibly he was continually taken and used for years afterwards, unknown to him, long after he was married and had kids. Maybe for psychic stuff, remote viewing/PSI work. Maybe by stuff that isn't even human. I don't know, because I still don't understand who is behind it and how it all works. One reason for this theory is due to one specific incident from when I was sixteen, when my dad was experiencing one of his recurring bouts of out of control psychic ability, what he called **"Being On."** It was the first time he divulged this phenomenon to me, and I listened with rapt interest. It was driving him mad, because while "On," he could continually read people's minds and know things about everybody around him (namely the people he worked with and such) **with no ability to shut it off.** He was pacing back and forth in our house in Connecticut, annoyed and aggravated about the situation, as I watched, interested, like Huh. Wow. My mom was out somewhere, which was why he was even talking about it. Had she been around, this incident would never have happened since they were going through their divorce. My dad grabbed a deck of playing cards and told me to shuffle them, meanwhile, as he wrote down a list of ten cards on a piece of paper. When I was done shuffling he took the cards from me and flipped over the first ten in the deck.

The cards matched perfectly, in the exact order of what he'd written on his list.

He wasn't amused by this though, if anything, it seemed to annoy him even more. I look back on this now and think that maybe it was residual after effects of being used for psychic work, reminiscent of his anomalous incident with Hopkins back in the Navy that I learned about years later. And for some reason this incident didn't shock me back then as much as it could have. This seemed neat but yet, normal. I didn't find psychic stuff to be surprising. I was already an avid reader of the "weird" for close to seven years by that point, and had demonstrated my own abilities, as well as hearing stories from my parents. And in my ideal world, everybody would acknowledge it as the normal way for humans to be. This was why I'd felt compelled to give reports on psychic powers at school – educate the masses about what's possible, and what should be normal for us. But I could understand his frustration and aggravation about being plagued by something he didn't want and didn't understand, and even the slight fear behind it, wondering how this came to be. But I just figured it was something he was naturally born with, and left it at that.

At this stage however, I don't necessarily think that.

My dad was born with natural intuitive abilities, and he definitely had a naturally bright intellect. But possibly "stuff" took those natural abilities, tweaked him, and "amped thing up" a few notches through experimentation and mind control. To perform the way my dad did with the Morse code type could have been his natural talent - but maybe he was "tweaked" to perform better. And the way he was whisked away after taking his IQ/aptitude tests and getting to skip the mandatory schooling and training, and his incident with Hopkins, and a UFO finding itself situated right over his head on a military base, and along with his preferential treatment in general, confirms for me that something strange was definitely amiss. But it couldn't have stopped in the military, obviously. Because then you factor in those aforementioned blackout periods he mentioned a few years ago, his dream-like state of mind, and the skills he didn't even know he had, and Houston, we have a problem.

Recommended Reading

There were a few sources mentioned throughout this book, but of those here are the handful that I would really recommend for further information regarding the subjects of aliens/interdimensional beings, neg entities, psychic attacks, MILABS and mind control. (And there would be more recommendations here but I've had to remove some links over time because unfortunately, the material was no longer available. So it goes on the internet.) Directly click on any of the links if you're reading the electronic copy of this book…

Mind Control

"Operation Open Eyes – Five Easy Steps for Creating a Manchurian Candidate" – Gunther Rassbacher. Article that outlines the government's selection and training of youths from America's incarceration system to become programmed "Manchurian Candidates." As noted elsewhere in this piece, the things Gunther described matched my own brother Joe's situation to a T, who spent ages 14-17 in various juvenile lock ups, which is why I recommend this. **http://www.rumormillnews.com/operation.htm**

"The Illuminati Formula for Creating a Totally Undetectable Mind Controlled Slave" and **"Deeper Insights into the Illuminati Formula"** – Fritz Springmeier and Cisco Wheeler. **http://www.theforbiddenknowledge.com/hardtruth/illuminati_formula_mind_control.htm** Hands down the single most detailed and comprehensive source on Illuminati/occult based mind control. However it's not written like a regular book, and is a bit all over the place. So be prepared for that if one chooses to read it. The book outlines the techniques that are supposedly employed to compartmentalize the mind, how the systems are set up within the mind, what the symbolisms, trigger words and number codes are (sometimes supposedly minus a few words or numbers so as to not trigger programmed people who may be reading), as well as information regarding electronic mind control, implants, ritual cult programming and assigning demons to targets, among many other things including Disney, and the Wizard of Oz. It's like a handbook in a way getting into some heavy duty dark material. Not for the faint of heart. Recommend easing your way into the subject with lighter fare first if you are new to the topic. What's interesting to me is that Fritz and Cisco made a few claims in this book about specific people, which at the time there was no real way to confirm. But since then some of these claims have in fact been verified….by the very people themselves. So that's made me sit up and look closer. There's a lot of personal controversy surrounding Fritz, but there's still no question for me that so much of what is reported in "Illuminati Formula" is apparently spot-on. (the proof of what he and Cisco talk about can also be found running rampant within the media: **http://in2worlds.net/mind-control-themes-and-programming-triggers-in-movies**) Since I see evidence in the world for what he's talking about, I continue to recommend the book despite whatever weird and questionable things may be going on with Fritz personally.

"Mind Control, World Control" and **"Mass Control"** – Jim Keith. Two books that give a solid overviews of all things relating to government mind control on both individual targets and the masses at large, by the late Jim Keith. **http://www.amazon.com/Mass-Control-Engineering-Human-Consciousness/dp/1931882215**

"Secret, Don't Tell – The Encyclopedia of Hypnotism" – Carla Emery. Comprehensive historical overview of hypnosis that delves into the use of unethical hypnosis, as well as government mind control projects. Detailed and valuable resource that also contains many additional book, article and website links and references. The late Ms. Emery, who claims to have been victim of mind control herself, put a lot of time and effort into compiling this work and even went into hiding while writing it. If it wasn't for the intervention of "something higher" one night, then this book wouldn't exist at all, as explained in the very first opening introduction. **http://www.hypnotism.org/orders.htm**

UFOs, Aliens, Abductions and MILABS

"Taken" – Karla Turner, Ph.D. The late Dr. Turner's book regarding eight women's personal case histories as alien/military abductees. Nice sampling that gives a broad overview on the topic, and which is guaranteed to provide at least a few answers and fill in some missing puzzle pieces for MILABs. **http://www.karlaturner.org/mainpage-vidboxes/panel2.html**

"MILABS Operations" – James Bartley. Article that covers many aspects of MILABS not being discussed anywhere else.

http://theuniversalseduction.com/bartley/8/milab-operations (For more of Mr. Bartley's writings, see the sidebar on that link.)

"MILABS - Military Mind Control and Alien Abductions" – Dr. Helmut Lammer and Marion Lammer. Having never heard of the idea of the military/government taking and messing with people, I was stuck in "unanswered question limbo" back during 2002…until reading this book. It provided my big "Eureka!" breakthrough moment, which is why I still have to recommend it despite its flaws. There are many useful insights and corroborations to be found in the Lammers' "MILABS," but do read with discernment as there seems to be a subtle agenda going on with this book to dismiss certain aspects of abductions, as well as using silly comic book-style illustrations that undermine this important subject. But, still a must-read for any MILABS/mind control researcher. Another write up from Dr. Lammer would be **"Preliminary Findings of Project MILAB – Evidence for military kidnappings of alleged UFO-abductees." http://www.karlaturner.org/articles/citations/project_milab_lammer.html** And then his follow up article, **"Further Findings of Project MILAB – Looking behind the alien/military abduction agenda": http://truthseek.info/articles/3/22/page52/1003//cached/html/**

"Discerning Alien Disinformation" – Montalk. Fantastic book that dissects all aspects of the alien situation. Purchase the book from Lulu Press: **http://www.lulu.com/product/paperback/discerning-alien-disinformation/4542989** or download the free PDF version from Montalk's website: **http://montalk.net/Discerning_Alien_Disinfo_v3.1.pdf**

"Operation Trojan Horse" – John Keel. Link to PDF copy of the extremely hard to come by and highly recommended "Operation Trojan Horse" by the late John Keel. I put this book on a very short list of impressive UFO research, not only for the thousands of historical records Mr. Keel sifted through in his research (most of which would probably have been lost and forgotten had it not been for his work in digging them up) along with his firsthand experience and investigative research, and the hundreds of interviews he's conducted with people over the years, but also for the patterns that he spotted in the chaos, and the conclusions he draws from them. **http://in2worlds.net/file_download/6/** It's in my opinion that UFO researchers are indebted to Mr. Keel's efforts.

"The Love Bite – Alien Interference in Human Love Relationships" – Eve Lorgen. http://www.alienlovebite.com/main.htm

"The Dark Side of Cupid – Love Affairs, the Supernatural and Energy Vampirism" – Eve Logen. **http://evelorgen.com/wp/news/dark-side-of-cupid-book-now-ready-for-pre-order/**

"Barbara: The Story of a UFO Investigator" – Barbara Bartholic, as told to Peggy Fielding. The life and times of the late UFO abductee and researcher Barbara Bartholic who worked with Jacque Vallee for seven years and eventually became a MILABs target as well. Written by Peggy Fielding, and based on interviews that Barbara gave to her. It's an interesting read that gets into aspects of the abduction scenario I've never seen mentioned elsewhere, painting a darker, more realistic picture of alien abductions, counterbalancing the typical New Age viewpoint.
http://www.whale.to/b/Bartholic%20-%20Story%20of%20a%20UFO%20Investigator.pdf

"**The Threat - The Secret Agenda" - David M. Jacobs, Ph.D.** A counterbalance to the new age love 'n light pro-alien propaganda, looking at the possible insidious side to the hybrid breeding program and what the aliens may really be here for. **http://www.ufoabduction.com/books1.htm**

"Silent Invasion" - Ellen Crystal, PhD. The UFO invasion of the Pine Bush/Hudson Valley area of New York back in the 1980s. **http://www.pinebushufo.com/pinebushpage25.htm** I was left a bit dumbfounded after reading this book, wondering how this went relatively unnoticed and unreported within the mainstream?? UFOs were out there practically every night, skimming over treetops and people's houses….*landing in fields*…..and the world in general just looked the other way? Not Ellen Crystall though, she was out giving these things chase on the roads and in the fields, taking pictures, rounding up whoever she could get to go out chasing with her, and even reported that these beings were involved in some sort of digging underground in the middle of the night. Possibly mining for certain elements, as that area contains rare elements not found anywhere else. I even know a woman in her mid-50s who lived in that area during that same time period, and knew of Ellen and could have participated in the UFO chases and investigations if she'd wanted, so that was interesting to get first hand corroboration from somebody who was there. This is a must-read for anybody who's interested in UFO-ology.

"The Cryptoterrestrials" – Mac Tonnes. **"What if 'aliens' are not from other planets?"** **http://www.anomalistbooks.com/tonnies.html** "If evidence for the Extraterrestrial Hypothesis has failed to surface—despite decades of hard work and diligent investigations—then maybe we should consider the notion that we are looking for the answers in all the wrong places. Instead of looking up, maybe we should be looking around us. And, perhaps, even below us, too." – From the Foreword by **Nick Redfern**, author of *On the Trail of the Saucer Spies*

"Extra Terrestrial Friends and Foes" – George C. Andrews. Interesting book that covers a wide variety of alien lore: The hybrid breeding program, the increase in missing children in certain countries, underground bases, the secret treaty-gone-awry between the U.S. government and the "Grays" and whoever their masters are, the various assortment of aliens that have been visiting Earth and the different agendas, the demonic/interdimensional possibly alien influence on Adolf Hitler, the supposed Virgin Mary sightings and the evidence that they are holographically projected images originating from UFOs, disinformation authors and government-sponsored disinformation, crop circles, indications of ET manipulation in human affairs contained within history and mythology, the extent of the alien cover up and people who are "suicided" when they get too close to things, and lots more, including excerpts from other works and guest contributions from various researchers and authors. The author's approach is intellectual, yet still personable, and he applies rational logical thinking to dissect what we're being told about all things alien and abduction related.

Miscellaneous

Montalk. High quality website with articles by the author Montalk regarding aliens/abductions, metaphysics, conspiracy, alternative science and the Matrix Control System. **www.montalk.net**

"Practical Psychic Self Defense" - Robert Bruce. Mr. Bruce knows what he's talking about as his book is filled with personal anecdotes from his hands-on experience dealing with neg entities and possession, and it's written in a personable, accessible and level headed way. So much of what he describes in this book I experienced for myself and talk about in my write up, "The Vortex," which can be found on my website. People don't realize how much neg entities run rampant exerting their influence on people, and for that reason I consider this book a must-read.

"The Mothman Prophesies" – John Keel. In the 13 months leading up to the collapse of the Silver Bridge on December 15, 1967, Point Pleasant West Virginia was inundated with all sorts of paranormal activity. UFOs galore, strange Men in Black and humanoid entities visiting the townspeople, and the Mothman itself, a 7-8 foot tall winged creature with glowing red eyes. A doorway to another realm seems to have been activated during those thirteen months allowing for a host of bizarre phenomenon to manifest on our side. Many non-fiction investigative books are written by random strangers who weren't there, trying to recreate a story they didn't live through so the reader can learn about it. Keel however was in the middle of it while it was happening, experiencing the weirdness firsthand and had become intertwined in the lives of the residents of Point Pleasant (and the non-human entities) long before the bridge collapsed, and before anybody understood why any of it was happening. There really isn't another book like this.

"The Gods of Eden" – William Bramley. Mr. Bramley's historical research into the origins of human warfare wound up revealing that non-human intelligences seem to be directing affairs on planet Earth from behind the scenes. Down to earth, informative and thought provoking, this excellent book (released in 1990, before David Icke and Jim Marrs) winds its way back through human history and shows the thread that links wars, religion, politics, and even great plagues.

Secret Signs, Mysterious Symbols, and Hidden Codes of the Illuminati

CODEX MAGICA

TEXE MARRS

The Innermost Secrets of the Illuminati Beckon You

They vowed you would never know. They thought there was no way you could possibly unmask the sick things they have been hiding. They were wrong. Now, thanks to the incredible revelations in this amazing book, you can discover their innermost secrets. You can identify the members of the Illuminati and unravel their astonishing plan to control and manipulate. You can crack the Illuminati code.

They Have Their Own Hidden Language

Codex Magica is awesome in its scope and revelations. It contains over 1,000 actual photographs and illustrations. You'll see with your own eyes the world's leading politicians and celebrities—including America's richest and most powerful—caught in the act as they perform occult magic. Once you understand their covert signals and coded picture messages, your world will never be the same. Destiny will be made manifest. You will know the truth and everything will become clear.

Texe Marrs is author of over 37 *books,* including the #1 bestseller ***Dark Secrets of the New Age*** **and** ***Circle of Intrigue: The Hidden Inner Circle of the Global Illuminati Conspiracy.*** A retired career U.S. Air Force officer, he has taught at the University of Texas at Austin and has appeared on radio and TV talk shows across America.

Last night I saw upon the stair
a little man who wasn't there.
He wasn't there again today.
Oh gee, I wish he'd go away!

—Old Nursery Rhyme

TABLE OF Contents

INTRODUCTION: The Occult Script-A Colossal and Monstrous Conspiracy 9

1 Caution!—You Are Now Entering the Forbidden Zone 15

2 The Megalomania of the Psychopaths—Why The Illuminati Do What They Do 25

3 Concealed Messages—The Importance of Hand Signs to the Illuminati 45

4 Hidden Hand of the Men of Jahbuhlun 53

5 For He's a Jolly Good Fellow—Sign of the Devil's Claw By the Men of the Craft 81

6 Baphles Me!—Horned Beasts, Leaping Goats, Satanic Beards, and Other Messages of Evil 97

7 "El Diablo" Shows His Horns-The Devil Rides Out! 119

8 Secret Handshakes of the Illuminati 145

9 A Show of Hands—Illuminists Employ the Grand Hailing Sign and the Sign of Admiration and Astonishment 177

10 "I Gruesomely Swear That I'm On the Square"—More Revealing Signs of Illuminati Cultists 189

11 "Cross My Heart and Hope to Die"—The Mysterious "X" Factor 205

12 That Ravenous Dark Bird—Sublime Mysteries of the Illuminati's Double-Headed Eagle 241

13 The Riddle of the Great Seal of the United States, and the All-Seeing Eye of the Serpent of Wisdom 265

14 "Silence, Slaves, or We'll Cur Your Throat From Ear to Ear!" 285

15 Up to Their Necks in Mischief 295

16 Hand On Heart—Sign of Devotion to the Chiefs 307

17 Triangles Up, Triangles Down, Triangles, Triangles All Around 327

18 Black Magic, Masonic Witchcraft, and Triangle Powers 361

19 Part Devil, Part Angel 393

20 The Merovingian Dynasty, The Priory of Sion, and the Spear of Longinus 405

21 Magical Signs of the Jewish Cabala—The Six-Pointed Star, Babylonian Witchcraft, and the Hollywood Perdition of Jerry Seinfeld and Associates 419

22 Scorched by the Sun—Solar Signs, Circles, and Serpents 459

23 "I Fell In To A Burning Ring of Fire"—Arnold Schwarzenegger's Masonic Ring, Newt Gingrich's T-Rex Dinosaur, and Other Mysterious Messages on Rings and Neckties of the Elite 483

24 OK-Sign of the Divine King 501

25 Victory For the Devil—Fabulous Exploits of Sir Winston Churchill and Other Druid Priests and Illuminati Servants 517

26 "Every Man and Woman Is a Star" 537

27 Lightning Fall From Heaven 557

28 Blood Red—Red Stars, Clenched Fists, Hammers and Sickles, and Other Signs and Symbols of Communist Intrigue 563

Footnotes and References 589

Index 599

More Resources For You 621

About the Author, Texe Marrs 623

INTRODUCTION

The Occult Script—A Colossal and Monstrous Conspiracy

But let the Spirit of all lies with works of dazzling magic blind you. Then absolutely mine, I'll have and bind you.

The Devil, *Faust*
Play by Goethe (1749-1832)

They're everywhere. Cleverly disguised. On TV, imbedded in magazines, and lurking in powerful advertising. Sometimes they're subtle or subliminal, other times direct, provocative, and mind-bending in effect. Strange symbols, signs, charms, talismans, and handshakes that program and control our minds.

Henry Makow, astute inventor and essayist, says that they are key components of the satanic conspiracy that now confronts us with maximum force and evil. "This satanic conspiracy," Makow warns, "succeeds only because people cannot believe something so colossal and monstrous actually exists."[1]

> The world is a contest for our souls. The people who are pushing products, violence, and sex are not operating on a random, 'whatever sells' basis. They have Masonic symbols in their logos. The top players are following an occult script designed to enslave us body and soul. They are building a gigantic prison based on their own mental hell. This is the New World Order; we are the inmates.[2]

It is, in fact, "satanic indoctrination," Makow emphasizes, and we are all locked into the prison classroom as this mental poison from hell is piped in to us 24 hours a day, seven days a week.

A Psychological ***Matrix***

In this eye-opening book, *Codex Magica,* you will discover just how accurate and true are the warnings of Mr. Makow and just a few others. Most people, of course, are so far gone, their minds so awash with occultism acquired from decades of propaganda encountered on every side, they cannot any longer decipher reality. The majority are caught in some form of Psychological Matrix. Tragically, hundreds of millions of people have, in a manner of speaking, become *"Manchurian Candidates."* They eat, breathe, move, and sleep as if in a trance. Immobile, unable to react, afflicted with amnesia, they are like Pontius Pilate who, when confronted with Jesus Christ standing right in front of him, the very essence of unmovable Truth, asked Christ the question. *"What is truth?"*

Well, here, in *Codex Magica,* in over 600 incredible pages, is truth. Here you will see pictures of many of the foremost movers and shakers of human history, ancient and modern, as they secretly communicate through sign and symbol. Naturally, the elite do not relish being exposed in their dirty works and evil doing. They and their dumbed-down minions—I am referring to the overwhelming "see no evil, hear no evil" masses of people in society—can be expected to quickly jump to the attack and attempt to deny it all. Through sleight-of-hand, they will do their utmost to divert your attention. "The pictures are taken out of context," they will protest. "The images are not what they seem."

"Here, listen to us," they will implore, "it's not what it looks like. Let us explain it all to you."

"Don't be hasty now in your judgment," they'll cry. "You and I know that conspiracies don't really exist. Everything is okay, nothing is amiss. It is all just an accident, nothing to fret about."

"Are You Going *to* ***Believe Your Lying*** *Eyes?"*

Their weak and idiotic protestations remind us of the famous TV comedian, Groucho Marx. Groucho enjoyed retelling the story of the time a startled wife came home to find her adulterous husband in bed with another woman. *"It's not what you think,"* he assured her. *"Are you going to believe what I tell you, or are you going to believe your lying eyes?"*

Thank God we no longer have to believe what *they,* the Illuminati, and their lying accomplices in the media and government tell us. We can lay their propaganda aside and view the actual evidence through the prism of truth with our own eyes. This book is the result of over two decades of research. I believe it speaks for itself. The pictures, illustrations, and proofs contained in these pages do, in my opinion, document a monstrous conspiracy that surrounds and envelops us.

It may well be that some, a few, of the photographs, are not what they appear to be. We all know that it is possible, for example, that photographers took shots of certain people as their hands, fingers, arms, and bodies were inadvertently in odd positions. A picture may be worth a thousand words, as the old Chinese proverb says, but even pictures can be deceiving.

And so, I leave it all up to you to decide, dear reader. Do these proofs provide evidence of these peoples' involvement in nefarious, Masonic, occultic, or magical activity or not? You be the judge.

To help you make a decision, often included in the captions that accompany the photos and illustrations is commentary that helps one to better analyze the situation or scene that is pictured. When possible, I present evidence and information outlining the individual's membership in the Masonic Lodge, the Rosicrucian Order, or other globalist or occultic groups, secret societies, and organizations. This is done as an aid to your independent decision-making.

Sometimes, I admit, it is difficult from the picture alone to ascertain whether a person, or persons, are displaying a Masonic or other sign, or to tell for sure that an occultic pose or scene is being portrayed. Again, the author does his best to offer up evidence, such as pages, excerpts, and descriptions of such signs and poses from official textbooks, dictionaries, and encyclopedias of the Masonic Order or illustrations and examples by experts and authorities.

In some instances, it is unclear what exactly is transpiring in a photo because the intent, or motive, of the individual subject cannot be discerned. We cannot read peoples' minds, and so we must judge based on the photographic evidence. For example, there is much confusion today over the hand sign of the devil called "El Diablo" or "Il Carnuto." Many confuse this sign of evil with the sign of the deaf for *"I love you"* and with the sign given by many to indicate youthful rebellion, sex, and rock and roll.

In the section of *Codex Magica* that pictures a number of people giving this problematic sign, I therefore explain the difference in types of hand signs and discuss the ongoing controversy in an attempt to clear up some of the confusion. Readers may just find the clarifying information presented here revealing, to say the least.

All in all you will view in *Codex Magica* over 1,000 photos and illustrations documenting Illuminists, Satanists, and other elitists practicing magic. Even if the skeptics and naysayers were able to explain away a few of these proofs, the remainder would be sufficient aplenty to prove the thesis of this book. That, indeed, a massive conspiratorial network of occult magicians exists today and has existed throughout human history.

From the perspective of the occult researcher and investigator, the key to understanding the precarious world we live in is the recognition that a *consistent pattern* exists. A criminal is often convicted by an overwhelming preponderance of circumstantial evidence, even when no direct evidence—like a smoking gun—is produced. But in our case, in *Codex Magica,* we *do* produce a convincing array of direct evidence, along with many facts that connect the dots, to conclusively prove the continuing existence of an occult conspiracy. Over 600 pages of photographic evidence and materials cannot *all* be wrong.

Exercising Fairness and Good Judgment

I wish to emphasize that I accuse no one pictured herein of being a Satanist or occultist. Their being pictured here does not mean that individuals are necessarily members of the Order of the Illuminati or prove anything whatsoever about their social, political, religious ideology or other beliefs. Nor am I implying, suggesting, or stating that the men and women pictured are knowingly involved in any type of plot, satanic or otherwise.

My friends are fully aware that over the years, I have authored and produced numerous books, audiotapes, and videos on the subject of mysterious marks, symbols, signs, and logos, including such bestseller classics as *Dark Secrets of the New Age, Mystery Mark of the New Age,* and *Circle of Intrigue.* As such, the reader should realize that the information in my books and other works is based solely on my own opinion. True, I do my level best to judge things accurately and to marshall relevant facts and data that might bear; but ultimately, the reader or viewer must decide if he or she concurs with the author's judgements and opinions. As the cliche of a well-known TV news network so often echoes, *"We report, you decide."*

Those who have read and evaluated my past works know that I am always concerned and desirous of presenting accurate information. I invite anyone who believes the facts and analysis, or even the opinions expressed herein are incorrect or incomplete to promptly inform me of such. I am more than willing to make corrections or retractions based on the best evidence.

Deciphering A Mountain of Data

One of the problems inherent in an undertaking so vast as this book is that the subject matter is so broad and complex. There are literally thousands of secret signs, grips, and symbols to consider in evaluating photographic evidence. My opponents—the men of the secret societies and the Illuminists—would agree that this is the case. In the *Royal Arch Mason,* an official publication of Freemasonry, Dr. William L. Cummings commented on how many hundreds of rites, rituals, and degrees existed.[3]

Obviously, in each of the hundreds of ceremonies a number of secret handshakes and signs are taught and practiced. Thus, Cummings remarks, Masons themselves are in a state of confusion:

> It generally comes as a surprise and sometimes as a shock when the Mason who has never given any attention to the subject learns at least a hundred Masonic and quasi-Masonic rites and systems have existed and no less than eight hundred so-called Masonic degrees have been revised.[4]

Royal Arch Mason editor Ray V. Denshaw wryly comments that a long-time Mason of reputation may be asked, "How many of the hundreds of degrees have you received? Have you received the Rite of Memphis of 90 degrees? Or the Rectified Rite? Or the Swedenborgian Rite?"[5]

Moreover, Masons affiliated with the Grand Lodge of the Orient in Paris, the United Lodge in London, or the Grand Masonic Lodge of Israel, may well utilize signs and handshakes not used, seen, or understood in other orders.

Then, of course, there is the Order of the Rosicrucians, the Order of the Trapezoid, The Priory of Sion, The Alta Vendita, the P2 Lodge, the Solar Order of the Temple, the modern-day Knights Templar, the Vatican's Knights of Malta and Knights of Columbus, the Order of the Odd Fellows, the Order of Ahepa, the Order of Skull and Bones, the Bohemian Club, the Pilgrims Society, and a thousand or more other secret societies and orders, not to mention the many Jewish cabalistic groups, satanic churches, and witchcraft and druid sects.

Knowledge of Secret Signs Opens Doors

British Satanist Aleister Crowley, a man who fancied himself the "wickedest man on the planet," was Grand Master of the Ordo Templi Orientis (O.T.O.) and also founded the mysterious and Luciferian, Order of Astrum Argentinium. He once ruefully and knowingly intimated that after he had independently learned and practiced how to do the secret handshakes of a number of other secret societies and orders throughout Europe, he traveled around from city to city and discovered that by knowing how to convey the appropriate handshake, he was invited into what is normally the guarded inner sanctum of almost all the groups. They were persuaded simply by his handshake that Crowley was eligible to attend their conclaves and be made privy to their most closely guarded secrets.

The average Mason or member of other secret orders knows little of the signs and symbols of his own order, let alone that of others. In my work for this book, I have communicated with a number of ex-Masons, but few were able to identify any but the most rudimentary of signs and symbols. I did far better with Masonic encyclopedias and with modern and ancient magical texts and guides.

I *Give Credit to...*

In addition to the individuals listed in the acknowledgements of the title page, I would also like to acknowledge the assistance of a few very special friends was invaluable to me in preparing this book. I'd like, therefore, to give credit to:

- **Lawrence Patterson,** publisher of *Criminal Politics* magazine and one of the world's leading experts on global finances and investments.
- **Alex Jones,** well-known radio personality and top-notch producer of many videos documenting the rise of the police state.
- **Dr. Cathy Burns,** author of the excellent *Masonic and Occult Symbols Illustrated,* as well as *The Hidden Secrets of the Eastern Star.*
- **Dean Grace,** author of *A Little Guide to the All-Seeing Eye Symbol On Our Dollar Bill.*
- **Ralph Epperson,** author of *Masonry: Conspiracy Against Christianity, The Unseen Hand,* and other fine books.
- **Dr. Gail Riplinger,** author of the bestselling classic, *New Age Bible Versions.*
- **David Meyer,** occult researcher and publisher of *Last Trumpet* newsletter.
- **Michael Hoffman, II,** author of the groundbreaking book, *Secret Societies and Psychological Warfare.*
- **Fritz Springmeier,** author of *Bloodlines of the Illuminati* and other revealing works.
- **Robert Gaylon Ross,** author of *Who's Who of the Elite* and *The Elite Don't Dare Let Us Tell the People.*

I also wish to acknowledge the late Jim Shaw and Jim Keith, Bill Schnoebelen, Tom

McKenney, Ed Decker, James Spencer, David Bay, Dr. Dennis Cuddy, Reginald Haupt, Jr., Dr. O.J. Graham, Jeff Rense, Des Griffin, Gary Blevins, Dr. Stanley Monteith, Jack Chick, Ted Pike, Donn de Grande Pre, Jack Roper, and Juri Lina, all of whose authoritative research and writings provided me with valuable information as well as incalculable inspiration.

Hands On Membership Not Required

Illuminati paid provocateurs and other would-be critics might suggest that because you and I are not Masons or Illuminists, my research in *Codex Magica*—or your own independent research—has no authority. In answer, I am happy to respond by noting that the best of homicide detectives have never been murdered nor participated in such; few lifeguards have had an incident in which they were drowning and required assistance; most lawyers have never been sued; most psychiatrists have never been admitted as a patient to a mental institution; most neurosurgeons have never had brain surgery; most sports writers have never played pro-football or pro-baseball yet they report and comment on the same; most prison wardens have never themselves been locked up as convicts, and no historians have lived in the past centuries of history about which they amass information and facts and comment about.

It doesn't take a monster to know that human monsters exist or a serial killer to know that murdering innocent people involves savage and evil acts. And there is abundant evidence that exists about the Illuminati and secret societies so that we do not have to join and participate in these repugnant groups to know what they are all about. *Codex Magica* proves that.

A Challenge to Critics

I hereby challenge any and all Masons and other members of secret societies to meet me on neutral ground with neutral observers in a contest, a duel of wits, if you will, to see who knows more about the subject matter presented in this book. Until such time as the critic accepts my challenge and is willing to publicly display that he knows as much or more about secret handshakes and grips, symbols, marks, logos and other occultic matters, I suggest that the critic shrink back to the shadowy confines of his Masonic Temple, synagogue, or shrine and refrain from empty, futile criticism.

As for those skeptics and naysayers who get their kicks by pretending to know — just know! —that these things cannot be true, that "conspiracies" just do not exist and who maintain that anyone who even dares to mention the existence of any group called the "Illuminati" just has to be wrong, may I humbly recommend that they earnestly burn the midnight oil, carefully read this book, and examine the evidence in a fair-minded and objective manner? Many a friend has written telling the author that he likewise was once a doubter and skeptic, until, that is, he had heard and considered *all* the evidence. In this regard, the Holy Scriptures have a tremendous bit of advice worthy of consideration:

> *He that answereth a matter before he heareth it, it is folly and shame unto him.*
> *-Proverbs 18:13*

ONE

Caution!—You Are Now Entering The Forbidden Zone

Only puny secrets need protection. Big discoveries are protected by public incredulity.

— Marshall McLuhan
Take Today

What is one to do when, in order to rule men, it is necessary to deceive them?

— Helena Blavatsky
The Secret Doctrine

What you will read and see in this book is forbidden to you. Discovering these things could be highly dangerous to your health. Forbidden knowledge is sweet, but also deadly. Many men have died for revealing far fewer secrets than are found herein.

I am not being overdramatic nor attempting to be sensationalist. This is a warning: Make very sure that you possess the daring and the courage to proceed before you go any further.

Lingering in my mind are the names of courageous men who have gone before you and I and are now dead because they exposed the forbidden knowledge of the Illumined Ones. Captain William Morgan — abducted, kidnapped and ritually murdered, his lifeless body dumped in a lake after he published a book unmasking Masonic secrets. Danny Casolaro—suicided, having his wrists cut and bleeding to death in a hotel room where he had gone to meet a confidential source; Paul Wilcher, found nude, his body stiff as it sat on a toilet in his home, only days after he mailed his expose manuscript to U.S. Attorney-General Janet Reno; and Wolfgang Amadeus Mozart, the world-famous classical composer, who paid the ultimate penalty, the *Aqua Toffeta,* arsenic poisoning that wracked his body.

Poor Mozart. He, too, had revealed some of the secrets of Freemasonry. Blackballed by The Order, so frightened were his friends and family that not one human soul so much as attended his funeral. It is said that Mozart's faithful dog followed dutifully behind the lonely funeral wagon. The sad and forlorn canine was the only living creature in sight as the body of the man all of Europe had once toasted and applauded was taken to its burial site.

So, I ask you, dear friend, once again: Do you dare to discover the secrets many have been punished for merely knowing, let alone revealing? Are you sure, very sure, you want to enter the Forbidden Zone?

Immersed In Evil

You see, we are surrounded by evil on every side—quite literally immersed in it—but the wicked and the deceivers want us to believe that evildoing is exceptional. From childhood we have been taught that evil and corruption are the province of the few, that most people are virtuous, honest, and good, that most of our politicians truly have our interests at heart, that the social system, with the exception of just a few deviants and criminal types, is basically sound.

With such assurances, most people breathe a deep sigh of relief. "Don't worry, be happy," said the words of a fun-time novelty song a decade ago. And most of us appreciate and agree with that sentiment. After all, it's not nice to be negative, to be a skeptic in the midst of a nation of wannabe happy faces.

Unfortunately, the masses who believe this nonsense have been gulled and are destined to receive, very soon, a rude shock and an abrupt awakening.

Grand Deception

As Christopher Mark observed recently in an insight-filled article entitled *"Grand Deception: The Theft of America and the World,"* "The world is completely corrupt beyond your wildest dreams, and the United States is, perhaps, the most gullible of all nations."[1] Mark goes on to explain:

> For now, grasp this: The world you believe exists does not exist. We live in a form of the Matrix, not unlike the world portrayed in John Carpenter's movie, "They Live," except that high government officials and international bankers are the elite who control all you see and hear as did the aliens portrayed in the movie.[2]

But, the foolish may object, we have the media to protect us from the corrupt. We cannot be deceived as long as there is a free press to act as our watchdog.

Ah, but there's the rub. There is no free press! Christopher Mark adds:

> The news is a farce. As is the case with the financial institutions, which are

> concentrated in the hands of the few, long ago the media was bought and paid for...What you read and what you see on a daily basis is largely manufactured. You are being lied to each and every day.[3]

Thomas Mann, the keen social observer and philosopher, once suggested that men are erroneously taught to believe that it is forbidden and wrong to expose the works of darkness, or to reveal the machinations of evildoers, especially evildoers who, though they act in hellish ways, the deceived world at large so obviously holds in the highest regard:

> That is the secret delight and security of hell, that it is not to be informed on, that it is protected from speech, that it just is, but cannot be made public in the newspaper, or be brought by any word to critical knowledge.[4]

Secret Delight

How interesting the realization that, as Thomas Mann puts it, hell takes "secret delight" in its ability to keep secrets. *Proverbs 9:13-18* seems to have a relation to this. It states:

> *A foolish woman sitteth in the high place of the city, To call passengers who go right on their ways: she saith to him, bread eaten in secret is pleasant. But he knoweth not that the dead are there; and that her guests are in the depths of hell.*

Why do the Illuminati value secrecy so highly? Why all the mysterious, encoded signs, handshakes, symbols, language, and codes? One finds many reasons. For one thing, the psychopath — these are the kind of people who are Illuminists — seems to be drawn to the darkness, to mysterious perversions and deep occultism. "Nothing so arouses the deep mind's attention than the call of the dark, arcane and mysterious," Paul Huston writes in his book, *Mastering Witchcraft.*[5]

Secrecy is deemed essential amongst witchcraft sects, and witchcraft is, in essence, Illuminism. Huson explains: "Now witchcraft consists of knowledge, and knowledge brings power. Power shared is power lost. Although we have entered the Age of Aquarius, along with its attendant freedom and loosening of restrictions, it will still be very much in your interests as a witch to shroud certain of your doings in a reasonable veil of secrecy."[6]

As you will discover in studying the pages of *Codex Magica,* the Illuminati certainly do have much to hide. Seeing as how the leaders of this notorious organization are responsible for hardship, bloodshed and revolutionary terror on a global scale, if their secrets were found out, there would be hell to pay. If the masses ever were to wake up from their trance and begin to understand just how horribly they have been deceived, they would angrily rise enmasse and string up the elite from the nearest light pole.

The Most Terrible Secret of All

But there's also the matter of the most terrible secret of all, the secret that, if discovered, would sound the death knell for the Illuminati and Freemasonry. Manly P. Hall, 33°, touched on this in his book, *Lectures on Ancient Philosophy:*

> Freemasonry is a fraternity within a Fraternity — an outer organization, concealing an inner brotherhood of the elect. The invisible society is a secret fraternity dedicated to a MYSTERIOUS SECRET.[7]

As Hall alludes, Freemasonry hides its greatest secret even from its membership at large—only an invisible "inner brotherhood" is entrusted with it.

Robert Guffey, writing in the book, *The Conspiracy Reader,* reports that the "cryptocrats," as he calls the elite, consider most Americans to be mere sheep who must be kept from discovering "the black cauldron of dirty secrets" hidden to them.[8] The MYSTERIOUS SECRET of which Manly P. Hall, 33° writes, surely falls into this category of dirty secrets kept squirreled away in the black cauldron.

The dirtiest secret found inside that black cauldron—THE MYSTERIOUS SECRET—is this: That the unknown "God" worshipped by the Masons and called by such hazy, nebulous names as the Great Architect of the Universe and by codenames such as Abaddon, Mahabone, and Jahbuhlun, is actually none other than *Satan,* or *Lucifer.* That is the greatest of secrets that the Illuminati must shield from view.

The Illuminated (so-called "enlightened") man who knows this darkest of secrets is taught by his superiors and comes to believe that all who are in on the secret are somehow more sophisticated, urbane, intelligent, and spiritually astute, than the uncouth, vulgar, and coarse people who stupidly follow after the God of the Holy Bible. Stupid people deserve to be deceived, say the Masons and Illuminists. Thus, as Emile Grillot DeGivry comments, the elite "conceal in order to baffle the vulgar."[9]

Marie Roberts and Hugh Ormsby-Lennon, in *Secret Texts: The Literature of Secret Societies,* note that the rituals, rites, symbols, emblems, and other tools of the secret societies are "Mysteries that must not be revealed to the profane, lewd, and unworthy."[10] How does it feel, dear reader, to realize that the wicked men of the Illuminati and of the Lodge and other secret societies consider you, me, and everyone outside their own special preserve, as "profane, lewd, and unworthy?"

Symbols as Secrets

To maintain their rotten and corrupt body of secrets, the Illuminati leaders and groups employ *symbols.* The rites, ceremonies, hand signs, and grips of the Illuminists are based on the science and art of *symbolism.*

It is said that symbolism began as recorded in the Bible's book of *Genesis* when God put a "mark" or sign on Cain who had slain his brother, Abel. Throughout human history, marks, signs, pictures, and hieroglyphs came to be used to convey words, ideas, concepts, and secrets.

"By symbols," wrote Thomas Carlyle in *Sartor Resartus,* "is man guided and commanded, made happy made wretched. He everywhere finds himself surrounded with symbols, recognized as such or not recognized."[11]

As you'll discover in *Codex Magica,* the elite use many symbols and signs to hide and obfuscate their magical work and alchemy. In the Blue Lodge (the first three degrees), the initiate takes an oath of obligation, pledging:

> I will always hail, EVER CONCEAL, AND NEVER REVEAL, any of the arts, parts, or points of the hidden mysteries of Ancient Free Masonry... [12]

The Order of the Eastern Star, the women's Masonic organization, informs its new members that the Order teaches them of their duties and obligations "by means of SECRET SIGNS AND PASSWORDS."[13] The initiate is further instructed that she must bind herself "to preserve the most sacred SECRECY respecting the work of the Order."[14]

Symbols are more than just pictures. Consider: When you and I, as patriotic citizens, see the red, white, and blue flag of the U.S.A. waving aloft, many emotions are aroused in our minds and hearts. Memories sometimes gush forth, feelings of love of country, home, and family; perhaps deep appreciation for our country's founders, its Constitution, and for the soldiers and servicemen who have died to protect and keep us free. All this bound up in just one symbol.

To the Masons and other Illuminists, their *occult* symbols also embody a deep and varied set of meanings. Alex Home, in *Sources of Masonic Symbolism,* distinguishes between a mere "emblem" and a "symbol." An emblem is something that stands for something else, he says, while "a symbol has a moral and spiritual meaning."[15]

That "moral and spiritual meaning" is, of necessity, reserved as secret in nature by these corrupt cultists, because, if their secrets should be exposed to the light, their Great Work and Grand Plan would be vulnerable to destruction, as it should be. But kept secret, the symbols and signs of the Illuminati exert a strong force. Foster Bailey, 33°, in *The Spirit of Freemasonry,* explains:

> A symbol veils or hides a secret, and it is that which veils mysterious forces. These energies when released can have a potent effect.[16]

To the man whose entire life is immersed in magical symbols, signs, and codes, and who has taken a solemn oath to maintain secrecy in fear of disclosure, the world takes on a supernatural, paranoid quality. Indeed, such men are schizophrenic in tendency, being torn between their role in the normal everyday world and their underground existence in the sordid world of their occult fraternity. Illuminists are, indeed, very dangerous men.

Ancient Origins—Babylonian

Now it is important to understand that almost all the symbols and signs of the elite are very ancient in origin. Former Scottish Rite Freemasonry Sovereign Grand Commander Henry C. Clausen, 33°, who was appointed in 1942 by President Roosevelt to head up the Commission to Investigate the Pearl Harbor Attack, writes that the footsteps of The Order go deep, and its symbols are thousands of years old.

"They arose in ancient ages," Clausen states, "The signs, symbols, and inscriptions come to us from across long, drifting centuries and will be found in ancient Sumerian clay tablet libraries of the cities of Lir, Lagash, and others of the first true urban civilization. This, occurred about 600 years before Egypt was civilized..."[17]

In other words, Clausen is telling his Masonic readers that their signs and symbols came from Babylon.

The Holy Bible warns that the Ancient Mystery Religion of wicked Babylon will bounce back into demonic prevalence in the last days (see *Revelation 13, 17, and 18),* and here we have the Sovereign Grand Commander, the international chieftain of the Masonic Lodge, informing us of the Babylonian origins of the secret symbols and signs of his Illuminist Order.

When we realize that, for the elite, their symbols are claimed to be infused with dynamic life—to be real things, active images that make and testify and create, we begin to comprehend the powerful and explosive meaning with which the Illuminati endow their signs and symbols.

To them, these are not just geometric shapes, architectural patterns, lines, and circles. Their signs and symbols both live and possess creative power. They are archetypes and thoughtforms. In sum, they are real things that perform. One is reminded, therefore, of the *"image of the beast"* which, in the last days, is prophesied to both move about and to speak *(Revelation 13).*

Pity the Poor, Hoodwinked Mason

It's bad enough that the elite hide their dirty little (and big) secrets behind such smoke screens as secret hand signs, codes, etc. But what is remarkably obscene is that they hoodwink their own people.

The highest levels of the Freemasons, for example, have a special word for the manner in which they seek to deceive and mislead not only the "profane" (you and me!) but the vast majority of fellow Masons. That word is *hoodwink.* It is defined as the effort put forth by the lying men at the top echelons to keep lower-level members in darkness.

In the *Encyclopedia of Freemasonry,* editor Dr. Albert Mackey, 33°, a former Sovereign Grand Commander, claims that secrecy, silence, and deceit—in other words, *hoodwink,* is an absolute necessity so that, "the mysteries of our art should be preserved."[18]

Helena Blavatsky, co-Mason and founder of Theosophy, was unusually candid when she once remarked, "What is one to do, when in order to rule men, it is necessary to deceive them?...For almost invariably the more simple, the more silly, and the more gross the phenomenon, the more likely it is to succeed."[19]

Listen to the admission of Albert Pike, former Sovereign Grand Commander who Masonic historian Manley P. Hall, 33°, magnificently praised as a "Masonic Prometheus...a king among men by the divine right of merit:"

> Masonry, like all the Religions, all the Mysteries, Hermeticism, and Alchemy, conceals its secrets from all except the Adepts and Sages, or the Elect, and uses false explanations and misinterpretations of its symbols to mislead those who deserve only to be misled; to conceal the Truth, which it calls Light, from them, and to draw them away from it. [20]

What impudence! What arrogance! Pike is letting us in on the deceit. Even if a man is a Mason, he may not be adjudged worthy of being promoted as one of the "Adepts and Sages, or the Elect." In that case, along with non-Masons, he is purposely misled by "false explanations and misinterpretations." And according to Pike, he deserves to be misled.

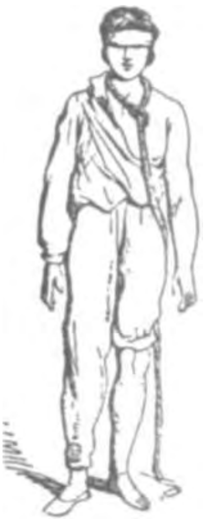

***Hoodwinked!* Pity the poor, foolish man who becomes a Freemason! In the very first degree ritual, that of Entered Apprentice, a blindfold is put over his eyes, and a cable-tow is hung around his neck. Symbolically, the dumb candidate is "HOODWINKED." Little does he know that his superiors intentionally set out to deceive the candidate and they contrive their deceit through all the ritual degrees up to and including the 33rd.**

Secret Doctrine Withheld

George Steinmetz, yet another Masonic author, notes, "There is a SECRET DOCTRINE in Freemasonry! That secret doctrine is concealed, rather than revealed by the very lectures which, we (Masons) are told, offer a rational explanation of the ceremonies of initiation."[21]

Oh my! So the poor Masons must sit and listen to a bunch of boring lectures, with superiors rattling on and on about what are described as the "Mysteries," when, really, it's all just malarkey because the true explanations—the SECRET DOCTRINE—is concealed to all except the few favored "Adepts."

This is why, when I interview lower-level Masonic friends of mine who are more than happy to privately confide to me all the "secrets" they have learned, I often find that almost everything they think they know is pure junk. The hard facts—the really useful info—is reserved for the Masonic muckety-mucks, though it may be discovered with diligent investigation by others, too, no matter how much the Masonic order vainly attempts to conceal and deny.

As Albert Pike relates, "What is most worth knowing in Masonry is never very openly taught. The symbols are displayed, but they are mute. It is by hints only... that the initiate is put upon the track of the hidden secret." [22]

How does one finally discover the inner secrets of Freemasonry? My own experience provides the answer. It has taken me many years of meticulous research and study of the Ancient Mystery Religions of Babylon, Sumeria, Greece, Rome, China, etc. I have spent many nights reading old textbooks and treatises on medieval and occult subjects; conducted intensive investigation of the rituals and symbols of scores of secret societies and orders; and spent years examining the true teachings and practices of New Ageism, witchcraft and Satanism. Moreover, without study of the Holy Bible and constant referral back to it, much of the knowledge I have acquired could not be properly understood.

Masonic expert Lynn F. Perkins alludes to the gigantic amount of extracurricular research and work needed to uncover the greatest secrets of the Masonic Fraternity. He writes:

> The true wisdom is concealed and hidden, not only from those who do not join the Masonic Order but also from those who "take" the degrees; and it will remain

> hidden until each Mason seeks revelation and finds the Truth for himself. There are no interpretations in the Ritual; they have to be sought elsewhere."[23]

Pike, echoing Steinmetz, Hall, Perkins and all the other high-level Masonic authorities, goes so far as to mock and disparage lower-level Masons, especially those who have earned only the first three degrees ("the Blue degrees"). After acknowledging that the lower-level brethren are "intentionally misled," he goes on to say that it is not intended that the initiate understand the symbols and deepest secrets of the Order, but worse, the Masonic Lodge's rituals and lectures are designed so that the lower-level Masons shall *imagine* he does understand them! It is only at a later time, as he has moved up the ladder of degrees, that the purposely dumbed-down Mason discovers he's been had, that he's been played for a fool. In other words, he's been *hoodwinked!*

So, in effect, Masons are lied to, tricked, made fun of, and intentionally led astray, with only a little knowledge added to their brain reservoirs as they advance up the chain. Meanwhile, the poor, pitiful souls imagine they are really in on all the super-duper secrets of the Craft. Their Masonic superiors play them all for suckers.

P.T. Barnum, of Ringling Brothers, Barnum & Bailey Circus fame, surely was right when he exclaimed, "There's a sucker born every minute." To which yours truly, author of *Codex Magica,* might add: "...and a 32nd or 33rd degree Mason is behind the veil laughing his head off and rolling in the aisle every time a new sucker is initiated into the 1st degree of Freemasonry."

Shining Light on the Darkness

The Brotherhood of Darkness, as a good friend of mine, Dr. Stanley Monteith, calls the Illuminati, is quite confident it can easily maintain the highest level of secrecy regarding the actual meaning and import of its signs and symbols. Its leaders believe they can even afford to communicate these signals and messages in plain sight, sure in the knowledge that the trance-like masses are incapable of recognizing the awful, ongoing masquerade of deception that stares them right in the face.

Martin Short, who authored a book, *Inside the Brotherhood,* exposing the Masonic Order inside Great Britain, observed that Masons, believing their secrets to be oblivious to detection, are known to mutter words of near-contempt as they sing a little ditty called "The Entered Apprentice's Song." A verse of this melody goes:

> The world is in pain, Our secrets to gain.
> And still let them wonder and gaze on;
> They ne'er can divine, the Word or the Sign
> Of a Free and Accepted Mason [24]

Oh, we can't, can we? Perhaps it is true that the uninformed "world" at large cannot divine the Word and Sign of the Mason, but the readers of *Codex Magica* shall do exactly that. Let us therefore move forward with eager anticipation as we uncover in this book many of the most precious and despicable secrets of the elite—things they never in a million years thought we would discover.

Lives of Quiet Desperation... and Torment

Why have the Illuminists succeeded in their hoodwinking efforts up to now? Is it not because of the gullibility of the general public? It has been said that, "most men lead lives of quiet desperation." This is true, and so it is that in their silent morass of desperation, most seek to dull their senses through alcohol, drugs, sex, and entertainment. Tormented within, but doing their utmost to keep a smile on their faces, unable to face the truth, too frightened to even admit to themselves that anything is awry, most men do not even know who their tormentors really are.

To escape reality, these men shrink from the facts, hoping against hope that all will turn out satisfactory in the end. The reality that a monstrous conspiracy exists against them and against their loved ones becomes an enormous burden they simply cannot bear. Cowards, it seems, die a thousand deaths.

Swedish researcher Juri Lina, whose book, *Architects of Deception,* is a revealing, fact-filled expose of the secret society of Freemasonry, warns that the ideology of "Illuminism," propagated by international Freemasonry and other secret elite groups, is an overwhelming, hidden danger to all of us. It has already brought the most violent upheavals and revolutions and is responsible for the "moral and spiritual degeneration of the individual."[25]

Yet astonishingly, writes Lina, most men and women are hopelessly oblivious to the very forces that most affect their lives on a daily and continuing basis. Lina consequently puts forth this word of caution:

> Those who do not examine the different aspects of the conspiracy will remain incapable of understanding the world...Our rulers want us to believe that a lack of historical knowledge and ignorance about the secrets of nature constitutes true knowledge.[26]

Lina laments the rampant ignorance by the masses who possess little or no understanding of the vast evil on their very doorstep about to break down the door and enter therein. Wisely, he contends that the ignorant, while not the inventors of evil things, nevertheless are accomplices and contributors to evil. "Not being aware of these facts," he writes, "is in itself an evil because ignorance serves evil."[27]

"The little Man Who Wasn't There"

Dr. Peter Ruckman, author of many fine books exposing the conspiracy and defending the Bible, in his newsletter recently penned an article about "The Little Man Who Wasn't There."[28] Ruckman sagely observed that historians, like other establishment "experts," can scarcely be trusted, for they invariably write a history they would *like* to believe. They limit themselves to reporting only that which comports and agrees with the *socially accepted* view of history and "truth." If a set of facts is unpleasant or inconvenient to the officially approved mantra, or version, of events, reality must suffer. Facts must become non-facts and lies must be converted into "reliable truths." Ruckman remarks:

> When I was a boy we repeated several little doggerels that turned out to be gems of wisdom in content. One went: "Last night I saw upon the stair a little man who wasn't there; he wasn't there again today; oh gee, I wish he'd go away![29]

"Some nonexistent spooks," Ruckman adds, "are very persistent."[30]

In *Codex Magica,* we shine a bright spotlight on the little man sitting on the stair, and — voila! — we discover the incontrovertible fact that he is not only there, he is not a little man at all. He's a giant, dark, wicked, corrupt, conspiring, sly, cunning, devious, dangerous ogre who fully deserves all the contemptible attention we can focus on him. He's more than a spook, he's a bloodsucking parasite, a monster who is sitting on the stair blocking us from entering, a criminal thug lying in wait to waylay you and me and rob us of our belongings, our health, our very lives.

Without him sitting there detrimentally blocking our path, the world would be a far better place. Certainly a safer and happier place.

"Two Plus Two Make Four"

Bob Whitaker, a South Carolinian who has done many fine and adventurous things in his life, teaching college classes, serving as a senior staffer on Capitol Hill, and writing copy for the *Voice of America* radio broadcast, points out that anyone today who simply believes the obvious is ignorantly and unfairly branded an extremist, a conspiracy-monger, a racist, or worse. Men are not free, Whitaker suggests, to tell the truth:

> In George Orwell's book *1984,* it turns out that the whole hideous totalitarianism that crushed the hero is based on ending one simple, useless-sounding freedom; "Freedom," it says, "is the freedom to say that two plus two make four."[31]

How incredible! Whitaker is right on target. Who would have ever thought that in the once great United States of America would reside almost 300 million souls, virtually every one of whom today is shaking in his boots, quivering, numb with fear over what dreadful things might happen if he just once simply put his foot down, gritted his teeth, and spit out the words:

I see the little man on the stair. He is there!
And two plus two makes four.
And that's all there is to it. Period!

How sad that most men, by their cowardly silence, become secret collaborators, acquiescing in their own enslavement. What a marvelous and wonderful world this would be if just a small group of honest and thoughtful, courageous men and women would view the revealing and provocative photographs, illustrations, and proofs in *Codex Magica* and exclaim with all their might in a loud, loud voice to all within hearing range: "I see it. I no longer will remain bound by the willful ignorance that binds the multitudes. I will tell others. I will speak out until, someday, maybe soon, the whole, rotten occult Illuminati establishment comes crashing down!"

TWO

The Megalomania and Rage of the Psychopaths—Why the Illuminati Do What They Do

All of my means are rational, only my ends are insane.

— "Captain Ahab" in *Moby Dick*
by Herman Melville

Why do the Illuminati do what they do? After many years of research and investigation into their behavior and conduct, and understanding their goals and ambition, I am persuaded these men fit the definition of *psychopathic personalities.* They are *psychopaths* and as such they are afflicted with the dangerous malady called *megalomania.*

Here is how *Webster's Dictionary* defines these words:

> Psychopathic personality: 1. An emotionally and behaviorally disordered state characterized by clear perception of reality except in the individual's social and moral obligations and often by the pursuit of immediate personal gratification in criminal acts, drug addiction, or sexual perversion. 2. A person having a psychopathic personality.

> Megalomania: 1. A mania for great or grandiose performance. 2. A delusional mental disorder that is marked by infantile feelings of personal omnipotence and grandeur.

In sum, the psychopath possesses a clear perception of reality—he knows full well what he's doing—but he refuses to abide by society's morals. Instead, he pursues personal gratification in such things as criminal acts, drug addiction and sexual perversion.

Combined with feelings of megalomania, the psychopath has visions of his own omnipotence—he thinks he is a god—and has delusions of grandeur. Since he is persuaded he is divine and not bound by the rules that apply to other, less godly beings, the psychopath is a dangerous person, indeed. Dr. Essi Viding, of the Institute of Psychiatry at the prestigious King's College in London, England, has done extensive study of the motivation and behavior of the psychopathic personality. Dr. Viding cautions that the psychopath "shows a lack of remorse, conscience, and understanding of the feelings of others."[1] Sounds like a psychological description and profile of a lot of our world's foremost political and corporate leaders today, doesn't it?

Insane, Parasitic, Immoral, and Dangerous

Frustrate the unbridled ambition of the psychopath and he strikes out in a controlled, yet insane, fit of anger and rage. If the psychopath holds a position of great responsibility—say, President of the United States or dictator of a technologically advanced nation, he can do some major damage.

William Krasner, in an article way back in 1946 entitled *Neurotica,* warned of the dangers that lie ahead for societies who fall into the grip of the criminal psychopath. He wrote:

> The psychopath is a disruptive, parasitic, immoral influence. Any group, while it may for various reasons support and even honor the psychopath... in direct proportion to the extent that the psychopath is tolerated, that his attitudes find support in the culture pattern, to that extent it is an unhealthy society.[2]

Tragically, America has actually become a dangerous haven for mentally disordered psychopaths. The Council on Foreign Relations, an Illuminist organization, whose 3,000 members run almost every facet of our federal government, especially at the highest official level, is no doubt populated by a majority of psychopaths.

The Masonic Order in the U.S.A. has some two million initiates who have voluntarily undergone occultic-laced rituals to be accepted as common brethren. The ranks of the Masonic Order are loaded, I believe, with dangerous psychopaths. The United Nations organization, endorsed and funded by our Congress, is a seething cesspool of unrepentant psychopaths.

Liars and Deceivers

Psychopaths are inveterate liars and deceivers. In fact, they lie on an Orwellian scale. If confronted with a situation in which veracity and truth are prerequisite, the men who run America's federal government or who sit as CEOs of this nation's top financial institutions and corporations, have the psychopathic "talent" of looking the citizenry square in the face and insisting that, "two plus two do not make four."

Being deceivers and practitioners of the Craft (witchcraft), the psychopaths who lead the inner circle of the Illuminati are more than capable of standing before the cameras and working magic and occult ritual right before our very eyes, pretending all the while they are simply acting normal as usual. It has been said that if one really wants to hide a great secret, he should conceal it in plain sight. Well, this maxim certainly applies to the disordered, but somehow illogical, behavior of the men of the Illuminati. It is not rational to do what these men do in public, in plain sight, yet they do it and expect to get away with it. And they *do* get away with it! Or at least, they did, before this book was published revealing their unseemly, scripted, ritual behavior.

Why all the occultic ritual rigmarole? Why do some of the world's richest and influential men take the risks they do in working their demonic magical acts in plain sight, so that they are pictured doing it in major newsmagazines and newspapers, on television, and in other avenues with huge potential audiences?

Edgar Allen Poe, the famous novelist of dark mood and mysterious suspense, once wrote a tale, *"Perverse of the Imp,"* in which he suggested that criminals often have an overwhelming, all consuming desire to publicly confess their devious crimes. Could it be this is why the Illuminati so flagrantly flaunt their occultic wares? Is it that they possess a unique taste for deceit and chicanery? Or is the performance in plain sight accomplished because it is believed to infuse power and mastery into their sought for aims and goals?

Mockers and Tricksters

Do they simply enjoy mocking and tricking us? Teasing and playing with our minds, realizing that the vast majority of people in society are willing dupes? It was, after all, serial killer John Wayne Gacy—certainly a psychopathic personality — who once bragged, *"A clown could get away with murder."* Gacy, you see, enjoyed dressing up as a mischievous and gleeful clown and visiting hospital wards to cheer up young male patients. He also took great pleasure, in the confines of his home, in torturing and killing young boys.

All of these are reasons why psychopaths of the Illuminati pose and parade occultly in front of cameras, exchange ritual handshakes, and otherwise taunt the public. Remember, according to Webster's, the psychopath is immoral, selfishly flaunts societal mores, is infantile in personality, is delusional, and has feelings of grandeur and omnipotence. Men who think they are omnipotent gods must take extreme delight in putting things over the masses whom they consider inferior and sub-human.

Twelve Keys to Understanding

Moreover, after long and careful consideration I propose that in addition to these factors, there are at least twelve other reasons, or factors, why the Illuminati persist in their seemingly delusional and infantile behavior. Each of the twelve reasons is represented by one of the key words listed below:

- Secrecy
- Magic
- Build
- Power
- Pride
- Elitism
- Signal
- Wealth
- Please
- Invocation
- Encourage
- Rebellion

It is important we examine these twelve keys to understanding why the Illuminati do what they do. We have already covered the topic of the elite's obsession with *Secrecy* in Chapter One. In the following sections and pages of this present chapter, we will look at the remaining 12 keys. We begin with the Illuminati's employment of *Magic* to accomplish their ends.

- MAGIC

Magic is defined in *The New Encyclopedia Brittanica* as "ritual performance or activity believed to influence human or natural events through access to an external mystical force beyond the ordinary human sphere."[3] This is an exceptionally accurate description of what magic is and reveals to us exactly why the Illuminati consider magic of such extraordinary importance in the accomplishment of their aims.

That magic is an *occult* activity is also indicated in *The New Encyclopedia Brittanica.* So we are not talking here about magicians playing parlor tricks or entertainment extravaganzas—pulling rabbits out of hats, sawing beautiful girls in half, being chained in an aquarium full of water and escaping, etc. Instead, as the encyclopedia so well puts it, magic is *ritual performance.* It is an occult ritual.

In this occult ritual, the "magician," the Illuminist, believes he can "influence human or natural events." So in *Codex Magica,* we see pictured the Illuminati giving secret signs, sharing concealed grips and handshakes, displaying symbols and communicating hidden messages. We realize that in performing these magical works, the Illuminist actually believes he is influencing human behavior or otherwise causing real events to occur in a particular, planned way or intended manner. *Magic happens!* is a popular slogan among witches, occultists, and Illuminists—things change, reality is transformed. Alchemical transformation occurs. *Society is shaped by occult plan.*

However, to accomplish these aims, this shaping of society, the Illuminist, as an occult practitioner, fully understands that he is accessing, as the encyclopedia definition explains "an external mystical force beyond the ordinary human sphere."

Now, the Illuminist may imagine that he is merely accessing the "cosmic energy force" or that he is tapping into a "fourth dimension," or the "ethereal atmosphere."

Thus he may well lay claim that his magical work, or activity, is benign—that it is simply *white* magic, good magic, the right-handed path as the Satanists and other occultist call it.

But as we shall see, the highest authorities in the occult world admit that there is no essential difference between *white magic* and *black magic* (the supposedly bad, evil, left-handed path). Magic is magic.

Who, or what, then, is the Illuminist accessing in his *ritual performance* of magic? From my many years of research and investigation into the works and plans of the Illuminati, witches, Satanists, shamans, masons, and other occultists, I declare without hesitation that what these men are doing—knowingly in some cases, unwittingly in others, is calling on, that is invoking devils from an invisible realm ("beyond the ordinary human sphere").

The occult and the Masonic communities can call these evil presences by any coverup name they wish—the Great White Brotherhood, Shamballa, planetary entities, the Hierarchy, etc., but, in fact, the working of magic, I am convinced, is nothing less than the invocation, or inviting, of devils.

This, indeed, is a very dangerous activity; yet the Illuminati has designed its many rituals, signs, codes, symbols, architecture, art, and other devices so that the world around us has become a veritable Grand Theater of the Occult. Because of the Illuminati, the whole world is enchanted, dark with supernaturalism, and the one the Holy Bible calls the Prince of the Power of the Air, also referred to as Satan and Lucifer, must be very proud of his human minions.

• *BUILD*

You will find pictured in *Codex Magica* a variety of different types of people. There are the celebrities and the rich and famous, the glitzy or jet-set people who are into Illuminism, occultism, and witchcraft because it is trendy and fashionable. Among this group are some who are into the Jewish Cabala—movie and Broadway stars, singer/entertainers, activists, and so forth. These are often ignorant people who are used by the Illuminati to extract money, for sex, and as novelties. When the money runs out, they grow too old for use as sex partners, or the novelty wears out, they are often cast out or retired and no longer have access to the "Inner Circle" of the Elite.

Then there are the do-gooders — people who support revolution and the socialistic, globalist, environmentalist, and similar aims of the Illuminati for what they fancy is the good of society. Sometimes these people sign up for Cabala classes taught by rabbis; they eagerly join liberal social issue organizations and may also be involved in the secret societies and orders, though at a lower level. Again, we see these people are mere dupes.

Finally, we see several strata of Illuminati elite—major politicians and bureaucrats, including Presidents, Prime Ministers, Chancellors, etc., as well as some corporate CEOs, financiers, media moguls, and others. These are major players, but again, they are dupes because there is a secret, invisible, arcane or hidden "Inner Circle" which works behind the scenes and tells these major players what to do.

This higher level of the Illuminati elite have historically thought of themselves as

The Builders. There is even a classic Masonic textbook by this very title. The Builders believe that Jehovah God did Adam and Eve a disservice by driving them out of the Garden. They rankle at the fact that Nimrod, the King of Babylon, was confounded in building the Tower of Babel, and they are seized with rage over the destruction of *their* Temple in Jerusalem.

Indeed, the Builders are angered that every time they have sought to bring the world together as One, they have been thwarted by God. All of their chosen disciples, the Caesars, Charlemagne, Napoleon, Hitler, Stalin, FDR, Mao, saw their grand plan of conquest go down to resounding defeat. But still, they strive to complete their assigned mission.

Now it is the New World Order (or Bush's "democracy for all nations") they have in mind. The United Nations is to be "reformed," that is—strengthened. The few rogue nations that remain must be dealt with.

The economies of all the nations must be equalized, enterprise extinguished, constitutions amended or ignored, private property seized or regulated severely, religions transformed, etc. Those are the goals.

In other words, to *build* their New World Order, the elite intend to *destroy* the existing World Order. The old must go to make way for the new. It is the Hegelian Dialectical Process that is being used to achieve this prime objective. What is above must become what is below states the Illuminist law of alchemical transmutations.

J. Robert Oppenheimer, the Soviet spy who oversaw the Manhattan Project, the building of the first atomic bomb, and was present when the humongous mushroom cloud rose with its imploding plumes of fire, is said to have exclaimed, *"I am became the destroyer of worlds."* Few realized that this is a quote right out of the Hindu scriptures, the "Bhagavad Gita, and it was supposedly from the Hindu sun god, Krishna. Oppenheimer, a Jew, appointed to his august scientific position by 33rd degree Mason, President Franklin D. Roosevelt, was deep into the occult and was a cabalist magician.

As Michael Hoffman II and a few other keen-minded observers have pointed out, the A-bomb project, the transmutation of matter into intense forms of energy, was long an alchemical objective of the Illuminati magicians. Like the Hindu god who represents them, it is the fondest desire of these wicked, nihilistic men that they become the *destroyer of worlds.*[4]

And then, from the burned out carcass, like the Phoenix rising from the ashes, is to come the New City of Glory, the Kingdom of the Illuminati, ruled by their god-man King and His Master, Satan. This is the ultimate, all-consuming, repugnant goal of *The Builders,* to undo what God has done, to defile and utterly destroy planet earth and to rebuild it in their image.

The prophetic Scriptures tell us that this grandiose Plan—the Great Work of the Illuminati—will never fully come to fruition. The Kingdom shall not become the province of the rebellious Illuminati and their dark, occult master, Satan. Here is Almighty God's glorious declaration of how it all shall end:

> *"And the seventh angel sounded: and there were great voices in heaven, saying, THE KINGDOMS OF THE WORLD ARE BECOME THE KINGDOMS OF OUR LORD, AND OF HIS CHRIST, AND HE SHALL REIGN FOREVER AND EVER...*

> *And the nations were angry, and thy wrath is come, and the time of the dead, that they shouldest he judged, and that thou shouldest give reward unto thy servants the prophets, and to the saints, and them that fear thy name, small and great; and shouldest destroy them which destroy the earth." - recorded in Revelation 11:15, 18*

God's incomparable will and plan shall prevail. His Christ and His people shall reign triumphant forever, and the evil shall be judged. And what of the Illuminati, the destroyers of the earth, the ones whom Satan's servant, Oppenheimer, trumpeted were the *"destroyer of worlds?"* The Scriptures give testimony to their fate; they too, shall be judged, so that God *"shouldest destroy them which destroy the earth."*

- *POWER*

The hunger for power motivates the human disciples in the Illuminati structure. Because they serve Satan, they instinctually know they are also serving the will of his human hierarchy. They expect to be rewarded for this service to the evil side.

George Bernard Shaw, who maintained an overwhelming hatred for God and for Christianity, wrote of a "will" incarnated in higher consciousness man (the elite) that shall *"finally mould chaos itself into a race of gods."*[5] To fancy yourself as in a state of becoming divine, as so superhuman, special and superior you shall achieve elevation as one of a "race of gods," is an intoxicating prospect.

"Do As Thou Wilt"

The Bible says of the Antichrist, he *"shall do according to his will" (Daniel 11:36).* Aleister Crowley, head of the occultic order, Ordo Templi Orientis, prided himself on being the "wickedest man on earth." Crowley preached that Satanists had only one commandment: "Do as thou wilt shall be the whole of the law."

Only gods can do as they will. That translates into awesome power. Changing reality by the force of one's will is, in fact, the very essence of magic and witchcraft. F. Aster Barnwell, in his sinister book, *The Meaning of Christ For Our Age,* equates superior human will with god-consciousness. Through development and exercise of will, or magic, says Barnwell, a man may live forever as a god. Illumined by occult knowledge, the person is able to utilize pent-up psychic energy forces to effect material reality. Barnwell refers to this psychic energy force by the Hindu term "Kundalini," or "serpent power."[6]

A man possessing serpent power is said to operate in a spiritual realm. As such, he is immune to and beyond any human spectrum of morality. Whatever he wills is good, based solely on the results and not on any relative moral scale. In essence, the ends justify the means. In such a relativistic theology, black magic is no lesser in moral standing than is white magic. Black is white, bad is good, and all things are reversed.

Power is the Ultimate Aphrodisiac

Oh, how thrilling to the egomaniacal Illuminati is the realization that they possess and wield such awesome power within the planetary realm. Power is addictive. Former Secretary of State and Illuminati insider extraordinaire Henry Kissinger once smiled and confided, "Power is the ultimate aphrodisiac."

To communicate ultra secret, coded, visual messages of an evil and conspiratorial nature to each other or to the whole group by way of the world's most influential media, with no fear of being reprimanded or of ever being punished for the crime must, indeed, be akin to ingesting a mind-altering, soul-satisfying aphrodisiac. These men lust for power, and conveying secret messages unintelligible to the ignorant masses must give them great emotional delight. It inspires in them the desire to accomplish even greater occult aims.

As Shakespeare once wrote, *"The world is mine oyster which I, with sword, shall take and plunder.*" Yes, the world is their "oyster," and some in the Illuminati hierarchy are so infused with the carnal ambition and lust to power they even seek to conquer and reign the starry realm beyond the surly bounds of this planet. It was British colonialist plotter Cecil Rhodes who once declared, *"I would annex the planets if I could."*

Somewhat less grand and pretentious in his ambition for power but nevertheless worth recalling is former House Speaker Newt Gingrich, so full of himself sitting at the top of the heap in the U.S. Congress that he once told an audience: *"My goal is to shift the entire planet. And I'm doing it!"*[7]

- *PRIDE*

A perverse sense of false pride is a major factor that motivates men to be active as Illuminati operatives and to communicate by secret handshakes, signs, and by other occult media.

To smugly conceive of oneself as superior in enlightenment, in class status, in social connections, and in other artificial aspects is common to the elite. The promotion upward of the initiate degree-by-degree is purposely designed to create the impression that he is gaining knowledge forbidden to the unenlightened multitudes outside the order. A system of awards, jewels to be worn, covert handshakes and cryptic signs shared also reinforces the ideology that the individual is special and superior.

To Be In On the Joke

To be pictured in a nationally circulated magazine is ego-building enough for the Illuminist. But to identify with members of an exclusive and powerful secret organization by purposely giving a secret hand sign in that picture and realize that only other elite are "in" on the joke, so to speak—that can, indeed, engender a rush of perverse satisfaction and haughty pride. The attitude is, "Ha! Aren't we pulling one over on them! What control we have over the masses. What swill they can be made to swallow!"

Jim Keith, a first-class conspiracy researcher who some believe was murdered by the elite during what was supposed to have been a minor surgical procedure on his knee, believed that the perverse satisfaction and exaggerated pride of these men is a natural outgrowth of their keenly observing how much control over others their elite status confers on them and their associates. This is especially true given the Illuminati's control and manipulation of nations like the U.S.A., Russia and Germany, nations with vast technological prowess that fosters the growth of Big Brother government control. He writes:

> Beneath the cloak of the prime conspirators are larger groups of rich peasantry and landlords dominating a huge mass of poor serfs and less-than-serfs whose labor and lives are sucked to provide the lifeblood to nourish the upper portions of the pyramid. This ancient structure is perfectly visible to anyone with the eyes to be appalled.
>
> It is also obvious that the ruling class cabals and spy organizations which we do know about are pointed in roughly the same direction: the total control and "utilization" of the mass of mankind by whatever means it takes. Aside from all the lofty banter about the "perfecting of mankind," what is desired is the perfecting of the systems of control.
>
> Control is the shared goal of these numerous conspiring individuals, groups, and governments, and in that sense they work together, collaborating here, working individually there, creating an evolving noose of murderous technological expertise that swiftly tightens around humanity's throat. With this goal in place, with money and the tools of advanced technology in hand, the overall program of accomplishment crystallizes. [8]

Absolute Power Corrupts Absolutely

Exaggerated, self-absorbed pride becomes especially evil and dangerous when prideful men acquire power. It was Lord Acton who, in 1886, uttered the well-known maxim that, "power corrupts, and absolute power corrupts absolutely." Unduly prideful men are imbued with that unrighteous temperament because they often have unfettered access to power—power over people, over organizations, over resources, and over nations. Power to reward or to punish chosen disciples, friends, or enemies, even power to take life.

The best of historians now admit, for example, that President Franklin D. Roosevelt and his corrupt, Masonic associates knew in advance of the Japanese attack on Pearl Harbor that catapulted the United States into war. The Illuminati *wanted* world war, and the American airmen, soldiers, and sailors who died on December 7, 1941 were considered necessary to precipitate the USA's entrance into World War II.

The U.S. Government also had prior knowledge of both the 1993 Oklahoma City bombing of the Murrah Federal Building and the 9/11 bombing attacks on the World Trade Center and Pentagon. The massive loss of life was no obstacle as far as the elite were concerned. Their cold-blooded agenda is calculated to engender chaos and destruction in a never-ending, alchemical process of bringing *Ordo ab Chao* (order out of chaos). To the elite, murder is business as usual. And so, once again, we discover that a moral vacuum is inherent in the minds of these men of perverse pride.

• *ELITISM*

Closely linked with their perverse and exaggerated pride is the corrupt reality that the men of the Illuminati do, indeed, run most things in society. They are the elite, and, unfortunately, they are afflicted with *elitism.* They do receive unfair advantage and exalted status in society. Sadly, the dumbed down masses adore the men and women of the elite.

Elitism is a sickness, a disease. The men (and women) who are pictured in *Codex Magica* giving secret signs and sharing covert hand grips no doubt enjoy a smugly satisfying sense of perversity in knowing they are deceiving those whom, they are persuaded, are the ignorant and unknowing multitudes.

The Inner Circle and Their Puppets

The elite of the Illuminati are themselves divided by rank and authority. There is a hidden *inner circle,* followed by a several hundred-member core. Next, we have perhaps three to five thousand in a larger *circle of influence,* and then finally, another ten thousand *puppets.*

The latter group, the puppets, have no real influence on matters of importance. This group includes celebrities, media representatives, educators, and others who are only vaguely aware that an elitist global conspiracy exists. They simply know that they must hew to the "party line." The puppets also realize they must maintain a strict form of political correctness by promoting globalism and the approved socialist agenda. They are required to rigorously adhere to the "script" provided and continue to loyally wear the individual "mask" they have been supplied.

John Swinton, newsman and former editor at *The New York Times* once shocked his audience at a luncheon meeting of the press by boldly confessing:

> There is no such thing in America as an independent press. You know it and I know it... The business of the Journalist is to destroy truth; To lie outright; To pervert; To vilify; To fawn at the feet of mammon, and to sell his county and his race for his daily bread. You know it and I know it and what folly is this toasting an independent press?
>
> We are the tools and vassals for rich men behind the scenes. We are the jumping jacks, they pull the strings and we dance. Our talents, our possibilities and our lives are all the property of other men. We are intellectual prostitutes.

Swinton appears to have known very well that the careers and activities of his peers in the media are strictly controlled and regulated by their elite masters. And this rankled him. But then, after Swinton's comments that day, little was ever heard again from the man.

The Group Mind and the Insectoids

As Michael Hoffman II once sagely noted, the analogy of "insects" often resides in the true tale of the initiates of secret societies and orders. This is because these men are themselves deceived by Lucifer, and so they go about deceiving others. Thus there is a Group Mind resident in all these people, whether an Illuminatus is a member of the inner circle or is a lowly puppet. It is for reason that Professor Adam Weishaupt, co-founder of the classical Order of the Illuminati (May 1, 1776), called his sect the Beenan Order (Order of the Bees).

Jim Keith, in *Mind Control and UFOs,* also noted this hive mentality. Keith wrote that in the South American nation of Columbia, there is a German community which, even today, over 60 years after World War II, uses the swastika as its icon. This group calls its compound "Hormiga," in honor of the obedient worker ant, yet another form of Illuminati insectoid.[9]

Thus, we find the beehive or anthill as apt metaphors for the servants of the Illuminati. It is fascinating to realize that these people are servile, weak, and crawling little personalities. They echo in unison the words *"Yes, Master"* to their superiors, the potentates of the various secret societies and orders.

The underlings of the Illuminati, in effect, are abject and craven cowards, groveling in fright and terror before their Illuminist chieftains; yet, they act in public as though they are superior beings—oh, so special and "hoity toity," as the saying goes.

Believing in their own inflated self-worth, they consider themselves members of a higher-level caste while categorizing the masses outside their group as like so many cattle or sheep—even as "useless eaters."

They Look Down On the Inferior Goyim

Such is the distorted view of the Jewish Illuminati who derogatorily refer to Gentiles as the *goyim* (cattle).

The late Dr. Israel Shahak, Professor at Hebrew University in Israel, a man I respected greatly, was a constant critic of such a deviant, superiority attitude. Shahak noted that many Zionist Jews are unashamed advocates of human slavery:

> The Israelis have resuscitated a book in Spanish by Jews dating from the 14th century which has been adopted for use as a manual of religious instruction in Israel's secondary schools. It explains why non-Jews ought to be the slave of Jews because Jews are the elite of the human race. Because of this they deserve to have slaves, and these slaves must be non-Jews.[10]

This outrageous and imperious attitude does not take those of us by surprise who have studied the Jewish Talmud, the rabbis' holiest book. According to the Talmud, Gentiles are not even to be considered humans: *"The goyim (Gentiles) are not men, but beasts" (Baba Mezia fol. 1146).*

It should be further noted that the *Encyclopedia Britannica* says, "The Talmud is still the authoritative and practical guide of the great mass of the Jews." (From the

9-volume German language translation of *The Babylonian Talmud* in the Library of Congress, Washington, D.C.)

Slaves and Beasts

Slaves and beasts! That is what the Zionists of Israel consider those who aren't Jewish. Now we discover what the elitist, favored sons of the *Zionist Illuminati* think of you, me, and the masses. No wonder they kill without conscience through their instigation of world wars, through initiation of regional conflicts, and through assassinations and other criminal deeds. The elite plot and carry out heinous terrorist acts and institute financial crises and cultural upheavals to force the Hegelian dialectical process along its desired path toward a New Age New World Order.

Deaths are "acceptable losses," the Illuminati reason, and pain and suffering are necessary for requisite changes to occur in society. In any event, since those outside The Order are relegated to the lowly categories of "slave and beast," why wring one's hands or otherwise unduly concern oneself with whether such miscreants as you and me live or die? The *Malthus Principle* suggests to the Illuminati that periodically thinning the global population is a good thing. Evolution, they believe, calls for the survival of the fittest, and they view themselves as superior and most fit to rule.

Elitism is certainly a disease, a mental disease, and those afflicted with it experience no guilt whatsoever in performing magical rituals of all kinds to enhance and accentuate their elite status and signal their superior "knowledge" to their occultic peers.

• *SIGNAL*

Scan the pages of this book, *Codex Magica,* and you immediately discover that the conspirators of the Illuminati have a deep, dark desire to *signal* each other. They seem to be obsessed with flaunting their special ties with each other as well as their membership in the Brotherhood of the Elite at large.

Could it be that these men—sharers of occult secrets and sharers of crimes—also share a joint consciousness and recognition of their mission as individual members of a commonly shared destiny? I believe that is the case.

In *Conscious Evolution,* Dr. Barry McWaters acknowledges this commonality, this attempt to unify on the part of the insiders, each of which, he acknowledges, make a "unique contribution:"

> In this way the differentiated parts...come to recognize that our common task is a Trans-human one, a goal beyond ourselves. [11]

McWaters notes that, "Many people have opened themselves to serve as channels." By their individual acts of performing rituals, including the communication of signs and symbols which embody intense energies and are magical in effect, there is expected to arise a "transformed humanity, creating a new heaven and a new earth to manifest itself."[12]

In effect, the co-conspirators are performing a psychic form of magic. By the combination in the ethereal world of millions of ritual acts by individuals, it is believed that a collective transformation of mankind and of earth will take place. When a *critical mass* is achieved, a quantum leap in consciousness will spontaneously occur. The catalytic process of magic on a mass, continuing scale will help push this process along to completion. Then and only then will the Universal Mind, long a cherished goal of the elite, be realized.

Meanwhile, the co-conspirators believe they are mass-conditioning humanity and helping to build archetypes of energy forces in the collective consciousness that tend to create a binary, dialectical process of chaos that will result in the Hegelian achievement of *equilibrium.* This, they are convinced, will catapult the world into a global-wide Zionist state, ruled by an enlightened dictatorship made up of Masonic overlords who wisely rule and are beyond good and evil.

In effect, the co-conspirators are persuaded they are each a cell, or molecule, playing a certain role within a greater organism. Their deceit is to imagine themselves an energy unit, or snapshot within a holographic universe in which all things are related and are one: *"Further, not only is there one unity, but there are unities within unities within unities."*[13] But of course, at the top of their unified pyramid is the controlling entity with the all-seeing eye. That, indisputably, is Lucifer.

Interesting is the fact that each of the co-conspirators fully recognize what the others are doing. Each understands the mask he must wear and the signals to be given. In a Public Broadcasting System (PBS) documentary, the story is recounted of the day President Harry S. Truman, a 33rd degree Mason, met Hollywood director and actor Orson Welles *(War of the Worlds* and *Citizen Kane* fame). Truman smiled and said to Welles, "You're the second greatest actor alive today. *I'm* the first."

• WEALTH

What would compel grown men to act like immature, two-bit stage actors, twisting and distorting their fingers, hands, and bodies into ridiculous symbolic gestures in what appears to be a ludicrous campaign to force magical change or to convey secret messages via the media to fellow conspirators equally brainwashed? Most of these men are *wealthy.* Is that a factor? Does wealth confer on a man the unbecoming non-quality of stupidity? Is the secret coding and sending of messages, by word and by visual means, a process or activity of stupid, wicked rich men?

Not all wicked and powerful men are wealthy, but many are. Disproportionately so. Having studied the lives and work of the elite, I can testify that their idle lifestyle and wealth often becomes an impediment to their moral development and to their potential exercise of good judgement and common sense. This is especially true of members of Dynasty family lines—the Bushes, Kennedys, Clintons, Roosevelts, Bronfmans, Rothschilds, the royal families in Europe, etc.

Idiotic Behavior, Witchcraft and Magic

Wealth and idleness lead to boredom, and boredom to idiotic and aberrant, bizarre behavior. But though we may laugh at what seem to be the comedic and unfruitful attempts of the elite to use coded messages and symbolism in magazines, newspapers, on TV, and in other media, for them this is no laughing matter. It is serious business. It is ritual witchcraft, and without it, their lives would revert to the mundane. Witchcraft and magic having become an essential part of their lives, they are addicted and must continue. As one famous witch once remarked, "I had no self-control. My appetite for performing spells and working magic eventually became insatiable. Satan kept wanting more and more, and I had to provide it."

The scriptures say that the love of money is the root of all evil. Not just of *some* evil, but of *all* evil. The concentration of wealth into fewer and fewer hands translates into the concentration of evil into fewer and fewer hands. The idle wealthy soon lose perspective and are out of touch with the serfs and vassals. The slave state, at its zenith, is run by dullards, silly men who have convinced themselves that a secret handshake made in front of a camera—or a hand sign flashed by them on a TV news program — turbo-props their personal progress in the ranks of the elite. They are also convinced that their use of covert signs, grips, handshakes and symbols helps in their acquisition of greater satanic powers, leading to greater control by them over the unknowing peasantry.

Foolish, But Also *Dangerous*

Tragically, these men, though often foolish and dull, are dangerous to us all. The silly man who is given control and management over the keepers to the keys to the nuclear-tipped ICBMs that sit deep inside the earth is, indeed, a dangerous man. So, too, are men whose banking, financial, and corporate decisions can plunge entire nations into desperate straits of bankruptcy and ruin.

It is, moreover, no consolation to realize that the stupid and self-indulgent who populate the highest reaches of the Illuminati ranks are often cunning, sly, devious, and ethically-challenged.

The imbecile son of a wise king is always less wise than his father, but upon his father's passing, he nevertheless assumes the throne. How often does history show that heredity renders a nation a cruel blow when the next generation takes command? In that instance, the cry of the people invariably rings out: "The King is dead—oh no! —Well, okay, long live the King."

Rarely do the men at the top echelons of the Illuminati deserve their powerful and influential positions based on merit. Their reign is based on, first, heredity, and, next, on cronyism and toadyism. Survival and promotion is not according to survival of the fittest, but survival of the most wealthy and the most favored.

Sometimes, modern man looks at old newsreel footage of monsters like Lenin, Stalin, Mao, Hitler, Castro, and Mussolini, and they ask, How could entire nations have ever believed in such cartoonish, even outlandish, characters? But, remember, we see these men only in retrospect, and we fancy ourselves as being too smart to have ever been taken in by such odd personalities.

Someday, an evil one will come who will be so wicked and diabolical he shall cause the masses everywhere to revere and honor him as a "saint above saints." The scriptures say virtually the whole world will believe in and follow him. The

Illuminati elite surely will give this evil tyrant all their allegiance. They, along with the duped masses, will fall prey to the Strong Delusion, they will believe the Lie, and they will be Damned *(II Thessalonians 2).*

• *PLEASE*

To *please* their master, Lucifer, is the highest priority of the Illuminati. Illuminist Albert Pike, 33°, former Sovereign Grand Commander whose commentary on Freemasonry's rituals, *Morals and Dogma,* is the classic learning textbook for all Masons, issued instructions on July 14, 1889, to the Supreme Councils of the World identifying the Master whom Masons universally worship and venerate:

> That which we must say to the crowd is — we worship a God, but it is the God that one adores without superstition... To you, Sovereign Grand Inspector Generals, we say this; that you may repeat it to brothers of the 32nd, 31st, and 30th degrees—The Masonic religion should be, by all of us initiates of the high degrees, maintained in the purity of the *Luciferian doctrine.*[14]

Pike's embrace of the "Luciferian doctrine" is not surprising. Manly P. Hall, 33°, considered by Freemasonry as the Lodge's greatest scholar of the 20th century, taught that the energies of Lucifer were necessary for the successful Masonic warrior. Meanwhile, John J. Robinson, whose book, *Born in Blood,* was celebrated by top Masonic Lodge officials as an accurate history of the Knights Templar and of Freemasonry, insisted in his later book, *A Pilgrims Progress,* that Lucifer is *not* Satan or the devil. Instead, Robinson insisted that Lucifer is an angel whose guidance and help can be employed either for good or for evil. Of course, Robinson's writings make clear that pleasing Lucifer is high-up on the Lodge's list of priorities.

Lucifer the Divine

Eliphas Levi, the cabalist magician whose artist depiction of Baphomet, the androgynous goat god, is illustrated elsewhere in this book, was more to the point. He recognized that Satan and Lucifer are, indeed, one and the same. But Levi also taught that Satan, believe by true Christians to be the enemy of God, is, in fact, man's helper and benefactor. Indeed Levi praised Satan, or Lucifer, as the "angel presiding over the light of truth."

"Lucifer is divine and terrestrial," said Levi. "He is the Holy Spirit" and is the "light-bearer in us. It is our mind."[15]

Thus, we discover the cabalistic philosophy is not only that Lucifer is divine. He is integrated into and is one with the *mind* of the men who make up the Illuminati elite. Lucifer and these men are of *one mind.* This brings to pass the prophecies of Revelation 17 where we are told that the conspiracy of the elite in the endtime shall be composed of world leaders who will be of *"one mind for they will give all of their power and strength to the Beast."*

Unlike Eliphas Levi, most Illuminists are hesitant to identify Satan as their Lord.

Instead, they point to the Grand Architect of the Universe as their deity, or to a hazy and nebulous, unnamed "God." We have discovered that most of the Illuminati elite make the ridiculous claim that they neither worship nor even believe in a being, or entity, named Satan. Many laugh—at least publicly—at the notion of a real entity known as the Devil. The Masonic Lodge not only publicly disavows worship of Satan, but also vainly attempts to cast Lucifer, pseudonym for the Devil, in the mold of a good angel, ostensibly sent here on earth only to assist man and introduce man to the "better angels."

The One About Whom Naught May Be Said

In her eye-opening book, *The Initiation of the World,* occultist Vera Stanley Alder reinforces this pretense of the elite. She remarks that it is "Deity" without a name that is admired and worshipped. Furthermore, this mysterious Deity is esoterically described by her as the *"ONE ABOUT WHOM NAUGHT MAY BE SAID."* Ironically, Alder *does* have a lot to say regarding the *"one about whom naught may be said."* In fact, she praises this unnamed god as a being of immense *"wonder and magnitude."* She suggests, too, that the One the elite worship may properly be referred to as the "absolute." Alder also remarks that the entity she recognizes as the divine "One" is made up of "forces," and he has dominion over certain—again unnamed — greater or lesser entities.[16]

Of course, a rose by any other name is still a rose. And no matter how reluctant or tentative are the magicians of the Illuminati to come right out and identify the One whom they serve, we who have long studied these maladjusted rulers and their psychophants need not dodge the issue. Without question, a great many of the Illuminati know without a doubt whom they serve: Satan, also called Lucifer, the Devil, the Adversary. Their secret hand signs and grips, their symbols and their logos, indisputably prove this is so.

• *INVOCATION*

That demon principalities are *invoked* in the rendering of Masonic signs and other magical operations by the elite is a clear indication that these men are involved in witchcraft. It is not believed that the universe is some neutral machine, operating in a non-theological, pure, mechanical manner. Rather, there are believed to exist certain otherworldly spiritual hierarchies, entities that aid the elitist in creating a powerful effect upon the world. As witchcraft teacher Paul Huston explains:

> "There simply exists power to be tapped to do good or to do evil...There exist certain entities who will aid you in your spells...You may call these entities gods, spirits, or watchers; or depersonalize them as powers or forces..."[17]

The Hierarchy

These gods, entities, powers, or forces are said to be hierarchically arranged:

> "At the top, we have Great entities often known as Watchers, Mighty Ones, or gods...which can be contacted to bring a certain power to your rituals.
>
> Then there are spirit entities or demons halfway between men and gods in their constitution...Of course there are many minor, elemental spirits."[18]

Huston says that talismans, images, and symbols—and hand and body signs and the positions and prescribed actions of body parts—will "partake of the nature of a spirit or elemental." In other words, spirits are attracted and supposedly go to work on behalf of the person who wears or displays the magical talisman, charm, image, idol, or symbol, or who practices and puts into operation a particular hand sign, handshake, body movement, or position, or ritual, whether that ritual is simple or sophisticated.

The more sophisticated and complex rituals and the more detailed, intricate, and powerful is the design of the talisman, symbol, hand sign, etc., the more likely a higher level entity—a being higher on the spiritual totem pole or pecking order so to speak—will be induced to participate in performing the desired magical act. That is, the greater the *force* of magic that will be applied. A great Entity, perhaps a prince or other high-up territorial potentate in the demonic spiritual realm, is naturally thought to possess the power to force changes in the real world. It is no accident that in the Bible, the last day, endtimes world ruler and his earthly human companions are said, to worship the *"God of Forces."*

Ritual Ceremonies ***and Demons of Secret*** *Societies*

The leaders of the secret societies of the Illuminati would have to be supreme dullards not to recognize the demonic forces that are invoked in the ceremonial working of the various ritual degrees. C.W. Leadbetter, a 33rd degree Mason and occultist who was allied with Annie Besant and her Theosophical Society in the 1920s, is just one of many Masonic leaders who have acknowledged the participation of devil spirits. For example, Leadbetter says that the ritual for the 30th degree brings forth an angel who is "a great blue Deva of the First Ray." In the 33rd degree, Leadbetter relates, two "splendid fellow workers, spirits of gigantic size as compared to humanity and radiantly white in color are present."[19]

In fact, Leadbetter said that the ritual for the 33rd degree actually links the Sovereign Grand Inspector General of Freemasonry with the "Spiritual King of the World Himself; That Mightiest of Adepts who stands at the head of the Great White Lodge, in whose strong hands lies the destinies of earth."[20]

- ***ENCOURAGE***

The frequency of the higher-level elite conveying occultic messages via hand signs, arm gestures, body postures, and similar means *encourages* lesser disciples. It reassures them that they are part of a cohesive and unified whole, members of a distinctive body of powerful and influential world movers and shakers. It is an awesome feeling, no doubt, to find oneself in company with the aspiring and actual rulers of the planet.

Naturally, for the lesser initiate, seeing the top adepts displaying Masonic, Rosicrucian, O.T.O., and other signs and symbols in major propaganda and cultural organs (TV, newspapers, magazines, internet, books, public forums, etc.) also instills fear and dread. Fear and dread of what the Organization — powerful as evidenced by its public display of its chief symbols to a profane, ignorant mass audience —might do to them if they ever should be so bold or so foolish as to damage its assets, reveal its secrets, or betray it:

> There is an inevitability...which is at once its horror and its joy...once an accepted disciple has definitely undertaken the work in preparation for initiation, there is for him no turning back. He could not if he would...
>
> He has heard the voice of his Master. Occult obedience gives place to enlightened will. He can now be trusted to walk and work alone because he is unalterably one with his group, with the Hierarchy, and finally with Shamballa (hell).[21]

The Carrot and Stick Approach

Thus, we see in use by the top ranks of the elite the carrot and stick approach. If the fledgling initiate strays from the fold, or, worse, reveals any of the secrets of the Brotherhood, he will get the stick of punishment. But if he cooperates, he will be rewarded. He will find himself in the enviable position of being lauded as a co-creator of the world aborning.

C. Fred Kleinknecht, 33°, Sovereign Grand Commander of Scottish Rite Freemasonry, in March, 2002, in *The Scottish Rite Journal,* boasted of this Creator role. In an article entitled, *"A Brave New World of Heroes,"* Kleinknecht encourages Masonic disciples by emphasizing:

> One of the great lessons of the Scottish Rite is this: We do not inherit the world, we create it.
>
> "O brave new world, that has such people in it!" —This line from Shakespeare's *The Tempest* seems particularly appropriate...[22]

In practicing magic by employing secret signs, the sharing of covert handshakes, the use of power-attracting symbols, the use of hidden codes and other ritual means, the deceived initiate believes he is helping to build that Brave New World—a "better" world. Better, that is, for he and his magical associates. He is working as a member of the Group to alchemically break down and build back up society into a new order of things. He is, as we shall see, engaging in the rabbinic and cabalistic practice of *Tikkun Olam,* the repair and reconstruction of the world.

- **REBELLION**

The illuminated elitist does not regard himself as a man, but as a god. As such, he is, in fact, a rebel, engaged in *rebellion* against the one, true God. Collectively, the elite fancy themselves to be God. How does a mere human being arrive at such an *imagined* exalted state of existence?

Vera Stanley Alder, in her celebrated textbook, *The Initiation of The World,* writes that once the Illuminist has been raised to become a "unit within a great brotherhood," he progresses toward fusion and unity with the all-consciousness. In this state...

> Man is no longer worshipping God, asking things of God, trying to become like God. He knows that he is God...He is.[23]

They Hate Without A Cause

Here, then, we find an arrogant expression of hubris, pride, and, most of all, rebellion. Rebellion against God, against His Truth, and against His people. The Illuminati are revolutionaries. Their revolt has no rational cause. Christ Jesus noted: *"They hate me without a cause."* The Illuminist strives for liberty and fulfillment of self-interest and will apart from God and His Will. That is why this brotherhood of evildoers are rebels, opposers of good, colluders with any and all forms of apostasy.

The propensity of the Illuminati to engage in rebellion, against God, country, and even organized civilization itself is evidenced in the *inner meaning* of their centuries old rallying cry: "Liberty, Equality, Fraternity," the esoteric meaning of which is liberty from the dictates of God, equality of all men only in death, and the unity of evildoers. Truly, the man who has taken vulgar and bloody oaths to defend The Order and has vowed to protect its secrets against onslaught by would be interlopers and intruders is not above killing those who oppose his ambitious personal goals or who stand in the way of the attainment of the objectives of the Order of the Illuminati.

"In Freemasonry It Is Permitted to Kill"

Consider the military trial of the Freemason, Cabrinovic, assassin of the Archduke Ferdinand of Austria, Hungary, a fateful event that touched off the deadly and fiery conflict of World War I. Cabrinovic's testimony at his trial provides us a graphic example of the rebellious spirit of the men of the secret societies and orders.

Asked if he had conspired with other Freemasons to murder the Archduke and thus set off a saga of anarchy and mayhem throughout Europe, Cabrinovic told the military court, *"Yes, I knew we were all Freemasons, and this strengthened my resolve... Freemasonry strengthened my intention. In Freemasonry it is permitted to kill."*

Ah yes. *"In Freemasonry it is permitted to kill,"* testified the assassin Cabrinovic. How exquisitely truthful the man was as he sat in the witness chair, being called to account for his horrific crime.

When we examine the historical record of the world's most despicable mass murderers and revolutionaries, we find that almost all of them were members of

Freemasonry and other secret societies of the Illuminati:

> Robespierre was a Freemason; Weishaupt was a Freemason; Napoleon was a Freemason; Lenin was a Freemason; Stalin was a Freemason; Mussolini was a Freemason; Truman and Roosevelt were Freemasons; Ariel Sharon is a Freemason; Bill Clinton is a Freemason; Fidel Castro is a Freemason.

Is There No Help For the Widow's Son?

At his trial for conspiracy to commit homicide, satanist rebel Charles Manson was observed giving a variety of Masonic hand signs, including the Masonic sign of distress. The same sign was reportedly given by Mormon founder Joseph Smith as he lay dying on the floor of an Illinois jail on a variety of criminal charges. Lying bleeding and desperate, Smith's raspy voice could be heard crying out the plaintive, Masonic wail, calling on Masons to help a brother in dire trouble, *"Is there no help for the widow's son?"*

Joseph Smith no doubt could not believe that he, a man who claimed to be God's Chosen Prophet but who secretly worshipped Lucifer; he, a man of such superior intellect and endowed with the occult gift of spiritual enlightenment, was about to meet his Maker, a victim of a vigilante mob who despised him.

Jack Parsons, American rocket scientist, founder of California's Jet Propulsion Laboratory, and a priest of the O.T.O., was, like Mormon Joseph Smith, a premier servant of Satan and a rebel against God. He even fancied himself to be the prophesied antichrist. Parsons wrote this chilling paragraph in his diary:

> And thus was I antichrist loosed in the world; and to this am I pledged, that the work of the beast shall be fulfilled, and the way for the coming of BABALON be made open and I shall not cease or rest until these things are accomplished. [24]

A few years after writing this, Jack Parsons was killed in an explosion in a laboratory at his home, which also served as a meeting place for other members of his satanic order. He evidently was not to become the prophesied antichrist, a fact Parsons now knows only too well, residing as he is in some subterranean cell somewhere in a place called hell.

THREE

Concealed Messages—The Importance of Hand Signs to the Illuminati

And he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads...

—Revelation 13:16

Raise the right hand...extending the two fingers like a fork...then draw it back over the right shoulder and with a quick motion dart the extended fingers forward in a horizontal direction. It alludes to the penalty of gouging out the eyes of a traitor.

—Second Sign of a Super-Excellent Master Mason
Richardson's Monitor of Freemasonry (p.91)

As we shall see, the llluminati worship deity by many names in many disguises. One such name and disguise is "Jahbuhlun." In pursuit of their worship of this false god, Jahbuhlun, they have devised many rituals in which they employ "hidden" hand signs. In all the 33 degrees of Scottish Rite Freemasonry and in the rituals of the York Rite, the Order of Skull and Bones, the Ordo Templi Orientis, the Grand Orient Lodge of France, the Grand Lodge of Jerusalem, and on and on in almost all the secret societies and orders, handsigns, and handshakes are prominent.

In *Coil's Masonic Encyclopedia* we read: "The hand is important in Freemasonry...for the purpose of giving and receiving modes of recognition."[1] In

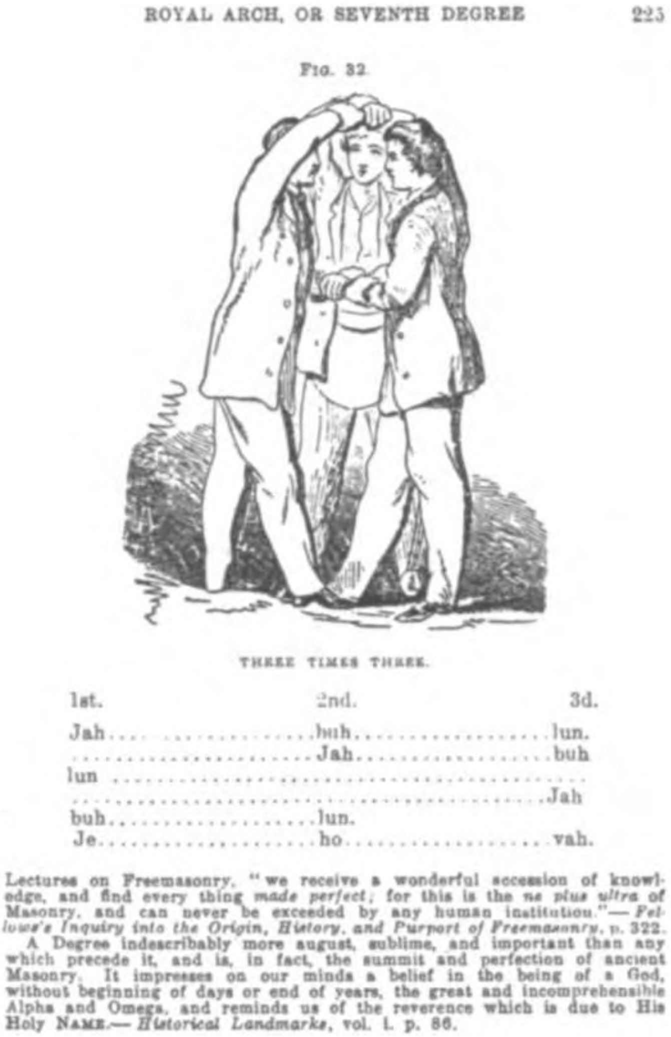

FIG. 32

THREE TIMES THREE.

1st.	2nd.	3d.
Jah	buh	lun.
	Jah	buh
lun		
		Jah
buh	lun.	
Je	ho	vah.

Lectures on Freemasonry, "we receive a wonderful accession of knowledge, and find every thing *made perfect*; for this is the *ne plus ultra* of Masonry, and can never be exceeded by any human institution."—*Fellows's Inquiry into the Origin, History, and Purport of Freemasonry*, p. 322.

A Degree indescribably more august, sublime, and important than any which precede it, and is, in fact, the summit and perfection of ancient Masonry. It impresses on our minds a belief in the being of a God, without beginning of days or end of years, the great and incomprehensible Alpha and Omega, and reminds us of the reverence which is due to His Holy NAME.—*Historical Landmarks*, vol. i. p. 86.

Masons pay homage to their Satanic god, Jahbuhlun, in performing the ritual "Three Times Three" in the Royal Arch, or Seventh Degree. (page 225 from *Duncan's Masonic Ritual and Monitor*, 3rd edition)

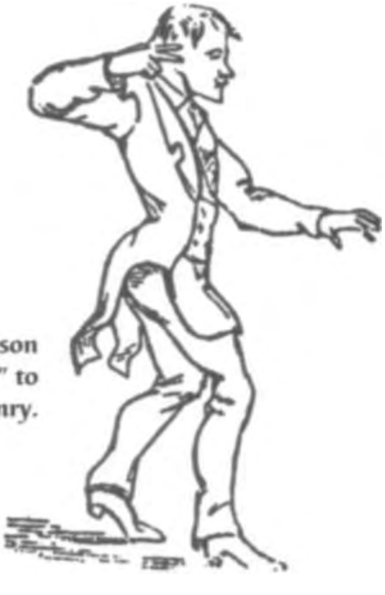

The second sign of the Super Excellent Master Mason simulates gouging out the eyes of a "traitor" to Freemasonry.

J. C. Coopers's *An Illustrated Encyclopedia of Traditional Symbols*[2], the author notes that hand signs include the following symbolic meanings:

Hand on Breast—submission and the attitude of a servant or slave
Crossed at wrist (X) — binding or being bound
Hand on neck—sacrifice
Clenched fist—threat, aggression
Raised hand—adoration, worship, horror, amazement
Both hands raised, palm outward—weakness, supplication, acknowledgment, adoration, admiration
Raised to head—thought, care, intellect, wisdom

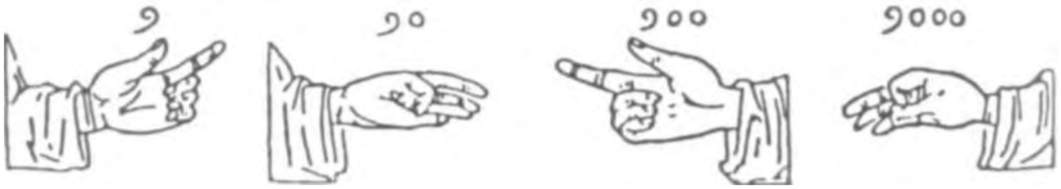

Numerical hand signs from a Renaissance text on mathematics. Such usage often combines the teachings of numerology with the secret messages of hand communications'.

The International Secret Language

Is the occult hand sign, in its many forms and varieties, the international secret language of the Freemasons and other covert societies? Manfred Adler, in his German-language book, *The Freemasons and The Vatican,* says the answer to this question is, yes.[3] He writes that according to the findings of a United States Senate Committee that investigated the Central Intelligence Agency (CIA), "Ninety percent of the secret news is transmitted via the media, in particular the press, with the aid of coded texts and pictures."[4]

Messages in the Media

Others, too, besides Adler, have noted the frequent use of hand signs in the media as signals of secret society insiders. Juan Maler, Argentine author and Masonic researcher, explains that the use of the hand sign is for the uninitiated a completely trivial and inconspicuous gesture. "But for the members of the Secret Societies, the hand sign is used as a sign of recognition by those who are in a leading position or who have a mission to fulfill and usually appears with a relevant text."[5]

Johannes Rothkranz, German authority on Masonic signs, suggests that, "If one collects the photos of well-known personalities from the daily papers, then one possesses, in a very short time, a great number of conspicuous and — for those who understand the signs—also meaningful poses."[6]

According to Rothkranz, the historic handshake between Helmut Kohl, then the

Chancellor of West Germany, and Modrow, the head of the Communist East German regime which sealed the deal for German reunification was clearly a Masonic handshake. Rothkranz further notes that the historic handshake of the two elitists was shown at length on European television.[7]

A Symbol of Power

Why is the use of the hand considered to be so significant as a means of concealed communications by occultists? *The Herder Dictionary of Symbols* states that the hand is "a symbol of activity and power." It notes that finding oneself "in the hands of a ruler or god means being in that person's power, but also standing under that person's protection."[8] The dictionary goes on to say that the "shaking or offering of the hand is a sign of friendly openers, devotion or forgiveness." But a closed hand signifies secrets or keeping silent. Other uses of hand signs are to indicate fear, threats, devotion, admiration, and argument.

The Herder Dictionary explains, too, that, "In antiquity, covered or veiled hands were generally customary when one approached high dignitaries." Hands with palms resting on one's knees express deep concentration and reflection.[9]

The hand can also be used as a threat to any would-be traitors or betrayer of the Illuminist cause. In the authoritative *Richardson's Monitor of Freemasonry* we find an example of this in the second sign of the Super Excellent Master Mason. The sign consists of raising the right hand, making the two first fingers like a fork, and simulating the gouging out of the eyes of a "traitor."

On the Other Hand...

There is a great symbolic difference between the use of the left and right hands. The right hand is said to be the hand of blessing, a good and positive influence, and those who use it in the occult world are known as those on the *"right-handed path."* This is considered *"white magic."*

Those on the *left-handed path,* however, are practitioners of *"black magic."* Full-fledged Satanists are typically of the left-handed path, though, in reality, it does not matter to the devil which hand is used!

The left hand is ever considered the *sinister* hand. It is associated with words like diabolical, witchlike, clever, deceptive, sly, cunning, evil, wrong, backward, and perverse. The evil eye is said to be the left eye. Some early Christians (for example, the writer of the apocryphic *Gospel of Nicodemus)* taught that of the two thieves crucified next to Jesus, the one at his left side

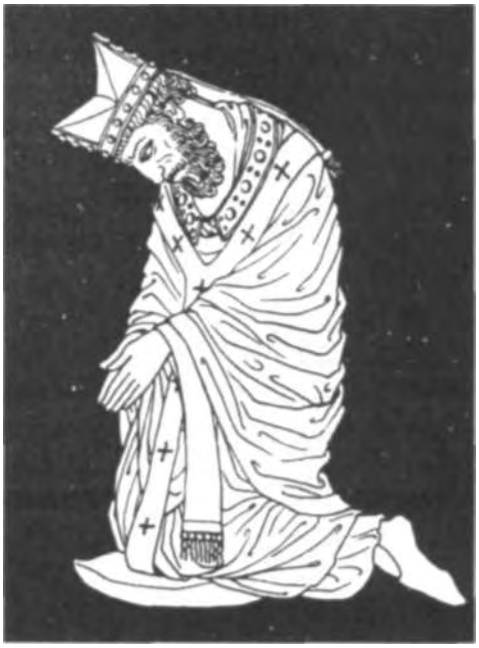

An odd, old drawing of a priest with hands in prayer, but aimed downwards toward Satan!

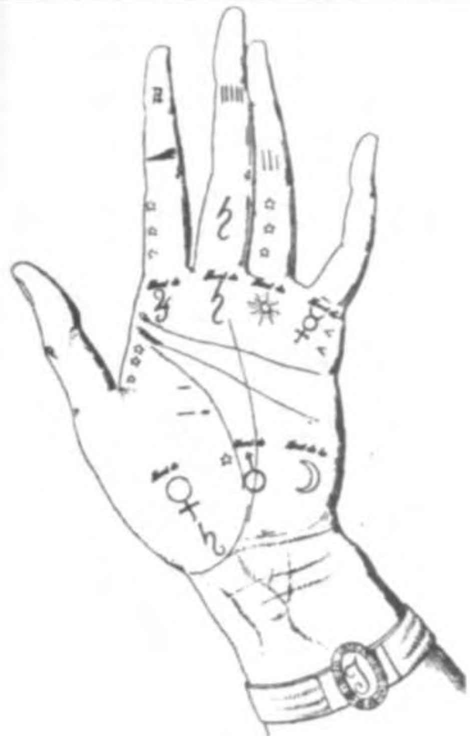

At Left: Josephine Bonaparte's Palm from Mlle Le Normand's Les Memoires historiques et secrets de l'lmperatrice Josephine, Paris, 1827.

At Right: The Sabazios Hand. Bronze symbol of the syncretic Jewish mystery cult of Sabazios in Asia Minor. Circa First Century, C.E. (Collection of the British Museum)

rejected truth and was consigned to hell.

In heaven, Jesus, of course, is believed to sit at the right hand of God, not the left. In *Ecclesiastes,* a book of the Old Testament in the Bible, it is said that, *"A* wise man's heart is at his right hand, but a fool's heart is at his left." *(Eccles. 10:2)*

Witches throughout history have danced in ritual circles to the left, that is, counterclockwise. Druid priests do likewise as they dance and march around the holy stone at Tara, Shrine of Mother Earth. To blaspheme God, some Satanists and witches derive pleasure in giving the sign of the cross with their left hands.

But while witches and deep occultists are aware of the sinister nature and meaning of the left hand symbolically, one of the foremost Masonic authorities evidently has a more favorable view. Professor James Curl, author of the reference book, *The Art and Architecture of Freemasonry,* writes that, "The left hand is the symbol of equity."[10] In other words the symbol of justice and fairness. Strange, indeed, unless one elevates the devil to the virtuous level of one who serves justice and brings equity or equality. But then, why would a Masonic authority think otherwise of the Lodge's true Grand Master, the Prince of the Power of the Air, *aka* Lucifer?

An Indicator of Attitude

According to most reference books of the occult, the positioning of the hand on a

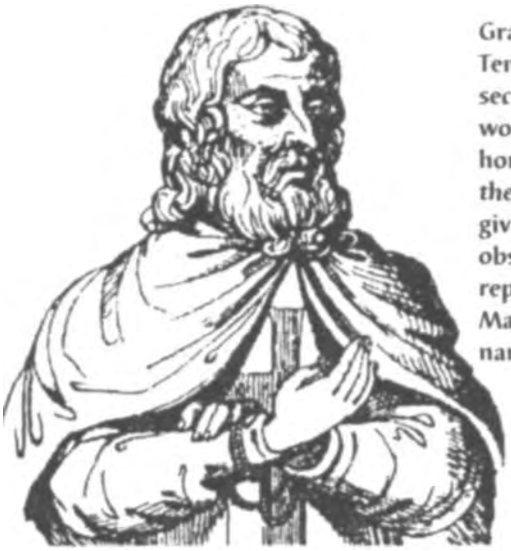

Grand Master Jacques de Molay of the Knights Templar, predecessor to today's Freemasonry and other secret societies. Accused of blasphemy and of worshipping the grotesque idol of Baphomet, the horned goat-god, de Molay was burned at the stake by the King of France on March 11, 1314. *The sign he is giving his captors seems clearly to be the vulgar and obscene "up yours" gesture.* Although de Molay was reputed also to be a homosexual, today's international Masonic Lodges honor their former Grand Master by naming their youth groups the "de Molays."

particular part of the body indicates one's mental attitude and inner meaning. A hand placed on the breast indicates a tender, loyal or sympathetic attitude. Placed on the neck, the hand denotes sacrifice and penalty, while the joining of hands signifies mystic marriage and fidelity.

Three or more people linking hands signifies the joining of forces or energy, and is expressive of a virile fraternity and of solidarity in the face of danger.

The authors of *A Dictionary of Symbols* note that the hand expresses "ideas of action, as well as those of power and dominion." They say it is also a sign of royalty. The Jewish Kabbala (or Cabala) teaches that the left hand is the "hand of punishment," while the righthand is the "hand of blessing."[11]

The same reference guide explains that the word "manifestation" derives from the same root as "manus," the Latin word for hand. "What is manifest can be held in, or grasped by, the hand."[12]

The Fingers Can Be Revealing

The position of a specific finger, or fingers, of a hand may also denote great importance. Sammy Davis, Jr., the black entertainer and member of the infamous Sinatra "rat pack," confessed in his autobiography, *Yes, I can,* to being a Satan worshipper. The talented singer/dancer said that as a Satanist he painted the fingernail of his left-hand "pinkie" finger ebony black as a sign. *"The chicks loved it,"* said Davis, *"and found it really a sexual turn-on."* Some Islamic imams (teachers) preach that the hand of Fatima, a revered daughter of Mohammed, represents the summation of the whole religion of Islam, and that Fatima's index finger points heavenward to Allah.

A hand with finger pointed to or touching the lip indicates, "Be silent." A finger touching or pointing to the head signifies "intellect or wisdom."

The pictures and illustrations in this section and the immediately following sections give evidence of the importance the Illuminati minions give to the use of hands, either in handshakes and grips, or in various poses. The old phrase, "a show of hands" certainly has a multiplications of meanings to the members of secret societies.

Open to Interpretation?

A word of caution and advice is in order, however. Although I have used the best reference guides and the best knowledge obtainable from myriad investigative sources, it is sometimes very difficult to judge and evaluate a particular handshake, hand sign, pose or grip. For one thing, even though a masonic reference book or occult textbook may clearly spell out the specifications for a type of grip or sign, the people who practice it are not always so precise.

I noted in a 20-year career in the U.S. Air Force that while the military manuals and guidebooks clearly explain how to perform a hand salute, not all in uniform complied. Some high-ranking officers render a shoddy, confusing, lackadaisical salute while others give a snappy, precise salute exactly as the textbook prescribes. One can see a hundred different types of salutes at a typical Air Force Base exchanged on a given day, each a little bit different in one aspect or the other. And, of course, if you compare the way the U.S. military salutes with the salute of a British Sergeant Major, the difference is striking, indeed.

Still, even taking into account the human factor, it is possible to identify many of the hand signs and poses given and used by the elite. Check out my selection on the pages that follow and see if you agree.

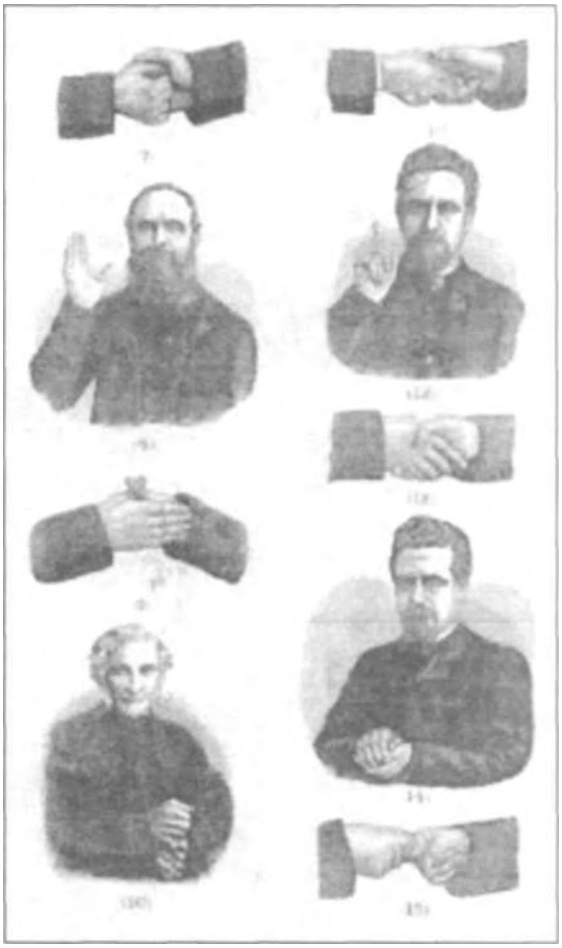

Many secret orders and societies display and use secret handshakes and signs. In Wales (Great Britain) the Order of the True Ivorites was established in 1836 and prospered for many years. Some believe two lodges of Ivorites still exist today. Pictured here are some of their secret signs and handshakes.

FOUR

Hidden Hand of the Men of Jahbuhlun

Because the higher trinity of man's being must be present before soul-union can take place...the Omnific Royal Arch Word can only be given in groups of three... Their right hands are then raised above their heads or they give at low breath the word: Jah-buh-lun, Je-ho-vah, G-O-D.

—C.C. Zain
Ancient Masonry

The greatest, but the most terrible moment in the life of a Mason...The three supreme officials of the Lodge, with three separate keys, unlock the wooden box with the "Secret of Secrets" and give him to read a slip of paper, upon which is written the name of the "god" whose follower he was...JAH-BUL-ON.

-D.C. Yermak
The Axis of Death

Over my many years of exposing the lies and evils of Freemasonry, the *Ordo Templi Orientis,* **the** *Rosicrucians,* **and other treacherous cultic** secret societies, I have been challenged by many Masons. Their typical complaint is, "How dare you say such things about Masonry! Why, I'll have you know I am a Christian, and there is nothing in the Lodge or its rituals that would not be acceptable to my Christian faith."

Of course, it is super-easy, almost like taking candy from a baby, to disabuse the Masonic whiner and complainer hollering that you or I have slandered the Masons by denying their order's "Christian attributes." After all, there are scores of points to make that blow apart the silly notion that the Masonic Lodge or similar groups are even vaguely "Christian" in nature. But the easiest way to handle such a complaint is to ask the Mason if he has reached the Royal Arch Mason ritual level or equivalent (13th degree in the Scottish Rite). If he answers "yes," then, uh oh, he is in big, big trouble.

What About Jahbuhlun?

I then ask him about the name of his sacred god revealed in the Royal Arch degree ritual; that is, I ask him about Jahbuhlun. And usually, I can hear either a long uninterrupted stutter, or else simply a great gasping sound. Generally, that ends the discussion right there. A Mason definitely does *not* want to publicly discuss that name, Jahbuhlun. Anything but that. Bamm! He's gone. And I can understand why.

Ed Decker, a friend of mine, a good Christian who is an ex-Mason and ex-Mormon, now heads up a Christian ministry aimed at helping men get out of these cults. In a book that Ed edited, entitled, *The Dark Side of Freemasonry,* he writes that while Christians know full well that the sacred name of God is Jesus, the Mason is at first denied knowledge of the sacred name of *their* God and then belatedly finds out that the name of the Mason deity is definitely *not* Jesus, the name above every other name *(Philippians 2:9-11).*

The Lost Name of God

The Blue Lodge Masons, encompassing the first three degrees of Masonry, are instructed that they are seeking the *Lost Word* or the *Lost Name* of God...It isn't until they reach the level of Royal Arch Masonry (seventh degree, York Rite) that they discover that the Lost Name of God wasn't lost after all. It's at this level that they learn the sacred name of Masonry's God.

They find that the sacred name of (the Masonic) God is composed of three names representing the three identities of God. It is so sacred it takes three Royal Arch Masons to be able to speak it.. Jahbuhlun. The three Masons grip hands high and low and chant, "Jah-buh-lun, Jah-buh-lun, Jah-buh-lun, Je-hov-ah." The name Jahbuhlun has three syllables representing a composite God made up of three subordinate deities. The Masonic material identifies the three as Yah (or Yahweh), Baal, and Osiris. Logically, the name should be spelled Yah-Baal-On, but *Duncan's Masonic Ritual and Monitor* admits that over the years the spelling has been "corrupted" by Freemasonry until it reached its current form.[1]

Decker correctly asserts that, "What these men are doing is worshipping a demon god so far removed from the real God that this worship must surely defile the holiness of God and guarantee those who pronounce that name in such a ceremony a swift ride to Hell..."[2]

C.C Zain, a Freemason who is part of a group called "The Brotherhood of Light," is developer and author of an entire course on Ancient Masonry having to do with "The Spiritual Significance of Masonic Rituals, Degrees, and Symbols." Zain points out that the name Jahbuhlun is Masonry's *Grand Omnific Word,* the name of their omnipotent deity. He further shows the significance of the fact that the name Jahbuhlun has *nine letters* and is made up of three syllables, Jah, buh, lun. In the ritual for the Royal Arch Degree, since there are three Royal Arch Masons pronouncing the name three times each, altogether, says Zain, twenty-seven syllables are pronounced. This, he explains, represents "the twenty-seven days it takes the moon to pass through the circle of zodiacal signs."[3]

Interestingly, in the ritual drama, the three Masons doing the pronouncing of Jahbuhlun are said to have come from Babylon! So, we have a ritual—the 13th degree in the Scottish Rite and 7th in the York Rite—in which three "Masters" come from Babylon (the font of all evils, see *Revelation* 13, 17, and 18 in the Holy Bible) to instruct the candidate on how to build the Royal Arch (symbolically, how to rebuild the Jewish Temple in Jerusalem and thus establish the kingdom of the elite and their devil god on earth).

The Lost Word Found

Moreover, the three messengers from Babylon inform the candidate that the true name of God, the name that had been lost for so long, is *not* Jesus, but is Jahbuhlun. They conveniently omit mention of the fact that this is, in fact, the name of a monstrous DEVIL GOD, that the name is an unholy and blasphemous composite of Jahweh, Baal, and Osiris, or On. (On is a city in Egypt where the worship of the sun god, Osiris, is alleged to have begun. Somehow, many in Masonry today honor and revere Osiris under the name of On, the name of his city, curiously spelled Un in the name: Jahbuhlun.)

No wonder Masonic authority W.L. Wilmshurst, in his highly thought of (by Masons) *The Meaning of Masonry,* proclaims this degree so vital to the transformation of the candidate's life. He even suggests that in attaining this Degree, one "exhibits the attainment of a new order of life."[4]

The Royal Arch Degree, Wilmshurst emphasizes, provides "a supremely high level of thought and instruction" for the Mason attaining it.[5]

Born Again or Demon-Possessed?

What does Wimshurst mean when he says the adept has attained a "new order of life?" I believe the candidate receives a counterfeit *born again* experience, receiving the very spirit of Lucifer into his bosom as a result of conforming to the requirements of this degree. In accepting the devil god *Jahbuhlun* as the sacred name of God the man rising to this level in Masonry or a similar sect becomes *demon possessed,* full of the devil, headed for hell, prepared to do the most wicked and foul deeds possible for his hidden deity, Baphomet, aka Lucifer, aka Satan, aka *Jahbuhlun.*

Now, the fatal (ending in spiritual death) sign that is taught for this degree is the one you will find men giving in the photographs in this chapter. Notably, only higher-level initiates and adepts will typically be seen giving this evil sign stamping them as demon-possessed disciples of Satan. I call this sign the *Hidden Hand of the Men of Jahbuhlun.*

From Washington to Rothschild

Regrettably, America's first President, George Washington, exhibited this sign, if the painter of one of his most famous portraits is to be believed. Subsequent Presidents, men like Franklin Pierce and Rutherford Hayes, were disciples of Jahbuhlun, as was President Teddy Roosevelt. We also have communists Karl Marx, Vladimir Lenin, and Joseph Stalin giving the sign, plus Napoleon, Salomon Rothschild, and many others whose images and pictures you will find in the ensuing pages, as they perform this devilish sign.

Wine From A Human Skull

Many other facets and activities pertaining to this degree's ritual stamp it as pure Luciferian and its holder as a Lucifer worshipper. During the initiation into the seventh degree Royal Arch Mason (York Rite) or 13th degree (Scottish Rite), the candidate drinks wine from a human skull. By this monstrous act, he reinforces the fact that he has taken an oath swearing to "have his skull struck off and his brains exposed to the scorching rays of a median sun" should he ever divulge Masonic secrets. He goes on to demand that if he does divulge secrets, may all the sins of the dead person whose skull he is drinking from be heaped upon his, the candidate's, head.[6]

So we see that the Mason's newfound "God," Jahbuhlun (Jah-Baal-On), is a rigid taskmaster who does not look kindly on traitors and blabbers. It was the Canaanite god Baal, of course, to whom the backslidden Jews and pagans sacrificed their children in the fire. You'll recall that the prophet Elijah brought the message of God's judgement against those who worshipped bloodthirsty Baal, who, in reality, is merely an idolatrous representation of Satan. Yes, Baal is the devil.

To attempt in vain to *combine* the name of the true God with that of false gods like Baal and On is particularly evil and grievous to the true God in heaven. Yet, the Mason does exactly this with Jahbuhlun and then compounds his grave error by adopting as one of his chief logos the sign of the *double-headed eagle* (symbolizing *one* body of God, *two* heads!)

The Triple Tau

Yet another proof of the deviltry of the Jahbuhlun hoax is the symbol of the Triple Tau, which is the most important symbol of the Royal Arch Degree. Made up of three interlinking tau symbols (T), these three are said to represent a triad of sacred, Jewish powers of king, priest, and prophet. In other words, the Mason assumes a trinity of

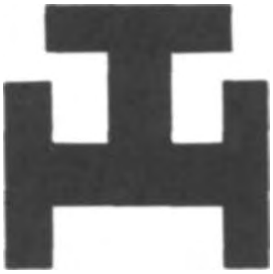

The Triple Tau is the most significant symbol, or logo, of the Royal Arch Mason. It represents the Mason who has reached either the seventh degree of the York Rite or 13th degree of the Scottish Rite as embodying within the attributes of the Godhead, or Holy Trinity, by blasphemously declaring himself to be the great I *Am That I Am,* thus identifying himself with Satan's promise in the Garden, "ye shall be as gods."

Jewish spiritual powers.[7] Actually, this trinity of the Jews is in competition with the true Godhead of the Bible: Father, Son, and Holy Spirit.

"I Am that I Am," the Mason Proclaims

Equally blasphemous is that in the lecture on the seventh, or Royal Arch Degree, of the York Rite, the Mason initiated is asked the question, *"Are you a Royal Arch Mason?"* His answer is required to be: *"I am that I am."*[8]

In other words, in this degree's ritual the Mason has not only acknowledged that the devil, in the guise of Jahbuhlun, is his sacred Lord, but he now is declaring that he, himself, a mere man, is the great I *am!* In other words, he is saying, *"I am God!"*

Uncovering the Hidden Hand

Now you see why I entitled this chapter, *"The Hidden Hand of the Men of Jahbuhlun."* In the early degrees, the Mason is told that the name of God has been lost. He's even told that he should use a substitute name for God, MAHABONE. But later, after he's swallowed whole the rotten fabric of degree ritual after degree ritual, the bamboozled and propagandized fellow is finally told that the one he is to worship goes by the name *Jahbuhlun* and that he is now ready to declare himself, a man, as the great I AM.

Obviously, the Illuminati's Masonic elite do not want the general public to know these terrible things. After all, incredibly, Freemasonry's public image is that it is some kind of "Christian" group. So, the pretense must be maintained and the secrets buttoned up from the "profane and vulgar" masses (you and me, dear reader). ***Therefore, the name of the horrible god whom the Masons worship must stay hidden.***

The name and identity of the hidden god must be concealed at all costs, and thus an appropriate hand sign has been devised to represent this grotesque coverup: *the Sign of the* ***Hidden Hand.***

How to Perform the Sign

Figure 34 shown here is taken directly from ***Duncan's Masonic Ritual and Monitor (3rd Edition).*** It pictures the Royal Arch Mason performing the **magical *Sign of the Master of the Second Veil,* which** I informally and more informatively call here the ***Sign of the Hidden Hand of the Men of Jahbuhlun.*** According to *Duncan's* the candidate presents this sign when he is approached by three sojourners from Babylon. Their objective: Rebuild the Temple of Solomon in Jerusalem and eventually establish a world empire of the Jews.

FIG. 34.

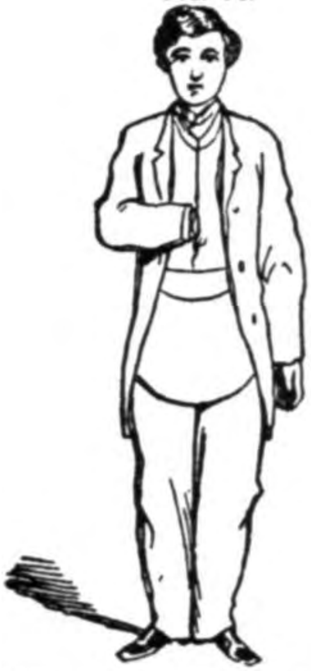

SIGN OF THE MASTER OF THE SECOND VEIL.

In his teaching course on *Ancient Masonry,* C.C. Zain of The Brotherhood of Light explains that the ritual for this degree requires a keen understanding of astrology. But, its performance is said to be derived from a passage in the scriptures. "The sign is made," writes Zain, "by thrusting the hand into the bosom and again drawing it out."[9] The official Masonic explanation for this sign—a myth intended to divert the profane from the truth — is that it refers to the fourth chapter of *Exodus* in the Holy Bible: "And the Lord said unto Moses, put now thine hand into thy bosom; and he put his hand into his bosom; and when he took it out, behold his hand was leprous as snow."

Leprous, indeed, is the hand of the Mason who vainly seeks to hide and coverup his fides oath of allegiance to Jahbuhlun, his sacred god. But, believe me, there is *no* relationship of the Mason to Moses, a prophet of God who loyally worshipped the true I AM, the God who reigns for all eternity in heaven.

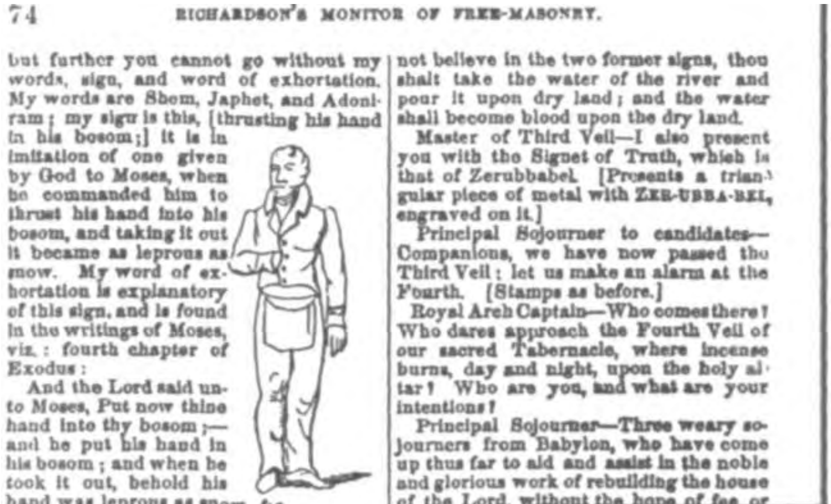

74 RICHARDSON'S MONITOR OF FREE-MASONRY.

but further you cannot go without my words, sign, and word of exhortation. My words are Shem, Japhet, and Adoniram; my sign is this, [thrusting his hand in his bosom;] it is in imitation of one given by God to Moses, when he commanded him to thrust his hand into his bosom, and taking it out it became as leprous as snow. My word of exhortation is explanatory of this sign, and is found in the writings of Moses, viz.: fourth chapter of Exodus:

And the Lord said unto Moses, Put now thine hand into thy bosom;—and he put his hand in his bosom; and when he took it out, behold his hand was leprous as snow, &c.

Principal Sojourner—Companions, we will pass on, and make an alarm at the Third Veil. (Stamps nine times.)

Master of the Third Veil—Who comes

not believe in the two former signs, thou shalt take the water of the river and pour it upon dry land; and the water shall become blood upon the dry land.

Master of Third Veil—I also present you with the Signet of Truth, which is that of Zerubbabel. [Presents a triangular piece of metal with ZER-UBBA-BEL, engraved on it.]

Principal Sojourner to candidates—Companions, we have now passed the Third Veil; let us make an alarm at the Fourth. [Stamps as before.]

Royal Arch Captain—Who comes there? Who dares approach the Fourth Veil of our sacred Tabernacle, where incense burns, day and night, upon the holy altar? Who are you, and what are your intentions?

Principal Sojourner—Three weary sojourners from Babylon, who have come up thus far to aid and assist in the noble and glorious work of rebuilding the house of the Lord, without the hope of fee or reward.

Royal Arch
pect to enter t
cred Tabernac

Sign of the Master of the Second Veil, or informally, Sign of the Hidden Hand of the Men of Jahbuhlun. (*Richardson's Monitor of Freemasonry*, p. 74)

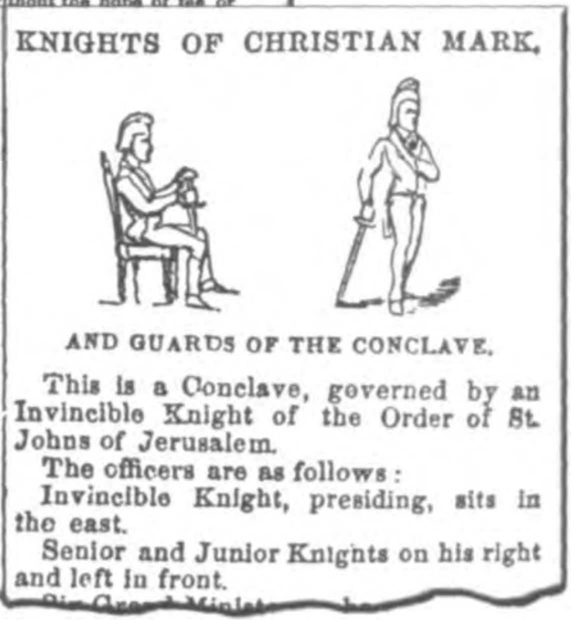

Guards of the Conclave during the ritual for the Knights of the Christian Mark Degree. (*Richardson's Monitor of Freemasonry*, p. 123)

KNIGHTS OF CHRISTIAN MARK,

AND GUARDS OF THE CONCLAVE.

This is a Conclave, governed by an Invincible Knight of the Order of St. Johns of Jerusalem.

The officers are as follows:

Invincible Knight, presiding, sits in the east.

Senior and Junior Knights on his right and left in front.

Right: This is the arrangement of the Chapter (Lodge) for the ritual of the Super-Excellent Master's Degree. Note the "Captain of the Guard" at top left with his hand hidden in his bosom. (*Richardson's Monitor of Freemasonry*)

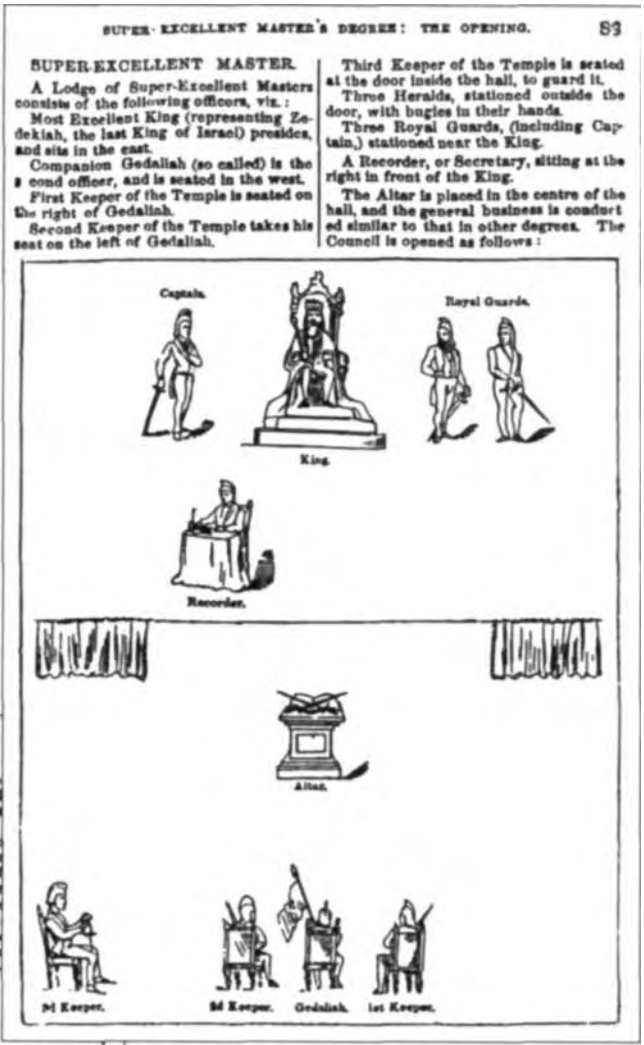

SUPER-EXCELLENT MASTER'S DEGREE: THE OPENING. 83

SUPER-EXCELLENT MASTER.

A Lodge of Super-Excellent Masters consists of the following officers, viz.:

Most Excellent King (representing Zedekiah, the last King of Israel) presides, and sits in the east.

Companion Gedaliah (so called) is the second officer, and is seated in the west.

First Keeper of the Temple is seated on the right of Gedaliah.

Second Keeper of the Temple takes his seat on the left of Gedaliah.

Third Keeper of the Temple is seated at the door inside the hall, to guard it.

Three Heralds, stationed outside the door, with bugles in their hands.

Three Royal Guards, (including Captain,) stationed near the King.

A Recorder, or Secretary, sitting at the right in front of the King.

The Altar is placed in the centre of the hall, and the general business is conducted similar to that in other degrees. The Council is opened as follows:

Below: Once again, we find the Captain of the Guard giving the "hand in bosom" sign (officially the sign of the Master of the Second Veil), this time during the ritual for the degree of Order of Knights Templar. The triangular-shaped altar with the coffin and its skull and bones emblem is revealing.

110 RICHARDSON'S MONITOR OF FREE-MASONRY.

Grand Commander—Attention, Sir Knights: you will now give the signs.

All the signs in Masonry are given by each Knight, from Entered Apprentice up to those of Red Cross Knights.

The signs in this degree are then given in detail, as explained hereafter.

Grand Commander—Attention, Sir Knights: you will form around the altar, for the purpose of opening this Council of Knights Templars.

The Knights kneel around the altar, and the proceedings of op
lar to those in a Council
Knights. After all is rea
Commander says:

Grand Commander—Si
Council of Knights Te
open for the dispatch of
you will govern yourselve
the sublime principles of

The veil is now drawn,
vided. That part occupie
Commander is called the

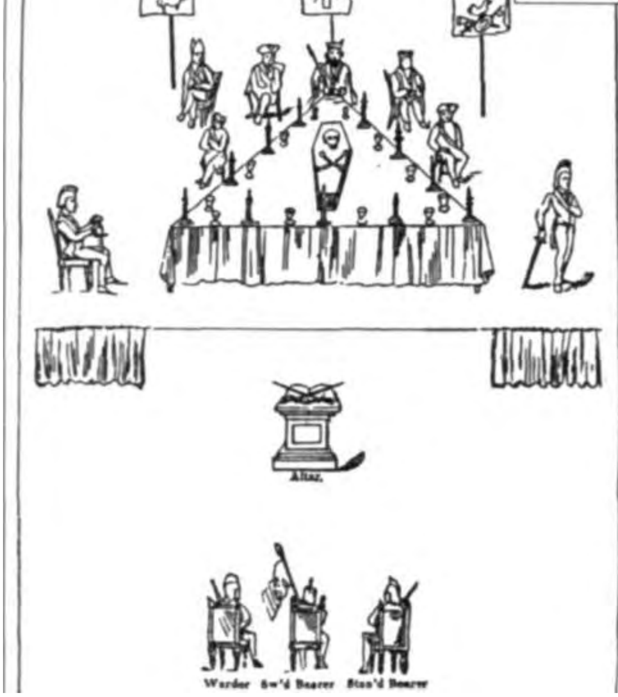

Masons of the Grand Lodge of the State of Montana march through the "Roosevelt Arch" to commemorate the Yellowstone National Park centennial in 2003. Notice that the man on the right is giving the sign of Jahbuhlun, his hand concealed in his jacket. He is wearing his Masonic apron. (*Scottish Rite Journal*, Dec. 2003, p. 53)

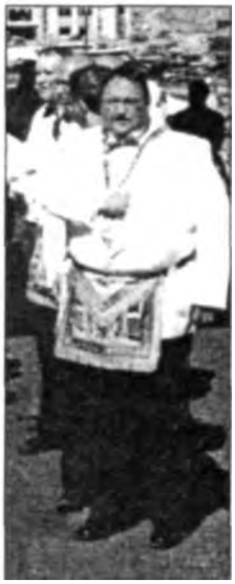

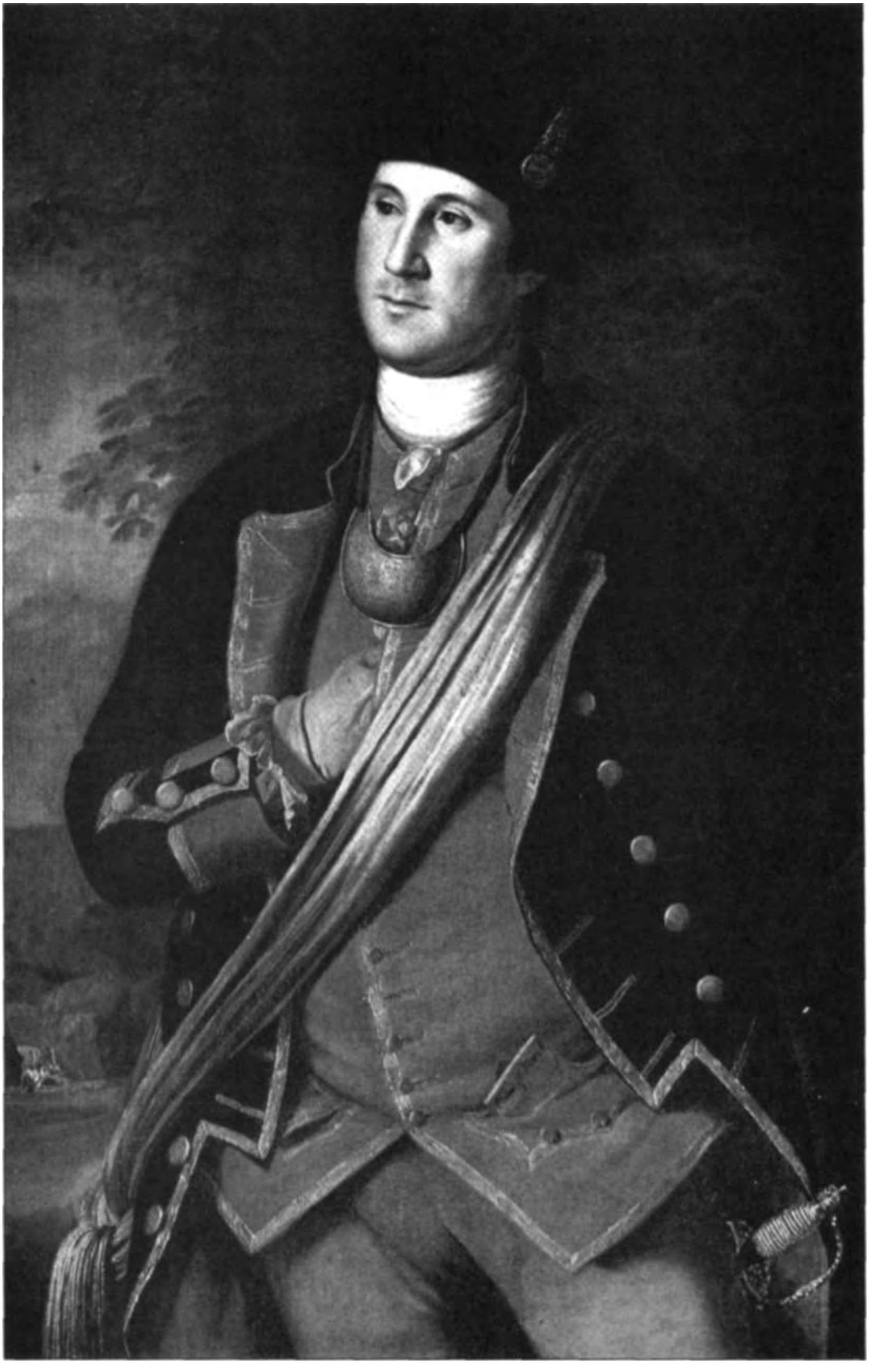

George Washington in a Masonic pose. Around his neck is the emblem of the moon goddess, feminine complement to the sun god, Osiris, secretly worshipped in occult Freemasonry. This emblem, combined with the diamond-shaped device just above it, indicates that Washington had taken the vow of vengence to all enemies of the Order of the Illuminati.

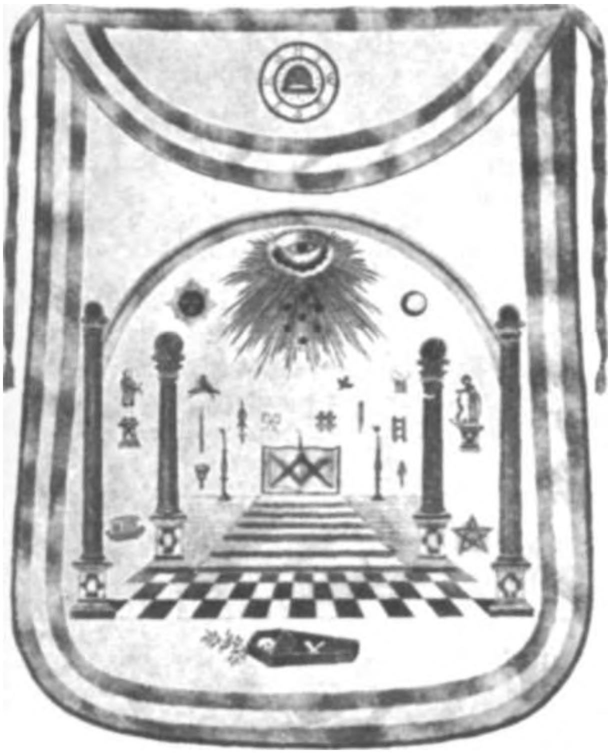

The Marquis de Lafayette of France presented George Washington with this Masonic apron which is now preserved in the library of the Grand Lodge of Pennsylvania, in Philadelphia. It contains many occultic symbols, the meaning of which presumably is reserved for higher-level Masonic brethren. Many, however, are outed and explained in this book, to the chagrin, I am sure, of the Masonic brotherhood.

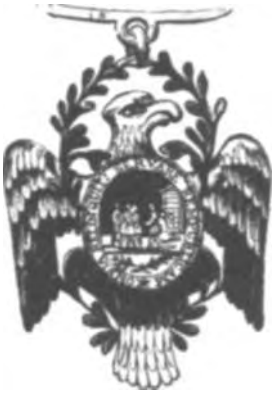

Emblem of the exclusivist Order of Cincinnati (also called *the* Society of Cincinnati) worn by elite members. The secret society met in private and was headed by George Washington.

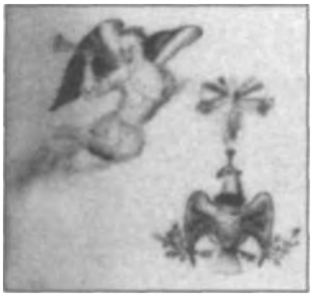

Artwork from a china set which displays symbols important to the Society of the Cincinnati, a secret order of elitist rich men begun after the Revolutionary War, headed by George Washington. The symbols include a strange crowned angel blowing a horn and a phoenix bird with a torch aflame in its head from which issues a swirling fire, or sun sign. The Society of the Illuminati was eventually disbanded when public awareness grew that this small band of conspirators seemed to be exercising undue control of governments.

G:Washington

Initiates of many occult societies, including Masons and Rosicrucians, select a mark peculiar to them which they affix to their signature. This is George Washington's signature. See if *you* can find his "mark."

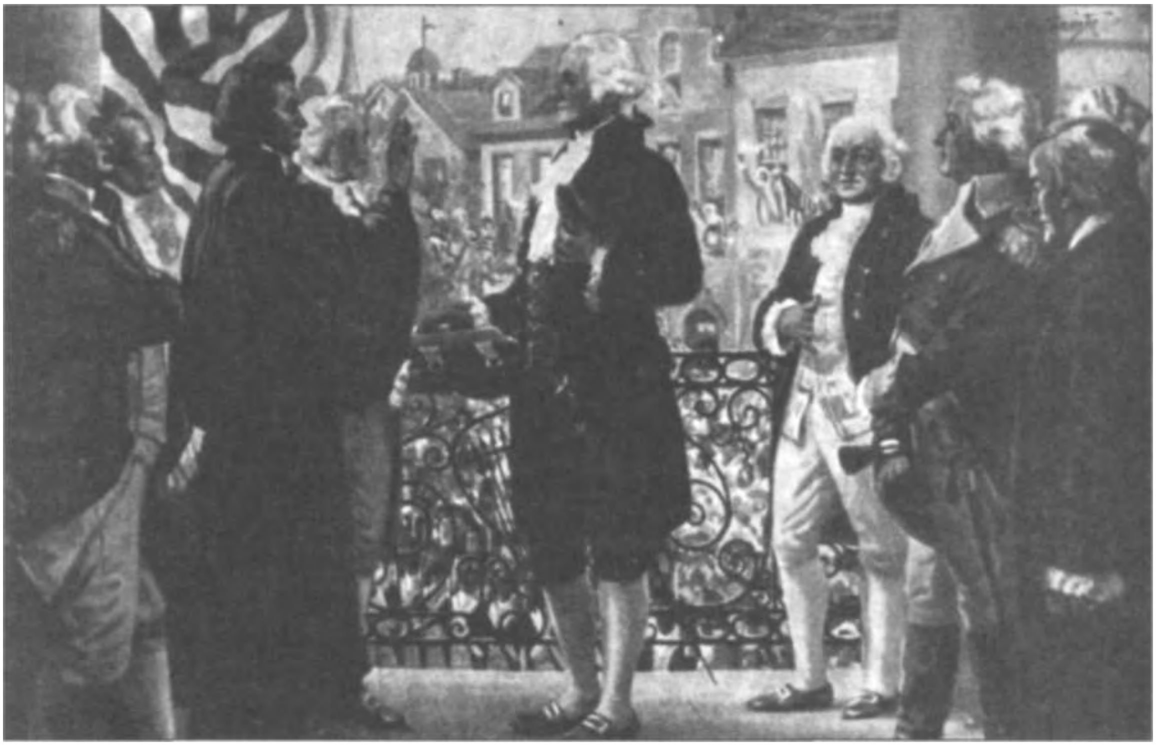

President George Washington takes the oath of office as the first President of the United States following the adoption of the U.S. Constitution by the states. The gentleman standing directly behind him is giving a decidedly diabolical version of a secret society hand sign. *(G. Washington: Master Mason,* by Allen E. Roberts, Macoy Publishing & Masonic Supply Co., Inc., Richmond, Virginia, sketch by Ronald LeHew)

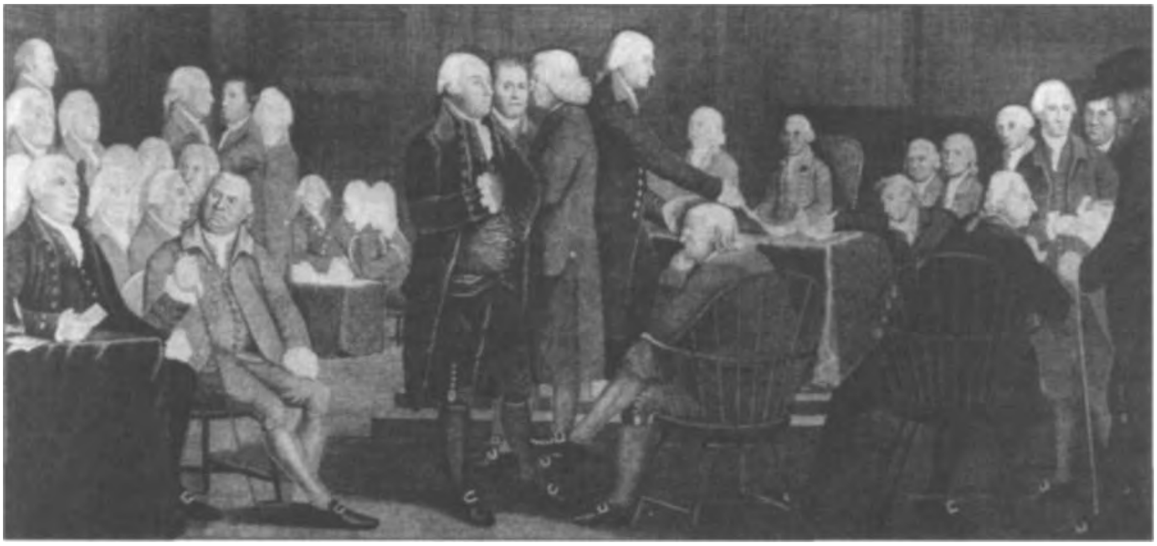

Many paintings and drawings depicting delegates who drafted and approved the Declaration of Independence show one or more of the delegates secretly identifying his secret society membership through a hand signal. The name of Jesus is never mentioned in either the Declaration of Independence or the subsequent United States Constitution. Instead, our nation's founders used vague, Illuminist coded terms like "Nature's God" or "Providence." Benjamin Franklin, a key leader of the delegates, was both a Grand Master Mason (Lodge of Nine Sisters, Paris, France) and a Rosicrucian. Thomas Jefferson, who helped draft the Declaration of Independence, wrote favorably of the Order of the Illuminati and its founder, European Jesuit Professor Adam Weishaupt.

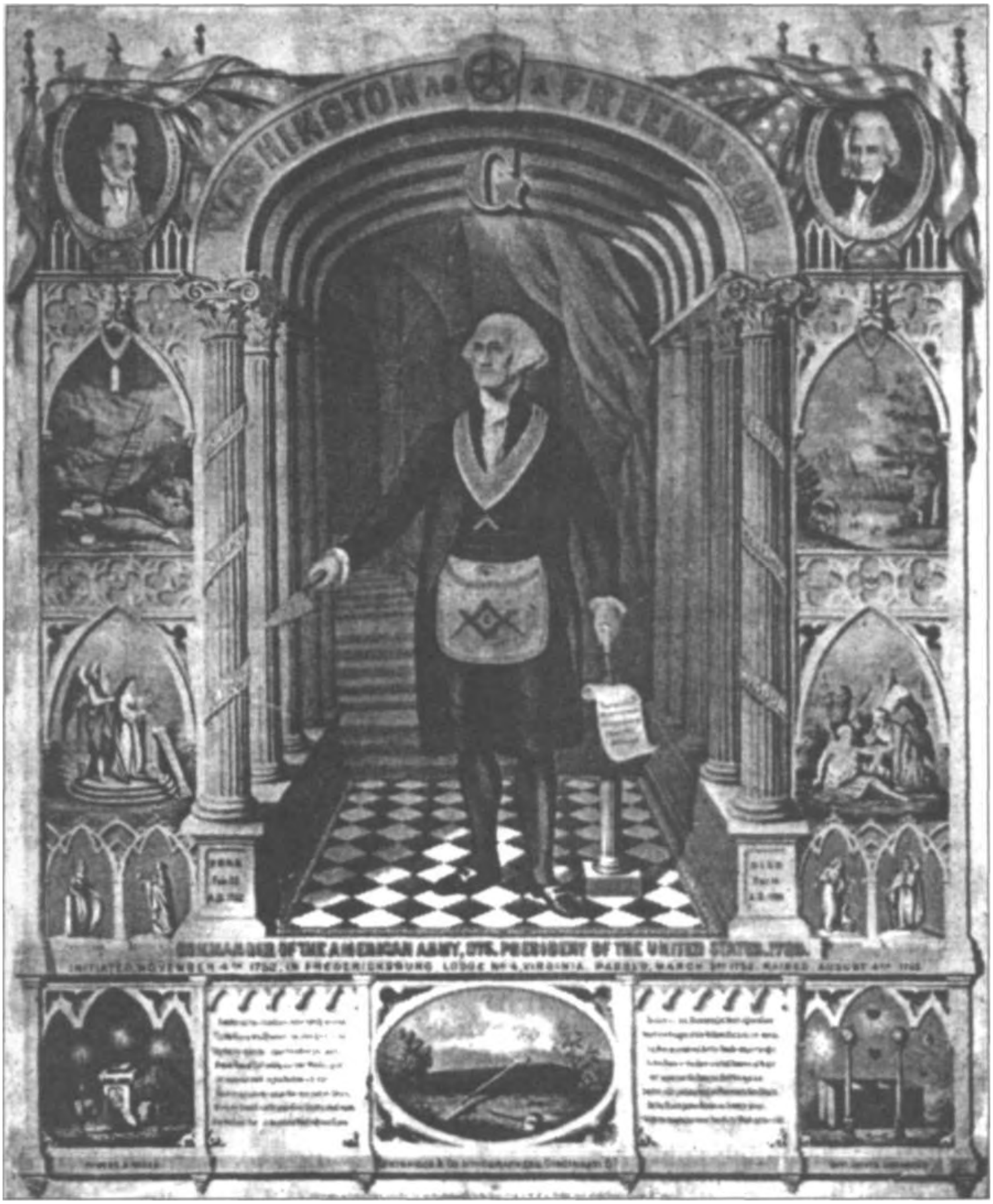
WASHINGTON AS A FREEMASON
G
COMMANDER OF THE AMERICAN ARMY, 1775. PRESIDENT OF THE UNITED STATES, 1789.
INITIATED NOVEMBER 4TH 1752, IN FREDERICKSBURG LODGE No 4, VIRGINIA.

This poster showing America's first President, George Washington, as a Mason, is distributed by the George Washington Masonic National Memorial Association. It was printed in the *Scottish Rite Journal* (August 1992).

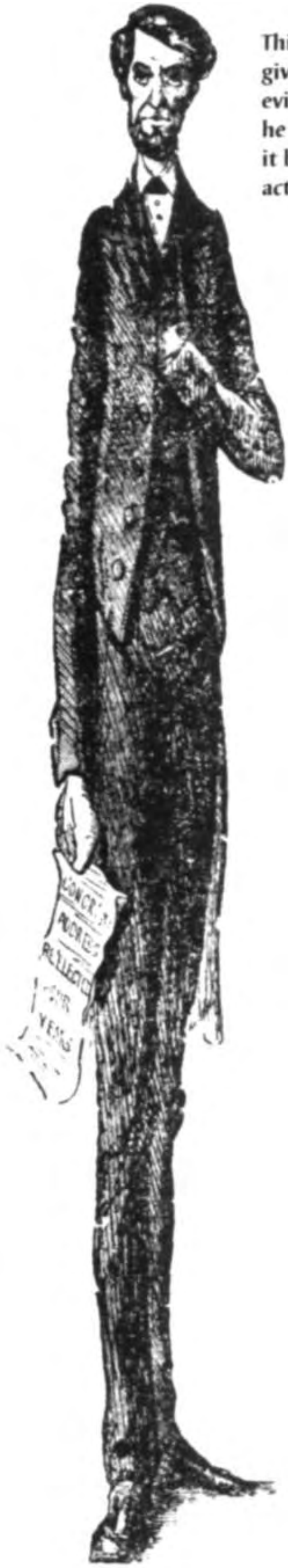

This caricature drawing of Abe Lincoln pictures him as a high-level Mason giving the left-handed path (darkly occultic) hand sign. However, there is no evidence that Lincoln was ever an initiate of the Lodge (see below). Indeed, he was murdered by a plot spawned by Illuminati Masons and Jesuits. Could it be the elitists are simply trying to ward off accusations of their infamous act by falsely claiming, belatedly, that Lincoln was one of their own?

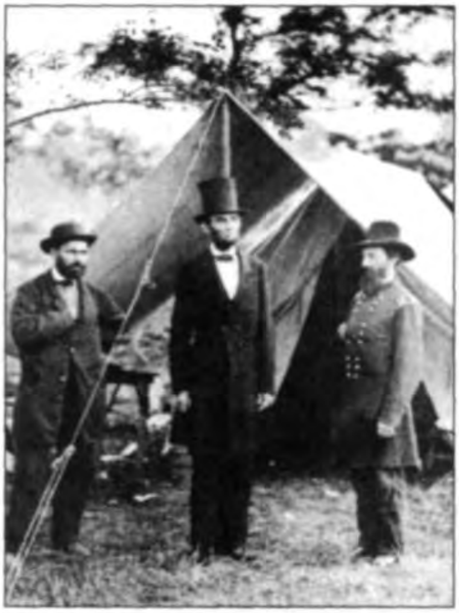

In this photo printed in *U.S. News & World Report* magazine (December 22, 2003). President Abraham Lincoln is seen visiting a Union military camp. Fascinating is the fact that the men on either side of Lincoln are giving the Masonic "Jahbuhlun" sign while Lincoln is not.

Here is yet another vain attempt to portray Abraham Lincoln as a secret member of the Lodge. Offered by the auctioneer at Christie's in New York as an authentic, 1843, early photo of Lincoln. Experts were skeptical that the portrait is really that of Honest Abe. More Masonic skullduggery?

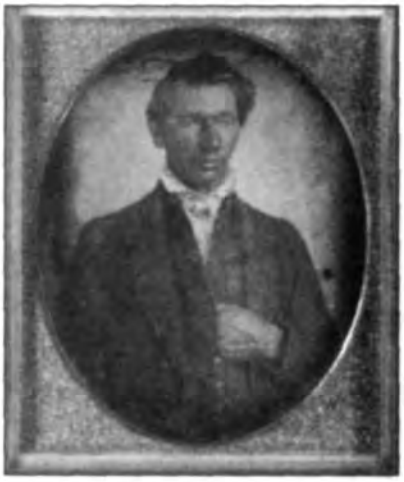

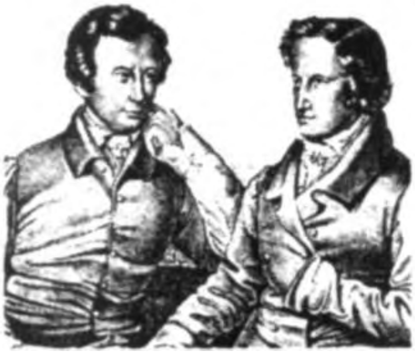

This old woodcut engraving of the famous United States explorers Lewis and Clark, western pioneers and mappers, lets us see the secret Masonic connection.

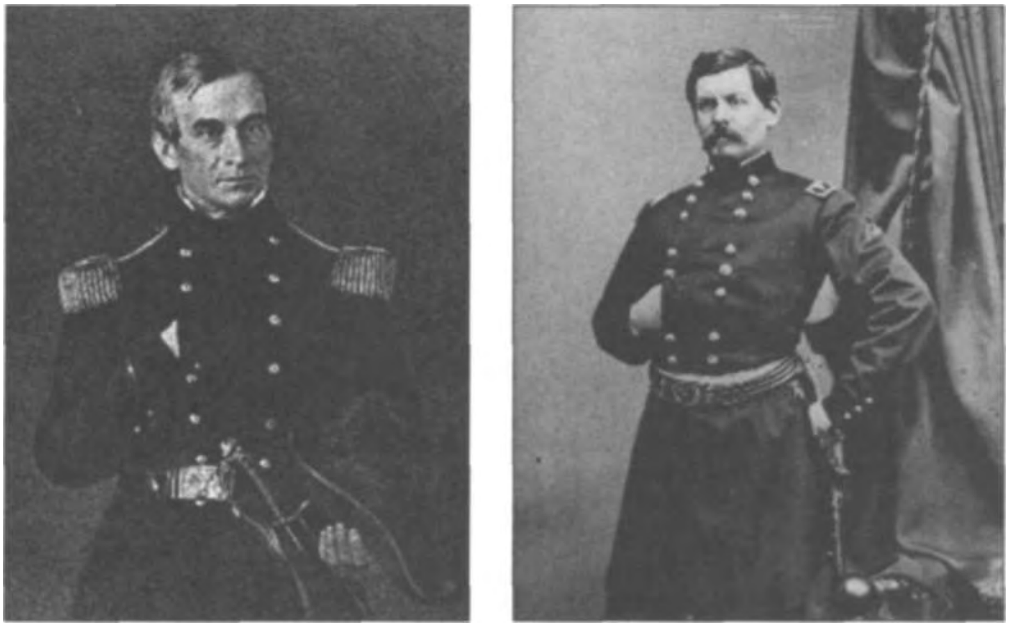

U.S. Civil War officers displaying the Masonic sign of the brotherhood of Jahbuhlun. Left is Major Robert Anderson of the Confederate Army and at right is General George McClellan, Union General of the Army of the Potomac. (Photos from *The Florida Mason,* January, 2004, p. 7)

Russian Mikhail Katkov (1818-1880), occult publisher of *Moscow Gazette.* Katkov brought Hindu and Theosophy teachings to Russia. He also published some books of Russian mystic, Helena Blavatsky.

ET TU! Booth (left) with his brothers in the fall of 1864

Above, John Wilkes Booth (left), a well known stage actor, with his brothers in a production of *Caesar*, in 1864, just a year before he assassinated President Abraham Lincoln. Booth and his elder brother, Edwin, were both members of the Masonic Lodge, but because of John Wilkes' notoriety, the Freemasons quietly removed his name from their rolls. To this day the Scottish Rite's membership office maintains that only brother Edwin was a Mason (Photo from book, *American Brutus*, by Michael W. Kaufman).

This photograph of Lt. Elisha Hunt Rhodes is from a 1993 book entitled *Freemasons at Gettysburg*, by Sheldon A. Munn. The caption above the photograph said that Lt. Rhodes was "A Member and Worshipful Master (the equivalent of the Lodge president) of Harmony Lodge #9, Cranston, Rhode Island. He was also the Grand Master of the Grand Lodge of Rhode Island in 1892-1893."

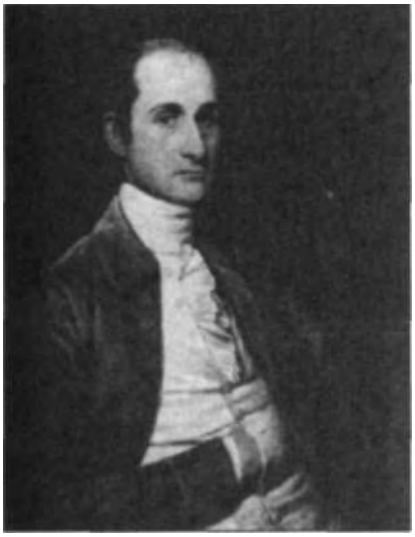

John Jay, chosen by President George Washington and confirmed by the newly assembled U.S. Senate to be the first Chief Justice of the Supreme Court of the United States.

Both President Franklin Pierce (above) and President Rutherford B. Hayes (below) are acknowledged to have been Masons in the authoritative book, *10,000 Famous Freemasons,* an official publication of the Supreme Mother Council, Scottish Rite Freemasons.

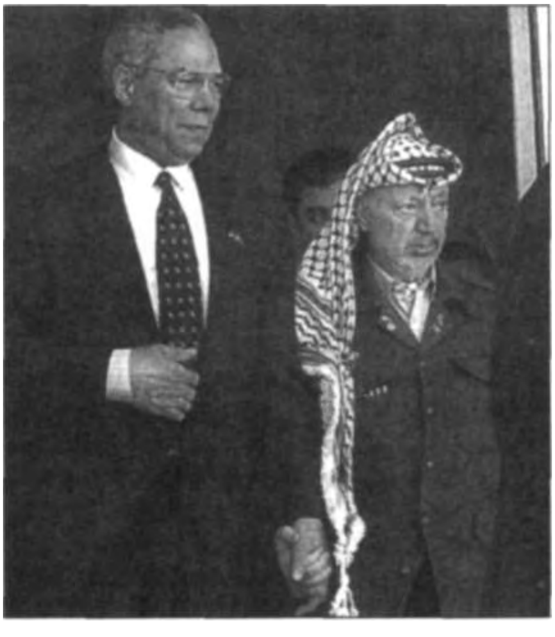

Former Secretary of State Colin Powell holds hands with PLO leader Yasser Arafat as he covertly places his right hand in his coat, a sign to other initiates. Powell is a 33rd degree Mason and a Council on Foreign Relations alumnus. The late Arafat was also a member of the Masonic Lodge.

Rutherford B. Hayes, President of the United States (1822-1893).

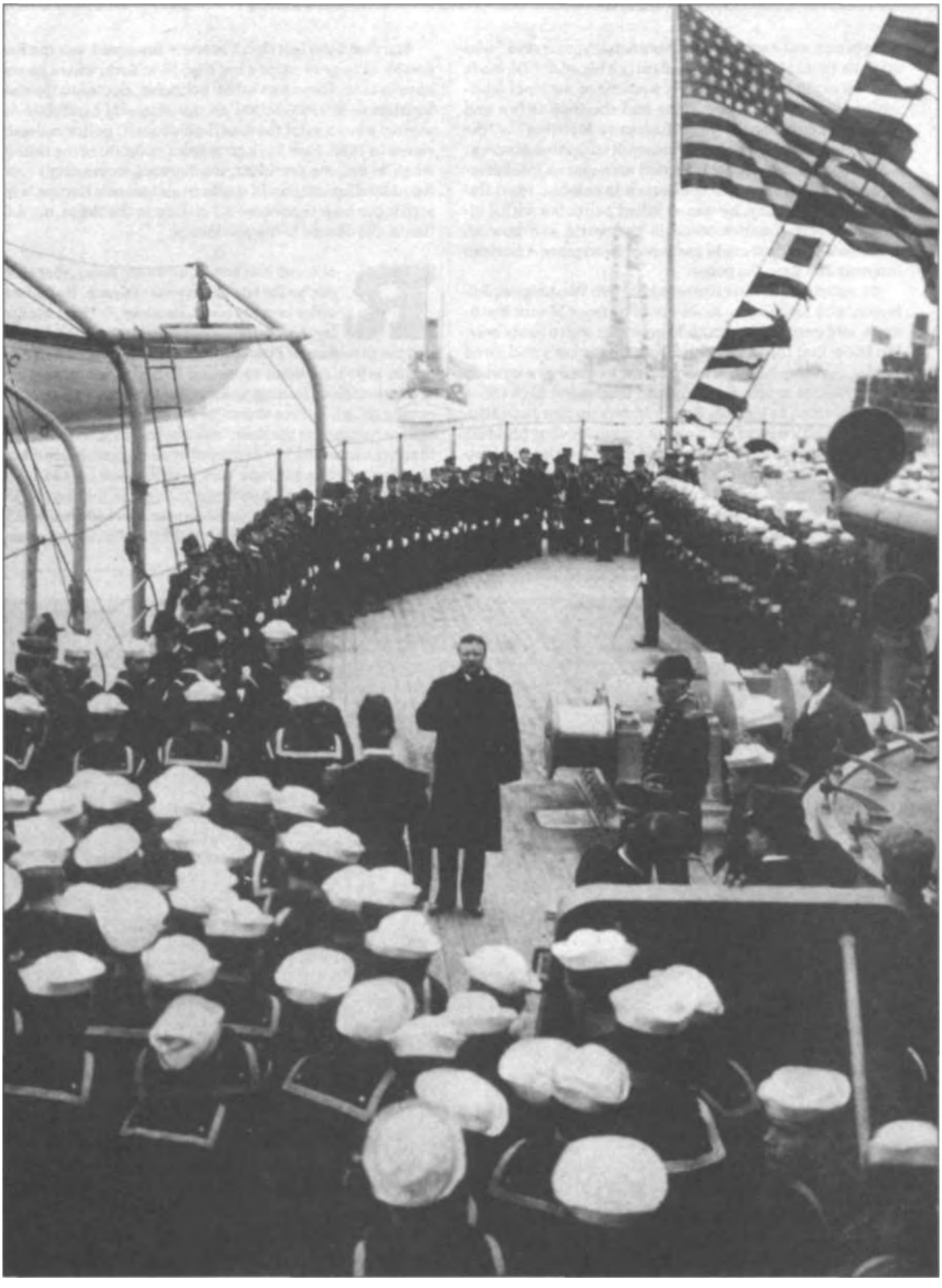

U.S.A. President Teddy Roosevelt, seen reviewing the troops onboard a Navy ship, is giving the secret sign of the followers of the god, Jahbuhlun. Was it Teddy who once said, "Speak softly and keep your hand well hid," or was that, "Speak softly and carry a big stick?"

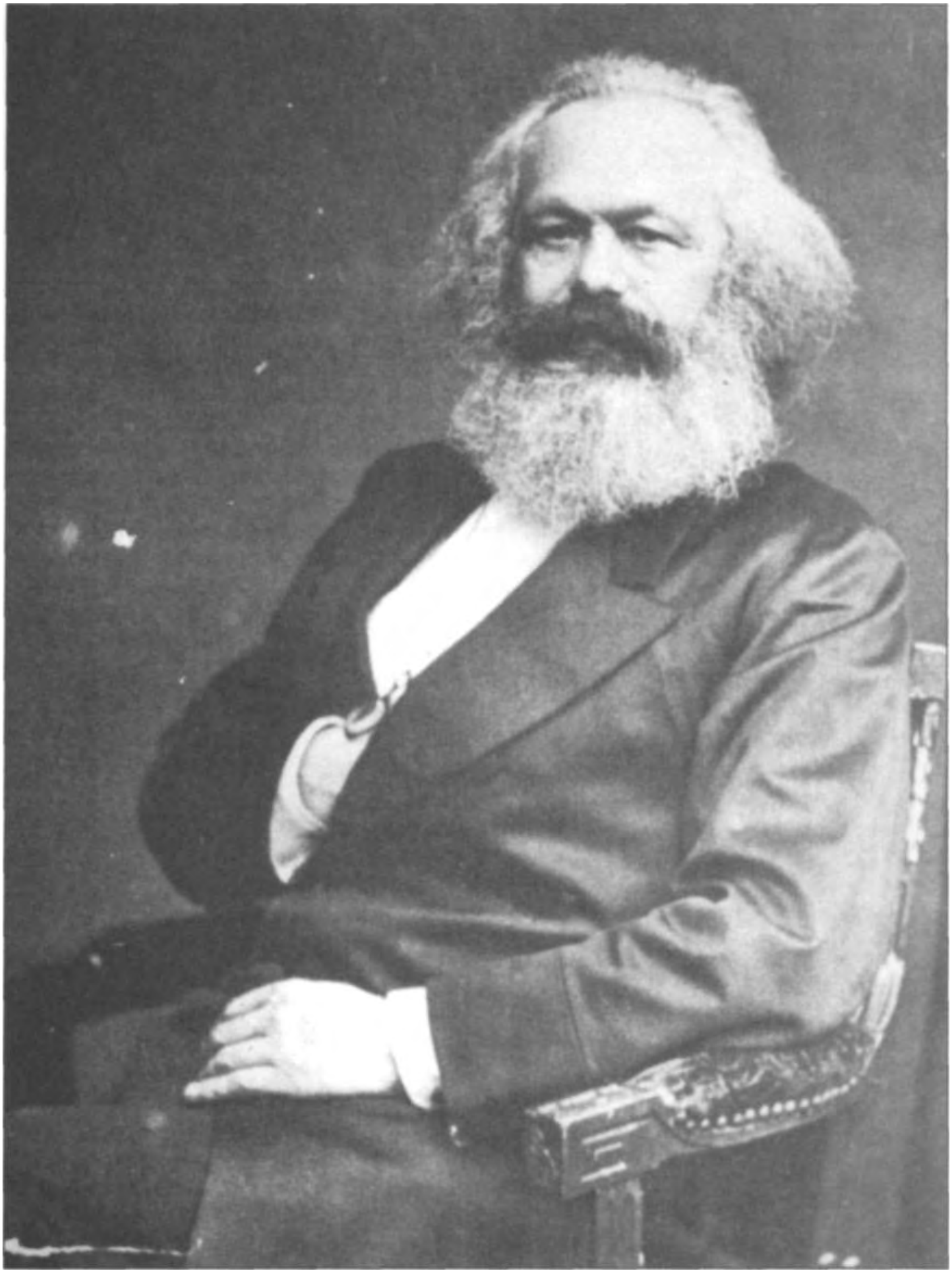

Karl Marx, the Jewish radical who inspired Lenin and Trotsky with his Communist theories, was secretly a High Priest of Satan (see Richard Wurmbrand's book, *Marx and Satan).* Shown here in his official portrait, Marx is giving an enigmatic Masonic hand sign (see *Richardson's Monitor of Freemasonry,* p. 74).

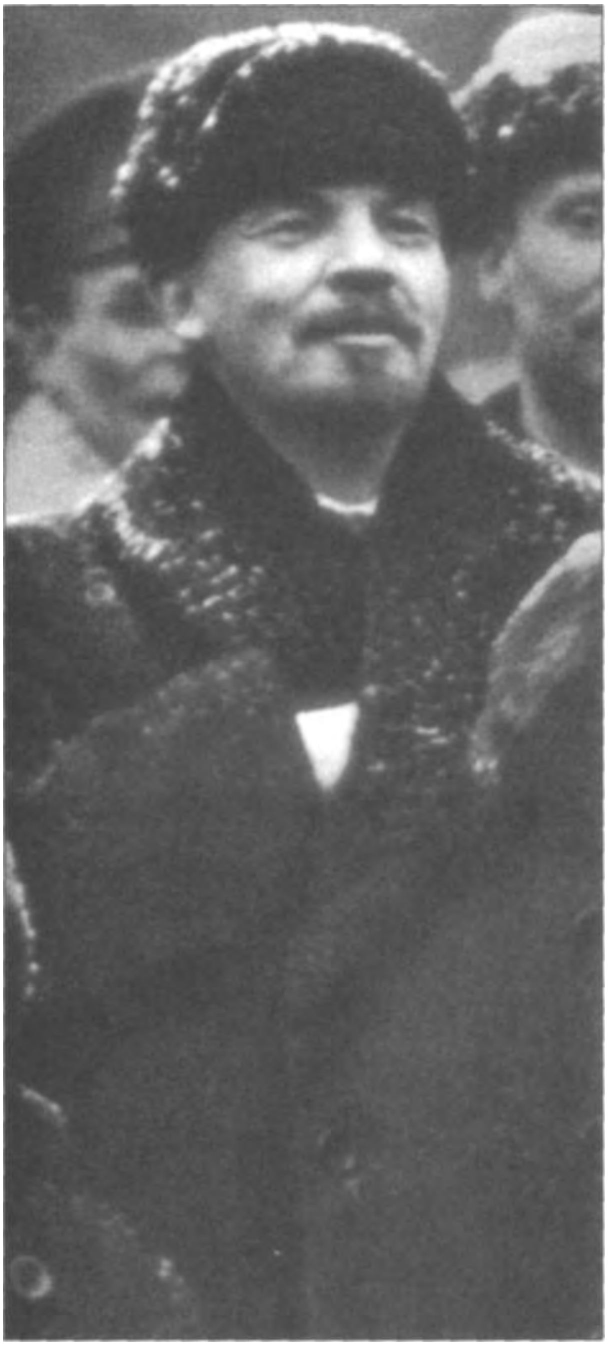

Vladimir Lenin, Jewish Mason who led the Communist overthrow of the Czar in Russia, gives the hidden sign of the men who worship the god, Jahbuhlun. Lenin and his cohorts established the Red Terror, the brutal massacre of tens of millons.

General Paul Von Hindenburg, the notable World War I German war hero of the Russian front who won numerous victories. Later, in the Nazi era, a blimp, named after the General, *The Hindenburg,* was destroyed by flames while attempting to land in New Jersey (U.S.A.) after a celebrated transatlantic flight. Many lives were lost.

Three Red Communist "heros" who conspired to establish a Bolshevik dictatorship in Russia: Sergei Kirov, Mikhail Levandovsky, and Konstantin Mekhonoshin. These men saw to the purge, torture, and death of untold thousands before they, in turn, were wiped out by Stalin. Levandovsky (center) is displaying his Masonic "Jahbuhlun" hand signal. Mekhonoshin (right) wears the Illuminati phyrgian cap.

Four Gulag camp commandants. Note that all four are giving the secret sign of Jewish Freemasonry, just as did Communism's founding father, the Jewish Mason, Karl Marx.

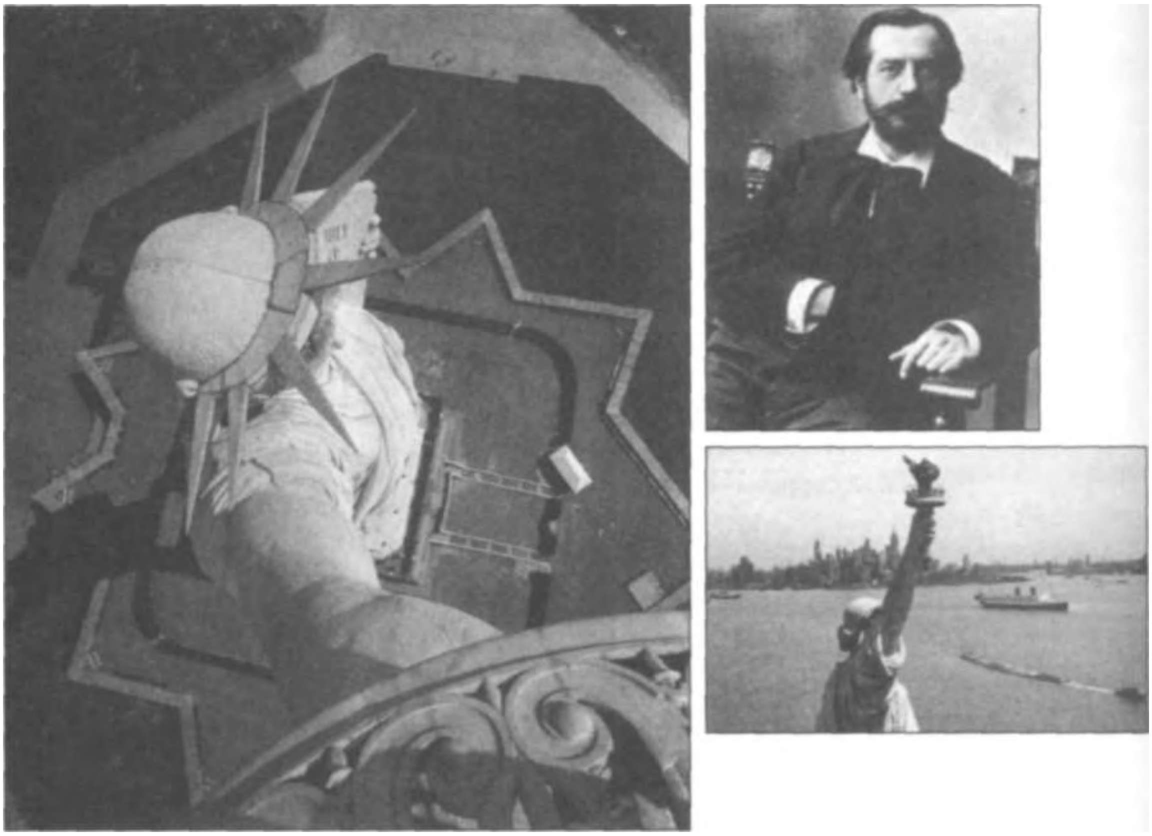

Sculptor Auguste Bertholdi was a member of Paris, France's Grand Orient Lodge. It was Bertholdi (1834-1904) who sculpted the Illuminati's monumental Statue of Liberty which now graces New York's harbor. The statue is replete with Secret Society coded messages and symbols of a particularly blasphemous nature. Yet, the vast majority of Americans adore the Statue of Liberty and naively see in her only virtue and goodness.

In the mid-nineteenth century, French writer Victor Hugo (author of *Les Miserables)* cut a huge swath in occult circles. Here we see the mystical minded Hugo giving a clear hand sign of Masonic Luciferian design. It was Victor Hugo who wrote the story, "*The Man Who Laughs,*" about a boy whose face had been horribly shaped into a permanent smile by fiendish cosmetic butchers. The grotesque tale was the basis for *Batman's* "Joker" character. It was alleged that Victor Hugo was not only a Rosicrucian but was also Grand Master of the occultic order known as the Priory of Sion.

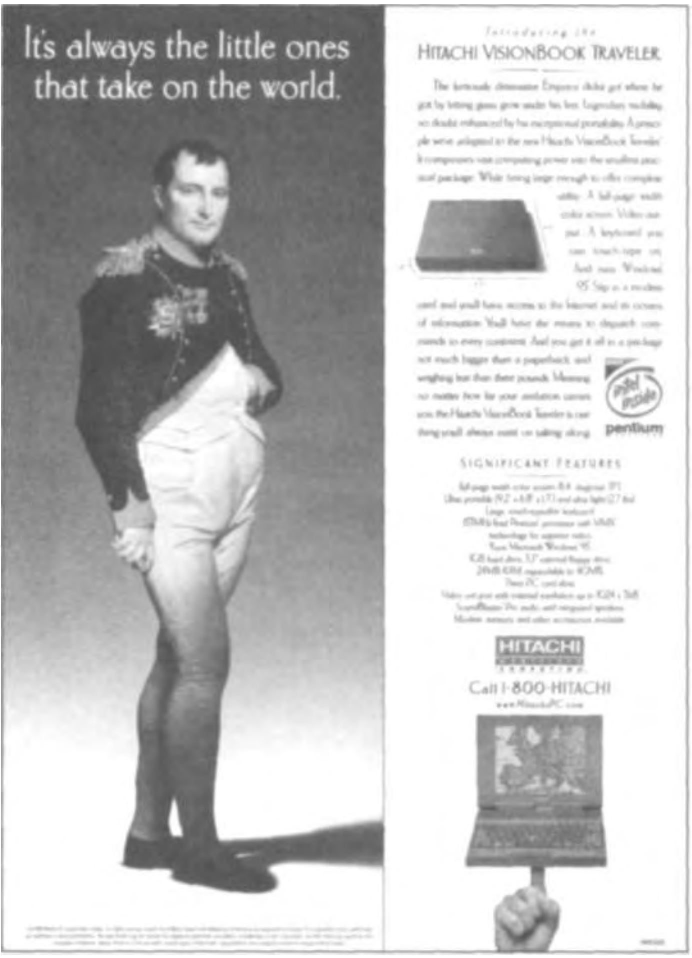

It's always the little ones that take on the world.

Introducing the

HITACHI VISIONBOOK TRAVELER

SIGNIFICANT FEATURES

HITACHI

Call 1-800-HITACHI

intel inside
pentium

In this ad for Hitachi Electronics, Napoleon is using the left-handed path (dark occultism) of magic. Napoleon was also reputed to be an Illuminatus and an initiate into the G*reater* *Mysteries (Areopagite degree).* Note **also the sun sign (Maltese) badge.**

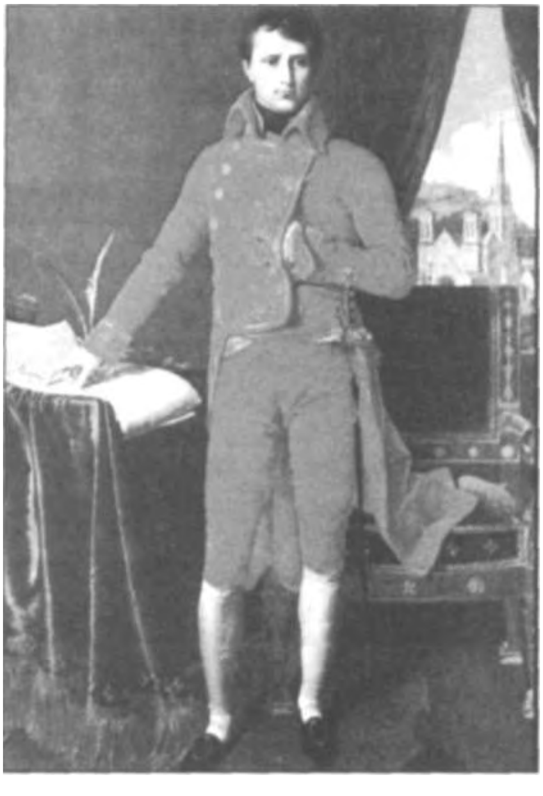

Now we find yet another indication of Napoleon's secret society involvement. Wearing red, the color of Rothschild and blood, Napoleon signifies his left-hand path orientation. The symbology of the three-towered church in the background of the painting (behind the curtain!) signifies the boast that Napoleon, a political sovereign, is also Lord over the spiritual realm.

In this famous painting of Napoleon, the Emperor is depicted using his right-hand in giving the Royal Arch Mason handsign.

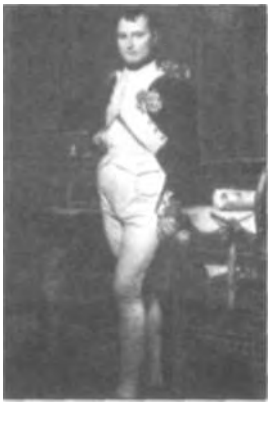

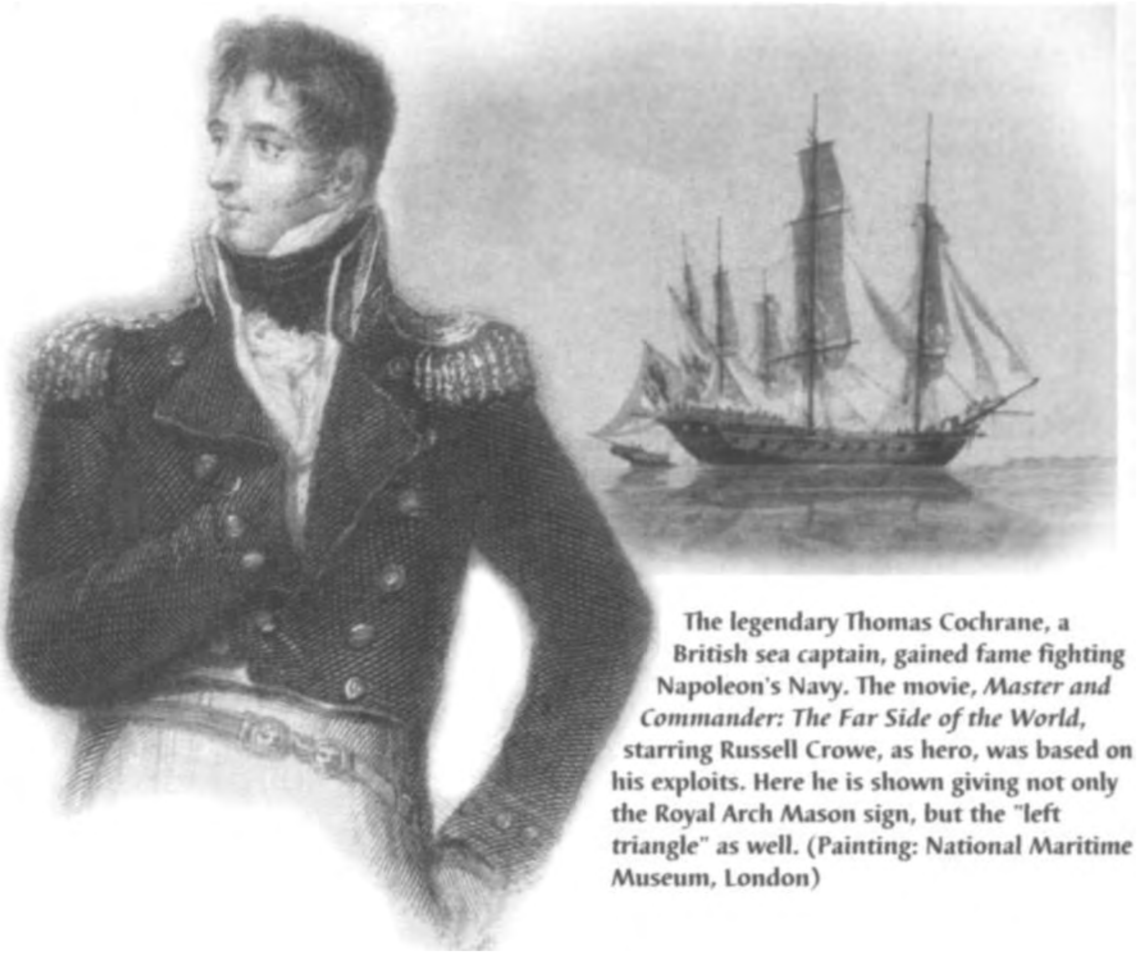

The legendary Thomas Cochrane, a British sea captain, gained fame fighting Napoleon's Navy. The movie, *Master and Commander: The Far Side of the World,* starring Russell Crowe, as hero, was based on his exploits. Here he is shown giving not only the Royal Arch Mason sign, but the "left triangle" as well. (Painting: National Maritime Museum, London)

The Alphabet

Irish-American politician and author Ignatius Donnelly caused a sensation in 1882 with his book, *Atlantis: The Antediluvian World.* Donnelly claimed scientific evidence for the existence of the fabled Lost Continent of Atlantis, which sunk under the sea, predecessor of modern civilization. Donnelly's book even contained a chart showing the alleged evolution of alphabets from the time of Atlantis to the eras of the Mayas, Egyptians, and Hebrews, etc. The Illuminati elite of today believe they are, indeed, descended from the god-men and priests who, alone, escaped the tragic fall of the fabled Atlantis. More recently, Disney Studios did a movie, *Atlantis,* based on the theme, a movie saturated with esoteric codes and symbols.

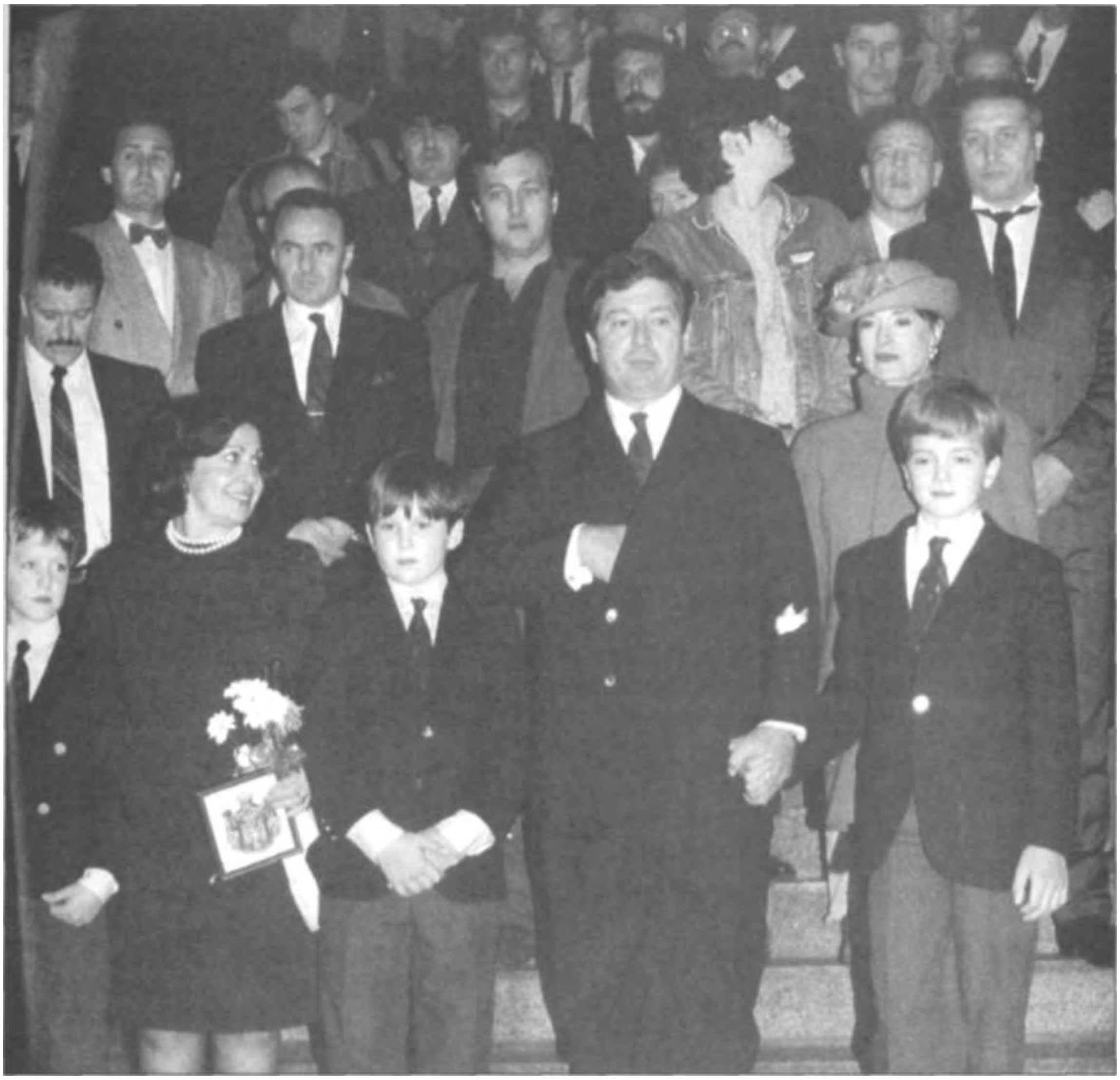

Crown Prince Alexander of Yugoslavia, who now resides in London, the city where his father, the late King Peter, fled during the second world war, is shown on his first trip to Belgrade, Yugoslavia, in 1991. His Royal Highness, along with his family, dutifully posed for this photo. Based on his hand's position, the Crown Prince clearly wanted his secret society associates and the Masonic/occultic world to know he was one of them and that the elite's power has now been established in the former Soviet-bloc nation.

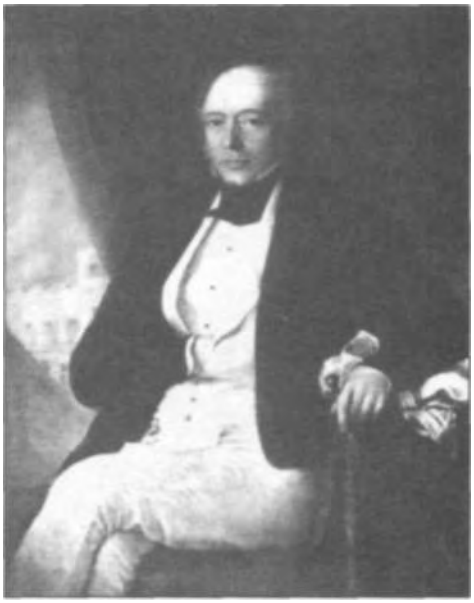

The fabulously wealthy Salomon Rothschild, founder and overseer of the Vienna, Austria branch of the Rothschild clan.

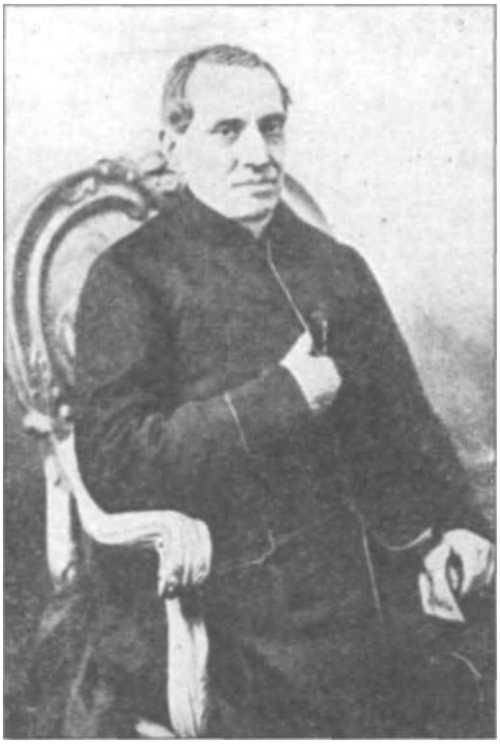

How deeply was the Vatican and its Black Pope of the Jesuit Order involved in the 1865 plot to assassinate President Abraham Lincoln ? Burke McCarty, in an extraordinary 1924 book, *The Suppressed Truth About the Assassination of Abraham Lincoln,* alleges that the powerful and influential Giacomo Antonelli, Cardinal and Secretary of the Papal States under Pope Pius IX, supervised the plot from afar and even hid a murderous associate of assassin John Wilkes Booth in the Vatican State, where he had fled, to protect him from execution by American authorities who sought his extradition. In the book, researcher McCarty includes this photo of Cardinal Antonelli without, however, explaining the obvious secret society hand sign of Antonelli.

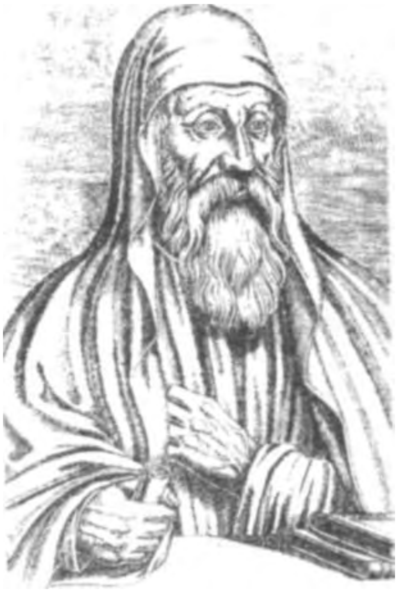

Origen (185-254 A.D.) is often called an "early church father." But, in fact, Origen brought many heresies, including Gnosticism (Illuminist ideology) into the Church. Origen, a much quoted scholar, hailed from Alexandria, Egypt, giving us yet another clue to his heretical philosophies. In this revealing pen and ink drawing, it appears that Origen's left-hand is demonstrating the mysterious sign of an ancient secret society.

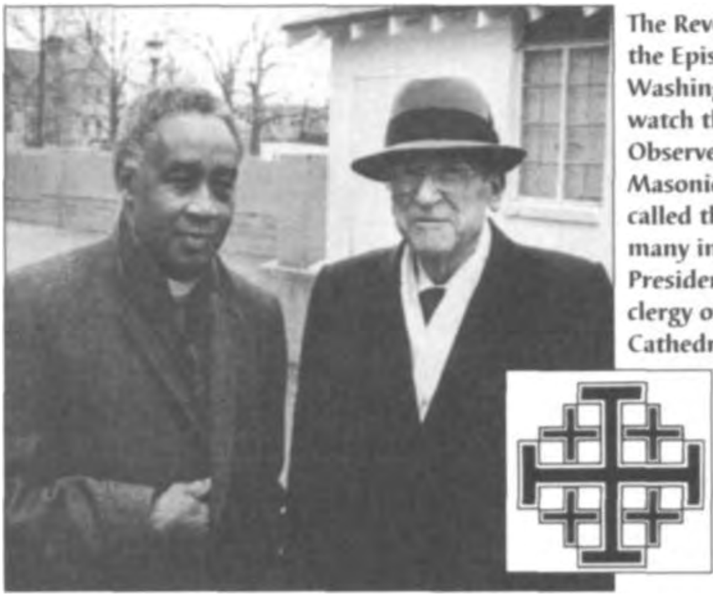

The Reverend Canon John T. Walker, Bishop in the Episcopal Church (left), visiting the Washington Cathedral under renovation, to watch the hoisting of the last gargoyle. Observe how the Bishop slyly displays his Masonic hand sign. The Cathedral, often called the "National Cathedral," is the site of many interfaith prayer gatherings attended by Presidents, Congressmen, and prominent clergy of all faiths. The literature of the Cathedral prominently displays a symbol shaped in the form of the Grand Cross Jewel of the 33rd degree of Scottish Rite Freemasonry (see inset) (Photo: Brochure, "*Completing Washington Cathedral For Thy Glory,*" by Richard T. Feller, Canon Clerk, p. 38)

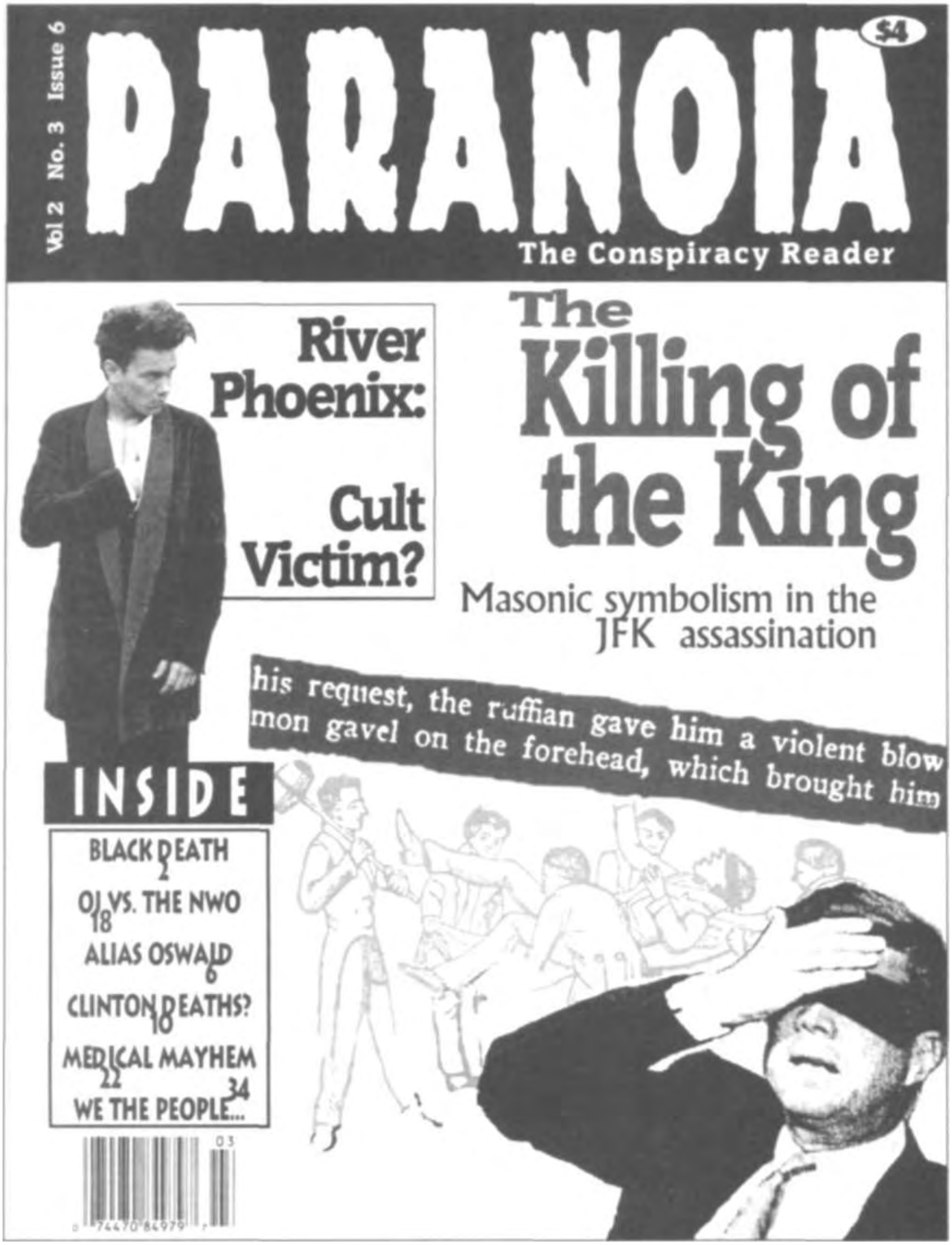
Vol 2 No. 3 Issue 6
$4
PARANOIA
The Conspiracy Reader
River Phoenix: Cult Victim?
The Killing of the King
Masonic symbolism in the JFK assassination
his request, the ruffian gave him a violent blow
mon gavel on the forehead, which brought him
INSIDE
BLACK DEATH 2
OJ VS. THE NWO 18
ALIAS OSWALD 6
CLINTON DEATHS? 10
MEDICAL MAYHEM 22
WE THE PEOPLE... 34

This issue of the intriguing publication, *Paranoia* magazine, included a feature article examining the tragic life of popular young actor River Phoenix, who died of a drug overdose on Halloween in 1993. The article's writer, Al Hidell, told of Phoenix's upbringing in the sordid sex cult known as the *Children of God,* also called *"The Family."* The cult practiced incest, holy prostitution, and other wickedness. River Phoenix, who was celebrated for his roles in such movies as *Stand By Me* and *Running On Empty,* evidently could not escape his past. Why he is shown in the photo giving the sign of Masonry is not mentioned in the magazine, but some authorities say that *Children of God* leader David Berg had high-level political and Masonic Lodge connections.

Lloyd Shearer (right), with actor James Dean in the early 1950s, wrote the famous column, *"Walter Scott's Personality Parade"* in *Parade* magazine.

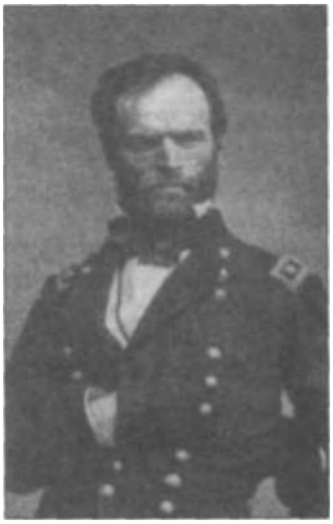

"War is hell,"said the crusty and brutish Union General William Tecumseh Sherman, shown here displaying the sign of the Jahbuhlun cult in this official U.S. Army photo. Hundreds of civilians were massacred during Sherman's fiery march through the South.

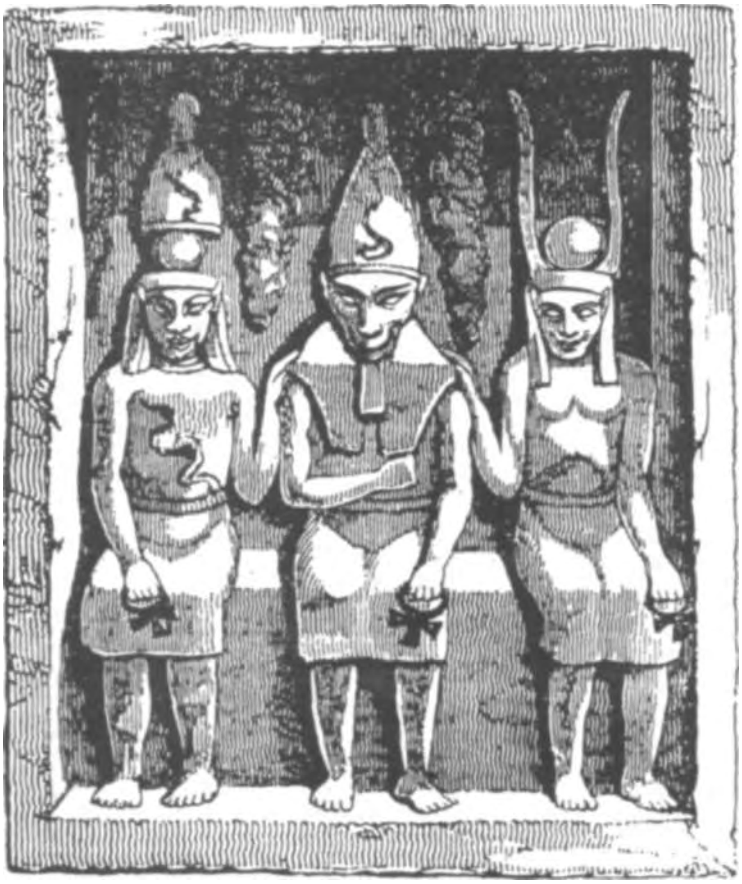

Three regal figures belonging to a *Nubian* temple. Each carries the Egyptian ankh, signifying rebirth and reincarnation in one hand. Other symbols are also seen (Drawing: Book, *The Round Towers of Atlantis*, by Henry O'Brien, Adventures Unlimited Press, Kempton, IL, 2002)

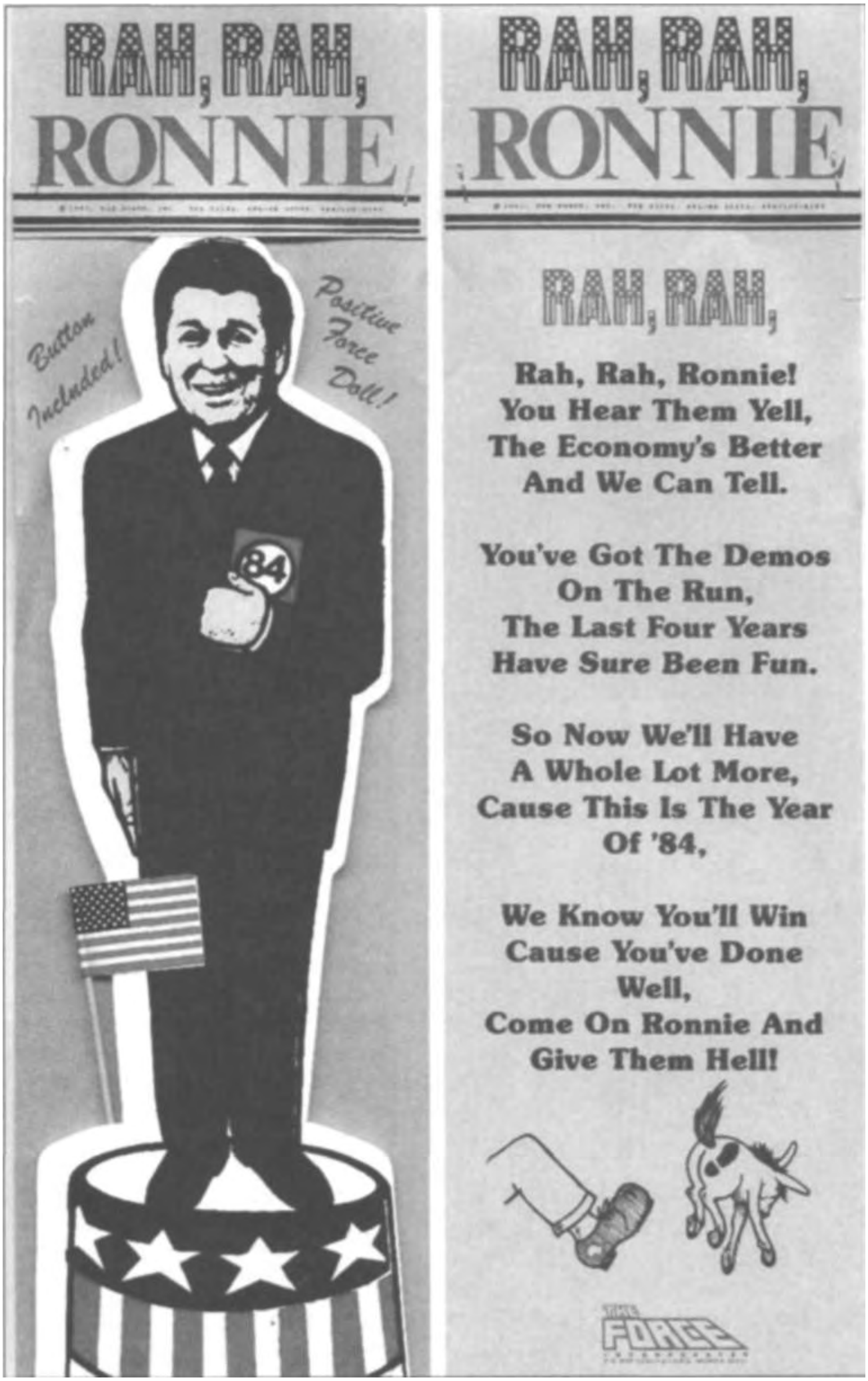
RAH, RAH,
RONNIE
RAH, RAH,
RONNIE
Button Included!
Positive Force Doll!
84
RAH, RAH,
THE FORCE

Rah, Rah, Ronnie!
You Hear Them Yell,
The Economy's Better
And We Can Tell.

You've Got The Demos
On The Run,
The Last Four Years
Have Sure Been Fun.

So Now We'll Have
A Whole Lot More,
Cause This Is The Year
Of '84,

We Know You'll Win
Cause You've Done
Well,
Come On Ronnie And
Give Them Hell!

A Republican Party convention souvenir depicting President Ronald Reagan. The web site offering it for sale describes it thusly: "From the 1984 convention, a smiling Ronnie in a Napoleonic stance." Reagan was given the honorary 33rd degree by Scottish Rite leaders in a private ceremony conducted in the lame duck President's Oval Office in Washington, D.C., just weeks before his second and final term ended. The author has a picture of this ceremony in his files.

FIVE

For He's a Jolly Good Fellow—Sign of the Devil's Claw *by* Men of the Craft

A naughty person, a wicked man, walketh with a froward mouth. He winketh with his eyes, he speaketh with his feet, he teacheth with his fingers...

-Proverbs 6:12-13

While the word "craft" can properly be used to describe an art, science, skill, or process practiced by a profession or occupation, in the occult world, the word takes on a much darker significance and is often called, the "Craft." It refers to a devious process practiced by like-minded fellows who are bent on, and have agreed to follow, the ritualized path prescribed to effect the magic of the Great Work of alchemical transformation.

The Fellow Craft degree (2°) of Freemasonry is found in both the largest bodies, the York Rite and the Scottish Rite. According to *Coil's Masonic Encyclopedia,* the Order of the Illuminati, formally founded by Adam Weishaupt and Baron Von Knigge in 1776, divided its rites into three principal classes and the second of the second class of rites was the Fellow Craft, 2°.[1]

Reinforcing the authoritative *Coil's Masonic Encyclopedia* is the work of other Masonic and occult researchers who report that the Fellow Craft degree was awarded in the 2° of the Order of the Illuminati. In the book, *Witchcraft, Magic, and The Supernatural,* published in Great Britain, we find information about Sir Francis Dashwood, leader of Britain's 18th century "Hell Fire Club." It is said that Dashwood, a notorious yet rich Rosicrucian magician, greatly influenced America's visiting Benjamin Franklin, who frequently sought him out for occultic advice and information. Indeed, some believe that Dashwood was as important to the Illuminist

Sir Francis Dashwood, leader of England's 18th century "Hell Fire Club," practiced the dark side of magic. The nobility and rich frequented his group and called on him for rituals and advice. (From: *Witchcraft, Magic and the Supernatural,* London: Octopus Books, 1974, p. 33).

cause on the isle of Great Britain as Adam Weishaupt was on the European continent.[2]

The Cunning vs. Those of Lesser Wit

The late Sovereign Grand Commander (Scottish Rite), Dr. Albert Mackey, 33°, in his classic encyclopedia reference book, says that the Fellow Craft degree implies "mutual trust" among the "brethren" of the Order. But he notes it is in a lower degree. The Masons, in the Middle Ages, he writes, were divided into two classes, Masters and Fellows:

> **Those who were of greater skill held a higher position and were designated as Masters while the masses of the Fraternity, the commonality, as we might say, were called Fellows.**[3]

Put another way, Mackey says that those possessing more "cunning" were graded as Masters, while the Fellows were of "lesser wit."[4]

But of course, today, most all Masons begin by being *initiated* into the First Degree (Entered Apprentice). Then, the new Member is said to be *passed* into the Second Degree (Fellow Craft), and next is *raised* in the Third Degree (Master Mason). These are the three degrees of what is called the Blue Lodge of Freemasonry.

Why Is It Employed By High level Illuminists?

In this chapter we will reveal a number of high-rank llluminists giving the Sign of Fellow Craft (2°) Mason. Now since this degree is of lower status, this begs the question of why such famous, publicly acclaimed men as evangelists Billy Graham and Pat Robertson, as well as occult leader Annie Besant, Russian President Boris Yeltsin, and international financier Sir James Rothschild are all displaying the Fellow Craft sign. The answer is a fascinating one.

Mackey writes that the degree—and thus its primary sign—denotes a "fellow workman," a commoner. In other words, it represents the masses of common people. It represents, adds Mackey, the "Stage of manhood" and the maturation of humanity by progression of man's "reasoning faculties and...intellectual powers."[5] In essence, the Fellow Craft degree represents man progressively brought to a high status of possessing the supreme wisdom of the serpent. Man as a whole becomes god through *reason.* Therefore, the promise of the serpent made to Adam and Eve is realized: "Ye shall be as gods."

Wisdom of the Serpent

Those who display this sign, the Sign of the Fellow Craft, to their fellows in the Craft (the Illuminist, magical cult) are those chosen and ambitious of instructing the masses on the wisdom of the serpent. Since religious, or spiritual wisdom, is deemed essential and of a high order in Satan's kingdom, it is only natural that his human representatives on earth who are leaders in the religious field show this sign of recognition. Besant, a Theosophist, also displays the sign as her cult organization is based on serpentine occult wisdom, the perennial philosophy. Yeltsin was acclaimed by the press as popular leader of the Russian peoples' revolution, and Rothschild desires to rule on the throne over all humanity as head of the Illuminati's Inner Circle.

Also pictured here, in the pages that follow, giving the sign: Jesse and Frank James, outlaws celebrated as "Robin Hoods" who, it is claimed, showered some of their stolen wealth on the poor; Anton LaVey, who founded the Church of Satan in 1966 proclaiming it a Temple of Reason for those of wisdom and who sought mass membership as patronage; Socialist Eugene Debs, who claimed to represent the common man; and John Wilkes Booth, alleged assassin of President Abraham Lincoln. Booth was a Freemason and as such, was a fomenter of international revolutions of the people; Lincoln was not a Mason and sought to quell insurrection of the masses.

The Sign of a Fellow Craft Mason is made by raising the right hand to the left breast, with the palm towards the breast and the fingers crooked. Then, draw the hand smartly across the breast from left to right and let it drop to the side.

In performing the sign, the individual is taking his right hand, making a type of beastly devil's claw out of it and then raking it across the breast from left to right. C. F. McQuaig, in *The Masonic Report,* calls this the Penal sign. It is made to remind the person giving it of his oath taken, that if he discloses the secrets of the Order or gives aid and comfort to its enemies, he should have the right breast torn open and the heart torn out. In sum, this is a ghastly sign warning of death to he who dares betray the Order of the Illuminati.

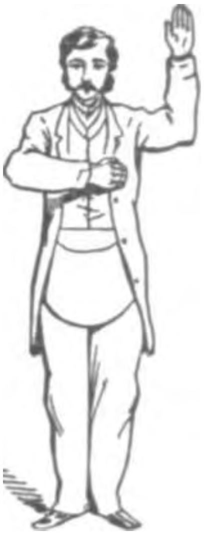

Sign of the Fellow Craft, or Second Degree. Notice the right hand position on the breast with the fingers crooked in somewhat of a loose "fist." After both arms are in the position shown the left hand is quickly dropped. *Duncan's Masonic Ritual and Monitor (id.* Ed., p. 16) says: *"In making the due guard and sign of the Fellow Craft, or Second Degree, care must be taken to drop the left arm suddenly and with spirit, as soon as the two motions are accomplished."*

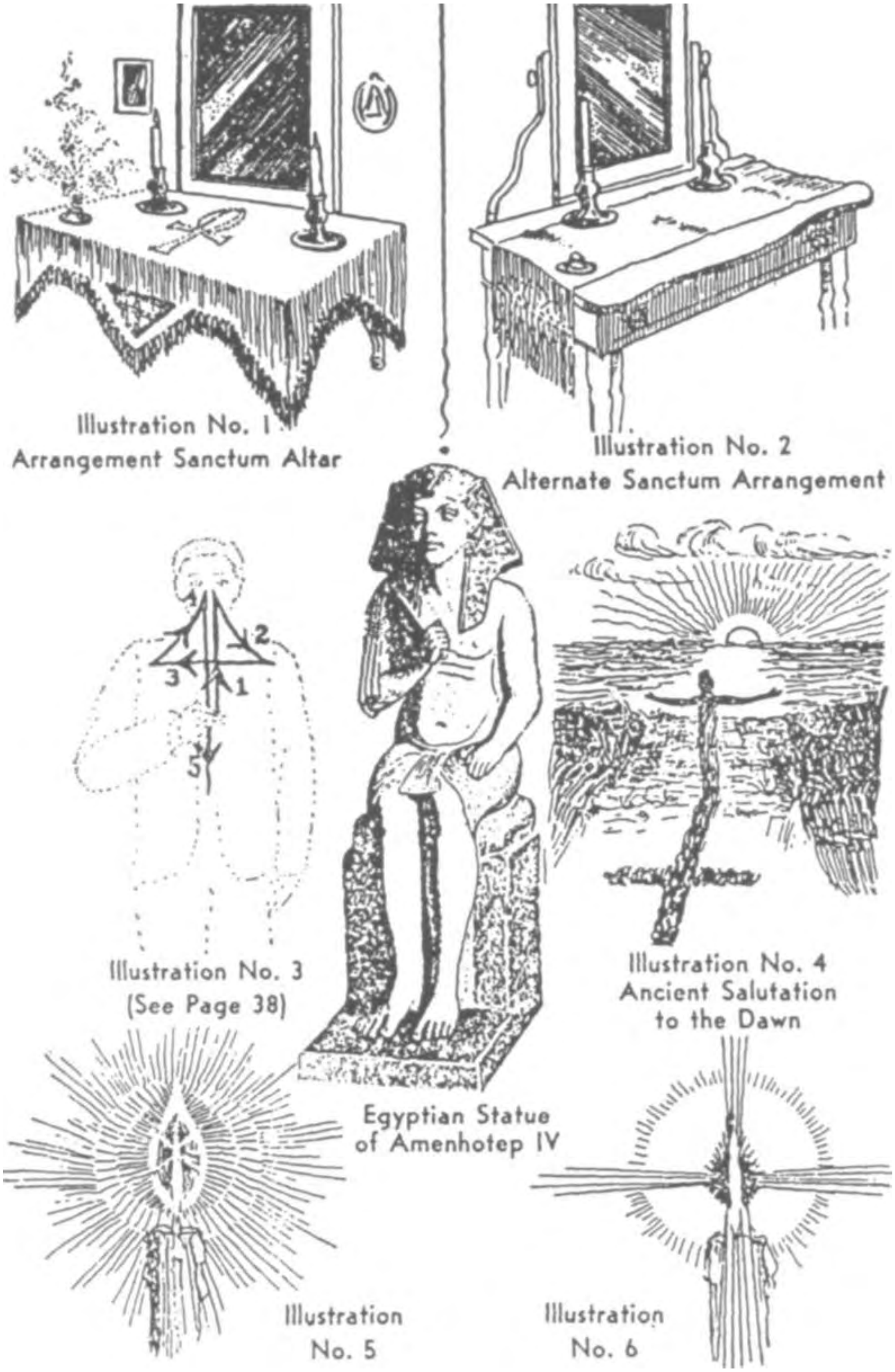
Illustration No. 1
Arrangement Sanctum Altar
Illustration No. 2
Alternate Sanctum Arrangement
2
3
1
5
Illustration No. 3
(See Page 38)
Illustration No. 4
Ancient Salutation
to the Dawn
Egyptian Statue
of Amenhotep IV
Illustration
No. 5
Illustration
No. 6

Page from a Rosicrucian manual. In the center is an Egyptian statue of Pharaoh Amenhotep IV giving the hand and arm sign later adapted by Freemasonry.

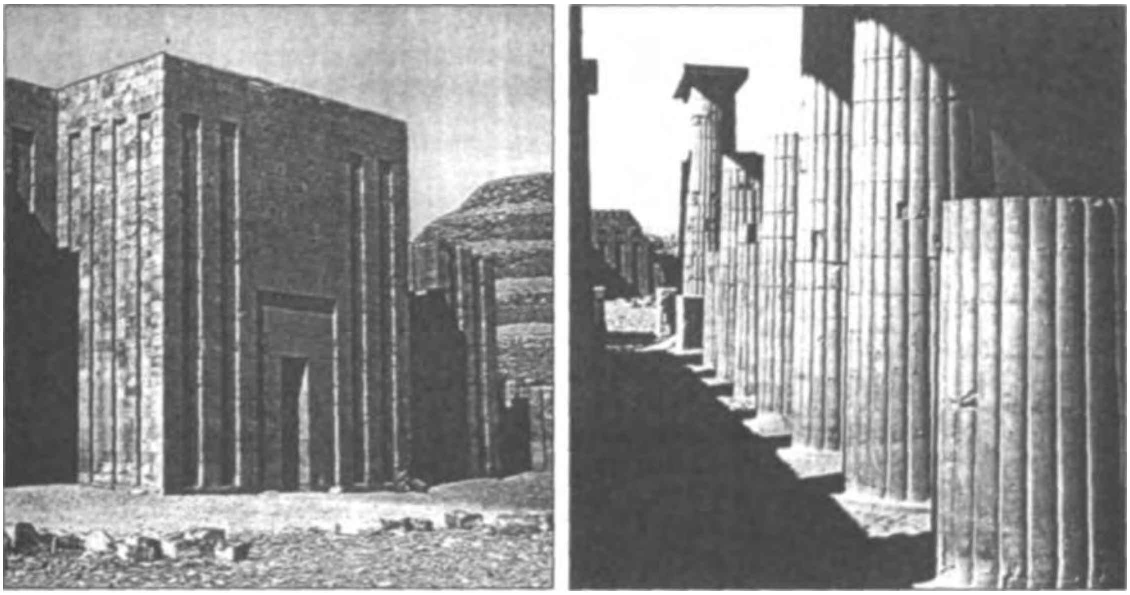

Enclosure walls of Pyramid with statue of Pharaoh Netjerykhet Djoser.

Statue of Cheops, or Khufu, thought to be the builder of the Great Pyramid of Giza in Egypt. (Photo: from *The Riddle of the Pyramids,* by Kurt Mendelssohn)

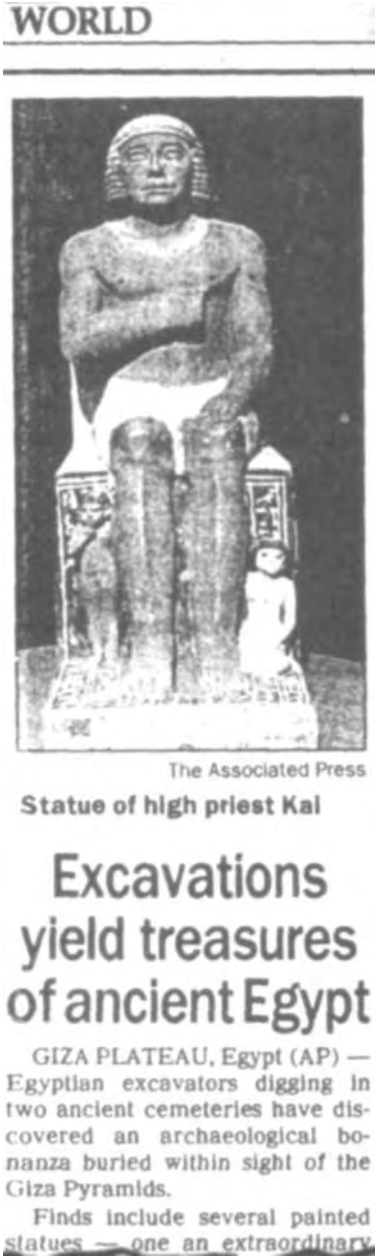

WORLD

The Associated Press

Statue of high priest Kai

Excavations yield treasures of ancient Egypt

GIZA PLATEAU, Egypt (AP) — Egyptian excavators digging in two ancient cemeteries have discovered an archaeological bonanza buried within sight of the Giza Pyramids.

Finds include several painted statues — one an extraordinary

Statue of High Priest Kai, discovered recently by archaeologists in Giza, Egypt.

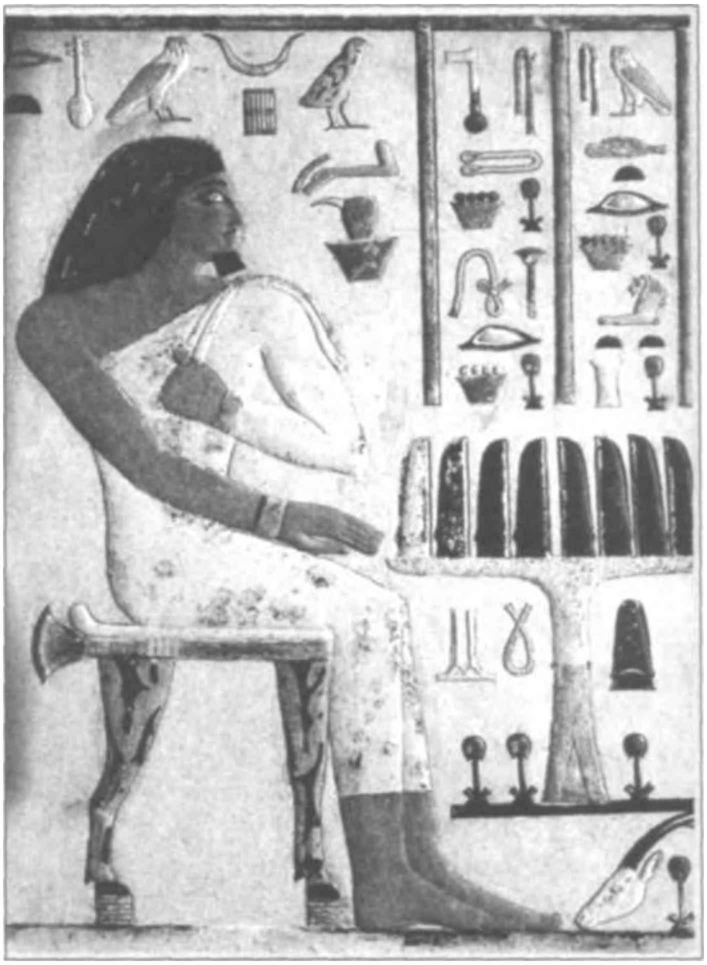

Colorful portrait of Egyptian ruler, Wep-em-nefret

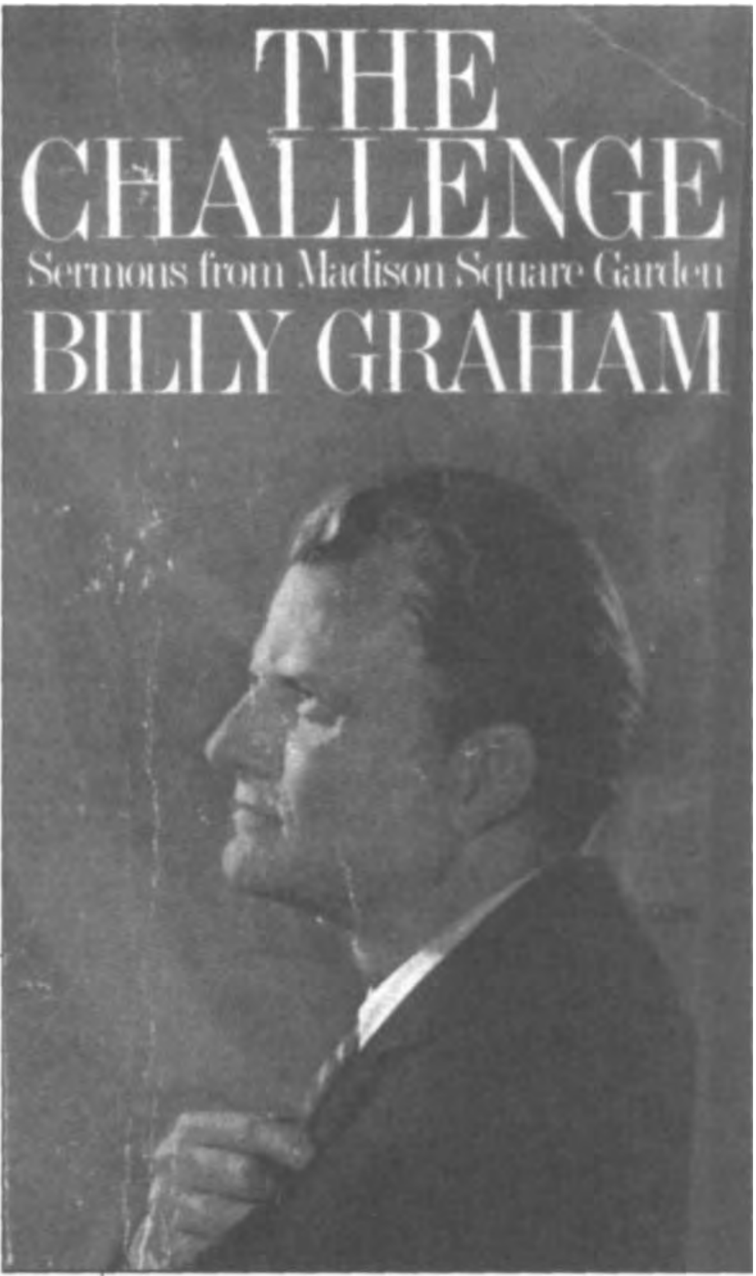
THE CHALLENGE
Sermons from Madison Square Garden
BILLY GRAHAM

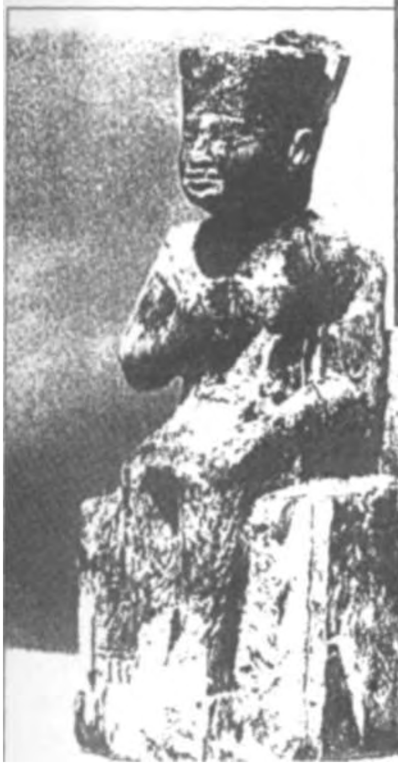

Compare this pose of famous evangelist Billy Graham to that of the Pharaohs. Graham is a high-level Illuminist and consort of the secret society elite (see book, *Billy Graham and His Friends*, by Dr. Cathy Burns; and video documentary, *Tower of Infamy*, produced by Texe Marrs). On the cover of this book, *The Challenge*, Graham's visage and hand position is parallel with that of Khufu, ancient Egyptian builder.

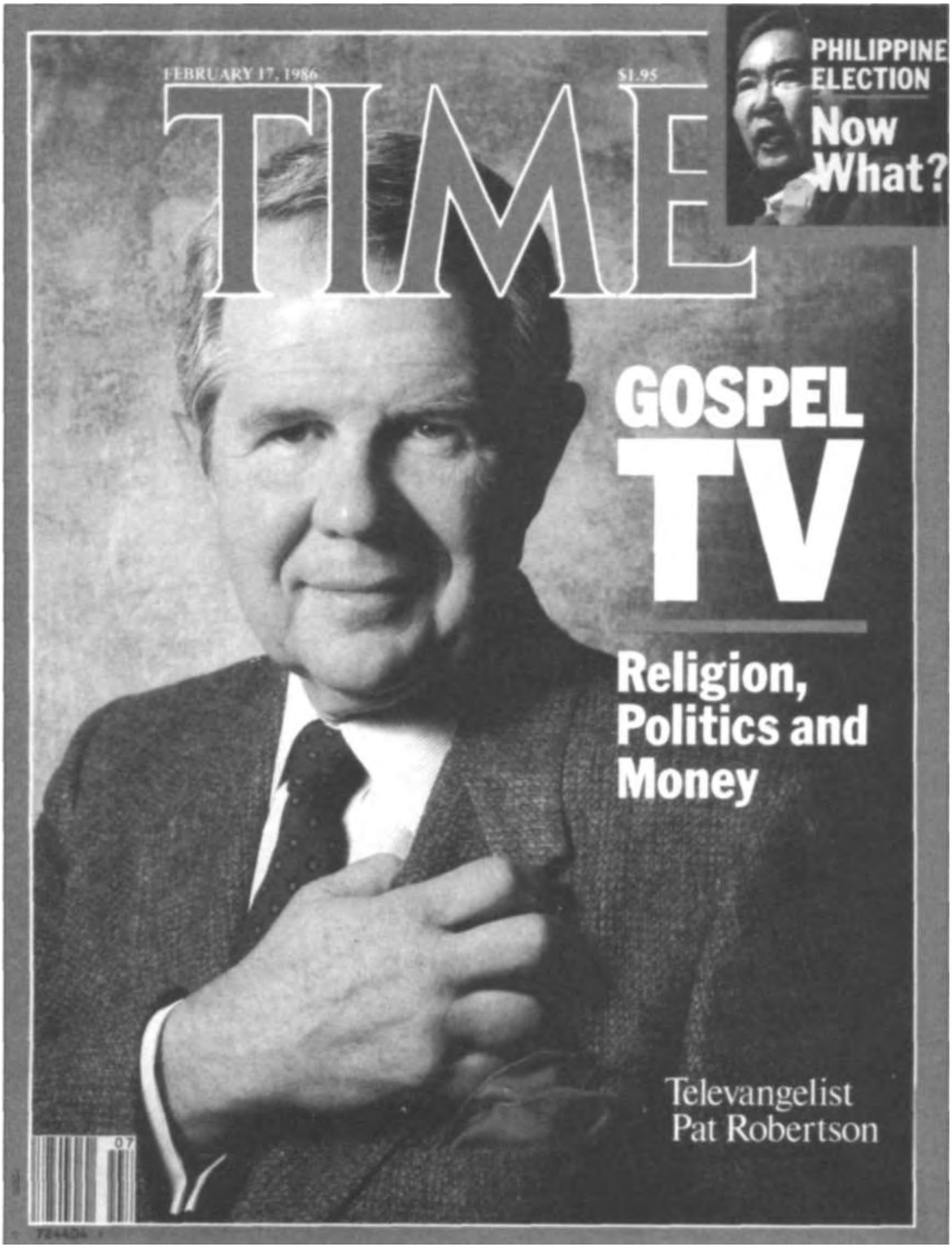
FEBRUARY 17, 1986
$1.95
TIME
PHILIPPINE ELECTION
Now What?
GOSPEL TV
Religion, Politics and Money
Televangelist Pat Robertson

Illuminati servant Pat Robertson, founder of CBN and *The 700 Club,* giving his, by now, notorious Masonic sign on the cover of *Time* magazine, February 17, 1986. Robertson went on after this magazine's publication to become a big star in Republican Party politics. Interestingly, Robertson was ordained for the ministry at a Norfolk, Virginia, church named, appropriately, the Freemason Street Baptist Church. In the author's opinion, this cover of *Time* is clearly a staged event, and both the publisher and Robertson full well knew what they were doing. Robertson has long been allied with the Vatican's Sovereign Military Order of the Knights of Malta (SMOM). His father, as a U.S. Senator from Virginia, was chairman of the Senate Banking and Currency Committee.

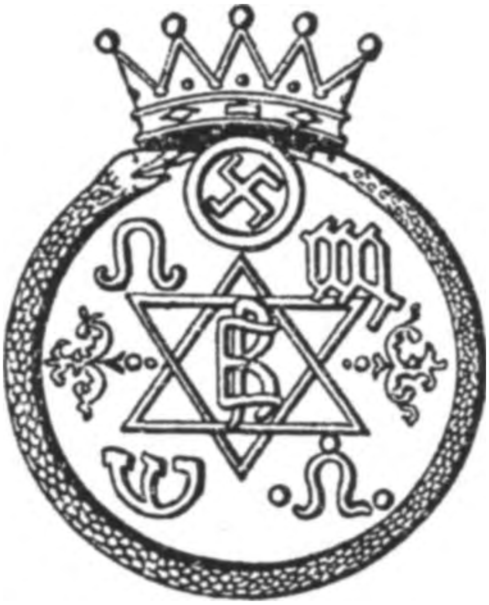

Annie Besant, a Co-Mason (women's branch) took over the Theosophy cult at the passing of Colonel Olcott. The logo of Theosophy is blatantly occultic, combining the crowned Oroboros serpent with both the Jewish Star of David, or six-pointed star, and the encircled swastika.

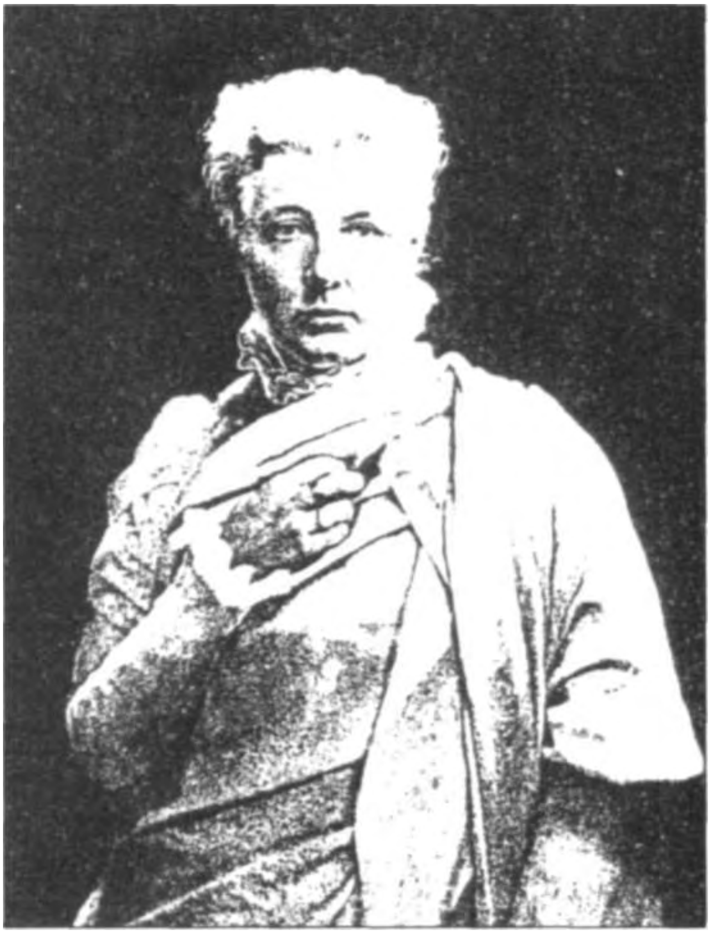

Another photo of theosophist Annie Besant giving the sign. Besant, like her mentors, Colonel Olcott and Russian mystic Helena Blavatsky, believed in the "pure doctrine" of Lucifer, which they called the perennial philosophy and the *"Secret Doctrine."*

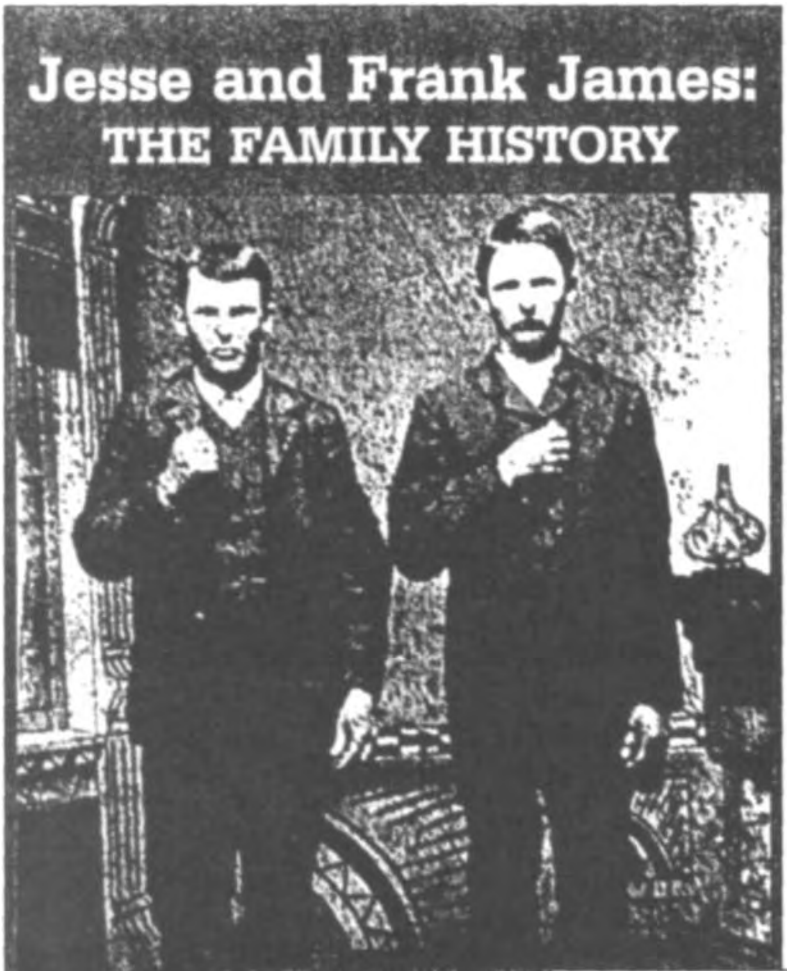

Celebrated western outlaws Jesse and Frank James were both Freemasons. According to Ralph Epperson, researcher and noted conspiracy and Masonic exposer, Jesse James, a 33rd degree Mason, in 1867 became head of the Knights of the Golden Circle, the predecessor to the Ku Klux Klan. Masonry fostered the fictional tale that the James gang stole from banks and gave to the poor, being Robin Hood type heroes. Nothing could be further from the truth. In actuality, excess funds from their robberies went into the coffers of their secret order.

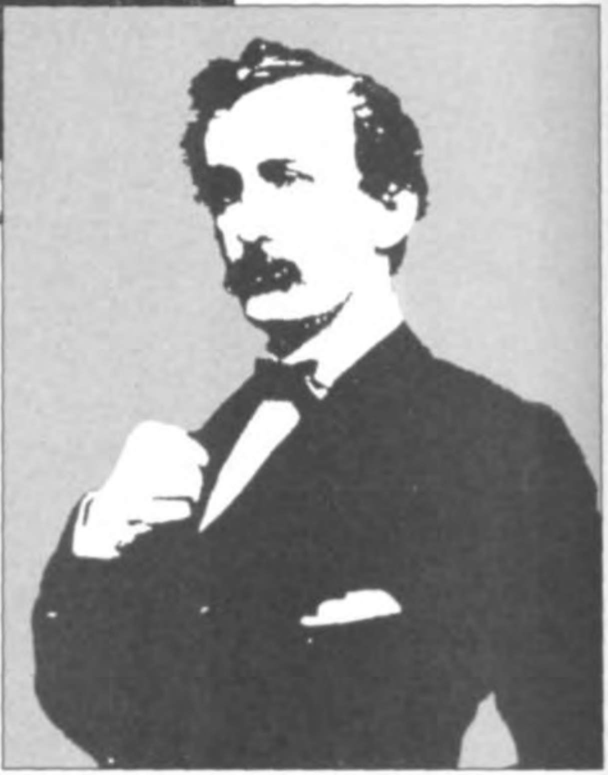

John Wilkes Booth, the assassin of President Abraham Lincoln, was a Knights Templar Mason. His Catholic superiors in Rome were also Lodge initiates as was Booth's actor brother, Edwin, who is listed as a Mason in *10,000 Famous Masons.*

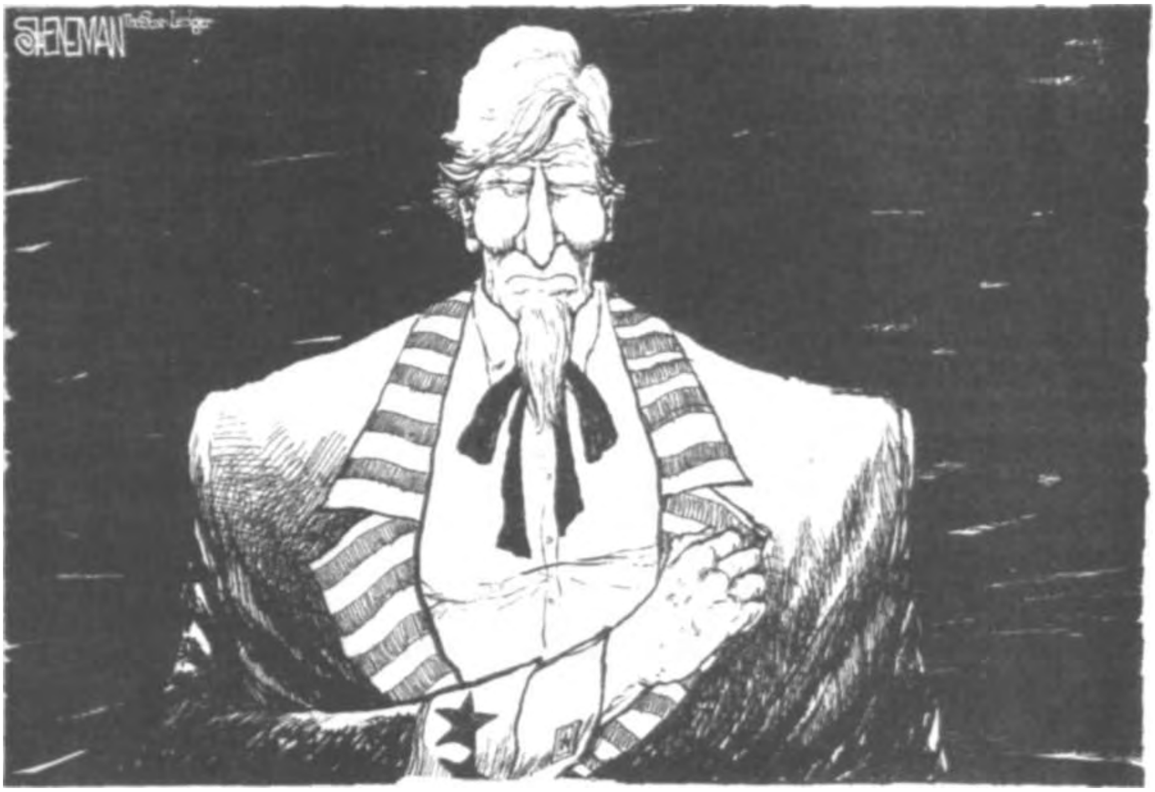

Interesting political cartoon in New Jersey's *Star-Ledger* newspaper following the 9/11 World Trade Center attack, sent to the author by a friend. Ever wondered why "Uncle Sam" wears the satanic goatee beard?

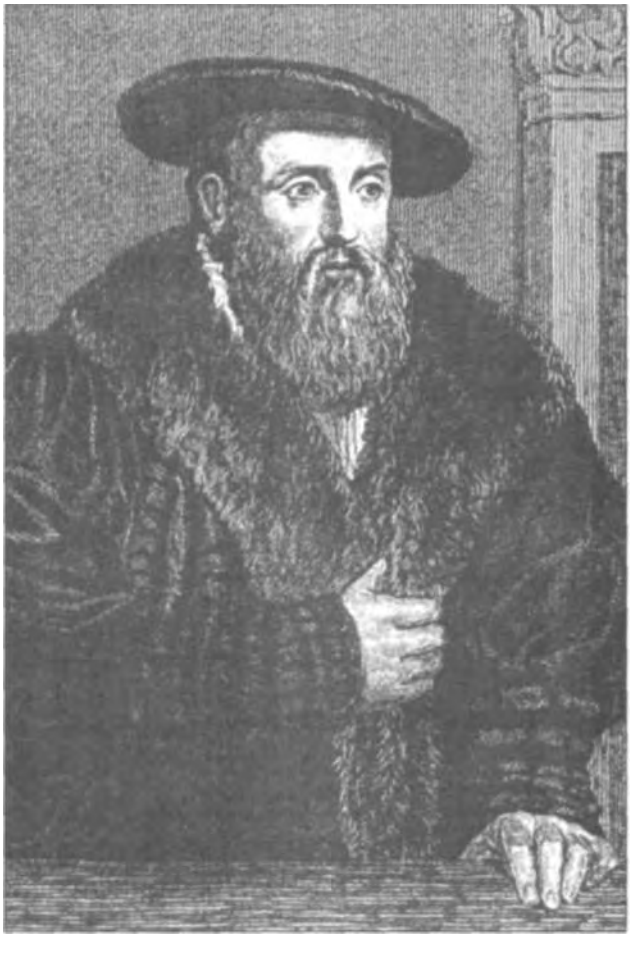

Johannes Kepler (1571-1630), a German astronomer and mathematician who taught the numerological philosophies of Plato and Pythagoras that were adopted by the Illuminati. (From the book, *Sacred Architecture,* by A.T. Mann, Element Books, 1993)

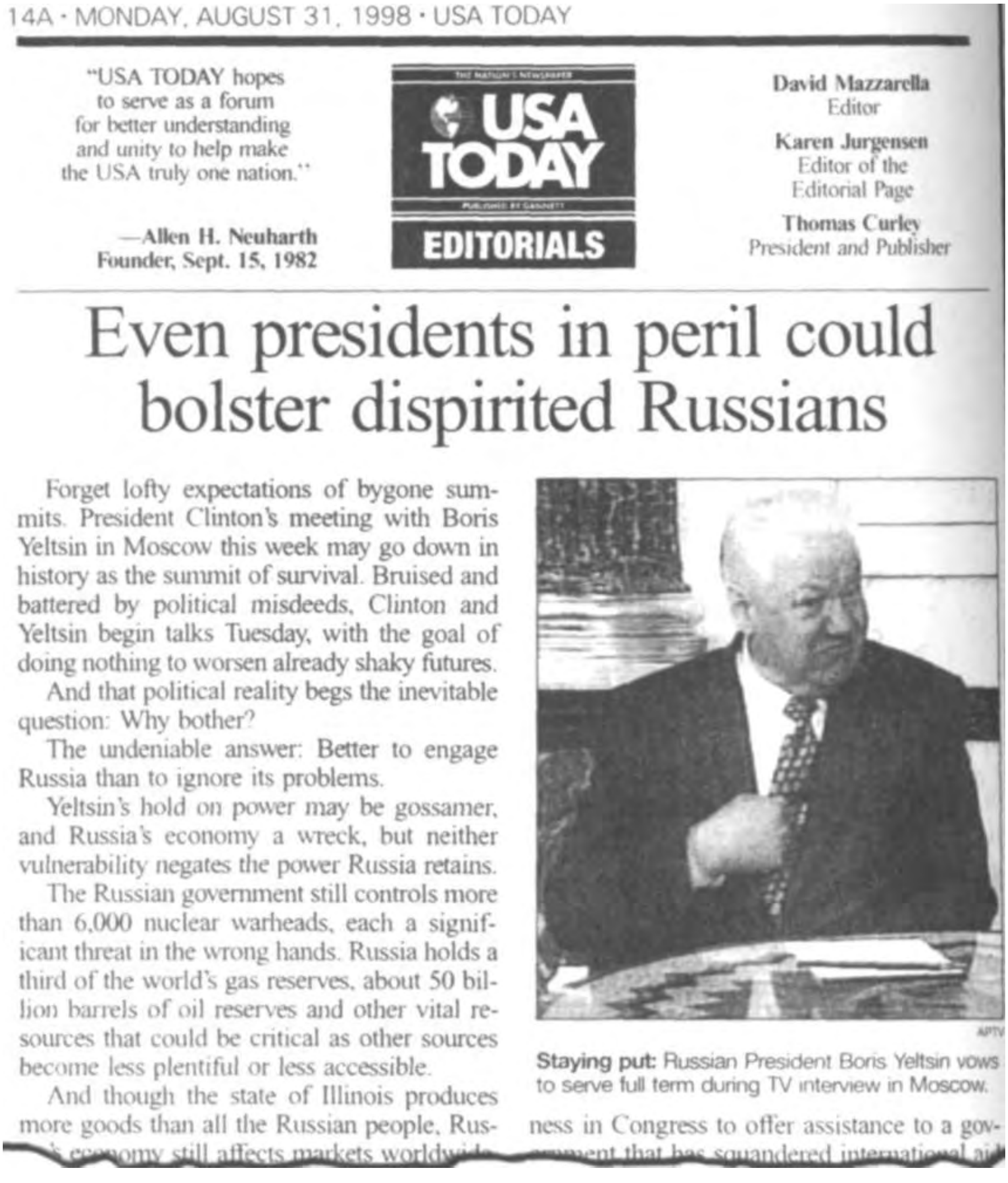

14A · MONDAY, AUGUST 31, 1998 · USA TODAY

"USA TODAY hopes
to serve as a forum
for better understanding
and unity to help make
the USA truly one nation."

—Allen H. Neuharth
Founder, Sept. 15, 1982

USA TODAY
EDITORIALS

David Mazzarella
Editor

Karen Jurgensen
Editor of the
Editorial Page

Thomas Curley
President and Publisher

Even presidents in peril could bolster dispirited Russians

Forget lofty expectations of bygone summits. President Clinton's meeting with Boris Yeltsin in Moscow this week may go down in history as the summit of survival. Bruised and battered by political misdeeds, Clinton and Yeltsin begin talks Tuesday, with the goal of doing nothing to worsen already shaky futures.

And that political reality begs the inevitable question: Why bother?

The undeniable answer: Better to engage Russia than to ignore its problems.

Yeltsin's hold on power may be gossamer, and Russia's economy a wreck, but neither vulnerability negates the power Russia retains.

The Russian government still controls more than 6,000 nuclear warheads, each a significant threat in the wrong hands. Russia holds a third of the world's gas reserves, about 50 billion barrels of oil reserves and other vital resources that could be critical as other sources become less plentiful or less accessible.

And though the state of Illinois produces more goods than all the Russian people, Rus-

APTV

Staying put: Russian President Boris Yeltsin vows to serve full term during TV interview in Moscow.

ness in Congress to offer assistance to a gov-

Russian President Boris Yeltsin was known to be a dupe of Jewish Illuminati interests. Following the fall of the Iron Curtain, these Illuminati Jews carved up Russia, seizing every asset of value and leaving the everyday Soviet citizenry in desperate economic straits. Yeltsin, a hopeless drunk, shows his loyalty to Illuminist interests with his clenched fist masonic pose.

England's Sir James de Rothschild, of the fabulously wealthy Rothschild Dynasty, about 1935. The books he has his clenched right fist on are believed to be mystical cabalistic texts. (Photo: From book *Waddesdon Manor— The Heritage of a Rothschild House,* by Michael Hall, photo by John Bigelow Taylor, Harry N. Abrams, Inc., Publishers, New York, 2002)

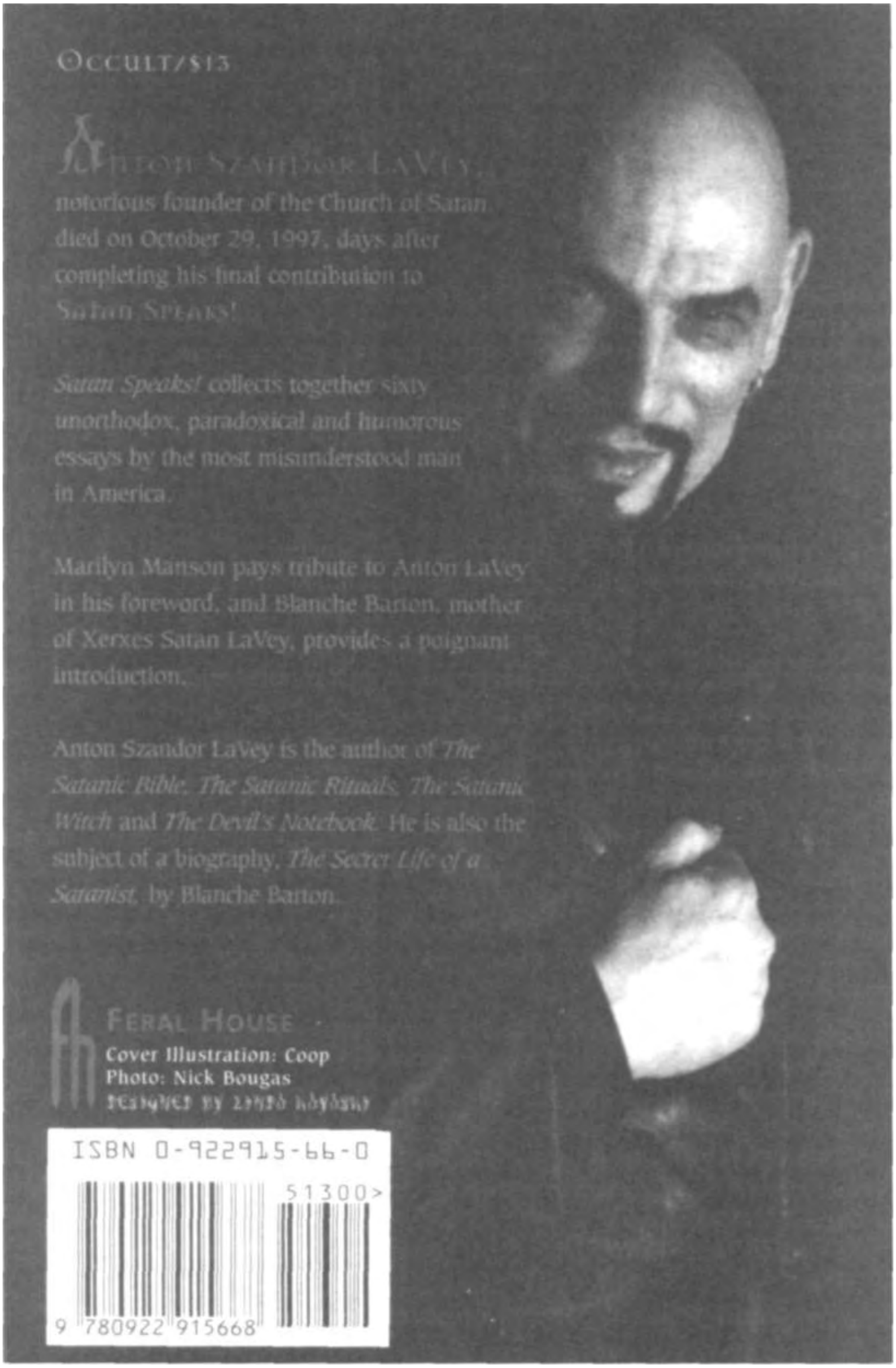

OCCULT/$13

Anton Szandor LaVey, notorious founder of the Church of Satan, died on October 29, 1997, days after completing his final contribution to Satan Speaks!

Satan Speaks! collects together sixty unorthodox, paradoxical and humorous essays by the most misunderstood man in America.

Marilyn Manson pays tribute to Anton LaVey in his foreword, and Blanche Barton, mother of Xerxes Satan LaVey, provides a poignant introduction.

Anton Szandor LaVey is the author of *The Satanic Bible*, *The Satanic Rituals*, *The Satanic Witch* and *The Devil's Notebook*. He is also the subject of a biography, *The Secret Life of a Satanist*, by Blanche Barton.

FERAL HOUSE
Cover Illustration: Coop
Photo: Nick Bougas
[illegible]
ISBN 0-922915-66-0
51300>
9 780922 915668

Anton Szandor LaVey, founder of the Church of Satan, from the back cover of his book of essays, *Satan Speaks*. LaVey died on October 29, 1997 just days after completing the manuscript of this book. Satanist rock star Marilyn Manson wrote the foreword. *(Satan Speaks*, by Anton LaVey, Venice, CA: Feral House, 1998)

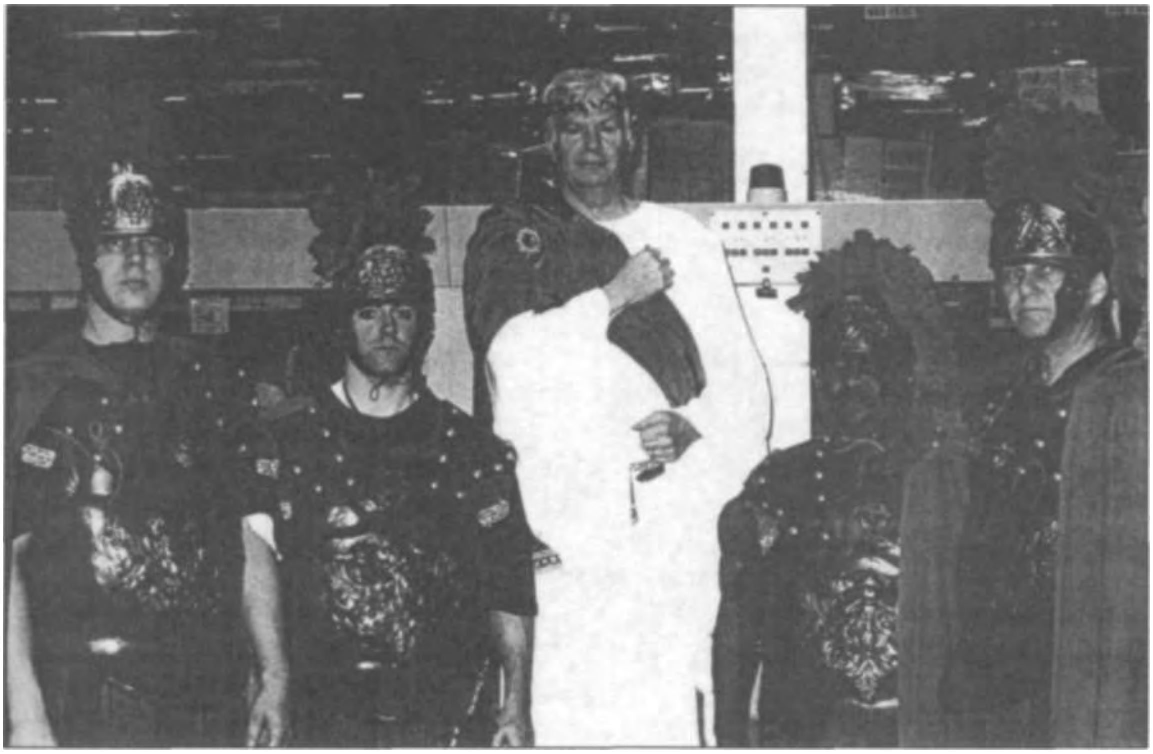

A stage/production of the classic, "Caesar," demonstrates the similarity of the Roman Emperor's arm and hand position to that of the Masons' sign.

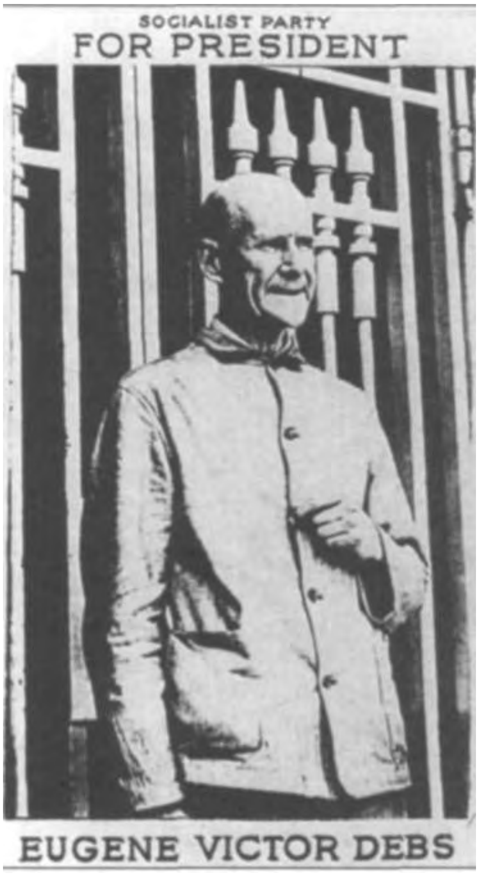
SOCIALIST PARTY
FOR PRESIDENT
EUGENE VICTOR DEBS

Labor leader Eugene V. Debs ran for president five times on the Socialist Party ticket. His best showing was in 1920 when he received almost six percent of the votes cast.

SIX

Baphles Me!—Horned Beasts, Leaping Goats, *Satanic* Beards, And Other Messages of Evil

I *possess more exalted titles than I have ever been able to count. I am supposed to know more secret signs, tokens, passwords, grandwords, grips, and so on, than I could actually learn in a dozen lives. An elephant would break down under the insignia I am entitled to wear.*

— Aleister Crowley, British Satanist
Confessions of a Heretic

Karl Marx was a Satan worshipper...he joined a satanic cult that featured long unkempt beards. Every picture of Karl Marx depicts such.

— Ralph Epperson
Secret Societies (audiotape 1987)

Many believe that Satanism and Luciferian worship are miles apart from the rituals, practices, and philosophies of the secret societies and the Order of the Illuminati. In fact, there is no real distinction between these groups. As Dr. Michael Aquino, hard-core satanist and founder of the Temple of Set once acknowledged, the satanists merely have a "more precise" understanding of occult reality.

Aleister Crowley, the late British satanist, who relished calling himself, "the wickedest man on planet earth," no doubt would have agreed with Aquino. Crowley was initiated into a number of different Masonic fraternities, satanic rites, and occult groups, including the Rite of Memphis, Mexican Scottish Rite 33°, Grand Orient 33°, and the Rite of Misraim. In 1912 he was honored by fellow Luciferians of the *Ordo Templi Orientis* (O.T.O.), being acknowledged for his superior Gnostic knowledge and giftedness and given the following exalted rank and title:[1]

Aleister St. Edward Crowley 33°, 90°, 95°, X°
National Grand Master General for Great Britain and Ireland
Mysteria Mystica Maxima

"An Elephant Would Break Down..."

Crowley claimed that from Bucharest, Hungary to Salt Lake City, Utah, he was showered with honors, titles, degrees and occult paraphernalia. So much was he recognized that a bemused Crowley wittily remarked, "an elephant would break down under the insignia I am entitled to wear."[2] It was Napoleon who once observed how easy it is to win men over through flattery simply by bequeathing a title to them or pinning a medal or token on their chest.

Crowley's wicked philosophies and his ritual experimentation—such as the "Babalon Working" ritual designed to invoke the coming of Antichrist—greatly inspired copycats and imitators. Such include L. Ron Hubbard, who reportedly studied Crowley's works and went on to found the fake religion called Scientology; Anton LaVey, who founded the Church of Satan and authored *The Satanic Bible;* and Alfred Kinsey, notorious sex researcher whose Kinsey Institute pandered to kinky homosexuals and vicious pedophiles.[3]

Crowley often acted nutty and bizarre, but he was so trusted by the British government that it enthusiastically used his services in an Intelligence unit during the World War II conflict against the Nazis.

Crowley's adoption of the hermaphroditic, horned goat-god Baphomet as his own magical name indicates how powerful is this idol to Illuminists. Crowley certainly knew who Baphomet represents. In his book, Magic *in Theory and Practice,* he states:

L. Ron Hubbard

Baphomet
X° O.T.O.
Ireland

Aleister Crowley

> This serpent, Satan, is not the enemy of man... He is 'The Devil' of the (Egyptian) Book of Thoth, and his emblem is 'Baphomet,' the Androgyne who is the hieroglyph of arcane perfection...But moreover his letter is Ayin, the Eye; he is

> Light and his zodiacal image is Capricornus, that leaping goat whose attribute is liberty.[4]

No doubt the Inner Circle of the Illuminati have specific objectives in mind that are being met by men like Crowley, LaVey, Hubbbard, and Kinsey. These men and their followers are used to degrade and debase humanity, vulgarize religion, and destroy sane and moral culture. In truth, the philosophies of these evil men are in accord with that of the Illuminati. At the core level of Weishaupt's philosophy was always the "elevation" of humanity to god-status.

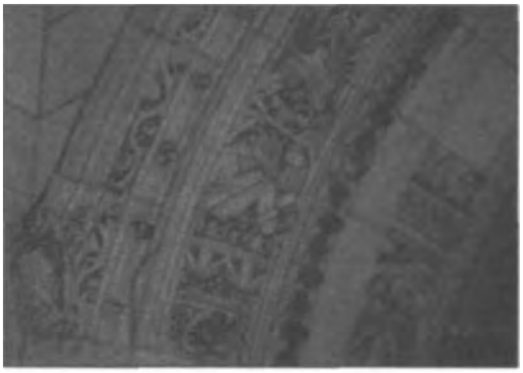

This Baphomet in a man's suit is carved in the stone arch of a Yale University building that houses the University's education and sociology departments. Yale is also home to the Illuminati's Order of Skull & Bones. (Photo: Yale University)

"Do As Thou Wilt..."

The pitch was to inspire men to reject God's laws and God's religion and strike out in liberty, doing one's own thing. In other words, live free beyond any bounds of morality or propriety. Lust, free sex, immoral conduct, rape, pillage, plunder—all are permitted the New Man of Reason. As Crowley's One Great Commandment put it, *"Do As Thou Wilt Shall be the Whole of the Law."*

Now Baphomet, the androgynous horned, half man-woman, half goat god of the medieval Knights Templars, inculcates this *"Do your own thing"* philosophy of Illuminism. He is the very image of the freethinker, the Mason and Illuminist who raises the "Torch of Liberty"—the fire of hell and light of Lucifer. The Knights Templar, predecessor to today's Freemasons, revered Baphomet as the deity of wisdom. Look closely at the reverse side of the U.S. dollar bill and you will find the horns of Baphomet meticulously designed and imbedded.

In this chapter, you will discover more about Baphomet; about the Green Man; about Pan, the horned witch god; and about Crowley and his Ordo Templi Orientis (O.T.O.). Since the days of Alexander the Great, the horned god has been worshipped by a significant portion of mankind. The Holy Bible records, for example, the worship of Baal, the horned fire god. Michaelangelo and some other artists, strangely, created sculptures blasphemously showing Moses, the biblical prophet, with horns. All of these horned deities and images represent lust, because the horn is itself a phallic symbol in the occult world.

Of Stars and Goatees

In recent times, Communist revolutionaries adopted the *Star,* also symbol of Baphomet (see the star on the Baphomet goat's forehead in this chapter), and some—Karl Marx, Che Gueverra and others—adopted the huge and straggly beard in honor of the *goatee* of Baphomet, the deity whom they secretly worshipped. Revealingly, the late Anton LaVey, spouting his hellish philosophy in his final book, *Satan Speaks,* says of Baphomet's beard: "The essence of Satanism is...the beard of wisdom on the goat within the inverted star."[5]

Many Hollywood celebrities have become involved in the depths of satanism. Beautiful actresses like Jayne Mansfield and Marilyn Monroe were used as sex tools by the elite, and men such as singer Sammy Davis, Jr., as well as dozens of rock 'n' roll entertainers, were used as Illuminist toys, providing fun, games, and entertainment for the elite. Davis was made an honorary 11° in Dr. Michael Aquino's Temple of Set cult. Blonde bombshell actress Jayne Mansfield was so enamored of satanic worship that she had a pink and black Baphomet idol custom-made just for her. She wore the idol around her neck at a San Francisco Festival in 1966. Hollywood involvement in satanic darkness continues today, though the names have changed.

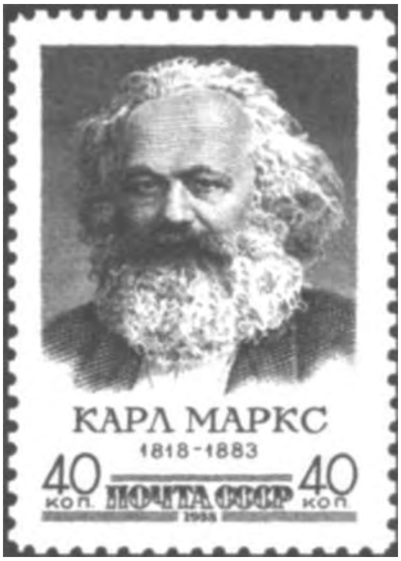

This postage stamp issued by Russia in 1938 honored Comunist theoretician, Karl Marx. Marx, a Jewish Zionist and Mason, was also a Satan worshipper. His straggly, unkempt beard honored the beard of the Illuminati diety, Baphomet, and represented *"Cosmic Intelligence and Will."*

Anton Szandor LaVey, founder of the Church of Satan, died on October 29, 1997. Oddly, Edmund de Rothschild, senior head of the Rothschild banking dynasty, died the same day. LaVey said that the beard of Baphomet was a sign of wisdom.

According to one respected source, U.S. President George Herbert Walker Bush (Bush the Senior) once stunned congressional leaders when he made an entrance into the Oval Office wearing a goat's head mask![6]

The He Goat of Prophecy

Significant, indeed, is the biblical passage in *Daniel 8:8-22,* which symbolically pictures a great world leader in the last days as a "he goat." This he goat, say the scriptures, becomes very strong and his power is symbolized by a horn that arises from his forehead. This strange and evil creature makes war on the host of God and stamps upon them. Is this not an image of the Beast, Baphomet, worshipped in secret by the Illuminati?

The Baptism of a Satanic Witch

In the ceremonies of pagan religions, baptisms—counterfeits of the Christian sacrament—were conducted as rites of initiation. Below is the modern-day account of one such dark baptism, exactly as it is recorded in the book, *The Satanic Witch,* by Anton LaVey, head of the Church of Satan. LaVey has declared that the goal of his unholy church is to usher in a "New Age." (The person being baptized is LaVey's daughter, Zeena, and the words are hers.)

> My baptism was indeed the reversal of a Christian baptism. Instead of being dunked into a cold bath by a strange, sexless man to be cleansed of "original sin," we celebrated man and nature as they really are.
>
> As I sat wearing the red robe my mother made that morning, I toyed with the Baphomet amulet dangling around my neck. Imperiously, I surveyed the sea of black-hooded celebrants. It took me a few years to realize that some of them may have been more fascinated with the naked woman sprawled on the altar than with me. The gothic strains of a Hammond organ echoed against the black and red walls...I delighted in being the focal point of all this activity.
>
> My father, the High Priest, raised his ceremonial sword in benediction. I felt a great sense of warmth and respect. How many people can honestly say they have this feeling at any point in their life? "I have something they don't," I thought proudly, in keeping with the indulgent philosophy of Satanism. Since that night I understood what it means to be a Satanic Witch, a woman who makes full use of her feminine wiles. Throughout my life I would replay the words intoned during my baptism:
>
> *The many footed walkers give you the strength, the power of red fang and claw, all the madly dancing demons fill you with the lost knowledge of ancient ones. Small sorceress, the most natural and true magician, your tiny hands have the power to pull the living heavens down and from its shards build a monument to your own sweet indulgence... And with these others in the devil's fane, you will so cause the heads of men to reel and spin, you will fill them with desire. And so we dedicate your life to love, to passion, to indulgence, and to Satan and the way of darkness, fane. Hail Zeena! Hail Satan!*

A Generation Mesmerized

Recently, countless youth have been brought into Satan's kingdom through movies, TV cartoons, video games, comic books, and other means. The Harry Potter witchcraft books have initiated many into the darkest elements of hellishness. Occult fantasy movies *(Star Wars, Jedi,* etc.) have erased any conception of absolutes and have increasingly brought youth into satanic philosophies. The end result is an entire generation mesmerized, all marching in formation through the haze trance-like into a 21st century existence to be ruled over by Illuminati dignitaries. Never before in history have so many been trained and indoctrinated to the tenets of Satanic Illuminism. The hidden entity behind the idol Baphomet must be very proud of his newfound slaves.

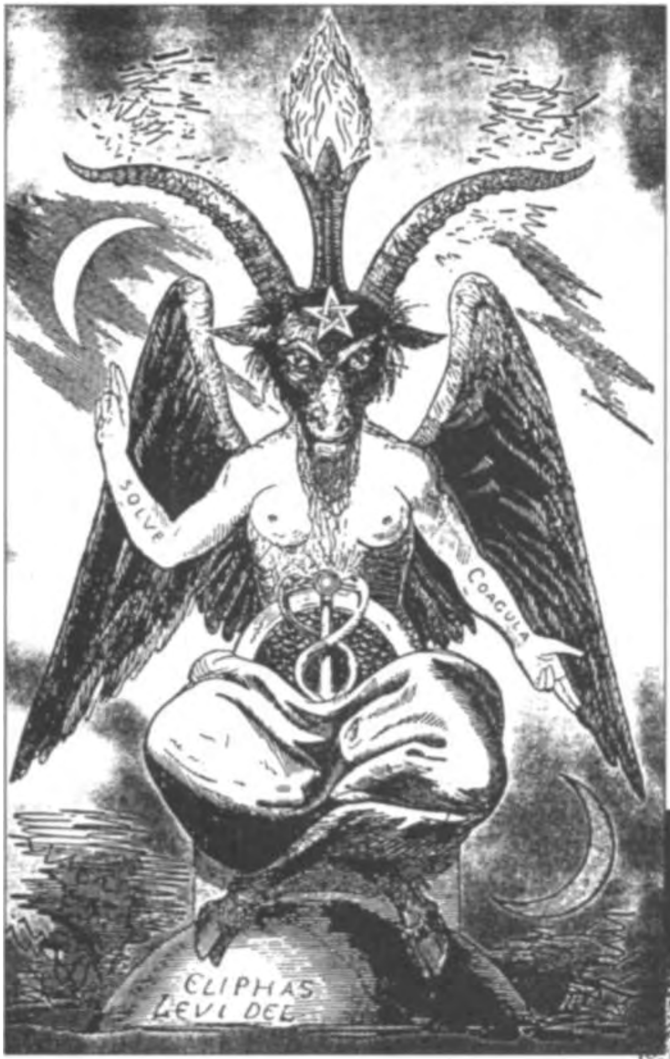

Baphomet, the great Luciferian goat god worshipped by the Knights Templar, by gnostics and satanists, and by many others involved in the Illuminati network, is a symbolic, yet graphic representation of the Adversary, Satan himself. Pictured as androgynous (combination male and female), we find his right hand pointing upward, toward the light and his left hand pointing downward, toward the dark regions. The satanic star is on his forehead. Two balanced serpents are in his genital area, and he has a torch with fire coming out of his head. And there are many other symbols represented as well, each packed with malevolent, occult content and meaning.

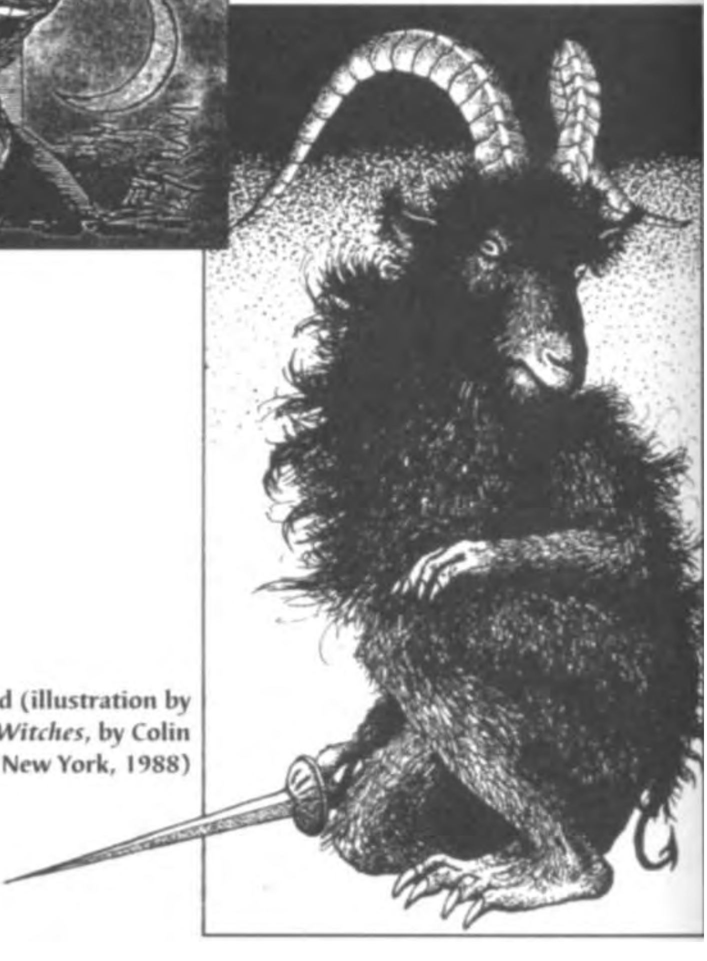

A malevolent goat carrying a sword (illustration by Una Woodruff, from the book, *Witches*, by Colin Wilson, Crescent Books, New York, 1988)

Replica of Michaelangelo's "Florentine Man," a Green Man idol sculptured by the famous Italian Renaissance artist, (from *Toscano Design* catalog, Holiday, 1999)

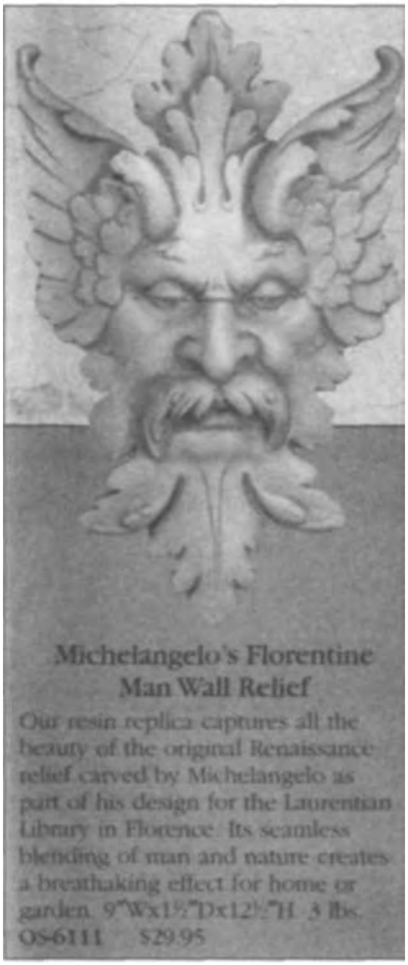

Michelangelo's Florentine Man Wall Relief

Our resin replica captures all the beauty of the original Renaissance relief carved by Michelangelo as part of his design for the Laurentian Library in Florence. Its seamless blending of man and nature creates a breathaking effect for home or garden. 9"Wx1½"Dx12½"H 3 lbs. OS-6111 $29.95

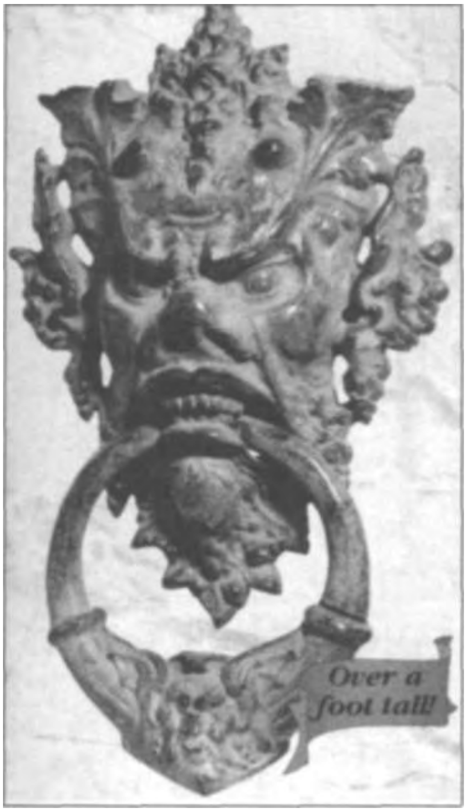

Green Man doorbell knocker, "Il Vecchio," replica of an authentic Tuscany model (from *Toscano Design* catalog, Holiday, 1999)

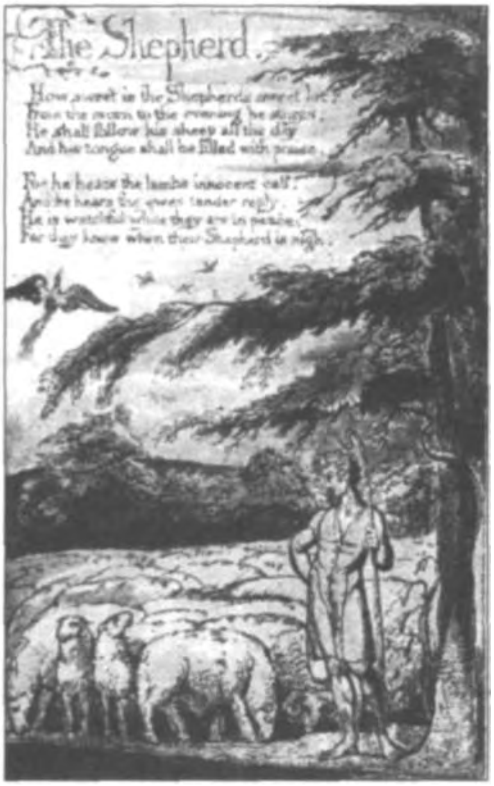
The Shepherd.

In his *Songs of Innocence*, English artist and author William Blake etched, printed and hand-colored this illustration for his poem, *"The Shepherd."* To Christians, the Shepherd is Jesus Christ. But to Blake, as we see here, the Shepherd is Lucifer, beard and all, with serpentine-topped staff. (1802; Harry Ransom Center, University of Texas at Austin)

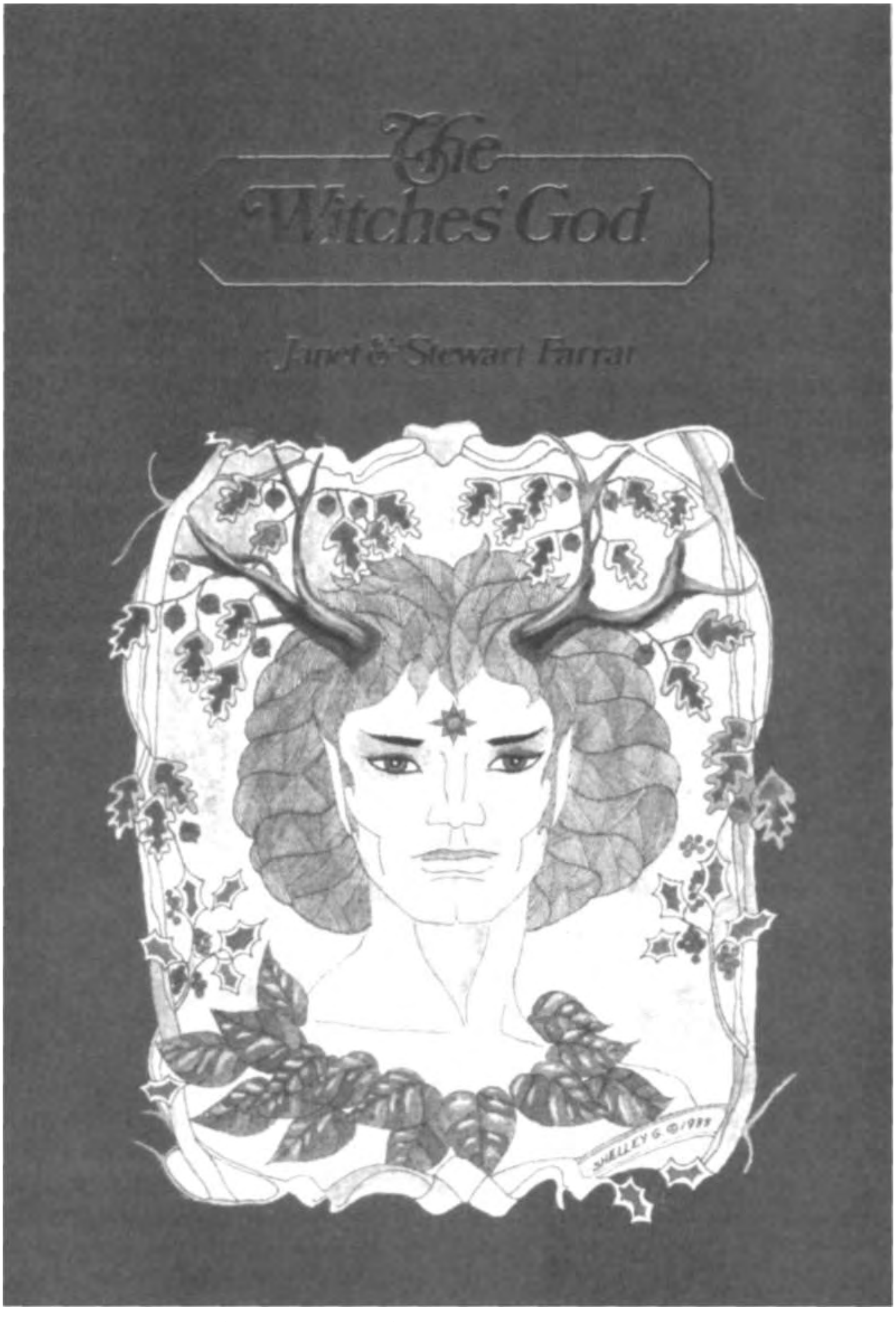

Pan, the horned god of the mountains, forest, streams, and valleys, is almost universally worshipped by witches, as the honor bestowed upon him by the title and cover art of this recent book indicate. The ivy and holly are his favored vegetation (thus, the ivy-covered buildings on the campuses of Harvard, Yale, and other elite establishment colleges and the name, Hollywood). Pan, whose father is Hermes, god of secrecy, is often pictured as the *Green Man,* a vegetation-covered deity. The tale of the jolly green giant is a myth begun by his admirers. Who, really, is Pan? Well, of course, Pan is simply the Devil in a new disguise.

This statue of Pan, with cloven hoofs, horns, and beard, resides in Hyde Park, London, England. It is part of a sculpture collection called "Family of Man," by artist Jacob Epstein. How is it that the people of London, thought to be mainly Christian believers, so easily tolerate this idol of Satan himself housed within their very midst? Have the Illuminati who placed it there already gained such immense power that the people are so pitifully weak and helpless?

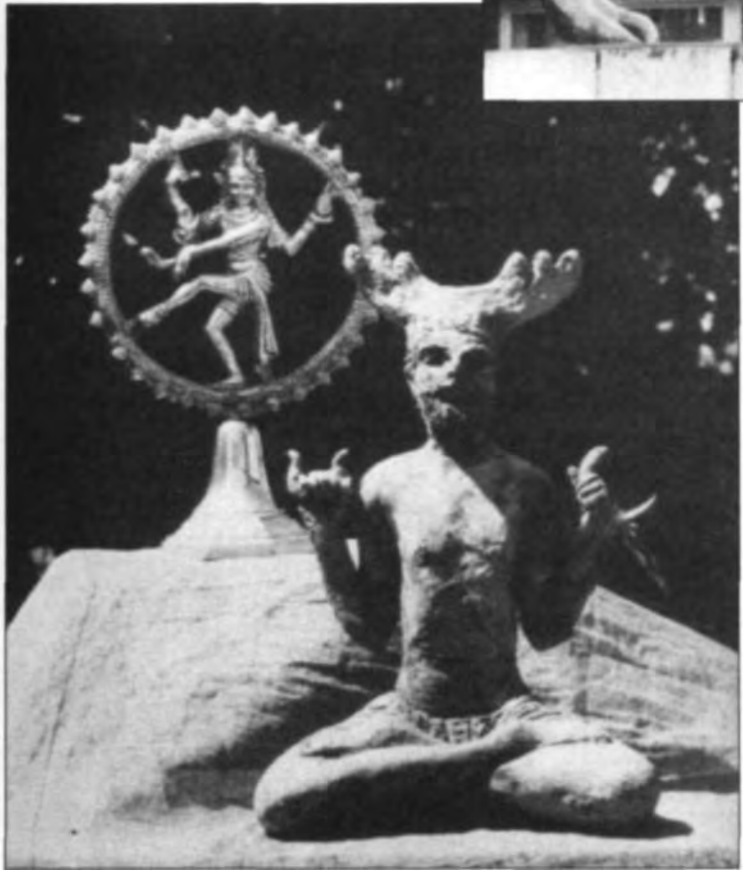

Cernunnos, the druidic, horned god of nature, wears horns that are deer antlers. Sitting lotus-like in this museum setting in Britain, his altar is surmounted by the dancing figure of the Hindu Sun God, Shiva. Check out Cernunnos' horn-in-hand salutes to Satan—remarkably similar to the "Il Cornuto" or "El Diablo" hand signs so prevalent at today's modern rock music concerts.

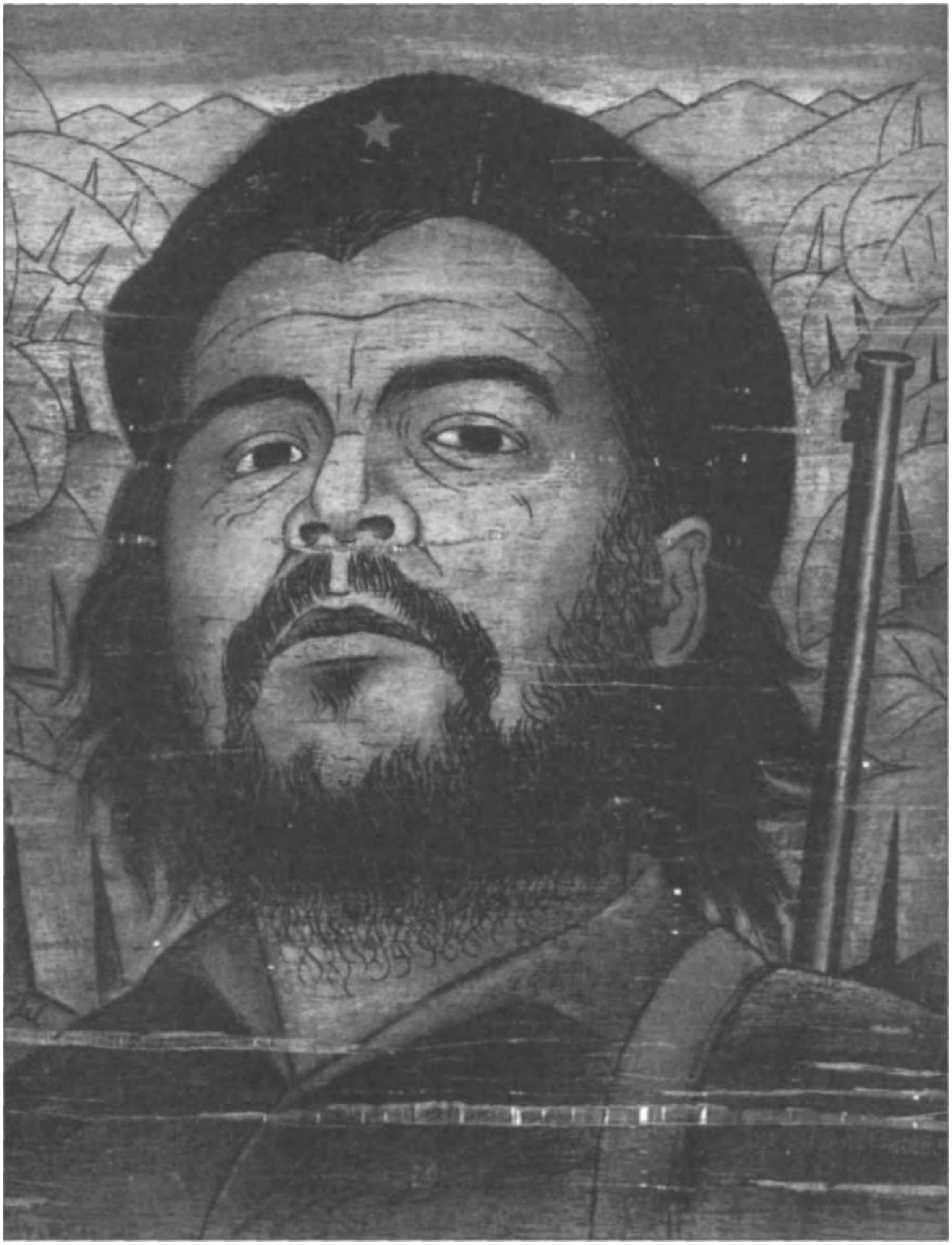

The bearded revolutionary rebel is symbolic of Baphomet, who also has a beard. This artist rendition of notorious Cuban guerilla leader Che Gueverra does bear a remarkable resemblance to Eliphas Levi's famous drawing of Baphomet, complete with the stars on their respective heads.

This is the interior front page in Aleister Crowley's infamous, channeled treatise *The Book of The Law* (1904). It includes at top the seal of the Ordo Templi Orientis (OTO), a Luciferian secret order whose initiates included Jack Parsons, American pioneer in rocket fuel technology, L. Ron Hubbard, founder of Scientology, and numerous British intelligence officials. Crowley was its "Father" and Chief. The signature of Baphomet is observed along with the diamond-shaped "deluxe Tau," which is the mark of a very high-level leader of the Illuminati. The letter "B" in the name Baphomet is designed to produce three 6s; thus, 666, the number of the beast (Revelation 13). *The Book of The Law* was supposedly dictated to Aleister Crowley by a demon spirit calling himself "Aiwass" (or, Horus). Its text is a confusing bunch of gibberish which Crowley insisted is written in code or cipher.

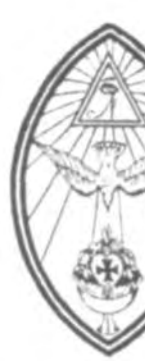

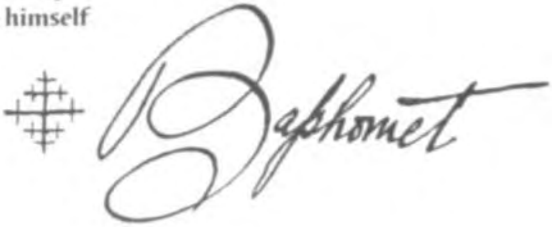

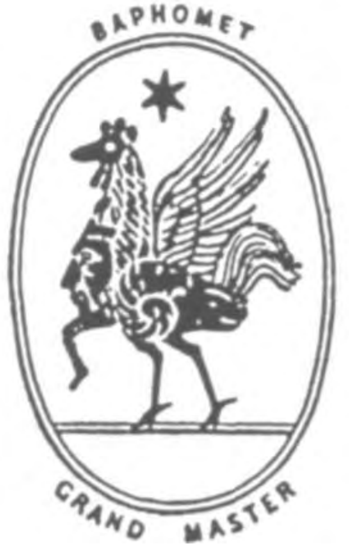

The Seal of the Grand Master of the O.T.O. The creature appears to be a combination pegasus horse and rooster with a six-pointed black star inside an egg-shaped oval.

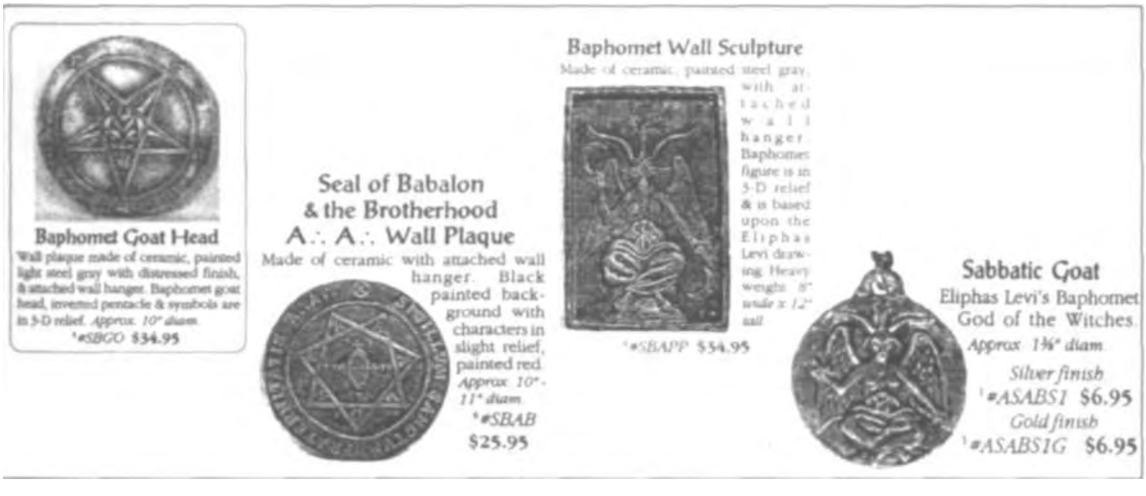

Baphomet Goat Head

Wall plaque made of ceramic, painted light steel gray with distressed finish, & attached wall hanger. Baphomet goat head, inverted pentacle & symbols are in 3-D relief. *Approx. 10" diam.*

'#SBGO $34.95

Seal of Babalon & the Brotherhood A∴ A∴ Wall Plaque

Made of ceramic with attached wall hanger. Black painted background with characters in slight relief, painted red. *Approx. 10"-11" diam.*

'#SBAB
$25.95

Baphomet Wall Sculpture

Made of ceramic, painted steel gray, with attached wall hanger. Baphomet figure is in 3-D relief & is based upon the Eliphas Levi drawing. Heavy weight. *8" wide x 12" tall*

'#SBAPP $34.95

Sabbatic Goat

Eliphas Levi's Baphomet God of the Witches.
Approx. 1¾" diam.

Silver finish
'#ASABS1 $6.95
Gold finish
'#ASABS1G $6.95

A Baphomet wall plaque and wall sculpture sold by an occult mail order store, along with a "Seal of Babalon" and the Brotherhood A ∴ A ∴ wall plaque (the Atlantean Brotherhood). Also offered: a "Sabbatic Goat" amulet, described as satanist Eliphas Levi's "Baphomet God of the Witches."

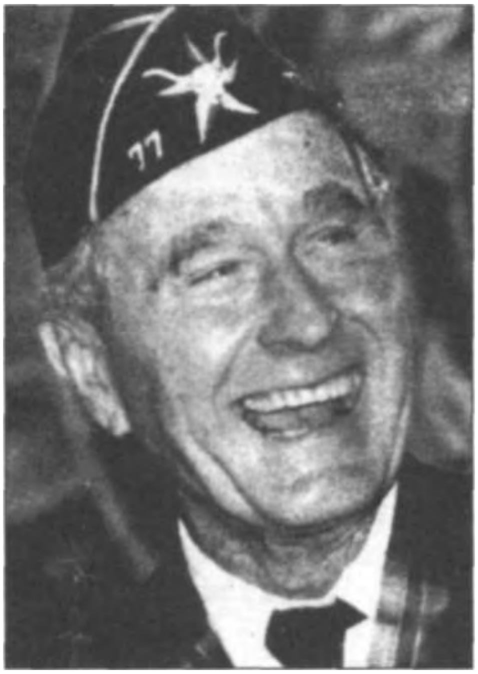

President George Herbert Walker Bush. We do not know what the star and longhorn stand for on his cap, nor the meaning of the sash around his neck. Speculatively, perhaps it has something to do with a Texas state group or a Texas (Lone Star State) cattlemen's association, etc. However, from Australia come two reports that the senior George Bush once stunned congressional leaders waiting to see him in his oval office at the White House. The President entered his office wearing a goat's head mask! (Peter Sawyer's *Inside News,* November 1991 and *South East Christian Witness,* January 1992, p. 5 and July /August 1989, p. 9)

The Grand Master of a satanic secret society in the country of Greece wears a goat's head.

Ἄγγλος Πρωθιερεύς! Ὄχι ὅμως τοῦ... Καντέρμπουρυ ἀλλὰ τῆς Μαύρης Μαγείας, ποὺ κατέλαβεν κατὰ τὰ τελευταῖα χρόνια ἐξ ἐφόδου ὁλόκληρον τὴν πρώην Μεγάλην Βρεταννίαν. Τὰ ράσα εἶναι κατακόκκινα, ὅπως καὶ τὸ κερὶ ποὺ καίγεται ἀνάμεσα στὰ κέρατα. Στὰ χέρια του ὁ «Πρωθιερεύς» βαστάει δύο ἑνωμένα κέρατα καὶ κομπολόγι... Ὁ ναὸς εἶναι γεμᾶτος ἀπὸ «πιστοὺς» εἰς ἀδαμιαίαν περιβολήν. Ἡ ἱέρεια διαβάζει μαγικὲς ἐπικλήσεις... ἂς μὴν εἰσέλθουμε ὅμως σὲ ἄλλες λεπτομέρειες. Πάντως σὲ λίγες μέρες ἢ ἑβδομάδες ἡ Ἀστυνομία θὰ ψάχνη γιὰ μικρὰ ἀθῶα ἐξαφανισθέντα παιδάκια, ποὺ τὸ αἷμα τους χρειάζεται ἡ σατανικὴ Μαύρη Μαγεία!

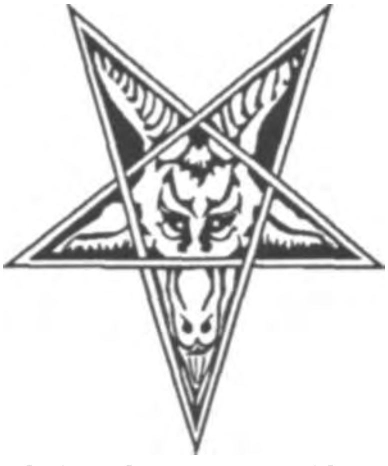

The irregular pentagram with an image of Baphomet filling up the interior spaces is called the *"Goat of Mendes."* It is yet another representation of Satan.

Blonde bombshell actress Jayne Mansfield believed she could invoke the powers of satanic black magic to enhance her Hollywood career. (Photo: Book, *Satan Wants You*, by Arthur Lyons, Mysterious Press, New York, 1988)

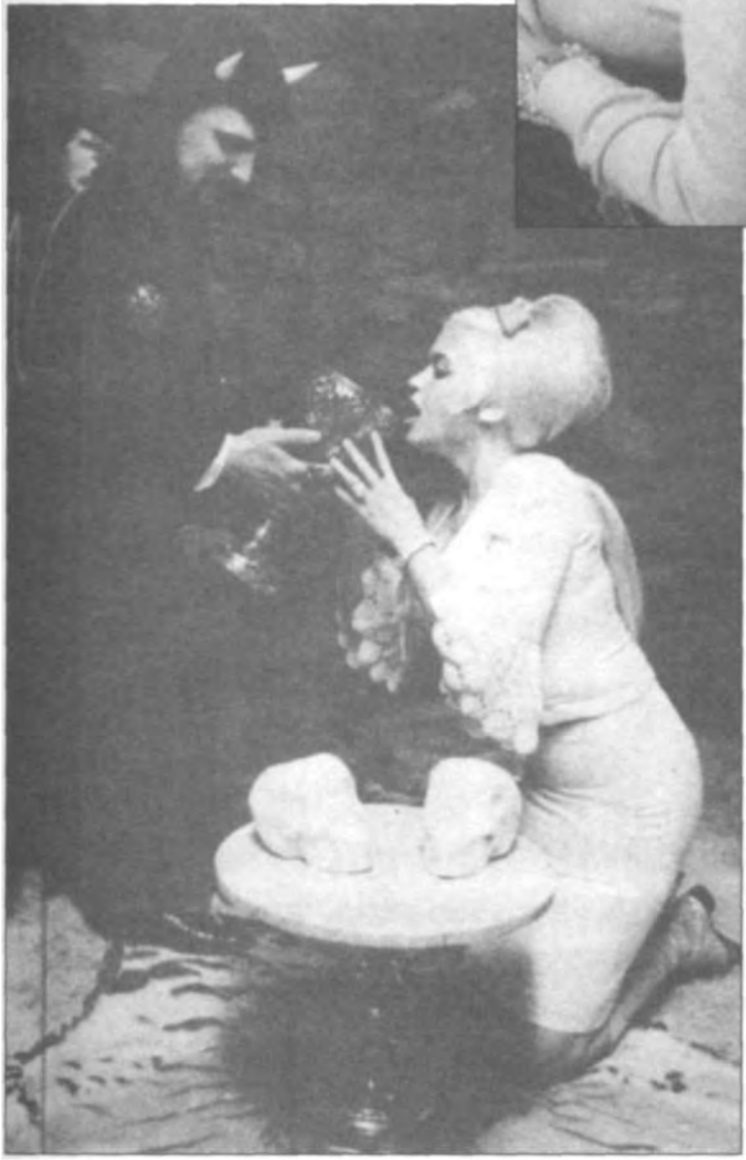

Unbeknown to her throng of admirers, High Priest Anton LaVey performs a "private" ritual for blockbuster movie actress Jayne Mansfield at her home in Hollywood. This photo was released after Mansfield's tragic death in an auto accident. How many other famous persons are there out there, still living, who have "privately" participated in dark black magic masses and rituals? (Photo: Book, *Satan Wants You*, by Arthur Lyons, Mysterious Press, New York, 1988)

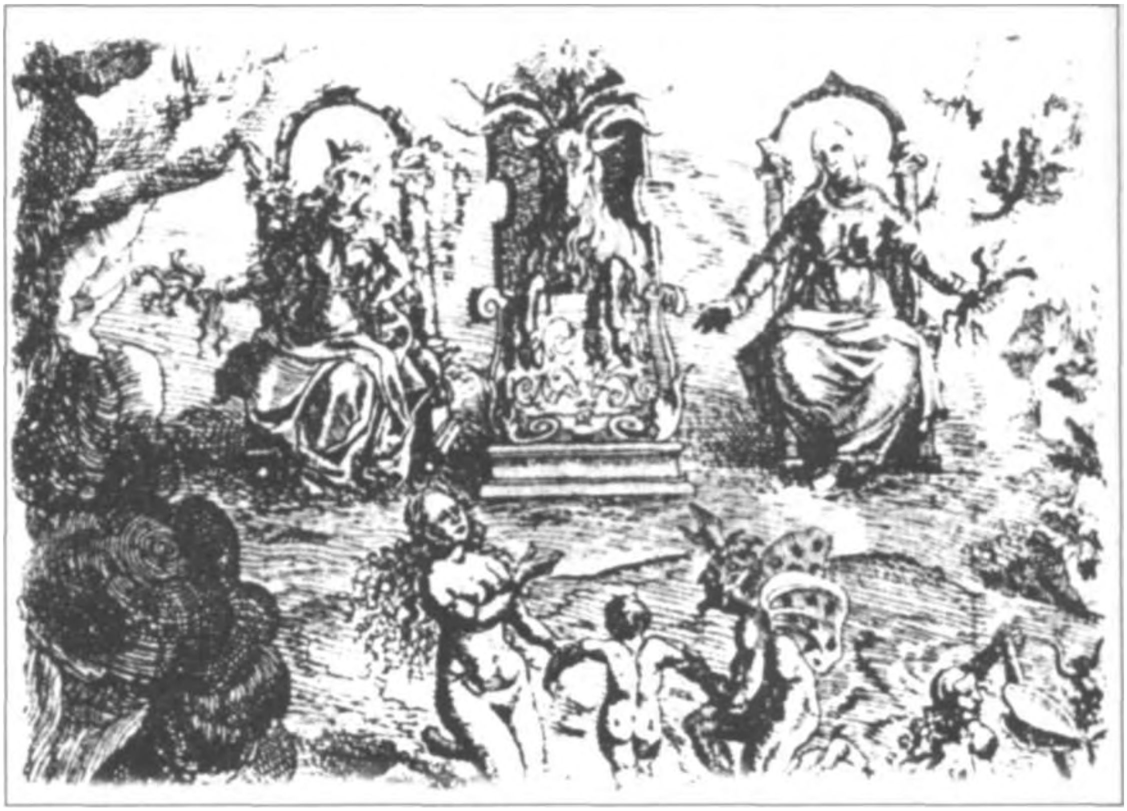

The Devil makes an appearance at a black sabbat ritual of his followers. (From an ancient woodcut by Pierre de Lancre, France, 1913)

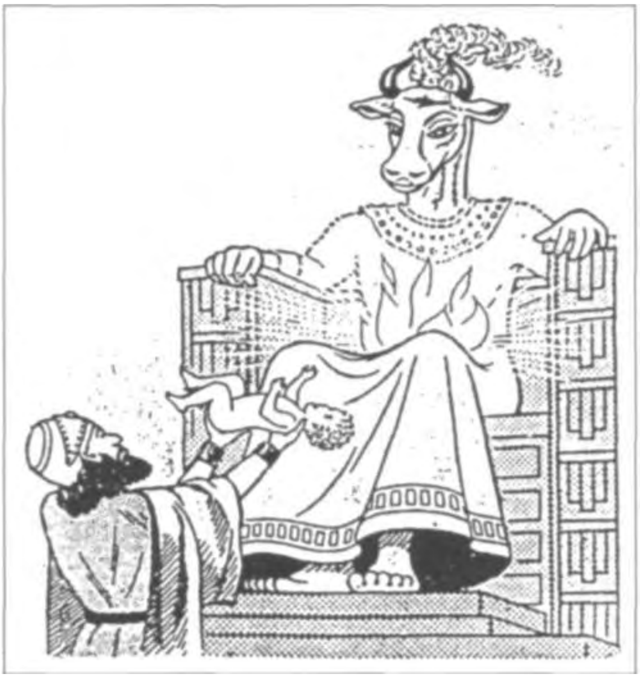

Baal and some other gods were pictured as horned bulls. This is Baal, god of fire receiving an infant as sacrifice.

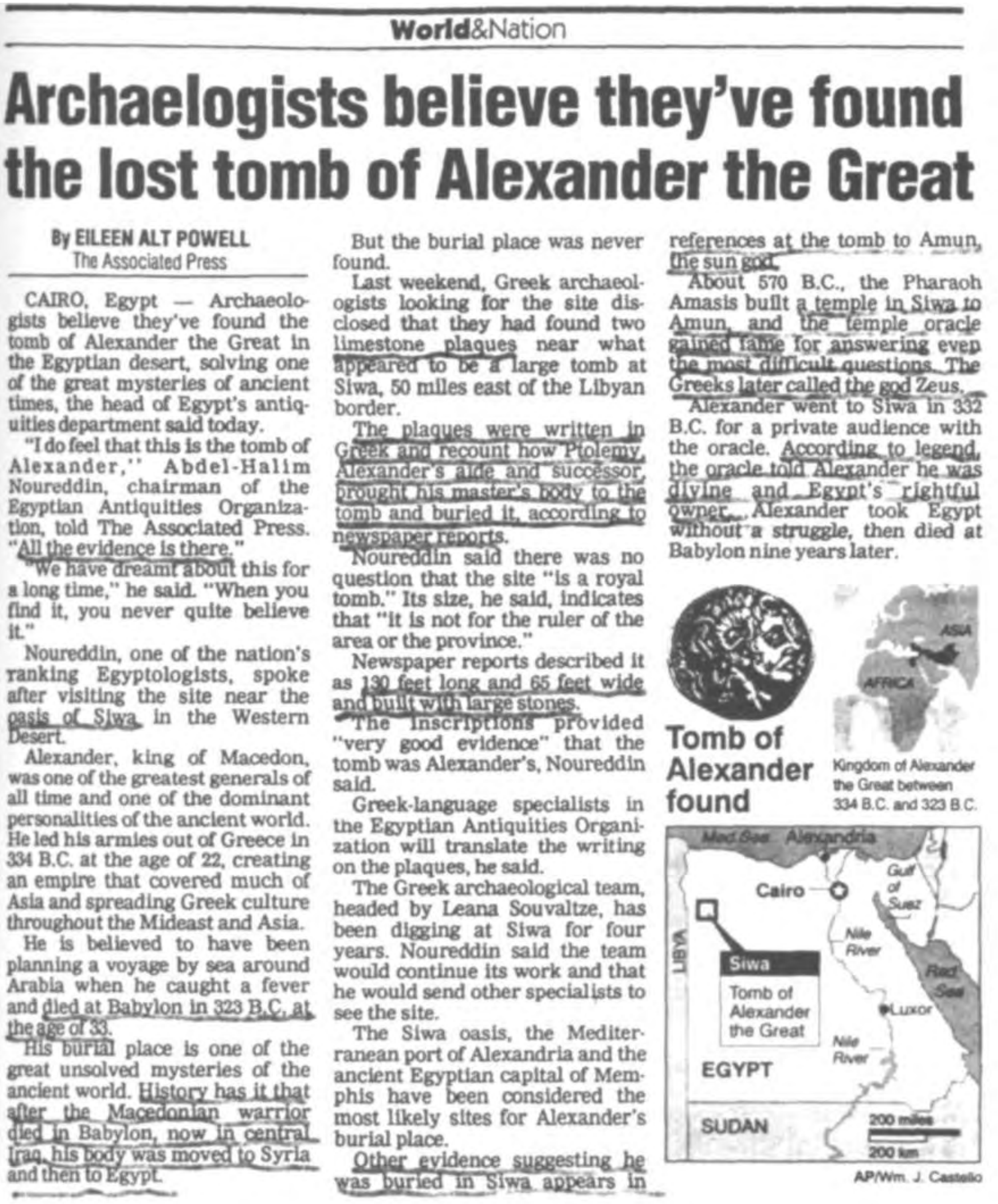

World&Nation

Archaelogists believe they've found the lost tomb of Alexander the Great

By EILEEN ALT POWELL
The Associated Press

CAIRO, Egypt — Archaeologists believe they've found the tomb of Alexander the Great in the Egyptian desert, solving one of the great mysteries of ancient times, the head of Egypt's antiquities department said today.

"I do feel that this is the tomb of Alexander," Abdel-Halim Noureddin, chairman of the Egyptian Antiquities Organization, told The Associated Press. "All the evidence is there."

"We have dreamt about this for a long time," he said. "When you find it, you never quite believe it."

Noureddin, one of the nation's ranking Egyptologists, spoke after visiting the site near the oasis of Siwa in the Western Desert.

Alexander, king of Macedon, was one of the greatest generals of all time and one of the dominant personalities of the ancient world. He led his armies out of Greece in 334 B.C. at the age of 22, creating an empire that covered much of Asia and spreading Greek culture throughout the Mideast and Asia.

He is believed to have been planning a voyage by sea around Arabia when he caught a fever and died at Babylon in 323 B.C. at the age of 33.

His burial place is one of the great unsolved mysteries of the ancient world. History has it that after the Macedonian warrior died in Babylon, now in central Iraq, his body was moved to Syria and then to Egypt.

But the burial place was never found.

Last weekend, Greek archaeologists looking for the site disclosed that they had found two limestone plaques near what appeared to be a large tomb at Siwa, 50 miles east of the Libyan border.

The plaques were written in Greek and recount how Ptolemy, Alexander's aide and successor, brought his master's body to the tomb and buried it, according to newspaper reports.

Noureddin said there was no question that the site "is a royal tomb." Its size, he said, indicates that "it is not for the ruler of the area or the province."

Newspaper reports described it as 130 feet long and 65 feet wide and built with large stones.

The inscriptions provided "very good evidence" that the tomb was Alexander's, Noureddin said.

Greek-language specialists in the Egyptian Antiquities Organization will translate the writing on the plaques, he said.

The Greek archaeological team, headed by Leana Souvaltze, has been digging at Siwa for four years. Noureddin said the team would continue its work and that he would send other specialists to see the site.

The Siwa oasis, the Mediterranean port of Alexandria and the ancient Egyptian capital of Memphis have been considered the most likely sites for Alexander's burial place.

Other evidence suggesting he was buried in Siwa appears in references at the tomb to Amun, the sun god.

About 570 B.C., the Pharaoh Amasis built a temple in Siwa to Amun, and the temple oracle gained fame for answering even the most difficult questions. The Greeks later called the god Zeus.

Alexander went to Siwa in 332 B.C. for a private audience with the oracle. According to legend, the oracle told Alexander he was divine and Egypt's rightful owner. Alexander took Egypt without a struggle, then died at Babylon nine years later.

Tomb of Alexander found

Kingdom of Alexander the Great between 334 B.C. and 323 B.C.

AP/Wm. J. Castello

According to this news account from The Associated Press (April *1*, 1995), the tomb of Alexander the Great was found at Siwa, in Egypt.

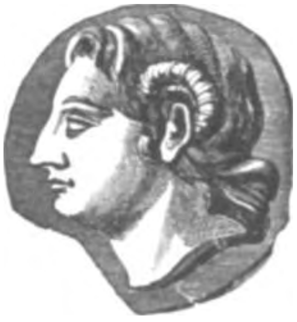

Adorers of the Greek conqueror, Alexander the Great, attributed horns to him. This was thought to be emblematic of a person's divine power and spiritual acumen. Coins bearing Alexander's visage were struck picturing the Greek military leader as a bull with horns and the lit torch in his head.

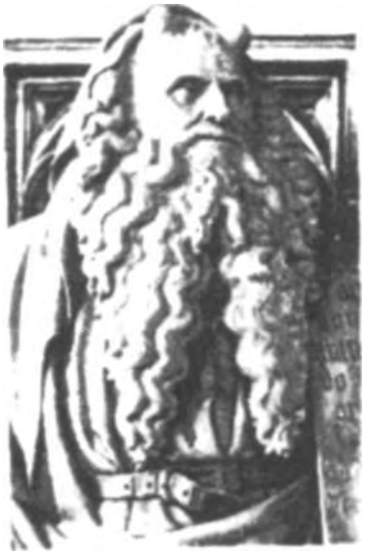

Strangely, many medieval artists, especially those clandestinely dabbling in the occult arts, often portrayed Moses as a bearded human figure with horns. *(The Herder Dictionary of Symbols,* Chiron Publications, Illinois)

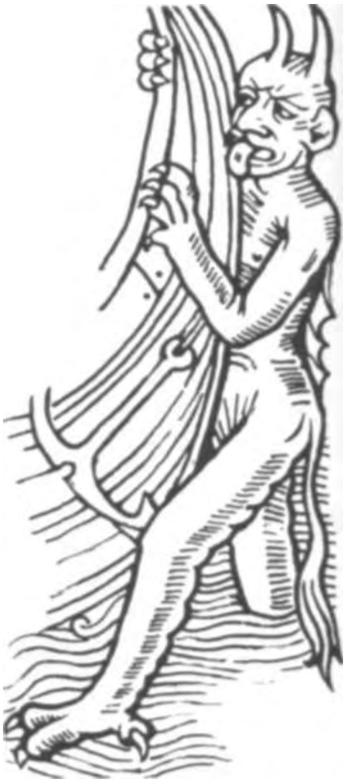

The devil has long been conceived in the popular imagination of the masses as a creature with horns, cloved feet and claws, and tail.

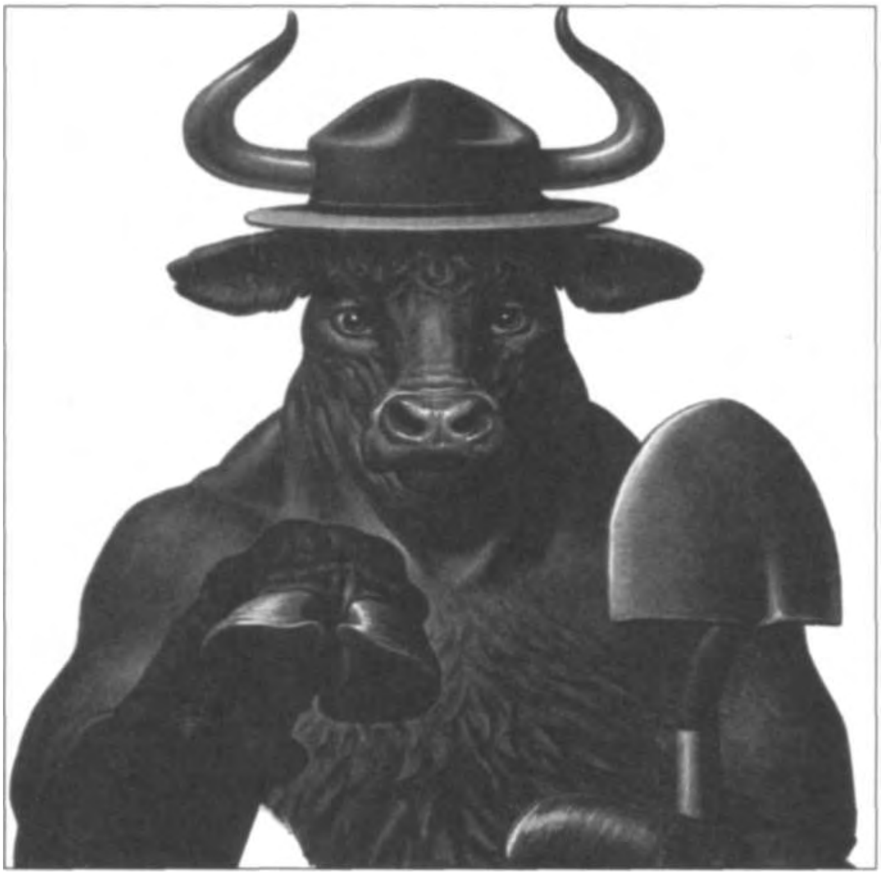

Smokey the bull?

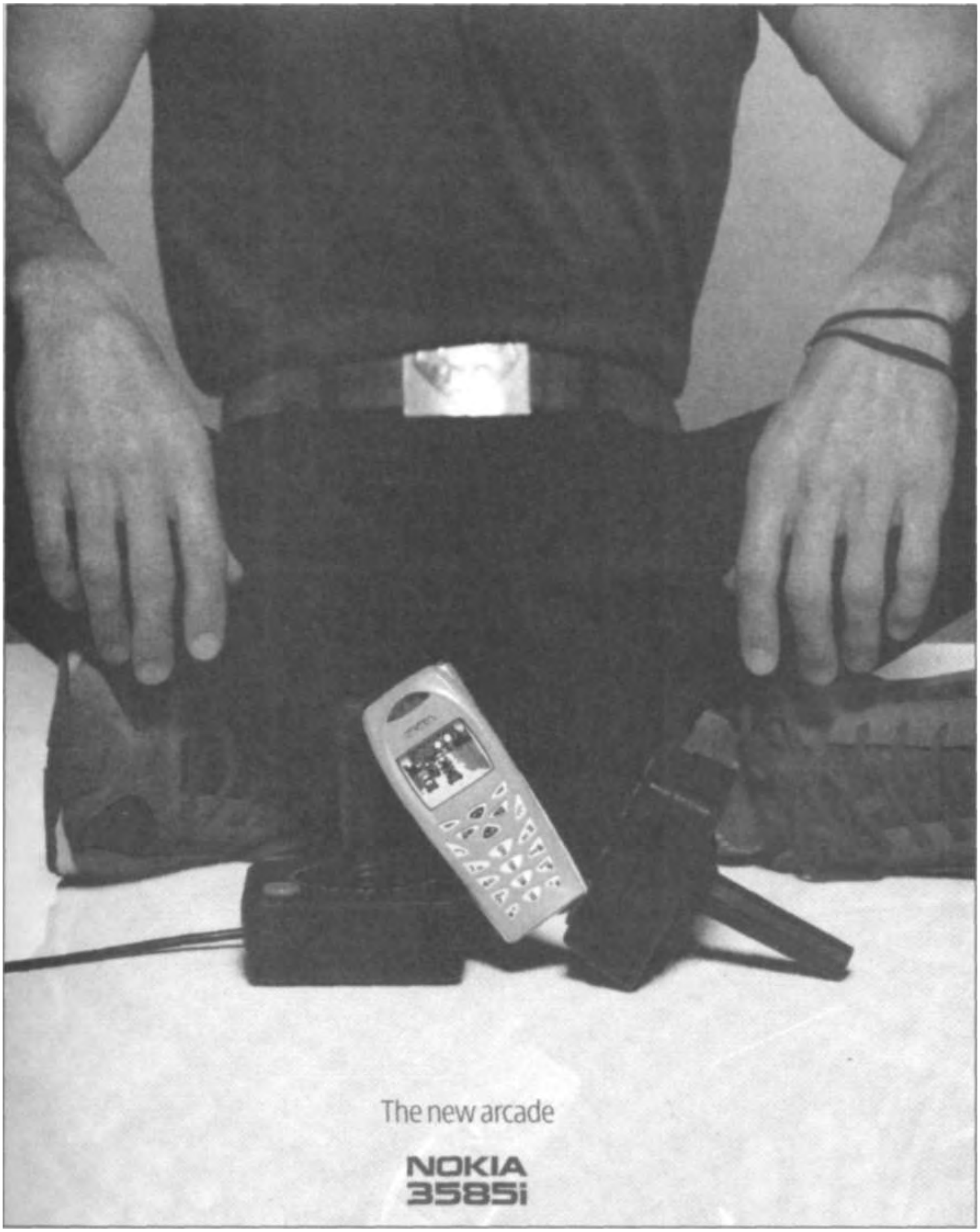

This ad for Nokia telephones appears harmless enough. But look closely at the subtle, horned image of the man's silver belt buckle. Also, he is wearing what appears to be the string cord on his left wrist characteristic of followers of the occult Cabala (or *Kabbalah*).

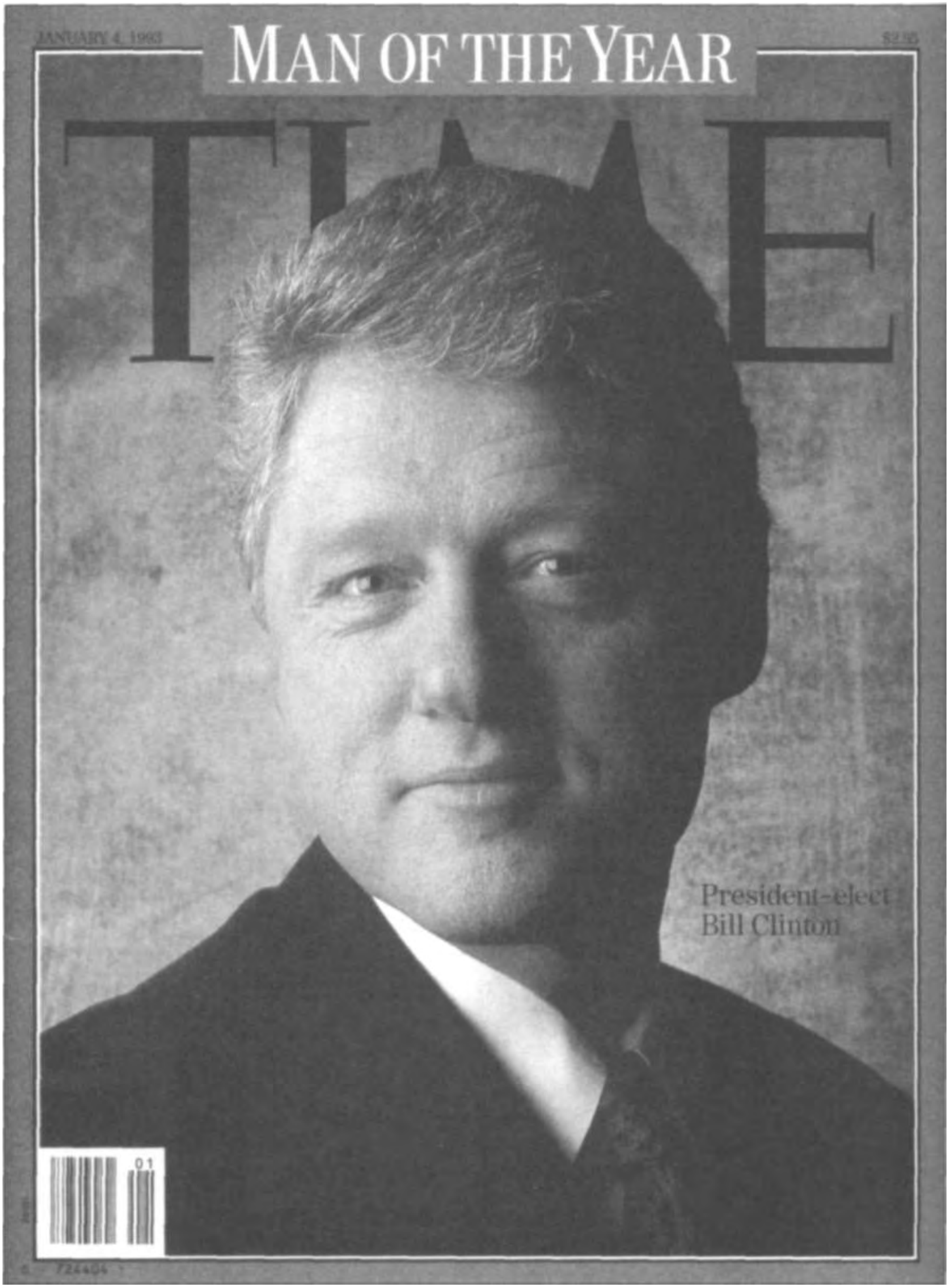
JANUARY 4, 1993
MAN OF THE YEAR
$2.95
TIME
President-elect
Bill Clinton

President Bill Clinton was named "Man of the Year" by *Time* magazine. The editors stretched the letter 'M' to make it appear as if Clinton had horns.

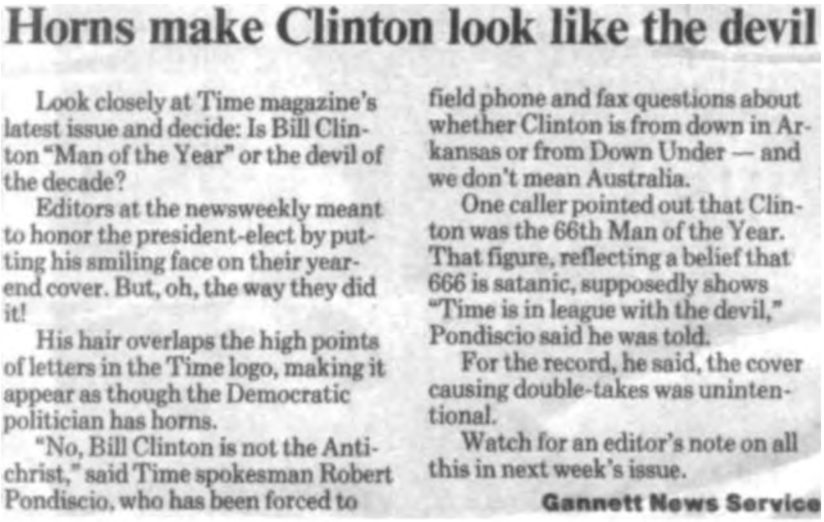

Horns make Clinton look like the devil

Look closely at Time magazine's latest issue and decide: Is Bill Clinton "Man of the Year" or the devil of the decade?

Editors at the newsweekly meant to honor the president-elect by putting his smiling face on their year-end cover. But, oh, the way they did it!

His hair overlaps the high points of letters in the Time logo, making it appear as though the Democratic politician has horns.

"No, Bill Clinton is not the Antichrist," said Time spokesman Robert Pondiscio, who has been forced to field phone and fax questions about whether Clinton is from down in Arkansas or from Down Under — and we don't mean Australia.

One caller pointed out that Clinton was the 66th Man of the Year. That figure, reflecting a belief that 666 is satanic, supposedly shows "Time is in league with the devil," Pondiscio said he was told.

For the record, he said, the cover causing double-takes was unintentional.

Watch for an editor's note on all this in next week's issue.

Gannett News Service

Gannet News Service, one of America's largest daily newspaper chains, ran this story about the *Time* cover that made President Clinton look like the devil. All unintentional, said Gannett. Sure it was!

"That which we must say to the *CROWD* is we worship a god, but it is the god that one adores without superstition. To *YOU* Sovereign Grand Inspectors General, we say this, that you may repeat it to the brethren of the 32nd, 31st and 30th degrees - the MASONIC RELIGION should be, by all of us initiates of the *high* degrees, maintained in the purity of the LUCIFERIAN doctrine. If Lucifer were not god, would Adonay (Jesus)... calumniate (spread false and harmful statements about) him?.. YES, LUCIFER IS GOD..."*

***A.C. De La Rive, *La Femme et l'Enfant dans la Franc-Maconnene Universelle (page* 588)**

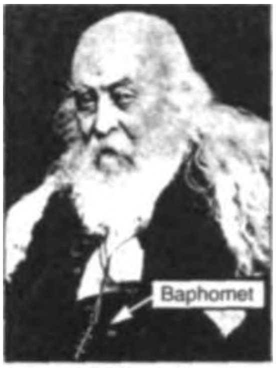

General Albert Pike, 33°

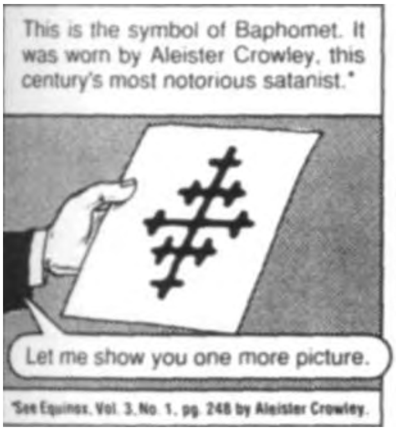
This is the symbol of Baphomet. It was worn by Aleister Crowley, this century's most notorious satanist.*
Let me show you one more picture.
*See Equinox, Vol. 3, No. 1, pg. 248 by Aleister Crowley

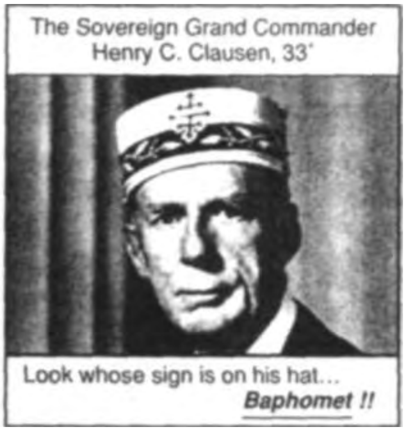
The Sovereign Grand Commander Henry C. Clausen, 33°
Look whose sign is on his hat...
Baphomet !!

The symbol of the androgynous beast-god, Baphomet, turns out *to* be remarkably similar to the symbol worn by the Sovereign Grand Commanders of the Scottish Rite, the world's largest Freemasonry group. This is shown on these two pages of a popular tract by Chick Publications. They show Albert Pike, 33rd degree, 19th century Sovereign Grand Commander following the American Civil War, quoted as adoring Lucifer. Also wearing the symbol, Henry C. Clausen, 33rd degree, Sovereign Grand Commander in the 1970s and 1980s. Clausen wore the symbol as does the current Sovereign Grand Commander, C. Fred Kleinknecht.

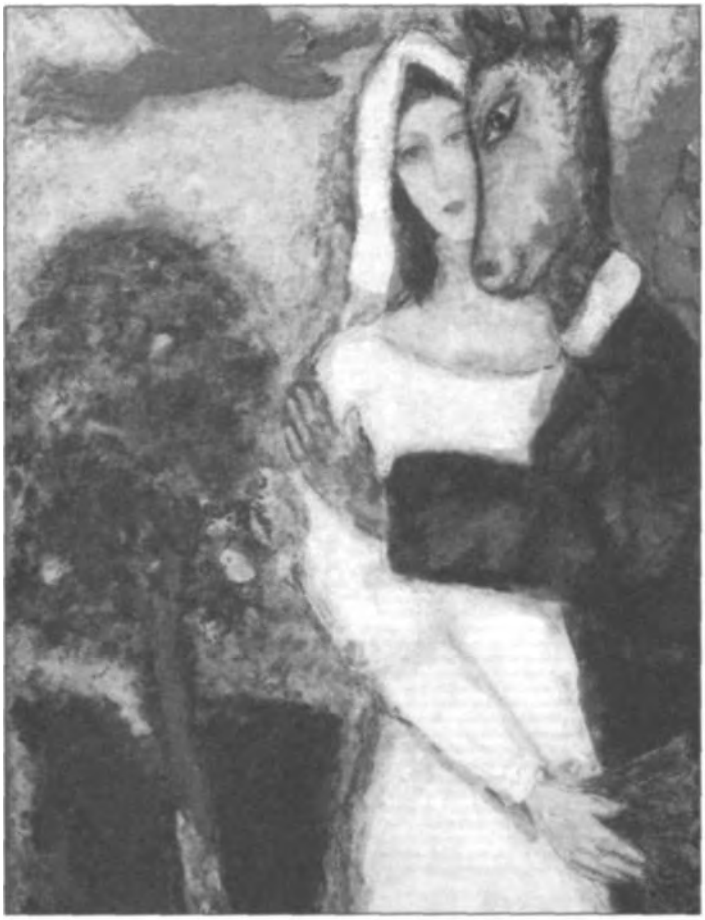

Highly acclaimed artist Marc Chagall, a Russian-born Jew, gave us this painting, entitled *Midsummer Nights Dream*, in 1939. Drawing on the theme of "Beauty and the Beast," the painting has a horned goat as a bridegroom, and a wedding couple being influenced by a red-colored angel.

Dutch architect Rem Koolhaas is in great demand. In recent years he's designed a Guggenheim Museum, public libraries, Prada stores, an addition for the Whitney Museum in New York, and published several bestselling books. Featured in *Newsweek* (January 28, 2002, p. 56), Koolhaas apparently is communicating an esoteric message. The parallel vertical lines are undeniably reminiscent of horns. The nude images on either side of the architect cry out lust and sex, while the face, arms and body posture are also meaningful.

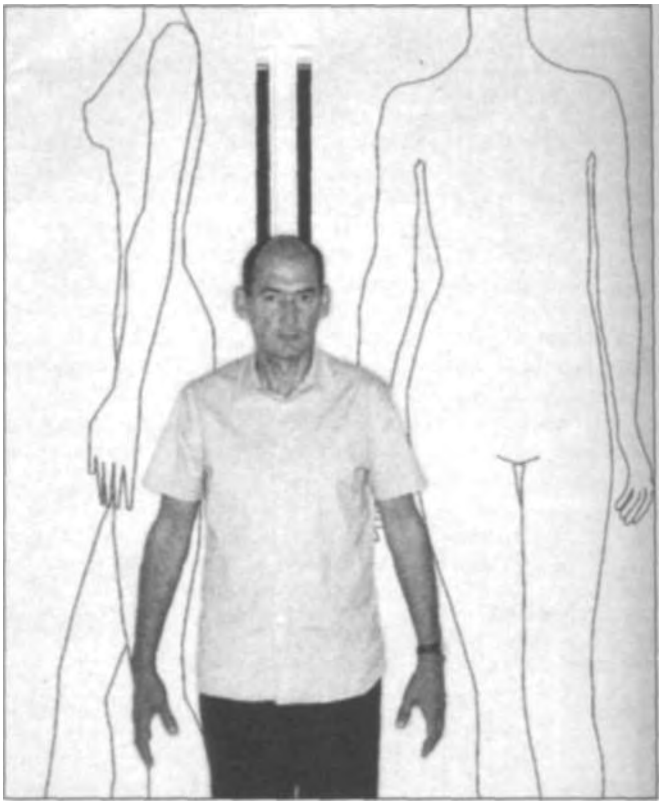

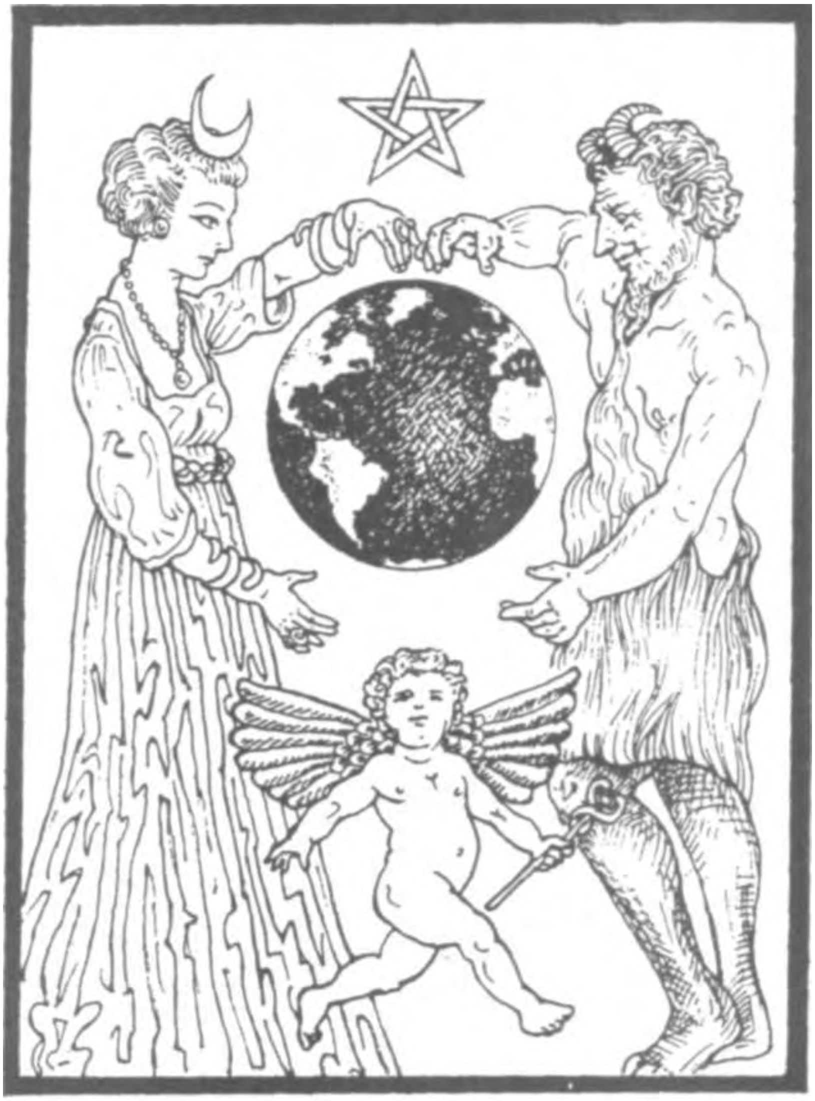

A well-known witchcraft newspaper carried this illustration (top) of the Goddess and her consort and master, the Horned God (Lucifer). The cupid-like angel is their Son. Below is an ad offering "magick" products for the "New Aeon" (New Age). The magnetic (e.g. magical) powers of Lucifer and his goddess mate are boastfully shown to uphold planet earth.

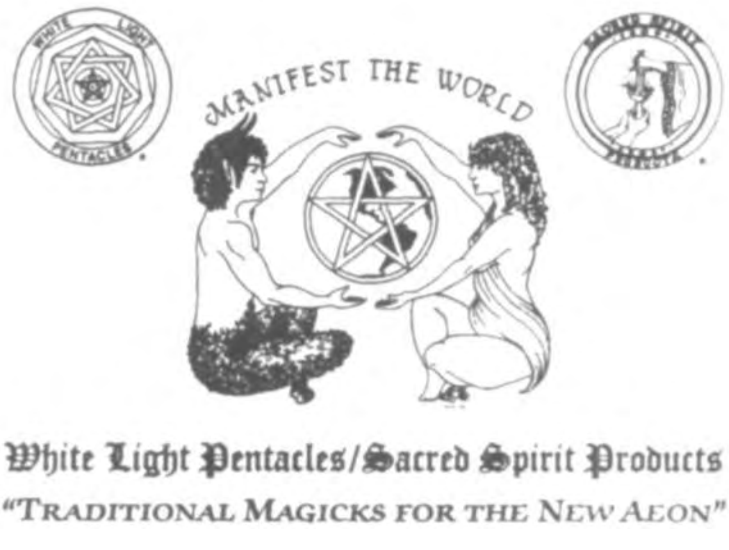
WHITE LIGHT PENTACLES
MANIFEST THE WORLD
SACRED SPIRIT PRODUCTS
White Light Pentacles/Sacred Spirit Products
"TRADITIONAL MAGICKS FOR THE NEW AEON"

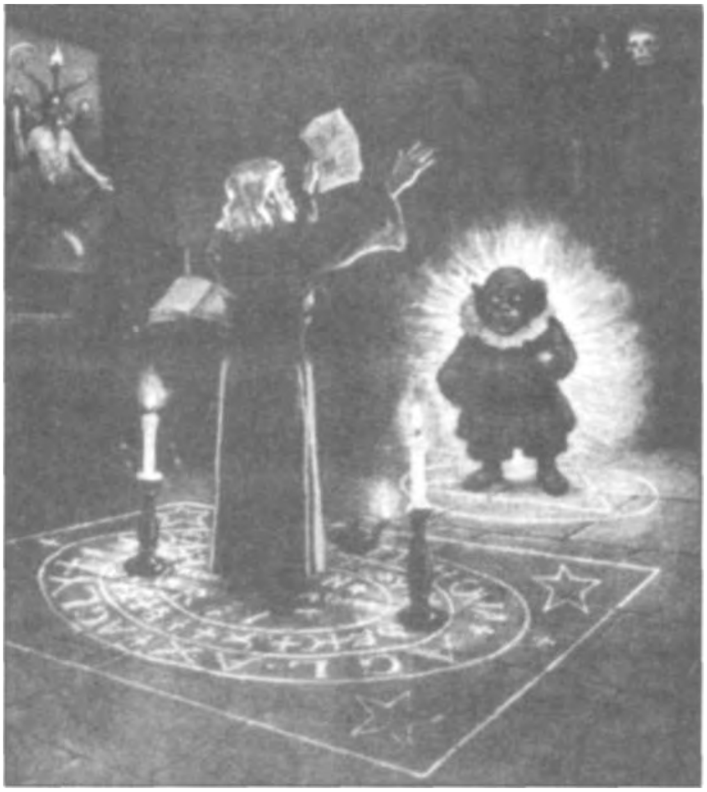

The demon, Mephistopheles, shown being conjured up by a magician in Masonic scholar and 33rd degree Illuminatus Manly P. Halls 1928 occult book classic, *Secret Teachings of All Ages,* bears a remarkable resemblance to Yoda, the wise ascended master of the Star Wars saga, *Return of the Jedi.* Look closely and you'll see a painting of Baphomet, the androgynous goat god, on the wall at left and also a skeleton's head at top right.

This is a member of the radical environmentalist group, Earth First. He's decked out as Pan, an ancient, mystical Greek deity who had a mistress said to be the "Earth Goddess."

SEVEN

"El Diablo" Shows His Horns—The Devil Rides Out!

> *People that are Christians now, but were Satanists, recognized President Clinton's signal at his inauguration as a sign of Satan. That seems fairly cut and dried, and it is. Clinton communicated what he wanted to the people to whom he wanted to communicate. The whole affair with him flashing the Satanic handsignal took only a couple of seconds.*
>
> Fritz Springmeier
> *Bloodlines of the Illuminati*

It is being flashed everywhere—on TV, in newspapers and magazines, at sporting events, and even at presidential inaugurations. I'm referring, of course, to the sign of *El Diablo,* the horned devil, also known as the sign of Il *Cornuto* and as *Diabolicus.* It began in the modern era with the followers of satanic cults, the members of the official Church of Satan, and heavy metal rock music bands and fans flourishing the sign of two separated fingers upward sign. The rock bands made it popular and trendy, and now it seems almost everyone is doing it.

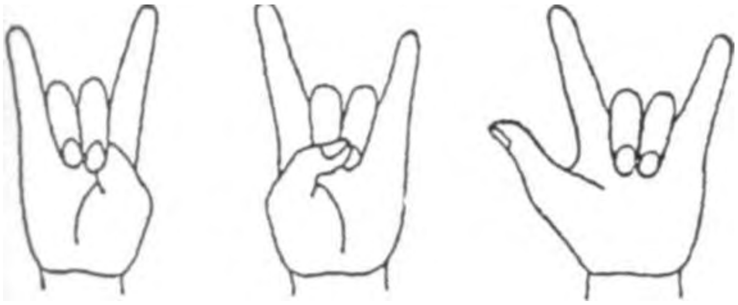

Three versions of the *"El Diablo,"* the sign of Satan, the horned god. The hand sign at right is also the deaf's gesture, or signing, for "I love you," a fact which has many people confused.

I *Love You, Devil?*

The sign often is confused with the deaf's signing of the phrase, "I love you." While at first this appears an odd resemblance, we register an "ahh, I get it!" emotion when we discover that the person who invented, or created, the hand sign system for the deaf, Helen Keller, was herself an occultist and Theosophist. Did Keller purposely design the deaf's "I love you" sign to be such a remarkable imitation of the classic sign of Satan? Was Keller saying, basically, "I love you, Devil?"

Then, we have the confusion of the El Diablo hand sign with the University of Texas "hook 'em horns" sign. Texas' mascot is the longhorn cow and it is only natural that the horns sign be employed by the student body, alumnai, and fans of that great institution.

When Jenna Bush, the daughter of President George W. Bush, gave the horns sign at the 2004 presidential inauguration, it shocked the world. Most viewers of international TV did not know that Jenna is a recent graduate of the University of Texas. However, at that same inaugural gala, the President also was photographed giving the sign, and so was the other Bush daughter. Not only that, but the First Lady, Laura, and even the President's mother, Barbara Bush, got into the mix. They, too, were seen giving the sign. Hmmm.

Partying, Drinking, Rebellion, Or...?

With the rapid rise in popularity of the El Diablo sign among rock fans, many people seem to be blissfully unaware of the satanic background and dark history of this sign. To some, giving the sign more likely indicates their eagerness and gusto for fun, partying, drinking, and youthful rebellion.

Thus it is that I leave it to you, the reader, to decide which of the persons shown here, in this chapter, in rendering the El Diablo sign, are paying homage to Satan and which are employing it for some other purpose. I have my own opinion, what's yours? For example, in the picture shown here you'll discover former President Bill Clinton, from Arkansas, and Italian Prime Minister Silvio Berlusconi giving the sign. Are they telling us they are Texas Longhorns fans or that they love Satan?

A final word: Even if you and I are willing to overlook the giving of this sign by many as not intentionally satanic, we cannot dismiss the evidence that many, if not most, who employ the sign are, in fact, thereby honoring Satan, the rebellious dark angel. The case here, later in this chapter, of the vampire satanists who stabbed a victim 66 times and drank his blood undeniably stamps the El Diablo hand sign given by the murderers as intensely satanic in nature.

Neither can the picture here of the Hindu sect member, the witch, and of Anton LaVey, High Priest of Satan, giving the sign also be disputed or explained away.

As for the photos of the top-ranked Christian evangelists shown in the pages that follow, what do you have to say, dear reader? Are these men servants of the One, True God as revealed in the Holy Bible, or do they cryptically serve His Adversary, Lucifer? Judging from their hand gestures, what do you say?

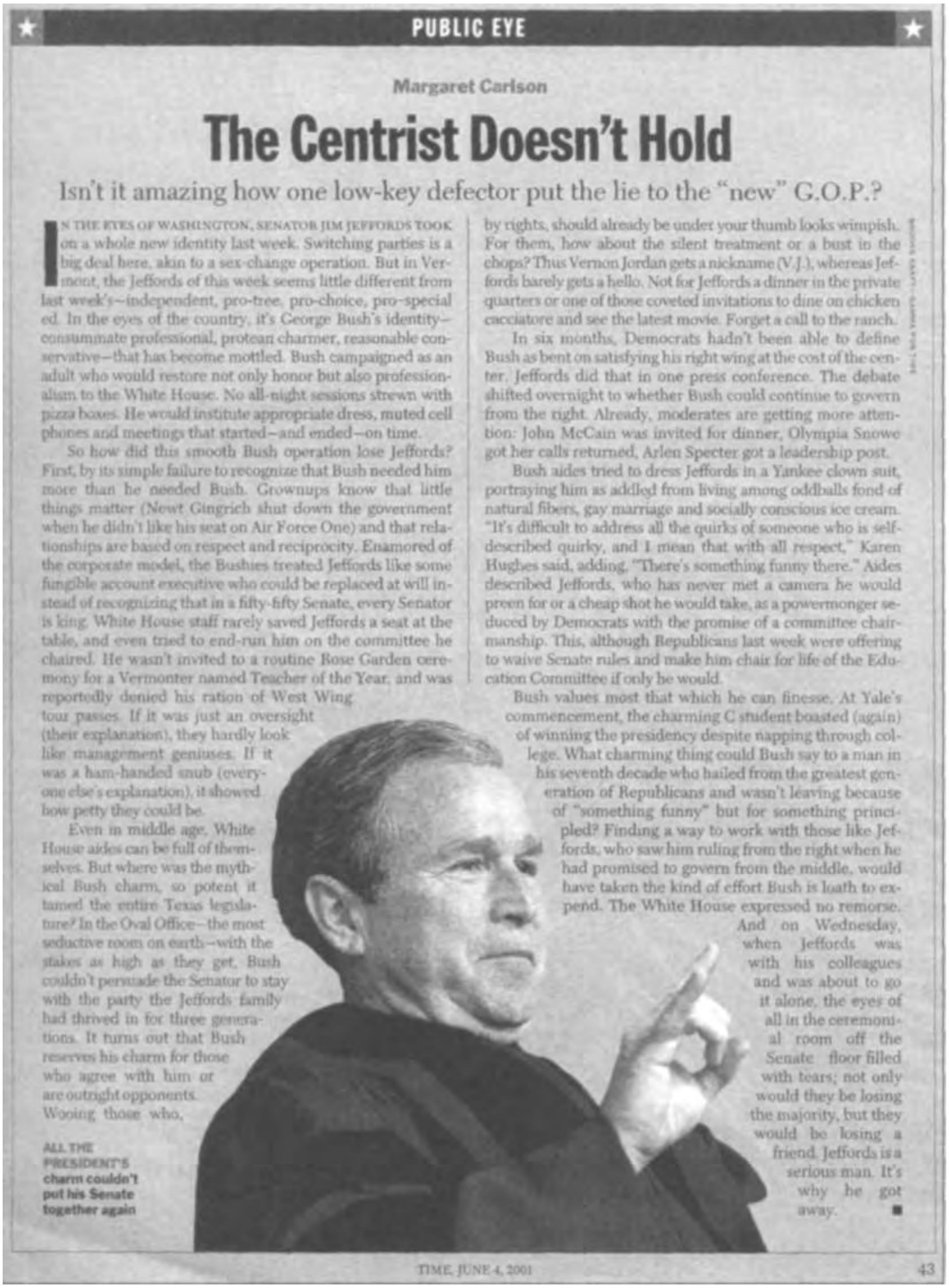

PUBLIC EYE

Margaret Carlson

The Centrist Doesn't Hold

Isn't it amazing how one low-key defector put the lie to the "new" G.O.P.?

IN THE EYES OF WASHINGTON, SENATOR JIM JEFFORDS TOOK on a whole new identity last week. Switching parties is a big deal here, akin to a sex-change operation. But in Vermont, the Jeffords of this week seems little different from last week's—independent, pro-tree, pro-choice, pro-special ed. In the eyes of the country, it's George Bush's identity—consummate professional, protean charmer, reasonable conservative—that has become mottled. Bush campaigned as an adult who would restore not only honor but also professionalism to the White House. No all-night sessions strewn with pizza boxes. He would institute appropriate dress, muted cell phones and meetings that started—and ended—on time.

So how did this smooth Bush operation lose Jeffords? First, by its simple failure to recognize that Bush needed him more than he needed Bush. Grownups know that little things matter (Newt Gingrich shut down the government when he didn't like his seat on Air Force One) and that relationships are based on respect and reciprocity. Enamored of the corporate model, the Bushies treated Jeffords like some fungible account executive who could be replaced at will instead of recognizing that in a fifty-fifty Senate, every Senator is king. White House staff rarely saved Jeffords a seat at the table, and even tried to end-run him on the committee he chaired. He wasn't invited to a routine Rose Garden ceremony for a Vermonter named Teacher of the Year, and was reportedly denied his ration of West Wing tour passes. If it was just an oversight (their explanation), they hardly look like management geniuses. If it was a ham-handed snub (everyone else's explanation), it showed how petty they could be.

Even in middle age, White House aides can be full of themselves. But where was the mythical Bush charm, so potent it tamed the entire Texas legislature? In the Oval Office—the most seductive room on earth—with the stakes as high as they get, Bush couldn't persuade the Senator to stay with the party the Jeffords family had thrived in for three generations. It turns out that Bush reserves his charm for those who agree with him or are outright opponents. Wooing those who, by rights, should already be under your thumb looks wimpish. For them, how about the silent treatment or a bust in the chops? Thus Vernon Jordan gets a nickname (V.J.), whereas Jeffords barely gets a hello. Not for Jeffords a dinner in the private quarters or one of those coveted invitations to dine on chicken cacciatore and see the latest movie. Forget a call to the ranch.

In six months, Democrats hadn't been able to define Bush as bent on satisfying his right wing at the cost of the center. Jeffords did that in one press conference. The debate shifted overnight to whether Bush could continue to govern from the right. Already, moderates are getting more attention: John McCain was invited for dinner, Olympia Snowe got her calls returned, Arlen Specter got a leadership post.

Bush aides tried to dress Jeffords in a Yankee clown suit, portraying him as addled from living among oddballs fond of natural fibers, gay marriage and socially conscious ice cream. "It's difficult to address all the quirks of someone who is self-described quirky, and I mean that with all respect," Karen Hughes said, adding, "There's something funny there." Aides described Jeffords, who has never met a camera he would preen for or a cheap shot he would take, as a powermonger seduced by Democrats with the promise of a committee chairmanship. This, although Republicans last week were offering to waive Senate rules and make him chair for life of the Education Committee if only he would.

Bush values most that which he can finesse. At Yale's commencement, the charming C student boasted (again) of winning the presidency despite napping through college. What charming thing could Bush say to a man in his seventh decade who hailed from the greatest generation of Republicans and wasn't leaving because of "something funny" but for something principled? Finding a way to work with those like Jeffords, who saw him ruling from the right when he had promised to govern from the middle, would have taken the kind of effort Bush is loath to expend. The White House expressed no remorse. And on Wednesday, when Jeffords was with his colleagues and was about to go it alone, the eyes of all in the ceremonial room off the Senate floor filled with tears; not only would they be losing the majority, but they would be losing a friend. Jeffords is a serious man. It's why he got away. ■

ALL THE PRESIDENT'S charm couldn't put his Senate together again

TIME, JUNE 4, 2001 43

This photograph of President George W. Bush in *Time* magazine (June 4, 2001) is curious. It shows Bush presenting the horned devil sign. Also, the simultaneous joint use of the circle is evident. Nowhere in the article does the author explain *why* Bush is making this sign or even explain why he is dressed in what appears to be college robes. Just as curious, the article, including the caption, mentions the word *charm, charmed,* or *charming* a grand total of exactly *six times.* A charm, of course, is a magical talisman. The text also includes the eyebrow-raising phrases: *"There's something funny there"* and *"something funny..."* Yes, indeed, there is something funny and strange at work here.

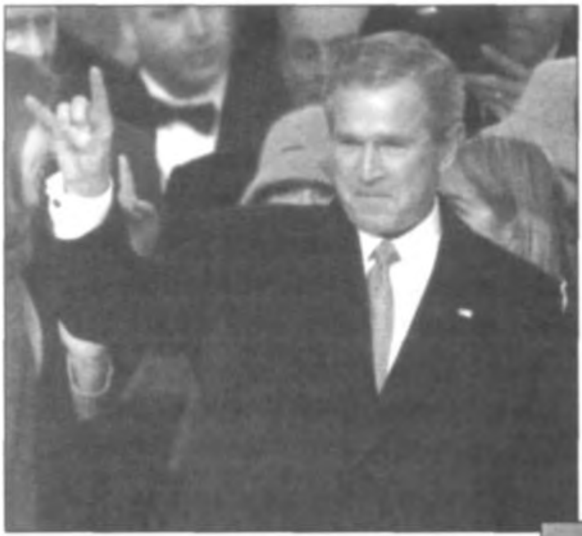

President George W. Bush is very adept at giving the sign.

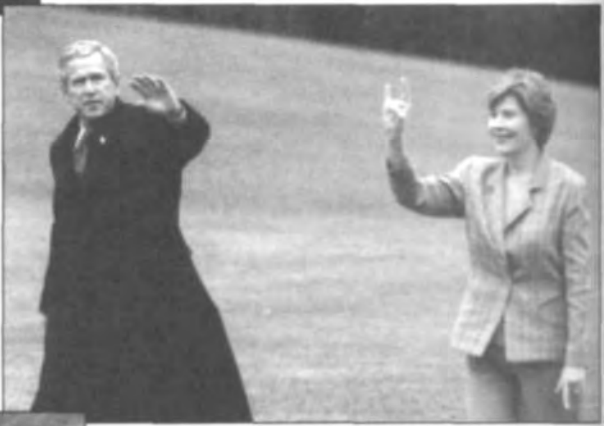

Laura Bush, First Lady, sends out a diabolical message. Laura, a liberal, is pro-abortion. She has encouraged Americans to send money to Afghanistan for the restoration of a giant stone statue of Buddha partially destroyed by Islamic militants.

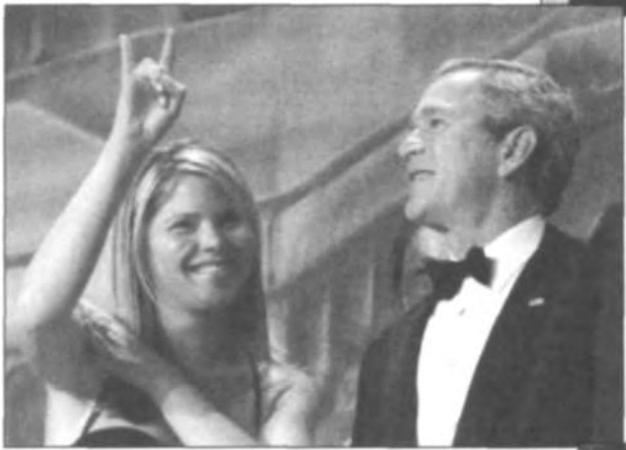

Jenna Bush gives the sign on-stage, in front of tens of millions of TV spectators, at her Dad's inaugural in 2005. With her left hand, Jenna also gives the female delta (vulva) sign.

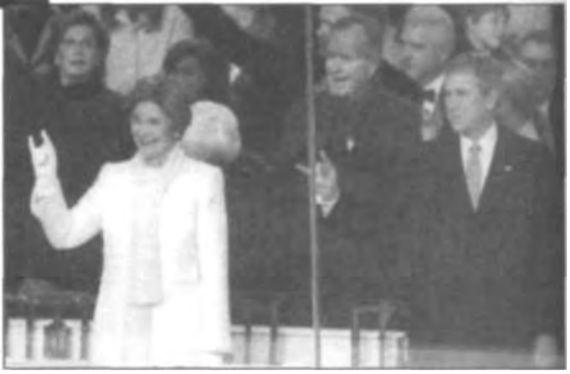

Laura joins in the fun with George W.

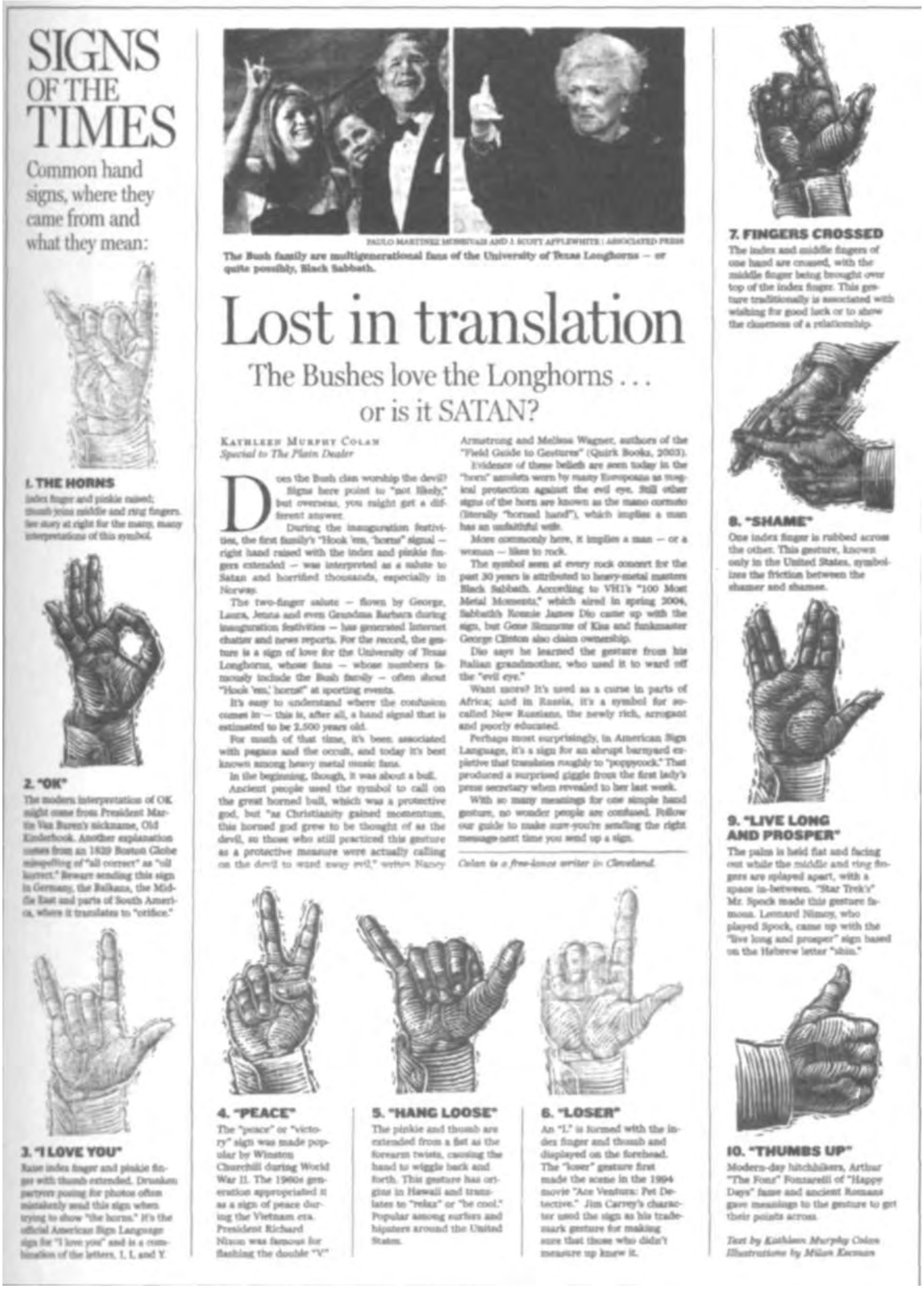

SIGNS OF THE TIMES

Common hand signs, where they came from and what they mean:

1. THE HORNS
Index finger and pinkie raised; thumb joins middle and ring fingers. See story at right for the many, many interpretations of this symbol.

2. "OK"
The modern interpretation of OK might come from President Martin Van Buren's nickname, Old Kinderhook. Another explanation comes from an 1839 Boston Globe misspelling of "all correct" as "oll korrect." Beware sending this sign in Germany, the Balkans, the Middle East and parts of South America, where it translates to "orifice."

3. "I LOVE YOU"
Raise index finger and pinkie finger with thumb extended. Drunken partyers posing for photos often mistakenly send this sign when trying to show "the horns." It's the official American Sign Language sign for "I love you" and is a combination of the letters, I, L and Y.

PAULO MARTINEZ MONSIVAIS AND J. SCOTT APPLEWHITE | ASSOCIATED PRESS

The Bush family are multigenerational fans of the University of Texas Longhorns — or quite possibly, Black Sabbath.

Lost in translation

The Bushes love the Longhorns . . . or is it SATAN?

KATHLEEN MURPHY COLAN
Special to The Plain Dealer

Does the Bush clan worship the devil? Signs here point to "not likely," but overseas, you might get a different answer.

During the inauguration festivities, the first family's "Hook 'em, 'horns'" signal — right hand raised with the index and pinkie fingers extended — was interpreted as a salute to Satan and horrified thousands, especially in Norway.

The two-finger salute — flown by George, Laura, Jenna and even Grandma Barbara during inauguration festivities — has generated Internet chatter and news reports. For the record, the gesture is a sign of love for the University of Texas Longhorns, whose fans — whose numbers famously include the Bush family — often shout "Hook 'em,' horns!" at sporting events.

It's easy to understand where the confusion comes in — this is, after all, a hand signal that is estimated to be 2,500 years old.

For much of that time, it's been associated with pagans and the occult, and today it's best known among heavy metal music fans.

In the beginning, though, it was about a bull.

Ancient people used the symbol to call on the great horned bull, which was a protective god, but "as Christianity gained momentum, this horned god grew to be thought of as the devil, so those who still practiced this gesture as a protective measure were actually calling on the devil to ward away evil," writes Nancy Armstrong and Melissa Wagner, authors of the "Field Guide to Gestures" (Quirk Books, 2003).

Evidence of these beliefs are seen today in the "horn" amulets worn by many Europeans as magical protection against the evil eye. Still other signs of the horn are known as the mano cornuto (literally "horned hand"), which implies a man has an unfaithful wife.

More commonly here, it implies a man — or a woman — likes to rock.

The symbol seen at every rock concert for the past 30 years is attributed to heavy-metal masters Black Sabbath. According to VH1's "100 Most Metal Moments," which aired in spring 2004, Sabbath's Ronnie James Dio came up with the sign, but Gene Simmons of Kiss and funkmaster George Clinton also claim ownership.

Dio says he learned the gesture from his Italian grandmother, who used it to ward off the "evil eye."

Want more? It's used as a curse in parts of Africa; and in Russia, it's a symbol for so-called New Russians, the newly rich, arrogant and poorly educated.

Perhaps most surprisingly, in American Sign Language, it's a sign for an abrupt barnyard expletive that translates roughly to "poppycock." That produced a surprised giggle from the first lady's press secretary when revealed to her last week.

With so many meanings for one simple hand gesture, no wonder people are confused. Follow our guide to make sure you're sending the right message next time you send up a sign.

Colan is a free-lance writer in Cleveland.

4. "PEACE"
The "peace" or "victory" sign was made popular by Winston Churchill during World War II. The 1960s generation appropriated it as a sign of peace during the Vietnam era. President Richard Nixon was famous for flashing the double "V."

5. "HANG LOOSE"
The pinkie and thumb are extended from a fist as the forearm twists, causing the hand to wiggle back and forth. This gesture has origins in Hawaii and translates to "relax" or "be cool." Popular among surfers and hipsters around the United States.

6. "LOSER"
An "L" is formed with the index finger and thumb and displayed on the forehead. The "loser" gesture first made the scene in the 1994 movie "Ace Ventura: Pet Detective." Jim Carrey's character used the sign as his trademark gesture for making sure that those who didn't measure up knew it.

7. FINGERS CROSSED
The index and middle fingers of one hand are crossed, with the middle finger being brought over top of the index finger. This gesture traditionally is associated with wishing for good luck or to show the closeness of a relationship.

8. "SHAME"
One index finger is rubbed across the other. This gesture, known only in the United States, symbolizes the friction between the shamer and shamee.

9. "LIVE LONG AND PROSPER"
The palm is held flat and facing out while the middle and ring fingers are splayed apart, with a space in-between. "Star Trek's" Mr. Spock made this gesture famous. Leonard Nimoy, who played Spock, came up with the "live long and prosper" sign based on the Hebrew letter "shin."

10. "THUMBS UP"
Modern-day hitchhikers, Arthur "The Fonz" Fonzarelli of "Happy Days" fame and ancient Romans gave meanings to the gesture to get their points across.

Text by Kathleen Murphy Colan
Illustrations by Milan Kecman

This article in the *Cleveland Plain Dealer* newspaper followed the international controversy of Bush and family giving what appeared to be the devil's hand sign.

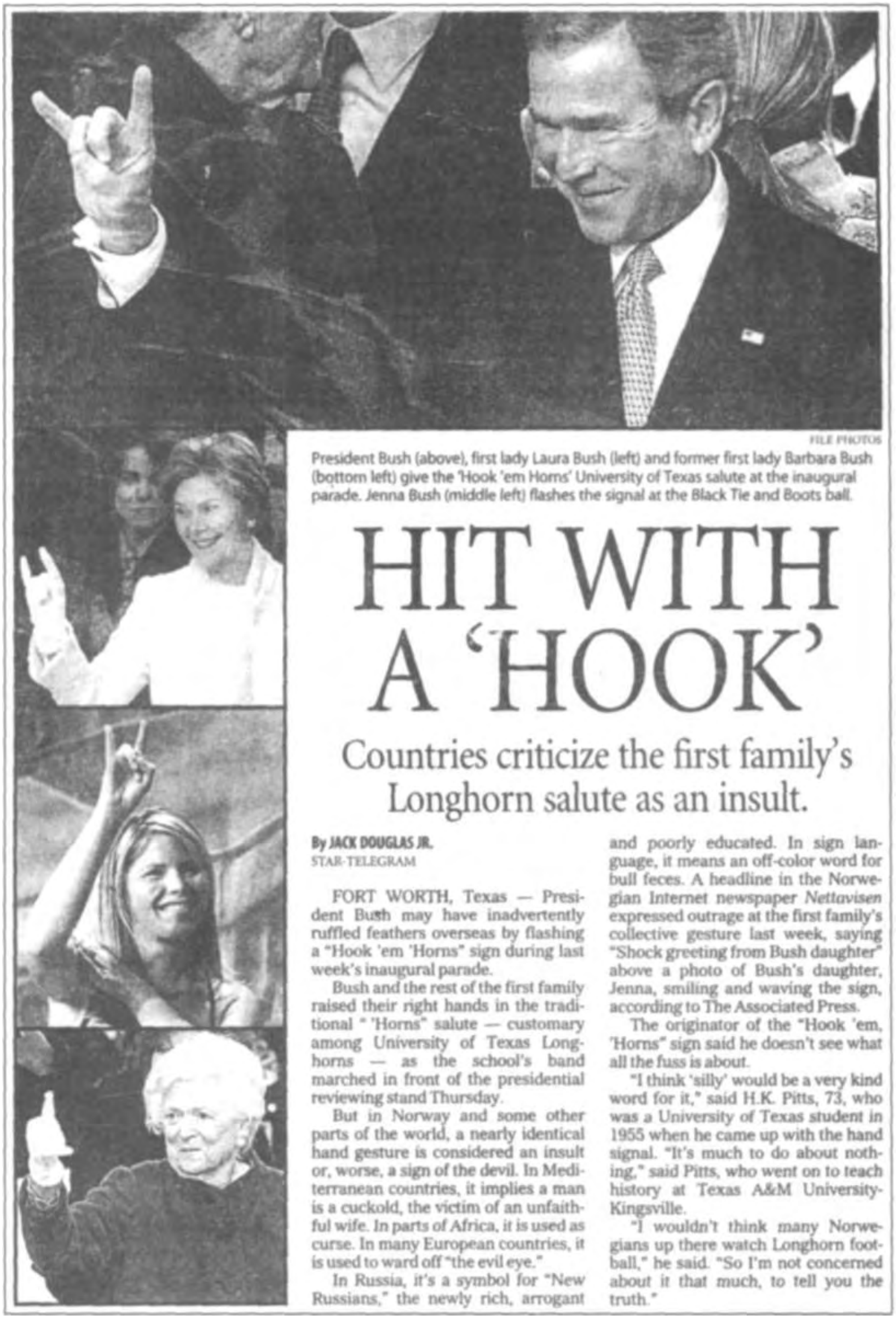

FILE PHOTOS

President Bush (above), first lady Laura Bush (left) and former first lady Barbara Bush (bottom left) give the 'Hook 'em Horns' University of Texas salute at the inaugural parade. Jenna Bush (middle left) flashes the signal at the Black Tie and Boots ball.

HIT WITH A 'HOOK'

Countries criticize the first family's Longhorn salute as an insult.

By JACK DOUGLAS JR.
STAR-TELEGRAM

FORT WORTH, Texas — President Bush may have inadvertently ruffled feathers overseas by flashing a "Hook 'em 'Horns" sign during last week's inaugural parade.

Bush and the rest of the first family raised their right hands in the traditional " 'Horns" salute — customary among University of Texas Longhorns — as the school's band marched in front of the presidential reviewing stand Thursday.

But in Norway and some other parts of the world, a nearly identical hand gesture is considered an insult or, worse, a sign of the devil. In Mediterranean countries, it implies a man is a cuckold, the victim of an unfaithful wife. In parts of Africa, it is used as curse. In many European countries, it is used to ward off "the evil eye."

In Russia, it's a symbol for "New Russians," the newly rich, arrogant and poorly educated. In sign language, it means an off-color word for bull feces. A headline in the Norwegian Internet newspaper *Nettavisen* expressed outrage at the first family's collective gesture last week, saying "Shock greeting from Bush daughter" above a photo of Bush's daughter, Jenna, smiling and waving the sign, according to The Associated Press.

The originator of the "Hook 'em, 'Horns" sign said he doesn't see what all the fuss is about.

"I think 'silly' would be a very kind word for it," said H.K. Pitts, 73, who was a University of Texas student in 1955 when he came up with the hand signal. "It's much to do about nothing," said Pitts, who went on to teach history at Texas A&M University-Kingsville.

"I wouldn't think many Norwegians up there watch Longhorn football," he said. "So I'm not concerned about it that much, to tell you the truth."

Yet another article, this one in Fort Worth's *Star-Telegram* newspaper. The editors insisted that the Bushes were only displaying the "Hook 'em Horns" sign common to University of Texas Longhorns fans. The article points out that in Africa and Europe, the sign is clearly the devil's own. Doesn't it seem odd to you that even Mother Barbara Bush is giving the sign? And, after all, neither George nor Laura were ever students at the University of Texas! George was a bonesman at New England's preppie school, Yale.

President Ronald Reagan's daily schedule in the White House was meticulously arranged by an astrologer employed by First Lady Nancy Reagan.

President Bill Clinton was often seen flashing the horned devil

Former Vice President Dan Quayle.

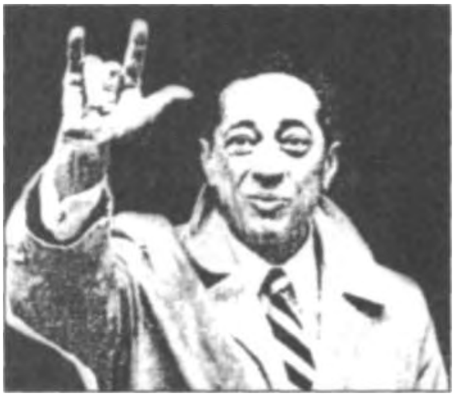

New York Governor Mario Cuomo. Knights of Malta magnate J. Peter Grace once referred to him as "Cuomo the homo."

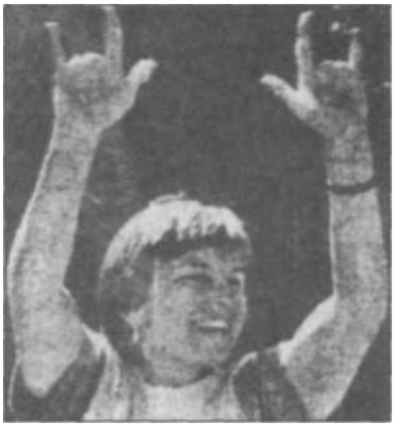

Roberta Achtenberg, Jewish lesbian activist who was a HUD official in the Clinton Administration, shows her philosophical leanings at a Gay Pride Parade in San Francisco.

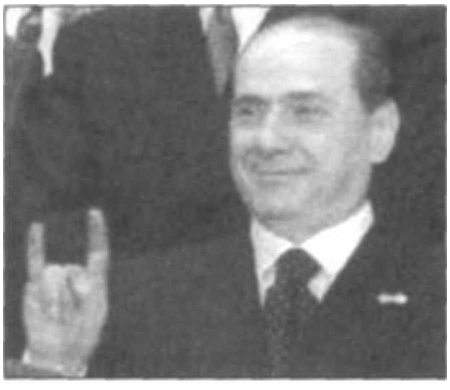

Italian Prime Minister Silvio Berlusconi.

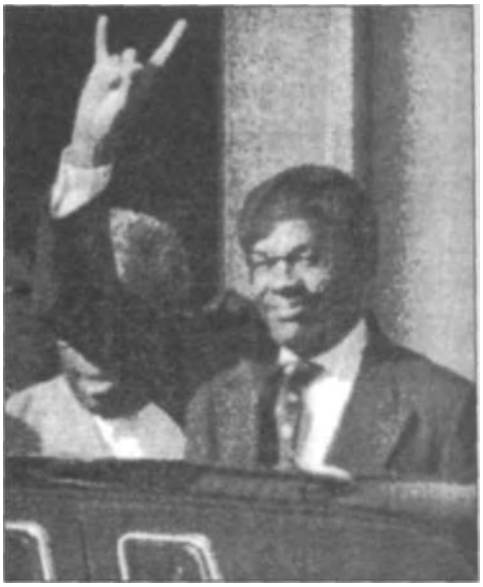

Marion Berry, Mayor of the nation's capital, Washington, D.C. Later arrested for cocaine possession, Mayor Berry once remarked, *"Outside of the killings, Washington has one of the lowest crime rates in the country."*

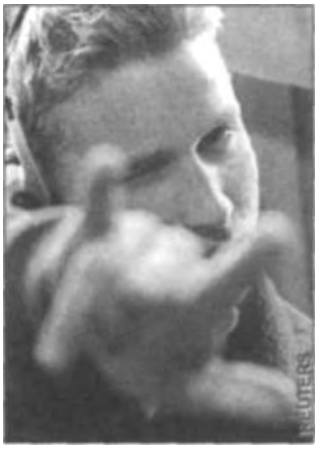

Prince William of Britain's royal family.

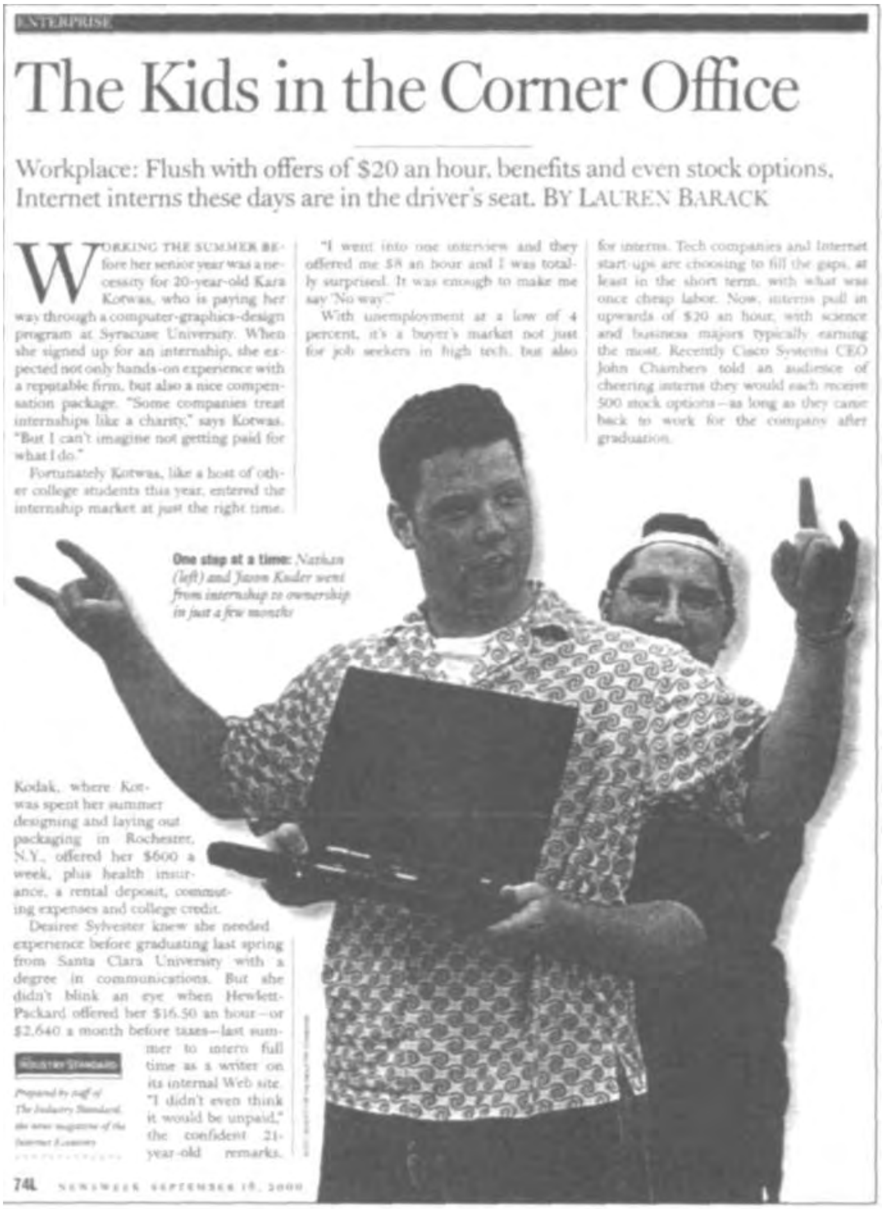

ENTERPRISE

The Kids in the Corner Office

Workplace: Flush with offers of $20 an hour, benefits and even stock options, Internet interns these days are in the driver's seat. BY LAUREN BARACK

WORKING THE SUMMER BEFORE her senior year was a necessity for 20-year-old Kara Kotwas, who is paying her way through a computer-graphics-design program at Syracuse University. When she signed up for an internship, she expected not only hands-on experience with a reputable firm, but also a nice compensation package. "Some companies treat internships like a charity," says Kotwas. "But I can't imagine not getting paid for what I do."

Fortunately Kotwas, like a host of other college students this year, entered the internship market at just the right time. "I went into one interview and they offered me $8 an hour and I was totally surprised. It was enough to make me say 'No way.'"

With unemployment at a low of 4 percent, it's a buyer's market not just for job seekers in high tech, but also for interns. Tech companies and Internet start-ups are choosing to fill the gaps, at least in the short term, with what was once cheap labor. Now, interns pull in upwards of $20 an hour, with science and business majors typically earning the most. Recently Cisco Systems CEO John Chambers told an audience of cheering interns they would each receive 500 stock options—as long as they came back to work for the company after graduation.

One step at a time: *Nathan (left) and Jason Kuder went from internship to ownership in just a few months*

Kodak, where Kotwas spent her summer designing and laying out packaging in Rochester, N.Y., offered her $600 a week, plus health insurance, a rental deposit, commuting expenses and college credit.

Desiree Sylvester knew she needed experience before graduating last spring from Santa Clara University with a degree in communications. But she didn't blink an eye when Hewlett-Packard offered her $16.50 an hour—or $2,640 a month before taxes—last summer to intern full time as a writer on its internal Web site. "I didn't even think it would be unpaid," the confident 21-year-old remarks.

INDUSTRY STANDARD

Prepared by staff of The Industry Standard, the news magazine of the Internet Economy

74L NEWSWEEK SEPTEMBER 18, 2000

Article in *Newsweek* (September 18, *2000*). Do you think these two young men were knowledgeable of what the hand sign means?

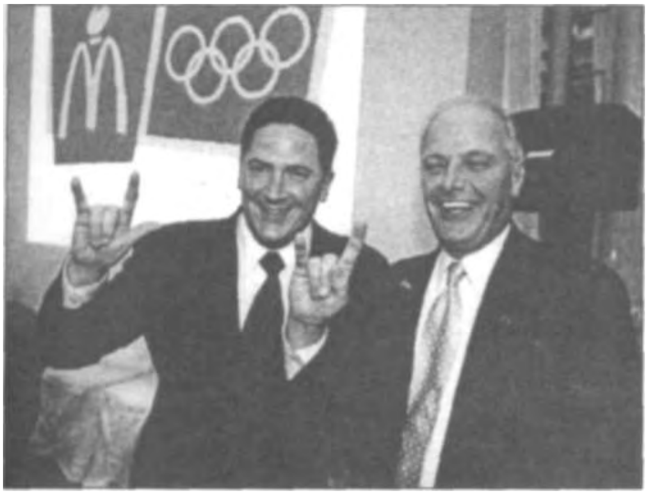

The top two executives of the McDonald's fast food chain jointly display interesting hand signs in this photograph in Newsweek dated February 2004. At left CEO Charlie Bell with his predecessor, Jim Cantalupo. Note that Bell (left) extends the thumb, Cantalupo does not, once again demonstrating the confusion—or is it simply the blurring of distinctions—between the two types *of* signs. Are both men giving a diabolical sign—or is neither?

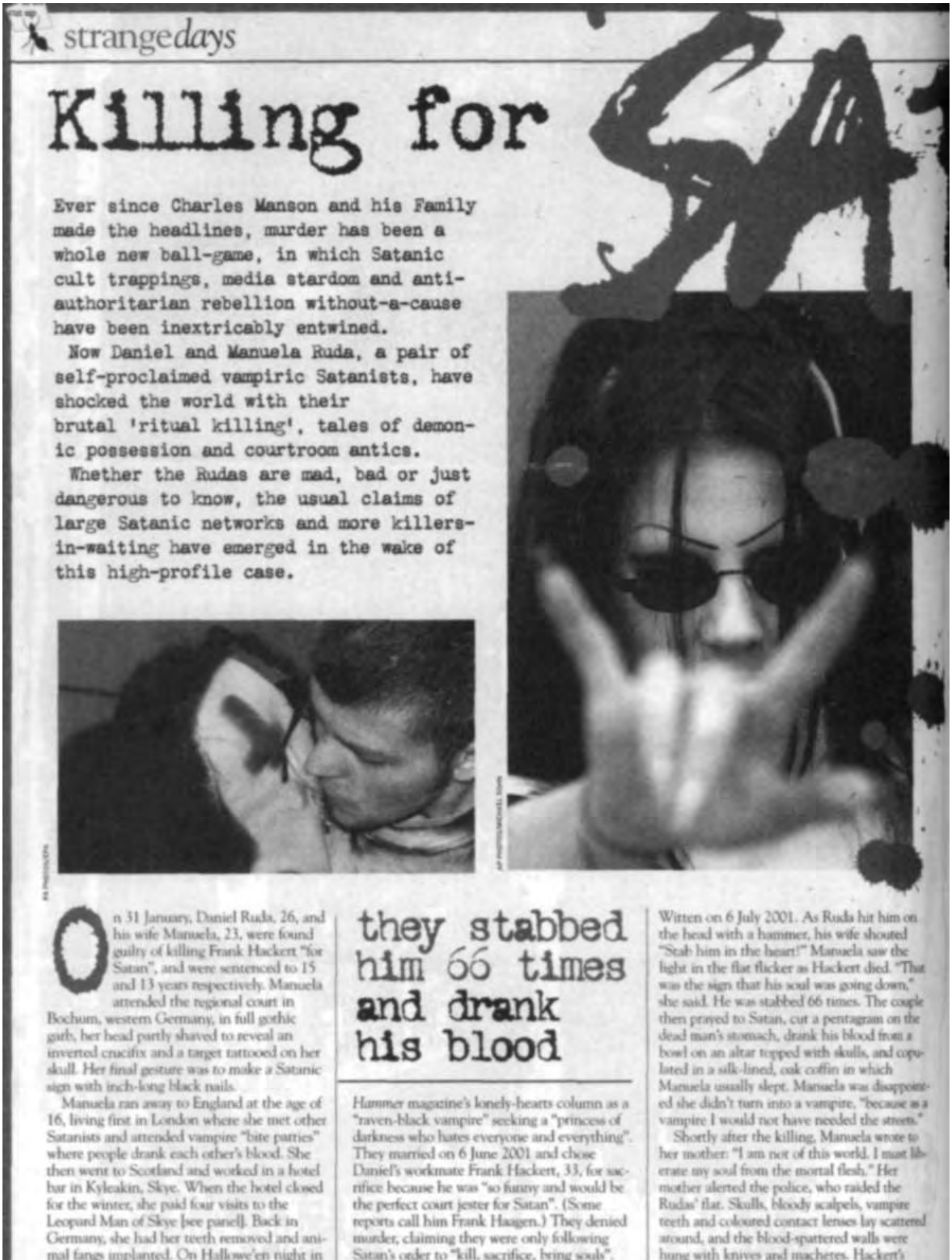

strange*days*

Killing for SA

Ever since Charles Manson and his Family made the headlines, murder has been a whole new ball-game, in which Satanic cult trappings, media stardom and anti-authoritarian rebellion without-a-cause have been inextricably entwined.

Now Daniel and Manuela Ruda, a pair of self-proclaimed vampiric Satanists, have shocked the world with their brutal 'ritual killing', tales of demonic possession and courtroom antics.

Whether the Rudas are mad, bad or just dangerous to know, the usual claims of large Satanic networks and more killers-in-waiting have emerged in the wake of this high-profile case.

On 31 January, Daniel Ruda, 26, and his wife Manuela, 23, were found guilty of killing Frank Hackert "for Satan", and were sentenced to 15 and 13 years respectively. Manuela attended the regional court in Bochum, western Germany, in full gothic garb, her head partly shaved to reveal an inverted crucifix and a target tattooed on her skull. Her final gesture was to make a Satanic sign with inch-long black nails.

Manuela ran away to England at the age of 16, living first in London where she met other Satanists and attended vampire "bite parties" where people drank each other's blood. She then went to Scotland and worked in a hotel bar in Kyleakin, Skye. When the hotel closed for the winter, she paid four visits to the Leopard Man of Skye [see panel]. Back in Germany, she had her teeth removed and animal fangs implanted. On Hallowe'en night in 1999 she dedicated her soul to Satan and promised to serve him after her death.

they stabbed him 66 times and drank his blood

That year she met Daniel Ruda, a car parts salesman, when he advertised in *Metal Hammer* magazine's lonely-hearts column as a "raven-black vampire" seeking a "princess of darkness who hates everyone and everything". They married on 6 June 2001 and chose Daniel's workmate Frank Hackert, 33, for sacrifice because he was "so funny and would be the perfect court jester for Satan". (Some reports call him Frank Haagen.) They denied murder, claiming they were only following Satan's order to "kill, sacrifice, bring souls". Manuela explained: "It was not something bad. It simply had to be. We wanted to make sure that the victim suffered well."

They invited him to a party in their flat in Witten on 6 July 2001. As Ruda hit him on the head with a hammer, his wife shouted "Stab him in the heart!" Manuela saw the light in the flat flicker as Hackert died. "That was the sign that his soul was going down," she said. He was stabbed 66 times. The couple then prayed to Satan, cut a pentagram on the dead man's stomach, drank his blood from a bowl on an altar topped with skulls, and copulated in a silk-lined, oak coffin in which Manuela usually slept. Manuela was disappointed she didn't turn into a vampire, "because as a vampire I would not have needed the streets."

Shortly after the killing, Manuela wrote to her mother: "I am not of this world. I must liberate my soul from the mortal flesh." Her mother alerted the police, who raided the Rudas' flat. Skulls, bloody scalpels, vampire teeth and coloured contact lenses lay scattered around, and the blood-spattered walls were hung with knives and machetes. Hackert's mutilated and party-decomposed body was found with a scalpel protruding from his stomach, near a death list of 15 other intended victims.

16

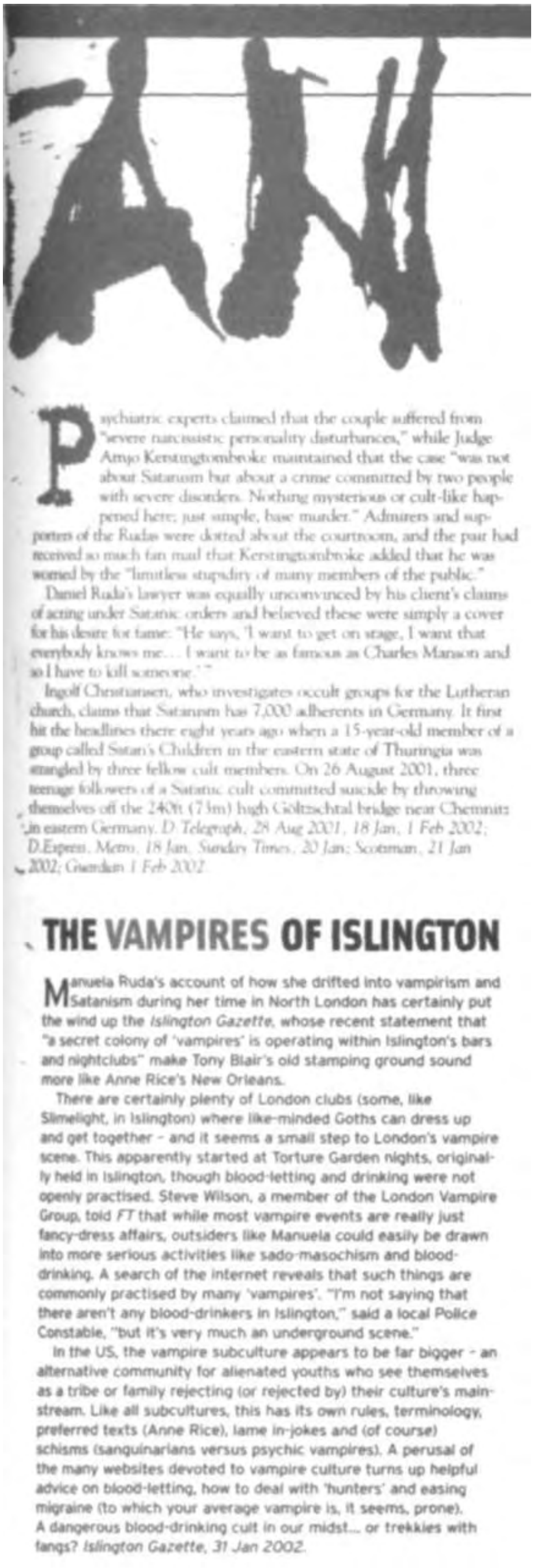

Psychiatric experts claimed that the couple suffered from "severe narcissistic personality disturbances," while Judge Arnjo Kerstingtombroke maintained that the case "was not about Satanism but about a crime committed by two people with severe disorders. Nothing mysterious or cult-like happened here; just simple, base murder." Admirers and supporters of the Rudas were dotted about the courtroom, and the pair had received so much fan mail that Kerstingtombroke added that he was worried by the "limitless stupidity of many members of the public."

Daniel Ruda's lawyer was equally unconvinced by his client's claims of acting under Satanic orders and believed these were simply a cover for his desire for fame: "He says, 'I want to get on stage, I want that everybody knows me.... I want to be as famous as Charles Manson and so I have to kill someone.'"

Ingolf Christiansen, who investigates occult groups for the Lutheran church, claims that Satanism has 7,000 adherents in Germany. It first hit the headlines there eight years ago when a 15-year-old member of a group called Satan's Children in the eastern state of Thuringia was strangled by three fellow cult members. On 26 August 2001, three teenage followers of a Satanic cult committed suicide by throwing themselves off the 240ft (73m) high Göltzschtal bridge near Chemnitz in eastern Germany. *D. Telegraph, 28 Aug 2001, 18 Jan, 1 Feb 2002; D.Express, Metro, 18 Jan, Sunday Times, 20 Jan; Scotsman, 21 Jan 2002; Guardian 1 Feb 2002.*

THE VAMPIRES OF ISLINGTON

Manuela Ruda's account of how she drifted into vampirism and Satanism during her time in North London has certainly put the wind up the *Islington Gazette*, whose recent statement that "a secret colony of 'vampires' is operating within Islington's bars and nightclubs" make Tony Blair's old stamping ground sound more like Anne Rice's New Orleans.

There are certainly plenty of London clubs (some, like Slimelight, in Islington) where like-minded Goths can dress up and get together – and it seems a small step to London's vampire scene. This apparently started at Torture Garden nights, originally held in Islington, though blood-letting and drinking were not openly practised. Steve Wilson, a member of the London Vampire Group, told *FT* that while most vampire events are really just fancy-dress affairs, outsiders like Manuela could easily be drawn into more serious activities like sado-masochism and blood-drinking. A search of the internet reveals that such things are commonly practised by many 'vampires'. "I'm not saying that there aren't any blood-drinkers in Islington," said a local Police Constable, "but it's very much an underground scene."

In the US, the vampire subculture appears to be far bigger – an alternative community for alienated youths who see themselves as a tribe or family rejecting (or rejected by) their culture's mainstream. Like all subcultures, this has its own rules, terminology, preferred texts (Anne Rice), lame in-jokes and (of course) schisms (sanguinarians versus psychic vampires). A perusal of the many websites devoted to vampire culture turns up helpful advice on blood-letting, how to deal with 'hunters' and easing migraine (to which your average vampire is, it seems, prone). A dangerous blood-drinking cult in our midst... or trekkies with fangs? *Islington Gazette, 31 Jan 2002.*

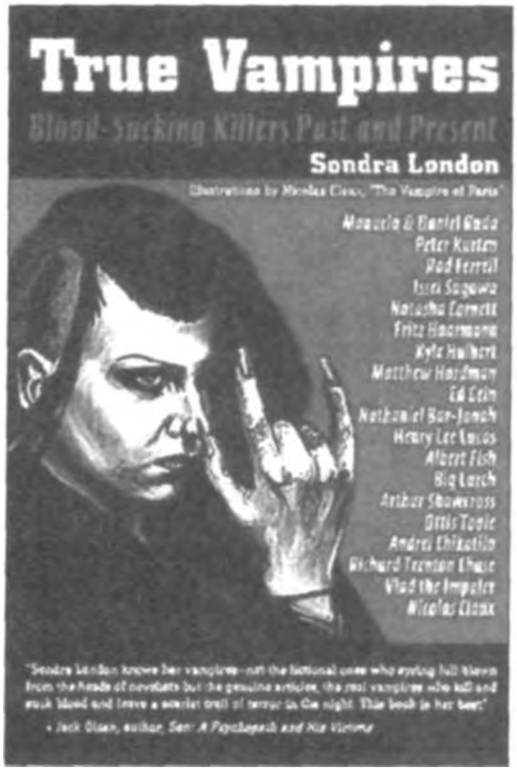

Those who claim that if the thumb is diplayed, it is not the "El Diablo" Satan hand sign may just want to take a gander at the cover of a recently published (2005) book by Sondra London entitled *True Vampires—Blood-Sucking Killers Past and Present.* Published by Feral House, a book company originally founded by Anton LaVey, High Priest of the Church of Satan, the cover clearly demonstrates that, for hard-core Satanists, there is no real difference in meaning whether the sign includes the thumb or does not.

Manuela Ruda, 2 i, (shown at left in sun glasses giving the "El Diablo" hand sign), and her husband, Daniel, 26, a pair of self-proclaimed vampire satanists from Germany, sacrificed a victim to Satan. The pair ceremoniously stabbed the man exactly 66 times with a dagger. Then they drank his blood. Some might say that Manuela's hand sign is merely the deaf's "*I love you,*" but the couples' grim conduct indicated otherwise. Also shown: Manuela's head, shaved to reveal an inverted Christian cross. Manuela also had a rough-edged, blood red circle tatooed on her scalp. The two were trained to be Satan worshippers while visiting Scotland. (From news report and article in *Strange Times* magazine, Great Britian)

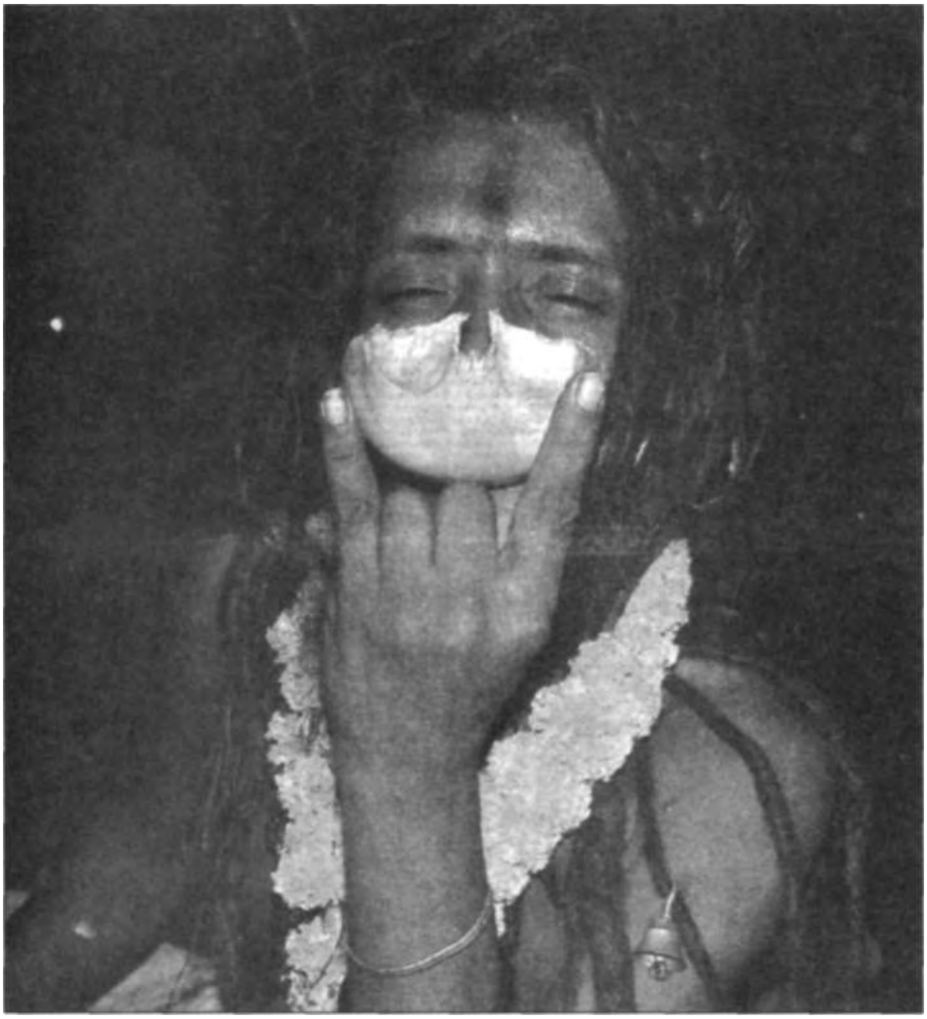

An American member of the Aghora sect of Hinduism drinks from the top of a human skull. Some members of the sect practice cannibalism to gain magical powers *(The Tampa Tribune,* June 2, 2003, p. 1).

The illustration from the book *Witches,* by Una Woodruff and Colin Wilson (Crescent Books, New York, 1988), shows a satanic witch signaling the "El Diablo."

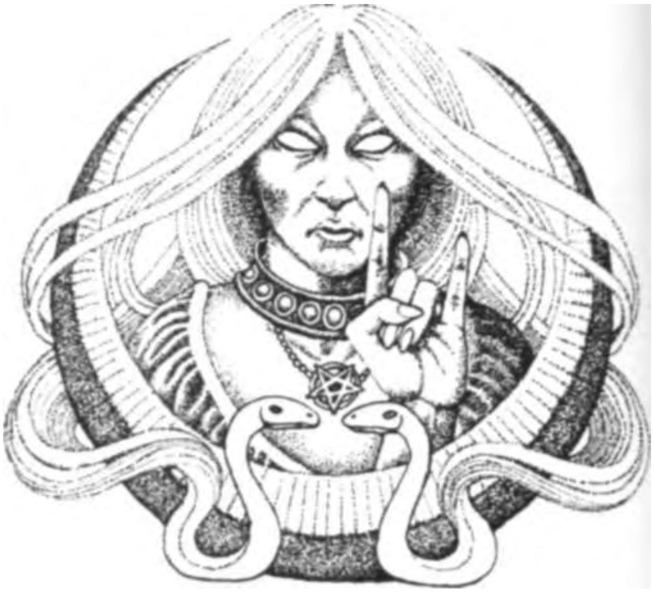

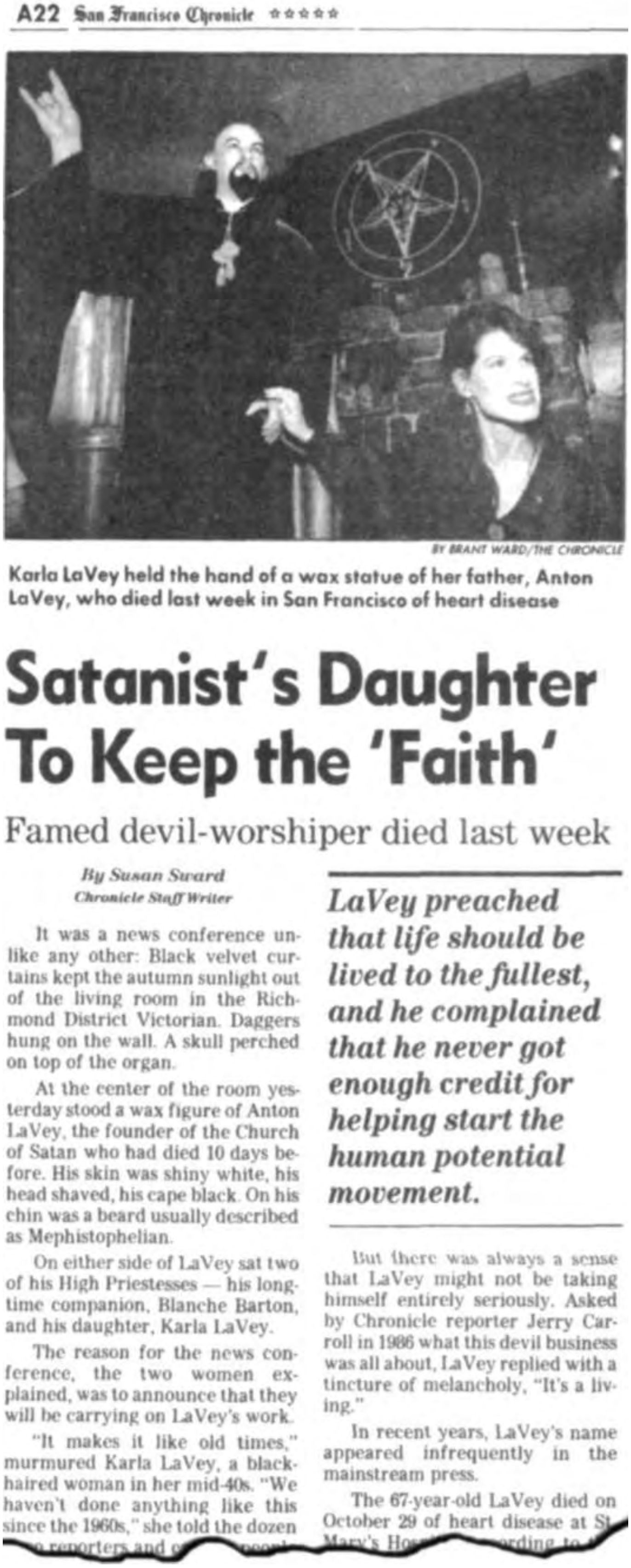

A22 San Francisco Chronicle ★★★★★

BY BRANT WARD/THE CHRONICLE

Karla LaVey held the hand of a wax statue of her father, Anton LaVey, who died last week in San Francisco of heart disease

Satanist's Daughter To Keep the 'Faith'

Famed devil-worshiper died last week

By Susan Sward
Chronicle Staff Writer

It was a news conference unlike any other: Black velvet curtains kept the autumn sunlight out of the living room in the Richmond District Victorian. Daggers hung on the wall. A skull perched on top of the organ.

At the center of the room yesterday stood a wax figure of Anton LaVey, the founder of the Church of Satan who had died 10 days before. His skin was shiny white, his head shaved, his cape black. On his chin was a beard usually described as Mephistophelian.

On either side of LaVey sat two of his High Priestesses — his longtime companion, Blanche Barton, and his daughter, Karla LaVey.

The reason for the news conference, the two women explained, was to announce that they will be carrying on LaVey's work.

"It makes it like old times," murmured Karla LaVey, a black-haired woman in her mid-40s. "We haven't done anything like this since the 1960s," she told the dozen

> ***LaVey preached that life should be lived to the fullest, and he complained that he never got enough credit for helping start the human potential movement.***

But there was always a sense that LaVey might not be taking himself entirely seriously. Asked by Chronicle reporter Jerry Carroll in 1986 what this devil business was all about, LaVey replied with a tincture of melancholy, "It's a living."

In recent years, LaVey's name appeared infrequently in the mainstream press.

The 67-year-old LaVey died on October 29 of heart disease at St

High priest of the Church of Satan, Anton LaVey, was honored upon his death in this article in the *San Francisco Chronicle.* In the picture, LaVey is giving the "El Diablo" hand sign while, on the wall, is the "Baphomet" version of the satanic pentagram star. Was it mere coincidence that on the very day that this wicked satanist died in California, across the sea, in England, Illuminati chief Lord Edmond de Rothschild also passed away?

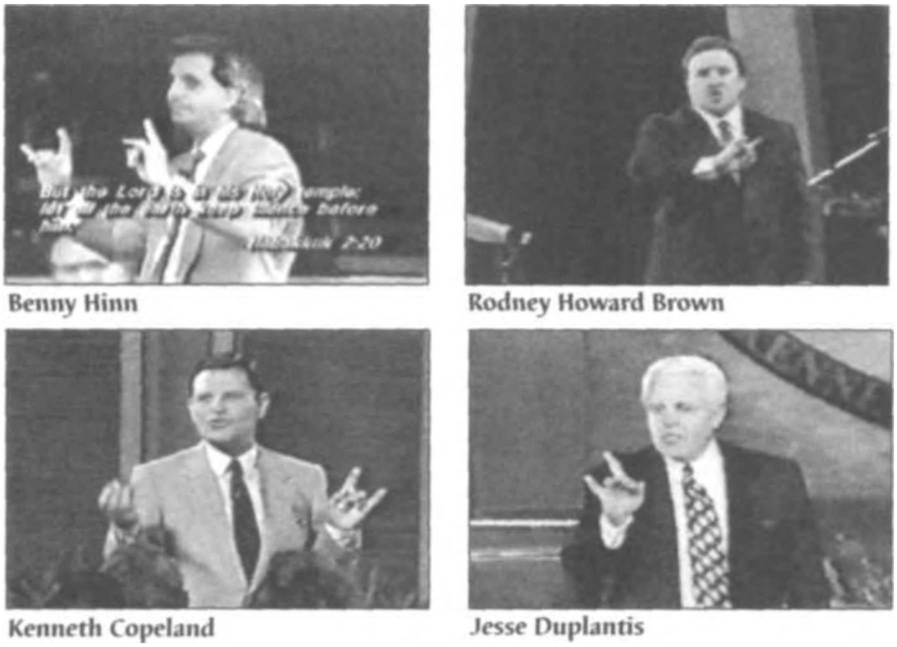
But the Lord is in his holy temple: let all the earth keep silence before him.
Habakkuk 2:20

Benny Hinn

Rodney Howard Brown

Kenneth Copeland

Jesse Duplantis

In a video exposing charismatic "prosperity preacher" televangelists, these four men were among many apparently giving what some people claim is the universally recognized "El Diablo"—horns of the devil sign.

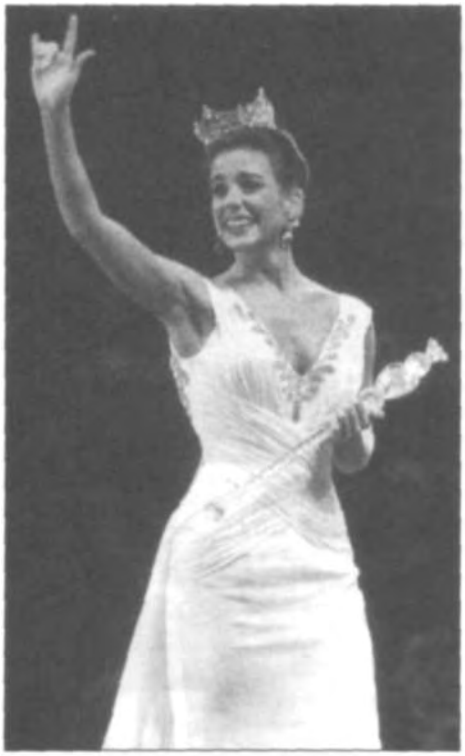

Heather Whitestone, Miss America (1994) flashes what is clearly the deaf's "I love you" sign. Ms. Whitestone, a Christian believer who is deaf, is definitely *not* a satanist or occultist.

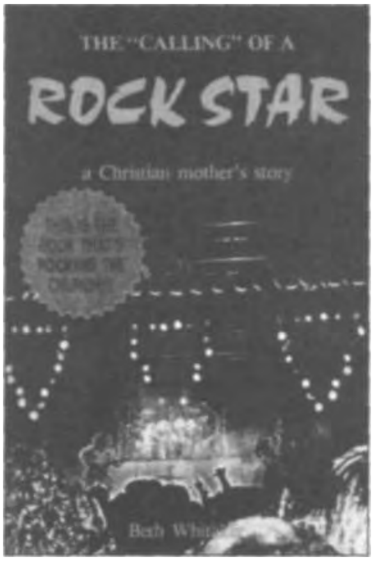
THE "CALLING" OF A
ROCK STAR
a Christian mother's story
THIS IS THE BOOK THAT'S ROCKING THE CHURCH!
Beth Whi

Christian Rock?—Is there such a thing as Christian rock'n'roll? This book , authored by a mother of a young man who was a member of a rock band, was intended to defend Christian rock music. But perhaps tellingly, the cover seems to show one person giving the horned devil sign and a couple more displaying the F...k You! sign (finger in middle of hand upraised)—all at a Christian rock concert! Also, lights displayed in three triangles are in the background. The triangle has three sides. Three plus three equals nine. The number nine in occult numerology conceals the number 666, the number of the beast, since adding the digits 6+6+6=18=9. Whether the cover artist and the author were aware of these oddities is unknown.

This issue of *Newsweek* trumpeted "Jesus Rocks!" The article talked about the popularity of rock'n'roll Christian bands. But, get a load of the hand signs of several of these "Christian" youth.

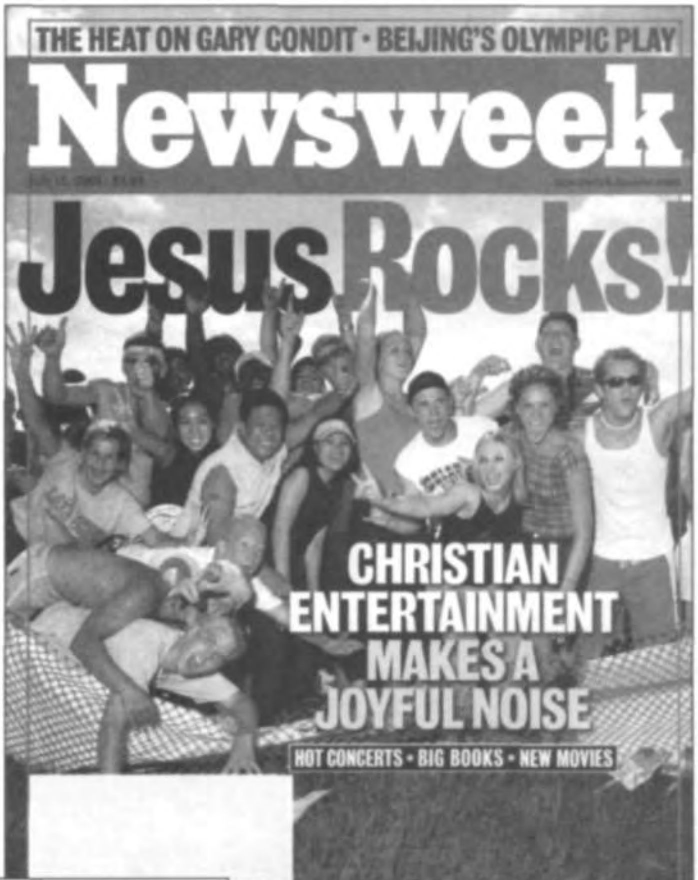

THE HEAT ON GARY CONDIT • BEIJING'S OLYMPIC PLAY

Newsweek

Jesus Rocks!

CHRISTIAN ENTERTAINMENT MAKES A JOYFUL NOISE

HOT CONCERTS • BIG BOOKS • NEW MOVIES

ristian rock festival last week

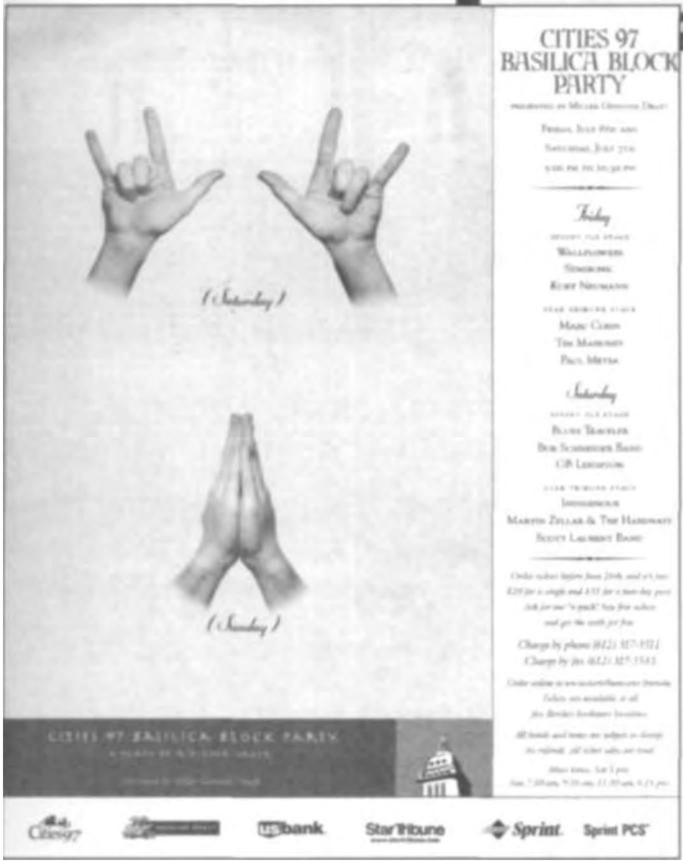

CITIES 97
BASILICA BLOCK
PARTY

Friday

Saturday

(Saturday)
(Sunday)
CITIES 97 BASILICA BLOCK PARTY
Cities97
usbank
StarTribune
Sprint
Sprint PCS

This is a full page ad placed for the Cities 97 Basilica Block Party.

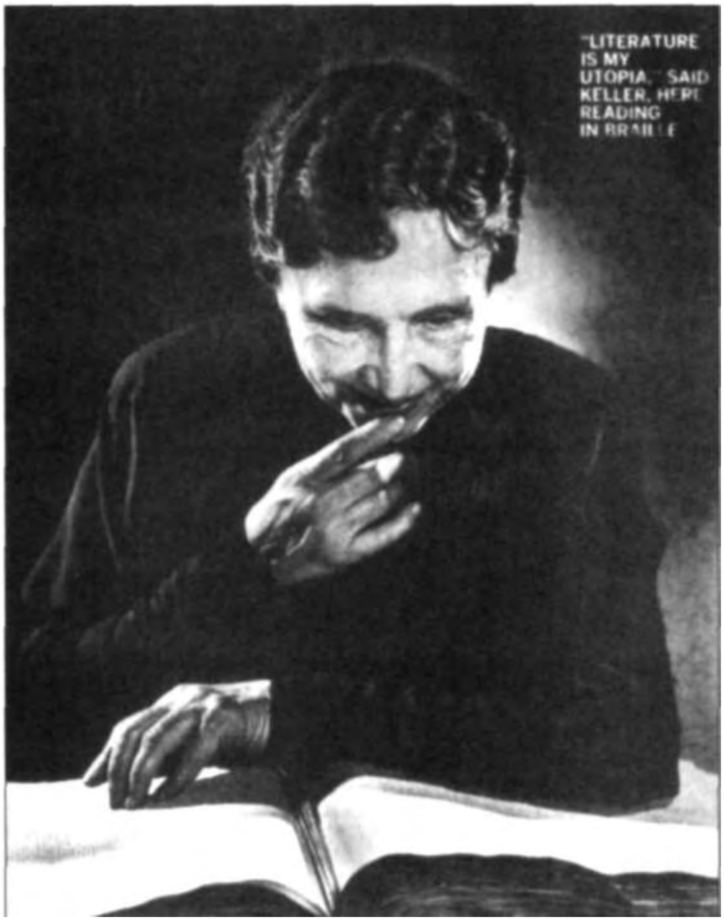
"LITERATURE IS MY UTOPIA," SAID KELLER, HERE READING IN BRAILLE

Helen Keller (1880-1968), shown here at her desk, creator of the deaf signing system. The brilliant Keller was a pitiful character in some ways. Stricken blind and deaf at an early age, she nevertheless went on to considerable achievements in life. But Helen Keller also got involved in occultic sects like Swedenborgianism and Theosophy. Did her membership in these groups inspire Keller to choose a hand sign for the deaf, translated as "I love you", which is today often used interchangeably with the universal "I *love (and/or worship) Satan"* hand sign?

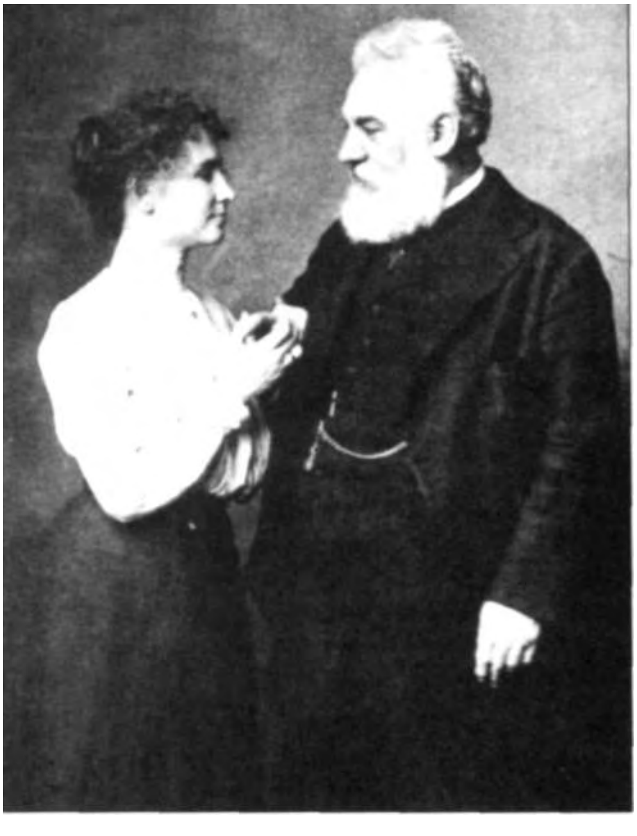

Helen Keller with Alexander Graham Bell. Keller wrote a book, *My Religion,* in which she explained her occult religious views and her enthusiasm for the teachings of mystic Emmanuel Swedenborg. Was the architecture of the deaf signs based on Keller's aberrant religious views?

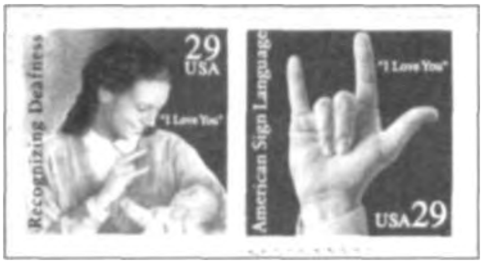
Recognizing Deafness
29 USA
"I Love You"
American Sign Language
"I Love You"
USA29

These U.S. postal stamps depicting the deaf's "I love you" sign are shocking, to say the least. The inventor of the deaf signing system was herself an occultist and devotee of Theosophy, the Hindu/occult group founded by Russian mystic Helena Blavatsky, author of *The Secret Doctrine.*

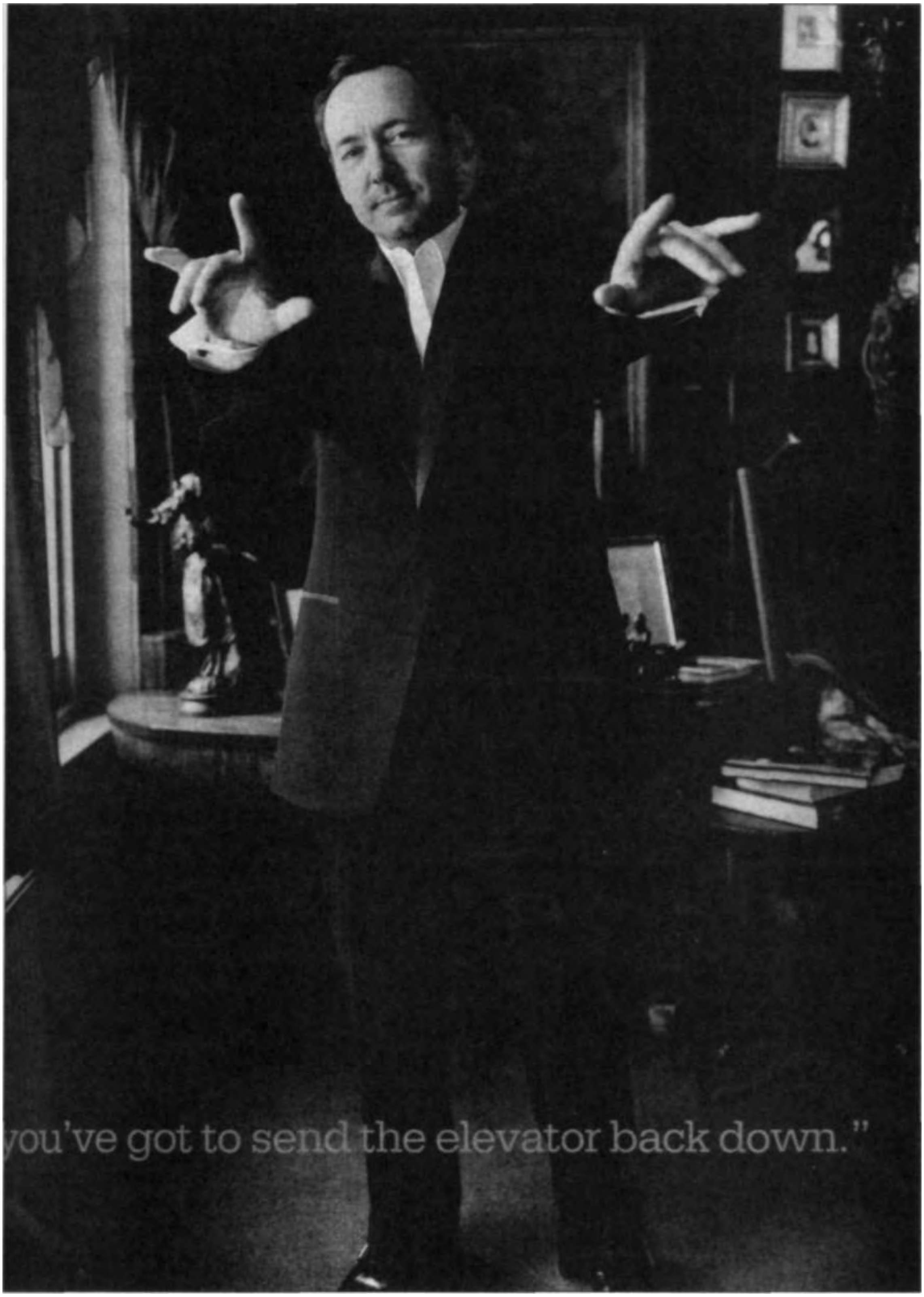
you've got to send the elevator back down."

Academy Award-winning actor Kevin Spacey, who is acknowledged as a homosexual. The mysterious painting on the wall directly behind Spacey is of Lucifer, with horns, amidst the flames of hell. The revealing but quite subtle message below reads: "*You've got to send the elevator back down.*"

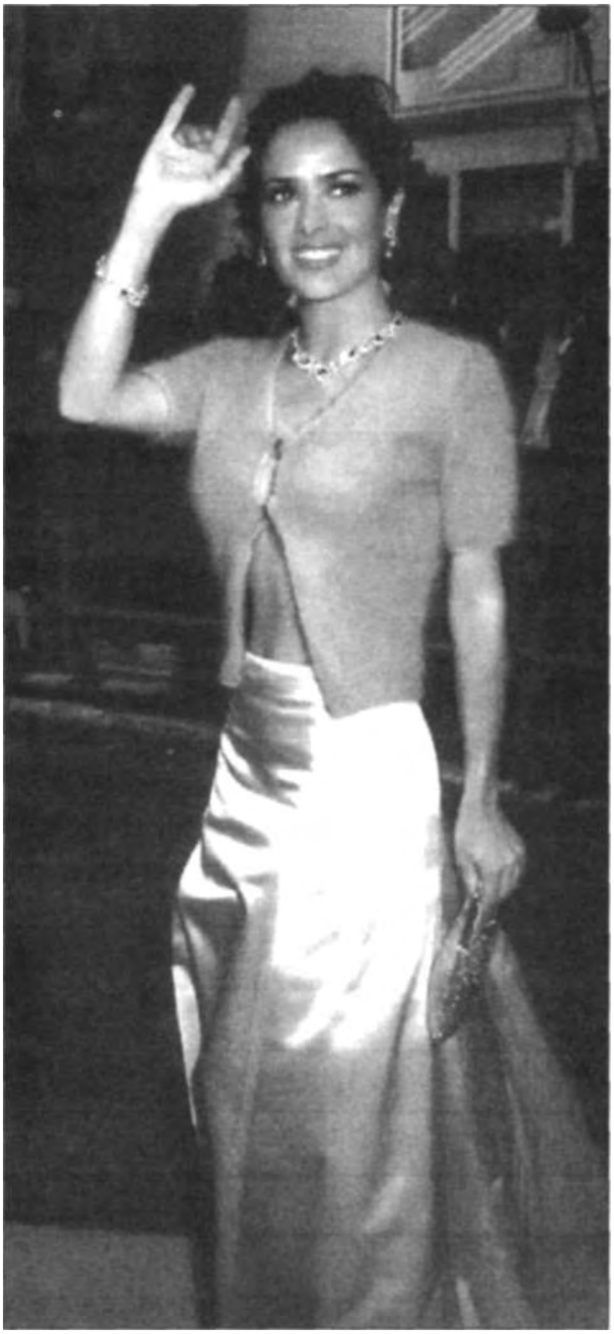

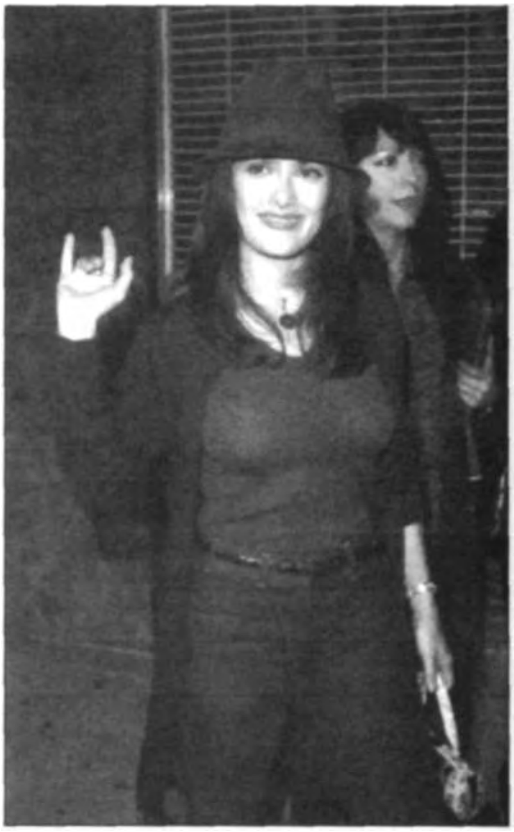

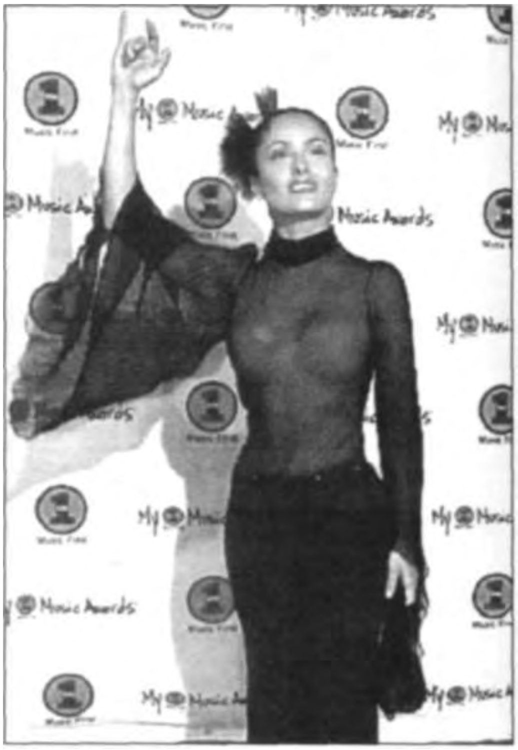
My Music Awards
Music First

Actress Salma Hayek giving either the deaf's "I love you" or the horns of the devil sign.

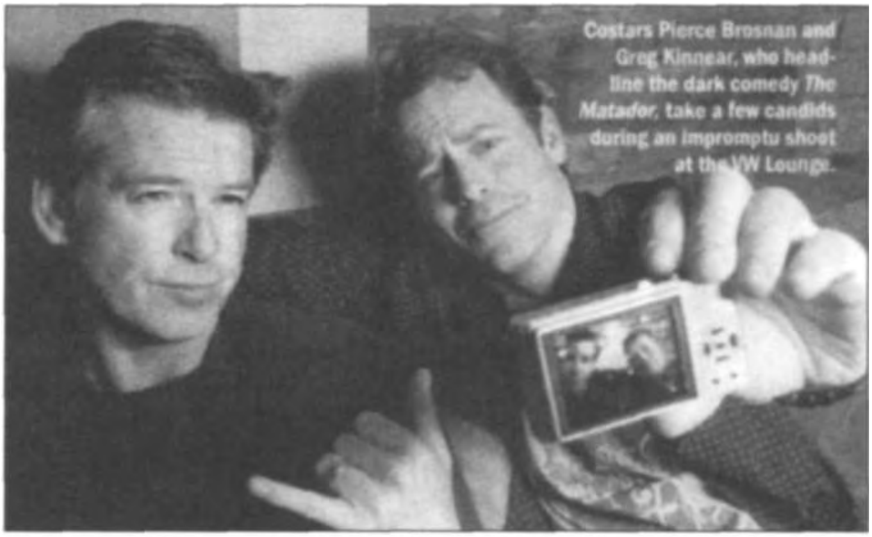

Costars Pierce Brosnan and Greg Kinnear, who headline the dark comedy *The Matador*, take a few candids during an impromptu shoot at the VW Lounge.

Handsome actor Pierce Brosnan of Great Britain, to left of actor Greg Kinnear, has a rather odd look on his face as he gesticulates with his left hand. (*People* magazine February 7, 2005)

The comedian duo, Penn & Teller, are vulgar, foul-mouthed and satanic. The two once performed a revolting skit in Las Vegas in which Teller, dressed as "Christ Jesus" on a full-size cross, entered the room *on* a cart. A midget dressed as an angel performed a simulated sex act on the near-naked Teller who was pretending to be Jesus. Shocked and offended, many in the audience abruptly got out of their seats and walked out of the room.

"This was beyond bad taste," said Rick Neiswanger, who attended the exhibition but had no idea that Penn & Teller would pull such a blasphemous stunt.

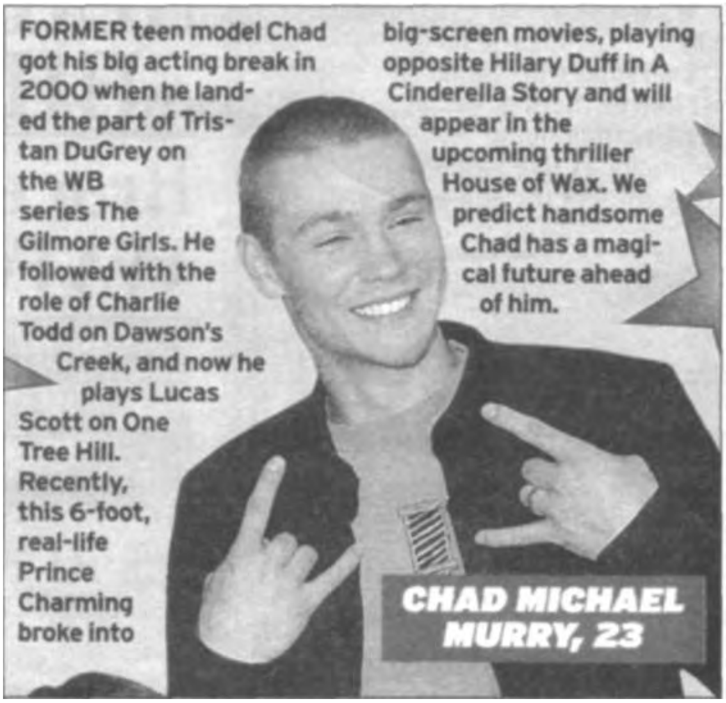

FORMER teen model Chad got his big acting break in 2000 when he landed the part of Tristan DuGrey on the WB series The Gilmore Girls. He followed with the role of Charlie Todd on Dawson's Creek, and now he plays Lucas Scott on One Tree Hill. Recently, this 6-foot, real-life Prince Charming broke into big-screen movies, playing opposite Hilary Duff in A Cinderella Story and will appear in the upcoming thriller House of Wax. We predict handsome Chad has a magical future ahead of him.

CHAD MICHAEL MURRY, 23

In the *Globe* tabloid (February 7, 2005), actor Chad Michael Murry (movie—*A Cinderella Story)*, lets readers know what kind of star he is.

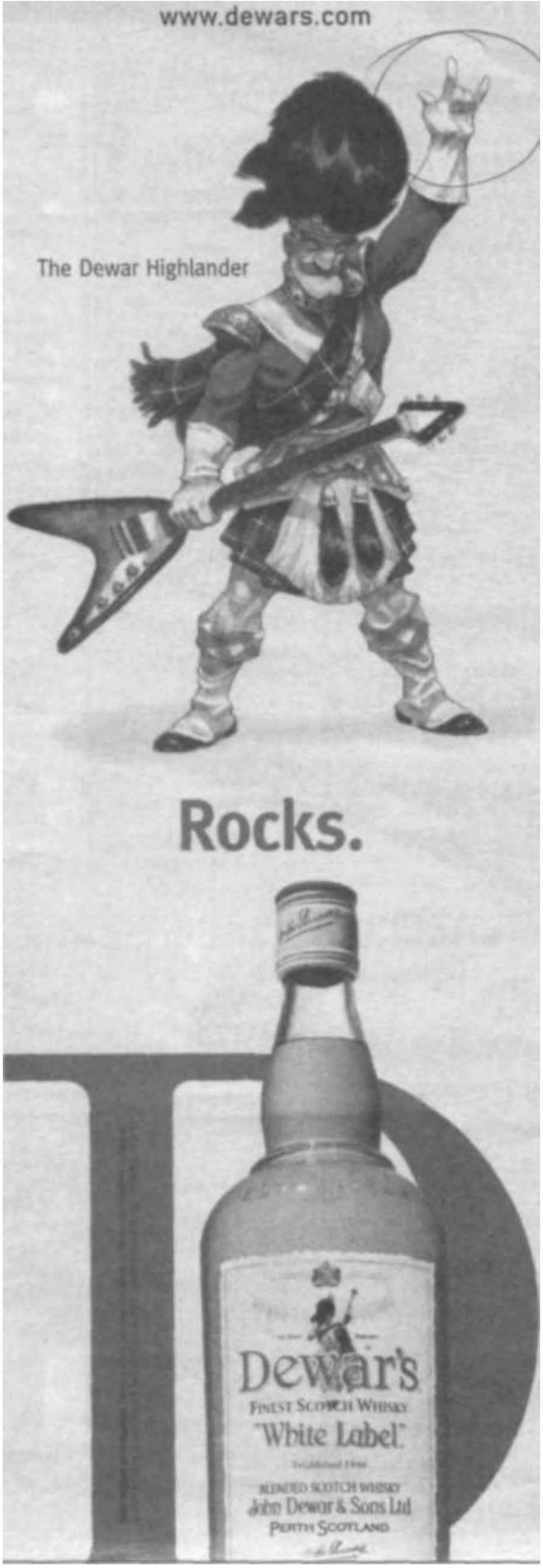
www.dewars.com
The Dewar Highlander
Rocks.
Dewar's
Finest Scotch Whisky
"White Label"
Blended Scotch Whisky
John Dewar & Sons Ltd
Perth Scotland

This scotch whiskey ad in *Rolling Stone* magazine shows a bizarre image of a Scottish highlander rock'n'roller giving a satanic sign. The circle was placed there by the person who clipped and sent this ad to me.

Rock band *Metallica*

Big in the 80s, the band Night Ranger is now heard on Sirius satellite radio. *(Newsweek,* November 29, 2004)

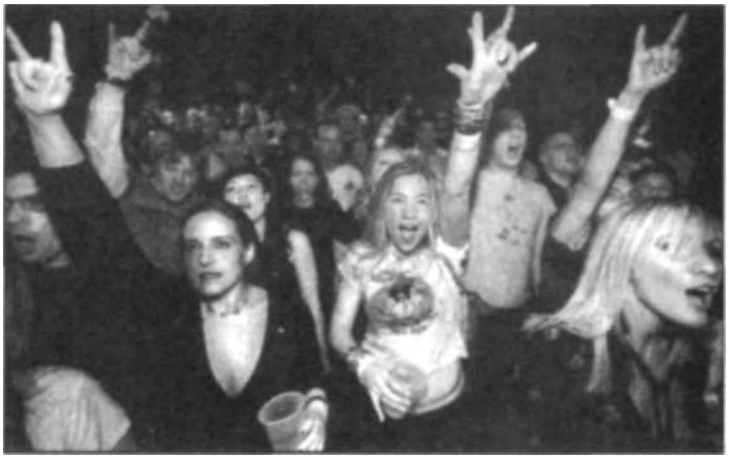

According to the article *(USA Today,* February 24, 2003, p. 3A) that accompanied this photograph, it depicts a near-capacity crowd of almost 500 people at the Bowery Ballroom in Manhattan, New York City. Fittingly, the enthusiastic crowd came to hear the band called *Satanicide.*

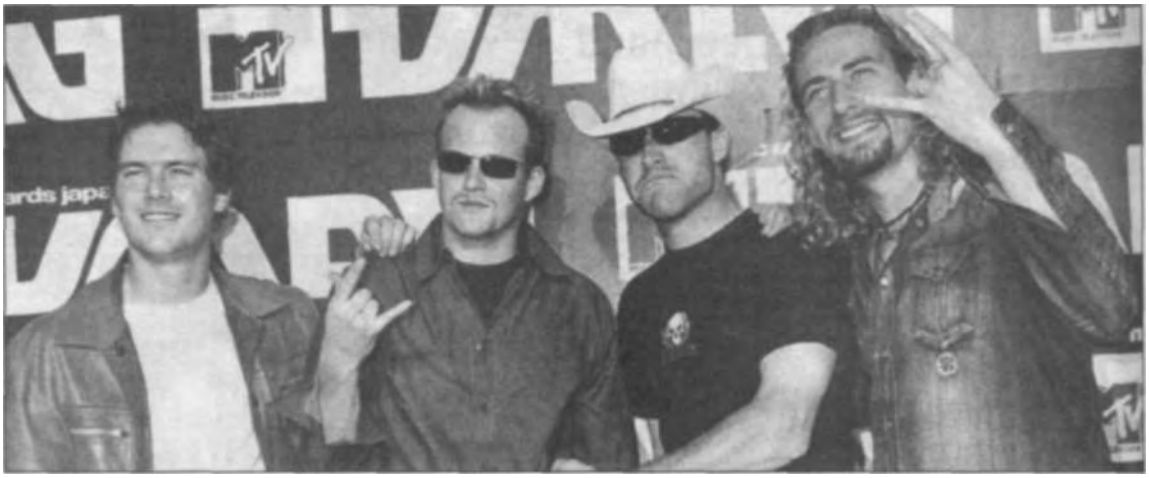

Popular singing group *Nickelback* gives thanks to their hidden deity for their great success. Two are giving the "El Diablo" sign, a third (the one with the hat on) has a skull emblazoned on his T-shirt. *(USA Today*, June 5, 2002, p. 2A)

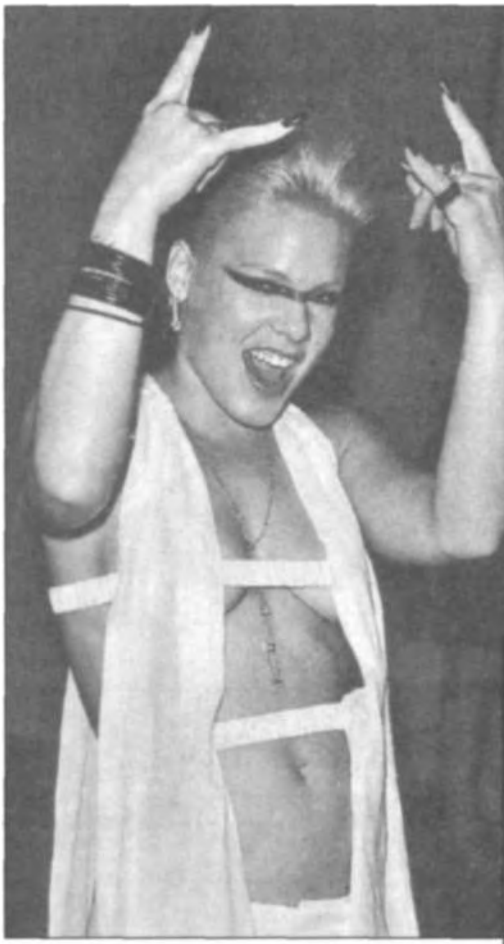

The Grammy-award winning singer known as "Pink" shows off more than just her midriff and breasts. (*USA Today*, March 1, 2002, p,10D)

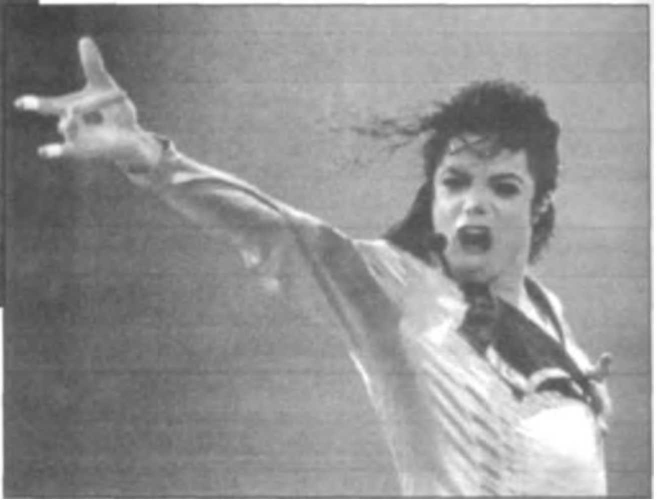

Entertainer Michael Jackson sends a message to his fans.

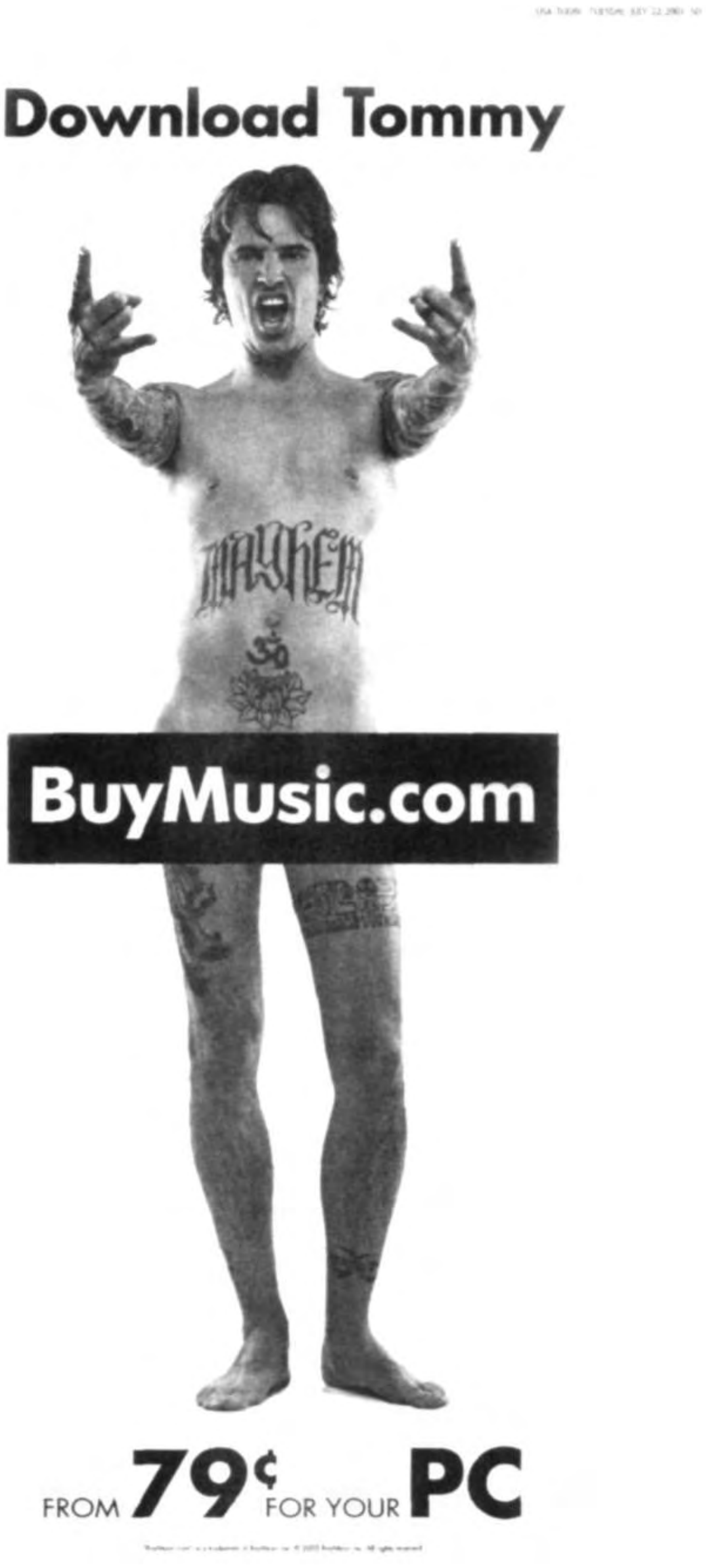
Download Tommy
MAYHEM
BuyMusic.com
FROM 79¢ FOR YOUR PC

Full page ad in *USA Today,* July *22, 2003* p. 5D

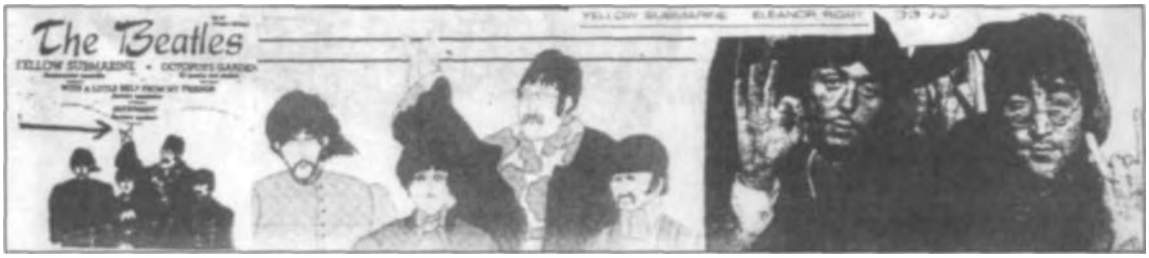

The Beatles singing group shown at left in a cartoon drawing from their *Yellow Submarine* album. John Lennon flashed the "El Diablo" sign. At right, Paul McCartney gives the "OK," or "666," sign while Lennon again displays the horned devil signal with his left hand. Lennon, who once bragged the Beatles were more popular than Jesus, was assassinated just outside the Dakota House condominiums in New York City, where he and wife Yoko Ono lived. It was at the gothic Dakota House condominium complex that the deeply satanic movie, *Rosemary's Baby,* was filmed.

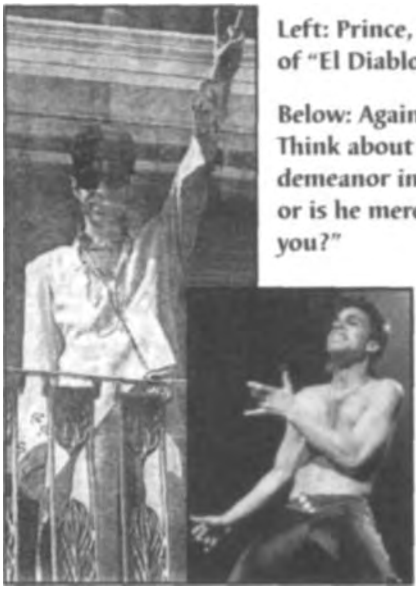

Left: Prince, giving the unadulterated sign of "El Diablo," the horned god.

Below: Again, singer/entertainer "Prince." Think about it: Does Prince's stance and demeanor indicate a wild, satanic attitude or is he merely signing the deaf's "I love you?"

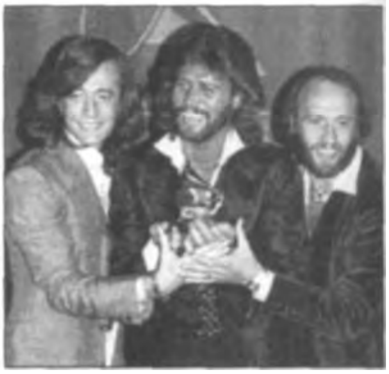

The BeeGees brothers musical group receiving an award in 1979. Observe the unusual "two horns up" hand sign of the trio.

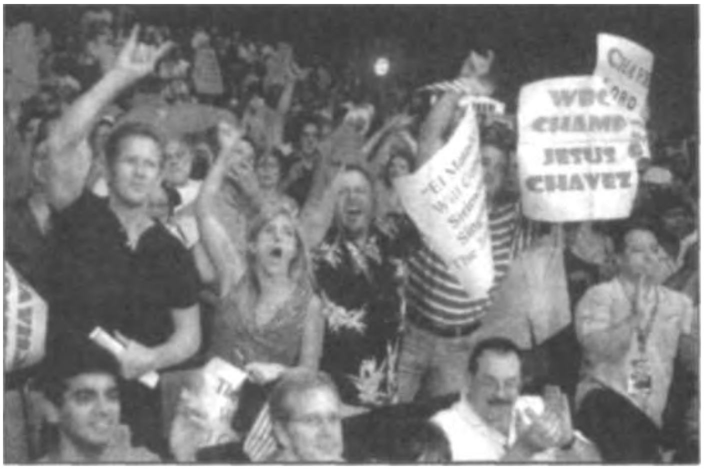

The crowd at a boxing match at Austin Convention Center, Austin, Texas. (Photo: page 1 of *Austin American Statesman* newspaper, August 16, 2003)

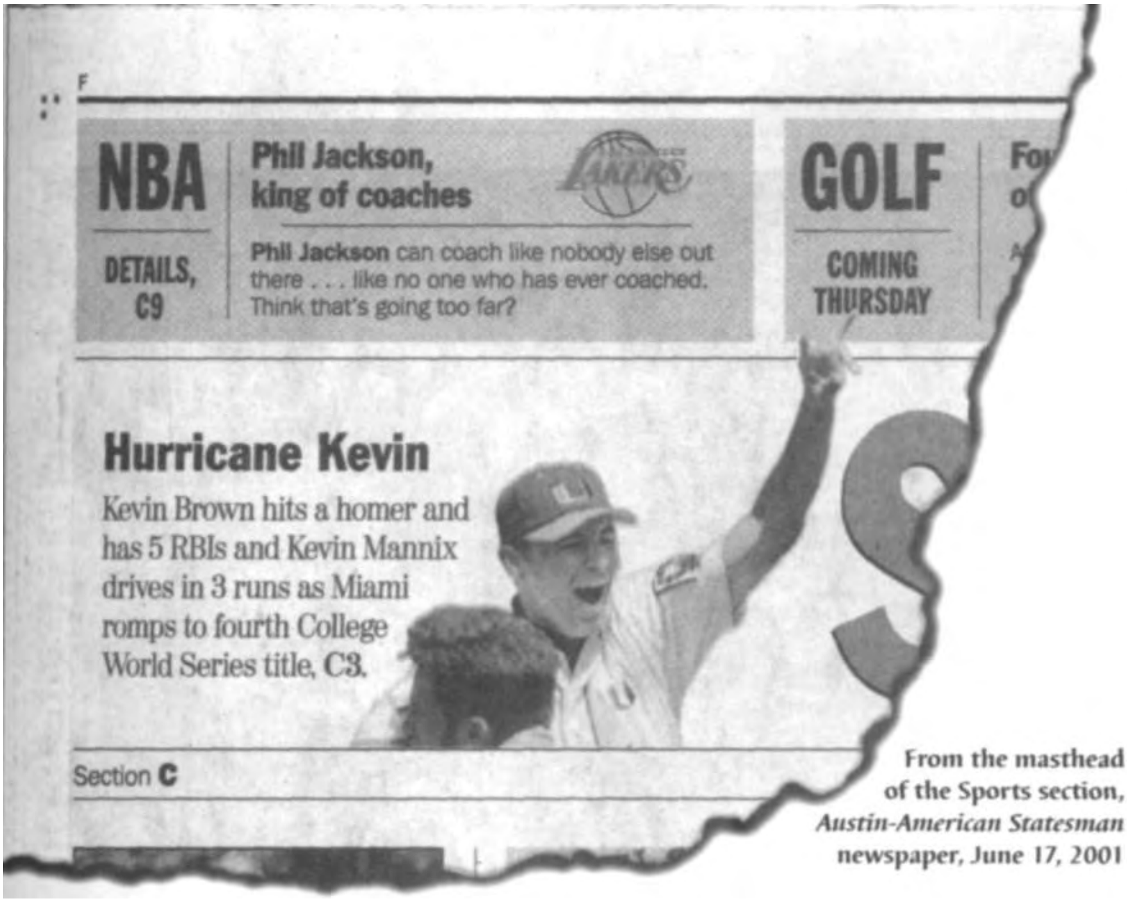

F

NBA

DETAILS, C9

Phil Jackson, king of coaches

Phil Jackson can coach like nobody else out there . . . like no one who has ever coached. Think that's going too far?

GOLF

COMING THURSDAY

Hurricane Kevin

Kevin Brown hits a homer and has 5 RBIs and Kevin Mannix drives in 3 runs as Miami romps to fourth College World Series title, **C3**.

Section **C**

From the masthead of the Sports section, *Austin-American Statesman* newspaper, June 17, 2001

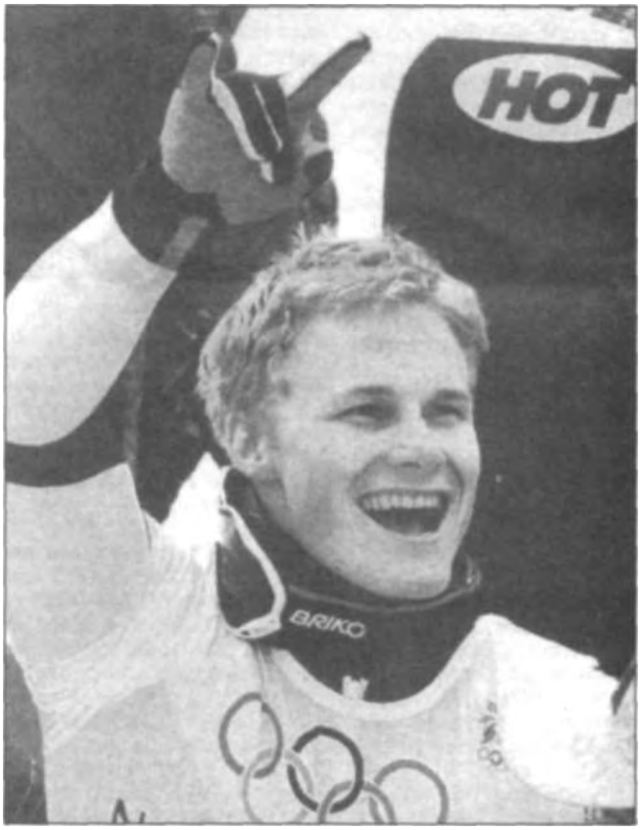

Canadian Ross Rebagliati celebrates his gold medal, won in the giant slalom event at the '98 Winter Olympics. *(USA Today,* February 9, 1998, p. E1)

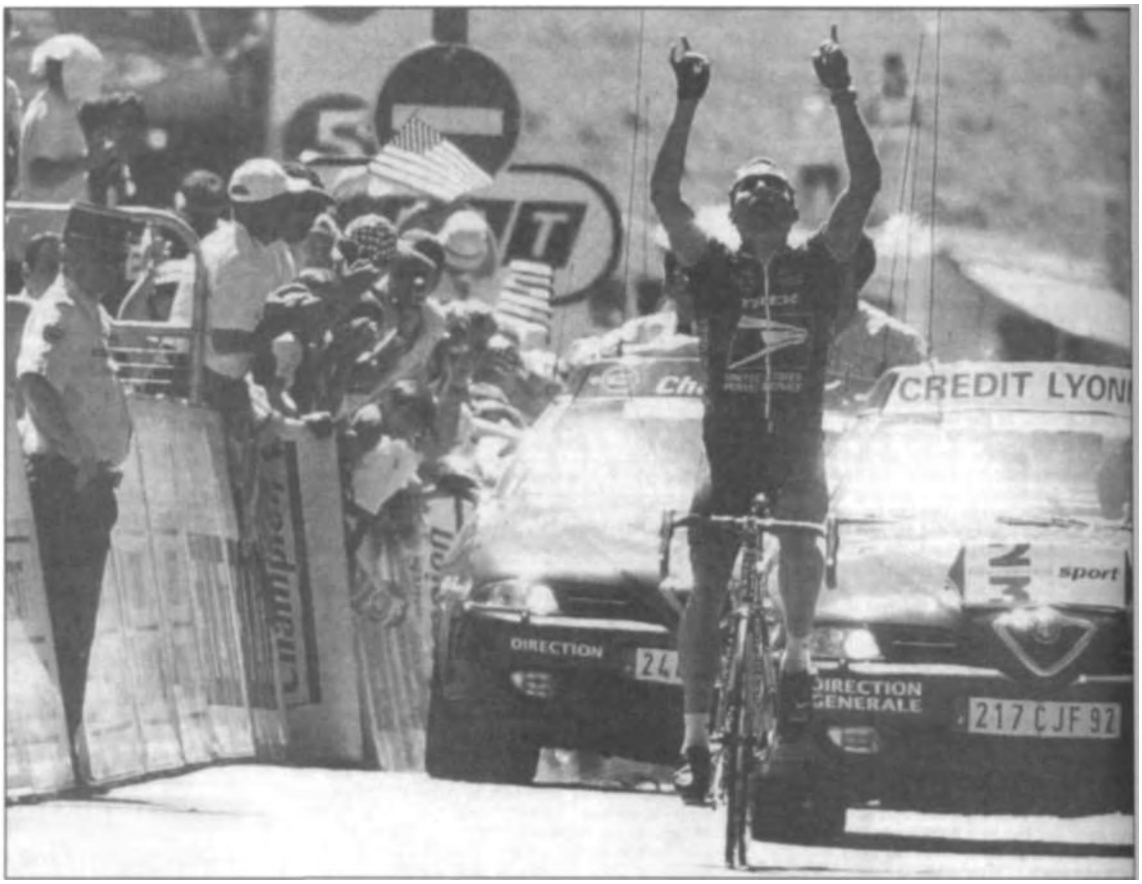

Tour de France champion bicyclist Lance Armstrong gestures heavenward with the index finger of his left hand while, with his right hand, Armstrong seems to be beckoning to a strange god known in the Bible as the "Prince of the power of the air."

Lance Armstrong is a resident of Austin, Texas, and it is possible the famous athlete's sign could just be in honor of the University of Texas at Austin. But if so, why give it in France?

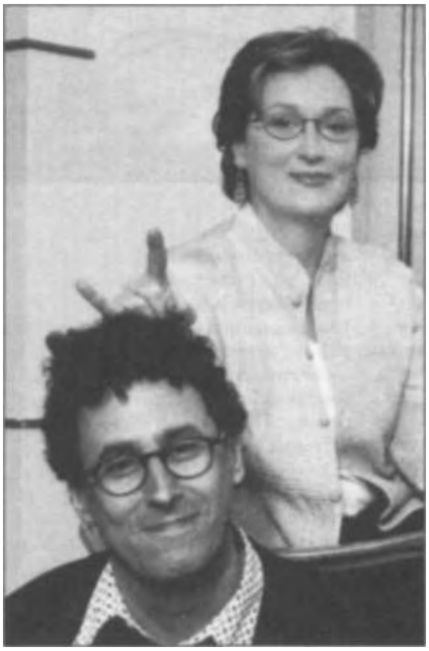

Actress Meryl Streep gives the sign of the Devil just over the head of "Angels in America" director, Mike Nichols. In 2004, the HBO series "Angels in America" was aired. It was possibly the most evil TV program ever broadcast. The director and actress were given "Golden Globe" awards, indicating how hateful Hollywood and the TV networks have become. The series depicted angels having sex with homosexuals and blasphemously mocked God. It praised communist spies like Ethel Rosenberg. (Photo: *Newsweek,* November 17, 2003)

EIGHT

Secret Handshakes of the Illuminati

The secret hand signs of Illuminists are thought to work magic, to evoke supernatural beings, and, of course, to communicate messages. For example, the higher degree Mason, Rosicrucian, or other Illuminist can discern at what ritual level a brother in the Craft is 'at by testing his handshake, or grip. It is, therefore, an important mode of recognition. The commonly used phrase, "Get a grip," has Masonic origins.

The handshake, or grip, is a sign of unity, oneness of purpose and allegiance or devotion to joint cause. It is considered a bond, or seal, of acknowledgment between Illuminist brethren. The Masonic authorities speak of a *"mystic tie"* or spiritual union. Certainly, demon powers *do* congregate together and enjoy one another's foul company.

The God of Fidelity

The Illuminist handshake, the clasping or joining of hands, can have many meanings. Its simplest is as a symbol of *fidelity.* Interestingly, Dr. Cathy Burns, in her informative expose, *Hidden Secrets of the Eastern Star,* notes that even at this basic level,

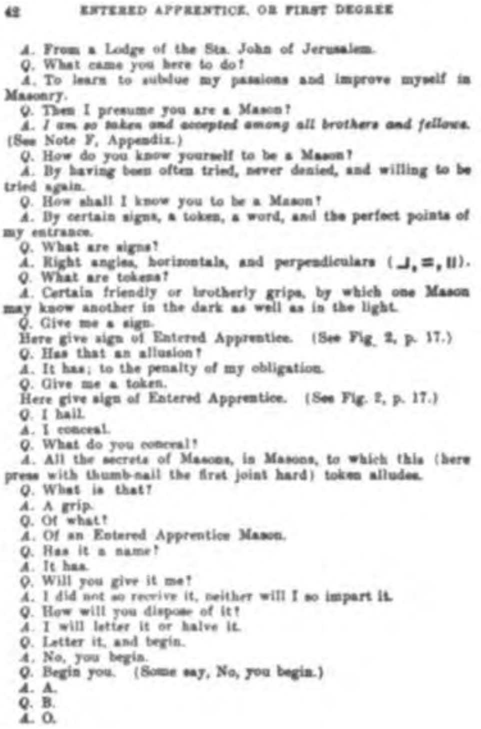

42 ENTERED APPRENTICE, OR FIRST DEGREE

A. From a Lodge of the Sts. John of Jerusalem.
Q. What came you here to do?
A. To learn to subdue my passions and improve myself in Masonry.
Q. Then I presume you are a Mason?
A. *I am so taken and accepted among all brothers and fellows.* (See Note F, Appendix.)
Q. How do you know yourself to be a Mason?
A. By having been often tried, never denied, and willing to be tried again.
Q. How shall I know you to be a Mason?
A. By certain signs, a token, a word, and the perfect points of my entrance.
Q. What are signs?
A. Right angles, horizontals, and perpendiculars (⅃, =, ||).
Q. What are tokens?
A. Certain friendly or brotherly grips, by which one Mason may know another in the dark as well as in the light.
Q. Give me a sign.
Here give sign of Entered Apprentice. (See Fig. 2, p. 17.)
Q. Has that an allusion?
A. It has; to the penalty of my obligation.
Q. Give me a token.
Here give sign of Entered Apprentice. (See Fig. 2, p. 17.)
Q. I hail.
A. I conceal.
Q. What do you conceal?
A. All the secrets of Masons, in Masons, to which this (here press with thumb-nail the first joint hard) token alludes.
Q. What is that?
A. A grip.
Q. Of what?
A. Of an Entered Apprentice Mason.
Q. Has it a name?
A. It has.
Q. Will you give it me?
A. I did not so receive it, neither will I so impart it.
Q. How will you dispose of it?
A. I will letter it or halve it.
Q. Letter it, and begin.
A. No, you begin.
Q. Begin you. (Some say, No, you begin.)
A. A.
Q. B.
A. O.

The instructions issued the candidate of **the** Entered Apprentice, or First Degree, of Freemasonry include these given **here.** Notice that the candidate is asked, *"How shall I know you to be a Mason?"* His answer: *"By certain signs, a token, a word, and the perfect points of my entrance."* Then, when he is asked, *"What are tokens?,"* he replies, *"Certain friendly or brotherly grips, by which one Mason may know another in the dark as well as in the light."* *(Duncan's Masonic Ritual and Monitor,* p. 42) the Illuminist is signifying allegiance to a deity other than the Christian God. For example, Dr. Burns quotes Albert Mackey, 33°, former Sovereign Grand Commander of the Scottish Rite, who admits:

> The right hand has in all ages been deemed an emblem of fidelity, and our ancient brethren worshipped Deity under the name of Fides or Fidelity, which was sometimes represented by two right hands joined...
>
> Numa was the first who erected an altar to Fides under which name the Goddess of Oaths and Honesty was worshipped.[1]

Burns points out that this reference to the worship of the Roman pagan goddess is literally repeated by the initiate in the very first degree of the Masonic ritual. Yet the Holy Bible commands: "Thou shalt have no other gods before Me." *(Exodus 20:3)* and goes on to emphatically state: "Make no mention of the names of other gods, neither let it be heard out of thy mouth." (Exodus 23:23)

In volume 1 of Albert Mackey's *Encyclopedia of Freemasonry,* a large section is devoted to a discussion of the hand and hand signs. Mackey states: "In Freemasonry, the hand as a symbol holds a high place...The same symbol is found in the most ancient religions and some of their analogies to Masonic symbolism are peculiar."

Mackey revealingly says that the hand is deemed important "as that symbol of mystical intelligence by which one Mason knows another in the dark as well as in the light."

He goes on to discuss the use of the hand in such ancient Mystery Religions as Mithraism and in worship of the Sumerian, Assyrian, and Babylonian gods. He notes that the tradition of the red seal attached to important documents is a throwback to the ancient use of the *bloody hand* as a way of authenticating documents.

Examples of Grips and Handshakes

I have included in this section of *Codex Magica* drawings of a number of Masonic handshakes taken from official Masonic publications and from other objective sources. In addition to Freemasonry, there are scores of Illuminati secret societies and many have their own unique handgrips and signs. Moreover, the Mormon Church, the Sufi Muslim Brotherhood, and even the notorious Mafia have their own identifying handgrips and signs. In the pages that follow in this chapter, you'll see a large number of well-known persons sharing handgrips and handshakes that clearly are Masonic and Illuminist.

Subject to Interpretation

It is true that a handshake can be a questionable thing in its interpretation. All of us have attempted handshakes when greeting old friends and meeting new acquaintances. Sometimes your hand and theirs do not quite meet and clasp as you and they intended. It might be the fit of the hands due to the relative difference in size of each person's hands; or perhaps the distance between the two persons' bodies, causing a longer or shorter reach; or some other factor (Maybe the individual is short or tall, is just not good at shaking hands, etc.)

I have done my best to take all these uncontrollable factors into consideration here and I include only what I believe to be indisputable Masonic and Illuminist handshakes, tokens, and grips. Naturally, one must especially consider who is shaking whose hand — and whether the person is known to be an Illuminist, a Mason, a Rosicrucian, an O.T.O. adept, or so forth. With these caveats in mind, let us take a look at the secret handshakes of the Illuminati. But first this brief article by Christopher Story.

(NOTE: The following article by Englishman Christopher Story was originally published in the *Economic Intelligence Review,* (Westminster, England) and was reprinted in Des Griffin's *Midnight Messenger* (May/June 2004). It is reprinted here for the reader's interest.)

Handshake Diplomacy: An Outbreak of the "Grips"

"They are out of the gate, and nothing will stop them." This description, by one of the sharpest of our informants, with the hectic pace associated with the imposition of the New Underworld Order, sums up the way the world is being turned upside down "as we speak." That's why the press is publishing all these "grips." And the newspaper editors have shown themselves to be only too willing to oblige. A huge photograph showed Tony Blair, our Fabian revolutionary Prime Minister, shaking hands with Adrian Nastase, the son of Illie, a leading Communist who "survived" the fall of Ceausescu. The Romanian Prime Minister is shown doing a five-knuckle grip (five-point degree), indicating to those whom Lenin called "the interested" that he's "a member of the club." Masons call their handshakes "grips" —hence the saying, "Get a grip."

Let's "get a grip" with what's going on here. All of a sudden, newspapers on both sides of the Atlantic have taken to publishing large photos of our "chosen ones" indulging in various manifestations of Masonic "grips." There was that Kerry-Clinton handshake published in *The Washington Times* in March.

In that instance, Clinton was demonstrating, for those "in the know," just who was boss, and how high up in the geomasonic stratosphere he is (right at the top). The "grip" in question was a Ma-Ha-Bone Lion's Paw Grip, which leaves the junior party in no doubt who's in charge (and in pain as a consequence).

On 26th March, British newspapers carried an enormous picture of Tony Blair's "grip moment" with Libyan dictator, Muammar Qadhaffi. Before proceeding, it needs to be said that these close-ups of Qadhaffi's face reveal this man to be burdened with the most evil physiognomies on record —far nastier than those of Adolf Hitler and Saddam Hussein combined: in fact Saddam looks quite benevolent beside this creature.

For his part, Blair looked extremely uneasy, his eyes watery, and his faced tensed up after what may have been some unspeakable encounter or other about which the record is silent (worse case scenario). Beneath the main picture, *The Times* had taken the trouble to provide us with three smaller close-ups of the "grip moment"-the newspaper's management being clearly signed up, *in advance*, to the significance of these New Underworld Order handshakes.

Our expert geomasonic handshake analyst writes that "the Blair-Qadhaffi handshake is a *Shibboleth Grip* which denotes fellowship and total agreement. The purpose of these photographs is to tell fellow Masons that these two are 'one.'" Beneath the photograph was a caption containing the following odd language:

"Clearly he (Blair) has not read Emily Post, the *doyenne* of 20th Century etiquette. "The proper handshake,' she wrote, 'is made briefly...and one should look into the countenance of the person whose hand one takes' (Blair was looking at the camera instead of course). But more to the point, this gratuitous reference to Emily Post was intended, our U.S. based expert writes, 'to show compatibility with the USA Scottish Rite. The palmetto in the background (there was a garish green wallpaper behind the pair—Ed.) reminds me of the State Flag of South Carolina (Charleston, on the 33rd parallel is the headquarters of the US Scottish Rite masonry — Ed.), and also relates to the prominence of the Middle East in all things occult."

On the same day (i.e., the photo research had been done well in advance), *The Independent* newspaper carried a double spread entitled: "PLEASED TO MEET YOU: THE HISTORIC HANDSHAKES THAT SHOOK THE WORLD." It showed the following geomasonic grips: Gerry Adams and Clinton, 12th December 1995: Shibboleth; Kim Jong-Il and Kim Dae-Jung (of the two Koreas), 12th December 2000 (Ma-Ha-Bone Grip (master masons); Yasser Arafat and Yitzhak Rabin, with top Mason Clinton looking on, 13th September 1993: Ma-Ha-Bone Grip (Lion's Paw, master mason; Pervez Musharraf and Atal Vajpayee, 6th January 2002: Shibboleth Grip ("friendship"); and most revealing of all *Ronald Reagan and Mikhail Gorbachev*, meeting for the first time in Versoix, Switzerland, 9th November 1985. In this picture, Reagan is shown gripping with the Supreme Master Grip with a pronounced Ma-Ha-Bone Lion's Paw. Gorbachev attempts the same but Reagan won't allow the same grip. This shows that Reagan demanded (and kept) the "upper hand."

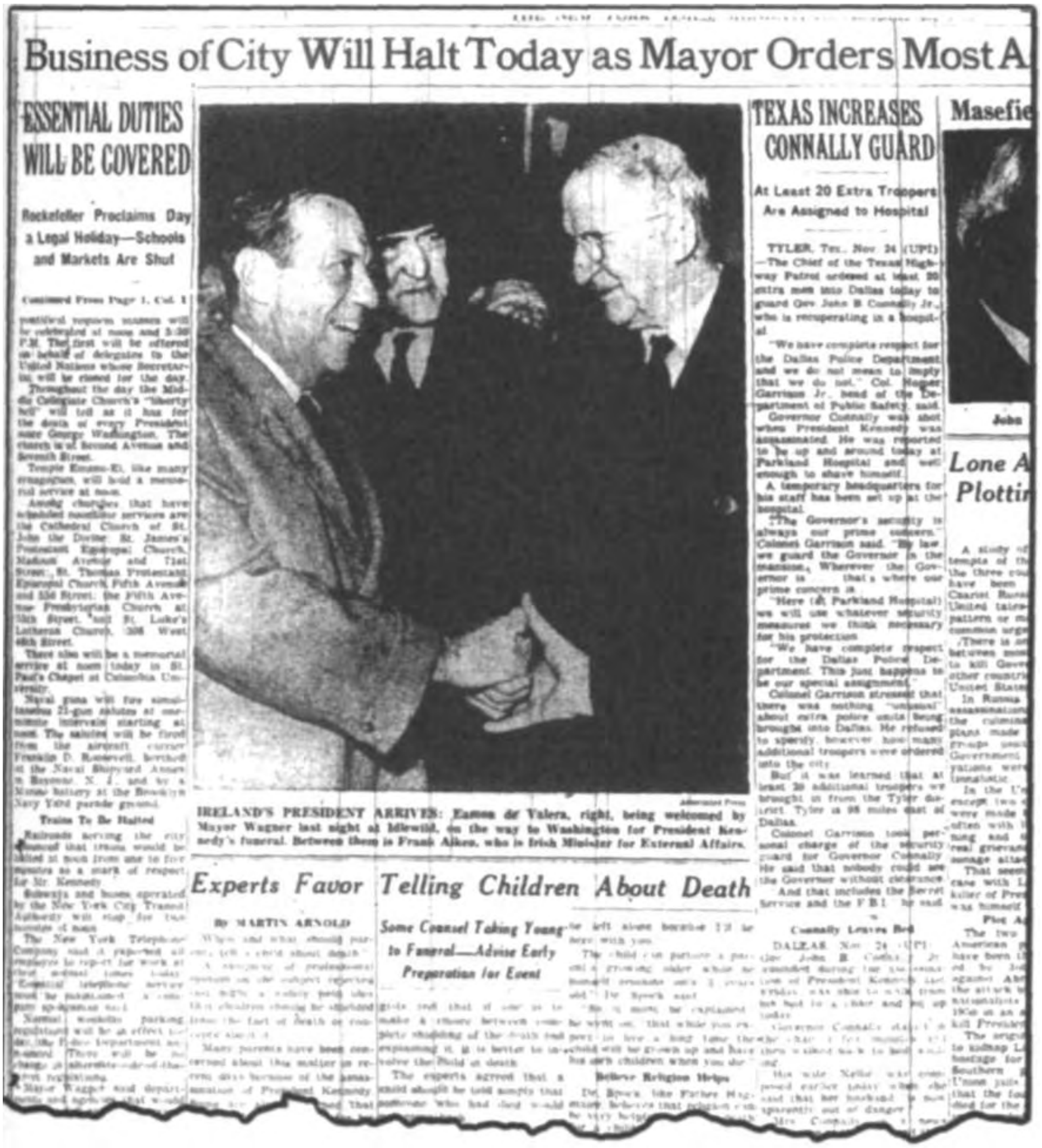

Business of City Will Halt Today as Mayor Orders Most A

ESSENTIAL DUTIES WILL BE COVERED

Rockefeller Proclaims Day a Legal Holiday—Schools and Markets Are Shut

Continued From Page 1, Col. 1

pontifical requiem masses will be celebrated at noon and 5:30 P.M. The first will be offered on behalf of delegates to the United Nations whose Secretariat will be closed for the day.

Throughout the day the Middle Collegiate Church's "liberty bell" will toll as it has for the death of every President since George Washington. The church is at Second Avenue and Seventh Street.

Temple Emanu-El, like many synagogues, will hold a memorial service at noon.

Trains To Be Halted

IRELAND'S PRESIDENT ARRIVES: Eamon de Valera, right, being welcomed by Mayor Wagner last night at Idlewild, on the way to Washington for President Kennedy's funeral. Between them is Frank Aiken, who is Irish Minister for External Affairs.

Experts Favor Telling Children About Death

By MARTIN ARNOLD

Some Counsel Taking Young to Funeral—Advise Early Preparation for Event

Believe Religion Helps

TEXAS INCREASES CONNALLY GUARD

At Least 20 Extra Troopers Are Assigned to Hospital

TYLER, Tex., Nov. 24 (UPI)—The Chief of the Texas Highway Patrol ordered at least 20 extra men into Dallas today to guard Gov. John B. Connally Jr., who is recuperating in a hospital.

"We have complete respect for the Dallas Police Department and we do not mean to imply that we do not," Col. Homer Garrison Jr., head of the Department of Public Safety, said.

Governor Connally was shot when President Kennedy was assassinated. He was reported to be up and around today at Parkland Hospital and well enough to shave himself.

A temporary headquarters for his staff has been set up at the hospital.

"The Governor's security is always our prime concern," Colonel Garrison said. "By law we guard the Governor in the mansion. Wherever the Governor is that's where our prime concern is.

"Here (at Parkland Hospital) we will use whatever security measures we think necessary for his protection.

"We have complete respect for the Dallas Police Department. This just happens to be our special assignment."

Connally Leaves Bed

DALLAS, Nov. 24 (UPI)

Masefie

John

Lone A Plottin

As reported in *The New York Times,* November 25, 1963, New York City's Mayor Wagner welcomes Ireland's President Eamon de Valera to the "Big Apple." The Irish leader was at New York's Idlewild Airport on his way to Washington, D.C. for the slain President John F. Kennedy's funeral. Strangely, the smiling Mayor looks in high spirits, though most of America was in deep mourning.

To
J. Robert Oppenheimer
with every good wish

J. Robert Oppenheimer, scientist who oversaw development of the first nuclear bomb in Project Manhattan, receives a Masonic handshake from President Lyndon B. Johnson. Johnson earned only the 3rd degree of Master Mason.

Oppenheimer, a Jewish cabalist, held the 33rd degree. Andrew Jackson ("Old Hickory"), the historical figure in the painting on the wall, was also a 33rd degree Mason. Oppenheimer lost his security clearance when it became clear to security officials that he was most likely a Communist espionage agent and certainly was a Communist sympathizer. Both the Soviet Union and the nation of Israel were given secret plans to the atomic bomb weapon by Jewish spies burrowed deep inside the United States military science establishments.

Senate Minority Leader Harry Reid (D-Nev.), left, and a fellow legislator in a Masonic grip. *(USA Today,* May 19, 2005, p. 6A)

U.S. Secretary of Defense Donald Rumsfeld and Afghani leader Karzai prominently display their Masonic grip. *(Newsweek,* May 12, 2003, p. 32)

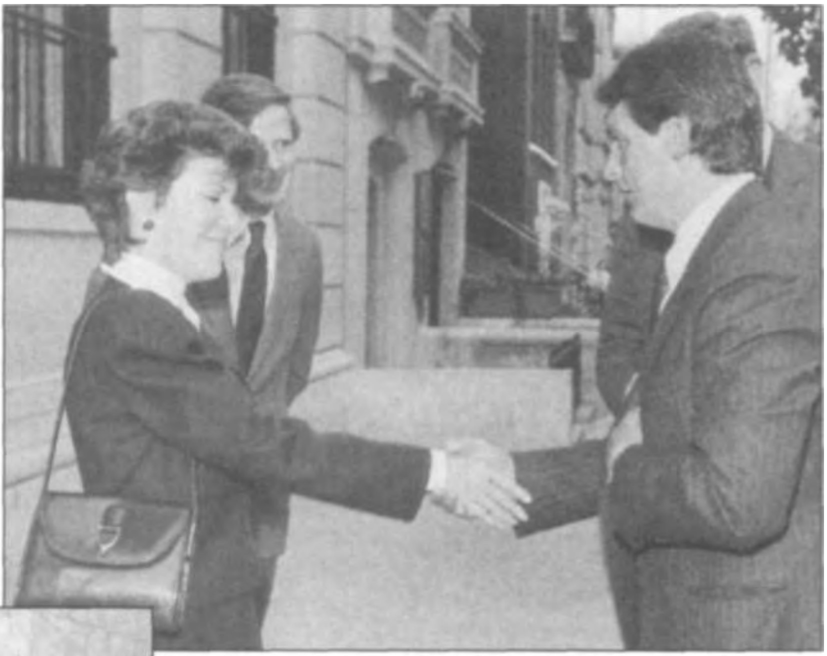

Presider Mathea Falco and Speaker Hime Paz-Zamora, President of Bolivia, at September 28, 1989 Council on Foreign Relations (CFR) Roundtable Breakfast. (*CFR Annual Report*, 1990, p. 46)

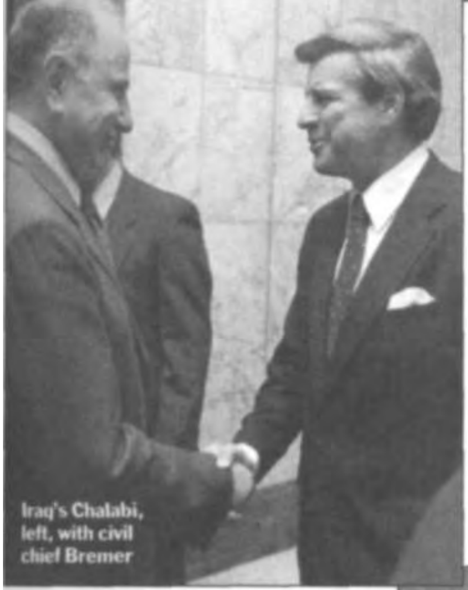
Iraq's Chalabi, left, with civil chief Bremer

U.S. overseer Paul Bremer shares a Masonic grip with Iraq's Ahmed Chalabi, a known CIA asset. (*Time* magazine, June 23, 2003)

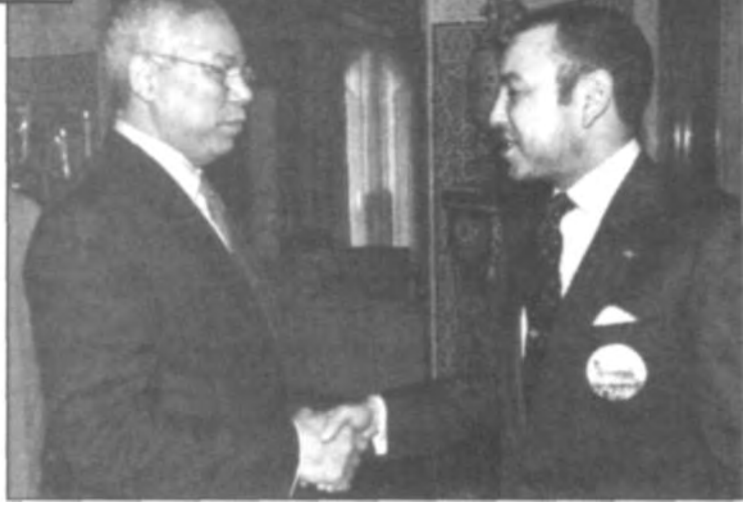

Secretary of State Colin Powell meets with Morocco's King Mohammed VI. (*USA Today*, April 10, 2002, p. 14A)

Palestinian President Mahmoud Abbas with Israeli Prime Minister Ariel Sharon. Both men are Masons.

This display ad was run in *The Jerusalem Post* newspaper in November 1994

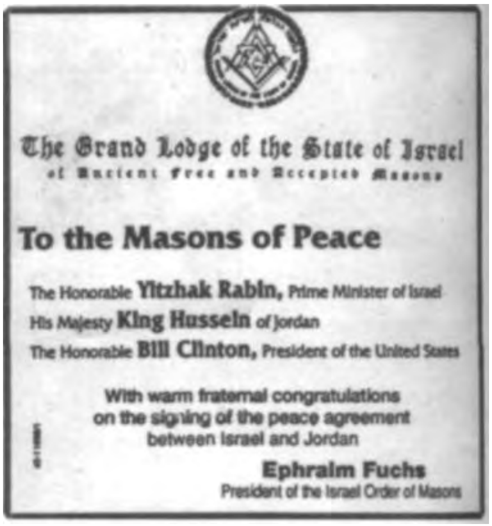

The Grand Lodge of the State of Israel
of Ancient Free and Accepted Masons

To the Masons of Peace

The Honorable **Yitzhak Rabin,** Prime Minister of Israel
His Majesty **King Hussein** of Jordan
The Honorable **Bill Clinton,** President of the United States

With warm fraternal congratulations
on the signing of the peace agreement
between Israel and Jordan

Ephraim Fuchs
President of the Israel Order of Masons

Freemason Shimon Peres, who was educated by Jesuits as a youth in Poland and was the Prime Minister of Israel and that nation's Minister of Foreign Affairs, is being welcomed to the Council on Foreign Relations, based in New York's Harold Pratt House, by its Chairman of the Board, fellow Illuminist, Peter G. Peterson.

Pat Robertson meets with Red Chinese Premier Zhu Rongji in 1998. *The 700 Club* host has invested millions of dollars in Red China and supports its policy of forced abortions, all the time pretending to be "pro-life."

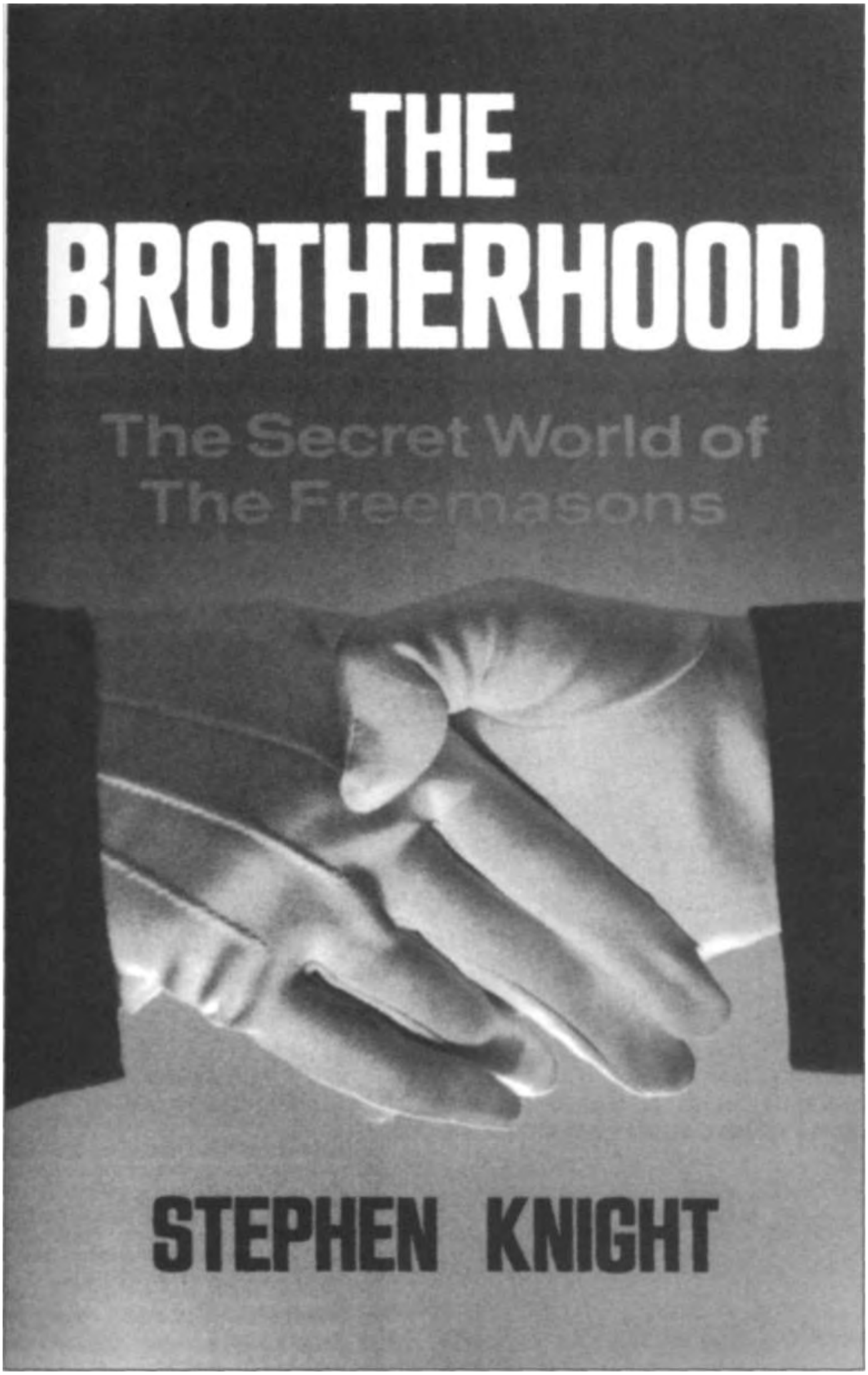
THE
BROTHERHOOD
The Secret World of
The Freemasons
STEPHEN KNIGHT

The cover of Stephen Knight's expose, *The Brotherhood—The Secret World of the Freemasons.* This book caused a sensation and a furor upon its publication because Knight revealed that the police, judiciary, and government of Great Britain are riddled with Freemasons who give job preference and show official favoritism to their Masonic cohorts.

Pope Pius XII greets Cardinal Spellman of New York.

New York's powerful Cardinal Spellman shakes hand of Pope John XXIII, who succeeded Pope Pius XII.

Boston's Cardinal Bernard Law and Catholic Priest Paul Shanley exchange greetings. Subsequently, Shanley, a founding member of NAMBLA, was exposed as a pedophile criminal and convicted of molesting young altar boys. Meanwhile, Cardinal Law, forced by public scorn to leave the United States, was promoted to a top position inside the Vatican. At the death of Pope John Paul II in April 2005, Law surfaced once again, being given the high-visibility role of conducting a mass for the dead Pontiff that was viewed around the world *on* TV. This was the Vatican's way of retorting to those angered or concerned over priest pedophelia: *"Get Lost!"*

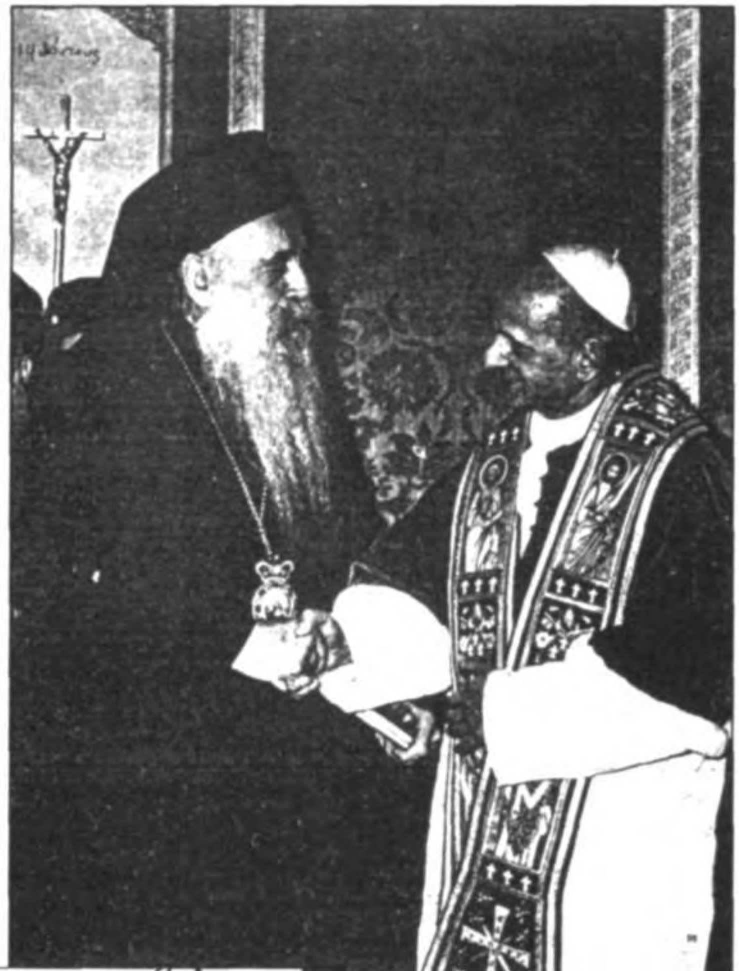

In a Greek-language book exposing the Masonic link with religion we find this picture of the Orthodox prelate and Pope Paul VI in a Masonic grip.

ρου καὶ λύκου τῆς Ρώμης είς τοὺς
ρας χαίρεται ὅτι κατώρθωσεν νὰ προ-
καὶ νὰ ὑποταγῇ εἰς τὴν παπικὴν ἀλα-

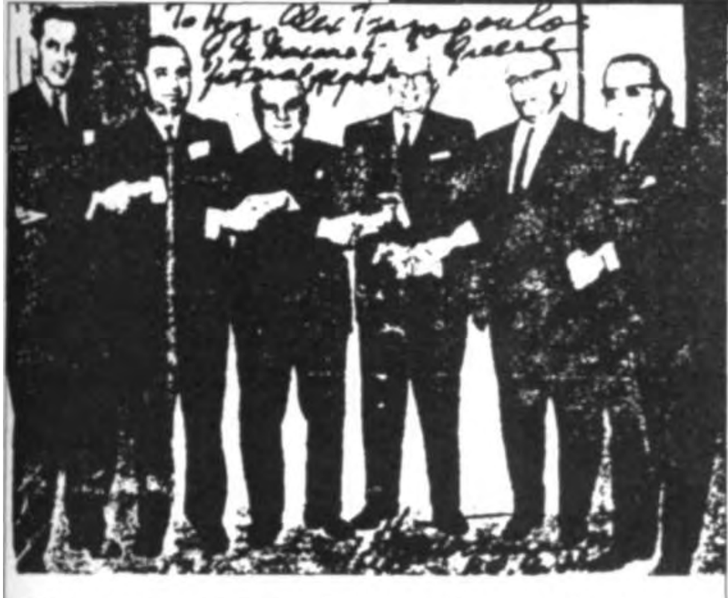

Ὁ ἀρχιμασόνος πρώην πρόεδρος τῶν ΗΠΑ Χάρρυ Τρούμαν μέ τήν ἡγεσίαν τῶν Ἑλλήνων μασόνων. Μεταξύ τῶν τελευταίων, ὁ «μέγας διδάσκαλος» Ἀλέξανδρος Τζατζόπουλος, ὁ ἑβραῖος Μπεχαρά καί ὁ ἀσφαλιστής Εὐαγ. Μακρυμίχαλος. Φωτογραφία εἰλημμένη τήν 11 Μαρτίου 1964.

Conjunction of Masonic handshakes by Greek businessmen. (From Greek book exposing the Lodge connection)

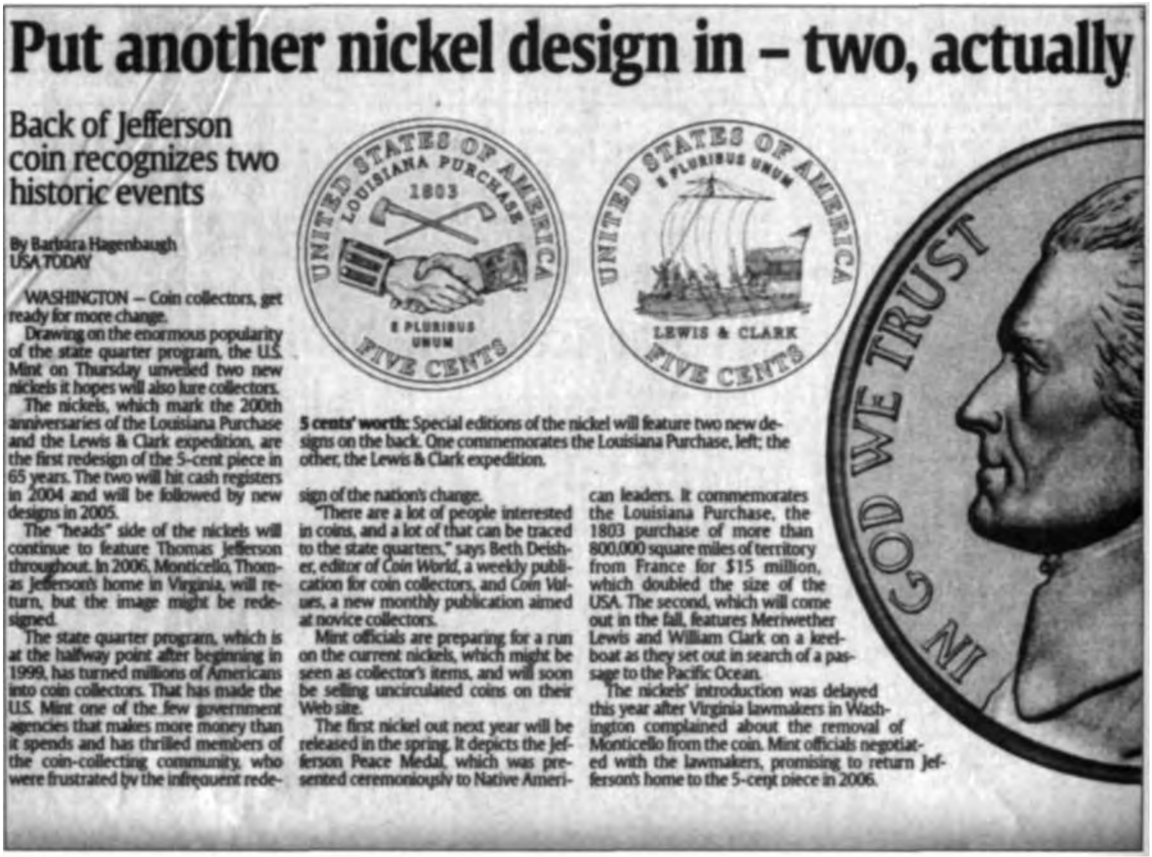

Put another nickel design in – two, actually

Back of Jefferson coin recognizes two historic events

By Barbara Hagenbaugh
USA TODAY

WASHINGTON — Coin collectors, get ready for more change.

Drawing on the enormous popularity of the state quarter program, the U.S. Mint on Thursday unveiled two new nickels it hopes will also lure collectors.

The nickels, which mark the 200th anniversaries of the Louisiana Purchase and the Lewis & Clark expedition, are the first redesign of the 5-cent piece in 65 years. The two will hit cash registers in 2004 and will be followed by new designs in 2005.

The "heads" side of the nickels will continue to feature Thomas Jefferson throughout. In 2006, Monticello, Thomas Jefferson's home in Virginia, will return, but the image might be redesigned.

The state quarter program, which is at the halfway point after beginning in 1999, has turned millions of Americans into coin collectors. That has made the U.S. Mint one of the few government agencies that makes more money than it spends and has thrilled members of the coin-collecting community, who were frustrated by the infrequent redesign of the nation's change.

"There are a lot of people interested in coins, and a lot of that can be traced to the state quarters," says Beth Deisher, editor of *Coin World*, a weekly publication for coin collectors, and *Coin Values*, a new monthly publication aimed at novice collectors.

Mint officials are preparing for a run on the current nickels, which might be seen as collector's items, and will soon be selling uncirculated coins on their Web site.

The first nickel out next year will be released in the spring. It depicts the Jefferson Peace Medal, which was presented ceremoniously to Native American leaders. It commemorates the Louisiana Purchase, the 1803 purchase of more than 800,000 square miles of territory from France for $15 million, which doubled the size of the USA. The second, which will come out in the fall, features Meriwether Lewis and William Clark on a keelboat as they set out in search of a passage to the Pacific Ocean.

The nickels' introduction was delayed this year after Virginia lawmakers in Washington complained about the removal of Monticello from the coin. Mint officials negotiated with the lawmakers, promising to return Jefferson's home to the 5-cent piece in 2006.

5 cents' worth: Special editions of the nickel will feature two new designs on the back. One commemorates the Louisiana Purchase, left; the other, the Lewis & Clark expedition.

American coinage and currency frequently has borne hidden messages and symbols of the Illuminati. This new clipping from *USA Today* newspaper discusses and pictures the new nickel (5c coin) released in 2004 to commemorate the Louisiana Purchase of 1803. The coin bears the image of the Masonic handshake and also the occultic *"X."*

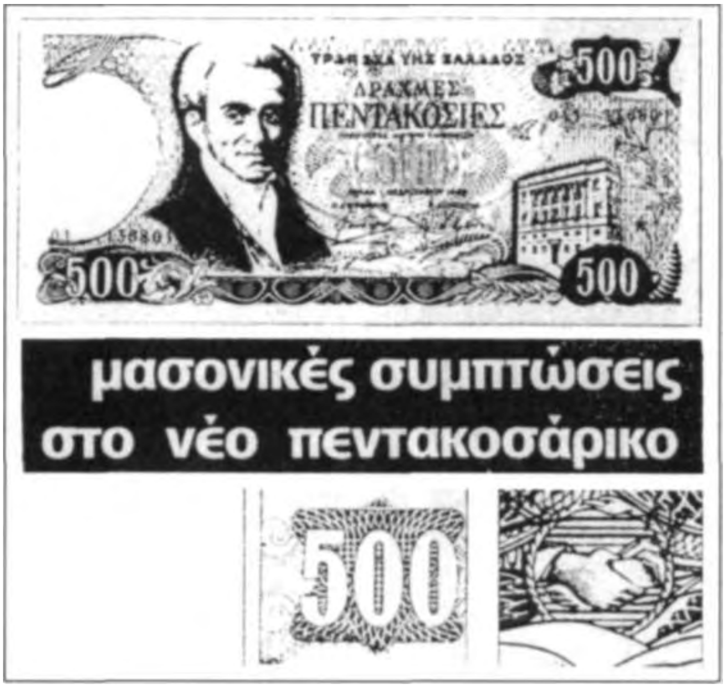

μασονικές συμπτώσεις
στο νέο πεντακοσάρικο

Masonic handshake imbedded in Greek 500 d. note.

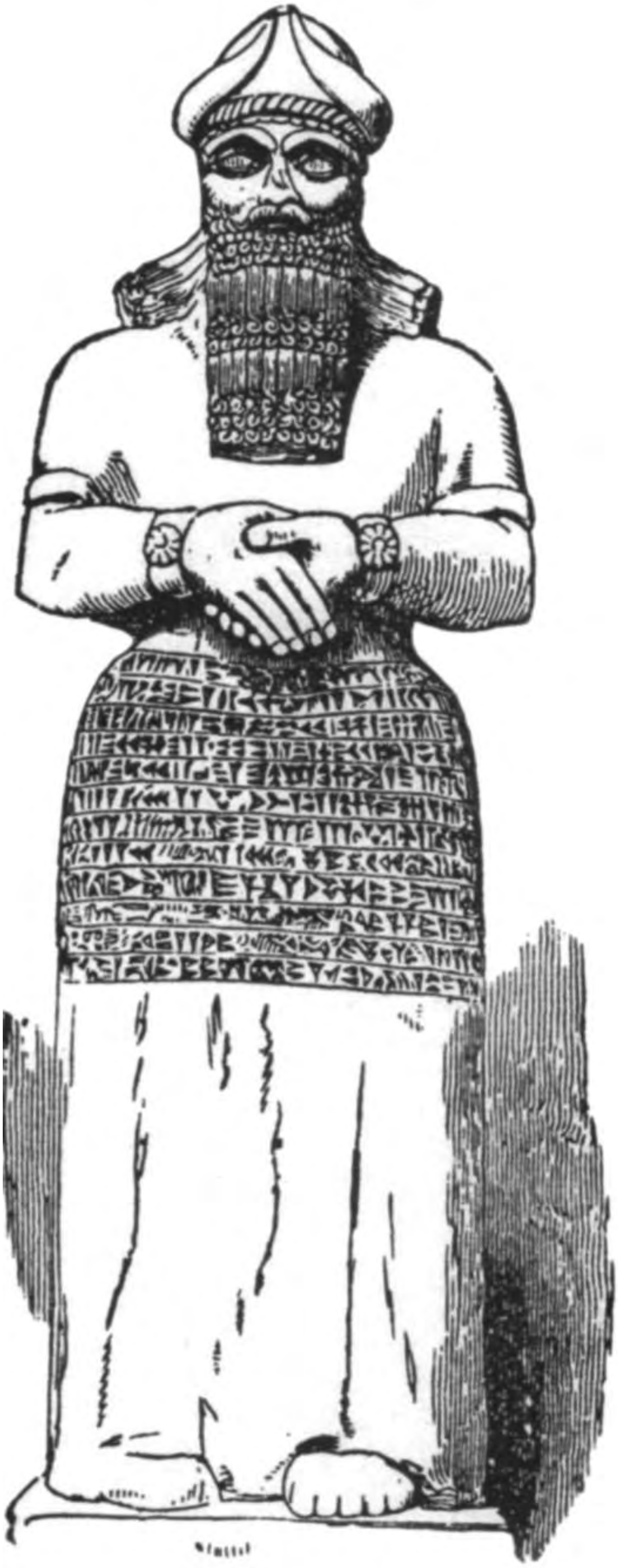

This drawing of the ancient Babylonian god, N*ebo,* from a dictionary of the Bible, makes him appear to be instructing adepts on the finer points of using hand signs or exchanging mysterious grips. In fact, Nebo's title was *"Interpreter of the gods,"* and he was said to be the god of learning and of letters. The biblical King Nebuchadnezzar in the book of Daniel was named after Nebo. This cut is in the British Museum, London.

Masonic Handshakes Illustrated in Official lodge Publications

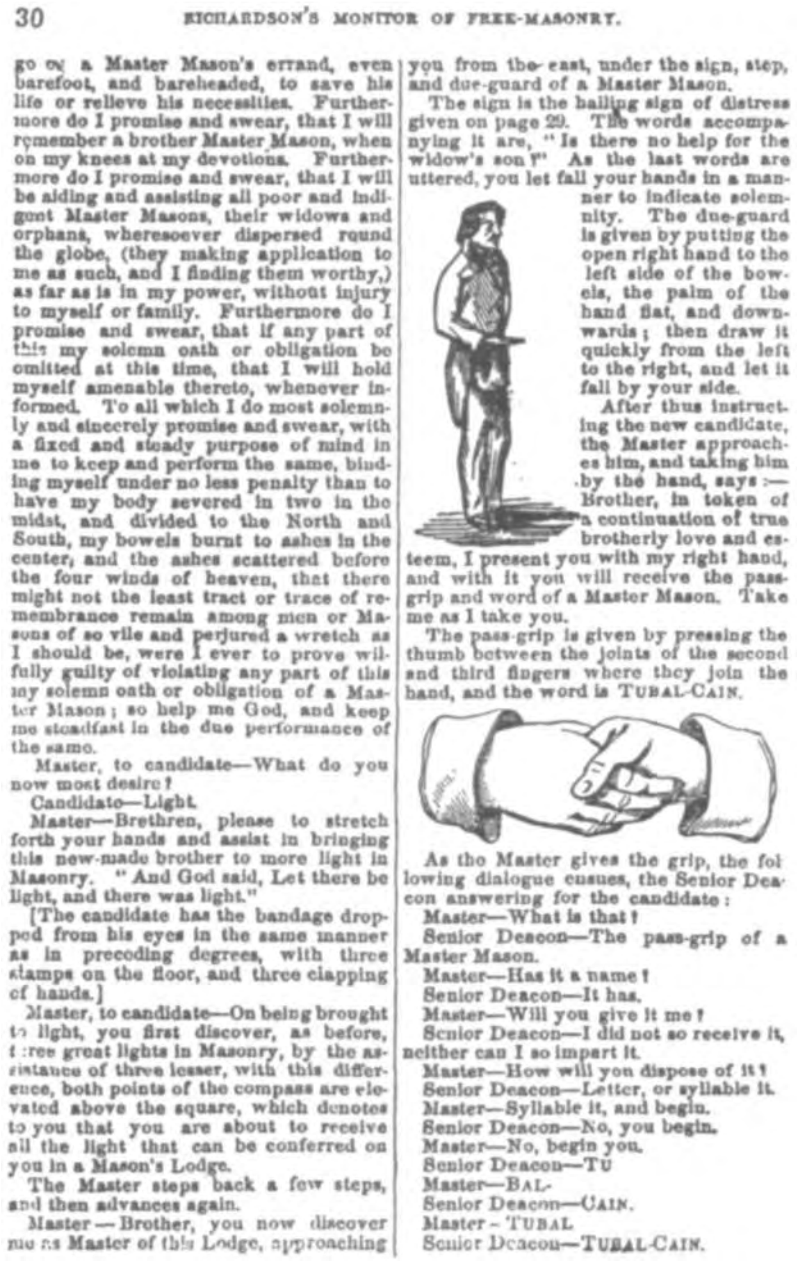

30 RICHARDSON'S MONITOR OF FREE-MASONRY.

go on a Master Mason's errand, even barefoot, and bareheaded, to save his life or relieve his necessities. Furthermore do I promise and swear, that I will remember a brother Master Mason, when on my knees at my devotions. Furthermore do I promise and swear, that I will be aiding and assisting all poor and indigent Master Masons, their widows and orphans, wheresoever dispersed round the globe, (they making application to me as such, and I finding them worthy,) as far as is in my power, without injury to myself or family. Furthermore do I promise and swear, that if any part of this my solemn oath or obligation be omitted at this time, that I will hold myself amenable thereto, whenever informed. To all which I do most solemnly and sincerely promise and swear, with a fixed and steady purpose of mind in me to keep and perform the same, binding myself under no less penalty than to have my body severed in two in the midst, and divided to the North and South, my bowels burnt to ashes in the center, and the ashes scattered before the four winds of heaven, that there might not the least tract or trace of remembrance remain among men or Masons of so vile and perjured a wretch as I should be, were I ever to prove wilfully guilty of violating any part of this my solemn oath or obligation of a Master Mason; so help me God, and keep me steadfast in the due performance of the same.

Master, to candidate—What do you now most desire?

Candidate—Light.

Master—Brethren, please to stretch forth your hands and assist in bringing this new-made brother to more light in Masonry. "And God said, Let there be light, and there was light."

[The candidate has the bandage dropped from his eyes in the same manner as in preceding degrees, with three stamps on the floor, and three clapping of hands.]

Master, to candidate—On being brought to light, you first discover, as before, three great lights in Masonry, by the assistance of three lesser, with this difference, both points of the compass are elevated above the square, which denotes to you that you are about to receive all the light that can be conferred on you in a Mason's Lodge.

The Master steps back a few steps, and then advances again.

Master—Brother, you now discover me as Master of this Lodge, approaching you from the east, under the sign, step, and due-guard of a Master Mason.

The sign is the hailing sign of distress given on page 29. The words accompanying it are, "Is there no help for the widow's son?" As the last words are uttered, you let fall your hands in a manner to indicate solemnity. The due-guard is given by putting the open right hand to the left side of the bowels, the palm of the hand flat, and downwards; then draw it quickly from the left to the right, and let it fall by your side.

After thus instructing the new candidate, the Master approaches him, and taking him by the hand, says:—Brother, in token of a continuation of true brotherly love and esteem, I present you with my right hand, and with it you will receive the pass-grip and word of a Master Mason. Take me as I take you.

The pass-grip is given by pressing the thumb between the joints of the second and third fingers where they join the hand, and the word is TUBAL-CAIN.

As the Master gives the grip, the following dialogue ensues, the Senior Deacon answering for the candidate:

Master—What is that?

Senior Deacon—The pass-grip of a Master Mason.

Master—Has it a name?

Senior Deacon—It has.

Master—Will you give it me?

Senior Deacon—I did not so receive it, neither can I so impart it.

Master—How will you dispose of it?

Senior Deacon—Letter, or syllable it.

Master—Syllable it, and begin.

Senior Deacon—No, you begin.

Master—No, begin you.

Senior Deacon—TU

Master—BAL-

Senior Deacon—CAIN.

Master—TUBAL

Senior Deacon—TUBAL-CAIN.

Masonic handshakes and grips from *Richardson's Monitor of Free-Masonry.*

More Masonic Handshakes and Grips

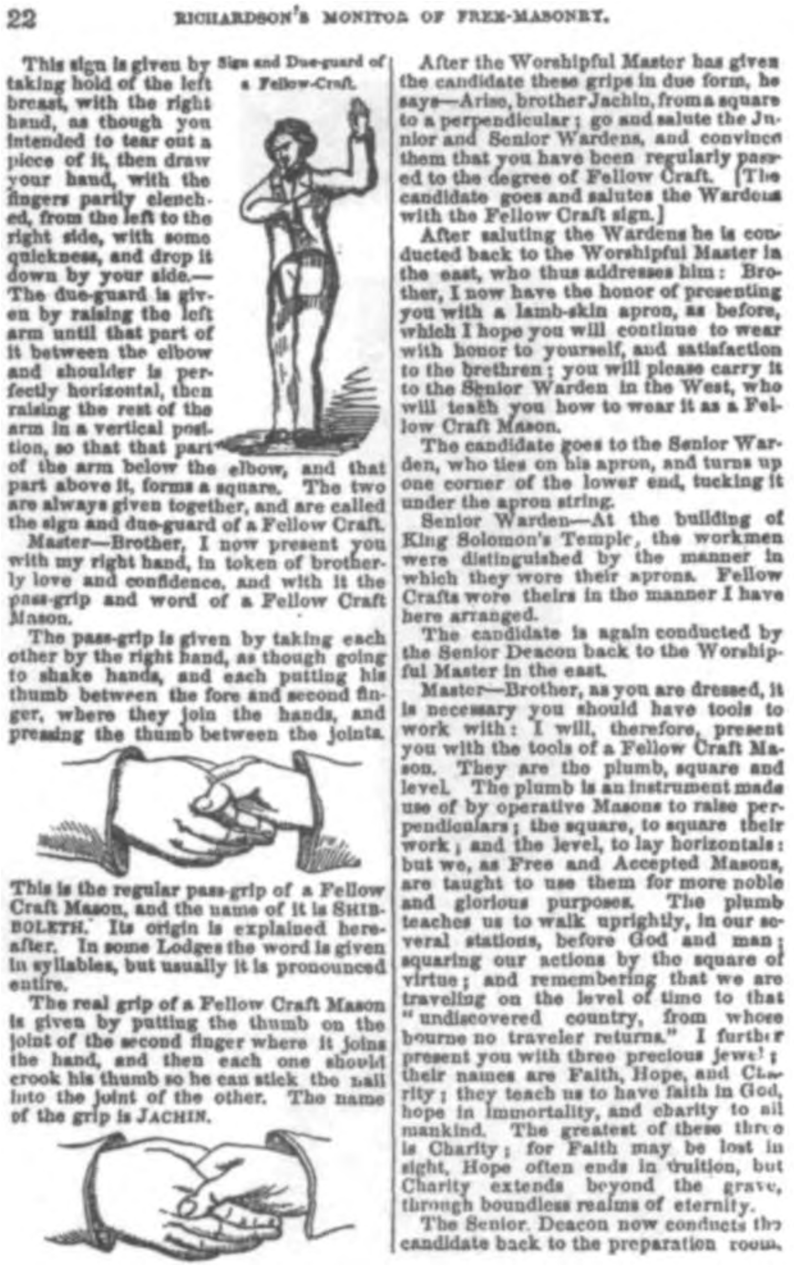

22 RICHARDSON'S MONITOR OF FREE-MASONRY.

Sign and Due-guard of a Fellow-Craft.

This sign is given by taking hold of the left breast, with the right hand, as though you intended to tear out a piece of it, then draw your hand, with the fingers partly clenched, from the left to the right side, with some quickness, and drop it down by your side.—The due-guard is given by raising the left arm until that part of it between the elbow and shoulder is perfectly horizontal, then raising the rest of the arm in a vertical position, so that that part of the arm below the elbow, and that part above it, forms a square. The two are always given together, and are called the sign and due-guard of a Fellow Craft.

Master—Brother, I now present you with my right hand, in token of brotherly love and confidence, and with it the pass-grip and word of a Fellow Craft Mason.

The pass-grip is given by taking each other by the right hand, as though going to shake hands, and each putting his thumb between the fore and second finger, where they join the hands, and pressing the thumb between the joints.

This is the regular pass-grip of a Fellow Craft Mason, and the name of it is SHIBBOLETH. Its origin is explained hereafter. In some Lodges the word is given in syllables, but usually it is pronounced entire.

The real grip of a Fellow Craft Mason is given by putting the thumb on the joint of the second finger where it joins the hand, and then each one should crook his thumb so he can stick the nail into the joint of the other. The name of the grip is JACHIN.

After the Worshipful Master has given the candidate these grips in due form, he says—Arise, brother Jachin, from a square to a perpendicular; go and salute the Junior and Senior Wardens, and convince them that you have been regularly passed to the degree of Fellow Craft. [The candidate goes and salutes the Wardens with the Fellow Craft sign.]

After saluting the Wardens he is conducted back to the Worshipful Master in the east, who thus addresses him: Brother, I now have the honor of presenting you with a lamb-skin apron, as before, which I hope you will continue to wear with honor to yourself, and satisfaction to the brethren; you will please carry it to the Senior Warden in the West, who will teach you how to wear it as a Fellow Craft Mason.

The candidate goes to the Senior Warden, who ties on his apron, and turns up one corner of the lower end, tucking it under the apron string.

Senior Warden—At the building of King Solomon's Temple, the workmen were distinguished by the manner in which they wore their aprons. Fellow Crafts wore theirs in the manner I have here arranged.

The candidate is again conducted by the Senior Deacon back to the Worshipful Master in the east.

Master—Brother, as you are dressed, it is necessary you should have tools to work with: I will, therefore, present you with the tools of a Fellow Craft Mason. They are the plumb, square and level. The plumb is an instrument made use of by operative Masons to raise perpendiculars; the square, to square their work; and the level, to lay horizontals: but we, as Free and Accepted Masons, are taught to use them for more noble and glorious purposes. The plumb teaches us to walk uprightly, in our several stations, before God and man; squaring our actions by the square of virtue; and remembering that we are traveling on the level of time to that "undiscovered country, from whose bourne no traveler returns." I further present you with three precious jewels; their names are Faith, Hope, and Charity; they teach us to have faith in God, hope in immortality, and charity to all mankind. The greatest of these three is Charity; for Faith may be lost in sight, Hope often ends in fruition, but Charity extends beyond the grave, through boundless realms of eternity.

The Senior Deacon now conducts the candidate back to the preparation room.

And More Masonic Handshakes

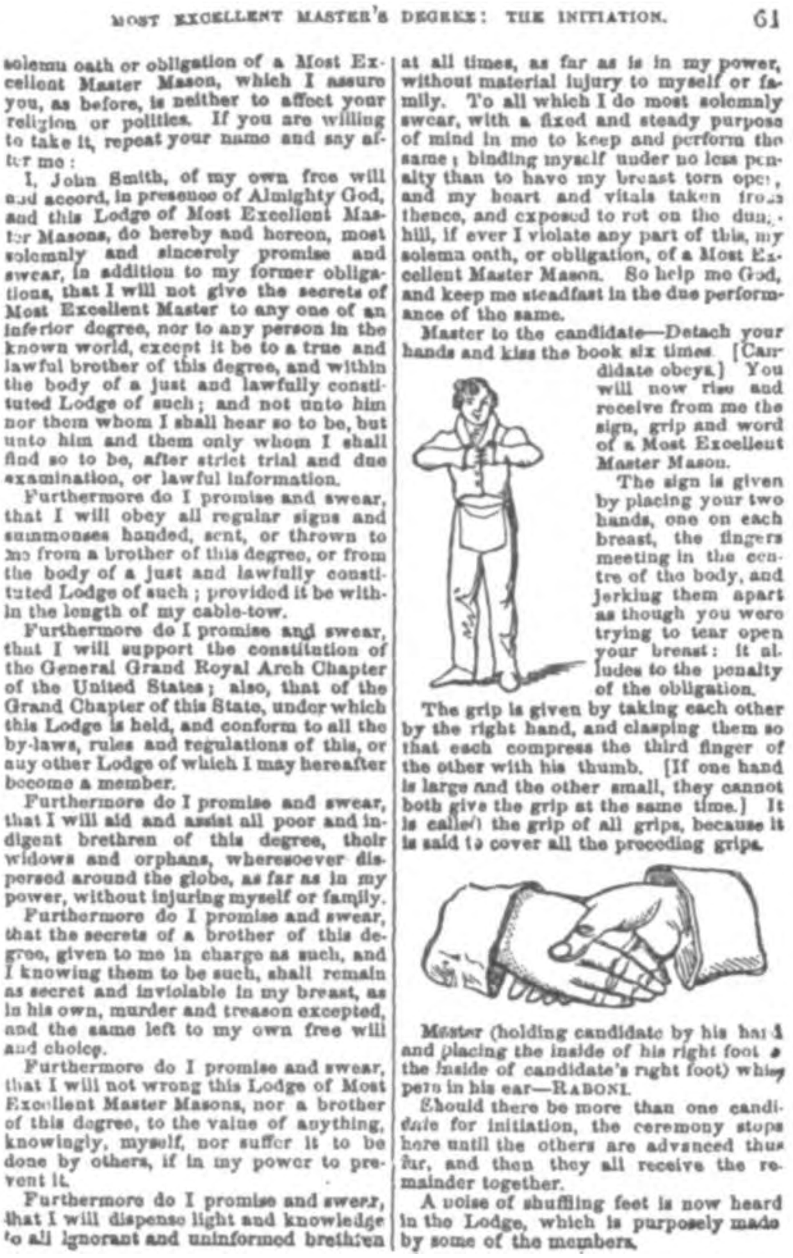

MOST EXCELLENT MASTER'S DEGREE: THE INITIATION. 61

solemn oath or obligation of a Most Excellent Master Mason, which I assure you, as before, is neither to affect your religion or politics. If you are willing to take it, repeat your name and say after me:

I, John Smith, of my own free will and accord, in presence of Almighty God, and this Lodge of Most Excellent Master Masons, do hereby and hereon, most solemnly and sincerely promise and swear, in addition to my former obligations, that I will not give the secrets of Most Excellent Master to any one of an inferior degree, nor to any person in the known world, except it be to a true and lawful brother of this degree, and within the body of a just and lawfully constituted Lodge of such; and not unto him nor them whom I shall hear so to be, but unto him and them only whom I shall find so to be, after strict trial and due examination, or lawful information.

Furthermore do I promise and swear, that I will obey all regular signs and summonses handed, sent, or thrown to me from a brother of this degree, or from the body of a just and lawfully constituted Lodge of such; provided it be within the length of my cable-tow.

Furthermore do I promise and swear, that I will support the constitution of the General Grand Royal Arch Chapter of the United States; also, that of the Grand Chapter of this State, under which this Lodge is held, and conform to all the by-laws, rules and regulations of this, or any other Lodge of which I may hereafter become a member.

Furthermore do I promise and swear, that I will aid and assist all poor and indigent brethren of this degree, their widows and orphans, wheresoever dispersed around the globe, as far as in my power, without injuring myself or family.

Furthermore do I promise and swear, that the secrets of a brother of this degree, given to me in charge as such, and I knowing them to be such, shall remain as secret and inviolable in my breast, as in his own, murder and treason excepted, and the same left to my own free will and choice.

Furthermore do I promise and swear, that I will not wrong this Lodge of Most Excellent Master Masons, nor a brother of this degree, to the value of anything, knowingly, myself, nor suffer it to be done by others, if in my power to prevent it.

Furthermore do I promise and swear, that I will dispense light and knowledge to all ignorant and uninformed brethren at all times, as far as is in my power, without material injury to myself or family. To all which I do most solemnly swear, with a fixed and steady purpose of mind in me to keep and perform the same; binding myself under no less penalty than to have my breast torn open, and my heart and vitals taken from thence, and exposed to rot on the dunghill, if ever I violate any part of this, my solemn oath, or obligation, of a Most Excellent Master Mason. So help me God, and keep me steadfast in the due performance of the same.

Master to the candidate—Detach your hands and kiss the book six times. [Candidate obeys.] You will now rise and receive from me the sign, grip and word of a Most Excellent Master Mason.

The sign is given by placing your two hands, one on each breast, the fingers meeting in the centre of the body, and jerking them apart as though you were trying to tear open your breast: it alludes to the penalty of the obligation.

The grip is given by taking each other by the right hand, and clasping them so that each compress the third finger of the other with his thumb. [If one hand is large and the other small, they cannot both give the grip at the same time.] It is called the grip of all grips, because it is said to cover all the preceding grips.

Master (holding candidate by his hand and placing the inside of his right foot to the inside of candidate's right foot) whispers in his ear—RABONI.

Should there be more than one candidate for initiation, the ceremony stops here until the others are advanced thus far, and then they all receive the remainder together.

A noise of shuffling feet is now heard in the Lodge, which is purposely made by some of the members.

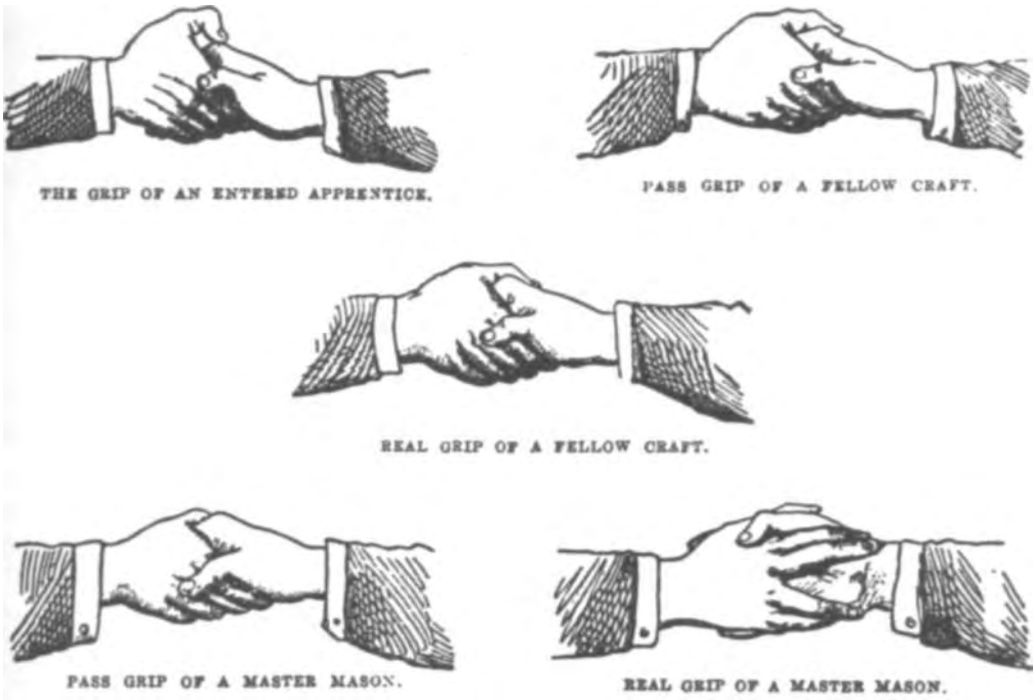

THE GRIP OF AN ENTERED APPRENTICE.

PASS GRIP OF A FELLOW CRAFT.

REAL GRIP OF A FELLOW CRAFT.

PASS GRIP OF A MASTER MASON.

REAL GRIP OF A MASTER MASON.

Masonic handshakes and grips from *Duncan s Masonic Ritual and Monitor,* 3d Ed.)

Excerpt from the book, *Mormonism's Temple of Doom,* by William Schnoebelen and James Spencer. The two authors are both ex-Mormons. In their book, they show the remarkable parallels between the secret signs, grips, and rituals of Freemasonry and those of the Mormon (LDS) Church. Mormonism's founder, Joseph Smith, was a Mason, and all Masonic authorities today acknowledge the similarity of the two groups' rituals, symbols, signs, and doctrines.

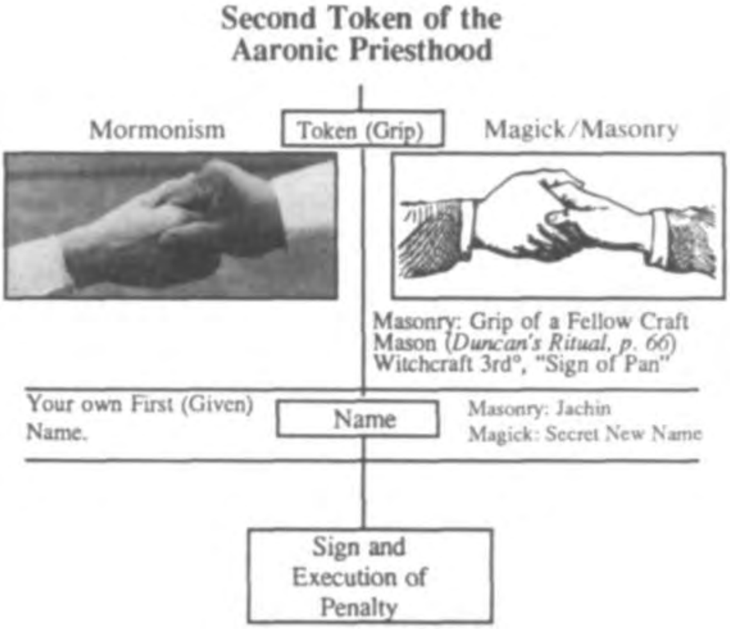
Second Token of the Aaronic Priesthood
Mormonism
Token (Grip)
Magick/Masonry
Masonry: Grip of a Fellow Craft
Mason (Duncan's Ritual, p. 66)
Witchcraft 3rd°, "Sign of Pan"
Your own First (Given) Name.
Name
Masonry: Jachin
Magick: Secret New Name
Sign and Execution of Penalty

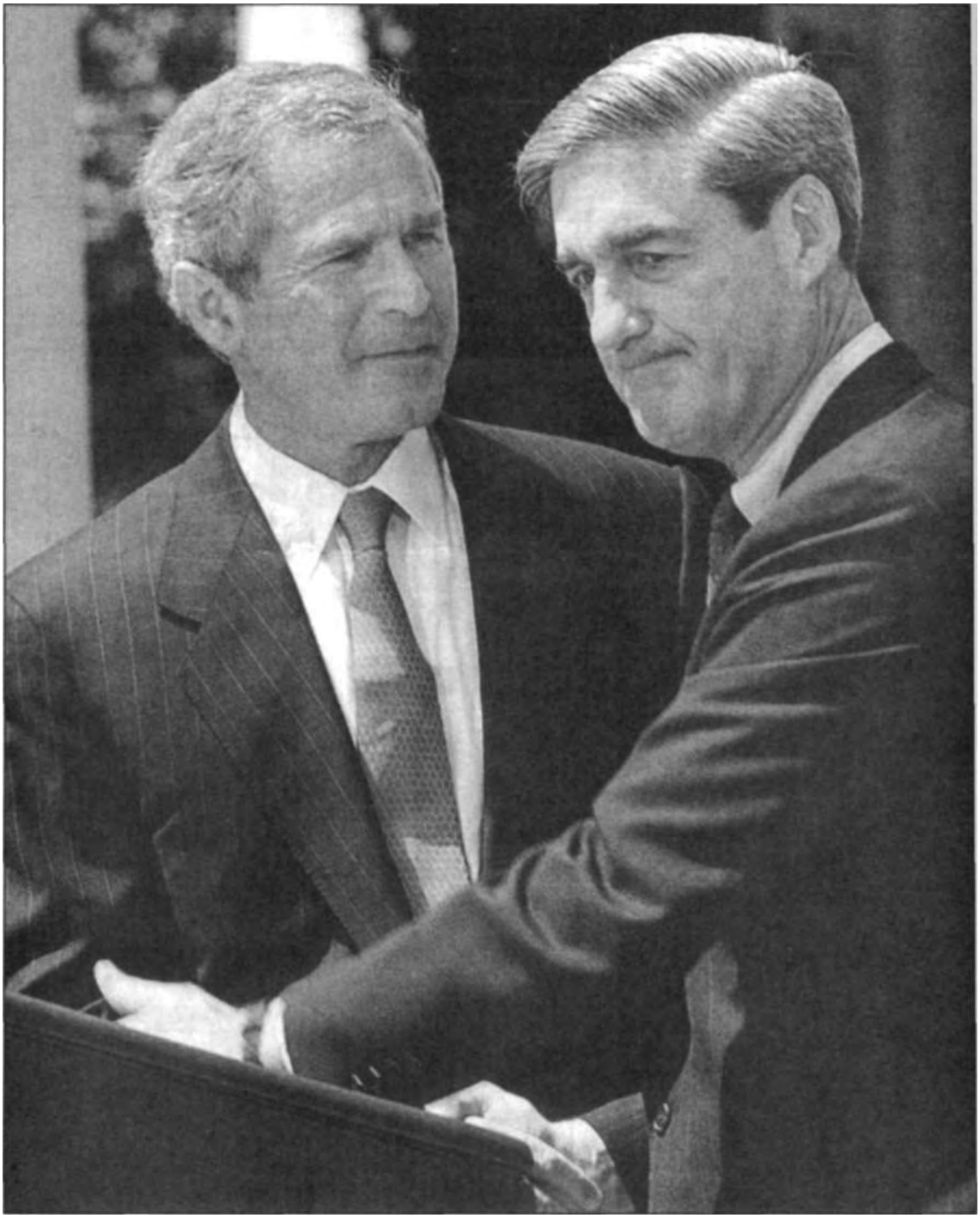

President George W. Bush and FBI Director nominee Robert Mueller exchange grip behind podium. (Photo: The *Washington Post,* July 22, 2001)

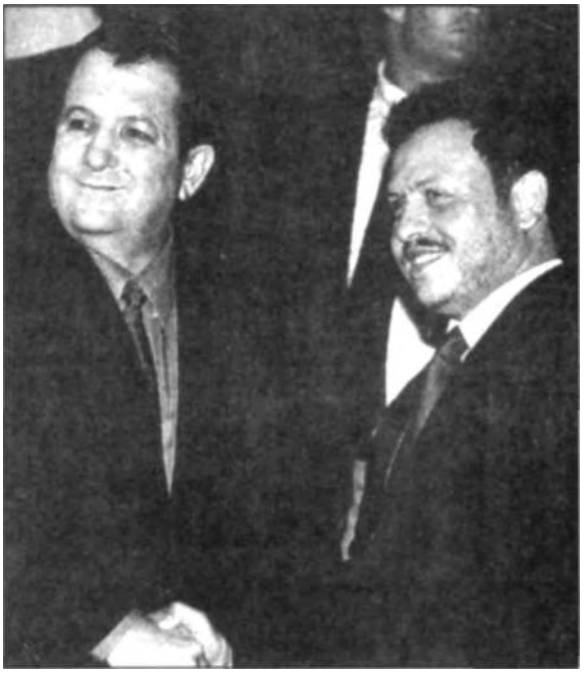

In August, 2000, Prime Minister Ehud Barak of Israel in a clear Masonic hand grip with Jordan's King Abdullah as they meet in Amman, Jordan. All Prime Ministers of Israel since the formation of that nation in 1948 have been initiates of the Masonic Lodge. All have been recruited into the Order of the Illuminati, also. (Photo: Associated Press, in *Austin American-Statesman*, August 17, 2000, p. A3)

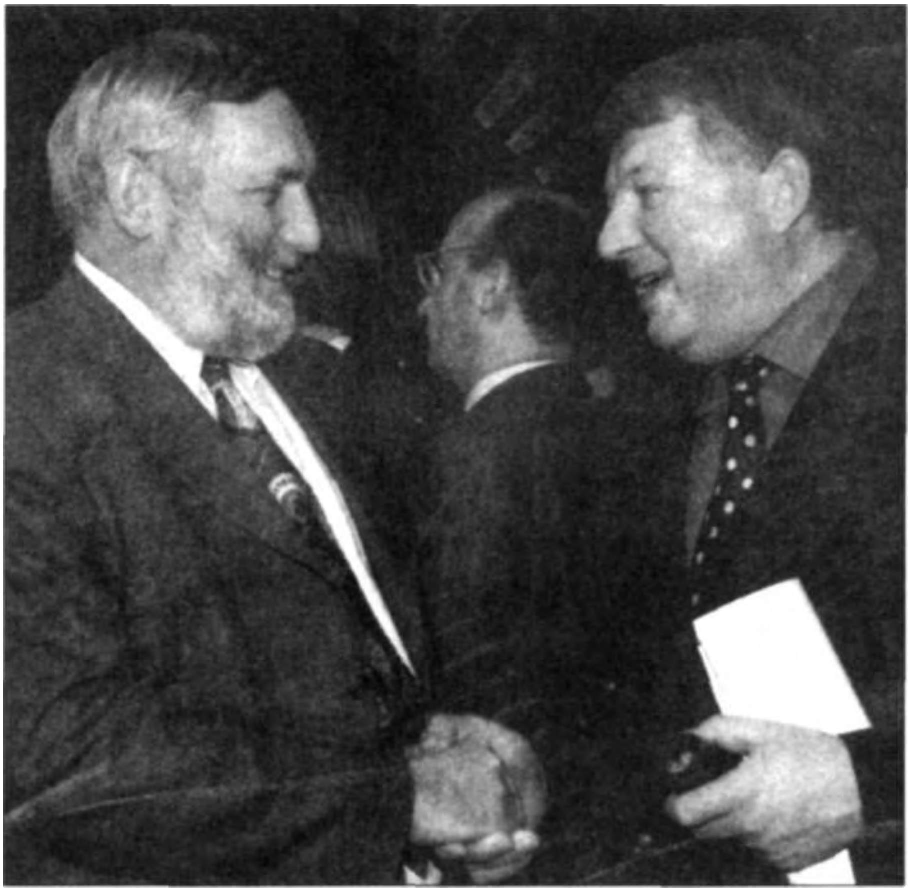

European Farm Commissioner Franz Fischler (left) in handshake with German Agriculture Minister Karl Heinz Funke at a European Community session in Brussels, Belgium. (Photo: *Spotlight* newspaper, December 7, 1998)

Nelson Mandela, political leader of South Africa, shakes hands (Masonic) with South African Communist Party leader Oliver Tambo. Mandela, lionized by the Western Press, is a life long Communist activist and a known terrorist criminal. Mandela acquired power at the helm of the South African government by arrangement with the heads of the Illuminati s Rockefeller, Rothschild, and Oppenheimer dynasties. In exchange, the Illuminati cartel holds exclusive rights to South Africa's mineral rich assets of diamonds, gold, and platinum. (Photo: from the book, *In The Words Of Nelson Mandela*, published by Carol Publishing Group, York, 1998)

New York Governor George Pataki and New York State Senator Joseph Bruno meet in December 2003 with Tetsuro Higashi, president of Tokyo Electron Ltd., to announce a new $300 million research and development facility. (Newsletter of State Senator Joseph L. Bruno, December 2003, p. 1)

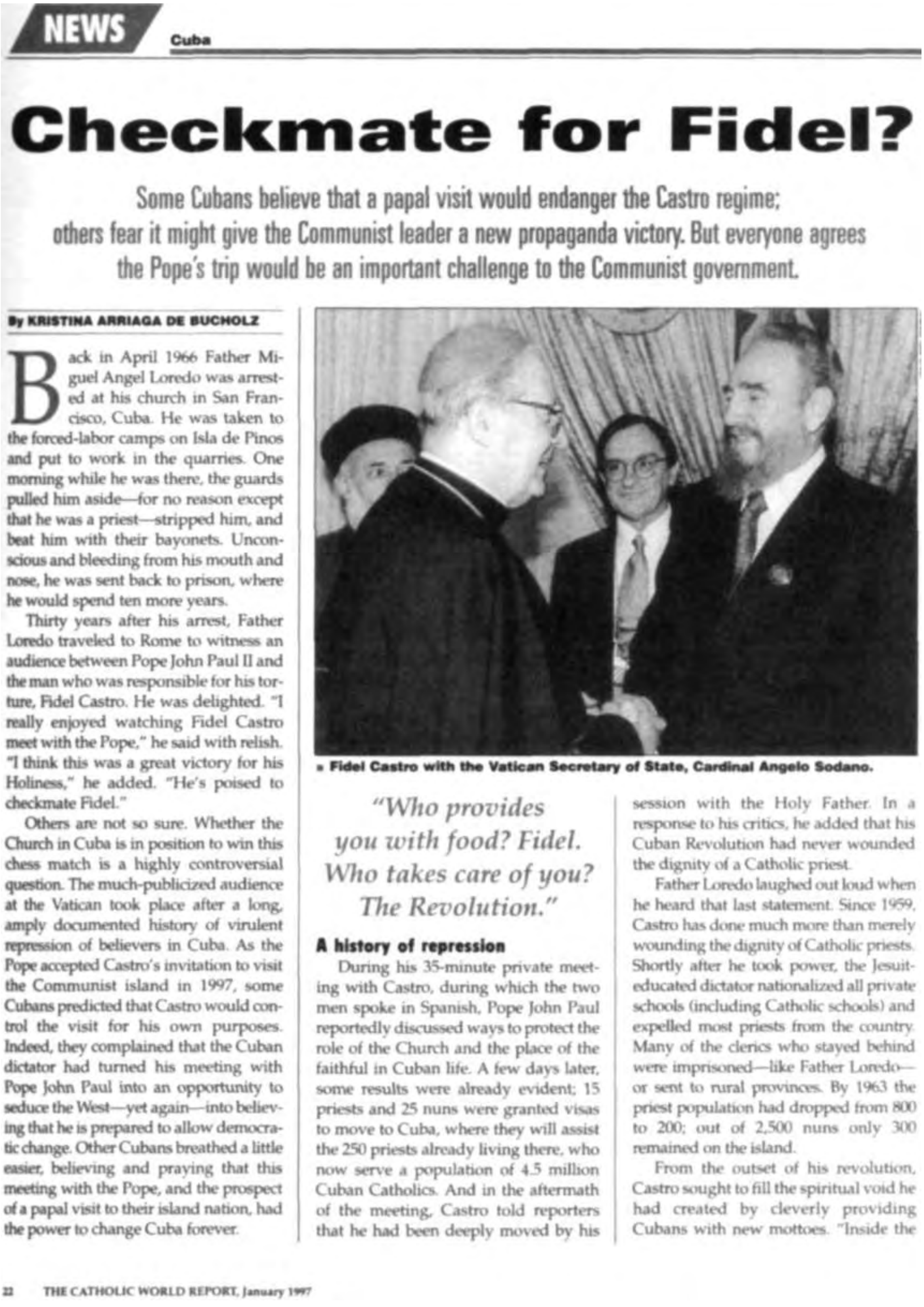

NEWS Cuba

Checkmate for Fidel?

Some Cubans believe that a papal visit would endanger the Castro regime; others fear it might give the Communist leader a new propaganda victory. But everyone agrees the Pope's trip would be an important challenge to the Communist government.

By KRISTINA ARRIAGA DE BUCHOLZ

Back in April 1966 Father Miguel Angel Loredo was arrested at his church in San Francisco, Cuba. He was taken to the forced-labor camps on Isla de Pinos and put to work in the quarries. One morning while he was there, the guards pulled him aside—for no reason except that he was a priest—stripped him, and beat him with their bayonets. Unconscious and bleeding from his mouth and nose, he was sent back to prison, where he would spend ten more years.

Thirty years after his arrest, Father Loredo traveled to Rome to witness an audience between Pope John Paul II and the man who was responsible for his torture, Fidel Castro. He was delighted. "I really enjoyed watching Fidel Castro meet with the Pope," he said with relish. "I think this was a great victory for his Holiness," he added. "He's poised to checkmate Fidel."

Others are not so sure. Whether the Church in Cuba is in position to win this chess match is a highly controversial question. The much-publicized audience at the Vatican took place after a long, amply documented history of virulent repression of believers in Cuba. As the Pope accepted Castro's invitation to visit the Communist island in 1997, some Cubans predicted that Castro would control the visit for his own purposes. Indeed, they complained that the Cuban dictator had turned his meeting with Pope John Paul into an opportunity to seduce the West—yet again—into believing that he is prepared to allow democratic change. Other Cubans breathed a little easier, believing and praying that this meeting with the Pope, and the prospect of a papal visit to their island nation, had the power to change Cuba forever.

▪ **Fidel Castro with the Vatican Secretary of State, Cardinal Angelo Sodano.**

> *"Who provides you with food? Fidel. Who takes care of you? The Revolution."*

A history of repression

During his 35-minute private meeting with Castro, during which the two men spoke in Spanish, Pope John Paul reportedly discussed ways to protect the role of the Church and the place of the faithful in Cuban life. A few days later, some results were already evident; 15 priests and 25 nuns were granted visas to move to Cuba, where they will assist the 250 priests already living there, who now serve a population of 4.5 million Cuban Catholics. And in the aftermath of the meeting, Castro told reporters that he had been deeply moved by his session with the Holy Father. In a response to his critics, he added that his Cuban Revolution had never wounded the dignity of a Catholic priest.

Father Loredo laughed out loud when he heard that last statement. Since 1959, Castro has done much more than merely wounding the dignity of Catholic priests. Shortly after he took power, the Jesuit-educated dictator nationalized all private schools (including Catholic schools) and expelled most priests from the country. Many of the clerics who stayed behind were imprisoned—like Father Loredo—or sent to rural provinces. By 1963 the priest population had dropped from 800 to 200; out of 2,500 nuns only 300 remained on the island.

From the outset of his revolution, Castro sought to fill the spiritual void he had created by cleverly providing Cubans with new mottoes. "Inside the

22 THE CATHOLIC WORLD REPORT, January 1997

Fidel Castro (right) in a Masonic grip with Vatican Secretary of State, Cardinal Angelo Sodano. The Cuban dictator is a lifelong Freemason and is also a member of the secret order known as the Odd Fellows. Almost all the Vatican curia are Masons and cabalists and many are also Rosicrucians. (Photo: *The Catholic World Report,* January 1997)

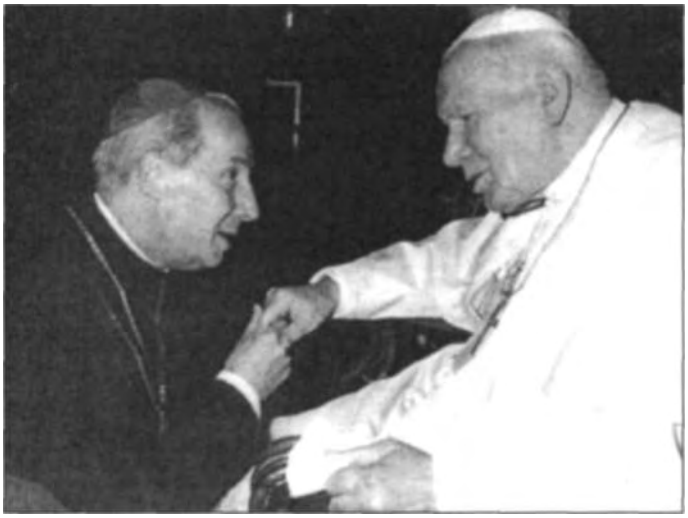

Pope John Paul II in a Masonic grip with a Cardinal at the Vatican. Notice the pressure on the knuckle.

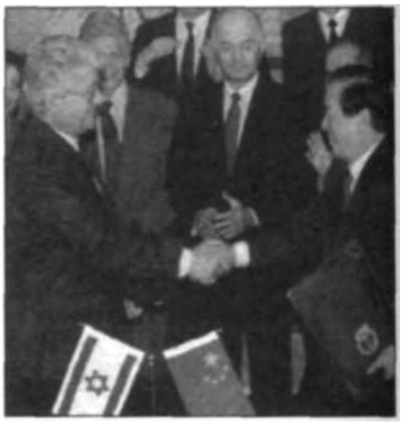

Israeli Foreign Minister David Levy **(left),** in Masonic grip with Red Chinese counterpart in Beijing, China in March, 1992 as a bemused official looks on.

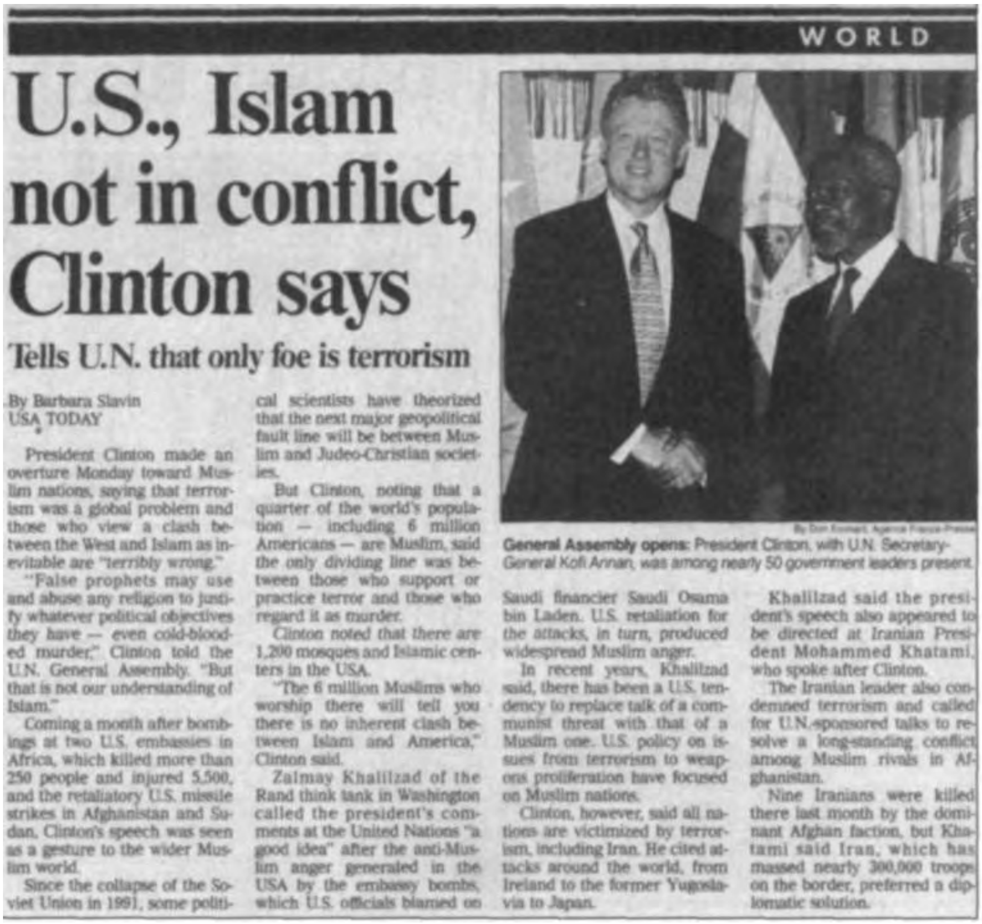

WORLD

U.S., Islam not in conflict, Clinton says

Tells U.N. that only foe is terrorism

By Barbara Slavin
USA TODAY

President Clinton made an overture Monday toward Muslim nations, saying that terrorism was a global problem and those who view a clash between the West and Islam as inevitable are "terribly wrong."

"False prophets may use and abuse any religion to justify whatever political objectives they have — even cold-blooded murder," Clinton told the U.N. General Assembly. "But that is not our understanding of Islam."

Coming a month after bombings at two U.S. embassies in Africa, which killed more than 250 people and injured 5,500, and the retaliatory U.S. missile strikes in Afghanistan and Sudan, Clinton's speech was seen as a gesture to the wider Muslim world.

Since the collapse of the Soviet Union in 1991, some political scientists have theorized that the next major geopolitical fault line will be between Muslim and Judeo-Christian societies.

But Clinton, noting that a quarter of the world's population — including 6 million Americans — are Muslim, said the only dividing line was between those who support or practice terror and those who regard it as murder.

Clinton noted that there are 1,200 mosques and Islamic centers in the USA.

"The 6 million Muslims who worship there will tell you there is no inherent clash between Islam and America," Clinton said.

Zalmay Khalilzad of the Rand think tank in Washington called the president's comments at the United Nations "a good idea" after the anti-Muslim anger generated in the USA by the embassy bombs, which U.S. officials blamed on Saudi financier Saudi Osama bin Laden. U.S. retaliation for the attacks, in turn, produced widespread Muslim anger.

By Don Emmert, Agence France-Presse

General Assembly opens: President Clinton, with U.N. Secretary-General Kofi Annan, was among nearly 50 government leaders present.

In recent years, Khalilzad said, there has been a U.S. tendency to replace talk of a communist threat with that of a Muslim one. U.S. policy on issues from terrorism to weapons proliferation have focused on Muslim nations.

Clinton, however, said all nations are victimized by terrorism, including Iran. He cited attacks around the world, from Ireland to the former Yugoslavia to Japan.

Khalilzad said the president's speech also appeared to be directed at Iranian President Mohammed Khatami, who spoke after Clinton.

The Iranian leader also condemned terrorism and called for U.N.-sponsored talks to resolve a long-standing conflict among Muslim rivals in Afghanistan.

Nine Iranians were killed there last month by the dominant Afghan faction, but Khatami said Iran, which has massed nearly 300,000 troops on the border, preferred a diplomatic solution.

U.S. President Clinton receives Masonic grip from United Nations Secretary-General Kofi Annan at opening of the UN General Assembly. In this staged photo opportunity, aides for the two world leaders arranged the national flags so that Nicaragua's Illuminati-designed flag, which has a (male) triangle, a solar image, and all-seeing eye as its focus would be most prominently displayed. Kofi Annan is married to a white woman, a Rothschild heiress.(Photo: *USA Today,* September *22,* 1998, p. 11A)

Great Britain's Duke of Kent, head of the United Lodge, the largest Masonic fraternity in England, holds the title, The Most Worshipful Grand Master. The Duke is sharing a Masonic grip on visit to Cape Town, South Africa.

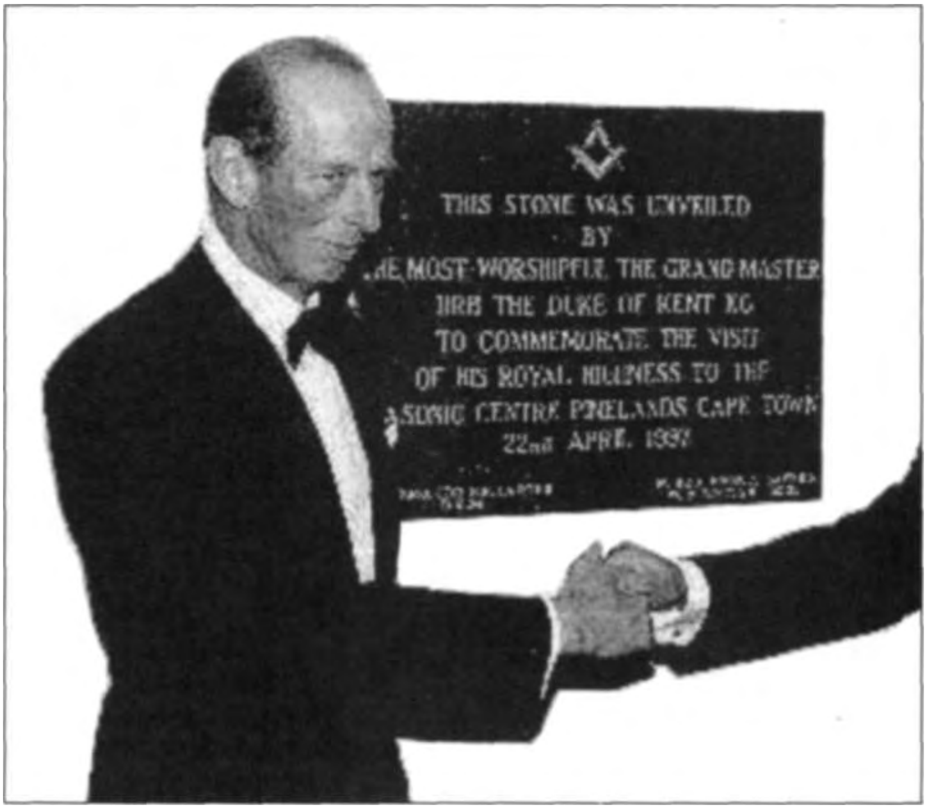
THIS STONE WAS UNVEILED
BY
HE MOST WORSHIPFUL THE GRAND MASTER
HRH THE DUKE OF KENT KG
TO COMMEMORATE THE VISIT
OF HIS ROYAL HIGHNESS TO THE
SONIC CENTRE PINELANDS CAPE TOWN
22nd APRIL

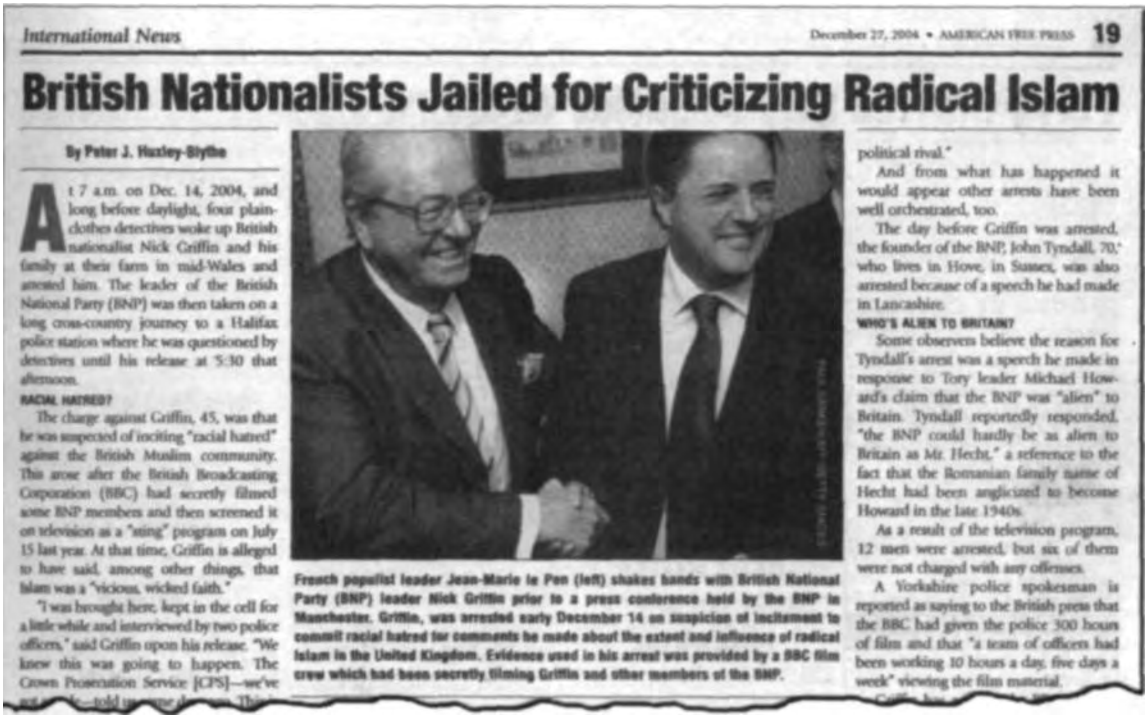

International News

December 27, 2004 • AMERICAN FREE PRESS 19

British Nationalists Jailed for Criticizing Radical Islam

By Peter J. Huxley-Blythe

At 7 a.m. on Dec. 14, 2004, and long before daylight, four plainclothes detectives woke up British nationalist Nick Griffin and his family at their farm in mid-Wales and arrested him. The leader of the British National Party (BNP) was then taken on a long cross-country journey to a Halifax police station where he was questioned by detectives until his release at 5:30 that afternoon.

RACIAL HATRED?

The charge against Griffin, 45, was that he was suspected of inciting "racial hatred" against the British Muslim community. This arose after the British Broadcasting Corporation (BBC) had secretly filmed some BNP members and then screened it on television as a "sting" program on July 15 last year. At that time, Griffin is allegrd to have said, among other things, that Islam was a "vicious, wicked faith."

"I was brought here, kept in the cell for a little while and interviewed by two police officers," said Griffin upon his release. "We knew this was going to happen. The Crown Prosecution Service [CPS]—we've

French populist leader Jean-Marie le Pen (left) shakes hands with British National Party (BNP) leader Nick Griffin prior to a press conference held by the BNP in Manchester. Griffin, was arrested early December 14 on suspicion of incitement to commit racial hatred for comments he made about the extent and influence of radical Islam in the United Kingdom. Evidence used in his arrest was provided by a BBC film crew which had been secretly filming Griffin and other members of the BNP.

political rival."

And from what has happened it would appear other arrests have been well orchestrated, too.

The day before Griffin was arrested, the founder of the BNP, John Tyndall, 70,' who lives in Hove, in Sussex, was also arrested because of a speech he had made in Lancashire.

WHO'S ALIEN TO BRITAIN?

Some observers believe the reason for Tyndall's arrest was a speech he made in response to Tory leader Michael Howard's claim that the BNP was "alien" to Britain. Tyndall reportedly responded, "the BNP could hardly be as alien to Britain as Mr. Hecht," a reference to the fact that the Romanian family name of Hecht had been anglicized to become Howard in the late 1940s.

As a result of the television program, 12 men were arrested, but six of them were not charged with any offenses.

A Yorkshire police spokesman is reported as saying to the British press that the BBC had given the police 300 hours of film and that "a team of officers had been working 10 hours a day, five days a week" viewing the film material.

Frenchman Jean-Marie le Pen (member of Paris' Grand Orient Lodge) warmly welcomes Masonic brother Nick Griffin, leader of the British National Party (BNP). Jean-Marie le Pen, head of a supposed right-wing populist party in France, is oft criticized in that country's press for what they say are his anti-Semitic views. In fact, by this hand grip and by other clear Masonic gestures he has made publicly, it appears that le Pen is a covert Mason, which would make him more akin to Zionism and its Communist Hegelian philosophy.

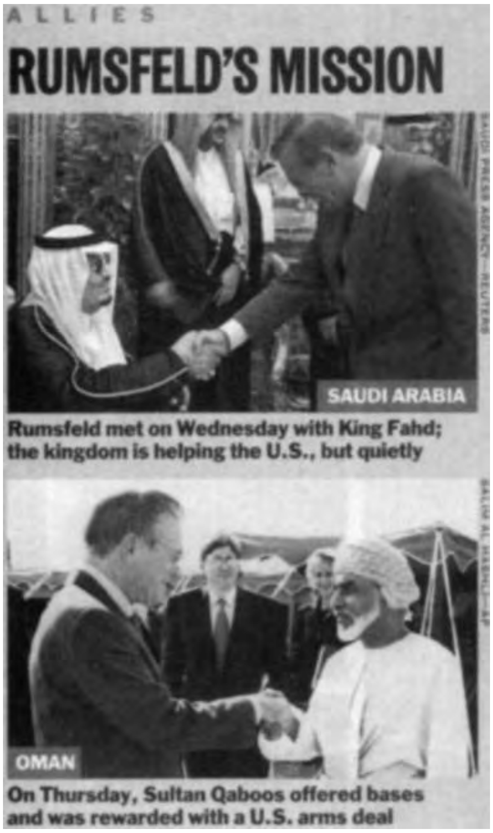

ALLIES

RUMSFELD'S MISSION

SAUDI ARABIA

Rumsfeld met on Wednesday with King Fahd; the kingdom is helping the U.S., but quietly

OMAN

On Thursday, Sultan Qaboos offered bases and was rewarded with a U.S. arms deal

Secretary of State Donald Rumsfeld in the Bush Administration gives coded handshake to Saudi Arabia's King Fahd (top) and Oman's Sultan Qaboos (below). *(Time* magazine, October 15, 2001)

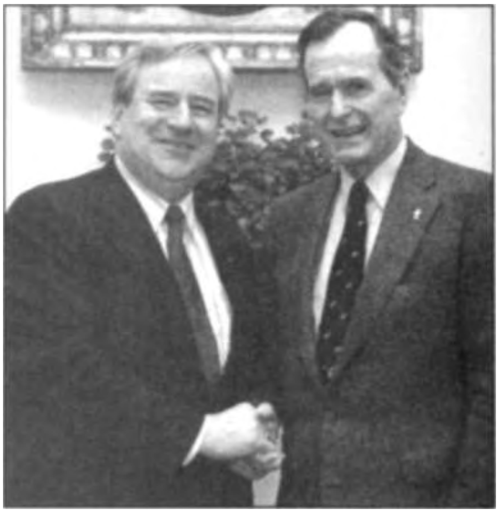

Jerry Falwell, Baptist hero, in a Masonic grip with Skull & Bones alumnus, President George H. W. Bush, at the White House in 1991. Falwell claims to be a pro-life advocate but never complained when Senior Bush nominated abortion supporters like Judge David Souter to the U.S. Supreme Court and other federal posts.

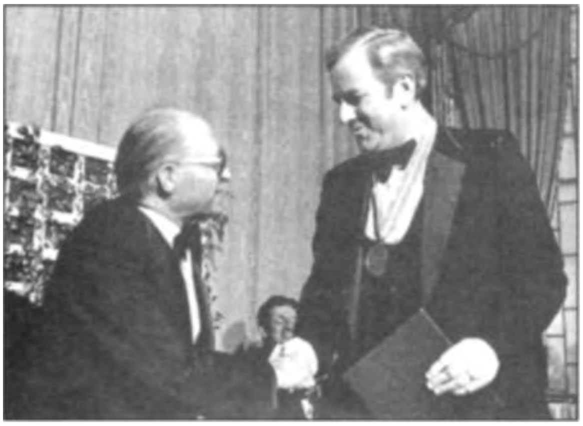

Israeli Prime Minister Menachem Begin (left) a dwarfish terrorist thug who went on to become Israel's Prime Minister, shares a Masonic hand grip with one of the "brethren," Moral Majority leader preacher Jerry Falwell. Falwell received the Jabotinsky Award for his devoted efforts to oppress the Palestinian people while promoting Jewish racial supremacy. Jabotinsky, the man whom this award was named after, was a pro-Communist Socialist/Zionist. Falwell also received a multimillion dollar executive jet as a gift from Israel, a nation that receives from five to ten billion in free foreign aid money each year from American taxpayers. In effect, Begin and Israel stole money from the U.S.A. taxpayers and funneled it to Falwell.

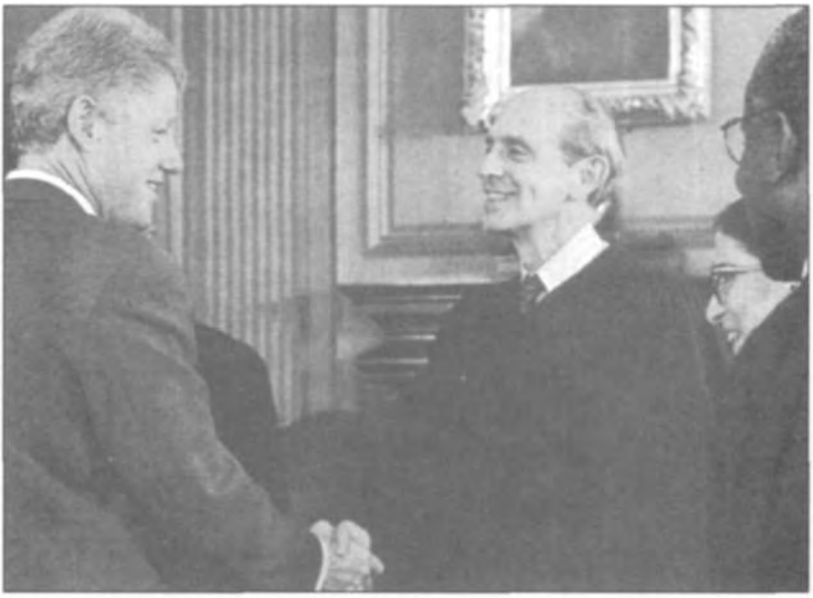

President Clinton in a Masonic grip with Supreme Court Justice Stephen Breyer. Breyer, a devout cabalistic Jew, was nominated by Clinton to the Supreme Court. To the right of Breyer is Justice Ruth Bader Ginsberg, also a cabalistic and Talmudic Jew and again a Clinton appointee. (Photo: *The Cincinnati Post,* October 1, 1994)

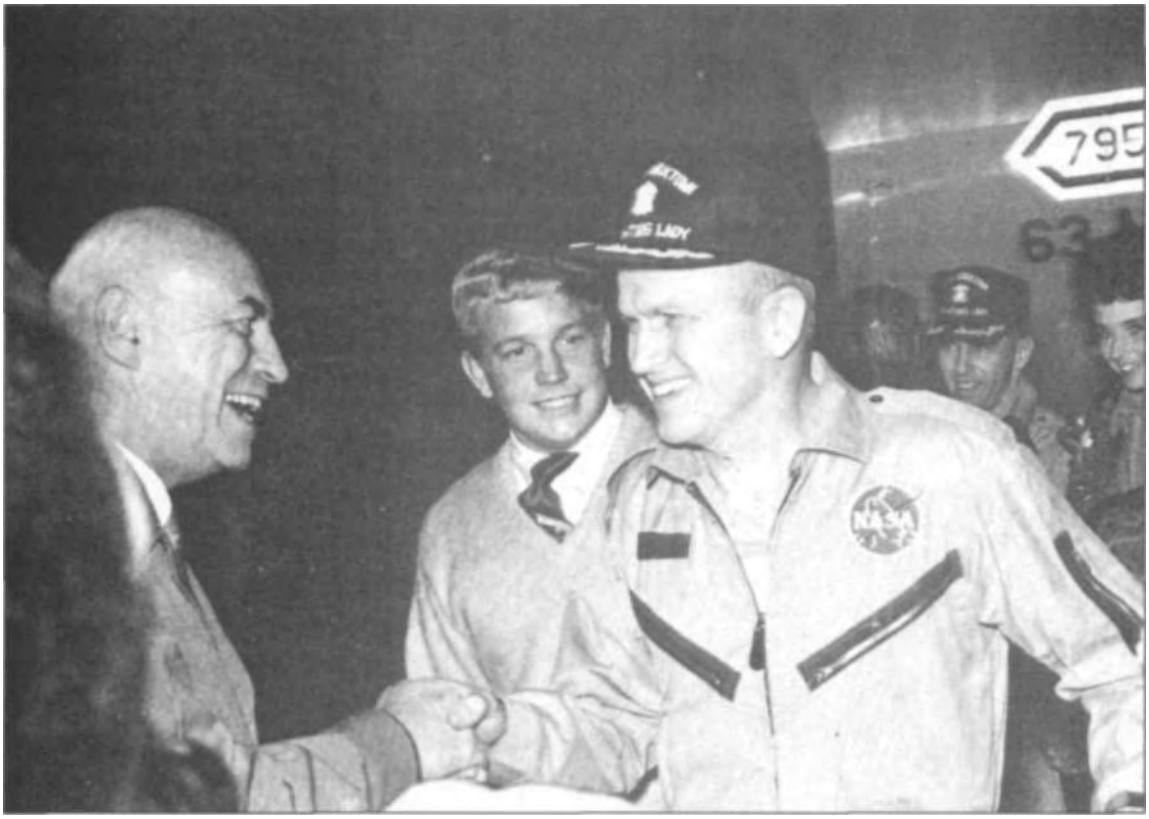

Apollo 8 crewman Frank Borman and a top NASA manager in a Masonic hand grip.

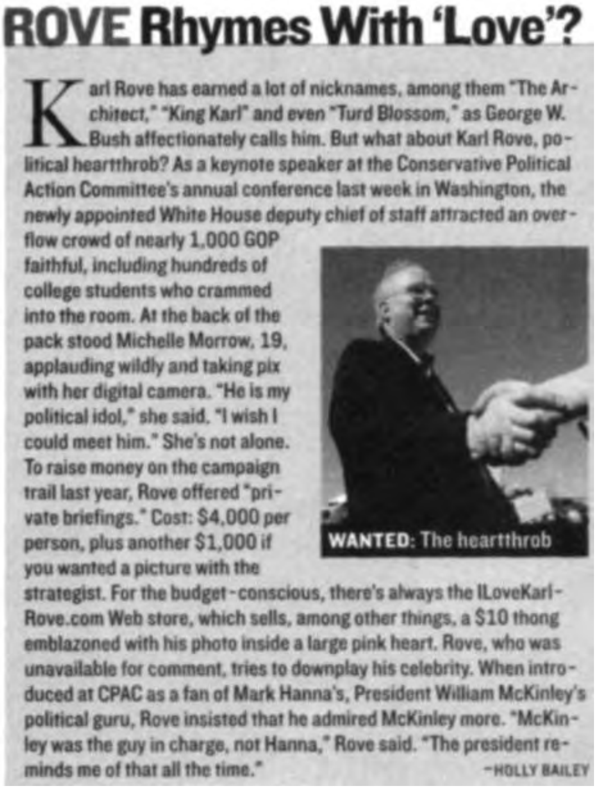

ROVE Rhymes With 'Love'?

Karl Rove has earned a lot of nicknames, among them "The Architect," "King Karl" and even "Turd Blossom," as George W. Bush affectionately calls him. But what about Karl Rove, political heartthrob? As a keynote speaker at the Conservative Political Action Committee's annual conference last week in Washington, the newly appointed White House deputy chief of staff attracted an overflow crowd of nearly 1,000 GOP faithful, including hundreds of college students who crammed into the room. At the back of the pack stood Michelle Morrow, 19, applauding wildly and taking pix with her digital camera. "He is my political idol," she said. "I wish I could meet him." She's not alone. To raise money on the campaign trail last year, Rove offered "private briefings." Cost: $4,000 per person, plus another $1,000 if you wanted a picture with the strategist. For the budget-conscious, there's always the ILoveKarlRove.com Web store, which sells, among other things, a $10 thong emblazoned with his photo inside a large pink heart. Rove, who was unavailable for comment, tries to downplay his celebrity. When introduced at CPAC as a fan of Mark Hanna's, President William McKinley's political guru, Rove insisted that he admired McKinley more. "McKinley was the guy in charge, not Hanna," Rove said. "The president reminds me of that all the time."

—HOLLY BAILEY

WANTED: The heartthrob

Karl Rove, top White House advisor to President George W. Bush, sharing a Masonic connection. (Photo: *Newsweek*, February *20*, 2005)

French President Jacques Chirac, Masonic initiate of Paris' Grand Orient Lodge, with Irish Prime Minister Bertie Ahern (left).

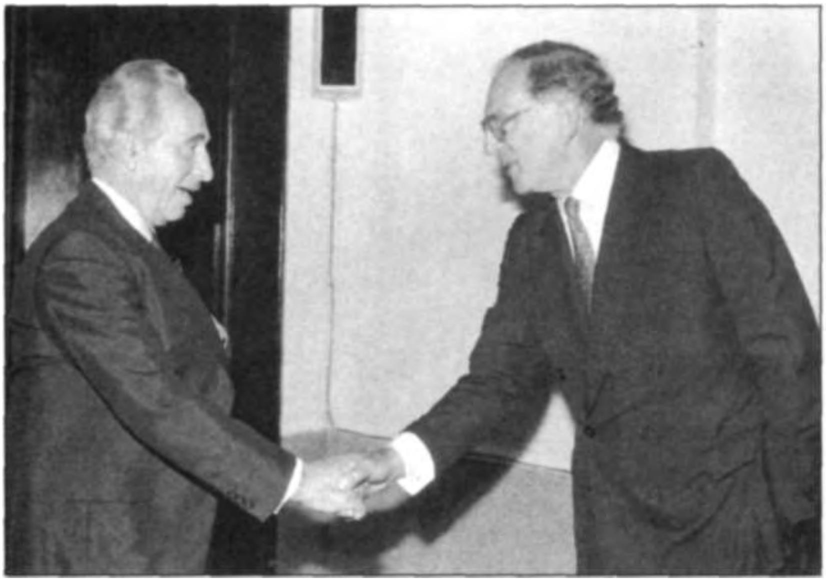

Shimon Peres, former Prime Minister and leader of Israel's Labor Party (left), in Masonic grip with Morton L. Janklow of the Council on Foreign Relations (CFR). (Photo: *CFR Annual Report*, 1990)

Dr. Foy Valentine (left), President of the Masonic-founded group, Americans United for Separation of Church and State, with the anti-Christian group's executive director, Barry Lynn. The group is a leader in working to stop prayer in schools, remove the Ten Commandments from public display, and prevent public displays or mention of Christmas.

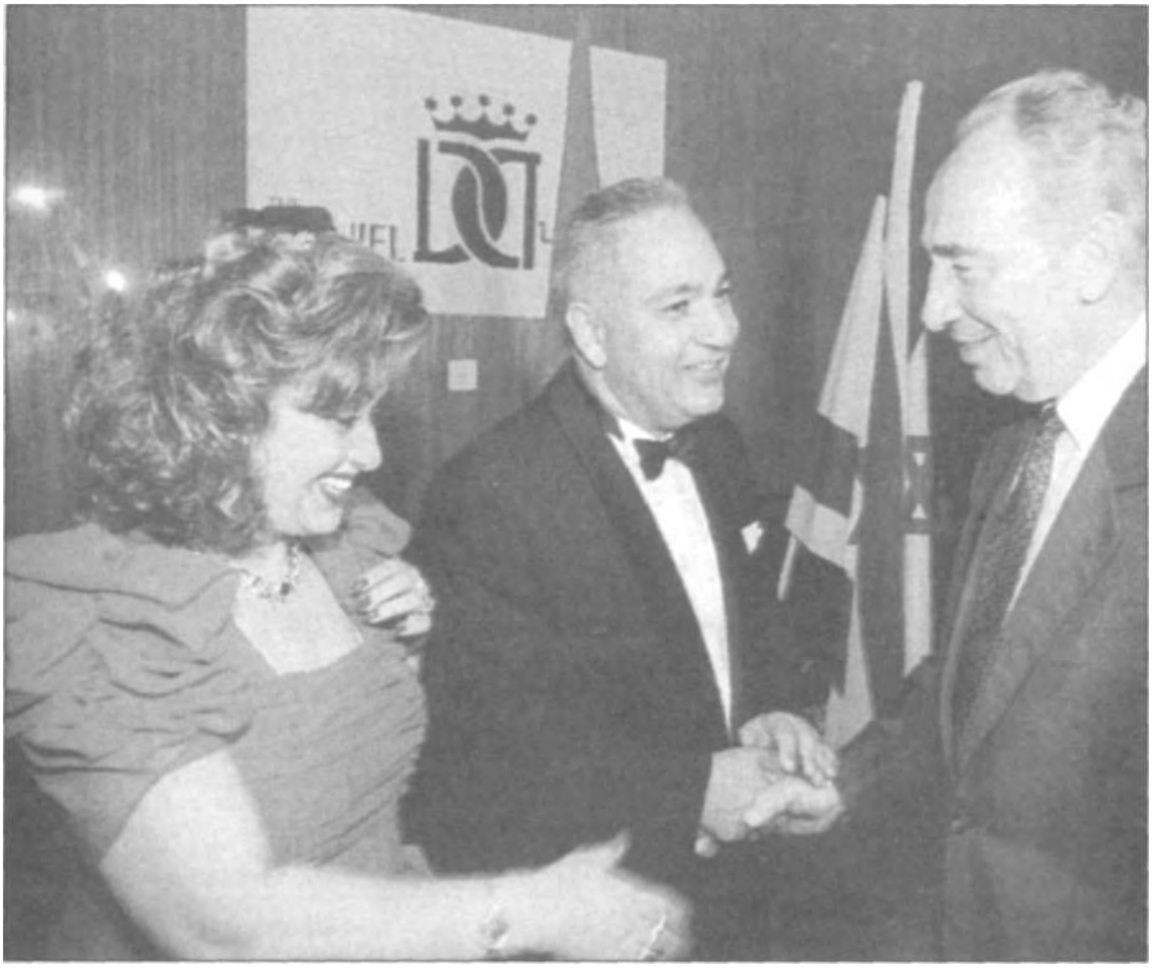

Egyptian Ambassador to Israel Mohammed Bassiouny (center) and his wife with Israel Prime Minister Shimon Peres. As is the practice of the members of both the Grand Lodge of Jerusalem and the Masonic Lodges of Cairo and Egypt, the left hand is used to conceal the Masonic nature of the grip. (Photo: *The Jerusalem Post and International Edition,* November 1, 1997, p. 9)

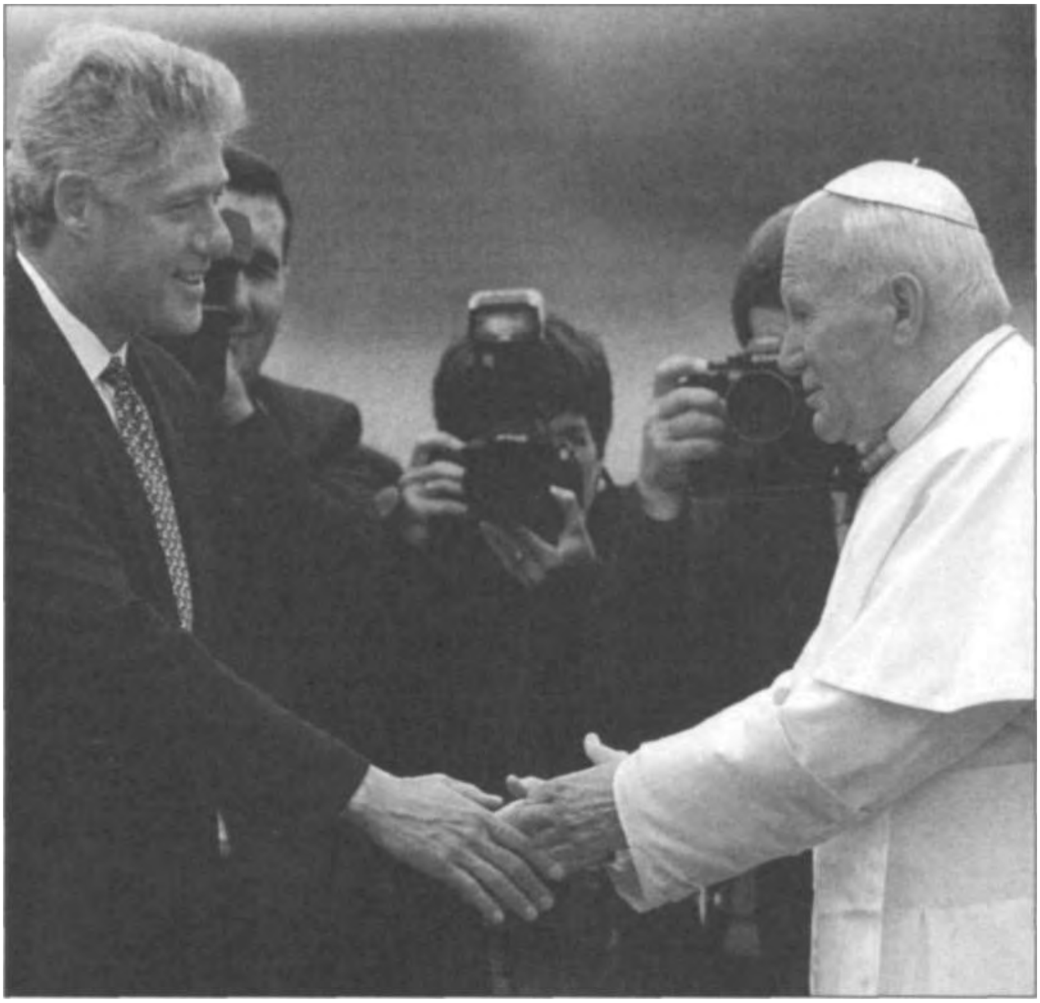

President Bill Clinton meets in 1995 with Pope John Paul II. The Pope is extending his left hand in a Talmudic attempt to conceal the Masonic grip that is about to occur. Dr. Dennis Cuddy, premier researcher of the global conspiracy and expert on occult symbols, writes: "Some Christians have wondered why Pope John Paul II seemed to use a hand gesture when photographed with Gorbachev in 1989 that was similar to the real grip of the Master Mason (a grip shown in *Duncan s Masonic Ritual and Monitor, 3*d edition, 1976) and Star Trek Spock's 'Vulcan Salute.'" (Dr. Dennis Cuddy, *Now Is the Dawning of the New Age New World Order,* Hearthstone Pub., Oklahoma City, OK, 1991, p. 387)

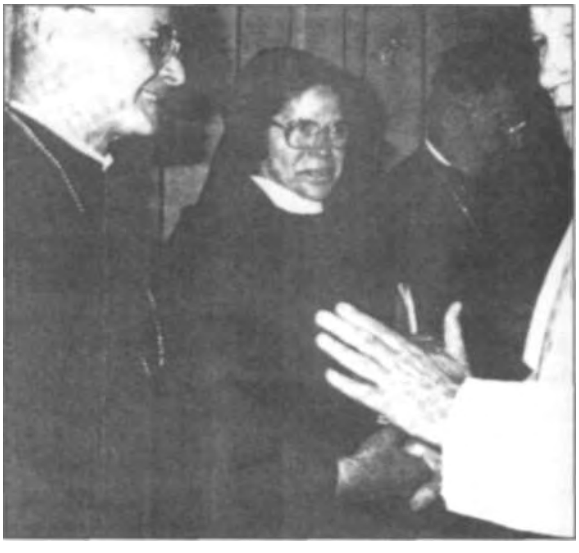

The late Pope John Paul II greets Archbishop Charles Salatka and they share the Real Grip of a Fellow Craft Mason. Simultaneously, the Pontiff gives the "cover grip" with his left hand to conceal the maneuver.

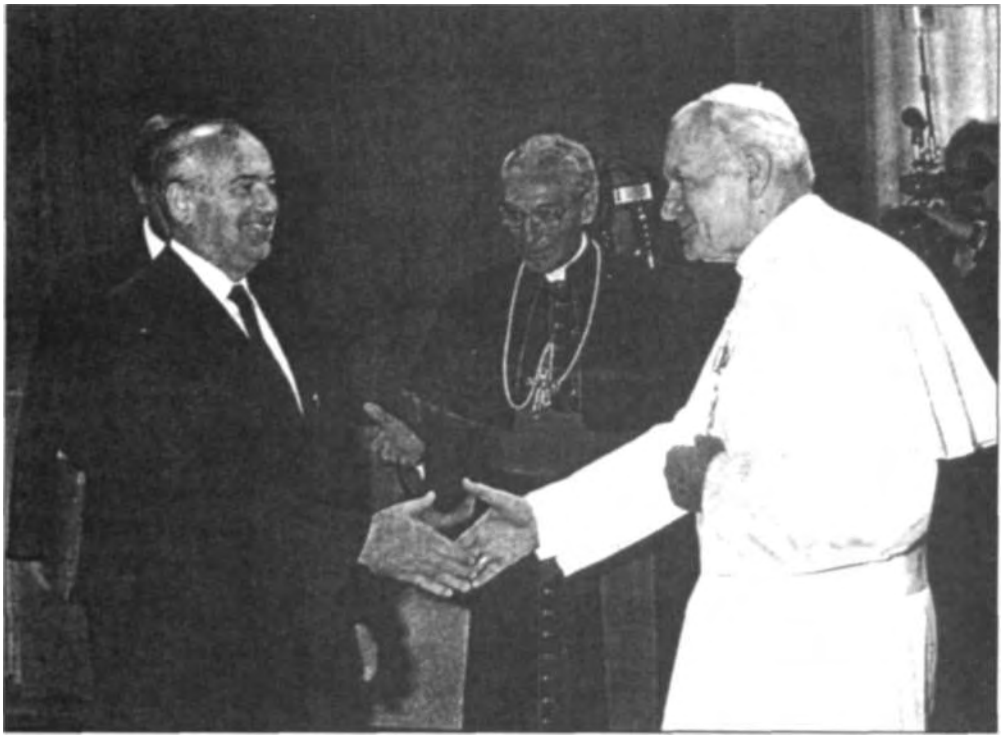

Soviet President Mikhail Gorbachev and Pope John Paul II combine to present a Masonic symbol in this staged event for the TV cameras. (Photo: *The New York Times*, October 1, 1989)

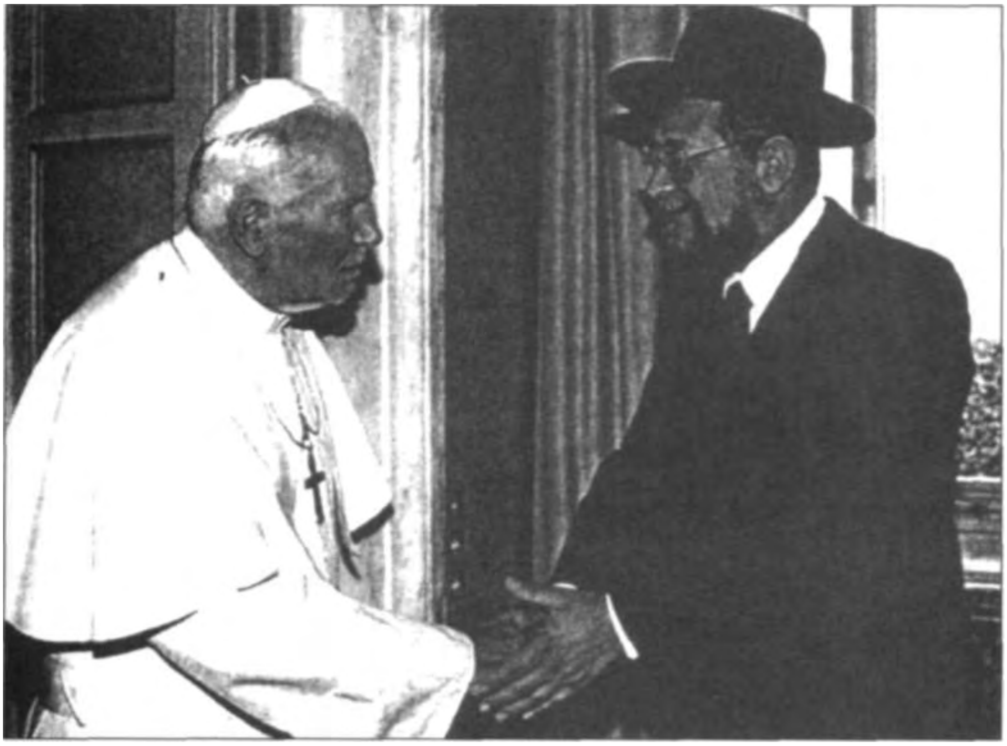

Pope John Paul II meets with Israel's Chief Rabbi, Yisrael Meir Lau, at the papal retreat in Rome. As is customary of members of the Grand Lodge of Jerusalem, the rabbi disguises the Masonic hand grip with his left hand. This is called the "cover grip." *(Duncan's Masonic Ritual and Monitor,* 3d Ed., p. 216)

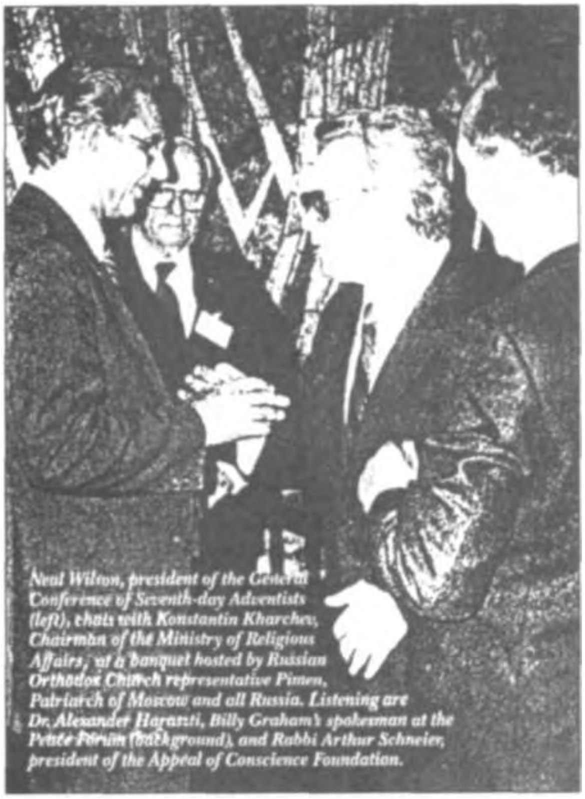

Neal Wilson, president of the General Conference of Seventh-day Adventists (left), chats with Konstantin Kharchev, Chairman of the Ministry of Religious Affairs, at a banquet hosted by Russian Orthodox Church representative Pimen, Patriarch of Moscow and all Russia. Listening are Dr. Alexander Haraszti, Billy Graham's spokesman at the Peace Forum (background), and Rabbi Arthur Schneier, president of the Appeal of Conscience Foundation.

Neal Wilson, president of the General Conference of Seventh-day Adventists (left) exchanges an indisputable (in my opinion) Masonic handshake with Konstantin Kharchev, the Soviet Union's Chairman of the Ministry of Religious Affairs. The occasion was a socialist-sponsored environmental conclave, called the International Forum for a Non-nuclear World and the Survival of Humanity, February 13-15, 1987. The leadership of the Seventh-day Adventist Church (SDA) is heavily Masonic. Many SDA officials have cooperated with pro-Communist, anti-Christian lobby groups such as Americans United, People For the American Way, the American Civil Liberties Union, and the Jewish ADL. These groups veil their anti-Christian positions with high-sounding goals like "liberty" and "separation of church and state." (Photo and article: *Ministry* magazine, May/June 1987, p. 7)

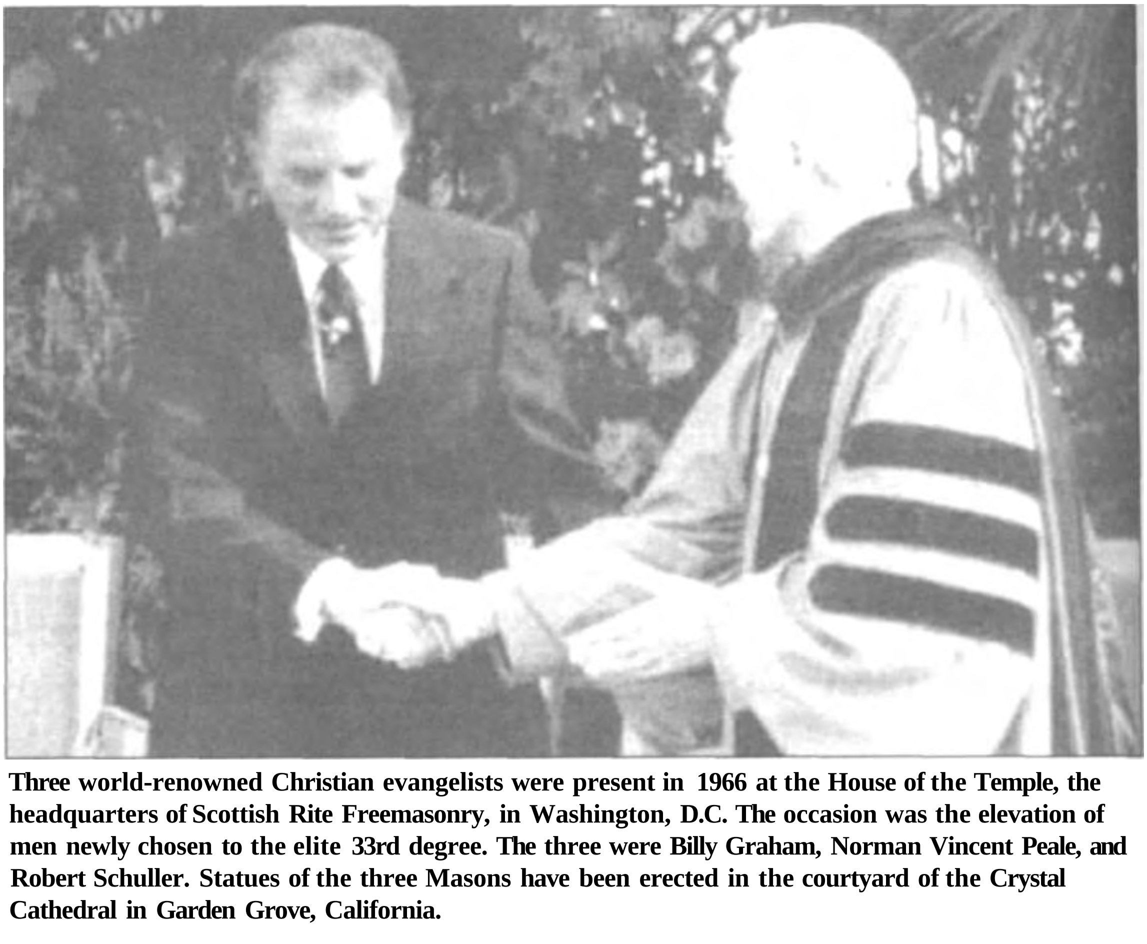

Three world-renowned Christian evangelists were present in 1966 at the House of the Temple, the headquarters of Scottish Rite Freemasonry, in Washington, D.C. The occasion was the elevation of men newly chosen to the elite 33rd degree. The three were Billy Graham, Norman Vincent Peale, and Robert Schuller. Statues of the three Masons have been erected in the courtyard of the Crystal Cathedral in Garden Grove, California.

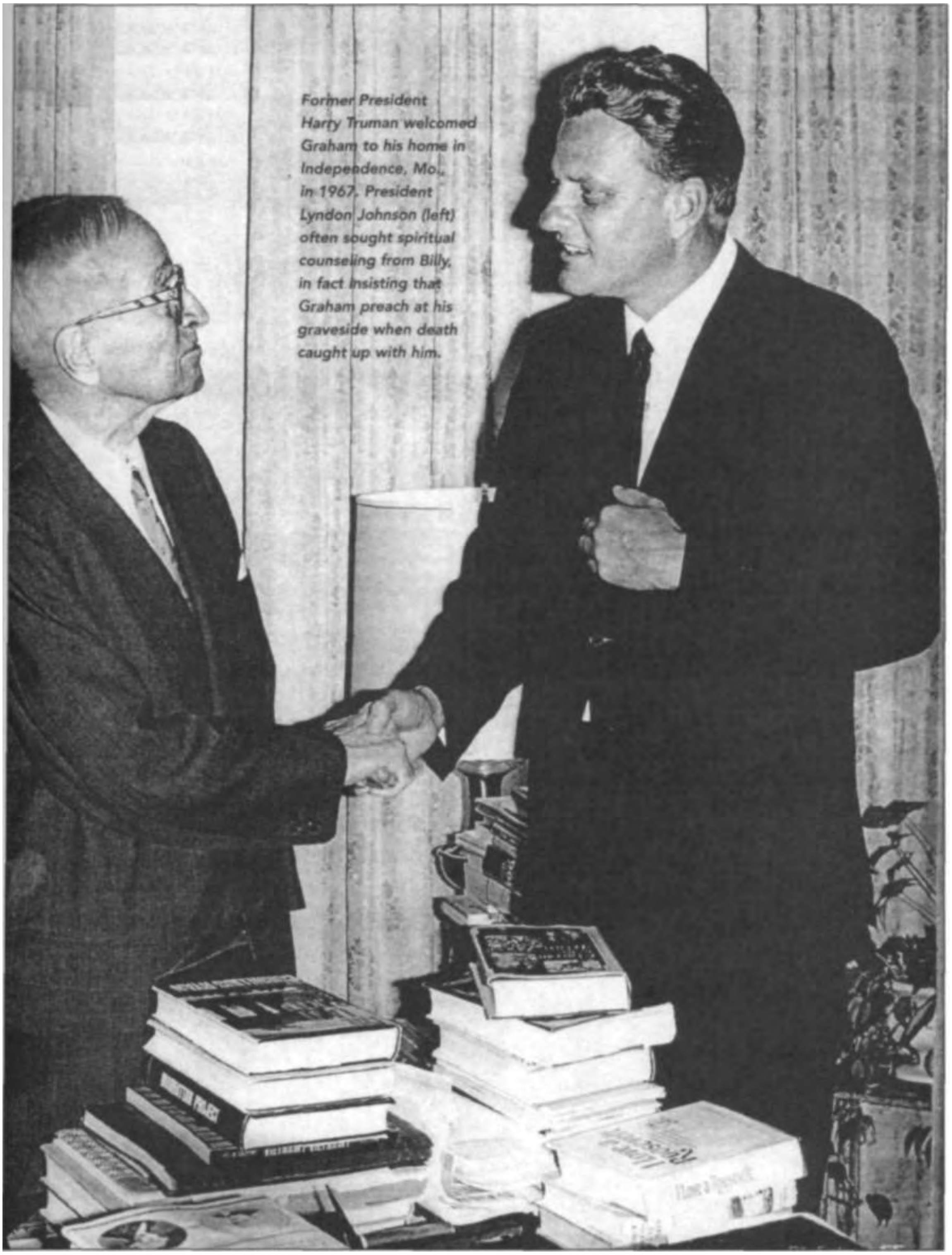

Former President Harry Truman welcomed Graham to his home in Independence, Mo., in 1967. President Lyndon Johnson (left) often sought spiritual counseling from Billy, in fact insisting that Graham preach at his graveside when death caught up with him.

Evangelist Billy Graham shares an indisputably Masonic handshake with fellow 33rd degree Mason, former President Harry S. Truman. Also, observe Graham's left hand, held in the Masonic position. According to *Coil's Masonic Encyclopedia,* Truman was elected Grand Master of all Masons in Missouri in 1940. A 33rd degree, Truman's Masonic funeral was the first to ever be televised worldwide.

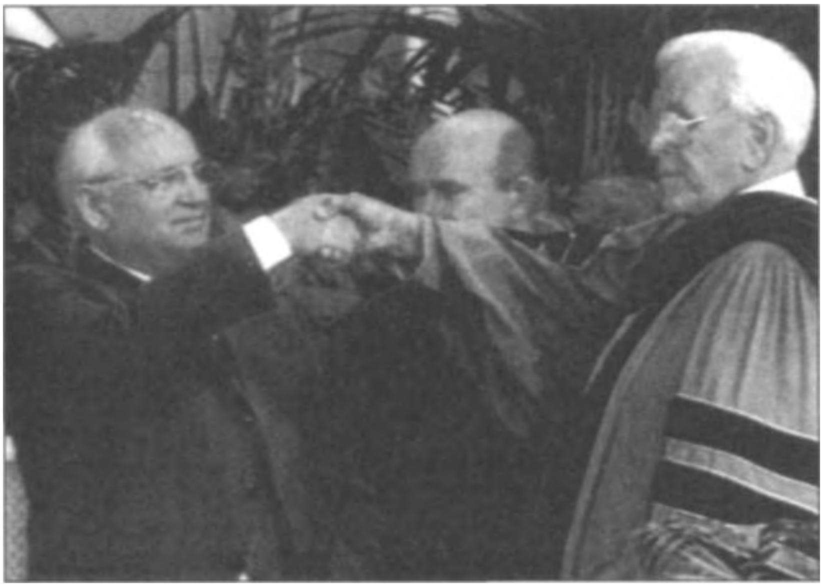

The Crystal Cathedral's Reverend Robert Schuller, 33rd degree Mason, shares a clearly Masonic handshake with former Soviet Communist Party boss, Mikhail Gorbachev. Gorbachev, an initiate of the Grand Orient Lodge, Paris, France, spoke at Schuller's church.

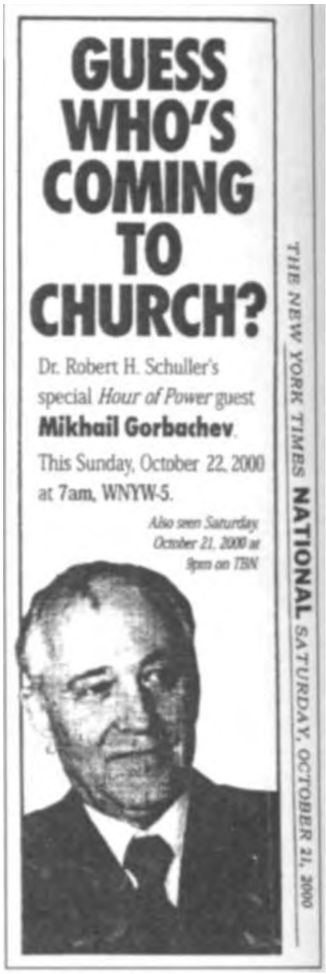

GUESS WHO'S COMING TO CHURCH?

Dr. Robert H. Schuller's special *Hour of Power* guest **Mikhail Gorbachev**.

This Sunday, October 22, 2000 at 7am, WNYW-5.

Also seen Saturday, October 21, 2000 at 9pm on TBN

THE NEW YORK TIMES **NATIONAL** SATURDAY, OCTOBER 21, 2000

NINE

A Show of Hands—Illuminists Employ the Grand Hailing Sign and the Sign of Admiration or Astonishment

It all depends on what is is.

— President Bill Clinton, in answer to a question by the Special Prosecutor

A rose by any other name is still a rose.

-Old Proverb

In *Richardson's Monitor of Freemasonry,* an authoritative reference sourcebook, we are told that in the ritual for the Masonic degree of Most Excellent Master of the Royal Arch Mason, all present are required to give a *"Sign of Admiration or Astonishment."* It is explained that this sign is similar to that gesture expressed by the illustrious Queen of Sheba on her first viewing the fabulous edifice of Solomon's Temple.[1]

In *Duncan's Masonic Monitor and Guide* the group present for that same degree ceremony is further told that this sign alludes to "the wonder and admiration of our ancient brethren who were present to view the interior of that magnificent edifice (Solomon's Temple) which King Solomon had erected, and was about to dedicate to the service of the Supreme Being."[2]

The arms raised with the palms of the hands facing forward is a supplicatory gesture, meaning passive acceptance, surrender, or an appeal for mercy. Caesar, in his *Gaelic Wars,* noted the use of this sign by Gaelic women, who apparently were signaling subjection to, or acceptance of, their Roman conquerors.

A single hand raised with palm outward represents a hand to heaven acknowledging the gifts or help received from extraterrestrial sources. It can also mean invocation, the calling down of powers or energy from the heavens or from ethereal sources (hell). Yet another meaning is that the hand with all five fingers showing, palm outward, indicates that one is giving honor and admiration to the *Underworld Deity.* Its essential meaning: "Thank you O Subterranean Lord for your deceptive wisdom and for your cunning aid in our struggle to overcome our enemies and to effect the Great Work."

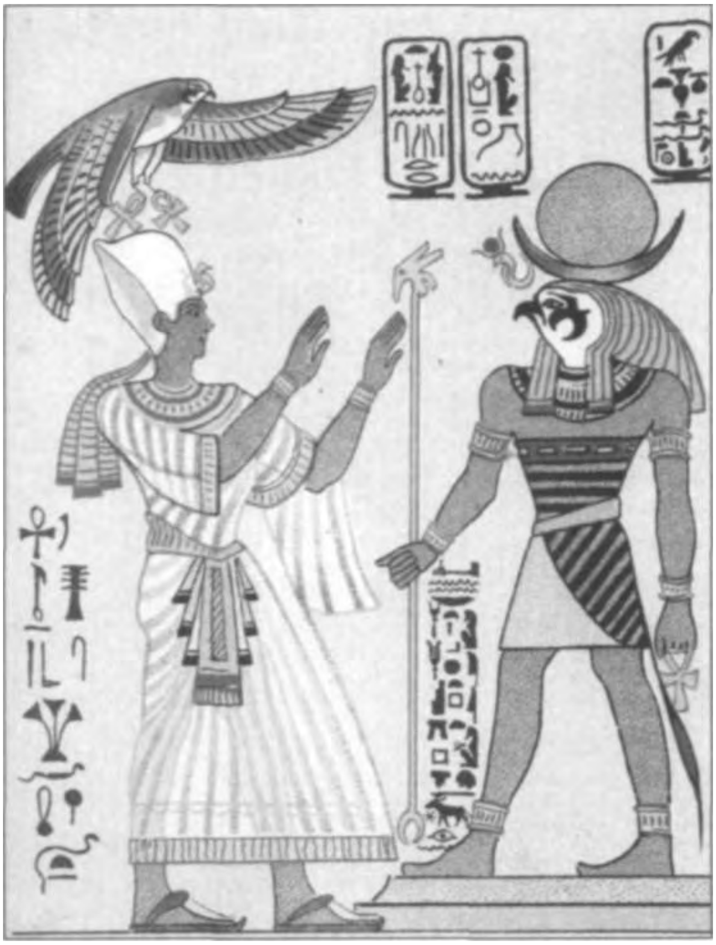

Pharaoh Ramses paying homage to the god Horus, son of Osiris, the sun god deity symbolized as the all-seeing eye in the capstone on the U.S.A.'s dollar bill. Quite possibly, the Masons' *Sign of Admiration and Astonishment* came from practices of adherents to the old Mystery Religions of Babylon and Egypt. (From book, *Other Worlds,* Hilary Evans, Readers Digest Books, 1998)

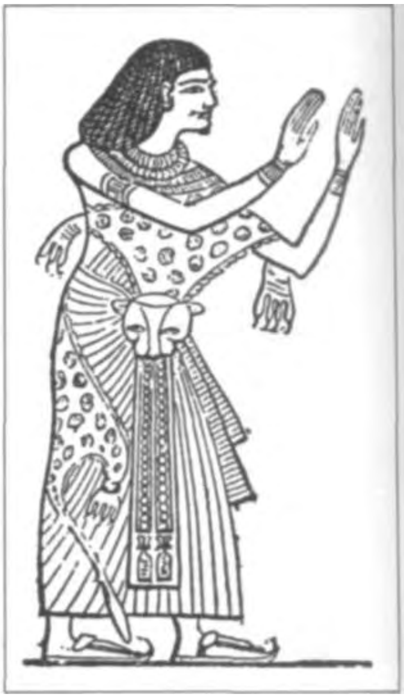

On all occasions when the Egyptian high priest was called to officiate, he wore his robe of office, the spotted leopard's skin. The priest then led the rituals in worship of the "Hidden One," the concealed mystery divinity, known esoterically as Saturn, the sixth planet from the sun. Here we see the priest, attired in leopard's skin, hands upraised, palms outward, exactly as is done in various Masonic, Rosicrucian, witchcraft, Thelemic, and O.T.O. rituals to this day. (Hislop's, *The Two Babylons,* p. 45)

As we shall see in this chapter of *Codex Magica*, this sign has been displayed in public media by Presidents, presidential candidates, Prime Ministers, and many other VIPs throughout history including the Emperor of France, the Freemason Napoleon Bonaparte.

Clinton the Devil, President of the U.S.A.

President Bill Clinton was named *Time* magazine "Man of the Year" in 1993. On the *Time* cover making the announcement, President Clinton's head was pictured with the "M" in the *Time* masthead of the magazine stretched and appearing to be *two horns* on Clinton's head.[3] Were the magazine's editors telling us that Clinton is the devils' man, or was it some strange coincidence?

Even more weird and dramatic, inside that same issue was a photo of Clinton in his Oval Office holding his hands and arms in the Masonic display of the sign of admiration. Now, get this: carved on the President's *desk* in the Oval Offices directly in front of Clinton is the eagle, in the presidential seal or logo, with its face turned to the *left.* But on the carpet just in front of the desk one finds the presidential seal facing toward the *right:* Two eagles, each facing in the opposite direction.

This is clearly the double-headed eagle of Freemasonry, a symbol representing the Serpent, honored as the Sun God in the Mystery Religions with its eagle-like, all-seeing eye. In other words: Lucifer! Solar God of Bill Clinton and the Illuminati.

Meanwhile, in Clinton's left hand (see page 183 of *Codex Magica)* is a rose —sign of the Illuminati's blood covenant and the *Rosicrucian Order.* You will also find here a photo of former Yugoslav Serb leader Slobodan Milosevic, likewise holding a rose in his hand, the right hand. In Satanism the left-handed path is the most magical and powerful, but more evil. Clinton (left-hand) is still today recognized by the world as a great leader. Milosevic (right-hand) is in disgrace, in a prison cell, after being felled by Clinton and his Illuminati cohorts, proving that it's not nice to attempt to doublecross your Illuminati overlords, Mr. Milosevic!

In this chapter you will find not only Bill Clinton, Slobodan Milosevic, John Kerry, and others giving enigmatic ritual messages, but, also, we will examine other signs in which the Illuminati signal with the arms and either or both hands.

The Grand Hailing Sign of Distress

One classic Masonic pose, duplicated by or similar to that employed in many other Orders, is the *Grand Hailing Sign of Distress.* Theoretically, this is used in extreme circumstances in which a Mason or other elitist finds himself in a crisis or in a bind. In such an emergency he gives the Grand Hailing Sign of Distress, sometimes called the "High Sign." At that point, brethren who recognize the secret sign of alarm are expected to come to his rescue. Comically, mass murderer Charles Manson was observed giving this sign and a number of others during his trial for conspiracy to commit murder. Reportedly, Manson believed the judge in his case was a 33° Mason and would rescue him. It was all to no avail.

Likewise, Mormon Church founder Joseph Smith gave this sign while under siege of a lynch mob at the Nauvoo, Illinois jail where he had been incarcerated.

Smith knew that the angry mob was comprised mainly of Freemasons because he, too, had been one of them until he was excommunicated. The Masons didn't take too kindly to Masonic Brother Smith's stealing their symbols and ceremonies and incorporating them into his Mormon (LDS) Church rituals.[4]

As Joseph Smith lay dying on the jailhouse floor, he cried out, "Is there no help for the Widow's Son?" This is the enigmatic saying taught Masons, stamping Smith as a follower of the Great Goddess, patroness of the Masonic fraternity. The Bible in *Revelation* 27 refers to her as "Mystery, Babylon the Great, Mother of Harlots."

John J. Robinson, author of a celebrated book, *Born in Blood* defending Freemasonry and blasting its critics, also referenced the Grand Hailing Sign of Distress sign taught in the 3° ritual:

> After brief ceremonies, the blindfold is removed, and the newly sworn Master Mason is taught several secrets of that degree. He learns the penal sign, the hand signal based on the penalty of the Master Mason's oath, which is to pass the hand in a slashing motion, palm downward and thumb toward the body, across his stomach. The due-guard of the Master Mason repeats the position of his hands on the Holy Bible and the compass and square as he takes the oath: with his upper arms along his sides, forearms out straight, with palms down.
>
> To this point, the ceremony is much like that of the first two degrees, but now is added a third sign, the Grand Hailing Sign of Distress of the Master Mason, given with the upper arms parallel to the ground, forearms vertical with hands above the head, palms forward. For those times when the Master Mason is out of sight of possible help, or in the dark, he is taught to summon assistance with the word, "O Lord, my God, is there no help for a Son of the Widow?" a reference to Hiram, legendary master craftsman at the building of the Temple of Solomon, about whom the initiate has yet been told nothing, and whom Masons identify with the metalworker that scripture describes as "a son of a widow of Naphtali."[5]

Note that Robinson makes mention of the "penal sign, the hand signal based on the penalty of the Master Mason's oath." In *Codex Magica,* you will see several examples of this signal, including a photo of Soviet dictator Joseph Stalin and one of former House Speaker Newt Gingrich.

In his book *Freemasonry,* Jack Harris, a former Master Mason who renounced the Order after converting to Christianity, quotes at length the ritual according to the State of Maryland's Masonic Manual.[6] That manual assures the Mason that at his death, if his good works are sufficient, "a kind messenger from the Supreme Grand Master will be sent to translate us to that all perfect, glorious and celestial lodge above, where the Supreme Architect of the Universe presides."

According to Harris the ritual continues as follows:

> All officers and members bow toward the East. The Master raps the lodge down (1 rap). Also explained to the brother in the third degree lecture is what he is to do in times of peril or danger. He is instructed (if he can be seen) to throw up both arms over his head and let them fall by three distinct motions. This is the great hailing

sign or sign of distress, and never should be given except in a lodge for instruction, or if his life is in danger. If a Mason sees this sign, he is to flee to his rescue if there is more probability of saving the brother's life than of losing his own.

At times when this sign could not be seen, such as in the dark, a spoken signal is substituted: *"O Lord, My God, is there no help for the widow's son?"* A Mason hearing these words would be equally bound to flee to the brother's rescue if there were more probability of saving his life than losing his own life.[7]

THE INEFFABLE DEGREES: PERFECT MASTER. 135

Master—Before you can be admitted to this privilege, it will be necessary for you to join the funeral procession of Hiram Abiff.

Candidate is then conducted several times round the Lodge, the brethren joining in the procession, and singing a dirge from text-book, after which he passes to the tomb of Hiram Abiff, joined by the Master, (personating King Solomon.)

Master (looking at inscription J. M. B. on the tomb, and making sign of admiration)—It is accomplished and complete.

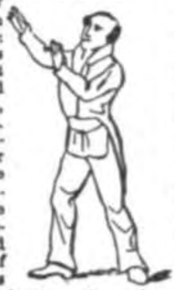

The brethren now make the same sign of admiration, viz.: raise hands and eyes upward, and then let the arms fall crossed upon the abdomen, looking downwards.

Master and brethren now resume their proper places, while the Master of Ceremonies instructs the candidate how to approach the east, and to take upon himself the obligation in this degree, as follows: by four times four steps from a pair of compasses, extended from an angle of seven to that of sixty degrees. Candidate then takes the obligation, which enjoins secrecy, and to obey the orders and decrees of Council of the Princes of Jerusalem, under penalties in all former degrees, and of being smitten to the earth with a setting maul, &c.

Master (drawing green [illegible] from can-

let the right arm fall perpendicularly on the right side. This alludes to the penalty of being smitten down with a maul.

Second sign is that of admiration—Raise the hands and eyes upwards, as in the engraving, then let the hands fall crossed in front, at the same time casting the eyes downwards.

The pass-word is ACCASSIA.

The token is that of a Mark Master, given on the five points of fellowship, [page 42.] Mysterious word, JEVA, pronounced Je-vau.

Master then invests candidate with the jewel and apron of a Perfect Master, and informs him that the jewel should remind him to measure his conduct by the exact rule of equity.

Master then instructs candidate in the history of the degree, as follows:

After the body of Hiram Abiff had been found, Solomon requested Adoniram to make suitable arrangements for his burial. The brethren were ordered to attend with white aprons anc
that the marks o
spilled in the Te
until the assassin
the meantime, Ac
for a superb tom
and black marble
nine days. The
passing between
a square stone
cles. On the sto
ter J. On the t
senting a virgin,
The heart of Hi
in a golden urn,
a sword to denot

In the ritual for the *Perfect Master* degree of Freemasonry, the Master of the Lodge and the brethren make the *Sign of Admiration*, illustrated on page 135 of *Richardson's Monitor of Freemasonry* and described as: *"raise hand and eyes upward, and then let the arms fall crossed upon the abdomen looking downwards."* The sign may be made with both hands or with either the left or right hand extended only.

212 MOST EXCELLENT MASTER, OR SIXTH DEGREE

The brothers now all join hands as in opening, and while in this attitude the Right Worshipful Master reads the following passage of Scripture, 2 Chron, vii. 1, 4.

FIG. 30.

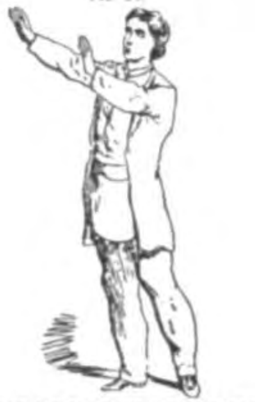

SIGN OF ADMIRATION, OR ASTONISHMENT.

"Now when Solomon had made an end of praying, the fire came down from heaven, and consumed the burnt-offering and the sacrifices; and the glory of the Lord filled the house. And the priests could not enter into the house of the Lord, because the glory of the Lord had filled the Lord's house. And when all the children of Israel saw how the fire came down, and the glory of the Lord upon the house, they bowed themselves with their faces to the ground upon the pavement, and worshipped and praised the Lord, saying, For he is good (here the Master, who is high-priest of the Chapter, kneels and joins hands with the rest), for his mercy endureth forever."

They all then repeat in concert the words, "*For he is good* (here one of the brethren, standing behind the candidate, throws a piece of blazing gum-camphor or other combustible matter into the *pot of incense* standing on the altar, around which the brethren are kneeling), *for his mercy endureth forever*," six times, each time bowing their heads low toward the floor. The mem-

Sign of Admiration, or Astonishment, as practiced in the sixth degree of Royal Arch Masonry—the *Most Excellent Master* ritual. During this same ritual, the participants bow their heads low toward the floor exactly six times, balance six times, and then balance six more times. Thus, 6+6+6, or 666. And this happens in the ritual for the 6th degree (*Duncan's Masonic Ritual and Monitor*, p 212-213). It is taught that the sign of Astonishment or Admiration is given in remembrance of the emotion felt by the Masons in the days of King Solomon at the moment they viewed the inner sanctuary of the newly completed Temple of God in Jerusalem.

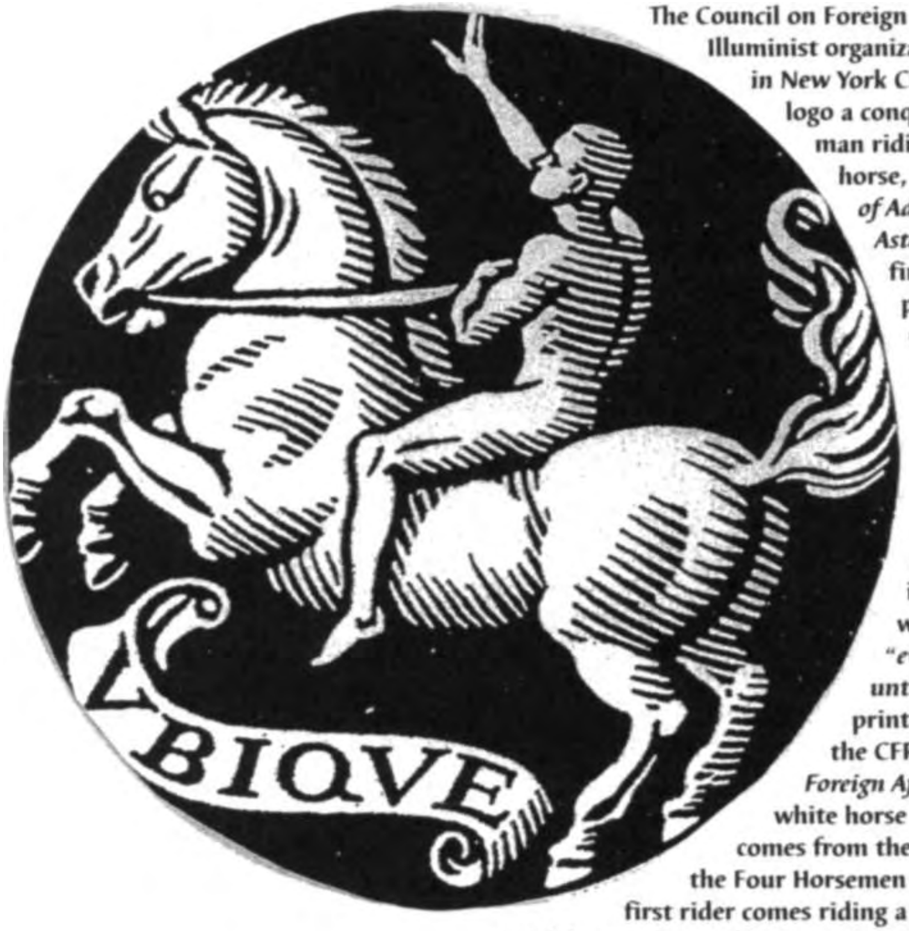

The Council on Foreign Relations (CFR), an Illuminist organization headquartered in New York City, has as its official logo a conquering, wild, naked, man riding a rampant white horse, while giving the *Sign of Admiration and Astonishment*. The fingers of the hand are pointed toward the CFR's hidden Master in the Stars, the Prince of the Power of the Air (Lucifer). Notice, too, the black, circular background and the cryptic latin inscription, *ubique*, which means "*everywhere*." This logo, until recently, was printed on every issue of the CFR's official publication, *Foreign Affairs*. The man on a white horse theme, I believe, comes from the Bible's *Revelation 6*, the Four Horsemen of the Apocalypse. The first rider comes riding a white horse and proclaims to the world, "Peace," which claim proves to be a monumental lie.

Mikhail Gorbachev, Soviet President and Chairman of the Communist Party, visits the Council on Foreign Relations (CFR) in New York City. The presiding head of the organization proudly shows him a copy of the very first edition (1921) of *Foreign Affairs*, the CFR's official journal which has annotated notes of Vladimir Lenin written by him personally on the margins of some pages. Lenin obviously was a servant of the Illuminati, too. Note that the awed Gorbachev respectfully gives the Illuminist/Masonic Sign of Admiration and Astonishment with his right hand, only this time it is lain on the display case parallel to the "sacred" document to which his focus and devotion is directed.

Newly elected President Bill Clinton holds out his arms in the Masonic gesture of admiration and astonishment. Was it just his joy at becoming President, or was Clinton paying homage to the entity represented by the combined double-headed eagle carved on the front of the wood desk and imprinted in the Great Seal logo on the carpet? (From *Time* magazine, January 4, 1993, p. 29)

Slobodan Milosevic, President of Serbia, holds a rose aloft in his right hand signifying he is an initiate of the Rosicrucian Order. Milosevic failed to carry out the wishes of the Illuminati to the letter. Therefore, in this same issue of *Time*, he was called *"The Butcher of The Balkans"* and the *"high priest of ethnic cleansing."* Later, Milosevic was arrested, thrown in prison, and tried by an international court for supposed "crimes against humanity." (From *Time* magazine, January 4, 1993, p. 45)

Satanic, muddle-headed rock'n'roller *Ozzy* Osbourne, who once bit the head off a bat at a rock concert and sometimes led altar calls for the devil, raises his hands at a White House dinner hosted by President George W. Bush and wife, Laura Bush. Osbourne was so happy to be invited, he arrived early. Bush, at the podium, publicly recognized and applauded *Ozzy* and told him how much Bush's mother, Barbara, enjoyed his albums!

This is Senator John Kerry, arriving in Ohio for a campaign stop while running for President of the United States in 2004. See how Kerry's hands and arms are extended in salute *to* the sun, as its rays burst through the clouds. A sun worshipper? Strange, unless one understands that it is entirely possible Kerry was giving the Masonic sign of adoration and admiration to the one the scriptures call the "Prince of the power of the air" (e.g. Satan!). Interestingly, neither the caption of the *Time* magazine (March 15, 2004) photo nor the accompanying article gave any clue or mention at all of why Kerry's arms were outstretched in this position.

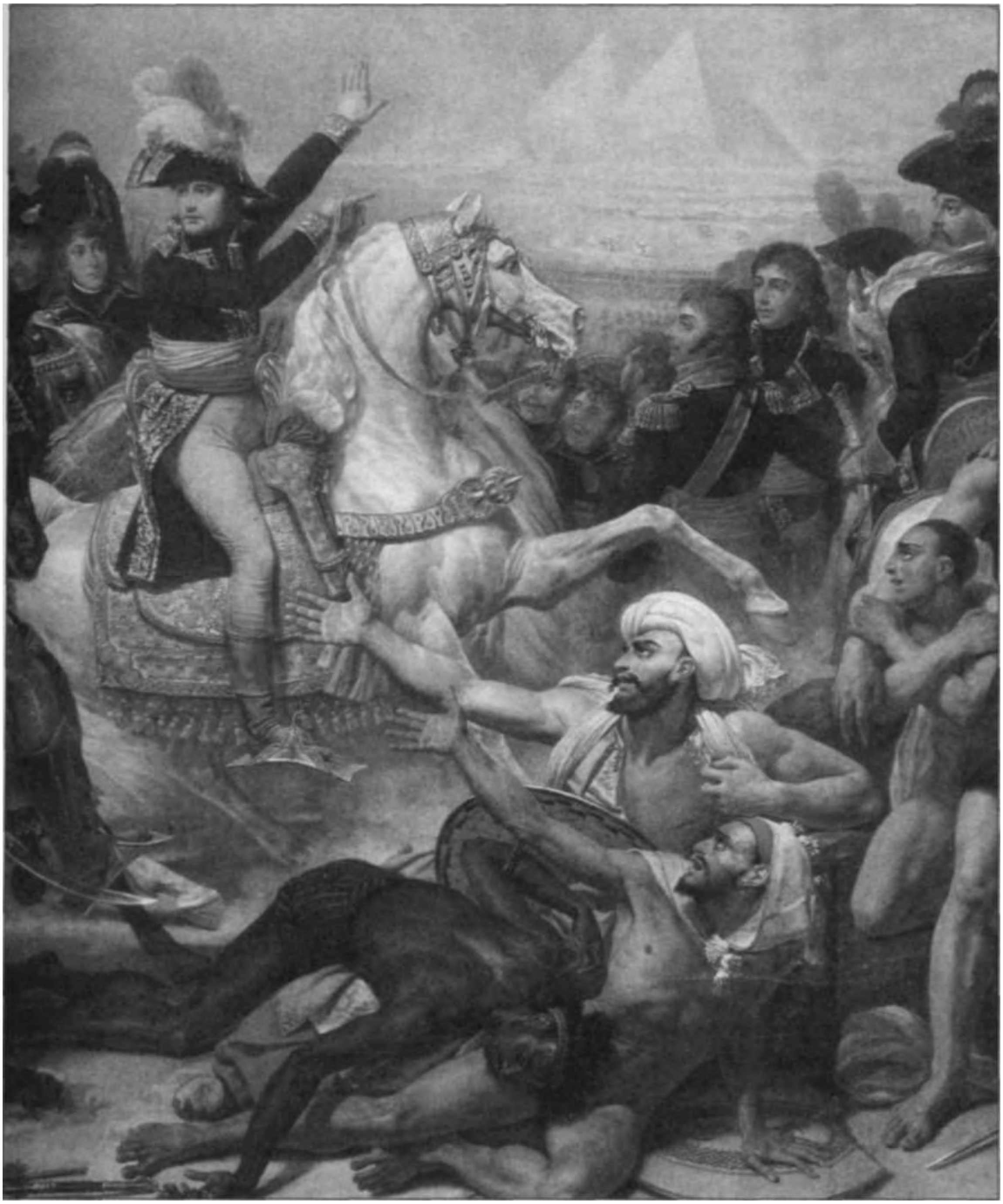

In this celebrated painting, The *Battle of the Pyramids,* by Baron Antoine Jean Gros, Napoleon is shown presenting the Masonic and Rosicrucian sign of astonishment or admiration at the sight of the marvelous sight of the pyramids of Giza. From written historical accounts, we know that the French Emperor did, indeed, experience feelings of amazement and admiration upon viewing the spectacle of the Egyptian pyramids. This particular sign can be accomplished either with the left or the right arm extended and the palm facing toward the object of admiration, or astonishment.

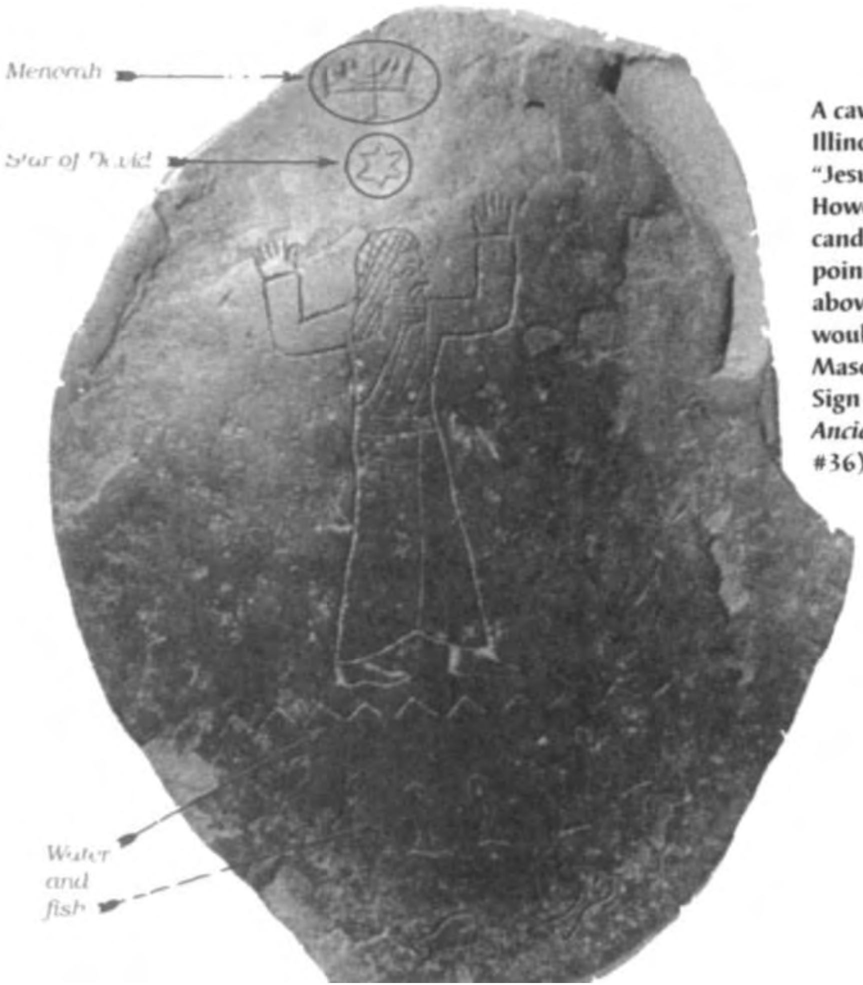

A cave stone found in Illinois seems to depict "Jesus" walking on water. However, why the Jewish candelabra and the six-pointed Star of David above his head? And why would Jesus be giving the Masonic Grand Hailing Sign of Distress? (Photo: *Ancient American*, Issue #36)

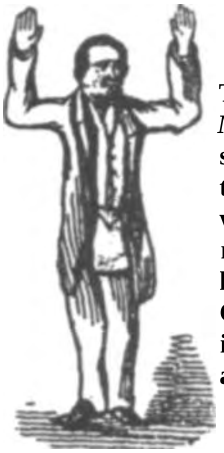

This illustration in *Richardson's Monitor of Freemasonry* (1860) shows the Master Mason giving the "First Sign, or Due Guard" with his hands upright "in the manner of giving the grand hailing sign of distress." Compare this with the image inscribed on the cave stone above.

This goddess statuette was on display in the chambers of Alex Sanders, well-known British warlock (witch) as he led a witchcraft ritual. Witches worship both the goddess and the horned, male god. (Photo: *Witchcraft, Magic and the Supernatural,* Octopus Books, Hong Kong, 1974)

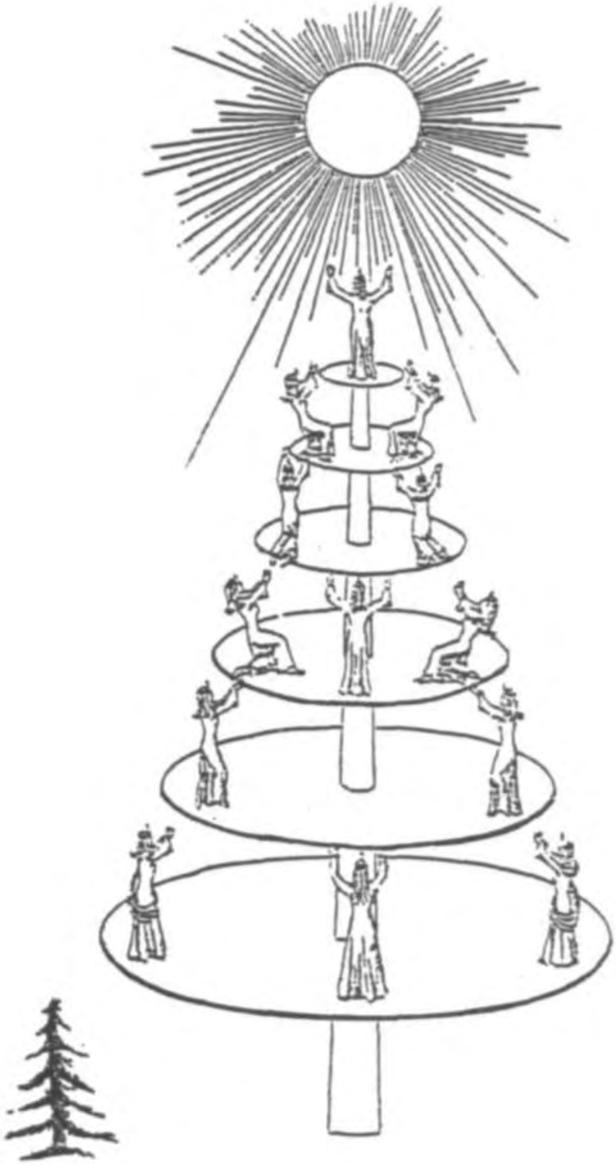

Instructional material for educators in the Fort Worth, Texas, Independent School District included this drawing of 13 goddess worshippers (13 comprise a witches coven) on a succession of six circle platforms paying homage to the Sun. The illustration originally came from an Italian foundation dedicated to the work of New Age evolutionist and educator Maria Montessori.

Copyright © 1976 by "Fondazione Centro Internazionale Studi Montessoriani", Bergamo, Italy. All Rights reserved.

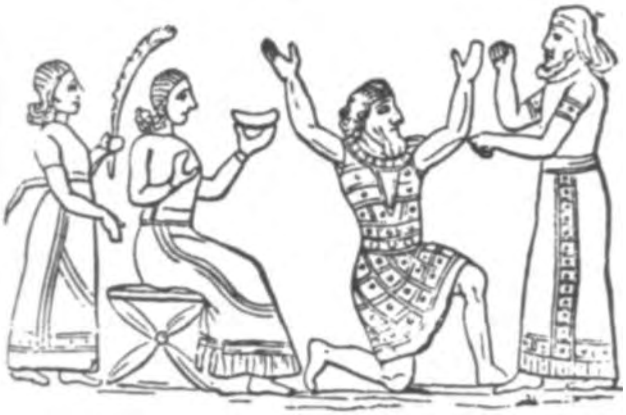

In the Babylonian religion, as the initiate entered into the "Mysteries," part of the ritual was the drinking from the cup of the Woman (the Goddess). Here, in this ancient woodcut we find a supplicant kneeling while raising his hands in submissive fashion after just drinking from the cup. The priest (at right) appears to be administering an oath while offering an oblation—perhaps a wafer, piece of bread, or honycomb—with his left hand. *(Kittos' Biblical Cyclopedia;* reprinted in Alexander Hislop's *The Two Babylons,* First Edition 1916, American Edition by Loi/eaux Bros., 1916)

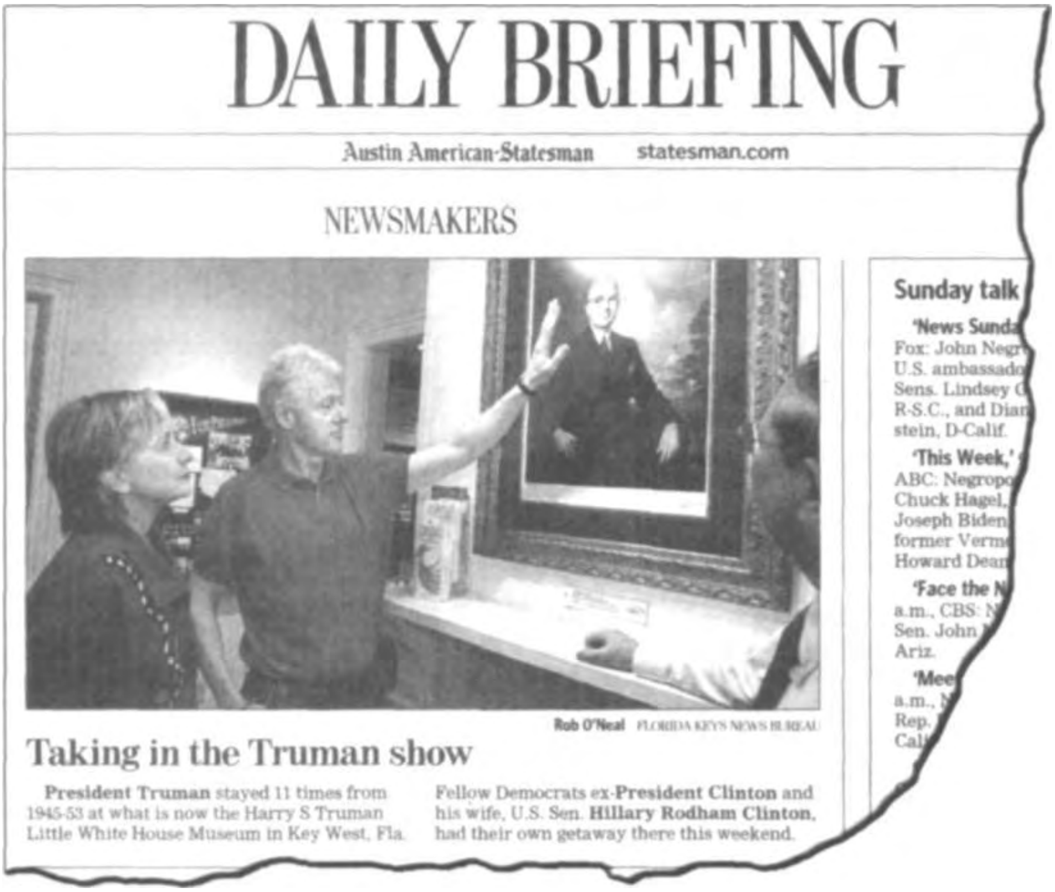

DAILY BRIEFING

Austin American-Statesman statesman.com

NEWSMAKERS

Rob O'Neal FLORIDA KEYS NEWS BUREAU

Taking in the Truman show

President Truman stayed 11 times from 1945-53 at what is now the Harry S Truman Little White House Museum in Key West, Fla. Fellow Democrats ex-**President Clinton** and his wife, U.S. Sen. **Hillary Rodham Clinton**, had their own getaway there this weekend.

Sunday talk

'News Sunda
Fox: John Negr
U.S. ambassado
Sens. Lindsey G
R-S.C., and Dian
stein, D-Calif.

'This Week,'
ABC: Negropo
Chuck Hagel,
Joseph Biden
former Verm
Howard Dean

'Face the N
a.m., CBS: N
Sen. John
Ariz.

'Mee
a.m.,
Rep.
Cal

Former President Bill Clinton gives the Sign of Admiration as he views a painting of the late President Harry Truman. Both Clinton and Truman were initiates of the Masonic Lodge, and, by giving this sign, Clinton is acknowledging the Masonic achievements of his predecessor, Harry S. Truman, 33°. The Clintons were visiting the Harry S. Truman Little White House Museum in Key West, Florida. (Photo: Florida Keys News Bureau, in *Austin American-Statesman*, January 23, 2005, p. A2)

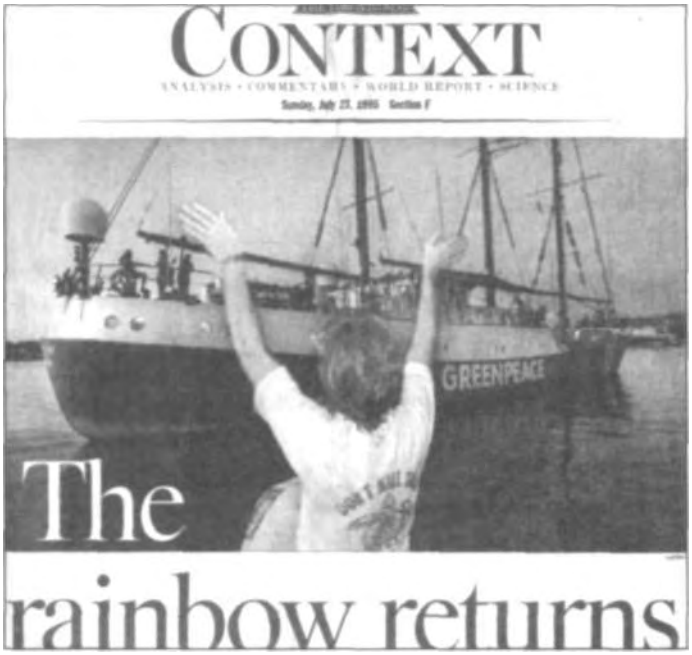

CONTEXT

ANALYSIS • COMMENTARY • WORLD REPORT • SCIENCE

Sunday, July 23, 1995 Section F

GREENPEACE

The rainbow returns

A dockside member of Greenpeace, the radical environmentalist group, hails the organization's sea-going vessel. Almost all environmentalist organizations are funded and run by the Illuminati. Members are ignorant of this behind the scenes influence.

TEN

"I Gruesomely Swear That I'm On the Square"—More Revealing Signs of Illuminati Cultists

A number of hand signs are used by Illuminist to indicate their allegiance to their Order and to demonstrate their knowledge that to divulge its secrets shall bring gruesome and swift, perhaps fatal retribution.

When President Richard M. Nixon resigned the office of the presidency on August 9,1974, he signaled the *Dueguard and Sign of a Royal Arch Mason.* As the Nixon audiotapes since released by the Nixon presidential library clearly show, Nixon and his "Prussian Guard," White House Chief of Staff Robert Haldemann and top aide John Erlichman, plotted to thwart the power of the Jewish Illuminati media that poisons the mind of America. They also conspired to overthrow the elaborate FBI and intelligence network historically run behind the scenes by the Jewish-led Illuminati chieftains.

Nixon knew what he was risking. He well knew that John F. Kennedy's murder was orchestrated by the Jewish Illuminati with the backing of Zionist Vice President Lyndon B. Johnson and with the connivance of J. Edgar Hoover's Mafia-infiltrated FBI and the Skull & Bones-run CIA. Nixon had been a close associate of David Rockefeller and had met privately with the Rothschilds a number of times. Nixon also had attended the notorious homoerotic occultic rituals of the Bohemian Club outside San Francisco. Still, as President, he had hoped to mount an offensive against the elite and dislodge them from their position of awesome power in the United States.

Instead, it was Nixon and his entourage who were dislodged, falling from grace and being ousted, even though Nixon's so-called crimes ("Watergate," etc.) were paltry compared to the colossal criminal treachery of predecessors like Wilson and Roosevelt, and successors like Clinton and both Bushes.

Captain William Morgan, in the nineteenth century, suffered a worse fate, being murdered in a Masonic ritual and his disfigured body dumped into a lake. Incensed by this outrage, John Quincy Adams, sixth President of the United States, in his classic exposure of the Masonic murderers *(Letters on Freemasonry),* minced no bones in declaring the Freemasons as "Luciferian" and as a grave threat to America.

In this section, we examine a few of penal (penalty) signs and also signs given to communicate the message, *"on the square,"* a phrase made common in the American lexicon by its frequent usage by Masons. Along the way, we shall note the Illuminist involvement of such infamous folks as the Russian mystic and master seducer, Grigore Rasputin, former U.S.A. President Jimmy "Peanut" Carter, Cuban strongman Fidel "Odd Fellow" Castro, and Master Mason and Illuminist thug extraordinaire, Joseph Stalin, the half-Jew who massacred some 50-60 million innocents while heading up the Illuminati's experimental Bolshevik regime. And we'll also take a brief look at a hand sign of Illuminist Al Gore, some Confederate officers into Masonic skullduggery, Timothy McVeigh's rancid "F...you" signal, and a few other choice hand poses of elite servants.

> *"Masonry ought forever to be abolished. It is wrong—essentially wrong—a seed of evil, which can never produce any good."*
>
> **—John Quincy Adams**

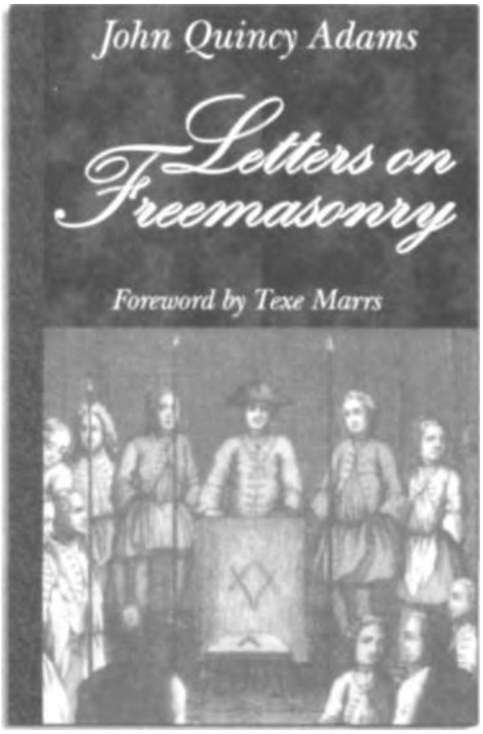

John Quincy Adams, sixth President of the United States, was a determined opponent of the secret society and fraternity of Freemasonry, the Masonic Lodge. The question of Freemasonry and the controversy over its character has long been debated. But for John Qunicy Adams, writer, poet, faithful husband, patriot, former Ambassador and Secretary of State, and President, there was no question. The teachings and practices of the Lodge, Adams asserted, are detrimental, noxious, and unfortunate. John Quincy Adams was persuaded that the Masonic Lodges were a bane to society, evil, and Luciferian.

This unusual book, *Letters on Freemasonry,* first published in 1833, is finally back in print. Until now, it was virtually impossible for the general public to obtain a copy. It is now available for *$22* postpaid through Power of Prophecy Ministries, 1708 Patterson Road, Austin, Texas 78733, or call toll free: 1-800-234-9673.

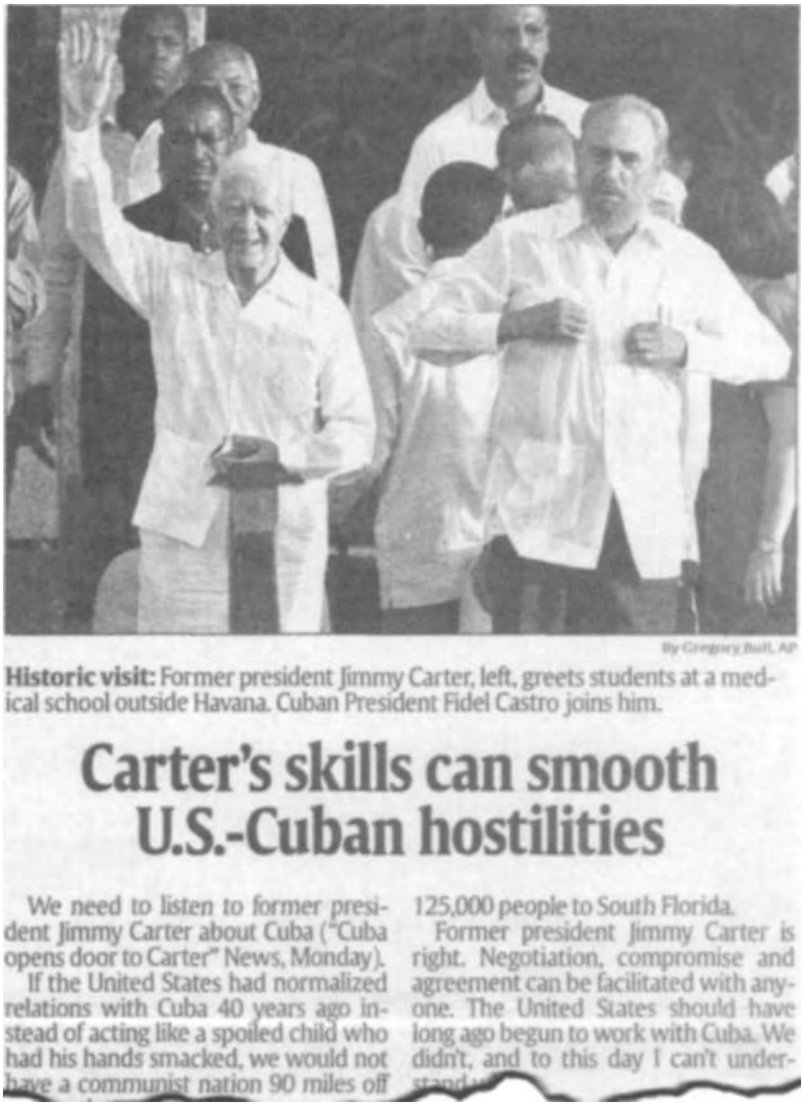

By Gregory Bull, AP

Historic visit: Former president Jimmy Carter, left, greets students at a medical school outside Havana. Cuban President Fidel Castro joins him.

Carter's skills can smooth U.S.-Cuban hostilities

We need to listen to former president Jimmy Carter about Cuba ("Cuba opens door to Carter" News, Monday).

If the United States had normalized relations with Cuba 40 years ago instead of acting like a spoiled child who had his hands smacked, we would not have a communist nation 90 miles off

125,000 people to South Florida.

Former president Jimmy Carter is right. Negotiation, compromise and agreement can be facilitated with anyone. The United States should have long ago begun to work with Cuba. We didn't, and to this day I can't under-

Former President Jimmy Carter in Havana, Cuba, with communist dictator Fidel Castro. Castro gives a sign showing he is a member of the *Odd Fellows,* a Masonic affliated secret order popular in Cuba. Meanwhile, Carter presents the Dueguard of the Fellow Craft (2°). (Photo: *USA Today* newspaper, May 16, 2002, p. 11A)

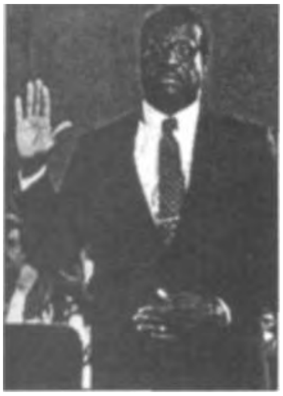

Supreme Court Justice nominee Clarence Thomas, appearing before a U.S. Senate Committee, in 1991, holds his right hand up to take the Oath. But at the same time, Thomas places his left hand and arm in such a fashion as to present the familiar *Dueguard of a Fellow Craft* sign of Freemasonry.

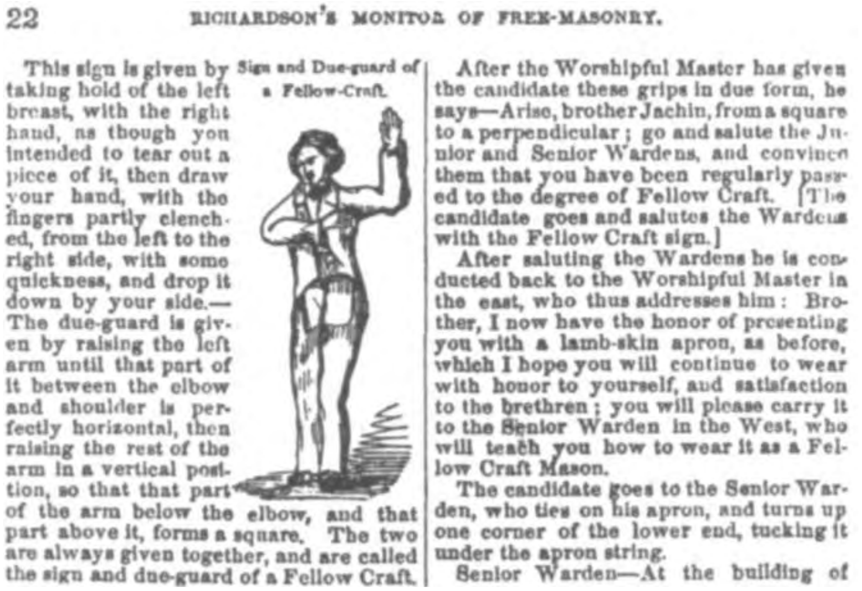

22 RICHARDSON'S MONITOR OF FREE-MASONRY.

Sign and Due-guard of a Fellow-Craft.

This sign is given by taking hold of the left breast, with the right hand, as though you intended to tear out a piece of it, then draw your hand, with the fingers partly clenched, from the left to the right side, with some quickness, and drop it down by your side.—The due-guard is given by raising the left arm until that part of it between the elbow and shoulder is perfectly horizontal, then raising the rest of the arm in a vertical position, so that that part of the arm below the elbow, and that part above it, forms a square. The two are always given together, and are called the sign and due-guard of a Fellow Craft.

After the Worshipful Master has given the candidate these grips in due form, he says—Arise, brother Jachin, from a square to a perpendicular; go and salute the Junior and Senior Wardens, and convince them that you have been regularly passed to the degree of Fellow Craft. [The candidate goes and salutes the Wardens with the Fellow Craft sign.]

After saluting the Wardens he is conducted back to the Worshipful Master in the east, who thus addresses him: Brother, I now have the honor of presenting you with a lamb-skin apron, as before, which I hope you will continue to wear with honor to yourself, and satisfaction to the brethren; you will please carry it to the Senior Warden in the West, who will teach you how to wear it as a Fellow Craft Mason.

The candidate goes to the Senior Warden, who ties on his apron, and turns up one corner of the lower end, tucking it under the apron string.

Senior Warden—At the building of

Excerpt (p. *22)* of *Richardson's Monitor of Freemasonry,* illustrating and describing the sign and due-guard of a Fellow Craft Mason.

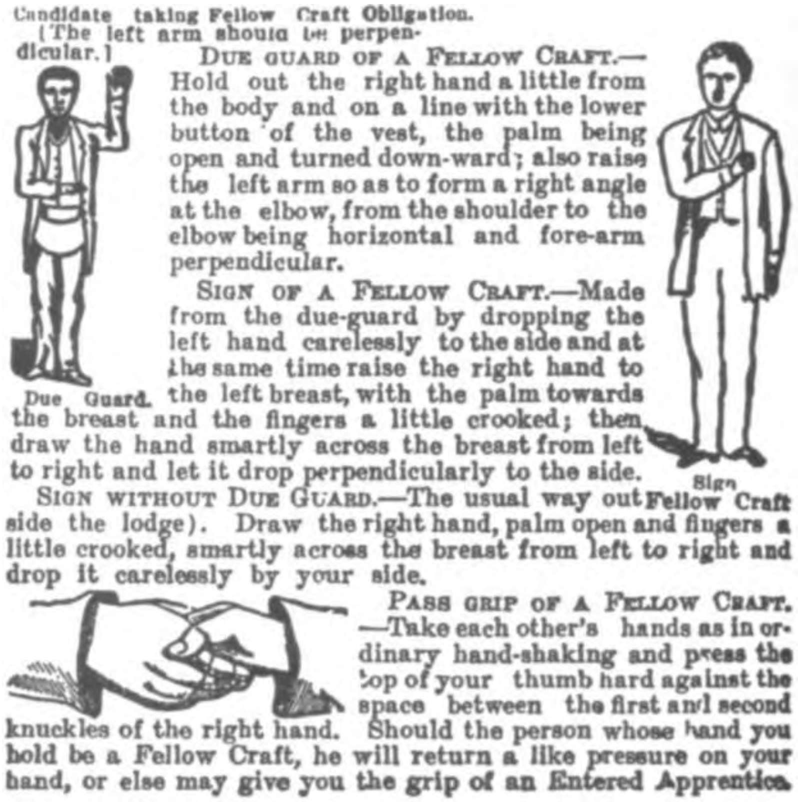

Candidate taking Fellow Craft Obligation. [The left arm should be perpendicular.]

Due Guard.

Sign Fellow Craft

DUE GUARD OF A FELLOW CRAFT.—Hold out the right hand a little from the body and on a line with the lower button of the vest, the palm being open and turned down-ward; also raise the left arm so as to form a right angle at the elbow, from the shoulder to the elbow being horizontal and fore-arm perpendicular.

SIGN OF A FELLOW CRAFT.—Made from the due-guard by dropping the left hand carelessly to the side and at the same time raise the right hand to the left breast, with the palm towards the breast and the fingers a little crooked; then draw the hand smartly across the breast from left to right and let it drop perpendicularly to the side.

SIGN WITHOUT DUE GUARD.—The usual way outside the lodge). Draw the right hand, palm open and fingers a little crooked, smartly across the breast from left to right and drop it carelessly by your side.

PASS GRIP OF A FELLOW CRAFT.—Take each other's hands as in ordinary hand-shaking and press the top of your thumb hard against the space between the first and second knuckles of the right hand. Should the person whose hand you hold be a Fellow Craft, he will return a like pressure on your hand, or else may give you the grip of an Entered Apprentice.

An excerpt, page 107, from the 1826 book *Freemasonry Exposed* by Captain William Morgan, showing the sign and due-guard of a Fellow Craft Mason. Morgan, a Mason of 30 years standing, renounced the cultic secret fraternity and decided to expose their evildoing. Shortly after his book was published, outraged Masons kidnapped Morgan, then murdered him and mutilated his body in a Masonic death ritual. The murder caused a public uproar which ended in the majority of the members of the wicked secret society across America leaving the Lodge. Morgan's murder even inspired John Quincy Adams, the sixth President of the United States, to write and publish his own expose of Freemasonry. In Adam's book, *Letters on Freemasonry,* the distinguished former President branded Freemasonry as *"Luciferian."*

Russian Orthodox priest Grigori Rasputin was not only an occultic Mason, but also engaged in Dionysiac sex orgies and rituals. A cult developed around the hypnotic Rasputin after the monk was said by the Czarina to have healed her young son who suffered from a blood disease. Those jealous of the growing political power of the "Mad Monk Rasputin" eventually had him assassinated. Rasputin is shown here giving the left-handed path version of the penal sign of the Fellow Craft degree of Freemasons.

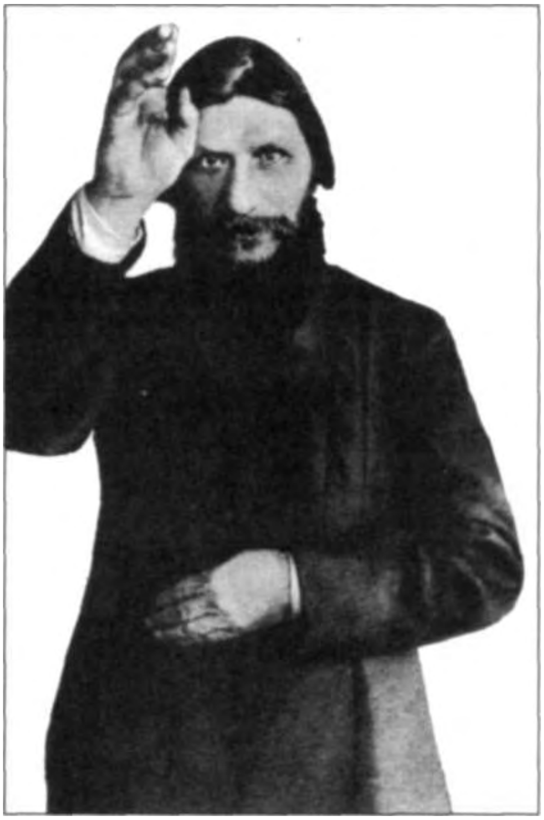

Catholic Cardinal (left) stands with Greek Orthodox prelate on official visit to Greece.

Ὁ καρδινάλιος Μπέα, εἰς τὸ πλευρὸν τοῦ Ἀθηναγόρα χαιρετᾶ τοὺς προδότας τοῦ Φαναρίου, οἱ ὁποῖοι τὸν ἐπευφημοῦν.

The illustration from the book, *Mormonism's Temple of Doom*, by William Schnoebelen and James Spencer, demonstrates the parallels between the Mormon Temple ceremonial sign and the sign of a Fellow Craft Mason.

Sign and Execution of Penalty

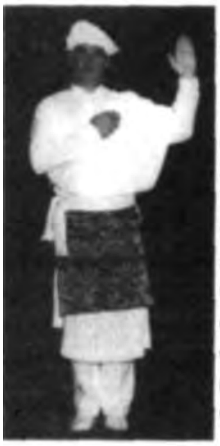

Obligation and penalty of a Fellow Craft Mason: "I will...ever conceal, and never reveal any of the secret, arts, parts, or points of the Fellow Craft Degree...binding myself under no less penalty than of having my breast torn open, my heart plucked out and placed on the highest pinnacle of the temple." *(Duncan's Ritual*, pp. 64 & 65).

"The penalty is executed by placing the right hand on the left breast, and drawing the hand quickly accros the chest..." *(Mormon Temple Ceremony)*

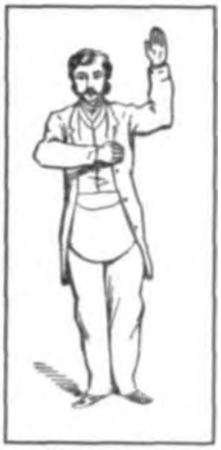

Masonry: Sign of a Fellow Craft Mason *(Duncans Ritual*, p. 17)

THE LIGHT OF KRISHNAMURTI

By Gabriele Blackburn

THE LIGHT OF
KRISHNAMURTI

The *Light of Krishnamurti* relates the many-faceted mystical and spiritual occurrences of J. Krishnamurti as experienced by Gabriele Blackburn, a spiritual healer and clairvoyant. This is the story of the author's life in relationship to these events, their extraordinary meaning, and the profound effect they had on her. In a simple, direct, factual manner, she tells how his friendship, personal interviews, and the understanding of his teachings, helped her to resolve a life crisis, and discover an insightful way of living. This book voices the quality of the clear Light of truth which casts no shadow. It is a personal testimony to the sacred life and teachings of Krishnamurti, that Gold Light of eternity.

An advertisement for a biography of India's Theosophy guru, Krishnamurti. Occultist Annie Besant, who took over as leader of Theosophy after the death of its founder, once touted Krishnamurti as the "Christ of the New Age." The guru's pose here shows he's "on the square" and honors the trifold deity of Illuminist sects.

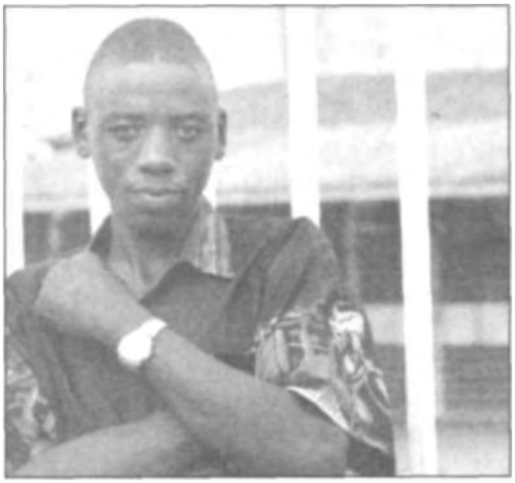

This man, in 1994, participated in the brutal, genocidal massacre of 3,000 Tutsi tribes people who sought refuge in a church in Rwanda, Africa. In this news article *(Austin American-Statesman,* April 11, 2004), he says he is repentant and is rehabilitated. The cultic positioning of his arms and clenched fist say otherwise.

Rock star *Ozzy* Osbourne lets his Masonic friends know he's *"on the square"* with this hand/arms pose. *(USA Today,* November 29, *2002,* P. 10A)

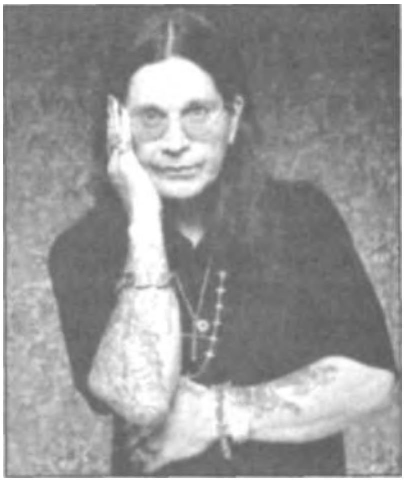

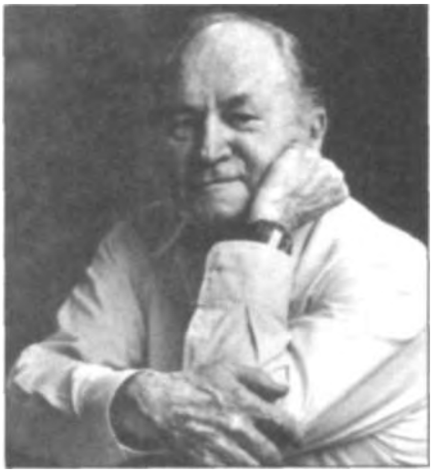

Jewish actor E. G. Marshal who played a crusading lawyer on TV's *The Defenders* show in the 1960s and starred in many movies, shows that, masonically, he's *"on the square."*

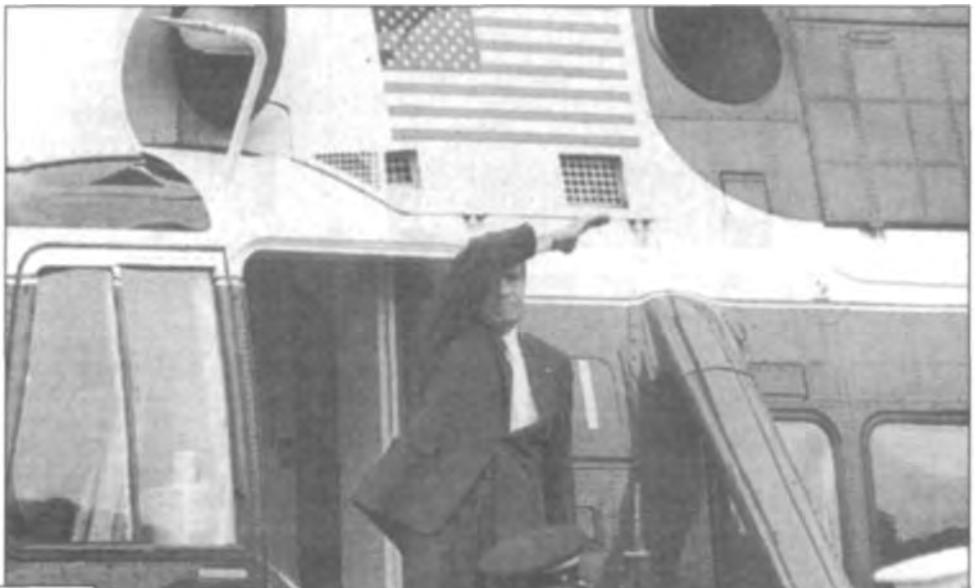

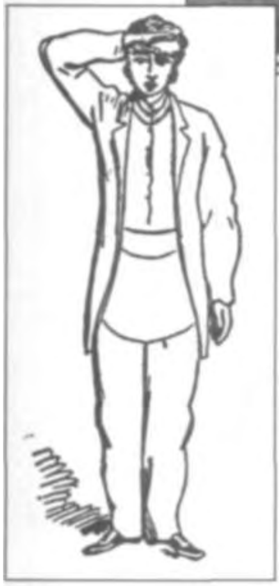

A somber Richard Nixon, having just resigned the high office of President, waves goodbye from his helicopter, August 9, 1974. Few people, understood that the defeated ex-President was actually signaling the Dueguard and Sign of a Royal Arch Mason (7th degree). The film of this historic event shows Nixon stiffly raising his right hand to his forehead, the hand and arm horizontal, the thumb toward the forehead. He then dropped it perpendicularly by his side, turned and entered the aircraft. This exactly fits the description given of the *Royal Arch Duegard and Sign* in *Duncan's Masonic Ritual and Monitor*, 3rd Edition, Crown Publishers, p. 251 (see figure 36). According to Masonic teachings, the brother who descends into the "vault" and discovers deep secrets and then reveals them to the profane (that is, to outsiders) or who turns against the Order and/or his Masonic superiors, must be duly punished for his transgressions. He must receive the *penalty* due him. Richard M. Nixon was favored by the Illuminati, gained access to their innermost secrets, and then threatened to expose them. Swift punishment followed.

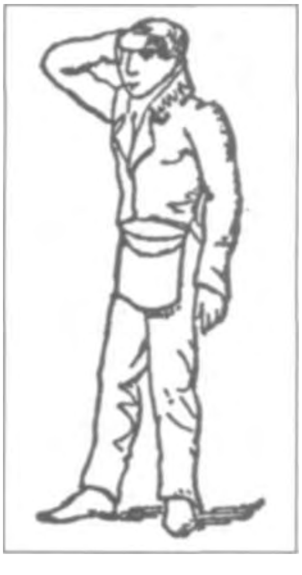

The 7th degree sign given by resigning President Nixon, as illustrated in yet another official Masonic scourcebook, *Richardson's Monitor of Freemasonry*, p. 79.

JEWISH WORLD **23**

JEWISH TIME

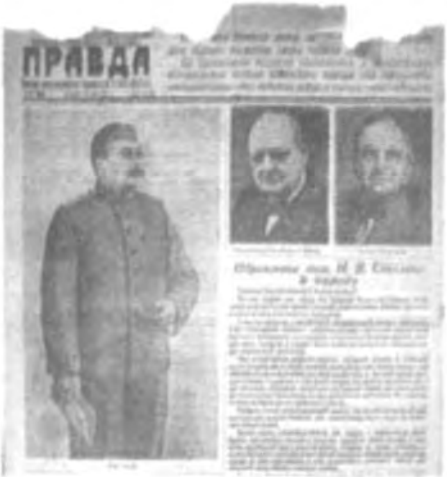

A report in *Pravda*, the official Soviet daily, said 48 years ago last week that a predominantly Jewish group of doctors was arrested for conspiring to kill the Soviet leadership, in collusion with the CIA, the Zionist Organization, and the Joint Distribution Committee. The report touched off a wave of antisemitic attacks, including dismissals from key economic, cultural, and academic posts. It remains unclear where that anti-Jewish effort would have led had Stalin not died six weeks after its publication. Some scholars contend the Soviet dictator was serious about deporting some two million Jews from the western USSR to Siberia. On April 4, 1953, one month after Stalin's death, *Pravda* conceded that the "doctors' plot" story was fabricated by the KGB. However, Stalin's successors retained – until Mikhail Gorbachev's Glasnost era – the emigration ban which kept Soviet Jewry from m ing to the free world generally, and to Israel in particular.

This photograph of Soviet dictator Joseph Stalin in *Pravda* (January 20, 1953, reprinted in *Jewish World*, January 2001, p. 23), the official communist newspaper, shows him clearly signaling the *Sign of A Master Mason*. Compare Stalin's arm and hand with the illustration of Figure 6, page 18, from *Duncan's Masonic Ritual and Monitor*. (Note: Stalin gives the sign with his left hand, indicating he follows the diabolical "left-handed path of occultism.")

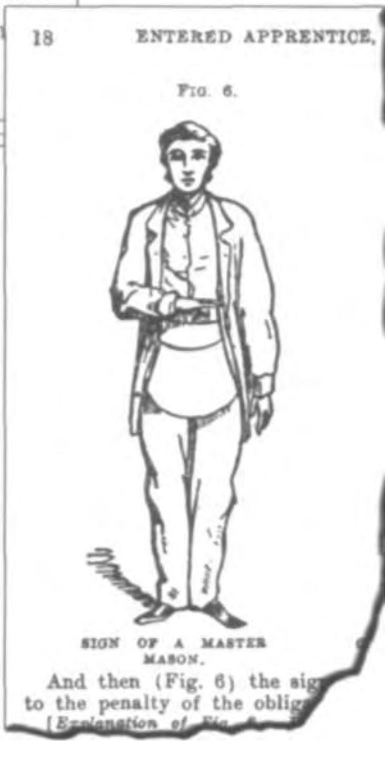

18 ENTERED APPRENTICE,

FIG. 6.

SIGN OF A MASTER MASON.

And then (Fig. 6) the sig
to the penalty of the oblig
[*Explanation of Fig.*

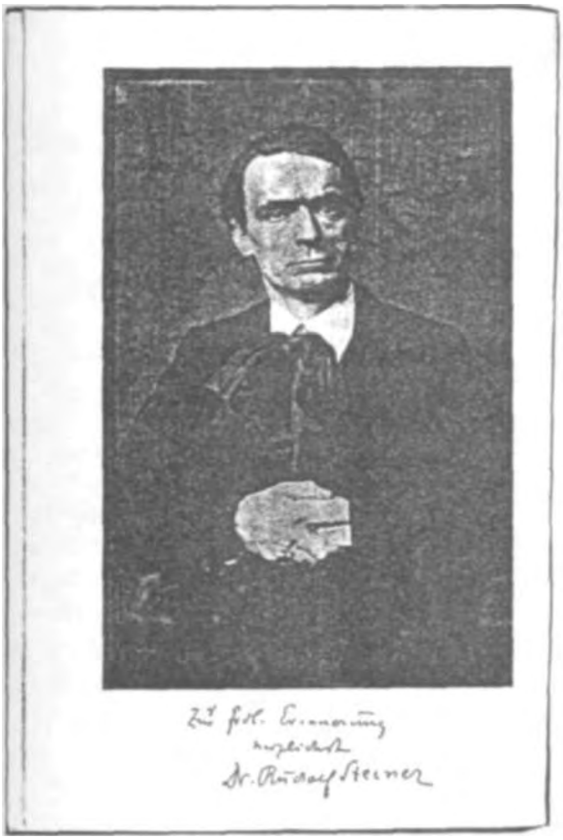

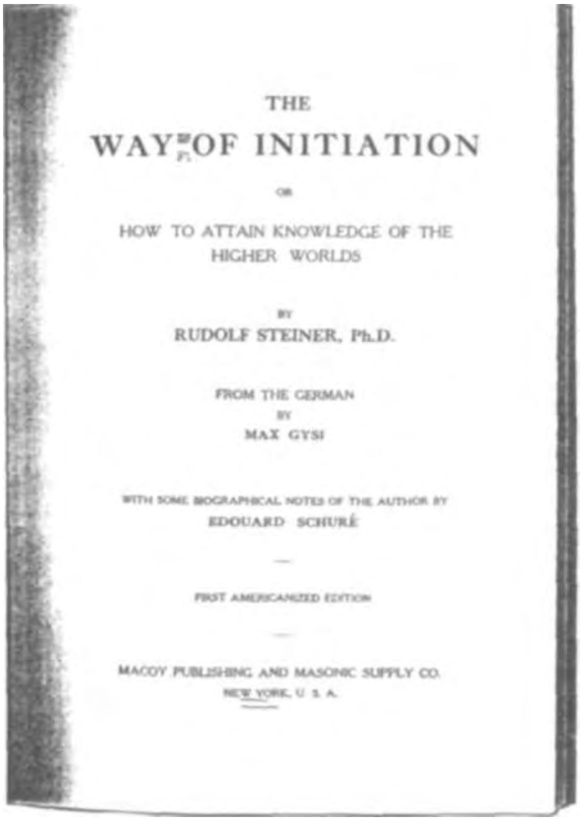

THE
WAY OF INITIATION
OR
HOW TO ATTAIN KNOWLEDGE OF THE
HIGHER WORLDS
BY
RUDOLF STEINER, Ph.D.
FROM THE GERMAN
BY
MAX GYSI
WITH SOME BIOGRAPHICAL NOTES OF THE AUTHOR BY
EDOUARD SCHURÉ
—
FIRST AMERICANIZED EDITION
—
MACOY PUBLISHING AND MASONIC SUPPLY CO.
NEW YORK, U. S. A.

Rudolf Steiner, a Hitler contemporary in Germany, displays the *Master's Grip.* During the Nazi era, Steiner became world-famous for his Masonic and Rosicrucian based teachings. This picture comes from his book, *The Way of Initiation—how to Attain Knowledge of the Higher Worlds,* published by Macoy Publishing and Masonic Supply Co., New York City. Steiner also created the teaching system for the Waldorf schools, very popular today in the U.S.A.

An excerpt from page 36 from *Richardson s Monitor of Freemasonry,* illustrating the strong Master's Grip, or Lion's Paw, as practiced in the third degree of Scottish Rite Freemasonry.

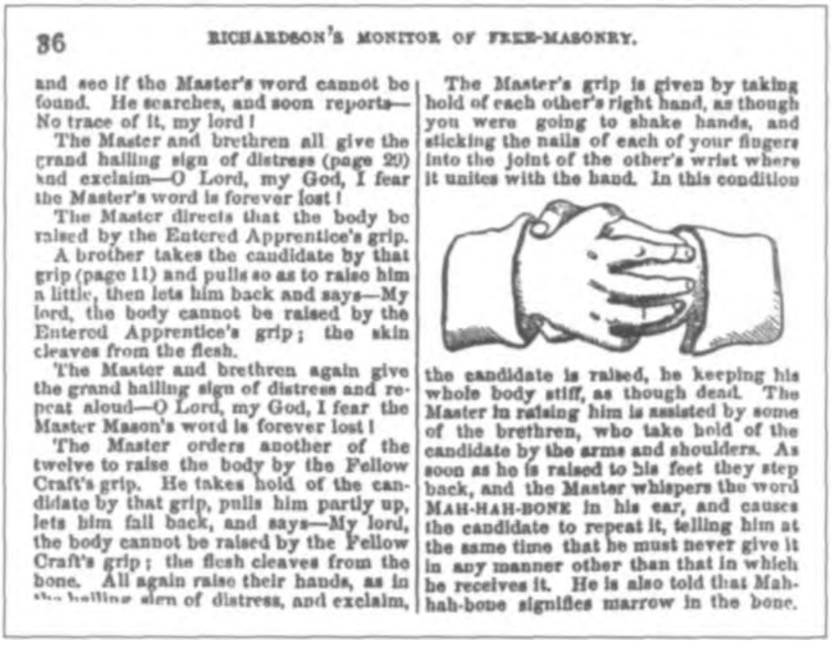

36 RICHARDSON'S MONITOR OF FREE-MASONRY.

and see if the Master's word cannot be found. He searches, and soon reports—No trace of it, my lord!

The Master and brethren all give the grand hailing sign of distress (page 29) and exclaim—O Lord, my God, I fear the Master's word is forever lost!

The Master directs that the body be raised by the Entered Apprentice's grip.

A brother takes the candidate by that grip (page 11) and pulls so as to raise him a little, then lets him back and says—My lord, the body cannot be raised by the Entered Apprentice's grip; the skin cleaves from the flesh.

The Master and brethren again give the grand hailing sign of distress and repeat aloud—O Lord, my God, I fear the Master Mason's word is forever lost!

The Master orders another of the twelve to raise the body by the Fellow Craft's grip. He takes hold of the candidate by that grip, pulls him partly up, lets him fall back, and says—My lord, the body cannot be raised by the Fellow Craft's grip; the flesh cleaves from the bone. All again raise their hands, as in the hailing sign of distress, and exclaim,

The Master's grip is given by taking hold of each other's right hand, as though you were going to shake hands, and sticking the nails of each of your fingers into the joint of the other's wrist where it unites with the hand. In this condition the candidate is raised, he keeping his whole body stiff, as though dead. The Master in raising him is assisted by some of the brethren, who take hold of the candidate by the arms and shoulders. As soon as he is raised to his feet they step back, and the Master whispers the word MAH-HAH-BONE in his ear, and causes the candidate to repeat it, telling him at the same time that he must never give it in any manner other than that in which he receives it. He is also told that Mah-hah-bone signifies marrow in the bone.

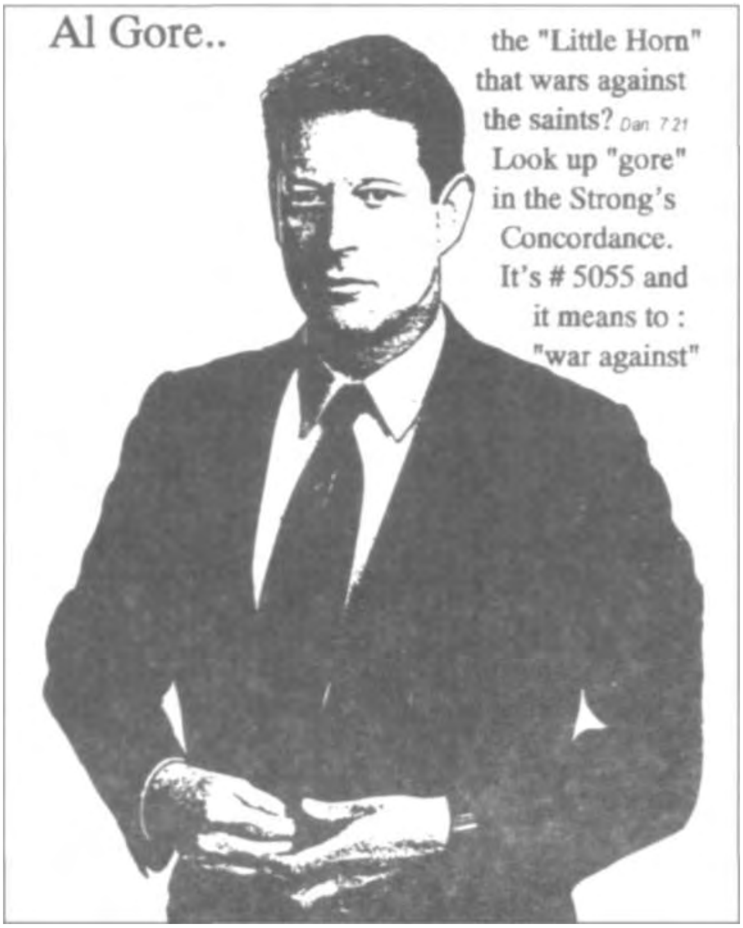

Former Vice President Al Gore, who ran for the presidency on the Democrat Party ticket in 2000, appears to be in the process of making the Master's Grip of the 3rd degree of Freemasonry, indicating he is, as a minimum, a Master Mason. (Photo: from Exodus III, Volume 2, Number 1) Note: A sign similar to that of the Master's Grip is that of the Most Excellent Master as illustrated on p. 61 of Richardson's Monitor of Freemasonry.

Page 61 of *Richardson's Monitor of Freemasonry* illustrating the sign of the *Most Excellent Master's* degree.

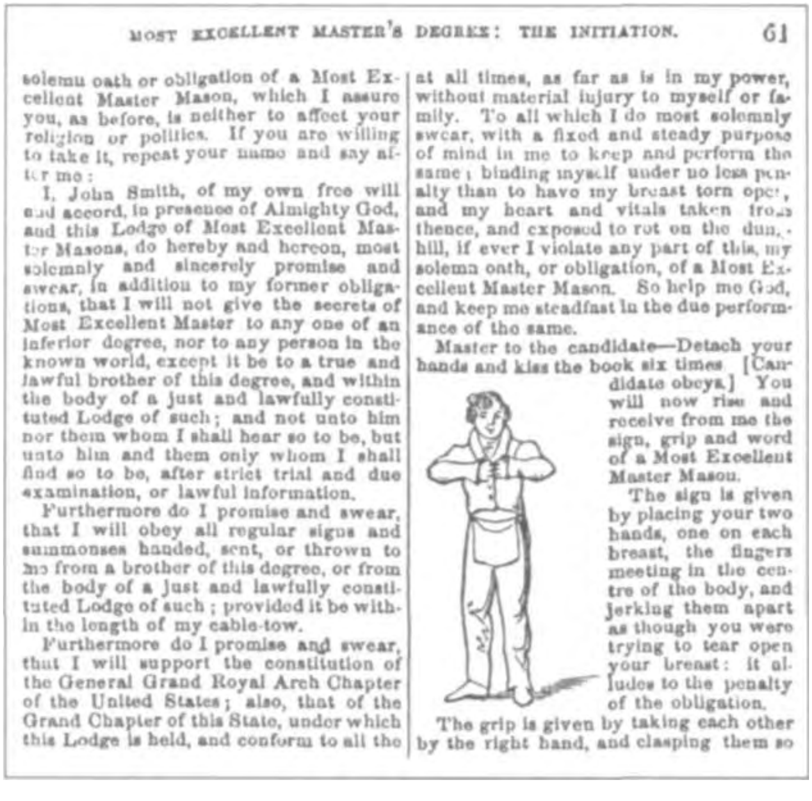

MOST EXCELLENT MASTER'S DEGREE: THE INITIATION. 61

solemn oath or obligation of a Most Excellent Master Mason, which I assure you, as before, is neither to affect your religion or politics. If you are willing to take it, repeat your name and say after me:

I, John Smith, of my own free will and accord, in presence of Almighty God, and this Lodge of Most Excellent Master Masons, do hereby and hereon, most solemnly and sincerely promise and swear, in addition to my former obligations, that I will not give the secrets of Most Excellent Master to any one of an inferior degree, nor to any person in the known world, except it be to a true and lawful brother of this degree, and within the body of a just and lawfully constituted Lodge of such; and not unto him nor them whom I shall hear so to be, but unto him and them only whom I shall find so to be, after strict trial and due examination, or lawful information.

Furthermore do I promise and swear, that I will obey all regular signs and summonses handed, sent, or thrown to me from a brother of this degree, or from the body of a just and lawfully constituted Lodge of such; provided it be within the length of my cable-tow.

Furthermore do I promise and swear, that I will support the constitution of the General Grand Royal Arch Chapter of the United States; also, that of the Grand Chapter of this State, under which this Lodge is held, and conform to all the at all times, as far as is in my power, without material injury to myself or family. To all which I do most solemnly swear, with a fixed and steady purpose of mind in me to keep and perform the same; binding myself under no less penalty than to have my breast torn open, and my heart and vitals taken from thence, and exposed to rot on the dunghill, if ever I violate any part of this, my solemn oath, or obligation, of a Most Excellent Master Mason. So help me God, and keep me steadfast in the due performance of the same.

Master to the candidate—Detach your hands and kiss the book six times. [Candidate obeys.] You will now rise and receive from me the sign, grip and word of a Most Excellent Master Mason.

The sign is given by placing your two hands, one on each breast, the fingers meeting in the centre of the body, and jerking them apart as though you were trying to tear open your breast: it alludes to the penalty of the obligation.

The grip is given by taking each other by the right hand, and clasping them so

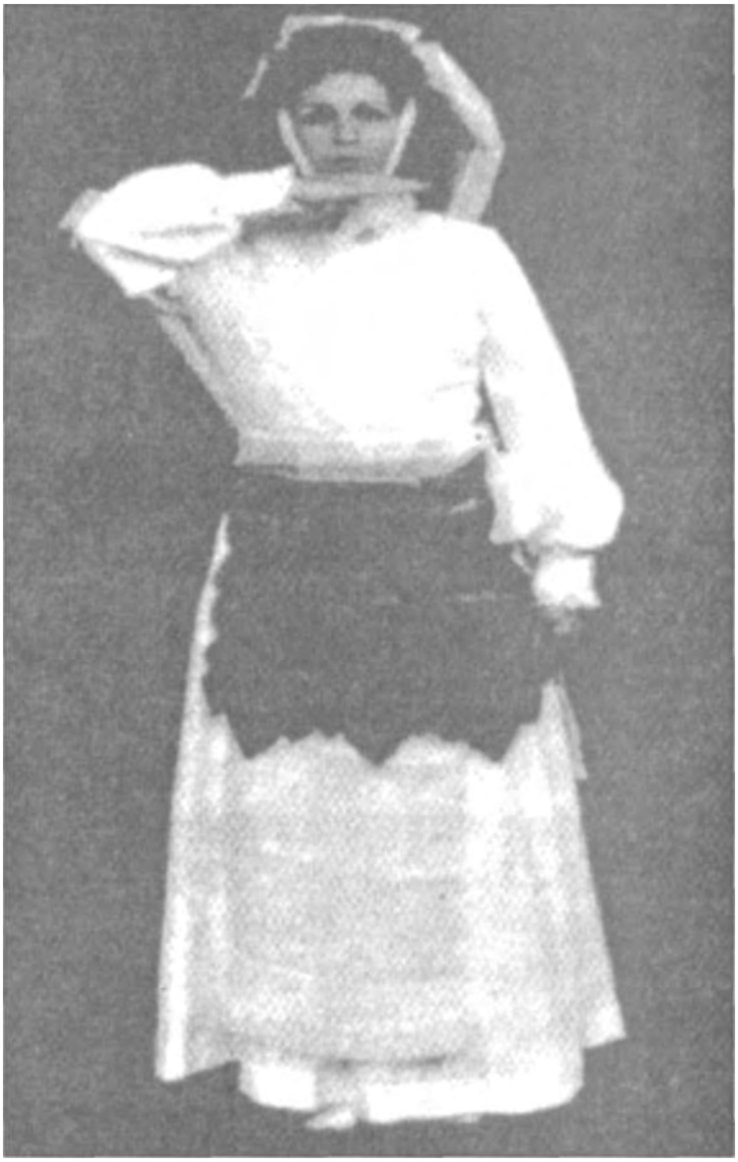

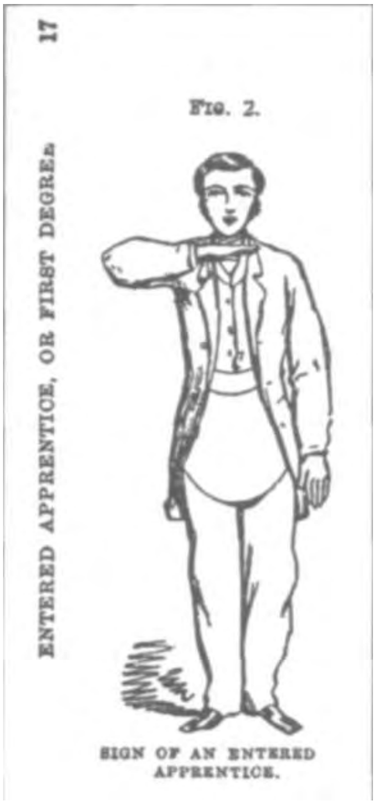

ENTERED APPRENTICE, OR FIRST DEGREE. 17

FIG. 2.

SIGN OF AN ENTERED APPRENTICE.

Mormon (LDS) woman gives a sign in a LDS Church ritual ceremony. It is exactly the same as that of Freemasonry, as proven by this excerpt from page 17 of *Duncan's Masonic Ritual and Monitor,* illustrating the sign of an Entered Apprentice. Joseph Smith, founder of the Mormon Church, borrowed many of his church's signs, grips, symbols, and rituals from the Masonic Lodge. In fact, Smith was excommunicated by the Masons for having done so. (Photo of Mormon woman is from *Mormonism, Masonry and Godhood,* by Dr. Cathy Burns, Sharing Publishing, Mt. Carmel, Pennsylvania)

Michael A. Hoffman II *Secret Societies and Psychological Warfare* **Page 66**

All the Pyramid's Men

The Confederate officer on the left is First Lt. John Oden, of the Tenth Alabama Volunteer Infantry who fought at First Manassas, Chancellorsville and Antietam. where he was seriously wounded. Lying bleeding. Oden used a stick and his own blood to draw masonic symbols on a paper. Then he called out to the Union troops on picket duty to take the paper to any Yankee who was a Freemason.

It was carried to a Union Colonel who was a mason, but not of a high enough degree to comprehend Oden's symbolic message. Another mason, Union Capt. Perry was summoned and he recognized the drawings and announced that a fellow mason was in distress. Four Northern masons crept out to the field, placed the wounded Southerner on a cot and carried him to the field hospital of the 5th New Hampshire Volunteer Infantry where he was treated. When the Union Army moved on, Oden was sent to the private home of a physician to recuperate, rather than to a prisoner of war camp. Lt. Oden survived the War Between the States.

While at first sight, this is a touching story of the brotherhood of Freemasonry, some of the glow dims when we recall that a non-mason, Christian Confederate would have been left to bleed to death. Moreover, if cooperation like this existed between brother masons in the field, one is left to wonder at what degree collusion between Confederate and Union Freemasons of high office and rank, took place behind the scenes.

This photo and accompanying text comes from the book, *Secret Societies and Psychological Warfare,* by Michael A. Hoffman, II, a book highly recommended by the author of *Codex Magica.*

And More Revealing Hand Signs...

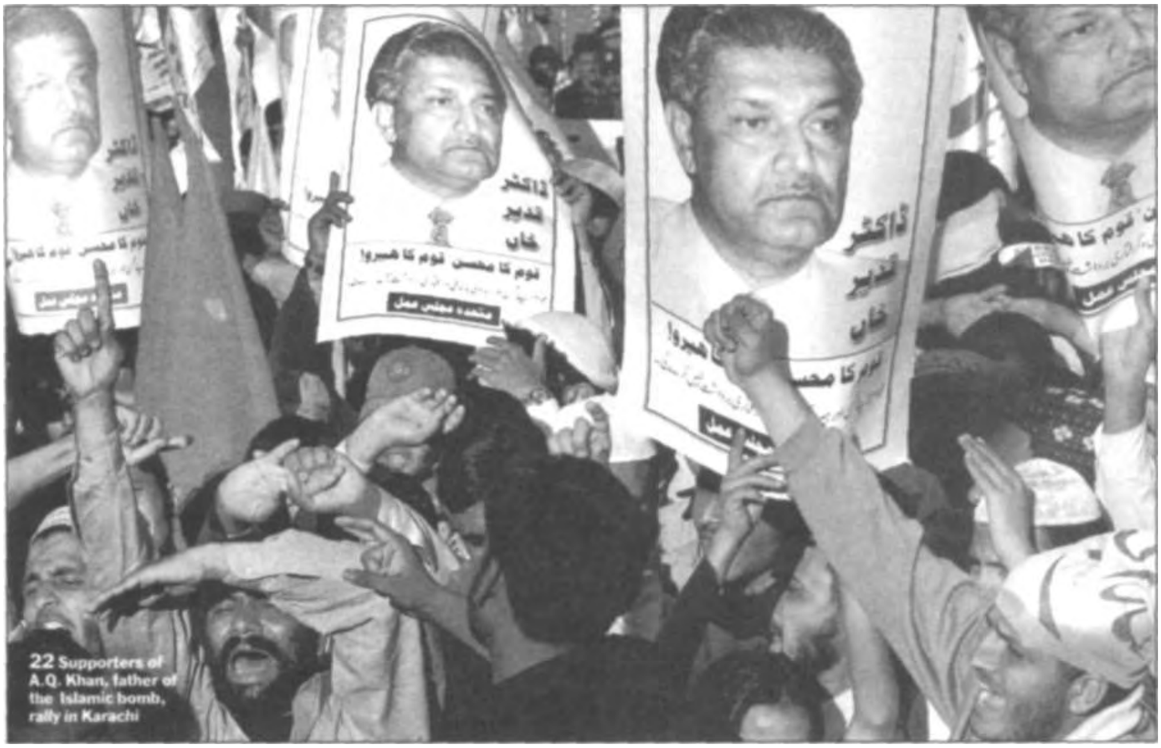

This photograph in *Time* magazine (February 14, 2005) pictures an Islamic mob rallying in Karachi, Pakistan. The demonstrators were declaring their support for A. Q. Kahn, called the "Father of the Islamic Nuclear Bomb." What is especially interesting are the many varied hand gestures of the people in the crowd. Intriguing, to say the least.

Environmental activists, members of *Greenpeace*, show their signs. Several display the so-called "V" sign of the Illuminati. The fellow at top left has his fist clenched in a communist mode. The peace symbol, an upside-down broken cross inside a circle, is painted on the banner behind them. (Photo: *The Toronto Star*, July 23, 1995, p. F1)

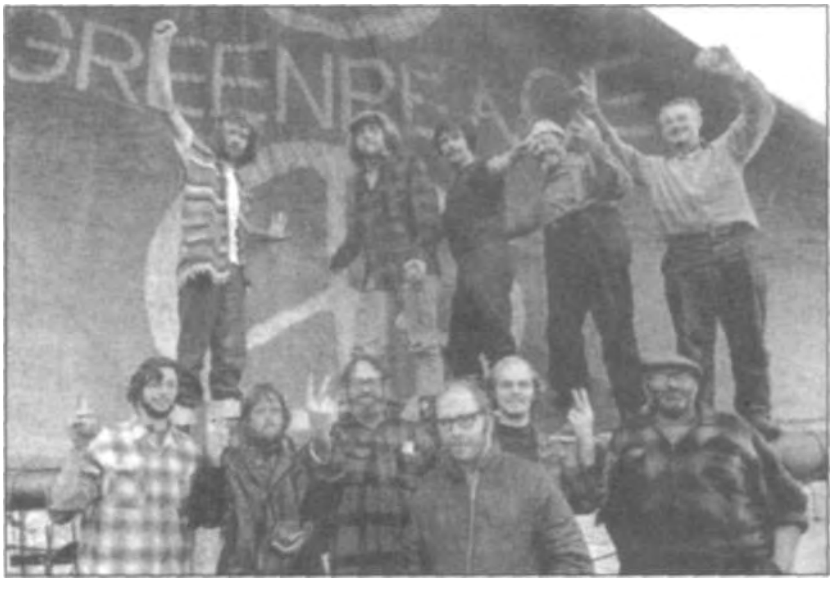

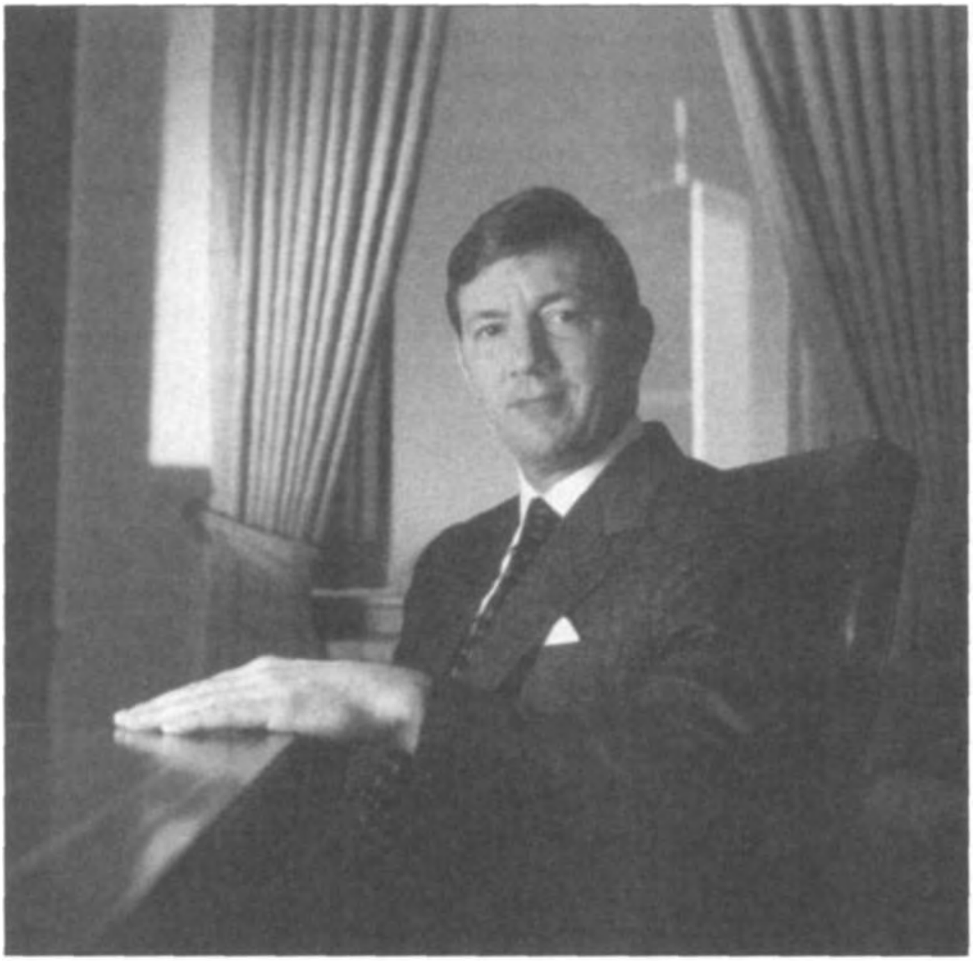

John Meriwether, manager of Wall Street's Long-Term Capital Management hedge fund, lays his left hand on the table as an unusual, but no doubt planned mode. *(U.S. Mews and World Report,* May 3, 1999, p. 45)

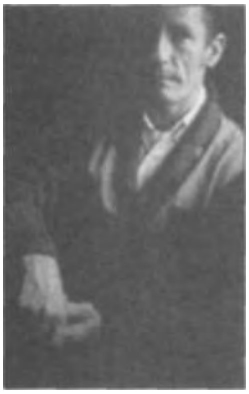

Entertainer, Lyle Lovett, who once was married to actress Julia Roberts, presents an odd hand sign. *(Texas Monthly* magazine, July 2003, p. 19)

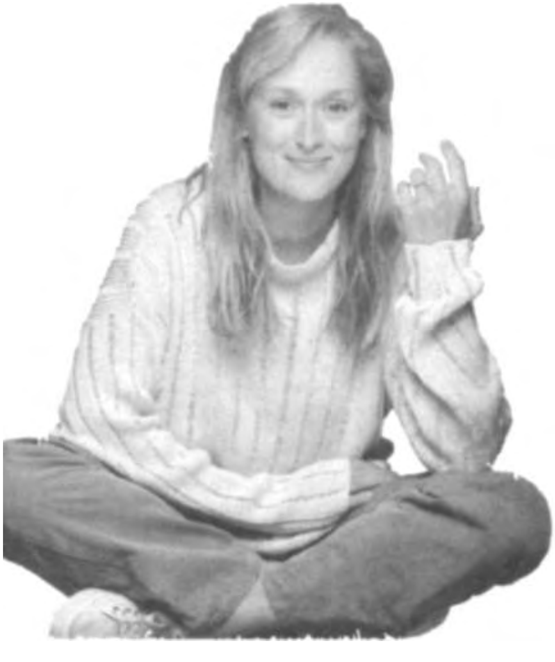

Academy Award winner Meryl Streep, who has been observed giving the Il *Cornuto* horned devil sign, in this picture in *Newsweek* (September 26, 1994) looks to be just sitting and relaxing. Actually, Ms. Streep displays a cabalistic pose.

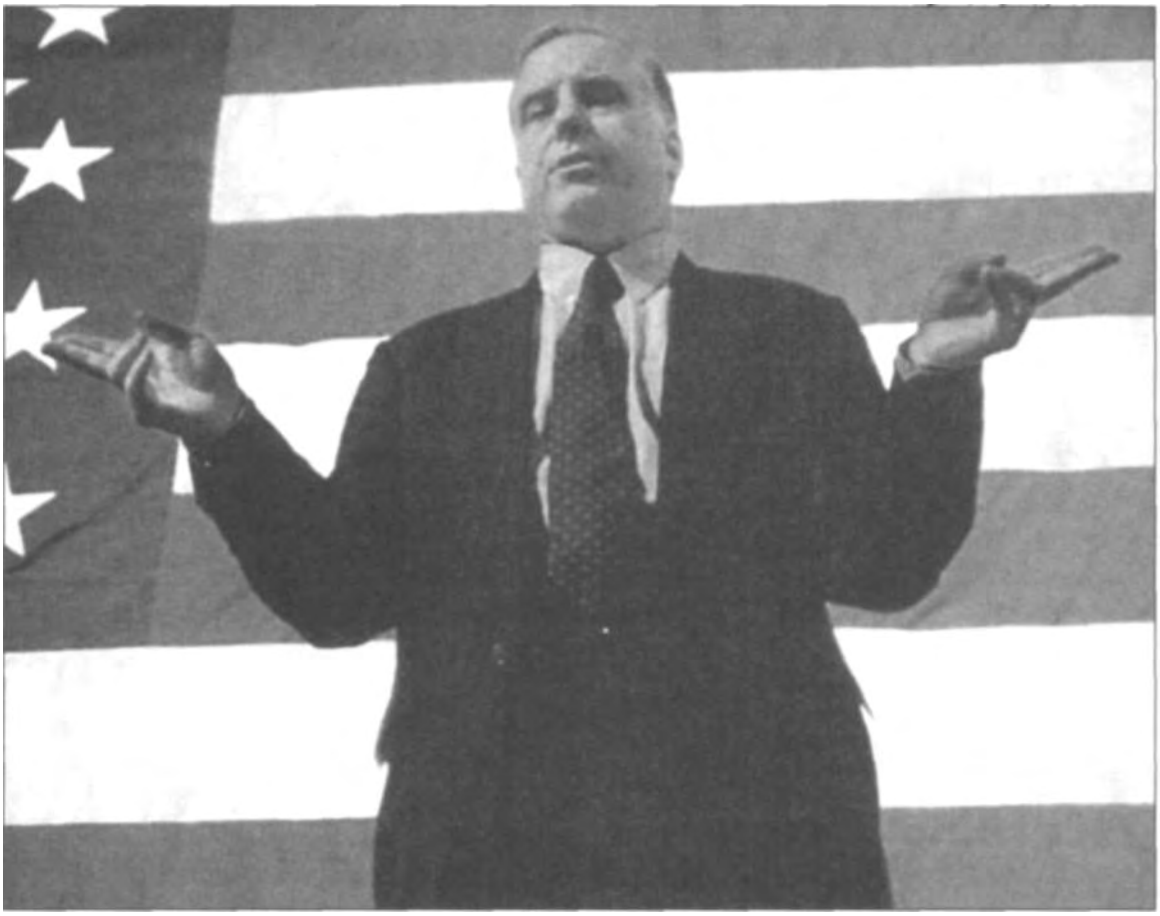

Former Vermont Governor, Howard Dean, Chairman of the Democrat Party's National Committee (DNC), signs with both hands. (*Business Week*, January 12, 2004, p. 35)

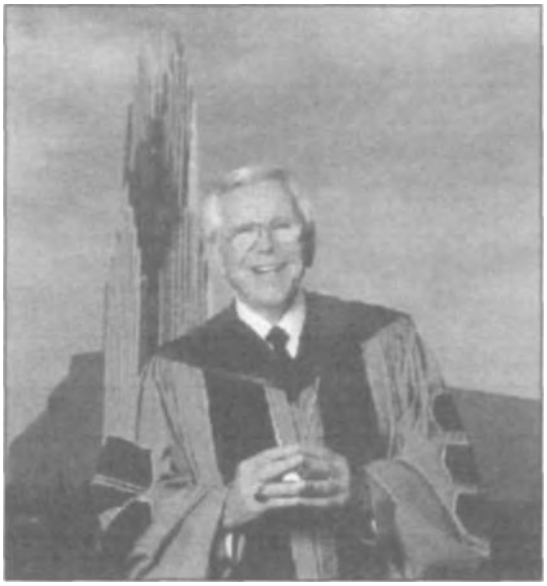

Robert Schuller, pastor of California's Crystal Cathedral, is a 33rd degree Mason. The hand sign he is giving is typical for Schuller.

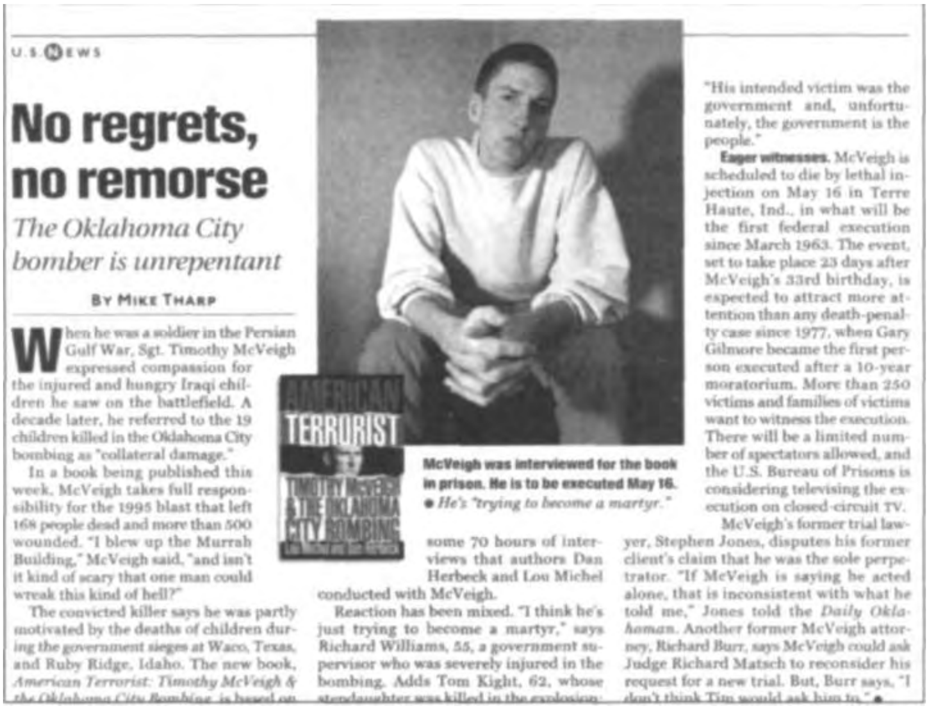
AMERICAN TERRORIST
TIMOTHY McVEIGH & THE OKLAHOMA CITY BOMBING

U.S. NEWS

No regrets, no remorse

The Oklahoma City bomber is unrepentant

BY MIKE THARP

When he was a soldier in the Persian Gulf War, Sgt. Timothy McVeigh expressed compassion for the injured and hungry Iraqi children he saw on the battlefield. A decade later, he referred to the 19 children killed in the Oklahoma City bombing as "collateral damage."

In a book being published this week, McVeigh takes full responsibility for the 1995 blast that left 168 people dead and more than 500 wounded. "I blew up the Murrah Building," McVeigh said, "and isn't it kind of scary that one man could wreak this kind of hell?"

The convicted killer says he was partly motivated by the deaths of children during the government sieges at Waco, Texas, and Ruby Ridge, Idaho. The new book, *American Terrorist: Timothy McVeigh & the Oklahoma City Bombing*, is based on some 70 hours of interviews that authors Dan Herbeck and Lou Michel conducted with McVeigh.

Reaction has been mixed. "I think he's just trying to become a martyr," says Richard Williams, 55, a government supervisor who was severely injured in the bombing. Adds Tom Kight, 62, whose stepdaughter was killed in the explosion: "His intended victim was the government and, unfortunately, the government is the people."

Eager witnesses. McVeigh is scheduled to die by lethal injection on May 16 in Terre Haute, Ind., in what will be the first federal execution since March 1963. The event, set to take place 23 days after McVeigh's 33rd birthday, is expected to attract more attention than any death-penalty case since 1977, when Gary Gilmore became the first person executed after a 10-year moratorium. More than 250 victims and families of victims want to witness the execution. There will be a limited number of spectators allowed, and the U.S. Bureau of Prisons is considering televising the execution on closed-circuit TV.

McVeigh's former trial lawyer, Stephen Jones, disputes his former client's claim that he was the sole perpetrator. "If McVeigh is saying he acted alone, that is inconsistent with what he told me," Jones told the *Daily Oklahoman*. Another former McVeigh attorney, Richard Burr, says McVeigh could ask Judge Richard Matsch to reconsider his request for a new trial. But, Burr says, "I don't think Tim would ask him to." ●

McVeigh was interviewed for the book in prison. He is to be executed May 16.
● *He's "trying to become a martyr."*

Timothy McVeigh, put to death by lethal injection after conviction of perpetrating the murder of 168 people in 1995 by blowing up a federal building in Oklahoma City, remained an enigmatic personality to the end. But this picture of McVeigh in prison shortly before his execution may be revealing as to the man's character. What at first appears to be just the man's thumb sticking out may actually be the magical sign called the *manofigo* (a clenched hand or fist, the thumb jutting out). In some secret societies and witchcraft sects the thumb thus symbolizes the phallus inserted as a creative act. In sum, in this posture, McVeigh, realizing it is the final image or *one* of the last of him that the outside world—his accusers—will probably see, is saying, "F..k you!" The article accompanying the picture of McVeigh would seem to buttress this theory. It is titled, "No Regrets, No Remorse," and says the Oklahoma City bomber is "unrepentant." The angry scowl on Timothy McVeigh's face is also indicative. (Photo: U.S. *News & World Report,* April 9, 2001)

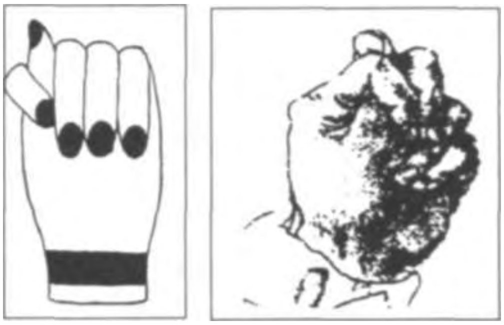

At left, the magical *manofigo* or *mano in fica* hand sign. At right is a second version. Timothy McVeigh's hand sign above is a third version. The *mano in fica* is of oriental origin. It represents a *lingam-yoni* (penis-vagina) formed by the thumb protruding between any of the fingers. To early Christians, it was called *manus obscenus,* the obscene hand.

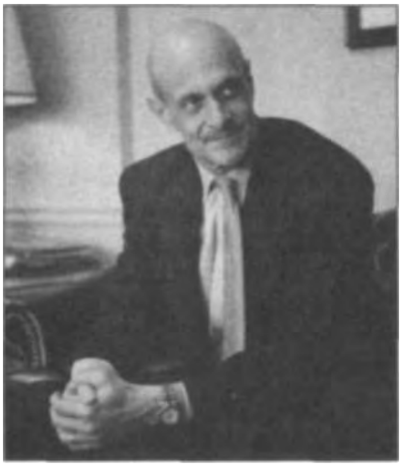

The vicious Michael Chertoff, son of a Jewish Rabbi, former U.S. Justice Department prosecutor who is active in the anti-Christian group, the ADL, lets the elite see who he is by giving the vulgar and coarse *manofigo* hand sign. Chertoff is President George W. Bush's Director of Homeland Security. Many believe Chertoff is an Israeli Mossad asset.

ELEVEN

"Cross My Heart and Hope to Die"—The Mysterious *"X" factor*

An X is an ancient symbol for change or transformation.. .long associated in medieval and renaissance art with the coming of the Messiah who shall make all things new.

—Jim Tresner, 33°
Scottish Rite Journal

The Illuminist/Masonic meaning of the X is simply this: It is the sign of Osiris, the great (Egyptian) sun god...

—Texe Marrs
Dark Majesty

The sign, or letter, X, has a long history of use in the Ancient Mystery Religions, in apostate Judaism, in Freemasonry, and in the occult. The Illuminati elite use it to this day to symbolize key phenomena and mark significant events.

The mysterious letter X seems to take on a wide and varied life of its own, with or without the secret aid of the elite sponsorship. Mark Euston, of the Christian Intelligence Resource Network, in a letter to the author, detailed some of the many examples of the use of the letter X. For example, the well-known science fiction TV show, *The X Files.* Pornographic movies are rated X and the more sensational movies in the raw flesh category are touted as XXX, or *triple* X. Euston noted that we have the Microsoft Corporation creation of *X-box,* the movie *X-Men,* off-brand products are called "Brand X," and of course, there is the U.S. terrorist prison camp, *Camp X-Ray* at Guantanamo, Cuba. Today's youth have been called *Generation* X, and a lot of folks are concerned about a planet, or star, reported to be speeding toward us called *Planet X* that has occult significance.

Euston asks about all the usages of X, "Are these just strange coincidences, some type of mind control trigger, or a subliminal conditioning of some kind?" Good question.

Another friend, Kathy Creek, wrote and asked if I had noticed the many new drugs being released by pharmaceutical firms with either a V, Z, or an X in their name? She mentioned an ad she had seen for Clarinex, an allergy drug that had a little sun sign used to dot the letter "i" in Clarinex.

John Myers, another astute friend interested in such topics, sent me a lengthy letter and included an excerpt from author Edward Waite's reference book, *A New Encyclopedia of Freemasonry.* Myers wryly observed that, "generally, things that are bad are X-rated." He mentioned, too, the interesting use of the letter X in the *Rx* of drug stores; the use of the four-letter, abbreviated word *Xmas* to replace Christmas, and the fact that, in *Black's Law Dictionary,* it says that the sign or mark of X is sometimes made as a substitute for a man's signature on legal documents.

And the continued use of the mysterious X abounds. Children at play can be heard to say, "Cross my heart and hope to die." In the Greek alphabet, the letter Chi is denoted with the symbol X, and given the numerical designation of 600. The numeroligists say that triple X, then, would yield the number 666.

Black Muslim leaders obviously see X as a substitute name of great spiritual significance. Two well-known Black Muslim leaders have been named Malcolm X and Louis X, names they chose for themselves. The latter, who was born Louis Eugene Wolcott in 1933 in New York City, changed his name to Louis X after his conversion to Islam by Black Muslim leader Elijah Muhammed. Today, he is known as Louis Farrakhan. It is well-known that Farrakhan is a 33° Prince Hall Mason.

X as Symbol for the Sun God

According to Dr. C.J. Koster, head of the Institute for Scripture Research in South Africa, X was the emblem of the Chaldean (Babylonian) sky god. Koster says that X was an ancient symbol of the sun deity and that the letter carried with it sexual connotations. In the old Semitic languages, X represented the cross.[1]

Freemasonry early-on latched onto this letter exactly because of its paranormal significance as a sign of Lucifer, the solar (sun) god. The Masonic Lodge also uses X because of its sexual meanings and its Babylonian origins. Writing in the *Scottish Rite Journal,* the official journal of the Mother Supreme Council, 33°, Jim Tresner discussed the use of X in the ritual ceremony for the 17°, *Knight of the East and West.*[2] Tresner, a 33rd degree Mason, emphasized that the 17th degree ritual is "one of the most powerful and profound degrees of the Rite."[3]

"Here," said Tresner, "we encounter raw spiritual energy" and "we begin to glimpse the spiritual power which is available" to the person who is able to access it.[4]

X as Symbol of Transformation

Tresner goes on to suggest that the X, representing the Roman numeral 10, also symbolizes the 10 yuds, or manifestations, of the Jewish Cabala's *Tree of Life* (the Sephiroth). He notes that the candidate for this degree wears two cordons, one black in color, the other white, which symbolizes the duality of Masonic doctrine.

"The fact that they cross each other," Tresner explains, "suggests the unions of opposites or *equilibrium (Ordo Ab Chao)."*[5]

"In crossing," says Tresner, "they form an X shape." X, he observes, "is *an ancient symbol for transformation."*[6]

"This degree," Tresner concludes, "provides a spiritual jolt or jump-start in preparation for the transformation, refinement, and redefinition to come."[7]

Tresner chooses his words very carefully...and very deliberately. But Christians who have studied the book of *Revelation* will intuit and understand what he is hinting at. I believe he is telling the Masonic candidates that this degree, in which the mark of X is prominent, is to prepare them to wage war against true Christians, and to exalt their Man-King as the events prophesied in Bible prophecy roll forward. Naturally, Tresner would probably deny this meaning, so I leave it to you, dear reader, to discern.

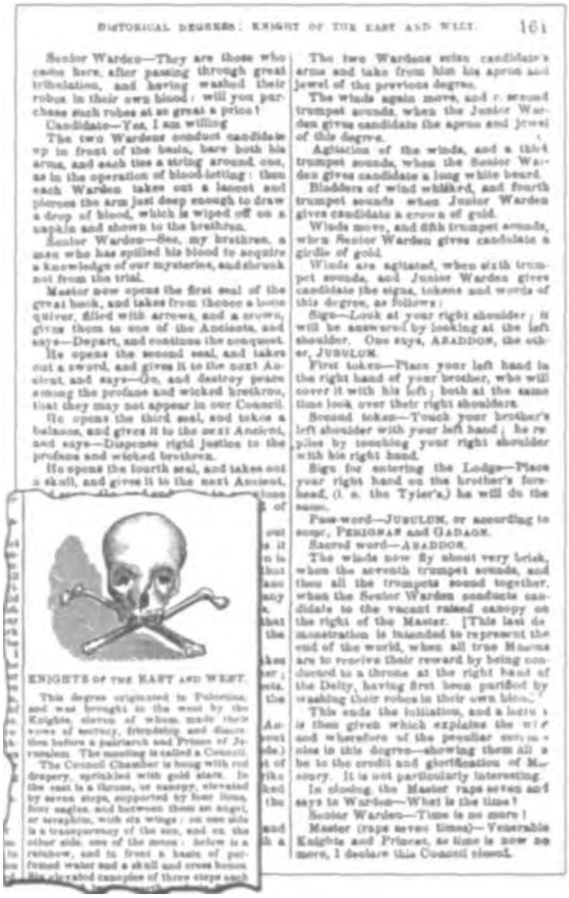

HISTORICAL DEGREES: KNIGHT OF THE EAST AND WEST. 161

Senior Warden—They are those who came here, after passing through great tribulation, and having washed their robes in their own blood: will you purchase such robes at so great a price?

Candidate—Yes, I am willing.

The two Wardens conduct candidate up in front of the basin, bare both his arms, and each ties a string around one, as in the operation of blood-letting: then each Warden takes out a lancet and pierces the arm just deep enough to draw a drop of blood, which is wiped off on a napkin and shown to the brethren.

Senior Warden—See, my brethren, a man who has spilled his blood to acquire a knowledge of our mysteries, and shrunk not from the trial.

Master now opens the first seal of the great book, and takes from thence a bone quiver, filled with arrows, and a crown, gives them to one of the Ancients, and says—Depart, and continue the conquest.

He opens the second seal, and takes out a sword, and gives it to the next Ancient, and says—Go, and destroy peace among the profane and wicked brethren, that they may not appear in our Council.

He opens the third seal, and takes a balance, and gives it to the next Ancient, and says—Dispense rigid justice to the profane and wicked brethren.

He opens the fourth seal, and takes out a skull, and gives it to the next Ancient,

KNIGHTS OF THE EAST AND WEST.

This degree originated in Palestine, and was brought to the west by the Knights, eleven of whom made their vows of secrecy, friendship and discretion before a patriarch and Prince of Jerusalem. The meeting is called a Council.

The Council Chamber is hung with red drapery, sprinkled with gold stars. In the east is a throne, or canopy, elevated by seven steps, supported by four lions, four eagles, and between them an angel, or seraphim, with six wings; on one side is a transparency of the sun, and on the other side, one of the moon; below is a rainbow, and in front a basin of perfumed water and a skull and cross bones. Six elevated canopies of three steps each

The two Wardens seize candidate's arms and take from him his apron and jewel of the previous degree.

The winds again move, and a second trumpet sounds, when the Junior Warden gives candidate the apron and jewel of this degree.

Agitation of the winds, and a third trumpet sounds, when the Senior Warden gives candidate a long white beard.

Bladders of wind whizzed, and fourth trumpet sounds, when Junior Warden gives candidate a crown of gold.

Winds move, and fifth trumpet sounds, when Senior Warden gives candidate a girdle of gold.

Winds are agitated, when sixth trumpet sounds, and Junior Warden gives candidate the signs, tokens and words of this degree, as follows:

Sign—Look at your right shoulder; it will be answered by looking at the left shoulder. One says, ABADDON, the other, JUBULUM.

First token—Place your left hand in the right hand of your brother, who will cover it with his left; both at the same time look over their right shoulders.

Second token—Touch your brother's left shoulder with your left hand; he replies by touching your right shoulder with his right hand.

Sign for entering the Lodge—Place your right hand on the brother's forehead, (i. e. the Tyler's,) he will do the same.

Pass-word—JUBULUM, or according to some, PERIGNAN and GADAON.

Sacred word—ABADDON.

The winds now fly about very brisk, when the seventh trumpet sounds, and then all the trumpets sound together, when the Senior Warden conducts candidate to the vacant raised canopy on the right of the Master. [This last demonstration is intended to represent the end of the world, when all true Masons are to receive their reward by being conducted to a throne at the right hand of the Deity, having first been purified by washing their robes in their own blood.]

This ends the initiation, and a lecture is then given which explains the why and wherefore of the peculiar ceremonies in this degree—showing them all to be to the credit and glorification of Masonry. It is not particularly interesting.

In closing, the Master raps seven and says to Warden—What is the time?

Senior Warden—Time is no more!

Master (raps seven times)—Venerable Knights and Princes, as time is now no more, I declare this Council closed.

Page 158 from ***Richardson s Monitor of Freemasonry,*** **detailing the ritual ceremony of the Knights of the East and West. In this ritual, the sacred word** ***Abaddon*** **is expressed. Abaddon is a synonym for the name of the Devil who leads millions of demons out of the pit of hell to torment earth in the last days.**

However, the Masonic author of the authoritative *Richardson's Monitor of Freemasonry,* no doubt lets the cat out of the bag, so to speak, by detailing how, during this ritual ceremony for the Degree of Knight of the East and West, the *Sacred Word* is given to the assembled members of the Lodge. That sacred word is a shocker: It is *Abaddon.*

Yes, Abaddon is the Sacred Word for the Masonic Knights of East and West. And the Holy Bible reveals exactly who Abaddon is in *Revelation 9:11:*

> *And they had a king over them, which is the angel of the bottomless pit, whose name in the Hebrew tongue is Abaddon, but in the Creek tongue hath his name Apollyon.*

In *Richardson's Monitor of Freemasonry* it is revealed that, following the announcement of the sacred word, Abaddon, the Lodge drama for this fateful degree provides a demonstration "intended to represent the end of the world."[8]

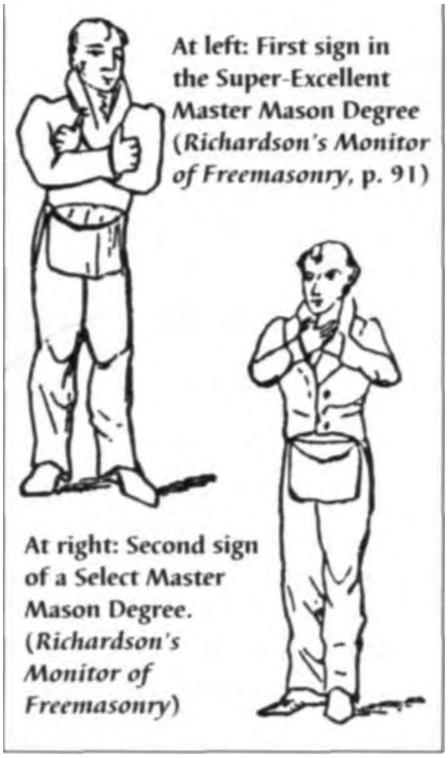

At left: First sign in the Super-Excellent Master Mason Degree (*Richardson's Monitor of Freemasonry*, p. 91)

At right: Second sign of a Select Master Mason Degree. (*Richardson's Monitor of Freemasonry*)

How very appropriate. How very telling!

X Symbol in the Masonic Lodge

One thing is for sure: The Masonic Order uses the X not only for the revelatory 17th degree of Knights of East and West, but for others as well. In the Royal Arch's Super-Excellent Master's Degree, the First Sign given is the crossing of the hands over the breast/chest. This sign refers to the penalty assessed if any secrets learned are ever divulged.

Then, in the ritual ceremony for the Select Master Degree, the Second Sign is made by crossing the hands and arms just below the neck and dropping them downward quickly. Again, this is a reminder of the disclosure penalty, which is to have the body butchered and quartered.

In the ritual for the Intimate Secretary Degree, an X pattern is employed. *Richardson's Monitor of Freemasonry* reveals what happens in the Lodge:

> The brethren now fall, each on his right knee, and they cross their hands and hold them up so that the thumb of the right hand touches the left temple, and the left thumb the right temple...[9]

The X as Tumbling Cross and Sex Symbol

In ancient India, the X symbol was equated with the *vajra* (jewel-phallus). Probably, this is yet another reason why the Masonic Lodge adopted this symbol for many of their ritual activities. Masonry is, in fact, a deviant sex cult.

In her interesting encyclopedia called *The Woman's Dictionary of Symbols and Sacred Objects*, Barbara Walker calls the symbol the *"Cross Saltire"* which means literally "tumbling cross" or a cross performing a somersault. In this sense, it is decidedly anti-Christ in nature.

The Church of Scientology, New Age in its beliefs, has as its logo a traditional cross (vertical) integrated with an X, or Cross Saltire. This is understandable since Scientology is unquestionably non-Christian.

Cross Saltire

X as Sign of Death

Finally, as if to signify the somber, ghastly meaning of the letter X in Freemasonry ritual, pomp and circumstance, it should be noted that upon his death, when the departed Mason's body is given a Masonic funeral by the assembled brethren, with his immediate family in attendance, the X again comes into play. *The Monitor of the Work, Lectures, and Ceremonies of Ancient Craft Masonry for the Grand Lodge of the State* *of New York* in part describes the ritual and scene prescribed for funerals as follows:

> The funeral honors are given by extending the hands toward the grave with the palms up, the brethren repeating in unison:
>
> 'To the grave we consign the mortal remains of our deceased brother.'
>
> The arms are then crossed over the breast, the left above the right, the fingers touching the shoulders...[10]

You'll find among the photos and illustrations in this section one of horror novelist Stephen King seeming to emulate exactly this funeral procedure of crossing the arms (X), the fingers touching the opposite shoulder. Is King, the master of death literature, in fact taking on the image of death, the grim reaper? Does King believe that this publicly displayed ritual act by him confers on the famous novelist the "raw spiritual energy" mentioned by Masonic authority Jim Tresner, 33°?

X—The Egyptian Connection

From what source do the Masons draw for this funeral symbolism of the X? In my book, *Dark Majesty,* I explain the Egyptian connection:

> In ancient Egypt, the mark of "X" and the symbol of cross-bones in the symbol of an X was very prominent in religious contexts. You can find the X on the walls of a number of ancient Egyptians temples and pyramids...It is the sign of Osiris, the great sun god...
>
> The ancient pharaohs, when they were buried, had the legs crossed in the form of "X" as a sign of devotion to Osiris."

Today, as in ancient Egypt, Osiris the sun god is worshipped; now the homage and veneration comes from the Masons and their fellow Illuminists. These confused and perverted men mistakenly believe they are illumined (enlightened) by their solar deity, the Great Architect, Jahbuhlun, or Lucifer.

They have even arranged for Osiris' watchful eye, the all-seeing eye, to be pictured on each and every U.S.A. one dollar bill. It is the eye in the capstone surrounded by the rays of the sun announcing to the whole world the coming of a New Age, a New World Order *(Novus Ordo Seclorum).*

What a grand surprise these wicked men have in store for them when Jesus Christ, Lord of Lords, returns. II *Thessalonians 2* says that the opposers of Christ—the leaders of Illuminati and their hordes of rapt followers — shall be utterly destroyed by the brightness of His coming. Until that great and momentous day, the pitiful men of the Illuminati shall continue to wallow with each other in the mire and muck. They will continue communicating the sign of X, the sign of their silly, fanciful god, all the while cursing the darkness rather than lighting a candle. Men blinded for all eternity by their rejection of the True Light.

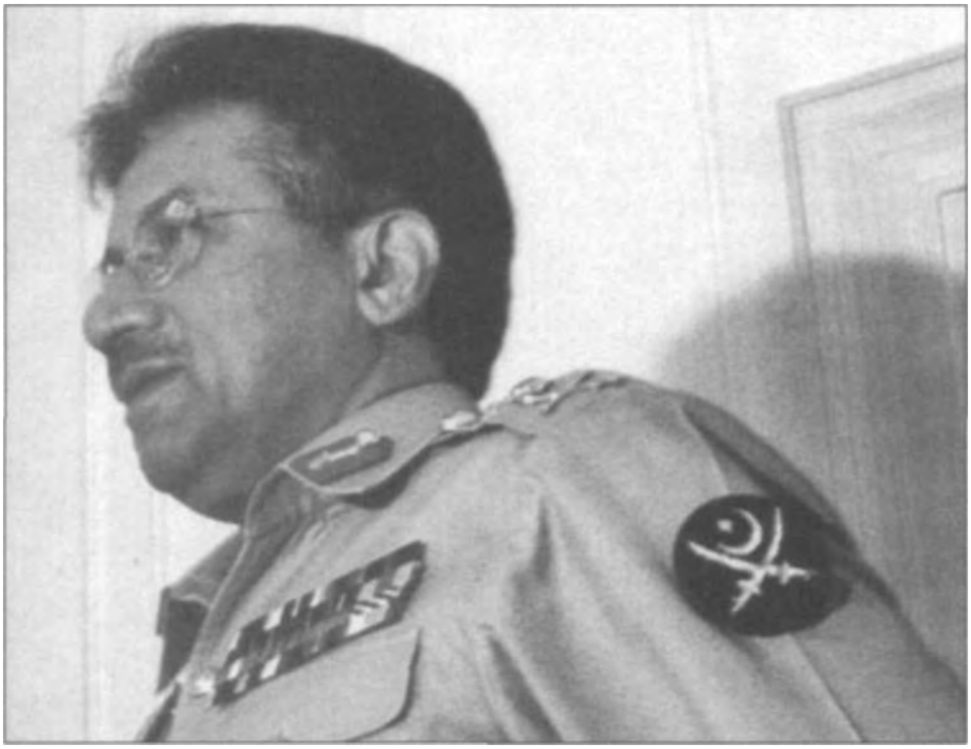

The arm patch on the military uniform of Pakistan's President, General Pervez Musharraf, tells a number of tales. Against a black, circle background we find the familiar crescent moon and star of Islam (actually, pagan origin, being representative of Diana, the witchcraft "star" and "moon" goddess) as well as the two crossed swords (in the pagan era, a sign of Mars, god of war). It is doubtful Musharraf has any idea of the actual meaning of these symbols.

Her Majesty, Queen Elizabeth of Great Britain, has a fortune of some $18 billion—and a crown with an *"X"* in its centrum. *(Majesty* magazine, Volume 25, August, 2004)

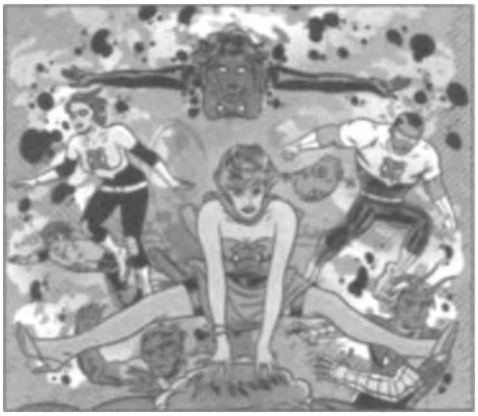

The "X" Team? In *Time* magazine (July 14, 2003, p. 79), it was reported that Marvel Comics intended to publish a comic book that featured a resurrected Princess Diana with superpowers. The title of the first edition was to be "Di Another Day." The plot was to have Princess Di and a number of mutant, resurrected from the dead partners gallivant around the world performing feats for the good side fighting evil. Princess Di and her mutant friends would all bear a logo on their chest of a (circle) sun sign with a bold red "X" superimposed on it.

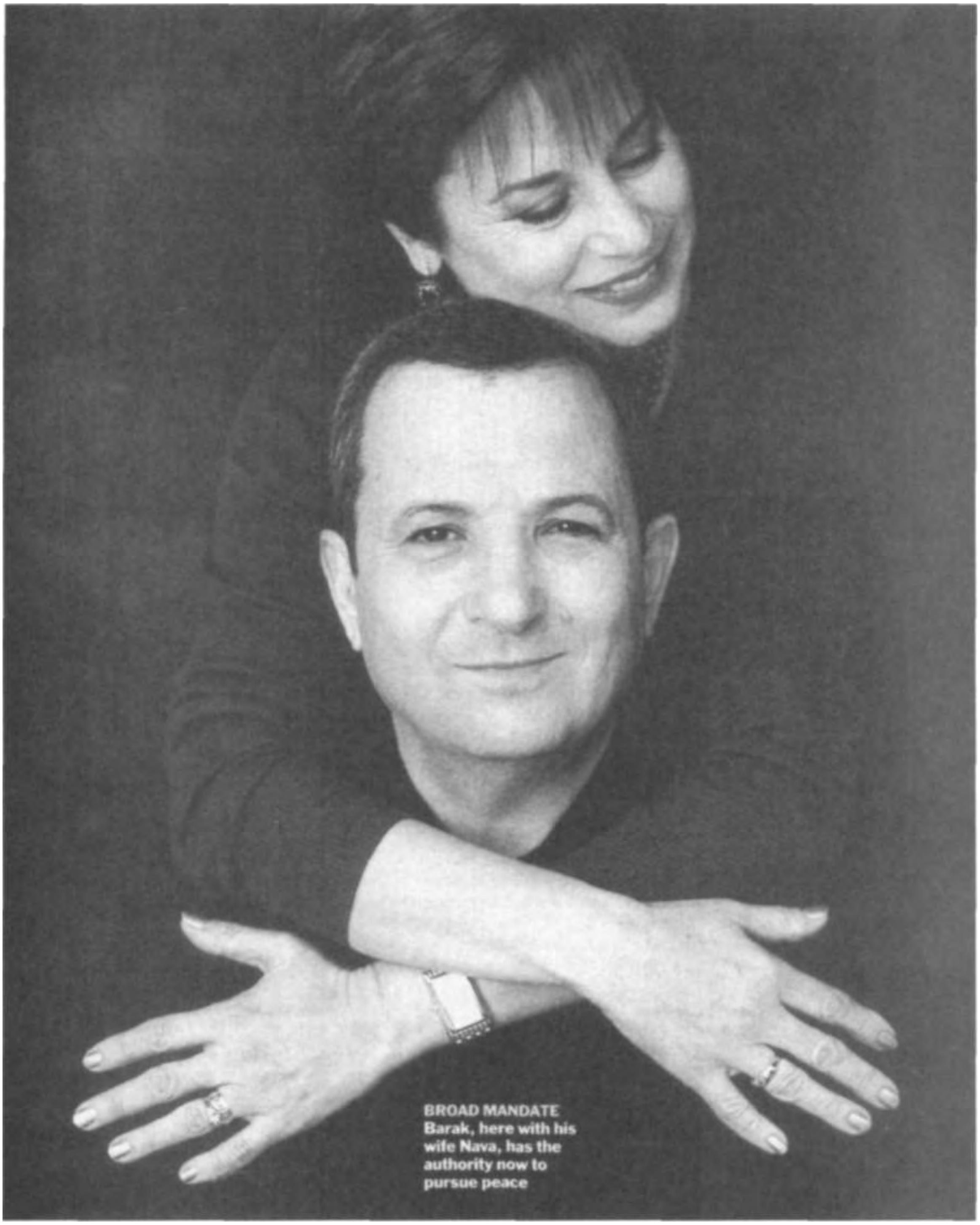
BROAD MANDATE
Barak, here with his
wife Nava, has the
authority now to
pursue peace

Ehud Barak, a Freemason chosen Prime Minister of Israel in 1999, with his wife, Nava. This is a very staged *"X."* Also significant is Nava's earring, which has the emblem of the Masonic double-headed eagle. (Photo: *Time* magazine, May 31, 1999, p. 64)

Larry Summers, Secretary of the Treasury in the second term of the Bill Clinton Administration, signals to his associates in the Illuminati elite the strength of their Order. We see first his crossed *"X"* hand position, the left hand path dominant. Then there is the pillar of strength of Jaquin and Boa/ origins, and finally the black and white checkered "tresrleboard" upon which he stands, the science of polar opposites, the Hegelian dialectic, the high Masonic principle *of equilibrium.* Summers is currently President of Harvard University.

Madeleine Albright, socialist/communist former Secretary of State under President Bill Clinton, wears the X in gold on a black circle earring. Albright, whose father was once a Communist leader in Czechoslovakia, "discovered" she was Jewish at about the same time a few isolated reports came out on the internet. Jews with Communist backgrounds often hide their ethnic ties to coverup the fact that it was Illuminati Jews—mostly non-Russian Jews at that—who funded, fostered, and ran the Lenin/Stalin Red Terror in Soviet Russia. (*Vanity Fair,* November 1997)

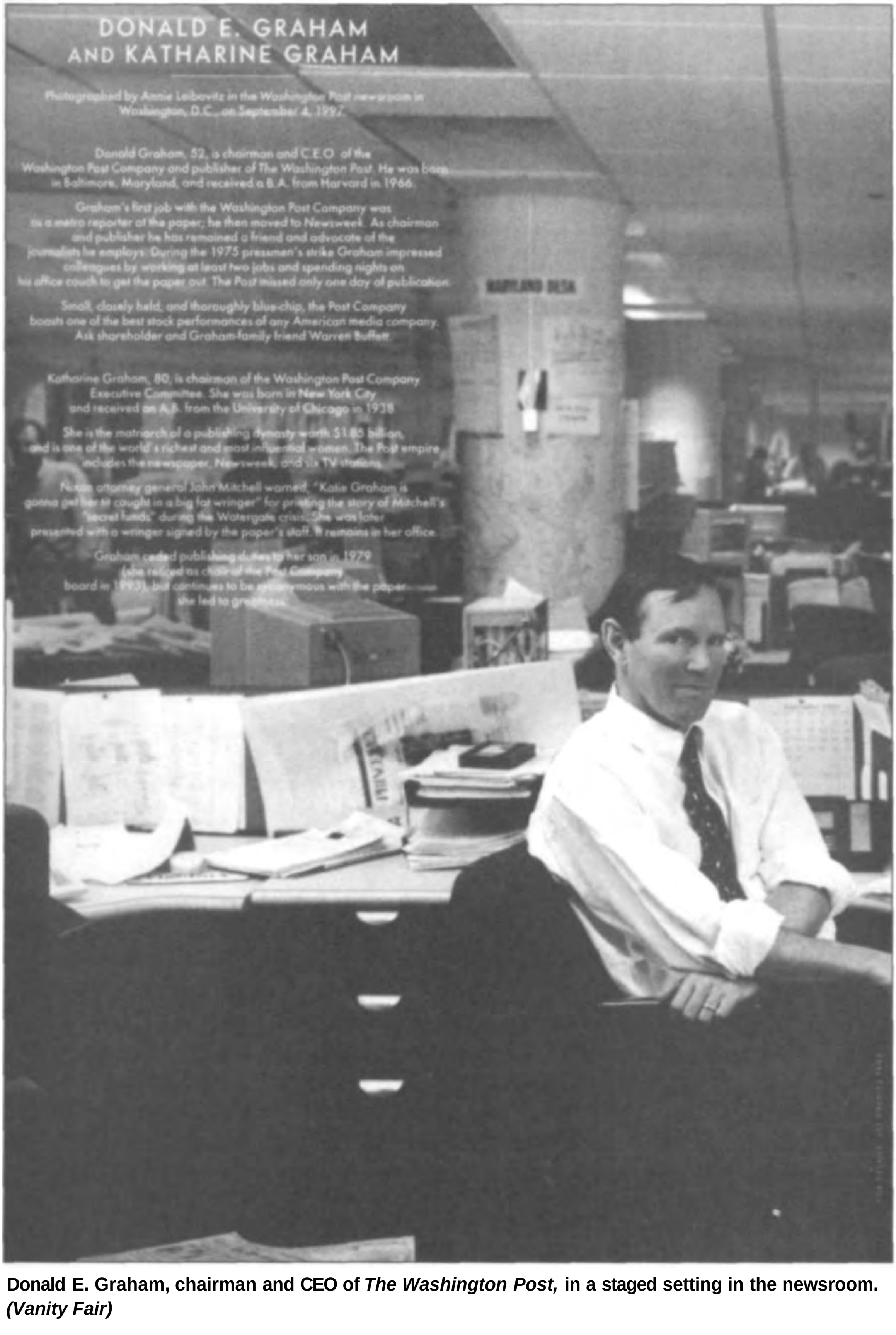

DONALD E. GRAHAM
AND KATHARINE GRAHAM

Photographed by Annie Leibovitz in the Washington Post newsroom in Washington, D.C., on September 4, 1997.

Donald Graham, 52, is chairman and C.E.O. of the Washington Post Company and publisher of The Washington Post. He was born in Baltimore, Maryland, and received a B.A. from Harvard in 1966.

Graham's first job with the Washington Post Company was as a metro reporter at the paper; he then moved to Newsweek. As chairman and publisher he has remained a friend and advocate of the journalists he employs. During the 1975 pressmen's strike Graham impressed colleagues by working at least two jobs and spending nights on his office couch to get the paper out. The Post missed only one day of publication.

Small, closely held, and thoroughly blue-chip, the Post Company boasts one of the best stock performances of any American media company. Ask shareholder and Graham-family friend Warren Buffett.

Katharine Graham, 80, is chairman of the Washington Post Company Executive Committee. She was born in New York City and received an A.B. from the University of Chicago in 1938.

She is the matriarch of a publishing dynasty worth $1.85 billion, and is one of the world's richest and most influential women. The Post empire includes the newspaper, Newsweek, and six TV stations.

Nixon attorney general John Mitchell warned, "Katie Graham is gonna get her tit caught in a big fat wringer" for printing the story of Mitchell's "secret funds" during the Watergate crisis. She was later presented with a wringer signed by the paper's staff. It remains in her office.

Graham ceded publishing duties to her son in 1979 (she retired as chair of the Post Company board in 1993), but continues to be synonymous with the paper she led to greatness.

Donald E. Graham, chairman and CEO of *The Washington Post,* in a staged setting in the newsroom. *(Vanity Fair)*

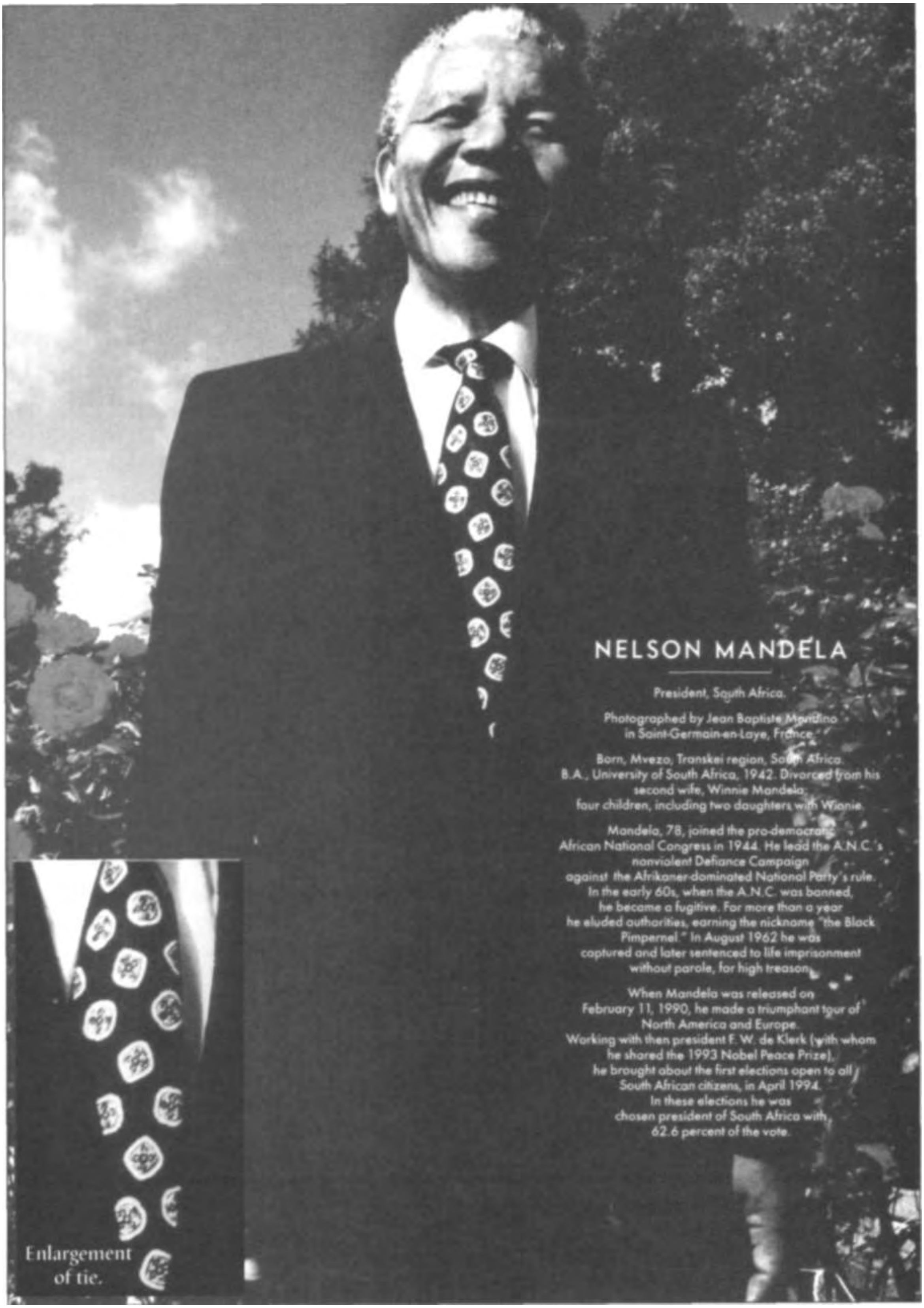

NELSON MANDELA

President, South Africa.

Photographed by Jean Baptiste Mondino
in Saint-Germain-en-Laye, France.

Born, Mvezo, Transkei region, South Africa.
B.A., University of South Africa, 1942. Divorced from his
second wife, Winnie Mandela;
four children, including two daughters with Winnie.

Mandela, 78, joined the pro-democratic
African National Congress in 1944. He lead the A.N.C.'s
nonviolent Defiance Campaign
against the Afrikaner-dominated National Party's rule.
In the early 60s, when the A.N.C. was banned,
he became a fugitive. For more than a year
he eluded authorities, earning the nickname "the Black
Pimpernel." In August 1962 he was
captured and later sentenced to life imprisonment
without parole, for high treason.

When Mandela was released on
February 11, 1990, he made a triumphant tour of
North America and Europe.
Working with then president F. W. de Klerk (with whom
he shared the 1993 Nobel Peace Prize),
he brought about the first elections open to all
South African citizens, in April 1994.
In these elections he was
chosen president of South Africa with
62.6 percent of the vote.

Enlargement of tie.

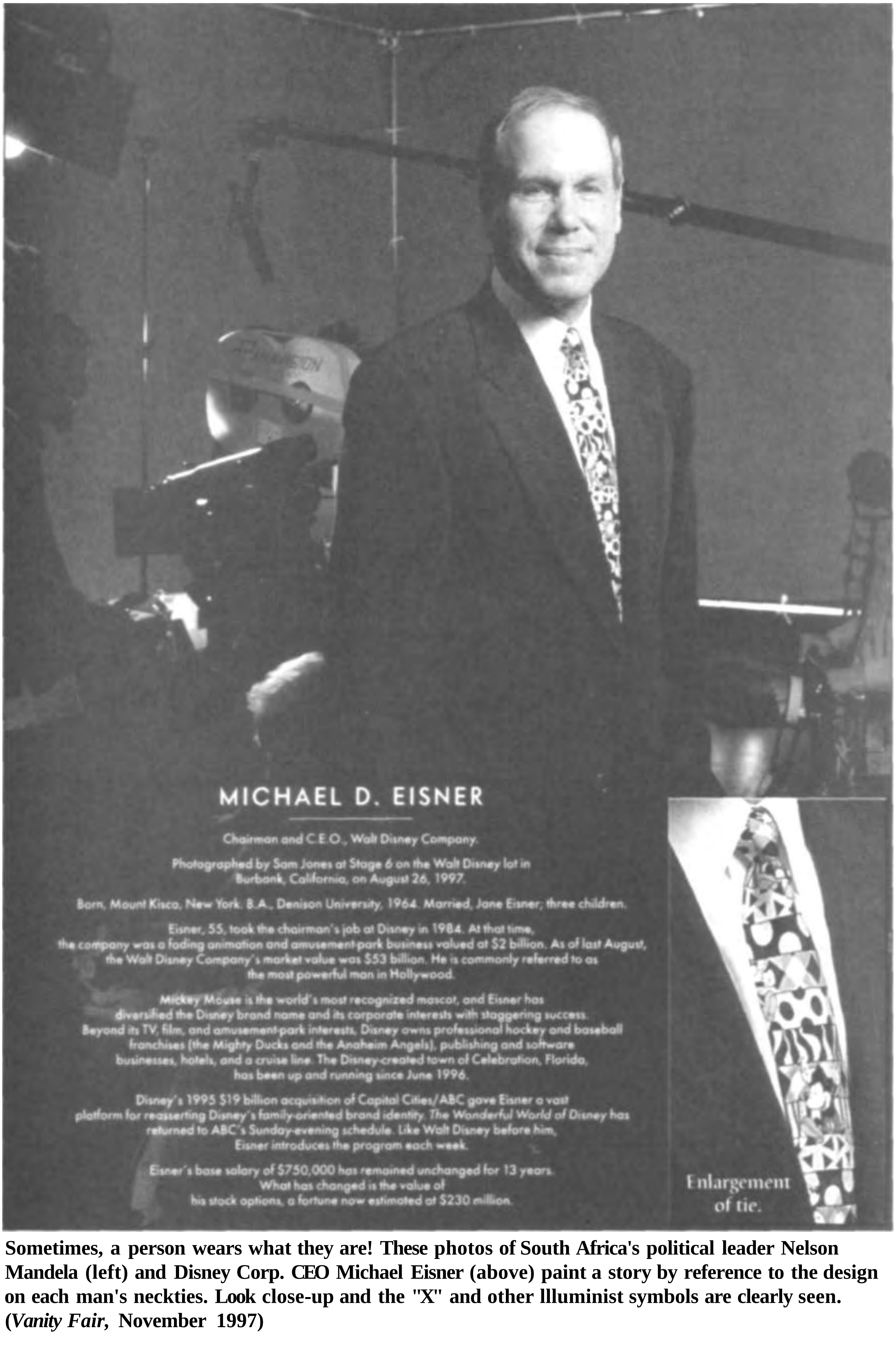

MICHAEL D. EISNER

Chairman and C.E.O., Walt Disney Company.

Photographed by Sam Jones at Stage 6 on the Walt Disney lot in
Burbank, California, on August 26, 1997.

Born, Mount Kisco, New York. B.A., Denison University, 1964. Married, Jane Eisner; three children.

Eisner, 55, took the chairman's job at Disney in 1984. At that time, the company was a fading animation and amusement-park business valued at $2 billion. As of last August, the Walt Disney Company's market value was $53 billion. He is commonly referred to as the most powerful man in Hollywood.

Mickey Mouse is the world's most recognized mascot, and Eisner has diversified the Disney brand name and its corporate interests with staggering success. Beyond its TV, film, and amusement-park interests, Disney owns professional hockey and baseball franchises (the Mighty Ducks and the Anaheim Angels), publishing and software businesses, hotels, and a cruise line. The Disney-created town of Celebration, Florida, has been up and running since June 1996.

Disney's 1995 $19 billion acquisition of Capital Cities/ABC gave Eisner a vast platform for reasserting Disney's family-oriented brand identity. *The Wonderful World of Disney* has returned to ABC's Sunday-evening schedule. Like Walt Disney before him, Eisner introduces the program each week.

Eisner's base salary of $750,000 has remained unchanged for 13 years. What has changed is the value of his stock options, a fortune now estimated at $230 million.

Enlargement of tie.

Sometimes, a person wears what they are! These photos of South Africa's political leader Nelson Mandela (left) and Disney Corp. CEO Michael Eisner (above) paint a story by reference to the design on each man's neckties. Look close-up and the "X" and other llluminist symbols are clearly seen. (*Vanity Fair,* November 1997)

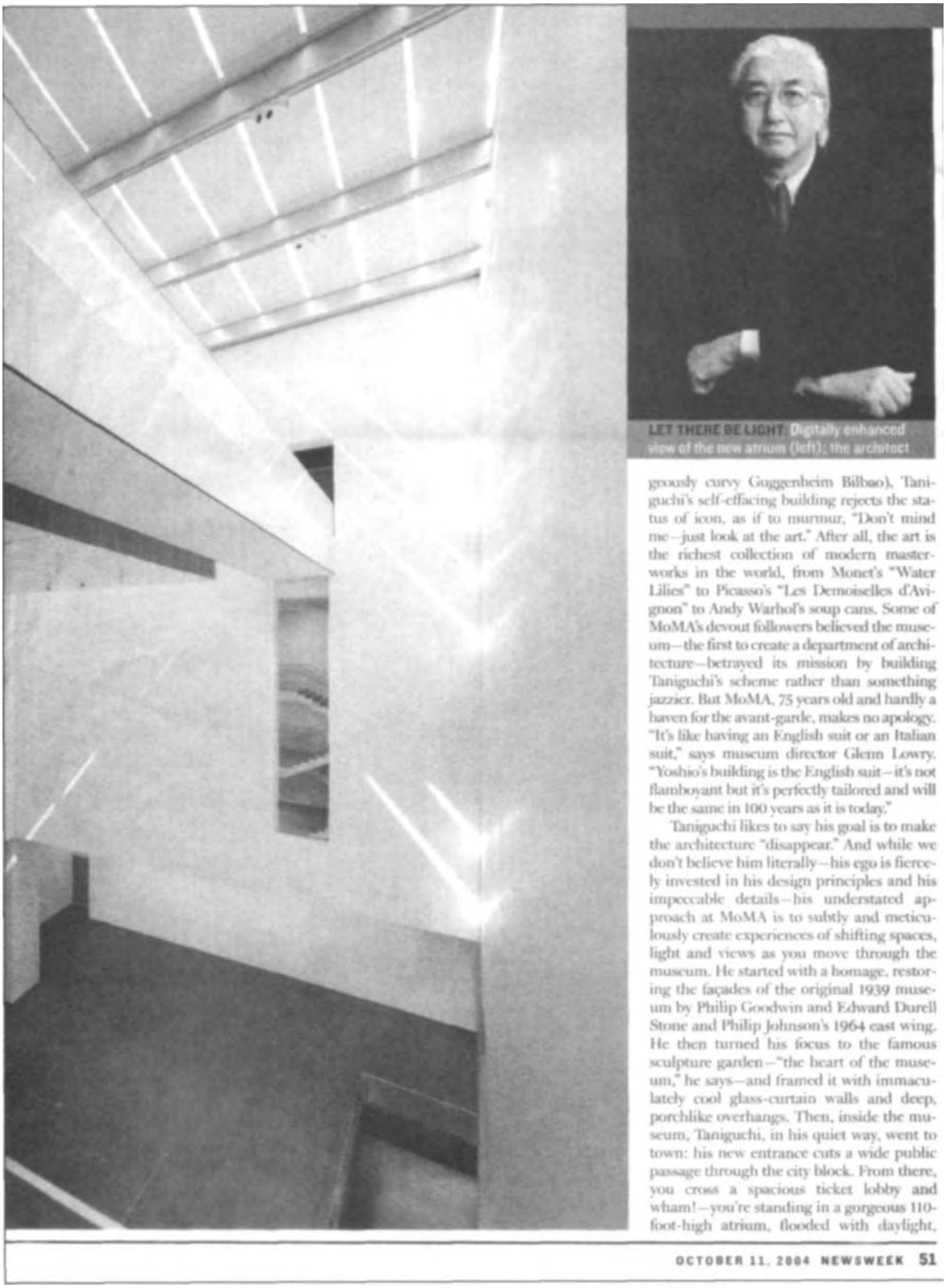

LET THERE BE LIGHT: Digitally enhanced view of the new atrium (left); the architect

geously curvy Guggenheim Bilbao), Taniguchi's self-effacing building rejects the status of icon, as if to murmur, "Don't mind me—just look at the art." After all, the art is the richest collection of modern masterworks in the world, from Monet's "Water Lilies" to Picasso's "Les Demoiselles d'Avignon" to Andy Warhol's soup cans. Some of MoMA's devout followers believed the museum—the first to create a department of architecture—betrayed its mission by building Taniguchi's scheme rather than something jazzier. But MoMA, 75 years old and hardly a haven for the avant-garde, makes no apology. "It's like having an English suit or an Italian suit," says museum director Glenn Lowry. "Yoshio's building is the English suit—it's not flamboyant but it's perfectly tailored and will be the same in 100 years as it is today."

Taniguchi likes to say his goal is to make the architecture "disappear." And while we don't believe him literally—his ego is fiercely invested in his design principles and his impeccable details—his understated approach at MoMA is to subtly and meticulously create experiences of shifting spaces, light and views as you move through the museum. He started with a homage, restoring the façades of the original 1939 museum by Philip Goodwin and Edward Durell Stone and Philip Johnson's 1964 east wing. He then turned his focus to the famous sculpture garden—"the heart of the museum," he says—and framed it with immaculately cool glass-curtain walls and deep, porchlike overhangs. Then, inside the museum, Taniguchi, in his quiet way, went to town: his new entrance cuts a wide public passage through the city block. From there, you cross a spacious ticket lobby and wham!—you're standing in a gorgeous 110-foot-high atrium, flooded with daylight,

OCTOBER 11, 2004 NEWSWEEK 51

Noted Japanese architect Yoshio Taniguchi who specializes in buildings and structures housing museums.

Fortune magazine (December 20, 1999) had this rather unusual photograph picturing two CompUSA e-commerce subsidiary managers, Michael Laskoff (left) and Stephen Polly. The caption and article gave no clue as to why the two men are crossing their legs ("X") nor was there an explanation for the bizarre staging of what should have been your usual, stock business photo.

James Erwin, vice chairman of Bank of America, heads up the giant financial institution's Dallas, Texas, operations. Is the *"X"* crossing of his legs just a "good old boy" gesture or an Illuminist fraternal sign?

Allen Ginsberg, in an enigmatic example of the X. With this photo-published in the obituary column of *Newsweek* (December *22,* 1997)!—there was no caption, only Ginsberg's laudatory obit. The magazine touted Ginsberg's "genius" and praised him for his "hymn of alienation" during his earlier years—a valueless poem titled "Howl." In fact. Beat poet Allen Ginsberg was a warped, child molester advocate who boosted NAMBLA, the North American Man Boy Love Association. He was a reprobate pedophile, but a hero of Satanists, sadists, and assorted culture freaks, not to mention the Illuminati elite. In the years before his death, they rewarded him with a $1 million payment by Stanford University. In return, the University, a prime center of Illuminist instruction, got Ginsberg's "papers," which reportedly included " 300,000 utility bills, newspaper clippings, paper napkins, concert tickets, and anything else the gay poet chose to save."

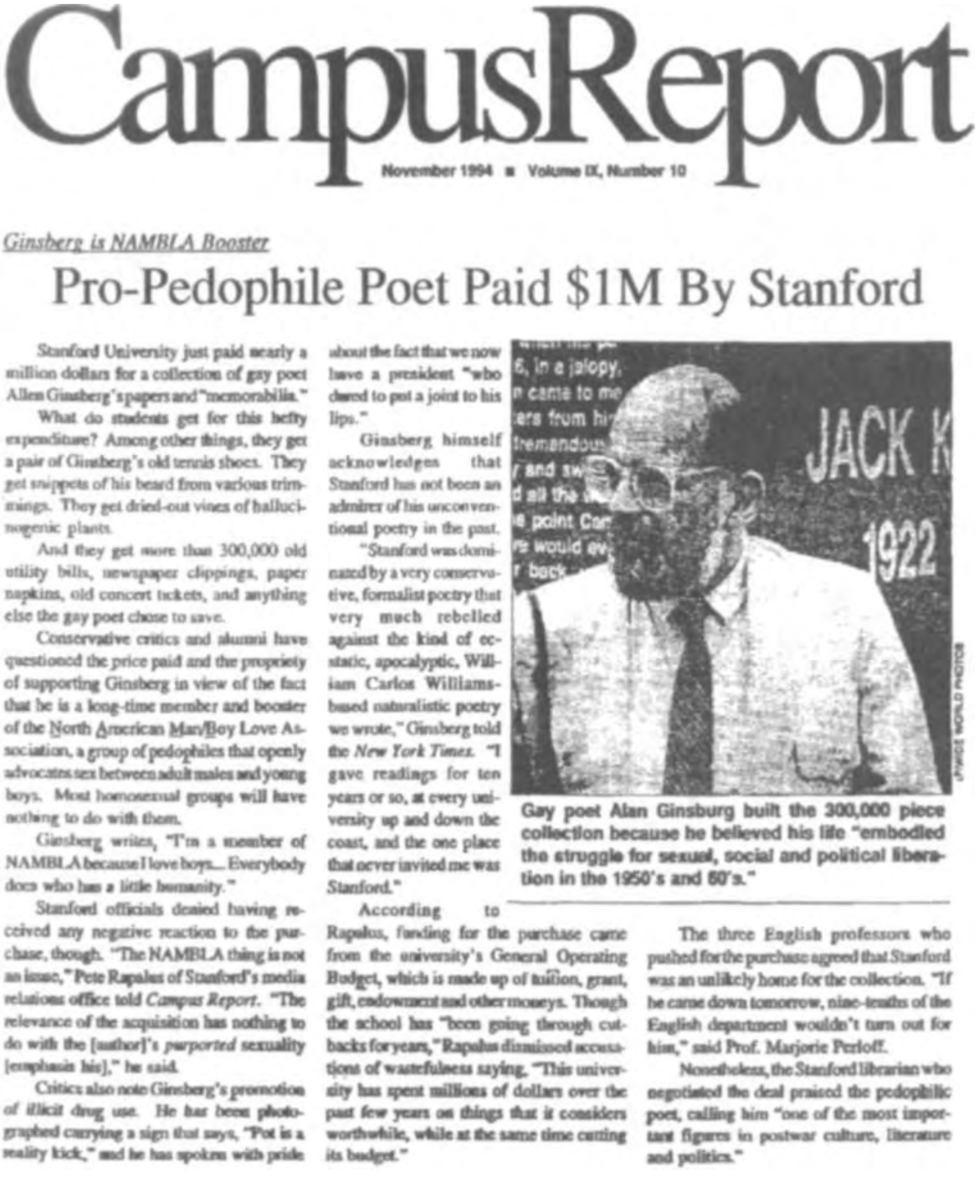

CampusReport
November 1994 ■ Volume IX, Number 10

Ginsberg is NAMBLA Booster

Pro-Pedophile Poet Paid $1M By Stanford

Stanford University just paid nearly a million dollars for a collection of gay poet Allen Ginsberg's papers and "memorabilia."

What do students get for this hefty expenditure? Among other things, they get a pair of Ginsberg's old tennis shoes. They get snippets of his beard from various trimmings. They get dried-out vines of hallucinogenic plants.

And they get more than 300,000 old utility bills, newspaper clippings, paper napkins, old concert tickets, and anything else the gay poet chose to save.

Conservative critics and alumni have questioned the price paid and the propriety of supporting Ginsberg in view of the fact that he is a long-time member and booster of the North American Man/Boy Love Association, a group of pedophiles that openly advocates sex between adult males and young boys. Most homosexual groups will have nothing to do with them.

Ginsberg writes, "I'm a member of NAMBLA because I love boys... Everybody does who has a little humanity."

Stanford officials denied having received any negative reaction to the purchase, though. "The NAMBLA thing is not an issue," Pete Rapalus of Stanford's media relations office told *Campus Report*. "The relevance of the acquisition has nothing to do with the [author]'s *purported* sexuality [emphasis his]," he said.

Critics also note Ginsberg's promotion of illicit drug use. He has been photographed carrying a sign that says, "Pot is a reality kick," and he has spoken with pride about the fact that we now have a president "who dared to put a joint to his lips."

Ginsberg himself acknowledges that Stanford has not been an admirer of his unconventional poetry in the past.

"Stanford was dominated by a very conservative, formalist poetry that very much rebelled against the kind of ecstatic, apocalyptic, William Carlos Williams-based naturalistic poetry we wrote," Ginsberg told the *New York Times*. "I gave readings for ten years or so, at every university up and down the coast, and the one place that never invited me was Stanford."

Gay poet Alan Ginsburg built the 300,000 piece collection because he believed his life "embodied the struggle for sexual, social and political liberation in the 1950's and 60's."

According to Rapalus, funding for the purchase came from the university's General Operating Budget, which is made up of tuition, grant, gift, endowment and other moneys. Though the school has "been going through cutbacks for years," Rapalus dismissed accusations of wastefulness saying, "This university has spent millions of dollars over the past few years on things that it considers worthwhile, while at the same time cutting its budget."

The three English professors who pushed for the purchase agreed that Stanford was an unlikely home for the collection. "If he came down tomorrow, nine-tenths of the English department wouldn't turn out for him," said Prof. Marjorie Perloff.

Nonetheless, the Stanford librarian who negotiated the deal praised the pedophilic poet, calling him "one of the most important figures in postwar culture, literature and politics."

Symbols galore adorn feminist Gloria Steinem's apartment decor in New York. She's wearing a black outfit with belt with a huge, round *sun* emblem and, naturally, her handsign is *"X."* Now 70-years-old, Ms. Steinem, like so many other "chosen ones," is not at all what she seems. A former *Playboy Club* bunny, Steinem was covertly working for the CIA. She "founded" the radical agenda MS magazine reportedly with Illuminist funding and traveled widely in India. Her elitist role: Foster the anti-Christian, culture-destroying Feminist Movement.

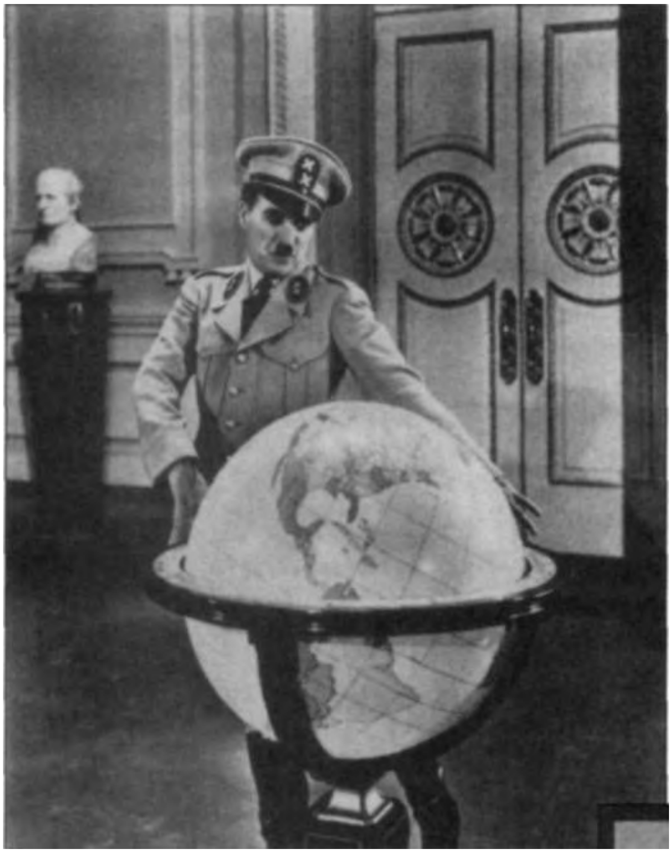

Charlie Chaplin spoofs Adolf Hitler as Adenoid Hynkel in the film classic, *The Great Dictator* (1940). The hat he wears has two *"X's"* while the double doors in rite scene have Rosicrucian rosettes on them. Charlie Chaplin was much more than simply a spoofing comedy genius. Born April 16, 1889, in London, England, to Jewish parents, at age 30 he co-founded United Artists, a major Hollywood movie corporation. Strongly pro-Communist and Zionist, Chaplin had a penchant for teen-age girls that sometimes got him in trouble. The Illuminati paid homage to Chaplin by adopting the actor's *"The Tramp"* icon for TV commercials for global technology giant IBM. (Photo: *Time* magazine)

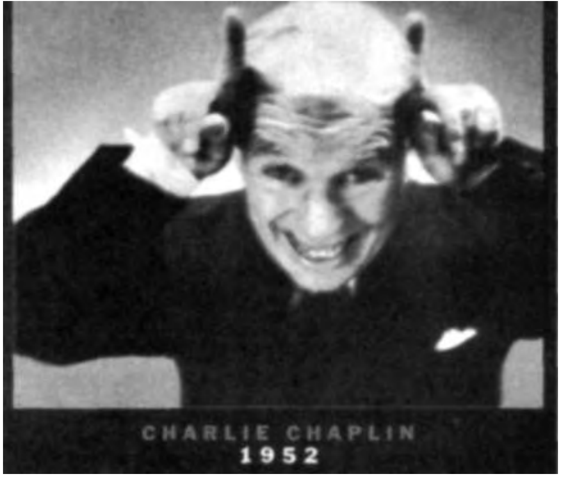

Charlie Chaplin in 1952 letting the whole world know just what he is—a devil in human form! This photo, by famous photographer Richard Avedon, ran in *Time* magazine (October 11, 2004), an Illuminist-shill publication.

Actress Marlene Dietrich, a tool of the OSS, the predecessor of the CIA, was a lesbian who privately snickered because Hollywood portrayed her as a sex symbol for males.

Allen Iverson, NBA Basketball star. Observe his deathhead skull tattoo and, of course, the "X."

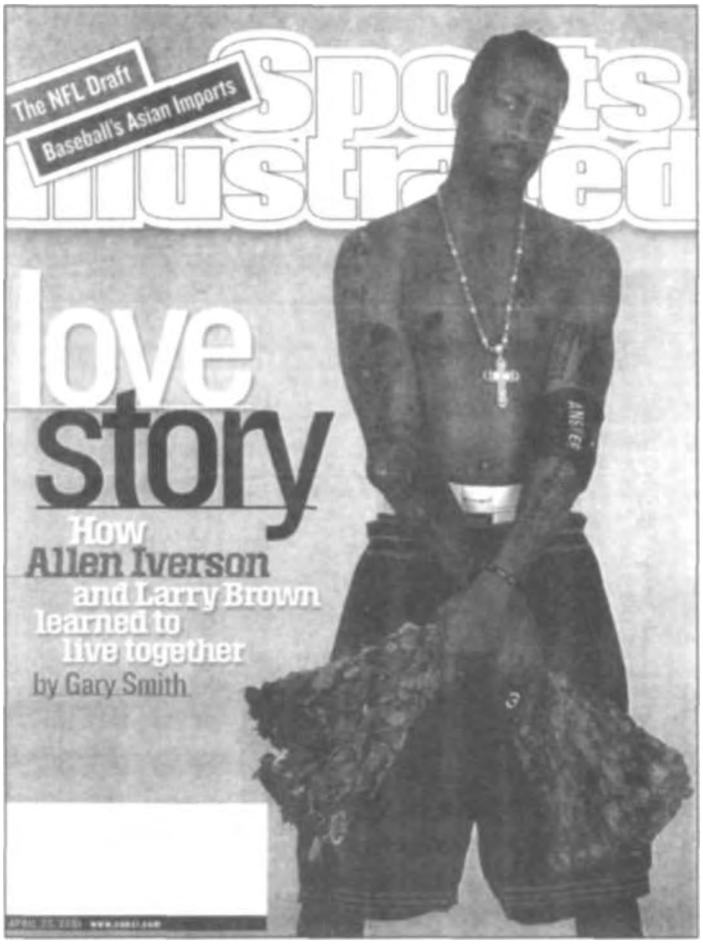
The NFL Draft
Baseball's Asian Imports
Sports Illustrated
love story
How Allen Iverson and Larry Brown learned to live together
by Gary Smith

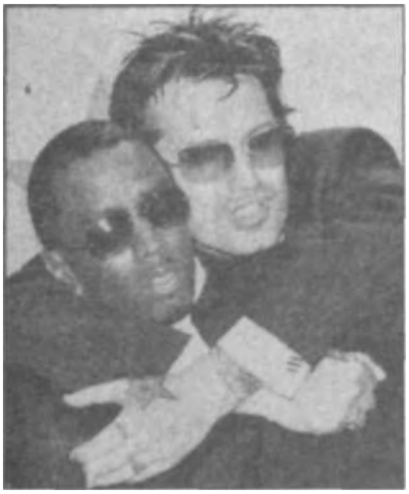

Rock'n'roller Tommy Lee embraces hip-hop entertainer Sean Combs in an "X." Lee's sign of the satanic pentagram tattoo on his left hand is also evident. (Photo: *U.S.A. Today,* June 4, 2001, p. 4D)

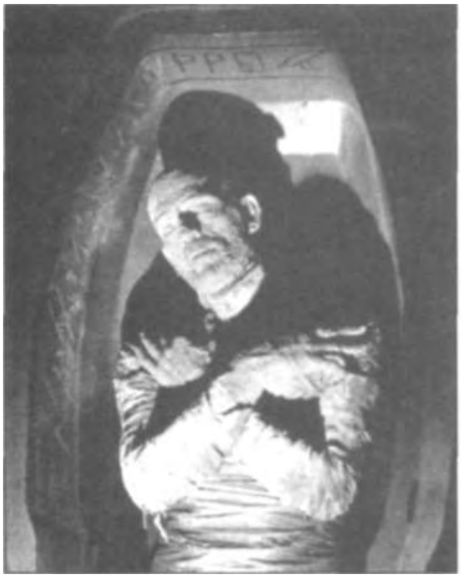

Famous horror film actor Boris Karloff, in the classic cinema, *The Mummy,* lays in the mummy's crypt and symbolically crosses his arms ("X") just as was done in Egyptian ritual in the days of the Pharaohs.

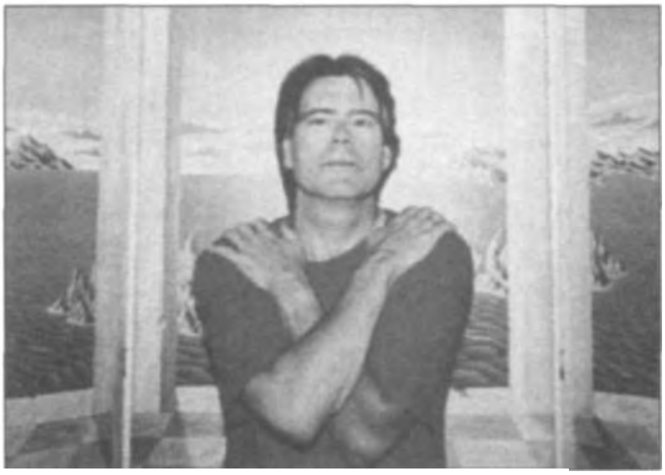

Stephen King, whose novels on horror and terror invariably go to the top of the bestseller's list. The caption of this photo, published in *Newsweek* (August 28, 2000, p. 45) reads, *"It's good to be King."*

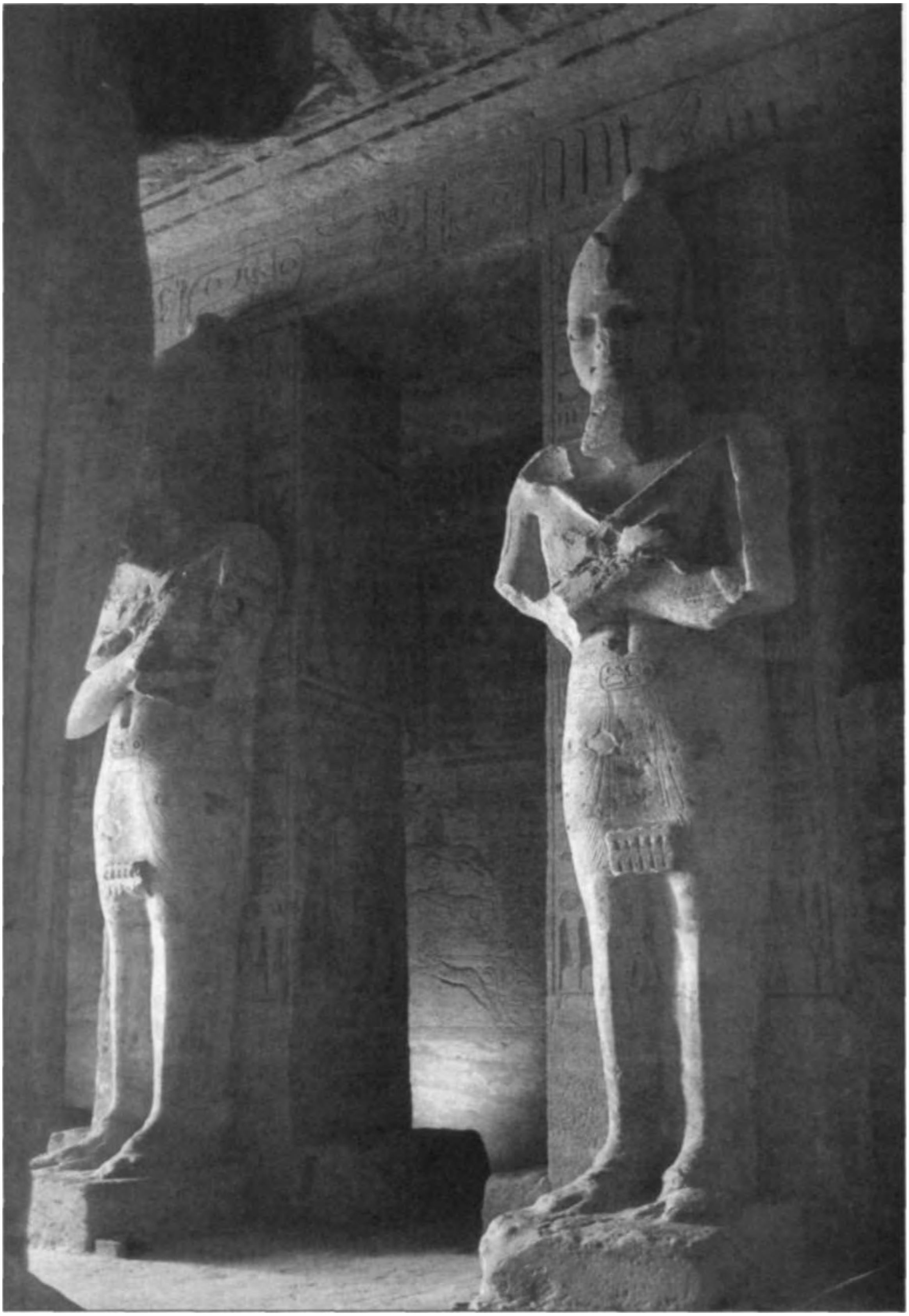

These ancient Egyptian figures demonstrate how prevalent was Osiris' sacred sign, "X."

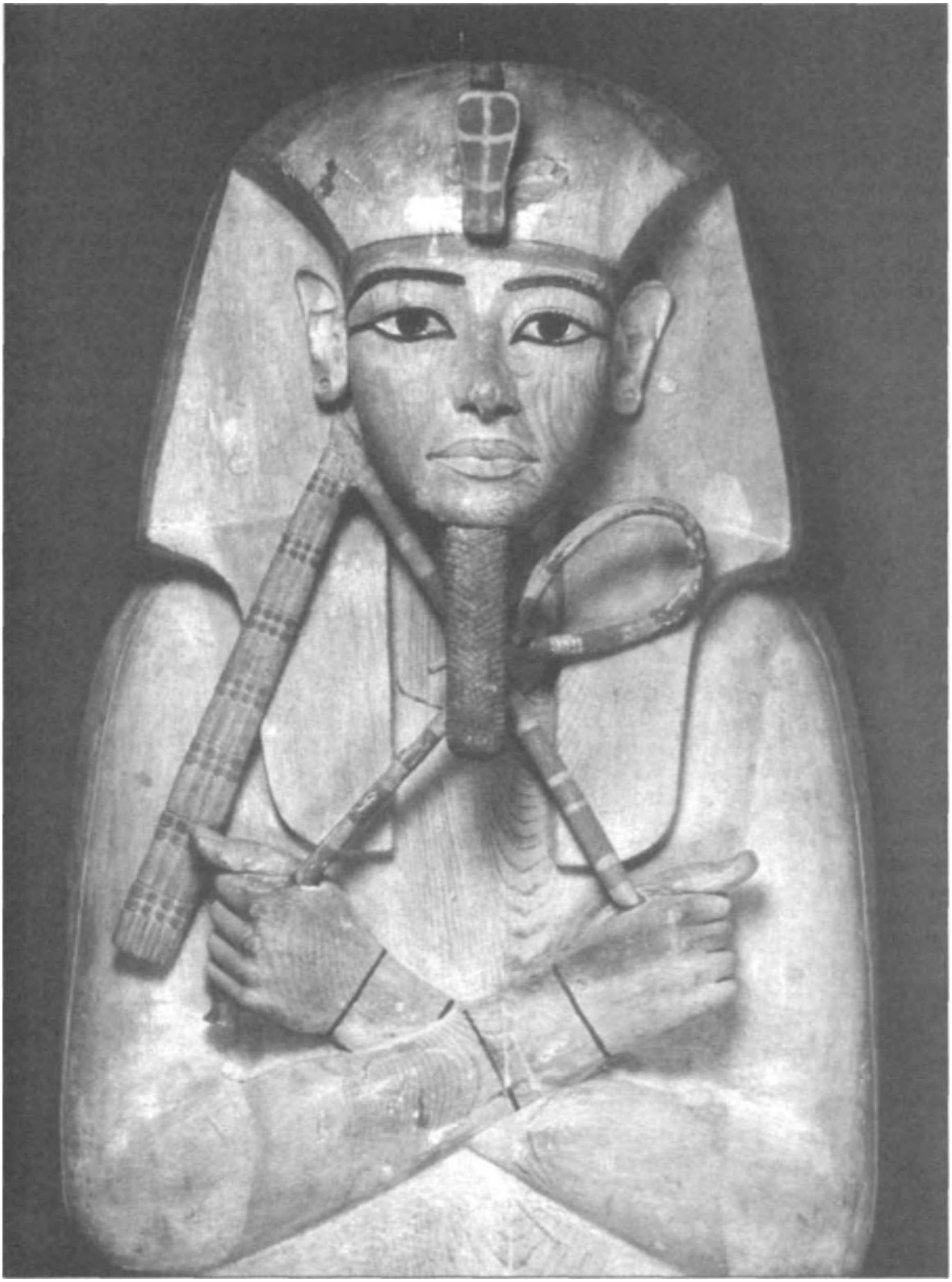

The mummy of Ramescs the Great (1279-1213 B.C.) was found in this cedarwood sarcophagus. This pharaoh is thought by Egyptologists to be the ruler who enslaved the Israelites and forced them to build cities.

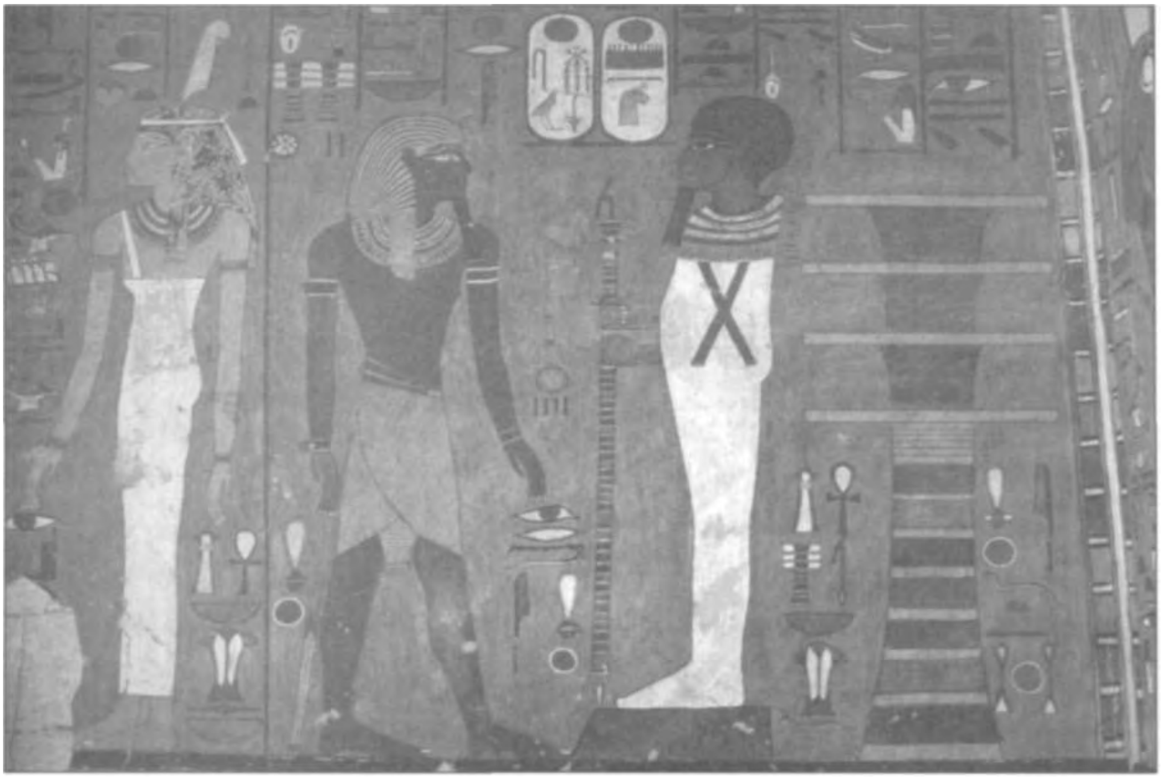

Painting from the Tomb of Rameses I, Valley of the Kings, West Thebes, in Egypt.

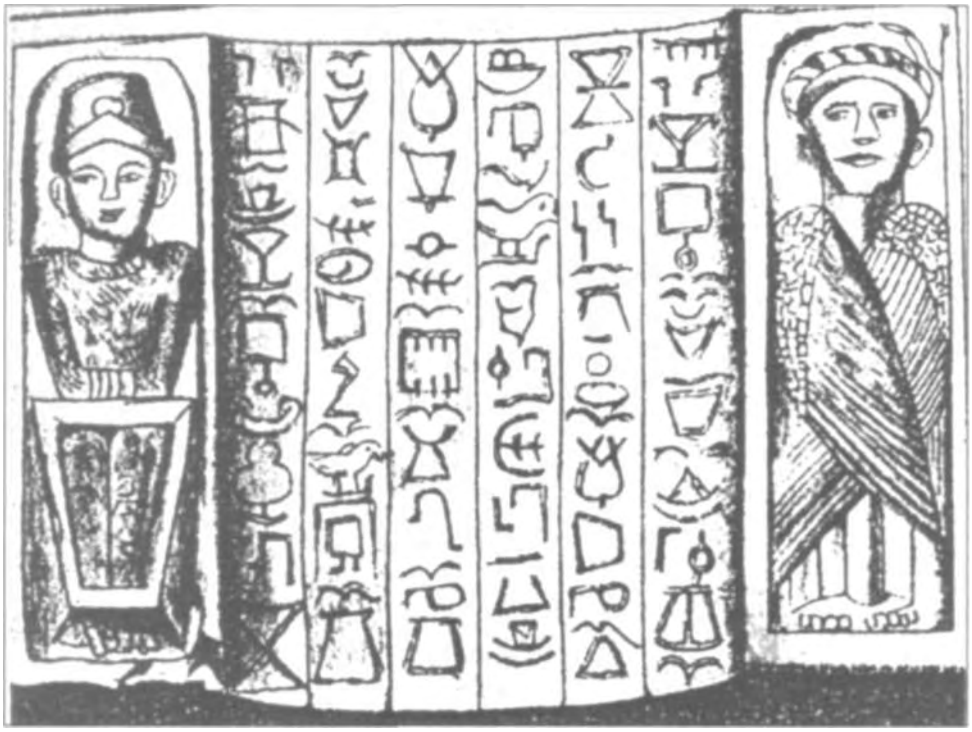

The figure at right (Luriferian angel?) has wings crossed in *"X"* fashion. This is said to be a secret, coded alphabet used by the clandestine Templars Order. (From *Secret Societies,* by Arkon Daraul)

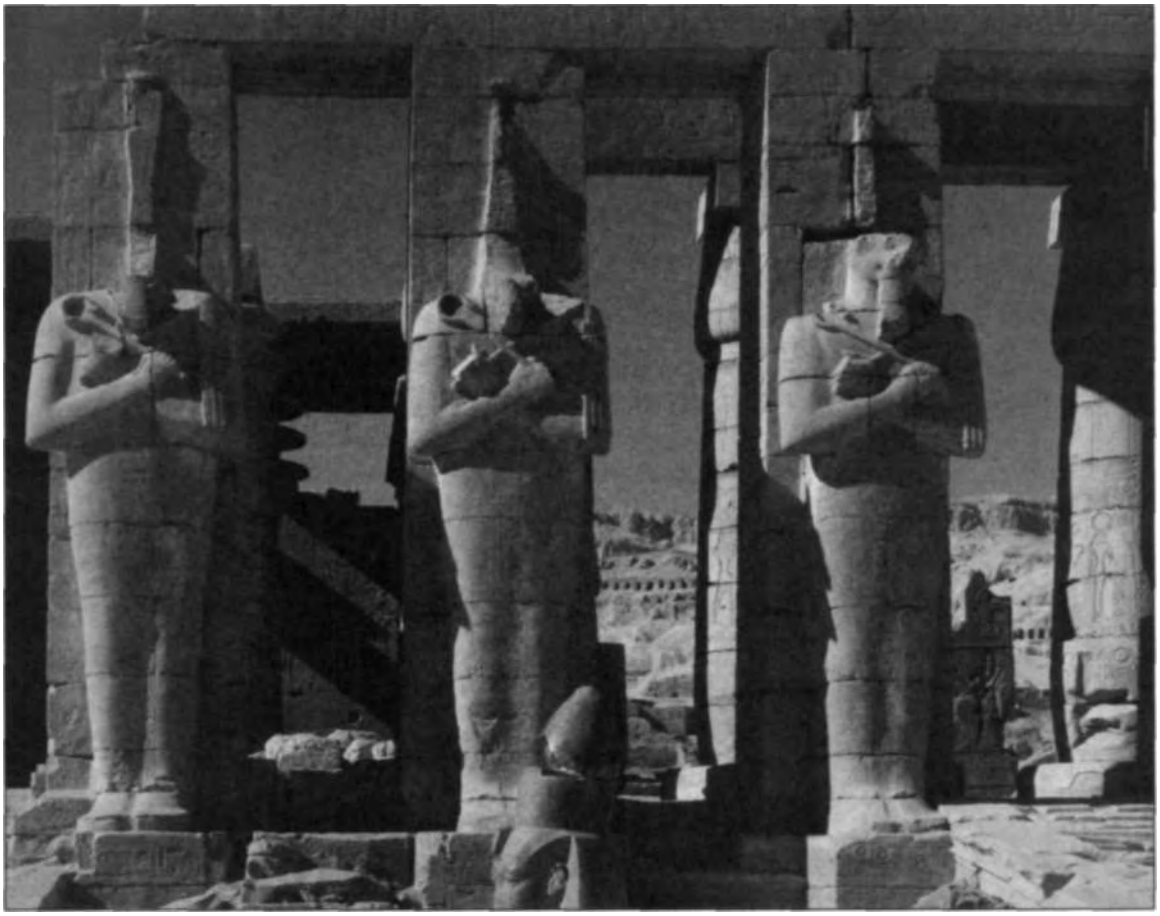

These ancient Egyptian figures demonstrate how prevalent was Osiris' sacred sign, "X."

Pre-Aztec figurine, today on display in Mexico, has arms crossed in "X" position.

Bronze figurine of the demon god Pazuzu, 800-600 B.C. Pazuzu is still secretly worshipped today by many.

A real Egyptian mummy, arms crossed in honor of Osiris, divine Father.

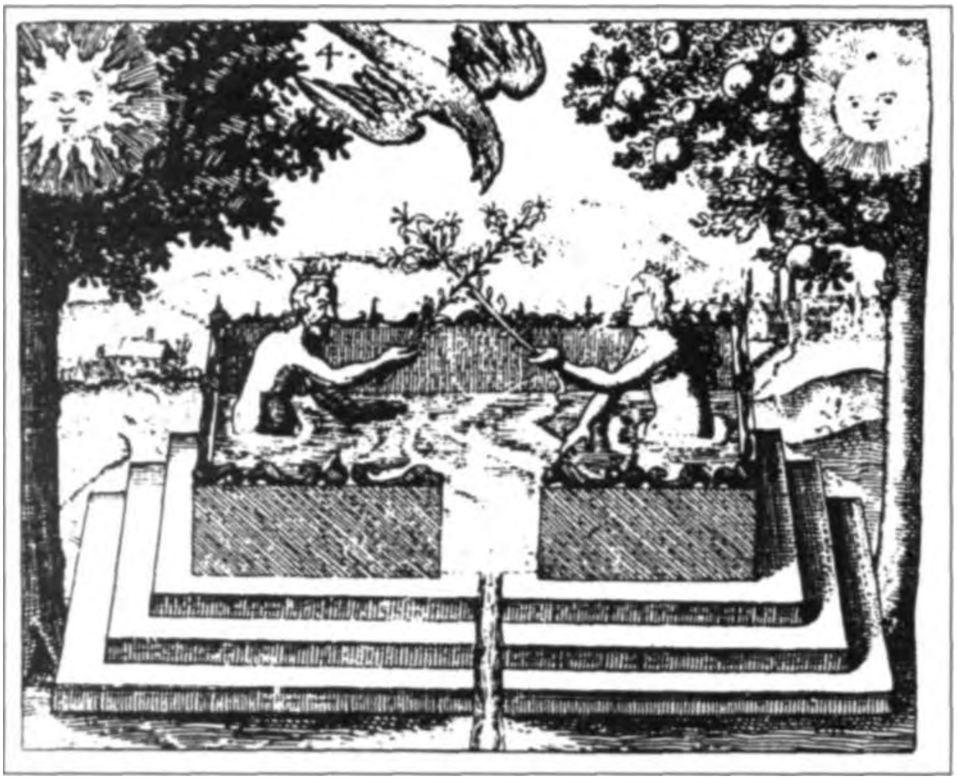

Rosicrucian and other mystical orders emphasize the process of *alchemy,* mystical union that brings about cleansing and renewal. The goal of Illuminati alchemy is to realize a New World Order through destruction ("cleansing"). Thus, *Ordo Ab Chao,* order out of chaos. In this drawing from Mylius's *Philosophia Reformata* (1622) the alchemical process is "Bath," the union of Sol (Sun) and Luna (Moon). The *"X"* is the intersection of the two opposites.

Swami Bua, an Indian Hindu sage who, in 2003, claimed to be 115 years old. He crosses his legs in the X-configuration typical of Hindu gurus and swamis as they meditate and practice yoga. Apparently, the Swami's lifestyle does not a healthy nation make. According to statistics overall in India, the longevity rate is 23 years less than in North America (Photo: *Transformation* magazine, July-August, 2003)

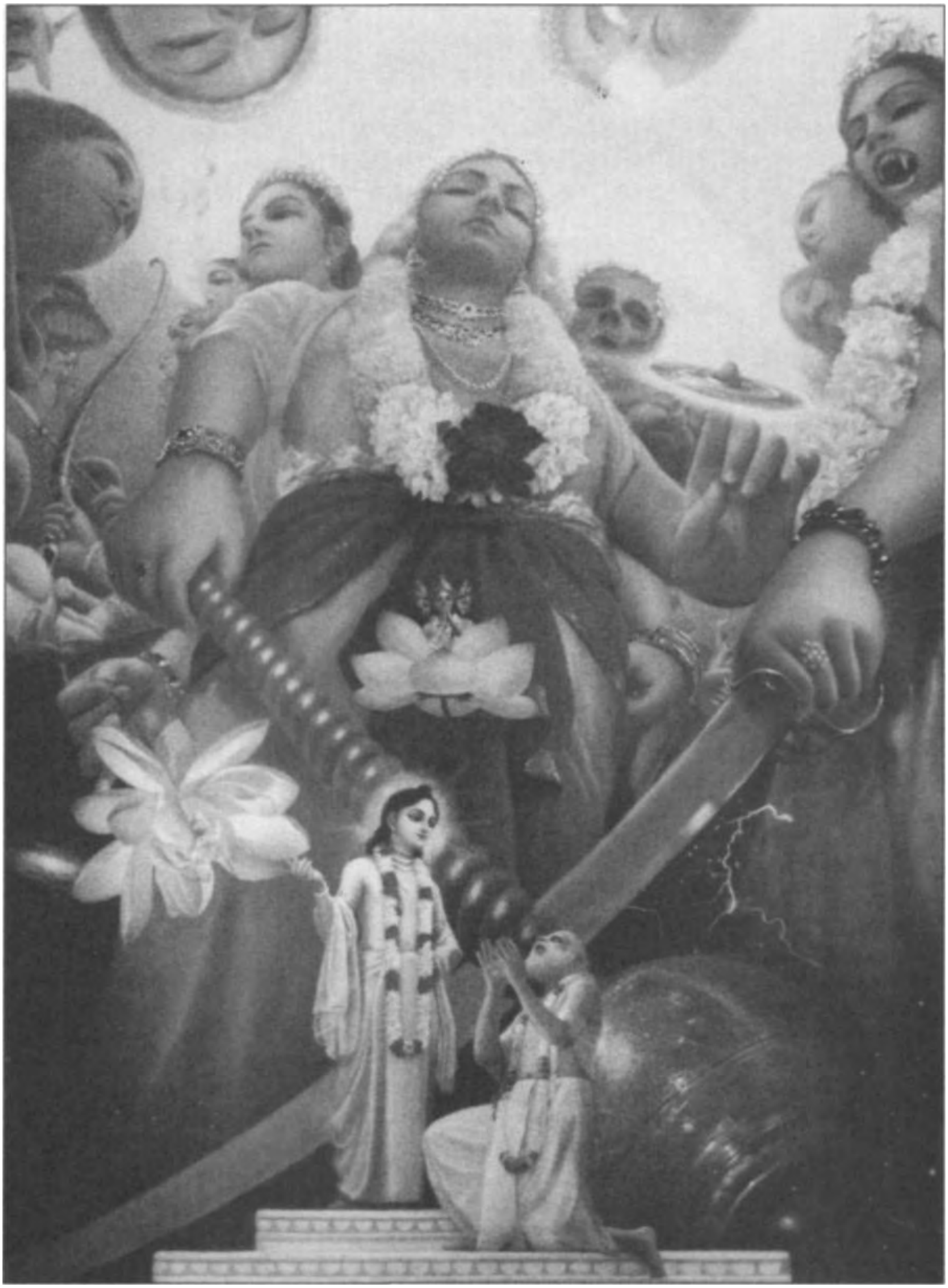

Kali, merciless goddess of death and destruction, metes out justice and balancing of karma to her victims. Observe the satanic sign of Kali's left hand and her spinning on her finger of a sun sign. Her color is blue, same color as the Blue Lodge of Freemasonry (first three degrees). The rose and the lotus are her flowers, also the same flowers represented throughout the occult world by many other individuals and groups.

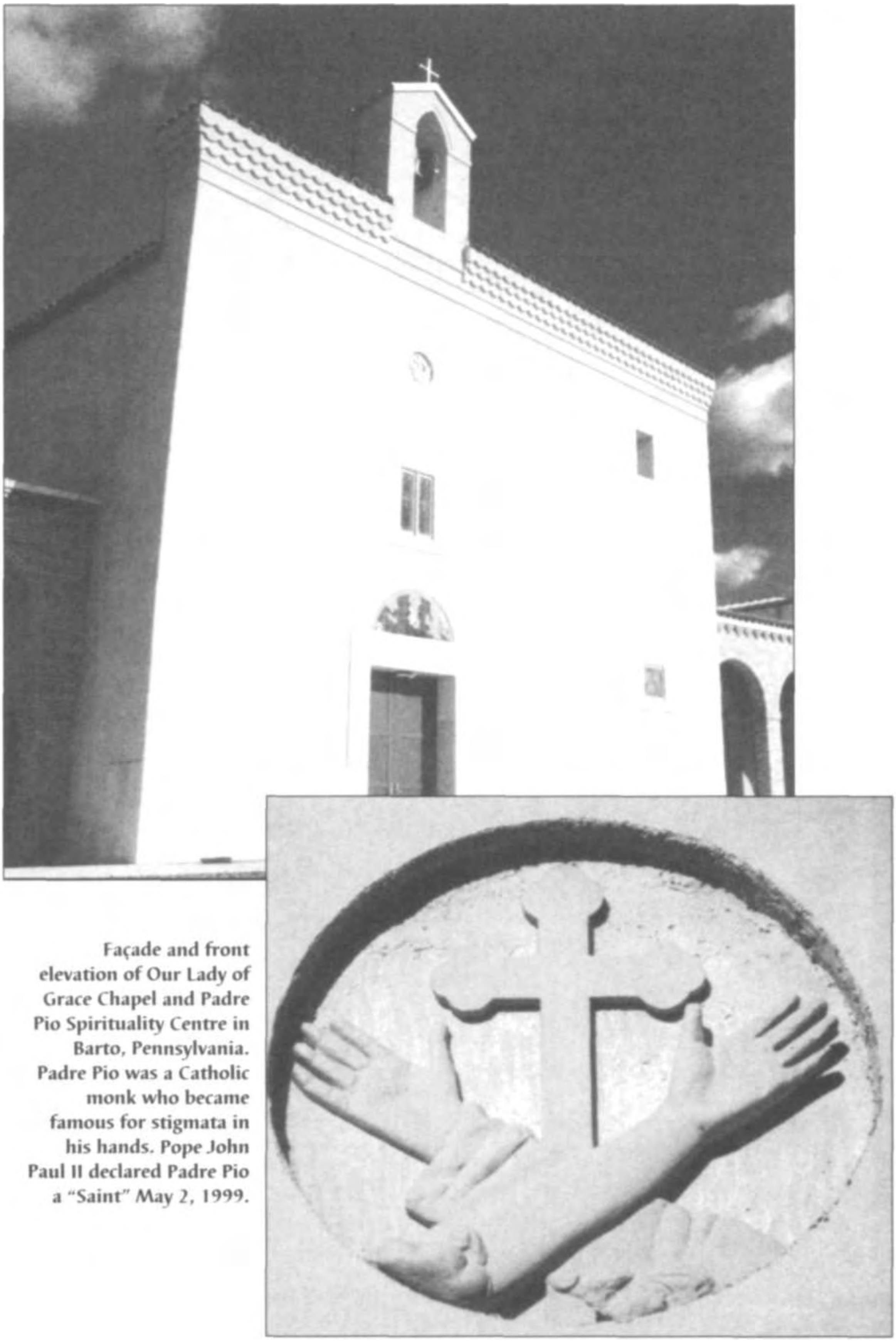

Façade and front elevation of Our Lady of Grace Chapel and Padre Pio Spirituality Centre in Barto, Pennsylvania. Padre Pio was a Catholic monk who became famous for stigmata in his hands. Pope John Paul II declared Padre Pio a "Saint" May 2, 1999.

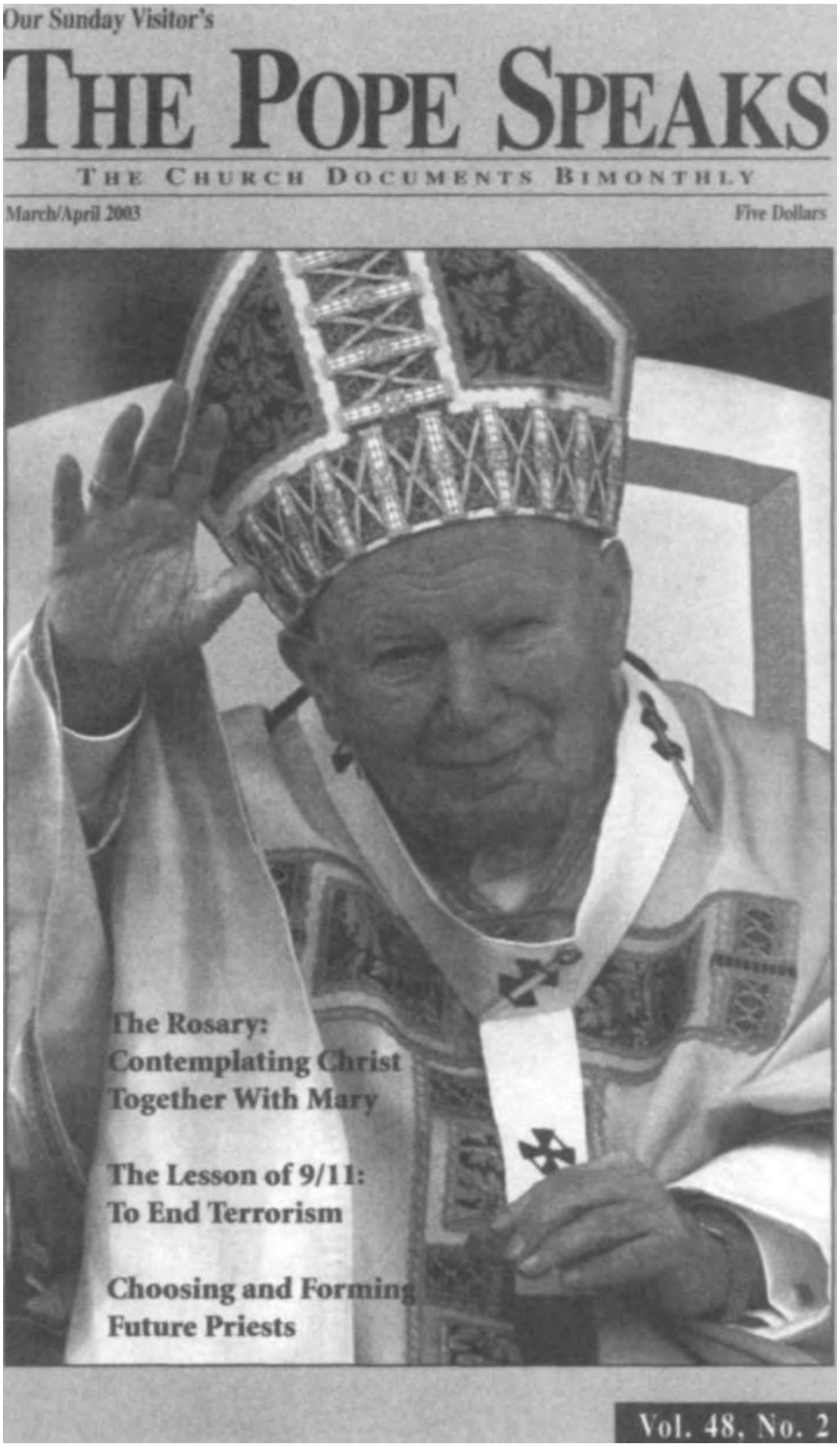
Our Sunday Visitor's
THE POPE SPEAKS
THE CHURCH DOCUMENTS BIMONTHLY
March/April 2003
Five Dollars
The Rosary: Contemplating Christ Together With Mary
The Lesson of 9/11: To End Terrorism
Choosing and Forming Future Priests
Vol. 48, No. 2

The papacy often uses the "X," as is demonstrated in the Dagon fish-hat of Pope John Paul II on the cover of The Pope Speaks journal.

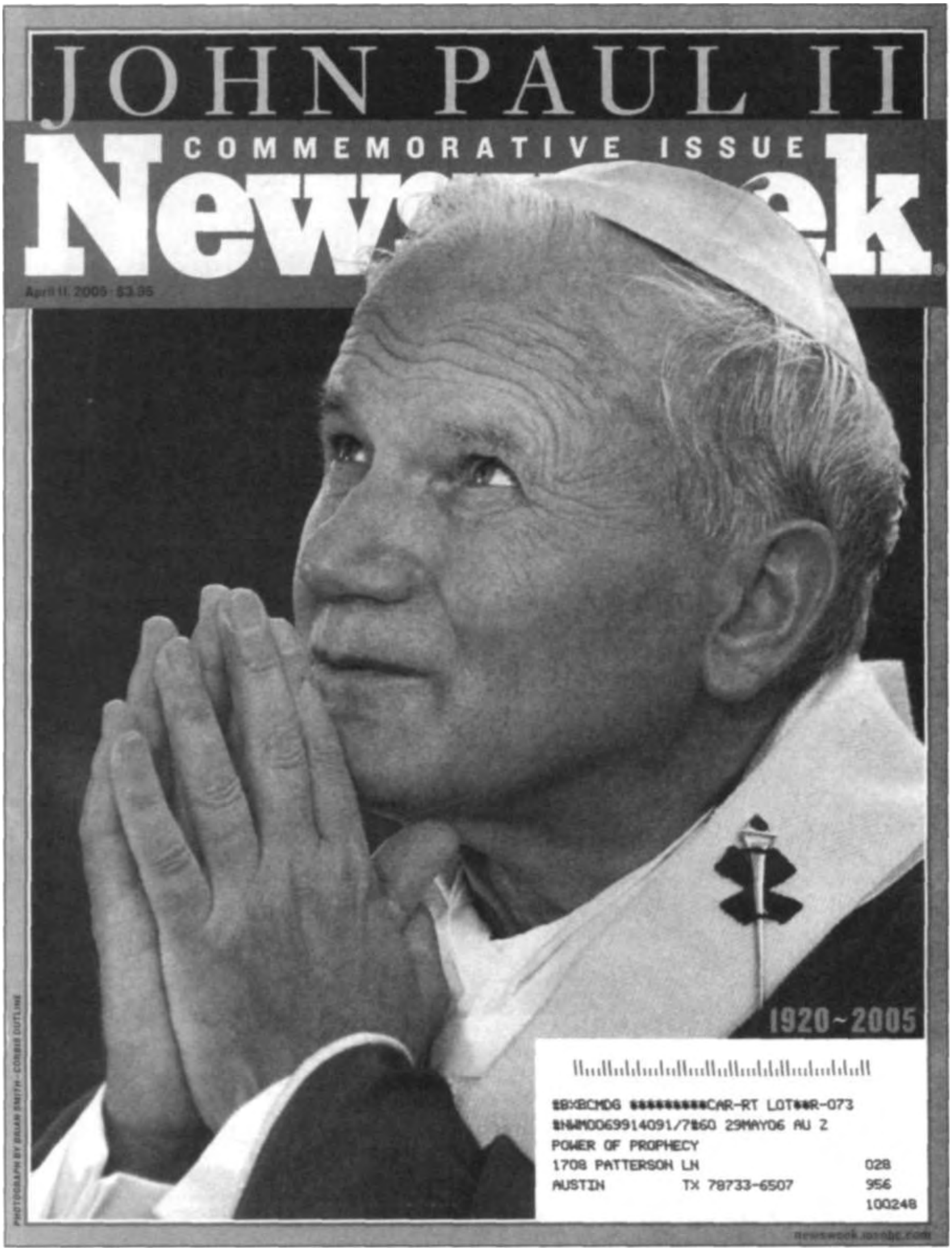
JOHN PAUL II
COMMEMORATIVE ISSUE
Newsweek
April 11, 2005 $3.95
1920~2005
POWER OF PROPHECY
1708 PATTERSON LN
AUSTIN TX 78733-6507
newsweek.msnbc.com

The X symbol on the robe worn by Pope John Paul II is telling, as is the silver metal torch with its black flame. Silver is the metallic element of the ancient goddess, which the Pope would recognize in the form of Mary, Mother of Jesus. The X, of course, represents the Father deity. Not the Father God of the Old and New Testament, but of Babylon and Egypt.

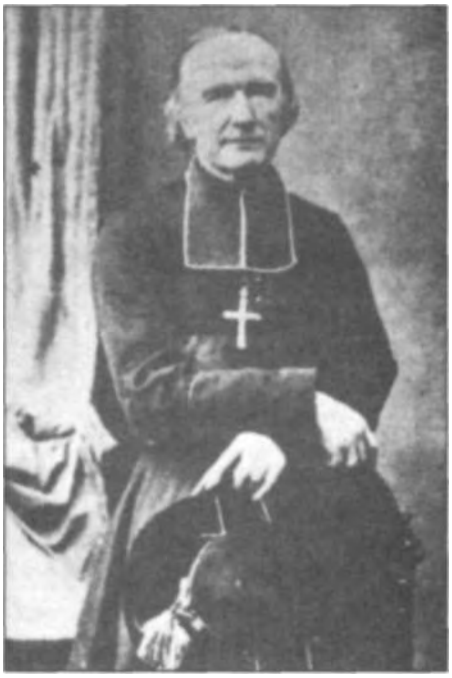

Georges Darboy, Archbishop of Paris in 1870. Observe the crossed hands (X) and the Il Cornuto horned devil sign given with the left hand as it holds the prelate's hat. (From the book, *How The Pope Became Infallible*, by August Bernhard Hasler, 1981, Doubleday & Co., Garden City, New York)

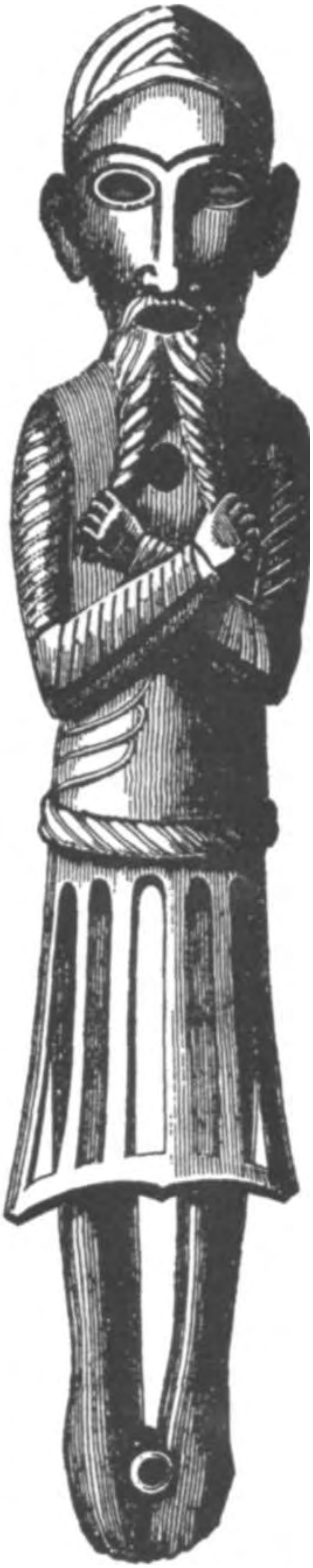

This image was found under the root of a tree dug up in Roscommon in Ireland. It is made of brass. The gilding, however, is now almost worn off. It is on display at the Museum of Trinity College, Dublin.

***"To this deity in particular they apply themselves for success when they go out a hunting or fishing, and for the relief of all such as are indisposed!"*— Miramba. (From the book, *The Round Towers of Atlantis*, by Henry O'Brien, published 2002; originally in 1834; Adventures Unlimited Press, Kempton, IL 60946)**

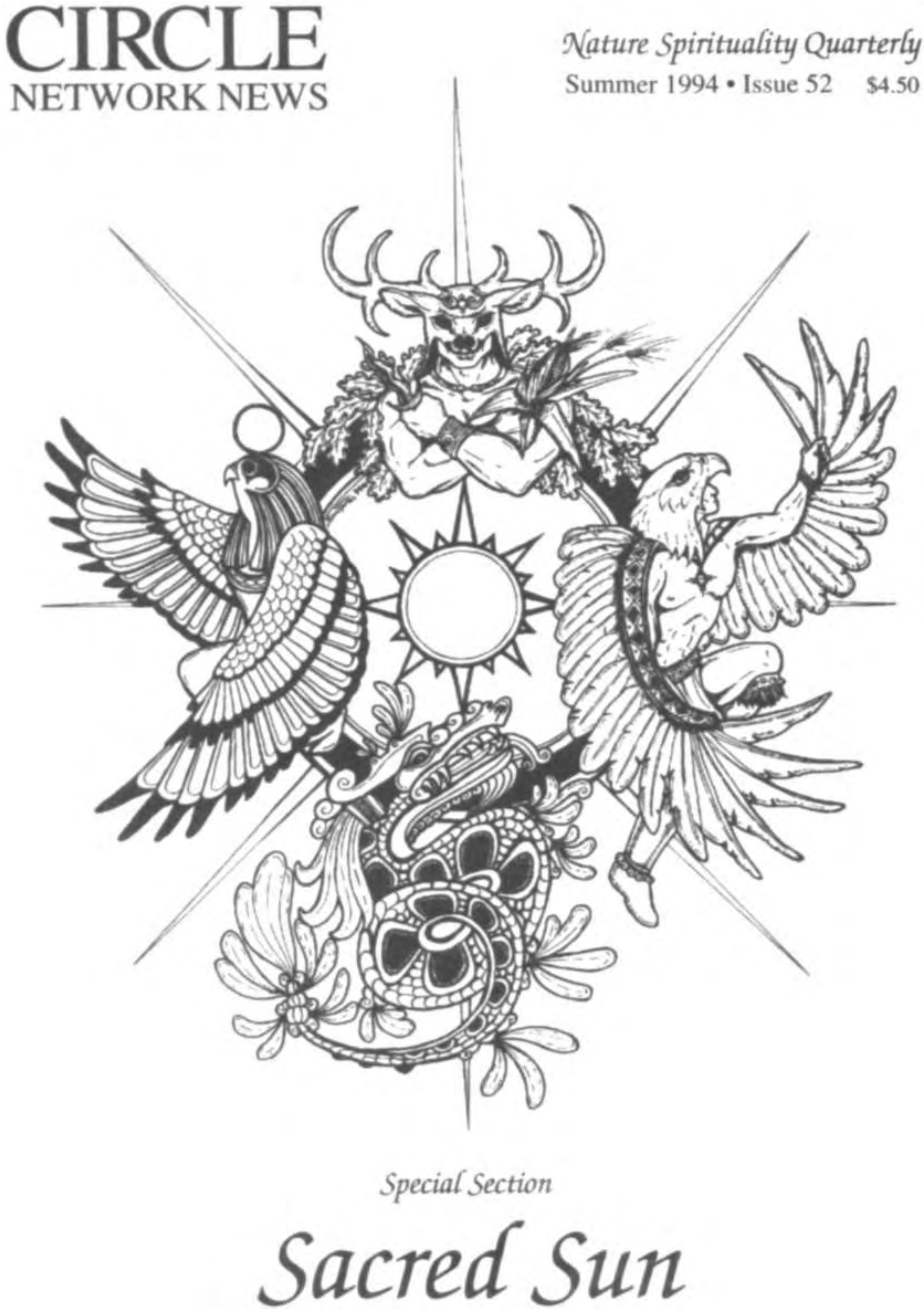
CIRCLE
NETWORK NEWS
Nature Spirituality Quarterly
Summer 1994 • Issue 52 $4.50
Special Section
Sacred Sun

Cover of a popular witchcraft publication in the U.S.A., *Circle Network News* (copyright 1994). Cernunnos, horned antler god of the forest, is at top with his arms folded ("X"). The sun, sacred to wiccans is at center.

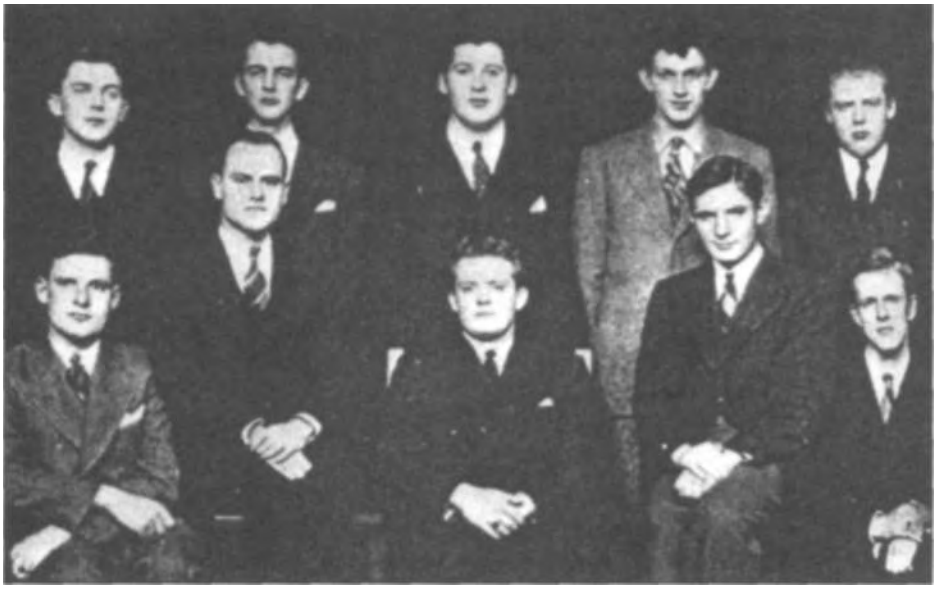

In this photo of the staff of Yale University's *Yale Literary Magazine* (1941), the five young men in front are all giving a similar hand over hand ("X") signal. The photo is significant because one of the students pictured (second from right, back row) is James Jesus Angleton, perverted Mason who was long-term Deputy Director of the CIA and was guilty of murder, rape, torture, treason, and numerous other counts of evildoing. It is also at Yale where the Order of Skull and Bones and other elitist groups initiate their recruits.

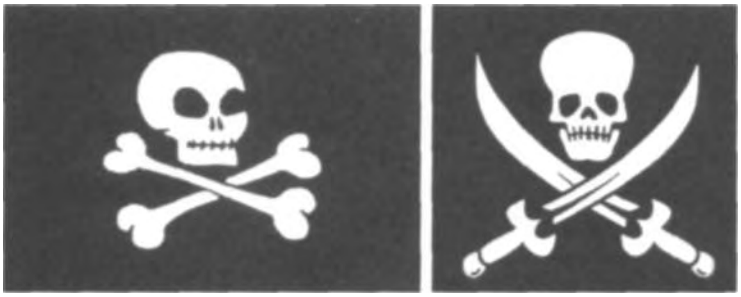

Pirates hoisted the Skull & Bones (the "Jolly Roger") flags on their sea vessels. (Illustrations from book, *Pirates and The Lost Templar Fleet, 2003)*

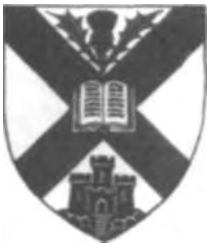

The seal of Edinburgh University in Scotland.

Logo of Garrett-Evangelical Theological Seminary, a liberal institution in Illinois.

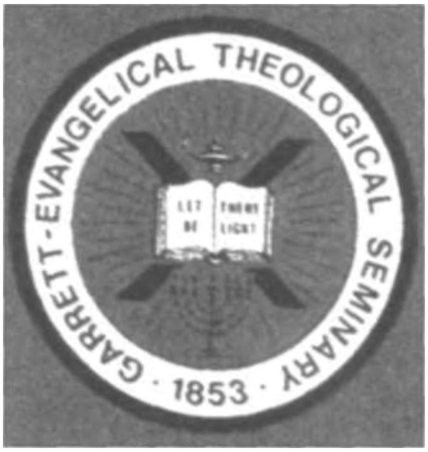

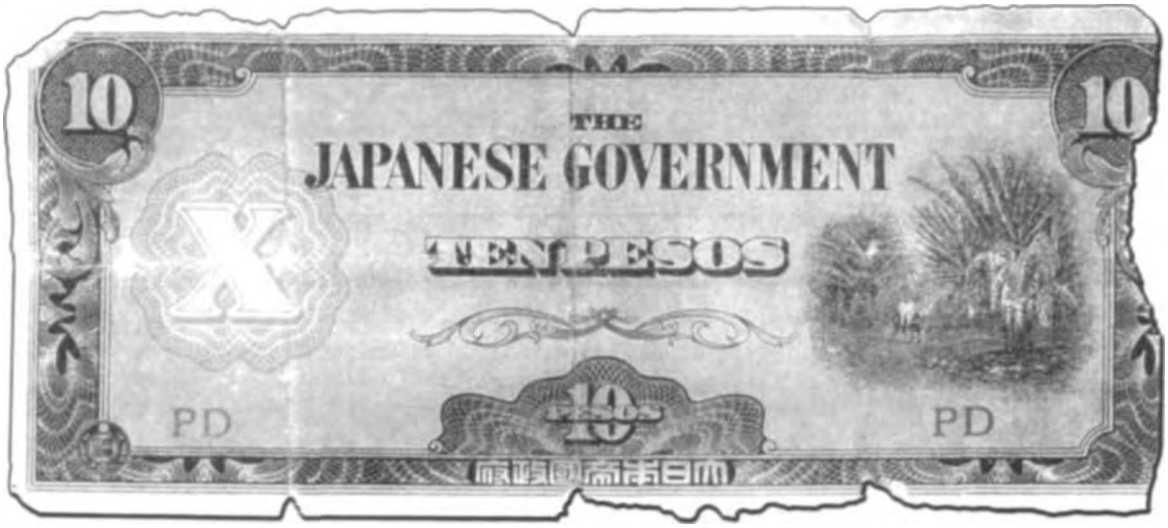
10
THE
JAPANESE GOVERNMENT
TEN PESOS
X
PD
10
PD
10

The Japanese army occupying the Philippines in World War II issued their own local currency. This 10 peso bill was found by American soldiers on the body of a dead Japanese soldier. The "X" is apparently the Roman numeral for "ten."

THE "WALLONIEN"
THE HISTORY OF THE
5TH SS-STURMBRIGADE
Leon DeGrelle

The "Cross of Burgundy" was two crossed sticks, in the form of an *"X,"* which became the emblem of the Nazi Wallonien Waffen SS Division, a group of French volunteers, led by Leon Degrelle, that fought on the Russian front against the Communists.

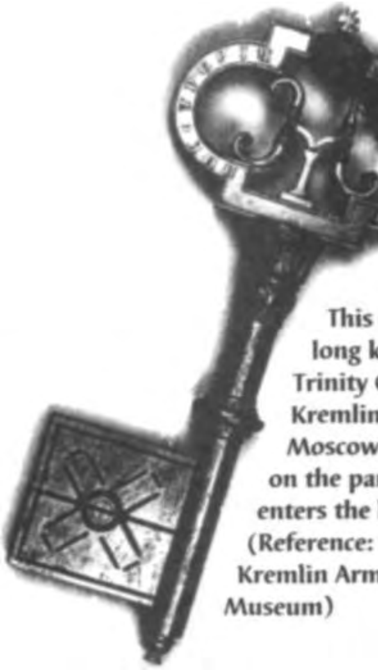

This 15 inch-long key to the Trinity Gate of the Kremlin in Moscow has an "X" on the part that enters the key hole. (Reference: Moscow Kremlin Armory Museum)

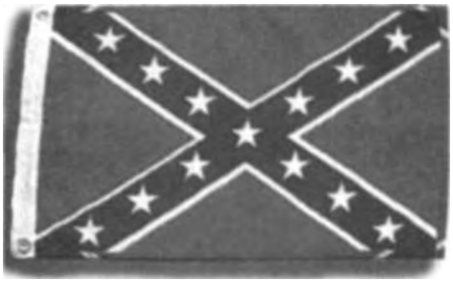

Its advocates claim the X design of the old confederate flag (the *"stars and bars")* is adapted from the ancient and historic Saint Andrew's cross. This is far from certain. The Confederacy was secretly supported by Jesuits, Masons, and Jews (Rothschild interests) all of whom were aware of its true, occultic origins. Moreover, the degree of the Scottish Rite of Freemasonry emphasizes the X- shaped cross of Saint Andrew.

This letter from a "gentleman" claiming to be of the Invisible Empire of the KKK was sent to the author after he had on his radio program a Jewish guest, a Christian who was head of the International Board of Jewish Missions, a group that evangelizes Jews for Christ. Obviously, the KKK was a little upset that the author is not anti-Semite. The logo on the letterhead is of interest with its blackish circle, triangle, and the Masonic "47th Problem of Euclid" triune design. The KKK, of course, was founded by Masons following the South's defeat in America's Civil War, 1865.

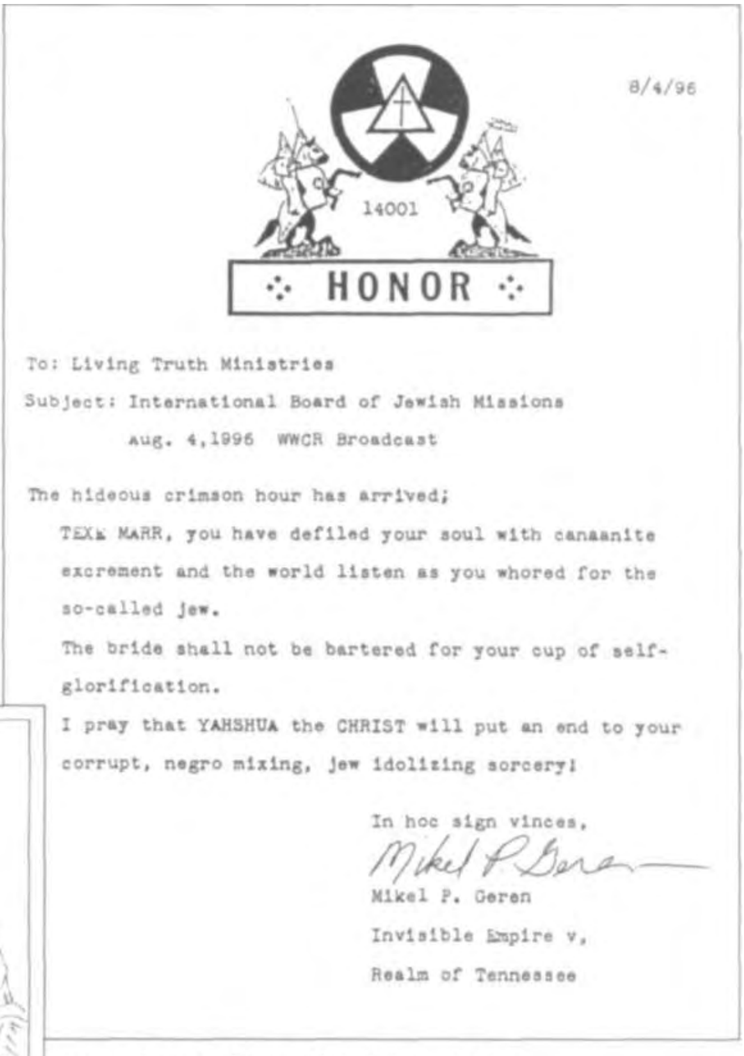

14001

HONOR

8/4/96

To: Living Truth Ministries

Subject: International Board of Jewish Missions

Aug. 4,1996 WWCR Broadcast

The hideous crimson hour has arrived;

TEXE MARR, you have defiled your soul with canaanite excrement and the world listen as you whored for the so-called jew.

The bride shall not be bartered for your cup of self-glorification.

I pray that YAHSHUA the CHRIST will put an end to your corrupt, negro mixing, jew idolizing sorcery!

In hoc sign vinces,

Mikel P. Geren

Mikel P. Geren

Invisible Empire v,

Realm of Tennessee

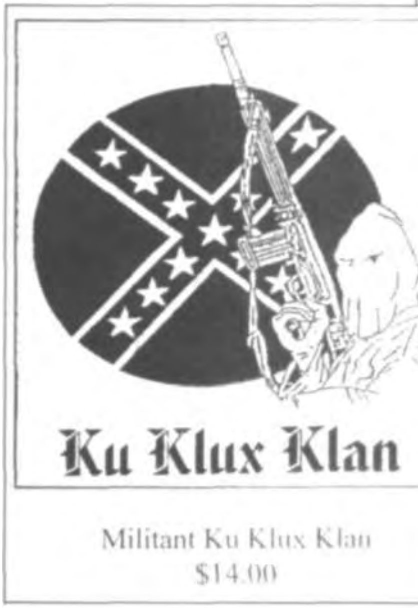

Artwork for t-shirts offered through the mail by a company called Aryan Graphics. The Confederate flag's X-styled "bars and stripes" is a focal point.

These Ku Klux Klansmen wear an X on the left breast of their white robes. The KKK was founded by Confederate Generals Albert Pike and Nathan B. Forrest. Pike was also the Sovereign Grand Commander of Scottish Rite Freemasonry, and his book, *Morals and Dogma*, is still lauded as a classic by the global Masonic leadership. Although Pike was a confederate general and was labeled a criminal by President Abraham Lincoln, today, a statue of Pike stands in front of the U.S. Justice Department's headquarters in Washington, D.C. His body is entombed in the Scottish Rite's The House of the Temple headquarters in Washington, D.C.

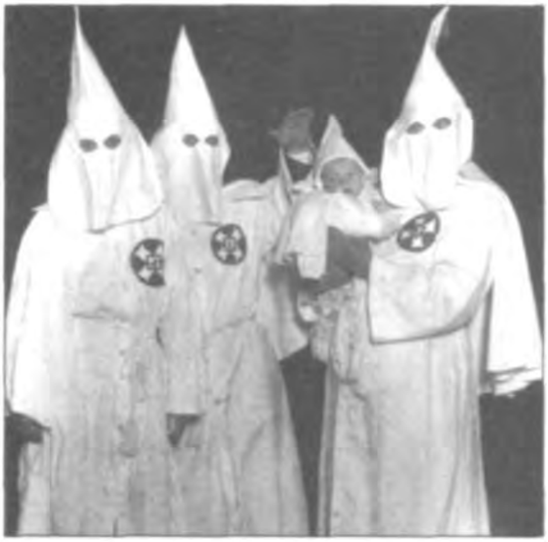

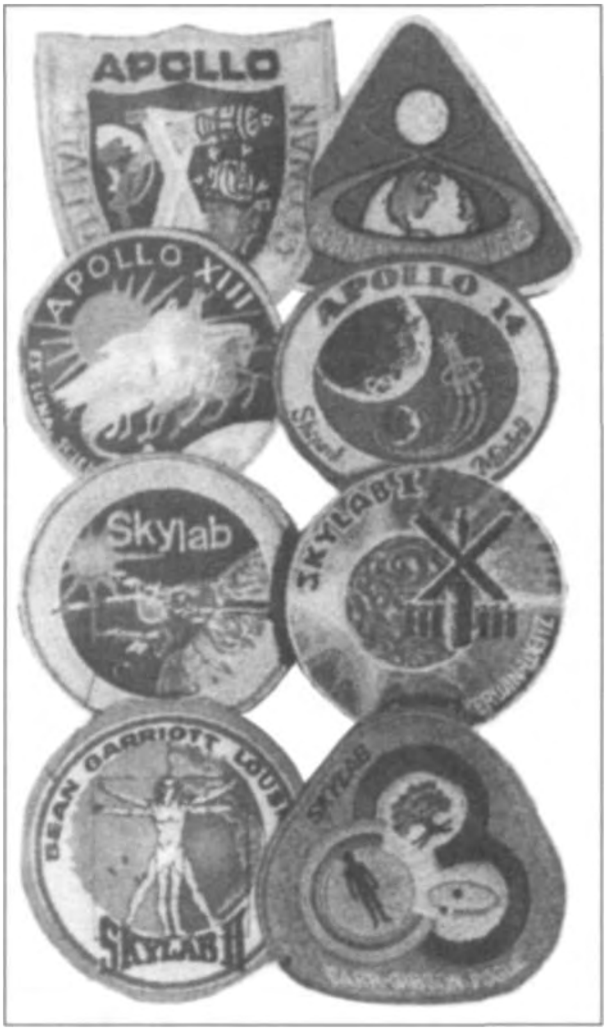
APOLLO
APOLLO XIII
APOLLO 14
Skylab
SKYLAB I
GARRIOTT
LOUSMA
BEAN
SKYLAB II
SKYLAB

Illuminism in space: NASA patches are loaded with pagan, occultic, and Masonic meanings, including the X of Osiris, the Egyptian Sun God.

An *X* is formed as America's top four politicians met at the White House to decide the fate of the federal budget. Obviously, this was a staged "photo op" event, but for Vice President Al Gore and House speaker Newt Gingrich to reach over the clasped hands of President Bill Clinton and Senate Majority Leader Bob Dole was a serious breach of etiquette. *(USA Today,* December 21, 1995)

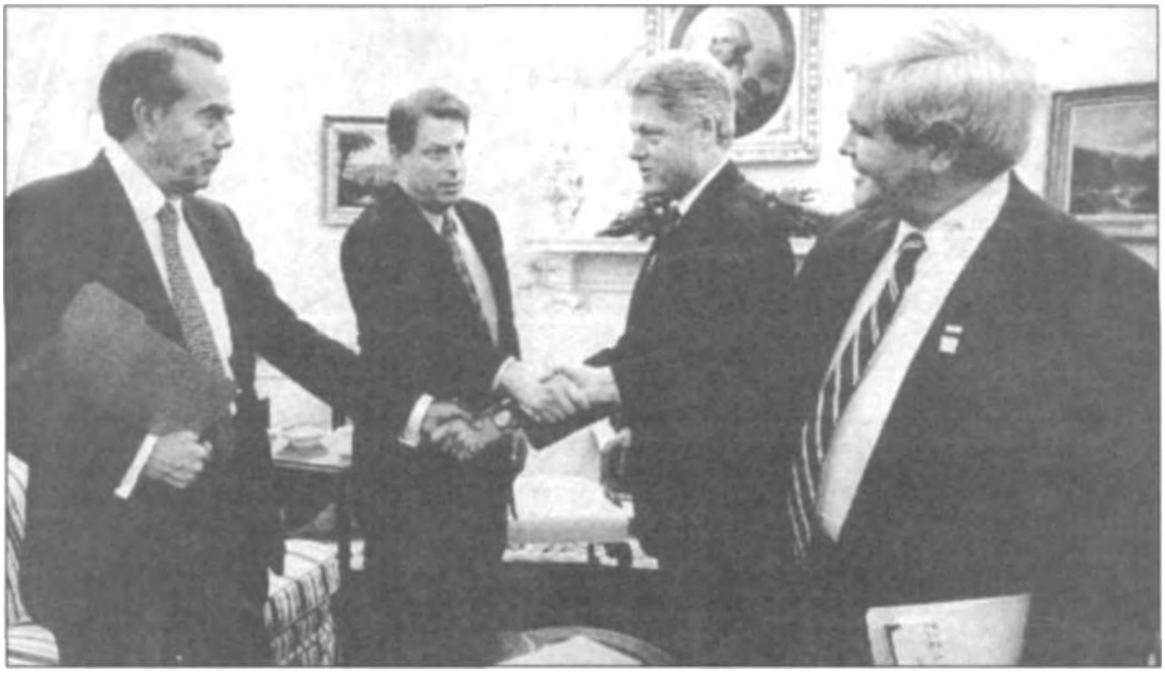

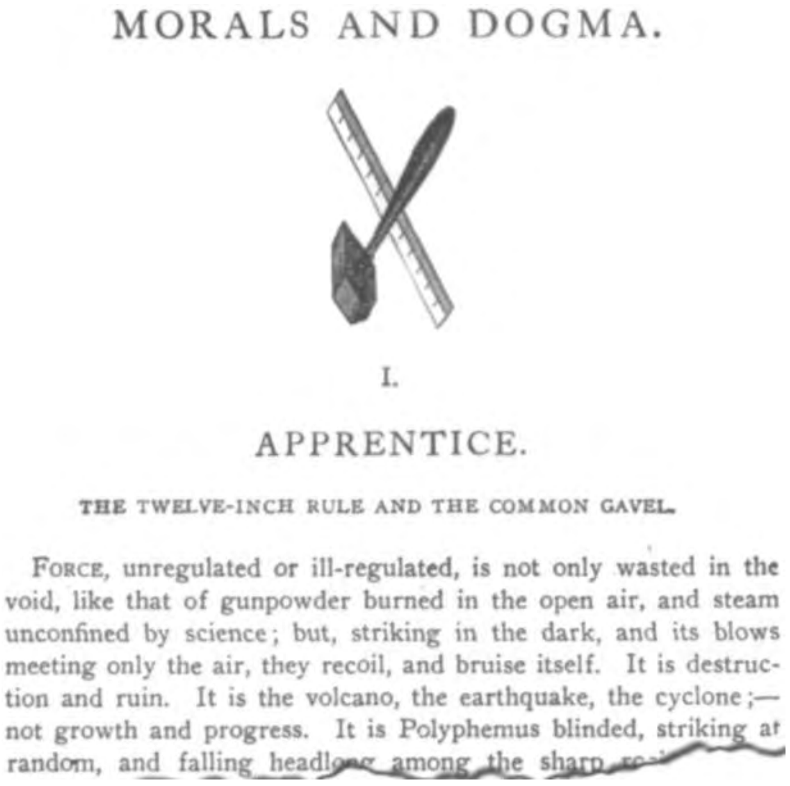

MORALS AND DOGMA.

I.

APPRENTICE.

THE TWELVE-INCH RULE AND THE COMMON GAVEL.

FORCE, unregulated or ill-regulated, is not only wasted in the void, like that of gunpowder burned in the open air, and steam unconfined by science; but, striking in the dark, and its blows meeting only the air, they recoil, and bruise itself. It is destruction and ruin. It is the volcano, the earthquake, the cyclone;—not growth and progress. It is Polyphemus blinded, striking at random, and falling headlong among the sharp

Albert Pike, former Sovereign Grand Commander of the Scottish Rite, in his book, *Morals and Dogma,* considered by many Masons to be their "bible" and guide for daily living, has this illustration of an *"X,"* in the form of a crossed gavel and a measuring stick, or rule. Pike explains the illustration by suggesting that *Force* (the brute power of the people) must be regulated by the elite: "The blind Force of the people is a Force that must be economized, and also managed... It must be regulated by Intellect."

80 MORALS AND DOGMA.

hour; and hence, in several African dialects, as names of the Sun, *Airo, Ayero, eer, uiro, ghurrah,* and the like. The royal name rendered *Pharaoh,* was PHRA, that is, *Pai-ra,* the Sun.

The legend of the contest between *Hor-ra* and *Set,* or *Set-nu-bi,* the same as *Bar* or *Bal,* is older than that of the strife between *Osiris* and *Typhon;* as old, at least, as the nineteenth dynasty. It is called in the Book of the Dead, "The day of the battle between Horus and Set." The later myth connects itself with Phoenicia and Syria. The body of OSIRIS went ashore at *Gebal* or *Byblos,* sixty miles above Tsur. You will not fail to notice that in the name of each murderer of Khurum, that of the Evil God Bal is found.

* * * * * *

Har-oeri was the god of TIME, as well as of Life. The Egyptian legend was that the King of Byblos cut down the tamarisk-tree containing the body of OSIRIS, and made of it a column for his palace. Isis, employed in the palace, obtained possession of the column, took the body out of it, and carried it away. Apuleius describes her as "a beautiful female, over whose divine neck her long thick hair hung in graceful ringlets;" and in the procession female attendants, with ivory combs, seemed to dress and ornament the royal hair of the goddess. The palm-tree, and the lamp in the shape of a boat, appeared in the procession. If the symbol we are speaking of is not a mere modern invention, it is to these things it alludes.

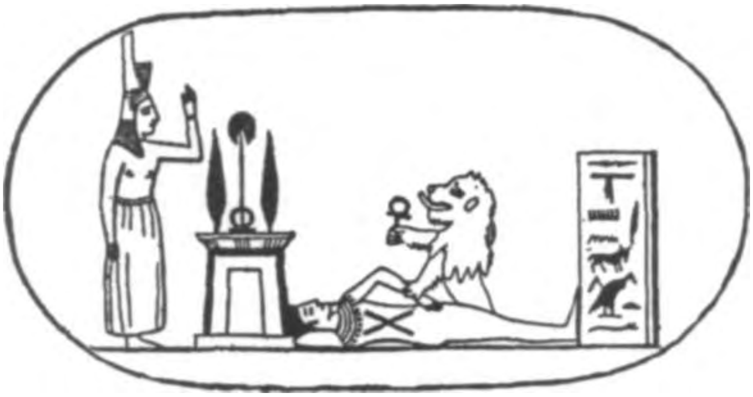

The identity of the legends is also confirmed by this hieroglyphic picture, copied from an ancient Egyptian monument, which may also enlighten you as to the Lion's grip and the Master's gavel.

In his classic Masonic textbook, *Morals and Dogma,* Scottish Rite legend Albert Pike suggests that "This hieroglyphic picture, copied from an ancient Egyptian monument, may enlighten you as to the Lion's grip and the Master's gavel," two standards of the ritual ceremony for the Master degree. In the picture, the candidate, lying on the floor, is about to be "raised" by the powerful grip of the Lion's paw. The lion is carrying in his right hand the *Ankh,* symbol of reincarnation, or regeneration. The *"X"* on the man's chest tells us this is Osiris, the Sun God who was slain but arose from the dead, being pieced back together by his beautiful Queen, Isis.

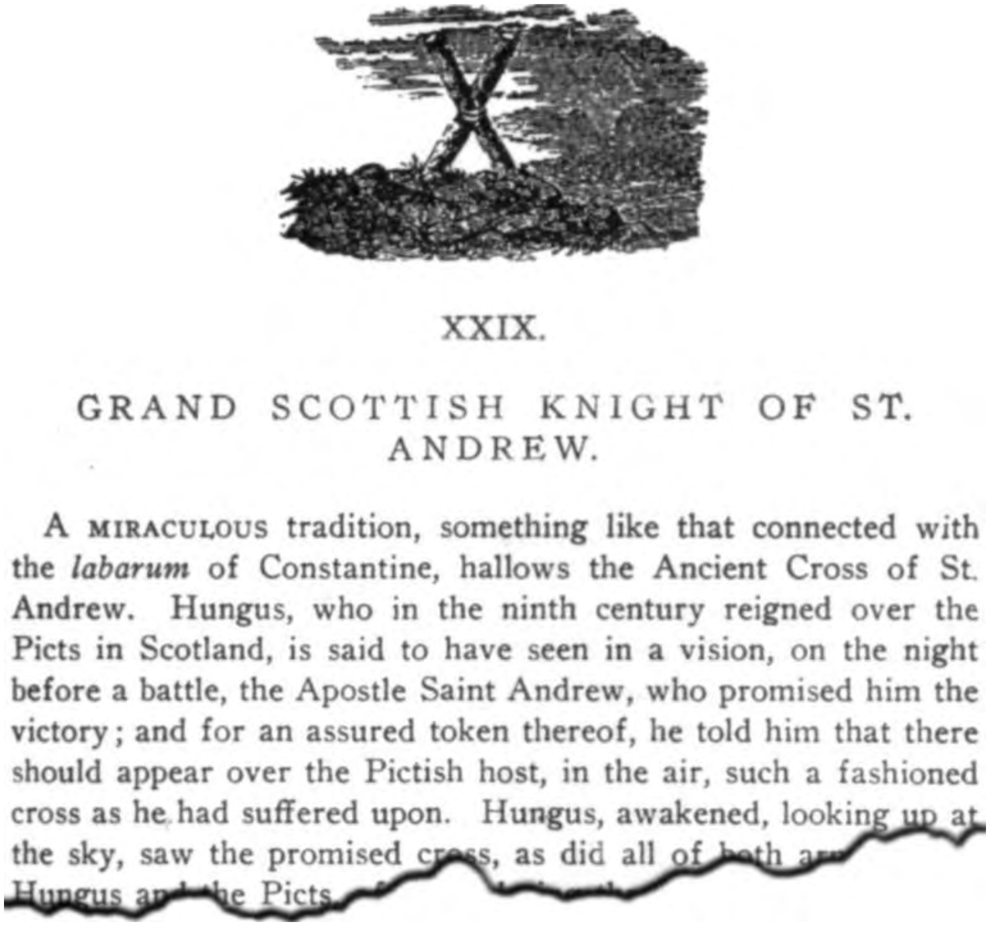

XXIX.

GRAND SCOTTISH KNIGHT OF ST. ANDREW.

A MIRACULOUS tradition, something like that connected with the *labarum* of Constantine, hallows the Ancient Cross of St. Andrew. Hungus, who in the ninth century reigned over the Picts in Scotland, is said to have seen in a vision, on the night before a battle, the Apostle Saint Andrew, who promised him the victory; and for an assured token thereof, he told him that there should appear over the Pictish host, in the air, such a fashioned cross as he had suffered upon. Hungus, awakened, looking up at the sky, saw the promised cross, as did all of both ar
Hungus and the Picts

Beginning on page 801 of Albert Pike's classic textbook, *Morals and Dogma,* we find an explanation of the 29th degree, Grand Scottish Knight of St. Andrew.

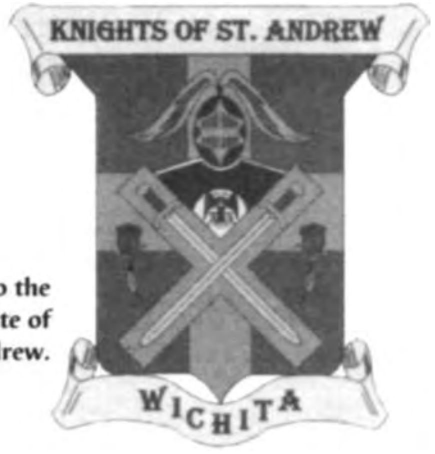

Masonic insignia related to the 29th degree, the Scottish Rite of Saint Andrew.

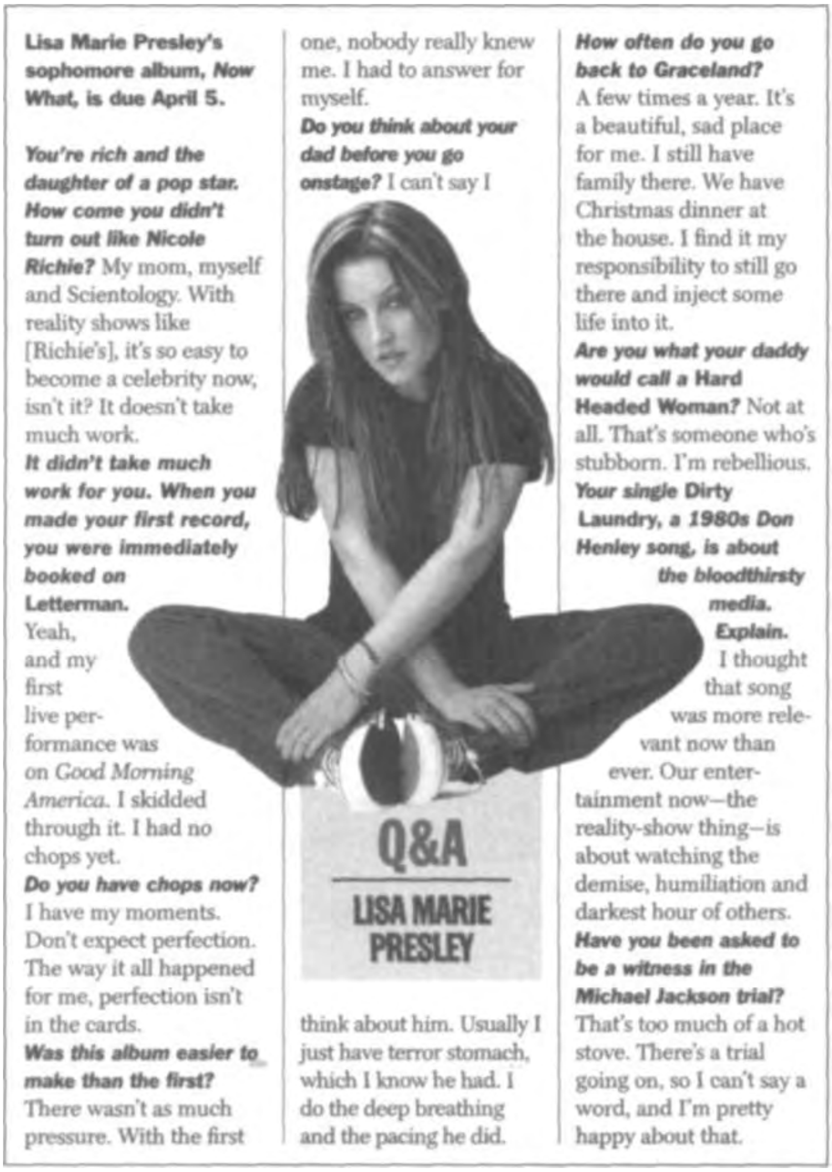

Q&A

LISA MARIE PRESLEY

Lisa Marie Presley's sophomore album, *Now What*, is due April 5.

You're rich and the daughter of a pop star. How come you didn't turn out like Nicole Richie? My mom, myself and Scientology. With reality shows like [Richie's], it's so easy to become a celebrity now, isn't it? It doesn't take much work.

It didn't take much work for you. When you made your first record, you were immediately booked on Letterman. Yeah, and my first live performance was on *Good Morning America*. I skidded through it. I had no chops yet.

Do you have chops now? I have my moments. Don't expect perfection. The way it all happened for me, perfection isn't in the cards.

Was this album easier to make than the first? There wasn't as much pressure. With the first one, nobody really knew me. I had to answer for myself.

Do you think about your dad before you go onstage? I can't say I think about him. Usually I just have terror stomach, which I know he had. I do the deep breathing and the pacing he did.

How often do you go back to Graceland? A few times a year. It's a beautiful, sad place for me. I still have family there. We have Christmas dinner at the house. I find it my responsibility to still go there and inject some life into it.

Are you what your daddy would call a Hard Headed Woman? Not at all. That's someone who's stubborn. I'm rebellious.

Your single Dirty Laundry, a 1980s Don Henley song, is about the bloodthirsty media. Explain. I thought that song was more relevant now than ever. Our entertainment now—the reality-show thing—is about watching the demise, humiliation and darkest hour of others.

Have you been asked to be a witness in the Michael Jackson trial? That's too much of a hot stove. There's a trial going on, so I can't say a word, and I'm pretty happy about that.

Lisa Marie Presley demonstrates her cabalistic knowledge in this body pose in a news magazine, including the X sign of Osiris and the legs in diamond position. This body position emphasizes the sex generative energies. (*Time* magazine, April S, 2005)

TWELVE

That Ravenous Dark Bird—Sublime Mysteries of the Illuminati's Double-Headed Eagle

And he cried mightily with a strong voice, saying, Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, and is become the habitation of devils, and the hold of every foul spirit, and a cage of every unclean and hateful bird.

- *Revelation 18:2*

The Royal Secret...the Secret of the Universal Equilibrium... shall at length make real the Holy Empire of true Masonic Brotherhood.

- Albert Pike, 33°
Morals and Dogma

Two heads are better than one, except when they're on the body of only one eagle.

— Texe Marrs

Can the body of *one* bird have *two* heads? Is such a notion insane? I believe so. Insanity can be described as a demented man's firm belief that two totally contradictory and opposite things are nevertheless one and the same. If a man simultaneously embraces two competing, mutually exclusive ideas or philosophies, he can properly be deemed "out of his mind," or insane. If, for example, he is convinced that an apple is a bird or that the color black is actually white, then he is insane.

But the Illuminati do not agree. Their whole insane doctrine is based on the supposition that black *is* white, that good is evil, that two plus two equals five. They are men of insane minds. And they have developed an equally insane "scientific" system, designed to reprogram and recreate social material and spiritual reality to fit their perverted, upside down theology.

Universal Motion: Alchemy and Magic

Their scientific system, actually a form of witchcraft, is based on *alchemy* and *magic.* Its process is one of *Universal Motion,* designed to purposely foment diabolical chaos so that order may come out of two dynamic competing forces, *Ordo Ah Chao.* Their objective is the *Great Work,* the changing of man created in God's image into the image of a serpent-being void of morality and void of righteous, just values. In other words, the Great Work is designed to create and produce a race of soul-less satanic creatures.

To effect their Great Work, to transform and transmutate the world and humanity into the "new soul-less creature," heaven and earth must be destroyed, crushed, and thoroughly converted into a new paradigm. In essence, heaven and earth are to become hell. The will of Satan shall be done on Earth as it is in hell. This is the exalted, *"Royal Secret."* It is the Illuminati's core doctrine, their cardinal teaching, that out of bloody, universal chaos will ultimately come equilibrium and the Holy Empire of the Illuminati, to be ruled by their cabalistic Messiah, or King—actually the Antichrist. Pike revealed this ultimate objective to subordinate Illuminists on page 861 of his celebrated textbook, *Morals and Dogma:*

> The Royal Secret, of which you are a Prince, if you are a true adept...is that which the *Sohar* (an occultic and cabalistic text) terms The Mystery of the Balance. It is the Secret of the Universal Equilibrium...Such, my Brother, is the True Word of a Master Mason; such is the true Royal Secret, which makes possible, and shall at length make real, the Holy Empire of true Masonic Brotherhood.[1]

Ruining God's Creation

Ezekiel 28 tells us that, as first created by God, Lucifer was a beautiful creature, one of the most lovely in Heaven. His body was not of flesh but was made up of actual gems and jewels. Even more fantastic, musical instruments were incorporated into his being. A beauty to behold.

But then the deceitful Lucifer rebelled, taking down with him one third of the angels. He and they apparently became vile creatures, ugly and deformed, appearing in grotesque forms appropriate to their mental and spiritual deformities.

> *How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! how art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations! For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, 1 will exalt my throne above the stars of God...I will ascend above*

> *the heights of the clouds; I will be like the most High. Yet thou shalt be brought down to hell, to the sides of the pit. (Isaiah 14:12-15)*

The Bible says that the angry and furious fallen Lucifer now walks to and fro in the earth like a lion seeking whom he might devour. His aim is to ruin God's creation, to bastardize and corrupt it, to change it into what he is—a monumentally ugly and warped creation, totally opposite of what God intended. Man and the world must be ruined, destroyed, transformed into a barren, non-producing, hideously shaped wasteland.

Men are to be made feminine; women masculine. Marriage is to be perverted. No longer between man and woman, it shall be used also to join men with men and women to women. Abortion—the reckless slaughter of innocents—is to be applauded. Sex is to become rife with perversion. Children are given over to the terrible passions of lustful pedophiles. Spiritual values are converted to material desires. False gods are exalted. False Bibles are invented. Murder and assassination become religious goals.

The Christian seeks as his life goal to become more and more like Jesus. But man and the world are progressively becoming more like Satan and his dark angels— more corrupt and evil every day, in every way. Evolution, oddly, becomes fact, except that man isn't evolving from apes, he is *becoming* an ape. He is transferred into base animal, devoid of God's values, without the mind of Christ, but instead filled with instincts and ambitions of pride, lust, murder, and envy.

As Above, So Below

This, then, is the end-goal of Illuminism: To destroy earth, debase civilization, end pure spirituality, induce chaos on earth, and bring order according to Satan's Illuminati script. Earth is to be hell and hell on earth: *As Above, So Below.*

This is the meaning of the double-headed Eagle; the androgynous joining of man and woman; the mixing of the yin and yang; the checkerboard, black and white floors of the Masonic Lodges; the mirror images of the Rosicrucians; the sulphurous tale of Beauty and the Beast; the witches parable of the lovely lady vs. the crone on her broom; the Druid/Satanic/Catholic alternating of black and white priest vestments; the front and obverse (hidden) sides of the Great Seal of the United States; the reversing of the cross and the reading of the Lord's Prayer backwards in satanic worship, *ad naseum.*

All fields, all things, must be reversed. Negative must be transmuted into positive. Bad will be good. Black shall be white. The ugly shall be adjudged beautiful and the beautiful is to be spoiled, scarred, and made repugnant and revolting. God shall be debased and Satan exalted.

Illuminism, therefore, is a system of dualism (thesis and antithesis) which cyclically repeats as synthesis results. Then, the conflicting forces of the duality cycle clash again, with synthesis being achieved once more. Always the synthesis, the temporary solution or form, is unfrozen, the process of two competing forces re-ignited, and the cycle is continued.

Chaos begets order, but chaos ensues again, followed by order, and so on. The

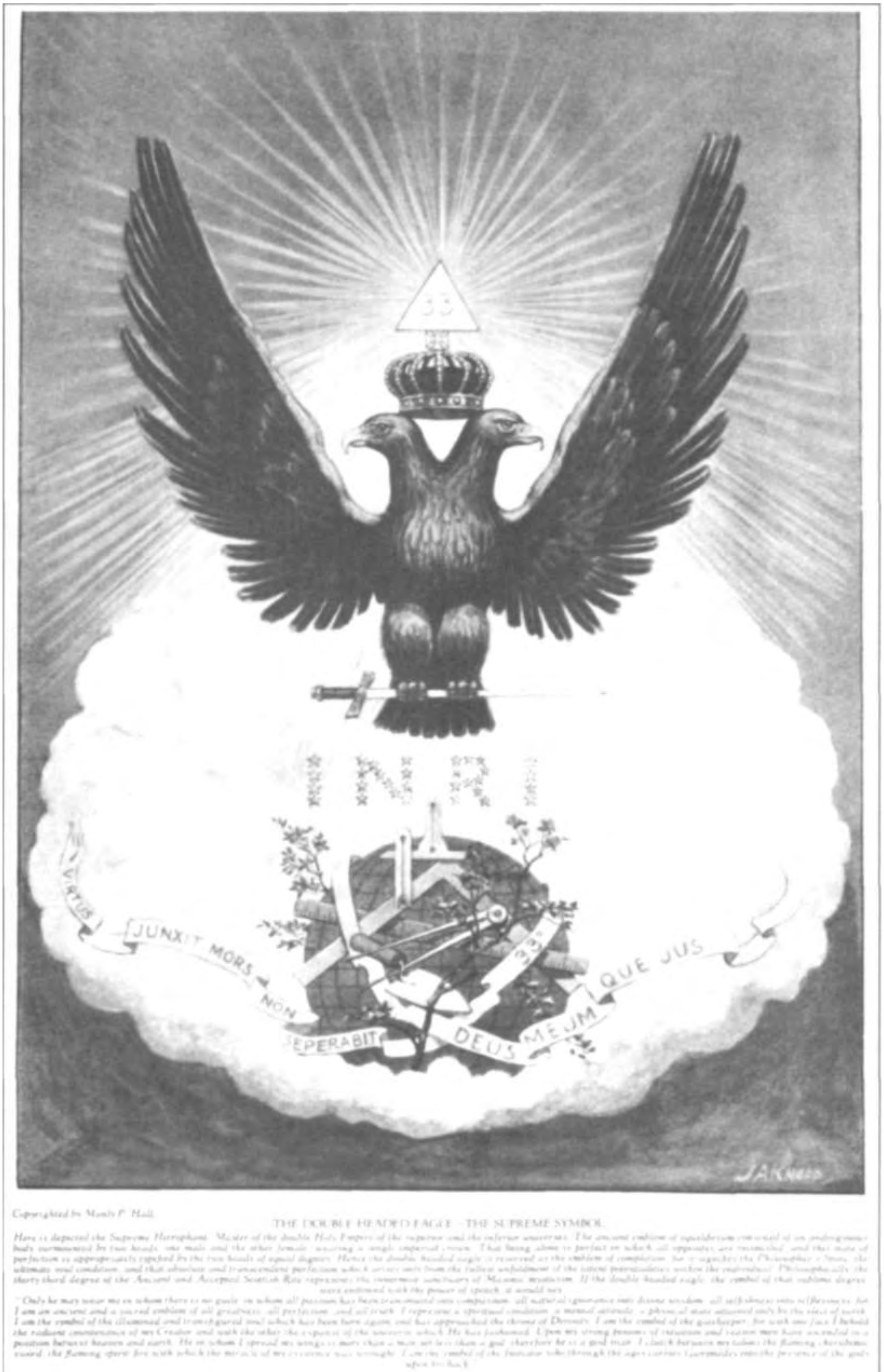
33
VIRTUS
JUNXIT MORS
NON
SEPERABIT
DEUS
MEUM
QUE JUS
33°
J.A.KNAPP

Copyrighted by Manly P. Hall

THE DOUBLE HEADED EAGLE — THE SUPREME SYMBOL

Manly P. Hall, 33°, the 20th Century's most revered Masonic scholar, titled this "The Double-Headed Eagle, The Supreme Symbol," in his classic book, The *Secret Teachings of All Ages.*

conflict of opposites leads finally to system equilibrium which is disturbed once again by renewed conflict, and a new, temporary stage of equilibrium is achieved. Ever upward, evolving until perfection. So, the Illuminist is a perfectionist ever changing, seeking more light as he travels down that yellow brick road to tomorrow. As Bill and Hillary Clinton's favorite song intoned, "Don't stop thinking about tomorrow."

"Everything must change," was the slogan of the Illuminists who sparked the French Revolution.[2]

The Illuminists ruling America give us two political parties, Democrat and Republican (thesis and antithesis), both of which they control. But the conflict of these two opposites never leads to a real solution, only to a fluid, sketchy, "synthesis." Problems are never completely and satisfactorily resolved. The dualistic process is never ending. We are all citizens of "Neverneverland," and we don't even know it.

The Third Side to Every Issue

Here's how one Illuminist philosopher, satanic priest Anton LaVey, explained it:

> There are not always 'two sides to every issue.' That statement is a ridiculous slogan invoked by vested interests...
>
> In matters of significant concern, there is invariably another alternative: a THIRD SIDE, a satanic side.
>
> 'Two sides of the same coin' is what most major issues are artfully constructed to be. Subsequently, the populace lives by imperceptible Hobson's choices masquerading as opposing opinions.
>
> The two uppermost points of the inverted pentagram of Satan represent the dualistic nature of all things, *as all things are naturally perceived.* Man has always been motivated and controlled by whatever dualistic concept is in fashion, and always will be. Like it or not, it's the way things really are. Shades of gray only appear between established opposites.[3]

The Rosicrucian Orders and the Masonic Lodge incessantly teach this duality of all things in their rituals and lectures. In the book, *The Rose Cross and the Goddess,* Masonic advocate, Gareth Knight, speaks of this *"dual polarity."* In Masonic symbolism, Knight observes, this duality is expressed by the square and compass.[4]

One of the highest degree rituals in Scottish Rite Freemasonry is that which honors the Emperors of the East and West. It is symbolized, among other things, by the Masonic double-headed eagle. Two heads, one body. Again: duality.

The Universal Serpent Force

Albert Pike, the former Sovereign Grand Commander whose writings are so honored and venerated that Pike's body has been entombed in the Scottish Rite's international headquarters, The House of the Temple, in Washington, DC, taught that out of the ongoing *universal motion* of the conflict of opposites, a potent and magical *force* could be created or energized, so powerful that "a single man, who could possess himself of it, and should know how to direct it, could revolutionize and change the face of the world." In *Morals and Dogma,* he emphasizes:

> This force was known to the ancients. It is a universal agent, whose Supreme law is equilibrium...it was adored in the secret rites of the Sabbat or the Temple under the hieroglyphic figure of Baphomet or the hermaphroditic goat of Mendes...
>
> There is a Life-Principle of the world, a universal agent, wherein are two natures and a double current...It is the body of the Holy Spirit, the Universal Agent, the Serpent devouring his own tail...Force attracts force...[5]

The Jewish cabalists speak in mysterious, guarded terms of this same potent *Force.* They say it is produced from the uniting of the two triangles, male and female, in the sex act, releasing the generative energy of creation. The result symbolized is, of course, the Jewish Star of David, known as the Seal, or symbol, of Solomon or simply as the Six-Pointed Star. The cabalists say this Star represents the combined energy of good and evil becoming one Force; it represents the "white Jehovah and the black Jehovah." It is the epitome of the "As Above, So Below" doctrine. As LaVey put it, it represents "THE THIRD WAY."

To the Illuminati, nothing is static, everything is deceit; the Force is dynamic, ever-changing, the quicksand of light that diffuses and reappears only to disappear again. Dark is Light and Light is Dark and no one can divine a difference. Satan is therefore God and God is Satan, and the Serpent chases its own tail. Forever.

The Invisible Light

This is all insanity, of course, but to the Illuminist it is Reason. Thus, Francis Adams Moore, in the Lucis Trust publication, *The Beacon,* wrote an article entitled *'"The Invisible Sun."* In it, Moore speaks of "The Ageless Wisdom":

> The Ageless Wisdom teaches that this darkness out of which visible Light came, is actually the pure Light —the Light that is so brilliant, radiant, and transcendent it appears as darkness to the form world.[6]

To Moore, what we perceive as darkness is actually invisible Light. In all creation, he says, light and darkness are mixed and "their equilibrium is the mystery of mysteries."[7]

Once again we see the Illuminists' insane doctrine of duality. The bisexual is preferred, bad is good, and so on. Duality and synthesis, and more duality and synthesis, in never-ending incarnations of confusing light and shadow cycles of unreality blended with reality.

No wonder the Holy Bible says, "A double-minded man is unstable in all his ways." *(James 1:8)*

Yin and Yang

The satanic, Illuminist doctrine of duality is seen in the concept of *yin and yang*. These are the two opposites, one light and one dark, yet complementary and co-dependent. The two influences are said to be constantly influencing one another. They represent alchemical polarities, or *dialectical* opposites. Witchcraft can appreciate the yin and the yang and the Illuminist doctrine of *"As Above, So Below."* Paul Huston, in *Mastering Witchcraft,* explains the witches' parallel concept of Gnostic duality:

> In the beginning the Great Darkness, Diana, divided herself into two equal and opposite forces, night and day. The night was ruled over by Diana herself as the moon, the day by her alter ego and brother, Lucifer, the Sun.[8]

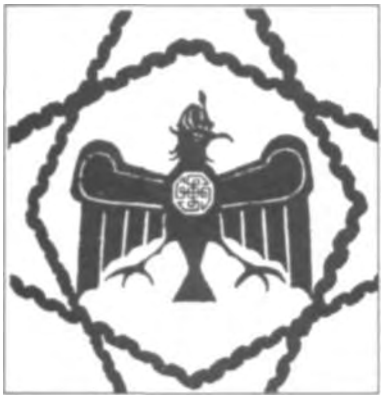

Detail from a Moslem coat-of-arms shows heraldic eagle bearing Sufi octagonal calligraphic motto on its breast. (From the book, *A History of Secret Societies,* by Arkon Daraul, Citadel Press, Secaucus, New Jersey, 1961)

The Eagle is the Sun

The Herder Dictionary of Symbols notes that the eagle has long been a symbol of power, endurance, and heavenward flight. It also symbolizes the sun (and the sun god) and spiritual majesty. *Coil's Masonic Encyclopedia* says that, "to the pagans, the eagle was an emblem of Jupiter, and with the Druids it was a symbol of their supreme god."

The eagle appears in the insignia of many nations, including ancient Rome, Nazi and modern-day Germany, Czarist Russia, and the United States of America. The Rothschilds adopted the double-headed eagle as the logo of the Rothschild Family Dynasty. The eagle is also represented in the Great Seal of the U.S.A. and it is revered as a holy sign by Sufi Moslems.

The Oval Office and The Eagle in the Great Seal

In *Tlxe Wall Street Journal,* former presidential speechwriter and now political commentator Peggy Noonan reported on an interview she had with President George W. Bush in the White House.[9] As she sat before him, a friendly Chief Executive Bush brought up the topic of the eagle symbol so prominently displayed in the Oval Office.

> The President noted the carved American eagle on the front of his antique desk, the one used by Ronald Reagan, John F. Kennedy, and Bill Clinton. The head of the eagle, he notes, is turned toward the arrows it holds in its talon. But look here, he says, at the American eagle in the presidential seal on the rug: The head is turned away and toward the olive branches he holds in his other talon. "Harry Truman changed it," he says. "He wanted America looking toward peace."[10]

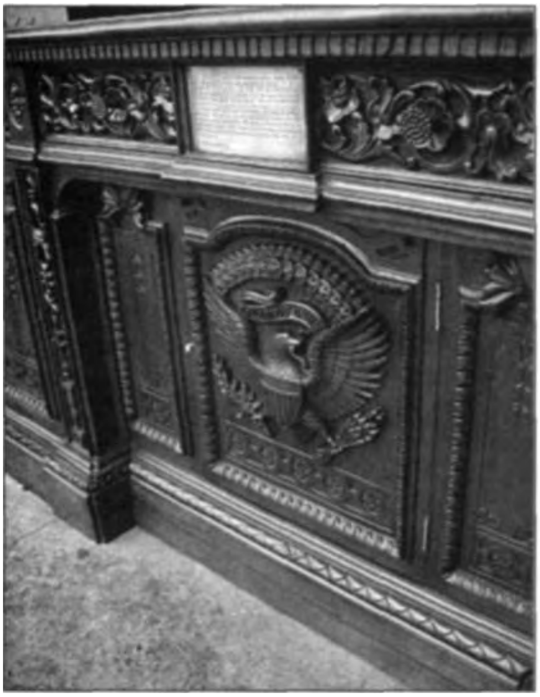

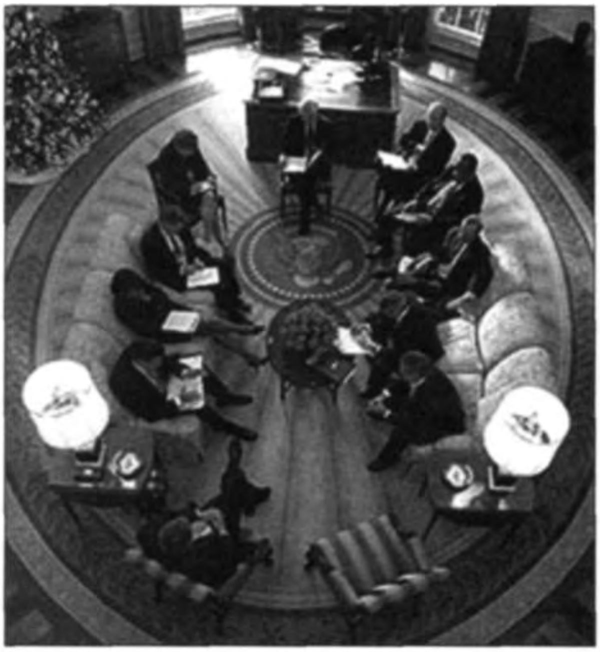

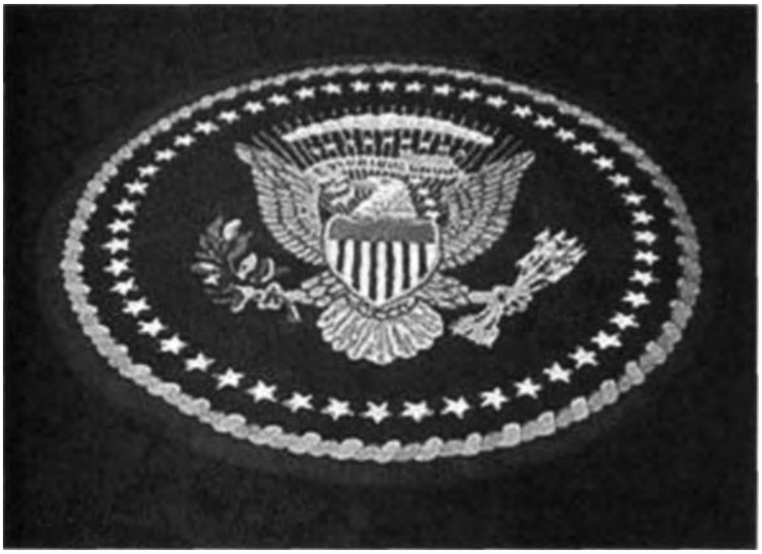

These three pictures reveal a mystery. Top left is the President's classic oak desk in the Oval Office. This desk has been in place in the White House since 1887 when it was given as a gift to President Rutherford B. Hayes by Great Britain's Queen Victoria. The middle panel of the desk, bearing the presidential seal with the eagle facing to the right, was added by President Franklin D. Roosevelt to hide his use of a wheelchair. Roosevelt was a 32° Mason. Bottom left is the presidential seal woven into the Oval Office's carpet, displayed in front of the desk. This is the same presidential seal as is *on* the desk, except that here the eagle is facing the opposite direction—to the left. Then finally, above right, we see President George W. Bush and aides holding a conference in the Oval Office. Bush's carpet is a different, lighter color than that of the Clinton era, but the presidential seal of the carpet, or rug, continues to show the eagle facing to the left, while the desk has the bird facing to the right. In combination, this reflects the classic, double-headed (left-right) eagle of 33° Freemasonry. Notice also that, in Bush's carpet are added a number of brilliant, radiant sun rays arching out from the seal, indicating the "Illumination" of the Presidency of the United States. Moreover, at the Bush conference, the positioning of furniture and accessories (chairs/tables) provides the classic Masonic Lodge ritual arrangement, plus we have overall the Mason square and compass within a circle design. The red roses in the middle are also symbolic in that they represent the feminine aspect (vagina) while the eagle represents the masculine aspect (phallus).

Interesting stuff by Peggy Noonan. We must remember that President Truman was a 33rd degree Mason. "Peace" to a Mason means something entirely different than the same word means to you and me. In fact, to a Mason, peace is defined according to the Hegelian dialectical process of doublemindedness. Thus, the Hegelian motto: "Perpetual war for perpetual peace." What Ms. Noonan also failed to realize is that in turning the two heads of the eagle — one carved on the desk, the other on the rug—in opposite directions, the Illuminati is reproducing, or mimicking, the symbol of the double-headed eagle in Freemasonry.

A Ravenous Bird From the East

To the Illuminati, the eagle is a symbol of overriding importance and, in its double-headed form, the eagle represents the Illuminati's principal Luciferian doctrine of *As Above, So Below.* It also represents the *Great Work of the Initiation of the World.*

How prophetic, then, is the Bible verse found in *Isaiah 46:11* which reveals that in the last days, a "ravenous bird from the East" shall be called forth by God to wreak havoc and destruction on rebellious mankind and the fallen world.

So when you see the duality principle *("As Above, So Below")* represented in the photos and illustrations in this section, remember: You're observing the great secret in operation, the perennial teaching of the Hidden God, the God of the Mysteries, the God who it is said possesses the key to the invisible world (hell), the God of the Arch, the God of cunning, lies and deceit, the two-faced Deity, the Masonic double-headed eagle. *In other words, bluntly stated, you are viewing Satan in disguise.*

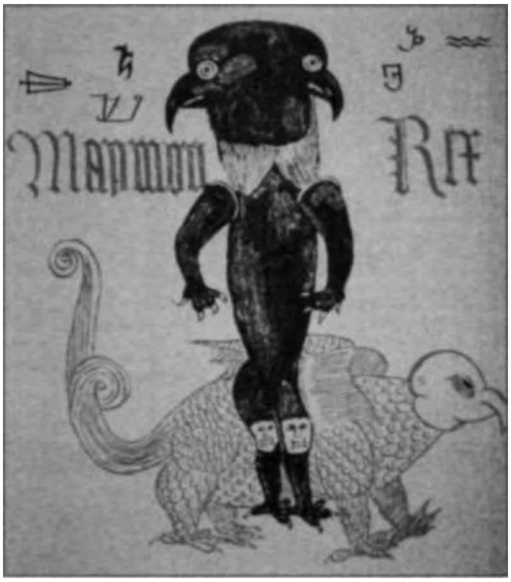

Among hard-core occultists deep into Babylonian and Egyptian lore and magic we find the worship of the two-headed Mammon Ra, the God of Prosperity and Riches. Mammon Ra is actually a powerful demon, one of the four great princes of hell. He is especially worshipped with great pomp by Jewish cabalists hungry and greedy for wealth and affluence.

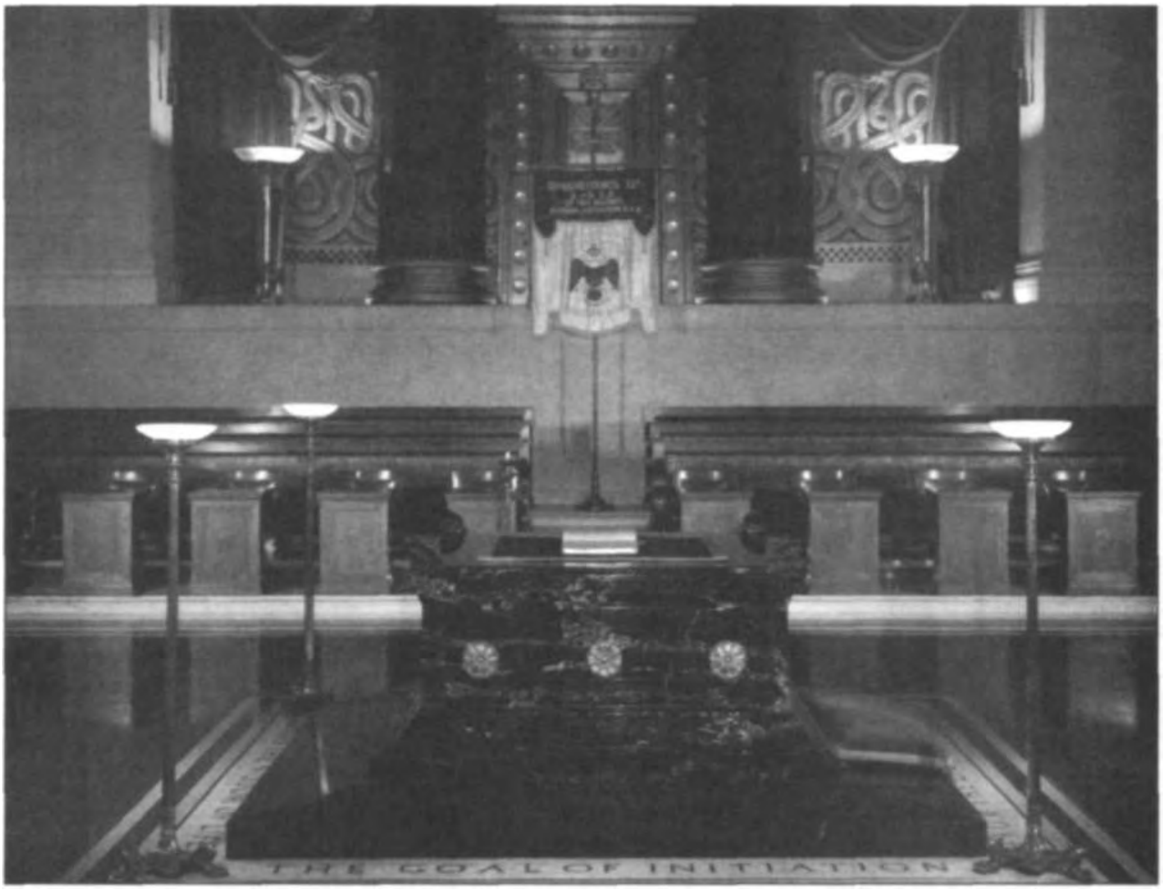

Two golden phoenix serpents face each other inside the Temple Room of the Scottish Rite headquarters, The House of The Temple, in Washington, D.C. located exactly 13 blocks from the White House. While the focal point is the black stone altar with its three sun medallions, the two serpents provide the most grotesque sight. On the rug we read, "The Goal of Initiation," and, indeed, it is reportedly before this imposing black stone altar that the candidate for the 33rd degree kneels and drinks wine from a human skull.

The medical profession uses the winged caduceus, symbol of Mercury, the ancient god of commerce, as a universal sign, or logo. Medical doctors even take the Hippocratic Oath, vowing obeisance to Asclepius, the Greek god of healing. The caduceus design is of two serpents intertwined around a staff, or pole, facing each other. Again, this is evidence of Illuminist doctrine of the integration of opposites. The two serpents are the same as the emblem of Freemasonry-the double-headed eagle.

Below is an illustration of the Grand Hailing Sign of Distress, learned by initiates of the Order of Knights Templar. (*Richardson's Monitor of Freemasonry.*)

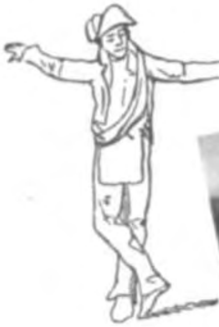

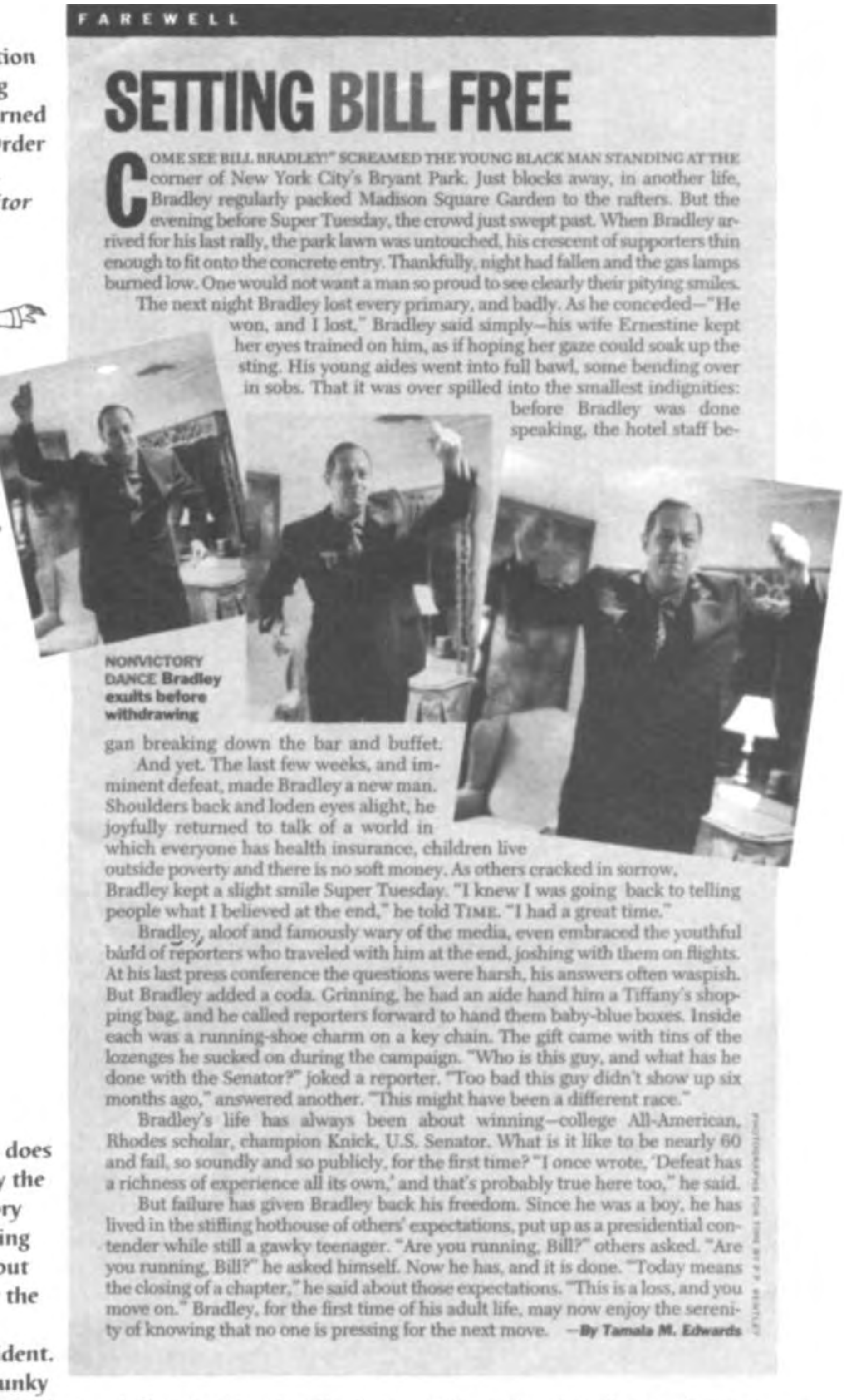

FAREWELL

SETTING BILL FREE

COME SEE BILL BRADLEY!" SCREAMED THE YOUNG BLACK MAN STANDING AT THE corner of New York City's Bryant Park. Just blocks away, in another life, Bradley regularly packed Madison Square Garden to the rafters. But the evening before Super Tuesday, the crowd just swept past. When Bradley arrived for his last rally, the park lawn was untouched, his crescent of supporters thin enough to fit onto the concrete entry. Thankfully, night had fallen and the gas lamps burned low. One would not want a man so proud to see clearly their pitying smiles.

The next night Bradley lost every primary, and badly. As he conceded—"He won, and I lost," Bradley said simply—his wife Ernestine kept her eyes trained on him, as if hoping her gaze could soak up the sting. His young aides went into full bawl, some bending over in sobs. That it was over spilled into the smallest indignities: before Bradley was done speaking, the hotel staff began breaking down the bar and buffet.

NONVICTORY DANCE Bradley exults before withdrawing

And yet. The last few weeks, and imminent defeat, made Bradley a new man. Shoulders back and loden eyes alight, he joyfully returned to talk of a world in which everyone has health insurance, children live outside poverty and there is no soft money. As others cracked in sorrow, Bradley kept a slight smile Super Tuesday. "I knew I was going back to telling people what I believed at the end," he told TIME. "I had a great time."

Bradley, aloof and famously wary of the media, even embraced the youthful band of reporters who traveled with him at the end, joshing with them on flights. At his last press conference the questions were harsh, his answers often waspish. But Bradley added a coda. Grinning, he had an aide hand him a Tiffany's shopping bag, and he called reporters forward to hand them baby-blue boxes. Inside each was a running-shoe charm on a key chain. The gift came with tins of the lozenges he sucked on during the campaign. "Who is this guy, and what has he done with the Senator?" joked a reporter. "Too bad this guy didn't show up six months ago," answered another. "This might have been a different race."

Bradley's life has always been about winning—college All-American, Rhodes scholar, champion Knick, U.S. Senator. What is it like to be nearly 60 and fail, so soundly and so publicly, for the first time? "I once wrote, 'Defeat has a richness of experience all its own,' and that's probably true here too," he said.

But failure has given Bradley back his freedom. Since he was a boy, he has lived in the stifling hothouse of others' expectations, put up as a presidential contender while still a gawky teenager. "Are you running, Bill?" others asked. "Are you running, Bill?" he asked himself. Now he has, and it is done. "Today means the closing of a chapter," he said about those expectations. "This is a loss, and you move on." Bradley, for the first time of his adult life, may now enjoy the serenity of knowing that no one is pressing for the next move. —**By Tamala M. Edwards**

PHOTOGRAPHS FOR TIME BY P.F. BENTLEY

Senator Bill Bradley does what is described by the press as a "nonvictory dance" after conceding defeat and bowing out of the 2000 race for the Democratic Party's nomination as President. In fact, Illuminati flunky Bradley was never intended to defeat the Illuminati's choice, Al Gore. But the elite needed *someone* to be the designated opponent and lose. That's all part of the Hegelian game of dialectics: controlled opposition. So, Bill Bradley did his duty, ran, and—predictably—lost. His so-called "nonvictory dance" is, in reality, his acknowledgement of the hidden influence of *"as above, so below"* (see *Richardson's Monitor of Freemasonry, pp. 91, 93, 121*). Bradley's underlying message to his Illuminist superiors: *"I am in distress because of my loss, but I did it all for you!"* (Photo: *Time* magazine, March 20, 2000)

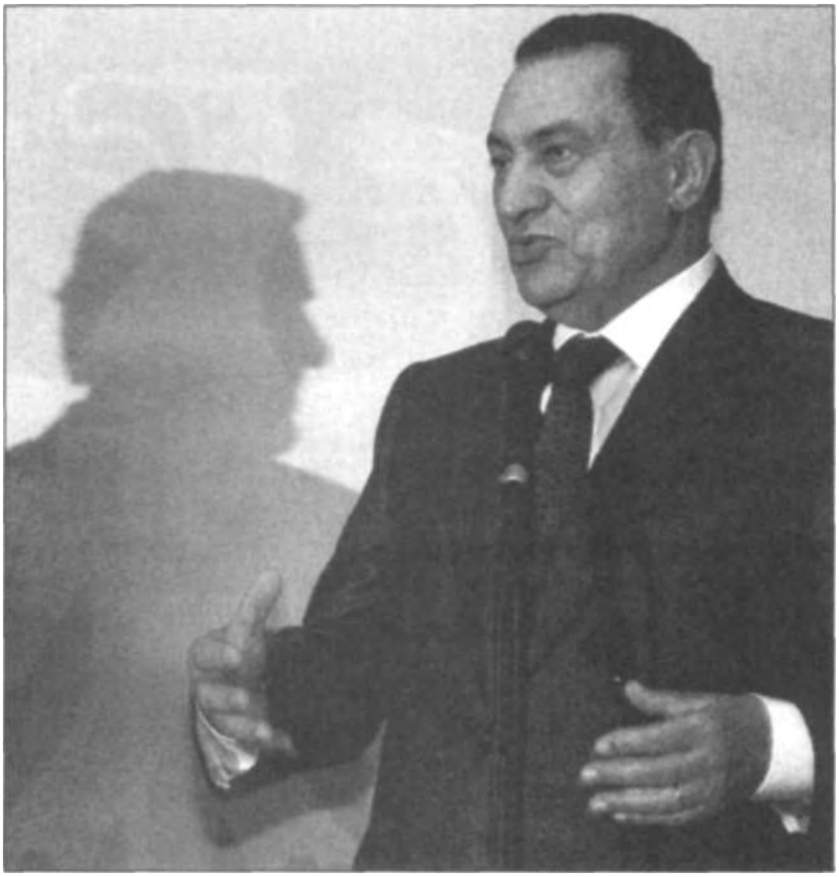

The shadow figure in the background of this photo of Egyptian President Hosni Mubarak faces the opposite direction. Appropriate considering the Masonic principle of the combining, *or* synthesis of opposites. (Photo: *U.S. New & World Report,* March 14, 2005, P. 30)

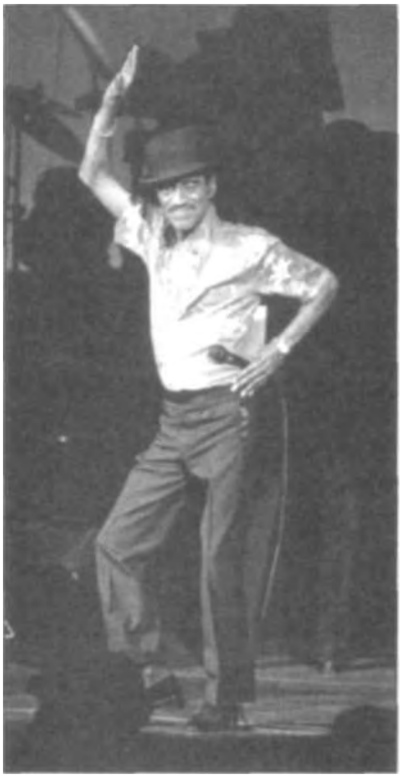

Sammy Davis, Jr., popular singer and entertainer, integrated the Illuminist sign, *"As Above, So Below,"* into his dance performance. In his autobiography, *"Yes, I Can,"* Davis confessed to being a past member of High Priest Anton LaVey's Church of Satan. In his performances, Davis often wore a satanic pentagram necklace. He also painted the fingernail black as a sign of his devotion to his master, the devil. One of Sammy Davis, Jr.'s most popular songs, *The Candy Man,* reportedly was secredy in praise of Satan, the Candy Man who brings his disciples gifts, such as illegal drugs like heroin and cocaine, and sexual favors.

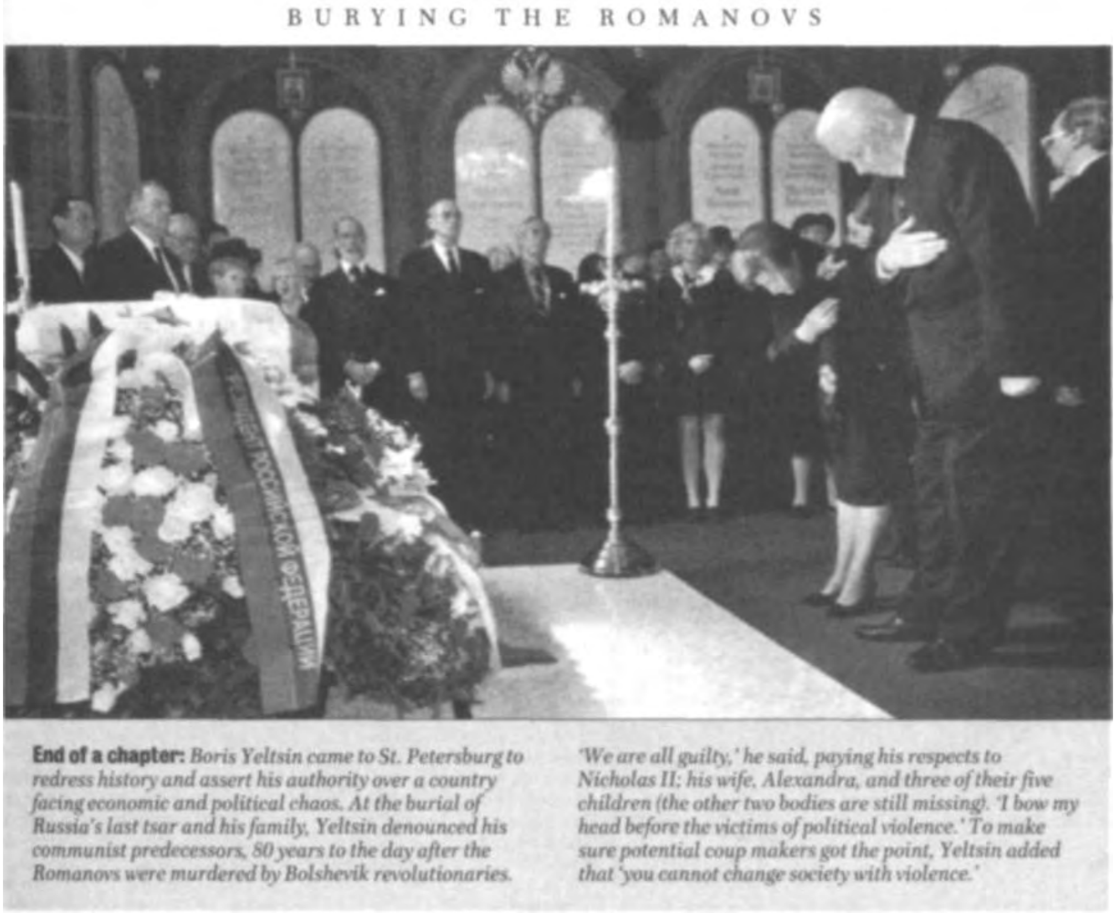

BURYING THE ROMANOVS

End of a chapter: *Boris Yeltsin came to St. Petersburg to redress history and assert his authority over a country facing economic and political chaos. At the burial of Russia's last tsar and his family, Yeltsin denounced his communist predecessors, 80 years to the day after the Romanovs were murdered by Bolshevik revolutionaries. 'We are all guilty,' he said, paying his respects to Nicholas II; his wife, Alexandra, and three of their five children (the other two bodies are still missing). 'I bow my head before the victims of political violence.' To make sure potential coup makers got the point, Yeltsin added that 'you cannot change society with violence.'*

This article in *Newsweek* (July 27, 1998, p. 31) speaks for itself. Under orders from Bolshevik Communist butcher Vladimir Lenin, the Russian Oar and his entire family were slaughtered. In the center of this photo, above the windows you will see the golden, double-headed eagle.

Antique Jewish prayer book showing the double-headed eagle with a crown, representing the coming King of the Illuminati, who will use "Craft" (cabalistic magic) to hoodwink and enslave the Gentile masses. (Photo from *The Jewish Encyclopedia*)

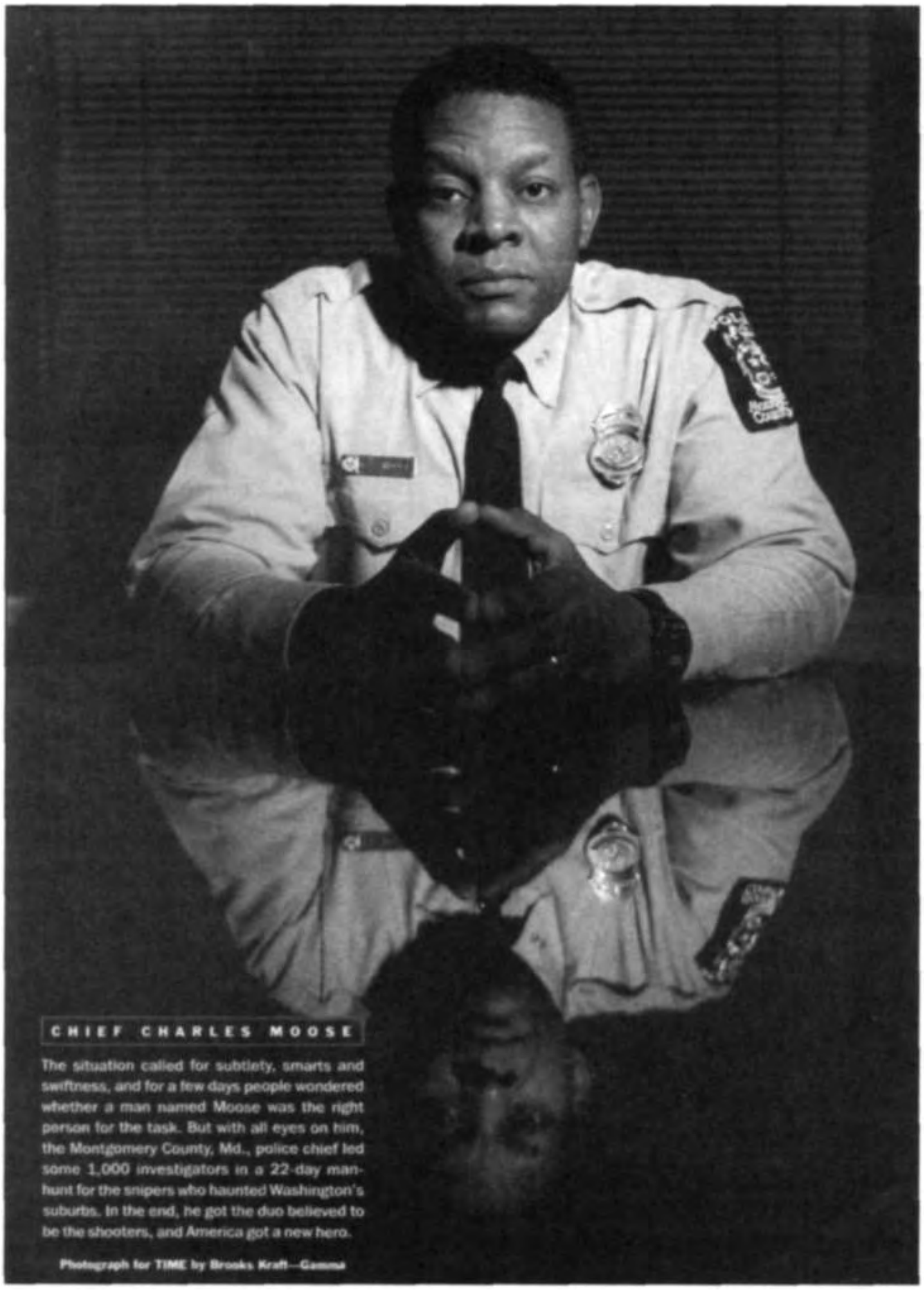

CHIEF CHARLES MOOSE

The situation called for subtlety, smarts and swiftness, and for a few days people wondered whether a man named Moose was the right person for the task. But with all eyes on him, the Montgomery County, Md., police chief led some 1,000 investigators in a 22-day manhunt for the snipers who haunted Washington's suburbs. In the end, he got the duo believed to be the shooters, and America got a new hero.

Photograph for TIME by Brooks Kraft—Gamma

Mirror Image: **In *2002,* two snipers terrified Washington, D.C. suburbs with deadly and accurate shooting of innocent citizens. Police Chief Charles Moose, of Montgomery County, Maryland, led some 1,000 investigators in a 22-day manhunt. The press and media made Chief Moose into a celebrity and hero, though clearly his police skills were not just inadequate, they had proven to be vastly incompetent and bungling. Moose turns out to be a puppet of the Jewish ADL and a "Chosen One" of the Illuminati. This photo in *Time* (January 6, 2001) unmasks Chief Moose as a stooge of the elite. It illustrates perfectly the Satanic doctrine, *"As Above, So Below."* We see Chief Moose, a black man, shrouded in darkness, his hands giving a Masonic symbol (explained elsewhere in *Codex Magica).* They rest on a mirror surface in which the shadow image of the Chief is seen. Viewed either as is or upside down, we observe the secret sign of the diamond (two triangles abutted together), indicating the portal of hell, high sign of the conspiracy. It doesn't get much more revealing than this. Yet, it is doubtful that even a fraction of the readers of *Time* who saw this photo had any idea of its esoteric nature.**

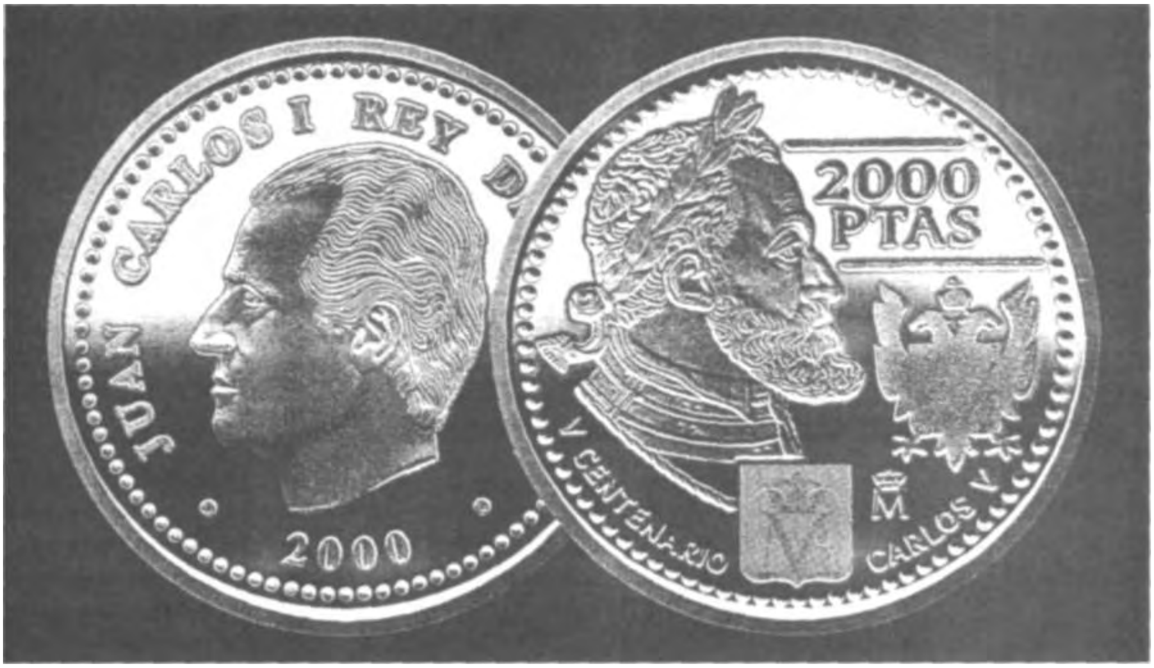

In this advertisement in Spain's *Hola* magazine (April 13, 2000), a coin bearing the image of King Juan Carlos was offered. Juan Carlos is heir to the Bourbon Dynasty. One of his titles is "King of Jerusalem." The emblem of the double-headed eagle is on the reverse side of the coin.

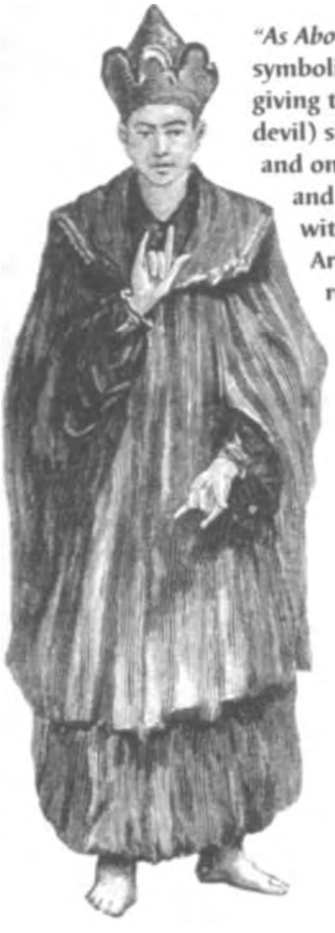

"As Above, So Below," is symbolized by this prelate's giving the "Il Cornuto" (horned devil) sign, one hand pointing up and one down. Message: Lucifer and Christ shall be reconciled, with the Masonic Great Architect of the Universe reigning in heaven, on earth, and in hell.

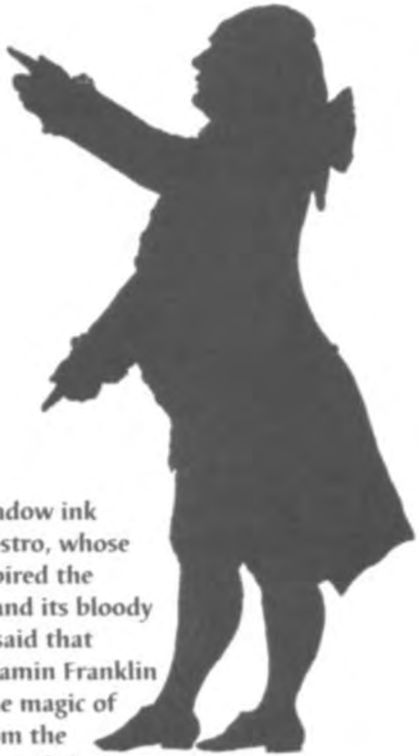

As Above, So Below: A shadow ink drawing of Count Cagliostro, whose magic and satanism inspired the Order of the Illuminati and its bloody French Revolution. It is said that American diplomat Benjamin Franklin studied and practiced the magic of Cagliostro. (Drawing from the book, *Witchcraft, Magic, and the Supernatural*, p. 88)

ΟΙ ΑΔΙΣΤΑΚΤΟΙ ΜΕΤΑΡΡΥΘΜΙΣΤΑΙ ΟΙ ΟΠΟΙΟΙ
ΠΡΟΕΒΗΣΑΝ ΕΙΣ ΤΗΝ ΑΛΛΑΓΗΝ ΤΟΥ ΕΟΡΤΟΛΟΓΙΟΥ
ΚΑΙ ΑΠΕΣΧΙΣΘΗΣΑΝ ΑΠΟ ΤΗΝ ΕΚΚΛΗΣΙΑΝ
ΤΟΥ ΧΡΙΣΤΟΥ «ΠΑΤΡΙΑΡΧΗΣ» ΜΕΛΕΤΙΟΣ ΜΕΤΑΞΑΚΗΣ
ΚΑΙ ΑΡΧΙΕΠΙΣΚΟΠΟΣ «ΑΘΗΝΩΝ» ΧΡΥΣΟΣΤΟΜΟΣ ΠΑΠΑΔΟΠΟΥΛΟ

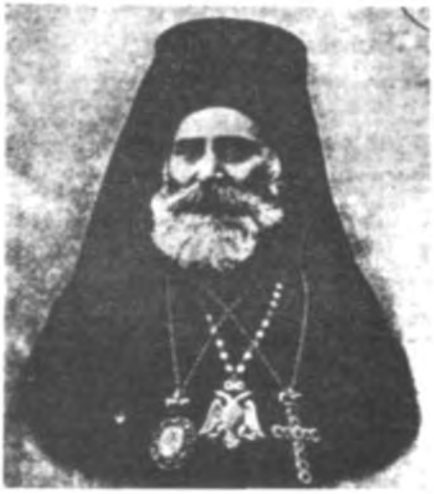

One of the clergy leaders of the Orthodox Church in Greece wears a pendent of the crowned double-headed eagle as a talisman around his neck. The cross, meanwhile, is relegated to the left side of the satanic talisman.

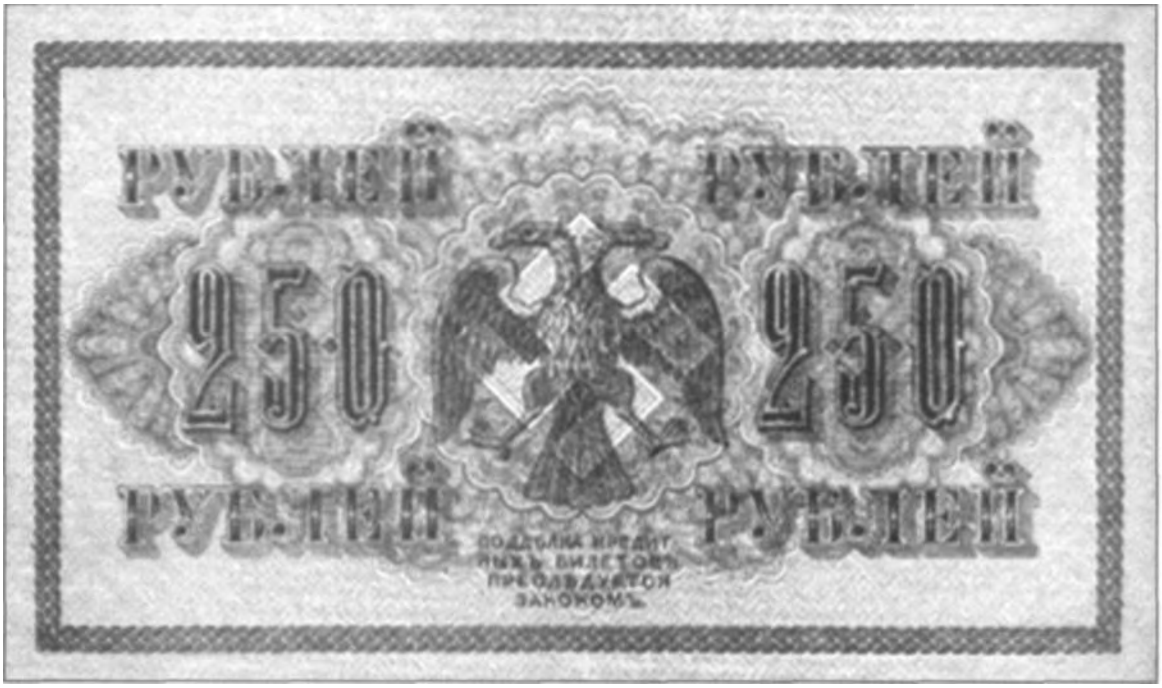

In 1917, after the dynasty of Czar Nicholas II fell, the Moscow government of Freemason Alexander Kerensky issued new currency, including this 250 ruble banknote. At its center is the double-headed eagle superimposed on the swastika (sun deity). The swastika is arranged as a diamond. Soon afterwards, the government of Kerensky gave way to the Bolshevik coup of Lenin and Trotsky. Kerensky fled to Paris, France, where he joined the Grand Orient Lodge. Lenin and Trotsky, also Masons and satanists, decided these symbols on the ruble banknotes were far too obvious and feared that the Russian people would discover the Jewish Masonic roots of the Revolution. Therefore, they ordered the removal of the symbols and created as a replacement for them the familiar hammer and sickle emblems as the U.S.S.R.'s official seal.

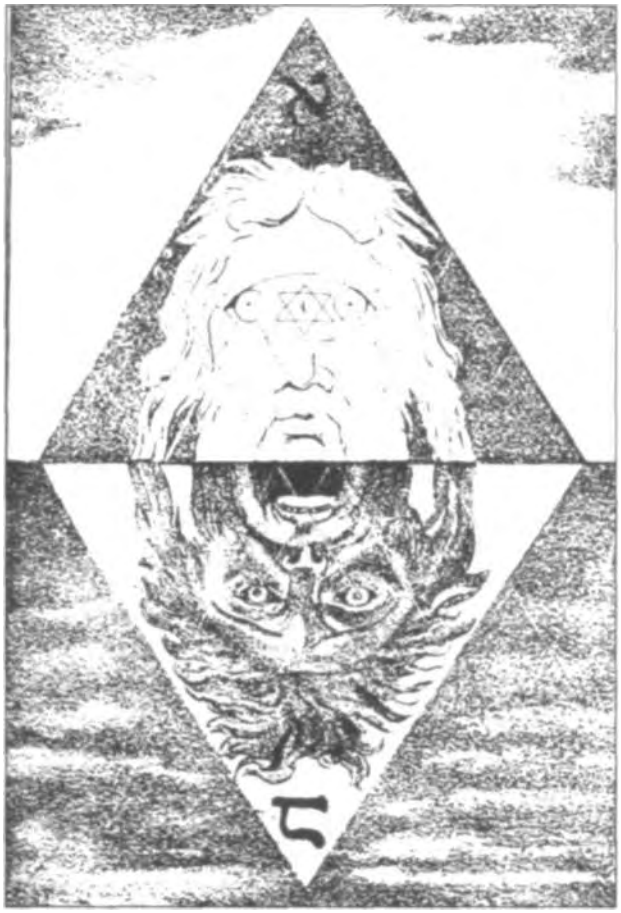

The Magical Head of Zohar is a cabalistic design illustrating the concept of opposites, the principle of "As Above, So Below." It is widely used by cabalists and Jewish rabbis as an instructional device.

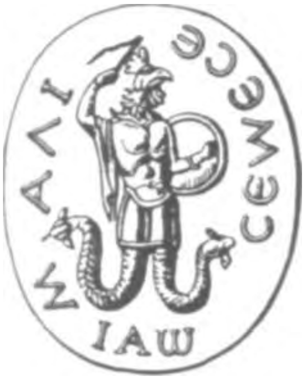

Abraxas, the gnostic rooster god, symbolic of the Sun God. Notice the two serpent legs, indicating the satanic doctrine of duality.

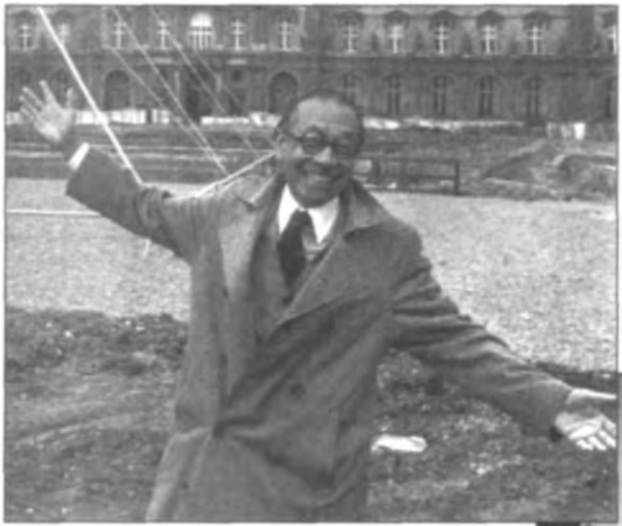

Famed architect I.M. Pei giving the "As Above, So Below" sign. Pei was commissioned by France's government, led by Masonic President Francois Mitterrand, to design an Egyptian-style pyramid structure adjacent to the Louvre, perhaps the world's best known museum. Pei's pyramid acts as the entrance to the Louvre. It is reportedly made up of exactly 666 panes of crystal glass.

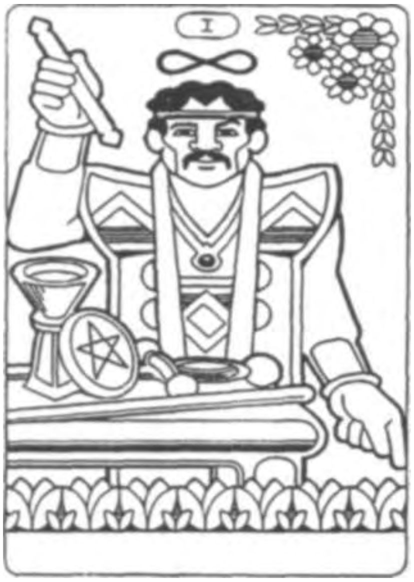

In tarot card decks, one of the cards depicts "The Magician" (also called the Magus or the Juggler), a young man holding up a wand in his right hand, and pointing to the earth with his left. On a table before him are the four elemental symbols, and above his head is the sign of eternity or infinity. He is the Magus, the god-like human being integrated on all planes, the will liberated through gnosis, or knowledge. His gesture refers to the basic occult principle "That which is above is as that which is below."

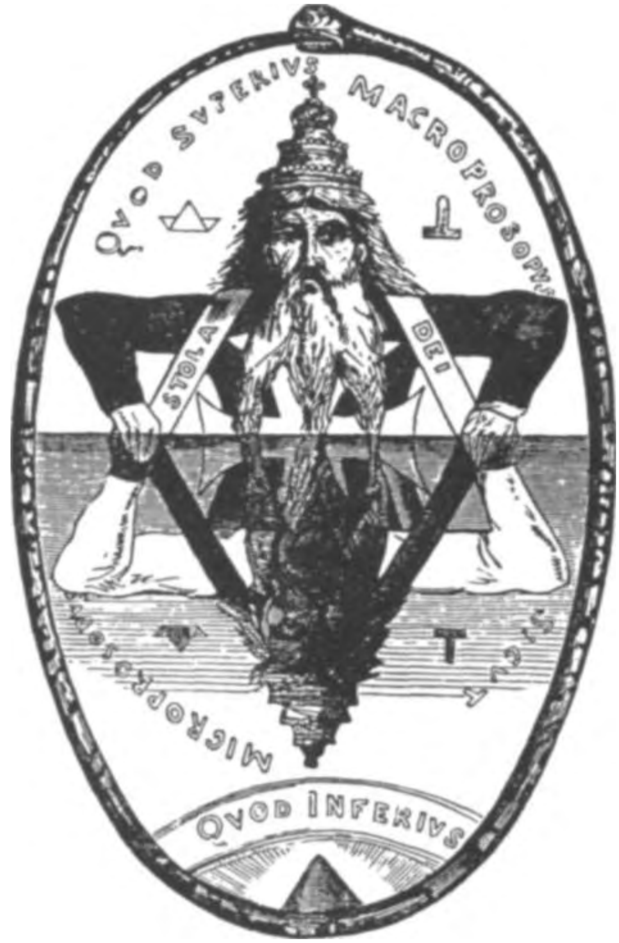

This design illustrates the ultimate blasphemy for its message is that Satan is deity of the universe, that he shall be King over all realms, above and below, and that the reign of he, the serpent, shall stand for all eternity. The Scottish Rite textbook, *A Bridge to light,* by Rex Hutchens, 33rd degree, outlines the knowledge and symbols used for the various degrees of Freemasonry. In this book, Hutchens restates the principles of Albert Pike's 19th century classic, *Morals and Dogma.* According to these principles, the oroboros serpent shown in this design (Levi's occult magic of "As Above, So Below") represents eternity and the Holy Spirit of the triune godhead. In other words, the Illuminists are declaring that the serpent, identified in the scriptures as the devil, is, in their religion, the divine Holy Spirit! A blasphemous concept, indeed.

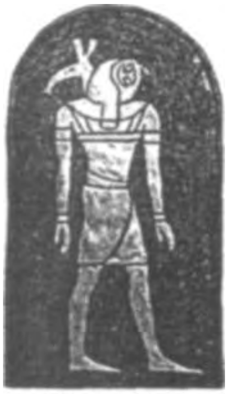
Horus-Set

A company called Azure Green puts out a catalog offering "Egyptian Deity Wall Plaques," including this one, a depiction of the combined gods of Egypt, Horns and Set. Two entities represented by one body. Once again, we discover the principle of integration, or synthesis. Horns is the son of the Sun God and is said to be one with his Father, Osiris. The god Set is the dialectical opposite, or mirror of Horns and Osiris, but rather than the Sun and its light, he represents the darkness of the underworld. Set is god of the dead, Horus-Osiris, god of the living.

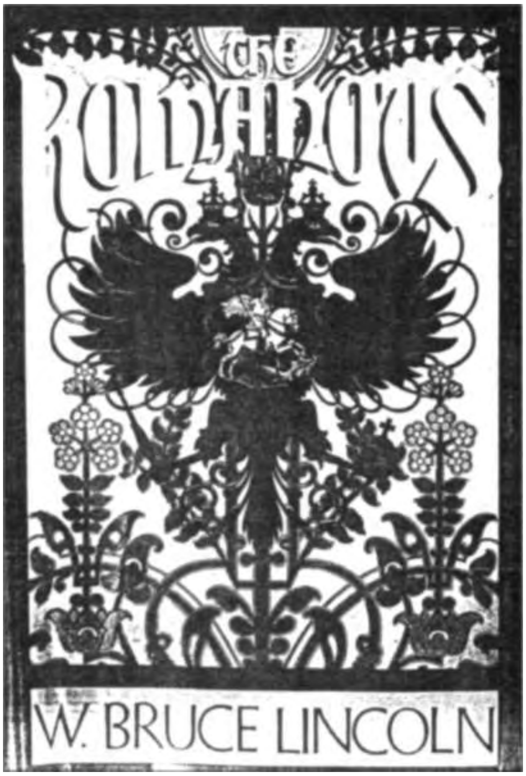

This cover of a book by W. Bruce Lincoln about Russia's czars, the Romanov Dynasty, pictures the dynasty's fascinating symbol, the double-headed phoenix serpent. Eye-opening is the crowned victorious hero figure with a cape, carrying a lance, riding a white horse found within the "heart" of the double-headed black bird. The symbolical meaning of this image is overwhelming, to say the least, in terms of Bible prophecy.

The idolatrous image of the double-headed eagle—shown here on the cover of Albert Pike's classic text, *Morals and Dogma—is* a much-treasured symbol of Jewish Masons. It represents the Babylonian god of money and forces, Mammon-Ra, as well as the Hegelian dialectical process practiced by the Jewish elite. This same symbol is the "Masonic Jewel" awarded high level Masons initiated into the 33rd degree.

33
ORDO AB CHAO
DEUS MEUMQUE JUS

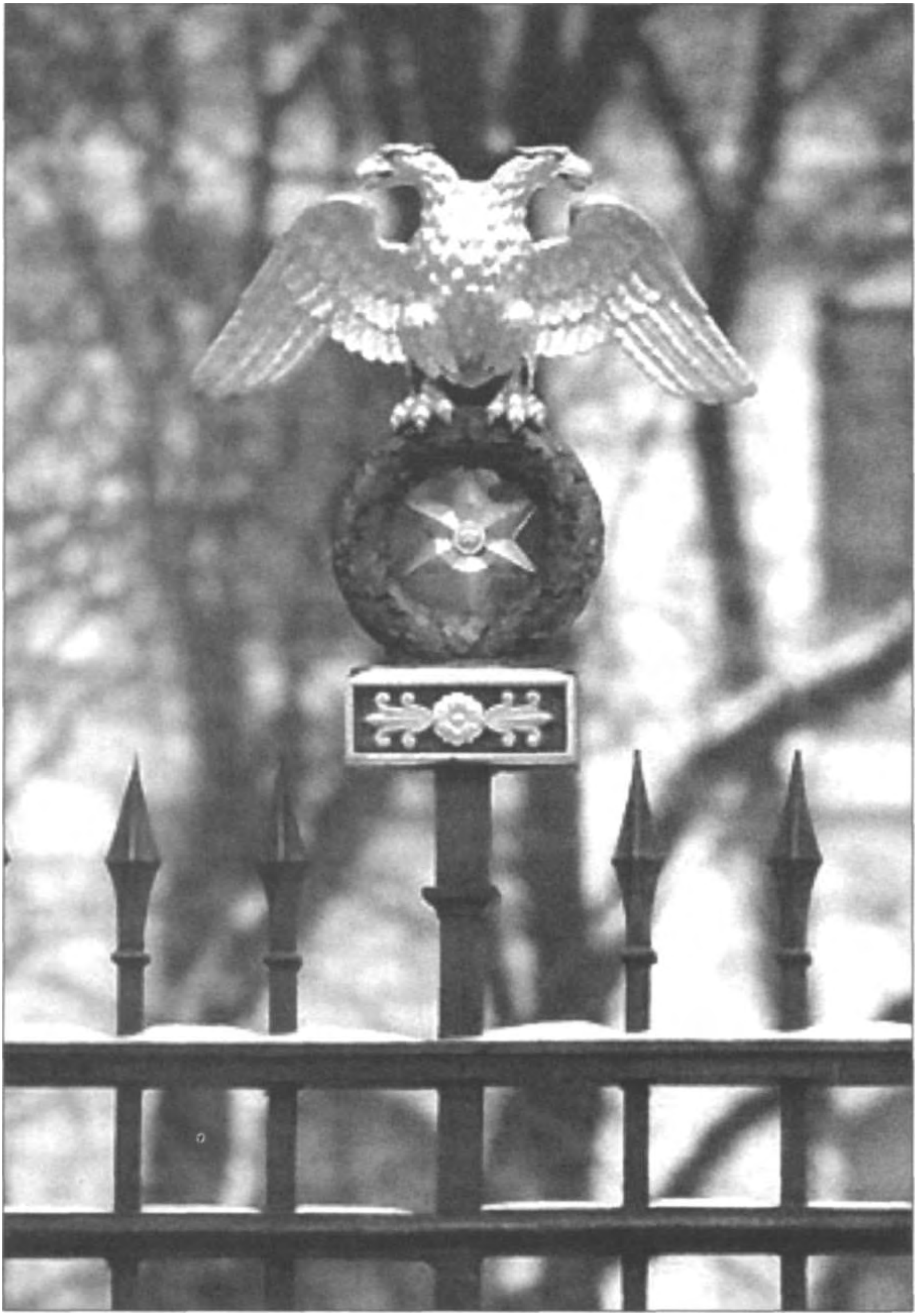

A friend of the author sent him this photograph he took while visiting Russia recently. It is the fence and gate outside a sprawling and luxurious old mansion estate.

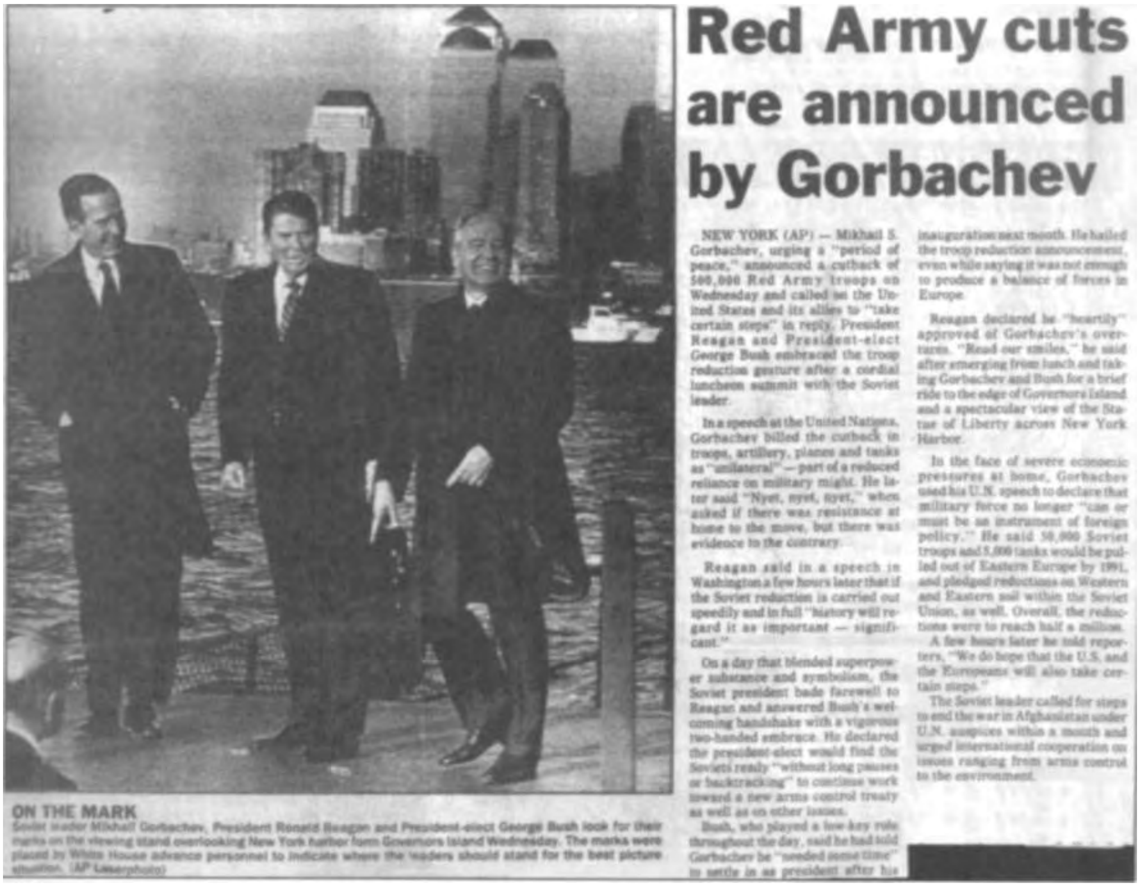

Red Army cuts are announced by Gorbachev

NEW YORK (AP) — Mikhail S. Gorbachev, urging a "period of peace," announced a cutback of 500,000 Red Army troops on Wednesday and called on the United States and its allies to "take certain steps" in reply. President Reagan and President-elect George Bush embraced the troop reduction gesture after a cordial luncheon summit with the Soviet leader.

In a speech at the United Nations, Gorbachev billed the cutback in troops, artillery, planes and tanks as "unilateral" — part of a reduced reliance on military might. He later said "Nyet, nyet, nyet," when asked if there was resistance at home to the move, but there was evidence to the contrary.

Reagan said in a speech in Washington a few hours later that if the Soviet reduction is carried out speedily and in full "history will regard it as important — significant."

On a day that blended superpower substance and symbolism, the Soviet president bade farewell to Reagan and answered Bush's welcoming handshake with a vigorous two-handed embrace. He declared the president-elect would find the Soviets ready "without long pauses or backtracking" to continue work toward a new arms control treaty as well as on other issues.

Bush, who played a low-key role throughout the day, said he had told Gorbachev he "needed some time" to settle in as president after his inauguration next month. He hailed the troop reduction announcement, even while saying it was not enough to produce a balance of forces in Europe.

Reagan declared he "heartily" approved of Gorbachev's overtures. "Read our smiles," he said after emerging from lunch and taking Gorbachev and Bush for a brief ride to the edge of Governors Island and a spectacular view of the Statue of Liberty across New York Harbor.

In the face of severe economic pressures at home, Gorbachev used his U.N. speech to declare that military force no longer "can or must be an instrument of foreign policy." He said 50,000 Soviet troops and 5,000 tanks would be pulled out of Eastern Europe by 1991, and pledged reductions on Western and Eastern soil within the Soviet Union, as well. Overall, the reductions were to reach half a million.

A few hours later he told reporters, "We do hope that the U.S. and the Europeans will also take certain steps."

The Soviet leader called for steps to end the war in Afghanistan under U.N. auspices within a month and urged international cooperation on issues ranging from arms control to the environment.

ON THE MARK
Soviet leader Mikhail Gorbachev, President Ronald Reagan and President-elect George Bush look for their marks on the viewing stand overlooking New York harbor form Governors Island Wednesday. The marks were placed by White House advance personnel to indicate where the leaders should stand for the best picture situation. (AP Laserphoto)

For Comrade Mikhail Gorbachev, there is only one deity that should be recognized-the god below, in the abyss. Here we see Gorby smiling broadly while finding his "mark" for a history photo made with Bush and Reagan overlooking the New York City harbor. Gorby seems to merely be clowning around, but his membership in the Grand Orient Lodge in Paris, France and his favorable status by the Illuminati's Inner Circle inform us otherwise. His hands tell a story understood by the wise. (Photo and article, December 8, 1988)

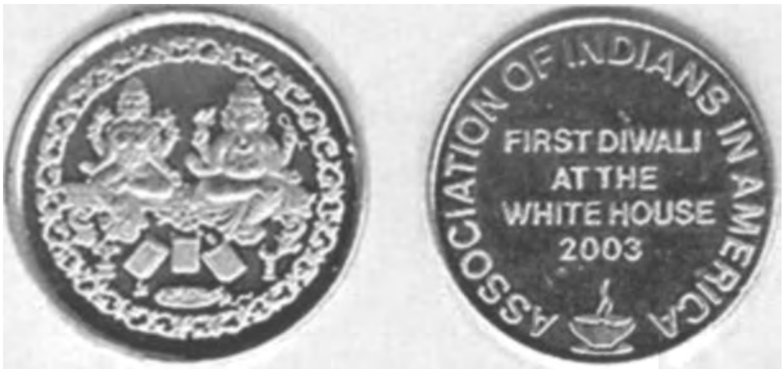

Commemorative Silver Coin bearing images of Lord Ganesha and Goddess Laksmi struck in honor of the historic occasion of the first Hindu Diwali ritual ever conducted in the White House. It happened under President George W. Bush, in 2003.

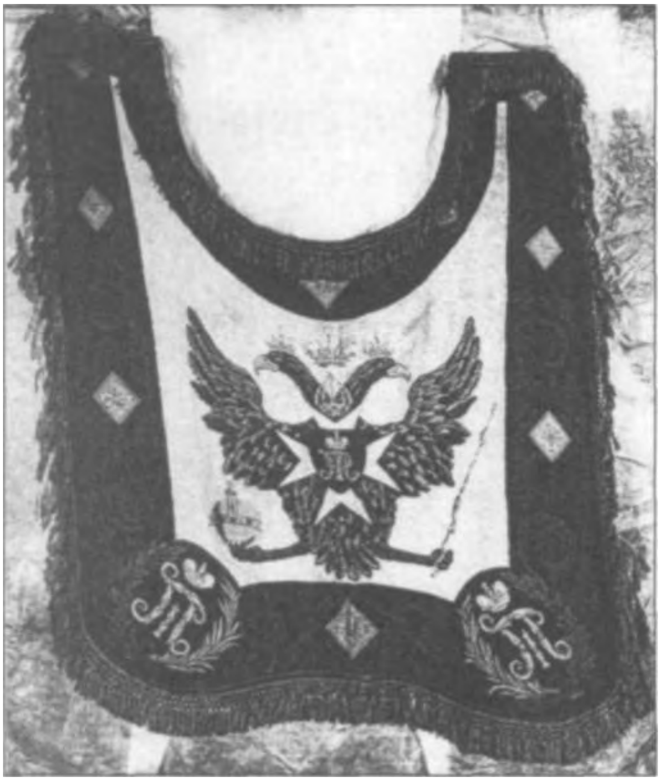

A horse cloth used in the royal stables of the Russian Czar (circa 1795) bears the symbols of the double-headed eagle, a triangle, and diamonds, all Illuminist signs.

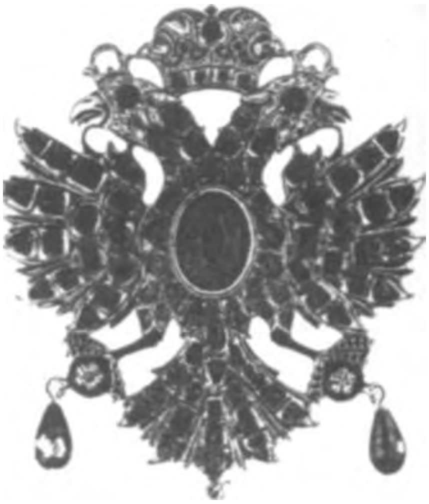

Double-headed eagle pendant owned by the Czarina. The word *"Czar"* in Russian means *"Caesar.*

Russia's President Vladimir Putin (left) meets with the CEO of Lukoil, Russia's biggest oil company. On the desk between the two men are desk accessories bearing the emblem of the double-headed eagle. (Photo: *Agence France-Presse)*

Vladimir Zhirinovsky, flamboyant Russian politician, holds in his hand the double-headed eagle insignia of the czarist regime, recently revived in the Gorbachev-Yeltsin-Putin era. Zhirinovsky gained worldwide notoriety in the 1990s for bashing Jews and for his extreme anti-Semitic views. However, he quieted down and muted his animosity toward the Jews after it came out that Zhirinovsky is himself a Jew! The setting up of such fake fronts by the Illuminati is a common tactic. It is all part of the Hegelian dialectical process (Thesis+antithesis=synthesis): i.e. create the problem, then come up with the pre-planned "solution" favored by the elite. (Photo and article: *The European,* April 17, 1994)

DER SPIEGEL
Rußland-
wohin?
ZAR BORIS

"The Czar is dead. Long live the Czar," **seems to be the cry today in Russia. Czar Nicholas and his entire family were massacred by Lenin and the Communists. But, in recent times, Russia, under Gorbachev, Yeltsin, and Putin, has once again officially returned the Empire to the key symbol of the double-headed eagle. *Der Spiegel,* a popular German news magazine, carried this telling depiction of "Czar Boris" (President Boris Yeltsin) on its cover, with the revived official seal on his breast.**

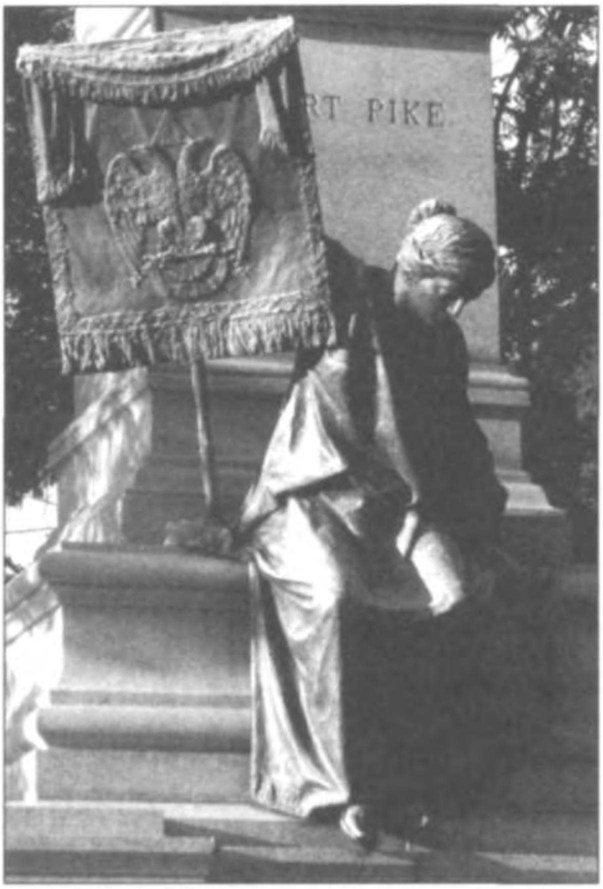

Believe it or not, in front of the Department of Justice building in Washington, D.C. is a statue of a confederate general, Albert Pike. Pike served as Sovereign Grand Commander of Scottish Rite Freemasonry, Southern Jurisdiction. Fascinating, isn't it, that black leaders like Farrahkan and Jesse Jackson aren't complaining? Usually, they go nuts complaining about Confederate monuments and statues on government land. Could their silence be attributed to the fact that Jackson and Farrakhan are themselves 3 3rd degree Masons? In any case, at the foot of Pike's Justice Department Statue is a Masonic female figure representing Lady Justice, holding a banner with the 33rd degree double-headed eagle and the triangle of Freemasonry.

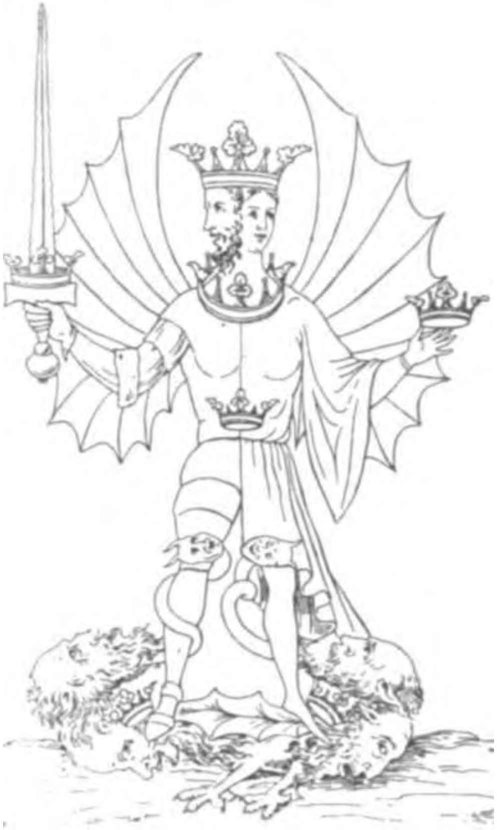

The androgyne, a combination creature of male and female, symbolizes the hermaphrodite principle of the two-faced entity or two-headed eagle. In the Jewish Cabala, this strange creation of the feminine and masculine principle is known as "Adam Kadmon," both Adam and Eve, a Golem. This conjunction of opposites is part of the science of alchemy, or hermeticism, and is especially beloved by occult magicians. In witchcraft, it is known as the joining of sun and moon, and sacred sex rituals are common.

Janus, Roman two-faced "God of the Sun," was said to be the "keeper of the keys" to the invisible spirit world. Hislop *(The Two Babylons)* called him "the source and fountain of all the pagan gods." Is the Masonic double-headed eagle symbolic of his predecessor, Janus?

THIRTEEN

The Riddle of the Great Seal of the United States, and the All-Seeing Eye of the Illuminati's Serpent of Wisdom

And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world...

-Revelation 12:9

The Great Serpent of the Garden of Eden and the Lord God are identical.

— Helena Blavatsky
The Secret Doctrine

What is the true meaning of the curious, arcane symbols found in the Great Seal of the United States? Who designed this fantastic two-sided device, and why is it so prominently featured as art and decor on our most common item of currency—the U.S. one dollar bill?

Answering the Riddle

The symbols on the Great Seal at first glance seem to be incompatible with the history, political organization, and religious heritage of our great nation. An Egyptian pyramid? What has that to do with America? Strange Latin inscriptions? A bizarre all-seeing eye radiated by the sun's rays? Odd, indeed.

Truly weird, especially, is the fact that there are *two* sides to the Great Seal. The

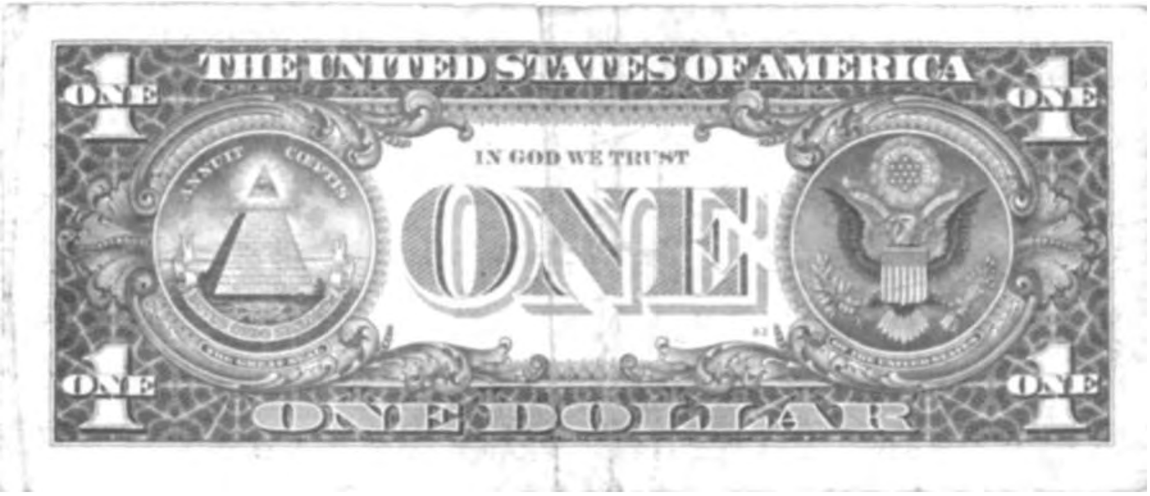

front side pictures a strong, war-ready eagle with a constellation of stars in a cloud above its head. The reverse, the mystical side, is the one with the pyramid, Latin inscriptions, all-seeing eye, etc. Why two sides? After all, a seal is like a rubber stamp. It is used to authenticate documents to prove authenticity and affirm veracity and genuineness. You don't need a reverse side on a "rubber stamp!"

In fact, both sides of the Great Seal, each with various images, have been around since the days of the Continental Congress.

In 1776, just hours after the Declaration of Independence was formally adopted, a committee composed of Benjamin Franklin, Thomas Jefferson, and John Adams met to design the Great Seal. They invited an artist, Pierre Eugene Du Simitiere, to join them and a design was approved. But the Continental Congress failed to approve it. So, in 1782, Congress called on William Barton, an authority on symbols and heraldry, and Charles Thompson, Secretary of Congress, to help sort out the process. Finally, out came the current day, two-sided Great Seal.[1]

Enter Rothschild's Man, Haym Salomon

That, of course, is the official version of events. But some claim that a mysterious man from Europe, but living in Philadelphia, named Haym Salomon, secretly assisted the committee of Franklin, Jefferson, and Adams. Haym Salomon, a Jewish banker, just happened to be the American representative for the Rothschilds of Europe. Salomon, it is said, bribed a number of American politicians and was able to get about anything he and his mentors wanted done. In the case of the Great Seal, the Rothschilds wanted symbols to be pictured in the Great Seal of United States befitting the aims of the Illuminati.

Though Jewish and Zionist in ambition, the Rothschilds were not worshippers of the God of the Old and New Testaments of the Bible. They were Sabbatian/Frankist (Satanic) in theology. They sought (and still today seek) a Jewish Utopia or Kingdom on planet Earth. This Kingdom would be the New Age successor to ancient Babylon and Egypt. It would be a powerhouse nation that would, through magic and intellect, conquer the world. America would be its proxy. America would be its alter ego. America, then, must be fashioned into a cabalistic, Jewish state. All Hail the New

Egypt, Empire of the Ages, child of the Sun God of the ancients! America, the New Jerusalem, must unite with Old Jerusalem, and the Zionist Illuminati must reign!

Rothschild agent Haym Salomon had millions of dollars of largesse to spread around in bribes. And so he did. A good portion of the money went to fund the Continental Congress and its operations. Some went into the Treasury for the Revolutionary War effort. Some went into politicians' pockets.

Rothschild eventually got the images he had demanded on the Great Seal, though not without opposition. The design was bitterly opposed by the few who recognized the Masonic and Illuminist elements.

As for Haym Salomon, few history textbooks mention him. But he is privily called by Illuminati Jews *"The Financier of the American Revolution."* Only recently, scattered bits of propaganda have begun to be floated about him. A few Jewish books speak of his "grand accomplishments," offering a more cheery and less honest version of his life and his activities as banker for the American Revolution. The ultimate goal of the Illuminati is to eventually bring Haym Salomon out of the closet, so to speak. Someday, his name will be in lights. He'll be immortalized in print, in movies, and on TV as a great and noble hero, akin to a George Washington or Thomas Jefferson. Statues will be built to honor him. One already has, in Philadelphia. Mark my words and mark your calendar for the future and see if what I tell you isn't so.

Now, let us examine the symbols on America's Great Seal and see if we can make sense of their true, esoteric meaning and purposes. Let us wipe away the gloss and get down to the base surface to better understand. This is vital because of the future of the United States—and the destiny of all humanity—is wrapped up, and is revealed, in this collection of Illuminist symbols and marks.

The Ashlar Stones and The Pyramid

Masonry is a peculiar Egypto-Babylonia-Jewish institution, and so the pyramid itself hearkens back to the Dynasty of the pharaohs and to the gods and goddesses of ancient Egypt. The stones which make up the pyramid are also of esoteric significance. In the Masonic philosophy it is taught that unenlightened man is in a rude, natural state. Having little or no "light" and without the spiritual illumination offered by the Mystery Religions he is likened to an *imperfect or rough ashlar stone.* But once enlightened and illuminated, he is crafted into a man of education, sophistication, discipline, and culture. He reaches upward toward spiritual perfection. He is then a *perfect ashlar stone.*

In many pagan religions this concept of the Rough vs. Perfect Ashlar was taught. In Freemasonry, it is heavily emphasized. The pyramid's structure is fitted only with perfect ashlar stones, it is said, meticulously chosen by "The Builders" who watch for flaws and reject the rough, or imperfect ashlar.

Likewise, the higher level Masons discover that the pyramid reflects, or parallels, the New World Order *(Novus Ordo Seclorum)* they and their Illuminized superiors are building under the watchful eye of the Great Architect of the Universe, whose secret and sacred name, the Royal Arch Mason learns, is *Jahbuhlun.*

The Builders (the Perfect Ashlars), then, are the Illuminati and their minions. Their building project is the renovation and reconstruction *(Perestroika* or *Tikkun*

Olam) of the whole earth. Of course, in order to build the New Deal of the Ages, they must first tear down the old. Civilization as we know it today must be razed and destroyed by dialectic chaos, so that the new order may be ushered in: *Ordo Ab Chao*

It is when this ambitious goal is achieved that, symbolically, the capstone will be set in place atop the pyramid. Then he who lies *within* the living stones shall come forth to rule. The Phoenix (Satan and his "son") shall rise from the flames of destruction just as the legendary phoenix bird arose.

The Phoenix, however, is, in reality a cockatrice, a dragon-bird, a flying serpent. The word "pyramid," incidentally, literally means "amidst the fire." And now you know the true, occultic meaning of the word.

Peering Into the All-Seeing Eye

Simply put, Freemasons, under the direction of Haym Salomon, Ben Franklin, and others, designed the Great Seal with its all-seeing eye in the capstone amidst the radiant sun background. As followers of Egyptianism, it has long been assumed that the eye is that of Osiris, the Egyptian sun god, and/or of his son, Horus. This is true, but there is much more.

Osiris, of course, was worshipped as the Sun. Albert Pike, former Sovereign Grand Commander, wrote: "The sun...is the All-Seeing Eye in our Lodges."[2] Pike goes on to say that, "the Blazing Star (the pentagram deity) has been recognized as an emblem of Omniscience, or the All-Seeing Eye, which to the Ancients was the Sun."[3]

The Illuminati and their subordinates, the Masons, honor the Deity of countless names. Yes, one of those names is Osiris, with his son Horus. But the Illuminati Deity is a concealed god who hides his true identity in a multitude of disguises and subterfuges. He is called "The Sun," the "Central Sun," "Hiram Abiff," the one with the "Ineffable Name," "Ein Soph," the "Great Architect of the Universe," "Abaddon," "Mahabone," and "Jahbuhlun." Ostensibly the Illuminati worship a pantheon, a multiplicity of gods. But, not so. These are all fronts for the elite worship of Lucifer. He is their true god, the God of Light. As Albert Pike stated in *Morals and Dogma, "Doubt it not."*

Their God is The Serpent

Now, the Bible, in *Isaiah 14* and *Revelation 12:9,* identifies Lucifer as "the great dragon...that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world." So, by whatever name you call him, the god of the Illuminati and Masonry is the Serpent. In fact, in *A Bridge to Light,* an official textbook of the Supreme Mother Council, 33°, the highest council of the Scottish Rite, Rex Hutchens, 33°, reveals that "the body of the Holy Spirit, the universal agent," is none other than "the Serpent devouring his own tail."[4] That is, the Oroboros serpent.

Remember, in all their writings, the most revered of Masonic scholars — Manly P. Hall, Albert Mackey, Albert Pike, etc.—claim that the Masonic rituals and teachings come from the "mysteries" of ancient Babylonians, Egyptians, Greeks, Persians and others. Thus, we glean understanding when we read, in *Earth's Earliest Ages,* this statement by G. Pember: "There is little doubt that the culmination of the mysteries was the worship of Satan himself."[5]

You'll also recall our discussion elsewhere in this book that the Illuminist and Masonic theology is solidly based on the *Jewish Cabala* (Kaballah or Quaballah). Indeed, almost all occult and magical belief systems are founded on the principles and teachings of the Jewish Cabala. In her most famous book, *The Secret Doctrine,* Helena Blavatsky praised Satan as the teacher of humanity.[6] He is to be thanked, Blavatsky says, for setting men on the path to divinity and liberty. It is, she emphasizes, the Cabala that "unveils the secret." To what secret is she referring? Listen, as Blavatsky flatly states the core doctrine of the mysteries, of occultism, of Illuminism:

> The Great Serpent of the Garden of Eden and the Lord God are identical.[7]

Ah, we have here the reality of supreme evil in this core teaching. Paul knew of this mystery teaching, he wrote of the "Mystery of Iniquity" and said of the ancient religionists, that they "knew God, but glorified Him not as God," and changed the Glory of God "into the likeness of creeping things" — that is, serpents *(Romans 1:23).*

The Devourer of Self

Barbara Walker, researcher of occultism and paganism, writes:

> As Lord of Death, Osiris was sometimes identified with the Great Serpent of the underworld, and sometimes was painted in the same serpentine form, bent around so his toes touched his head.[8]

The serpent, or Satan, as we know from the scriptures, is god of the dead. Indeed, God says, "all they that hate me love death" *(Proverbs 8:36).* He is Lord alright, but only of death, of the underworld, and of planet earth for a season *(II Thessalonians 2).* He is graphically pictured in the occult world as a serpent biting his own tail; how appropriate: A devourer of himself! And that is what actually happens when a person defies God and worships the Adversary. He or she is "biting his own tail" — tragically and pathetically devouring himself.

The Oroboros

The oroboros, or serpent biting its own tail, is pictured on the cover of *Codex Magica.* This book unmasks the Illuminati worship of this detestable creature, a worship of which virtually every person on earth is dangerously and hopelessly unaware. Since the Illuminati, Masons, and fellow cabalists have amassed such tremendous political, financial, social, and technological powers, is it not a frightening thing to realize that these men are not only religious, their religion is Satanism, and their god is the Devil?

The destructive path, therefore, is the way of the Illuminati. As I have demonstrated, these wicked agents of the Serpent are psychopaths and present a clear and present threat and danger to our lives. But the gravest danger is that which confronts the souls of billions of unsaved, ignorant human beings. If they fall for the Lie of the Serpent, they will suffer total destruction and suffer loss for eternity.

In *Occult Geometry, A.S.* Raleigh examines the symbol of the *circle.* He writes:

> One form of the circle is a serpent with a tail in its mouth...It is the return to Unity...The true circle symbolizes evolution, the Serpent Circle involution...the power brings Unity out of diversity...*The Serpent Circle is, therefore, ever the symbol of the destructive.*[9]

Later, in the photos and illustrations presented in this chapter, you will discover the startling artwork on a Jewish New Year's postcard by Jewish artist Alain Roth back in 1915. The design shows the Oroboros Serpent (Satan) encircling and conquering the whole earth. Happy New Year?

As I have proven over and over by a preponderance of documentation, we cannot separate the murderous goals and activities of the Illuminati from their religious belief system. Their inspiration, their fanatical zealotry, comes from their teacher, Satan, who has given them a thorough set of instructions—an Unholy Bible if you will, in the Jewish Cabala. In this Unholy Bible, the Serpent plays the key role. He is praised as the "Serpent of Wisdom." The destiny of the Illuminati and the whole world is said to be in his hands.

We thank God that all who believe in Christ Jesus have no part of this destiny. Jesus said *He has chosen us out of the world.* We are pilgrims, aliens on earth, spiritually residing in heavenly places. The serpent has no power or control whatsoever over us, and we solidly reject his many works, among which, regrettably, is the symbology of the Great Seal of the United States.

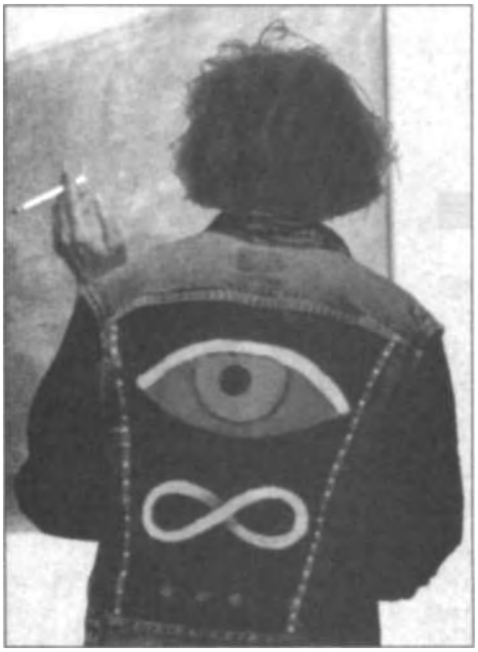

Advertisement for a cigarette brand. The three most prominent symbols: (1) All-seeing eye; (2) The sign of eternity—resembling the figure 8 lying on its side; (3)The three dots, or points, indicative of the unholy trinity.

The Guardian Angel organization in New York City has as its logo an all-seeing eye in a triangle, and angel wings. Message: *"We are watching!"*

Reason *(La Raison),* an engraving by Darcis in the National Museum, Paris, France, was said to capture the spirit of the bloody, Illuminati-inspired French Revolution. What we see is symbolism of the unholy trinity of Lucifer-Father (Lion), Mother (Goddess), and Son (all-seeing eye).

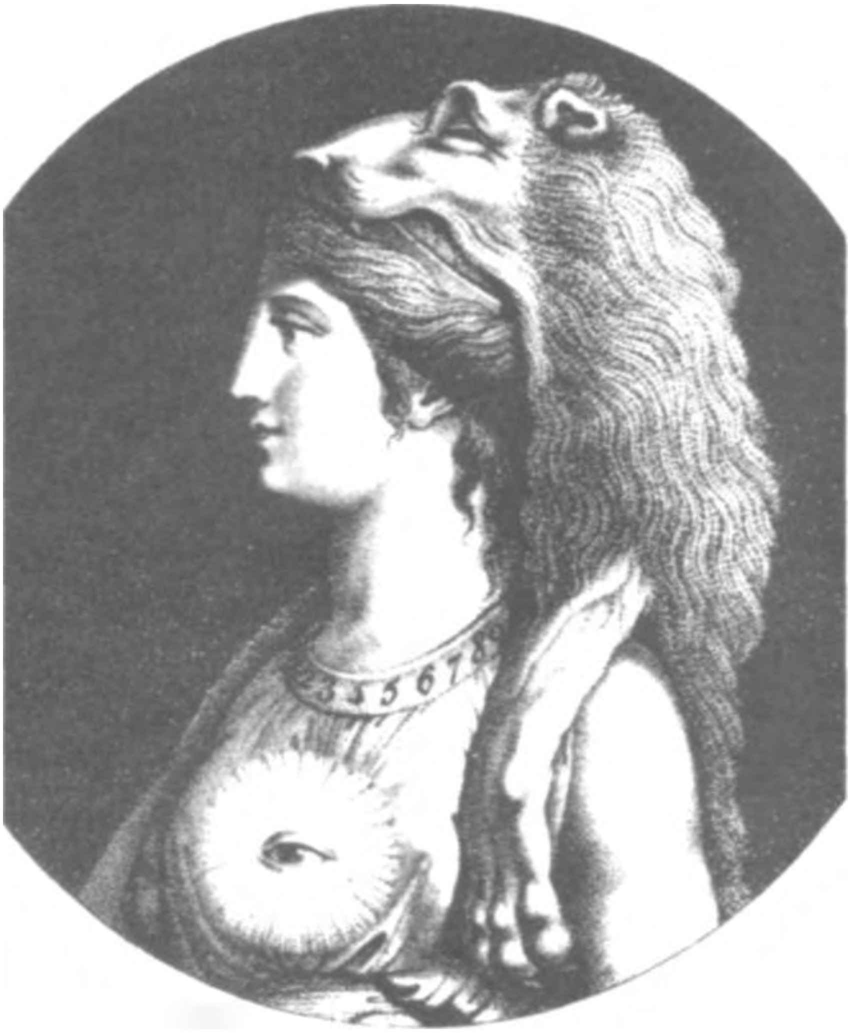

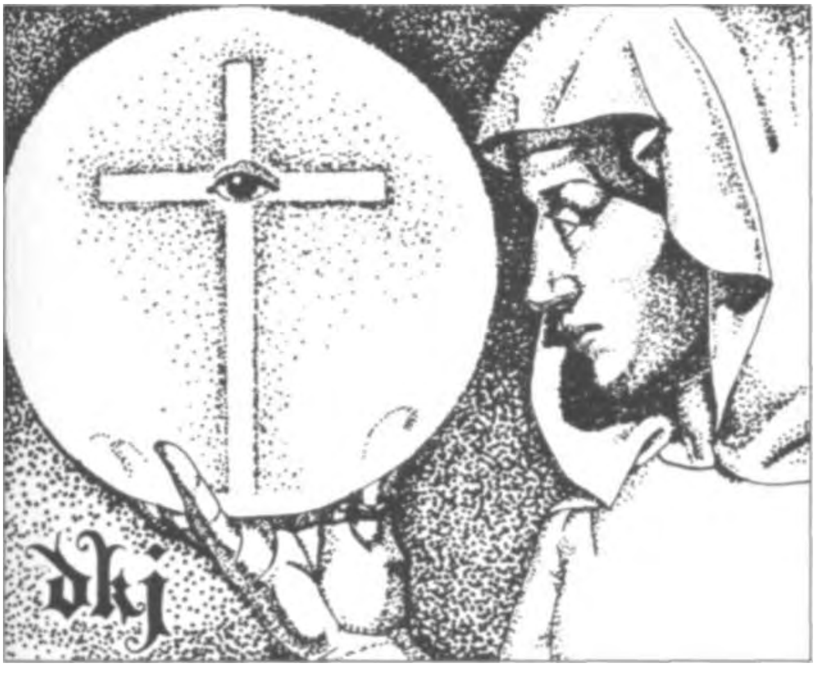

Art illustration from the book, *Active Meditation,* by Robert Leichtman, M.D. and Carl Japikse (Ariel Press). The hermetic monk holds the solar disk with cross and all-seeing eye.

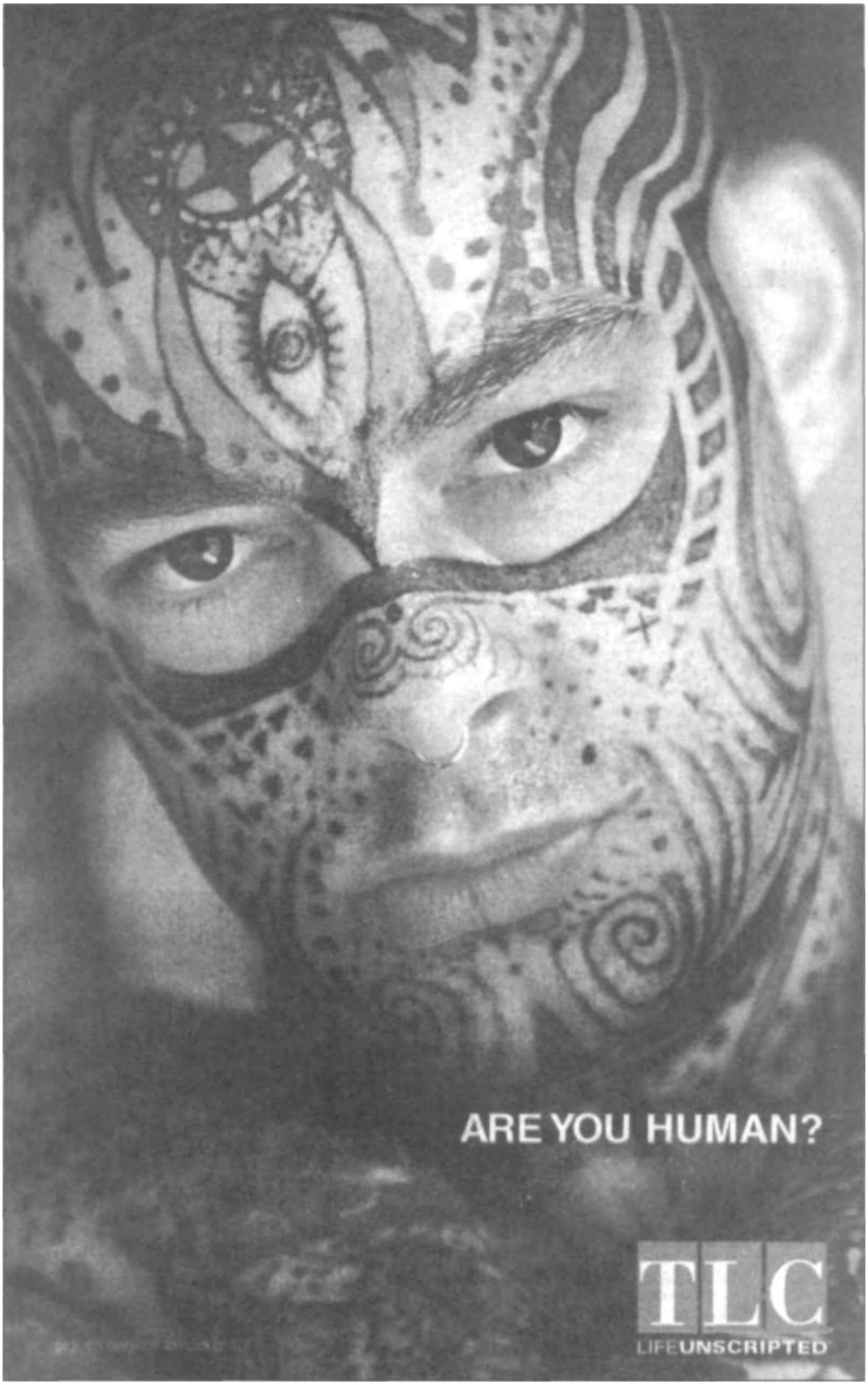
ARE YOU HUMAN?
TLC
LIFEUNSCRIPTED

This bizarre advertisement for cable-TV's *The Learning Channel.* The tattoos *on* this man are real. The all-seeing eye is in what Hindus call the "ajna center," in the midpoint of the forehead just above the eyebrows.

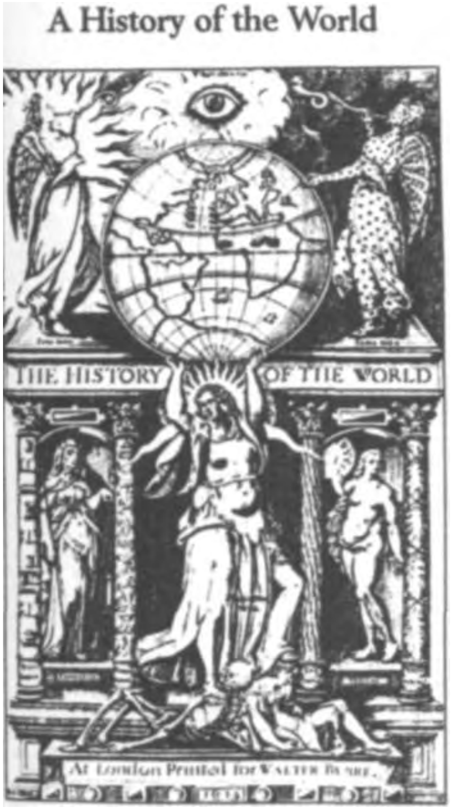
A History of the World
THE HISTORY OF THE WORLD
At London Printed for Walter Burre

Sir Walter Raleigh, the impetuous adventurer and polished courtier, was also a man of considerable literary accomplishments. Much of the poetry he wrote has been lost, but several impressive prose works survive. The most ambitious and distinguished of these is *The History of the World*, written between 1607 and 1614, during his years of confinement in the Tower of London under a death sentence. Although Raleigh's name did not appear on the elaborately engraved frontispiece to the first edition (above), there was no secret about the authorship. The book was immediately banned by King James I.

Raleigh set out to write a universal chronicle that would parallel the Old Testament chronology in its initial chapters but bring the story up to his own times, in which the history of England would be related to that of the rest of the world. He got only as far as the fall of Macedonia in 130 B.C.

James's displeasure was caused by Raleigh's portrayals of Assyrian Queen Semiramis, which was seen as a tribute to Elizabeth I, and of her effeminate successor, Ninus, which the king interpreted as an unflattering caricature of himself.

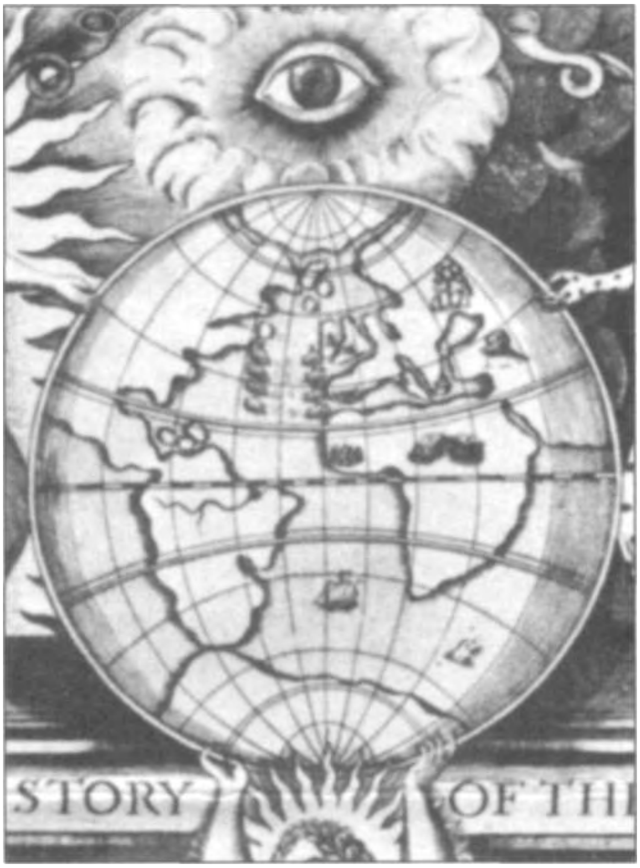

Sir Walter Raleigh's distinguished book, *The History of The World* (written between 1607 and 1614) had this illustration as its frontispiece. The book was banned by England's King James I because it revealed too much, ostensibly for its portrayals of Babylonian Queen Semiramis and her effeminate son, Ninus. More likely is that the artwork shown here revealed far too many occult secrets, including the androgynous (male/female) figure holding aloft the globe, the all-seeing eye, etc.

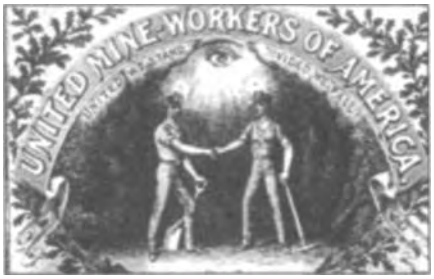
UNITED MINE WORKERS OF AMERICA

United Mine Workers Union poster, 1890. The two miners are exchanging a masonic handshake, being overseen by the all-seeing eye. Almost all unions in America and Europe were founded by Jewish activists deep into Cabala, Masonry, and other occult secrets.

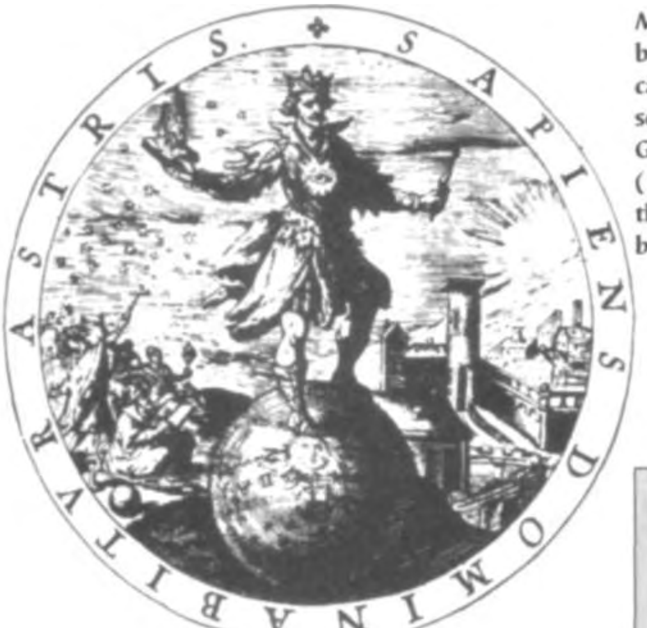
SAPIENS DOMINABITVR ASTRIS

Many medallions, engravings, shields and badges of heraldry in the Renaissance era carried the image of the all-seeing eye somewhere on them. This engraving by George Wither entitled *The Reign of the Wise* (1635) depicts divine man, lord of all, under the watchful stare of the solar logos (Lucifer) below his feet.

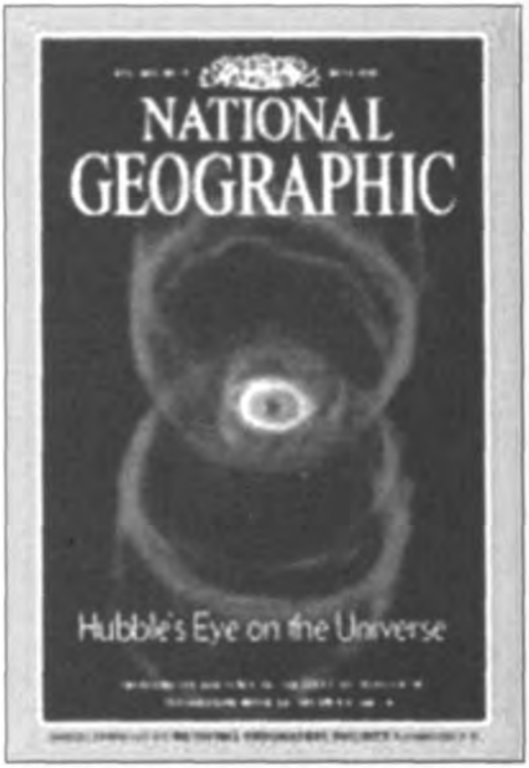
NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC
Hubble's Eye on the Universe

NASA's Hubble space telescope captured this startling image of what appears to be an all-seeing eye in space. *National Geographic* pictured it on the magazine's front cover in April, 1997.

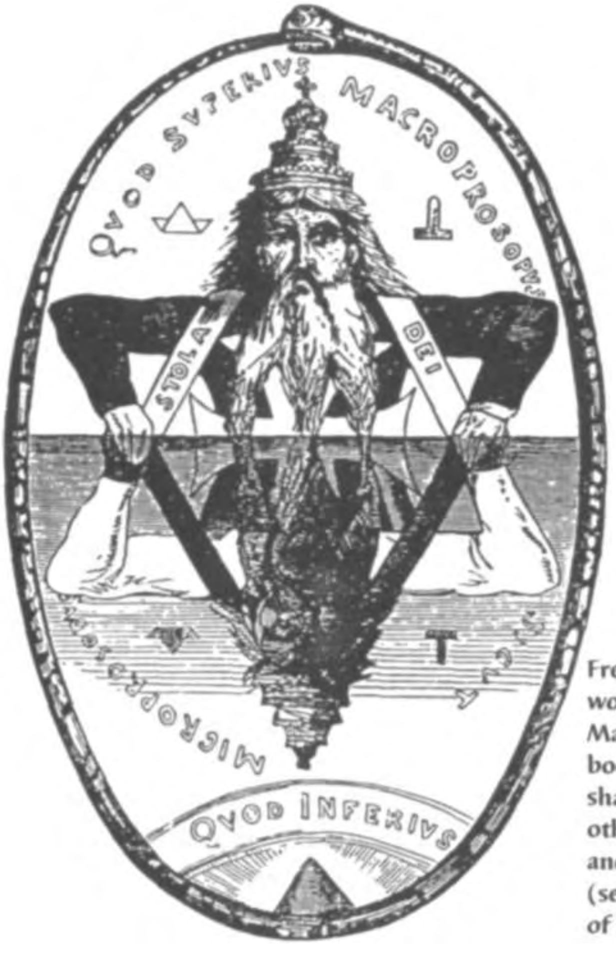
QVOD SVPERIVS MACROPROSOPVS
STOLA
DEI
MICROPROSOPVS
QVOD INFERIVS

Frenchman Eliphas Levi, satanist whose classic work, *Transcendental Magic* (1896) inspired Masonic Lodges and occult societies alike. In his book, Levi posted this illustration of an egg-shaped Oroboros serpent, the six-pointed star and other occult symbols combining to emphasize the ancient Luciferian principle, *"As Above, So Below."* (see *Codex Magica* section on the hidden mysteries of the double-headed eagle.)

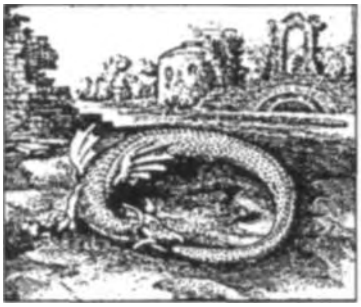

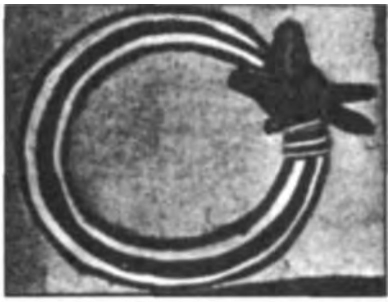

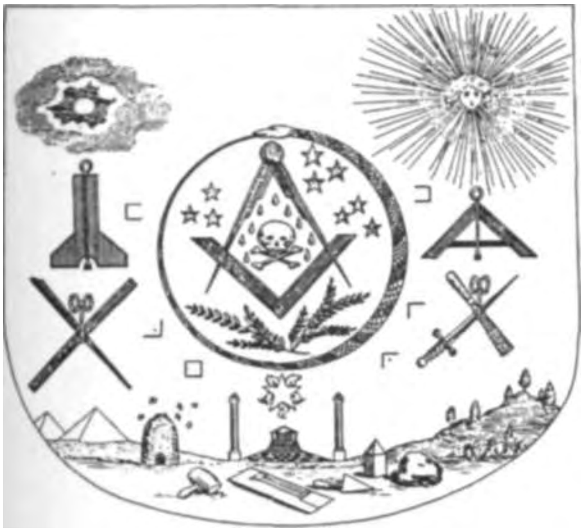

Three versions of Oroboros, the circular serpent biting its own tail.

Above left: This version is from *Atlanta Fugiens,* by Michael Maier, 1618.

Above right: This version of Oroboros is from Dahomey, West Africa.

Left: An early, hand-painted Masonic apron depicts many occult symbols, including the serpent Oroboros, the skull and bones, pentacle stars, the pyramids, the mallet, and the X.

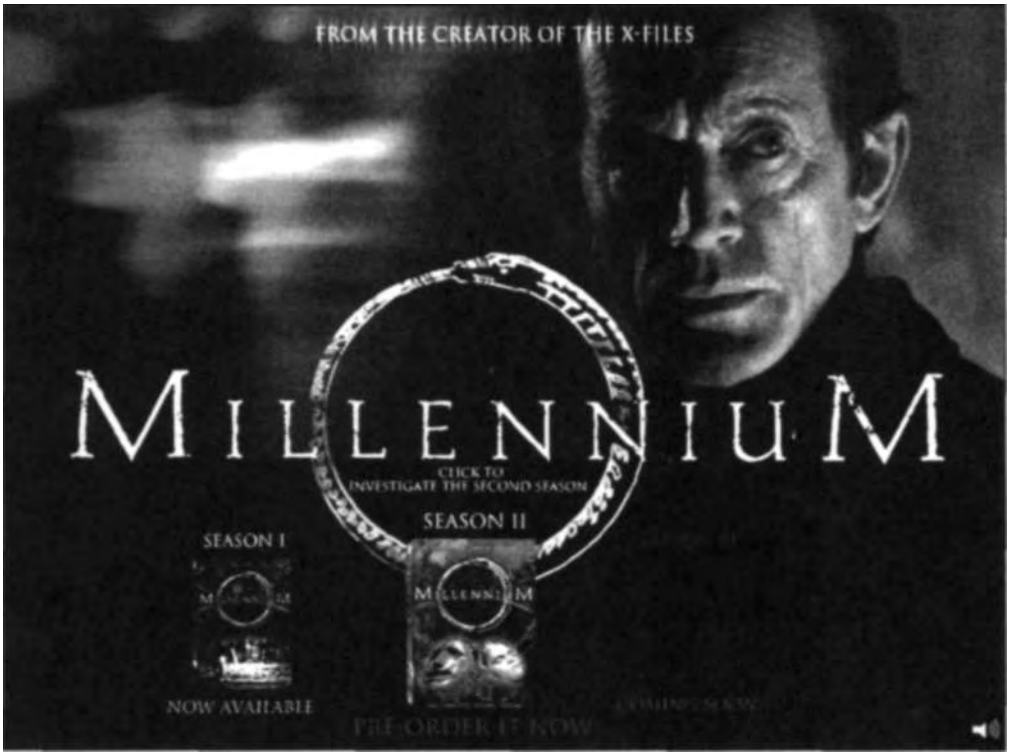
FROM THE CREATOR OF THE X-FILES
MILLENNIUM
CLICK TO INVESTIGATE THE SECOND SEASON
SEASON I
SEASON II
MILLENNIUM
MILLENNIUM
NOW AVAILABLE
PRE-ORDER IT NOW

The Fox-TV network ran 67 episodes of the popular series, *Millennium.* The Oroboros serpent was the focal point of advertising for the series though the occult meaning of the symbol was never fully explained.

Alchemical Rosicrucian drawing of a crucified snake, which is a secret symbol of the Philosophical Mercury which is achieved by practice of the arcane art of alchemy. Some might mistakenly believe the cross symbol is Christian, but it is the tau, not the cross of Calvary. *The serpent 'S' is backward, as if seen in a mirror.*

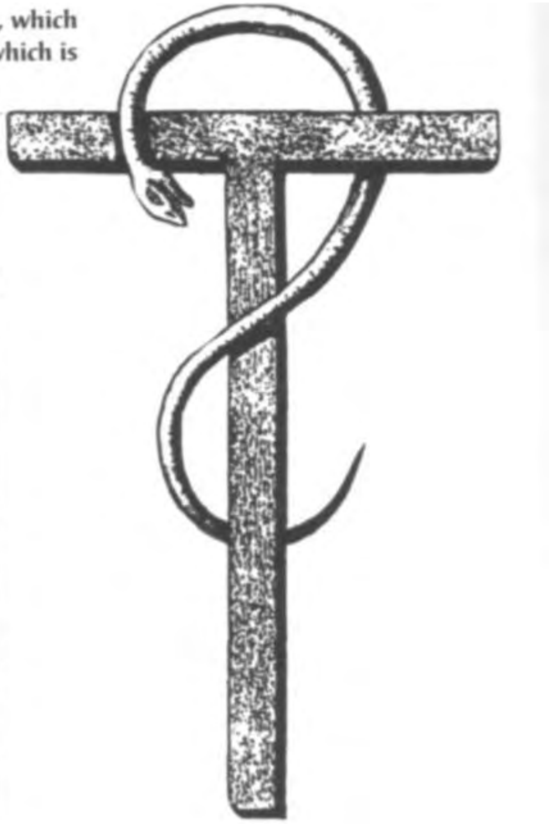

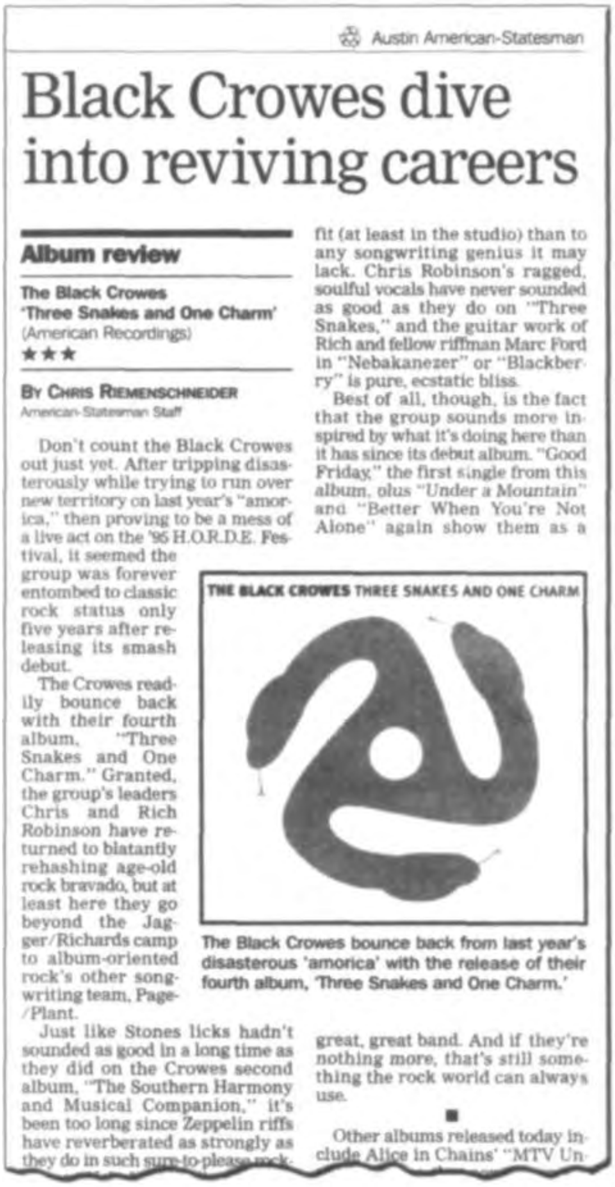

Austin American-Statesman

Black Crowes dive into reviving careers

Album review

The Black Crowes
'Three Snakes and One Charm'
(American Recordings)
★★★

By Chris Riemenschneider
American-Statesman Staff

Don't count the Black Crowes out just yet. After tripping disasterously while trying to run over new territory on last year's "amorica," then proving to be a mess of a live act on the '95 H.O.R.D.E. Festival, it seemed the group was forever entombed to classic rock status only five years after releasing its smash debut.

The Crowes readily bounce back with their fourth album, "Three Snakes and One Charm." Granted, the group's leaders Chris and Rich Robinson have returned to blatantly rehashing age-old rock bravado, but at least here they go beyond the Jagger/Richards camp to album-oriented rock's other songwriting team, Page-/Plant.

Just like Stones licks hadn't sounded as good in a long time as they did on the Crowes second album, "The Southern Harmony and Musical Companion," it's been too long since Zeppelin riffs have reverberated as strongly as they do in such sure-to-please rock-fit (at least in the studio) than to any songwriting genius it may lack. Chris Robinson's ragged, soulful vocals have never sounded as good as they do on "Three Snakes," and the guitar work of Rich and fellow riffman Marc Ford in "Nebakanezer" or "Blackberry" is pure, ecstatic bliss.

Best of all, though, is the fact that the group sounds more inspired by what it's doing here than it has since its debut album. "Good Friday," the first single from this album, olus "Under a Mountain" and "Better When You're Not Alone" again show them as a great, great band. And if they're nothing more, that's still something the rock world can always use.

■

Other albums released today include Alice in Chains' "MTV Un-

THE BLACK CROWES THREE SNAKES AND ONE CHARM

The Black Crowes bounce back from last year's disasterous 'amorica' with the release of their fourth album, 'Three Snakes and One Charm.'

The *Black Crowes*, a rock singing group, put out this album in 1996. It was titled, *"Three Snakes and One Charm."*

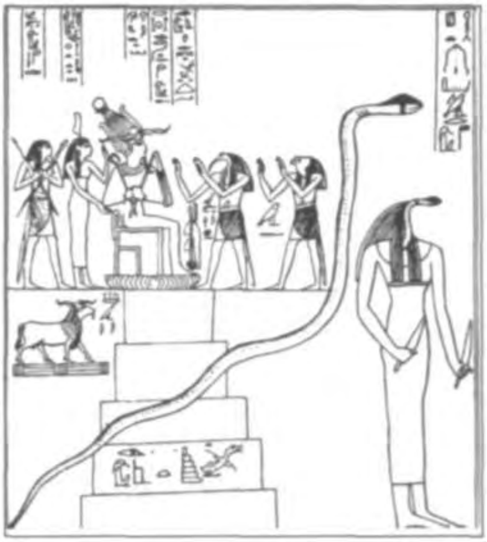

Egyptian Religion: In this ancient papyrus drawing we discover the unholy trinity of the Egyptian goddess religion. Seated is Osiris the horned father god. Behind him is the goddess Isis, and their son, Horus. The snake is the focus of this trinity; the woman (Goddess) is therefore depicted with the head of a serpent and with destroyer weapons in her hands.

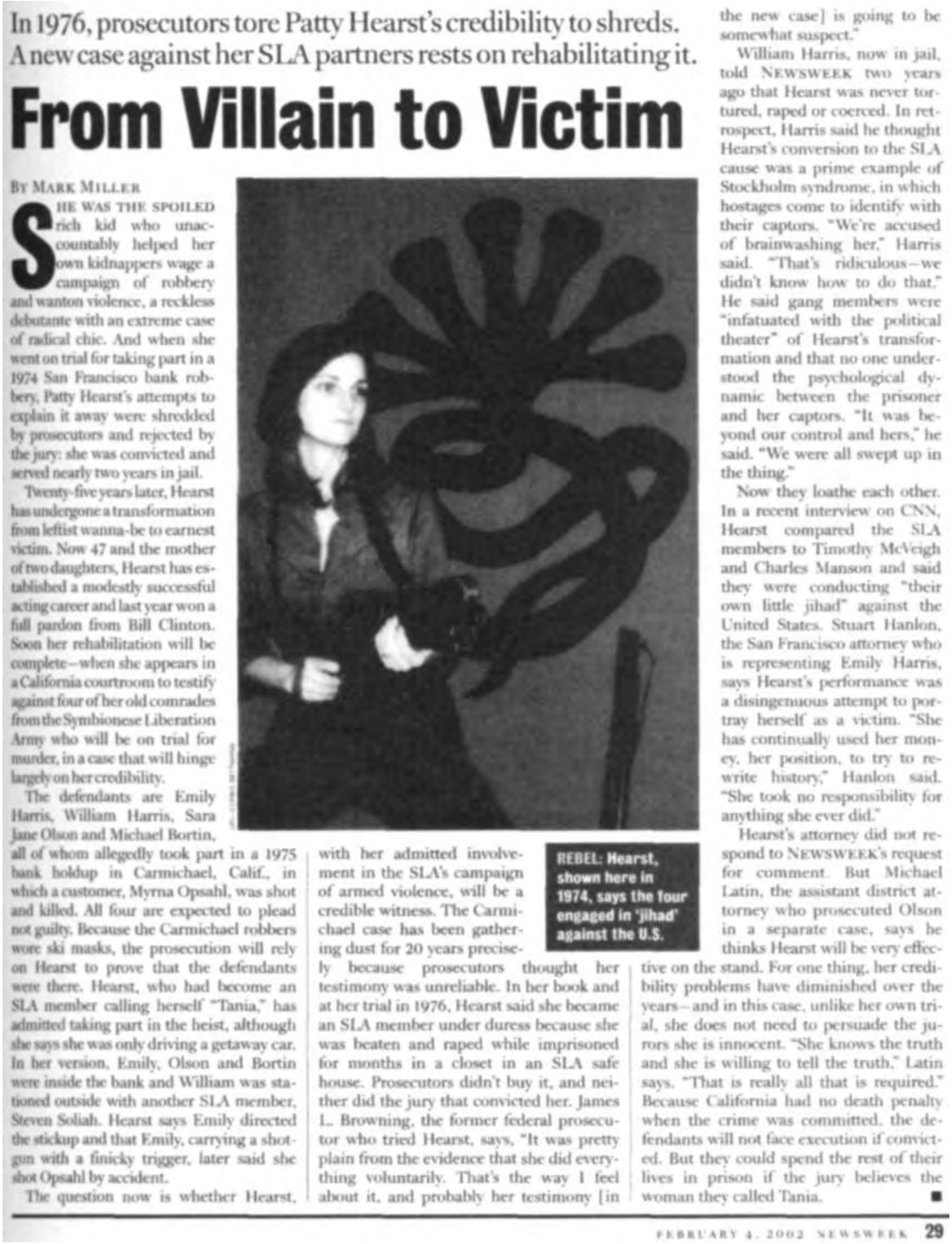

In 1976, prosecutors tore Patty Hearst's credibility to shreds. A new case against her SLA partners rests on rehabilitating it.

From Villain to Victim

BY MARK MILLER

SHE WAS THE SPOILED rich kid who unaccountably helped her own kidnappers wage a campaign of robbery and wanton violence, a reckless debutante with an extreme case of radical chic. And when she went on trial for taking part in a 1974 San Francisco bank robbery, Patty Hearst's attempts to explain it away were shredded by prosecutors and rejected by the jury: she was convicted and served nearly two years in jail.

Twenty-five years later, Hearst has undergone a transformation from leftist wanna-be to earnest victim. Now 47 and the mother of two daughters, Hearst has established a modestly successful acting career and last year won a full pardon from Bill Clinton. Soon her rehabilitation will be complete—when she appears in a California courtroom to testify against four of her old comrades from the Symbionese Liberation Army who will be on trial for murder, in a case that will hinge largely on her credibility.

The defendants are Emily Harris, William Harris, Sara Jane Olson and Michael Bortin, all of whom allegedly took part in a 1975 bank holdup in Carmichael, Calif., in which a customer, Myrna Opsahl, was shot and killed. All four are expected to plead not guilty. Because the Carmichael robbers wore ski masks, the prosecution will rely on Hearst to prove that the defendants were there. Hearst, who had become an SLA member calling herself "Tania," has admitted taking part in the heist, although she says she was only driving a getaway car. In her version, Emily, Olson and Bortin were inside the bank and William was stationed outside with another SLA member, Steven Soliah. Hearst says Emily directed the stickup and that Emily, carrying a shotgun with a finicky trigger, later said she shot Opsahl by accident.

The question now is whether Hearst, with her admitted involvement in the SLA's campaign of armed violence, will be a credible witness. The Carmichael case has been gathering dust for 20 years precisely because prosecutors thought her testimony was unreliable. In her book and at her trial in 1976, Hearst said she became an SLA member under duress because she was beaten and raped while imprisoned for months in a closet in an SLA safe house. Prosecutors didn't buy it, and neither did the jury that convicted her. James L. Browning, the former federal prosecutor who tried Hearst, says, "It was pretty plain from the evidence that she did everything voluntarily. That's the way I feel about it, and probably her testimony [in the new case] is going to be somewhat suspect."

William Harris, now in jail, told NEWSWEEK two years ago that Hearst was never tortured, raped or coerced. In retrospect, Harris said he thought Hearst's conversion to the SLA cause was a prime example of Stockholm syndrome, in which hostages come to identify with their captors. "We're accused of brainwashing her," Harris said. "That's ridiculous—we didn't know how to do that." He said gang members were "infatuated with the political theater" of Hearst's transformation and that no one understood the psychological dynamic between the prisoner and her captors. "It was beyond our control and hers," he said. "We were all swept up in the thing."

Now they loathe each other. In a recent interview on CNN, Hearst compared the SLA members to Timothy McVeigh and Charles Manson and said they were conducting "their own little jihad" against the United States. Stuart Hanlon, the San Francisco attorney who is representing Emily Harris, says Hearst's performance was a disingenuous attempt to portray herself as a victim. "She has continually used her money, her position, to try to rewrite history," Hanlon said. "She took no responsibility for anything she ever did."

Hearst's attorney did not respond to NEWSWEEK's request for comment. But Michael Latin, the assistant district attorney who prosecuted Olson in a separate case, says he thinks Hearst will be very effective on the stand. For one thing, her credibility problems have diminished over the years—and in this case, unlike her own trial, she does not need to persuade the jurors she is innocent. "She knows the truth and she is willing to tell the truth," Latin says. "That is really all that is required." Because California had no death penalty when the crime was committed, the defendants will not face execution if convicted. But they could spend the rest of their lives in prison if the jury believes the woman they called Tania. ■

REBEL: Hearst, shown here in 1974, says the four engaged in 'jihad' against the U.S.

FEBRUARY 4, 2002 NEWSWEEK 29

In 1974, heiress Patty Hearst was kidnapped by members of a group calling itself the Symbionese Liberation Army (SLA). The group took this picture of Hearst, who inexplicably actively participated in crimes with SLA gang members. Conspiracy researchers subsequently discovered that the SLA was a secret revolutionary project funded by the FBI. (Photo and article: *Newsweek*, February 4, 2002)

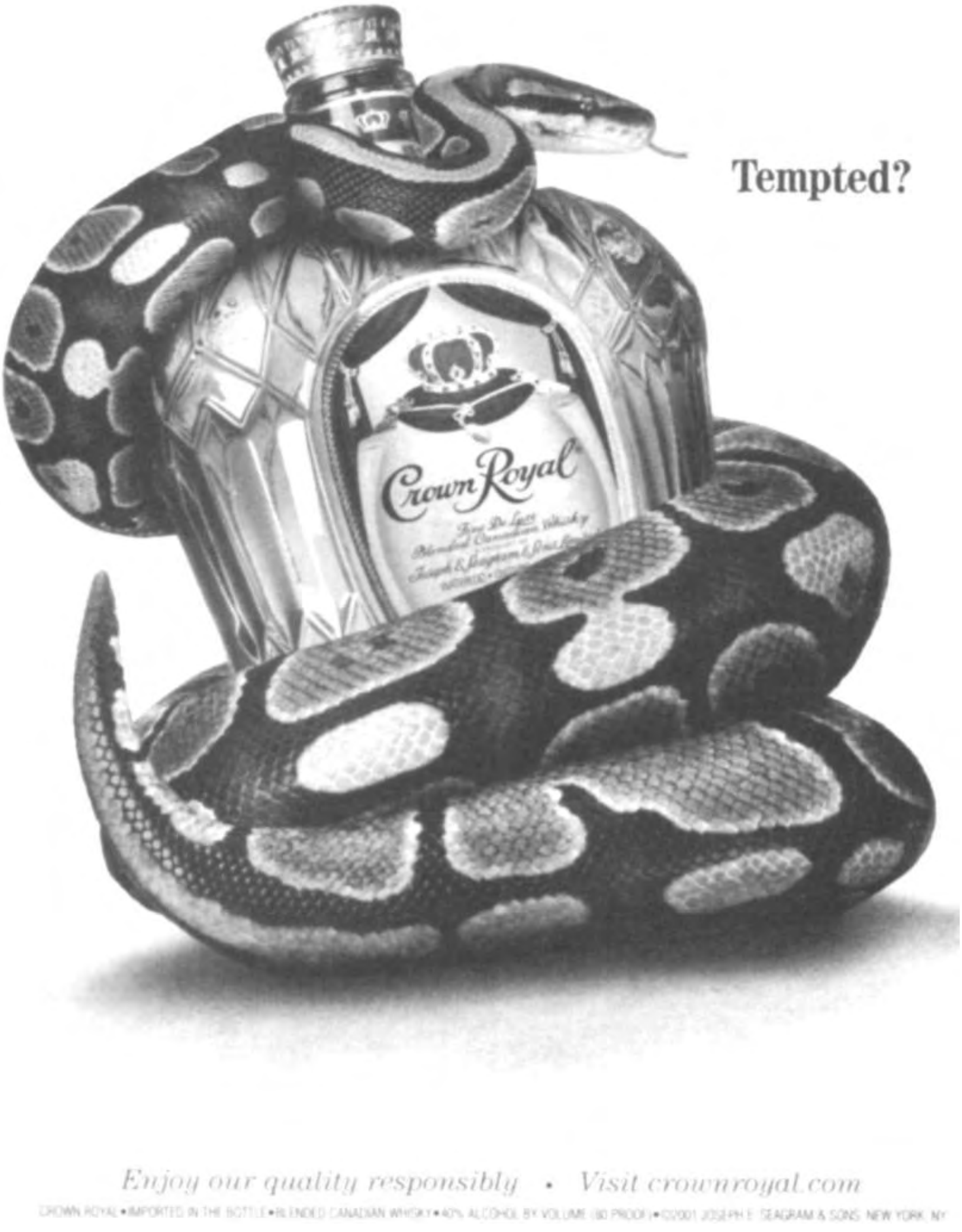
Tempted?
Crown Royal
Enjoy our quality responsibly • Visit crownroyal.com
CROWN ROYAL • IMPORTED IN THE BOTTLE • BLENDED CANADIAN WHISKY • 40% ALCOHOL BY VOLUME (80 PROOF) • ©2001 JOSEPH E. SEAGRAM & SONS, NEW YORK, NY

Blatant serpent wickedness is rampant in this advertisement for *Crown Royal* whiskey. We have the regal scarlet crown, the diamond cuts on the glass, the evil snake shaped in the form of *"S"* (Satan?), and the one word question, "Tempted?" The phrase below, "Enjoy our quality responsibly" sounds like some kind of hellish joke. *Crown Royal* is manufactured by Seagram & Sons, the world's largest distillery. Seagram is owned by the Bronfman bloodline dynasty of Canada, the family of ardent ADL Jewish Zionists. Its senior is currently Edgar Bronfman, who also just happens to be chairman of the World Jewish Congress.

The dragon is, of course, a mythical form of serpent. Indeed, the Holy Bible in the book of Revelation describes Satan as "that old serpent, the dragon." Well, for those who wish to pay homage to the dragon, *The Pyramid Collection* catalog offers such jewelry items as this pendant, ring, and arm band.

J. From Page to Pendant

Exclusive! Artisan Stephen Harris is one of the foremost translators of Celtic art into contemporary jewelry—demonstrated in this antiqued sterling silver pendant, crafted in a design familiar to admirers of the illuminated *Book of Kells*. 1⅜" diam.

P14-752 Dragon Circle Pendant **$49.95**

P150-068 18" Sterling Figaro Chain **$14.95**

I. The Dragon of Cymru

As descendants of the ancient Celtic tribes of Cymru (*Chim*-ree), the Welsh immortalize the dragon as a symbol of national unity depicted on their flag, as well as in the casting of this garnet-centered, antiqued sterling silver ring by designer/artisan Stephen Harris. For men and women. Whole sizes 6–12.

P11-750 Garnet Dragon Ring **$39.95**

K. Dragon Power!

For women warriors of distinction! Fiercely protective of its mortal mistress, this whiskered Chinese dragon hugs your upper arm in its sinuous embrace. Antiqued silverplate. Adjusts to fit most adults.

P19-405 Dragon Armband **$12.95**

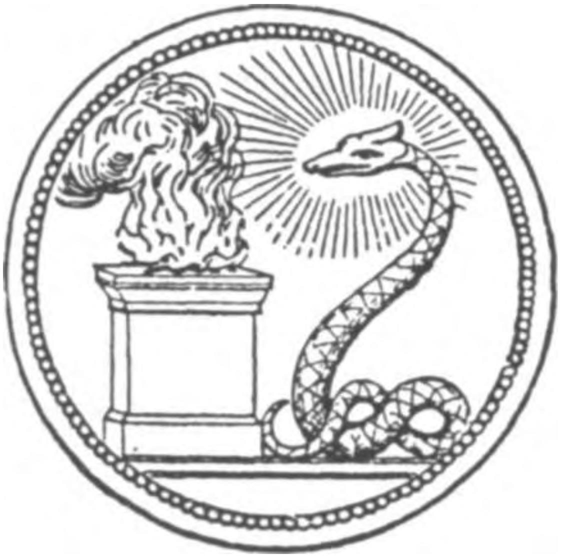

The Illuminati Serpent: In *The Two Babylons,* Hislop writes: "In the mythology of the primitive world, the serpent is universally the symbol of the sun... As the sun was the enlightener of the world, so the serpent was held to have been the great enlightener of the spiritual, by giving mankind knowledge of good and evil.

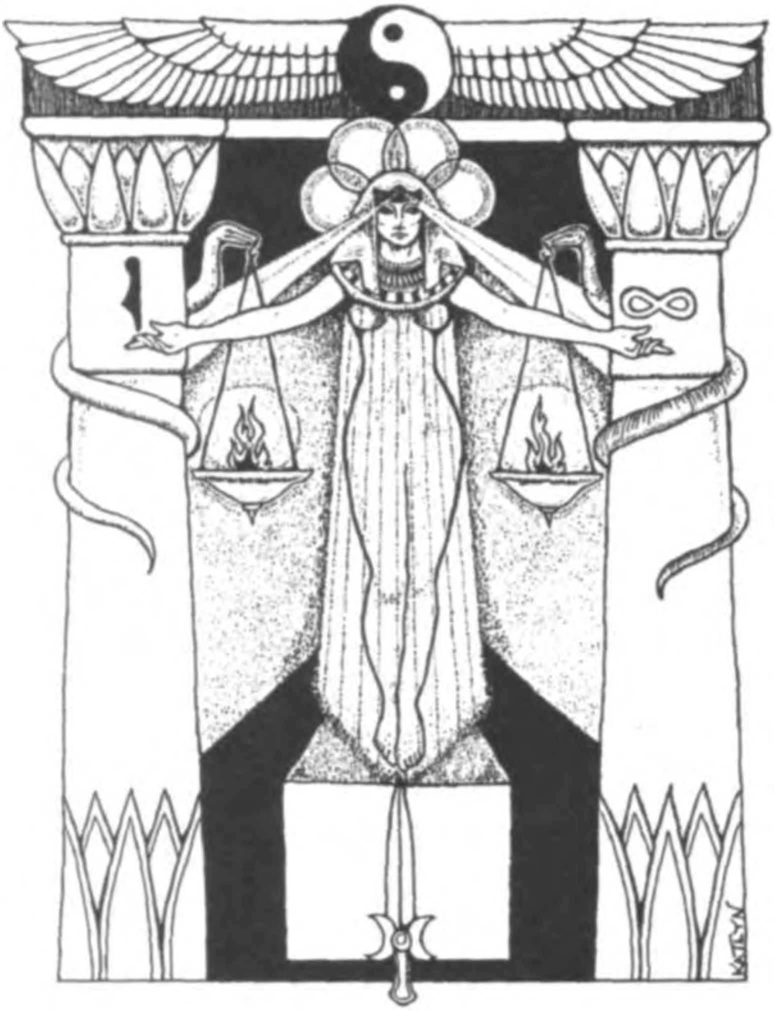

Revealing drawing from a New Age magical publication, *New Moon Rising.* The yin/yang circle at top has the backward "S" and the black is white, white is black motif; and we discover the veiled goddess, in addition to two serpents facing each other. Again, this emphasizes the occult principle of joining, or integrating of opposites. The author of *Codex Magica* could give about a 60-hour lecture series devoted exclusively to the meaning of all the symbols in this seductively evil—even grotesque—piece of occult art.

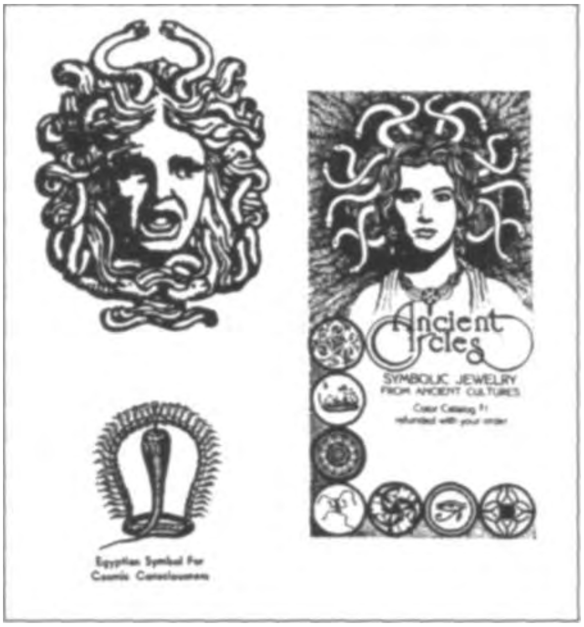
Ancient Circles
SYMBOLIC JEWELRY FROM ANCIENT CULTURES
Color Catalog $1 refunded with your order
Egyptian Symbol For Cosmic Consciousness

The serpent has long been associated with the Goddess. At right are depictions of the Greek Goddess Medusa, whose hair was a nest of snakes, and the cobra, a holy Egyptian symbol for the Goddess religion. (From book, *New Age lies to Women,* by Wanda Marrs)

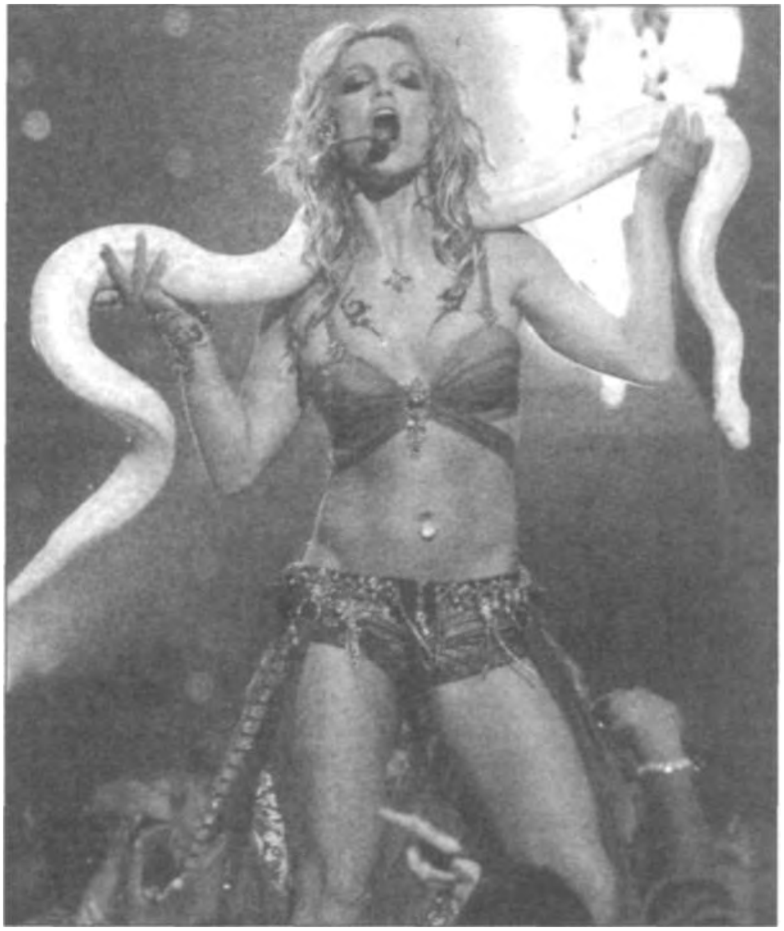

Singer/Entertainer Britney Spears used this white python serpent in one of her music videos. Some in witchcraft falsely believe the white snake is the possessor of good magical powers because of its "pure" color. The satanist knows otherwise. Dr. Michael Aquino, High Priest of the Temple of Set, once stated on *The Oprah Winfrey* TV show that there is no real difference in good vs. evil magic. Magic is magic. (Photo: The *Tennessean*. December 19, 2001, p. 3D)

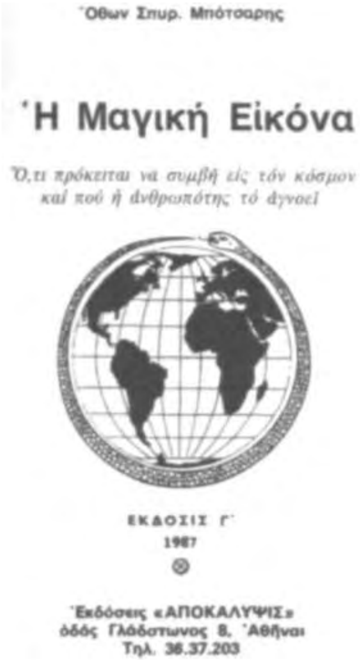

Ὄθων Σπυρ. Μπότσαρης

Ἡ Μαγική Εἰκόνα

Ὅ,τι πρόκειται νά συμβῇ εἰς τόν κόσμον
καί ποῦ ἡ ἀνθρωπότης τό ἀγνοεῖ

ΕΚΔΟΣΙΣ Γ΄
1987

Ἐκδόσεις «ΑΠΟΚΑΛΥΨΙΣ»
ὁδός Γλάδστωνος 8, Ἀθῆναι
Τηλ. 36.37.203

The title page of a book published in Greece exposing the global plot of the Zionist Masons of the Illuminati. The authors demonstrate their understanding by the symbolic use of the evil oroboros serpent encircling the whole world.

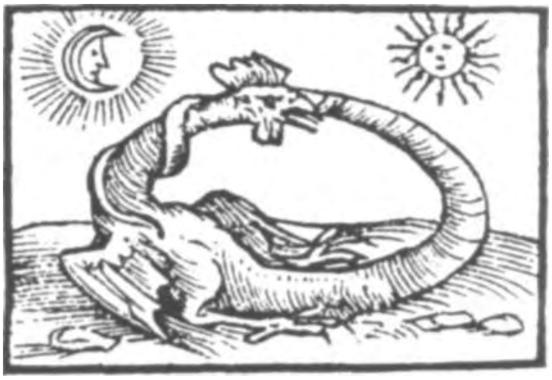

The Oroboros, the serpent coiled up in a circle biting its own tail (also *Uroboros),* is pictured as a gnostic rooster combination creature in this illustration from Horapollo's *Selecta Hieroglyphica,* 1597. The sun and moon symbolize the conjunction of opposites, which is the alchemical doctrine of Illuminism.

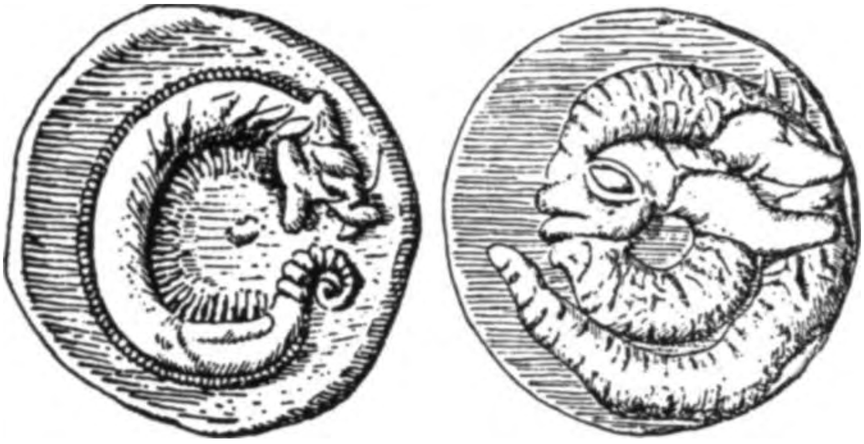

These two ancient Celtic coins from Bohemia (second and first centuries B.C.) bear the marks of the dragon, or serpent. The first coin has the image of an oroboros serpent/dragon torqued and prepared to bite its own tail. The second coin bears the image of a coiled, horned serpent with ears. The coins signify the adoration and homage paid the serpent as a religious icon of worship-status by the Mystery Religions. The revival today of the ancient Mystery Religions is accompanied also by modern-day advances in serpent worship.

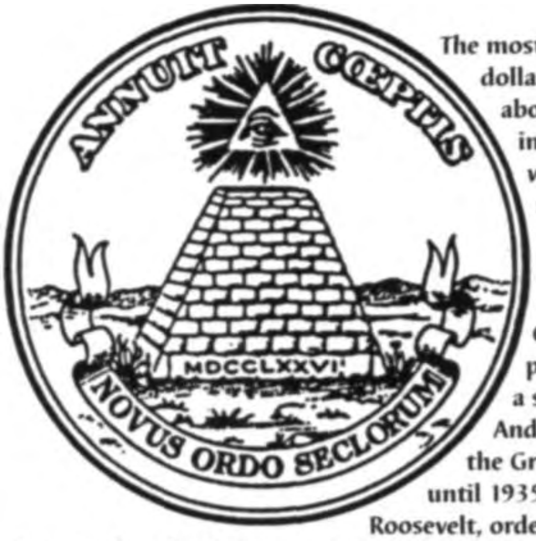

The most famous of all-seeing eyes is found on every U.S.A. one dollar bill. It is the image of Osiris, the Eygptian Sun God, above the pyramid. Below the pyramid is the Latin inscription, New World Order (*Novus Ordo Seclorum*), *with a pair of cloven tongues, one on each side of the* unfinished pyramid. The worlds "Annuit Coeptis" in Latin stand for "He favors our undertaking," or "He is on our side." It is vital to know that this strange image is actually the obverse (reverse side) of the Great Seal of the United States which, oddly, is also pictured on the same side of the dollar. But, why would a seal—much like a rubber stamp—need a reverse side? And why is it that the mysterious, hidden, reverse side of the Great Seal was unknown to the American public at large until 1935? In that year, 32° Mason, President Franklin D. Roosevelt, ordered the U.S. Treasury to add the obverse side of the Great Seal to the design of the $1 bill. Imagine! For about 150 years, no one but the Illuminati insiders knew that a satanic mark—the all-seeing eye and the pyramid of the serpentine sun god—had already been prepared and was being kept for unveiling at some future, occultic appropriate date. Incidentally, the unfinished pyramid represents the illuminati's fond desire of rebuilding the Tower of Babel, whose original builders were confounded by God. Again, however, we find a metaphor and allegory. The rebuilding of the Tower of Babel actually represents something else: The unveiling of the New World Order, a tyrannical, Big Brother system of global government led by an antichrist and superintended by Satan, temporary god of this world.

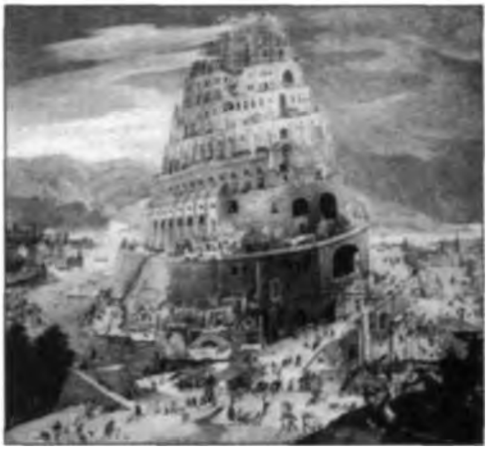

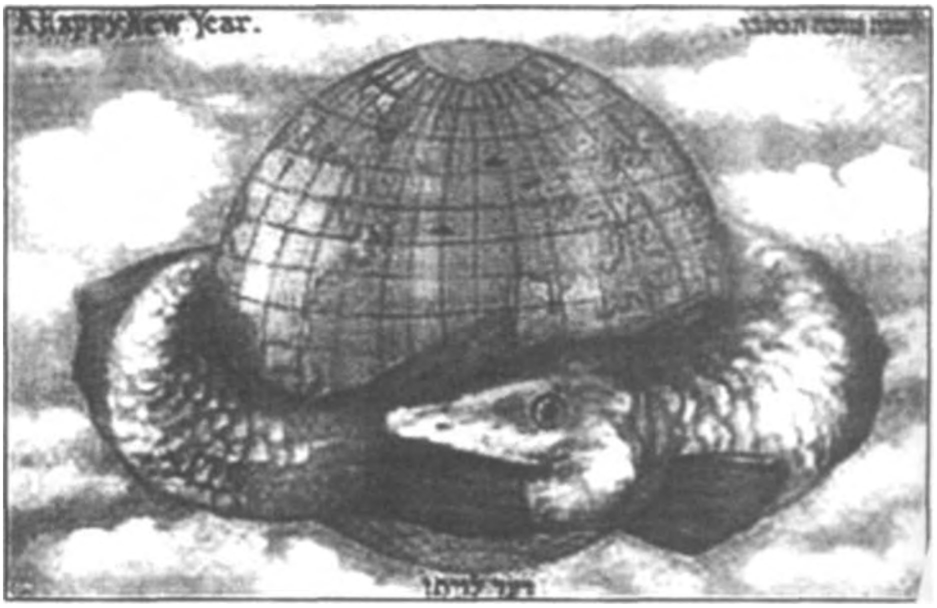
A Happy New Year.

This is a Jewish New Year postcard, by artist Alain Roth in 1915. Amazingly revealing, the postcard image confirms the documentation found in the long controversial *Protocols of the Learned Elders of lion.* In the protocols the Jewish Zionist conspiracy is described as a symbolic serpent encircling the world! As if to emphasize that this is the correct understanding, the writing in Hebrew at the bottom of this Jewish New Year postcard is the word "Leviathan." The identity of Leviathan is revealed in *Isaiah 27* as the serpent, or Satan. Have a Happy New Year, indeed!

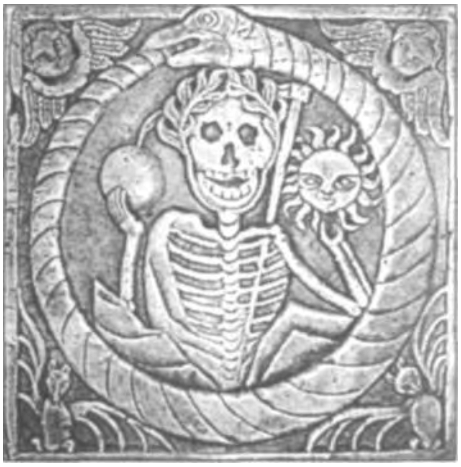

An Oroboros serpent associated with the aionic cycles of life and death. *(Cydonia: The Secret Chronicles of Mars,* by David E. Flynn, 2002)

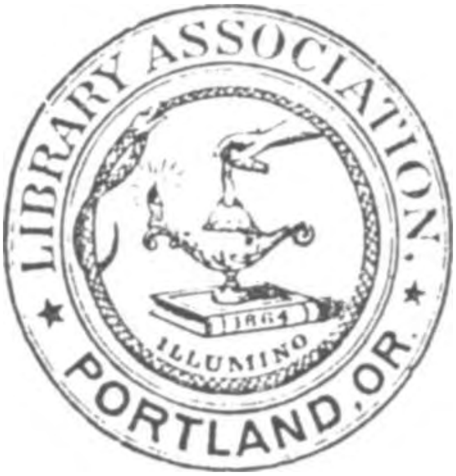
LIBRARY ASSOCIATION.
PORTLAND, OR.
1864
ILLUMINO

Fritz Springmeier, one of the world's top researchers into the global conspiracy, discovered the Illuminati symbol of a snake swallowing its own tail (the Oroboros) being used by Portland, Oregon's public library system as the logo placed by the library on its books. (*Newsletter Front A Christian Ministry,* October 15, 1993)

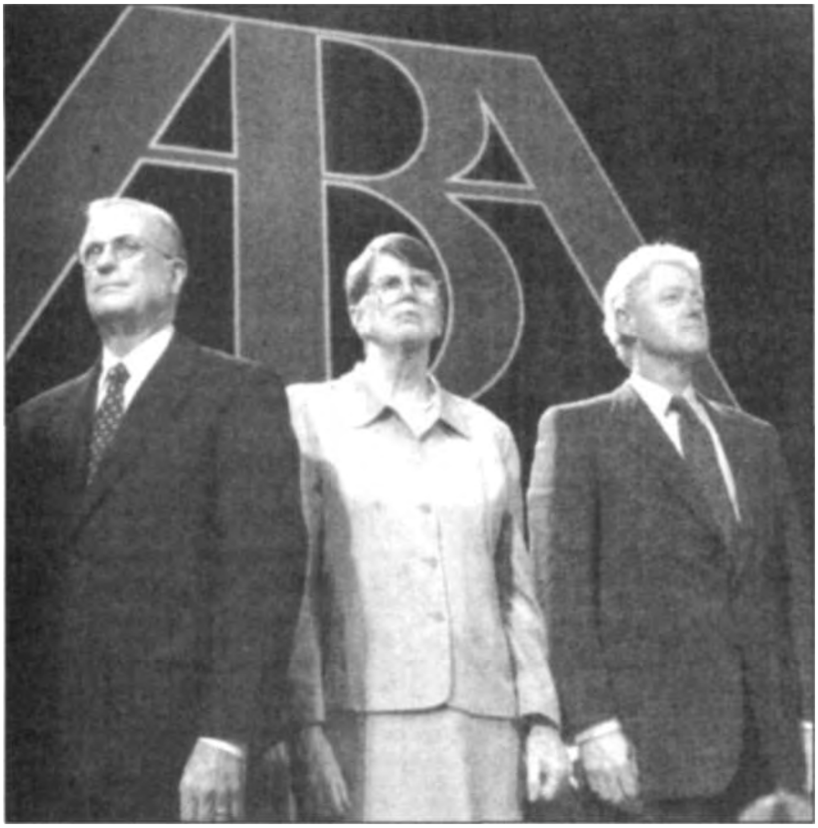

The Illuminati's architectural concept of the unfinished pyramid (the capstone yet to be fused on top) is exactly captured in this intriguing, obviously staged ritual image. This photo, from the American Bar Association's (ABA) annual convention in 1999, shows attorney Philip Anderson (left), president of the ABA, Janet Reno, Attorney-General of the United States, and President Bill Clinton. Notice that each of the three stand erect, a somber and knowing look on their faces, their bodies arranged to create a mystical trinity of unity. Behind them we find the ABA logo, which is in the shape of an unfinished pyramid. *(USA Today* newspaper, August 10, 1999, p. 8A)

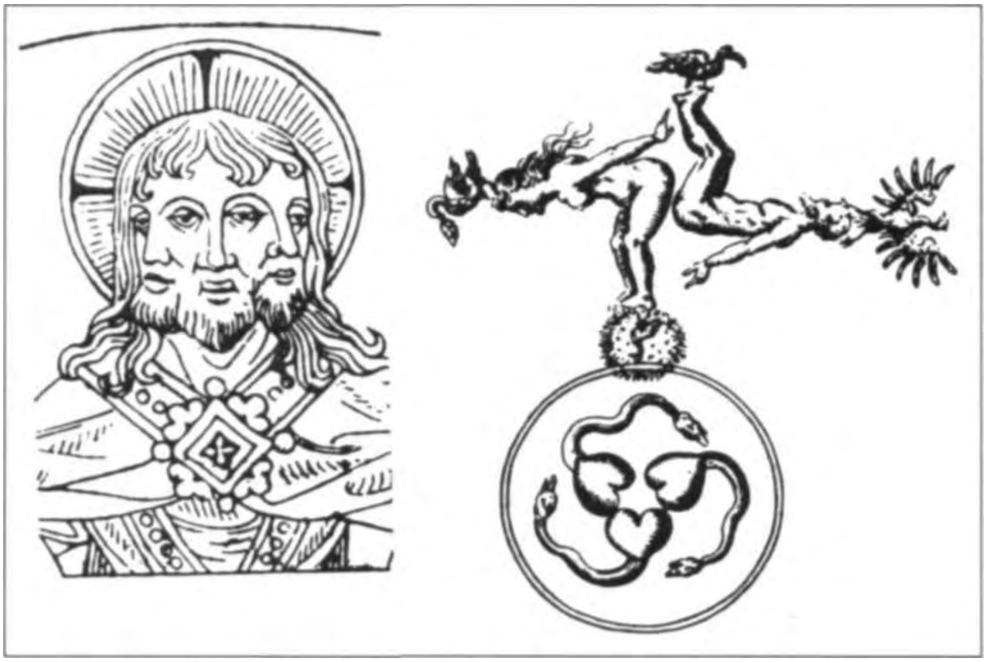

From *The Herder Dictionary of Symbols* (Chiron Publications, Illinois), we have two different representations of the alchemical/mystical concept of *"trinity as unity."* At left is a Rosicrucian seal and at right is an illustration from Valentinius's *Duodecim Claves,* 1678.

FOURTEEN

"Silence, Slaves, or We'll Cut Your Throat From Ear to Ear!"

...binding myself under no less penalty than that of having my throat cut across...

— Oath of Freemasonry
Entered Apprentice
Degree (1°)

But above all things, my brethren, swear not, neither by heaven, neither by the earth, neither by any other oath...

— James 5:12

In every ritual degree of Freemasonry and in all the most important ceremonial rituals and initiations of elite orders, the candidate is required to take an oath and is warned of the hideous and grotesque penalty that awaits him if he dares ever to reveal any of the group's innermost secrets.[1]

For example, in the very first degree oath of Freemasonry, the candidate declares:

> ...binding myself under no less penalty than that of having my throat cut across,
> my tongue torn out by its roots, and my body buried in the rough sands of the sea,
> at low-water mark, where the tide ebbs and flows twice in twenty-four hours,
> should I ever knowingly violate this my Entered Apprentice obligation.

Second degree Masons recite the following heinous oath:

> ...binding myself under no less penalty than that of having my breast torn open, my heart plucked out, and placed on the highest pinnacle of the temple there to be devoured by the vultures of the air, should I ever knowingly violate the Fellow Craft obligation.

The third degree oath proclaims:

> ...binding myself under no less penalty than that of having my body severed in two, my bowels taken from thence and burned to ashes, the ashes scattered before the four winds of heaven, that no more remembrance might be had of so vile and wicked a wretch as I would be, should I ever, knowingly, violate this my Master Mason's obligation.

That's not all. In the 4th degree, Mark Master of the York Rite, the candidate performs a ritual which symbolizes having his "ear smitten off" if he reveals the order's secrets. And for the 5th degree, Past Master, the hapless candidate agrees as follows:

> ...binding myself under no less penalty than (in addition to all my former penalties) to have my tongue split from tip to root, that I might thereafter be unable to pronounce the word.

The sixth degree (Most Excellent Master) of the York Rite continues with the horrific penalties:

> ...binding myself under no less penalty than to have my breast torn open, and my heart and vitals taken from thence, and exposed to rot on the dunghill.

It's no wonder that our Lord Jesus Christ, as recorded in the Holy Scriptures, commanded that His followers take no oaths *(Matthew 5:34-37).* Christ's brother, James, put it this way: "But above all things, my brethren, swear not, neither by heaven, neither by the earth, neither by any other oath" *(James 5:12).* Let Masons and other Illuminists who lie claiming to be "Christian" believers try to dance around and vainly evade this commandment.

The Sign of Silence

Illuminists have a sign to be used to remind associates when it is needful to stonewall or to shut up about a matter. In the York Rite initiation for the Royal Master's Degree, this sign, called the Due-guard, "is made by placing the forefinger of the right hand upon the lips."[2] *Richardson's Monitor of Freemasonry* remarks that this sign "is a caution to a companion when you wish him to keep silent."[3]

In the ritual degree ceremony of the Secret Master, the candidate places two fingers to his lip and is told that the obligation he is taking "enjoins secrecy and to

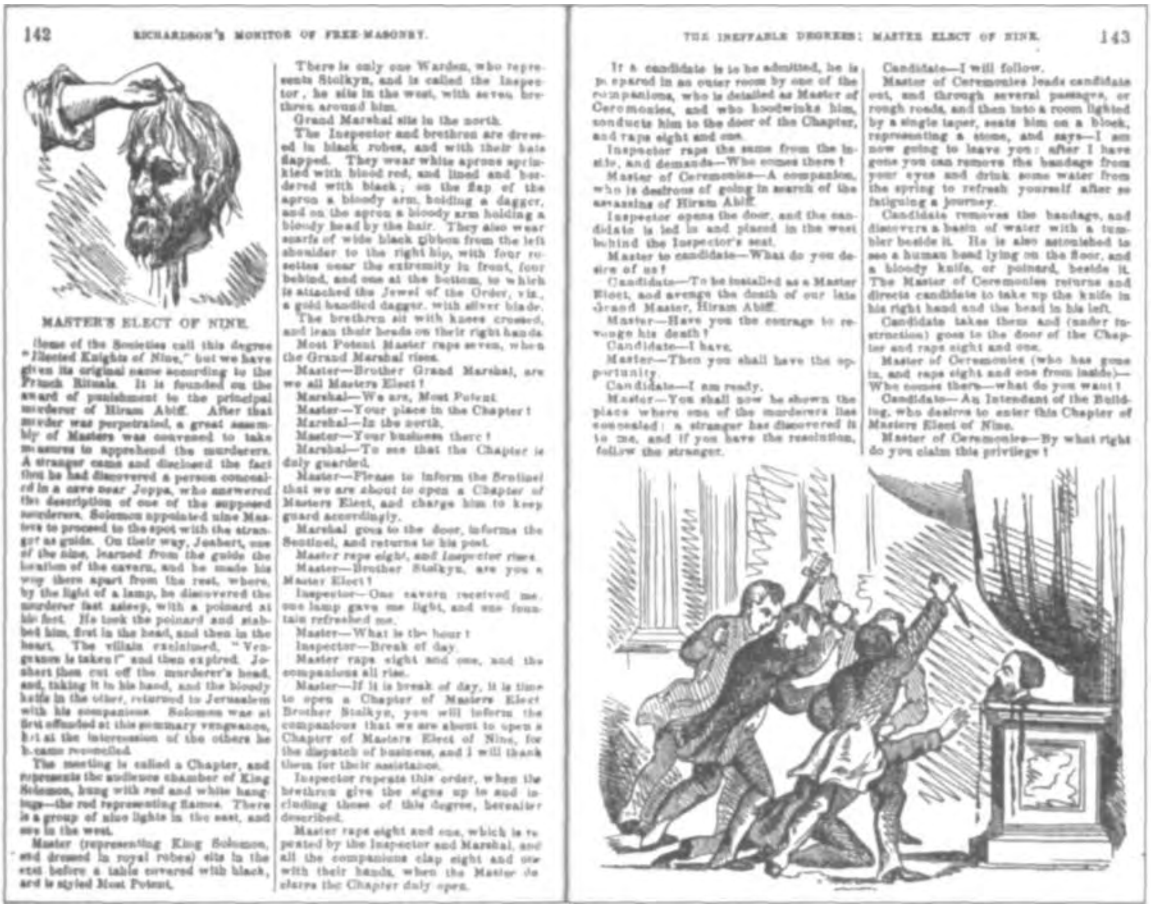

142 RICHARDSON'S MONITOR OF FREE-MASONRY.

MASTER'S ELECT OF NINE.

Some of the Societies call this degree "Elected Knights of Nine," but we have given its original name according to the French Rituals. It is founded on the award of punishment to the principal murderer of Hiram Abiff. After that murder was perpetrated, a great assembly of Masters was convened to take measures to apprehend the murderers. A stranger came and disclosed the fact that he had discovered a person concealed in a cave near Joppa, who answered the description of one of the supposed murderers. Solomon appointed nine Masters to proceed to the spot with the stranger as guide. On their way, Joabert, one of the nine, learned from the guide the location of the cavern, and he made his way there apart from the rest, where, by the light of a lamp, he discovered the murderer fast asleep, with a poinard at his feet. He took the poinard and stabbed him, first in the head, and then in the heart. The villain exclaimed, "Vengeance is taken!" and then expired. Joabert then cut off the murderer's head, and, taking it in his hand, and the bloody knife in the other, returned to Jerusalem with his companions. Solomon was at first offended at this summary vengeance, but at the intercession of the others he became reconciled.

The meeting is called a Chapter, and represents the audience chamber of King Solomon, hung with red and white hangings—the red representing flames. There is a group of nine lights in the east, and one in the west.

Master (representing King Solomon, and dressed in royal robes) sits in the east before a table covered with black, and is styled Most Potent.

There is only one Warden, who represents Stolkyn, and is called the Inspector, he sits in the west, with seven brethren around him.

Grand Marshal sits in the north.

The Inspector and brethren are dressed in black robes, and with their hats flapped. They wear white aprons sprinkled with blood red, and lined and bordered with black; on the flap of the apron a bloody arm, holding a dagger, and on the apron a bloody arm holding a bloody head by the hair. They also wear scarfs of wide black ribbon from the left shoulder to the right hip, with four rosettes near the extremity in front, four behind, and one at the bottom, to which is attached the Jewel of the Order, viz., a gold handled dagger, with silver blade.

The brethren sit with knees crossed, and lean their heads on their right hands.

Most Potent Master raps seven, when the Grand Marshal rises.

Master—Brother Grand Marshal, are we all Masters Elect?

Marshal—We are, Most Potent.

Master—Your place in the Chapter?

Marshal—In the north.

Master—Your business there?

Marshal—To see that the Chapter is duly guarded.

Master—Please to inform the Sentinel that we are about to open a Chapter of Masters Elect, and charge him to keep guard accordingly.

Marshal goes to the door, informs the Sentinel, and returns to his post.

Master raps eight, and Inspector rises.

Master—Brother Stolkyn, are you a Master Elect?

Inspector—One cavern received me, one lamp gave me light, and one fountain refreshed me.

Master—What is the hour?

Inspector—Break of day.

Master raps eight and one, and the companions all rise.

Master—If it is break of day, it is time to open a Chapter of Masters Elect. Brother Stolkyn, you will inform the companions that we are about to open a Chapter of Masters Elect of Nine, for the dispatch of business, and I will thank them for their assistance.

Inspector repeats this order, when the brethren give the signs up to and including those of this degree, hereafter described.

Master raps eight and one, which is repeated by the Inspector and Marshal, and all the companions clap eight and one with their hands, when the Master declares the Chapter duly open.

THE INEFFABLE DEGREES: MASTER ELECT OF NINE. 143

If a candidate is to be admitted, he is prepared in an outer room by one of the companions, who is detailed as Master of Ceremonies, and who hoodwinks him, conducts him to the door of the Chapter, and raps eight and one.

Inspector raps the same from the inside, and demands—Who comes there?

Master of Ceremonies—A companion, who is desirous of going in search of the assassins of Hiram Abiff.

Inspector opens the door, and the candidate is led in and placed in the west behind the Inspector's seat.

Master to candidate—What do you desire of us?

Candidate—To be installed as a Master Elect, and avenge the death of our late Grand Master, Hiram Abiff.

Master—Have you the courage to revenge his death?

Candidate—I have.

Master—Then you shall have the opportunity.

Candidate—I am ready.

Master—You shall now be shown the place where one of the murderers lies concealed; a stranger has discovered it to me, and if you have the resolution, follow the stranger.

Candidate—I will follow.

Master of Ceremonies leads candidate out, and through several passages, or rough roads, and then into a room lighted by a single taper, seats him on a block, representing a stone, and says—I am now going to leave you; after I have gone you can remove the bandage from your eyes and drink some water from the spring to refresh yourself after so fatiguing a journey.

Candidate removes the bandage, and discovers a basin of water with a tumbler beside it. He is also astonished to see a human head lying on the floor, and a bloody knife, or poinard, beside it. The Master of Ceremonies returns and directs candidate to take up the knife in his right hand and the head in his left.

Candidate takes them and (under instruction) goes to the door of the Chapter and raps eight and one.

Master of Ceremonies (who has gone in, and raps eight and one from inside)—Who comes there—what do you want?

Candidate—An Intendant of the Building, who desires to enter this Chapter of Masters Elect of Nine.

Master of Ceremonies—By what right do you claim this privilege?

***Richardson's Monitor of Freemasonry* (pp. 142-143) provides these bloody reminders of the horrible penalties that await the Mason or other elitist who divulges secrets of the Order. "Silence, Slaves" is certainly the catchword for the submissive servants of Satan's earthly elite corps of leaders.**

obey the orders and decrees of the Council of Princes of Jerusalem, under penalties of all former degrees."[4]

For the fifth degree (Past Master) the penal dueguard sign is the placement of the thumb to one's mouth, again indicating the warning to keep silent.

A Softening of Penalties?

Freemasonry and many other secret societies have been under siege in recent years as the author of *Codex Magica* and a number of other courageous men have boldly come forward exposing the frightening, cold and bloody oaths taken by millions of Masons around the globe. As a consequence, as I understand it, the leadership of the Lodge and other groups has more recently begun to "soften the edges," so to speak and to eliminate some of the more egregious and ghastly phrases and words used in the rituals.

In June 2001, according to *The Scottish Rite Journal,* C. Fred Kleinknecht, Sovereign Grand Commander, 33°, the reigning potentate of Freemasonry, presented copies of the *Revised Standard Pike Ritual* to his subordinate Sovereign Grand Commanders.[5] Kleinknecht explained to his lieutenants that this new guide provides "modified

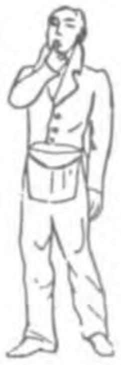

For the Secret Master degree, the candidate places two fingers to his lip and is told that his obligation "enjoins secrecy." (*Richardson's Monitor of Freemasonry*, p. 133)

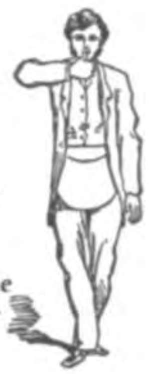

The fifth degree in the York Rite requires this Due-guard be given (thumb of the right hand to mouth) and a sworn oath that the candidate will never disclose "the secrets of a brother." (*Duncan's Masonic Ritual and Monitor*, 3d ed., p. 189)

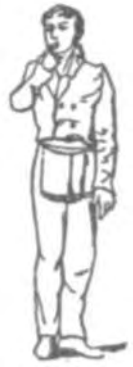

In the Royal Master's degree, in the Due-guard , placing the forefinger to the lip tells one's companion to keep silent. (*Richardson's Monitor of Freemasonry*, p. 81)

versions" of the seventh and twenty-seventh degrees which were originally created by Albert Pike, their much revered nineteenth century "Illustrious Sovereign Grand Master."[6] One can assume that to appease its critics, further editions of the ritual will water down the most grievous of the penalties.

Other ways, however, will undoubtedly be found to motivate the membership to keep the secrets, including banishment from elite status and possibly even the periodic assassination of disciples who stray and who recklessly disregard the dictate to retain secrecy.

Still it is of interest that the Masonic elite are embarrassed over being outed for their hideous oaths. What's more, in the Mormon Church (LDS), the penalty portions of the Masonic-oriented rituals celebrated in the Temple also have recently been watered down somewhat.

It sure seems as though the big-wigs of the secret orders are running scared, doesn't it? How they must despise Christians like Texe Marrs who are forcing these changes on a reluctant and evil Illuminati corps.

Pagan Origins of the Sign of Silence

The Masonic practice of signs warning of frightening penalties for breaking silence most definitely is of pagan origins. In Greece, Rome, Babylon, and Egypt, those who had loose lips often paid with their lives and fortunes, so sacred and guarded were the secrets of the Mystery Religions.

The Egyptians and Romans even worshipped a god of silence, *Harpocrates,* a form of the solar deity. Harpocrates was often pictured sitting on his mother's lap, suckling at her breast. Later, the Catholic Church adopted similar images in the veneration of Mary with child. Sometimes Harpocrates was pictured naked or with horns on his head, symbols of power. He often sat on a Lotus flower. The Lotus is a sexual symbol of the female vagina.[7]

In the active days of Benjamin Franklin and our nation's founders, their secret society counterparts in Great Britain made use of the god Harpocrates. Sir Francis Dashwood, instrumental in the British operation of the Illuminati, recruited nobility for his Hell-Fire Club, a secret group based on magic, satanism, and sex. Numerous harlots—and sometimes newly deflowered virgins—were scandalously used by Dashwood and his occultic, jolly men. On club premises, the members erected a statue of Harpocrates, depicting him solemnly holding a finger to his mouth to remind the frolicking members of the Hell-Fire Club that, "What happens here, stays here."[8]

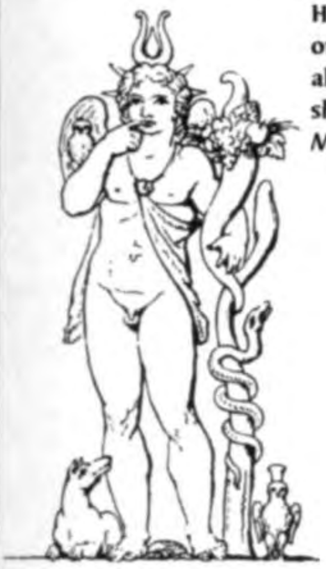

Harpocrates, or Horus. Note the serpent and other symbols and figures around him. Notice also the finger to his mouth and the harp-shaped object on his head. The comedian Harpo Marx imitated this deity.

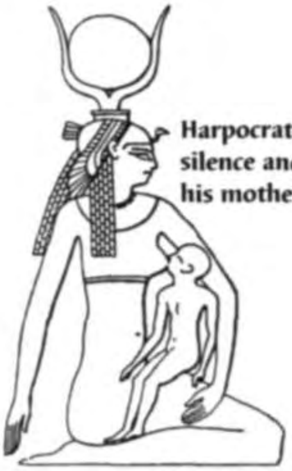

Harpocrates, god of silence and secrecy, at his mother Isis' breast.

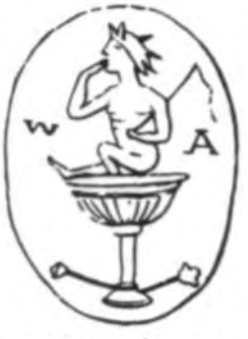

Harpocrates the sun god on a magical gem. (From the book, *Jesus Christ, Sun of God: Ancient Cosmology and Early Christian Symbolism*, by David Fiedeler, Quest Books, 1983)

Rome also had the Mystery Goddess Angerona. Her statue showed Angerona as a beautiful woman holding a finger to her mouth, "the emblem of secrecy and mystery."[9] Angerona watched over the sexual promiscuity goings-on at various orgies connected with the festivals of the solstices and the changing of the seasons.

The Mystery Religions of the Romans and other peoples especially needed the utmost secrecy because, during the higher initiations, the unspoken names of the hidden or unknown god, or gods, was often revealed. As the Christians gained in numbers and influence, they began to properly understand that these names were actually synonyms for Satan, Lucifer, the Devil. Great effort was therefore taken by pagans to obscure or prevent the unmasking of this satanic connection.[10]

An interesting sidenote: As a child watching TV in the early days (1950s), one of the most popular programs was a game show hosted by Jewish comedian Groucho Marx. Groucho had a brother, Harpo Marx, who was also a comedian and starred in numerous TV programs and in movies. Harpo always played the cherubic character of a mute young boy, with blond hair in curls. In other words, Harpo was cast in the image of Harpocrates, god of silence and secrecy, also known as Horus the child.

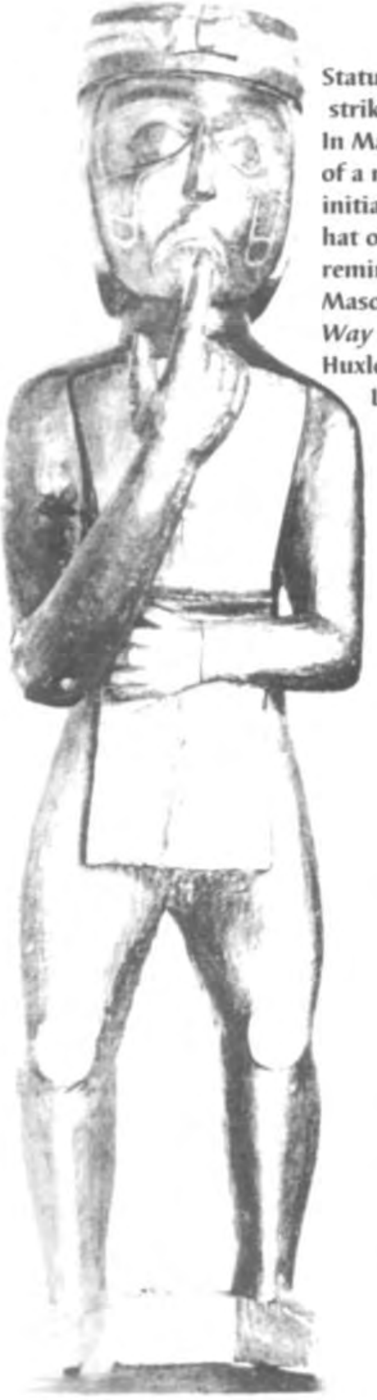

Statue of a Kwakiutl Indian chief strikes a distinctly Masonic pose. In Masonic literature are accounts of a number of Indians being initiated into Masonic lodges. The hat on this chief's head is also reminiscent of that worn by Masons. (Photo: from book, *The Way of the Sacred*, by Francis Huxley, Bloomsbury Books, London, 1989)

Harpocrates, the Egyptian god of secrecy and concealment, carved into a small basalt stone tablet, probably used as a seal. The image of Harpocrates is that of a hideous-looking dragon springing up from a lotus flower. (Photo from *The Adepts In the Esoteric Classical Tradition*, by Manly P. Hall, The Philosophical Research Society, Los Angeles, CA, 1988)

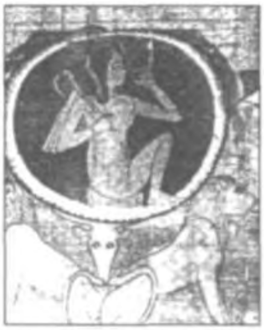

The Egyptian form of the god Harpocrates giving the sign of silence is shown in this ancient drawing. Below and supporting Harpocrates is the lion-god and encircling him is the supreme deity, the Oroboros, or serpent.

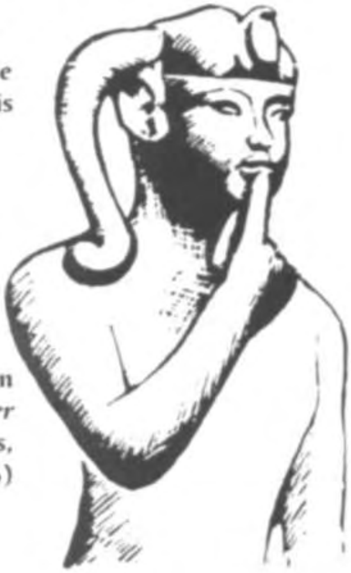

Representation of Horus, son of the Egyptian god Osiris. (Drawing from *The Herder Dictionary of Symbols*, Chiron Publications, Wilmette, Illinois, 1986)

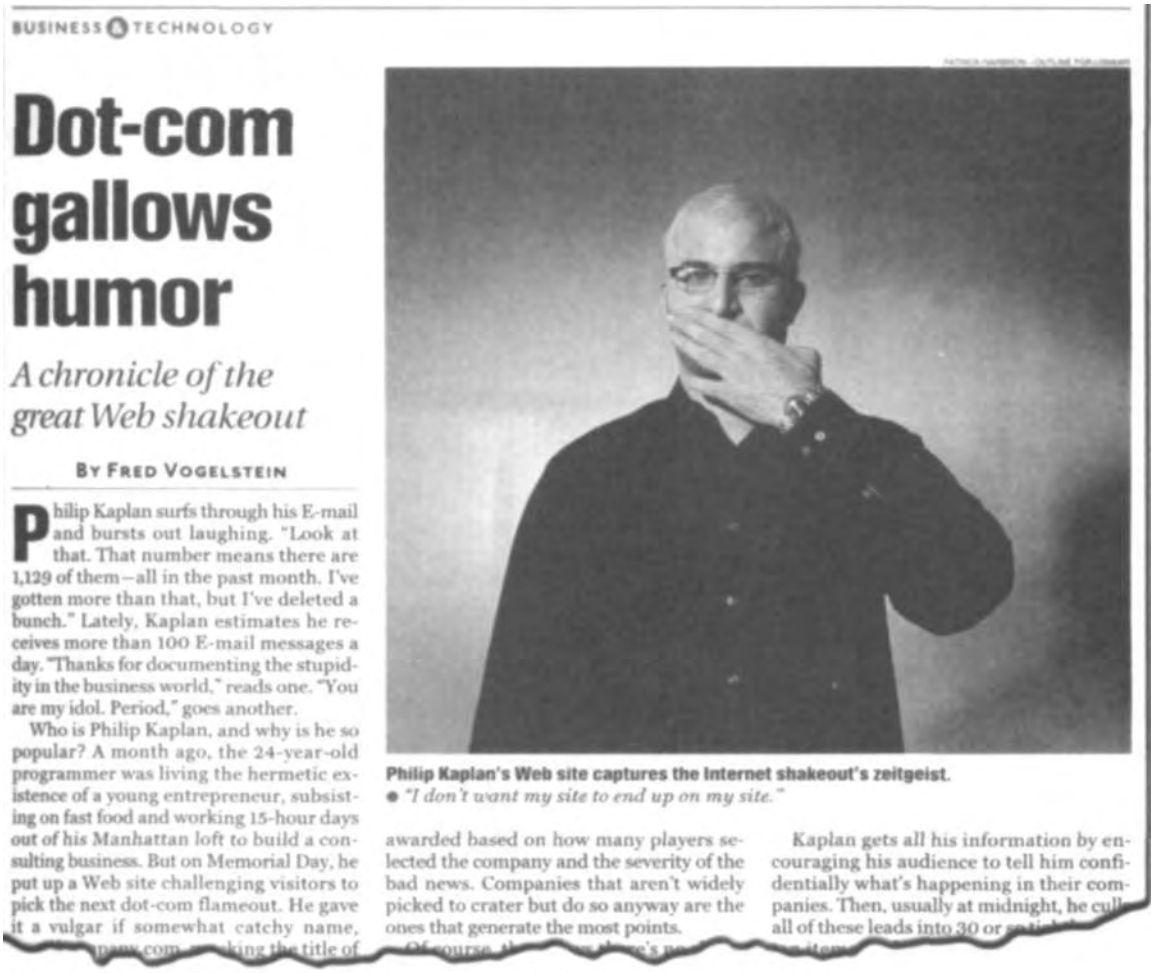

BUSINESS & TECHNOLOGY

Dot-com gallows humor

A chronicle of the great Web shakeout

BY FRED VOGELSTEIN

Philip Kaplan surfs through his E-mail and bursts out laughing. "Look at that. That number means there are 1,129 of them—all in the past month. I've gotten more than that, but I've deleted a bunch." Lately, Kaplan estimates he receives more than 100 E-mail messages a day. "Thanks for documenting the stupidity in the business world," reads one. "You are my idol. Period," goes another.

Who is Philip Kaplan, and why is he so popular? A month ago, the 24-year-old programmer was living the hermetic existence of a young entrepreneur, subsisting on fast food and working 15-hour days out of his Manhattan loft to build a consulting business. But on Memorial Day, he put up a Web site challenging visitors to pick the next dot-com flameout. He gave it a vulgar if somewhat catchy name,

awarded based on how many players selected the company and the severity of the bad news. Companies that aren't widely picked to crater but do so anyway are the ones that generate the most points.

Kaplan gets all his information by encouraging his audience to tell him confidentially what's happening in their companies. Then, usually at midnight, he

all of these leads into 30 or

Philip Kaplan's Web site captures the Internet shakeout's zeitgeist.
● *"I don't want my site to end up on my site."*

Philip Kaplan, who has gained some notoriety for his successful website, *f——dcompany.com*. (Photo: *US News & World Report*, July 10, 2000, p. 41)

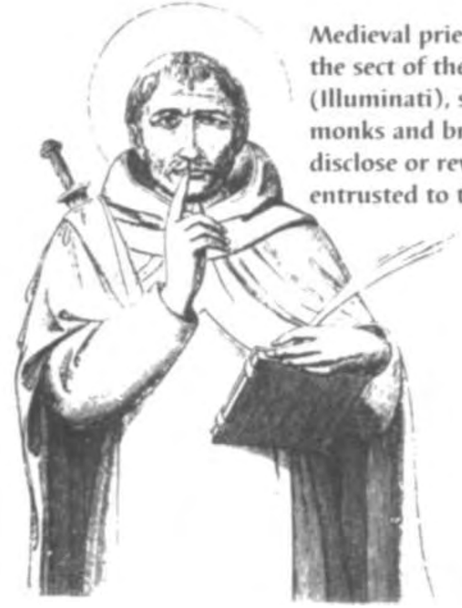

Medieval priest affiliated with the sect of the *Alumbrados* (Illuminati), signifying to his monks and brothers not to disclose or reveal the secrets entrusted to their order.

Colin Powell, steeped in Jewish magic and cabalism, gives the due-guard of the Royal Arch Mason.

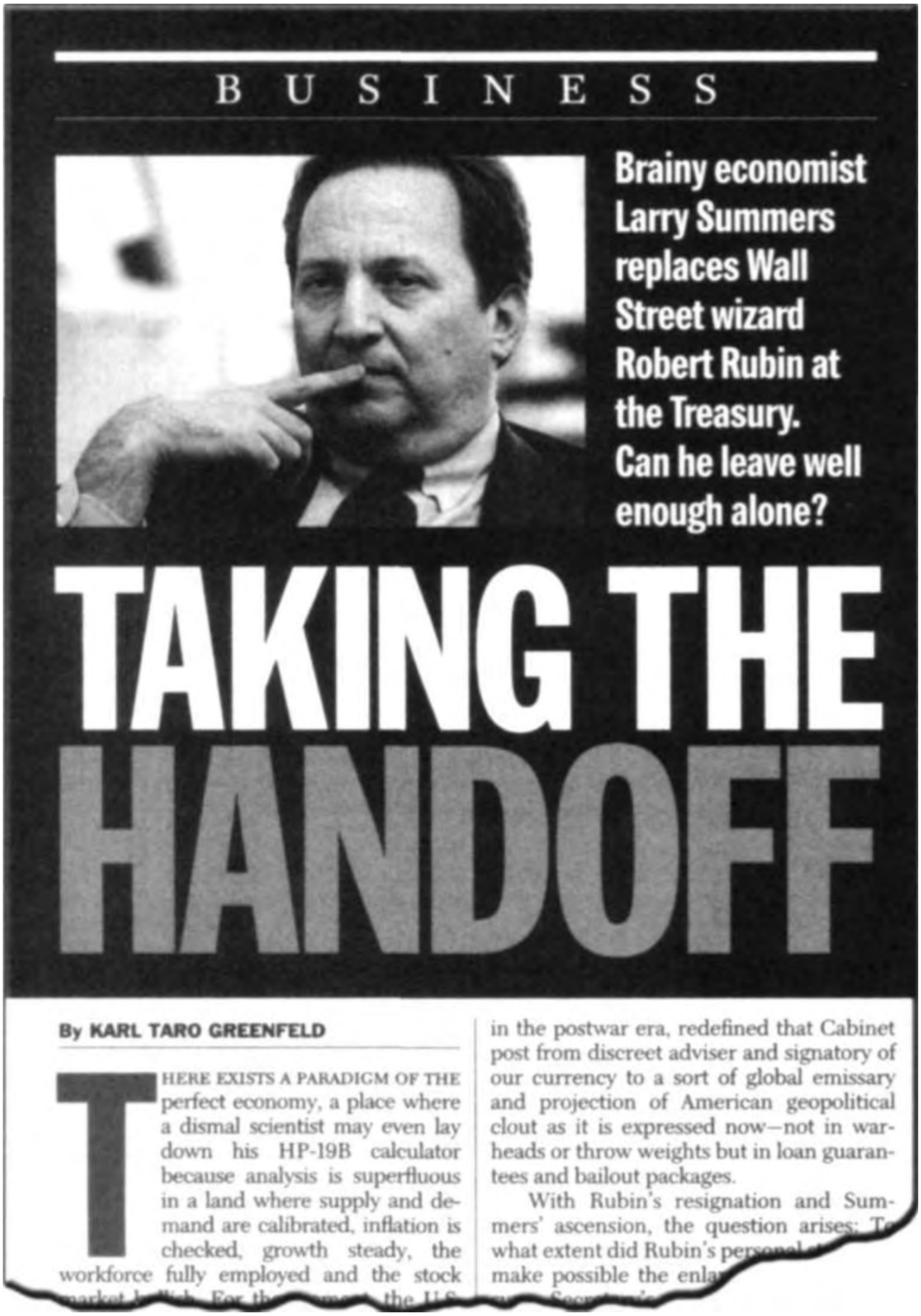

BUSINESS

Brainy economist Larry Summers replaces Wall Street wizard Robert Rubin at the Treasury. Can he leave well enough alone?

TAKING THE HANDOFF

By KARL TARO GREENFELD

THERE EXISTS A PARADIGM OF THE perfect economy, a place where a dismal scientist may even lay down his HP-19B calculator because analysis is superfluous in a land where supply and demand are calibrated, inflation is checked, growth steady, the workforce fully employed and the stock

in the postwar era, redefined that Cabinet post from discreet adviser and signatory of our currency to a sort of global emissary and projection of American geopolitical clout as it is expressed now—not in warheads or throw weights but in loan guarantees and bailout packages.

With Rubin's resignation and Summers' ascension, the question arises: what extent did Rubin's make possible the

Lawrence Summers, President of Harvard University and former Secretary of the Treasury under President Bill Clinton. (Photo: *Time* magazine, May 24, 1999)

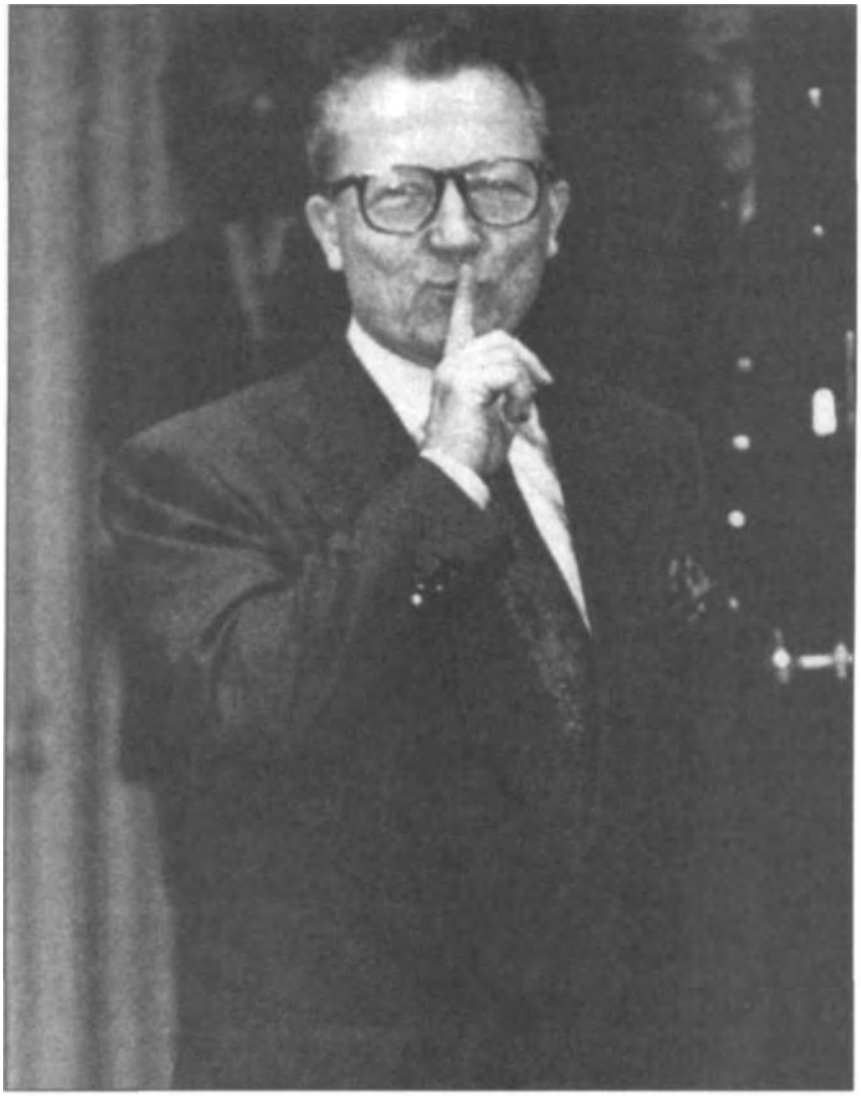

Jacques Delors, from France, head of the European Community, arriving for a conference at 10 Downing Street, residence of England's Prime Minister. The caption under the photo reads: *"Jacques Delors gives nothing away as he arrives at 10 Downing Street this week."* (Photo: *The European* newspaper, June 25-28, 1992, p. 6)

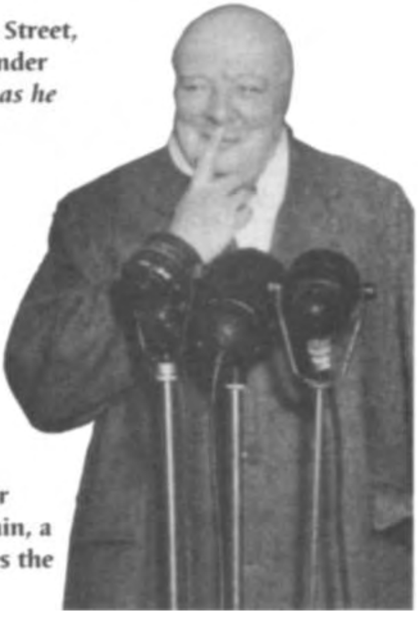

Sir Winston Churchill, former Prime Minister of Great Britain, a Mason and Druid Priest, gives the sign of silence.

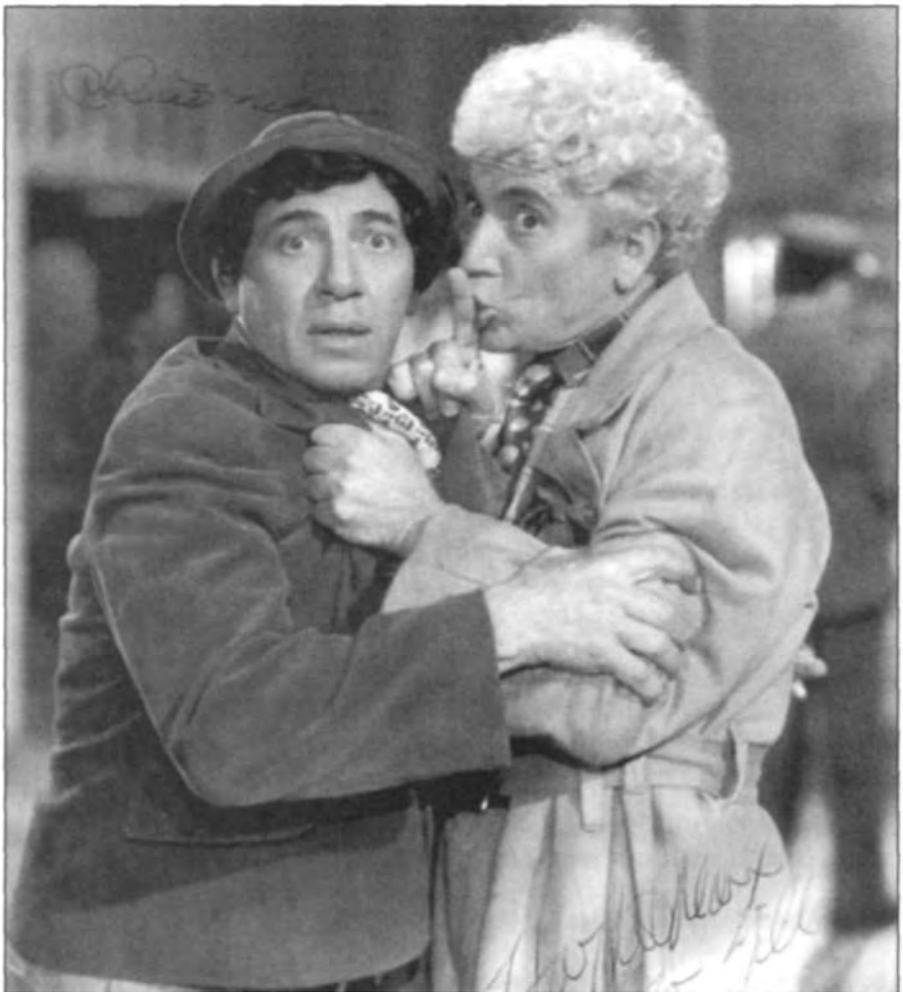

Harpo Marx giving the *silence* sign, finger to lips. One of the three Marx Brothers comedy team—Groucho and Chico were brothers—Harpo's given name at birth was Adolph, which he later changed legally to Arthur. But in his entertainment career, he played a mute pantomimist and uttered not a word. His stage name, *"Harpo,"* was obviously a derivative of the name of *Harpocrates,* the ancient Greek god of silence.

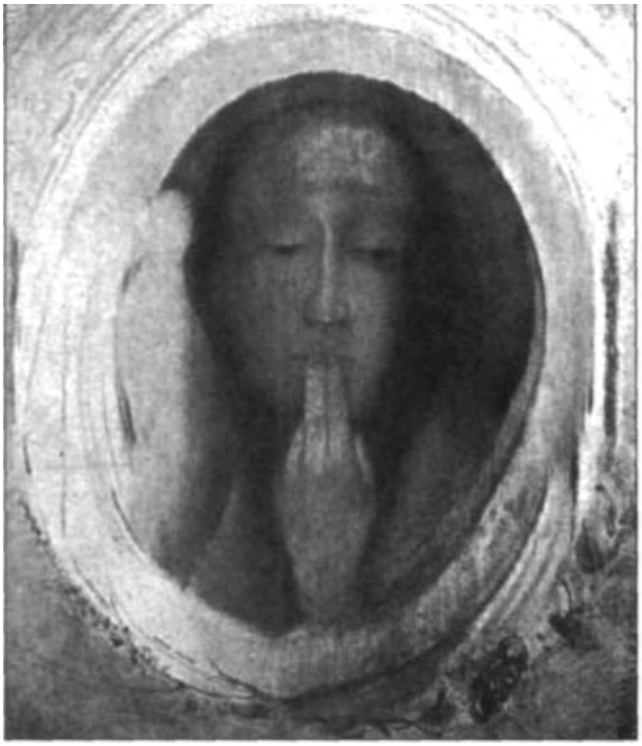

***"Silence,"* a painting by Odilon Redon (1911), is a portrait of Harpocrates, the God of Mystical Silence.**

FIFTEEN

Up to Their Necks in Mischief

When it's your neck up there on the chopping block, you don't want a dull blade.

— Anonymous spectator in
crowd at guillotine
execution, Paris, France, 1789

You've no doubt heard the old saying "up to their necks in mischief," haven't you? Well, it is definitely applicable to the Illuminist elite and their legion of secret society puppets.

Hanging over the fireplace in the famous Green Room at the White House in Washington, D.C. is an acclaimed oil portrait of Benjamin Franklin, one of our country's most celebrated "founding fathers." It depicts the famed statesman sitting studiously, poring over an ancient document which he is holding with his right hand. His left hand, meanwhile, is at his throat, set with the finger in a V-design, the thumb pushing upward to his chin. Franklin's neck is a prominent focus of the painting. Obviously, this is a sign Franklin is communicating.

I have observed this same fascinating sign being performed by many other elitists, both ancient and modern. However, Old Ben certainly is the epitome of the occult secret society patriarch. This man's feats as a Mason and Rosicrucian are legendary. *Mackey's Encyclopedia of Freemasonry* acknowledges Franklin as "a devoted Freemason occupying for many years places of official prominence and serving his (Masonic) Brethren with conspicuous Masonic zeal and aptitude."[1]

The same Encyclopedia spends a great amount of space listing Franklin's exploits and positions held as a Freemason, not only in the United States, but in Great Britain and in France. In 1779, he was elected Worshipful Master of the Lodge of the Nine Sisters in Paris, and in 1782 he became head of a lodge of the Grand Orient de Paris. Earlier, Benjamin Franklin had officiated at the Masonic funeral of one of his

"brothers," the monstrously wicked atheist, Voltaire.[2] Voltaire, as historians will attest, was certainly up to his neck in mischief.

The Neck A Sign of Sacrifice

A number of dictionaries of symbols state that the hand placed on the neck signifies *sacrifice.* Now sacrifice can have at least two meanings—one, the continuing threat of

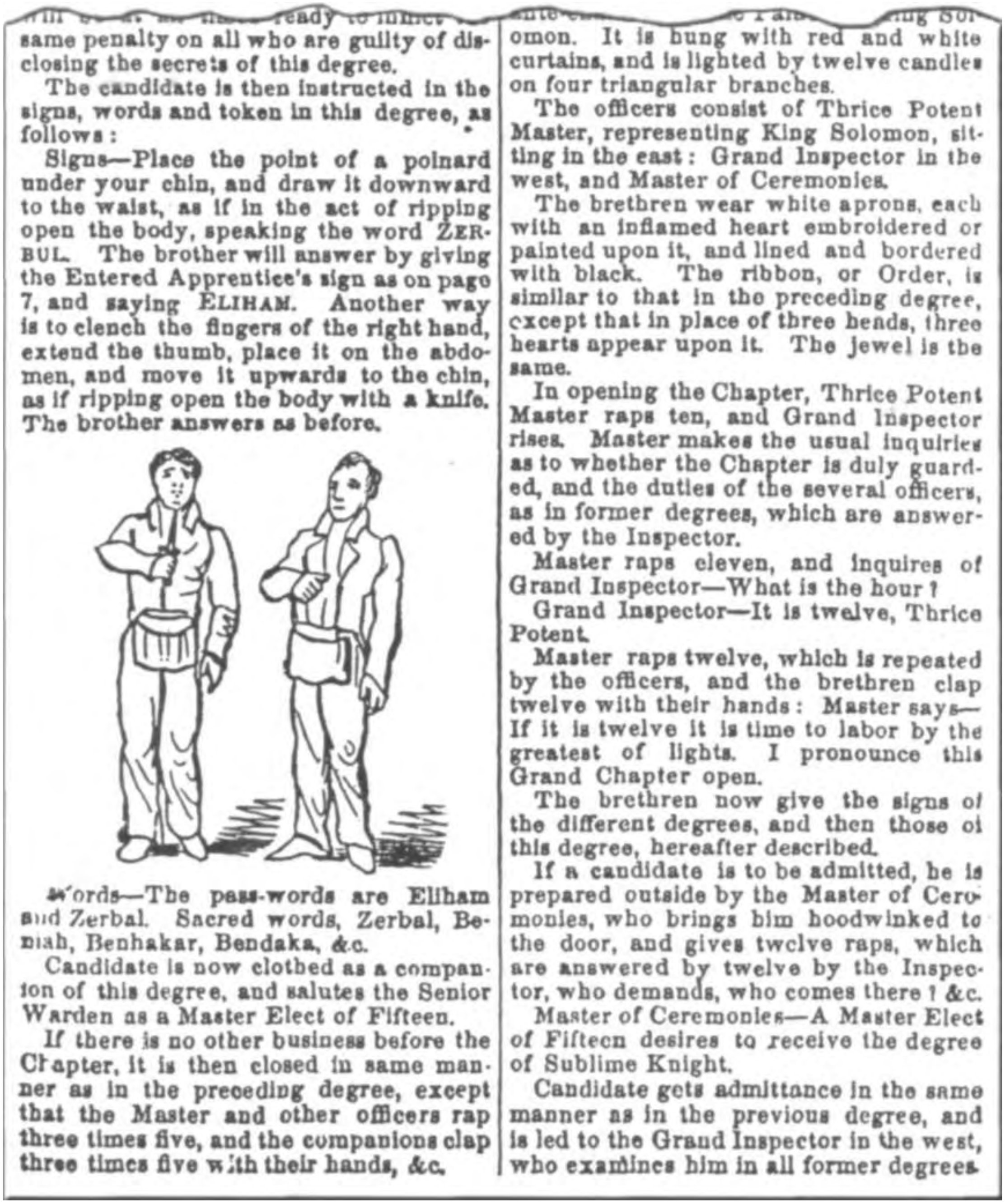

same penalty on all who are guilty of disclosing the secrets of this degree.

The candidate is then instructed in the signs, words and token in this degree, as follows:

Signs—Place the point of a poinard under your chin, and draw it downward to the waist, as if in the act of ripping open the body, speaking the word ZERBUL. The brother will answer by giving the Entered Apprentice's sign as on page 7, and saying ELIHAM. Another way is to clench the fingers of the right hand, extend the thumb, place it on the abdomen, and move it upwards to the chin, as if ripping open the body with a knife. The brother answers as before.

Words—The pass-words are Eliham and Zerbal. Sacred words, Zerbal, Beniah, Benhakar, Bendaka, &c.

Candidate is now clothed as a companion of this degree, and salutes the Senior Warden as a Master Elect of Fifteen.

If there is no other business before the Chapter, it is then closed in same manner as in the preceding degree, except that the Master and other officers rap three times five, and the companions clap three times five with their hands, &c.

omon. It is hung with red and white curtains, and is lighted by twelve candles on four triangular branches.

The officers consist of Thrice Potent Master, representing King Solomon, sitting in the east: Grand Inspector in the west, and Master of Ceremonies.

The brethren wear white aprons, each with an inflamed heart embroidered or painted upon it, and lined and bordered with black. The ribbon, or Order, is similar to that in the preceding degree, except that in place of three heads, three hearts appear upon it. The jewel is the same.

In opening the Chapter, Thrice Potent Master raps ten, and Grand Inspector rises. Master makes the usual inquiries as to whether the Chapter is duly guarded, and the duties of the several officers, as in former degrees, which are answered by the Inspector.

Master raps eleven, and inquires of Grand Inspector—What is the hour?

Grand Inspector—It is twelve, Thrice Potent.

Master raps twelve, which is repeated by the officers, and the brethren clap twelve with their hands: Master says—If it is twelve it is time to labor by the greatest of lights. I pronounce this Grand Chapter open.

The brethren now give the signs of the different degrees, and then those of this degree, hereafter described.

If a candidate is to be admitted, he is prepared outside by the Master of Ceremonies, who brings him hoodwinked to the door, and gives twelve raps, which are answered by twelve by the Inspector, who demands, who comes there? &c.

Master of Ceremonies—A Master Elect of Fifteen desires to receive the degree of Sublime Knight.

Candidate gets admittance in the same manner as in the previous degree, and is led to the Grand Inspector in the west, who examines him in all former degrees.

One of the signs for ritual of the Grand Master Elect Degree is a dagger under the chin. *(Richardson's Monitor of Freemasonry, p.* 146)

the penalties to be applied to punish those adepts and initiates who so impertinently reveal the secrets of the Order; and two, the willingness of the individual performing the sign to sacrifice himself for the good of the Order, or for the good of the cause or Great Work of the Illuminati.

The Neck Ritual

The neck, being the bridge to the head and brain (intellect) and the point at which the jugular vein can be ruptured by a knife or stone thrust, does seem to be an appropriate place to physically focus this sign. *Duncan's Masonic Ritual and Monitor* summarizes the "Penal" code of Freemasonry. That reference book says the various penal signs are designed so that each "intimates that the stiff neck of the disobedient shall be cut off from the head of the living..."[3]

The ritual for the Grand Master Elect Degree, according to *Richardson's Monitor of Freemasonry,* has the candidate either placing the point of a knife under the chin, or alternatively clenching the fingers of the right hand, extending the thumb, placing it on the abdomen, and moving it upwards to the chin, as if ripping the body open with a knife.

In the York Rite, the Past Master, or Fifth Degree, the candidate places the thumb of his right hand (fingers clinched) upon his lips. This, says *Duncan's,* "alludes to the penalty of having his tongue split from tip to root."[4]

The "Pain in the Neck" Degree

And finally, according to *Richardson's Monitor of Freemasonry,* the candidate for the Select Master Degree makes the second sign for that degree by crossing the hands and arms just below his neck—creating sort of a scissors effect as if he is ready to chop off his own neck—and then he draws the crossed hands and arms downward. The meaning is said to indicate the willingness of the candidate to have the body quartered if he discloses any secrets. (I informally call this the *"Pain in the Neck"* sign since it starts with a scissors at the neck).

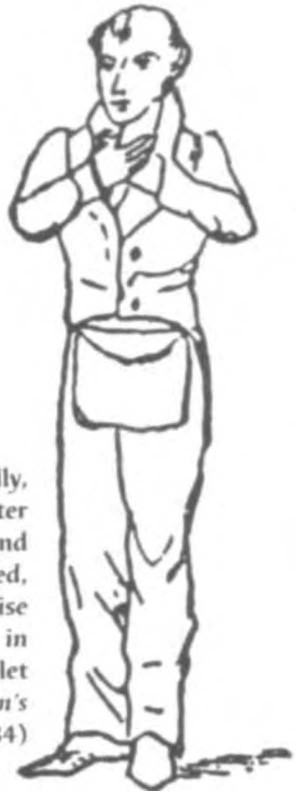

The sign I call the "Pain in the Neck." Actually, it is the second sign in the Select Master degree and is made by crossing the hands and arms. Then, after this scissor look is effected, with a quick motion draw the hands edge-wise across the body downwards as if you were in the act of quartering the body. Finally, let them drop by your sides. (*Richardson's Monitor of Freemasonry*, p. 84)

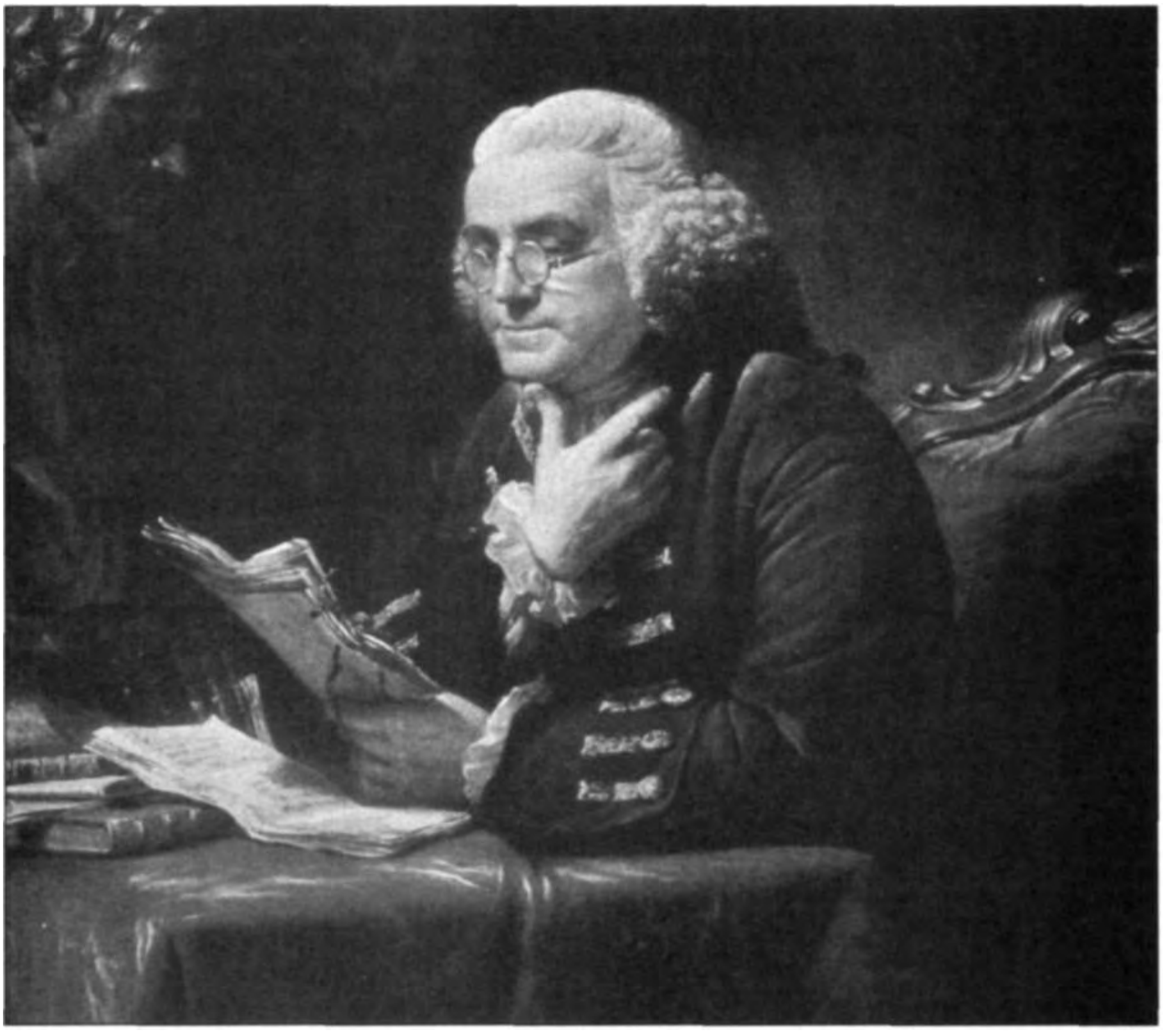

Benjamin Franklin, Rosicrucian and Mason, from an oil portrait painted by David Martin in 1766. This famous painting today hangs over the fireplace in the Green Room at the White House.

Israeli magician Uri Geller, whose close friends include occultic pal U.S. Senator Claiborne Pell and fellow cabalist, singer Michael Jackson. (Photo: *U.S. News & World Report,* December S, 1998)

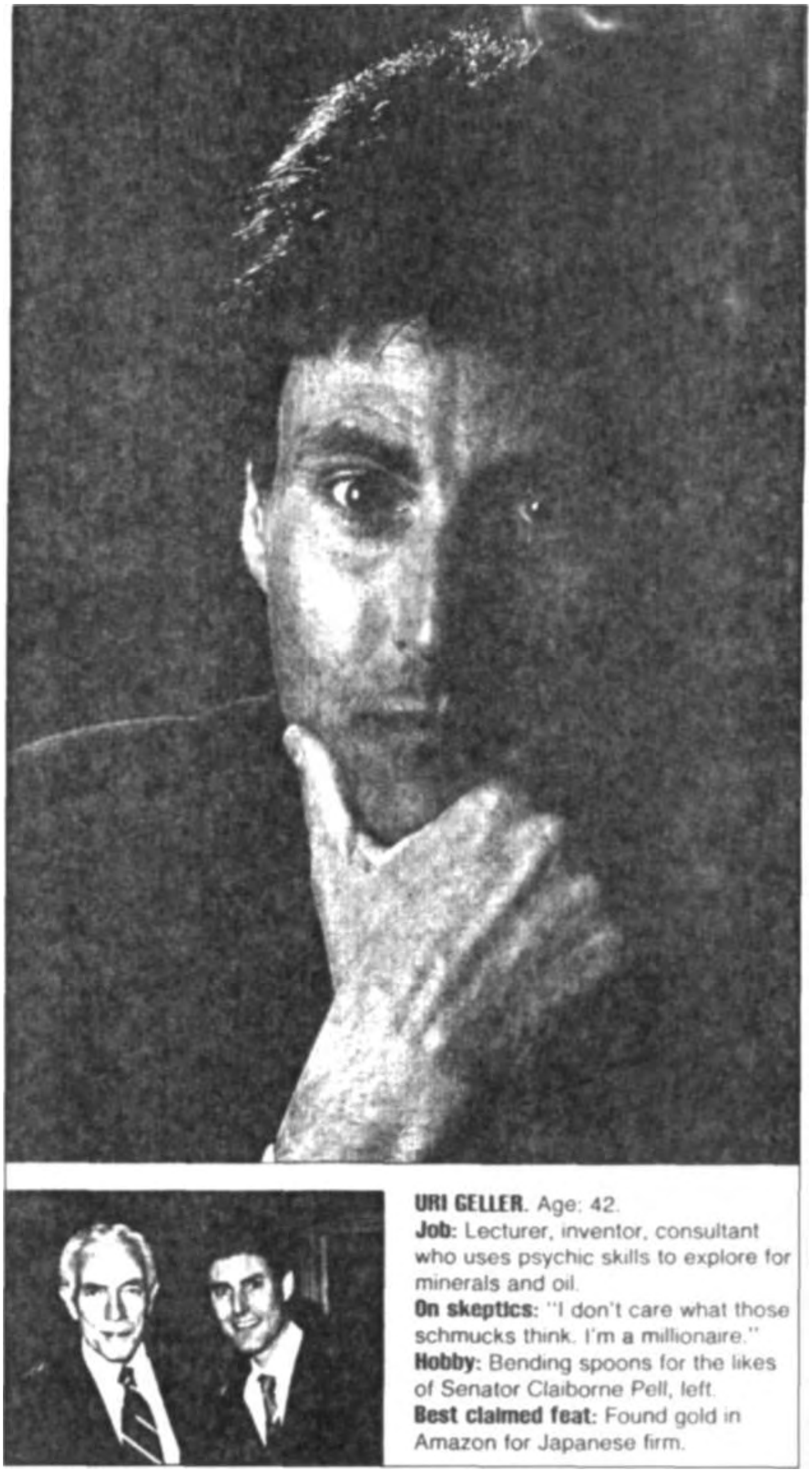

URI GELLER. Age: 42.
Job: Lecturer, inventor, consultant who uses psychic skills to explore for minerals and oil.
On skeptics: "I don't care what those schmucks think. I'm a millionaire."
Hobby: Bending spoons for the likes of Senator Claiborne Pell, left.
Best claimed feat: Found gold in Amazon for Japanese firm.

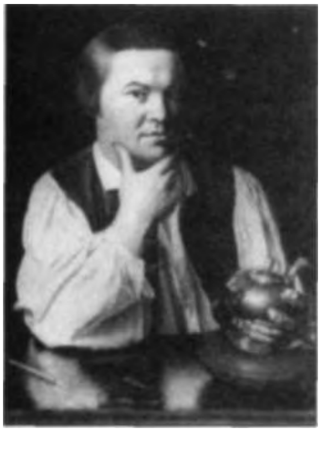

Portrait of Paul Revere, by Copley. The Scottish Rite reference, *10,000 Famous Freemasons,* lists the celebrated American patriot, made famous by his night-time horse ride warning citizens the British troops were at hand, as an initiate of the Masonic Lodge.

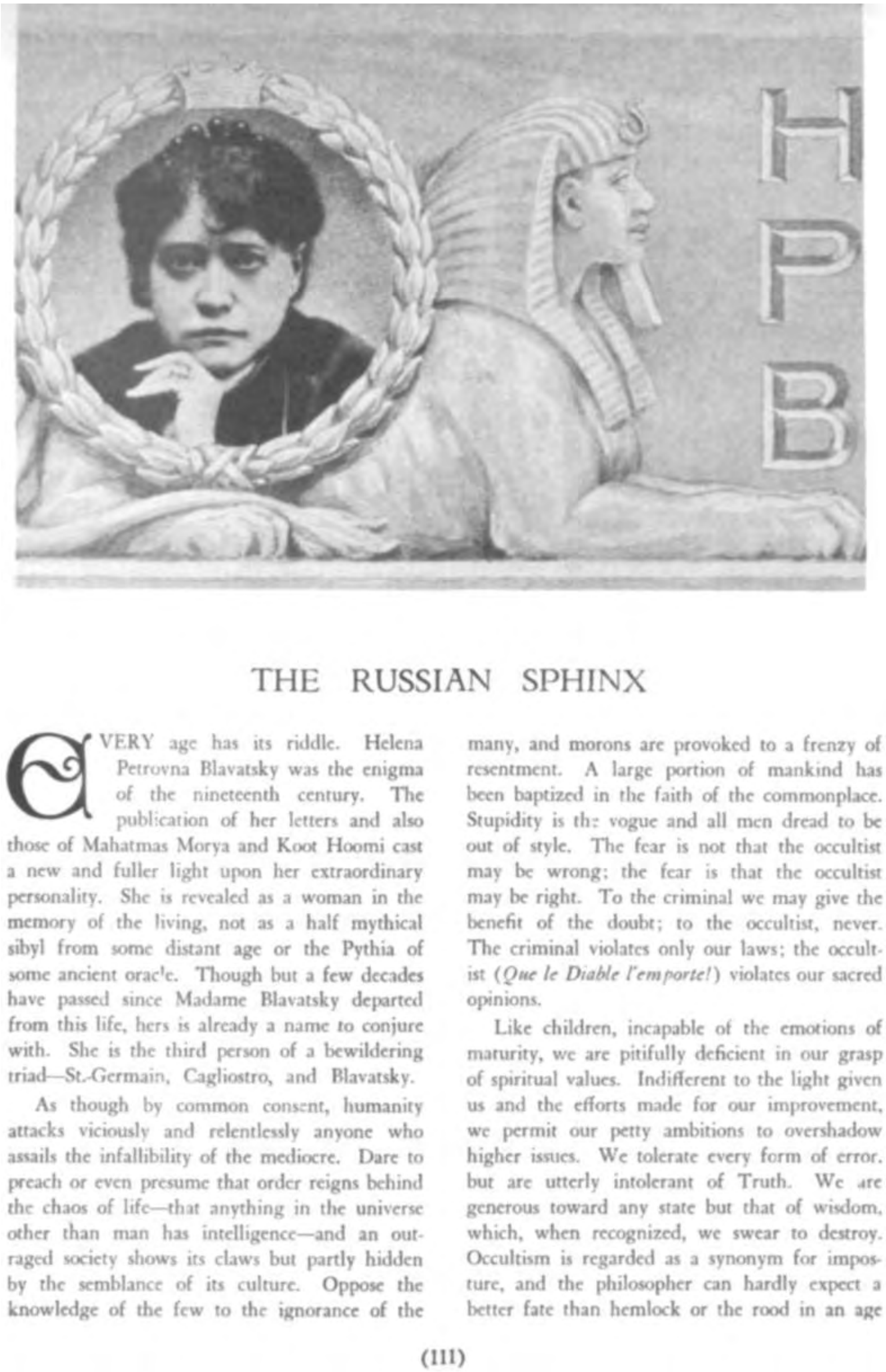

THE RUSSIAN SPHINX

EVERY age has its riddle. Helena Petrovna Blavatsky was the enigma of the nineteenth century. The publication of her letters and also those of Mahatmas Morya and Koot Hoomi cast a new and fuller light upon her extraordinary personality. She is revealed as a woman in the memory of the living, not as a half mythical sibyl from some distant age or the Pythia of some ancient oracle. Though but a few decades have passed since Madame Blavatsky departed from this life, hers is already a name to conjure with. She is the third person of a bewildering triad—St.-Germain, Cagliostro, and Blavatsky.

As though by common consent, humanity attacks viciously and relentlessly anyone who assails the infallibility of the mediocre. Dare to preach or even presume that order reigns behind the chaos of life—that anything in the universe other than man has intelligence—and an outraged society shows its claws but partly hidden by the semblance of its culture. Oppose the knowledge of the few to the ignorance of the many, and morons are provoked to a frenzy of resentment. A large portion of mankind has been baptized in the faith of the commonplace. Stupidity is the vogue and all men dread to be out of style. The fear is not that the occultist may be wrong; the fear is that the occultist may be right. To the criminal we may give the benefit of the doubt; to the occultist, never. The criminal violates only our laws; the occultist (*Que le Diable l'emporte!*) violates our sacred opinions.

Like children, incapable of the emotions of maturity, we are pitifully deficient in our grasp of spiritual values. Indifferent to the light given us and the efforts made for our improvement, we permit our petty ambitions to overshadow higher issues. We tolerate every form of error, but are utterly intolerant of Truth. We are generous toward any state but that of wisdom, which, when recognized, we swear to destroy. Occultism is regarded as a synonym for imposture, and the philosopher can hardly expect a better fate than hemlock or the rood in an age

(111)

Helena Petrovna Blavatsky, Co-Mason, Russian mystic and Egyptian Hindu devotee, who founded the occult group, Theosophy. Her classic occult text, *The Secret Doctrine,* inspired Adolf Hitler and thousands of others.

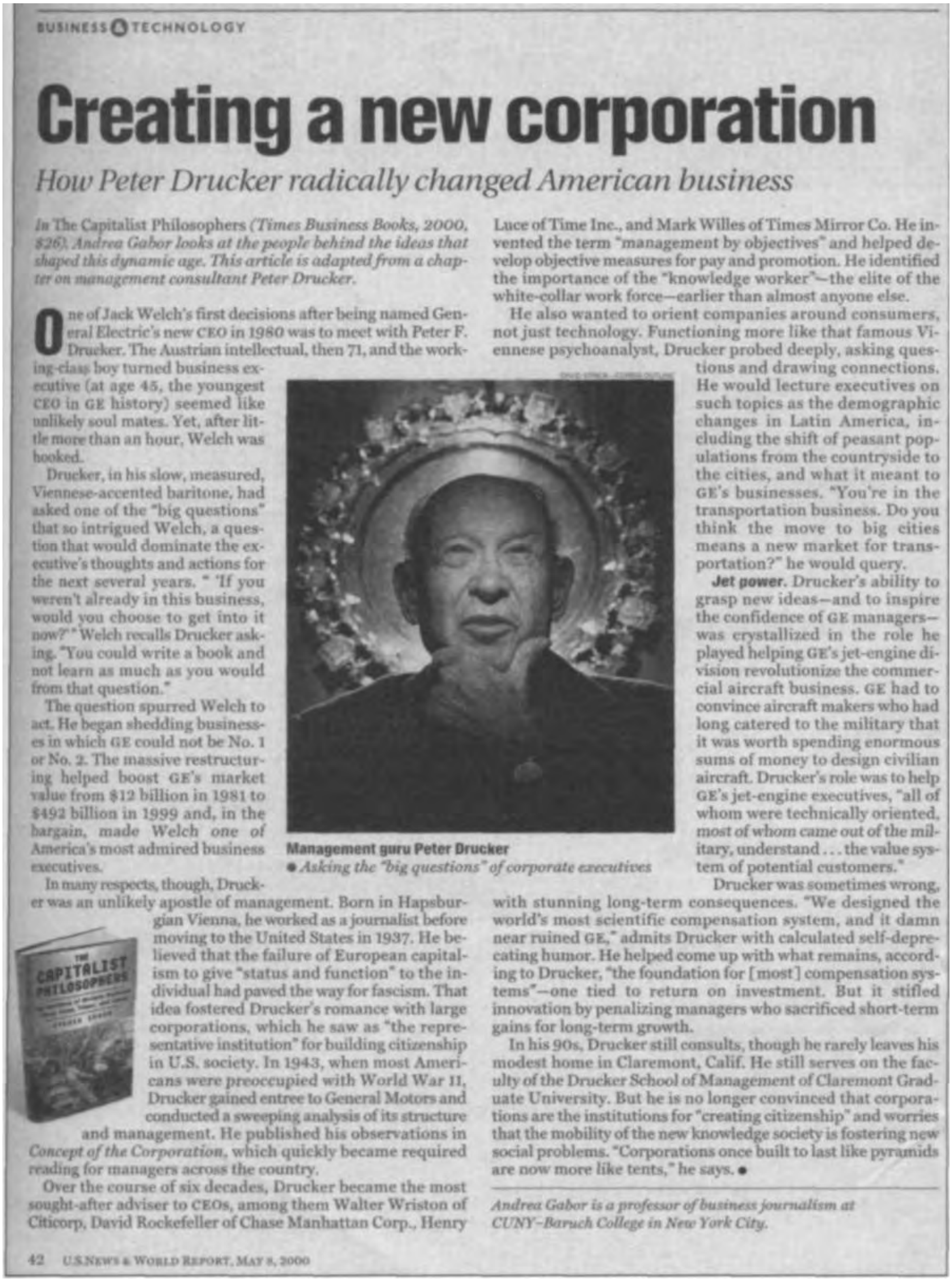

BUSINESS & TECHNOLOGY

Creating a new corporation

How Peter Drucker radically changed American business

In The Capitalist Philosophers *(Times Business Books, 2000, $26), Andrea Gabor looks at the people behind the ideas that shaped this dynamic age. This article is adapted from a chapter on management consultant Peter Drucker.*

One of Jack Welch's first decisions after being named General Electric's new CEO in 1980 was to meet with Peter F. Drucker. The Austrian intellectual, then 71, and the working-class boy turned business executive (at age 45, the youngest CEO in GE history) seemed like unlikely soul mates. Yet, after little more than an hour, Welch was hooked.

Drucker, in his slow, measured, Viennese-accented baritone, had asked one of the "big questions" that so intrigued Welch, a question that would dominate the executive's thoughts and actions for the next several years. " 'If you weren't already in this business, would you choose to get into it now?' " Welch recalls Drucker asking. "You could write a book and not learn as much as you would from that question."

The question spurred Welch to act. He began shedding businesses in which GE could not be No. 1 or No. 2. The massive restructuring helped boost GE's market value from $12 billion in 1981 to $492 billion in 1999 and, in the bargain, made Welch one of America's most admired business executives.

Management guru Peter Drucker
● *Asking the "big questions" of corporate executives*

In many respects, though, Drucker was an unlikely apostle of management. Born in Hapsburgian Vienna, he worked as a journalist before moving to the United States in 1937. He believed that the failure of European capitalism to give "status and function" to the individual had paved the way for fascism. That idea fostered Drucker's romance with large corporations, which he saw as "the representative institution" for building citizenship in U.S. society. In 1943, when most Americans were preoccupied with World War II, Drucker gained entree to General Motors and conducted a sweeping analysis of its structure and management. He published his observations in *Concept of the Corporation*, which quickly became required reading for managers across the country.

Over the course of six decades, Drucker became the most sought-after adviser to CEOs, among them Walter Wriston of Citicorp, David Rockefeller of Chase Manhattan Corp., Henry Luce of Time Inc., and Mark Willes of Times Mirror Co. He invented the term "management by objectives" and helped develop objective measures for pay and promotion. He identified the importance of the "knowledge worker"—the elite of the white-collar work force—earlier than almost anyone else.

He also wanted to orient companies around consumers, not just technology. Functioning more like that famous Viennese psychoanalyst, Drucker probed deeply, asking questions and drawing connections. He would lecture executives on such topics as the demographic changes in Latin America, including the shift of peasant populations from the countryside to the cities, and what it meant to GE's businesses. "You're in the transportation business. Do you think the move to big cities means a new market for transportation?" he would query.

Jet power. Drucker's ability to grasp new ideas—and to inspire the confidence of GE managers—was crystallized in the role he played helping GE's jet-engine division revolutionize the commercial aircraft business. GE had to convince aircraft makers who had long catered to the military that it was worth spending enormous sums of money to design civilian aircraft. Drucker's role was to help GE's jet-engine executives, "all of whom were technically oriented, most of whom came out of the military, understand . . . the value system of potential customers."

Drucker was sometimes wrong, with stunning long-term consequences. "We designed the world's most scientific compensation system, and it damn near ruined GE," admits Drucker with calculated self-deprecating humor. He helped come up with what remains, according to Drucker, "the foundation for [most] compensation systems"—one tied to return on investment. But it stifled innovation by penalizing managers who sacrificed short-term gains for long-term growth.

In his 90s, Drucker still consults, though he rarely leaves his modest home in Claremont, Calif. He still serves on the faculty of the Drucker School of Management of Claremont Graduate University. But he is no longer convinced that corporations are the institutions for "creating citizenship" and worries that the mobility of the new knowledge society is fostering new social problems. "Corporations once built to last like pyramids are now more like tents," he says. ●

Andrea Gabor is a professor of business journalism at CUNY–Baruch College in New York City.

42 U.S.NEWS & WORLD REPORT, MAY 8, 2000

This unusual photo of "management guru" Peter Drucker in *U.S. News & World Report* (May 8, 2000, p. 42) paints Drucker as a contemplative, god-like character who has "sacrificed" for the Illuminati Order.

Soviet Foreign Minister Eduard Shevardnadze (left), protege of President and Communist Party Boss Mikhail Gorbachev, was a favorite of the Illuminati.

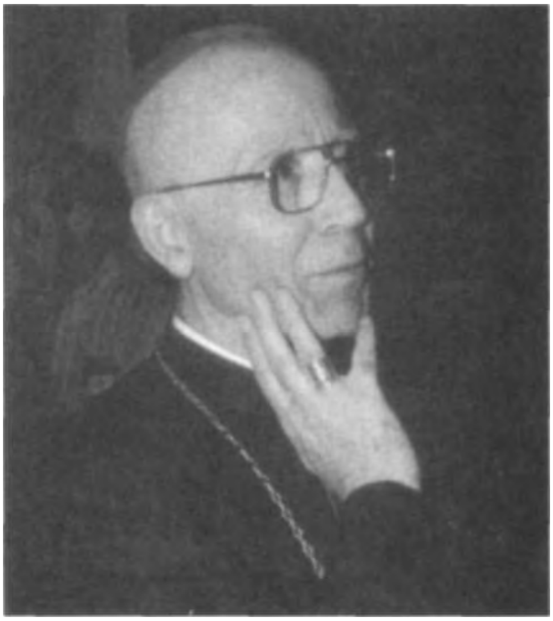

Roman Catholic Bishop Selim Sayegh of Amman, Jordan. (Photo: *US. Catholic,* May 2003, p. 31)

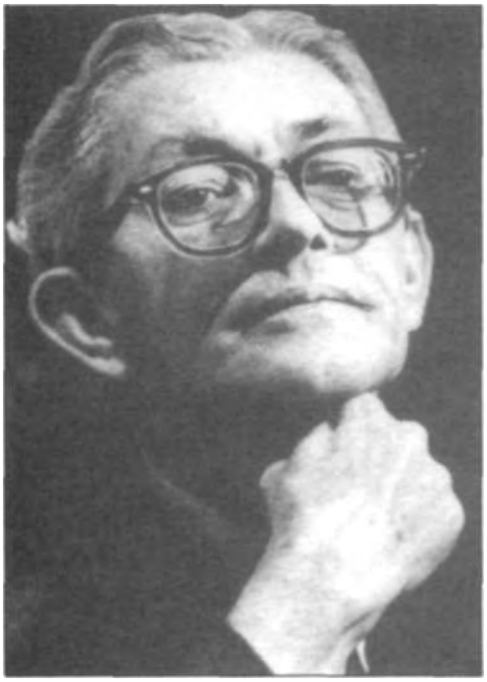

James Jesus Angleton, CIA Chief of Counterintelligence, presents the clenched fist under chin and throat—sign that a violent end at the hands of revolutionary assassins shall come to he who reveals secrets of the Craft.

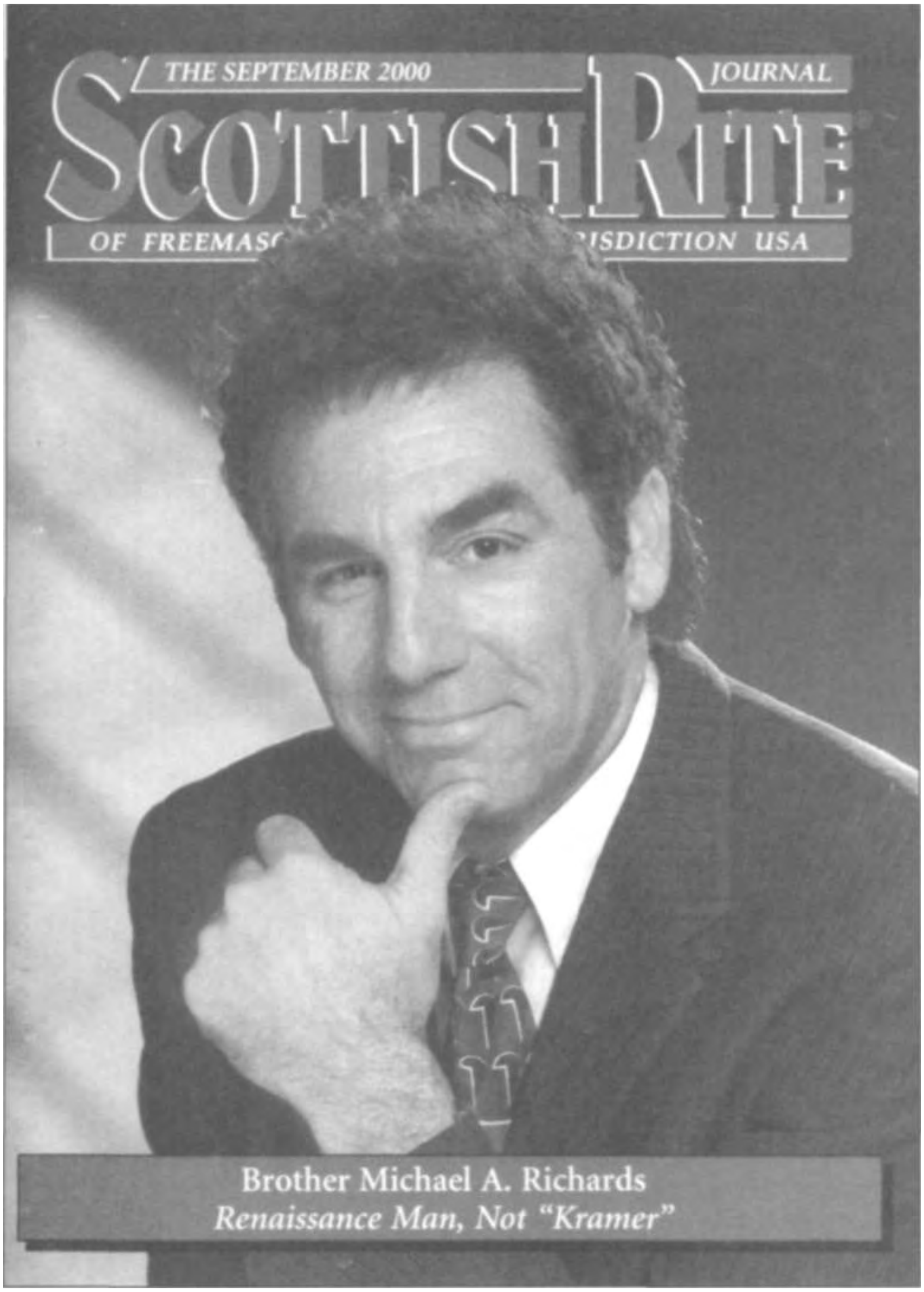
THE SEPTEMBER 2000 JOURNAL
SCOTTISH RITE
OF FREEMAS ISDICTION USA
Brother Michael A. Richards
Renaissance Man, Not "Kramer"

The Scottish Rite Freemasons, on the cover of the September 2000 issue of their official journal, recognized "Brother Michael A. Richards" as a "Renaissance Man, Not Kramer." Richards, a Jew, is the well known comic actor who won raves for his role as "Kramer" in the long-running #1 hit TV show, *Seinfeld.* Inside the Masonic Lodge magazine, it was noted that Richards holds the 32nd degree of Freemasonry and has received the red cap. Richards says he is a keen student of Masonry and its symbolism and has over 1,000 masonic books in his home in California. Observe Michael Richards' clearly Masonic handsign, which presents the V and is the "due-guard" sign of initiation in the Order of Knights Templar which relates to the penalty of the obligation—the oath agreeing that one's head will be impaled on the highest spire in Christendom as a penalty for revealing secrets. The sign is also similar to the sign for the "due-guard" of the Past Master, 5th degree in the Scottish Rite.

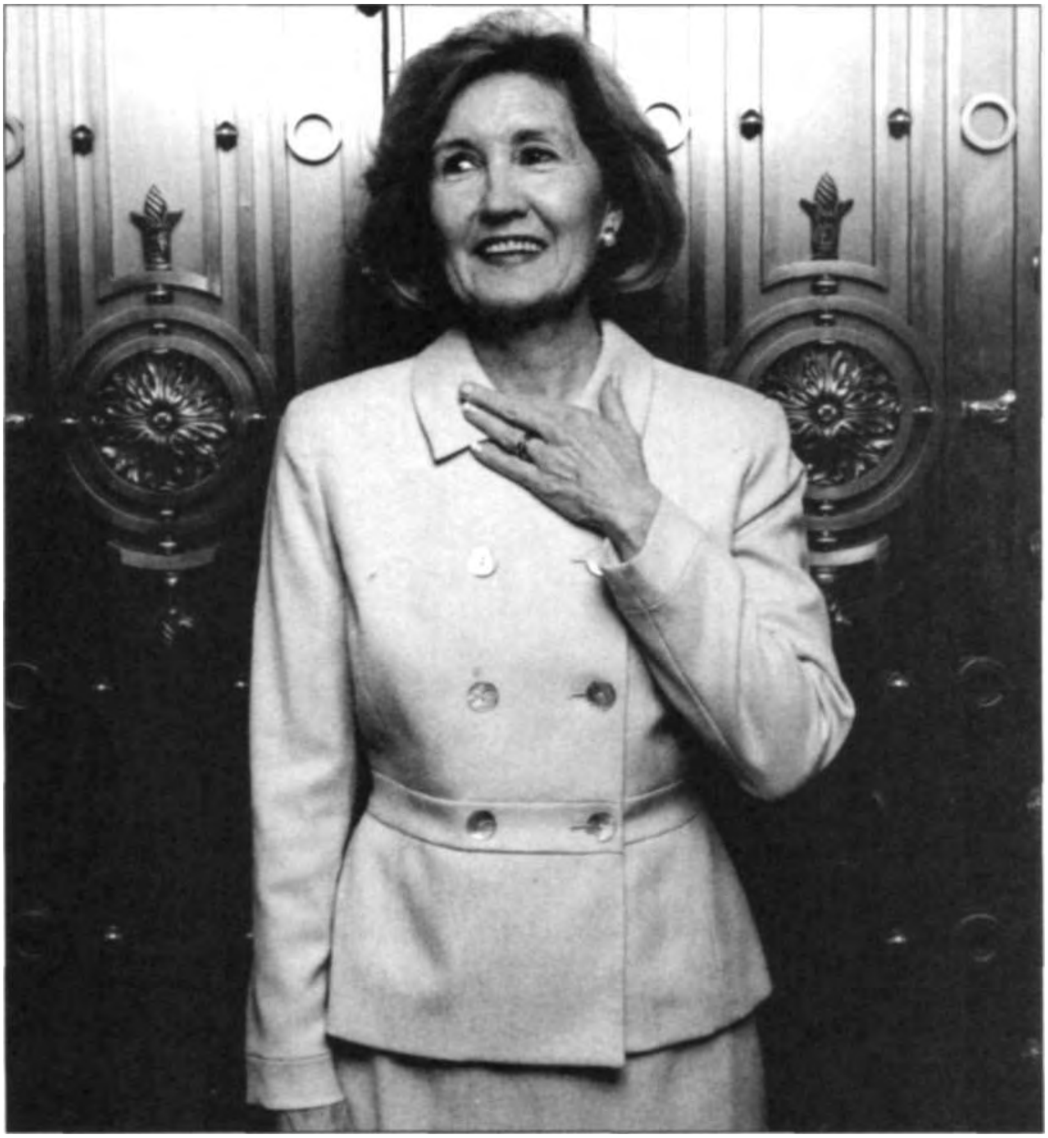

U.S. Senator Kay Bailey Hutchinson (R-TX) is highly exalted by the elite as this photo demonstrates. The strategy of this photo, with the Senator standing between two swords (symbols of authority) and two encircled sun signs (symbol of the Masonic and Illuminati Deity of Light) shows great favoritism toward this lady, especially as this bio-sketch and photo is in a major newsmagazine, *Newsweek* (June 26, 2000). The caption reads: *"Staying in the spotlight. If Pakistan can elect a woman leader, says Hutchinson, why can't the United States?"* Judging from this staged rite, the regal doors may be about ready to open wider for Senator Kay Bailey Hutchinson.

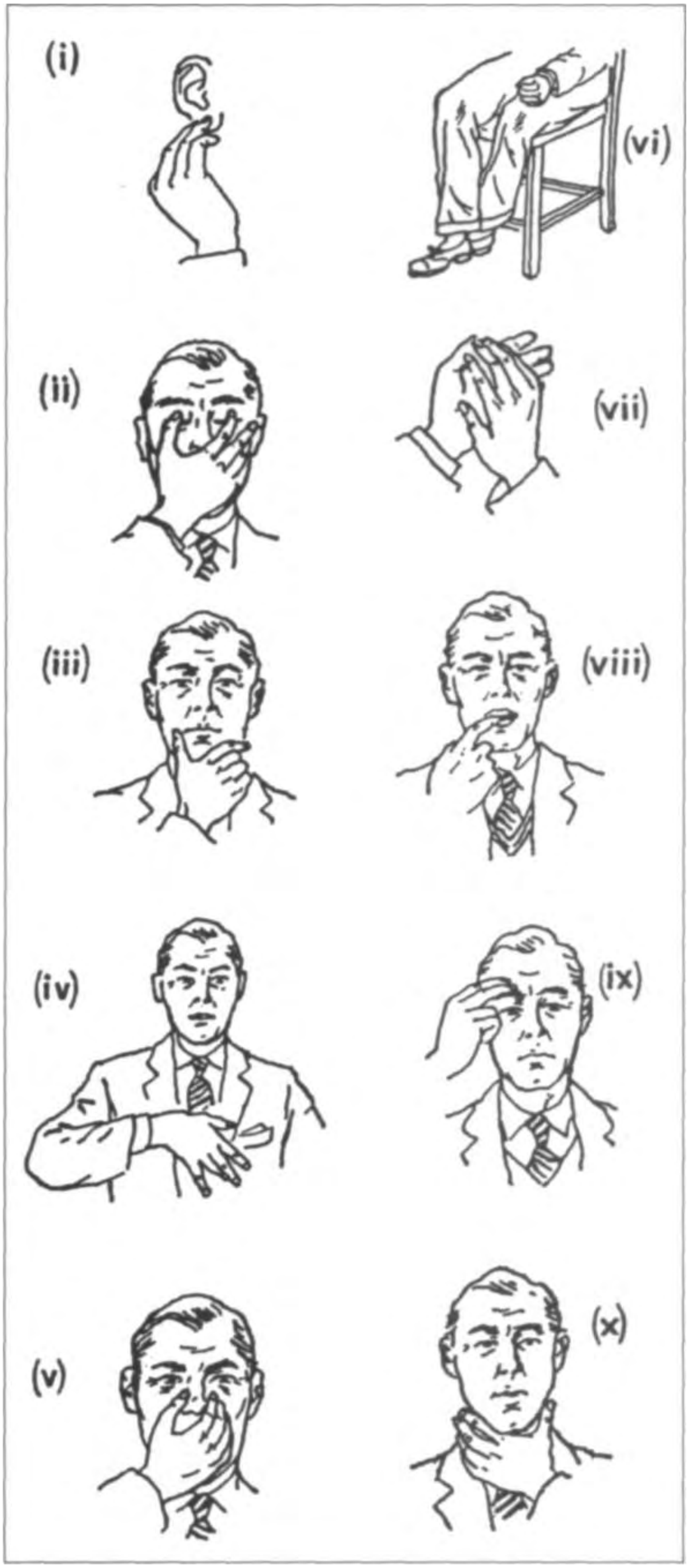
(i)
(vi)
(ii)
(vii)
(iii)
(viii)
(iv)
(ix)
(v)
(x)

A few signs of the Rosirrucian Order. Many are similar to those of Freemasonry and other secret societies. The penalty sign related to having one's throat cut is shown at number X.

SIXTEEN

Hand On Heart—Sign of Devotion to the Chiefs

Masonry's homage to the heart by the Sign of Hand on Heart can best be understood by the fact that the leaders of the Masonic Lodge themselves boast that the rituals of Freemasonry hearken back to ancient Egyptian religion. The *Egyptian Book of the Dead* addressed prayers to "My heart of my mother...My heart of transformations," meaning the source of rebirths.

The Mother Goddess of Egypt was worshipped by various names — Isis, Hathor, Rhea, etc. She was the one to whom the people "gave their hearts," meaning their heart-felt devotion and allegiance. As the Goddess of sacrifices, it was deemed necessary by her admirers that men should sacrifice their "energies" on her behalf. The Goddess was said to take possession of men's hearts.

Cutting Out Hearts and Eating Them!

In the pyramids of Mexico, Central and South America, the gods were also gods of sacrifice and, once again, the heart was the centerpiece of devotion. Bloodthirsty followers, egged on by high priests, cut out the hearts of victims of tribal wars.

On the stone altars of the temples, the priests cut the heart out of the breast of sacrificial victims while they were still alive! The hearts were eaten, just as they were in ancient Egypt and as they are in a number of satanic cults in existence today.

Back to Egypt

Freemasonry today freely admits its connection to the religion and rituals of ancient Egypt and proudly displays Egyptian idols (the Sphinx, etc.) in and around its lodge facilities and at its international headquarters, the House of the Temple in Washington, D.C.

Moreover, in the ritual ceremonies of the higher Masonic degrees, the Hindu pantheon of deities is honored as the true "Holy Trinity."[1] In the Hindu religion, the whole universe is said to be centered in the heart. The Yogi, in meditation, is claimed to be listening to the heartbeat of the universe, which is the great god Shiva's beating heart. This expresses the basic oriental idea that divinity lies in the heart of every person, but needs to be "realized," or awakened.

Devotion to the Secret Chiefs

Within the Illuminati structure, the initiate is taught in no uncertain terms that he must devote his whole heart to the "secret chiefs," the top elite who comprise the Inner Circle. His life must be dedicated to the goals they have set, for they, in turn, are being directed by the Hierarchy, the spirit beings (Satan and his demons) who have given them *The Plan.* In other words, the life of every Illuminist is a divine temple, and through ritual, magic, and loyal devotion the Great Work of alchemical transformation is to be accomplished within the individual heart and within the world at large. *Ordo Ab Chao* — order must come out of chaos.

A Number of Meanings

As the evidence points out in the illustrations in this section, the "hand on heart" sign has a number of meanings, depending particularly on the exact placement of the hand and the positioning of the fingers. As always, the left hand on heart indicates the *sinister* occultic path. The thumb extended upward leaving the hand squared in the "L" position signals fidelity, sincerity and being "on the square." The thumb upward symbolizes the child-soul, the heart in subjection to higher powers.

The sign of Hand on Heart is practiced and taught in the rituals for many degrees of Freemasonry. For example:

- In the Degree of Sublime Knights Elected, the candidate is instructed in the sign. His right hand is extended across the chest to the heart and the thumb is pointed upward. *(Richardson's Monitor of Freemasonry,* p. 147)

- In the Degree of Companion Select, the sign is given with the right hand. *(Richardson's Monitor of Freemasonry,* p. 86)

- In the Degree of Select Master, the initiate is told "The most popular signs in Masonry are made in this manner: Place the palm of the right hand on the heart, and pronounce the word SECRESY." *(Richardson's Monitor of Freemasonry,* p. 80)

- In the Degree of the Knight of the Pelican and Eagle Sovereign Prince Rose Croix of Heredom, the lecturer directs the assembled members to "pass to the Black Room, 18° collars being reversed." Following this instruction, the sign of "right hand on left breast is given." *(18th Degree Secret Initiation Ceremony)*

- In the Degree of Mark Master, the members form and march around the Lodge, singing a song. The words of the song include the following: *"Mark Masters all appear Before the Chief Overseer... You who have passed the square, For your rewards prepare, Join heart and hand...Wages to you are due, At your command." (Duncan's Masonic Ritual and Monitor,* p. 161)

Separation of Fingers as Sign is Given

Separating the fingers has its own interpretation, often being the sign of choice for cabalists who employ the letters of the Hebrew alphabet in their hand on heart communications. The illustrations of Christopher Columbus and Ignatius Loyola in this chapter are prime examples. Both of these historical characters were members of secret cabalistic orders founded by the rabbis of the Jewish Sanhedrin.

Erasing Confusion

The Illuminist/Masonic sign should *not* be confused with the American custom of placing one's hand over the heart while reciting the Pledge of Allegiance to the flag (Citizens of some other nations practice this same tradition). Again, in judging the Illuminist intent, we look to such factors as time period, the history and affiliations, who's performing the sign, and other factors. As always in this book, I leave it to you, the reader, to form your own learned opinion of what you are seeing.

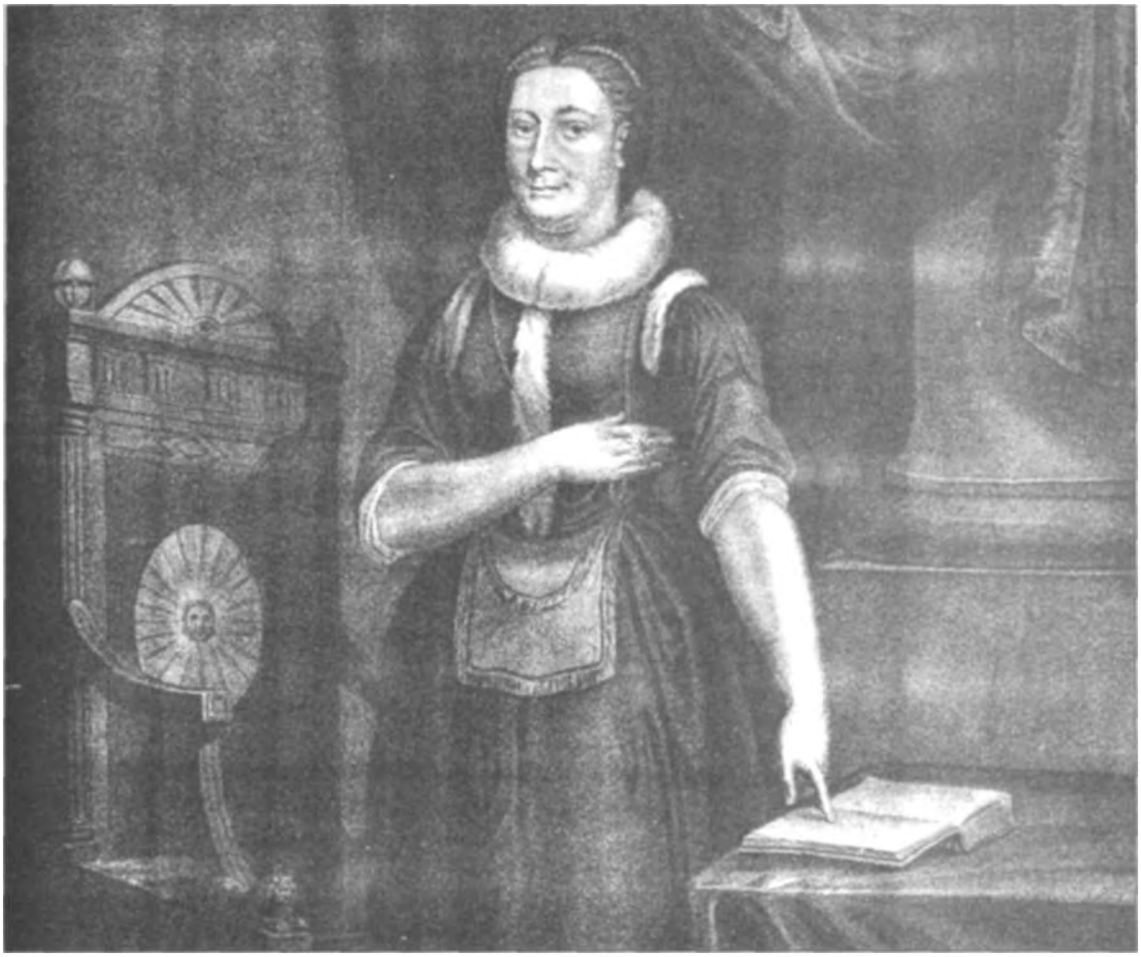

Freemasons strongly deny there are any women in their Order. But in *Mac key's Encyclopedia of Freemasonry we* find this picture captioned, *"Lady Freemason Mrs. Elizabeth Aldworth."* In the text (page 353), Mackey. 33°, former Sovereign Grand Commander of the Scottish Rite, writes that, "there are a few instances in which the otherwise unalterable rule of female exclusion has been made to yield."

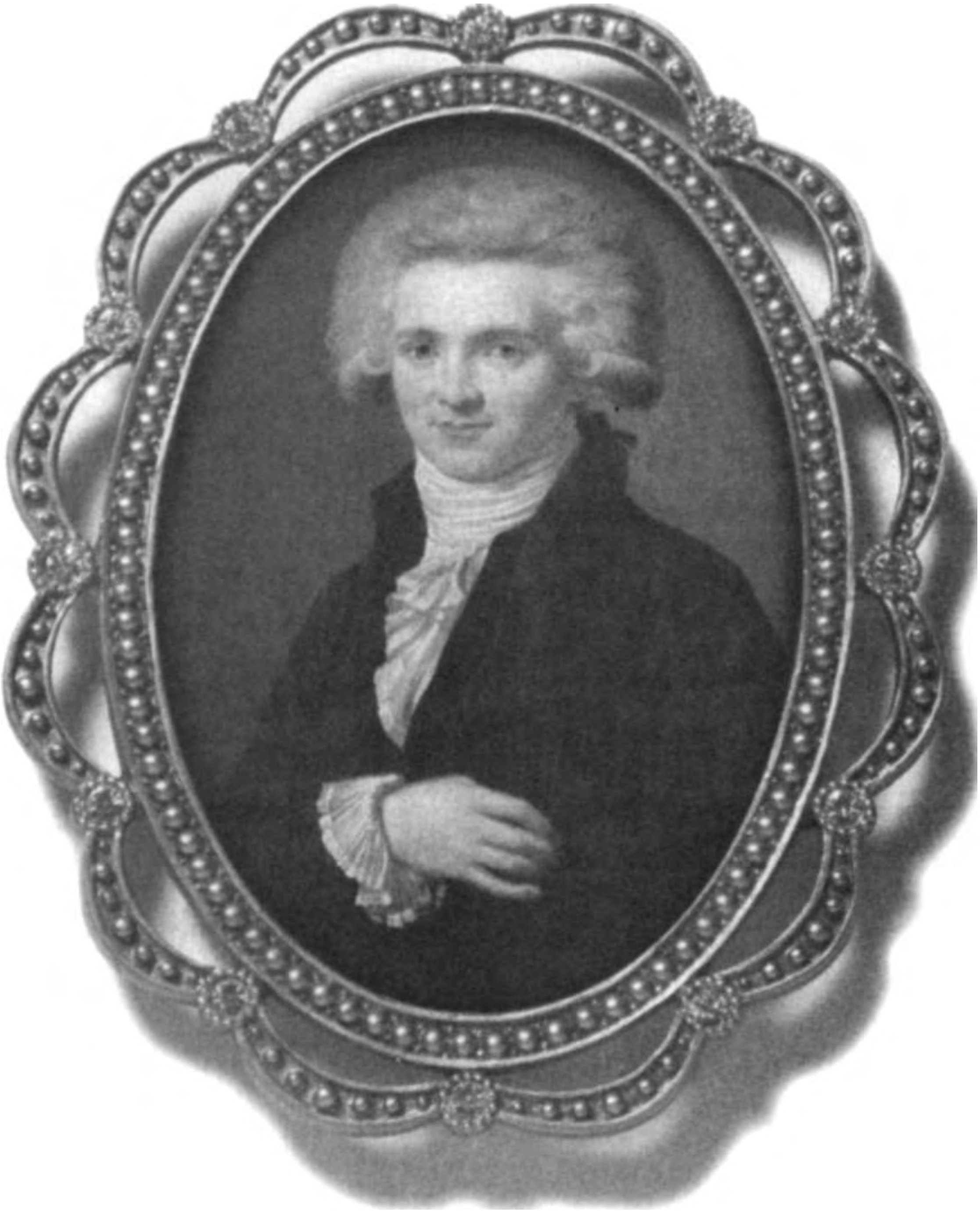

Robespierre, the heartless monster of the French Revolution. Inspirer of the Jacobins sect, Robespierre caused untold thousands to be sent to the guillotine. Rejecting Jesus, he called for a new religion based on worship of a nameless *"Supreme Being."* After relishing so many of his opponents being sent to their death, one day the tumbrel carriage came also for Robespierre, the Jewish plotter of terror, who himself lost his head. As his head rolled, the mob laughed and cried out *"Do you feel any pain, your majesty?"*

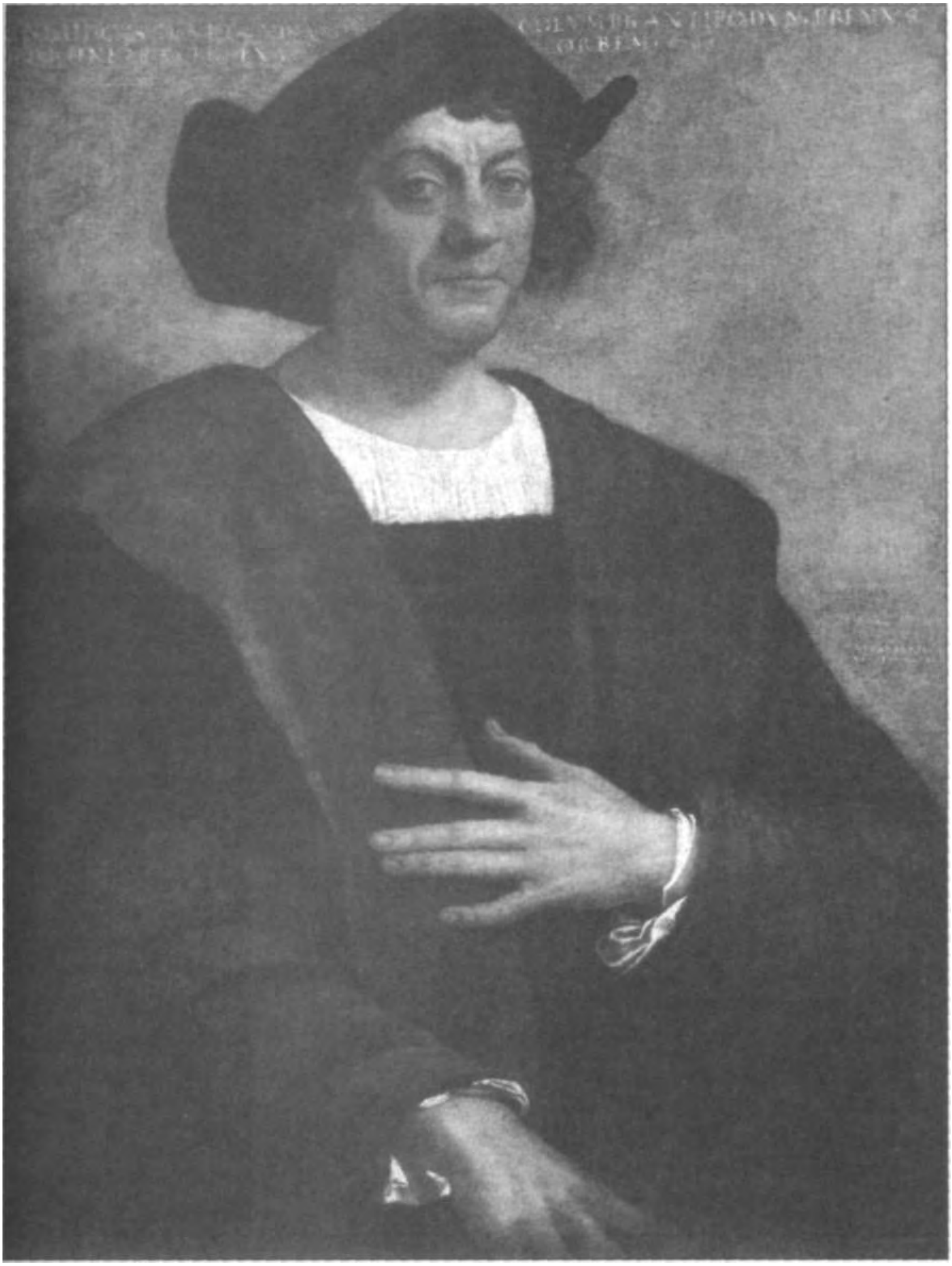

Was Christopher Columbus a clandestine member of the Knights Templar, or another 15th century secret society? Much evidence exists confirming exactly that. So, too, does the cabalistic sign he displays of the left-handed path of the initiate. (Oil painting by Sebastiano del Piombo, 1519)

STALIN'S SHADO
ROSAMOND RICHARDS

A statue of Soviet Communist Party leader Joseph Stalin on the cover of the book, *Stalin's Shadow,* by Rosamond Richardson. Photographs of Stalin also show the tyrannical dictator—half Jew and Jesuit-trained—giving the Royal Arch Mason hand sign.

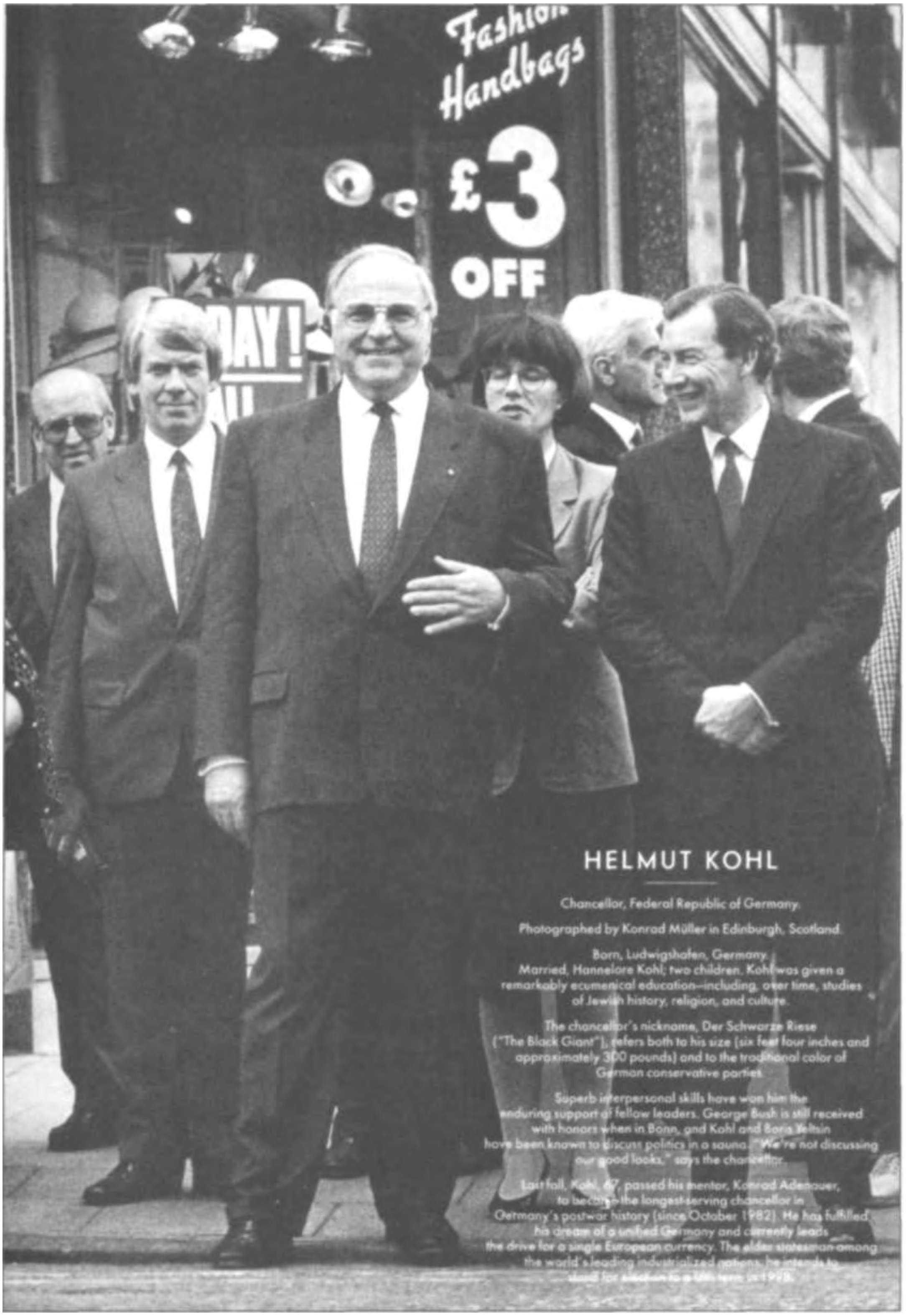

HELMUT KOHL

Chancellor, Federal Republic of Germany.

Photographed by Konrad Müller in Edinburgh, Scotland.

Born, Ludwigshafen, Germany.
Married, Hannelore Kohl; two children. Kohl was given a remarkably ecumenical education—including, over time, studies of Jewish history, religion, and culture.

The chancellor's nickname, Der Schwarze Riese ("The Black Giant"), refers both to his size (six feet four inches and approximately 300 pounds) and to the traditional color of German conservative parties.

Superb interpersonal skills have won him the enduring support of fellow leaders. George Bush is still received with honors when in Bonn, and Kohl and Boris Yeltsin have been known to discuss politics in a sauna. "We're not discussing our good looks," says the chancellor.

Last fall, Kohl, 67, passed his mentor, Konrad Adenauer, to become the longest-serving chancellor in Germany's postwar history (since October 1982). He has fulfilled his dream of a unified Germany and currently leads the drive for a single European currency. The elder statesman among the world's leading industrialized nations, he intends to stand for election to a fifth term in 1998.

Helmut Kohl was the longest-serving Chancellor in the history of post-World War II Germany. Kohl, a servant of the Illuminati's inner circle, worked to unify Germany and empower the European Community. He is a Bilderberger, a covert Jewish Mason, and initiate of numerous secret societies and orders. Here we see the Chancellor strike an Illuminist pose, being the only person pictured who gives the necessary sign. (Photo: Vanity *Fair* magazine, November 1997)

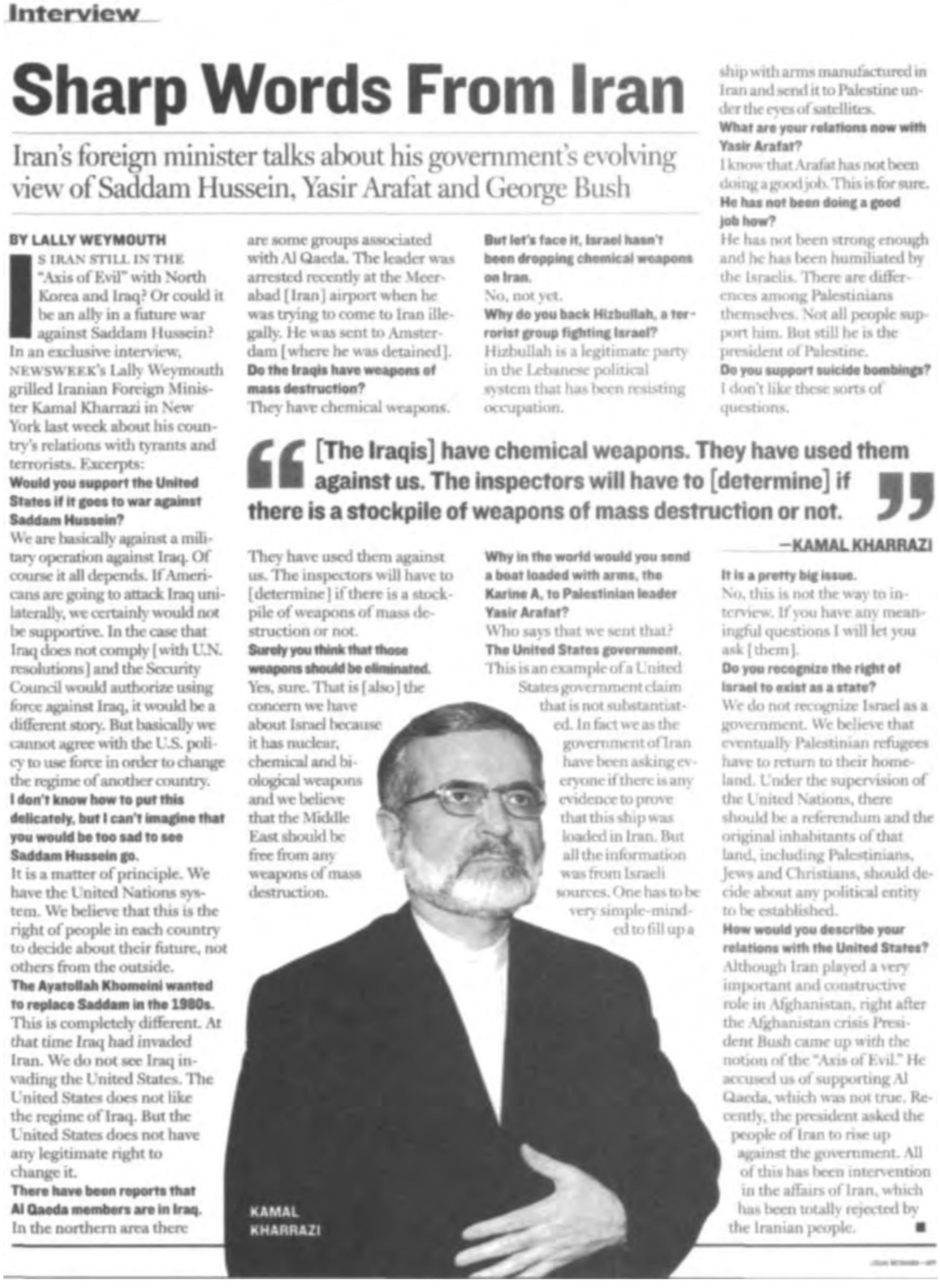

Interview

Sharp Words From Iran

Iran's foreign minister talks about his government's evolving view of Saddam Hussein, Yasir Arafat and George Bush

BY LALLY WEYMOUTH

IS IRAN STILL IN THE "Axis of Evil" with North Korea and Iraq? Or could it be an ally in a future war against Saddam Hussein? In an exclusive interview, NEWSWEEK's Lally Weymouth grilled Iranian Foreign Minister Kamal Kharrazi in New York last week about his country's relations with tyrants and terrorists. Excerpts:

Would you support the United States if it goes to war against Saddam Hussein?

We are basically against a military operation against Iraq. Of course it all depends. If Americans are going to attack Iraq unilaterally, we certainly would not be supportive. In the case that Iraq does not comply [with U.N. resolutions] and the Security Council would authorize using force against Iraq, it would be a different story. But basically we cannot agree with the U.S. policy to use force in order to change the regime of another country.

I don't know how to put this delicately, but I can't imagine that you would be too sad to see Saddam Hussein go.

It is a matter of principle. We have the United Nations system. We believe that this is the right of people in each country to decide about their future, not others from the outside.

The Ayatollah Khomeini wanted to replace Saddam in the 1980s.

This is completely different. At that time Iraq had invaded Iran. We do not see Iraq invading the United States. The United States does not like the regime of Iraq. But the United States does not have any legitimate right to change it.

There have been reports that Al Qaeda members are in Iraq.

In the northern area there are some groups associated with Al Qaeda. The leader was arrested recently at the Meerabad [Iran] airport when he was trying to come to Iran illegally. He was sent to Amsterdam [where he was detained].

Do the Iraqis have weapons of mass destruction?

They have chemical weapons. They have used them against us. The inspectors will have to [determine] if there is a stockpile of weapons of mass destruction or not.

> **"[The Iraqis] have chemical weapons. They have used them against us. The inspectors will have to [determine] if there is a stockpile of weapons of mass destruction or not."**
>
> **—KAMAL KHARRAZI**

Surely you think that those weapons should be eliminated.

Yes, sure. That is [also] the concern we have about Israel because it has nuclear, chemical and biological weapons and we believe that the Middle East should be free from any weapons of mass destruction.

But let's face it, Israel hasn't been dropping chemical weapons on Iran.

No, not yet.

Why do you back Hizbullah, a terrorist group fighting Israel?

Hizbullah is a legitimate party in the Lebanese political system that has been resisting occupation.

Why in the world would you send a boat loaded with arms, the Karine A, to Palestinian leader Yasir Arafat?

Who says that we sent that?

The United States government.

This is an example of a United States government claim that is not substantiated. In fact we as the government of Iran have been asking everyone if there is any evidence to prove that this ship was loaded in Iran. But all the information was from Israeli sources. One has to be very simple-minded to fill up a ship with arms manufactured in Iran and send it to Palestine under the eyes of satellites.

What are your relations now with Yasir Arafat?

I know that Arafat has not been doing a good job. This is for sure.

He has not been doing a good job how?

He has not been strong enough and he has been humiliated by the Israelis. There are differences among Palestinians themselves. Not all people support him. But still he is the president of Palestine.

Do you support suicide bombings?

I don't like these sorts of questions.

It is a pretty big issue.

No, this is not the way to interview. If you have any meaningful questions I will let you ask [them].

Do you recognize the right of Israel to exist as a state?

We do not recognize Israel as a government. We believe that eventually Palestinian refugees have to return to their homeland. Under the supervision of the United Nations, there should be a referendum and the original inhabitants of that land, including Palestinians, Jews and Christians, should decide about any political entity to be established.

How would you describe your relations with the United States?

Although Iran played a very important and constructive role in Afghanistan, right after the Afghanistan crisis President Bush came up with the notion of the "Axis of Evil." He accused us of supporting Al Qaeda, which was not true. Recently, the president asked the people of Iran to rise up against the government. All of this has been intervention in the affairs of Iran, which has been totally rejected by the Iranian people. ■

KAMAL KHARRAZI

Iran's foreign minister, Kamel Kharrazi. *(Newsweek,* September 30, 2002)

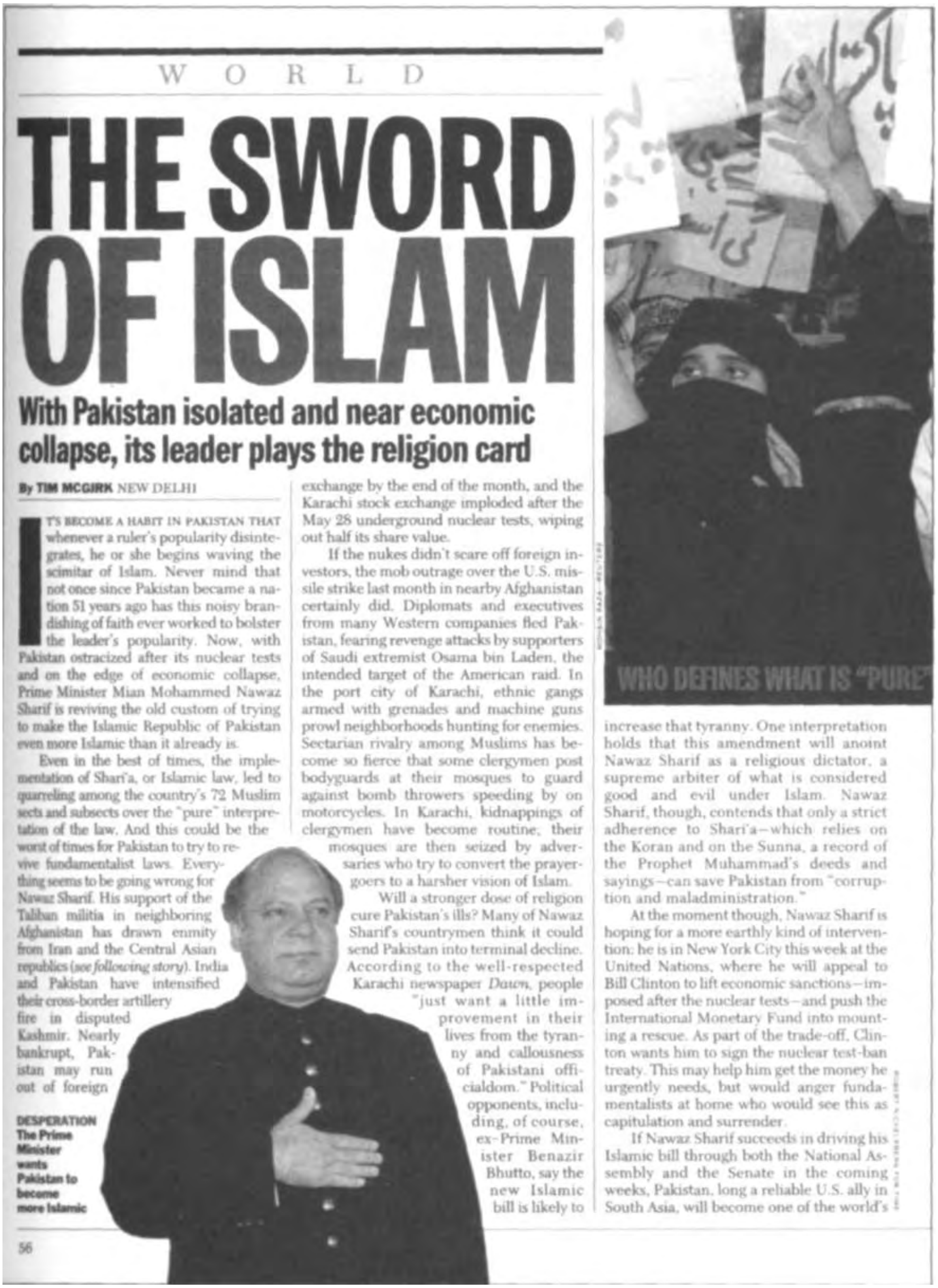

WORLD

THE SWORD OF ISLAM

With Pakistan isolated and near economic collapse, its leader plays the religion card

By TIM MCGIRK NEW DELHI

IT'S BECOME A HABIT IN PAKISTAN THAT whenever a ruler's popularity disintegrates, he or she begins waving the scimitar of Islam. Never mind that not once since Pakistan became a nation 51 years ago has this noisy brandishing of faith ever worked to bolster the leader's popularity. Now, with Pakistan ostracized after its nuclear tests and on the edge of economic collapse, Prime Minister Mian Mohammed Nawaz Sharif is reviving the old custom of trying to make the Islamic Republic of Pakistan even more Islamic than it already is.

Even in the best of times, the implementation of Shari'a, or Islamic law, led to quarreling among the country's 72 Muslim sects and subsects over the "pure" interpretation of the law. And this could be the worst of times for Pakistan to try to revive fundamentalist laws. Everything seems to be going wrong for Nawaz Sharif. His support of the Taliban militia in neighboring Afghanistan has drawn enmity from Iran and the Central Asian republics (*see following story*). India and Pakistan have intensified their cross-border artillery fire in disputed Kashmir. Nearly bankrupt, Pakistan may run out of foreign exchange by the end of the month, and the Karachi stock exchange imploded after the May 28 underground nuclear tests, wiping out half its share value.

If the nukes didn't scare off foreign investors, the mob outrage over the U.S. missile strike last month in nearby Afghanistan certainly did. Diplomats and executives from many Western companies fled Pakistan, fearing revenge attacks by supporters of Saudi extremist Osama bin Laden, the intended target of the American raid. In the port city of Karachi, ethnic gangs armed with grenades and machine guns prowl neighborhoods hunting for enemies. Sectarian rivalry among Muslims has become so fierce that some clergymen post bodyguards at their mosques to guard against bomb throwers speeding by on motorcycles. In Karachi, kidnappings of clergymen have become routine; their mosques are then seized by adversaries who try to convert the prayer-goers to a harsher vision of Islam.

Will a stronger dose of religion cure Pakistan's ills? Many of Nawaz Sharif's countrymen think it could send Pakistan into terminal decline. According to the well-respected Karachi newspaper *Dawn*, people "just want a little improvement in their lives from the tyranny and callousness of Pakistani officialdom." Political opponents, including, of course, ex-Prime Minister Benazir Bhutto, say the new Islamic bill is likely to increase that tyranny. One interpretation holds that this amendment will anoint Nawaz Sharif as a religious dictator, a supreme arbiter of what is considered good and evil under Islam. Nawaz Sharif, though, contends that only a strict adherence to Shari'a—which relies on the Koran and on the Sunna, a record of the Prophet Muhammad's deeds and sayings—can save Pakistan from "corruption and maladministration."

At the moment though, Nawaz Sharif is hoping for a more earthly kind of intervention: he is in New York City this week at the United Nations, where he will appeal to Bill Clinton to lift economic sanctions—imposed after the nuclear tests—and push the International Monetary Fund into mounting a rescue. As part of the trade-off, Clinton wants him to sign the nuclear test-ban treaty. This may help him get the money he urgently needs, but would anger fundamentalists at home who would see this as capitulation and surrender.

If Nawaz Sharif succeeds in driving his Islamic bill through both the National Assembly and the Senate in the coming weeks, Pakistan, long a reliable U.S. ally in South Asia, will become one of the world's

DESPERATION The Prime Minister wants Pakistan to become more Islamic

WHO DEFINES WHAT IS "PURE"

56

Pakistan's Prime Minister Mian Mohammed Nawaz. (*Time* magazine, circa 2001)

In Palestine, a senior Hamas official Khaled Mashaal welcomes Jordanian and other guests to a dinner.

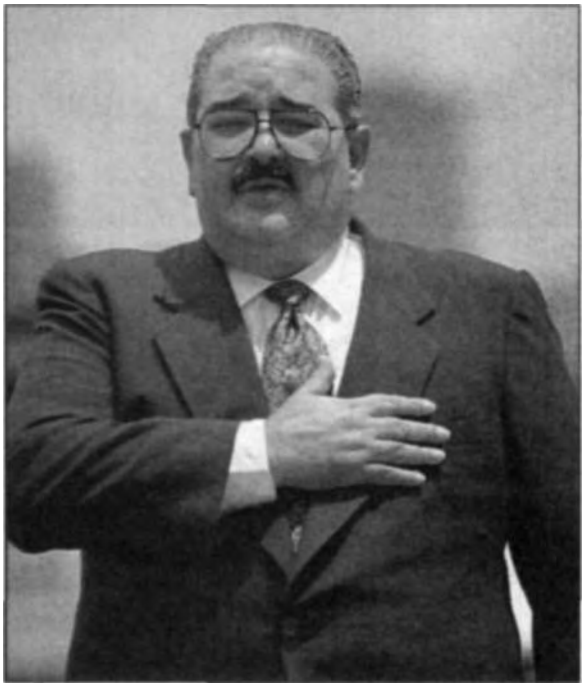

Panama's President Guillermo Endara, installed in office by the U.S.A. after the American military deposed Army dictator Manuel Noriega. (From *U.S. News and World Report,* October 25, 1993, p. 37)

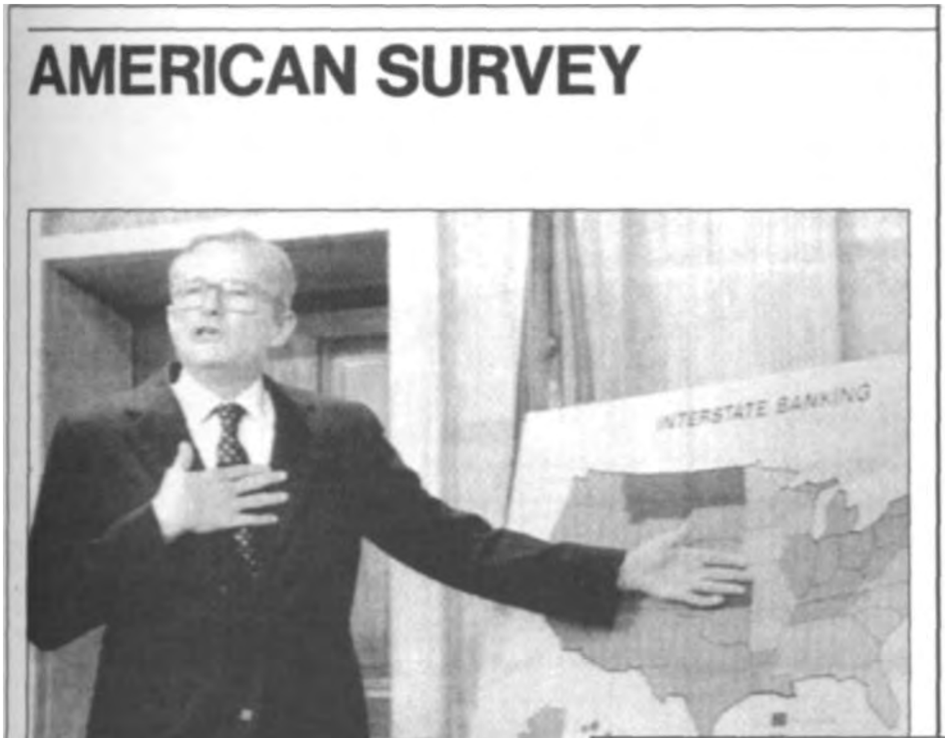
INTERSTATE BANKING

AMERICAN SURVEY

What is hand-on-heart Brady up to?

Now you see it, now

WASHINGTON, DC

AMATEUR detectives, two a penny in Washington, are weaving theories around the fact that the Federal Reserve chose on April 30th to cut its discount rate for the third time since December, this time om 6% to 5.5%. The circumstances hav

Nicholas B
tramped r
ordinated
dusty ansv
When the

Nicholas Brady, Secretary of the Treasury in the first Bush Administration. The caption with this photo, published as part of an article knowingly entitled, "Now you see it, now you don't," asked *"What is hand-on-heart Brady up to?"* (*The Economist*, May 4, 1991, p. 25)

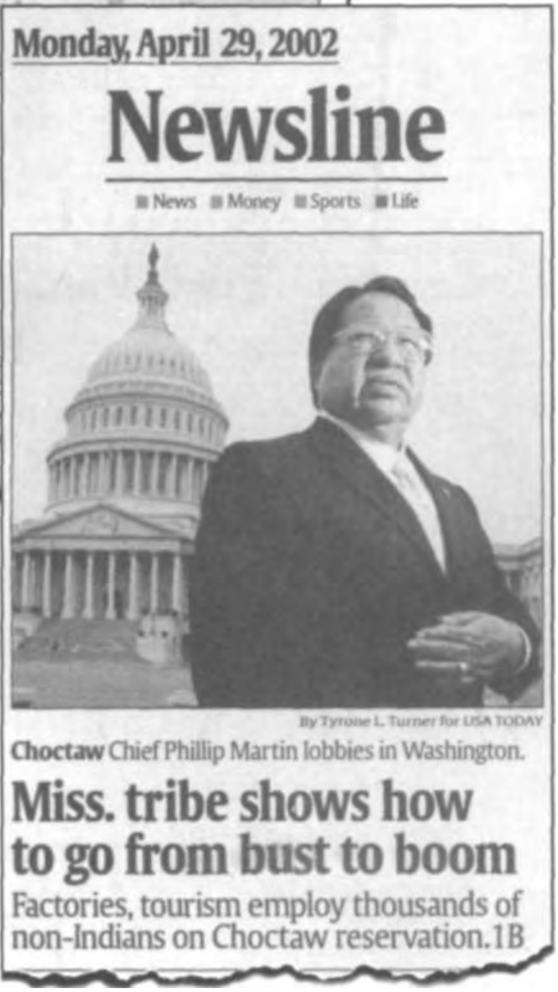

Monday, April 29, 2002

Newsline

■ News ■ Money ■ Sports ■ Life

By Tyrone L. Turner for USA TODAY

Choctaw Chief Phillip Martin lobbies in Washington.

Miss. tribe shows how to go from bust to boom

Factories, tourism employ thousands of non-Indians on Choctaw reservation.1B

Choctaw indian chief Phillip Martin, head of a Choctaw reservation in Mississippi, lobbies in Washington. (Photo: *USA Today*, p. 1, April 29, 2002)

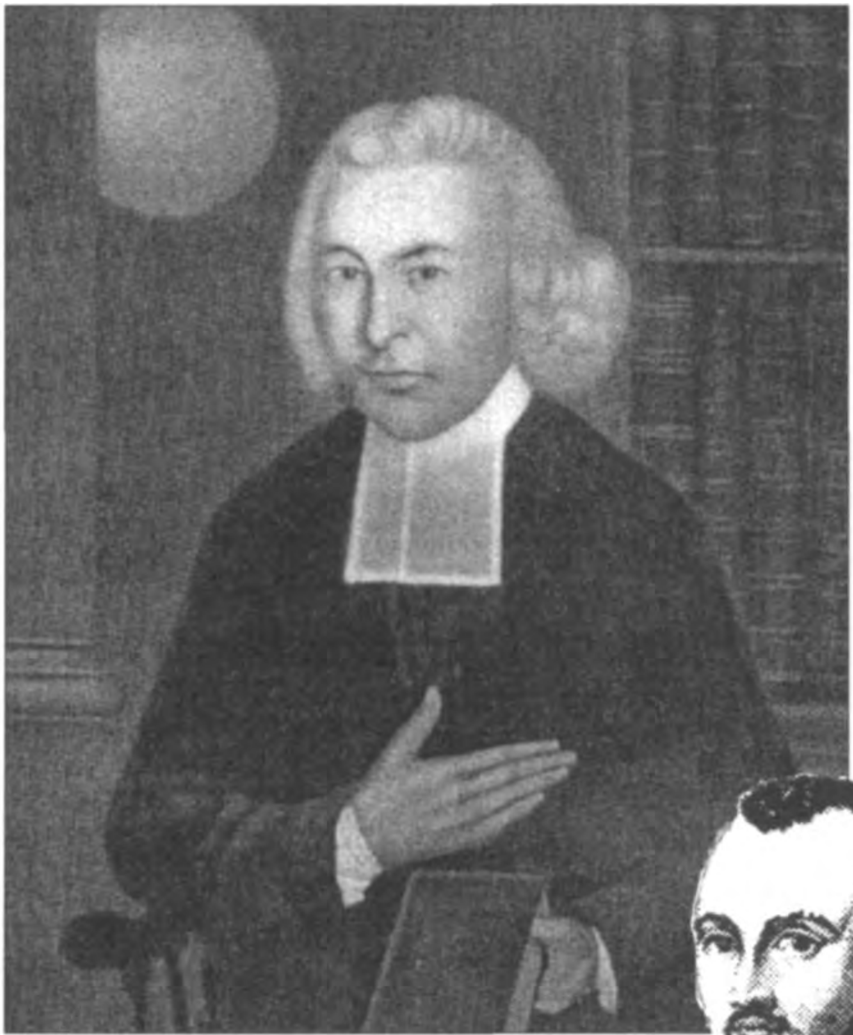

Reverend Ezra Stiles was one of the founders and an early President of Yale College (now University) in New Haven, Connecticut. A member of the Masonic Lodge, Stiles is giving the Lodge sign in this drawing, published in *The Literary Diary of Ezra Stiles, D.D., L.L.D, President of Yale College*, edited by Franklin Dexter, M.A. (Volume I, January 1, 1769-March 13, 1776). Above Stiles' head is the sacred sun symbol, and in his left hand he is displaying a mysterious book, which may or may not be the Holy Bible. Interesting, too, is the collar men of this era wore, which resembles the ancient, finely manicured beard of the Babylonian historical elite.

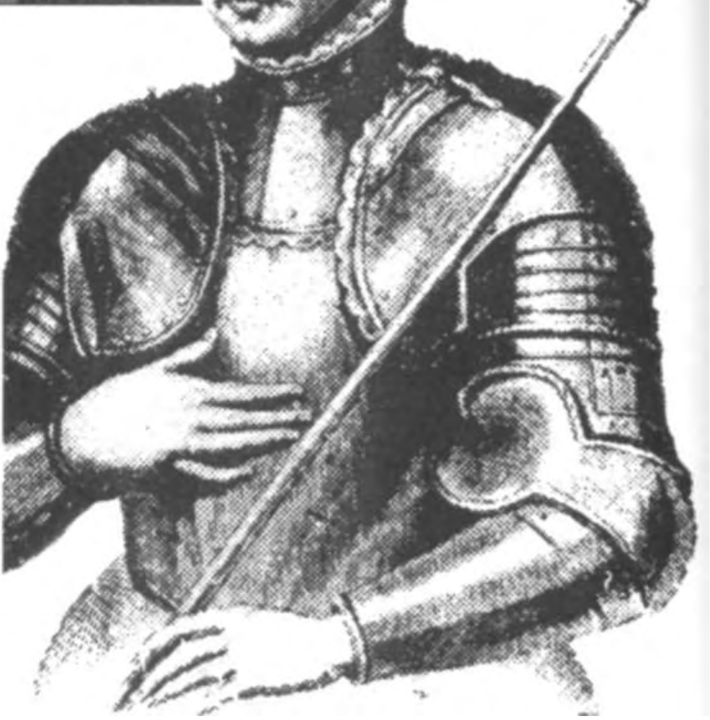

The founder of the Catholic order, the Jesuits, Ignatius Loyola. Loyola, a Spanish general, had been a member of the *Alumbrados*, the Order of the Illuminati. The Pope commissioned Loyola to counter the Protestant Reformation. Loyola's Jesuits used every means to do so, from deception to outright murder. To boost demonic control over the priests and soldiers of his new Jesuit Order, Loyola instituted methods of prayer and meditation taught by the Moslems and Moors. These *"Spiritual Exercises of Loyola"* continue to be employed by Jesuit priests and by monks, priests, and nuns of many other orders as well.

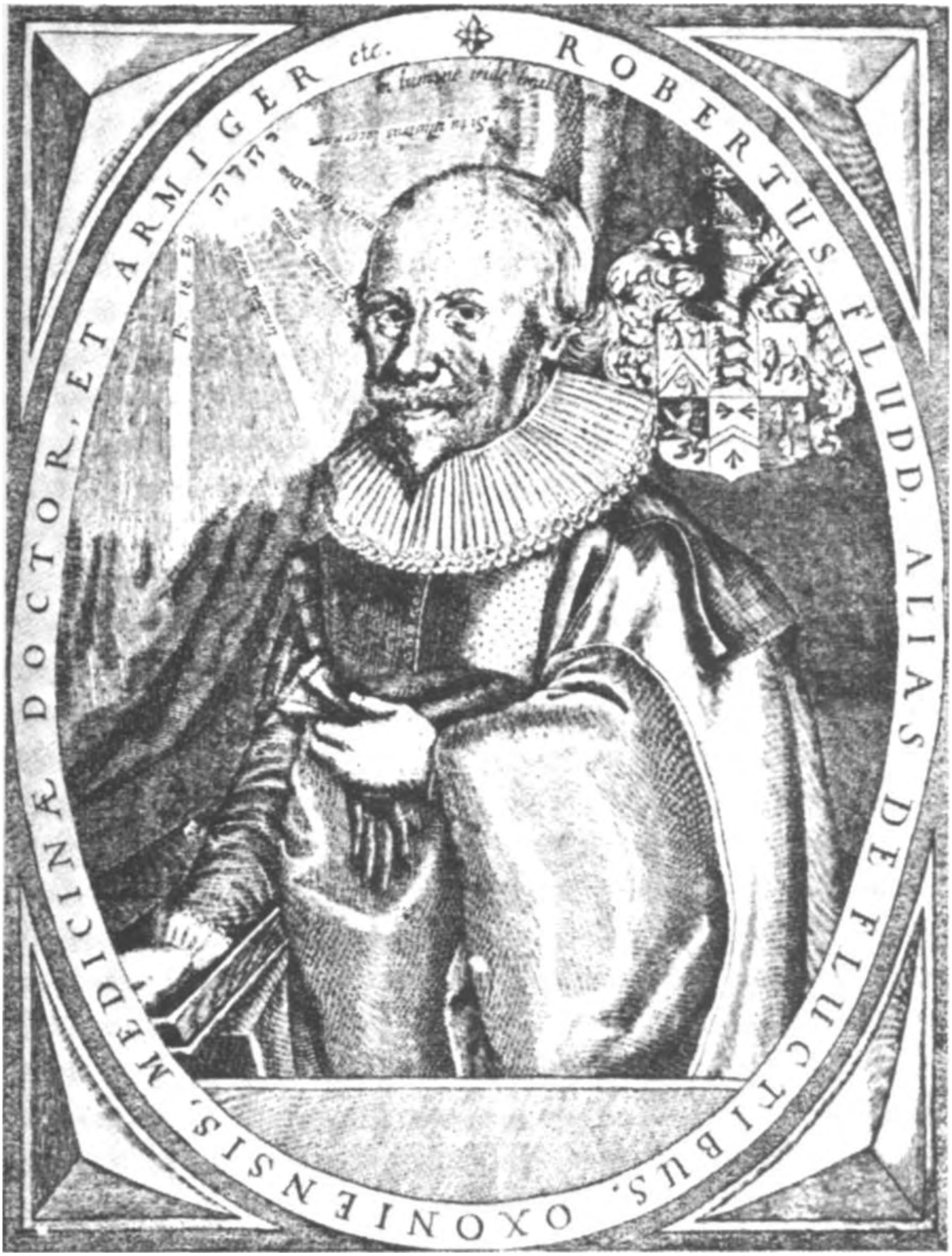
ROBERTUS FLUDD, ALIAS DE FLUCTIBUS, OXONIENSIS, MEDICINÆ DOCTOR, ET ARMIGER etc.

Robert Fludd (1574-1637), medical doctor and hermeticist of the late English Renaissance, was a Rosicrucian and practitioner of the magical arts who emphasized the power of visual and imaginative symbols.

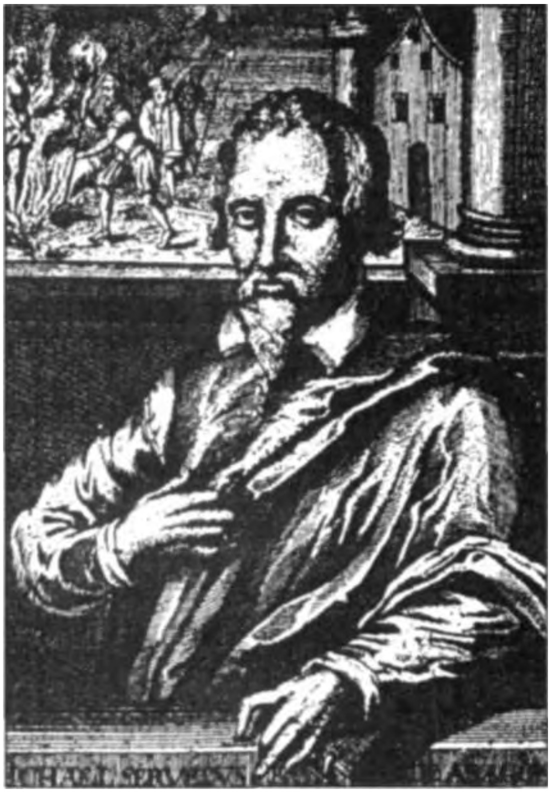

Michael Servetus who, in 1555, was burned at the stake by Calvinists for having published a treatise disagreeing with the doctrine of the Trinity. Servetus, an enemy of Christ, was an Illuminist who worked to bring in heresies to pollute Christianity. He has been called "The Father of Unitarianism."

A top official of the Orthodox hierarchy in Greece gives the initiate sign.

The Pope with Palestinian leader Yassar Arafat, at the Vatican on September 15, 1982.

Eugene Vintras, a Frenchman who taught occult spiritual philosophy, wears the upside down cross on his religious robe and presents the sigil (hand sign) of his Order. Vintras gained a large following in the 1830s and 1840s by declaring the coming of a dark Prince, a god on earth who would rule and reign.

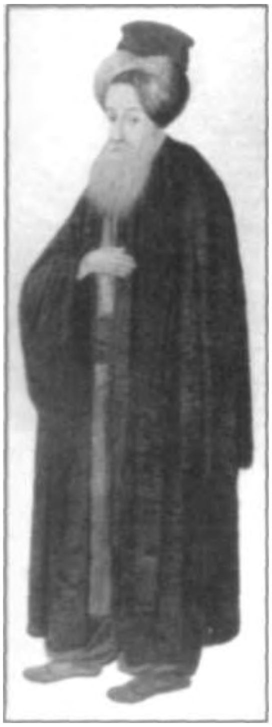

A chief rabbi in Ottoman Turkey (from the book, *The Lost Messiah: In Search of the Mystical Rabbi Sabbatai Sevi,* by John Freely (Woodstock and New York: The Overlook Press, 2001)

Aleister Crowley, as a youth, in his occult regalia. Crowley, whose books were the basis later for Anton LaVey, founder of the Church of Satan and Michael Aquino, founder of the Temple of Set. Crowley also inspired L. Ron Hubbard, founder of Scientology.

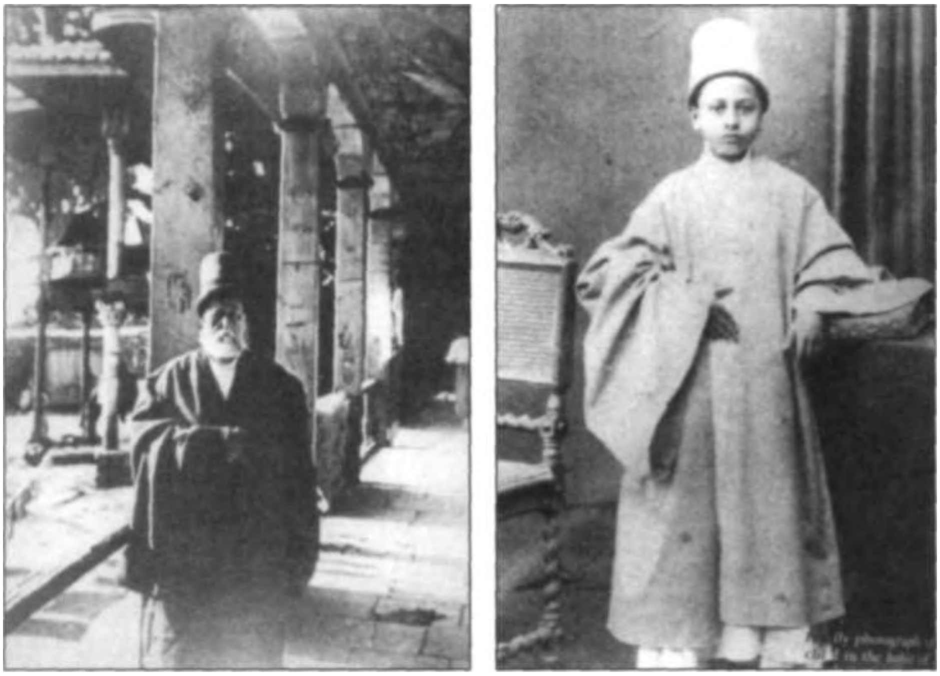

An elderly man who is chief dervish of the Sufi Moslem sect and a young boy who is a dervish in training in the early 1900s (from the book, *The Lost Messiah: In Search of the Mystical Rabbi Sabbatai Sevi,* by John Freely (Woodstock and New York: The Overlook Press, 2001)

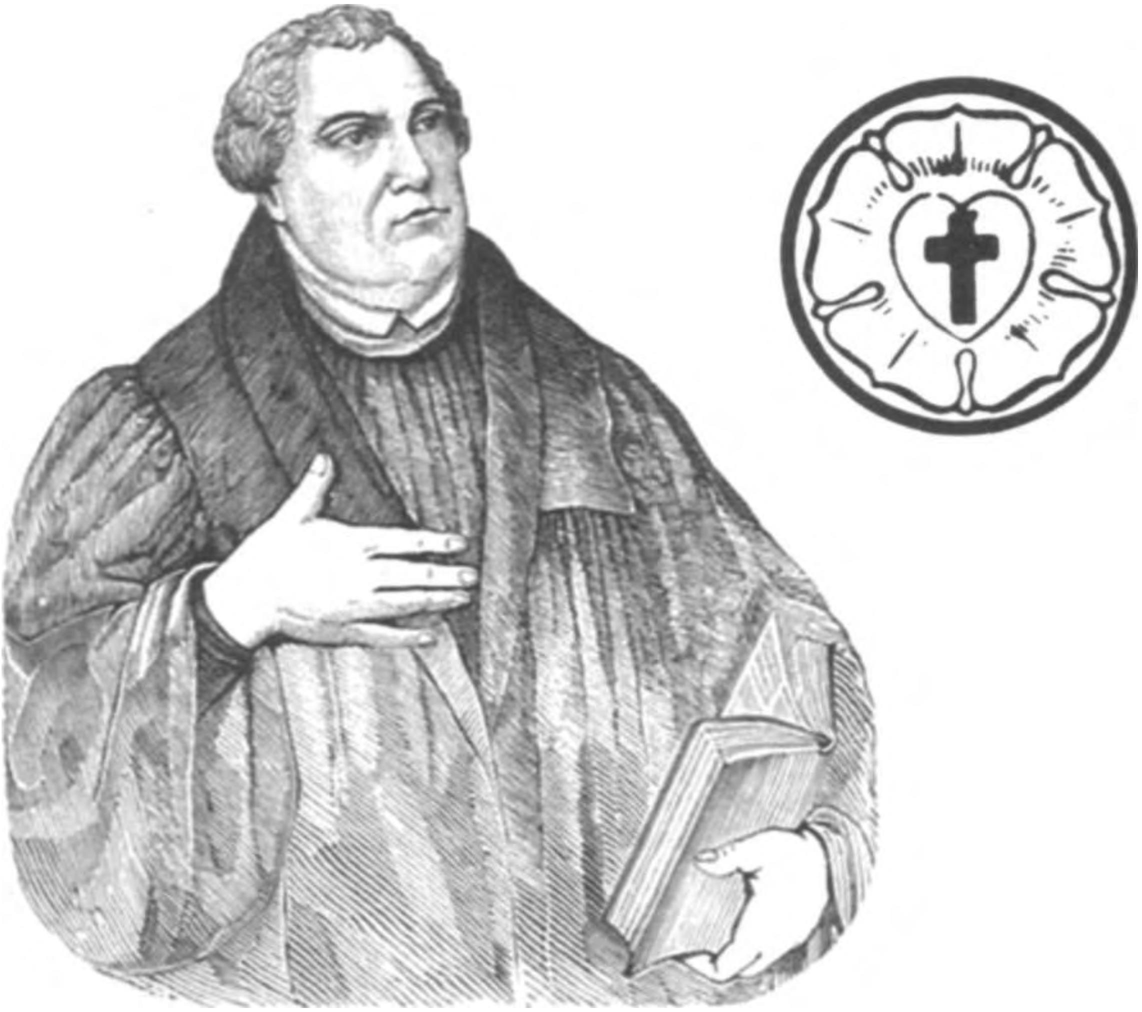

MARTIN Luther, priest who set in motion the Protestant Reformation, is shown in this picture from *Christian News,* a periodic Lutheran publication, giving a masonic sign. The same Lutheran newspaper carries on its masthead (pg. 1) of every edition Luther's seal, of Rosicrucian design. In fact, Luther was a Rosicrucian. Masonic signs and grips closely parallel those of Rosicrucians *(Christian News,* February 18, 2003, p. 1).

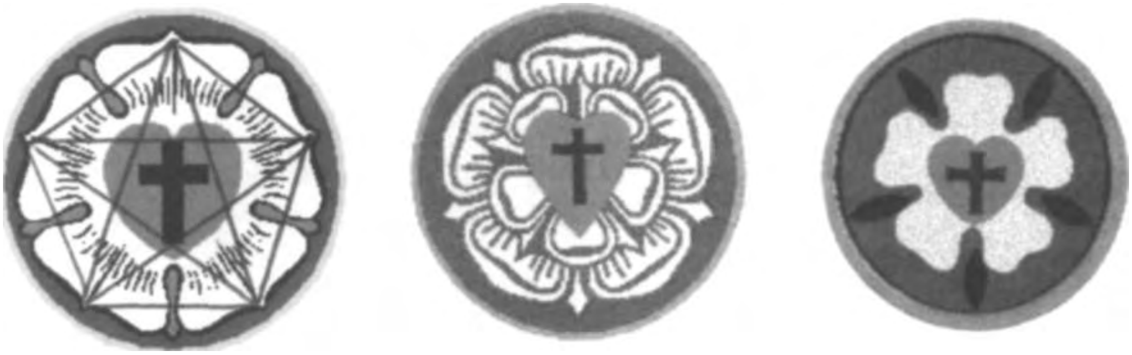

In an article on the internet entitled "Calvinism," John Paul Jones quoted Masonic scholar Manly P. Hall, 33°, as affirming that Protestant reformer Martin Luther was a Rosicrucian initiate. In the article, Luther's official seal, middle, was depicted, along with the seal (far right) on Martin Luther's ring. At far left is Luther's seal with author Jones showing how if the petals of the flower are connected, an occult pentacle results.

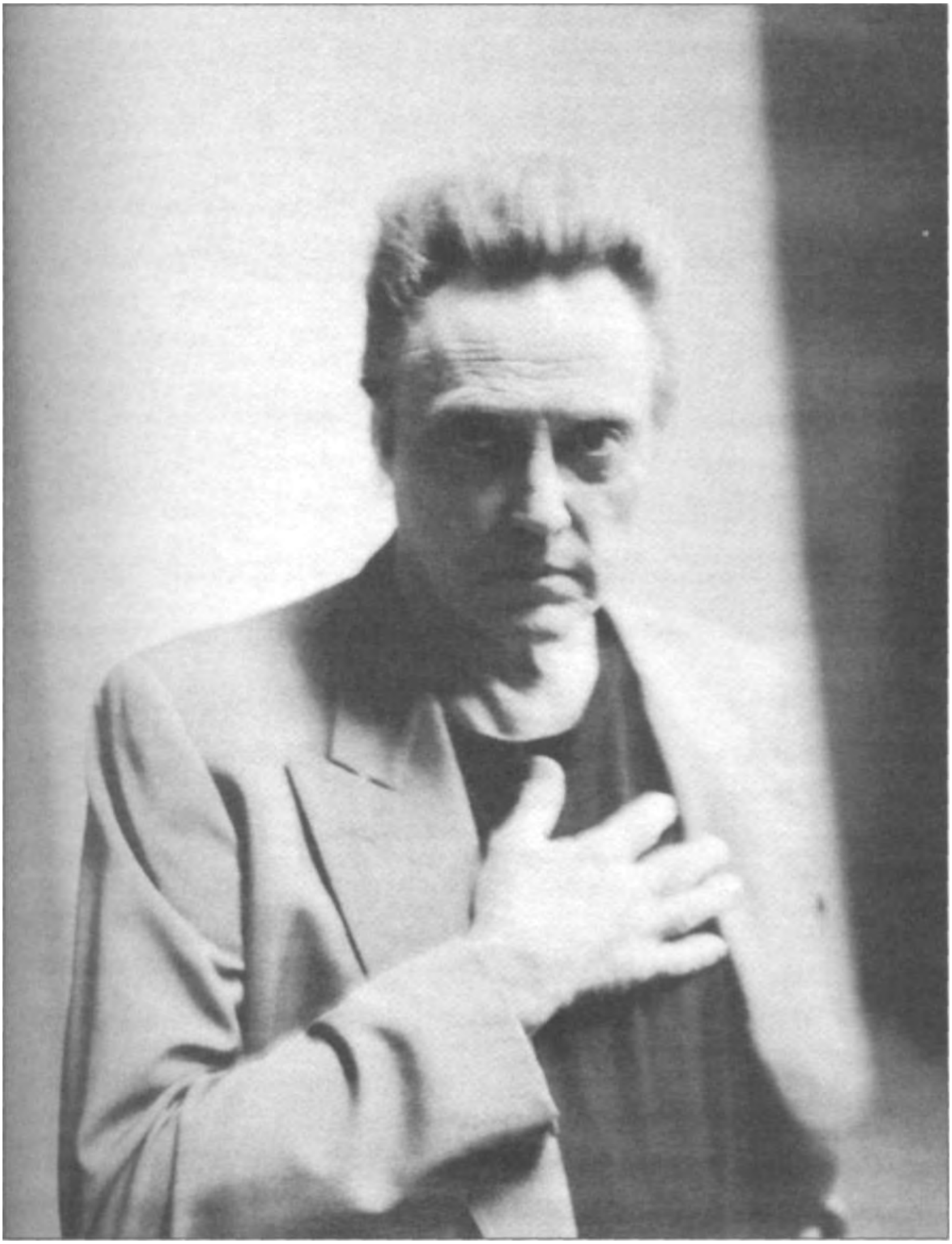

Christopher Walken, actor, seems to be favored by the elite. He is often cast in strange roles as deranged psychos, mob killers, etc. *Interview* magazine devoted this entire page in its June 2004 edition, without caption and without comment or explanation. Obviously, the picture speaks for itself.

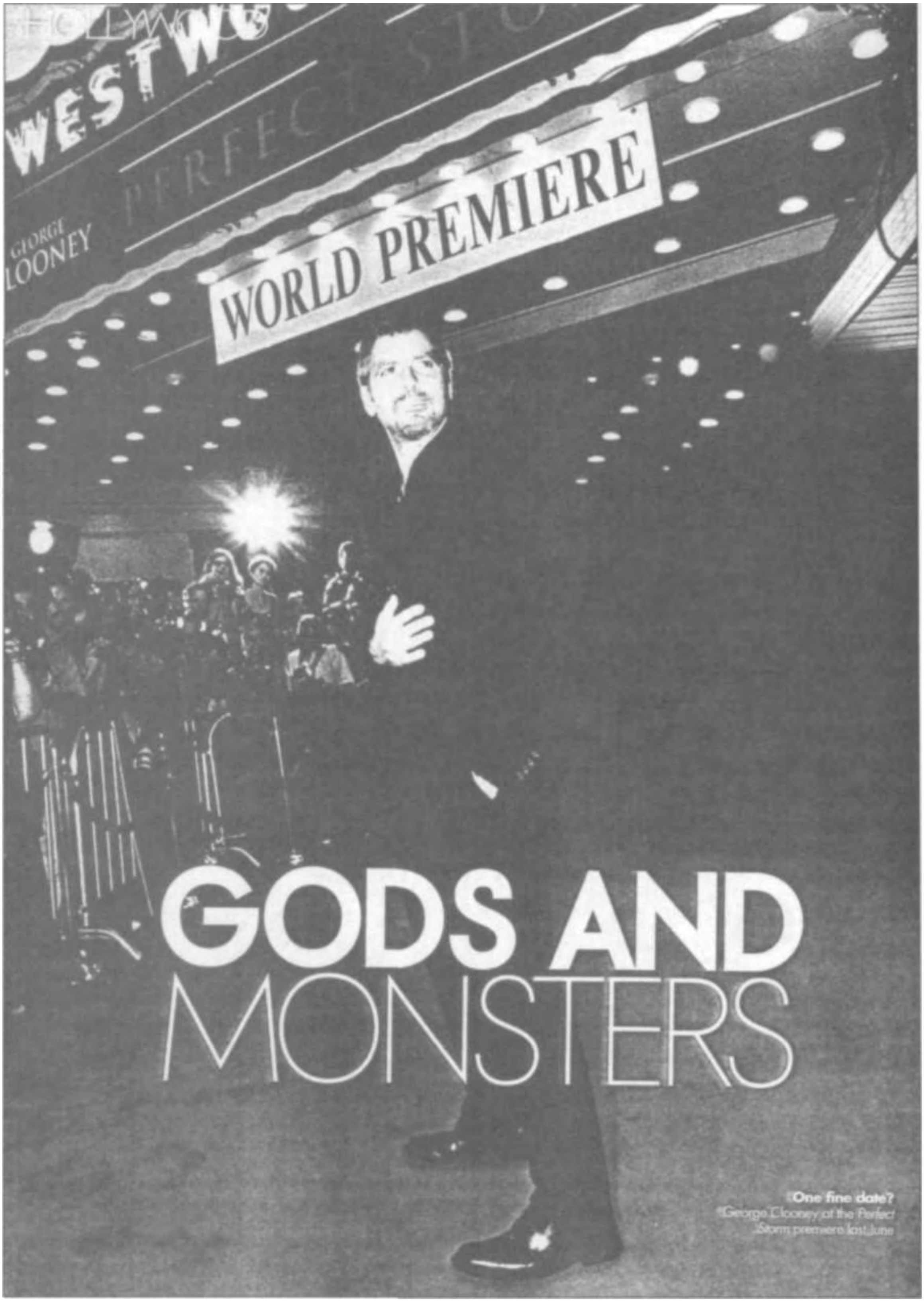
WESTW
PERFEC
GEORGE
LOONEY
WORLD PREMIERE
GODS AND
MONSTERS
One fine date?
George Clooney at the Perfect Storm premiere last June

In an article, strangely enough, entitled *"Gods and Monsters,"* Hollywood actor George Clooney is seen presenting his sigil as he stands outside a theatre presenting the world premier of the film, *A Perfect Storm.* (Photo: *Elle* magazine, November 2000)

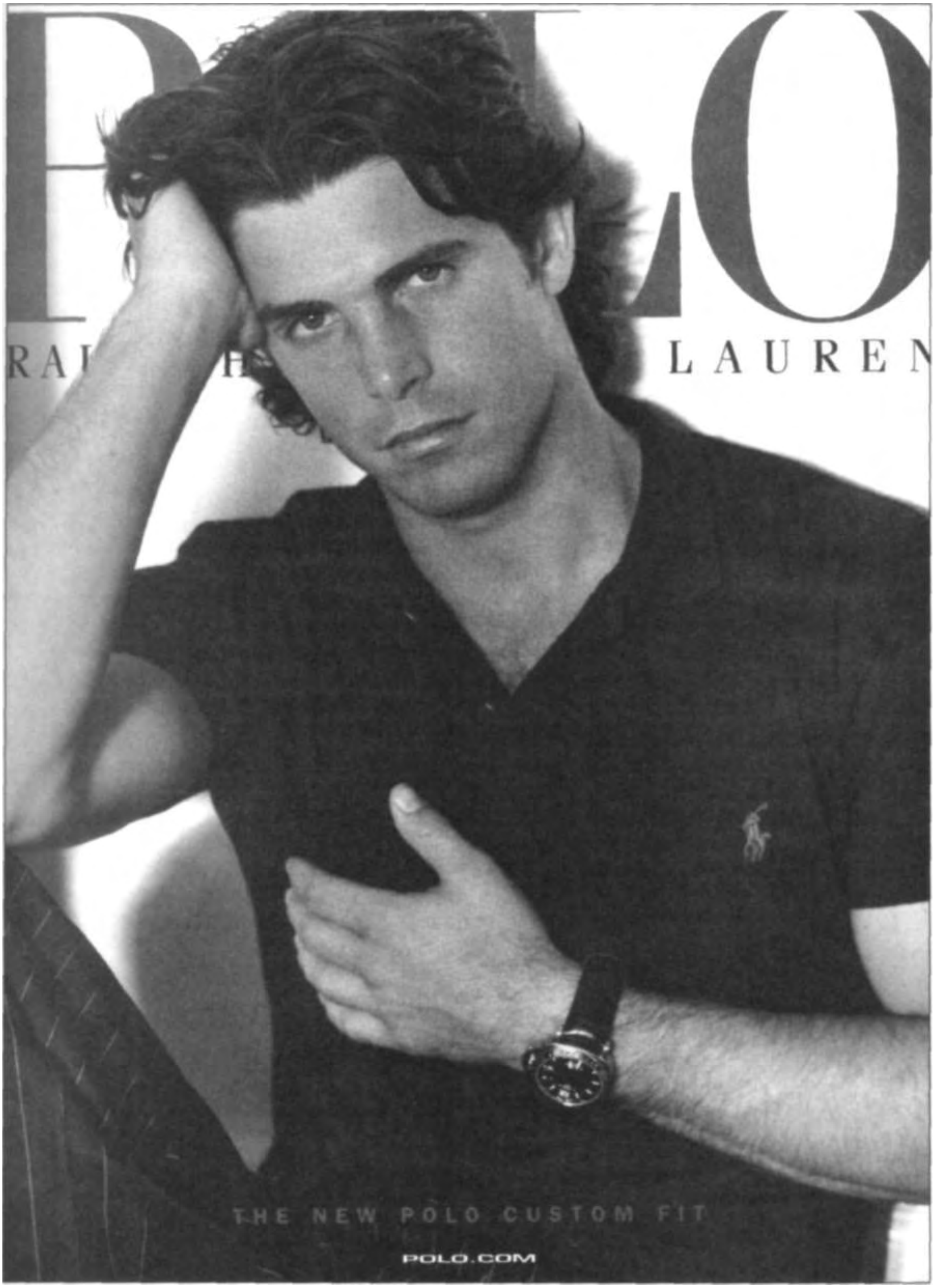
POLO
RALPH LAUREN
THE NEW POLO CUSTOM FIT
POLO.COM

Ad for Polo clothing in consumer magazine.

Michael A Hoffman II *Secret Societies and Psychological Warfare* **Page 56**

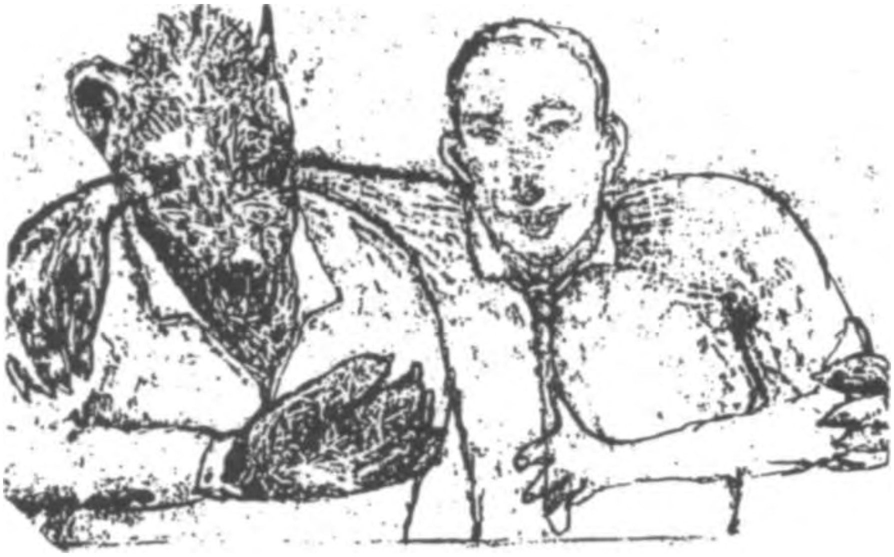

Eating Raoul
.. .and Others

"How would you like to bite into a part-human bacon cheeseburger?" asks Michael Colgan, Ph.D., in the journal *Nutrition A fitness* (sic) (vol. 10. no. 1 & 2). In five years they'll be at a burger stand near you, predicts the author. The U.S. Department of Agriculture's research center in Beltsville, Md., has been inserting human genes into fertilized swine eggs, and a herd of "hupigs" now resides at the center. One goal of such research is to manufacture "spare parts for humans," that is, genetically engineered organs to replace diseased human organs; another goal is to "design" animals for more efficient meat production.

The USDA creatures reportedly suffer from coordination so poor that they can barely walk. They also are subject to arthritis and lung and gut diseases. State and federal laws severely restrict access by journalists and the public, and photographs of the "hunimals" are forbidden.

In Michael Hoffman's excellent book exposing the psychological and alchemical bases of the elite, *Secret Societies and Psychological Warfare,* the author included this news clipping about the horrors of inserting human genes into swine and other animals. The phrase *"Eating Raoul."* comes from a cult-classic film about people who enjoy eating human flesh.

SEVENTEEN

Triangles Up, Triangles Down, Triangles, Triangles All Around

Everywhere one turns today the triangle is seen. On TV, and in art, architecture, product design, advertising, commercial packaging, and in religion it is ubiquitous. I am convinced that this simple, yet profound device, the triangle, somehow has a mystical, mesmerizing effect on men's minds. The never-ending blizzard of triangle designs we encounter daily is intended to induce a trance state in those who are bombarded day and night by it.

Back to Babylon

For an answer why the triangle may be the ultimate satanic symbol for Illuminists we go back in time to uncover its origins. A book on mathematics history called *Early Computations* tells us that "A Babylonian tablet dated around 1900 BC to 1600 BC and called 'Plimpton 322' deals with Pythagorean triplets." This ancient document detailed an elementary knowledge of triangles and proportions.

The Triangle as Woman's "Holy Door"

Barbara Walker, in her *The Woman's Encyclopedia of Myths and Secrets,* outlines how the ancient Mystery Religions greatly honored the triangle as the sign of deity. She notes that the Hindus, too, borrowed this emblem as their tantric (sexual) female Triangle of Life. It was known as the Kali Yantra, sign of the female vulva. In Egypt, the triangle was a hieroglyphic sign for "woman." In ancient Greece, the sexual intent is clear in that the triangle represented the Holy Door, genitalia of the All-Mother Demeter, known as "Mother Delta."[1]

"The triangle was everywhere connected with the female trinity, and a frequent component of monograms of goddesses," writes Walker.[2]

It is easily understood, therefore, why the gay homosexual movement adopted the sign of the *pink triangle* as its emblem. For male homosexuals particularly, the goddess image and feminine archetype were powerful motivators dictating adaptation of the triangle as symbol of "gay liberation."

To occultists, the triangle pointing upward represents *fire* and that pointing downward *water.* To combine, balance, and unite the two brings dualism, or *equilibrium,* which is a goal of Freemasonry and a cardinal tenet of all Illuminist religious systems.

The Pope's Triceps

The Vatican also got into the triangle act. In some Roman Catholic churches today, behind the altar we find displayed the all-seeing eye inside a triangle. Meanwhile, the Pope can often be seen wearing the symbol of the *triceps* on his vestments or on his Dagon Fish God hat, which has its own unique triangular design.

The triceps is a Nordic design of three earth diamonds thought to invoke earth energy powers and spiritual magic. By adding straight lines on its three sides to fill in the open spaces, we discover that the Triceps unexpectedly becomes a larger triangle with a concealed Jewish Star of David (six-pointed star) within.

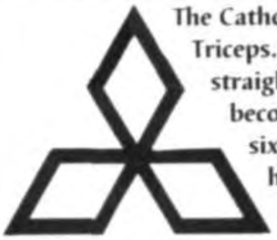

The Catholic Pope often wears this symbol, the Triceps. If the broken sides are filled in by straight lines from the tip to tip, the Triceps becomes a single, larger triangle bearing a six-pointed star in its center. Here we have the concealed Jewish Star of David being worn by the Pope.

The Triangle and Freemasonry

Many erroneously believe that Freemasonry is a Christian religion and may be misled into thinking that the prominent use of the triangle in its rituals and its display of icons has a Christian purpose. But in his book, *A Bridge to Light,* an official Scottish Rite publication of the Supreme Mother Council, 33°, Rex Hutchins, 33° explains that the triangle of the Masonic Lodge represents pagan religions as well and he especially cites the Hindu trinity of gods, Brahma, Vishnu, and Shiva.[3]

I have mentioned elsewhere that a triangle symbol containing a letter "Y" inside which divides it internally into three triangles is called the *Eye of the Dragon,* or Dragon's Eye. Since Freemasonry has its all-seeing eye which represents Satan, the Dragon, again we have a connection.

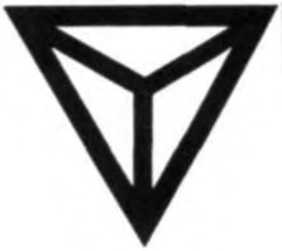

Dragon's Eye

The Triangle and Astrology

In astrology we find the concept of the *grand trine,* which is considered very, very lucky. Joan Quigley, astrologer to movie stars and to President Ronald Reagan and First Lady Nancy Reagan, says that, "the grand trine is formed by three planets approximately 120 degrees apart. When you see this sign in the planets when forecasting their horoscope, you know they are about to hit (figuratively) a "grand slam home run."[4]

Quigley illustrates the grand trine in her book, *What Does Joan Say?-My Seven*

Years As White House Astrologer to Nancy and Ronald Reagan.[5] As it turns out, the astrological symbol for a grand trine is a *triangle inside a circle.*

This is the same symbol configuration adapted by Alcoholics Anonymous (AA) founder Bill Wilson to be the official logo of AA. My extensive research of Bill Wilson's life documents he was an occultist. He despised Christianity and adopted AA's concept of worship of an unnamed "Higher Power" to substitute for Jesus. Wilson came up with the logo for AA from a dream he had in which he saw the image of the triangle within a circle and *knew* it was to become the logo for AA.[6]

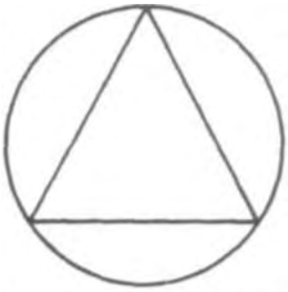

Grand Trine of Astrology

Do the Illuminati Secretly Worship the Great Goddess?

It is interesting that in the Jewish Cabala, we again find use of the triangle as a feminine vulva sign. Of the ten Sephiroth, the third Sephira, or Triad, is deemed of feminine potency. Formed as a triangle, it represents the "great productive Mother, who copulates and is united sexually with the Father." In effect, to cabalists she is the feminine form of "God."[7]

Just as Masons decry the equality of ordinary women, even denying women the opportunity to become a Mason in most orders, so do Orthodox Jews who practice cabalism openly proscribe and limit women's rights. Yet, we see that deeply hidden and imbedded in their secret doctrine, both Masonry and Cabalistic Judaism revere and honor the Great Goddess, just as does Roman Catholicism in the form of Mother Mary.

It may surprise male chauvinists, but the Goddess, the consort of Lucifer, the woman figure whose sign is the downward pointing triangle, reigns side-by-side with Jahbuhlun (Satan) over the Illuminati and its minions.

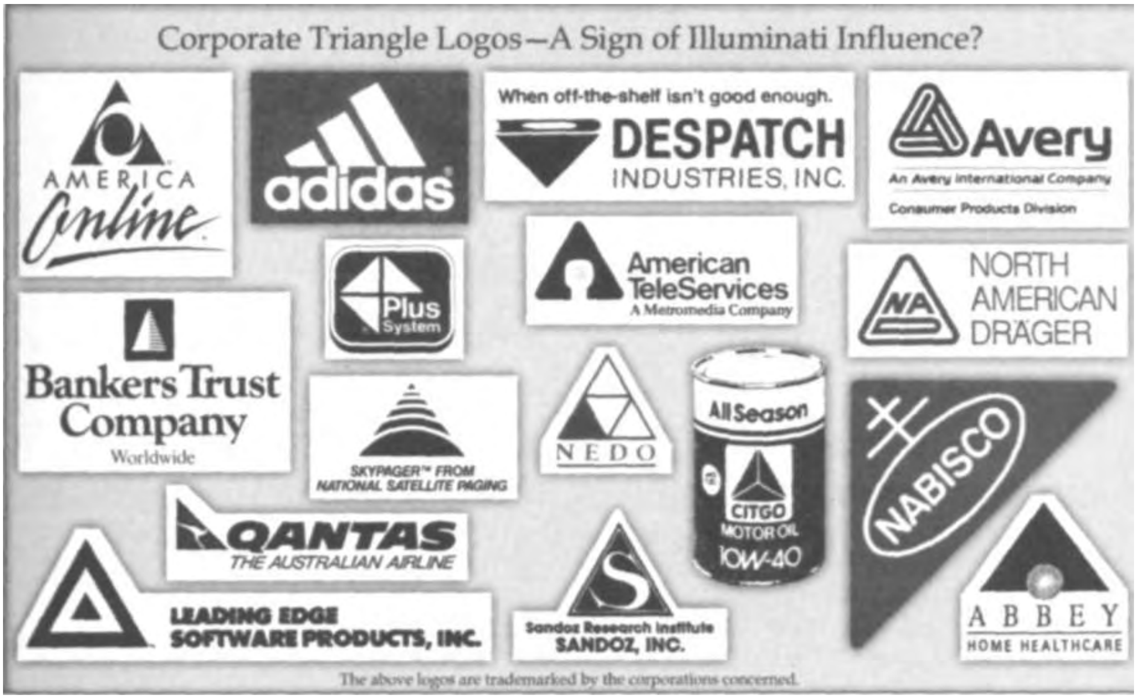

Corporate Triangle Logos—A Sign of Illuminati Influence?

AMERICA Online
adidas
When off-the-shelf isn't good enough.
DESPATCH INDUSTRIES, INC.
Avery
An Avery International Company
Consumer Products Division
Plus System
American TeleServices
A Metromedia Company
NA
NORTH AMERICAN DRÄGER
Bankers Trust Company
Worldwide
SKYPAGER™ FROM NATIONAL SATELLITE PAGING
NEDO
All Season
CITGO
MOTOR OIL
10W-40
NABISCO
QANTAS
THE AUSTRALIAN AIRLINE
LEADING EDGE SOFTWARE PRODUCTS, INC.
S
Sandoz Research Institute
SANDOZ, INC.
ABBEY
HOME HEALTHCARE

The above logos are trademarked by the corporations concerned.

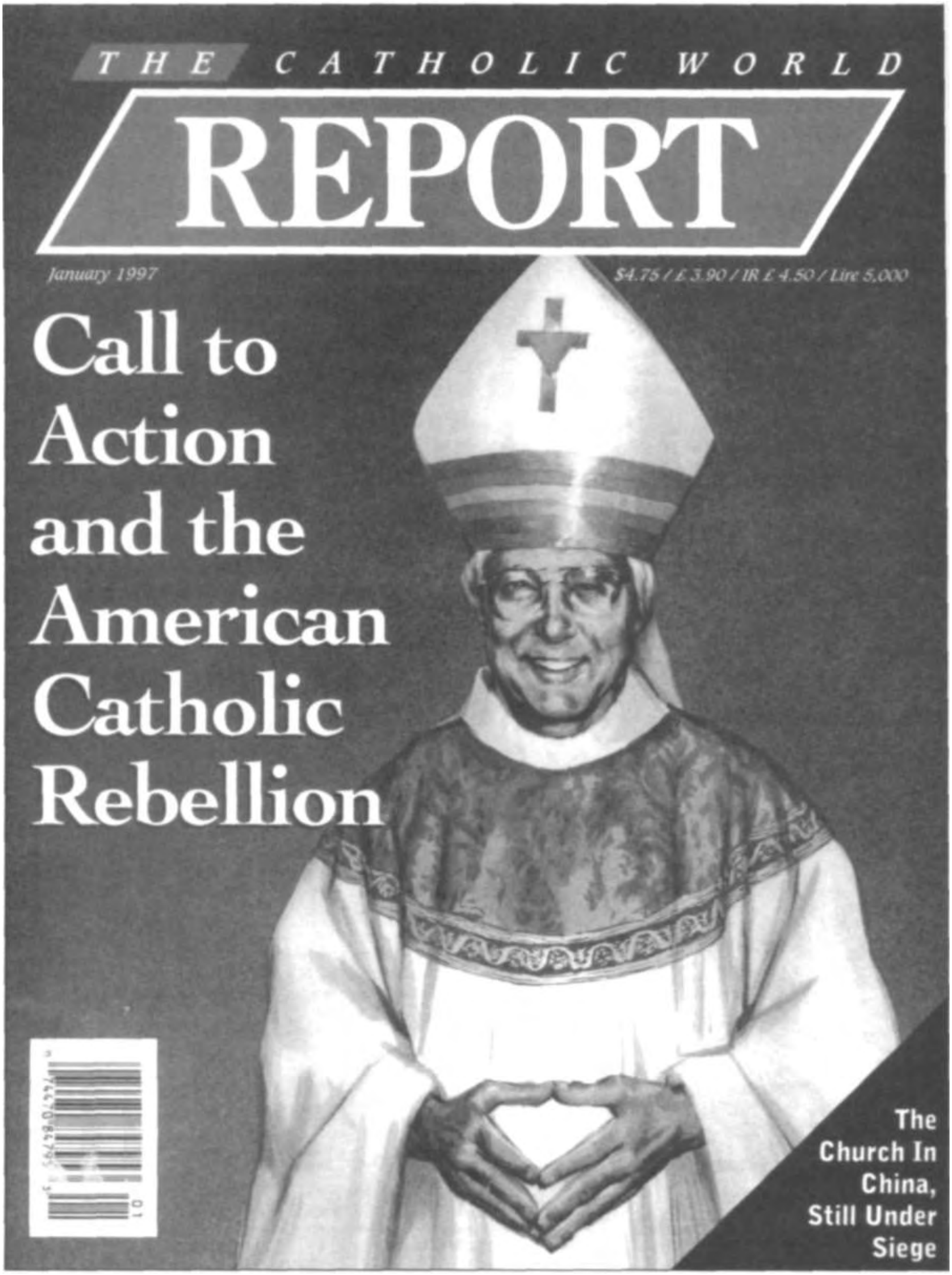
THE CATHOLIC WORLD
REPORT
January 1997
$4.75 / £3.90 / IR £4.50 / Lire 5,000
Call to Action and the American Catholic Rebellion
The Church In China, Still Under Siege

So many priests are now outed as homosexuals and pedophiles, this noted Catholic publication, *The Catholic World Report* devoted a special edition to the topic. The editors of this cover of the January, 1997, edition, call the problem a "Rebellion." The smiling Catholic prelate has a pink triangle on the cross, symbol of his cap (itself triangle-shaped upward) and the Bishop's hands are fixed in the triangle downward (feminine, delta position).

Homosexual activists have latched onto the pink-colored *triangle* as the chosen motif for their protests and demonstrations. On this page we find demonstrators holding up placards with the pink triangle and, at a university, the pink triangle against a black circle background on the hands of gay students. Then there is the *"Subscribe!"* to *Frontiers* magazine ad card, featuring a gay man with a rainbow-colored triangle on his chest. The newspaper clipping, *"Colored Triangle Has Become Badge of Honor For Gays,"* comes from the Montreal, Canada, *Gazette* newspaper, June 28, 1992.

SILENCE=DEATH
SILENCE=DEATH
New Y

Subscribe!
Part one of our gay road trip diary, plus Frontiers en Español
FRONTIERS
N MAGAZINE
Out in the Workplace
Sheila Kuehl,
Clive Barker, Ellen's Patrick Bristow
and lots of others who are way out

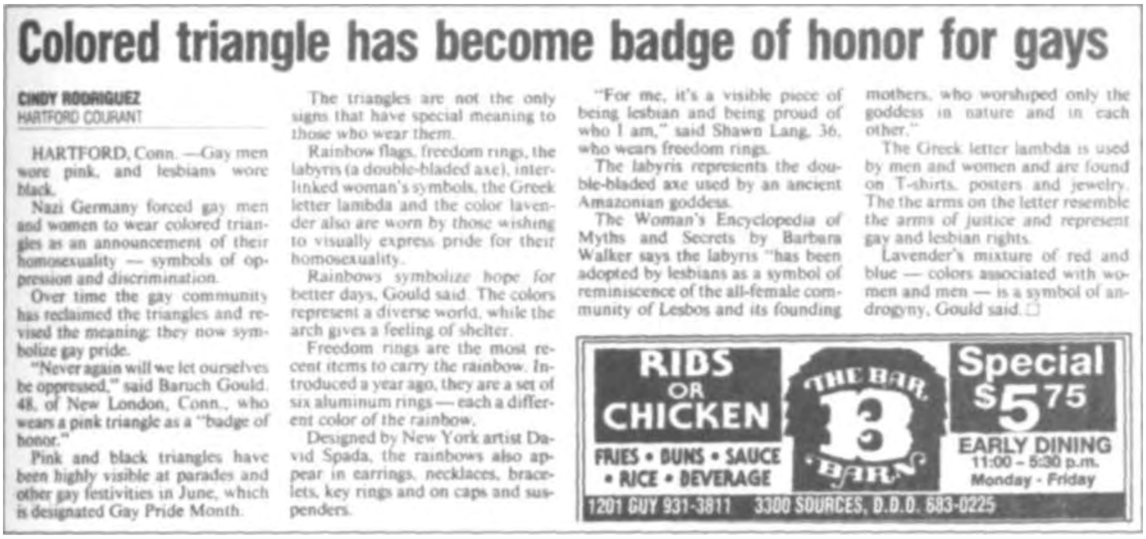

Colored triangle has become badge of honor for gays

CINDY RODRIGUEZ
HARTFORD COURANT

HARTFORD, Conn. —Gay men wore pink, and lesbians wore black.

Nazi Germany forced gay men and women to wear colored triangles as an announcement of their homosexuality — symbols of oppression and discrimination.

Over time the gay community has reclaimed the triangles and revised the meaning: they now symbolize gay pride.

"Never again will we let ourselves be oppressed," said Baruch Gould, 48, of New London, Conn., who wears a pink triangle as a "badge of honor."

Pink and black triangles have been highly visible at parades and other gay festivities in June, which is designated Gay Pride Month.

The triangles are not the only signs that have special meaning to those who wear them.

Rainbow flags, freedom rings, the labyris (a double-bladed axe), interlinked woman's symbols, the Greek letter lambda and the color lavender also are worn by those wishing to visually express pride for their homosexuality.

Rainbows symbolize hope for better days, Gould said. The colors represent a diverse world, while the arch gives a feeling of shelter.

Freedom rings are the most recent items to carry the rainbow. Introduced a year ago, they are a set of six aluminum rings — each a different color of the rainbow.

Designed by New York artist David Spada, the rainbows also appear in earrings, necklaces, bracelets, key rings and on caps and suspenders.

"For me, it's a visible piece of being lesbian and being proud of who I am," said Shawn Lang, 36, who wears freedom rings.

The labyris represents the double-bladed axe used by an ancient Amazonian goddess.

The Woman's Encyclopedia of Myths and Secrets by Barbara Walker says the labyris "has been adopted by lesbians as a symbol of reminiscence of the all-female community of Lesbos and its founding mothers, who worshiped only the goddess in nature and in each other."

The Greek letter lambda is used by men and women and are found on T-shirts, posters and jewelry. The the arms on the letter resemble the arms of justice and represent gay and lesbian rights.

Lavender's mixture of red and blue — colors associated with women and men — is a symbol of androgyny, Gould said. ☐

RIBS OR CHICKEN
FRIES • BUNS • SAUCE • RICE • DEVERAGE
THE BAR B BARN
Special $5^{75}
EARLY DINING
11:00 – 5:30 p.m.
Monday - Friday
1201 GUY 931-3811 3300 SOURCES, D.D.O. 683-0225

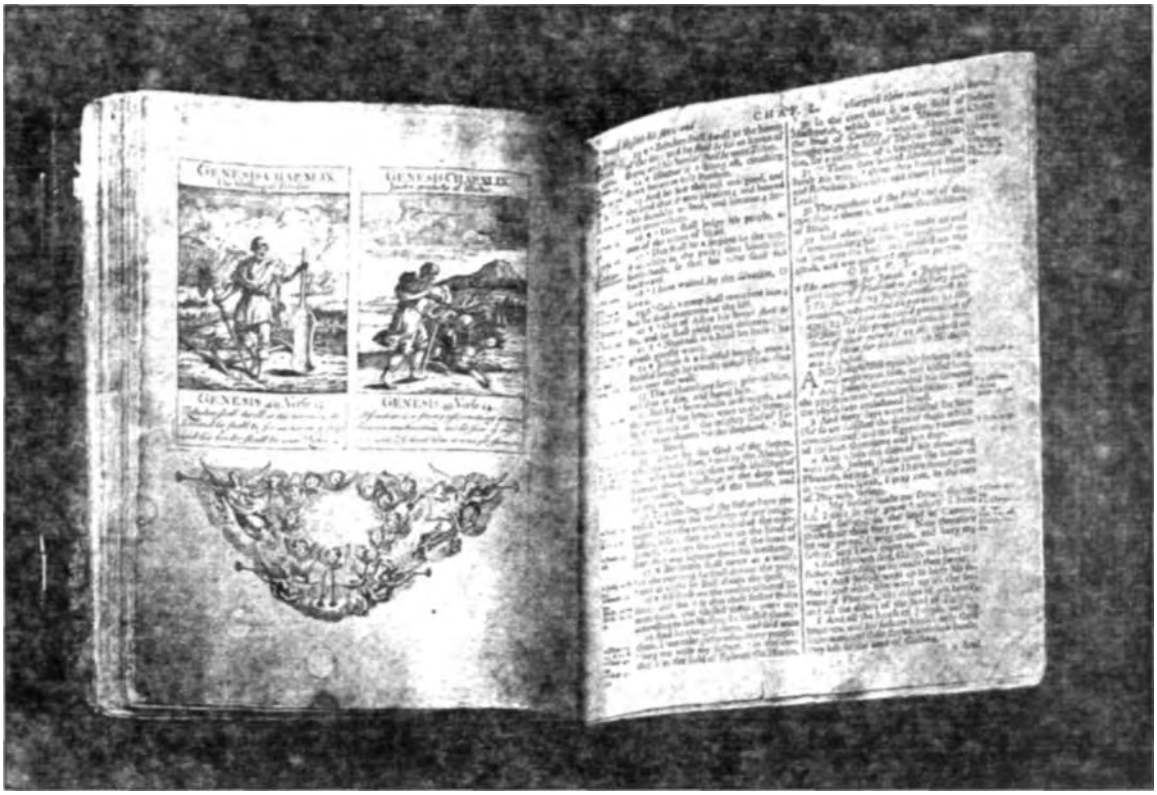

Triangle on Bible: **At the inauguration of the first President of the United States, April 30, 1789, in New York City, a Bible was provided by a Masonic lodge nearby and opened to Genesis chapters 49 and 50 where the familiar occult design of a** ***circle inside a triangle*** **just happens to be printed as an artist's illustration. George Washington pressed his palm to the book as the oath was administered and then kissed it. A member of the lodge then marked the page for succeeding generations. The year 2005 marked the fifth time the tome has been lent for a presidential inauguration, as another George celebrated the 216th anniversary of the inaugural Bible.**

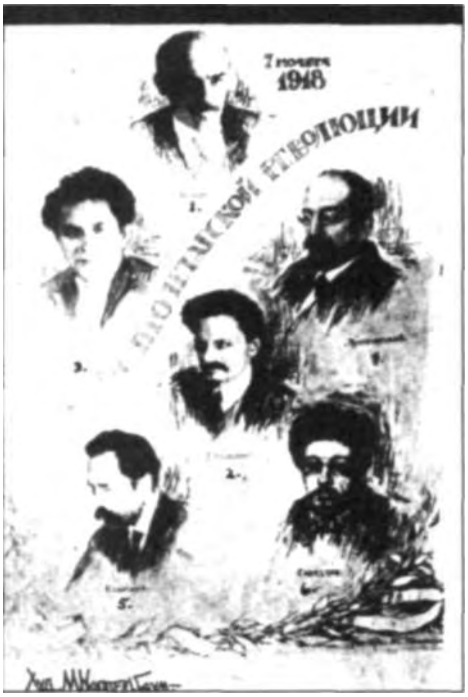

This official postcard, widely circulated by the Communist government in Russia following the Jewish Bolshevik takeover, is entitled "Leaders of the Proletarian Revolution." The postcard reveals the Jewishness of these original leaders of the Communist Party. All six shown, including Lenin and Trotsky, are Jews! Also observe the double triangle arrangement of the placement of the six individuals.

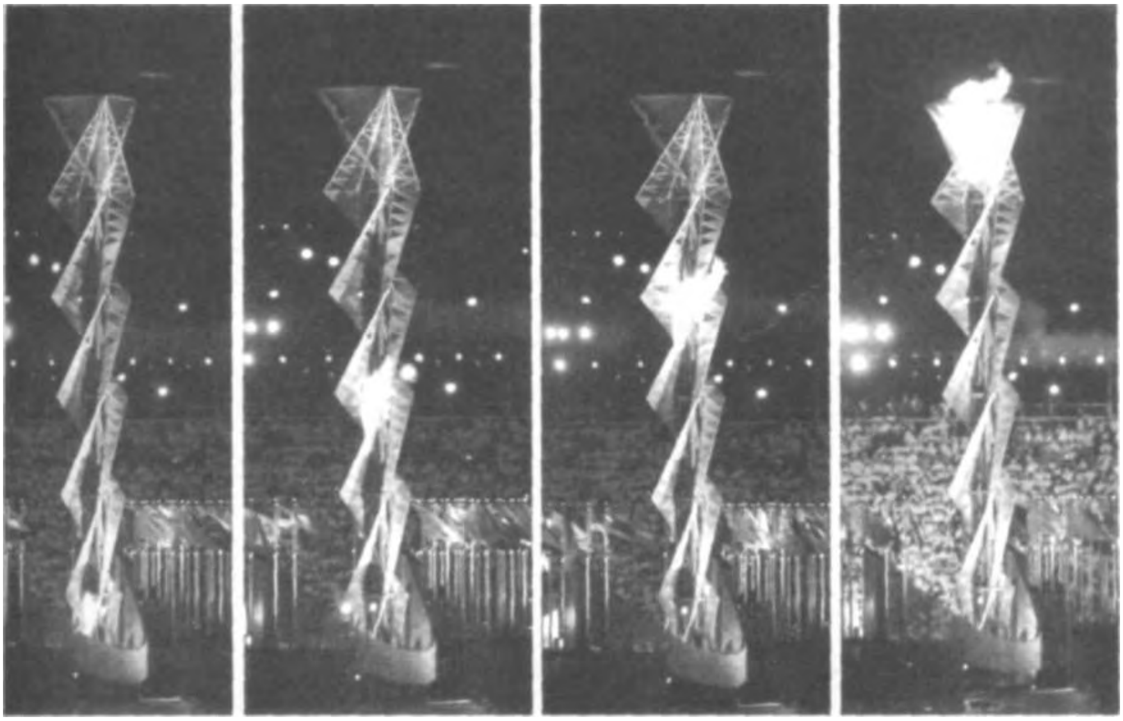

Triangular structure at gala opening ceremony of 2002 Winter Olympics in Salt Lake City, Utah. (Photo: *Newsweek*, February 18, 2002)

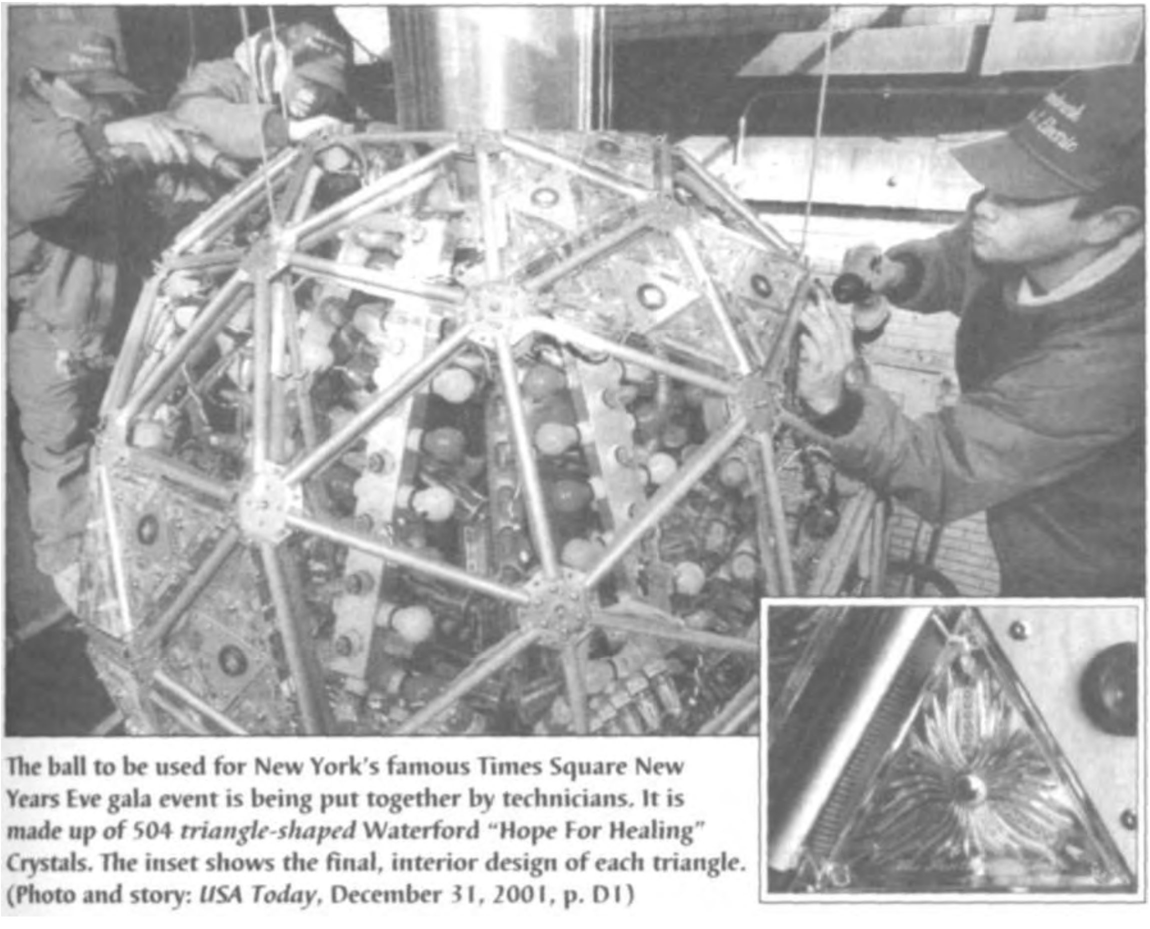

The ball to be used for New York's famous Times Square New Years Eve gala event is being put together by technicians. It is made up of 504 *triangle-shaped* Waterford "Hope For Healing" Crystals. The inset shows the final, interior design of each triangle. (Photo and story: *USA Today*, December 31, 2001, p. D1)

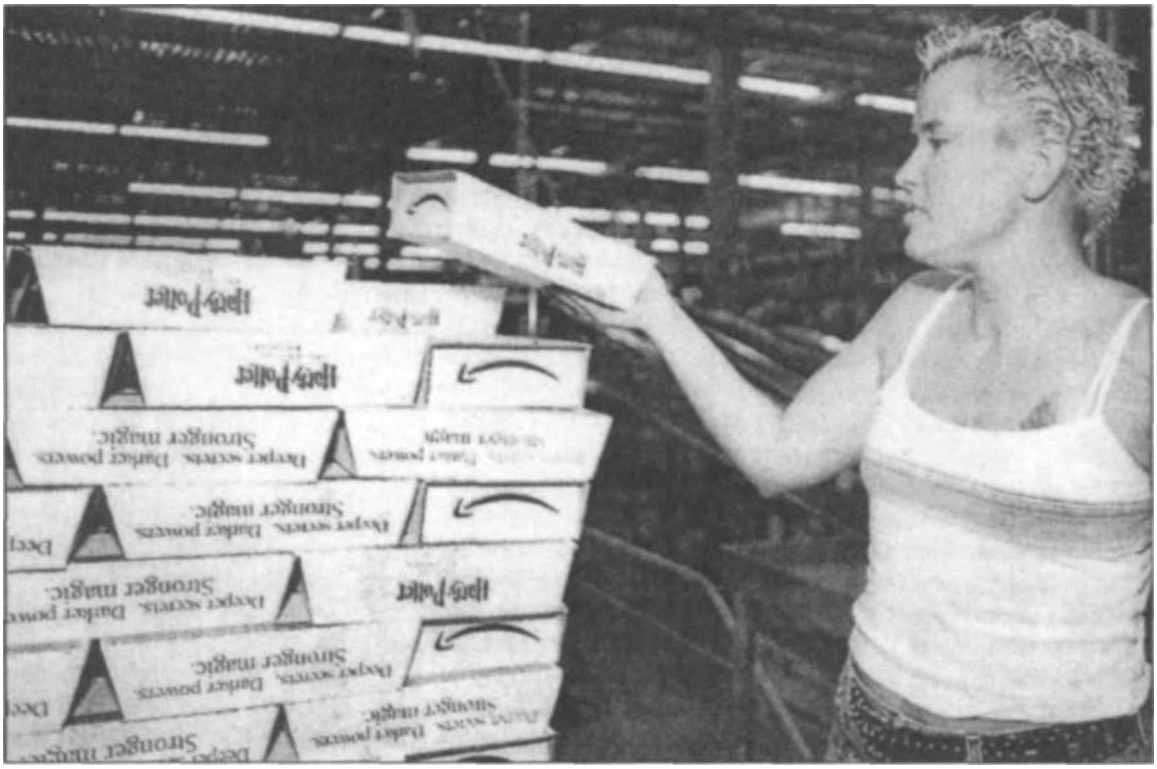

An employee at *Amazon.com*, the internet book sale firm, stacks boxes of copies of the occult kids novel, *Harry Potter and the Order of the Phoenix* at the company's warehouse. The book, oddly enough, in this photo is shown being stacked upside down. The trapezoid-shaped box of each book has the words *"Deeper Secrets, Darker Powers, Stronger Magic."* (Photo and news: Associated Press, June 18, 2003)

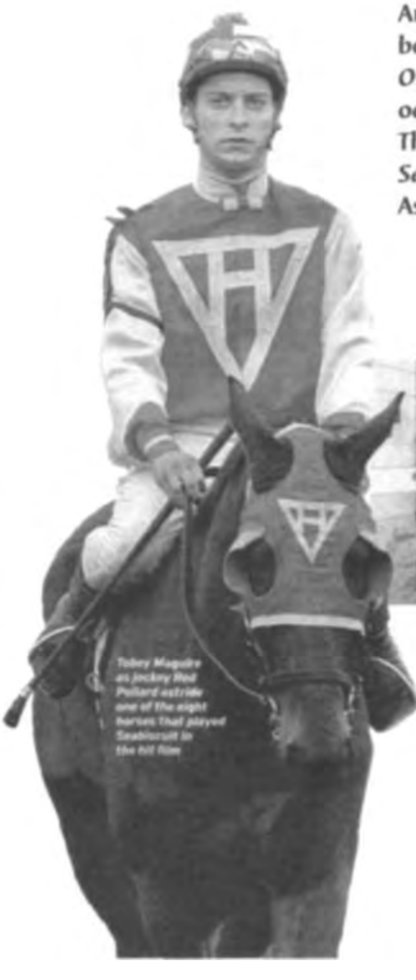

Tobey Maguire as jockey Red Pollard astride one of the eight horses that played Seabiscuit in the hit film

The triangle, pointing downward on a red-colored background, was the logo chosen by the owners of the famous race horse, *Seabiscuit*. The trademark "H" on the triangle stood for owner Charles Howard. The jockey who rode the horse and who became famous because of its winning ways was also, ironically, named *"Red"*—Red Pollard. (*Globe* magazine, August 12, 2003)

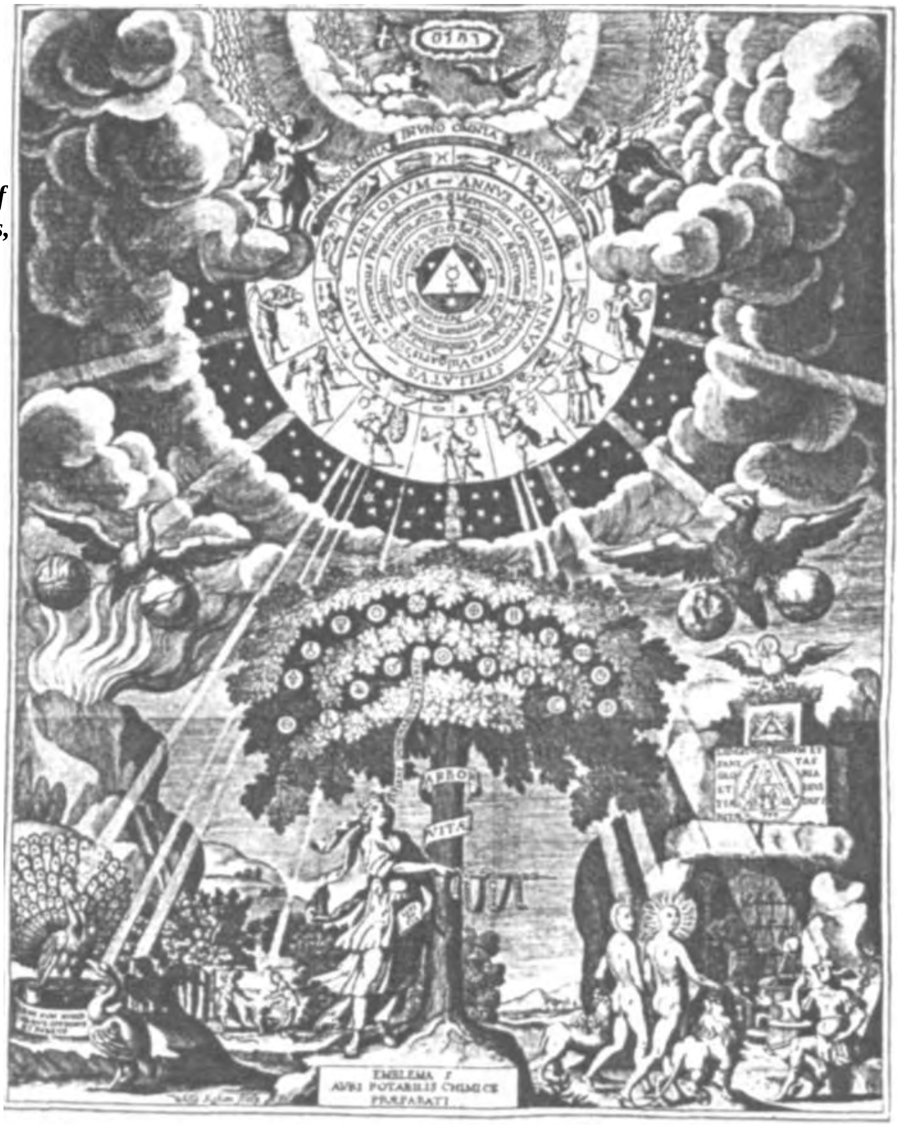
ANNUS VENTORUM — ANNUS SOLARIS
STELLATUS
ARBOR
VITA
EMBLEMA I
AURI POTABILIS CHIMICE
PRAEPARATI

According *to An Illustrated Encyclopedia of Traditional Symbols,* this illustration is packed with occult and alchemical symbols. However, the triangle is the focal point. Inside the triangle (the triangle with concentric circles surrounding it) is the astrological and generative symbols of male and female combined, the Hermaphrodite. This is indicative of the Illuminati's principle of integration, or synthesis, of the dialectical process.

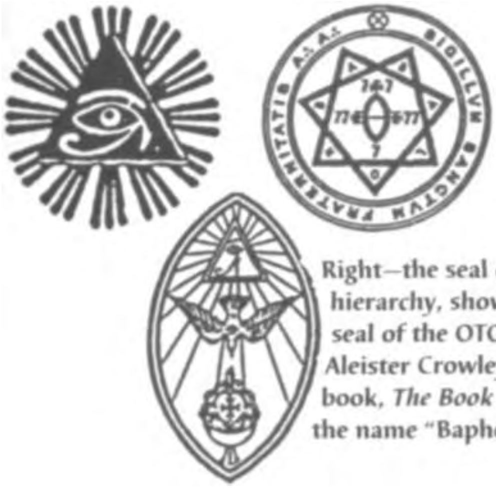
SIGILLVM SANCTVM FRATERNITATIS A∴A∴
747
7
777
666

Three symbols used by the Ordo Templi Orientis, (OTO) and by the Order of the Golden Dawn, each employing the triangle device. At left, the Eye of Horus in the pyramid of fire, radiating the solar blaze. Right—the seal of the Great White Brotherhood, the spirit hierarchy, showing the design of Babalon; and below is the seal of the OTO. This latter symbol was used by satanist Aleister Crowley on the title page of his spirit-channeled, 1904 book, *The Book of The Law.* Next to the seal, Crowley signed the name "Baphomet."

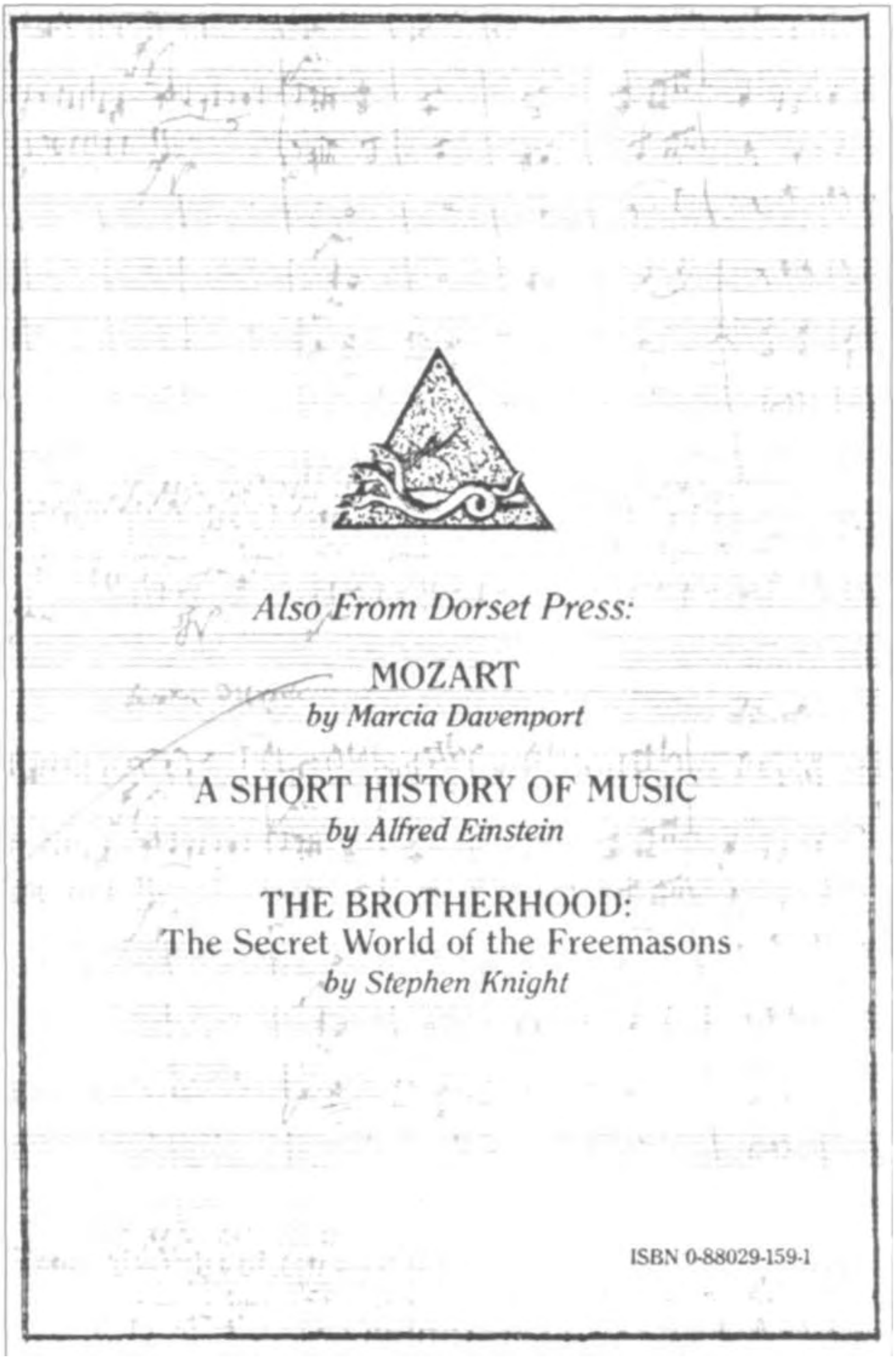

Also From Dorset Press:

MOZART
by Marcia Davenport

A SHORT HISTORY OF MUSIC
by Alfred Einstein

THE BROTHERHOOD:
The Secret World of the Freemasons
by Stephen Knight

ISBN 0-88029-159-1

This is the back cover of the book, *Mozart and freemasonry,* published by Dorset Press, a firm that publishes many masonic-related volumes. The triangle symbol is prominent. Within the triangle is the three-headed serpent, most likely representing the unholy trinity. Also, a smaller symbol, subtle and tiny, near the head of the serpent, is an image of some type of creature with a lightning bolt out of its head. Mozart, considered today a great composer and famous even during his lifetime, was murdered by the Masons in 1791 as penalty for his revealing of the secrets of Freemasonic ritual in his work entitled, *The Magic Flute.* Not only was the composer murdered (by poisoning), but the Masons blackballed his funeral. It is said that even Mozart's closest friends and family members did not so much as attend his funeral.

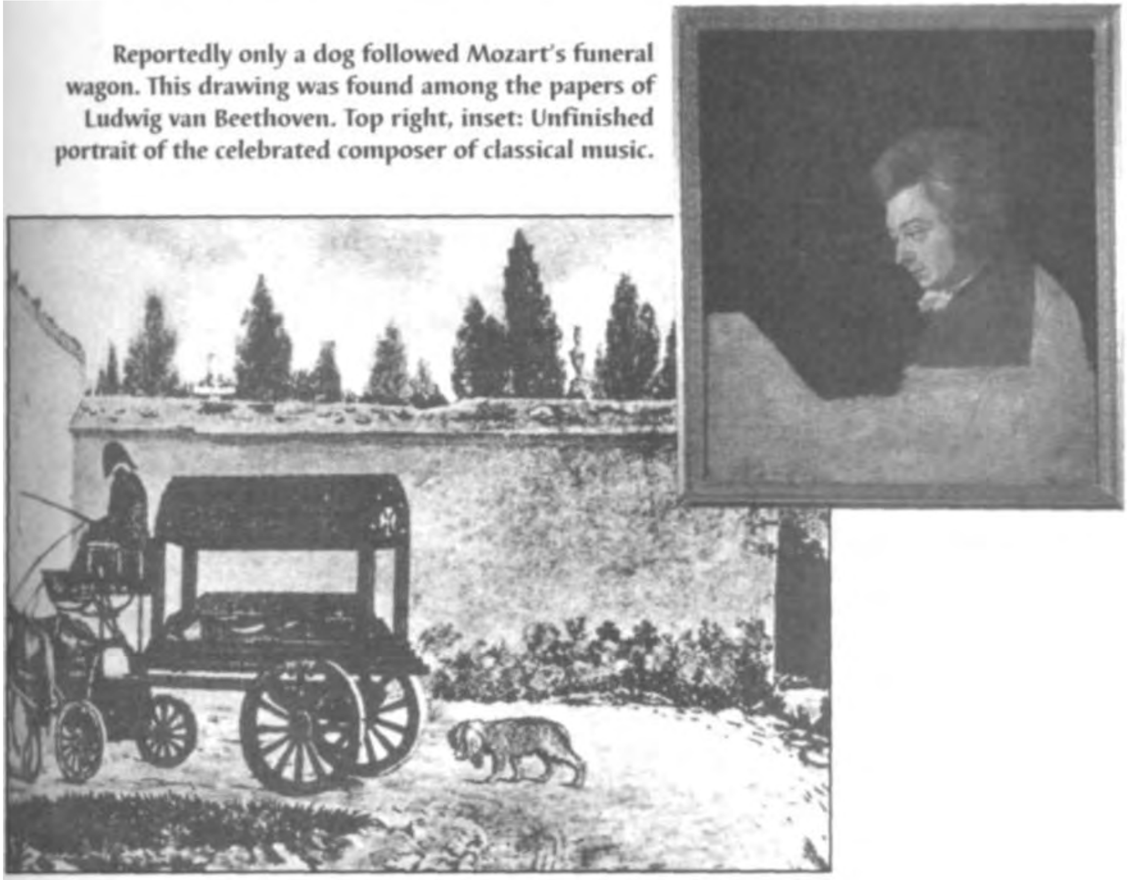

Reportedly only a dog followed Mozart's funeral wagon. This drawing was found among the papers of Ludwig van Beethoven. Top right, inset: Unfinished portrait of the celebrated composer of classical music.

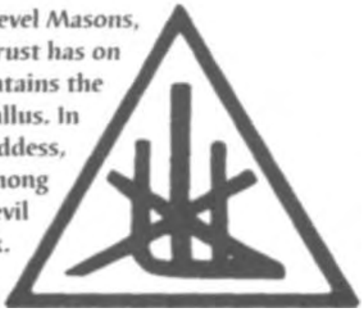

This is the symbol of the *Lucis Trust*, New York City. Led by high-level Masons, co-Masons (women), theosophists, and other occultists, the Lucis Trust has on its rolls many top United Nations officials. Its logo, the triangle, contains the *"X"* sign and also the three-pronged *Trident*, symbol of the triple phallus. In India, the trident-bearer is the god Shiva, bridegroom of the triple goddess, Kali. In Greek and Roman mythologies, the trident symbolized, among others, Hades, Pluto, Neptune, and Poseidon. And, of course, the Devil is often pictured with his three-pronged pitchfork.

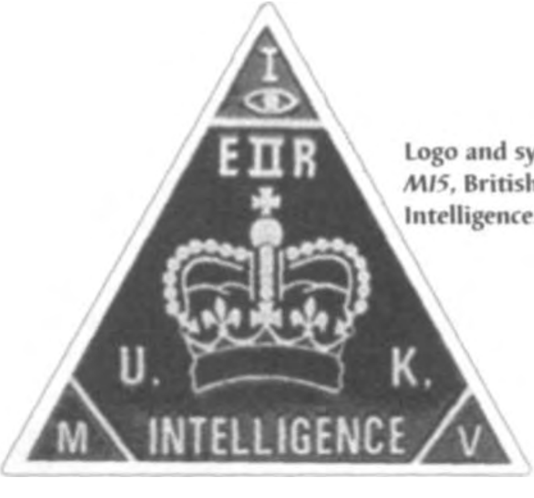

Logo and symbol of *MI5*, British Military Intelligence.

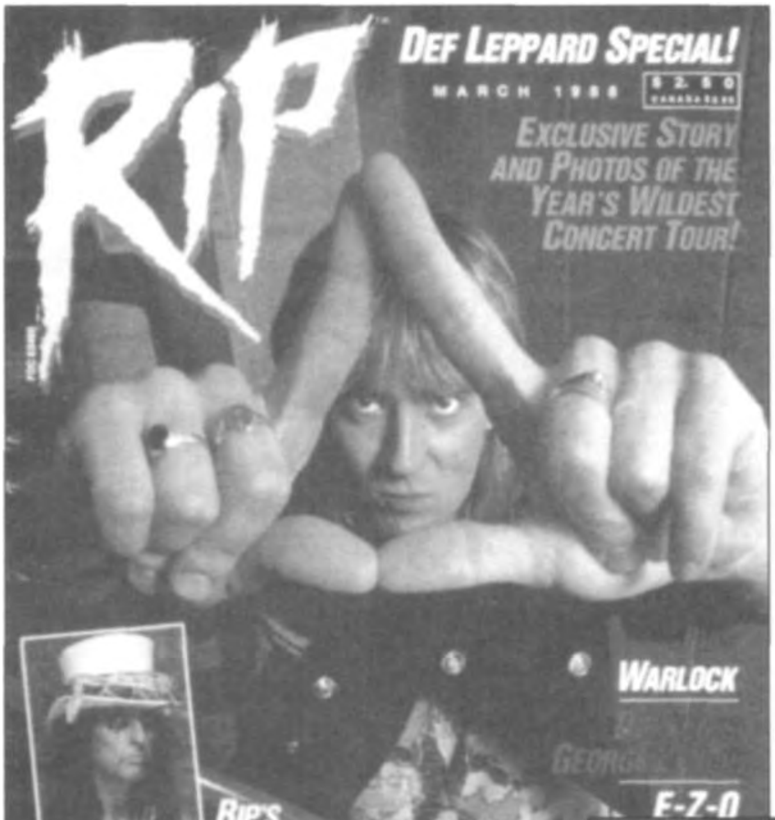
RIP
DEF LEPPARD SPECIAL!
MARCH 1988
EXCLUSIVE STORY AND PHOTOS OF THE YEAR'S WILDEST CONCERT TOUR!
WARLOCK
E-Z-O
THE TRIUMPHANT RETURN OF THE COOP
RIP'S FIRST BIRTHDAY BLOWOUT (EVERYONE WAS THERE!)

Rock'n'roll magazines and CD album covers are littered with satanic triangles. This one is on the cover of *RIP* magazine.

Alex Sanders, below, employs the ascendant triangle sign in this witchcraft ritual. Sanders, a warlock, is famous throughout Great Britain as a witchcraft leader. The woman with him is also a witch. (Photo from the book, *Witchcraft, Magic, and the Supernatural*, Mandarin Publishers/Octopus Books, Hong Kong, 1974)

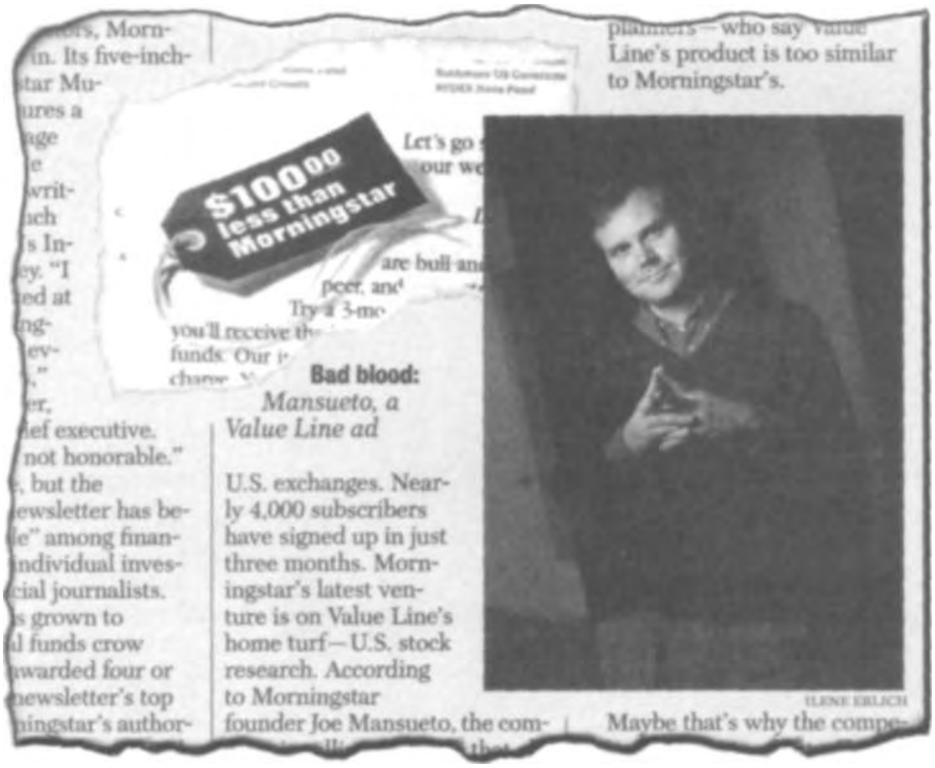
$100.00 less than Morningstar
Let's go
our we
are bull an
peer, and
Try a 3-mo
you'll receive th
funds. Our i
charge
ILENE ERLICH

ors, Morn-
in. Its five-inch-
tar Mu-
ures a
ge
e
writ-
ich
's In-
ey. "I
ed at
ng-
ev-
."
er,
ief executive.
not honorable."
, but the
ewsletter has be-
le" among finan-
individual inves-
cial journalists.
s grown to
l funds crow
warded four or
newsletter's top
ningstar's author-

Bad blood: *Mansueto, a Value Line ad*

U.S. exchanges. Nearly 4,000 subscribers have signed up in just three months. Morningstar's latest venture is on Value Line's home turf—U.S. stock research. According to Morningstar founder Joe Mansueto, the com-

planners—who say Value Line's product is too similar to Morningstar's.

Maybe that's why the compe-

Joe Mansueto, founder of *Morningstar*, the number one company rating mutual funds on Wall Street. *(Newsweek*, October 10, 1994)

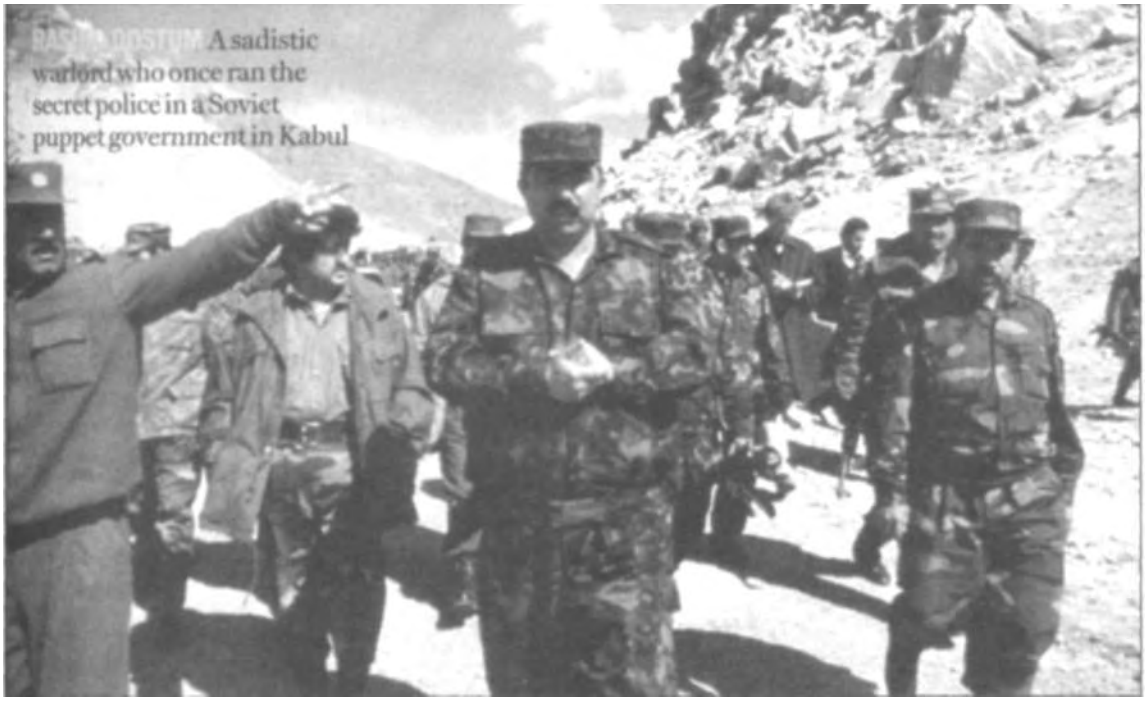

RASHID DOSTUM A sadistic warlord who once ran the secret police in a Soviet puppet government in Kabul

Newsweek* magazine (November 5, 2001), in the caption to this picture, describes the man at center signaling the ascendant triangle hand sign as *"Rashid Dostum. A sadistic warlord who once ran the secret police in a Soviet puppet government in Kabul."

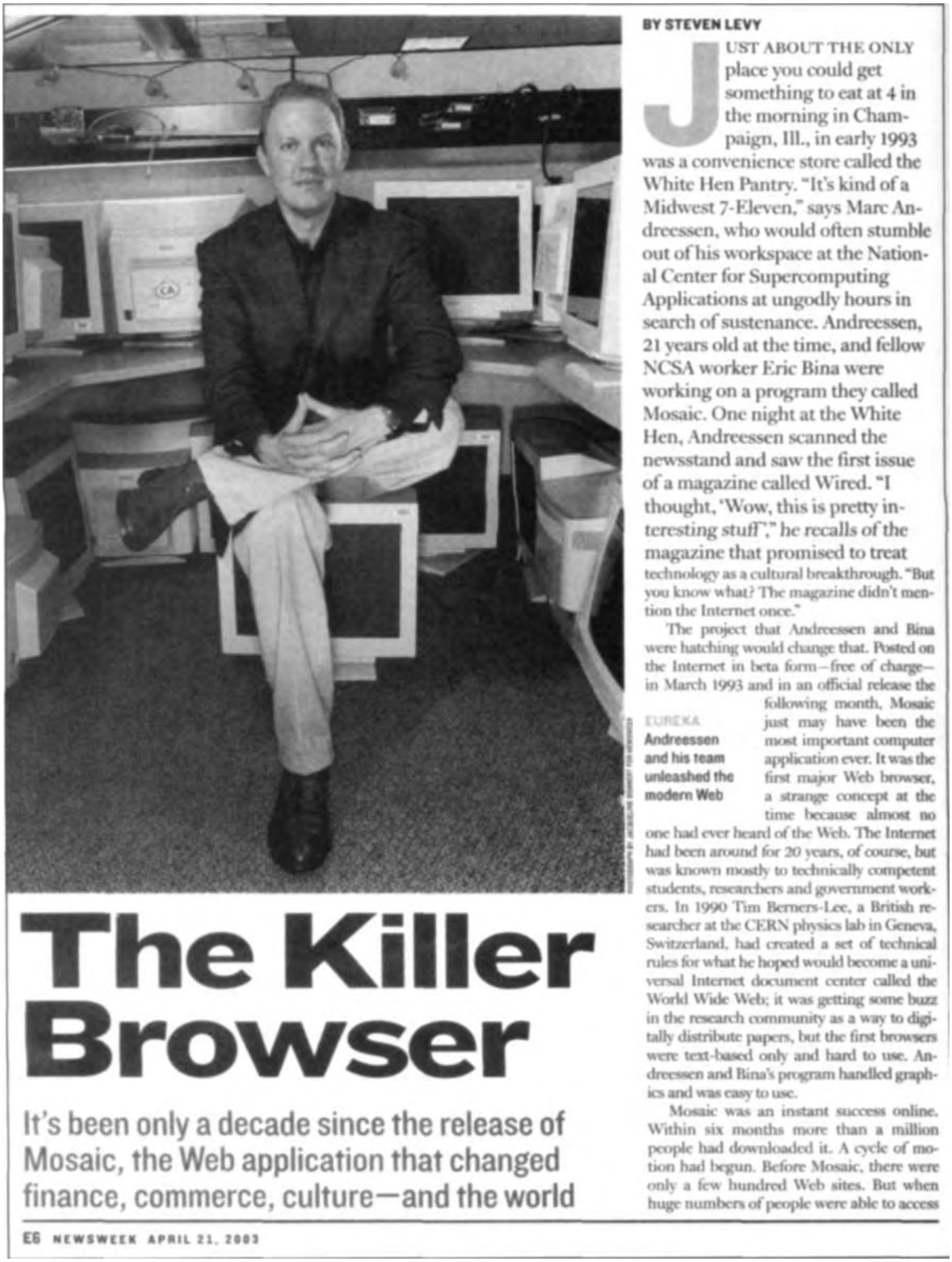

BY STEVEN LEVY

JUST ABOUT THE ONLY place you could get something to eat at 4 in the morning in Champaign, Ill., in early 1993 was a convenience store called the White Hen Pantry. "It's kind of a Midwest 7-Eleven," says Marc Andreessen, who would often stumble out of his workspace at the National Center for Supercomputing Applications at ungodly hours in search of sustenance. Andreessen, 21 years old at the time, and fellow NCSA worker Eric Bina were working on a program they called Mosaic. One night at the White Hen, Andreessen scanned the newsstand and saw the first issue of a magazine called Wired. "I thought, 'Wow, this is pretty interesting stuff'," he recalls of the magazine that promised to treat technology as a cultural breakthrough. "But you know what? The magazine didn't mention the Internet once."

The project that Andreessen and Bina were hatching would change that. Posted on the Internet in beta form—free of charge—in March 1993 and in an official release the following month, Mosaic just may have been the most important computer application ever. It was the first major Web browser, a strange concept at the time because almost no one had ever heard of the Web. The Internet had been around for 20 years, of course, but was known mostly to technically competent students, researchers and government workers. In 1990 Tim Berners-Lee, a British researcher at the CERN physics lab in Geneva, Switzerland, had created a set of technical rules for what he hoped would become a universal Internet document center called the World Wide Web; it was getting some buzz in the research community as a way to digitally distribute papers, but the first browsers were text-based only and hard to use. Andreessen and Bina's program handled graphics and was easy to use.

Mosaic was an instant success online. Within six months more than a million people had downloaded it. A cycle of motion had begun. Before Mosaic, there were only a few hundred Web sites. But when huge numbers of people were able to access

EUREKA: **Andreessen and his team unleashed the modern Web**

The Killer Browser

It's been only a decade since the release of Mosaic, the Web application that changed finance, commerce, culture—and the world

E6 NEWSWEEK APRIL 21, 2003

Marc Andreessen, computer scientist who in 1993 developed a program called *Mosaic* while working at the National Center for Supercomputing Applications. Mosaic was the first web browser and made the internet possible. (Photo: *Newsweek,* April 21, 2003, p. E6)

Two media titans confer: Viacom's chairman, Sumner Redstone (a Jew—Redstone is not his real name), and Viacom's President Mel Karmazin, also Jewish. Viacom owns CBS, MTV, Disney, and many other media properties, all firmly in the Zionist camp editorially and subject-wise. (Photo: *U.S. News & World Report,* June 14, 2004, p. 70)

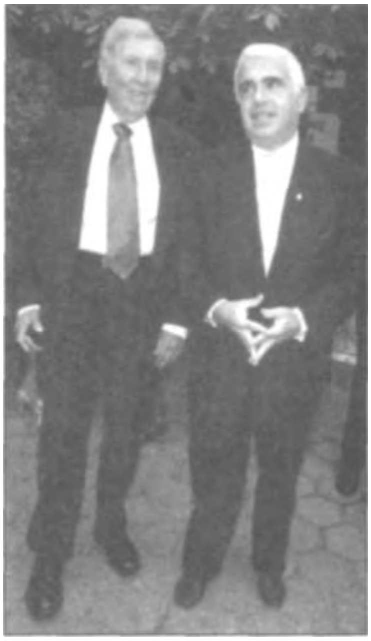

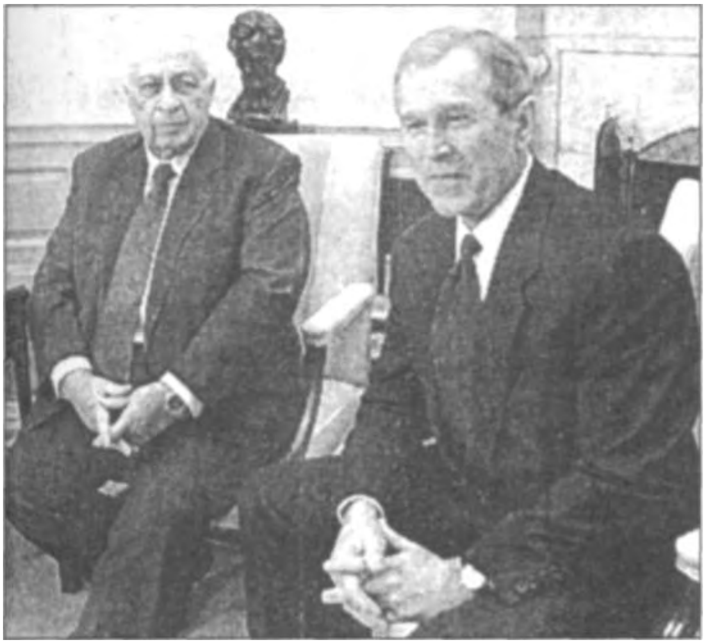

This scene is set at the White House in March, 2001, with Israeli Prime Minister Ariel Sharon and President George W. Bush both presenting mirror-image descending (female, delta, or vulva) triangles. Two triangles joined together constitute a Jewish Star of David. For added *subliminal power,* the room was arranged so that the bust of Lincoln was directly behind Sharon. The message: In bludgeoning hapless Palestinians and denying them their own state, Sharon is simply being Lincolnesque. After all, Lincoln put down the Southern insurrection, right? (Photo and article: *USA Today,* March 21, 2001, p. 13A)

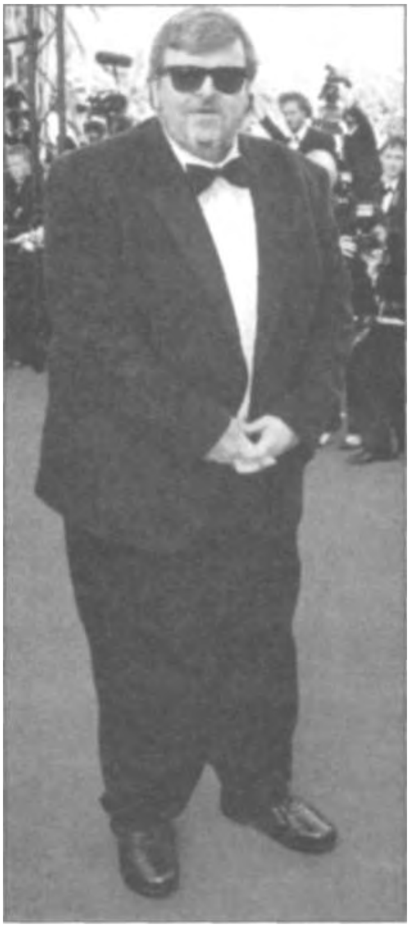

Michael Moore, liberal Democratic Party propagandist and maker of documentaries, no doubt takes pleasure in signaling the triangle. Moore, a Jew, is agented by the brother of the Clinton insider many suspect was the mysterious Mossad espionage agent codenamed *"Mega"* (Photo: *Time,* May 13, 2004,p.72)

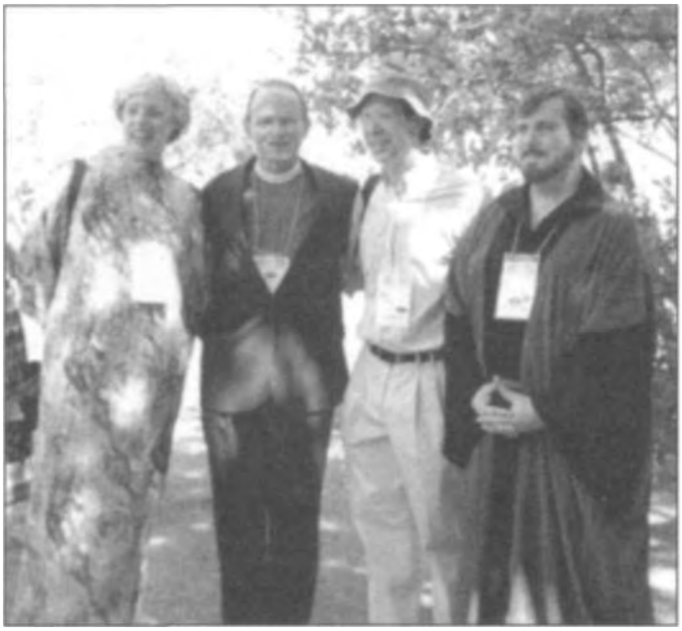

At the Parliament of the World's Religions in Chicago, a Rockefeller-funded event, an Episcopal Bishop (second from left) has fellowship with an unidentified couple and with Donald Frew, far right, a warlock (male witch) who oversees 70 covens. Note Frew's use of the sign of the warlock (ascendant) triangle. (Photo: *SCP* Newsletter, Winter 2005)

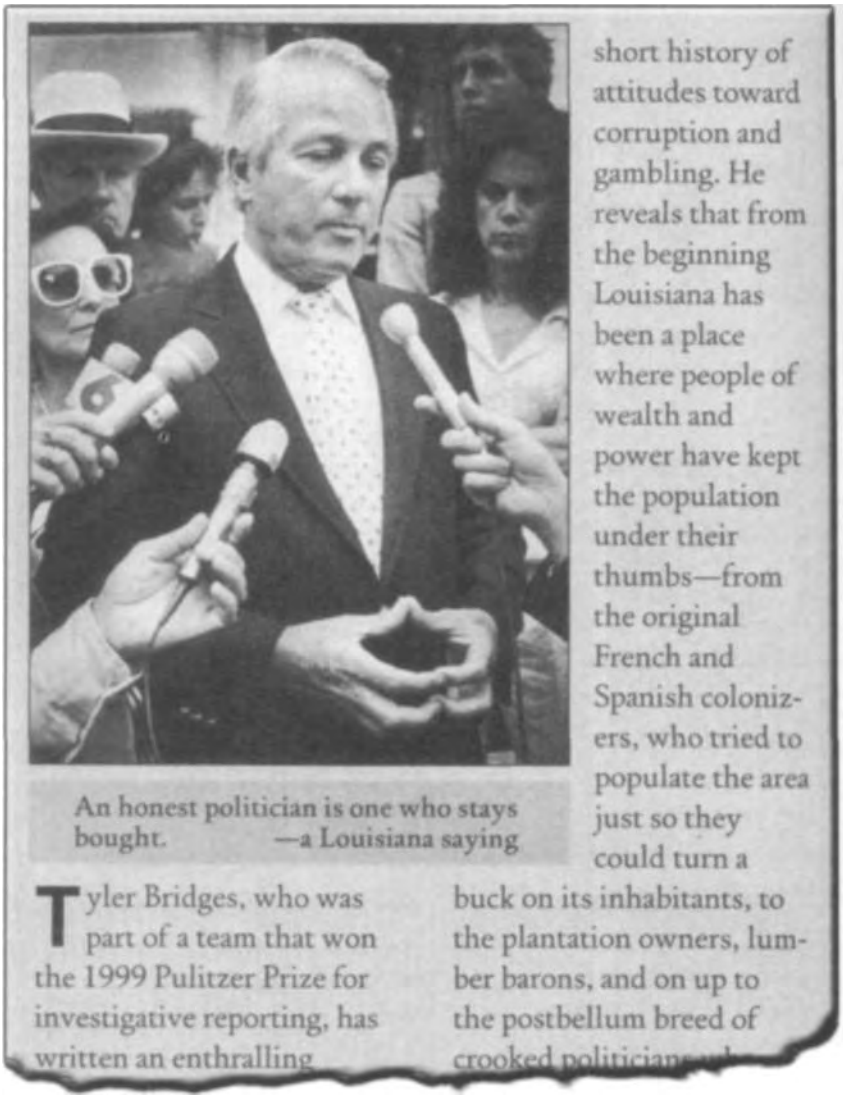

Governor Edwin Edwards of Louisiana, just convicted of taking bribes and pay-offs, is apparently appealing to *"higher powers."* Notice the caption in the clipping just under Edwards' photograph. (Photo: *Oxford American,* May/June 2001)

An honest politician is one who stays bought. —a Louisiana saying

Tyler Bridges, who was part of a team that won the 1999 Pulitzer Prize for investigative reporting, has written an enthralling short history of attitudes toward corruption and gambling. He reveals that from the beginning Louisiana has been a place where people of wealth and power have kept the population under their thumbs—from the original French and Spanish colonizers, who tried to populate the area just so they could turn a buck on its inhabitants, to the plantation owners, lumber barons, and on up to the postbellum breed of crooked politicians

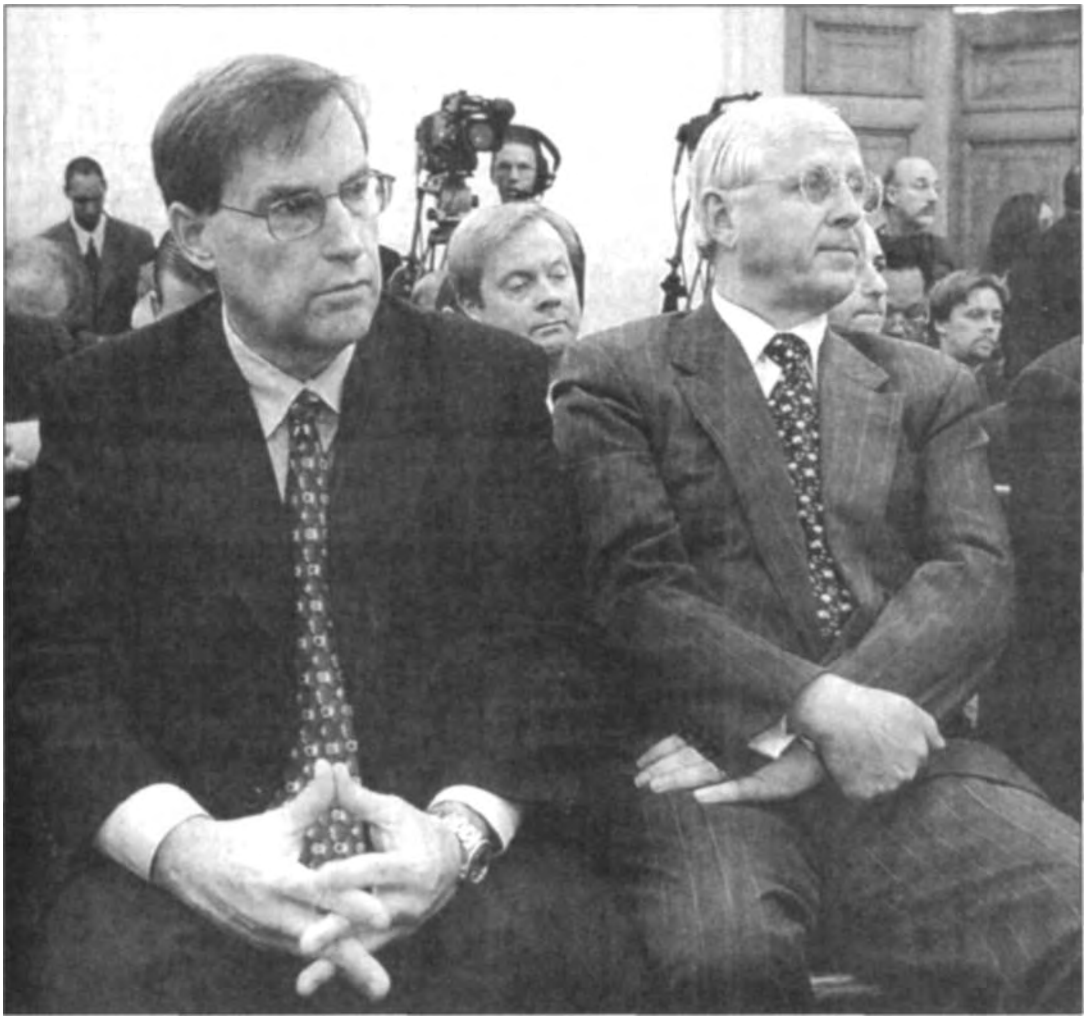

Are these hand signs mere accidents, or do they convey a concealed, occult meaning? Left is Richard Buy; right is an unidentified man making the *"X"* with his arms and hands, while Mr. Buy is presenting the ascendant triangle. The occasion was the House Committee's hearings on the Enron Corporation's financial failure debacle. Mr. Buy was a high-level Enron financial officer. Were these hand signs intended to invoke protection or perhaps to influence Illuminist puppets on the Committee? (Photo: *Knight-Ridder,* in *Austin American-Statesman* newspaper, February 8, *2002,* p. Al 3)

This comes from *Newsweek* (July 9, 2001) and is a brief Q & A with black hip-hop recording star Caushun who is communicating a nonverbal message with his hands.

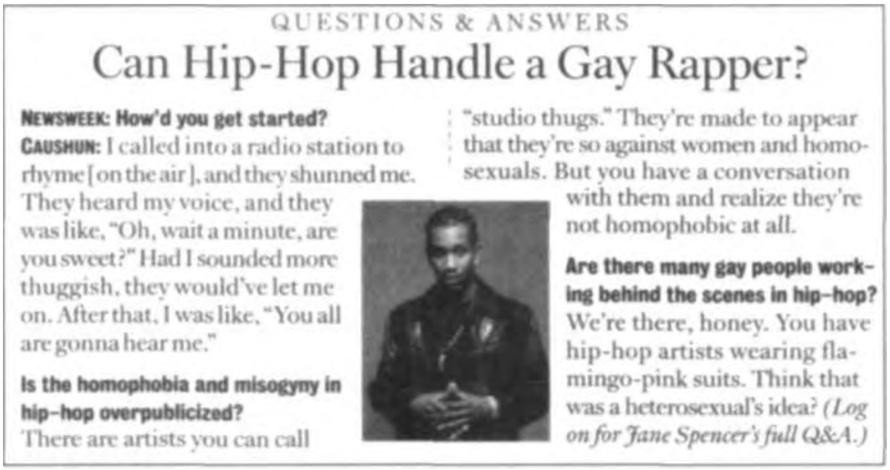

QUESTIONS & ANSWERS

Can Hip-Hop Handle a Gay Rapper?

NEWSWEEK: How'd you get started?
CAUSHUN: I called into a radio station to rhyme [on the air], and they shunned me. They heard my voice, and they was like, "Oh, wait a minute, are you sweet?" Had I sounded more thuggish, they would've let me on. After that, I was like, "You all are gonna hear me."

Is the homophobia and misogyny in hip-hop overpublicized?
There are artists you can call "studio thugs." They're made to appear that they're so against women and homosexuals. But you have a conversation with them and realize they're not homophobic at all.

Are there many gay people working behind the scenes in hip-hop?
We're there, honey. You have hip-hop artists wearing flamingo-pink suits. Think that was a heterosexual's idea? *(Log on for Jane Spencer's full Q&A.)*

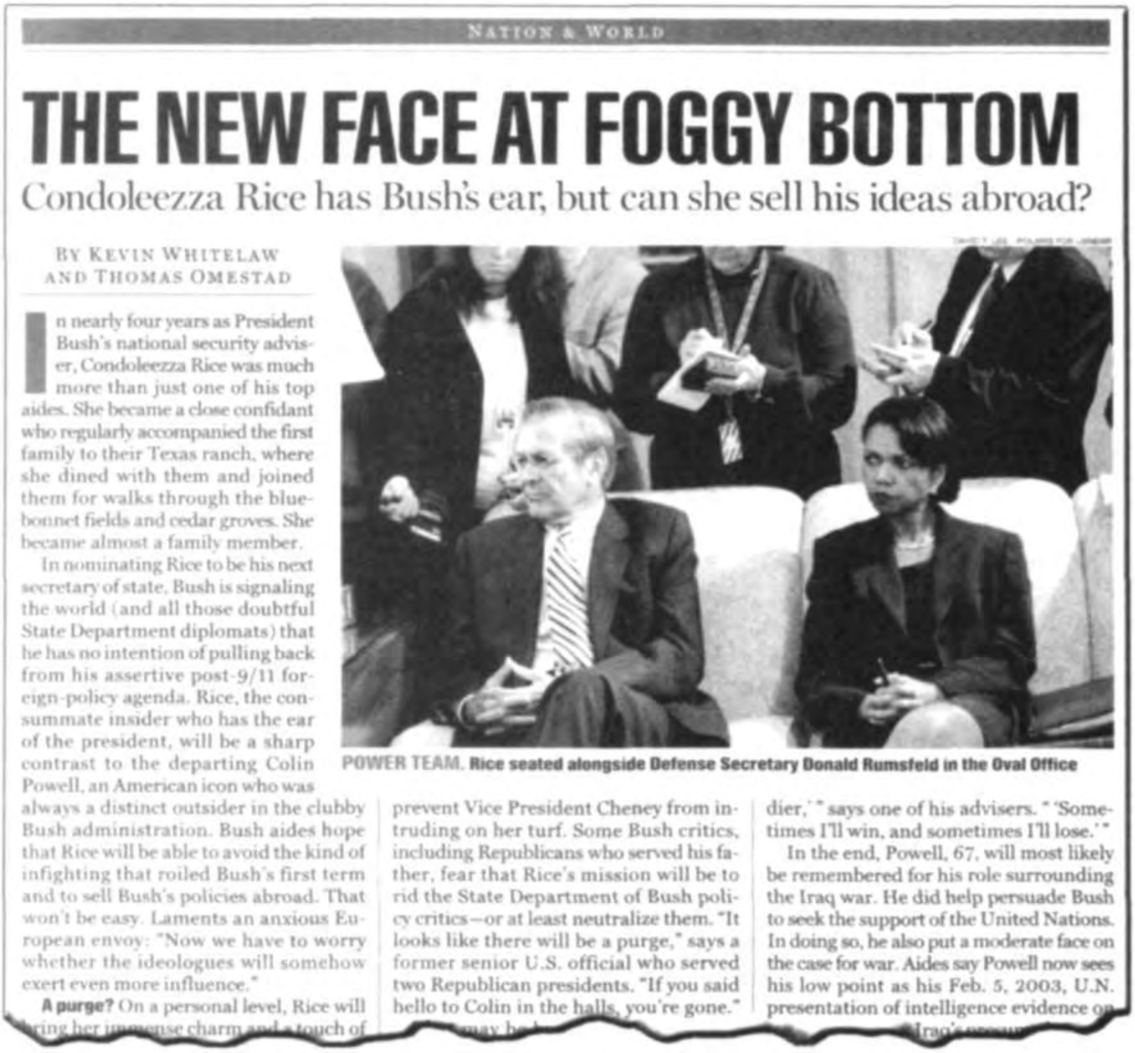

NATION & WORLD

THE NEW FACE AT FOGGY BOTTOM

Condoleezza Rice has Bush's ear, but can she sell his ideas abroad?

BY KEVIN WHITELAW AND THOMAS OMESTAD

In nearly four years as President Bush's national security adviser, Condoleezza Rice was much more than just one of his top aides. She became a close confidant who regularly accompanied the first family to their Texas ranch, where she dined with them and joined them for walks through the bluebonnet fields and cedar groves. She became almost a family member.

In nominating Rice to be his next secretary of state, Bush is signaling the world (and all those doubtful State Department diplomats) that he has no intention of pulling back from his assertive post-9/11 foreign-policy agenda. Rice, the consummate insider who has the ear of the president, will be a sharp contrast to the departing Colin Powell, an American icon who was always a distinct outsider in the clubby Bush administration. Bush aides hope that Rice will be able to avoid the kind of infighting that roiled Bush's first term and to sell Bush's policies abroad. That won't be easy. Laments an anxious European envoy: "Now we have to worry whether the ideologues will somehow exert even more influence."

A purge? On a personal level, Rice will bring her immense charm and a touch of

prevent Vice President Cheney from intruding on her turf. Some Bush critics, including Republicans who served his father, fear that Rice's mission will be to rid the State Department of Bush policy critics—or at least neutralize them. "It looks like there will be a purge," says a former senior U.S. official who served two Republican presidents. "If you said hello to Colin in the halls, you're gone."

dier,'" says one of his advisers. "'Sometimes I'll win, and sometimes I'll lose.'"

In the end, Powell, 67, will most likely be remembered for his role surrounding the Iraq war. He did help persuade Bush to seek the support of the United Nations. In doing so, he also put a moderate face on the case for war. Aides say Powell now sees his low point as his Feb. 5, 2003, U.N. presentation of intelligence evidence on

POWER TEAM. Rice seated alongside Defense Secretary Donald Rumsfeld in the Oval Office

Observe Secretary of Defense Donald Rumsfeld as he displays the ascendant triangle sign. *(U.S. News & Report,* November 29, 2004, p. 20)

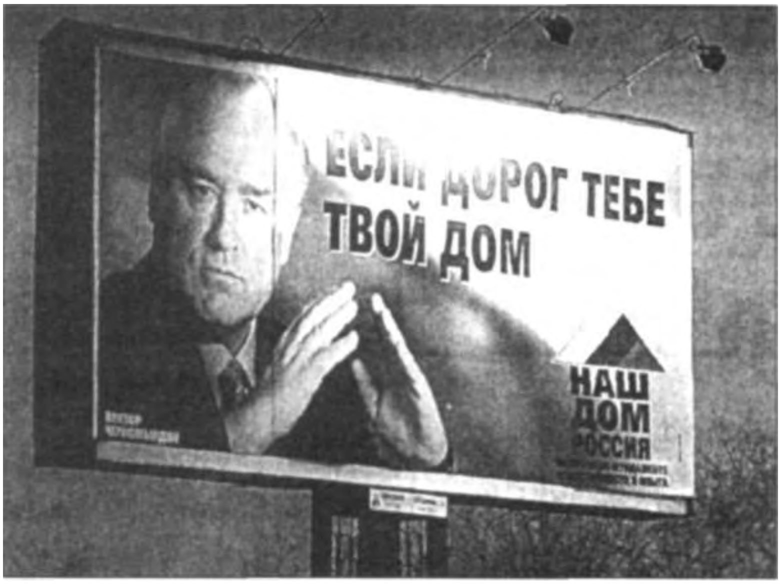

Billboard in Russia. Hand position (triangular) reinforces the black/white, yin/yang triangle logo.

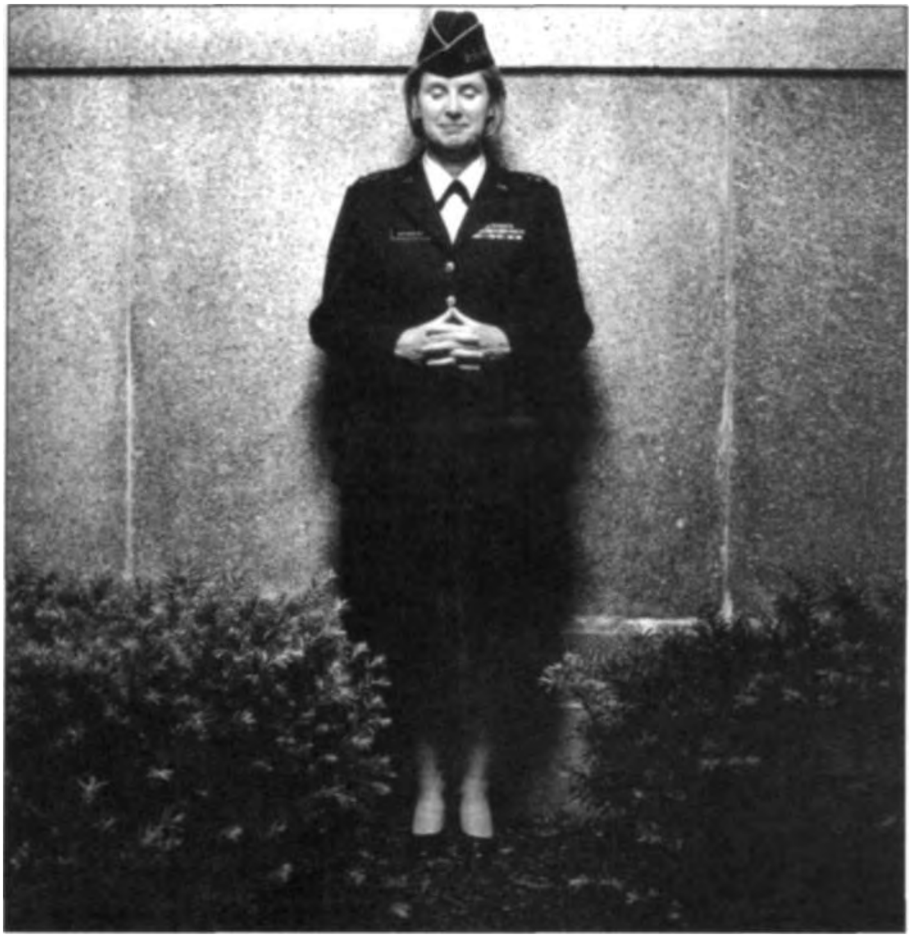

This revealing photo of three-star U.S. Air Force General Claudia Kennedy was run both on the cover of mass circulation *Parade* magazine and *Newsweek* (June 26, 2000, p. 23). Evidently, the elite wanted the message out to their servants that this photo conveys. Note particularly the General's clearly staged hand sign, her back against a wall, a purposeful shadow etched behind, her two feet squarely in place, her standing in the midst of two evergreen shrubbery bushes, and the seemingly bizarre fact she has her eyes closed! All in all a very unflattering picture, but one that conveys much information. At the time (2000), General Kennedy, an intelligence operative who was retiring from the military service, was being touted as a potential presidential candidate. Did the Illuminati choose other career options for the lady?

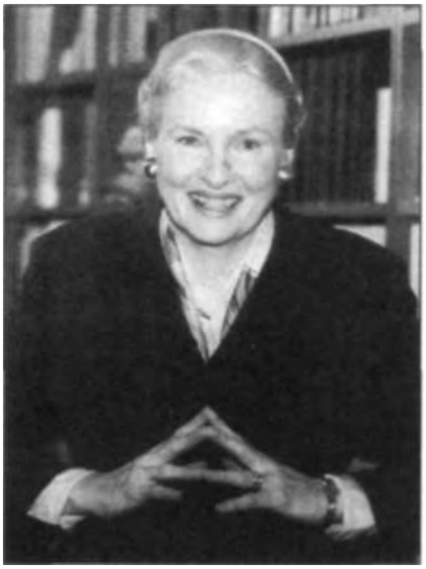

Harvard Law School Professor Mary Ann Glendon headed a Vatican delegation at a United Nations conference in 1998. (Photo: *The Catholic World Report,* July 1998, p. 39)

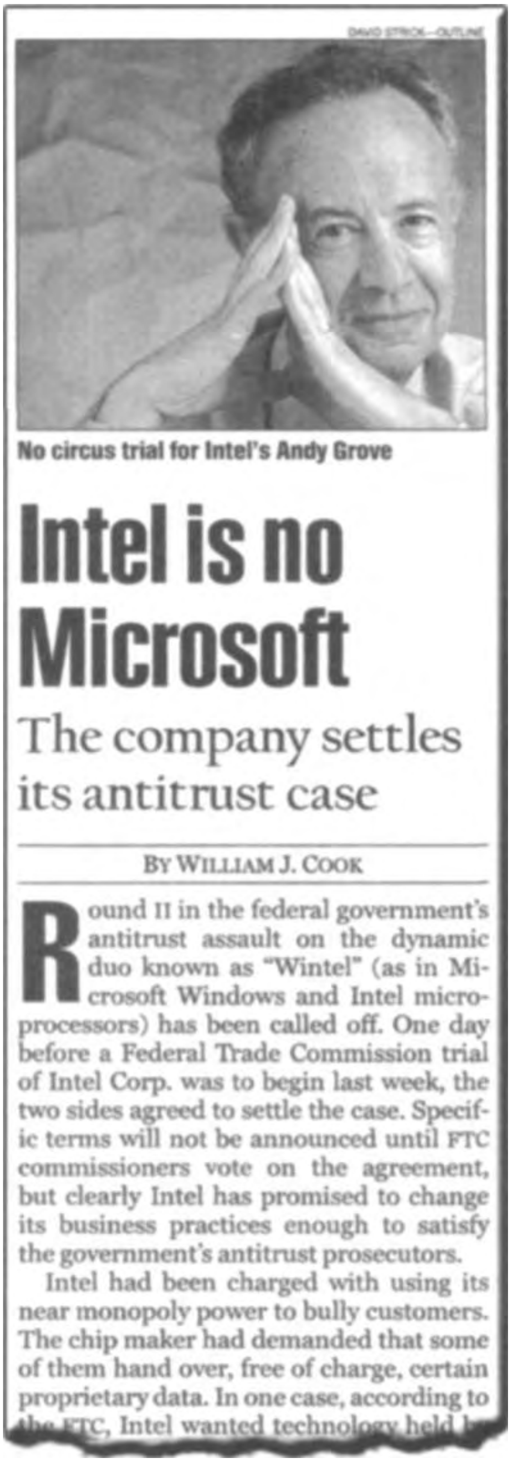

DAVID STROCK—OUTLINE

No circus trial for Intel's Andy Grove

Intel is no Microsoft

The company settles its antitrust case

By William J. Cook

Round II in the federal government's antitrust assault on the dynamic duo known as "Wintel" (as in Microsoft Windows and Intel microprocessors) has been called off. One day before a Federal Trade Commission trial of Intel Corp. was to begin last week, the two sides agreed to settle the case. Specific terms will not be announced until FTC commissioners vote on the agreement, but clearly Intel has promised to change its business practices enough to satisfy the government's antitrust prosecutors.

Intel had been charged with using its near monopoly power to bully customers. The chip maker had demanded that some of them hand over, free of charge, certain proprietary data. In one case, according to the FTC, Intel wanted technology held

It appears from the position of his hands that computer chip magnate Andy Grove, Jewish head of Intel, wants to get across his "message," doesn't it? *(U.S. News & World Report,* March *22,* 1999, p. 52)

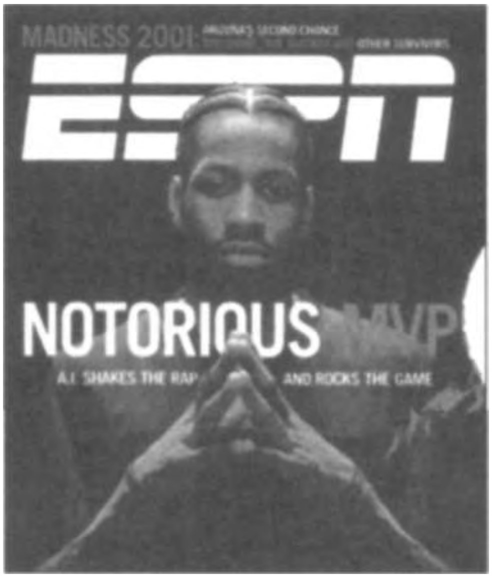

Cover of *ESPN* magazine, published by ESPN Sports channel.

Actress Doris Day has more of a message to communicate than merely her innocent usual clean-girl image. Maybe the well-known Hollywood producer was right who, when asked about Day, quipped, *"Oh yes, I've known her a long, long time. Why, I even knew Doris Day before she became a virgin!"*

The rock music group R.E.M. is featured in this *USA Today* feature (October 5, 2004). The writer says that R.E.M.'s new album, *Around the Sun* explores "the darker side of modern America.

Music

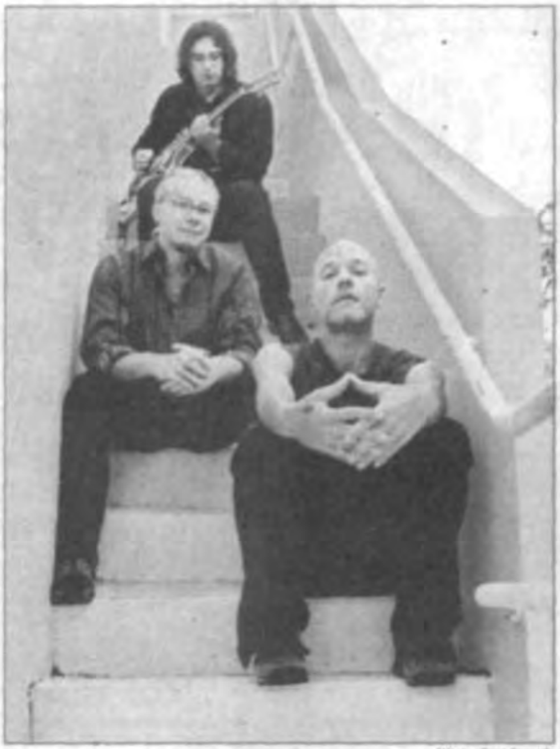

Warner Bros. Records

Somber sounds: Michael Stipe, front, Mike Mills and Peter Buck of R.E.M. explore the darker side of modern America on *Around the Sun*.

Missin' You follow in a similar vein. Bouncy dance jams such as *Bobblehead* and boasts such as *Can't Stop Us*, with his group Rich Boyz, add to

Dave Matthews Band: Solid as a rock star

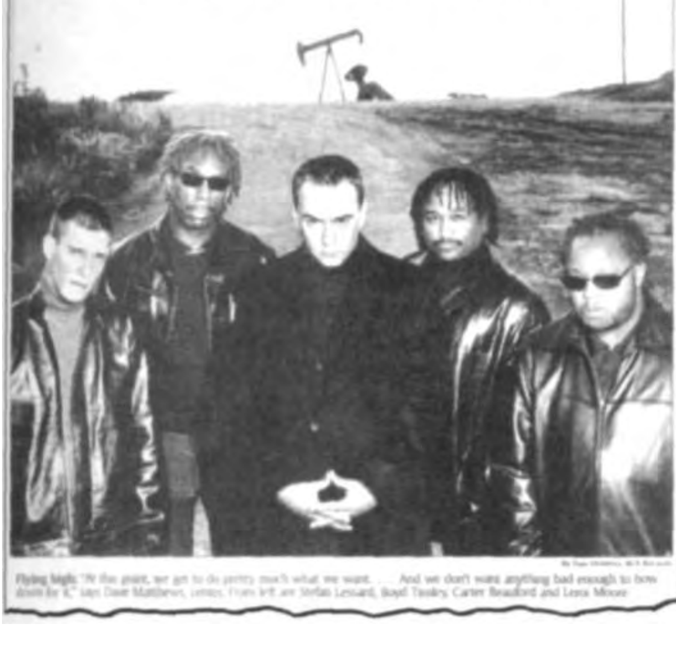

Flying high: "At this point, we get to do pretty much what we want. . . . And we don't want anything bad enough to bow down for it," says Dave Matthews, center. From left are Stefan Lessard, Boyd Tinsley, Carter Beauford and Leroi Moore.

Miser marri can m you si

Women of heart

By Marilyn Elias
USA TODAY

Here we see the hand signal is the focal center—what they want the viewer to take note of. All except one person's hands are concealed. In this article in *USA Today* newspaper (March 12, 2001), Dave Matthews, center, of the popular rock group, *Dave Matthews Band*, brags, *"At this point, we get to do pretty much what we want..."* This sounds like satanic priest Aleister Crowley's dictum, *"Do as thou wilt shall be the whole of the law."*

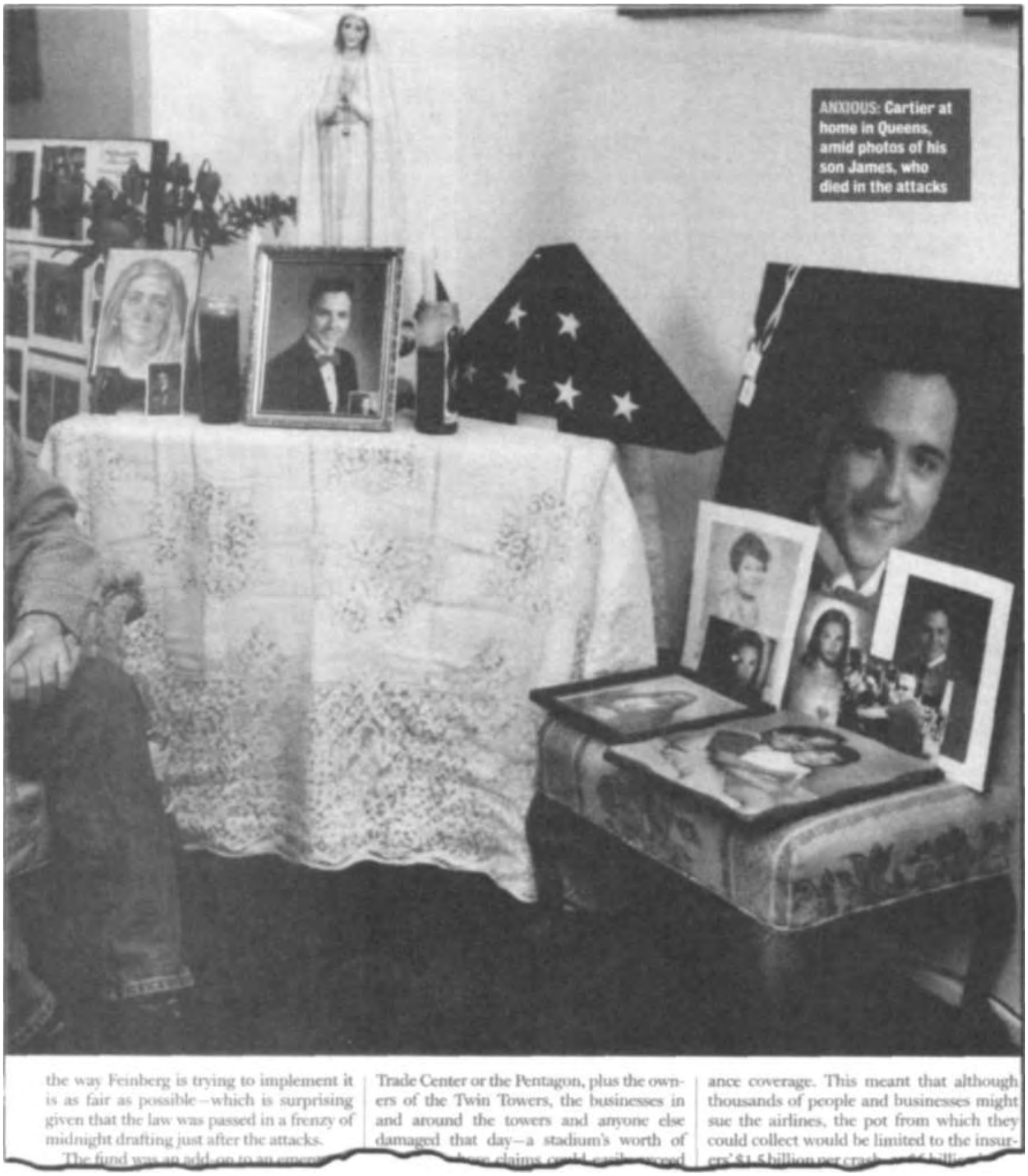

ANXIOUS: Cartier at home in Queens, amid photos of his son James, who died in the attacks

the way Feinberg is trying to implement it is as fair as possible—which is surprising given that the law was passed in a frenzy of midnight drafting just after the attacks.

Trade Center or the Pentagon, plus the owners of the Twin Towers, the businesses in and around the towers and anyone else damaged that day—a stadium's worth of

ance coverage. This meant that although thousands of people and businesses might sue the airlines, the pot from which they could collect would be limited to the insur-

According to "tradition," the next of kin at military funerals are given a flag folded into a triangle with exactly six stars showing. Few families of victims know that the tradition appears to be of Masonic origins. (Photo: *Newsweek,* January 7, *2002,* p. 29)

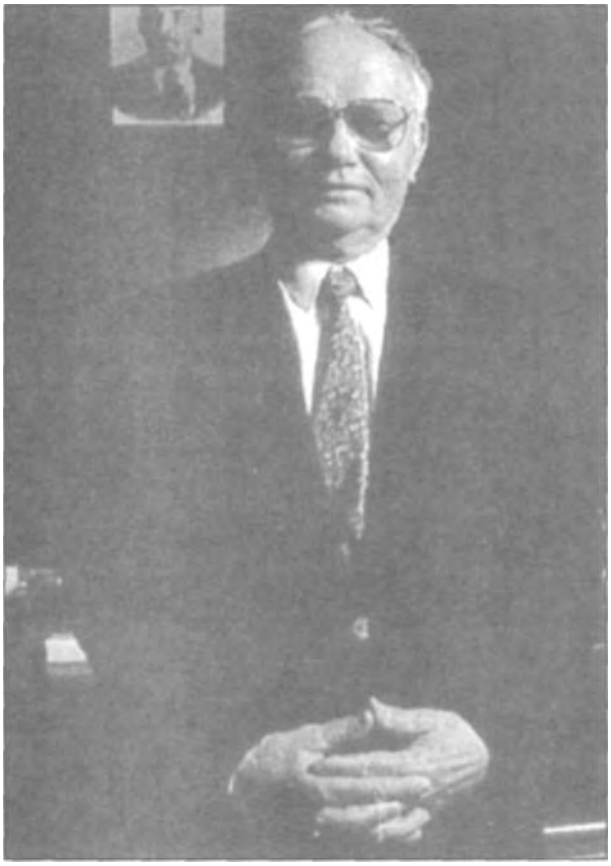

In 1990 this photo of U.S.S.R.'s KGB Chief Vladimir Kryuchkov was published in *The European* newspaper (December 14-16, 1990, p. 7). The caption read: *"KGB head Vladimir Kryuchkov has dispelled illusions of the new Mr. Nice Guy' approach with his chilling attack on separatists."* Kryuchkov's hand sign shows he has approval of Illuminati superiors for his new "Tough Guy" approach.

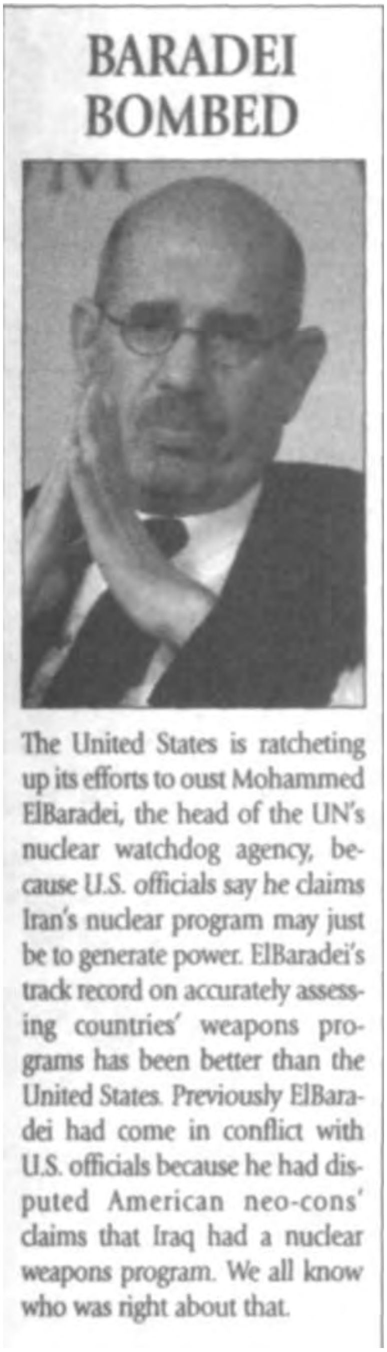

BARADEI BOMBED

The United States is ratcheting up its efforts to oust Mohammed ElBaradei, the head of the UN's nuclear watchdog agency, because U.S. officials say he claims Iran's nuclear program may just be to generate power. ElBaradei's track record on accurately assessing countries' weapons programs has been better than the United States. Previously ElBaradei had come in conflict with U.S. officials because he had disputed American neo-cons' claims that Iraq had a nuclear weapons program. We all know who was right about that.

Mohammed El Baradei, head of the United Nation's International Atomic Energy Association, the world's nuclear watchdog agency, signals with his hands that he is in league with the llluminati elite. *(American Free Press,* February 21, 2005, p. 2)

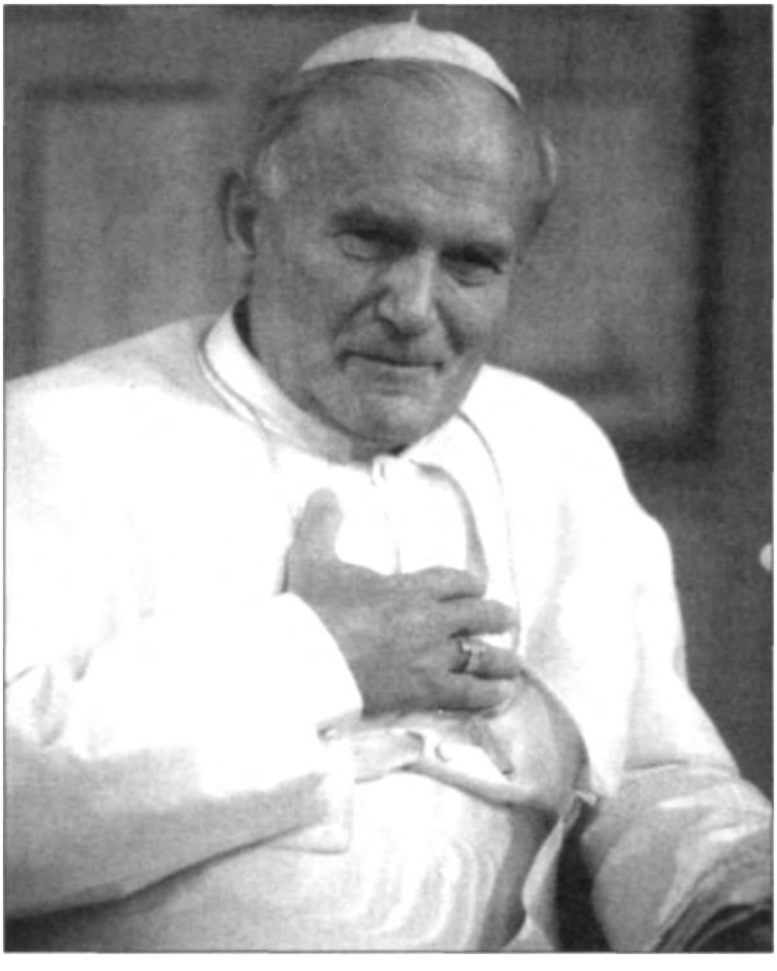

Meeting with First Lady Nancy Reagan is Pope John Paul II. At left—the pontiff displays yet another masonic sign, that of Hand on Heart, with thumb communicating, "I'm on the square."

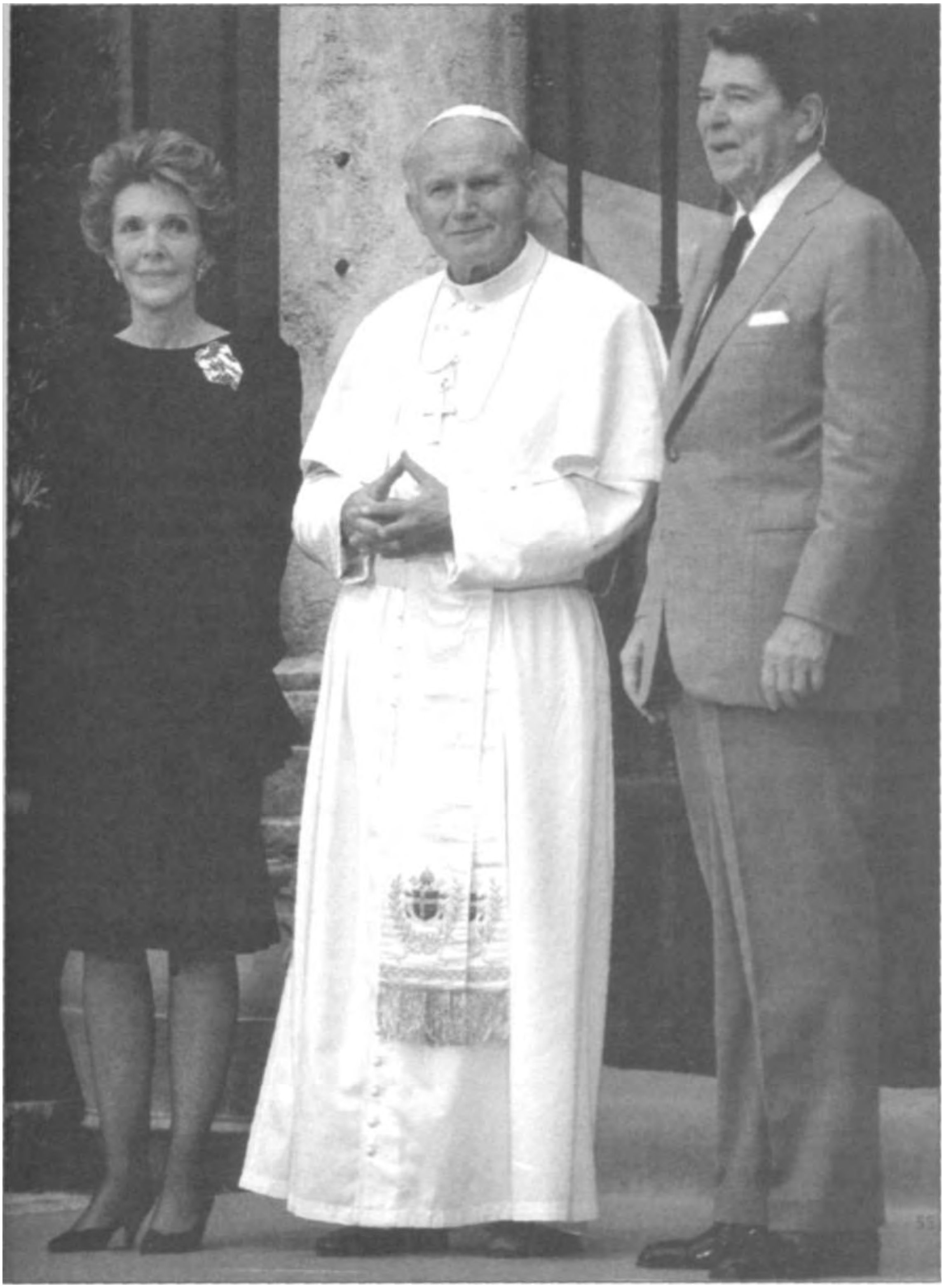

The Pope does it again, with President Ronald Reagan and First Lady Nancy at his side. As an aside—the skull cap, in many color variations, is worn by Jews and high Catholic clergy alike, though its use hearkens back to the horrific memory of Jesus crucified on Calvary, Golgotha, "the place of the skull." (Photo: Book, *Pope John Paul II Visits America: A Celebration In Pictures*, New York: Crescent Books)

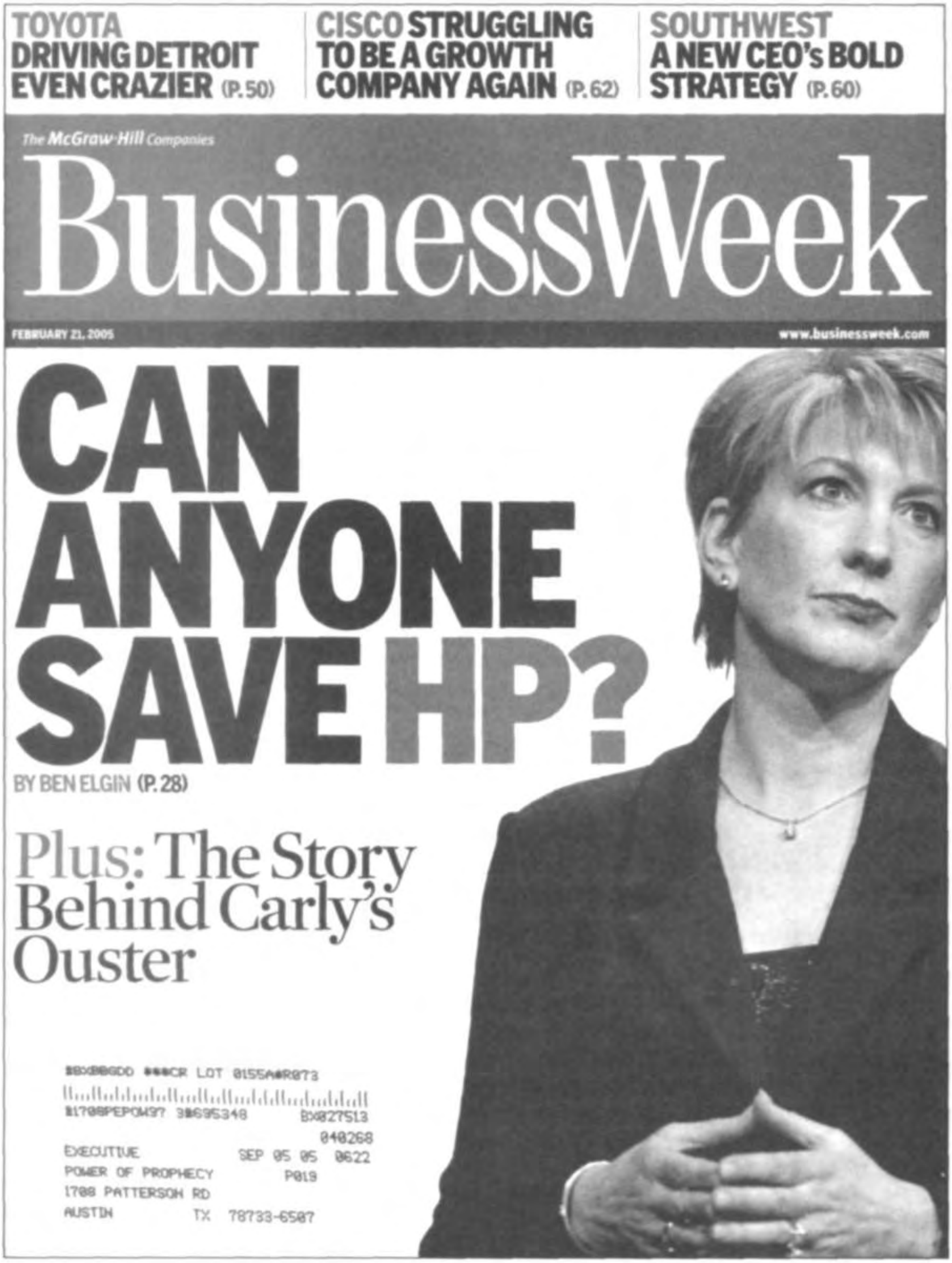

TOYOTA
DRIVING DETROIT EVEN CRAZIER (P. 50)

CISCO STRUGGLING TO BE A GROWTH COMPANY AGAIN (P. 62)

SOUTHWEST
A NEW CEO's BOLD STRATEGY (P. 60)

The McGraw-Hill Companies

BusinessWeek

FEBRUARY 21, 2005

www.businessweek.com

CAN ANYONE SAVE HP?

BY BEN ELGIN (P. 28)

Plus: The Story Behind Carly's Ouster

#BXBBGDD ###CR LOT 0155A#R073
#1700PEPOW97 3#695348 BX027513
040268
EXECUTIVE SEP 05 05 0622
POWER OF PROPHECY P019
1700 PATTERSON RD
AUSTIN TX 78733-6507

Former Hewlett-Packard CEO, Carly Fiorina

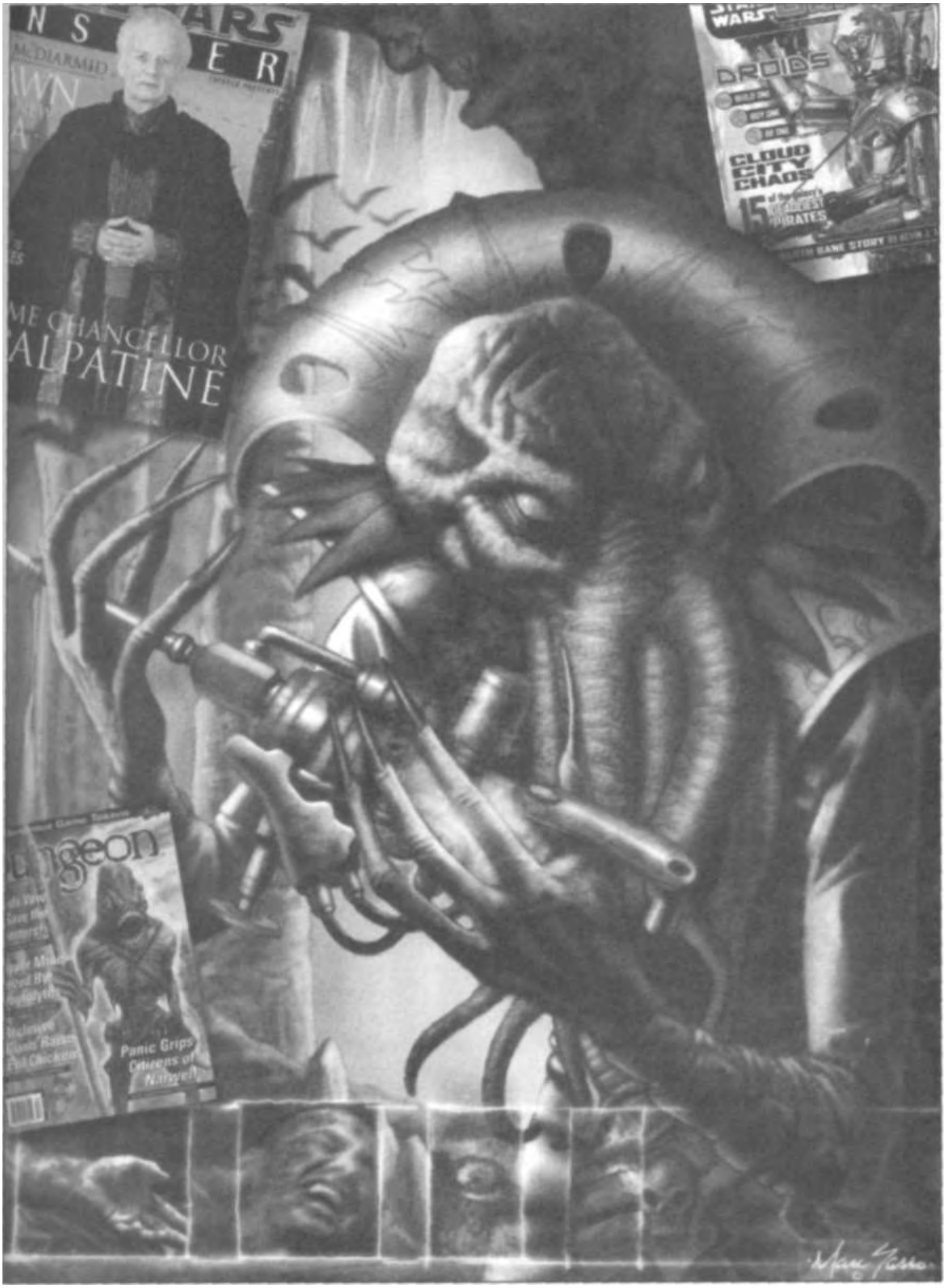
WARS
N S ER
McDIARMID
ME CHANCELLOR
ALPATINE
STAR WARS
DROIDS
CLOUD CITY CHAOS
PIRATES
ungeon
Panic Grips Citizens of

This cover of one of many *Star Wars* publications, pictures a character (top, left) from that movie saga giving what is clearly a combination of two masonic signs. (From an ad collage in a Sci-Fi magazine)

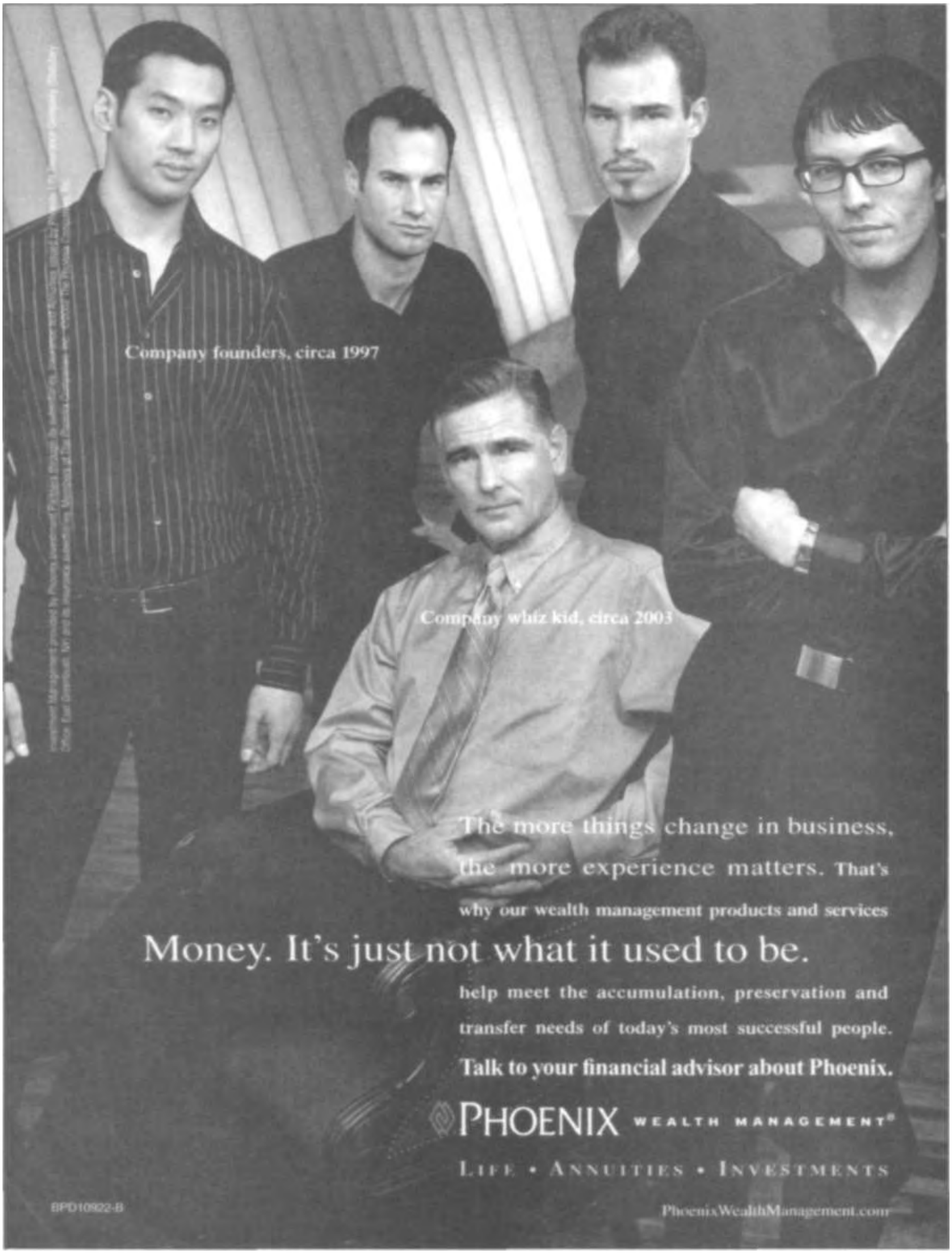
Company founders, circa 1997
Company whiz kid, circa 2003
BPD10922-B

Money. It's just not what it used to be.

The more things change in business, the more experience matters. That's why our wealth management products and services help meet the accumulation, preservation and transfer needs of today's most successful people.

Talk to your financial advisor about Phoenix.

PHOENIX WEALTH MANAGEMENT®

LIFE • ANNUITIES • INVESTMENTS

PhoenixWealthManagement.com

Full page consumer ad for Phoenix Wealth Management, an investment firm. For info on the Phoenix as symbol, see the chapter in *Codex Magica*, examining the double-headed eagle (p. 341).

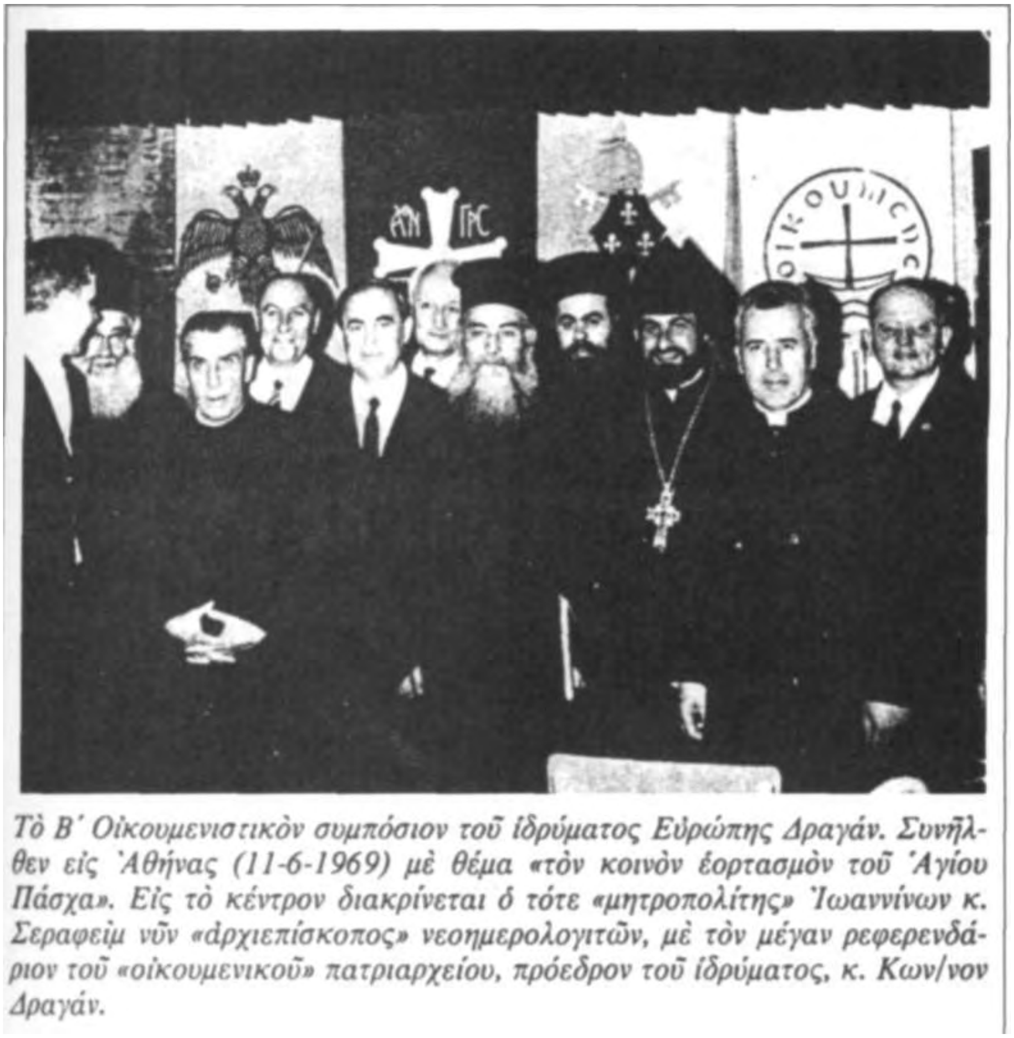
ΑΝ
ΓΡΣ
ΟΙΚΟΥΜ

Τὸ Β΄ Οἰκουμενιστικὸν συμπόσιον τοῦ ἱδρύματος Εὐρώπης Δραγάν. Συνῆλθεν εἰς Ἀθήνας (11-6-1969) μὲ θέμα «τὸν κοινὸν ἑορτασμὸν τοῦ Ἁγίου Πάσχα». Εἰς τὸ κέντρον διακρίνεται ὁ τότε «μητροπολίτης» Ἰωαννίνων κ. Σεραφεὶμ νῦν «ἀρχιεπίσκοπος» νεοημερολογιτῶν, μὲ τὸν μέγαν ρεφερενδάριον τοῦ «οἰκουμενικοῦ» πατριαρχείου, πρόεδρον τοῦ ἱδρύματος, κ. Κων/νον Δραγάν.

Catholic Cardinals and Bishops meet with Orthodox counterparts in Greece. Observe the hand sign of the Catholic prelate who's third from the left and also the double-headed eagle logo on the wall behind the group.

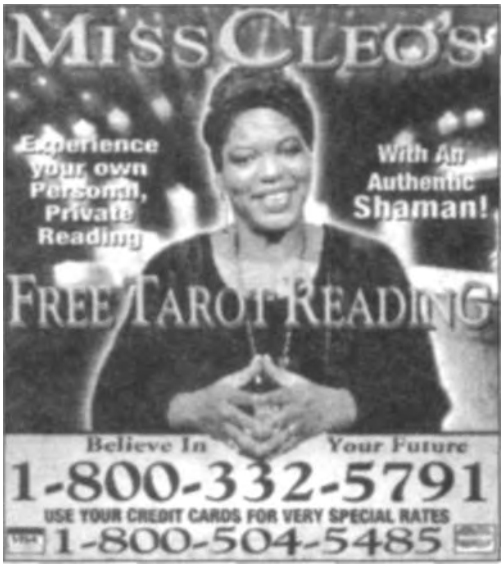
MISS CLEO'S
Experience your own Personal, Private Reading
With An Authentic Shaman!
FREE TAROT READING
Believe In Your Future
1-800-332-5791
USE YOUR CREDIT CARDS FOR VERY SPECIAL RATES
1-800-504-5485

Ad in a tabloid for Miss Cleo, who became somewhat of a TV icon in the 1990s hawking her psychic abilities as a Tarot Card reader. Her money-making powers dimmed when the Feds launched an investigation of what some reported as a scam.

Human Relations Center
of Santa Barbara

Residential Symposium Series, 1983

Casa de Maria Retreat Grounds
Santa Barbara, California

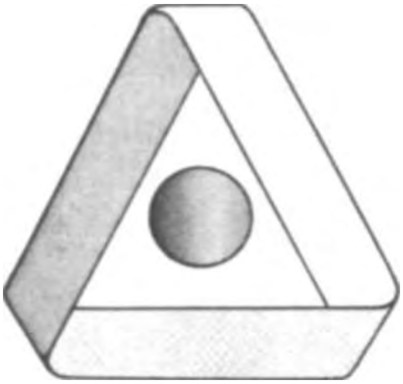

- **Jean Houston**
  February 14-18. 1983
- **Joseph Campbell**
  April 6 - 8, 1983
- **James Hillman**
  May 31 - June 2, 1983

A New Age group paid for this ad offering a symposium to be led by top New Age occultists Jean Houston, Joseph Campbell, and James Hillman. Jean Houston was and is a spiritual guide and mentor for Senator Hillary Rodham Clinton (D-NY). Joseph Campbell promoted symbols and masonic New Age philosophies in a popular series aired over the Public Broadcasting System (PBS) network on the *Bill Moyers* program.

ON BECOMING AN INITIATE

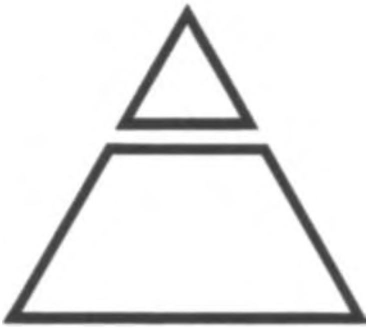

Proven techniques to help you attain Initiation into a Brotherhood.

***The Stelle Group,* a New Age community, offers to interested persons this brochure which entices the reader to maximize the "hidden powers" of his or her mind by seeking initiation into a Brotherhood. The founder of Stelle Group says that spirit beings gave him his initiation and actually made a sign, or marking in his body.**

Historic photograph of Russia's last Romanov dynasty czar, Nicholas II, and his family. Though connected with other Illuminati dynasties, the Romanovs were despised by the Bolshevik Zionists, Lenin and Trotsky, who in 1917 took over Russia and deposed the czar and set up their Communist dictatorship. The Zionists, under orders from Lenin, kidnapped, then murdered the entire family shown here.

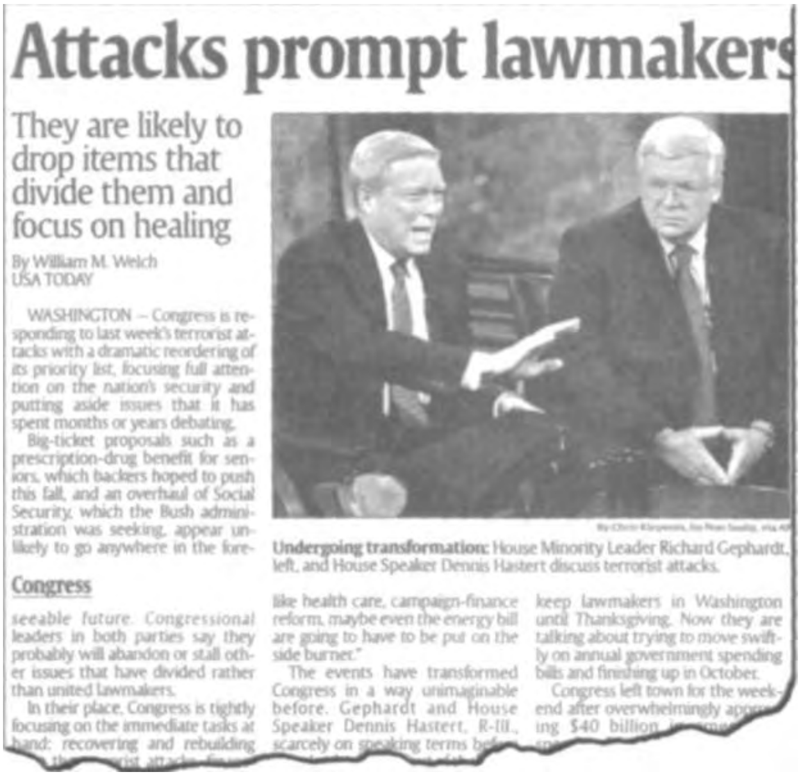

Attacks prompt lawmakers

They are likely to drop items that divide them and focus on healing

By William M. Welch
USA TODAY

WASHINGTON — Congress is responding to last week's terrorist attacks with a dramatic reordering of its priority list, focusing full attention on the nation's security and putting aside issues that it has spent months or years debating.

Big-ticket proposals such as a prescription-drug benefit for seniors, which backers hoped to push this fall, and an overhaul of Social Security, which the Bush administration was seeking, appear unlikely to go anywhere in the fore-

Congress

seeable future. Congressional leaders in both parties say they probably will abandon or stall other issues that have divided rather than united lawmakers.

In their place, Congress is tightly focusing on the immediate tasks at hand: recovering and rebuilding

Undergoing transformation: House Minority Leader Richard Gephardt, left, and House Speaker Dennis Hastert discuss terrorist attacks.

like health care, campaign-finance reform, maybe even the energy bill are going to have to be put on the side burner."

The events have transformed Congress in a way unimaginable before. Gephardt and House Speaker Dennis Hastert, R-Ill., scarcely on speaking terms be

keep lawmakers in Washington until Thanksgiving. Now they are talking about trying to move swiftly on annual government spending bills and finishing up in October.

Congress left town for the weekend after overwhelmingly app
ing $40 billion

House Minority Leader Richard Gephardt (left) is known to be both a Mason and a lap-dog of Illuminati interests. At right is House Speaker Dennis Hastert, giving the sign of the (delta, vulva) triangle. (Photo and article: *USA Today*, September 17, 2001)

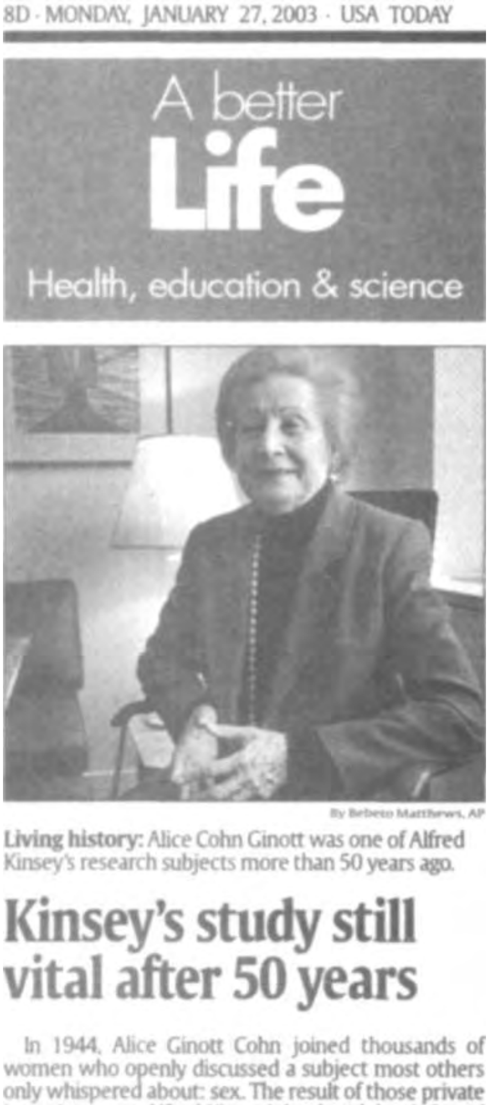

8D · MONDAY, JANUARY 27, 2003 · USA TODAY

A better
Life
Health, education & science

By Bebeto Matthews, AP

Living history: Alice Cohn Ginott was one of Alfred Kinsey's research subjects more than 50 years ago.

Kinsey's study still vital after 50 years

In 1944, Alice Ginott Cohn joined thousands of women who openly discussed a subject most others only whispered about: sex. The result of those private interviews was Alfred Kinsey's landmark book *Sexual Behavior in the Human Female*, which shocked the world in 1953 with its explicit revelations. Indiana University, which fostered the research, marks the book's 50th anniversary in 2003 with a year-long series of art exhibitions, film festivals and lectures exploring women's health and sexuality, the arts, science and history. Mostly, though, the school

Alice Cohn Ginott, a Jewish woman who participated in satanist Indiana University Professor Alfred Kinsey's sex studies. Ginott Cohn says she gave an interview to Kinsey's group. Hopefully, Cohn had no idea of Kinsey's bisexual proclivities nor of his child molestation activities. Quite possibly, Cohn doesn't intentionally sign the feminine triangle, either. (Photo: *USA Today.* January 27, *2003)*

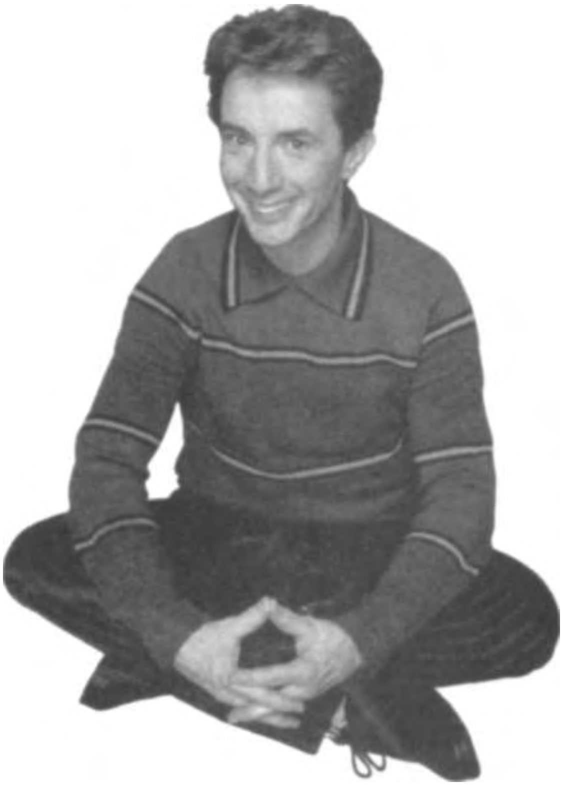

Actor Martin Short *(People* magazine, July 14, 1997, p. 148)

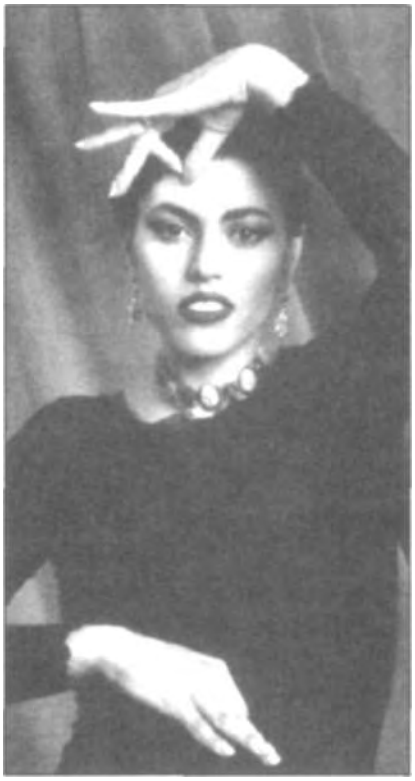

Right: Picture of Israeli singer, *Yosefa,* in the pages of *The Jerusalem Report* (October 19, 1995). Yosefa's album, *"The Desert Speaks,"* was released worldwide by EMI Records.

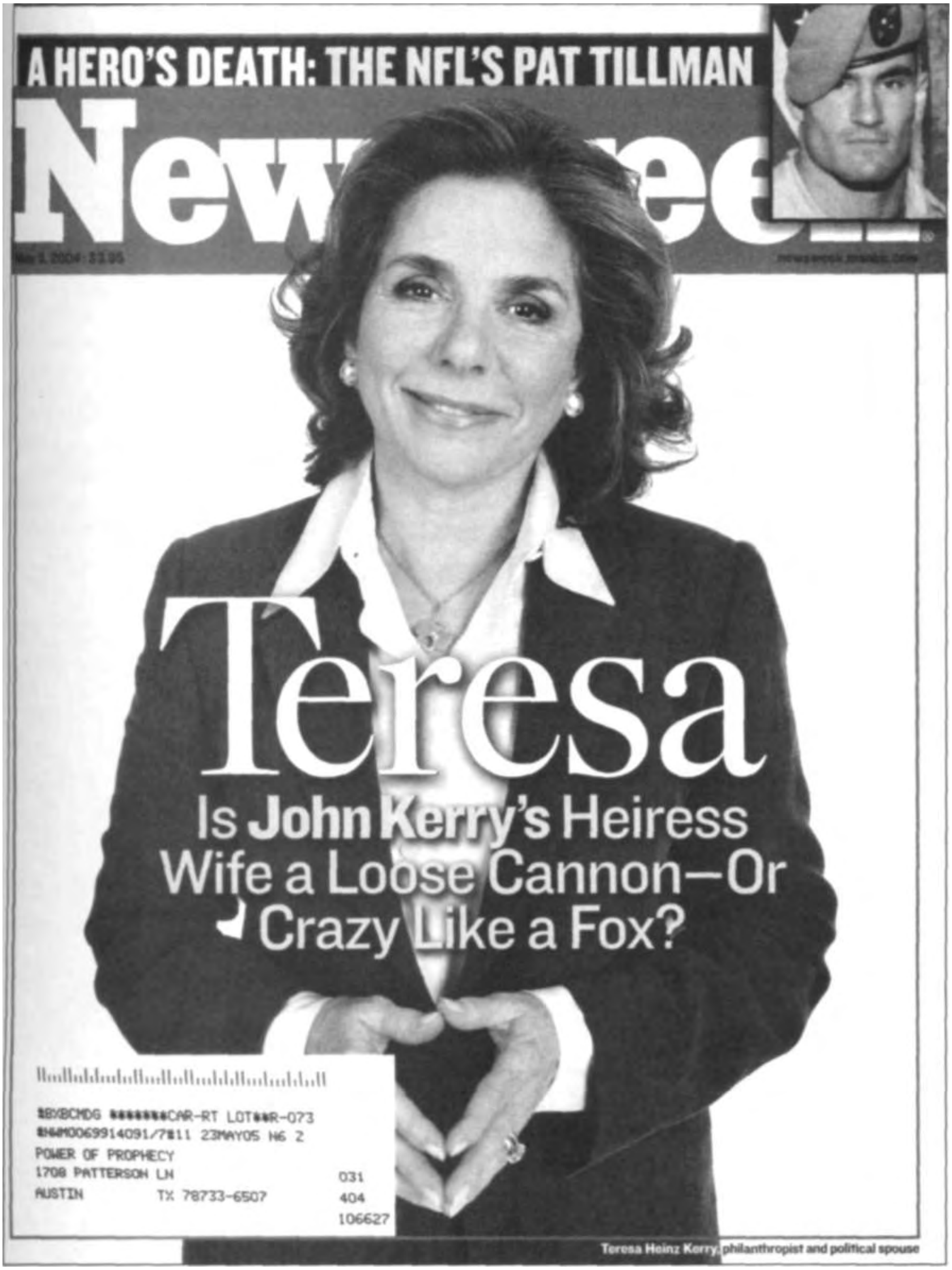
A HERO'S DEATH: THE NFL'S PAT TILLMAN
Newsweek
May 3, 2004 · $3.95
newsweek.msnbc.com
Teresa
Is John Kerry's Heiress Wife a Loose Cannon—Or Crazy Like a Fox?
$BXBCMDG ********CAR-RT LOT**R-073
$NWM0069914091/7$11 23MAY05 N6 2
POWER OF PROPHECY
1708 PATTERSON LN
AUSTIN TX 78733-6507
031
404
106627
Teresa Heinz Kerry, philanthropist and political spouse

Teresa Heinz-Kerry, the fabulously rich heiress of a colonialist fortune, who married two—count them-two U.S. Senators who were each initiates of the Skull & Bones, John Heinz and John Kerry (Teresa married Kerry after Heinz was killed in a mysterious airplane crash). Teresa, a Jewess whose maiden name was Simoes-Ferreira, is a board member of the Illuminati run Carnegie Institute, a member of the Council on Foreign Relations, and a member of the Brookings Institute. Illuminati institutions all.

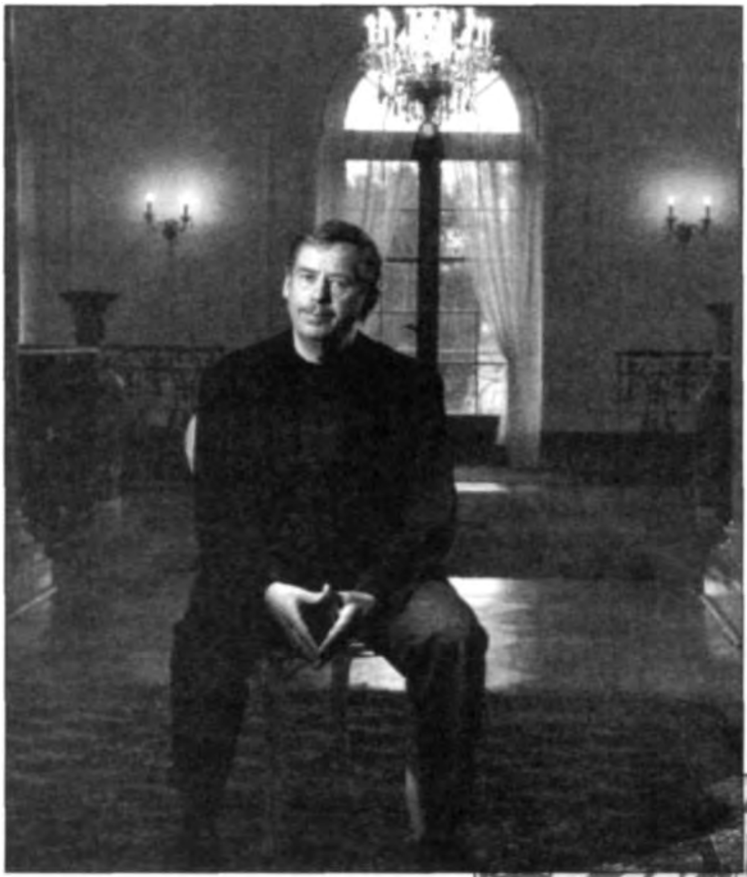

No doubt about the Illuminist staging here. Václav Havel, President of the Czech Republic, in *Parade* magazine (September 24, 2000), was lionized by the media as a poor dissident poet who helped to overthrow the Communists in Czechoslovakia. However, it has now come out that during the Communist era, Havel lived in luxurious apartments and drove around in two Mercedes. Havel is known to be a New Age occultist who has had meditation sessions with his friend, the Dalai Lama, the so-called "Tibetan god-man."

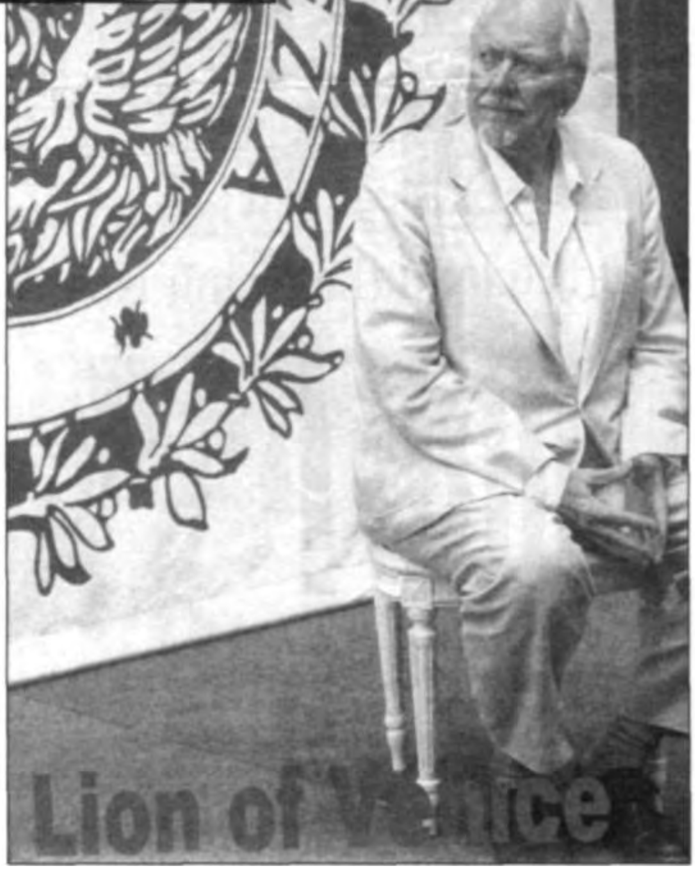

Hollywood movie director, Robert Altman, pictured in *The European* newspaper (September 12, 1993, p. 17). The newspaper's headline labeled Altman in a positive way as the "Lion of Venice."

EIGHTEEN

Black Magic, Masonic Witchcraft, and Triangle Powers

Ever wonder why the Masons installed the statue of a woman in stone atop the U.S. Capitol building in Washington, D.C., and the statue of a woman called "Liberty" in New York City's harbor? Well, now you know. America, meet your satanic mistress, Isis.

—Texe Marrs

The triangle is of primary importance in all Illuminati realms, whether in the ritual ceremonies of the Rosicrucians and Masons or the witchcraft, astrological and black magic practices of other Illuminist followers. Always the triangle is used.

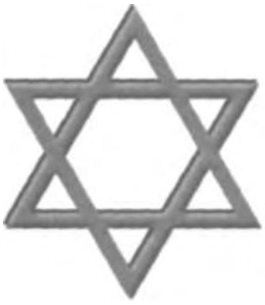

Among satanists and witches, the double triangle, the Seal of Solomon, also called the hexagram, is of great interest. This seal, known as the *Magen David* of the Jews, is actually composed of two triangles, superimposed on each other. One triangle pointed upward represents the flesh or material matter and the male generative act; the other, pointed downward, signifies female sexuality and the spiritual plane.

Therefore we have a masculine and a feminine triangle integrated. This indicates sexual union, the sex act, and the reconciliation of opposites, yin and yang, or God and Satan. The blasphemous suggestion in the symbol becomes clear.

Remember: Everywhere in the world of Illuminism, we discover sexual connotations. Theirs is a sex cult; indeed it is the world's greatest sex cult; yet, the Illuminati use symbols and signs to mask their sexually perverted messages.

The Star of David and the Beast's Number, 666

The supremely evil nature of the double triangle, the hexagram, Solomon's Seal, the Magen David (Shield of David), is proven by the fact that the symbol contains the hidden number *666*, the number of the beast *(Revelation 13).* Notice that there are six triangles incorporated on the outside of the hexagram; that it has six out points, and that six lines are used in constructing the symbol's two triangles. Thus, 6-6-6.

Also, the symbol incorporates six triangles of three sides each. Six times three equals eighteen (6 X 3 = 18 and 6 + 6 + 6 = 18).

An outstanding study of the six-pointed star was accomplished by Dr. O.J. Graham in the book, *THE Six-Pointed Star.*[1] Dr. Graham proves that this symbol was *never* used by King David of Israel and so the name Star of David is a misnomer. The symbol was chosen in 1947 for the flag of the fledgling nation of Israel at the insistence of the Rothschilds. Its usage stems from the medieval period when corrupt rabbis into cabalistic magic began to use the six-pointed star in their rituals.

Dr. Graham does not mince words in declaring this emblem a tool of Satan, unworthy of use by the holy people of God.

The Occult Triangle and the Masonic Lodge

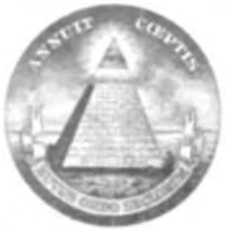

Returning back to the single triangle as a common symbol of occult usage, we note that the Freemasons were able, through the influence of Grand Master Benjamin Franklin, to have the triangle became the sun-lit capstone above the pyramid on the obverse (reverse) side of the Great Seal of the United States.

The design of the 33rd degree jewel worn by the elite Mason is made up of interlocking triangles.

The Real Grip of a Master Mason, which the Order claims can "resurrect" the candidate and cause him, in essence, to be "born again" (a counterfeit of the Christian experience) is formed with fingers separated to form a triangle. In the photos and illustrations in this section, you will find several real-life examples of this grip.

In *Coil's Masonic Encyclopedia* we are told of the *triangular chain,* the legend taught by Freemasonry that Jewish Freemasons were carried as captives from Jerusalem to Babylon by Nebuchadnezzar, being bound by triangular chains. The Babylonian King is said to have been gravely insulting the Jews by doing this because, to the Jews, the triangle, or delta symbol, was a symbol of their Deity.[2]

King Solomon and the Triple Triangle

In the 6° of Freemasonry, the Degree of Intimate Secretary, the concept of a triple triangle is introduced, said to be emblematic of the three Masons who were present at the opening of the first Lodge of Intimate Secretaries. It is further claimed that King Solomon was one of those three present.

It is significant that in the first Book of *Kings* in the Holy Bible, King Solomon rebelled against God and His commandments and began to worship the god and goddess of the heathen in his temple. He also required of the High Priests of

Solomon's Temple that they annually render to him, as tribute, the sum of 666 talents of gold. Undoubtedly the number 666 is symbolically the triple triangle, because the holy number of the Goddess was 666.

In *Mackey's Masonic Ritualist*, the author, Sovereign Grand Commander of the Scottish Rite, Albert Mackey, emphasized the key importance of the triangle in the rituals of Freemasonry.[5] The late Jim Keith, an exposer of conspiracies and cults, also discussed the importance of this symbol to Masonry. He writes, "There is in fact a triad of three governing officers to be found in almost every degree."[4]

In a number of books written by Masons, the downward pointing triangle is related to Set, the god of Egypt, and to Bacchus. Both of the deities are Satan in other guises.

Jim Tresner, 33°, whose academic writings are often published in Masonic journals and publications, notes the use of triangles in the ritual for the fifteenth degree of the Scottish Rite, Knight of the East, of the Sword, or of the Eagle. Tresner says that the apron worn for this degree's ritual in the Lodge is of red velvet, and "on the apron are three triangles, one inside the other, formed of chains with triangular links." These three triangles, he explains, "represent the three great limitations on, or enemies of, the human intellect — tyranny, privilege, superstition."[5]

The late Albert Mackey, Sovereign Grand Commander of International Freemasonry.

In reality, Tresner is subtly alluding to the Masonic Order's long-standing doctrine of fierce opposition to existing political sovereigns not yet corrupted or conquered by Illuminism and its hatred of the true Christian Church, which the Masons teach is "superstition" and is a sectarian belief that cannot be tolerated. Tresner may object to my characterization, but the evidence of my allegations is insurmountable, as the rituals themselves prove.

Rosicrucians, Theosophists, and The Triangle

The Rosicrucian Order, too, relies on the triangle as a vehicle to impart and convey its teachings to rising candidates. For example, Arkon Daraul, in *A History of Secret Societies,* describes a ritualistic scene of initiation in a German branch of Rosicrucianism:

> The room of initiation was carpeted in green and on it were a number of objects... Three candelabra were placed to form a triangle, and nine glasses indicated the male and female properties...[6]

Helena Blavatsky's worldwide cult *Theosophy* and its offspring, *The Lucis Trust,* led for many years by prolific occult writer, Alice Bailey, likewise adopted the triangle as symbolic of their teachings. In 1937 the Lucis Trust founded a subsidiary group named *Triangles* which today encourages people across the globe to network by forming local three person triangle groups to come together often and meditate. In this way, said the parent organization in a letter, occult adepts can "help to illumine world thought...through which the new incoming Aquarian energies can function, the new ideas spread, and the New World Order emerge."[7]

According to Bailey, the coming New World Order of the New Age is best symbolized by a triangle within a circle, with a single dot, or point, within the triangle. This symbol is said to represent three Centres (in U.S.A., Centers), the point standing for the ruler of the spirit world, Sanat (an anagram for "Satan" apparently), the entity who at the appointed time will emerge to rule the Earth and humanity. The second Centre is Sanat's "Hierarchy," the many unseen spirits (i.e. devils), and the third Centre is the human masses.[8]

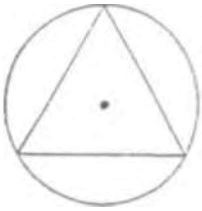

At the close of the Age, Bailey assures us, "the three major Centres will be in complete unified and synchronized activity," controlling all manifestations of life.[9]

Aleister Crowley, the late British satanist and Freemason, was also a devotee of the triangle as symbol. As a high-level officer of the occult group, Order of the Golden Dawn, Crowley used for one of his emblems the Eye of Horus in the Pyramid of Fire, radiated by the sun's rays. It was Horus, in the form of a spirit guide named Aiwass, that allegedly gave Crowley *The Book of the Law*, a book of prophecy Crowley claimed he received by automatic writing.[10]

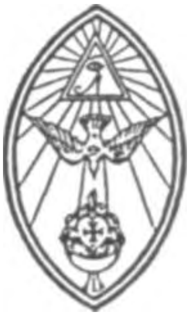

ABRACADABRA Not Just Childish Fun

Witches and deep occult magicians join Bailey in use of the triangle. Take the word ABRACADABRA that is repeatedly used in kids TV cartoons and programs by supposedly mythical creatures like wizards and witches and fairies. Actually, this word is of ancient origins. In a poem on occult medicine written by a pagan doctor in ancient Rome about 250 AD, to ward off fevers and sickness, the physician recommended the word abracadabra be written down in an inverted triangle like this:

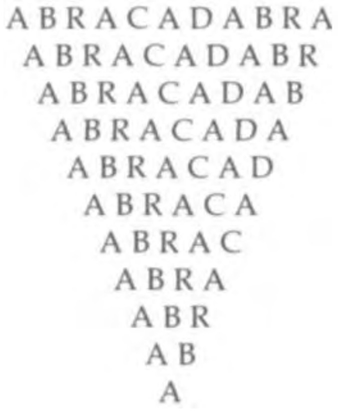

ABRACADABRA
ABRACADABR
ABRACADAB
ABRACADA
ABRACAD
ABRACA
ABRAC
ABRA
ABR
AB
A

Next, the paper on which the word was written was to be tied round the patient's neck for nine days and then thrown backwards over the shoulder into a stream running eastwards. The fever then would shrink to nothing, the patient was told.

The magical word ABRACADABRA comes from worship of the gnostic god, Abraxas. It literally means: The dead body, or corpse, of Abraxas.

Witches often use the triangle as a protective symbol. They foolishly believe it can be used as a talisman, especially if the Tetragrammaton, the Hebrew letters for God, are inserted inside the triangle. The Masons do the same thing essentially in the Masters Jewel of the 4th degree. The triangle is inscribed on the ring given holders of the 14th degree also.

The Geometrical God Is a Woman

A closely kept secret of higher level Masons and other Illuminists is that, in addition to their worship of the Devil by other names, they also worship a female deity, the Great Goddess. This is made plain by John Yarker, a renowned British Freemason. Yarker's translation of the French manuscript, *Lectures of a Chapter, Senate, and Council,* informs us that the triangle's origins can be found in Egyptian religion, being the symbol of Isis, the Egyptian goddess:

> The triangle, which they called the geometrical God, was the emblem of Isis.[11]

You'll recall that the symbol "G" is found at the center of the most common of Freemasonry's symbols, the Masonic square and compass, and that the Mason is told this letter G represents "God" and "Geometry." This, then, is the "geometrical god" that, Yarker observes, "was the emblem of Isis."

Ever wonder why the Masons installed the statue of a *woman* in stone atop the U.S. Capitol building in Washington, D.C., and the statue of a *woman* called "Liberty" in New York City's harbor? Well, now you know. *America, meet your satanic mistress: Isis.*

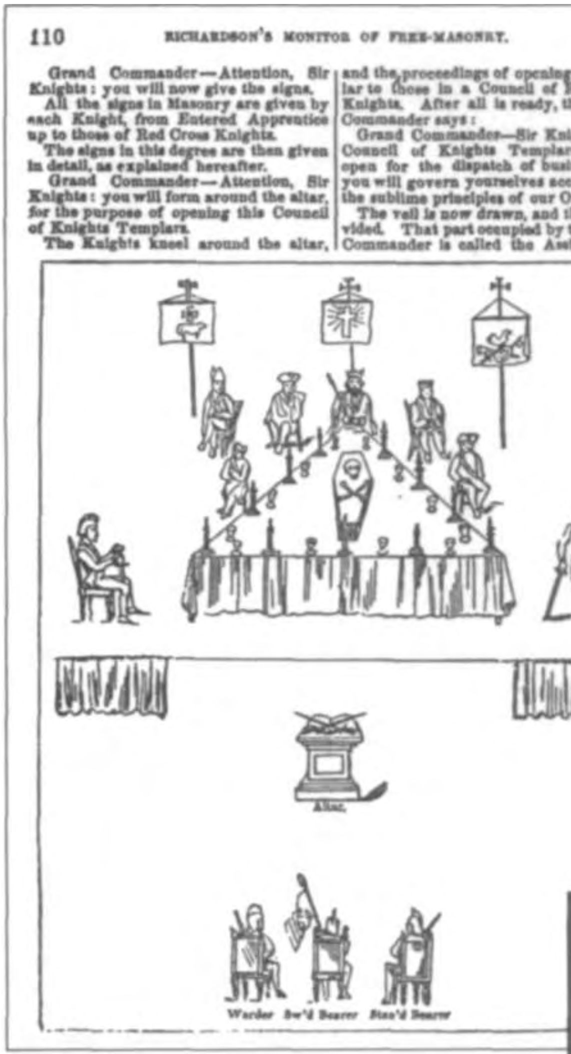

110 RICHARDSON'S MONITOR OF FREE-MASONRY.

Grand Commander—Attention, Sir Knights: you will now give the signs.

All the signs in Masonry are given by each Knight, from Entered Apprentice up to those of Red Cross Knights.

The signs in this degree are then given in detail, as explained hereafter.

Grand Commander—Attention, Sir Knights: you will form around the altar, for the purpose of opening this Council of Knights Templars.

The Knights kneel around the altar, and the proceedings of opening are similar to those in a Council of Red Cross Knights. After all is ready, the Grand Commander says:

Grand Commander—Sir Knights, this Council of Knights Templars is now open for the dispatch of business, and you will govern yourselves according to the sublime principles of our Order.

The veil is now drawn, and the hall divided. That part occupied by the Grand Commander is called the Asilum, and

Altar.
Warder
Sw'd Bearer
Stan'd Bearer

Page 110 of *Richardson's Monitor of Freemasonry* give details of how the lodge sanctuary will be arranged for initiation in the degree of Order of the Knights Templar. Take note of the triangle-shaped table with candles and coffin.

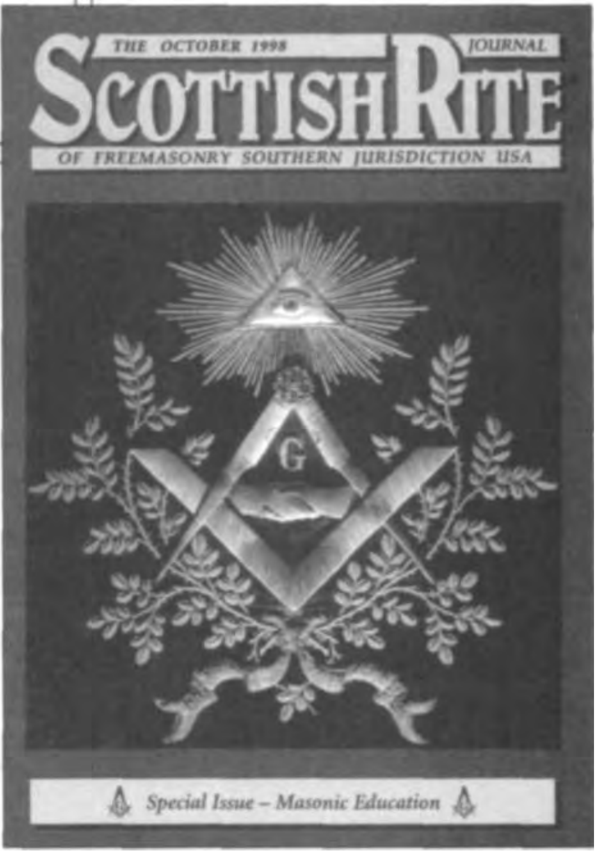

THE OCTOBER 1998
JOURNAL
SCOTTISH RITE
OF FREEMASONRY SOUTHERN JURISDICTION USA
G
Special Issue – Masonic Education

This cover of an issue of *Scottish Rite Journal* (October, 1998) displays the triangle with radiant sun rays and, containing within, the all-seeing eye. There is also the square and compass, the "G" (Geometry, Goddess, and/or sexual Generative power), and the Masonic hand grip of fellowship.

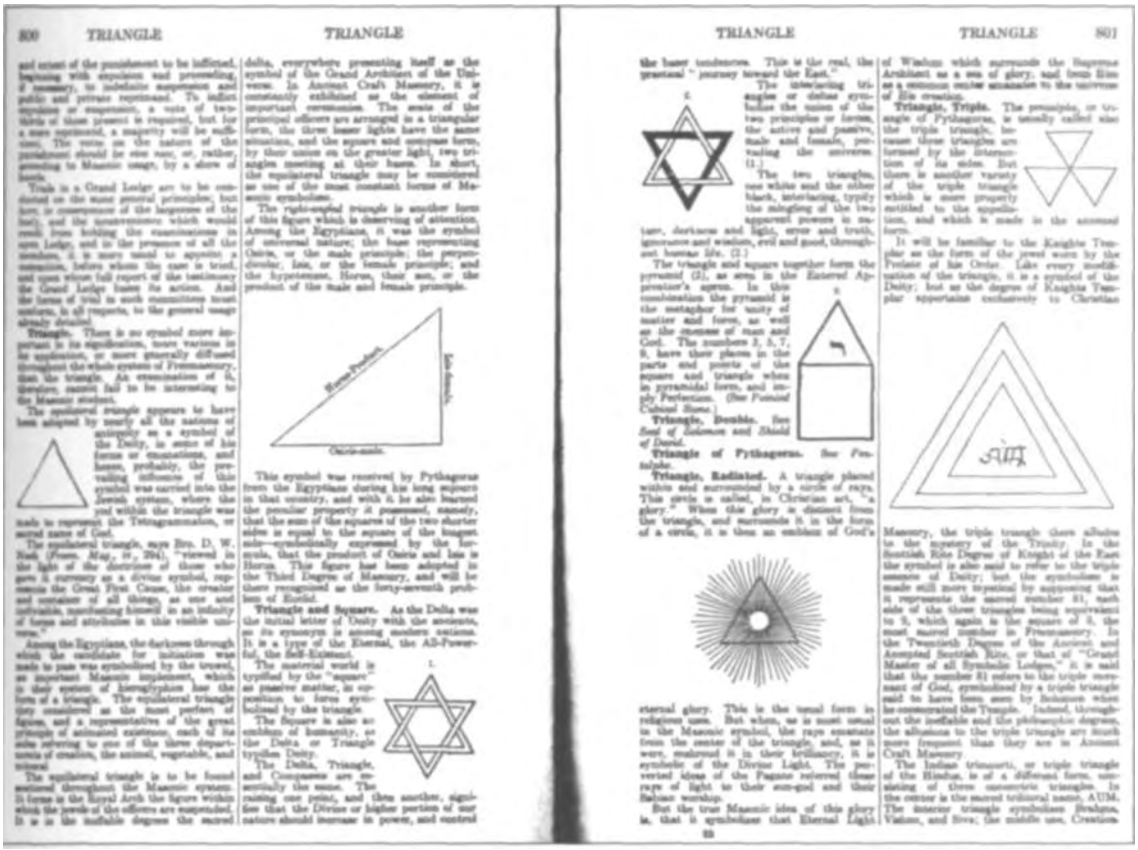

Pages 800 and 801 from *Encyclopedia of Freemasonry* by Albert G. Mackey, 33° and Charles T. MrClenachan, 33°.

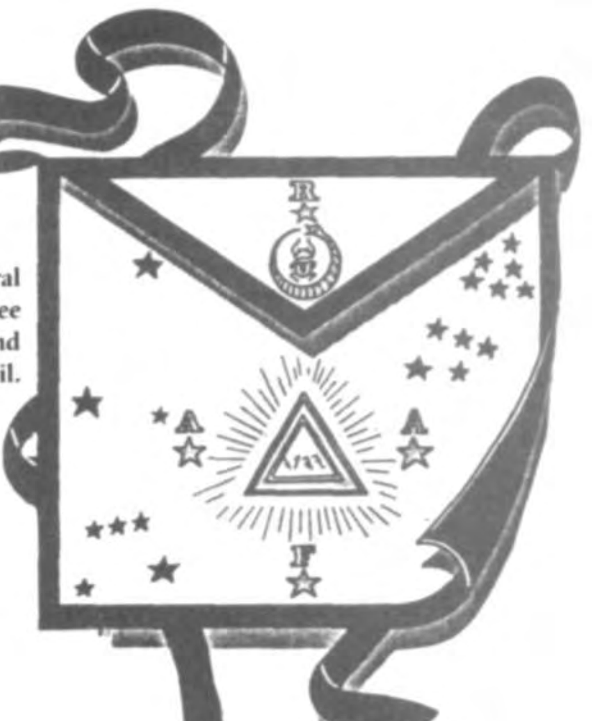

This Masonic apron has as its central focus the radiant triangle. Also, we see the star, the Eygptian scarab beetle, and the oroboros serpent biting its tail.

Ἡ ἀγγλὶς ἱέρεια Μαύρης Μαγείας πρὶν ἀπὸ τὴν τέλεσιν τῶν μυστηρίων... ἐνῷ βαστάει τὰ δύο κόκκινα κεριά. Τὰ σύμβολα ἀπὸ πάνω της εἶναι τὸ διαβόητον «Κρούς Ἀνσάτα» ἢ ANKX δηλαδὴ ὁ «Σταυρὸς τῆς ζωῆς» ἐν ἀναλύσει.... Οἱ ἀναγνῶσται μας τώρα ἀσφαλῶς θὰ καταλάβουν τὴν σημασίαν τοῦ σήματος T τὸ ὁποῖον φέρουν οἱ τέκτονές μας ἐπὶ τῶν στολῶν των...

A dark scene inside a Masonic Temple in Greece. The human sacrifice lays straddled as a five point star on the altar. Superimposed behind are the descendant (hell) triangle and the tau symbol of the Royal Arch. The delta triangle design is feminine and corresponds to the female's vulva.

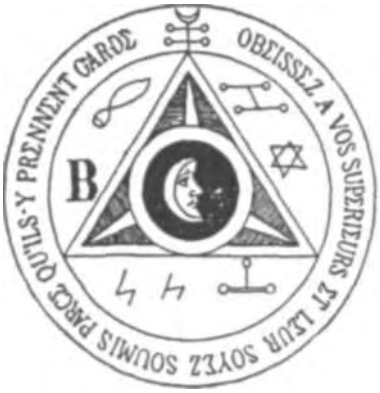
OBEISSEZ A VOS SUPERIEURS ET LEUR SOYEZ SOUMIS PARCE QU'ILS Y PRENNENT GARDE
B

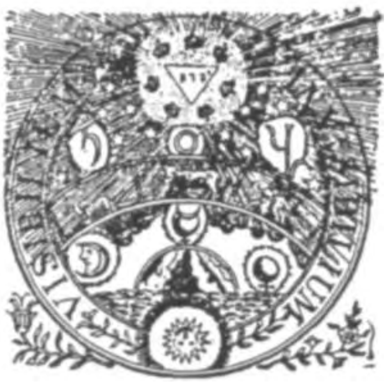

Two magical seals based on the *Black Book of Honorius.* The first is the occult seal of Great Work. The second is the occult seal of Black Magic. Note in both of them the opposed position of the triangles and the position of the moon (in the center of the Black Magic seal).

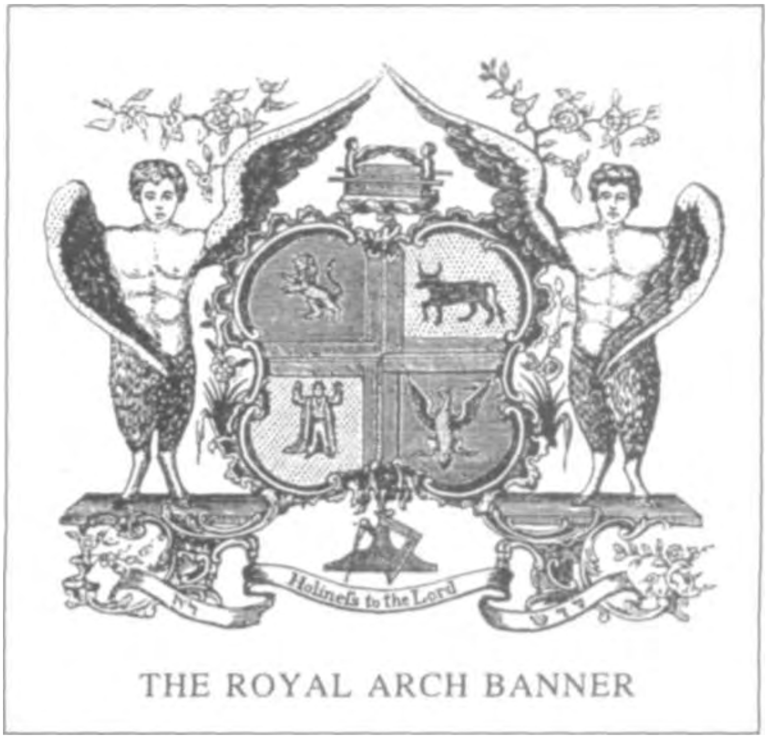

Freemasonry's *The Royal Arch Banner* reveals two angels holding their respective wings in a triangle shape. The cloven hoofs and goat legs demonstrate the Luciferian nature of these angelic creatures. (From *Coil's Masonic Encyclopedia,* revised 1995)

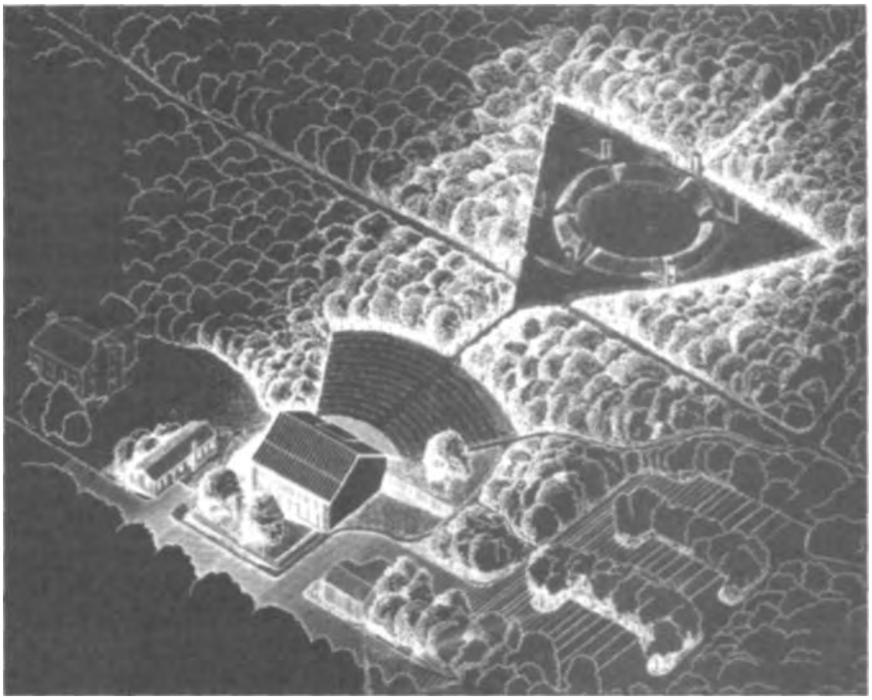

The architectural design for the Yellow Springs Institute for Contemporary Studies and the Arts in Chester Springs, Pennsylvania reveals a music amphitheater and a triangle structure with a circle inside. Meanwhile, the official logo for the Yellow Springs Institute is a red triangle with a tree inside.

YELLOW
SPRINGS
INSTITUTE
FOR CONTEMPORARY STUDIES
AND THE ARTS

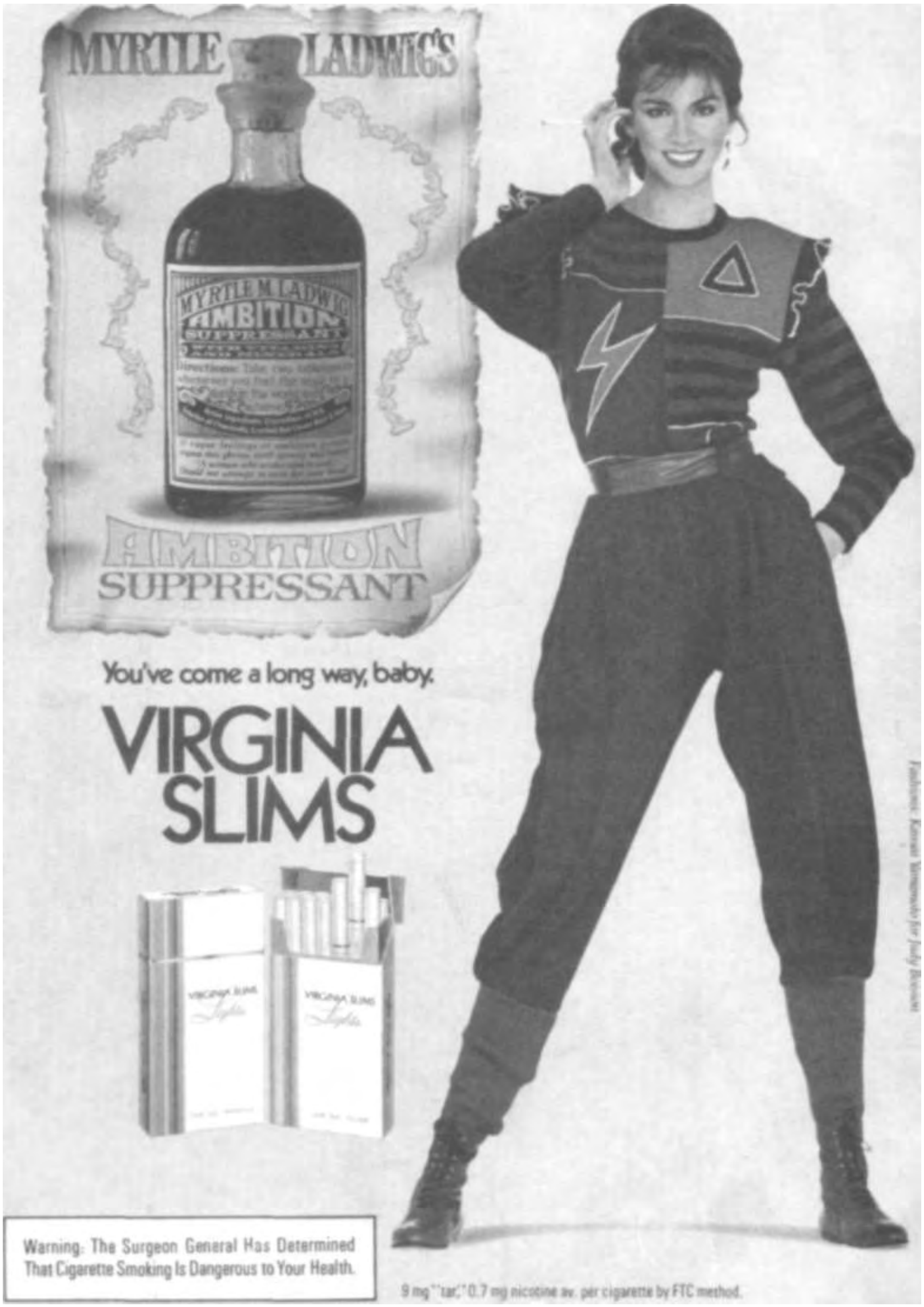
MYRTLE M. LADWIG'S
MYRTLE M. LADWIG'S
AMBITION
SUPPRESSANT
AMBITION
SUPPRESSANT
You've come a long way, baby.
VIRGINIA
SLIMS
VIRGINIA SLIMS
Lights
VIRGINIA SLIMS
Lights
Warning: The Surgeon General Has Determined
That Cigarette Smoking Is Dangerous to Your Health.
9 mg "tar," 0.7 mg nicotine av. per cigarette by FTC method.

Only an adept heavily schooled in occult symbology would understand the message being communicated in this full-page ad for *"Virginia Slims"* cigarettes. The occult significance of the lightning bolt, the triangle, the square, the arm and hand signs and positions, even the wide spread of the model's legs is explained in the pages of *Codex Magica.* The colors she wears, black, red, blue, and white also contain significance. Still, given the general deterioration of intellectual thinking in society and of moral values and Christian knowledge—and the dearth of knowledge of occult deception—it is entirely possible that neither the fashion designers nor the Advertising Agency are culpable of intentionally using occult devices. The significance however, remains, and in the author's opinion, such advertising cannot help but aid the cause of evil forces.

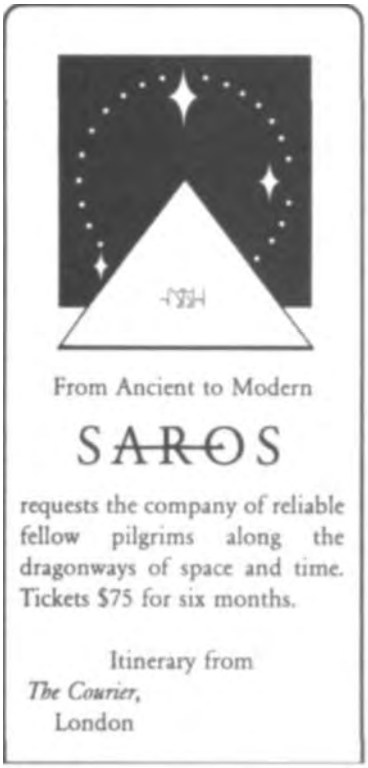

From Ancient to Modern

SAROS

requests the company of reliable fellow pilgrims along the dragonways of space and time. Tickets $75 for six months.

Itinerary from
The Courier,
London

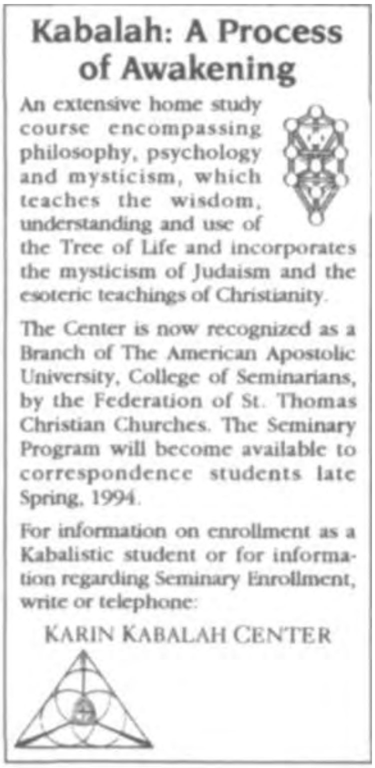

Kabalah: A Process of Awakening

An extensive home study course encompassing philosophy, psychology and mysticism, which teaches the wisdom, understanding and use of the Tree of Life and incorporates the mysticism of Judaism and the esoteric teachings of Christianity.

The Center is now recognized as a Branch of The American Apostolic University, College of Seminarians, by the Federation of St. Thomas Christian Churches. The Seminary Program will become available to correspondence students late Spring, 1994.

For information on enrollment as a Kabalistic student or for information regarding Seminary Enrollment, write or telephone:

KARIN KABALAH CENTER

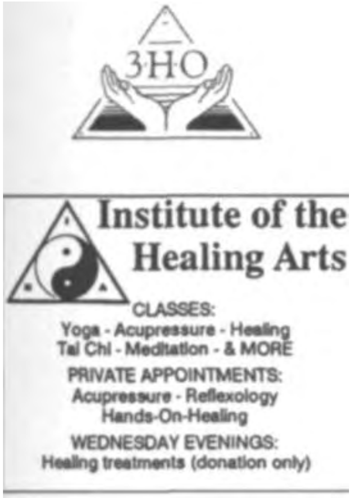

Institute of the Healing Arts

CLASSES:
Yoga - Acupressure - Healing
Tai Chi - Meditation - & MORE

PRIVATE APPOINTMENTS:
Acupressure - Reflexology
Hands-On-Healing

WEDNESDAY EVENINGS:
Healing treatments (donation only)

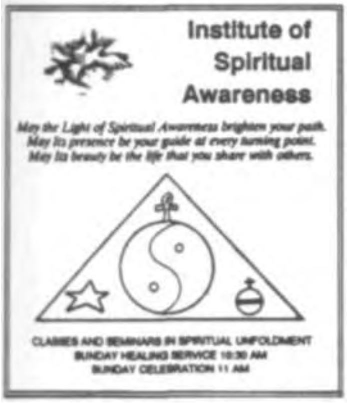

Institute of Spiritual Awareness

May the Light of Spiritual Awareness brighten your path.
May its presence be your guide at every turning point.
May its beauty be the life that you share with others.

CLASSES AND SEMINARS IN SPIRITUAL UNFOLDMENT
SUNDAY HEALING SERVICE 10:30 AM
SUNDAY CELEBRATION 11 AM

Display ads like these are common in New Age and occult publications.

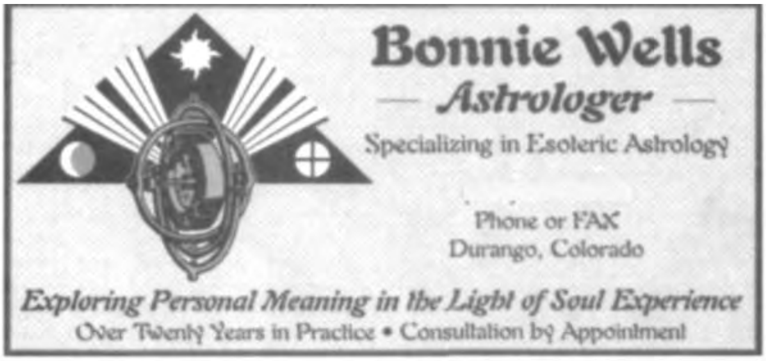

Bonnie Wells

— *Astrologer* —

Specializing in Esoteric Astrology

[redacted]

Phone or FAX
Durango, Colorado

Exploring Personal Meaning in the Light of Soul Experience

Over Twenty Years in Practice • Consultation by Appointment

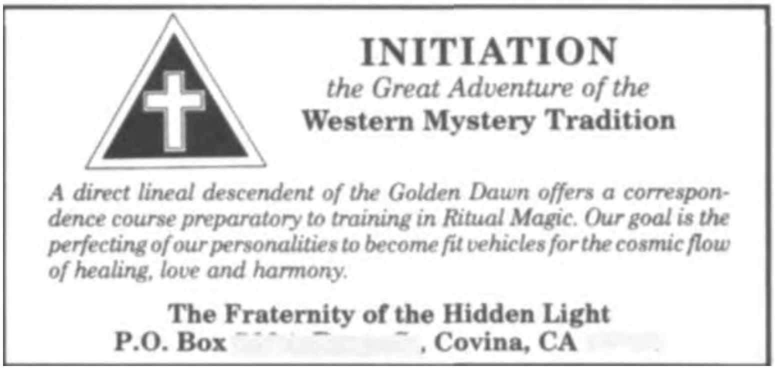

INITIATION

the Great Adventure of the

Western Mystery Tradition

A direct lineal descendent of the Golden Dawn offers a correspondence course preparatory to training in Ritual Magic. Our goal is the perfecting of our personalities to become fit vehicles for the cosmic flow of healing, love and harmony.

The Fraternity of the Hidden Light
P.O. Box [redacted], Covina, CA [redacted]

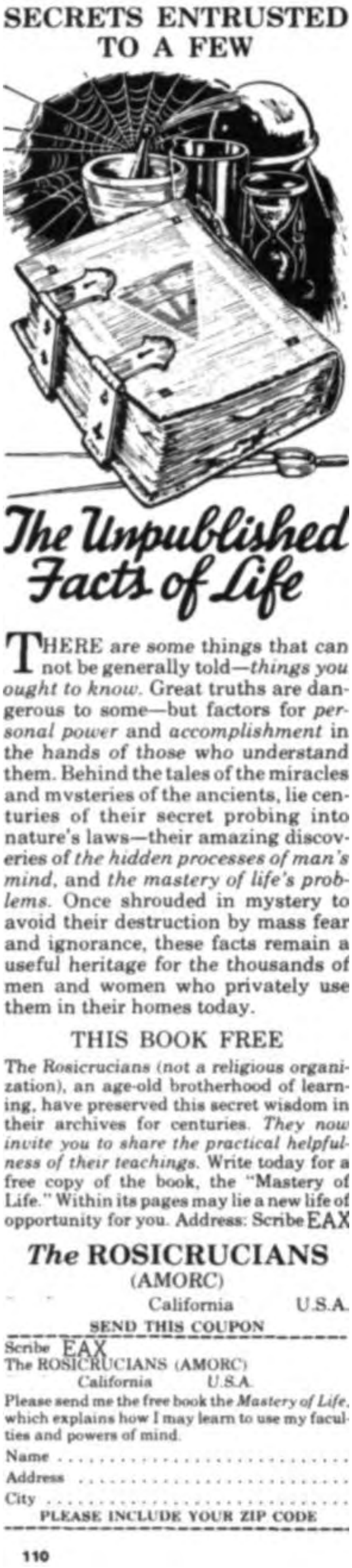

SECRETS ENTRUSTED
TO A FEW

The Unpublished Facts of Life

THERE are some things that can not be generally told—*things you ought to know*. Great truths are dangerous to some—but factors for *personal power* and *accomplishment* in the hands of those who understand them. Behind the tales of the miracles and mysteries of the ancients, lie centuries of their secret probing into nature's laws—their amazing discoveries of *the hidden processes of man's mind*, and *the mastery of life's problems*. Once shrouded in mystery to avoid their destruction by mass fear and ignorance, these facts remain a useful heritage for the thousands of men and women who privately use them in their homes today.

THIS BOOK FREE

The Rosicrucians (not a religious organization), an age-old brotherhood of learning, have preserved this secret wisdom in their archives for centuries. *They now invite you to share the practical helpfulness of their teachings.* Write today for a free copy of the book, the "Mastery of Life." Within its pages may lie a new life of opportunity for you. Address: Scribe EAX

The ROSICRUCIANS
(AMORC)
California U.S.A.

SEND THIS COUPON

Scribe EAX
The ROSICRUCIANS (AMORC)
California U.S.A.

Please send me the free book the *Mastery of Life*, which explains how I may learn to use my faculties and powers of mind.

Name ....
Address ....
City ....

PLEASE INCLUDE YOUR ZIP CODE

110

To interest like-minded people to inquire about the Rosicrucians, this or a similar ad is placed in some magazines. Under the heading, *"Secrets Entrusted to A Few,"* we find an ancient and worn book with a triangle and cross imprinted on the cover. The Rosicrucians are actually several different Orders. This ad is for AMORC, an American-based Order that is less influential among the elite than European branches. Perhaps the most famous initiate of the Rosicrucians was Benjamin Franklin. Catholic Pope John XXIII was reputed to be a Rosicrucian as was Martin Luther, the Protestant Reformer. U.S. Senator Ted Kennedy (DMA) is today a high-level Rosicrucian.

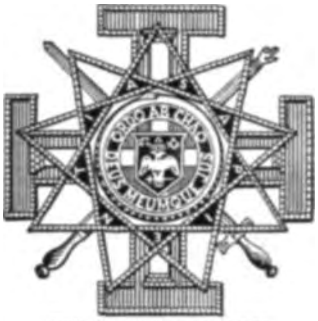

JEWEL OF THIRTY-THIRD DEGREE

The design for the Jewel of Scottish Rite Masonry's 33rd degree includes a system of interlocking triangles, circles, the "X," and the quadruple Tau background.

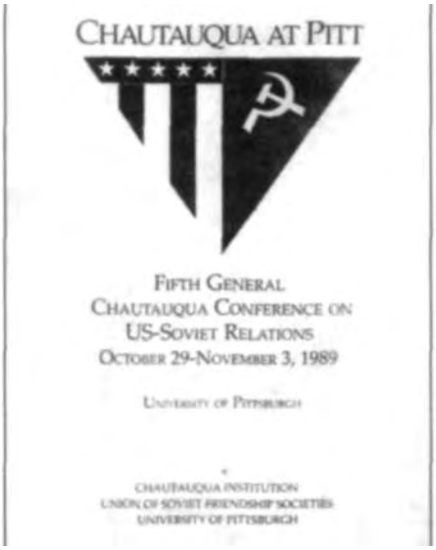

CHAUTAUQUA AT PITT

FIFTH GENERAL
CHAUTAUQUA CONFERENCE ON
US-SOVIET RELATIONS
OCTOBER 29-NOVEMBER 3, 1989

UNIVERSITY OF PITTSBURGH

CHAUTAUQUA INSTITUTION
UNION OF SOVIET FRIENDSHIP SOCIETIES
UNIVERSITY OF PITTSBURGH

Official logo of conference held by socialists promoting the political and economic merger of the United States and the old U.S.S.R. Speakers at the 1989 conference included Illuminati U.S. Senator John Heinz (Order of Skull & Bones), U.S. Senator Bill Bradley, and Pittsburgh Mayor Sophie Masloff.

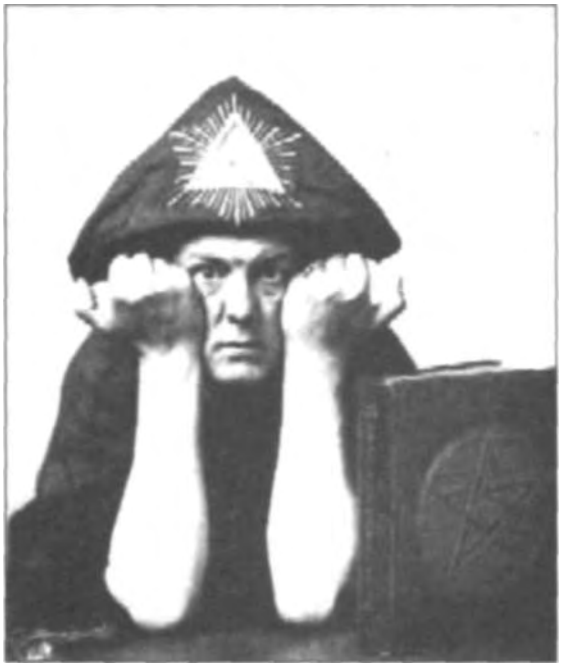

Aleister Crowley, British satanist who was a high level initate of many occult Orders and Secret Societies, giving the supreme sign of the horned god. The triangular hat resembles the style of hat worn by many in the earlier colonial period in America. The triangle contains the all-seeing eye and has the radiant rays of the sun deity shining forth.

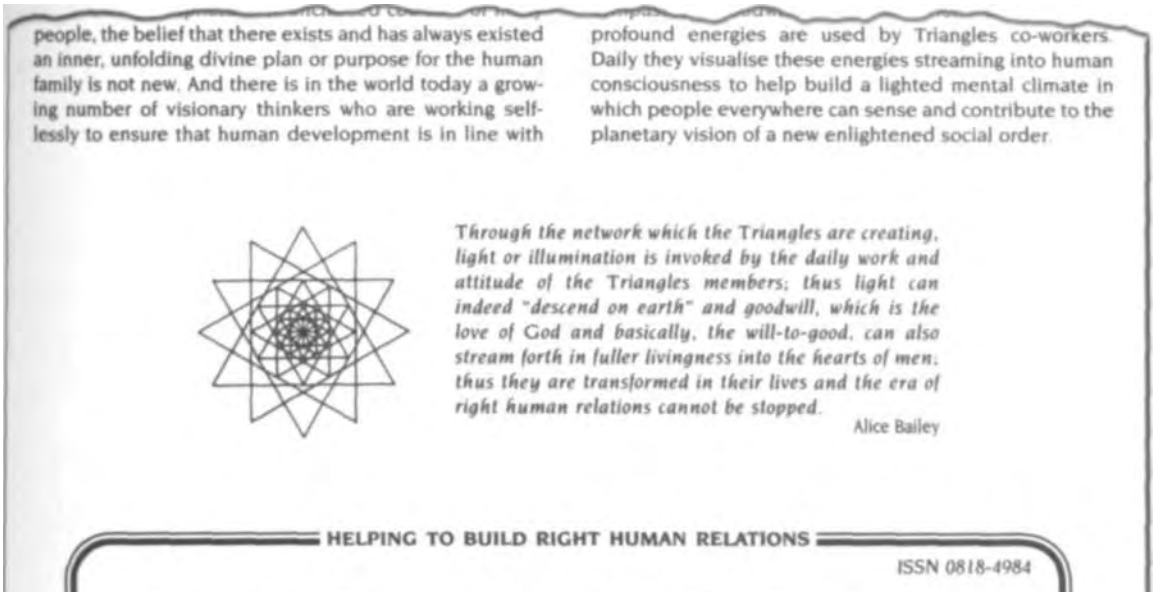

people, the belief that there exists and has always existed an inner, unfolding divine plan or purpose for the human family is not new. And there is in the world today a growing number of visionary thinkers who are working selflessly to ensure that human development is in line with

profound energies are used by Triangles co-workers. Daily they visualise these energies streaming into human consciousness to help build a lighted mental climate in which people everywhere can sense and contribute to the planetary vision of a new enlightened social order.

Through the network which the Triangles are creating, light or illumination is invoked by the daily work and attitude of the Triangles members; thus light can indeed "descend on earth" and goodwill, which is the love of God and basically, the will-to-good, can also stream forth in fuller livingness into the hearts of men; thus they are transformed in their lives and the era of right human relations cannot be stopped.

Alice Bailey

HELPING TO BUILD RIGHT HUMAN RELATIONS

ISSN 0818-4984

World Goodwill is an international movement helping to mobilise the energy of goodwill and to build right human

Nations Economic and Social Council.
The World Goodwill Newsletter is published four times a

This logo of *Triangles,* a Lucis Trust organization, and the message from Alice Bailey, occultist founder, was included in *World Goodwill* newsletter (1997, No. 4). World Goodwill is yet another global organization, affiliated with the Lucis Trust, but which also networks with scores of other Illuminist groups, orders, and secret societies. Lucis Trust and World Goodwill teach of the coming of the Cosmic, New Age Christ, avatar for the Age of Aquarius, who represents the Central Sun, also called the Solar Logos.

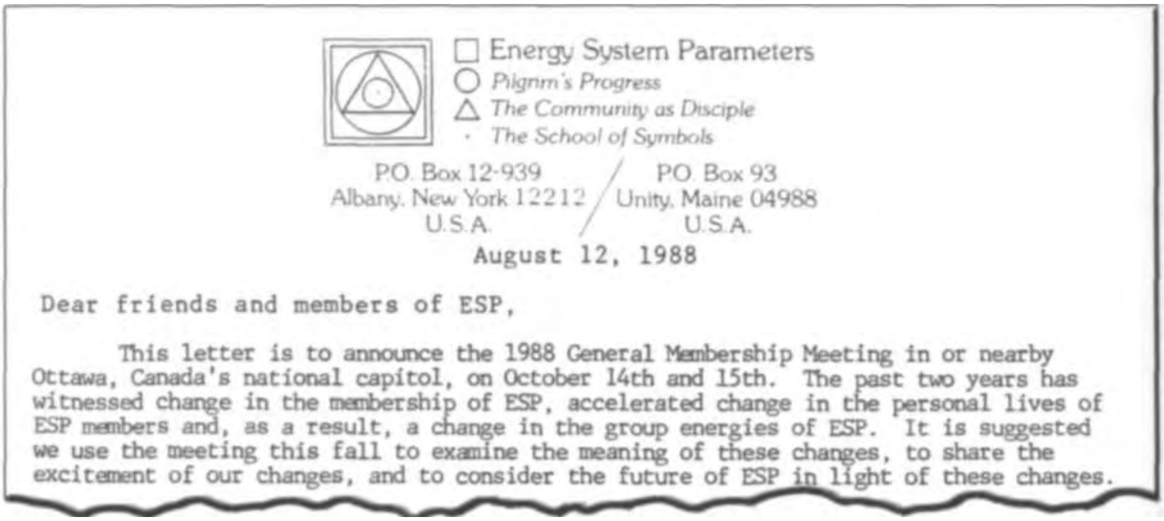

☐ Energy System Parameters
○ *Pilgrim's Progress*
△ *The Community as Disciple*
· *The School of Symbols*

P.O. Box 12-939 / P.O. Box 93
Albany, New York 12212 / Unity, Maine 04988
U.S.A. / U.S.A.

August 12, 1988

Dear friends and members of ESP,

This letter is to announce the 1988 General Membership Meeting in or nearby Ottawa, Canada's national capitol, on October 14th and 15th. The past two years has witnessed change in the membership of ESP, accelerated change in the personal lives of ESP members and, as a result, a change in the group energies of ESP. It is suggested we use the meeting this fall to examine the meaning of these changes, to share the excitement of our changes, and to consider the future of ESP in light of these changes.

The New Age group, *Energy System Parameters (ESP),* has this as the logo on its letterhead. In this letter announcing its general membership's annual meeting, the co-Presidents emphasized ESP's focus on *"group energies," "cosmic reorganization,"* and the importance of achieving the *"crystalized form of new patterns."* The signature line had the phrase, *"In the Service of the One."*

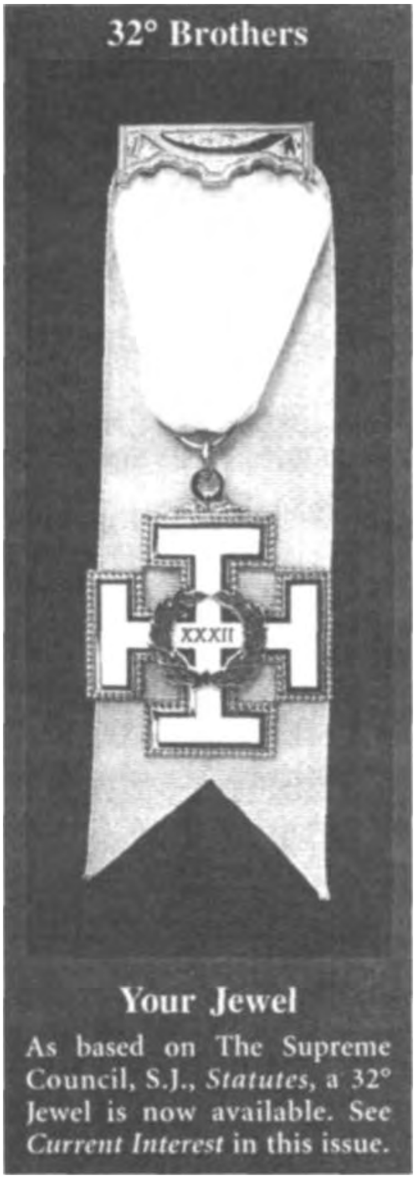

32° Brothers

Your Jewel

As based on The Supreme Council, S.J., *Statutes*, a 32° Jewel is now available. See *Current Interest* in this issue.

***The jewel* of the 32nd degree, Scottish Rite, contains four, interlocking Tau elements and four squares. Symbology-wise, this arrangement conceives of the Freemasons and their coming Prince to be rulers of all four corners of the globe. (From the back cover of *Scottish Rite Journal,* October 1998)**

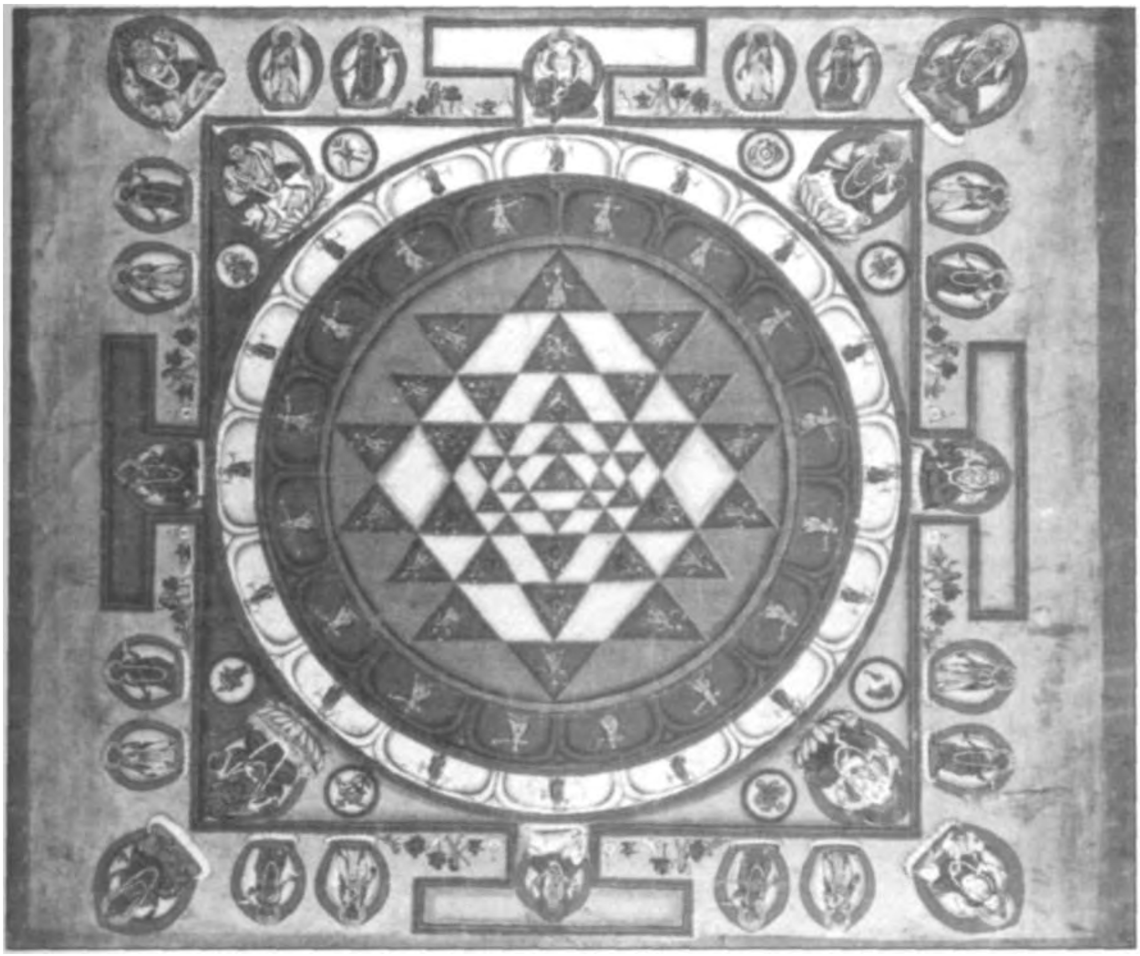

Eastern religions believe that the use of the *Sri Yantra* produces unparalleled spiritual power by evoking (inviting) help from the unseen spirit world. Commonly employed in sexual tantra rituals, the design of the Sri Yantra meditation device begins with the four "T"s, (Tau) which, interestingly, is the same as the design of the Mason's 32nd degree jewel. From this base, the Sri Yantra is drawn from nine (666=6+6+6=18=1+8=9) triangles, four pointed downward and five pointed upward, forming 42 (6x7) triangular fragments around a central triangle. Occultists teach there is no other set of triangles which interlock with such integrational perfection. The diagram of the Sri Yantra is said to contain, or synthesize, within all the activities and energies in the universe. Made up of black and white triangle elements, the design bears also the yin/yang, black is white and white is black principle underlying the *Masters Carpet* (checkerboard) floor of Masonry and also parallels the "two heads" doctrine implicit in the great symbol of 33rd degree Freemasonry, the double-headed eagle. (Drawing from book, *Sacred Geometry,* by Robert Lawlor, Thames and Hudson, New York and London, 1989)

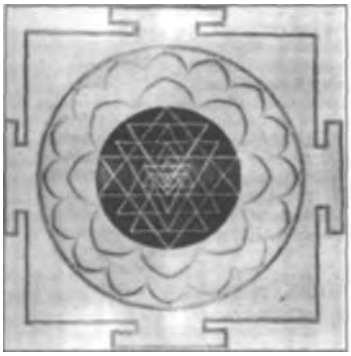

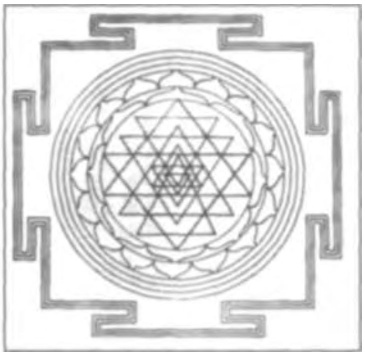

Two more versions of the *Sri Yantra.* Left: A Sri Yantra found inside the cover of a rock album. Right: Sri Yantra from the book, *The Tantric Way,* showing the multiple-triangle design, representing the generative (sex) act. In this design the interior, triangular (male) elements are "buried" within the Lotus blossom (female).

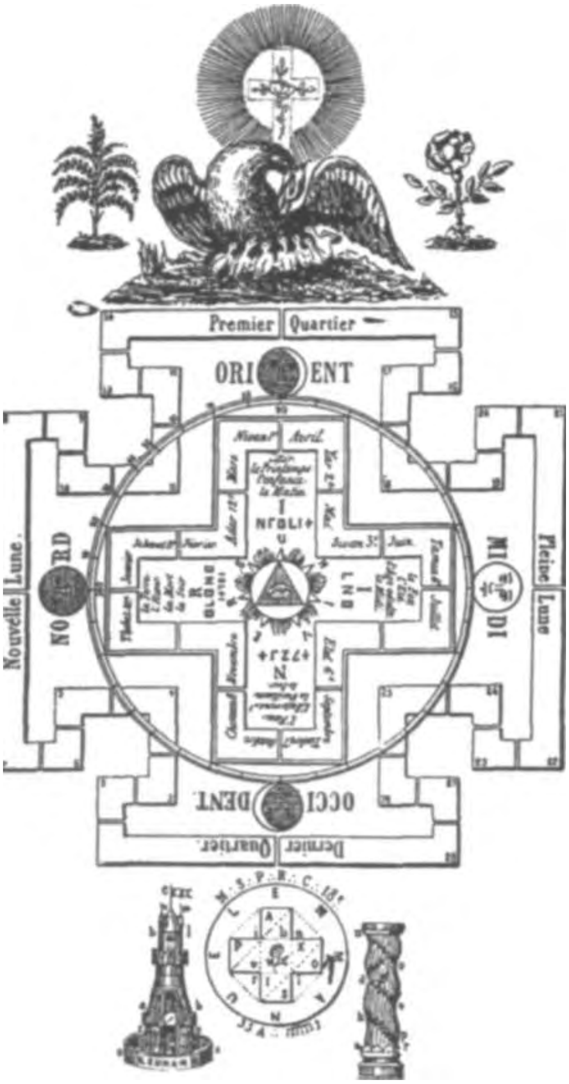

The Sri Yantra pictured as a mystical diagram of Solomon's Temple, as planned in the building scheme of the Knights Templar. The cross and sun rays on top do *not* represent Jesus Christ, but point to the Cosmic Christ, who came in many names in the past and shall come again with a new name. (From the book, *The Sword and The Grail,* by Andrew Sinclair, New York: Crown Publishers, 1992)

A masonic tracing board with an image of a coffin, decorated with the "tools" of the Craft. The V or square at the bottom of the coffin is pointed downward to hell and the Lord of the Underworld. The skull and bones, or death's head, is thought to guard the doorway to the Mysteries of initiation. There are three number fives arranged in a triangle pattern, thus 555, the triple nickel, symbolizing death and resurrection. Not coincidentally, the Washington Monument, in our nation's capital, is exactly SSS feet high. It was designed by Masonic overlords and architecturally is an obelisk, worshipped in Egypt as Osiris' penis (Baal's shaft).

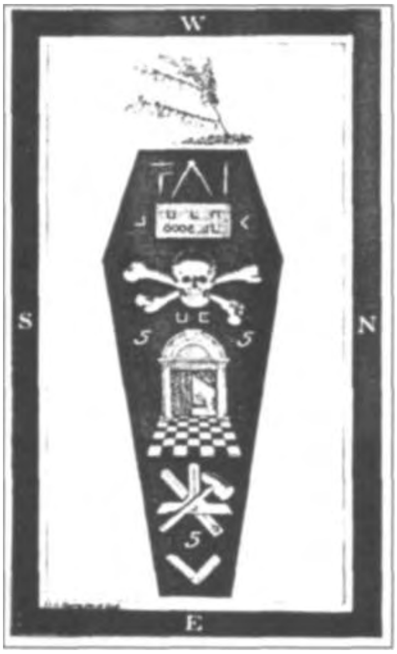

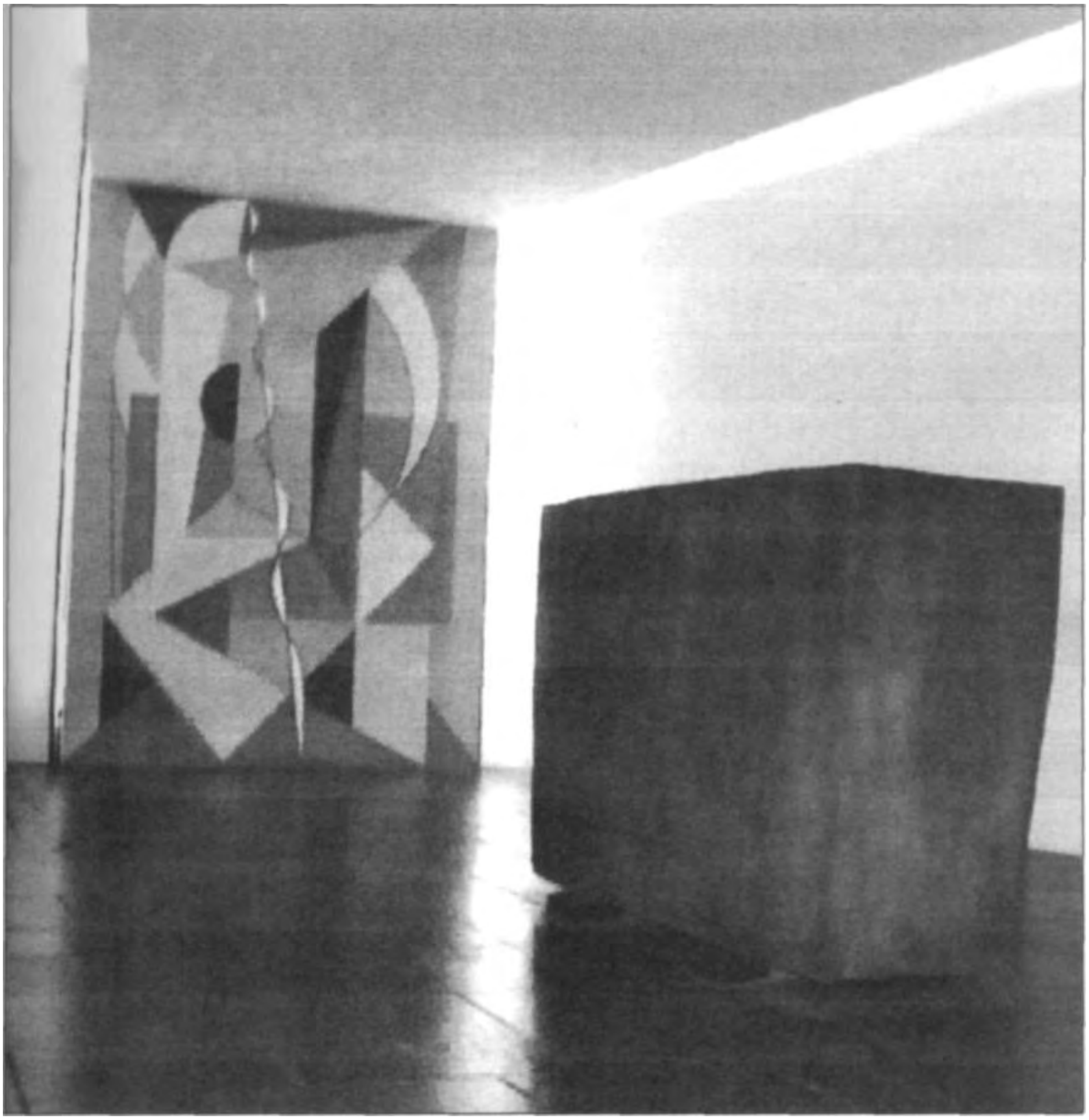

The occult spiritual nature of the mission of the United Nations (UN) is seen in the UN's Meditation Room, inside the UN headquarters in New York City. The austere Meditation Room has a rough, black granite ashlar altar (masonic origins) and a mural with various occult symbols, including the serpent, triangle, crescent moon, and square. The Room itself is designed as a pyramid without a capstone lying down on its side. The UN even has a chaplain of sorts; Sri Chinmoy, a Hindu guru who leads chants and meditations inside the Meditation Room. Evidently, the Illuminati were not keen on separating church and state when they founded their world body, the United Nations.

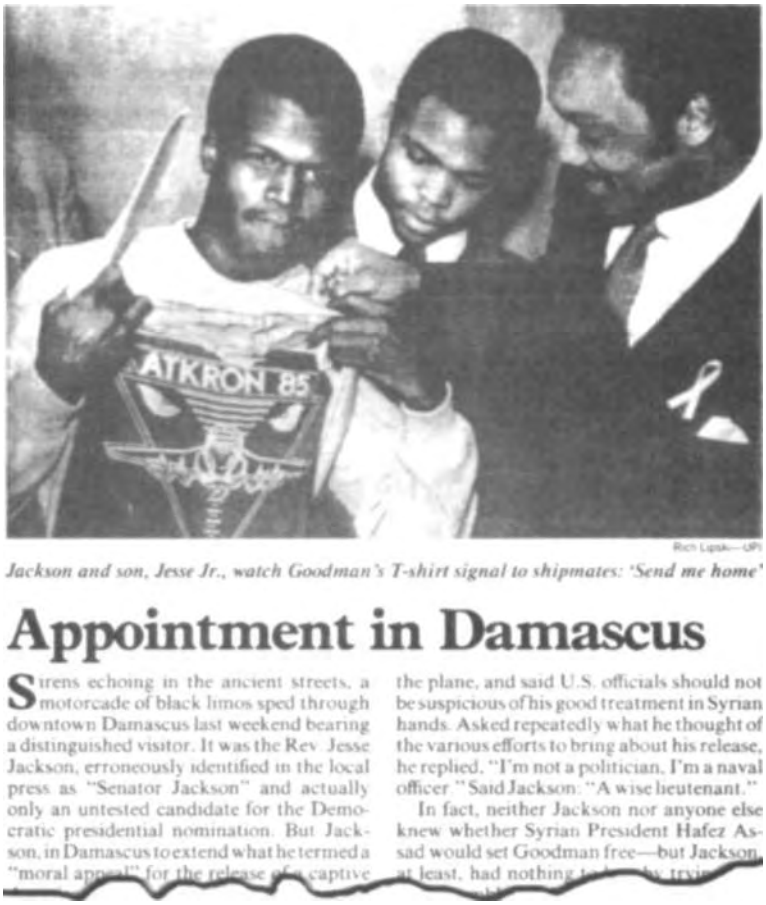

Rich Lipski—UPI

Jackson and son, Jesse Jr., watch Goodman's T-shirt signal to shipmates: 'Send me home'

Appointment in Damascus

Sirens echoing in the ancient streets, a motorcade of black limos sped through downtown Damascus last weekend bearing a distinguished visitor. It was the Rev. Jesse Jackson, erroneously identified in the local press as "Senator Jackson" and actually only an untested candidate for the Democratic presidential nomination. But Jackson, in Damascus to extend what he termed a "moral appeal" for the release of a captive

the plane, and said U.S. officials should not be suspicious of his good treatment in Syrian hands. Asked repeatedly what he thought of the various efforts to bring about his release, he replied, "I'm not a politician, I'm a naval officer." Said Jackson: "A wise lieutenant."

In fact, neither Jackson nor anyone else knew whether Syrian President Hafez Assad would set Goodman free—but Jackson, at least, had nothing

When captured American aviator, Navy Lt. Robert O. Goodman, Jr., 27, was released by Syrian authorities into the hands of self-appointed diplomat Jesse Jackson, the aviator was given this souvenir T-shirt from his hometown of Akron, Ohio. The T-shirt had triangular designs and demonic eyes. Perhaps Syria's President, Hafez Assad, agreed to deal with Jesse Jackson because both he and Jackson are 33rd degree Masons. Later, Jesse Jackson traveled to Communist Cuba, where side-by-side with another Lodge brother, dictator Fidel Castro, the black religious and civil rights leader hollered out to the Cuban crowd, *"Viva Fidel. Long Live Fidel Castro!"* (Photo and article from *Newsweek,* January 9, 1984)

An Oregon state occult newspaper, *Excalibur*, ran an ad using this triangle symbol with the all-seeing eye within. The ad advertised the services of a "psychic healer" who claimed to do "Omega Energy Work."

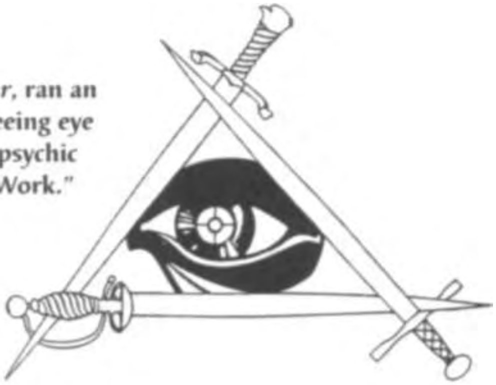

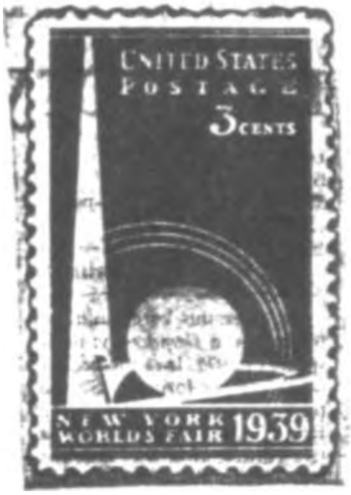

Cancelled postage stamp commemorating the 1939 New York World's Fair. The year '39 was chosen for its masonic numerological significance. A classic movie, *The Thirty-Nine Steps*, also embodied this body of hidden masonic numerological teachings.

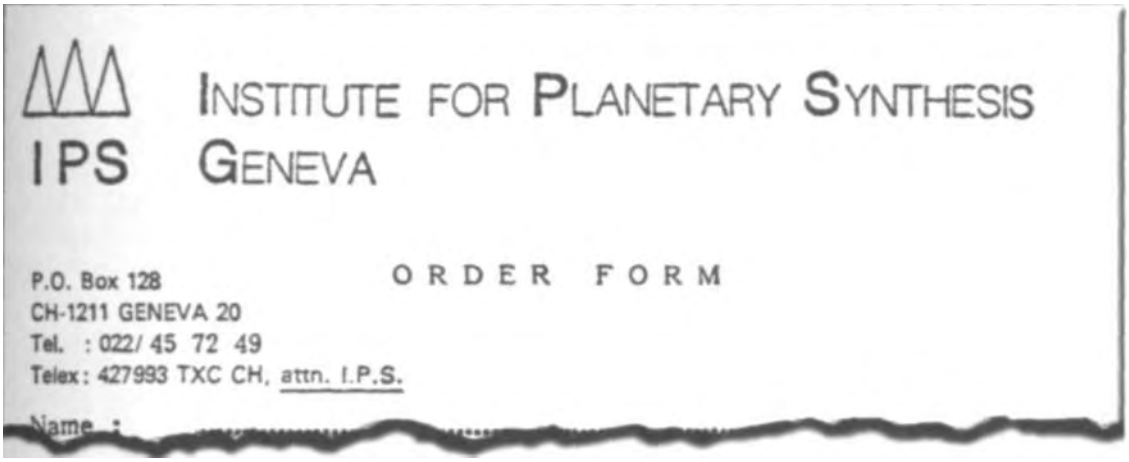

IPS INSTITUTE FOR PLANETARY SYNTHESIS
GENEVA

ORDER FORM

P.O. Box 128
CH-1211 GENEVA 20
Tel. : 022/ 45 72 49
Telex: 427993 TXC CH, attn. I.P.S.

Name :

The New Age occult organization, *Institute For Planetary Synthesis*, employs the triple triangle for its logo, as this "Order Form" for its teaching products indicates.

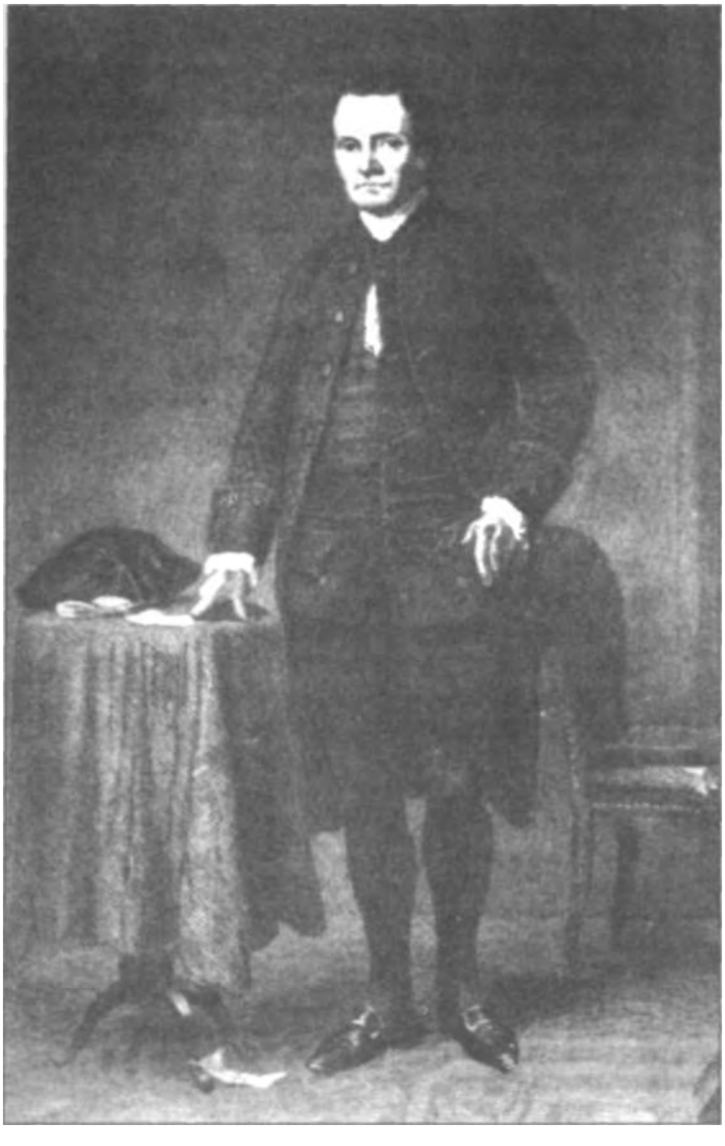

Judge Roger Sherman, one of the signers of the American Declaration of Independence, giving the triangle sign with his right hand. (Painting: from book *The Miracle On Main Street*, by F. Tupper Saussy)

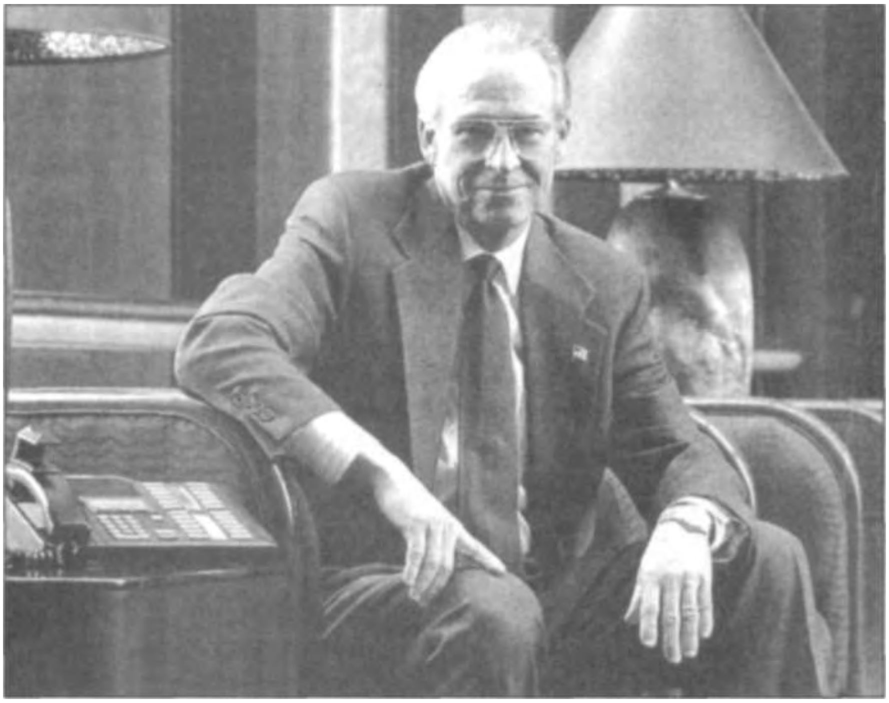

Duane Ackerman, CEO of BellSouth Corporation, holding his hand in what subtly appears to be the masonic triangle. *(USA Today,* March 15, 2004, p. B4)

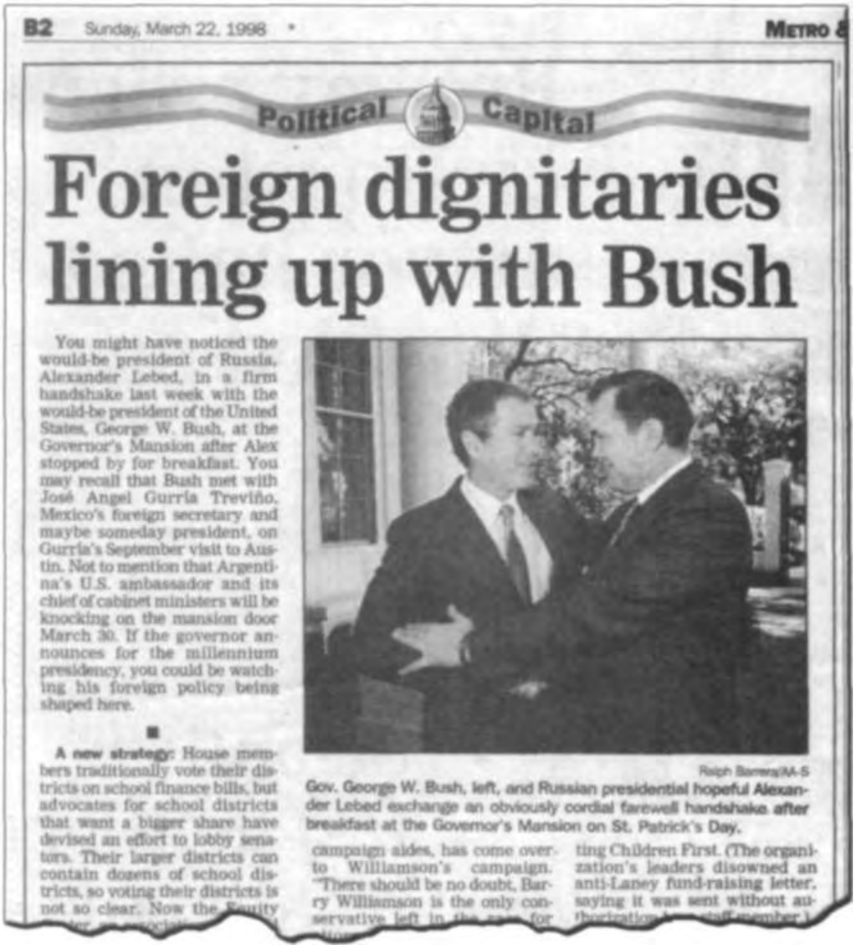

B2 Sunday, March 22, 1998 • METRO

Political Capital

Foreign dignitaries lining up with Bush

You might have noticed the would-be president of Russia, Alexander Lebed, in a firm handshake last week with the would-be president of the United States, George W. Bush, at the Governor's Mansion after Alex stopped by for breakfast. You may recall that Bush met with José Angel Gurría Treviño, Mexico's foreign secretary and maybe someday president, on Gurría's September visit to Austin. Not to mention that Argentina's U.S. ambassador and its chief of cabinet ministers will be knocking on the mansion door March 30. If the governor announces for the millennium presidency, you could be watching his foreign policy being shaped here.

■

A new strategy: House members traditionally vote their districts on school finance bills, but advocates for school districts that want a bigger share have devised an effort to lobby senators. Their larger districts can contain dozens of school districts, so voting their districts is not so clear. Now the

Ralph Barrera/AA-S

Gov. George W. Bush, left, and Russian presidential hopeful Alexander Lebed exchange an obviously cordial farewell handshake after breakfast at the Governor's Mansion on St. Patrick's Day.

campaign aides, has come over to Williamson's campaign. "There should be no doubt, Barry Williamson is the only conservative left in

ting Children First. (The organization's leaders disowned an anti-Laney fund-raising letter, saying it was sent without au-

Texas Governor George W. Bush in 1998 with Russian presidential candidate, General Alexander Lebed exchange a concealed handshake as Lebed displays the enigmatic double triangle sign of the Lodge which is similar to the Real Grip of a Master Mason *(Duncan's Masonic Ritual and Monitor, 3rd Ed.,* p. 120). General Lebed, the most popular political figure in Russia at the time, never succeeded in his ambitious quest to win the Russian presidency. His airplane crashed in mysterious circumstances in Russia, and he was killed. (Photo: from *Austin American-Statesman,* March *22,* 1998)

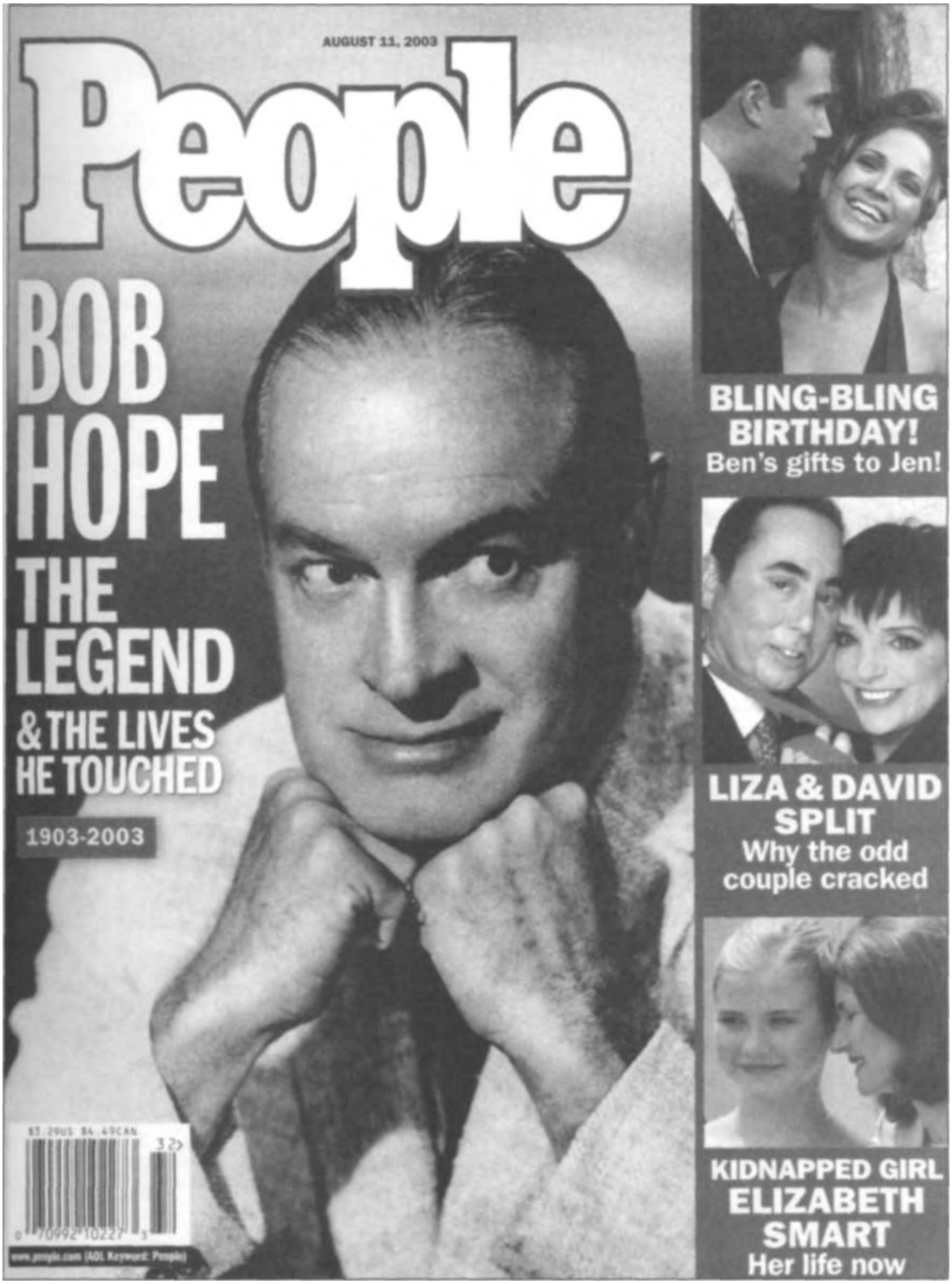
AUGUST 11, 2003
People
BOB HOPE
THE LEGEND
& THE LIVES HE TOUCHED
1903-2003
BLING-BLING BIRTHDAY!
Ben's gifts to Jen!
LIZA & DAVID SPLIT
Why the odd couple cracked
KIDNAPPED GIRL
ELIZABETH SMART
Her life now
www.people.com (AOL Keyword: People)

Comedian Bob Hope, knighted by the Sovereign Military Order of Malta, shows the Masonic square, known also as the triangle, V, downward delta sign.

New York's Governor Mario Cuomo (left), a Democrat, is politically endorsed by Rudy Giuliani, the Republican Mayor of New York City. The Illuminati elite know no political party boundaries and their servants only pretend to be conservative or liberal. In the case of Giuliani, it may also be significant that he is reportedly a gay bisexual. According to the *New York Times*, Mayor Giuliani once performed as "Rudia," transvestite nightclub performer. Giuliani also lived with a gay couple for a time, and dressed as a woman transvestite in a Gay Pride Parade. Meanwhile, billionaire industrialist J. Peter Grace, head of W.R. Grace Chemicals, once denigrated Governor Cuomo by referring to him as "Cuomo the Homo." Even though Grace later apologized, his off-the-cuff comment seems to have caused knowing snickers among those in-the-know.

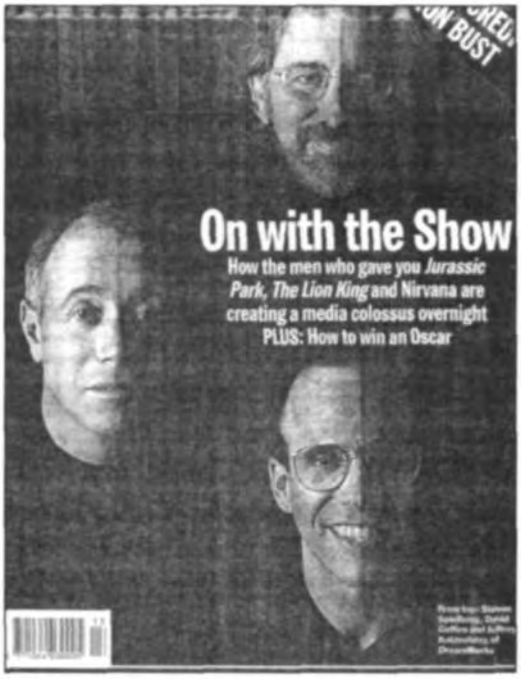
On with the Show
How the men who gave you *Jurassic Park, The Lion King* and Nirvana are creating a media colossus overnight
PLUS: How to win an Oscar

In this photo—a cover of *Time* magazine—Jewish big-shots Steven Spielberg, David Geffen, and Jeffrey Katzenberg of Dreamworks are arranged in a triangle pattern. Probably, the three are into Jewish Cabalism (magic and sorcery).

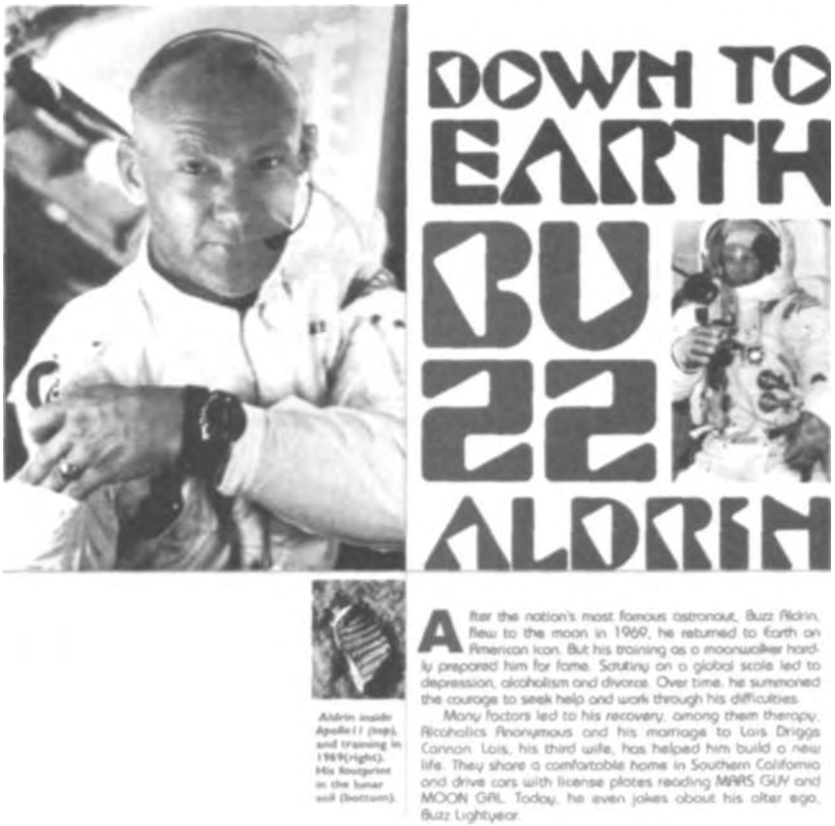

DOWN TO EARTH BUZZ ALDRIN

Aldrin inside Apollo 11 (top), and training in 1969 (right). His footprint in the lunar soil (bottom).

After the nation's most famous astronaut, Buzz Aldrin, flew to the moon in 1969, he returned to Earth an American icon. But his training as a moonwalker hardly prepared him for fame. Scrutiny on a global scale led to depression, alcoholism and divorce. Over time, he summoned the courage to seek help and work through his difficulties.

Many factors led to his recovery, among them therapy, Alcoholics Anonymous and his marriage to Lois Driggs Cannon. Lois, his third wife, has helped him build a new life. They share a comfortable home in Southern California and drive cars with license plates reading MARS GUY and MOON GRL. Today, he even jokes about his alter ego, Buzz Lightyear.

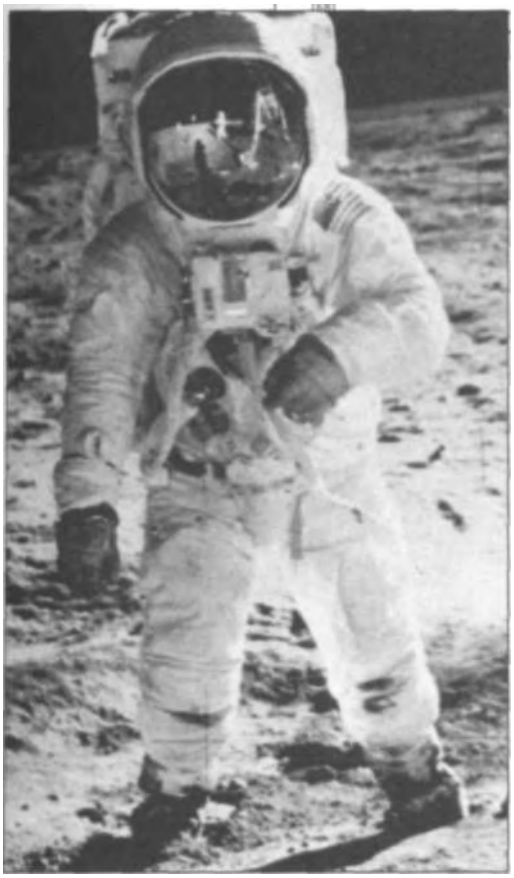

Above: In its May/June 2001 issue, *Psychology Today* carried this feature article and interview with Astronaut Buzz Aldrin. Aldrin and fellow astronaut, Neil Armstrong, were the first to walk on the Moon, in 1969. Aldrin, a Freemason, was said to have conducted a bizarre Masonic ritual on the moon. In the article in *Psychology Today*, triangles are everywhere, including being imbedded in the type of the heading. Also, see the picture of Aldrin—exactly *three* fingers of his *left* hand are reaching into his pocket, with the arm displaying a *triangle* pattern. According to the book *Axis of Death*, by D.C. Yermak, this is similar to a secret Rosicrucian sign indicating the initate has removed himself from God's control and given his life over to the devil. Aldrin is confirmed to be a Mason, but his Rosicrucian involvement is unknown.

Astronaut Buzz Aldrin, supposedly walking on the moon in 1969. Many believe the Apollo 11 mission was a hoax, filmed right here on earth. In this classic, staged photo, notice Aldrin's left arm in its triangle position. Did the taxpayers pay billions just so Aldrin and his masonic brothers could claim the moon for the Illuminati in a staged esoteric ritual?

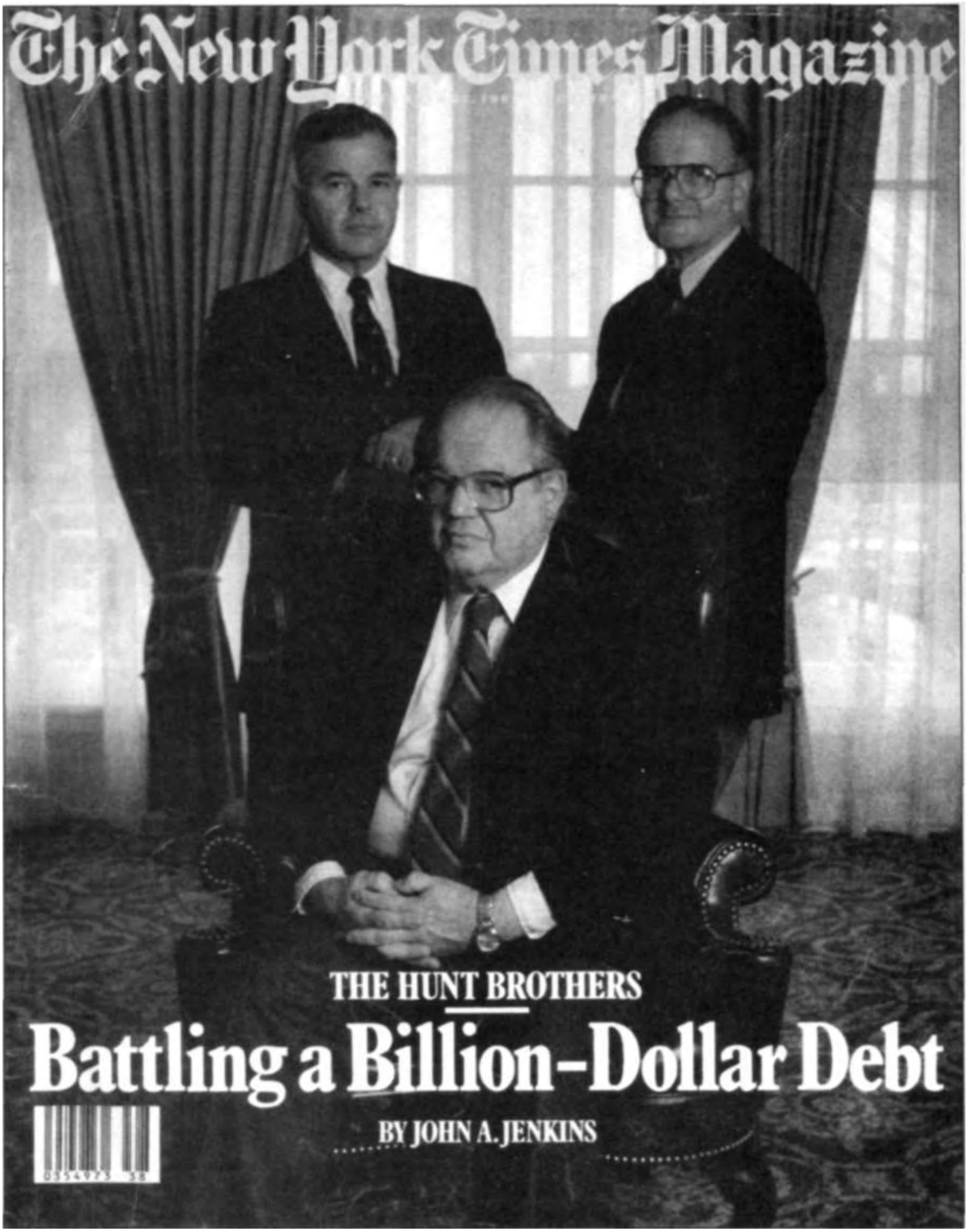
The New York Times Magazine
THE HUNT BROTHERS
Battling a Billion-Dollar Debt
BY JOHN A. JENKINS

The three super-rich Hunt brothers in a downward triangle arrangement on the cover of *The New York Times* magazine, September 18, 1997.

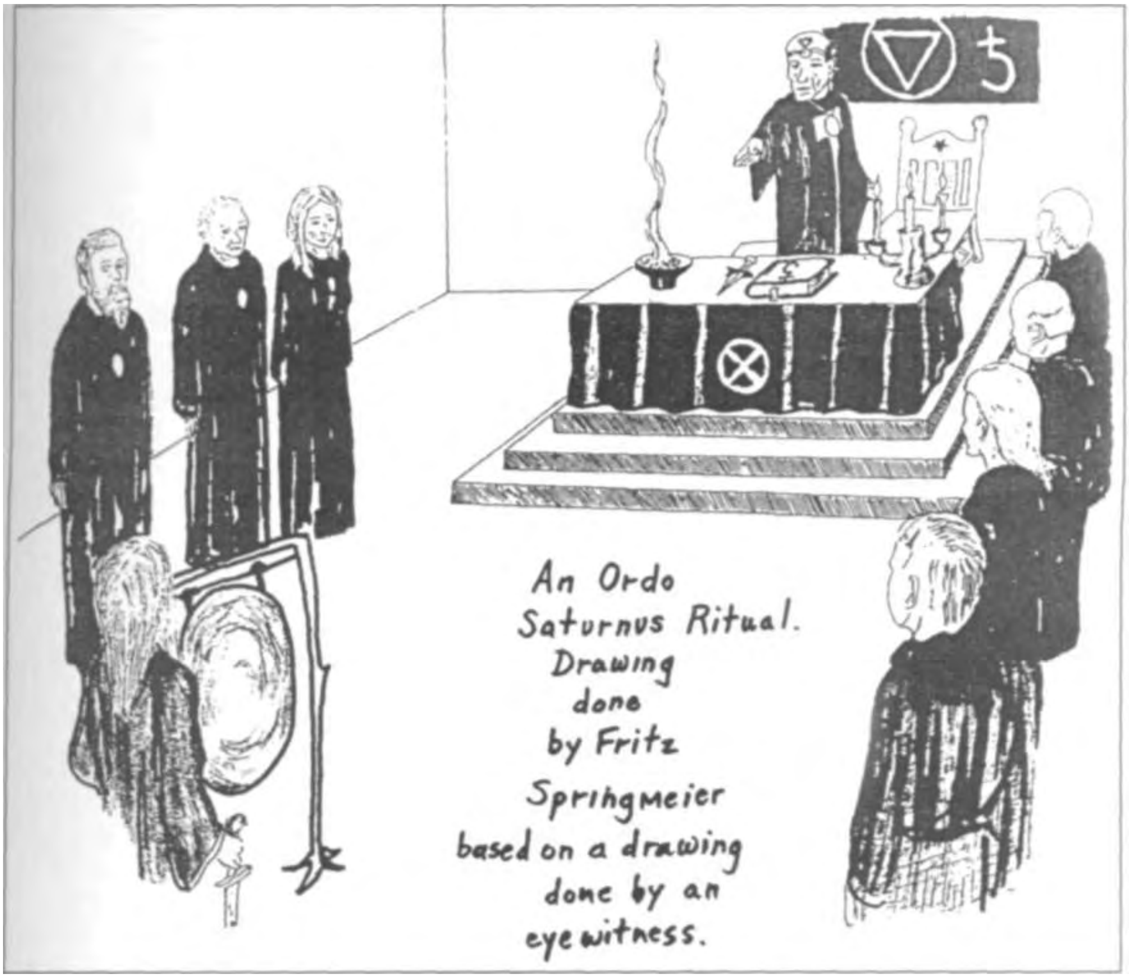

Fritz Springmeier, author of the bestselling *Bloodlines of the Illuminati* (available by phone order, toll free 1-800-234-9673), made this drawing based on an actual ritual conducted by a Satanic sect known as *Ordo Saturnus* (Order of Saturn). The planet Saturn is the *sixth* planet from the sun in our solar system. Saturn was worshipped in ancient civilizations as a form of Satan, or Lucifer. The triangle within a circle (symbol also of today's Alcoholics Anonymous) group is on the wall while the satanic "X" within the circle is on the front of the altar cloth.

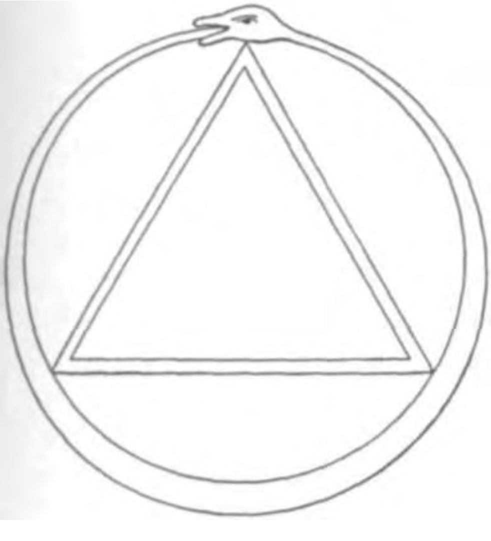

Rosicrucians also commend the triangle within the circle, the very logo of Alcoholics Anonymous. From a page right out of a Rosicrucian manual, the figure at left is the "Symbol of Creation," Nehushstan the serpent, also called Oroboros, the serpent swallowing its own tail. This symbolizes perpetual movement (Hegelian dialectic) and the occult conception of the "Circle of Life," the slogan that Disney's movie, The *Lion King,* made famous. The book of *Revelation* in the Holy Bible calls Satan "that old serpent" and for good reason! The triangle inside the serpentine circle represents the unholy trinity, which the occult teaches is the spiritual element soon to manifest, already operating at the very center of the material universe.

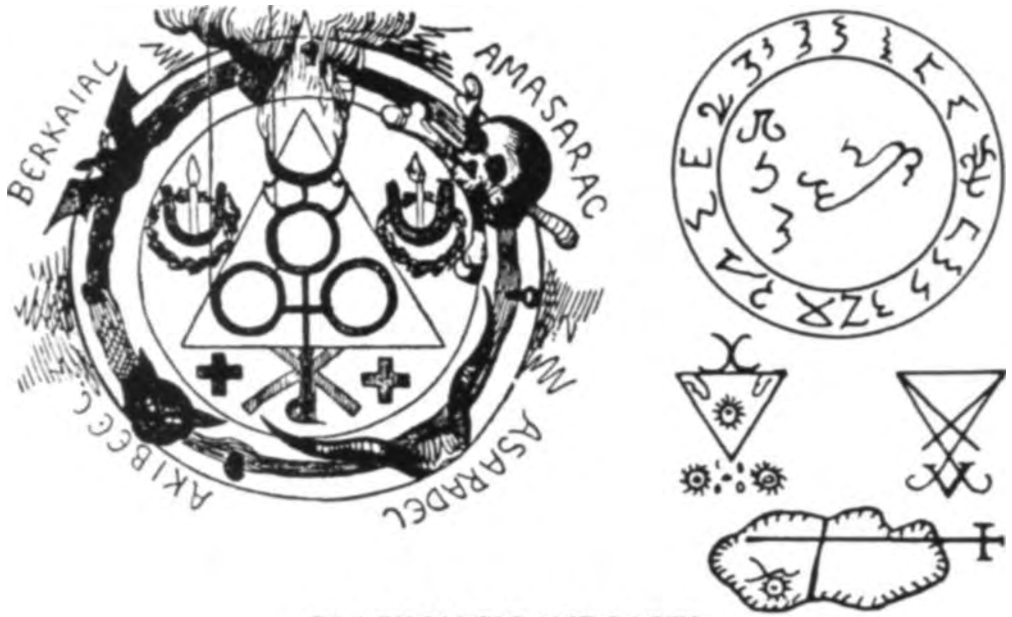

BLACK MAGIC AND PACTS

Symbols play a vital role in infernal conjuration. LEFT: *the Goetic Circle of Pacts, drawn by Eliphas Levi in the nintheenth century, is supposed to be used when the sorcerer is to make a pact with the Descending Hierarchy. The three circles in the center are the standing positions of the sorcerer and his apprentices. The skull must be from a parricide, the horns from a goat, the bat must have been drowned in blood, and the black cat, whose head is placed opposite the skull, must have been fed on human flesh.* RIGHT: *The seal and characters of Lucifer, from the* Grimorium Verum, *sixtheenth-century book of demonic magic. The characters are supposed to be written on parchment with the blood of the sorcerer, and worn by him at all times during the conjuration.*

(From the book, *Satan* ***Wants You,*** **by Arthur Lyons, The Mysterious Press, New York, 10019)**

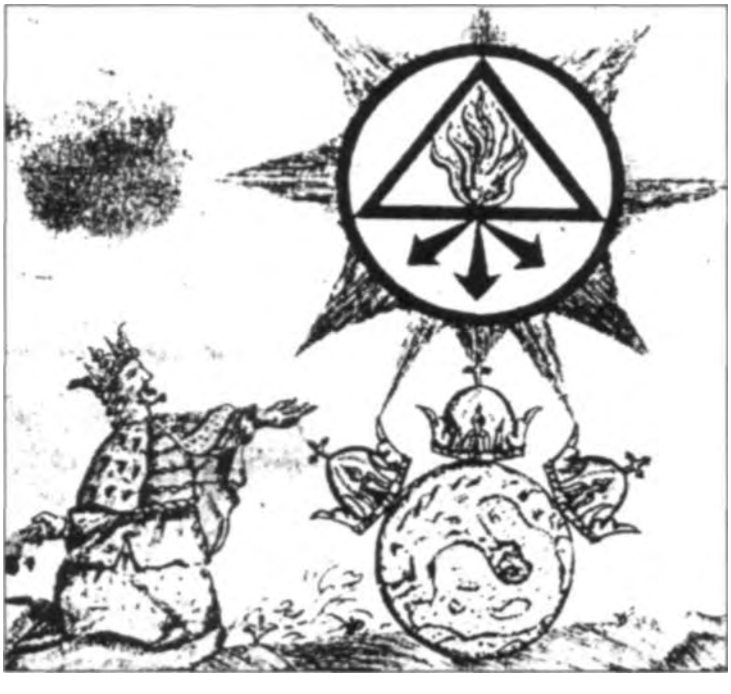

In this 17th century alchemical drawing, the Antichrist King and his unholy trinity (three crowns over Earth) worship the transforming fire from their sun deity, symbolized by the triangle within a circle.

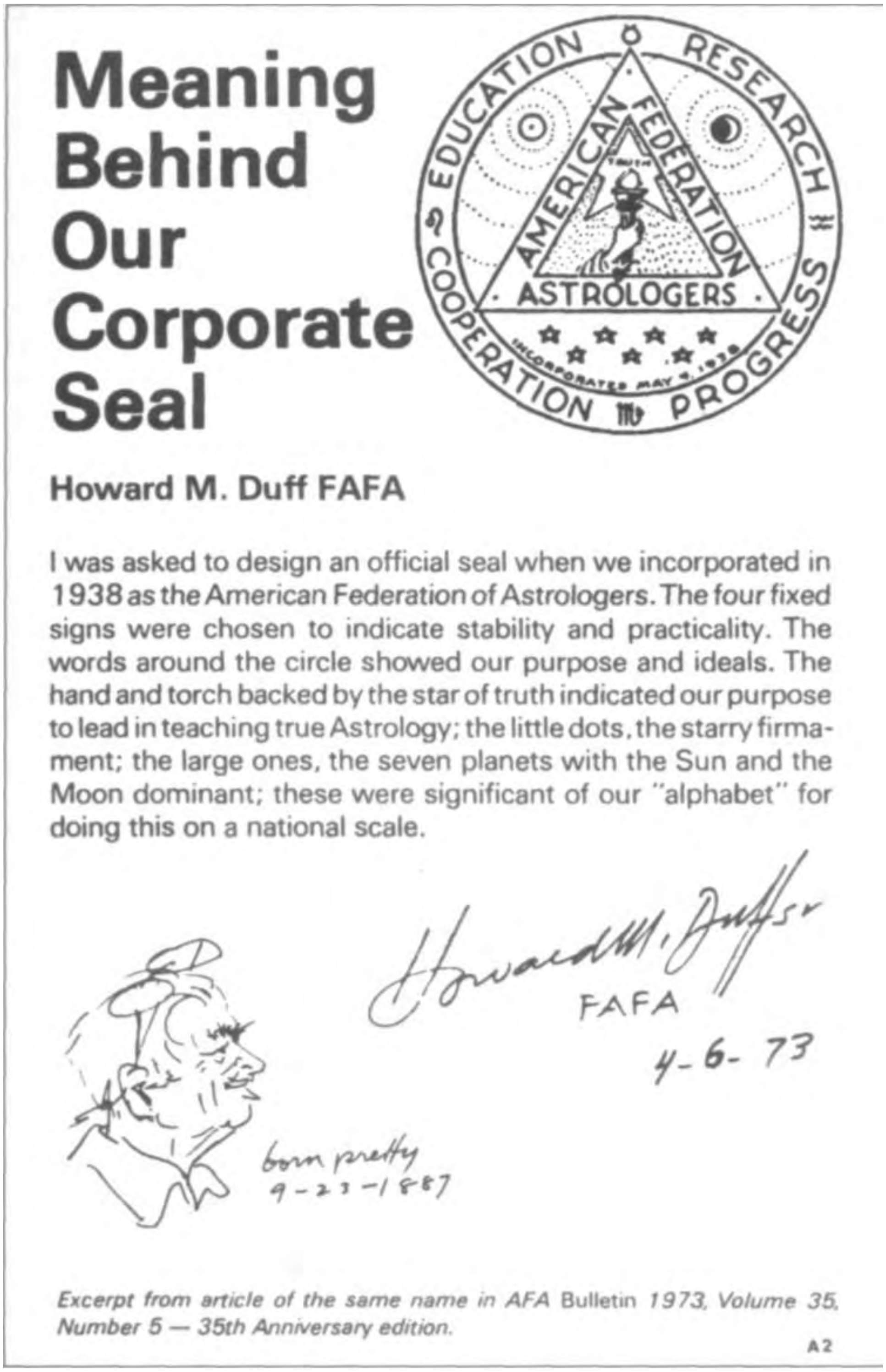
EDUCATION
RESEARCH
COOPERATION
PROGRESS
AMERICAN FEDERATION
ASTROLOGERS
TRUTH
INCORPORATED MAY 4, 1938

Meaning Behind Our Corporate Seal

Howard M. Duff FAFA

I was asked to design an official seal when we incorporated in 1938 as the American Federation of Astrologers. The four fixed signs were chosen to indicate stability and practicality. The words around the circle showed our purpose and ideals. The hand and torch backed by the star of truth indicated our purpose to lead in teaching true Astrology; the little dots, the starry firmament; the large ones, the seven planets with the Sun and the Moon dominant; these were significant of our "alphabet" for doing this on a national scale.

Howard M. Duff Sr
FAFA
4-6-73

born pretty
9-23-1887

Excerpt from article of the same name in AFA Bulletin *1973, Volume 35, Number 5 — 35th Anniversary edition.*

A2

In this page right out of the Bulletin of the American Federation of Astrologers (AFA), we find the corporate seal and its explanation. However, the explanation given is weak at best and seems geared to please the majority of astrologers who are active in the organization without giving away any real secrets. Almost any knowledgeable student of the occult can see hidden meanings in these symbols far beyond the official explanation. Symbols that beg for more esoteric (and accurate) explanation include the triangle inside the circle, the pentagram star, the torch and hand, the point within the circle and the stars.

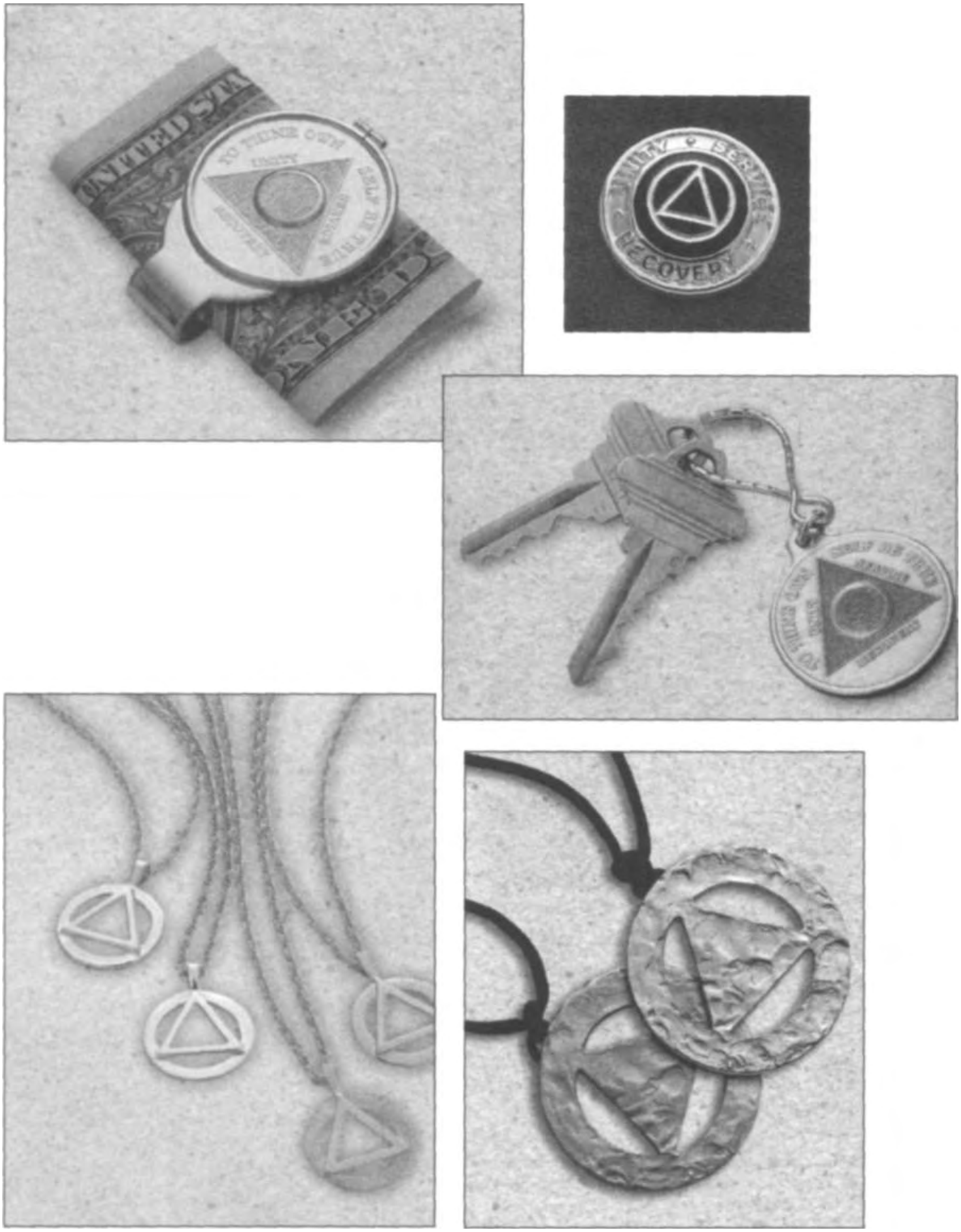

Hazelden, a company specializing in products related to Alcoholics Anonymous, offers such items as tie tacs and lapel pins, money clips, necklaces, and key chains. You can even get the *"God's Eye Pendant."* The Hazelden catalog glowingly tells potential buyers: *"In times of trouble or joy, this precious pendant keeps our Higher Power's eye on our recovery and spiritual growth."* The same catalog ad says, *"This five-thousand-year-old symbol of continual movement and spirituality... has become a popular icon in the recovery community."*

A Rosicrucian symbol described as "The Eternal Madonna," in the encyclopedic work, *New Age Bible Interpretation (Old Testament, Volume III),* editor Corinne Heline

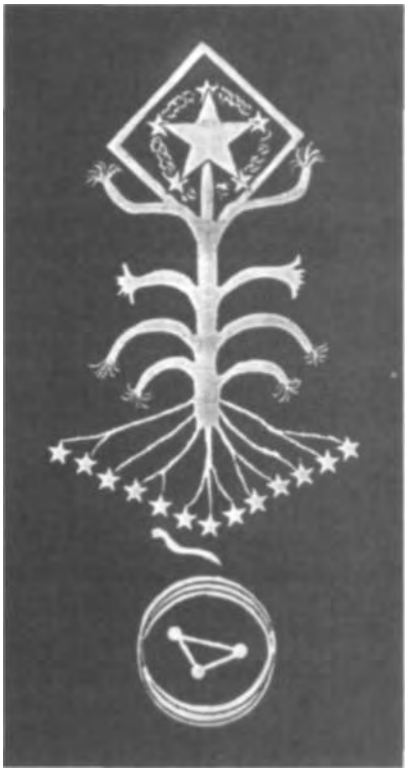

A friend sent the author this photograph she took of one of the student art exhibits on display at a local high school. Many of the exhibits were on occult subjects. The meaning of the triangle within the circle superimposed over the body of the person, lying in a fetal position on a surface of red, most likely symbolizes man's servitude and enslavement to the Solar Deity, whom Masons call the Great Architect of the Universe.

Christian medallion for youth from Hawaii advertised in Christian contemporary music magazine.

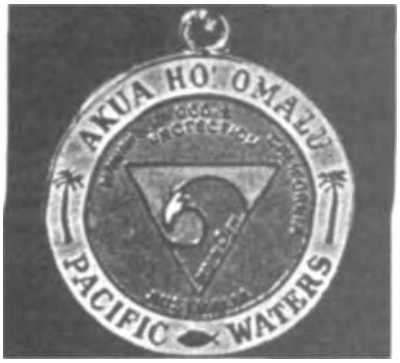

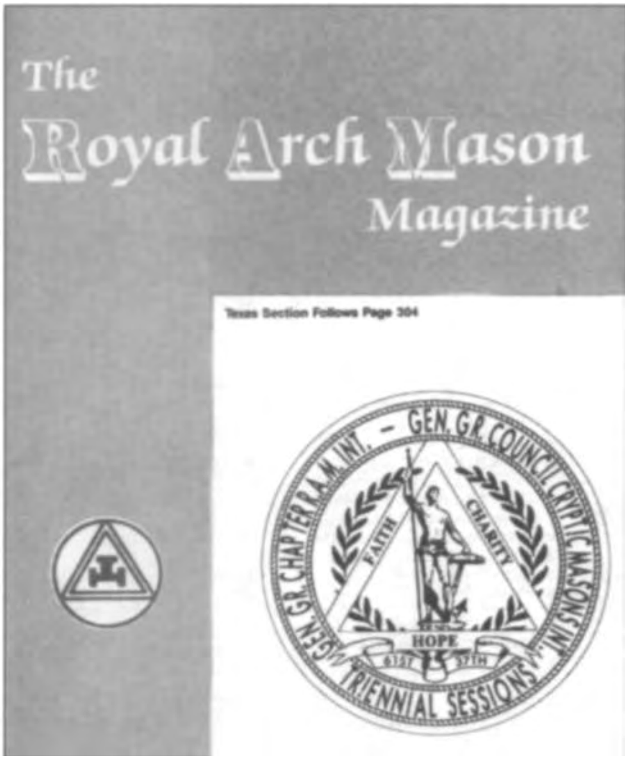
The Royal Arch Mason Magazine
Texas Section Follows Page 304
GEN. GR. CHAPTER R.A.M. INT. – GEN. GR. COUNCIL CRYPTIC MASONS INT.
FAITH
CHARITY
HOPE
61ST
37TH
TRIENNIAL SESSIONS

This issue of *The Royal Arch Mason* magazine (Summer 1990) featured the seal of the General Grand Council of Cryptic Masons International, which is designed in the form of a triangle within a circle.

This cover of *The Royal Arch Mason* magazine pays tribute to their "Most Worshipful Brother Harry S. Truman." (Truman, a *33rd* degree Mason, once told his brothers in the craft that he would rather be a Master Mason than be President of the United States of America.) The symbol of the Royal Arch Masons is also seen at left: The Triple Tau, a sign of the unholy trinity within a triangle within a circle, a composite symbol said to connote triple power.

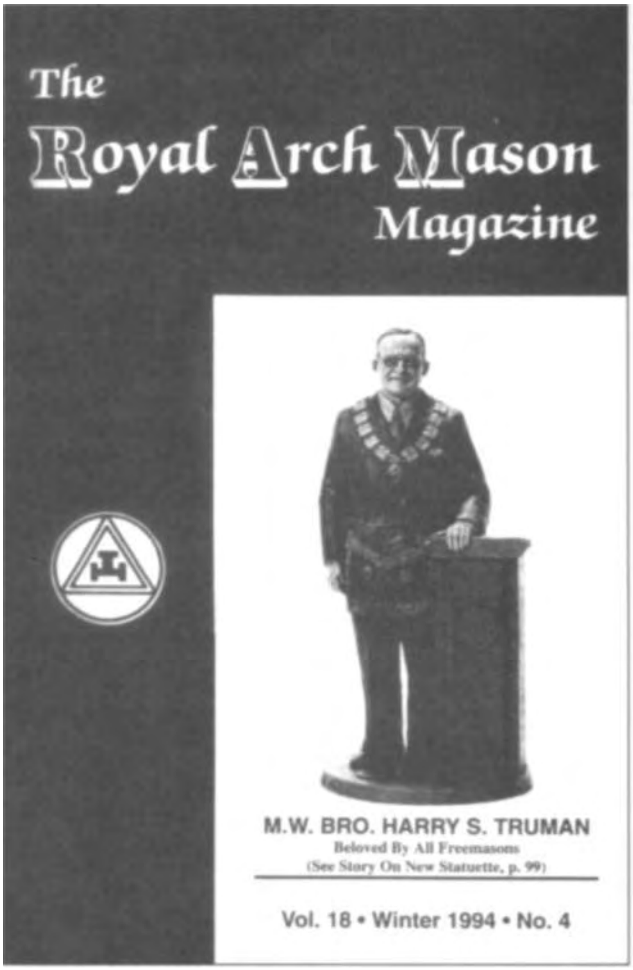
The Royal Arch Mason Magazine
M.W. BRO. HARRY S. TRUMAN
Beloved By All Freemasons
(See Story On New Statuette, p. 99)
Vol. 18 • Winter 1994 • No. 4

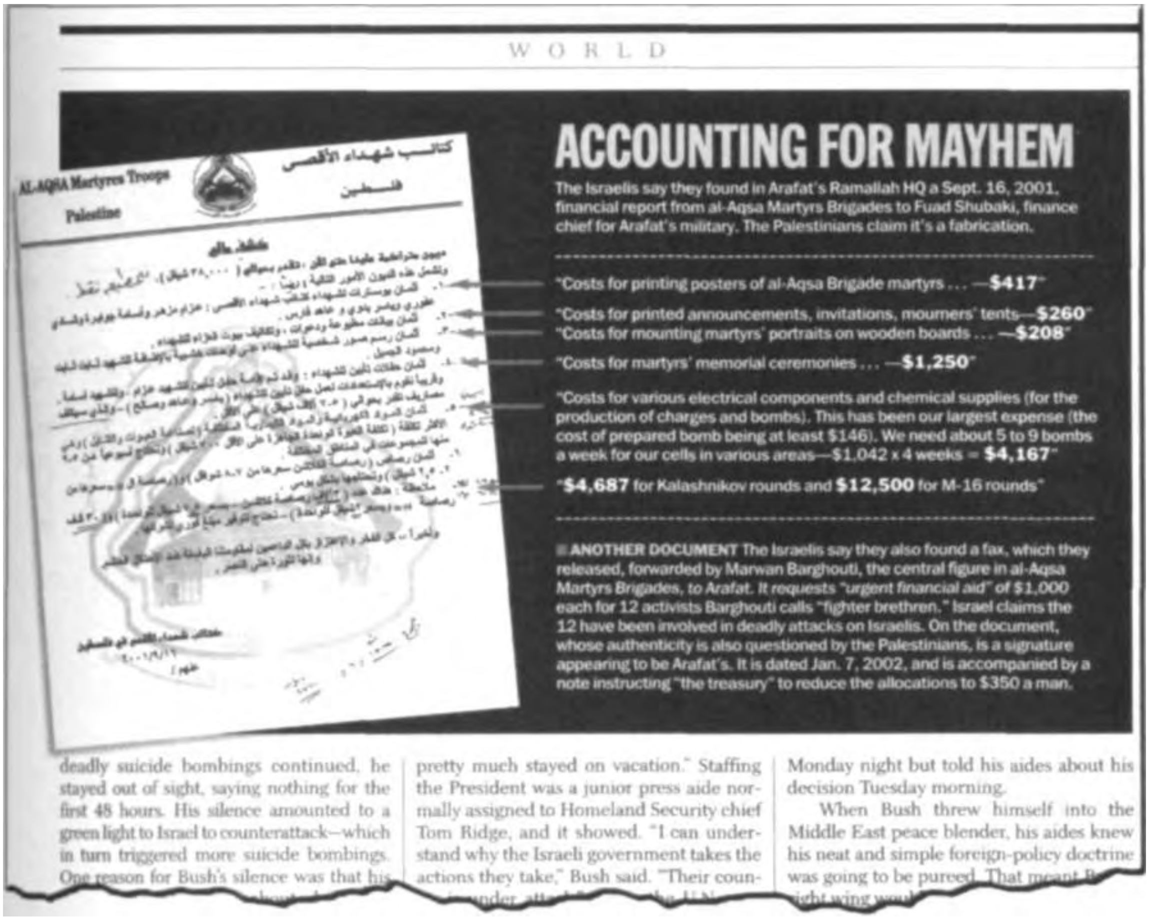

WORLD

AL-AQSA Martyres Troops

Palestine

ACCOUNTING FOR MAYHEM

The Israelis say they found in Arafat's Ramallah HQ a Sept. 16, 2001, financial report from al-Aqsa Martyrs Brigades to Fuad Shubaki, finance chief for Arafat's military. The Palestinians claim it's a fabrication.

"Costs for printing posters of al-Aqsa Brigade martyrs . . . —**$417**"

"Costs for printed announcements, invitations, mourners' tents—**$260**"

"Costs for mounting martyrs' portraits on wooden boards . . . —**$208**"

"Costs for martyrs' memorial ceremonies . . . —**$1,250**"

"Costs for various electrical components and chemical supplies (for the production of charges and bombs). This has been our largest expense (the cost of prepared bomb being at least $146). We need about 5 to 9 bombs a week for our cells in various areas—$1,042 x 4 weeks = **$4,167**"

"**$4,687** for Kalashnikov rounds and **$12,500** for M-16 rounds"

■ **ANOTHER DOCUMENT** The Israelis say they also found a fax, which they released, forwarded by Marwan Barghouti, the central figure in al-Aqsa Martyrs Brigades, *to Arafat. It requests "urgent financial aid"* of $1,000 each for 12 activists Barghouti calls "fighter brethren." Israel claims the 12 have been involved in deadly attacks on Israelis. On the document, whose authenticity is also questioned by the Palestinians, is a signature appearing to be Arafat's. It is dated Jan. 7, 2002, and is accompanied by a note instructing "the treasury" to reduce the allocations to $350 a man.

deadly suicide bombings continued, he stayed out of sight, saying nothing for the first 48 hours. His silence amounted to a green light to Israel to counterattack—which in turn triggered more suicide bombings. One reason for Bush's silence was that his

pretty much stayed on vacation." Staffing the President was a junior press aide normally assigned to Homeland Security chief Tom Ridge, and it showed. "I can understand why the Israeli government takes the actions they take," Bush said. "Their coun-

Monday night but told his aides about his decision Tuesday morning.

When Bush threw himself into the Middle East peace blender, his aides knew his neat and simple foreign-policy doctrine was going to be pureed. That meant

As reported in *Time* (April 15, 2002), this is a financial report sent to Yasser Arafat's Palestine headquarters bearing the insignia of the rebel group, the Al-Aqsa Martyr's Brigade. If authentic, the logo, or seal, for the group roughly resembles a triangle within a circle.

NINETEEN

Part Devil, Part Angel

Ye cannot drink the cup of the Lord, and the cup of devils: ye cannot be partakers of the Lord's table, and of the table of devils.

—I Corinthians 10:21

Always front and center.. .stood Lyndon Johnson, almost handsome then, in his 40s, leaner than history remembers, narrow-eyed, his hair sleek...alert in a vaguely dangerous way - an impresario, a genius of nuances, a wolf in his prime.

— Lance Morrow
"Part Devil, Part Angel"
Newsweek magazine

Illuminists can sometimes be engaging, likeable people. The kind of person you wouldn't mind going to dinner with or hosting at a barbecue. That is, unless you knew that beneath that happy, party-like veneer and surface there was a deep interior of consummate evil.

Take Will Rogers, for example, the loveable Oklahoman storyteller. He was admired by the nation for his rangy, down to earth humor and wit. Who would know that, along with his fellow Masons, Rogers bowed before satanic altars and drank wine from human skulls!

There's astronaut Buzz Aldrin who, it is claimed by NASA, once went to the moon. How many knew that Aldrin carried with him to outer space a Scottish Rite flag emblazoned with the diabolical image of the double-headed eagle?

And we have the late Pamela Harriman, so popular and likeable her biography was entitled *"Life of the Party."* Harriman's husband was Averell Harriman, Patriarch of the Order of Skull and Bones. What tales Ms. Harriman could have told us! After all, she was mistress to a Rothschild and also once used a young, up and coming, Georgetown University student as her sexual boy toy. His name: William Jefferson Clinton.

President Lyndon B. Johnson certainly fits into that category—if there is such a category—of "Part Devil, Part Angel." A Master Mason raised to the third degree in a Lodge in central Texas, Johnson was the primary mover for the black civil rights movement. His aggressive endorsement of various civil rights bills helped create a more equal society. But, why do his biographers call LBJ "cunning" and a "wolf?"

Several books have been published maintaining that then Vice President Lyndon B. Johnson was one of the plotters and conspirators behind the 1963 assassination of President John F. Kennedy. Few people believe it. Most have been snookered into believing the absurd theory that Lee Harvey Oswald acted alone. But in 2003 a book by a former Texas lawyer, Barr McClellan, again broached the subject of LBJ's culpability.[1]

Then, also in 2003, Jeff Rense, in his outstanding internet web site, Rense.com, published two photos of what is being called "The Most Revealing Wink of the Twentieth Century." As a public service, the author of *Codex Magica* is reproducing the same photos here.

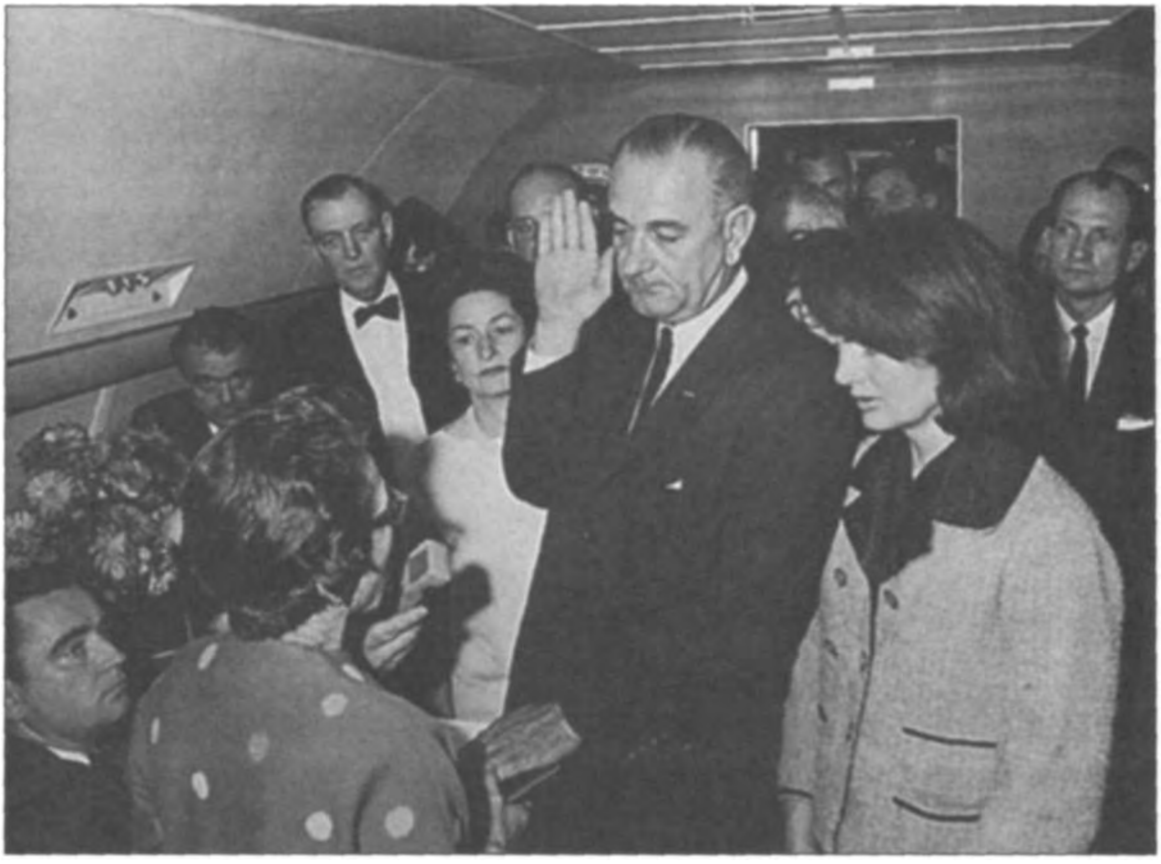

This heart-rending scene aboard Air Force One of Lyndon B. Johnson being sworn in as President of the United States following the assassination of John F. Kennedy, was published everywhere, in newspapers, magazines, and books. Look closely at the somber looks on the faces of the persons in the photograph.

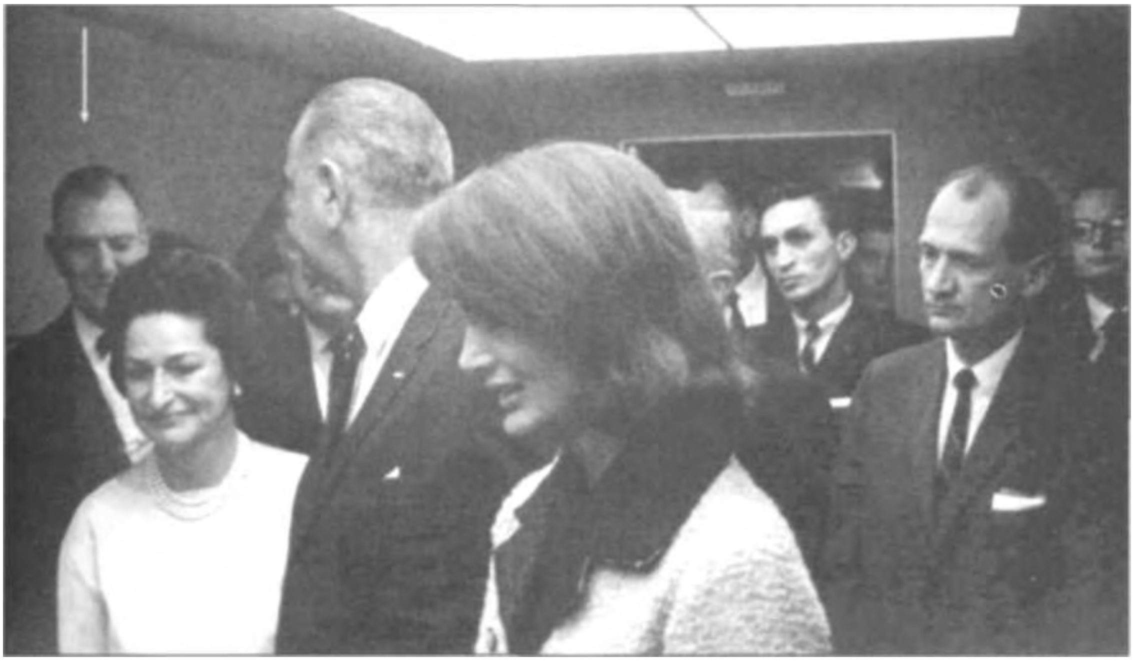

Here's the photo that was left unpublished and was kept hidden from public view until now. Congressman Albert Thomas winks back at a quickly-smiling LBJ as he is being sworn in to be the next President of the United States on Air Force One. The grief-stricken Jackie Kennedy stands next to him. Meanwhile, a sly smile also creases the face of Ladybird Johnson, LBJ's wife.

LBJ—was he "part devil, part angel?" I don't think so. He was 100% something, and I'll let you decide just what. Johnson and the others are shown in the following pages giving what appears to be the Illuminist hand sign of the arm in triangular position with hand to side of body. The photos here give evidence that this gesture is not accidental as one might suppose. Several illustrations from authoritative Masonic reference books provide further documentation that the sign is intentional and communicates a message.

crets of this degree.

The candidate is then instructed in the signs, words and token in this degree, as follows:

Signs—Place the point of a poinard under your chin, and draw it downward to the waist, as if in the act of ripping open the body, speaking the word ZERBUL. The brother will answer by giving the Entered Apprentice's sign as on page 7, and saying ELIHAM. Another way is to clench the fingers of the right hand, extend the thumb, place it on the abdomen, and move it upwards to the chin, as if ripping open the body with a knife. The brother answers as before.

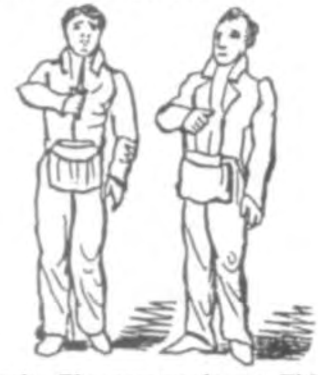

Words—The pass-words are Eliham and Zerbal. Sacred words, Zerbal, Beniah, Benhakar, Bendaka, &c.

Candidate is now clothed as a companion of this degree, and salutes the Senior Warden as a Master Elect of Fifteen.

If there is no other business before the Chapter, it is then closed in same manner as in the preceding degree, except that the Master and other officers rap three times five, and the companions clap three times five with their hands

curtains, and is lighted by twelve candles on four triangular branches.

The officers consist of Thrice Potent Master, representing King Solomon, sitting in the east: Grand Inspector in the west, and Master of Ceremonies.

The brethren wear white aprons, each with an inflamed heart embroidered or painted upon it, and lined and bordered with black. The ribbon, or Order, is similar to that in the preceding degree, except that in place of three heads, three hearts appear upon it. The jewel is the same.

In opening the Chapter, Thrice Potent Master raps ten, and Grand Inspector rises. Master makes the usual inquiries as to whether the Chapter is duly guarded, and the duties of the several officers, as in former degrees, which are answered by the Inspector.

Master raps eleven, and inquires of Grand Inspector—What is the hour?

Grand Inspector—It is twelve, Thrice Potent.

Master raps twelve, which is repeated by the officers, and the brethren clap twelve with their hands: Master says—If it is twelve it is time to labor by the greatest of lights. I pronounce this Grand Chapter open.

The brethren now give the signs of the different degrees, and then those of this degree, hereafter described.

If a candidate is to be admitted, he is prepared outside by the Master of Ceremonies, who brings him hoodwinked to the door, and gives twelve raps, which are answered by twelve by the Inspector, who demands, who comes there? &c.

Master of Ceremonies—A Master Elect of Fifteen desires to receive the degree of Sublime Knight.

Candidate gets admittance in the same manner as in the previous degree, and is led to the Grand In

In the Grand Masters Elect Degree of Freemasonry, the candidate pledges he will accept severe penalties if he divulges the secrets. His hand and arm are positioned on the abdomen and then moved upward "as if ripping the body open with a knife." (*Richardson's Monitor of Freemasonry*, p. 146)

ation which, like you, we have received, forms a tie so strong that nothing can break it: woe to him who attempts to disunite us!

The obligation in the degree is then administered. It is similar to those of former degrees, the penalty being to have the hands nailed to the breast, &c.

The candidate is now instructed in the sign, token, and words, &c., viz.: Cross the arms on the stomach, the fingers clenched, and thumbs elevated, and raise the eyes upward. It alludes to the penalty of having the hands nailed, &c.

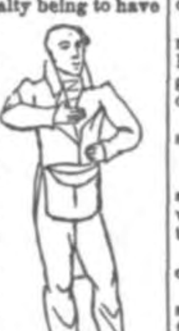

The token is exactly the same as that in Intimate Secretary. The pass-words are Stolkyn, Emerh, Emeth, and Amuriah. The sacred word is Adonia.

This ends the initiation.

The closing ceremonies are similar to those in previous degrees. Master raps ten and inquires about the duties of the officers: he then raps eleven and inquires of the Inspector—What is the hour?

Inspector—Low six.

Master raps twelve, and brethren rise, the signs are given, &c.

Master again raps twelve, the officers twelve, and the brethren all clap twelve with their hands, when the Master declares the Chapter to be duly closed.

the south.

The brethren, or companions, wear stone colored aprons and scarfs; the apron has a star upon it, and in some cases a square and rule: the jewel is a gold medal, with the five orders of architecture, a star, and a case of mathematical instruments delineated on each side.

In the opening, Most Potent Master raps one, and Grand Marshal rises. Master inquires if the Chapter is duly guarded, &c., the same as in the former degrees.

Master raps two, when the Grand Inspector rises.

Master—What is the hour?

Inspector—A star indicates the first instant, the first hour, and the first day in which the Grand Architect commenced the creation of the Universe.

Master raps one and two, when the companions all rise.

Master—Companions, it is the first instant, the first hour, the first day, the first year, when Solomon commenced the Temple; the first day, the first hour, the first instant for opening this Chapter. It is time to commence our labors.

Master raps one and two, the other officers do the same, and the companions clap one and two with their hands, when the Master declares the Chapter duly opened for the dispatch of business.

When a companion is to receive this degree he is prepared outside by the Master of Ceremonies, who conducts him to the door of the Chapter and raps one and two, which is answered by the same from within. He is admitted through the door by the same ceremonies as in the former degrees, and conducted to the east, where

As this illustration from a Masonic manual demonstrates, the candidate for the Sublime Knights Elected Degree makes a sign which includes both the right hand on the heart and the left hand in a triangular pose as shown.

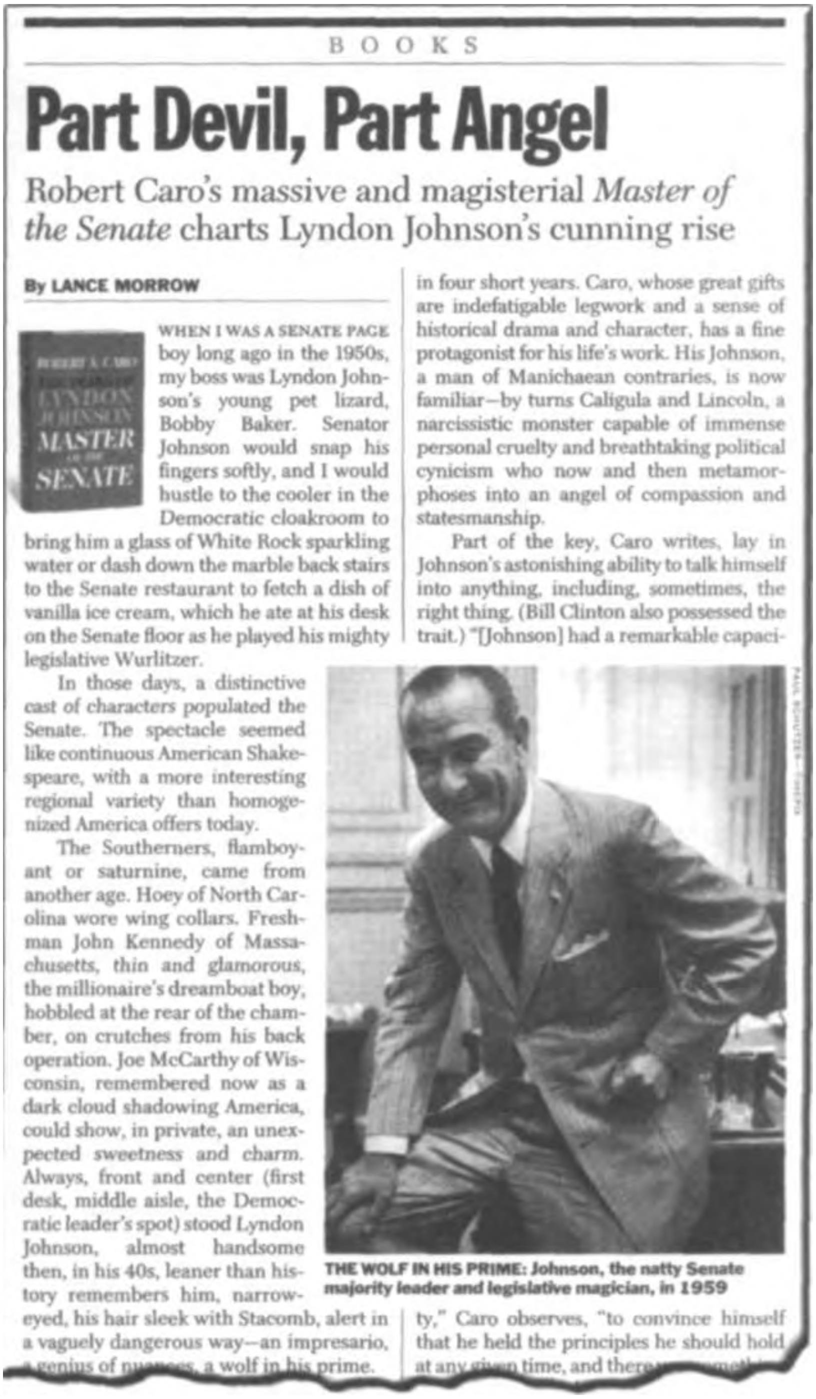

BOOKS

Part Devil, Part Angel

Robert Caro's massive and magisterial *Master of the Senate* charts Lyndon Johnson's cunning rise

By LANCE MORROW

WHEN I WAS A SENATE PAGE boy long ago in the 1950s, my boss was Lyndon Johnson's young pet lizard, Bobby Baker. Senator Johnson would snap his fingers softly, and I would hustle to the cooler in the Democratic cloakroom to bring him a glass of White Rock sparkling water or dash down the marble back stairs to the Senate restaurant to fetch a dish of vanilla ice cream, which he ate at his desk on the Senate floor as he played his mighty legislative Wurlitzer.

In those days, a distinctive cast of characters populated the Senate. The spectacle seemed like continuous American Shakespeare, with a more interesting regional variety than homogenized America offers today.

The Southerners, flamboyant or saturnine, came from another age. Hoey of North Carolina wore wing collars. Freshman John Kennedy of Massachusetts, thin and glamorous, the millionaire's dreamboat boy, hobbled at the rear of the chamber, on crutches from his back operation. Joe McCarthy of Wisconsin, remembered now as a dark cloud shadowing America, could show, in private, an unexpected sweetness and charm. Always, front and center (first desk, middle aisle, the Democratic leader's spot) stood Lyndon Johnson, almost handsome then, in his 40s, leaner than history remembers him, narrow-eyed, his hair sleek with Stacomb, alert in a vaguely dangerous way—an impresario, a genius of nuances, a wolf in his prime.

in four short years. Caro, whose great gifts are indefatigable legwork and a sense of historical drama and character, has a fine protagonist for his life's work. His Johnson, a man of Manichaean contraries, is now familiar—by turns Caligula and Lincoln, a narcissistic monster capable of immense personal cruelty and breathtaking political cynicism who now and then metamorphoses into an angel of compassion and statesmanship.

Part of the key, Caro writes, lay in Johnson's astonishing ability to talk himself into anything, including, sometimes, the right thing. (Bill Clinton also possessed the trait.) "[Johnson] had a remarkable capacity," Caro observes, "to convince himself that he held the principles he should hold at any given time, and there

PAUL SCHUTZER

THE WOLF IN HIS PRIME: Johnson, the natty Senate majority leader and legislative magician, in 1959

An interesting article showcasing a book about rascally President Lyndon B. Johnson. The headline says the touted, biographical book *"charts Lyndon Johnson s cunning rise."* The caption under the photo of LBJ describes the late President as *"The Wolf In His Prime"* and lauds him as a *"legislative magician."* Above, we are especially interested in the clearly Illuminist pose struck by Johnson: His left arm in the triangle position with the clenched fist of socialist power. No wonder this article in *Newsweek* magazine is entitled, *"Part Devil, Part Angel."* Incidentally, the Librarian of the House of the Temple, Scottish Rite, Washington, D.C., reports that Lyndon B. Johnson never got past the Master Mason (3°) degree. This author believes, however, that Johnson was initiated into other secret societies and Orders than Freemasonry and, of course, he was a key political mover and shaker acting on behalf of both Zionist interests and the nation's oil elite.

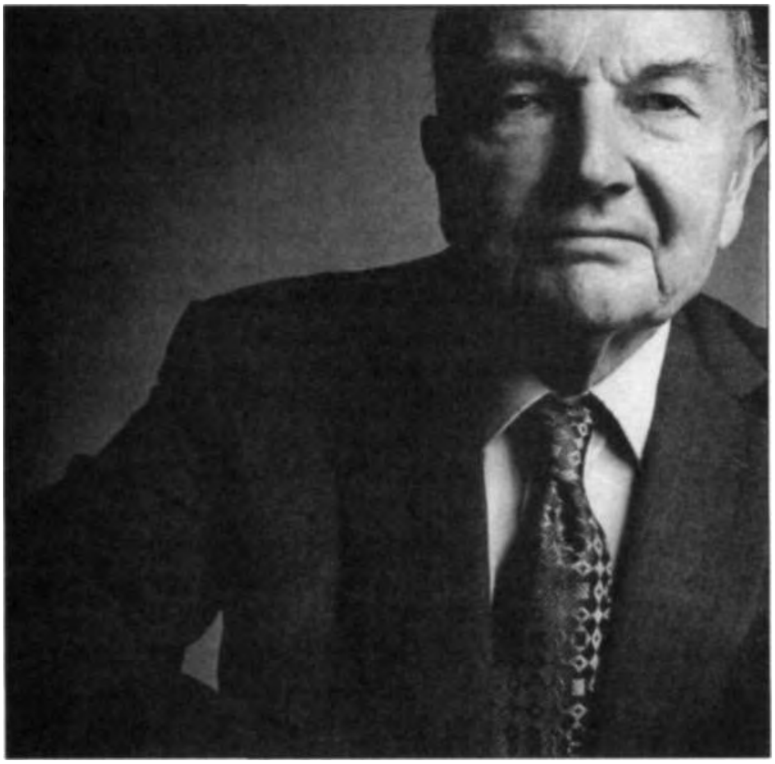

David Rockefeller, Sr., Illuminati insider, multibillionaire, and founder of the Trilateral Commission. This photo, in the upscale *Town & Country* magazine, was without caption or explanation. It is obviously staged as it shows the exaggerated masonic arm sign. Note that the image of Rockefeller's torso is not even centered, even though a highly professional photographer took the photo, and *Town and Country* magazine's editors are thorough and detailed in photo art selection and placement.

Standing: Winthrop Aldrich, Chairman, Chase-Manhattan Bank. _Sitting:_ Chase's president.

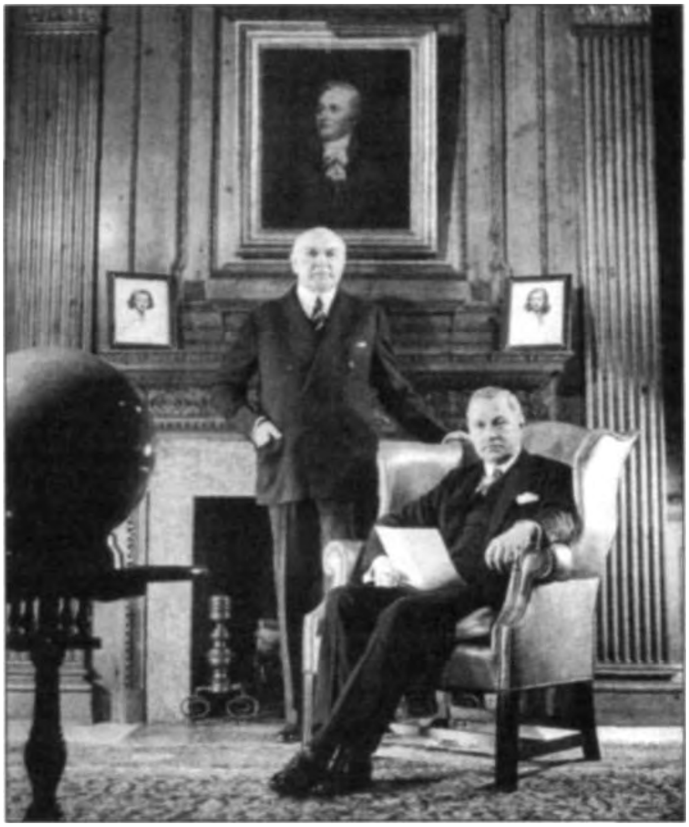

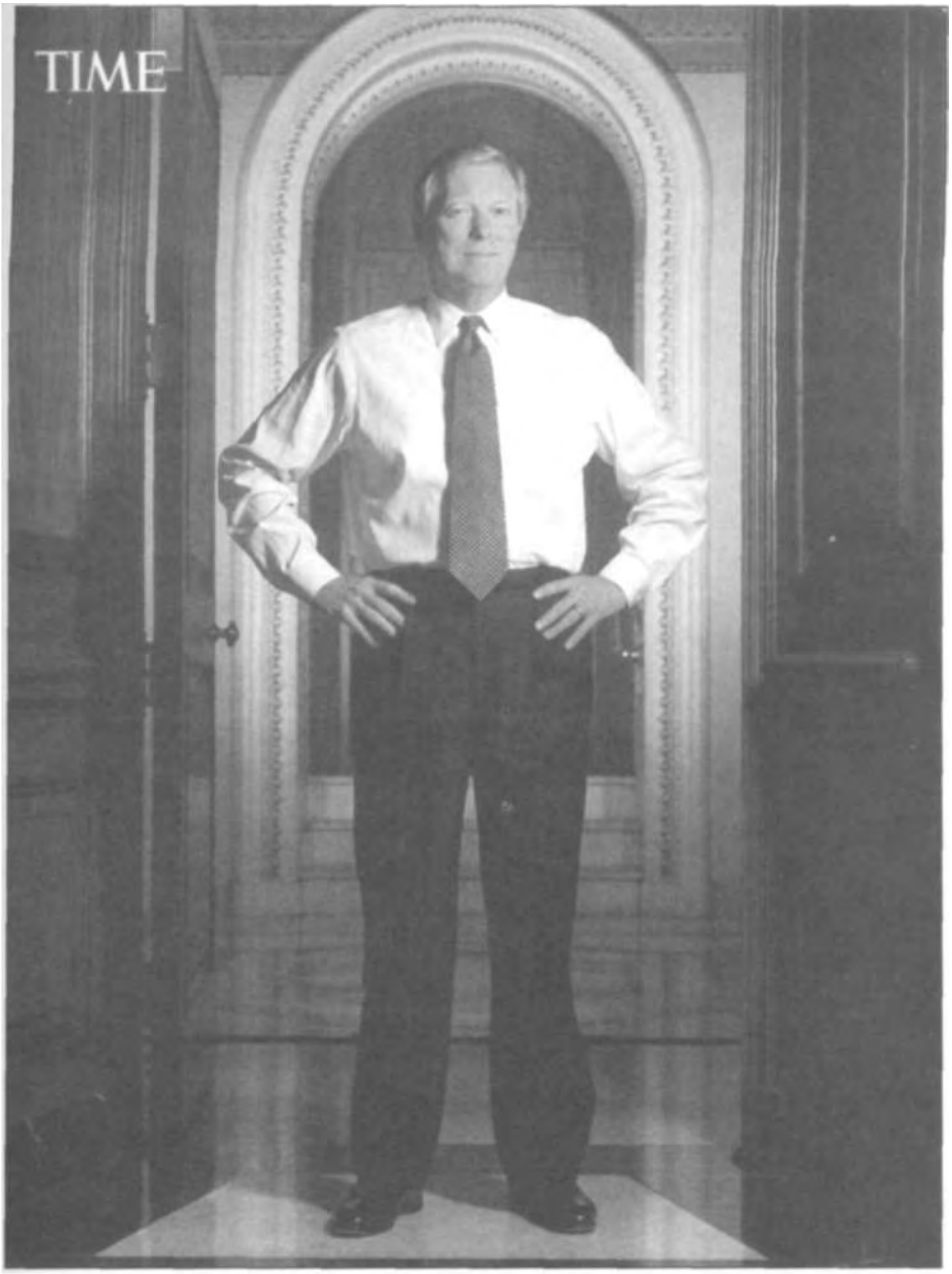

Just an innocent photo shoot? Don't believe it! This is Congressman Richard Gephardt (D-MO), House Minority Leader. He's standing on a square, in Masonry signifying rulership of the four corners of the earth. Both his arms are in the triangular position. His necktie is black and white checked, as on the floor tile of the Lodge. He is wearing the colors black and white, signifying the occult *equilibrium* of good and evil, light and darkness. ("Equilibrium" is the secretive *"Lost Word"* of Freemasonry—explained in the 33^rd^ degree as the alchemical synthesis that propels the energies of the universe.) Behind Gephardt are three steps (there are three degrees in the Blue Lodge.) He is standing in an open doorway. Behind him in mosaic on the marble floor is the emblem of the all-seeing eye. The portal beyond, looming above and virtually framing the Congressman, is the arch. The arch plays a significant role in Freemasonry, and one of the major schools of the Lodge is Royal Arch Masonry. All in all, a thoroughly Masonic—and meticulously staged and crafted scene. Gephardt was shown in this photo to be a major player in political affairs and a prime contender on the national and world scenes. This photo took up the entire page in *Time* magazine, but there was no caption or explanation about it. (Photo: *Time* magazine, September 30, 1996)

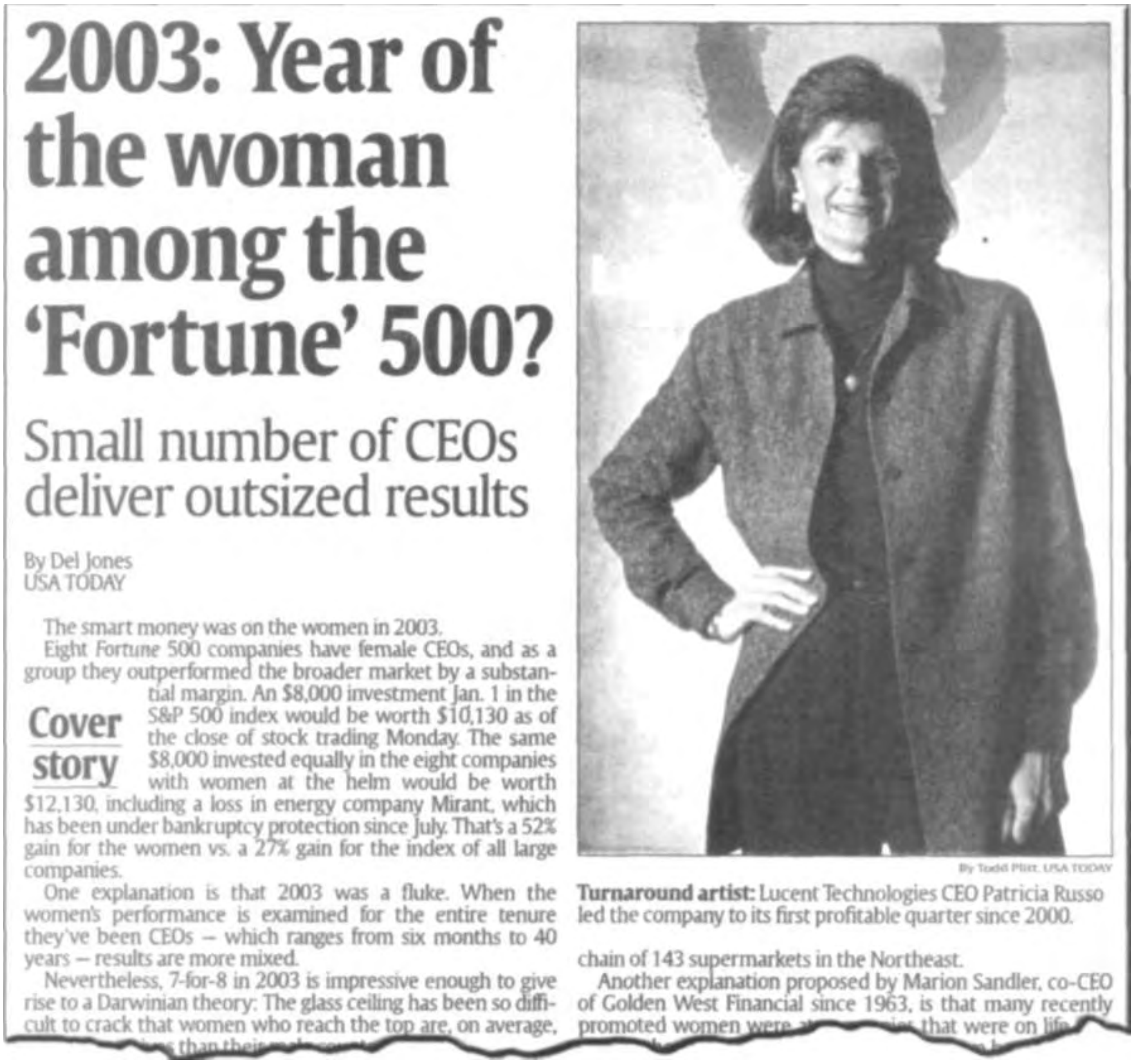

2003: Year of the woman among the 'Fortune' 500?

Small number of CEOs deliver outsized results

By Del Jones
USA TODAY

Cover story

The smart money was on the women in 2003.

Eight *Fortune* 500 companies have female CEOs, and as a group they outperformed the broader market by a substantial margin. An $8,000 investment Jan. 1 in the S&P 500 index would be worth $10,130 as of the close of stock trading Monday. The same $8,000 invested equally in the eight companies with women at the helm would be worth $12,130, including a loss in energy company Mirant, which has been under bankruptcy protection since July. That's a 52% gain for the women vs. a 27% gain for the index of all large companies.

One explanation is that 2003 was a fluke. When the women's performance is examined for the entire tenure they've been CEOs – which ranges from six months to 40 years – results are more mixed.

Nevertheless, 7-for-8 in 2003 is impressive enough to give rise to a Darwinian theory: The glass ceiling has been so difficult to crack that women who reach the top are, on average,

By Todd Plitt, USA TODAY

Turnaround artist: Lucent Technologies CEO Patricia Russo led the company to its first profitable quarter since 2000.

chain of 143 supermarkets in the Northeast.

Another explanation proposed by Marion Sandler, co-CEO of Golden West Financial since 1963, is that many recently promoted women were

that were on life

Lucent Technologies CEO Patricia Russo in a *USA Today* newspaper (December 30, *2001)* photo and article. See how clever the editors were in placing Russo's head so that the red, serpentine, circular Lucent Technologies (similar to the Oroboros) appears to be an occultic ring or halo (Nimbus).

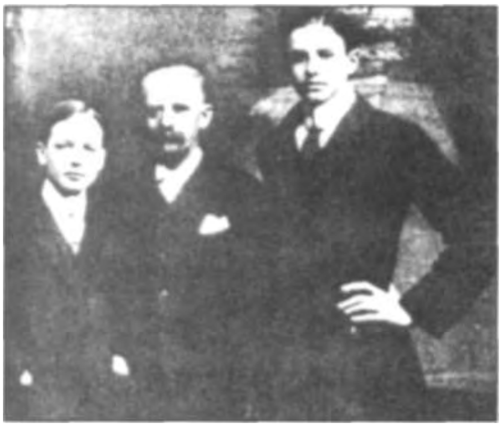

Banker E.H. Harriman (center) with sons Roland (left) and Averell (right) in 1907. Young Averell Harriman is giving the masonic sign with his left arm. Averell Harriman went on to become Governor of New York State, U.S. Ambassador to Dictator Joseph Stalin's Communist Russia, and a Patriarch of the Order of Skull & Bones.

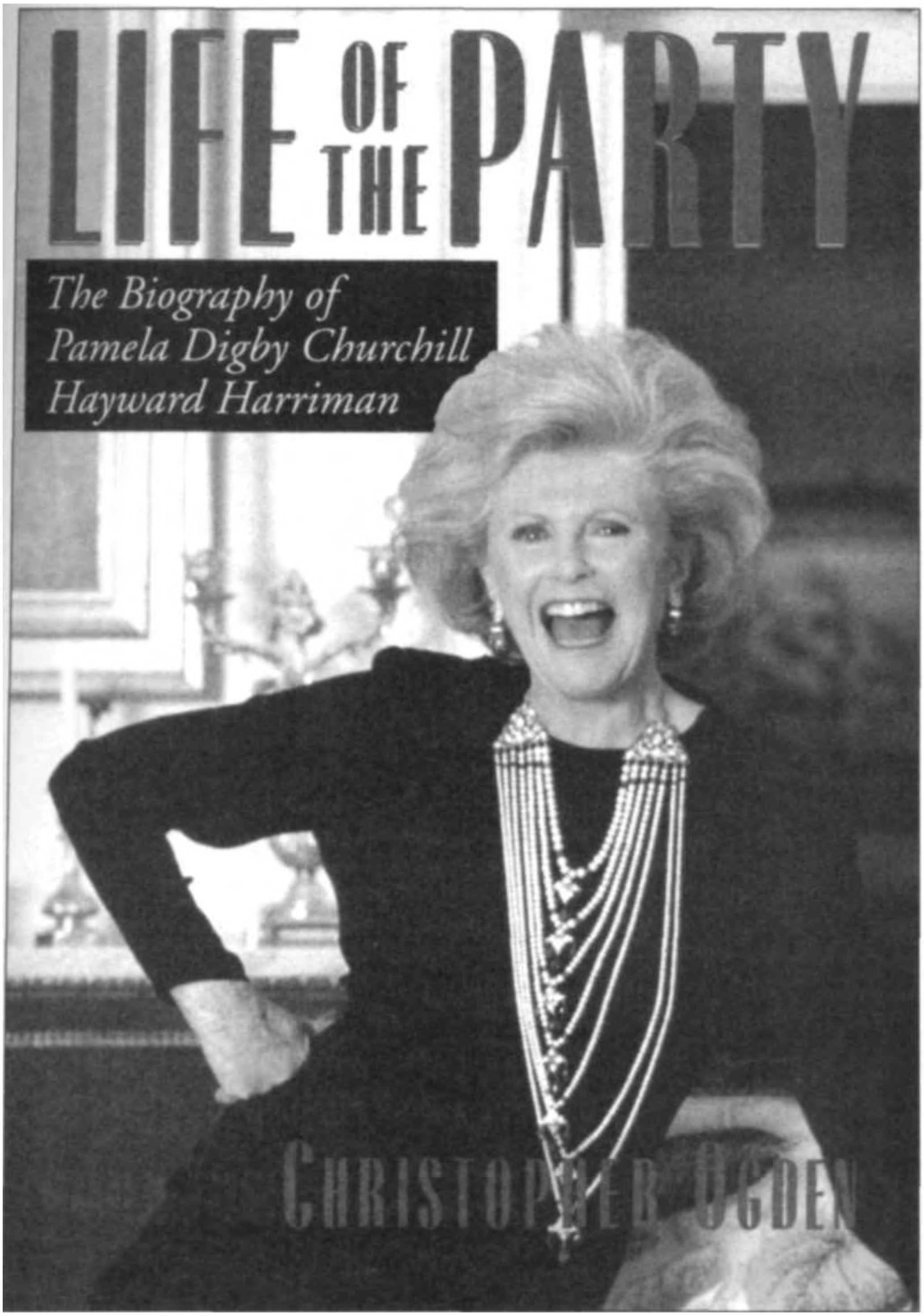
LIFE OF THE PARTY
The Biography of
Pamela Digby Churchill
Hayward Harriman
CHRISTOPHER OGDEN

Pamela Harriman is doing more here with her body than merely being "Life of the Party," title of this book. A Churchill heir, Pamela was a mistress of one of the Illuminati Rothschilds and later married Governor Averell Harriman, Patriarch of Skull & Bones. Pamela Harriman met and "mentored" young Bill Clinton when he was just a student at Georgetown University in Washington, D.C. She introduced the young man to her aging husband and *voila! - the* political career of William Jefferson Clinton was on the fast track. Many years later, after Pamela's husband passed away and President Bill Clinton was in the White House, Clinton appointed Pamela to the prestigious post of Ambassador to France in Paris.

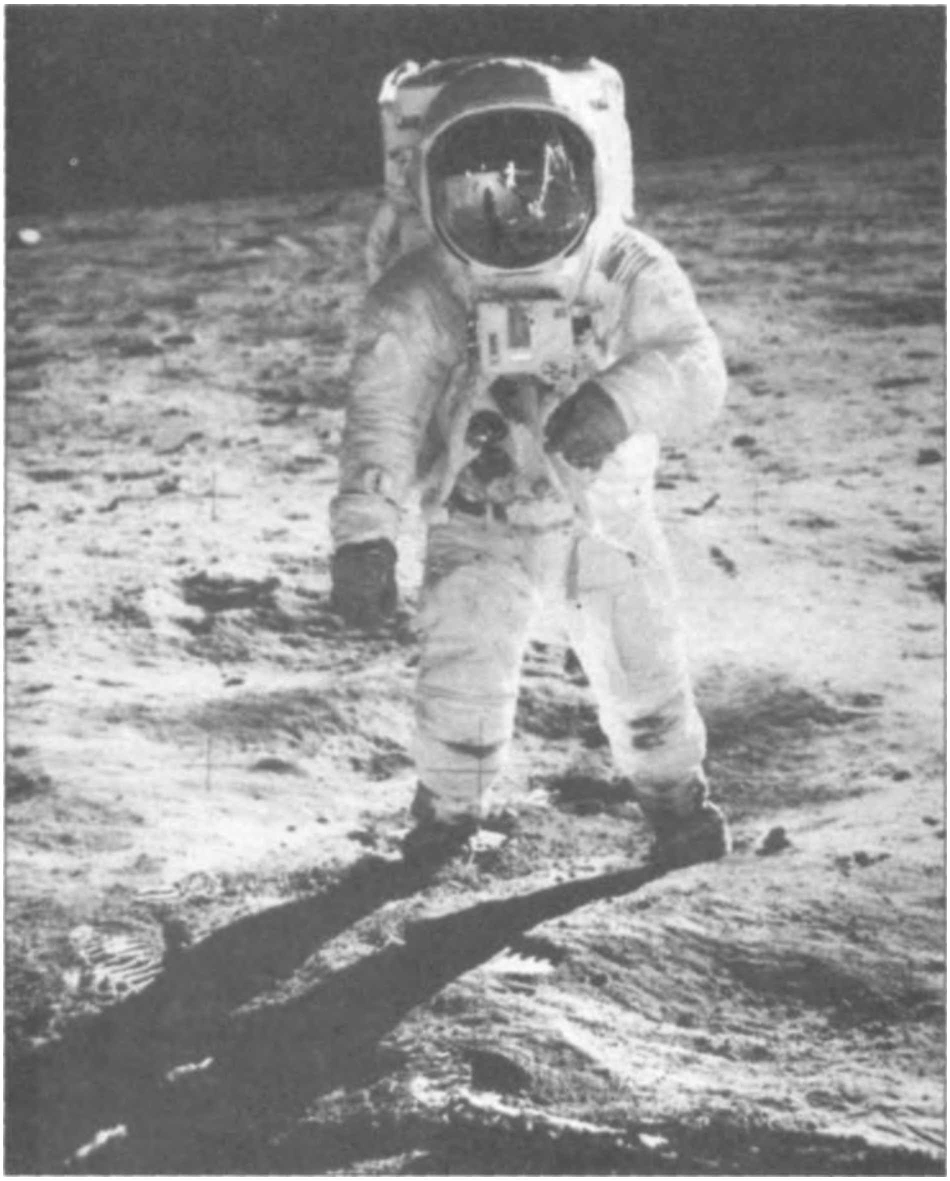

Buzz Aldrin, Scottish Rite Mason, was the first astronaut to walk on the moon. Aldrin also planted a double-headed eagle flag on the soil of the moon's surface, claiming the moon as territory belonging to the Supreme Mother Lodge of Freemasonry. Note Aldrin's Masonic arm pose. (Photo: NASA)

Astronaut Edwin "BUZZ" Aldrin, 33° Mason, presents the Scottish Rite flag carried *to* the moon on Apollo 11 in 1969 to Masonic Grand Commander Luther A. Smith (from the book, *Lodge of the Doubleheaded Eagle,* by William L. Fox, University of Arkansas Press, 1997).

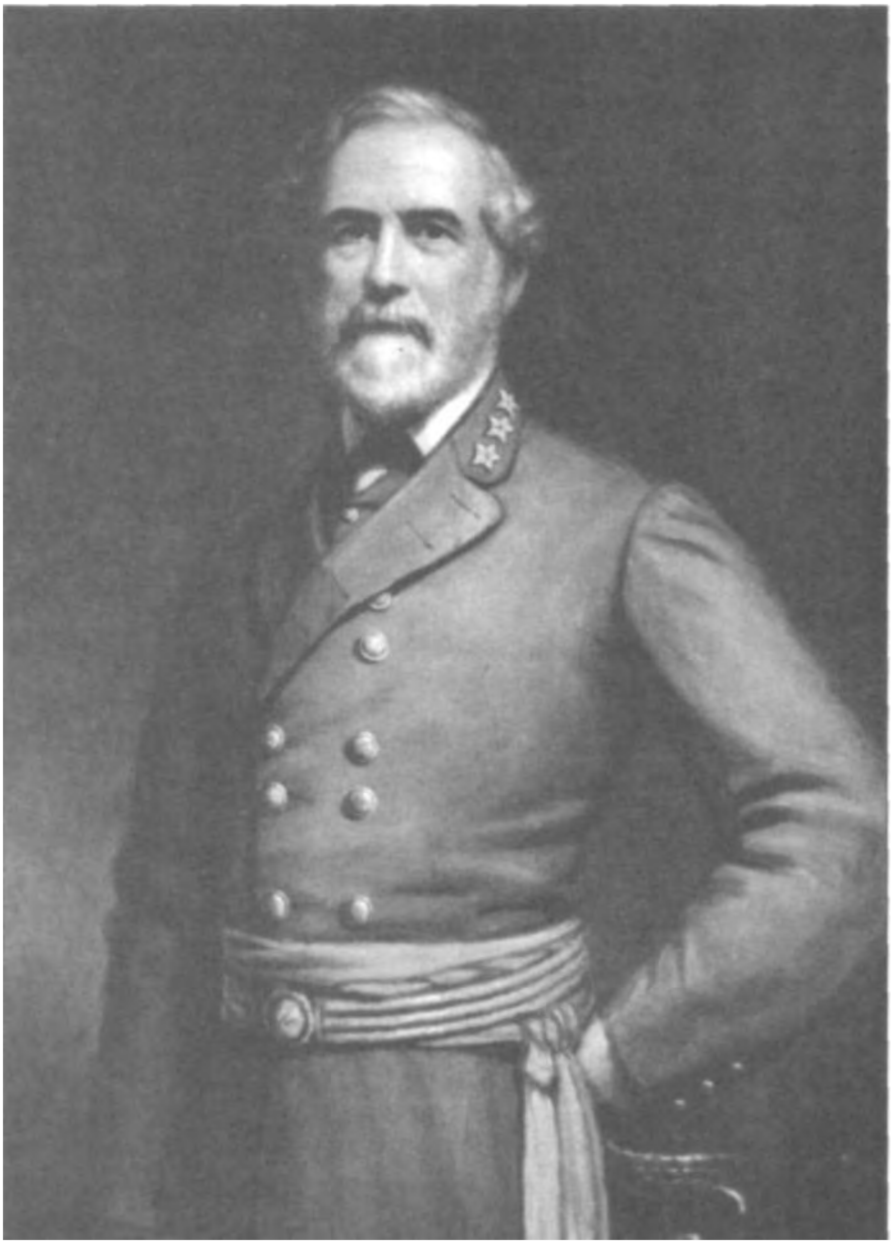

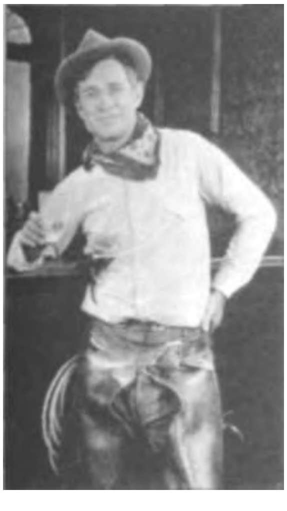

General Robert E. Lee, commanding officer of the Army of the Confederacy. (Oil portrait: Washington & Lee University, Lexington, Virginia)

Will Rogers (1879-1935), was a famous storyteller and a Freemason. Here he is in the pose of *Sublime Knights Elected* degree.

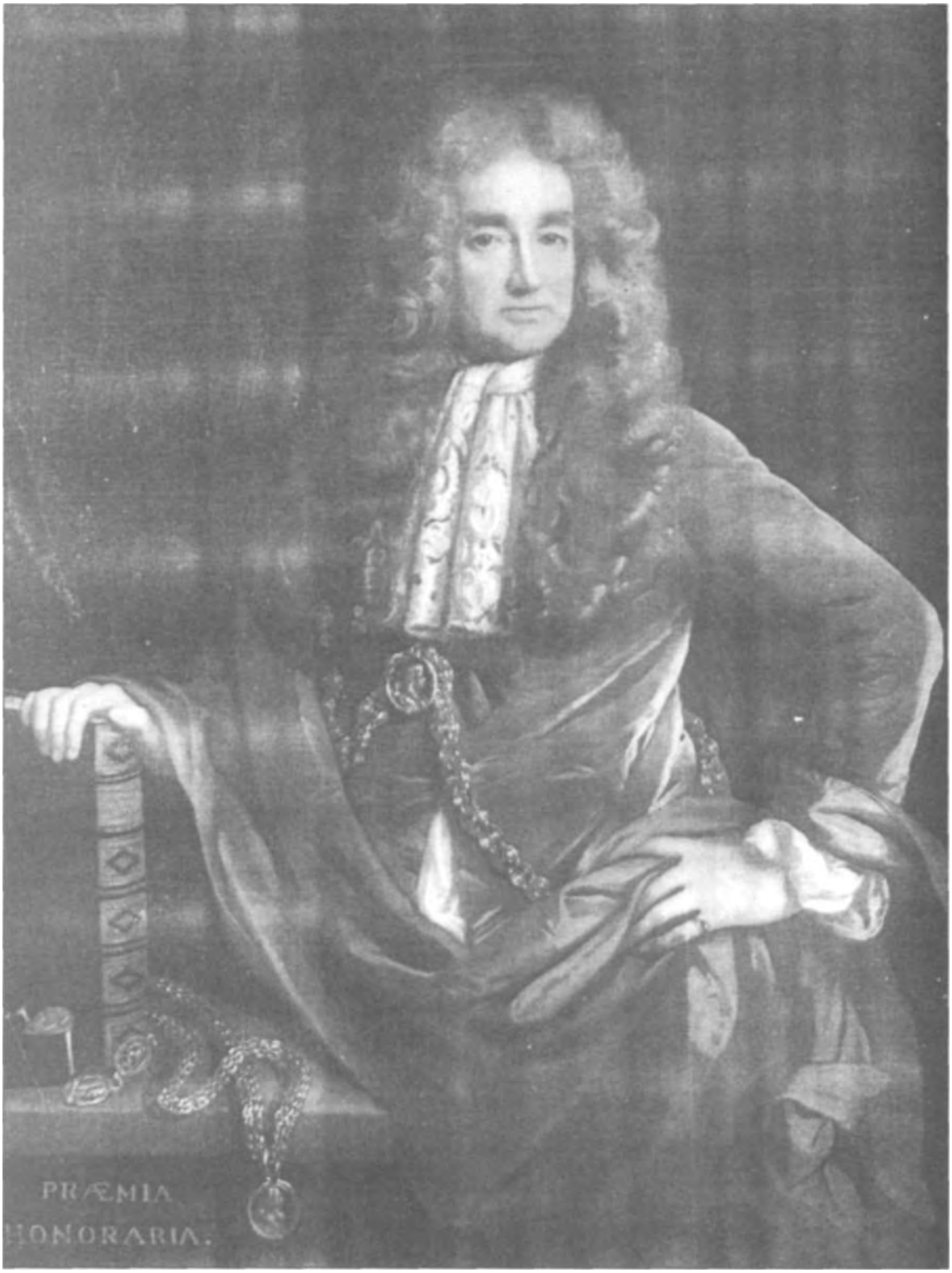

Elias Ashmole was made a Freemason in 1646. This illustration is from the picture in the Ashmolean Museum in Oxford, England. The book is Ashmole's *History of the Garter.* It chronicled the secret society of English nobility call the Order of the Garter. The Latin words in the lower corner of the engraving mean an *"honorable distinction."*

TWENTY

The Merovingian Dynasty, The Priory of Sion, and the Spear of Longinus

The Priory of Sion (also the *Prieure de Sion)* is said to be the "secret society of societies."[1] Baigent, Leigh, and Lincoln, authors of one acclaimed book, *Holy Blood, Holy Grail,* write that the brotherhood of the Priory of Sion has been preserved for two millennia. France's royal Merovingian Dynasty's bloodline is said to be the protector of the sect, which boasts that it is the actual bloodline of Jesus. The astonishing claim is that Jesus and Mary Magdalene were married and had children and from this bloodline shall someday arise a man who shall become the ruler of planet earth.

The Holy Grail

Tied in with this unscriptural — even blasphemous—legend are the tales of the Holy Grail and the Spear of Longinus. Some teach that as the blood of Jesus oozed from his body on the cross, it was collected in the Holy Grail cup. Esoterically that would make the Holy Grail, if it exists, magical and capable of great miracles.

A variation of this story is that the Holy Grail was the drinking vessel of Jesus at the Last Supper, which again would translate into the cup being a magical talisman.

The Spear of longinus

The Spear of Longinus is yet another legend connected to the Priory of Sion. It holds that a Roman Centurion named Longinus was the one who thrust his spear into Jesus' side at the crucifixion. Some of Jesus' blood is alleged to have fallen on him and miracles ensued. Thus, again, a magical talisman was created — the Spear of Longinus.

Throughout history wicked tyrants, including Napoleon and Hitler, have sought possession of the Spear, believing that it is the Spear of Destiny and that whoever possesses it shall have the power to rule the world.

William Cooper, whose book, *Behold a Pale Horse,* and his revelations on his national radio program so angered the elite they put out a contract on his life, sometimes mentioned the Spear of Destiny.[2] Cooper was murdered by a combined federal-local police team that ambushed him as he peacefully stopped his pickup at a stop sign on his way home from a grocery store. In his book, he spoke of how vital the Spear of Destiny is in the Illuminati scheme of things:

> According to members of the intelligence community, when the New World Order is solidified the relics will be taken out, will be united with the *Spear of Destiny*, and will, according to legend, give the world's ruler absolute power... Again, I remind you that it makes not one iota of difference what you believe. If *they* (the Illuminati) believe, *you* will be affected.[3]

The Spear As Pentagram and Lightning Bolt

The Spear is a symbol of long-standing repute in the pagan and ancient Mystery Religions. In the Egyptian religion, it was called the Arrow of Re, or Ra, the Sun God, who was also called Horus, son of Osiris and his reincarnation, who had the all-seeing eye. Anton LaVey, in his book *Satan Speaks,* notes that the Sign of the Spear is actually the inverted pentagram.[4] In turn, the pentagram (the satanic five-pointed star), according to LaVey represents "Excalibur, the Spear of Destiny, Wotan's spear point, the lightning bolt that created the protoplasm of life."[5]

The Rosicrucians and the Sign of An Arrow

Moreover, the Rosicrucian Order seems to be somehow connected with both the legend of the Spear and the Priory of Sion. D. C. Yermak, writing in *The Axis of Death - Vatican, Masonry, Zionism, Enemies of God,* explains that, "The Rosicrucians, by making their secret sign with the first three fingers of the right hand united, make the *Sign of an Arrow."*[6]

The Rosicrucian's Sign of an Arrow is dark and evil because it is used by the individual to remove himself from God's Blessing and leave himself purposely exposed to the arrows of the devil. (In this case, the form, or shape, relates the arrow to the spear).

Dean Grace, authoritative researcher in symbology and Masonic secrets, believes that at least some modern-day disciples of this international black lodge, Priory of Sion, communicate their involvement to other hidden members by giving the *Sign of the Spear Point.*[7] In this sign, the point of the spear can either be sharply angular or it can be modified. Often, the fingers are positioned so that the horns and face of Baphomet are indistinctly seen, as in the inverted pentagram star.

Grace's research also indicates the Priory of Sion is either linked or had something to do in the development of other, related occult groups such as the Order of Knights Templar. "The spear point symbol," he says, "is the building block of the four-spoked, eight-pointed Maltese Cross of the Order of the Knights of Malta."[8]

How the Sign is Given

A variation of the sharp, angular spear point sign is that displayed in this chapter of

Codex Magica in the photos of ABC News reporter Sam Donaldson and U.S.A. Vice President Dick Cheney. However, their modified hand and finger positioning is likely simply a personal eccentricity. As in all cases of secret hand signs, human variation and personality intervene, so that not all the signs are rendered expertly and in a crisp, uniform, standardized fashion.

When placed in or near the female vulva area or the male genital area, the spear point becomes a phallic symbol. In all cases, the sign of the spear point is given so that the Y, the spear or arrow, is pointing *downward,* toward the nether regions where, presumably, Satan and his legions reside. That is, toward the pit of hell.

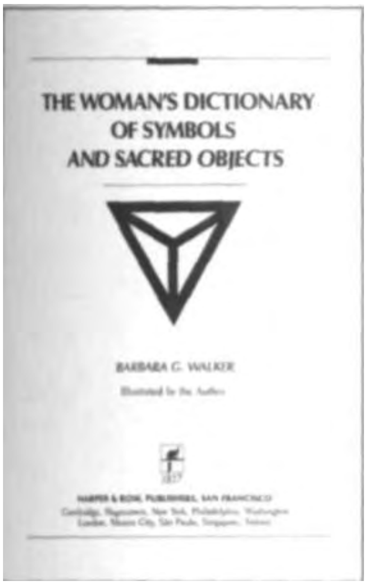

THE WOMAN'S DICTIONARY OF SYMBOLS AND SACRED OBJECTS

BARBARA G. WALKER

Illustrated by the Author

HARPER & ROW, PUBLISHERS, SAN FRANCISCO

Title page of Barbara Walker's *The Woman's Dictionary of Symbols and Sacred Objects.* Inside, Walker identified the symbol shown as the Dragon's Eye. She reports that the Dragon's Eye forms a triple triangle, sacred to the Goddess, and that this symbol appears often in medieval books of magic, to invoke the protection of female spirits and entities. In fact, the Dragon's Eye bears a remarkable resemblence to the Sign of the Spear Point, and the name Dragon's Eye is approprate, indeed.

Symbol from the back cover of the fascinating book, *The Talisman of the United States: The Mysterious Street Lines of Washington, D.C.,* by Charles Westbook, Ph.D. (1990). The symbol depicted is a spear point superimposed by a modified *fleur de lis,* a symbol of the Merovingian royal dynasty.

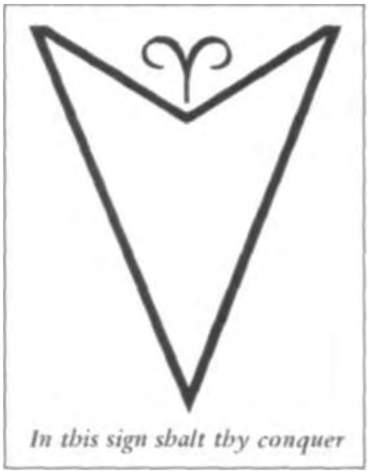
In this sign shalt thy conquer

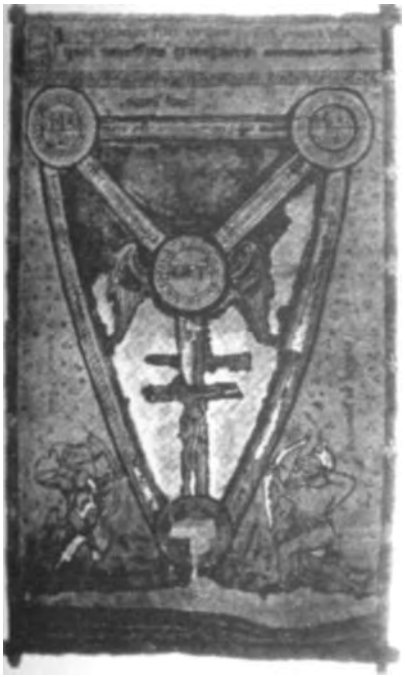

"Shield of the Trinity," in the British Museum, which turns out to be an emblem of the Priory of Sion.

Drawing of the Rock of Sion and the Sign of the Priory of Sion. (From the book, *Holy Blood, Holy Grail)*

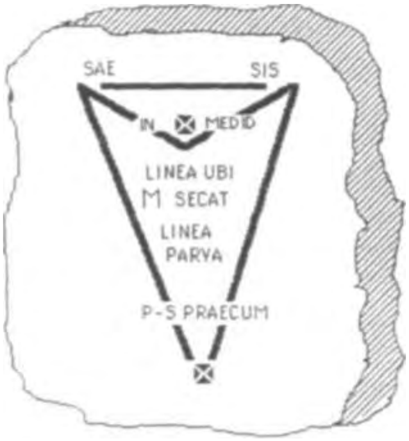

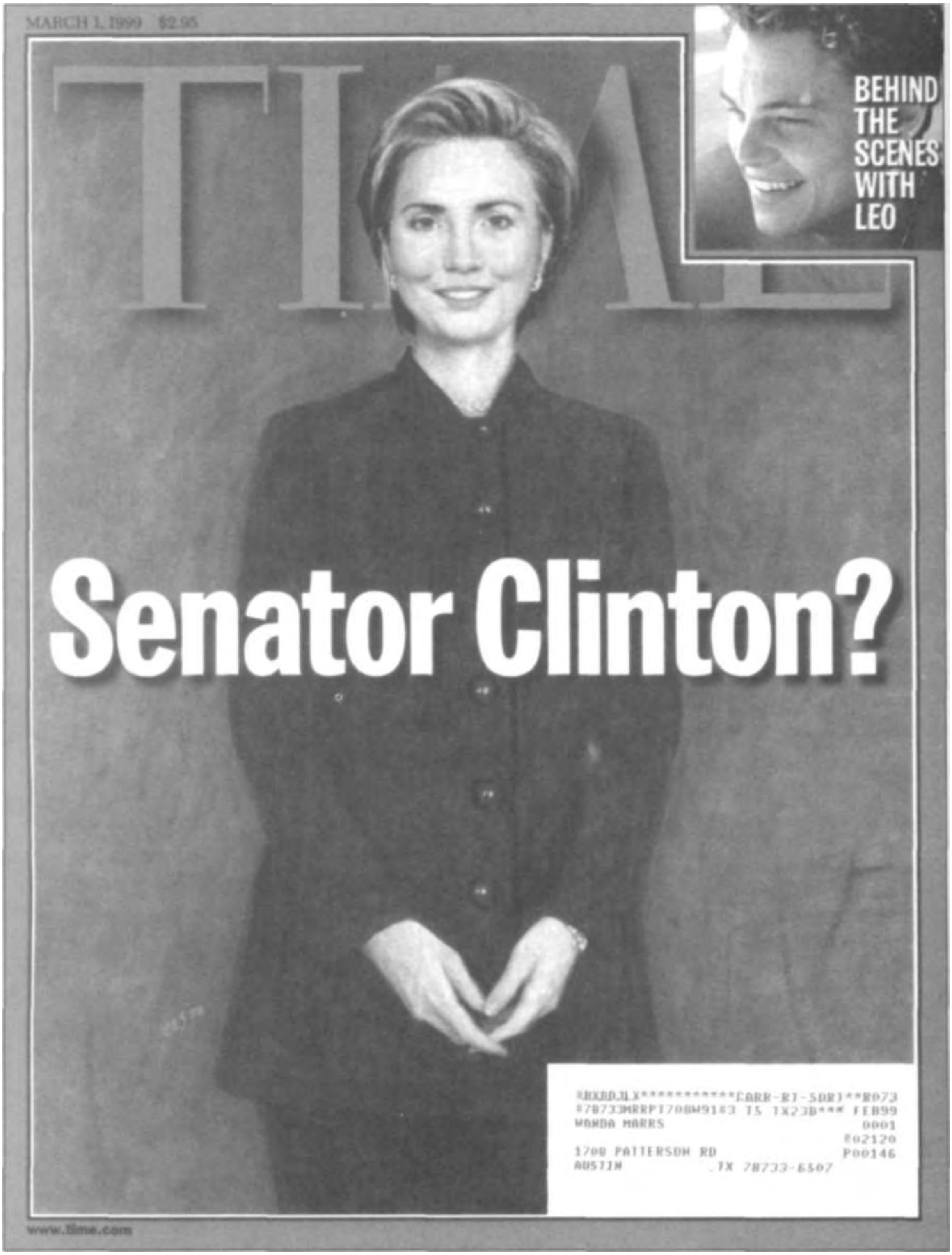
MARCH 1, 1999 $2.95
TIME
BEHIND THE SCENES WITH LEO
Senator Clinton?
www.time.com

First Lady Hillary Rodham Clinton, wearing a "Mao Tse Tung" peasant outfit and fashion look, clearly giving the Baphomet/Priory of Sion sign. This cover and feature article in *Time* (March 1, 1999) examined Hillary Clinton's possible candidacy for the U.S. Senate from the state of New York in the upcoming election (2000). In fact, Ms. Clinton ran and won. Was the symbology displayed (Priory of Sion Sign) predictive of her future successful run?

Said by political analysts to be one of the most important addresses of his political career, in late August 1998, President Bill Clinton went on national television to give a limited m*ea culpa* ("I *am sorry")* for his sexual indiscretions with the young White House intern, Monica Lewinsky. Left: A chagrined, frustrated, and angry Bill Clinton readies himself for the camera shoot, with the aid of an associate. Below: Just moments before the TV cameras roll, Clinton sets his face in a sober, resolute attitude. With his *Baphomet/Priory of Sion hand sign,* he invokes success and blessings from the ruler and forces of darkness. (Left photo: *Newsweek,* August 31, 1998, p.3; Below photo: *The European* newspaper, August 24-30, p.3)

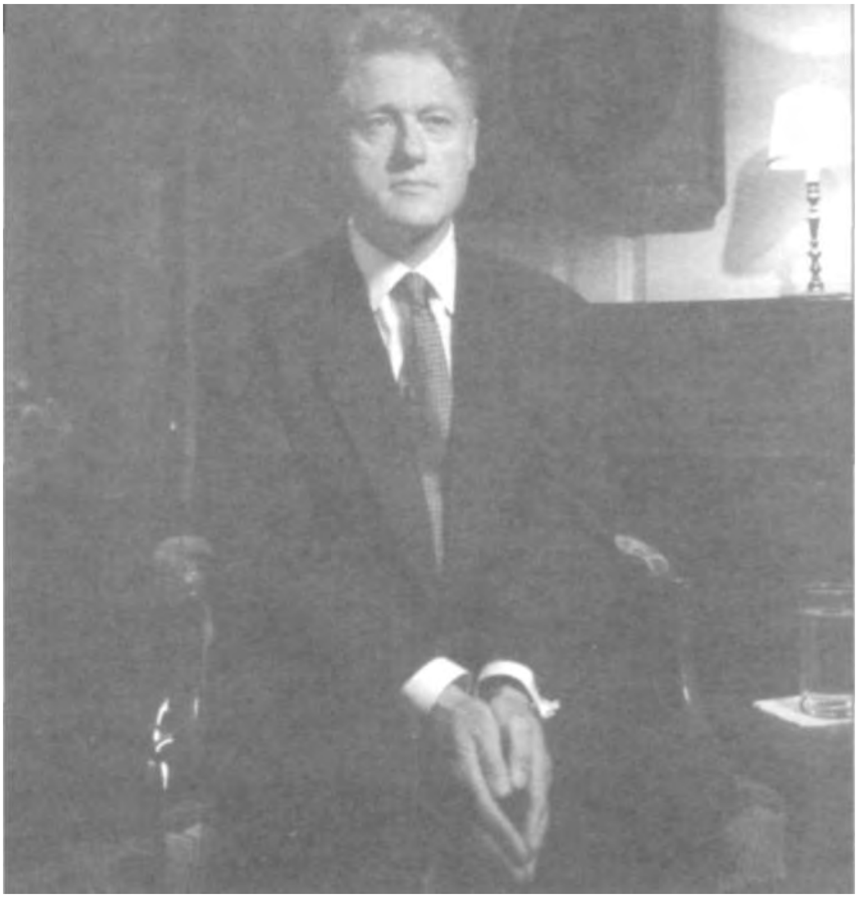

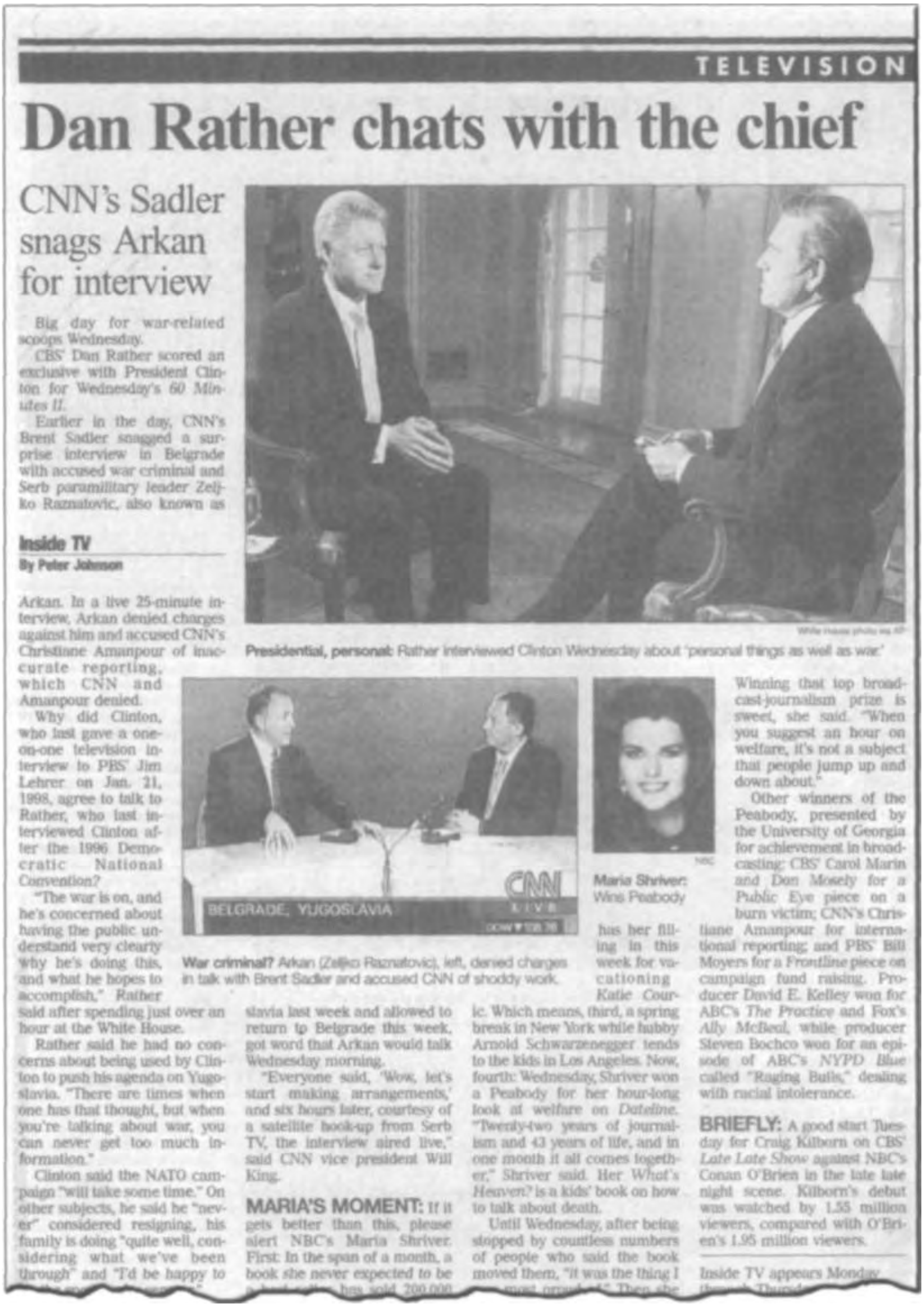

TELEVISION

Dan Rather chats with the chief

CNN's Sadler snags Arkan for interview

Big day for war-related scoops Wednesday.

CBS' Dan Rather scored an exclusive with President Clinton for Wednesday's *60 Minutes II.*

Earlier in the day, CNN's Brent Sadler snagged a surprise interview in Belgrade with accused war criminal and Serb paramilitary leader Zeljko Raznatovic, also known as

Inside TV

By Peter Johnson

Arkan. In a live 25-minute interview, Arkan denied charges against him and accused CNN's Christiane Amanpour of inaccurate reporting, which CNN and Amanpour denied.

Why did Clinton, who last gave a one-on-one television interview to PBS' Jim Lehrer on Jan. 21, 1998, agree to talk to Rather, who last interviewed Clinton after the 1996 Democratic National Convention?

"The war is on, and he's concerned about having the public understand very clearly why he's doing this, and what he hopes to accomplish," Rather said after spending just over an hour at the White House.

Rather said he had no concerns about being used by Clinton to push his agenda on Yugoslavia. "There are times when one has that thought, but when you're talking about war, you can never get too much information."

Clinton said the NATO campaign "will take some time." On other subjects, he said he "never" considered resigning, his family is doing "quite well, considering what we've been through" and "I'd be happy to

slavia last week and allowed to return to Belgrade this week, got word that Arkan would talk Wednesday morning.

"Everyone said, 'Wow, let's start making arrangements,' and six hours later, courtesy of a satellite hook-up from Serb TV, the interview aired live," said CNN vice president Will King.

MARIA'S MOMENT: If it gets better than this, please alert NBC's Maria Shriver. First: In the span of a month, a book she never expected to be

has her filling in this week for vacationing *Katie* Couric. Which means, third, a spring break in New York while hubby Arnold Schwarzenegger tends to the kids in Los Angeles. Now, fourth: Wednesday, Shriver won a Peabody for her hour-long look at welfare on *Dateline.* "Twenty-two years of journalism and 43 years of life, and in one month it all comes together," Shriver said. Her *What's Heaven?* is a kids' book on how to talk about death.

Until Wednesday, after being stopped by countless numbers of people who said the book moved them, "it was the thing I

Winning that top broadcast-journalism prize is sweet, she said. "When you suggest an hour on welfare, it's not a subject that people jump up and down about."

Other winners of the Peabody, presented by the University of Georgia for achievement in broadcasting: CBS' Carol Marin and Don Mosely for a *Public Eye* piece on a burn victim; CNN's Christiane Amanpour for international reporting; and PBS' Bill Moyers for a *Frontline* piece on campaign fund raising. Producer David E. Kelley won for ABC's *The Practice* and Fox's *Ally McBeal,* while producer Steven Bochco won for an episode of ABC's *NYPD Blue* called "Raging Bulls," dealing with racial intolerance.

BRIEFLY: A good start Tuesday for Craig Kilborn on CBS' *Late Late Show* against NBC's Conan O'Brien in the late late night scene. Kilborn's debut was watched by 1.55 million viewers, compared with O'Brien's 1.95 million viewers.

Inside TV appears Monday

White House photo via AP

Presidential, personal: Rather interviewed Clinton Wednesday about 'personal things as well as war.'

War criminal? Arkan (Zeljko Raznatovic), left, denied charges in talk with Brent Sadler and accused CNN of shoddy work.

NBC

Maria Shriver: Wins Peabody

In yet another Clinton bit of magic, President Bill Clinton gives cabalistic sign (Baphomet/Priory of Sion spearpoint) while being interviewed in late March 1999, by CBS News anchor Dan Rather. The *USA Today* newspaper's editors apparently complied with elitist's request to give maximum publicity to Clinton's interview and to this particular photo. Subject of this interview was the U.S. war against Yugoslavia/Serbia, a key Illuminati project to help usher in their New World Order. Clinton invokes the forces of darkness to assist his speech and enhance his hypnotic persuasive powers over the American people.

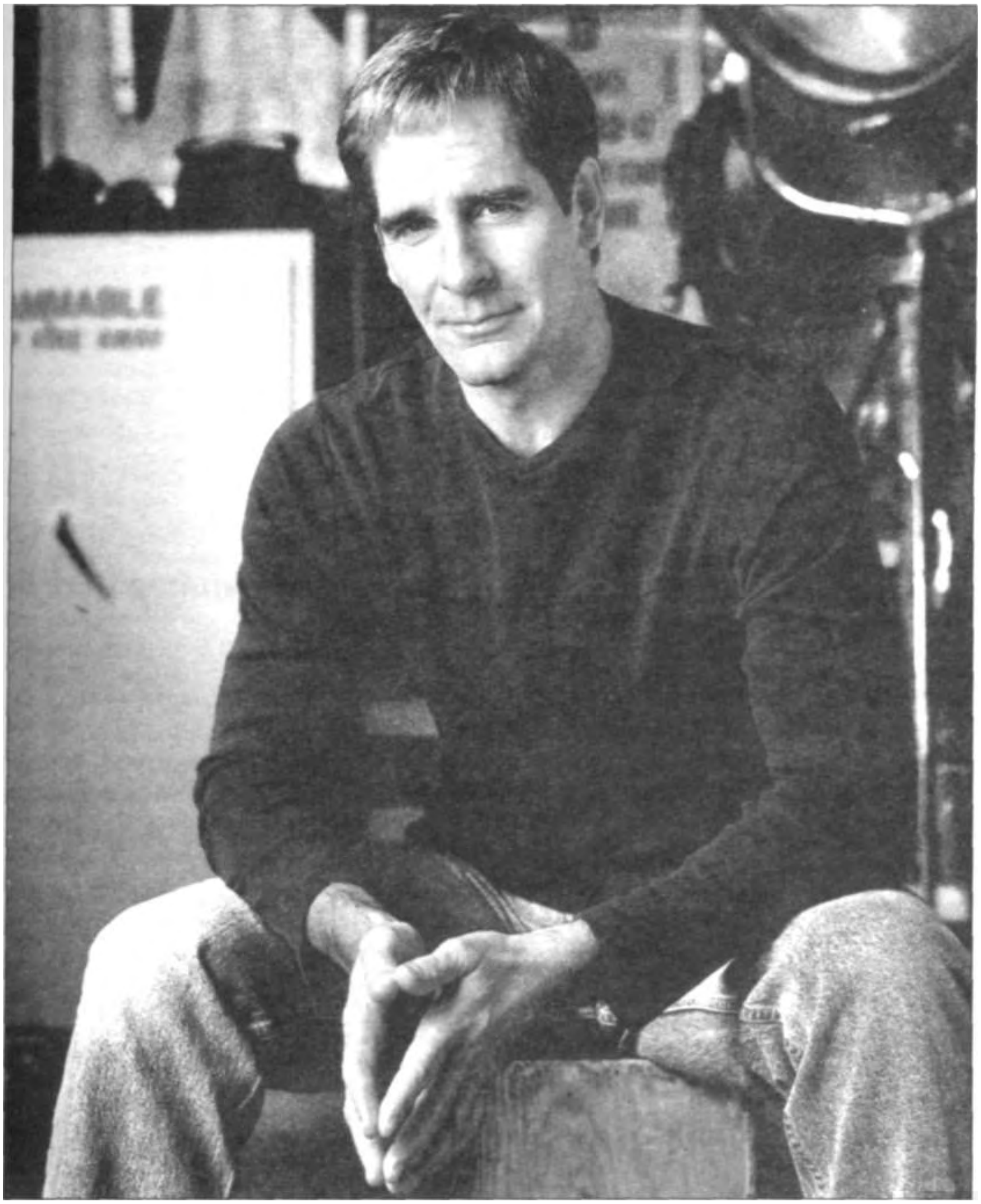

TV and movie actor Scott Bakula ***(Quantum Leap; Murphy Brown)*** **(Photo:** ***Parade*** **magazine, November 25, 2001)**

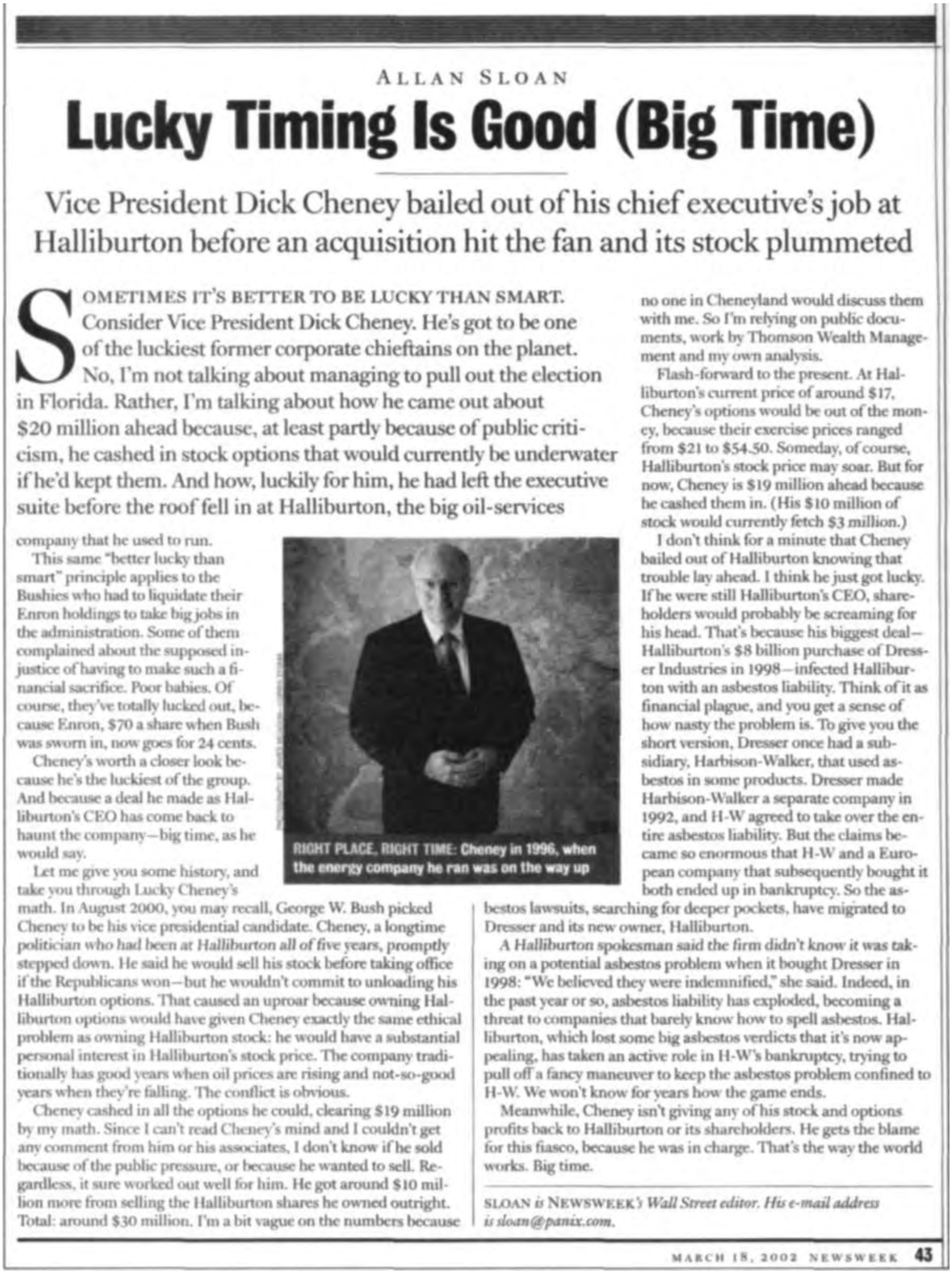

ALLAN SLOAN

Lucky Timing Is Good (Big Time)

Vice President Dick Cheney bailed out of his chief executive's job at Halliburton before an acquisition hit the fan and its stock plummeted

SOMETIMES IT'S BETTER TO BE LUCKY THAN SMART. Consider Vice President Dick Cheney. He's got to be one of the luckiest former corporate chieftains on the planet. No, I'm not talking about managing to pull out the election in Florida. Rather, I'm talking about how he came out about $20 million ahead because, at least partly because of public criticism, he cashed in stock options that would currently be underwater if he'd kept them. And how, luckily for him, he had left the executive suite before the roof fell in at Halliburton, the big oil-services company that he used to run.

This same "better lucky than smart" principle applies to the Bushies who had to liquidate their Enron holdings to take big jobs in the administration. Some of them complained about the supposed injustice of having to make such a financial sacrifice. Poor babies. Of course, they've totally lucked out, because Enron, $70 a share when Bush was sworn in, now goes for 24 cents.

Cheney's worth a closer look because he's the luckiest of the group. And because a deal he made as Halliburton's CEO has come back to haunt the company—big time, as he would say.

RIGHT PLACE, RIGHT TIME: Cheney in 1996, when the energy company he ran was on the way up

Let me give you some history, and take you through Lucky Cheney's math. In August 2000, you may recall, George W. Bush picked Cheney to be his vice presidential candidate. Cheney, a longtime politician who had been at *Halliburton all of five years*, promptly stepped down. He said he would sell his stock before taking office if the Republicans won—but he wouldn't commit to unloading his Halliburton options. That caused an uproar because owning Halliburton options would have given Cheney exactly the same ethical problem as owning Halliburton stock: he would have a substantial personal interest in Halliburton's stock price. The company traditionally has good years when oil prices are rising and not-so-good years when they're falling. The conflict is obvious.

Cheney cashed in all the options he could, clearing $19 million by my math. Since I can't read Cheney's mind and I couldn't get any comment from him or his associates, I don't know if he sold because of the public pressure, or because he wanted to sell. Regardless, it sure worked out well for him. He got around $10 million more from selling the Halliburton shares he owned outright. Total: around $30 million. I'm a bit vague on the numbers because no one in Cheneyland would discuss them with me. So I'm relying on public documents, work by Thomson Wealth Management and my own analysis.

Flash-forward to the present. At Halliburton's current price of around $17, Cheney's options would be out of the money, because their exercise prices ranged from $21 to $54.50. Someday, of course, Halliburton's stock price may soar. But for now, Cheney is $19 million ahead because he cashed them in. (His $10 million of stock would currently fetch $3 million.)

I don't think for a minute that Cheney bailed out of Halliburton knowing that trouble lay ahead. I think he just got lucky. If he were still Halliburton's CEO, shareholders would probably be screaming for his head. That's because his biggest deal—Halliburton's $8 billion purchase of Dresser Industries in 1998—infected Halliburton with an asbestos liability. Think of it as financial plague, and you get a sense of how nasty the problem is. To give you the short version, Dresser once had a subsidiary, Harbison-Walker, that used asbestos in some products. Dresser made Harbison-Walker a separate company in 1992, and H-W agreed to take over the entire asbestos liability. But the claims became so enormous that H-W and a European company that subsequently bought it both ended up in bankruptcy. So the asbestos lawsuits, searching for deeper pockets, have migrated to Dresser and its new owner, Halliburton.

A *Halliburton* spokesman said the firm didn't know it was taking on a potential asbestos problem when it bought Dresser in 1998: "We believed they were indemnified," she said. Indeed, in the past year or so, asbestos liability has exploded, becoming a threat to companies that barely know how to spell asbestos. Halliburton, which lost some big asbestos verdicts that it's now appealing, has taken an active role in H-W's bankruptcy, trying to pull off a fancy maneuver to keep the asbestos problem confined to H-W. We won't know for years how the game ends.

Meanwhile, Cheney isn't giving any of his stock and options profits back to Halliburton or its shareholders. He gets the blame for this fiasco, because he was in charge. That's the way the world works. Big time.

SLOAN *is* NEWSWEEK'*s Wall Street editor. His e-mail address is sloan@panix.com.*

MARCH 18, 2002 NEWSWEEK 43

Vice President Dick Cheney. His wife, Lynn, is a writer of steamy lesbian sex novels. His daughter is an avowed Lesbian, and Dick? Well... this photograph is rather telling.

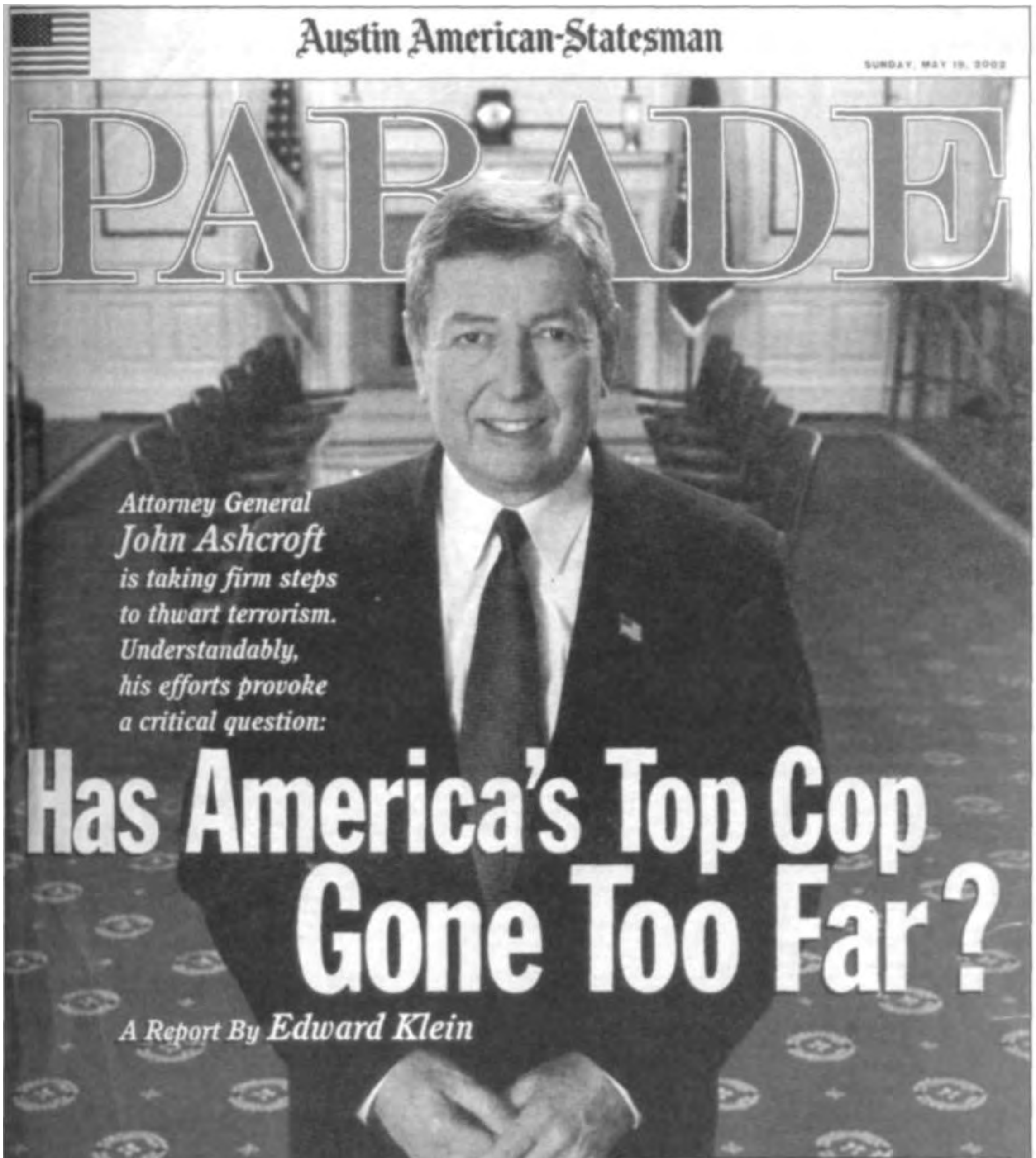

Austin American-Statesman

SUNDAY, MAY 19, 2002

PARADE

Attorney General
John Ashcroft
is taking firm steps
to thwart terrorism.
Understandably,
his efforts provoke
a critical question:

Has America's Top Cop Gone Too Far?

A Report By Edward Klein

INSIDE: Grill A Backyard Feast..

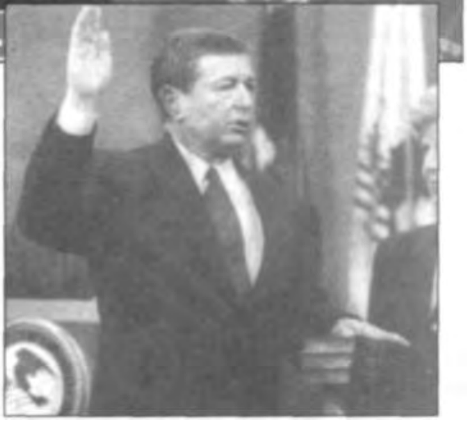

Attorney-General John Ashcroft was given his high post by Bush, say the Christian conservatives, because Ashcroft is one of them. But his actions in office and this Illuminati pose would suggest otherwise. When Ashcroft was sworn into office, he did not rest his hand on a Bible and take the oath. Instead, an official photo shows Ashcroft laying his hand on a stack of three books. What were these three mysterious books?

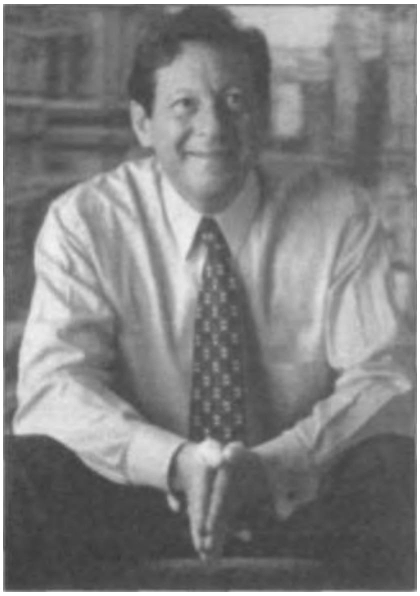

Tom Pritzker, CEO of the Hyatt Hotels chain. ***(Business Week,*** **December 20, 2004, p. 40)**

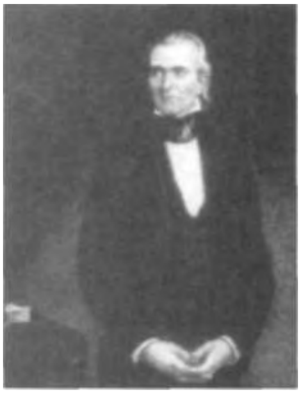

President of the U.S.A. James K. Polk (1795-1849)

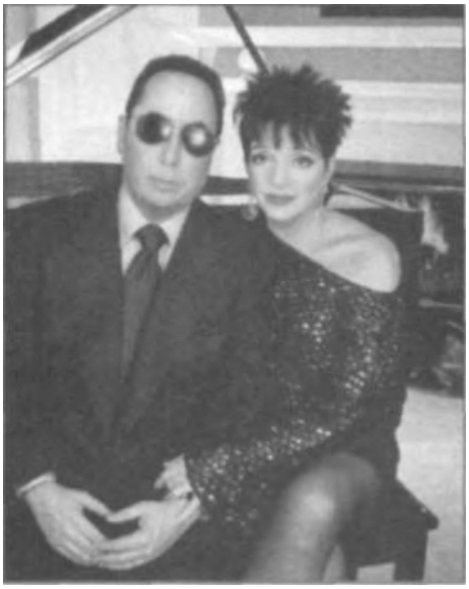

Producer David Gest and wife, singer Liza Minelli. Gest, a homosexual, and Minelli are now separated and seeking a divorce.

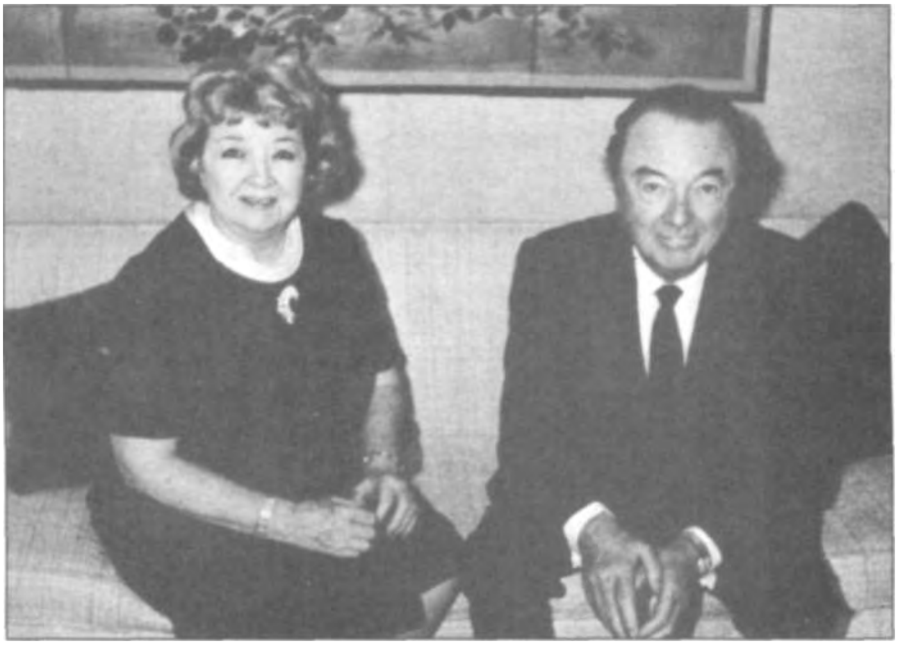

Actor Jack Bolger, who played the Tin Man in the classic alchemical drama, ***The Wizard of Oz,*** **with wife, Floe, at home in Beverly Hills.**

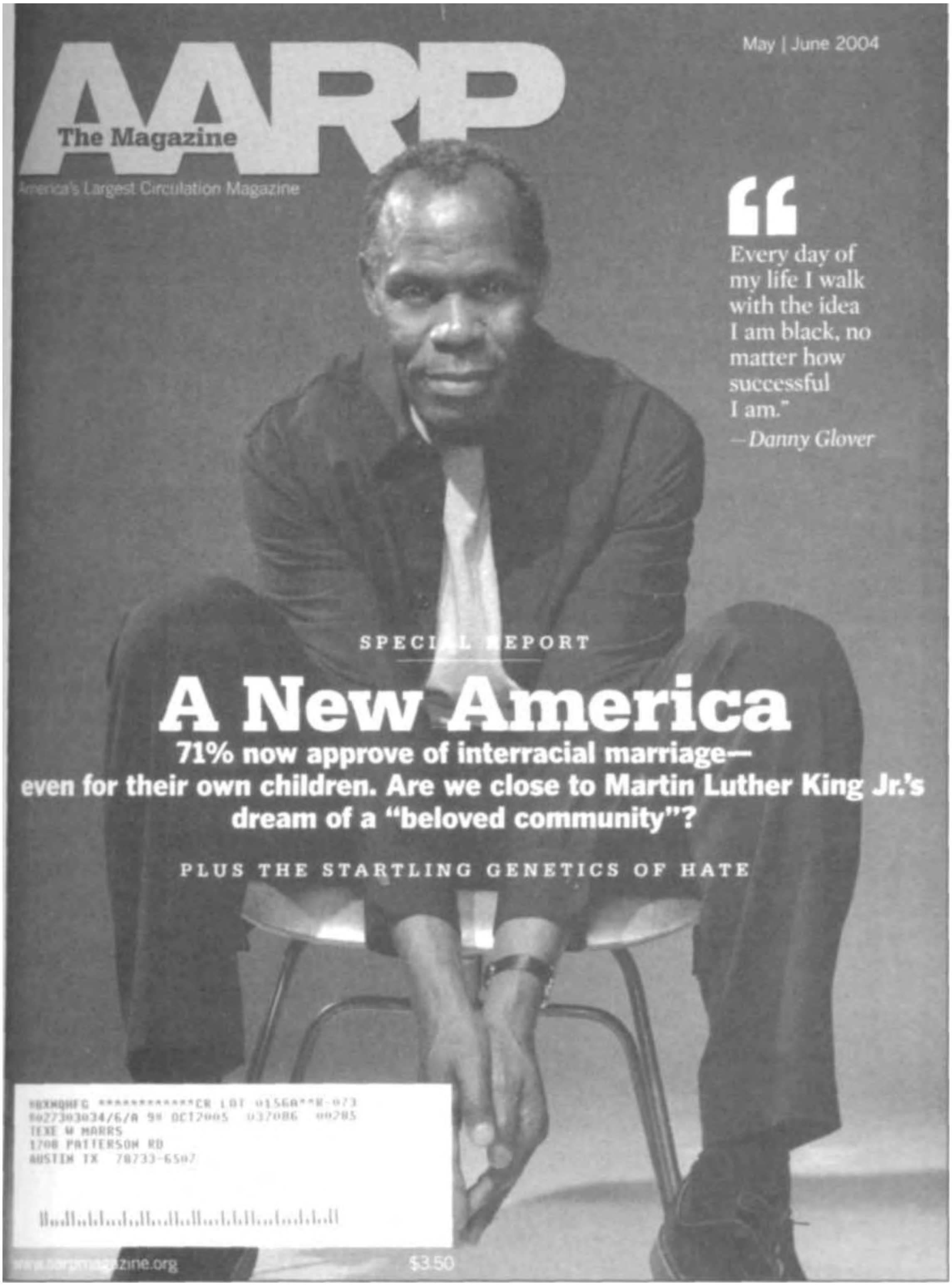
AARP
The Magazine
America's Largest Circulation Magazine
May | June 2004
"Every day of my life I walk with the idea I am black, no matter how successful I am."
—Danny Glover
SPECIAL REPORT
A New America
71% now approve of interracial marriage—even for their own children. Are we close to Martin Luther King Jr.'s dream of a "beloved community"?
PLUS THE STARTLING GENETICS OF HATE
TEXE W MARRS
1708 PATTERSON RD
AUSTIN TX 78733-6507
www.aarpmagazine.org
$3.50

Actor Danny Glover, notorious for his Marxist liberal political activism, sends a cabalistic message through the medium of *AARP* magazine, also known for its Marxist and Jewish agenda. Glover is signaling deep occultic spirits to empower his quest.

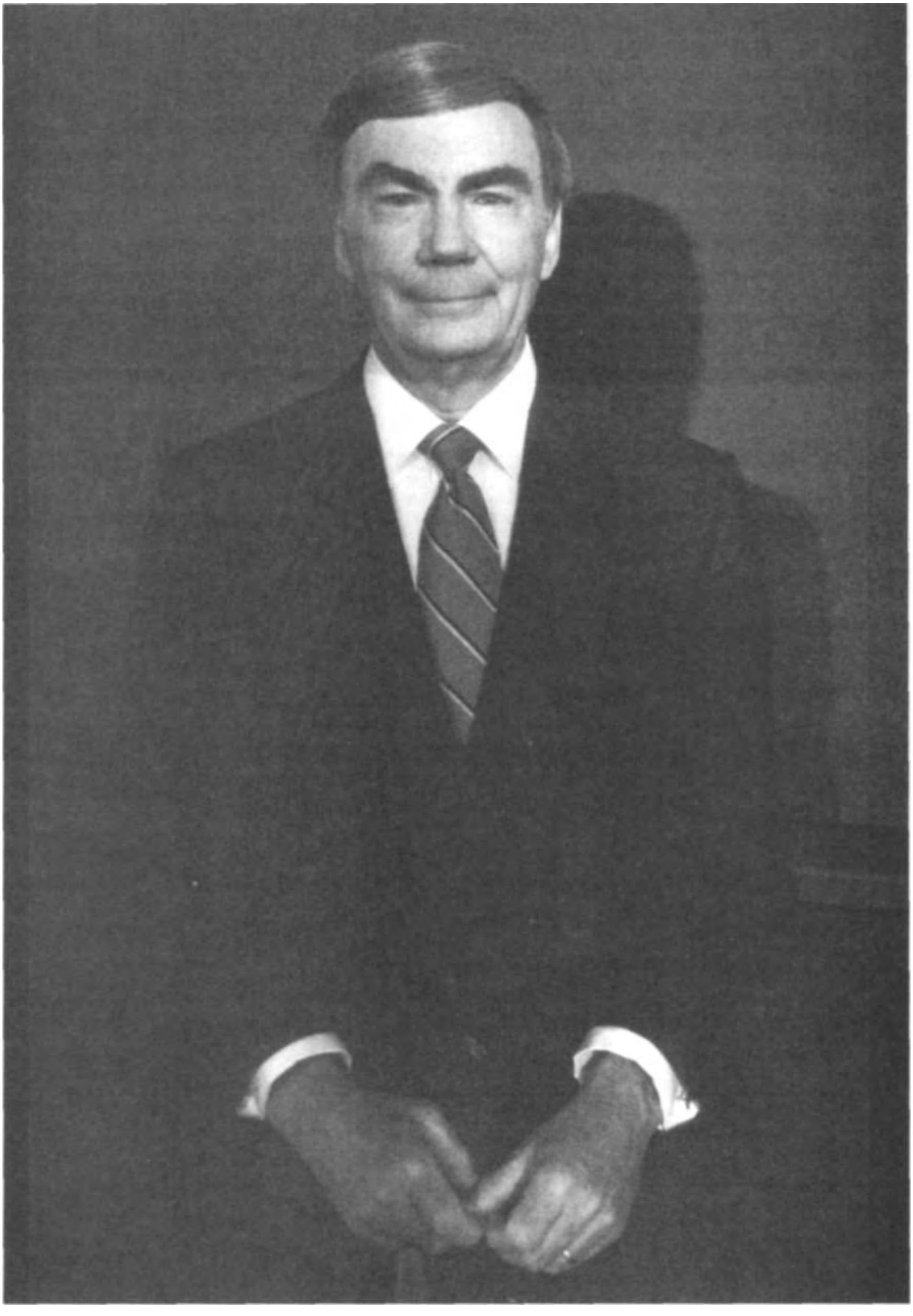

Sam Donaldson's face has been a staple for many years on ABC News. But here, in this photo in *Smart Business* magazine, it is Donaldson's hands we should pay attention to. This full page shot of Sam Donaldson had no caption and no explanation. Obviously, it was staged for the sole benefit of those who know.

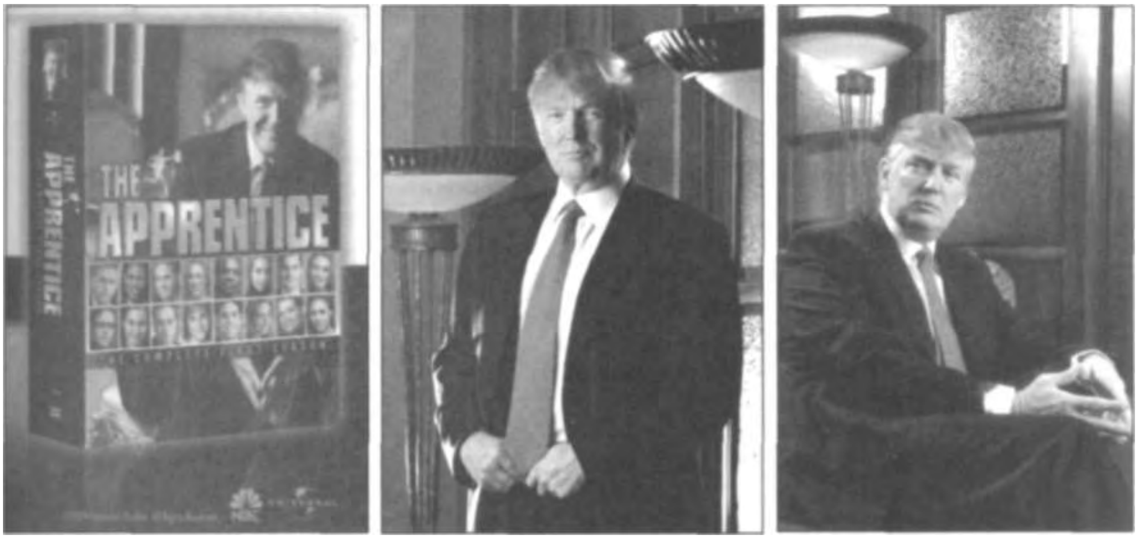
THE APPRENTICE
THE APPRENTICE
NBC

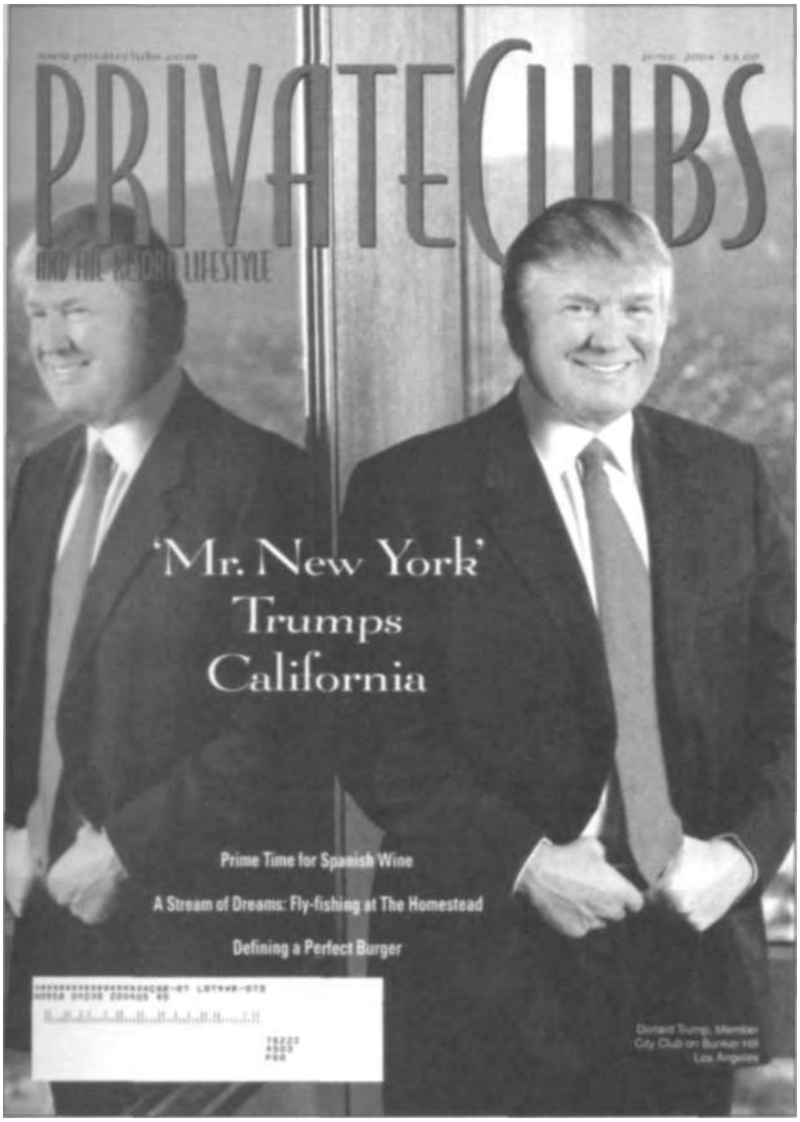
www.privateclubs.com
June 2004 $5.00
PRIVATE CLUBS
AND THE RESORT LIFESTYLE
'Mr. New York' Trumps California
Prime Time for Spanish Wine
A Stream of Dreams: Fly-fishing at The Homestead
Defining a Perfect Burger
Donald Trump, Member
City Club on Bunker Hill
Los Angeles

Impresario Donald Trump demonstrates his knowledge of the Illuminati's cabalistic Baphomet/Priory of Sion hand sign in the ad (left, above) for his successful TV series, *The Apprentice.* Then, in the glossy mag *Private Clubs,* June 2004, read mostly by wealthy members of elite country clubs. Trump is shown three times, once on the cover and twice inside, in cabalistic poses. Analysis: At center, above, Trump's necktie and hands create a sexual "diamond in the lotus" position, with three triangles. The magazine cover photo at left includes the mirror factor, the message being that there are two Trumps, the esoteric, private "Illuminati Trump," and the outgoing and extroverted "Public Trump." Finally, at top, right, we also are shown a serious Donald sitting and giving the required cabalistic triangle sign with both the fingers and thumbs of both hands touching. This is a common sign of recognition among Illuminati.

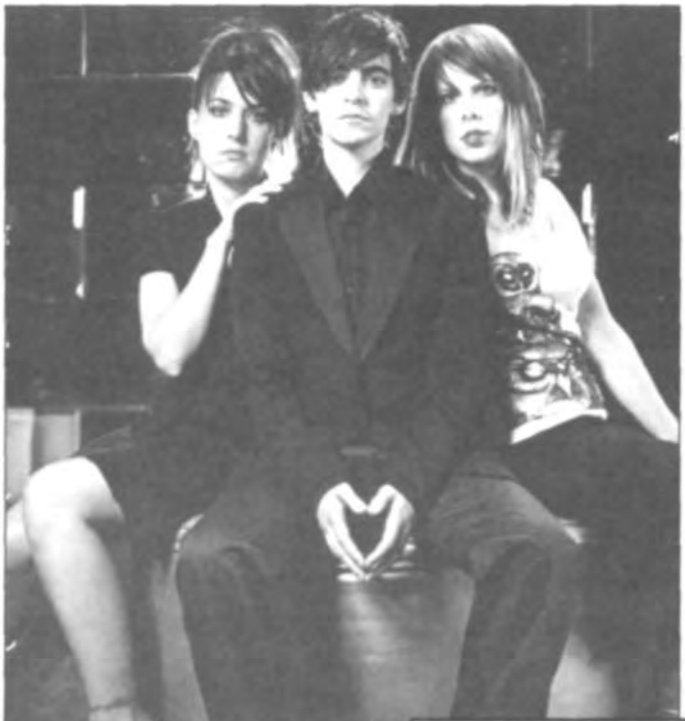

Mexican actor Diego Luna played a bisexual in the raunchy movie, *Y Tu Mama Tambien* (*And Your Mother, Too*). In this photo from *Interview* magazine (2004), Luna gives the Baphomet and Priory of Sion hand sign giving it cabalistic sexual impact by placement of his hands in the genital area. He shows his indifference and ambivalence toward the beautiful girls on either side, conduct befitting a homosexual.

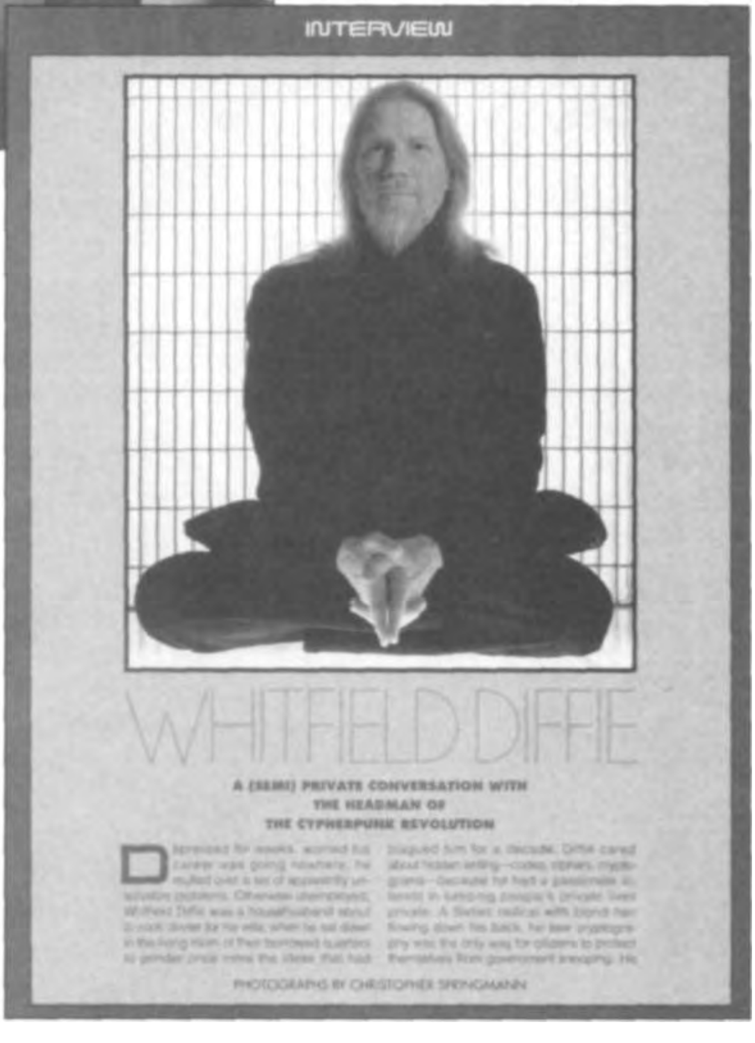

INTERVIEW

WHITFIELD DIFFIE

A (SEMI) PRIVATE CONVERSATION WITH
THE HEADMAN OF
THE CYPHERPUNK REVOLUTION

PHOTOGRAPHS BY CHRISTOPHER SPRINGMANN

Whitfield Diffie, highly acclaimed cryptographic computer software designer for the Defense Department and for Sun Microsystems. Diffie's wife is an Egyptologist. David Meyer, foremost authority on symbols and occultism, believes Diffie's pose is a symbol of tantric, or sexual yoga, rather then the Priory's *Spear of Longinus*. (Photo: *Omni*, Winter 1995)

TWENTY-ONE

Magical Signs of the Jewish Cabala—The Six-Pointed Star, Babylonian Witchcraft, and the Hollywood Perdition of Jerry Seinfeld and Associates

He said furthermore unto me, Son of man, seest thou what they do? even the great abominations that the house of Israel committeth here...

Ezekiel 8:6

Kabbalism is a system of Jewish mysticism and magic and is the foundational element in modern witchcraft. Virtually all of the great witches and sorcerers of this century were Kabbalists.

— William J. Schnoebelen, in
The Dark Side of Freemasonry

In the decades of the 70s, 80s, and 90s, the hottest spiritual trend was the New Age movement. As we move forward through the first decade of the 21st century, the latest cure-all spiritual phenomenon seems to be the Jewish Cabala (or Kabbalah). The Cabala is not new, of course. It's been around for centuries. The Cabala is actually ancient magic. It is an exotic blend of devilish, sometimes fanciful, New Age mystical practices topped by a philosophical bent of Jewish supremacism. Orthodox Judaism, or phariseeism, is rife with cabalism, and Jewish rabbis are the Cabala's greatest promoters.

Celebrities and Cabala

The recent explosion in mainstream interest in cabalism is boosted by the many big-name celebrities who have recently been hawking cabalism as the miraculous answer to all of man's problems. An undercover BBC reporter who infiltrated a London cabala group witnessed singer Madonna and Guy Ritchie chanting mystic spells to "cleanse" Chernobyl, the site in Ukraine of a nuclear plant disaster in 1986.[1] Other news accounts link entertainers Paris Hilton, Britney Spears, Roseanne Barr, Demi Moore, Shirley MacLaine, Ashton Kutcher, Sandra Bernhard, Barbra Streisand, Dianne Keaton, Gwyneth Paltrow, Goldie Hawn, Elizabeth Taylor, Michael Jackson, Mick Jagger, Uri Gellar, Diane Ladd, Laura Dern and a legion of other "stars" with practice of cabala.[2]

Look closely when you see any of these people on TV or pictured in magazines and you'll often see the characteristic red string wristband they wear. Lately, former President Bill Clinton's been spotted wearing it—he's a cabalist—and so has Florida's politician Katherine Harris, who became a famous household icon as Florida's Republican Secretary of State during the bizarre 2000 election snafu. Republican bigwig and former House Speaker, Newt Gingrich is reported to be a cabala advocate, and some say conservative talk show host Rush Limbaugh and his rabbi are also into the cabala.

Among the most notorious of cabalists are the TV comedy stars of the once #1-rated "The Jerry Seinfeld Show." The producer of the Seinfeld show was Larry David, a Jew, all four of the cast were Jews, and cabalistic hand signs, occult language, and magic rituals were covertly planted in many episodes.

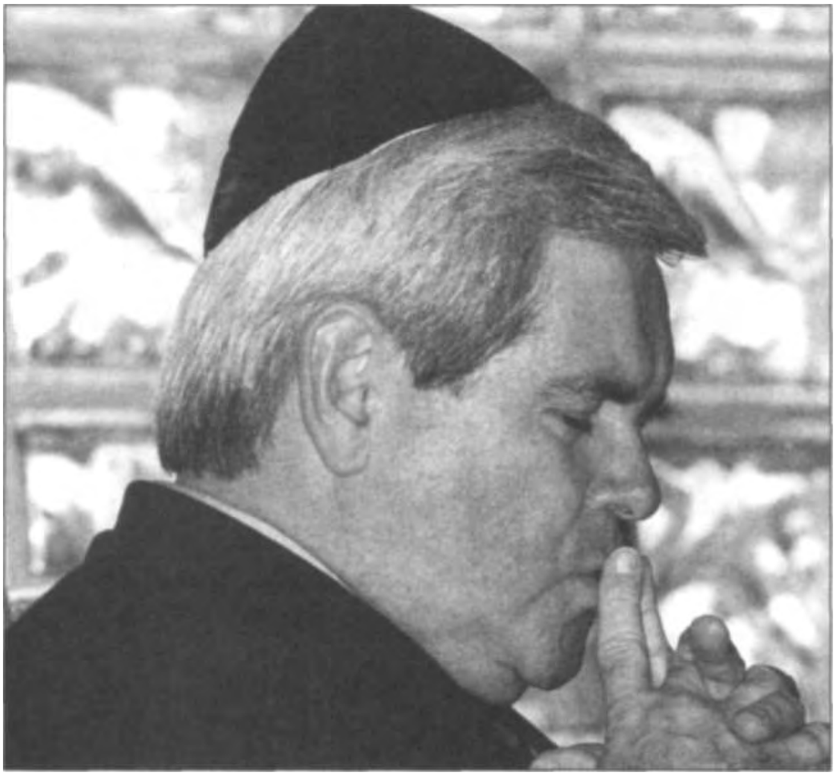

Republican Party spokesman and former Speaker of the House Newt Gingrich, shown here wearing his Judaism skull cap, is into New Age cabalistic magic and is a paid spokesman for Zionist interests.

Jason Alexander, who played the loveable loser "George Costanza" on the show, posed for *TV Guide* magazine in a blatantly cabalistic body pose. Plus, his left and right hands gave the "El Diablo" horned devil sign in an "As Above, So Below" gesture.

Michael Richards, who portrayed the klutzy "Kramer" in *Seinfeld,* also seems to relish giving cabalistic and Masonic hand signs and gestures. Richards was pictured on the front cover of the *Scottish Rite Journal,* and inside the publication, he told of how pleased he is to be a Freemason.[3]

Star Trek's Leonard Nimoy ("Mr. Spock") is constantly sighted in cabalistic poses. His famous Vulcan hand sign on the TV series was actually the Hebrew letter, *Shin.*[4] Its display is part and parcel of Jewish religion. So every time viewers observed Mr. Spock (Nimoy) giving the sign, they were unknowingly being made a participant in a cabalistic occult ritual.

Sodom, Egypt, and 21st Century Judaism

In one of the most controversial of all the many video documentaries I have produced, *Cauldron of Abbadon,* I stated, *"From Jerusalem and Israel flow a torrent of satanic evil and mischief endangering the whole world.* "[5] Zionist Jews and their cohorts in the Christian Zionist community were angered over what I said, but they had no response to the mountain of facts presented in the video proving my point.

It is undeniable that God Himself, in *Revelation 11:8,* declares that in the last days just prior to Christ's return, one of the most wicked places on earth will be Jerusalem and Israel. In *Revelation* God calls Jerusalem "Sodom and Egypt."

The question is, why? Why is Jerusalem and the nation of Israel spiritually "Sodom and Egypt?" I believe it is because of the Jewish religion, a religion diametrically opposed to the Old Testament faith of Moses, Isaac, Jacob, and the prophets.

From the days of the Jews' captivity in Babylon, to today, the religion of the Jews has increasingly grown more dark and more wicked. Jesus openly castigated the Jewish religionists; He called them "blind guides," "fools, hypocrites." He said, "ye devour widows' houses, and for a pretense make long prayer...ye compass sea and land to make one proselyte, and when he is made, ye make him twofold more the child of hell than yourselves" *(Matthew 23:14-15).*

Children of hell, that's what Jesus called the Jewish religious teachers. That was almost 2,000 years ago. Well, guess what? The Jewish religionists are even worse now, in the 21st century. They've had almost 2,000 years more to practice and perfect their evil religion. Today, those who practice satanic cabalism and believe in the Talmud are the children of hell a hundred times over.

In *Codex Magica* we do not have the space to fully report on the almost unbelievably wicked Talmudic and Cabalistic religion of the Jews. But it is important to understand that the horrific nature of the Jews' religion lie in its man-made traditions. In reality, these traditions are satanic in origin. I refer especially to the *Jewish Talmud,* the legalistic law traditions of the rabbis, and to the *Jewish Cabala* (also Kabbalah or Quaballah), which are the mystical teachings and traditions of the rabbis and sages.

If the Jews had stuck to the teachings of the Old Testament, Satan would not have had such terrible inroads. Indeed, if Moses and the prophets had been heeded, or if their writings were honored today, the Jews would believe in Jesus Christ as Messiah and be saved by faith in His promises. Instead, the Jews departed from the prophets, and over the centuries the rabbis steadily developed a body of man-made literature (the *Talmud* and the *Cabala)* that is supremely wicked and corrupt. Their traditions, moreover, are antithetical to the Faith and teachings of Moses and the prophets. (I do not refer, of course, to the Faith of Jews who are Christian believers.)

Worse, it can be remarkably demonstrated that the philosophy and doctrines of the Jewish Cabala are the very fount and wellspring of virtually every wicked, occult sect, satanic secret society, and witchcraft cult that has arisen in the past one thousand years!

The Cabala brings together in one neat package the core of all the Mystery teachings of the ancients. Indeed, the Holy Bible gives evidence that the Jewish elders had brought the Mysteries into the Temple and had conducted secret ceremonies in hidden chambers as far back as the days of the prophet Ezekiel (see *Ezekiel 8).* God called these teachings and rituals *"abominations."*

Regrettably, the abominations are multiplied in the 21st century Jewish religion in which the Cabala plays a central role.

The Masonic Lodge and The Cabala

Freemasonry has long praised the Cabala, and its top officials have admitted that the Lodge's rituals and teachings are but the offspring of the Jewish tradition. Albert Pike, former Sovereign Grand Commander of the Scottish Rite wrote: "One is filled with admiration, on penetrating into the Sanctuary of the Cabala."[6]

Just how much Masonry owes to the Cabala is illustrated by study of the Knights of Kadosh degree (30°). Ed Decker, director of Free the Masons Ministries, reports that the trappings of this degree ritual are "overtly sinister" and incorporate a "High level of Kabbalistic symbolism."

> When one is surrounded by black curtains, skulls, and a coffin with a shrouded knight speaking forth from within, it doesn't take a spiritual giant to discern that this is not a godly organization![7]

Confirming Decker's findings, medical doctor James L. Holly, a Christian who has done great works in exposing Freemasonry, in his outstanding volume, *The Southern Baptist Convention and Freemasonry,* shows how the 30° Masonic initiate is led unawares into a direct spiritual relationship with Satan. In the ritual, Satan is personified as a mysterious cabalistic mystic.[8]

Interestingly, *Richardson's Monitor of Freemasonry* says that, "the Knights of Kadosh Degree is intimately connected with the ancient Order of Knights Templar, as it commemorates their old ceremonies of initiation."[9] Allegedly, the members of the Order of Knights Templar worshipped Baphomet, the hideous male/female Luciferian goat god and conducted blasphemous ceremonies, which included urinating on a cross and homosexual sodomy.

Freemasonry is Jewish

In 1855, the renowned Rabbi Isaac Wise wrote: "Freemasonry is a Jewish establishment, whose history, grades, official appointments, passwords, and explanations are Jewish from beginning to end."[10]

The *Jewish Tribune* newspaper, in 1927, in an editorial, stated: "Freemasonry is based on Judaism. Eliminate the teachings of Judaism from the Masonic ritual and what is left?"[11]

Ray Novosel, writing from Australia in 2004, states:

> **Zionist world leaders, men in influential positions with the various Masonic organizations everywhere, have worked "hand in glove" for a universal world revolution, which will bring in the One World Church and a One World Government. Many Masonic Lodges are exclusively Jewish, as are the controlling**

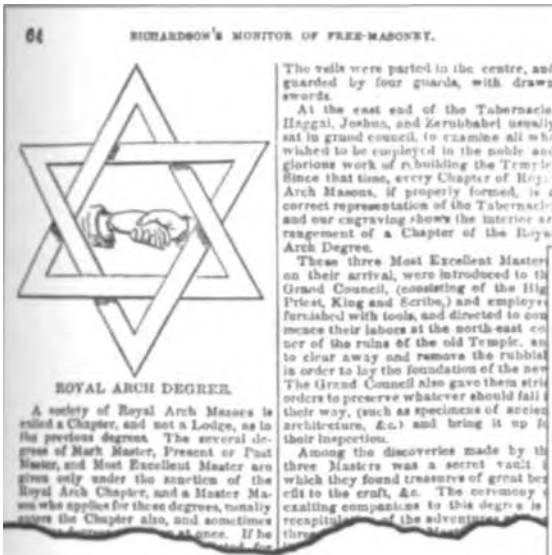

64 RICHARDSON'S MONITOR OF FREE-MASONRY.

ROYAL ARCH DEGREE.

A society of Royal Arch Masons is called a Chapter, and not a Lodge, as in the previous degrees. The several degrees of Mark Master, Present or Past Master, and Most Excellent Master are given only under the sanction of the Royal Arch Chapter, and a Master Mason who applies for these degrees, usually enters the Chapter also, and sometimes

at once. If he

The veils were parted in the centre, and guarded by four guards, with drawn swords.

At the east end of the Tabernacle, Haggai, Joshua, and Zerubbabel usually sat in grand council, to examine all who wished to be employed in the noble and glorious work of rebuilding the Temple. Since that time, every Chapter of Royal Arch Masons, if properly formed, is a correct representation of the Tabernacle, and our engraving shows the interior arrangement of a Chapter of the Royal Arch Degree.

These three Most Excellent Master on their arrival, were introduced to th Grand Council, (consisting of the Hig Priest, King and Scribe,) and employe furnished with tools, and directed to com mence their labors at the north-east co ner of the ruins of the old Temple, an to clear away and remove the rubbis in order to lay the foundation of the new The Grand Council also gave them stri orders to preserve whatever should fall their way, (such as specimens of ancien architecture, &c.) and bring it up f their inspection.

Among the discoveries made by th three Masters was a secret vault which they found treasures of great be efit to the craft, &c. The ceremony exalting companions to this degree is recapitul of the adventures

In *Richardson's Monitor of Freemasonry* (p. 64), this symbol is used to illustrate the Royal Arch Degree. Masonic literature is replete with examples of the Jewish Star of David and other Cabalistic tokens, symbols, emblems, and signs.

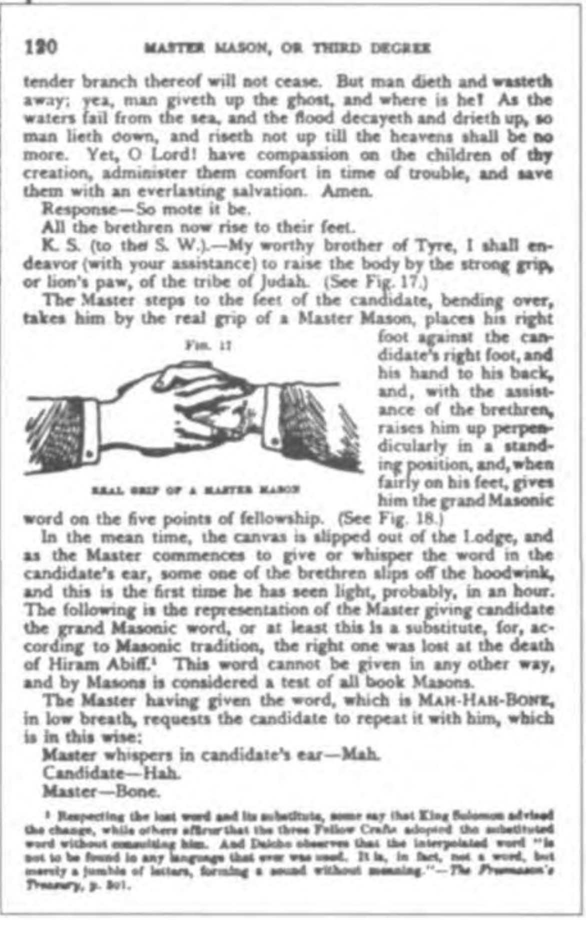

120 MASTER MASON, OR THIRD DEGREE

tender branch thereof will not cease. But man dieth and wasteth away; yea, man giveth up the ghost, and where is he! As the waters fail from the sea, and the flood decayeth and drieth up, so man lieth down, and riseth not up till the heavens shall be no more. Yet, O Lord! have compassion on the children of thy creation, administer them comfort in time of trouble, and save them with an everlasting salvation. Amen.

Response—So mote it be.

All the brethren now rise to their feet.

K. S. (to the S. W.).—My worthy brother of Tyre, I shall endeavor (with your assistance) to raise the body by the strong grip, or lion's paw, of the tribe of Judah. (See Fig. 17.)

The Master steps to the feet of the candidate, bending over, takes him by the real grip of a Master Mason, places his right foot against the candidate's right foot, and his hand to his back, and, with the assistance of the brethren, raises him up perpendicularly in a standing position, and, when fairly on his feet, gives him the grand Masonic word on the five points of fellowship. (See Fig. 18.)

FIG. 17

REAL GRIP OF A MASTER MASON

In the mean time, the canvas is slipped out of the Lodge, and as the Master commences to give or whisper the word in the candidate's ear, some one of the brethren slips off the hoodwink, and this is the first time he has seen light, probably, in an hour. The following is the representation of the Master giving candidate the grand Masonic word, or at least this is a substitute, for, according to Masonic tradition, the right one was lost at the death of Hiram Abiff.[1] This word cannot be given in any other way, and by Masons is considered a test of all book Masons.

The Master having given the word, which is MAH-HAH-BONE, in low breath, requests the candidate to repeat it with him, which is in this wise:

Master whispers in candidate's ear—Mah.

Candidate—Hah.

Master—Bone.

[1] Respecting the lost word and its substitute, some say that King Solomon advised the change, while others affirm that the three Fellow Crafts adopted the substituted word without consulting him. And Dalcho observes that the interpolated word "is not to be found in any language that ever was used. It is, in fact, not a word, but merely a jumble of letters, forming a sound without meaning."—*The Freemason's Treasury*, p. 301.

Freemasonry's The Real Grip of a Master Mason (3°) is a magical handshake based on ancient Jewish Cabala and the letter "Shin" from the 22-letter Hebrew alphabet. (*Duncan's Masonic Ritual and Monitor*, p. 120)

> B'nai B'rith Lodges—the mother of the infamous and very dangerous Anti Defamation League (ADL).[12]

Masonry's Jewish Roots

A popular pro-Freemasonry web site, in an article entitled *"Judaism and Freemasonry,"* comments:

> Jews were actively involved in the beginnings of Freemasonry in America. There is evidence they were among those who established Masonry in seven of the original thirteen states...A Jewish Mason, Moses M. Hays, helped introduce the Scottish Rite in America...Jews, including Rabbis, continued to be involved in the Masonic movement in the United States throughout our history. There have been 51 Jewish American Grand Masters...
>
> There are many common themes and ideals in Masonic and Jewish rituals, symbols, and words.[13]

The late Pope John Paul II was a believer in Jewish Cabala. On March *22,* 1984, the Pope received members of the infamous *B'nai B'rith* Freemasonry Lodge of New York City, made up exclusively of influential Jews, at the Vatican.

THE
MAGAZINE
New Age.
"I Am Proud
To Be a Mason"
(See page 9.)
Rabbi Seymour Atlas, 32°, K.·.C.·.C.·.H.·.
APRIL • 1987 • VOLUME XCV NUMBER 4

"I am proud to be a Mason" writes Rabbi Seymour Adas, 32°, in this issue of *The New Age Magazine* (April 1987). Note: The name of this magazine has since been changed to *The Scottish Rite Journal*, to hide the connection of Masons with the occultic New Age movment. In fact, the Masonic order is predominantly led by Jews. As its former Sovereign Grand Commander, Albert Pike, has revealed, the symbols and rituals of Freemasonry are all based on the Cabala of the Jews.

The most honored Masonic leader in the history of Freemasonry was Albert Pike. Pike maintained that, "every Masonic Lodge is a temple of religion; and its teachings are instruction in religion."[14] Now, Pike also asserted that the true meanings of the symbols of Freemasonry are found in the occult philosophy of the Jewish Cabala, that Freemasonry owes all its secrets to the Cabala, and that Freemasonry is a religion based on the Cabala.[15]

Demons, Magic, and Mysticism in the Cabala

Here are the eye-opening comments of a number of knowledgeable authorities on the Jewish Cabala:

> The Cabala contains such power and demonic teaching, it is more than enough to give the ideology and driving force needed to lead the world astray and to keep such an evil conspiracy alive through the centuries...The Cabala is a teaching source of the Freemasons as well as for other groups.
>
> — John Torrell, publisher
> *The Dove*

> Kabbalah: The sacred books of black magic of Orthodox Judaism which form a large part of the basis of the western secret societies, from Rosicrucianism to Freemasonry and the OTO. Kabbalism is itself derived from the sorcery of ancient Babylon and...Pharaohic Egypt.
>
> — Craig Heimbichner
> *Blood on the Altar*

> Kabbalism is a system of Jewish mysticism and magic and is the foundational element in modern witchcraft. Virtually all of the great witches and sorcerers of this century were Kabbalists.
>
> — William J. Schnoebelen,
> *The Dark Side of Freemasonry*

> The Hebrew Cabala is a series of occultic writings that are as demonic as any incantation ever uttered in witchcraft. Webster's Dictionary tells us the Cabala (sometimes spelled Kabbala) is "an occult religious philosophy developed by certain Jewish rabbis..."
>
> — James Lloyd
> *The Apocalypse Chronicles*
> (Vol. VII, No. 1, 2005)

Sorcery is commonplace in the depraved religious rituals of cabalistic Judaism. Here a rabbi is seen carrying a chicken off to be sacrificed in a *voodoo/* Santeria-type ritual during the Jewish festival of Yom Kippur. *(Israel, A Photobiography,* by Micha Bar-Am, New York: Simon & Schuster, 1998)

Twisted Satanic Rituals and lies

The rabbinical doctrines and teachings of Cabalism are based on a curious blending and mosaic of astrology, numerology, graphology, color magic, symbology, alchemy, pagan religion, and pure Luciferianism.

There are hand signs and body gestures, talismanic jewelry and clothing, hidden codes, and on and on. The end result is a confusing jumble of "man is God" theology (but only *Jewish* man—Gentiles are inferior) and magical formulae, words of power, incantations and spells. Heads of chickens are cropped off and blood sprinkled around; "magic cords" of specific color are worn on the wrist as miracle-working bracelets; magic water is used to heal; magic symbols are objects of trance-like mediation; and mantra-like chants are repeated over and over.

The 22 letters of the Hebrew alphabet are touted as religious idols of great magical powers. Even their shapes are studied and accorded supernatural powers. Angels, Archangels, grimoires, devas, and elementals are worshipped and feared. There are "gods" and more "gods" but only a mysterious, hazy supreme deity behind everything. This supreme deity is a pantheistic god who fills up the whole universe. In fact, he is the macrocosm, the Universe.

Of course, as in all Illuminist magic, there's the double-minded theology of "As Above, So Below," the insidious lie that black is white and *vice versa;* that good and evil are one, that the shadow and the substance are unitary.

Sex magic holds an important place in Cabalism, and sex ritual is a popular vocation of students of Cabala.

Margie Martin, in her informed, unpublished manuscript for her upcoming book, *The Molten Image,* explains that the Tarot cards of witches and occultists are of Jewish origin and correspond with the 22 letters of the Hebrew alphabet.

Finally, Cabalism is pure Illuminism because it teaches the secret doctrine that, ultimately, the higher level adept learns: That the Holy Serpent is the true God; that all the evil that a person does, through alchemy, is magically transformed into righteousness; and that, yes, Lucifer is Lord. Satan is the true and only god. That is the essential doctrine of Cabalism.

The Star of David and The ***Jewish Utopia***

The symbol of the Jewish six-pointed star, known as the *Seal of Solomon* and as the *Magen David,* is the preeminent symbol of Cabalism, but other symbols, signs, and marks also hold the interest of cabalists, including the pentagram or pentacle, the triangle, the circle, the sun, the obelisk, the yoni, and the diamond. It is believed by cabalistic rabbis that there are hidden codes and messages in the numbering of scriptural letters. It is also believed that by working the Cabala, the earth may someday be renovated, rebuilt, perfected. This, say the rabbis, will result in a perfect Jewish Kingdom, or Utopia on earth, ruled by a Cabalist Master, a Jewish leader, naturally.

This belief system of the coming of a Jewish Utopia fits in well with the teachings of the Illuminati. Lady Queensborough, quoting the Jewish authority Bernard Lazare, in the classic *Occult Theocracy,* reported that, "There were Jews behind Weishaupt, founder of the Order of the Illuminati...Jewish financiers such as Daniel Itzig, Friedlander, Ceerfbeer, Benjamin and Abraham Goldsmid, Moses Mocatta, Veitesl Heine Ephram...also Moses Mendelsohn, Naphtali Wessely, Moses Hersheim..."[16]

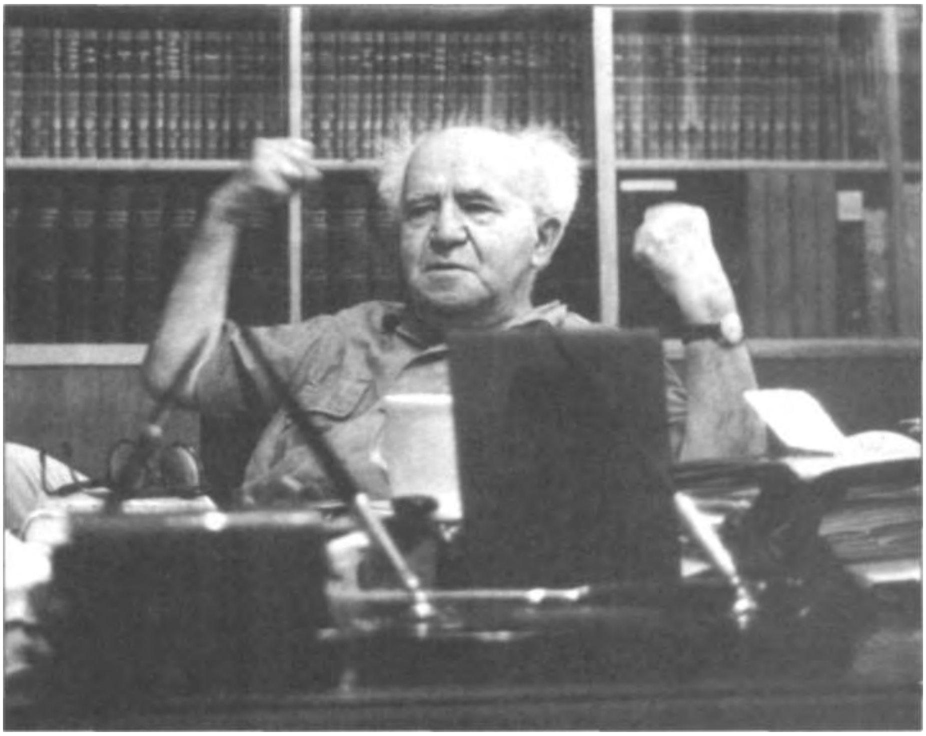

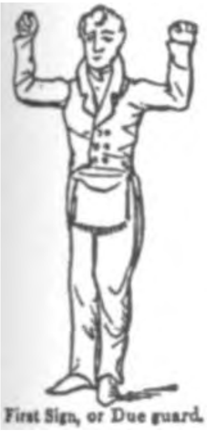
First Sign, or Due guard.

David Ben Gurion, the first Prime Minister of the newly formed nation of Israel, performs the First Sign of a Select Master Mason. Ben Gurion, a dedicated Marxist/Leninist, was quoted as saying, "I am in favor of Bolshevism" ***(American Spectator,*** **January, 1998). (Photos:** ***Richardson's Monitor of Freemasonry,*** **p. 84;** ***Israel, A Photobiography,*** **by Micha Bar-Am, New York: Simon & Schuster, 1998)**

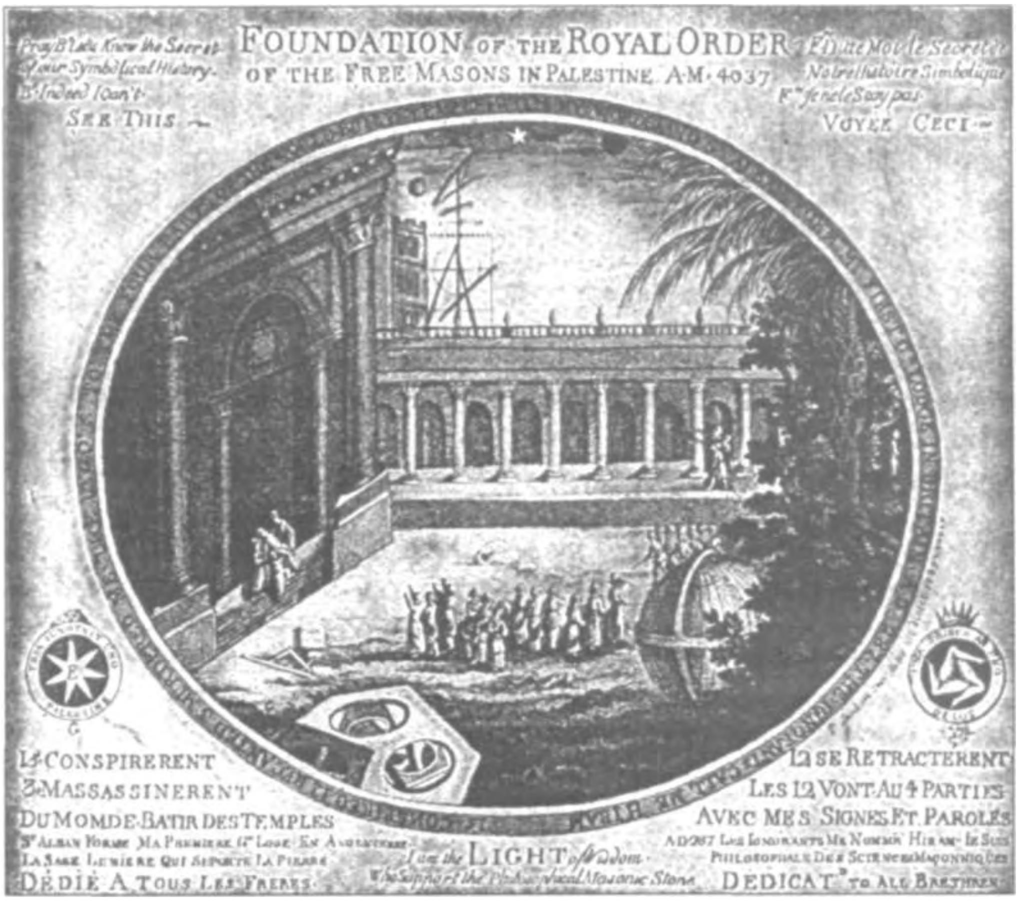
FOUNDATION OF THE ROYAL ORDER
OF THE FREE MASONS IN PALESTINE A.M. 4037
Pray B.r Let Know the Secret of our Symbolical History.
B.r Indeed I Can't
SEE THIS
Voyez Ceci
12 se Retracterent
Les 12 vont au 4 Parties
Avec mes Signes et Paroles
15 Conspirerent
3 Massassinerent
Du Momde Batir des Temples
I am the LIGHT of Wisdom
Who Support the Philosophical Masonic Stone
Dédié a tous les Freres
Dedicat.d to all Brethren

This illustration from *Mackey's Encyclopedia of Masonry* dates the founding by Jews of the Royal Order of the Freemasons in Palestine at Anno Lucis 4037, or 37 AD.

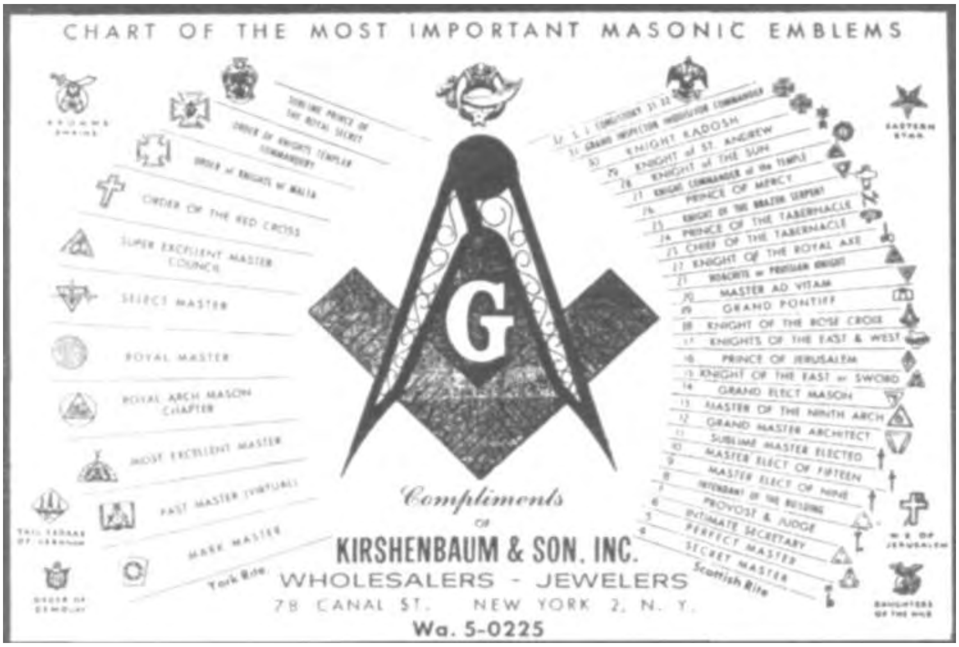
CHART OF THE MOST IMPORTANT MASONIC EMBLEMS
SHRINE
SUBLIME PRINCE OF THE ROYAL SECRET
ORDER OF KNIGHTS TEMPLAR COMMANDERY
ORDER of KNIGHTS of MALTA
ORDER OF THE RED CROSS
SUPER EXCELLENT MASTER COUNCIL
SELECT MASTER
ROYAL MASTER
ROYAL ARCH MASON CHAPTER
MOST EXCELLENT MASTER
PAST MASTER (VIRTUAL)
MARK MASTER
York Rite
TALL CEDARS OF LEBANON
ORDER OF DEMOLAY
G
32 S. I. CONSISTORY 31 32
31 GRAND INSPECTOR INQUISITOR COMMANDER
30 KNIGHT KADOSH
29 KNIGHT of ST. ANDREW
28 KNIGHT of THE SUN
27 KNIGHT COMMANDER of the TEMPLE
26 PRINCE OF MERCY
25 KNIGHT OF THE BRAZEN SERPENT
24 PRINCE OF THE TABERNACLE
23 CHIEF OF THE TABERNACLE
22 KNIGHT OF THE ROYAL AXE
21 NOACHITE or PRUSSIAN KNIGHT
20 MASTER AD VITAM
19 GRAND PONTIFF
18 KNIGHT OF THE ROSE CROIX
17 KNIGHTS OF THE EAST & WEST
16 PRINCE OF JERUSALEM
15 KNIGHT OF THE EAST or SWORD
14 GRAND ELECT MASON
13 MASTER OF THE NINTH ARCH
12 GRAND MASTER ARCHITECT
11 SUBLIME MASTER ELECTED
10 MASTER ELECT OF FIFTEEN
9 MASTER ELECT OF NINE
8 INTENDANT OF THE BUILDING
7 PROVOST & JUDGE
6 INTIMATE SECRETARY
5 PERFECT MASTER
4 SECRET MASTER
Scottish Rite
EASTERN STAR
W. S. OF JERUSALEM
DAUGHTERS OF THE NILE
Compliments of
KIRSHENBAUM & SON. INC.
WHOLESALERS - JEWELERS
78 CANAL ST. NEW YORK 2, N. Y.
Wa. 5-0225

Chart of Masonic emblems showing the many degrees published, distributed by a Jewish-owned jewelry firm.

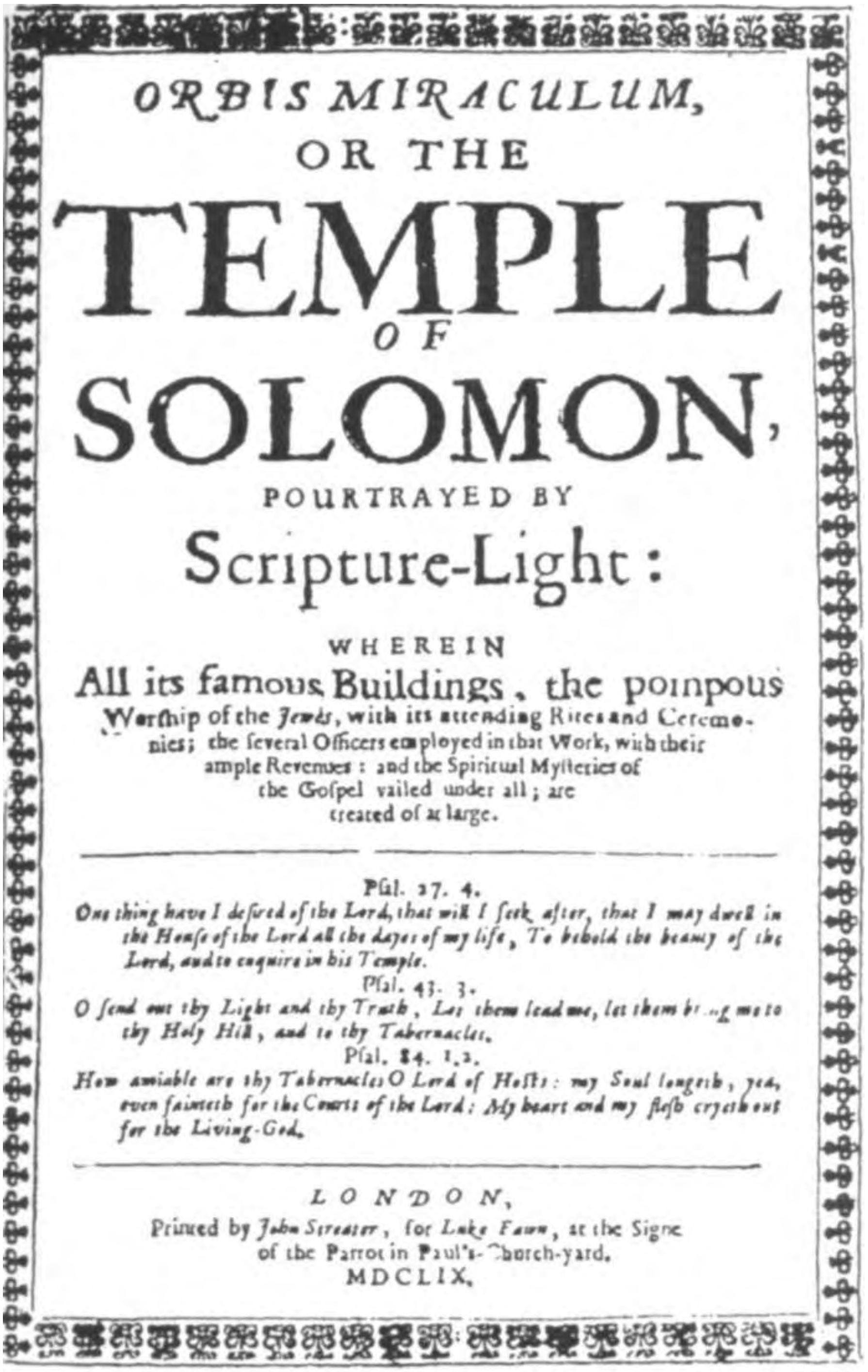

ORBIS MIRACULUM,
OR THE
TEMPLE
OF
SOLOMON,
POURTRAYED BY
Scripture-Light:

WHEREIN
All its famous Buildings, the pompous
Worſhip of the *Jews*, with its attending Rites and Ceremonies;
the ſeveral Officers employed in that Work, with their
ample Revenues: and the Spiritual Myſteries of
the Goſpel vailed under all; are
treated of at large.

Pſal. 27. 4.
One thing have I deſired of the Lord, that will I ſeek after, that I may dwell in the Houſe of the Lord all the dayes of my life, To behold the beauty of the Lord, and to enquire in his Temple.

Pſal. 43. 3.
O ſend out thy Light and thy Truth, Let them lead me, let them bring me to thy Holy Hill, and to thy Tabernacles.

Pſal. 84. 1, 2.
How amiable are thy Tabernacles O Lord of Hoſts: my Soul longeth, yea, even fainteth for the Courts of the Lord: My heart and my fleſh cryeth out for the Living-God.

LONDON,
Printed by *John Streater*, for *Luke Fawn*, at the Signe
of the Parrot in Paul's-Church-yard.
MDCLIX.

An old English masonic manual. The words *Orbis Miraculum* mean "Magic Mirror."

AMERICA
GO TO HEL
ZIONISM
IS RACISM

Many in the Arab and Islamic world know that Zionism is racism and resent the United States' blind support of Israeli Zionist aggression. Fanatical Zionism has also led to Masonic excesses, Talmudic evil, and cabalistic magic by satanic Jews. (Photo: *Reuters)*

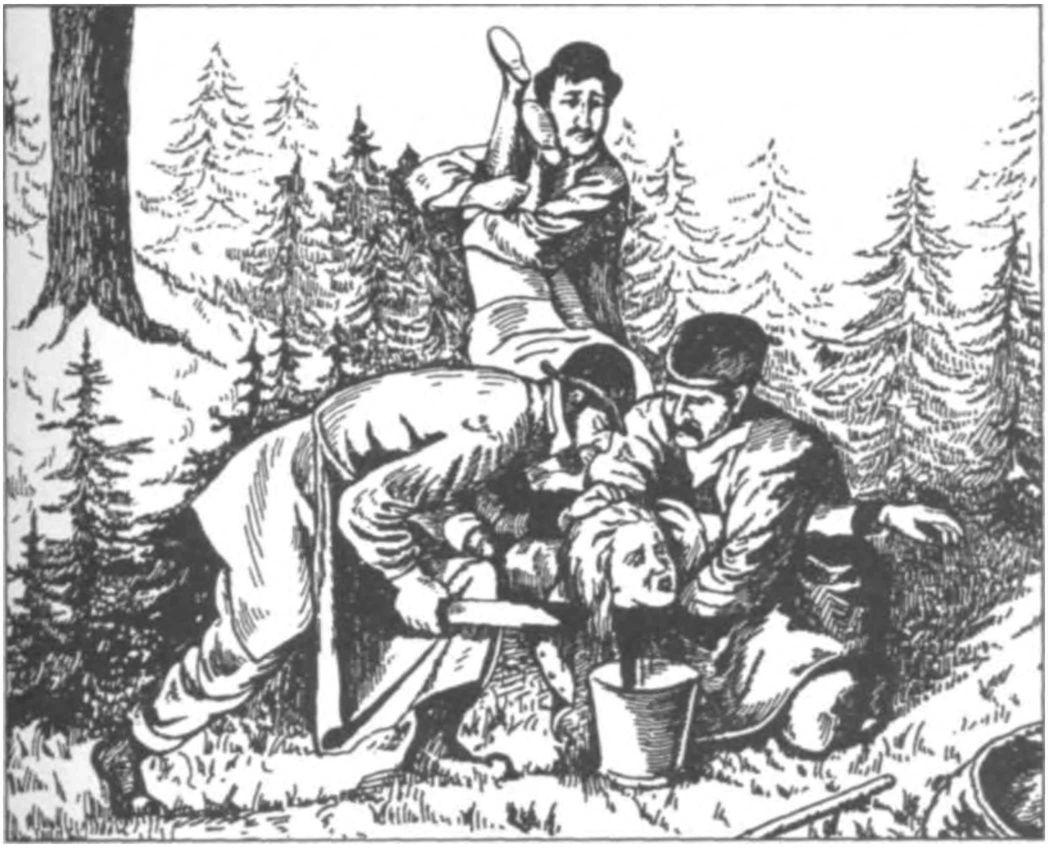

BLOOD RITUAL

Philip de Vier

For many years, in Europe and Russia, reports of cabalistic blood ritual sacrifices of young Gentile girls and boys were commonplace. While many were hype and based on old wives' tales, apparently at least some accounts proved to be true, as documented in this revealing book.

20th
CENTURY
FOX
A NEWS CORPORATION COMPANY

FOX
NEWS
channel

Some say the word and name of *"Fox"* has hidden, cabalistic significance. Numerologically, the letters FOX in the English alphabet equal the sum of 666. Jesus once called Israel's King Herod, a murderous scheming man who embraced magic, *"That old fox."* Fox television network is owned by Rupert Murdock, an ardent Zionist.

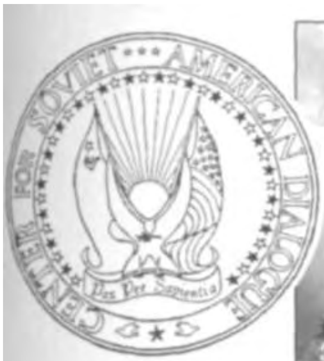
CENTER FOR SOVIET AMERICAN DIALOGUE
Pax Per Sapientia

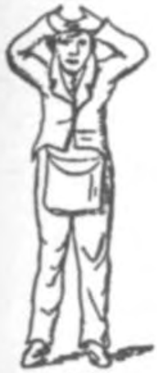

Grand Sign.

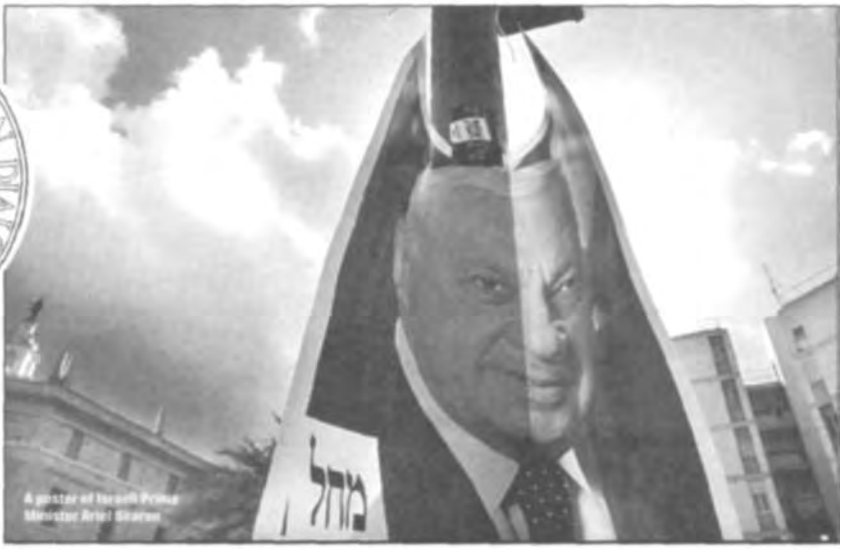
מחל
A poster of Israeli Prime Minister Ariel Sharon

This picture of a political campaign poster promoting the candidacy of Israeli Prime Minister Ariel Sharon was published in *U.S. News & World Report* (February 10, 2003, p. 17). Notice how the poster is twisted to make it look like Sharon has horns! Indeed, Sharon has been called the "Butcher of Lebanon" and is accused of the massacre of Lebanese civilians while he served as Israel's defense minister. Oddly perhaps, the horned shape of the twisted poster resembles the image of the official symbol of the U.S./U.S.S.R. Summit (see inset, above left). Also, notice the striking similarity with the Masonic Grand Sign (below inset).

Triangle design on skull cap of Jewish man is interesting. (Photo: *Israel My Glory*, January 1996)

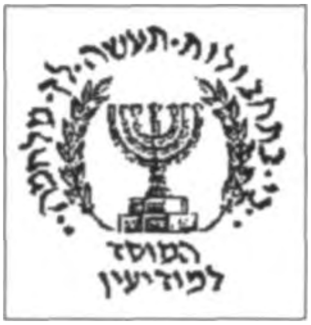

Logo of the Israel international spy agency, the *Mossad.* The Mossad has a notorious reputation for skullduggery, deception, murder, and assassination. Mossad agents commit many terrorist crimes and the Jewish-run media conveniently blame them on "Arab terrorists." Motto of Mossad and its logo is *"By Deception We Conduct War."*

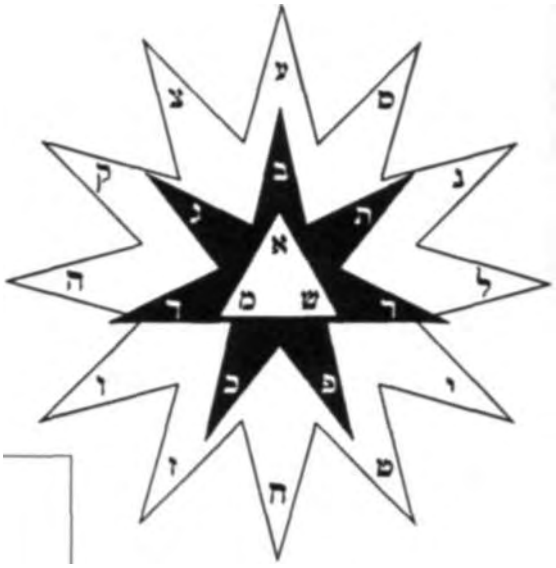

Cabala symbol (from book, ***Art and Symbols of the Occult,*** **Destiny Books, Rochester, Vermont)**

CHALDEAN MAGIC

ITS ORIGIN AND DEVELOPMENT

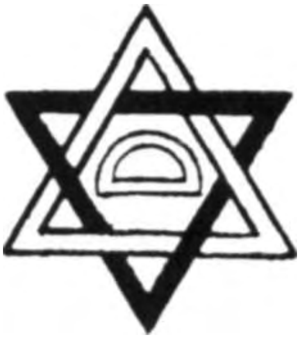

Francois Lenormant

This front cover of book *"Chaldean Magic"* highlights the importance of the Star of David to occult ritual and magic.

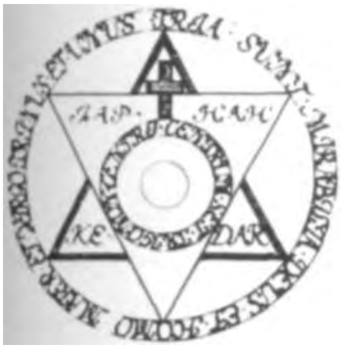

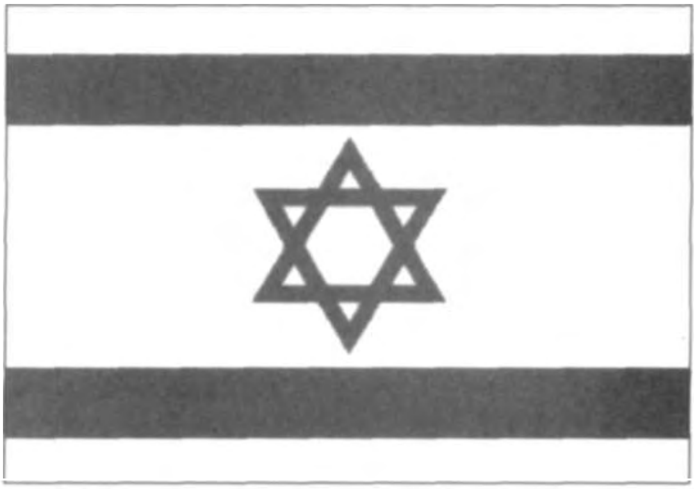

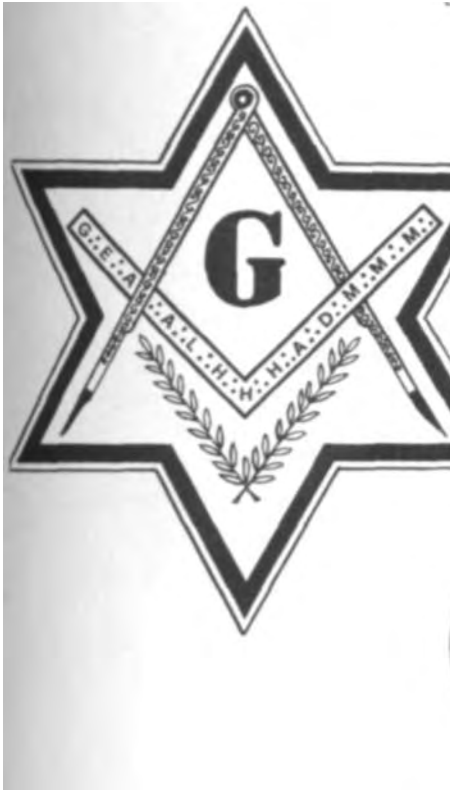
G
G.·.E.·.A
A.·.L.·.H.·.H.·.A.·.D.·.M.·.M.·.M.

The hexagram, long a magical symbol, was adopted by the Jews in Europe during the medieval period. It later became the centerpiece of the Israeli flag. Here we see a variety of hexagrams, also known as the Jewish Star of David or simply as the six-pointed star.

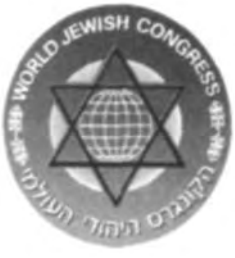
WORLD JEWISH CONGRESS

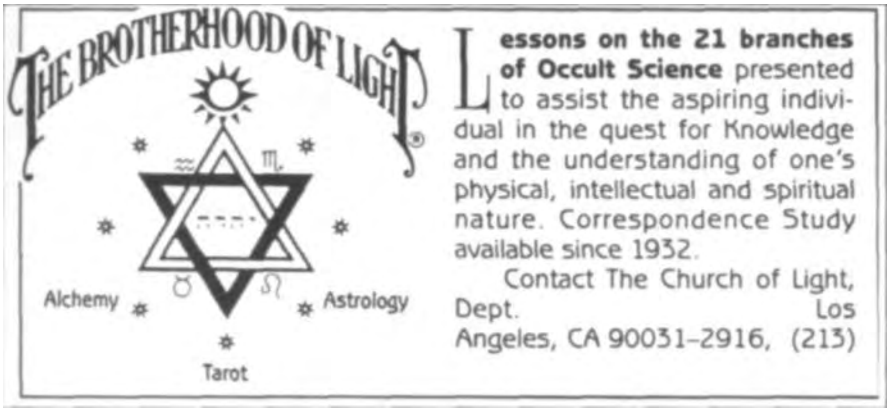
THE BROTHERHOOD OF LIGHT
Alchemy
Astrology
Tarot

Lessons on the 21 branches of Occult Science presented to assist the aspiring individual in the quest for Knowledge and the understanding of one's physical, intellectual and spiritual nature. Correspondence Study available since 1932.

Contact The Church of Light, Dept. Los Angeles, CA 90031-2916, (213)

The magic of the Cabala calls for many uses of the occultic star. Both the five pointed star and six-pointed star are used by Jewish magicians who work the Cabala formulas and rituals. An enduring cabalistic tale is that of the *Golem.* In medieval times, it was taught that by use of the magic word and by other means, an inanimate man made of clay or dust could be made to come alive. A huge and powerful monster, or beast, the Golem would then do the magician's bidding. In 1920, the classic film *Der Golem* created a stir. Directed by Paul Wegener, *Der Golem* depicted the monster variously wearing either the five-pointed star with one point up (white magic) or two points up (satanic). Also the six pointed Star of David played a part in the film's plot as a Jewish Rabbi, Rabbi Low, using the secret word *"AemAct"* brought life and breath into the artificial man.

In *Der Golem,* Rabbi Low employs the magic word and the pentagram star to bring life to the creature.

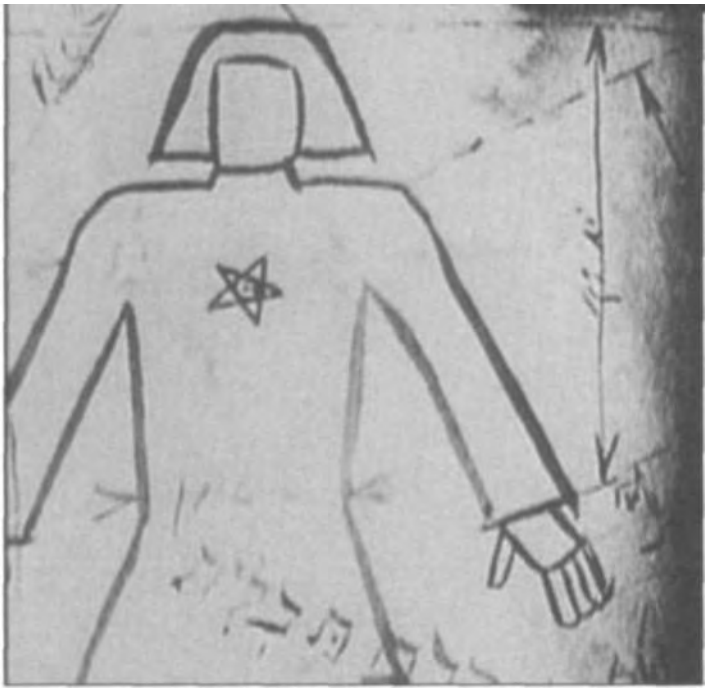

***Der Golem's* film crew used this drawing as a model.**

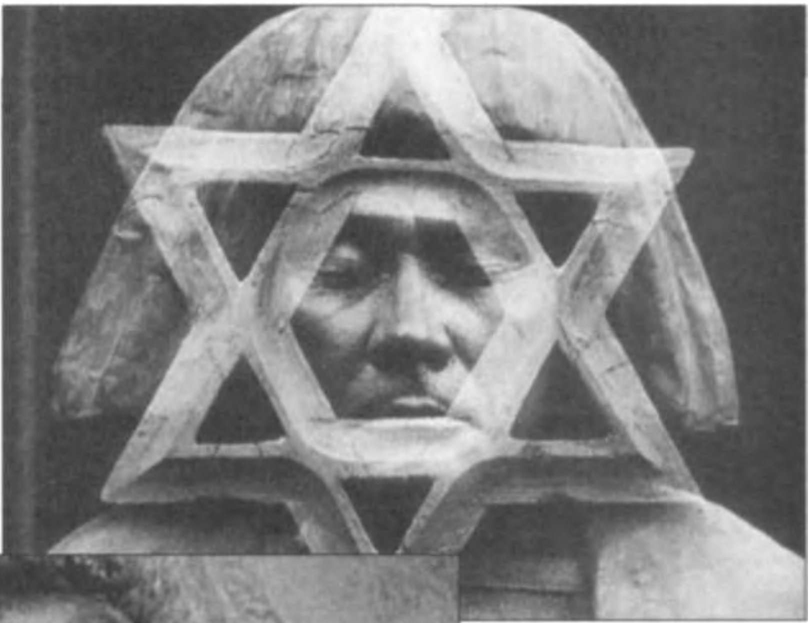

In the film, the Golem is clearly identified with Judaism by use of the Star of David.

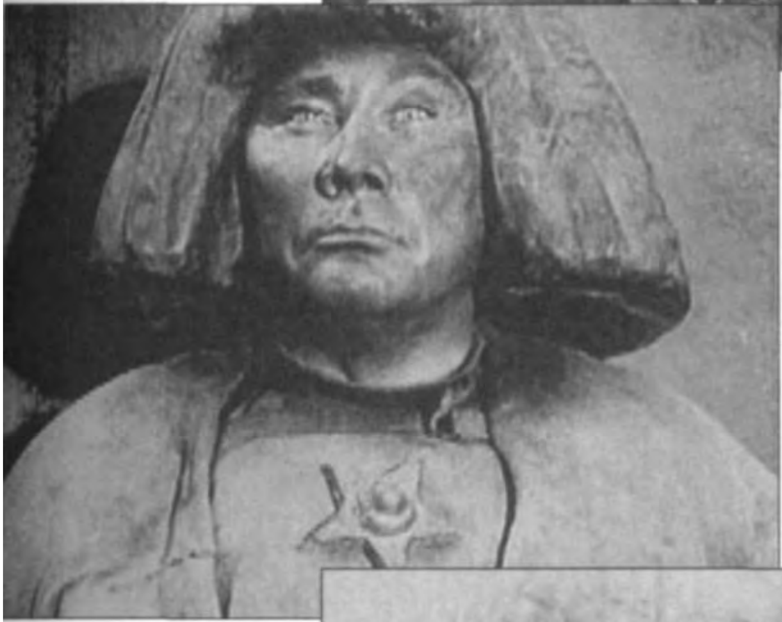

Der Golem was shown during the movie with the pentagram star. Here we see two points ascendant (negative; horns of evil).

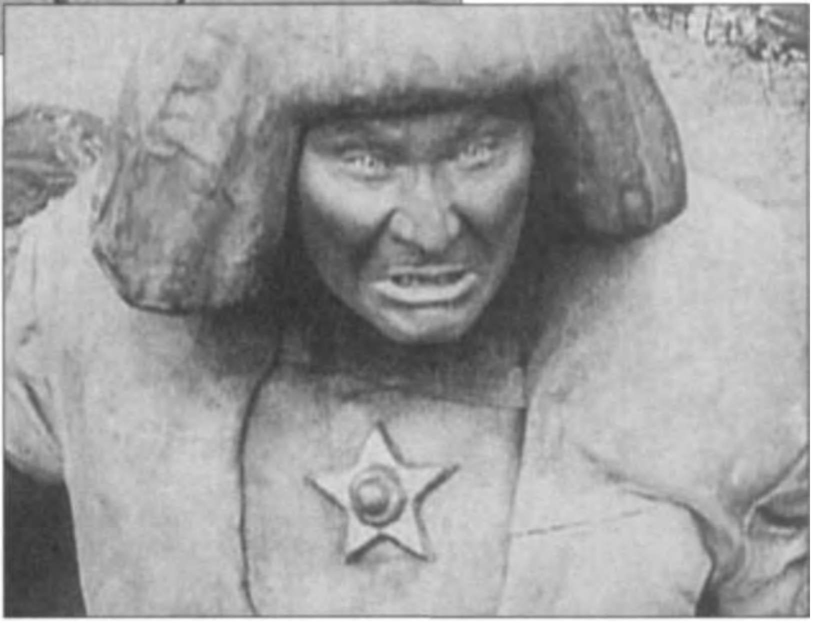

The relative position of the star points varies through the movie. It is seen here with one point ascendant, indicating positive, good magic.

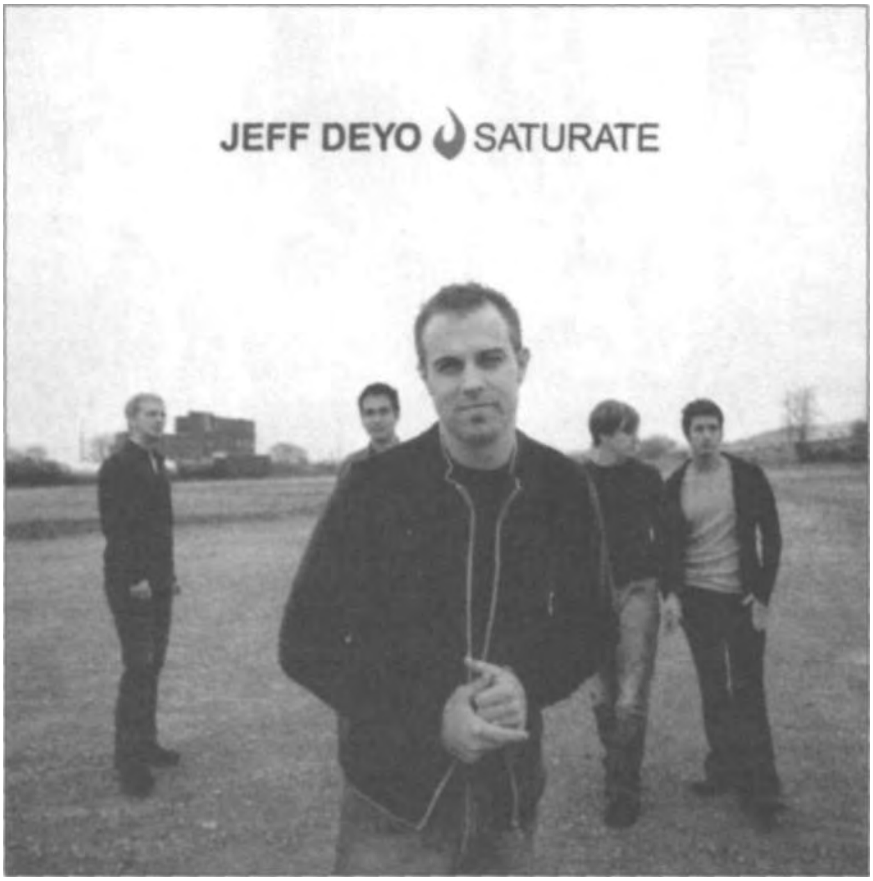

This album was advertised in *Christian Retailing* magazine in February 2002, but me handsign of the person seems to be cabalistic.

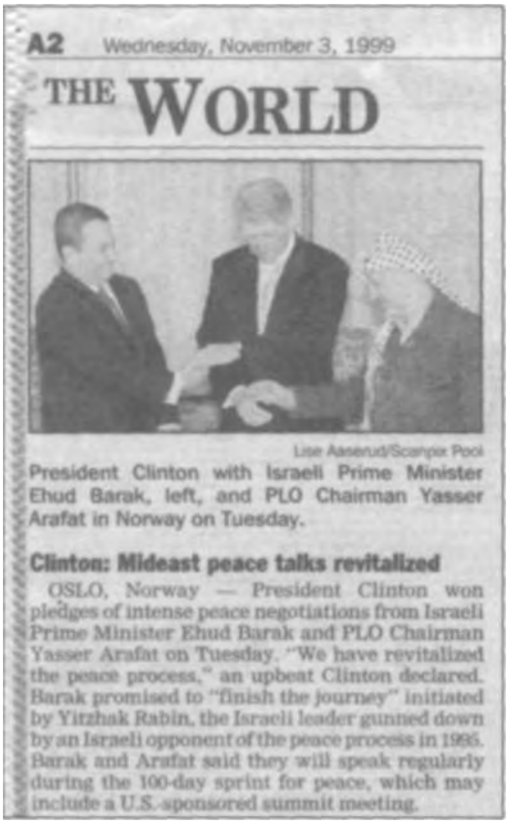

A2 Wednesday, November 3, 1999

THE WORLD

Lise Aaserud/Scanpix Pool

President Clinton with Israeli Prime Minister Ehud Barak, left, and PLO Chairman Yasser Arafat in Norway on Tuesday.

Clinton: Mideast peace talks revitalized

OSLO, Norway — President Clinton won pledges of intense peace negotiations from Israeli Prime Minister Ehud Barak and PLO Chairman Yasser Arafat on Tuesday. "We have revitalized the peace process," an upbeat Clinton declared. Barak promised to "finish the journey" initiated by Yitzhak Rabin, the Israeli leader gunned down by an Israeli opponent of the peace process in 1995. Barak and Arafat said they will speak regularly during the 100-day sprint for peace, which may include a U.S.-sponsored summit meeting.

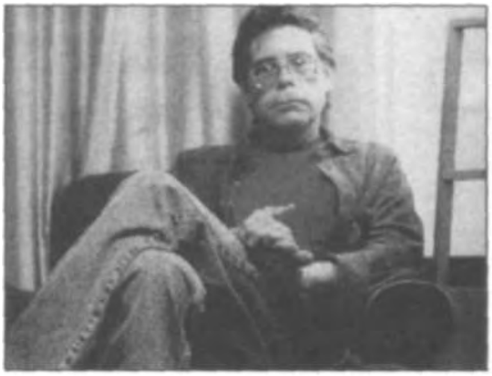

Horror fiction novelist Stephen King with his hands in exactly the same, familiar position as that of Senator Schumer (right page).

Israel's Prime Minister Ehud Barak (left), U.S.A. President Bill Clinton (center), and PLO Chief Yasser Arafat each look down at their hands to make sure they get their masonic grips done correctly. Notice overlapping hands by Clinton. (Photo and article: *Austin American-Statesman,* November 3, 1999, p. A2)

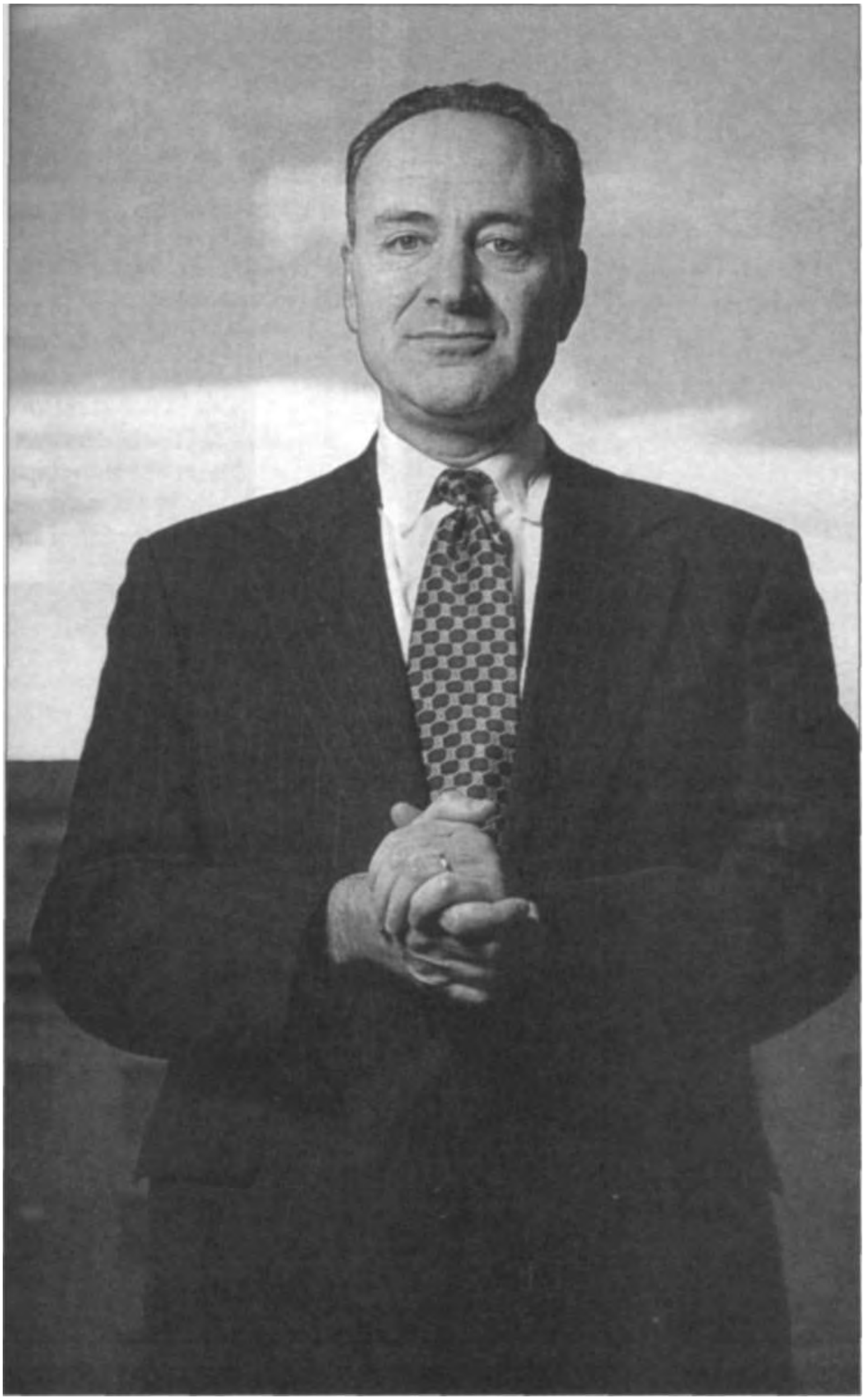

Placing one hand, resembling horns, in the other symbolizes the idea that the person is entrusting his soul in care to the superior deity (Satan). Thus, he is submissive, playing down his own power and acknowledging a superior power which controls him. In effect, Senator Charles Schumer (D-NY), ADL fanatic and *avid* Jewish Talmudist, greets "in-the-know" readers *of Newsweek* (December 28, 1998) with a cabalistic sign. The knowing look on Schumer's face is telling, isn't it?

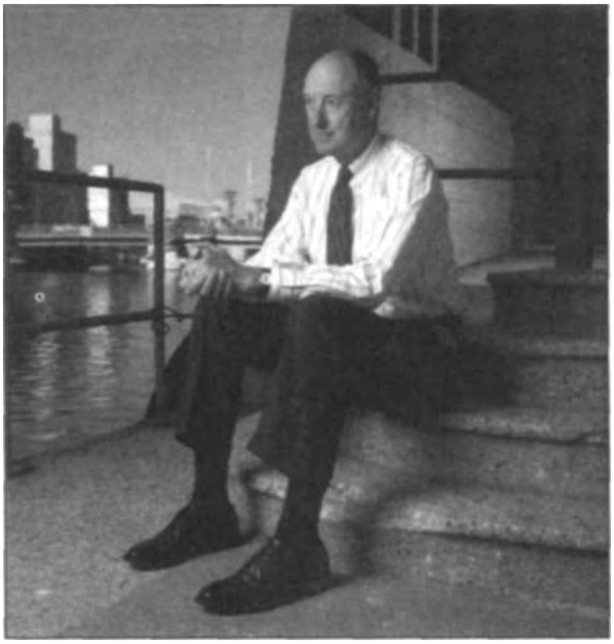

Albert Nicholas, head of Wall Street's Nicholas Fund mutual stock firm, in *Newsweek.* (October 10, 1994, p. 52)

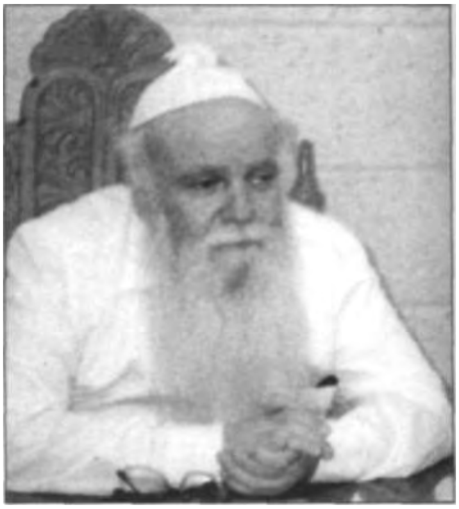

Rabbi Yehuda Getz, Chief Rabbi of all the holy places in Israel, holds his hands in the cabalistic pose. Rabbi Getz claims he knows where the Ark of the Covenant is hidden beneath the Temple Mount in Jerusalem.

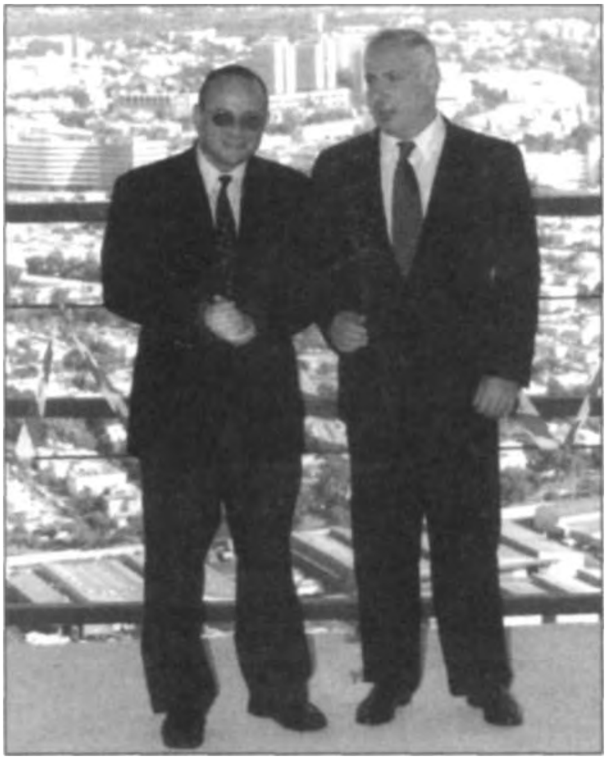

Israeli Prime Minister Netanyahu (right) with Knesset leader Milo (left). Notice Milo's hand sign. *(1 he Jerusalem Report,* August II, 1998, p. 15)

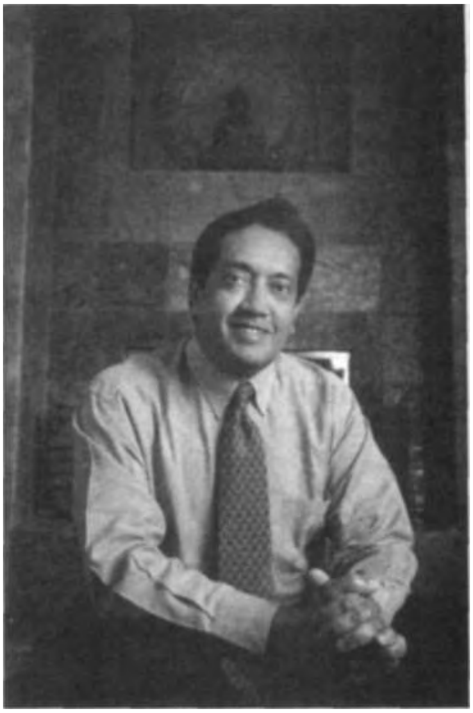

Profiled in the elitist *Private Clubs* magazine (May/June 2004), Kumar Malavalli, shown here apparently displaying the same hand sign as U.S. Senator Charles Schumer, is said to be a member of the Silicon Valley Capital Club. Malavalli, a native of India, has founded multiple companies and has a portfolio of a dozen businesses.

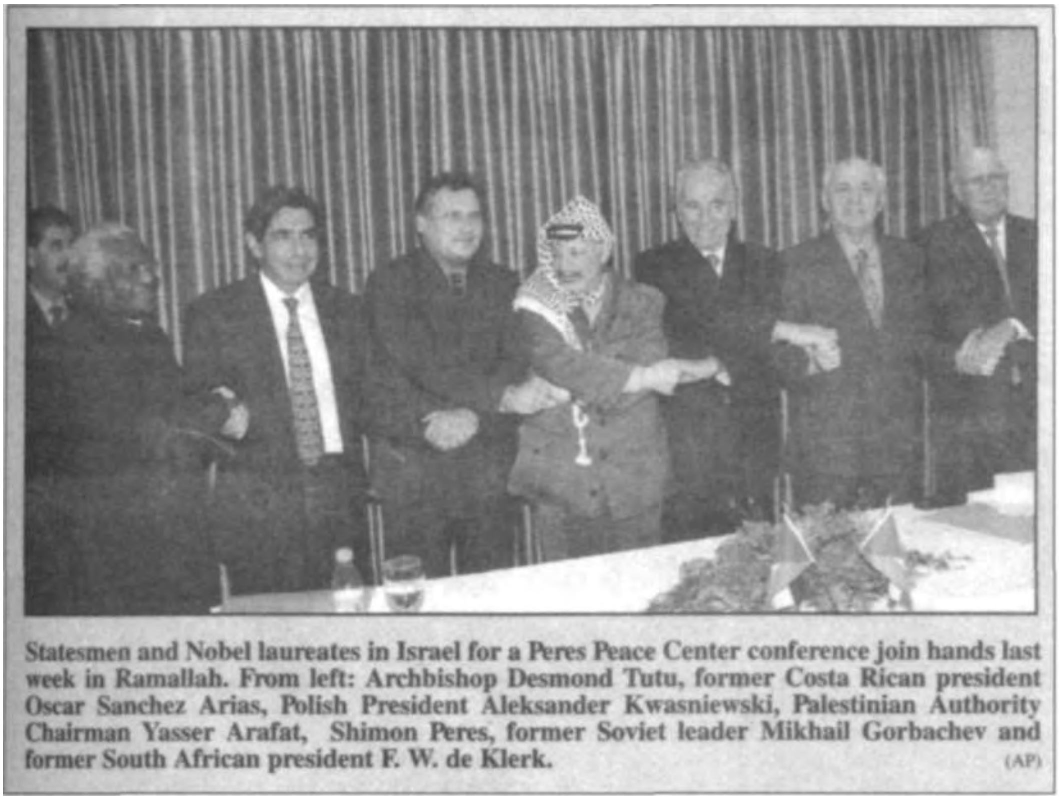

Statesmen and Nobel laureates in Israel for a Peres Peace Center conference join hands last week in Ramallah. From left: Archbishop Desmond Tutu, former Costa Rican president Oscar Sanchez Arias, Polish President Aleksander Kwasniewski, Palestinian Authority Chairman Yasser Arafat, Shimon Peres, former Soviet leader Mikhail Gorbachev and former South African president F. W. de Klerk. (AP)

Statesmen and Nobel laureates in Israel for a Shimon Peres Peace Center conference interlink hands masonically.

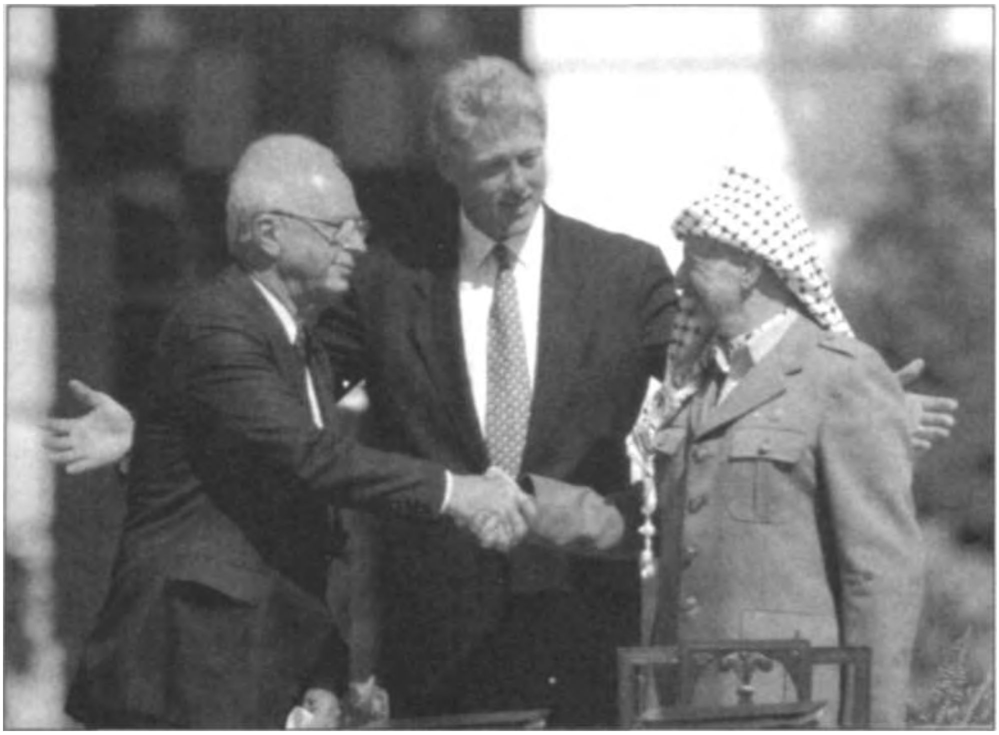

A beautifully staged Masonic production with each actor playing his role with adeptness as all form a symbol. (left- Israeli Prime MinisterYitzhak Rabin; center- President Bill Clinton; right- PLO Chief Yasser Arafat)

The finger to the head like these indicates the elite's approval of the individual's intellect and fitness for office or promotion to the next level.

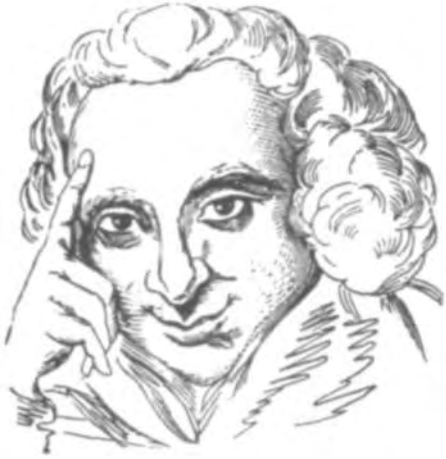

Drawing from an old masonic text.

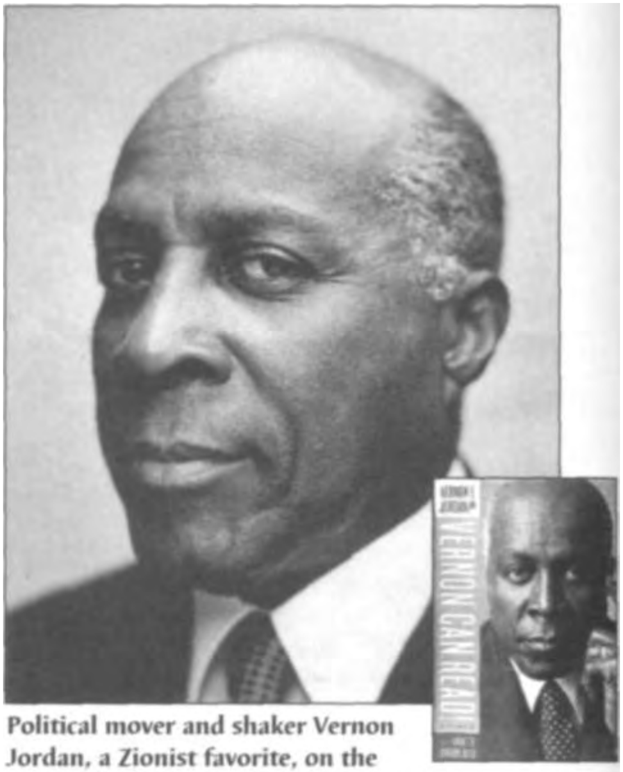
VERNON CAN READ!

Political mover and shaker Vernon Jordan, a Zionist favorite, on the cover of a biography. It was Jordan who arranged employment for Monica Lewinsky, the Jewish young woman who became sexually involved in a White House/Bill Clinton scandal.

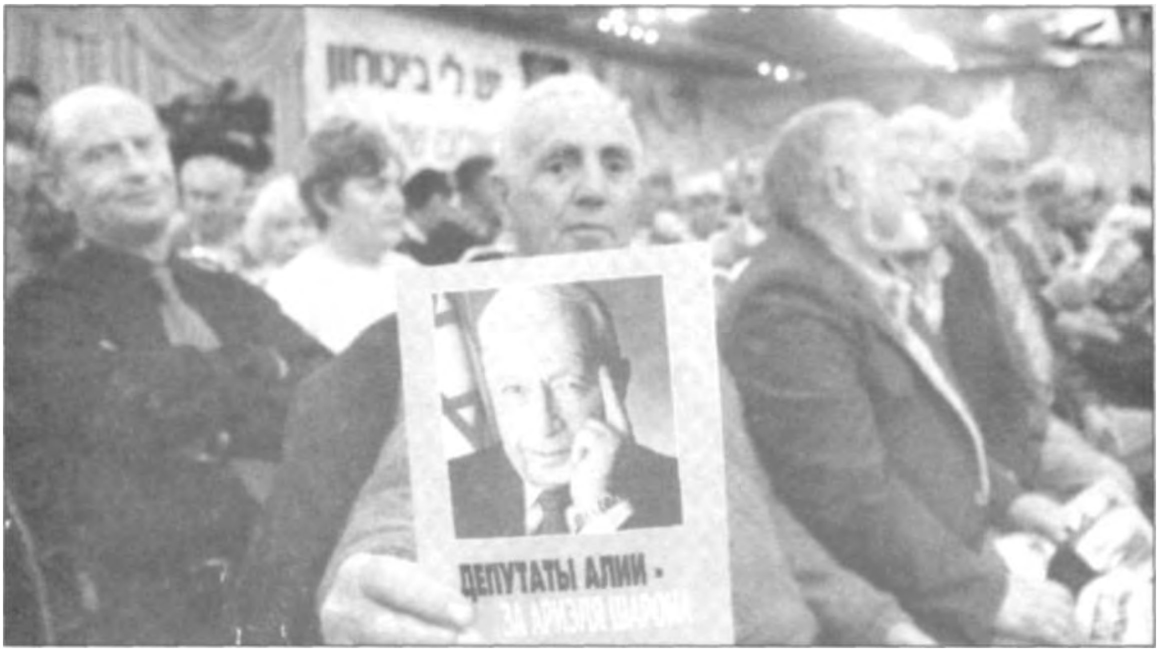

Campaign rally for Israeli Prime Minister Ariel Sharon (Photo: *International Jerusalem Post,* February 9,2001)

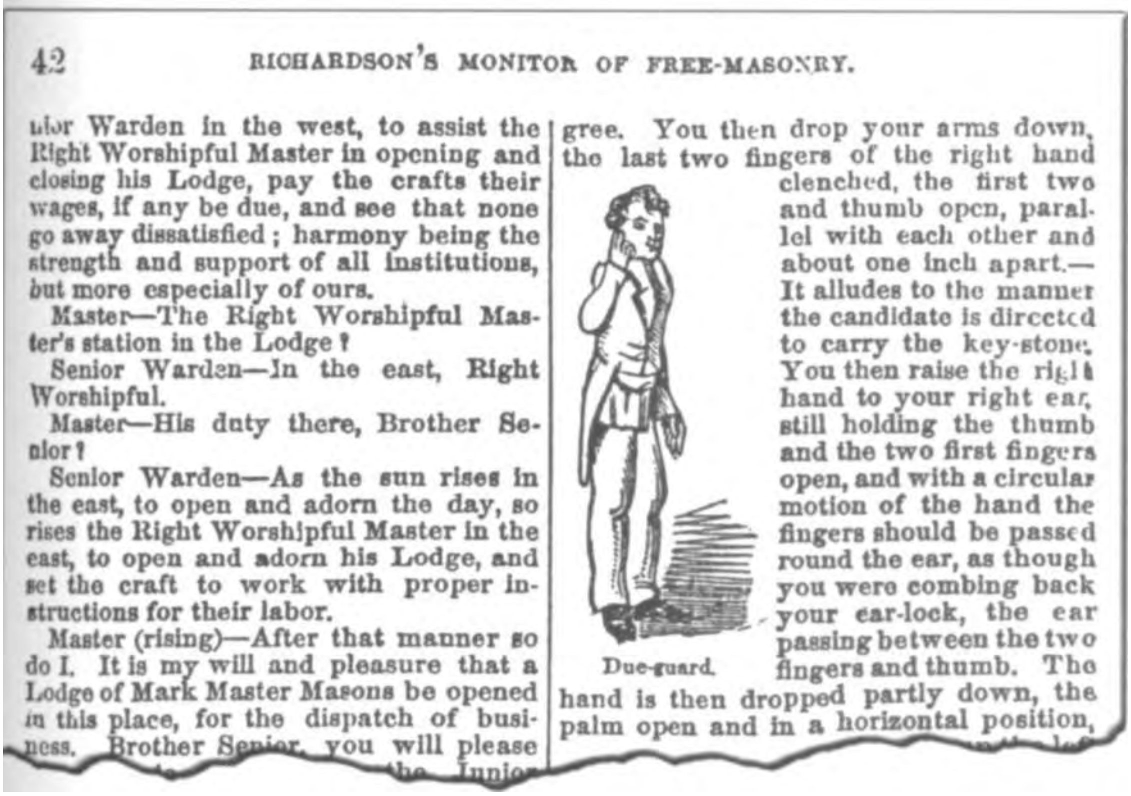

42 RICHARDSON'S MONITOR OF FREE-MASONRY.

nior Warden in the west, to assist the Right Worshipful Master in opening and closing his Lodge, pay the crafts their wages, if any be due, and see that none go away dissatisfied; harmony being the strength and support of all institutions, but more especially of ours.

Master—The Right Worshipful Master's station in the Lodge?

Senior Warden—In the east, Right Worshipful.

Master—His duty there, Brother Senior?

Senior Warden—As the sun rises in the east, to open and adorn the day, so rises the Right Worshipful Master in the east, to open and adorn his Lodge, and set the craft to work with proper instructions for their labor.

Master (rising)—After that manner so do I. It is my will and pleasure that a Lodge of Mark Master Masons be opened in this place, for the dispatch of business. Brother Senior, you will please the Junior

gree. You then drop your arms down, the last two fingers of the right hand clenched, the first two and thumb open, parallel with each other and about one inch apart.—It alludes to the manner the candidate is directed to carry the key-stone. You then raise the right hand to your right ear, still holding the thumb and the two first fingers open, and with a circular motion of the hand the fingers should be passed round the ear, as though you were combing back your ear-lock, the ear passing between the two fingers and thumb. The hand is then dropped partly down, the palm open and in a horizontal position,

Due-guard.

An excerpt from p. 42 of *Richardson's Monitor of Freemasonry* showing the Due Guard of the Mark Master in the Lodge. Cabalistic Jews also have similar signs, some using one finger, others using two fingers to the head as is customarily the case in the Mark Master (4th) degree.

FIG. 20

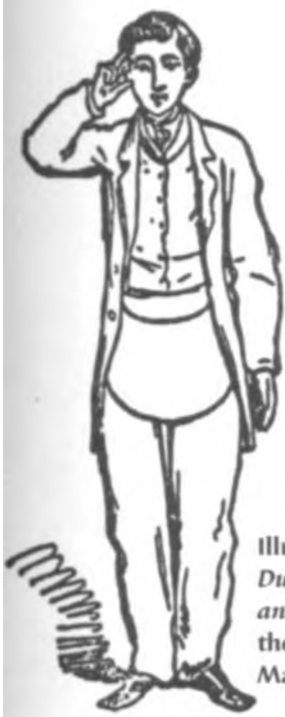

SIGN OF A MARK MASTER

Illustration from p. 154 of *Duncan's Masonic Ritual and Monitor* illustrating the sign of a Mark Master Mason (Figure 20).

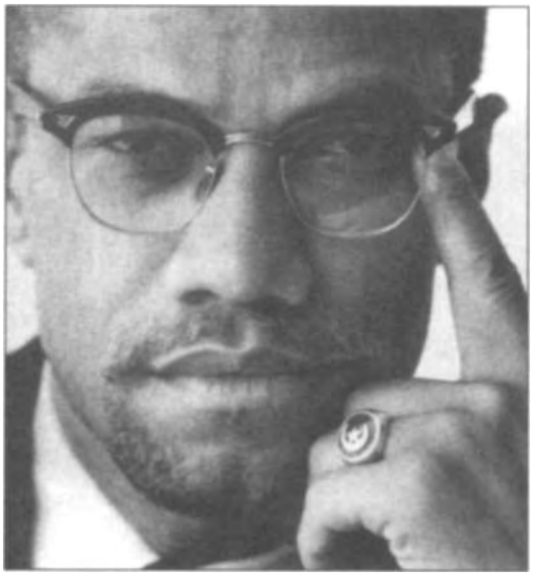

Malcolm X wears a ring of the Black Muslims while giving the Masonic sign. Both Malcolm X and Black Muslim leader Louis Farrakhan were initiated into the 33rd degree of Prince Hall Freemasonry, an order exclusively made up of African ethnics.

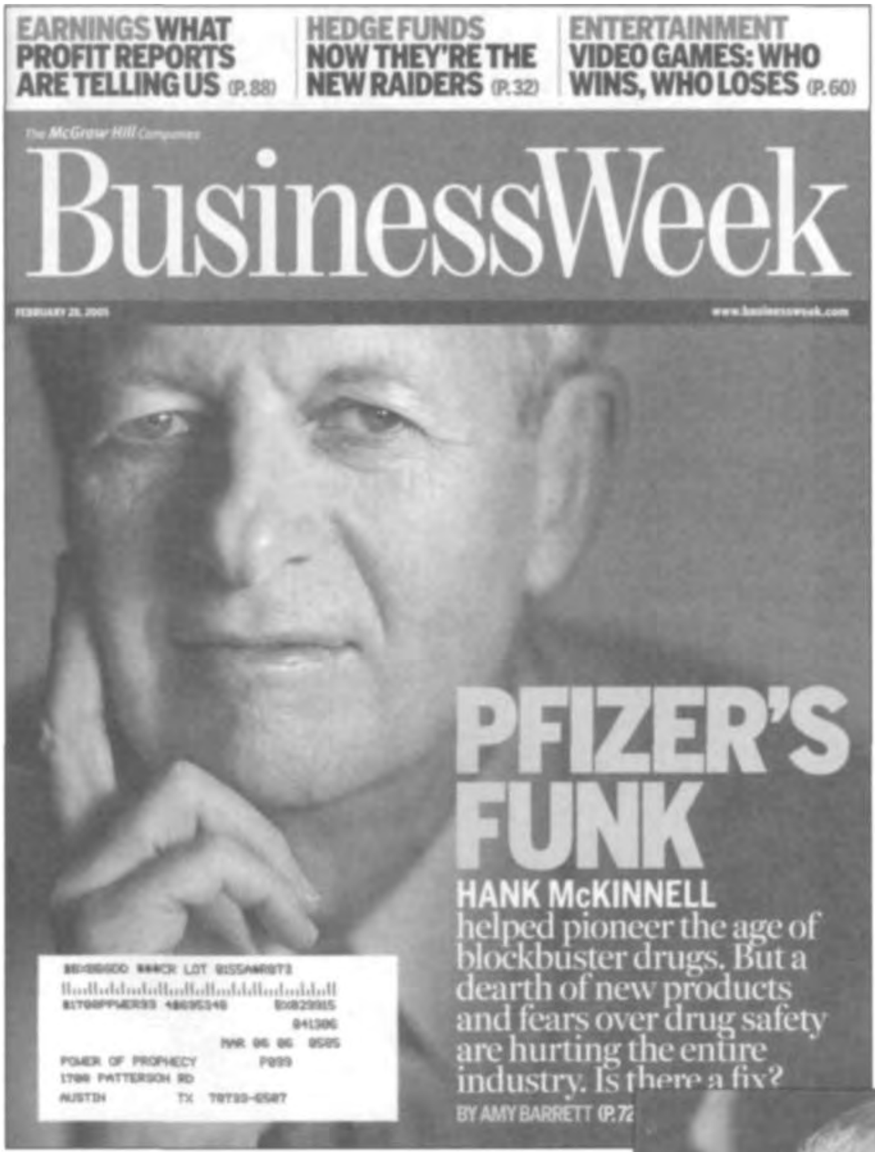

EARNINGS WHAT PROFIT REPORTS ARE TELLING US (P.88)

HEDGE FUNDS NOW THEY'RE THE NEW RAIDERS (P.32)

ENTERTAINMENT VIDEO GAMES: WHO WINS, WHO LOSES (P.60)

The McGraw·Hill Companies

BusinessWeek

FEBRUARY 28, 2005

www.businessweek.com

PFIZER'S FUNK

HANK McKINNELL helped pioneer the age of blockbuster drugs. But a dearth of new products and fears over drug safety are hurting the entire industry. Is there a fix?

BY AMY BARRETT (P.72

POWER OF PROPHECY P099
1700 PATTERSON RD
AUSTIN TX 78733-6507

Hank McKinnell, CEO of global pharmaceutical giant *Pfizer*, on the cover of *Business Week* (February 28, 2005)

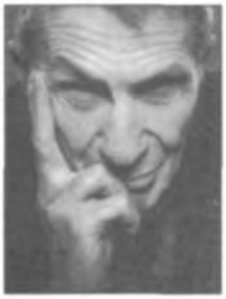

Look close at this item from *Time* magazine (April 4, 2005) and you'll see actor Leonard Nimoy, *Star Trek* icon who thrilled sci-fi fans as a Vulcan who regularly gave the cabalistic "Shin" sign with his hand. Here, Nimoy is presenting the Mark Master's duegard sign. Interestingly, the text of the article from *Time* reveals that Nimoy, whose hobby is photography, is exhibiting his photographs of very large women at a New York City art gallery. The photography of obese women are also found in Nimoy's book, entitled *Shekina*. The word shekina in Hebrew is feminine for "Holy Spirit."

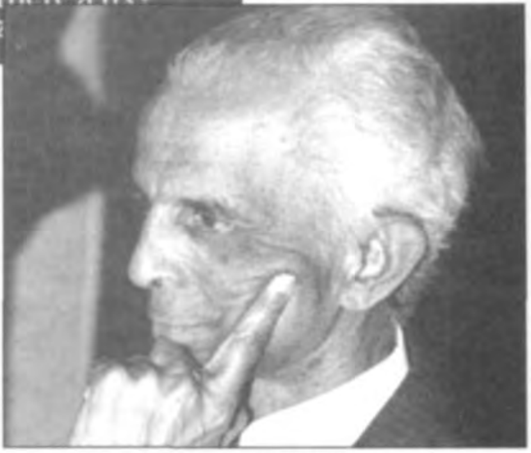

U.S. Ambassador Franklin Williams, a Director of the Council on Foreign Relations (CFR) from 1975 to 1983 and a member until his death in 1990. The CFR offers an internship each year to a college student in his name.

No, Israeli Prime Minister isn't really striking a Sinatra pose. As is often the case, in cabalism magic, a picture reveals the hidden message. The accompanying article (*U.S. News & World Report*, May 24, 1999, p. 43) is entitled, *"Getting Into the Ring,"* and discussed the fact that key American political strategists and consultants like James Carville and Arthur Finkelstein went over to Israel and worked for the election of Barak, an Illuminati favorite. Needless to say, Ehud Barak won!

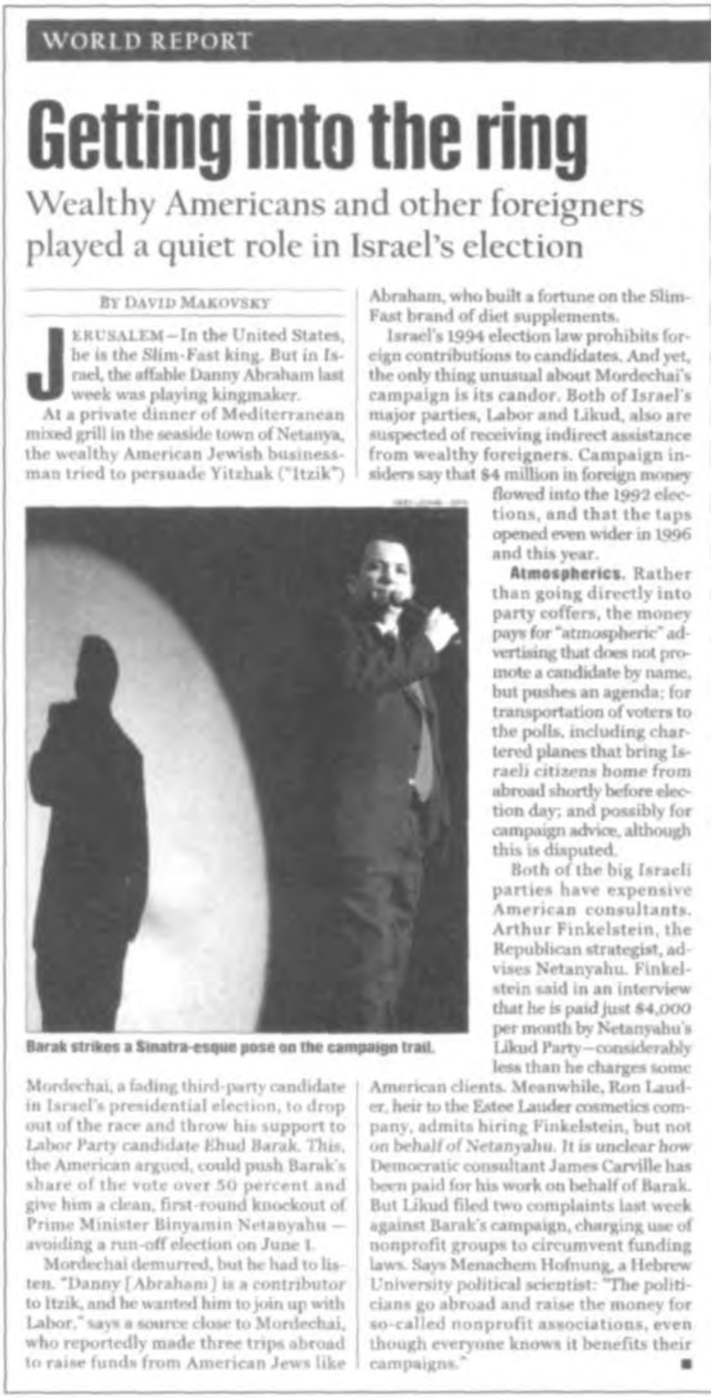

WORLD REPORT

Getting into the ring

Wealthy Americans and other foreigners played a quiet role in Israel's election

BY DAVID MAKOVSKY

JERUSALEM—In the United States, he is the Slim-Fast king. But in Israel, the affable Danny Abraham last week was playing kingmaker.

At a private dinner of Mediterranean mixed grill in the seaside town of Netanya, the wealthy American Jewish businessman tried to persuade Yitzhak ("Itzik") Mordechai, a fading third-party candidate in Israel's presidential election, to drop out of the race and throw his support to Labor Party candidate Ehud Barak. This, the American argued, could push Barak's share of the vote over 50 percent and give him a clean, first-round knockout of Prime Minister Binyamin Netanyahu—avoiding a run-off election on June 1.

Mordechai demurred, but he had to listen. "Danny [Abraham] is a contributor to Itzik, and he wanted him to join up with Labor," says a source close to Mordechai, who reportedly made three trips abroad to raise funds from American Jews like Abraham, who built a fortune on the Slim-Fast brand of diet supplements.

Israel's 1994 election law prohibits foreign contributions to candidates. And yet, the only thing unusual about Mordechai's campaign is its candor. Both of Israel's major parties, Labor and Likud, also are suspected of receiving indirect assistance from wealthy foreigners. Campaign insiders say that $4 million in foreign money flowed into the 1992 elections, and that the taps opened even wider in 1996 and this year.

Atmospherics. Rather than going directly into party coffers, the money pays for "atmospheric" advertising that does not promote a candidate by name, but pushes an agenda; for transportation of voters to the polls, including chartered planes that bring Israeli citizens home from abroad shortly before election day; and possibly for campaign advice, although this is disputed.

Both of the big Israeli parties have expensive American consultants. Arthur Finkelstein, the Republican strategist, advises Netanyahu. Finkelstein said in an interview that he is paid just $4,000 per month by Netanyahu's Likud Party—considerably less than he charges some American clients. Meanwhile, Ron Lauder, heir to the Estee Lauder cosmetics company, admits hiring Finkelstein, but not on behalf of Netanyahu. It is unclear how Democratic consultant James Carville has been paid for his work on behalf of Barak. But Likud filed two complaints last week against Barak's campaign, charging use of nonprofit groups to circumvent funding laws. Says Menachem Hofnung, a Hebrew University political scientist: "The politicians go abroad and raise the money for so-called nonprofit associations, even though everyone knows it benefits their campaigns." ■

Barak strikes a Sinatra-esque pose on the campaign trail.

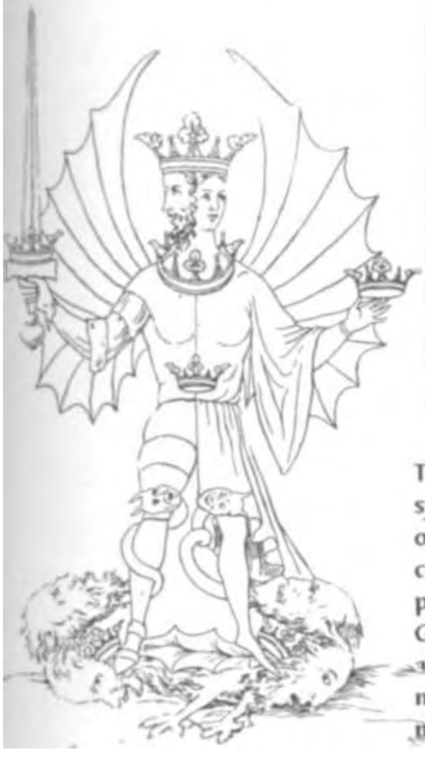

The androgyne, a combination creature of male and female, symbolizes the hermaphrodite principle of the two-faced entity, or two-headed eagle. In the Jewish Cabala, this strange creation, a conjunction of the feminine and masculine principles, is known as "Adam Kadmon," both Adam and Eve, a Golem. This conjunction of opposites is part of the science of alchemy, or hermeticism and is especially beloved by occult magicians. In witchcraft, it is known as the joining of sun and moon, and sacred sex rituals are common.

Edgar Bronfman, Jr., son of billionaire Edgar Bronfman, Sr., head of the World Jewish Congress, is CEO of Seagram, the giant liquor and entertainment industry conglomerate. Seagram's logo is subtly placed on the wall and includes a white horse (shades of Revelation 6?) and other interesting features. (Photo: *USA Today,* December 14, 1998)

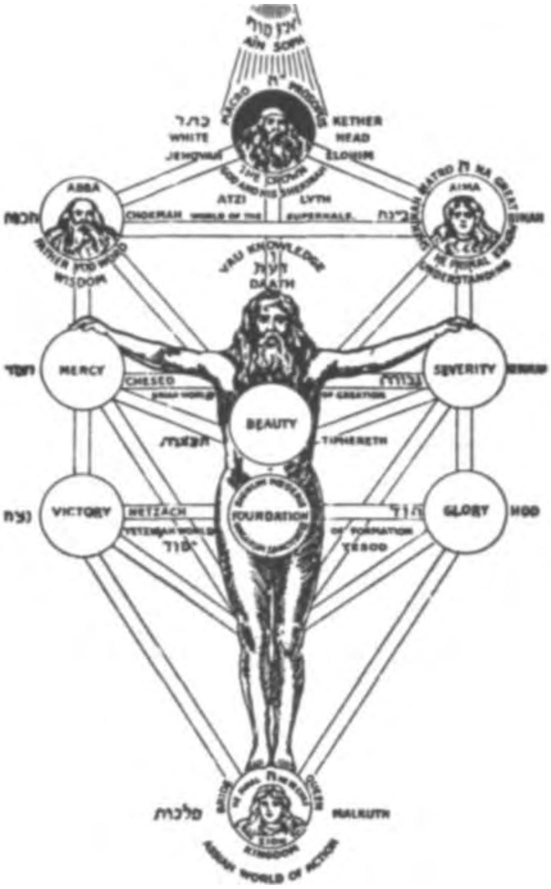
אין סוף
AIN SOPH
MACRO
PROSOPUS
כתר
WHITE
JEHOVAH
KETHER
HEAD
ELOHIM
THE CROWN
GOD AND HIS SHEKINAH
ATZI
LUTH
ABBA
CHOKMAH
WORLD OF THE
SUPERNALS
בינה
AIMA
MATRO
NA
GREAT
BINAH
FATHER
WISDOM
PRIMAL
UNDERSTANDING
VAU
KNOWLEDGE
דעת
DAATH
חסד
MERCY
CHESED
SEVERITY
גבורה
OF CREATION
BEAUTY
תפארת
TIPHERETH
נצח
VICTORY
NETZACH
YETZIRAH WORLD
FOUNDATION
הוד
GLORY
HOD
OF FORMATION
יסוד
YESOD
QUEEN
מלכות
MALKUTH
ZION
KINGDOM
ASSIAH WORLD OF ACTION

In *Cabala,* the Sacred Tree of the Sephiroth is claimed to represent the Cosmos, including God (male), his Shekinah *(Anna,* the goddess/female), and the Kingdom of Zion. As shown here, the Foundation of all things is the male genitals, or the sex generative process. *(Zolar's Encyclopedia of Ancient and Forbidden Knowledge,* Arco Publishing, 1984)

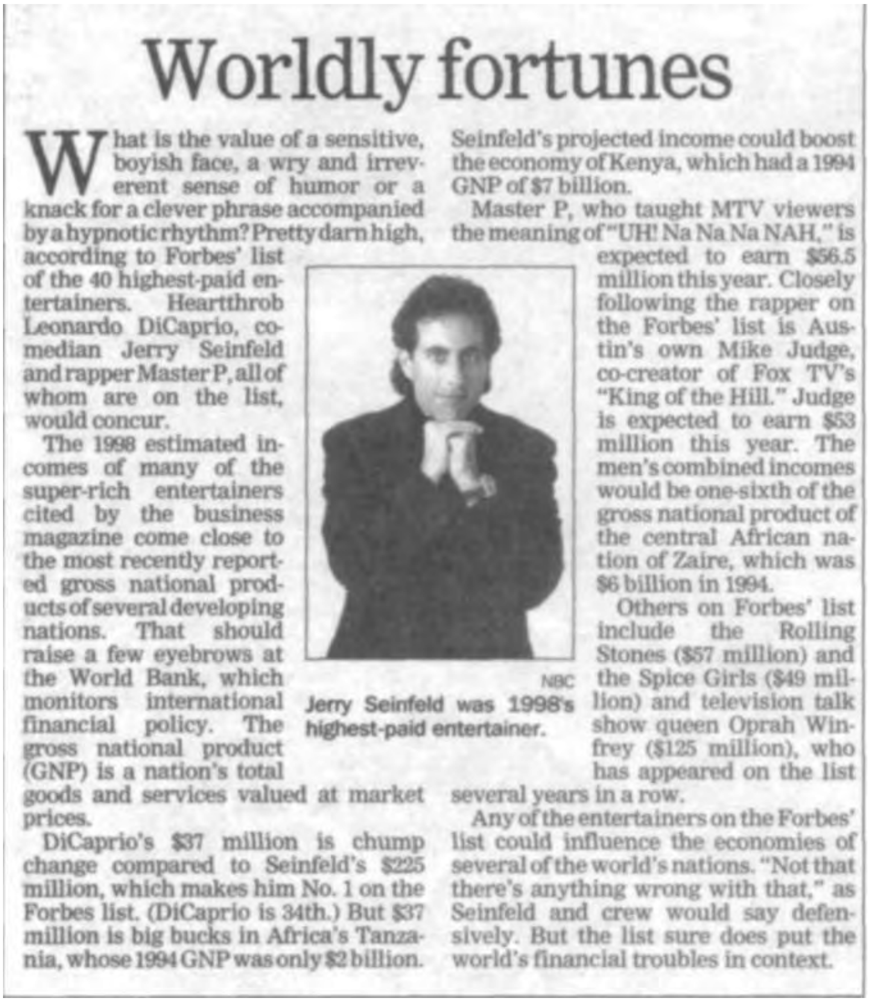

Worldly fortunes

What is the value of a sensitive, boyish face, a wry and irreverent sense of humor or a knack for a clever phrase accompanied by a hypnotic rhythm? Pretty darn high, according to Forbes' list of the 40 highest-paid entertainers. Heartthrob Leonardo DiCaprio, comedian Jerry Seinfeld and rapper Master P, all of whom are on the list, would concur.

The 1998 estimated incomes of many of the super-rich entertainers cited by the business magazine come close to the most recently reported gross national products of several developing nations. That should raise a few eyebrows at the World Bank, which monitors international financial policy. The gross national product (GNP) is a nation's total goods and services valued at market prices.

DiCaprio's $37 million is chump change compared to Seinfeld's $225 million, which makes him No. 1 on the Forbes list. (DiCaprio is 34th.) But $37 million is big bucks in Africa's Tanzania, whose 1994 GNP was only $2 billion. Seinfeld's projected income could boost the economy of Kenya, which had a 1994 GNP of $7 billion.

Master P, who taught MTV viewers the meaning of "'UH! Na Na Na NAH,'" is expected to earn $56.5 million this year. Closely following the rapper on the Forbes' list is Austin's own Mike Judge, co-creator of Fox TV's "King of the Hill." Judge is expected to earn $53 million this year. The men's combined incomes would be one-sixth of the gross national product of the central African nation of Zaire, which was $6 billion in 1994.

Others on Forbes' list include the Rolling Stones ($57 million) and the Spice Girls ($49 million) and television talk show queen Oprah Winfrey ($125 million), who has appeared on the list several years in a row.

Any of the entertainers on the Forbes' list could influence the economies of several of the world's nations. "Not that there's anything wrong with that," as Seinfeld and crew would say defensively. But the list sure does put the world's financial troubles in context.

NBC

Jerry Seinfeld was 1998's highest-paid entertainer.

Jewish comedian Jerry Seinfeld strikes a decidedly cabalistic pose. It is well-known in entertainment circles that Jerry Seinfeld—indeed, all of the performers on TV's popular *Seinfeld* **sitcom-practice cabala magic and ritual.** According to *Forbes* **magazine in 1998, Jerry** Seinfeld made a **whopping total of $225** million on the comedy **circuit. And that's no** joke! (Photo and article: *Austin American-Statesman,* September 9, 1998, p. **A14)**

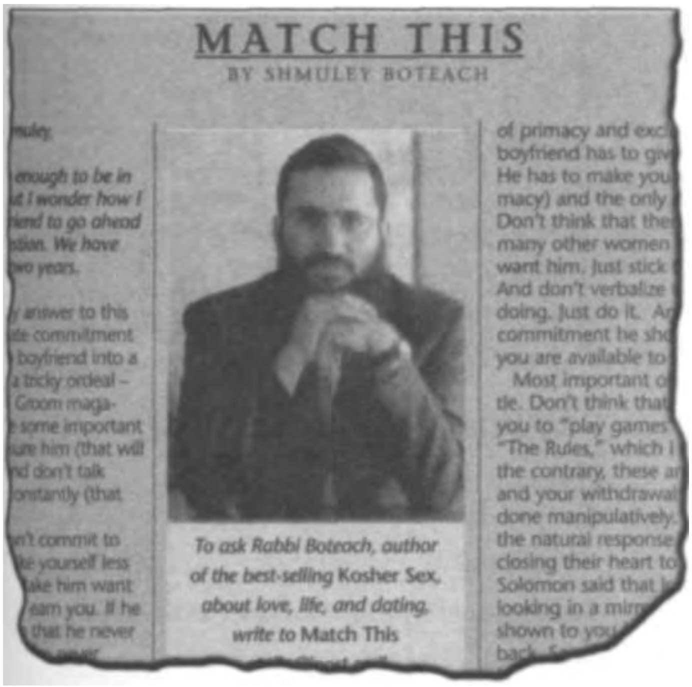

MATCH THIS

BY SHMULEY BOTEACH

muley,

enough to be in
ut I wonder how I
iend to go ahead
ation. We have
wo years.

y answer to this
ite commitment
boyfriend into a
a tricky ordeal –
Groom maga-
e some important
sure him (that will
nd don't talk
onstantly (that

n't commit to
ke yourself less
ake him want
earn you. If he
that he never

To ask Rabbi Boteach, author of the best-selling Kosher Sex, *about love, life, and dating, write to* Match This

of primacy and exc
boyfriend has to giv
He has to make you
macy) and the only
Don't think that the
many other women
want him. Just stick
And don't verbalize
doing. Just do it. A
commitment he sh
you are available to

Most important o
tle. Don't think that
you to "play games
"The Rules," which I
the contrary, these a
and your withdrawal
done manipulatively.
the natural response
closing their heart to
Solomon said that
looking in a mir
shown to you
back.

Rabbi Shmuley Boteach has gained a measure of fame for his national columns, his books (*Kosher Sex),* and for the fact that he once was a confidant and spiritual counselor and advisor to black superstar singer, Michael Jackson. Here we see Rabbi Boteach in a pose familiar to practitioners of Cabala. (Photo and article: *The International Jerusalem Post,* December 28, 2001)

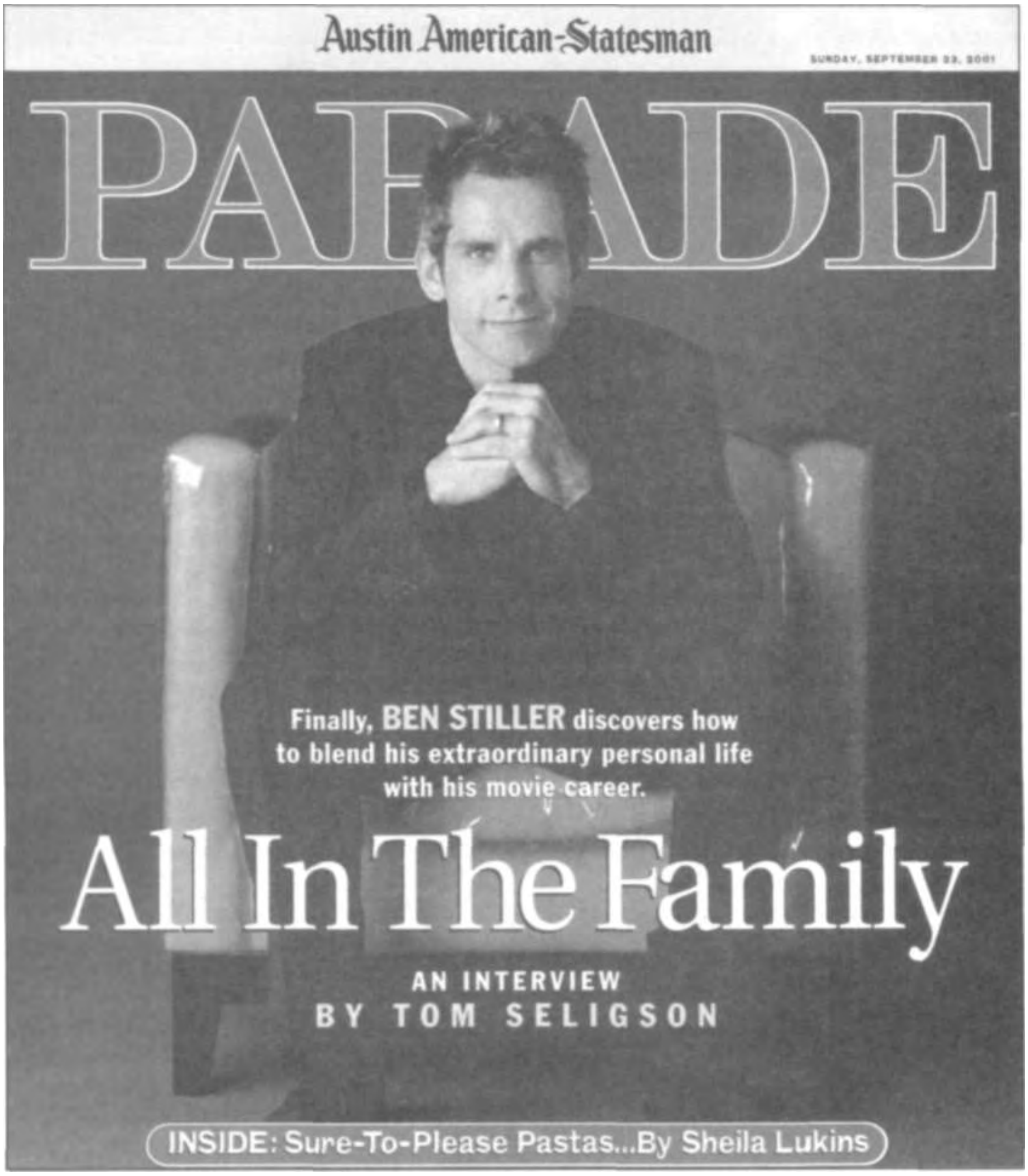

Austin American-Statesman

SUNDAY, SEPTEMBER 23, 2001

PARADE

Finally, **BEN STILLER** discovers how to blend his extraordinary personal life with his movie career.

All In The Family

AN INTERVIEW
BY TOM SELIGSON

INSIDE: Sure-To-Please Pastas...By Sheila Lukins

Ben Stiller, popular Jewish comedian and movie celebrity, in a cabalistic pose with his hands. His left hand folded on top over the left indicated Stiller follows the left-hand (dark) path. On the opposite page, David Rockefeller gives notice he follows the right-hand path.

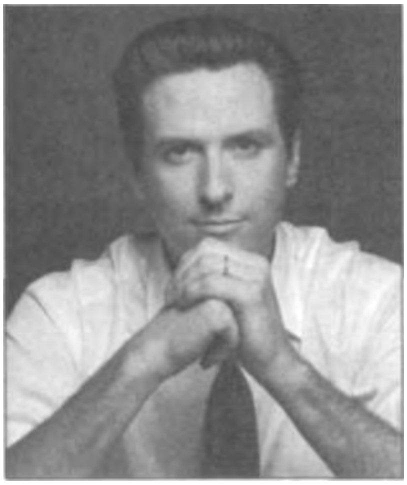

San Francisco Mayor Gavin Newsom lets insiders know he's one of them with this cabalistic hand/arms gesture. Newsom became the gay community's ultraliberal darling in 2003 by promoting gay marriages. *Time* magazine's editors go wild in this article, mentioning that the mayor is "simply adored," touting his many achievements, and insisting that publishers give him a "fat cat" contract to write a book. (*Time,* April 25, 2005)

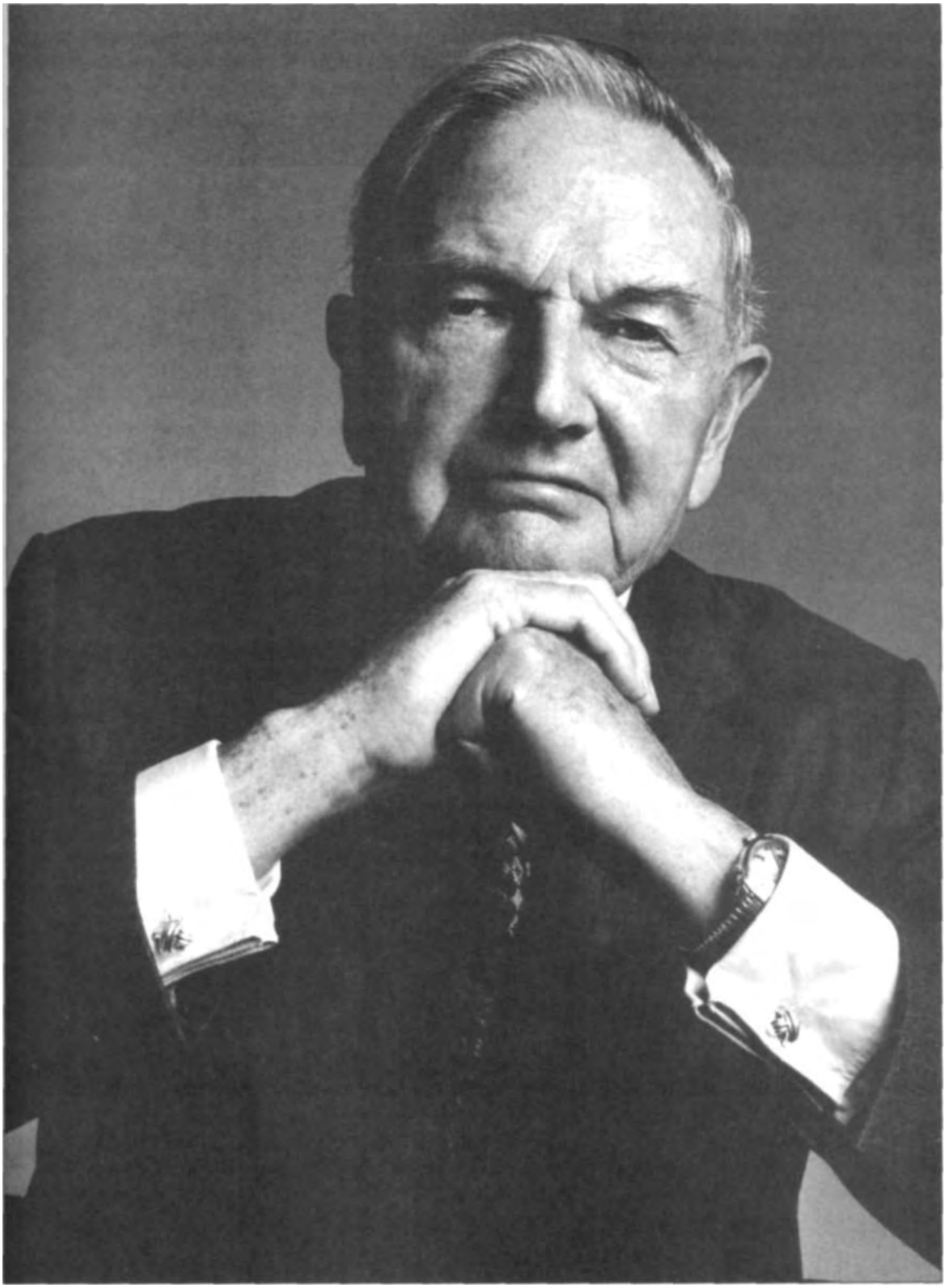

The glossy magazine *Town & Country* selected David Rockefeller, Sr., President of Chase Manhattan Bank and founder of the Trilateral Commission, as *"Our Generous American for 1995."* This full page photo, bearing no caption or explanation, was included in the magazine exactly as you see it. Occult experts and those knowledgeable of masonic and cabalistic signals will recognize the significance of Rockefeller's pose; also the "X" design cufflinks and the "diamond" designs of necktie.

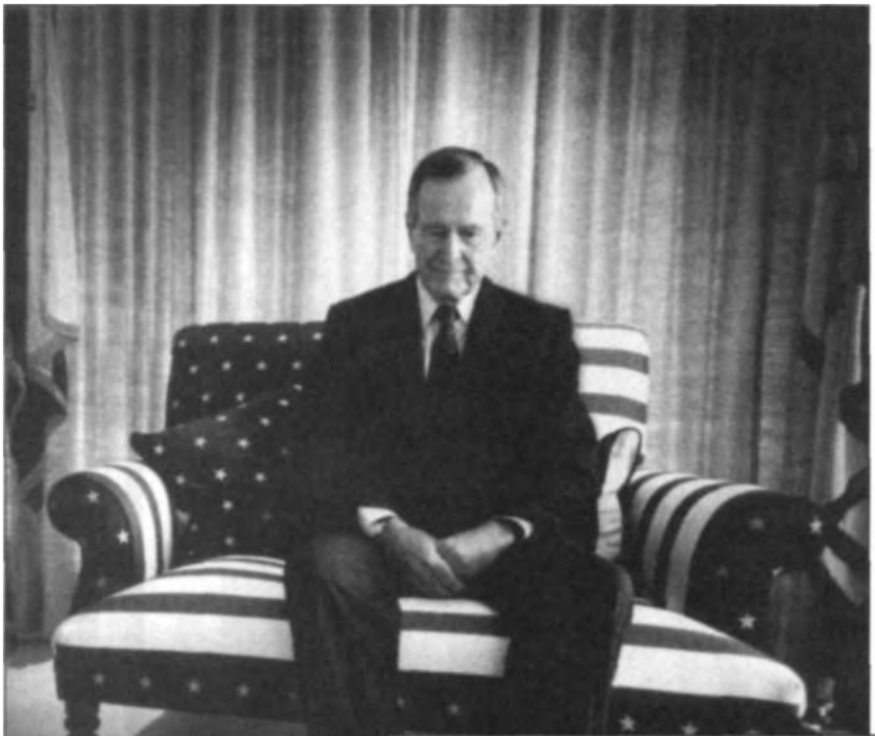

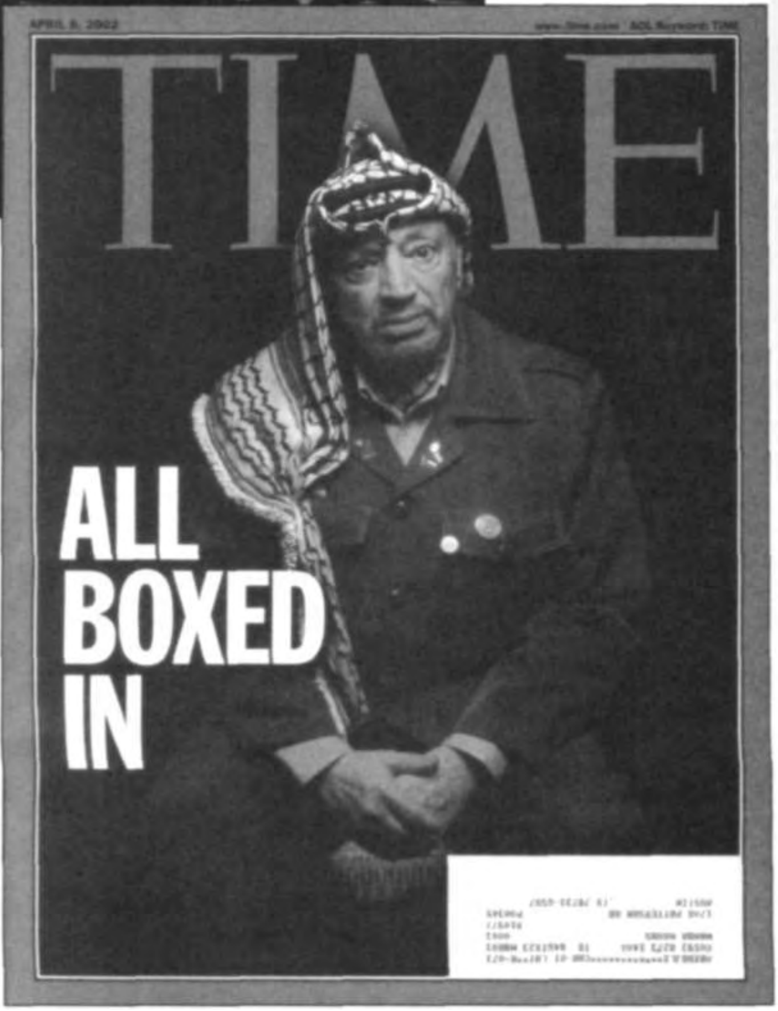
APRIL 8, 2002
www.time.com AOL Keyword: TIME
TIME
ALL BOXED IN

Former President George Herbert Walker Bush and PLO Chief Yasser Arafat use cabalistic signals to communicate the attitude of resignation and the knowledge that their time in the sunlight is now over. (Bush photo: *Texas Monthly*, July, 2003, p. 97)

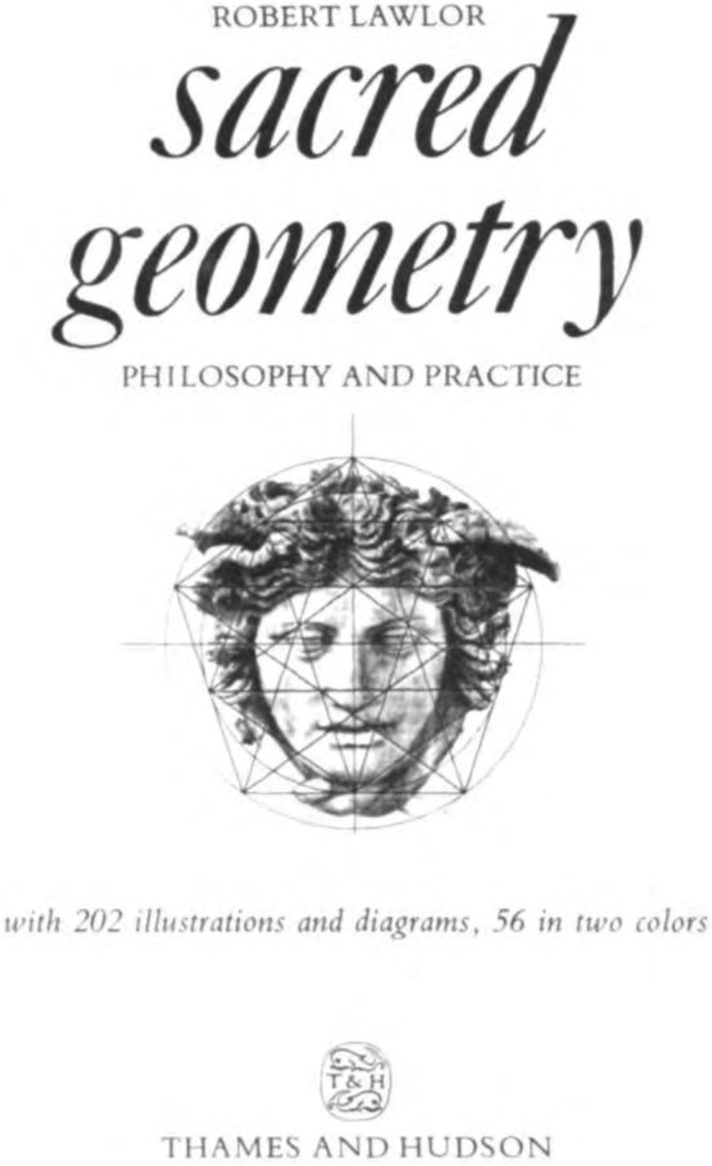

ROBERT LAWLOR

sacred
geometry

PHILOSOPHY AND PRACTICE

with 202 illustrations and diagrams, 56 in two colors

T&H
THAMES AND HUDSON

Cabalists and members of many secret societies use "sacred geometry" to create designs and symbols of magical and occultic power. This is the cover of one book on this subject. Hundreds of books and texts on sacred geometry have been published over the centuries, from the days of Pythagoras.

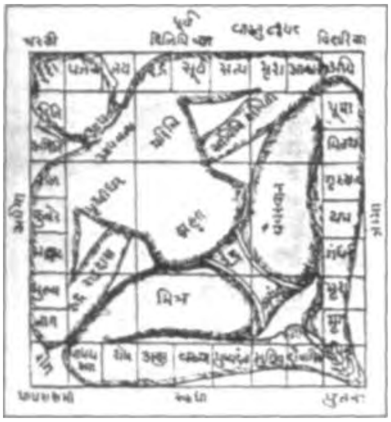

The Hindu religion also is big on sacred geometry and cabalistic oriented measurements and architecture. This is a "plan" for a Hindu temple based on the diagram of the Perusha, or *"Cosmic Man."*The ancient Hindu architectural sutra (rule) proclaims that, *"The whole universe is present in the Temple in the form of geometric proportion."* In the Hindu practice of *Yoga,* the participant bends and twists his or her body parts and limbs into specific forms symbolic of universal energies (Drawing from book, *Sacred Geometry,* by Robert Lawlor, Thames and Hudsen, London, 1989, p. 92)

‘Seinfeld’ in a parallel universe

A Kramer who knocks before entering the room?

A George who's generous, honest and soft-spoken?

A Jerry who cares for others and accentuates the positive?

Be careful what you ask for. You just might see it.

As if to answer the critics

Television
News & Views
By Matt Roush

(including this one) who found it hard to forgive that sour bunch of *Seinfeld* misanthropes after last season's bad-taste finale, in which the death of George's fiancée, Susan, was callously shrugged off by all, tonight's brilliant episode offers a glimpse at what life might be like if these creeps were actually nice guys.

You don't want to go there.

It starts when Elaine breaks up with Kevin (Tim DeKay), her nice-guy boyfriend of last week, and suggests they just be friends. Kevin likes the idea. Kevin, you see, likes friends.

Whereas Jerry, when he hears about this, sneers, "Why would anybody want a *friend*?" (Take that, *Friends* clones.)

When Elaine meets Kevin's other buddies, they turn out to be funhouse-mirror inverses of that gang of hers: a bald schmo named Gene (Kyle T. Hefner) and a gangly guy named Feldman (Pat Kilbane). They're normal. They sit around and read. Kooky they're not.

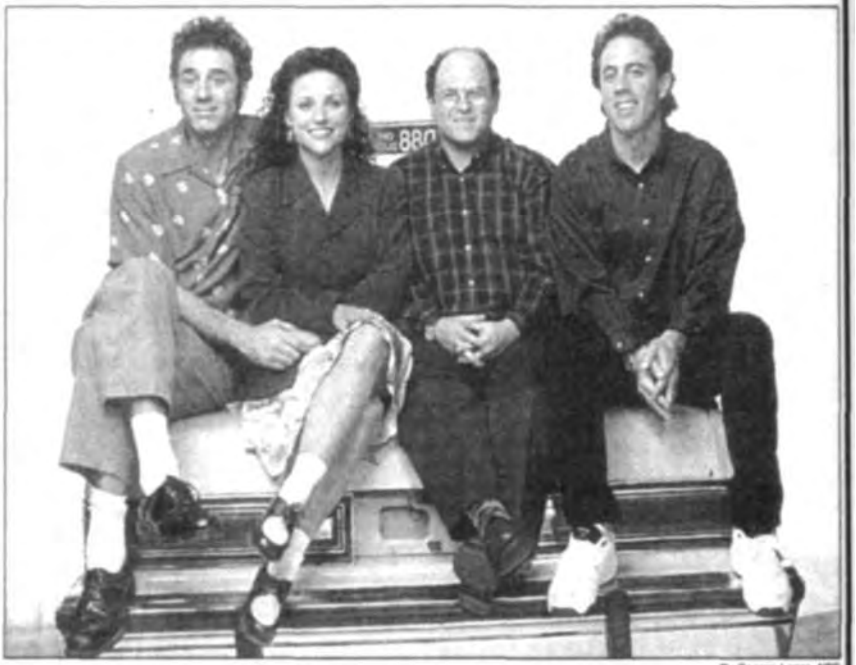

By George Lange, NBC

Bizarro time: After meeting the alter egos of her pals Michael Richards, left, Jason Alexander and Jerry Seinfeld, Julia Louis-Dreyfus ponders what life would be like among the normal on 'Seinfeld.'

hero's exact opposite.

In a memorable street scene, Elaine finds herself torn between the two groups: one gonzo and self-absorbed, the "bizarro bunch" anything but. She articulates her crisis of comradeship to Jerry: "I can't spend the rest of my life coming into this stinking

system is breaking down!"

Why not, indeed.

In the season opener, Jerry seemed downright cruel as he continually belittled Elaine upon her ill-fated promotion at work. George's unending trashing

unne

toni

Tonight's surreal subplots confirm that this world is like no other on TV, and welcome to it. Jerry dates a beautiful woman with one hard-to-get-past physical flaw. (Watch her manhandle a lobster.) Kramer

The Illuminist insider who titled this article was in the know. It reads: *'Seinfeld' In A Parallel Universe*. The photo shows the four entertainers from TVs wildly popular sitcom each in cabalistic poses. All four are Jewish as is the show's producer.

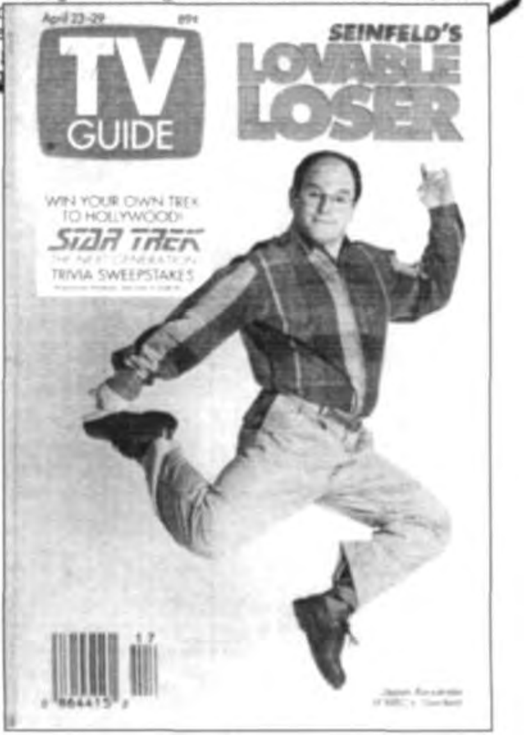

Actor Jason Alexander ("George" in *Seinfeld* TV series) performs a cabala ritual in plain sight of a vast audience. To the uninitiated and ignorant millions of people who read *TV Guide* and see this cover, Jason Alexander appears to be merely hamming it up. Little do they know of the deeper occult meaning. For example, we find Jason's left and right hands giving the *"El Diablo"* satanic hand sign. His arms—one pointing up, the other down—indicate the dualistic (marriage of opposites, or reconciliation), cabalistic magical philosophy "As Above, So Below" (The devil goat *Baphomet* performs the same sign). We also note the three triangles presented by Jason's legs and arms.

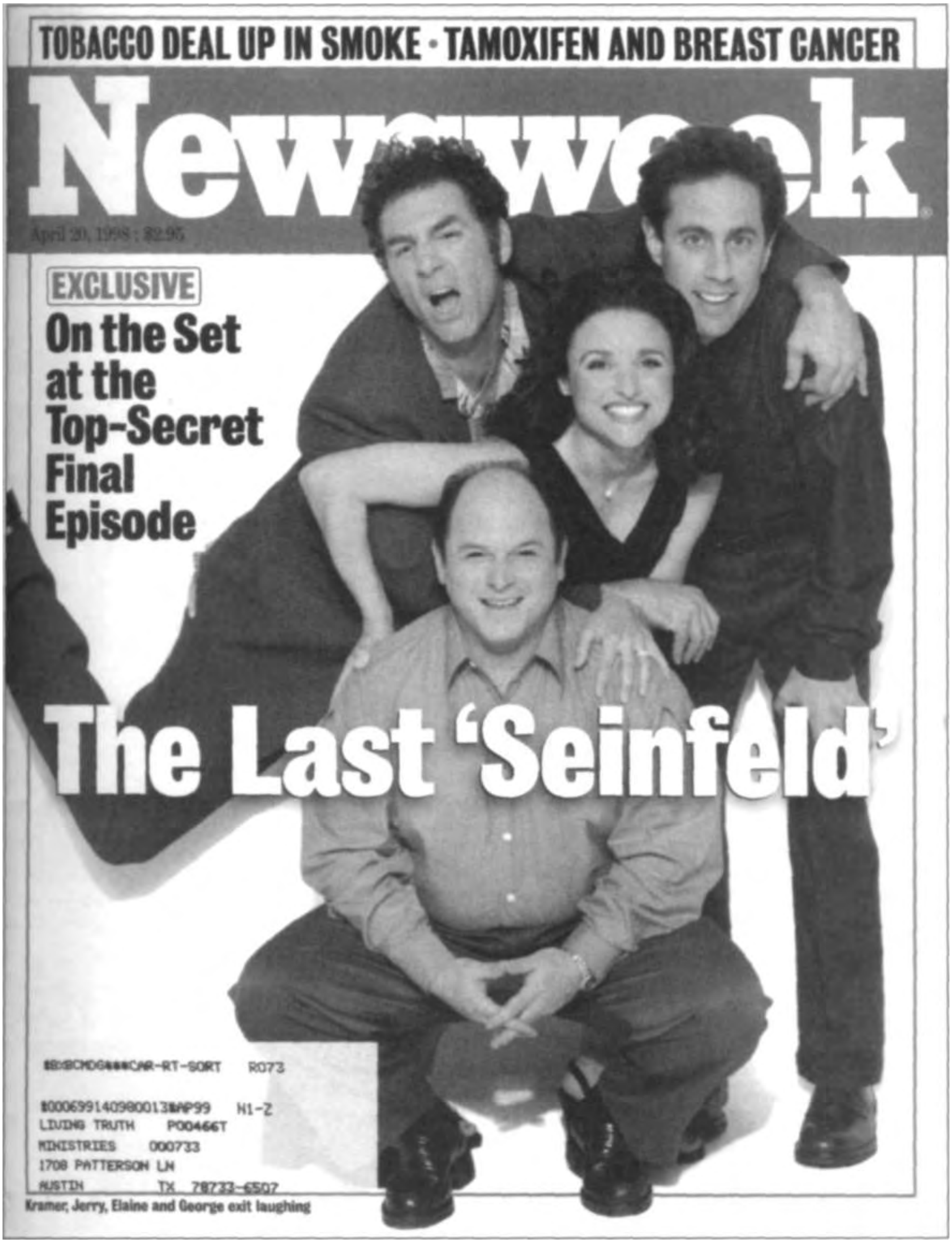
TOBACCO DEAL UP IN SMOKE · TAMOXIFEN AND BREAST CANCER
Newsweek
April 20, 1998 : $2.95
EXCLUSIVE
On the Set at the Top-Secret Final Episode
The Last 'Seinfeld'
BXBCHDG***CAR-RT-SORT R073
000699140980013AP99 H1-Z
LIVING TRUTH P00466T
MINISTRIES 000733
1708 PATTERSON LN
AUSTIN TX 78733-6507
Kramer, Jerry, Elaine and George exit laughing

Again we discover the comedy team from *Seinfeld* teaming up to present cabalistic messages. Observe the V in Michael Richards' ("Kramer") leg and in Julia Louis-Dreyfuss' ("Elaine") arm; the circle that Richards makes with the fingers of his left hand, the *"X"* made by the intersecting hands and wrists of Richard and Louis-Dreyfuss; the descendant triangle sign of Jason Alexander's ("George") hands, and so on.

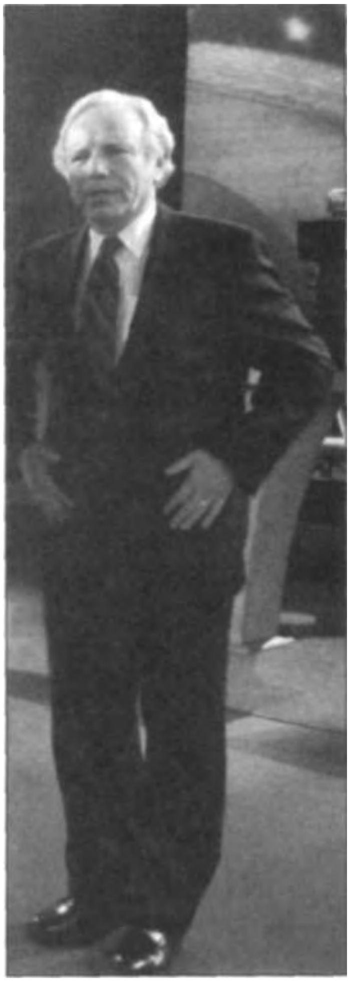

Sign of the Ram: 2004 Vice Presidential candidate, Senator Joseph Liebennan, a Jew, on the campaign trail. The placement of both hands downward to create the appearance of the two horns of a ram is a cabalistic sign often given by members of Middle Eastern Lodges, especially the Masonic lodges of Israel. It is a sign of high rank and is said to invoke good fortune on the part of the user. The sign is often given publicly at the beginning, or commencement of a project to enhance success.

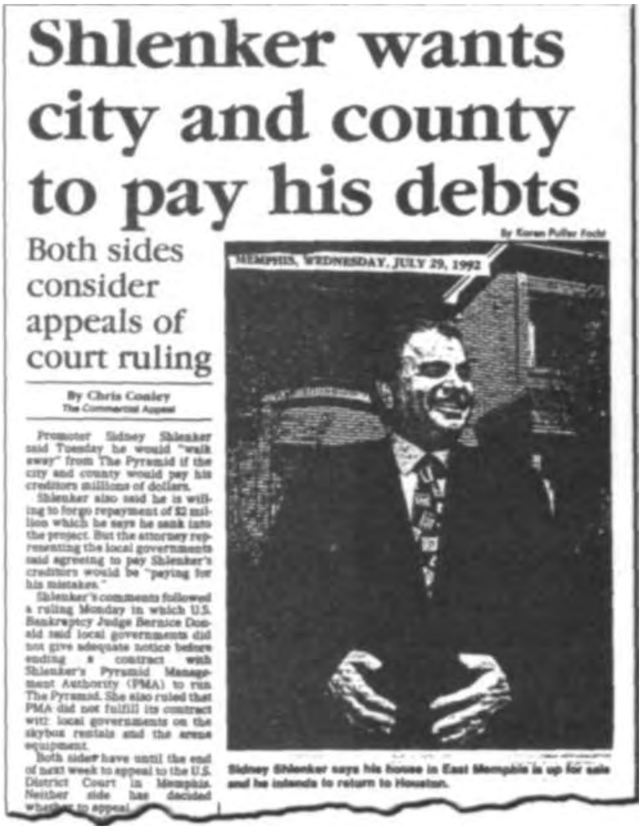

Shlenker wants city and county to pay his debts

Both sides consider appeals of court ruling

By Chris Conley
The Commercial Appeal

Promoter Sidney Shlenker said Tuesday he would "walk away" from The Pyramid if the city and county would pay his creditors millions of dollars.

Shlenker also said he is willing to forgo repayment of $2 million which he says he sank into the project. But the attorney representing the local governments said agreeing to pay Shlenker's creditors would be "paying for his mistakes."

Shlenker's comments followed a ruling Monday in which U.S. Bankruptcy Judge Bernice Donald said local governments did not give adequate notice before ending a contract with Shlenker's Pyramid Management Authority (PMA) to run The Pyramid. She also ruled that PMA did not fulfill its contract with local governments on the skybox rentals and the arena equipment.

Both sides have until the end of next week to appeal to the U.S. District Court in Memphis. Neither side has decided whether to appeal.

By Karen Pulfer Focht

MEMPHIS, WEDNESDAY, JULY 29, 1992

Sidney Shlenker says his house in East Memphis is up for sale and he intends to return to Houston.

Promoter Sidney Shlenker, here giving the sign of the ram, was in the news back in 1992, Shlenker, a Jewish wheeler-dealer and owner of a professional basketball team, was co-builder of Memphis, Tennessee's massive new Great Pyramid of the Americas.

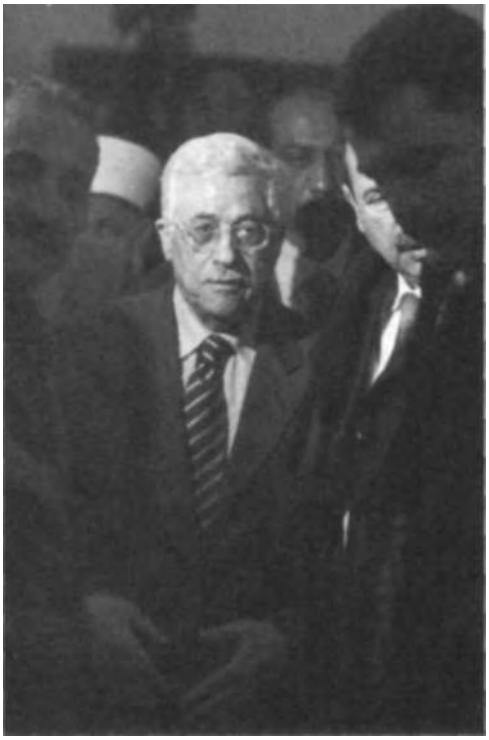

Newly chosen Palestinian leader Mahmoud Abbas, successor to the late PLO Chief Yasser Arafat, gives the cabalistic sign with his hands to indicate expectation of success and to invoke good fortune. It is thus apparent that Abbas is a servant to the Jewish Illuminati who only pretends to represent Palestinian interests. *(U.S. News & World Report,* January 10, 2005)

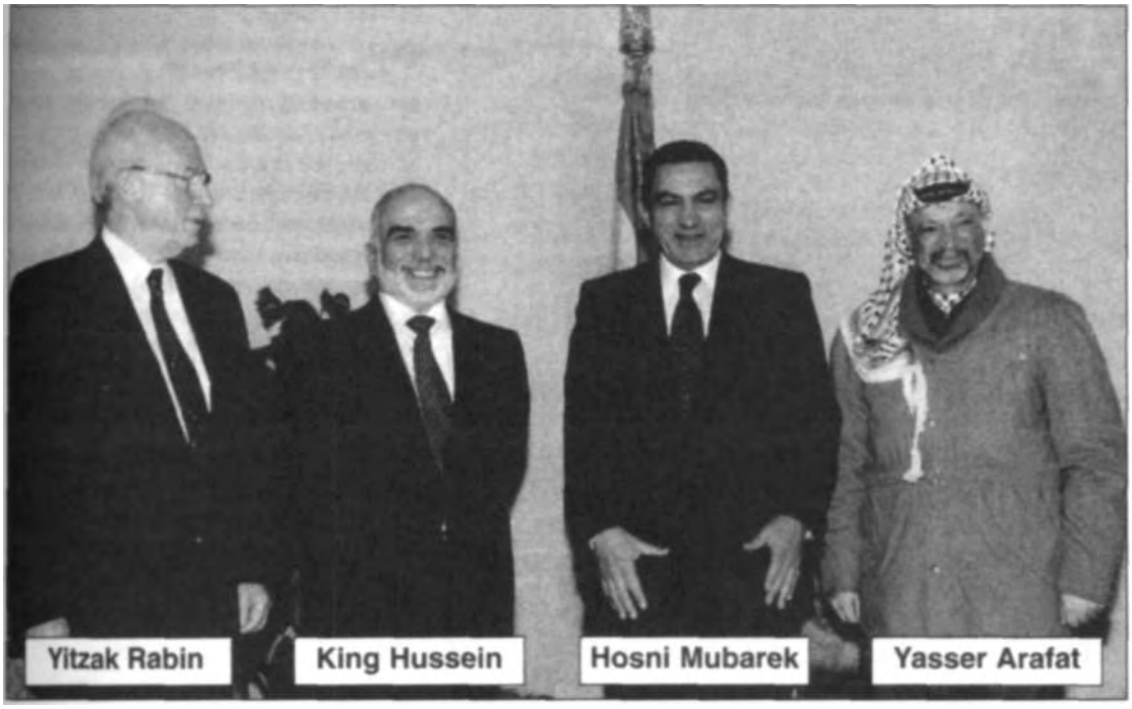

Four Middle Eastern leaders, all brother Masons, met in 1997 in so-called "peace negotiations." From left to right: Israeli Prime Minister Yitzak Rabin, Jordan's King Hussein, Egyptian President Hosni Mubarak, and Palestinian Leader Yasser Arafat. Mubarak is giving the cabalistic sign of the ram. (Photo: *Mews From Israel,* October 1997)

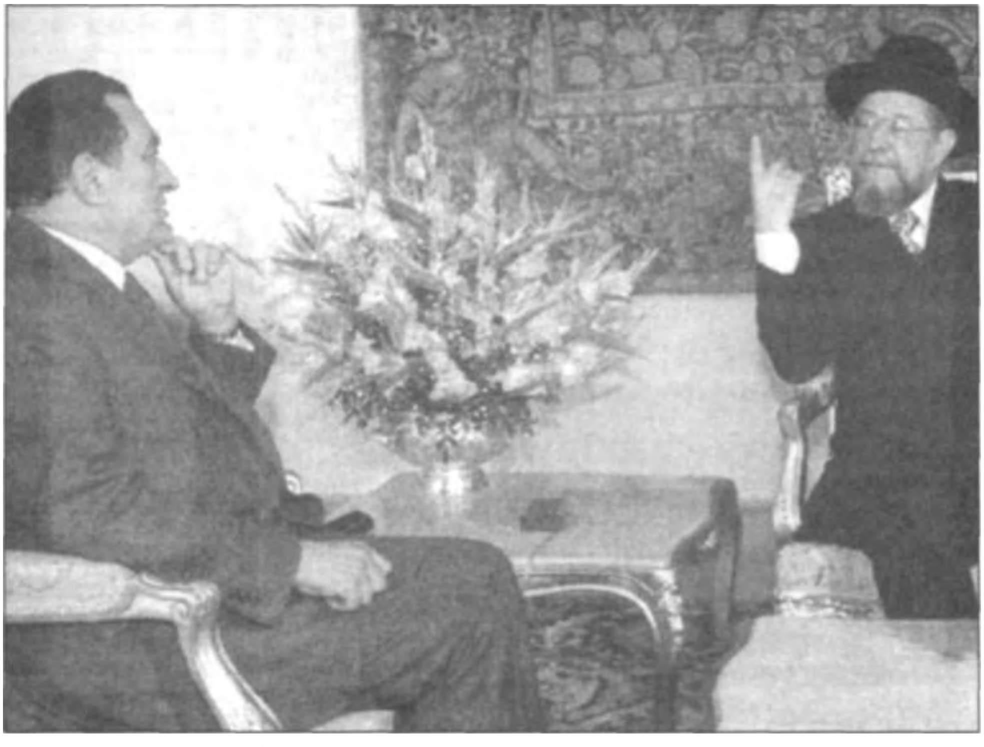

Israel's Ashkenazi Chief Rabbi Yisrael Lau clearly conveys a cabalistic message to Egyptian President Hosni Mubarak. In return Mubarak's left hand under his chin presents a Masonic message. (Photo: *The Omega Times,* New Zealand, January 1996, p. 7)

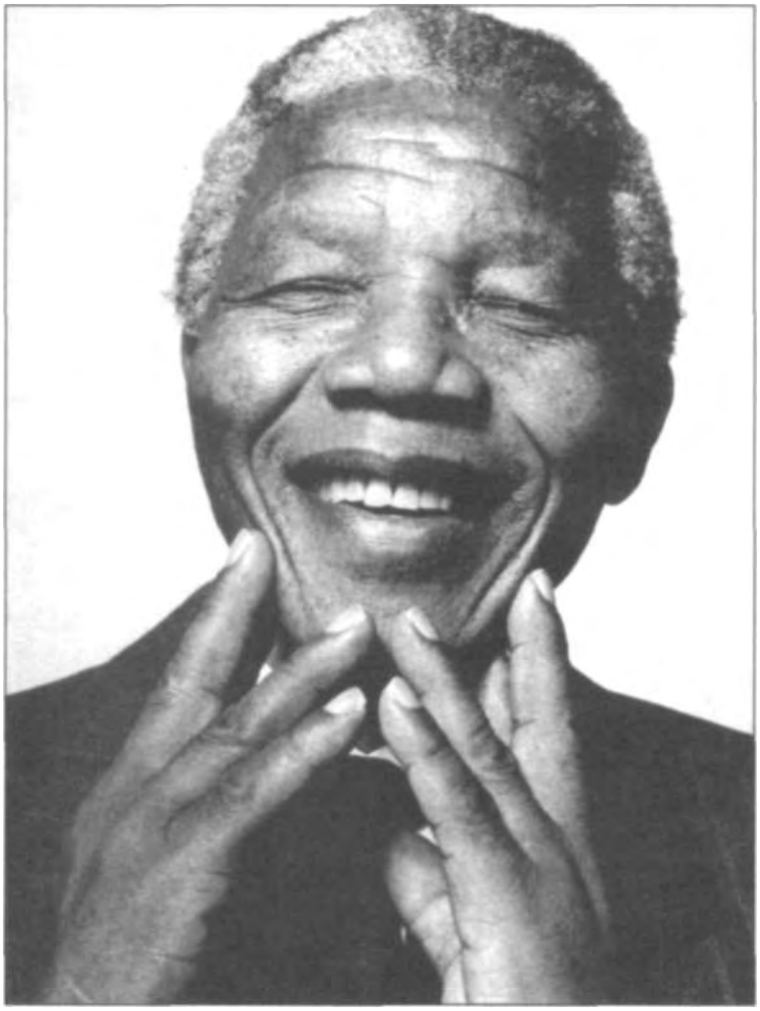

This picture of South African leader Nelson Mandela took up an entire page in *Modern Maturity* magazine in 2004. *Modern Maturity* is distributed by AARP, which some believe to be managed and run by a radical leftist/Zionist faction purporting to represent seniors. In this picture, Mandela takes joy in presenting the double V (shin) sign of cabalism. Nelson Mandela became a Mason in 1994. He is a tool of the Rothschilds and the Oppenheimers.

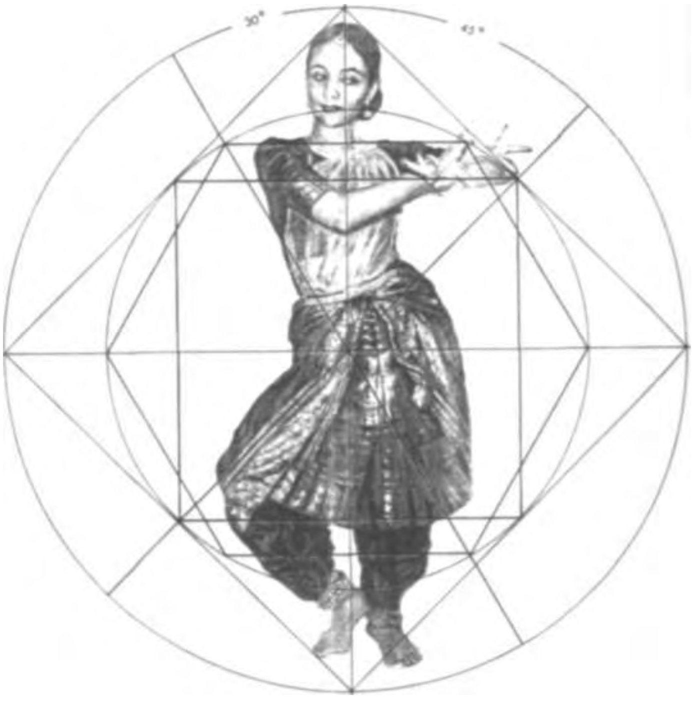

Hindu Dance, Hindu Gods: The positions of Hundu classical dance *(Bharat Natyatn)* describe geometric angular relationships from the axis of the body's center of gravity just below the navel. These positions, while defining principle angles, are also often attributed to various deities and are meant to convey their characteristic powers. (Drawing from book, *Sacred Geometry,* by Robert Lawlor, Thames and Hudsen, London,1989, p. 95)

The late Milton Berle, a Jew, was widely lauded as a comedian, but again, his antics were not always spontaneous. This bit of fluff demonstrates cabalistic insights and Masonic knowledge.

The late Arthur Murray was called "America's Dancing Master," and so he was. A talented genius on the dance floor, Murray's real name was Arthur Teichman, Jewish of course. From the era of the roaring 20s to today, a number of the fad dances were based on masonic and Jewish cabalistic rituals.

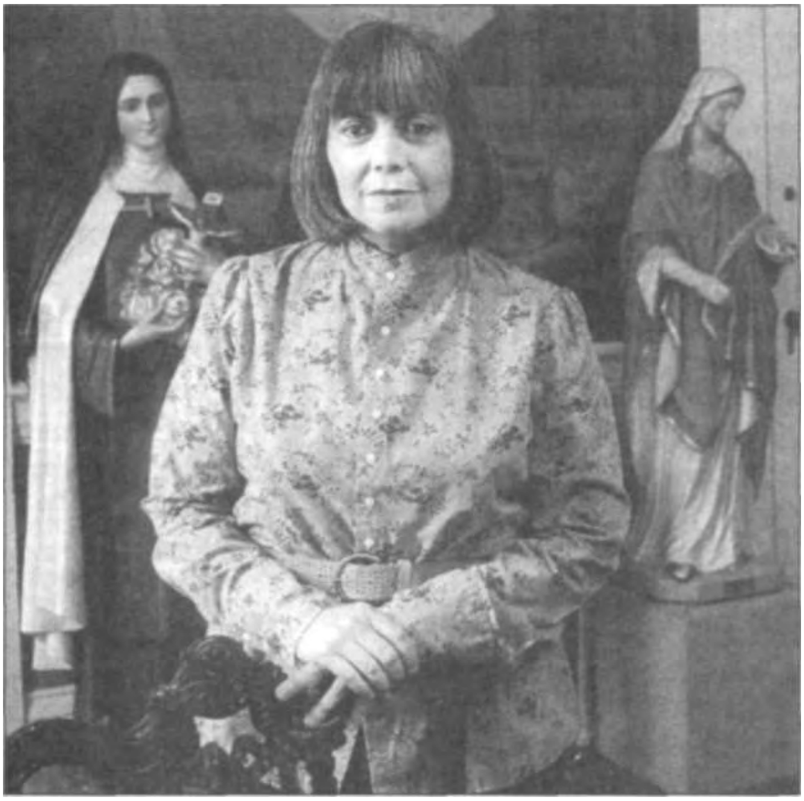

Anne Rice, writer of the popular "Vampire" series, giving an occult, cabalistic sign with her left-hand, partially concealed yet in front of all. Various occult symbols are on Rice's shirt. The statues of Mary give evidence of Rice's veneration of the Virgin in the form of the eternal pagan goddess. (Photo: Associated Press in *Austin American-Statesman,* January 31, 2004, p. A2)

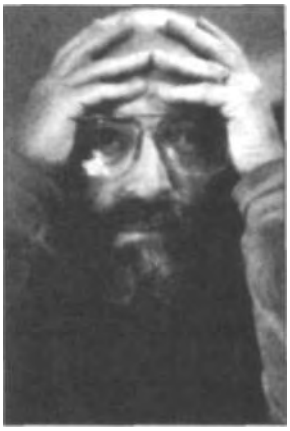

Chaim Potok, Hasidic Jewish writer and novelist, creates a headcovering of cabalistic magic. This sign is also reminiscent of the fourth sign in the initiation for the Select Master's Degree (see *Richardson's Monitor of Freemasonry,* p. 85). (Photo: *Newsweek,* August 5, 2002)

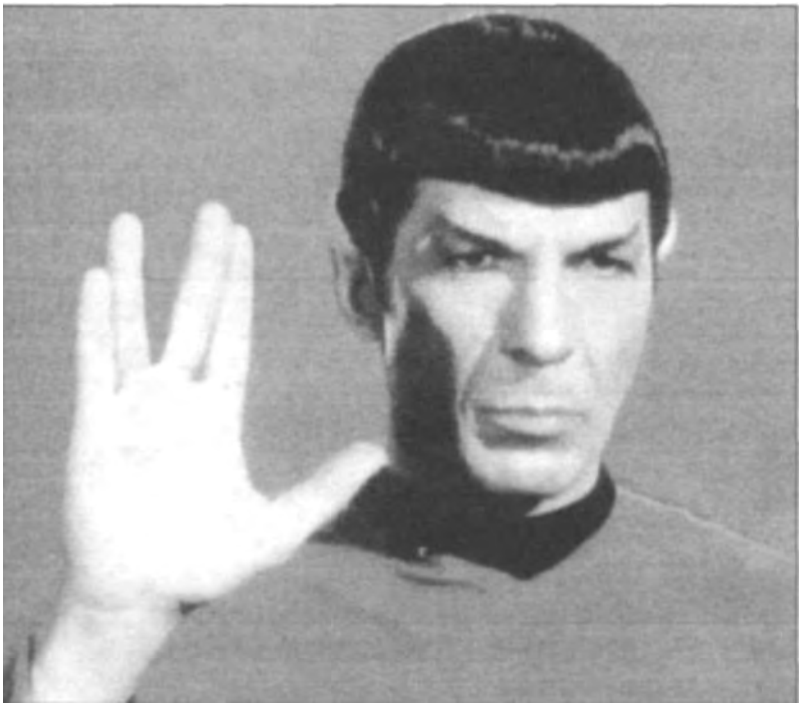

Mr. Spock, a *Star Trek* character played by actor Leonard Nimoy, became famous for giving the *Vulcan greeting* with his right hand. Nimoy, a Jew, says that the sign is the same gesture given in Jewish Synagogues when the Rabbi and Elders bring out the Holy of Holies. It is based on the Hebrew letter "shin." In essence, on the popular TV show, every time Spock gave the "shin" Vulcan greeting hand sign, he was invoking cabalistic magic.

TWENTY-TWO

Scorched by the Sun—Solar Signs, Circles, and Serpents

It is He (God) that sitteth upon the circle of the earth...

- *Isaiah 40:22* (written about
1,000 years before Columbus
proved the earth was not flat)

It would not be impossible to prove, with sufficient repetition and psychological understanding of the people concerned, that a square is, in fact, a circle.

— Joseph Goebbels
Propaganda Minister
Nazi Germany

In the mythology of the primitive world, the serpent is universally the symbol of the sun...The serpent was universally represented by the sun symbol, the circle or disk.

— Bishop Alexander Hislop
The Two Babylons

The sun has ever been at the center of false religion. The Ancient Mystery Religions venerated the sun, the solar disk, as deity. The Greeks honored Apollo as the child of the sun. The Romans paid homage to Mithra the sun god. These pagan philosophies form the basis for the worship of the

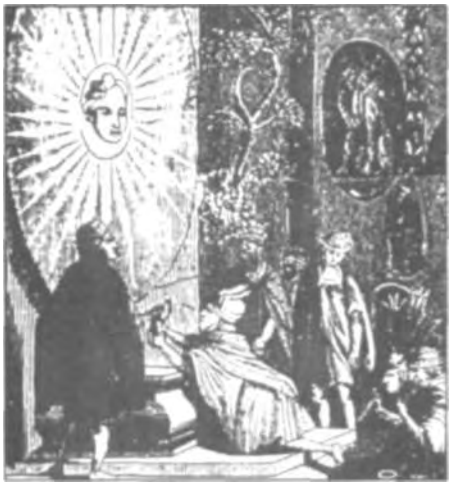

Sun worship in Peru exemplifies the **universal worship of the sun god, or** solar diety.

Illuminati and indicate the importance of the sun as symbol of satanic deity.

Englishman John Yarker, a well-known nineteenth century Masonic magician and occultist, in his *Notes on the Scientific and Religious Mysteries of Antiquity,* makes mention of the fact that the High Priests of the ancient Jews also worshipped the sun god. He writes:

> The Mysteries we know were practiced in a secret subterranean chamber under the Temple of Solomon, at Jerusalem, where four and twenty elders adored the sun, with their faces toward the east.'

What Yarker says is true, but as the Scriptures give evidence, this unholy worship by the Jewish leaders in secret was an abomination to God. *Ezekiel 8* makes this crystal clear. It is understandable why God would so detest worship of the sun god by the Mystery Religions and by the apostate Jewish elders. In reality, in worshipping the sun, the ancients were worshipping Satan. G.H. Pember, in a scholarly work on the Mysteries, *Earth's Earliest Ages,* affirms this fact when he states, "There is little doubt that the culmination of the Mysteries was the worship of Satan himself."[2]

Now today, the Masons, as did the apostate Jewish elders and priests in the days of Ezekiel, continue to worship Satan the sun god, also called Lucifer or Baal, by other names. The name of their great god, Jahbuhlun, which is revealed to Masons in the higher degrees, is a synonym for the solar deity; two of the three syllables in the name, buh and lun, mean "Baal" and "On," both of which represent sun and fire gods. That is why, in the authoritative guide *Gods of the Lodge,* Reginald Haupt reports that in the Lodge:

> All the movements by the Consecrating Officers of the Masonic Lodge or Chapter follow the course of the Sun. The Master and the Wardens enter and leave their chairs as the Sun returns to the East and goes forth therefrom. Most processional occasions are governed by these principles of what is known as "circumambulation." This ritual came from the ancient pagan rites of the Egyptians and from the worship of their Sun God and of the sun itself.[3]

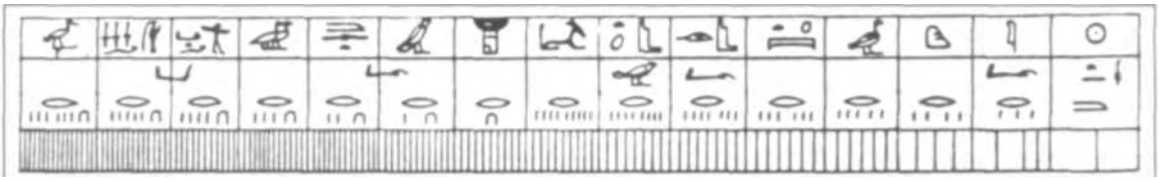

The first 15 divisions of the Egyptian Royal Cubit. Each division of the cubit was dedicated to a divinity, and the first division, on the right, shows the hieroglyph of the sun god Ra, symbol of divine unity. (From the book, *Jesus Christ, Sun of God: Ancient Cosmology and Early Christian Symbolism,* by David Fideler, Quest Books, Wheaton, Illinois)

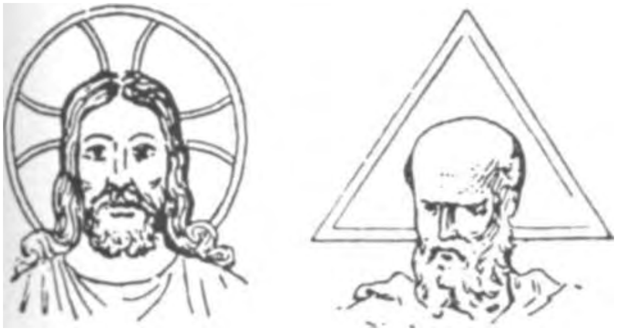

Halos, also known as nimbuses, present the individual as a saint, a deity, or other holy person. (From the *Herder Dictionary of Symbols,* Chiron Publications, Wilmette, Illinois)

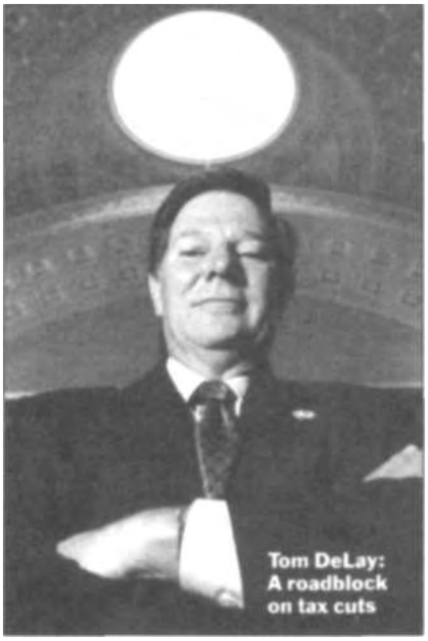

At right: Congressman Tom Delay (R-TX), House Majority Leader, pictured in Time magazine. Politicians are sometimes framed with a sun-like halo, called a "nimbus," over their heads. This gives them the subtle majestic appearance of being some type of god-man.

In honoring and worshipping the sun in their rituals, Freemasonry and Illuminism defy God. The Bible's Job displayed great wisdom by uttering these words concerning God's thoughts concerning worship of the sun and the heavens:

> *If I beheld the sun when it shined, or the moon walking in brightness; and my heart hath been secretly enticed... this also was an iniquity to be punished by the judge; for I should have denied the God who is above. (Job 31:26-28)*

The Swastika Represents the Sun

The Nazi swastika is a representation of the sun. But the Nazis simply borrowed this symbol from the ancient religions, including the Hindus of India, the Shintoists of Japan, and a number of Native American Indian tribes. Even today, in temples and shrines throughout Asia, you will find the swastika painted on walls, on totem poles, and over altars. Until Hitler and the Nazis gave the sign a bad reputation, the Masons also universally used the sun sign. And today the symbol of the circle, particularly that of the point within the circle, is a prominent feature of Masonic theology.

The Point Within the Circle

According to *Mackey's Masonic Encyclopedia* the hidden, true meaning of this symbol, the point inside the circle, is far different than what the everyday Masonic brother is told. In reality, its meaning is yet another proof that Masonry is a sex cult. Mackey says the esoteric explanation is that the *point* within the circle is the male phallus, or penis, and the circle is the female yoni, or vagina. Here, says Mackey, is a "symbol of fecundity, expressed by the male generative principle."[4]

But, Mackey emphasizes, the sun is still not forgotten in Masonry, for while the

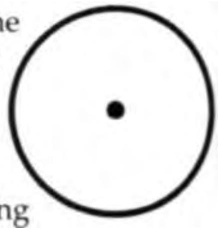

phallus (point) and the vagina (circle) symbolize the sex act (the generative principle), they also represent the sun as deity. The point with the circle is the sun god.

"At times," Mackey observes, "this circle is represented by the ananta (Sanscrit for *eternity*), a serpent with its tail in its mouth."[5]

Since the symbol of the point within a circle is of such overriding importance to the Illuminati Masons and yet is so little recognized as significant by the dumbed-down masses, many Illuminists enjoy a bit of mockery of the masses by blatantly displaying this symbol. Some believe the Target department store chain logo—the red circle and point—is one example.

Pat Robertson's Hidden Message

Pat Robertson, Religious Right leader of TVs *The 700 Club* and founder of the Christian Coalition, gives us another graphic example. Some years ago, Robertson had two books ghostwritten for him, one called *The New World Order* and another titled *The New Millennium.* As happens often in elitist circles, the opinions and material for both books seemed to be decidedly anti-elitist; they even exposed the global conspiracy and the Illuminati. So, was Pat Robertson really joining the fight against the evil Illuminati? Not on your life!

The books were for the "stupids," the masses. While reading *The New Millennium* the reader ignorant of the uses of symbolism probably ignored the fact that at the top of every page, a point within a circle could be found. This was Robertson's "hidden code" to his elite pals that he was still on their side and was just taking the ignorant masses for a ride.

The Sign of the Mafia, the Illuminati and of Druids

According to Dr. Cathy Burns, in *Hidden Secrets of the Eastern Star*, the point within the circle is, "The sign of the infamous Mafia or Cosa Nostra," rather than the "black hand" as many believe.[6]

But the real shocker is the importance given this sign by Adam Weishaupt and the Order of the Illuminati. Burns explains that because Illuminism was so determined to keep the true nature of the Order under wraps, its founder, Weishaupt, ordered that the actual words "Illuminati" and "Illuminism" never be used in correspondence. Instead they were to be replaced by the astrological symbol for the sun; that is, the circle with a dot in the middle.[7]

Burns also gives evidence that the point within

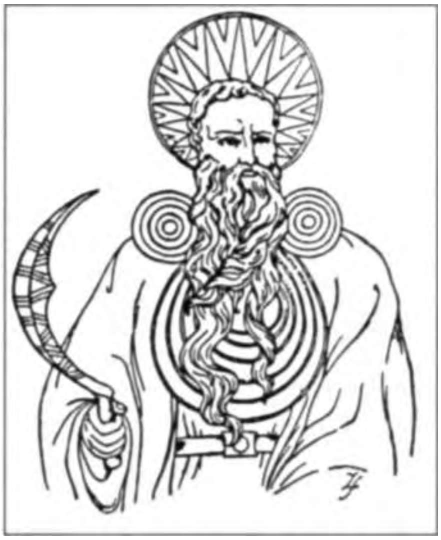

An Arch-Druid from pagan Great Britain in his ceremonial robes. (From Wellcome's *Ancient Cymric Medicine*)

the circle was used by the Druids of Britain, whose stone temples were circular with a single stone erected in the center. They believed this design conferred magical powers.

Flower Power and Magic Circles

The daisy flower, the marigold, and the sunflower also are indicative of the sun as deity and so, traditionally, adherents of the Mystery Religions, as well as Hindus, Zoroastrians, and others, utilize these symbols. Adam Weishaupt, founder in 1776 of the Order of the Illuminari, encouraged "Flower Power" as a symbol, and it was taken up by New Age hippies in the '60s.

The symbol of the circle is, for the Illuminari, sort of a pared down, basic sun sign. That is why the circle is used so frequently and in a score of configurations within Masonic and other secret society networks. It is also a staple of witchcraft and Satan worship. Bill Schnoebelen, author of many books unmasking Freemasonry, witchcraft, and the occult, was himself formerly a Mason as well as a male witch. He has described the witch's "temple" as follows:

> In witchcraft, the "temple" is frequently not a building but rather a sacred "Magic Circle" laid down on the floor of a room with great ceremony. It is the sacred space of the Wicca and serves the same function as a temple does to the Mason.[8]

LORD

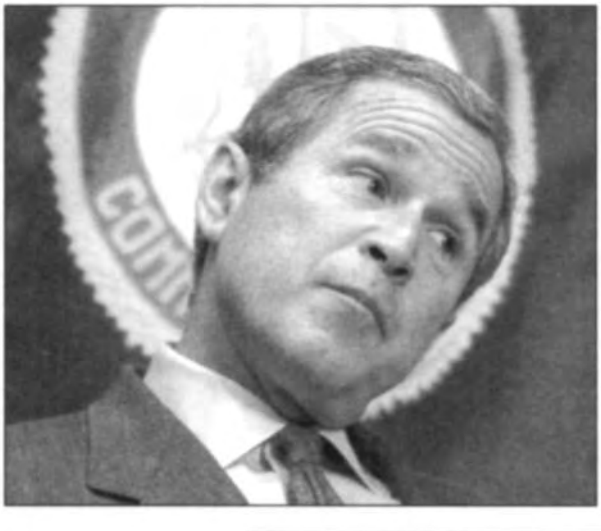

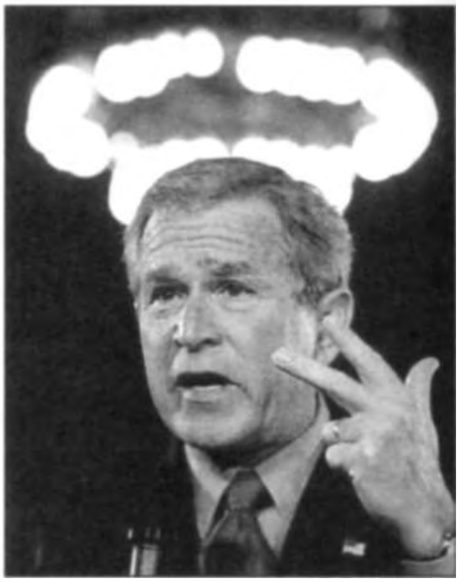

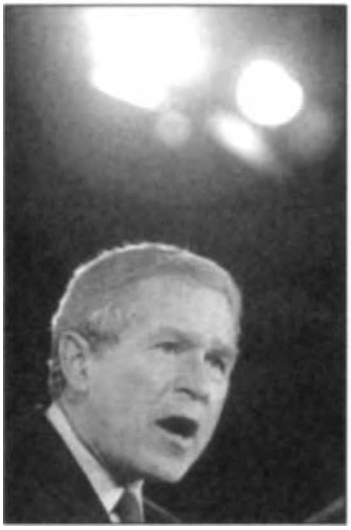

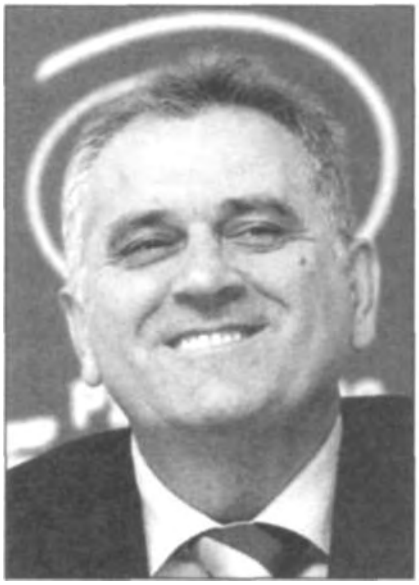

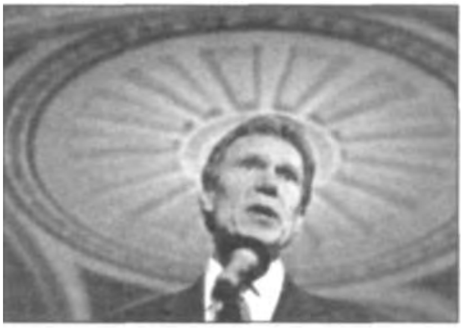

Gods or Men?—Is there a concerted plot to flood our consciousness with images that build world leaders into Mount Olympian man-gods, mythological giants *on* earth? Internet sites www.freepressinternational.com and www.Rense.com caught on to this recent trend and published a number of photographs that seem to confirm this bizarre plot. Free Press International, an alternative news website, wrote, "These are just a few of the many photographs mainstream media has been deliberately releasing to the public showing our world leaders with halos. I'd say with the shape our world is in right now, they should have horns instead of halos. Most of these pictures are coming from Associated Press, and Reuters." Surely, the scriptures were right on when they warned that the Devil himself often comes disguised as an "angel of light." (Note: *Codex Magica* has seen these pictures published in an increasing number of media forums, from *Time* and *Newsweek* to daily papers.)

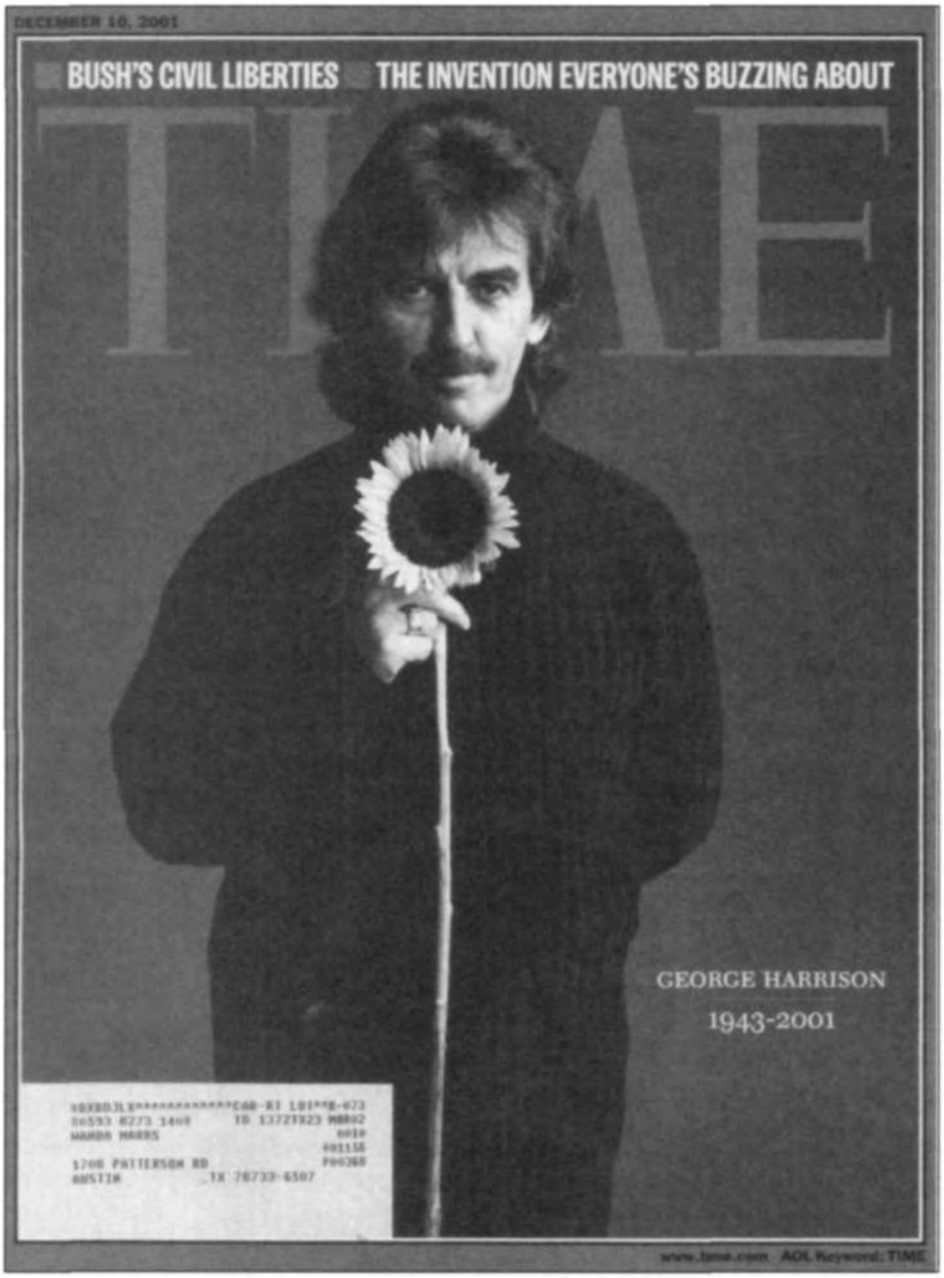
DECEMBER 10, 2001
BUSH'S CIVIL LIBERTIES
THE INVENTION EVERYONE'S BUZZING ABOUT
TIME
GEORGE HARRISON
1943-2001
www.time.com AOL Keyword: TIME

Upon his death, *Time* magazine published this telling photo of Beatle superstar George Harrison (1943-2001) on the cover of its December 10, 2001 issue. Harrison, wearing black, in a black and white photo, holds a sunflower, symbol of the Illuminati Sun God. The solar deity is also prominently worshipped in the Hindu religion, and the Beatles were devoted followers of the Maharishi Mahesh Yogi and other Indian Hindu gurus. *Time's* feature story, in fact, reports that George Harrison never gave up on his gurus, to his dying breath. All the Beatles were drenched in illegal drugs, such as cocaine, hashish, and heroin. Their album, *Sergeant Pepper's Lonely Hearts Club Band,* even had a cameo photo of British "666" beast satanist priest, Aleister Crowley, on its cover. The latest information is that the Beatles were an experimental music group sponsored behind the scenes by British and U.S. intelligence. Their role was intended to use various psyops mechanisms and anti-Christian messages to arouse turmoil and psychological trauma in society. One of the Beatles most memorable albums was tided, *Magical Mystery Tour.* Beatle John Lennon was murdered by a man many believe to have been a CIA trained "Manchurian Candidate," and George Harrison was once assaulted and stabbed by a would-be assassin.

Hindu guru Maharishi Mahesh Yogi and the Beatles. The Hindu religion, thoroughly wicked and satanic, is closely related to the Illuminati's religious doctrines.

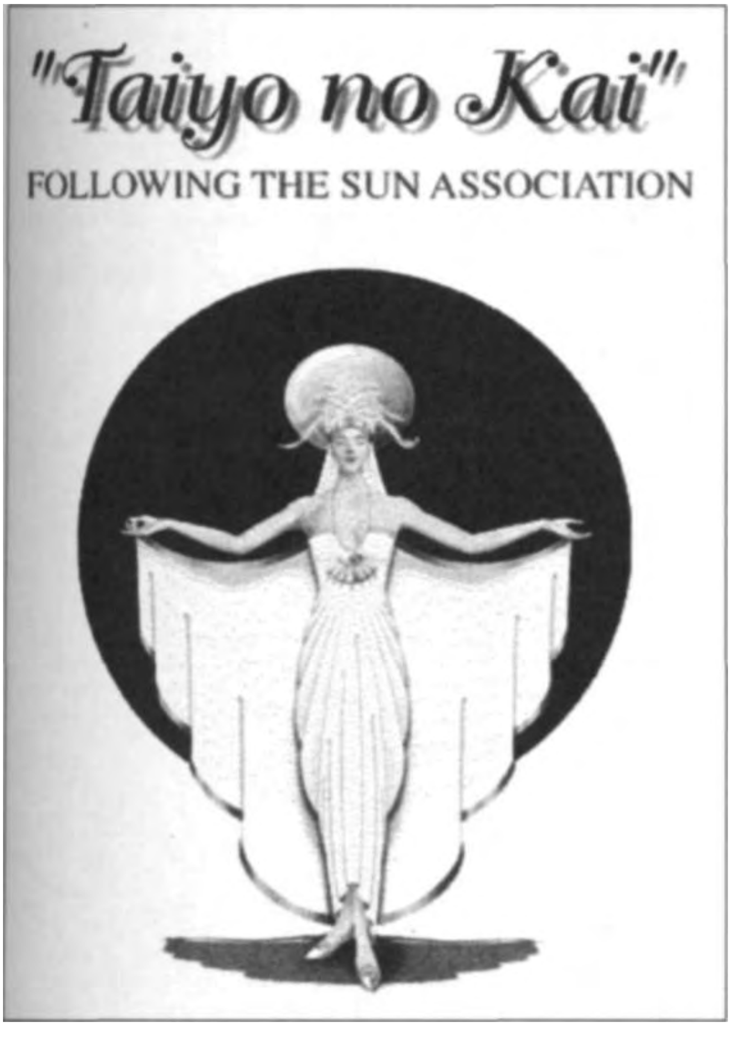
"Taiyo no Kai"
FOLLOWING THE SUN ASSOCIATION

"The New Age is dawning. A sun shines within every person." That's the philosophy of the "Taiyo no Kai" (Following The Sun Association), founded by Japan's Kaoru Nakamaru.

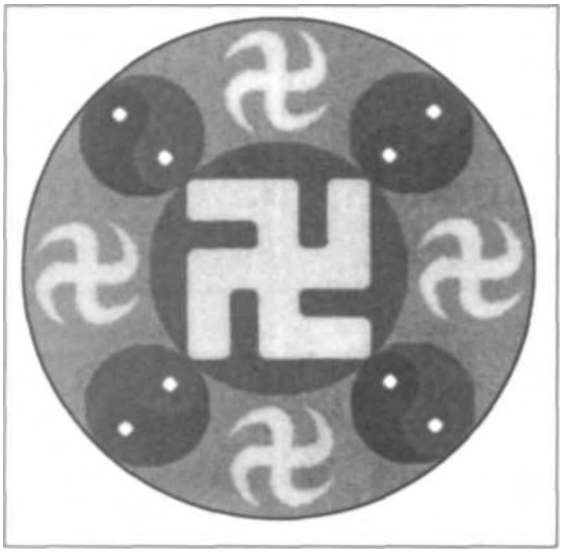

Falun Gong is a religious movement in China. With some 100 million adherents worldwide, Falun Gong is a spiritual force to be reckoned with. Its logo is the circle with the yin/yang and the swastika (a sun sign) prominently displayed.

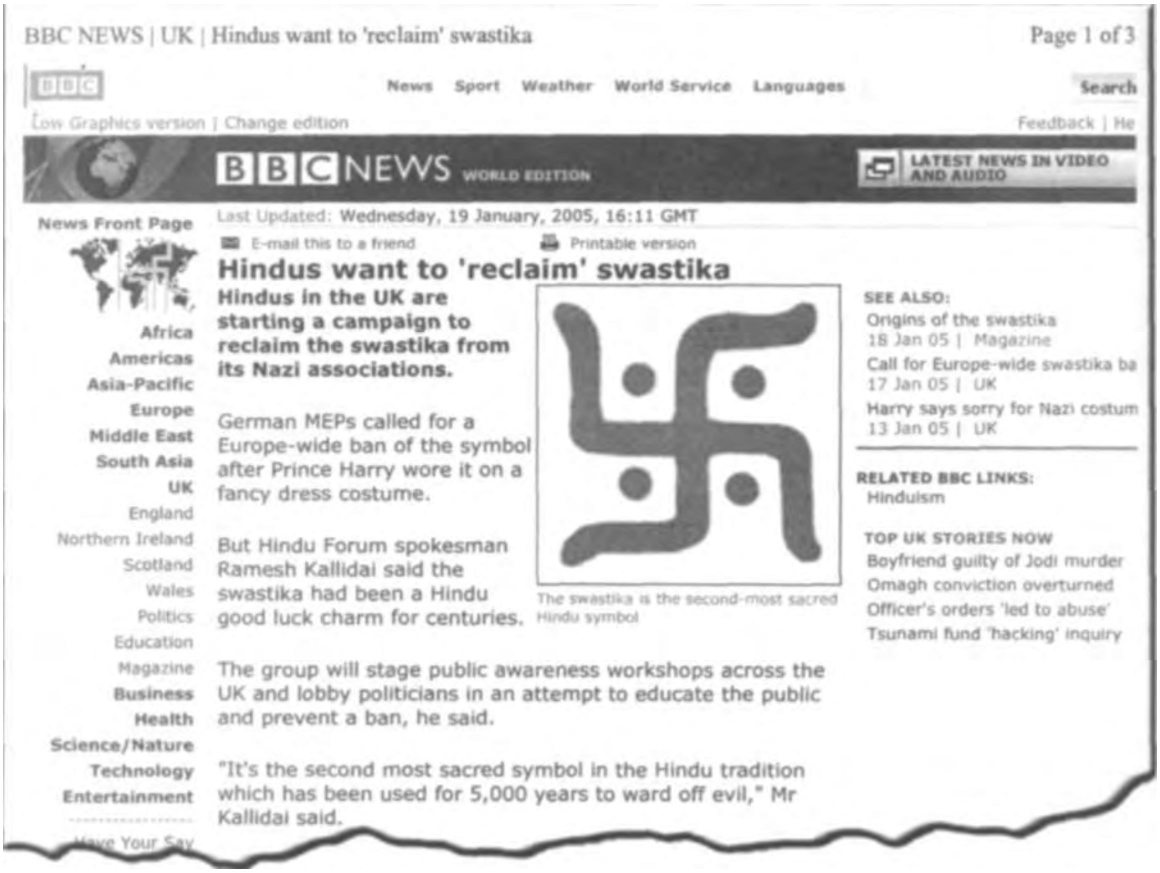

BBC NEWS | UK | Hindus want to 'reclaim' swastika Page 1 of 3

News Sport Weather World Service Languages Search

Low Graphics version | Change edition Feedback | He

BBC NEWS WORLD EDITION

LATEST NEWS IN VIDEO AND AUDIO

News Front Page

Africa
Americas
Asia-Pacific
Europe
Middle East
South Asia
UK
England
Northern Ireland
Scotland
Wales
Politics
Education
Magazine
Business
Health
Science/Nature
Technology
Entertainment
Have Your Say

Last Updated: Wednesday, 19 January, 2005, 16:11 GMT

E-mail this to a friend Printable version

Hindus want to 'reclaim' swastika

Hindus in the UK are starting a campaign to reclaim the swastika from its Nazi associations.

German MEPs called for a Europe-wide ban of the symbol after Prince Harry wore it on a fancy dress costume.

But Hindu Forum spokesman Ramesh Kallidai said the swastika had been a Hindu good luck charm for centuries.

The swastika is the second-most sacred Hindu symbol

The group will stage public awareness workshops across the UK and lobby politicians in an attempt to educate the public and prevent a ban, he said.

"It's the second most sacred symbol in the Hindu tradition which has been used for 5,000 years to ward off evil," Mr Kallidai said.

SEE ALSO:
Origins of the swastika
18 Jan 05 | Magazine
Call for Europe-wide swastika ba
17 Jan 05 | UK
Harry says sorry for Nazi costum
13 Jan 05 | UK

RELATED BBC LINKS:
Hinduism

TOP UK STORIES NOW
Boyfriend guilty of Jodi murder
Omagh conviction overturned
Officer's orders 'led to abuse'
Tsunami fund 'hacking' inquiry

The swastika (swirling sun sign) was not invented first by Hitler **and the Nazis. It is an old Freemasonry symbol. One can find swastikas painted and carved on ancient temples in Japan and India, and *on* Native American Indian pottery and artifacts. It seems that the forces who gave us this sign, the swastika, continue to** attempt **to reintroduce it to the masses. BBC News on-line** recently **reported that Hindus want to reclaim the swastika, which their gurus claim has been a Hindu good luck sign for centuries. "It's the second most sacred symbol in the Hindu tradition," said Hindu Forum spokesman, Ramesh Kallidai. (BBC News/UK, January 19, 2005)**

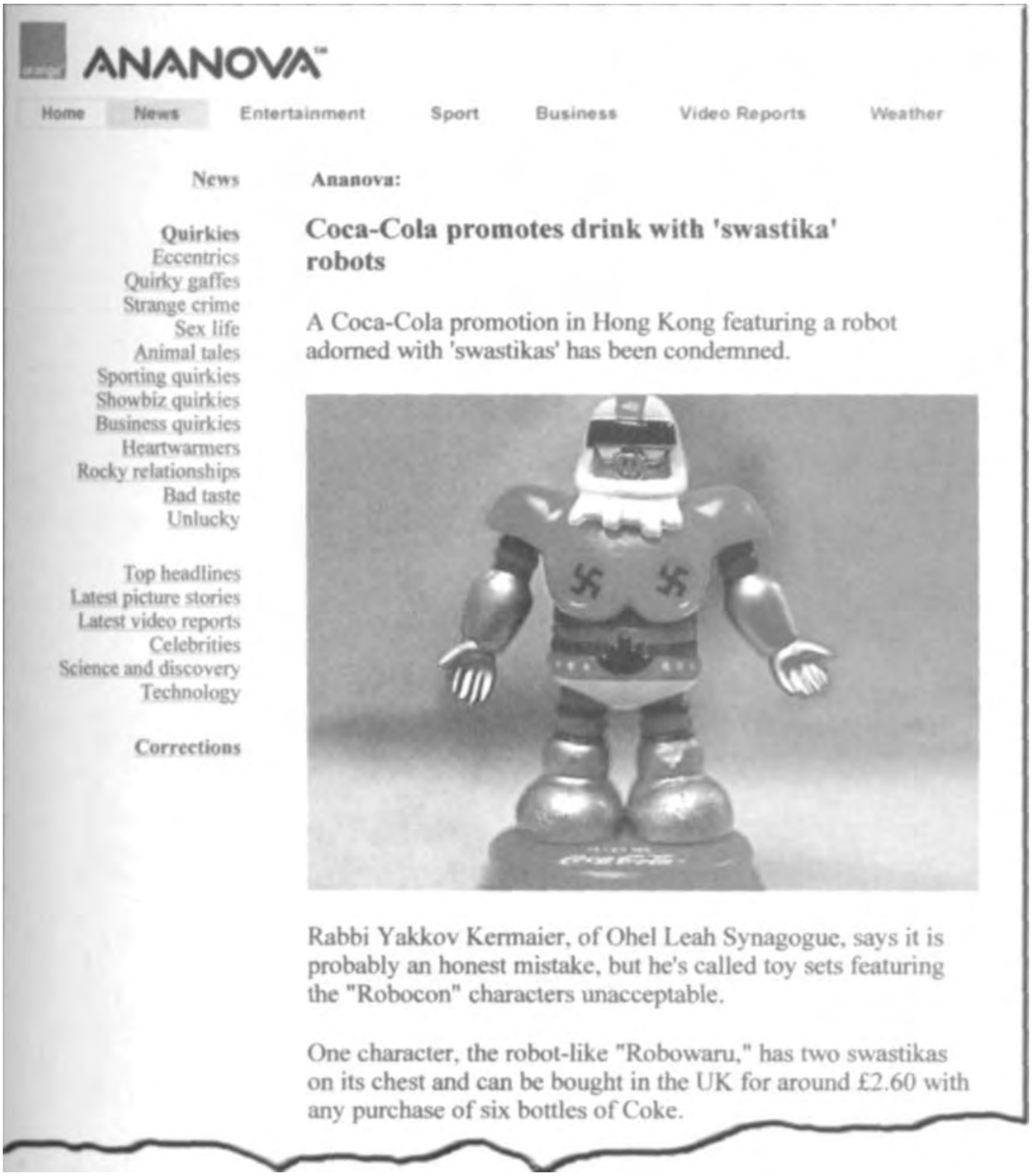
ANANOVA
Home
News
Entertainment
Sport
Business
Video Reports
Weather
News
Quirkies
Eccentrics
Quirky gaffes
Strange crime
Sex life
Animal tales
Sporting quirkies
Showbiz quirkies
Business quirkies
Heartwarmers
Rocky relationships
Bad taste
Unlucky
Top headlines
Latest picture stories
Latest video reports
Celebrities
Science and discovery
Technology
Corrections

Ananova:

Coca-Cola promotes drink with 'swastika' robots

A Coca-Cola promotion in Hong Kong featuring a robot adorned with 'swastikas' has been condemned.

Rabbi Yakkov Kermaier, of Ohel Leah Synagogue, says it is probably an honest mistake, but he's called toy sets featuring the "Robocon" characters unacceptable.

One character, the robot-like "Robowaru," has two swastikas on its chest and can be bought in the UK for around £2.60 with any purchase of six bottles of Coke.

In 2003, when the Coca-Cola Company in Hong Kong ran an ad promotion featuring a robot adorned with swastikas, Jewish spokesmen balked. A Jewish rabbi, however, admitted, *"The Nazi swastika can easily be confused with Buddhist swastikas that are common in Asia." (Ananova.com* news, May 1, *2003)*

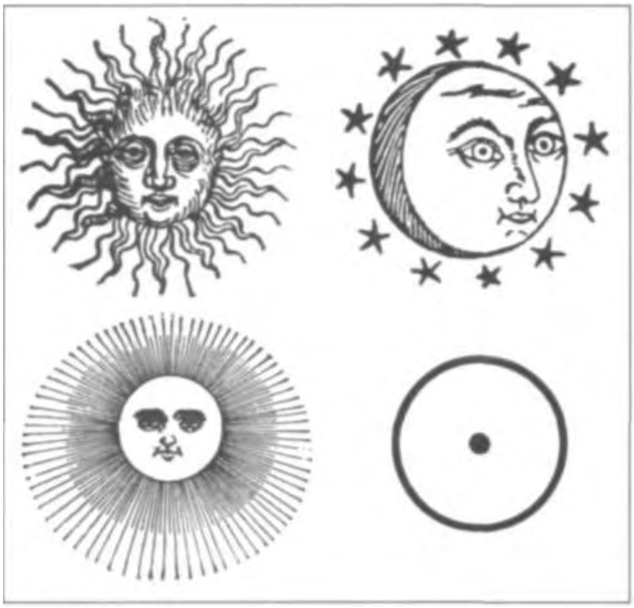

Symbols of the sun as a deity are commonplace in the publications and artifacts of Masonic, Rosicrucian, and other occultic groups. The point within the circle is especially significant and has profound implications.

The yin/yang is often seen at martial arts studios, yet few understand its esoteric meaning. The symbol represents the combining of male and female, the forces of darkness and light; the integration of God and the Devil.

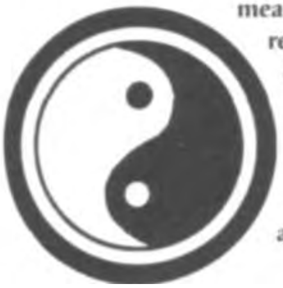

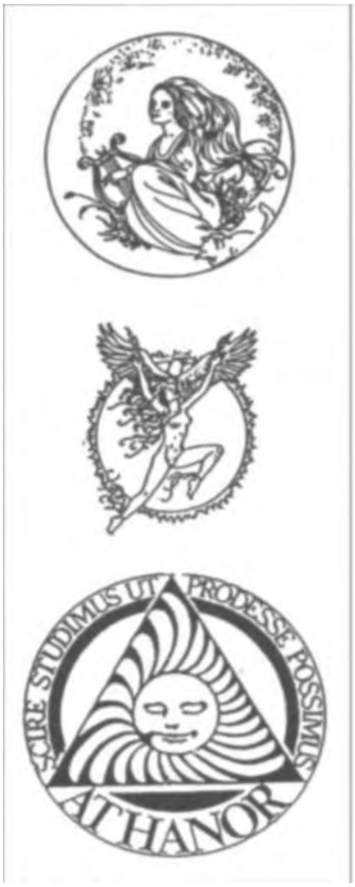
SCIRE STUDIMUS UT PRODESSE POSSIMUS
ATHANOR

Circular images of goddess worship and sun adoration are found in many New Age and occult publications.

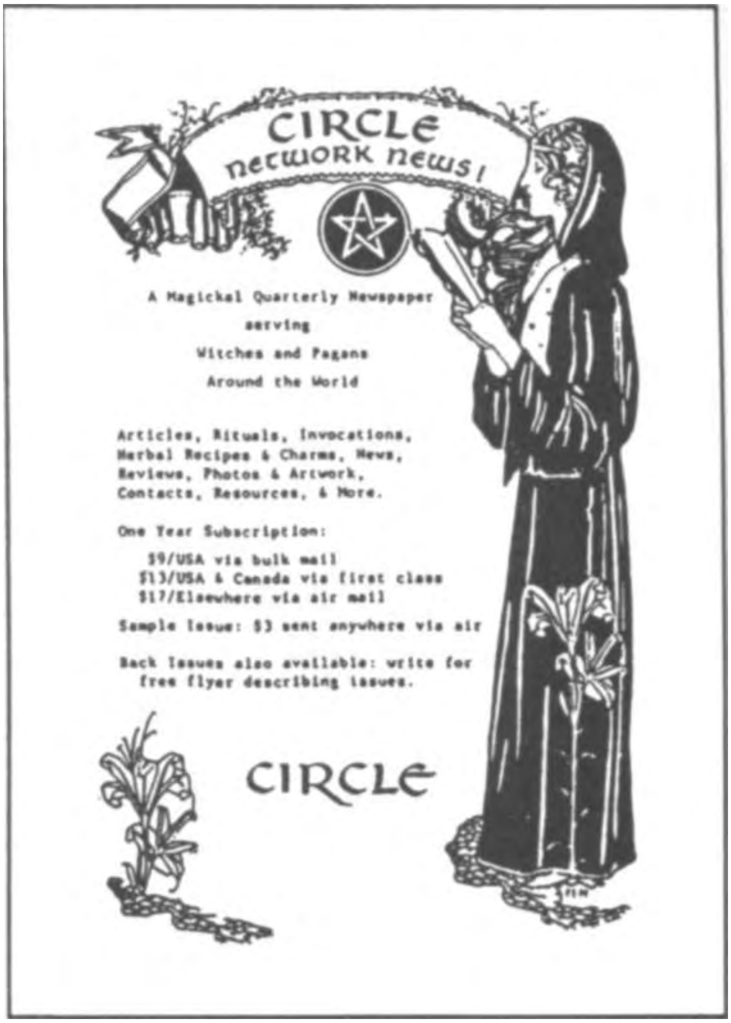

CIRCLE
network news!

A Magickal Quarterly Newspaper
serving
Witches and Pagans
Around the World

Articles, Rituals, Invocations,
Herbal Recipes & Charms, News,
Reviews, Photos & Artwork,
Contacts, Resources, & More.

One Year Subscription:

$9/USA via bulk mail
$13/USA & Canada via first class
$17/Elsewhere via air mail

Sample Issue: $3 sent anywhere via air

Back Issues also available: write for free flyer describing issues.

CIRCLE

Witches are major promoters of the Goddess revival. Above is an ad for a witch's periodic newspaper (address deleted).

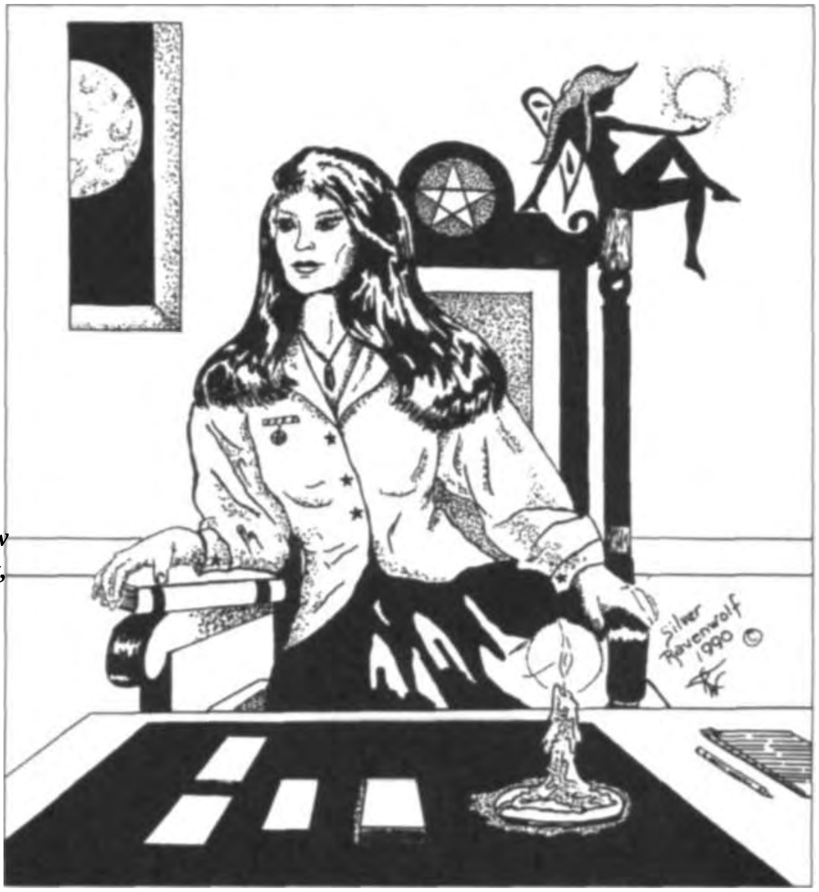
Silver Ravenwolf 1990 ©

An interesting drawing of an upscale witch, complete with lunar force (moon in window), pentagram (on chair), naked goddess holding the radiating sun in her left hand, and more. (From the book, *To Ride a Silver Broomstick: New Generation Witchcraft,* by Silver Raven Wolf, Llewellyn Publications, St. Paul, MN, 1993)

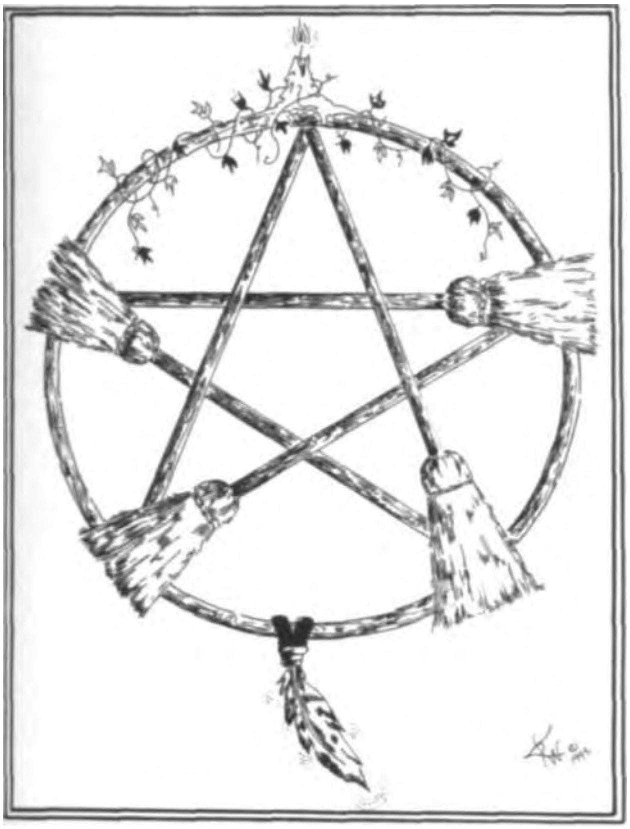

(From the book, *To Ride a Silver Broomstick: New Generation Witchcraft,* by Silver RavenWolf)

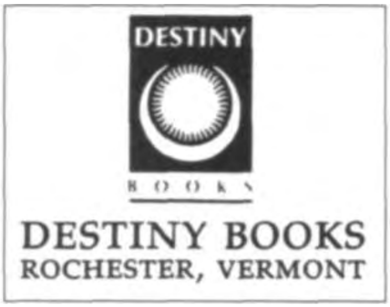
DESTINY
BOOKS
DESTINY BOOKS
ROCHESTER, VERMONT

Logo for a publisher of many occult and esoteric books.

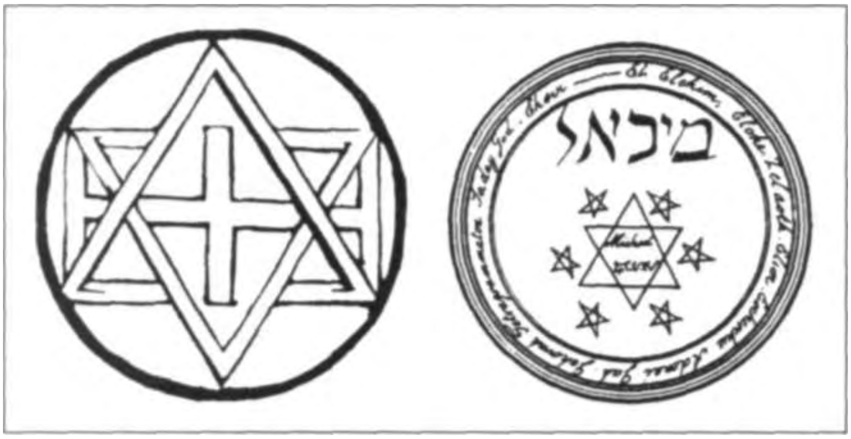

Two circle images used in magical rites. *Left:* magic circle with six-pointed star (hexagram) and occult cross. *Right:* magic circle from Francis Barrett's *The Magus,* London, 1901. (From *The Herder Dictionary of Symbols,* Chiron Publications, Wilmette, IL, 1986)

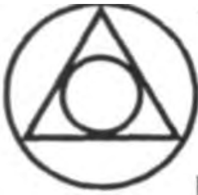

This symbol is featured prominently on the cover of the New Age book *THE MARK*, by Maurice Nicoll. The book is mostly full of mysteriously garbled esoteric nonsense. Yet, a careful reading enables the reader to glean what the author, Maurice Nicoll, was attempting to convey to his New Age readership concerning the Mark. Nicoll is a British psychiatrist and student of occultist Carl Jung.

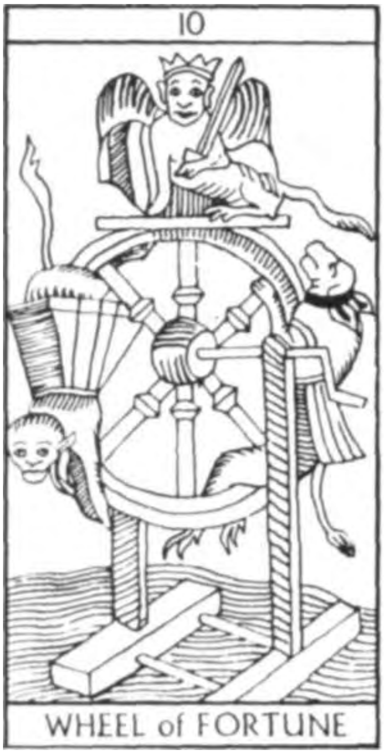

"Wheel of Fortune" tarot card, used by witches and seers for predicting one's future. The inner circle of the Illuminati elite are sometimes referred to as the *"Wheel."*

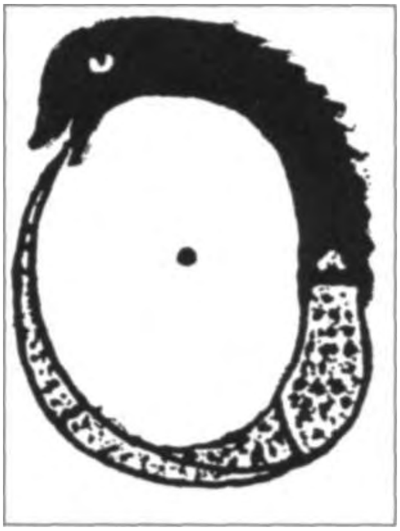

Stylized Oroboros serpent biting its tail, forming a circle with its body. Inside the circle is the point of Lucifer.

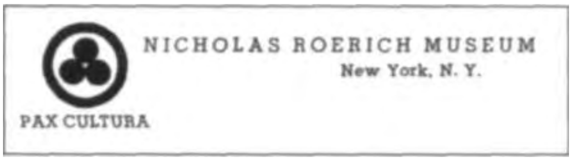

NICHOLAS ROERICH MUSEUM
New York, N. Y.
PAX CULTURA

Logo for the Nicholas Roerich Museum in New York City. Nicholas Roerich was a Russian mystic and Freemason who had vast and mysterious influence over both President Franklin D. Roosevelt and FDR's Secretary of Agriculture, Henry Wallace. Reportedly, FDR had the Treasury include the design of the all-seeing eye and the pyramid on the U.S. one dollar bill at Roerich's urging.

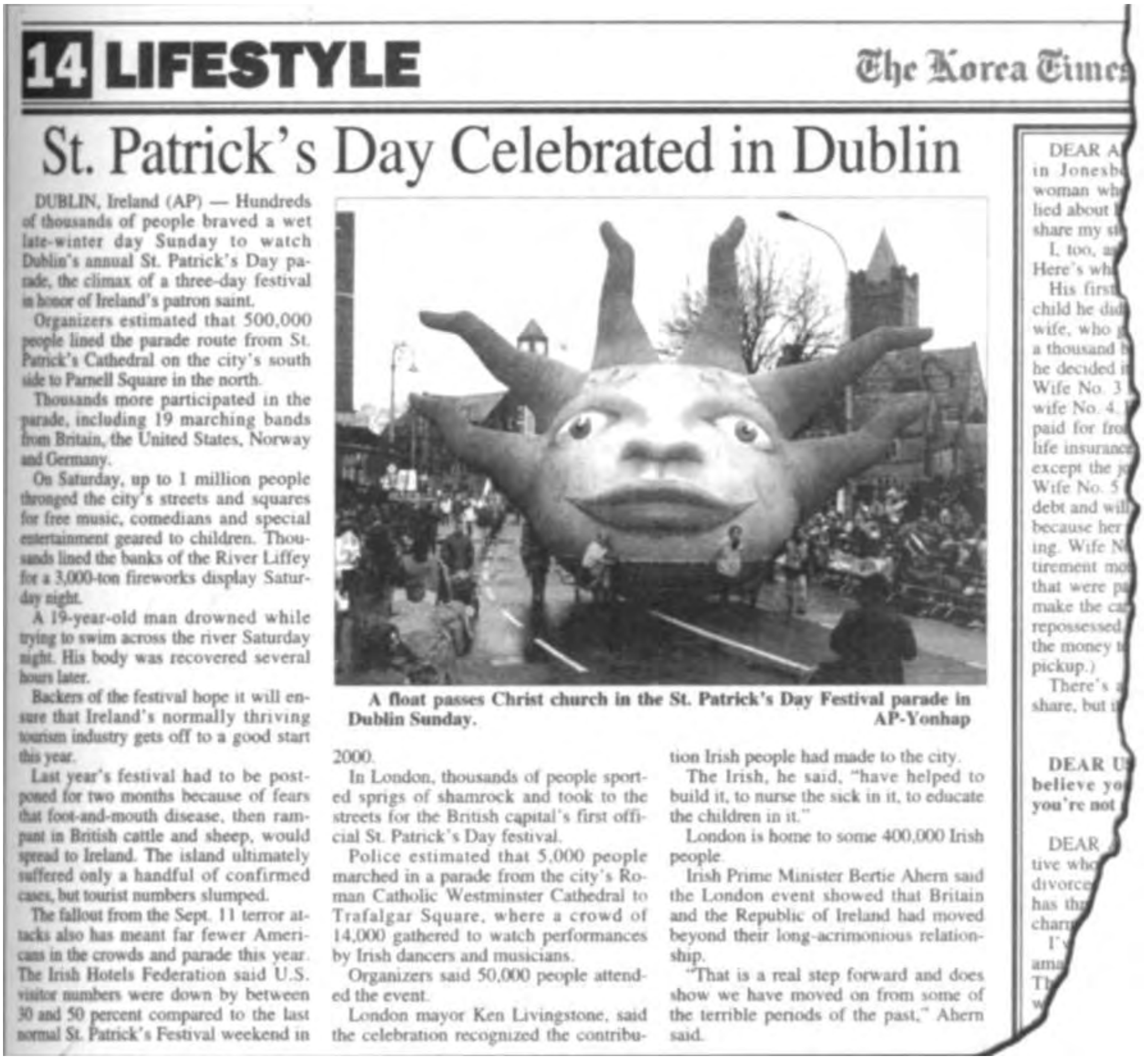

14 LIFESTYLE The Korea Times

St. Patrick's Day Celebrated in Dublin

DUBLIN, Ireland (AP) — Hundreds of thousands of people braved a wet late-winter day Sunday to watch Dublin's annual St. Patrick's Day parade, the climax of a three-day festival in honor of Ireland's patron saint.

Organizers estimated that 500,000 people lined the parade route from St. Patrick's Cathedral on the city's south side to Parnell Square in the north.

Thousands more participated in the parade, including 19 marching bands from Britain, the United States, Norway and Germany.

On Saturday, up to 1 million people thronged the city's streets and squares for free music, comedians and special entertainment geared to children. Thousands lined the banks of the River Liffey for a 3,000-ton fireworks display Saturday night.

A 19-year-old man drowned while trying to swim across the river Saturday night. His body was recovered several hours later.

Backers of the festival hope it will ensure that Ireland's normally thriving tourism industry gets off to a good start this year.

Last year's festival had to be postponed for two months because of fears that foot-and-mouth disease, then rampant in British cattle and sheep, would spread to Ireland. The island ultimately suffered only a handful of confirmed cases, but tourist numbers slumped.

The fallout from the Sept. 11 terror attacks also has meant far fewer Americans in the crowds and parade this year. The Irish Hotels Federation said U.S. visitor numbers were down by between 30 and 50 percent compared to the last normal St. Patrick's Festival weekend in 2000.

In London, thousands of people sported sprigs of shamrock and took to the streets for the British capital's first official St. Patrick's Day festival.

Police estimated that 5,000 people marched in a parade from the city's Roman Catholic Westminster Cathedral to Trafalgar Square, where a crowd of 14,000 gathered to watch performances by Irish dancers and musicians.

Organizers said 50,000 people attended the event.

London mayor Ken Livingstone, said the celebration recognized the contribution Irish people had made to the city.

The Irish, he said, "have helped to build it, to nurse the sick in it, to educate the children in it."

London is home to some 400,000 Irish people.

Irish Prime Minister Bertie Ahern said the London event showed that Britain and the Republic of Ireland had moved beyond their long-acrimonious relationship.

"That is a real step forward and does show we have moved on from some of the terrible periods of the past," Ahern said.

A float passes Christ church in the St. Patrick's Day Festival parade in Dublin Sunday. **AP-Yonhap**

DEAR A
in Jonesb
woman wh
lied about
share my st
I, too, a
Here's wh
His first
child he did
wife, who
a thousand
he decided i
Wife No. 3
wife No. 4.
paid for fro
life insuranc
except the j
Wife No. 5
debt and wil
because her
ing. Wife N
tirement mo
that were p
make the ca
repossessed,
the money t
pickup.)
There's
share, but i

DEAR U
believe yo
you're not

DEAR
tive who
divorce
has th
charr
I'
ama
Th
w

This float honoring the sun (with *six* rays) was a part of the St. Patrick's Day Festival parade in Dublin, Ireland. (Photo and article from *The Korea Times* newspaper, March 19, 2002, p. 14)

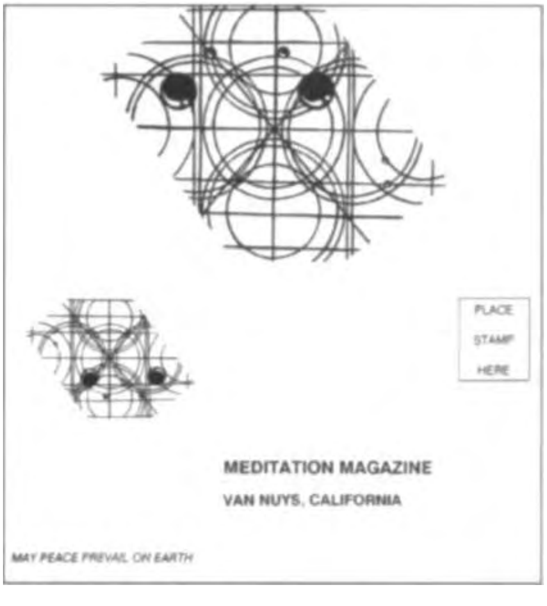

Designs on a return envelope for subscriptions of *Meditation*, a New Age magazine.

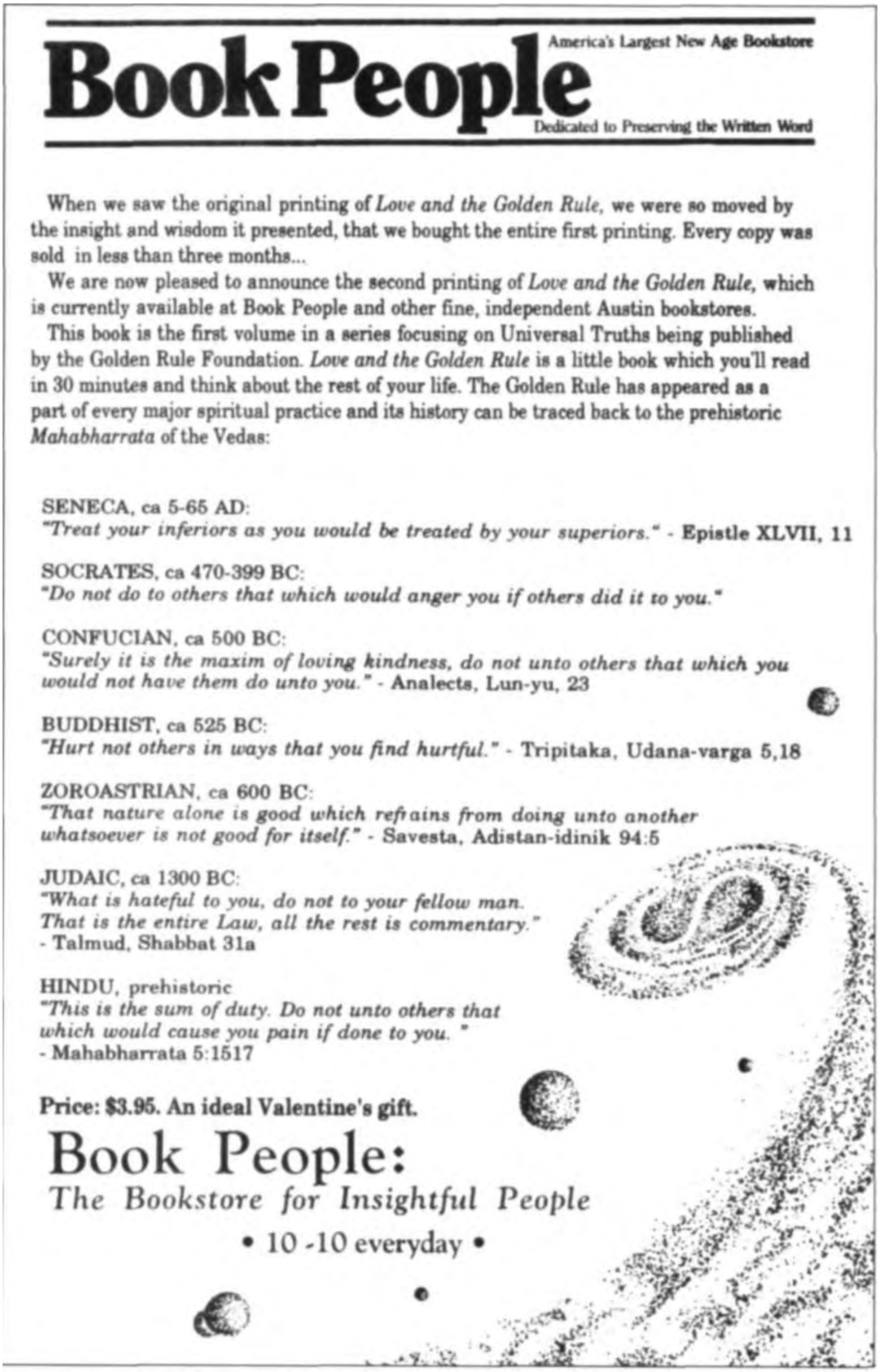

America's Largest New Age Bookstore

Book People

Dedicated to Preserving the Written Word

When we saw the original printing of *Love and the Golden Rule,* we were so moved by the insight and wisdom it presented, that we bought the entire first printing. Every copy was sold in less than three months...

We are now pleased to announce the second printing of *Love and the Golden Rule,* which is currently available at Book People and other fine, independent Austin bookstores.

This book is the first volume in a series focusing on Universal Truths being published by the Golden Rule Foundation. *Love and the Golden Rule* is a little book which you'll read in 30 minutes and think about the rest of your life. The Golden Rule has appeared as a part of every major spiritual practice and its history can be traced back to the prehistoric *Mahabharrata* of the Vedas:

SENECA, ca 5-65 AD:
"Treat your inferiors as you would be treated by your superiors." - **Epistle XLVII, 11**

SOCRATES, ca 470-399 BC:
"Do not do to others that which would anger you if others did it to you."

CONFUCIAN, ca 500 BC:
"Surely it is the maxim of loving kindness, do not unto others that which you would not have them do unto you." - Analects, Lun-yu, 23

BUDDHIST, ca 525 BC:
"Hurt not others in ways that you find hurtful." - Tripitaka, Udana-varga 5,18

ZOROASTRIAN, ca 600 BC:
"That nature alone is good which refrains from doing unto another whatsoever is not good for itself." - Savesta, Adistan-idinik 94:5

JUDAIC, ca 1300 BC:
"What is hateful to you, do not to your fellow man.
That is the entire Law, all the rest is commentary."
- Talmud, Shabbat 31a

HINDU, prehistoric
"This is the sum of duty. Do not unto others that which would cause you pain if done to you."
- Mahabharrata 5:1517

Price: $3.95. An ideal Valentine's gift.

Book People:
The Bookstore for Insightful People
• 10 -10 everyday •

Like many in the New Age and occult worlds, the managers of *Book People,* a large occult bookstore in Austin, Texas, claim their works are loving and good. But in this revealing advertisement in the swirling astronomical spiral mist at right, is clearly seen the letter "S." As in Satan? Let the discerning reader decide.

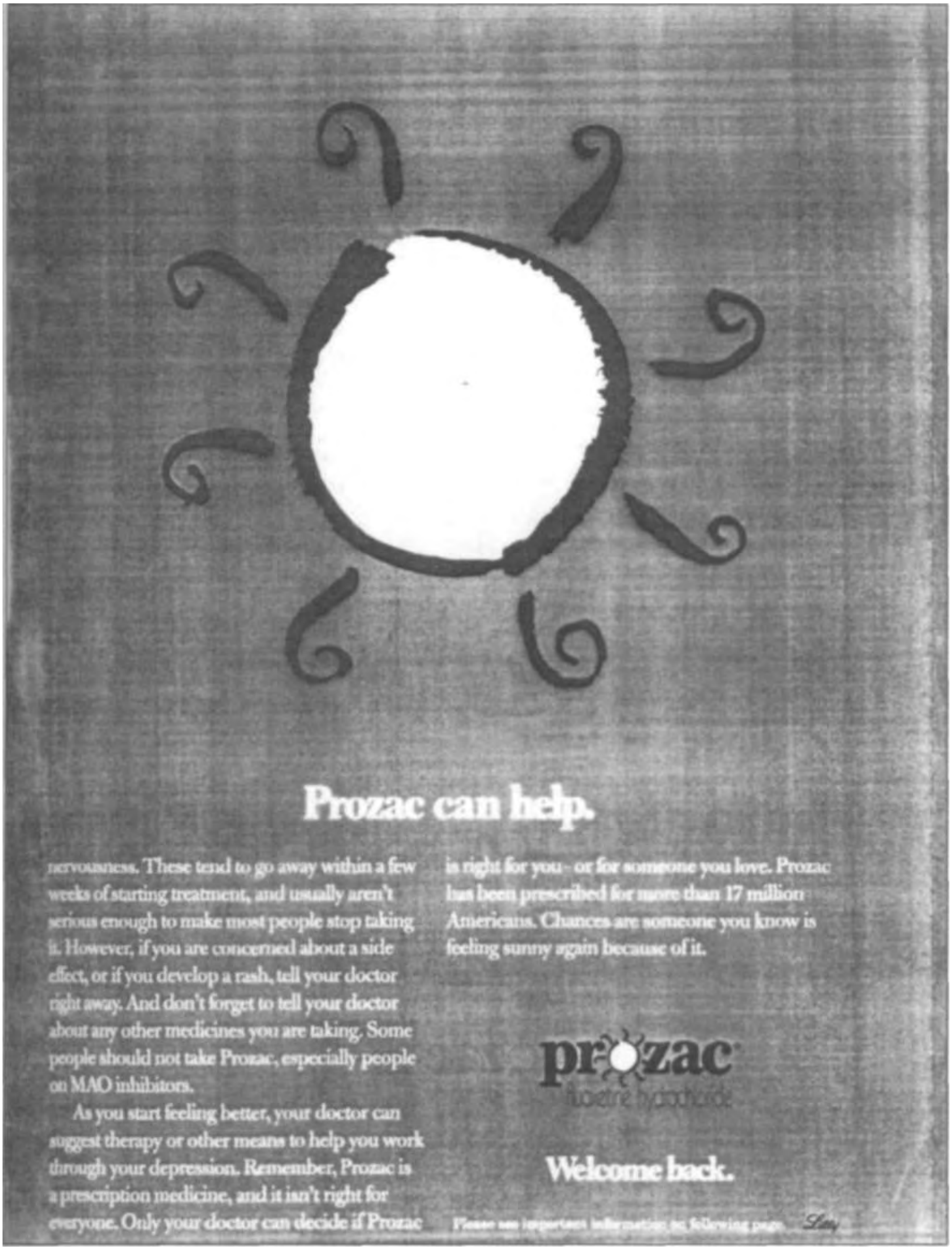

Prozac can help.

nervousness. These tend to go away within a few weeks of starting treatment, and usually aren't serious enough to make most people stop taking it. However, if you are concerned about a side effect, or if you develop a rash, tell your doctor right away. And don't forget to tell your doctor about any other medicines you are taking. Some people should not take Prozac, especially people on MAO inhibitors.

As you start feeling better, your doctor can suggest therapy or other means to help you work through your depression. Remember, Prozac is a prescription medicine, and it isn't right for everyone. Only your doctor can decide if Prozac is right for you - or for someone you love. Prozac has been prescribed for more than 17 million Americans. Chances are someone you know is feeling sunny again because of it.

prozac
fluoxetine hydrochloride

Welcome back.

Please see important information on following page.

Lilly

Prozac can help? Really? So why the design resembling the oroboros serpent? And is it just this author's imagination, or are the radiant sun rays in the form of number 6s?

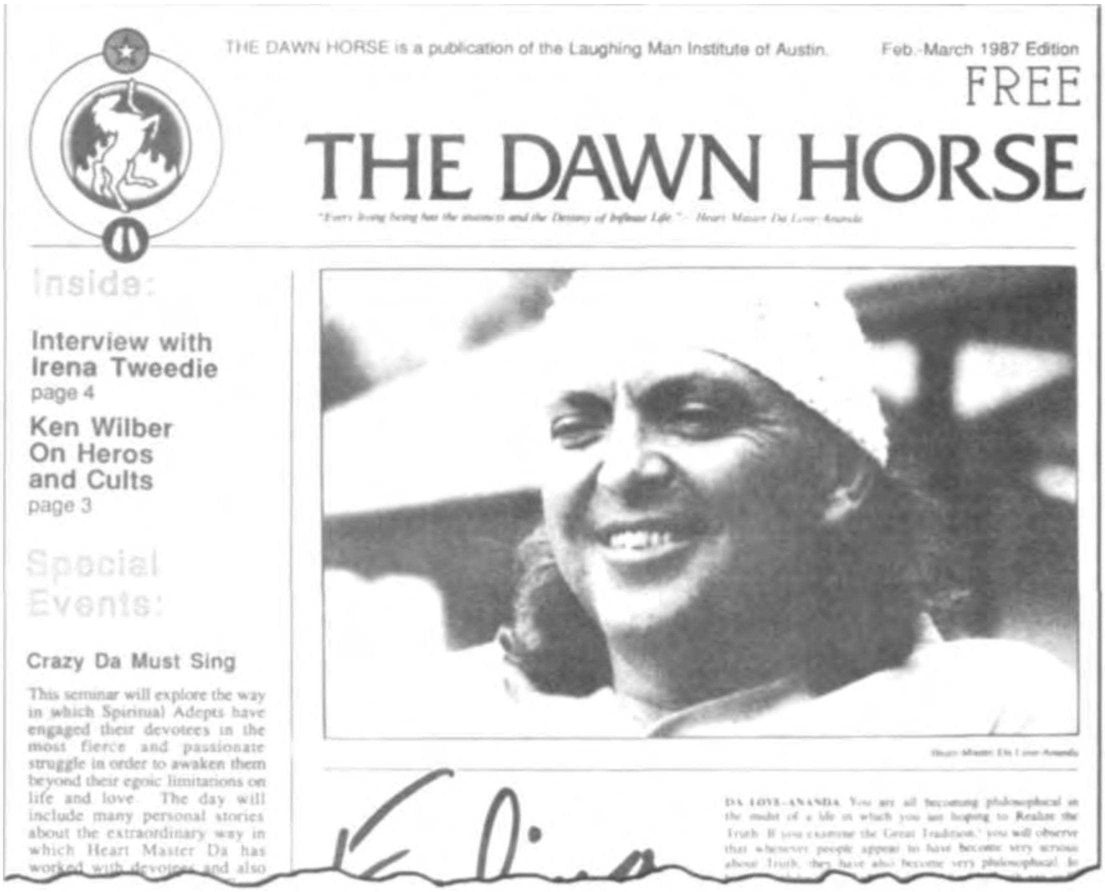

THE DAWN HORSE is a publication of the Laughing Man Institute of Austin. Feb.-March 1987 Edition

FREE

THE DAWN HORSE

"Every living being has the instincts and the Destiny of Infinite Life." – Heart Master Da Love-Ananda

Inside:

Interview with Irena Tweedie
page 4

Ken Wilber On Heros and Cults
page 3

Special Events:

Crazy Da Must Sing

This seminar will explore the way in which Spiritual Adepts have engaged their devotees in the most fierce and passionate struggle in order to awaken them beyond their egoic limitations on life and love. The day will include many personal stories about the extraordinary way in which Heart Master Da has worked with devotees and also

Heart Master Da Love-Ananda

DA LOVE-ANANDA: You are all becoming philosophical in the midst of a life in which you are hoping to Realize the Truth. If you examine the Great Tradition,' you will observe that whenever people appear to have become very serious about Truth, they have also become very philosophical. In

American Hindu guru DaFree John publishes *The Dawn Horse* newspaper with this unusual logo, consisting of circles, flames, a white horse, the occultic star and two feet (the disciple on his knees or prostrate).

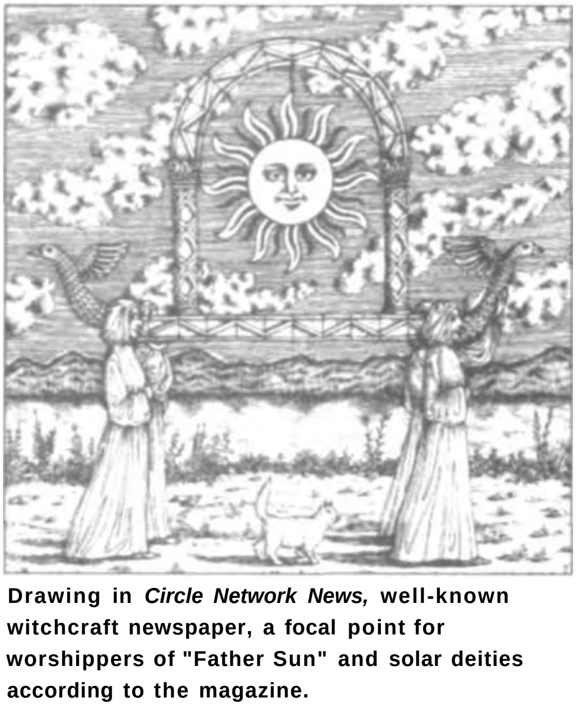

Drawing in *Circle Network News,* well-known witchcraft newspaper, a focal point for worshippers of "Father Sun" and solar deities according to the magazine.

Celtic cross (sunwheel) and torch adopted as the emblem for the America First Party, a political party geared to the goals of the white race, headquartered in Georgia.

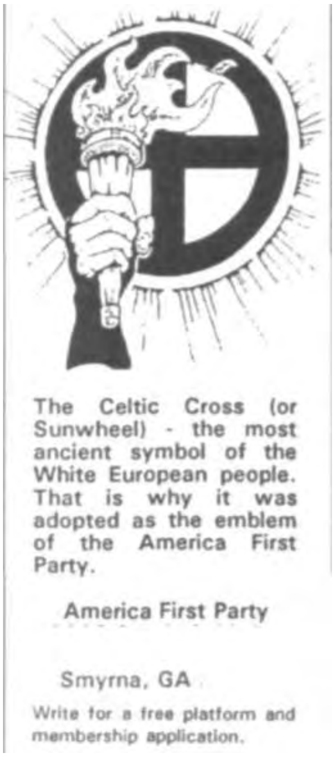

The Celtic Cross (or Sunwheel) - the most ancient symbol of the White European people. That is why it was adopted as the emblem of the America First Party.

America First Party

Smyrna, GA

Write for a free platform and membership application.

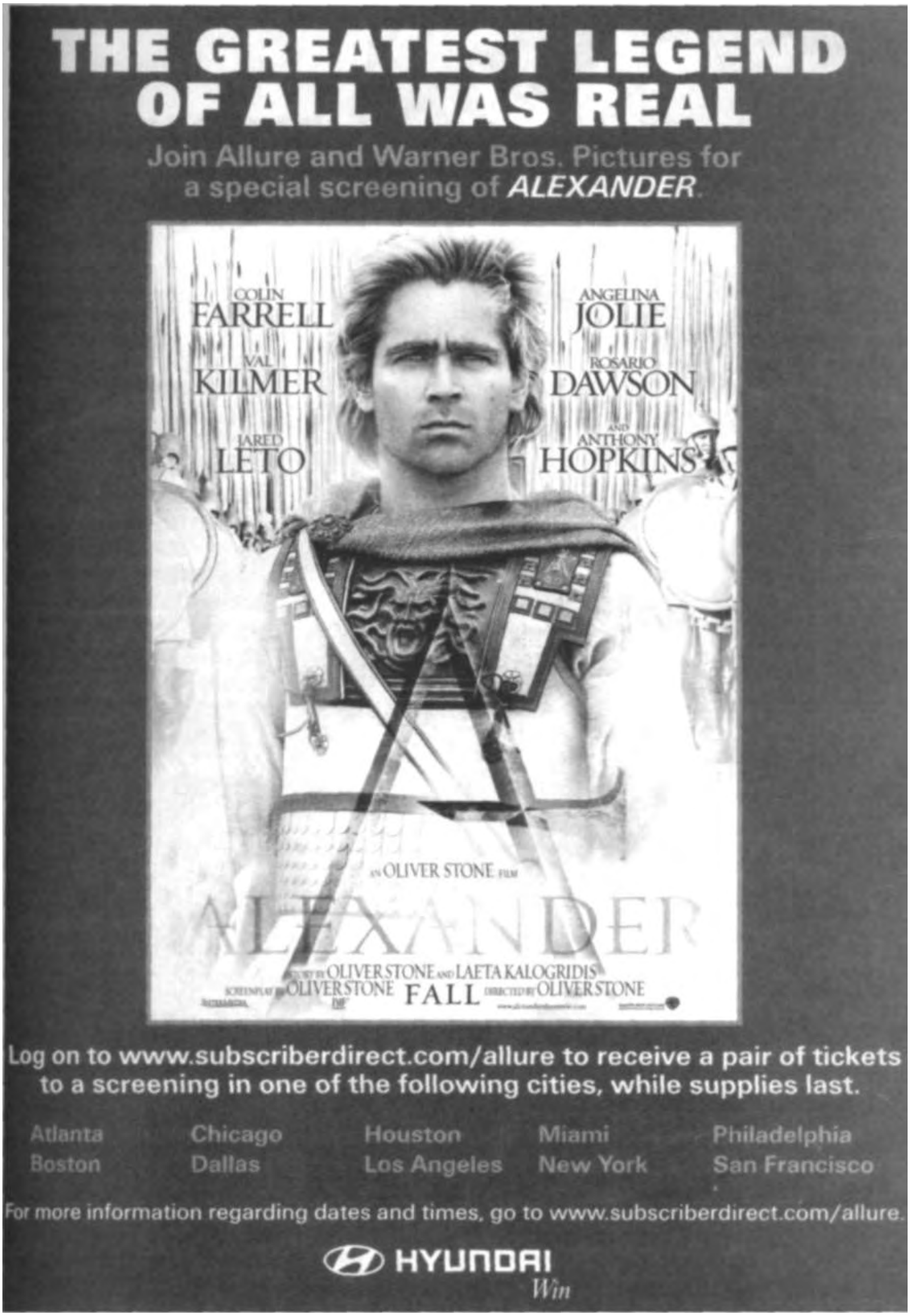

THE GREATEST LEGEND OF ALL WAS REAL

Join Allure and Warner Bros. Pictures for a special screening of *ALEXANDER*.

COLIN FARRELL
ANGELINA JOLIE
VAL KILMER
ROSARIO DAWSON
JARED LETO
AND ANTHONY HOPKINS
AN OLIVER STONE FILM
ALEXANDER
STORY BY OLIVER STONE AND LAETA KALOGRIDIS
SCREENPLAY BY OLIVER STONE
FALL
DIRECTED BY OLIVER STONE

Log on to www.subscriberdirect.com/allure to receive a pair of tickets to a screening in one of the following cities, while supplies last.

Atlanta
Boston
Chicago
Dallas
Houston
Los Angeles
Miami
New York
Philadelphia
San Francisco

For more information regarding dates and times, go to www.subscriberdirect.com/allure.

HYUNDAI
Win

Advertisement for the 2004 movie, *Alexander,* a saga about the Greek conqueror, Alexander The Great. Accurately portrayed on Alexander's tunic: An image of the great Sun God worshipped under a variety of names by the ancients.

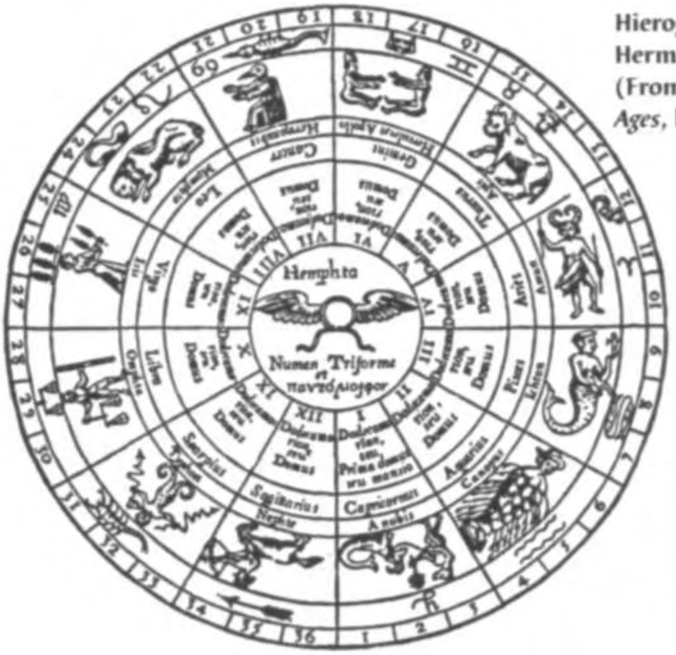
Hemphta
Numen Triforme et
Cancer
Leo
Virgo
Libra
Scorpius
Sagittarius
Capricornus
Aquarius
Pisces
Aries
Taurus
Gemini
Anubis

Hieroglyphic plan, supposedly by Hermes, of an ancient zodiac. (From *The Secret Teachings of All Ages*, by Manly P. Hall, 33°)

This Masonic Zodiac decorates the interior of the Federal Reserve Board Building in Washington, D.C. If the Nation had heeded the advice of President John Quincy Adams, Freemasonry would not have gained the foothold it has today in American Government.

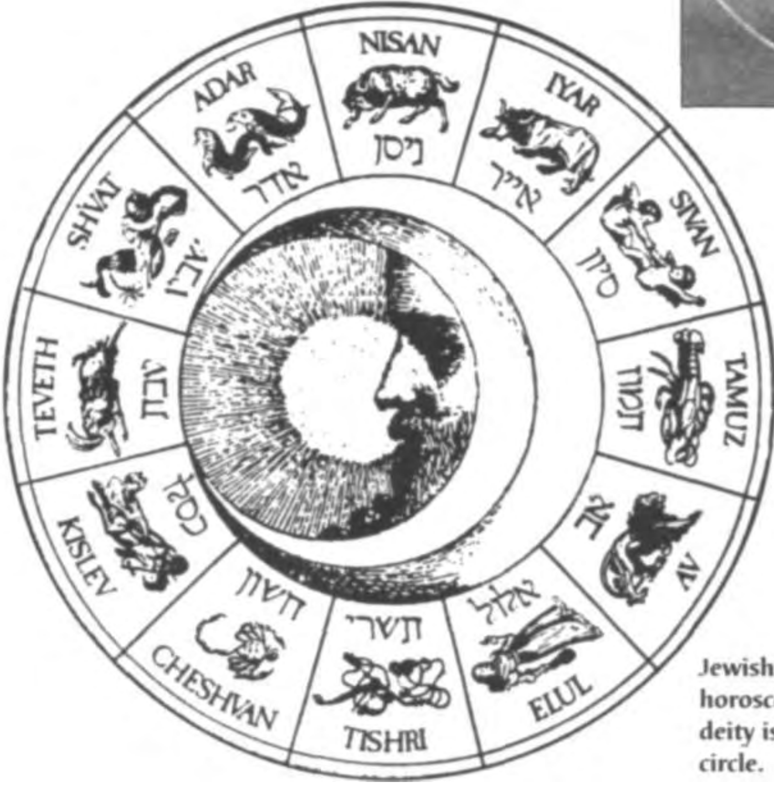
NISAN
ניסן
IYAR
אייר
SIVAN
סיון
TAMUZ
תמוז
AV
אב
ELUL
אלול
TISHRI
תשרי
CHESHVAN
חשון
KISLEV
כסלו
TEVETH
טבת
SHVAT
שבט
ADAR
אדר

Jewish astrological horoscope. The Sun deity is within the circle.

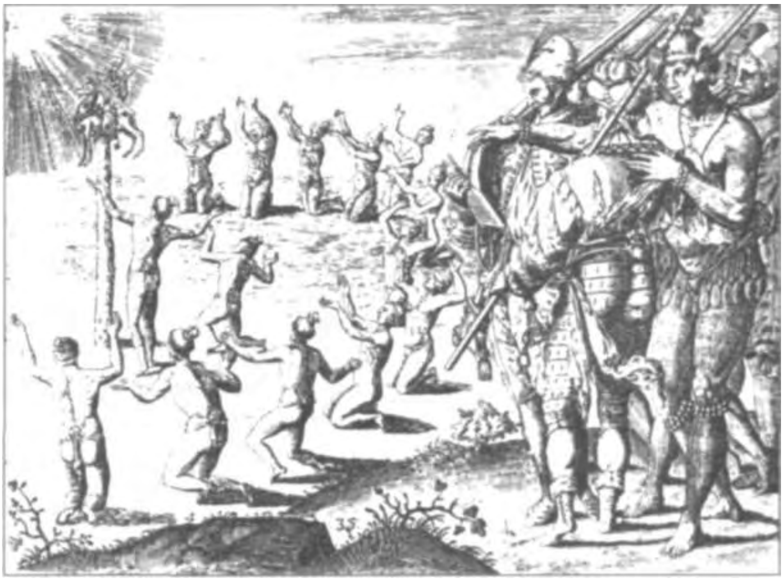

Native Americans worshipping the Sun God, bearing a totem idol. (Engraving from Theodore de Bry's *America,* 1590)

Mesopotamian worship of the Sun God. (British Museum. London)

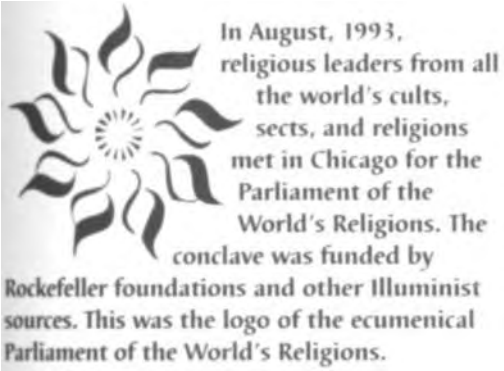

In August, 1993, religious leaders from all the world's cults, sects, and religions met in Chicago for the Parliament of the World's Religions. The conclave was funded by Rockefeller foundations and other Illuminist sources. This was the logo of the ecumenical Parliament of the World's Religions.

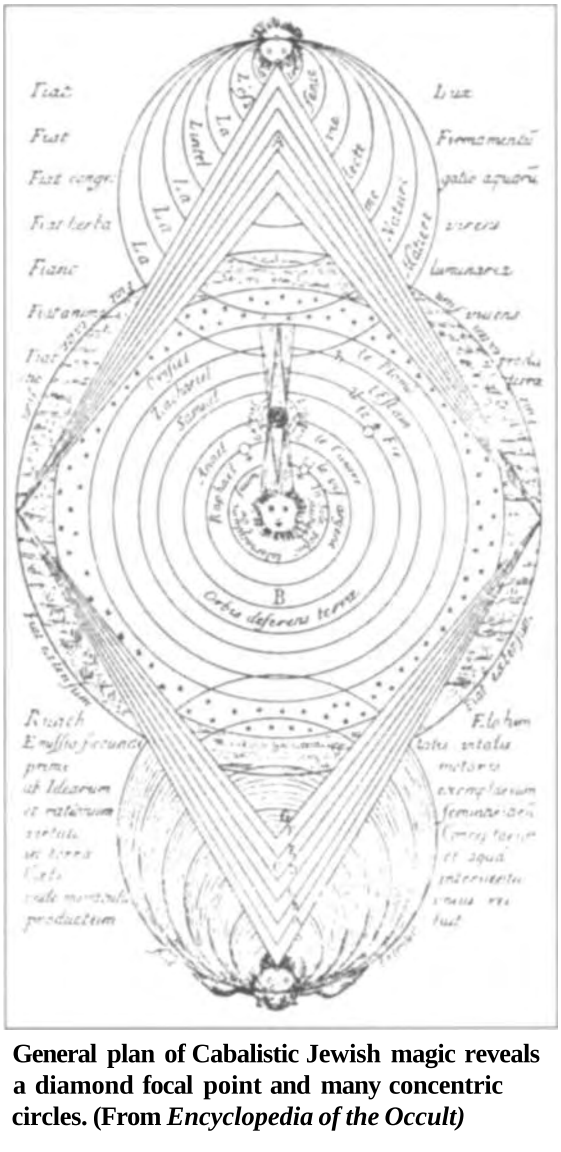

General plan of Cabalistic Jewish magic reveals a diamond focal point and many concentric circles. (From *Encyclopedia of the Occult)*

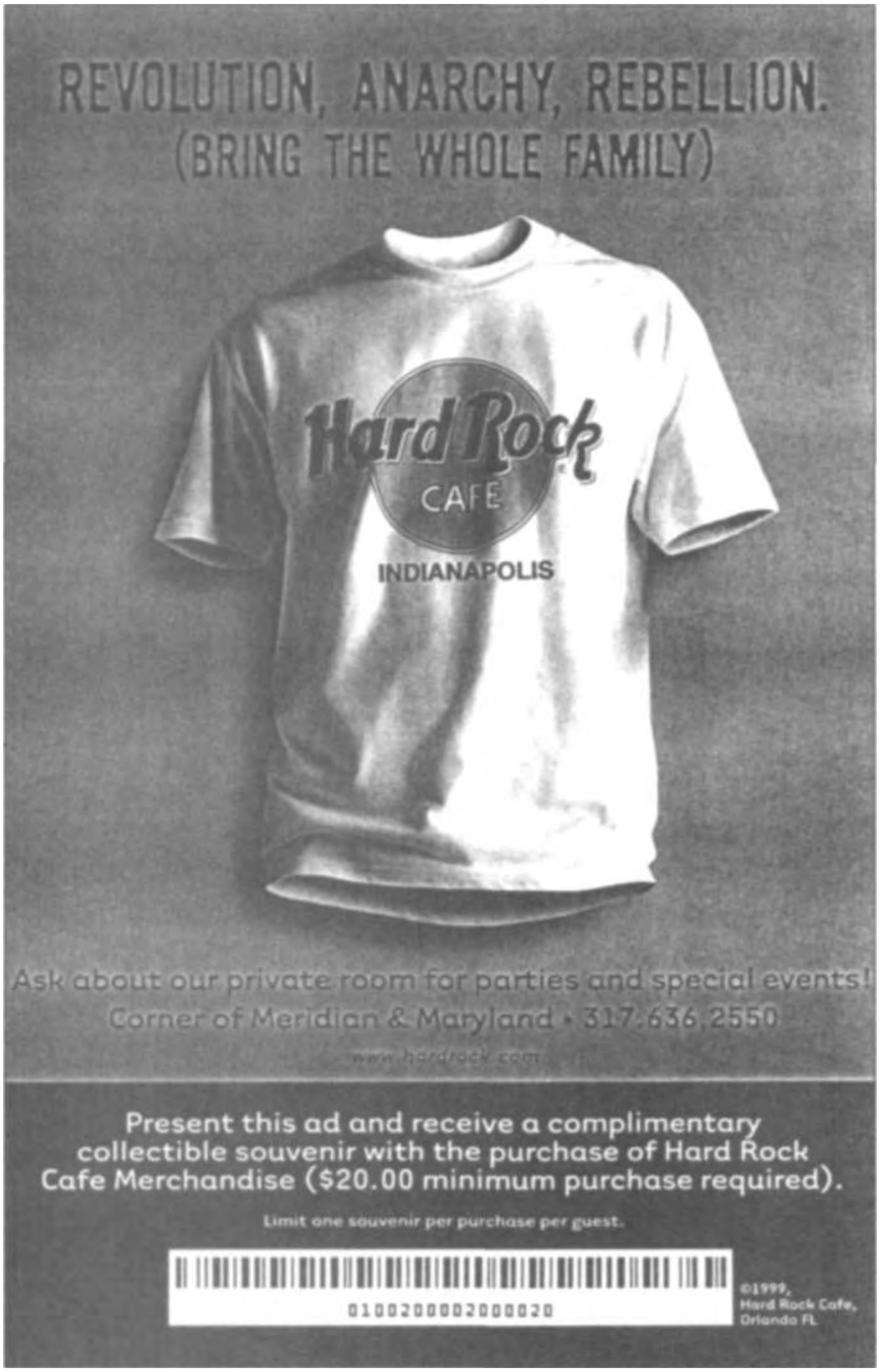

REVOLUTION, ANARCHY, REBELLION.
(BRING THE WHOLE FAMILY)

Ask about our private room for parties and special events!
Corner of Meridian & Maryland • 317.636.2550
www.hardrock.com

Present this ad and receive a complimentary collectible souvenir with the purchase of Hard Rock Cafe Merchandise ($20.00 minimum purchase required).

Limit one souvenir per purchase per guest.

0100200002000020

©1999,
Hard Rock Cafe,
Orlando FL

A T-shirt offered by a vendor of gift items from the *Hard Rock Cafe* restaurant chain. Note the sun symbol. Hard Rock cafes were begun by Isaac Tigrett, a multimillionaire occultist who also conceived The Great American Pyramid, a sports arena built in Memphis, Tennessee.

The fairy tale legend of the origin of the peace sign holds that it first came into use by Vietnam War protestors. In reality, it has long been used as a sign of the hatred of Christ and is called "Nero's Cross"

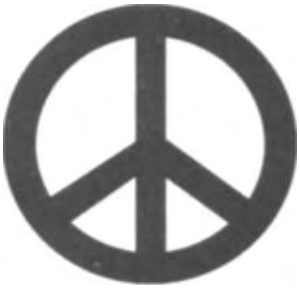

The Greek theater at Epidaurus (circa 300 B.C.) enclosed a design of circle and point within. (Photo from book, *The Pattern and the Prophecy,* by James Harrison, Isaiah Publications, 1994)

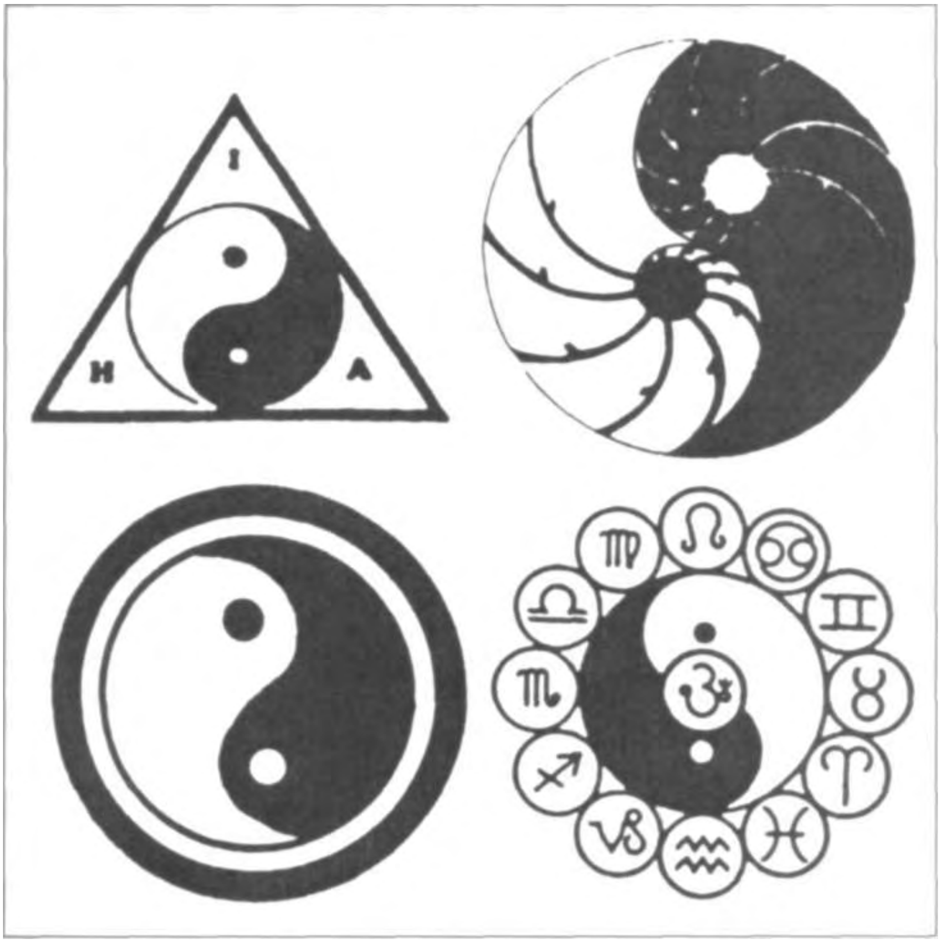

Variations of the Yin/Yang.

TWENTY-THREE

"I Fell In To A Burning Ring of Fire"—Arnold Schwarzenegger's Masonic Ring, Newt Gingrich's T-Rex Dinosaur, and Other Mysterious Messages on Rings and Neckties of the Elite

One Ring to rule them all...One Ring to find them...One Ring to bring them all and in the darkness bind them.

- J.R.R. Tolkien
Lord of the Rings

I fell in to a burning ring of fire. I went down, down, down, and the flames went higher...

— Johnny Cash
Ring of Fire

The Illuminati seem to have an unusually passionate, if bizarre, attachment to jewelry, tie tacks, ties, and items of clothing. The Masons wear aprons, high hats, black clothing. They wear ties and rings emblazoned with symbols. And as the individual Mason progresses upwards to the 33rd degree, he is awarded "Jewels" befitting his various earned degrees.

Their ardent attachments to rings—some would call it idolatry—was exemplified in an article in a recent issue of *The Louisiana Freemason.*[1] The author, Mason David Roach, entitled his article, "If You Only Knew What This Ring Means to Me." He called the symbols engraved on his ring "precious," compared them to holy things from Scripture, and said the Masonic ring was akin to a "Crown of Purity." His ring was simply a typical, gold band made with the Masonic square and compass and letter "G."[2]

Sexual Idols

Former Mason Bill Schnoebelen, now a Christian, reveals the awful truth about most of the Masonic rings, tie tacks, and other symbolic items when he writes:

> Let's face it, the Masonic tie tacks and rings that so many Masons wear proudly to their churches on Sunday are sexual idols...The gods, like Baal, of all pagan nations around Israel were all sexual idols. This is precisely what God does not want in His Church, and yet all these Masons are flaunting both their idols and their (church) membership.[3]

Schnoebelen also mentions a little pin many Masons wear on the lapel of their jacket or coat shaped like a hockey stick with two balls attached. It is named "Tubal Cain." In reality, it represents a man's phallus and testicles; yet, the pin is worn publicly and proudly by many perverted Masons.

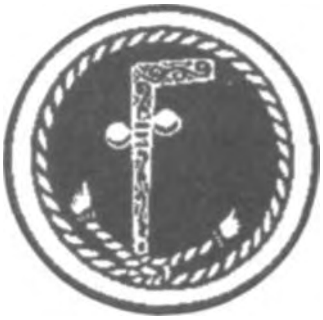

"Tubal Cain," the phallus pin worn by many Masons. Tubal Cain is the password of a Master Mason *(3°).* (From the book, *Masonic and Occult Symbols Illustrated,* pg. 233, by Dr. Cathy Burns)

A Bond Between Chieftains and Warriors

Barbara Walker, editor of *The Woman's Dictionary of Symbols and Sacred Objects,* discusses the significance of the ring in her book. She says that, "Rings were traditional symbols of the bond between chieftains and their warriors in Anglo-Saxon England." Moreover...

> Among the Celts, a ring given by a woman to a man represented her sexual availability; putting the finger through the ring was a sign of sexual intercourse.[4]

The ring, then is a symbol of authority, of bonding, and is a sign of the covenant made between the inferior and superior members of the Illuminati group.

In ancient religions and cultures, rings were also *magical* in nature. According to cabalistic rabbis, King Solomon used a magic ring with a hexagram symbol on it to enslave the demon Asmodeus into helping him build his famous Temple.

Some members of the Illuminati in France in the late 18th century, about 1780, founded a new secret order, the Academy of Sublime Masters of the Luminous Ring. The tenets of the group were Pythagorean, and the fields of geometry and science were emphasized.[5]

In today's Illuminati, the philosophy underlying the use of rings, neckties, etc.

continues from such traditions. The ring is configured as a circle, implying the supposed eternal reign of their god, Lucifer. He shall, they declare, wear a crown of gold. Thus, the metal of gold is favored.

The Mystic Tie of the Masons

The Masonic fraternity teaches the illusory goal that all who are inititated into its ranks are bonded by the "Mystic Tie" of fellowship. Of course, this is allegory, and yet the necktie does seem to have a special place in Masonic lore and symbology.

It is believed that both the bowtie and the traditional necktie are of Masonic symbolic design. The necktie has two triangles descending, a larger and a smaller. It is tied into a "knot" at the neck, signifying solidarity and unity. The neck itself, as a part of the human anatomy, represents the virtue of sacrifice. In terms of the secret order or secret society, it symbolizes sacrifice of the individual to the common good of the organization. The necktie is also seen as a bridge to two other triangles — those of the shirt collar. All of the triangles, on the tie and on the shirt collar, have their point, or spear, downward, toward the realm that is the controlling force of Masonry.

TRAVIS COUNTY

Congressman Lloyd Poggett (D-TX), at center, is sworn in as a voter registrar for the State of Texas. The elite of the Democrat Party in Doggett's Austin, Texas district are heavily Freemason. Doggett's necktie has the Masonic "X" symbol, connected to worship of Osiris the Egyptian sun god. At Doggett's left is the late Congressman Jake Pickle (D-TX), a Mason who for years was Chairman of the House Committee on Banking and Currency. Pickle refused to allow the U.S. Treasury, which he oversaw, to remove the Illuminati's pyramid and all-seeing eye symbols from the U.S. dollar bill.

President Bill Clinton seems to specialize in wearing neckties bearing cabalistic and occult symbols. Here, triangles. (Photo: *U.S. News & World Report*, January 29, 1996, p. 32)

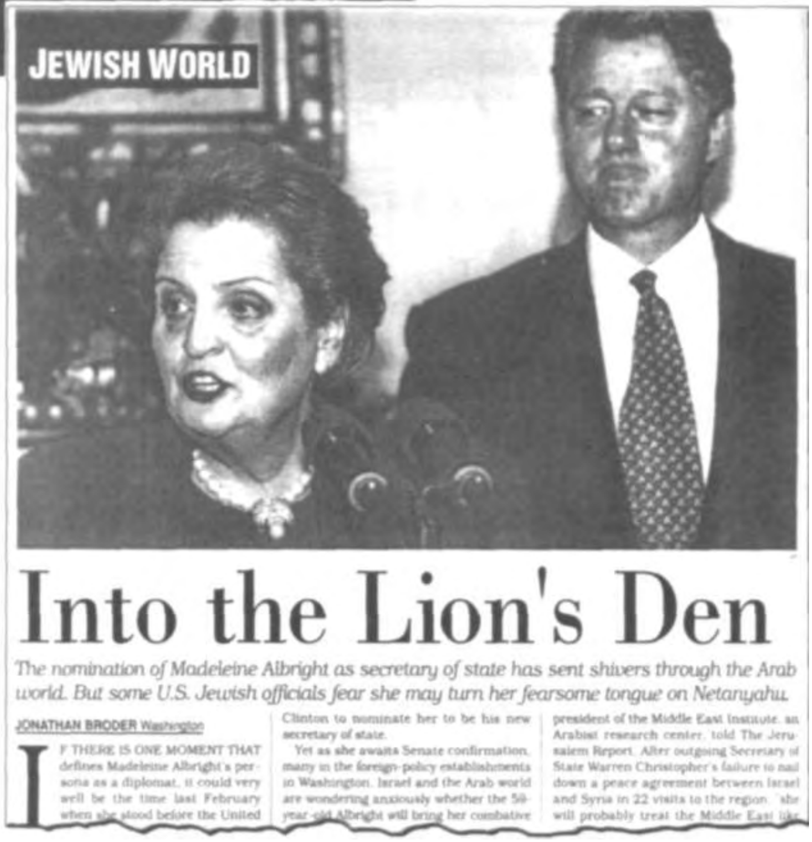

JEWISH WORLD

Into the Lion's Den

The nomination of Madeleine Albright as secretary of state has sent shivers through the Arab world. But some U.S. Jewish officials fear she may turn her fearsome tongue on Netanyahu.

JONATHAN BRODER Washington

IF THERE IS ONE MOMENT THAT defines Madeleine Albright's persona as a diplomat, it could very well be the time last February when she stood before the United Clinton to nominate her to be his new secretary of state.

Yet as she awaits Senate confirmation, many in the foreign-policy establishments in Washington, Israel and the Arab world are wondering anxiously whether the 59-year-old Albright will bring her combative president of the Middle East Institute, an Arabist research center, told The Jerusalem Report. After outgoing Secretary of State Warren Christopher's failure to nail down a peace agreement between Israel and Syria in 22 visits to the region, "she will probably treat the Middle East like

Triangles and more triangles on yet another of President Bill Clinton's ties.

According to news reports, Monica Lewinsky, President Bill Clinton's White House intern lover, gave him a special necktie. When he wore it, she could watch him on TV and know he was thinking about her.

All our love,
Bill & Virginia

Bill Clinton's mother, Virginia, with his father, before he was born. Virginia, a Jewess, was deep into the supernatural magic of the Cabala. Bill Clinton's father is a dead ringer for Jack Ruby, the Jewish gangster and homosexual who assassinated Lee Harvey Oswald.

The Nature Conservancy, a radical environmental group, boasted in its March/April 1998 magazine that CNN founder Ted Turner, Presidents Bush and Clinton, and Vice President Gore often wore oak-leaf ties to denote their support for environmental causes. The oak tree and its leaves are a staple of druid witchcraft and are popular as symbols among nature followers of the forest horned god Pan.

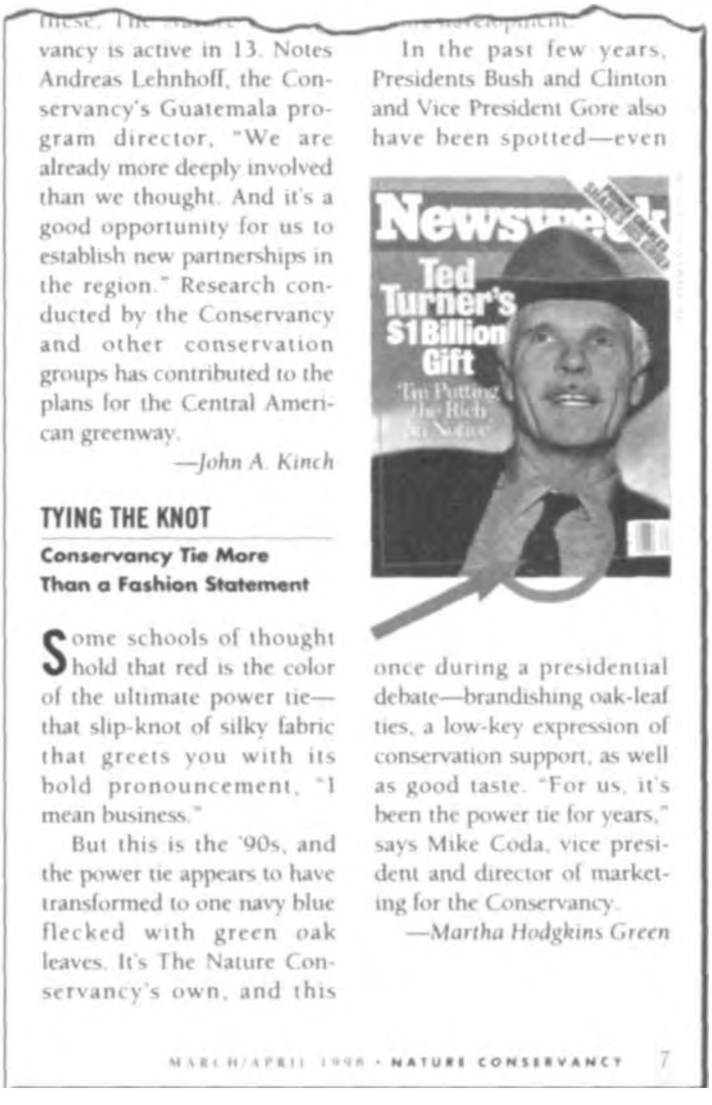
Newsweek
Ted Turner's $1 Billion Gift
'I'm Putting the Rich on Notice'

vancy is active in 13. Notes Andreas Lehnhoff, the Conservancy's Guatemala program director, "We are already more deeply involved than we thought. And it's a good opportunity for us to establish new partnerships in the region." Research conducted by the Conservancy and other conservation groups has contributed to the plans for the Central American greenway.

—*John A. Kinch*

TYING THE KNOT

Conservancy Tie More Than a Fashion Statement

Some schools of thought hold that red is the color of the ultimate power tie—that slip-knot of silky fabric that greets you with its bold pronouncement, "I mean business."

But this is the '90s, and the power tie appears to have transformed to one navy blue flecked with green oak leaves. It's The Nature Conservancy's own, and this

In the past few years, Presidents Bush and Clinton and Vice President Gore also have been spotted—even once during a presidential debate—brandishing oak-leaf ties, a low-key expression of conservation support, as well as good taste. "For us, it's been the power tie for years," says Mike Coda, vice president and director of marketing for the Conservancy.

—*Martha Hodgkins Green*

MARCH/APRIL 1998 • NATURE CONSERVANCY 7

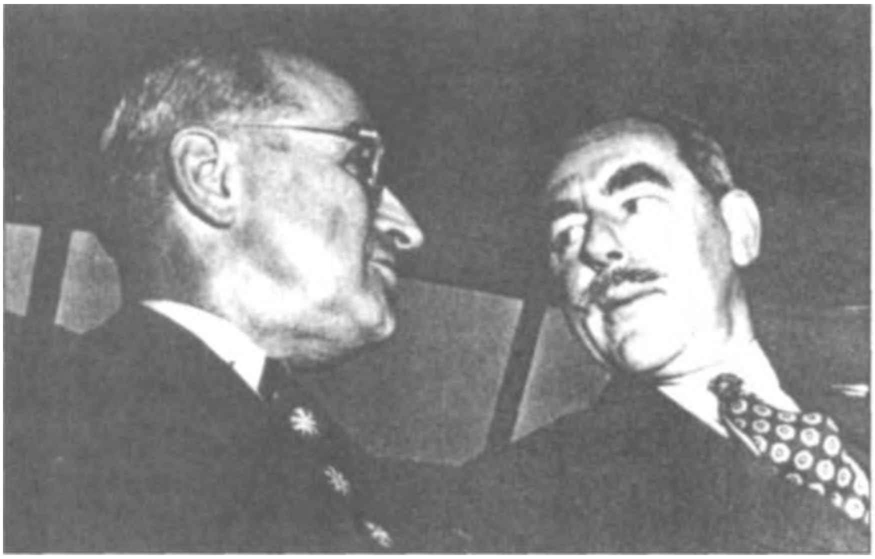

President Harry Truman (left) and Secretary of State Dean Acheson, both Illuminati initiates, each wear neckties imprinted with "sun god" symbols.

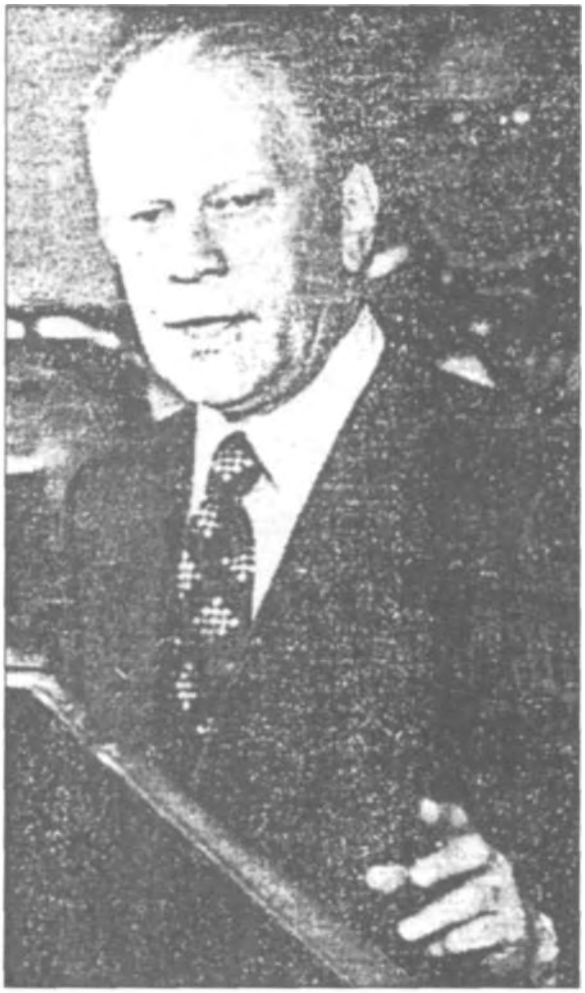

President Gerald Ford, a 33rd degree Mason, wears a necktie with the "cross of Baphomet" emblem of the occultic OTO and British satanist Aleister Crowley. The symbol is also worn by the Sovereign Grand Commander of Scottish Rite Freemasonry. Ford was a member of the Warren Commission that came up with the preposterous conclusion that Lee Harvey Oswald acted alone in the assassination of President John F. Kennedy. Chief Justice Earl Warren, like Ford and all the other members of the commission, was a 33rd degree Mason.

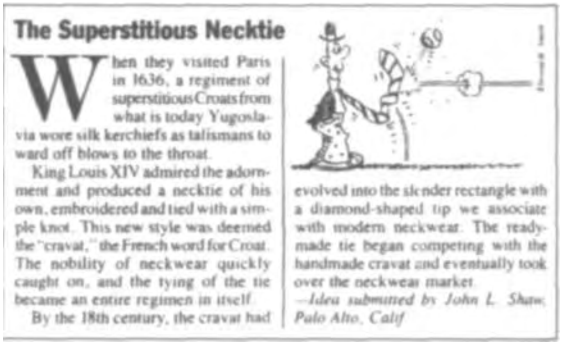

The Superstitious Necktie

When they visited Paris in 1636, a regiment of superstitious Croats from what is today Yugoslavia wore silk kerchiefs as talismans to ward off blows to the throat.

King Louis XIV admired the adornment and produced a necktie of his own, embroidered and tied with a simple knot. This new style was deemed the "cravat," the French word for Croat. The nobility of neckwear quickly caught on, and the tying of the tie became an entire regimen in itself.

By the 18th century, the cravat had evolved into the slender rectangle with a diamond-shaped tip we associate with modern neckwear. The ready-made tie began competing with the handmade cravat and eventually took over the neckwear market.

—Idea submitted by John L. Shaw, Palo Alto, Calif.

House Speaker Newt Gingrich wears a necktie designed by satan worshipping rock music star, Jim Morrison of *The Doors.*

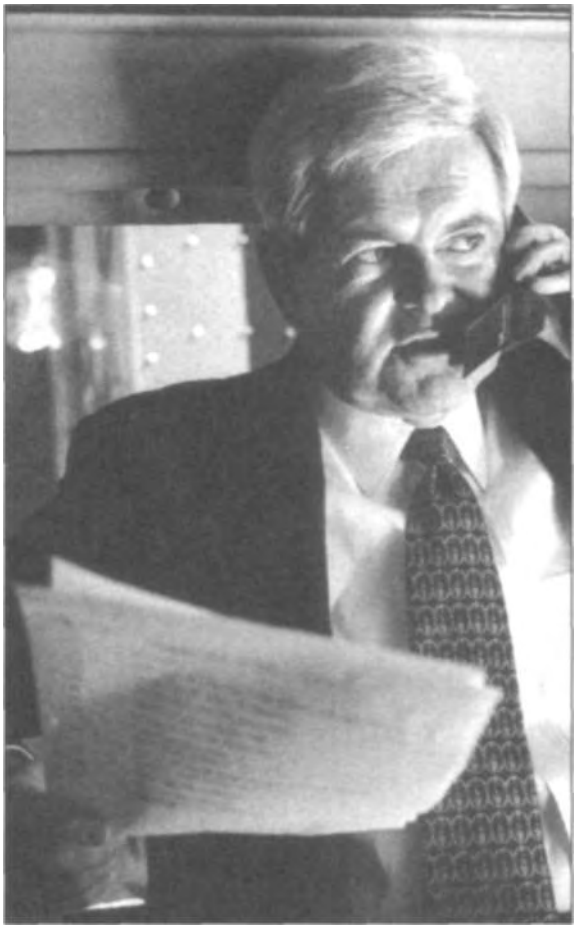

Illuminist signals: Insiders say speaker Newt Gingrich is a vain man who *does* not like being photographed without make-up. Here he is below pictured in *USA Today* newspaper (December 5, 1994, p. SA) primping for a taping of NBC's "Meet the Press." This provides greater curiosity about *Time's* running as its front cover (see following page of *Codex Magica)* a staged picture of Gingrich in which the speaker is looking haggard and sweaty, his face red-flushed, and needing a shave!

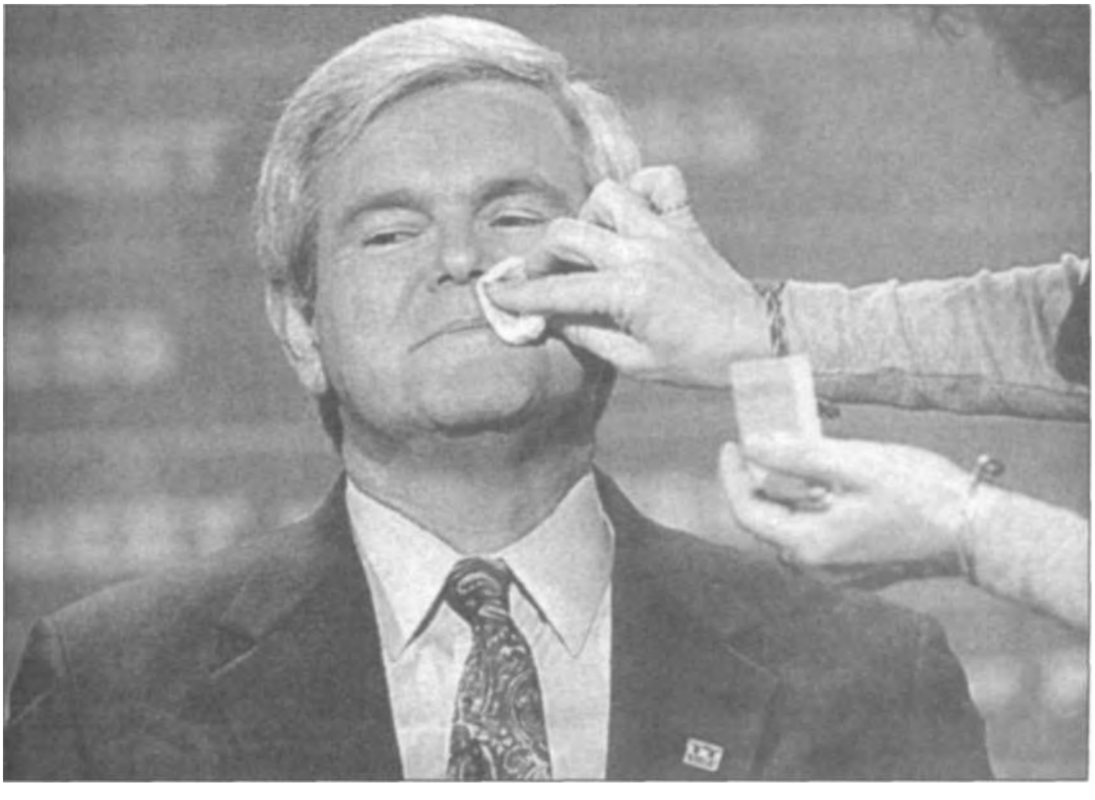

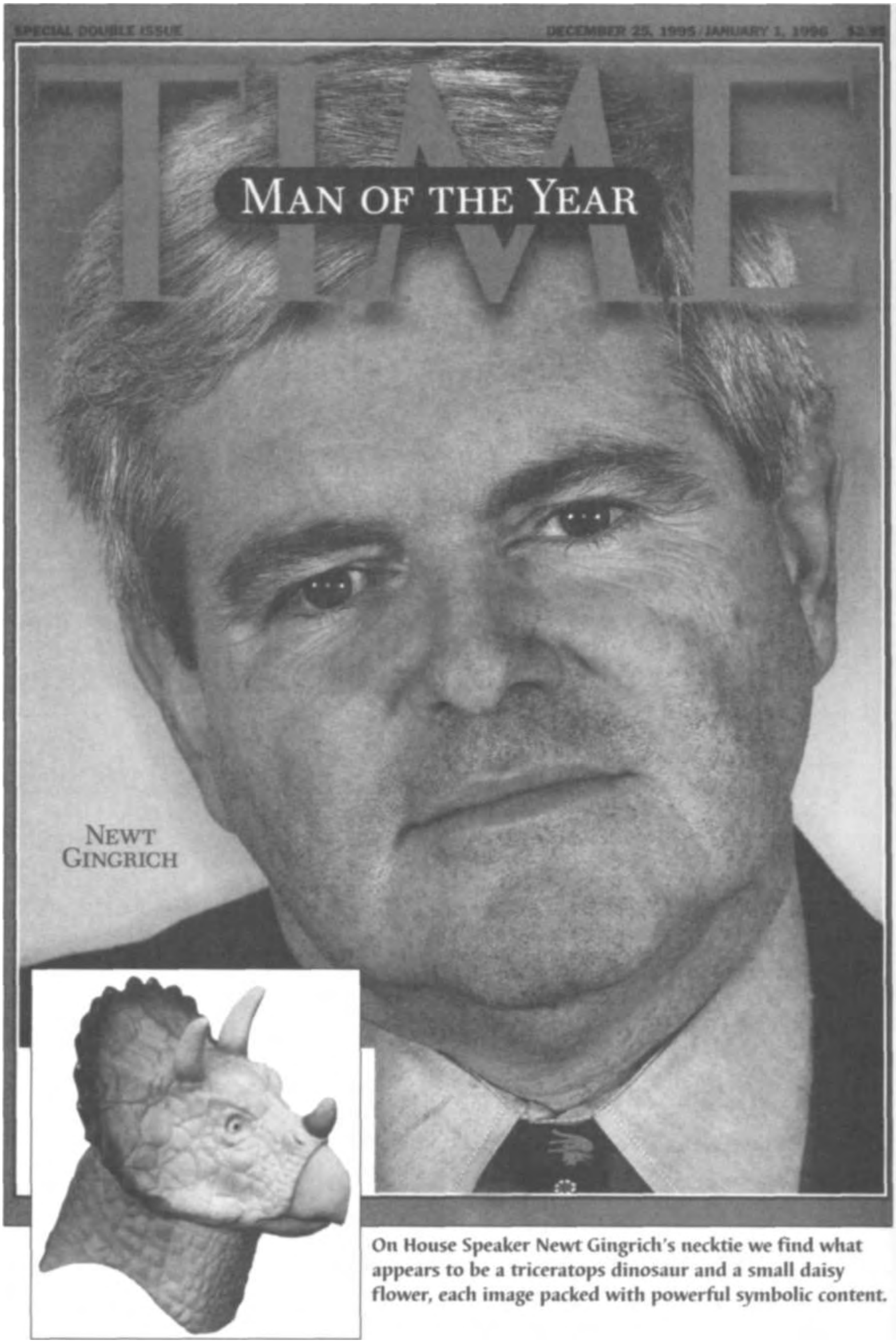
SPECIAL DOUBLE ISSUE
DECEMBER 25, 1995/JANUARY 1, 1996 $2.95
TIME
MAN OF THE YEAR
NEWT GINGRICH

On House Speaker Newt Gingrich's necktie we find what appears to be a triceratops dinosaur and a small daisy flower, each image packed with powerful symbolic content.

At left: This cover of *Time* announcing the selection of House Speaker New Gingrich as *Time's* "Man of the Year" reveals many mysteries. First, the issue is dated December 25, 1995/January 1, 1996. December 25th, Christmas Day, is also the day the ancient Romans and Greeks worshipped the Sun God. In his photo, Newt Gingrich appears tired and dismayed. He is sweaty. No make-up is used, and he has a day old growth of stubble on his face and neck. There is also a red coloration or flush on Newt s face. His head is strategically placed *behind* the *Time* logo, communicating the subtle message that his time in the political limelight is about up. In fact, Gingrich did abruptly resign and leave his high level post shortly after this issue; some believe his departure was caused by his unseemly romantic liaison with a female staffer, an affair which prompted the Congressman to divorce his wife. However, the most significant images you'll find on this cover are hidden on Newt Gingrich's necktie! Look closely at the inset and what do you see? A dinosaur. The cave age monster is facing downward toward a flower. The Illuminati's founder Adam Weishaupt, in the late 18th century, introduced the concepts of *"flower power" and* nature worship (shades of the hippy era of the 60s!). So that might explain the flower. But what about the dinosaur? It seems that Newt (get the name, Newt ? - isn't a Newt a form of lizard?) is a dinosaur fan. Gingrich once borrowed a Tyrannosaurus Rex dinosaur bones exhibit from Washington, D.C.'s Smithsonian Museum and kept it on display for a long time in his House Speaker's office. Newsmagazines often commented that Newt Gingrich was wry proud of the T-Rex display and constantly asked friends and associates, *"Would you like to see my T4tx!"* Now, *Webster's* dictionary informs us that the root word for "tyrannosaurus" is rvranr, or *tyranny*, defined as "A government in which absolute power is vested in a single ruler"—a ruler unfettered by a constitution! What's more, the short version of the dinosaur's name, T-Rex, would have a very special meaning for occult illuminati. "T" stands for Tammuz, the Christ figure to come, whose symbol is the T, or Tau cross. The word "Rex," meanwhile, stands for *Man as King*. In Weishaupt's Illuminati system, the highest degree initiate earned the "Rex" degree. Thus, the symbols on Newt Gingrich's necktie, displayed for all the world to see, but for only Newt and his Illuminati henchmen to understand, trumpet this message, that: *Our Illuminati goal is a tyranny, ruled by a single ruler—the fearful antichrist, beast of prophecy!*

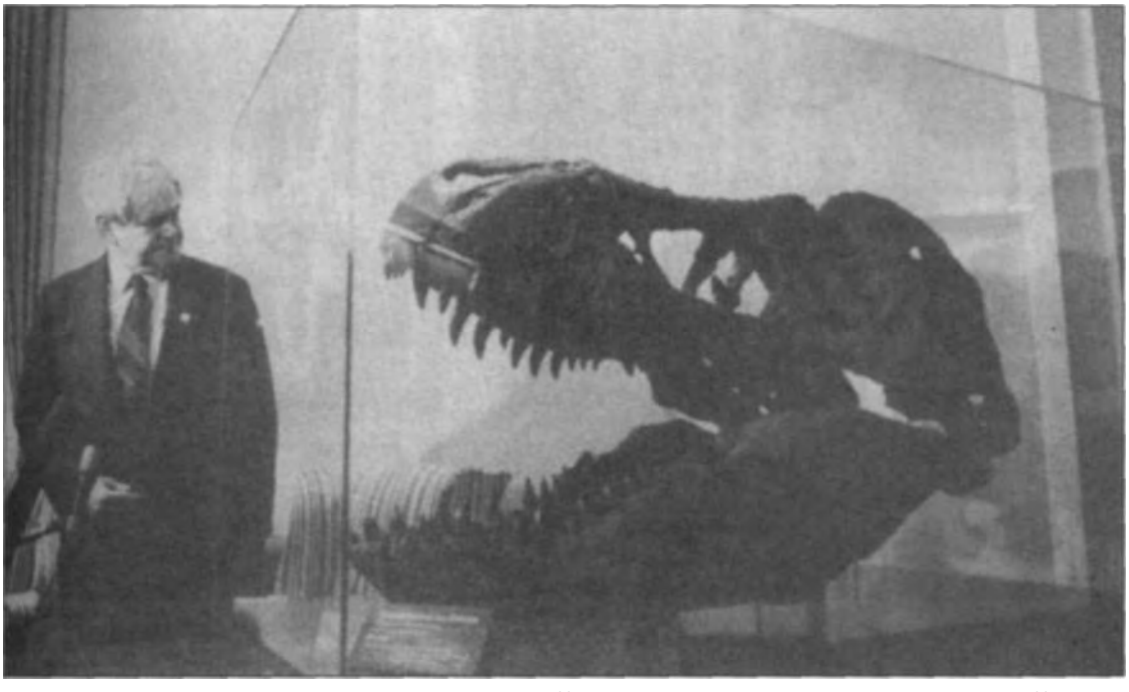

The caption reads: *"Speaker Newt Gingrich shows off tyrannosaurus rex Osborn in his Capitol office. It's on loan from the Smithsonian."* Observe Gingrich's Masonic handsign also, which is similar to the sign of a Master Mason. (Photo: *Roll Call*, May 22, 1995, p. 14)

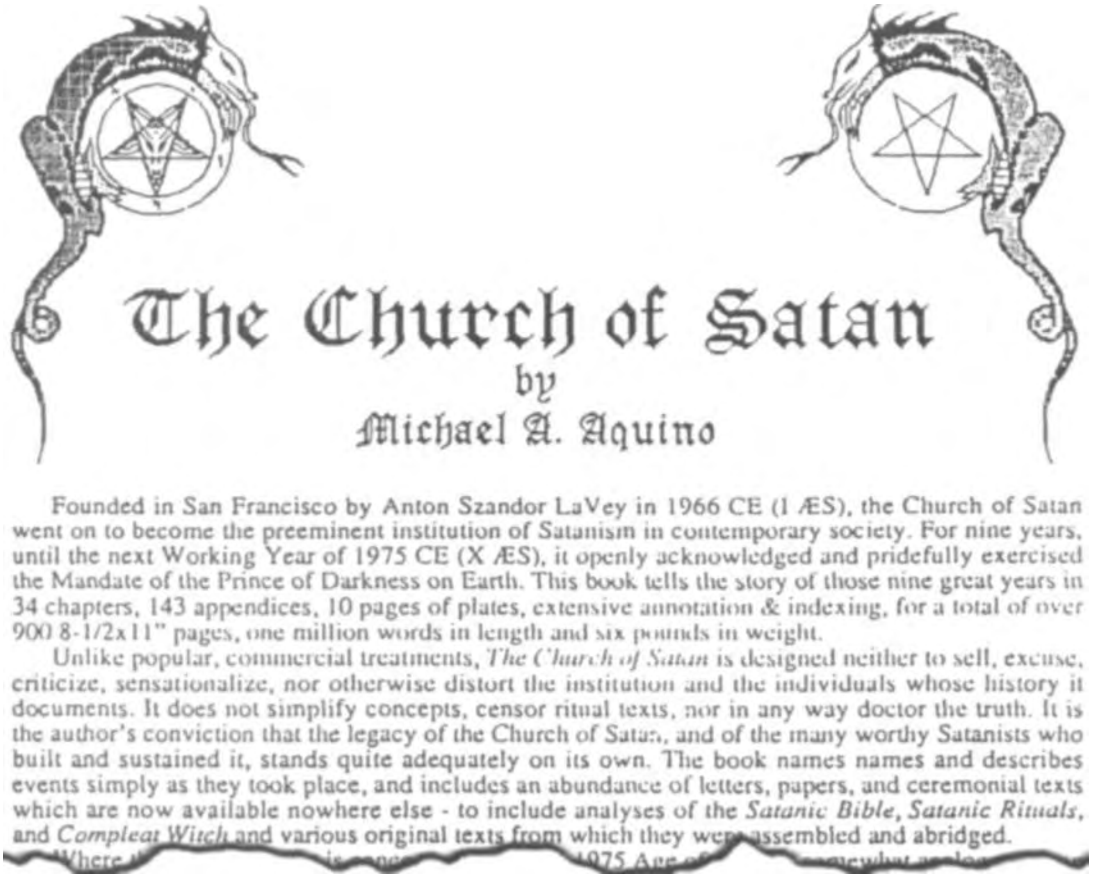

The Church of Satan

by

Michael A. Aquino

Founded in San Francisco by Anton Szandor LaVey in 1966 CE (I ÆS), the Church of Satan went on to become the preeminent institution of Satanism in contemporary society. For nine years, until the next Working Year of 1975 CE (X ÆS), it openly acknowledged and pridefully exercised the Mandate of the Prince of Darkness on Earth. This book tells the story of those nine great years in 34 chapters, 143 appendices, 10 pages of plates, extensive annotation & indexing, for a total of over 900 8-1/2x11" pages, one million words in length and six pounds in weight.

Unlike popular, commercial treatments, *The Church of Satan* is designed neither to sell, excuse, criticize, sensationalize, nor otherwise distort the institution and the individuals whose history it documents. It does not simplify concepts, censor ritual texts, nor in any way doctor the truth. It is the author's conviction that the legacy of the Church of Satan, and of the many worthy Satanists who built and sustained it, stands quite adequately on its own. The book names names and describes events simply as they took place, and includes an abundance of letters, papers, and ceremonial texts which are now available nowhere else - to include analyses of the *Satanic Bible*, *Satanic Rituals*, and *Compleat Witch* and various original texts from which they were assembled and abridged.

When I sent Dr. Cathy Burns, a foremost authority on occult symbols and their meaning, a copy of speaker Newt Gingrich's *Time* magazine photo with the T-Rex dinosaur image on Newt's necktie, she sent me back this flyer advertising a book, *The Church of Satan,* written by Luciferian High Priest Michael A. Aquino. As you can see, the flyer has images of two dragon serpents atop satanic pentagrams facing each other (the occult sign of duality, or "as above, so below"). In fact, the two serpentine dragons *do* resemble the T-Rex dinosaur image.

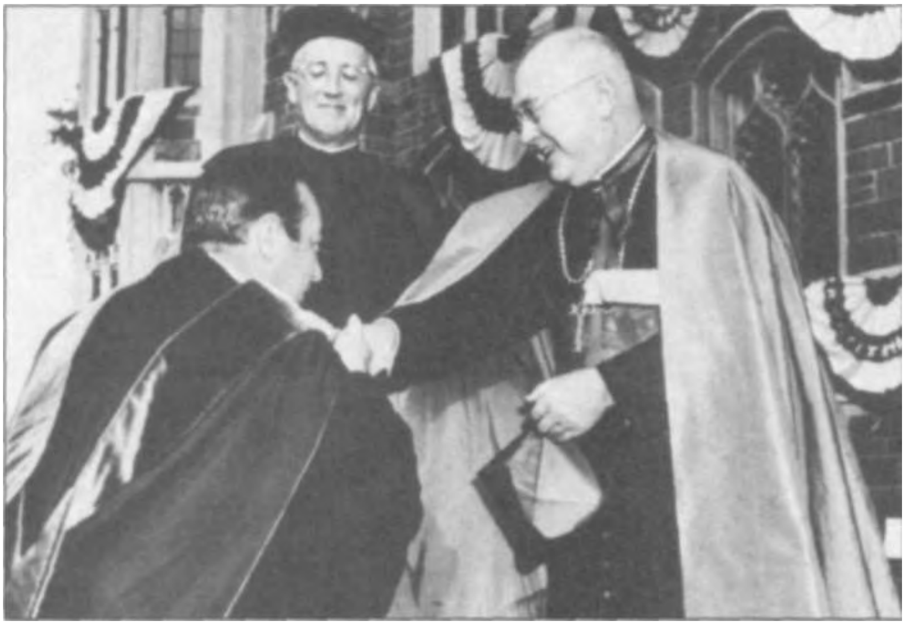

New York Mayor Wagner kneels and kisses the ring of Catholic Cardinal Spellman as Reverend McGinly, president of the Jesuit-run Fordham University, looks on with a sly grin on his face.

It seems that California Governor Arnold Schwarzenegger ("The Terminator") is well-schooled in the propaganda value of well-placed props in photographs, such as the U.S. flag, the State seal, and even a broom! What is most fascinating, however, is the big, blue sapphire masonic ring the Governor wears and so readily shows off. Apparently, the media know what's what and the photographer always seems to be glad to picture Arnold's ring up close. Oh, about the broom: That's not the same one that Arnold's wife, Kennedy heiress Maria Shriver, flies around on, is it?

Inset below left: C. W. Leadbeater, homosexual occultist who was head of late 19th Century Theosophy after Madame Blavatsky, wore a ring similar to the one sported about today by Arnold Schwarzenegger.

(Photo: *U.S. News & World Report,* January 12, 2004, p. 27)

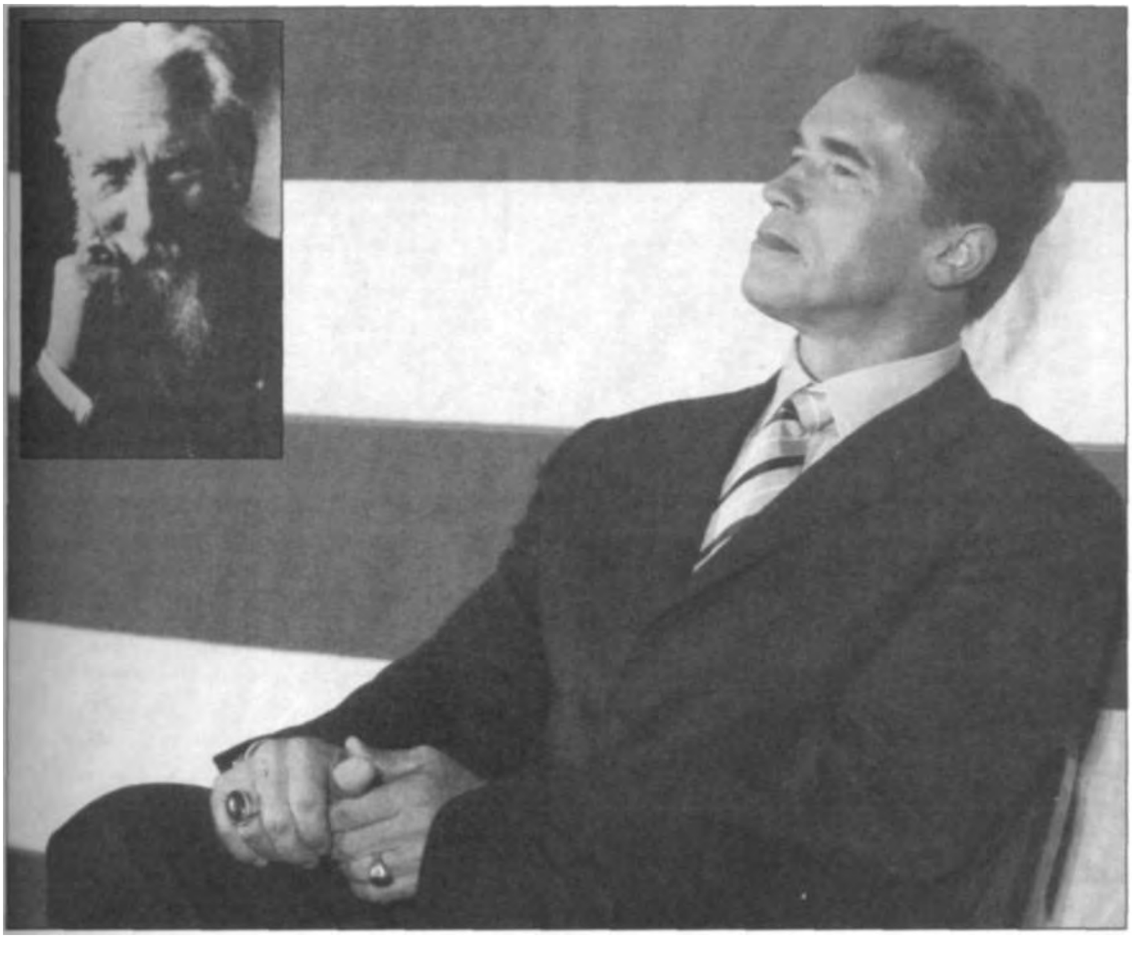

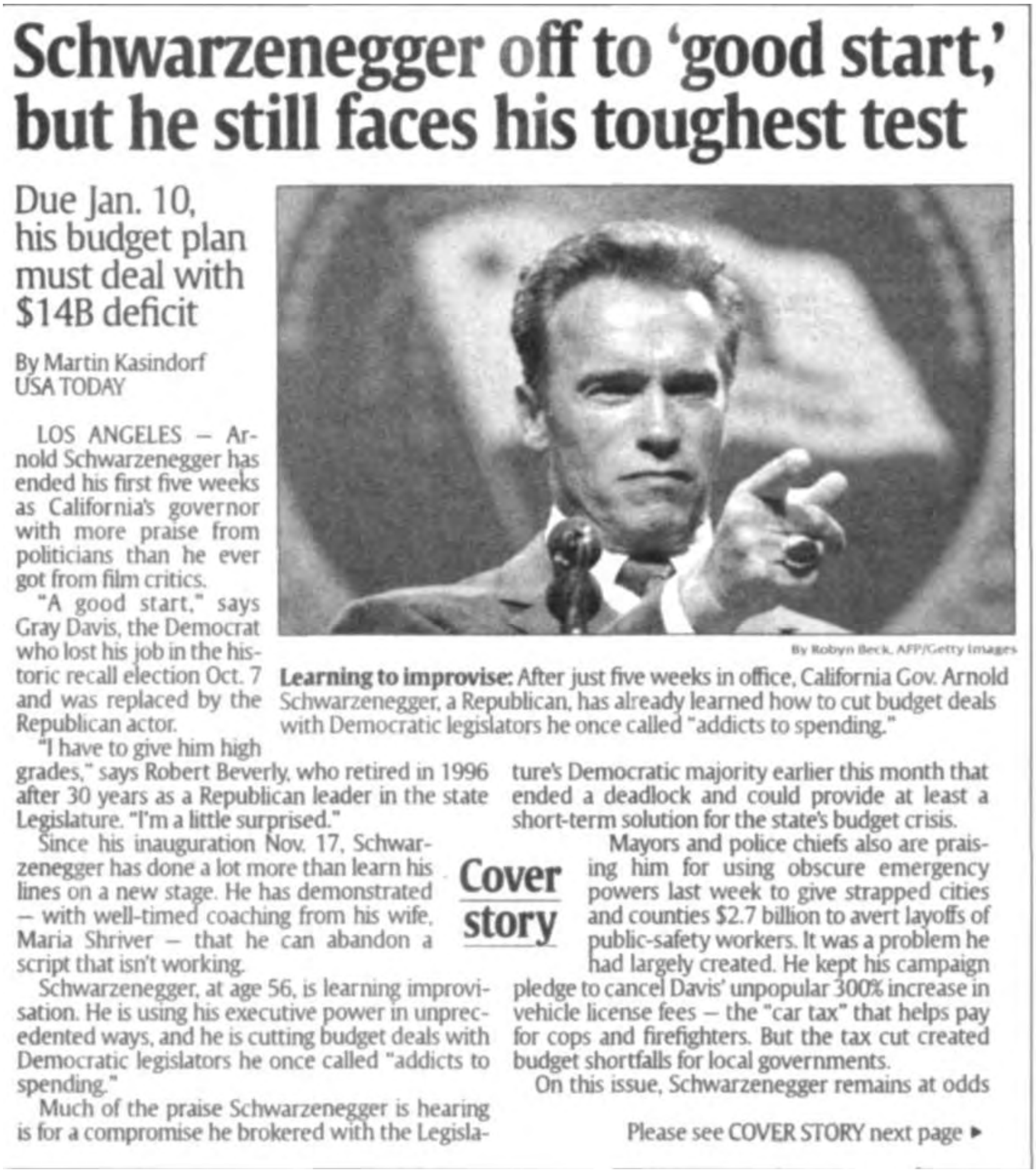

Schwarzenegger off to 'good start,' but he still faces his toughest test

Due Jan. 10, his budget plan must deal with $14B deficit

By Martin Kasindorf
USA TODAY

By Robyn Beck, AFP/Getty Images

Learning to improvise: After just five weeks in office, California Gov. Arnold Schwarzenegger, a Republican, has already learned how to cut budget deals with Democratic legislators he once called "addicts to spending."

LOS ANGELES — Arnold Schwarzenegger has ended his first five weeks as California's governor with more praise from politicians than he ever got from film critics.

"A good start," says Gray Davis, the Democrat who lost his job in the historic recall election Oct. 7 and was replaced by the Republican actor.

"I have to give him high grades," says Robert Beverly, who retired in 1996 after 30 years as a Republican leader in the state Legislature. "I'm a little surprised."

Since his inauguration Nov. 17, Schwarzenegger has done a lot more than learn his lines on a new stage. He has demonstrated — with well-timed coaching from his wife, Maria Shriver — that he can abandon a script that isn't working.

Schwarzenegger, at age 56, is learning improvisation. He is using his executive power in unprecedented ways, and he is cutting budget deals with Democratic legislators he once called "addicts to spending."

Much of the praise Schwarzenegger is hearing is for a compromise he brokered with the Legislature's Democratic majority earlier this month that ended a deadlock and could provide at least a short-term solution for the state's budget crisis.

Cover story

Mayors and police chiefs also are praising him for using obscure emergency powers last week to give strapped cities and counties $2.7 billion to avert layoffs of public-safety workers. It was a problem he had largely created. He kept his campaign pledge to cancel Davis' unpopular 300% increase in vehicle license fees — the "car tax" that helps pay for cops and firefighters. But the tax cut created budget shortfalls for local governments.

On this issue, Schwarzenegger remains at odds

Please see COVER STORY next page ▸

"Ring: forward, photograph!," barked Arnold to the *USA Today* photographer and editors who eagerly and obediently complied. (Photo: *USA Today,* December *22,* 2003)

Recently, Bohemian Grove alumnus Arnold Schwarzenegger met privately with Warren Buffett (left), America's second richest man according to *Forbes* magazine, and Britain's Lord Jacob Rothschild (right), at the Rothschild mansion in England. Schwarzenegger evidently earned the endorsement and support of Jewish groups the old-fashioned way—he "bribed" them with millions of dollars!

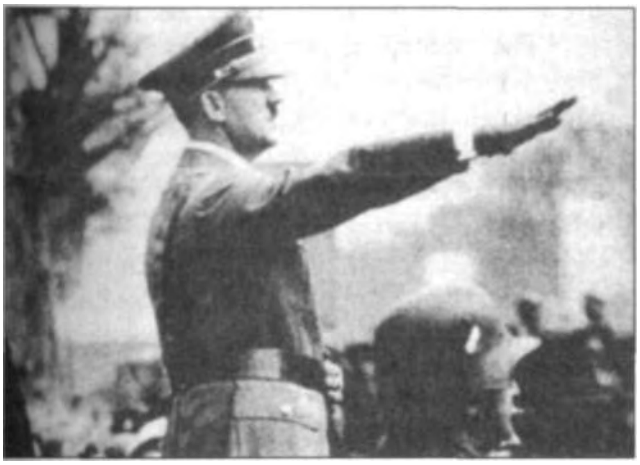

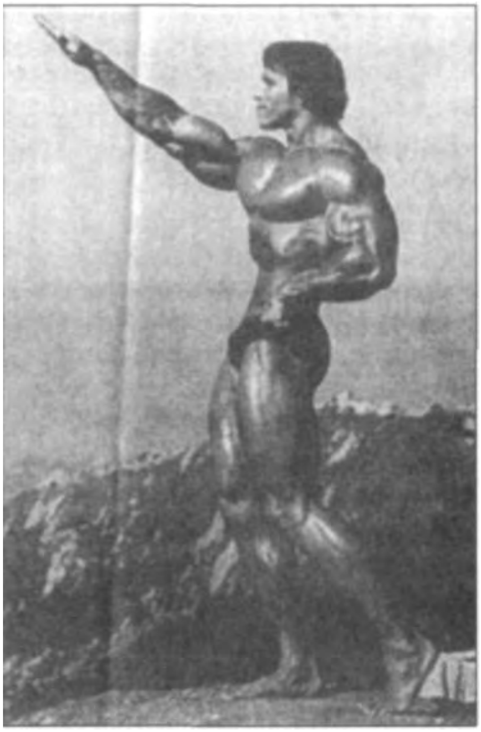

Arnold Schwarzenegger, Mr. Universe, giving a very familiar hand salute. Schwarzenegger once remarked: 'I *admired Hitler because he came from being a little man with no formal education up to power."*

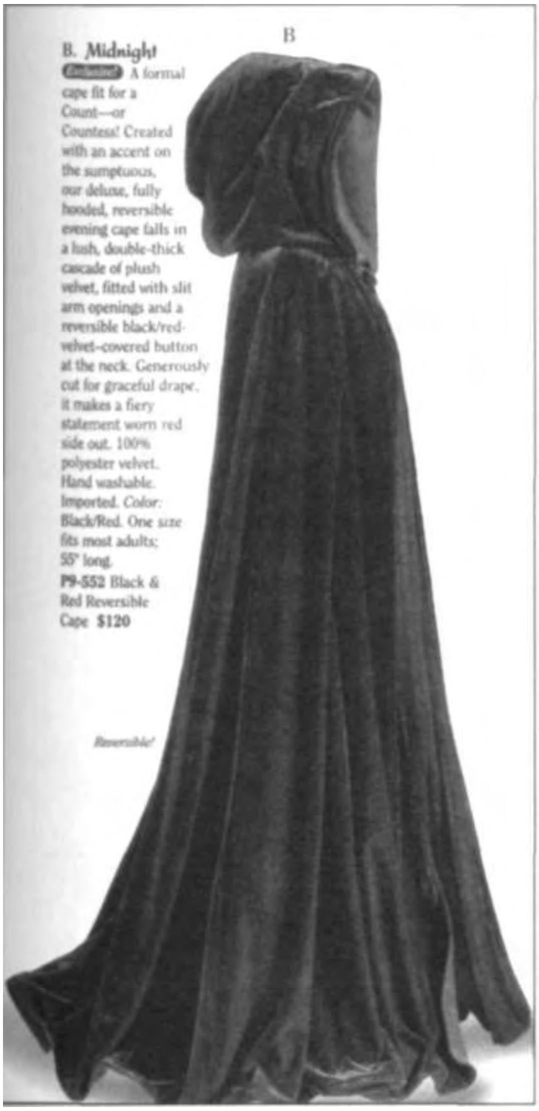

B. *Midnight*

Exclusive! A formal cape fit for a Count—or Countess! Created with an accent on the sumptuous, our deluxe, fully hooded, reversible evening cape falls in a lush, double-thick cascade of plush velvet, fitted with slit arm openings and a reversible black/red-velvet-covered button at the neck. Generously cut for graceful drape, it makes a fiery statement worn red side out. 100% polyester velvet. Hand washable. Imported. *Color:* Black/Red. One size fits most adults; 55" long.

P9-552 Black & Red Reversible Cape **$120**

B
Reversible!

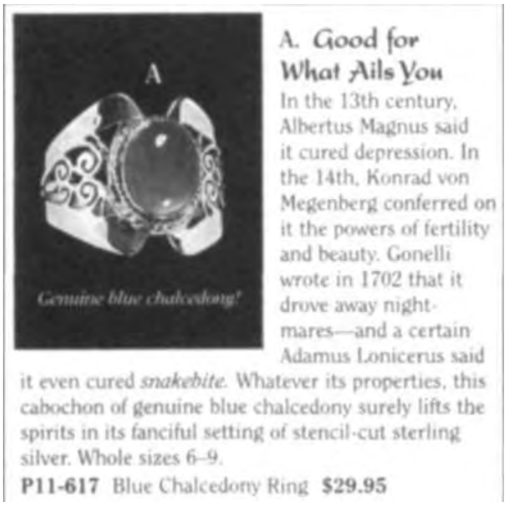

A. *Good for What Ails You*

In the 13th century, Albertus Magnus said it cured depression. In the 14th, Konrad von Megenberg conferred on it the powers of fertility and beauty. Gonelli wrote in 1702 that it drove away nightmares—and a certain Adamus Lonicerus said it even cured *snakebite*. Whatever its properties, this cabochon of genuine blue chalcedony surely lifts the spirits in its fanciful setting of stencil-cut sterling silver. Whole sizes 6–9.

P11-617 Blue Chalcedony Ring **$29.95**

Sort of a feminine version of the ring worn by Governor Arnold Schwarzenegger. Offered in *The Pyramid Collection* catalog, 2004.

Also available in *The Pyramid Collection* catalog, this "Midnight" cape. The catalog says it is "fit for a Count—or Countess." The color of the cape is listed as black and red. *"It makes a fiery statement,"* says the advertising copy.

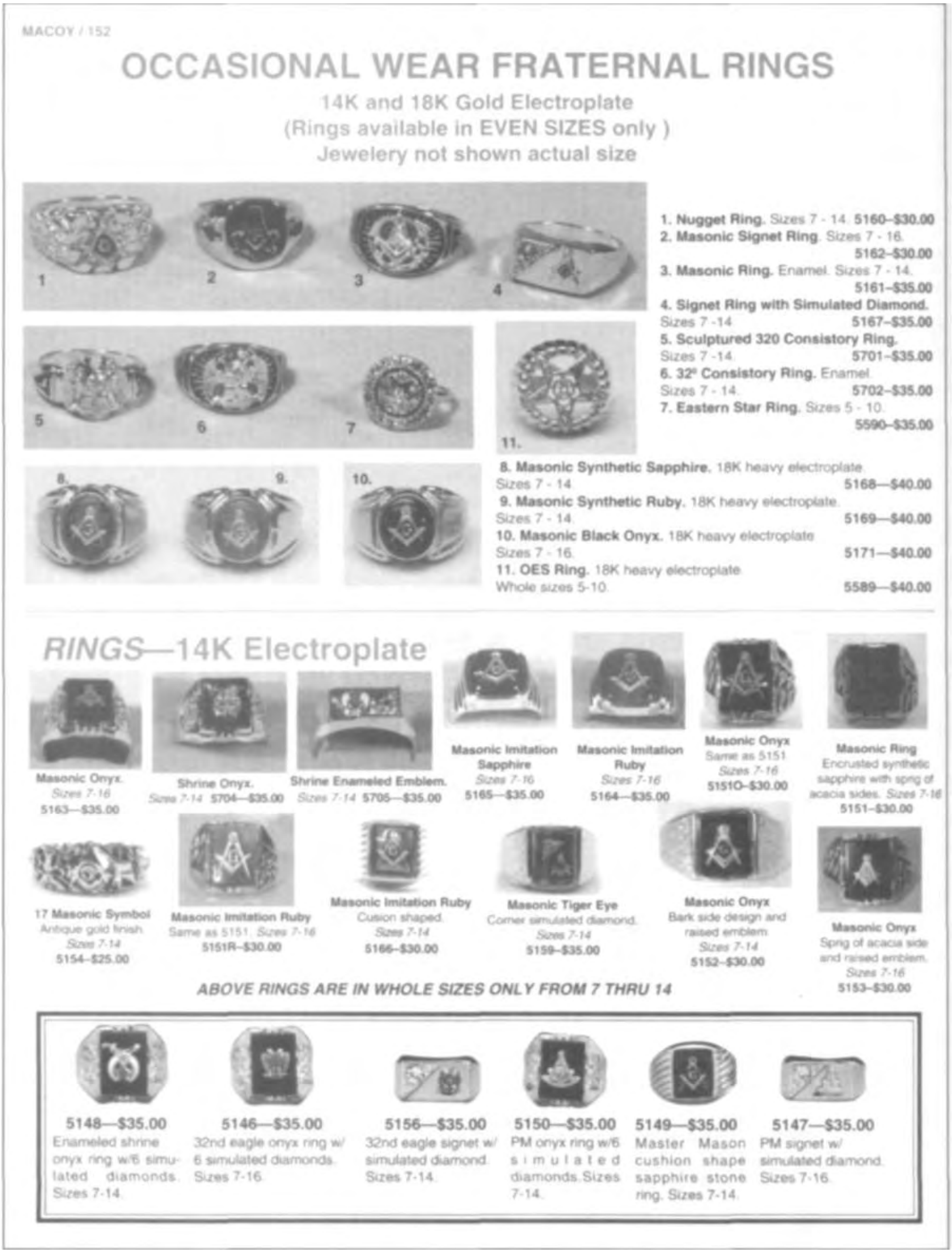

MACOY / 152

OCCASIONAL WEAR FRATERNAL RINGS

14K and 18K Gold Electroplate
(Rings available in EVEN SIZES only)
Jewelery not shown actual size

1. Nugget Ring. Sizes 7 - 14. 5160–$30.00
2. Masonic Signet Ring. Sizes 7 - 16. 5162–$30.00
3. Masonic Ring. Enamel. Sizes 7 - 14. 5161–$35.00
4. Signet Ring with Simulated Diamond. Sizes 7 -14 5167–$35.00
5. Sculptured 320 Consistory Ring. Sizes 7 -14. 5701–$35.00
6. 32° Consistory Ring. Enamel. Sizes 7 - 14. 5702–$35.00
7. Eastern Star Ring. Sizes 5 - 10. 5590–$35.00
8. Masonic Synthetic Sapphire. 18K heavy electroplate. Sizes 7 - 14. 5168—$40.00
9. Masonic Synthetic Ruby. 18K heavy electroplate. Sizes 7 - 14. 5169—$40.00
10. Masonic Black Onyx. 18K heavy electroplate Sizes 7 - 16. 5171—$40.00
11. OES Ring. 18K heavy electroplate Whole sizes 5-10. 5589—$40.00

RINGS—14K Electroplate

Masonic Onyx. *Sizes 7-16* 5163—$35.00

Shrine Onyx. *Sizes 7-14* 5704—$35.00

Shrine Enameled Emblem. *Sizes 7-14* 5705—$35.00

Masonic Imitation Sapphire *Sizes 7-16* 5165—$35.00

Masonic Imitation Ruby *Sizes 7-16* 5164—$35.00

Masonic Onyx Same as 5151 *Sizes 7-16* 5151O–$30.00

Masonic Ring Encrusted synthetic sapphire with sprig of acacia sides. *Sizes 7-16* 5151–$30.00

17 Masonic Symbol Antique gold finish. *Sizes 7-14* 5154–$25.00

Masonic Imitation Ruby Same as 5151. *Sizes 7-16* 5151R–$30.00

Masonic Imitation Ruby Cusion shaped. *Sizes 7-14* 5166–$30.00

Masonic Tiger Eye Corner simulated diamond. *Sizes 7-14* 5159–$35.00

Masonic Onyx Bark side design and raised emblem. *Sizes 7-14* 5152–$30.00

Masonic Onyx Sprig of acacia side and raised emblem. *Sizes 7-16* 5153–$30.00

ABOVE RINGS ARE IN WHOLE SIZES ONLY FROM 7 THRU 14

5148—$35.00 Enameled shrine onyx ring w/6 simulated diamonds. Sizes 7-14.

5146—$35.00 32nd eagle onyx ring w/ 6 simulated diamonds. Sizes 7-16.

5156—$35.00 32nd eagle signet w/ simulated diamond. Sizes 7-14.

5150—$35.00 PM onyx ring w/6 simulated diamonds. Sizes 7-14.

5149—$35.00 Master Mason cushion shape sapphire stone ring. Sizes 7-14.

5147—$35.00 PM signet w/ simulated diamond. Sizes 7-16.

A page from the catalog of Macoy, a distributor of Masonic books, pins, rings, jewelry, and supplies. (2003/2004 Catalog No. HO)

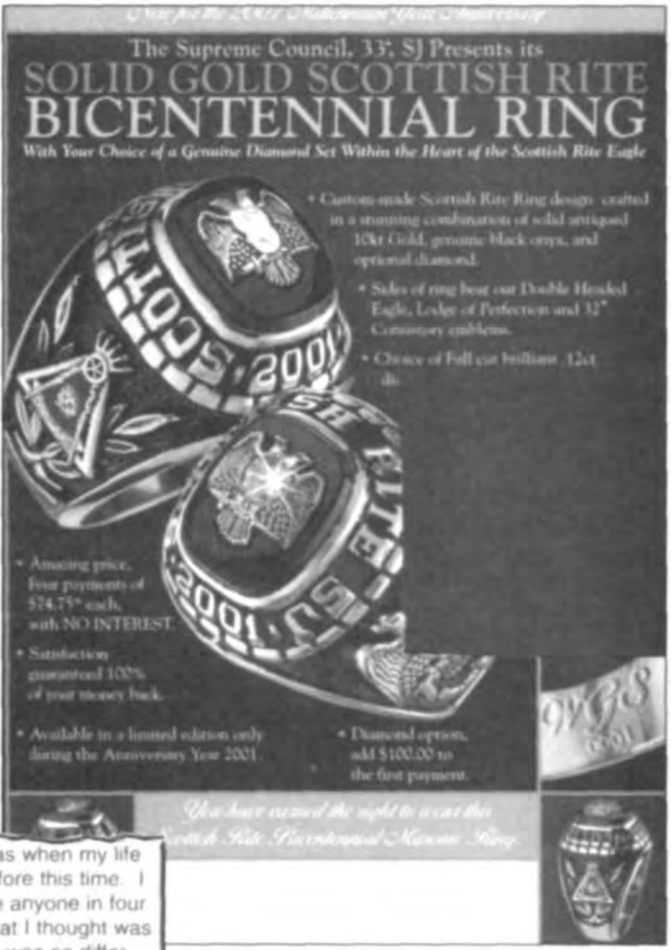

The Supreme Council, 33°, SJ Presents its

SOLID GOLD SCOTTISH RITE
BICENTENNIAL RING

With Your Choice of a Genuine Diamond Set Within the Heart of the Scottish Rite Eagle

- Custom-made Scottish Rite Ring design crafted in a stunning combination of solid antiqued 10kt Gold, genuine black onyx, and optional diamond.
- Sides of ring bear our Double Headed Eagle, Lodge of Perfection and 32° Consistory emblems.
- Choice of Full cut brilliant .12ct dia.
- Amazing price. Four payments of $74.75* each, with NO INTEREST.
- Satisfaction guaranteed 100% of your money back.
- Available in a limited edition only during the Anniversary Year 2001.
- Diamond option, add $100.00 to the first payment.

You have earned the right to wear this Scottish Rite Bicentennial Masonic Ring.

An advertisement on the back cover of *Scottish Rite Journal*.

. . . . In 1962, the year my birth father died, was when my life was turned upside down. But there were clues before this time. I had asked my grandmother why I did not resemble anyone in four generations from what I thought was my family, and why I was so different from everyone else in the family. She was evasive. However, she gave me a photograph *(circa 1919)* of some men who I did not know and two rings.

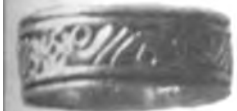

Bernard Baruch's Ring

. . . . She then stated, *"Your father wants you to have his ring, and Bernard Baruch wants you to have this gold ring, which is engraved with the date April 13, 1913."*

. . . . I would learn later that this ring commemorated the founding of the Federal Reserve; each of its founders received a gold ring at the founding ceremony. She pointed to the photograph and then specifically to a tough-looking man in the photograph. She then said, *"This man is important to you."* In addition, I received a French Legion of Honor Medal dated 1928 from my adoptive father, who pointed to the man on the medal and said, *"This man is important to you. He is Andre LeBon."*

Bernard Baruch

. . . . These were the only clues I had to my real identity, but when I received these gifts I had no idea about their significance. In fact, I would have to relive my childhood over and over again through the mists of memory to solve the mystery. I finally recalled that in 1955 I was taken in the middle of the night to the

In his excellent publication, *Criminal Politics*, this author's good friend, Lawrence Patterson, published a fascinating story (excerpt at left) about this ring. It is the 13th ring of the Illuminati founders of the Federal Reserve Board. It was owned by Bernard Baruch, wealthy benefactor, advisor, and controller behind the scenes of President Franklin D. Roosevelt. Baruch gave this gold ring to Dr. Nancy L. Nicholson, heiress of a disputed financial empire. Dr. Nicholson is not a conspirator of the Illuminati although she was raised among the Rothschilds and other dynasty members. Her father, she says, was Lucky Luciano, the infamous Mafia leader. A close look at the engraving on Bernard Baruch's ring reveals what seems to be the number 6 repeated in a combination circular and spiral design. (Photo: *Criminal Politics* magazine, April 30, 2003, p. 11)

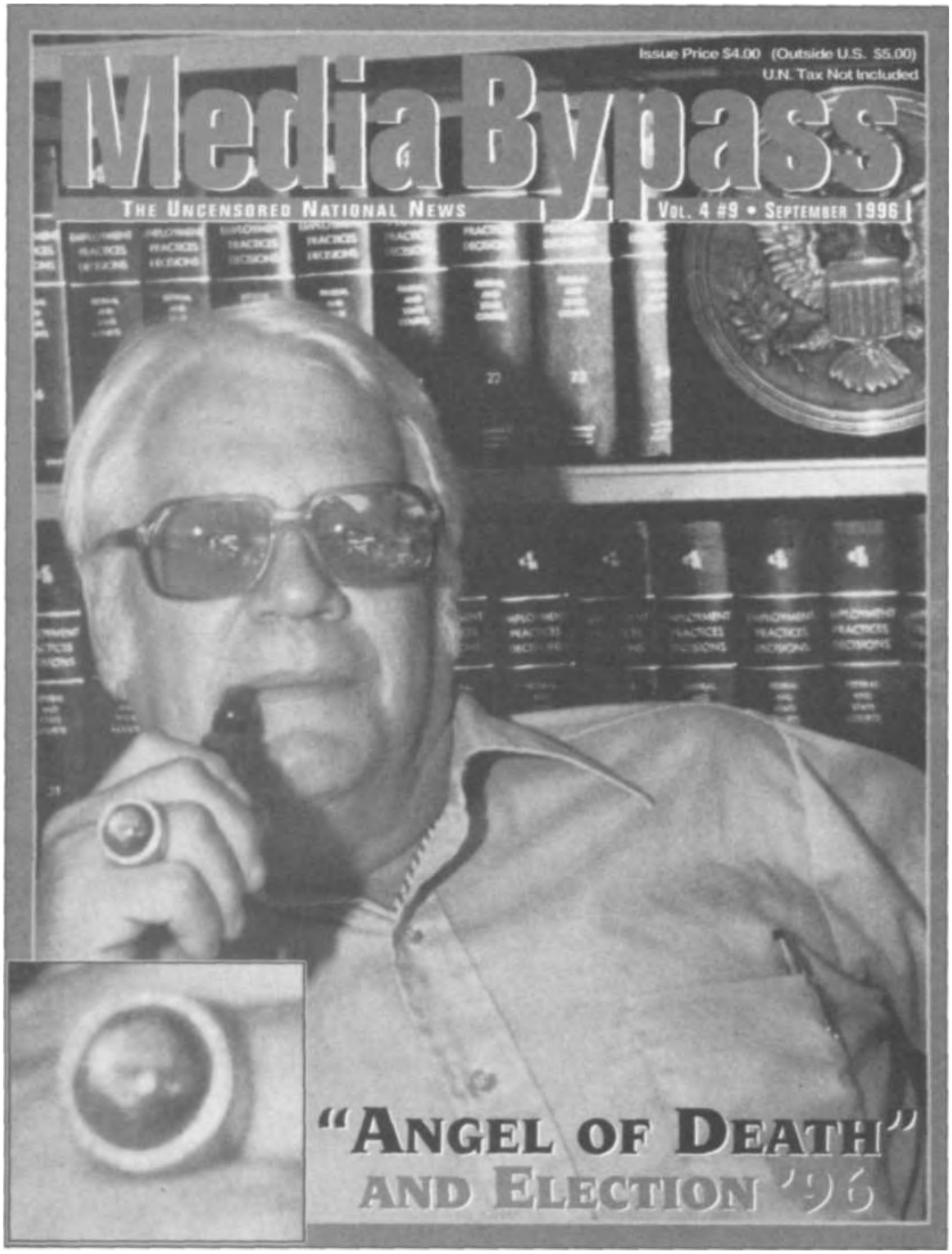
Issue Price $4.00 (Outside U.S. $5.00)
U.N. Tax Not Included
Media Bypass
The Uncensored National News
Vol. 4 #9 • September 1996
"Angel of Death"
and Election '96

This issue *of Media Bypass* magazine (September, 1996) featured the activities of Charles Hayes, who was said to be a retired operative of the CIA. According to the magazine, Hayes had been busy in retirement as a vigilante exposing the financial skullduggery and crookedness of various high-level politicians and world leaders. On the cover of the magazine we find Mr. Hayes in front of law library publications and a Great Seal of the U.S. plaque, puffing placidly on a pipe. But what stands out is the mysterious ring with the devilish face, composed of some type of blackish material, inside a circle. A few months after this issue was published, Charles Hayes was indicted by a federal grand jury and arrested. News reports allege that Hayes was guilty of solicitation of murder. Did the revelations contained in the article in *Media Bypass* cause the elite to take action to shut him up? Or was something else up? What is the riddle of the mysterious ring with its curious image?

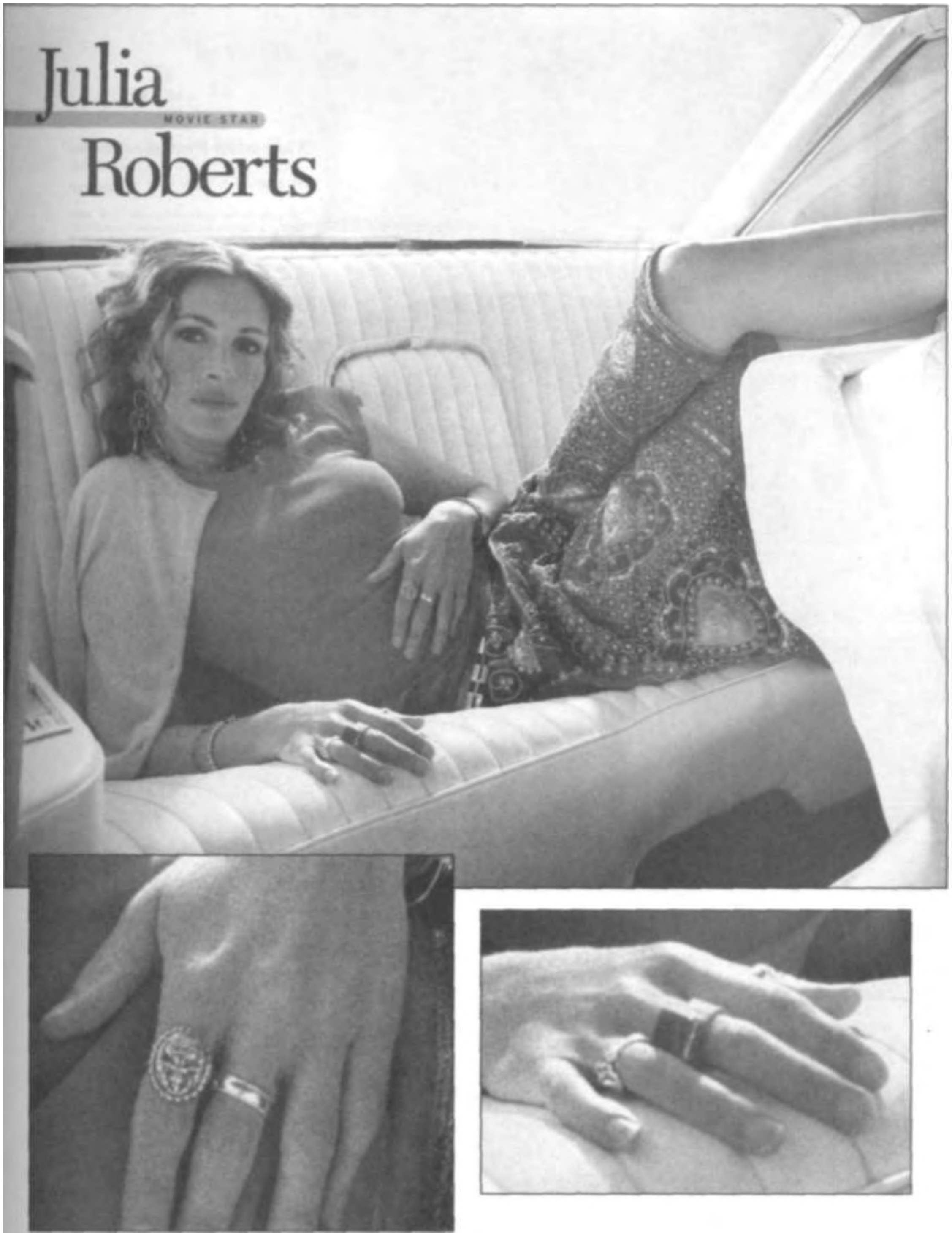

This mysterious photo of Oscar-winning actress Julia Roberts in *Time* magazine gives us an intriguing view of two rings she wears. On her right hand is the blue-stoned rectangular ring, and on her left hand is a ring with a strange image, indeed one could even say the ring has a creepy and eerie image. In the accompanying article, the writer acclaims Roberts as "the reigning queen of Hollywood."

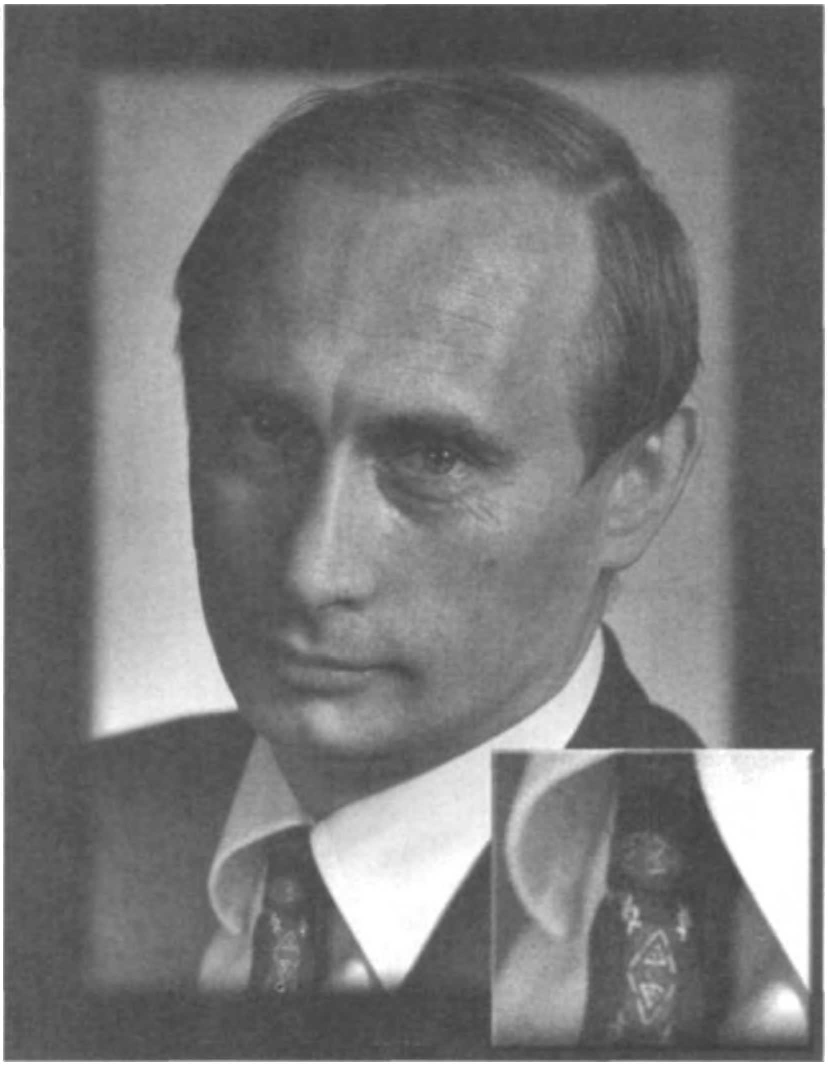

Without caption, *Brill's Content* magazine published this photo of Russian President Vladimir Putin. The black border is unusual and obviously connotes a dark and evil significance to Putin's character. The necktie Putin wears has Illuminist meaning. The X of Osiris is prominent in the design as is the two triangles—one pointing up, the other down—inside a diamond.

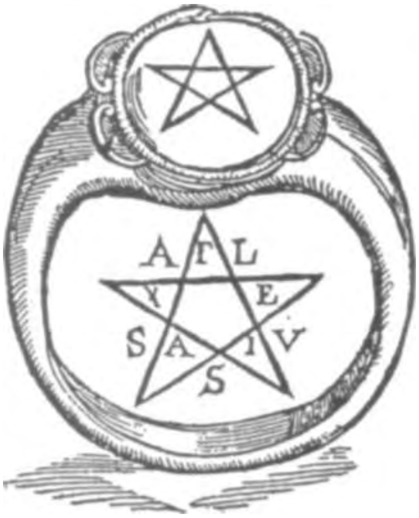

Manly P. Hall, 33°, informs us of the occult meaning of the Pythagorean Signet Ring in his classic textbook, The *Secret Teachings of All Ages.* Albert Pike, former Sovereign Grand Commander of the Scottish Rite Masons, wrote in *Morals and Dogma* that the pentagram (pentacle, cabalistic star) on this ring *"carries with it the power of commanding the spirits."* Use it, he instructed, to *"bind the demons of the air, the spirits of fire, the spectres of water, and the ghosts of the earth."* Note that the star atop the ring is encircled by the Oroboros serpent.

TWENTY-FOUR

OK—Sign of the Divine King

"Annuit Coeptus" - He approves our undertaking.

— Latin inscription atop
the all-seeing eye on
the U.S.A. one dollar bill

Westerners know it as the "okay" (or "OK") sign. It's done with the fingers and thumb of right or left hands (usually the right). Simply touch the index finger to the thumb, creating a circle. The other three fingers then spiral off and there you have it—the well-known symbol for *OK*. Universally, this sign means alright, acceptable, good, right-on, you bet!, A-OK, satisfactory...

But to occultists, the OK sign takes on darker significance. First, we have the *circle,* indicating the sun deity and the Mason's never-ending quest for more light. To Freemasonry, the circle also represents the female genitalia, or yoni. In the Hindu religion, the OK sign is a revered *mudra* (sacred gesture) meaning "infinity" or perfection. It is associated with the female genitalia — thumb and forefinger pressed together at the tips with the other three fingers extended.

In the practice of tantric yoga (sex rituals), the OK sign is a token of ecstasy, spiritual and physical. In ancient Sumeria and Persia, charms and amulets have been discovered of fingers and hands in the modern OK position, joined along with horns implying fertility. The three fingers extended outward are symbolic of ecstatic union with the Goddess, the third member of the pagan trinity.

In Satanism, when making this sign the three fingers not used to make the circle are considered symbolic of the *unholy* trinity — horned god, goddess, and offspring (antichrist). Some go so far as to adopt the view that the bent three fingers are shaped as three number six's, or 666. Thus, we have 666, the sun deity (Lucifer), the goddess

(Mystery, Babylon the Great, Mother of Harlots), and the beast (antichrist, 666), all in one unitary hand sign. Oh what a web of evil wicked men can weave around something seemingly so ordinary and mundane.

In the Illuminist philosophy, the OK sign becomes a sign indicating approval of the Divine King, their coming Lord of Light, whom we as Christians know as Antichrist. To them it means, "He approves our undertaking." This meaning is roughly equivalent to the words in Latin atop the all-seeing eye of Osiris on our U.S. one dollar bill—*Annuit Coeptus.*

A Gesture to Avoid?

As we've noted, the gesture made by touching the tips of the thumb and index finger to form a circle, with the remaining three fingers of the hand fanned out and pointing out may signify "A-Okay" in the U.S.A., but in other cultures the same gesture will certainly not meet with approval.

In Brazil, Germany, and Russia, the signal is a supreme insult and vulgar, indicating a very private body orifice.

In France, the sign portrays the person it is aimed at as being a flunky or a "zero" — basically a worthless person. When it's placed over the nose it means he or she is drunk.

In Japan, the same sign is used in commercial transactions to indicate you want the cashier to give you your change in coins rather than in currency.

In Spain, in Eastern Europe, and in some parts of Latin America, the OK hand gesture is considered very rude. When then Vice President Nixon visited Brazil in the 50s, a crowd of onlookers became a rampaging mob after Nixon flashed them what he thought was the A-Okay sign. To them, Nixon was making an obscene gesture. Nixon's "goodwill" trip suddenly became a "badwill" trip.

And there's more confusion abroad: In Arab countries, making this sign while shaking the hand symbolizes the giving of the *"evil eye,"* perceived by Arabs as an event of great dread. It may be interpreted that you are putting a curse on the individual. Could it be that the Arab interpretation of this sign is exactly what the Illuminati intend in their performing it?

Donald Rumsfeld, Secretary of Defense in the Bush Administration, signals with his hand as he renders a sour look with his face.

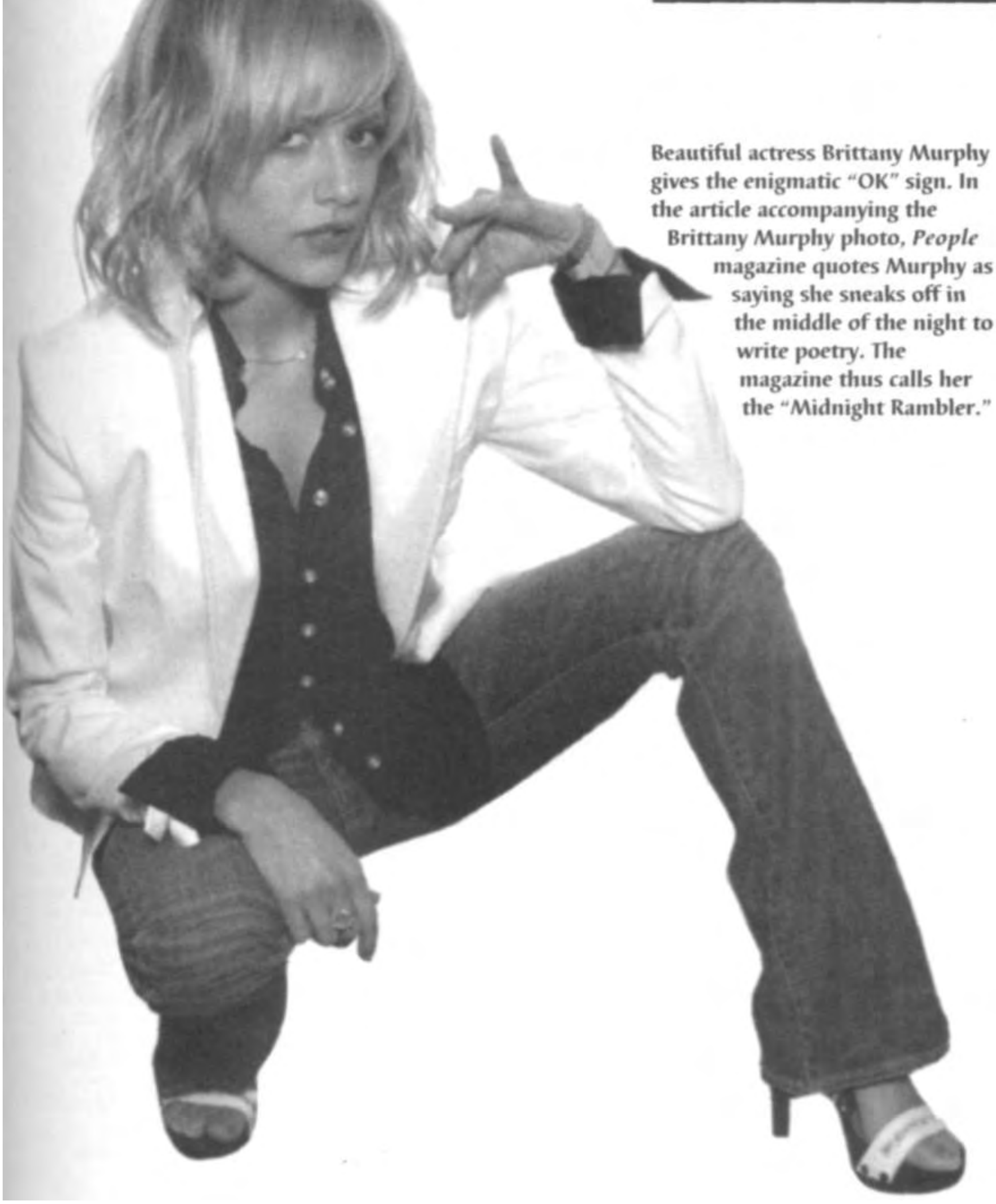

Beautiful actress Brittany Murphy gives the enigmatic "OK" sign. In the article accompanying the Brittany Murphy photo, *People* magazine quotes Murphy as saying she sneaks off in the middle of the night to write poetry. The magazine thus calls her the "Midnight Rambler."

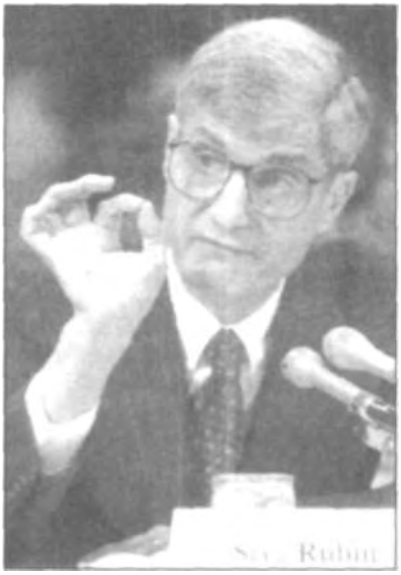

Robert Rubin, Secretary of the Treasury in the Bill Clinton Administration. (Photo: *Austin American-Statesman* newspaper, May 16, 1999)

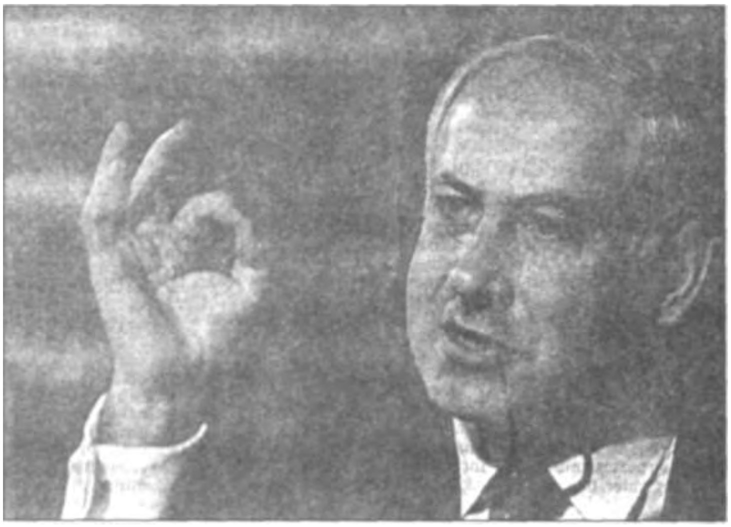

Israeli Prime Minister Benjamin Netanyahu (Photo: Associated Press, in *Lewiston Morning Tribune,* October 26, 1998, p. 7A)

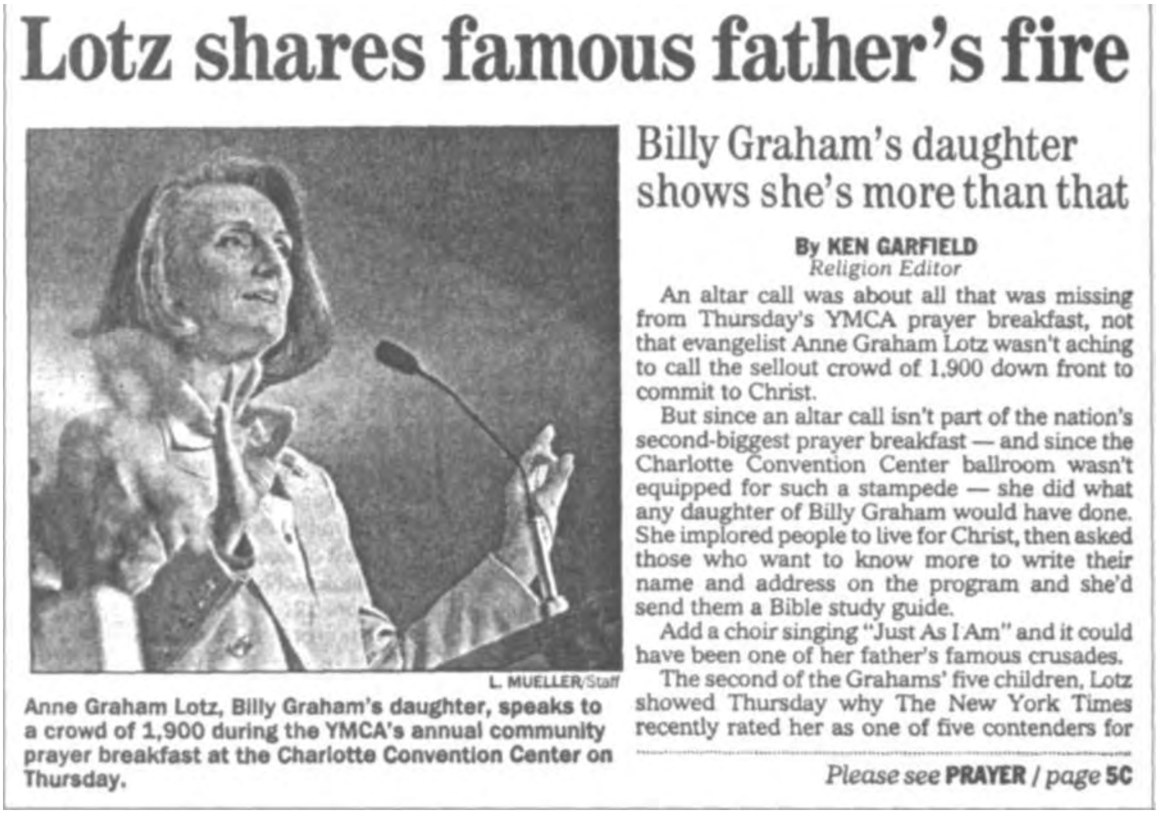

Lotz shares famous father's fire

L. MUELLER/Staff

Anne Graham Lotz, Billy Graham's daughter, speaks to a crowd of 1,900 during the YMCA's annual community prayer breakfast at the Charlotte Convention Center on Thursday.

Billy Graham's daughter shows she's more than that

By KEN GARFIELD
Religion Editor

An altar call was about all that was missing from Thursday's YMCA prayer breakfast, not that evangelist Anne Graham Lotz wasn't aching to call the sellout crowd of 1,900 down front to commit to Christ.

But since an altar call isn't part of the nation's second-biggest prayer breakfast — and since the Charlotte Convention Center ballroom wasn't equipped for such a stampede — she did what any daughter of Billy Graham would have done. She implored people to live for Christ, then asked those who want to know more to write their name and address on the program and she'd send them a Bible study guide.

Add a choir singing "Just As I Am" and it could have been one of her father's famous crusades.

The second of the Grahams' five children, Lotz showed Thursday why The New York Times recently rated her as one of five contenders for

Please see **PRAYER** / *page* **5C**

Anne Graham Lotz, Billy Graham's daughter, at a YMCA prayer breakfast (Photo: Charlotte, NC newspaper, April *2,* 1999)

This drawing by an anonymous artist is very revealing it its carefully crafted symbology. We see at top and bottom the Illuminati's *"OK"* sign. Then, mere's the oval-shaped "egg," the "El Diablo" devil's horns, the two dialectic birds.

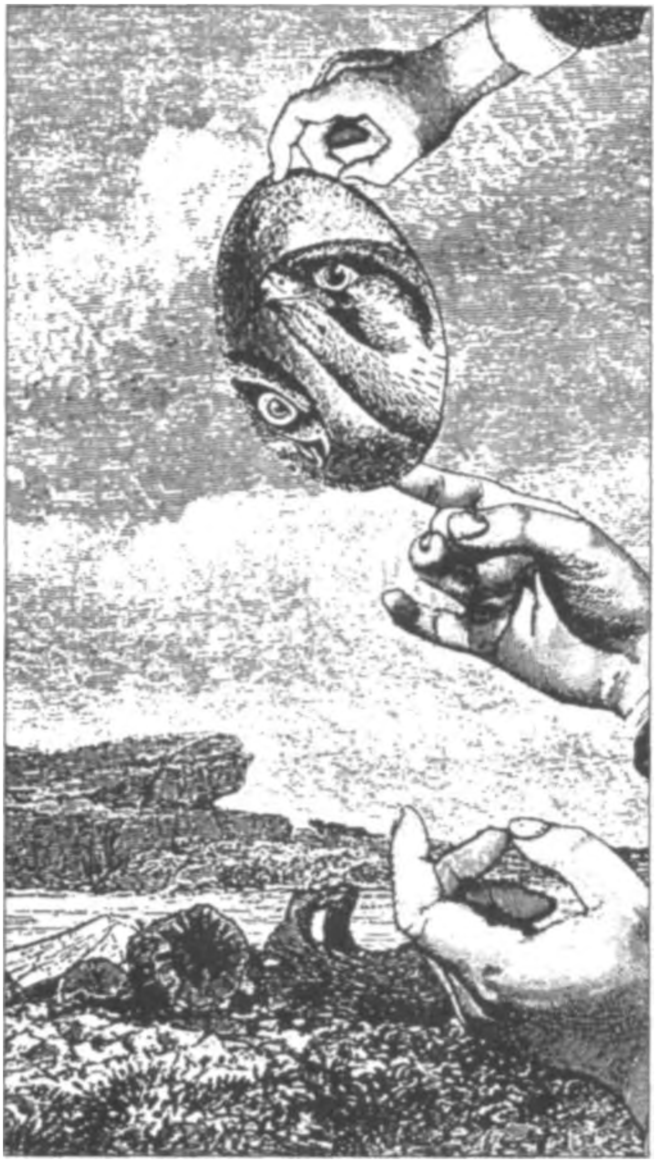

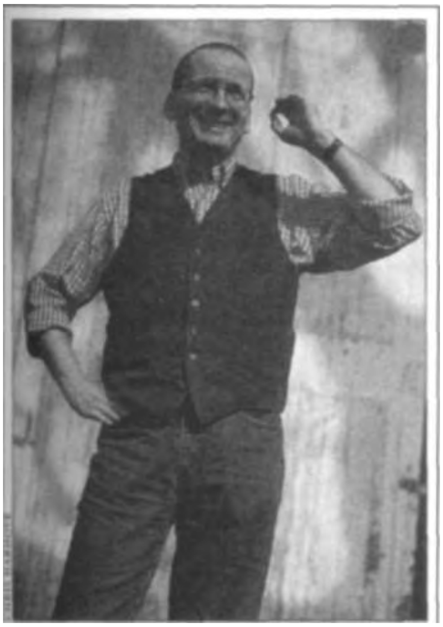

RODDY DOYLE: ***The more popular this widely read novelist grows, the darker and better his books become***

Roddy Doyle, popular Irish novelist. *(Newsweek,* July 1, 1996, p. 64)

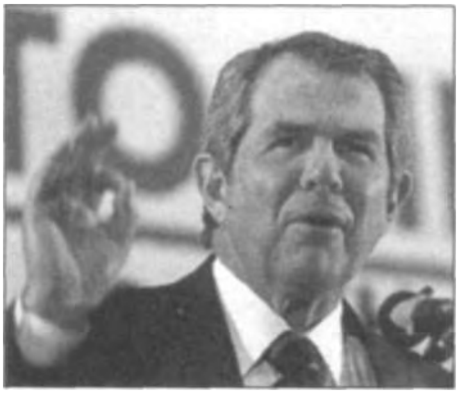

Pat Robertson, Mason, Illuminist, Knight of Malta, and elite propagandist in the field of religion.

John Foster Dulles (right), Secretary of State in the Eisenhower Administration, with Illuminist religious puppet, Billy Graham. (Photo: From book, *Thy Will Be Done—The Conquest of the Amazon: Nelson Rockefeller and Evangelism in the Age of Oil*, by Gerard Colby, Harper Collins, 1995)

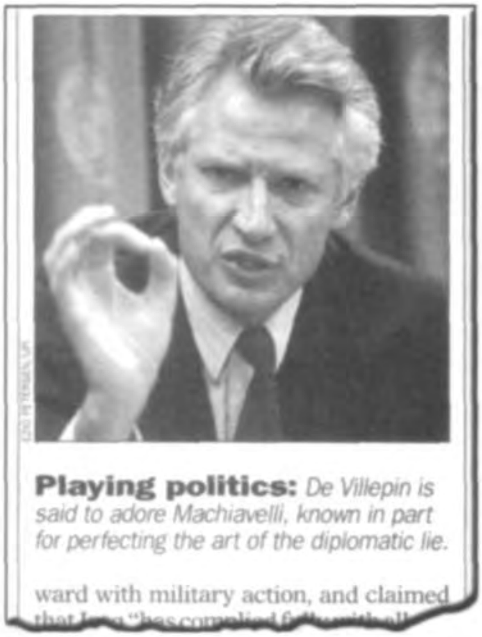

Playing politics: *De Villepin is said to adore Machiavelli, known in part for perfecting the art of the diplomatic lie.*

ward with military action, and claimed

French Foreign Minister De Villepin, at the United Nations in New York. (Photo: *Insight* magazine, April 13-26, 2004, p. 39)

394-foot tall Buddha statue in Tokyo, Japan.

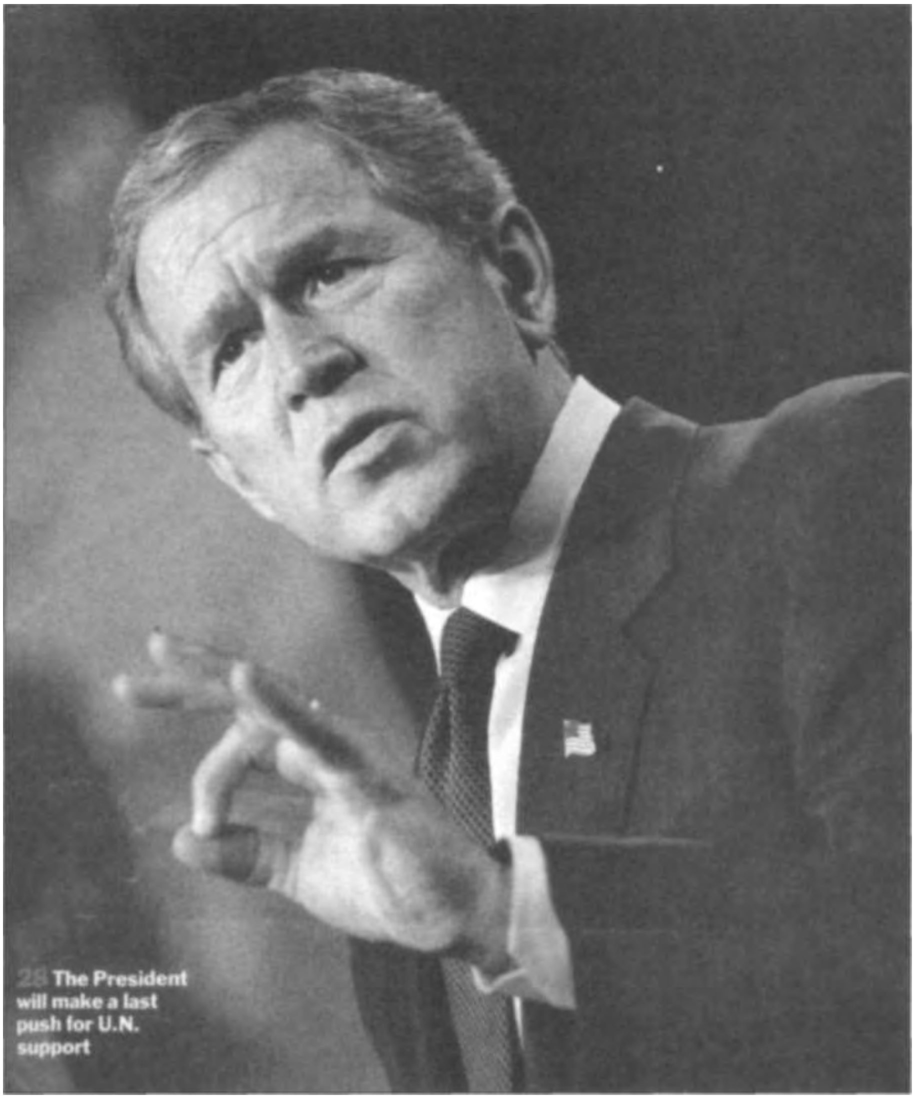
28 The President will make a last push for U.N. support

President George W. Bush (*Time* magazine, March 3, 2003, p. 5)

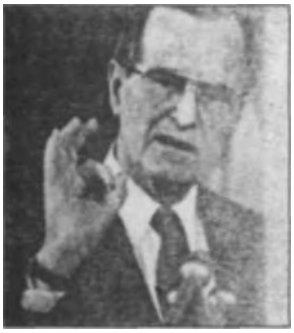

President George Herbert Walker Bush, has often been seen giving the Illuminati's mudra, known by masses as the "OK."

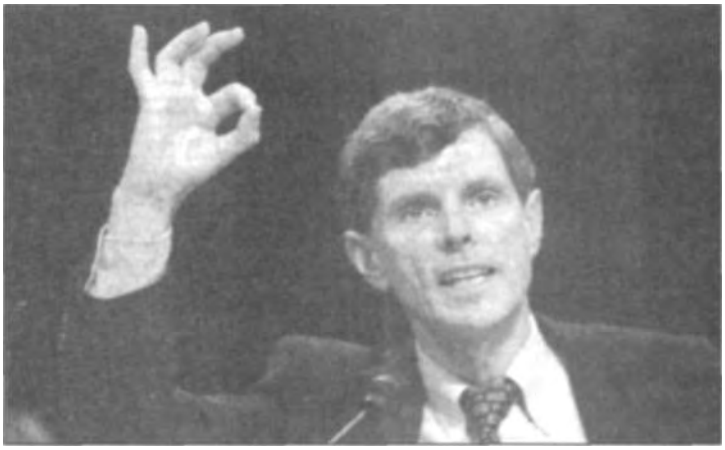

David Graham, FDA official in the Bush Administration. (Associated Press, in *Austin American-Statesman,* December 5, 2004, p. 18)

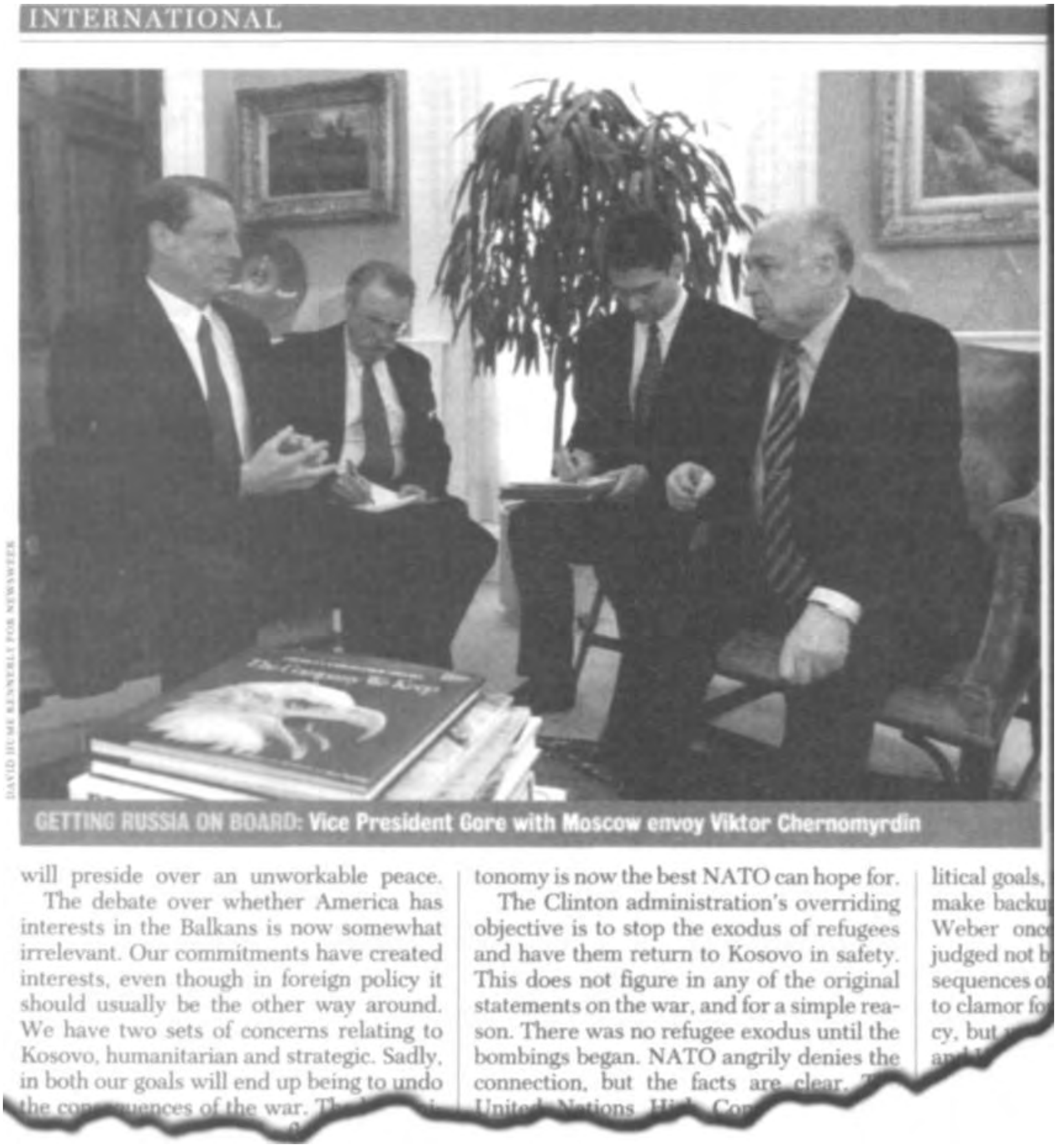

INTERNATIONAL

DAVID HUME KENNERLY FOR NEWSWEEK

GETTING RUSSIA ON BOARD: Vice President Gore with Moscow envoy Viktor Chernomyrdin

will preside over an unworkable peace.

The debate over whether America has interests in the Balkans is now somewhat irrelevant. Our commitments have created interests, even though in foreign policy it should usually be the other way around. We have two sets of concerns relating to Kosovo, humanitarian and strategic. Sadly, in both our goals will end up being to undo the consequences of the war.

tonomy is now the best NATO can hope for.

The Clinton administration's overriding objective is to stop the exodus of refugees and have them return to Kosovo in safety. This does not figure in any of the original statements on the war, and for a simple reason. There was no refugee exodus until the bombings began. NATO angrily denies the connection, but the facts are clear.

litical goals,
make backu
Weber onc
judged not b
sequences o
to clamor fo
cy, but

Vice President Al Gore (left) and influential Moscow envoy and fellow Illuminist, Viktor Chernomyrdin. Chernomyrdin, a crypto-Jew and Mason, oversaw the redistribution of assets of the old Communist Soviet State in the hands of Jewish oligarchs. This was a prime Illuminati project in the late 1980s and 1990s. Symbols expert Dr. Cathy Burns, in reviewing this photo, remarked: "Not only are hand signs important in the occult, but other features in a picture can also have a symbolic meaning. For instance, notice the book with an eagle on the cover. Could the United States be the Eagle? The caption just below mentions "getting Russia on board." Notice too, the title of the book. ***The Company We Keep.*** **Is this a reference to the United States keeping company with Russia ("getting Russia on board")? (Photo:** ***Newsweek,*** **May 17, 1999, p. 38)**

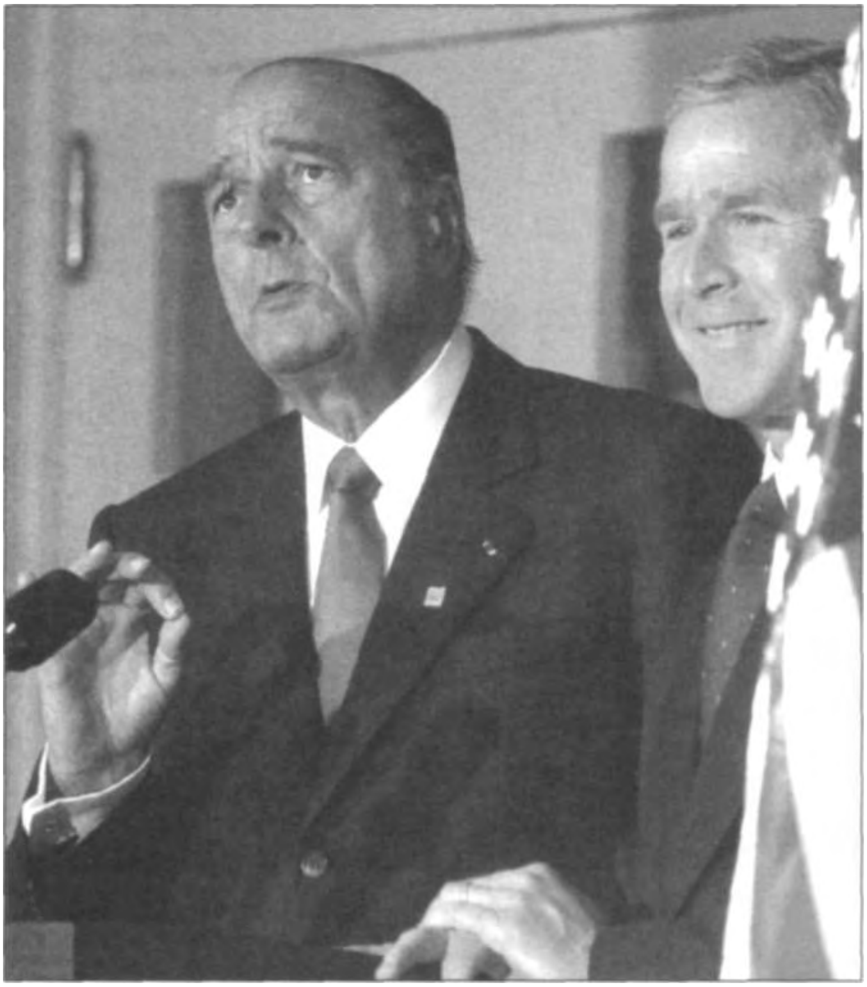

President George W. Bush, affectionately holds his left hand as France's President Jacques Chirac gives the high sign of the Illuminati with his right. (Photo: *Insight* magazine, April 13-26, 2004, p. 41)

D
ترة الأولى

The PLO Chief Yasser Arafat with his current-day successor, Mahmoud Abbas. Both men were Masons, and both were tools of the CIA and Mossad.

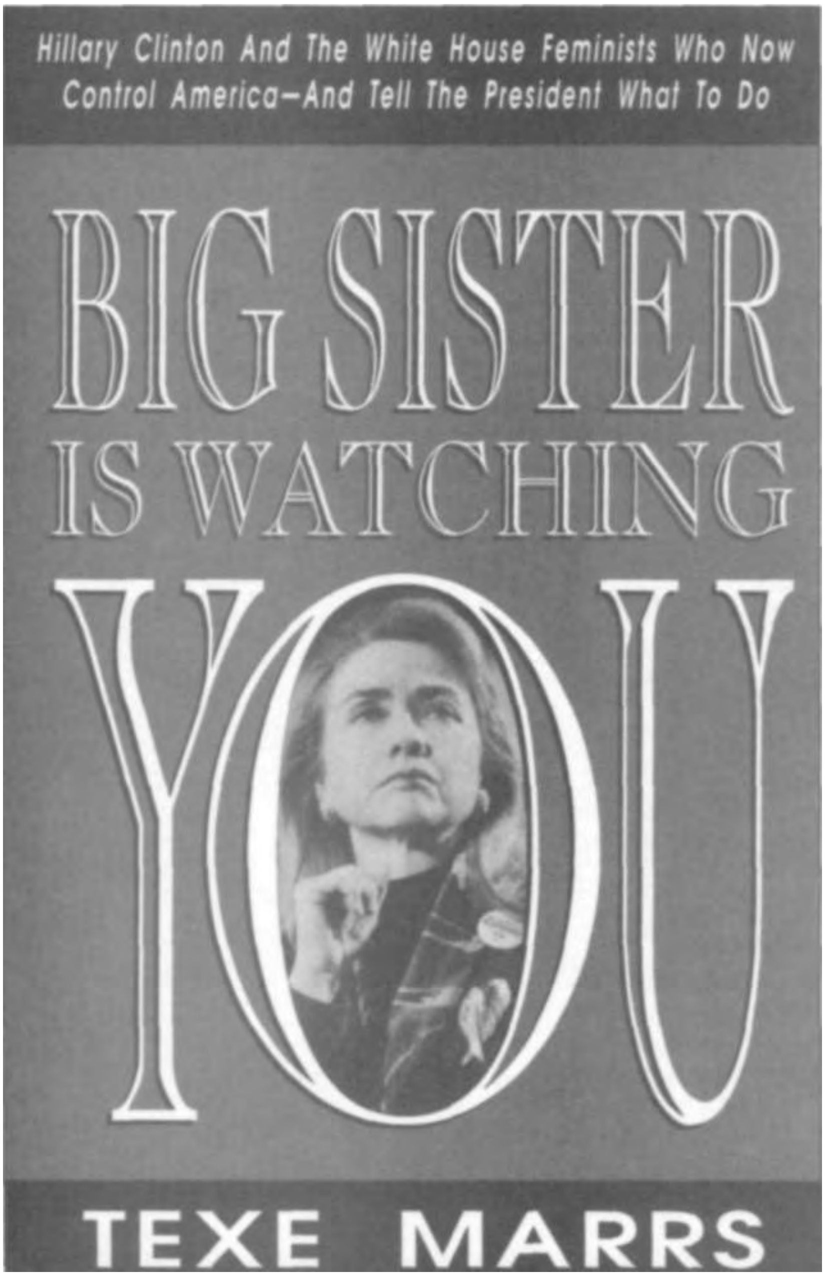
Hillary Clinton And The White House Feminists Who Now Control America—And Tell The President What To Do
BIG SISTER IS WATCHING YOU
TEXE MARRS

This cover of one of the author's bestselling books illustrates the former First Lady wearing an "angel pin" with wings crossed in an Osirian X. Her right hand is formed in a circle.

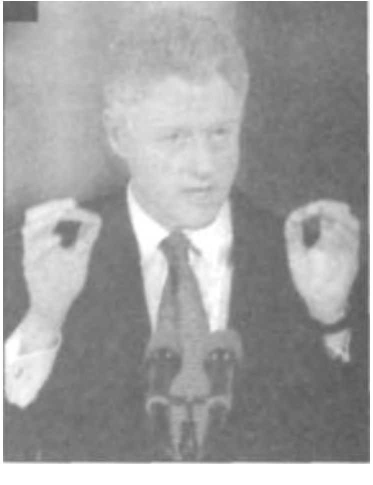

President Bill Clinton with a double circle sign, to emphasize his point. The headline reads "Clinton goes on offensive against Starr...Alleged sex scandal won't make him resign, President says..." Clinton's hand signal indicates that his Illuminist superiors had decided to let him stay in office and not be ousted through impeachment conviction due to the Lewinsky sex/perjury scandal charges brought by special prosecutor, Kenneth Starr. *(Austin American-Statesman,* February 7, 1998, p. 1)

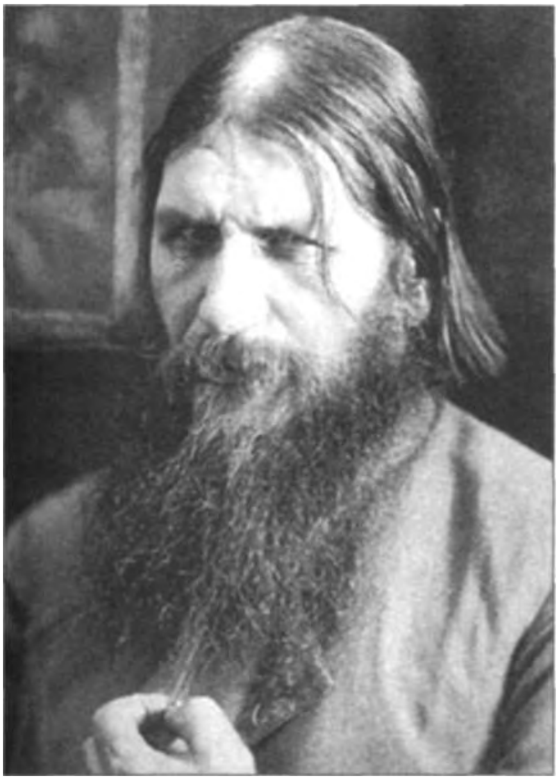

Rasputin, the "Mad Monk" of Russia who ingratiated himself with the Czarina and other nobility. Rasputin was an initiate of a secret order whose members engaged in naked dances, ecstatic states, drunkeness, and sexual orgies, which they claimed to be "holy." Children begotten were said to be born of the Holy Ghost.

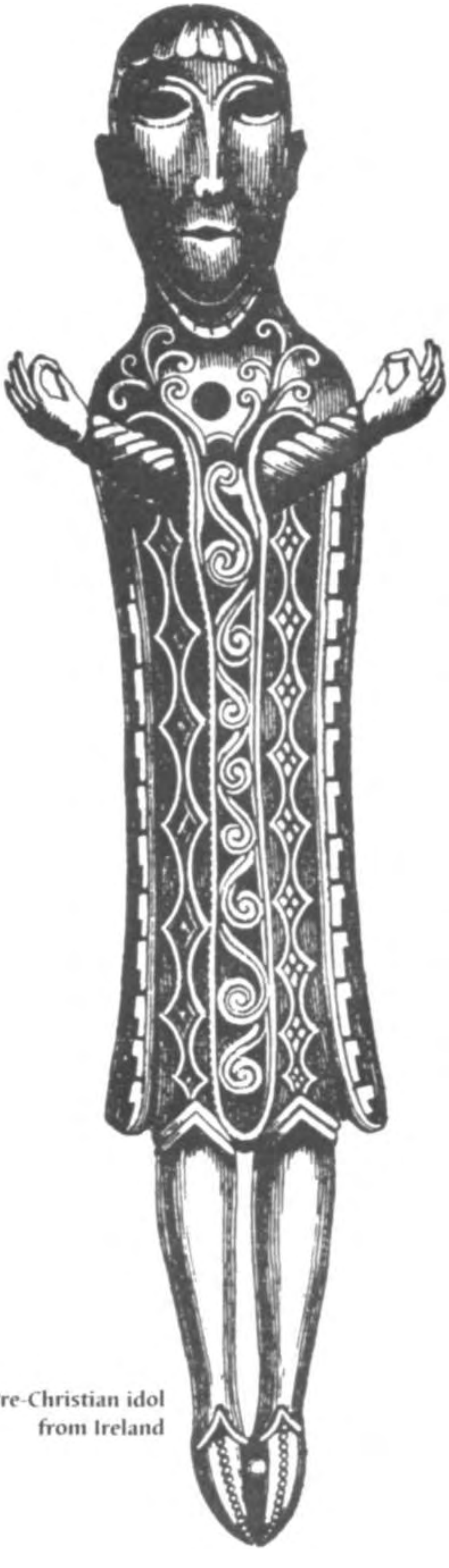

Pre-Christian idol
from Ireland

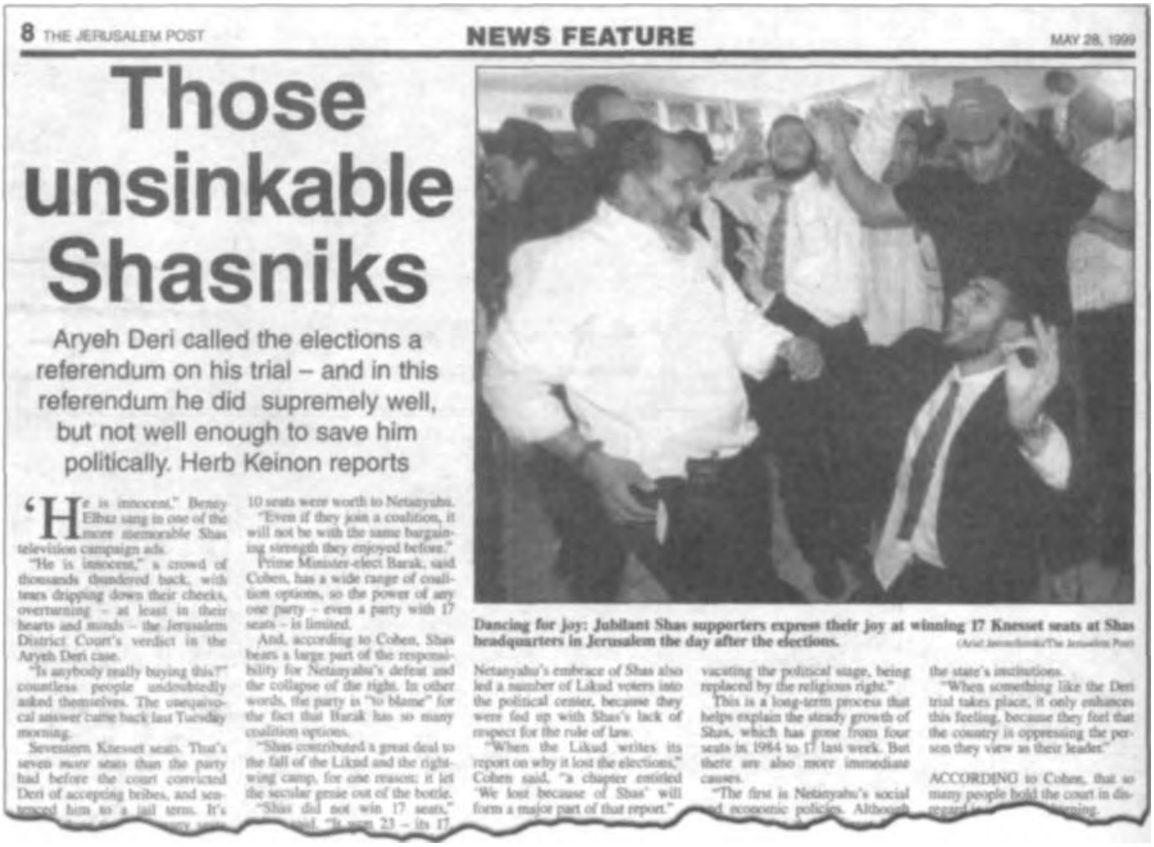

8 THE JERUSALEM POST NEWS FEATURE MAY 28, 1999

Those unsinkable Shasniks

Aryeh Deri called the elections a referendum on his trial – and in this referendum he did supremely well, but not well enough to save him politically. Herb Keinon reports

'He is innocent," Benny Elbaz sang in one of the more memorable Shas television campaign ads.

"He is innocent," a crowd of thousands thundered back, with tears dripping down their cheeks, overturning – at least in their hearts and minds – the Jerusalem District Court's verdict in the Aryeh Deri case.

"Is anybody really buying this?" countless people undoubtedly asked themselves. The unequivocal answer came back last Tuesday morning.

Seventeen Knesset seats. That's seven more seats than the party had before the court convicted Deri of accepting bribes, and sentenced him to a jail term. It's

10 seats were worth to Netanyahu.

"Even if they join a coalition, it will not be with the same bargaining strength they enjoyed before."

Prime Minister-elect Barak, said Cohen, has a wide range of coalition options, so the power of any one party – even a party with 17 seats – is limited.

And, according to Cohen, Shas bears a large part of the responsibility for Netanyahu's defeat and the collapse of the right. In other words, the party is "to blame" for the fact that Barak has so many coalition options.

"Shas contributed a great deal to the fall of the Likud and the right-wing camp, for one reason: it let the secular genie out of the bottle.

"Shas did not win 17 seats," said. "It won 23 – its 17

Dancing for joy: Jubilant Shas supporters express their joy at winning 17 Knesset seats at Shas headquarters in Jerusalem the day after the elections. (Ariel Jerozolimski/The Jerusalem Post)

Netanyahu's embrace of Shas also led a number of Likud voters into the political center, because they were fed up with Shas's lack of respect for the rule of law.

"When the Likud writes its report on why it lost the elections," Cohen said, "a chapter entitled 'We lost because of Shas' will form a major part of that report."

vacating the political stage, being replaced by the religious right."

This is a long-term process that helps explain the steady growth of Shas, which has gone from four seats in 1984 to 17 last week. But there are also more immediate causes.

"The first is Netanyahu's social and economic policies. Although

the state's institutions.

"When something like the Deri trial takes place, it only enhances this feeling, because they feel that the country is oppressing the person they view as their leader."

ACCORDING to Cohen, that so many people hold the court in dis-

Jubilant supporters of Israel's hard-core Shas political party dance for joy after the victory of winning many disputed seats in that country's Knesset (parliament). (Photo: *The Jerusalem Post* newspaper, *May 28,* 1999, p. 8)

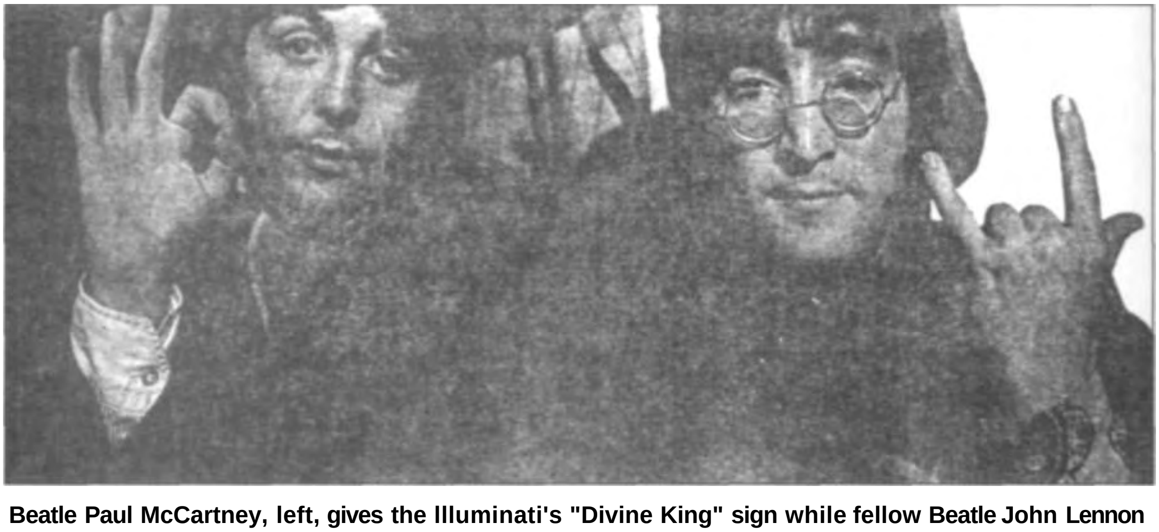

Beatle Paul McCartney, left, gives the Illuminati's "Divine King" sign while fellow Beatle John Lennon lets us know he's a Luciferian.

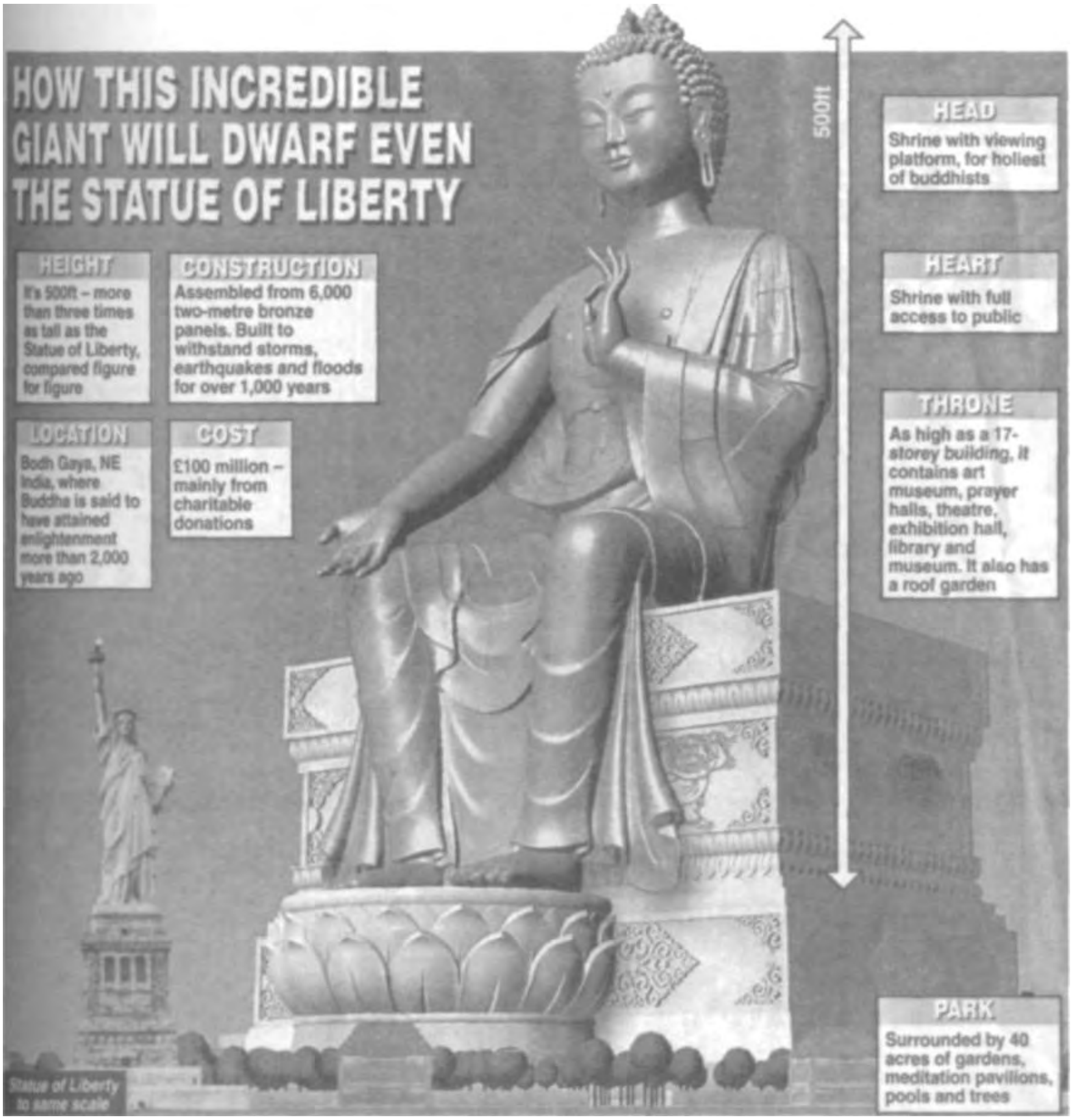

HOW THIS INCREDIBLE GIANT WILL DWARF EVEN THE STATUE OF LIBERTY

HEIGHT
It's 500ft – more than three times as tall as the Statue of Liberty, compared figure for figure

CONSTRUCTION
Assembled from 6,000 two-metre bronze panels. Built to withstand storms, earthquakes and floods for over 1,000 years

LOCATION
Bodh Gaya, NE India, where Buddha is said to have attained enlightenment more than 2,000 years ago

COST
£100 million – mainly from charitable donations

HEAD
Shrine with viewing platform, for holiest of buddhists

HEART
Shrine with full access to public

THRONE
As high as a 17-storey building, it contains art museum, prayer halls, theatre, exhibition hall, library and museum. It also has a roof garden

PARK
Surrounded by 40 acres of gardens, meditation pavilions, pools and trees

In London's *Daily Mail* newspaper (July 6, 2000, p. 9) was this report of a giant S00 foot high bronze Buddha statue, called the Buddha Maitreya, in the Indian holy city of Bodh Gaya. The statue will be over three times higher than the U.S.A.'s Statue of Liberty. It is being built by British engineers. Observe the Buddha statues mudra, or left hand sign. Also, the "horns" on the head.

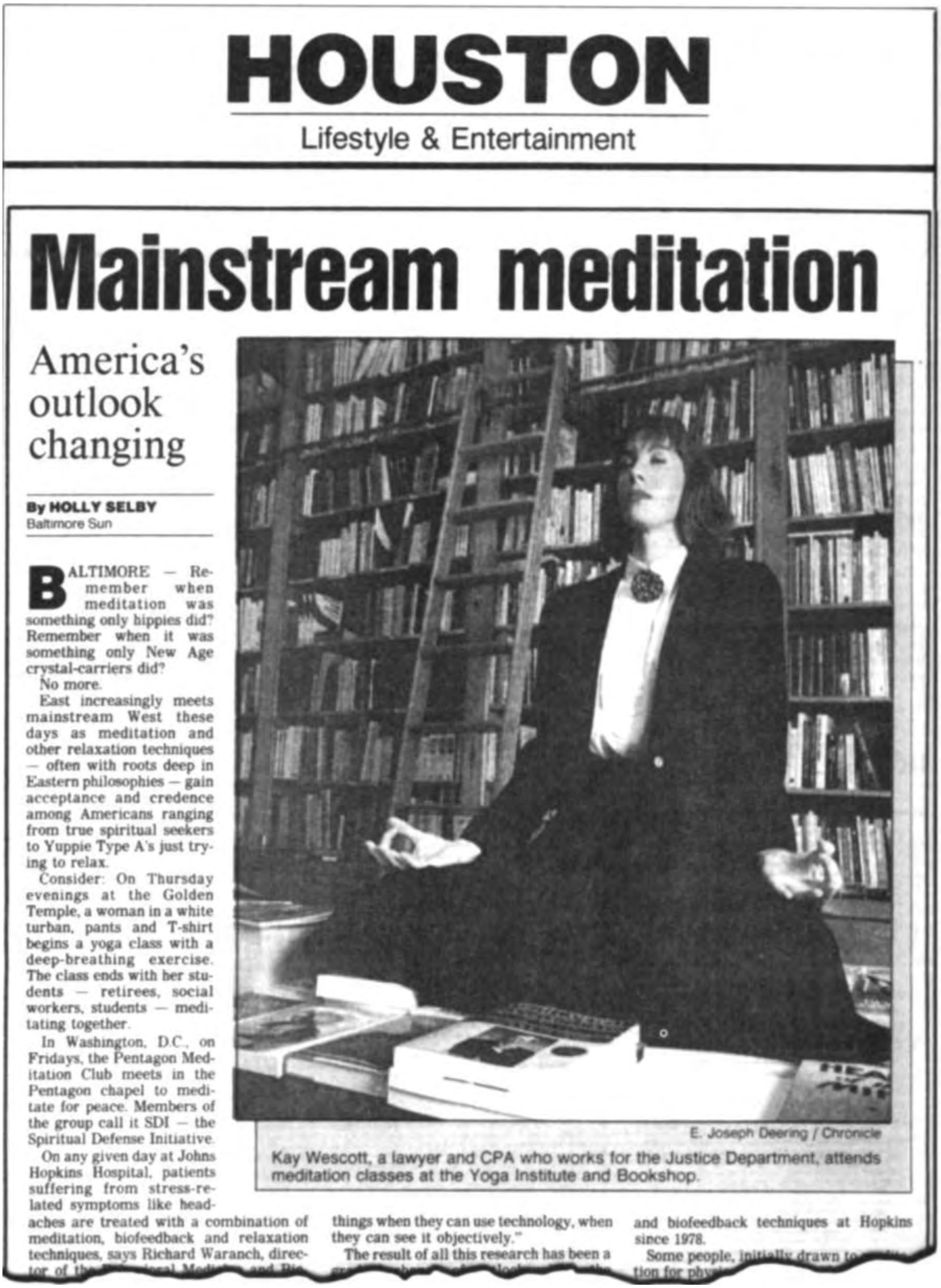

HOUSTON

Lifestyle & Entertainment

Mainstream meditation

America's outlook changing

By HOLLY SELBY
Baltimore Sun

BALTIMORE — Remember when meditation was something only hippies did? Remember when it was something only New Age crystal-carriers did?

No more.

East increasingly meets mainstream West these days as meditation and other relaxation techniques — often with roots deep in Eastern philosophies — gain acceptance and credence among Americans ranging from true spiritual seekers to Yuppie Type A's just trying to relax.

Consider: On Thursday evenings at the Golden Temple, a woman in a white turban, pants and T-shirt begins a yoga class with a deep-breathing exercise. The class ends with her students — retirees, social workers, students — meditating together.

In Washington, D.C., on Fridays, the Pentagon Meditation Club meets in the Pentagon chapel to meditate for peace. Members of the group call it SDI — the Spiritual Defense Initiative.

On any given day at Johns Hopkins Hospital, patients suffering from stress-related symptoms like headaches are treated with a combination of meditation, biofeedback and relaxation techniques, says Richard Waranch, director of the [illegible]

things when they can use technology, when they can see it objectively."

The result of all this research has been a [illegible]

and biofeedback techniques at Hopkins since 1978.

Some people, initially drawn to [illegible]

E. Joseph Deering / Chronicle

Kay Wescott, a lawyer and CPA who works for the Justice Department, attends meditation classes at the Yoga Institute and Bookshop.

The caption reads: *"Kay Wescott, a lawyer and CPA who works for the Justice Department, attends meditation classes at the Yoga Institute and Bookshop."* Yoga is very popular in the United States, though most do not understand that the yogic positions of hands and body represent Hindu pagan religious symbols and doctrines. In this instance, Ms. Wescott sits in the upright position, legs crossed lotus-style, her hands in the mudra "OK," or circle.

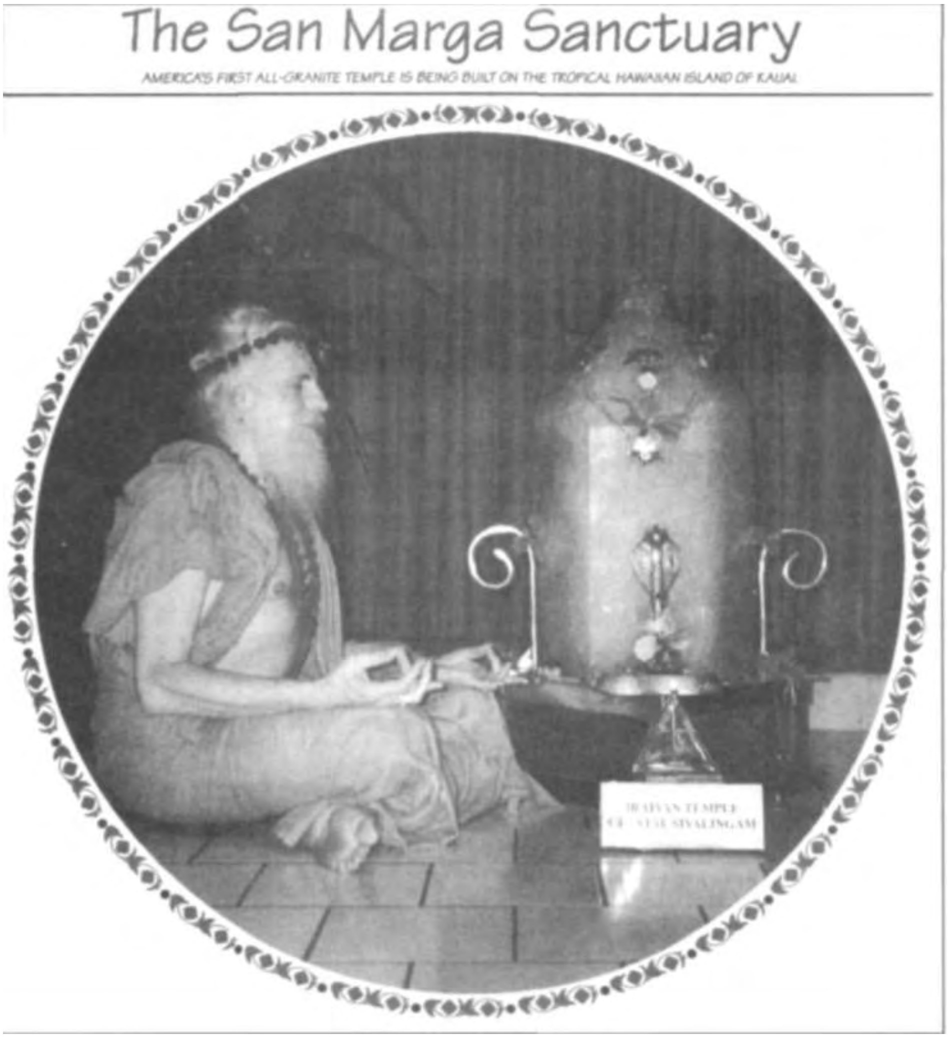

The San Marga Sanctuary

AMERICA'S FIRST ALL-GRANITE TEMPLE IS BEING BUILT ON THE TROPICAL HAWAIIAN ISLAND OF KAUAI

A Hindu swami and worshipper of the god Shiva at the San Marga Sanctuary in Hawaii. He is accompanied by a strange paper idol and a brazen cobra idol.

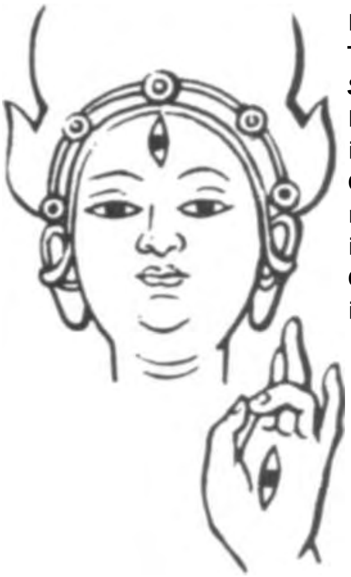

Buddha displaying the left-hand "OK" mudra. This drawing is from *The Herder Dictionary of Symbols* (Chiron Publications, Wilmette, Illinois, 1986). That reference source explains it as "an eye in the hand of God signified God's creative wisdom." Of course, this is not referring to the Christian God, but to the ineffable, unknown God called *Ain Soph* in the Cabala and as the evil, satanic "God of Forces," in the Bible's book of Daniel.

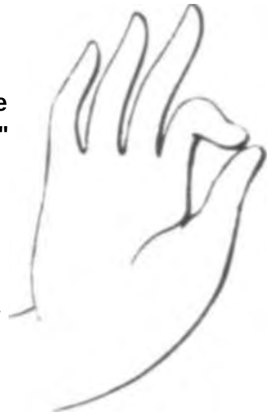

Illustration in *The Herder*
Dictionary of Symbols
(Chiron Publications,
Wilmette, Illinois, **1986).**

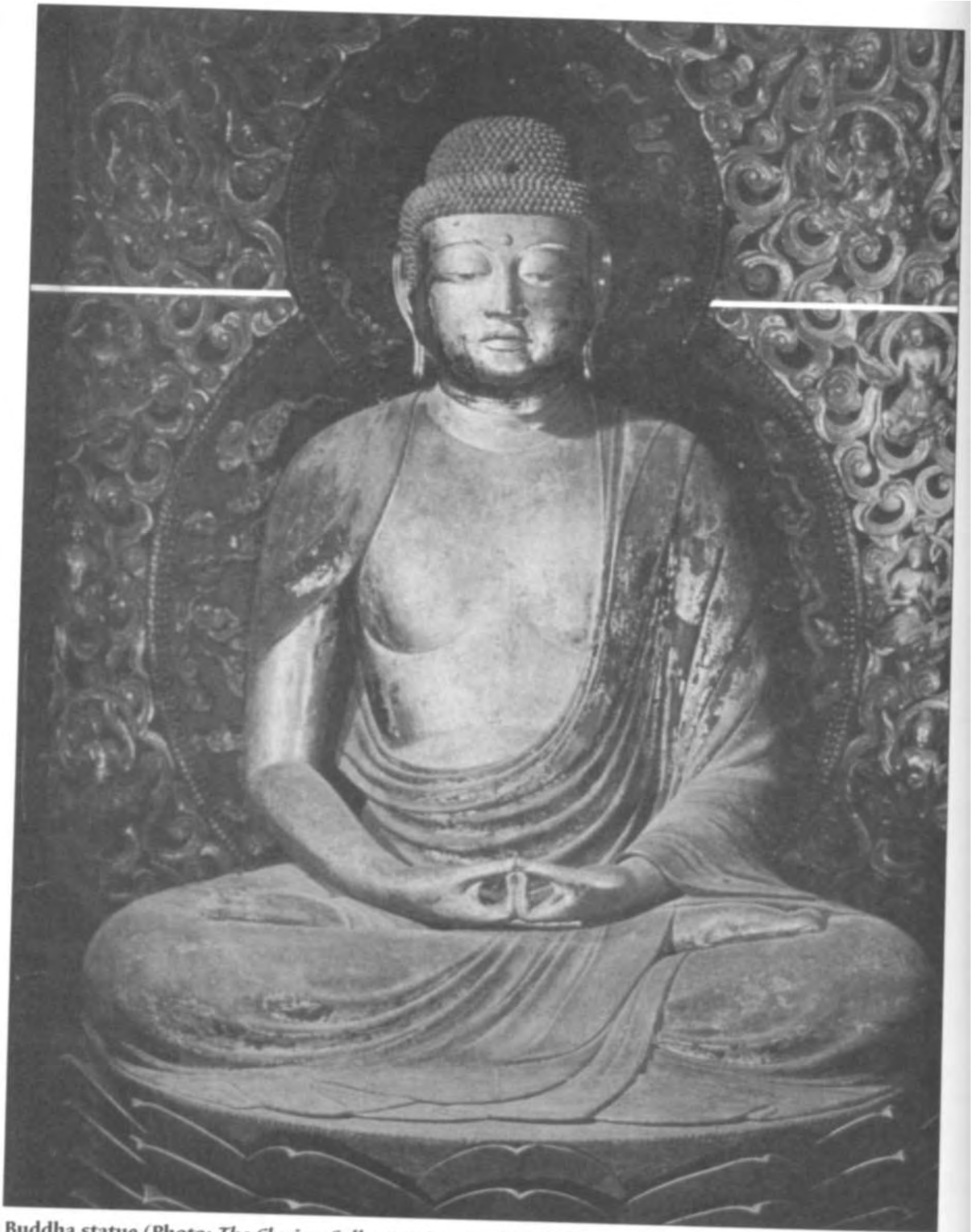

Buddha statue (Photo: *The Clarion Call* magazine, Spring 1988)

TWENTY-FIVE

Victory for the Devil—Fabulous Exploits of Sir Winston Churchill and Other Druid Priests and Illuminati Servants

A remarkable thing occurred with the hand so lifted, is that its shadow resembles the head and horns of the Goat of Baphomet..the symbol of black magic.

— *The Complete Book of Witchcraft*

Britain's legendary World War II Prime Minister, Sir Winston Churchill, made the "V" sign famous. It was standard for the cigar-smoking, paunchy politician; he flashed the "V" sign every chance he got, and news photographers captured hundreds of photographs of Churchill giving the sign. It was generally thought that in doing so, the pugnacious Churchill was signaling confidence in eventual victory over the Nazi foe across the channel. So, the sign of two fingers pointed upward in a "V'shape became universally accepted as a sign for victory.

Sign of the Horned God, Pan

But what the majority of people believe to be conventional wisdom is often wrong. Such is the case here, too, for this sign, in reality, is of ancient origins. It is, in fact, a sign of Satan, of malediction, of the horned god, Pan, and worse.

Paranoia magazine, an interesting publication which bills itself as "the conspiracy reader" had a picture some years back of Churchill displaying the "V." An astute reader knowledgeable of dark things wrote a letter to the editor in the next issue commenting on Churchill and his sign. Nigel A. Cornwall of Britain wrote, "The sign I believe has its origins as a symbol for a pagan horned god."[1]

Cornwall also suggested that when the sign is given with the *palm inside,* it is recognized as a horribly vulgar and offensive gesture—signifying penetration of both body orifices.

Done in the typical fashion, this sign literally means intercourse by the devil—to be violated sexually by the horned god. The thumb holding down the fingers creates the "vulva," while the two largest fingers pointed up are the horns of the god (Satan).

THE *Law of Opposites*

In her highly regarded encyclopedia of symbols entitled *Masonic and Occult Symbols Illustrated,* Dr. Cathy Burns explores the meaning of the "V" sign. She explains that the two fingers upward relate to the Masonic and Gnostic Law of Opposites, exactly as the case for the Masonic Lodge's black and white checkerboard floors. This is the doctrine of bringing order out of chaos, of reconciling the two opposites, evil and good, with Satan reigning over both heaven *and* hell.[2] The "V" sign is also a sign of the Horned God of witchcraft, often called Pan; or *Baphomet,* the androgynous (male and female) goat god (again illustrating the Law of Opposites).

The Face in the Shadow

The Complete Book of Witchcraft[3] explains further the occult meaning. When the sign is given to produce a shadow behind, a diabolical image appears that seems to be the face of the devil. Witches and Magicians—and some Catholic Popes—used this image to effect emotional responses:

> There was a deeply seated belief in the fascination or enchantment of shadows; so that the witch, or magician, could use them to either produce sickness and death or to inspire love...The shadow of the (Satanic) priest's fingers raised in blessing was considered to have evil significance...
>
> A remarkable thing occurred with the hand so lifted, is that its shadow resembles the head and horns of the Goat of Baphomet...the symbol of black magic.
>
> The use of the 'shadow of blessing' was regarded as the legitimate prerogative of the Pope, and was most terribly exercised during the Dark Ages and at the time of the Inquisition.[4]

Interestingly, other authoritative sources say that the "V" sign (the sign of the horny goat, or horned god) is practiced even today in satanic covens as a symbol of Satanic benediction. In times past, it was just the opposite, being a sign of evil, of malediction, but today the twisted minds of satanic worshippers view evil as something good and desirable. What is malediction to the holy and righteous, to the Satanist is a wonderful thing!

A Symbol of Wrath and Destruction

The "V" sign as displayed by the hand is also used by Illuminists in the form of the letter V with two straight lines angled to meet at a point facing downward. It becomes a V device, or chevron, and has been adopted for the uniforms of military troops of some countries. Resembling a downward pointing triangle with the top line open or omitted symbolizes fiery destruction and wrath on the object at which it is pointed.

About 12 years ago, a few Satan worshippers arrived secretly in the darkness at my ministry building and evidently carried out a ritual. For many months we had received anonymous telephone threats, so were not surprised. On the concrete porch near our front door, the vandals had scratched a "V" pointing to the entrance, and there were signs of candle use and the burning of objects. Here we see the fantastic beliefs by occultists that their rituals create reality. However, in vainly attempting to harm a true Christian ministry, I am persuaded that the "magic" backfired. When God is your protector, those who cast Satan's spells end up in deep, deep, trouble.

Triple 6 or 666

As we have previously seen, the Jewish cabala is at the root of most wicked systems of magic. The cabala (or Kabbalah) is the fount of doctrine for Freemasonry and for many other secret societies. We can expect, therefore, that the "V" sign is also emphasized by the rabbinical priests of cabalism. And in fact, we find that the rabbis teach that the meaning of the Hebrew letter for V (Vau) is "Nail," and nail is a secret title for Satan. (Its corrupt meaning comes from the nails driven into the hands of Jesus crucified.) Vau, or V, is the *sixth* letter in the Hebrew alphabet, and, of course, the Book of Revelation reveals that the name of the beast, or Antichrist, is coded with the number of triple 6, or 666.

Churchill A Druid Priest

Where did Winston Churchill learn of the satanic powers of the "V" sign? Few people are aware that Churchill was a Freemason. Stephen Knight wrote an explosive expose, *The Brotherhood,* that rocked the British Isles when it was published some 15 years ago.[5] In it, he unmasked many British nobles, police, judges, and politicians who were Masons. Among them: Winston Churchill, who, Knight documented, was initiated in 1903 at Lodge No. 3000 of the United Lodge of Great Britain.

However, even fewer people are aware that Churchill was not only a Mason but a witch druid! Dr. Stanley Monteith, occult and secret society researcher and host of *Radio Liberty* out of California, states: "Churchill was an adept of the occult, having been inducted into the Druids in 1908, and having pledged the occult oaths required of those who have entered into the world of Freemasonry."[6]

Monteith's sobering statements are backed up by Miranda J. Green's *The World of the Druids* and by John Daniel's *Scarlet and the Beast,* two excellent resource books.[7]

Rites of the Druid Witchcraft Sea

The rites and ceremonies of the Druid witchcraft sect—which has chapters both in Great Britain and in the United States—are remarkably similar to those of Freemasonry. They hearken back to the Ancient Mystery Religions.

The Burning Man in the Wicker Cage

Some scholars are convinced that human sacrifice was practiced by the Druids. Julius Caesar, Roman General who conquered Britain for Imperial Rome, wrote of how brutal and furiously savage were the people under the influence of the Druid priesthood. He also described the horror of the rite in which the Druid priests and people would periodically choose a victim to be confined inside a huge wicker effigy. The wicker was set ablaze and the human victim consumed by the flames as the people celebrated and paraded in a circle carrying candles.

Even today, at the ruins of Stonehenge in England, modern-day Druids meet on festival occasions, wearing the appropriate white garb and carrying out rites and worship of the ancient gods.

Meanwhile, in Nevada each year, hundreds of thousands attend the incredible *"Burning Man"* festival at which the sacrificial ritual of the burning wicker man is recreated.[8]

Archbishop of England Also A Druid

Amazingly, the British press recently carried news reports, including pictures, of the Druid initiation of a man, Rowan Williams, who just happens to be Archbishop of Canterbury, head of the Church of England. Williams told reporters that he saw no incompatibility in his duties as a pagan Druid priest and those he has assumed as Archbishop of the—presumably Christian—Anglican Church of England.

This is yet more evidence of how apostate and corrupt the global "Christian" establishment is today. While it is true that the true Christian Church, though tiny in numbers, lives on and is undefeated, the majority of modern-day pastors, ministers, and churchmen have departed from the Faith and have no concept at all of genuine Christian doctrine. The spectacle of the top, so-called "Christian" clergyman of the entire British Commonwealth, Archbishop Williams, being initiated as a wizard in the Druid witchcraft sect and publicly boasting of it is proof positive that the Devil and his Illuminati have become the unacknowledged "Masters" who run the Christian establishment behind-the-scenes. The big name clergy and evangelists today merely follow the script laid down for them by their elite controllers.

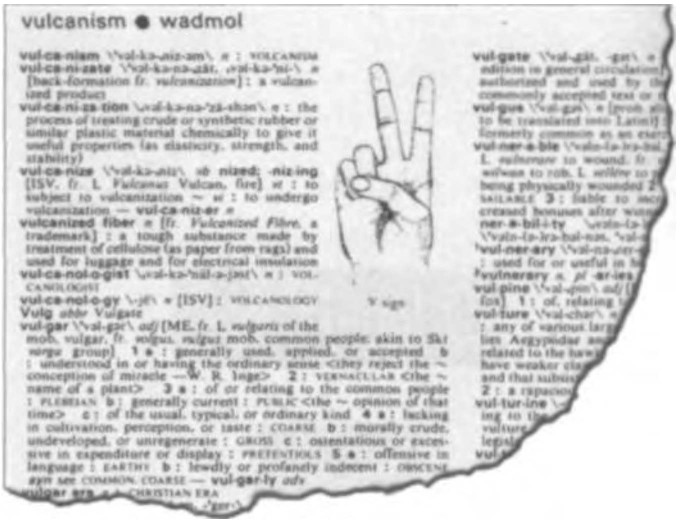

vulcanism ● wadmol

V sign

Page from *Webster's* dictionary where V sign is pictured but never defined or explained! Such words as "vulcanism," "vulcanize," and "vulgar" are defined, however, in close proximity. Vulcan is the ancient god of fire and destruction.

Sir Winston Churchill, a crypto Jew, a Mason, a Druid witch, and war-time Prime Minister of Great Britain, flashes his famous "V" sign. Long used to represent a number of occultic tasks, including Divine Man, sexual license, and fire, Churchill's frequent use spurred the use of the device by an uninformed populace as a sign of victory.

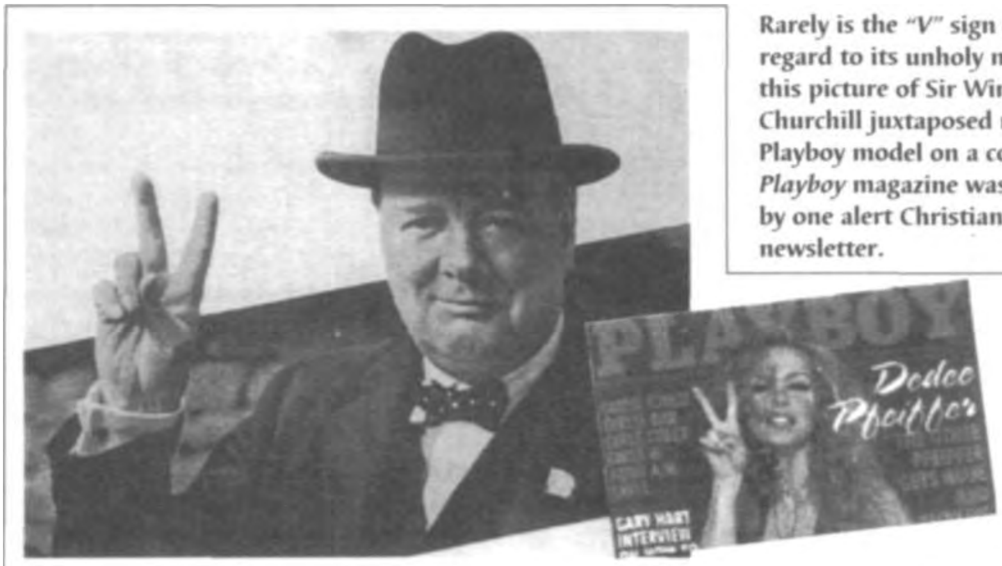

Rarely is the "V" sign discussed in regard to its unholy meaning. But this picture of Sir Winston Churchill juxtaposed next to the Playboy model on a copy of *Playboy* magazine was published by one alert Christian in his newsletter.

The Hebrew language has no actual numbers. Numbers are represented by letters. The Hebrew "V" or "VAU" represents the number 6. The number 6 represents unrest or evil. Multiplied as in 666 symbolises multiplied evil. Winston Churchill, devoted to the Cabbalists (Jewish occult teaching) introduced the Cabbalist 6 to the Goyim world as the "V" for "Victory" sign. The naïve Goyim, have taken over this evil symbol, not realising that by showing it, they are promoting the Cabbalistic aim to subjugate the world. Churchill's sign meant, not only that he was under secret Jewish occult control, but that he was furthering their goal to take over the world.

Young Winston Churchill arrives for his Druid initiation ceremony. Was Churchill taught the true, occult meaning of the fiery and destructive "V" hand sign that he later made so famous it became used around the world? (Photo: from the book, *The Druids*, by Peter Berresford Ellis)

The present Archbishop of Canterbury, formal head of the Church of England (Anglican) is also a senior druid priest. Dr. Rowan Williams received the dubious honor in west Wales, at an open air celebration. According to news reports, Williams bowed down before the Arch Druid, his pagan superior, amidst mistletoe and oak leave branches. Williams wore a white headdress for the occasion and joined his hands in the druid style. During the ritual, attendants sheathed and unsheathed a splendid silver sword, exactly 6 feet, 6 inches in length, and six inches across the metal that fits snug onto the scabbard, thus 666.

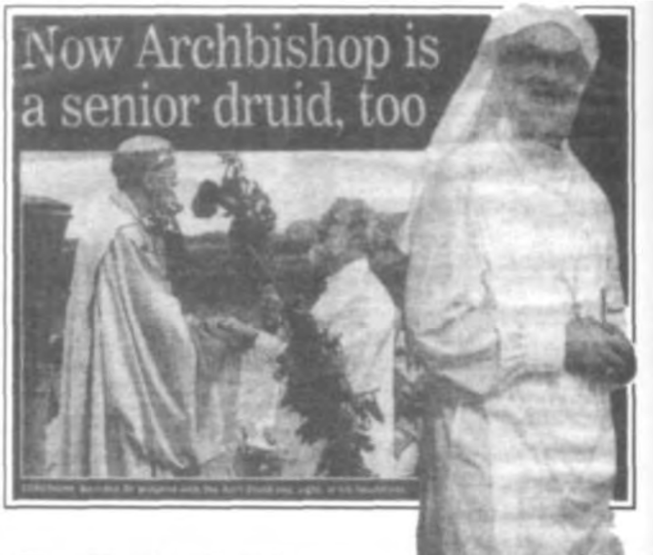

Now Archbishop is a senior druid, too

Dr. Rowan Williams, Archbishop of Canterbury, head of the Church of England, and Senior Druid Priest share a secret handshake at a church ceremony.

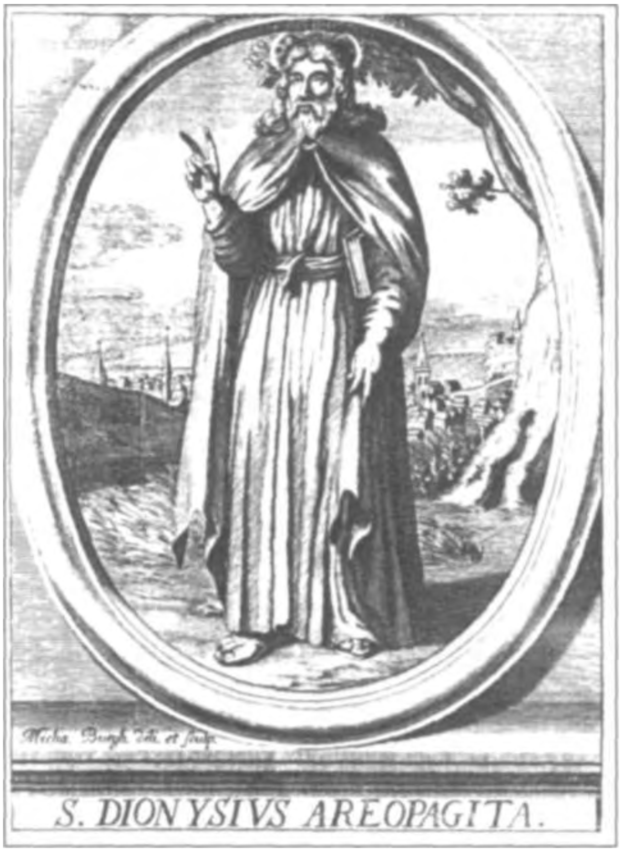
S. DIONYSIVS AREOPAGITA.

In this ancient engraving, Dionysius the Areopagite, an Athenian "convert" to Christianity, gives the double "V" sign-"as above, so below" with left hand toward hell. Dionysius was a mystical Christian, a gnostic heretic who is thought to have been the author of an occultic treatise entitled *The Mystical Divinity*. (From the book, *Mystics and Mysteries of Alexandria*, by Manly P. Hall, 33°)

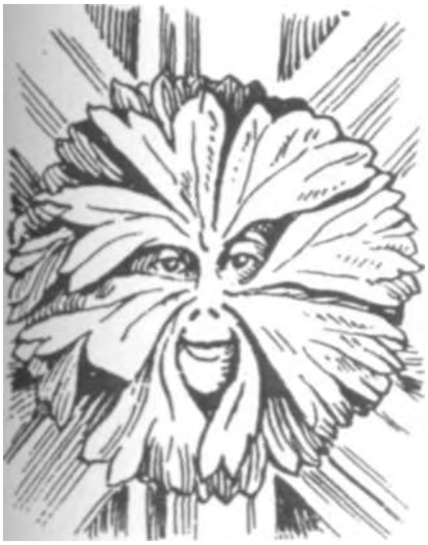

The Green Man, sign of the druids, is found carved on wood and in concrete in the architectural details of buildings, altars, and structures throughout the British isles. An insightful movie, *The Green Man*, starring Peter Finch, touched on the connection of the Green Man, sexual perversity, and the Devil's demon powers.

This brass plate is decorated with a circle and, inside, the universal sign of the Masonic Lodge, which is the square and compass. Within the combined symbol of square and compass is the "G," representing "God," which is, in masonry, also the generative process (sexual). In this, advanced Masonic view, we have a man on top of a woman in the act of coitus, or sexual relations. Both the compass and the square are "V" in configuration, and when this brass plate is turned upside down, we find the same, that one symbol, V-shaped, still surmounts the other "V" symbol.

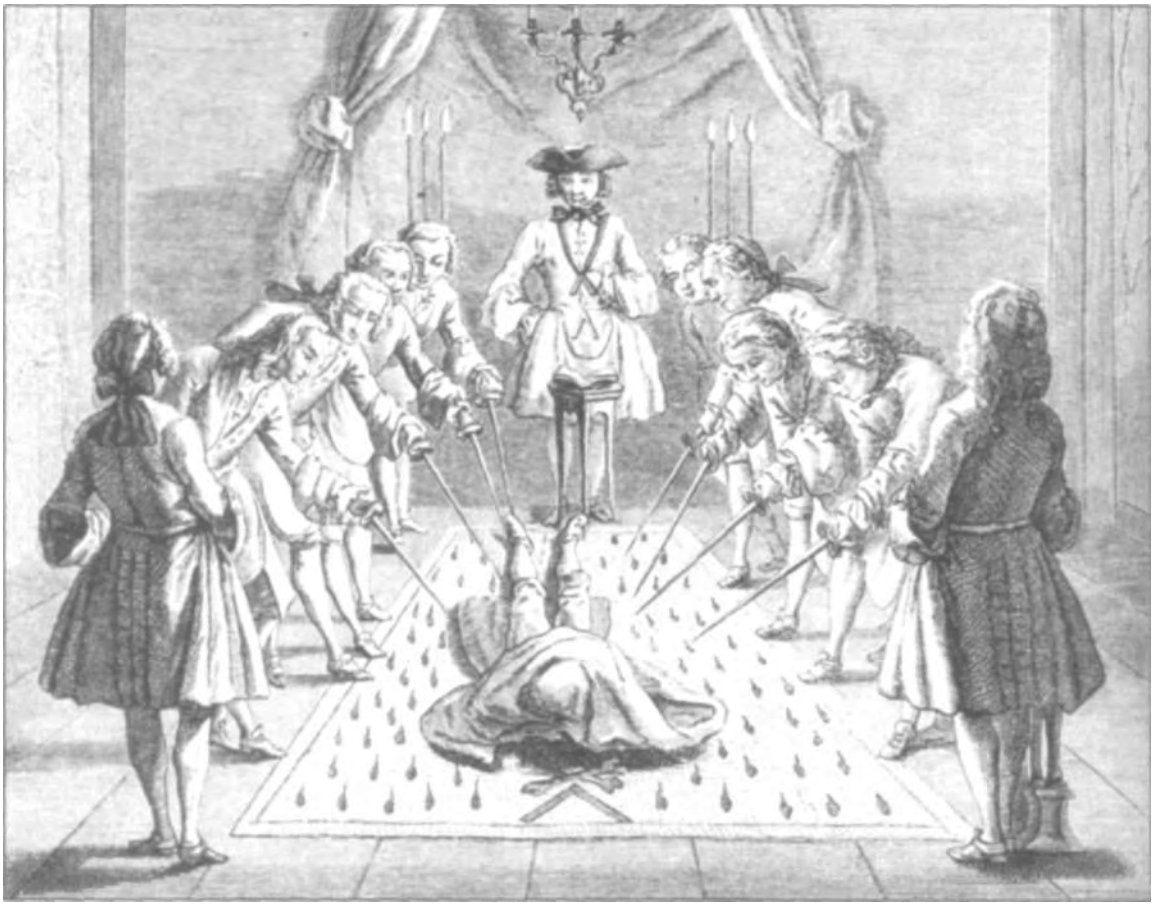

This ancient black and white drawing depicts an initiate undergoing trials in order to advance in the Order. Pointing to his head, on the floor, is the *square,* shaped as a 90 degree "V."

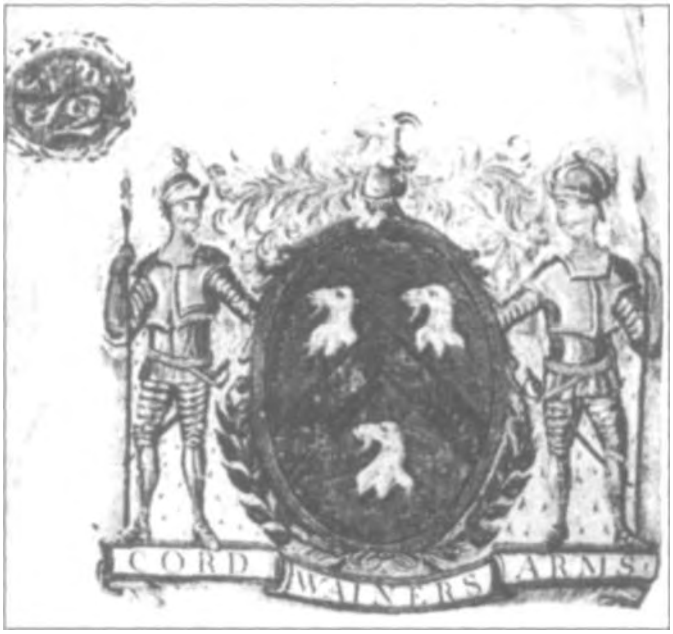

When General George Washington visited Boston in 1789, this banner was carried by a group during a procession in honor of his visit. The "V" is the focal point of the emblem, but the three goat heads contained within the egg-shaped device and the bearded goat head atop it are also significant in occult teaching.

SS Gestapo Chief Heinrich Himmler with the Fuhrer, Hitler. On the arm of Himmler's jacket is the V.

Two Nazi guards in the Congress Hall at Nuremberg. On their helmets and collar we find the SS runes while on the coat sleeves is the V. (Photo: from *New Zealand Herald*, June 5, 2002).

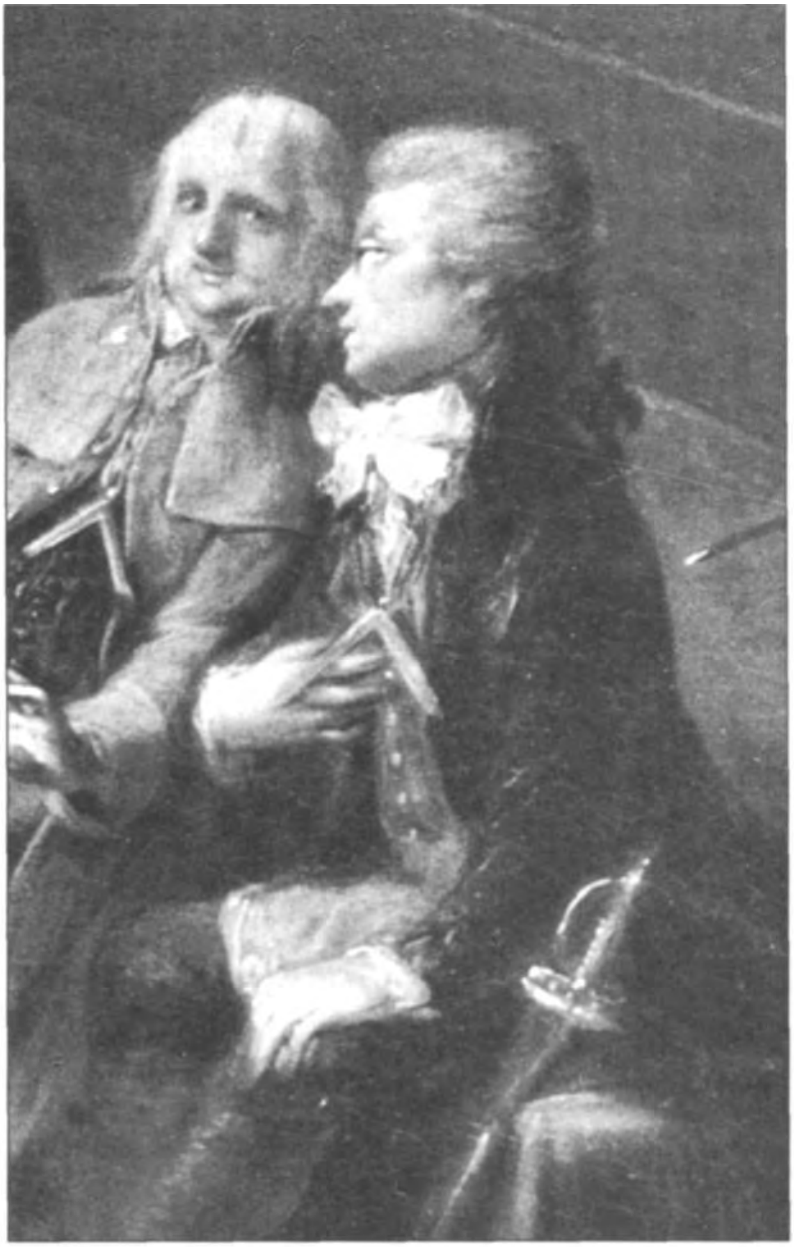

Detail of an anonymous oil painting depicting the famous Viennese composer, Wolfgang Amadeus Mozart at a meeting of his Vienna Masonic lodge. Mozart is at right. Notice the "V" device worn around the men's necks, symbolic of the square of the Masonic Order.

Albert Pike, the much honored homosexual Lucifer-worshipper who served after the Civil War as Sovereign Grand Commander of Scottish Rite Masonry, rewrote and introduced a new version of the Order's 33 rituals. Here, Pike wears the V-shaped sash of the Sovereign Grand Commander. Hanging around his neck is a jewel of the double-headed eagle.

The occultist who drew the design at right well understood the esoteric meaning behind the symbols. First, we see the *"V"* sign which, in shadow, becomes the gnarled and ugly, dark image of Satan. What appears at first to be good *(Benediction),* when seen from the hidden perspective of the unseen becomes *Malediction.* The diamond and circle at top indicate the same principle, that black equals, or shadows, white, and white mirrors black. This is the Hegelian principle of the synthesis of opposites (Pictured in the book, *Pictorial History of Magic and the Supernatural,* by Maurice Besey)

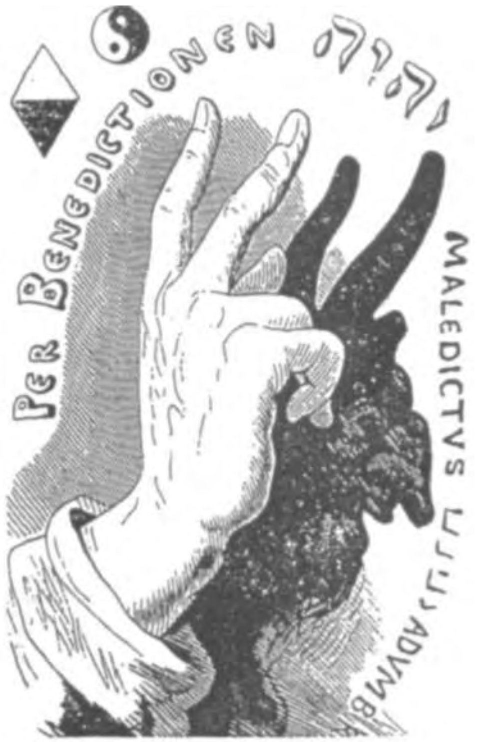

631

631. The gesture of benediction is changed into malediction when one looks at the 'double' or shadow. This is the opposition of black and white which is here demonstrated. The artist responsible for this drawing also reveals the esoteric connection of the so-called V, or "victory" sign, with the yin/yang.

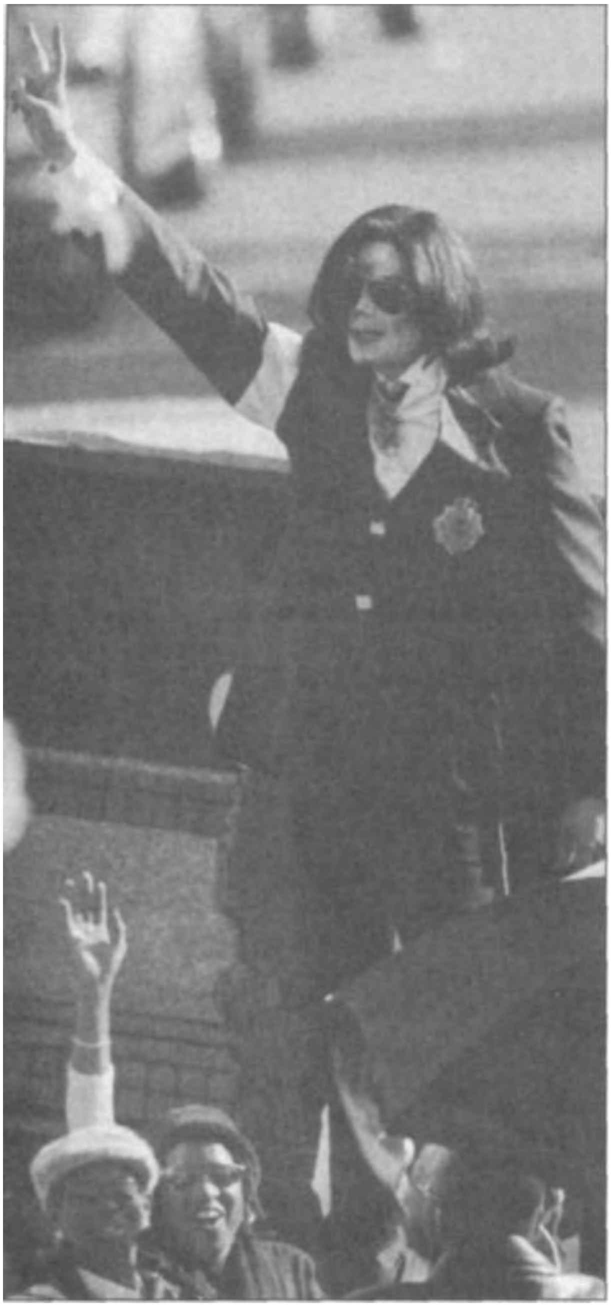

Michael Jackson, black entertainer accused of child molestation, presents the "V" to the crowd as he leaves the courtroom. *(USA Today, April 10, 2005, p. 1A)*

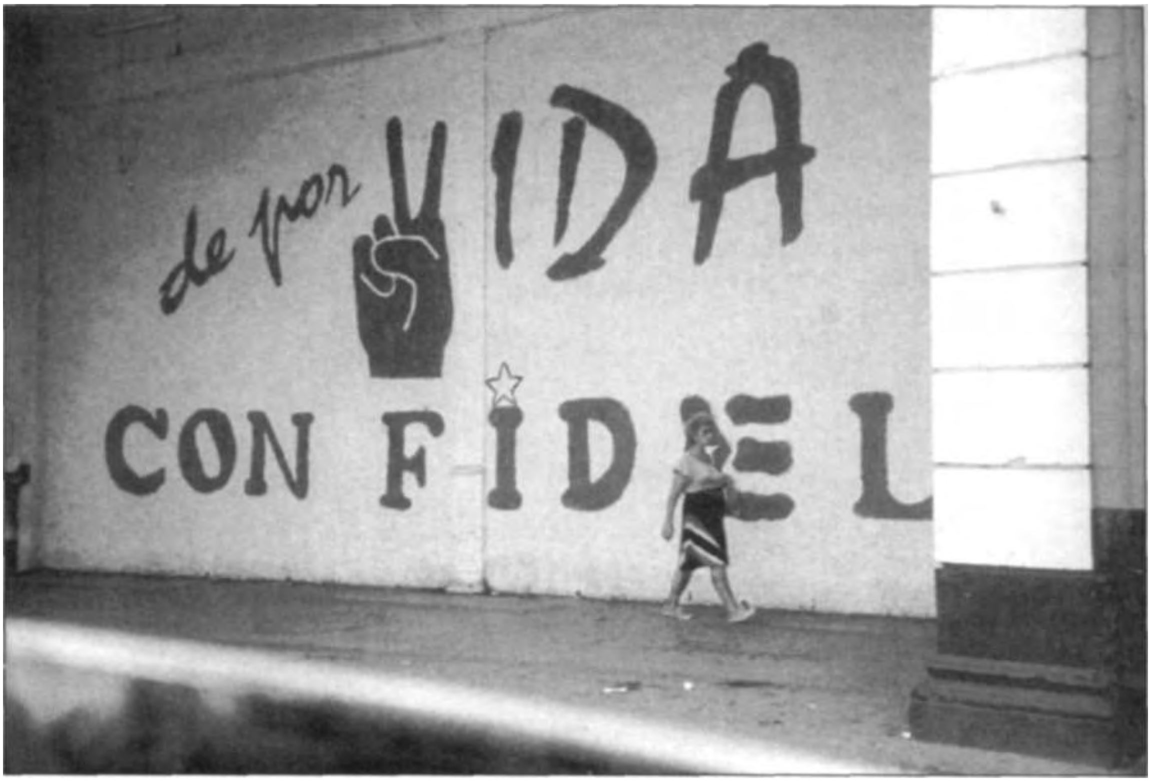
de por VIDA
CON FIDEL

This mural on a wall in Havana reads, "For Life with Fidel." (Photo: *The Catholic World Report,* January 1997, p. 24)

Children dressed as peasant revolutionaries greet Mexico's President Vicente Fox in celebration of the Mexican Revolution (Photo: Associated Press, *Austin American-Statesman,* November 21, 2004)

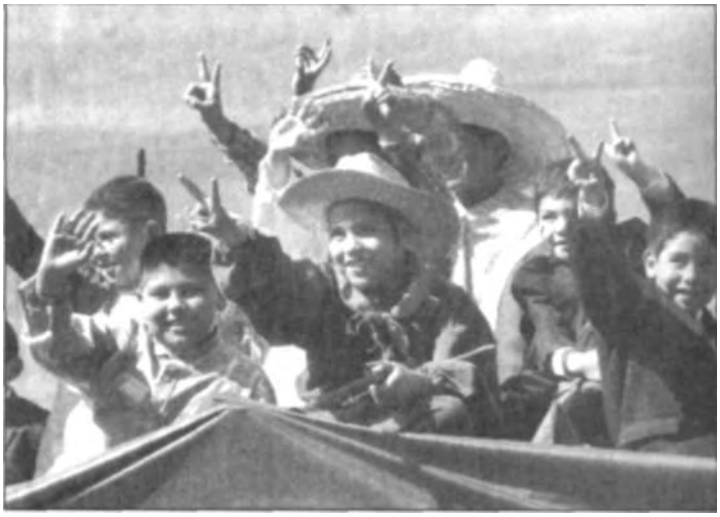

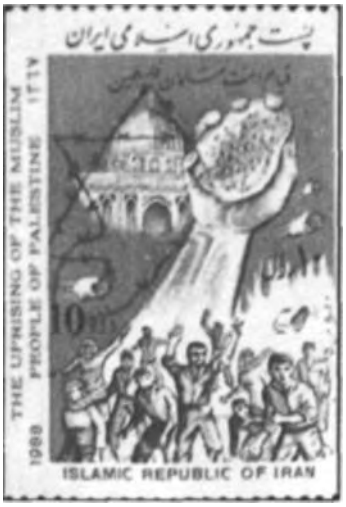
THE UPRISING OF THE MUSLIM PEOPLE OF PALESTINE
1988
10
ISLAMIC REPUBLIC OF IRAN

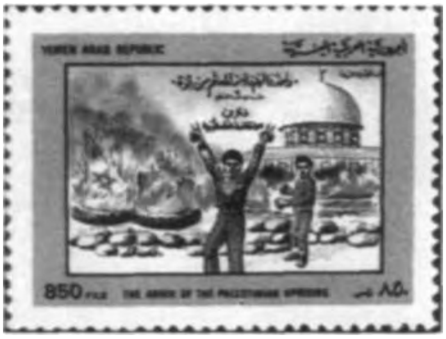
YEMEN ARAB REPUBLIC
850

Official stamps from around the Arab world supported the Palestine's Intifada uprising in the late 1980s. In many, the guerilla fighters are pictured giving the "V" sign. (Photo: *News From Israel,* October 1993, p. 11)

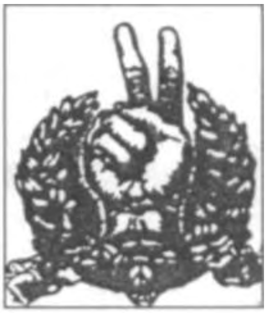

Yasser Arafat, leader of the Palestinian Liberation Organization, popularized the ancient "V" sign among Arab demonstrators and guerilla fighters. At right is the symbol worn on arm bands of some Palestinian fighters.

Stewart Meacham, head of a pro-Communist group called the New Mobilization Committee, is pictured in the Communist *Guardian* newspaper with this "V" sign on a poster behind him.

New Age guru Ira Einhorn, a weird nut barely literate, became a pop hero in the '70s among the New Age spiritual elite. Einhorn's activism was funded by some of the nation's largest corporations being directed to aid the *"Age of Aquarius"* transformation of America. In this photo we find Ira Einhorn in his glory in 1970, rendering the V sign as master of ceremonies at the first, huge Earth Day. At right is the headline in the *Philadelphia Daily News* of Einhorn's arrest. He was tried and convicted of murdering his live-in lover, strangling and stabbing her and stashing her lifeless body in a trunk. Fleeing justice, Einhorn hid out in Europe for years, thanks to covert help from a Rothschild family member. He's now in prison serving a life sentence. (Photos: from book, *The Unicorn's Secret*, by Steven Levy, Prentice Hall Press, 1988)

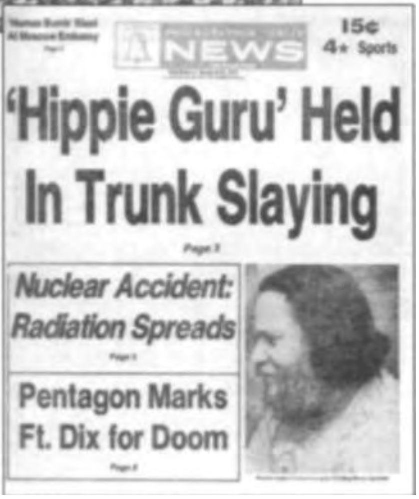

NEWS

15¢
4+ Sports

'Hippie Guru' Held
In Trunk Slaying

Nuclear Accident:
Radiation Spreads

Pentagon Marks
Ft. Dix for Doom

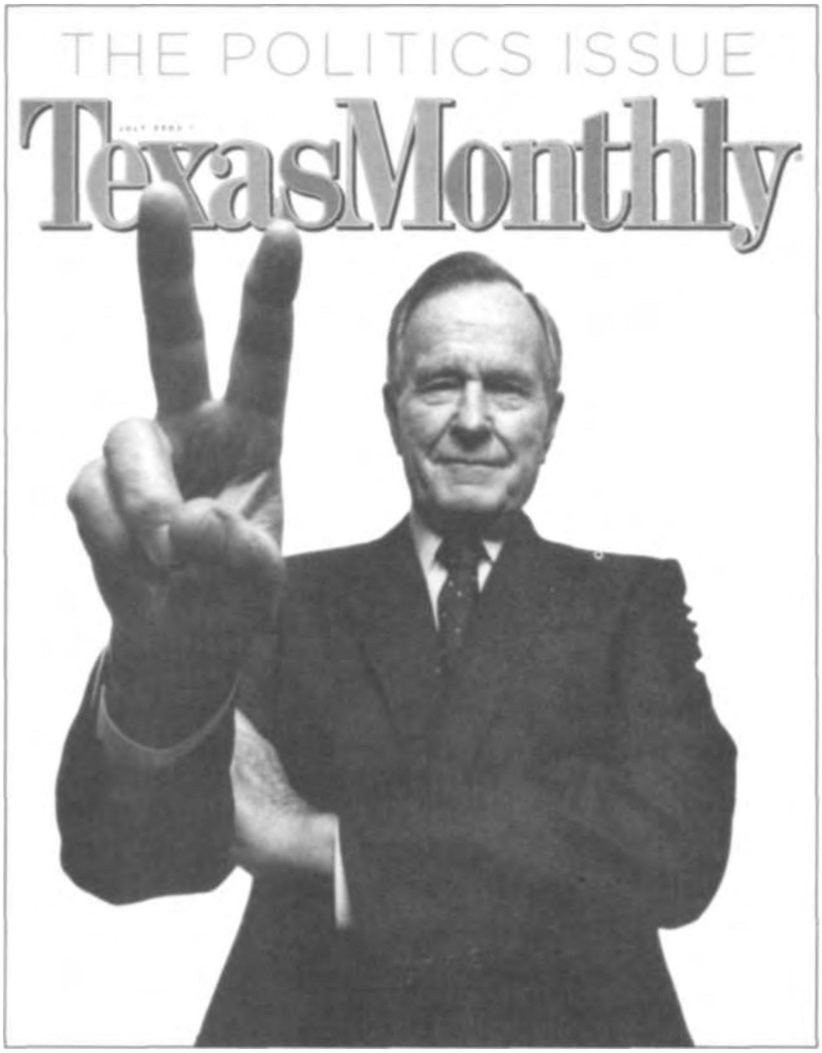

Former President George Herbert Walker Bush lets insiders know of the goal and eventual total victory of the Zionist Illuminati by blatantly displaying the cabalistic V sign. The position of Bush's left arm is further indication of the cabalistic nature of the sign. Inside the pages of the magazine there was not one shred of explanation as to why the Senior Bush was pictured on the cover giving this sign, nor was it an election year. Moreover, the former President was in retirement, proving the elite adage, "once a servant of the Illuminati, always a servant." (Until death, that is.)

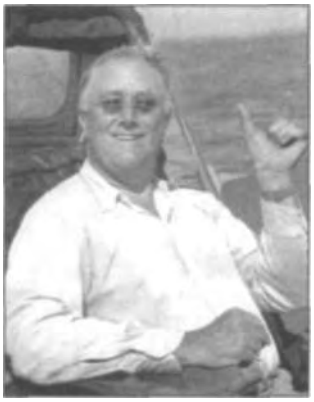

President Franklin D. Roosevelt was both a 32nd degree Mason and a cabalist, crypto Jew. As his family tree clearly demonstrates, Roosevelt's ancestors came from the Netherlands and were of Jewish blood lineage. Here, fishing in the Gulf of Mexico off the Texas coast in 1937, FDR signals the V of cabalistic occultism, using, however, his thumb.

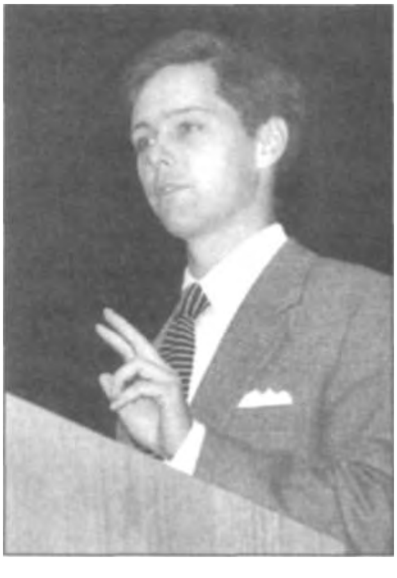

Ralph Reed, the young man who came from nowhere to head the Masonic Knights of Malta/Illuminati project called the *"Christian Coalition. "Today,* no longer with the Christian Coalition, Reed is a high-paid Republican lobbyist in Washington, D.C., and a member of the exclusive Bilderberger Group.

Broadway found a bit of success with its vulgar *The Vagina Monologues* production. Soon, the raunchy and stupid feminist series was on HBO IV. Its simple plot: women ranting on and on about their private parts, constantly using what the show's producers called the *"V word."* In this group picture, we see a number of the actresses who participated in various episodes of *The Vagina Monologues.* Look close at the two at top left, flashing the "V" sign. One of the two starred in the slutty HBO series, *Sex and the City.* Incidentally, New York Mayor Rudy Giuliani's wife was a participant in *The Vagina Monologues.*

Actress Jane Fonda, an Indian actress, and Eve Ensler, producer of *The Vagina Monologues.*

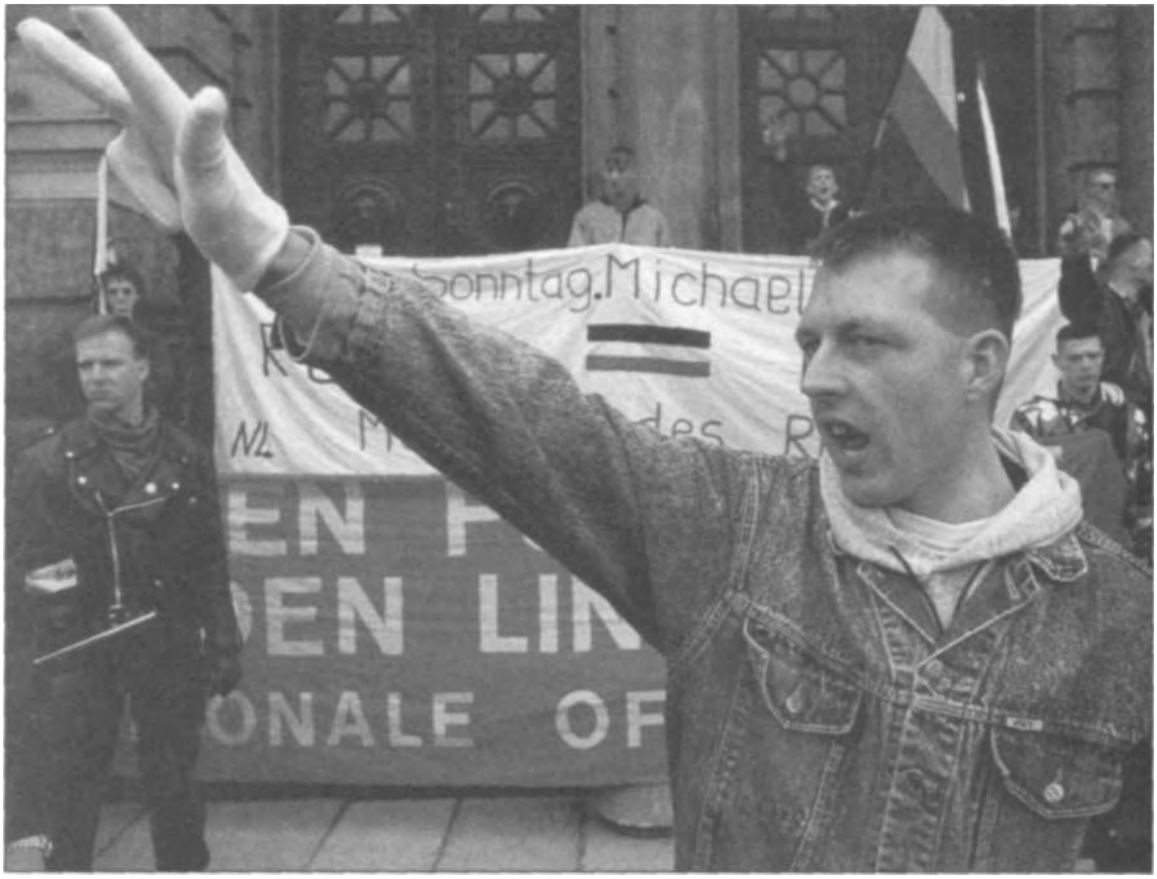
Sonntag.Michael
EN F
DEN LIN
ONALE OF

Neo-Nazi protester in Germany, January 1993. Most of the people who participate in such demonstrations are trained and paid by Illuminati organizations and government intelligence agencies to inspire the public to react. This, in turn, enables the government to curtail citizen liberties and freedoms under the guise of providing "public safety and security."

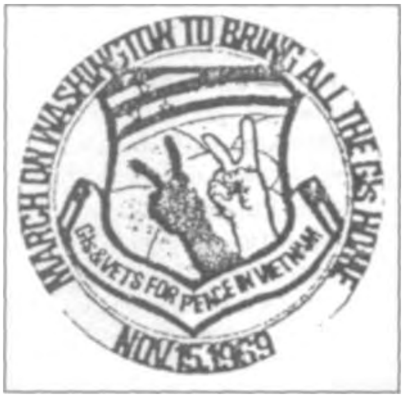
MARCH ON WASHINGTON TO BRING ALL THE GIs HOME
GIs & VETS FOR PEACE IN VIETNAM
NOV. 15. 1969

The group calling itself "GIs and Vets For Peace" adopted this logo, which utilizes the "V" sign in its opposites mirrored theme of the occult. (Pictured in the Communist newspaper, *The Daily World,* October 18, 1969).

Clinton Administration political advisor and speechwriter Sidney Blumenthal flashes the "V" sign as he heads to court after being subpoenaed.

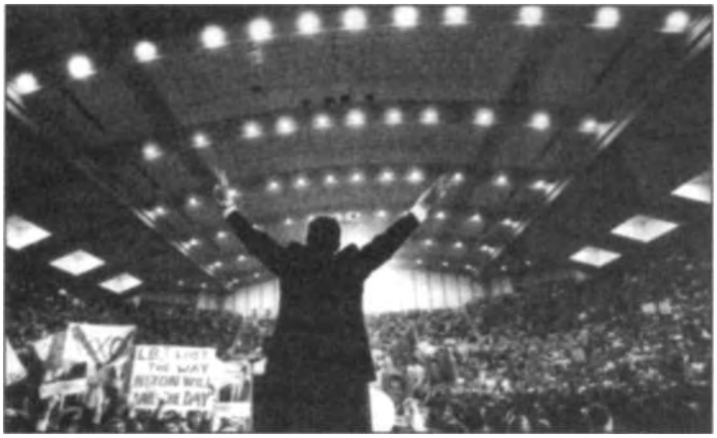

Presidential candidate Richard Nixon jubilantly demonstrates the double "V."

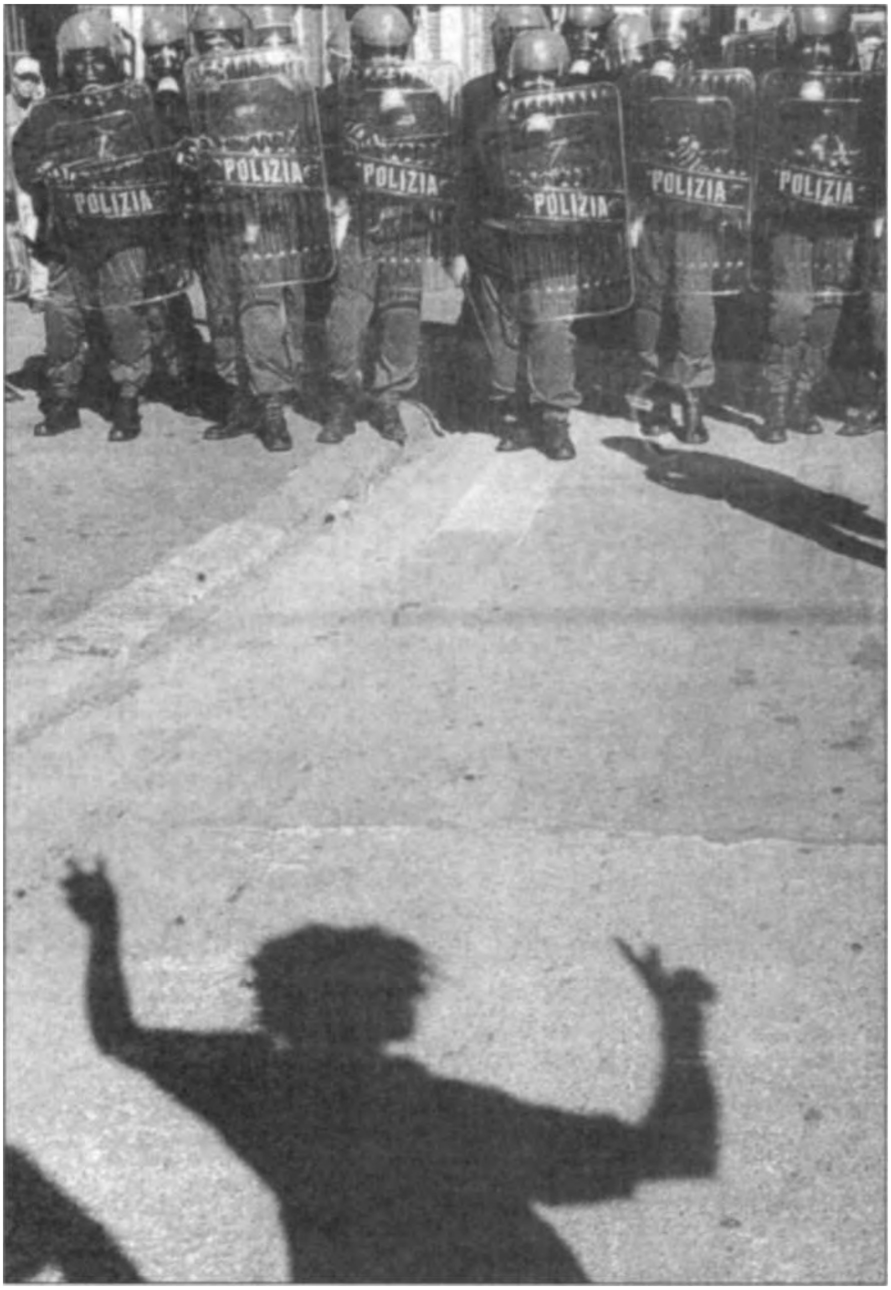
POLIZIA
POLIZIA
POLIZIA
POLIZIA
POLIZIA
POLIZIA

An activist protesting at an economic Group of Eight summit in Genoa, Italy in 2001 casts an interesting shadow in this photo published in the *The Austin American-Statesman.* (July *22,* 2001, p. A14)

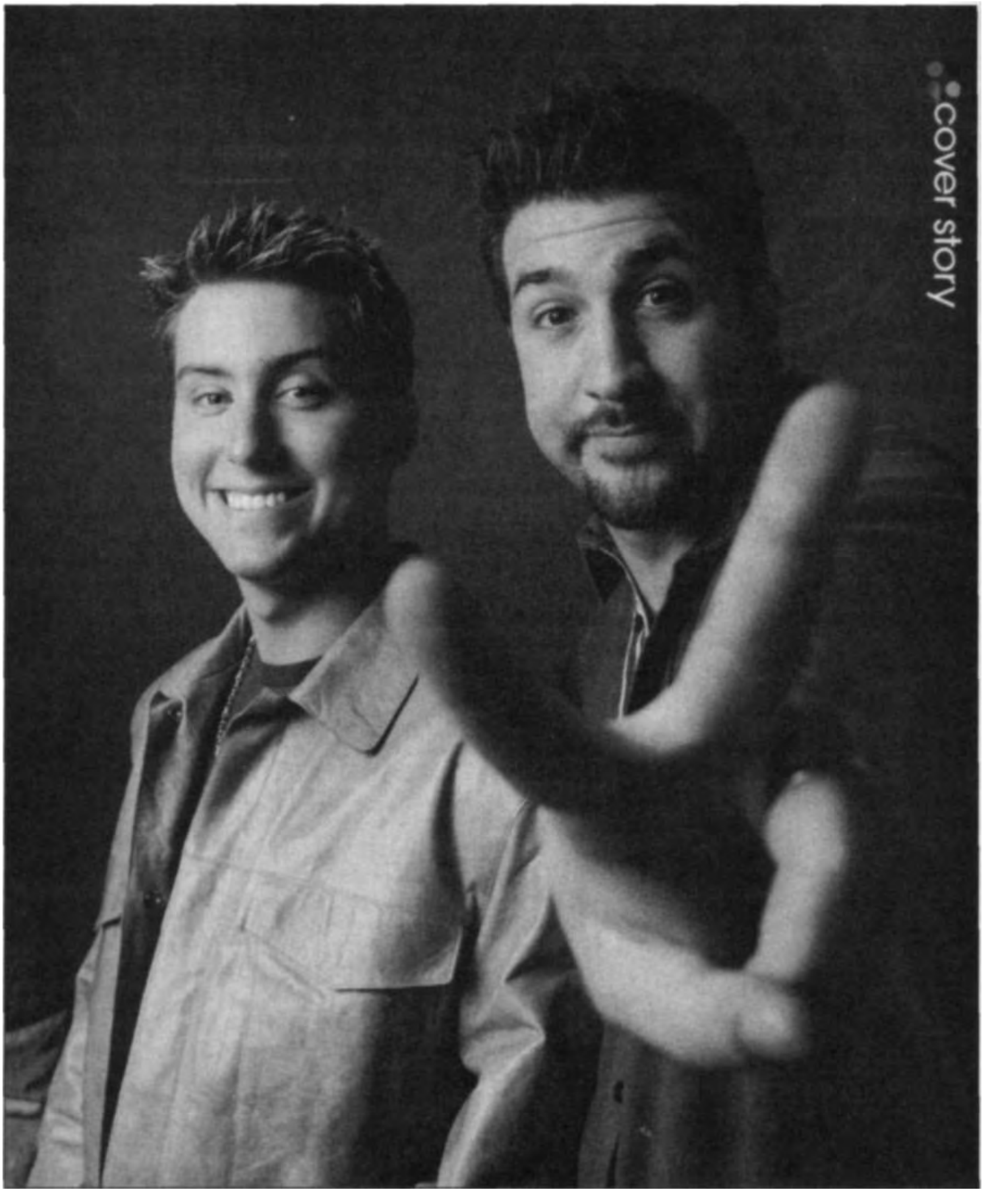
cover story

Joey Fatone of the popular music group, *NSYNC*, displays the "V" sign.

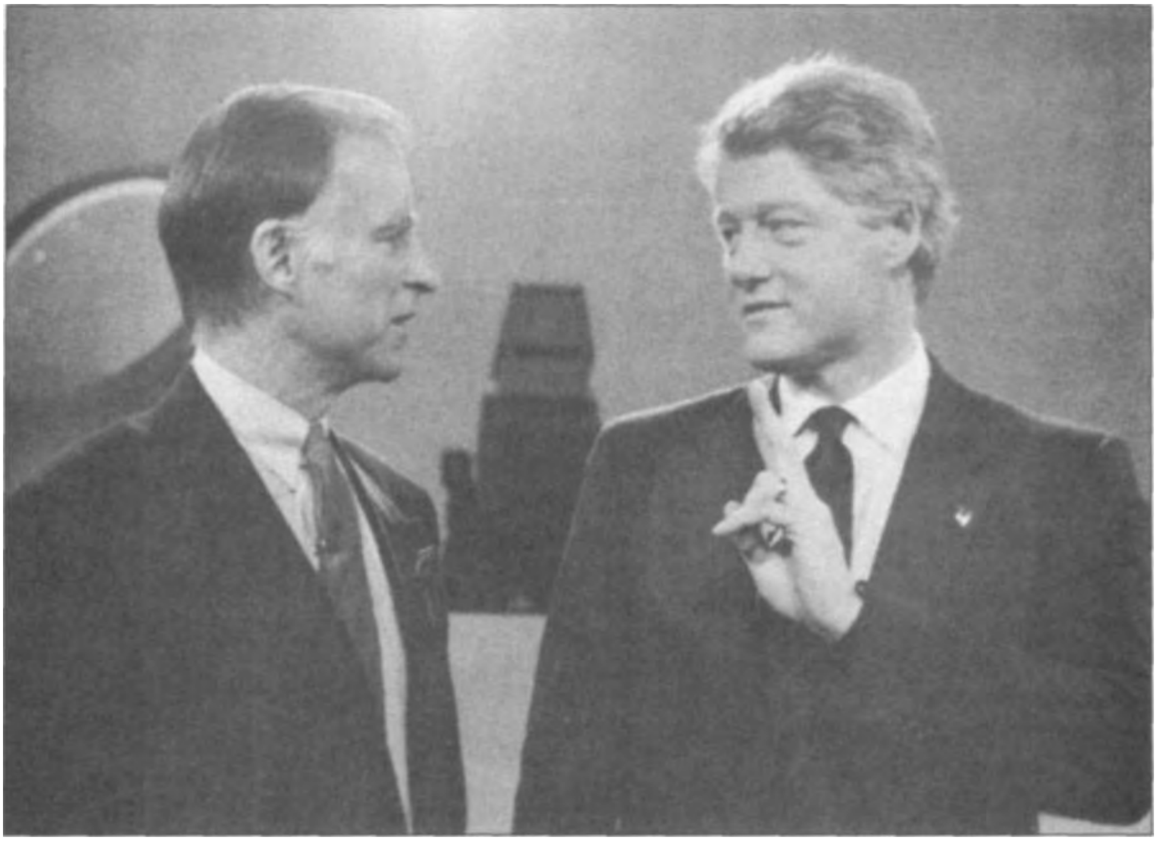

President Bill Clinton flashes a mysterious hand sign to former California Governor Jerry Brown. Both Clinton and Brown were trained by the Jesuits.

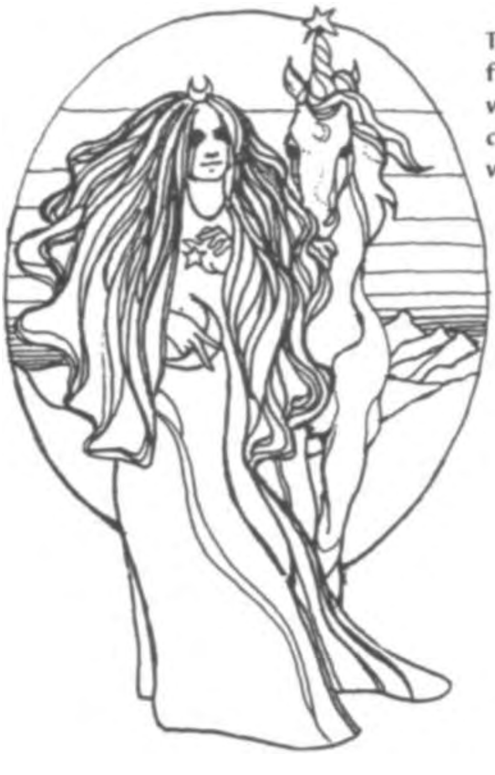

The witchcraft goddess wears horns on her head, a five-pointed star on her breast, and is giving the witchcraft "V" downward sigil in her right hand, clutching the crescent moon, sign of Diana, witchcraft goddess.

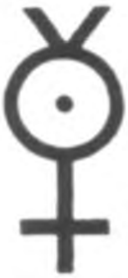

Astrological symbol of the Sun Goddess, from *The Woman's Encyclopedia of Myths and Secrets*, edited by Barbara G. Walker (Harper & Row Publishers, San Francisco, 1983). Observe the V on top of the solar circle with a point inside. Thus, goddess and god intertwine and become One, in unity, yin/yang. The Sun Goddess was worshipped universally in ancient cultures. The Hindu Great Mother was Aditi. Tantric Buddhism honored Mari, and the Japanese revere the goddess Amaterasu to this day.

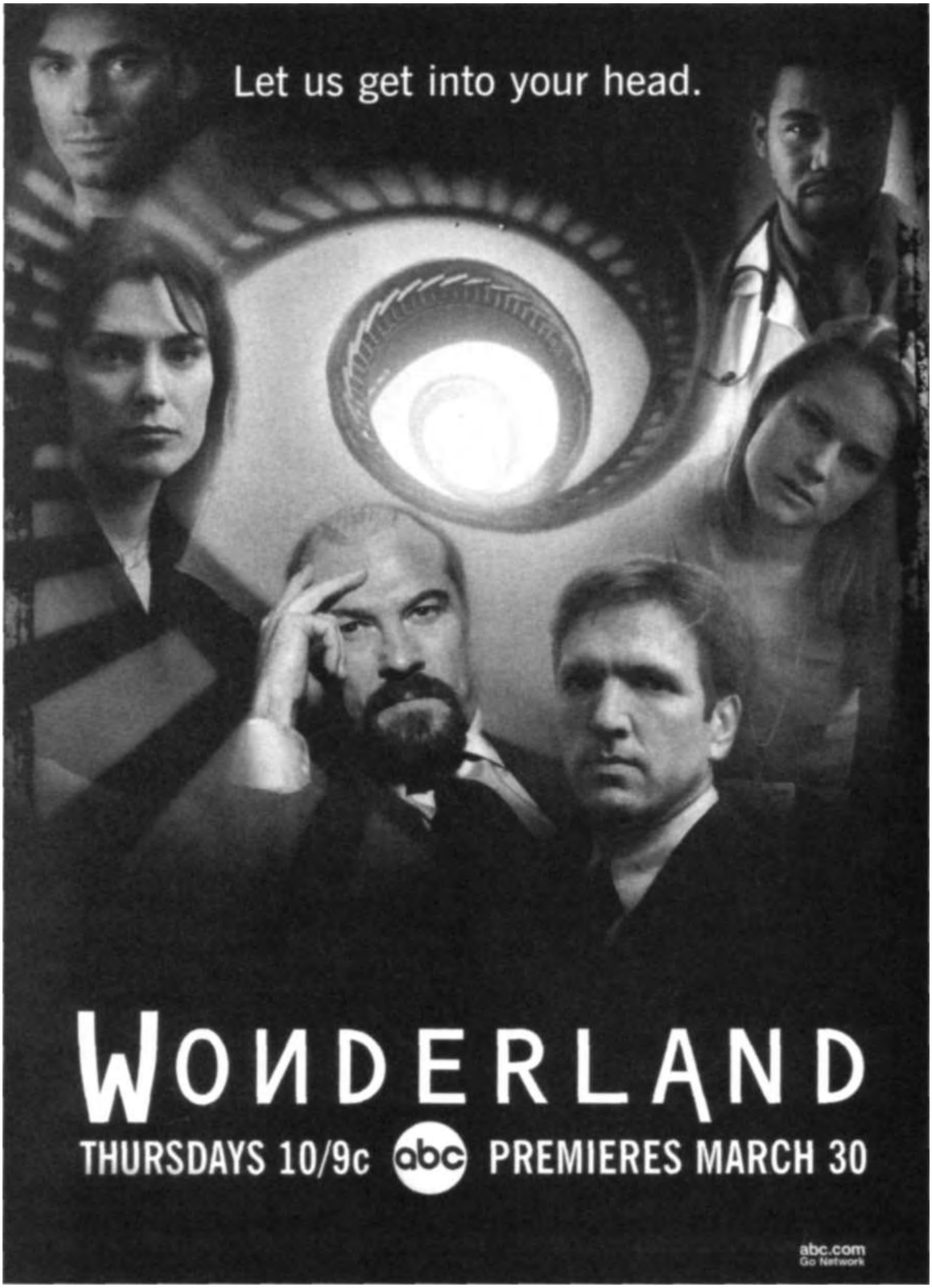
Let us get into your head.
WONDERLAND
THURSDAYS 10/9c
abc
PREMIERES MARCH 30
abc.com
Go Network

"Let us get into your head," says this ad for an ABC-TV series called *Wonderland.* Interestingly, the show's producers chose the V sign to make their point. In this instance, the man is giving the Dueguard sign relating to the penalties of divulging the secrets of the Mark Master degree of Freemasonry.

TWENTY-SIX

"Every Man and Woman is a Star"

But ye *have borne the tabernacle of your Moloch and Chiun your images, the star of your god, which ye made to yourselves.*

— Amos 5:26

Every man and woman is a star.

— Aleister Crowley
The Book of the Law

Few who are knowledgeable dispute the fact that for satanists, occultists and other Illuminists, the symbol of the *star* has vast significance. Whether five-pointed in shape, six-pointed, or in some other configuration, the star is a premier symbol of the Devil.

Illuminists and witches claim that the pentagram, a five-pointed star with one point upward (ascendant) is useful for "White Magic" rituals and spells. The *inverted pentagram* (five-pointed star) is widely used by hard-core Satan worshippers. When the two points are aimed upward (ascendant), it is said to indicate "Black Magic" and to be the two horns of Satan. No wonder that Aleister Crowley, the infamous, self-proclaimed "Beast 666" from Great Britain, once stated, "Every man and woman is a star," which, loosely interpreted, meant, "Every man and woman is a god."[1]

The Star of Initiation

In the Hindu religion, the pentagram is the "Star of Initiation." It is the caste-mark of

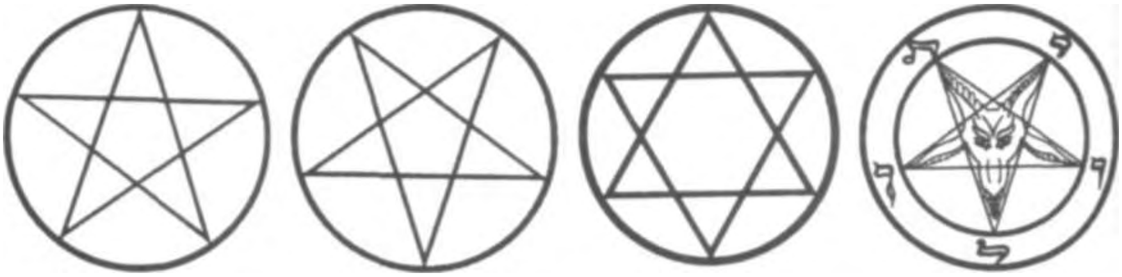

From left to right: Pentagram, Inverted Pentagram, Hexagram (Star of David) and Star of Baphomet (Goat of Sabbath)

the Priests of Siva, who dedicate it to the sun god by marking a black round dot inside the symbol of the star.[2]

THE *Blazing Star*

Freemasons, because they venerate the sun and its rays, know the star emblem as the "Blazing Star." Steve Worrall-Clare, a former Mason, in *Freemasonry - The Secret Language,* writes that in the Lodge:

> The blazing star points out the glory of the sun. It is central to all Masonic undertaking, for it enlightens the earth, and by its benign influence dispenses its blessings to mankind...It is found in the 28th degree and is the symbol of truth. It is found in the 4th degree as a symbol of light and in the 9th degree it is a symbol of divine providence. It is sometimes symbolically installed as the letter "G"...It is a door, an entrance to knowledge...[3]

Satan, The Goat of the Sabbath

High-sounding words, but deceptive. To gain a more direct perspective, we turn to Frenchman Eliphas Levi, a nineteenth-century satanist whose works inspired the writings of Albert Pike, the Sovereign Grand Commander of international Freemasonry. Levi enthusiastically reports:

> The pentagram with two horns in the ascendant represents Satan, or the goat of the Sabbath. (The horn) downward naturally represents the demon, that is, intellectual subversion, disorder and folly.[4]

In *Hidden Secrets of the Eastern Star,* one of the best guides ever published on the subject of the satanic star and other symbols of Masonry, Dr. Cathy Burns explains that the Blazing Star, or pentagram, has many meanings germane to the doctrines of Illuminism and the occult.[5]

Esoterically, the star symbolizes man as deity, as the universe embodied. It also stands for Sirius, the *"Dog Star"* or planet where Satan dwells. It stands for "Thor," the ancient Nordic god, and it stands for Baal, or Bel, the demonic god so often mentioned in derisive terms in the Old Testament.

This same star god was worshipped in Egypt, and the children of Israel, while wandering in the desert, fell under his hypnotic powers. They called him Moloch, Chiun, and Remphan. The prophet Amos castigated the Jewish idolaters for this unholy sacrilege:

> *But ye have borne the tabernacle of your Moloch and Chiun your images, the star of your god, which ye made to yourselves. (Amos 5:20)*

A Magical Charm and Talisman

To Illuminists everywhere, the pantacle star, or pentagram, is considered a powerful charm, a talisman, and an emblem of favor with the Deity of the Underworld. Oh, how the Communists, founded by Karl Marx, a high priest of Satan, cherished their red stars!

In degree rituals of Freemasonry, an appropriate "Jewel" is awarded the rising initiate. It is believed that this Jewel holds magical powers. It can be used to invoke, or invite, spirits and to work spells. Albert Pike thus advised:

> Another Jewel is necessary for you, and in certain undertakings cannot be dispensed with. It is what is termed the Kabalistic pantacle (pentagram)...This carries with it the power of commanding the spirits of the elements. It is necessary for you to know how to use it. [6]

In other words, Pike is recommending the star be the vehicle to invoke demon powers and cause them to do magical work.

Now, before you dismiss Pike's suggestion and imagine he was just some silly, insane occult nut, let me remind you that so respected is this man by the Illuminati of today, that a statue of Albert Pike stands in front of the Department of Justice building, the offices of the U.S. Attorney-General, in Washington, D.C. Displayed on public land, that statue is carefully tended to by the National Park Service. Moreover, the body of the much-revered former Sovereign Grand Commander Albert Pike, who died in 1891, is entombed in the Scottish Rite's House of the Temple, exactly 13 blocks from the White House.

Technically, there are several different types of occultic stars, each having its own set of doctrinal characteristics. The enneagram, for example, a nine-pointed star, is popular as a spiritual talisman in the Bahai faith and Theosophy and in other New Age occult sects.

The *pentagram,* from the Greek *"pente,"* meaning five, and *"gramma,"* a letter (thus the "letter five") is a five-pointed *star. A pentalpha* is more blatantly satanic. It is the form of a triple triangle. The pentagram star can also be called the pentacle, pentalpha, the Star of Isis, the Star of Venus and by other names. Its usage can be traced back to Babylon and it has often been employed in magical rites and activities.

It is sometimes said that the inverted pentagram, when it has two points ascendant, connotes evil and two points descendant, or down, indicates good, but this is not so. Either direction can be evil.

Israel's Six-Pointed Star

The six-pointed star, known as the Seal of Solomon, as the *Magen David* of the Jews, or as the hexagram, is considered by witches and occultists of all stripes as a powerful tool of witchcraft and magic. With this image, one can cast spells, curse victims, and otherwise wreak havoc. Or so it is said.

The six-pointed star was especially beloved by the cabalistic rabbis of the medieval era. The Rothschild Dynasty later adopted this star as a magical device and was instrumental in persuading (money talks!) the fledgling Zionist entity, Israel, to adopt the six-pointed star as the national emblem. It is the symbol of the Israel national flag, even though a more appropriate device undoubtedly would be the Torah, the Menorah, or some other historic or religious symbol.[7]

Geometrically and numerically (points, lines, triangles) the six-pointed star translates into the number 666. Thus, it is very possible that the six-pointed star could become the Mark of the Beast, the Antichrist, as prophesied in *Revelation 13.*

The Illuminists, cabalists, and Masons cunningly have also chosen the six-pointed star as symbol because of its hidden sexual meanings. It is made up of two triangles, integrated together, one superimposed on the other. The triangle pointing downward *(Delta)* represents the female vagina; the triangle pointed upward the male phallus. Joined, or yoked, the two triangles represent the generative sex act.[8]

Illuminati Stars Around the World

The Illuminati have cleverly designed architecture and art over the face of the whole earth to integrate their star talismans into global culture. For example, Texas is called the "Lone Star State," a choice of the Masons—Sam Houston, James Bowie, David Crockett, Stephen F. Austin, and others—who wrested political control of the state in an internecine struggle with Mexican Masonry (Mexican President, General Santa Anna, was also a Mason). Today, the five-pointed Texas star, actually an Illuminati icon, is displayed across the state.

The stars on the U.S. flag are of Masonic origination. The music later used for our national anthem, the Star-Spangled Banner, was composed by a Mason, John Stafford Smith, a member of Royal Somerset House and Inverness Lodge No. 4, London. Another Mason, Francis Scott Key, set the words to the music, and it became recognized as America's national anthem.[9]

Stars have, since World War II, been prominently painted on U.S.A. military equipment—on tanks, jeeps, aircraft—and as badges and emblems on the uniforms of American servicemen.

The Communists in Russia, China, and elsewhere—Illuminists all—adopted the Red Star as a dominant icon of totalitarian dictatorship and emblazoned it on everything, from their flags and monuments to works of art and items of clothing.

None of this is by accident. Always remember, the whole planet is a ritual stage for these mad-men. They have planted evil seeds everywhere one turns. In the scriptures, Paul and John warn that until Jesus our Lord finally puts a stop to this insanity, Satan is god of this world *(2 Corinthians 4:4).* But Christians are not subject to the demonic powers of this world. Christians are unaffected by spells, rituals and magic cast by the servants of Satan. Only Christians—true, Bible-believing, blood-bought Christians—are immune from Satan's wiles and schemes. The star is one of those wiles. Its prevalence reminds us of how interlaced and permeated this world is with satanic artifices.

> *For whatsoever is born of God overcometh the world: and this is the victory that overcometh the world, even our faith. Who is he that overcometh the world, but he that believeth that Jesus is the Son of God?*
>
> *I John 5:4, 5*

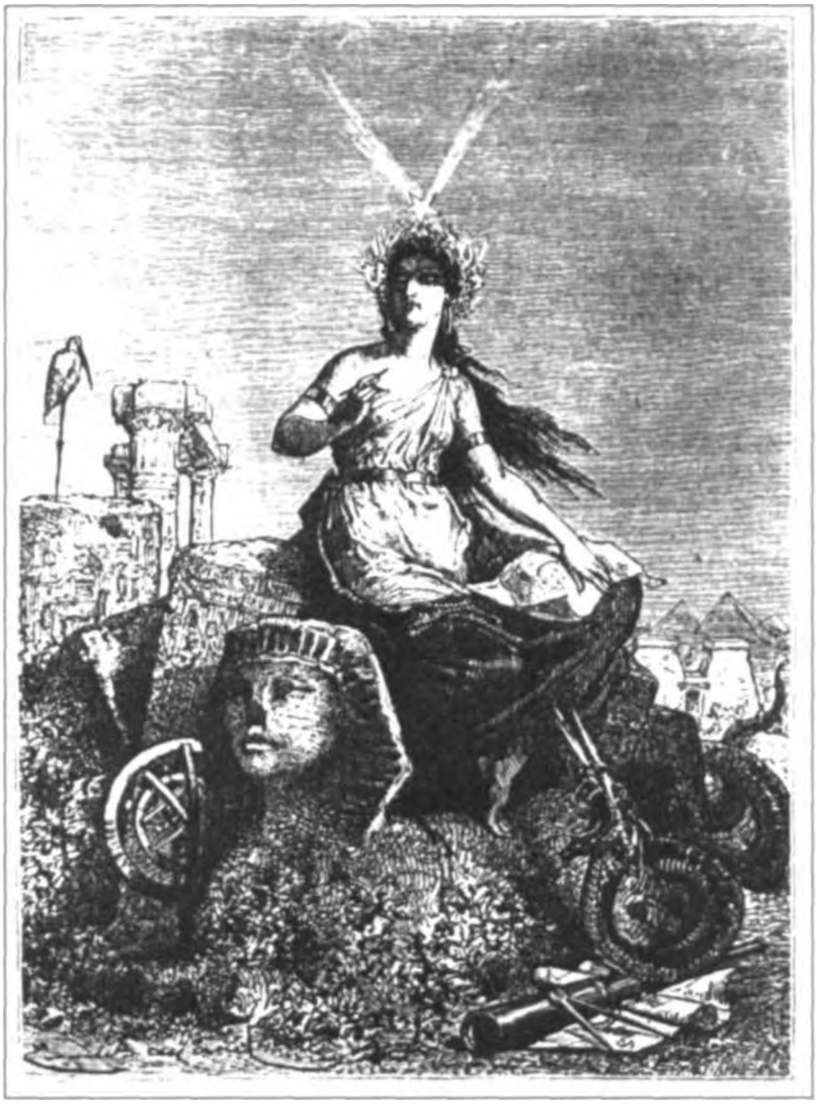

The Egyptian supreme goddess wears on her head the diabolical, inverted pentagram star. Notice that rays of light emanate from the two "horn" points, creating a "V" effect. See Chapter 25 of *Codex Magica* for discussion of the satanic "V." (Illustration "Isis Recording Her Mysteries." From *Histoire de la Magie,* by Paul Christian, Paris, France.)

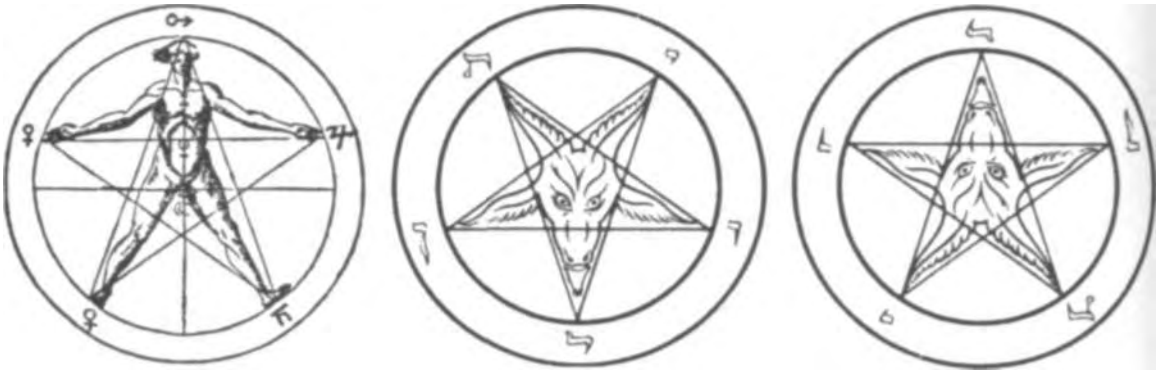

The *pentagram* is an ancient and modern magical, occult symbol of prime importance to Illuminists, satanists, and members of secret societies. In its upright form (left), the five-pointed star is said to be an indicator *of white magic.* In its inverted form (center) the same star becomes the sign of consummate evil and hellish intentions. In other words, *black magic.* Above, the pentagram at far right is simply the same as the star at center turned upside down. In each star, evil is found in the form of the goat-headed god of darkness, Baphomet. However, in the star in the center, the Baphomet goat has what appears to be his beard pointed downward, and in the star at right (reversed image), the supposed beard becomes the torch of fire emanating from the top of the beast's head.

Dr. (Colonel) Michael Aquino, Ipsissimus and founder of the Temple of Set, with his wife and High Priestess, Lilith Sinclair. The occultic star is dominant in this scene of Aquino with all his regalia.

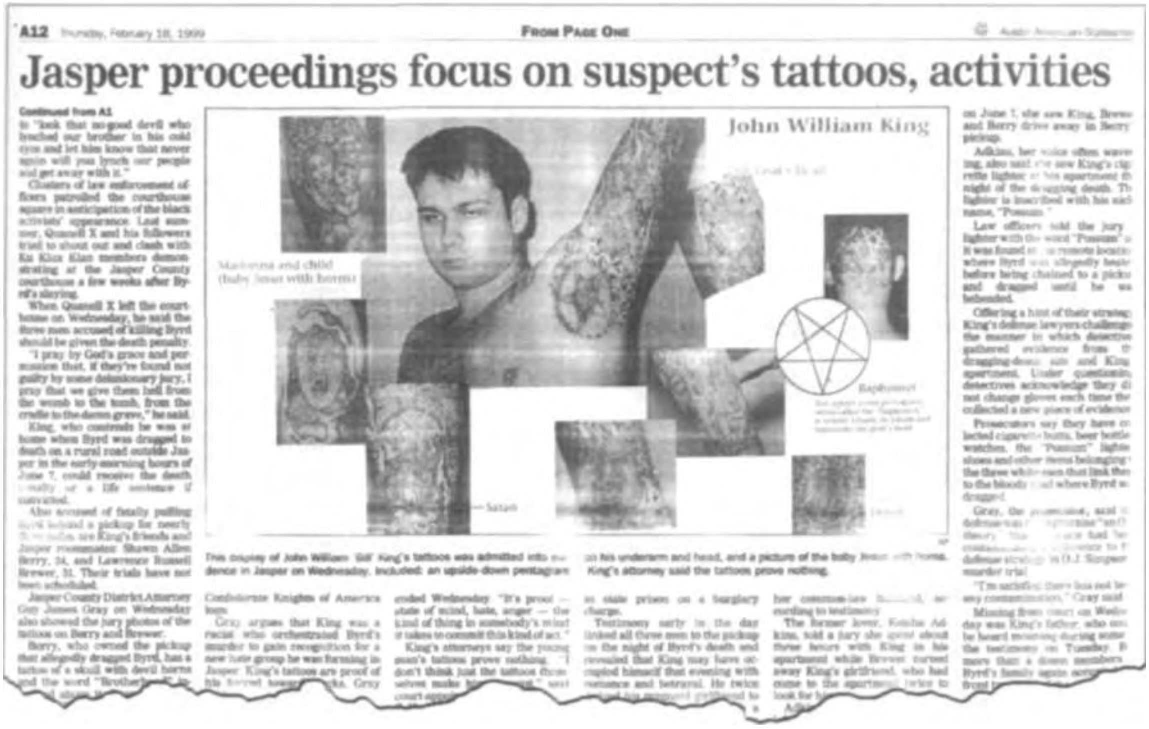

A12 Thursday, February 18, 1999 From Page One Austin American-Statesman

Jasper proceedings focus on suspect's tattoos, activities

This display of John William 'Bill' King's tattoos was admitted into evidence in Jasper on Wednesday. Included: an upside-down pentagram on his underarm and head, and a picture of the baby Jesus with horns. King's attorney said the tattoos prove nothing.

The media gleefully devoted maximum attention to the killing of a black man in Jasper, Texas by three white men. The three chained the mutilated victim to the bumper of their pickup truck and drug him behind until he was dead. The media reported the grotesque murder as a racial crime, a horrible incident of racial prejudice and hate. In fact, the motive for the murder was satanic, not racial. John William King, one of the accused white men, had tattoos of a baby Jesus with horns, of the satanic pentagram, the goat's head, and more. Even King's hair was cut into symbols of evil. *(Austin American-Statesman,* February 18, 1999, p. A12)

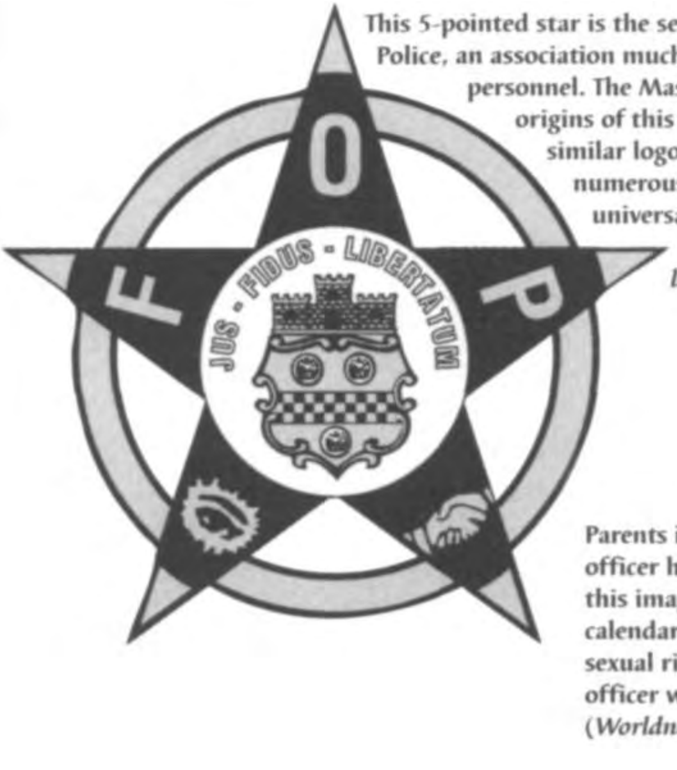

This 5-pointed star is the seal, or logo of the Fraternal Order of The Police, an association much like a union of police and law enforcement personnel. The Masonic symbols gives convincing proof of the origins of this group. Many other police organizations have similar logos and, indeed, the "star" itself, in its numerous variations, is in widespread, almost universal use by law enforcement. Is this the elite's way of telling the whole world, *"We are the law!"*?

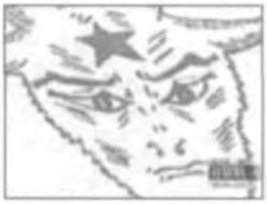

Parents in Pearland, Texas, objected after a police officer handed out calendars to students that featured this image of a Baphomet goat's head with a star. The calendar also had explicit details on satanic and sexual rituals for every day of the month. The police officer was presenting a talk about teen gang activity. (*Worldnetdaily.com*, December 13, 2004)

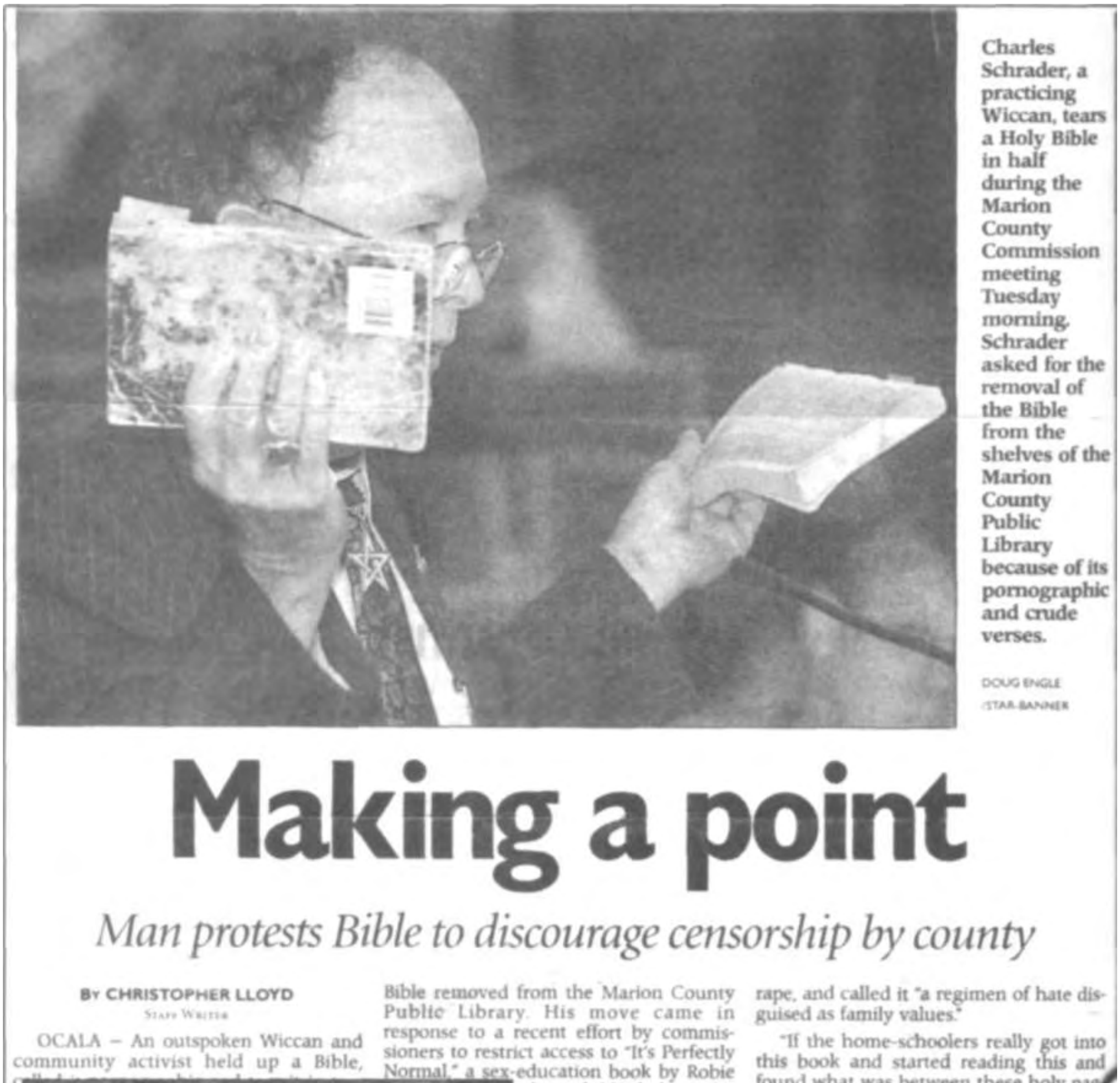

Charles Schrader, a practicing Wiccan, tears a Holy Bible in half during the Marion County Commission meeting Tuesday morning. Schrader asked for the removal of the Bible from the shelves of the Marion County Public Library because of its pornographic and crude verses.

DOUG ENGLE /STAR-BANNER

Making a point

Man protests Bible to discourage censorship by county

By CHRISTOPHER LLOYD
Staff Writer

OCALA – An outspoken Wiccan and community activist held up a Bible,

Bible removed from the Marion County Public Library. His move came in response to a recent effort by commissioners to restrict access to "It's Perfectly Normal," a sex-education book by Robie

e have dubbed obscene.

rape, and called it "a regimen of hate disguised as family values."

"If the home-schoolers really got into this book and started reading this and found what was between these holy pag-

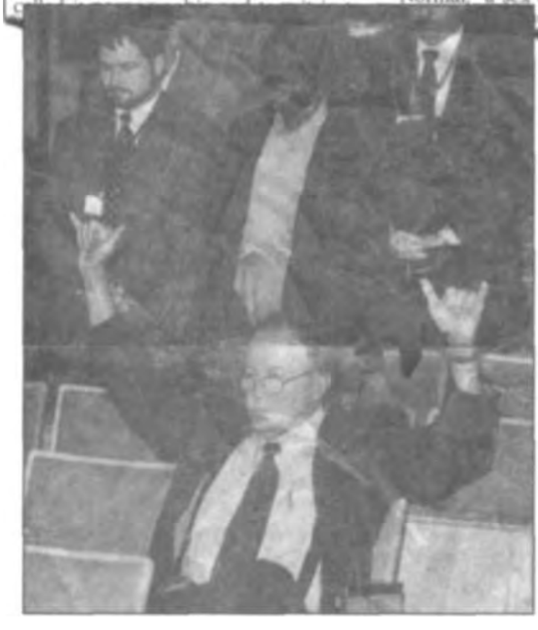

A practicing Wiccan (witchcraft advocate) tears a Holy Bible in half at a meeting of county commissioners in Florida. The man was demanding the Bible be removed from the public library. Notice above the pentacle star hanging from his neck, a symbol which he said represents sun worship. At left, the same man sits in the audience performing a pagan prayer while displaying the familiar "horned" symbol with both hands. Still, the witch advocate protested he does not practice satanism or black magic.

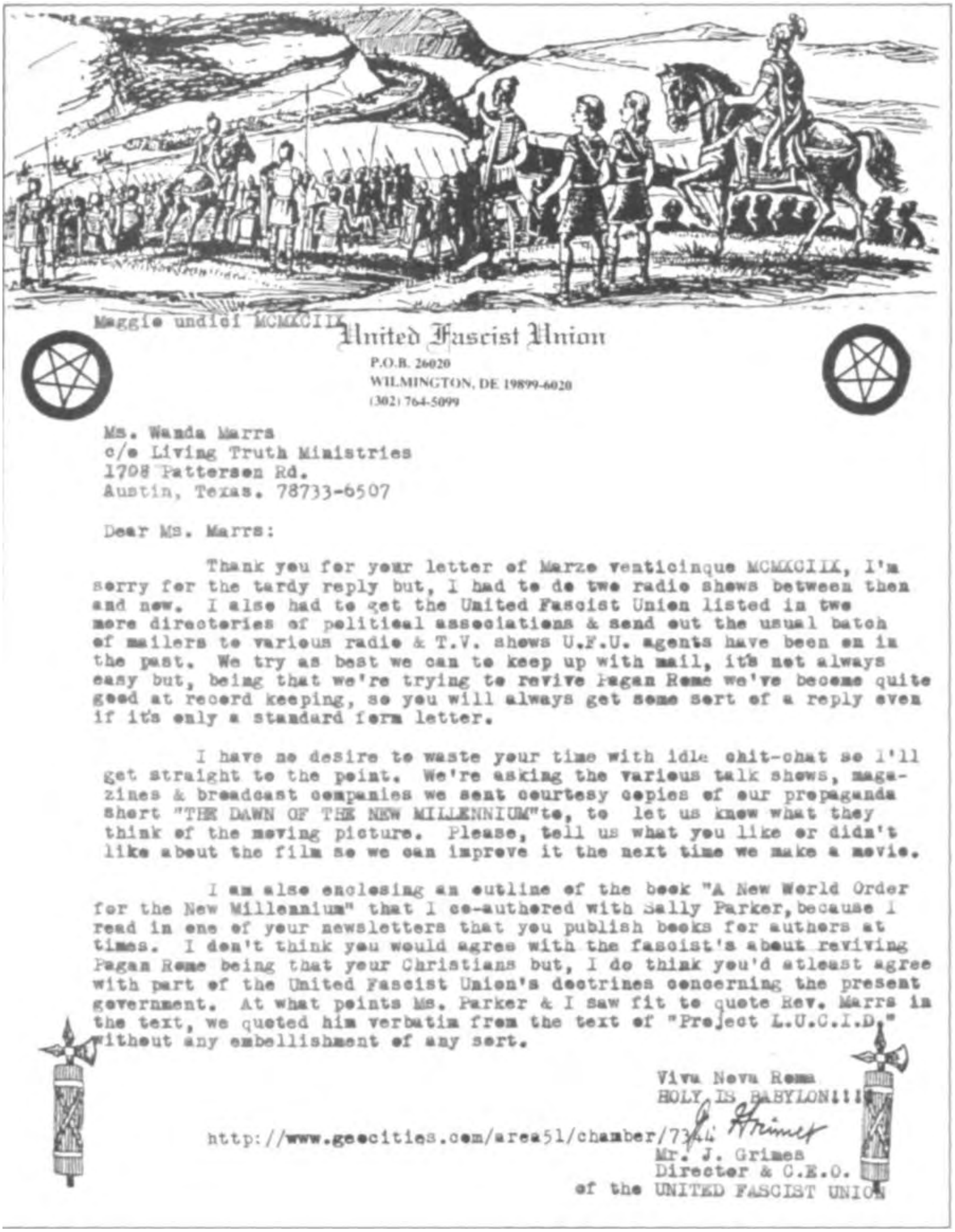

Maggio undici MCMXCIIX
United Fascist Union
P.O.B. 26020
WILMINGTON, DE 19899-6020
(302) 764-5099

Ms. Wanda Marrs
c/o Living Truth Ministries
1708 Patterson Rd.
Austin, Texas. 78733-6507

Dear Ms. Marrs:

Thank you for your letter of Marzo venticinque MCMXCIIX, I'm sorry for the tardy reply but, I had to do two radio shows between then and now. I also had to get the United Fascist Union listed in two more directories of political associations & send out the usual batch of mailers to various radio & T.V. shows U.F.U. agents have been on in the past. We try as best we can to keep up with mail, it's not always easy but, being that we're trying to revive Pagan Rome we've become quite good at record keeping, so you will always get some sort of a reply even if it's only a standard form letter.

I have no desire to waste your time with idle chit-chat so I'll get straight to the point. We're asking the various talk shows, magazines & broadcast companies we sent courtesy copies of our propaganda short "THE DAWN OF THE NEW MILLENNIUM"to, to let us know what they think of the moving picture. Please, tell us what you like or didn't like about the film so we can improve it the next time we make a movie.

I am also enclosing an outline of the book "A New World Order for the New Millennium" that I co-authored with Sally Parker, because I read in one of your newsletters that you publish books for authors at times. I don't think you would agree with the fascist's about reviving Pagan Rome being that your Christians but, I do think you'd atleast agree with part of the United Fascist Union's doctrines concerning the present government. At what points Ms. Parker & I saw fit to quote Rev. Marrs in the text, we quoted him verbatim from the text of "Project L.U.C.I.D." without any embellishment of any sort.

Viva Nova Roma
HOLY IS BABYLON!!!

J. Grimes

http://www.geocities.com/area51/chamber/7344

Mr. J. Grimes
Director & C.E.O.
of the UNITED FASCIST UNION

When the wife of the author of *Codex Magica* sent a letter to the United Fascist Union requesting information for our files about the group's purpose and activites, we received this letter in return. Notice that two pentagram symbols are prominently displayed as symbolic artwork on the letterhead of the United Fascist Union, a U.S.A. based group headquartered in Wilmington, Delaware. Also observable is the fasces (ax and wheat bundled by X insignia). In the signature block of the letter, the "Director and CEO" of the United Fascist Union has typed the phrases *"Viva Nova Roma"* (Long live the New Rome) and *"Holy is Babylon!"*

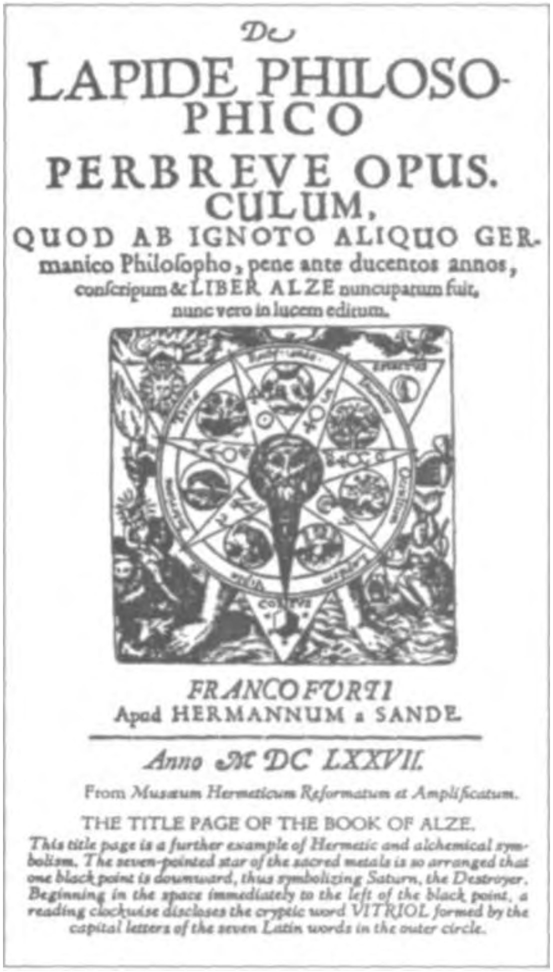

De
LAPIDE PHILOSOPHICO
PERBREVE OPUSCULUM,
QUOD AB IGNOTO ALIQUO GERmanico Philoſopho, pene ante ducentos annos,
conſcripum & LIBER ALZE nuncupatum fuit,
nunc vero in lucem editum.

FRANCOFURTI
Apud HERMANNUM a SANDE.

Anno M DC LXXVII.

From *Musæum Hermeticum Reformatum et Amplificatum.*

THE TITLE PAGE OF THE BOOK OF ALZE.

This title page is a further example of Hermetic and alchemical symbolism. The seven-pointed star of the sacred metals is so arranged that one black point is downward, thus symbolizing Saturn, the Destroyer. Beginning in the space immediately to the left of the black point, a reading clockwise discloses the cryptic word VITRIOL formed by the capital letters of the seven Latin words in the outer circle.

Left: A mysterious example of hermetic and alchemic teachings. This seven-point star is so arranged that one point of the star—painted black-is pointed downward, symbolizing adoration of he who rules Saturn, the sixth planet from the sun (i.e. Lucifer). (From Manly Hall's *Secret Teachings of All Ages)*

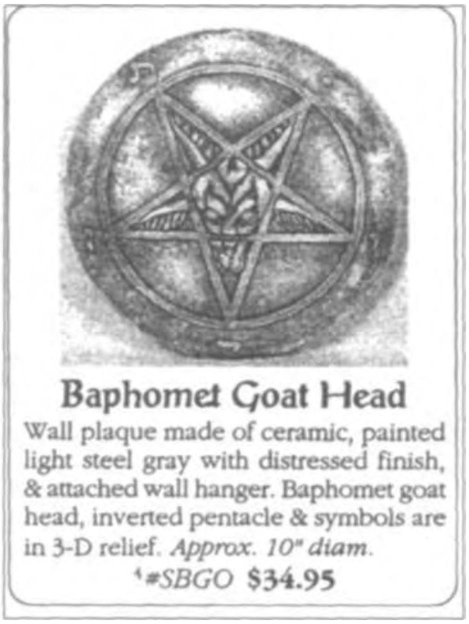

Baphomet Goat Head

Wall plaque made of ceramic, painted light steel gray with distressed finish, & attached wall hanger. Baphomet goat head, inverted pentacle & symbols are in 3-D relief. *Approx. 10" diam.*

⁴#SBGO **$34.95**

From a recent catalog offering a multitude of talismans and charms, were these two products offered for sale.

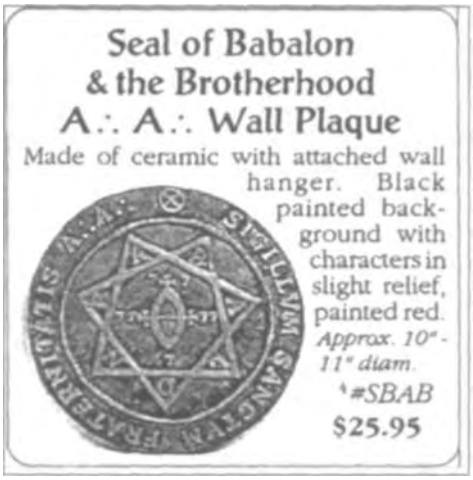

Seal of Babalon & the Brotherhood A∴ A∴ Wall Plaque

Made of ceramic with attached wall hanger. Black painted background with characters in slight relief, painted red. *Approx. 10"-11" diam.*

⁴#SBAB

$25.95

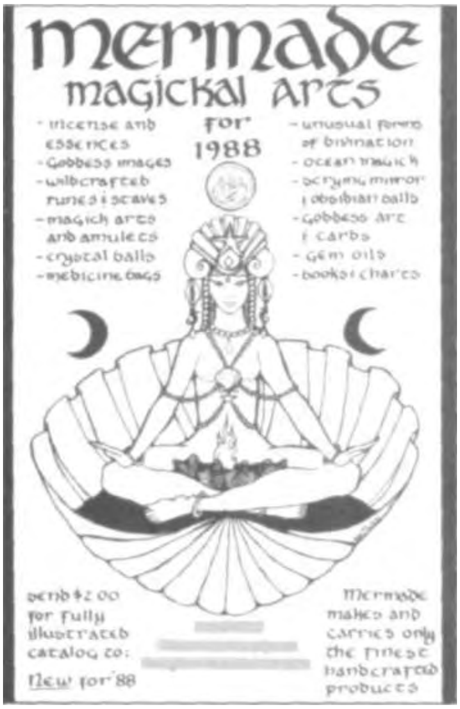

mermade
magickal arts
for
1988

- incense and essences
- Goddess images
- wildcrafted runes & staves
- magick arts and amulets
- crystal balls
- medicine bags

- unusual forms of divination
- ocean magick
- scrying mirrors & obsidian balls
- Goddess art & cards
- gem oils
- books & charts

send $2.00 for fully illustrated catalog to:

[redacted]

New for '88

Mermade makes and carries only the finest handcrafted products

In this ad (left) in *Magical Blend,* a New Age magazine, we see many occultic and pagan symbols, including the 5-pointed star above the goddess' head. The shell represents the love goddess Aphrodite who, mythology says, rose out of the sea (see *Revelation 13:1* for a prophecy about the beast that rises up out of the sea). The goddess figure in this ad sits in the familiar lotus position with the flame in her genital area and her arms and hands arranged symbolically.

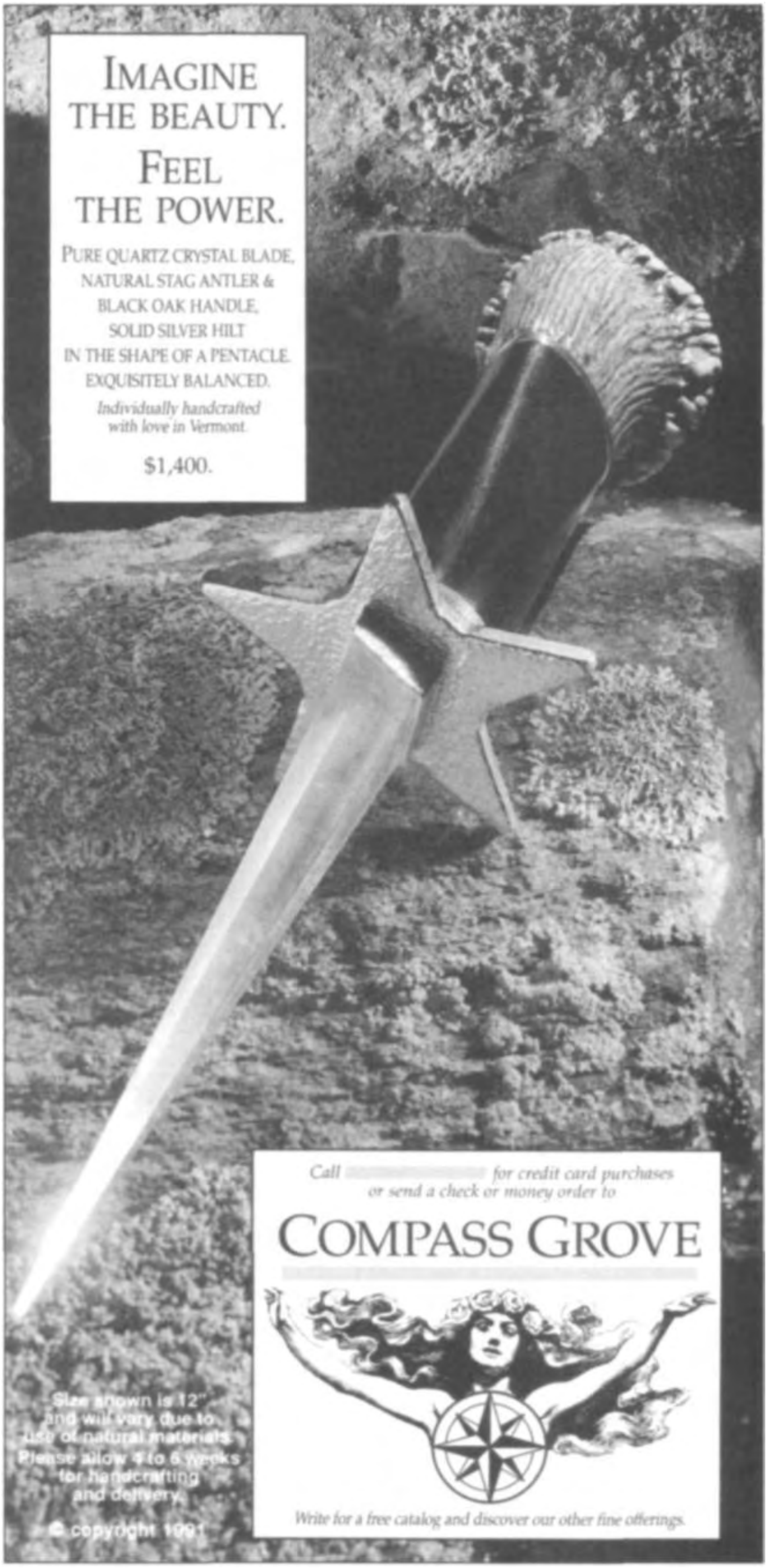

IMAGINE THE BEAUTY.
FEEL THE POWER.

PURE QUARTZ CRYSTAL BLADE,
NATURAL STAG ANTLER &
BLACK OAK HANDLE,
SOLID SILVER HILT
IN THE SHAPE OF A PENTACLE.
EXQUISITELY BALANCED.

Individually handcrafted with love in Vermont.

$1,400.

Size shown is 12"
and will vary due to
use of natural materials.
Please allow 4 to 6 weeks
for handcrafting
and delivery.

© copyright 1991

Call [redacted] for credit card purchases or send a check or money order to

COMPASS GROVE

[redacted]

Write for a free catalog and discover our other fine offerings.

This ad in *Magical Blend* magazine touts that for just $1,400 you can order this pentarle star-shaped dagger, suitable for ceremonies and rituals. The ad also says that the product is "handcrafted with love in Vermont."

A wax talisman created by occultist Edward Kelley, using directions obtained in the angelic language he called "Enochian" *(Enigma* magazine, Issue 6).

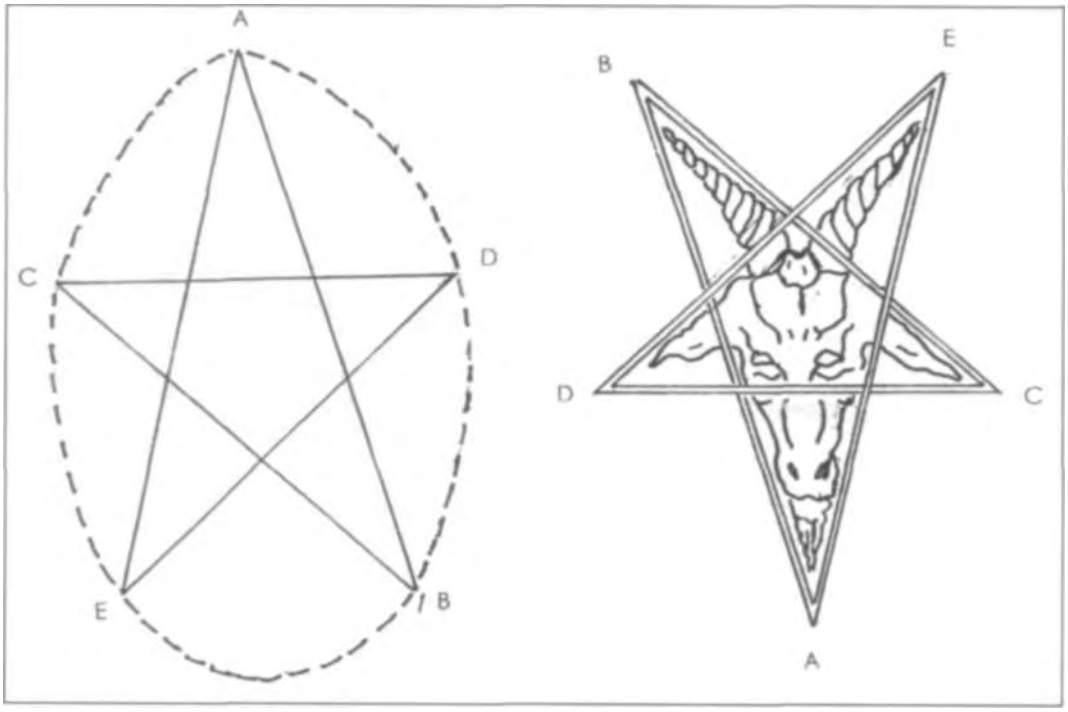

A friend of Texe Marrs' ministry sent this drawing of Baphomet incorporated in an oval shaped, irregular pentagram. He noted that such an arrangement indicates the revolving of Venus (the goddess, or feminine principle) around the sun in an elliptical orbit. The irregular pentagram is a sign of black magic when shown inverted and enclosing the horned head of the goat.

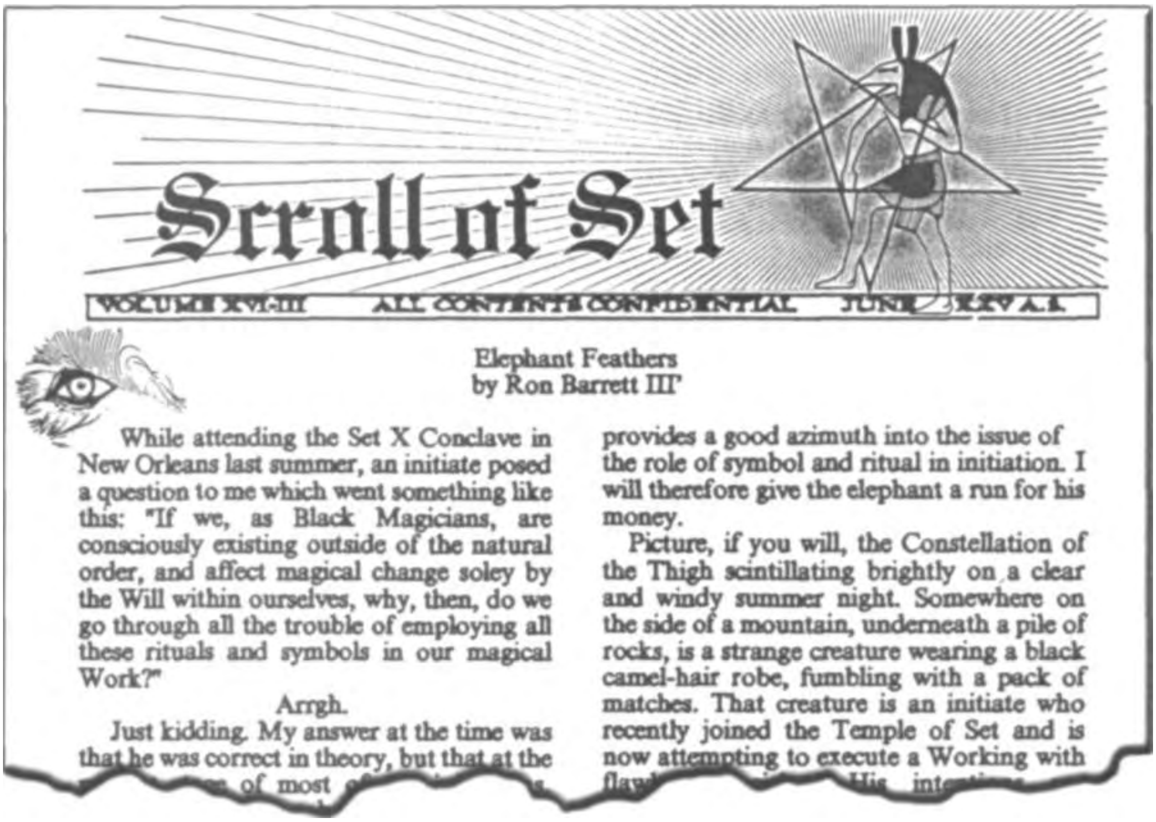

Scroll of Set

VOLUME XVI-III ALL CONTENTS CONFIDENTIAL JUNE XXV A.S.

Elephant Feathers
by Ron Barrett III°

While attending the Set X Conclave in New Orleans last summer, an initiate posed a question to me which went something like this: "If we, as Black Magicians, are consciously existing outside of the natural order, and affect magical change soley by the Will within ourselves, why, then, do we go through all the trouble of employing all these rituals and symbols in our magical Work?"

Arrgh.

Just kidding. My answer at the time was that he was correct in theory, but that at the

provides a good azimuth into the issue of the role of symbol and ritual in initiation. I will therefore give the elephant a run for his money.

Picture, if you will, the Constellation of the Thigh scintillating brightly on a clear and windy summer night. Somewhere on the side of a mountain, underneath a pile of rocks, is a strange creature wearing a black camel-hair robe, fumbling with a pack of matches. That creature is an initiate who recently joined the Temple of Set and is now attempting to execute a Working with

The masthead of the periodic *"Scroll of Set"* newsletter, published by Dr. (Colonel) Michael Aquino, High Priest of the Temple of Set. Aquino claims to be an initiate of the "Left-handed Path," which indicates Lucifer worship.

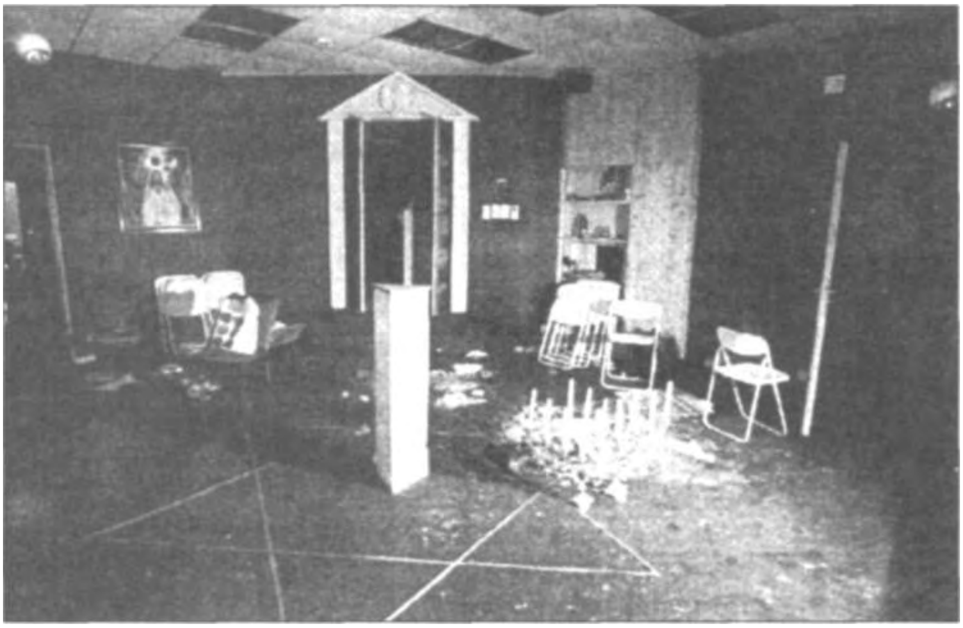

The empty sanctuary of the Order of the Solar Temple shows signs of Satanic worship—candles on the floor arranged in a triangular pattern and a Satanic hexagram drawn out on the floor. In October 1994, the 53 adults and children who participated in the unholy rituals of this cult—headquartered in Switzerland but operating in Canada as well—were found dead, victims of mass, joint suicide and murder. The official logo of the "Solar Temple" (not shown) is a triangle with 1 pointed Maltese cross.

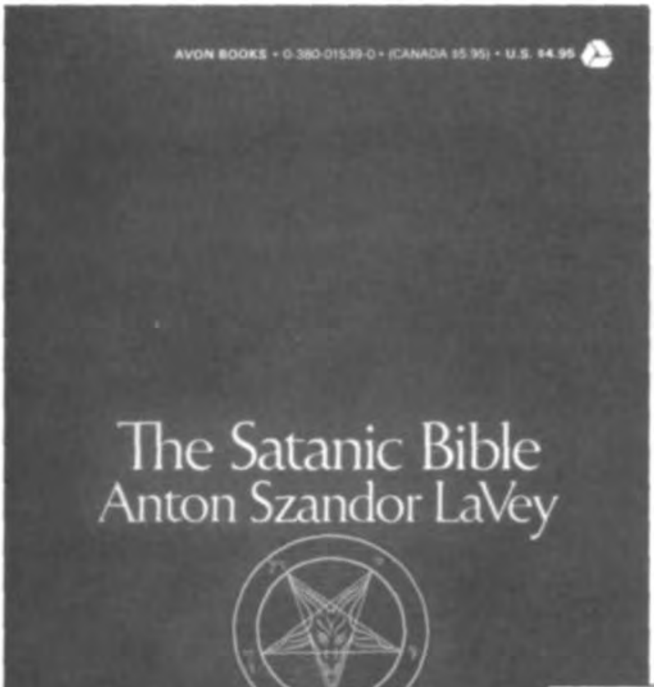

Above: Cover of the bestselling *The Satanic Bible*, by Anton LaVey, High Priest of the Church of Satan. Published by Avon Books, a major publisher, the title has long been a brisk seller in the large bookstore chains. On page 25 of the book, LaVey lists his suggested "Nine Statements," or principles of the Church of Satan (at right). *The Satanic Bible* is upfront with its hideous recommendations to worship Satan as "His infernal Majesty," and LaVey garnered many hundreds, if not thousands, of open followers, including politicians, Hollywood actors, actresses, and producers, singers and entertainers, etc. Among the devotees: black entertainer Sammy Davis, Jr. and blond bombshell actress Jayne Mansfield.

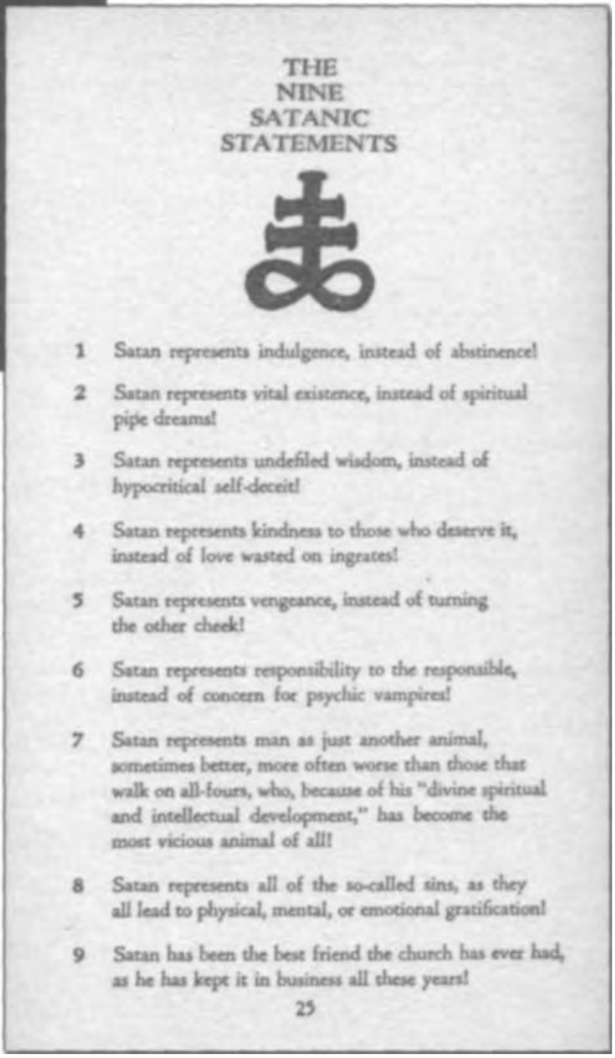

THE
NINE
SATANIC
STATEMENTS

1 Satan represents indulgence, instead of abstinence!

2 Satan represents vital existence, instead of spiritual pipe dreams!

3 Satan represents undefiled wisdom, instead of hypocritical self-deceit!

4 Satan represents kindness to those who deserve it, instead of love wasted on ingrates!

5 Satan represents vengeance, instead of turning the other cheek!

6 Satan represents responsibility to the responsible, instead of concern for psychic vampires!

7 Satan represents man as just another animal, sometimes better, more often worse than those that walk on all-fours, who, because of his "divine spiritual and intellectual development," has become the most vicious animal of all!

8 Satan represents all of the so-called sins, as they all lead to physical, mental, or emotional gratification!

9 Satan has been the best friend the church has ever had, as he has kept it in business all these years!

25

High Priest LaVey and followers at a 1966 ritual. Observe the pentagram on the wall.

In the 1990s, President George Bush's National Endowment for the Arts (NEA) gave photographer Robert Mapplethorpe a $15.000 grant from the tax trough (that's my money and yours!) to produce photographs. Regrettably classified as "art," some of Mapplethorpe's photographs depicted homosexuals "enjoying" violent, degrading sex acts. Mapplethorpe also produced vulgar and unseemly pictures of little boys and girls displaying their sexual genitals.

Extremely satisfied with Robert Mapplethorpe's pornographic art, the NEA's artist community promptly arranged for his lewd photographs to be put on exhibit in some of America's finest art museums. All this, of course, was funded by the taxpayers through that gracious government cultural agency, the NEA.

Well, tragically, Robert Mapplethorpe is no longer with us. He has died of the AIDS virus, a result of his homosexual lifestyle. But he left behind a very revealing photograph that he had taken of himself. The photograph, entitled "Self-Portrait," shows Mapplethorpe in a terrorist/ gangster leather overcoat, machine gun in hands. On the wall behind the posed artist is a satanic pentagram, the five pointed star so revered by occultists.

Frankly, my heart goes out to the late Robert Mapplethorpe. He was a deceived, sick man. But I have little sympathy for the politicians who year after year fund the wicked tastes of the NEA's art crowd. Neither do I have a soft spot in my heart for the liberal clergy who insanely support and applaud the homosexual lifestyle.

Yes, Robert Mapplethorpe was personally responsible for his actions. He must now answer to an almighty God. But he had many accomplices to his immoral crimes. And the blood of Robert Mapplethorpe and thousands of other desperate and confused young men is on their hands!

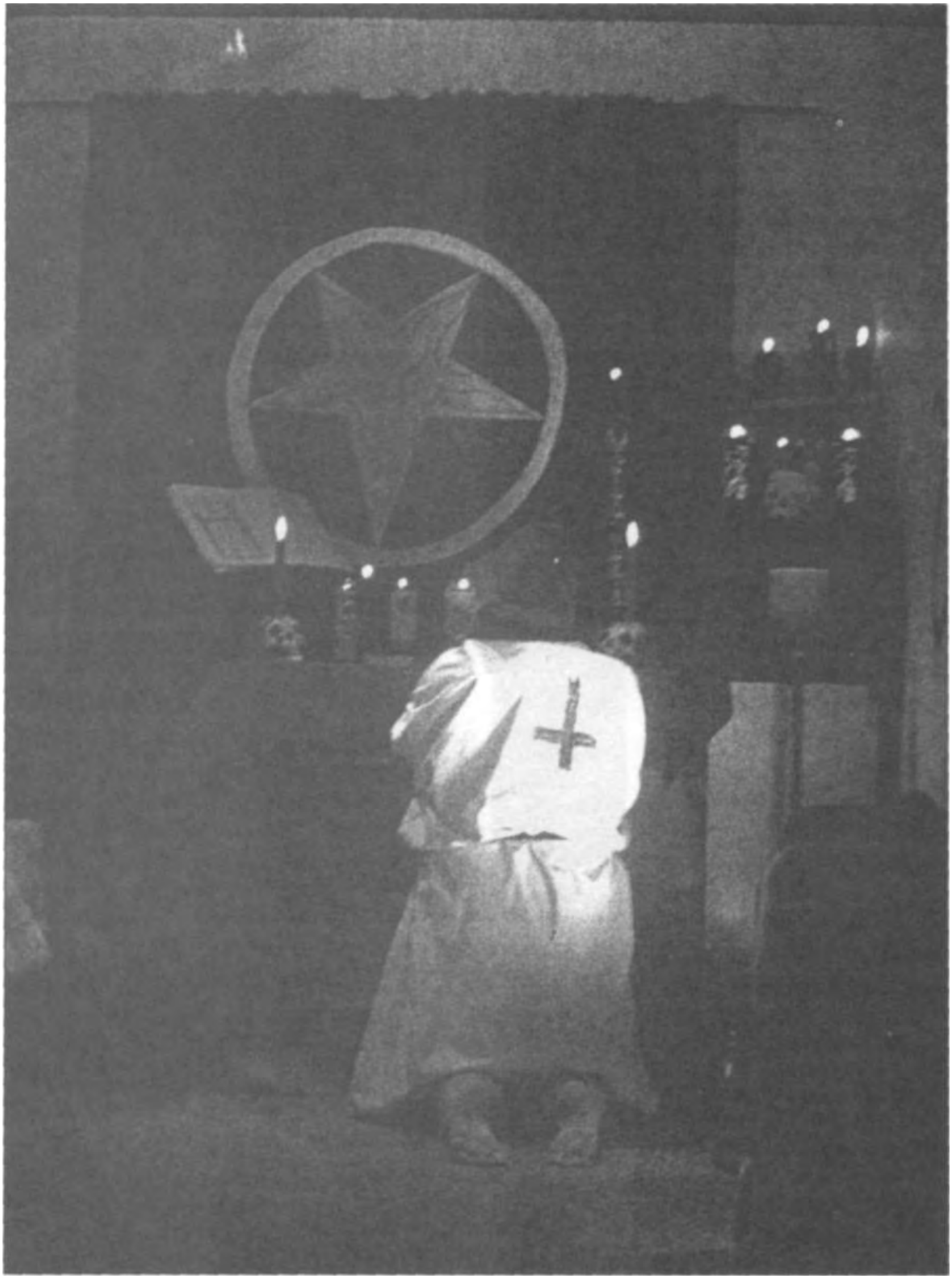

Jack Roper, a friend of Texe Marrs who is a law enforcement consultant and an expert on satanic rituals and crimes, sent Texe this photo of a satanic altar and worshipper.

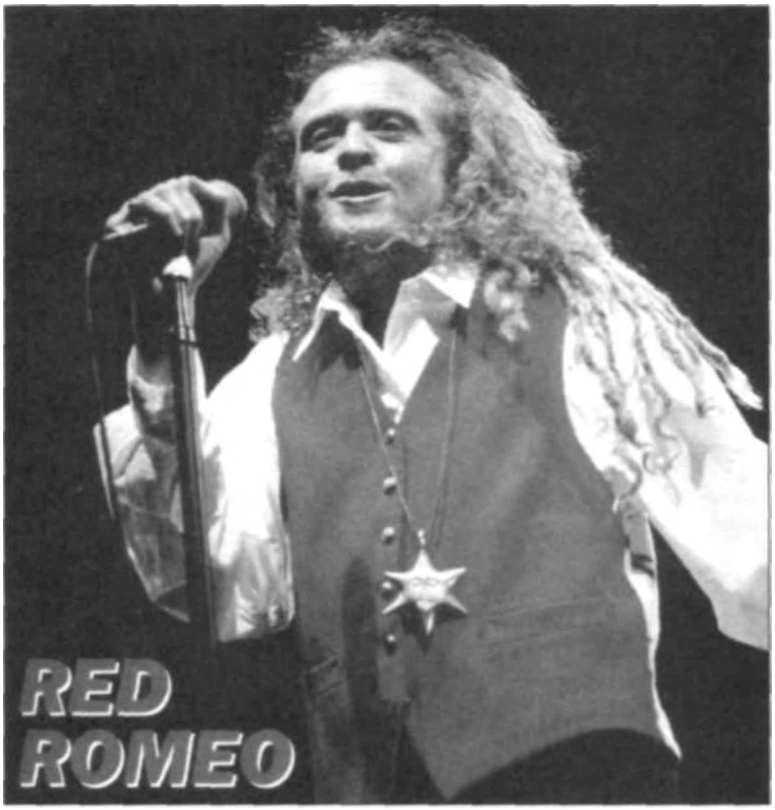

The United Kingdom's Mick Hurknell, lead singer of the soul group *Simply Red.* Fans call him a "stage-strutting sex god" in his red vest wearing a six-pointed silver star as talisman around his neck. The band has sold over 20 million albums. (Photo: *The European Magazine,* December 6, 1995, p. 17)

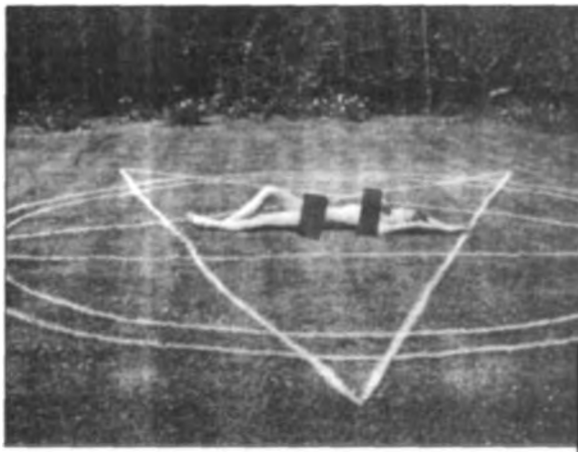

The teachers of "The Craft" claim that a skyclad (nude) witch draws "energy" from forces unleashed by the pentagram star as she lies inside of it while spells are performed (photo from book, *Heartbeat of the Dragon*).

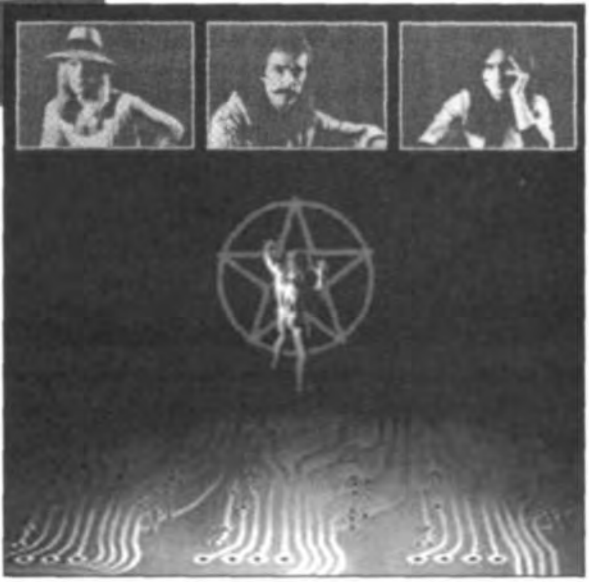

Cover of music album by rock group *Rush* has a naked man compelled by the energy forces of a pentacle star.

YSTERY ICE FALLS • UFOS OVER CHINA • BISHOP-EATING RATS | FT 132 MARCH 2000 | £2.60
THE JOURNAL OF STRANGE PHENOMENA
Fortean times
SOMETHING FISHY
Whatever happened to the Great Sea Serpent?
ON THE SLAB
Dissecting the evidence for life after death
WEIRDNESS INDEX
So, how strange was 1999?
ROCKET MAN
THE EXTRAORDINARY STORY OF JACK PARSONS: PLAYBOY, ANTI-CHRIST AND MISSILE MESSIAH.

Fortean Times* (March 2000), a magazine specializing in the bizarre and strange that is real, devoted its cover and feature article to the documented story of Jack Parsons, the American rocket scientist and genius who made space travel possible with his scientific inventions and discoveries. Parsons was a Luciferian priest and an initiate of the Ordo Templi Orientis (O.T.O.), an occultic order made infamous by Englishman Aleister Crowley ("the beast, 666"). Parsons died in a mysterious explosion some 50 years ago, but his name and legend continue to be honored by Illuminists around the world. NASA, America's space agency, even named a crater on Mars after Parsons. Parsons conducted sex rituals designed to invoke the coming of the antichrist. Satanists call these perverted, dark rituals *"Babalon Working."

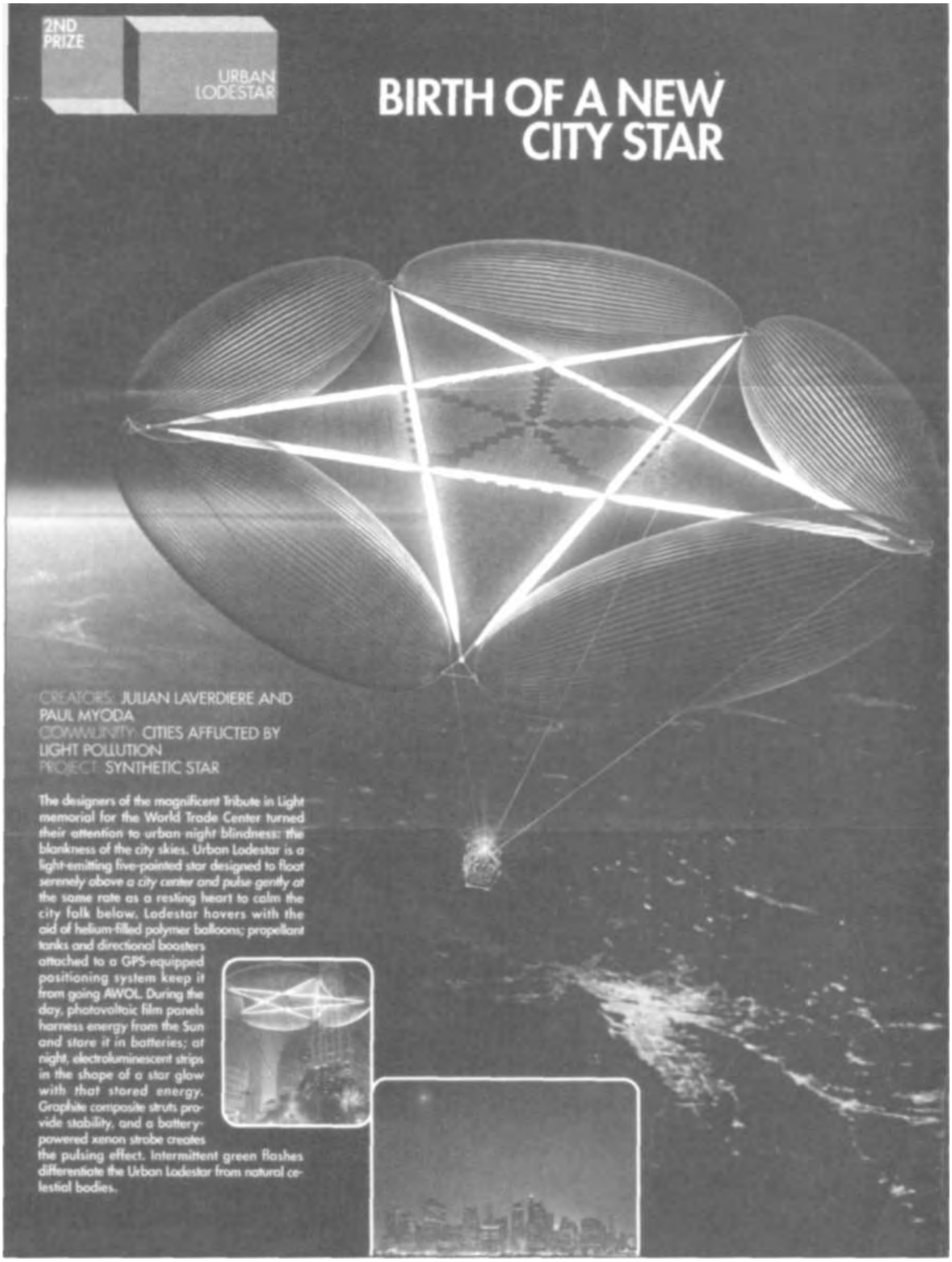

2ND PRIZE

URBAN LODESTAR

BIRTH OF A NEW CITY STAR

CREATORS: JULIAN LAVERDIERE AND PAUL MYODA
COMMUNITY: CITIES AFFLICTED BY LIGHT POLLUTION
PROJECT: SYNTHETIC STAR

The designers of the magnificent Tribute in Light memorial for the World Trade Center turned their attention to urban night blindness: the blankness of the city skies. Urban Lodestar is a light-emitting five-pointed star designed to float *serenely above a city center and pulse gently at* the same rate as a resting heart to calm the city folk below. Lodestar hovers with the aid of helium-filled polymer balloons; propellant tanks and directional boosters attached to a GPS-equipped positioning system keep it from going AWOL. During the day, photovoltaic film panels harness energy from the Sun and store it in batteries; at night, electroluminescent strips in the shape of a star glow with that stored energy. Graphite composite struts provide stability, and a battery-powered xenon strobe creates the pulsing effect. Intermittent green flashes differentiate the Urban Lodestar from natural celestial bodies.

Popular Science **magazine (July 2004) published this artist's conception of a proposed Synthetic Star, pentagram star of light to be beamed over the city of New York as a memorial to World Trade Center 9/11 victims. The designers believe the five-pointed star, designed to float serenely above a city center and pulse quietly at the same rate as a beating human heart—will calm the city folk below. Would you like to look up into the sky each evening and see a huge satanic pentagram like this hovering over your community?**

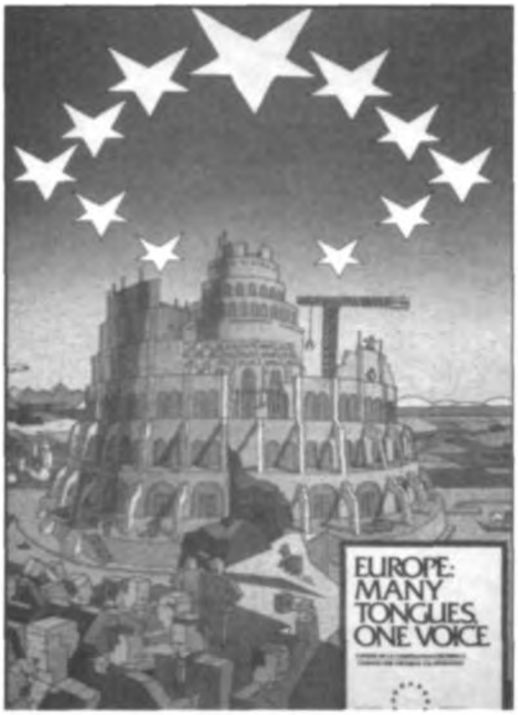

This incredibly revealing official poster was unveiled and distributed by the Council of Europe, sub-organization of the European Community. It depicts the Tower of Babylon being rebuilt with the announcement, "Europe: Many Tongues, One Voice." Above the Tower is a circular constellation of satanic pentagram stars. The Masons have long given themselves the nickname, "The Builders." In the book of *Genesis* in the Bible, we are told that the original building of the Tower of Babylon came to naught after God confounded the wicked inhabitants by causing them to speak many different languages. As this poster demonstrates, however, it's *déjà vu* all over again.

Communist Chinese dictator Mao Tse Tung often wore a cap with a red star. Mao may have slaughtered as many as 100 million people during his long reign. His barbarism stemmed from his following the insane ideology of Illuminati puppet Karl Marx, a Jewish high priest of Satan worship.

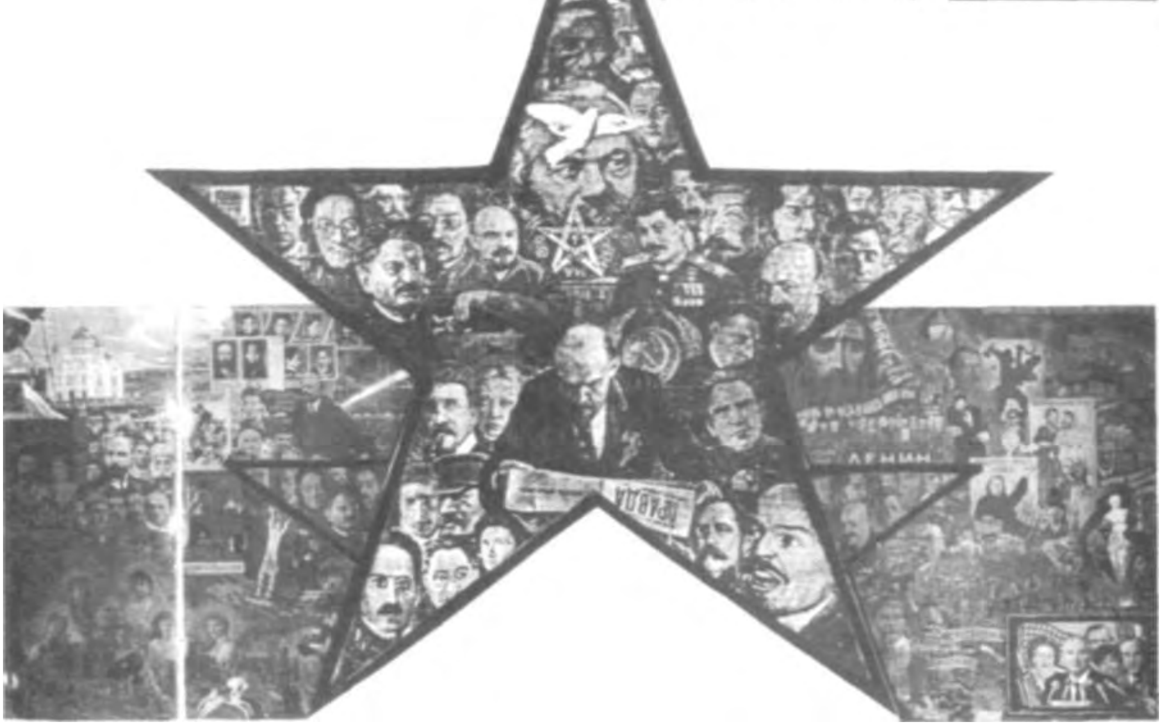

"The Great Experiment" was the title of this mural painted by Russian artist Ilya Glazunov. The mural claims to picture the history of 20th century Russia. The Bolsheviks' satanic star is the overall container and inside it is found the satanic pentacle star along with pictures of Lenin, Trotsky, Gorbachev, and others.

TWENTY-SEVEN

Lightning Fall From Heaven

And he said unto them, I beheld Satan as lightning fall from heaven. Behold, I give unto you power to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy: and nothing shall by any means hurt you.

-Jesus *(Luke 10:18-19)*

Lightning has long been a supreme symbol of Lucifer, whom the Illuminati deem to be their "enlightener." In the Bible, Jesus states, "I beheld Satan as lightning fall from heaven" *(Luke 10:18)*. We also discover in the scriptures that Lucifer is called the "Prince of the Power of the Air" *(Ephesians 2:2)*.

The pagan Mystery Religions—from which the modern Illuminati have borrowed—pictured their supreme god as a fiery, flying serpent, bringing lightning and thunder in his wake. The Greeks and the Romans worshipped angry deities, Zeus and Jupiter, sitting on a throne at the hub of the heavens throwing lightning bolts and booming thunder at enemies. The modern revival of the use of the lightning symbol is seen by the Nazis, the symbols of rock music groups, and in the Harry Potter books and movies.

Once again we also see the *phallic symbol* recognized—this time as lightning—in the Illuminist religion. This originated from the tantric tradition, in which it is taught that lightning is a phallic scepter, jewel, lingam, or magical wand of the gods. Lightning especially symbolizes the Hindu fire god, Agni, whose mark is given by his High Priests and Priestess in the Third Eye region of the forehead between the eyes.

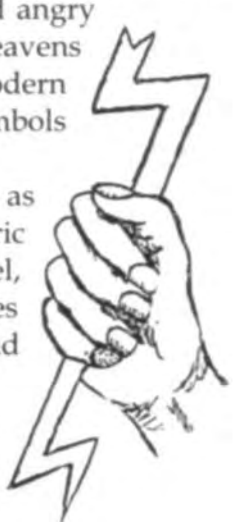

The lightning bolt is the Sign of Zeus, the Father of the mythological deities of Greece. The Nordic peoples worshipped him as Odin.

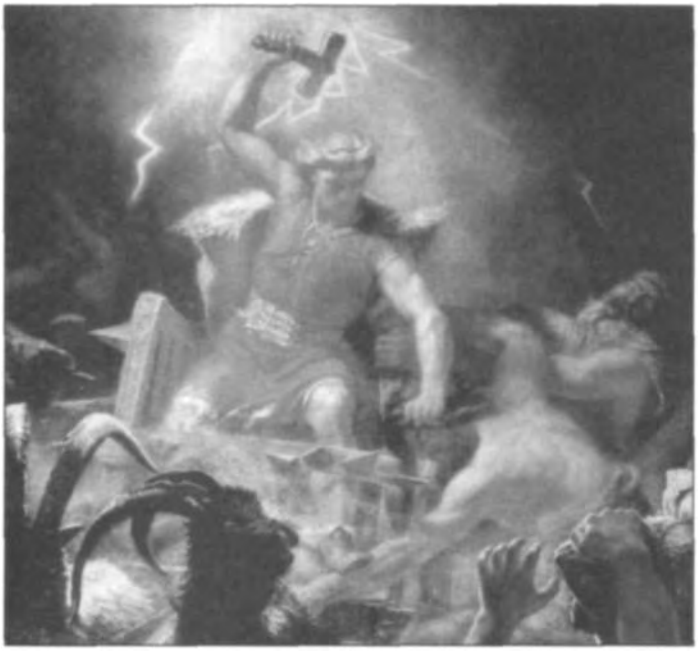

In this classic oil painting we see mighty Thor, the Nordic god, with his hammer and lightning strikes. At bottom, the black color of the horned goats and the hand's grasping on the rock ledge have much occult significance. In Masonry, the use of a gavel, or hammer, is said to be a sign of authority. The Communists in the U.S.S.R. adopted the hammer and sickle as official state logos.

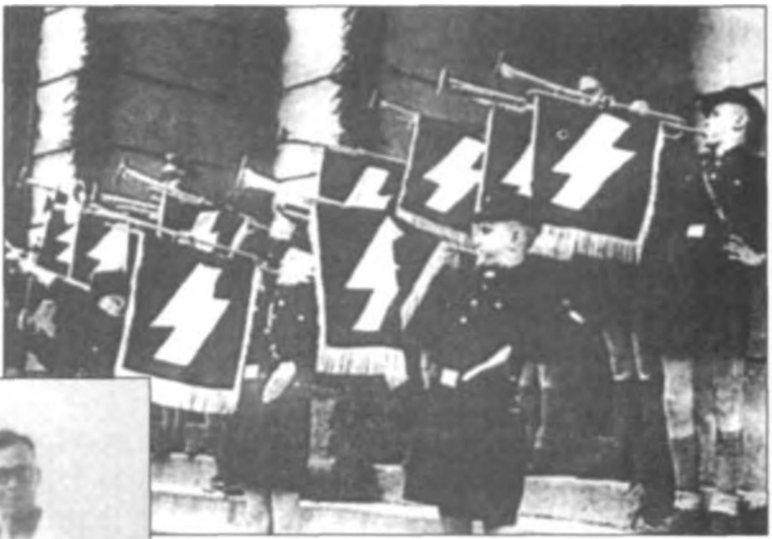

The bugle corps of the Hitler Youth fly the banner of the lightning bolt, an occultic symbol of the ancient Mystery Religions. The lightning bolt is designed as a rigid "S", meaning the secret adoration of Satan.

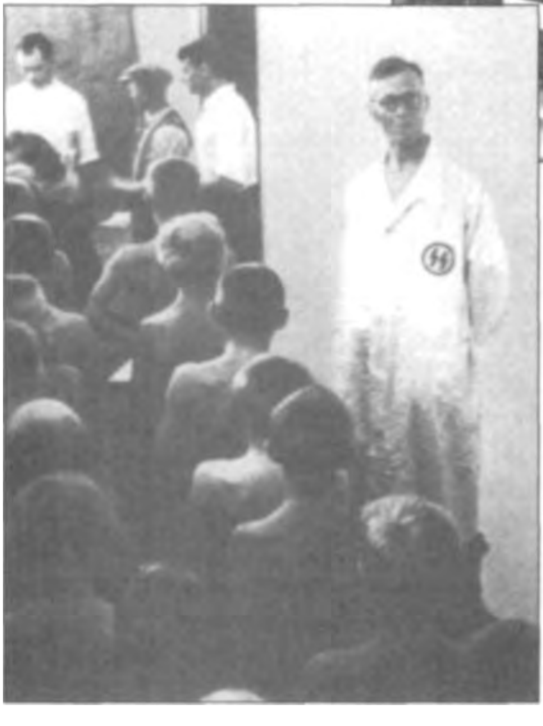

A German Nazi concentration camp doctor helps in the processing of new arrivals. He's wearing a white doctor's smock with the runes symbol (two satanic "S" lightning bolts) inside a circle. (From the book, *Kinsey: Crimes & Consequences*, by Dr. Judith Reisman)

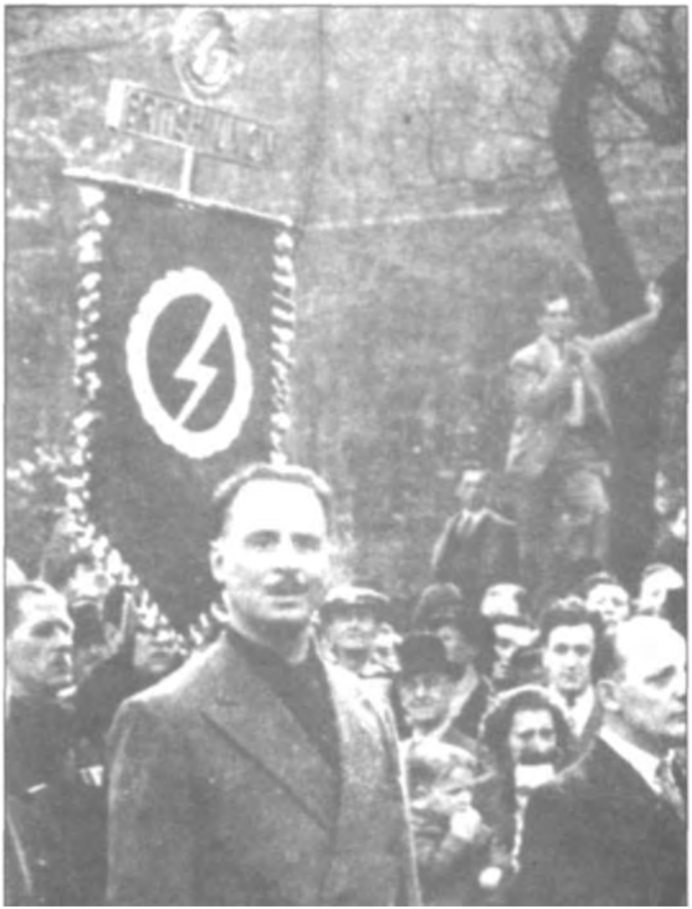

Sir Oswald Moslev, founder of Britain's splinter *New Party,* leading a march in London in 1939. The New Party said it's lightning flash stood for Action and the circle (wreath) around it for Unity, or Union. Fascists rallied around this banner, and many of the goals of the Party were Socialist.

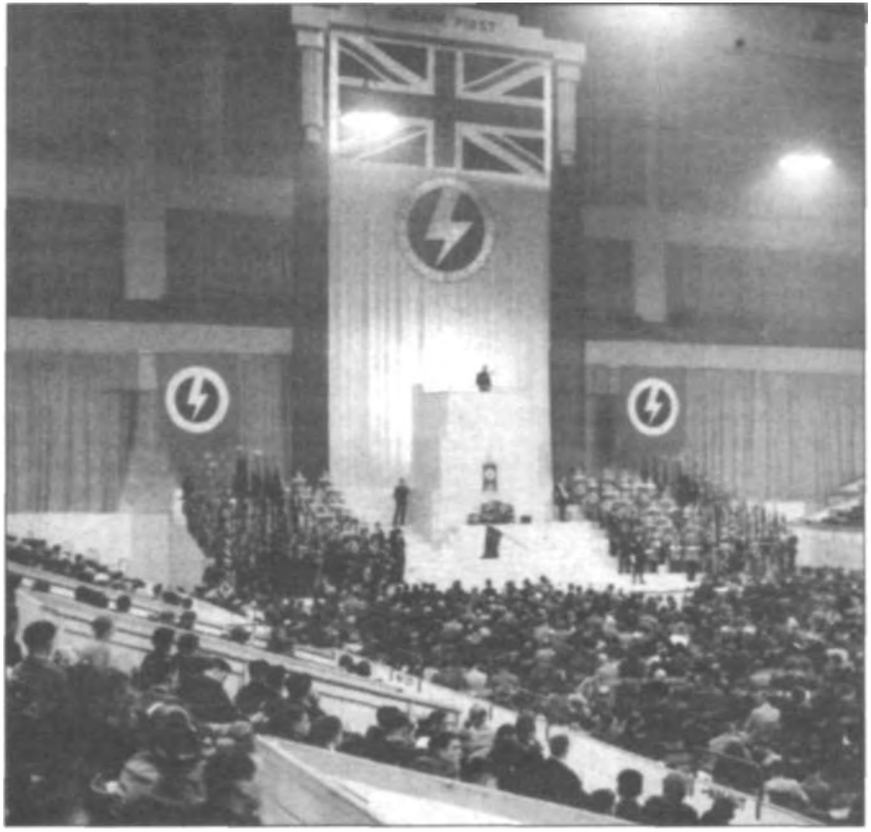

Over 30,000 people attended this rally in Britain under Mosley's New Party and its banner of the lightning bolt and circle. The British flag also is interesting in its masonic design of the Osiris X intersecting a horizontally elongated cross.

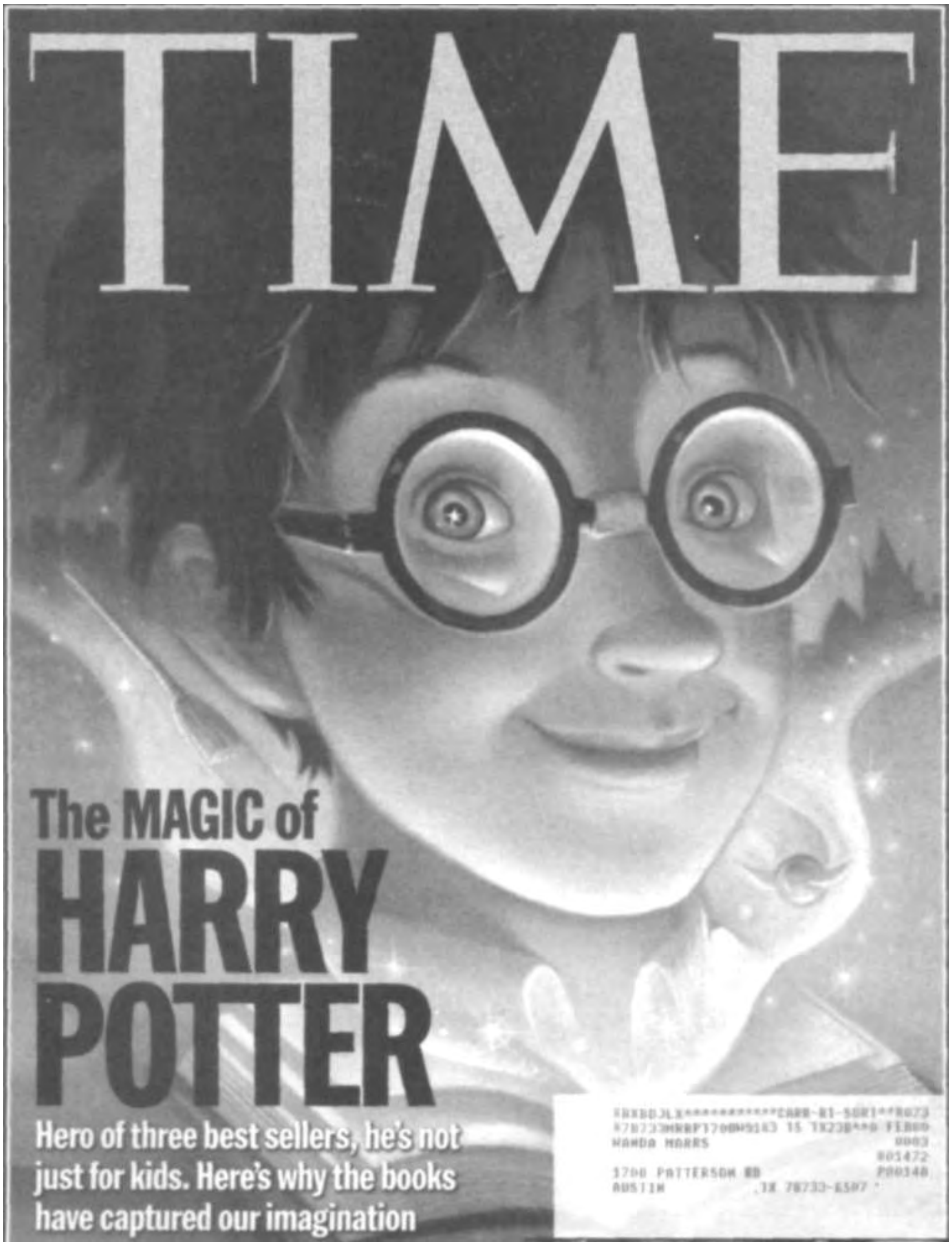
TIME
The MAGIC of
HARRY
POTTER
Hero of three best sellers, he's not just for kids. Here's why the books have captured our imagination

Shoppers and tattooed fans for the new Harry

The lightning bolt has long been a satanic symbol. Its use stems from Jesus' statement in the Holy Scriptures: "I *beheld Satan as lightning fall from heaven" (Luke 10:18).* The Harry Potter books were cleverly packaged to introduce tens of millions of kids to satanic symbols, rituals, and concepts. Here we see Harry Potter, on the cover of *Time* (September 20, 1999) with the lightning bolt *on* his forehead. Inside, in the feature article, is a picture of two tattooed young fans also with thunderbolts on foreheads.

A Harry Potter bookstore display. Again, note the satanic symbol, or mark, on Harry's forehead.

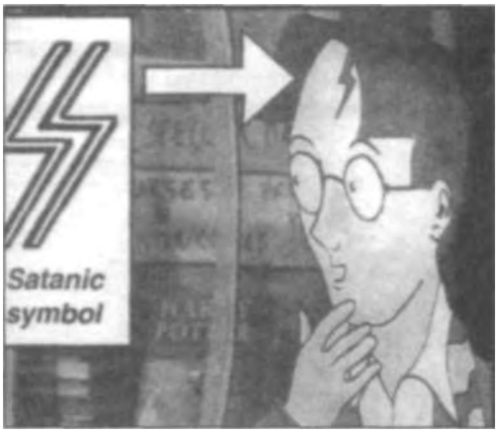

CAST A SPELL.

This full page color ad in *Time* magazine (October 23, 2000) by FTD Florist exemplifies how witchcraft has excited the public imagination. In the upper right corner it is indicated that this ad is based on Disney's Winnie the Pooh, a popular kids creation.

Charles Colson, of Prison Fellowship, received the million dollar, "Progress in Religion" prize at the Parliament of the World's Religions in Chicago. Now he's helping to promote the Harry Potter witchcraft books. Still, official Christendom holds Colson up as the very epitome of Christian example, and his books are sold in almost every Christian bookstore.

Most Christian parents are not hesitating to buy Harry Potter sorcery witchcraft books for their kids. Witchcraft has now virtually conquered the whole of the Christian establishment.

TWENTY-EIGHT

Blood Red—Red Stars, Clenched Fists, Hammers and Sickles, and Other Signs and Symbols of Communist Murderers and Thugs

How is the hammer of the whole earth cut asunder and broken! how is Babylon become a desolation among the nations!...This is the work of the Lord God of hosts...

— *Jeremiah 50:23, 25*

Communism was solely the invention of the Jews.

— Sir Winston Churchill
London Illustrated Herald
(February 8, 1920)

The most brutal, murderous, and monstrous gang of all time was the Communist regime in Soviet Russia, the U.S.S.R. According to noted historian Aleksandr Solzhenitsyn, sixty-six million people perished in the Soviet gulag concentration camps and in the liquidation of the farmers and small businessmen.[1] In contrast, the notorious Adolf Hitler and his Nazis were pikers. The real holocaust happened in the Soviet Union, and many of those deaths and torments occurred before the Nazis had built a single camp. Hitler and Himmler must have been green with envy.

What is most surprising—at least to the uninformed general public—is that few today are even aware of the Soviet Holocaust. Because of the Jewish ownership of the Western media, all the emphasis is put on the crimes of the Nazis. The horrors of the Red Terror are neglected. Maybe more remarkable, in many media and academic circles, the monsters who committed the atrocities in Soviet Russia—led by Lenin, Trotsky, Stalin, Kaganovich, Beria and others—are often adored, being cast in a favorable light. This is especially true of Lenin and, to a lesser extent, the theoretical, so-called "founder" of Communist ideology, the German Karl Marx.

Communist Leaders of Jewish Bloodline

The reason why the Western media, owned and run as it is by Jewish interests, fails to expose the Communist butchery is easy to discern. The instigators and leaders of Communism were virtually all of the Jewish race and bloodline! The Lenin Museum in Russia today admits that Vladimir Lenin was a crypto-Jew (a "crypto Jew is a Jew who keeps his race hidden from public knowledge). Trotsky, his deputy in crime and mass murder, was a Jew who had lived in the Bronx, New York under his real name, Lev Bronstein. Stalin, the third leg of the Soviet troika, was half-Jew, and Yiddish was the only language spoken in his boyhood home in Georgia. Stalin's real surname was Dzhugashvilli—Jewish.[2]

Karl Marx was a German Jew whose grandfather was a rabbi, and the entire Communist Bolshevik revolution was financed by the Jewish Rothschilds and Jewish Warburgs in Germany, in partnership with the Jewish Warburgs and Jewish Schiffs in the United States.

Communism was Jewish from the ground up. Marx's view and his classic texts, *The Capitalists* and *The Communist Manifesto,* were ideological expressions of the Jewish Cabala, which is also the basis for Marx's theory of dialectical materialism and economic class evolution, specific throwbacks to Hegelian dialectics and Weishaupt's Illuminism. Albert Pike's writings in *Morals and Dogma* are also right out of the Jewish Cabala aquarium. It seems that the piranhas, the killer "fish" of humanity, all swam in the same polluted pond: Jewish Cabalism and rabbinical magic and despotism.

From Lenin to Putin, we have a straight-line succession of Jewish Cabalism under the guise of Communism and now, "Democratic Capitalism" under Gorbachev, Yeltsin and Putin.[3]

Writing in his provocative, fact-filled expose, *Bloodlines of the Illuminati,* researcher Fritz Springmeier reveals how incestuously Jewish the rulers of Russia have been, including their spouses. First, he notes that Stalin married the daughter of his number 2 man, the Jew Kaganovich. Also:

> The wife of Boris Yeltsin is the daughter of Joseph Stalin from Stalin's marriage with Rosa Kaganovich. Rosa's father was Illuminati...Boris Yeltsin and Rosa are secretly Jewish.
>
> Lenin was married to a Jewish wife, Krupsakaya. Molotov married a Jewess, too. And Stalin was married to Jewess Kaganovich. Kaganovich's powerful brother

> Lazar is in the Politburo, and Lazar's son, Mikhail Kaganovich, married Stalin's daughter, Svetlana. Boris Yeltsin's original (Jewish name) was Baruch Ellia. He in turn is a good friend of David Rockefeller.[4]

Communism the Invention of Jews

So dominant was the Jewish influence in the Communist regime and its bloody Red Terror that Sir Winston Churchill, in the *London Illustrated Herald* newspaper, stated that, "Communism was solely the invention of the Jews."[5] And, he added, it is not a new thing, for the Jews are historically the people who have fomented bloody revolutions and horrors. Churchill said the Jewish global revolutionary plot can be traced back to the days of Adam Weishaupt and his Bavarian Order of the Illuminati (1776).

Churchill went on to emphasize that this "worldwide conspiracy for the overthrow of civilization, and the reconstruction of society...has been steadily growing." Now, he warns, this band of thugs and murders "have become the undisputed masters of the enormous Russian empire."[6]

Solzhenitsyn records that over 60 percent of the Commissars who headed Gulag camps in the U.S.S.R. were Jewish. Other historians estimate the number at 80 percent. Every leader of the dreaded Checka, KGB and secret police was Jewish, including the butcher Beria.

May Day—Illuminism and Communism

It is interesting to note that that Adam Weishaupt, infamous founder of the Illuminati, founded his group on May 1. It was exactly that day that the Communists under Lenin celebrated. Annually on May 1, the huge May Day parade is held in Moscow.

Is it a mere accident that the most holy day of paganism and witchcraft, Beltane, is also celebrated on May 1? On that day, in pagan Europe, children and adults celebrated around the phallus symbol known as the May Pole, even as witches howled at the moon.[7]

Of Wolves and Freemasons

In his expose of Communism, *Under the Sign of the Scorpion*, Swedish writer and researcher Jiiri Lina, writes how in his last months, a mad Vladimir Lenin, his body and brain racked with the sexually transmitted disease syphilis, demanded each night to be taken out on his balcony in his wheelchair. There, for hours, the angry Lenin would howl and bay at the moon like a wounded wolf.[8]

Lenin, Stalin, Marx and all the other top Communist leaders were all Freemasons. Gorbachev, too, and Yeltsin were Masons, members of the Grand Orient Lodge of France as well as the Soviet Consistory.

Albert Mackey, 33°, former Sovereign Grand Commander, in his authoritative *Encyclopedia of Freemasonry*, states that Alexander Kerensky (Lenin's immediate predecessor) and the other plotters of the 1917 revolution against the Czar were

Masons: "The first Revolution in March 1917 is said to have been operated from these (Masonic) Lodges and all the members of Kerensky's government belonged to them."[9]

All Masonic organizations throughout the world are secretly run by Jewish masters operating behind-the-scenes.[10]

I also have documentation to prove that Marx, Lenin, and most other Communist leaders were homosexual perverts. Most, like Beria, were pedophiles as well, and they all enjoyed brutalizing and degrading women. The wives of these homosexual deviants led miserable lives. One of Stalin's wives committed suicide.[11]

Signs and Symbols of Communism

Seeing as how the Communist founders and leaders have all been apostate Jews into Cabalism, Freemasonry, and blatant satanism (Marx was an official High Priest in a satanic church), we can be sure the signs and symbols of Communism are also of cabalistic/Masonic/satanic origins, as is the color red so fanatically adored by the Communist wackos. Let us now examine these signs and symbols of the Red Murderers, e.g. the Communists.

The Clenched Fist

In all nations where Communist politicians and insurgents operate, these evil men and women invariably identify themselves by making the sign of the clenched fist. Some biblical authorities say that, "The clenched fist represents the (rebellious) attitude of the people of Babylon toward God."[12]

The closed, or clenched fist is, in the Illuminist Philosophy, the symbol of secrecy, dissimulation, and hermeticism. It veils and conceals secrets from the "profane" and the "vulgar" (the non-Illuminists). Interestingly, the meaning is the same in the canons of Buddhism.[13]

Dr. Peter Ruckman, in his fascinating study of things occulticly black and evil, mockingly titled *Black is Beautiful,* comments about the raised, clenched fist:

> You will find this 'salute' being given by all members of the Communist Party in New York, in the 1920s and by the (Stalinist) Abraham Lincoln Brigade, during the civil war in Spain in the 1930s.
>
> By some quirk of 'fate,' this salute was adopted by the Black Panthers in America during the 1960s...the followers of Martin Luther King called it the 'BLACK POWER'salute.[14]

Liberal Afro-American leaders continue to employ this salute to this day. Jesse Jackson does it almost as an automatic response.

The clenched fist salute, or hand sign, is well-known in Freemasonry. The First Sign, or Due-guard, in the ritual of the Select Master Degree is the holding up, or raising, of both arms in an "L" (square) position with the fists of both hands clenched. The lecture for this degree in *Richardson's Monitor of Freemasonry* states:

> The signs of a Select Master are then given as follows: The first is similar to the sign of a Master Mason. The fists are both clenched, in allusion to one of the penalties of the obligation, which is to have both hands chopped off to the stumps.[15]

How interesting. Ironically, according to the Masons, the symbol of the clenched fist relates to having the hand chopped off at the stump. Communists out there: Maybe you should listen to what your cronies in Freemasonry are teaching you.

In the initiation for the Secret Monitor Degree of the Lodge, the sign of the clenched fist is given in remarkably similar fashion to the Communist salute, with one hand and arm.

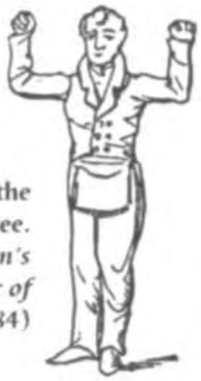

The First Sign in the Select Master's Degree. (From *Richardson's Monitor of Freemasonry*, p. 84)

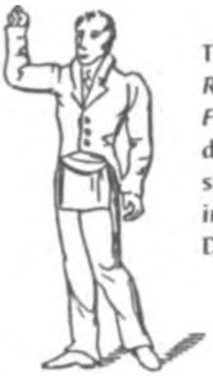

This illustration comes from *Richardson's Monitor of Freemasonry* (p. 93) and demonstrates the clenched-fist sign which is learned by the initiate of the Secret Monitor Degree.

Hammer and Sickle

The sickle is a universal symbol of the Grim Reaper; that is, a symbol of death. However, the Communists would maintain that the hammer and sickle represent workers, or laborers, the proletariat, or common people whom the Communist leadership represents.

Perhaps the hammer has other relevant meanings, however, which are concealed by the satanic Illuminists who sponsored — and continue to sponsor Communism. *The Herder Dictionary of Symbols* says the hammer "symbolizes power and strength" and notes, "In some cultures magical protective powers against evil are ascribed to ritually forged hammers."

Every Masonic Lodge has a gavel, or hammer, wielded by the "Worshipful Master" or other potentate in charge. In her celebrated dark work, *The Secret Doctrine*, Theosophy founder Helena Blavatsky reveals that the god of forces (Lucifer) renders the "divine hammer" and it is the "mallet or gavel of the Grand Masters of Masonic Lodges."[16]

Sarah Terry, a member of the Masonic-aligned group, the Eastern Star, traces the gavel, or hammer, back to the hammer of the Nordic sun god, Thor, and says it is an emblem of power.[17]

If we realize that the Illuminati's chief goal is the rebuilding of Babylon in a desperate bid to undo what God did as recorded in the *Book of Genesis*, the significance of this Bible verse relating to the prophesied destruction of Babylon by God's might becomes clear:

> *A sound of battle is in the land, and of great destruction. How is the hammer of the whole earth cut asunder and broken. How is Babylon become a desolation among the nations...The Lord hath opened his armory, and hath brought forth the weapons of his indignation; for this is the work of the Lord God of Hosts. (Jeremiah 50:22-25)*

Red Star

The Red Star is perhaps Communism's best-known symbol. I have examined the occultic meaning of the five-pointed star in previous chapters, so I simply reiterate here that the star is a sign of false gods and specifically of the god of Illuminism, Lucifer, the solar deity who comes disguised and is worshipped by the deceived Illuminati as "Angel of Light" and as the "Blazing Star."

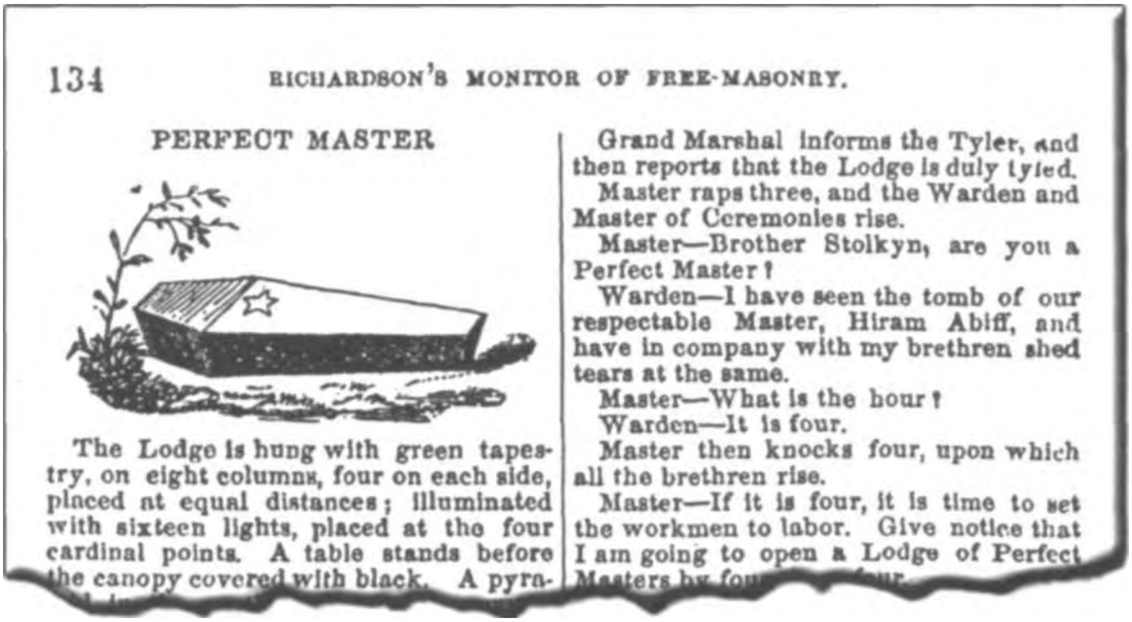

134 RICHARDSON'S MONITOR OF FREE-MASONRY.

PERFECT MASTER

The Lodge is hung with green tapestry, on eight columns, four on each side, placed at equal distances; illuminated with sixteen lights, placed at the four cardinal points. A table stands before the canopy covered with black. A pyra-

Grand Marshal informs the Tyler, and then reports that the Lodge is duly tyled.

Master raps three, and the Warden and Master of Ceremonies rise.

Master—Brother Stolkyn, are you a Perfect Master?

Warden—I have seen the tomb of our respectable Master, Hiram Abiff, and have in company with my brethren shed tears at the same.

Master—What is the hour?

Warden—It is four.

Master then knocks four, upon which all the brethren rise.

Master—If it is four, it is time to set the workmen to labor. Give notice that I am going to open a Lodge of Perfect Masters by fou

In the Perfect Master Degree, the Masons assembled in the Lodge all simulate the drama of lamenting the mythical death of their "brother," the false Christ-figure, the Grand Master Hiram Abiff. Observe the red star on the coffin here. (From *Richardson's Monitor of Freemasonry*, p. 134)

Incidentally, so popular is the Red Star in Russia that in late 2000, under pressure from military brass and segments of public opinion, Vladimir Putin, Russia's President, brought back the Soviet red banner as the military's flag and agreed to reinstate the Soviet-era *red star* as the Russian military's official emblem.

"The star is sacred to all servicemen," said Defense Minister Sergei Ivanov, who spoke at a meeting of Putin's top generals attended by Putin.[18]

Oddly enough—or understandably enough for those in the know—the red star is often seen on U.S.A. military vehicles and uniforms. It became a staple during World War II, under the direction of the Pentagon's "red brass" leadership put in place by Zionist fanatic President Franklin D. Roosevelt and his ever watchful guardian, Jewish financier Bernard Baruch. (No wonder General Eisenhower's West Point yearbook called Ike the "Swedish Jew.")

The Color Red

But why the color red? Could it have a relationship with the Bible's identification of the whore of Babylon as the woman in scarlet?

Also in the Bible, we find that Esau was born red (Genesis 25:25), and God says, "I have hated Esau."

The color red has a long and non-illustrious history of whoredom and violence. In pre-Vedic India the people worshipped a primitive form of Shiva as the "red god" and as "the howler." The god and planet Mars was known by the ancients as the red god.

In Scandinavia, the major god, Odin, had clothing, shield symbols and runes of red color. A hero Viking's death became celebrated on the calendar as a "red-letter day," and thus we have this phrase in common use today.

Robin was the god of witches in the forest and when human sacrifices were made, they were dedicated to Robin redbreast, or the slain Cock Robin.

Updated to more recent times, we find that in her occult book, *A Treatise On The Seven Rays,* Lucis Trust director Alice Bailey taught the occult importance of colors. "The three major rays," she said, "are red, blue, and yellow." The color red, Bailey explained, has to do with "Will, or Power."[19]

In *The Symbolism of Color,* Faber Birren points out the primacy of the color red. He notes:[20]

- In ancient Egyptian religion, the god Shu was red, and red animals symbolized Seth.

- The red poppy was sacred to Ceres, the goddess of the harvest.

- The face of the wine-god Dionysus was sometimes painted red.

In my researches of occult traditions, the color red is always the color of fire and blood, of evil and destruction, and of immorality. Even the Devil is sometimes conceived of as a red beast.

And isn't that what Communism has proven to be—A *red beast?* Even a *Red Dragon?*

Earl Browder, head of the United States Communist Party for sixteen years (1931-1946), giving the Communist salute at the 1936 convention. Browder was a friend of Soviet dictator Joseph Stalin and worked behind the scenes to get President Franklin D. Roosevelt re-elected.

Standing before a U.S. flag displayed for propaganda effect, presidential candidate John Kerry gives the classic Communist, clenched fist salute.

Democratic presidential nominee John Kerry at annual meeting of NAACP.

Kerry
Edwards

U.S. Senator John Edwards, 2004 vice presidential running-mate to Senator John Kerry, gives Communist salute during political campaign speech.

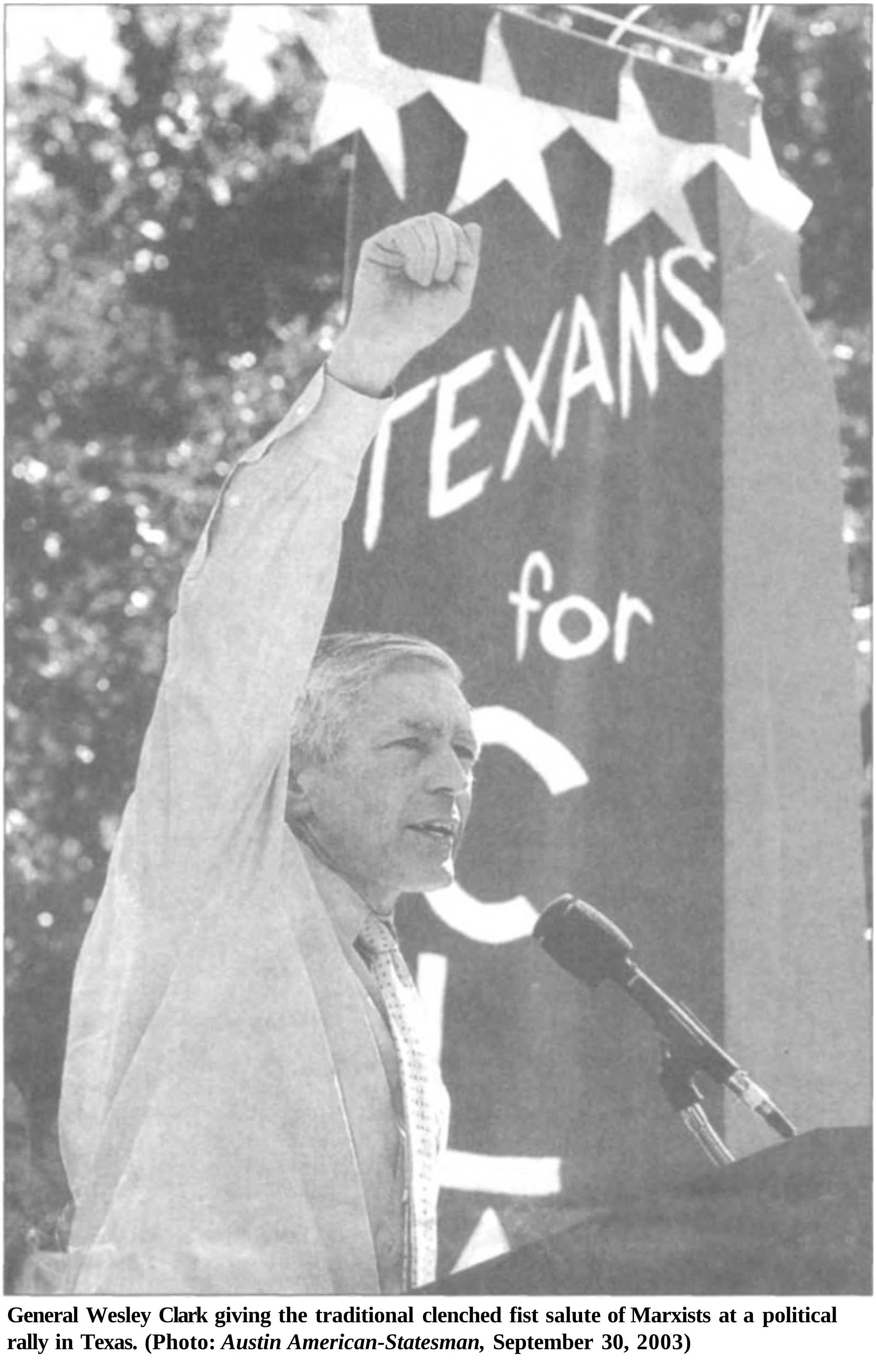

General Wesley Clark giving the traditional clenched fist salute of Marxists at a political rally in Texas. (Photo: *Austin American-Statesman,* September 30, 2003)

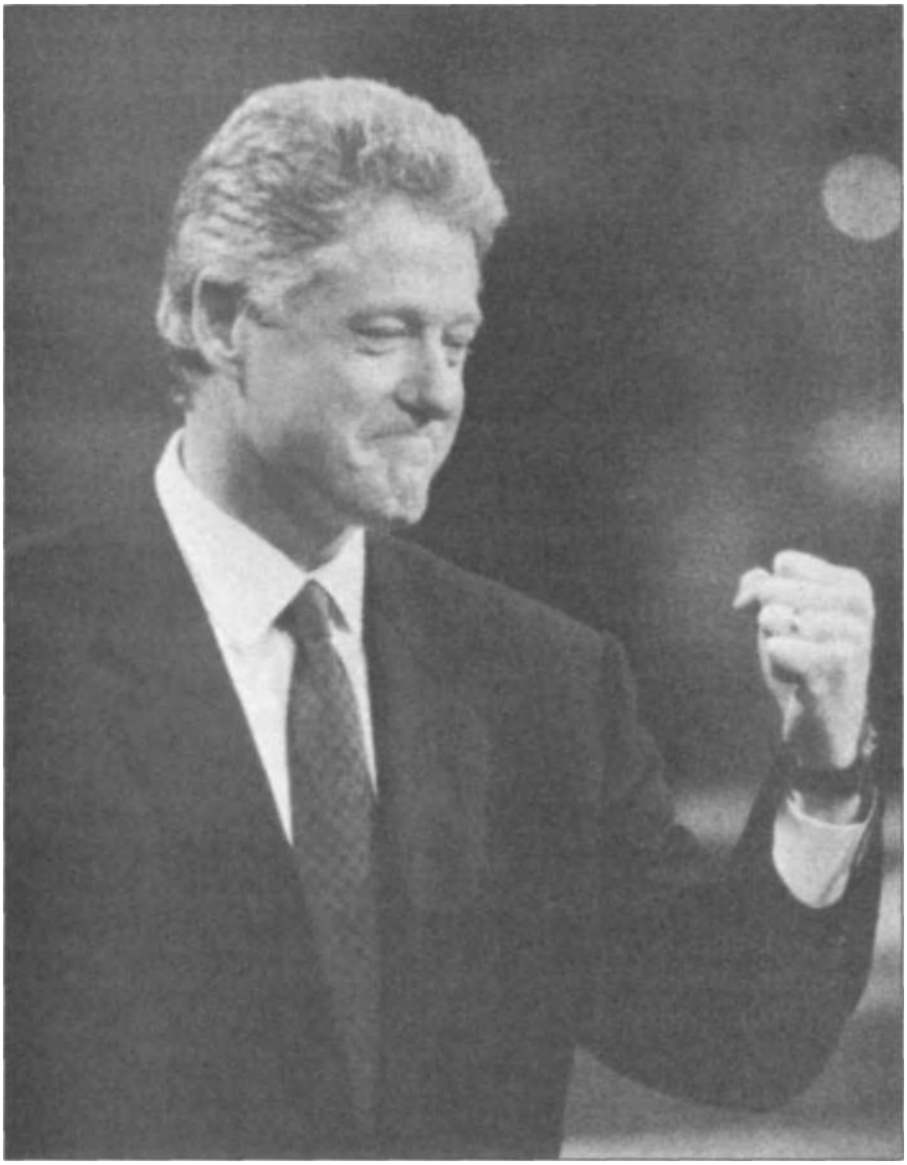

President Bill Clinton giving the Communist fist in 1993.

From boyhood, the elite managed and groomed the young Bill Clinton for stardom. How many young men at age 16 got the opportunity to go to Washington, D.C. and have the photo opportunity of shaking hands with President John F. Kennedy? A few years later, college student Clinton marched in communist protest demonstrations.

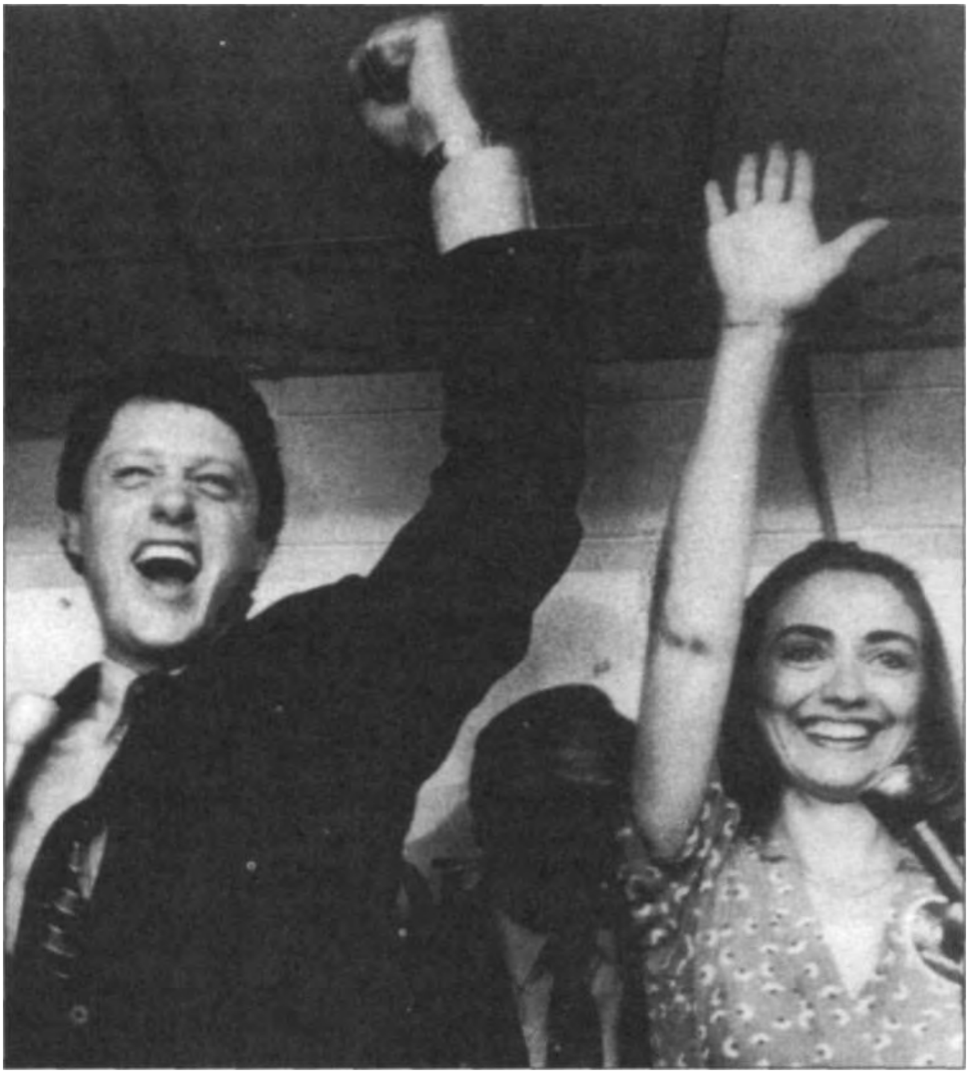

Bill Clinton, an Illuminatus, was made the youngest governor in the history of Arkansas. Here he is in 1982 with Hillary after winning the governor's mansion.

The late New York Congresswoman Bella Abzug was a hardened lesbian, a feminist, and a dedicated Communist. Abzug and Hillary Clinton were dear friends.

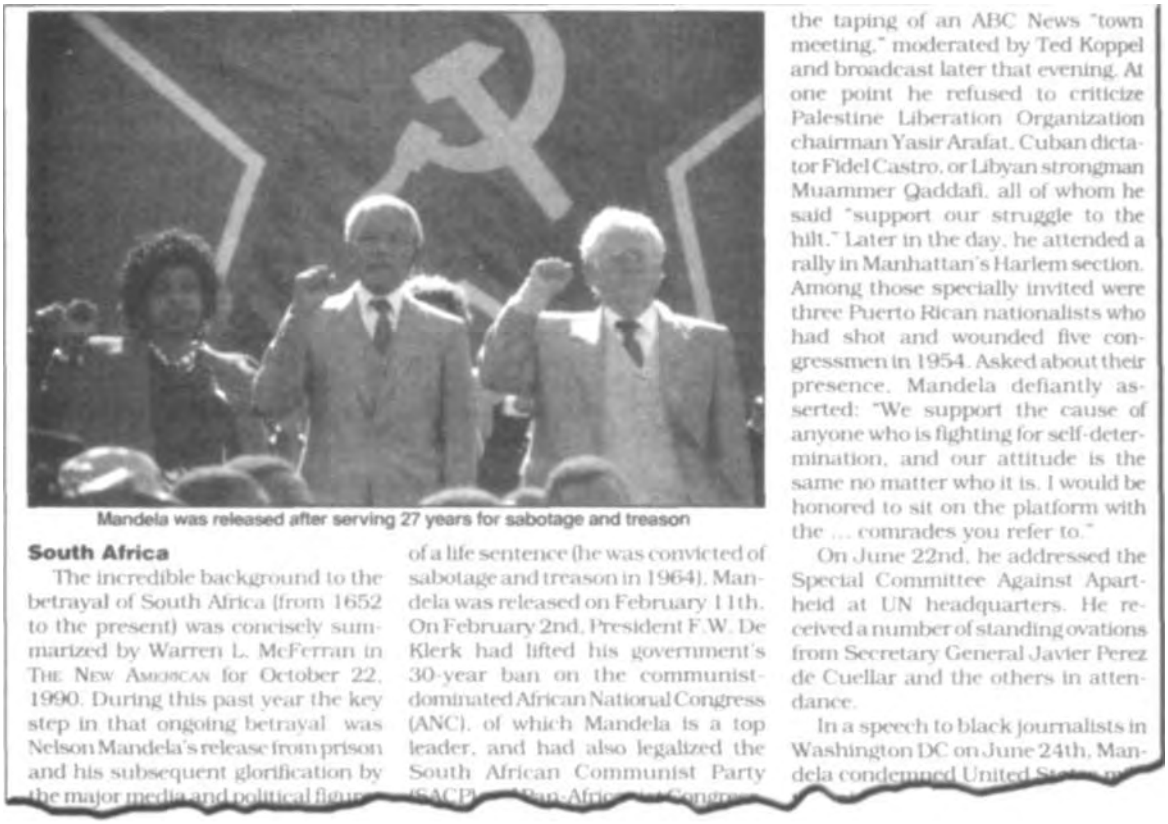

Mandela was released after serving 27 years for sabotage and treason

South Africa

The incredible background to the betrayal of South Africa (from 1652 to the present) was concisely summarized by Warren L. McFerran in THE NEW AMERICAN for October 22, 1990. During this past year the key step in that ongoing betrayal was Nelson Mandela's release from prison and his subsequent glorification by the major media and political figu

of a life sentence (he was convicted of sabotage and treason in 1964). Mandela was released on February 11th. On February 2nd, President F.W. De Klerk had lifted his government's 30-year ban on the communist-dominated African National Congress (ANC), of which Mandela is a top leader, and had also legalized the South African Communist Party (SACP)

the taping of an ABC News "town meeting," moderated by Ted Koppel and broadcast later that evening. At one point he refused to criticize Palestine Liberation Organization chairman Yasir Arafat, Cuban dictator Fidel Castro, or Libyan strongman Muammer Qaddafi, all of whom he said "support our struggle to the hilt." Later in the day, he attended a rally in Manhattan's Harlem section. Among those specially invited were three Puerto Rican nationalists who had shot and wounded five congressmen in 1954. Asked about their presence, Mandela defiantly asserted: "We support the cause of anyone who is fighting for self-determination, and our attitude is the same no matter who it is. I would be honored to sit on the platform with the ... comrades you refer to."

On June 22nd, he addressed the Special Committee Against Apartheid at UN headquarters. He received a number of standing ovations from Secretary General Javier Perez de Cuellar and the others in attendance.

In a speech to black journalists in Washington DC on June 24th, Mandela condemned United

South African leader Nelson Mandela, a devoted Communist, with Communist radical wife, Winnie and the head of the Communist Party.

Nelson Mandela and wife, Winnie, give the Marxist salute. Winnie Mandela was known to participate in torture sessions and directed a number of "necklace parties"—events at which a tied up victim has a tire full of gasoline around his neck which is lit by fire. (Photo: from book, *In The Words of Nelson Mandela,* edited by Jennifer Williams, Carol Publishing Group, 1998, p. 43)

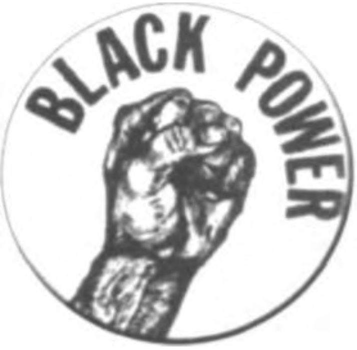

"Black Power" symbol.

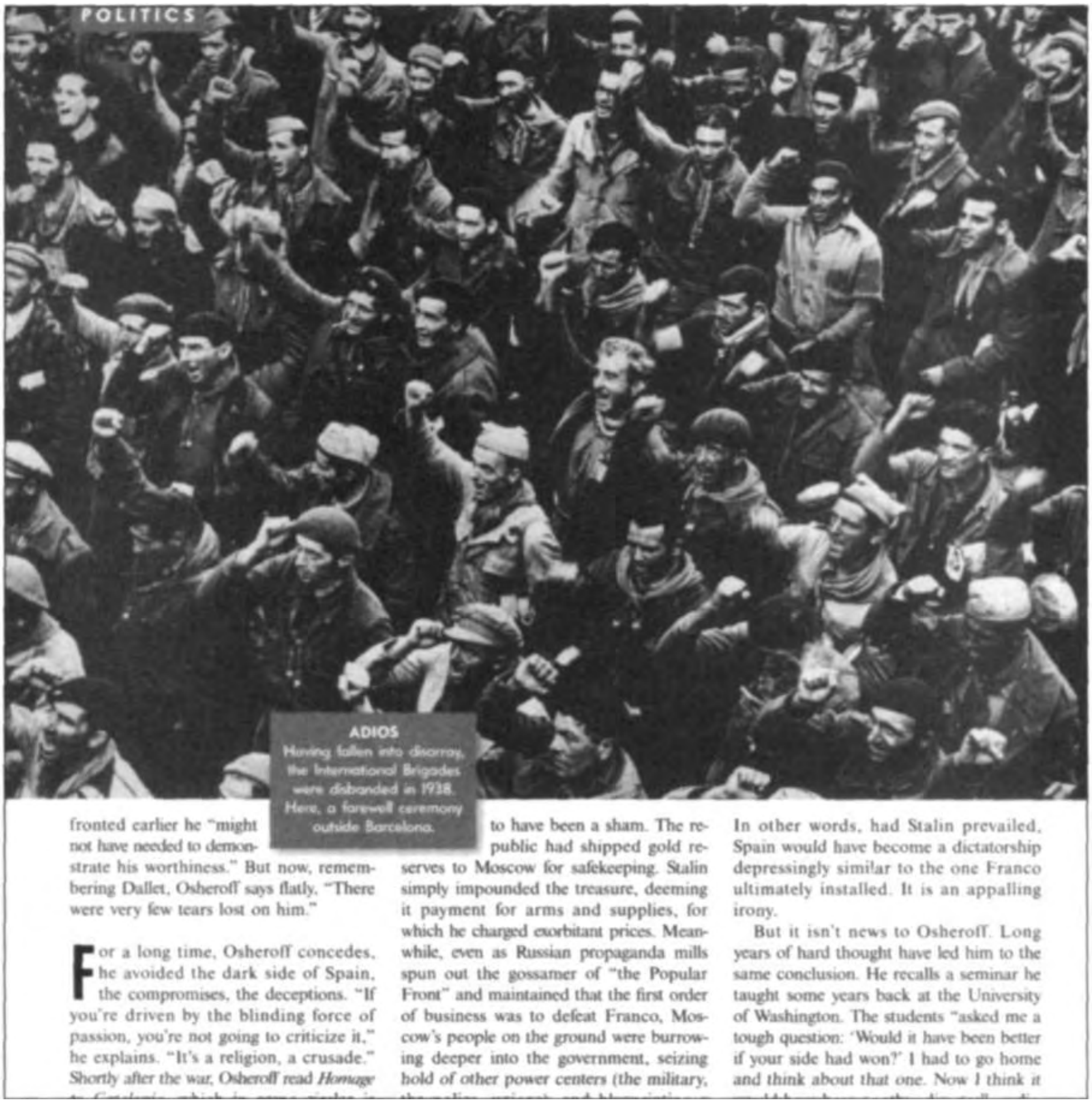

POLITICS

ADIOS
Having fallen into disarray, the International Brigades were disbanded in 1938. Here, a farewell ceremony outside Barcelona.

fronted earlier he "might not have needed to demonstrate his worthiness." But now, remembering Dallet, Osheroff says flatly. "There were very few tears lost on him."

For a long time, Osheroff concedes, he avoided the dark side of Spain, the compromises, the deceptions. "If you're driven by the blinding force of passion, you're not going to criticize it," he explains. "It's a religion, a crusade." Shortly after the war, Osheroff read *Homage*

to have been a sham. The republic had shipped gold reserves to Moscow for safekeeping. Stalin simply impounded the treasure, deeming it payment for arms and supplies, for which he charged exorbitant prices. Meanwhile, even as Russian propaganda mills spun out the gossamer of "the Popular Front" and maintained that the first order of business was to defeat Franco, Moscow's people on the ground were burrowing deeper into the government, seizing hold of other power centers (the military,

In other words, had Stalin prevailed, Spain would have become a dictatorship depressingly similar to the one Franco ultimately installed. It is an appalling irony.

But it isn't news to Osheroff. Long years of hard thought have led him to the same conclusion. He recalls a seminar he taught some years back at the University of Washington. The students "asked me a tough question: 'Would it have been better if your side had won?' I had to go home and think about that one. Now I think it

The Communist Party's International Brigades fought a bloody civil war in Spain. Here are some of the merciless Red thugs at a rally in Barcelona in 1938 (Photo: *Vanity Fair,* September 2001, p. 302)

Islamic cleric Ayatollah Khomeni, his hand clenched in the Communist style in this poster, led the nation of Iran until his death.

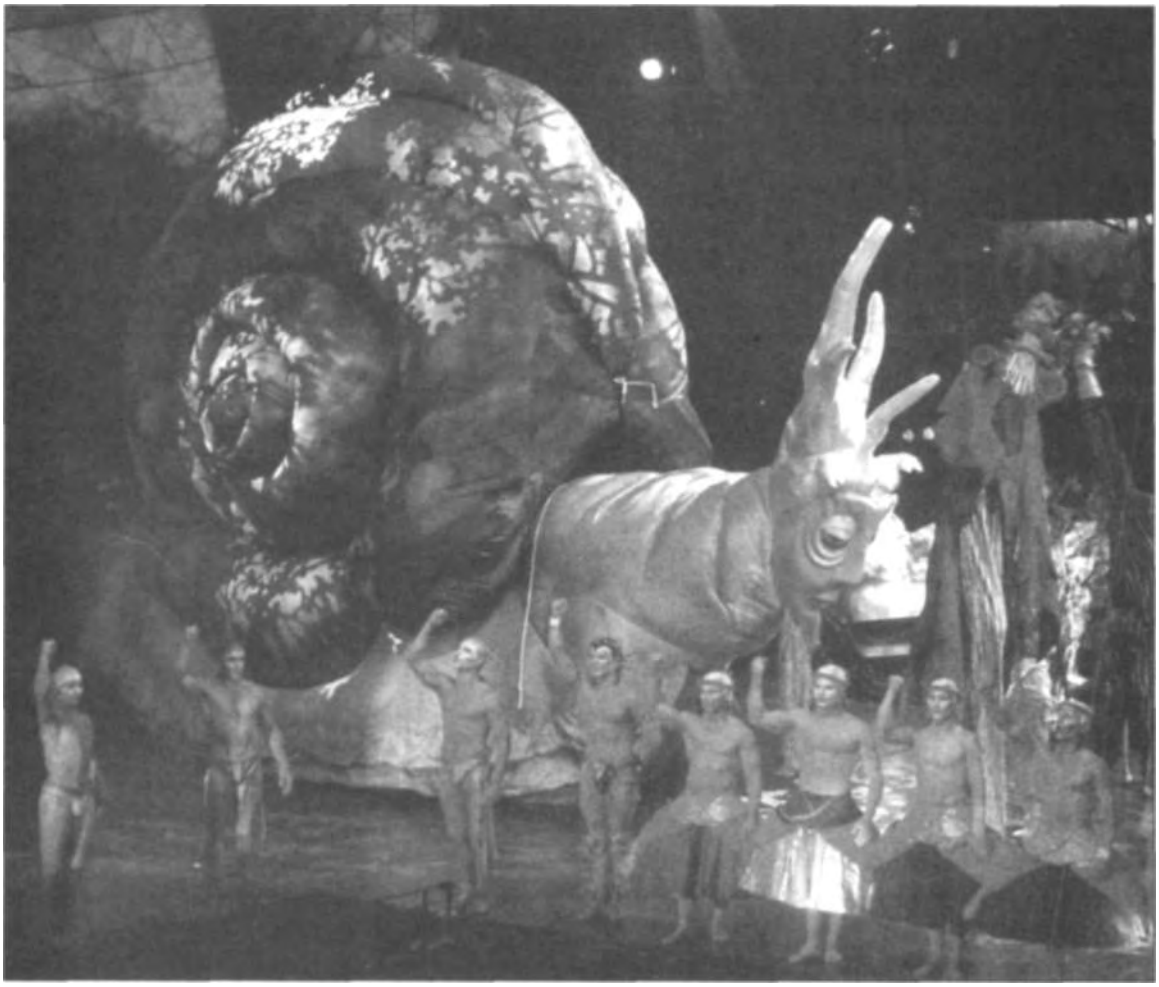

Performers of the Cirque du Soleil give the clenched fist salute. Cirque du Soleil (Circus of the Sun) is a big hit with their dazzling theatre in shows in Las Vegas. The demonic influence in their performances is thick.

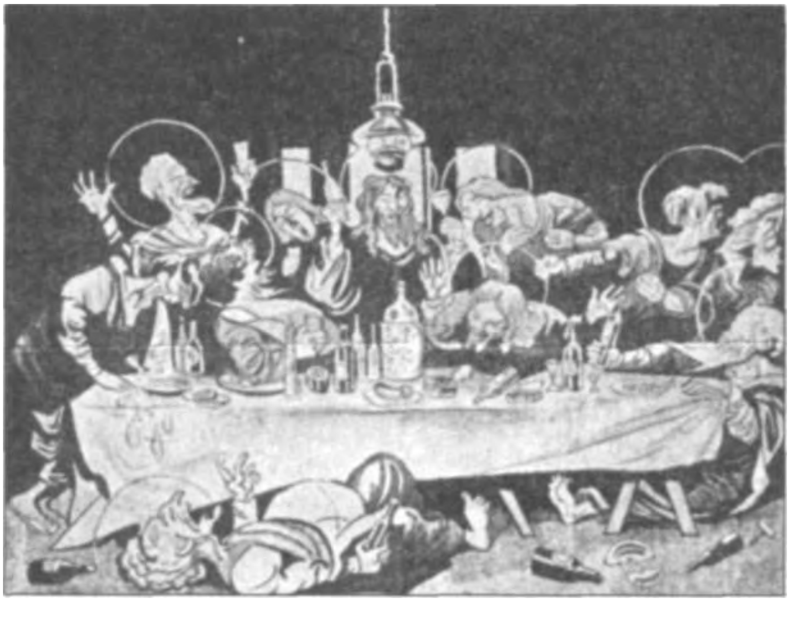

Communist hatred of Jesus and of Christianity is evidenced by this disgusting Soviet depiction of The Last Supper, with Jesus and His disciples having a drunken orgy. The Soviet leadership was made up of Revolutionary Jews.

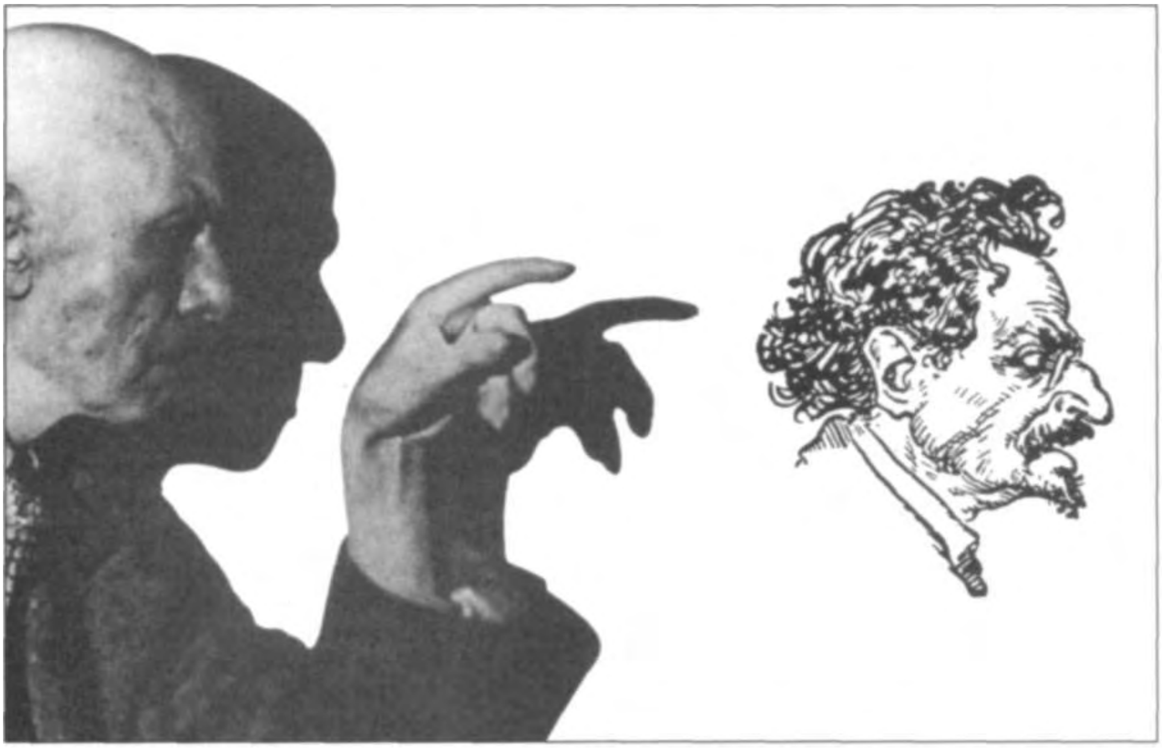

The resemblance of the monstrous Communist butcher Leon Trotsky (right) to the shadow devil creature created by the hand of British satanic high priest Aleister Crowley (left) is remarkable. The drawing of Trotsky is from a Greek publication while the photo of Crowley is found in an unrelated British-published book. In fact, Trotsky, whose real name was Bronstein (Jewish) was a satanist, which is why he was so thrilled to see countless thousands of Russian and other Christians arrested, tortured, killed, or sent to gulag concentration camps. Trotsky was himself murdered in Mexico City by an assassin wielding an axe.

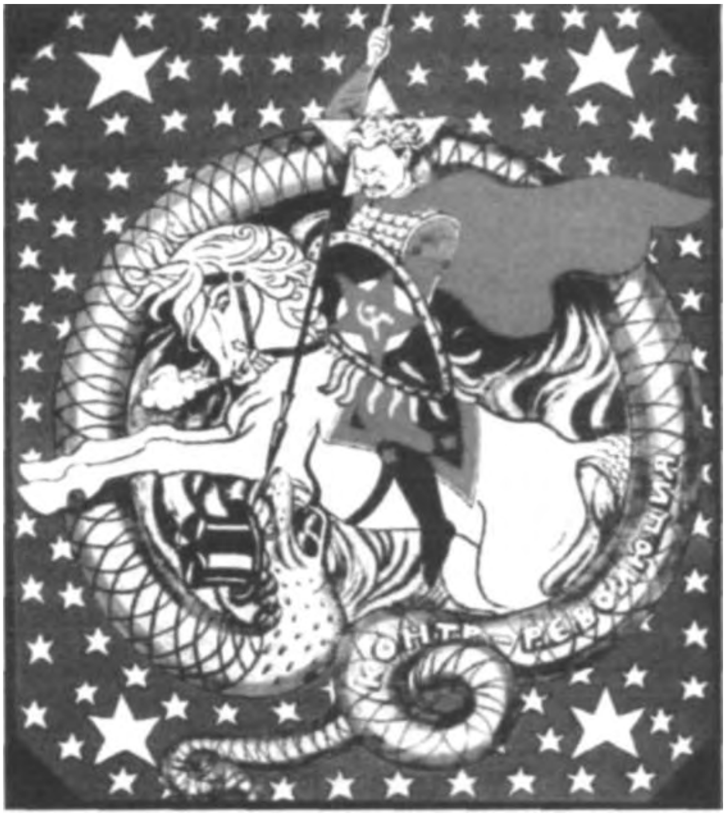

Star god of Communism? This 1920 propaganda poster by a Communist artist depicts Trotsky as Saint George slaying the dragon of capitalism. In reality, Jewish capitalists, the Warburgs and Rothschilds, were the ones who put Trotsky, Lenin, and Stalin and their Red Terror in power in Moscow in 1917. Trotsky and his cohorts *were* servants of the dragon!

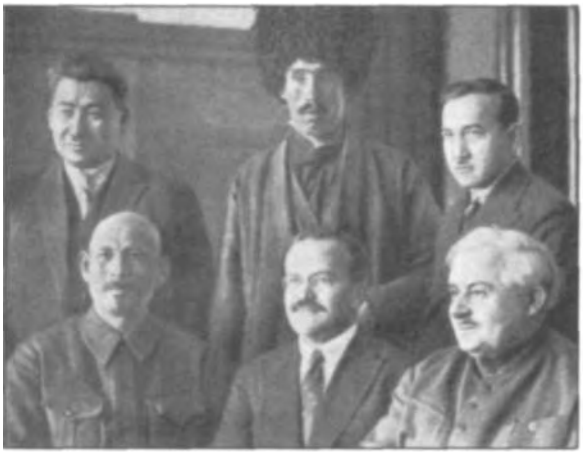

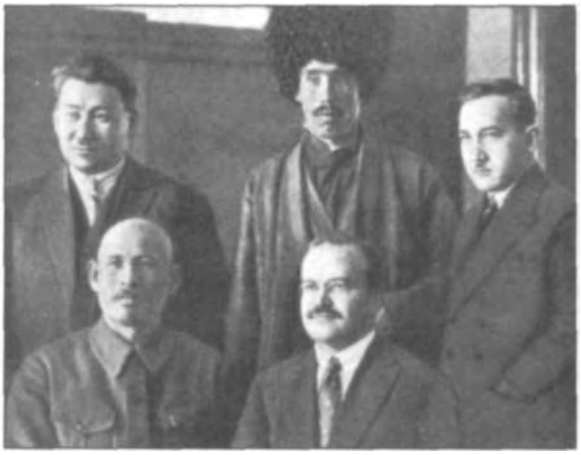

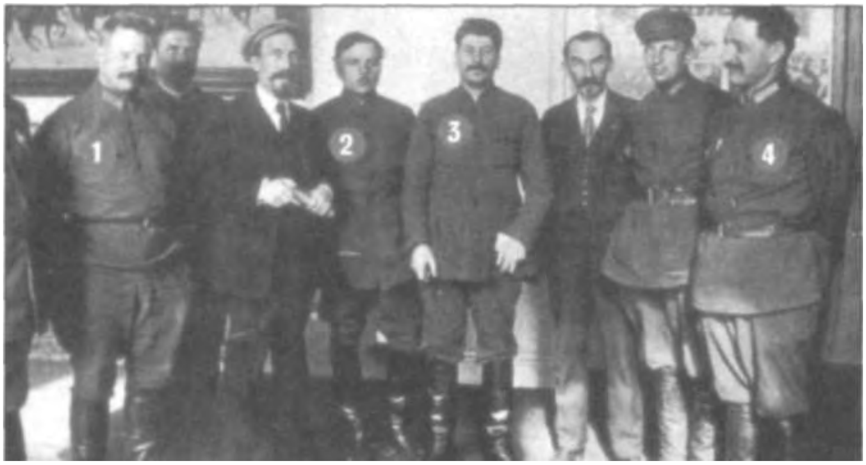

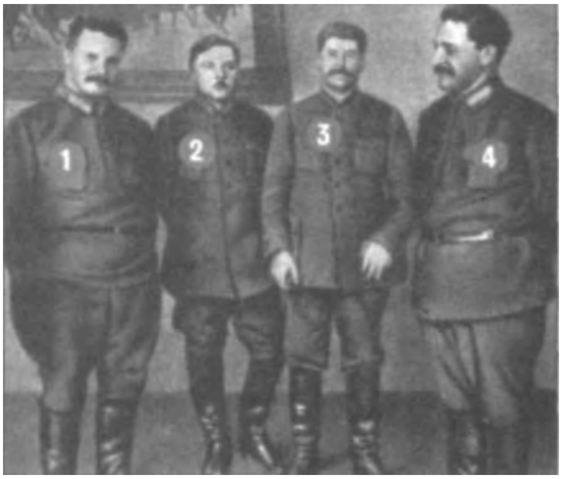

Vanishing Comrades: **The Illuminati throughout the centuries have falsified history. Want proof? Check out these two sets of Soviet-era photographs. Compare the first photo in each set with the corresponding second photo. Notice someone missing? The second photo is the touched up, "remaking of history" photo. Having purged and killed off certain "comrades," the Illuminati inspired Soviet leaders felt obligated to remove all traces of the disgraced comrades from history. Textbooks, library archives, press accounts all had to be changed, much like Orwell's *1984* black hole procedures. Today, in both the East and the West, the same historical falsification process continues, with the true accounts of cardinal events like Pearl Harbor attack, the JFK assassination and the 9/11 World Trade Center disaster being doctored and retouched by the elite's media puppets. (Note: For the eye-opening account of Soviet Communist falsification of history, see the book, *The Commissar Vanishes,* Metropolitan; Also see *Newsweek,* November 10, 1997, p. 80)**

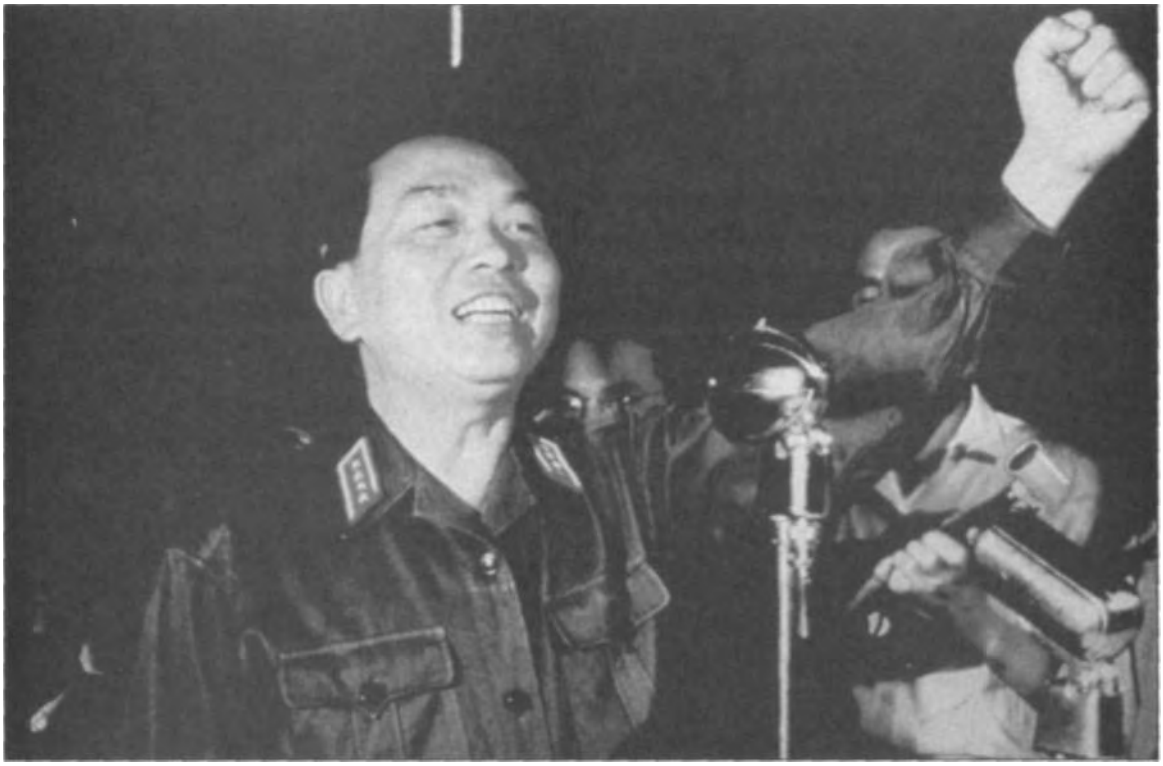

General Vo Nguyen Giap was North Vietnam's legendary guerilla leader whose rag tag armies successively drove the Japanese, the French and the Americans out of Vietnam. Giap co-founded the Vietnamese Communist Party. (Note: The design of the Vietnam flag is a 5-pointed star against a red background.)

Russian President Boris Yeltsin displays the fist of Soviet Communism while speaking in 1992 to a joint session of the U.S. Congress. The Senators and Representatives responded with prolonged applause. (Photo and story: *The Washington Post,* June 18, 1992, p. 1)

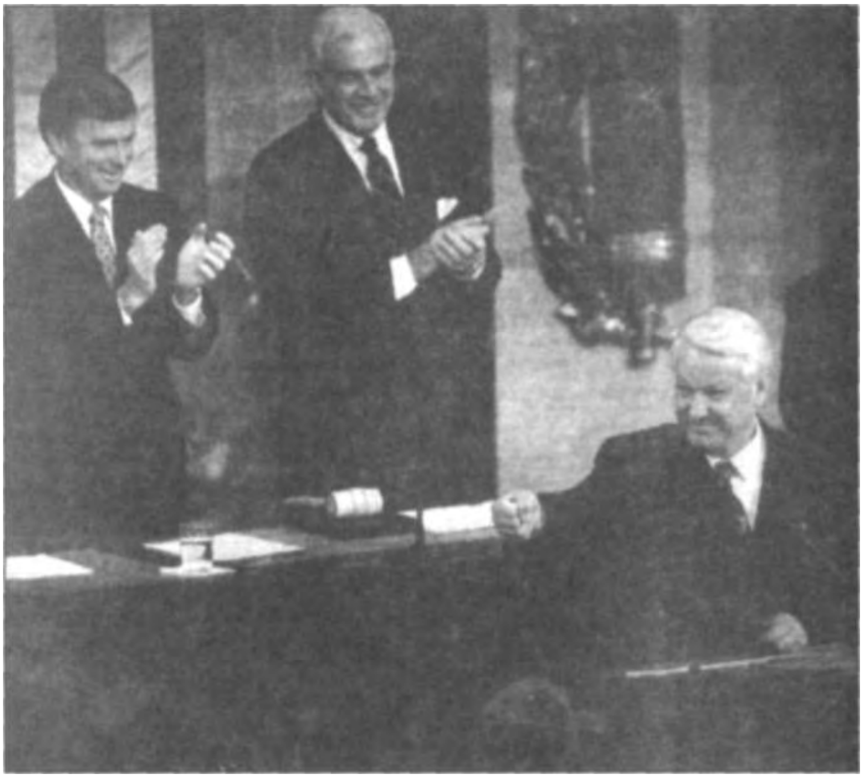

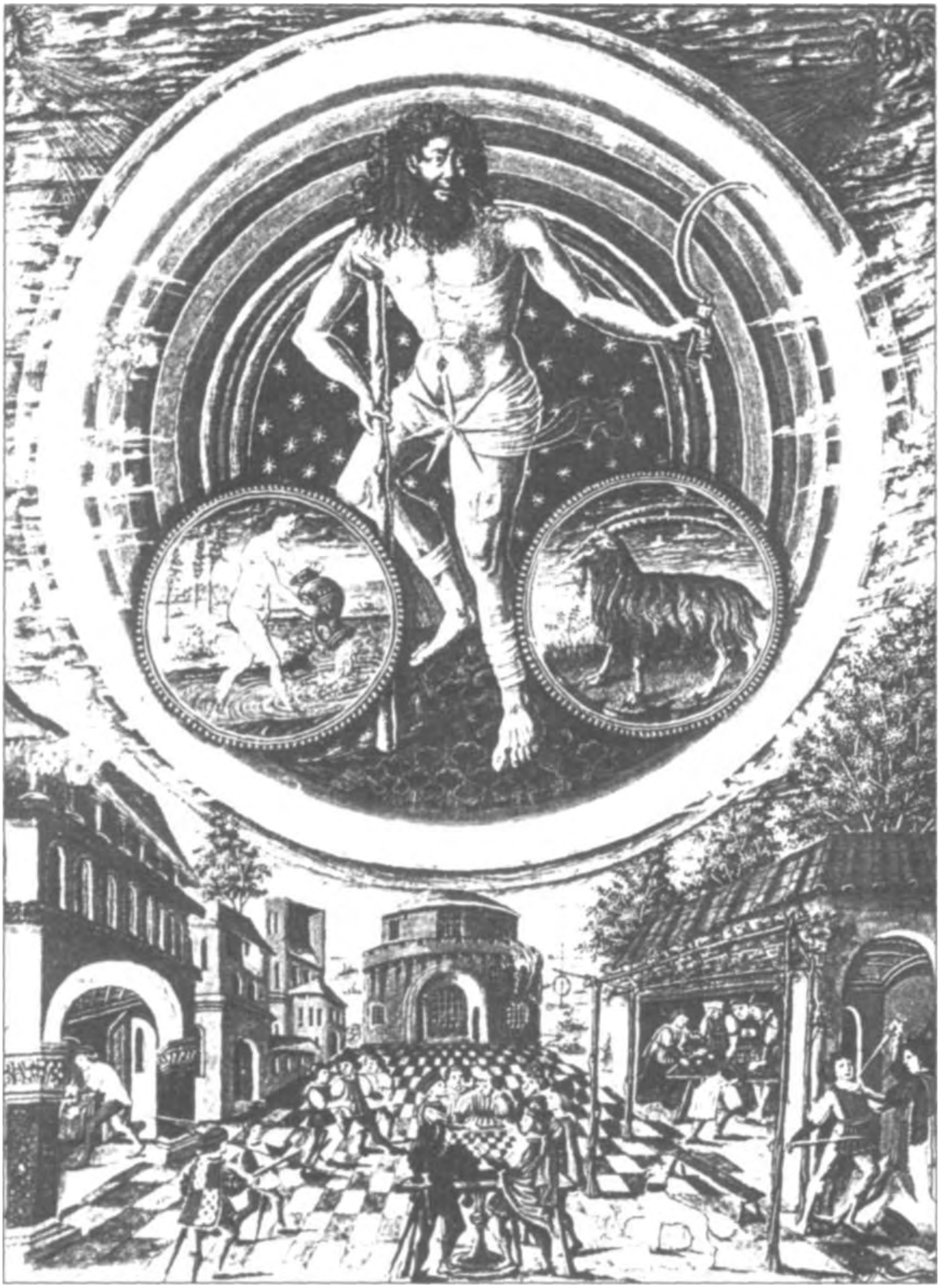

The Communists adopted both the hammer and sickle and the red star for their official logos, or symbols. The ancient god Saturn, depicted here in a 15th century drawing, was said to carry the sickle as the symbol of death. Note also the radiant star in Saturn's genital area, the horns of the goat (Satan) and the water bearer (Satan's astrological Age of Aquarius). Occultists view the planet Saturn as representing Satan, because it is the *sixth* planet from the son and because of Saturn's role as taught in the mythologies.

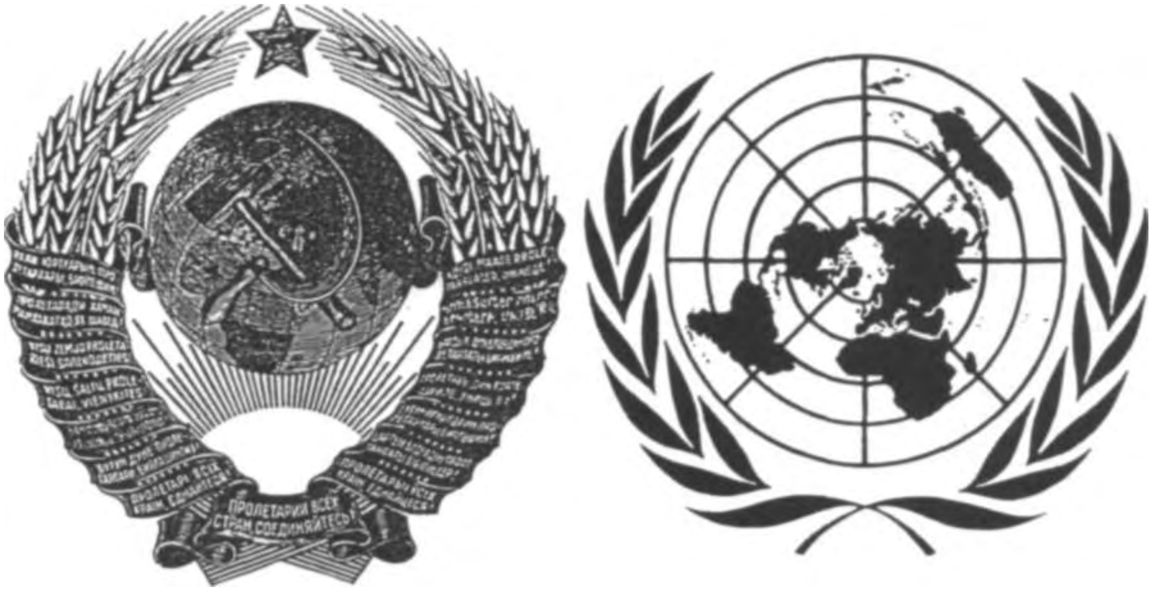
ПРОЛЕТАРИИ ВСЕХ СТРАН СОЕДИНЯЙТЕСЬ!

The similarity of the USSR emblem and the United Nations emblem is undeniable. A friend tells me a resemblance is also found on products and in commercials for *Cadillac* automobiles, *Lenox* china, *George Dickel* whiskey, *Winston* cigarettes, and on the design of "wheat" pennies.

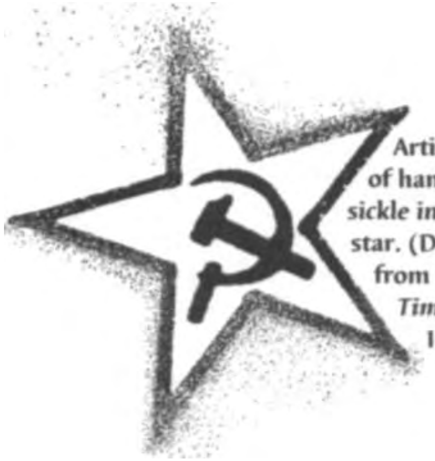

Artist depiction of hammer and sickle inside of red star. (Drawing from *In These Times*, March 12, 1994)

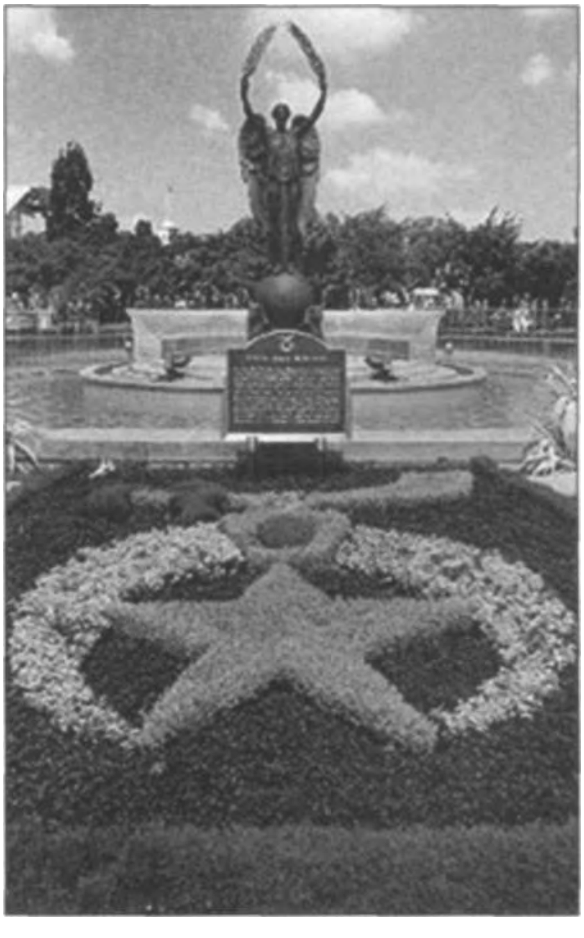

The Shriners, an Islamic-oriented Freemasonry organization whose members take an oath at the altar of Allah, erected and dedicated The Peace Monument in Toronto, Canada in 1930. Observe how the globe, the angel's arms position and the sheathes in the angel's hands are elements found in both the U.S.S.R. and the U.N. emblems. The statue is called "Lady of Peace," just as the U.S.S.R. called itself a peace-loving country and the U.N. proclaims itself to be devoted to world peace. (Photo: from book, *Parade to Glory—The Shriners and Their Caravan to Destiny*, by Fred van Deventor)

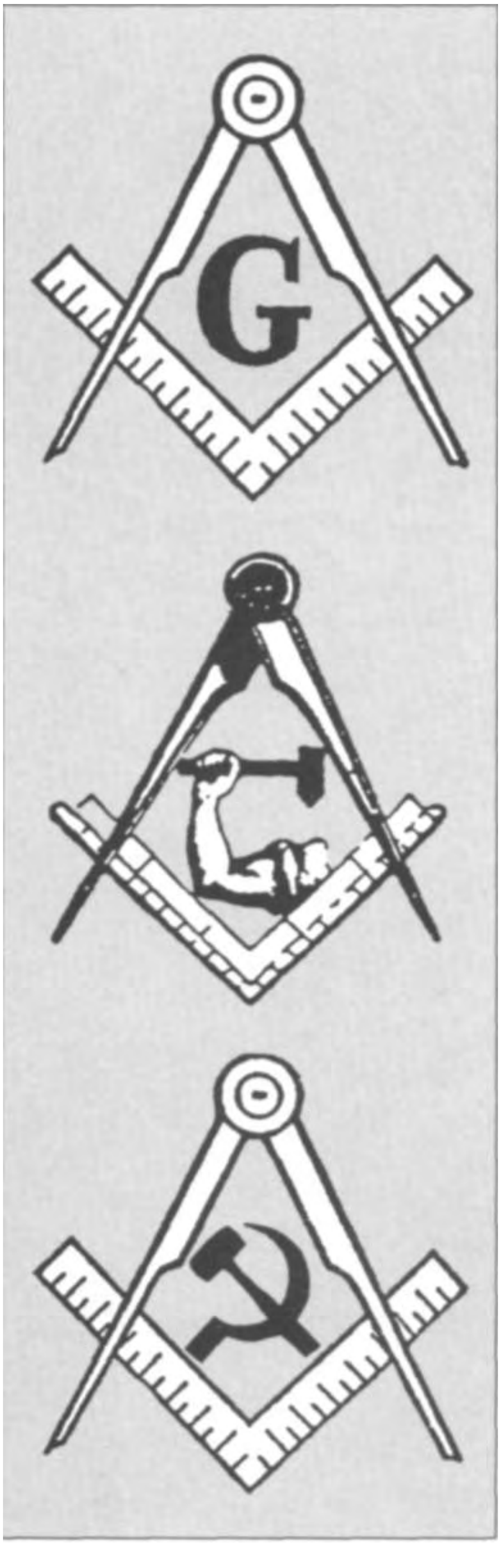

In his thoughtful, eye-opening book, *Scarlet and the Beast,* knowledgeable Christian author and conspiracy researcher John Daniel illustrates the communist connection with Freemasonry. The most prominent emblem of universal Freemasonry is the square and compass with the letter "G" inside the internal triangle. Daniel notes that this represents the tools used by the Lodge's Great Architect (false God) to create the heavens and the earth. In reality, the letter *"G"* represents Gnosticism, the core doctrine of Masonry, and the Generative process (sex act). Masonry is, as Daniel notes, a sex cult.

However, English Freemasonry (the United Lodge of Britain) substitutes a human arm wielding a hammer in place of the "G." This arm and hammer represents the Mason as the Builder, as "man at work" creating the heavens and the earth. Thus, man becomes God. The arm and hammer is of socialist/communist origins. The same symbol is found on a bestselling brand of baking soda. Noted communist financier and oil corporation CEO Armand Hammer was given his name in honor of the communist movement. Note, too, that the arm and hammer symbol inside the square and compass is configured as a "G."

Finally, we come to the modified square and compass of French Freemasonry and its Grand Orient Lodge. This Lodge and its membership are decidedly anti-Christian and are markedly pro-communist. In 1877, the Grand Orient Lodge declared, "There is no god but humanity." Embracing Reason as their God, they replaced the "G" with the now-familiar communist symbol of the hammer and sickle. This represents collective common man, the proletariat. John Daniel points out that the French Lodge's substituted symbol inside the typical square and compass forms the letter "G" backward, "which is symbolic of the negation of God." It was Albert Pike who wrote, in *Morals and Dogma,* that there is no real person or entity named "Satan." Pike claimed that Satan is simply a Force, the negation of God. (Illustrations: *Scarlet and the Beast,* by John Daniel, published 1994, JKI Publishing, P. O. Box 131480, Tyler, TX 75713)

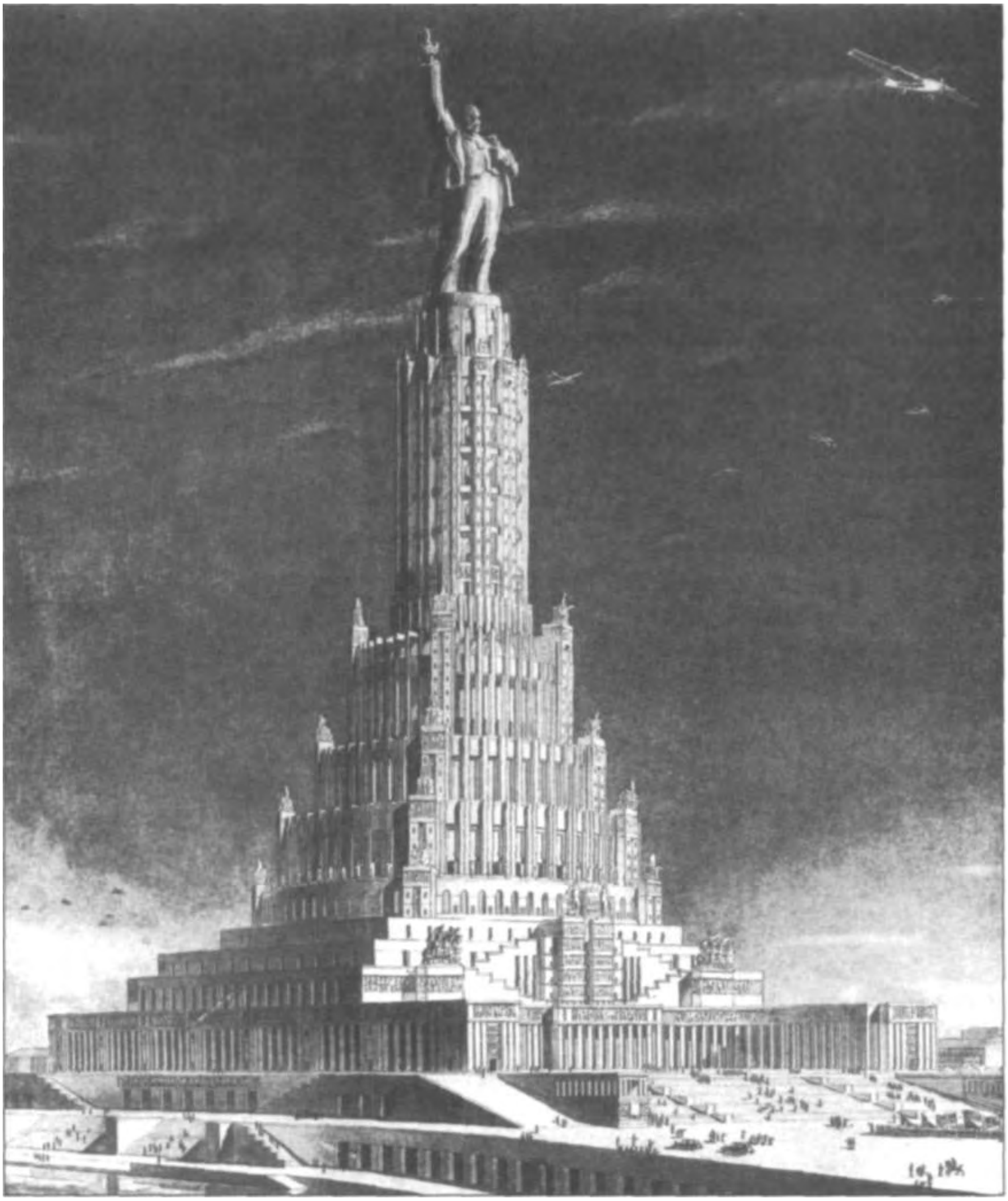

In a vain and failing effort to lionize and deify their bloodthirsty founder, the communist Jew Vladimir Lenin, the U.S.S.R. planned to build this gigantic memorial to the dead Soviet dictator. Josef Stalin, Lenin's successor, in 1931, commissioned architect Boris Iofan to do the design work. It was to be the largest building in the world and was to be called the Palace of the Soviets. The design favors that of Mayan pyramids and the ziggurats of Babylon. The site chosen for the Lenin monument was a piece of land on which a closed-down Christian church building sat, the 19th century Cathedral of Christ the Savior. Stalin ordered the church blown up and the debris removed, and it was. However, World War II intervened and the gargantuan, monstrous structure was never completed. At the top of the planned monument, a statue of Lenin was to tower above the people and landscape, his right hand and finger vertically pointed upward toward the heavens. Possibly this was a fulfillment of scripture. In Isaiah 14, Lucifer vainly boasts that his kingdom will ascend to the stars and that he will be like the Most High. But Lucifer's true destiny is the pit of hell!

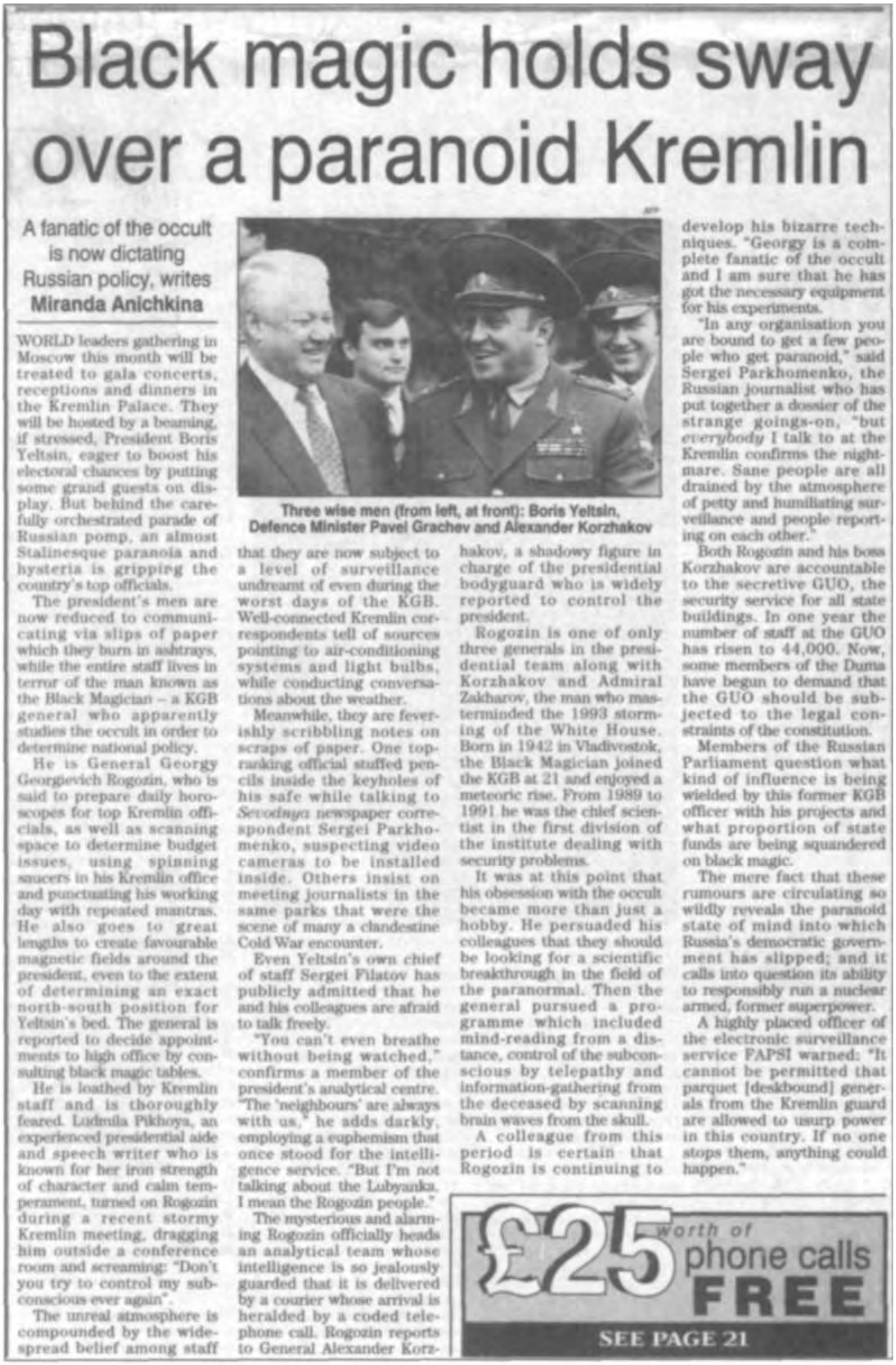

Black magic holds sway over a paranoid Kremlin

A fanatic of the occult is now dictating Russian policy, writes **Miranda Anichkina**

Three wise men (from left, at front): Boris Yeltsin, Defence Minister Pavel Grachev and Alexander Korzhakov

WORLD leaders gathering in Moscow this month will be treated to gala concerts, receptions and dinners in the Kremlin Palace. They will be hosted by a beaming, if stressed, President Boris Yeltsin, eager to boost his electoral chances by putting some grand guests on display. But behind the carefully orchestrated parade of Russian pomp, an almost Stalinesque paranoia and hysteria is gripping the country's top officials.

The president's men are now reduced to communicating via slips of paper which they burn in ashtrays, while the entire staff lives in terror of the man known as the Black Magician – a KGB general who apparently studies the occult in order to determine national policy.

He is General Georgy Georgievich Rogozin, who is said to prepare daily horoscopes for top Kremlin officials, as well as scanning space to determine budget issues, using spinning saucers in his Kremlin office and punctuating his working day with repeated mantras. He also goes to great lengths to create favourable magnetic fields around the president, even to the extent of determining an exact north-south position for Yeltsin's bed. The general is reported to decide appointments to high office by consulting black magic tables.

He is loathed by Kremlin staff and is thoroughly feared. Ludmila Pikhoya, an experienced presidential aide and speech writer who is known for her iron strength of character and calm temperament, turned on Rogozin during a recent stormy Kremlin meeting, dragging him outside a conference room and screaming: "Don't you try to control my subconscious ever again".

The unreal atmosphere is compounded by the widespread belief among staff that they are now subject to a level of surveillance undreamt of even during the worst days of the KGB. Well-connected Kremlin correspondents tell of sources pointing to air-conditioning systems and light bulbs, while conducting conversations about the weather.

Meanwhile, they are feverishly scribbling notes on scraps of paper. One top-ranking official stuffed pencils inside the keyholes of his safe while talking to *Sevodnya* newspaper correspondent Sergei Parkhomenko, suspecting video cameras to be installed inside. Others insist on meeting journalists in the same parks that were the scene of many a clandestine Cold War encounter.

Even Yeltsin's own chief of staff Sergei Filatov has publicly admitted that he and his colleagues are afraid to talk freely.

"You can't even breathe without being watched," confirms a member of the president's analytical centre. "The 'neighbours' are always with us," he adds darkly, employing a euphemism that once stood for the intelligence service. "But I'm not talking about the Lubyanka. I mean the Rogozin people."

The mysterious and alarming Rogozin officially heads an analytical team whose intelligence is so jealously guarded that it is delivered by a courier whose arrival is heralded by a coded telephone call. Rogozin reports to General Alexander Korzhakov, a shadowy figure in charge of the presidential bodyguard who is widely reported to control the president.

Rogozin is one of only three generals in the presidential team along with Korzhakov and Admiral Zakharov, the man who masterminded the 1993 storming of the White House. Born in 1942 in Vladivostok, the Black Magician joined the KGB at 21 and enjoyed a meteoric rise. From 1989 to 1991 he was the chief scientist in the first division of the institute dealing with security problems.

It was at this point that his obsession with the occult became more than just a hobby. He persuaded his colleagues that they should be looking for a scientific breakthrough in the field of the paranormal. Then the general pursued a programme which included mind-reading from a distance, control of the subconscious by telepathy and information-gathering from the deceased by scanning brain waves from the skull.

A colleague from this period is certain that Rogozin is continuing to develop his bizarre techniques. "Georgy is a complete fanatic of the occult and I am sure that he has got the necessary equipment for his experiments.

"In any organisation you are bound to get a few people who get paranoid," said Sergei Parkhomenko, the Russian journalist who has put together a dossier of the strange goings-on, "but *everybody* I talk to at the Kremlin confirms the nightmare. Sane people are all drained by the atmosphere of petty and humiliating surveillance and people reporting on each other."

Both Rogozin and his boss Korzhakov are accountable to the secretive GUO, the security service for all state buildings. In one year the number of staff at the GUO has risen to 44,000. Now, some members of the Duma have begun to demand that the GUO should be subjected to the legal constraints of the constitution.

Members of the Russian Parliament question what kind of influence is being wielded by this former KGB officer with his projects and what proportion of state funds are being squandered on black magic.

The mere fact that these rumours are circulating so wildly reveals the paranoid state of mind into which Russia's democratic government has slipped; and it calls into question its ability to responsibly run a nuclear armed, former superpower.

A highly placed officer of the electronic surveillance service FAPSI warned: "It cannot be permitted that parquet [deskbound] generals from the Kremlin guard are allowed to usurp power in this country. If no one stops them, anything could happen."

£25 worth of phone calls FREE
SEE PAGE 21

The occult magic of the Czar is also back! Or did it ever leave? In *The European* (May 5-M, 1995, p. 4) was found this story reporting on "Black Magicians" among the highest ranks of Russian military and political circles. Among the magic techniques common in the Kremlin: Mantras, meditation, astrology and horoscopes, mind powers, telekinesis, spinning saucers, coded messages, remote viewing, tarot cards, and energy fields.

Actress holds up an iron of Vladimir Lenin during Russian occult stage production, *The Fourteen Red HUTS.*

***The Scarlet Island,* another Russian production.**

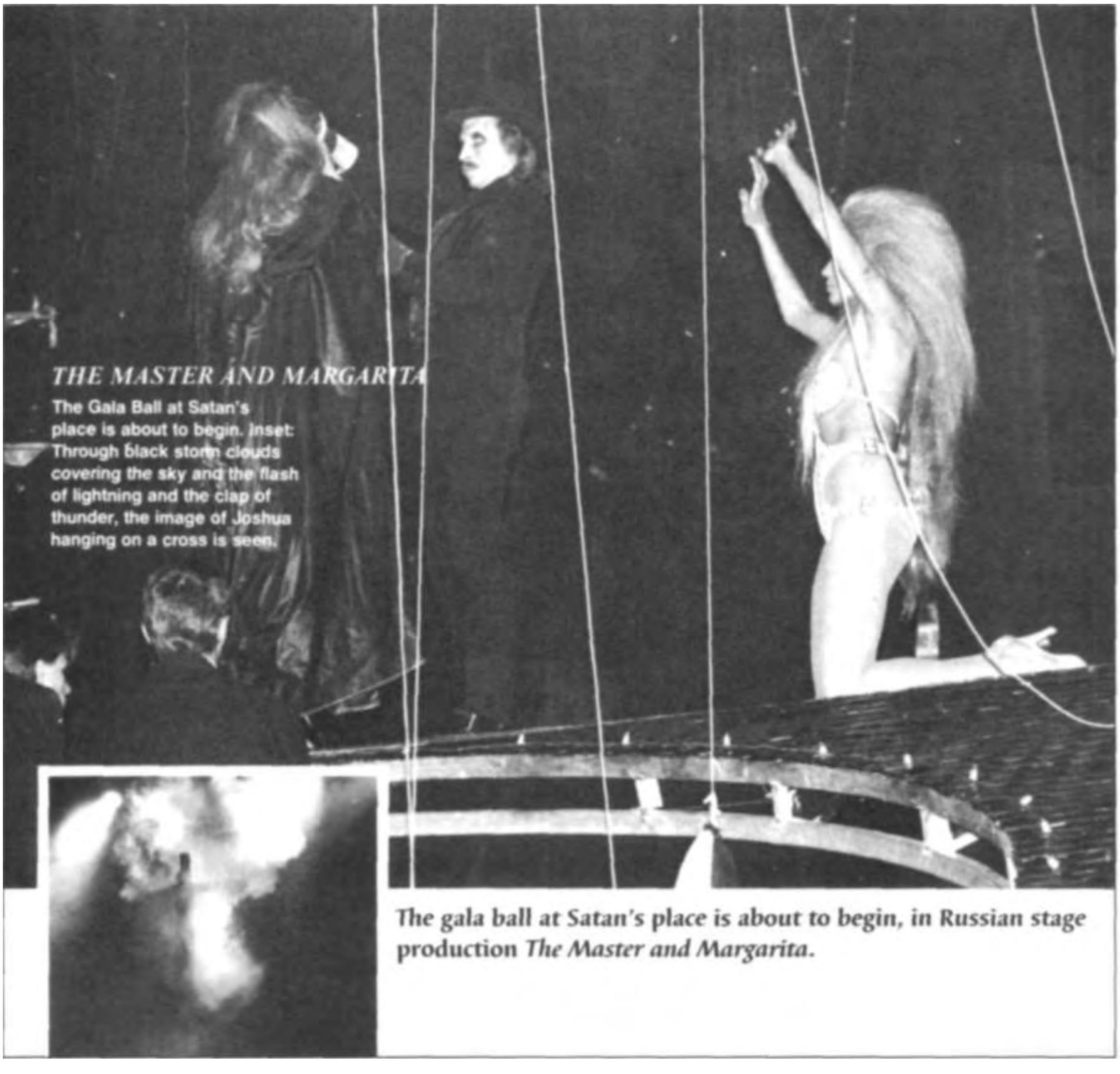

THE MASTER AND MARGARITA

The Gala Ball at Satan's place is about to begin. Inset: Through black storm clouds covering the sky and the flash of lightning and the clap of thunder, the image of Joshua hanging on a cross is seen.

The gala ball at Satan's place is about to begin, in Russian stage production *The Master and Margarita.*

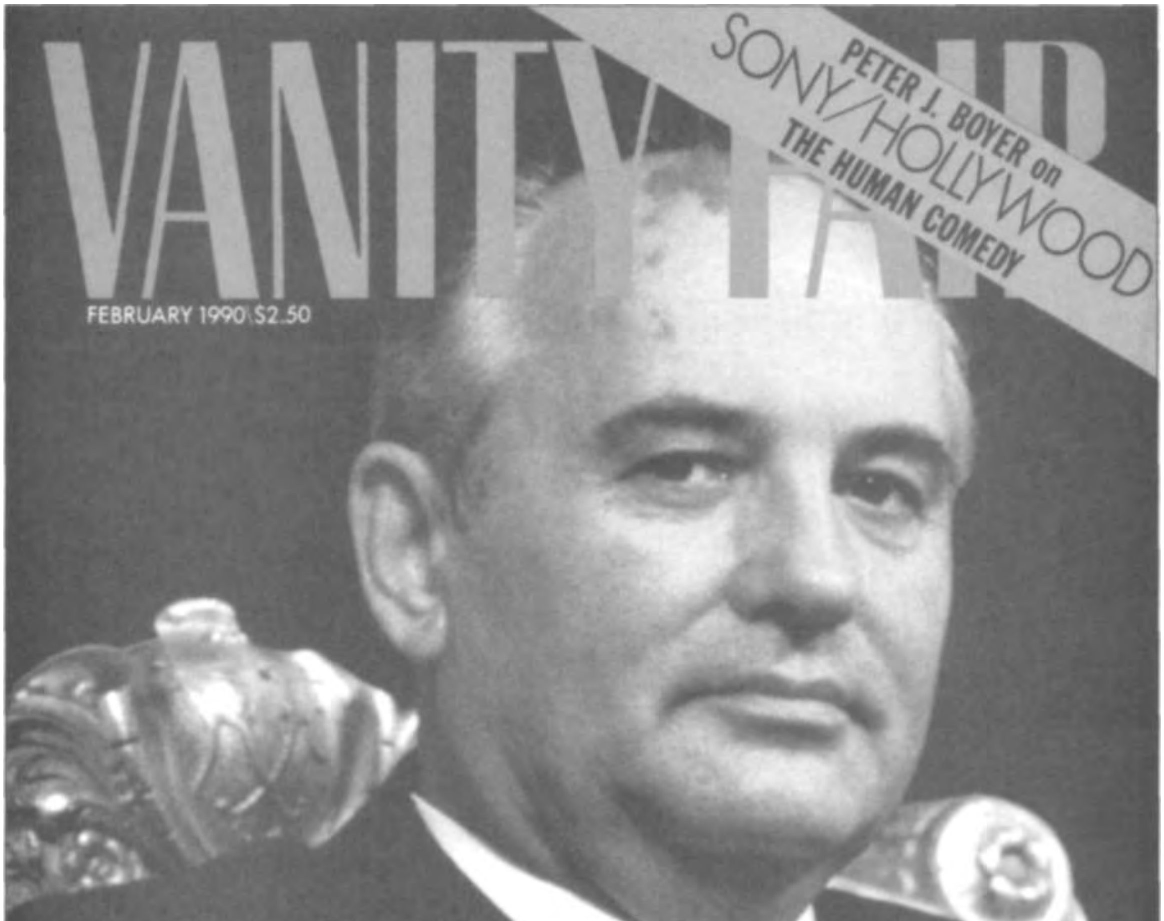
VANITY FAIR
FEBRUARY 1990\$2.50
PETER J. BOYER on
SONY/HOLLYWOOD
THE HUMAN COMEDY
GORBACHEV
Red Star
The Shaping of the Man Who Shook the World
by Gail Sheehy
Plus: JAMES WOLCOTT MEETS ELLEN BARKIN and
THE SPY WENT DANCING, BY THE COUNTESS OF ROMANONES

Gorbachev Red Star" trumpeted this cover of *Vanity Fair* magazine (February 1990). Ink type, appropriately, was colored red.

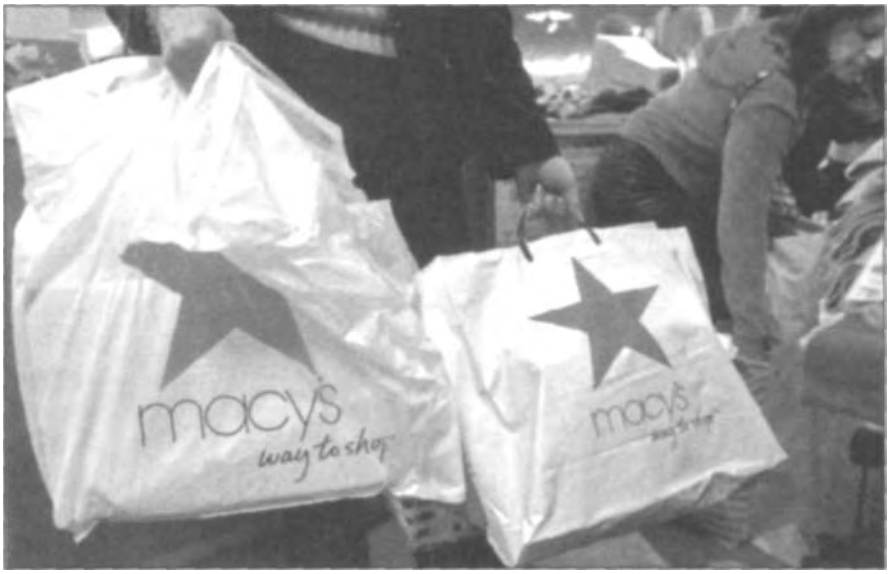

The red star is universally recognized as a sign of hard-core Communism. So, why has Macy's department stores adopted it also as its logo, as shown on these Macy's plastic shopping bags?

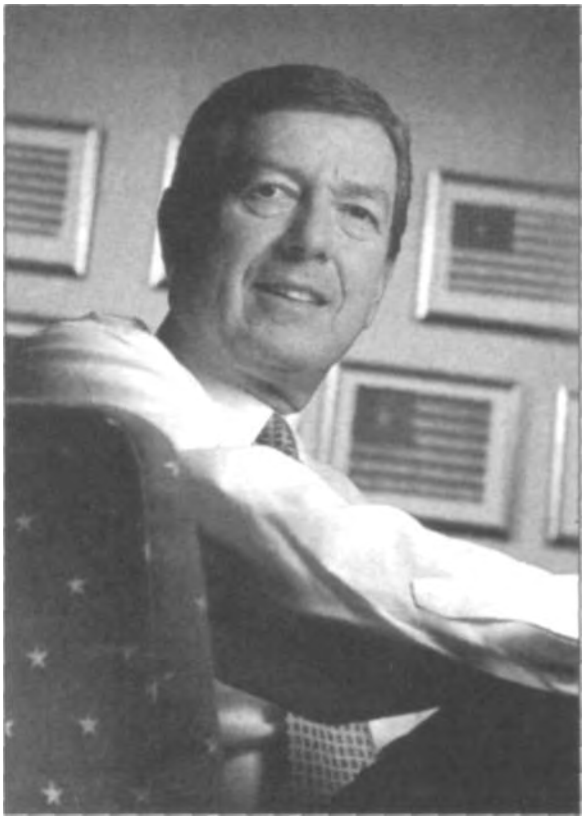

In what is clearly a staged photo in *Newsweek* magazine (January 4, 1999), then U.S. Senator and later Attorney-General, John Ashcroft is called "The True Believer." In the photograph, Ashcroft sits in a red chair with golden stars emblazed on the fabric. On the wall behind him are a series of framed United States flags. Each has the same gold star prominent inside the blue field of 50 white stars of the states. The star and the colors red and gold have special significance for Illuminists.

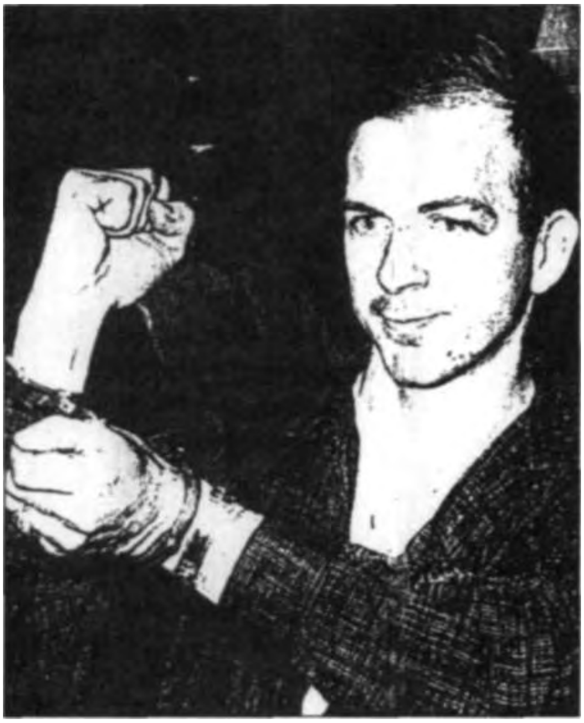

Was Lee Harvey Oswald playing the part of a Communist secret agent when he displayed the clenched fist shortly after his arrest for the alleged assassination of President Kennedy?

Senator John Kerry, failed presidential candidate, giving his favorite hand sign.

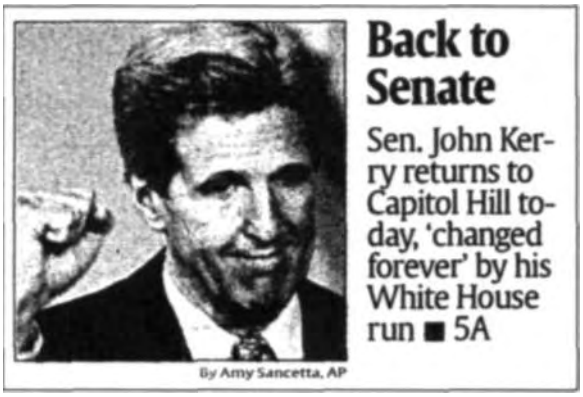

Back to Senate

Sen. John Kerry returns to Capitol Hill today, 'changed forever' by his White House run ■ 5A

By Amy Sancetta, AP

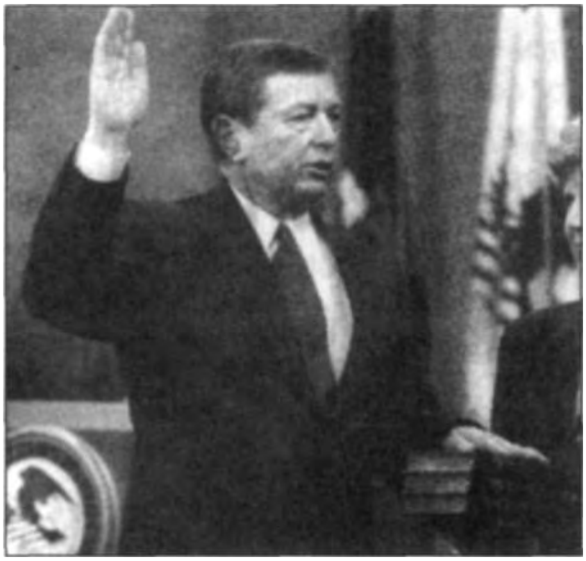

When Bush nominee John Ashcroft, a Freemason, was sworn in as Attorney-General of the United States, he did not swear on the Holy Bible. In this revealing photo published in *Criminal Politics* magazine, Lawrence Patterson, foremost authority on the global conspiracy and on secret societies, points out that Ashcroft—whom the White House and the press promoted as an "evangelical Christian"—placed his hands and swore on a mysterious stack of books. Were they law books or books of the Jewish Talmud or...?

FOOTNOTES AND REFERENCES

Introduction: The Occult Script—A Colossal and Monstrous Conspiracy

1. Henry Makow, "Lucifer is the Secret God of Secular Society—Occult Agents Control Humanity," internet, *savethemales.ca,* October 13, 2003.
2. Ibid
3. William L. Cummings, "Rites and Rituals," *Royal Arch Mason,* Winter 1994, p. 107.
4. Ray V. Denshaw, quoted in *Ibid.*

Chapter 1: Caution!—You Are Now Entering the Forbidden Zone

1. Christopher Mark, "Grand Deception: The Theft of America and the World," *South East Christian Witness,* Issue #4, PO Box 8129, South Australia 5291, 2003.
2. *Ibid.*
3. *Ibid.*
4. Thomas Mann, Famous Quotes.
5. Paul Huston, Mastering *Witchcraft* (New York: Wideview/Perigee Books/Putnam & Sons), p. 21.
6. *Ibid.*
7. Manly P. Hall, *Lectures on Ancient Philosophy* (Los Angeles, CA., The Philosophical Research Library, 1984), p. 433.
8. Robert Guffey, in *The Conspiracy Reader* (New York: Citadel Press/Carol Publishing, compiled by Al Hidell and Joan D. Arc, editors, *Paranoia* Magazine).
9. Emile Grillot: DeGivry, Picture Museum of *Sorcery, Magic, and Alchemy* (Hyde Park, NY: University Books, 1963).
10. Marie Roberts and Hugh Ormsby-Lennon, *Secret Texts: The Literature of Secret Societies* (New York: AMS Press, 1995).
11. Thomas Carlyle, *Sartor Resartus,* quoted by Piers Compton, *The Broken Cross: The Hidden Hand in the Vatican* (Australia: Veritas Publishing, 1984), p. 11.
12. Cathy Burns, *Hidden Secrets of the Eastern Star* (Mt. Carmel, PA: Sharing, 1994), p. 292.
13. *Ibid.,* p.291.
14. *Ibid.*
15. Alex Horne, *Sources of Masonic Symbolism* (Missouri Lodge of Research, 1981).
16. Foster Bailey, *The Spirit of Freemasonry* (New York: Lucis Press, 1957).
17. Henry C. Clausen, *Emergence of the Mystical* (Washington, D.C.: The Supreme Mother Council of the World, Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite of Freemasonry, Southern Jurisdiction, U.S.A., 1981).
18. Albert Mackey, *Encyclopedia of Freemasonry and Kindred Sciences,* Volume Two (Chicago, IL: The Masonic History Company, 1929).

19. Helena Blavatsky, *The Secret Doctrine,* quoted in column of Edith Kermit Roosevelt, IKR Syndicate, Washington, D.C., 1962.
20. Albert Pike, *Morals and Dogma of the Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite of Freemasonry* (Richmond, VA: L.H. Jenkins, Inc., 1871).
21. George Steinmetz, *Freemasonry: Its Hidden Meaning* (New York: Macoy Publishing and Masonic Supply Co., 1948), pp.43-44.
22. Albert Pike, quoted by J.D. Buck, *The Lost Word Found in the Great Work* (Chicago, IL: Indo-American Book Co., 3d ed., 1913), pp. 14-15; and see Cathy Burns, *Hidden Secrets of the Eastern Star* (Mt. Carmel, PA: Sharing 1994) pp. 136-137.
23. Lynn F. Perkins, quoted by Cathy Burns, op.cit., p. 17.
24. Martin Short, *Inside the Brotherhood,* (London: Harper Collins Publishers, 1990), p. 22.
25. Juri Lina, *Architects of Deception* (Stockholm: Referent Publishing 2004), p. 11.
26. *Ibid.*
27. *Ibid.*
28. Peter Ruckman, Bible Believers Bulletin, Pensacola, Florida, 2005.
29. *Ibid.*
30. *Ibid.*
31. Bob Whitaker, "Situation Terminal...But Not Serious," *The Barnes Review,* September-October, 2002, p. 6.

Chapter 2: The Megalomania of the Psychopaths—Why the Illuminati Do What They Do

1. Essi Viding, quoted by Nic Fleming "Psychopaths Inherit Anti-social Traits," *The Telegraph,* United Kingdom; May 25, 2005.
2. William Krasner, "Neurotica", quoted by Texe Marrs, *Big Sister is Watching You,* p. 48 (Austin, TX: Living Truth Publishers, 1993).
3. *The New Encyclopedia Brittanica, Volume 7, 15th ed.* (London: 1989), p. 671.
4. Michael A. Hoffman, II, *Secret Societies and Psychological Warfare* (Coeur d'Alene, ID: 2001).
5. George Bernard Shaw, quoted by Dave Hunt, *The Cult Explosion* (Eugene, OR: Harvest House, 1980).
6. F. Aster Barnwell, *The Meaning of Christ For Our Age* (Llewellyn Publications: St. Paul, MN, 1984).
7. Newt Gingrich, quoted in *Tlte Washington Post,* January 3,1985.
8. Jim Keith, *Mind Control and UFOs: A Casebook on Alternative 3* (Lilburn, GA: Illumined Press).
9. *Ibid.*
10. Israel Shahak, quoted by Normany F. Dacey, *Democracy in Israel* (Torrance, CA: Institute for Historical Review).
11. Barry McWaters, *Conscious Evolution* (San Francisco: Evolutionary Press, 1983), p. 10.
12. *Ibid,* p. 111.
13. *Ibid., p. 57.*
14. Albert Pike, quoted by Brian Garlin in *Global Checkmate* (New Zealand, 1983), and see Lady Queensborough, *Occult Theocracy, Volume 1,* 1933.
15. Eliphas Levi, quoted by David Carrico, *Lucifer- Eliphas Levi-Albert Pike and the Masonic Lodge* (Evansville, IN: Followers of Jesus Christ, 1991); and see A. Ralph Epperson, *Masonry: Conspiracy Against Christianity* (Tucson, AZ: Publius Press, 1997).

16. Vera Stanley Alder, *The Initiation of the World* (York Beach, ME: Samuel Weiser, Inc., 1972).
17. Paul Huston, *Mastering Witchcraft* (New York: Wideview/Perigee/Putnam & Sons, 1970), p. 32-33.
18. *Ibid.*
19. C.W. Leadbetter, quoted by Ted Flynn, *Hope of the Wicked: The Master Plan to Rule the* *World* (Herndon, VA: Maxkol Communications, 2000), p. 48-49.
20. Ibid.
21. Alice Bailey, *The Rays and the Initiations,* Volume V (New York: Lucis Publishing, 1960).
22. C. Fred Kleinknecht, "A Brave New World of Heroes," *The Scottish Rite Journal,* March 2002.
23. Vera Stanley Alder, op. cit., p. 164.
24. Jack Parsons, *The Collected Works of Jack Parsons* (Falcon Press, O.T.O.,1989).

Chapter 3: Concealed Messages—The Importance of Hand Signs to the Illuminati

1. *Coil's Masonic Encyclopedia,* edited by Henry Wilson Coil (Richmond, VA: Macoy Publishing and Masonic Supply House, 1961 & 19%).
2. J.C. Cooper, *An Illustrated Encyclopedia of Traditional Symbols* (London: Thames & Hudson, 1978), p. 78-79.
3. Manfred Adler, *The Freemasons and The Vatican* (Germany), p. 163.
4. *Ibid.*
5. Juan Maler, *The Victory of Reason: The World Model of Freemasonry* (Buenos Aires, Argentina, 1978), p. *77.*
6. Johannes Rothkranz, *Did You Already Know?* (Germany), pp.11, 44.
7. *Ibid.*
8. *The Herder Dictionary of Symbols* (Wilmette, IL: Chiron Publications, 1986).
9. *Ibid.*
10. James Curl, *The Art and Architecture of Freemasonry* (Woodstock, NY: Overlook Press, 1993), p. 238.
11. *A Dictionary of Symbols*, edited by Jean Chevalier and Alain Gheerbant (New York: Penguin Books, 1996).
12. *Ibid.*

Chapter 4: *Hidden Hand of the Men of Jahbuhlun*

1. Malcolm A. Duncan, *Duncan's Masonic Ritual and Monitor, 3d. ed.* (New York: Crown Publishers), p. 226.
2. Ed Decker, *The Dark Side of Freemasonry* (Lafayette, LA: Huntington House Publishers, 1994), p. 18.
3. C.C. Zain, *Ancient Masonry: The Spiritual Significance of Masonic Rituals, Degrees, and* *Symbols* (Los Angeles: The Church of Light, 1994).
4. W.L. Wilmshurst, *The Meaning of Masonry* (New York: Gramercy Books & Crown Publishers, 1980), p. 143.
5. *Ibid.*
6. Malcolm C. Duncan, op. cit.; also see Decker, op. cit.

7. Christopher Knight and Robert Lomas, *The Hiram Key* (New York: Barnes and Noble, 1996).
8. Malcolm C. Duncan, op. cit. p. 254.
9. C.C. Zain, op. cit

Chapter 5: for He's A Jolly Good Fellow—Sign of the Devil's Claw By the Men of the Craft

1. Henry W. Coil, *Coil's Masonic Encyclopedia* (New York: Macoy Publishing & Masonic Supply Company, Inc., 1961)
2. *Witchcraft, Magic, and The Supernatural* (Hong Kong: Mandarin Publishers/Octopus Books, 1974).
3. **Albert Mackey, *Encyclopedia of Freemasonry and Kindred Sciences* (Chicago: The Masonic** History Company, 1929).
4. *Ibid.*, p. 352.
5. ***Ibid.***

Chapter 6: Baphles Me!—Horned Beasts, Leaping Goats, Satanic Beards, and Other Messages of Evil

1. **Israel Regardie, *The Eye in the Triangle: An Interpretation of Aleister Crowley* (Phoenix, AZ:** Falcon Press, 1986); also see Aleister Crowley, *Confessions of a Heretic.*
2. **Aleister Crowley, *Confessions of A Heretic*, p. 629.**
3. Judith Reisman, *Kinsey: Crimes and Consequences* (U.S.A.: The Institute for Media Education, 1998).
4. Aleister Crowley, *Magic in Theory and Practice*, p. 559-561.
5. Anton LaVey, *Satan Speaks* (Los Angeles: Feral House, 1997).
6. *South East Christian Witness* newsletter, Australia, January 1992, p. 5; also see Peter Sawyer, *Inside News*, Australia, November, 1981.

Chapter 8: Secret Handshakes of the Illuminati

1. Cathy Burns, *Hidden Secrets of the Easter Star* (Mt. Carmel, PA: Sharing, 1994); also see Albert Mackey, *A Manual of The Lodge* (New York: Charles E. Merrill Co., 1870), p. 40-41.

Chapter 9: A Show of Hands—Illuminists Employ The Grand Hailing Sign and the Sign of Admiration and Astonishment

1. **Jabez Richardson, *Richardson's Monitor and Freemasonry* (1860).**
2. Malcolm C. Duncan, *Duncan's Masonic Ritual and Monitor*, 3d. ed. (New York: Crown Publishers), p. 216.
3. *Time*, January 4, 1993.
4. **John J. Robinson, *Born in Blood: The Last Secrets of Freesmasonry* (New York: M. Evans &** Co., 1989).
5. *Ibid.*, p. 217.
6. Jack Harris, *Freemasonry* (New Kensington, PA: Whitaker House, 1983).

Chapter 11: "Cross My Heart and Hope to Die"—The Mysterious "X" Factor

1. C. J. Koster, *Come Out of Her My People* (South Africa: Institute for Scripture Research, 2004).

2. Jim Tresner, "Seventeenth Degree, Knight of the East and the West," *Scottish Rite Journal,* June 2000.
3. ***Ibid.***
4. ***Ibid.***
5. ***Ibid.***
6. ***Ibid.***
7. ***Ibid.***
8. **Jabez Richardson, *Richardson's Monitor of Freemasonry* (1860), p. 161.**
9. ***Ibid.***
10. ***The Monitor of Work, Lectures and Ceremonies of Ancient Craft Masonry for the Grand Lodge*** *of the State of New York* (New York: J.J. Little & Ives Co., 1910).
11. **Texe Marrs, Dark *Majesty: The Secret Brotherhood and the Magic of a Thousand Points of*** *Light* (Austin, TX: RiverCrest Publishing, 2004).

Chapter 12: That Ravenous Dark Bird—Sublime Mysteries of the Illuminati's Double-Headed Eagle

1. **Albert Pike, *Morals and Dogma of the Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite of*** *Freemasonry* (Richmond, VA: L.H. Jenkins, Inc., 1871), p. 861.
2. **Texe Marrs, *Circle of Intrigue: The Hidden Inner Circle of the Global Illuminati Conspiracy*** (Austin, TX: RiverCrest Publishing, 2000).
3. Anton LaVey, *Satan Speaks* (Los Angeles: Feral House, 1997).
4. Gareth Knight, *The Rose and the Goddess* (New York: Destiny Books).
5. **Albert Pike, *Morals and Dogma of the Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite of Freemasonry*** (Richmond, VA: L.H. Jenkins, Inc., 1871), p. 734.
6. Francis Adams, "The Invisible Sun," *The Beacon,* published by Lucis Trust, July/August 1986, No. 10, Volume LT, p. 312.
7. ***Ibid.***
8. **Paul Huston, *Mastering Witchcraft.***
9. Peggy Noonan, The *Wall Street journal,* August 25, 2001.
10. ***Ibid.***

Chapter 13: The Riddle of the Great Seal of the United States, and the All-Seeing Eye of the Serpent of Wisdom

1. ***Strange Stories, Amazing Facts of America's Past,* Readers Digest Books, 1989, p.56-57.**
2. **Albert Pike, *Morals and Dogma of the Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite of Freemasonry*** (Richmond, VA: L. H. Jenkins, Inc., 1871), p. 477.
3. ***Ibid.*, p. 506; also see A. Ralph Epperson, *Masonry: Conspiracy Against Christianity*** (Phoenix, AZ: Publius Press, 1997).
4. Rex Hutchens, *A Bridge to Light* (Washington, D.C.: Supreme Mother Council, 33" of Scottish Rite Freemasonry, 1988).
5. G. H. Pember, *Earth's Earliest Ages* (Grand Rapids, MI: Kregel Publications, 1987).
6. Helena P. Blavatsky, *The Secret Doctrine* (Covina, CA: Theosophical University Press, 1947, 4th ed.).
7. ***Ibid.***

8. **Barbara G. Walker, *The Woman's Encyclopedia of Myths and Secrets* (San Francisco: Harper** & Row Publishers, 1983), p. 753.
9. A.S. Raleigh, *Occult Geometry* (Marina del Rey, CA: DeVorss & Co., 1932 & 1981).

Chapter 14: "Silence, Slaves, or We'll Cut Your Throat From Ear to Earl"

1. Malcolm C. Duncan, *Duncan's Masonic Ritual and Monitor* (New York: Crow Publishers); also see Jabez Richardson, Richardson's Monitor of Freemasonry (1860), especially p. 142-143.
2. Jabez Richardson, *Ibid.,* p. 81.
3. ***Ibid.***
4. ***Ibid.*, p. 133.**
5. "Grand Commander Kleinknecht Presents Revised Standard Pike Ritual to the Northern and Southern Prince Hall Supreme Councils," *The Scottish Rite Journal,* June 2001, p. 34-35.
6. ***Ibid.***
7. David Fideler, *Jesus Christ, Sun of God* (Wheaton, IL: Quest Books, 1993); also Manly P. Hall, The *Adepts in the Esoteric Classical Tradition* (Los Angeles: Philosophical Research Library, 1988).
8. Jim Keith, *Secret and Suppressed* (Feral House, 1993).
9. **David Ovason, *The Secret Architecture of Our Nation's Capitol* (New York: Harper Collins** Publishers, 1999), p. 372.
10. Lewis Spence, 77k' *Encyclopedia of the Occult* (London: Bracken Books, 1988).

Chapter 15: Up to Their Necks in Mischief

1. **Albert Mackey, *Encyclopedia of Freemasonry and Kindred Sciences* (Chicago: The Masonic** History Company, 1929), p. 373.
2. *Ibid.,* p. 374.
3. Malcolm C. Duncan, *Duncan's Masonic Ritual and Monitor,* 3d ed. (New York: Crown Publishers), p. 269
4. *Ibid.,* p. 101

Chapter 16: Hand on Heart—Sign of Devotion to Chiefs

1. Rex Hutchens, *A Bridge to Light* (Washington, D.C.: Supreme Mother Council, 33° of the Scottish Rite of Freemasonry, 1988).

Chapter 17: Triangles Up, Triangles Down, Triangles, Triangles All Around

1. **Barbara G. Walker, *The Woman's Encyclopedia of Myths and Secrets* (San Francisco: Harper** & Row Publishers, 1983), p. 1016-1017.
2. ***Ibid.***
3. Rex Hutchens, *A Bridge to Light* (Washington, D.C.: Supreme Mother Council, 33° of Scottish Rite Freemasonry, 1988).
4. Joan Quigley, What Does Joan Say? — My Seven Years As White House Astrologer to Nancy and Ronald Reagan (New York: Pinnacle Books, 1990), p. 91.
5. *Ibid.,* p. 79.

6. Telephone interview with historian of Alcoholics Anonymous, New York, 1989; also see **Cathy Burns, *Alcoholics Anonymous Unmasked: Deception and Deliverance* (Mt. Carmel, PA:** Sharing, 1991), pp.78-82.
7. S.L. McGregor Mathers, *The Kabbalah Unveiled.*

Chapter 18: Black Magic, Masonic Witchcraft and Triangle Powers

1. Dr. O.J. Graham, *The Six-Pointed Star* (Ontario, Canada: The Free Press 777,1984).
2. Henry W. Coil, *Coil's Masonic Encyclopedia* (New York: Macoy Publishing and Masonic Supply House Company, 1961).
3. Albert G. Mackey, *Mackey's Masonic Ritualist* (New York: Clark and Magnard, 1873).
4. Jim Keith, *Secret and Suppressed* (Feral House, 1993), p.63.
5. Jim Tresner, *The Scottish Rite Journal,* (March, 2000, p. 63.
6. Arkon Daraul, *A History of Secret Societies* (Secaucus, NJ: Citadel Press, 1961), p. 193.
7. "Triangles," Lucis Trust, Geneva, September, 1994.
8. Alice Bailey, *Telepathy,* quoted in *Ibid.*
9. ***Ibid.***
10. Aleister Crowley, 77K *Book of the Law* (1904)
11. John Yarker, translation of French manuscript, *Letters of a Chapter, Senate, and Council* (London: J. Hogg, 1882), p. 86.

Chapter 20: The Merovingian Dynasty, The Priory of Sion, and The Spear of Longinus

1. *Paranoia,* Fall 2001, Issue 27, p. 11.
2. Milton William Cooper, *Behold A Pale Horse* (Sedona, AZ: Light Technology Publishers, 1991).
3. ***Ibid.***
4. Anton LaVey, *Satan Speaks* (Los Angeles: Feral House, 1998), p. 32
5. ***Ibid.***
6. **D.C Yermak, *The Axis of Death: Vatican, Masonry, Zionism, Enemies of God* (Greece).**
7. Dean Grace, letter to Texe Marrs, June 20, 2001.
8. ***Ibid.***

Chapter 21: Magical Signs of the Jewish Cabala—The Six-Pointed Star, Babylonian Witchcraft, and the Hollywood Perdition of Jerry Seinfield and Associates

1. "Kabbalah The Cure-Ail," *New York Post, online edition,* 2005.
2. *Ibid;* also see "Roseanne Makes Nice in Reality TV," *The Jewish Journal of Greater Los Angeles,* July 25, 2003, p.1; "Personality Parade," *Parade,* February 8, 2004, p. 4; "Kabbalah goes Hollywood Like A Prayer," by Yossi Klein Halevi, *The New Republic,* May 10, 2004, p. 21; and "Once Secretive Jewish Mysticism Gains Popularity," by Rachel Graves, *Associated Press,* January 18,1998.
3. *Scottish Rite Journal,* cover, September, 2000.
4. "Gestures and Handshakes: Mr. Spock's Vulcan Greeting," www.tvacres.com/greetings.
5. *Cauldron of Abbadon,* Video (VHS or DVD), RiverCrest Publishing, Austin, TX, 2004.
6. Albert Pike, quoted by Faber Birron, *The Symbolism of Color* (Seacaucus, NJ: 1988), p. 36.

7. Ed Decker, *Free the Masons Ministry,* newsletter, PO Box 1077, Issaquah, WA 98027, June, 1992.
8. **James L. Holly, *The Southern Baptist Convention and Freemasonry* (Beaumont, TX: Mission** and Ministry to Men, 1992)
9. **Jabez Richardson, *Richardson's Monitor of Freemasonry* (1860), p. 143.**
10. Isaac Wise, quoted in *Masonic Lodge Over Jerusalem* video (VHS or DVD), RiverCrest Publishing, Austin, TX, 2004.
11. "Freemasonry Is Based On Judaism," *The Jewish Tribune,* circa 1927.
12. Ray Novosel, "Freemasonry Historic Links to Zionism/Judaism," www.rense.com, March 8, 2004.
13. "Judaism and Freemasonry," www.harrystruman.org, April 21, 2003.
14. **Albert Pike, *Morals and Dogma of the Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite of Freemasonry*** (Richmond, VA: L.H. Jenkins, 1871).
15. ***Ibid.***
16. Lady Queensborough (Edith Starr Miller), *Occult Theocracy, Volume I* (1933), p. 184-187.

Chapter 22: Scorched By The Sun—Solar Signs, Circles, and Serpents

1. **John Yarker, *Notes on the Scientific and Religious Mysteries of Antiquity* (London, 1872),** p.8.
2. G.H. Pember, *Earth's Earliest Ages* (London: Hodder & Stoughton, 1907).
3. Reginald Haupt, Jr., *Gods of the Lodge* (Savannah, GA: Victory Publishing Company, 1990).
4. **Albert G. Mackey, *Encyclopedia of Freemasonry and Kindred Sciences* (Chicago: The** Masonic History Company, 1873 and 1912), p. 572-573.
5. ***Ibid.***
6. Cathy Burns, *Hidden Secrets of the Eastern Star* (Mt. Carmel, PA: Sharing, 1994).
7. *Ibid;* p. 192-193.
8. Bill Schnoebelen, in *The Dark Side of Freemasonry,* edited by J. Edward Decker (Lafayette, LA: Huntington House Publishers, 1994), p. 174.

Chapter 23: "I Fell In To a Burning Ring of Fire"—Arnold Schwarzenegger's Masonic Ring, Newt Gingrich's T-Rex Dinosaur, and Other Mysterious Messages on Rings and Neckties of the Elite

1. David Roach, "If You Only Knew What This Ring Means to Me," *The Louisiana Freemason,* April 2001.
2. ***Ibid.***
3. Bill Schnoebelen, in *The Dark Side of Freemasonry,* edited by J. Edward Decker (Lafayette, LA: Huntington House Publishers, 1994), p. 173.
4. **Barbara G. Walker, *The Woman's Dictionary of Symbols and Sacred Objects* (San Francisco:** Harper & Row Publishers), p. 12.
5. **Albert P. Mackey, *Encyclopedia of Freemasonry and Kindred Sciences* (Chicago: The** Masonic History Company, 1873 and 1912), p. 12.

Chapter 25: Victory For the Devil—Fabulous Exploits of Sir Winston Churchill and Other Druid Priests and Illuminati Servants

1. *Paranoia*, Winter 1995/1996, p. 23.
2. Cathy Burns, Masonic *and Occult Symbols Illustrated* (Mt. Carmel, PA: Sharing, 1998).
3. ***Complete Book of Witchcraft,* quoted in *Ibid,* p. 233.**
4. ***Ibid.***
5. Stephen Knight, *The Brotherhood* (London: Granada/Grafton, 1984).
6. Stanley Monteith, *Radio Liberty* newsletter, October, 1999. Also Winston Churchill's Jewish bloodline was examined in Criminal Politics magazine, Lawrence Patterson, publisher, February, 1995, p. 22.
7. Miranda J. Green, *The World of the Druids* (London: Green, Thames and Hudson, 1997), p. 170; also see John Daniel, *Scarlet and the Beast* (Tyler, TX: JKI Publishing).
8. For comparison, see Lady Queensborough (Edith Starr Miller), *Occult Theocracy* (1933).

Chapter 26: "Every Man and Woman Is A Star"

1. Aleister Crowley, *The Book of The Law* (1904).
2. Helena P. Blavastsky, *The Voice of the Silence* (Pasadena, CA: Theosophical University Press, 1889).
3. Steve Worrall-Clare, *Freemasonry - The Secret Language* (Dorset, England: Freedom Ministries International).
4. Eliphas Levi, quoted in Cathy Burns, *Hidden Secrets of the Eastern Star* (Mt. Carmel, PA: Sharing, 1994), p. 316.
5. Cathy Burns, *Ibid.*
6. Albert Pike, quoted in *Ibid,* p. 314.
7. O.J. Graham, *The Six Pointed Star* (Ontario, Canada: The Free Press 777, 1984).
8. **Albert P. Mackey, *Encyclopedia of Freemasonry and Kindred Sciences* (Chicago: Masonic** History Company, 1896 and 1912).
9. ***Royal Arch Mason,* Fall 1993.**

Chapter 28: Blood Red—Red Stars, Clenched Fists, Hammers and Sickles, and Other Signs and Symbols of Communist Intrigue

1. Aleksandr Solzhenitsyn, *Two Hundred Years Together* (Russia); also see Solzhenitsyn, *The **Gulag Archipelago.***
2. "Was Stalin A Rothschild?," by Clifford Shack, www.geocities.com/cliff-shack/stalinrothschild.html.
3. "Truth About The World's Bankers," Myron C. Fagan (cassette tape series).
4. Fritz Springmeier, *Bloodlines of the Illuminati* (Austin, TX: Ambassador House, 2002).
5. Winston Churchill, *London Illustrated Herald,* February 8,1920.
6. ***Ibid.***
7. John Sharkey, *Celtic Mysteries: The Ancient Religion* (London: Thames and Hudson, 1924), p. 18.
8. Juri Lina, *Under The Sign of the Scorpion* (Stockholm: Referent Publishing, 2002).
9. **Albert G. Mackey, *Encyclopedia of Freemasonry and Kindred Sciences* (Chicago: Masonic** History Company, 1896 and 1912).

10. Don Bell, "And the Barbarians Captured the Beloved Country," *Don Bell Reports* #55, November 12,1955; also see *The Axis of Death,* by D. C. Yermak (Greece).
11. Richard Wurmbrand, *Marx and Satan* (Bartlesville, OK: Living Sacrifice Book Company, 1986), also see Robert Payne, *Marx: A Biography;* and Juri Lina, op.cit.
12. Allen Bonck, *America: The Daughter of Babylon* (Chichester, England: New Wine Press, 1989).
13. *A Dictionary of Symbols,* edited by Jean Chevalier and Alain Gheerbandt (New York: Penguin Books, 1996).
14. Peter Ruckman, Black is Beautiful (Pensacola, FL: Bible Believers Press, 1995).
15. Jabez Richardson, Richardson's Monitor of Freemasonry (1860), p. 84
16. Helena P. Blavatsky, *The Secret Doctrine* (Covina, CA: Theosophical University Press, 1947).
17. Cathy Burns, *Hidden Secrets of the Eastern Star* (Mt. Carmel, PA: Sharing, 1994).
18. Sergei Ivanov, quoted by Vladimir Isachenkov, "Putin Brings Back Soviet Red Star," *Associated Press,* November 26, 2000.
19. Alice Bailey, *A Treatise On the Seven Rays* (New York: Lucis Publishing), p. 127.
20. Faber Pirron, *The Symbolism of Color* (Seacaucus, NJ: Citadel Press, 1988).

About the Author

Well-known author of the #1 national bestseller, *Dark Secrets of The New Age,* Texe Marrs has also written 37 other books for such major publishers as Simon & Schuster, John Wiley, Prentice Hall/Arco, Stein & Day, and Dow Jones-Irwin. His books have sold over two million copies.

Texe Marrs was assistant professor of aerospace studies, teaching American defense policy, strategic weapons systems, and related subjects at the University of Texas at Austin for five years. He has also taught international affairs, political science, and psychology for two other universities. A graduate *summa cum laude* from Park College, Kansas City, Missouri, he earned his Master's degree at North Carolina State University.

As a career USAF officer (now retired), he commanded communications-electronics and engineering units. He holds a number of military decorations including the Vietnam Service Medal, and has served in Germany, Italy, and throughout Asia.

President of RiverCrest Publishing in Austin, Texas, Texe Marrs is a frequent guest on radio and TV talk shows throughout the U.S.A. and Canada. His monthly newsletter, *Power of Prophecy,* is distributed around the world, and he is also heard globally on his popular, international shortwave radio program, *Power of Prophecy.*

COVER-UP OF THE CENTURY

Satanic Ritual Crime
and World Conspiracy

Daniel Ryder

Ryder Publishing

Cover Up Of The Century

Second Edition
Copyright © 1994 and 1996 by
Daniel Ryder

All rights reserved. No portion of this book may be reproduced or utilized in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical including photocopying, without permission in writing from the publisher. Inquiries should be addressed to: Ryder Publishing, 1386 Cherry Street, Noblesville, IN 46060.

Library of Congress Catalog Card Number: 96-92385

Copy editor: Shelley McClow

ISBN 07880-0693-2

PRINTED IN U.S.A.

The story of a skull...

We've gone with using a skull on the front cover not to shock, but to convey what appears to be a gruesome truth. One people all over the world need to come to grips with.

On an investigative swing down the East Coast a couple years ago, I was in Columbia, South Carolina the week a partial human skull was discovered out in some backwoods in the small town of Lexington, just southeast of Columbia.

No one seemed to know where the skull had come from.

In the early '80s, a partial human skull was found in some woods near Fitchburg, Massachussetts. Initially, this discovery was a mystery too. But with some good investigative work, it was discovered this was a victim of a satanic cult sacrifice. The cult's high priest was convicted.

What you have to wonder is: How many more partial skulls are out there if we looked? *Really* looked.

It's my bet there are a lot.

DEDICATION

This book is dedicated to all those working to expose this insidious evil in our midst.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

To God.

To my wife Liz, for your courage, support, research help, coordinating efforts. Oh yeah, and for the late night prayers on the way to another town.

To Janice and Dick Lord (& family) for all the help and support on the project.

To Dave and Shelley McClow for your friendship, beleif in the project, support and advocacy for survivors.

To Connie and her friend for the editorial support.

To ritual crime investigators: Randy Cerny, Andrew Kasarda, John Hunt, Jerry Simandl, Dale Griffis... and all the others out there risking their lives trying to expose all this. (The same goes for Alan Scheflin, John DeCamp, Skip Clements...)

To investigative journalists like Maury Terry, Roy Blake, Michael Newton... who are the modern-day "Woodwards and Bernsteins" of this issue, as they continue to dig to get at the truth.

To therapists like Catherine Gould, Collin Ross, Randy Noblitt, Holly Hector, Pam Monday, Pam Hudson, and the countless others going way beyond the "standard hour," *way* beyond, to help ritual abuse survivors. (The same goes for Doug Riggs, Len Anspach...)

To ritual abuse survivor advocates like Faith Donaldson, Maureen Brugh, Caryn StarDancer, Pam Perskin, Bart Larson, Beth Vargo, Jo Getzinger, Cheryl Knight, Eileen Aveni, Pam DeVries, S.A.V.E. and all the others "...out in the trenches."

To the ritual abuse survivors themselves like Dominique, Gina, Cindy, Kathleen, Dan, Rose, Vanessa... who have not only broken away, but are working with all they have to expose this, at great risk to themselves.

And if I've missed anyone — to you, too.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

Dedication

Acknowledgements

Foreword 9

Chapter 1 As Way of Background 15

Chapter 2 Where's the Proof? 19

Chapter 3 Are the Memories Real? 39

Chapter 4 Kathy's Story 53

Chapter 5 More Evidence 75

Chapter 6 Day-Care Ritual Abuse 89

Chapter 7 Teen Involvement 107

Chapter 8 Satanic Hysteria? 115

Chapter 9 Harassment 119

Chapter 10 More Harassment 127

Chapter 11 More Evidence 135

Chapter 12 "The Chosen" 151

Chapter 13 Cover-up in Nebraska? 159

Chapter 14 Brainwashing and Programming 175

Chapter 15 Marionette Operatives 187

Chapter 16 World Conspiracy 199

Conclusion 215

FOREWORD

The following lyrics are from a lead song about sadistic/satanic ritual abuse on Joan Baez's 1992 release: *Play Me Backwards*.

You don't have to play me backwards
To get the meaning of my verse
You don't have to die and go to Hell
To feel the devil's curse...

Ritual abuse victims have felt the devil's curse firsthand. Some with the cold steel of ceremonial knives to their throats, have been forced to chant incessant praise to satan amidst flickering candles during late-night ceremonies. A defenseless seven-year-old girl felt the devil's curse when she was repeatedly sodomized by black robed figures in an abandoned backwoods house as part of a cult orgy. Young initiates felt the devil's curse when they were exposed to the cult's sophisticated and systematic electro-shock torture, brainwashing and programming.

And, of course, the devil's curse is felt when observing and/or being forced to participate in the ultimate cult homage — a human sacrifice.

Ms. Baez's song goes on:

Let the night begin there's a pop of skin
And the sudden rush of scarlet
There's a little boy riding on a goat's head
And a little girl playing the harlot

There's a sacrifice in an empty church
Of sweet li'l baby Rose...

The "baby Rose's," these sacrifice victims, well, they're starting to surface: the partial skull of a satanic cult sacrifice victim is unearthed in some woods in Massachusetts; the bodies of four satanic cult member defectors are found brutally slashed in a small town in Salida, California. (Uncanny, the murders take place on, of all streets, *Elm Street.*) Meanwhile, in another small town in northern Brazil, the dismembered body of seven-year-old Evandro Caetano is found in a shallow grave. Satanic cult ritual instruments are found buried close by. The cult ring involved with the killing is eventually tied to a 2,000-member linked cult network. Back in the States, three eight-year-old boys are brutally killed during what appeared to be a ritualized incident in Arkansas. Oddly, a short way into the investigation of this case, the satanic ritual aspects are downplayed. The same way it seems they have been downplayed in cases across the country, around the world. In Prescott, Canada, an extremely creative team of police and social workers uncover an extensive, multi-generational ring of sexual and ritual abuse perpetrators. And the list goes on.

So does Ms. Baez's song:

So I'm paying for protection
Smoking out the truth
Chasing recollections
Nailing down the proof

What Ms. Baez refers to here is the increasing number of "walking wounded" who are deeply scarred by the devastating effects of ritual cult abuse, and who are trying desperately to recover.

For instance, a group of children exposed to sexual and satanic abuse at Fran's Day-Care Center in Austin, Texas carry all kinds of scars: night terrors, night sweats, uncontrolled vomiting, extreme separation anxiety, acting out sexual and/or sadistic impulses such as using knives to slash at eyes in magazine pictures, trying to have sex with another sibling, etc... In this Texas case, day-care center operators were convicted, each sentenced to 48 years in prison. What's more, my investigation has turned up similar day-care and school satanic ritual/sexual abuse cases in Oregon, Massachusetts, Florida, California, New Zealand... In each, the children report very similar atrocities: extreme sexual abuse, praying to satan, drinking blood, watching animal and baby sacrifices, being threatened with death if they tell.

Besides the children's stories, there are all kinds of adult survivors coming forward with recovered memories of some of the most heinous cult ritual abuse imaginable. These are people who have often been inexplicably saddled with such strong afflictions as extreme chronic depression, extreme paranoia, extreme codependency characteristics, strong suicidal tendencies...

However, as the core cult memories are surfaced and worked through in dissociative disorder clinics, private therapy, 12 Step Ritual Abuse groups, and so on... significant, marked healing, often for the first time, starts to take place.

Also, as some of these cult survivors come forward, they are bringing more than just stories of heinous abuse. This book, for instance, includes a series of interviews with an east coast, satanic high priest's daughter who reports accompanying her father on trips across the country for the purpose of training regional satanic high priests in drug running, prostitution, money laundering, torture, brainwashing and programming techniques.

What's more, we are starting to see there are startling overlaps between the satanic cult brainwashing and programming, and the same highly sophisticated mind-control technology developed clandestinely by the United States government, and other governments around the world.

And finally, not only is it becoming apparent the satanic cults and other sadistic hate groups are networking, but also, part of their agenda may include a "full-tilt," movement intent on world domination. This movement, apparently orchestrated by a very proficient occult hierarchy, appears to be pulling the strings of the sadistic hate groups and covertly and systematically positioning their people in key political, business and social positions.

My original intent was to travel the country attempting to merely investigate and chronicle a few cases of SRA (satanic ritual abuse). However, the investigation seemed to providentially take on a life of its own and led to more, much more, than I ever intended.

As part of my research, I've interviewed: a former senator who has extensively researched an apparent high-level satanic cover-up; a Santa Clara author/law professor who has written extensively on clandestine government mind-control experiments; one of the directors of the California Ritual Crime Investigators Association, who tracked one of the most extensive and sadistic satanic cults that has, as yet, been exposed in the United States; the consulting archeologist for Lucas Films' *Indiana Jones* series, who made a startling discovery in the ground below the now-famous southern California McMartin Pre-School, and many more. I also cite Harvard psychiatric researchers who have done extensive work with the phenomenon of repressed memory.

You know, a first glance at this field, I've learned (such as a cursory listen to a survivor's story, or a first sweep over an evidence site) often doesn't seem to yield much in the way of substantive cult-related evidence. Yet the evidence comes into view when one knows how to line it up properly. The process of seeing the evidence can be compared to working with a computer. At first all you see on a computer screen is a basic template that just displays the labels for various software program functions. However, if you pick a function, then "double-click" on it, a whole array of data materializes that had, in essence, been hidden below the surface level.

And so it has been with some of the phenomena of sadistic/satanic ritual abuse. Click: Viewers hear gruesome ritual abuse stories on *Geraldo* one afternoon, then, turn the channel. Click: Police officers scan a homicide scene for clues, ignoring a Satanic Bible and ritual chalice on a nearby shelf. Click: A sheriff's department investigator listens to the four-hour deposition of an adult satanic cult survivor describing sexual abuse, torture, and murder he experienced as a child. "We can't do much because of the time lapse... but, we'll keep the information on file," the officer perfunctorily assures. Click: A postcard with the face of a missing four-year-old girl from New Hampshire arrives at the house, anyone's house. It's thrown away without a second thought.

What I decided to do in writing this book was to, in effect, take the time to "double click" on some of these things. I also interview other experts who have been double clicking as well. And the second click has produced quite an array of data on the next screen down. Bodies, cult member diaries, abduction techniques, mind-control programming techniques... all lend more credence to survivor stories in general. What's more, as SRA investigative experts are starting to compare what they are finding on the next screen down, much of the data matches; lending credence to the idea that the groups are also networked — and could quite well have a broader agenda.

The following pages are an in-depth look at a good cross-section of what's been found when you "double click."

Click.Click.

Chapter 1

AS WAY OF BACKGROUND

Consistent reports of satanic ritual abuse started to surface during the 1980s. (Just as consistent reports of childhood sexual abuse/incest started to surface for the first time during the late 1960s and '70s.) While it is becoming apparent these types of cult abuses have been around for ages, the horrible stories/repressed memories are only now surfacing with steady frequency, primarily because, only recently has an environment been created to support survivors getting in touch with these types of issues.

This environment is partially, if not largely, attributed to improved counseling techniques, better understanding of the psychological effects of extreme trauma, and the evolution of the 12 Step recovery movement into areas of codependency, sexual abuse and ritual abuse.

Note: For those not very familiar with the therapeutic world, it has advanced on a par with, say, how the medical world has advanced. Just as the medical profession has gotten more and more sophisticated in understanding and treating heart conditions, for instance, so it has been with the therapeutic world in understanding and treating the psychological effects of emotional and physical trauma.

Trans-generational cults involved in ritual abuse are those perpetuated through family generations. They are not exclusive to satanism, but may be based on other forms of religious tradition. Children brought up in such environments often view cult activities as the norm. Power, heritage and programming seem to keep trans-generational cults flourishing. Some of these cults engage in prayer ritual, mind control, sexual orgies, child sexual abuse, kidnapping, torture, murder/sacrifice.

And while proliferation of cult ritual abuse activity is hard to quantify at this point, many therapists, researchers, law enforcement officials and others I've interviewed over the years, believe the phenomenon is much more prevalent than most of us would imagine.

According to national lecturer/advocate Caryn StarDancer: Ritual abuse is any repeated, systematic mistreatment perpetrated in the name of an ideology. This abuse may be mental, physical, emotional, spiritual or sexual, and frequently combines all these types of abuse in an attempt to condition every aspect of the victim's humanity toward the ideology. This happens in satanic cults, Neo-Nazi groups, Afro-Caribbean cults, the Ku Klux Klan, gangs... In other words, it is systematically, and often clandestinely, currently going on in all of these types of groups all over the world. This basically means, there are apparently large numbers of people being conditioned with hate/"dark-side" ideology, and being programmed to unquestioningly do their various group's/cult's bidding.

Note: The next chapter is a graphic look at one of these extensive, quite dangerous cults.

However, as a way of preface, according to some pretty high-profile people in our society, what you are about to read really *doesn't* exist:

April 1994 — *Texas Monthly Magazine.* Writer Gary Cartwright reports FBI agent Ken Lanning states: "Not a single body or body part has been produced. If the [satanic] cults are real," Lanning observed, "they constitute the greatest crime conspiracy in the history of the world."

(Bear in mind, this was the same agency that, for the first half of the 20th century, adamantly said there was no evidence of another organized crime conspiracy — the Mafia.)

May 10, 1994 — Nationally syndicated columnist Molly Ivins writes: "...social workers who deal with child abuse have nightmares about the people who come up with patently false 'recovered memories' of satanic ritual abuse."

January 1993 — *Mother Jones Magazine* free-lance writer Ethan Watters: "Critics note ...many patients from fundamentalist Christian backgrounds, for instance, have memories of abuse at the hands of satanic cults, despite no evidence that such cults even exist."

After reading about some of the following cases, you make the decision about whether these cults exist. And, you make the decision whether those just cited are genuinely knowledgeable, simply misinformed, or, well, quite skilled "spin doctors."

Chapter 2

WHERE'S THE PROOF?

Here's some...

Slaughter in Salida
The Real Nightmare On *Elm* Street

For 51 days in the spring of 1993, the world intensely watched as detail after detail of abuse and cult mind control surfaced from the Branch Davidian compound in Waco, Texas. Just a little less than a year earlier, in a courtroom in Oakland, California, graphic details quietly began to surface about a satanic cult compound that makes what was going on inside the Branch Davidian compound seem quite tame.

It was reported there were at least 55 known satanic cult members, stretching into a three-county area, and representing a variety of walks of life. There was a David Koresh-type, charismatic leader (high priest). There was extreme code-of-silence programming; humiliation and subjugation; torture, including electro-shock; sexual abuse; murder.

In other words, many of the same things satanic ritual abuse survivors have been reporting over, and over. What's more, as the story played itself out, there emerged a curious pattern of suppression around one of the key details. A pattern of suppression, one has to wonder, perhaps, has happened in other communities as well?

THE INVESTIGATION

It's late fall, 1984. A series of burglaries start to occur in Stanislaus County in central California. Each time a calling card is left, scrawled in blood: ***"WE'LL BE BACK TO KILL YOU!!!"***

The notes are also illustrated with satanic symbols: pentagrams, upside-down crosses, 666's.

"You can imagine the trauma to the victims," said Randy Cerny, former Northern California coordinator of the California Ritual Crime Investigators Association. At the time of the burglaries, Cerny was a deputy and gang intelligence coordinator for the Stanislaus County Sheriff's Department.

Cerny is one of the officers assigned to investigate the burglaries, and in the process, starts to hear rumors of a satanic cult operating in the area. However, nothing more substantive initially emerges. The burglaries eventually stop. They go unsolved. However, Cerny continues to investigate.

Eventually, he comes across 17-year-old Mike Long (not his real name). Mike is heavily involved in the occult and satanism. However, he's trying to get out, and agrees to become an informant.

Yes, there is a satanic cult. Yes, they are carrying out ceremonial rituals, bizarre sex, drug running, prostitution... And the cult is headed up by a fanatical, but sophisticated leader, Gerald Cruz. With an iron fist, Cruz has the members following some of the teachings of high-profile satanist Aleister Crowley. (The same man Hitler was said to have followed.) And all members are required to wear satanic medallions underneath their clothes as a show of allegiance.

But Cerny is still unable to turn up any hard data links, or corroboration. What's more, he's having a hard time getting other people in the sheriff's office to listen.

No one listens, that is, until September 26, 1985, when Tamara Smith (pseudonym) surfaces. Smith is a topless dancer at the Cheyenne Social Club in the outskirts of Stanislaus County. She has come to the sheriff's department concerned for her safety. She is afraid she will be sacrificed by the group, said Cerny, if she refuses to participate in a ceremonial "Marriage to the Beast." That is, marrying high priest Cruz.

In exchange for protection, she identifies more than 50 people connected to the cult. Some were other dancers at the club, local rock group band members, bartenders, bouncers. But there's more. She also identifies people like a town dentist, as well as a Christian pastor at a non-denominational church, who was reported to clandestinely be another high priest in the cult.

Smith said the cult was stock-piling guns and explosives, and was heavily involved in drugs and prostitution. Smith also said Cruz was involved with physical and sexual abuse of his children. (This would also come out later in the trial, said Cerny.)

Cerny started an intelligence file on Cruz. The Federal Alcohol, Tobacco and Fire Arms Division (ATF) also started an investigation, because of the report of the inordinate amount of weapons the cult was storing.

Cerny started doing some inquiries around the social club and said he did elicit some decidedly paranoid reactions. Shortly after, he received an anonymous death threat warning him against looking into "satanic activity" in the area. This was early 1986.

There is no more apparent satanic activity until August of the same year. A graveyard in Denair, California, south Stanislaus County, is dug up and a body is removed. However, this also goes unsolved.

For the next couple years, nothing more surfaces. However, Cerny stays visible in his fight against ritual crime. He has retired from the sheriff's department and is lecturing throughout the county (and country) on the issue. He also accepts a spot on the committee for the U.S. Attorney General's first Ritual Crime Investigation Task Force.

In addition, he has developed a close friendship with San Juaquin County's ritual crime investigator, Dighton Little. (San Juaquin is the next county north of Stanislaus.) Little, in fact, is Cerny's best man when he remarries in 1988. Also, like Cerny, Little is quite visible in the fight against ritual crime.

In October of 1989, two days after the San Francisco earthquake, Little is shot and killed during a drug raid. The raid was at a drug dealer's residence behind *Bob's Truck Stop* in Rippon, California. Cerny said this dealer was selling drugs for a man who had been identified by Tamara Smith back in 1985 as being one of the satanic cult members.

A couple months later, Cerny is called to an abandoned warehouse by San Juaquin law enforcement to investigate a case of animal mutilations. At one point in the investigation, Cerny took an ABC news correspondent who wanted to report on the case into the warehouse. As they approached a makeshift stone altar where the sacrifices had taken place, Cerny froze. Next to the altar was a ripped newspaper headline — about his friend's death.

The following year, reports of the cult come up again. Law enforcement officials learn they have established a residential compound (homes and trailers) in Salida, California, just north of Modesto. What's more, they are set up right across the street from an elementary school.

Cerny said the group had evolved into a white supremacist/ militaristic, satanic cult. Every night, cult members would be posted as guards. Officials would later learn Cruz would not let anyone go off the compound grounds without permission. Like Waco's Branch Davidians who were constantly forced to read the Bible, these cult members were forced to study the teachings of Aleister Crowley and other occultic literature. Cruz was also using sleep deprivation, humiliation, and even electro-shock to keep cult members in line. The latter was referred to as the "orange cord" treatments.

That is, a Black & Decker extension cord, with the ends exposed, were wrapped around testicles, and other body parts, while Cruz operated a power switch.

What officials would also later learn, was though nothing tangible had surfaced in the last four years, the cult had continued to carry on the drug running, prostitution, rituals...

"They were very secretive," said Cerny. "A very close-knit, sophisticated group." However, that was about to change.

In the spring of 1990, several people break away from the cult. This incensed Cruz, said Cerny. And Cruz decided to make a lesson out of the defections.

The cult members who break away move into an apartment on the other side of town. According to Cerny, one night Cruz brings some of his "upper circle" people together. That night they play music by the heavy metal band Slayer, and pass out "mystical" weapons. Knives.

They then cross town and break into the Elm Street apartment. The defectors are beaten mercilessly with baseball bats, then bludgeoned to death. Cerny said the carnage scene that was left rivaled the infamous Charles Manson/Tate-Labianca murder scenes. Each ex-cult member was decapitated.

Several days after the quadruple murders, a trail leads back to the cult, and a number of cult members are arrested, including Cruz.

THE TRIAL

However, strange things start to happen during the trial. For one, Cerny said the sheriff's department could not seem to locate some of the back files on the cult, including Smith's 1985 deposition about the cult. (Again, Cerny had since retired from the department, and was running a ritual crime prevention consulting service.) What's more, the prosecuting attorney, James Brazelton, was staying away from any mention of cult aspects, said Cerny. So much so, that when an NBC producer flew a crew out from New York to do a story on the cult angle, Cerny said she was told by Brazelton the trial had nothing to do with the occult. (He was apparently convincing enough, the producer backed off.) And the local newspaper, the *Modesto Bee*, for the most part, referred to the satanic cult as merely a "group of people," said Cerny.

Cerny had several suppositions for why this was playing itself out the way it was. For one, he said the Stanislaus area prides itself on being a peaceful, "law and order" community. And for several years, it had the distinction of sending more people per capita to prison than anywhere else in the state said Cerny. There is even a town in the area, Turlock, that for years had the distinction of having more churches per capita than any other town in the nation. Also, said Cerny, this area was starting to see some substantial development as people moved farther and farther out from San Francisco.

Cerny said because of this development and the law and order reputation, he believed some of the "powers that be" were exerting pressure to downplay the fact that the town had an extremely active, extremely dangerous, satanic cult problem.

However, defense attorneys for some of the cult members were very interested in talking about the cult aspects, trying to prove that Cruz's power over their clients had led them to be involved in the murders. Also, when Cerny was called to testify, all of a sudden, Cerny said, the sheriff's department was able to locate the back files on the cult. Cerny testified at length about the cult activity in general, based on interviews with the cult members and a review of detailed cult member diaries. As one example, he talked about an initiation book where cult members had to sign their name in their own blood. Similar to the Mafia, this act signifies one is in the cult for life.

Defense attorneys also called noted cult expert and psychologist Daniel Goldstein, who interviewed cult members and read through the diaries and court transcripts. As reported in the December 16, 1992, edition of the *Modesto Bee*:

> **He [Goldstein] called Cruz "evil and sadistic," yet considered him a "charismatic leader" of a religious, satanic cult that controlled followers by using fear tactics, sleep deprivation, humiliation, torture and in some cases, forced sexual acts such as sodomy.**

Another curious component was Tamara Smith's absence at the trial. (Smith, again, was the one who extensively reported on the cult in 1985). Cerny contacted the sheriff's department about this, and was told they had not been able to find her. Cerny said he had a premonition they were not looking that hard: "...because they didn't want any of this [cult information] to come out," he said. "The pattern of suppression [about occultic aspects] on these types of cases sometimes drives me bananas," said Cerny.

A short while after the call to the department inquiring about Smith, Cerny was leafing through a newspaper and came across a picture of several fire-gutted buildings in a town about an hour north of Modesto. Carrying things out of one of the buildings was Tamara Smith. The *same* Tamara Smith.

Cerny called the sheriff's department again. Smith was eventually subpoenaed.

Cerny said the ritual evidence that came out during the trial definitely lends credence to what some adult ritual abuse survivors are now reporting around the world. "What if Cruz hadn't been caught?" said Cerny. "Let's project that 20 to 25 years down the road. Say someone walks into a police department, or therapist's office, and says: 'I'm starting to have memories that my dad was the leader of a satanic cult in California. And they would brainwash people, torture them with electro-shocks, sexually abuse me, sacrifice animals, kill people.'" Cerny wondered if that would all be passed off as merely a "false memory."

He also went on to say he is sure people with the same perpetrating personality traits were around years ago, as were the teachings of such people as Aleister Crowley. And if the cult activity is going on now, he said, why would it not have gone on then?

Another significant piece of information came from a private investigator hired by a defense attorney to look into Cruz's family. It turns out his sister and mother were heavily involved in occultic practices as well, indicating there was definitely some type of trans-generational influence, said Cerny.

The sentences: three of the Salida satanic cult members are sentenced to death, including Cruz. Two cult members get life.

With a substantial part of the "upper circle" put away, many feel assured the area will go back to its peaceful, pre-cult existence.

Then on October 27, 1992, Cerny gets a call. It is Tamara Smith's boyfriend. He has reason to believe Tamara is preparing to take his child to a ritual ceremony...

THE AFTERMATH

Shortly after the trial ended, Cerny appeared on NBC's national talk show *A Closer Look*, as part of a panel on the topic of ritual abuse in general. A film crew had taken some shots of the San

Juaquin County warehouse where some animal sacrifices had taken place. This was shown at the beginning of the show.

That same year, on the evening of December 24, the 63,000-square-foot warehouse burned to the ground. Satanists have matching holidays for Christian holidays, and Christmas Eve is one of the most important. "They [the cult] knew by then we knew about the place," said Cerny. "What better time to burn it down."

THE DIARIES

A number of the satanic cult members in Stanislaus County kept diaries. Several were entered as evidence during the trial. The following are some of the excerpts from one convicted murderer's diary. As you will see, the occultic influence gets progressively, and insidiously, stronger with time. (Except for some censoring and clarification of language, the spelling and punctuation have been left unedited.)

9/16/88

I was assigned a new book. It's called: *Mastering Witchcraft.* I also got me a magical name: Cronos.

9/20/88

Tonight is a special night. I'm taking my first step toward mastering witchcraft. For the next three nights before I go to bed, I will chant the Lord's Prayer backwards. This will release me from my inhibitions... I wake up tomorrow knowing I'm someone different. I will be a young warlock.

Note: This cult member was 19 years old at the time of this entry. In satanism, many things are reversed. There is a backward alphabet, pain becomes pleasure, good is bad, and so on. This is symbolic of the satanic intention to overturn most everything in society.

10/3/88

He [high priest Gerald Cruz] showed us the crystal pyramid colors. When shown [shone] in your eyes, it looks like the light your 3rd eye sees.

10/15/88

...We also made our wheel of doom. A wheel of punishments. But these punishments can enlighten us and/or make us strong.

10/30/88

We were all talking about moving. We were also talking about different ways to take out Cindi and her mom. I don't care, but all I want is to be able to f— Cindi before we take her out. I love Cindi very much, and would not want a one night stand. But she knows this, and if she would not give me what I want before she died — I would take it.

10/31/88

...Today is Halloween. That means Harvest Festival... We honor the dead by eating with them, drinking with them, and smoking with them... We also talked about the Ancient Ones. They were demons who got through to this dimension, which were carnated [reincarnated] as dinosaurs.

11/3/88

We was going to pull a black Mass. We still might...

Note: Black Masses are one of the highest forms of worship in satanism. They sometimes call for human sacrifice.

11/5/88

I also had an interesting dream. Me and some others would sit in a certain spot and turn into demons...

11/12/88

...The next time I f— up, I have to f— Snooky, Steve's dog.

Note: This is one of the "punishments." Memories of forced bestiality are often reported by survivors of ritual abuse.

11/14/88

Then Gerald [Cruz] started getting [angry]. He told us we would not eat, sleep, drink, s— or p—...

Note: This cult member often talks about feeling overly tired throughout the diary. Sleep, and often other forms of deprivation are used consistently by perpetrators to break down the members' wills, making them more malleable. These techniques are also used with political dissidents, prisoners of war, and so on.

11/28/88
...Tonight is the beginning of the season of death.

12/29/88
Today we looked forward to getting an AK 47. But Gerald [Cruz] thought it best to invest his money. Instead we got a Beretta 25 cal.

1/1/89
I found my sister isn't allowed over here because "Darin said..." Darin [the sister's boyfriend] thinks I'm brainwashed.

1/30/89
If I do my theory about me astralling [occult astral projection] all those times and not even know it... Also buy real estate, stocks, bonds, etc. Until we have land in all 50 states. From there spread until we can put someone in authority "under us" in all 50 states. With them speaking for us. We could run this country. Then soon the world.

Note: Some occultists attempt to use the practice of "astral projection." In a meditative state, they concentrate on another place they want to go, then attempt to travel "out-of-body" through time and space in extremely short periods of time.

It seems some people have actually been able to develop this skill, as others have been able to develop other paranormal abilities such as mental telepathy, telekinesis, and so on. Some of these psychic phenomena, such as telepathy and telekinesis (being able to move objects with the mind) have proved demonstrable in studies at places like Duke University. (Some also believe astral projection, for instance, is demonically aided.)

Also, although this diary entry is somewhat vague and fragmented, it is apparent the cult ideology has sunk in, and the next stage, in this cult member's mind, is to proliferate it throughout the planet. (Over time, cult members start to believe their way is not only right — but the only way.)

3/6/89

I also went to my Dad's house to get some house placements for the chart Gerald's doing: "Crowley's Chart."

Note: This, again, is a reference to one of the most "famous" satanists of modern time: Aleister Crowley.

3/8/89

Gerald hurt his neck first thing this morning. It really hurt me to see him in pain. I offered my life, as a sacrifice, for Gerald's health...

Note: This cult member had become so brainwashed and controlled by the high priest, that after awhile he apparently would have done anything for Cruz and the cult — including murder. And in the early morning hours of May 21, 1990, at 5223 Elm Street, he apparently did just that.

Defense lawyer Paul Ligda would later argue that mind control and fear of Cruz drove this cult member to help murder the four people. Ligda called a number of character witnesses, including the cult member's mother and sister, and two former neighbors, who said the defendant was a "...kind, quiet and a good boy," according to a Modesto Bee *article.*

It took a jury less than three hours to find this cult member guilty of four counts of first-degree murder, and conspiracy to commit first-degree murder.

MIND CONTROL

Apparently this cult member went through a complete personality metamorphosis, and in a relatively short time. Steven Hassan in his book *Combatting Cult Mind Control* defines cult mind control as: "...a system which disrupts an individual's identity. The identity is made up of elements such as beliefs, behavior, thought processes, and emotions that constitute a definite pattern.

"Under the influence of mind control, a person's original identity, as formed by family, education, friendships, and most importantly that person's own free choices, becomes replaced with another identity, often one that he would not have chosen for himself without tremendous social pressure.

"...He takes on a totalized ideology that, when internalized, supersedes his prior belief system."

And to take all this to another level, children born into groups like trans-generational satanic cults are indoctrinated from the start — never even having a prior identity (i.e., not knowing any semblance of "normal from abnormal"). Thus, the installation of ideology is that much more potent, that much more ingrained.

Note: For as "close-knit and sophisticated" as the Stanislaus County cult appeared, according to reports, and as you will see in some of the later chapters, it could virtually be considered a minor league baseball team in comparison to some of the ultra-highly sophisticated, and connected, satanists currently playing on a major-league level around the world.

ALEISTER CROWLEY

Cerny said the California cult was following some of the teachings of Aleister Crowley, one of the most public and celebrated occult "black magicians" of modern times.

He was born in England in 1875. In 1898 he became a member of the Order of the Golden Dawn, a magical society organized by Samuel Liddell (MacGregor) Maters, an occult scholar who had translated works on the Kabbalah (the occult version of "the tree of life") and magic rituals.

Crowley eventually formed his own "magical society," the Order of the Silver Star, and eventually moved to the United States.

During a libel trial in the early 1930s, public disclosure of Crowley's sensational lifestyle caused him to be denounced as "The Wickedest Man in the World."

In his book *Magick in Theory and Practice*, Crowley writes about one of his occultic beliefs (one apparently held by many satanists practicing ritual abuse):

> **The blood is the life... any living thing is a storehouse of energy varying in quantity according to the size and health... at the death of the animal this energy is liberated suddenly. The animal should therefore be killed within the Circle, or the Triangle, as the case may be, so that its energy cannot escape... For the highest spiritual working one must accordingly choose that victim which contains the greatest and purest force. A male child of perfect innocence and high intelligence is the most satisfactory and suitable victim.**

Note: Cult "circles" demonstrate a symbolic show of unity, and are usually formed around the person being sexually abused, tortured, sacrificed. Also, satanism is the antithesis of Christianity. Much satanic doctrine has been formulated as the reverse of Christian principles. In the Catholic Church, for instance, partaking of the consecrated bread and wine is "eating Jesus' body and drinking His blood," called for in the Scriptures. Christians believe the power is in the "Spirit." Satanists turn this around, drinking the blood of their victims and cannibalizing the flesh because they believe that's where some of their spiritual power source comes from.

SUPPRESSION?

Ritual crime investigator Randy Cerny expresses frustration that the cult-related aspects of these types of ritual crimes are often ignored — for any number of reasons. Investigative reporter Michael Newton shares the frustration.

Newton did extensive research on satanic-cult-related crime for his book *Raising Hell*. And at the outset of the book he writes:

> **In case after case, authorities have deliberately ignored or suppressed cult related evidence to avoid spooking judges and jurors. Crimes with clear cult involvement are too often advertised as "only" drug-related, "simple" child molestation, and so on.**

The pattern of suppression continues with yet another satanic-cult-related case in Massachusetts. One of the leaders of a satanic cult there, Carl Drew, was sentenced to life in prison for a ritual slaying (sacrifice). (There will be more on the particulars of this case in a later chapter.)

However, as other researchers have found, Denver investigative journalist Roy Blake writes in his book *Objective Evil: Satanic Cults in U.S. Intelligence*:

> **As in what seems like most cases with alleged satanic cult involvement, authorities attempt to downplay the role of satanism in the crimes. The *New Bedford Times* reported on Sept. 25, 1981 that the trial judge [in the Massachusetts case] had forbid mention of any "satanic cults." The cows were well out of the barn by then, however. Newspapers in the area had printed well over 50 articles mentioning the satanic tie since the *Standard Times* first reported the deaths might have been related to a satanic cult in the area.**
>
> **In attempting to downplay the satanic nature of the crimes, authorities rationalized that in the first instance the crimes were sufficiently heinous to stand on their own merits without dragging the satanic "red herring" into the courtroom. The District Attorney worried that mention of satanic activity might result in a prejudiced atmosphere that defense attorneys might be able to take advantage of during the appeal process.**

Likewise, for instance, in the early 1990s six children came forward in Evansville, Indiana claiming they had been exposed to satanic ritual abuse in school and other community settings. Victim advocate Rick Doninger spoke out publicly about the case in Evansville and aided in getting one of the children to safety, he said.

The children's case was never brought to trial. However, Doninger was eventually brought to trial for his part in trying to help the children, he said. (The charges: assisting a criminal and interference.) Doninger said he welcomed going to trial as a way of keeping the satanic aspects before the public. However, he said, just before going to trial Doninger's lawyer was informed the judge ruled there would be no mention of satanism during the trial.

Yet despite who knows how many attempts at apparent suppression, Michael Newton also writes in *Raising Hell*, ...cult related killers stand convicted of murder in 23 states and at least nine foreign countries. Numerous other occultists are now serving time for practicing their 'faith' through acts of arson, rape, assault, cruelty to animals, and similar crimes. Courts in seven American states and in Canada have sustained charges of ritual child abuse in the years since 1984.

In addition, Newton goes on: "Cases involving multiple defendants — 'cults' by definition — have been successfully prosecuted in at least 11 states, with similar convictions recorded in Latin America, Asia, and Africa."

In 1989, in a somewhat rural town about forty miles west of Cleveland, Ohio, three young men — two aged 18 and one aged 20 — were indicted for breaking into a cemetery. Excerpts from a *Cleveland Plain Dealer* newspaper at the time read:

> **Three Norwalk area residents charged with opening two graves, beheading the corpses and stealing the skulls, were part of a cult that had recently gotten instructions on how to sacrifice babies to satan, Norwalk police said yesterday.**
>
> **"We're taking this very seriously," he [Police**

> **Chief Gary Dewalt] said. "They admitted sacrificing small animals to satan. They said they smashed their heads and drank the blood. One of them has mutilated himself with a knife. These aren't just kids fooling around."**

According to a May 29, 1994, CNN transcript: A group of people were arrested in Chicago for the ritual sacrifices of some 40 animals — which were found inside an apartment complex. The report merely said the sacrifices were tied to "religious" beliefs.

Although it is not clear whether specific satanic worship was involved in this particular case, one has to wonder how many times, say, the media has shied away from the "s" word because of different pressures, religious prejudices, and so on — just like some court systems have.

MORE BACKGROUND

Also, in research for the book *Objective Evil: Satanic Cults in U.S. Intelligence*, Blake said he had found two possible European sources for trans-generational, "super-secret" satanic cults in the United States. In California there is good evidence for the existence of Aleister Crowley's Ordo Templi Orientis (O.T.O.) as early as the 1940s, and maybe even the 1930s. (Again, the cult in Salida, California, had been following the teachings of Crowley.) Charles Manson, said Blake, had at least some contact with Ordo Templi Orientis. And indeed, the "helter skelter" vision of a coming race war was originally one of O.T.O.'s teachings.

(Temple of Set (satan) leader Col. Michael Aquino, writes Blake, believes the black magic workings of O.T.O. were actually responsible for his birth in 1946.)

Another possible source for these sophisticated cults in the United States, said Blake, is German, and in fact may stem directly from the occult religion of the Nazi SS. And its successors may help explain the prevalence, for instance, of trans-generational satanic cults in areas of the upper Midwest that have a large German ethnicity.

Note: In Satanism in America *by Bart Larson and Wendell Amstutz, Aleister Crowley is described as: "Clearly the most influential occultist of the 20th century, and the father of modern day satanism. He is the author of* The Equinox*;* The Book of the Law*; and* Magick in Theory and Practice*."*

Col. Michael Aquino was formerly tied to Anton LaVey, who is the founder of the Church of Satan, and author of the Satanic Bible. Aquino is a lieutenant colonel in the U.S. Army, and authored *The Book of Coming Forth by Night.* Aquino established the Temple of Set religion in the United States in 1975. ("Set" is an Egyptian name for satan.)

JOHN DOE NO. 60

A San Francisco alcoholic drifter, tragically, became another of these satanic ritual sacrifices in the spring of 1988. According to a May 5, 1988, *San Francisco Chronicle* article:

> **Satanic killer Clifford St. Joseph was sentenced to 34 years to life in prison yesterday for gruesome crimes the judge said "...would astonish the imagination of Edgar Allen Poe or the Marquis de Sade."**
>
> **St. Joseph, 46, was accused of participating in the torture, mutilation and ritual murder of a drunken drifter known only as John Doe No. 60... The victim had a pentagram carved on his chest, lash marks across his buttocks, a stab wound to his neck, wax in his right eye, and a sliced lip. The naked body was virtually drained of blood. Police concluded that he had died in a satanic ritual.**
>
> **Investigators said that St. Joseph appeared to be part of a satanic cult that involved men of means in San Francisco's gay community.**

And there's more.

In the book *Raising Hell*, Michael Newton writes that nine days after the body was found, police were called to a Stillman Street apartment where they found St. Joseph dressed in a black robe, companion Maurice Bork, 26, stripped to the waist, his face daubed with cosmetics; and another man, Edward Spela, 26, passed out from drugs.

In the middle of the room was a 19-year-old man, who was lying on the floor handcuffed and surrounded by candles. A copy of the Satanic Bible sat out on a coffee table.

According to the *San Francisco Chronicle* article, this victim told police he had been secretly drugged, chained to a fireplace, gang raped, and forced into sexual acts with a dog during the three days before police arrived. (Many of the same components cult survivors report.) St. Joseph had apparently intended to sacrifice him to the devil as well, he said.

What's more, Newton writes that a San Francisco investigator on the case said he believed even others are linked to the cult, and that their victims are homeless drifters "...not necessarily confined to San Francisco." Newton concludes by noting the investigator called it a gay satanic cult, and that St. Joseph's correspondence reportedly yielded connections with Ordo Templi Orientis, which includes a homosexual 11th degree for members who are so inclined.

UNSPEAKABLE ACTS

Satanism in America co-author Bart Larson has heard some of the most horrific stories imaginable from those who have reported being involved with satanic rituals. Larson was the chaplin at a psychiatric hospital in Missouri for five years.

"I have had a significant number of people describe in great detail human sacrifices they have seen," said Larson.

One of the most horrendous stories was one about a teenage runaway boy who was abducted by a satanic cult made up of both teenagers and adults. As part of the ritual/torture in this particular sacrifice, it was reported the boy was cut open in multiple places and raped in the knife wounds.

This story was relayed to Larson by a teenage youth trying to break away from the cult.

"He told me the story," said Larson, "because he wanted to get it off his chest. As he told it, there was stark terror in his eyes." Larson said the terror not only stemmed from reliving the horrible incident, but also, by revealing it, he was afraid the cult would track and kill him.

Larson said often the person relating the story will tremble almost uncontrollably, convulsively cry, retch... "There is *so* much emotional affect," said Larson. "For most of them, there just seems no good reason they'd make this up."

Larson said a number of the ritual sacrifice stories he's heard have included victims who have been runaways, hitchhikers, illegal immigrants, drifters...

A highly respected Colorado therapist (who requests anonymity) said he had a similar experience in the late 1970s. At the time, he said he was a psychologist at a U.S. Armed Services Alcoholic Rehab Center. He said two enlisted men came to him at the same time, reporting they were involved with a satanic cult.

They said they had gotten involved because of all the sexual activity in the cult, but one night they witnessed a human sacrifice and got spooked. They now wanted to get out, but were afraid of the legal consequences — as well as being extremely afraid of what the cult might do to them if they defected.

"As they relayed the story," said the therapist, "they both looked extremely afraid, extremely guilty." The therapist said he referred them to a lawyer, but doesn't know what became of the situation.

Chapter 3

ARE THE MEMORIES REAL?

For years, satanic ritual abuse victims have been reporting variations of the same thing: ritual sexual abuse, torture, sacrifice...

However, some are questioning whether childhood repressed memories of sexual abuse and ritual abuse are, in fact, valid. And debate has also risen about the validity of the phenomenon of "recovered memories" in general.

Contention exists people are merely making memories up to, for instance, get on *Geraldo*. Or perhaps, they are acting out an unfounded malicious vendetta. Some also believe therapists are planting these "memories" in people's minds in order to pad their case loads and keep people in therapy longer. Or, some say, it is merely psychological "quackery."

FMSF CONTROVERSY

In fact, an advocacy group made up primarily of parents whose children have accused them of sexual abuse, ritual abuse..., has started up and is proffering some of the latter allegations. Headquartered in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, the False Memory Syndrome Foundation (FMSF) has taken to the air waves, to the courtrooms, and so on, trying to disprove some of the "alleged" victim stories of abuse.

However, despite its scientific sounding title, there is no clinically acknowledged "false memory syndrome" at this time, said Judith Herman, M.D., an associate clinical professor of psychiatry at Harvard Medical School, and author of *Trauma and Recovery*.

"The very name FMSF is prejudicial and misleading," said Herman. "There is no such syndrome, and we have no evidence that the reported memories are false. We know only that they are disputed."

Besides accused parents, FMSF has been able to enlist some professionals to function as spokespeople to the media, to serve as "expert" trial witnesses, and so on. However, there are some apparent ironies that have surfaced in connection with the FMSF organization.

The following is an excerpt from a February 29, 1992, *FMSF Newsletter* where the organization claims it is:

> **"...not in the business of representing pedophiles... We are a good looking bunch of people: graying hair, well-dressed, healthy and smiling... Just about every person is someone you would likely find interesting and want to count as a friend."**

Part of this FMSF claim might be called into question, given the following.

According to a December 1995 *Treating Abuse Today*, Dr. Harold Merskey, a member of the Scientific and Professional Advisory Board of FMSF, appeared as an expert witness in the civil trial of a Toronto doctor who had earlier admitted to pedophilia.

Before the Discipline Committee of the College of Physicians and Surgeons of Ontario, Dr. Leo Pilo pled guilty to sexual abuse of young girls that had come to his practice between 1967 and 1988. Some of the allegations included: manipulating the clitoris and nipples, sexual comments, using a vibrator inside the vagina, masturbating himself to orgasm.

According to the article, the college revoked Pilo's certificate to practice medicine, noting "his abhorrent behavior has been repugnant in the extreme..."

One of the doctor's victims, named in the Discipline Committee hearings, said as a result of the sexual abuse, she suffered such things as sexual dysfunction later in life, relationship problems, an eating disorder and depression (all common to many sexual abuse victims). She took the doctor to trial. He pled innocent.

According to *Treating Abuse Today*:

In civil court, Pilo's case unfolded in a way that Michele Landsberg, a *Toronto Star* columnist, characterized as "astounding."

> **What is most astounding about this case is that although everyone in the court room presumably knew about Dr. Pilo's published confession, and though many other victims of his abuse had come forward with strikingly similar details of his sickening sexual molestations, none of this was allowed. (1995, p. K1)**
>
> **The court reluctantly disallowed this evidence because, under the Ontario Regulated Health Professions Act, passed in 1993, no material heard before the College Discipline Committee can be used in subsequent civil suits. Thus, although Pilo lost his certificate of registration to practice medicine, based on evidence and his own confession of sexually abusing young girls, the civil court could not allow any of this material.**
>
> **Merskey, on the staff of the University of Western Ontario (London, Ontario), took the stand on Pilo's behalf. Merskey testified that D.M.M. [the "alleged" victim] probably suffered from "false memory syndrome." He offered this diagnosis despite the overwhelming evidence against Pilo given by five complainants, and despite Pilo's own earlier admission of pedophilia. Merskey reached his psychiatric diagnostic conclusions about D.M.M. *in absentia*, without the benefit of any direct clinical examination of her.**

In a November 25, 1995, *Toronto Star*, columnist Michele Landsberg writes of the case: "So why does Dr. Pilo now reverse his plea? Perhaps because he suffers from False Innocence Syndrome..."

The following is another apparent disparity in regard to the FMSF claim about not being in the business of representing pedophiles:

Ralph Underwager was one of the leading spokespeople for the FMSF. He lectured across the country on false memory syndrome, was used as an "expert" in numerous alleged abuse trials, and was repeatedly quoted in the media.

Underwager was also quoted in *The Journal of Paedophilia*, published in Amsterdam (January 15, 1993). The following is one of his quotes:

> **"Paedophiles can boldly and courageously affirm what they choose. They can say what they want is to find the best way to love. I am also a theologian, and as a theologian I believe it is God's will that there be a closeness and intimacy, unity of flesh between people. ...[P]aedophilia is an acceptable expression of God's will for love and unity among human beings."**

Underwager goes on to say:

> **"The solution that I'm suggesting is that paedophilia become much more positive. They should directly attack the concept, the image, the picture of the pedophile as an evil, wicked, and a reprehensible exploiter of children."**

What's more, Underwager actually is a theologian. He earned an M.Div. from Concordia Seminary, St. Louis, Missouri, and a Ph.D. from the University of Minnesota. He has been director of the Institute for Psychological Therapies in Minnesota. He also reports being a member of the National Council for Children's Rights.

Again, Underwager was a leading spokesperson for the False Memory Syndrome Foundation. Should there be cause for concern some FMSF members have other agendas?

(And for those who don't have conscious agendas, could they, perhaps, have unconscious ones? That is, they may be defending acts of perpetration they actually blocked out. Psychological studies show that people that have been abused in childhood, often become perpetrators themselves as parents — whether that's verbal, physical, sexual, or ritual abuse. And, theoretically, if they blocked the trauma out in their own childhood, they may actually, as adults, block out some, or all, of the trauma involved with their own perpetration as well.)

"When I look at people like Underwager, I'm incredulous, sickened and outraged," said Gail Carr Feldman, Ph.D. She also said she is appalled such a person is a representative of the psychological field to the general public.

Feldman works with both sexual abuse and ritual abuse victims in Albuquerque, New Mexico. She has had to debate "false memory" people, most recently on *The Larry King Show*, and said she is extremely disturbed by some of the FMSF tactics. "It seems whenever someone reports ritual abuse anymore, someone appears and tries to discredit them," said Feldman.

Likewise, she said she is also disturbed by the trend of some sociologists, whom Feldman refers to as "academic opportunists," to jump in and offer opinions to the media "...about something [ritual abuse] they know absolutely nothing about." For instance, said Feldman, some sociologists refer to the ritual abuse phenomenon as delusional and merely an "urban legend."

URBAN LEGENDS

In the book *The Choking Doberman and Other "New" Urban Legends*, J.H. Brunvand explains urban legends as "small tales," often first told as a hoax or a joke, spread by gossip, and retold as true by those who actually believe the story to be true. The honest, earnest, emotionally congruent telling of these tales by the naive believer gives them the ultimate persuasive power.

In a chapter for the book *Out of Darkness*, Dr. George Greaves, Ph.D., prominent lecturer and adjunct professor of psychology at Georgia State University, gives an example of an urban legend: "An urban legend I have heard in various forms since childhood centers on New York children who take vacations in Florida with their parents. While there, their parents purchase cute little baby alligators. Having no real place to keep alligators in their New York apartments, or tiring of having to care for them, the children would, so the story goes, dispose of them by flushing them down the toilet, where they subsequently wound up in the city sewers. In this warm, damp environment, the alligators naturally flourished, and grew into enormous and dangerous creatures that leave the sewers at night, pushing up manhole covers, in search of pet dogs and cats and, yes, even young children to eat."

Later, Greaves cites a personal correspondence of Brunvand's written in 1990, in which the author related reports of ritual abuse survivors seem to him to be very different from "urban legends" in several particulars. For instance:

1) They are told as either first-person victim accounts, or as first-person eye-witness accounts.

2) They are told not only as true, but with often terrifying emotion.

3) The reporters of these stories often provide some sort of proof of what they are saying, such as scars on their bodies.

4) They tell not one, but many such stories.

5) The stories they tell, though ghastly in nature, do not circulate in the general culture in the detail in which they are told.

6) These stories are not brief. A single story may take from one to many hours to tell.

7) Unlike urban legends, there is no measure of fun or delight in them. There is no punch line, no "gotcha!" outcome. One never laughs at these stories, or takes any form of delight in hearing them.

No... one doesn't:

> **Fitchburg, Massachusetts (UPI) — The alleged leader of a devil-worship cult was found guilty of first degree murder Friday in the ritual killing of a young Fall River, Mass., prostitute last year.**
>
> **Carl Drew, 26, stood pale and expressionless as the verdict was announced. He was immediately sentenced to life imprisonment by Superior Court Judge Francis W. Keating...**
>
> **Miss Marsden was allegedly killed, mutilated and beheaded by Drew and two others in a blood-soaked night-time ritual in a wooded area because she wanted to leave the cult.**

LEGISLATION

This verdict came March 13, 1981, in Massachusetts. That state must not be going for the "urban legend" explanation much at all. In fact, in 1993, House Bill 1689 — to prohibit certain ritualistic acts — was introduced.

Part of this bill reads: "Whoever commits any of the following acts upon, with, or in the presence of a child age 18 or under shall be punished by imprisonment...

a) Actually commits or simulates the killing of, or tortures, mutilates or sacrifices any animal or human being.

b) Forces the ingestion, injects or in any other way applies the use of a narcotic drug, hallucinogen or anaesthetic or mind altering substance for the purpose of dulling sensitivity, cognition, resistance, memory or to distort perception of any criminal or unlawful activity.

c) In any way forces the ingestion of or external application of human or animal urine, feces, flesh, blood, body parts, body secretions, drugs or chemicals.

d) Forces or entices the child to have sexual contact with another human or animal during a ritual ceremony, or rite or other related observance.

e) Places a child in a coffin or grave.

f) In any way threatens the child with death or serious harm to the child, the child's parents, family, friends, or pets.

g) Unlawfully dismembers, mutilates or incinerates a human corpse.

h) Forces the child to be placed in areas in which the child will come close to or in contact with human body parts.

i) Simulates the performance of surgery and placing imaginary foreign objects within a child.

j) Forces a child to participate in any ceremony, observance, practice or rite, purporting to be a marriage to any deity or other person and following such ceremony, observance, practice or rite with sexual contact or torture."

According to Monarch Resources, a sexual abuse and ritual abuse recovery referral and resource organization in California, similar ritual abuse legislation has been passed in Illinois, Idaho, California, Montana and Louisiana. (Bills are also pending in Oklahoma and Massachusetts.)

REPRESSION

Now to go back to the psychological phenomenon of repressed memories. When a child is being exposed to some of this intense trauma just described (and it's often happening at the hands of people like parents, neighbors, teachers, that, by the natural order of things, should love them), they, simply, can't handle it. They can't handle who the perpetrators are. They can't handle what's happening to them, and in some cases, what they are being forced to do. And, they can't handle, say, going to school and interacting with Johnny, or Suzy, or whoever, while grappling with such issues as torture, sexual abuse, murder.

So, as a survival mechanism, the mind reportedly takes over and represses the memories as they are happening. As a metaphor, it's as if the mind is a computer, and as the data is being entered, the computer is automatically taking the information and storing it in another file (the unconscious) the person doesn't initially (consciously) have access to.

Harvard's Judith Herman, M.D., and Mary Harvey, Ph.D. (Harvey is a lecturer in psychiatry also at Harvard and co-author of *The Rape Victim: Clinical and Community Interventions*), write extensively about the dynamics of memory. Some clinical experience shows that traumatic memories are formed in an altered state of consciousness induced by terror, say the authors. The focus of attention is greatly narrowed, the surrounding context falls away, and certain details of imagery and sensation are deeply engraved.

In an article for the *Harvard Mental Health Letter*, April, 1993, "The False Memory Debate: Social Sciences and Social Backlash?" Herman and Harvey wrote:

> **Partial, or even complete amnesia for childhood trauma is well documented. The younger the child and the more violent the experience, for instance, the greater the likelihood and the severity of amnesia...**
>
> **Delayed recall of traumatic events after a period of amnesia is also well documented. The most recent example is the well publicized case of Father James Porter, a Catholic priest who by his own admission molested more than 100 boys and girls in several states. Many of Porter's victims, including the first to come forward, testified that they had recalled the abuse after a**

> **period of amnesia. In these cases, the fact of the abuse and the phenomenon of delayed recall are beyond dispute...**
>
> **When traumatic memories break into awareness, distress can be overwhelming. Survivors are frightened, ashamed, depressed, and tormented by the flashbacks or nightmares. They may feel suicidal or fear they are going crazy...**
>
> **Furthermore, the process of uncovering one's history does not depend on a single memory. New memories must be gradually blended with old ones and alternative explanations weighed until a coherent and largely verifiable account is constructed. No patient is eager to discover that she was violated by people she loved and trusted.**

Herman and Harvey also wrote that over the past 20 years, public and professional awareness of sexual victimization has dramatically increased. As recently as the 1970s, rape was considered rare and incest was regarded as a universal taboo.

"Less than 20 years ago, for example, the *Comprehensive Textbook of Psychiatry* estimated the prevalence of all forms of incest as one case per million population," wrote Herman. And popular and professional literature routinely questioned the character of victims and disparaged the credibility of someone who made claims of assault. Today, however, sexual abuse/incest has been extensively documented.

"LOCKED IN THE MIND"

As with the Father Porter scenario, a case from Raeford, North Carolina would seem to validate the phenomenon of repression as well. According to a December 21, 1979, Associated Press article:

> **Edward Leon Cameron disappeared 35 years ago. Sheriff Dave Barrington went looking for him last week and turned up a bizarre murder**

locked since childhood in a woman's mind...

It was April 8, 1944, and Annie Blue Cameron was just short of her 10th birthday. That night, she now remembers, she overheard her parents quarrelling in the family's farmhouse.

The next day, she opened the door to the front bedroom and saw her father's body on the floor... He appeared to be dead, reads the search warrant drawn up last week. The next week after school she went to the outhouse. She looked down the hole and saw her father's face barely submerged under the excrement.

While in therapy 35 years later, the repressed memories of this series of events surfaced, and the daughter went to law enforcement. A dig at the place where the outhouse had stood, uncovered the father's remains.

The mother snuck away during the digging and committed suicide on the edge of the farm. A note found with her contained a confession.

MULTIPLE PERSONALITIES

Multiple personality is a key element in many satanic cult/ritual abuse survivor stories.

Extreme abuse is the genesis of multiple personality. And while many refer to it as a "disorder," it is actually an extremely creative survival mechanism.

An example: five-year-old Johnny is tied up and being tortured with, say, a knife and electro-shocks during some of the cult conditioning. The human psyche can take only so much pain before it, basically, snaps. And when it snaps, it will throw the person into convulsive hysterics, or a chronic catatonic state... or any number of other conditions which could cost your life during a cult ceremony; or make you useless to the cult in general.

So, when the victim is right on the brink of "snapping," the unconscious steps in and creates, what counselors call, a "dissociative" state. That is, the victim does exactly what the word says. He/she doesn't *associate* consciously with the trauma/pain anymore. He/she goes into a sort of numb, trance-like state.

In this state, the unconscious will create another personality to handle the next wave of abuse. Say, in Johnny's case, the unconscious creates a "Rambo" persona to deal with the next couple of hours of torture. And, when "Rambo" is on the verge of losing it, yet another personality is created, and so on.

However, the personalities don't just go away when the particular wave of trauma ends. They stay as part of the person's "system" to step in again as needed in the future. Each personality has its own memories and specific function(s). For instance, sexual alters (alter personalities) will be created to help get a victim through a cult orgy; an ultra-meticulous alter will be created in order to remember and carry out each facet of a particular ritual ceremony (one mistake could mean death); and so on.

Later in life, however, the personalities can, at times, get to be a problem.

For instance, at the first hint of any type of threat (even benign) as an adult, John's "Rambo" persona "comes up" automatically and becomes, say, abrasive, overbearing... totally inappropriate for the situation. Or, say, young Suzie's sexual alter Raquel would take over every time she had to have sex with an adult cult member. Well, later in life, Suzie, now Sue, is trying to please her boss as much as possible. And when he starts to "come on" to her sexually, even though it's against Sue's moralistic beliefs and better judgment, Raquel forces her way "up," takes what's called "executive control" of the system, and has sex with her boss. (Before the multiplicity is diagnosed, these "switches" are often merely looked at as extreme mood swings, "Jekyll/Hyde" personalities, and the like.)

Sometimes the host (core) personality, John or Sue, will be co-conscious. That is, they will be able to see everything that's going on as if watching a movie, but have little control over it. Other times, they actually will lose blocks of time while the alter is up, not remembering anything of what happened. (Somewhat like an alcoholic who functions in a blackout, but doesn't remember any of it.)

Once multiple personality is discovered in therapy, the goal is to get the personalities to gradually release their sets of repressed memories and feelings. And as this happens, they will "integrate" with the core personality.

Note: The therapeutic field has recently changed the label "multiple personality disorder" to "dissociative identity disorder."

CULT-CREATED PERSONALITIES

In the more sophisticated satanic cults, what we are graphically learning is they also understand the process of dissociation and creation of alter personalties — in fact, apparently all too well.

According to Denver ritual abuse recovery expert/therapist Holly Hector, Ph.D., the cult will use scare tactics, torture, drugs, sensory deprivation... to move the victim into that numb, dissociative state. Once there, a cult "programmer" will call up a new alter personality, name him/her, and give the personality an assignment. "It's a calculated, methodical split," said Hector, "designed to bring about total cult control of this alter."

One personality, for instance, might be designated at a certain age to bring the person back to the cult. Another may be designated to commit suicide if the system, say in therapy years later, starts to get too close to the memories. (I was recently talking to a woman in Omaha, Nebraska, whose friend had just hung herself shortly after beginning to have childhood memories of satanic ritual abuse.) Another cult-created alter might be designated as a courier, drug-runner, prostitute, assassin. Yet even more, as you will see in later chapters, some may even be groomed to take over key businesses or political positions.

National ritual abuse lecturer Len Anspach says there are several categories of multiple personalty (MP).

An "evolved" MP usually has from ten to 50 personalities. The perpetrator is usually totally ignorant about dissociation and sophisticated programming, said Anspach. The perpetrator might be, for instance, an uncle sexually abusing a young girl for his own pleasure and feeling of power.

Someone with "complex" MP, may have anywhere between 50 and 200 alters. Anspach said complex MP is primarily caused by "the chronic and systematic horrors" of being exposed to things like satanic ritual abuse. The methodical, calculated torture overwhelms the person's physiological and psychological tolerances, laying the groundwork for dissociation and programming. "The cult's agenda is to be able to control a person's life through manipulation," said Anspach.

The next chapter is a story about a person with "complex" MP, and how she found help.

Chapter 4

KATHY'S STORY

The satanic ritual abuse started in a secluded area in the Southwest. And before it was over, Kathy's story was not only out in the open, but was the subject of a major magazine piece that would draw all kinds of nationwide attention.

It was the late 1980's, and Kathy, the mother of five, living in suburban Dallas, wasn't doing well. She was experiencing chronic depression; severe panic attacks sometimes when around her parents, who lived the next block over; and lately, she was experiencing strong thoughts of suicide.

She checked into a psychiatric unit finally, to stabilize. After the hospital, she began weekly therapy. One of the first things she told the counselor: "I have virtually no memories of childhood."

However, the therapist stayed primarily cognitive. That is, he mainly focused on "here and now" circumstances, and tried merely to promote behavioral changes to help Kathy. For instance, if you're depressed — simply do things to pull yourself out, without exploring and working through the deeper cause of the depression, if there is one. The therapy, in this case, would suggest positive thoughts, exercise and volunteer work to pull someone out of depression. Sometimes this works. Sometimes this works short-term. That is, it's like pulling a weed out by the top. If you don't get to the roots, it keeps growing back.

In Kathy's first year of therapy, the depression kept coming back, the thoughts of suicide persisted, the panic around her parents hadn't dissipated.

She switched therapists. The new therapist was skilled in regression work, and Kathy started to, tentatively, move into her past.

The memories came on three levels: pictures, feelings, and body memories. As with visual memories, it also appears the unconscious has the ability to store long repressed body sensations.

Kathy would have memories of her father sodomizing her as a child. With the memories would come severe rectal pain at times, almost as if she were experiencing the abuse in the moment.

What's more, at times, finger prints and bruises would spontaneously appear on the insides of Kathy's arms and legs.

"She would have a memory, then the stigmata would appear on places where she had been pressed to the floor during a rape," Kathy's husband Matthew, who witnessed this, said. "This really helped me see what my wife was remembering was grounded in reality."

Note: For cult survivors, body memories come in all kinds. Inexplicable pain, bruises, the spontaneous appearance of a rash in the form of an upside-down cross, three 6's, or any number of satanic symbols that may have been lightly traced into a survivor's body, for instance, as part of the past torture.

The memories of sexual abuse and some ritual abuse were now coming steadily for Kathy, as were years of repressed traumatic feelings. She remembered, as a small child for instance, her mother partially inserting a knife in her vagina during one of the ceremonies. The blood was then smeared over her body as the cult told her she was satan's "sacrificial lamb." (As is the case with most ritual abuse survivors going through this painful purging process — the initial "presenting" problems concurrently were starting to dissipate. Kathy's thoughts of suicide, the chronic depression, the paranoia... were starting to lessen.)

A short way into the memories, Kathy and Matthew confronted the parents. They then took the issue to the Christian church they had all been attending. An investigative committee was formed, and the church elders eventually asked the father to step down as deacon. Kathy said one of the precipitating factors, was during the investigation an uncle came forward with information about an extra-marital affair her father had had.

On the outside, said Kathy, her parents had looked like the "perfect little Christian couple." Besides church work, they were involved with the International Bible Study Fellowship. They would also continually dole out money and other favors to the family. And, as the abuse allegations spread through the family, said Kathy, her parents started an active campaign to enlist the emotional support of as many other family members as possible.

During all this, Kathy read the book *People of the Lie* by author/ psychotherapist, Scott Peck M.D.. The book is an exploration of human evil. And one of Peck's main premises is people who are predominantly evil often spin a web, or facade, of "looking good" to mask the evil.

What's more, those that are evil become extremely narcissistic, only worrying about themselves. And that, said Kathy, seemed to, perhaps, be the case with her parents. Instead of slowing to talk with their daughter, her therapist, and so on, to explore "...why their daughter, at one point, was in overwhelming pain and near death in a psychiatric unit," said Kathy, they instead were frantically rushing around to the rest of the family trying to keep their reputation intact.

Note: Another possibility in Kathy's parents' case, as is the case with many possible perpetrators is, again, they, like the victims, block out the memories of their acts. According to psychiatrist Robert Rockwell in the spring, 1994 Journal of Psychohistory*: "It is not surprising that people accused of sexual abuse sincerely believe their innocence, since perpetrators of abuse are usually themselves victims of abuse, and are often dissociative. They are unaware that they dissociate and that they have alter personalities who perpetuate sexual abuse."*

Also, shortly after Kathy's parents had been accused, the False Memory Syndrome Foundation was organized. Early on, one of the Foundation "experts" was invited to give a couple of talks in churches in the Dallas area. (Incidentally, this expert was Ralph Underwager.) Kathy's parents attended one of the talks and decided to become active members. They took FMSF literature to family members and they attended FMSF groups...

Meanwhile, Kathy was going to groups of her own — therapy groups.

The memories kept coming: It was a secluded wooded area. Children were taken by the cult to see a figure of a dead man hung upside-down on a cross. They were told it was Christ, and he had been defeated. Satan was more powerful.

Note: Satanism is, again, the antithesis of Christianity. It promotes an almost insatiable quest for personal power, self-indulgence is the norm, revenge is actively condoned, satan is the enlightened one, all powerful.

Kathy would have a number of memories of the children being taken to the secluded cross over the years. In analyzing the memories, she said she realized the face of the man on the cross was always the same. While as a young child, seized in the terror of the moment, the figure seemed very real, and very dead. It may well have been an illusion, said Kathy. That is, some type of mannequin may have been doctored to create the effect. (Some reports indicate, at times, cult members are master illusionists.)

It wasn't just the ritual abuse memories that were coming for Kathy. With them, again, was years of repressed pain. Convulsive crying, fits of repressed rage, retching, terror. This is typical of a ritual abuse survivor's recovery process. (Feelings, like memories, aren't buried dead in the unconscious. They are buried alive. And they will fester, causing depression, high anxiety, migraines, and any number of other symptoms, until they are worked out.)

Actually, the high intensity of these repressed feelings bubbling up, in correlation to the horrific memories surfacing, tends to lend even more of a measure of credence.

Other typical memories satanic ritual abuse survivors have include: being locked in cages, or coffins; kept without food, water, for days; being drugged; forced to have sex with other children (sometimes while being filmed); forced to participate in animal sacrifices; forced to drink blood; forced to choose a sacrifice victim; forced to help with the killing...

For Matthew, watching Kathy go through all the memories was like being on the most intense roller coaster ride imaginable.

"For instance," said Matthew, "when the ritual abuse memories started to surface in 1990, I remember absolutely reeling from that."

What's more, there were layers of stress as Matthew struggled to deal with what he called the "constellation" of other personalities surfacing with Kathy. (As a ritual abuse survivor, who has multiple personalities from the trauma, moves further into the therapy process, the personalities surface much more and become very distinguishable.)

In dealing with Kathy's multiplicity, that is her switching from one personality to another, Matthew said: "It's, to say the least, a real unusual experience to have a dialogue with a person that merely occupies your wife's body, but is not the person you married. It requires you to actually suspend your expectations about moods, feelings, and so on, you expect of a spouse."

Matthew used the example of having to deal with a five-year-old child alter personality of Kathy's. He said, for instance, he'd be sitting on the bed talking rationally with his 35-year-old wife, when something (a trigger) would happen to bring back a traumatic incident, and with it, up would pop a five-year-old personality, for instance, who would be remembering an abuse scene from the past — and in terror about being abused again now. Matthew would have to switch gears completely, start to reassure this five-year-old personality he was not like her abusive father, then help talk her through the trauma.

This "switching" was quite emotionally taxing for Matthew. He enlisted a support group of friends, did as much reading as he could on the subject "...and actually stayed up one night writing a 30-page letter to a friend about it all."

Matthew said he was convinced as time went on, that not only had Kathy been abused in her past, but there was an extremely recognizable call in her life to recover from it — whatever that entailed. What's more, he said, it was his, and the children's, obligation to support Kathy as best they could.

"Multiple personality has painful social consequences," Matthew added. "Painful for the family, and society at large. For multiple personality to exist in someone, they've had to have been exposed to some pretty ghastly behavior."

Note: The last several years, a number of support organizations have evolved to help people like Matthew deal with the situation.

For instance, Rhode Island's Stand Fast is a nationwide support and referral source designed to help the spouse, family, friends...

As it was for Matthew, the multiplicity was also proving stressful at times for Kathy. Once Kathy accepted that she was multiple, as is the case, again, with many MPs, the personalities felt more at liberty to come to the surface, express themselves more freely, and so on. This meant, at times, Kathy had to work overtime trying to keep her system in check. What's more, she had to learn to listen and attend to each personality's needs. And she also had to learn to deal with cult-allegiant alter personalities that were programmed to sabotage the recovery.

For Kathy, the process was quite taxing, and even more complex.

In addition to the precipitating chronic depression and suicide problems before recovery, throughout her life Kathy had been plagued with codependency characteristics in the extreme. Like most ritual abuse survivors, she experienced unmet potential in relationships and work; she was extremely compulsive; had an overdeveloped sense of responsibility; was extremely self-critical; suffered low self-esteem; had difficulty with intimacy...

However, as Kathy recovered the memories, the repressed feelings, and began to reprogram herself, her self-esteem became much stronger. She said she was able to let down barriers and become more intimate with her family and friends. She was able to be much more assertive with people and with decisions. She could ease up on herself. She became a much better parent. A "warped" sense of God was starting to change.

The recovery was all the payoff she needed, said Kathy. Not a *Sally Jessy Raphael* spot. Not intentionally carrying out a vendetta against her parents. She said she in no way relished having to separate from them. And she didn't do it for money. Even the *Mother Jones Magazine* piece that carried part of her story yielded no payment.

She just wanted the story told. Maybe it would help someone else.

THE MEMORY DEBATE

On the November 15, 1993, *Jane Whitney Talk Show*, False Memory Syndrome Foundation advisory board member Dr. Richard Ofshe said dealing with repressed memories in therapy was simply the latest "quackery" coming out of the mental health industry.

In addition, he said: "No one who studies human memory, there's nothing in the scientific literature, there's nothing in human history, that tells this is possible." (That is, apparently, blocking out whole, elongated series of traumatic events, then recovering them later.)

In a segment on the Cavalcade Productions video *False Prophets of the False Memory Syndrome*, a brief film clip showed Ofshe saying (during one of this talks): "The world scientific community knows that these are not memories..."

In actuality, not all the "world scientific community" would agree.

Later on the Cavalcade tape, Harvard Medical School's Dr. Bessel Van der Kolk said the nature of traumatic repressed memory recall includes not only the flashback pictures, but a person feeling, behaving and reacting as if the incident was happening in the moment.

"What you see in traumatic memory is that people have implicit, or sensory motor affects, feeling states, images, bodily sensations that are related to a specific incident," said Dr. Van der Kolk.

Dr. Van der Kolk echoed Judith Herman in saying there was currently no such clinically recognized category as "false memory syndrome."

Discover Magazine's May 1994 edition also looked at some of the issues around the false memory debate. Writers Minouche Kandel and Eric Kandel looked at it from a psychological, and biological, perspective:

> **Most clinical psychologists believe that children can learn to block memories as a survival mechanism: if physical escape from their tormentors is impossible, psychological escape may become crucial.**

The Kendals cite a study done by Judith Herman in 1987. Most of a study group of sexually abused women reported delayed recall after a period of either partial or complete amnesia, and 75 percent obtained independent corroborating evidence of abuse.

On a biological level, while the phenomenon of repressed memories can't be conclusively proved, or disproved, yet, studies are under way.

The *Discover* article said the implicit memory involves distinct motor sensory pathways in the brain, the automatic nervous system and two additional brain structures called the "amygdala" and the "cerebellum."

According to the article: "...some survivors of abuse described their recovered memories as qualitatively different from other memories: they feel as if they are actually reexperiencing the event, with all its textures, smells, and physical sensations. This parallels the intensity of flashbacks experienced by combat veterans."

The article also notes Harvard's Stephen Kosslyn found that the brain area involved in *perceiving* an image and storing it as a memory, is also involved in *imagining* that image. And memory is like perception, in that both are reconstructed events in the brain.

Dr. Van der Kolk said the implicit memories (pictures coming with feelings, body sensations...) of abuse will often come in segments, where a therapeutic patient sometimes can't make a whole story out of it yet. So, at times, a survivor may use some imagination to "knit together" the segments so it makes more sense to them at that particular time in the recovery process.

This can lead to a natural measure of distortion at times, but doesn't take away from the validity of the solid, implicit memories coming back. "What you see in a flashback before you've had a chance to talk about it... that is to be trusted," said Dr. Van der Kolk.

It's also important to see there are, along the motor pathways Dr. Van der Kolk alludes to, distinct biomechanics that go into the formation of memory. A recent *New York Times* article included an interview with Harvard University neuroscientist Dr. Allen Hobson. An excerpt reads:

> **The awake brain receives copious amounts of information from the outside world, mainly in the form of light and sound frequencies, chemical signals, and physical touch, Hobson said. It processes these signals in vast, oscillating networks of brain cells to form representations of the external world and combines these maps with memories, movements, emotions and forethought in a way that gives rise to self-awareness and the ability to navigate the world...**

As you can see, these are extremely complex sets of input and processing variables that go into storing memories. And much more study needs to be done.

But therapist and researcher Mike Moore points out, there is, perhaps, one key variable that may never be able to be recreated for study in a test setting: "You can't replicate, in any experimental lab, what it is like to be repeatedly traumatized by your primary care giver [Mom, Dad...] in a child's developmental years."

Note: Some acknowledge while, say, Vietnam veterans may block out some of the horrendous war atrocities they've experienced, they don't block them all out, or forget they were in Vietnam altogether. They use this argument to say: why then should satanic cult survivors, for instance, be any different? That is, why would they block all *the memories out, and not remember they were even in the cult at all?*

Actually, there are a number of possible reasons. For one, the satanic cult victim is trying to absorb the almost unimaginable, psychic trauma of Mom, Dad, other relatives, neighbors... shooting *at them, so to speak. Two: there is often no one safe to tell, and because you're a child you're still reliant on the home, the only one you have, for physical survival. Three: no one threatens to kill you if you talk about Vietnam. And it is in essence, socially acceptable to talk about war. While it's reinforced,* often, *if you talk about the cult you'll end up like, say, the four murdered defectors in Salida, California. And, it hasn't exactly been socially acceptable to talk about the ritual abuse in too many circles so far.*

Given the nature of all these threatening dynamics, isn't it wholly conceivable that a computer-like "vast, oscillating network of brain cells" is sophisticated enough to totally transfer this cult data, so to speak, into a hidden file for a while?

MEDIA DISTORTION

On January 7, 1993, the ABC show *Prime Time* devoted one of the segments to the phenomenon of satanic ritual abuse. Jay Schadler interviewed people reporting having been exposed to satanic ritual abuse, therapists who work with them, a therapist that disputes the phenomenon, several patients reporting that they had been duped by therapists into believing they had been victims of satanic ritual abuse, and, at one point toward the end of the segment, an interview was shown where Schadler interviewed a mother and father in Texas who had been accused by their daughter of sexually abusing her during satanic rituals.

This segment began as a camera panned in on the couple sitting at a piano in the house singing a church song. As the parents are singing, the voice of *Prime Time*'s reporter Schadler comes in: "Lee Brady is *not* a satanic high priest. He's a small town Texas preacher. His wife Jean is *not* a child abuser. She's a Bible teacher."

The strongly definitive, and just as glaringly subjective "...They're not satanists, etc." statements break every rule of sound journalism.

(This section is being written during the preliminaries of the O.J. Simpson case. Schadler's "they're not satanists" statement would be analogous to hearing a reporter, at this stage in the Simpson proceedings, naively saying: "O.J. Simpson is *not* a murderer. He's a football player we all love.")

In the Salida, California, cult case, a cult informant told investigators, a local minister and a respected town dentist were involved with the cult. In the 1989 Matamoros cult case in Mexico, that included the grisly murder/sacrifices of 13 people, 24-year-old, drug cult, high priestess Sara Maria Aldrete Villarreal lured a number of young men to their deaths. By day, top student Villarreal was a member of the faculty-nominated "Who's Who" at Texas

Southmost College. And what's more, she was also president of the college's Soccer Booster Club.

Before the Matamoros case broke, what could we have expected from a Schadler/*Prime Time* piece? Maybe the camera panning in on a bubbly Sara Maria singing a rousing version of Texas Southmost College's alma mater before a soccer match. Then, perhaps, we would hear: "Sara Maria is *not* a drug-smuggling satanist. She's a top student. And if she has a 'jones' for anything, it's not drugs, it's not cold-blooded murder — it's soccer..."

When Mexican police raided Villarreal's home, they found a room with a ritualistic altar standing against a blood-splattered wall. The grisly human sacrifices to the cult's version of satan were partially for supernatural protection in their drug smuggling efforts. On May 5, 1994, Villarreal was sentenced to 62 years in prison. She was convicted of multiple homicide, drug possession, gang association and impersonating federal officers, according to an Associated Press article.

Prime Time producer, Steve Reiner, approached one of the ritual abuse survivors to be featured on the show. He said his intention was to do a "sensitive, non-exploitive" story, said the survivor.

"Finally, I thought we were going to get a chance to *really* be heard," said "Vanessa."

Vanessa said she was horrified when she saw the show. She said the segments used that involved her were, in her opinion, selectively cut and run together to make her story seem not credible. "They had edited my tape to distort everything Randy [Noblitt, a therapist] stood for and all we had accomplished. I couldn't believe how they had manipulated the use of tape," said Vanessa. What's more, she said she continually emphasized that her sister was having the same ritual abuse memories — but that was never mentioned.

Outraged, Vanessa called reporter Jay Schadler the day after the story ran.

"I trusted you guys..." she said.

"That was your first mistake..." she says Schadler replied.

Vanessa went to the library, got some information on lawsuits, and sued ABC — on her own. They offered to settle with her out of court, she said.

While the *Prime Time* piece, by any measure of legitimate journalism standards, was anything but serious reporting (more like slanted "infotainment," at best), the tragic thing is probably millions of people uninitiated to the subject bought Schadler's assessment at face value. Just as many probably bought the following story at face value as well:

KATHY'S STORY: THE MEDIA

To go back to "Kathy's Story." A writer for *Mother Jones*, Ethan Watters, did initial interviews with Kathy's parents, then Kathy and Matthew.

In a follow-up interview, Matthew said Watters asked him: "Do you *really* believe the stories [about satanic ritual abuse] your wife is telling?"

Matthew answered he did.

Then Matthew said Watters responded incredulously: "If you believe that... you believe people are abducted by aliens as well."

The first eight-tenths of the *Mother Jones* piece was even-handed. Both sides were represented quite fairly. Then came the *twist*, or rather, *spin*.

During the interviews, Matthew told Watters their daughter Sarah had spent a lot of time at Kathy's parents' house in her early years. At age seven, Sarah started having pronounced emotional problems.

Watter's article picks up:

> **For help, the family again turned to the therapy community. They chose a child therapist, who evaluated Sarah for several weeks.**
>
> **"I'm 90 percent convinced," the therapist proclaimed at the end of the evaluation period, "that your daughter has been sexually abused." "I asked, 'By whom?'" Matthew remembers.**
>
> **"We don't know yet," said the therapist.**
>
> **It took another nine months of coaxing for Sarah to tell her own story of being sexually**

> **assaulted by her grandparents... "They made me watch dirty movies and take showers with them," she claimed. "They said they would cut my arms off if I told."**

That reporting, except for the word "coaxing" (Watters never interviewed the therapist), would have been close, except that the paragraph that proceeded this last section read as follows:

> **With her mother routinely suicidal and her father working all the time, Sarah must have found home to be an unhappy place and worst of all, she was no longer able to visit the one sanctuary she knew from the pain in her life. [*Watters never even interviewed Sarah.*] In Sarah's mind, her grandparents had been slowly transformed into monsters.**

Ethan Watters' article, again, ran in the January 1993 edition of *Mother Jones Magazine.* (In regard to the end of the Watters piece, Matthew said: "I'm enraged at the gross misrepresentation of what happened with that story!" Matthew said immediately after it ran, he called Watters to voice his displeasure. Watters never returned the call.)

Society Magazine's March/April 1993 edition carried a decidedly one-sided story about "false recovered memories" and how they are "...devastating thousands of lives." The title was "Making Monsters." The authors of "Making Monsters" were False Memory Syndrome Foundation advisory board member Richard Ofshe and *Ethan Watters.*

A footnote at the end of the article states, "The [article] authors are currently working on a book about the false memory epidemic and its implications for the mental health professions in America."

I contacted Watters to get his response to some of this. He said he first started working on this subject in connection with a 1991

Mother Jones piece he did around the "Olympia, Washington-Paul Ingram" case involving claims of sexual and satanic ritual abuse.

And while Watters claims he hadn't contracted to do the *Society Magazine* piece, or the book with Ofshe, prior to the 1993 *Mother Jones* piece, he admitted he definitely had a "point of view" going into the writing of that article — which he said he believes magazines allow for, much more than newspapers. Watters said his "point of view" going into Kathy's story was that it was a typical, representative, case scenario of false memories.

Note: Kathy said what had been represented to her by Watters at the outset, was he was just trying to be objective. She said she never would have agreed to do the story, if Watters had been up front with her about the slant he was taking. What's more: "I felt a lot of rage as well about the things he wrote about my daughter that were simply not true!"

Watters acknowledged he never interviewed the daughter.

Watters said Ofshe and his book will be out in October 1994. The title: *Making Monsters*. The subheading: *False Memories, PsychoHeresy and Sexual Hysteria.*

Note: A little later the same night of my interview with Watters, CNN News (7/25/94) reported that in Riverside, New York, court proceedings had just concluded around the case of John Espisito. The report said Espisito had kidnapped a ten-year-old girl and held her hostage in a minuscule underground "dungeon" cell (the size of perhaps two small closets) where he was reported to have repeatedly raped the young girl.

As Espisito stood before the bench prior to his sentencing, he told the judge: "I'm not *a monster..."*

THE REST OF KATHY'S STORY

The whole story about Matthew and Kathy's daughter Sarah did not appear in the *Mother Jones* article. And it seems only fair the parents had a chance to really tell their unabridged side of the story.

As mentioned earlier, Matthew and Kathy lived right around the corner from Kathy's parents. And in the early years, Sarah would spend a lot of time at her grandparents' home. There were four other children, but the grandparents spent, by far, the most time with Sarah.

"When I look back," said Matthew, "it was as if they were culling her from the flock."

Matthew admits, also at this time he was a workaholic, for which he is now in recovery. And Kathy was experiencing a lot of pronounced mood swings (switching) as part of the scars from her own abuse. So, there was tension in the home. (However, Matthew adamantly maintains, there was no sexual abuse.)

On May 20, 1989, Kathy was admitted to a psychiatric hospital just before memories of sexual abuse/ritual abuse, reportedly at the hands of her parents, began to surface.

Note: It's often the case just prior to these types of extreme memories surfacing that a ritual abuse survivor, or a war veteran, will "decompensate." That is, as the horrific memories are nearing the surface, all types of internal alarms, defenses, and so on, will collide almost out of control in the unconscious for a time, throwing the person into crisis. This will sometimes result in the need for a supervised setting to help get the survivor through this acute and dangerous period.

While Kathy hadn't had the memories yet, she did have a strong premonition. Just before Matthew left the hospital that day in May, Kathy implored, "Please don't leave the children with my parents."

Shortly thereafter, Kathy started having the memories. And, while the parents didn't allow the children over to their grandparents' anymore, after the memories started, Matthew said he hadn't told Sarah any of the specifics of the heinous nature of the abuse her mother was remembering. "She was too young to hear all that," said Matthew.

During that summer, Kathy's parents met with Matthew's parents, protesting it wasn't fair they couldn't see the grandchildren. Matthew's parents reported Kathy's parents said specifically they really wanted to see Sarah more than any of the others, because they had established such a "good" rapport with her.

In November of that same year, Sarah started experiencing pronounced behavioral problems, and was starting to have suicidal thoughts as well.

"We called her school and told them we had a child in trouble," said Matthew. A therapist was recommended.

After a five-session evaluation period, said Matthew, because of some of Sarah's behavioral patterns, lack of emotional affect, and so on (Matthew said Sarah had been inexplicably acting out sexually with adults, dancing in a sexually explicit manner.) "Sometimes she was acting almost like a little 'Lolita, said Mathew.'" The therapist told Kathy and Matthew: "I've been in the therapy field for 20 years, and based on what I'm seeing, I'm pretty sure your child has been sexually abused."

But the therapist also said a bit more that day, Matthew recalled.

He said she informed him the laws in Texas required her to say that if she discovered it was Matthew that had sexually abused Sarah, she would turn the information over to the authorities. And the result might well be Sarah would be taken out of the home and he would be sent to jail. Matthew told her to go ahead with the therapy. Six months later, the memories started to surface. And the first reportings of the sexual abuse memories didn't even come in a therapy office, or the child's home. Matthew said it came at Matthew's parents' home, when, at dinner, the little girl told these grandparents they were different than her other grandparents. The other grandparents, she said: would make her get undressed, would make her take showers with them, would make her have sex with them. And they had threatened to kill her if she ever told, she said.

Matthew said Sarah then told a school counselor, then a teacher, and the last people she told were Matthew and Kathy. Her reason, Matthew said: "I don't want Mommy to cry and go back to the hospital again."

For another couple of years Sarah worked through the repressed pain and memories of abuse, her self-esteem gradually being restored.

"I finally got my daughter back," said Matthew. "It's as if a rose had been dropped in a mud puddle — then picked up and washed off."

"He pretty easy to talk to?"

One of Matthew's assessments was writer Ethan Watter's agenda was to show patients are sometimes systematically being misled by the therapeutic community in regard to some sexual and ritual abuse reporting. Schadler's *Prime Time* piece, alluded to earlier, for instance, featured therapist Randy Noblitt, who is the president of the International Council on Cultism and Ritual Trauma.

Prior to the on-camera interview, Schadler attended a professional lecture by Noblitt, then spent another several hours being briefed on any number of ritual abuse dynamics, including information on multiple personalities in connection with extreme trauma.

Note: One dynamic, for instance, is if a child is being forced by cult members to help torture, kill, or cannibalize, they need a harsh, impervious alter personality to carry out what they are naturally almost incapable of doing, and are actually horrified by. Because there is no physical way out, the unconscious will take over and create such a personality for survival's sake. Sometimes these personalities will have demon names, even the name "satan." There are any number of other reasons for these types of personalities as well.

Noblitt allowed *Prime Time* to film a counseling session in which one of the alter personalities that came up in a woman survivor was named "satan."

Schadler addresses the following questions to Noblitt:

> **Schadler: You even called up satan?**
> **Noblitt: Yes.**
> **Schadler [facetiously]: He pretty easy to talk to?**
> **Noblitt [referring to the alter personality]: Vanessa's satan seemed to be a pretty easy guy to talk to.**

The scene switches. Schadler is now addressing a "false memory" advocate/spokesperson.

> **Schadler: I hate to be so blunt about it, but some of these therapists may be sicker than their patients...**

Randy Noblitt, Ph.D., graduated cum laude (undergraduate) from North Texas State University, has taught graduate courses in abnormal and neuropsychology for Vanderbilt University, was a clinical psychologist for the U.S. Air Force, and now works in private practice specializing in post-traumatic stress afflictions, multiple personality, substance abuse/dependency. He has counseled many patients reporting ritual abuse. Much of this wasn't mentioned during the *Prime Time* show.

I have interviewed a significant number of therapists around the country who work with people who report being SRA survivors. And it is my assessment, so far, that a majority are professional, dedicated people who are extending themselves way beyond the therapeutic call of duty, if you will, to help.

For example, a significant percentage of cult ritual abuse patients are barely getting by in life, emotionally and financially. And many therapists I've talked to have incorporated sliding fee scales where they treat these people, sometimes for next to nothing.

What's more, because some of the alter personalities are programmed to act out violently against the host person, therapist, or anyone else getting close to the cult secrets, therapists are doing this work at tangible risk to themselves. (I've interviewed a number of therapists that have been attacked in various ways during sessions.)

Noblitt, for instance, reports he has found weapons on several of his patients, and his office actually now uses a metal detector. And, therapists aren't just worried about retaliation from their patients' alter personalities. The following is a quite telling passage from the spring, 1994 *Journal of Psychohistory*. Edited by Lloyd DeMause, this particular journal was devoted to sadistic ritual abuse:

> **It was not, however, until word began to get around the psychiatric community that I was editing an issue of my journal on "Cult Abuse of**

> **Children" that I began to realize the full extent of cult activity in America today. Phone calls from all over the country poured into my editorial office from psychotherapists who told me that they would like to read the cult abuse issue because they had treated cult abuse victims.**
>
> **When I then asked them if they wished to contribute somehow to the [journal] issue, they often said they couldn't — they were afraid to talk in print about their clients, even anonymously, because the cults had threatened them, or their families, with violence. Phone threats, dead cats on doorsteps, burning crosses on lawns and other convincing communications made them understandably reluctant to write anything about cults.**

On top of all this, treating a ritual abuse survivor is very seldom a "standard hour" a week.

Calls come in at all hours, with the patient threatening suicide, again, because the cult programming includes a self-destruct mode if they ever tell the "secrets." Most sadistic cult survivors, again, display multiple personalities, because of the extremity of the abuse. And it takes quite skilled, intensive therapeutic work to deal effectively with each of the personalities in the painstaking process of trying to help integrate the system.

What's more, there's quite a different therapeutic strain, or taxing, between, say, working with someone who's experiencing a couple of minor relationship problems, and working with a sadistic cult abuse victim. Where a therapist will spend an hour, in effect, casually chatting through some cognitive behavior changes with the person experiencing minor relationship issues, it's entirely different with a sadistic abuse survivor.

For them to be free, they have to repeatedly go back into the past — as Kathy did — to unearth repressed memories, repressed feelings from the abuse. This entails therapists having to skillfully help a survivor's child alter, curled in a fetal position on the floor, work through the stark terror of watching a sacrifice — again. Or it is a therapist trying desperately to encourage the emoting of a survivor's repressed rage, as the patient storms around the office beating a rubberized bat and screaming until they virtually lose their voice.

Or, it is a therapist sitting, sometimes for hours, with a patient as they convulsively cry, retch, and so on, reliving yet other memories. It is a therapist in their office at midnight, their hand on the survivor's shoulder, as the rage, the convulsive crying, the retching has turned into an exhausted whimper. And it is these therapists, with a tear in *their* eyes now, who sit dazed, long after the patient has left.

The *Prime Time* piece "poignantly" ended at night with a camera pulling back from a lighted upstairs window. Mr. Grady, with a longing in his voice, explains every night they leave the light on for their daughter to come home.

It might have been more appropriate for *Prime Time* to have ended their segment with a camera panning back from one of these therapists' "lighted" offices late at night.

Based on my interviews with therapists across the country, it is my assessment a majority continue to work in this area because they believe the survivor dysfunction and pain are real. And what's more — and it's a shame this can't be quantified more for the general public — but they also do it because they often see the survivors significantly heal as a result of the work.

DENIAL

As the debate rages, many well-meaning therapists will get caught in the crossfire. And some ritual abuse survivors, who desperately need the help, will probably stay away from therapy because of *Prime Time* and similar pieces. Also, because of the legal liability now, some therapists are backing away from doing work around sexual and/or ritual abuse.

One therapist recently told me he fears at some point sexual abuse and/or ritual abuse survivors will hear from some therapists: "Sorry, your memories are just *too* unreliable. We can't explore those issues." So the survivor then lives out the rest of his/her life continually hurting, damaged and steeped in old dysfunctional patterns.

When I refer to legal liability for therapists, I'm referring to people who have been in therapy for a while and start to have, say, sexual/ritual abuse memories, then drop out of therapy. They then, sometimes, turn around and sue the therapist for malpractice, claiming "false memories" were implanted.

I'm a licensed counselor, and have also been in my own therapy and other recovery groups for quite some time. I've seen people in all stages of recovery. And people who have been in recovery for a while, sometimes get to some pretty traumatic repressed memories, repressed feelings — and back out because of the pain. And what's more, they go back into *denial*. You see it quite often in codependency recovery, sexual abuse recovery, ritual abuse recovery... And for some, part of going back into denial starts to include vocal indictments all this codependency stuff, for instance, is just "psycho-babble"; or these memories of cult orgies, and whatever, were just "planted" in their mind; "My parents are great people." (Accepting the reality of the abuse, may also precipitate the reality of having to separate from the abusive parents. Which is also, for some, too painful.)

In some of these circumstances, the therapist is then blamed; the 12 Step programs are then looked at as inherently flawed; and so on.

Yet this is sometimes someone who has gone back into denial because they're afraid of the pain. And in order to further con themselves into thinking they're right, they lash out at the therapist, these recovery groups, etc.

"MAKING MEANING"

At one point in the *Prime Time* piece during a therapy session Randy Noblitt was conducting, it appears he may have gotten too leading with a couple of questions. This occasionally happens with the most well-meaning of therapists. It's a new, complex field. Therapists are working overtime getting new training, experimenting with new methods to help. And as the mind may occasionally suggest detail to fill in the blanks around the solid flashbacks to prematurely complete the abuse "storyboard," a therapist might occasionally be too presumptuous. It's a mistake that happens at times.

But to use one "apparent" mistake, to invalidate a whole series of survivor flashbacks, or for that matter, the whole issue, is needlessly polarizing.

Clinicians Karen Olio and William Connell, who refute many of Richard Ofshe and Ethan Watters' arguments, say there should be a middle ground in looking at these issues. They write:

> **"Researchers and clinicians need to combine their expertise for a thoughtful exploration of the important questions regarding suggestibility, memory and trauma... Ofshe, Watters and others who advocate a simplistic, extremist view do a disservice to everyone by polarizing and obscuring these issues. All too often these concerns are co-opted by a political movement whose objective appears to be the creation of a climate of disbelief in survivors' stories rather than a thoughtful exploration of memory function."**

This excerpt was taken from the book: *Making Meaning not Monsters.*

Chapter 5

MORE EVIDENCE

I was recently interviewed by a production team from New Zealand in connection with a documentary they are doing on satanic ritual abuse. The producers explained they have been amazed at the information that has been surfacing since they began investigating the subject...

At the time of this writing, the FBI's official "law enforcement perspective," is that organized satanic ritual abuse doesn't exist.

A report, often cited by the media, was issued out of the FBI Academy's National Center for the Analysis of Violent Crime, Quantico, Virginia, in October 1989. The report: *Satanic, Occult, Ritualistic Crime: A Law Enforcement Perspective* was written by Kenneth V. Lanning, M.S. The following is a brief excerpt:

> **Rather, a satanic murder can be defined as one committed by two or more individuals who rationally plan the crime and whose primary motivation is to fulfill a prescribed satanic ritual calling for the murder. By this definition, the author has been unable to identify even one documented satanic murder in the United States...**

(A similar January 1992 update report by Lanning out of the FBI's Quantico unit, echoed this statement.)

NEW YORK SACRIFICE

The following is taken from a *Newsday* article, a reprint of which ran in the *Fort Worth Star Telegram* February 18, 1992:

> **New York — Members of a cult here killed ballerina Monika Beerle in August, 1989, and then dismembered her and fed her flesh to the homeless as part of a satanic ritual, law enforcement sources said yesterday after arresting a cult member in Pennsylvania in connection with the slaying.**
>
> **After a 29-month search by New York detectives, Randy Eastherday was arrested Friday on charges that he and several others helped Daniel Rakowitz, "The Butcher of Tompkins Square Park," stab Beerle and dissect the corpse.**

Dr. Judianne Densen-Gerber is a New York psychiatrist, who also has a law degree from Columbia University, and is the founder of P.A.C.T. (Protect America's Children Today). She is also founder and former chief of psychiatry for Odyssey Institute International, which has drug (and other addictions) treatment programs around the world.

She treated her first ritual abuse client in 1980, and has treated many more since.

"The stories [about different aspects of the cult rituals] are very much the same, whether it's someone from Melbourne, Australia or Vermont, Utah... This leads me to believe, not only are the cults all over, but because of the similarities, many are also networked," said Dr. Densen-Gerber.

She also said commonalities among ritual abuse survivors include, as discussed in the last chapter, amnesia. And many also are drawn to the "helping professions" (counseling, nursing, etc.) said Dr. Densen-Gerber. One of the unconscious reasons for this, said the psychiatrist, is because some ritual abuse survivors were forced to kill during some of the ceremonies, or stand by and watch helplessly during the killings. As a result, they are afflicted with "survivor's guilt," as are some war victims, for instance, and they have a strong unconscious need to atone by now trying to help *save* lives.

Some ritual abuse survivor reports include, as children, being forced to help kill. For instance, it is sometimes reported a cult member will put a knife in a young child's hand, then put their hand over the top, and force the knife down into a baby that is being sacrificed. The child knows nothing of "...coercion to commit a crime," and starts to believe they are actually a murderer too.

This is a mind-control technique to get the child to identify on a deeper level with the cult, and encodes the code-of-silence programming even that much deeper.

GOING TO THE SOURCE?

To go back to the FBI "Law Enforcement Perspective" by Lanning. In the updated 1992 version he writes: "Many of the police officers who lecture on satanic or occult crime do not even investigate such cases." (That's not true of the ones I've interviewed. And besides Randy Cerny, a couple other ritual crime investigator/lecturers' extensive work is featured in later chapters.)

Conversely, and rather ironically, according to a June 1993 *Vanity Fair Magazine* article, writer Leslie Bennets writes of the FBI agent who, supposedly, has his finger directly on the pulse of this whole issue:

> **To my surprise he [Lanning] admits he has never talked to a ritual abuse survivor. It turns out that through all the years he's been investigating the phenomenon, his contact has been solely with other law enforcement professionals and with therapists; he has never gone to the source of these reports... (Several weeks later, Lanning revised his story to say that he had spoken with "several dozen" survivors on an unofficial basis.)**

REPORTS INCREASE

Looking Up, founded as initially a support/referral program for incest survivors, services approximately 15,000 people a year — 40 percent of whom are now reporting they are dealing with ritualistic, or cult-related abuse.

JUSTUS Unlimited, a non-profit referral and resource center in Denver, Colorado, reports receiving more than 7,000 ritual abuse related calls a year. What's more, they are also hearing from all over the world: Australia, England, The Netherlands, Germany, Israel, Canada, Brazil...

BRAZILIAN SATANIC CULT MURDER(S)

Again, part of Kathy's story appeared in *Mother Jones Magazine*'s January 1993 edition. What also appeared was the following analysis by free-lance writer Ethan Watters: "Critics note... many patients from fundamentalist Christian backgrounds, for instance, have memories of abuse at the hands of satanic cults, despite no evidence that such cults even exist."

The following story ran five months *before* the *Mother Jones* article. It is based on a July 28, 1992, CNN report/transcript.

The story is not only about an extremely dangerous satanic cult, but is another graphic example of how "good" a satanist(s) can look on the outside. And in this case, how politically connected some can be as well. It also underscores how a satanist's quest for power can apparently drive her/him to do anything.

> ***International Correspondent*: In the small town of Guaratuba on the south coast of Brazil, angry residents demand justice in a bizarre murder case that has shocked the country. The body of seven-year-old Evandro Caetano was found horribly mutilated. Police say he was tortured and sacrificed in a satanic ritual.**

The boy's arms and legs had been dismembered, his internal organs cut out. Ritual implements used during the ceremony were also found near the body. Police investigations eventually implicated the family of the mayor of Guaratuba. (The CNN report showed enraged citizens storming the mayor's house to exact their own justice. However, the mayor wasn't there at the time, and the mayor's wife narrowly got away.)

The transcript goes on:

> **[According to investigator] Jose Moscic Favetti: We believe the mayor's wife and daughter were involved with a satanic cult, that other children may have been murdered, and some children may have been taken to Argentina for rituals done there. CNN Reporter: Five cult members who were allegedly paid by the mayor's wife to sacrifice Evandro have been arrested... while police continue looking for other cult members, anxious parents here are on their guard, keeping watch over their children.**

Also, according to the report, ten other children had come up missing in the area since January of that year, and while police currently had no evidence linking them to this case "...many here fear they, too, may have been sacrificed in satanic rituals," said the CNN reporter.

Note: Ten children come up missing in the Guaratuba area at the same time that a deadly satanic cult is exposed. Is there a connection? Scores of children come up missing every year, and ritual abuse survivors consistently report things like remembering child kidnapping and murders.

"The public isn't generating enough momentum to get police mobilized around this [ritual abuse] issue at this point. Right now they are crying out for us to deal with drug abuse, sexual abuse, drunk driving..." said Akron, Ohio, Police Captain Jerry Foys.

Foys said he believes the cult/ritual abuse situation is widespread and extremely dangerous. However, the public hasn't expressed concern yet because it's not going on out in the open, said Foys, and many people merely believe most people involved with cults are benign, harmless "kooks."

"Hopefully, Waco changed some of that for people," said Foys. He alluded, for instance, to a report that had come out detailing how adult Branch Davidian cult members were teaching the children how to commit suicide by showing them where to position the barrel of a gun in their mouths to be most effective.

To continue with the missing children phenomenon, former Nebraska State Senator John W. DeCamp interviewed 28-year veteran FBI agent Ted Gunderson for his book: *The Franklin Cover-Up: Child Abuse, Satanism and Murder in Nebraska.* Gunderson is the former special agent-in-charge of the Bureau's Los Angeles Division. He also worked extensively on the highly publicized McMartin Pre-School case in California. In that case, 460 families issued complaints to the Manhattan Beach Police around children's claims of being exposed to ritualistic sexual abuse, animal sacrifice, baby sacrifice, and so on, at the pre-school.

As far as missing children in general, DeCamp writes in *The Franklin Cover-Up*:

> **Evidence from Gunderson's investigations has convinced him tens of thousands of children or young people disappear from their homes each year, and that many are ritualistically sacrificed. ...Nobody knows what the true figure is, because the FBI does not keep count. Gunderson observes: "The FBI has an accurate count on the number of automobiles stolen every year. It knows the number of homicides, rapes and robberies, but the FBI has no idea of the number of children that disappear every year. They simply do not ask for the statistics... I am convinced that the FBI does not ask for these statistics because they do not want to see them. They would be confronted with an instant public outcry for action, because the figures would show a major social problem that would demand action."**

(A detailed report on the Franklin case will be presented in a later chapter.)

SATANIC MOTIVATION

Again, as skewed as the ideology may seem, there is rationale for a satanist's behavior beyond merely satisfying some sadistic impulses. A farmer, who is also a satanist in, say, the Midwest, will perform a sacrificial murder for a good crop the next year. If you're a broker/satanist on Wall Street, you may perform a sacrificial murder for a better portfolio...

According to an Associated Press article, also about the Guaratuba case:

> **Police have traced his [the seven-year-old boy's] death to the wife of Guaratuba's mayor who they say allegedly turned to a satanic cult to try to improve her husband's sagging political and business fortunes. Celina Abagge allegedly paid cult members $2,000 to kill the boy in a good luck ritual.**

EVIL SORCERY

It doesn't seem that just the mayoral political strata is using occult rituals. Deposed Panamanian leader Gen. Manuel Noriega was apparently practicing "evil magic" and other occult rituals to help himself politically and personally, said agent James R. Dibble, a specialist on "cults and deviant movements" in the U.S. Army's Criminal Investigation Division.

According to a December 26, 1989, *Washington Post* article, Noriega used a variety of elaborate rituals to cast black magic spells on numerous political enemies. Also, according to other news accounts that came out at the same time, Noriega was said to have had a ritual altar at his headquarters and it was also reported he regularly consulted with witches.

This included a Brazilian sorceress, whose photographs hung on the walls of Noriega's home and office. Dibble said the woman practiced Candomble, a Brazilian offshoot of the Latin American religion known as Santeria.

Santeria includes a synthesis of some saints and tribal gods and is practiced widely in Latin America. It is similar to, but not the same as, voodoo.

THE WARRIOR

I opened the book with a song about ritual abuse from Joan Baez's album: *Play Me Backwards*. There was another album released about the same time, that also includes a song about ritual abuse. The album is *The Warrior (A Project of Recovery)*. The song: *The Saints Will No Longer Allow You To Die* by "tres."

Tres said the song was written about a memory given to him by his inner child. While in a treatment center for what was diagnosed as post-traumatic stress disorder, he began chanting in his sleep.

"One of my roommates was an insomniac and wrote down what I was saying as best he could," said tres. "What I was speaking was Latin. I had never studied Latin before in my life."

Tres then started having memories of the nannies who took care of him as a child, practicing Santeria around him. Tres had the chant he was doing in his sleep deciphered by a Catholic priest. What he was chanting was: "The saints will no longer allow you to die."

"The Saints Will No Longer Allow You To Die"

As I look back on my childhood years
I can recall the times I was so full of fear
I had nannies that took care of me
They were Santeria queens, I think they worshipped me.

Oh how they would chant to the saints
as they washed my small feet
I remember what they said as they dried with their hair
the blood they put on me

They would sing to me.

The Saints will no longer allow you to die
that's what my nannies told me.
The Saints will no longer allow you to die
that's what the Santeria queens would say.

The Saints will no longer allow you to die
no te dejan murir mi diosesito.
The Saints will no longer allow you to die
they used to sing it every night and day.

What was it they were trying to save me from?
Was it the devil in me or was it something I'd done?
I can remember their cries in the night
as they gathered 'round me in the pale candle light...

The Saints will no longer allow you to die...

MINNESOTA MANIA

In *Breaking the Circle of Satanic Ritual Abuse*, I write about a 23-year-veteran of the Minneapolis Police Department who helped start a ground-breaking task force called "MINNARA," Minnesota Awareness of Ritual Abuse.

Jon Hinchliff has been involved with ritual crime investigation since 1981, when he came across a case that really piqued his interest. A woman in the Minneapolis area had been convicted of murder. She had been involved in the practice of Santeria, said Hinchliff.

In the Minnesota case, the woman drove "blessed stakes" through her young grandson's heart because she felt he was possessed by evil spirits, said Hinchliff.

In the winter of 1988, Hinchliff and two other counselors from Minneapolis's Sexual Assault Center formed MINNARA. The membership quickly grew and included counselors, lawyers, teachers, ritual abuse survivors, other law enforcement officials...

Over the years, Hinchliff said he has developed sources in the occult world. He said that one of the biggest aids to him is that he has been able to gain insight into how cult members think.

One of the major obstacles in this field of investigation is the general tendency to just pass the whole thing off as unbelievable, Hinchliff said, because at first glance it appears so bizarre. However, he said, once you understand some of the rationale, then not only does cult activity become believable, but people are actually able to approach the subject with some measure of objectivity.

MURDER AT MATAMOROS

Some ritual abuse survivors report witnessing sexual abuse, torture, sacrifice in covert ceremonies sometimes within the context of such belief systems as Druidism, witchcraft, and again, such Afro-Caribbean religions as Santeria and Palo Mayombe. Palo Mayombe is a "dark" religion that requires the use of human body parts and blood.

It was Santeria and Palo Mayombe that was being practiced by a cult on an isolated ranch 20 miles west of Matamoros, Mexico, in 1989. And it would be these cult members that would sacrificially kill a Texas college student — and 13 others — in one of the most highly publicized cult ritual abuse cases yet.

Twenty-one-year-old Mark Kilroy was in his third year of college and anticipating medical school when he was abducted off the streets of Brownsville, Texas, during spring break. He was taken across the border to that isolated ranch outside of Matamoros — and he was sacrificed.

The following is an excerpt from the book: *Sacrifice*, which is about the Matamoros case:

> **Constanzo sacrificed Mark Kilroy with a series of machete blows to the top of the head. The high priest then scooped the brains from the college student's skull and added them to the black kettle... Quickly blood was drained from Mark's body into the cast iron pot.**
>
> **Now, according to the tradition of Palo Mayombe, the nganga [dark spirit] had been refreshed with the sacrifice of human blood, even a human life. The group would have power and good luck. The men would have intelligence... They petitioned the spirit for strength, riches, and protection from the police while smuggling drugs.**

After his death, Kilroy's body was mutilated. Even the spine was actually cut free so the cult could use it as a necklace. It would be several weeks later that authorities would make the grisly discovery of Kilroy's body, as well as 13 other sacrificial victims at the ranch.

In the book *People of the Lie* (mentioned earlier), author Peck, talks at length about the psychology of evil, including some people's abilities to spin webs of lies, or facades, around their exterior to cover the evils they may be perpetrating. Also, at times, the lies become so convincing, people often start to believe the evil they are carrying out is actually good. That is, for a higher purpose.

One of the Matamoros murderers, Elio Hernandez Rivera, bragged he could keep a victim alive long enough to split the chest and rip the beating heart out — just as his forefathers, the ancient Aztecs, had done while sacrificing to pagan gods.

Another of the Matamoros cult members, Serafin Hernandez Garcia Jr., was actually majoring in law enforcement at Texas Southmost College at the time he was arrested.

Note: Likewise, Stanislaus County, California, cult member Tamara Smith had been taking law enforcement classes at a community college. Ritual crime investigator Randy Cerny said she was using this to befriend certain police, have sex with them, and glean information the police might be compiling, say, against the cult. This may have also been part of the grooming process, in regard to placing cult members in strategic professions. Some ritual abuse survivors report remembering being abused during the ceremonies by cult members that were also involved with law enforcement.

According to U.S. Customs agent-in-charge in Brownsville, Texas, Oran Neck: "These people [Matamoros cult members] don't seem to know right from wrong. They're convinced that anything they do is right." Also in the book *Sacrifice*, authorities described the suspects as being cavalier about what they had done. There was no apparent remorse, or fear.

This cult, like the one in California, had a rigid leader, 26-year-old Adolfo Constanzo, who ordered the kidnappings and killings. Constanzo was also, apparently trans-generationally influenced by occultic practices. He was an American of Cuban descent, born in Miami, Florida. Growing up, neighbors sometimes complained of dead animals on their doorstep after somehow offending his family, according to the book *Sacrifice*.

Note(s): Several months after the initial reports of the satanic cult killing in Brazil, reporter Tod Lewan filed a story with the Associated Press that provides a more in-depth look at the whole picture.

Guaratuba, Brazil — It was 7 p.m., the killing hour. Evandro Caetano, 7 years old, lay gagged and bound to a wooden table in the dark sawmill. Outside, devil worshippers prepared an altar for the sacrifice.

Osvaldo Marcineiro, the cult's "high priest," who later revealed the details of the secret ritual in a videotaped confession, nodded to his followers.

Inside the mill seven masked figures in red and black circled Evandro. The black and white candles they held filled the room with light. (Marcineiro recalled that the boy wriggled and tried to scream.)

As the cult leader chanted softly, two women pinned Evandro's arms. A man gripped his throat squeezing until the boy went limp.

Another cult member slit Evandro's throat with a kitchen knife and collected his blood in a bowl.

With a handsaw, Marcineiro cut off the hands, ears, toes and genitals, then removed the eyes, heart...

"A male child of perfect innocence and high intelligence is the most satisfactory and suitable victim." — Aleister Crowley.

Imagine the stark terror of the little boy struggling for his life that night. As he looked up imploringly at the two women who approached him first, what did the young child think? Like his mother, the women would comfort him, help ease his fear, his pain?

Instead of comforting looks, what did he see as they reached to hold his arms down? Were the women smiling? Laughing hysterically? Staring coldly?

What if it had only been a cult torture session, like so many ritual abuse survivors describe? What if, instead of his throat being slit, the ritual had ended with the high priest folding back the child's eyelid, for instance, and partially slitting the inside? (A survivor describes this exact torture in my first book, *Breaking the Circle of Satanic Ritual Abuse*.)

Would that be enough terror for Evandro's unconscious to repress the memory, had he lived? And years later, if the memory came flooding back, would that same Evandro be curled in the corner of a therapist's office somewhere, spontaneous bruises, like what happened with Kathy, appearing on his arms where the women brutally held him down, and screaming uncontrollably that scream that was muffled that night, so long ago? (Just like so many other cult survivors whose screams didn't come out — until years later.)

How many? Work is still being done on that. But the investigation into Evandro's case yields some more clues.

The people who killed Evandro were part of a cult called "Superior Universal Light," as, for example, Aleister Crowley's group is called "Ordo Templi Orientis." And, like Crowley's group, the Superior Universal Light cult is networked, according to Joao Noranha, who is a federal investigator in Panama.

According to Lewan's article, Noranha said this particular cult has about 2,000 members and gets donations from around the world — including the United States, South Korea, France, Chile and Argentina — to commit human sacrifices.

What's even more amazing about the Brazil ritual saga is that a group of Guaratuba residents, on their own, infiltrated the cult, and not only learned of Evandro's killing, but also learned another seven-year-old had been abducted and was being prepared for another sacrifice. According to the article, an Argentina couple had paid cult kidnappers $2,000 for this boy. This couple subsequently fled, and a search of their house turned up cult registers and satanist publications.

One of the cult infiltrators was Evandro's 36-year-old uncle Diogenes Caetano dos Santos. "It was chilling," he said. "It was so crazy, we didn't even know if the police would believe us."

One other thing: the high priest that killed Evandro — by day, he administered grade schools and day-care centers for the city.

Chapter 6

DAY-CARE RITUAL ABUSE

There's been an increasing number of reports of ritual abuse in some day-care centers and schools. In *Breaking the Circle*, there is an interview with a therapist in northern California who reported being referred 24 children between the ages of approximately three and six over a period of a year and a half. (The therapist, Pamela Hudson, LCSW, was employed at a county children's protective service.) Each child was exhibiting, to one degree or another, sadistic impulses, night terror, extreme abandonment issues, sexual acting out behavior... And besides all these commonalities, there was one other. All the children had attended the same day-care center. And what's more, reportedly none of the parents had talked to each other until after they had brought the children in for help.

This case was taken to the District Attorney's office, said Hudson, but they made a decision not to attempt prosecution. Hudson said she attributes that decision to the lack of physical evidence, the young ages of the children, and the difficulty of making emotionally traumatizing evidence credible to a jury.

However, similar cases around the country have now gone to litigation.

TEXAS TRAUMA

Fran's Day-Care Center case bears many similarities to the northern California case. And what's more, day-care center operators Frances and Dan Keller have already received 48-year prison sentences for child sexual abuse charges.

According to a *Cox News Service* story:

> **"Slowly and painfully the terrible secrets of what happened at the charming day-care home are**

> **being revealed. The little children are talking and telling tales of being buried alive with animals, painting pictures with bones dipped in blood, being 'shot' and resurrected, digging up a body in a cemetery and nailing it together, having giant germs implanted in their bodies, and making pornographic movies at gun point."**

The article went on to explain that police reported some of the children from the day-care center were exhibiting such symptoms as persistent nightmares, acting out sexually, sadistic behavior, and so on.

The initial conviction of the day-care center operators helped empower other parents to come forward and share their children's stories. Again, according to the *Cox News Service* article, these stories have included:

> **[The children, eight of whom are now in therapy] being forced to close their eyes while the Kellers took a meat cleaver and pretended to chop off their fingers. One child peeked and saw Dan Keller pull a bone from a bag and smear it with blood from a jar. The child was forced to paint a picture with "Satan's arm" dipped in blood.**
>
> **Watching the Kellers place infants in the back yard swimming pool and letting them sink. Frances Keller would then remove the body from the bottom of the pool, baptize it with blood, and offer it to Satan.**
>
> **The Kellers killing a baby named Rachel by cutting her heart out...**
>
> **One boy said a gun was held to his head while he was forced to molest his infant sister. When the pornographic movie was replayed for him, the**

> **gun was not visible and he realized he had been tricked.**

The prosecutor's office had contacted Austin therapist Pam Monday to serve as an expert witness in the case. While she wasn't called, she followed the case closely. (Monday has worked with many ritual abuse survivors.)

In a recent interview, Monday said of the case: "What was amazing was there was a conviction. The children were believed. And there will be more. These cases aren't going away."

The *Cox News Service* story, which was written by Denise Gamino and Pamela Ward, also quoted Texas ranger Johnny Waldrip who helped out on the investigation. "I believe the kids wholeheartedly," Waldrip says. "It's something I've seen before. It's a purposely done thing."

> **He [Waldrip] says that he believes they [the children] were subjected to ritualistic acts such as graveyard rituals "so when kids start talking about babies being killed and bodies dug up it discredits them so much no one believes them..."**

Just like, perhaps, no one believed a group of children in southern California when they started talking about a secret underground tunnel where the most heinous abuse imaginable was reported to be taking place.

McMARTIN EVIDENCE IGNORED

The longest trial in American history, California's McMartin Pre-School case, was one of the first day-care center cases involving satanic ritual abuse. Some 460 separate reports were filed at the Manhattan Beach police department.

The children's stories included sexual abuse, torture, animal sacrifices, baby sacrifices and being prostituted in private homes and businesses throughout the community...

Jackie McGauley's daughter attended the McMartin Pre-School for five months. The girl told of being stripped, tied up, and left in a closet. She talked of watching a man kill a baby. She eventually began experiencing abandonment fears and nightmares where she'd wake screaming, terrified.

Variations of these types of stories were told over and over by the children connected to the case. Yet, in the end, the jury didn't convict.

However, some of the parents wouldn't let the issue rest, continuing to try to search out the truth.

"...where the children said it would be."

During the McMartin trial, many of the children would consistently talk about underground tunnels and rooms below the pre-school, where a lot of the abuse supposedly went on.

A highly qualified archaeologist was hired by the children's families to search for the illusive tunnels.

Dr. Gary Stickel, Ph.D., has worked extensively in the United States and Europe, including heading up the largest underwater archeological sonar survey ever conducted in Europe. In addition, he has been a consultant to Lucas Films in the development of the *Indiana Jones* movie series. He is also past professor of archeology at the University of California at Long Beach.

Stickel reiterated the children had continually talked of the tunnels. So the defense initially hired a private investigator, who in turn, went out to the site and did some preliminary informal digging. It is reported, said Stickel, that this investigator found some rabbit bones in the soil. (The children talked about rabbits being sacrificed.) However, the day before he was to testify, the private investigator was found dead from a gunshot wound, said Stickel. It was determined a suicide. But Stickel said the determination was questioned by more than a few people, given the timing, etc.

After this, the parents went out and did some informal digging, finding more animal bones. The bones were analyzed, and showed evidence of trauma (violent death), said Stickel. Shortly after, the site was sealed off.

Eventually, an archeological firm dug seven pits — clustered outside the building. (This was curious, said Stickel, because the children were reporting some of the major abuse had gone on in tunnels *below* the building.) Stickel said the firm only dug exploratory pits down six inches a piece. What's more, they did find a couple anomalies, which they wanted to pursue, but Stickel said they were curtailed from going any further with these. They also did attempt to use a remote sensing device to check below the school. However, Stickel said the type of device used would be totally ineffective when used within the confines of the building they were working from.

"To say it was an incomplete job, is to put it mildly," Stickel said.

That all happened in 1985. Five years later, a developer who owned a lot adjacent to the McMartin Pre-School, bought the school property. He allowed the children's parents access to the site.

Under the recommendation of UCLA's archeology department, Stickel's firm was then hired by the parents.

Using sophisticated ground-penetrating radar, Stickel said a tunnel was found — right where some of the children had told his staff it would be.

The tunnel extended from near Ray Buckey's (one of the accused) classroom, said Stickel. It was about three feet wide, except at one point where it was nine feet across. (The children had said there was a "room" in the tunnels where some of the abuse had gone on.)

However, even though evidence of the tunnel was found in May of 1990, while the trial was still in progress — the prosecution, surprisingly, never even introduced this in court.

"Finding such a tunnel was highly relevant [to the case]," said Stickel. "Because it [prior lack of physical evidence of a tunnel] was a major thing used to discredit the children."

Stickel, again, said it is "very questionable" why this wasn't introduced in court. Many of the parents felt the same, said McGauley.

"This really has a tendency to affect your opinion of how objective the legal system is in presenting a case," Stickel added.

The following are some excerpts from a preliminary report about the tunnel findings:

— Nine-foot-wide subterranean entrance found under the west wall of Ray Buckey's classroom.

— Second [possible] tunnel [appears to] extend from the bathroom off the office and classroom #1, to the front yard of the triplex next door. Front yard concealed from street by three-car garage.

— Tunnel features made it evident [at least one tunnel] was hand-dug.

PEDOPHILE ACTIVISTS

There is another quite interesting peripheral note about the McMartin case. After the case was completed, the book *Pity the Little Children: The Politics of Child Abuse and the Abuse of Innocence: The McMartin Pre-School Trial* was released.

In it, authors Shirley and Paul Eberle indicate, among other things, that the reports of child sexual/ritual abuse in the case were unfounded, and the children had been coerced into reporting the abuse by hysterical mothers and overzealous social workers.

The book has been widely cited, seriously reviewed. However, something seems to have been omitted from the *About the Authors* blurb.

According to an article in the spring, 1994, *Journal of Psychohistory,* Paul and Shirley Eberle were publishers of an underground child pornography journal in Los Angeles called *Finger.*

Also, according to the article:

> **...the Eberles have been called "the most prolific publishers of child pornography in the United States" by Sgt. Toby Tyler, a San Bernadino, CA., deputy sheriff who is a nationally recognized expert on child pornography. Their kiddie porn material I have seen and the articles they have published such as *I Was a Sexpot at 5* and *Little Lolitas* included illustrations of children involved**

in sodomy and oral copulation, and featured pornographic photos of the Eberles.

I contacted Sgt. Tyler to verify the statement. Tyler said during the mid-1970s the Eberles were the most prolific publishers of child pornography in the United States. He said they not only published the magazine *Finger*, but also *Love Magazine* and the *LA Star*. Each periodical, said Tyler, contained child pornography.

"When the Eberles say they have knowledge and expertise in the field of child sexual abuse, I'd have to say I believe them — that is, they've had so much experience exploiting children," said Sgt. Tyler.

CHILD PROSTITUTION

In some day-care center cases, children talk about being taken off-site and into the community to be prostituted for sex. It's important to note here, there's been an explosion of child prostitution around the world in recent years, both behind closed doors — and right out in the open.

According to a June 21, 1993, *Time* magazine report, child prostitution in Russia and Eastern European countries is dramatically rising. And in the Third World some of the staggering estimates include: 800,000 underage prostitutes in Thailand, 400,000 in India, 250,000 in Brazil... What's more, in recent years Europeans, Australians, Japanese and Americans have flocked to, for instance, Southeast Asia by the thousands to legally engage in sex acts with youngsters. One of the *Time* magazine stories was about a Russian man that was pimping for several children. He would even dress up one of his young boys as a girl to increase his appeal to deviants.

It's important to note here that in the scheme of normal human development, for the first ten years, or so, children have an inbred aversion to sex. They see their parents passionately kissing, and a natural response is a stereotypical "...yuk." They see an explicit sex scene on TV, for instance, and get disgusted. They are developmentally and biologically set up that way.

Thus, if adults force them to have sex, it dramatically violates their natural physical and psychological boundaries. And consequently, adverse feelings explode inside a child: anger, nausea, deep sadness, shame. However, at the time of the abuse it is often not safe to express these feelings and, like the memories, they often get repressed.

(That's why, years later when the traumatic memories are being recalled, these waves of painful repressed feelings surface as well, often making parts of the recovery gut-retchingly horrendous.)

Also, repeated sexual and/or ritual abuse, destroys a child's self-esteem, as it did with Kathy. This lack of self-esteem sets up the worst possible "Catch-22" situation for the victim. The lower the self-esteem, the more dependent a child/teen will be on a parent — who may also be the perpetrator.

ELEMENTARY SCHOOLS

Ritual abuse is not just inherent to day-care settings. It also apparently happens in some elementary schools. The following is an excerpt from *Breaking the Circle of Satanic Ritual Abuse*:

> **I am an adult survivor of childhood ritual abuse. I wasn't raised by a cult, but was abused by members of a highly organized satanic cult operating out of a rural elementary school. [Population of the Midwestern town was 10,000.] The abuse took place over approximately a one year period when I was five and a half to six and a half years old.**

Years later in therapy, Victoria Light (pseudonym) had memories of being penetrated with a wooden wand while being restrained on a table in the school medical office. (She said the school doctor was the head of the cult.)

Her report goes on:

> **This was not a group of people dabbling in the occult, but an established cult that employed**

> **torture, programming, along with animal and human sacrifice. Besides being taken to the school medical office for rituals, I was taken out of school to the doctor's home, to the local mortuary, or to the local cemetery... A member of the local police was involved. The town was infested.**

FLORIDA FINDINGS

The McMartin Pre-School children weren't the only ones talking about tunnels. Across the country, in Stuart, Florida, children who had attended a Montessori school there were also starting to report sexual abuse, torture, animal sacrifice, baby sacrifice... some of this also reported to be going on in tunnels below the school.

The case in Florida involves the Glendale Montessori School, and was investigated by Technology Strategic Planning Inc. The firm deals primarily with espionage, perpetration, and theft — and has been a consultant for members of Congress, the CIA, the FBI... Technology Strategic Planning is made up of a number of ex-CIA agents, ex-Drug Enforcement Agency agents, and so on. Henry (Skip) Clements Jr., Vice President of Strategic Operations, headed up the Montessori school investigation.

FIGURES MUSHROOM

As in the McMartin case, the horrific stories of abuse started to surface slowly and steadily in Stuart, Florida, eventually mushrooming into a phenomenon that involved as many as 300 children — and perhaps many more around the state, and even the country.

James Toward and his wife Rosario ran the Glendale Montessori School in Stuart from 1980 to 1987. In 1987, six children who had attended the school came forward with stories of sexual abuse. This allegedly at the hands of Toward, his wife, and a school secretary.

The children's stories were so compelling, said Clements, that a plea bargain was struck. James Toward pled guilty to four counts of sexual abuse and one count of kidnapping. The secretary pled guilty to one count of kidnapping, and intent to commit lewd, lascivious, indecent assault. In return, the rest of the investigation was dropped, said Clements.

But that's not where the story ended.

In the next few years, all types of things started going haywire with some of the town's children, said Clements. Youth suicides, and attempted suicides were way up. There were incidents of youth trying to kill each other. Some children were being confined to psychiatric units, said Clements.

The parents of the six original complainants had formed a support group, and as the youth problem kept multiplying, they put together a symposium for parents whose children had attended the Glendale Montessori School. Therapists, teachers, law enforcement and other concerned adults in the community were also invited. Some 900 people came, said Clements.

Clements said he went "...and was simply blown away," in regards to the details of how heinous the abuse had apparently been, how many children may have been affected and why more wasn't being done to follow up.

After the symposium, Clements said he went to the state attorney general's office to ask why the investigation had been abandoned. He said he was told that because of the plea bargain agreement, investigations had been stopped.

Clement's firm then voluntarily picked up the investigation. "And what we soon discovered was our school, or community, is part of a nationwide cult organization targeting small children," said Clements.

The firm read over thousands of pages of documents of the children telling about what had happened. (This information had been gathered initially by the state attorney's investigator, Larry Lawson.) The children talked of sexual abuse, animal sacrifice, underground "rooms," being taken off-site and being sexually abused by Toward, as well as other community members...

A number of children, said Clements, talked about the killing and dismemberment of babies. This was used as part of the code-of-silence programming to keep the children from telling their parents — because it might happen to them if they told the secrets, said Clements.

Clements said his firm also analyzed thousands of pages of phone calls made from the Glendale Montessori School during the seven years the Towards ran the school.

One of the things they found, said Clements, was a significant, and quite curious, number of phone calls to abortion clinics around the state. Clements said he surmised that's where some of the "dismembered babies" came from.

Note: I recently viewed a picture of a dismembered 21-week-old fetus after a D&E (Dilation and Evacuation) abortion procedure. His arms and legs had been dismembered, apparently as part of the procedure. If such a fetus/baby were doctored, and if it were staged right, it appears you could fool young children in a ritual setting.

Clements also said his firm found a substantial amount of phone traffic from the school to Mexico, Puerto Rico, Canada, and the Netherlands. Clements said a reporter for one of the Miami newspapers traced one of the calls to a publishing company in Canada that produced some pornographic materials. Clements also said a number of children talked about being photographed naked. Based on this data, Clements said he believes Toward may have been part of a pornographic ring. However, he said he believes Toward had been warned before the warrants were served, and if there was evidence of pornography, it had been taken from the school prior to investigators showing up.

Technology Strategic Planning noted numerous calls to other Montessori schools around the state. The firm also obtained records of Toward's Mastercard receipts and was able to track him to these other schools.

One such school, said Clements, is in Ormond Beach, Florida. Clements said Toward had apparently been visiting the school and staying overnight. (There were calls to the owner of this school.) As the firm investigated further, Clements said they discovered some 30 children in Ormond Beach, who had attended the same Montessori school there — were experiencing the same extreme abuse symptomology and telling some of the same stories as the children in Stuart.

Children in both Florida schools, said Clements, talked about underground tunnels and rooms below the foundation of the schools, just like in the McMartin case. Clements said Toward went to prison in 1989, and his firm didn't pick up the investigation until 1992. He said they are currently trying to get federal help to have access to do a search for the tunnels.

Clements said one day, in the midst of the investigation, he was visited by an FBI agent who wanted all the information the firm had gathered in the case. Clements said he refused, then inquired of the agent why the FBI hadn't followed up on the case themselves.

According to Clements, the FBI agent said that because the "official" agency stance is ritual abuse of this sort doesn't exist (based on an often-cited report by the FBI's Ken Lanning mentioned earlier), the agency seldom follows up on such cases. Because of that report, said Clements, agents coming out of the FBI Academy in Quantico don't get any training in this form of ritual abuse, and, he believes, are subsequently at a distinct disadvantage when a case like this comes up.

Note: Lanning's 1992 FBI report states: "Until hard evidence is obtained and corroborated, the public should not be frightened into believing that babies are being bred and eaten, that 50,000 missing children are being murdered in human sacrifices, or that satanists are taking over America's day-care centers or institutions..."

California's Monarch Resources reports that a recent University of New Hampshire research study shows for a one-year period there had been 270 day-care center sexual abuse cases reported just in the United States, involving 1,600 children. Some 15 percent of these cases also involved allegations of ritual abuse.

"This is so bizarre," said an exasperated Clements. "Here we are with this big problem, countless children are being hurt, and no one will help."

During the course of his firm's investigation, Clements said he consulted with a U.S. Customs agent. Clements said this agent is considered extremely knowledgeable about ritual abuse issues. During their talks, Clements said the agent relayed that his department had been investigating similar ritual abuse reports from schools in Kentucky and Mississippi. Children connected to these schools were also reporting secret tunnels, sexual abuse, animal sacrifice, mind control... said Clements. Some of the children were also reporting being flown to jungle areas in places like the Bahamas and photographed for pornography.

Before the department finished the investigation, it was disbanded, added Clements.

FEDERAL COMMISSION

Clements said there is no federal agency that is currently targeting looking into ritual abuse of children. In the pornography area (including child pornography), Clements said the only agency having success in curtailing the flow is the U.S. Postal Service, which he said claims they have cut down pornography some 85 percent in recent years.

Clements explained child pornography had been largely produced overseas, yet a substantial amount is consumed in the United States. (Child pornography is now a multi-billion dollar business. Also according to the June 21, 1993, *Time* magazine article: In Germany (for instance), annual sales of "kiddie porn" are estimated at $250 million, and the number of consumers between 30,000 and 40,000.)

Clements added, while U.S. Postal might have cut the importation of pornography dramatically to America — the demand hasn't been curtailed. So now, he said he believes much of the pornography is being generated domestically. And he cites the childrens' stories surfacing all over the country about being used in pornography as examples.

Clements believes that child abuse must be targeted at the federal level. He has recently written to members of Congress trying to generate interest in establishing an office in Washington that would oversee and coordinate efforts among the FBI, U.S. Postal, CIA, Department of Justice, and any other agencies that could have an impact on helping investigate and stop all forms of child abuse, including ritual abuse.

"How many children have died already?" asked Clements.

Clements said he vows to keep fighting this, and is not intimidated by what he believes he's up against as far as a ruthless, sophisticated, organized crime (cult) ring. "If they want a war — we'll give them one," said Clements.

Clements said since his firm has taken up the investigation, he's had conversations with a number of U.S. Customs field agents that have also come across similar cases. "And they keep encouraging me to keep going on this..."

MORE CASES

In the late '80s, Pamela Hudson, LCSW, became a pioneer in working with child ritual abuse victims. She devised a questionnaire and polled a group of parents involved in litigation in cases of purported ritual abuse around the country.

Using her questionnaire, Hudson did telephone interviews with parents whose children were involved in the McMartin case, and in similar cases in San Francisco and New Jersey, and in a satanic ritual abuse case in California involving a babysitter. She also talked with parents in Texas and Oregon. In all, she interviewed one set of parents from ten cases across the country. In the findings, she also included data from the case she had worked with.

No matter where in the country the abuse had taken place, the children demonstrated many of the same post-traumatic stress symptoms — night terrors, fear of the dark, extreme abandonment fear... Many reported being photographed during the ceremonies. Of the 11 alleged victims, ten reported being threatened with guns and knives, and nine reported watching people killed as part of the ceremonies. (A full report on these findings is included in Hudson's book *Ritual Child Abuse*.)

Hudson also said the similarities in these cases across the country are not only alarming, but an indication that perpetrators actually follow prescribed rituals that are fairly consistent and calculated. What's more, she said the types of torture and mind control reported to her by the children derive from conditioned response techniques reportedly developed for use with political prisoners, or prisoners of war. These include sensory deprivation and physical tortures, such as electric shock or forced drug-induced states.

PRESIDIO PROBLEMS

Investigative journalist Roy Blake in his book *Objective Evil: Satanic Cults in U.S. Intelligence* chronicles reports of day-care sexual/ritual abuse at San Francisco's Presidio army base. According to Blake's research, there were 59 alleged child victims claiming various forms of sexual abuse, being forced to consume urine and feces, having blood smeared on their bodies...

In some cases, reports Blake, children said that guns had been pointed at their heads, and the lives of their parents and other loved ones had been threatened if they talked.

A three-year-old boy, who was the first to report the abuse, was taken to San Francisco General Hospital where a doctor examined him and concluded the boy's anus had been traumatized in a manner consistent with penetration, Blake reported.

"The doctor's conclusion precipitated a number of meetings at the Presidio which were characterized later by some sources as more concerned with damage containment than an effort to protect the children still in the Presidio child-care center. Indeed it was nearly a month after the incident before the Army saw fit to notify parents whose children were still being seen at the Presidio child-care center," wrote Blake.

In this particular case, as the children started to come forward, they also talked of being prostituted in houses on and off-base — one of the homes being that of Temple of Set (satan) leader Col. Michael Aquino, reports Blake. Among the more bizarre findings at Aquino's house, said Blake, was a room with all black walls, and another room that was soundproof.

Blake also notes *San Jose Mercury News* reporter Linda Goldston found evidence that satanic activities were not new to the Presidio.

According to Blake's book:

> **In the early 1980s a then Military Policeman stationed at the Presidio recalled he received a call from the Portola McArthur housing area where witnesses reported a man dressed in black was leading a little girl somewhere. The witnesses**

> **apparently became concerned when they heard screams nearby. Although they were unable to locate either the girl or the man dressed in black, while in hot pursuit the MPs kicked open the door of a gardener's shack and discovered a huge pentagram painted on the floor and such bizarre accessories as a mannequin with a gun pointed at the door, and the heads of the dolls.**

Note: Again, as mentioned in "Kathy's Story," ritual abuse investigative experts say besides the authentic torture and killings, there also might be a lot of "smoke-and-mirror" tactics used by the cult to intimidate children. A mannequin pointing a gun at a doll's head in the shadows would look awfully real to a child as would, say, a knife buried in a baby-doll smeared with animal blood.

NEW ZEALAND NIGHTMARE

Several years later, and thousands of miles away from San Francisco, children at a day-care center in Christchurch, New Zealand, were reporting much the same sexual/ritual abuse stories as the children from the Presidio.

Day-care staff member Peter Ellis, 35, was eventually sentenced to ten years in prison for sexual violation and indecency involving seven of the children who attended the day-care center between 1986 and 1992.

As in other day-care cases, the parents banded together for support. And the conviction in no way ended the saga. The scars cut deep.

One of the parents, in fact, started an *End Ritual Abuse Newsletter* to give affected parents a forum to air their feelings, and to warn others. According to one grandmother, when the stories initially started to surface:

> **...we felt confident that Mary [her granddaughter] could not have been involved, for we surely would have known. That was before we knew of the**

> **threats which would ensure that the children remain silent.**
>
> **I will always remember the shock of being told... I was sickened, angry beyond imagining at the abuse itself, and by the betrayal of trust by everyone at the creche [day-care center].**
>
> **In successive months I too lost my innocence. As more and more details came to light I learned more about sexual abuse of children, ritual abuse, child pornography rings, and sex tourism...**

If this relative, and others were "shocked" at all this, imagine some of their feelings when New Zealand's *Sunday Star-Times* ran a front-page article on June 5, 1994, about Peter Ellis now writing children's books from his prison cell.

According to the article:

> **The parents of one of the children found to have been abused by Ellis are furious over the books — especially *Pretty Flowers*, which is about an evil witch who captures a group of young children.**
>
> **"It's dangerous material because it's full of triggers and reminders for the children that have been abused," said one mother.**
>
> **"It's art imitating his real life, the sick childish ramblings of a convicted pedophile," a father of an abuse victim added. "...It would take a brave publisher to publish the books."**

To go back to the *End Ritual Abuse Newsletter*, the grandmother went on to say:

> **However, when I spent a horrendous evening watching videos of TV programs on child abuse and pornography... and saw how similar this Christchurch case was to others in this country and overseas, I discovered again the anger I**

needed to start writing. For me it is terribly important that the children's stories are not just believed, but also told to the world...

Chapter 7

TEEN INVOLVEMENT

More and more youth are being drawn toward all types of sadistic hate groups: Ku Klux Klan, Neo-Nazis, satanic cults...

According to a June 3, 1988, *Fort Worth Star Telegram* article:

> **Cult activity is on the increase in Mansfield and southeast Tarrant County, police and school officials said yesterday.**
>
> **[Mansfield police officer, Bill] Parish said dabblers in the occult are adolescents who have just become involved in satanism. It's the first stage of satan worship, typified by stealing from churches, burning Bibles and desecrating cemeteries. He said it also may involve sacrificing small animals.**

And in some cases, it may involve much more.

May 5, 1993 — Three eight-year-old boys were riding their bikes down a country road in West Memphis, Arkansas. Suddenly, they were forced off the road and horribly killed.

One of the suspects accused in the murder, Jessie Lloyd Misskelley Jr., 17, according to wire service reports, told police that the murders were tied to a satanic cult.

> **Misskelley said the children were lured into a wooded area of West Memphis known as Robin Hood Park, choked until they were unconscious and then brutalized in various ways, including**

> **rape. He said he ran off into the woods and threw up after watching Jason Baldwin (16), mutilate one unconscious youngster. Police have said the boys died from blows to the head, but have refused to say if they were sexually mutilated.**

Misskelley also told police the cult held orgies in the woods, and that to join, members had to kill dogs and eat their back legs.

According to a *USA Today* article at the time, another suspect, Michael Echols, 18, who calls himself "Damien" (from the movie *Omen*, about the anti-christ), once told a pastor he couldn't go to heaven because he was already committed — to going to hell. The article also said Echols is described by acquaintances as someone who carried a cat skull, wrote satanic poems and favored wearing all black.

Shortly after the murders, I was asked to do the CNN talk show *Sonya Live*, which was to focus on this incident. At the beginning of the show, there was a telephone link-up with an attorney for one of the suspects, who said he had followed the media reports and had read some 30 pages of depositions around the case. And when asked to comment on the cult-related aspects of the case, he responded that "...at this time, they [officials] aren't characterizing it as a cult killing."

Two of the accused eventually got life, another was sentenced to death. According to a summary article of the trials in Memphis, Tennessee's *The Commercial Appeal* newspaper, reporter John Beifuss noted:

> **But prosecutors made little mention of occult connection to the crime beyond the few references in Misskelley's statement to police... the defense ridiculed the lack of hard evidence presented in court, and the University of California social psychologist, Richard J. Ofshe, attributed police allegations to "satanic hysteria."**

Brittenten, Arkansas, chief juvenile officer Jerry Driver was also involved with the case. He said Michael "Damien" Echols was heavily involved in the occult, there were satanic cult ceremonies, and that the incident happened near a satanic high holy day. But he said he wasn't certain if these particular killings were tied to a formalized cult ceremony.

Driver said satanic graffiti continues to crop up in the area and there are rumors of other occult criminal activity. But at this point he said nothing more has been found.

Ohio ritual crime investigator Dale Griffis was called as an expert witness in the case. He said based on his research the killings were a ritualized event. Griffis said, for example, all three boys were tied in a similar fashion and each was brutalized far beyond what it would take to simply kill them.

"My concern in this particular case is more whether they got all the group," said Griffis.

COVERING THEIR TRACKS

In the Arkansas case, *People* magazine reported West Memphis authorities began looking into reports of ritualistic activities in the area almost a year prior. Among the sites they investigated was "Stonehenge," a decaying local cotton gin painted with satanic graffiti and strewn with animal carcasses, which a friend said one of the suspects visited. Also, according to the article, teens "...called up demons [there] as a joke."

John Hunt, a ritual crime investigator and also a crime prevention officer at Austin College in Texas, has been actively investigating ritual crime sites since 1989. During this time, he said he has also developed ritual crime seminars/trainings to educate law enforcement.

He said the training has evolved because the issue is coming up more and more. "More police officers have been trained [in ritualistic crime] because, before when there was a crime scene with these ritualistic components, they were merely treated as other things."

Hunt said he knew there was a lot of ritual crime being perpetrated in Grayson County, Texas, and decided to start to actively investigate — even though this would often take him out of his physical jurisdiction. He has actually become somewhat of a ritual crime investigator maverick, investigating on his own, and turning the information over to whatever law enforcement agency was responsible for a particular area.

He said sometimes the information has been accepted gratefully, while other law enforcement agencies didn't want anything to do with it. He explained he believes that some agencies are simply in denial any of this ritual crime activity exists.

Hunt has seen satanic altars, dogs "cut and blooded," sacrificed calves, even a 2,000 pound bull that had been ritually killed, the testicles and penis removed.

One of the ritual sites Hunt discovered was an abandoned home in rural Grayson County. He and another officer were led there by an informant. The home sat on a small knoll off by itself. They found walls, windows and floors draped in heavy black plastic. "The plastic is used to keep people from seeing in and to keep the blood from staining," said Hunt. There were also imprints of a pentagram and 666 in the plaster, a candle holder, and a butcher knife with blood stains.

Three weeks after Hunt and the other officer were there, the house burned down. Curiously, no gas or electric went to the house at the time. And the fire was so hot, said Hunt, it left no charred wood, just ash.

Similar to the warehouse/ritual site that burned down in California, Hunt said that this was the third ritual site he had investigated that subsequently burned down. Hunt said many of the cults are masters at covering their tracks and "...when the heat gets too hot, they simply go underground for a while."

Hunt has presented seminars on the occult to churches, service organizations, law enforcement agencies, even at an Indian reservation. He is also in the process of helping start "RIOT," Ritual Investigators of Texas.

NATIONAL SOCIETY

The International Council on Cultism and Ritual Trauma was established in 1993. Based in Richardson, Texas, its goal is to promote ongoing networking, advocacy and research. Council

President Randy Noblitt, Ph.D., said he has observed a marked increase in criminal and civil legal actions associated with allegations of ritual abuse. And he said he believes there needs to be standardized, non-oppressive police and judicial procedures, so the survivor doesn't feel traumatized again by the system — the same as, for instance, some rape victims have felt in the legal system over the years.

RITUAL ABUSE GOES TO COURT

Some ritual abuse survivors are, in fact, starting to stand up for their rights legally.

For instance, a Geauga County, Ohio, common pleas judge awarded a $10 million default judgment to a Hiram, Ohio, woman who charged that her father and other men raped her as a child during cult activities, according to a *Cleveland Plain Dealer* news report.

The lawsuit contended the abuse occurred in Russel Township, Mantua and Hiram from 1963 to 1971. Jamie Ann Sitko, 37, claimed in psychotherapy sessions she "vividly recalled incidents which involved men, including her father, standing in a circle around a fire with hoods, cat's blood, live cats, dead cats, candles, chants and threats of violence, to force her compliance, some of which were carried out," according to lawsuit papers.

James West Pou, the father, who lives out of state, did not respond to the lawsuit or the *Plain Dealer*'s interview requests. According to the article, Sitko brought the suit because: "People need to know that this does happen. If everyone spoke up about it, it would help others in the long run."

FANTASY ROLE?

Some cult researchers, and cult members talk about the game *Dungeons and Dragons* as a stepping stone to satanism, and sometimes murder. That might be the case for an Austin, Texas, man. According to a December 9, 1992, *Austin American Statesman* article:

> **Dungeons and Dragons paraphernalia, pornographic magazines, and black robes, horns and guns were found in the home of a man charged with fatally shooting a woman 13 times...**

Austin homicide detective Sgt. Dan Zahara said the suspect, James Noer, 23, told him he frequently played fantasy role playing games.

"His [Noer's] letters talk about demons and he dabbled in Dungeons and Dragons," said Zahara. "Lots of people play the game and don't kill people, but he carried this fantasy land too far."

Noer was charged with killing Rhonda Gail Lewis, 28, who was a topless dancer. According to the *Austin American Statesman* article, police found more than 200 computer discs, magazine pictures of women in bondage and articles with captions like: "Satan Escapes from Hell."

The *Statesman* article said friends told police Noer had perverted sexual contacts with women over a computer network. Apparently, from reports, he was into masochism and bondage. The article also noted Noer had picked the role of "assassin" in several of the games. And:

> **...one friend told police that Noer, who worked in the computer room at Austin Community College, participated in computer bulletin boards "to sublimate his desire to kill people."**

MERELY CULTURAL BELIEF?

Skeptics sometimes refer to talk about dangerous satanic cults as merely the paranoid product of "cultural beliefs." Apparently, not reality-based. However, for Shawn Sellars, who was sentenced to death row in Oklahoma State Prison, the whole satanism phenomenon was quite reality-based. And, in fact, his involvement in satanism was actually a calculated, methodical process.

According to the book *Cults That Kill,* a friend testified Sellars had formed a satanic group called "The Elimination." The friend testified he and Sellars wore black robes and drank blood. During the trial, Sellars said he actually wrote in his own blood: "I renounce God. I renounce Christ. I will serve Satan."

He eventually killed his parents and a convenience store owner as sacrifices to satan. "Thou shalt not kill" was the only one of the Judeo-Christian Ten Commandments he hadn't broken yet, Sellars said. In October 1986 he was convicted of three counts of murder.

As a lead-up to the satanism and the murders, Sellars said he was heavily involved in the game *Dungeons and Dragons*, was fascinated with ouija boards, horror films, black metal music.

One black metal band, Venom, sings:

Candles glowing, altars burn
Virgin's death is needed there
Sacrifice to Lucifer my master.

Bring the chalice, raise the knife
Welcome to my sacrifice...

Sgt. Ray Rast of the Independence Missouri Police Department worked with ritual crime for 15 years. He said he's worked with numerous cases involving, primarily, teen "dabblers" in Satanism. However, he said several of the youth had gone so far as to write "death contracts" to Satan in their own blood. They would also sometimes self-mutilate with knives.

I interviewed Sgt. Rast in 1996. He said he's observed an increase in teenage experimentation with Satanism the past five years, although he said he's watched it "ebb and flow" over the 15 years he's been involved working with it.

Sgt. Rast also said it's been his observation many of the kids who get involved with Satanism come from troubled homes with little structure, and are looking for a sense of belonging.

One would have to ask what was going on with a group of teens at Troy High School in Orange County, California. In June of 1996, I was in California to give a lecture in Orange County. The day I arrived, newspapers there were running front page stories on some graduating seniors who had cut several animals in half and nailed them to trees outside the school. They also spray painted the name of the black metal band *Slayer* on a wall of the school near the animals. (*Slayer* was the band it was reported the California Satanic cult was listening to the night they killed the four defectors.)

I contacted an editor at the Orange County Register, a newspaper that has won a number of prestigious journalistic awards, and offered to give him at least one perspective of what might be going on behind the scenes.

He told me a reporter had already talked to the kids involved and determined it was merely a "prank" and they weren't going to do anymore with the story.

One would have to wonder if merely "talking to the kids," in this case, would really yield the whole truth, or for that matter, constitute very thorough reporting.

What would the kids in Arkansas had said if they were caught killing animals and spray painting at Stonehenge Park, say, a month prior to killing the eight-year-olds?

Chapter 8

SATANIC HYSTERIA?

A PARENT'S NIGHTMARE?

Ethan Watters said he initially started writing about the subject of satanic ritual abuse in connection with the Olympia, Washington-Paul Ingram case. Paul Ingram claimed, as had members of his family, that he had abused them as part of satanic rituals. According to a May 1993 *New Yorker Magazine* article, the prosecution flew Richard Ofshe in to consult. Prior to Ofshe's arrival, according to the article, some of the children's and father's stories of the cult ritual abuse weren't matching up.

Ofshe set up a "little experiment" for his first meeting with Ingram. Although Ofshe had yet to talk with Ingram's daughters, he told Ingram he had. What's more, he said the daughters said they remembered he had forced them to have sex with each other.

Ingram said he didn't remember that. But after thinking about it awhile, he told Ofshe he could remember that.

According to the *New Yorker* article, after later supposedly reviewing reports, interview data gathered, etc., Ofshe contacted Ingram by phone and urged him to withdraw his guilty plea before the sentencing. The magazine reported on how part of that conversation supposedly went. (At the time, according to the magazine piece, Ingram was having some doubts about the validity of his memories, and he was hopeful more would come.)

"I'll tell you something, Paul — you are never going to get them," Ofshe said. "There is no way that you are going to be able to remember anything that is going to reconcile all the lies that have been told about this in the last few months..."

Then later in the conversation: "Maybe somebody can blank out one event that was just life-threatening to them, terrifying, disgusting, beyond belief," Ofshe concluded. "Nobody can blank out as many events as you blanked out. It has never happened."

Skeptics began pointing to this case, and this article series, as one of the bench marks for the validity of false memory claims, and the continued debunking of the existence of satanic ritual abuse. The *New Yorker* article writer, Lawrence Wright, went on to write a book about the case called *Remembering Satan: A Case of Recovered Memory and the Shattering of an American Family.* A review of the book in an April 4, 1994, *Newsweek* starts out:

> **Paul Ingram's daughters are every parent's worst nightmare. Erika and Julie were obedient responsible girls and faithful to their family's fundamentalist religion... Then, in the fall of 1988, when Erika was 22 and Julie 18, both daughters suddenly moved out of their parents' house in Olympia, Washington. Several weeks later, they told their mother and the authorities that their father had been sexually molesting them for years. Before long they were embellishing their accusations with descriptions of satan worship that included rape and the slaughter of babies.**

These young women were every parent's "nightmare" and they were "embellishing" the stories, writes the *Newsweek* reviewer, who, incidentally, probably never interviewed the daughters. But he concurred they were "embellishing," just like Ethan Watters knew the inside of young Sarah's mind, even though he had never talked to her.

In my interview with Watters, he said he could approach the *Mother Jones* article about Kathy with a "point of view" because magazine articles allow that type of subjective latitude. And while journalists are aware of the difference, I asked Watters how many people in the general public know there's this sort of unwritten rule with magazines. He told me a lot of people understood that.

One has to ask, do they? One has to also ask, because Ingram was going through a series of apparently fragmented remembrances about his perpetration, was he more susceptible at that point to somewhat tacitly taking a suggestion of a memory from Ofshe because it just seemed to fit the general scenario? And for that matter, the *New Yorker* article even states: "None of the investigators would have been surprised if Ingram had orchestrated sex among his children." Knowing about other ritual abuse survivor accounts of things like forced sex between siblings, couldn't a questioner cleverly manipulate the situation to make the whole scenario appear not credible?

One has to also ask, if Ingram was in the early stages of having real flashbacks — as Harvard researcher Stephen Kosslyn postulates about brain functioning — was Ingram's imagination kicking in to prematurely fill out the rest of the storyboard? And did Ofshe's suggestion merely fit into that equation? (One has to also ask, again, if Ofshe knows nobody can blank out as many events as Ingram purported he had, why are Harvard researchers like Dr. Van der Kolk, Judith Herman, and others, finding strong indications you can?)

Another couple crucial questions one has to ask about this case are: Why have Ingram's daughters never backed down from their stories? And why was Ingram still sentenced to 20 years in prison for the charges?

Of course, though, according to the *New Yorker* article, even going to prison may have been part of Ingram's motivation. The article states four years after Ingram's sentencing: "He works as an editor of the prison's newspaper and as a clerk in the prison's law library. He has always been drawn to the simple, regimented life, and prison is particularly agreeable to him."

PANIC IN PENNSYLVANIA

A 12-year-old girl fled from a house in Johnstown, Pennsylvania telling of extreme ritual torture and other forms of abuse perpetrated on her, and her six siblings, by parents and neighbors. According to an Associated Press article:

> **Police say the mistreatment included beatings, cultish bloodlettings, exorcisms, sodomy,**

> **stretchings, heated needles under the fingernails... Neighbors also participated... They [the children] told of satanic rituals, of Rickie Gaddis [the father] using ceremonial knives to draw blood from adults and children alike...**

"They [the children] were terrified of him, absolutely terrified," Detective Yvonee Krug said. "They believed he had super-human powers."

Court documents indicated Rickie Gaddis and his wife began sexually abusing two of their girls around January 1990, some 18 months before they moved into a three-story building where the abuse intensified, and other residents were drawn into the torturing, according to the article.

HISTORICAL CHILD SACRIFICE

People sometimes express skepticism at even the concept of parents torturing and sacrificing their children. And for some it is sheerly unbelievable it would ever occur on a wide scale.

Wisconsin cult researcher Jack Roper lectures on "Historical Child Sacrifice," and is currently working on a book on the same subject. Roper said the world has a long history of child (and adult) sacrifice.

He cited Carthage, North Africa, from the eighth century BC to the second century BC, as a graphic example. This was a culture that worshipped the god Baal and goddess Tanit. [Baal was that era's label for satan.] Children were regularly sacrificed to these gods. A University of Chicago archeological team recently found a sacrificial site 64,000 square feet wide, and nine levels deep, with small burial urns with the bones of sacrificed children, said Roper.

Chapter 9

HARASSMENT

To have stayed as covert as they have for so long, some sadistic cults have had to be highly connected, highly thorough and highly sophisticated. The following story indicates, perhaps, some of just how thorough and sophisticated. (The story also indicates the type of extensive investigation some of these cases entail.)

It was written by Akron, Ohio, police detective and ritual crime expert Andrew Kasarda. Kasarda is a 23-year veteran of the Akron police department who also teaches about ritual crime in criminology courses at Akron University. Prior to his police work, during a three-year tour in Vietnam, he was awarded two Bronze Stars and an Army Commendation for Valor and Heroism.

SATANIC CULT MURDER?

by Andrew Kasarda

An average of 130 reports a day come into the Akron Police Department. As was my practice, I took one off the Felonious Assault Board to work on. The victim was a white, 37-year-old female. There was something unusual about this report as I read it. Two men and one woman entered the victim's home, burned her with acid, cut her, then ritualistically drank the blood that ran from a cut above the pubic area.

To follow up on the report, I spoke to the victim, Susan, who at the time was confined to the psychiatric ward at the local hospital. Due to her early association with the satanic cult, she displayed multiple personality disorder. To escape the horror of what was happening to her in the cult, she would revert to another personality. Sue's medical records documented 125 distinct personalities developed because she was born into the cult and abused by parents and grandparents who were also involved.

When I met with Sue, she relayed to me things that sounded insane, but she named names, times, and vaguely, places. Sue was permitted to leave the hospital accompanied by her therapist Grace. Grace said that if I had any questions, she would ask them of Sue, and Sue would in turn write out the answers. When I got the answers on a piece of paper, they made no sense and looked like a jumbled mess. The therapist then told me to hold the paper with the answers on it upside-down and backwards against the windshield. There before me in the reflection on the windshield were my answers perfectly written. The hair on the back of my neck stood up, as the sergeant who was driving the car looked startled.

Sue directed us to abandoned mines where she claimed sacrificial bodies were disposed of. She stated the satanists would put the bodies into wood chippers that would pulverize the body and expel the fragments into the mine shafts. As a safety precaution, the shafts were cemented closed and the Ohio Bureau of Natural Resources, although helpful, would not permit us to enter because of the danger.

After taking Sue back to the hospital, I started checking into some of the names she had given me. One was a minister in charge of a small church in town. I visited the church which had no windows or other way to see in. I went to the minister's house. He seemed a bit nervous at my visit. He explained his church was a "touchy-feely" church, where each individual did whatever they thought was proper.

Other names mentioned by Sue included judges, attorneys, policemen and other prominent people.

I contacted the FBI in Quantico, Virginia, because I had no one to turn to who was experienced at this type of case. I spoke to an agent who suggested some reading material. When I began reading, I started to understand Sue's situation. I understood the victimization and means used to force unwilling members to participate. The nature of the rituals became clearer also, and seemed to fit what Sue was telling me.

At about the same time, the minister I'd visited was seen at the hospital with a name tag bearing a different name than his own. Sue clammed up and stated that she was not safe. Shortly after, Sue was discharged from the hospital and sent home to her husband and children. The husband assured me that he was not cult involved, and would keep an eye on her.

Sue then started claiming that the satanists were entering her home at night. Drugging her family, they could do with her as they wished. Although a watch was put on the house, none of this was ever substantiated. She claimed they used acid to burn her, cut her. She claimed they put wine into her vagina and drank it. A major problem with her injuries was that it was possible they could have been self-inflicted.

I was at a dead end and could neither prove, nor disprove, any of her claims. I then talked to her doctor who stated that all she was saying seemed to him to be true. Her psychiatrist was so convinced, along with her nurses and psychologist of these truths, that they put the pressure on for some results. I performed every logical sequence to a normal investigation. However, scenes of supposed cult activity were void of any evidence.

On one occasion, we traveled to a site deep in the woods of a town in southern Ohio. We followed Sue's directions and didn't realize it was a site until we came within a few feet of it. The site was triangular shaped, formed with vine, and could hold approximately 20 people. It held a pit where there had been a fire and a freshly cut Christmas tree was by the entrance to the triangle, by the apex. There was also, what at first appeared to be a hitching post between two trees fastened to the tree with vine. The post was singed and moved freely up and down about a foot.

When I showed Sue the pictures of the site and asked about the hitching post, she explained that females were strapped to it, sexually penetrated, then their bodies licked with flame. The Christmas tree was for the purpose of desecration. Although there were no fir trees in the area, I just could not picture someone going to all this trouble of carrying the tree into the area, engraving ankhs and pentagrams on it and connecting all that vine, if what she said happened here, didn't. Something happened.

A second spot was checked where she claimed we would find a house with a corn field next to it, where many sacrifices took place. The floors would be soaked with human blood and the corn field would contain crushed bone and teeth. We went there on a Saturday and parked in front of the house, and took a quick look around. It appeared to be abandoned, but secure. Upon our return two days later, the house was gone. A neighbor stated that it had burned down on Saturday, and that it was bulldozed Sunday. We did a foot search of the cornfield looking for anything; a tooth or fragment of bone. We did find some bones which appeared to be too easy to locate. The bones were sent to the coroner's office, who in turn sent them to the Smithsonian. The Smithsonian later identified them as pig bones.

On and on it went. Every turn we took, we came to a dead end. During these so many months, Sue called me telling me how satanists were coming and getting her, taking her to ceremonies, killing the family pets and threatening to kill her and her children if she didn't stop talking. The husband could neither confirm, nor deny, her stories. He just didn't know. Every lead was followed, every name checked out, those that could be talked to, were. At times, I believed the validity of her claims, but then thinking how bizarre her stories were, and my inability to prove her claims, doubt reigned.

During the interim, I was having meetings with the hospital staff, giving them information and explaining what evidence was needed for prosecution. They in turn gave me material on multiple personality disorder (MPD) and Sue's progress. In my readings, I discovered that MPD was caused when a person goes through physical and psychological trauma in early childhood and splits the present personality he or she has and reverts to another personality that can cope with the pain of the abuse. The new personality may be of the opposite sex, younger, older, uneducated, or even speaking a foreign language. The number of personalities and types are only restricted to the person's mind. I've found MPD to be prevalent among over half of the ritual abuse survivors I've worked with.

When word got out of my investigations, I received 20 new cases, all giving me basically the same scenario. Again, all coming to a dead end. Every available investigative tool was used; polygraph, crime scene searches, crime lab, etc. Nothing, not a shred of evidence that pointed anywhere. All of the victims were giving me the same names and more places that sounded the same, or places of the same general description.

Sue's cooperation diminished with my inability to bring anyone to justice. During this time, the Rape Crisis Center counseled Sue. The chief case-worker took Sue's case because of the difficulty of the case. The case-worker told me she was getting harassing, chanting phone calls, and was being followed by a white male, even in the courthouse. Just as suddenly as that started, it stopped.

The stories kept coming in from Sue of sacrifices in the valley in the Peninsula Road area. There were stories of heads being in a fireplace, children being bred for sacrifice in Youngstown, their bodies burned, broken and scattered in the fields, streams and woods; women being beaten and sexually mistreated, then being filmed, and the films being sold for a profit. Every devious crime was conveyed to me.

Her recollection of how she was transported to some of the ceremonies and where they took place was very vague, because she said she was drugged at home, before leaving for the site. Sue was convinced that her days were numbered and the cult would eventually get her. It wasn't until I talked to her for long durations of time, did I convince her that she was safe if she kept helping me expose them. Satanists apparently had instilled the fear of death in her so severely that to get her active in talking with me took more and more effort on my part.

Sue was readmitted to the hospital because she claimed to have been ritualistically abused, cut, bruised, and burned. The doctors once again felt she was not doing it to herself unless it was a personality she had within her they were not familiar with, or had not discovered.

When I would ask her how these people were getting in, she said they would call on the phone and trigger her by some means which would bring a cult-loyal, alter personality forward. That personality would open the door for them, and once inside they would do what they wanted with her. They would come while her husband was at work, it just always worked out that no one saw anything but Sue. All along she kept stating they would kill her and make it look like a natural death.

It took a great deal of time to regain Sue's confidence. During this time, she moved to another neighborhood, thinking that this would keep the cult away. It didn't. She became less and less talkative, and seemed to fear me. Since she eventually stopped complaining about the cult bothering her and was getting along with her therapists, I moved on to other cases which gave me more probability of an arrest. You can't spin your wheels on a non-productive case, which her case had become.

I was hearing from other survivors that Sue was in danger. Therapists began to worry that she was not doing well. Therapists and doctors could not understand why I could not go out and arrest these people. I tried to explain that this type of investigation is difficult due to the nature of the underlying problem; not to mention dealing with someone who had MPD with little concrete information.

Sue did show us an actual site, and gave some good information. However, was she truly in danger? Would the cult be foolish enough to harm someone who was by now well known to the police? I did not think that they could pull it off, since we knew too much about her for them to try to take her life in any manner. In addition, she was writing a daily journal, and her husband was, supposedly, keeping a constant eye on her.

Time went on and it got to the point that I heard nothing from her, and less about her from other survivors and therapists. Her case seemed to fade into obscurity. New cases were taking more and more of my time. Then, the unexpected happened.

I had just gone to bed on February 4, 1991, when my daughter came in and said there was someone on the phone. It was Sue's therapist, who stated bluntly that Sue was dead. I was very shocked, and many thoughts went through my mind. How could this be? Did I miss these warnings she was giving me? Had I blown it off too easily? Could I have prevented her death? I laid silently thinking a thousand thoughts. All I kept thinking was what people that knew her had said, "They're going to kill her, and you'll never prove it." At this time, her children and her husband were in therapy and her husband always seemed cooperative on the phone, but could never seem to find the time to talk to me.

Let me state that the first thing drilled into your head is: ...you don't run into a crime scene, especially a homicide; you don't touch anything; you secure the scene and call the coroner. No police officer has the authority to declare death.

After talking to the therapist, I called the detective bureau desk man and asked if a call had come in from the coroner's office about a death at Sue's address. He stated that there hadn't been any call. I asked him to send a cruiser and let me know as soon as possible. Within an hour, he had called me back and said the coroner was on the scene with the husband, and the body was transported to a local hospital. Never in my career have I had a coroner's investigator move a body without at least having a police cruiser present. This meant that the death scene was completely destroyed, the husband cleaned the room and straightened everything up. Conflicting statements came from the husband. He stated to the coroner's investigator that he knew Sue was alive because he heard her walking around. Later he told a second investigator that he knew she was alive because he heard her snoring when he went by the bedroom. The therapist stated he told her he could tell she was alive because when he was outside getting into the car he could hear her. The therapist asked, "How could you hear her inside the house?" He said he saw the bathroom light on.

There was talk that the cult had injected her vaginal wall with a substance that would make her heart stop. This was not found in the autopsy, which was insisted on by me. The coroner's office stated that she died of natural causes. A white female, 39 years of age? It appeared as if the coroner's investigator was pushing for a quick solution.

It was explained to me by the coroner's office that Sue was on self-prescribed laxatives and Fleet enemas, and this had depleted her body of potassium causing an electrolyte imbalance, that in turn caused her heart to stop.

She wrote in her journal, "You sought help, all of us have favored you and granted your great need of my counsel, you invoked me, now you will serve me Lucifuge. Satanchia, Agaliarept, Fleortly, Sacragatana, Rebilious Bael Agares, Marbas, Barbatos, Buer Gusoyn Boyis and all other demons come join us, watch our Empower Lucifer have you [*sic*]. Come on Bathim, Pursan, Abigar, Loray Valefar, Foranu, Ayperos, Numerus, Glasya, Folas come now. You now have what you want. We already have Tamara, now we have your soul, your time has come. Don't fight it, you will enjoy it, Tamara."

This was her last journal entry. The writing is in the handwriting of Tamara, one of her alter personalities that was satanically involved. It seems as though she knew something was coming. All of her journals are in the hands of coroner's investigators who are frantically trying to make sense of this death and all its tangents. If she was using laxatives and enemas, her potassium and electrolyte levels would be low — they were not. A sample of the vitreous humor from her eye has been sent away, along with her blood, tissue and stomach contents. The vitreous humor shows that her potassium level was high, but she was not taking potassium supplements. It is still not known when this last entry was made in her journal.

The more this case is studied, the less things make sense. Why did her husband change his story so many times? Would a puncture wound into the uterus show? What chemical would stop the heart and leave no trace? These, and many more questions, come to mind. My commanders have been more than supportive of this and other investigations I've had. These are very difficult cases.

The coroner is convinced it is a natural death and is going to rule it as such. Other cult victims are convinced that Sue was murdered by the particular cult she belonged to. I'm not firmly convinced either way. In the state of Ohio, the coroner is the top law enforcement official, and his decision is final. So, it lies as stated: the coroner's office and myself are still looking at the journals, and the husband.

I would have felt a lot better if people wouldn't have told me it was going to happen, and for it to happen exactly as Sue stated.

Chapter 10

MORE HARASSMENT

SELF-INFLICTED INJURIES?

At one point in the previous chapter, Detective Kasarda talked of Sue being readmitted to the hospital, claiming she had again been ritualistically cut, bruised and burned by the cult. However, he also stated: "A major problem with her injuries was that it was possible they were self-inflicted."

Note: If a person is getting close to the cult memories, or starting to tell the secrets, some cult-loyal alter personalities are sometimes programmed to take over and somehow cut, burn, or do other things to the body that will unconsciously evoke the code-of-silence programming.

However, given a lot of the circumstances of the Akron case, it is quite possible the cult was indeed trying to intimidate Sue — as another cult was apparently trying to do with a woman in Texas recently.

"TRAITOR"

In *Breaking the Circle of Satanic Ritual Abuse*, I wrote about the courageous story of a family in Texas that took in cult survivor Gina (pseudonym), who was on the run from a cult in Oklahoma. And for the following year and a half Janice and Dick Lord kept Gina and her young daughter in their home, doing everything possible to help and keep them protected.

Note: As a result of this experience, Mrs. Lord, who is also a licensed social worker and national director of victims' services for Mothers Against Drunk Driving, started a non-profit Christian foundation called "Jireh." The organization is attempting to set up a national network of "transitional living care homes" for people breaking away from cults. (In 1993, Mrs. Lord received an award *from the U.S. Department of Justice, presented by Janet Reno, for her work in the victim field.)*

In January of 1993, several years after Gina had broken away from the cult, she reports being grabbed while walking to a friend's apartment complex by several Oklahoma satanic cult members. She said she was shoved in a van, blindfolded and driven to her daughter's elementary school.

"They did this to let me know they knew where my daughter was," said Gina. (Gina said she had been raised in a cult complex similar to the one in California. She had also been married to the cult's high priest.)

After going to the elementary school, Gina said she was stripped, and cult members used a small metal box with coals and a branding iron designed as an upside-down cross, to mark an area on her abdomen.

"While they were doing this they were saying things like: 'You're a traitor... You left your group... You deserve this...,'" said Gina. They then continued the torture by pushing two nails up into her vagina, she said.

Nicole Davis was an Arlington, Texas, police officer who had been involved with the case for three years. After the abduction incident, she talked with doctors who had worked on Gina, and was shown x-rays that showed where the nails had been imbedded. Davis said they had been inserted in the vagina so far up (into the cervix) that the doctor said definitively that it had to have been done by someone other than Gina, in his opinion.

This hadn't been the first alleged assault either. During an earlier one, Gina said she had also been branded on the abdomen with another upside-down broken cross (sometimes used to label a "traitor"). Likewise, letters and tape-recorded, alleged cult phone threats had been filed as evidence. In addition, a plastic bag with body parts was left in the Lords' mail box one day, as, they surmise, another cult threat. Davis said the body parts were sent to a lab, and determined to be animal parts.

BEING FOLLOWED?

In *Breaking the Circle 2* (in progress), I write about a woman from northern California who has been speaking out in public about her own ritual abuse, and has been actively working to establish a Ritual Abuse Task Force in the school system she teaches in.

Since she has been speaking out, she believes satanists in the area are harassing her to keep her quiet.

She has kept a written record as the events have unfolded, and the following are some excerpts from her journaling: "...In April, prior to my presentation to the school district, I was receiving harassing phone calls with some frequency. I now believe they [the cult] were attempting to access one of my alter personalities."

Note: Cindy is in therapy, and in one session an alter personality revealed the messages seemed intended to "trigger" and manipulate her. And on another level, Cindy also believes the calls were being used merely to scare her into not talking.

July 22

Yesterday I went to the dentist for an appointment at 9:40 a.m. The only people who knew I had an appointment were my children, the dentist's office and a friend. (I suspect may telephones may be bugged.)

At approximately 10:45 I was leaving the dentist's office when I saw a woman sitting in the waiting room. She was approximately 5'5", age 35-42, salt and pepper [graying] short hair. I said hello, and realized she was the same woman who had been at my door [at home] previously, as a "Jehovah's Witness."

[Earlier, this woman and another "Jehovah's Witness" (they had claimed) had come to Cindy's house. At one point, Cindy reached out to take a book from one of the women with her left arm. Cindy began feeling a sharp sensation in the upper inside of that arm. Shortly after that, she began feeling drugged and nauseated.]

I realized this [that the woman in the dentist's office was the same person who had been at her door], then thought: "Boy, they've got [nerve]!" As I left the office, I proceeded to the stairwell. There was a younger woman sitting on about the third step down from the top of the stairs. She was approximately 20 years old, wearing a blue sun dress and shoulder-length hair. She was reading a small Bible. As I started down the stairs I said "Excuse me." I don't remember what happened next. I can't remember if she moved or stood up. As I went down the stairs... she would have been on my right side. At the base of the stairs I suddenly had the feeling I had been poked (again), a sharp sensation in the inside of my upper right arm. I had a sense that something was wrong.

I locked the truck and drove home. By the time I got home I was feeling nauseous, dizzy and shaky. I went outside, looked at my arm, and noticed a distinct hole in my arm...

I believe I had been drugged. My physical state was not good. I felt disorientated, dizzy, tired, unable to think clearly. I don't remember anything that happened.

Note: Sometimes people engaged in sadistic abuse and mind control, will drug subjects to make them more malleable for programming suggestions, and in this state, it is often easier to work with the internal alter personality system in general.

I returned to the dentist's office at approximately 3 p.m. The same woman was there. She was standing at the counter. She did not see me. I went into the office... I asked some specific questions. I was informed the woman was a Jehovah's Witness, and had "all of a sudden" shown up in the office to have her teeth cleaned. She had not called for an appointment prior to her showing up in the office. She also had not been in the dentist's office in approximately three years.

Questions: Why would this woman all of a sudden show up off the street to have her teeth cleaned? Is it just a coincidence that she is the same woman who happened to be at my door when I felt as if I had been drugged before? Is it possible she followed me to the dentist's office?

Individuals may choose to believe that I am paranoid. However, I don't believe I have ever been so clear. There is an evil in our midst. It may take serious turns, perhaps even my death, to cause people to see this ugly slime. But I will hold onto my truth. I am not crazy. Harassment is happening. The intent, I believe, is to frighten me into silence.

I will not be silenced. Good is more powerful than evil.

"I relate all this because survivors speaking out have to be aware of their [the cult's] tactics," said Cindy during a follow-up interview.

And, again, it's not just ritual abuse survivors that seem to be experiencing the harassment.

POISONED

It seems some therapists and ritual abuse survivors have been the target of highly covert, systematic poisoning. This phenomenon started to surface in late 1991 for Catherine Gould, a licensed clinical psychologist in Encino, California, specializing in the diagnosis and treatment of child and adult victims of ritual abuse. She has conducted training throughout the United States and Canada, and has authored a number of papers on the subject.

In late 1991, Gould had a therapist come to her for consultation on a ritual abuse case. During the consult, the therapist shared she was getting sick a lot of late: blurred vision, dry mouth, swollen lymph nodes, physical weakness, decreased coordination...

Oddly, every time she would get sick like this, her dog would also get sick.

The woman eventually went for help, and the medical tests clearly indicated she was suffering from organophosphate poisoning, said Gould. Gould is involved with a consultation/support group of some 30 therapists in the L.A. area working with ritual abuse survivors. And within a short period of time after the first poisoning diagnosis, two other therapists came up with the same symptoms, as did a vocal ritual abuse child advocate, and two adult ritual abuse survivors, said Gould. (The two adult survivors also obtained documented medical records showing the poison in their systems, said Gould.)

Gould explained this type of poisoning is insidious and slow. It gradually breaks down the immune system and causes any number of symptoms. Besides the ones mentioned earlier, some other symptoms include: chest pain pressure; labored breathing; feeling nervous, jumpy; generalized fatigue; confusion in thinking; vertigo or dizziness... Gould also said she has learned this type of poisoning is actually used in some chemical warfare strategies. It apparently accumulates in the body, slowly disrupting the immune system, similar, said Gould, to what some farm workers experience with repeated exposure to pesticides.

Los Angeles County has a Ritual Abuse Task Force that meets regularly. And at one meeting, Gould brought up the reports of the poisoning. Shortly after, she started to become a target for the poisoning as well. For a time, she said, there were break-ins to her office, where toxins had been sprayed all over. After the office locks were upgraded, the toxins were sprayed into her car through an air vent, she said.

This then apparently started happening with most of the 30 therapists in the L.A. ritual abuse consultation/support group. Many of them, said Gould, also started to come down with organophosphate poisoning symptoms.

Gould said she was initially surprised that after the poisoning tactic was made public, the cult, instead of backing off, had stepped up this form of harassment. She said she surmised it was the cult's intention to break up the therapist consultation group, and get the therapists to back off in general from working with ritual abuse survivors.

Note: The network of therapists had become quite cohesive, and they were doing some extremely advanced work that was being used as a model in other places.

However, only one therapist in the group backed off from working with ritual abuse survivors after the poisoning was talked about publicly. Gould said the group consulted with a number of people in various medical professions, and were able to come up with a natural herbal candle oil blend, that when burned, neutralized the toxins.

When Gould initially started talking about the poisoning, she was put under investigation by the Medical Board of California in conjunction with the California Board of Psychology. Undaunted, she continued to speak out. And what's more, she started calling around to other regions to see if this tactic was being used.

She contacted a colleague in Canada who said, amazingly, the same thing had been happening there. Gould said this person said there were at least seven therapists and survivors that were reporting similar symptoms.

Gould took it a step further, and drafted a survey questionnaire, that explained what had been happening in California, and included a list of organophosphate poisoning symptoms. She sent this initially to 70 therapists, survivors of ritual abuse, ritual abuse survivor advocates... most of whom Gould knew throughout the United States and Canada.

The initial results were astounding. Out of 62 responses, 45 believed they actually were suffering from organophosphate poisoning, and 40 had already gone for various forms of treatment for the pesticide poisoning.

Note: It's interesting to note, the same harassment strategy is apparently being employed in all these regions, lending more credence to the supposition of the widespread cult networking of strategies.

Also, 47 survey respondents said they had experienced other types of harassment which some attribute primarily to their work with ritual abuse survivors: telephone harassment; being followed, stalked; death or other threats; break-ins and/or theft...

Gould was asked if she thought about backing off from her ritual abuse work when it started becoming apparent what was happening with the poisoning.

"When I found out they were poisoning me, I became enraged," said Gould, who also said she had no intention of backing down. "The violation of me made me absolutely determined to fight back."

Gould said this also gave her even more empathy for the overall plight of the ritual abuse survivors who have had to deal with this type of highly covert manipulation their whole life. And in no way was she going to back off from trying to help them.

Gould, like Cindy in the last section, hopes the information that is surfacing about the poisoning will help alert others about the threat.

RITUAL ABUSE TASK FORCE

In 1988 therapist Myra Riddell spearheaded a movement to establish a Ritual Abuse Task Force in the L.A. area under the umbrella of the Los Angeles County Commission for Women. The task force was established primarily to research and disseminate information about cult ritual abuse.

The task force has also developed ritual abuse education and training programs for mental health workers, teachers, attorneys and law enforcement officials. The membership includes ritual abuse survivors, therapists, attorneys, police officers, teachers, clergy, parents of survivors...

At the beginning of the chapter, I mentioned Attorney General Janet Reno giving an award to Janice Lord for her work with victims in general. According to the nationwide ritual abuse awareness newsletter SURVIVORSHIP:

> **Janet Reno's district attorney's office in Florida successfully prosecuted one of the first cases involving ritual abuse allegations. Her current special assistant, John Hogan, was the successful prosecutor in the case, which is described in detail in the book *Unspeakable Acts*. In order to give the Attorney General information to pursue the problem at a national level, survivors of ritual abuse and their advocates are sending letters describing their experiences to Mr. Hogan and to Tom Birch, Director of National Child Abuse Coalition. Send letters to Tom Birch, Director, National Child Abuse Coalition, 733 15th Street NW, Suite 938, Washington, D.C. 20005, and John Hogan, Assistant to the Attorney General, Department of Justice, 10th Street and Constitution Avenue, NW, Washington, D.C. 20530.**

Chapter 11

MORE EVIDENCE

MICHIGAN CASE

Macomb County, Michigan, prosecuting attorney Carl Marlinga called it the worst murder he'd ever seen. And, as the Matamoros cult members had been characterized, one of the Michigan murderers was characterized as "thoroughly evil." What's more, the case was punctuated by all types of occult references...

Stephanie Dubay, 15, met Augustan ("Augi") Pena, 16, at a party one night in July of 1990. Dubay was a runaway, and Pena talked her into moving into his home with his mother and 19-year-old cousin Jamie Rodriguez. (Some of the runaways in the missing children statistics are lured by people in the occult. Some are never found again. Or, as you are about to see, some are found — dead.)

On the exterior, the home looked like one of any number of homes in the quiet, middle-class suburb of Warren, Michigan. However, there were problems. Marlinga said Augi's mother would be gone weeks at a time, sometimes turning tricks as a prostitute. When she was home, she would also sleep with the 19-year-old Rodriguez, "...in exchange for rent," said Marlinga. The mother was gone this particular time. And Stephanie had been in the home a week and a half, when one morning, said Marlinga, Rodriguez and Augi apparently decided to kill Stephanie.

Marlinga said there had been reports Rodriguez had told Augi he'd killed a person before "...as part of a devil worship sacrifice." This allegedly took place in the woods in the northern part of Michigan's Lower Peninsula, said Marlinga. (Although this was never proved.)

Part of Marlinga's argument was that Augi had become fascinated with Rodriguez's talk of satanism and black magic, which would precipitate what happened next.

What the prosecutor presented to the jury was that Augi and Rodriguez laid newspaper down all over the floor and set a stool in the middle. They woke Stephanie and sat her on the stool. Marlinga said Rodriguez then put his hands on the young girl's shoulders and told her to think of something pleasant ...like a scene out in the woods. Just then, Marlinga argued, Augi stepped up and stabbed Stephanie in the back. She let out a scream and flew up into Rodriguez's arms. Marlinga said Augi allegedly stabbed her ten more times.

They then reportedly dismembered her, cut off her head and skinned the skull. Augi cut off one of her fingers to keep as a "charm," said Marlinga. The eyes were left in the skull, and it was placed in the freezer. The rest of the body parts were put in a plastic bag.

(Marlinga pointed out the defense argued that Rodriguez had killed Stephanie by himself, and Augi came across the murder after the fact.)

Later that day, a friend of Rodriguez's named Valerie, came by to cut his hair. Investigators were later to find Valerie practiced "white witchcraft," and Rodriguez claimed to have saved the skull to give to Valerie for her own occultic use. Rodriguez took Valerie to the freezer and showed her the skull. (She would later testify she recognized it was Stephanie because of Stephanie's bright blue eyes, said Marlinga.)

Later, when Rodriguez wasn't looking, Valerie took the skull and dashed out of the house to the Warren police department.

Marlinga said when the home was searched, investigators found all types of satanic and other occult paraphernalia including pentagrams, books on witchcraft, ritual knives, satanic altar accessories...

On the stand, Marlinga said Valerie testified Rodriguez was into a lot of black magic and she said he had power to control people. She also testified, at times his personality would shift dramatically, becoming very dark, very scary. She testified the color of his eyes would even seem to change in this state.

Marlinga said Valerie testified that she was convinced Rodriguez probably performed some dark-side rituals leading up to the murder. But Rodriguez left any mention of the occult out of his statement, he surmised, because he wanted to keep this area as secret as possible.

The defense claimed because of his fascination and involvement in the occult, Rodriguez was actually insane. And while Marlinga acknowledged Rodriguez had, indeed, been caught up in the occult, he was far from insane. As in other cases, Marlinga said he downplayed the occult aspects of the crime so the jury wouldn't buy into the insanity strategy.

"Sometimes this type of thing happens, not because someone is insane, but rather, because they are evil," said Marlinga.

Circuit Judge Frederick K. Balkwell apparently agreed. In his closing comments in the Rodriguez trial, Balkwell said: "Your monstrous murder of a young and innocent child will leave lasting scars... Even the court has been shocked by the depth and depravity of [this] evil, horrible crime."

Rodriguez was found guilty and was sentenced to life imprisonment. Augi was tried as an adult and also received life imprisonment.

POSSESSION?

In the case in Michigan, a witness testified Rodriguez's eyes would actually change dramatically. The young girls in Johnstown, Pennsylvania, told police they were petrified of their father because they thought he had "super-human" power.

I was called in to consult on a case in Dallas, Texas. Newspapers reported 29-year-old Myra Obasi's eyes were literally gouged out, possibly by her sisters, because they believed she was possessed by demonic spirits. Newspaper accounts also indicated the sisters might have panicked when seeing, whatever it was, manifest in Myra's eyes that day.

One of the consistent behavior "oddities" for some children exposed to ritual abuse, is they will often gouge at eyes in magazine pictures, and so on, with scissors, knives... What have they perhaps seen in their perpetrators' eyes? Are they frantically trying to tell us something they don't know how to, or can't, verbalize?

Note: One of the reported components in satanic ceremonies is cult members will call on demons to enter them for more wisdom, more power. Authors M. Scott Peck, M.D., Malachi Martin, and many others, believe the phenomenon of demonic possession.

All this does certainly beg the question(s): How much of the cult workings, if any, are demonically driven? And if demons are involved, does this mean there is heightened intelligence that would add to the sophistication?

Note: Based on my research, I personally believe it's a key component.

ESTABLISHING A TASK FORCE

In the summer of 1994, Patricia Thomley spearheaded the formation of a multi-disciplinary task force in Michigan to lobby for legislation against ritual abuse. Thomley assembled a team of professionals that included therapists, researchers, doctors, law enforcement officers, pastors, attorneys, members of advocacy groups and parents of ritual abuse survivors. "You want to find people willing to roll up their sleeves and do the work," said Thomley. The team then prepared a formal package for legislators that included a definition of ritual abuse, statistics and educational material.

"They [legislators] need to be shown what's going on in their state," said Thomley.

Besides the Stephanie Dubay case, the task force cites a Niles, Michigan case, for instance, where 172 children from the Small World Preschool came forward claiming sexual and ritual abuse. Small World co-owner Allan Barkman was convicted on one of the charges and was sentenced to 50 years in prison, said Thomley.

NATIONWIDE

On a 1994-95 investigative swing through the South, Midwest and East Coast, I came across story after story of satanic activity:

OKLAHOMA

Former satanist Shawn Sellars was sentenced to death row just up the road from the site of another gruesome, apparently occult-driven incident. At Lake Eufaula in McAlester, Oklahoma, the bodies of Lisa Gregston, 17, and James Caldwell, 22, were found naked, surrounded by a circle of candles. Gregston had several pieces of pentagram jewelry and a pentagram tatoo.

According to a September 3, 1994, Associated Press article, family and friends said the two were involved in the occult. Authorities ruled it an apparent double suicide.

Pittsburgh County Sheriff Don Hass said apparently Gregston lay down and placed the butt of a semi-automatic rifle against the tire of their vehicle, with the barrel against her temple. He said Caldwell then lay on top of her and put the left side of his head against hers. According to the article, Gregston then pulled the trigger and the bullet went through her head into Caldwell's, killing both.

A life offering to satan? Perhaps. Some cult defectors who were being made an example of, like the ones in California? Maybe. Whatever the case, the occult aspects in this incident were hard for authorities to overlook.

SOUTH CAROLINA

In South Carolina, a police chief was called into a neighboring county to assist in exploring a purported satanic ritual site in some backwoods. Among the reports, said the chief, cult members were believed to have guarded the periphery of the site with semi-automatic weapons.

A police raid was staged late one night. No cult members were spotted. However, the chief said they did find an abandoned building spray-painted with a pentagram on the floor, candle drippings and upside-down crosses.

Based on reports he's been exposed to over the years, this police chief said he's convinced satanic ritual activity exists, and is quite dangerous.

I also interviewed Detective Lewis Marshall who has investigated reports of criminal satanic activity throughout Columbia, South Carolina. He had recently been called to an abandoned church in some backwoods. He also found a pentagram painted on the floor. A human hip bone, and a rib bone were found within the pentagram. Nearby, he said he found a grave that had recently been dug up.

Note: To some in the occult, the points of the pentagram star are considered "power cones." Rituals will be done to attempt to channel demons, or the "spirit" of the deceased into the pentagram, where they will be trapped in the power cones and, supposedly, forced to transfer power to the ones performing the rituals.

While in Columbia, I also interviewed a radio personality who explained he had been approached about joining a satanic cult in 1976. He said a neighbor invited him over and took him to a back room that was painted completely black. He was then invited to a satanic cult meeting. He said the cult member told him he would have to be willing to be naked during the ceremonies, and he would also have to curse God. He declined.

MARYLAND

Arlie and Roxie Watson, at Salisbury Counseling Center in Salisbury, Maryland, counsel ritual abuse survivors from all parts of the country. They also train therapists from around the world. And they said the stories emerging about the rituals, the torture, the mind control... are so similar it's scary.

The survivor reports took on a decidedly more real dimension for the Watsons in 1989. During a counseling session, one of their SRA survivors drew a series of pictures of some of the paraphernalia used during the rituals she'd been exposed to. This included a torture rack, a base for a ritual altar, and some other items.

About eight weeks after the drawings had been done, friends of the Watsons bought an old farm house in Wicomico County, Maryland.

While going through the house, they found a small metal casket-like box with air holes, a torture rack (just like the survivor had drawn, and similar to the one Detective Kasarda had found in the backwoods of southern Ohio), and a set of wooden legs that also looked exactly the same as the satanic altar legs the survivor had drawn.

What's more, upon further exploration, a hollowed out rectangle was found hidden below some insulation in the attic floor. It was covered with a hinged trap door. The small, metal casket-like box fit perfectly.

"Satanic baptisms" are sometimes staged during the ceremonies. A child, for instance, will be put in a coffin, buried with an air tube, then brought back — and told he or she is now the son or daughter of satan. If the ceremony is being held in an attic, a burial in the rafters would serve the same purpose.

Note: On September 18, 1992, Illinois Governor Jim Edgar signed Public Act #87-1167, allowing for the definition, investigation and prosecution of ritual crimes against children. Item 6 of this bill states a person is guilty of ritualized abuse when they "place a living child into a coffin or open grave containing a human corpse or remains."

Awhile after finding these items, another ritual abuse survivor told the Watsons of an isolated cemetery in Pittsville, Maryland, where she said she had been exposed to a number of rituals. The Watsons went to the site. Nothing. Neatly cut grass, graves, intact grave stones.

They went back a week later. Six graves had been dug up. Fresh, overturned dirt marked the rectangular spots. Summer Solstice, a satanic high holy day, had fallen in between the seven days, said Arlie. The Watsons even rented a plane to take some aerial shots of the fresh diggings, to contrast them with the pictures of the intact cemetery they had found the week before.

Note: Ritual crime investigator Dale Griffis said cemeteries are consecrated ground, so satanists will do all types of things to defile the sites. Also, besides the satanic baptisms, the use of body parts is also necessary for some of the rituals.

The Watsons said they have decided to become proactive with the information and designed a slide show for local police, prayer groups, and anyone else who will listen.

"The initial reaction from the police was shock," said Arlie. "That is, that this activity was going on in this county right under their noses."

MASSACHUSETTS

The Northeast Ritual Crime Intelligence Association was formed on January 13, 1995. Headquartered in Boston, the organization is made up of law enforcement officers, and others throughout the northeastern states, for the purpose of accumulation, evaluation and dissemination of intelligence around ritual criminal activity. The association was designed to help victims of ritual crime; provide assistance to law enforcement and social service agencies; offer trainings...

TEXAS

A 17-year-old girl disappeared on a rainy night in 1992 in the small town of Gilmer, Texas (population 4,500). Eventually, eight people were charged with killing the girl as part of a satanic ritual. Her body was never found.

Two adults had come forward saying they had witnessed the murder as part of a cult ceremony, then recanted. (There were also multiple allegations of a group of Gilmer neighbors perpetrating sexual and ritual abuse on children.) The indictments were eventually dismissed, however, after the Texas attorney general's office took over the case.

Some citizens were outraged with the dismissal and formed a "Justice for Kelly Wilson" committee. In not letting the issue rest, they started their own investigation, putting together "fact sheets," news releases, and so on. They approached legislators, the news media, friends, neighbors...

On Sunday afternoon, August 21, 1994, they drew some 300 people, and all kinds of media, to the Gilmer courthouse lawn for a rally that included talks by advocates, authors, a therapist who works with SRA survivors... The rally received so much attention, the organizers began talking of planning a State House rally in Austin.

CANADA

Meanwhile, a similar neighborhood saga was unfolding in Prescott, Ontario (population 4,200). However here, nothing was dismissed. A team of police, social workers and prosecutors uncovered a child sexual/ritual abuse ring. And of the 52 people that have gone to trial at the time of this writing, 90 percent have been convicted.

The story started to unfold with three children's disclosures in 1989. And by the close of 1993, 225 alleged victims had come forward.

Among some of the stories of sexual and ritual abuse, according to an April 3, 1995, *Winnipeg Free Press* article:

> **The children claimed they had been abused during monster games in the basement that featured adult relatives dressed in sheets and masks. They said they were raped, cut with knives, forced to drink blood and mud, and locked in a dungeon with a trap door.**

Journalist Judy Steed wrote the book *Our Little Secret* based on this case. An excerpt reads:

> **Linked by kinship and friendship ties, Prescott's perpetrators abused their own children, their neighbours' children and their grandchildren in a multi-generational network that was staggering in its reach and its routine violation of hundreds of victims. Some were terrorized in nightmarish ways that can only be termed ritual abuse.**

As an example, Steed explains one perpetrator dug up graveyard bodies, pulling the heads off skeletons and engaging in basement rites where adults dressed in different costumes, terrorized and sexually and ritually abused children. Some of the abuse was video taped.

Steed interviewed Pam Gummer, the child abuse project coordinator with Family and Children's Services. Gummer said: "This is not a unique situation in terms of abuse. Prescott is unique in terms of outcome."

The Jericho team, a joint police-social worker team, was organized to investigate. At one point, there were four police officers, eight social workers and a team of child-care workers involved with the case. With that extensive a team, ample time to investigate, and a highly creative series of interventions, a thorough mosaic of the extent of the abuse surfaced.

Police, for instance, often met with child victims several times, taking time to gain their trust. They played floor hockey with the children, discussed super heroes, and shunned their uniforms and guns for less intimidating street clothes, according to the *Winnipeg Free Press* article.

Also, closed-circuit TV testimony was allowed for the children so they wouldn't have to face the suspects for whom they often have a mixture of fear, love and dread.

Among some of the testimony that emerged: masses of animal bones were found in shallow graves on one alleged perpetrator's property. The children talked of having to drink animal blood, and, at one point, said they witnessed a baby being murdered. Steed wrote that police speculated one of the convicted female perpetrators may have been a cult breeder, but the defense lawyer didn't pursue this. (The body of the alleged baby victim has yet to be found.) The children also talked of being put in a hole below a house for extended periods. Police found a trap door under the floor of one of the houses, with a six-foot-deep hole beneath it, littered with scraps of food.

One perpetrator was found guilty of sexually assaulting 13 Prescott children, ranging from a 12-month-old baby girl, to a two-year-old boy, to teenagers. A nine-year-old girl testified, for instance, this man, and a woman, tied her hands behind her back, taped her mouth and repeatedly raped her.

Steed interviewed the foster mother who took this young victim in. She said the girl was extremely polite and acquiescent; however: "without a self, underneath, there was nobody there," she said. "It was as if we looked inside her soul and nothing was alive."

According to the book, several years after being in quality therapy, in a loving home environment, and so on, this young girl was able to have friends with girls her own age for the first time, has developed some confidence, and is learning what it's like to simply be a young girl.

MORE UNITED STATES CASES

Two teenage babysitters at the First Presbyterian Church in Mansfield, Ohio, were convicted of sexually abusing children while the victims' parents attended church services. Lawrence Rohde, 19, was convicted in 1992 on seven counts of gross sexual imposition and sentenced to 14 years in prison. Scott Butner, 17, pled guilty to five counts of rape and received a five-to ten-year prison sentence.

According to a November 29, 1992, *Cleveland Plain Dealer* newspaper story, as many as 50 children described being sexually abused and taken from the church to wooded areas where they were forced to participate in child pornography, infanticide and mutilation of corpses. Victims' parents demanded that charges be filed against adult church members who allegedly were involved, but only Rohde and Butner were indicted.

Ed Gallup Sr., Mary Lou Gallup and their son, Ed "Chip" Gallup Jr., who together ran three Gallup Christian Day-Care Centers in Roseburg, Oregon, were accused by over a hundred children of sexual molestation and ritual abuse. Children described animal killings, pornography, and sexual abuse performed by adults wearing robes.

Ed Gallup Jr. was convicted on three charges of child sexual abuse involving two children. Ed Gallup Sr., a Nazarene minister, was convicted on the testimony of a five-year-old girl. In November

1989 Mary Lou Gallup's conviction was reversed because of a discovery violation. Ed Gallup Sr. and Ed Gallup Jr. are serving life sentences.

Meanwhile in Santa Rosa, California, Darryl Ball and Charlotte Thriaikill plea bargained on molestation charges and were sentenced to substantial prison terms. The prosecutor's opening statement referred to the ritual aspect of the crimes, and child victims described satanic ceremonies which included ritual murders.

Note: The last three items were taken from the summer, 1994 Believe The Children *newsletter article: "A Decade of Disclosures: Ritual Child Abuse in the United States." Based in Chicago, Believe The Children is a grassroots non-profit organization founded in 1986 by parents of children victimized in extra-familial, multi-victim, multi-perpetrator settings. They represent parents and professionals throughout the world addressing the sexual and ritual exploitation of children.*

MORE BURNING

Cleveland radio broadcaster Pastor Ernie Sanders said a satanic ritual abuse survivor told him of being tortured in the basement of a church in mid-Ohio several decades ago as part of ongoing cult ceremonies. She said the ceremonies were done at night under the light of torches positioned in the wall. Sanders drove to the site with the survivor. A new pastor had just taken over, and gave them access to the basement. Tearing down some relatively new paneling, Sanders said they found three holes cemented in, with char marks above the holes.

Several years ago, Sanders said he was informed about an abandoned barn in Parkman, Ohio that appeared to be a ritual site. Upon investigation, Sanders said the barn loft displayed an inverted pentagram, black candles, a goat's head, blood sprinkled about... Sanders said he left a message for the sheriff on an answering machine at the department.

The barn burned down at 1:00 a.m. that morning.

NATIONAL RITUAL ABUSE AWARENESS COALITION

In March 1996, the National Ritual Abuse Awareness Coalition formed to join the ritual abuse field in a unified voice. The coalition will be made up of representatives of groups in the areas of ritual crime, survivor collectives, task forces, therapist collectives, cult research...

The coalition will serve as a hub to funnel the latest in survivor support/recovery developments, new therapeutic protocol and innovative ritual crime investigation techniques. It is developing a newsletter, a speakers bureau and a lobbying voice.

INDIANA

A woman in mid-Indiana discovered a barn just beyond her property line saturated with evidence of satanic activity. She said there was a rope hanging from the rafters with blood on it, candles, pentagrams, 666's, a graphic that said: Devil's Den. The woman said the artwork looked professionally done.

The woman has young children, and decided to contact a police officer on a local S.W.A.T. team. He checked out the barn. She said he surmised it probably hadn't been used in a year. He also said police had been uncovering similar sites around the area. But, he said, once one is found, the cult moves to another.

In 1992, Christopher Kamil, 23, pled guilty to four child molestation counts in Kokomo, Indiana. He was accused of using occultic beliefs to lure youngsters to his home. He was sentenced to 18 years in prison.

On March 3, 1994, Liberty Baptist Church in Tipton County, Indiana burned to the ground. Satanic graffiti was spray-painted over one of the brick walls left standing. Eight churches burned in Indiana in 1994. (Again, satanic agenda includes desecrating things affiliated with Christianity.)

C.A.R.E., Inc., a nationwide non-profit Christian advocacy group, was started in Kokomo, Indiana in 1993. It has a network of contacts and resources in some 20 states to help SRA survivors.

C.A.R.E. also provides safe-housing for survivors on ritual nights in two states and provides information for others interested in setting up safe-housing nights. It has sponsored state-wide community open forums in the Midwest on the reality of SRA, and has also developed a multi-dimensional training for churches wanting to provide "C.A.R.E." teams to help ritual abuse survivors with the healing process. (Their recently released book *Care-Giving: The Cornerstone of Healing* details this model.)

Besides the work C.A.R.E. has done in the United States, they have also branched out internationally. At the time of this writing, they had taken on the plight of a woman trying to find a safe haven and recovery from her satanic ritual abuse in England.

MORE FROM AROUND THE WORLD

Actually, in England they are starting to see ritual abuse as a serious problem as well. A comprehensive book titled *Treating Survivors of Satanist Abuse* was released in London in 1994. Some 38 contributors from the areas of psychology, mental health management, media, victims and advocates write extensively about the emerging phenomenon of satanic ritual abuse in that country.

According to author/editor Valerie Sinason, a child psychotherapist and honorary lecturer at University College London, the aim of the book is "...to change the international climate of intellectual opinion by offering a thoughtful reflection on unbearable events."

According to a newspaper article out of Australia:

SYDNEY — Children are being subjected to ritualistic torture by satanists, sometimes in churches and child care centers, according to an official government report.

The New South Wales Sexual Assault Committee said it had heard evidence of children being beaten, cut, locked in cages or cupboards, given electric shocks, submerged in water or deprived of food and sleep.

Sometimes they were subjected to psychological abuse involving mind control techniques...

Data from this survey was published in Australia's *Medical Observer* magazine. And the newspaper article went on to say:

Although the ritualistic abuse it describes has often been reported with skepticism in Australia... the committee is the first to acknowledge it as a genuine and serious problem.

According to a March 8, 1996, EP News Service report: "A [Palermo] Sicilian prosecutor has asked that five men — including a Catholic priest — be tried for allegedly holding orgies and satanic rituals in a monastery. Mario Amato said the men are suspected of violating various laws, including obscenity and desecration of tombs. The Italian news reports say the group practiced black masses inside a church."

Also, I just interviewed a therapist from Johannesburg, South Africa. (She requested anonymity for safety reasons.) The therapist said she has worked with eight ritual abuse survivors since 1989, and the ritual abuse stories, survivor symptoms, and so on, correlate with some of the other ritual abuse cases she's heard reported in other parts of the world. She said she has also been to SRA recovery trainings in the United States, Germany, and the Netherlands.

Chapter 12

"THE CHOSEN"

This chapter is based on a series of interviews with a woman who reports being an extremely "connected" satanic cult member. She recently broke away, and provides more information about the inner workings and networking of the more sophisticated satanic cults.

Dominique D., 40, reports being the oldest child of a satanic high priest in South Carolina. By virtue of the birth order, she was indoctrinated as "the chosen" in this particular trans-generational cult. She reports being involved in countless cult ceremonies, and because of her status, was also privy to a lot of inside information.

In addition, she reports one of her uncles is a satanic high priest for a cult in North Carolina. And what's more, she said the uncle would sometimes take her along on "training" trips all over the United States and Canada — where he would typically address anywhere from 15 to 20 cult high priests/priestesses at a time.

Dominique said the training topics included such things as generating money for the cult through pornography; breeding babies for sacrifice, and for sale; kidnapping and recruitment techniques; torture and programming techniques; prostitution; money laundering... (Dominique is in hiding in another state. The names of members from her cult have been given to several law enforcement representatives.)

SNUFF FILMS

Dominique said the satanic cults she was exposed to were into a lot of areas of pornography. They generated material for child pornography, for the sado-masochistic market, the most extreme level of the latter being "snuff" films. (These are films where a victim is actually being killed on-screen.)

Dominique said she was involved with the making of three snuff films, one in which she was designated to do the killing. She had been eight years old at the time. She recounted parts of that.

She said she was first put through a series of cleansing rituals, with douches and enemas. She was then marked with an upside-down satanic cross lightly cut into the skin in the groin area. Also, prior to the ritual, she said she was given something to drink that was drugged.

At this point, she said a lot of cult member chanting started up, and she was programmed to respond to everything the cult members would tell her. Which, one of the cult members told her, was also "...everything satan wanted her to do" as well. At this point, they also reinforced the satanic belief "pain is pleasurable," said Dominique.

She was dressed in a white dress with imprinted satanic symbols. The white was to symbolize purity, and that you were technically married to satan.

The victim in this ceremony was a three-year-old boy. Dominique said part of the photographer's purpose in a snuff film is to capture the expressions on the victim's face, and young children, as opposed to babies, are generally used because of this.

Dominique said the child to be sacrificed that day was somewhat drugged. That was so the child wouldn't struggle as much. But he wasn't too drugged, in order not to totally blunt the emotional expression at the time of the killing.

The child was laid naked on a satanic altar. Then Dominique was instructed to mark the child with a "holy knife." Light trace marks of upside-down crosses were made in three areas. They were made on each side of the groin area, and on the forehead an inch from the hairline. (While this was going on, cult members were beginning to chant to satan in the background.)

Then Dominique was led to a nearby fire where she and a high priest mutually gripped the knife handle, holding the blade over the flame. They reaffirmed all this was being done for satan, their ruler...

Dominique was then led back, the chanting growing louder. The camera zoomed in on her facial expression, the knife poised above the child. "I am focused now. There is marked determination on my face. And I'm smiling. I believe it is for a better good. I believe it is right." (Bad has become good. Real bad has become good.)

The camera moved to the young child's face. There's terror now. Eyes darting about for help (as Evandro's probably had). None came.

The knife plunged into the young child's chest.

The final scene showed the heart being taken out of the child.

Blood was then drained from the heart into a "holy chalice," and passed around, said Dominique. Likewise, the heart was cut into pieces and eaten. (Satanism is, again, the antithesis of Christianity. And this type of thing is sometimes their version of "communion.")

Dominique then related the child sacrifice that night — had been her brother. He had been "bred" specifically for sacrifice. At this point in the interview, Dominique broke down sobbing.

Copies of the films, said Dominique, would be sold to other satanic covens, and used, for instance, to show to children as part of the code-of-silence programming. That is, if they ever talked, they too, would end up like the child on the screen. The films, said Dominique, were also sold to pornographers in the United States, and internationally.

One of the cult connections, said Dominique, was with an art gallery owner in New York City. Dominique said the gallery owner's distribution sources included Mafia contacts, underground sado-masochistic groups, and so on.

PORNOGRAPHIC INDOCTRINATION

Dominique said sexual indoctrination and use in pornographic material often starts at an extremely early age. Infants, for instance, are photographed with objects in their orifices for pedophile magazines, and the like. Children and teens are forced to perform all types of sexual acts for the camera, said Dominique, including things like having sex with animals (these are both cult member children and those who have been kidnapped).

Dominique said she was flown to the Baja, in Mexico, for some of the pornographic "shoots." These, she said, would often include a heavy emphasis on sado-masochistic themes: restraints were used, beatings with "cat-of-nine tails," films showing actual controlled rapes...

PROSTITUTION

Another lucrative area for the cult is prostitution, said Dominique. And that, too, starts at an extremely early age.

As early as four years old, a child begins to be trained, she said. They are, for instance, given drug injections to induce heightened suggestibility. Then they are taught how to perform sexual acts, such as oral sex. And they are also taught through demonstration all the possible sexual things that can be done to them — including some pretty violent abuse. However, part of the desensitization process is to keep encoding the concept "pain is pleasure," so they can psychologically, and physically, endure.

Once the child was ready, said Dominique, they would be, for instance, taken to the homes of people in the community who had contracted with the cult for sexual services. (Some of the children from the day-care settings consistently reported being taken off-site for the same thing.) Dominique said the children would be taken to individual pedophiles, couples, and so on. Sometimes children would be taken along with these people on vacations. Over time, the child would progressively be exposed to more and more pedophiles.

In addition, said Dominique, the cult would also arrange parties where the children, and teens, would be used sexually. These parties would sometimes include people the cult was trying to influence, whether law enforcement officials, judges, state representatives.

Also, teen and adult prostitutes would have quotas on how much money they needed to generate a week on the "outside." Dominique said in her particular cult, this would range anywhere from $250 to $400 a week.

BREEDERS

Another report that comes up consistently among cult survivors is the existence of "breeders" within the cults. That is, women who are designated to have babies for the cult. Some, said Dominique, are used for sacrifice, while others are clandestinely sold to families wanting children. And some are bred specifically to carry on the trans-generational cult bloodline.

The babies born of breeders in her cult, said Dominique, were never born in a hospital — so there was no birth record. Also, she said, her cult had a doctor who took care of those who were pregnant.

RECRUITMENT

Dominique said she, and others, were used as recruiters. They were taken to other communities to get to know "latchkey kids." These were youths from dysfunctional families who were having difficulty at home, in school. Some were rebellious, or loners, and so on.

Dominique said her job was to target such youth and befriend them. Eventually, they would be told about this "group" they could go to where they could experience unlimited power, unlimited sex.

A young child, Dominique said, might be lured with the promise of getting a pet, or another type of gift. They would be taken immediately. Some teens would also be transported immediately back by the cult, while others, said Dominique, would be given money for a bus ticket and told someone would be there to pick them up at the community where the cult was.

When they arrived, they'd be taken to rural settings where cult members had homes. There they would be prepared for sacrifice, or forced indoctrination procedures would be initiated.

DISPOSAL OF BODIES

Dominique said there were a number of ways the sacrificial victims' bodies were disposed of. She said this was taken very seriously, and was the responsibility of the "upper members" in the cult.

First, she said the heart would be removed, then the blood drained. (Both essential to some ceremonies.) Then the victim's body was often dismembered. Sometimes the body would then be put into a pit of fire, if the ceremony was being conducted outside. (There are also reports small, portable crematoriums are used.)

Minneapolis Sgt. Jon HinchCliff said another disposal method he's heard of is mixing victims' bones with farm animal feed.

Dominique said cult members also filled the bottoms of large metal drums with body parts and concrete, and hid them on rural property owned by members. In other instances, Dominique said her uncle would sometimes take the remains out to sea in his boat.

Yet, another way to destroy a body is with a strong acid solution.

HORROR IN THE NETHERLANDS

According to a series of May 1993 The Press Association Limited stories, Zurich computer businessman Rene Osterwalder and his law student girlfriend Augusta Schoenenberger were charged with torture and sexual abuse of a six-month-old girl and a two-year-old girl, among perhaps others, for child porn films. An extradition request said the torture of infants included "...application of electric shocks, induction of suffocation by lengthy immersions in a bathtub and covering with plastic bags." It also said the children were bound, smeared with feces, and needles were applied to the genital areas. Authorities also accused the couple of driving through the Dutch countryside in search of victims. It was reported they had in their car a large ventilated suitcase, handcuffs and a gag.

According to a January 27, 1993, Associated Newspaper Limited story, police found a torture chamber and two barrels of acid, one containing dissolved flesh, at the couple's holiday chalet near Saint Ursanne, northwest Switzerland. "Osterwalder's flat was in a building known locally as the 'Satanic Church,' which specialized in depraved live sex and orgies..." said the article.

SERIAL CULT KILLINGS

A cult survivor now living in New Mexico, said her father was involved in both satanism and random serial killing of women. "Rose" said her father would abduct and kill women from states in the Northwest and bring them home where he and other cult members would cannibalize the flesh. She said her mother would actually cook the flesh, and sausages would be made from some of the body parts. What's more, Rose said her father actually demonstrated a craving for blood. (Confessed satanic killer Shawn Sellars said he acquired a craving for blood. And he would actually carry around a vial with his blood as a "fix.")

Besides flesh and other body parts, Rose said her father would keep many of the skulls of his victims. (Satanists also believe the power of the intellect is supreme, and since the skull is the container for the brain, it is held in reverence. That's one of the reasons it is used as such a consistent symbol by cult groups. And may have been the reason, for instance, that the cult in Norwalk, Ohio, had broken into the cemetery to steal the skulls.)

After the various human parts were used, Rose said her father would then take the remains and place them in a box with other garbage. He would then take the boxes to the city incinerator. "He used to laugh, 'If they only knew what they were burning...'" said Rose.

DON'T TALK

Rose tried to tell someone. When she was eight years old, stories of the serial killings were all over the papers and the FBI was investigating. Rose sent a letter to a disc jockey of a children's radio station asking him to forward the letter to the FBI. (She didn't know how to contact the FBI directly.)

The disc jockey instead contacted her parents. The man, said Rose, came to the house, and the parents, of course, said everything was fine, and their child was just a bit "disturbed." After this, said Rose, she was tortured extensively and threatened with going to the "children's electric chair" if she ever tried to tell anyone else.

What's more, a situation was set up to give her identification with the perpetrators, encoding the code-of-silence even deeper.

Rose's family lived in a rural area near railroad tracks. Rose said her father hired a "hobo" to dig a hole, etc., for a septic tank system. It took about a month, and during this time, Rose made friends with the man.

However, when the job was done, Rose said her father drove her and the man far back into the woods. Rose had been taught to shoot as a child. And the father, holding a gun to her head, told her to shoot the man. "Shoot him, or I'll kill you!" she said her father threatened. She shot him.

Note: Ritual abuse victims often report being put in "double-bind" situations, like being forced to help with the killing. This increases the overwhelming sense of powerlessness in the victim, introduces a profound element of guilt, and increases the victim's identification with the perpetrators, said ritual abuse awareness advocate Caryn StarDancer.

NETWORKING

Dominique's uncle, the North Carolina high priest, trained satanists in the United States and Canada in different workings of the cult. As mentioned in the beginning of the book, concern is mounting regarding the increase of indications of networking between the different sadistic hate groups.

Northern California ritual crime investigator Randy Cerny said some of these groups may be sharing techniques of abuse, propaganda, and infiltration. And he too believes some may be joining forces.

As an example of this kind of crossover, Cerny said he was once a clandestine observer at a stake-out of a Ku Klux Klan outdoor ceremony in Stanislaus County, California, where known satanists, with reported ties to a "skinhead" group, were in attendance.

In an interview for the *Breaking the Circle* book, a therapist and researcher at the Menninger Foundation Psychiatric Hospital in Topeka, Kansas, also talked about an indication of some crossover links. One of Carolyn Grame's ritual abuse patients talked of being drawn into a satanic cult comprised of a mix of teens and adults. The person reported he eventually left this cult, got involved with the Ku Klux Klan, and later with the Neo-Nazis.

Chapter 13

A COVER-UP IN NEBRASKA?

Omaha, Nebraska's Franklin Community Federal Credit Union is shut down in 1988. Some $40 million is missing. A legislative committee, the "Franklin Committee," is appointed to investigate. The trail soon leads beyond missing money to what appears to be a national, and perhaps even international, organized crime syndicate engaged in satanic ritual murder, pedophilia, pornography, drugs, money laundering...

Former Nebraska Senator John DeCamp served on the Franklin Committee. (A highly decorated Vietnam war veteran, he now practices law in Lincoln, Nebraska.) Through extensive research, DeCamp is convinced this satanic syndicate exists and that the syndicate went to extraordinary lengths to harass, discredit, and perhaps even murder, those trying to bring this to justice. DeCamp characterizes it as perhaps the biggest cover-up since the Warren Commission. And it is also another possible example of how far, and high up, satanists may have woven themselves into the fabric of modern society.

The following are excerpts from DeCamp's book *The Franklin Cover-Up*, combined with a series of supplemental interviews.

EXPLOSION IN THE AIR?

Gary Caradori was one of the chief investigators for the Franklin Committee. That is, until July 11, 1990. That day Caradori was flying back to Nebraska with his eight-year-old son in a private plane. They had been to the All-Star baseball game in Chicago.

At 2.30 a.m., a farmer in Lee County, Illinois, reported he saw a flash of light, heard an explosion, and saw a plane plunge to the ground. Caradori and his son were dead. The report of the explosion in the air made the early edition of one Nebraska TV news station, said DeCamp, but was pulled from subsequent reports. The later reports, said DeCamp, indicated the plane exploded on impact.

DeCamp said Caradori had received numerous threats on his life, believed to be because during the Franklin investigation, Caradori had obtained information some of those tied to the Franklin case had perpetrated any number of child sexual abuse crimes and were practicing satanism.

"From 1988, when the [Franklin] case first broke into public view, until mid-1991, at least 15 people associated with the case as investigators, alleged perpetrators, or potential witnesses, died sudden deaths — many of them violent," said DeCamp.

A major target of the investigation was Larry King, who was the head of the Franklin Community Federal Credit Union. As the story unraveled, allegations would surface he was tied to pornography, sex rings, satanism...

Stories of child pornography started to surface from reports made by young girls from the North Omaha Girls' Club. DeCamp said some of the girls told social worker Julie Waters they had been taken to parties where they, and other children, had been abused sexually and were forced to comply with the making of pornography. The girls also talked about being flown to other parts of the country at times to similar parties — even to Washington, D.C. They also alleged King had often been involved, said DeCamp.

One of the girls was admitted to a hospital, and as she began to trust the staff, she revealed more. Not only was there sexual abuse with middle-aged men, some of the "parties" would get more intense — as elements of devil worship were introduced, said DeCamp.

According to hospital reports chronicled in Decamp's book:

> **...she was locked in a room with a little girl which she described as a Caucasian infant. At about midnight Loretta indicated the men came into the room, took the little girl away from her and told her that she could achieve power by killing something she really loved. Loretta described that**

> **they then cut the little girl's head off, stuck it on the wall, and made her sit in front of it.**

She would go on to describe other satanic sacrifices, and also the nature of threats used to keep the girls quiet:

> **Loretta indicated that the men would try to scare the girls by having them watch animals being mutilated, and also the men would threaten them by saying that instead of killing them, that they would just cut off parts of their bodies.**

According to DeCamp's research, Loretta's story was also starting to match up with several other youths' reports about the same perpetrators.

In this case (as with others that have been described earlier), a pattern of suppression apparently started to kick in. Even though Loretta was revealing more and more, neither the hospital, nor DeCamp, could get the police to come out for follow-up interviews with the girl. And the officer who had performed the initial interview and had initially expressed interest in following up — was transferred to another department, said DeCamp.

According to Franklin investigative committee member Senator Ernie Chambers, "I felt he'd [the officer] been transferred because he was getting too close to something, and his superiors did not want him to continue." (The officer would later testify before the Franklin Committee that he thought Loretta's charges were "credible," and he thought they deserved to be followed up on.)

Since there was no follow-up response from local law enforcement, Carol Stitt went directly to Nebraska Governor Kay Orr, who told her to "do whatever is necessary" to secure an investigation, said DeCamp. Stitt then went to the state attorney general's office with testimony from the girls claiming abuse. Shortly after, said DeCamp, several boys from Nebraska's Boys' Town also came forward reporting sexual abuse, murder and satanism in connection with Larry King and his group. (Both the girls from the Girls' Club and these boys were wards of the state.)

However, the attorney general's office, according to DeCamp, was extremely slow in acting, which led to Stitt saying to the Franklin Committee: "I'd like to say if the state continues to handle the case the way they've handled it, everything this perpetrator has told them is being reinforced. That he has the power, there's nothing they can do, nobody's going to help them."

Jerry Lowe had been hired before Caradori as the first Franklin Committee investigator. On February 15, 1989, Lowe sent a memo to the committee on the results of his first comprehensive evaluation of the cases. DeCamp cites the memo:

> **This matter is indeed a complex and complicated one, commencing with the closing of the Franklin Credit Union... and mushrooming into a situation where additional allegations [other than the financial improprieties] have arisen, including influence peddling, child abuse and neglect, child sexual abuse, pornography, substance abuse, homicide, and inaction and possibly malfeasance on the part of the law enforcement agencies, public agencies and public officials for events dating several years back. More importantly, there seems to be a growing public perception that many of the affected agencies, and/or officials are participating in a cover-up.**
>
> **The allegations regarding the exploitation of children are indeed disturbing. What appears to be documented cases of child abuse and sexual abuse dating back several years with no enforcement action being taken by the appropriate agencies is on its face, mind-boggling.**

Lowe did extensive taped interviews with alleged victims. They talked consistently of sexual abuse, satanic activity, being transported as part of sex rings...

Note: As hard as it is for many to believe children could be exploited covertly like this — it's going on in proverbial broad daylight these days in society as well. Again, according to the June 21, 1993, Time *magazine article on global child prostitution:*

> **The exploitation... exemplifies the single most unsavory element of worldwide growth in the sex trade: an explosion in child prostitution...**
>
> **Estimates of the number of U.S. prostitutes under the age of 18 range from 90,000 to 300,000...**
>
> **Pederasts in particular have lots of help finding a good time in Asia, Africa, or Latin America. Numerous gay-market publications and computer networks provide information. One of the most notorious guides to world sex spas for homosexuals seeking boys is called the Spartacus International Gay Guide; available since the 1970s, it is now published in Germany in several languages.**

PROGRAM OF DECEPTION

The *World Herald* is Nebraska's biggest newspaper. DeCamp alleges its integrity and credibility "went on the chopping block," for the sake of suppressing the truth about the Franklin case. Over and over, claimed DeCamp, the article slants were that the Franklin sex scandal, pedophilia and drug abuse stories were trumped up.

DeCamp referred to what he perceived the *World Herald* was doing as a "program of deception." (Incidentally, *World Herald* publisher Harold Andersen was also on the Franklin Community Federal Credit Union advisory board, said DeCamp.)

VERDICT

Franklin investigators came across another victim-witness, who, as a youth, claimed to have been taken as a child prostitute on numerous trips to places like Washington D.C., Des Moines, Minneapolis, Houston, St. Louis, Pasadena, Grand Island... by some of the same alleged perpetrators. He also reported being forced to be involved with a snuff film, said DeCamp.

On July 23, 1990, 12 days after the sudden death of Gary Caradori, the Douglas County Grand Jury ruled: "We found no credible evidence of child sexual abuse, interstate transportation of minors, drug trafficking, or participation in a pornography ring by [Larry] King or other Franklin [Credit Union] officials..."

Yes, Larry King had diverted credit union funds, the grand jury said. And it also ruled he used some of the money to entice men in their late teens and early 20s to engage in acts of prostitution — committing merely the crime of pandering, said DeCamp.

Everyone else was cleared.

However, victim-witnesses Alisha Owen and Paul Bonacci were indicted for lying to the grand jury about the abuse. At the time of the indictment, Owen was 19 years old, and Bonacci was 18 years old.

The case also included testimony from children claiming they had been abused in a foster home. They claimed extreme sexual and satanic ritual abuse at the hands of the parents in 1985. The father, Jarett Webb, said DeCamp, was a board member of the Franklin Credit Union and his wife, Barbara, is Larry King's cousin. (This had been the first red flag in the overall Franklin case, said DeCamp.)

While the children were taken out of the home by social service workers in 1985, the grand jury offered its opinion, said DeCamp, that it was unfortunate that so much time had elapsed between the first allegations of abuse and the time the children were removed from the home. DeCamp also said the grand jury report contained such gratuitous pronouncements as: "...children do have the right to expect that if they exhibit reasonable behavior, they will not be abused."

DeCamp also said the grand jury referred to the social service caseworkers as "rumor mongers."

Trish Lamphier, head of the Concerned Parents Group, blasted the indictments of the victim-witnesses. "This is a sick jury. Turning the victim into the perpetrator. This is so classic."

Dr. Judianne Densen-Gerber, who had been brought in as an expert consultant by the Franklin Committee, had found the victims credible and had just as incredulous a response to the indictments. "This is unprecedented, probably in the history of the United States," said Densen-Gerber, a lawyer, psychiatrist and prominent specialist on child abuse. "If the children are not telling the truth, particularly if they have been abused, they need help, medical attention. You don't throw them in jail."

DeCamp said the grand jury has said one of the witnesses, Paul Bonacci, had been a "pathetic" witness who had been diagnosed with MPD. He was being viewed by them as being "crazy," said DeCamp. "They didn't know anything about multiplicity, didn't have the remotest idea what they were dealing with." DeCamp said he believed this also demonstrated the "overwhelming influence" the prosecutor was able to exert in trying to discredit Bonacci.

DeCamp filed a civil suit against the grand jury in retaliation.

The basis for the suit, said DeCamp, was he believed in this case the grand jury had acted as the grand jury for Watergate had acted. That is, said DeCamp, they found out who knew what beforehand, then a strategy was crafted to discredit the victims.

OMAHA BUSINESS COMMUNITY

According to Franklin Committee member Senator Ernie Chambers: "What Larry King is doing is the tip of an iceberg, and he's not doing it by himself." DeCamp contends behind King's rise stood some of the most powerful figures in Nebraska politics and finance.

The following is an excerpt from *The Franklin Cover-Up*:

> **In Gary Caradori's files is the transcript of a Feb. 12, 1989 phone conversation with Sheila McGuire, aka Sheila Calder, former manager of the French Cafe... This night spot, partly owned by Larry King, was named by victim-witnesses as a center for sexual abuse.**

> **The following is what Caradori wrote Calder had said: We had parties in my apartment above the French Cafe. Larry King would wine and dine potential investors downstairs at the Cafe. When the French Cafe closed about 1 a.m., King and his man called Parking Lot Bob — who worked for him (and was our coke connection) — would bring people upstairs to my place. If Larry King investors wanted drugs, booze, children or hookers (male or female) we'd get them. While these guests of King's took their pleasures — with the kids or whoever — King would sit and watch — while he drank, did coke and played with his young boys...**
>
> **King took good care of the local and out of town high rollers. If you had the money to invest at Franklin, King would cater to your most deranged perversion. And let me tell you another thing. The boys in the boardrooms around Omaha are s——ing in the Brogans. If this case gets cracked open the list of involved will read like Who's Who. King and his crew have ruined a lot of childrens' lives.**

For over a century, said DeCamp, the Omaha business community has been organized around the Knights of Ak-Sar-Ben, a quasi-Freemasonic social organization, centered on a race track and fairgrounds in Omaha. (Spell Nebraska backwards and you get the name.) Founded in 1895, Ak-Sar-Ben functions as a sort of central committee of corporate elite and self-perceived oligarchy for the city, DeCamp maintains.

DeCamp also said many corporations connected to people in Ak-Sar-Ben have poured millions into the Franklin Credit Union.

DeCamp also notes Larry King got backing from Warren Buffett's socialite wife in his early rise. (In 1993, Warren Buffett was listed in *Forbes Magazine*'s top ten billionaires in the world.) Based in Omaha, DeCamp said Buffett is the second biggest stockholder in the *Washington Post* and is a controlling power in ABC-TV.

WASHINGTON CONNECTION

The Franklin tentacles may have been much more far-reaching than Nebraska. DeCamp said Senator Schmitt, who was on the Franklin Committee, was warned by an anonymous caller not to pursue the case because "...it would lead to the highest levels of the Republican Party."

In a *Political View Point* column, November 24, 1983, Ernest E. Bryant wrote:

> **Chairman [Larry] King has accepted a position in the Reagan/Bush re-election campaign. He was appointed by National Black Republican Council Chairperson LeGree Daniels, who was named Chairperson of the Black Voters for the Campaign, in the Reagan/Bush '84 re-election bid.**

The article goes on to explain that King would be responsible for meeting with party officials and organizing campaign strategies within a 17-state region. In this position, King put on parties for some of these officials.

At the 1984 Dallas Republican Convention, DeCamp said King had put on a gala event at South Fork Ranch — the location where some of the TV show *Dallas* was filmed. DeCamp attended the party. Victim-witness Paul Bonacci also said he remembers being there. (He said he had been flown in to provide sexual favors behind the scenes for some of the guests.)

DeCamp said when he found out Bonnacci had been at the party, he questioned him about a number of things specific to that night. And after the conversation, DeCamp said he was "unequivocally convinced" Bonnacci had, indeed, been at the party.

COVER-UP PHASE III: THE FBI

DeCamp also states, "The justice department, acting through the FBI and the U.S. Attorney's office in Omaha, emerges from the record of the Franklin investigation not so much as a party to the cover-up, but as its coordinator. Rigging grand juries, harassment of witnesses, incitement to perjury and tampering with evidence — federal personnel were seen to apply all of those techniques in the Franklin case."

DeCamp cites more information from investigator Gary Caradori's notes. This an excerpt from a conversation with a confidential informant:

> **G.C.: Are the federal people still putting me down, have you heard: I mean they want me off the case?**
>
> **C.I.: Well, they don't want anybody to get too close to it... This thing is way bigger than Nebraska... You get one of those dominoes to fall I think it could reach the White House and back so fast...**

DeCamp's supposition is this is the main reason the harassment and cover-up attempts have been so, seemingly, intensive.

DeCamp cites more of Caradori's notes, April 20, 1990:

> **At approximately 1415, this writer received a telephone call from Alisha Owen [one of the victim-witnesses]. She talked about the FBI hinting to her that if she changed her story that they would insure her they would "go after" this writer and Mike Casey for "fabricating" an investigation. She informed me she had not fabricated any part of any story and that she was sticking to the story she had told me, and that**

> **she wished me well. For my own protection, I tape recorded the telephone conversation, which lasted approximately 30 minutes.**

SATANIC AND PEDOPHILE ACTIVITY

The Douglas County Grand Jury acknowledged that the allegations in the Franklin case "necessitated our study of satanic and pedophile activity in eastern Nebraska..."

From *The Franklin Cover-Up*:

> **According to testimony from Paul Bonacci, Larry King had been recruited to a satanic cult by Dec. 1980, at the latest. In his written history, Bonacci described how King picked him up after school one day in December, "and took me to the Triangle which is in a wooded area in Sharp County. I witnessed a sacrifice of a human baby boy. Everyone was chanting and it was a yearly ritual around the time of Christ's birth to pervert the blood of Christ. They used daggers and cut the body and filled a cup with his blood and mixed urine in it and forced all of us to drink from the cup and chant 'Satan is Lord. Lucifer our King. Realm of darkness come now and empower us your slaves.' Then they all began to chant some weird sounds and I got scared and was threatened I'd become the next sacrifice if I ever told anybody about it."**

Note: Bonacci reports being taken to the "Triangle" to witness a satanic sacrifice. In Ohio, Detective Kasarda finds a triangle configuration at an alleged backwoods ritual site. According to the book Exposing and Confronting Satan and Associates, *in satanism the triangle sometimes represents fire or male virility. Satanists will also use the geometric configuration of a triangle, or a circle, to call demons into.*

Kathleen Sorenson became the foster parent that had taken in the children that had been taken from the Webb home in Nebraska in 1985. There were consistent claims of sexual and ritual abuse. Sorenson decided to speak out about what she was hearing from the children and went around the state giving talks, and eventually ended up on Geraldo Rivera's nationally televised show on satanism. On another television show shortly after, Sorenson said:

> **As you listen to us talk about these things [ritual abuse], there will be a natural part of you which will deny much of what you hear, and believe me, we did too. I would like to share this with you, partly in childrens' *[sic]* words, so that you can hear the things that they said that nobody can make up, that no child could know. That's what eventually convinced me, along with the deep emotion, the grieving, screeching, damage and hurt that they cry out with as they talk...**
>
> **Many are sent to psychiatric hospitals where they are labeled psychotics, schizophrenics... I praise God that He brought so many of them into my life, and through our home, and that there are other families like ours, it is just a movement of the Holy Spirit is the only way I can explain it.**

DeCamp said Kathleen Sorenson was aware it was dangerous for her to go public at the time. She was killed in a head-on car crash in 1989.

DeCamp said ritual abuse investigator Ted Gunderson investigated the accident and said there was a possibility it was a satanist contract/suicide. (In some satanic lore, according to Gunderson, a person who sacrifices his/her life like this for satan, will be reincarnated with more power.)

DeCamp explained Sorenson was driving a stretch of road between Fremont, Nebraska, and her home in Blair. At least several people, said DeCamp, knew which road she would be on, and at what time. Another car coming from the opposite direction, crossed the yellow line and rammed into Sorenson's car.

SENTENCED

DeCamp notes Larry King was sent to prison, but again, not for child abuse. Under a plea bargain arrangement finalized with federal prosecutors on June 17, 1991, King is serving a 15-year sentence for embezzlement, conspiracy and making false financial record entries. Since the Douglas County Grand Jury deferred to the federal authorities, said DeCamp, and since there was no trial of King on the federal embezzlement or any other charges — the evidence of child prostitution and abuse allegedly perpetrated by King was never presented in any court.

On August 8, 1991, however, the victim-witness Alisha Owen was sentenced to three consecutive three-to-nine-year prison terms for perjury, said DeCamp. Shortly after, the charges of perjury against Paul Bonacci were dropped.

By this time, DeCamp was legal representative for Bonacci and had put together a case including much of the evidence just described. DeCamp said he believes: "They dropped the charges so that the truth would never come out."

Besides some of the information already talked about, Bonacci has also described a network of safe-homes where the pedophile ring stored kidnapped children before selling them. He said children would be kidnapped, then taken to Las Vegas where they were auctioned at a ranch.

DeCamp now also represents Alisha Owens, free of charge. He believes strongly in the credibility of both their stories.

"If I still had the luxury of believing as I once did, that all allegations of drug abuse, child abuse, pedophilia, theft and satanic cult activity were the exaggerated imaginings of some overactive child and adult imaginations, then I would not have to do anything about Franklin. I could still be enjoying an income of $400,000 per year as a lobbyist, without having to work too hard, instead of being financially strangled as clients are intimidated away from hiring me, because of the Franklin connection.

"But I do know that it's true, and because of my upbringing, I have no choice but to plow ahead."

*For more information about the book *The Franklin Cover-Up* by John DeCamp, see bibliography.

MAFIA DOESN'T EXIST?

It's important to put some things in context at this point, in light of the Nebraska case, and the possibility of similar conspiracies and cover-ups.

For instance, I mentioned the Mafia earlier in the book. We know unequivocally now that during the 1910s, '20s, '30s, '40s... in the United States the Mafia was (and is) a vast national, and international, organization directed by known "godfathers" of crime. They ran a multitude of "rackets," ran drugs, extorted money, murdered, bribed and blackmailed all kinds of government officials. However, incredibly, it wouldn't be until the mid-1950s that that information would finally start to be made public through the "Valachi Papers," an expose by a former La Cosa Nostra member. And this would be further supplemented in November of 1957 when a rural policeman in Apalachin, New York, came across a gathering of 63 top mobsters from 15 states. They were assembled at the palatial home of Sicilian killer, Joe Barbara, for what could be described as a "Mafia convention," Anthony Summers writes in his book *Hidden Hoover.*

Summers points out this incident confirmed what a lot of law enforcement officers already knew about the Mafia and its extensiveness. However, it had hardly been investigated! What's more, the high-profile head of the FBI, J. Edgar Hoover, not only didn't authorize investigation of the Mafia — ***he said publicly it didn't even exist.***

According to Summers' book, Hoover, who was the director of the FBI from 1924 until his death in 1972, may have had a long relationship with Mafia chieftain Frank Costello.

From *Hidden Hoover*:

> **In 1990, New York mob boss Carmine Lombordozzi, 80, said Costello and Hoover "had contact on many occasions and over a long period. Hoover was very friendly toward the [Mafia] families... The families made sure he was looked after when he visited [race] tracks in California and on the East Coast. They had an understanding. He would lay off the families, turn a blind eye. It helped that he denied that we even existed."**

And there was more. The Mafia, said Summers, apparently had proof of Hoover's persuasion toward homosexuality, and they apparently used this to neutralize the FBI. In addition, the Mafia apparently even catered to Hoover's preference, according to Summers.

Summers wrote one of Frank Costello's allies, Lewis Solon Resenstiel, wore the mantle of business tycoon and philanthropist. Over the years he gave $100 million to Brandeis University, the University of Notre Dame, and hospitals in New York and Florida. Secretly, wrote Summers, he was in league with the nation's top mobsters and had a corrupt relationship with Hoover. He and Hoover, moreover, reportedly took part in bizarre sex orgies.

RITUAL ABUSE DOESN'T EXIST EITHER?

Now let's jump to the late '80s. Reports of satanic ritual abuse are increasing almost exponentially. Ritual abuse task forces are starting to form to fight back, hospital treatment programs are starting to develop to help survivors, safe-houses are evolving...

Then, in October 1989 (and updated in 1992), the FBI Academy's National Center for the Analysis of Violent Crime in Quantico, Virginia, releases what is to become an often-cited report, especially by those trying to debunk all this, that there is no tangible evidence to substantiate there are any trans-generational ritual abuse groups, rings, conspiracies...

I reiterate one of the excerpts from the report (a version of which was still seriously cited as recently as the April 1994 edition of *Texas Monthly Magazine*):

> **The law enforcement perspective cannot ignore the lack of physical evidence (no bodies or even body hairs, fibers, or fluids left by violent murders).**

As graphically detailed earlier, there are bodies, dismembered body parts, hairs, fluids (mostly red)... And granted, some of this evidence surfaced after the release of the initial report. What's puzzling, however, is, in the face of all the ritual abuse survivor reports surfacing, why the FBI would even release a document that, in effect, would significantly influence law enforcement agencies all over the country to minimize efforts in following up on these reports?

The FBI report goes on to say:

> **...the difficulty in successfully committing a huge scale conspiracy crime (the more people are involved in any crime conspiracy, the harder it is to get away with; and human nature, intra-group conflicts resulting in individual self-serving disclosures, would be bound to occur in any group involved in organized kidnapping, baby breeding, human sacrifice...)**

The Mafia committed a large-scale "conspiracy crime" that went undetected for decades. Not only did this entail a high degree of sophistication on their part, but it also entailed "large-scale" complicity on the part of politicians, business, law enforcement... including, perhaps, even the head of the FBI — the same agency that is now releasing a report that there is no evidence satanic ritual abuse exists in groups, or as a conspiracy.

Chapter 14

BRAINWASHING AND PROGRAMMING

As therapists continue to work with ritual abuse survivors, they are stunned at some of the sophistication of the brainwashing and programming. Electro-shock, sensory deprivation, psycho-surgery, massive doses of drugs, subliminal tapes to reshape the personality.

At first glance this all might sound like intriguing science fiction. However, a closer look shows it is anything but fiction. And what's more, not only is it utilized by cult members — but by governments all over the world.

At the First Annual Conference on Ritual Abuse/Mind Control in Richmond, Virginia, Alan W. Scheflin presented on significant events in the history of mind control. His material was intended to show, not only historical mind-control chronology, but how sophisticated the techniques have become — as well as an eye-opening look at some of the groups that are using them.

Scheflin is a professor of law at Santa Clara University in California. He has also taught at Georgetown University. Besides a law degree, he has a master's degree in counseling psychology. He has also co-authored *The Mind Manipulators* and *Trance On Trial.* (The latter won the 1991 Guttmacher Award from the American Psychiatric Association for the most outstanding publication of the year in forensic psychiatry.)

The following is based on the presentation in Virginia and a series of follow-up interviews.

MIND CONTROL HISTORY

In the late 1960s, then-Georgetown University law professor Alan Scheflin procured several documents being smuggled out of Russia by the Soviet Underground Human Rights Movement. The documents were translated in London, then passed on through Amnesty International.

They described political oppression, including the use of unethical psychiatric techniques for attempting to convert dissidents.

The documents piqued Scheflin's interest. And as he began to explore this area, he discovered parallel techniques being used in the United States. He also saw that this was a significant issue that, in his opinion, hadn't been adequately addressed by authors or the media at the time.

Scheflin's early research eventually prompted the writing of *The Mind Manipulators*, published in 1978. Shortly after, he returned to school to obtain a master's degree in counseling psychology.

Of the decision to get into psychology, Scheflin said:

> **"I had spent a decade reading about how all of the collected wisdom on human nature by psychologists, psychiatrists and other healers was being used to pervert, convert and destroy healthy individuals [through these mind-control projects]. I began to feel I'd learned a good deal of bad. And I needed to balance it with a good deal of good. I wanted to learn how the techniques could be used to help people. And that was a really refreshing period for me, because it balanced out a lot of the absolute horror stories I was reading about."**

BRAIN WARFARE

One of those stories, which Scheflin believes marks the beginning of the modern brainwashing era, was the "Moscow Show Trials" in the 1930s. Joseph Stalin's communist regime had overthrown the Bolsheviks. Stalin wanted to consolidate his power. And as usual after one of these takeovers, the regime put some of its predecessors on public trial. However, the "usual" people weren't put on trial...

Instead of prosecuting members of the old-line regime, Stalin put a number of Bolsheviks on trial who were, in essence, his friends. (These were younger Bolsheviks who had actually helped orchestrate the revolution and takeover of the czar.) In other words, some of the people who aided in the overthrow were now seeing themselves as traitors. What's more, said Scheflin, astoundingly, they readily confessed to a whole litany of war crimes historians would later determine they never committed.

This began to foster world-wide suspicion the Russians had, indeed, developed effective brainwashing/mind-control techniques.

This was underscored dramatically again during the highly publicized trial of Hungary's Catholic Cardinal Mindszenty in 1949. Mindszenty had been a staunch, outspoken anti-communist for years. However, when the communists took over Hungary, Mindszenty was arrested and jailed for six months.

He too went to trial, said Scheflin, and his whole demeanor, actually, it would even seem, his whole personality, had changed. He was now quite docile and categorically confessed to errors in most every aspect of his thinking about communism.

Scheflin said the power of torture and mind manipulation techniques is sometimes simply phenomenal in actually persuading someone to believe in the exact opposite of their ideology... no matter how seemingly skewed the new ideology is.

Note: Such is the case, for instance, with trans-generational satanism. Through a series of torture and mind-control techniques, such as promoting paradoxical thinking, victims are convinced bad is good, pain is pleasure, Hell is a desirable place to go...

"Not only were people being manipulated into believing their old political, or religious beliefs were wrong, but more, they were actually believing they were traitors, sinners — and would beg to be shot," said Scheflin.

Shortly after the Mindszenty trial, the CIA reportedly procured a secret document that detailed some of the drugs and sophisticated hypnotic techniques used on Mindszenty. Consequently, there was concern at the CIA that the Soviets were significantly out-pacing the United States in "brain warfare," said Scheflin.

"Part of the story was the fear the Soviets had made advancements in controlling the way people think and act that could not be replicated, or understood, in the West," said Scheflin. "The other part, I believe, is it unleashed the seductive zeal in people who wanted to learn how to make other people do their bidding."

In 1951, mind-control research became a documented CIA goal, said Scheflin.

And, just as a precursor to this next section, it is possible the CIA was doing some preliminary work on mind control with the help of, what would seem, the most unlikely of allies. Scheflin said it is a fact the United States clandestinely brought over Nazi rocket scientists after World War II to glean information. And there is unconfirmed conjecture, said Scheflin, that some of the Nazi doctors involved with human experiments in the concentration camps were also smuggled over to the United States and hidden, in order to get as much research data from them as possible — including data from mind-control experiments.

M.K. ULTRA PROJECT

In April 1953, the CIA's M.K. Ultra project was approved.

"This set in motion an enormous, heavily funded... thoroughly top secret program to explore all facets of mind and behavior control," said Scheflin.

M.K. Ultra became an umbrella for 149 sub-projects. There were projects to experiment, for instance, with such amnesia-producing agents as electro-shock, ultrasonics, sub-sonics, hypnosis, sensory deprivation...

Note: One of the mind-control techniques ritual abuse survivors frequently report having been exposed to is sensory deprivation. That is, they report being locked in places like small rooms, closets, coffin-like boxes... without light, sound, food or water for extended periods of time.

An environment sometimes used is a sensory deprivation floatation tank. That is, literally a soundproof black box with body-temperature water and salt solution to keep a person buoyant and in a state of, what could be considered, suspended animation.

Scheflin said what researchers were learning was, in some cases, the use of short-term sensory deprivation in breaking down the personality, could sometimes bypass months of torture and forced drug use to achieve the same effect. If sensory input is sufficiently curtailed, said Scheflin, the subject will eventually lose more and more touch with their core personality, and start to project fantasy worlds around themselves — eventually effecting the ultimate in dissociation. In this state, the person is extremely open to having their personality altered.

Another area the CIA funded and in which it monitored mind-control experiments, was the use of drugs to substantially alter brain patterning.

Note: Many ritual abuse survivors consistently recall being administered hallucinogenic, and other drugs, to heighten the cult ceremony experience and to also make it seem surrealistic. The drugs were also used to make the victim more malleable in performing some of the acts. In addition, they were used to at times make victims more susceptible to programming messages.

When mycologists went down to South America to find "magic mushrooms," and so on, said Scheflin, the CIA was there. Also, the professor said when LSD was synthesized initially, the CIA attempted to buy up a major portion of the world supply then.

When asked who the government's experimental M.K. Ultra subjects were, Scheflin responded: "Everybody."

As part of the mind-control series, the CIA funded experiments on mental patients, prisoners, students, the general population — even, it turns out, on other government employees.

Some will recall the highly publicized case of Frank Olson. Olson was employed by the armed services to work on biological warfare. One day Olson and a number of others were invited to a meeting.

At the meeting, LSD was slipped into everyone's drinks in order to monitor subsequent reactions. Olson had a bad reaction, and was flown to a specialist at a New York hospital. However, two days later, Olson "allegedly" jumped out of a 13th floor window to his death, said Scheflin.

Did Olson actually jump? Or was his death part of a cover-up attempt? According to a July 13, 1994, wire service report:

> **Preliminary results of a forensic examination appear to contradict government assertions that germ-warfare researcher Frank Olson, who died in 1953 after unwittingly taking LSD in a CIA experiment, jumped to his death from a New York hotel. Multiple fractures to Olson's skull do not appear consistent with a 13 story fall, according to James E. Starrs, a George Washington University professor of law and forensic science.**

Was Olson taken out as part of CIA "damage control?" This is wholly possible, given some of the other clearly unconscionable things the government has done with other mind-control and radiation experiments, to name a few.

The book *Whistleblowers* contains four pages of apparently declassified CIA documents from the M.K. Ultra project that allude to "disposal of subjects":

> **The problem of disposal of subjects is constantly present in intelligence operations. Even with fully cooperative subjects the matter is [not] simple, but where disposal involves totally unwilling subjects, or subjects who cannot be trusted, the problem is complex, expensive and very difficult. Since disposal does not mean shooting a subject by our standards, we are faced with at least three serious issues:**

1) Placing the subject somewhere (confinement, re-settlement).
2) Insuring his adherence to our views and/or
3) Preventing his giving away our secrets.

> **If by some means we could create a perfect and thoroughly controlled amnesia, the matter would be simplified...**

Scheflin said Sidney Gottlieb brought the LSD to the meeting where Olson was drugged and was in charge of the day-to-day operations of M.K. Ultra.

As time went on, the M.K. Ultra experiments broadened in scope to try to go beyond just altering personality — to actually replacing it altogether.

In 1978, the television show *60 Minutes* did an exposé on one set of such experiments.

In the '50s and '60s, the CIA helped partially fund Canadian psychiatrist Ewen Cameron's work at Allan Memorial Institute in Montreal. Part of his work was to regress people back to infancy, and literally rebuild a new personality. (Supposedly, Cameron was using people that had some sort of "flaw" in their personality, and the *stated* goal appeared to be eliminating that flaw.)

People were "depatterned" through electro-shock, massive doses of chemicals (LSD, mescaline, psilocybin), and so on. After extended periods of this, attempts were then made to program in the new personality.

The initial experiments apparently left some subjects permanently damaged in any number of ways. Some were unable to work ever again. Some experienced significant memory loss. Some also experienced deep distrust of the psychiatric field in general, keeping them from getting sound psychiatric help, to help reverse what had been done.

One man, said Scheflin, had actually gone into the hospital with merely an organic leg problem, yet he was talked into submitting to a battery of psychological conditioning experiments.

Patients went to see Cameron voluntarily, and didn't realize until much later they were being used in experiments, according to a February 1993 *New York Times* article. The article reported on Canada finally agreeing to compensate victims of these psychiatric experiments. (The United States had already settled.)

The Canadian government agreed to pay each patient $80,000.

According to the article:

> **The patients at Allan Memorial Institute at McGill [University] were put into a drugged sleep for weeks, or months. In that state, they were subjected to electroshock therapy until they were "depatterned," knowing neither who or where they were, and forced to listen repeatedly to recorded messages broadcast from speakers on the wall and under their pillows.**

The article goes on to chronicle the story of Linda McDonald, now 55, who spent 86 days in the "sleep room." She was subjected to 109 shock treatments and mega-doses of barbiturates and other drugs. When she left the experiment, it is reported she could not read or write, had to be toilet-trained and could not remember her husband, her five children, or any part of the first 26 years of her life.

As Scheflin mentioned earlier, wiping out someone's personality, and then programming in one that will do the programmer's bidding is very "seductive" to some. We see this happen in cults of all kinds.

And what's even more sophisticated, is the actual systematic programming in of many alter personalities who will respond to programming cues.

A cinematic version of this is the 1950s film *Manchurian Candidate*. This was the story of an American P.O.W. in North Korea, who was programmed with an assassin alter personality. Every time he was shown the Queen of Diamonds playing card, the assassin personality would come up, and the personality followed whatever set of instructions were given.

When the "hit" was over, the assassin personality would recess, and the "host" personality would return — remembering nothing of what happened.

A modern-day version of this happens to the character Bridgette Fonda plays in the movie *Point of No Return*. In this case, the United States government fakes a woman's death, then systematically programs her to become an assassin. The code name "Nina" is used to invoke the assassin personality every time she is to carry out a hit.

One might wonder what code name the following woman was given. And one might also wonder how many like her — are out there now?

The following is from a February 18, 1977, UPI report:

> **Washington, D.C. — The CIA shook the theory nice people can't be made immoral under hypnosis by getting one woman to act out a cold-blooded murder in 1951, according to declassified intelligence documents.**
>
> **The cold war era mind control experiment climaxed when the hypnotized woman, described as a peaceable sort, terrified of guns, fired a pistol point-blank at a sleeping colleague — not knowing the gun had been unloaded...**

A book Scheflin recommended is John Mark's *In Search of the Manchurian Candidate*. This book reports at length on CIA mind-control experiments. This information finally became public after Mark's initial research and lawsuit against the government to get CIA documents released.

In *In Search of the Manchurian Candidate*, Mark reports that because of the secrecy of M.K. Ultra, the CIA could dispense with some of the academic red tape that bogs down researchers. There were "no stupid progress reports," recalls psychiatrist Martin Orne, who received a grant to support his Harvard research on hypnotism, noted Mark.

According to Mark's book, "We could go to Orne any time," says one of them (an M.K. Ultra official), "and say, 'Okay, here is a situation and here is a kind of a guy. What would you expect we might be able to achieve if we could hypnotize him?' Through his massive knowledge he could speculate and advise."

Mark refers to Orne as a "long-time M.K. Ultra consultant." One of the book footnotes: Martin Orne's work for the Agency

(CIA) was described in *Subproject 84*. He contributed a chapter to the book *The Manipulation of Human Behavior*.

One other thing: Martin Orne is now on the professional advisory board for the False Memory Syndrome Foundation.

Scheflin also said George H. Estabrooks, a college professor of psychology who worked with the government, said he was actually able to create a "Manchurian Candidate." Again, this is a person with other personalities that could function as couriers, assassins, and so on...

Scheflin emphasizes it is imperative people speak out about all this on as many levels as possible.

In *The Mind Manipulators*, Scheflin and co-author Edward Opton Jr. wrote extensively, not only about lobotomies, psychosurgery, shock treatments, electrical brain stimulation — but also about the CIA involvement in all that.

Scheflin said Congress has been notoriously ineffective in overseeing the CIA. And he said the prevailing sentiment is Congress often doesn't want to even be told what the CIA is doing. So the CIA often, said Scheflin, in essence operates with virtually no supervision — with somewhat of a carte blanche to excuse it from ethics, or even laws of the state.

In *The Mind Manipulators*, Scheflin, tongue in cheek, opens one of the chapters with a quote from then-CIA director Richard Helms: "You must trust us. We are all honorable men."

Scheflin believes there are still clandestine laboratories where these experiments continue. All that has changed is the techniques are probably much more sophisticated, he said.

He said he also believes on a government level there might be an international mind-control network link between such countries as the United States, Britain, Canada, Australia...

"Things point to some collaboration." For instance, Scheflin said a researcher in Australia recently sent him information on an Australian psychiatrist who was doing basically the same work as Cameron in Canada had been doing.

What's more, researcher Martin Cannon writes in the book *Project M.K. Ultra*: "although the documents given to Congress (and, in part, reprinted here) are sometimes startling, they probably represent a 'limited hangout' designed to satiate congressional investigators with a bowdlerized history of CIA mind-control research. The worst has been kept hidden from us."

What's more, even though the government said it's stopped those experiments, those programs, one must ask: Have they?

Now, as unbelievable as it seems, it appears the CIA funded a series of unethical and unconscionable mind-control projects. Projects that destroyed people's lives. All in search for, among other things, the *perfect* conscienceless operatives.

To underscore this, and as a way of further showing how unconscionable parts of the United States government are, I cite an April 20, 1994, *Albuquerque Tribune* story about recently released documents on government-sponsored radiation experiments:

> **In Boston, it was mentally retarded teenagers who ate radioactively contaminated milk and cereal.**
>
> **In Nashville, Tenn., it was low-income pregnant women who took radioactive iron pills.**
>
> **In Oregon and Washington state, it was prison inmates whose testicles were irradiated.**
>
> **And in Memphis, Tenn., it was newborn babies who were injected with radioactive iodide.**
>
> **From the 1940s to the 1970s, government sponsored scientists conducted human radiation experiments. They often chose people who were disadvantaged, vulnerable, poor, or members of minority groups as their unwitting guinea pigs.**

Chapter 15

MARIONETTE OPERATIVES

The day I got back from the Ritual Abuse/Mind Control seminar in Virginia, I received a letter from a woman in Georgia who was writing about, of all things, some of the ultra-sophisticated levels of programming she had been indoctrinated with — as an unwitting high-level operative.

Note: A subsection of the M.K. Ultra series was reportedly code-named "MKNAOMI." Its focus, supposedly, is psychological and genetic engineering to create these Manchurian-Candidate-type operatives for work pools, sex slave rings, drug running, assassinations... It is also reported by some that the base research data for the project initially came from SS German Nazi scientists, and now psychiatrists, and others from around the world, are collaborating on the project.

Kathleen H. is 38 years old, married, and four years prior to this interview, got into recovery for codependency issues. As she was doing recovery/psychotherapy, she sequentially got in touch with past physical abuse, sexual abuse — and finally a complex alter personality system that would eventually reveal her reported long-term involvement as a sex slave, courier and assassin in conjunction with the highly secretive government mind-control projects, she said.

Kathleen's father had been an electrical engineer for a major communications company in Pennsylvania, who was also involved with trans-generational druidism and satanism, she said. Kathleen reports being indoctrinated at an early age, and over time, was sequentially involved with the Satanic Hierarchy, then Order of the Golden Dawn, and finally the Illuminati. Kathleen describes this as a three-pronged network, with the Illuminati at the top of the occultic pyramid.

MEMORY SAGA

Kathleen initially got into recovery at the Crossroads Codependency Treatment Center in Chattanooga, Tennessee in 1989. Referred to there as the "ice lady," she virtually had no childhood memories.

Eventually, she began having memories of her father sexually abusing her as a child. After the memories started to come, she confronted her father with a letter, then took a step beyond. He had married into a second family, and there was a young daughter. The new wife had also read Kathleen's letter and started to become acutely aware of sexual abuse symptoms in some of the children. She went to the sex crimes division of the county's sheriff's department.

The father was subsequently charged with three counts of child molestation. However, he died before the end of the trial. (While the death was listed as a suicide, Kathleen asserts her father was really killed at the hands of some of his underworld associates.)

Meanwhile, Kathleen started having more repressed memories and feelings surface. At this time, she was in private therapy and had begun going to a 12 Step group for incest survivors. There were now "home torture" memories that included her father performing electro-shock on her with transformer wires from a train set, the use of vice grips, insertion of objects into her orifices... She also remembered a "kiddie porn" setting in a building where she was photographed.

It would be shortly after all this, she would have the first satanic ritual abuse flashback. It was merely a quick flash to her father standing in front of her in a black robe. "Neither I, nor my therapist, had any inkling that I had occult ritual abuse in my history. We had never even discussed this possibility. I didn't want to deal with the flashback, but I had no choice," she said. "Suicide conditioning was kicking in hard and fast."

Shortly after, Kathleen went to Bethesda Psychiatric Health Institute in Denver, Colorado, where she was diagnosed with MPD. Sixteen alter personalities surfaced. More memories came.

Memories of not only being at cult ritual ceremonies, but actually officiating at some as well — and outwardly sharing the same satanic belief system.

"I was deeply in shock about the things my alter personalities were drawing and describing — in detail," said Kathleen. This included having sex with animals, cannibalizing animal parts, drinking blood, having to help kill a young child during one of the ceremonies, being a high priest apprentice... She also began remembering that she, too, had been taught and programmed by her father to program other cult children.

"This last awareness, more than any other, plunged me into deep depression. And there was a strong desire to end my life," Kathleen continued. "I simply couldn't live with the knowledge these children were living mentally and emotionally damaged lives because of what I had done to them."

When Kathleen got out of Bethesda, she continued with long-term individual therapy. During this work, many more alter personalities surfaced, along with information about the deeper layers of programming. And as these alters and programming schemes became apparent, even more simply horrendous memories started to emerge.

She remembered her father was a highly respected, valued programmer, who, she said, was also involved with the CIA joint mind-control projects. She remembered attending mind-control trainings her father put on for such groups as satanic high priests, Neo-Nazi leaders, and other occult group representatives. Kathleen realized her father had actually used her as a prototype, programming layer after layer of identities.

One of the identities was that of an assassin. She had memories of being trained to kill using such weapons as AK 47s, zip wires, knives...

HIT JOBS

Kathleen said when a "hit job" would come up, the scenario would go like this:

People in charge of taking her to the hit location were called "handlers." They would contact her, and through a series of code words, would call forth the alter personality designated to do the traveling. (She would be transported in motor homes, private planes, etc.)

En route, the assassin alter would be called up and given a dossier on the person to be eliminated. The files would often include what Kathleen now construes was fabricated material on the person to provoke the killer instinct in the assassin alter personality. She said a report may read that the target "rapes and molests" children. (Because that had been Kathleen's personal experience growing up, the primal anger she had to draw on to carry out the killing was immense.)

Kathleen said some of the killings were staged as suicides and accidents, including hangings, someone going off a bridge, pill overdoses. Others simply became unsolved homicides.

She, for instance, had a memory of being transported to another city. Then a memory of standing in front of a woman with a white dress on. A pistol is raised. Kathleen fires. And there are memories of the absolutely shocked expression on the woman's face, as a "red flower" of blood began to stain the front of the victim's dress.

Kathleen said she believes she was seldom briefed on the real reason the person was being killed. But she surmised it was sometimes, say, a local satanic high priest who was holding back money from the Illuminati, or a defector who had begun to talk... "Who knows," said Kathleen, "maybe the woman I killed was doing the same thing I'm doing today [with the interview]."

After the killing, Kathleen said she would be transported back home, the alter personality recessed, and she would have no conscious memory of what happened.

"I was taught at governmental [and other] facilities, how to kill people. I was trained, in alter personality states, how to use a number of standard and non-standard weapons," Kathleen continued. "After working through these particular memories [assassinations], I met with several men who were in Special Forces and Military Intelligence. I gave these people detailed descriptions of the techniques I was taught, and of specific types of weapons, bombs and ammunition that I also used, in alter states... Each one told me that very few civilians know about the methods of killing I describe.

They have validated my memories enough for me to be confident in sharing the truth with other people."

Kathleen ended by saying: "I know the Illuminati wants to ultimately rule the world... Talk about control freaks."

POINT OF NO RETURN

Earlier I alluded to the movie *Point of No Return*, written by Robert Getchell, and starring Bridgette Fonda. In the movie, Fonda's character's death is faked, and she is forced to become a trained assassin, or "marionette" if you will, for a highly secretive United States government project.

Through forced confinement, threats, psychological and physical manipulation (she is even shot in the leg by her trainer at one point), she is "broken." She is then given a code name, "Nina," and trained in martial arts, advanced weapons use, etc. She systematically becomes more skilled, and more cold — as this persona, attached to the code name, evolves.

She is eventually released from the supervised underground training location, to resume somewhat of a normal life on the outside. She gets an apartment, gets into a relationship, is again experiencing full ranges of emotions...

However, periodically she would get phone calls where the code name was invoked. With this trigger, she would move into her professional, almost conscienceless, assassin persona and carry out whatever commands she was given.

While the main character's code name was fictitious, the general scenario is far from fictitious — and is not without some pretty tangible, documented precedence.

The woman's code name was "Tania." The world knew her as newspaper heiress Patty Hearst. In 1974, she was kidnapped by the Symbionese Liberation Army (SLA), a small political terrorist group. Through sensory deprivation (being starved and locked in a dark closet for weeks), intimidation, threats, sexual abuse, and any number of other psychological and physical manipulations, Hearst apparently was "broken." Then through mind control, she was coerced to become a member of the group. She passed up chances to escape, participated in armed bank robberies, and other SLA operations.

Note: The previous chapter cites the story of a government mind-control project that turned a woman into a conscienceless assassin. That was in 1951. With the possibility of 45 more years of experimentation and research — how much more sophisticated, and effective, has the process, perhaps, become?

The following section provides some scary indicators.

ADVANCED PROGRAMMING

According to some therapists who have worked with people with this "high-level" programming, the current sophistication is staggering — and often quite consistent from operative to operative.

Licensed clinical pastoral counselor Mary Jo Schneller, Fenton, Missouri, has helped deprogram several of these operatives. She said they are encoded with a series of complex programs.

For instance, an "alpha" program is at the base of all the programs, said Schneller. Through neuron pathway stimulation, the operative can tap into such "super-human" traits as enormous increases in physical strength, a photographic memory, amazing visual acuity. This program stimulates brain output in many areas exponentially.

"Beta" programming is designed to create the "ultimate sex slave," said Schneller. These alter personalities are programmed with no sexual inhibitions and trained to perform practically any fantasy.

"Gamma" programming utilizes a series of sophisticated "blockers" to keep the programs and alter personalities totally compartmentalized.

"Delta" programming is designed to create assassin alter personalities.

"Theta" programming, said Schneller, entails tapping into psychic abilities. Since these abilities (such as extra-sensory perception) are often erratic, Schneller said methods for controlling and enhancing these abilities have been developed. The brain, for instance, is stimulated by such things as lasers and electromagnetics.

"Chi" programming includes "call-back dates" for the person to, say, return to the cult. And "omega" programming consists of self-destruct programs.

Note: Schneller said she has networked with the Mungadze Association, a dissociative disorders clinic in Bedford, Texas, in regard to some of this information and deprogramming techniques.

"ROBOT" ALTER PERSONALITIES

More and more therapists are coming across survivors reporting high-level "marionette" operative stories similar to Kathleen's. Randy Noblitt, Ph.D., is also a member of both the American and British Psychological Societies.

Noblitt said he has worked with a number of survivors reporting the same types of stories as Kathleen. Besides the alter personalities already described, Noblitt, like a number of other therapists, has also discovered "robot" alters in some of these complex internal systems. The "robots," said Noblitt, are viewed by the rest of the system of alters as actually being metallic, impenetrable. They have been programmed to be "enforcers," somewhat similar to Arnold Schwarzenegger's character in the *Terminator* movies.

"The fact that these types of patients [operatives] are coming up so often, leads me to believe this is not confabulation," said Noblitt.

SUPREMACIST DOMINATION

Dr. Collin Ross has also worked with survivors reporting similar stories. Ross is the director of the Dissociative Disorders Unit at Charter Hospital in Dallas. He is also the author of: *Multiple Personality Disorder: Diagnosis, Clinical Features and Treatment* and *The Osiris Complex (Case Studies in MPD).*

Ross doesn't dismiss the stories of high-level programming. According to Ross, some have already been documented as well.

As discussed earlier, Ross said some of the government mind-control experiments have now been declassified, and reports on some of the same dynamics as in these (marionette) survivor stories. "And they [government experiments] have been systematic, and highly unethical," he said. Ross, for instance, cited a 1961 *Scientific*

Digest article about G.H. Estabrooks' work, in concert with the United States government, to deliberately create Manchurian-Candidate-type alter personalities that could be cued by hypnotic codes to become military operatives.

Ross said the reports of this type of abuse are becoming a major emerging theme in the therapeutic field. And he said, like any of the other abuse themes (i.e., sexual abuse, ritual abuse), before it reaches a measure of consistent acceptance, it will go through its inevitable stages. That is, there will be incredulity and attempts to discredit the survivors. Likewise, the therapeutic field will most likely become highly polarized around the issue. However, as more reports surface, and more and more evidence links are established, degrees of acceptance will inevitably increase in the therapeutic world — and in society.

Ross also reiterated the medical experimentation/mind control phenomenon is not initially coming from a place of pure conjecture. As discussed, some of the government experiments have already been documented. What is left to determine is how much of an overlap there is into ritual abuse groups, to what extent it is going on in society in general — and who is pulling the strings?

Ross said there are indications the overall links are extensive, with ties into the Kennedy assassinations, Jonestown, even Waco... In recent years, there have been a number of investigative pieces that indicate the linking of Jim Jones, the leader of the People's Temple in Jonestown, Guyana, to the M.K. Ultra series. That is, that he was possibly a contract programmer for the CIA, carrying out a series of mind-control experiments with his followers.

California journalist May Brussel has put together a lengthy tape series based on her exhaustive research into the Kennedy assassinations, Jonestown, and so on. In one of her tapes, she said she believes both mind-control and genetic experiments may have been carried out at Jonestown as an extension of CIA experimentation.

Brussel said, curiously, there were 33 babies born in Jonestown who weren't accounted for after the mass suicide. She theorizes they may have been part of the experimentation, and transported to another location for more observation and research.

Likewise, Ross said, as ongoing investigations are done in the aftermath of the Branch Davidian cult situation in Waco, Texas, it will be interesting to see if there was any degree of involvement with the CIA. Had the CIA, for instance, infiltrated the cult at any point to study leader David Koresh's mind-control techniques? Were there genetic experiments going on?

An interesting aside here: A May 17, 1993, *Newsweek* article cited a preliminary report by Dr. Bruce Perry, a Baylor College of Medicine psychiatrist who worked with 19 of the children who had been exposed to the Waco cult. According to the article:

> **In his report, Perry mentions that several children said dead babies were kept in the freezer until they could be buried or burned. Perry says that there's no way to determine the accuracy of these reports.**

Why? Because the cult complex, just like any number of other cult sites mentioned earlier — burned to the ground. And before the fire was lit, kerosene was poured throughout the complex, which would make the fire that much more intense, that much more consuming.

A May 3, 1993, *Newsweek* article, also on the Waco aftermath:

> **Somewhere amid the ashes of Ranch Apocalypse there may be clues to what really happened. Then again, some of the evidence, like some of the bodies, may be burned beyond recognition.**

Dr. Ross noted that several books mention that Robert Kennedy's assassin, SirHan SirHan, may have been some type of M.K. Ultra series operative.

Ross also said the focus shouldn't be a myopic one, just attempting to verify each of these cases individually, and miss what's going on in the bigger picture. Ross said at this point there should be some "global-level concern" about the driving force behind it all. Which, according to Ross, would point toward a "full-tilt" white supremacist movement intent on world domination.

Ross also said, *some* of the apparent plan, however, is starting to break down as recovery technology is evolving to help survivors uncover the programming — and start to reverse it.

Note: As Dr. Ross alluded to, there has been conjecture SirHan SirHan may have been a programmed, M.K.-Ultra-series-type assassin.

In the Video Treasures documentary, *The Second Gun*, about the RFK assassination, there is a segment that explores this possibility. The beginning of the segment displays one of SirHan's notebooks. It included repeated references to "black 'magick,'" and was punctuated with such satanic symbols as an upside-down cross.

The documentary's narrator then raises the question: "Like the hero in Richard Condon's novel, *The Manchurian Candidate*, could SirHan be brainwashed and programmed to commit political assassination?"

SirHan repeatedly maintained he couldn't remember anything about the assassination. In an interview with SirHan's mother later, she said her son told her: "I don't remember doing it... I was told I killed Senator Kennedy."

(The tape also offers some extremely strong evidence, SirHan might not have been the only assassin, and there actually may have been a "second gun" involved. Which also tends to connote that, as with his brother John, there may have been a lot more to Robert Kennedy's assassination than we've been led to believe.)

Was a programmed alter personality in SirHan cued to act out on Robert Kennedy that day? And if that's the case, does that account for why SirHan claims he can't consciously remember the shooting?

The answers aren't clear. But given the information that has been surfacing of late about these Manchurian-Candidate-type operatives, what is clear is this possibility should be investigated a lot more than it currently is.

In the book *Operation Mind Control*, author W.H. Bowart writes:

> **The closest the courts have come to considering the case of mind control was in the Patty Hearst case. But F. Lee Bailey, at the last minute, moved from his planned brainwashing defense. One of the witnesses in the defense was Dr. Martin Orne. Dr. Orne testified at the trial that Patty Hearst had indeed been brainwashed by the SLA. Orne [who, again, is now an FMSF advisory board member] should have known whether Patty was brainwashed, since as the head of the office of the Naval Research's Committee on Hypnosis, he helped develop coercive use of hypnotic mind control for the Cryptocracy.**

According to the author, the "Cryptocracy" refers to all the clandestine forces involved in conspiracy and cover-up around these, and other, projects. Projects that may still be alive, well, and even gaining steam these days — all over the world.

Note: At the second International Council on Cultism and Ritual Trauma in Dallas, Texas, in April 1996, there was a small contingent of these government mind-control subjects. They are not only starting to recover. They are starting to unite. Also, in an attempt to speak out, one woman from Canada, for instance, had recently started the newsletter *The Stone Angels Journal.*

Chapter 16

WORLD CONSPIRACY

John Smith, Ph.D. (pseudonym for safety reasons), has worked extensively with ritual abuse cases, including numerous consultations across the country. He is an expert at reversing cult programming. And he said many of the cases he's worked on have included any number of the same types of advanced programming discussed in the last chapter.

What's more, Smith — as with others — is also seeing the emergence of a scary cult global agenda.

While emphasizing this is only theory, based on his work with some cult survivors, and supplemented with information from the nationwide consults, the following is what Smith said he has been able to piece together.

He too said some of these cult survivors have been turned into conditioned operatives to be used as, in essence, dissociative pawns for drug dealing, prostitution, weapon sales, assassinations... He used the metaphor of an army of worker ants who are being controlled by "megalomaniacs" who, ultimately, want total power and world domination.

Many cult survivors, and others in diverse research areas around the world have independently stated that the international leadership of the cult is called: the "Illuminati."

Author Gary Kah, a once high-ranking government liaison, also believes in the world takeover scenario being orchestrated by the Illuminati. In his book *En Route to Global Occupation*, Kah describes the Illuminati as a "secret society" founded as a Freemason-inspired group in 1776. Kah goes on to write:

> **John Robinson, an eighteenth century historian and a prominent Mason, was entrusted with some of the original documents and correspondence of the Illuminati. In his book, *Proofs of a Conspiracy*, written in 1798, he produced major segments of the Illuminati's original writings. Robinson stated: "The express aim of the Order [Illuminati] was to abolish Christianity, and over turn all civil government."**

(Kah then goes on to write about how he believes the plan for a "New World Order" has evolved out of the Illuminati plan.)

It is a plan, it seems, that has been experimented with before. William Schnoebelen, author of *Masonry (Beyond The Light)*, said the Illuminati was the brainchild of Adam Weishaupt, who was intent on creating a reign of genius "Philosopher Kings." (When Weishaupt started the group in 1776 he was a professor at the University of Ingolstadt in Bavaria and originally called it: "The Ancient and Illuminated Seers of Bavaria" (AISB)). As Kah notes, Schnoebelen said Weishaupt, in effect, created a secret order within the Masons. (That is, a secret order within a secret order.)

Weishaupt also, said Schnoebelen, believed in fostering controlled chaos necessary for revolution to bring about the installation of these "Philosopher Kings." (The French Revolution and the Reign of Terror were typical of Weishaupt's plans.) Schnoebelen writes:

> **Had God not intervened, all of Europe might well have gone the way of France and the then coming "Terror." Weishaupt's infiltration of Masonry might have been complete had not an AISB courier been blown off his horse and killed by a lightening stroke in 1785. The courier was carrying papers written in the cipher of Illuminism, and dealt with the plans of AISB to subvert the Masons and governments of Europe.**

After this, the Illuminati was broken up by police and went underground where, Schnoebelen, and many others believe, the infiltration of Masonry and governments continued on a highly covert level, always with the same goal. World takeover.

Schnoebelen said Weishaupt believed societies cycled through five phases, and if the phases were manipulated properly, it could become the platform to springboard the "Philosopher Kings" into control.

1) **Chaos**. The starting point for all societies.

2) **Discord**. There is discord because a ruling class has emerged and the "average people" resent the imposition of authority.

3) **Confusion**. An attempt to restore balance between the two groups fails.

4) **Bureaucracy**. In this phase, everything must be obsessively tracked so it doesn't get out of control as in phase 3. In this, the ruling bureaucracy primarily becomes "god." People can't internally deal with the spiritual void this creates, and escape into fantasy, drugs and madness. During this phase, the destruction of the middle class also occurs creating an economic crisis.

5) **Aftermath**. This, Weishaupt taught, was the implosion of society — a reversion to chaos where the bureaucracy crashes under its own red tape and things whirl out of control.

With the masses groping for order, the climate becomes perfect to usher in the "Philosopher Kings."

Schnoebelen said he believes our society is well into stage four at this point. (It's escaped into huge amounts of addictive and compulsive behavior, into the fantasy of an all-consuming entertainment industry, and so on.) And Schnoebelen said he believes, as Weishaupt tried, the modern-day Illuminati is positioning itself for a takeover as society implodes and reverts to chaos.

(Schnoebelen, who is a former 32nd-degree Mason, said he believes the majority of Masons don't even know about the inner circle of the Illuminati or their plans. However, in joining the Masons, Schnoebelen said he believes these lower-level members spiritually open themselves to the demonic roaming the inner bowels of the organization. And with those doors open, the demonic then turns these members into naive pawns who are preparing the ground, so to speak, on the surface of society, for these "Kings" and their anti-christ philosophies. That is: glorifying materialism, establishing counterfeit spiritual systems, creating dysfunctional family systems that tear at the very fabric of society...)

COMING CHAOS

Schnoebelen also said the destabilization in stage four of our current society is being ratcheted up markedly at this point, heading toward implosion. And behind the scenes, legions of children are being groomed to become compliant, multiple personality tools for the Illuminati elite as they shape the New World Order. It will be a "perfect" race of people. That is, said Schnoebelen, a perfectly (demonically) possessed race of people.

"It's as if Satan is being a diamond cutter," said Schnoebelen.

Schnoebelen also said he believes the societal implosion will ultimately come about through things like financial and/or environmental crisis.

Brice Taylor (pseudonym), author of *Starshine*, reports she's had firsthand experience with these contemporary "Philosopher Kings." What's more, not only are they riding societal tide, according to Taylor, they are orchestrating most every aspect of it in the most sophisticated and clandestine ways.

Taylor, like Kathleen H., reports being a top-level mind-control operative. She also said she was exposed to some of the highest levels of the takeover plot. However, she said she broke away and through extensive recovery work and intense deprogramming, has been able to piece together some of the key components of the plot.

As a youth, Taylor was traumatized in satanic rituals which turned her into a "complex multiple." During this time, she was also used in child pornography.

Just prior to her teens, her father hooked her up with a grandfather who was the mayor of a Midwestern town. Over time, she was prostituted into higher and higher political circles, including liaisons with United States presidents. (Her alter personalities were highly trained and included photographic memory.)

She said she was subsequently enlisted by an "elite circle." She said this small group of men were the ones at the heart of the takeover move. She said these people would orchestrate wars, secretly control world banking, manipulate the media, and were systematically enlisting one country leader after another. And for those that wouldn't go along with the plan for a New World Order, the inner circle would go to great measures, said Taylor, to manipulate or destroy them.

Through varying channels, for instance, Taylor said she would be prostituted to some of these leaders. She said she was programmed to learn about the leader's secret sexual fantasies, drug habits, and so on. Then scenarios would be set up to bring the leader down, or for blackmail purposes.

Taylor said the inner circle was very calculating, very thorough.

Also behind the scenes, Taylor said there is ongoing work to build an "Aryan race" of mind-control slaves that even includes genetic engineering to create what they believe are physically and intellectually superior people — just like the Nazis were trying 50 years ago.

Taylor explained a key component in the takeover will be the orchestration of a financial collapse of the United States, which is slated for the very near future. She said it will make the depression of the early part of this century seem minor. The plan, Taylor said, is for a "World Government" to then come to the rescue. (Taylor, and many others tracking the evolving New World Order at this point, recommend getting out of debt and having property that will facilitate self-sufficiency and the possibility of community.)

In concert, global environmental disasters are to increase dramatically, wiping out masses of people. Some of the disasters, such as earthquakes, fires, floods, said Taylor, will also be orchestrated by this inner circle who, apparently, has the technology to effect natural disasters on a wide scale — to help wipe out people they believe are inferior and will be a drain on the new world.

(There are reports, for instance, of current government experimentation with electro-magnetic beams to knock out communication systems and change weather patterns over enemy countries. Preliminary reports on prototype testing indicate these beams could alter weather with the injection of huge amounts of heat beams into the ionosphere, creating, in effect, the equivalent of mini-super-charged El Ninos. In essence, droughts could be orchestrated in some areas, torrential rains in others, and so on.)

Taylor said many of the "worker bees" so to speak, that is, the people doing the research at government installations, in research laboratories at universities, and so on, aren't aware of the "big picture," as far as how some of their work is really intended to be used — including, in some cases, on them. (Just as many of the "average" Masons don't understand the bigger picture.)

The takeover crescendo may include another element that may add even more to the "chaos." Smith said he knows of several dozen cult survivors who report being programmed to assassinate politicians, newspaper publishers, priests... around the same time.

"I'll get a phone call. There will be a tone and codes will be given, indicating my (assassination) assignment. I'm then to flee to a meeting place in Canada." Smith used this as a typical example of some of the reports he's getting from operatives.

In the resulting chaos, it is highly feasible the masses will be groping for leadership, any type of leadership.

MORE VALIDATION

Dr. Judianne Densen-Gerber also said she believes there is credence to what Smith describes. Densen-Gerber, mentioned earlier, is a psychiatrist, lawyer and founder of P.A.C.T. (Protect America's Children Today).

Based on discussions with colleagues and cult survivors, Densen-Gerber said she's heard a significant number of stories of ritual abuse survivors that have also been programmed to act out in Manchurian-Candidate-type assassin style — to create this total planetary chaos "...prior to the installation of the anti-christ," she said.

A Texas cult deprogrammer said he is starting to find at the deeper levels of cult assassin programming that there are, in effect, internal computers programmed into the psyche with series of names, dates, and so on, relating to the assassination targets.

In regard to this sophisticated deeper-level programming, he said: "It helps to think of the complex programming layers like a very sophisticated *Super Mario Nintendo* game. There are many levels, secrets at each level, and, hazards to getting to them."

Note: Sometimes for cult survivors, depending on the sophistication of the cult, these deeper levels of programming can be highly complex. For instance, a programmer instructs a victim alter he was turning into an assassin, that he was implanting a computer system in the victim's psyche, and then would "load" a series of names, dates, and locations relating to each assassination target. And just like we need to know, say, our user password, the software program name, like WordPerfect, and the name of the document, to get to the data in a computer; so it is with some of these cult-programmed assassins. And, only the programmer, select cult people, and the assassin personality know the codes.

What's more, the Texas deprogrammer who travels the country consulting on ritual abuse cases, said a number of survivors have gotten to extremely deep levels where, not only are these internal computers being revealed, but information is surfacing that there are "external" computers as well.

The deprogrammer said a number of survivors around the country that are getting to the deepest levels of some ultra-sophisticated programming are also reporting there are main computers in Washington, D.C., and Colorado, that have lists of all the cult operatives that have been programmed, what their access codes are, the types of jobs they've been programmed to do... The information might also be available to cult zone leaders, etc., over a cult computer "internet" system of sorts.

He also said, according to survivor report data he's gathered, cult people have already been installed in key leadership positions around the globe. And others are being groomed to take over even more positions. In addition, he too has heard that other key leaders will be assassinated in the future.

Dr. Densen-Gerber, Gary Kah, and many others, believe we've graphically moved into the "end times" talked about in the Bible's Book of Revelation and that this scenario is matching up with some of what is predicted there.

TAKEOVER STRATEGIES

Doug Riggs was also at the seminar in Richmond. Riggs is the pastor of Morning Star Testimony Church in Tulsa, Oklahoma. Since 1990, he reports having counseled with an astonishing 14 people in his congregation who have been conditioned with this ultra-high-level programming. It's his belief, these people were programmed and sent to this geographic area, as other clusters of operatives may have been sent to other areas. The participation in the church, on one level, was merely part of the front.

From the information he's gleaned so far, Riggs too said he believes the world takeover scenario is not only in progress, but in its last phases. "The mystery isn't really the takeover," said Riggs. "That's written about [in Revelation]. The real mystery has been how is it being done."

Riggs also believes the Illuminati has ruling "masters" who are orchestrating the plan. And Riggs said he believes these ruling masters are actually a rung below a globally renowned family, who controls a large portion of international banking.

Riggs said this control has, apparently, been one of the key elements in the evolving takeover. Many governments are in debt to international bankers. And through this debt, banking institutions, theoretically, would control and dictate certain aspects of politics — thus covertly setting the stage for what is to come. For example, some of the Illuminati may have already been placed in key government positions, and others are waiting in the wings, said Riggs.

Riggs said he was able to access the information about this renowned family, the Illuminati, and so on, through alter personalities that have been programmed into some of the people he's been working with. He, too, said he has learned, according to survivor reports, there is a network of programmed assassins and other "agents" throughout the world that are part of the takeover plot.

He said he has learned, from survivors, some highly skilled neurologists and other programmers have reportedly been used to build these complex alter personality systems into these operatives.

Riggs also believes that some of this is being carried out by "demonic intelligence," which is highly evolved and could account for the high degree of sophistication — and one of the reasons it has all been kept as covert as it has for so long. However, Riggs believes God is now allowing it to be exposed.

He gave a brief example of how he believes these demonic dynamics play an extremely significant part.

That is, as mentioned before, as the person is being tortured, say through electro-shock, they dissociate. And in this state, alter personalities are programmed in by the perpetrators. What's more, the perpetrators will sometimes also perform rituals to channel demons into the victim. These demons will attach to the cult-created alter personalities. The demonic influence, Riggs said he believes, works to sabotage the recovery process and keep the deep levels of programming secret. Demons are also reportedly capable of highly advanced telepathy, astral projection (being able to travel through space at a highly accelerated pace), and so on. The demonic influence, said Riggs, is like adding another exponent to the sophistication of the programming.

Riggs said he believes satan is setting up the core of his takeover, the core of his earthly kingdom, through this process. That is, through a "legion" of people, who at the core of their being, are demonically possessed and will automatically respond to any "dark-side" based command (cue).

INTERVENTION

Given all this sophistication, Riggs nevertheless said he has been extremely effective (survivor by survivor) in exposing the levels of programming — and reversing it. (He is quick to point out, he has been effective under God's guidance.) He said as more and more helping professionals become familiar with the protocol of effecting all this — it will have a major impact on the takeover plot. That is, according to Riggs' spiritual beliefs, if you can get the demons out and have the "dark-side" alters convert, "...you cut off communication from the cult (both on spiritual and/or para-normal planes)." That is, the cult will, for instance, sometimes use mental telepathy to relay a message, cue a program, etc. (Things like para-normal abilities, such as telepathy, have also been demonstrated in studies at Duke University.)

Note: In addition, often much solid psychological deprogramming and other recovery work must be done to shut down the old system, and help the survivor heal completely.

Riggs reiterated, it is important to understand how the "dark-side" kingdom is being set up, person by person. It is also imperative their authority structure is understood; how they network, and so on.

And as this continues to be revealed and reversed, person by person, a significant dent will be made, weakening and limiting the impact and overall scope of the plan. "Undoing the programming is a big threat to them [the Illuminati]," said Riggs.

Riggs said he has watched the intensification of evil grow stronger and stronger as we've approached the end of this century. And he said he couldn't think of anything more heinous, or evil, than all but taking away the very core of an individual, reprogramming it, and infesting it with demons.

But despite all that, Riggs said he has watched amazed as God has worked to start to turn the situation around, again, person by person.

VORTEX OF EVIL

At Richmond, I also met a psychotherapist from Dallas, Texas, who heard there would be a "dark-side" intended convergence on Atlanta in 1996. Linda Marten, Ph.D., has a private practice, and has facilitated a number of MP/ritual abuse groups at three Dallas area hospitals.

She had recently been called in to consult on a ritual abuse case. The survivor reported she had also been a cult trainer and programmer. At one point, the woman told Marten some of the top echelon of the cult would be coming from all over the world to meet at the Olympics in Atlanta in 1996. These would be the elite, "...most given over to [demonic] spirits," she said.

The former cult member went on to tell Marten these people would begin to pray intensely the first day of the Olympics to create a "vortex" to allow the evil spirits to flood into the earth. The intention, said the woman, is to get as many dark-side spiritual forces as possible to help in the final phase of the takeover plan.

Marten said she was initially skeptical about the information. However, several weeks after hearing about it, she received a copy of the Christian-oriented *Morning Star Prophetic Bulletin* out of Charlotte, North Carolina. She said one of the stories included a prophecy there was a strong battle raging in the spiritual dimensions. A battle that was being accelerated. What's more, the prophecy included there would be a convergence of evil in Atlanta in 1996, and it was important for Christians to also go to Atlanta to pray at that time as well.

"The synchronicity was spooky," said Marten, referring to having just heard a similar thing from the cult survivor. Marten said she now believes something is going to happen in Atlanta, and God is starting to alert people "...even if not everyone even knows exactly what they are getting ready for yet."

Note: This "vortex" (portal) phenomenon isn't without satanic precedent. In the book Objective Evil: Satanic Cults in U.S. Intelligence, *it is reported Westphalia, Germany was the site of prayer and black magic rituals by the Nazi SS. They, too, were trying to channel as many demons as possible through a portal there to help them with their takeover plans. Commandant Henrich Himmler believed Westphalia to be the geographic center of the world and the point where the greatest evil was concentrated.*

END TIMES

The "end times" topic is getting a substantial amount of notice of late. Bible scholars, researchers, authors... are pointing to current global occurrences as indications we have, indeed, moved well into the end times. And a graphic example researchers point to is a Bible passage from the Book of Revelation. (Again, the Book of Revelation contains prophecy about the end times.) Revelation 8:10, 11:

> **A huge star burning like a torch crashed down from the sky... the star's name was Wormwood.**

The Ukrainian translation for Wormwood is: Chernobyl.

Besides the Book of Revelation, there are numerous other references throughout the Bible to the end times. On the Mount of Olives, Jesus' disciples asked Him about the signs that would precede His Second Coming and the "end of the age." Matthew 24:4-7, 12:

> **Jesus answered: "Watch out that no one deceives you. For many will come in my name claiming 'I am the Christ,' and will deceive many. You will hear of wars, and rumors of war, but see to it you are not alarmed. Such things must happen, but the end is still to come. Nation will rise against nation, kingdom against kingdom. There will be famines and earthquakes in various places... Because of the increase of wickedness, the love of most will grow cold."**

Besides earthquakes and famines, in other places the Bible predicts the end times will also see dramatic fires, floods and plagues.

There has been dramatic flooding in Europe and the United States the last several years, massive earthquakes in Mexico, Italy, Russia, Japan; fires raging in America's West, in Australia; widespread famine in Africa, India; and diseases like cancer and AIDS are sweeping through the world population. And, for instance, in 1993 there were 73 "hot spots" around the globe. Places where there was war, or the imminent threat of war.

In another section in the Bible's Book of Matthew (24:32, 33), Jesus said:

> **Now learn this lesson from the fig tree: as soon as its twigs get tender and its leaves come out, you know that summer is near. Even so, when**

you see all these things, you know that it [Jesus' Second Coming] is near, right at the door.

Many believe the Second Coming is "right at the door." (Jesus' Second Coming marks the beginning of a "thousand years" of peace, according to Revelation.) Bookstores are filling with end-time literature. Front pages of newspapers around the world often read like pages from the Book of Revelation.

Numerous circles are urgently postulating about the particulars of how the end-time scenario plays itself out. Some, for instance, see the approaching "New World Order" as the camouflaged, end-time, one-world anti-christ system referred to in the Bible. Many also believe the "mark of the Beast," which the Bible prophesies is needed to participate in this system, may be a "smart card," or biochip implanted in the hand or forehead.

And the climax of this era might include some version of an attempt at a "physical" takeover. A lot of indicators emerging in the ritual abuse field seem to point toward a calculated and sophisticated orchestration of this.

However, it seems many are transfixed on looking to the future in all this... when dramatic lifestyle decisions might well be called for now.

ANTI-CHRIST SYSTEM ALREADY HERE

In my own research, one of the main things I've come to is, while many have their eyes trained on the underground workings of the physical takeover, the above-ground evolution of the "New World Order," and so on, what many *aren't* seeing is satan's one-world system(s) has already evolved and is "marking" people now.

I once heard a minister in southern California give the talk: "The Last International Sign Before Armageddon." He alluded to the Book of Revelation 16:13: "Then I saw three evil spirits that looked like frogs; they came out of the mouth of the dragon, out of the mouth of the beast, and out of the mouth of the false prophet." The minister said he saw these frogs/evil spirits as symbolic of the anti-christ systems that have been put into place. And the frogs coming out in the open, as relayed in the passage, is when people will finally see the systems for what they really are.

In the book *To the Priests (Our Lady's Beloved Sons)*, Fr. Don Stefano Gobbi reports the Virgin Mary, through interior locution to him, has confirmed we are into the "end times." What's more, she explained the Red Dragon (of Revelation) is Marxist Communism. The Black Beast (with seven heads, according to Revelation) is Freemasonry, Mary said. (And there are seven Masonic Lodges around the world, she continued, conspiring to subtly and diabolically weave their satanic philosophy into all of society.)

Satan, through Freemasonry, is using such mediums as dysfunctional family systems, media/entertainment systems, school systems, systems based on glorifying materialism, counterfeit spiritual systems. It is also reported Mary said: **"...behind the perverse action of Freemasonry, there are being spread everywhere black masses and the satanic cult."**

Fr. Gobbi also reports Mary, again, said people are already being signed with what Revelation refers to as the "mark of the Beast." According to Revelation, that mark is imprinted on the forehead and hand. According to Mary, the forehead indicates the intellect; and the hand expresses human activity. Those marked on the forehead, she said, are led to accept the doctrine of denial of God, rejection of His Law, atheism. Those with the mark on their hand act autonomous of God, ordering their activities in a quest for purely material or terrestrial good.

Besides the seven-headed Beast, there is another Beast of Revelation which has on its head "...two horns like those of a lamb." The high priest of the Old Testament wore a headpiece with two horns. The bishops of the Catholic Church wear the mitre — with two horns — to indicate the fullness of their priesthood, said Mary.

It is reported Mary said the Beast with the two horns like a lamb indicates Freemasonry infiltrated into the interior of the church — ecclesiastical Masonry. "If the task of Masonry is to lead souls to perdition bringing them to the worship of false divinities, the task of ecclesiastical Masonry on the other hand is that of destroying Christ and His Church, building a new idol, namely a false Christ and a false Church.

"The Church instituted by Christ is one, and one alone: it is the one, holy, catholic and apostolic Church, founded on Peter..." "Ecclesiastical Masonry," it is reported Mary said, "seeks to destroy this reality through false ecumenism, which leads to the acceptance of all Christian churches, asserting that each one of them has some part of the truth. It develops that plan of founding a universal ecumenical church, formed by the fusion of all the Christian confessions, among which, the Catholic Church." (That is, the Masons have clandestinely woven their way into the Catholic Church as well, dividing it internally between those holding onto the true faith, and those that have been misled by false doctrine.)

Now, all these systems, whether dysfunctional family systems, media/entertainment systems, materialistic systems, counterfeit spiritual systems... appear pretty easy to see at this point. That is, easy to see unless one has been gradually desensitized. Noted author Malcolm Muggeridge uses an excellent metaphor for this desensitization which, wouldn't you know, has to do with frogs.

"You put frogs in some water and you heat the water very slowly, so slowly that the frogs never once think of jumping out. They just quietly die once the water boils. That is what our Western society is like, very gently being boiled. Therefore, the impulse to jump out and save ourselves is inoperative."

It would seem, given all this, we need to be praying in major ways for God to give us the grace to see the systems clearly, and then the grace to get out of them — one day at a time.

And the starting to "jump out," for instance, would be things like if you're caught up in dysfunctional family system behavior, get into some counseling, some 12 Step groups, other forms of recovery. It would mean starting to turn the TV off, for instance, and spending much more time in prayer, reading the Bible... It would mean starting to get off the materialism merry-go-round, and learning to live much more simply and charitably. It would mean getting this "end-time" message to others. And soon. According to Mary, time is extremely, *extremely*, short.

CONCLUSION

This book demonstrates satanic ritual abuse does exist. We have bodies now, confessions, cult members on death row... What's more, there are now links to indicate the cults are quite structured, networked, and apparently indoctrinating a good number of people. There also seem to be overlaps between highly clandestine government mind-control technology and cult programming. And, has anyone noticed a suggestion of a cover-up?

When I look back at this book, the Akron, Ohio scenario stands out: A cult survivor frantically trying to get someone to believe her, maps out the way to a secluded ritual site. A tenacious investigator treks far back into the woods. He finds a triangular site, a fire pit, a tree with satanic markings...

His comment after matching what he saw at the site with the survivor's explanation of rituals there: "Something happened."

And, just as the woman in Akron was so frantically trying to get the message across, so too are scores of courageous ritual abuse survivors around the planet. What's more, they are not only saying: "Something happened." They are also saying: "Something is *still* happening."

They are trying desperately to sound the alarm so that other innocent victims don't have to feel the cold steel of a knife slashing across their neck. And beyond, some are trying to warn about much more than just the macabre late-night ceremonies. They are risking their lives talking about who some of these "respectable-looking" cult members are, where they are placed in society, and what their overall agenda appears to be.

DENIAL

As with much of the initial stories about the Holocaust; the simply horrific stories coming out about the killing fields of Cambodia's Pou Pot regime... this is all quite hard to hear, and jolts our, what Matthew (Chapter 4) terms: "epistemological boundaries." That is, many people have boundaries around how much realization of evil, or level of horror, they are able to let into their conscious mind. And, says Matthew, satanic ritual abuse and all of its implications, punctures too big a hole in how most of the general populace views society. So, most of society goes into the first phase of sort of a collective global grief process — denial.

The denial then sparks an inevitable backlash. A "kill-the-messenger" mentality. Dedicated, highly skilled therapists and social service workers are labelled as quacks, rumor mongers, and so on. Survivor stories, even in the midst of surfacing hard evidence, are labelled "patently false," delusional.

And isn't it more than a little bit curious the FBI, the organization that said the Mafia didn't exist, would be so quick to come out with something as influential as a sweeping "Law Enforcement Perspective" debunking this, and serving to discourage local law enforcement from following up on ritual aspects of a crime?

Speaking of government agencies, how much of a stretch is it to believe that factions of an agency like the CIA, which has injected babies with radiation and literally, and unconscionably, wiped out people's minds, might be tied to these underworld groups? Particularly since some of the type of sophisticated mind-control technology they use is reportedly showing up in these groups — groups that might include the likes of the Satanic Hierarchy, the Order of the Golden Dawn, the Illuminati.

Note: Just today as I'm writing this, there is a wire service report indicating part of the Cold War era radiation experiments may have included "total-body radiation" tests on war veterans.

Akron detective Kasarda found a triangle made of intertwined vines. I've got to believe, on one level that will prove quite symbolic. That is, these sadistic hate groups, dark government factions, and so on, may well be intimately intertwined. And their agenda may well be world control. *And,* just as the Ohio site was so well hidden, so, it seems, has the overall cult plan been — whether hidden in cult members' attics late at night, in government sub-basements, or even a couple layers into the subconscious of cult operatives.

Granted, this is all quite scary to let sink in. And even scarier, when thinking about doing something about it. But do something about it, we must. And we've had some excellent models.

One good thing about the backlash, said Monarch Resources' Maureen Brugh, "...it makes you fight even harder to get the truth out."

FIGHTING BACK

While I talk disparagingly about some media, that's not *all* the media, by any means. Among some reporters, as there always has been, there is a gutsy, tenacious drive to get to the real truth. (The *Washington Post*'s reporters Woodward and Bernstein's undaunting efforts to expose *Watergate*, for instance.) Some of this subject's modern "Woodwards and Bernsteins" have included investigative journalists Maury Terry, Michael Newton and Roy Blake... who have all taken substantial risks in trying to dig up the truth. The painstaking work of former Senator DeCamp in trying to expose the Nebraska affair and law professor Alan Scheflin's work in trying to expose CIA wrongdoings should also be commended.

Meanwhile, Detective Kasarda, John Hunt, Dale Griffis, Jerry Simandl... still exhaustively follow up on every possible ritual clue, often on their own time, trying to expose this. Despite death threats, California ritual crime investigator Randy Cerny relentlessly pursues a highly dangerous satanic cult. In Canada, an expert team of police and social workers expose a sexual/ritual abuse ring that is staggering in its size. (And how many more similar rings would be exposed if professionals had the time and a green light?) A family in Texas, at great risk to themselves, opens their home to a woman and her daughter breaking away from a cult in Oklahoma. (This becomes the genesis of an organization to sponsor cult safe-houses.) Therapists across the country are threatened, poisoned, faced with waves of public skepticism... yet press on in trying to help ritual abuse survivors, some of the most hurting people on the planet, heal.

And despite the code-of-silence programming, the intense fear, the public backlash... some of these survivors still struggle with everything they have inside them to go back into a past Stephen King would have a hard time with, to uncover secrets that are not only key to their healing — but secrets that may be key to all of our futures.

THEY NEED HELP

Those on the front lines of all this need help. A lot of help. They need prayer, they need moral support. They need volunteer help. They need financial support. And they need it *now*. There are all kinds of organizations listed in the appendix. Please pick one, and help them.

What's more, we need to keep collectively coming together to form communities to fight back. Ministers, educators, therapists, police, civic organizations, the general public... need to come together to take a stand, the way they've done, for instance, with task forces in L.A., Minnesota, Michigan. (The evolution of the National Ritual Abuse Awareness Coalition is also an optimistic sign.) It is only in a united effort that there will be significant success.

And again, it is important to note, a measure of success is already coming person by person. Each time another cult survivor breaks away, gets into recovery, and starts to break the programming, a few more bricks in the cult's wall fall down, and a little more of the overall plan is exposed and dismantled.

"KIDS IN PERIL"

All this might be doubly hard given some of the prevailing social climate around us. I recently gave a presentation at a national "Trauma Resolution" conference in Arizona. The day of the talk, the *Arizona Daily Star* carried the following headline: "Kids In Peril: Latest Movie Shock Tactic." The following is an excerpt from the article:

> **It takes a lot to give sophisticated audiences that thrill of fear and loathing, that sensation of hitting**

> **the wall of one's own tolerance. Carnage, the degradation of women, machine gun blasts of foul language have had their day. Now Hollywood has latched onto something that still has the power to jolt even the most jaded movie-goer — putting children in peril.**
>
> **...The idea behind a shock, after all, is to take something beloved and then fold, spindle and mutilate it.**

And, with the proven success of *Jurassic Park*; *The Hand That Rocks the Cradle*... we are, most likely, about to see *waves* of such cinema.

TIDAL WAVE

There are a number of indications the climax to the physical world takeover is building at a tremendous rate.

And, as serendipity I believe would have it, as I was first leafing through the May 1994 *Discover Magazine*, looking for the article on memory, I came across another article. The first page showed an aerial view of some of the world continent coastlines and the massive Pacific Ocean looming in the middle. Overlaid was the headline: "Waves of Destruction." The first two sentences: "Tsunamis have always been mysterious monsters [Remember that word?] — mountain-size waves that race *invisibly* across the ocean at 500 mph, drain harbors in a single gulp, and destroy coastal communities without warning. But now some researchers are trying to take the mystery away..."

A tsunami (tidal wave) is usually caused by an earthquake out in the ocean. A vast swell of water which may cover up to 10,000 square miles, collapses. Then, according to the article, there are alternating swells and collapses which ultimately create the tidal wave.

> **On the open sea a tsunami might be only 10 feet high, while its wavelength — the distance from**

> **one tsunami crest to another — can be up to 600 miles... Normal surface waves hide tsunami. But that placid surface belies the power surging through the water.**

The massive tower of water will eventually burst onto land at "freeway speeds" destroying everything in sight.

I personally believe somewhere hidden in the depths of society (in some men's and women's souls) something gave way throwing everything off-balance. Morals collapsed, and the alternating swells of evil keep increasing in pressure as this *monster* wave (physical world takeover) keeps getting bigger and bigger below the surface, moving swiftly inland. Right now some can only see the top ten feet, and even that is hidden among other societal waves at this point — urban violence, broken families, drug abuse, poverty, wars...

However, when this final phase of the physical world takeover wave hits the mainland, the devastation will be tremendous.

Seismologists say there is no way to prevent a tsunami, but there are now early-warning tsunami sensing devices placed in strategic places far out in the ocean floor — so people will have a brief time to prepare.

The final takeover phase sensing devices, I believe, are these emerging cult survivors, who are exposing different parts of the takeover plan.

As the tsunami sensors lie at the depths of the ocean floor, some of the world takeover sensors lie at the bottom of these programmed layers, in the depths of some of these survivors' unconscious minds.

We need to listen. We need to prepare.

Memory
Shouldn't be
Shards of a broken dream
Secret pain
Shouldn't strain
Breathlessly to scream
I know the where
I know the when
I know the who too well
Believe me or believe me not
I have a truth to tell

—from *Memory Shouldn't Be...*
by Frank M. Ochberg, Ph.D.

ABOUT THE AUTHOR

Daniel Ryder, BS, CCDC, LSW, is a degreed journalist, certified chemical dependency counselor, and a licensed social worker. He has worked for several newspapers, developed one of the first codependency treatment programs in the Midwest, and is the author of the widely acclaimed *Breaking the Circle of Satanic Ritual Abuse (Recognizing and Recovering from the Hidden Trauma).* The name Daniel Ryder is a pseudonym.

Also by Daniel Ryder:

This Present Darkness: Live! (A Case Study). See bibliography to order.

For additional copies of this book see order form on last page.

PLAY ME BACKWARDS

You don't have to play me backwards
To get the meaning of my verse
You don't have to die and go to Hell
To feel the devil's curse

Well I thought my life was a photograph
On the family Christmas card
Kids all dressed in buttons and bows
And lined up in the yard
Were the golden days of childhood
So lyrical and warm
Or did the picture start to fade
On the day that I was born

I've seen them light the candles
I've heard them bang the drums
And I've cried Mama Mama I'm as cold as ice
And I got no place to run

Let the night begin, there's a pop of skin
And a sudden rush of scarlet
There's a little boy riding on a goat's head
And a little girl playing the harlot
There's a sacrifice in an empty church
Of sweet Li'l Baby Rose
And a man in a mask from Mexico
Is peeling off my clothes

I've seen them light the candles
I've heard them bang the drums
And I've cried Mama Mama I'm as cold as ice
And I got no place to run

So I'm paying for protection
Smoking out the truth
Chasing recollections
Nailing down the proof

You don't have to play me backwards
To get the meaning of my verse
You don't have to die and go to Hell
To feel the devil's curse
I'll stand before the altar
And tell everything I know
I've come to claim my childhood
At the Chapel of Baby Rose

I've seen them light the candles...

(*Written by Joan Baez / Wally Wilson / Kenny Greenberg / Karen O'Connor. Permission for reprint granted by: Gabriel Earl Music / Sony Cross Keys Publishing Co. Inc. / Greenberg Music. Copyright: Virginia Records.)

RESOURCES

Resources for ritual abuse survivors have grown tremendously in the last several years. California-based Monarch Resources, which has provided some of the following data, typifies the growth. A non-profit organization founded in 1988 by lecturer/abuse survivor advocate Maureen Brugh, Monarch now receives thousands of calls a year related to topics of ritual abuse.

Monarch is an informal clearing house that provides resources and information (bibliographies, listings of newsletters, hotlines, support groups, referrals...) for each of four interest areas: childhood sexual abuse and incest, ritual abuse, multiple personality/ dissociation; and for pro-survivors. It also publishes a quarterly calendar of events and conferences, and offers a speakers bureau and conference planning service.

Contact Monarch Resources at P.O. Box 1293, Torrance, California 90505-0293, or call: 310-373-1958.

***The following list is subject to change as the field evolves. We extend our thanks to S.A.V.E. for use of their database.**

American Association for Lost Children
P.O. Box 41154
Houston, TX 77241
800-873-LOST

American Coalition for Abuse Awareness
P.O. Box 27959
Washington, D.C. 20038-7959
202-462-4688

American Family Foundation
P.O. Box 2265
Bonita Springs, FL 33959
212-249-7693
(information packet, books, bibliography)

American Humane Association
(American Association for Protecting Children)
9725 East Hampden Avenue
Denver, CO 80231
303-695-0811
(Training, advocacy, networking)

Anxiety Disorders Association of America (Post Traumatic Stress Disorder)
6000 Executive Boulevard, Suite 200
Rockville, MD 20852
301-231-8368

B.E.A.M.
Being Energetic About Multiplicity
P.O. Box 20428
Louisville, KY 40250-0428

Believe the Children
P.O. Box 268462
Chicago, IL 60626

Beyond Survival
P.O. Box 85
Annandale NSW 2038 Australia
(Magazine on ritual abuse)

Beyond Survival Foundation
1278 Glenneyre No. 3
Laguna Beach, CA 92651

Bob Larson Ministries
P.O. Box 360
Denver, CO 80236
303-985-HOPE
(Crisis counseling, referrals)

Bothered About Dungeons and Dragons (BADD)
P.O. Box 5513
Richmond, VA 23220
804-748-2191

BRAVE
Breaking Ritual Abuse & Ending Violence
P.O. Box 606
Station P
Toronto, Ontario
Canada M5S 2Y4

California Consortium to Prevent Child Abuse
1600 Sacramento Inn Way, #123
Sacramento, CA 95815
916-648-8010

CARAC (Committee Against Ritual Abuse of Children)
P.O. Box 74
Saskatoon, Saskatchewan
Canada S7K3K1

C.A.R.E., Inc.
P.O. Box 4072
Kokomo, IN 46904-4702
(an innovative national organization to "mobilize churches to empower survivors of satanic ritual abuse." Book available.)

Center for Victims of Torture
717 East River Road
Minneapolis, MN 55454
612-626-1450

Cerny, Randy
(Ritual Crime Consultation)
P.O. Box 128
Modesto, CA 95353

Child Help USA
P.O. Box 630
Hollywood, CA 90028
800-422-4453

Child Protection and Advocacy Coalition
P.O. Box 4559
Citrus Heights, CA 95621-4559

Christian Recovery International
P.O. Box 11095
Whitter, CA 90603
310-697-6201

Co-Dependents Anonymous (CODA)
P.O. Box 33577
Phoenix, AZ 85067-3577
602-277-7991

Coalition Against Sexual Exploitation
21 Green Street
Concord, NH 03301
603-225-2985

Concerned Christian Growth Ministries
Box 6
North Perth
Western Australia 6006
61-63-444-6183

Council on Mind Abuse (COMA)
40 St. Clair Avenue East, Suite 203
Toronto M4T 1M9
Canada

Cult Awareness Network
2421 West Pratt Boulevard, Suite 1173
Chicago, IL 60645
312-267-7777

Cult Hotline/Crisis Clinic
(Jewish Board of Family and Children's Services)
120 West 57th Street
New York, NY 10019
212-623-4640
(counseling)

Cult Information Centre
Box B.C.M. Cults
London WCIN 3XX
United Kingdom
048-244-3104

DD Anon Group One
P.O. Box 4078
Appleton, WI 54911
(A mutual-help group for people who have a spouse, relative or friend in treatment for a dissociative disorder (usually UT). Program is based on the 12 Steps, 12 Traditions of Alcoholics Anonymous. Will provide info for others trying to start groups.)

Dissociative Disorder Foundation
P.O. Box 820983
Dallas, TX 75382-0983
800-462-7759

End Ritual Abuse
Po Box 21231
Edgeware
Christchurch
New Zealand

E.L.I.
Evolve Love Involve
Box 480039
Los Angeles, CA 90048

Family Assistance, Information and Rescue (FAIR)
BCM Box 3535-P.O. Box 12
London, WCIN 3XX
United Kingdom
441-539-3940

Followers of Jesus Christ
5220 Ashley Dr.
Evansville, IN 47711
(Masonic and Cult abuse)

Hopeful Hands Consulting
(Healing for RA survivors, therapists and church leaders)
1411 W. Covell Blvd
#106-180
Davis, CA 95616
916-758-0545

Incest Resources Inc.
46 Pleasant Street
Cambridge, MA 02139

Incest Survivors Anonymous (ISA)
P.O. Box 5613
Long Beach, CA 90805-0613
213-428-5599

Incest Survivors Resource Network International
P.O. Box 7375
Las Cruces, NM 88006-7375
505-521-4260 (2:00-4:00 p.m. Monday-Saturday)

Interfaith Coalition of Concern about Cults
711 Third Avenue
12th Floor
New York, NY 10017
212-983-4977

Interfaith Council on Cults
Fr. James Labre
2 Harvey Street
Hyde Park, NY 12538

International Council on Cultism and Ritual Trauma
(formerly The Society for the Investigation, Treatment and
Prevention of Ritual and Cult Abuse)
P.O. Box 835564
Richardson, TX 75083-5564
214-578-6910

International Cult Education Program
P.O. Box 1232
Gracie Station
New York, NY 10028
212-439-1550
(A resource list including general and law enforcement information,
counselors and treatment, support groups and research agencies)

International Society for the Study of Dissociation
5700 Old Orchard Rd.
1st Floor
Skokie, IL 60077
708-966-4322

Jireh Foundation
P.O. Box 224501
Dallas, TX 75222-4501
(Christian safe-houses and training program for care-givers)

JUSTUS Unlimited
P.O. Box 1121
Parker, CO 80134
303-643-8698

Learning Alliance
324 Lafayette
New York, NY 10012
(conferences for male survivors)

Marshall Resource Center
Children's Institute
711 South New
Los Angeles, CA 90005
213-385-5100

Monarch Resources
P.O. Box 1293
Torrance, CA 90505-0293
310-373-1958

Mothers Against Sexual Abusers
P.O. Box 91870
Pasadena, CA 91109-1870
818-969-0404

MPD Dignity
P.O. Box 4376
Boulder, CO 80306-4367
(A self-help organization exclusively for survivors with MT)

National Association of Children of Alcoholics (NACOA)
11426 Rockville Pike
Rockville, MD 20852
301-468-0985
(national support group)

National Center on Child Abuse and Neglect
Children's Bureau
Administration of Children, Youth and Families
US Dept. of Health and Human Services
P.O. Box 1182
Washington, DC 20013
202-245-2856
(Federal agency overseeing funding for child abuse programs nationwide)

The National Center for the Treatment of Dissociative Disorders
1290 S. Potomac
Aurora, CO 80012
303-751-8373
800-441-6921

National Clearinghouse on Child Abuse and Neglect
P.O. Box 1182
Washington, D.C. 20013
800-FYI-3366

National Coalition Against Pornography
Dr. Jerry Kirk
800 Compton Road
Suite 9224
Cincinnati, OH 45231

National Coalition on Television Violence
P.O. Box 2157
Champaign, IL 61820
217-387-1920

National Committee for the Prevention of Child Abuse
320 S. Michigan Avenue, #950
Chicago, IL
312-663-3520

National Ritual Abuse Awareness Coalition
225 Crossroads Blvd.
#415
Carmel, CA 93923

National Victim Center
309 West Seventh Street, Suite 705
Fort Worth, TX 76102
817-877-3355

The Onion Skin Collective
2315-B Forest Drive, Suite 50
Annapolis, MD 21401
301-263-1151
(Support for victims of incest and child sexual abuse)

Parents United International Inc.
(Adults Molested as Children United)
P.O. Box 952
San Jose, CA 95108
408-280-5055
(Agency focus is on child sexual abuse. They have more than 140 programs established in the United States, Canada, and Mexico)

P.L.E.A. (Prevention-Leadership-Education-Assistance)
356 West Zia Rd.
Santa Fe, NM 87505-5723
505-982-9184
(For males who have been physically, sexually, and emotionally abused)

Real Active Survivors
P.O. Box 1894
Canyon Country, CA 91386-0894
805-252-6437
(MT workshops, anger workshops, retreats, a listening line service, and consulting)

Restoration in Christ Ministries
P.O. Box 1902
Altoona, PA 16603-1902
814-946-3251
(Educational seminars and consulting on DID and SRA issues)

The Ritual Abuse Awareness Network Society (TRAANS)
P.O. Box 29064
Delamont
1996 West
Vancouver, B.C.
Canada V6J 5C2

Ritual Abuse Task Force
Los Angeles County Commission for Women
383 Hall of Administration
500 West Temple Street
Los Angeles, CA 90012
213-974-1455

The Safer Society Program
RR-1 Box 24-B
Orwell, VT 05706-9756
802-897-7541
(Nationwide project of the New York State Council of Churches.
Research orientated)

Saints Alive in Jesus Christ
P.O. Box 1076
Issaquah, WA 98027
800-997-7077
(Mormons, Masons...)

S.A.V.E.
Survivors and Victims Empowered
P.O. Box 10756
Lancaster, PA 17605-0756

Sexual Abuse Survivors Anonymous
P.O. Box 241046
Detroit, MI 48224
313-882-9646

The International Council on Cultism and Ritual Trauma
9601 White Rock Trail
Ste. 202
Dallas, TX 75238
214-341-6400

S.M.A.R.T.
P.O. Box 60577
Florence, MA 01060
(Newsletter about Masonic ritual abuse)

S.O.A.R.
Survivors of Abusive Rituals
P.O. Box 1776
Cahokia, IL 62206-1776
(Ritual abuse newsletter)

S.O.M.A.N.
(Survivors of Masonic Abuse Newsletter)
P.O. Box 1397
Decatur, GA 30031

Stand Fast
P.O. Box 9107
Warwick, RI 02899
401-737-7505
(Pro-survivor organization)

Survivor's Hope (Newletter)
P.O. Box 1012
Fenton, MO 63026

Survivor Connections, Inc.
52 Lyndon Rd.
Cranston, RI 02905-1121
401-941-2335
(Newsletter)

Survivors of Incest Anonymous
World Service Office
P.O. Box 21817
Baltimore, MD 21222-6817
301-282-3400

SURVIVORSHIP Newsletter
(Ritual abuse)
3181 Mission Street
No. 139
San Francisco, CA 94110

Task Force on Cults and Jewish Community Relations Council
711 Third Avenue, 12th Floor
New York, NY 10017
212-983-4800

The Stone Angels Journal
(journal on mind control issues)
369 Pearl St. #2
Thunder Bay (Canada)
P7B 1E9
807-344-8905

Victim's Hotline (Texas)
713-779-7979

Voices
(Victims of Incest Can Emerge Survivors)
P.O. Box 14039
Chicago, IL 60614
312-327-1500
(Voices support groups across the United States)

Wings Foundation, Inc.
8007 West Colfax
CS #27
Box 129,
Lakewood, CO 80215

Women's Mental Health Collective
Judith Herman, M.D.
61 Roseland Street
Summerville, MA 02143

Working in the Vineyard
P.O. Box 3475
Tega City, SC 29715
803-548-2884

BIBLIOGRAPHY ON RITUAL ABUSE

BOOKS

Amstutz, Wendell. *Confronting Satan and Associates.* National Counseling Resource Center, P.O. Box 87, Rochester, MN 55903 (507-281-8800).

Carrico, David L. *The Egyptian-Masonic-Satanic Connection,* 1994. Followers of Jesus Christ Ministries, P.O. Box 4174, Evansville, IN 47724-4174. (812-477-6338).

C.A.R.E., Inc. *Care-Giving: The Cornerstone of Healing (From A Christian Perspective: A Manual For Supporting And Caring For Satanic Ritual Abuse Survivors).* (317-455-1116).

DeCamp, John W. *The Franklin Cover-Up: Child Abuse, Satanism, and Murder In Nebraska,* 1992. AWT, Inc., P.O. Box 85461, Lincoln, Nebraska, 68501.

Friesen, James G. *Uncovering the Mystery of MPD,* 1991.

Friesen, James G. *The Truth about False Memory Syndrome,* 1996.

Hector, Holly. *Satanic Ritual Abuse and Multiple Personality Disorder (Understanding and Treating the Survivor).* (303-322-7727 or 1-800-833-9327)

Hollingsworth, Jan. *Unspeakable Acts.* New York: Congden & Weed, 1986.

Hudson, Pamela. *Ritual Child Abuse: Discovery, Diagnosis and Treatment.* R & E Publishers, P.O. Box 2008, Saratoga, CA 95070.

Johnston, Jerry. *The Edge of Evil: the Rise of Satanism In North America.* Dallas: Word Publishing, 1989.

Kahaner, Larry. *Cults That Kill.* New York: Warner Books, 1988.

Kilroy, Jim and Stewart, Bob. *Sacrifice: (The Drug Cult Murder of Mark Kilroy at Matamoros).* Word Publishing, 1990.

Larson, Bob. *Dead Air.* Thomas Nelson Publishers, Nashville, Tenn.

Larson, Bob. *The Seduction of America's Youth.* Thomas Nelson Publishers, Nashville, Tenn., 1989

Lockwood, Craig. *Other Alters.* CompCare, 1993.

Los Angeles County Commission for Women. "Ritual Abuse: Definitions, Glossary, the Use of Mind Control." 383 Hall of Administration, 500 West Temple Street, Los Angeles, CA 90012. (213-974-1455).

Mayer, Dr. Robert S. *Satan's Children: Case Studies In Multiple Personality.* New York: G.B. Putman's Sons, 1991.

Marron, Devin. *Ritual Abuse.* MacMillan, Canada, 1988.

Newton, Michael. *Raising Hell.* Avon Books, 1993.

Peck, M. Scott, M.D. *People of the Lie.* New York: Simon & Schuster, 1983.

Raschke, Carl A. *Painted Black.* San Francisco: Harper & Row, 1990.

*Ryder, Daniel. *Breaking the Circle of Satanic Ritual Abuse: Recognizing and Recovering from the Hidden Trauma.* Hazelden, 1992. (800-257-7800).

*Ryder, Daniel and Liz. *This Present Darkness: Live! (A Case Study)*, Ryder Publishing, 1996. (800-537-1030).

Sandford, Doris. *Don't Make Me Go Back Mommy (A Child's Book About Satanic Ritual Abuse)*. Heart to Heart Inc., 2115 Adams Street, Milwaukee, Oregon, 97222.

Sklar, Dusty. *The Nazis and the Occult*. New York: Dorset Press, 1977.

Smith, Michelle, and Pazder, Lawrence, M.D. *Michelle Remembers*. New York: Pocket Books, 1980.

Spencer, Judith. *Suffer the Child*. New York: Pocket Books, 1989.

St. Clair, David. *Say You Love Satan*. Doubleday Dell, New York, 1987.

StarDancer, Caryn. *Returning to Herself (Poems and illustrations)*. StarDancer, P.O. Box 1284, Lakeport, CA 95453.

Steed, Judy. *Our Little Secret*. Canada: Random House, 1994.

Stratford, Lauren. *Satan's Underground: The Extraordinary Story of One Woman's Escape*. Eugene, OR: Harvest House, 1988.

Taylor, Brice. *Starshine: One Woman's Valiant Escape from Mind Control*. Brice Taylor Trust, P. O. Box 2474, Carbondale, Illinois 62902.

Terry, Maury. *The Ultimate Evil*. Garden City: Doubleday & Co., Inc., 1987.

Wedge, Thomas. *The Satan Hunter*. Canton: Daring Books, 1987.

VIDEO TAPES

Satanism: The Absence of Light — An American Exposé. Devin DeHaven Entertainment La Jolla, CA. (619-458-9945)

The Paganization of America. (Jack Roper) CARIS, Milwaukee, Wisconsin. (414-771-7379)

False Prophets of the False Memory Syndrome. Cavalcade Productions, Ukiah, CA. (800-345-5530)

Identification of the Ritually Abused Child. Cavalcade Productions, Ukiah, CA.

Treatment of the Ritually Abused Child. Cavalcade Productions, Ukiah, CA.

Ritual Child Abuse: A Professional Overview. Cavalcade Productions, Ukiah, CA.

Ritual Crime: Guidelines for Identification. Cavalcade Productions, Ukiah, CA.

Children at Risk: Ritual Abuse In America. Cavalcade Productions, Ukiah, CA.

Significant Others. Cavalcade Productions, Ukiah, CA.

Coming Home: Recovery from Satanic Ritual Abuse. Cavalcade Productions, Ukiah, CA.

Sessions and Sand Trays. Cavalcade Productions, Ukiah, CA.

MUSICAL RELEASES

The Warrior by "tres." Inner Child Productions, 3300 Snow Rd., Las Cruces, NM 88005. (505-523-0337).

Play Me Backwards. Joan Baez, Virginia Records.

BIBLIOGRAPHY ON MULTIPLE PERSONALITY

Allison, R. *Minds In Many Pieces.* R.R. Donnelley & Sons, 1980.

Baldwin, L. *Oneselves: Multiple Personality.* 1811-1981. Jefferson, NC: McFarland & Co. Inc.

Beahrs, J.O. *Unity and Multiplicity.* New York: Brunner/Mazel, 1982.

Bennet, Kay and Redford, Susan. *The Power Model Lifebook (for MP).* Dove Publications, P.O. Box 11786, Casa Grande, AZ 85230-1786.

Braun, B.G. *Treatment of Multiple Personality Disorder.* Washington, D.C.: American Psychiatric Press, Inc., 1986.

Castle, Kit and Bechtel, Stefan. *Katherine, It's Time.* New York: Harper & Row, 1989.

Chase, T. *When Rabbit Howls.* E.P. Dutton, 1987.

Keyes, D. *The Minds of Billy Milligan.* Random House, 1981.

Kiervik, D.K. "Dual Personality: Assessment and Reintegration." *Journal of Psychiatric Nursing*, 28, pp. 35-56, 1979.

Kluft, R.P. *Childhood Antecedents of Multiple Personality.* Washington, D.C.: American Psychiatric Press, Inc., 1985.

Mayer, R. *Through Divided Minds.* New York: Doubleday, 1988.

Pia, Jacklyn. *Multiple Personality Gift: A Workbook for You and Your Inside Family.* Real Active Survivor Inc., P.O. Box 1894, Canyon County, CA 91386-0894.

Powers, Elizabeth. *Managing Ourselves (Building a Community of Caring) [for MPs].* E. Power and Associates, P.O. Box 2346, Brentwood, TN 37024-2346

Prince, M. *The Dissociation of a Personality.* New York: Longmans, Green, 1906.

Putman, F.W. *Diagnosis and Treatment of Multiple Personality Disorder.* New York: The Guilford Press, 1989.

Rogo, D.S. *The Infinite Boundary.* New York: Dodd, Mead & Co., 1987.

Ross, C.C.A. *Multiple Personality Disorder. Diagnosis, Clinical Features, and Treatment.* New York: John Wiley and Sons, 1989.

Ross, C.C.A., Norton, G.R., and Wozney, K. "Multiple Personality Disorder: An Analysis of 236 Cases." *Canadian Journal of Psychiatry,* 34, pp. 413-418, 1989.

Thigpen, C. & Cleckley, H. *Three Faces of Eve.* McGraw Hill, 1957.

Watkins, J.G. & Johnson, R.J. *We, the Divided Self.* New York: Irvington Publishers Inc., 1982.

To order additional copies of this book:

$ 13.95 per book plus shipping and handling
1 to 3 books – $ 3.50
4 to 7 books – $ 6
8 to 11 books – $ 9

Mail to Ryder Publishing, 225 Crossroads Blvd., #415, Carmel, CA 93923 or call: 1-800-537-1030 [Shipping and handling may vary]

Also available on this topic:

Cover-Up of the Century Video by Daniel Ryder $
Cover-Up of the Century Audio by Daniel Ryder $ 6.95

Plus shipping and handling:
1 to 3 tapes – $ 2.00
4 to 7 tapes – $ 3.50
8 to 11 tapes – $ 5.00

Mail to Ryder Publishing, 225 Crossroads Blvd., #415, Carmel, CA 93923.

---

* Daniel Ryder's ground breaking first book:

Breaking The Circle of Satanic Ritual Abuse (Recognizing and Recovering from the Hidden Trauma), Hazelden Publishing, 1-800-328-0098.

New Release

This Present Darkness: Live!
(A Case Study)

by Daniel and Liz Ryder

This is the story of a real town you'd swear Frank Peretti had in mind when he wrote: **This Present Darkness.** It is also the story of how some Christians in Alaska are banding together to take their town back for Jesus in the midst of what's shaping up to be a dramatic revival. What's more, God is urgently calling people to deeper levels of revival in their ongoing spiritual work, addictions, emotional recovery, social consciousness, and environmental concern.

It is becoming clear that all over the world there is version after version of the prophetically inspired town Peretti wrote about. And with the end times upon us, battle lines are rapidly being drawn in these places. Is your town one of them? If so, the booklet contains tried information for strategies you can use to take back your town, and yourselves, for Jesus.

DANIEL and LIZ RYDER started Ryder Ministries in 1994. Daniel is also the author of the groundbreaking ***Breaking The Circle Of Satanic Ritual Abuse (Recognizing And Recovering From The Hidden Trauma),*** and the more recent ***Cover-up Of The Century (Satanic Ritual Crime And World Conspiracy).*** The name "Ryder" is a pseudonym.

This Present Darkness: Live! $6.95 plus shipping and handling
(A Case Study)

Call: 1-800-537-1030. [Shipping and handling may vary.]
Or send orders to: Ryder Publishing, 225 Crossroads Blvd. #415, Carmel, CA 93923.
Shipping and handling:
1 to 3 books - $3.50
4 to 7 books - $6
8 to 11 books - $9

Name____________________________
Street___________________________
City/State/Zip_____________________

No. of books ______
Shipping and handling ______
California Res. add 7.25% ______
Total ______

*please photocopy and circulate this form.

*Note: To order **Breaking the Circle of Satanic Ritual Abuse (Recognizing and Recovering from the Hidden Trauma)**, also by **Daniel Ryder**, call Hazelden Publishing at 1-800-328-0098.

COVERT WARS AND BREAKAWAY CIVILIZATIONS

The Secret Space Program, Celestial Psyops and Hidden Conflicts

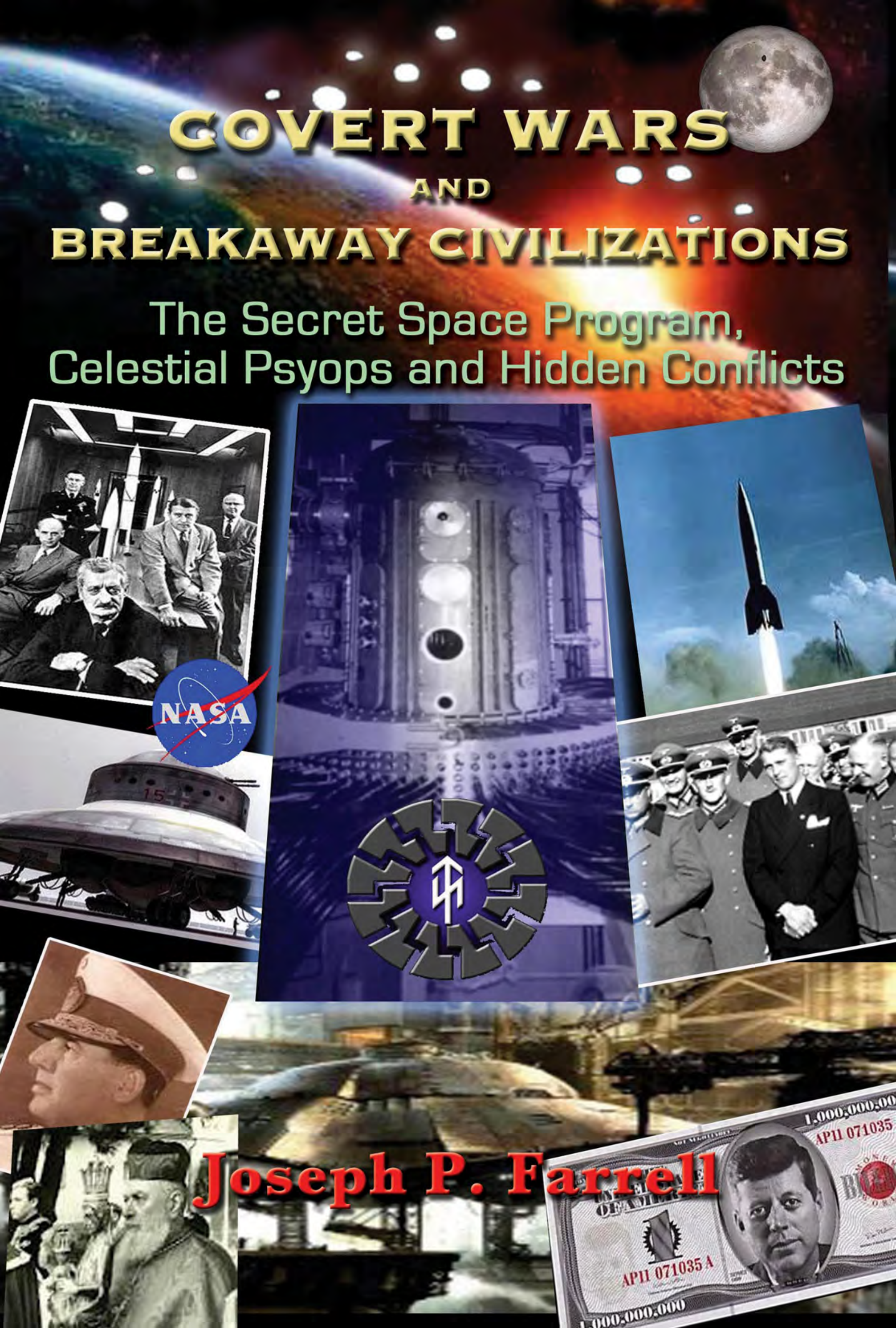
NASA
15
1,000,000,000
API1 071035
API1 071035 A
1,000,000,000

Joseph P. Farrell

COVERT WARS AND BREAKAWAY CIVILIZATIONS

The Secret Space Program, Celestial Psyops and Hidden Conflicts

Adventures Unlimited Press

Other Books by Joseph P. Farrell:

Saucers, Swastikas and Psyops
LBJ and the Conspiracy to Kill Kennedy
Roswell and the Reich
Nazi International
Reich of the Black Sun
The S.S. Brotherhood of the Bell
Babylon's Banksters
The Philosopher's Stone
Secrets of the Unified Field
The Cosmic War
The Giza Death Star
The Giza Death Star Deployed
The Giza Death Star Destroyed
Transhumanism (with Scott deHart)
The Grid of the Gods (with Scott deHart)

COVERT WARS
AND
BREAKAWAY
CIVILIZATIONS

Joseph P. Farrell

Covert Wars and Breakaway Civilizations

by Joseph P. Farrell

Copyright © 2012
All Rights Reserved

ISBN: 978-1-935487-83-8

All Rights Reserved

Published by:
Adventures Unlimited Press
One Adventure Place
Kempton, Illinois 60946 USA

auphq@frontiernet.net

www.adventuresunlimitedpress.com

Cover by Terry Lamb

10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1

As always, to
Scott Douglas de Hart:
You are a true

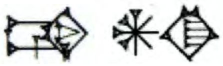

For all the shared bowls and walks and talks and so many brilliant insights in so many conversations through the years,
Anything I could say, any gratitude I could express, are simply inadequate.

To George Ann Hughes:
Dear and good friend:
You are a constant encouragement; thank you, but again, it seems so inadequate.

To D.R.J.:
Good friend, who has seen the full implications of the Metaphor,
and given numerous and priceless insights:
Thank you is, in your case as well, inadequate.

To My friends D.E.C. & B.J.K.:
I'm proud of you!

To all the other "extended Inklings" out there:
Many thanks for continued and consistent friendship through the years.

And to
Tracy S. Fisher,
who with love and gentle prodding encouraged me to write:
You are, and will always be, sorely missed

“ ...(We) can readily understand why the power elite of America has no ideology and feels the need of none, why its rule is naked of ideas, its manipulation without attempted justification. It is this mindlessness of the powerful that is the true higher immorality of our time; for, with it, there is associated the organized irresponsibility that is today the most important characteristic of the American system of corporate power.”

C. Wright Mills, *The Power Elite* (Oxford, 1956), p. 342.

“ ...(When) men of knowledge do come to a point of contact with the circles of powerful men, they come not as peers but as hired men.”

C. Wright Mills, *The Power* Elite, p. 351.

Table of Contents

Preface: The Matrix of a Breakaway Civilization: Geopolitics, National Security, Nuclear Weapons, Covert Operations, Space and UFOs ix
A. Culture, Definitions, and Questions xii
  1. Geopolitical, Strategic, and Technological Imperatives of the Culture of the Breakaway Civilization xii
    a. The Culture of Secrecy: Covert Operations, and Their Implications xii
    b. The Total Culture of Total Power and Full Spectrum Dominance xviii
B. Plausible Deniability: Covert Operations and Wars, the Engineering of Perception, and the UFO xx
  1. Historical, Structural, and Factional Analysis of Components xxii
  2. A Crucial Common Surface, or Interface: The Office of Policy Coordination xxvi

PART ONE:
SEQUERE PECUNIA:
FINANCING FICTION, AND FICTITIOUS FINANCING, OR, COUNTERFEITING FOR FUN, PROFIT AND WORLD DOMINATION

1. Counterfeiting, Covert Ops, and *Konzentrationslagern:* The Possible Postwar Survival of Operation Bernhard 1
A. Operation Bernhard 2
  1. Naujocks and the Beginning of Operation Bernhard 2
  2. Heydrich's Directive 5
  3. Industrial Scale Production and the Implications: A Permanent Counterfeiting Bureaucracy 7
  4. A Modern Historical Precedent, and Further Implications 7
  5. Production and Quality Control 9
    a. Reverse Engineering the Sterling Banknote Paper 11
    b. The Watermark, the Fonts, and the Plates 12
B. The International Distribution Networks and Uses of State-Sponsored Currency Facsimile Production 17
  1. Friedrich Paul Schwend 17
  2. The Postwar Ties and Possibilities 20
C. Conclusions 21

2A. Bearer Bonds, Bullion, Bishops and Banksters: *Or,* Cosa Nostra Con Men, Counterfeiters and Cardinals, Part One 23
- A. The Bearer Bonds Scandals 24
    - 1. The Japanese Bearer Bonds Scandal 24
        - a. General Comment 24
        - b. Special Considerations of Industrial Scale Counterfeiting 25
        - c. The Japanese Bearer Bond Scandal 26
        - d. My Own Personal Coverage of the Story 28
        - e. The Billion Dollar Fake Kennedy Bonds, and a Message from Japan, and from Space 36
    - 2. The Spanish Bearer Bonds Scandal 43
    - 3. The Italian Bearer Bonds Scandal 58

Intermission 63

2B. Bearer Bonds, Bullion, Bishops and Banksters: *Or,* Cosa Nostra Con Men, Counterfeiters and Cardinals, Part Two 71
- 4. The Strange Allegations of Lord Blackheath and Some Strange Behavior from Dr. Hjalmar Horace Greeley Schacht 72
    - a. David Baron James of Blackheath's Remarks of Nov 1, 2012 to the House of Lords 72
    - b. Analysis of Lord Blackheath's Remarks of Nov. 1, 2010 76
    - c. David Baron James of Blackheath's Remarks of Feb. 16, 2012 to the House of Lords: "Something is Very Seriously Wrong" 79
    - d. Analysis of Lord Blackheath's Remarks of Feb 16, 2012 83
    - e. The Gold Discrepancy: The House of Lords, *Der Spiegel* Magazine in Germany, and Dr. Hjalmar Schacht 91
- 5. The Filipino Bearer Bonds Saga, and Some Miscellanies 94
- 6. Summary and Implications 98
- B. An Earlier Episode: The Vatican, the Mob, Industrial-Scale Counterfeiting, and More Connections 100
    - 1. De Lorenzo and Rizzo 100
    - 2. Dr. Leopolad Ledl and "Ricky" Jacobs 103
    - 3. Dr. Ledl, Bishop Paul Marcinkus of the Vatican Bank, Michele Sindona, and Eugene Cardinal Tisserant 106

3. Secret Agents, Secret Bonds, Secret Algorithms, and Secret Finance: Sam Israel, Danny Casolaro, The Inslaw Octopus and Quantum Mechanics 113
A. High Frequency Trading, Computers, and Quantum Mechachics 114
1. Bayou's Good Start 116
2. Problems and the Decision to Cook the Books 117
B. Sam Israel and "the Secret Bond Market" 119
1. Israel Learns of the Inslaw Affair and the PROMIS Software Program 119
a. The Promise of PROMIS: the Gatekeeper between the Breakaway Civilization, Its Hidden System of Finance, and the Overworld 123

b. The Promise of PROMIS: the People-Tracking Capability 124
2. Robert Booth Nichols and "the Secret Bond Market" 125
3. Federal Reserve Bonds, or was that Federal Reserved Bonds? 127
4. Odd, But Crucial, Miscellanies 128

4. The Lily, the Looting, and Lansdale: The Murky History of a Covert Slush-Fund for Covert Activities 133
A. Operation Golden Lily: "Yamashita's Gold" 134
1. Lansdale, MacArthur, and Truman 135
2. The "MacArthur" Document 141
B. Golden Lily, Gold Bugs, Bearer Bonds, and the Nature of the Fraud at the Basis of the Hidden System of Finance 144
1. Obfuscated Amounts of Gold and Silver Bullion 145
2. Gold Certificates, Earmarking, and the Secret System of Finance: One Does Not Counterfeit What Does Not Exist 147
3. A Significant Clue and Connection to the Bearer Bonds Scandals: The Scheme of Prime Minister Tanaka 149
4. Odds and Ends: 153
a. The Technology Connection 153
b. The Golden Lily Connection to Operation Bernhard 154
c. Hidden Finance, Breakaway Civilizations, and ET 155

5. Counterfeiting for Fun, Profit, and World Domination: Conclusions to Part One 157
A. The Matrix of Factions and Sectors 158
B. The Implications of the Bearer Bonds Scandals and the Axis Counterfeiting and Looting Operations 160

PART TWO:
TECHNIQUES AND TECHNOLOGIES: WAGING, AND CONCEALING, COVERT WAR,
OR:
HOW TO WAGE TOTAL WAR WITH TOTAL PLAUSIBLE DENIABILITY

6. Matrix of Mayhem: The Terrestrial Side of Covert Ops: Covert Operations, Covert Finance, Hidden Wars and 9/11 169
A. The Three Phases of the Institution of the Hidden System of Finance for Covert Operations 170
1. General Ed Lansdale and Frank Wisner 170
2. The First Phase: The 1934 "Morgenthaus" and the Deal with Chiang Kai-Shek 173
3. The Postwar Phase: the Transitional Mingling of Bankers and Covert Operations Officers 175
4. The Independent, or Rogue Phase: Indications of the Break of the Breakaway Civilization 180
B. A Brief Review of Western Covert Operations: NATO, Nazis, Fascists, and "Terrorism" 182
1. A Catalogue of Created Crises 182
2. International Covert Operations as the "Military Arm" of the Breakaway Civilization: The Fascist Culture, and the Nazi and American Cores 184
3. Frank Wisner, The Office of Policy Coordination, and the "Deep State" 188
4. The Methodology of the Culture 190
a. Plausible Deniability, False Flag Operations, and Drills, or, Ops within Ops 190
b. The Lone Nut Assassin Technique: Norway, JFK, and John-Paul II 192
c. The World Anti-Communist League as a Technique of Factional Management 194
5. The Holy Ghost in the Machine, or, The Vatican Bank 196

- 6. A Key Indicator that It Really *Is* a Breakaway Civilization: Operation Northwoods 198
- C. The Bearer Bonds Scandals and 9/11 Targets 200
- D. Conclusions and the Technological Transition

7. Kardashev's Classes and Covert Conflict: Engineering the Technologies of Plausibly Deniable Mass Destruction, Part One 213

- A. The Total Culture of Total Power and Control, and the Doctrine of Full Spectrum Dominance 214
- B. Weaponizing Planet Earth: The Technologies of Geophysical Warfare and the Achievement of Kardashev Class One Civilization Capabilities 222
  - 1. Weather Warfare 222
  - 2. Steering Hurricanes 224
  - 3. Tinkering with Tornados 227
    - a. Some Classes of Evidence Overlooked by the Thermodynamic Theory 229
      - (1) Embedded Objects 229
      - (2) Levitating, or Suctioned, Cars and People? 230
      - (3) Blue-Green Colors, RF Emissions, and The Implication that "They" Knew All Along 233
      - (4) Lightning Inside the Funnel 234
    - b. A Basic Outline of Chandler's Theory 236
    - c. An Unusual Parallel Description 237
    - d. Implications for Tornado-Engineering Technology 238
      - (1) The Ability to Steer Storms 238
      - (2) The Ability to Damp Storms 239
      - (3) The Ability to Intensify Storms 239
      - (4) The Ability to Create a Storm Whole Cloth 239
  - 4. HAARP, EISCAT, and Ionospheric Heaters: Geophysical Systems Warfare, and the New Geopolitical Imperative 240
    - a. The Ionosphere, Missile Defense Experiments, and the Beginnings of Offensive resonance Possibilities 242
- C. Implied Geopolitical Imperatives of the Technologies 246

8. Pulses, Planets, and Pyramids: Kardashev Classes and Covert Conflict, Part Two 247

- A. Nukes, Tomography, Earthquakes, and Longitudinal Waves 248

1. Project West Ford: Entry Into a Mystery 248
    a. Earthquake Engineering and the Second Kardashev Corollary 251
    b. Earthquake Engineering and the Geopolitical Implication 251
        (1) The 1993 Kalgoorlie Australia "Meteor" and a Further Geopolitical Implication 253

2. Earthquake Warfare 255
    a. Geophysics and Nukes 255
3. Nuclear Weapons, Longitudinal Waves, and Earthquakes 258
    a. Longitudinal Waves, Nukes, and Earthquakes 258
    b. Tesla, Bearden, Nukes, Longitudinal Pulses, and the Medium 261
    c. Pyramid Possibilities 268
B. The Methodology of the Indications of Geophysical Wars, and Disturbing Class Two Stellar Possibilities 271
    1. Methodological Implications 271
    2. A Brief Look at the Solar, or Stellar, Implications 274

9. Counterfeiting Crisis for Fun, Profit, and World Domination: Conclusions to Part Two 275

PART THREE: COVERT WARS AND CELESTIAL PSYOPS

10. Airship Arcana and the Dellschau Dilemma: Secret Societies and Secret Technologies 281
A. Airship Arcana 282
    1. "Contact": The Crash and Recovery Meme: 284
        a. Aurora, Texas, and the Death of an ET? 284
        b. Contact with Human Crews 287
    2. "Wilson" 290
    3. A Secret Project, But Whose? 292
        a. Dolbear, Tillman, and Hearst 292
        b. Electric Propulsion, a Peculiar Masonic Reference, and Psychological Warfare Possibilities 294
B. The Dellschau Dilemma 298
    1. The Kennedy Connection: Jean DeMenil 299

    - 2. Implications of the Dellschau-DeMenil-JFK Connection 299

11. Spy Satellites, Nuclear Weapons and UFOs 311

- A. Military UFO Sightings 313
    - 1. The 1951 Korean War Incident: American Soliders and a UFO Exchange Fire 314
    - 2. A Vietnam War Incident: North Vietnamese Unit Liquidated by UFO 317
    - 3. The 1953 Kinross Incident 319
- B. UFOs, ICBMs, and Nuclear Weapons 321
    - 1. Sightings near Nuclear Missile Sites and Nuclear-Equipped Military Units 322
        - a. The UFO+Haunted Aircraft Carrier, the USS Franklin D. Roosevelt 322
        - b. The Malmstrom A.F.B. Case 324
        - c. The Ellsworth A.F.B. Case 327
        - d. The Minot A.F.B. Incident 329
        - e. The Alleged Big Sur Incident 333
        - f. Summary Thus Far 335
    - 2. Sightings at Nuclear Tests 335
        - a. Pre- and Post-Test UFO “Monitoring” 335
        - b. The Ivy Mike and Castle Bravo Tests 337
    - 3. Sightings at Nuclear Weapons Manufacturing Facilities 343
- C. Evaluations and Speculations 344

12. Psyops: Terrestrial, Celestial, and Otherwise: A Short and Speculative Postscript on “Emulational” and Anamnetic” Technologies and Their Potential Impact on the Culture of the Breakaway Civilization 349

Table of Contents

PREFACE:
THE MATRIX OF A BREAKAWAY CIVILIZATION:
GEOPOLITICS, NATIONAL SECURITY, NUCLEAR WEAPONS, COVERT OPERATIONS, SPACE, AND UFOS

"It is mandatory to Flash-report Fort Meade on all intercepted foreign-government signals intelligence that pertains to unidentified flying objects; and these installations are required to track and Flash-report on any signals or electronics intelligence that might have an extraterrestrial origin."
Howard Blum[1]

"U.S. historian Carl Oglesby sees the origin of much of the CIA's later sinister record in the alliances it forged almost immediately upon its birth, with the Gehlen/Vlassov organization and, through Operation Underworld, with the Lanksy crime syndicate: 'Everything after this (the Gehlen alliance), on top of Operation Underworld, was probably just a consequence of this merger. How can a naive, trusting, democratic republic give its secrets to crime and its innermost ear to the spirit of Central European fascism and expect not to see its Constitution polluted, its traditions abused, and its consciousness of the surrounding world manipulated ultimately out of all realistic shape.'"
Henrik Krüger and Carl Oglesby[2]

This book is about exactly what the title and sub-title say it's about: covert wars, breakaway civilizations, secret space programs, and psychological operations. But behind that rather blandly limiting list of concepts, lurks a hidden jungle-overgrowth of a massive amount of details that are bizarre, bewildering, and pregnant with huge implications. Even a brief catalogue of these details is sufficient to portray just how bizarre, bewildering, and significant those details are, for in this book, you are going to read about concentration camp victims; con men and grifters; industrial scale Nazi counterfeiting; massive postwar financial fraud and hidden systems of finance; stolen computer software that tracks it all; Roman Catholic cardinal archbishops; banksters; secret agents; generals; the Mafia; the CIA; the Gestapo; Imperial Japan's *Kempai Tei;* bullion; precious gems; General Reinhard

---

[1] Howard Blum, *Out There: The Government's Secret Quest For Extraterrestrials* (Simon and Schuster, 1990), p. 82.

[2] Henrik Krüger, *The Great Heroin Coup: Drugs, Intelligence, and International Fascism* (Boston: South End Press, 1980), p. 205, citing C. Oglesby, *The Yankee and Cowboy War* (Sheed Andres and McMeel, 1976),no p. page given pagepage citation given.

Heydrich; General Tomoyuki Yamashita; crop circles; machines and technologies that can create earthquakes, weather systems, and mind control machines; economic warfare; psychological operations against humans and "others"; assassinations; secret space programs including a possible actual shooting war between earthly nations (and between them and others); official and secret interest in ancient history, aliens, and artifacts; alchemy; ceremonial magic; rockets; robots; the nineteenth century airship mystery; UFOs; extra- sub- and crypto-terrestrials, USOs, thermonuclear weapons; hidden or little known technologies; possible secret societies; and, most importantly, how all these things are related.

In the predecessor volume to this sub-series of books, *Saucers, Swastikas, and Psyops*, I stated that "This is not an 'exciting' book, but it *is* a necessary one."[3] This book, like its predecessor volume, is not an 'exciting book', but it is necessary. Unlike its predecessor, any objective view of the previous survey of its contents will also reveal this it is not only not an exciting book, not only a necessary book, but also a *messy* book.

Thus, by necessity, any author attempting to write a book proposing to deal with covert wars, breakaway civilizations, secret space programs, and "celestial psyops" is asking for trouble in spades, for consider just the *scope* of merely *one* of those terms: "covert wars". By definition, this term would have to include not only ordinary covert operations of all sorts—psychological operations, financial and economic warfare, cyber-warfare, assassinations and so on—being waged among various nations, but it would have to take into account how the concept of covert wars is modified and vastly expanded when considered in the context of Mr. Richard Dolan's idea of a "breakaway civilization", and a secret space program, of, perhaps, actual shooting wars being fought right under our noses by dint of technologies capable of manipulating "mother nature", and fought secretly, not only between nations, but between hidden groups, and perhaps between all of *them* and someone from "out there" (extraterrestrials) or "down there" (sub-terrestrials).

Consequently, and by another necessity, this Preface may be one of the longest prefaces in alternative research media history to a book that engages in nothing less than high octane speculation.

The inclusion of the components of (1) breakaway civilizations and (2) space adds dimensions to the problem not normally considered, such as covert operations between hidden factions, extra-territorial states and organizations, private syndicates such as the Mafia and so on, in addition to the sort of covert operations between nation states that one normally considers. Additionally, with space as a component for consideration, yet another new dimension is added, namely, that some of these covert wars and psyops are possibly being waged not only between humans both on earth and in space, but also between humans and non-humans, both in space and possibly here on earth as well.

---

[3] Joseph P. Farrell, *Saucers, Swastikas, and Psyops: A History of a Breakaway Civilization: Hidden Aerospace Technologies and Psychological Operations* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2011), p. vii.

Such sweeping considerations thus necessitate a primarily thematic, rather than chronological, methodology. In a certain sense, the *case* for a breakaway civilization is outlined here in the preface, the supporting "facts," or rather, perceived footprints and signatures of such an entity, are examined in the text. We are dealing, in the preface, with the skeleton, and in the main text, with the muscles and organs. It is for the individual reader to decide if this hideous creature is capable of standing and walking.

So what are the basic questions that need to be asked, and which we shall confront in this book?

Among them, are these:

1) Does a breakaway civilization actually exist?
2) What are its footprints? its signatures?
3) Why have a secret space program?
4) What is the size of the secret space program?
5) How far back do the secret space program and breakaway civilization go? And who might be involved?
6) How does one define a breakaway civilization?
7) How is it financed? What are the costs of its maintenance? How does one envision it finances its covert activities and technological developments?
8) Is there more than one such breakaway civilization and secret space program? Or are there competing and perhaps occasionally warring interests within one single entity?
9) Who is running it or them
10) Is this breakaway civilization in contact or conflict with UFOs?

A. Culture, Definitions, and Questions

1. Geopolitical, Strategic, and Technological Imperatives of the Culture of the Breakaway Civilization

a. The Culture of Secrecy, Covert Operations, and Their Implications

With these preliminary thoughts and questions in mind, it is now time to consider the concept of a breakaway civilization as others have envisioned it, and as I envision it here.

It is my contention that within the body of research into this signally important subject, there have been two discrete and distinct approaches, and that neither of these, taken alone, is a sufficient basis by which to comprehend the breakaway civilization and its activities. In short, it is my contention that if one approaches the subject (1) solely from the standpoint of its covert operations and its alignment to intelligence bureaucracies and the international criminal drug trade, or conversely, (2) solely from the standpoint of its technological research, black projects, space activities, or UFO interests, then one will not have a complete picture, for this breakaway civilization is engaged on both sides, and for reasons arising from its culture.

This culture was formed under the historical circumstances of the end of World War Two and the peculiar and tightly interwoven strategic, geopolitical, and technological imperatives that arose from it. The most obvious change to standard geopolitical and strategic planning was, of course, a technological one: the discovery of nuclear fission and the invention of the atomic bomb, and a few years later, the thermonuclear hydrogen bomb. This fact, plus the knowledge that inevitably the Soviet Union would acquire a similar capability, completely changed the nature of strategic calculation. It became necessary for the USA and the West to contrive the means to first contain, and then increasingly to engage, then to roll back, and ultimately to defeat, the Soviet Union, and thereby to impose its own unipolar hegemony and world view upon the globe. And it had to do this without resort to nuclear warfare if possible. It is from this geopolitical circumstance that the twin means of doing so—covert operations, and technological end-runs around nuclear weapons—arose, and with them, the bureaucratic imperatives to create a breakaway civilization.

These circumstances inevitably meant a turn toward covert operations and the use of proxies or cut-outs as a means of avoiding direct and potentially catastrophic confrontation, *while simultaneously* *pursuing technologies that would do an end run around the nuclear problem, obsolescing, and eventually rendering nuclear weapons themselves, obsolete by the invention of even grander strategic weapons, weapons moreover that would not have "spillover" consequences on those using them.*

This twin matrix of covert operations and covert research projects forms the more general matrix of the breakaway civilization, and from it, in turn, arose another profound, and early, development, for the marriage of covert operations and covert research also fueled the quest for weapons whose deployment itself could be covertly masked as acts of God, or of nature. To put this point even more succinctly: *The covert operations mentality or "culture of plausible deniability" would seek a technological capacity to wage war against an enemy or its population undetectably and with plausible deniability. Thus, it would seek technologies liable to misinterpretation by their use, i.e., weather war, earthquakes, solar events and so on, or technologies able to directly modify the brain's interpretation of their use, including the eradication of the memory of their use, or of the subject's own use as a "Manchurian candidate."*[4] In short, the technology itself, like covert operations, becomes a product of the culture of "plausible deniability."

This presents also another essential factor in the evaluation of the technological aspects of the breakaway civilization and its covert operations and research activities, for its terrestrial preoccupation—the containment, engagement, rollback and defeat of the Soviet Union—and its "extraterrestrial" one—the UFO phenomenon—necessitates that the greatest effort will be sought to obtain technologies of capable of the greatest utility in dealing with both perceived threats. In this regard one need only think of the utility of spy satellites both to reconnoiter Soviet ICBM sites and other activities, and to monitor and track potential UFO events and activities in nearby space. In other words, this dual matrix implies that *both* motivations were crucial factors in the development of spy satellites and other secret space program technologies at the outset, and that to explain their development *solely* from the motivation of monitoring terrestrial ICBM and other military activity is a convenient and to some extent diverting explanation for what the ultimate and deeper purpose may have been.

---

[4] While I do not deal directly in this book with mind control technologies, I do propose a vast extension of the idea for radically different purposes in chapter twelve.

This may be illustrated by the geopolitical context of the Cold War in which the culture of "threat assessment" and its associated technologies—the high altitude high speed reconnaissance airplane, the spy satellite, and the deep robotic space probe—grew. The last point—robotic space probes—may seem unrelated to the first two unless we take into consideration the culture of threat assessment. L. Parker Temple III, in his scholarly and well-documented history of space reconnaissance technologies, stated this need in relationship to the national security structure in this fashion:

> The year 1952 approached without much increase in the danger. The CIA issued a revised NIE 48,[5] "Likelihood of the Deliberate Initiation of Full-Scale War by the Soviet Union." Unlike the contradiction of its earlier estimate, it concluded that deliberate initiation of an offensive by the Soviets was unlikely in 1952. The estimate also stated the conditions under which the Soviets might initiate a conflict: either the Soviet leaders had to believe that a Western attack on the Soviet Union was imminent, or, an irreversible power shift to favor the West was occurring.
>
> Far ahead of projections, the Soviets detonated their first thermonuclear device on 12 August 1953, with a yield of 400 kilotons. Despite U.S. hydrogen bomb yields in the megatons by that time, the detonation served notice that the Soviets could produce an indigenous device…. *The surprise was not quite another Pearl Harbor, but it underscored the U.S. need to have some means to learn what the Soviets were doing. Once more, Stalin's threat to surpass the United States came to mind.* The Soviets were narrowing the gap; when would they overcome it?
>
> The situation, when the year of maximum danger of 1954 had finally arrived, was that the chairman of the Joint chiefs of Staff (JCS) favored a joint military command for air defense. The recognition of the need, however, seemed a bit late in the face of intelligence estimates that had warned of the danger of Soviet attack. The CIA had changed its assessment, saying the likelihood of general war was increasingly unlikely before 1958. *The impact of the U.S. inability to see inside the Soviet Union was readily apparent. The need for reliable reconnaissance seemed to be more important as the predicted threat failed to materialize. Our estimates were wrong, but how wrong were they?*[6]

---

[5] NIE: National intelligence Estimate, ed.

[6] L. Parker Temple III, *Shades of Gray: National Security and the Evolution of Space Reconnaissance* (American Institute of Aeronautics and Astronautics, Inc., 2005), pp. 7-8, emphasis added.

The advent of nuclear and thermonuclear weapons was the game-changer, for it became essential to estimate any potential capabilities of other nations, and to do so required the development of the appropriate technologies.

As will be seen in the main text, this issue was very early on coupled with the modern advent of the UFO, since these appeared in part to be responses to, or reconnoitering of, terrestrial nuclear capabilities, and thus, in the creation of the technologies and culture of threat assessment, what was true of U.S. responses to the Soviet Union's development was even more true—for both countries—of the UFO and the potentialities it represented.

Note that there are three factors involved *and that each of these, considered alone and apart from the others, would have required enormous funding.* We have the following elements:

1) The need to establish a semi-permanent covert operations capability to engage, contain, roll back, and eventually defeat, the Communist bloc;
2) The need to develop and deploy the technologies of high altitude and space reconnaissance platforms in the form of spy satellites to assess the potential threat posed by the Communist bloc; and,
3) The need to develop and deploy the technologies of space reconnaissance platforms in the form both of spy satellites and deep space robotic probes to reconnoiter the possible bases of observed UFO activity, and to assess their threat. This would have been seen as a national security issue, apart from any considerations of the *origin* of the phenomenon, since UFO activity was closely associated with American (and presumably Soviet), defense capabilities and installations.

I have written elsewhere of this system of finance, and of the interface it required with the international criminal drug trade. Given the list outlined above, however, such a system by necessity would have to have been supplemented from other sources. Thus, as a consequence of the simultaneous emergence of these three things, enormous pressure was developed not only to create an independent system of finance, but this system had to be both an enormous system, and an utterly hidden and covert one. Since such funding could only be had either by massive increases of taxation—which would have raised inconvenient questions—or by massive fraud, then ultimately, it required—as will be discovered in the main text—the use of new kinds of fraud, on an industrial economy of scale, a scale implying the complicity both of certain prime banks(or at least of certain individuals within their management) and of various organs of intelligence, not only in order to make the fraud work, but also to maintain the system as a steady source of funding…

… and of profits. This element is also a major contributory factor to the culture of the breakaway civilization, for it means that its perpetuation will become a matter of vested interest (whether a threat really exists or not), as it is a source of tremendous profits to those participating in it.

Consequently it is this system, with all of its national security implications, that constitutes the ultimate though hidden source of the public culture of corruption so prevalent today. It necessitates likewise, as we shall see, the development of technologies for the covert monitoring of financial activity, and of any potential threat via any form of economic warfare to the fraudulent system being put into place, since that system itself is the lifeblood of the covert operations and technological arms of that civilization.

We may consider the massive scale of financing needed in such an operation by examining its UFO-related component from another perspective. On the view that UFOs would represent extraterrestrial interplanetary craft (or, worse, craft from outside this solar system), then it would appear to represent the achievements of possibly a Class I or Class II civilization on the Kardashev scale. For those unfamiliar with this scale, Kardashev was a Russian scientist who developed a classification system for potential extraterrestrial civilizations. A Class One civilization would be a civilization whose energy requirements were those of an entire planet. A Class Two civilization would be a civilization requiring the energy of an entire star. A Class Three civilization would be a civilization requiring the energy of an entire galaxy. In my previous works, I have slightly restated this, or developed a "corollary," and it is this corollary with which we are concerned here. The corollary may be simply stated as follows: the energy requirements of any particular Kardashev civilization class imply the technological ability to manipulate systems on a planetary, stellar, or galactic scale. It is therefore entirely possible that the UFO, understood as such a technology, requires the economic resources of at least a minimum of a Class One civilization to *produce*, and therefore, would require *similar* resources on the part of a human breakaway civilization to *study or reproduce*. But since our civilization is only on the cusp of becoming a

Class I civilization, its economic and financial resources, in the absence of an efficient energy technology such as fusion-based or zero-point energy based systems, would arguably not be sufficient to the task *unless a means or mechanism were contrived to vastly expand its financial resources by stimulating a vast though hidden expansion of credit, and a "suctioning" of hard assets to in order to emulate technologically the capabilities of UFOs.*

Thus, in addition to these *terrestrial* components, the end of World War Two also found the engagement of a wholly unexpected factor, one having massive technological and national security implications of its own for the emerging national security state: the UFO, or "flying saucer," and the potential it represented for a wholly *different* kind of national security threat: the extra- or non-terrestrial one. With this added factor, the covert operations-covert projects milieu had an additional geostrategic and financial burden to confront, and this factor also became part of the culture of the breakaway civilization.

It is also suggested throughout this book that the basic strategy by which the emerging breakaway civilization dealt with the Soviet Union via covert and psychological operations designed to (1) contain, (2) engage, (3) roll back, and (4) defeat, became also to a certain extent the basic paradigm by which it dealt with the UFO phenomenon. In other words, it is *the culture* of the breakaway civilization that is the crucial component to understanding its policies toward the UFO phenomenon. The Covert War against the Soviet Union to a certain extent also encompassed other potential "enemies," and became a covert war against an unknown target of a very different type. The black research inevitably implied by the UFO phenomenon and its interaction with the breakaway civilization also inevitably implied that it may function as a means of achieving the very technological end run around nuclear weapons and the strategic advantage sought against the Soviet Union.

Consequently, in any assessment of the nature of the breakaway civilization, or "deep state," or "secret team," or "secret government" or whatever one wishes to call it, it is an impossibility to divorce the world of covert operations from that of covert research, from the UFO, and from the covert financing undergirding these activities. This is an important clue as to the culture and structure of the breakaway civilization, for as Professor Peter Dale Scott observes, this means one is not dealing with a "conspiracy" in any classic sense of the term. It is not a structure with activities that are "self-contained" and thus "extrinsic to the basic sociopolitical structure of America, but an integral cause and part of a larger war machine, an apparatus with a settled purpose fixed on achieving and maintaining global American dominance."[7]

In this, we are now confronting its "total culture" of total power and full spectrum dominance, for by the nature of the case, the covert operations mentality will also give rise to the demand to *understand* the UFO phenomenon in order—if possible—to wage covert operations of containment (minimally), and rollback (optimally and if required) against it. This implies that not only could the UFO phenomenon be exploited for *terrestrial* psychological operations, as outlined in the previous book *Saucers, Swastikas, and Psyops,* but also that *psychological* operations *be initiated directly against the UFO phenomenon*, in addition to more direct technological confrontations.

b. The Total Culture of Total Power and Full Spectrum Dominance

Implicit in the survey of developments outlined above is another cultural phenomenon, indeed, one may view it in some respects as the key or defining cultural meme of the breakaway civilization. That factor is the "Total Culture of Total Power and Full Spectrum Dominance." It is a "Total Culture" because it is an all-pervasive and steady influence, a constant matrix in which its policies are formulated and its activities conducted. It is a culture of "Total Power" in that, in its effort to contain both perceived threats, it requires the manipulation of perceptions where it cannot control or directly confront the phenomenon (be it the Soviet Union, or the UFO), all the while pursuing the means—technological and otherwise—of doing precisely that. The manipulation of perceptions *of* something is, in itself, a means of acquiring power *over* it. The mentality of engagement, containment, rollback, and ultimate defeat is, of course, a long-term strategy, requiring the institutionalization and "enculturalization" of these goals, and from this arises a perpetual war machine, and a culture of power and dominance, a kind of perpetual warfare/welfare socialism.

Professor Peter Dale Scott, who has approached this phenomenon more or less exclusively from the standpoint of covert operations and the nexus between them and the international drug trade, puts this point in the following way:

---

[7] Peter Dale Scott, *American War Machine: Deep Politics, the CIA Global Drug Connection, and the Road to Afghanistan* (Rowman and Littlefield Publishers, Inc, 2010), p. 6.

> Today everything that has ever been labeled “invisible government” or “shadow government” can be considered parts of that machine—not just the CIA and organized crime but also such other nonaccountable powers as the military-industrial complex (now the financial-military-industrial complex), privatized military and intelligence contractors, public relations agents, media magnates, and even Washington’s most highly organized lobbyists.
>
> What we are describing is not just a neutral power apparatus but an apparatus with a settled purpose, a manipulative mind-set fixed on achieving and maintaining global dominance.[8]

While Scott is not writing about UFOs and their relationship to this deep-state, his assessment of its power-obsessed culture is worth noting since it is equally applicable to its approach to UFOs, for the common uniting feature behind such events as the Kennedy Assassination, or postwar “terrorist” and false flag incidents, to the overwhelming evidence of government suppression of information concerning UFOs, and to its relationship to the criminal underworld, or to postwar Fascists, is a “global dominance machine” or war machine, with resources both within and outside governments, “united not by conspiratorial oaths and handshakes but by a shared mentality and purpose.”[9]

This culture not only generates enormous corruption, but also a kind of psychopathological, or sociopathological, approach to the “overworld” with which it is still connected, for the culture of dominance creates an illusion which, as Professor Scott avers, is self-perpetuating; the culture of “dominance,” he states, “creates megalomanic illusions of insuperable control and… this illusion in turn is crystallized into a prevailing ideology of dominance.”[10] This culture, moreover, viewed from the standpoint of the “overworld” civilization with which it is still connected, is “delusional, indeed perhaps insane.”[11] This insanity, this delusional culture, stems, for its part, from the culture of covert operations and "plausible deniability."

---

[8] Peter Dale Scott, *American War Machine: Deep Politics, the CIA Global Drug Connection, and the Road to Afghanistan* (Bowman and Littlefield Publishers, Inc., 2010), p. 21.

[9] Ibid.

[10] Peter Dale Scott, *American War Machine*, p. 176.

[11] Ibid. As an example of the delusional insanity gripping what he calls the "financial-military-industrial complex," Scott cites the following passage from Carter Administration National Security advisor, and co-founder of the Trilateral Commission with David Rockefeller, Zbigniew Brzezinski, and his 1997 geopolitically delusional book, *The Grand Chessboard*:

B. Plausible Deniability: Covert Operations and Wars, the Engineering of Perception, and the UFO

As I contend in this book, and as I have suggested here in its preface, the UFO phenomenon affords the best entry into the culture and methodology of covert operations, the method called "plausible deniability" and deliberate perception management, for as will be evident in the main text, when confronted by their inability to completely understand much less control the UFO phenomenon, the breakaway civilization could at least manage *some* degree of control or dominance over it by means of the engineering of the public perception of it. Again, though not writing directly to the relationship of the UFO phenomenon to the national security state, and to its contribution to the emergence of that state as a kind of "breakaway civilization," nonetheless Professor Peter Dale Scott's remarks are equally applicable to this phenomenon, for one of that civilization's earliest and most consistently repeated denials was that the UFO posed no real national security threat or even concern, even while covertly it was behaving precisely as if it did. Professor Scott has noted that one hallmark of *any* civilization—breakaway or otherwise—is that it is "a great conspiracy of organized denial."[12]

"For the first time ever, a non-Eurasian power has emerged not only as a key arbiter of Eurasian power relations but also as the world's paramount power. The defeat and collapse of the Soviet Union was the final step in the rapid ascendance of a Western Hemisphere power, the United States, as the sole and, indeed, the first truly global power.

"For America, the chief geopolitical prize is Eurasia…. Now a non-Eurasian power is preeminent in Eurasia-and America's global primacy is directly dependent on how long and how effectively its preponderance on the Eurasian continent is sustained….

"To put it in a terminology that harkens back to the more brutal age of ancient empires, the three grand imperatives of imperial geostrategy are to prevent collusion and maintain security dependence among the vassals, to keep tributaries pliant and protected, and to keep the barbarians from coming together." (Citing Zbigniew Brzezinksi, *The Grand Chessboard: American Primacy and Its Geostrategic Imperatives* [New York: Basic Books, 1997], pp. xiii, 30, 40.)

[12] Peter Dale Scott, *American War Machine*, p. 3.

This "organized denial" is most evident in what Scott calls "Deep events," namely, those events that are either orchestrated and carried out by the breakaway civilization, or events whose public perceptions are managed and influenced by it. These "Deep Events" are:

> events that are systematically ignored, suppressed, or falsified in public (and even internal) government, military and intelligence documents as well as in the mainstream media and public consciousness. Underlying them is frequently the involvement of deep forces linked either to the drug traffic or to agencies of surveillance (or to both together) whose activities are extremely difficult to discern or document.
>
> A clearly defined deep event will combine both internal features—evidence, such as a discernible cover-up, that aspects are being suppressed—and external features—an ongoing and perhaps irresoluble controversy as to what happened. Some deep events—the 1968 assassinations, the Tonkin Gulf incidents, and 9/11—clearly have both features.[13]

These "deep events," moreover, are "better understood collectively than in isolation," for "when looked at together, they constitute a larger pattern,"[14] a pattern that constitutes a "deep history" of that breakaway civilization.

It is evident that the characteristics of such deep events are equally applicable to the UFO phenomenon, and that it indeed qualifies as such a "deep" event, and moreover, one of an ongoing nature. This is a crucial point, for many, in the wake of the collapse of the Soviet Union and an end to the Cold War, have questioned why the national security and military establishment was not ended, or at least dramatically curtailed. The answer must surely lie in part in the fact that that establishment was *not* founded solely to deal with the *Soviet* phenomenon, but also with the *UFO* phenomenon, which shows no sign of abating.

In any case, the nature of ongoing cover-ups and continued controversy over the interpretation of deep events implies that yet another technique and technology that the culture of dominance will want to acquire is the technique and technology of perception management, social engineering, and mind control, for these will afford the quickest and easiest way to dominate the UFOlogical phenomenon in a "soft" fashion, while it eagerly, simultaneously, and secretly seeks the means to engage and contain, and if it perceives it to be necessary, to rollback and ultimately to defeat it by the hard fashion.

---

[13] Ibid.

[14] Ibid.

In short, the breakaway civilization has been engaged in a cover *war* not only against the Soviet Union, and others, since World War Two, but has also been engaged in a covert war against the UFO phenomenon since World War Two, since both spring from a common cultural matrix and meme: total power, and total dominance.

1. Historical, Structural, and Factional Analysis of Components

In any analysis of the breakaway structure, one must discern its structural and factional components by the historical circumstances that led to their creation. While some of the these components and historical circumstances have already been alluded to previously, we need to take note of the following points. *Historically*, the matrix of the breakaway civilization drew from the following arrangements and events:

1) The nexus or interface between the Anglo-American financial and intelligence elite, and their World War Two Nazi and Fascist counterparts, as exemplified by:
    a) The wartime agreement struck between U.S. intelligence mandarins and German military intelligence general Reinhard Gehlen;[15]
    b) The implicit agreement between the Anglo-American financial oligarchy and the postwar "Nazi International" to launder Nazi plunder through western banks, an agreement implied by the composition and implied purposes of the early Bilderberger meetings and other events;[16]
    c) The ties between American intelligence, the Texas oilmen Hunt and Murchison, and General Gehlen's organization;[17]

---

[15] General Reinhard Gehlen, *The Service: The Memoirs of General Reinhard Gehlen*, trans. from the German by David Irving (New York: Times-Mirror, 1972), pp. 121-123. See also my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, pp. 75-79.

[16] For this point see the discussion in my *Babylon's Banksters: The Alchemy of Deep Physics, High Finance, and Ancient Religion* (Feral House: 2010), pp. 64-79; see also my *Nazi international: The Nazis' Postwar Plan to Control Finance, Conflict, Physics, and Space* (Adventures Unlimited Press: 2008), pp. 302-308.

[17] See my *LBJ and the Conspiracy to Kill Kennedy: A Coalescence of Interests* (Adventures Unlimited Press: 2011), pp. 48-58, 151-171, 180-186.

  - d) The pre-war German-American business ties that were, for all intents and purposes, resumed after the war.[18]

As I have outlined these components of the breakaway civilization in previous books, they will not be reviewed at any length here save in cases where it is necessary. But in addition to these relationships, this book will outline the following historical circumstances and events in the evolution of the breakaway civilization:

2) A similar interface or nexus of relationships as obtained between the postwar Anglo-American elites and the surviving Nazi and European Fascists also emerged between American elites and the elites of the Far East. This appears to have occurred in two distinct phases:
    - a) A pre-war arrangement between Nationalist Chinese generalissimo Chiang Kai-Shek and the American financial oligarchy; and,
    - b) a postwar nexus between the Japanese yakuza, zaibatsu, and the Japanese Imperial family. Unlike the corresponding nexus between the American elite and the postwar European Fascists, a nexus that encompassed the whole spectrum of interfaces between the American intelligence-and-covert operations complex, the American military-industrial black projects complex, and the American financial elites, and their corresponding Nazi and Fascist counterparts, the nexus between the Japanese elite was *initially* mediated much more narrowly by contact with the American military and covert operations complex;
3) Additionally, all of these interfaces are in turn linked to the international criminal underground drug trade, and this mediation occurs directly via the involvement of the American intelligence-covert operations complex, but also through the involvement of the Fascist International and Oriental components;
4) Finally, the matrix of the breakaway civilization arises from the vast complex of secret weapons projects that arose during World War Two, particularly in the United States and Nazi Germany,

---

[18] See my *Saucers, Swastikas, and Psyops: A History of a Breakaway Civilization: Hidden Aerospace Technologies and Psychological Operations* (Adventures Unlimited Press: 2011), pp. 141-178.

and with their effective fusion via Operation Paperclip after the war. Effectively this represents the corporatization of advanced research having an impact on military and national security matters.

Consideration of these general factors reveals the basic *structural components* of this breakaway civilization:

1) The *financial* component, comprised of Central Banks and Prime banks in the west, and major brokerage houses. These constitute the *interface* between the breakaway civilization and the "overworld" or public civilization. This component is also comprised of financial institutions deliberately established by the intelligence-covert operations complex in order to enable its activities more directly, and to exercise more direct control and security over them. As outlined previously in this preface and elsewhere in my works, there are at least three major components of the financing of this structure, beginning with the most visible and least secure, to the deepest level:
    a) Black budget financing via budget loopholes and reallocation within the public budget of the host state (the USA);
    b) Financing through criminal activity, including economic warfare activity against various nations, and also particularly via the drug trade; and,
    c) At the *deepest* level, a completely hidden system of finance involving massive securities and bullion fraud and re-hypothecation, in part to create massive leverage for the financial oligarchies, and in part to raise the enormous sums required by the technological components connected to Soviet and UFO threat assessments outlined above;
2) The covert-operations-intelligence-military complex, which uses part of these funds to sponsor massive operations, initially to engage, contain, rollback and eventually defeat the Soviet Union, and more recently to suborn other nations to become host nations supporting the breakaway structure, literally leveraging a buyout of the world (possibly as a necessary response to a perceived UFO threat); and,
3) a corporate-technological, or military-industrial complex comprising the scientific, aerospace and other technological components.

Before moving to a consideration of the *factional* components of this breakaway civilization, it is worth pausing to note its inherent instability as revealed by the above three *structural* components, for clearly, each component and the elites running them are a potential threat to the others, and the real power in the structure ultimately rests with those who know how to create and manipulate the technology.

This instability is a crucial factor in consideration of the *factions* of the structure revealed in the historical review. We have encountered the following factional interests:

1) The financial oligarchy, represented by
    a) the Central Banks and Prime banks of the nations involved (principally, the USA, UK, France, Japan, Italy, Germany, and other western European, North, and South American banks). Note here not only the continued existence of *national* factional interests, but of *regional* ones, as for example, between the USA for one part, the UK for another, and the continental European for a third;
    b) the "Front" banks created more directly by the covert operations intelligence complex and more directly under its control and influence;
2) The *International* Fascist component;
3) The *Japanese* component; and,
4) The *international* criminal syndicates and drug cartels.
5) The *American* intelligence-covert operations-military-industrial complex.

It is thus evident from a consideration of this list of factions that the structure is thus not only inherently unstable from a *component* point of view, but that there are internal stresses upon those components created by the national, geopolitical, class interest and cultural points of view that each faction brings to the table. Consider for example the second structural component: the covert-operations-intelligence complex. A quick glance at it will reveal that it is comprised of American, European, and criminal underground factions, each interfaced with each other. The best analogy to this overall structure, therefore, is that of the Mafia itself, each *capo* having a jurisdiction or territory, each structural and factional component being a "family." These "families" can gather around one table to discuss business and plan their activities, while at another level, when their individual factional interests are threatened, they can go to war with each other.

Or, to view it in a different and deliberately mathematical way, we are dealing with networks of secret and hidden regions of component interests and organizations, whose interfaces or common surfaces are detectable in the personnel that overlap between them, performing this set of functions in one area, and that set in another. These common surfaces can arise and dissipate between components and factions of the structure according to the dictates of the circumstances of the moment, as the sets of functions and interests of the one overlap with those of another, sometimes creating enormous amalgamations and alliances behind the deep events of history, as with the JFK assassination. And in other cases these common surfaces can remain more or less semi-permanent nodes within the structure itself.

Rightly then, this organization is a segmented poly-centric integrated network, and a truly international phenomenon, organized around a dominant American core in its intelligence, covert operations and research, and military activities.[19] But it can thus give rise to, and has given rise to, serious factional infighting.[20]

2. A Crucial Common Surface, or Interface:
The Office of Policy Coordination

As outlined above, one of the crucial defining features of the breakaway civilization, and one that will initially preoccupy us in the first part of the main text, is a vast and *entirely hidden* system of finance, a system, moreover, in more-or-less direct control of the intelligence and covert operations mandarins. This system, once again, emerged in the immediate postwar period with the creation of the national security state, as Professor Peter Dale Scott notes:

> One of the first acts of the newly created National Security Council in 1947 was to launder “over $10 million in captured Axis funds to influence the (Italian) election (of 1948).” This use of off-the-books financing for criminal activity *was institutionalized in 1948 with the*

---

[19] The financial, drug, and technological aspects may be, and I suspect are, far more internationalized and may no longer be under "American" control. This is a point for discussion among researchers concerned with this topic.

[20] One need only think, regarding this point, of the phenomenon of the split between the Northeastern establishment "globalists" and the more openly Fascist-leaning "American Empire" builders of the "cowboys" of Texas and California, often commented upon by researchers of the American elite. See, for example, Peter Dale Scott, *American War Machine*, pp. 208-209.

> *creation of a covert Office of Policy Coordination (OPC)*, whose charge it was to engage in "subversion against hostile states."[21]

As Professor Scott also notes, the Office of Policy Coordination was established by *direct* order of the National Security Council; no authorization from, or role for, Congress was ever in view.[22] With this action, covert operations, intelligence, and criminal high finance became *directly* intertwined.[23]

The crucial step in this process was the issuance of the National Security Council's directive 10/2, dated June 18, 1948. This directive created the "total culture of total power and dominance" and the criminal culture that went with it, for this directive

> …gave the CIA's newly created OPC the task of carrying out "covert operations," among which were listed "subversion against hostile states, including assistance to underground resistance movements, guerillas and refugee liberation groups."
>
> At this moment OPC, authorized to engage in crimes, secured allies in its fight against communism by establishing backdoor links to professional criminal organizations, above all in the drug traffic. Relationships that had been sporadic before World War II became institutional and protected.[24]

European researcher Daniele Ganser, in his masterly survey of NATO's "stay behind" guerilla warfare commando units, puts the role of this crucial national security directive even more forcefully, as we shall discover.

The success of covert operations in the Italian elections of 1948 lead President Truman and his advisors to begin to see covert operations as an effective and more or less *permanent tool of statecraft*, and, in so far as they are related to the breakaway civilization beginning to emerge at this time, they become its *standard method* of operation:[25] the covert operations and wars of a covert civilization. Ganser sites much of NSC

---

[21] Peter Dale Scott, *American War Machine*, pp. 8-9.

[22] Ibid., p. 26.

[23] Professor Scott also points out that Allen Dulles established a private intelligence *corporation* in the postwar world, enlisting British intelligence guru William Stephenson, and American banker and oilman Nelson Rockefeller in the scheme. See *American War Machine*, p. 27.

[24] Peter Dale Scott, op. cit., p. 28.

[25] Daniele Ganser, *NATO's Secret Armies: Operation Gladio and Terrorism in Western Europe* (London: Frank Cass, 2005), p. 54.

10/2, and the reader, while reading this memorandum, should also note the peculiar ambiguity of its language in certain phrases, phrases that could be equally applicable to the UFO phenomenon:

> NSC 10/2 directed that OPC shall 'plan and conduct covert operations'. By 'covert operations' NSC 10/2 designated all activities 'which are conducted or sponsored by this government against hostile foreign states or groups or in support of friendly foreign states or groups which are so planned and conducted that any US Government responsibility for them is not evident to unauthorized persons and that if uncovered the US Government can plausibly disclaim any responsibility for them.'[26]

Such methods of integration of covert operations into overall strategic planning and statecraft are heavy with implications for the subject of UFOs, and how these also mightily impelled the organization of the breakaway civilization, for the integration of covert operations created an inherently *long term offensive viewpoint* within that civilization, the viewpoint reflected in (1) engagement, (2) containment, (3) rollback, (4) defeat.[27]

Since direct confrontation of a powerful enemy such as the Soviet Union was not possible, any such confrontation had to be via mercenaries, proxies, and cut-outs, and as will be contended in this book, a similar approach was therefore even more heavily implied for the UFO phenomenon. One cannot emphasize enough once again that the approach to both potential threats emerged from a common cultural view.

With this very high, very speculative overview in mind, it is now time to begin our journey through the fog-filled hall of mirrors, and with its most fundamental component: financing, and fraud.

Joseph P. Farrell
From somewhere, 2012

---

[26] Ibid.

[27] For this consequence, see Peter Dale Scott, *American War Machine*, p. 9.

PART ONE:
SEQUERE PECUNIA:
FINANCING FICTION, AND FICTITIOUS FINANCING, OR, COUNTERFEITING FOR FUN, PROFIT, AND WORLD DOMINATION

"In 1946, Tisserant received the Argentine Cardinal Caggiano to organize the escape of French-speaking war criminals to Argentina."
Uki Goñi, *The Real Odessa*, p. xv.

"For some days the affair has been in the limelight. Importantly, at the time of the bonds were seized it was not possible to determine whether the US government bonds and US Federal Reserve certificates were real or fakes.
"...(S)ome were so well made that it was hard to tell them apart from real ones.
"Also inside the agents found extensive and detailed original bank documents about the bonds.
If the latter were real the two Asian men had in their possession (although not necessarily in their ownership) a big chunk of the US debt which would have made them the fourth largest creditors of the United Sates."
http://www.asianews.it/news-en/Mystery-surrounding-134.5-%E2%80%9Cfake%E2%80%9D-billion-US-dollars-seized-in-Ponte-Chiasso-remains-15556.html
(Asia News is a Vatican-associated News service)

1

COUNTERFEITING, COVERT OPS, AND *KONZENTRATIONSLAGERN*: THE POSSIBLE POSTWAR SURVIVAL OF OPERATION BERNHARD

"Kaltenbrunner immediately arranged a private interview with Hitler, whom he saw a few days later. He reported the start of dollar production, showed his samples, which the Führer apparently approved."
Anthony Pirie[1]

There is in place, and has existed since World War Two, a vast, and almost completely hidden, system of finance within the world, and this system of finance has been used to fund the breakaway civilization in all its factions and all its activities, activities which include covert operations of all varieties, from overt and covert warfare—of all types—both on this planet, and off, to psychological operations, targeted at those both on this planet and… "elsewhere." This vast mechanism additionally supports the research and black projects that make its fantastic technologies possible.

It is a system, however, that at its root is based upon vast fraud and the collusion of public institutions of government and corporations, and more simply, robbery, for the covert financing for the breakaway civilization began as a series of three things, and came about by dint of a combination of those three things through historical circumstance, elitist opportunism and planning, and just plain luck. These three factors are:

(1) a state-sponsored case of industrial-scale counterfeiting during World War Two, which, as luck would have it, became at least part of the inspiration for the post-war fraud;
(2) several state-sponsored cases of vast looting of the conquered, specifically:
   (a) Imperial Japan's looting of Asia;
   (b) Nazi Germany's looting of Europe;
   (c) America's technology-transfers from a defeated Germany to the USA; and,

---

[1] Anthony Pirie, *Operation Bernhard* (New York: William Morrow and Company, 1962), p. 233.

(3) the nexus of collusion between post-war American intelligence factions with the financial, military, intelligence, and scientific elites of the defeated Axis powers, and with the financial and corporate world of the post-war West.

Of course, we are far from saying that this breakaway civilization does not have its counterparts in the former Soviet Union, or contemporary Russia or China, but it is our contention that the most advanced form of it took root in the West, during World War Two, and took root on both sides of the conflict, among the Allies, and particularly in the United States, and in the Axis powers of Germany and Japan.[2] After the war, this breakaway civilization took on elements of the elites both of the victors and the vanquished, and, I believe, the outlines of those factions can still be faintly discerned within as the post-war detente between those factions breaks down into "open" covert economic warfare between them. But that is another story.

For the present, we remain focused on the first component of this vast system of fraudulent or fictitious finance, the finance that makes possible the "fiction" of mind-boggling human technologies, technologies which in turn open up vast new vistas of covert warfare. This first component—industrial scale state-sponsored counterfeiting—begins, as most such stories do, in Nazi Germany, shortly after the outbreak of World War Two.

A. Operation Bernhard

1. Naujocks and the Beginning of Operation Bernhard

Economic warfare, including the counterfeiting of an opponent's coins or currency, has always been a form of warfare, and because of its covert nature, one readily engaged in both by combatants in a conflict, and by third parties not wishing to challenge a powerful geopolitical player overtly. With the advent of the printing press and paper money, however, vast quantities of money could be in circulation, and counterfeiting as a mechanism of economic warfare could only be effective if transformed to industrial scale.

---

[2] This is not, for a moment, to say that Fascist Italy did not form its own vast untold story of "the *real* history" of World War Two, for indeed, this author strongly suspects there is a deeply hidden aspect to the Axis atom bomb project that is centered around Mussolini's Italy, but that is the subject for a detailed examination that cannot be undertaken here. By excluding Italy from this consideration here, however, I mean only to point to the *cultural* implications outlined in the preface, that the other two principal Axis powers, by dint of their black projects and willingness to jettison humane values and utilize slave labor and human subjects in their experiments, and to make genocide (whether against Russians or Chinese) an actual war aim, were forming the *cultural* basis and moral context for the breakaway civilization.

This was done shortly after the beginning of World War Two, and on a scale hitherto undreamed of, a scale only outclassed in more modern times by the sheer audacity of the "bearer bonds scandals" of the first two decades of the twenty-first century. Nonetheless, in terms of sheer scale and an audacious, breathtaking vision of what state-sponsored industrial counterfeiting might accomplish, and to what uses it might be applied, the Nazis were there first, even though they had plenty of ancient, mediaeval and more recent precedent.[3]

SS *Sturmbahnführer*, or Major, Alfred Naujocks, a close associate of infamous SS General Reinhard Heydrich, contacted one Dr. Landau to study the feasibility of mass counterfeiting of British pound notes as a response to a clumsy British forgery of German food and clothing ration cards.[4] Because of his close association with Heydrich, it was Naujocks who was tasked with orchestrating the false flag attack on a German radio station with concentration camp prisoners who were placed into Polish military uniforms and executed so that Hitler could use this attack as a pretext for launching the invasion of Poland and the beginning of World War Two.[5]

In any case, Dr. Landau was initially put off by Naujocks' idea of mass-producing counterfeit British pound notes, since the notes were thought to be virtually counterfeit-proof.[6] Naujocks ordered Dr. Landau to make a study of the matter and report back to him within 48 hours:

---

[3] For the ancient and mediaeval precedent, see my *Babylon's Banksters: The Alchemy of Deep Physics, High Finance, and Ancient Religion* (Feral House, 2010), pp. 202-205, and my *Financial Vipers of Venice: Alchemical Money, Magical Physics, and Banking in the Middle Ages and Renaissance* (Feral House, 2013), chapter 8.

[4] The British forgeries were so bad the German authorities did not even bother rounding up the faked ration cards, for the frauds were easily detectable by the average German, who simply turned them into the authorities. (See Anthony Pirie, *Operation Bernhard* (New York, William Morrow, 1962), pp. 1-2.

[5] Adolf Burger, *The Devil's Workshop: A Memoir of the Nazi Counterfeiting Operation* (London: Frontline Books, 2009), p. 124.

[6] Pirie, op. cit., p. 5.

> In forty-eight hours, Landau reported back that pound notes could be forged virtually undetectable from the original. It was possible but very difficult. Mass-production forgery would be even more difficult. Naujocks thanked Landau, and immediately made an appointment with his chief, Reinhard Heydrich, Head of the all-powerful Security Service and one of the most feared men in Germany.[7]

Not surprisingly, Heydrich, given his "character", was more than interested in Naujocks' industrial scale counterfeiting proposition, and immediately issued a directive, a directive that carried with it profound implications.

SS Sturmbahnführer (Major) Alfred Naujocks:
This Picture was taken by Americans after Naujocks' Desertion in 1944

---

[7] Anthony Pirie, *Operation Bernhard*, p. 5.

2. Heydrich's Directive

Before issuing his directive, however, Heydrich prepared a memorandum outlining the proposal to present to Hitler, who approved the plan, but with strict handwritten instructions added to Heydrich's memorandum as a marginal note: no U.S. dollars were to be counterfeited, only British pounds, as the Third Reich was not (yet) at war with the U.S.A.[8] This proviso in hand, Heydrich composed an official order for the operation, initially code-naming it *Unternehmung Andreas* (Operation Andrew), detailing quite specific instructions for Naujocks.[9]

> Naujocks read and reread the *Geheime Reichssache* (Reich Top Secret) file,[10] until he knew the main points by heart. Heydrich specifically stated: "This is not to be forgery or counterfeiting in the usual sense, but *unauthorized facsimile* ***production****. The notes must be such a perfect copy of the original that even the most experienced British banknote experts cannot tell the difference.*" The job was broken down into three separate parts: 1. production of paper identical with the British; 2. preparation of plates to print notes identical in color and design; 3. working out a proper numbering system.[11]

Adolf Burger, who was himself one of the concentration camp inmates who was eventually recruited by the SS to work on the counterfeiting of pound notes, and whose book, *The Devil's Workshop* must be consulted for any true appreciation of the extent of what would eventually be known as Operation Bernhard (*Unternehmung Bernhard*), puts all these points—including the translation of Heydrich's directive—slightly differently:

> The first details were contained in instructions declared 'top secret', which Naujocks received from Heydrich. 'This is not a question of forgery or imitation in the usual sense but it constitutes *unauthorized* ***production*** *(of sterling notes). The notes must be so*

---

[8] Anthony Pirie, *Operation Bernhard*, p. 6.

[9] Ibid.

[10] It should be pointed out that *Geheime Reichssache* literally means "secret state matter", but it was the equivalent classification within the Third Reich of "Top Secret"(USA) or "Most Secret" (UK).

[11] Pirie, op. cit., p. 7, italicized and boldface emphasis added.

> *close to the original that even the most experienced sterling note specialists would not be able to detect any difference.'*
>
> This called for something extraordinary. It was a task that could only be completed with comprehensive technical expertise and with the greatest circumspection. When 'Operation Andreas', as it was first called, started in 1941, it was without precedent.
>
> This production of duds demanded the following:
>
> 1. First, paper had to be produced that exactly replicated that on which English notes were printed.
> 2. Printing plates had to be made up that could reproduce the tiniest details.
> 3. Mathematicians would be needed to work out the numbering system used by the Bank of England on its notes.
> 4. *A worldwide distribution network would have to be set up.*[12]

The phrase "unauthorized *production*" says it all, for it implies nothing less than that Nazi Germany was going to become an off-the-books, hidden supplier of banknotes to the Bank of England. In short, Nazi Germany was *at war not only with Great Britain, but more importantly, with the British financial elite.* Germany was attempting to erect a hidden system of finance, one ultimately designed to wreck the British war economy.

3. Industrial Scale Production and the Implications: A Permanent Counterfeiting Bureaucracy

It was indeed industrial scale production, mass-produced, and mass-marketed, counterfeiting, using all the international resources of the German security services. It is important, for our purposes, to note this connection between financial and monetary fraud, and intelligence bureaucracies, for it is a pattern we will encounter again—on an even larger scale still—in the pages ahead. Nor, as will be shortly seen, was wrecking the British economy the only goal, for once the counterfeiting production apparatus was in hand and in production, the Nazis soon found other uses for the structure.

It is also equally important to notice a second thing about *Unternehmung Bernhard*, or Operation Bernhard, as it eventually came to be code-named, and that is that the SS had established a *counterfeiting bureaucracy* whose task it was to *reverse engineer the process of issuing*

---

[12] Adolf Burger, *The Devil's Workshop: A Memoir of the Nazi Counterfeiting Operation*, pp. 128-129, emphases added.

"legitimate" British pounds sterling notes. They had created a structure for the *technological examination* of how to counterfeit British currency, and once in place, the *method* could then be applied to any other currency. Like all such government structures, this would become, in effect, a *permanent counterfeiting bureaucracy*, and with the survival of Nazism after the war as a kind of extraterritorial state,[13] it was inevitable not only that the operation could continue under Nazi auspices and the criminal elements that it aligned with, but also that it could form, perhaps, the inspiration for similar undertakings on the Allied side of the war, as will be seen.

4. A Modern Historical Precedent, and Further Implications

Germany was, of course, not the first country to view the idea of counterfeiting as a form of economic warfare. Indeed, Great Britain flooded revolutionary France with facsimile *assignats*, the paper money of the French revolution, from 1790-1796 in an effort to derail the revolution.[14]

More importantly, Germany itself became involved in state-sponsored counterfeiting in the 1920s, before the Nazis ever came to power, when a scheme was devised to forge French francs and Soviet rubles as a mechanism to relieve the crushing burden of war reparations. It is this effort to forge French francs that is connected with another state-sponsored counterfeiting ring, this time, in Hungary…

Heydrich's directive establishing Operation Andreas/Bernhard created a huge enterprise. And the production problems of such an enterprise are, as one might imagine, immense, and these will be shortly reviewed. But there is an equal if not even more difficult problem that had to be overcome, especially in wartime: how would Nazi Germany get such "facsimile"[15] notes into circulation? Heydrich was alive to this difficulty, and consulted with an SS security service specialist, Dr. Willi Holten, who in addition to being an historian based in Vienna, was also closely connected to the Vatican (and with that, we have the introduction of another player in the financial aspects of the breakaway civilization).

---

[13] For this idea, see my *The Nazi International* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2008).

[14] Adolf Burger, *The Devil's Workshop,* p. 122.

[15] I am adopting the term "facsimile" here to denote the difference between such notes and ordinary counterfeit notes. The distinction will become quite important in the remainder of this part of the book.

Heydrich, through an intermediary, ordered Holten to produce a paper entitled “An Investigation into the Hungarian Franc Forgery Affair with Full Details and Background Information.”[16]

This little-known affair concerns the attempt by members of the Hungarian elite, many of them conservatives, to counterfeit French francs—again on a massive scale—to fund their restoration in the aftermath of World War One and the forced disintegration of the Austro-Hungarian Empire. Holten, with only a month to complete the task Heydrich had ordered him to finish, consulted old newspaper morgues in the city for information on the affair, and eventually sought and obtained permission to travel to Budapest to consult with his contacts in Hungary.

His friends, however, refused to provide any information, and attempted to dissuade Holten from interviewing the principal figure involved in the forgery scandal, Prince Windischgrätz “who had been beggared and disgraced by it.”[17] Undettered, Holten sought and obtained an interview with the prince. Windischgrätz agreed to answer detailed questions but stipulated that no detail be published “until after the disappearance from public life of the many prominent people involved, such as Admiral Horthy.”[18] Lest we forget who Admiral Miklos Horthy was, he was eventually the regent for Hungary, in effect, a dictator, and a virtual puppet of Adolf Hitler for much of the war. In other words, the eventual ruler of Hungary and a former flag officer of the Austro-Hungarian navy, had been involved in a scheme to counterfeit French francs after World War One.

In any case, Holten, who was compiling the secret report for Heydrich, had nothing to lose by consenting to Windischgrätz’s stipulation, since the report would never be published anyway, and so he agreed to the condition.

The prince told Holten that beginning in 1919, the Hungarian elite had founded a secret society called Eksz, whose goal was to recover “the two-thirds of Hungary which had been lost to it under the Treaty of Trianon,”[19] the treaty which concluded World War One between the Allies and Hungary. The goals of this secret society, in other words, were political. It funded its covert activities, Windischgrätz said, primarily through counterfeiting operations, counterfeiting Czech and Rumanian currencies. Eventually, Windischgrätz himself was recruited to oversee the forgery of French francs, and the then-Hungarian primeminister Count Bethlen had "cooperated by supplying official buildings for the purpose."[20]

---

[16] Anthony Pirie, *Operation Bernhard*, p. 12.

[17] Ibid., p. 13.

[18] Ibid.

[19] Ibid.

Unfortunately, the notes were not of sufficient quality to be undetectable, and the first attempt to circulate them not only ended in a complete failure, but the Bank of France was able to trace the forgery to Budapest, where, making its own secret inquiries, it was able to collect enough evidence to force a trial. "Prince Windischgrätz and others were asked to sacrifice themselves to save the government."[21]

For our purposes of the moment, it is crucial to note the pattern here: a secret society or faction with close ties to a government was engaged in more-or-less officially and secretly sanctioned counterfeiting in order to fund a political goal, a goal in itself that had to remain covert, since it was a goal that flew directly in the face of the established geopolitical order dictated by the Allies after the end of World War One. This, too, is a pattern that we will see repeated again, on a much larger scale, after World War Two, and again, in conjunction and connection to intelligence agencies and "secretive societies" engaged in secret state-sponsored counterfeiting.

We will return to the problem of distribution in a moment, but now our attention must shift to the other three problems of the operation, the problems of paper, plates, and quality control; we must consider the problems of production.

5. Production and Quality Control

The lessons of the Hungarian franc-forgery episode obviously hovered in the background of Heydrich's directive that the Nazi facsimile sterling notes be undetectable, and this inevitably posed problems for the counterfeiters somewhat different from ordinary counterfeiting. The ordinary counterfeiter wants notes that can pass the examination of an ordinary individual. Heydrich effectively wanted his facsimile notes, optimally, to pass the scrutiny of the Bank of England itself, and, failing that, at least to give it endless headaches and difficulties.

This Naujocks readily appreciated, and hence, he turned to the SS officer who would eventually lend his name to the counterfeiting operation, SS *Sturmbahnführer* (Major) Bernhard Krüger, who was assigned to the SS's personal documents forgery workshops. Naujocks had wanted Krüger to test the reliability of Nazi forged Swiss passports, and Krüger selected a non-commissioned officer and sent him to Switzerland using one of the passports. Unbenknownst to the "volunteer" for this operation, Krüger himself had alerted Swiss authorities to be on the lookout for him, and told the Swiss he suspected that the man was travelling with a false passport, which, of course, he was. The man was promptly arrested and detained by the Swiss, who sent the passport to Berne, where it was "examined by every known test, and then returned with profuse apologies to the young man,"[22] who was released and eventually returned to Germany.

---

[20] Anthony Pirie, *Operation Bernhard*, p. 13.

[21] Ibid.,

The SS's forged Swiss passport had passed the thorough scrutiny of the one nation in Europe that most zealously guarded its official documents.

By this time, the decision had been taken to forge British five pound notes, though eventually the operation would expand to cover ten, twenty, and fifty pound notes. This decision taken, the next problem was one of intelligence, for Naujocks now had to dispatch agents to Britain to determine how many five pound notes had been issued during the previous twenty years, and "the date, the designation (a letter and number), the number and Chief Cashier's signature" on every note.[23]

It is worth pausing to consider this very important point, for again, it will become a crucial component to the argument in chapters ahead. Recall that Heydrich's directive specifically required that the facsimiles be "unauthorized production" of notes that were undetectable. They were, in effect, to *be* British pound notes, but not notes that had ever come from the Bank of England's printing presses. Thus, in addition to the normal two components of any counterfeiting operation:

1) Production of the "product"; and,
2) Distribution of the "product";

there was added a third:

3) Accurate *intelligence* concerning the actual amount of *genuine* product issued.

---

[22] Anthony Pirie, *Operation Bernhard*, p. 16.

[23] Ibid., p. 17.

This element of intelligence or "insider knowledge" will become in the chapters ahead a key signature of state-sponsored fraud, counterfeiting, and facsimile production.

SS Sturmbahnführer (Major) Bernhard Krüger,
by whose name the counterfeiting operation eventually came to be known

a. Reverse Engineering the Sterling Banknote Paper

The first production problem was the British banknote paper itself. Work on reproducing it proceeded slowly because it "soon became clear that it would have to be made by hand."[24] Nonetheless, Naujocks had assembled a team to reproduce the first samples of paper by early 1940.[25] It was this team that produced a paper that to the naked eye and even under microscopic examination was undetectable from real British banknote paper.[26] But ultraviolet light "revealed a defect,"[27] namely, the genuine British banknote paper under ultraviolet was a vivid lilac color, but the facsimile Nazi paper was a much duller lilac color.[28] Heydrich's directive had called for "undetectable unauthorized production" of facsimile sterling notes, and thus, such paper would never do, since the British bank examiners—if they suspected counterfeit pounds—would certainly subject notes to ultraviolet examination. The search was soon on to clear up the problem:

---

[24] Anthony Pirie*, Operation Bernhard*, p. 9.

[25] Ibid., p. 10.

[26] Ibid.

> At this point, someone discovered that the "pure" flax supplied for linen manufacture by German producers was not 100 per cent pure, and that such pure flax was unobtainable in Germany. Landau discovered that Turkish flax was "pure," so a few tons of it were imported.
>
> Paper made with rags from Turkish flax very nearly, but not quite, matched the original (British banknote paper). With the scientific experts helpless, Naujocks solved the problem by common sense. He reasoned that British paper makers almost certainly used second-hand but thoroughly clean linen; the Germans used brand-new material. Was that the trouble? Linen woven from Turkish flax was sent for use as cleaning rags to various factories. When thoroughly dirty, the rags were returned, cleaned and made into bank-note paper. This proved by any known test to be identical with the genuine article.[29]

The paper production problem thus solved, actual production of the paper was handed to Hahnemühle mill in Berlin.[30]

The next problems to be solved were:

b. The Watermark, the Fonts, and the Plates

British banknotes of the period contained a watermark of wavy lines, of deliberately varied thickness, that required the SS counterfeiting operation to reproduce molds for the watermarks that were made from wires of varying thickness.[31] A glance at actual Operation Bernhard five, ten, twenty, and fifty pound notes will show this feature:

---

[27] Anthony Pirie, *Operation Bernhard*, p. 10..

[28] Ibid.

[29] Ibid. For Burger's much more detailed account of the fiber content of British paper and the reproduction of it, see Adolf Burger, *The Devil's Workshop*, p. 131.

[30] Adolf Burger, *The Devil's Workshop*, p. 144.

[31] Ibid., p. 131.

Bank of England
18632 to pay the Bearer 18632
the Sum of Five Pounds
1942 Jan. 14 London 14 Jan. 1942
For the Gov. and Comp. of the
BANK of ENGLAND
Five
K.O. Peppiatt
Chief Cashier

Operation Bernhard Five Pound Note, with Clearly Visible Watermark

Bank of England
K/104 67622 to pay the Bearer K/104 67622
the Sum of Ten Pounds
1932 March 19 London 19 March 1932
For the Gov. and Comp.a of the Bank of England.
K/104 67622
Ten
B.G. Catterns
Chief Cashier.

Operation Bernhard Ten Pound Note

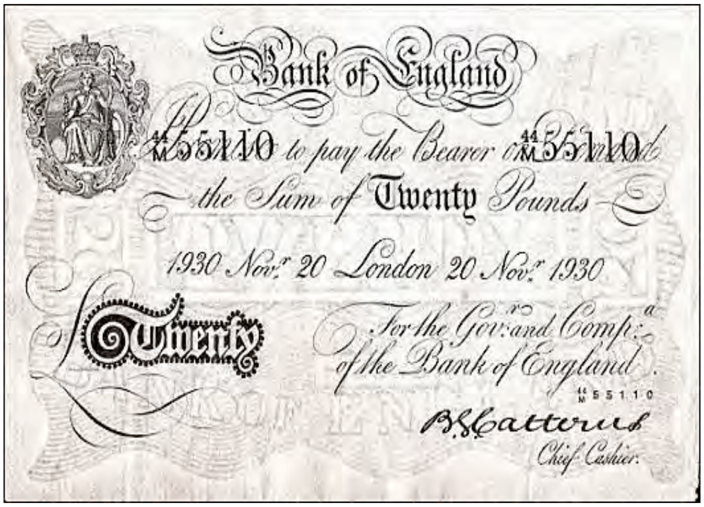
Bank of England
44 M 55110 to pay the Bearer 44 M 55110
the Sum of Twenty Pounds
1930 Nov.r 20 London 20 Nov.r 1930
£ Twenty
For the Gov.r and Comp.a of the Bank of England.
44 M 55110
B.G. Catterns
Chief Cashier.

Operation Bernhard Twenty Pound Note; Again, the Watermark and Its Complexity are Faintly Visible

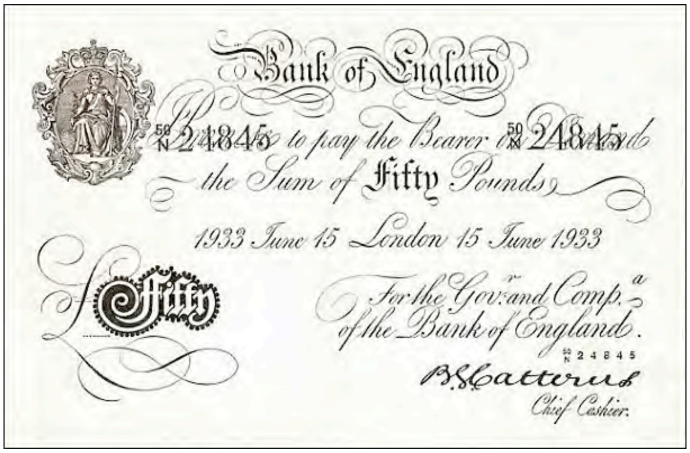
Bank of England
50 N 24845 to pay the Bearer 50 N 24845
the Sum of Fifty Pounds
1933 June 15 London 15 June 1933
£ Fifty
For the Gov.r and Comp.a of the Bank of England.
50 N 24845
B.G. Catterns
Chief Cashier.

Operation Bernhard Fifty Pound Note, While the Watermark is barely visible, it is of the same type of style as that on other British sterling banknotes

The watermark problem solved, the final one was that of the fonts, images, signatures, and printing of the notes themselves, and of course these problems were eventually overcome, and facsimile pound note plates were produced. One gains a measure of the industrial sized scale of production by examining the amount of facsimile British pound notes that Operation Bernhard printed during the war:

£5 notes:	£19,729,330	or 3,945,866 notes
£10 notes:	£23,989,800	or 239,898 notes
£20 notes:	£26,746,680	or 1,337,334 notes
£50 notes:	£64,145,000	or 1,282,900 notes
Total:	£134,610,810	or 6,805,998 notes[32]

I have quoted Burger's figures here because they are conservative. Other sources give the total amount of Nazi facsimile pound sterling notes as being around £300,000,000, and there are even higher amounts that are sometimes cited. But even on Burger's amounts, such figures obviously mean that the SS operation was not a typical "hidden office" or "garage" counterfeiting operation, so where was it conducted?

As most people who have studied Operation Berhnhard are aware, the actual forgery was conducted by conscripted counterfeiters—inmates of concentration camps otherwise slated for slave labor and eventual extinction- who were accorded special privileges, increased food rations, and who worked at block 19 at the Sachsenhausen concentration camp outside Berlin. It was literally "a camp within a camp,"[33] whose privileged prisoners were surrounded and cut off from the rest of the camp by a seven foot high wooden wall and barbed wire, with controlled access subject to the approval of the project's new head, Major Bernhard Krüger, who had selected each man from camps throughout occupied Europe for his "unusual skill in composing, engraving, printing or foreign exchange banking."[34]

Krüger also took elaborate steps to ensure quality control of the "product:"

> The newly printed forgeries were examined nearly a dozen times on glass-topped desks illuminated from beneath, by three groups of inspectors using very high-power magnifying glasses. The first group assessed the note's printing and color, the second, the watermark, the

---

[32] Adolf Burger, *The Devil's Workshop*, pp. 146-147.

[33] Anthony Pirie, *Operation Bernhard*, p. 29.

[34] Ibid..

> third, the combined effect of printing, color and watermark. On these criteria, the notes were divided up into three quality classes. Only (Ernst) Kaltenbrunner, (Walther) Schellenberg and (Friedrich) Schwend knew the real significance of the classification. *Quality I notes were used solely for German agents in enemy countries; Quality 2 for collaborators in occupied countries, for dubious business deals and for black market operations*; Quality 3 notes were kept for small deals with unimportant people and for any miscellaneous need which might arise.[35]

Note that the classification of Quality 1 and 2 notes implies that they were of high enough quality in order to be able to pass undetected, particularly by German agents in enemy countries, for passing counterfeit currency in any quantity was certainly to cast suspicion on the passer of such currency, and thus, these notes had to be of the finest quality. Similarly, Quality 2 notes had to be of high quality, since using the black market as a means of distribution would insure that such notes would eventually pass into British hands and undergo close scrutiny. This is also a clue on the byzantine cunning with which Operation Bernhard notes were circulated, for they were circulated by means and methods *nominally illegal under Nazi occupation*. In other words, the "enemy" and his ultimately underground and "illegitimate" channels of circulation were employed to circulate the notes!

Burger, however, presents a slightly different classification scheme, but one that tends to the same result:

> The finished notes were divided into four categories. First-class forgeries went into the first category. The second contained notes with slight, almost invisible flaws. In the third category were notes with printing errors: these were to be dropped over England by German planes and would serve to devalue English currency. The fourth category was for poor-quality forgeries, which were destroyed. The selected notes were then dirtied and crumpled, to make them look like used notes. Then they were put in bundles of 500 and entered in the register again.[36]

As we shall see however, the Germans never resorted on any large scale to dumping their hard-won forgeries by the simple expedient of drops from airplanes. More effective means of distribution were found.

---

[35] Anthony Pirie, *Operation Bernhard*, p. 58, emphasis added.

[36] Adolf Burger, *The Devil's Workshop*, p. 148.

In any case, it remained to be seen, prior to the first mass distribution of the facsimiles, if the Quality 1 notes would indeed past the scrutiny of the most severe experts.

> …Naujocks felt ready for the supreme test. He got Krüger to provide a sheet of notepaper with the forged heading: "Deutsche Reichsbank, Forgeries Department," used it for a letter with an illegible signature, sent for a trusted agent, gave him the letter, twenty brand-new five-pound notes and detailed instructions.
>
> The agent went to a bank in Switzerland where his large account ensured him excellent attention. He produced his bundle of British notes and his letter from the Deutsche Reichsbank asking Swiss help in deciding whether or not the notes were forged. In three days, he got his reply—the notes were unquestionably genuine. Pretending, as instructed, to be still uncertain, the German asked the Swiss to check with the Bank of England if his notes had actually been issued. The Bank replied that they had. Still feigning uncertainty, the customer took back his money and returned to Germany.
>
> This good news made Naujocks say that that date, March 1, 1941, was "the proudest day of my life."[37]

Using a Swiss bank was the next-best choice for testing the notes after the Bank of England itself, for as Swiss banks were then among the world's top international banks, detection of counterfeit foreign currency was a requirement and service of any normal Swiss bank. Once the categorization had occurred, all the forged notes, their quality control category determination, denomination, and serial numbers, were entered into a registry.[38] This, too, is an important point, for as we shall see, it is a hallmark of state-sponsored "facsimile production" that someone, somewhere, *knows* it is a fraud, and why.

B. The International Distribution Networks and Uses of State-Sponsored Currency Facsimile Production

1. Friedrich Paul Schwend

But what of the distribution of this "facsimile fortune"?

Ultimately, distribution fell to Friedrich Paul Schwend, a German businessman with contacts throughout the world, including China, and, of course like so many German international businessmen, South

---

[37] Anthony Pirie, *Operation Bernhard*, pp. 18-19.

[38] Adolf Burger, *The Devil's Workshop*, p. 148.

America.[39] Because of his experience, Schwend came to the attention of, and eventually acted as a consultant, to Reichsmarschal Hermann Göring in his capacity of overseer of the Reich's Four Year economic plans. It was Schwend, in fact, who first proposed that the Operation Bernhard facsimiles be used to fund covert intelligence operations on a worldwide scale,[40] though this was not immediately acted upon.

Freidrich Paul Schwend, Mastermind of the Distribution, here seen with his second wife

---

[39] Anthony Pirie, *Operation Bernhard*, p. 25.
[40] Ibid.

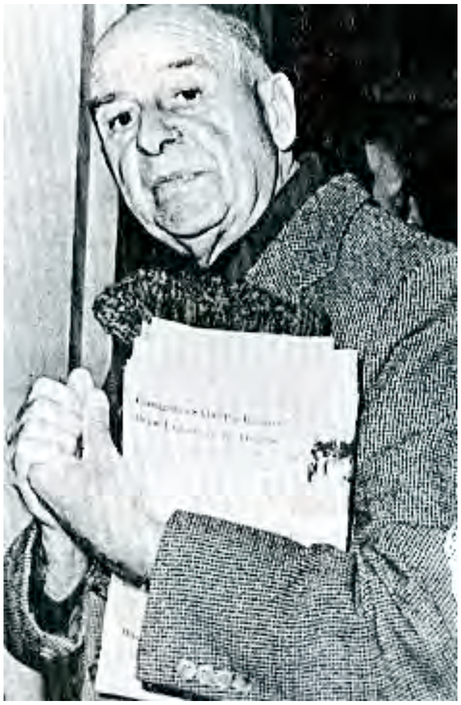

Friedrich Paul Schwend Later in life, during the period he was living in Peru

Nonetheless, Schwend persisted, even pointing out that by using such facsimiles as a basis for funding of covert activity, Nazi intelligence *would be free of any reliance upon state financing; it would have its own independent mechanism of finance*,[41] and to that end, he proposed a vast network of "agencies, sub-agencies, and representatives" all coordinated from a central office, a "sort of international bank"[42] based upon counterfeiting and facsimile money, a shadow "Bank of England, Nazi Branch!" At one point, this network even included Yugoslavia's partisans, from whom the SS would purchase arms, using the forged facsimile notes![43] Schwend also expanded the network to Swiss banks, since the Quality 1 notes had already passed muster, converting the facsimiles to real hard currency.[44] This is also an important point, for it illustrates the necessity, in any "industrial scale" counterfeiting operation: a "neutral point of entry" for the facsimile monies—or, as we shall see later, securities—is needed to ensure their "authenticity" and hence their convertibility into real money. This process was further aided and abetted by seeding *genuine* notes with the facsimiles when being converted to other hard currencies.[45]

---

[41] Anthony Pirie, *Operation Bernhard*, p. 38.

[42] Ibid.

[43] Ibid., pp. 30-31.

[44] Ibid., p. 32.

Schwend's distribution network was so vast that his agents could be found in Africa, the USA, Argentina, Chile, Brazil, Uruguay, the Honduras, Japan, China, India, every European country, and, under his cover as a technical assistant to the German Embassy to the Vatican,[46] Schwend maintained close ties to that entity, and doubtless to its bank, the Institute for Religious Works. This is, as we shall see, not the only time we will encounter the Vatican's involvement with dubious financial dealings, and Nazis.

2. The Postwar Ties and Possibilities

Schwend's proposition that the Operation Bernhard facsimile money be used to provide Nazi intelligence an independent (and, so long as the scheme went undetected, nearly inexhaustible) source of funding independent of the Reich itself suggests the possibility that the operation continued in some form or fashion after the war, for even though the concentration camp inmates who provided the technical expertise would no longer have been available to the operation, the basic techniques and the hardware of industrial-scale counterfeiting had been perfected. It is additionally a well known fact that the Nazis did indeed hide much of the facsimile money and the plates used to produce it in various places in Europe after the war, indicating at least the *intention* of having the operation survive, presumably as a source of post-war Nazi covert activities. Additionally, Schwend's conversion of the Operation Bernhard facsimiles to real hard currency assets strongly suggests that his role in the operation was to aid in the preparation of the Nazi plans for the strategic evacuation of Europe and continuation underground after the war, by converting the facsimile money to real hard currency.

These possibilities gain additional strength when one considers the odd relationships of Schwend himself. He was, for example, related by marriage to Edouard Bunge,[47] part of the Bunge family corporation, which, of course, did business in Argentina under the company name of Bunge and Born. Bunge and Born was one of the leading companies to profit by massive stock manipulations just prior to the assassination of President Kennedy, suggesting to many (including this author), a connection to that event.

---

[45] Anthony Pirie, *Operation Bernhard,* p. 34.

[46] Adolf Burger, *The Devil's Workshop*, p. 154.

[47] Ibid., p. 153.

Just how large was Schwend's operation? Just how much, really, did Operation Bernhard and Schwend's distribution network accomplish? Burger, whose "conservative" figures we have cited previously, states that "By the end of the war the forged money would have amounted to 40 per cent of the authentic money in circulation."[48] Forty per cent, or, to put it more crudely, almost *half* of British money in circulation. Indeed, so much was in circulation that the Bank of England was simply forced to redesign all its banknotes completely after the war.

C. Conclusions

An interesting pattern has now emerged, and it is a pattern that will only grow in coming chapters and become more and more evident:

1) State-sponsored counterfeiting, or, to put it with Heydrich's more accurate, and chilling, phraseology, "unauthorized production" of undetectable facsimile banknotes was undertaken on an industrial scale, to the point *that the fraud became a significant part of the circulating money supply, and could only be removed with difficulty*;
2) Initially conceived as a means of economic warfare, Friedrich Schwend changed the motivation and purpose of the operation completely, by suggesting that such industrial scale forgery was a means of the virtually inexhaustible, and *independent*, means of financing Nazi intelligence and covert activities. It is a very short step from this realization, to the realization that it could be an independent funding mechanism for black research projects as well. *It is therefore the funding mechanism itself—via industrial scale counterfeiting—that forms the link between covert operations and covert research projects*;
3) Such independent funding also allowed the possibility that any such intelligence bureaucracy and/or secret research entity could conceivably, by dint of any such vast "unauthorized production" enterprise, become virtually independent of its controlling state

---

[48] Adolf Burger, *The Devil's Workshop*, p. 155.

and its financial institutions, whether public or private. Indeed, the Hungarian episode of forging French francs after World War One *began* as an effort of a disenfranchised elite more or less independently of the Hungarian government, but quickly came to rely on that government. It is conceivable therefore that, with sufficient *scale*, such a fraudulent enterprise could co-opt or at least greatly influence the financial sovereignty of a nation and its public and larger private financial institutions;

4) In the distribution of such facsimile money, it was crucial to have one or more "neutral points of entry" into the circulation stream, such as would be provided by banks with long practice in international banking. As was seen, this was accomplished through Switzerland and the Vatican.

As we will see in the coming chapters, these two "neutral points of entry" will recur in the story again, but to see how, we must journey forward in time, before, eventually, journeying back in time and half a world away from Europe, where the other Axis partner was constructing the other pillar of the finance of a breakaway civilization. Like Operation Bernhard, which reverse engineered the British pound sterling banknotes, we are having to reverse engineer a vast and hidden system of finance being used for vast and covert purposes. We have seen one of the players in this structure—Nazis. Now it is time to look at other players, namely, banks, and bishops…

2A

BEARER BONDS, BULLION, BISHOPS AND BANKSTERS:

OR

COSA NOSTRA CON MEN, COUNTERFEITERS AND CARDINALS, PART ONE

"Tisserant waved that away. He was not at all concerned, he said, nor were any of those he had discussed this with. They all agreed that the American government would never accuse the Vatican of knowingly dealing in counterfeit stocks and bonds."
Richard Hammer[1]

The burden of the next three chapters will be to argue the case that industrial scale counterfeiting—or to use Heydrich's more accurate description, "unauthorized production of undetectable facsimiles" of money and securities—survived World War Two to become the favored method of the independent financing of the covert research and operations of the breakaway civilization. Like that civilization itself, this mechanism of finance, while deeply fraudulent, interfaces with the "real" world of public institutions to the point that it is part of what Professor Peter Dale Scott would call the "deep politics" of the age.

To put this point more succinctly, Operation Bernhard, at least conceptually, survived World War Two, as did the Fascist ideology which gave it birth. However, as will be suggested in the coming pages, there is also the possibility that it survived World War Two as a component of the post-war Nazi International, and interfaced with similar operations being conducted by quasi-independent or rogue groups within the American military-industrial-intelligence-finance complex, and with counterfeiting operations being conducted by the international criminal underground.

This is to say that the major factional structure of the breakaway civilization, in so far as its *financial* underpinnings are concerned, is composed of the following elements:

1) As noted above, a "rogue" or "deep political" element within the American military-inductrial-intelligence-finance complex.

---

[1] Richard Hammer, *The Vatican Connection*, p. 212.

While the national composition of this faction is predominantly American and reflective of the dominant role of the U.S.A. within the global geopolitical situation, this faction has strong ties to similar oligarchical interests within Great Britain, and may be referred to as the Anglo-American elite. As an adjunct structure to this faction, one would also, for completeness' sake, have to mention that this elite interfaces with the elites of other countries—Japan, Germany, France, and so on—whose geopolitical, economic, and cultural interests are seen to coincide with that of the Anglo-American faction;

2) the international criminal underground, or Cosa Nostra, or Mafia;
3) an international Fascist element, or "Nazi International".

In this and the next two chapters, this factional structure, representing the major financial interests and commitments, will become clearer by an examination of…

A. The Bearer Bonds Scandals
1. The Japanese Bearer Bonds Scandal
a. General Comment

At the outset of our exploration of the "bearer bonds scandals," and their vast implications, it is important to bear a few principles in mind.

Suppose, for a moment, that someone is the member of a ring of counterfeiters intent—as all counterfeiters are—at making money by using counterfeit bills to buy a small item, and to receive "real" money in change. The technique is simple: the group has counterfeited a small quantity of twenty, fifty, or one hundred dollar bills, and has then used those bills to make small purchases, and receiving change from the cashier. Thus do counterfeiters make money.

This short overview contains within it the three essential methodological assumptions of any counterfeiting scheme:

1) One does not counterfeit something that does not currently exist as a medium of exchange, or that is not convertible into it. For example, it would be pointless to go to all the effort to produce a three dollar bill, for while they were once briefly issued by the Republic of Texas for the brief period of its existence, they are not now legal currency. Similarly one would not produce a four pound bill, or a seven yen bill, for such denominations of

currency do not exist. *One only counterfeits, or mimics, something real*.

2) Similarly, one does not counterfeit five hundred, one thousand, five thousand, or ten thousand dollar bills, for while such denominations *are* genuine and *were* in circulation, two reasons would preclude the typical counterfeiting ring from making counterfeits of such large denominations. First, since the whole point of counterfeiting is to gain real currency in change for a transaction in which a counterfeit bill is tendered, normal transactions would preclude the use of large denominations for that reason, and additionally, the general use of such large denominations is not widespread and would attract attention. Large denominations are legal tender and have been circulated, but they are not *generally* circulated. Their use would draw suspicion. Secondly, large denominations would lie *outside* the normal affluence of the target group. One would not tender a five hundred dollar bill to purchase a roast and a few vegetables, and expect to get change easily. *One only counterfeits what one can reasonably expect to tender in a transaction to a target group, and thus must tailor its counterfeit function to the target's scale of affluence, and do so without raising suspicion.*
3) It follows from the two previous considerations that one must produce a "product" that is of sufficient quality to pass the scrutiny of the target group. *One does not go to the expense and effort of producing a fraudulent product that cannot be used because it*
   a) *does not exist, or*
   b) *is too large a denomination to be traded with the target group, or*
   c) *is too poor in quality to be traded.*

   To state the point differently, *quality must be sufficiently high to ensure "first sight" acceptance of its authenticity by the target, even though it is not authentic.*

b. Special Considerations of Industrial Scale Counterfeiting

The situation changes somewhat when the context is "industrial scale" counterfeiting, as was seen in the previous chapter, for problems of distribution arise that a typical counterfeiting operation does not encounter. Additionally, the situation changes if the target group is to be the very wealthy. In this instance, instruments of very large denominations, usually securities—stocks, bonds, and so on—become the favored vehicle. But a problem arises. The very wealthy will be much more cautious about parting with their (authentic) money, and the higher the denominated value of the counterfeited instrument, the more cautious the target group is likely to be. Additionally, a wealthy target group is likely to be privy to the existence of instruments most ordinary people do not even know exist, and are also able to call upon private intelligence resources to verify information. Nonetheless, the principles remain the same: one does not counterfeit what does not exist, and every effort must be made to present the "product" in as genuine a way as possible. There is, however, at this juncture an important additional consideration: since in this case one is counterfeiting much larger denominated instruments, one can only do so by dint of a similar access to information about various securities that is not generally available to the wider public. Trade in instruments of ten, twenty, fifty, or a hundred million dollars, or half a billion or a billion dollars, occurs at a rarefied level accessible only to a very few, and hence, any counterfeiting done at this level must likewise have access to information about that trade and the instruments traded. But the principle remains:

One does not counterfeit what does not exist.

Or to put that point even more subtly:

One does not counterfeit something that the very wealthy do not suspect exists, or know to exist.

With these thoughts in mind, we may now examine the first of the Bearer Bonds Scandals.

c. The Japanese Bearer Bond Scandal

On June 18, 2009, the website *AsiaNews.it-en* ran the following story:

> *Mystery Surrounding 134.5 "Fake" Billion US Dollars Seized in Ponte Chiasso*
>
> Milan (AsiaNews)—US government bonds seized by Italy's financial police (*Guardia di Finanza*) at Ponte Chiasso, an Italian town on the border with Switzerland, are "clearly fakes," Stephen Meyerhardt, spokesman for the US Bureau of the Public Debt, is quoted as saying in a news report by the *Bloomberg* agency. *AsiaNews* contacted the divisional headquarters of Italy's financial police in Como, which is responsible for Ponte Chiasso, asking for an explanation but none has come forth yet.

For some days the affair has been in the limelight. Importantly, at the time of the bonds were seized it was not possible to determine whether the US government bonds and US Federal Reserve certificates were real or fakes.

Right after the seizure Colonel Mecarelli, *Guardia di Finanza* commander in Como, said that for at least some of the securities, especially the 'Kennedy Bonds', there were doubts about their authenticity. As for the others, some were so well made that it was hard to tell them apart from real ones.

The seizure was carried out two weeks ago. The bonds were in the possession of two Oriental-looking individuals in their fifties with Japanese passports. The two men, were travelling from Milan to Chiasso, in Switzerland, on a local train used primarily by Italian workers commuting to-and-from Switzerland for work.

At the customs office both men said they had nothing to declare but a check by financial police agents revealed a false bottom in their respective suitcases, each containing a fortune in US securities.

Also inside the agents found extensive and detailed original bank documents about the bonds.

If the latter were real the two Asian men had in their possession (although not necessarily in their ownership) a big chunk of the US debt which would have made them the fourth largest creditors of the United Sates.

Despite what US Treasury spokesman Meyerhardt said, and until more information is forthcoming from Italy's financial police in Como for *AsiaNews* the mystery is still there.

Under Italian law when law enforcement agencies seize fake bonds or counterfeit money they are under the obligation to arrest the bearers. And in order to avoid misappropriation, the agency seizing the material, in this case the financial police, must quickly proceed to its destruction (i.e. incineration).

However, in case of real securities, after the securities holders are identified, the financial police must release them immediately after issuing a statement of confiscation and imposing a fine valued in this case at € 38 billion (US$ 53.4 billion). In this case, why were the two men released right away without any fine imposed?

That is not the only discrepancy. It is not clear how statements by US Treasury spokesman Meyerhardt and Italian financial police can be reconciled. For the former the bonds "are clearly fakes"; for the latter, speaking at the start of this whole affair, some bonds were indistinguishable from the real ones when it comes to quality and detail.

Italy's *Guardia di Finanza* has a reputation for being a highly specialised and expert financial police agency. How could it be so

> easily duped! And if the bonds are "clearly fakes" why did it take US authorities two weeks to find out.
>
> Another discrepancy is the fact that, along with the securities, original and recent bank documents were seized as proof of their authenticity.
>
> If what Meyerhardt says is true, some major financial institutions have been deceived by the securities carried by the two Asian men. This would be a bombshell and raise serious questions as to how many bank assets are actually made up of securities that for Meyerhardt are "clearly fakes."
>
> If counterfeit securities of such high quality are in circulation the world's monetary system, let alone that of the United States, is in danger. International trade and exchanges could come to a halt.
>
> Whether it is counterfeit money or money laundering, what happened is potentially more dangerous for the stability of the international system than the results of Iran's elections.
>
> If the bonds are real it means someone with a lot of cash no longer trusts the US dollar as a reserve currency. If this is the case then it would spell the end of the Bretton Woods system and most likely negatively impact world trade.
>
> Unfortunately the international press and main TV networks, with some exceptions, have ignored the whole affair. These days this is actually the real news.[2]

Asia News was not the only media source to pick up the story, as it was repeated throughout Europe, but strangely, it was almost completely absent in the American media. Briefly covered, it was forgotten by the major media, but certainly not in the alternative research community. Interest grew until the point that even President Obama, during a press conference, had to issue bland assurances that the recovered bonds were nothing but fakes. As this and the next two chapters will suggest, there may be deep covert reasons to suspect that they were not.

d. My Own Personal Coverage of the Story

As *Asia News* and others were reporting the story, there appeared to me to be problems, and I began to follow this story on my website where I posted a number of articles on the Japanese, and subsequent Spanish, Italian, and Filipino bearer bonds scandals, which are reviewed here.

---

[2] http://www.asianews.it/news-en/Mystery-surrounding-134.5-%E2%80%9Cfake%E2%80%9D-billion-US-dollars-seized-in-Ponte-Chiasso-remains-15556.html.

In a series of articles entitled "Japan: Connecting Some Dots", I outlined what the anomalies of the Japanese bearer bonds scandal were. As outlined in the *Asia News* and other sources, the basic story is as follows:

"On June 3, 2009, the Italian financial police, the *Guardia di Finanza,* seized two Japanese men who were traveling by an early train into Switzerland at the border town of Ponte-Chiasso. The two men were travelling on a train heavily populated by Italian workers commuting into the country for work. The two men were apprehended carrying a briefcase with a false bottom, which contained 249 bearer bonds in $500,000,000 denominations, plus ten so-called "Kennedy bonds", each denominated with the unheard of value of $1,000,000,000 each. Some of the $500,000,000 bearer bonds were dated as far back as 1934.[3] This date, as we shall see later in this chapter and again in chapter 4, is a crucial component to the story.

"As the story unfolded in the press, various U.S. government sources were quoted as stating that no bearer bonds in five hundred million dollar denominations were ever issued by the U.S. government. Yet, according to the media stories, even though these statements were being made, "the Italian authorities at the time of the arrest were waiting for the U.S. Securities and Exchange Commission to make a declaration as to their authenticity."[4] This, though I did not know it at the time, was an important clue that indeed the Italian authorities may have known something.

"Indeed, the anomalies of the story only grew. Bloomberg and a number of other sources, including *Der Spiegel* in Germany and *Asia News*, reported the almost "Heydrich-like" quality of the bonds "were all so well executed that they were 'indistinguishable from the real ones.'"[5] Others began to notice the anomalies and inconsistencies in the story, J.S. Kim among them (I reproduce his important internet article here for completeness' sake):

Strange Inconsistencies in the $134.5 Billion Bearer Bond Mystery

---

[3] Joseph P. Farrell, "Japan: Connecting Some Dots, Part One: the Strange Case of the Bearer Bonds," April 25, 2011, http://gizadeathstar.com/2011/04/japan-connecting-some-dots-part-one-the-strange-case-of-the-bearer-bonds/.

[4] Ibid.

[5] Ibid.

Here's yet another huge financial story that has been virtually blacked out by the US financial media. Although on the surface, this story appears to be a non-event, if we consider some of the released facts about this case, you will understand why I consider it to be a huge story. On June 8th, the Asia News reported the following story:

"Italy's financial police (Guardia italiana di Finanza) has seized US bonds worth US 134.5 billion from two Japanese nationals at Chiasso (40 km from Milan) on the border between Italy and Switzerland. They include 249 US Federal Reserve bonds worth US$ 500 million each, plus ten Kennedy bonds and other US government securities worth a billion dollars each. Italian authorities have not yet determined whether they are real or fake, but if they are real the attempt to take them into Switzerland would be the largest financial smuggling operation in history; if they are fake, the matter would be even more mind-boggling because the quality of the counterfeit work is such that the fake bonds are undistinguishable from the real ones."

Here are just a few fascinating facts about this case (at least they are being reported as "facts" at this current time):

(1) Though the smugglers have been identified in the press as "Japanese nationals" there has yet to be any confirmation if the smugglers were indeed Japanese or of some other ethnicity. How difficult is it to confirm the ethnicity of the smugglers and why is this information being kept secret?

(2) According to a brief Bloomberg article regarding this story, the seized bearer bonds allegedly were dated as of 1934. Since bearer bonds in denominations of $500 million did not exist in 1934, the bonds were deduced as fake, though the Italian police are still waiting for a declaration regarding the bonds' authenticity from the SEC. There is something truly "off" about this declaration. How can the quality of the forged bearer bonds be so meticulous that they "are indistinguishable from the real ones", yet the people involved in the alleged forgery so ill-informed as to not date the bearer bonds with a more recent year that would not immediately identify them as fraudulent? How hard would it have been to date the bearer bonds with a more recent year? An equivalent analogy would be if an expert art forger meticulously re-created a Picasso oil canvas and then erroneously signed the work with the wrong artist's name. This story just does not add up.

(3) The Bloomberg story also reported that there is no known existence of the alleged 10 Kennedy bonds that were discovered in the smuggler's suitcases, each with a denomination of $1 billion. Again, this discovery defies any logical explanation. Why would expert counterfeiters make 249 bearer bonds with denominations of $500 million apiece, each indistinguishable from the real thing, and then instead of just making 20 more such bonds, decide to make 10 bonds in

denominations of $1 billion a piece in a bearer bond design that has never existed? Were the alleged counterfeiters just too lazy to confirm if Kennedy bearer bonds were ever a legitimately issued security? Again, this story makes no sense.

(4) On March 30, 2009, the US Treasury Department announced that USD $134.5 billion remained in its Troubled Asset Relief Program [TARP]. The stated amount of seized bearer bonds was $134.5 billion. Coincidence?

(5) The two well-dressed Japanese men opted to travel to Chiasso on a local train normally full of Italian manual laborers commuting to Switzerland. If they were really intent on successfully smuggling these bonds, counterfeit or real, why would they not take more care to select a travel route in which it was literally impossible for them not to stick out like two sore thumbs? Again, this part of the story defies all logic.

(6) The bearer bonds were discovered in a hidden briefcase compartment after a customs inspection. Again, if the bonds were indeed authentic and owned by a nation state, they could have been transported in a diplomatic pouch exempt from customs searches that would have guaranteed transport without detection. Thus, all of the above irreconcilable and illogical points, other than the coincidence of the amount of the bearer bonds exactly matching the remaining TARP fund amount declared on March 30th, seem to indicate that not only were the seized bearer bonds counterfeit, but also that the smugglers were intent on being caught. Before I continue, let's review the purpose of bearer bonds.

Here is the Wikipedia definition of bearer bonds:

"A bearer bond is a debt security issued by a business entity, such as a corporation, or by a government. It differs from the more common types of investment securities in that it is unregistered—no records are kept of the owner, or the transactions involving ownership. Whoever physically holds the paper on which the bond is issued owns the instrument. This is useful for investors who wish to retain anonymity. The downside is that in the event of loss or theft, bearer bonds are extremely difficult to recover."

If you recall the Michael Mann movie "Heat", starring Robert DeNiro and Al Pacino, during a daring daytime armored car robbery, the criminals specifically targeted millions of dollars of bearer bonds for theft precisely because of the above qualities of bearer bonds that make them very difficult to trace. Again, due to the properties of bearer bonds, it seems highly unlikely that $134.5 billion of bearer bonds would be transported, if they were real, by two men with no security, since theft almost guarantees that they would be lost forever.

Thus far, about the only piece of information that appears to be reliable as reported by various news sources regarding this huge mystery is the remarkable authenticity of the 249 seized bearer bonds in denominations of USD $500 million. If any of the other facts, as they are being reported, are remotely accurate, then the bearer bonds were likely counterfeit. Still, the interesting part of this story, at least to me, is that the smugglers seemed intent on being caught with the counterfeit bonds. This leads me back to my previous question. What possible reason would the smugglers have for wanting to be caught? One of the quickest ways to sabotage and usher in the death of a currency is to raise legitimate questions about its ability to withstand counterfeiting efforts. Prove that counterfeiting is not only possible but highly likely, and the world's confidence in the sabotaged currency will undoubtedly plummet.

In fact, this very tactic was applied during World War II when the Nazis launched Operation Bernhard in an attempt to crash the British economy by producing, by 1945, 132 million expertly counterfeited British pounds, a figure that represented roughly 15% of all real British pounds in circulation at the time. The counterfeit pounds were produced by expert printers and engravers supervised by an SS officer named Bernhard Krueger. As well, historical evidence exists that the Allies considered launching a counter-counterfeit plan against the Nazis as well. During this time, it was also alleged that the Bank of Italy counterfeited their own money by issuing the same securities twice with identical registered numbers and codes in order. The purpose of this counterfeiting was to secretly expand monetary supply without public transparency or accountability. Perhaps then, this $134.5 billion bearer bond mystery was an attempt of a nation state to shake the world's confidence in the position of the US dollar as the world's reserve currency.

There should be little debate that the world's emerging economies in Russia, Brazil, China and certain Gulf Nations are at economic war today with the world's Western nations and their economic allies. The currency war being fought today is sure to get much uglier in the foreseeable future, in both open tactics as well as secretly executed tactics. Currently, if the currency war were the world series of poker, the US and the UK would be holding a pair of 2s and relying on nothing but bluffs to keep the rest of the world at bay. Conversely, the Chinese and other emerging nations with large surpluses would be holding straight or royal flushes, and likely quietly maneuvering to go "all in" at some point.

Given that the discovery of $134.5 billion of bearer bonds in the suitcases of two Japanese nationals in Chiasso, Italy on the border of Switzerland qualifies as one of the largest smuggling operations in history, and given the various implications of such an act and the possible players involved, the silence regarding this huge story is simply stunning. It is not a huge story, per se, because of the counterfeiting operation, because accusations and revelations of

> massive money counterfeiting operations have occurred in the past. It is a huge story, rather, due to all the inconsistencies of the story and the potential explanations that could explain these inconsistencies. The larger story at hand is, who are the players (nations) involved, and what was the intention of this likely counterfeiting operation? Maybe the future will reveal the answers to these questions. But maybe not.[6]

As Kim notes, how can one maintain on the one hand that the bonds were so flawlessly executed as to be indistinguishable from the real thing, and yet counterfeit denominations that did not ever exist not according to American securities experts? Moreover, as Kim also notes, the billion-dollar "Kennedy bonds" were never known to exist at all, so a similar problem, though larger, looms with respect to them. The inclusion of the ten fake "Kennedy" billion dollar bonds among a stash otherwise "flawlessly executed" would only serve to draw attention to the possibility that the other bonds were forgeries. Kim asks the logical question:

> …(This) discovery defies any logical explanation. Why would expert counterfeiters make 249 bearer bonds with denominations of $500 million apiece, each indistinguishable from the real thing, and then instead of just making 20 more such bonds, decide to make 10 bonds in denominations of $1 billion apiece in a bearer bond design that never has existed? Were the alleged counterfeiters just too lazy to confirm if Kennedy bearer bonds were ever a legitimately issued security? Again, this story makes no sense.

Others quickly pointed out other anomalies. For example, on March 30, 2009, barely sixty days before the Italian authorities seized the smugglers, the U.S. Treasury reported that its Troubled Asset Relief Program had exactly $134.5 billion" remaining, exactly the amount seized in Italy.

At this juncture, I commented as follows:

> This fact led some to speculate that, in fact, the bonds—including the so-called Kennedy bearer bonds—were *real*, but that they had been secretly issued by elements in the American government to keep the economy afloat. Others continued to maintain the counterfeit story. Some began to advance the argument that the Treasury's announcement

---

[6] J.S. Kim, "Strange Inconsistencies in the $134.5 Billion Bearer Bond Mystery," June 16, 2009, http://seekingalpha.com/article/143462-strange-inconsistencies-in-the-134-5-billion-bearer-bond-mystery.

in March of 2009 would have allowed two months for forgerers to counterfeit the exact amount of bonds and then allow them to be caught, in a murky economic warfare operation.

…

There is, however, one fact of the story that is overlooked, and I am surprised no one has mentioned it: the so-called $1 billion denominated "Kennedy" bonds, a denomination that never existed, so we're told. But consider the supreme irony that one of America's last presidents to challenge the "authority" of the Federal Reserve by an executive order to issue $4 billion-plus in debt-free United States Notes during his presidency, was murdered a mere five months after signing the order to do so. We'll get back to the "Kennedy bonds" …because in my opinion, they may hold the key to the story.

This raises two possibilities to my mind: (1) if these "Kennedy" bonds were legitimate, or at least, counterfeits of legitimate but secretly issued "Kennedy" bonds, then this means, as others have pointed out, that someone in the American government was issuing securities secretly, *and* it means that whoever was behind this operation had access to that extraordinarily secret knowledge, *and it also means* that someone within the American government had a rather droll sense of irony, denominating such large bonds with Kennedy's image in a bizarre "message"; (2) if they were straightforwardly counterfeit with *no* basis in reality, then again, the choice of Kennedy as the image on the bonds was again a rather droll "message."

These possibilities highlight an inescapable conclusion: If we assume that all these bonds were counterfeit, then the mere fact that they were such excellent—almost "indistinguishable"—exemplars of the genuine articles means that whoever was behind the counterfeiting operation *ultimately had to be a nation-state in possession the genuine article*. Only the genuine article could have provided any counterfeiters with an exemplar to imitate, and thus, ultimately, there is a holder of US securities behind this operation at some point. This means, additionally, that the context by which to interpret the Kennedy bonds changes dramatically, for if the counterfeits *are based on secret exemplars* then a *clear* message is being sent to whatever circles in the American parapolitical power structure as secretly issued them: We know the game. And little changes if the Kennedy bonds are totally illegitimate.

The question is, who would that nation-state behind the counterfeiting be? Obviously, they would be large holders of American debt, and with an ability to counterfeit near-perfect bonds, implying technological sophistication.[7]

---

[7] Joseph P. Farrell, "Japan: Connecting Some Dots, Part One: The Strange Case of the Bearer Bonds," April 25, 2011, (see continued footnote next page)

In other words, whoever was behind the counterfeits had to have "inside knowledge" concerning the originals, and the technological ability to produce "unauthorized facsimiles."

We may state the possibilities of analysis here somewhat differently than when I first examined the case: if the bonds or any portion of them were real, then why would two men be traveling to Switzerland with them? The answer seems obvious: Switzerland would be the logical place to make a sale, even at discount, to whatever customer waited on the other end, for Switzerland had the international banks familiar with, and able to authenticate, such bearer bonds. If, on the other hand, the bonds or any portion of them were indeed counterfeit, then it would appear the two men were deliberately trying to attract attention. The question is, why? That question must await its answer to a later point in this chapter, after our examination of the Spanish, Italian, and Filipino bearer bonds scandals, each variations on the theme.

In any case, the most crucial point of my analysis then remains the central core thesis of these chapters: a covert system of finance is represented by the bearer bonds, and this thesis, as we shall discover, only grows in strength the closer one looks at the details of the story. Indeed, in this respect, it is important to note that it took U.S. officials some *two weeks* to make a public statement to the Italian authorities that the securities that they had seized were counterfeit. Why the delay, *unless* the "fakes" were so good that they raised serious questions? Or unless they were *genuine* and a cover story had to be worked out, and a course of action be agreed upon as to what to do with the securities?"[8] Or unless the "fakes", as all counterfeits and facsimiles are, were based upon some real world exemplar, an exemplar that, for whatever reason, the financial powers did not wish known?[9]

---

http://gizadeathstar.com/2011/04/japan-connecting-some-dots-part-one-the-strange-case-of-the-bearer-bonds/

[8] Joseph P. Farrell, "Japan: Connecting Some Dots, Part Three: More Anomalies About the Bearer Bonds Story," April 27, 2011, http://gizadeathstar.com/2011/04/japan-connecting-some-dots-part-three-more-anomalies-about-the-bearer-bonds-story/

[9] Another difficulty with the story, as I observed in the article, was why the Italian authorities did not allow the Japanese men across the border, and simply place them under surveillance, to see who their contacts might be? In other words, the Italian financial police seemed, for whatever reason, to violate a cardinal principle of intelligence work.

e. The Billion Dollar Fake Kennedy Bonds, and a Message from Japan, and from Space

As indicated in the citations from my own articles on the Japanese Bearer Bond scandal quoted above, I believe the key to the story lies, paradoxically, with the bonds that are self-evidently *fake*, the so-called "Kennedy" bonds.

Shortly after the episode, alleged samples of the "Kennedy Bonds" began to be circulated on the Internet:

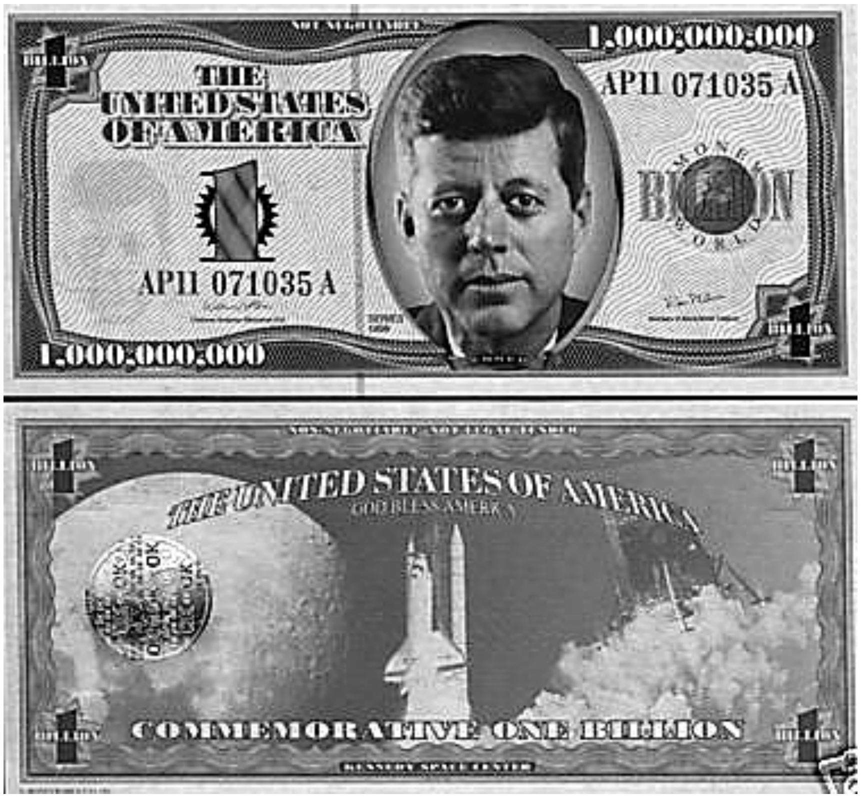
NOT NEGOTIABLE
1,000,000,000
THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA
AP11 071035 A
BILLION
AP11 071035 A
1,000,000,000
BILLION
NON-NEGOTIABLE NOT LEGAL TENDER
THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA
GOD BLESS AMERICA
COMMEMORATIVE ONE BILLION
KENNEDY SPACE CENTER

The Billion Dollar Fake Kennedy Bearer Bond

Before proceeding with reproducing the analysis I offered on my website, it is important to note that no evidence or proof was ever forthcoming on the internet to demonstrate that these were indeed images of the "Kennedy bonds" seized by the Italian authorities. Consequently, we are left with two possibilities, implying two slightly different scenarios and bases of interpretation: (1) the images have no connection to the bonds actually seized in Italy, or (2) the images are images of the bonds actually seized by the *Guardia di Finanza*. At the time I composed my original analysis, I assumed the second case for purposes of analysis:

> Now, on the surface of it, this (Kennedy bond) looks entirely faked. Before we consider this image, let's compare it to an image of a legitimate $500,000,000 US Treasury bearer bond:

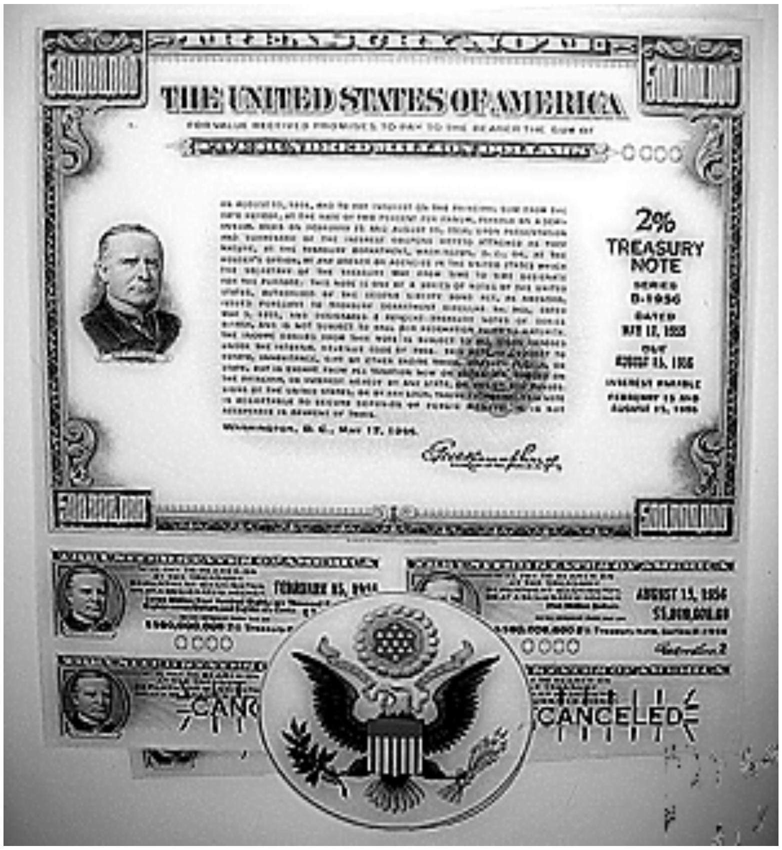

THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA

2% TREASURY NOTE

CANCELED

> Now let's compare. (1) The legitimate bond immediately above has the red seal of the United States Treasury clearly stamped on the obverse right side of the header, with the coupons clearly visible beneath the note; (2) this seal is clearly missing from the "Kennedy bond," lending credence to the publicly stated evaluations of these bonds as plain counterfeits.

But let us consider once again the implication of the view that the "Kennedy bond" is a counterfeit. First, why would anyone issue such a counterfeit bond, with no evident connection to anything real, or place a facsimile of the seal of the US Treasury on the bond itself thus only drawing attention to its potential counterfeit nature? Second, why would anyone issue a counterfeit bond for such an extremely high amount of money, an amount virtually guaranteeing that any potential purchaser would immediately seek to verify the bond?

I submit that there is a *message* being sent by this bond, and it is a message that works regardless if one views this strange securities instrument as legitimate or faked, for note the *reverse* of the bond: we have a clear image of the Moon, a clear image of the space shuttle lifting off, and on the obverse, the image of President John F. Kennedy, and a red seal of some sort. Consider then the *imagery* and the message being sent here. A red seal of the US treasury only appears on American currency notes—United States Notes—issued directly and debt-free by the US Government. Kennedy was the last president to order the issuance of such money. He was also, of course, the president that set the goal of American space exploration in the 1960s with his designation of the Moon as the target for manned landings before the 1960s had closed.

So to my mind, there is another message being sent in the bearer bonds episode, and that is, it has something to do with *space*. The important question here is: why would a bond-smuggling operation, whether or not the bonds were real or counterfeit, be smuggling such instruments, and *my conclusion is, that we may be looking at a part of the funding mechanism for a vast covert space program, with the "collateral" clearly imaged on the reverse of the bond header itself: space, and whatever might be found out there.* Hence, the use of a red seal—connoting a debt-free money—might be significant. We might, in short, be looking at a funding mechanism for covert space activities and programs, and hence, be looking at a very *real* bond, with, quite literally, the Moon as collateral. We might, so to speak, even be looking at a hidden funding mechanism for Mr. Richard Dolan's idea of a "breakaway civilization." If so, that would account for the virtually total absence of news coverage of the story in American media and its virtual disappearance as a story in the rest of the world's media. If this admittedly wild and radical, not to mention completely speculative scenario is at all true, it may be the hidden reason why the USA has not publicly gone back to the Moon, and why other nations are so intent on getting there.

All this now places the Japanese political context once again in a peculiar perspective, for recently the Japanese Space Agency, JAXA, began releasing images of the Moon…

Consider only this strange photo taken by India's Chandrayaan lunar probe:

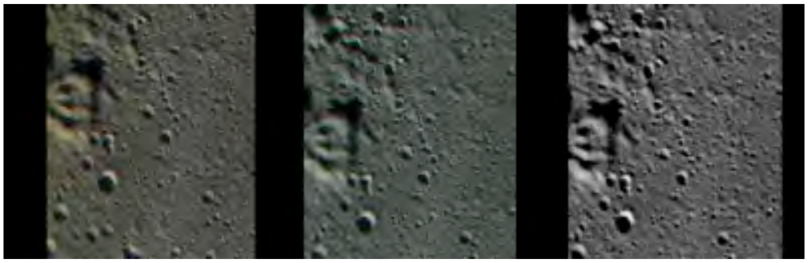

We can easily imagine that the High definition tv images that Japan's mission gathered were equally impressive.[10]

On the view that the Kennedy billion dollar bearer bonds were faked *by the counterfeiters themselves*, then it would appear that the message might indeed have been that whatever reality as lies *behind* the counterfeits concerns space in general, and more particularly, the Moon and whatever might be upon it (a possibility whose implications are enormous, if the claims of some that there are artificial and possibly ancient structures on the Moon are true). In addition, a more basic message is present, namely, that a *hidden tier of finance* exists, represented by bearer bonds denominated in extraordinary amounts of money, amounts that imply that the owners of such bonds are in an elite circle of wealth, power, and knowledge.

However, on the view that the Kennedy billion dollar bearer bonds were merely images circulated *by someone other than the counterfeiters*, the message would still appear to be the same, and in each case, the one is dealing with people in possession of exclusive, hidden knowledge.

Is there any evidence to corroborate such speculations, reasonable though they may be?

There is, but in order to appreciate it, one must examine the image of the Kennedy bearer bond more closely:

---

[10] Joseph P. Farrell, "Japan: Connecting Some Dots, Part Four: Miscellaneous Anomalies About the Bearer Bonds Story," April 28, 2011, http://gizadeathstar.com/2011/04/japan-connecting-some-dots-part-four-miscellaneous-anomalies-about-the-bearer-bonds-story/

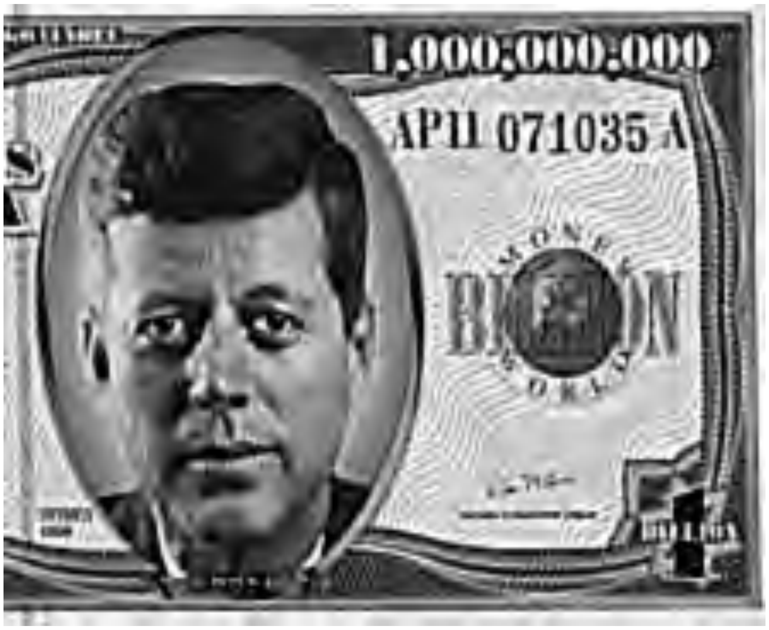

Close Up of Obverse of the Fake One Billion Dollar Kennedy Bond

What concerns us here is the large seal in the center right of the bond's face, which clearly says "Money World" and which in the original image on line, is in red, in a color reminiscent of the red color of the seal of the U.S. Treasury on United States Notes.

A visit to Money World's website at http://www.moneyworld.com.sg/ disclosed the following, which I reviewed in yet another internet article after a friend brought it to my attention:

> MoneyWorld Asia first started as a numismatic company dealing in money collectibles and commemorative products. Our humble beginning has enabled us to forge close relations with major central banks in the world, including the Bank of England, the US Bureau of Printing & Engraving, The Reserve Bank of Australia and New Zealand, as well as the Board of Commissioners of Currency-Singapore (BCCS). "
>
> MoneyWorld Asia is one of the region's most trusted and reliable Foreign Exchange and Remittance dealer, with offices in seven countries and a presence across the Asia Pacific. We are the world's leader in Foreign Exchange and Electronic Funds Transfers, constantly innovating and developing new products and forging new channels for the benefit of our clients.

> A significant milestone was our active participation at the Handover of Hong Kong to the People's Republic of China in 1997, where we co-ordinated the commemorative notes to mark this momentous occasion"
>
> MoneyWorld Asia is a foreign exchange operator, specializing in cash handling services to enable individuals and businesses to conduct cross-border transactions. Our clients include Multi-National Corporations, educational institutions, government agencies, retailers, duty-free concessions and hotels.
>
> Since our inception in 1991, MoneyWorld Asia has enlarged our business focus in the world of money. We have established a two-pronged business strategy: money changing and remittance services, and numismatic products.
>
> MoneyWorld has today entrenched itself firmly in the global forex markets, with the added specialization in niche currencies such as the Chinese RMB (Yuan), Malaysian Ringgit (MYR) and the Indonesian Rupiah (INR). As these are non-tradable currencies, MoneyWorld's correspondent offices in these countries have provided our clients with a constant availability of these currencies, allowing them to transact with their partners in these currencies quickly and without fuss.[11]

In other words, a corporation like Money World, specializing in international currency transactions to nations with non-convertible currency—such as the People's Republic of China—would conceivably know about a hidden system of finance represented by large denomination bearer bonds, and indeed, this is not the only time we will encounter a Chinese component to the story, for there will be an astonishing corroboration of this Chinese component in chapter four (and it will come as corroboration of the hypothesis that such bonds are indeed based upon *some* form of real life authentic exemplar). In any case, such a company would also possibly be accustomed to handling large bearer bonds. Finally, such a company would also be in a position to *know* about a hidden system of finance represented by such bonds.

Thus, even on the view that the images of the fake Kennedy bonds did not come from the actual instruments confiscated by the Italian authorities, but from someone else, it would appear that "someone else" was very well-informed.

What of the two alleged Japanese men who were detained by Italian authorities? Unbelievably, they were released and made their way back to Japan, a fact that invites its own speculations. Why, after apprehending two individuals with an enormous sum of money in the form of allegedly faked securities, would they subsequently be released? under normal circumstances, those accused of counterfeiting are normally detained until trial, and for amounts of forgery far less than one hundred thirty-four billion five hundred million dollars!

---

[11] Joseph P. Farrell, "More Information on the Japanese Bearer Bonds," May 4, 2011, http://gizadeathstar.com/2011/05/more-information-on-the-japanese-bearer-bonds/

Were they released because they knew something and blackmailed the authorities? or, ultimately, because they blackmailed even the United States? Or were they released because they had diplomatic immunity from the Japanese or some other Asian government? Or, finally, were they released because, in reality, none of the seized securities were counterfeit at all?

Regardless of the answers to these questions, we have then, the following set of facts and tentative conclusions and implications:

1) There is an Asian connection to this first bearer bonds scandal, via
    a) the two alleged Japanese men detained, and subsequently released, and
    b) via the Kennedy bonds' connection to "Money World," a currency and securities trading company with obvious experience in Asian and Chinese business;
2) The amount of money concerned was large, if not huge: $134,500,000,000;
3) This money was contained in instruments of bearer bonds, denominated in amounts of $500,000,000 and in the case of the Kennedy bonds, $1,000,000,000 each;
4) *Some* of these bonds were dated 1934, a significant date as will be seen, for it becomes part of a consistent pattern in similar episodes, as will eventually be seen;
5) The U.S. government, two weeks after the event, denied that any of the bonds were authentic, and that any bearer bonds in one billion dollar denominations, had ever been issued. Nonetheless, Italian authorities had to wait two weeks before such denials were firm, and finally released the two Japanese men, in itself an inexplicable event *if* indeed they were suspected as being part of a counterfeiting ring or smuggling ring, facts which suggests that at least some aspects of the "counterfeit bonds" were indeed genuine;
6) Finally, on any view, it seems evident that the episode was designed to send messages, namely, that there is a hidden tier of system of finance of very large, though hidden, scale in the

> world, and that it has something to do with local outer space and whatever may be present in it, and indeed, we have seen the suggestion that outer space has been collateralized as a component of this structure, implying, of course, a means of steadier access to it than chemical rockets and small payloads.

With these tentative implications and conclusions in hand, we may now turn to other bearer bonds scandals.

2. The Spanish Bearer Bonds Scandal

Had the Japanese Bearer Bond Scandal of 2009 been the only one, the forces attempting to deny any substance behind the "fakes" would doubtless have rested easier.

But it was *not* the only such story. In fact, there were repeat performances, in Spain, and later, in Italy once again, and both involved such astronomical sums of "counterfeited" securities that the incidents became national security concerns. This in itself, as we shall discover, raises implications, but before these can be considered, a review of the Spanish and Italisn incidents is necessary, beginning with the Spanish incident which, like the Japanese scandal, occurred in the same year, and the same month: June 2009. I reported on this incident in a paper written on my website for the members' subscription area, and reproduce it in full, with accompanying pictures, since the arguments made in it are crucial to the case we are building here, namely, that these scandals are based on a real, though covert, system of finance, and that this system of finance is being used to fund black research projects and covert operations:

> The story originated in Barcelona, Spain, in 2009, and of course, was not reported in any mainstream or independent media in the USA, making the rounds only recently on the internet. The story was first reported in June 2009:

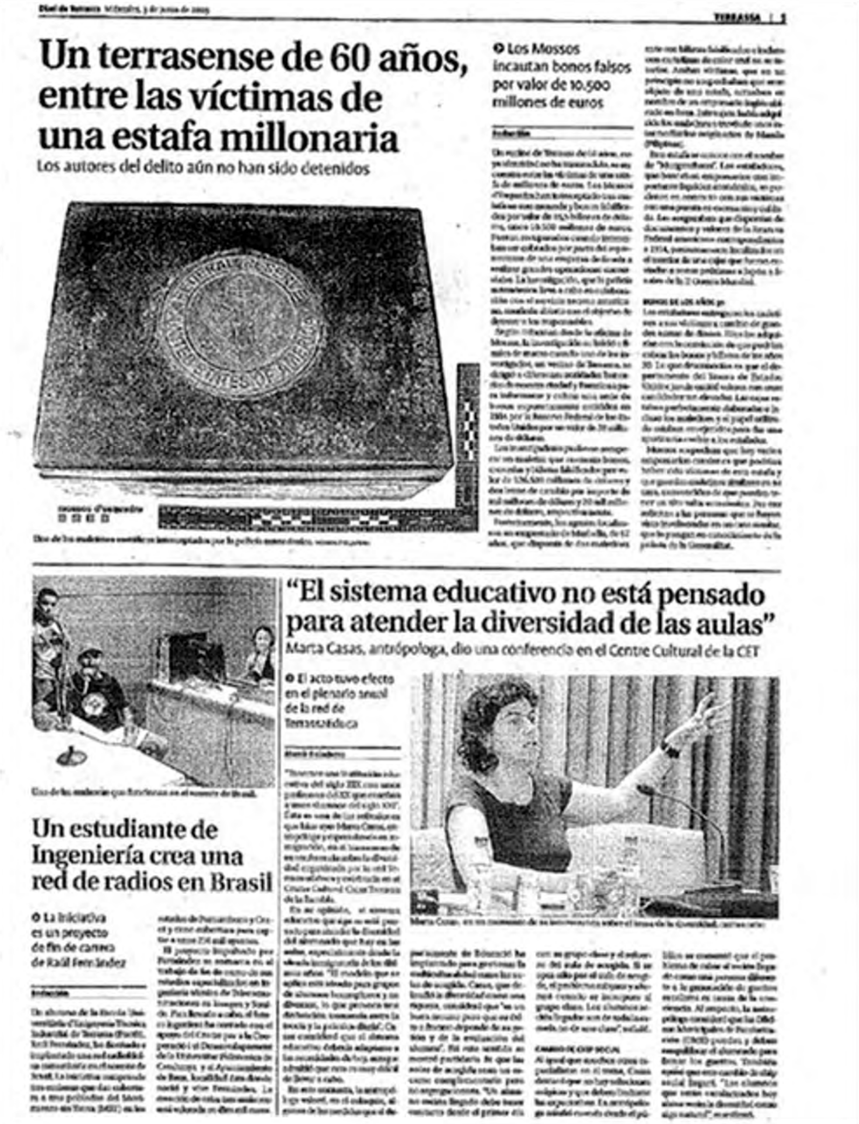

Un terrasense de 60 años, entre las víctimas de una estafa millonaria

Los autores del delito aún no han sido detenidos

Los Mossos incautan bonos falsos por valor de 10.500 millones de euros

"El sistema educativo no está pensado para atender la diversidad de las aulas"

Marta Casas, antrópologa, dio una conferencia en el Centre Cultural de la CET

El acto tuvo efecto en el plenario anual de la red de Terrassaeduca

Un estudiante de Ingeniería crea una red de radios en Brasil

La iniciativa es un proyecto de fin de carrera de Raúl Fernández

Spanish Newspaper Article from Barcelona Reporting the Spanish Bearer Bond Scandal of 2009

The story was reported in the English language on the following website:

http://upintelligence.multiply.com/reviews/item/28?&item_id=28&view:replies=reverse&show_interstitial=1&u=%2Freviews%2Fitem

Here is the story as reported on that website:

$1.64 Trillion Of Federal Reserve Note Series 1934 Bonds In Spain Seizure (2009) by, Unwanted Publicity Intelligence—Staff Writer

October 18, 2010 08:47:42 Update (Original: October 10, 010 09:42:08)
USA, Washington, D.C.—October 14, 2010—Combining criminal intrinsic and face values of what federal law enforcement authorities seized in Spain, should have stopped counting at $1,664,082,000,000 trillion U.S. dollars (that-is: $1,664 billion) by June 2009 by what 'only local news reports' identified as an investigation that actually began beforehand during March 2009 when federal law enforcement investigators began "Operation Morgenthaus."

…

Summarized detailed information highlights of this, the world's largest 'face value' federal law enforcement seizure of U.S. Federal Reserve Bank paper, i.e. Federal Reserve Notes and Federal Reserve Bonds, currency cash, gold coins, microfilm plus what is believed to have actually been 'multiple serial numbered' blue colored 'non-reprographic matte card engraving plates' recently determined by a private researcher for the Unwanted Publicity Information Group deciphering multiple language translations and conversions [Catalan into English and Spanish into English] extrapolated information from Spain and Catalan news articles (a few of which—but not all—viewed below) then performed further research and analysis surrounding "Operation Morgenthau," involved:

- Multiple seizure locations:
- Financial institution locations (Terrassa, Spain and Barcelona, Spain);
- Initial detection location (Catalonia, Spain (aka) Cataluña, España);
    - Other suspected location (Catalan, Spain);
    - Believed origination location (Manila, Philippines);
    - Target victims wealthy 'businessmen';
- 57-year old unidentified businessman (Marbella, Spain)—largest seizure;

- British (UK) unidentified businessman (Ibiza, Spain);
- Millionaire unidentified—imprisoned beforehand—home (Centelles, Spain);
- 60-year old unidentified resident (Terrassa, Barcelona, Spain);
- 5 suitcases (2 metal);

- 1 briefcase;
- $1,500,000,000,000 trillion dollars (USD)—face value—(believed bearing multiple sequential serial numbers) on blue card stock ('non-reprographic blue' color 'matte' engraving plate card stock used in a printing press);
- $126,500,000,000 billion dollars (USD)—face value—total amongst many U.S. Federal Reserve Note Series 1934 Bonds (interest bearing coupon bonds);
- $20,000,000,000 billion dollars (USD)—face value—total of ten (10) at $2 billion each "International Bill Of Exchange" (bills of exchange / drafts);
- $16,582,000,000 billion dollars (USD)—face value—total amongst many U.S. Federal Reserve Bank Series 1934 Federal Reserve Notes (FRNs); and,
- $1,000,000,000 billion dollars (USD)—face value—total amongst many "JP Morgan Chase Bank" stamped metal holders around stacks of $100,000 (USD) gold seal Federal Reserve Bank Transfer Notes (*);
- Amount unidentified in dollars (USD)—face value unidentified—amongst U.S. Federal Reserve Bank Guarantee Certificates;
- Amount unidentified in dollars (USD)—face value unidentified—amongst gold coins; and,

- Quantity and description unidentified—microfilm.

…

Source: *Diario Público* (Madrid, Spain)

The investigators believe that more people could buy false billion bonds

Two Entrepreneurs Fall Into A Millionaire Holy Card Scam by, Albert Martin Vidal (Barcelona)

June 3, 2009 2:00 Updated: June 3, 2009 2:01

At least two [2] Spain people, obsessively raised by the following (immediately below), the same two [2] known victims of a scam that the regional police detected yesterday:

OUESTION: "Would you buy a tattered bag for between 30,000 and 40,000 euros?"

ANSWER: “I would, if thousands of millions of dollars were inside.”

QUESTION: “Do you suspect such a treasure would be sold in exchange for a few thousand dollars?”

The Catalan [Catalonia (also known as) Cataluña] police, in an operation in which they worked with the U.S. Secret Service, warned yesterday there may be dozens of entrepreneurs in Spain victims of this scam.

From detainees, with the operation still open, investigators intercepted three [3] bags with counterfeit currency and bonds worth 16.5 billion dollars.

The scammers, who are still being sought, offered the bags with their fraudulent content to wealthy entrepreneurs. In return, they demanded between 30,000 and 40,000 euros.

The central area chief investigator of organized crime, Jordi Oller, said that fraudsters were in contact with their victims, in most cases economic entrepreneurs, highly liquid, with staged careful study, to lend legitimatization to their deception.

The thieves explained that they possessed valuable 1934 documents—of the U.S. Federal Reserve—found after World War II in some cases that were sent to the area of Japan, but those had redemption problems. To solve that, they wanted to litigate against the Federal Reserve. They claimed that once the case was won, the bonds would be redeemed generously by the beneficiaries. If the victims agreed to pay, to defray the expenses of the trial, the scammers would give them the aged bags—giving the appearance of authenticity—but then disappear.

In the bags were all suitably-aged certificates of guarantee, gold coins, microfilm, counterfeit bonds plus $100,000 [Series 1934 ‘gold seal’ Federal Reserve Notes] issued by the U.S. Treasury to be used interbank [between U.S. Central Bank branches within the Federal Reserve System].

Wet Paper

The investigators began their investigation after locating in Terrassa (Barcelona) a person who visited various banks asking how he could collect a series of bonds issued by the United States in 1934. Once located, the Catalan police found the businessman had counterfeit bonds, currencies and notes worth $126,500,000 million dollars plus two [2] bills of exchange [international bill of exchange] amounting to $1,000,000,000 billion (USD) and $20,000,000,000 billion (USD) dollars.

Subsequently, in Marbella, investigators found another businessman who acted on behalf of an Englishman living in Ibiza [Spain] with 16,000,000,000 billion in fake paper money, in addition to a stack of blue cards they made him believe were worth $1.5 trillion (USD).

Between one and the other, they had a total of three [3] cases with the same face of astonishment.

The story is accompanied on that site by the following photos of the chest and its contents:

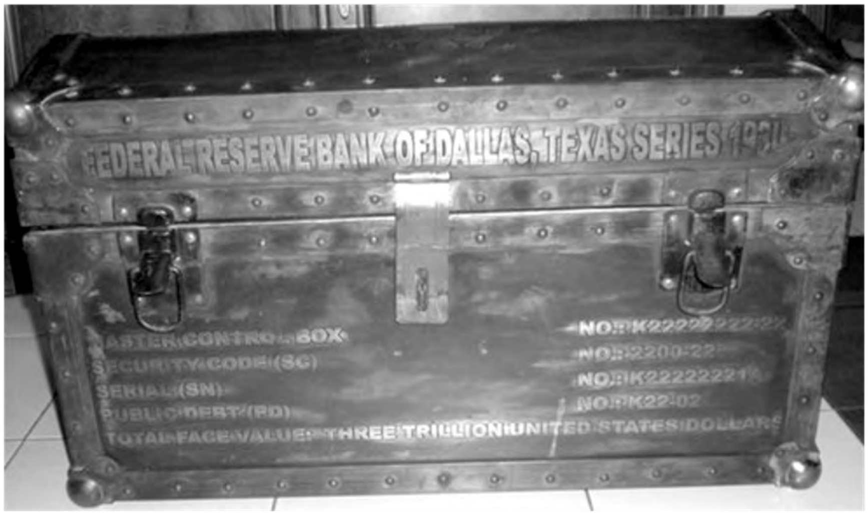
FEDERAL RESERVE BANK OF DALLAS, TEXAS SERIES 193
ASTER CONTROL BOX
SECURITY CODE (SC)
SERIAL (SN)
PUBLIC DEBT (PD)
TOTAL FACE VALUE: THREE TRILLION UNITED STATES DOLLARS
NO: K22222222
NO: 2200-22
NO: K22222221
NO: K22-02

Bronze Dallas Federal Reserve Bank Strong Box

Spanish "Bearer Bonds," Certificates of Authenticity, and Gold Coins

100,000
GOLD
CERTIFICATE
A00011297A
100,000
WASHINGTON, D.C.
J.P. MORGAN CHASE BANK
$10,000,000 = $100,000 X 100
THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA
ONE HUNDRED THOUSAND DOLLARS IN GOLD

One of the Bundles of $10,000,000 in 100,000 Dollar Gold Certificate Bills, banded with the J.P. Morgan Chase Bank Bands

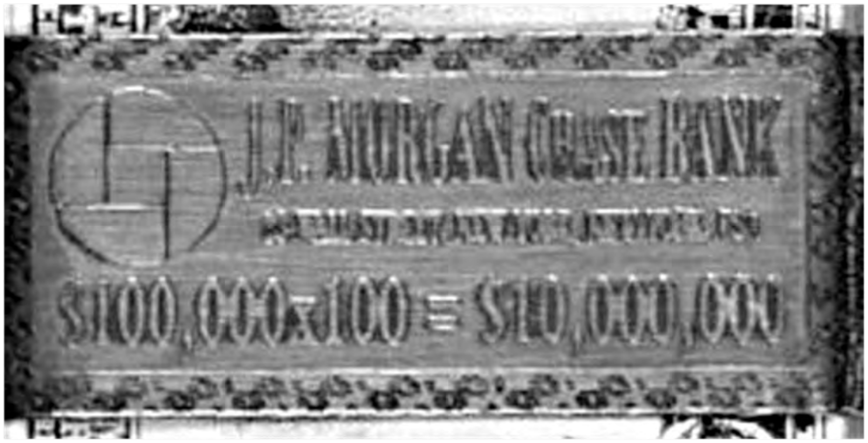
J.P. MORGAN CHASE BANK
$100,000 x 100 = $10,000,000

One of the Metal J.P. Morgan Chase Bands around the $100,000 Bills; Note the Modernized Stylized Swastika Corporate Logo of the Bank

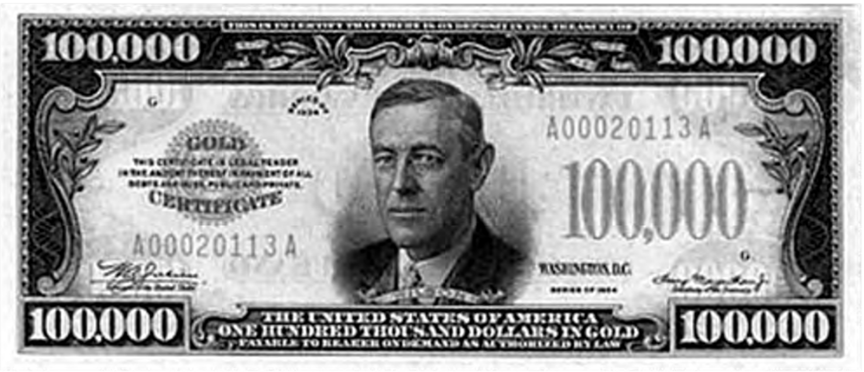
100,000
100,000
GOLD CERTIFICATE
A00020113A
100,000
A00020113A
WASHINGTON, D.C.
SERIES OF 1934
100,000
THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA
ONE HUNDRED THOUSAND DOLLARS IN GOLD
PAYABLE TO BEARER ON DEMAND AS AUTHORIZED BY LAW
100,000

The Obverse of the Genuine Woodrow Wilson $100,000 Gold Certificate Bill. The Author Has Seen one of these Bills at the U.S. Bureau of Engraving and Printing. The Seal on the Left Face of the bill, and the serial numbers, are printed in a Yellow-Orange color.

Let us pause and take note of a significant, and obvious, fact, but one which is scarcely commented upon. The $100,000 Woodrow Wilson gold certificate note is a *genuine* piece of American currency, *but* it was *never* issued for use in general circulation. Rather, it was used in private circulation between the branch banks of the U.S. Federal Reserve Bank system itself.

This means that while the general public is circulating the Federal Reserve's *monetized debt notes*, privately the Federal Reserve Banks themselves are circulating a wholly different kind of money, a money based on gold certificates. One is looking directly at a different *kind* of money, and therefore, since this was never circulated publicly, at a *different tier, a private tier, of finance.* This important point will become crucial to remember as the bearer bonds story unfolds, to which, in its Spanish version, we now return:

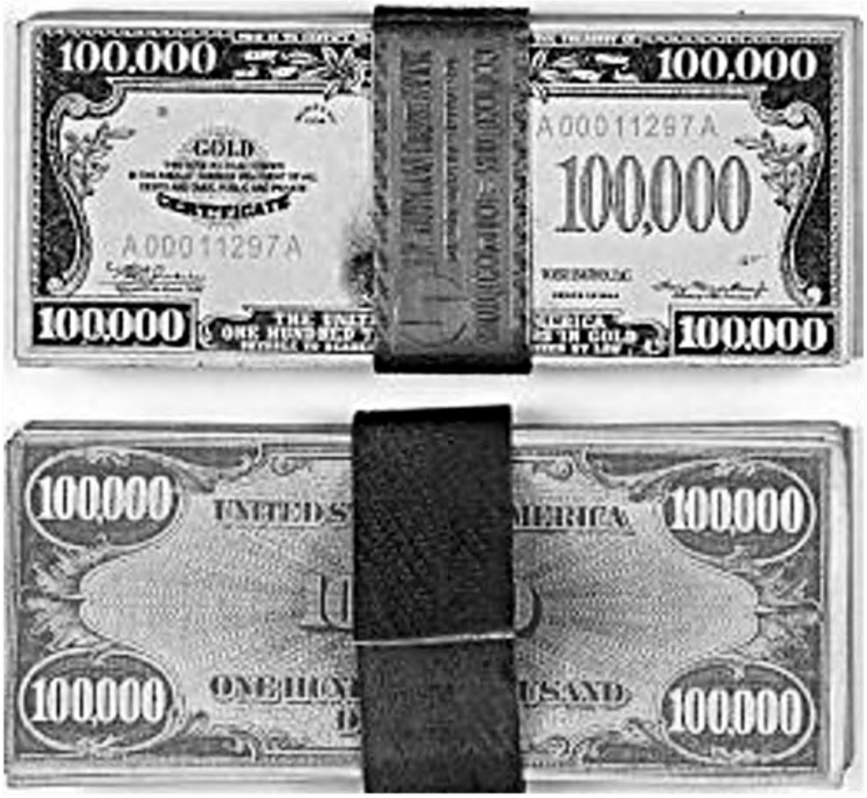
100.000
100,000
GOLD
CERTIFICATE
A00011297A
100,000
UNITED STATES OF AMERICA
ONE HUNDRED THOUSAND DOLLARS

Obverse and Reverse of the $10,000,000 Bundles of Gold Certificate $100,000 Bills Seized in Spain. The back of the $100,000 note, unlike standard American currency, is not printed in the characteristic mottled green of normal American bills, but in an orange-red color, again, denoting the special status of the notes.

As I noted in the members' paper on my website, the cited article on the Internet contained a further expansion to the Spanish Bearer Bond story:

> Source: ElDebat.Cat (aka) Catalunya Diary (Catalania, Spain)
> Version 'historical' the holy card scam
> The Autonomous recover more than sixteen billion false Catalan businessmen cheated
> Redacció—ACN
>
> Dozens of Catalan businessmen could be affected by the scam nicknamed 'Morgenthaus' in honor in what was Secretary of the U.S. Treasury Henry Morgenthaus in 1934, the year in which the U.S. Federal Reserve supposedly issued $16 billion that never really existed.
>
> The Police have intercepted three [3] briefcases containing bonds, notes and counterfeit currency worth $16,582,000,000 billion dollars. The agents have recovered while attempting to be charged by the representative of a company to make big business.
>
> Suitcases, old-looking, period had been characterized by fraudsters, as well as its content, to make believe they were from the 1930s.
>
> The victims, mostly entrepreneurs with significant liquidity, buying convinced that purchased large amounts in dollars and bills that eventually might be charged.
>
> What they did not know is that the U.S. Treasury Department never issued securities of these amounts as high.
>
> Put another way, a version fooled by 'historical' and classic wholesale prayer card scam.
>
> One in Marbella [Spain] affected and one in Terrassa [Spain] -
>
> The investigation began in late March when one of those investigated, a 60-yr. old resident of Terrassa, went to different banks in Terrassa and Barcelona to learn and collect on a series of bonds purportedly issued by the United States of America Federal Reserve in 1934 with a value of $20 million.
>
> The investigators were able to recover a 'metal briefcase' containing counterfeit bonds, currencies and counterfeit notes worth $126,500 million [$126.5 billion] dollars and two [2] 'international bill of exchange' (bills of exchange) amounting to U.S. $1,000 million [$1 billion] and $20,000 million [$20 billion], respectively.
>
> Later the same investigators located a 57-yr. old businessman from Marbella, who had two [2] more suitcases. The man explained that the person with whom he had contacted had assured him within one [2] of the bags was $16 billion dollars while the

> other contained up to $1.5 trillion dollars. Finally it turned out that although one [1] of the bags actually contained $16 billion in various kinds of paper money, all fake, the other contained only 'blue cards', if the employer even knew because he had not even opened to check its contents.
>
> These two [2] people, who had not initially suspected they were to be victims of a scam, acting on behalf of a British businessman located in Ibiza. This man had purchased the bags of the scammers through middlemen originating in Manila.
>
> "Operation Morgenthaus" Scam -
>
> Scammers come in contact, with their victims, studied very careful staging. Most, assure victims of the great economic potential that come from documents and securities of the United States of America Federal Reserve for the year 1934, allegedly found inside some boxes sent to 'areas close to Japan' at the end of World War II.
>
> Scammers kits deliver to their victims in-exchange for large sums of money. The acquired victims are convinced that they contain significant amounts of dollars in bonds and bills of the 1930s for hundreds of thousands of euros that will end-up costing, if not in the entirety, within a period of time soon.
>
> The boxes are well made and even briefcases and paper used are aged to give a credible appearance in the swindle. The bags and boxes contain certificates of guarantee, gold coins, microfilm, bonds, and $100,000 false banknotes, which were only issued by the U.S. Treasury to use within the interbank [central bank] market.
>
> Investigators suspect that there are many employers around Catalonia that keep similar kits, in their home, convinced they have high economic value. For this reason the Autonomous recommends that all those people who have been involved in a similar case make that known to the Police of the Generalitat. The investigation remains open and is working to identify and arrest those responsible.
>
> It has the support of the United States Secret Service.

At this juncture, the presentation of the other internet articles concluded, and I began my own analysis:

> For the sake of argument here, we shall assume the story, and the pictures, are real and authentic. In this case, we draw attention to the following facts laid out by the Spanish press:
>
> - The financial institutions involved were located in Terrassa and Barcelona, Spain

- The scam was initially detected in Catalonia
- *The believed origin of the scam and its faked securities and monies was in Manila, the Philippines*
- Two businessmen were apparently involved, one 57 years old and unidentified, and another unidentified businessman apparently of British origin
- the amount of the bearer bonds was an unheard of $1,500,000,000,000
- another $126,500,000,000 was apparently in 1934 Federal Reserve bonds with coupons
- $20,000,000,000 were in international Bills of Exchange
- $1,000,000,000 was in US 100,000 gold certificate currency notes, banded with J.P Morgan-Chase metal bands of bundles of $10,000,000 each (doing the math here means that there was a total of one hundred such bands)
- An unspecified amount of the money was in the form of gold coins
- The haul included documentation and microfilm, the contents of which are not specified, but it may be assumed that the documents and microfilms constituted some sort of authentication of the various securities.

B. A Brief Speculative Analysis

When one reads the articles and the numerous comments accompanying it, the following points must be stressed:

1. The 100,000 gold certificate was indeed issued by the US government, and some 42,000 were eventually printed, though these bills were only used in circulation between banks of the Federal Reserve System and never in general circulation. This appears to be known by the scammers, since the bills were found in cases and strongboxes purportedly originating from the Federal Reserve Bank of Dallas, Texas.
2. The use of such gold certificates circulating between the banks of the Federal Reserve system, which the money in *general circulation* at the time was *not* gold-backed, suggested that a secret two-tiered money system was put into play ca. the earliest days of the Administration of Franklin Roosevelt. This has two further implications:
    a. The first implication is precisely that we are looking at a hidden system of finance, and thus possibly at the first steps toward the creation of a breakaway civilization.
    b. The second implication is that the scammers—in both the case of the Japanese bearer-bond scandal, and in this instance—were *aware* of this system, and of the fact that a certain upper

tier of the world's super-rich were aware of this system as well, thus enabling the possibility that their scam would have some chance of success. To put this point differently, the *market must exist for such frauds to be perpetrated, and that strongly implies that such a two-tiered financial structure has been covertly put into place.*

3. Points 2a and 2b above thus imply a third implication, namely, that both the Japanese and Spanish bond scandals are in fact sophisticated operations, based upon possible insider intelligence concerning the nature of this two-tiered financial structure—a public one and a covert one—*and upon some specialized knowledge of the nature of the securities issue in the covert one, official US Government denials of the authenticity of such securities notwithstanding.*
4. It is further to be noted that these bond scandals have emerged in a time period coterminous with the move of the BRICS nations—Russia, China, India, and Brazil—away from the dollar as a reserve currency, thus suggesting the possibility that the Japanese and Spanish bond scandals are not isolated incidents from each other, but rather, connected in some deep fashion, perhaps having to do with economic warfare. It is to be noted that in the comments section of the blogsite sited here, that the Philippine connection strongly suggested a connection to the gold hidden there by Japanese general Yamashita toward the end of the Pacific War. This gold in turn represented the looting of China's god stocks by the Japanese during the war, and hence, further enhances the implication that one is looking at a kind of economic warfare, and that, indeed, the possibility arises that this gold was used as backing of covert securities, just as it has been alleged in the open literature that it was also used as a source of covert funding for the US State Department's Office of Policy Coordination under Frank Wisner, and later as a source for the covert operations of General Ed Lansdale. In short, one is looking at a second implication strongly suggestive of a breakaway civilization, namely, the standard mechanisms of secret finance are being utilized to fund covert operations, as I outlined in *Saucers, Swastikas, and Psyops.*

C. Conclusions

In my opinion, for the above reasons, we may draw the following tentative conclusions:

1. Distinctive and discrete steps were being put into place by the American financial elite during the 1930s to establish a covert two-

tiered system of finance, with the covert system being based upon bullion-backed currency and securities;
2. This effort was renewed after the Second World War, with the addition of Japanese gold stocks looted from China during the war, thus enabling a vast, though covert, expansion of the American Federal Reserve's credit making ability;
3. These hidden and covert securities were employed in the funding of covert operations and projects, via the Office of Policy Coordination;
4. The Japanese and Spanish bond scandals thus imply that someone else, or some other faction external to this covert financial structure and/or civilization was aware of this arrangement, and have begun operations to obfuscate and interfere with the stability of this structure by issuing false securities, thus calling into question the authenticity of whatever covert securities as actually may exist. This is corroborated by the recent public moves of the BRICs nations away from the dollar, and by my analysis elsewhere that the possibility exists that the *International Fascista* or whatever one wishes to call this group, has possibly also reneged on the post-war detente struck between it and the very same western financial elite.

With respect to the last point, it is important to note that the US secret Service, in cooperation with the Spanish authorities, code-named the operation to bust this latest forgery scam ”Operation Morgenthau” after the 1930s US Secretary of the Treasury, Henry Morgenthau. It is to be noted that Morgenthau was, of course, the originator of the notorious Morgenthau Plan for postwar Germany, which would have de-industrialized that country and split it into two or more nations to prevent its resurgence as a major military power. The Morgenthau plan was apprehended by Nazi intelligence during the war and became a strong weapon in the propaganda arsenal of Dr. Josef Goebbels, who used it effectively to stiffen German resistance by pointing to the fact that the Morgenthau plan would have spelt the end of the German Reich, and caused an untold amount of postwar famine and suffering for the German people. Perhaps, by code-naming the operation ”Operation Morgenthau,” a finger is being pointed at the possible real sources behind the two bond scandals, and the nature of what may be transpiring in them. At the minimum, it strongly suggests in my opinion that we are dealing with a full-scale though quite hidden covert financial war. [12]

---

[12] Joseph P. Farrell, “More Fake Bonds Found in Spain: A Speculative Analysis of the Implications of the Fake Bonds Scandals,” Feb. 11, 2012,

Lest the reader have missed the basic point here in all the forest of details, the main argument is that ca. 1934 someone in the US government and/or financial elite created a hidden system, or tier, of finance, for whatever reason. As will be seen in chapter four, there are abundant confirmations of this view, and of the details of the bearer bonds scandals, and once again, they take us back to World War Two, and to the Axis powers.

By now the reader will have noticed something very peculiar, namely, the unusual role of people or countries formerly associated with the Axis (Italy and Japan), or with countries aided and abetted by the Axis and closely associated with them at one point (Spain).

Indeed, it is once again to one of those former Axis powers that we must now return, to examine yet *another* episode of enormous sums of money in the form of "fake bearer bonds."

3, The Italian Bearer Bonds Scandal

On February 17, 2012, "Tyler Durden" submitted the following article on the Zero Hedge website:

> *$6 Trillion In US Bonds Seized In Zurich, Said To Pose "Severe Threats To International Financial Stability"*
>
> Back in the summer of 2009, a peculiar story circulated when two Japanese individuals were arrested trying to smuggle $134 billion in US bonds into Switzerland from Italy. The story quickly died down after it was subsequently reported that the bonds were merely fake bearer bonds. Nobody heard much about it since then. Until today, when out of the blue we get a new story which blows that one out of the water. According to Bloomberg, "Italian anti-mafia prosecutors said they **seized a record $6 trillion of allegedly fake U.S. Treasury bonds,** an amount that's almost half of the U.S.'s public debt." From here the story just gets weirder: "The bonds were found hidden in makeshift compartments of three safety deposit boxes in Zurich, the

---

http://gizadeathstar.com/2012/02/more-fake-bonds-found-in-spain-a-speculative-analysis-of-the-fake-bonds-scandals/

It should be pointed out that this article first appeared as a paper in a *subscription* area on my website. I include it *here* for the sake of completeness of the argument.

prosecutors from the southern city of Potenza said in an e-mailed statement. The Italian authorities arrested eight people in connection with the probe, dubbed "Operation Vulcanica," the prosecutors said. The U.S. embassy in Rome has examined the securities **dated 1934, which had a nominal value of $1 billion apiece,** they said in the statement. Officials for the embassy didn't have an immediate comment." …And weirder: "**The individuals involved were planning to buy plutonium from Nigerian sources, according to phone conversations monitored by the police.**" …And really, really weird: "**The fraud posed "severe threats" to international financial stability, the prosecutors said in the statement.**" Ok great, however one thing we don't get is just how can $6 trillion in glaringly fake bombs be a "**threat to international financial stability.**"

More from Bloomberg:

The financial fraud uncovered by the Italian prosecutors in Potenza includes two checks issued through HSBC Holdings Plc in London for 205,000 pounds ($325,000), checks that weren't backed by available funds, the prosecutors said. As part of the probe, fake bonds for $2 billion were also seized in Rome.

HSBC spokesman Patrick Humphris in London declined to comment when contacted by telephone.

Phony U.S. securities have been seized in Italy before and there were at least three cases in 2009. Italian police seized phony U.S. Treasury bonds with a face value of $116 billion in August of 2009 and $134 billion of similar securities in June of that year.

The U.S. Secret Service averages about 100 cases a year related to bonds and other fictitious instruments.

As a reminder, total US debt in circulation is just over $10 trillion. So if the allegedly "fake" bonds were sufficiently threatening to put **international financial stability** at risk, just what is going on here?

Some more from the BBC:

US officials confirmed that the bonds were counterfeit.

Fake US securities have been seized in Italy before and there were at least three cases in 2009.

But this case is on a different scale to previous investigations as the fake bonds have a value equivalent to almost half of the entire US debt pile.

"Everything began with an investigation into mafia clans in the Vulture-Melfese area in the southern Basilicata region," said Giovanni Colangelo, the head of the prosecutor's office in Potenza.

Here is what the bonds look like:[13]

---

[13] Tyler Durden, "$6 Trillion in US Bonds Seized in Zurich, Said to Pose 'Severe Threats to International Financial Stability,'" Feb. 17, 2012, http://www.zerohedge.com/news/6-trillion-us-bonds-seized-zurich.

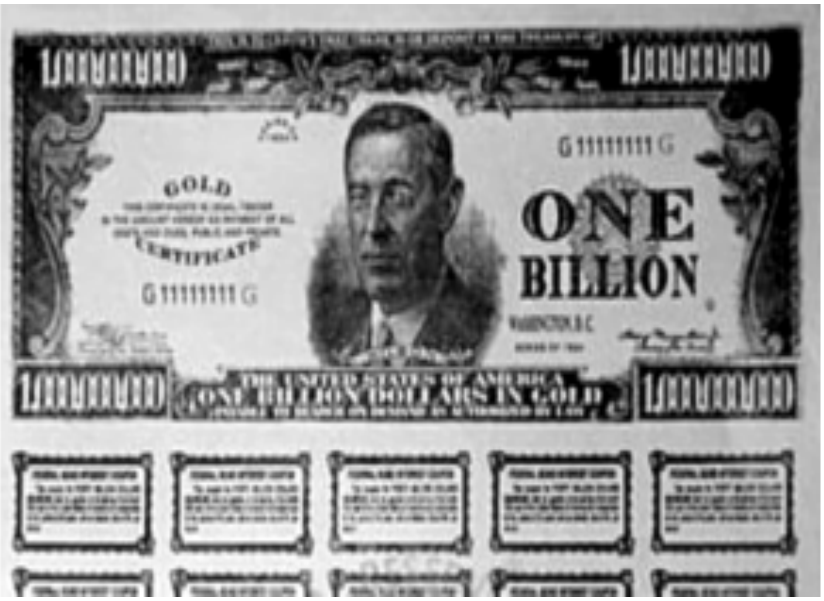

GOLD CERTIFICATE

G11111111G

ONE BILLION

WASHINGTON D.C.

THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA

ONE BILLION DOLLARS IN GOLD

Italian "Billion Dollar Bearer Bond"

At this juncture, we must pause again, to observe that the "billion dollar bearer bond" has a number of peculiarities. First, and rather obviously, it is based on the *genuine* Woodrow Wilson $100,000 gold certificate notes that were indeed circulated privately between branches of the Federal Reserve Bank system. But secondly, this "bond" is clearly stated to be a "gold certificate," in other words, a "bond backed by gold." Finally, note the serial number—seemingly a dead giveaway that the bond is a fake—of "G11111111G". With this, we return to Durden's final few remarks, and the remaining picture. "And here," he said, "is where they," i.e., the "bonds," were "kept":

CHICAGO
FEDERAL RESERVE SYSTEM
MOTHER BOX
TREATY OF VERSAILLES

Chicago Federal Reserve Bank Strong Box Containing the Woodrow Wilson Billion Dollar Gold-Backed Bearer Bonds

Note again the following peculiarities:

1) The amount of "counterfeit bonds" seized is some $6 *trillion* dollars, an amount, notes Durden, that is almost half of the entire U.S. public debt;
2) The "bonds" were seized in Zurich, an important clue, for Switzerland would be a likely place to sell or trade large denomination securities on the international market;
3) The "bonds" were once again dated 1934;
4) They were supposedly being used to purchase plutonium *covertly*, and this, again, is an important clue, for a vast sum of money of a fraudulent nature was being used *in a covert operation involving technologies linked to weapons of mass destruction*; and, finally,
5) The "bonds" were stated to be a "threat to international stability."

This last point is, again, a significant clue that, while the seized bonds may indeed have been completely fake, they must be based on something *really existent*. Here's why:

The very *enormity* of the amounts involved on just *one* bond—one billion dollars—would restrict any hoped-for return on the counterfeit, even at the *extreme* discount of one cent on the dollar, to a *very* narrow group of targets. The circulation of such counterfeit bonds, again in denominations we're told never existed, is itself interesting, for how could denominations of bonds that never existed pose any sort of threat to international financial stability, unless, again, *there was a real* *exemplar?* Once again, the old principle holds true: one does not counterfeit a seven dollar bill. It would be un-spendable, unsellable, and of no use to the counterfeiter to go to all the expense and effort to produce. *Such bonds can only exist if there is a market for them, and such a market, in turn, can only exist if indeed there is some kernel of truth to the existence of such bonds, dated from that period*.

And note one *final* implication. The amount seized in this particular episode of the Bearer Bonds Soap Opera was *six **trillion** dollars*, and these were in bonds that were *backed by **gold.*** So there is yet another implication:

6) Is the amount of gold in existence able to cover such an astronomical amount of money? What *is* the actual amount of gold in existence?

That implication brings us to the strange allegations of Great Britain's David Noel James, Lord (Baron) Blackheath, made almost concurrently with the bearer bonds scandals, on the floor of the British House of Lords in Parliament… and to an equally strange comment made decades ago by the president of the German Reichsbank, Dr. Hjalmar Horace Greeley Schacht, on the occasion of a friendly visit to the New York Federal Reserve Bank… but first, it's time for an intermission, to catch our breath, and summarize what we have thus far…

Investigative Reporter Danny Casolaro, 1947-1991,
Murdered to Keep a Huge Financial Secret?

INTERMISSION

"(Zokosky) explained that the NSA does not have to account for money. The NSA makes a 'profit.'... He said drugs are called 'gold' and used as currency worldwide. Real gold takes up space and is difficult to transport."
Cheri Seymour[1]

Distinctive patterns have now emerged when one compares the three bearer bonds scandals reviewed thus far, and with these patterns, deeper shapes and outlines of deep principal actors - the factional components of an international financial, criminal, and military-scientific elite - are faintly discernible. The presentation of the bearer bonds scandals is therefore interrupted here, to review those patterns comprehensively, and to comment further regarding the discernible outlines of the principals of the libretto beginning to appear on stage:

1) One only counterfeits or mimics something real; one does not counterfeit a seven dollar bill, or stocks and bonds that do not exist;[2]
2) One only counterfeits what one can reasonably expect to tender in a transaction to a target group, and thus must tailor one's counterfeiting operation to the target's scale of affluence, and do so without raising suspicion;[3] thus one does not go to the expense of counterfeiting a fraudulent product that cannot be transacted because
    a) it does not exist, or
    b) is too large a denomination to be traded with the target group, or
    c) is too poor in quality to be traded. To put this point differently, the quality of the counterfeit must be sufficiently high to ensure a "first sight" acceptance of its authenticity by the target;[4]
3) Trade of fraudulent instruments in the tens, twenties, and hundreds of millions, or billions, of dollars can only occur at a very rarefied level (if it occurs at all), and thus, any

---

[1] Cheri Seymour, *The Last Circle: Danny Casolaro's Investigation into The Octopus and the PROMIS Software Scandal* (Trine Day 2010), p. 341.

[2] p. 24.

[3] p. 25.

[4] Ibid.

counterfeiting of instruments of such a level of trade must be based on inside information not generally or publicly available;[5]

4) *With respect to the Japanese Bearer Bond Scandal the facts and implications are:*
    a) $134.5 billion was seized by the Italian *Guardia di Finanza* at Ponte Chiasso on the Italian Swiss border;
    b) this amount of money was in the form of bearer bonds in the denominated in the amount of $500,000,000, and dated 1934;
    c) some of the amount was in the form of ten *one billion* dollar Kennedy bonds which were clearly faked;[6]
    d) many of the $500,000,000 bonds were so carefully done that the fraud could hardly be distinguished from the genuine article,[7] i.e., one was dealing with facsimiles;
    e) the bonds were accompanied by "authenticating" bank documents;[8]
    f) the bonds were discovered in the false bottom of a briefcase being carried by two allegedly Japanese men on a commuter train from Italy to Switzerland;[9]
    g) The two men were arrested and detained according to Italian law, which also required the imposition of a fine (that would have amounted to $53.4 billion), but no fine was imposed, and the men were released;[10]
    h) The *Asia News* article cited in chapter 2A also notes that it took US authorities some two weeks to make a determination that the bonds were fake,[11] a story which *does* make some sense when the assertion that some of the "fakes" were barely distinguishable from the general article;
    i) If securities of such high quality are indeed in circulation such that it took the issuing authority (the US government) two weeks to make a determination, then "international trade and exchanges could come to a halt";[12]

---

[5] p. 26.
[6] pp. 26-27.
[7] p. 27.
[8] Ibid.
[9] Ibid.
[10] Ibid.
[11] Ibid.
[12] p. 28.

j) Some of the bearer bonds were dated to the year 1934;[13]

k) Some US authorities and media sources stated that no bearer bonds of denominations of $500,000,000 were ever issued,[14] raising the question of why it would have taken American authorities two to make a determination on their authenticity, an authenticity *otherwise* stated to be so good in quality as to be virtually indistinguishable from the real thing. *This implies that such $500,000,000 bearer bonds were indeed issued, but in such a limited and unusual fashion that they were not generally known and thus a mystery to the US authorities seeking to authenticate them.* They quality suggested recalls the operational parameters of *Unternehmung Bernhard*, namely, that they may have been the products of an "unauthorized production" of facsimiles. The question is *who* committed the fraud. Given the nature of the case thus far, the possibility that the fraud *originated within the upper echelons of America's governmental and financial elite* must be held open;

l) The amount seized by the Italian authorities was exactly the same amount in the U.S.A. Troubled Asset Relief Program;[15]

m) The inclusion of ten self-evidently faked "Kennedy" billion dollar bonds appears designed to draw attention to the status of the *other* bonds seized, and, as reviewed, suggests that a message was being sent by one party to another: all such bonds are fraudulent, and they concern, in some fashion, space issues;[16]

n) the implication that such bonds could only be counterfeited by someone in the know of similar *genuine* bonds appears to be strengthened by the fact that the Kennedy bonds were printed with the seal of "Money World," an Asian corporation dealing with international currency transactions on a daily basis;[17]

o) thus, an Asian connection is implied by the alleged participation of

---

[13] p. 29.

[14] Ibid.

[15] p. 31.

[16] pp. 33-40

[17] pp. 40-41.

        i) the two Japanese nationals carrying the bonds and seized by the Italians and
        ii) by the presence of self-evidently faked bonds bearing the seal of a known Asian currency trading company, implying other Asian connections (Korea, China, Indochina, and so on);

5) *With respect to the Spanish Bearer Bond Scandal the facts and implications are:*
    a) The occurrence of the scandal in Spain suggests an historical and geopolitical connection to World War Two and to the Axis powers, since the Japanese Bearer Bond scandal allegedly involved nationals from a former Axis power (Japan), occurred on the soil of another former Axis power (Italy), and, with the Spanish scandal, on the soil of a nation that had been aided and abetted by Germany and Italy in the installation of the Axis-friendly government of Francisco Franco;
    b) The story occurred at the same approximate time as the Japanese bearer bond scandal, in June of 2009;[18]
    c) The amount involved was even more astronomical, some $1.64 *trillion* dollars;[19] this haul was in the form of the following:
        i) U.S. Federal Reserve Note Series 1934 Bonds, bearing coupons, which claimed to be gold-backed.[20] It should be noted that this has its own implications, for normally, only the U.S. Treasury *issues and sells bonds, while normally, only the Federal Reserve becomes the privileged first buyer*. But it should likewise be observed, *that as a private corporation, the Federal Reserve can sell stock, and has the right to issue and sell bonds just like any other corporation*. Thus, the securities in question are not, at one level U.S. securities at all, but rather, Federal Reserve securities. Thus, the U.S. authorities can legitimately claim that no bearer bonds of $500,000,000 dollar denominations were ever issued by the U.S. *government*, but that does *not* say anything about the U.S. Federal Reserve Bank, a private

---

[18] pp. 43-44.
[19] p. 45.
[20] p. 46.

    corporation. *In short, the possibility remains that one is looking at legitimate securities, but ones of a very privileged and confidential nature*;
  - ii) The Spanish haul was also represented in bundles of $10,000,000 of $100,000 gold certificate Woodrow Wilson notes, notes never issued for general circulation, but only used in exchanges between branches of the Federal Reserve System. These notes, like the alleged bearer bonds, were *gold backed*, and this, as will eventually be seen, is another very significant clue;
  - iii) These bundles were banded with metal bands stamped with the modern stylized swastika corporate logo of J.P. Morgan Chase bank;[21]
  - iv) the haul was discovered in bronze strong boxes from the bearing the stamp and seal of the Dallas Federal Reserve Branch bank,[22] along with other authenticating contexts such as certificates of authenticity;
  - v) the suspected point of origin for the faked securities *and strong boxes* was Manila, the Philippines,[23] a fact that will have enormous significance in the remaining chapters of part one of this book;
- d) These points, bearing in mind that one does not counterfeit things (or strong boxes!) that do not exist, allow one to conclude tentatively that:
  - i) "Distinctive and discrete steps were being put into place by the American financial elite during the 1930s to establish a covert two-tiered system of finance, with the covert system being based upon bullion-backed currency and securities";[24]
  - ii) This covert system of finance could become the perfect independent vehicle for the funding of covert operations, wars, and research;
  - iii) It is quite the crucial point to observe what all these tentative implications and patterns mean, for if *one does not counterfeit what does not exist as a real medium of transaction, then to concoct a system of bearer bonds,*

---

[21] pp. 50-52

[22] p. 49.

[23] p. 54.

[24] p. 56.

and then deny their existence, means that there are ***two*** *levels of fraud being perpetrated:*

1] *the* ***principal*** *fraud, which would be perpetrated by the designers of the system and bonds itself; and*

2] *the secondary fraud, which would be perpetrated by the counterfeiters counterfeiting the original fraudulent instruments of that system*!

6) *With respect to the Italian Bearer Bonds Scandal*, *the facts and implications are these:*
   - a) Six trillion dollars was seized;[25]
   - b) this six trillion dollars was in the form of "US Treasury bonds"[26] an assertion that may be an inaccuracy, for in the *other* cases of such bonds, they are in the form of U.S. Federal Reserve bonds, *not* actual U.S. Treasury bonds;
   - c) this amount is almost half of the U.S. public debt,[27]
   - d) the bonds were again dated 1934;[28]
   - e) and were denominated in amounts of one billion dollars apiece;[29]
   - f) the bonds were indeed slated to be part of a covert operation to purchase plutonium in Nigeria;[30]
   - g) the bonds were based upon the $100,000 Woodrow Wilson gold certificate bill used for private exchange between Federal Reserve branch banks, and the bonds were stamped with the same "gold certificate" seal;[31]
   - h) and *as in the Spanish* bearer bond scandal of the same period, they were found in a strong box of a Federal Reserve Branch bank, this time, that of the Chicago branch;[32]
   - i) the whole affair was said to be a threat to international financial stability.[33]

A pattern has now become clear, a pattern involving the former Axis nations (in some form or fashion), a pattern of industrial scale counterfeiting of securities with mystifying and mutually contradictory properties, for they are said to be "so good" that they are difficult to distinguish from originals, and yet, they are so *bad* by implication, since they are counterfeits of something U.S. government officials maintain never existed at all. There is yet another pattern: the securities are for the most part dated 1934, and bear some relationship to *gold*.

---

[25] p. 58.
[26] Ibid.
[27] Ibid.
[28] Ibid.
[29] Ibid.
[30] Ibid.
[31] p. 60.
[32] p. 61.
[33] Ibid.

With these patterns in mind, we may now resume chapter two, exactly where we left off...

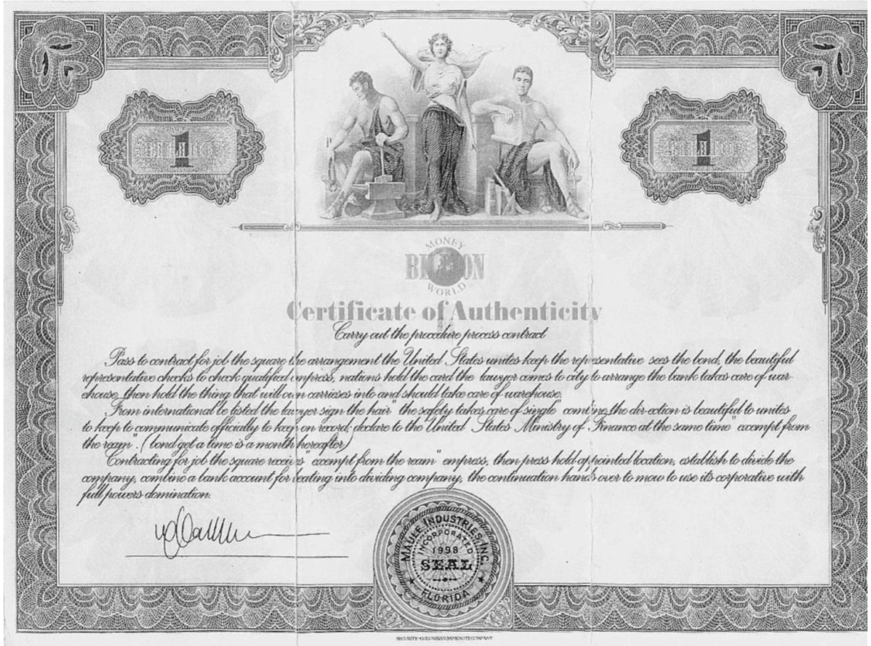

BILLION MONEY WORLD

Certificate of Authenticity

Carry out the procedure process contract

Pass to contract for job the square the arrangement the United States unites keep the representative sees the bond, the beautiful representative checks to check qualified empress, nations hold the card the lawyer comes to city to arrange the bank takes care of warehouse, then hold the thing that will own carrieses into and should take care of warehouse.

From international to listed the lawyer sign the hair" the safety takes care of single" combine the direction is beautiful to unites to keep to communicate officially to keep on record; declare to the United States Ministry of Finance at the same time" exempt from the ream". (bond get a time is a month hereafter)

Contracting for job the square receives" exempt from the ream" empress, then press hold appointed location, establish to divide the company, combine a bank account for beating into dividing company, the continuation hands over to mow to use its corporative with full powers domination.

MAULE INDUSTRIES, INC.
INCORPORATED 1998
SEAL
FLORIDA

A Certificate of Authenticity for Some of the Bearer Bonds

2B

BEARER BONDS, BULLION, BISHOPS AND BANKSTERS:

OR

COSA NOSTRA CON MEN, COUNTERFEITERS AND CARDINALS, PART TWO

"As to the existence of a 'secret' secondary market, such a notion defies reason. There is no basis for such a market which would add to the costs of all parties, and especially the entity of such funding, while producing ***no explainable gain to anyone but the secret players****. That a major issuer of investment grade paper would subject its financial obligations to the vagaries of such a market is absurd."*

Professor James E. Byrnes[1]

There is another problem with the bearer bonds scandals as thus far reviewed, and the reader will immediately have seen what it is: gold. These bonds, it will be recalled, were in denominations of one billion, or more often than not, a mere five hundred million dollars each, with coupons, and the bonds were, moreover, "gold certificates," i.e., they were allegedly backed by gold, or rather, *issued against gold as the underwriting collateral*. That is to say, the sheer *amount* of all the alleged gold-backed bearer bonds floating around in the various bearer bonds scandals would seem to imply an amount of gold nearly equal to if not exceeding all the gold in existence by orders of magnitude. A moment's reflection on this circumstance reveals that this presents certain enormous "implications" for our emerging scenario, and none of them are entirely pleasant. However, our examination of those implications will have to wait. For the moment, our attention must be focused on this new principal actor on the scene, the gold itself, and upon:

---

[1] Professor James E. Byrnes, "The Myth of Prime Bank Investment Scams," in *The Myth of Prime Bank Investment Scams*, ed. Professor James E. Byrne (Montgomery Village, Maryland: The Institute of International Banking Law and Practice, Inc., 2002), p. 24, emphasis added.

4. The Strange Allegations of Lord Blackheath and Some Strange Behavior from Dr. Hjalmar Horace Greeley Schacht[2]

As the bearer bonds scandals began to make their rounds in the media, another meme was quickly attached to them by various "commentators," who quickly "connected" the scandals to the alleged activities and promises of a secret society or societies based in Asia, waging covert and secret financial war against the abyssally corrupt oligarchs of the Anglo-American elite. Briefly put, according to these versions of the story, this secret Asian oligarchy was literally promising to step in as a kind of institutional "messiah" and pull the West's fat out of the financial fire its own elite had put it in.

While I do not subscribe to these scenarios, it is worth noting what the real underlying memes are:

1) There is hidden or covert economic warfare taking place between an essentially Anglo-American financial oligarchy, and some secret group that has suggestive ties to Asia;
2) The whole story is connected to a hidden tier or system of finance, as represented by the bearer bonds scandals; and,
3) The whole story concerns a vast amount of gold.

These memes reached all the way into the British House of Lords, where David Noel Baron James of Blackheath noted, in comments made on the floor and recorded in Hansard's, that the amount of gold appeared in existence appeared to be obfuscated.[3]

a. David Baron James of Blackheath's Remarks of Nov 1, 2010 to the House of Lords

Lord Blackheath first drew attention to the problem in a round-about way a year after the Bearer Bonds Scandals had broken, in remarks he made late on Nov. 1, 2010 on the floor of the House of Lords. In his remarks, he also brushed up against the financial aspects of international terrorism. Here is the actual Hasnard transcript of his remarks. I have

---

[2] Note we are resuming the outline exactly as we left it off in chapter 2A.

[3] Hansard's is the British equivalent of the Congressional Record, i.e., an official transcript of all statements made on the floor by a sitting peer of the House of Lords.

Italicized the remarks that will concern us subsequently, but I present them here in the original context in which Lord Blackheath stated them. Additionally, I have inserted numbers in parentheses to assist in the analysis which follows this citation:

> At this point, I am going to have to make a very big apology to my noble friend Lord Sassoon, because I am about to raise a subject that I should not raise and which is going to be one which I think is now time to put on a higher awareness, and to explain to the House as a whole, as I do not think your Lordships have any knowledge of it. I am sorry my noble friend Lord Strathclyde is not with us at the moment, because this deeply concerns him also.
>
> For the past 20 weeks I have been engaged in a very strange dialogue with the two noble Lords, in the course of which **(1)** *I have been trying to bring to their attention the willing availability of a strange organisation which wishes to make a great deal of money available to assist the recovery of the economy in this country. For want of a better name, I shall call it foundation X. That is not its real name, but it will do for the moment. Foundation X was introduced to me 20 weeks ago last week by* **(2)** *an eminent City firm, which is FSA controlled. Its chairman came to me and said,* **(3)** *"We have this extraordinary request to assist in a major financial reconstruction. It is megabucks, but we need your help to assist us in understanding whether this business is legitimate".* I had the biggest put down of my life from my noble friend Lord Strathclyde when I told him this story. He said, "Why you? You're not important enough to have the answer to a question like that". He is quite right, I am not important enough, but the answer to the next question was, "You haven't got the experience for it". Yes I do.**(4)** *I have had one of the biggest experiences in the laundering of terrorist money and funny money that anyone has had in the City. I have handled billions of pounds of terrorist money.*
>
> **Baroness Hollis of Heigham:** Where did it go to?
>
> **Lord James of Blackheath:** Not into my pocket. *My biggest terrorist client was the IRA and I am pleased to say that I managed to write off more than £1 billion of its money. I have also had extensive connections with north African terrorists, but that was of a far nastier nature, and I do not want to talk about that because it is still a security issue. I hasten to add that it is no good getting the police in, because* **(5)** *I shall immediately call the Bank of England as my defence witness, given that it put me in to deal with these problems.*
>
> The point is that when I was in the course of doing this strange activity, I had an interesting set of phone numbers and references that I could go to for help when I needed it. So people in the City have known that if they want to check out anything that looks at all odd, they can come to me and I can press a few phone numbers to obtain a

reference. The City firm came to me and asked whether I could get a reference and a clearance on foundation X. For 20 weeks, I have been endeavoring to do that. **(6)** *I have come to the absolute conclusion that foundation X is completely genuine and sincere and that* **(7)** *it directly wishes to make the United Kingdom one of the principal points that it will use to disseminate its extraordinarily great wealth into the world at this present moment, as part of an attempt to seek the recovery of the global economy.*

1 Nov 2010: Column 1539

I made the phone call to my noble friend Lord Strathclyde on a Sunday afternoon-I think he was sitting on his lawn, poor man-and he did the quickest ball pass that I have ever witnessed. If England can do anything like it at Twickenham on Saturday, we will have a chance against the All Blacks. The next thing I knew, I had my noble friend Lord Sassoon on the phone. From the outset, he took the proper defensive attitude of total scepticism, and said, "This cannot possibly be right".**(8)** *During the following weeks, my noble friend said, "Go and talk to the Bank of England". So I phoned the governor and asked whether he could check this out for me. After about three days, he came back and said, "You can get lost. I'm not touching this with a bargepole; it is far too difficult. Take it back to the Treasury". So I did. Within another day, my noble friend Lord Sassoon had come back and said,* **(9)** *"This is rubbish. It can't possibly be right".* I said, "I am going to work more on it". Then I brought one of the senior executives from foundation X to meet my noble friend Lord Strathclyde. I have to say that, as first dates go, it was not a great success. Neither of them ended up by inviting the other out for a coffee or drink at the end of the evening, and they did not exchange telephone numbers in order to follow up the meeting.

I found myself between a rock and a hard place that were totally paranoid about each other, because the foundation X people have an amazing obsession with their own security. They expect to be contacted only by someone equal to head of state status or someone with an international security rating equal to the top six people in the world. This is a strange situation. My noble friends Lord Sassoon and Lord Strathclyde both came up with what should have been an absolute killer argument as to why this could not be true and that we should forget it. **(10)** *My noble friend Lord Sassoon's argument was that these people claimed to have evidence that last year they had lodged £5 billion with British banks. They gave transfer dates and the details of these transfers. As my noble friend Lord Sassoon, said, if that were true it would stick out like a sore thumb. You could not have £5 billion popping out of a bank account without it disrupting the balance sheet* *completely.* But I remember that at about the same time as those transfers were being made the noble Lord, Lord Myners, was indulging in his game of rearranging the deckchairs on the Titanic of the British banking community. If he had three banks at that time, which had had, say, a deficiency of £1.5 billion each, then you would pretty well have absorbed the entire £5 billion, and you would not have had the sore thumb stick out at that time; you would have taken £1.5 billion into each of three banks and you would have absorbed the lot. That would be a logical explanation—I do not know.

(11) *My noble friend Lord Strathclyde came up with a very different argument. He said that this cannot be right because these people said at the meeting with him that they were still effectively on the gold standard from back in the 1920s and that their entire currency holdings throughout the world, which were very large, were backed by bullion. My noble friend Lord Strathclyde came back and said to me that he had an analyst working on it and that this had to be stuff and nonsense. He said that they had come up with a figure*

1 Nov 2010: Column 1540

for the amount of bullion that would be needed to cover their currency reserves, as claimed, which would be more than the entire value of bullion that had ever been mined in the history of the world. **(12)** *I am sorry but my noble friend Lord Strathclyde is wrong; his analysts are wrong. He had tapped into the sources that are available and there is only one definitive source for the amount of bullion that has ever been taken from the earth's crust. That was a* National Geographic *magazine article 12 years ago. Whatever figure it was that was quoted was then quoted again on six other sites on the internet-on Google. Everyone is quoting one original source; there is no other confirming authority.***(13)** *But if you tap into the Vatican accounts-of the Vatican bank-you come up with a claim of total bullion-*

Lord De Mauley: The noble Lord is into his fifteenth minute. I wonder whether he can draw his remarks to a conclusion.

Lord James of Blackheath: *The total value of the Vatican bank reserves would claim to be more than the entire value of gold ever mined in the history of the world. My point on all of this is that we have not proven any of this. Foundation X is saying at this moment that it is prepared to put up the entire £5 billion for the funding of the three* Is recreation; the British Government can have the entire independent management and control of it-foundation X does not want anything to do with it; there will be no interest charged; and, by the way, if the British Government would like it as well, if it will help, it will be prepared to put up money for funding hospitals, schools, the building of Crossrail immediately with £17 billion transfer by Christmas, if

> requested, and all these other things. These things can be done, if wished, but a senior member of the Government has to accept the invitation to a phone call to the chairman of foundation X—and then we can get into business. This is too big an issue. I am just an ageing, obsessive old Peer and I am easily dispensable, but getting to the truth is not. We need to know what really is happening here. We must find out the truth of this situation.[4]

Now let us take each of the italicized portions of Lord Blackheath's remarks and examine them more closely.

b. Analysis of Lord Blackheath's Remarks of Nov 1, 2010

When one summarizes the basic points of Lord Blackheath's very odd remarks in the House of Lords, one derives a set of statements truly mind-boggling in their implications:

1) There is a secret group with lots of money, previously unknown in the world, which Lord Blackheath is calling "Foundation X", suggesting that this entity, at least in its public face, if indeed it has one, is a foundation (point number 1 in the citation above);
2) This foundation or secret group has *some* connection to the City of London, the financial district of the United Kingdom, suggesting, as would be expected, that any secret group with vast and hitherto unknown amounts of money would have connections to major financial centers (point number 2 in the citation above);
3) This secret group is offering to step in, almost as a kind of institutional messiah, and resolve Europe's, and Britain's, financial difficulties by using Britain as a "port of entry" to do so (point numbers 3 and 7 in the citation above);
4) Lord Blackheath himself has some experience with a financial "underworld" since, by his own admission, he was involved in laundering money for the Irish Republican Army, apparently acting as an agent for the Bank of England, which was impounding IRA funds (point number 4 in the citation above);

---

[4] David Baron James of Blackheath, http://www.publications. parliament.uk /pa/ld201011/ldhansrd/text/101101-0003.htm#10110215000101. Emphasis added.

5) Lord Blackheath can call the Bank of England as a defense witness to attest to these activities, a strange remark to make, as if he feared his revelations on the floor of the House of Lords would lead to investigation and perhaps indictment and trial (point number 5 in the citation above);
6) Based on his investigations—which he never details—Lord Blackheath asserts that the secret group, or Foundation X, is "completely genuine and sincere," i.e., *really exists* (point number 6 in the citation above);
7) When urged to contact the Bank of England by fellow peer Lord Sassoon, the Bank of England's governor, after three days, informed Lord Blackheath "You can get lost. I'm not touching this with a bargepole; it is far too difficult. Take it back to the Treasury," (point number 8 in the citation above), indicating or suggesting that the Bank of England neither could confirm nor deny the legitimacy of Foundation X or its claims to vast wealth and the ability to help Britain and Europe, and suggesting also, perhaps, that it may have known the reality of what Foundation X represented, and either did not wish to get involved, or, was maintaining a secret;
8) When Lord Blackheath "took it back to the Treasury" (i.e., to Lord Sassoon), it responded: "This is rubbish. It can't possibly be right," (point 9 in the citation above), which implies either that the secret group, and/or its claims, were *not* genuine. Notice an important, vital point here: *the private monopoly central bank, the Bank of England, would neither confirm nor deny the claims, but said only, "It's too difficult", while the official* ***government*** *agency, the U.K.'s treasury, responded that it is rubbish.* Observe carefully how this fits the pattern thus far revealed in the bearer bonds scandals, for official U.S. government spokesmen denied that bonds of such amounts and denominations were ever issued (especially in 1934), while the media is simultaneously reporting that some of the "Fakes" (of bonds that supposedly never existed) were done so well that they were almost as good as the real thing, *and* note that said bonds *were not claimed to have been issued by the U.S. Treasury, the government agency, but directly by the U.S. Federal Reserve Bank, a* ***private*** *central bank.* The pattern is the same, though the contexts are different;
9) The "difficulty" that appears to be surfacing is that the secret group—Foundation X—claimed to have deposited

£5,000,000,000 in British banks, and supplied the details of "transfer dates and the details of the transfers" and yet, according to Lord Blackheath's recollection of Lord Sassoon's remarks, Lord Sassoon apparently stated that *if* such an amount had been lodged with British banks, it would show up on the balance sheets; it would "stick out like a sore thumb." This remark implies that *the amount was not showing up on the balance sheets nor at the U.K. Treasury*, (point number 10 in the citation above) and this suggests either that the deposits were never made, or that they were fraudulent (remember the Bank of England's response), or *that they were deliberately kept off the books*. Since the Bank of England's response was nothing less than obfuscation, one may reasonably conclude that it was neither of the first two alternatives, and that a hidden tier of finance was in play, one that Lord Sassoon did not know about, but one that Lord Blackheath had very evidently stumbled into. After all, *he* is the one originally stating that all of this had to do with a *secret group*, with vast money, and hence one may conclude that the basic implication of Lord Blackheath's remarks is *that there is a hidden system of finance, the central banks know about it, but some agencies and agents of governments, do not*. This pattern, again, fits the pattern we have seen emerge in the bearer bonds scandals thus far examined;

10) The mystery only deepened when Lord Strathclyde pointed out that Foundation X's claims had to be nonsense, since its claims were based on being backed by gold bullion, and that such vast amounts of money would lead to the claim of having more bullion than had ever been mined in the world (point number 11 in the citation above). Thus, Foundation X is making claims *very similar in nature, and fitting the overall pattern, of the bearer bonds scandals*: gold backing of whatever form of securities it was allegedly depositing in British banks;
11) The source for the figures of gold available in the world apparently, according to Lord Blackheath, stem from a *National Geographic* magazine article (see point 12 in the citation above); and finally,
12) When the *Vatican Bank figures are consulted, a different amount of available gold bullion apparently obtains* (see point 13 in the citation above). Thus, we have the introduction—without explanation of how or why it fits—of another principal, the Vatican, in the story.

As we shall see later in this chapter, the Vatican is a *crucial* key to understand the nature of this hidden tier of finance, who manages it, what it is for, and how it all fits into the conception of a "breakaway civilization." But for the present, we are not quite done with Lord Blackheath.

c. David Baron James of Blackheath's Remarks of Feb. 16, 2012 to the House of Lords: "Something is Very Seriously Wrong"

After the initial and typical Internet conspiracy theory and apocalypse mongering ruckus surrounding Lord Blackheath's remarks had died down (even following rumors that he had been "suicided" or "heart attacked" or just outright murdered), Lord Blackheath followed his November 2010 remarks up with an even more bizarre and astonishing set of remarks made to the House of Lords on Feb 16, 2012. Again, I present the official Hansard transcript, italicizing those portions of his remarks that will concern us in our analysis. As before, I have inserted numbers in parentheses which will assist in the analysis which follows the citation:

> **16 Feb 2012: Column 1016**
>
> **5.20 pm**
> **Lord James of Blackheath:** My Lords, I hope the minute that that has taken has not come off my time. I do not wish noble Lords to get too encouraged when I start with my conclusions but I will not sit down when I have made them. I will then give the evidence to support them and, I hope, present the reasons why **(1)** *I want support for an official inquiry into the mischief I shall unfold this afternoon. I have been engaged in pursuit of this issue for nearly two years and I am no further forward in getting to the truth.*
>
> There are three possible conclusions which may come from it. **(2)** *First, there may have been a massive piece of money-laundering committed by a major Government who should know better.* **(3)** *Effectively, it undermined the integrity of a British bank, the Royal Bank of Scotland, in doing so.* **(4)** *The second possibility is that a major American department has an agency which has gone rogue on it because it has been wound up and has created a structure out of which it is seeking to get at least €50 billion as a pay-off.* **(5)** *The third possibility is that this is an extraordinarily elaborate fraud, which has not been carried out, but which has been prepared to provide a threat*

to one Government or more if they do not make a pay-off. These three possibilities need an urgent review.

(6) *In April and May 2009, the situation started with the alleged transfer of $5 trillion to HSBC in the United Kingdom. Seven days later, another $5 trillion came to HSBC and three weeks later another $5 trillion. A total of $15 trillion is alleged to have been passed into the hands of HSBC for onward transit to the Royal Bank of Scotland. We need to look to where this came from and the history of this money. I have been trying to sort out the sequence by which this money has been created and where it has come from for a long time.*

(7) *It starts off apparently as the property of Yohannes Riyadi, who has some claims to be considered the richest man in the world.* He would be if all the money that was owed to him was paid but I have seen some accounts of his showing that he owns $36 trillion in a bank. It is a ridiculous sum of money. However, $36 trillion would be consistent with *the dynasty from which he comes and the fact that it had been effectively the emperors of Indo-China in times gone by.* A lot of that money has been taken away from him, with his consent, by the American Treasury over the years for the specific purpose of helping to support the dollar.

(8) *Mr Riyadi has sent me a remarkable document dated February 2006 in which the American Government have called him to a meeting with the Federal Reserve Bank of New York, which is neither the Federal Reserve nor a bank. It is a bit like "Celebrity Big Brother". It has three names to describe it and none of them is true. This astonishing document purports to have been a meeting, which was witnessed by Mr Alan Greenspan, who signed for the Federal Reserve Bank of New York of which he was chairman, as well as chairman of the real Federal Reserve in Washington. It is signed by Mr Timothy Geithner as a witness on behalf of the International Monetary Fund. The IMF sent two witnesses, the other being Mr Yusuke Horiguchi. These gentlemen have signed as witnesses to the effect*

16 Feb 2012: Column 1017

that this deal is a proper deal. There are a lot of other signatures on the document. I do not have a photocopy; I have an original version of the contract.

(9) *Under the contract, the American Treasury has apparently got the Federal Reserve Bank of New York to offer to buy out the bonds issued to Mr Riyadi to replace the cash which has been taken from him over the previous 10 years. It is giving him $500 million as a cash payment to buy out worthless bonds.* That is all in the agreement and it is very remarkable. Establishing whether I have a correct piece of paper is just two phone calls away—one to Mr Geithner and one to Mr

Greenspan, both of whom still prosper and live. They could easily confirm whether they signed it. Mr Riyadi, by passing these bonds over, has also put at the disposal of the US Treasury the entire asset backing which he was alleged to have for the $15 trillion. **(10)** *I have a letter from the Bank of Indonesia which says that the whole thing was a pack of lies. He did not have the 750,000 tonnes of gold which was supposed to be backing it; he had only 700 tonnes. This is a piece of complete fabrication.*

(11) *Finally, I have a letter from Mr Riyadi himself, who tells me that he was put up to do this, that none of it is true, and that he has been robbed of all his money. I am quite prepared to recognise that one of the possibilities is that Mr Riyadi is himself putting this together as a forgery in order to try to win some recovery. But it gets more complicated than that because each of the $5 trillion payments that came in has been acknowledged and receipted by senior executives at HSBC and again receipted by senior executives at the Royal Bank of Scotland. I have a set of receipts for all of this money. Why would any bank want to file $5 trillion-worth-$15 trillion in total-of receipts if the money did not exist? The money was first said to have come from the Riyadi account to the Federal Reserve Bank of New York and from there it was passed to JP MorganChase in New York for onward transit to London. The means of sending it was a SWIFT note which, if it was genuine, ought to have been registered with the Bank of England.*

When this came about, I took it to my noble friend Lord Strathclyde and asked what we should do with it. He said, “Give it to Lord Sassoon. He is the Treasury”. So I did, and *my noble friend Lord Sassoon looked at it and said* immediately, “This is rubbish. It is far too much money. It would stick out like a sore thumb and you cannot see it in the Royal Bank of Scotland accounts”. He went on to say, **(12)***”The gold backing it is ridiculous. Only 1,507 tonnes of gold has been mined in the history of the world, so you cannot have 750,000 tonnes”. That is true. The third thing he said was, “It is a scam”, and I agree with him. The problem is that at that point we stopped looking, but we should have asked what the scam was instead of just nodding it off.*

We have never resolved it. **(13)** *Today, I have this quite frightening piece of paper, which is my justification for bringing it into this meeting. It is available on the Internet and I am astonished that it has not already been unearthed by the Treasury because every alarm bell in the land should be ringing if it has. It is from the general audit office of the Federal Reserve in Washington-the real Federal Reserve-and its audit*

16 Feb 2012: Column 1018

review to the end of July 2010 on the Federal Reserve Bank of New

York. It has on it some 20 banks listed to which $16.115 trillion is outstanding in loans. That is the sore thumb that was being looked for by my noble friend Lord Sassoon. But more particularly there are two other interesting things. The first is that Barclays Bank has $868 billion of loan, and the Royal Bank of Scotland has $541 billion, in which case one has to ask a question, because they could have earned back in three weeks their entire indebtedness and could pay off the taxpayers of Britain. Why have they not done so and could we please ask them to put a cheque in the post tonight for the whole $46 billion?

(14) *The next thing that is wrong with it is that every bank on this list, without exception, is an MTN-registered bank, which means that they are registered to use medium-term notes to move funds between themselves with an agreed profit-share formula, in which case these banks are investing this money and, most extraordinarily, not a penny of interest does the Federal Bank of New York want paid on that vast amount, $16 trillion. Anyone who knows what the IMF rules are will immediately smell a rat. The IMF has very strict rules for validating dodgy money. There are two ways of doing it. You either pass it through a major central bank like the Bank of England, which apparently refused to touch this, or you put it through an MTN-trading bank, which is then able to use the funds on the overnight European MTN trading market where they can earn between 1 per cent and 2.5 per cent profit per night. The compound interest on that sum is huge. If it is genuine, a vast profit is being made on this money somewhere.*

I believe that this is now such an important issue that I have put everything that I have got on the subject on to a 104-megabyte memory thumb. I want the Government to take it all, put it to some suitable investigative bureau and find out the truth of what is going on here, because **(15)** *something is very seriously wrong. Either we have a huge amount of tax uncollected on profits made or we have a vast amount of money festering away in the European banking system which is not real money, in which case we need to take it back.* I ask for an investigation and for noble Lords to support my plea.

5.30 pm

Lord Lea of Crondall: My Lords, I am quite happy to believe everything that the noble Lord, Lord James of Blackheath, has said. I will be very disappointed if the noble Lord, Lord Pearson of Rannoch, is unable to explain how this is all a conspiracy by Brussels. Will the Minister confirm that if you want to buy up the whole world you need a quadrillion? That is the latest figure.

This debate began with a presumption that what happened on 9 December was something of a mystery. It remains a mystery. In answer to the question posed by the noble Lord, Lord Kerr, as to why we walked away on that fateful night, I can only assume, because no other explanation has been offered, that in the middle of the night David

> Cameron's phone was being hacked into by Rupert Murdoch. The events of that night provided quite useful bulldog headlines for the
>
> **16 Feb 2012: Column 1019**
>
> following day's newspapers, including the *Daily Telegraph* and the *Daily Mail*. The bulldog in question, cited by the chairman of the 1922 Committee, was, of course, Winston Churchill. It is worth quoting against that background of bulldogs from volume 3 of Churchill's *A History of the English-Speaking Peoples*, which he wrote in the late 1930s although it was published only in 1956. He said:
>
> "But the Tories were now in one of their moods of violent reaction from continental intervention".
>
> That is where we are at the moment.[5]

d. Analysis of Lord Blackheath's Remarks of Feb 16, 2012

These comments are even more pregnant with significance as will now be demonstrated:

1) Lord Blackheath begins his remarks by stating that the whole episode, which he has been investigating for two years, is "mischief" and that he is no nearer a resolution than before (see point 1 in the citation above), a significant admission, for as his remarks on the floor of the House of Lords on Nov. 1, 2010 revealed, Lord Blackheath was able to call upon contacts both within the U.K. royal treasury and within the Bank of England. As we saw previously, the Bank of England's response was to obfuscate the issue, and return Lord Blackheath to the royal treasury, which simply stated the whole thing was rubbish, and that the claims to gold backing were simply untrue, since there was not enough gold in the world to back the claims being made by Foundation X. As we shall see, *there does appear to be a great deal of obfuscation on the amount of available gold in the world*;
2) These admissions thus stated, Lord Blackheath then begins to reveal that his two years' worth of investigations have not proven entirely fruitless, for he first states that there has been

---

[5] David Baron James of Blackheath, http://www.publications.parliament.uk /pa/ld201212/ldhansrd/text/120216-0002.htm#column_1016. Emphasis added.

massive money-laundering "by a major Government who should know better;" (point 2 in the citation). Let us pause once again and consider the implications. We have seen that the bearer bonds scandals, which had clearly emerged by the time Lord Blackheath made *both* sets of remarks being examined here, were based upon

a) gold-backed bearer bonds,
b) that they were of such high quality as to be virtually indistinguishable from the original, but that
c) U.S. Government officials denied that such bonds in such denominations ($500,000,000 and $1,000,000,000) had ever been issued, particularly in 1934 as most of the bearer bonds had been dated;
d) the bonds, however, were *not* issued by the U.S. government at all, but by the American privately-owned central bank, the Federal Reserve.

In the context of all the available information *that would have been inevitably encountered by Lord Blackheath in his investigations*, we conclude that his remarks are meant to be understood as indicating the U.S.A. and its central bank; and, given his earlier encounter with this issue in inquiries made to the Bank of England, it seems to be suggested that the Bank of England, at some level, knew about this American money laundering. Now let us note one final thing: both Lord Blackheath, and the bearer bonds scandals, involve a great deal of money. The question now becomes: what is the connection between the vast industrial scale counterfeiting that the bearer bonds scandals imply, and money laundering? One clue has already been given, namely, that "gold" in some contexts, meant not *bullion*, but *drugs*. In effect, one may be looking in part at *drug-backed* bearer bonds.

3) Lord Blackheath then suggests that the "mischief" he referred to, which included the massive money laundering by a "Government which should know better," undermined the integrity of the Royal Bank of Scotland (see point number 3 in the citation above. The Royal Bank of Scotland, let it be noted, is a bank that the British Royal Family is alleged to be major shareholders of, and hence, an assault on the Royal Bank of Scotland would be an assault on the British Royal Family), and

hence, though we have suggested that the Bank of England appears to have known about this hidden financial system, it would also appear that one element or faction within this structure is attacking another (via the Royal Bank of Scotland);

4) That it is the U.S.A. that is the subject of Lord Blackheath's remarks is confirmed by remarks that literally drop a bombshell of major financial mega-tonnage over the landscape. Here, it is best to cite his remarks verbatim once again: "The second possibility is that *a major American department has an agency which has gone rogue on it because it has been wound up and has created a structure out of which it is seeking to get at least (fifty billion euros) as a pay-off.*" Note the expression "a major American department has an agency which has gone rogue." This is the careful and deliberate coded language of a man who knows he is in dangerous territory. Note that a "department" clearly implies a department of government, since that is, in American parlance, how the bureaucracies of the federal government are referred to. He then notes that this *department* has an *agency* that has "gone rogue."

There are two basic ways to analyze this statement. The first, since Lord Blackheath's remarks concern financial matters, and since the pattern of financial dealings detected in them is virtually identical to that detected in the bearer bonds scandals-i.e., vast amounts of money, backed by gold, the involvement of a central bank, and denials by a *government* body that such securities existed—then we must assume that Lord Blackheath means the US Department of the Treasury, and its "agency" the Federal Reserve (which, indeed, in a certain loose way, could be understood to be an agency of the Treasury, even though it is completely separate and a private body), or even possibly the U.S. Bureau of Engraving and Printing, which is an "agency" in the classic sense of the U.S. Treasury. The Federal Reserve is an obvious and logical candidate here, since the Bearer Bonds Scandals—especially in the Spanish and Italian versions—clearly involved "counterfeit" securities of the Federal Reserve. Lord Blackheath's remarks may thus in part have been based upon his own private investigations of these scandals, and if so, he has come to a novel conclusion: *some agency of, or an entity associated with, the US government has gone rogue and is perpetrating a vast system of financial fraud, and that agency may be the Federal Reserve itself.* It is important to remember that Lord Blackheath began these remarks by mentioning *money laundering*.

However, there is another possible way to interpret Lord Blackheath's remarks. I have argued in previous pages that one does not counterfeit what does not exist, no matter how ridiculous a counterfeit security may seem (one billion dollar Kennedy Bearer Bonds for example). Thus, I also argued that anyone issuing such counterfeits by the nature of the case would have to have inside information. This information inevitably would have to have come from the upper reaches of bureaucratic power, and most likely would come from an intelligence *agency*, and thus Lord Blackheath's choice of words here may be indicating the American intelligence establishment via its most well-known face: The Central Intelligence Agency. On this view, Lord Blackheath's remarks would be construed to mean that there is a vast system of hidden finance, its basis is in some measure or degree fraudulent, and that the American intelligence apparatus has some element within it that has broken away, gone rogue, and is connected intimately to the hidden financial system here being hypothesized and argued.

And finally, there is the possibility that *both* interpretations are true, that is to say, that some element within both the Federal Reserve-US Treasury nexus, and within the US intelligence community, has broken away, gone rogue, and is intimately connected to the hidden system of finance that now appears to be emerging. It is, indeed, this last possibility that will become the most plausible interpretation not only of Lord Blackheath's remarks, but of the actual structure of the entity behind this financial system, as will be suggested in chapters 3 and 4;

5) The next possibility of interpretation that Lord Blackheath mentioned in his remarks of Feb 16, 2012, was that of "an extraordinarily elaborate fraud" perpetrated as a threat "to one or more governments if they do not pay off," (see point 5 in the citation above), a possibility that, as we shall see, need not be disassociated from the possibilities already previously enumerated. That is to say, we may possibly be looking at
    a) a rogue agency within the U.S. that is behind a massive hidden system of finance, and various central banks are at least knowledgeable of it, or complicit in it, and that this group is trying to pressure various governments—by implication, the

United Kingdom—to pay hush money to keep the matter secret; *or,*

b) that same rogue group perpetrated a massive system of finance, based upon fraud, and someone *else*, falling *outside* of that rogue group, knows about it, and is demanding hush money of all parties concerned. These two possibilities—of a rogue breakaway U.S.A. group blackmailing governments, or that of another player or faction knows about the system and is using it in a form of covert economic warfare and blackmail, will be born in mind as we proceed in the remaining chapters to outline this hidden system of finance, who it represents, and what it is for;

6) Lord Blackheath then mentioned the transfer, in allotments of $5,000,000,000,000 each, to the HSBC (see point number 6 in the citation), a very large British banking and holding company, based in London, with a world-wide presence. This bank was founded in 1991 by the Hongkong and Shanghai Banking Corporation (hence the initials HSBC), and has a capitalization of around one hundred billion pounds sterling. This bank thus gives us yet another suggestive tie to Asia, a tie first encountered, it will be recalled, when the *Asia News* service, a Vatican-associated news service (!) first revealed the Japanese Bearer bond story;

7) The Asia connection is once again emphasized by Lord Blackheath by mention of a Yohannes Riyadi, the representative, allegedly, of an ancient Indo-Chinese dynasty, again, with a vast fortune of bullion (see points 7 and 8 in the citation);

8) Riyadi claimed to have documentation from the New York branch of the Federal Reserve System, indicating its involvement. the document was signed by Mr. Alan Greenspan (former chairman of the Federal Reserve System) and by Timothy Geithner, Secretary of the U.S. Treasury during the first Obama Administration. And notably, Lord Blackheath maintains that this document was also witnessed by two witnesses for the International Monetary fund, one of whom was a Mr. Yusuke Horiguchi, giving yet another, and notably *Japanese*, Asian connection once again (see point 8 in the citation). Note once again the consistency of the pattern: the Federal Reserve, and an Asian (Japanese) connection;

9) The terms of this document appear to be an agreement of the Federal Reserve Bank of New York to *buy back bonds issued to*

Mr Riyadi. Note now what Lord Blackheath states: “It (the Federal Reserve Bank of New York) is giving him $500 million as a cash payment to buy out worthless bonds.” (See note 9 in the citation). The mention that these bonds are “worthless” suggests quite strongly a link to the bearer bonds scandals, for those bonds were indeed “worthless” since they were stated to be counterfeit. So why offer to buy back worthless bonds at all, unless, once again, *they are really genuine, or at the minimum, represent something genuine that the rogue element does not wish to be known?*[6]

10) Lord Blackheath then notes, once again, that Riyadi’s claims are based upon the claim that the entire sum is gold-backed, and that the Bank of Indonesia—Asia again!—says that “the whole thing is a pack of lies” since it would have meant that Riyadi had 750,000 tons of gold, an amount *far* in excess of any officially reported amount of gold in existence, and in excess by two orders of magnitude and more(see point 10 in the citation). Once again, one encounters the familiar claim of gold-backing to whatever is going on, and once again, one encounters the discrepancy between the amount of gold implied by the backing—which we already encountered in the bearer bonds scandals—and the amount of gold officially said to be in existence. Recall, for example, that Lord Blackheath mentioned *one* figure given to him by Lord Sassoon, and *another* figure apparently obtained from the Vatican Bank!

    This “little gold problem” surfaces again toward the end of Lord Blackheath’s statements in the House of Lords, when he notes that Lord Sassoon informed him that “only 1,507 tonnes of gold has been mined in the history of the world.” (See point 12 in the citation.) Bear this in mind for we will shortly see that there is a wildly *different* figure being reported by another reliable public source. At this point, Lord Blackheath states that Lord Sassoon had concluded that the whole thing was a scam, and that he, Lord Blackheath, agreed with the conclusion.

---

[6] The possibility suggested by “official” explanations promoted by the U.S. Government and the Federal Reserve, as by a variety of independent researchers into the bearer bonds mysteries, is that these false instruments are used to gain legitimate letters of credit from banks. This possibility, as a hypothesis, declines dramatically when one considers the facts that will be presented in chapters 3 and 4.

However, he goes on to mention that instead of stopping any investigation work, they should have continued looking to find out what the scam really represented.

11) After all this, then Lord Blackheath reveals that Riyadi was "put up to" all of this, implying hidden players (see point 11 in the citation); "*But…*
12) "…it gets more complicated than that" precisely because the three five trillion dollar deposits were *acknowledged and receipted by senior executives at Hong Kong and Shanghai Bank Corporation* ***and*** *by executives of the Royal Bank of Scotland!* (See point 12, in the citation). In other words, so far as the HSBC and Royal Bank of Scotland were concerned, the *money was real and the deposits were made.* Thus, if as Lord Blackheath stated under point 10 above, the whole thing was a scam, then either very major banks were scammed, or were *in* on the scam;
13) That it might *not* be a scam, however, was indicated by Lord Blackheath who, citing a document of audit of the Federal Reserve, states that there were $16.115 trillion in outstanding loans, almost the same amount as was deposited in the HSBC and Royal Bank of Scotland (see point 13 in the citation);
14) Each one of the banks on the Federal Reserve's audit list, which was a recipient of some portion of this $16.115 trillion dollars, was a MTN bank, that is to say, a bank authorized to do medium-term trade on notes issued to them. Note carefully once again Lord Blackheath's comment: "Anyone who knows what the IMF rules are will immediately smell a rat." Why? Because, as he points out, any such trades must either go through a central bank "like the Bank of England, which apparently refused to touch this" (see point 14 in the citation) or it must go through an MTN bank;
15) Finally toward the end of his remarks Lord Blackheath spells out the two general implications (see point 15):
    a) there is either a vast sum of money at large in the world financial system, from which huge profits are being made; or,
    b) there is a huge amount of money in the world financial system "which is not real."

It is worth noting that within a few days of Lord Blackheath's remarks of Feb 16, 2012 to the House of Lords, an Internet article appeared that suggested that he, too, had fallen victim to some sort of scam. The article, "Lord Blackheath Exposes Possible Monumental Financial Fraud," was posted on Feb 19, 2012, by Keelan Balderson. It began by citing a Federal Reserve System warning concerning Mr. Riyadi:

> The Federal Reserve is aware of a fraudulent scam involving individuals using the names Yohannes Riyadi and/or Wilfredo Saurin, or persons claiming to be representatives of these two men. In a typical version of this scam, Mr. Riyadi and/or his delegates falsely claim that they have on deposit with the Federal Reserve Bank of New York several U.S. Treasury Checks issued to Mr. Riyadi amounting to billions of dollars.
>
> The Federal Reserve Bank of New York has been contacted by several brokers and financial institutions worldwide inquiring about the validity of this fraudulent account documentation, which is being offered as collateral for lines of credit or other types of asset based financing. The fraudulent scheme includes multiple documents which purport to have the signatures of various Federal Reserve officials, including Chairman Ben Bernanke.
>
> In some instances, individuals involved in this fraudulent scheme claim to have met with Federal Reserve officials and claim to have verified that the alleged account is in order. We have also learned that the fraud may include the purchase of certain documents by the introducing brokers.
>
> If you have information regarding this fraud please contact either Robert Amenta, Special Investigator at the Federal Reserve Bank of New York, or Erik Rosenblatt, Senior Special Agent at the Department of Homeland Security, Immigration and Customs Enforcement.[7]

Notwithstanding this caveat, it will be recalled that Blackheath did not deny there was fraud involved, but rather, pointed the finger clearly at agencies of the U.S. government, and moreover, indicated that there was a "rogue element" within them perpetrating the fraud, and that the fraud had entered into the world financial system. This possibility Balderson admits in the article:

> There is clearly a monumental fraud going on here. The gold clearly doesn't exist, the bonds therefore are clearly not real. It's easy to pass this off as a complete fabrication. However according to Blackheath the $5 trillion transactions, totaling $15 trillion, do actually appear on the books of HSBC and RBS!

---

[7] Kaleen Balderson, "Lord Blackheath Exposes Possible Momumental Financial Fraud," Feb 19, 2012, http://wideshut.co.uk/lord-blackheath-exposes-possible-monumental-financial-fraud/

> *"Why would any bank want to sign 5 trillion dollars worth, 15 trillion total, of receipts if the money didn't exist?"* He asks his peers.[8]

The article notes, quite correctly, that none of Lord Blackheath's documentation has been verified, nor even made available.

However, I am bold to suggest that in this one instance it is not so much the documentation that is important, but rather, the pattern which has emerged, a pattern including vast sums of money, denominated in bond amounts that, according to the U.S. Government, never existed, bonds moreover that were, according to the scandals thus far examined, issued not by the U.S. Treasury at all but rather by the Federal Reserve directly, and that were gold-backed. Additionally, Lord Blackheath pointed out the Asian connection via the HSBC bank, the Japanese representative of the IMF, and the mysterious Mr. Riyadi himself. And in one final detail, Lord Blackheath also mentioned the involvement of J.P. Morgan Chase, which, as we saw in the Spanish Bearer Bonds scandal, was at least implicated in the scam. But, for the moment, we must examine the other component of Lord Blackheath's statements: the discrepancies in amounts of gold.

e. The Gold Discrepancy: the House of Lords, **Der Spiegel** *Magazine in Germany, and Dr. Hjalmar Schacht*

Amid the many detailed assertions in Lord Blackheath's comments to the House of Lords, there was, it will be recalled, a figure he cited from his friend Lord Sassoon at the Royal Treasury, namely, that there was only some 1,507 tons of gold in existence. Then, it will be recalled, Lord Blackheath consulted the Bank of Indonesia in respect to Mr. Riyadi's claims, and *it* stated that it had only 700 tons of the stuff on hand (which would make the Bank of Indonesia a holder of almost 50% of the world's bullion supply according to the figure cited by Lord Sassoon and referred to in Lord Blackheath's remarks!).

There is an important context for the reader to bear in mind here.

As the bearer bonds scandals were being "broken" and then "ignored" in various media, and as Lord Blackheath was making his comments in the House of Lords from 2010 to 2012, *another* phenomenon was occurring: various nations were gently "requesting" of the Federal Reserve Bank of New York—the central bank that allegedly maintains most nations' gold reserves on deposit in its vaults—that their gold reserves be physically repatriated to their countries. Hugo Chavez of Venezuela was first, but was followed very quickly by Germany, which demanded a complete accounting of its reserves.

---

[8] Kaleen Balderson, "Lord Blackheath Exposes Possible Monumental Financial Fraud," Feb 19, 2012, http://wideshut.co.uk/lord-blackheath-exposes-possible-monumental-financial-fraud/

But again, the story is murkier than such a simple summary might suggest:

> *Germany has gold reserves of just under 3,400 tons, the second-largest reserves in the world after the United States.* Much of that is in the safekeeping of central banks outside Germany, *especially in the US Federal Reserve in New York.* One would think that with such a valuable stash, worth around €133 billion ($170 billion), the German government would want to keep a close eye on its whereabouts. But now a bizarre dispute has broken out between different German institutions over how closely the reserves should be checked.
>
> *Germany's federal audit office, the Bundesrechnungshof, which monitors the German government's financial management, is unhappy with how Germany's central bank, the Bundesbank, keeps tabs on its gold.* According to media reports, the auditors are dissatisfied with the fact that gold reserves in Frankfurt are more closely monitored than those held abroad.
>
> In Germany, spot checks are carried out to make sure that the gold bars are in the right place. But for the German gold that is stored on the Bundesbank's behalf by the US Federal Reserve in New York, the Bank of England in London and the Banque de France in France, *the German central bank relies on the assurances of its foreign counterparts that the gold is where it should be. The three foreign central banks give the Bundesbank annual statements confirming the size of the reserves, but the Germans do not usually carry out physical inspections of the bars.*
>
> **'No Doubts'**
>
> According to German media reports, the Bundesrechnungshof has now recommended in its confidential annual audit of the Bundesbank for 2011 that Germany's central bank check its foreign gold reserves with yearly spot checks.
>
> The Bundesbank has rejected the demand, arguing that central banks do not usually check each others' reserves. "The scope of the checks that the Bundesrechnungshof wants does not correspond to the usual practices among central banks," the Bundesbank said in a statement quoted by the *Frankfurter Allgemeine Zeitung* newspaper.

> "There are no doubts about the integrity and the reputation of these foreign depositories."[9]

Note again the now familiar pattern:

- the involvement of the U.S. Federal Reserve, and more particularly, the Federal Reserve Bank of New York;
- the involvement of an official agency of a government (Germany), making inquiries of;
- a private central bank (the *Bundesbank*, successor to the *Reichsbank*, or, if one prefer, the old *Reichsbank* under a different name).

The *Bundesbank*, like the Bank of England, is obfuscating its response by steadfastly refusing to inspect its gold reserves physically, since this would imply a breach of trust. But that is exactly what is implied by the demand for a physical audit. For nations to call for an audit of their gold reserves, much of which is in the New York Federal Reserve bank, is merely to point out the obvious fact that, for whatever reason, those nations have begun to have cause for suspicion.

In other words, *the behavior of official agencies and people high in government* from the U.K. to Germany are signaling, either by clear *statements* to that effect (Lord Blackheath), or by demands for a physical audit, that there has been a breakdown of trust between governments and central banks, and particularly, the U.S. Federal Reserve, and even more particularly, the Federal Reserve Bank of New York. And all this, again, at a time concurrent with the outbreak of the bearer bonds scandals, and hence, it argues strongly that these events are connected.

Lest we think this is the only time in history that suspicions were raised about the gold reserves of national account at the Federal Reserve Bank of New York, we need to look back to a little-known episode during the late 1920s, when *Reichsbank* President Dr. Hjalmar Horace Greeley Schacht visited his friend, Benjamin Strong Jr., then president of the New York Federal Reserve Bank, and was given a personal guided tour of the vaults of the bank by Strong. Here are Schacht's own words recounting this visit from his autobiography:

---

[9] No Author, "Germans Fret About their Foreign Gold Reserves," *Der Spiegel,* May 15, 2012, http://www.spiegel.de/international/germany/debate-breaks-out-in-germany-over-foreign-gold-reserves-a-833289.html

> Another amusing incident arose from the fact that the Reichsbank maintained a not inconsiderable gold deposit in the Federal Reserve Bank in New York. Strong was proud to be able to show us the vaults which were situated in the deepest cellar of the building and remarked:
>
> "Now, Herr Schacht, you shall see where the Reichsbank gold is kept."
>
> While the staff looked to the hiding place of the Reichsbank gold we went through the vaults. We waited several minutes; at length we were told: "Mr. Strong, we can't find the Reichsbank gold."
>
> Strong was flabbergasted but I consoled him. "Never mind: I believe you when you say the gold is there." Even if it weren't you are good for its replacement."[10]

An "amusing *incident*"!? And the president of the Reichsbank himself does not want to know where his country's gold is?

Or is there something else going on here?

Most likely, the latter, for again, it concerns the New York Federal Reserve Bank, and now, not only obfuscated gold figures, but simply, *missing gold*. One must entertain the possibility that Schacht—no fool by anyone's estimations—knew good and well what was going on, and that by publishing the incident in his memoirs, he was sending a message to the financial powers of New York. It is noteworthy that the *Der Spiegel* article is implying that *the very same attitude* is in place in the successor *Bundesbank* to this day!

5. The Filipino Bearer Bond Saga, and Some Miscellanies

Incredibly, the Japanese, Spanish, and Italian Bearer Bonds scandals were preceded by a similar episode, showing the now familiar pattern, earlier in the decade. This story began when, on Jan 18, 2012, Bloomberg reported on the Internet of the recovery of $300,000,000,000 in bearer bonds by Flipino nationals who claimed that they were from the crash of an American aircraft in the Philippines in the 1930s.[11] The find was discovered by Chris Estrella who claims he made the discovery in the year 2000 of a "weather-beaten iron and leather box" that was stuffed with $25 billion dollars' worth of U.S. bearer bonds.[12] Once again, the familiar pattern emerged:

---

[10] Hjalmar Horace Greeley Schacht, *Confessions of the Old Wizard: The Autobiography of Hjalmar Horace Greeley Schacht*, trans. Diana Pyke from the German (Houghton Mifflin, 1956, Literary Licensing Reprint), p. 245.

[11] A. Craig Cpoetas, "No One knows Truth About $300 Billion Bonds from Alleged Crash," Jan 18, 2012. *Bloomberg.* http://www.bloomberg.com/news/2012-01-18/no-one-knows-truth-about-300b-bonds-from-alleged-plane-crash.html.

1) Some bonds were in denominations of $100,000,000, but these, unlike real U.S. government securities, were lithographed and not engraved;[13]
2) The bonds were stated to be "United States of America Federal Reserved Bonds".[14] This, as we will discover in chapter four, is one of the most significant clues in the whole mystery, for again, the Federal Reserve does not issue bonds, the U.S. Treasury does, or at least, that's the story we've all been told. And note now the two crucial details: the bonds were lithographed and not engraved, and the title on the bond contains a *misprint* or *typographical error* in any case: they are described as Federal *Reserved* bonds and not as Federal *Reserve* bonds. This mistake, as we will discover in chapter four when we encounter this pattern again in a wholly different context, may have been *deliberately made* by the issuers of the bonds. Note also an implication of the idea of a "reserved" bond. The very title suggests something out of the ordinary, unavailable to all but a selected few.
3) Additionally, the bonds were printed with fonts that, according to the U.S. securities expert consulted to identity them, did not exist in the year 1934, the year the bonds were dated.[15] This again fits the pattern of 1934 bonds we have encountered before, and it raises a significant question: If no such bonds existed in 1934 (along with type face and so on) why do the counterfeiters keep attempting to run *the same scam?*
4) The bonds were accompanied by a microfilmed "Federal Reserved Bond Inventory List."
5) The bonds were, like the bonds in the Spanish and Italian bearer bonds scandals, contained in strong boxes, each of which was emblazoned with the Great Seal of the United States and stamped with the Atlanta Federal Reserve Branch Bank;

---

[12] A. Craig Cpoetas, "No One knows Truth About $300 Billion Bonds from Alleged Crash," Jan 18, 2012. *Bloomberg.* http://www.bloomberg.com/news/2012-01-18/no-one-knows-truth-about-300b-bonds-from-alleged-plane-crash.html.

[13] Ibid.

[14] Ibid.

[15] Ibid.

6) The bonds were supposedly issued by the Federal Reserve Branch Bank of Atlanta in the aforementioned year 1934 and, as such, were signed by then U.S. Secretary of the Treasury Henry Morgenthau (hence, these "fraudulent" bearer bonds are often called "Morgenthaus");
7) The bonds were accompanied by "gold" coins stamped with George Washington's image.[16]

The Strong Boxes of the Filipino Bearer Bonds Story

---

[16] A. Craig Cpoetas, "No One knows Truth About $300 Billion Bonds from Alleged Crash," Jan 18, 2012. *Bloomberg.* http://www.bloomberg.com/news/2012-01-18/no-one-knows-truth-about-300b-bonds-from-alleged-plane-crash.html. See also Joseph P. Farrell, "Now It's Filipino Bearer Bonds: A Closer Look: Part One: Details," April 13, 2012,

http://gizadeathstar.com/2012/04/in-case-you-missed-it-now-its-filipino-bearer-bonds-part-one-details/

Filipino Bearer Bonds and Documents in Strong Box

Copy of Filipino Bearer Bond: While Just Barely Visible in this Picture, Note that the "Bond" Is Based on the Design of the One Dollar U.S. Silver Certificate, which would have had a dark ***blue*** *U.S. Treasury Seal on the Right. In the Color Pictures of this "Bond" on the Internet, this Seal is Green, denoting the Federal Reserve.*

6. Summary and Implications

It is time once again to pause and take stock of the enormous implications and patterns in the bearer bonds scandals, and to consider them in the context of a sitting peer of the British House of Lords' remarks:

- In each of the four instances of the Japanese, Spanish, Italian, and Filipino Bearer Bonds scandals, the bonds were apparently based upon genuinely circulating U.S. currency notes. In the case of the Spanish and Italian versions this was based on the design of the U.S. $100,000 gold certificate bill; in the case of the Filipino bearer bond story, the "bond" was apparently based on the U.S. silver certificate design;
- In the Filipino, Spanish, and Italian versions, the "bonds" were accompanied by "authenticating contexts" which included documents of authenticity, microfilmed "inventories" of such bonds, and Federal Reserve Branch Bank Strong Boxes. In the Spanish case, these boxes were from the Dallas branch, in the Italian case, the Chicago branch, and in the Filipino case, the Atlanta branch;
- Some denominations of bonds—$500,000,000 and the $1,000,000,000 Kennedy bonds—were in amounts the U.S. Treasury never issued. In the case of the Kennedy bond, this was apparently tied to the Asian currency exchange company, "Money World";
- The Bonds were dated "1934" and signed by then sitting U.S. Secretary of the Treasury Henry Morgenthau, and were, furthermore, not U.S. Treasury bonds at all, but issued by the U.S. Federal Reserve Bank and, in the case of the Filipino Bearer Bond story, titled "Federal *Reserved* Bond;"
- The bonds were all bullion backed bearer bonds, and since the total amount of all four bearer bonds scandals is in the trillions of dollars, the amount of bullion implied exceeds—as Lord Blackheath pointed out—all the bullion amounts thought to be in existence, though, as noted, there seem to be discrepancies in the actual numbers of gold in existence.[17]

---

[17] Joseph P. Farrell, "Now It's Filipino Bearer Bonds: A Closer Look: Part One; Details", April 13, 2012; Now It's Filipino Bearer Bonds: A Closer Look:

- We have also noted, however, that "gold" is also a code-word for "drugs," and hence, the possibility arises that the genuine exemplars of these bonds (if the bonds are not themselves really genuine) are not so much *gold*-backed as *drug*-backed. This possibility would then, perforce, mean that at some deep level, international criminal syndicates are involved in whatever operation the bearer bonds scandals might represent.
- The "Kennedy" bearer bond, as suggested, contained clues that the whole scandal might have something to do with *space*, and even with the possibility that something out there is being used as collateral.

We are confronted therefore with the distinct possibility of a monstrously *large* counterfeiting operation, based on real exemplars, and inside knowledge, and moreover, an operation that at some element would appear to represent a *rogue* element, a breakaway element deeply hidden within the U.S. power structure. The only question is, what would such vast sums of money be used *for*? And who is doing all this?

We are also confronted with another distinct, and disturbing, possibility, namely, that whoever is behind the counterfeiting represented by the bearer bonds scandals may be an entirely *different* group than the group behind the originals upon which the counterfeits are based. In this case, it would appear that someone is not only sending messages, but perhaps in doing so, is waging a kind of covert "counterfeiting war." It has been implied that part of the motivation for such a vast and hidden system of finance is a *covert* one, a covert space or scientific-technological venture. But such a vast sum of money could also fund a great deal of covert operations here on earth.

The reason that this message is *not* being sent by those involved in the establishment and maintenance of this hidden and huge system of finance, and the covert research and operations empire that it funds, is rather simple: why would *those involved with it expose it?* To *expose* it is to reveal just how corrupt and fraudulent the western financial oligarchy and its major public and private financial institutions really are. It is also to expose the major source of all manner of covert operations, a subject that will be covered in part two. It is to expose the very life-blood of the breakaway group. Hence, one must reach the tentative conclusion that this exposure is coming from *someone else with inside knowledge of the*

Part Two: Synthesis," April 14, 2012; Now It's Filipino Bearer Bonds: A Closer Look: Part Three: Analysis," April 15, 2012, www.gizadeathstar.com.

whole operation. This "someone else" will be explored in due course, when the full history and structural outline of the operation has been presented.

For now, however, if it be true that one does not counterfeit (1) something that cannot be transacted, and (2) something that does not exist, then how would one launder such counterfeits? One would have to go to a place with access to banking, and to a place which carried with it the aura of the highest moral probity.

One would have to go to the Vatican.

B. An Earlier Episode: The Vatican, The Mob, Industrial-Scale Counterfeiting, and More Connections

1. De Lorenzo and Rizzo

The Vatican connection is best illustrated by an event from 1971 to 1973, in which a New York City police investigation of Mafia activities quickly led to a large-scale Mafia counterfeiting ring, and to highly positioned and powerful hierarchs within the Vatican City-State itself. While a detailed presentation of the event is not possible here, there are certain aspects of the case that are worth noting.

Matteo de Lorenzo was a Mafia boss during the 1970s, specializing in moving the syndicate's moneys into legitimate investments, and this meant into stocks, bonds, and other types of corporate and government securities. The man overseeing the day-to-day activities of this portfolio of investments was one Vicent Rizzo. Richard Hammer, whose book *The Vatican Connection* first detailed this complex story, observed that this portfolio was:

> …worth close to a billion dollars and it was filled with such choice blue-chip investments as United States Treasury bills, bonds, and notes, bonds of the Federal Intermediate Credit Bank and the Federal National Mortgage Association, common stock and bonds in major corporations such as National Aviation Company, Unishops Inc., General Portland Cement Company, International Business Machines, Beneficial Finance Company, California Computer Corporation, First Union, Inc., Capital Holding Corporation, Coca-Cola Bottling Company of Los Angeles, Occidental Petroleum Corporation, Norton Simon, Inc.,

> American Telephone and Telegraph Company, General Electric Corporation, and more.[18]

But, as Hammer points out, "legitimate" means one thing to ordinary society, and quite another to the secretive world of crime lords:

> Their definition of stock trading and legitimate business was unique to them, could be found in no dictionary unless it was one they wrote themselves. They had not bought their stocks and bonds, notes and bills in the ordinary manner, through brokerage houses of from banks. They had accumulated them from the mail sacks of the United States Postal Service, from private homes, from the vaults of such major banks and brokerage houses as Manufacturers Hanover Trust Company, Bankers Trust Company, Security Pacific Bank, Continental Illinois Trust Company, Blair and Company, Shearson Hammill, Merrill, Lynch, Pierce, Fenner and Smith, and a lot of others, *and from the private engravings and printing presses of their friends, allies and employees.*
>
> ...
>
> They had their hands in everything. They were the men who controlled the distribution of stolen and counterfeit American securities throughout the world.[19]

By dint of its worldwide extent, an extent connected inextricably and ineluctably to its international drug smuggling and arms dealing, the Mafia was also one of the few organizations capable of carrying out a worldwide trade in counterfeit securities and currencies. In effect, it is in its own right a kind of breakaway civilization, with its own hierarchy and bureaucracy, its own "laws" and "codes of ethics," and with a clear interface with the "normal" public world.

In any case, De Lorenzo and Rizzo were both part of the Genovese crime family, and this too bears an important though rather obvious implication for any consideration of the structure of the breakaway civilization as it emerged after World War Two, and how that structure in turn is related to its finances. Like all secretive bureaucracies and organizational structures, its organization *paralleled* the publicly visible demarcations of jurisdiction in political society; for each and every German *Länder*, there was not only a *government* figure, but a corresponding Nazi Party Gauleiter; for every *Oblosk* in Russia, a corresponding Communist *Kommisar*, and, in the Mafia, for every city or state, a corresponding *Capo* or "boss" of the territory. The powerful Genovese crime family of New York, in turn, had close and deep ties to American intelligence, dating back to World War Two and the "alliance" between then Genovese crime boss Lucky Luciano, and General Wild Bill Donovan's Office of Strategic Services, the OSS, forerunner to the CIA.

---

[18] Richard Hammer, *The Vatican Connection: The Astonishing Account of a Billion-Dollar Counterfeit Stock Deal Between the Mafia and the Church* (Holt, Rinehart, and Winston: 1982), p. 2.

[19] Ibid., pp. 2-3,. emphasis added.

In any case, through a series of wiretaps on local Mafia personnel, obtained in response to what were purely local matters of law enforcement,[20] the New York City police department soon found itself following a case, via close surveillance of Vincent Rizzo, that quickly became international in scope. While Rizzo had, and carefully cultivated, the image of being a low-level soldier in the New York syndicate,[21] it quickly became clear to the New York police surveilling and reporting on Rizzo that he was far more, for he would be regularly seen in the company of the highest Mafia bosses.[22] It was another De Lorenzo, Anthony, that had persuaded the Mafia bosses that vast profits could be made by dealing in Wall Street—and, of course, in stolen and counterfeit securities—and his soldier or point man in coordinating all this activity was Vince Rizzo.[23]

Rizzo was also involved in another activity for the Genovese crime family, and that was running guns to South America, [24] a fact that suggests there is some connection between the Mafia and the post-war "Nazi International" in that continent, as well as a connection to American intelligence's arms and drug trade in that region.

In any case, as the NYPD continued its surveillance of Rizzo, it soon found him frequently in the company of one William Benjamin, a well-known, and capable, forger, and dealer of counterfeited and stolen securities, and, notably, stolen and counterfeit airline tickets, a fact which quickly turned their city investigation into a federal one.[25] The FBI, however, was not initially interested in the case,[26] leaving the NYPD to pursue the matter as best as it could.

The pursuit and surveillance of Rizzo soon led to an unlikely place, and to an unlikely meeting.

---

[20] Richard Hammer, *The Vatican Connection*, p. 4.

[21] Ibid., p. 35.

[22] Ibid., pp. 42-43.

[23] Ibid., p. 39.

[24] Ibid., pp. 39-40.

[25] Ibid., p. 51.

[26] Ibid., p. 54.

The place was Munich, Germany.[27]

The NYPD quickly arranged for wiretaps on Rizzo's hotel room in conjunction with their counterparts in Munich, and were soon listening into a strange exchange between Rizzo, American Mafia "handler," and one Winifred Ense. German police quickly checked their record to discover that he was "a businessman of uncertain reputation. He had been questioned by the police about his link to the sale in Brussels eighteen months before of a stolen $100,000 United States Treasury certificate. He was also suspected of being deeply involved in spreading stolen stocks and bonds around Europe."[28]

Rizzo's purpose in coming to Munich, the police soon learned, was for the purposes of collecting $350,000 which Ense and one of his associates, Alfred Barg, apparently owed the Mafia.[29] Barg and Rizzo agreed to set up a meeting in Rizzo's hotel room, a room which was, of course, tapped.

2. Dr. Leopold Ledl and "Ricky" Jacobs

When the meeting occurred, the New York and Munich police soon learned that Rizzo's mission was not only to collect the $350,000 owed to his bosses back in New York, but also to conclude a mysterious "arrangement."[30] In surveillance and detective work, patience is often the most rewarding virtue, and the same was true in this case, for the American and German police surveilling Rizzo soon found Rizzo not only keeping the strange company of the German businessman Ense, with all his suspicious activity dealing in stolen and counterfeit securities, but once again dealing with the well-known Mafia forger William Benjamin, and a newcomer, and quite an infamous one at that, one "Dr. Ledl."

Viennese "Dr." Leopold Ledl was the consummate image of a suave, sophisticated European grifter and confidence man. Seller of faked academic degrees, titles of nobility, even certificates of diplomatic immunity, Ledl was able by these means to gather around him a network of friends and contacts, and was sooner collecting *genuine* credentials and academic degrees, including honorary doctorates from the University of Rome, from the University of the Vatican State. These credentials then became the basis for his own counterfeiting of credentials from prestigious institutions, which he could then sell to anyone… for the right price.[31] He was thus able to number in his network of friends and acquaintances some very powerful people, as we shall see shortly.

---

[27] Ibid.

[28] Richard Hammer, *The Vatican Connection*, p. 67.

[29] Ibid., pp. 68-69.

[30] Ibid., pp. 73-73.

As the police listened to a conversation between Rizzo and German "businessman" Ense, Ledl's name was first mentioned, and mentioned in a context that the eavesdropping detectives could scarcely believe. Ense, while talking to Rizzo, suddenly let slip certain details of the mysterious "arrangement":

> "And Ricky asked me not one or two or three times, twenty times, 'ask him again. Is he quite sure that the people in Rome, in the Vatican, his friends, that they want counterfeit?' And Dr. Ledl says, 'They want all I can get. I can only say, yes, that's what they want.'"[32]

The Vatican. Counterfeits in unlimited amounts. The Mafia.

This raised the stakes entirely beyond even the American federal level.

The case had become not only international, but very deep, and, with the mention of Dr. Ledl, and "Ricky," had just moved into the "dangerous" and "stratospheric" category.

We have already touched briefly on Dr. Ledl, and shall do so again, but what about "Ricky"?

"Ricky" was one Manuel Richard Jacobs,[33] a high-level Mafia securities "trader", and intimate of Los Angeles and Chicago Mafia *capos* Johnny Roselli, and Sam Giancana.[34] So powerful, and necessary, to the syndicate's securities trade was "Ricky," that even while serving a prison sentence in a federal minimum security prison, Jacobs managed to continue his "business,"[35] a fact that suggests at least *some* level of federal government acquiescence or complicity in his activities, an odd thing, since the FBI had also become convinced that "Ricky Jacobs was the man behind several million dollars' worth of stolen and counterfeit blue-chip American corporate and government securities that had been turning up all over the United States and around the world."[36]

---

[31] Richard Hammer, *The Vatican Connection*, pp. 203-204.

[32] Ibid., p. 74.

[33] Ibid., p. 95.

[34] Ibid., p. 96. Of course, with Roselli and Giancana, there are other connections to other events…

[35] Ibid., p. 97.

[36] Richard Hammer, *The Vatican Connection*, p. 98.

In other words, while the FBI had fingered Jacobs as a crucial figure in a Mafia-sponsored industrial scale and worldwide counterfeiting ring, Jacobs, while serving a prison sentence, continued to conduct his affairs; it was business as usual.

As the mystified American and German police began to connect the dots of this bizarre set of characters and activities, they quickly came to one conclusion: the international industrial scale counterfeiting ring with some sort of mysterious connection to the Vatican that they had stumbled into was "a combine of German swindlers and Americans who had once served in the military stationed in Germany or who were frequent travelers in and out of Munich."[37] Such a vast counterfeiting effort, as we have argued previously, would require at some level, an access to inside intelligence information as well as access to a vast intelligence network. In this case, the Mafia may have had such information from its contacts with the CIA, or, conversely, via some arrangement with German intelligence headquartered just outside of Munich in Pullach,[38] or both.

In any case, Rizzo returned to New York City, his "business" in Munich and the mysterious "arrangements" apparently concluded. It was back in New York that the New York police wiretaps on one of Rizzo's frequent haunts turned up yet another connection to the swindling and counterfeiting underworld when they intercepted a telephone call between the mob boss and a suave British confidence man, Tony Grant.[39] Grant's base of operations at the time was in Argentina,[40] a fact which raises its own interesting and obvious questions. Subsequent wire-tapped conversations between Rizzo and Ense also revealed that Grant was somehow connected to the "arrangement" in Munich between the Mafia, Dr. Ledl, and the Vatican.[41]

As the police wiretaps continued and the dots were increasingly connected, another astonishing, chilling, fact soon became clear: the centerpiece of the "arrangement" being conducted between Rizzo, Benjamin, Jacobs, Ense, and Dr. Ledl included, as its very key and centerpiece, the counterfeiting of U.S. Treasury bills on a massive scale.[42]

---

[37] Ibid., p. 102.

[38] This was, of course, the *Bundesnachrichtendienst*, General Reinhard Gehlen's transmuted *Fremde Heere Ost* (Foreign Armies East) military intelligence organization.

[39] Richard Hammer, op. cit., p. 138.

[40] Ibid., p. 139.

[41] Ibid.

But it was only when they concentrated on the notorious international grifter, Dr. Ledl, that police uncovered the dark heart of the matter, and the truly awesome scale of what they were dealing with.

3. Dr. Ledl, Bishop Paul Marcinkus of the Vatican Bank, Michele Sindona, and Eugene Cardinal Tisserant

Ledl moved in some very heady circles of power via his contacts in Rome, including circles that put him in direct contact with the head of security for Pope Paul VI, American Bishop Paul Marcinkus.[43] Marcinkus in turn maintained close ties to the Vatican bank, the Institute for Religious Works, an institution that he also headed into the pontificate of John-Paul II.[44] A contact between a known grifter and swindler, whose contacts included Mafiosi conducting industrial-scale counterfeiting, and the Vatican bank was bad enough, but Marcinkus in turn was a known close associate of the notorious Mafia-connected and quite ruthless banker, Michele Sindona, a member of the notorious Italian Masonic Lodge, Propaganda Due, about which we shall have much to say in part two. Marcinkus and Sindona were so closely connected that the two bankers shared a common private numbered bank account in the Bahamas.[45] As head of the Vatican bank, and security chief to the pope, Marcinkus was literally the papal gatekeeper; it was he who decided who got to see the pope, and who did not.[46] He was, so to speak, an ecclesiastical version of Martin Bormann: faithful "secretary" to The Leader, with fingers, like Bormann, in every financial pie imaginable.

But Ledl's contacts went much farther and higher in the Vatican that just Bishop Paul Marcinkus. As Richard Hammer notes, a special bond had been forged between Ledl and

---

[42] Richard Harmmer, *The Vatican Connection*, p. 171. Part of these securities, as Hammer notes, were to be used for "the economic rape of Panama"(See p. 172), yet another darkly suspicious connection, in view of the U.S. invasion of that country a little over a decade and a half later under the administration of former CIA director, and then sitting U.S. President, George H. W. Bush.

[43] Ibid., pp. 206-207.

[44] Ibid., p. 208.

[45] Ibid., pp. 208-209.

[46] Ibid., p. 208.

> Eugene Cardinal Tisserant, dean of the college of cardinals… still actively running the Society for the Propagation of the Faith and distributing funds to the church's foreign missions. Instantly recognizable by his long, white beard and patrician bearing, the scholarly, sophisticated French-born Tisserant, perhaps the cardinal closest to Pope Paul VI, appeared to be charmed by Ledl and saw in him, perhaps, a man he might one day put to good use.[47]

Cardinal Tisserant, let it also be noted, was also the Cardinal that for many years was in charge of the Vatican archives, and was involved in numerous other "activities" as we shall see.

Eugene Cardinal Tisserant

---

[47] Richard Hammer, *The Vatican Connection*, p. 210.

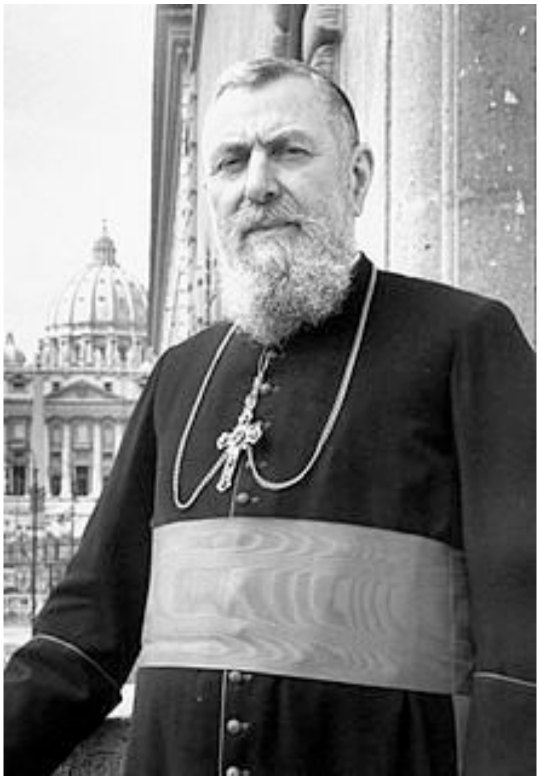

Eugene Cardinal Tisserant

As Ledl finally told the story to FBI and other officials, once they had finally decided to become involved in the case, he and Eugene Cardinal Tisserant met in 1971, with only an unnamed archbishop—the Cardinal's assistant—with them. According to Ledl, Cardinal Tisserant asked him if he had "any suggestions or ideas as to how the church might find the means to solve some of its pressing monetary problems, and those of Italy, as well."[48] Ledl had ideas, but not any of the sort that one "might put to a man like Cardinal Tisserant in the heart of the Roman Catholic church."[49]

---

[48] Richard Hammer, *The Vatican Connection*, p. 211.

[49] Ibid., p. 211.

At this point, the conversation unfolded in a very bizarre way:

> "No ideas at all, my friend from Vienna?" Tisserant pressed.
>
> Ledl could not bring himself to give voice to those ideas.
>
> Tisserant sighed, looked at the archbishop. Surely, he said, Ledl, with all his vast experience in such matters, must know how to obtain a great many securities that would assist the Vatican and the Italian nation.
>
> Ledl asked what kind of securities?
>
> Tisserant laughed. "First-class securities, of course," he said, "in large American companies."
>
> Ledl sensed the drift of the conversation, but he wanted to be sure. He said it might be difficult to obtain such paper.
>
> "If they are counterfeit?" Tisserant asked mildly.
>
> Now, Ledl knew. He asked what amounts was the cardinal talking about?
>
> Close to a billion dollars, Tisserant said. To be precise, the figure they had in mind was $950 million. *Half, he said, would be channeled through Bishop Marcinkus and the Vatican Bank,* to make up for some of the losses the Vatican had suffered as a result of Marcinkus's investments….[50]

We have now come to one of the hearts of the matter, one of the key points of contact between any hidden tier of system of finance, based upon fraud, for any breakaway civilization, and the "real" world, for a private bank that is the direct ancillary of a sovereign state like the Vatican, with the penumbra of religion and piety cast over its dealings, would be in a position to use counterfeit or "unauthorized production" (to employ Heydrich's term once again) of any securities as a means of extending *genuine* lines of credit, or, alternatively, selling them for *real* money to unwitting customers.

But the implications of the outlines of this emerging structure do not stop there. As Ledl subsequently told authorities, his conversation with Cardinal Tisserant continued:

> Weren't the cardinal and the others, Ledl asked, at all concerned what might happen if it were discovered that the Vatican was dealing in counterfeit American securities? It was one thing for a businessman, or even a large company, to venture into such treacherous waters. But for an institution such as the Vatican to do so…

---

[50] Richard Hammer, *The Vatican Connection*, pp. 211-212, emphasis added.

> *Tisserant waved that away. He was not at all concerned, he said, nor were any of those he had discussed this with. They all agreed that the American government would never accuse the Vatican of knowingly dealing in counterfeit stocks and bonds. In fact, if it was discovered that such paper existed in the Vatican, the United States would undoubtedly believe the church had been taken by some unscrupulous swindlers and so would secretly step in and make good the losses.*
>
> If he could, indeed, find such first-class counterfeit merchandise, Ledl asked, how much was the church willing to pay for it?
>
> If Ledl could make such a delivery, which the cardinal and his friends were sure he could, Tisserant said, then the Vatican and the Bank of Italy would pay him and his sources sixty-five percent of the face value, or about $625 million. Of course, Ledl and his people must understand that they wuld be expected to kick back a quarter of that amount, or about $150 million, to Tisserant, Marcinkus and the others who had developed this plan. Still, that would leave Ledl and his people about $475 million. That should be enough to pay for their troubles.[51]

Cardinal Tisserant's remarks to Ledl—that the American government would never challenge the Vatican for dealing in counterfeit securities, and that it would "*secretly* step in and make good the losses" should such counterfeit paper ever to be exposed—ring hollow.

It is far more likely that the whole proposal was of the "two can play the official counterfeiting game" variety, and that any exposure of the Vatican-based operation to U.S. authorities would have been of such a nature to communicate the message, "if *you* can do it, so can we." In short, Cardinal Tisserant *probably knew something*, and that something, as we have averred earlier in this chapter with our examination of the remarks of Lord Blackheath, and the recurring bearer bonds scandals, was that there was vast fraud taking place within, and in the name of, the U.S. Federal Reserve Bank and the U.S. Treasury.

And…

…there is one final thing that must be remembered about Eugene Cardinal Tisserant…

He, along with the Pope whom he served, Paul VI—Giovanni Cardinal Montini—was intimately involved in the Vatican's ratline operations, helping Italian Fascists, German Nazis, Croatian Ustashi,

---

[51] Richard Hammer, *The Vatican Connection*, p. 212, emphasis aded.

Belgian Rexists, and all manner of war criminals to escape from Europe, to South America, via Argentina, under Vatican passports…[52]

Bishop Paul Marcinkus, Head of the Vatican Bank During the Late Pontificate of Pope Paul VI, and through the Early Pontificate of Pope John-Paul II

The Notorious Italian International Banker and P2 Lodge Member Michele Sindona, Close Associate of Bishop Paul Marcinkus

---

[52] See Uki Goni, *The Real Odess: How Peron Brought the Nazi War Crominals to Argentina* (Grants Books: 2002), p. 99.

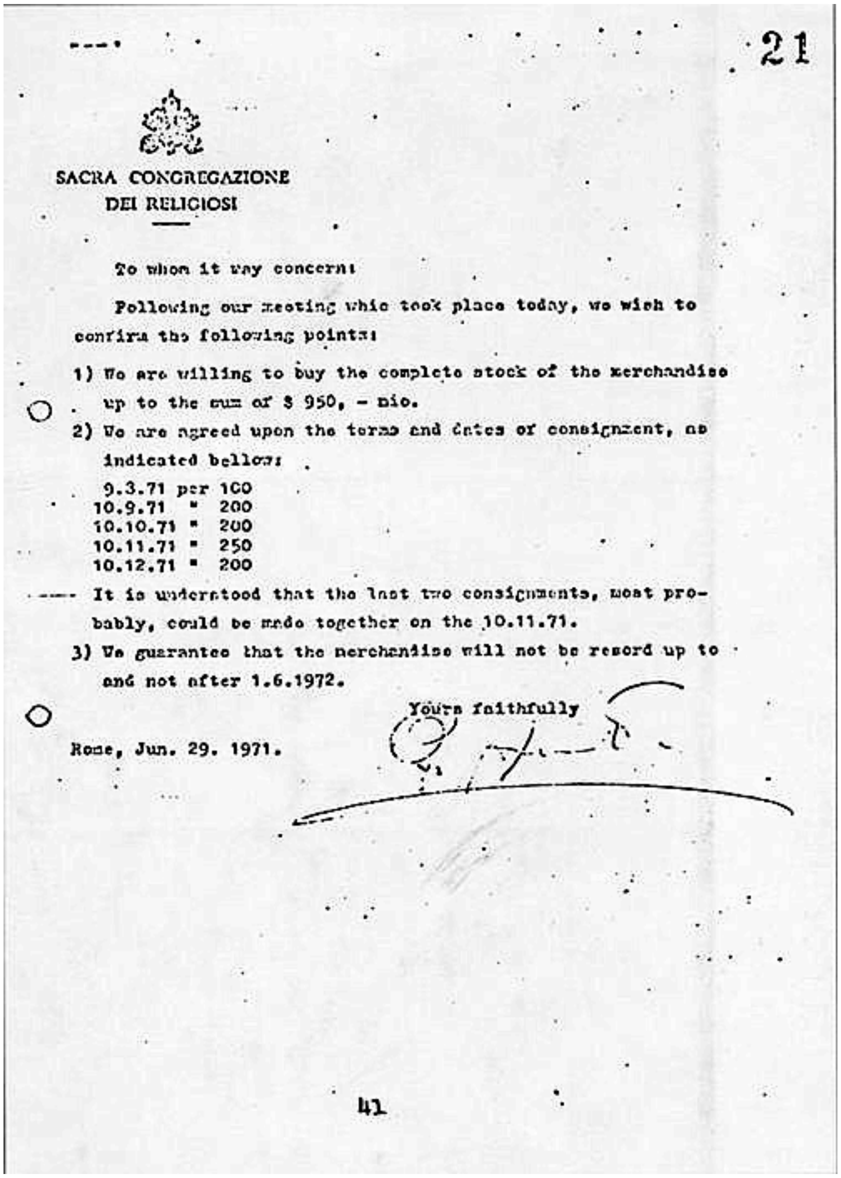

21

SACRA CONGREGAZIONE
DEI RELIGIOSI

To whom it may concern:

Following our meeting whic took place today, we wish to confirm the following points:

1) We are willing to buy the complete stock of the merchandise up to the sum of $ 950, - mio.

2) We are agreed upon the terms and dates of consignment, as indicated bellow:

9.3.71	per	100
10.9.71	"	200
10.10.71	"	200
10.11.71	"	250
10.12.71	"	200

It is understood that the last two consignments, most probably, could be made together on the 10.11.71.

3) We guarantee that the merchandise will not be resord up to and not after 1.6.1972.

Yours faithfully

Rome, Jun. 29. 1971.

41

The Letter of Verification of the Counterfeiting "Arrangement" Eugene Cardinal Tisserant Supplied to Dr. Leopold Ledl Outlining the Terms of the Agreement, and the "Batches" of "Merchandise" to be Delivered in Five Installments

3

SECRET AGENTS, SECRET BONDS, SECRET ALGORITHMS AND SECRET FINANCE:

SAM ISRAEL, DANNY CASOLARO, THE INSLAW OCTOPUS AND QUANTUM MECHANICS

" The American dollar, the global economy, all of it could be seen as one vast Ponzi scheme."
Guy Lawson[1]

"You see, I've had a side theory about another reason why PROMIS was taken. And it was that PROMIS could also be modified to track money laundering."
John Cohen[2]

There is another contemporary aspect of this industrial-scale counterfeiting story that we must now consider, one even more darkly revealing of the structure and associated principal players of the hidden system of "breakaway finance," before returning once again to World War Two, to consider the underpinnings of that structure, and why we keep encountering the same pattern of official denials, central bank obfuscation, and underground criminal agents and the implied inside knowledge that can only come from intelligence agencies. This is the case of high flying Wall Street hedge fund manager and broker, Sam Israel, and the embrace of the tentacles of an Octopus that he inadvertently walked into.

In this case, the tentacles of the Octopus that he walked into strongly suggest a component to this hidden structure of finance that should be obvious: how would one *track* all that extra and "suspect" money in the system? Obviously, the advent of computers, and database management software, would simplify the problem enormously, and additionally, with certain "modifications," would allow the masters of such a hidden system not only to track their money, but to spy on competitors, and to cook their own, or an opponent's, books at the push of a button.

These possibilities inform the case of Sam Israel.

---

[1] Guy Lawson, *Octopus: Sam Israel, The Secret Market, and Wall Street's Wildest Con* (New York: Crown Publishers, 2012), p. 167.

[2] Cheri Seymour, *The Last Cirle: Danny Casolaro's Investigation into the Octopus and the PROMIS Software Scandal* (Trine Day, 2010), pp. 197-198.

Israel was born in 1959 to a family of well-to-do commodities traders in New Orleans, specializing in coffee, sugar, precious metals, and so on.[3] He is currently incarcerated, serving a 22 year sentence, two years of which was for faking his own suicide to escape the 20 year term for fraud. But this is no ordinary fraud case, and indeed, as we shall see, aspects of the case fit a now well-known pattern of secret bonds and secret markets. Indeed, the first question that might be asked about the entire affair is why federal prosecutors placed much of the evidence of the case under seal.[4] Just what *some* of this evidence is will emerge as the story unfolds.

Long before he had become a high profile Wall Street broker and hedge fund manager, Israel learned how markets could be manipulated when his family would stockpile secret caches of commodities—cocoa for example—on barges along the Mississippi, and when the fake shortage had driven prices up, would unload the stockpile and make a large profit.[5] It was in the rarefied atmosphere of computer-aided high-frequency trading on Wall Street that began to emerge in the late 1980s, however, that Israel began to see enormous possibilities, and if he saw them, one can be certain others did too.

A. High Frequency Trading, Computers and Quantum Mechanics

The essence of high frequency trading is large volume, trading *very rapidly* in the shortest movements of time, in response to slight movements in the market. These types of trades are pre-programmed into computers which place buy and sell orders for particular securities according to pre-determined conditions written into the program. Thus, *several* trades can be programmed into a computer and these can all be executed, if market conditions are right, within mere minutes or even seconds, if the conditions being monitored by a computer trigger the pre-programmed conditions: a fall before, or a rise above, a certain price for a certain stock or *type* of stock, a buy order or a sell order, and these can be executed in high volume and as rapidly as the computer can process them, which is, of course, far faster than a human trader waving papers and hollering buy or sell orders on the floor of a stock or commodities exchange.

---

[3] Guy Lawson, *Octopus: Sam Israel, The Secret Market, and Wall Street's Wildest Con* (New York, Crown Publishers: 2012), p. 1.

[4] Ibid., p. xi.

[5] Ibid., p. 9.

A moment's reflection will show that *only* computers can execute such trades, and that such trades conceivably can gain immense profits, or losses, for their programmer-trader, in a very short period of time. Equally, a moment's reflection will show that such trades could be completely out of step with actual market and financial conditions. One is, so to speak, already looking at a kind of *virtual* market whose anchorage in reality could potentially be very tenuous, and in these conditions, a hidden financial system could thrive and grow, provided one had the right kind of sophisticated programming knowledge to exploit any hidden structures that may already have been in place.

A little further reflection upon this practice and the technologies that enable it will also disclose that if an individual trader—such as Sam Israel—knew even a few minutes in advance of such a trade, that a good profit could be made, and hence, high frequency high volume trading also invites, by the nature of the case, the temptation to "insider trading," i.e., trading and manipulation of markets based upon advanced knowledge of even only a few minutes.[6]

Finally, there are, upon reflection, two inherent dangers to such a system. One began to be written about almost as soon as the practice of high frequency-high volume computer-generated trading became commonplace. Guy Lawson, whose excellent investigation of the Israel case we are reviewing here, puts it this way:

> In the fall of '87 there were stirrings in the press that the new preprogrammed trading systems contained an inherent flaw—a contradiction that could lead to a fiasco. The problem was so obvious it beggared belief that it hadn't been noticed by the supposedly smartest traders on earth. If all the program traders had set their machines to sell in a falling market, then it followed that when the market fell all the program trades would be selling at the same time, creating a crash.[7]

But there is *another* inherent danger to such a system, and that is the *deliberate* manipulation of such trading programs via secret back doors that would allow a programmer to hack into the computer systems of banks and brokerage houses, and program trades tailor made to generate a specific situation: bubbles, then crashes, and so on. This possibility, as we shall discover, looms larger and larger the deeper one probes the Israel case.

---

[6] See the short discussed in Guy Lawson, *Octopus*, pp. 16-17.

[7] Ibid., p. 42. As Lawson notes, this is exactly what happened in the crash of 1987, when the Federal Reserve Bank directly intervened. (See p. 43)

As he pondered the wonders of computer-aided trading, however, Sam Israel was alive to none of these possibilities, becoming obsessed, rather, by the possibility that such programs could literally represent, in a certain sense, the "algorithms of the future", and in that, he similarly perceived, like so many others at the time, the deep connection that this implied between finance, and physics. Becoming a close reader of the German physicist Jurgen Ehlers, Israel was fascinated by Ehler's "study of 'hidden symmetries' and the predictive possibilities of 'frame theory'" and in "how quantum physics might enable him to anticipate movements in the market as if stocks were particles of light."[8] Combining his insights from years as a trader with his newfound love for "econophysics," Israel designed his own computer trading program which he called "Forward Propagation:"

> The word *forward* spoke to the software's soothsaying powers. *Propagation* aimed to conjure wave theory, biological reproduction, and religious evangelicism(sic), all with a whiff of mathematical mysticism. Like fractals, the multiplying self-similar geometric shapes that occur in coastlines and snowflakes and lightning bolts, there were shapes to be divined inside the seemingly incoherent data, Israel maintained. With some fine-tuning, the machine could give him the ability to see those hidden patterns in stock prices.[9]

With this tool in hand, Israel founded his own hedge fund in 1996, Bayou, and thus did his slide into fraud, and his collision with the "Octopus", begin.

1. Bayou's Good Start

Starting with only $600,000 and the "Forward Propagation" program to guide them, Sam and his partners initially followed its forecasts closely, to the extent that, within the first three and a half months, the firm had performed at 17.6 percent, and on an annual basis this would have meant a "performance of over 50 percent return, an incredible feat."[10]

---

[8] Ibid., p. 41. The connection between physics and finance and the cosmological views implied by both is very ancient, and has been known to the financial sectors of human civilization for some time. See my *Babylon's Banksters* (Feral House, 2010) and my *The Financial Vipers of Venice* (Feral House, 2013).

[9] Guy Lawson, *Octopus*., p. 51.

So incredible was this feat that a Park Avenue investment firm called Redstone Capital Corporation approached Sam and his partners about the possibility of taking the fund public and selling it to investors. One of Redstone's employees even sent a letter to a prospective investor trumpeting the ability of the program to predict good trades.[11] The program worked, according to the letter, by analyzing a data stream on markets fed to it by a satellite, and was accurate in its predictions 86 percent of the time.[12] Using the program, and staying strictly within ethical bounds, Israel and his partners were able in a matter of months to almost double their money.

2. Problems and the Decision to Cook the Books

The slide into fraud began when one of Sam's partners urged purchasing a gold company stock, Barrick, which had just announced an agreement with Indonesian dictator Suharto to acquire the majority interest into "the largest gold deposit found in decades."[13] With former President G.H.W. Bush on the board of Barrick, Sam thought it was sure to have the ear of the Indonesian dictator, and hence be a sure investment.

Unfortunately, another company sued, amid predictable allegations "of graft and market manipulation."[14] Barrick did not get its Indonesian gold rights, its market capitalization was slashed 50 percent, and of course the Bayou fund was in trouble, and Israel and his partners began to tell their partners that the fund "was thriving—even when it was losing."[15] While the details of how Israel and his partners originally decided to commit fraud and "cook the books" are fascinating,[16] they do not concern us here. Suffice it to say that they decided that in order to keep their losses hidden from investors until such time as they could regain the losses by further trades, the decision was taken to maintain two sets of books—the genuine ones, and the ones shown to investors—even to the point of obtaining a fake office for the company to present a "winning, profitable image," and creating a fake accounting company complete with faked corporate logo, to perform the "audits" on the fund to show potential investors, or investors who had already put money into the fund and who were asking questions.[17]

---

[10] Ibid., p. 58.

[11] Ibid.

[12] Guy Lawson, *Octopus*, p. 58.

[13] Ibid., p. 59.

[14] Ibid., p. 60.

[15] Ibid., p. 61.

[16] See Lawson's explanation of the corporate structure of the Bayou fund on pp. 56-57, and how this structure was used to hide the losses from the investors on pp. 62-63.

This scheme continued, as the losses mounted, until Sept. 11, 2001. By this point, the fund had grown to $70,000,000 but losses were $12,000,000,[18] and in effect, one set of investors had to be found to pay off a previous set. The Friday before Sept. 11, Israel's "Forward Propagation" computer program "had lit up like a slot machine with a row of cherries. Normally, the computer offered contradictory data points some pointing to buy, others to sell. But that Friday, all tend lights on the computer had pointed in the same direction: Go long."[19] To Israel and his hard-pressed partners in fraud, it appeared the golden opportunity to recoup losses, clean up the books, and end the fraud.

Israel placed ninety-five percent of all of the fund's money into trading orders on the Friday before the Monday of Sept. 11, 2001.[20] All the indicators were that the trades would be successful, and that the Bayou fund would recoup its losses.

But then the airplanes hit the Twin Towers of the World Trade Center, and the market was closed, and remained closed for a week. As Sam Israel put it to Guy Lawson, whose book is the only study of the Bayou fund fraud case, "There was no trading. Nothing. I couldn't get out of any of my positions. It was obvious the market was going to tank. I couldn't do anything until trading started again."[21] When trading finally opened again, the extent of the damage became clear, and as 2001 trudged on, the fund only dug in deeper:

> At the end of 2001, according to the audit of Richmond-Fairfield, Bayou had $85,354,183 in net assets. This included $10.7 million in cash on deposit with Bayou's clearinghouse, as well as $10 million in securities—SPDR's Texas Instruments, national Semiconductor. The

---

[17] Ibid., pp. 74, 76-77.

[18] Guy Lawson, *Octopus*, p. 91.

[19] Ibid., p. 92.

[20] Ibid.

[21] Ibid.

> sum "Due from Brokers" was $64,499,627—a measure of the meteoric rise of the fraud.[22]

Desperate men do desperate things, and as the fraud and losses only grew, Sam increasingly turned to unusual solutions… and this is where his story brushes up against the breakaway civilization, and the hidden system of finance that has been outlined in previous chapters.

This is where Sam walked straight into the tentacles of the Octopus.

B. Sam Israel and "the Secret Bond Market"

1. Israel Learns of the Inslaw Affair and the PROMIS Software Program

In his desperation to find some quick fix for the difficulties that compounded fraud had now put him in, Sam Israel cast about for all manner of solutions, and soon found them through a friend. The "solution" was a man named Robert Booth Nichols, a name well-known in the halls of "conspirology." Nichols by his own admission was a "covert operator," a "real-life Jason Bourne, a black ops national security asset who had worked on the dakr side of America's covert activities for decades."[23] Israel's friend told him that Nichols was "a stone-cold killer, an agent who functioned at the absolute highest levels of government."[24] But it was Nichol's connection to one particular scandal that caught Israel's attention when Israel began to read a website called *The Last Circle*, subsequently published as a book by its author, Cheri Seymour. *The Last Circle* will be consulted in this chapter in a moment, but first one must see how Lawson records Israel's story.

As Israel read about Nichols in *The Last Circle*, is quickly became apparent to him that:

> …Nicholas had been involved in virtually every nefarious covert plot carried out by the U.S. Government for the part three decades. Iran-Contra, the October Surprise, the CIA's mind-control experiment called MK Ultra—Nichols was the Zelig of the conspiracy theory world. When the CIA dealt heroin to fund the war against Hezbollah in Beirut in the 1980s, Nichols was there. When Ferdinand Marcos of the Philippines smuggled billions of bullion into Swiss bank accounts, his "facilitator" was Nichols. When three people were murdered on the

---

[22] Ibid., p. 101. Lawson also quips that Bayou "was becoming a miniature Federal Reserve."(p. 100).

[23] Guy Lawson, *Octopus*, p. 142.

[24] Ibid.

> Cabazon Indian reservation outside Palm Springs in the summer of 1981, Nichols was there developing illegal biological weapons and machine guns to arm Nicaraguan rebels.[25]

It was this triple homicide that became part of the investigation of the theft of some high-level database management software called PROMIS, being developed by a Maryland company called Inslaw, for the use of the Department of Justice. PROMIS stood for Prosecutor's Management Information system.[26]

It was this software that captured Israel's attention, for as the lore surrounding the Inslaw scandal indicated, its capabilities were enormous, and held out the prospect of a solution to Israel's hedge fund difficulties. As Lawson summarizes its capabilities, Inslaw's PROMIS software

> had been so successful that American intelligence agency apparatus had secretly stolen the software to put it to use covertly. The CIA had reconfigured the code and installed it in 32-bit Digital Equipment Corporation DAX minicomputers. The agency had used front companies to sell the new technology *to banks and leading financial institutions like the Federal Reserve.* Hidden inside the computer was a "trapdoor" that enabled intelligence agencies to covertly monitor financial transactions digitally for the first time. The highly classified initiative, known as "Follow the Money," had allowed the Reagan administration to trace the Libyan government's secret funding of a terrorist group that had bombed a disco in Berlin in 1986, killing an American soldier and wounding two hundred civilians. In Bob Woodward's book *Veil*, former CIA director William Casey said the secret money-tracking system had been one of his proudest achievements.[27]

Sam Israel realized that American intelligence had gained the capability to track *any* monetary transactions, including those of the secretive and private Federal Reserve Bank, in real time.[28] If he could acquire the program somehow, Sam realized that by integrating it with his own "Forward Propagation" trading program that he would—as Lawson puts it—be a "one-man National Security Agency"[29] because he would have access to up-to-the-minute financial signals intelligence.[30]

---

[25] Ibid., p. 143.

[26] Paradoxically, the claim by some researchers of the Inslaw affair that PROMIS was stolen by the U.S. Government and subsequently made its way throughout the federal bureaucracy appears to have some merit, for there is a "Patient Reported Outcomes Measurement Information System" which has been funded by the National Institutes of Health, and yet another PROMIS, a Public Records Online Management System, also apparently called a Pupil Records Online Management Information System, in use by the San Joaquin County Office of Education (https://www.mypromis.org/index.aspx).

[27] Guy Lawson, *Octopus*, p. 144, emphasis added.

This also means that American intelligence had also acquired a powerful weapon in the arsenal of any hidden system of finance, both for keeping such a system secret, and for tracking its activities, provided, of course, that such a system existed.

For Sam Israel, however, the clear implication was that such a secretive market *did* exist. As he put it to researcher Guy Lawson:

> "A lightbulb went off in my head," Sam recalled. "The PROMIS software was the answer to everything I'd suspected about the markets. I'd seen how the markets were manipulated after the crash of 1987. But I didn't know how they did it—how the money actually flowed into the market. If I had PROMIS I could track the movement of money. I could see how the Fed operated. If money was going into semiconductors, then I could get there ahead of the market… I would be at the flux point. I would be able to see the volume going up before the stock moved… It would be the ultimate inside trade."[31]

Note the implications of Israel's remarks, for in essence, what he is saying is that the securities market—once one factors in the implications of a program like PROMIS and the intelligence community's penetration of the central banks that it affords—is nothing but a bit of theater, manipulated for an audience's benefit, for the brokerage houses and even the central banks themselves are at the mercy of technocrats, computer programmers, social engineers, and, above all, intelligence oligarchs whose shadowy lives move between finance and intelligence like a bar of wet soap.

Nor is this assessment far removed from what researchers into the Inslaw affair have uncovered, for needless to say, the story was so real, and so huge, that the indefatigably lazy American lamestream media would barely touch it. Cheri Seymour, whose *The Last Circle* was eventually published as a book, delved deeply into the Danny Casolaro investigation of the Inslaw affair, and deeply into Casolaro's "murder by suicide" in a motel in West Virginia. Casolaro, who had been hired by Inslaw company founder Bill Hamilton to investigate the theft of his company's software, soon uncovered so many tendrils and threads of conspiracy leading so many places that he dubbed the entity "The Octopus," and was in the final stages of investigation and beginning to compile notes for a book on the subject. Summoned to Martinsburg, West Virginia by an unnamed source who indicated that he would reveal the final missing key to Casolaro, and that Casolaro should bring his important files and notes on the subject, Casolaro never returned from the meeting. He was found by a cleaning maid on August 10, 1991, in the bathtub of his room, with numerous deep cuts to both wrists.

---

[28] Ibid., p. 147.

[29] Ibid., p. 148.

[30] Ibid.

[31] Guy Lawson, *Octopus*, p. 148.

Investigative Journalist Danny Casolaro

Retracing Casolaro's steps and contacts, Seymour quickly confirmed that Casolaro's sources did indeed maintain that the PROMIS software had been stolen, and that the program had subsequently been modified to include "backdoors". The program had then been sold under a variety of names to various banks, corporations, and most importantly, foreign intelligence services. The backdoor allowed the U.S. intelligence community to access the computer systems and databases of wherever the program went.[32] The software was so flexible in its management capabilities for different types of databases that it allowed the easy tracking of arms, of people, of drugs, to such an extent that it allowed the "enterprise" behind the Iran-Contra controversy to be essentially a self-supporting system,[33] or to put it differently, Iran-Contra was but one operation of a completely self-sustaining system that required, and had, no government oversight, from anywhere. It was, in short, a manifestation of the breakaway civilization. According to Seymour, Casolaro had even told close friends that he had been able to link the Inslaw scandal and similar episodes "back to a dirty CIA 'Old Boy' network' that had begun in the 1950s.[34] Some of the connections between the Inslaw affair and the rogue CIA group that Casolaro had uncovered were the now infamous banking scandals that began to rock the world beginning with the Reagan Administration and continuing for the rest of the century: The BCCI, or Bank of Credit and Commerce International, somewhat more accurately called by researchers the Bank of Crooks and Criminals, International. Casolaro had also uncovered connections to the Savings and Loan scandal, the Keating Five, and on and on it went.[35]

---

[32] See Cheri Seymour, *The Last Circle: Danny Casolaro's Investigatio into The Octopus and the PROMIS Software Scandal* (Trine Day: 2011),. pp. 10-11.

a. The Promise of PROMIS: The Gatekeeper between the Breakaway Civilization, its Hidden System of Finance, and the Overworld

Most importantly, Seymour stated—and one can only imagine the impression that such a statement would have had on Sam Israel—that Bill Hamilton, the founder of Inslaw, had told her that one version of PROMIS had been modified by the National Security Agency specifically in a "bank surveillance version" to monitor proceeds from drug sales.[36] In other words, the technology was intimately tied to the financial community, *and* to the vast underground economy of the international drug cartels and criminal syndicates. The software was, so to speak, the gatekeeper of the interface between the "overworld", the visible system of finance, and the hidden system, a system that used drugs as an international currency, and referred to them as gold.[37] The system, via its backdoor, could be used as a valuable tool to track money laundering.[38] Seymour even discovered the possibility that the PROMIS software may have been suspected by the Royal Canadian Mounted Police as "being used in the international banking system for illegal activities."[39]

---

[33] Ibid., p. 28.

[34] Cheri Seymour, *The Last Circle*, p. 41.

[35] Ibid., pp. 51-52. Casolaro also revealed a connection to the Nugan Hand banking scandal, a fact which, according to Seymour, may have led to his "murder by suicide," for Casolaro wrote up his allegations in a memorandum and presented them to the U.S. Department of Justice just before he was murdered. (See pp. 207-208)

[36] Ibid., p. 65.

In short, Casolaro had uncovered a "rogue group," an international "breakaway group" operating entirely on its own, but that group was not at its core a cabal of international bankers, but rather, a core of intelligence operatives, rogue military men, technocrats, and, of course, corrupt, or compromised, bankers.

According to Seymour, Inslaw founder Bill Hamilton had come to his own similar conclusions. He believed "…after more than two decades of research, that the modified version of his PROMIS software had been used for money laundering of drug profits to fund unauthorized intelligence operations…."[40] Indeed, such a powerful program would not only allow the tracking of covert financial activities, and even for the existence of an entire covert financial *system*, but it would also allow something equally important for such a system to exist, namely, *the ability to cover its tracks and obfuscate its activities by using the "backdoor" to modify the actual numbers of transactions….say, for example, the amounts of gold actually in existence.* Such a tool would allow the *same* amount of gold to be used as the backing or collateral to float securities over and over in different issues.

b. The Promise of PROMIS:
The People-Tracking Capability

Seymour is not alone in her assessment of the capabilities—the promise—of PROMIS, for almost any serious researcher into the Inslaw affair will encounter them. For researcher Kenn Thomas and the late Jim Keith, the PROMIS saga was intimately connected to the 1980s decoupling of covert operations from the CIA and their "privatization" through private corporations like Wackenhut.[41] The software, originally designed by the Inslaw corporation to fulfill a contract for the U.S. Department of Justice, was engineered to track cases, and hence, *people*, through the federal court system, from jurisdiction to jurisdiction. It soon became apparent, however, that it had the capability to track other kinds of criminal people—terrorists[42]—and "potential" criminals, such as "dissidents."[43] And the easiest way to do so was, of course, through their financial footprints, their financial transactions. The long and short of this is, these capabilities give lie to the oft-heard assertion that no one really knows who placed or benefitted from the massive short orders against American and United Airlines on Sept. 11, 2001.[44]

---

[37] Ibid., pp. 8, 341.

[38] Ibid., pp. 197-198. Seymour mentions this possibility specifically in regard to the two worldwide clearing-house systems, CHIPS(Clearing House Interbank Payments system) and SWIFT (Society for Worldwide Interbank Financial Transfer).

[39] Ibid., p. 334.

[40] Cheri Seymour, *The Last Circle*, p. 371.

2. Robert Booth Nichols and the "Secret Bond Market"

But what, once again, has all this to do with Sam Israel, and what does he, in turn, have to do with the "industrial scale counterfeiting" of the Nazis in *Unternehmung Bernhard*, or with that of the massive "Bearer Bonds Scandals" of the first decade of the third millennium? By the time of Israel's hedge fund fraud, the one was, so to speak, ancient history, and seemingly irrelevant, and the other had not even occurred yet.

Motivated by his desire to acquire PROMIS for his own purposes, Sam Israel managed to contact the mysterious Robert Booth Nichols, whose name does indeed seem to float in and out of almost every conspiracy of the late twentieth century. They met in London's fashionable Dorchester Hotel. Once Sam had Nichols alone, he quickly pressed the issue of obtaining a copy of PROMIS. As they spoke, Nichols received a call on his cellular phone, and as he spoke, he opened his briefcase just long enough for Israel to steal a glance at a document which Nichols appeared to consult, before putting it back in his briefcase and closing it. Sam saw columns of numbers, and demanded to see the document. Appearing reluctant, Nichols handed over the document.[45]

It contained columns of numbers, the left column showing amounts of money invested and on the right, a column of numbers showing astronomical rates of returns. Incredulous, Sam inquired what Nichols was trading. The answer opened the door into Sam Israel's own personal version of the Bearer Bonds scandals:

---

[41] Kenn Thomas and Jim Keith, *The Octopus: Secret Government and the Death of Danny Casolaro* (Feral House: 2004), p. 2.

[42] Ibid., p. 10

[43] Kenn Thomas and Jim Keith, *The Octopus*,. p. 23.

[44] Ibid, p. 159.

[45] Guy Lawson, *Octopus*, p. 153.

> "What are you trading?"
>
> "Bonds," Nichols said.
>
> "What kind of bonds?" Sam asked.
>
> "This is something that could benefit your greatly," Nichols replied. "But it is very difficult to get into this market. Nearly Impossible."
>
> "What market?"
>
> "High yield buy/sell trading programs," Nichols said. "The market is only open to the biggest players."[46]

Over time, Sam eventually was able to wrest an explanation from Nichols about this mysterious bond market "only open to the biggest players." Nichols' explanation, as recounted by Guy Lawson, is worth citing at some length, for now connections begin to be made:

> Nichols explained how the secret bond market functioned. The world Nichols described dwarfed the conspiracy theories evoked … by *The Last Circle.* According to Nichols the basic institutions of the modern world—the U.S. government, the Federal Reserve, the International Monetary Fund—were all a front. The reality—if Sam could handle the truth—was far darker and more dangerous than anything he could imagine.
>
> "There is a secret government operation within the world's government," Nichols said to Sam. "They run the secret trading program—the high-yield market. Only a few chosen people participate in the program. The returns are staggering. The proceeds are used to fund black operations, wars, to pay off foreign governments. The proceeds are also used for good works in the Third World—to build hospitals, construct water treatment plants, cure diseases. It is the way order is maintained in the world. The programs are top secret—highly, highly classified. Getting approved to trade in the market is extremely difficult…"[47]

---

[46]. Guy Lawson, *Octopus*, p. 153.

[47] Ibid., pp. 155-156. Lawson also notes something very important: "According to the FBI, Nichols claimed he'd been to Switzerland for three years to be taught the secrets of high finance for intelligence agencies—the intricacies of how the CIA and NSA secretly funded black ops using billions of off-the-books dollars hidden in numbered Swiss accounts." (p. 186)

Sam explained all this to Lawson, and again, a now familiar pattern re-emerges, a pattern, not of U.S. Treasury bonds, but of *Federal Reserve* bonds, bonds sold at a great discount by the Federal Reserve to a few select banks or "primary dealers," banks such as "Goldman Sachs, Deutsche Bank, Nomura, Union Bank of Switzerland, BNP Paribas"[48] and so on. These banks in turn placed the bonds on "the secret market". Sam then revealed an important clue:

> "When Nixon took America off the gold standard in 1972 the shit hit the fan. *There wasn't enough gold in the Federal Reserve to pay for all the dollars that had been issued by the government.*"[49]

Israel, without realizing it, was very close to an important clue, one that, as we saw in the previous chapter, both Lord Blackheath, and much earlier, even Hjalmar Schacht, were close to: the amounts of gold in existence were grossly and deliberately obfuscated. And, as the Bearer Bonds Scandals suggest, securities in enormous denominations had been issued by the Federal Reserve against that obfuscated gold. But more on that in a moment.

Any rational person's initial reaction to all of this would simply be to dismiss it, for such a secret market would only benefit those at the very top, but that, precisely, was Nichols' point. It was being used as a hidden system of finance to fund black operations, covert wars, and one may aver, secret research. As we shall see later in this chapter and in the next chapter, the allegations have a basis in utter, and undeniable, fact, a fact which places all of the Bearer Bonds scandals, and all attempts to *deny that they may be based on some real exemplar by officials of the government or academics*, into a cocked hat.

In any case, Nichols touched upon yet another meme that, unbeknownst to either man, Lord Blackheath would utter in the House of Lords: according to Nichols, as he explained the "secret bond market" to Sam, one could only *enter* that market by agreeing to use much of the profits in some charitable work.[50] It was Lord Blackheath's "Foundation X" messianic meme all over again. There were other familiar patterns connecting Sam Israel's experience with Nichols to the Bearer Bonds Scandals. For one thing, the denominations of the alleged bonds "ran up to billions."[51]

---

[48] Ibid., p. 156.

[49] Guy Lawson, *Octopus*, p. 157.

[50] Ibid, p. 158.

[51] Ibid., p. 173.

3. Federal Reserve Bonds, or was that Federal Reserved Bonds?

More importantly, the meme of the "Asian connection" surfaced, this time once again in connection with *another* by-now-familiar meme, that of seven hundred *billion* dollars' worth of bearer bonds. Nichols informed Sam that he had once journeyed to Singapore to negotiate with a representative of former Chinese Nationalist generalissimo Chiang Kai-shek's family, which possessed some of these bonds and "heritage documents" proving their genuine provenance. The bonds, Nichols told Sam, were *always* denied to be legitimate by the Federal Reserve, which maintains publicly that all such bonds are counterfeit, simply because it does not have the money to pay on the bonds, "so it pretends that the bonds were never issued."[52]

At this juncture, we are again chin-to-chin with the two interpretive possibilities: either such bonds were never issued, and all such examples of them are indeed counterfeit as the U.S. government, the Federal Reserve, and even academia maintains, counterfeits issued in the "good old secret bond market prime bank swindle," *or* one may reason that one never counterfeits something that does not genuinely exist, such that, even if the individual bonds in this or that instance *are* counterfeit, they are based upon something that really *was* secretly issued, as a bond, by the Federal Reserve.[53]

4. Odd, But Crucial, Miscellanies

Sam Israel, of course, bought the scam, and attempted to enter the "secret bond market," and in the process, gambled away the last liquid capital his company had, thus dooming him and his partners to the eventual exposure of their years of fraud, and to eventual trial and incarceration.

However, there are a number of other oddities about the whole Sam Israel-Inslaw-PROMIS-secret bond market affair that must be mentioned, for these oddities are very *odd* oddities indeed.

---

[52] Guy Lawson, *Octopus*, p. 221.

[53] It should be noted that Lawson makes it *very* clear that he does not think there is any real "fire" behind all the counterfeit "smoke," and that there is no real secret bond market. See Lawson, op. cit., p. 249.

One of the strangest of these are cryptic comments made by Danny Casolaro in the notes that managed to survive his murder-by-suicide.[54] In these notes, Casolaro, who had connected the Inslaw affair and the theft of PROMIS to industrial scale secret financial tracking, money laundering, and banking scandals, also wrote "MJ 12—extraterrestrial."[55] MJ-12 is, of course, the top secret UFO study group allegedly founded after the Roswell crash and in response to other UFO flaps in the late 1940s and early 1950s. The inclusion of such an odd note in an investigation into areas having otherwise to do with sophisticated computer programs, secret systems of finance, money laundering, and secret intelligence monitoring of all these activities, suggests that there is a relationship between all these things and the UFO phenomenon, at least, in Danny Casolaro's mind. As we noted in the Preface however, there is a powerful philosophical case to be made for holding precisely such a view. Indeed, there *is* some sort of connection between the Inslaw affair and Space, and therefore, between the Inslaw affair and the whole question of a secret system of finance, for as Cheri Seymour noted in *The Last Circle*, one of the major principals in the whole Inslaw affair, one responsible for administering "the Inslaw contract with the government," was one Peter Viedenieks, who spent much of his time during the 1970s as a "contract specialist" for NASA.[56]

In yet another "odd oddity," one of the names hovering persistently on the ever-expanding circles of principals surrounding the Inslaw Affair was Adnan Khashoggi, an arms dealer whom Casolaro had uncovered as being involved in the murky drugs-for-arms dealing that was Iran-Contra, and the equally murky world of the BCCI banking scandal.[57] Khashoggi's sister, Samira Khashoggi Fayed, was the mother to Dodi Fayed, the alleged lover of Diana, Princess of Wales.[58]

As Sam Israel was gripped ever more tightly by Casolaro's "Octopus," more and more ties and indicators to Asia, and to a mystery hidden deep in the post-World War Two and early Cold War era emerged. Nichols, for example, revealed that the "counterfeit Federal Reserve bonds were somehow tied to a vast treasure of bullion looted by the Japanese during World War Two, and buried on Mindanao Island of the Philippines by the Japanese occupation army commanding officer, General Tomoyuki Yamashita.[59]

---

[54] Casolaro kept his most important files and notes in a cardboard expanding accordion file, which he was requested to bring with him to the fateful meeting in Martinsburg, West Virginia. This file has never been seen again. The notes that do survive were found in his house and donated by his family to the University of Missouri in Jefferson City, where archivist and researcher Kenn Thomas has been studying the case since.

[55] Kenn Thomas and Jim Keith, *The Octopus*, p. 43.

[56] Cheri Seymour, *The Last Circle,* p. 61.

[57] Ibid., p. 52.

[58] Ibid., p. 53.

This is our final clue, and it will preoccupy us in chapter four, for Danny Casolaro had also suggested a connection to the Inslaw affair and bullion smuggling rings he had traced to Southeast Asia. Even more suggestive is the fact that Casolaro had apparently unearthed this connection shortly before his death.[60]

But perhaps the most intriguing of these "very odd oddities" is the fact that Sam Israel bought some of these "Federal Reserve bonds", which, like the Spanish, Italian, and Filipino Bearer Bonds scandals examined in chapters 2A and 2B, came in a rusty strong box stamped "Federal Reserve." Like the bonds of the various Bearer Bonds scandals to erupt a decade later, Israel's bonds were dated 1934,[61] and on paper whose quality seemed authentic and indeed, which contained "the same material" as the stationer Crane & Co. "had supplied the Federal Reserve for generations."[62] The signature of the U.S. Secretary of the Treasury on these 1934 bonds "was authentic."[63] Even Lawson, who disputes the whole idea of a "secret bond market" admits: "According to leading historians, it was entirely possible that the U.S. government *had* secretly funded the Chinese government of Chiang Kai-shek in ways that remained classified secrets."[64]

However, notes Lawson, "there were oddities. There were grammatical errors, as if the words had been written in pidgin English."[65] One wonders if these oddities included the title "Federal *Reserved* Bond" rather than "Federal *Reserve* Bond." As we shall discover in the next chapter, this one oddity alone—mistakes, bad English, grammatical errors—points not to a counterfeiting operation of industrial scale being perpetrated by international con men, grifters, and swindlers, but by the Federal Reserve and other rogue agencies themselves, exactly as Lord Blackheath suggested. The denominations of the bonds were in the amount of $100,000,000, and the case which Sam Israel had purchased contained an incredible $25 *billion* total.

---

[59] Guy Lawson, *Octopus*, p. 283.

[60] Kenn Thomas and Jim Keith, *The Octopus*, p. 104.

[61] Guy Lawson, *Octopus*, p. 315.

[62] Guy Lawson, *Octopus*, p. 315.

[63] Ibid.

[64] Ibid.

[65] Ibid.

For his part in the "swindle," during the various trials surrounding the downfall of Sam Israel and the Bayou hedge fund, Nichols' testimony was sealed "for reasons that weren't explained. Nichol's name wouldn't be released to the press, nor would any evidence of his long and mysterious association with the intelligence apparatus of the U.S. government."[66] When the Japanese Bearer Bond Scandal broke in 2009, Sam Israel, by then already in prison, told Guy Lawson that he believed the bonds were real.[67] From prison, Israel has initiated a lawsuit to recover the "fake" bonds that were used in evidence against him at his trial, stating that if they are worthless, then it won't matter to give them back, and if they are indeed worth even a fraction of their denominated value, then his former investors in the Bayou fund should be recompensed with that money. "I'm doing everything I can. I won't stop. The truth is going to come out,"[68] says Israel.

Indeed, perhaps the truth already did. And that truth can be summed up in four words: "gold," and General Tomoyuki Yamashita.

---

[66] Ibid., p. 317.

[67] Ibid., pp. 338-339.

[68] Ibid., pp. 340-341.

Japanese General Tomoyuki Yamashita

4

THE LILY, THE LOOTING, AND LANSDALE: THE MURKY HISTORY OF A COVERT SLUSH-FUND FOR COVERT ACTIVITIES

"Did Lansdale have these accounts moved to bring them under greater CIA control, or under greater control by The Enterprise and its powerful conservative backers, including the John Birch Society and the World Anti-Communist League? The answer is surely the latter."
Sterling and Peggy Seagrave[1]

The stern visage staring at the reader from the opposite page is that of Japanese Imperial Army Air Force General Tomoyuki Yamashita,[2] one of Japan's, and indeed World War Two's, most capable and brilliant field commanders. Indeed, Yamashita earned his nickname, the Tiger of Malaya, on account of his "blitzkrieg" through the country and into British Singapore in six months, even though the Allied forces outnumbered his own Japanese troops.

General Yamashita's military skills are not, however, what concern us here; it is his record as a war criminal for which he was eventually convicted by an Allied war crimes tribunal and hung in 1946, or rather, what that record and execution may have been designed to conceal, for General Yamashita was appointed in 1944 to be the Japanese military commander in the Philippines, and was responsible for secreting a vast amount of military plunder, loot gathered by Imperial Japanese forces throughout occupied Asia in a coordinated looting campaign code-named Operation Golden Lily. With this, we have at last reached the Asian heart of the story of what I believe to be the hidden system of finance of the breakaway civilization. This story often goes under the name of "Yamashita's Gold," and it has become the stuff of legends. As we shall now discover, there is more truth in this legend than falsehood. But the devil, as they say, is in the details, and here the details conceal quite a few devils, and quite a few connections.

---

[1] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors: America's Secret Recovery of Yamashita's Gold* (New York: Verso, 2005), p. 154.

[2] I am, of course, following the Western practice of giving the general's surname last, and not the Oriental one of his given name being last.

A. Operation Golden Lily: "Yamashita's Gold"

Operation Golden Lily, as noted above, was the codename of Imperial Japan's looting and plundering operation in occupied Asia. Named after one of Emperor Hirohito's poems,[3] the operation was directly entrusted to the Emperor's brother, prince Chichibu.[4] Other members of the imperial household oversaw various branches of the operation throughout occupied Asia.[5] The Philippines became the crucial trans-shipment point for this plunder before being shipped on to the Japanese home islands.

By 1944, the war had turned irrevocably against Japan, and the decision was made to hide this plunder in the Philippines for use by the imperial household after the war, and General Yamashita was chosen to command the Japanese forces there, to fight an intense delaying action. Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, whose superb research is reviewed closely here, summarize Golden Lily, and Yamashita's role, in words that give indication of the scope of the Japanese plunder operation:

> In the closing months of World War II in the Philippines, while General Yamashita Tomoyuki fought a delaying action in the rugged mountains of Luzon, several of Japan's highest-ranking imperial princes were preparing for the future. They were busy hiding tons of looted gold bullion and other stolen treasure in nearby caves and tunnels, to be recovered later. This was the property of twelve Asian countries, accumulated over thousands of years. Expert teams accompanying Japan's armed forces had systematically emptied treasuries, banks, factories, private homes, pawn shops, art galleries, and stripped ordinary people, while Japan's top gangsters looted Asia's underworld and black economy. In this, the Japanese were far more thorough than the Nazis. It was as if a giant vacuum cleaner passed across East and Southeast Asia.[6]

The organization and intelligence for this massive operation fell to units of Imperial Japan's notorious intelligence bureaucracy-cum-gendarmerie, the *Kempeitai*, and, as the Seagraves note, the Japanese criminal underworld—the Yakuza—was employed to utilize *its* connections in

---

[3] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors: America's Secret Recovery of Yamanshita's Gold* (New York: Verso, 2003), p. 2.

[4] Ibid.

[5] Ibid.

[6] Ibbid., p. 1.

Asia to ensure that the looting activity was not limited to the legitimate open markets.

This circumstances highlights a pattern that, as our review of Golden Lily and its postwar consequences proceeds, will become more and more in evidence, and that pattern contains three elements:

1) At the top, coordinating the activity, is a powerful "*managing elite*," for whom the plunder is ultimately intended, in this case, the Japanese imperial family;
2) Carrying out the activity, is a *network of military and intelligence officers*, in this case, the *Kempeitai*;[7]
3) Assisting this activity is *a criminal underground*, using its sources of contacts and intelligence within the underground black markets, in this case, the Japanese Yakuza.

This nexus of an elite, intelligence, and criminal underground elements we have encountered before with the postwar Nazi International and its close alliance and association with American military, intelligence, and financial circles after the war. Here, on the other side of the world, we discover the same pattern during the war inside of the Japanese oligarchy, and this suggests that a similar pattern of "cooperation" will emerge between this structure and its American counterparts after the war.

1. Lansdale, MacArthur, and Truman

Indeed, by October 1945, a mere month after the formal Japanese surrender, American intelligence had learned of Operation Golden Lily and the various caches of treasure scattered around the Philippines.[8] Yamashita, who had surrendered to American officers on September 2 when he received notice of Japan's surrender, was immediately interred and charged with war crimes for crimes apparently committed by his predecessor.[9] But it was his staff that apparently provided American intelligence this information, even though there was no mention during the general's trial of any of the Golden Lily plunder. There was, however, a "hidden agenda" taking place behind Yamashita's trial and execution, and again, it is worth citing the Seagraves to see what that agenda may have been:

---

[7] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors,* p. 38. The Seagraves observe that the real impetus for Golden Lily came as a consequence of the Rape of Nanking, and it is at this juncture that the *Kempeitai* became even more heavily involved. As the Seagraves also point out, however, the pattern for Golden Lily was first perfected in the wake of the Russo-Japanese War of 1905 and the Japanese occupation of Korea.

[8] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors*, p. 2.

> Because it was not possible to torture General Yamashita physically without this becoming evident to his defense attorneys, members of his staff were tortured instead. His driver, Major Kojima Kashii, was given special attention. Since Yamashita had arrived from Manchuria in October 1944 to take over the defense of the Philippines, Kojima had driven him everywhere. In charge of Kojima's torture was a Filipino-American intelligence officer names Severino Garcia Diaz Santa Romana, a man of many names and personalities, whose friends called him 'Santy'. He wanted Major Kojima to reveal each place to which he had taken Yamashita, where bullion and treasure were hidden.
>
> Supervising Santy, we learned, was Captain Edward G. Lansdale.[10]

In other words, Yamashita, who knew of the locations of the treasure burial sites, had to be eliminated to keep his silence.

It is the occurrence of the name Edward G. Lansdale that sets off alarm bells, for this is the Edward G. Lansdale that will subsequently become a general, and a major advocate of covert operations and psychological warfare, being a "CIA" general, a close associate of Office of Policy Coordination dirty trickster Frank Wisner, and, for those paying close attention, it is General Edward Lansdale whom Col. Fletcher Prouty, in his books on the Kennedy Assassination, maintains was involved as a possible planner of the event.[11] With Lansdale, in other words, we encounter a key figure with connections to covert operations and the postwar network of rogue American agents, left-over Fascists and Nazis and criminal syndicates. This network will concern us more completely in part two, but it is important to note the connection here, for at the *beginning* of his career in covert operations, we discover him intimately involved in the recovery of Japanese imperial plunder.

---

[9] There have been persisting questions since the end of the war on whether Yamashita was justly charged for atrocities committed, apparently, without his knowledge or orders.

[10] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors,* p. 3. "Santy" is, of course, a name that also pops up over and over again in conjunction with the various bearer bonds scandals, however, his story does not concern us here.

[11] See my *LBJ and the Conspiracy to Kill Kennedy: A Coalescence of Interests* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2011), pp. 90-92, 211-217, and especially p. 135. Many JFK assassination researchers believe that in the famous photograph of the "three tramps" in Dallas being escorted by police officers, while a man passes by them in the opposite direction with his back to the camera, that this man is in fact General Lansdale. See http: //www.prouty.org/photos.html.

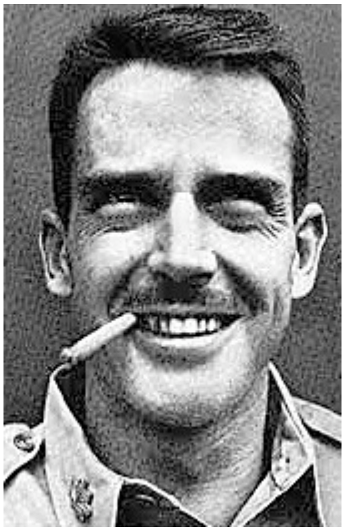

Ed Lansdale Shortly After World War Two, here wearing insignia of the rank of major or lieutenant colonel

By early October, 1945, Yamashita's driver had broken under "Santy's" and Lansdale's torture, and led them to over a dozen Golden Lily treasure sites north of Manila.[12] With the information concerning the scale of Golden Lily—and the actual treasure—thus confirmed, Lansdale immediately flew to Tokyo where he briefed General Douglas MacArthur, and from there, flew to Washington D.C. to brief none other than President Harry S. Truman himself. Truman, after discussing this vast plunder with his cabinet, "decided to proceed with the recovery, but to keep it a state secret."[13]

---

[12] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors*, p. 3.

[13] Ibid. The Seagraves note that on Santa Romana's death in 1974, his personal "black gold" accounts were transferred to the control of Lansdale, who had by that time been retired from the CIA for more than a decade. As the

> The treasure—gold, platinum, and barrels of loose gems—*was combined with Axis loot recovered in Europe to create a worldwide covert political action fund to fight communism.* This 'black gold' gave the Truman Administration access to virtually limitless unvouchered funds for covert operations. It also provided an asset base that was used by Washington to reinforce the treasuries of its allies, to bribe political leaders, and to manipulate elections in foreign countries. In the late 1940s, this agenda was seen as entirely justified, because the Soviet Union was aggressively supporting communist and socialist movements all over the world, putting the survival of the capitalist world in peril.[14]

In other words, the decision had been taken at the highest level to keep the vast amount of treasure as hidden system of finance to fund covert operations. The Cold War had become a hot war, but it was a hot war fought in secret, via false fronts and proxies.

An inevitable and highly problematical set of questions occurs at this juncture, and we must pause to consider them. Firstly, what if American efforts to recover Nazi and Japanese plunder were simply not entirely successful? What if, in other words, some of this loot remained known only to postwar Japanese insiders—members of the imperial family, the Japanese nobility, high ranking industrialists and politicians, and, last but not least, members of its criminal underground? What if some of this loot remained known only to their Nazi counterparts? Secondly, do covert operations seem to account for *all* of the vast amount of loot implied? Or does the amount implied also suggest that this hidden system of finance was used to fund *other* sorts of activities of a covert nature, including secret research?

These questions imply their own set of signatures of what one would look for if any of them were true. In the case of the first set of questions, one would look for signs of postwar *collusion* between members of this American covert-ops, intelligence, and financial network, and that of the survivors of the Axis elites, both Nazi, and Japanese.[15] This collusion

---

Seagraves observe, Lansdale was most likely involved in a *private* intelligence and covert operations group.(see Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, op. cit., p. 8)

[14] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors*, p. 3, emphasis added.

[15] I have, of course, outlined this collusion between the postwar Anglo-American financial and intelligence elites and the "Nazi International" in my books *The Nazi International: The Nazis' Postwar Plan to Control Finance, Conflict, Physics, and Space* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2008), *Saucers, Swastikas, and Psyops: A History of a Breakaway Civilization: Hidden*

also implies that one may look for signs of "creeping fascism" in western culture, but as this is a phenomenon widely commented upon, it will not concern us in this book. We shall, however, have occasion to observe the signs of collusion and covert activity in part two, and indeed, have already indicated *some* of the extent of that activity in previous chapters by pointing out the odd role of the Vatican in connection with the various counterfeit securities schemes surveyed in those chapters.

In the case of the *second* set of questions, it implies that one look for signs of unusual financial or political activity surrounding the use or display of advanced technologies, and indeed, this will concern us in parts two and three.

An entry into the *Japanese* aspect of this postwar collusion between American military, intelligence, and financial interests and those of the Empire of Japan is afforded by a closer look at the role of General of the Army Douglas MacArthur in its creation.

General of the Army Douglas MacArthur

Aerospace Technologies and Psychological Operations (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2011), *LBJ and the Conspiracy to Kill Kennedy*(Adventures Unlimited Press, 2011), especially pp. 48-53, 55-58, 151-172, 180-187, and my *Babylon's Banksters: The Alchemy of Deep Physics, High Finance, and Ancient Religion* (Feral House 2012), pp. 64-73, where I suggest a hidden motivation behind the early Bilderberger meetings was to coordinate the laundering and use of Nazi loot in western financial institutions.

In order to understand this postwar collusion, it is worth noting what the Seagraves state concerning the general pattern of this secret bullion reserve, and how this fits the overall scheme that we have seen implied by the Bearer Bonds Scandals surveyed in previous chapters. This vast bullion reserve would constitute "black gold," a *secret* reserve for a hidden system of finance. Thus, it would function

> …as a reserve asset, bolstering the prime banks of Allied countries, strengthening the governments of those nations. As a safeguard, the bullion placed in those banks was carefully controlled; since limits were placed on the use that could be made of the gold (a process called earmarking). This enabled Washington to bring pressure, from time to time, on those governments, central banks and prime banks. Put simply, so long as a country and its leaders cooperated, and remained allied to the United Sates in the Cold War, derivatives of the sleeping bullion could be used for patronage through political slush funds.[16]

How was this bullion certified? "Gold bearer certificates were given as inducments."[17] Perhaps sensing a connection to the Bearer Bonds Scandals, the Seagraves immediately add: "In the hands of clever men, the possibilities were endless."[18] This secret bullion-backed fund was called the Black Eagle Trust.[19]

The possibility of using recovered Axis war booty as the basis for a postwar "global political action fund"[20] began during the Roosevelt Administration during the war and was the brainchild of Secretary of War Henry Stimson. Stimson established a think tank to deal with precisely this question, and one of the men involved was John J. McCloy.[21] With McCloy's name, we are once again chin to chin with connections, running from his pre-war involvement with Nazis, as he was the American attorney for the notorious German chemicals cartel I.G. Farben. McCloy was also the postwar American High Commissioner for occupied Germany, and as such had personally intervened to facilitate the transfer of Nazis to the USA as part of Operation Paperclip. As the Seagraves also note, McCloy was also a postwar president of the

---

[16] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors*, p. 5.

[17] Ibid.

[18] Ibid.

[19] Ibid., pp. 3-5.

[20] Ibid., p. 4.

[21] Ibid.

World Bank.[22] And, of course, he was also connected to the assassination of President John F. Kennedy, being one of the seven commissioners appointed to the Warren Commission by President Lyndon B. Johnson. McCloy was instrumental in the establishment of the plan to "re-plunder" Axis plunder and turn it into a secret financial system to fund covert operations. As a consequence of this, the *condition* is created for the possibility of collusion with the elites of the former Axis enemies.

This pattern of a secret reserve asset, against which the possessing banks could vastly expand their ledger credit entry-making ability, is exactly that which I have hypothesized lay behind the postwar Anglo-American and Nazi financial nexus. Now, however, we shall discover the same pattern operative in the postwar nexus between the occupying American military and intelligence forces, and the Japanese elite, a connection leading eventually to the pinnacle of Japanese political power, the premiership of the imperial Diet and the imperial house itself. Indeed, as the Seagraves note, this fund gave birth to *several* secret funds, just *one* of which, the so-called "M fund", worth a "mere" $35 billion in the early 1960s, was given to the leaders of Japan's Liberal Democrat Party by President Richard M. Nixon, in return for promises of kickbacks to his election campaign.[23] The Liberal Democrat Party leaders of Japan in turn used this fund as a secret slush fund to maintain their one-party control in Japan for decades.

2. The "MacArthur" Document

In this, General MacArthur played the key historical role, and to see how, we must look at a document that the Seagraves refer to. This is a special report, prepared by his own staff, shortly after the end of the war, called "Reports of General MacArthur: MacArthur in Japan: the Occupation: Military Phase."[24] One gains a measure of the significance of General MacArthur's role in helping to establish this secret system of finance by considering the following statement:

---

[22] Ibid.

[23] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors*, p. 6.

[24] This strange document, of which the author possesses a copy, has next to no bibliographical citation information, other than a very peculiar Library of Congress Catalog Card number, 66-60006, and a statement on the inside title page, stating "Facsimile Reprint, 1994, CMH Pub 13-4." For purposes here, I shall cite simple "General Staff of Douglas MacArthur," and the name and page number of the document.

> As a still further potential stimulus to foreign trade, SCAP[25] projected a plan to use Japanese-owned gold and silver as a base for acquiring foreign credits. This was achieved by creating the "Occupied Japan Export-Import Revolving Fund" which was to be used as a credit base for financing importation of raw materials for processing and exporting. This credit base was first utilized on 13 May 1948 when one government and three private banks pledged to finance a 60,000,000 dollar credit. The Economic and Scientific Section was responsible for advising the Supreme Commander on policies and programs relating to the custody, operation, management, and control of this fund.[26]

Note that explicit mention is made of using Japanese bullion as a means of "obtaining foreign credits," that there is a connection to scientific activities, and that these activities are unspecified.

The document becomes even more peculiar, for toward the end of the nearly three-hundred page report, a strange statement occurs indicating that there is indeed *some* measure of cooperation between General MacArthur, his staff, and the Japanese elite itself, when investigating claims being made *against* the Japanese by those nations, corporations, and individuals who had suffered the loss of their property during the Japanese occupation of their countries:

> Investigations were made when required by higher headquarters or upon receipt of information from other sources. Japanese police, procurators, and *agencies* were utilized. The police were encouraged and supported in their efforts to control large scale blackmarketing.[27]

This is a tell-tale, perhaps even an inadvertent, admission, for the exact names of the "agencies" utilized by SPAC were not specified, but given the nature of the claims *against* Golden Lily, these "agencies" must, by the nature of the case, involve at some point the *Kempeitai*. Additionally, the statement is curious in the fact that it does not mention that the Japanese police were encouraged to *eliminate* blackmarketing, but only to *control* it.

That this whole activity concerned largely the Operation Golden Lily loot is confirmed later in the document by the mention of special dealings between SPAC and the Bank of Tokyo, the bank which handled—along with other Japanese corporations—the loot from the operation. Consider these bombshells:

---

[25] SCAP: Supreme Commander of the Allied Powers, i.e., General Douglas MacArthur.

[26] General Staff of General Douglas MacArthur, "Reports of General MacArthur: MacArthur in Japan: the Occupation: Military Phase," p. 79.

[27] Ibid., p. 222, emphasis added.

> From these strictly fiscal activities, the Division's field of responsibility was broadened to include the custody *and control* of Axis property, precious metals and stones belonging to the Japanese Government, and valuables belonging to designated individuals, institutions, and organizations scheduled by SCAP for restriction or dissolution.
>
> The Bank of Tokyo was designated as the liquidating agency for certain banks. The Division maintained close supervision of the personnel engaged in this work to prevent removal, defacement, or destruction of books, records, or other property. It submitted weekly reports on the progress of liquidation and matters of special financial interest. One of the spectacular tasks of the Occupation dealt with collecting and putting under guard the great hordes of gold, silver, precious stones, foreign postage stamps, *engraving plates, and all currency not legal in Japan*. Even though the bulk of this wealth was collected and placed under United States military custody by Japanese officials, *undeclared caches of these treasures were known to exist. Consequently, the task of investigating, uncovering, inventorying, and safeguarding all property in this category was a continuing and increasing responsibility.* The precious metals were stored in the United States vaults of the Bank of Japan at Tokyo and in the Imperial Mint at Osaka.[28]

Note the reference to engraving plates of currency "not legal in Japan," meaning, of course, that there were engraving plates of *other* nations' currencies, indicating either a Japanese version of Operation Bernhard, or that the Germans had transferred some of their own Operation Bernhard plates to Japan, or both. However, what really concerns us is the statement that "undeclared caches of these treasures was known to exist," and that "the task of investigating, uncovering, inventorying, and safeguarding all property in this category was a continuing and increasing responsibility," meaning that the collusion implied by our first set of questions outlined previously is in existence, a collusion implied by the first quotation we made from "the MacArthur document," for learning of these hidden caches would require the cooperation of the Japanese who hid it and knew the locations. In this respect, it is perhaps significant that MacArthur himself insisted that the imperial family be left in place, for the imperial family, as has been seen, exercised the actual control over Operation Golden Lily. In this respect, while discussing attempts to ensure that looted property was returned, one encounters this curiously ambiguous statement:

---

[28] General Staff of General Douglas MacArthur, "Reports of General MacArthur: MacArthur in Japan: the Occupation: Military Phase," p..223, emphasis added.

> All property suspected of having been seized in area occupied by the Japanese armed forces was classified as looted property unless definite legal ownership could be established. In general, it was handled directly by SPAC through the Japanese Government.[29]

Here a significant question arises, and indeed, answers itself: how would one establish original ownership of gold, silver, and other kinds of bullion? Answer: one would not be able to.[30] All that would exist would be claims against that bullion, claims which, in view of the Japanese thoroughness in eradicating records of original ownership, would be dubious. Thus, by stating that this was all handled "directly by SPAC", that is, by General MacArthur "through the Japanese Government," that is, through the Imperial family and its political surrogates and agencies, the possibility of deliberate collusion begins to grow.[31]

B. Golden Lily, Gold Bugs, Bearer Bonds, and the Nature of the Fraud at the Basis of the Hidden System of Finance

While the numerous details of their investigation into the ramifications of the Golden Lily operation and the postwar collaboration between the American financial, political, and intelligence elite and that of postwar Japan are endlessly fascinating,[32] our attention must remain focused on the structure of this hidden system of finance, i.e., upon the nexus between intelligence, financial, and military elites between former victorious Allied and former defeated Axis enemies, and upon *how* this structure was able, via calculated "official fraud," to maintain itself, and to what purpose these funds were allocated.

---

[29] General Staff of General Douglas MacArthur, "Reports of General MacArthur: MacArthur in Japan: the Occupation: Military Phase," p.227.

[30] For those following the story of the banksters of the Middle Ages that I outline in my sequel to *Babylon's Banksters*, the forthcoming *The Financial Vipers of Venice*, the Seagraves make a very intriguing statement: "We do not know how much was looted by Spain from the New World, because once it reached Europe most of it was passed on to the great European banking families, the Fuggers and Welsers, who had financed the conquest of Mexico and Peru. Whatever the Fuggers and the Welsers did with that gold they kept very secret." (Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors*, p. 9).

[31] This collusion, as the Seagraves point out, remains a classified secret *to this day*. See *Gold Warriors*, p. 45. In this, it is the Pacific "mirror" of the similar arrangement that I maintain was the hidden purpose behind the early Bilderberger meetings on the European side of this story.

1. Obfuscated Amounts of Gold and Silver Bullion

At the head of this structure of hidden finance, mention must be made of a significant fact that the Japanese themselves encountered once the operation was fully under way, for the thorough officers of the *Kempeitai* and the imperial family princes entrusted with the task of inventorying the plunder soon noticed that "there was more gold and platinum in private hands across Southeast Asia than anyone knew existed."[33] Indeed, when long after the war Philippine dictator Ferdinand Marcos became involved in his own attempts to recover some of General Yamashita's buried treasure, he mentioned to his American partners amounts of gold "many times of the amount of refined gold commonly thought to be in existence."[34]

With this, we have perhaps resolved two significant features of the mystery we have been investigating thus far, for on the one hand, it will be recalled that President Truman decided to make this matter of a hidden slush fund based upon a vast and secret gold reserve a state secret. One reason for this secrecy is implied by the alleged amounts of bullion involved, for should such amounts suddenly become public knowledge, then the value of gold would plummet, *and with it, the amount of money in the secret covert operations and political action*

---

[32] One need only consider the allegation that "Long-time Citibank CEO John Reed" was mentioned as potentially "a key figure in the movement of Santa Romana black gold," (Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors,* p. 8), or the allegation that one former U.S. Deputy Attorney General was financially and professionally ruined for an inquiry into secret M-fund securities, while one former Secretary of State and General, Alexander Haig, allegedly went to Japan for the successful negotiation of one of these notes with a personal letter from President G.H.W. Bush (in itself yet *another* intelligence connection). (Ibid., p. 9). Additionally, the Seagraves note that there is a Golden Lily connection to the Nazi and Japanese atom bomb projects, for Imperial Japan made gold bullion payments to Nazi Germany in return for enriched uranium. (Ibid., p. 79.)

[33] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors*, p. 50.

[34] Ibid., p. 172.

slush fund, and any monies in that fund designated for secret research projects. On the other hand, we have the indicator for why the figures of existing gold seem to be so widely at variance from each other (consider again in this regard the figure quoted to Lord Blackheath by his friend, Lord Sassoon, and then the figure that the German government believes its own reserves to be—a figure *twice* the amount of *all* gold in existence according to the figure of Lord Blackheath!).

The scale may be gleaned by the fact that, by war's end, Japanese Emperor Hirohito had, through his Golden Lily operation, amassed a *personal* fortune of $100,000,000, or, in contemporary terms, one *billion* dollars, and this would not include the personal financial gain to *other* members of the imperial family. These holdings, moreover, were in accounts in Switzerland, South America (especially Argentina), "Portugal, Spain, and the Vatican."[35]

The Seagraves' trenchant observations on the point of obfuscated amounts of existing gold is worth citing at length:

> The invisible Black Eagle Trust set up by Stimson's team, beefed up by bullion from the Santa Romana recoveries, created a separate pool of black gold that put an extra floor under the postwar economy, and gave Washington and its allies covert financial leverage. There are certain similarities between this trust and the Diamond Cartel identified with DeBeers, or the Gold Cartel identified with the Oppenheimer family of South Africa. According to informed sources, these similarities exist for good reason and on many different planes. The Diamond Cartel was able to amass huge quantities of stones, and yet keep prices artificially high by limiting to a trickle the number of diamonds reaching the market, maintaining the impression of extraordinary rarity. In a similar way the black gold cartel could hold many thousands of metric tons of gold bullion—far more than the official gold supply—keeping gold prices artificially high while discreetly using derivatives of this gold as a clandestine slush fund.
>
> If the recovery of this huge mass of gold was known only to a trusted few, those countries and individuals that had been robbed by the Nazis, the Fascists, or the Japanese, would not sue to recover it.[36]

---

[35] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors*, p. 51.

[36] Ibid., pp. 99-100. The Seagraves also point out that there is obfuscation with respect to the amount of Nazi gold plunder: "Washington's 'official' (public) figure for recovered Nazi gold still is only 550 metric tons. But Anderson knew better. One of his business associates saw photos in Anderson's office of an American soldier 'sitting on top of stacks of bullion that Hitler had stolen from Poland, Austria, Belgium and France. It ended up with the Allied

Before continuing, let us pause to note one thing: if any of those Fascist, Nazi, or Japanese elites survived the war, and they clearly did, then this knowledge of the amount of gold actually in existence made them erstwhile partners with their postwar Anglo-American counterparts, for these groups would possess—if they preserved adequate records—tremendous "blackmail" power against their Western oligarchical counterparts. In other words, everyone—postwar Fascists, Japanese yakuza, zaitbatsu, imperial household members, Nazis, Wall Street lawyers and financiers—stood to gain by the policy of secret detente and coexistence. But to continue with the Segraves' summary of the matter:

> Also, the argument was made that the existence of so much black gold, if it became public knowledge, would cause the fixed price of $35 an ounce to collapse. As so many countries now linked their currencies to the U.S. dollar, and the dollar was linked to gold, currency values throughout the world might then plummet, causing financial disaster. But so long as it was kept secret, hold prices could be kept at $35 an ounce, and currencies pegged to gold would be stable. Meanwhile, the black gold would serve as a reserve asset, bolstering the prime banks in each country, and strengthening the governments of those nations.[37]

In short, *wildly obfuscated figures may function for two purposes: (1) to keep the actual amount of existing gold a secret, and (2) by means of such obfuscated figures, it becomes easier for a hidden reserve* ***to be re-hypothecated several times over in a huge scheme of financial fraud, thus to leverage even more credit and, for the breakaway civilization, the ability to fund gigantic projects of covert operations nature, of secret research, and even the "purchase" or "collateralization of planets."*** Thus, with obfuscated bullion amounts, we have the first component of the actual system of hidden finance.

2. Gold Certificates, Earmarking, and the Secret System of Finance: One Does Not Counterfeit What Does Not Exist

But once one entertains the idea that existing bullion figures are a wildly inaccurate representation of the underlying reality, how would one

---

high command and no one was allowed to talk about it.' the same source said he was taken to the courtyard of a convent in Europe where 11,200 metric tons of Nazi looted bullion had been collected."(p. 96)

[37] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors*, p. 100.

actually *use* this in the construction of a hidden system of finance? Here again, the Segraves provide the clues, and with them, we are beginning to come full circle back to the Bearer Bonds Scandals:

> As a safeguard, the black gold placed in … banks was 'earmarked' or strictly limited in the uses that could be made of it. This enabled Washington to bring pressure, from time to time, on those governments, central banks and prime banks. So long as a country and its leaders cooperated with Washington, and remained allied to it in the Cold War, the sleeping bullion would provide the asset base for patronage. *Gold bearer certificates and other derivatives could be given as gifts or bribes, without actually giving away the bullion itself.* Beneficial trusts could be set up in behalf of certain statesmen, military leaders, or political figures, or their families. In the hands of clever men like… McCloy, the possibilities were endless. From time to time, as more bullion was recovered from Golden Lily vaults in the Philippines, quantities of the bullion would be offered in strictest secrecy to central banks, or to consortiums of private buyers.
>
> …Some internationally famous banks appear to have become addicted to having billions of dollars of black gold in their vaults. So addicted that they refuse to surrender the bullion, and in some cases have stooped to swindling the original owners or their heirs, *by denouncing their documents as counterfeit*. Indeed, some owners claimed that not only were they told their documents were fake, but were given veiled threats of murder if they pressed their claims. *In some cases banks may have made such heavy use of these black gold reserves that they no longer are in a position to relinquish the bullion without going under.*[38]

Note carefully the implications of these statements:

1) Gold certificates were issued against the black gold, and, since this bullion reserve was a *secret* reserve, then the most reasonable form of such certificates would be in the form of *bearer bonds*, to protect the anonymity of its holders and hence the secrecy of the hidden system of finance itself;
2) These certificates, however, *had to have been issued by the bank or banks involved in the scheme in such a form as to enable them later to claim they were fake, or counterfeit.*

---

[38] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors*, p. 100, emphasis added.

The second point returns us to the Bearer Bonds Scandals, for it will be recalled that virtually *all* the Bearer Bonds Scandals possess a few peculiar features in common:

1) The bonds were in denominations that the U.S. government *Treasury* department never officially issued;
2) The bonds were dated 1934 (long before the Golden Lily or Nazi bullion was available), implying that the bonds were post-dated;
3) The bonds were not issued by the U.S. Treasury at all, but allegedly directly by the U.S. Federal Reserve Bank, which supposedly does not *sell* bonds of any sort at all, and, in some cases, these bonds contained spelling or grammatical errors, such as being called "Federal *Reserved* Bonds; and finally,
4) The bonds were all design knock-offs of actually circulating U.S. paper money currency, and did not resemble "real" U.S. Treasury note designs at all, yet, it will be recalled, the paper and design was in some cases said to be so authentic that the "counterfeit" was undetectable!

These three features strongly suggest that, indeed, the Federal Reserve system *did* issue such bonds—remembering that one does not counterfeit what does not exist—but that it did so by deliberately issuing "bonds" whose designs were deliberately unusual, containing *deliberate* spelling and grammatical errors so that, if the holder of the "bond" proved "uncooperative," his paper could then be claimed to be "counterfeit" and the holder would simply be out his money.

In short, the counterfeiting occurred at the very pinnacle of the central banking system, and with its collusion, to establish the hidden financial system.

But is there any *evidence* that such a scheme was ever actually perpetrated?

Indeed there is:

3. A Significant Clue and Connection to the Bearer Bonds Scandals: The Scheme of Prime Minister Tanaka

Here, as in so many other instances, the research of Sterling and Peggy Seagrave into the whole matter is impeccable, and their conclusions all but irresistible. We noted earlier that one spin-off of the Golden Lily loot was the "M fund," a fund whose control was returned by President Richard M. Nixon to the political elite of Japan's ruling Liberal Democrat Party (LDP).

This M-fund was coordinated and supervised by a close-knit American group in the postwar period, a group based in Tokyo and definitely in the MacArthur political structure in occupied Japan.[39] When the Korean War broke out, circumstances required that the American occupying army had to be rushed to the Korean peninsula, and in the security vacuum that resulted, the M-fund was used to create the Japanese "self-defense force," with the fund itself passing into joint American-Japanese administration until President Nixon turned it completely over to the Japanese.[40]

> Nixon's M-fund giveaway was not the end of the story—far from it. Under (Liberal Democrat Party) control, the M-Fund spawned a number of exotic financial instruments that propagated through global financial markets like Ebola virus. Investors or their attorneys have been snared in amazing international sting operations, charged with negotiating fraudulent instruments, ending in wrongful convictions and prison sentences. It is now painfully obvious that some of these victims were holding authentic paper, and only were stung to shield Japan's government from its own folly—although more crafty political and financial motives may also be discerned.[41]

But what exactly was the political folly of the Japanese government here?

As the Seagraves point out, the role of the M-Fund in Japanese politics is crucial, for up until very recently in Japanese postwar political history, "Virtually every prime minister of Japan" has been chosen "by the clique controlling the M-Fund,"[42] one of whom was a prime minister himself: Tanaka.

As finance minister, Tanaka contrived a variety of schemes to loot the country and increase the M-Fund itself.[43] But his biggest role was in the creation of so-called "57" bonds, which were "specially contrived government bonds,"[44] and one can imagine that Tanaka merely took a page from the playbook of the hidden system of finance and its participating banks and oligarchs. After all, he *was* such an oligarch in with his own personal connection to that system as an administrator of the M-Fund. These bonds, however, were, like those associated with their American counterparts in the Bearer Bonds scandals, peculiar, and peculiar *in the now familiar pattern:*

---

[39] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors*, p. 121.

[40] Ibid, p. 121.

[41] Ibid.

[42] Ibid., p. 123.

[43] Ibid., pp. 123-124.

[44] Ibid., p. 125.

> Because he had them issued by the Ministry of Finance, they were technically legitimate with or without Diet approval. *Each had a very big face amount,* ranging from ¥ 10-billion to ¥50-billion ($50-million to $250-mllion at the time, but now worth almost double).[45]

The scheme soon ran into trouble however, because by issuing these bonds, the Japanese national treasury's sinking fund for their redemption could only be replenished by "selling the government's share of NTT(Nippon Telephone and Telegraph)."[46] But such measures were only a temporary stop-gap, for if several of these bond holders attempted to redeem their bonds more or less simultaneously, then Tanaka's Ministry of Finance "would have no choice but to default, which could cause the whole (Liberal Democrat Party) house of cards to collapse."[47]

At this juncture, Tanaka and his M-Fund colleagues hit upon the idea of the "57" bonds, which were a new kind of security, a kind of "Certificate of Redemption" issued by the Ministry of Finance in Hirohito's fifty-seventh year as the Japanese Emperor, hence the name "57 bond."[48] These bonds were "specially designed, printed, and issued by the Ministry of Finance,"[49] but like the American bonds implicated in the various Bearer Bonds Scandals, there were "peculiarities." Not only were these IOU's for astronomical sums of money, as noted above, but,

> Physically, the "57s" were unlike anything previously issued by the government of Japan. They were not offered to the public at large, nor were they to be traded on the international bond-market like normal government bonds, so only the holders actually saw them. The magic of this scheme is that by their very difference, it was possible for the Ministry of Finance later to declare all "57s" to be forgeries. Only certain ones were selectively and very secretly renegotiated at a

---

[45] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors*, p. 125, emphasis added.

[46] Ibid., p. 127.

[47] Ibid.

[48] Ibid.

[49] Ibid.

> discount. Those who paid for their original government bonds, and then were forced to exchange them for "57s", were thus swindled twice.[50]

In any case, it is worth noting that the "57 bonds" were "deliberately printed to look unusual, which would allow them to be denounced as fraudulent."[51]

Prime Minister Tanaka, however, was *not* the only one with "official counterfeiting schemes" in mind as a funding mechanism. Ferdinand Marcos, shortly after becoming president of the Philippines in 1965, managed to persuade the Johnson administration that he could "sell" the Vietnamese war to Southeast Asian leaders by bribing them with Golden Lily "gold certificates" that, if the leader did not behave properly, could be declared counterfeit.[52]

With this *pattern* now evident, a pattern inclusive of special *designs* of certificates, of deliberate grammatical errors, of large and indeed incomprehensible denominations—all for the purpose of being able if circumstances required to denounce them as counterfeit—it now seems clear that the Bearer Bonds Scandals are simply another manifestation of *a really existent, secret bond market, one that functions as a hidden financial system.*

This hidden financial system branched out, beginning with Santos Romana, torturer of Yamashita's driver, Major Kojima, into connections that boggle the mind, to the famous Wall Street legal firm of Sullivan and Cromwell[53]—home of the Dulles brothers—to the Mafia and Vatican bank's involvement in "fixing" the 1948 Italian elections[54] (a fact that would have been well-known to Eugene Cardinal Tisserant, and hence, would explain his confidence that the American government would not complain about the Vatican's involvement in counterfeit securities!). It even reaches into the Bank of Credit and Commerce International (BCCI) and Nugan Hand Bank scandals.[55]

---

[50] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors*., pp. 127-128. On page 129 the Seagraves point out an interesting financial possibility, namely, that by 1982, Japanese government debt had grown so large that it was impossible to pay outstanding bonds presented for redemption, and thus, a new form of paper was presented to the bond-holder which, given their unusual nature, could later be claimed to be completely fake, or, if the certificate holder were more "reliable", could be redeemed at a discount.

[51] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors*, p. 130.

[52] Ibid., p. 149.

[53] Ibid., p. 147.

[54] Ibid., p. 148.

4. Odds and Ends:
a. The Technology Connection

Thus far, we have noted the connection of the hidden system of finance put into place with Nazi and Japanese loot, to the military-intelligence communities, and to suggestions of postwar covert operations. As noted previously, however, the sums of money involved in this hidden system of finance are so staggering that even the vast amount of covert operations undertaken—that we know of—during the Cold War would not seem to account for *all* of this money. There had to have been *other* purposes to which it was put, and we have suggested that at least one of these purposes was for secret research, for the development of very sophisticated, advanced, and exotic *technology*.

There are two connections to exotic technologies—and even to outer space and extraterrestrials—in the whole Golden Lily saga. One is rather obscure, and has to be "unpacked," and the second one is so obvious, that we have already encountered him. But more of him later.

First, let us deal with the "obscure" connection.

In detailing the torture of General Yamashita's driver, Major Kojima, the Segraves recount a number of details, one of which is quite significant. Here is the context of that significant detail:

> Early in October (1945), after many days of torture, Kojima broke and revealed everything he knew. Lansdale organized a convoy of cars and set out with Santy and Major Kojima to retrace the trips made by General Yamashita to 'more than a dozen' Golden Lily treasure vaults. These were all in the high valleys north of Manila, in a triangle from Baguio in the west to Bambang in the center, and Aparri at the northern tip of Luzon.
>
> When they returned to Manila in mid-October, Lansdale reported to Colonel McMicking, then flew to Tokyo where he briefed Willoughby, Whitney, and MacArthur. At their instruction, he then flew to Washington to brief General Magruder, who still headed the Strategic Services Unit, a last vestige of the OSS just before the new Central Intelligence Group (CIG) was created under *General Hoyt Vandenberg.*[56]

---

[55] Ibid.

[56] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors*, pp. 95-96.

One may reasonably entertain the idea that what General Magruder knew about the Golden Lily plunder, and the decision to use it as a covert system of finance, that his successor, General Hoyt Vandenberg *also* knew.

Why is this so significant?

Because Vandenberg served twice as the U.S. Air Force Chief of Staff, as CIA director, and, for our purposes, was the immediate superior officer to U.S. Air Force General Nathan Twining, head of the Air Force Air Material Command at Wright-Patterson Air Force Base in Dayton, Ohio. It was Vandenberg who ordered Twining to New Mexico in the wake of the Roswell incident, and it was *to* General Vandenberg that General Ramey reported on the Roswell incident. And of course, General Vandenberg was allegedly a member of the secret UFO study group, Majestic-12, or Majic-12.

The *other* more obvious connection to such matters we will deal with at the conclusion of this chapter. But there is another odd connection with Golden Lily, and this time it is to the Nazi's counterfeiting scheme, Operation Bernhard.

b. The Golden Lily Connection to Operation Bernhard

In the worldwide network that Friedrich Schwend established to circulate Operation Bernhard banknotes in return for hard goods and currencies, one of his agents, codenamed "Laval," was recruited for his extraordinary Asian connections. "Laval" had been a friend and advisor to Japanese General Terauchi.[57] Terauchi was the grandson of the Japanese general who had established the pattern later utilized in Operation Golden Lily in the plunder of Korea, and Terauchi himself was later the promoted to Field Marshal and given control of all Japanese forces in Southeast Asia, and thus, he was intimately involved in the Golden Lily plunder.

Why might this detail be significant?

Because by the time of Schwend's heavy involvement with Operation Bernhard, the war had already begun to turn against the Axis, and thus what had started out as Heydrich's industrial scale counterfeiting operation became part of the strategic evacuation plans of the Nazis for their postwar extra-territorial "state," an enterprise that included the possibilities of collusion with their American counterparts.

---

[57] Anthony Pirie*,* *Operation Bernhard*, p. 55.

It is perhaps here that the possibility of such collusion—as actually *did* emerge after the war in both cases—was planted in the minds of the Japanese military and intelligence elite.

c. Hidden Finance, Breakaway Civilizations, and ET

There is a final connection between the hidden financial system of the breakaway civilization, to the fraud that props it up, and to the wider implication that we shall explore in the remaining two parts of this book: outer space, and the problem of extra-terrestrials.

This connection is General Douglas MacArthur himself.

In October 1955, after his famous firing by President Truman during the Korean War, MacArthur, according to a number of UFO researchers, allegedly made the following statement in a speech to cadets at West Point: "The next war will be an interplanetary war. The nations of the earth must someday make a common front against attack by people from other planets."[58] But according to an internet article,[59] the reality may be slightly different, for MacArthur did not apparently make any speech at West Point. MacArthur apparently made similar remarks, however, to the visiting Italian mayor of Naples, Achille Lauro, who visited MacArthur at his private residence in October 1955 in the Waldorff-Astoria in New York City. At a press conference the following day, Mayor Lauro briefed the press on what their conversation had been about. MacArthur "believes that because of the developments of science all the countries on earth will have to unite to survive and make a common front against attack by people from other planets," the Mayor allegedly stated.[60] The *Chicago Tribune* picked up Mayor Lauro's remarks to the press and reported on them under the headline "MacArthur Fears Space War."[61]

But in his farewell speech to West Point in May 1962, General MacArthur *did* speak of planetary war, and even of a kind of technological, transhumanist future, outlining technologies that had, indeed, already begun to be investigated by terrestrial humans in their black projects:

> We deal now, not with things of this world alone, but with the illimitable distances and as yet unfathomed mysteries of the universe. We are reaching out for a new and boundless frontier. We speak in

---

[58] http://www.snopes.com/quotes/macarthur.asp.

[59] http://www.snopes.com/quotes/ macarthur.asp

[60] Ibid.

[61] Ibid.

> strange terms of harnessing the cosmic energy, of making winds and tides work for us, of creating unheard of synthetic materials to supplement or even replace our old standard basics; to purify sea water for our drink; of mining ocean floors for new fields of wealth and food; of disease preventatives to expand life into the hundreds of years; of controlling the weather for a more equitable distribution of heat and cold, of rain and shine; of spaceships to the moon; of the primary target in war, no longer limited to the armed forces of an enemy, but instead to include his civil populations; of ultimate conflict between a united human race and the sinister forces of some other planetary galaxy; of such dreams and fantasies as to make life the most exciting of all times.[62]

MacArthur, who helped oversee the creation of a hidden system of finance and its use for covert operations, would have also been in a position to know of its other uses, and as Allied and Axis warplanes increasingly encountered the strange and inexplicable over their skies, and as the American military in particular increasingly encountered similar strange and inexplicable things over its sensitive military installations, inevitably, in military thinking, a worst case scenario would have been conjured, a scenario of reconnoitering, advanced technology, and other intelligent beings. This would have been perceived as being as great a threat, if not greater, than the Soviet Union, and every effort would have been bent to find a source for the vast funding required to understand—and if possible, recreate—the phenomenon being witnessed, and—again, if possible—to engage it in covert operations.

But before we can consider all that, we must briefly pause to summarize where we have been.

---

[62] General of the Army Douglas MacArthur, “Duty, Honor, Country,” May 12, 1962, http://www.au.af.mil/au/awc/awcgate/au-24/au24-352mac.htm.

5

COUNTERFEITING FOR FUN, PROFIT AND WORLD DOMINATION:

CONCLUSIONS TO PART ONE

"I have always believed, and argued, that a true understanding of the Kennedy assassination will lead, not to 'a few bad people,' but to the institutional and parapolitical arrangements which constitute the way we are systematically governed. The conspiracies I see as operative, in other words, are part of our political structure."
Peter Dale Scott[1]

"If we also consider the possibility of covert breakthroughs in propulsion technology, and the 'off the grid' nature of the deep-black world itself, we come to the possibility that we are dealing with, in effect, a 'breakaway civilization,' One with loose connections at various points to the open civilization of humanity, but with great independence, secrecy, and a monopoly of certain key scientific secrets."
Richard M. Dolan[2]

If researcher Peter Levenda, when reviewing the "breakaway civilization" implications of the Nazi *SS Ahnenerbedienst*, the "ancestral research bureau" and "occult studies" department of the SS, could quip and call it a "humanities program. With guns,"[3] then the implications of all that we have uncovered in the previous chapters is that the breakaway civilization is in part "a banking fraud and counterfeiting scheme, with particle beams, lasers, grazers, anti-gravity, and covert operations."

Indeed, the previous chapters have exposed a vast system of industrial scale counterfeiting, a huge system of hidden finance, and accompanying financial fraud, based upon the "official" central bank counterfeiting of "peculiar" securities. These securities in turn followed a standard pattern of being issued (1) in large denominations, and (2) in such a way that the design of the security itself was unusual enough that

---

[1] Peter Dale Scott, *Deep Politics and the Death of JFK* (Berkeley: University of California Press, 1996), p. 11.

[2] Richard M. Dolan, *UFOs and the National Security State*, Volume One, *The Cover-Up Exposed, 1973-1991* (Keyhole Publishing Co., 2009), pp. 564-565.

[3] Peter Levenda, *Unholy Alliance: A History of Nazi Involvement with the Occult* (Avon Books, 1995), p. 152.

its issuing agency could subsequently deny its authenticity and proclaim it to be counterfeit if its holder was no longer deemed acceptable, or it could redeem the security at a tremendous discount. These securities in many cases claimed to be gold-backed, and the indications, as we have seen, is that the amount of gold in existence is probably much greater than official figures reflect. This gold, as the Bearer Bonds scandals strongly suggest, has been re-hypothecated over and over as a secret reserve to leverage vast funding for the hidden system of finance, a fact that, if it ever were to become popularly accepted or more rigorously and publicly demonstrated, would severely cripple the western system of finance. In short, when one considers that this vast and hidden system is connected both to a fraudulent and hidden system of bonds, to a vast amount of bullion possibly in excess of official figures, and to an international drug trade, then it becomes apparent that this system comprises a large segment of the world economy, and cannot easily be dispensed with without causing massive economic dislocation.

A. The Matrix[4] of Factions and Sectors

The pattern outlined in previous chapters also suggests a coordinated network of inter-relationships between various *sectors* and *factions* of the postwar elites. We note in this respect that on the "European" side of this network, a series of relationships developed during the war which were maintained after the war, between the American intelligence and military-industrial complex, and the financial sector, and the surviving corporate and Nazi elites, relationships we have detailed elsewhere.[5] On the Asian side of the equation, this nexus—as indicated by the previous chapters with the role of General MacArthur in establishing the connections to the Japanese elite, and the maintenance of ties between that elite and the American side as revealed by the Nixon handling of the M-Fund—began almost immediately after the war.

Thus, the overall *factional* structure of this breakaway civilization, as indicated by its *financial* component, comprises three *general* groups:

---

[4] In calling this a matrix, I do deliberately have in mind Carroll Quigley's matrix analogy, and as well, the mathematical one.

[5] See my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2006), pp. 75-79, *The Nazi International* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 20009), pp., 377-390, *Babylon's Banksters* (Feral House, 2010), pp., 45-75; *LBJ and the Conspiracy to Kill Kennedy*(Adventures Unlimited Press, 2011), pp. 55-58,151-187;, and *Saucers, Swastikas, and Psyops* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2011), pp. 141-175.

1) An American component, represented by the interface between the corporate, financial, military, and intelligence-covert operations national security structure that we have seen in play, and particularly in chapter 4;
2) A postwar European-international Fascist or Nazi component, deeply interlocked with corporate and financial Europe, and as I have indicated elsewhere, with the criminal underground or Mafia drug trade;
3) A postwar Asian elite, comprised largely of the same nexus of relationships between the Japanese imperial family, the political and corporate elites of Japan, and a criminal underground.[6]

What is represented here is the post-war development of a *tri-lateral* structure in two ways: (1) it is tri-lateral in the *horizontal* sense of its utilization and involvement of Japanese, American, and Euro-fascist elements, which represent the continuity of ongoing geopolitical interests within the structure, and (2) it is tri-lateral in the *vertical* sense of (a) being at the pinnacle of power, and hence, its activities are beyond the scrutiny of the "public" world, but (b) each of its three main factions maintain and *must* maintain a connection to that world precisely because the parasitic system of finance outlined in previous chapters requires a connection to it through major central and prime banks; and (c) each of its three factions maintains their own individual connection to the *underworld* of international organized crime and drug trafficking. The international character of this structure—with its Euro-Fascist, American, and Japanese components—will be *formally* acknowledged decades later by the establishment of the Trilateral Commission by David Rockefeller and national security advisor Zbigniew Brzezinski.

Additionally, we must recall that one of the crucial points of contact between this structure and the *public* world of finance was via the Vatican bank, and while we have not been able to explore the long history of relationships between that bank and the criminal underworld—*and secret societies*—this is an aspect of the structure that should be recalled. The Vatican Bank, briefly put, was connected to the Fascist Masonic lodge of Licio Gelli, *Loge Propaganda Due*, to the banking

---

[6] We have not delved into the relationship of Operation Golden Lily and the Japanese imperial, corporate, and political elites to the Yakuza and its conduct of the drug trade during the war. For this matter see Sterling and Peggy Seagraves, *Gold Warriors*.

"career" of Mafia banker Michele Sindona, to the ratline operations smuggling Nazis and other European Fascists out of Europe, and, as we saw, was itself involved in industrial-scale securities fraud. Additionally, as the remarks of Eugene Cardinal Tisserant to Dr. Ledl suggested, the Vatican knew that the U.S.A. would hardly accuse the Vatican of counterfeiting, since the Vatican likely knew of the "breakaway civilization's" own industrial scale counterfeiting. Additionally, the Vatican was in a position to know the scope of Operation Golden Lily, since there were direct connections between Emperor Hirohito's personal accounts and the Vatican bank.

It is important, nay, crucial, to understand—particularly in coming chapters—that while the American component is obviously the dominating component in this structure, that each faction can and will pursue its own objectives and agendas independently. We are in short dealing with a kind of international Mafia—with satellites and nukes—with each faction represented "at the table," which factions can and do, when they feel their interests threatened, make war on the others.

When we turn to look at the *sectors* implied by the financial arrangements outlined in the previous chapters, the outlines suggested represent a kind of "American national-security apparatus" gone international, and comprising the following sectors:

1) The financial component (i.e. the central and prime banks);
2) The *corporate* component (i.e., the corporations *conducting the research* to be outlined in future chapters);
3) the intelligence and *covert operations* component, represented by the heavy presence of figures like Ed Lansdale in the financial activities outlined in previous chapters; and,
4) the military component.[7]

B. The Implications of the Bearer Bonds Scandals and the Axis Counterfeiting and Looting Operations

As is now apparent, the vast implications of the Bearer Bonds Scandals and the industrial scale counterfeiting of Operation Bernhard became "*officially" institutionalized* after the war by the issuance of fraudulent securities by the organs of governments and central banks themselves[8] as a component of covert operations. This suggests the following implications are possible, and thus, these implications themselves become *signatures of the activity of the breakaway civilization*, and hence, they will inform our investigations in the coming chapters:

---

[7] In respect to these points, see also my *Saucers, Swastikas, and Psyops*, pp. 142-143.

1) the obfuscation of the amount of existing gold bullion allows the use of this gold as a secret reserve against which to issue securities of such a peculiar design that, on one level, they can be sold to large banks, and very wealthy individuals who will be convinced of their authenticity and redeemability, and on another level, the peculiarity of the design allows the issuing bank or agency to claim that they are counterfeit *because* of those peculiarities, should the bearer attempting to redeem them not be acting according to the dictates of the breakaway civilization; additionally, the "security" can be redeemed at a discount, or, as we shall discover in Part Two, secretly called in and destroyed, and a legitimate security substituted to disguise the fraud that has occurred;
2) this secret reserve can be used as a basis for issuing *several different series* of these peculiar securities, in other words, this secret reserve can be, and I believe has been, *re-hypothecated several times over*, such that, in reality, there exist several different claims or liens against it. Thus, the secret reserve has *itself* been used fraudulently to leverage a vast money supply for the breakaway civilization.[9] This implies, as noted above, that this black system of finance has become an independent entity, enabling the breakaway civilization much greater independence,

---

[8] We have noted, in this respect, the *implications* of the Bearer Bonds scandals for American securities by noting repeatedly the principle that one does not counterfeit was does not really exist, nor does one counterfeit something that cannot be redeemed, even if only at a great discount. We have noted the *specific* example of Prime Minister Tanaka's "57s notes" in Japan, and in part two of this book, we will present further evidence of this principle being followed on a massive scale with respect to American securities in conjunction with an exploration of the breakaway civilization aspects of 9/11.

[9] In an interview with me on her internet radio show, Catherine Austin Fitts made the comment that this was a kind of "leveraged buyout of the world" and functioned as the hidden financial basis for an already established, but still hidden, world government. (Solari Report, Sept 6, 2012. It should be noted that this interview is available to subscribers of her website).

yet, paradoxically, it is now such a large portion of the world economy, that this ties the structure of the breakaway civilization more tightly than ever to that of the "overworld";

3) The ability to leverage this vast hidden system was *dramatically increased* with the advent of computer-algorithmic high frequency-high volume securities and commodities trading, and, with software such as PROMIS and its derivatives, the secret system of finance and the trades supporting it can be monitored in real time;
4) Additionally, the capabilities alleged for PROMIS (and therefore for its derivatives and upgrades) would conceivably allow *legitimate* trading to be delayed for a few seconds or minutes while surreptitious use is made of someone else's money to execute other trades, whose profits go into the ever-expanding war chest of the breakaway civilization. These capabilities naturally extend to the possibilities for "counterfeiting" that *virtual* securities offer, such virtual securities could be sold, discounted, or—like their real paper counterparts—be declared counterfeit and deleted at will;
5) Such capabilities also give lie to the story heard initially after the tragic events of 9/11 that a large number of puts were placed on the market for the airlines involved, and that no one knew exactly who had placed these trades. Again, *the penetration of the financial sector by such software means that trades can be tracked*. As we shall see in part two, when such trades surrounding 9/11 are tracked, they lead inexorably once again back to institutions repeatedly identified as being connected to the various known factions of the structure of the breakaway civilization;
6) Yet another implication of what has been examined in previous chapter is that *anomalous trades, or political statements, or both in advance of a major event of any nature indicates a signature of the breakaway civilization*. This is *particularly* true if such trades or political statements precede a "natural" event that directly affects the institutions or nations indicates by the trading or political statement. If for example, a politician representing *one* faction within this structure, makes threatening statements to *another* faction within this structure, and a few days later, that other faction is hit with earthquakes, tsunamis, hurricanes, tornados, or so on, it is a clear signature of a possible technology in play. If these types of events are preceded by anomalous

trading activity affecting the faction in question, it is even more plausible that a hidden technology is in play. This formula—(1) message and/or trading activity, followed by (2) a "natural event" of catastrophic proportions—is, as we shall see in parts two and three, a signature of the breakaway civilization's activities and covert wars. And it is quite the crucial point to note that this formula or signature of a psychological warfare and covert war *is a component or standard methodology regardless of the target in question, whether the intended target is on this planet or not.*

7) A final and crucial implication of the Bearer Bonds Scandals is the implications of the postwar collusion between the American and the former Axis components of this structure. It is evident that, given this structure, *all three factions* will be privy to the knowledge of the hidden system of finance, and to the scale of the fraud involved, even though it is *principally the American component committing it*. As suggested in the previous chapters, *not all the Nazi or Japanese loot* was independently recovered by American intelligence efforts, and thus, for the American component to make use of that unrecovered plunder would have required the collusion and partnership of the former Axis enemies. This cooperation would have come with what the bankers call "conditionalities," or as we saw in the previous chapters, their plunder would have been made available only on the basis of earmarking it for specific purposes. Violation of those purposes would—as in the Mafia—called for responses by the factions involved. The implication of all this is that the Bearer Bonds Scandals, which seem to have occurred with a regularity and frequency within a year of the massive bailouts passed by the U.S. Congress that is peculiar, suggest that one or more factions privy to the fraudulent and hidden system of finance were threatening to expose the whole structure.

In short, this hidden system of finance that we have outlined is that of the breakaway civilization. It is in my opinion the secret source of black budget funding for all the black projects and research and weapons, and fundamentally, for the technologies that may already have taken some small segment of humanity into interplanetary space. It is a source of funding of sufficient scale that one would expect for such a vast imperial enterprise, for it is utterly free of any constraints of governmental or "overworld" oversight.

If the reader is having difficulty wrapping his or her mind around such a notion, then perhaps the question may be rather differently stated:

Do you really believe the Pentagon pays for all those black budget projects with nothing but simple accounting tricks like $25,000 toilet seats and $8,000 wrenches? …

But let us return for a moment to another implication:

Lord Blackheath's comment on £1,000,000,000 of IRA money implies that the finance of terrorism is (1) synthetic and (2) so large that terrorist "finance" is inextricably woven into the world financial structure to the extent that an end to the war on terror could only come about with an end to the current global financial system.

A hidden system of finance for a breakaway civilization implies something else: so long as the need for secret research continues, then so long will the need to maintain a fraudulent system of finance to support it, by force of arms if necessary. This implies, bluntly, that a move to a "full or free" market or open system of money—whether it be the fiat system of debt free money, or a bullion standard—is an impossibility, since such a system would compromise the integrity of the secrecy of the technologies being developed; to put it succinctly: secret technologies cannot be financed by non-secret and open sources of funding. To put it even more succinctly: the technologies of "science fiction" *require* a system of "fictitious" or fraudulent, financing, at least in so far as the breakaway civilization has any need or necessity to maintain its connections and interface with the "overworld" society.

This insight suggests a consequence to the *structure* of the breakaway civilization, namely, that the financial oligarchy, while necessary to the interface of the breakaway civilization, *is not necessary to its inner core*, and, as the facts outlined in this part of the book—and particularly in chapter 4 suggest—the private international bankers are probably at the whim of the technocrats they have surrounded themselves with, for these, in turn, command the technologies that monitor their legitimate, and illegitimate, financial activities. They are influential, but no longer *primus inter pares* of the factional structures composing the lattice network of the breakaway civilization. To place this point somewhat differently, and more directly in the context of what are the deep implications of the Bearer Bonds Scandals, the very act of defrauding the corporate or individual super-rich, and obtaining legitimate letters of credit from their banks, by means of scams such as the Bearer Bonds Scandals, means that they are no longer in total or complete control. Factional infighting, in other words, can break out not only among the European, American, and Japanese *factions* of this structure, but also between its *financial and technocratic* components as well. Such influence as the old financial oligarchs are able to retain, they are able to do only by dint of the fact that the implicit blackmail and pressure that knowledgeable technocrats posses and hold over them, will not be used; it is, in short, a structure resembling the Mafia, writ large: every "family" or faction "has something" on every other faction; it is the detente or truce of the sword, and thus, a self-perpetuating system in its corruption, and a system of perpetual conflict.

How does all this work? Consider the following diagram of the structure implied by the Bearer Bonds scandals as a kind of summary of the structure we have been surveying:

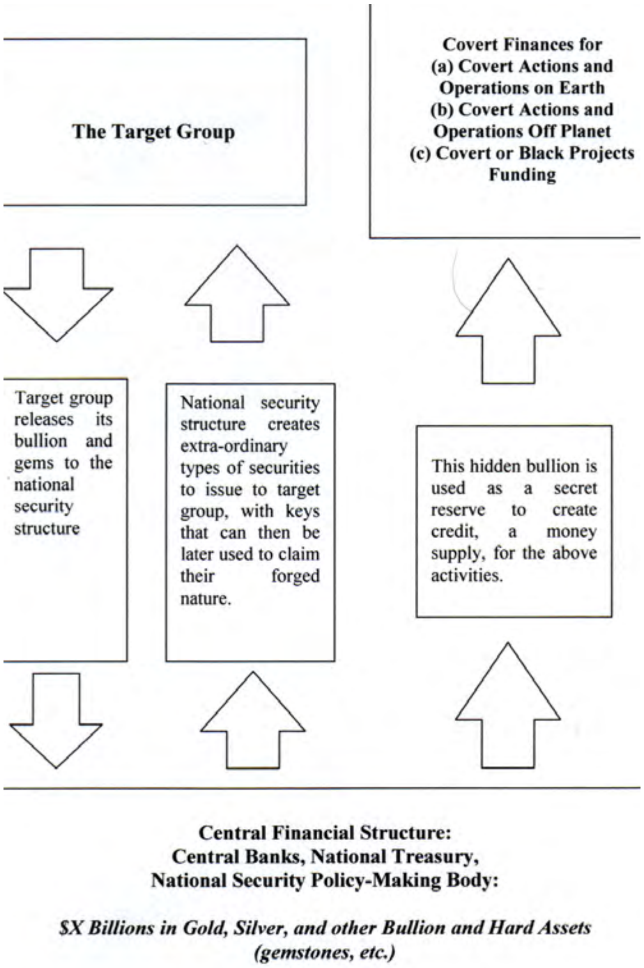
The Target Group
Covert Finances for
(a) Covert Actions and Operations on Earth
(b) Covert Actions and Operations Off Planet
(c) Covert or Black Projects Funding
Target group releases its bullion and gems to the national security structure
National security structure creates extra-ordinary types of securities to issue to target group, with keys that can then be later used to claim their forged nature.
This hidden bullion is used as a secret reserve to create credit, a money supply, for the above activities.
Central Financial Structure:
Central Banks, National Treasury,
National Security Policy-Making Body:
$X Billions in Gold, Silver, and other Bullion and Hard Assets (gemstones, etc.)

What this diagram suggests is that, with the *direct* military and intelligence recovery of Axis loot, and with the *direct* contact that these sectors had with their corresponding Axis counterparts at the end of World War Two, that the old monopoly of the central banks was broken. A *new player* had emerged on the financial stage, and this new player was the "national security apparatus" which, with its access to hidden reserves of plunder, and with corresponding access to the engraving plates of the currencies and securities and to the corporations *designing* such securities, was able to penetrate its own central and prime banks and issue such securities either with or without their knowledge and cooperation, though as we have seen, the involvement of high power Wall Street lawyers like John J. McCloy and Allen Dulles strongly indicates that this was done with the knowledge and consent of the high financial power.

As we turn now to consider the *covert operations* of this breakaway civilization, and the technologies at its disposal, it will become even clearer that we are, indeed, not dealing with just a cabal or a conspiracy, but precisely with a breakaway civilization in Mr. Richard Dolan's sense, and that implies, as we shall discover in Part Three, that while the scale of its terrestrial covert and psychological operations and wars are immense, their major concerns may not lie on this planet at all…

PART TWO:
TECHNIQUES AND TECHNOLOGIES:
WAGING, AND CONCEALING, COVERT WAR,
OR:
HOW TO WAGE TOTAL WAR WITH TOTAL PLAUSIBLE DENIABILITY

"The covert securities used to accomplish the original national security objective of ending the Cold War ended up in the vaults of the brokers of the World Trade Center, and were destroyed on September 11, 2001. They came due for settlement and clearing on September 12. The federal Agency investigating these bonds—The Office of Naval Intelligence—was in the section of the Pentagon that was destroyed on September 11. To a key group of senior National Security officials who had participated in the victory of the economic cold war in 1991, the WTC, the Pentagon, the four airliners and their occupants would (become) 'collateral' damage in the ending of the Cold War. Their deaths were required to hide the existence of the Black eagle Trust, and the covert activities it had funded for over 50 years. The alternative view of these events suggests that the destruction of these lives and buildings constituted a cover-up of continued lawlessness by a fraternity or brotherhood of businessmen and criminals often referred to as 'the Enterprise' in the 1980s, but has remained in the shadows since."

E.P. Heidner,
Collateral Damage: U.S. Covert Operations and the Terrorist Attacks on September 11, 2001,
http://www.wanttoknow.info/911/Collateral-Damage-911-black_eagle_fund_trust.pdf

6

THE MATRIX OF MAYHEM AND MURDER:
COVERT OPERATIONS, COVERT FINANCE, HIDDEN WARS AND 9/11

"Khrushchev was furious, yet he tried to give Eisenhower latitude in disclaiming any knowledge of the incident. He stated that (Francis Gary Powers') U-2 flight may have been the work of 'American aggressive circles' trying to 'torpedo the Paris summit, or, at any rate, prevent an agreement for which the world is waiting.'"
Jim Marrs[1]

Every now and then, Hollywood releases movies that allow people to see portions of "the inside story," albeit in fictionalized form. I have pointed out elsewhere, for example, the uncanny Hollywood depiction of the two space programs hypothesis in films such as the James Bond *Diamonds are Forever*, or *Capricorn One*,[2] or George Lucas' epic *Star Wars* series with its depiction of ancient Cosmic Wars and exploded planets, metaphors of things recounted in ancient texts and of astronomical events in our own celestial neighborhood.[3]

The same could be said for the well-known *Die Hard* movies, starring Bruce Willis, and in particular, the movies *Die Hard* and *Die Hard with a Vengeance.* In the first movie, Willis, who plays New York police detective John McClain, encounters an international group composed largely of Germans (with an American, and even what appears to be an Asian or Latin American) laying siege to a high rise office complex owned by a Japanese corporation, all for the purpose of robbing its high security vault which is full of hundreds of millions of dollars in U.S. bearer bonds. This international group's leader, Hans, portrayed in suave, sophisticated ruthlessness by British actor Alan Rickman, has planned things so well that the FBI's own counter-terrorism playbook—which apparently he has access to—is used against the besieging law enforcement officers and agents in order to effect the robbery.

---

[1] Jim Marrs, *Crossfire: the Plot that Killed Kennedy* (New York: Carroll and Graff, 1989), p. 114, cited in my *LBJ and the Conspiracy to Kill Kennedy: A Coalescence of Interests* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2011), p. 12.

[2] See the discussion in my *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell: The Nazis' Incredible Secret Technology* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2006), pp. 54-56.

[3] See the discussion in my *The Giza Death Star Deployed: The Physics and Engineering of the Great Pyramid* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2003), pp. 1-4.

Additionally, the movie makes it clear that Hans is the leader of an international terror cell… of Germans. McClain of course beats the wily Hans, who plunges to his death from the high-rise office building as the bearer bonds he was attempting to steal flutter down around him.

After an interlude in the second movie where a corrupt Latin American general and dictator employs American special forces to free himself from impending drug running charges(which has its own odd relevance to the story of the breakaway civilization as we have noted), McClain is confronted in the third movie once again by a well-armed, well-trained group of Germans(veterans apparently of the German military) and other "Central Europeans," who are led by the deceased Hans' brother, who leads McClain on a wild-goose chase chasing bombs planted around New York City, while he and his band of Central Europeans literally rob the New York Federal Reserve Bank of all of its gold bullion. *Die Hard with a Vengeance* had to be delayed in its release because the attacks of 9/11 had just occurred. Here, again, we shall see how the movie has odd resonances to an underlying and little known financial aspect to the attacks on the World Trade Center.

Germans, and German-led international terrorist networks and special forces turned robbers. The New York Federal Reserve Bank. Gold bullion. Bearer bonds. Japanese.

The pattern is, by now, familiar and rather obvious.

The roots of it, however, are not so well-known and obvious, and while we have in the previous section of this book, outlined how the hidden system of finance originated, and in the preface surveyed the Cold War geopolitical matrix in which covert operations emerged, it is essential to understand in a more detailed fashion the purposes for which this system was deployed, for in *that* historical review, undertaken here, the connections between covert operations on the one hand, and advanced technologies, space, and UFOs on the other, slowly emerge. The interface is, once again, finance, and the players who moved in and out of the worlds of covert operations, banks, and black projects.

A. The Three Phases of the Institution of the Hidden System of Finance for Covert Operations

1. General Ed Lansdale and Frank Wisner

In part one we reviewed the landmark research of Sterling and Peggy Seagrave into the use of the Japanese Golden Lily booty to establish a secret hidden system of finance for covert operations with President Truman's full knowledge and authorization, making covert operations a semi-permanent feature of postwar American statecraft, and making the structure itself a vital component of the military-industrial complex. But there is more to the story, and that "more" consists of the interface between this structure and the postwar "Fascist" or "Nazi" International. In part one we noted, for example, the crucial role of Captain (later General) Ed Lansdale.

As we saw in the Preface, the National Security Council in 1948 established on its own authority the Office of Policy Coordination, whose job it was to plan and carry out covert operations under the direction of its chief, Frank Wisner.

Frank G. Wisner (1909-1965),
Head of the Office of Policy Coordination

As we shall discover momentarily, it was Wisner's idea not only to employ this vast supply of Nazi and Japanese plunder to retain and supply postwar Nazi and Fascist terrorist cells in Europe, but to siphon funds *directly* from the Marshall Plan to do so.[4] This point cannot be lingered over too long, for it tends to corroborate my suggestion made elsewhere that one of the purposes for the meetings of the early Bilderberg group was to coordinate this financial activity between the Anglo-American bankers and corporate and intelligence oligarchs, and their European Fascist counterparts.[5]

---

[4] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors,* p. 106.

Significantly, after having discovered the Yamashita Gold and briefed General MacArthur and later President Truman on its existence, Lansdale was transferred to the U.S. Air Force by none other than General Hoyt Vandenberg, the U.S. Air Force Chief of Staff,[6] a name with its own deep connections to the UFO phenomenon as we have already seen. Lansdale attended the Strategic Intelligence School of the U.S. Air Force in Colorado for a few months,[7] before being transferred to Wisner's Office of Policy Coordination at the CIA, which reassigned him *back* to the Philippines,[8] where he doubtless continued to oversee recovery of the Golden Lily loot.

These are important points to pause and ponder, for they indicate that, in this one man, General Lansdale, all the significant areas of the breakaway civilization structure converge upon a common intersection, for Lansdale was involved in

(1) the establishment of the secret system of finance;
(2) he was directly involved in Wisner's covert operations group;
(3) Additionally, via his connection to the U.S. Air Force, via his training in strategic intelligence, and via his association with General Vandenberg, he has a connection with those echelons of the military command structure most directly involved in the confrontation of the UFO phenomenon and therefore dealing ultimately with technological projects designed to understand and emulate it; and finally,
(4) Lansdale soon came to the attention of Eisenhower's Secretary of State, John Foster Dulles, and his CIA-Wall Street lawyer brother, Allen Dulles, and with this, Lansdale is directly interfaced with the very top echelon of intelligence and Wall Street connections.[9]

---

[5] See my *Babylon's Banksters*, pp. 64-75.

[6] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, op. cit., p. 101.

[7] Ibid.

[8] Ibid.

[9] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors,* p. 101. There even appears to be some connection between Lansdale and the notorious CIA-Nazi-International-sponsored haven for postwar Fascists and Nazis, the World Anti-

Put differently, Lansdale embodies that "coalescence of interests" that combined in the assassination of President Kennedy.

2. The First Phase: The 1934 "Morgenthaus" and the Deal with Chiang Kai-Shek

Additionally, the Seagraves suggest something else of crucial importance, namely, that this hidden financial-covert warfare structure went through at least three distinct phases of evolution. The first phase appears to be *prior* to any involvement of the future Axis Powers and their plunder from Europe and Asia, when American officials apparently struck a deal with Nationalist Chinese Generalissimo Chiang Kai-Shek, to physically store China's gold, in return for the issuance to Chiang and his cronies a number of dubious "securities", which bear the now familiar pattern of having been deliberately issued in such a way as they could be subsequently denied as authentic.

This gold, apparently some 1,665 metric tons, was loaned to the Federal Reserve "in exchange for *Federal Reserve* bonds."[10] Again, the implications are enormous, for under the conditions of normal operations, the Federal Reserve does not issue bonds, the U.S. Treasury does, and thus, the issuance of such bonds indicates that the private central bank is entering directly into the process not only of creating a hidden system of securities, but doing so as a matter of "foreign" policy of its own. These were, apparently, the now infamous 1934 Gold-backed Bearer Bonds, with the signature of then U.S. Secretary of the Treasury, Henry Morgenthau, issued, according to some, *without* his knowledge.[11]

However, there is another side to the story that suggests that this was a part of a long-term financial strategy undertaken in anticipation of the coming World War, and its aftermath, an aftermath that would leave the USA as the dominant global power:

> Not everyone was convinced that the United States was the safest place for their gold, least of all Asians who had an ancient distrust of governments and banks. (Franklin D. Roosevelt) and his advisors understood that in South Asia, East Asia and the Pacific, a lot of gold was held by Overseas Chinese individuals, family associations, and

---

Communist League, based in Taiwan. (See Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors*, p. 154.)

[10] Sterline and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors*, p. 247, emphasis added.

[11] Ibid., p. 250.

> trading networks; by local warlords and criminal syndicates; by wealthy Indians; by Buddhist sects; by Dutch, French, Portuguese and Spanish colonial families, and by the Catholic Church, which had dominated the Philippines for four centuries. Large quantities of gold had been moved out of Europe for safekeeping during World War I, and during the Spanish Civil War, and were sleeping in vaults in the Philippines.
>
> Wealthy Chinese families, victimized by dynasties and warlords for thousands of years, held their precious metal in secret places, or in banks they owned or controlled in Manila, Hanoi, Bangkok, or Singapore. They expected Japan's conquest to spread south to the islands.[12]

Through various intermediaries in the Philippines, these then combined their resources, and approached Morgenthau offering to sell him "1,665 metric tons of gold."[13] Here we at last arrive at the heart of the Bearer Bonds Scandals, and of the involvement in the Spanish Bearer Bond case, of the Federal Reserve Bank of Chicago, for having sold this gold to the Federal Reserve,

> …they would be given 250 separate Federal Reserve bearer bonds, each in a $100-million denomination. So at the time of issue in 1934 this transaction had a total face value of $25-billion. But, on maturity after thirty-two years—i.e. after 1966—the 250 bonds could be redeemed for a total of $100-billion. Instead of an outright purchase, the gold was being acquired by the Federal Reserve Bank in Chicago, as a loan, paying slightly over $10 an ounce (half of the existing private gold price) in return for interest over thirty-two years that would result in a total of $100-billion at maturity.[14]

---

[12] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave*, Gold Warriors,* p. 251.

[13] Ibid.

[14] Ibid. The Seagraves continue to note that "This is supported by documents that accompanied the original transaction, reproduced on our CDs. One document, a Federal Reserve Bond Global Immunity, signed by Morgenthau, said the purchase was arranged this way 'to enable the government of the United States of America to determine the contract in a manner appearing as a loan, which shall be known as Federal Reserve Bon issue by the Bank of Chicago series of 1934.'"(Ibid., p. 251.) This author, having purchased the voluminous research of the Seagraves represented on their CDs, can attest that the amount of documentation is more than extensive, it is determinative. See their website to purchase the CDs: http://www.bowstring.net

In other words, it was simply state-sponsored and private central banking grand larceny, for "Because the (Federal Reserve) is a private banking cartel, whose books are not open to the public, it is impossible to know precisely how much gold was acquired in the 1930s."[15] The situation is so bad that, as the Seagraves point out, that

> A journalist at the *Financial Times* told us: "It has now reached a point where you can go into one of the big banks in New York, London or Zurich, give them half a metric ton of gold in return for a certificate of ownership, walk around the block for ten minutes, re-enter the same bank and they'll deny ever seeing you before, and have you arrested for presenting them with a counterfeit certificate." He was not joking.[16]

In any case, the bearer bonds received by the intermediaries were parceled out into banks in Switzerland, Chile, and Argentina.[17] The significance of this connection does not, of course, have to be emphasized, for it is precisely these countries which also played the key role in the interface between the Nazi elite and its Anglo-American counterpart both before, during, and after World War Two. The secrecy surrounding these gold transfers and the Federal Reserve's own secret books makes it entirely possible that this secret gold reserve was re-hypothecated several times over, creating an enormous hidden system of finance, and making it possible to launder these activities behind a variety of government backed securities of a more legitimate nature.

3. The Postwar Phase: The Transitional Mingling of Bankers and Covert Operations Offices

It is in the next phase that we detect a crucial development beginning to occur: the more direct mingling of the covert operations aspect of intelligence, and the financial area. This phase began after the ouster of Philippine dictator Ferdinand Marcos by the Reagan Administration for his part in attempting to access this hidden tier of finance directly and for his own purposes.[18] Marcos' ouster permitted the original Philippine participants and intermediaries to begin to attempt to recover the Federal Reserve Bonds.[19] It was at this juncture, the Seagraves observe, that some of the Bearer Bonds Scandals broke, with people claiming to have recovered some large denomination Federal Reserve Bonds and several Federal Reserve notes of large denominations from American plane crashes in the Philippines that occurred in 1948, a story, of course, denied by the U.S. Government and the Federal Reserve. Not so, say the Seagraves:

---

[15] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors*, p. 250.

[16] Ibid., p. 248.

[17] Ibid., p. 252.

[18] Unfortunately, this aspect of the story is itself too long and convoluted to recount here, but it consumes a great deal of the Seagrave's book. Additionally, one should consult Charles C. McDougald, *Asian Loot: Unearthing the Secrets*

> According to reliable sources who visited the wrecked aircraft and recovered the dog-tags of the crew, the truth is as follows: In May 1948, four U.S. Air Force planes on their way from California to Malaysian Borneo, refueled at Clark (Air Force Base) just north of Manila, then continued on their way toward Borneo. A typhoon that had been brewing in the western Pacific moved directly into their flight path, and all four planes crashed into the mountains of Mindanao. In the doomed flight were B-29 Superfortresses of the type that had dropped atomic bombs on Hiroshima and Nagasaki, plus a new modified version of the same plane called a B-50, and a much smaller twin-engined B-26. The lead B-29 had the serial number 7695132. Among the dead on board were General Frank Reagan, Colonel John Reagan, and crewmen named Colling, Dalton, Johnrey and Withor. The two B-29s were carrying thousands of (Federal Reserve notes) and (Federal Reserve bonds), *in boxes from the Chase Manhattan and Wells Fargo Banks*.[20]

What were these planes doing carrying chests full of so much money and securities?

> Professor Richard Aldrich of Nottingham University, co-editor of the journal *Intelligence and National Security*, described the strategic situation in 1948 in testimony before a British court in 2003: As Chairman Mao's forces advanced through China in 1948, Dr. Aldrich said, Britain and the U.S. dreaded the prospect that one of the world's largest stocks of gold—worth $83-billion at current prices—would fall into communist hands. So it was decided to extract the gold reserves from China before the communists could seize them. The CIA provided the means for this bullion rescue mission, flying in B-29 bombers disguised in the livery of (General Clair Chennault's Civil Air

---

of Marcos, Yamashita and the Gold (San Francisco Publishers, 1993). See also *Gold Warriors*, pp. 188-189.

[19] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors*, p. 254.

[20] Ibid., emphasis added.

> Transport [CAT]), later renamed Air America. CAT flew numerous missions to bring huge shipments of gold out of Mainland China.
>
> Where did the (Federal Reserve notes) and (Federal Reserve bonds) fit in? Professor Aldrich said they may have been used "for persuading managers of major banks in the interior of China to part with their vast stocks of gold." Printing (Federal Reserve notes) and (Federal Reserve bonds) with a face value much greater than that of the gold they were to replace, he said, served to encourage the banks or wealthy individuals to swap their gold for the bonds and notes, which would be easier to hide and later smuggle out of China to be cashed in the West. *As Aldrich said, the U.S. almost certainly had no intention of honouring them anyway.*[21]

So why print bonds in such enormous denominations and quantities, and Federal Reserve notes in such large quantities? Aldrich speculated that one reason was to avoid the possibility of operational loss—such as airplane crashes—and that another reason was that the Chinese banks receiving these notes and "securities" would have been aware they "were likely to be redeemable for only a proportion of their face value. Therefore a much larger value in (Federal Reserve Notes) would have been required than the total value of the gold that the Americans and Chinese Nationalists were trying to extract from China."[22] The problem for the official American government and Federal Reserve story that all these bonds and notes are fake, is that Professor Aldrich is insistent that the bonds and notes being flown to China were entirely legitimate.[23]

The problem, however, is not only that one is dealing with legitimate securities issued with no intention of ever redeeming them—which constitutes state-and-central bank-sanctioned fraud—but that these securities and notes were all printed by the U.S. Bureau of Engraving and Printing, where, at that time, the CIA maintained an office "occupied fulltime in such activities, according to a CIA source we interviewed who worked there for years."[24]

In other words, the ultimate "movers and shakers" in establishing this hidden system were *not* the bankers of the Federal Reserve, but rather, the Cold Warriors in the intelligence establishment. In fact, during the Reagan Administration, the method we saw first being used in

---

[21] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors*, pp. 254-255, emphasis added.

[22] Ibid., p. 255.

[23] Ibid.

[24] Ibid.

Operation Bernhard, and which we discovered in our review of the Bearer Bonds Scandals, was being repeated as part of a vast covert operation, part of which was being done in an effort to de-legitimize *all* such issues of bonds, and to re-hypothecate the Federal Reserve's gold bullion reserves *yet again:*

> Curiously, it was also in 1986 that the Federal Reserve decided to recast all the gold bars in its vaults, changing "good delivery" bars from traditional rectangular ingots into trapezoidal shape. Why this was done was never satisfactorily explained, but it allowed the Fed to change the hallmarks, serial numbers, and all other identification, which included re-papering and earmarking, effectively erasing all record of ownership of many thousands of tons of gold in its different vaults.[25]

Needless to say, such a procedure would be the perfect means to create *several* issues of such "fake" gold backed bearer bonds, and in my opinion, this is the likely explanation for why there are such enormous sums of them in existence; all it would take is numerous re-meltings, re-castings, new documentations, for each such issue of faked securities. Again, one does not counterfeit what does not exist.

But what of all those extant Federal Reserve Bearer bonds and notes? Simple: according to the Seagraves, the CIA was engaged in massive counterfeiting:

> A large number of Fed bonds and gold certificates were printed at the Bureau of Engraving and Printing, on the wrong type of paper, with a comic variety of deliberate errors.

(Remember Prime Minister Tanaka, and his "57" bonds?)

> Many were engraved with the wrong faces, the wrong mottos, the wrong designs, the wrong signatures. Some were even engraved and printed in traditional Chinese characters. This would be a hilarious disinformation campaign, flooding Asia with blatant forgeries, to make the whole idea ridiculous. It would cut the legal legs off anyone trying to redeem legitimate gold certificates or legitimate Fed bonds. They could be laughed out of court.
>
> Special engraving plates were sent to Manila where the CIA already had presses to run them off. To confuse the issue in Mindanao, where the planes had crashed, two "missionaries" set themselves up with high-tech presses saying they were going to print Bibles, but instead

---

[25] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors*, p. 257.

> ran off conspicuously bogus Fed notes and bonds, which added to the impression that they were all false.[26]

In other words, one has the *original* 1934 operation, in which securities and notes were issued with no intention of redemption (fraud), and a *second* operation, ca 1948, with direct CIA involvement in issuing "securities" with errors (counterfeiting *and* fraud), and a *third* operation of industrial scale counterfeiting as a disinformation campaign during the mid-1980s under the Reagan Administration to deflect attention away from the first two fraud and counterfeiting operations by creating an enormous counterfeiting operation!

No wonder Eugene Cardinal Tisserant could glibly dismiss concerns that the Vatican would be implicated in securities fraud for employing Mafia counterfeiters by the U.S. Government! Indeed, the Vatican already *knew* of the theft of gold and the use of hidden funding that it enabled, since its bank had helped funnel such funds:

> In postwar Italy, CIA agent James Jesus Angleton recovered Ethiopian treasure plundered by Mussolini's forces. Instead of returning this loot to the desperately impoverished Ethiopian people, it was appropriated by the CIA and used to finance pro-American and anti-communist candidates in Italy's 1948 elections. In addition, the Agency raised a great deal of money in Europe from the sale of surplus U.S. war materiel, and gave this money to the Vatican, earmarked explicitly for the war on communism in Italy. The Agency then arranged for the Pope to provide 100-million lira from this personal account to back the anti-communist ticket during the elections. This comes as no surprise because it is now known that the Vatican bank sheltered Hirohito's assets and Nazi assets during the war. It is also one of the 42 countries to which… the recovered Golden Lily bullion was shipped during 1945-1947.[27]

Putting all this together, one may reasonably conclude that the *driving* force in the establishment of a global system of hidden finance, and of the fraud needed to sustain it, are the postwar intelligence interfaces of the West, and at its core, the intelligence complex of America. It is only a small step from the detente and co-existence and coalescence of this banking-intelligence nexus, to the possibility that the intelligence component can break completely from its financial overlords, and begin to draw financial matters into its own, and very independent, hands. This possibility becomes a frightening reality in the next phase, as we shall now see, and with it, another peculiar synchronicity with the UFO side of the breakaway civilization emerges.

---

[26] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave*, Gold Warriors,* p. 257.

[27] Ibid., p. 105.

4. The Independent, or Rogue Phase: Indications of the Break of the Breakaway Civilization

In the wake of President Nixon's resignation in 1973 after the Watergate affair, many of the covert operations Old Guard in the CIA—General Lansdale among them—were pressured into resigning. But gone is not forgotten, nor, inactive. These men, including Lansdale, then sought to gain *direct* control over the accounts that had been set up on the basis of the Axis loot, in order to establish their own private covert operations, intelligence systems, and mercenary armies.[28] What had *begun* as a rogue operation now had yet *another* rogue element within it. This was the era -from Nixon's fall to the years of the first and second Reagan Administrations—that saw precisely the vast expansion of private corporate intelligence and securities firms, often working in direct para-political fashion in conjunction with the U.S. Government and its various defense contractors.

But there is something else to be noted about this time period as well, and these two things, I believe, are significant and hardly coincidental: it was in this *same* approximate time period that, according to some of the Cooper-Cantwheel Majestic-12 UFO documents, the secretive UFO study group known as MAJIC-12 or Majestic-12 was privatized by President Nixon, and turned over to the corporate world with its own system of big money behind it, in the year 1969.[29] These documents state that Nixon was actually blackmailed into his eventual resignation by this group.[30] Given the nexus that we have thus far uncovered between the covert operations wing of U.S. intelligence, the hidden system of finance, and ultimately via Lansdale and his Air Force connections to the UFO issue, the possibility emerges that we are looking at the beginning of the real "break" of the breakaway civilization with its overworld interface ca. 1969. By the time of the emergence of the *privatized* covert operations nexus under the Reagan Administration, as represented by the entire Iran-Contra affair, the covert operations arm is acting more or less independently.[31] Put differently, it surely is not, in my opinion, coincidental that the UFO arm "breaks" from the direct connection to the government circa the same period as the covert operations arm breaks with it, and this is suggestive evidence that these two components were indeed part of the same occulted structure from the outset of the postwar period. This occulted and emerging breakaway covert warfare component called itself "The Enterprise."[32]

---

[28] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave*, Gold Warriors*, p. 152.

[29] See my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell: The Nazis' Incredible Secret Technology*, pp. 335-336.

[30] Ibid., p. 336.

In this respect, the Seagraves—without realizing the connection to the entire world of secret technological research, black projects, and UFO study groups—make a significant statement: "We reproduce letters from members of The Enterprise network, describing how they intend to use recovered Japanese war loot to set up a private FBI-style security force to police the American public, "*and a separate military-industrial complex controlled by us*."[33]

But again, we are dealing with vast sums of money over a prolonged period of time, and we have argued that this hidden system of finance and fraud was to fund two basic activities: covert operations and warfare, and black projects research. So before turning to the latter, we must first examine the covert warfare operations themselves, from the point of view of ascertaining an answer to this question: Can all of the known covert operations of the West, taken together, account for all the vast sums of money—in the trillions of dollars[34]—or is some other activity needed to explain such a vast system of industrial scale counterfeiting and fraud?

---

[31] Note then that in terms of the *overall pattern* of history, one would have this group instigating a coup d'etat with the JFK assassination, beginning to break away under Nixon, and completing the covert operations process of breakaway under Reagan. It is significant that the Majic-12 documents couple the covert operation against Nixon *with* the simultaneous break of the UFO study group, implying that the *technological emulations* projects may have broken at precisely the same time. Again, this would make sense only if the structure that we outlined in the preface, and that we are examining in detail in the main text, would directly connect covert operations, technological black projects, and hidden finance.

[32] The connection, of course, between intelligence and the corporate and financial worlds has been noted throughout this work, and is perhaps nowhere better attested than the fact that the CIA is known as "the Company," while the emergent breakaway covert warfare group preserves the corporate metaphor, being known as "the Enterprise."

[33] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors*, p. 190, emphasis added.

[34] Quadrillions, if one takes into account the merry escapades of the banksters and the "derivatives" markets.

B. A Brief Review of Western Covert Operations: NATO, Nazis, Fascists and "Terrorism"

1. A Catalogue of Created Crises

A brief glance at the extent of the covert operations during the postwar period, in just Europe alone, will give the reader some idea of how truly vast the extent of this activity really is, and by implication,[35] how truly large the required funding for it would of necessity have to be. It is now known that in one way or another, covert operatives of the West were behind the following postwar "terrorist" events:

1) The numerous attempts in the late 1950s and early 1960s to assassinate French President Charles DeGaulle by officers of the *Organization Arme Secret* or OAS, which had ties to this covert operations structure through the Gehlen Organization, the American CIA, and NATO headquarters (then located in France) via the various front companies associated with *Centro Mondiale Commercial* and the Permindex Corporation;[36]

---

[35] A good review of the structure and operations of this cabal during this period may be found in Richard Cottrell's *Gladio: NATO's Dagger at the Heart of Europe: The Pentagon-Nazi-Mafia Terror Axis* (Palm Desert, CA.: Progressive Press, 2012), pp. 5-31. In this section we will reference this and other major sources for this story, though space does not, obviously, permit us to go into any detail concerning each of these events, nor into the case that can be made tying each of them to this structure.

[36] Q.v. Daniele Ganser, *NATO's Secret Armies: Operation Gladio and Terrorism in Western Europe* (London: Frank Cass, 2005), pp. 84-102. It is worth noting that Ganser divides his book into chapters, each of which is entitled "The Secret War in…" and then listing a particular European country, or, in one case, the United States itself. In other words, Ganser views this structure, as I do, as waging an unrelenting and covert warfare against the citizens of the countries represented in the structure. The countries listed in Ganser's book as having been the scene of these secret NATO-sponsored covert operations and wars are: Great Britain, France, Italy, Spain, Portugal, Belgium, Holland, Luxemburg, Denmark, Norway, Germany, Greece, and Turkey. See also Henrik Krüger, *The Great Heroin Coup: Drugs, Intelligence, and International Fascism* (Boston: South End Press, 1980), pp. 56-57, 200; and Richard Cotrell, *Gladio: NATO's Dagger at the Heart of Europe: The Pentagon-Nazi-Mafia Terror Axis*, pp. 11, 118-120. Cottrell notes that it was General DeGaulle's decision to pull out of NATO and to develop an independent French nuclear and thermonuclear deterrent that in some respects contributed to the motivations behind the attempts. See also my *LBJ and the*

2) the manipulation of the 1948 Italian elections by the CIA and the Vatican to ensure an anti-Communist victory;[37]
3) The kidnapping and assassination of Italian premier Aldo Moro;[38]
4) The various incidents associated with the German Baader-Meinhof gang;[39]
5) The 1980 bombing at the Munich *Oktoberfest*;[40]
6) The overthrow of the Greek government in 1967 and the installation of a military junta;[41]
7) The 1956 Hungarian uprising against the Soviet bloc, sponsored by Frank Wisner's CIA Office of Policy Coordination, both of which we shall be learning more about momentarily;[42]
8) The 1979 bombing of the Bologna bank and train station, and the associated Vatican Bank scandals, the notorious scandal over Licio Gelli's crypto-Fascist *Loge Propaganda Due* Masonic Lodge, with spill-overs to the Mafia, Michele Sindona, and the death of Italian banker Roberto Calvi under London's Blackfriars' Bridge;[43]
9) The 1954 overthrow of Mossadegh in Iran and the installation of the pro-big oil, pro-Western Shah Reza Pahlavi;[44]
10) The 1973 overthrow of Salvador Allende and the installation of Augustin Pinochet in Chile;[45]

Conspiracy to Kill Kennedy: A Coalescence of Interests (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2011), pp. 160-168.

[37] Q.v Daniel Ganser, *NATO's Secret Armies: Operation Gladio and Terrorism in Western Europe*, pp. 63-83.

[38] Q.v Ganser, op. cit., pp. 71-72, 79-80; and Richard Cottrell, *Gladio: NATO's Dagger at the Heart of Europe: The Pentagon-Nazi-Mafia Terror Axis*, pp. 223-235. It is worth noting that Ganser, Cottrell, and many other researchers have connected Moro's kidnapping and assassination with the Vatican bank affair, the questionable activities of Bishop(and later Archbishop) Paul Marcinkus, murdered Italian banker Roberto Calvi, and the notoriously neo-Fascist "Masonic" P2 lodge of Licio Gelli(who, let it be noted, fled to Argentina when the scandal broke).

[39] Q.v. Cottrell, op. cit. pp. 319-323.

[40] Q.v. Ganser, op. cit. pp. 189-211 and particularly pp. 206-211; see also Cottrell, op. cit. pp. 327-329.

[41] Q.v Ganser, op. cit., pp. 212-223, particularly pp. 219-223 See also Cottrell, op. cit., pp. 146-168.

[42] Q.v Cottrell, op. cit., pp. 40-41.

[43] Q.v. Ganser, op. cit., pp. 63-83; Cottrell, op. cit., pp. 218-235, 265-295.

[44] Q.v. Ganser, op. cit., p. 157.

11) The assassination of South Vietnamese President Diem and the installation of General Nyugen Thieu;[46]

One could go on and on, and to this list, one could also credibly add the Norwegian shootings and Oslo bombing, the strange connections of Anders Breivik to this structure;[47] and one would *have* to add: Iran-Contra, and probably Waco and the Oklahoma City Bombing, and finally, the events that for most Americans define the connection to this underground breakaway civilization structure: the assassination of President John F. Kennedy,[48] and as we shall discover later in this chapter, 9/11 itself.

2. International Covert Operations as the "Military Arm" of the Breakaway Civilization: The Fascist Culture, and the Nazi and American Cores

This postwar covert operations structure is composed of two levels: the national covert operations "Gladio" cells themselves, maintained by each member nation of NATO, and the international supervisory superstructure of NATO itself, along with the national intelligence agencies which, by dint of their close interface with each other, give rise to the potential for an international intelligence network existing inside of—and to a degree independently of—each of the national intelligence structures of the member nations. Daniele Ganser observes that in the immediate postwar period the core of these covert operations units were comprised of the stay-behind guerilla warfare units organized by the collapsing Nazi and Fascist regimes:

---

[45] Q.v. Henrik Krüger, *The Great Heroin Coup*, pp. 146, 151n, , 210- 212. Notably, the heavy presence of international Fascists and Nazis in the Allende overthrow is a common feature to *most* of these covert operations.

[46] Ibid., p. 129, notably, in the Diem coup in South Vietnam and the installation of Thieu, Watergate plumber E. Howard Hunt was involved, though notably, General Ed Lansdale declined involvement with the coup, as he had maintained warm relations with Diem.

[47] Q.v. Cottrell, *Gladio: NATO's Dagger at the Heart of Europe: the Pentagon-Nazi-Mafia Terror Axis*, pp. 424-437.

[48] See my *LBJ and the Conspiracy to Kill Kennedy: A Coalescence of Interests* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2011), pp. 36-39; 120-125; 157-172; 204-218. See also Peter Dale Scott's superb study *Deep Politics and the Death of JFK* (University of California Press, 1993).

> "The setting up of Stay-Behind organisations of the NATO countries started already shortly after the end of the Second World War," the official German government report on the stay-behind confirmed in 1990. After the defeat of Germany in 1945 the chaotic post-war conditions were ideal for the United States to set up a stay-behind. As occupying power the US armies controlled the territory together with the French, British and the Soviet forces in their respective zones. Above all the supply of thoroughly anti-Communist men trained in guerilla warfare and experienced with arms and explosives was abundant. And thus the United States secretly recruited former Nazis for the German stay-behind network. In the midst of the Gladio revelations in 1990 the private TV channel RTL shocked the German public by revealing in a special Gladio report that former members of Hitler's dreaded SS, who under Hitler had hunted the communists, had been part of Germany's Gladio network.
>
> The US army General Staff Top Secret March 28, 1949 Overall Strategic Concepts highlighted that Germany "has an excellent potential of trained men for both underground and Secret Army Reserve (stay behind units). Effective resistance can and should be organized." On the orders of the Pentagon in Washington the newly created US Counter Intelligence Corps (CIC) tracked down German Nazis and brought them to the Nurnberg trials, while the CIC also secretly recruited selected right-wing extremists for the anti-Communist army.[49]

---

[49] Ganser, *NATO's Secret Armies*, p. 190. With respect to the vast extent of the stay-behind networks in Eastern Europe and their "exilee" and "emigré" captive nation societies in the USA, and their relationship to Republican party politics and its National Heritage Council, the following remarks of Russ Bellant:

> "The Republican Heritage Groups Council has a special type of outreach. It appears to have consciously recruited some of its members—and some of its leaders—from an Eastern European emigré network which includes anti-Semites, racists, authoritarians, and fascists, including sympathizers and collaborators of Hitler's Third Reich, former Nazis, and even possible war criminals." (Russ Bellant, *Old Nazis, the New Right, and the Republican Party: Domestic Fascist Networks and Their Effect on U.S. Cold War Politics* [South End Press, 1991], pp. xvii-xvii)

This open association was begun, as noted, under Reagan, and many of the leaders of these groups become formal advisors to the presidential campaign of G.H.W. Bush in 1988. The man responsible for chairing the Republican Heritage Groups Council was one Laszlo Pasztor, "an activist in various

An additional force compelling toward the creation—or rather, continuation and utilization—of these stay behind units by the American military and intelligence complex was General Gehlen's organization itself, for by consistently over-estimating Soviet military capabilities, and giving intelligence estimates that consistently emphasized the imminent danger of full scale Soviet invasion in the immediate years after World War Two, the Gehlenorg in effect played to internal fears within the American command structure, and created the very conditions necessary to maintain these Nazi and Fascist units.[50]

In effect, the covert operations arm of NATO became a trans-national, or internationally organized Fascist army, even to the point that these units were the subject of secret protocols in the treaties by which countries—and one very important country in particular—entered the alliance, for according to Daniele Ganser once again,

---

Hungarian rightist and Nazi-linked groups. In World War II Pasztor was a leader of the youth group of the Arrow Cross, the Hungarian equivalent of the German Nazi Party." (Bellant, op. cit., p. 5) Others included Bulgarian Radi Slavoff, under investigation for concealing war crimes, and a member of "other emigré fascist groups' (Bellant, op. cit., p. 2), Nicolas Nazarenko, an SS officer in the Nazi Cossack division; Florian Galdau, a defender of Romanian archbishop Valerian Trifa, involved in the Romanian Fascist organization Iron Guards, and accused of being a recruiter for that organization; Method Balco, associated with the Slovak emigré groups, groups heavily infiltrated by former members of the Nazi puppet regime of Slovakia after the German annexation of Bohemia-Moravia in March 1939; and Walter Melianovich, head of the Republican party's White Russian or Byelo-Russian unit, also heavily associated with Nazi sympathizers and recruits. (See Bellant, op. cit., pp. 2-3). In short, one is dealing with General Reinhard Gehlen's "stay-behind units" which he subsequently proposed to the Americans be left in place and used in an eventual "rollback" strategy of the Soviet bloc. (See also Bellant, op. cit., p. 4.)

[50] For these points, see Christopher Simpson, *Blowback: The First Full Account of America's Recruitment of Nazis, and its Disastrous Effect on Our Domestic and Foreign Policy* (Collier Books, 1988), pp. 52-56; 59-65. Simpson even notes that so trusted, or influential, was the Gehlenorg within the corridors of American intelligence (or to put the same point differently, so in agreement were the American and German cores of this network), that in some instances, the Gehlenorg's intelligence estimate and analysis was simply *retyped verbatim* on the appropriate stationary, and handed to President Truman as the CIA's official estimate of the situation! (Simpson, op. cit., p. 53)

> When the Gladio scandal erupted in 1990 an unnamed former NATO intelligence official explained that the covert action branch of the CIA *under Frank Wisner* in order to set up the German secret army had "incorporated lock, stock and barrel the espionage outfit run by Hitler's spy chief Reinhard Gehlen. This is well known, because Gehlen was the spiritual father of Stay Behind in Germany and his role was known to the West German leader, Konrad Adenauer, from the outset." According to the unnamed NATO officer, US President Truman and German Chancellor Adenauer had "*signed a secret protocol with the US on West Germany's entry into NATO in May 1955 in which it was agreed that the West German authorities would refrain from active legal pursuit of known right-wing extremists.*" [51]

It takes little imagination to see that this international military organizational structure, with a secret protocol in Germany's case, would most likely have been a secret protocol component of arrangements between the USA and its other NATO allies as well, and thus, one may conclude that lurking beneath the overt posture of NATO as a defensive alliance in the service of "freedom and democracy" there lies a much deeper and much more sinister Fascist operational culture.[52]

The mention of the name Frank Wisner in conjunction with these covert units brings us to the American core of this international structure, and to the relationships and networking that its original core leaders represented. Ganser surveys these core leaders and their relationships in the following remarks:

> General Gehlen was right in assuming that the data which he had collected during his torture operations on the Soviet Union and its Communists was of great interest to the United States. Together with a small group of senior Nazi officers he had therefore at the end of the war carefully microfilmed the extensive (*Fremde Heere Ost*) data on the USSR, had packed the films in watertight steel drums and had secretly buried these in meadows in the Austrian Alps. After several weeks of (Counter Intelligence Corps) internment Gehlen got into contact with US General Edwin Luther Siber to whom he revealed his secret. The US General was so impressed that he promoted Gehlen's career in the years to come. He introduced Gehlen to senior US

---

[51] Daniele Ganser, *NATO's Secret Armies*, p. 193, emphasis added.

[52] Richard Cottrell, *Gladio: NATO's Dagger at the Heart of Europe*, pp. 9, 47-47, suggests in very stark terms that NATO was meant to be a permanent structure and aspires to be the organizational military and covert operations matrix of a global superstate, with a kind of permanent "war socialism"(p. 19), or mercantile-militarism(p. 10).

> intelligence officials, including General Walter Bedell Smith, then the highest US Army intelligence officer in Europe, and later Director of the CIA from 1950 to 1953. Siber also introduced Gehlen to General William Donovan, chief of the US wartime secret service Office of Strategic Services(OSS), and Allen Dulles of the OSS, later chief of the CIA, as well as Frank Wisner of the OSS, later chief of CIA's (Office of Policy Coordination) which set up the European stay-behind network.[53]

This Dulles-Donovan-Wisner-Gehlen covert operations and intelligence "axis" is very revealing, for with Dulles and Donovan in particular, one has men whose connections lead directly to Wall Street, and to the American financial oligarchy.

3. Frank Wisner, The Office of Policy Coordination, and the "Deep State"

Almost from its inception, Wisner's Office of Policy Coordination was deeply involved in the drug trafficking of Nationalist China's Khoumintang government, to such an extent, that CIA director Walter Bedell Smith abolished it "altogether and merged its personnel with the CIA's own covert operations staff in a new Department of Plans (later Department of Operations)."[54] Smith's intention was to bring covert operations "under more responsible oversight" but unfortunately the merger had exactly the opposite effect, since the OPC "especially under Allen Dulles, effectively took over the CIA,"[55] transforming the agency into as much a covert warfare bureau as an intelligence gathering and analysis agency. This transformed the 1948 National Security Council memorandum 10/2 from a small affair to a very large one, effectively giving the CIA authorization to engage in criminal activity.[56] Thus, with the nexus of Wisner, Dulles, covert operations, international post-war Fascist "stay behind" units, one observes an essentially international

---

[53] Daniele Ganser, *NATO's Secret Armies*, p. 191.

[54] Peter Dale Scott, *American War Machine*, p. 28.

[55] Ibid.

[56] The careful reader will have observed that in some respects the OPC/CIA covert operations culture resembles the oligarchical structure and criminal agencies of the Republic of Venice, and its notorious Council of Ten. Professor Scott himself notes the resemblance of this structure to those of the northern Italian city-states of the High Middle Ages and Renaissance on p. 180 of his book. See also p. 2 of Scott's *American War Machine* for a brief survey of the types of "deep state violence" conducted by this covert operations nexus.

Fascist structure beginning to emerge, one bridging and bringing together both American and European elements, one that, moreover, could serve "the interests of private international wealth,"[57] and like the territorial Mafia and international criminal drug trafficking syndicates, the "bosses" of the various national components of the stay-behind units would meet regularly to coordinate plans and activities.[58]

This nexus implies the potential for a permanent privatization or corporatization of intelligence and covert operations. Indeed, as noted previously, Allen Dulles, prior to the creation of the CIA, had acted to create just such a private intelligence agency called the World Commerce Corporation, involving William Stephenson from British intelligence, and Nelson Rockefeller,[59] a fact suggesting to many that the agencies established by the National Security Act of 1947—the CIA and NSA—are less agencies of the US government than they are of Wall Street and the high financial oligarchy of the USA.

In spite of Bedell Smith's merger of the Office of Policy Coordination and the CIA, Wisner[60] stayed on until 1958, when he was replaced by Richard Bissel, who ran covert operations until 1962[61] when he was fired by President John F. Kennedy in the wake of the Bay of Pigs fiasco. This is quite the crucial point, for Bissel also had direct influence over the CIA's top secret U-2 spy plane flights over the Soviet Union and Communist China, and thus, it is with Bissel and the CIA's

---

[57] Peter Dale Scott, op. cit., pp. 35-36.

[58] Daniele Ganser, *NATO's Secret Armies*, p. 33. Ganser also comments on another important, and incipiently Fascist, feature of this structure, namely that the American officers of the Office of Policy coordination "tended to be white (male) Anglo-Saxon patricians from old families with old money… and they somewhat inherited traditional British attitudes toward the coloured races of the world." (Ganser, op. cit., p. 55, citing Thomas Powers, *The Man Who Kept the Secrets: Richard Helms and the CIA* [London: Weidenfeld and Nicolson, 1980], p. 37.)

[59] Peter Dale Scott, *American War Machine*, p. 27. The expression of this private intelligence agency—The World Commerce Corporation—was absorbed as a methodology by the CIA in its establishment of the World Trade Centers throughout the world, the most notorious examples of which were the Centro Mondial Commercial in Italy, associated with Permindex (see my *LBJ and the Conspiracy to Kill Kennedy*, pp. 160-172), and the World Trade Mart in New Orleans, associated with CIA agent Clay Shaw, the subject of New Orleans District Attorney Jim Garrison's investigation of the Kennedy Assassination.

[60] Daniele Ganser also observes that Wisner was Richard Helms' mentor in covert operations and intelligence at the CIA (op. cit., p. 268 n. 19).

[61] Daniele Ganser, *NATO's Secret Armies*, p. 60.

Department of Plans that we also see the common surface with the world of black projects and the secret technologies being developed for reconnaissance of the Soviet Union. *Succinctly put: Bissel's presence and role at this time is the surest indicator that one simply cannot separate the covert operations culture from that of the black projects world and its secret technological research and development.*

4. The Methodology of the Culture:
a. Plausible Deniability, False Flag Operations and Drills, or, Ops within Ops

The underlying methodology of all these covert operations was not only that of "plausible deniability", but to a certain extent, that of the false flag operation, and oftentimes both simultaneously. This simultaneity itself is an important operational principle arising from the culture of the breakaway civilization, for it means that within any given operation, particularly those designed to effect the "deep events" in Peter Dale Scott's sense of the term, an operation is designed to optimize the achievement of several discrete objectives all at once. We have encountered already in the preface an example of this mentality in the development of technologies designed to fulfill two functions: the covert monitoring of the Soviet Union, and the more difficult covert monitoring and reconnaissance of UFO activity and suspected bases. We will deal again with this subject in part three.

But there are two more earthly examples of this covert operations mentality. Throughout the terrorism operations conducted by the NATO Gladio units in Europe, and to a lesser extent their corollary operations in Latin America and Africa, the terrorism perpetrated by these extreme right Fascist networks has consistently attempted to disguise itself as that of the radical Communist left, in classical false flag operations. False flag operations thus evidence the method, for initial blame can be assigned to an enemy, and in this plausible deniability of the involvement of one's own forces is given another mantle of deception cloaking its activities. Classical examples of this tactic are the Operation Condor murders in Latin America, blamed on the Left, but actually perpetrated by covert elements of the extreme Right, and the terrorist actions surrounding the 1990s recognition of an independent Croatia, where again, the perpetrators on the Right conducted operations blamed on the Left.[62]

---

[62] Q.v. Henrik Krüger, *The Great Heroin Coup*, pp. 210-212. 217.

Another example is the "operation within an operation", where one party's operation is penetrated by another, which uses the one to accomplish its own aims. Consider for example the bombing, and subsequent murders, in Norway in 2011, a classic example of an operation of this sort:

> The carnage in Norway struck on 22nd July 2011, first in the central district of Oslo, the capital city, then on a sleepy little island camping retreat not far away. It marked a significant use of synthetic terror as a means of social control, while advancing the agenda of global world power. First, to cut an awkwardly independent but immensely wealthy country down to size; second, to usher on stage the next phase of indefinite war waged on ordinary citizens, the familiar story of Gladio… Within hours of the attacks, the (European Union's) policing offshoot Europol announced a new multi-national task force, charged with investigating and infiltrating potentially hostile political movements deemed as potentially dangerous. In other words, exactly those groups which supposedly inspired the 33-year-old market gardener Anders Behring Breivik to kill 77 people, 55 of them teenagers. Another 62 suffered bullet wounds. The massacre commanded world headlines and news channels. But when the news leaked out six weeks later that Norway's crack anti-terrorist squad had just finished a "training exercise" on the day, which exactly mirrored the bombing in downtown Oslo and the following shooting frenzy on Utøya Island, the only official response was silence. The bomb that practically wrecked a large area of the downtown business and government district exploded less than half an hour after the so-called drill ended. A senior police spokesman brushed it off as a mere 'coincidence.'
>
> The chances against such a random co-incidence are multiples of millions to one. The odds rose even farther when it emerged that the first police officer who stepped ashore amid the bloodshed on Utøya Island not only recognized Breivik immediately, but addressed him directly by name… We are in the same territory as the NORAD drill involving the use of jets as weapons on 9/11, and the simulated terrorist attack on the London underground system, which 'just happened' to overlap with the real-time deadly bombings.[63]

---

[63] Richard Cottrell, *Gladio: NATO's Dagger at the Heart of Europe: the Pentagon-Nazi-Mafia Terror Axis*, p. 424. Cottrell notes that Norway had a strong and critical anti-Israel stance, as well as a strong anti-US/anti-NATO lobby. (p. 426.)

In other words, "All the tell-tale signs of a stage-managed Gladio event were apparent from the outset."[64]

b. The Lone Nut Assassin Technique: *Norway, JFK and John-Paul II*

While not directly germane to the topic of the breakaway civilization per se, it is worth mentioning that one standard technique is another methodological *idée fixe* for the breakaway civilization mandarins of covert operations; this is the "Lone Nut Assassin" technique.

Richard Cottrell observes that Anders Breivik's Facebook profile continued to be adjusted *after* the attacks, a fact that suggests "that even at this late stage… the personality moulding (sic) was still continuing, as though his credentials as a lone crazed terrorist still invited refinement and adjustment."[65] Moreover, Breivik's behavior suggested something else, something that suggested yet another connection to the deep covert operations state, and to its alleged mind control and manipulation techniques and technologies. "The world," observes Richard Cottrell,

> was soon looking at the calmly composed and classically Nordic features of a blue-eyed, blonde-mopped figure in his early thirties, not altogether without a certain wholesome appearance. He seemed the image of serenity, like the state of composure he maintained after his arrest and according to survivors, his glacial demeanor amid the bloodbath on the camping island. Indeed his brief public appearances in court conveyed the impression of an individual transfixed in some entrancing dream. One of his closest friends wondered if he was drugged or brainwashed, finding his appearance eerie and quite untypical.[66]

Similar allegations have been made about Robert F. Kennedy's alleged assassin, Sirhan Sirhan, about Lee Harvey Oswald's murderer Jack Ruby, and most recently, about the alleged "Batman movie" murderer, James E. Holmes.

The methodological connections spin out from there. For example, most people are unaware of the very close general similarity of the assassination attempt on Pope John-Paul II and President John Kennedy, for witnesses present during the attempt heard more than the official number of shots. Thus,

---

[64] Cottrell, *Gladio: NATO's Dagger at the Heart of Europe: the Pentagon-Nazi-Mafia Terror Axis*, p. 427.

[65] Ibid., p. 432.

[66] Ibid.

> …(The) mystery of exactly how many shots and more precisely who fired them, with what type of weapon, and from what angle, now began to colour the many differing versions of events that day. There seemed to be a striking overlap with the confusion at Dallas almost thirty years earlier. There was confusion over the number of shots, whether fired by a single gunman or a task force. The chief suspicion fell on (Mehmet Ali) Agca, a brainwashed patsy in the mould of Lee Harvey Oswald. And not least a mysterious grainy image, captured by a bystander, showing an unidentified figure hurrying from the *piazza* moments after the gunshots. According to his trial testimony, Agca insisted he fired 'two or three shots in rapid succession.' Three struck John Paul. One slapped into his lower intestine, the others struck his left hand, passing through his abdomen, and his right arm. Two people in the dense crowd were injured, either collaterally by the same bullets, or by others aimed from a different direction.[67]

The resemblance does not stop there, for researchers soon discovered, behind the attempts to place blame on the assassination to Bulgaria and the Soviet Union, lay much murkier connections of Agca to Turkish neo-Nazi and Fascist groups, that in turn had connections to the West German *Bundesnachrichtendienst* and the CIA.[68]

---

[67] Cottrell, *Gladio: NATO's Dagger at the Heart of Europe*, p. 265. This author strongly disagrees with the characterization of Oswald as a *brainwashed* patsy. Oswald showed no signs of having undergone such techniques.

[68] Ibid., p. 276. Cottrell notes that the Gladio operations and organizations received a huge boost from General Lyman Lemnitzer, the Chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff whom Kennedy "exiled" to the supreme command of NATO. Lemnitzer of course had ties to General Ed Lansdale, and Cottrell points out that "Dealey Plaze bore the template of a ready-made Gladio-style assassination prohect."(p. 102). Cottrell goes on to observe what many JFK assassination researchers have maintained, namely, that the photographs of the so-called "three tramps" appear to show Charles Harrelson, and Chauncy Holt, the latter of whom, let it be noted, was "a brilliant counterfeiter," and both of whom have been alleged by various JFK assassination researchers, to have worked "for the CIA and organised crime at the same time."(p. 102) In one photo or the three tramps, as pointed out by Fletcher Prouty, a man passing in the other direction appears to be none other than General Ed Lansdale. (q.v. Cottrell, op. cit., p. 103). Cottrell notes that "Lemnitzer was among the chief architects of the Strategy of Tension, and brought with him a wealth of experience gained from earlier commands in Southeast Asia. There and later in

c. The World Anti-Communist League as a Technique of Factional Management

Given the highly internationalized structure of the covert operations and financial arms of the breakaway civilization, not to mention the hidden competing factional components of American East Coast old money, Texas and West Coast "cowboys," postwar Fascists, Nazis, and Japanese, how would it be managed and coordinated? One mechanism has already been mentioned: regular coordinating meetings between various managerial levels of the structure, including the top echelon in meetings such as the Bilderberger Group.[69]

In addition to this however, there are permanent agencies of coordination, and a glance at one of the most notorious of these, the World Anti-Communist League, based in Nationalist Chinese Taiwan, is in order. If there is any *one* public "agency" that could be identified as the Nazi, or Fascist, International, this is it,[70] for it is backed by powerful right wing financial elements in Nationalist China and South Korea, such as the "reverend" Sun Myung Moon, but also brings together CIA covert operatives, Chinese, Korean, Japanese, American, and most notably, postwar German, Italian, and other European Fascist elements. Additionally, it was tightly networked to General Gehlen's German *Bundesnachrichtendienst*.[71]

> The tentacles of this sprawling octopus eventually extended to all corners of the planet. This was visibly the Fascist International, the huge global Gladio… It was charged with the… brief to 'overcome and eliminate' any governments or forces considered sympathetic to communism. The means were not precisely specified, save for talking about warfare in psychologically political terms. Yet (the World Anti-Communist League) was tracked to Operation Condor, death squads in

---

the Pentagon he was under the spell of the immensely unorthodox air force (sic) colonel (later general) Edward Lansdale."(p. 18). Thus is a significant point, for it provides yet another thread of connection between the covert operations world, the Golden Lily treasure and the hidden financial system resulting therefrom, and the assassination of JFK, for Kennedy's move toward a direct debt-free money in June of 1963 took direct aim at this hidden structure, and it is quite conceivable that Kennedy may not known the full of extent of it.

[69] Q.v. my *Babylon's Banksters*, pp. 45-75.

[70] Cottrell, *Gladio: NATO's Dagger at the Heart of Europe: The Pentagon-Nazi-Mafia Terror Axis*, p. 123.

[71] Henrik Krüger, *The Great Heroin Coup*, p. 192.

> Latin America and the Iberian Peninsula, the twin Kennedy assassinations and general oiling of Iran-Contra in life-after-death mode. So, it would not be surprising to discover (the World Anti-Communist League's) fingerprints thickly plastered all over The Enterprise of drug and arms dealing in its latter-day formation. In Europe, (the World Anti-Communist League) was tied up with various neo-fascist fronts, particularly Licio Gelli's P2/Gladio activities, in Italy as well as South America. The 'liquidations' of both Aldo Moro (communist fraterniser) and Olof Palme (Iran-Iraq meddler, irritating Palestine interloper) have been cited as promoted in some degree by (the World Anti-Communist League).[72]

Viewed another way, the entire alliance of American, Japanese, Korean, Nationalist Chinese, and European Fascists that the World Anti-Communist League symbolized and effected, was but another consequence of the alliances between the USA and the postwar Nazis forged even before World War Two was over; it represents, as it were, a kind of unapostolic succession of the Nazi and Fascist parties and ideologies.[73]

---

[72] Cottrell, *Gladio: NATO's Dagger at the Heart of Europe: the Pentagon-Nazi-Mafia Terror Axis*, pp. 123-124.

[73] The connections again to the JFK assassination are deep and clear. Cottrell makes these observations about the consequences of the postwar deal with the Nazi oligarchy:

> To (Henrik) Krüger, the Miami-Lisbon-Madrid-Rome axis was the logical continuation of the CIA's record in forging alliances with high Nazi officials, notably General Reinhard Gehlen, Hitler's spy chief on the Russian Front, who became West Germany's first intelligence chief in 1947. American historian Carl Oglesby wrote: 'Everything after this (Gehlen) was just a consequence of this merger.' He could have said exactly the same of the North Atlantic Treaty Organisation, which by now had been led by the nose into the same network of black alliances. (p. 125)

Cottrell also notes that the Madrid "branch office" of this franchise was connected to none other than SS Lt. Col. Otto Skorzeny (p. 125), which had an office in Zurich which was "the contact point for undercover deals with Swiss arms firms. Conveniently, there was office space for the CIA-sponsored corporate twins, Permindex and the World Trading Centre (aka *Centro Mondiale Commerciale*)" which were both, notes Cottrell, connected to assassination attempts on President DeGaulle. (p. 125)

When Soviet Communism fell, the name of the World Anti-Communist League was merely changed to the World League for Freedom and Democracy.[74] This is a point of signal importance, for it means that whatever this organization chooses to call itself, it performs a vital and permanent function to the breakaway civilization, and it is rather easy to see what that function is. Such agencies or bureaucracies function as the common surface between various factions within the structure, not only to coordinate activities, channel funds, manage personnel, but also to allow the factions to express their competing interests and agendas, and quite literally, to spy on each other, and, through regular operational contact, to estimate each other's agendas, intentions, and capabilities.

But there is another such agency, with deep ties to the covert operations and financial arms components of this structure; it is, so to speak:

5. The Holy Ghost in the Machine, or, The Vatican Bank.

While the Vatican's connection to the deep industrial scale financial fraud was surveyed briefly in part one, it is necessary to see why it functioned within this structure as "the Holy Ghost in the Machine," as a kind of spiritualized "World Anti-Communist League." Obviously, its religious traditions and history would have made it implacably opposed with official Soviet Communist atheism at the deepest and most philosophical level.

However, there is another reason. When I was a college professor, I used to tell my Mediaeval and Modern European history students that the oldest political chancery in continuous operation in the world, the one with the *most* experience in all manner of statecraft, including the use of applied terror as a system of social engineering, was the Vatican. Cottrell puts this points with some force:

> After the Second World War, the Vatican clamped itself to the massive global alliance composed of the United States, NATO and Western intelligence. The common interest clearly lay in a great bulwark against the spread of communism, yet this is to understate the sheer scale of the power the Roman church invested in the great game. The Pope's battalions around the globe include (or so it is claimed) more than a

---

[74] Cottrell, *Gladio: NATO's Dagger at the Heart of Europe: the Pentagon-Nazi-Mafia Terror Axis*, p. 124.

> billion committed worshippers, 400,000 clergy, an impressive global diplomatic service, highly-sophisticated espionage skills and cradle-to-the-grave mind conditioning systems aided by schools, universities and the media. *Taken together they enable the Holy See to* ***perform*** *as a world power.*[75]

The nexus of Vatican intelligence and finance with that of the West and NATO was, of course, the Vatican Bank, for it was this bank that was used in the economic warfare against the Soviet Union unleashed by use of the hidden system of finance enabled by the Nazi and Golden Lily loot, and it was this bank that played such a large role in the transference of funds from the West to Russia that enabled the establishment of the huge post-Soviet corporations such as the Russian energy giant Gazprom.[76]

But this bank also functioned as a key nexus for the laundering of money from the Mafia—witness its ties to Michele Sindona, Roberto Calvi, and Licio Gelli—to the extent that it can be safely maintained that this bank "had been effectively hi-jacked by criminal interests holding strong affinities with the Italian and American Mafia, the Italian secret state and the Gladio sleeping soldiers."[77] It would perhaps not be an exaggeration to say that the Vatican bank was the financial legs to the worldwide Fascist International represented by the World Anti-Communist League.[78]

6. A Key Cultural Indicator that It Really ***Is*** *a Breakaway Civilization: Operation Northwoods*

Our attention has been concentrated throughout this book largely on the *American* components of this international structure, and on its largely Fascist outlook and culture. But can it be truly said that it constitutes a genuinely *breakaway* civilization, one at odds with the overworld with which it is entangled?

---

[75] Cottrell, *Gladio: NATO's Dagger at the Heart of Europe: the Pentagon-Nazi-Mafia Terror Axis*, p. 281, all emphases added. The title of this section of this chapter, "the Holy Ghost in the Machine," was inspired by Cottrell's phrase, that the Vatican was "a holy ghost within the structure of NATO, even to the extent of hosting its own Gladio unit, drawn from the Swiss Guard, the Pontiff's personal protection squad, and the private Vatican police."(p. 16)

[76] Ibid., p. 285.

[77] Ibid., p. 15.

[78] It is worth noting that, according to Cottrell, Permindex, the notorious CIA-sponsored Murder Incorporated in Zurich, was tied to *Centro Mondiale Commerciale* (the Italian franchise of the World Trade Centers), and that it had an Italian "offshoot" of its own, on whose board sat the Vatican-connected, and notorious Fascist founder of the P2 lodge, Licio Gelli.(Cottrell, op. cit., p. 141)

There are two key indicators here, and both lie, once again, with General Lyman Lemnizter and his close relationship to covert operations guru and hidden financial system mandarin, General Ed Lansdale. The first of these indicators is the now well-known, and infamous, Operation Northwoods from March 1962, a Lansdale brainchild of a covert operation, with all the Gladio hallmarks of a false flag enterprise. For the Joint Chiefs of Staff at the time, the problem was "How do we get rid of Communist Cuba?" The answer

> …was perfectly simple. Pentagonia planned to attack the United States.
>
> It is an axiom of American life that all actions of men and women in military uniform are virtually beyond reproach. Hate the war, love the warrior. Yet here, in cold print, were detailed plans for acts of terror to be performed under the American flag on the orders of the highest military commanders in the land. This deadly project… was aimed at garnering international support to justify a full-scale US invasion of Cuba, fostering the illusion the regime in Havana had descended into diabolical lunacy. One proposal—blowing up an American vessel in the Guantanamo Bay and then blaming it on Cuba—slipped straight from the *Maine* playbook.[79]

Yet another plan, in "an eerie premonition" of 9/11,[80] "called for the hijacking of a US passenger jet by special forces disguised as Cuban agents."[81] This aircraft would then drop below radar, being replaced at that instant in the same area by a pilotless airplane which "would crash, purportedly killing all the passengers and crew."[82]

Cottrell rightly observes that "There was not a single item in the Northwoods manual that did not amount to a blatant act of treason,"[83] in other words, the upper echelons of the Pentagon, as a structural component of this international structure, was broken away from its host society, and had become "a full-blown state within a state."[84]

---

[79] Cottrell, *Gladio: NATO's Dagger at the Heart of Europe: The Pentagon-Nazi-Mafia Terror Axis*, p. 84.

[80] Ibid., p. 85.

[81] Ibid.

[82] Ibid. Cottrell goes on to answer the obvious question: "The decoy plane would then land safely somewhere in the US, leaving the question open as to how all those on board could be relied upon to keep silent about their adventure."(p. 85)

[83] Cottrell, *Gladio: NATO's Dagger at the Heart of Europe: the Pentagon-Nazi-Mafia Terror Axis*, p. 85.

But in the wake of the Bay of Pigs fiasco and the Cuban Missile Crisis, the Pentagon abandoned the false flag strategy in order to issue what was clearly an ultimatum to President Kennedy, delivered to him via his Secretary of Defense, Robert McNamara:

> The Joint Chiefs of Staff believe that the Cuban problem must be solved in the near future. Further, they see no prospect of early success in overthrowing the present communist regime either as a result of internal uprising or external political, economic or psychological pressures. Accordingly they believe that military intervention by the United States will be required to overthrow the present communist regime.[85]

Cottrell minces no words concerning the breakaway mentality in evidence:

> Unprecedented in the history of relations between the US military and the White House, the memorandum was couched in uncompromising language that implied a meltdown in relations between the Pentagon and the Commander in Chief. "The Joint Chiefs of Staff believe that the United States can undertake military action in Cuba without risk of general war." Lemnitzer continued. "They also believe that the intervention can be accomplished rapidly enough to minimise communist opportunities, for solicitation of UN action." The tightened leverage was extraordinary in the sense that the chiefs made no attempt to hide the impression they considered their political nuance and judgement overrode the elected president. Lemnizter did not intend to free the Cuban people, who were largely in support of Castro, but shut them up in a US prison colony. "Forces would assure rapid essential military control of Cuba," the president was told. However, "continued police action would be required."[86]

Kennedy of course responded by exiling Lemnitzer to Europe's NATO command.

The breakaway civilization struck back in Dallas.

---

[84] Ibid., p. 89.

[85] Ibid., p. 99.

[86] Ibid., pp. 99-100.

C. The Bearer Bonds Scandals and 9/11 Targets

We arrive at the heart of the covert operation which evidences all these methodologies and structures, and moreover that indicates that there serious fault lines between the factions composing this structure are beginning to emerge: 9/11.

E.P. Heidner, in an important online paper, “Collateral Damage: U.S. Covert Operations and the Terrorist Attacks on September 11, 2001,” outlines the deep historical roots of the attacks on the Pentagon and World Trade Center, and their links to the international structure with which we have been contending. The “op within an op” structure of 9/11 is now taken for granted by many people who question the official explanations of 9/11, and this feature alone ties it to the covert operations methodology of the breakaway civilization.

1. 9/11 and the Hidden System of Finance

There is, however, another possible tie as well, and it is this possible tie with which Heidner’s paper is concerned, for he “contends that not only were the buildings targets, but that specific officers within each building were the designated targets. These offices unknowingly held information which if exposed, subsequently would expose a national security secret of unimaginable magnitude.”[87] This, contends Heidner, was the ultimate motivation for the 9/11 attacks.[88]

What was the secret that was the motivation? Financial crimes were being investigated by the Office of Naval Investigation (ONI), “whose offices in the Pentagon were destroyed on September 11.”[89] Specifically,

> the attacks of September 11th were intended to cover-up the clearing of $240 billion dollars in securities covertly created in September 1991 to fund a covert economic war against the Soviet Union, during which “unknown” western investors bought up much of the Soviet industry, with a focus on oil and gas. The attacks of September 11th also served to derail multiple Federal investigations away from crimes associated with the 1991 covert operation. In doing so, the attacks were justified

---

[87] E. P. Heidner, “Collateral Damage: U.S. Covert Operations and the Terrorist Attacks on September 11, 2001,” www.fourwinds10.com/resources/uploads/pdf/Collateral_Damage_28062008.pdf, p. 1.

[88] Ibid.

[89] Ibid.

> under the cardinal rule of intelligence: "protect your resources" and consistent with a *modus operandi* of sacrificing lives for a greater cause.[90]

With this background, Heidner observes that the Office of Naval Investigation in the Pentagon was located precisely in the wing of the building where American Airlines flight 77 is stated in the official story to have struck the giant office structure.[91] Additionally, other major American brokerage houses appeared to have been the targets of the World Trade Center attacks, and here one begins to note the official story beginning to crumble:

> There were three major securities brokers in the World Trade Center: Cantor Fitzgerald, Eurobrokers and Garbon Inter Capital. On the morning of September 11, Flight 11 hit the North Tower at 8:46 right below the floors on which Cantor Fitzgerald was situated. Cantor Fitzgerald was the US largest securities dealer in the US [sic] and arguably the primary target. Shortly after that, a massive explosion went off just under the FBI offices in the North Tower on the 23rd floor, and Garbon Inter Capital on the 25th floor, and in the basement of Tower 1 as well. The explosion caused the 22nd through 25th floors above to collapse into an inferno. Fires were reported on the 22nd floor at 8:47. Shortly, thereafter, at 9:03, Flight 175 hit the South Tower right below the floors on which Euro Brokers was situated.[92]

It is worth noting that Heidner has also tied the FBI to the investigations of financial malfeasance being researched by the Office of Naval Intelligence.

So why the attacks? What financial malfeasance was so large that it would require such an operation to short circuit investigation and cover-up whatever was being covered-up? Heidner makes the following observations and statements:

> A critical mass of brokers from the major government security brokerages in the Twin Towers had to be eliminated to create chaos in the government securities market. A situation needed to be created wherein $240 billion dollars *of covert securities could be electronically "cleared" without anyone asking questions—which happened when the*

---

[90] E. P. Heidner, "Collateral Damage: U.S. Covert Operations and the Terrorist Attacks on September 11, 2001," p. 1.

[91] Ibid., p. 2.

[92] Ibid.

> *Federal Reserve declared an emergency and invoked its "emergency powers," that very afternoon.*[93]

Additionally, while there was less than a billion dollars of gold bullion in the vaults of the World Trade Center, there were "hundreds of billions of dollars of government securities" which "had to be destroyed."[94] There really are only a few options by which to interpret this remark. One is that the securities constituted legitimate securities that needed to be destroyed because the government had no intention of redeeming or clearing them. This would implicate the U.S. government directly in the planning of the attacks.

But the other interpretation, the one that makes more sense when considered against the backdrop of the Bearer Bonds Scandals, is that the securities represented a direct connection to the covert system of finance that was being used to fund black projects and covert operations, and that they needed to be destroyed lest that system—and the vast system of fraud propping it up—be exposed and destroyed. In this instance, the 9/11 operation becomes an operation of the that deep international extra-territorial "state" that we have detected thus far, and the possibility exists that it is an operation of many levels, with one faction penetrating the operation of another.

2. The Relationship to the Golden Lily Gold and Bearer Bonds Scandals

Why this is so is revealed by a closer look at the 9/11 operation itself. Heidner observes that this hidden system of finance was reliant not only upon the complicity of certain national central banks—or at the minimum, of certain people *within* those banks—but also upon certain very large commercial and international banks, each of which is involved in this international structure of covert finance, industrial scale fraud, and covert operations:

> By the end of the 1980s, the banks that had their agents in the (Office of Strategic Services) intelligence operations at the end of World War II were the banks that would be the dominant global players by 2001:
>
> - Morgan Guaranty Trust
> - Chase Manhattan
> - Citibank

---

[93] E. P. Heidner, "Collateral Damage: U.S. Covert Operations and the Terrorist Attacks on September 11, 2001," p. 1.

[94] Ibid.

- Jardine Matheson
- UBS[95]
- Deutschebank
- HSBC[96]

In other words, it is no longer even the central or prime banks that are the major financial powers, but rather, the intelligence network—the postwar nexus of the American, Euro-Fascist, and Japanese-Asian elites—that has penetrated these institutions to the extent of manipulating them for the purpose of this hidden system of finance. The consequence is almost too horrible to consider, but consider it we must, for the scale of financing evident thus far means that the fraudulent system of the breakaway civilization and the overworld civilization have now become hopelessly entangled, such that to end the one would be to imperil the other.

It is thus not surprising to discover that one of these prime banks, with a deep connection to the postwar Euro-Fascist component of the structure, Deutschebank, is one of the major sources "of the illegal stock options", the put options, "that indicated there was insider trading taking advantage of the September 11 tragedy."[97] Equally suspicious is the fact that its American CEO, Mayo Shattuck, was not only *not* at his office on the day of the attacks, but suddenly resigned without any explanations on the day after the tragedy.[98]

So what happened? Why were the attacks made? What do they have to do with the hidden system of finance and the breakaway civilization? Heidner's answer here is not only breathtaking, but heart-stopping, and hence, it is necessary to cite his remarks in toto:

> On the first day of the crisis, the (Securities and Exchange Commission) lifted "rule 15c3-3—Customer Protection—Reserves and Custody of Securities," which set trading rules for the following processes:

---

[95] UBS, United Bank of Switzerland.

[96] HSBC, Hong Kong and Shanghai Bank. E. P. Heidner, "Collateral Damage: U.S. Covert Operations and the Terrorist Attacks on September 11, 2001," p. 12.

[97] Ibid., p. 17.

[98] Ibid. Heidner notes that Mohammed Atta, one of the alleged hijackers, "received funding from three foreign intelligence agencies aligned with the U.S.: Pakistan, Syria and Germany. His father contended he actually worked for a fourth—the Mossad!"(p. 39.)

> *The (seller) is not permitted to substitute other securities for those subject to this agreement and therefore must keep the (buyer's) securities segregated at all times, unless in this agreement the (buyer) grants the (seller) the right to substitute other securities....*[99]

In other words, and simply put, the Government Securities Clearing Corporation "was allowed *to substitute securities for the physical securities destroyed during the attack."*[100]

However, there was more. The Government Securities Clearing Corporation issued an memorandum in the wake of the attacks that "…collateral substitutes can *and should be made* with regard to immediately maturing collateral."[101] In other words, the covert bonds were destroyed, and their holders were issued new paper once again. In effect, the whole fraudulent system was partially reset, and re-financed.

But it gets worse.

After this memorandum, the Government Securities Clearing Corporation issued yet another memo, this time authorizing and expanding what are called blind broker settlements.

> A "blind broker" is a mechanism for inter-dealer transactions that maintains the anonymity of both parties to the trade. The broker serves as the agent to the principals' transactions.
>
> > *"The only repo transactions entered into by blind brokers should be those done in direct furtherance of clean-up and reconciliation efforts. Now new blind brokered business should be executed."*
>
> At this point in time, the Federal Reserve and its (Government Securities Clearing Corporation) ***had created a settlement environment totally void of controls and reporting—where it could substitute valid, new government securities for the mature, illegal securities, and not have to record where the bad securities came from, or where the new securities went—all because the paper for the primary brokers for US securities had been eliminated***.[102]

Ponder the implications of this conclusion, for not even Heidner, for all his careful research, appears to understand the wider implications of his remarks for the *structure* of the breakaway civilization, and what the

---

[99] E. P. Heidner, "Collateral Damage: U.S. Covert Operations and the Terrorist Attacks on September 11, 2001," p. 29, emphasis in the original.

[100] Ibid., emphasis added.

[101] Ibid., emphasis added.

[102] Ibid., Italicized emphasis in the original, italicized and boldface emphasis added.

9/11 attacks indicate may be happening within it, even though he is acutely aware of the deep relationship of the attacks to the hidden covert financial structure enabled by the postwar detente with the Nazi International and the utilization of the Golden Lily loot. The implications are none other than that *if the American component of this structure is having to substitute legitimate U.S. securities for the fraudulent ones, then it is under* ***external*** *factional pressure to do so.*

Why would it be under such pressure?

One answer might lie in the fact that the American government agencies investigating the financial fraud that was by then too large to keep easily hidden were beginning to discover another aspect of the hidden system, namely, the outright theft of gold bullion. Heidner puts the point this way:

> …President George H.W. Bush had initiated a number of related covert operations to takeover certain sectors of the Soviet economy, and ten years later in 2001, these programs had finally come back to haunt the U.S. policy makers. Most, if not all of these programs appear to have stepped outside the boundaries of the law. As a result, investigative agencies from Britain, Switzerland, Russia, Kazakhstan and the Philippines were putting pressure on congress and the U.S. Department of Justice to open up the accounts in the banks used to finance these covert activities, which were being viewed as criminal activities in foreign courts. Alan Greenspan, the Treasury Department and key banks in the U.S. and Europe *were being sued for gold-price fixing or illegal gold sales which appears to have (its) origins in the covert war chest used to wage this war.* At the same time, the suits brought by the Holocaust survivors, victims of the Marcos regime, and the US Congress under influence of pro-Israeli lobbyists were putting pressure on the Swiss banking cartel to open (its) bullion records to public scrutiny. *Full disclosure by these banks during an investigation would have resulted in a major exposure of U.S. Government complicity in some of the greatest financial fraud of the 1980s and early 1990s as well as 50 years of gold bullion theft by numerous U.S. and British government agencies.*[103]

In reality, however, what would have been revealed by such exposure would not have been U.S. Government complicity, but something far most extensive, and much deeper, namely, the breakaway civilization itself, its network, resources, and methods. From the point of view of the breakaway civilization, it is not gold-price fixing or even stealing bullion, it is waging war, and its loyalties lie to itself, and not to the host nations—be they the U.K. or U.S.A.—at all.[104]

---

[103] E. P. Heidner, "Collateral Damage: U.S. Covert Operations and the Terrorist Attacks on September 11, 2001," p. 6, emphasis added.

But what, precisely, was the real "crime" that had to be covered-up, in addition to "bullion theft" and "gold price fixing"?

Answer: the biggest covert operation of all time: the engineered economic collapse of a world superpower: the Soviet Union.

3. Covert War Against the Soviet Union

Heidner and others have documented a covert operation called Project Hammer, a plan many believe was formulated by Ronald Reagan's Director of the CIA, William Casey.[105] This project was nothing less than a "multi-billion dollar covert operation" involving shielded third world investments, and included four components:

1) the theft of all of the Soviet Union's gold bullion(!);
2) the destabilization of the ruble;
3) the funding of the August 1991 KGB Generals' coup against Soviet premier Mikhail Gorbachev; and last, but not least,
4) the corporatization, and subsequent take-over by agents of the western financial oligarchy, of key Russian energy and defense industries.[106]

The group within the administration of G.H.W. Bush executing this four-tiered covert operation called themselves the Vulcan Group, after the Roman god of war, utilizing the by-now familiar war chest made possible by all the re-hypothecated gold represented by the deal with Chiang Kai-Shek, the Golden Lily loot, and, of course, those monies from the Nazis laundered after the war through western banks, a "war chest invisible to congressional oversight."[107]

---

[104] Heidner notes that when government securities trading opened again in the wake of the attacks that at the first auction "the Federal Reserve did not have enough 'takers' of the new 10 year notes." (E. P. Heidner, "Collateral Damage: U.S. Covert Operations and the Terrorist Attacks on September 11, 2001," p. 30.) In other words, even the high players were no longer trusting the Federal Reserve. In this context, it is worth pondering the implications of the fact that the Bearer Bonds Scandals occur *after* 9/11. In any case, the *financial* aspects of 9/11 can be viewed as a partial re-set and reboot of the hidden system of finance and its spillover implications to the overworld. (Q.v. Heidner, p. 32.)

[105] Ibid., p. 5.

[106] Ibid.

Key to the operation was a consultancy group based in Switzerland called the Riggs-Valmet group, established by President G.H.W. Bush.[108] Key to this operation were four Russian oligarchs: Mikhail Khordokovsky, who was of course one of the principal Russian oligarchs subsequently arrested and imprisoned by President Vladimir Putin, Alexander Konanykhine, Boris Beresovsky, and Roman Abramovich.[109] It was Khordokovsky who was "responsible for setting up the primary financial organization for taking over Russian oil and gas industries, as well as moving money out of the country: Bank Menatep."[110] To enable this vast covert war, President Bush was apparently behind the issuance of $240 billion dollars worth of secret bonds for the operation.[111]

As the first phase of this operation, Bush "authorized Leo Wanta and others to destabilize the ruble and facilitate the theft of the Soviet/Russian treasury. *This would result in draining the Russian treasury of between 2,000 to 3,000 tonnes* [sic] *of gold bullion*."[112] The bullion had to be stolen for the plan to destabilize the ruble depended upon the Soviets' inability to re-stabilize it via use of the bullion.

Once the bullion was literally stolen from the Soviet treasury, the assault on the ruble began, and the West began to push money back into Russia in a massive buy-out of Russian energy industries, while the fake coup was mounted against Gorbachev that brought Boris Yeltsin into power, who, like President Nursultan Nazarbayev of Kazakhstan were both in the pocket of Bush's Vulcan group. Since two out of three votes were required under the Soviet constitution to dissolve it, and since both men were complete puppets of the west and its oligarchs of the hidden finance, the outcome was predictable.[113]

> The coup actually seems to have been a long time in the making, with Yeltsin having discussed the coup with Bush during his visit to the

---

[107] E. P. Heidner, "Collateral Damage: U.S. Covert Operations and the Terrorist Attacks on September 11, 2001," p. 5.

[108] Ibid., p. 24.

[109] Ibid.

[110] Ibid., p. 25.

[111] Ibid.

[112] Ibid., p. 18, emphasis added. The story of Leo Wanta is far to complex to enter into here, but it is a crucial component of the story, as is that of Dale Vreeland.

[113] Ibid., p. 20.

> United States in June of 1991. That same summer, Yeltsin dined "discretely" with the Chairman of the New York Federal Reserve, Gerald Corrigan, while the rest of the Moscow mission dined with Gorbachev.[114]

Corrigan in turn was involved in the planned destabilization of the ruble, along with notorious currency speculator George Soros, and Ronald Lauder, an heir of the Este Lauder estate, and the N.M. Rothschild Continuation Trust, and the Bank of New York.[115]

It is the Bank of New York that is the connection that most readily identifies the 9/11 World Trade Center attacks as a covert war operation against the overworld financial center, an operation designed to cloak the hidden system of finance and its activities, and to maintain its integrity against growing pressures to expose it, for the Bank of New York, even though it had no physical facilities in the World Trade Center and was one of the major New York banks *not* directly involved in the attacks, was nevertheless the only major New York bank whose operations were severely disrupted on September 11, 2001. Indeed, during the week after 9/11, the *Wall Street Journal* reported that the Bank of New York was reported to be overdue "on $100 billion in payments."[116] But that is not all:

> The Deutschebank, which sat inside the World Trade Center and was totally decimated, reported no such account balance increase, and JP Morgan, the other of only two clearing banks which uses the same traders and communications hub, reported no such increase in its account balance. No one has publicly asked: why is it that these other two banks were not seriously disrupted, while the Bank of New York—which had no structural damage, seemed unable to operate?[117]

The problem was that the Bank of New York's communications facilities were located in Utica, N.Y.,[118] and were thus not anywhere near lower Manhattan at all. Why then was it alone of all the major New York banks having such difficulties in clearing?

Heidner's answer is chilling:

---

[114] E. P. Heidner, "Collateral Damage: U.S. Covert Operations and the Terrorist Attacks on September 11, 2001," p. 20.

[115] Ibid., pp. 20-21.

[116] Ibid., p. 31.

[117] Ibid.

[118] Ibid., p. 32.

> In a reported setting of half truths and speculations by Federal Reserve analysts made to appear as facts, review of the reports of the financial aftermath of September 11th suggest:
>
> - The disruptions to the U.S. financial system were not as widespread as the reports from the Federal reserve would have the public believe, but that the public had to be made to perceive a widespread need for declaring a national financial emergency, suspending key provisions of the Federal Reserve Act and driving the "ten-year special rate" to almost zero.
> - Certain key unknown figures in the Federal Reserve may have "conspired" with key unknown figures at the Bank of New York to create a situation where $240 billion in off balance sheet securities created in 1991 as part of an official covert operation to overthrow the Soviet Union, could be cleared without publicly acknowledging their existence.
> - These securities, originally managed by Cantor Fitzgerald, were clear and settled in the aftermath of September 11th through the (Bank of New York). The $100 billion account balance bubble reported by the Wall Street Journal as being experienced in the (Bank of New York) was the tip of a three day operation, when these securities were moved from off-balance-sheet to the balance sheet…
> - By reducing the "ten-year special rate" to almost zero, the Fed structurally increased the number of refinancing (Repo) settlement fails. Under the umbrella of this artificially created statistical bump of fails, the high level of fails due to the laundering of the $240 billion was able to be processed unnoticed.
> - The cover for this bubble is found in the footnotes to the (Bank of New York) annual and quarterly reports, which report that the (Bank of New York) took over $330 billion of commercial securities business from U.S. Trust between June and October 0f 2001, although the assets under control of U.S. Trust in 2000 were reported by two sources as $80 or $86 billion.[119]

Succinctly put, there was no real financial emergency other than the need to create a large enough emergency of a different sort, in order to clear the false securities completely from the books, and replace them with new paper. It was a grizzly example of misdirection and sleight of hand.

At the deepest level, 9/11 was a work of the breakaway civilization, and of its major structural components. And as for the prelude operation to 9/11—the collapse of the Soviet Union—Claire Sterling put it best:

---

[119] E. P. Heidner, "Collateral Damage: U.S. Covert Operations and the Terrorist Attacks on September 11, 2001," p. 32.

"The ability of three or four characters to mount such a planet wide operation, their extraordinary impact on what was still a world superpower, and their singular immunity from beginning to end suggest the guiding hand of not just one, but several intelligence agencies."[120] Put differently, it was the act of an international extra-territorial state against one of its host countries.

D. Conclusions and The Technological Transition

What we have now discovered is a vast covert operations slush fund, a hidden fund, involving billions of dollars in securities and stolen and re-hypothecated bullion, one based upon the permanence or semi-permanence of financial fraud and terrorism as its operative principles, in keeping with the total culture of total power. But there is hovering in the background an unresolved question, namely, that the scale of financial fraud implicated in the Bearer Bonds Scandals is in the *trillions*, not *billions* of dollars. In other words, something else lurks in the portfolio, something not yet accounted for.

In the 9/11 scenario thus far portrayed, we have not yet dealt with the technologies implied by some aspects of the operation. In doing so, as we will discover, there may be yet other hidden players revealed. But some aspects of this technological side of the financial equation, and its connection to covert operations, may be gleaned by a look back, once again, at Operation Northwoods, the 1960s Pentagon plan to commit false flag terrorist attacks on Americans to justify an invasion of Cuba. Once again, Richard Cottrell pries open the door:

> Northwoods included the archly cynical operation Dirty trick, a plot to blame Castro if the 1962 Mercury space shot carrying John Glenn crashed: "The objective is to provide irrevocable proof that, should the Mercury manned orbit flight fail, the fault lies with the Communists et al Cuba. This to be accomplished by manufacturing various pieces of evidence which would prove electronic interference on the part of the Cubans." Composed by Brigadier General Bill Craig and sent on 2nd February 1962 to his boss General Edward Lansdale, who oversaw the

---

[120] Claire Sterling, "Thieves' World," cited in E.P. Heidner, "Collateral Damage: U.S. Covert Operations and the Terrorist Attacks on September 11, 2001," p. 26.

> long (and completely fruitless) Cuban destabilisation programme called Operation Mongoose.[121]

With the mention of space-based or space-connected covert operations, we are now entering the technological aspect of the breakaway civilization and culture, to the invention and operational use of the technologies of plausible deniability. For these sorts of operations and technologies, one would indeed need trillions of dollars in totally untraceable funding. Indeed, in the early years of the Cold War, and even until today, there are indicators that sabotage of Soviet space efforts may have been undertaken by the West…

…and by "someone else" against both the Soviet bloc *and* the West.

But first before we venture into outer space, we must first get a grip on the earth, as Nikola Tesla said.[122]

---

[121] Richard Cottell, *Gladio: NATO's Dagger at the Heart of Europe: The Pentagon-Nazi-Mafia Terror Axis*, p. 464.

[122] Q.v. my *Babylon's Banksters*, p. 149.

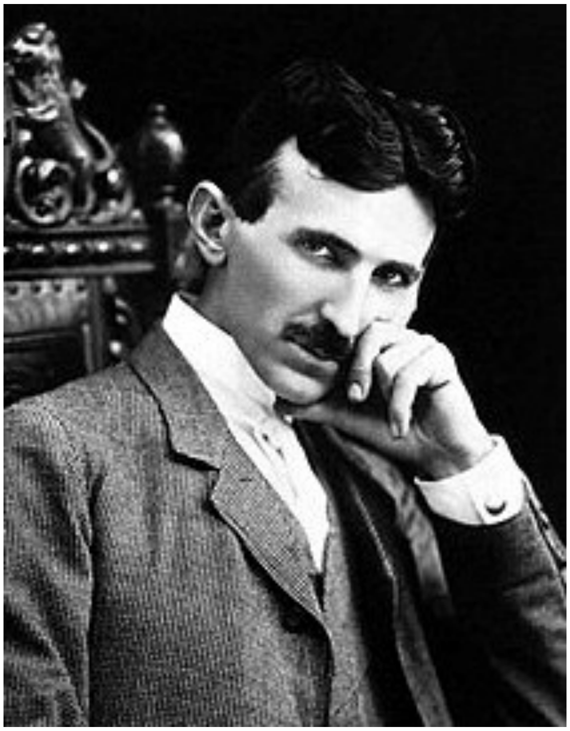

Nikola Tesla, 1856-1943.

7

KARDASHEV'S CLASSES AND COVERT CONFLICT, PART ONE:

ENGINEERING THE TECHNOLOGIES OF PLAUSIBLY DENIABLE MASS DESTRUCTION

"Others are engaging even in an eco-type of terrorism whereby they can alter the climate, set off earthquakes, volcanoes remotely through the use of electromagnetic waves.
"So there are plenty of ingenious minds out there that are at work finding ways in which they can wreak terror upon other nations. It's real, and that's the reason why we have to intensify our efforts."
William S. Cohen, U.S. Secretary of Defense, 1997[1]

"Mother Nature gives great plausible deniability."
Jerry Smith[2]

Imagine, if you will, a conjunction of technologies and agendas: suppose there was a secret technology to manipulate the weather, to create earthquakes, even perhaps to manipulate or influence mass coronal ejecta from the Sun. Such, in effect, is what former U.S. Secretary of Defense William S. Cohen, cited in the first epigraph above, would not only have us imagine, but he would also have us imagine something else, something subtly implied by his unusually revealing choice of words. "There are," he says, "plenty of ingenious minds out there that are at work finding ways in which they can wreak terror upon other nations." They are, to use the Secretary's own choice of words, simply, "others." Not other *nations*, just *others.* The words are oddly ambiguous, and moreover, if taken at face value, Cohen is implying that a whole host of technologies to control the planet's weather systems, to set off earthquakes or fire up volcanoes, are in the hands of these "others" and that, accordingly "that's the reason why we have to intensify our efforts," presumably to acquire the same technology as the "others." As we shall discover in this chapter, there is a case that indeed there were "others", at least in the Soviet Union, working on such things, but we shall also discover an odd Soviet-American cooperation in precisely this technology, implying not only that the two superpowers may have been waging a covert warfare against each other under the cover of mother nature, but that they may both have been more concerned about "others."

---

[1] Jerry Smith, *Weather Warfare: The Military's Plan to Draft Mother Nature*(Adventures Unlimited Press, 2006), p. i. Q.v. http://www.defense.gov/transcripts/transcript.aspx?transcriptid=674.

[2] Ibid., p. vi.

Suppose for a moment, that the "others" are the same international groups that we have found connected to the hidden system of finance: intelligence agencies and agents, NATO covert operations cells, interfaces with International Fascism and drug syndicates, and the Anglo-American financial-military-industrial-intelligence complex. Imagine this technology is then in the hands of the same factions that know about the hidden system of finance, factions with connections to the financial oligarchy. How would one confirm the existence of this strange nexus?

One method to search for such linkages would be to look for massive and strange anomalous securities or currency activities *preceding* or shortly succeeding "natural" disasters. One would have to determine, firstly, if such technologies existed, and by implication, how far *back* in history they could be traced; secondly, how these technologies are thought to work and therefore what sorts of signatures they might show; and thirdly, if any peculiar financial activity *preceded* such events, indicating foreknowledge on the part of those behind such activities, implicating them in the knowledge and control of such technologies, or alternatively, if there are any documentable connections between these factions and the technologies themselves. In the remainder of this book we will discuss three events from this methodological point of view: the Indonesian tsunami, the Fukushima "earthquake" and "tsunami", and the destruction of the Twin Towers of the World Trade Center on 9/11.

But first we must have a working grasp of the technologies themselves and the military and geopolitical doctrines they compel.

A. The Total Culture of Total Power and Control, and the Doctrine of Full Spectrum Dominance

In the preface I noted that the Kardashev system of civilization classification according to energy requirements also implied the technological corollary of being able to manipulate the very systems its required for energy. Thus, a class one civilization implied the technology to manipulate a planet, or at least, systems on a planetary scale; a class two civilization implied the ability to manipulate a star and its systems, while, finally, a class three civilization implied the ability to manipulate a galaxy and its systems. As noted in the preface, the UFO phenomenon implies at least class one capabilities.

The theoretical achievement of such technological capabilities, even at a class one level, would result in a new military doctrine, that of "Full Spectrum Dominance," and in turn, both doctrine and technologies would engender a new geopolitical imperative.

With the collapse of the Soviet Union, a collapse aided and abetted, if not engineered, by the covert system of finance and the factions that controlled it, the Anglo-American core of this breakaway civilization moved quickly to a posture of attempting to dominate the entire planet. This attempt was manifest in the U.S. Pentagon's doctrine of Full Spectrum Dominance, "and as its name implied, its agenda was to control everything everywhere including the high seas, land, air, space and even outer space and cyber space."[3] It is important to note that the implied *basis* of the sought-after domination was *technological*: "The strategists of Full Spectrum Dominance envisioned control of pretty much the entire universe, including outer and inner-space, from the galaxy to the mind."[4] Full Spectrum Dominance, in other words, means nothing less than the domination of every potential theater of war via the achievement and maintenance of technological superiority in those theaters, whether that theater is the human mind, planet Earth, nearby local terrestrial space, or, outer space. The corollary of this doctrine is the doctrine so-called Escalation Dominance, the "ability to win a war at any level of violence, including nuclear war."[5]

While this certainly follows from the idea that one can only dominate any potential theater of operations via technological means, it also means that technological end-runs around nuclear weapons—strategic weapons of much more destructive potential with much less blowback cost to their user—would be sought as the ultimate means of "Escalation Dominance," weapons moreover that could be deployed with plausible deniability, masking themselves as acts of God or nature. By the nature of the case, these would be weapons capable of manipulating systems on the planetary scale, of weaponizing planet Earth herself, her weather and geodetic features. When allied with the covert operations and hidden system of finance, the doctrine is a recipe for perpetual warfare.[6]

---

[3] F. William Engdahl, *Full Spectrum Dominance: Totalitarian Democracy in the New World Order* (Progressive Press, 2011), p. vii.

[4] Ibid., p. 55. Engdahl also observed that the cornerstone of this strategy was the control of energy via the "big Four Anglo-American private oil giants = ChevronTexaco(sic), ExxonMobil, BP and Royal Dutch Shell…". The question is, how would control of the Earth's petroleum lead necessarily to the idea of controlling everything from the mind to the galactic reaches of outer space, which no conventional petroleum-based technology is even remotely capable of reaching? The answer to this question lies, as we shall see later in this chapter, in the geopolitical imperatives implies by the new technology.

[5] Ibid., p. 142.

Indeed, covert operations forms one of the foundations for this perpetual warfare doctrine, for with hidden systems of finance to support it, one's own, or one's purported enemies, now assumed a "non-local" characteristic, for an enemy could be "everywhere and nowhere"[7] permitting a great latitude for the breakaway civilization to conduct operations free of the normal constraints of the overworld's civilizations and laws with which it is connected.[8]

As already noted, the "total culture of total power" spawned a doctrine of full spectrum dominance, i.e., the idea that Pentagonia would have to seek and develop the technologies and techniques of dominance of every operational field of potential conflict, including not only planetary systems, but the decision-making and interpretive processes of the mind itself. This began in a fashion that once again highlights the deep parapolitical structure and interface between high finance, intelligence, and the scientific world, for "Beginning in the 1950s, for example, with covert funding from Nelson Rockefeller's Department of Health, Education and Welfare, the CIA engaged in a program given the code name 'MK-ULTRA.'"[9] Rockefeller not only channeled government funds from his department to the secret CIA program, but MK-Ultra was "secretly co-funded by the Rockefeller Foundation" as well as by "funds specifically earmarked for MK-ULTRA from projects by Nelson Rockefeller—then President Eisenhower's Under Secretary for Health, Education and Welfare and later his Special Assistant Cold War Strategy and Psychological Warfare."[10] In other words, by funding such projects privately, the financial faction was also buying an interest in whatever technologies and techniques as could be gained from the project.[11]

---

[6] See Engdahl, *Full Spectrum Dominance: Totalitarian Democracy in the New World Order,* pp. 77-78, for a review of the Pentagon's preparations for "perpetual resource warfare." It is worth noting that during an interview I had with Mr. Whitley Strieber in the summer of 2012, that Mr. Strieber related a story told to him by one of his contacts within the American military-industrial complex, namely, that if one ever initiated a hostile action against the so-called grays—i.e., started a war with them—they would never let one win, nor lose; it would simply mean perpetual war. If true, this strongly suggests a spiritual component to the phenomenon which would in turn suggest that the breakaway civilization has some sort of experience in this regard, and that the perpetual resource warfare may be a disguise for something else. While this may appear totally implausible at first reading, given the technological capabilities that we will explore in the rest of this book and the geopolitical imperatives created by the capabilities to weaponize planet Earth and its systems themselves, these technologies by the nature of the case imply tremendous new energy sources, rendering the long term need to dominate resources moot, and therefore presenting the possibility that this is a deep layer of disinformation of its own.

[7] Ibid., p. vi. Engdahl makes this observation specifically in reference to the events of 9/11.

[8] An example of this would be the formation of the American Security Council (ASC) whose members, Engdahl notes, included Walt Disney, Averell Harriman, Senator Henry "Scoop" Jackson, General Douglas MacArthur, US House Speaker Sam Rayburn, Eisenhower's National security Advisor and Latin America CIA director Nelson Reckefeller, and so on.(Engdalh, op. cit., p. 182.) As Engdalh observes, the ASC spun off other decidedly pro-axis groups, such as the America First committee, headed by General Robert E. Wood, Chairman of Sear, Roebuck, and Co.(Engdalh, op. cit., p. 183.) and the American Coalition of Patriotic Societies, which "sponsored various racist and eugenics causes"(Ibid.).

As similar pattern was in evidence in space affairs.

Dr Richard C. Cook was a NASA analyst at the time of the space shuttle *Challenger* disaster of 1986, and had testified to Congress concerning the faulty O-rings that were ultimately sited in the official reports as the cause of the disaster. For Cook, the chief cause lay in something much deeper than engineering deficiencies in the O-ring; it lay in the mingling of civilian and military objectives within NASA.[12] Cook lay the ultimate cause at the feet of President Reagan's "Star Wars" nuclear missile defense system:

---

[9] Engdahl, *Full Spectrum Dominance*, p. 38.

[10] Ibid.

[11] Rosalie Bertell, in her *Planet Earth: the Latest Weapon of War* (The Women's Press, 2000), p. 103 notes that during a press release given on 30 May 2000, US Joint Chiefs of Staff Chairman General Henry H. Shelton stated that one crucial component of the doctrine of full spectrum dominance includes the use of "deception to 'defend decision-making processes by neutralizing an adversary's perception management and intelligence collection efforts.' Faced with such obscure language, the lay reader can only speculate as to what this might entail. The press release concluded that information warfare will become as important as 'that conducted in the domains of land, air and space.' China's military also has stated that it intends to make information warfare a capability equal in stature to its army, navy and air forces."

[12] Engdahl, op. cit.., p. 146.

> …(It) was not until after the presidential commission which investigated the disaster completed its work that I learned why NASA kept flying shuttle missions after the worst damage to date had occurred on the seals during a January 1985 cold-weather flight, a full year before Challenger blew up. It was because a launch commit criterion for joint temperature could interfere with the military flights NASA planned to launch for the Air Force out of Vandenberg Air force base in California, where the weather tended to be cooler than in Florida. *Many of these flights were to carry 'Star Wars experiments in preparation for possible future deployment of 'third-generation' nuclear weapons, such as the x-ray laser.*[13]

At the time, an x-ray laser consisted of a bundle of special rods designed to produce a cohered beam of high frequency x-rays, like a laser beam, which would be set off by an atom bomb, thus consuming the weapon in a "one use" scenario. Ostensibly, the x-ray laser was for the purpose of shooting down Soviet missiles at distance through the atmosphere, since they would generate the enormous amounts of energy needed to vaporize the targets. But consider: such a weapon, really, is more offensive than defensive in nature, for with sufficient size and phase conjugation, it could be used offensively against strategic ground targets. In effect, such third generation nuclear weapons made the ICBM obsolescent, and gave its possessors a technological capability that did an end-run around the strategic thermonuclear arsenals of the two super-powers and the other nuclear powers.[14]

But, there was more, for in the wake of the G.W. Bush Administration decision in 2006 to allow the weaponization of space and its unilateral withdrawal from the American-Soviet treaties pledging not to do so, and its decision to press ahead with new Moon and Mars programs, the game, according to Cook, changed:

> To date, the principal beneficiary of the moon-Mars [sic] program is Lockheed Martin, to which NASA awarded a prime contract with a potential value stated at $8.15 billion. Already the world's largest defense contractor, Lockheed Martin's stock yielded an instant bonanza, rising more than seven percent in the five weeks following NASA's August 2996 announcement.

---

[13] Engdahl, *Full Spectrum Dominance*, p. 147, emphasis added.

[14] These technological advances may also explain why the two super-powers so drastically curtailed their strategic missile systems in the aftermath of the Soviet collapse; in short, their impending obsolescence made them inefficient weapons systems to maintain.

> NASA is not paying the giant of the military-industrial complex $8.15 billion to have people hop around and hit golf balls on the moon. The aim of the moon-Mars program is US dominance, as suggested by NASA Administrator Michael Griffin's statements that 'my language'—i.e., English—and not those of 'another, bolder or more persistent culture will be passed down over the generations to future lunar colonies.'[15]

In other words, again, the pattern of high finance and corporate dominance of a technological capability, independent of its "overseeing" government, looms large.

But Cook went on to detail in a private communication with researcher F. William Engdahl yet another concern:

> I believe that the US Establishment is in fact planning a nuclear first strike on Russia. There is a profound split within the US military, however, in that the Army and Navy and elements of the Air Force still view their job as a defensive force to secure the safety of the United States. The element of the military which aims for world conquest, even through a (nuclear) first strike, includes higher echelons of the Air Force, the Missile Defense Agency, and that part of the civilian (Pentagon) leadership most aligned with the powerful financial forces that are the real overseers of the country.[16]

Factional infighting—in this case within elements of the military component, and the financial one—could, and according to Cook indeed *were* occurring in the 1980s. Such infighting is, in a sense, the inevitable result of the tensions between those:

1) who know *how to make or build* the technology, i.e., the scientific and engineering component;
2) who know *how to deploy or use* the technology, i.e., the military component; and,
3) who claim partial ownership or interest in the technology by dint of having *funded* it, namely, the financial interests.

Technologies such as the x-ray laser represented a real potential for those knowing how to build and deploy such technologies to break away not only from their 'overseers' in government but from their presumed financial masters. Citing a massive four-volume study of future weapons technologies commissioned by the US Air Force Chief of Staff in 1995-96 entitled *Air Force 2025*, Engdahl observes that the technologies referred to in the study "were considered the systems necessary" for the United States to remain the world's dominant air and space power.[17] One such system was an orbital bombardment platform launching small solid projectiles which would be used to "penetrate the earth to a depth of half a mile" in order to destroy underground bunkers and other targets.[18] Yet another system was a space-based laser cannon, which would not only be capable of attacking "ground or airborne targets by melting or cracking cockpit canopies, burning through control cables, exploding fuel tanks… exploding or melting munitions pods" and so on, but also of "burning a large variety of strategic targets," which could be anything from "damns, industrial and defense facilities and munitions factories," and all of this "in a fraction of a second."[19] Let it be noted that such a laser cannon is hardly a *defensive* weapon, but rather, an *offensive* one and a strategic one at that, since it is capable of pinpoint mass destruction in an instant and, unlike a nuclear bomb, presumably re-useable. Let it also be noted that robotic technologies would, in turn, allow the deployment of such weaponry in *deep* space against potential targets not even on this planet.

---

[15] Engdahl, *Full Spectrum Dominance*, p. 148.

[16] Ibid., pp. 148-149.

The potential of all of these developments to lead to a breakaway civilization were noted by Dr. Robert Bowman, "a retired Lieutenant

---

[17] Engdahl, *Full Spectrum Dominance*, p. 160.

[18] Ibid., p. 161.

[19] Ibid., pp. 160-161, citing *Air Force 2025,* Vol. 13, Ch 3, "The Integrated Systems-of-Systems," 21. Rosalie Bertell, in her important study *Planet Earth: The Latest Weapon of War* (The Women's Press, Ltd., 2000), p. 92, reports on the USA's MIRACL, or Mid-Infrared Advanced Chemical Laser, which "uses deuterium fluoride and helium," which has been tested on orbiting obsolete satellites in space from its base on the ground at the White Sands base in New Mexico. Bertell also notes that "According to *Defense News*, 13-19 April 1992, the US deployed an electromagnetic pulse weapon (EMP)" during Operation Desert Storm that was "designed to mimic the flash of electricity from a nuclear bomb" and which is "capable of knocking out communications over a wide area."(p. 100). A much more powerful version of this system, called Hermes III is based at the Sandia National Laboratory in New Mexico, and "is capable for producing 20 trillion watt pulses lasting 20 billionths to 25 billionths of a second…"(p. 100). The US military also discovered that using phased array over-the-horizon radars known as PAVE PAWS (Precision Acquisition Vehicle re-Entry Phased Array Warning System) could crash airplanes or launch or explode the a military aircraft's missiles.(pp. 101-102). Significantly, the USA's HAARP (High Altitude Auroral Research Project), and Europe's/Germany's EISCAT are both such phased arrays.

Colonel of the US Air Force who directed the US Government's early anti-missile defense effort when it was still top secret…".[20] Bowman comments on the implication of the *Air Force 2025* study by noting that it mirrored

> …the results of studies we performed in the 1970s and early 1980s. The difference is that then we considered the results sufficient reason to continue our national policy of keeping weapons out of space, while now they entice the hawks into discarding treaty constraints and pursuing a still more total form of absolute military superiority. Bush's first budget quadrupled the spending on laser battle stations. in his new budget, he gives the space warriors an essentially blank check. Now he has once again renamed and reorganized the Pentagon office doing 'Star Wars.'
>
> Under Reagan and Bush I, it was the Strategic Defense Initiative Organization (SDIO). Under Clinton, it became the Ballistic Missile Defense Organization (BMDO). Now Bush II had made it the Missile Defense Agency (MDA) and given it the freedom from oversight and audit previously enjoyed only by the black programs. *If Congress doesn't act soon, this new independent agency may take their essentially unlimited budget and spend it outside of public and Congressional scrutiny on weapons we won't know anything about until they're in space. In theory, then, the space warriors would rule the world, able to destroy any target on earth without warning.*[21]

It should be evident by now that, given the extensive financing represented in previous chapters, that the likelihood is that these technologies were *already* developed and most likely deployed, again without oversight. The *Air Force 2025* study was merely announcing their existence, and, pace Bowman, announcing the very distinct possibility that these technologies now constituted something utterly outside the normal channels of oversight, and hence the "military arm" of a breakaway civilization.

---

[20] Engdahl, *Full Spectrum Dominance*, p. 161.

[21] Ibid., p. 161, emphasis added.

B. Weaponizing Planet Earth:
The Technologies of Geophysical Warfare and the Achievement of Kardashev Class One Civilization Capabilities
1. Weather Warfare

Frightening as these inventories and capabilities are, however, they pale by comparison to those which weaponize planet Earth herself, weapons that indicate most clearly that a very small segment of humanity has truly broken away from the rest, and pulled ahead of the civilization the vast bulk of us live in. Former Carter Administration national security advisor, and geopolitical guru Zbigniew Brzezinkski noted this overall trend within human civilization as one component, by dint of the acquisition of these types of breathtaking capabilities began to pull away from the rest of humanity, a phenomenon he called the "technetronic revolution":

> The cumulative effect of the technetronic revolution is contradictory. On the one hand, this revolution marks the beginnings of a global community; on the other hand, it fragments humanity and detaches it from its traditional moorings. The technetronic revolution is widening the spectrum of the human condition… The result could be a profound three-way split in the attitudes and views of mankind. The coexistence of agrarian, industrial, and new technetronic societies, each providing different perspectives on life, would make understanding more difficult at the very time it becomes more possible, and it would render the global acceptance of certain norms less likely even as it becomes more imperative.[22]

Just what are these technological capabilities that would introduce such a split? They are, as Brzezinski avers, mostly military in nature:

> In addition to improved rocketry, multi-missiles, and more powerful and more accurate bombs, *future developments may well include automated or manned space warships, deep-sea installations*, chemical and biological weapons, death rays, and still other forms of warfare—*even the weather may be tampered with. These new weapons could either encourage expectations of one-sided, relatively "inexpensive" victory; permit proxy contests that will be decisive in their strategic political outcome but will be fought by only a few human beings… or even by robots in outer space*; or simply create such mutual instability

---

[22] Zbigniew Brzezinski, *Between Two Ages: America's Role in the Technetronic Era* (Penguin 1979), p. 52.

> that the breakdown of peace will become inevitable, in spite of man's rational recognition of the futility of war.[23]

Brzezinski foresaw the consequences of technological developments almost forty years ago when he first wrote *Between Two Ages*, developments that, with the capability of manipulating the weather itself—which is ultimately, let it be recalled, a *planetary* system and therefore on the cusp of Civilization One class capabilities—would allow one, as the late Jerry Smith observe, to conduct "war covertly by causing droughts, storms, volcanic eruptions and floods" and thus raising the question "how would the general public know if such a war were being fought?"[24]

The question is a profound one, and implies the methodology we must pursue: One would have to have a knowledge of the basic principles and deployment capabilities of such technologies, of their signatures, and of corresponding political and economic activity. This may seem an absurd conjunction of concepts, even though we have earlier hinted at it. Jerry Smith points out, however, that the language of the U.S. military itself commits the same kind of Freudian slip, and in doing so, may be signaling not only the existence of the breakaway civilization, but who some of its ultimate masters may be, for the *Air Force 2025* study referred to earlier actually contains a paper entitled *Weather as a Force Multiplier:* ***Owning*** *the Weather in 2025.*[25] The opening statements of this particular paper carry their own weighty implications for this methodology:

> In 2025, US aerospace forces can 'own the weather' by capitalizing on emerging technologies and focusing development of those technologies to war-fighting applications. Such a capability offers the war fighter tools to shape the battlespace in ways never before possible. It provides opportunities to impact operations across the full spectrum of conflict and is pertinent to all possible futures. The purpose of this paper is to outline a strategy for the use of a future weather-modification system to achieve military objectives.[26]

---

[23] Zbigniew Brzezinski, *Between Two Ages*, p. 57, emphasis added.

[24] Jerry E. Smith, *Weather Warfare: The Military's Plan to Draft Mother Nature* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2006), p. xii.

[25] Ibid., p. xix, emphasis added.

[26] Ibid., pp. xix-xx.

There are two senses in which weather modification capabilities can be considered a force multiplier: (1) in a "soft" sense, such as creating weather conditions to interfere with an enemy's formations and operational plans, while creating weather conditions to optimize one's own, or (2) using weather itself *directly* as a weapon to destroy strategic enemy targets.

More importantly, however, in both senses of weather modification as a force multiplier, one would look for the coincidence of weather phenomena with political and/or military and/or economic objectives being achieved or inhibited. Consequently, the ability to control weather may conveniently explain why, now, there is a *new* kind of financial security being offered in various markets: the weather derivative, and as we shall see, there are even darker capabilities hinted at in the literature. For example,

> In 1996, Russian space and weather-control scientists hooked up with Gianfranco Bisiacchi, then head of Mexico's space efforts, and founded Electrificación Local de la Atmosfera Terrestre (ELAT). Nominal results from the three ground stations set up be ELAT in 1998 were so impressive—rainfall was reported to increase by as much as 30%—that Mexican state governments were soon clamoring for more facilities…
>
> ELAT claims credit for ending the severe drought in Northern Mexico. Since 2000, says Bisiacchi, the amount of annual rain in the region has been "30% to 35% greater than what it was during the 1990s. In fact, the lakes of the region that were dry are now full."[27]

This was accomplished not by the usual methods of cloud seeding, but by generating charged ions at the ground based stations and then beaming them into the atmosphere. "That, they claim, fosters clumping on both airborne dust particles and ice crystals touched by a charged ion."[28] Bear this basic electromagnetic concept in mind, for we shall be returning to it, for basically it implies the ability to *create* weather systems.

2. Steering Hurricanes

But one may also envision the technologies and techniques of *steering* large naturally occurring systems as well, and this again implies a class one civilization capability in the sense that such large weather systems are planetary phenomena. Smith notes that the effort "to steer or reduce the force of hurricanes" became a concern after World War Two, for the relatively benign purpose of protecting people and property.[29] Of course, this would imply the ability to *increase* the force of hurricanes and to steer them for offensive purposes.[30] One scientific paper, "Controlling Hurricanes—Can Hurricanes and Other Severe Tropical Storms Be Moderated or Deflected?" by Dr. Ross N. Hoffman, a "member of several NASA science teams,"[31] makes these possibilities distinctly clear:

---

[27] Jerry E. Smith, *Weather Warfare*, p. 30.

[28] Ibid.

> But must these fearful forces of nature be forever beyond our control? My research colleagues and I think not. Our team is investigating how we might learn to nudge hurricanes onto more benign paths or otherwise defuse them. Although this bold goal probably lies decades in the future, we think our results show that it is not too early to study the possibilities.
>
> … What is more, *it turns out the very thing that makes forecasting any weather difficult—the atmosphere's extreme sensitivity to small stimuli—may well be the key to achieving the control we seek. our first attempt at influencing the course of a simulated hurricane by making minor changes to the storm's initial state*, for example, proved remarkably successful, and the subsequent results have continued to look favorable, too.[32]

In the light of the confident military predictions already surveyed, and in the light of technologies and curious "coincidences" to be outlined later in this chapter, I strongly believe that the goal lies not "decades in the future," but that it has been already achieved.

---

[29] Jerry E. Smith*, Weather Warfare*, p. 39.

[30] Ibid., p. 51: Smith states: "Clearly if one can steer a hurricane away from a population center one can, using the exact same technology, steer it into one." Additionally, if one can defuse or weaken a storm via any such technological means, one could increase the intensity of a system as well.

[31] Ibid.

[32] Ibid., pp. 40-41, emphasis added. Smith notes the first American military attempt to control a hurricane actually occurred in 1947(a significant year it seems), with Project Cirrus, which seeded a hurricane with 176 pounds of dry ice. After the seeding occurred, the hurricane "abruptly changed direction and came on shore near Savanna, Georgia, where it did extensive damage to property and causing two fatalities. In what has since become almost standard procedure, the U.S. military classified the data from the seeding of this hurricane to frustrate litigation."(p. 42). But I would suggest, additionally, that the data was classified for another reason as well, namely, that the scientists in charge of the project had determined some correlation between the seeding and the direction of the hurricane, which implied the ability to steer the storm.

The signal indicator here is the acknowledgement that but "minor changes" to the initial systems state can result in significant amplified effects both as to the intensity and duration of a storm but also its direction. This defines the key feature of the militarization of planetary systems, for as Dr. Gordon J.F. Macdonald put it, "The key to geophysical warfare is the identification of environmental instabilities to which the addition of a small amount of energy would release vastly greater amounts of energy."[33] This means that the fundamental energy and steerage considerations are in the nature of *non-linear physics*. Dr. Ross N. Hoffman, to whose paper on the steerage of hurricanes we have already referred, observes that the key—like Sam Israel's "Forward Propagation program" outlined in part one—lies in the ability to make successful non-linear equation predictions of what occurs when one modifies an initial system state just enough that the introduced modification develops a feed-back loop to propagate throughout the system:

> We have modified for our experiments a highly effective forecast initialization system called four-dimensional variational data assimilation (4DVAR). the fourth dimension to which the name refers is time…
>
> After simulating a hurricane that occurred in the past, we can then change one or more of its characteristics at any given time and examine the effects of these perturbations. It turns out that most such alterations simply die out. *Only interventions with special characteristics—a particular pattern or structure that induces self-reinforcement—will develop sufficiently to have a major effect on a storm…* To explore whether the sensitivity of the atmospheric system could be exploited to modify atmospheric phenomena as powerful as hurricanes, our research group… conducted computer simulation experiments for two hurricanes that occurred in 1992. When Hurricane Iniki passed over the Hawaiian island of Kauai in September of that year, several people died, property damage was enormous and entire forests were leveled. Hurricane Andrew, which struck Florida just south of Miami the month before, left the region devastated.
>
> Surprisingly, given the imperfections of existing forecasting technologies, our first simulation experiment was an immediate

---

[33] Jerry E. Smith, *Weather Warfare*, p. 51, citing Gordon J.F. Macdonald, "Geophysical Warfare: How to Wreak the Environment." *Unless Peace Comes: A Scientific Forecast of New Weapons*. Ed. Nigel Calder (penguin, 1968).

> success. To alter the path of Iniki, we first chose where we wanted the storm to end up after six hours—about 60 miles west of the expected track. Then we used this target to create artificial observations and fed these into 4DVAR. We set the computer to calculate the smallest change to the initial set of the hurricane's key defining properties that would yield a track leading to the target location.
>
> …
>
> Although the original and altered versions of Hurricane Iniki looked nearly identical in structure, the changes in key variable were large enough that the latter veered off to the west for the first six hours of the simulation and then traveled due north, so that Kauai escaped the storm's most damaging winds. *The relatively small, artificial alterations to the storm's initial conditions had propagated through the complex set of nonlinear equations that simulated the storm to result in the desired relocation after six hours.*[34]

Nonlinear equations and nonlinear systems propagation and feedback loops, however, are but three of the physics conceptions that we must bear in mind in the militarization of geophysical systems. The other conception we must also scrutinize is the standard explanation that storm systems such as hurricanes or tornados are exclusively thermodynamic, rather than electromagnetic-thermodynamic systems, and to do this, we must have a closer look at tornados as electro-dynamic systems, and to the possibilities of weather weaponization this affords.

3. Tinkering with Tornados[35]

The standard academic meteorological view of the formation of tornadoes is that they are formed solely and exclusively by thermodynamic processes. As a boy, and growing up in the midwest, I grew up with pictures of the oftentimes strange and bizarre damage that tornadoes left in their wake, and quickly concluded that the standard thermodynamic explanations left a lot to be desired, as they seemed to have been formed on the basis of a consideration of only part of the evidence, and then using the model formed on that basis—the thermodynamic one—to explain the rest of the evidence, or rather, to explain it away.

---

[34] Jerry E. Smith, *Weather Warfare*, pp. 51-53, emphasis added.

[35] This section of this chapter originally appeared in slightly different form as a white paper in the members' subscription area on my website, entitled "Tinkering with Tornadoes: The Implications of the Electromagnetic Theory."

As a young man, I entertained the idea that tornadoes were electromagnetic phenomena chiefly, though not exclusively, and that opinion has not changed. Finally, however, I am moved to write on some of my observations over the years, largely because I have found, finally, an article that I think is worthy of consideration. I am also moved to write about this theory because of the spate of questions flowing on the internet in the wake of the devastating outburst of tornados that left devastation in Tuscaloosa, Alabama, and Joplin, Missouri. That devastation has prompted speculation that this outburst was the product of a technology being deliberately applied, speculation that was not helped by the statements of Russian political leader Vladimir Zhirinovsky the same week, to the effect that Russia had devastating weapons that could, among other things, engineer the weather.

The importance of the electromagnetic theory of tornado formation is thus immediately obvious, for such a basis of formation would also conceivably allow a technology to do the following things, each of which implies an increasing level of technological development and sophistication in its application:

1) To steer the storm by creations of cyclonic systems;
2) To damp, ameliorate, or even dissipate a tornadic storm;
3) To increase, intensify or strengthen a tornadic storm;
4) To create the storm whole cloth, and to steer, or target it.

In this section we shall consider:

1) some classes of evidence overlooked by the thermodynamic theory, based on the paper "Observations on the Electromagnetic Nature of Tornadic Supercell Thunderstorms" by Charles L. Chandler, a paper I recommend,
2) connections suggested by that evidence, that Mr. Chandler does not pursue or invoke,
3) an outline of his theory of the electromagnetic nature of tornadoes, and
4) the implications of that theory for the creation of a tornado-engineering technology in connection with other technologies and principles outlined in the remainder of this chapter.

a. Some Classes of Evidence Overlooked by the Thermodynamic Theory

(1) Embedded Objects

Consider the following familiar type of tornado damage, where one object is embedded in another (typically a tree or telephone pole, but not always):

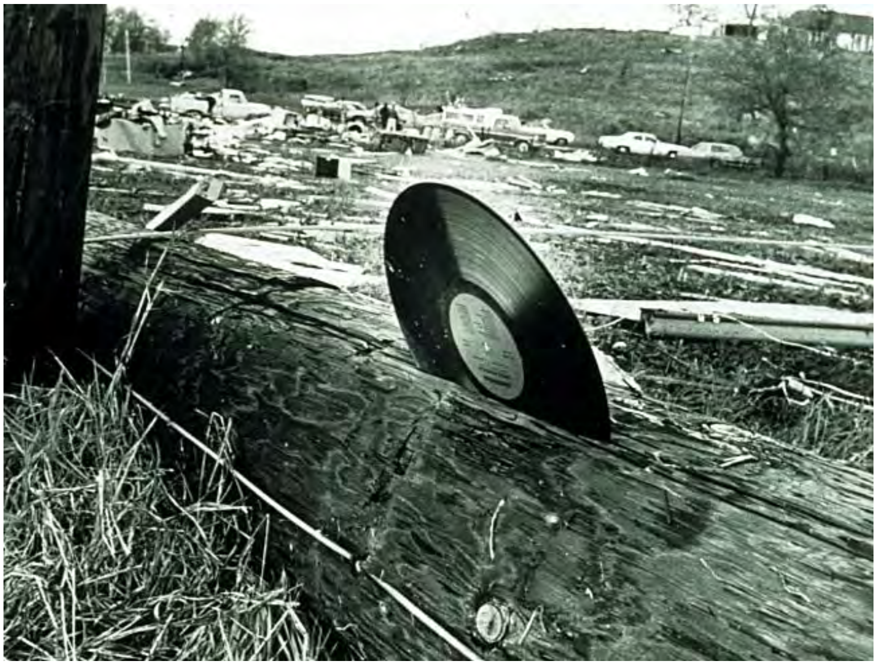

Record in Tree
wea00226, NOAA's National Weather Service (NWS) Collection[36]

The most obvious explanation for such phenomena is that such objects are literally driven by high velocity winds into trees and so on, and the latter made perhaps slightly more "porous" by dint of the extreme low pressures caused by tornadoes as they pass by. This indeed seems to be the most sensible explanation.

---

[36] A Number of Other Photos of Similar nature are visible here: http://www.ultimatechase.com/chase_accounts/greensburg_tornado_damage_survey.htm

(2) Levitating, or Suctioned, Cars and People?

The suction-dynamic explanation is also a favorite explanation for the phenomenon of the levitation of cars, but it is precisely here, reasons Chandler, that problems begin to surface. Chandler states this belief in the following fashion: "Tornadoes are suction vortexes, and the general public has come to think of them as giant vacuum cleaner hoses that can pick up large objects in precisely the same manner as a household vacuum cleaner picks up small objects." Here it is important to distinguish between motion inside, and outside, the actual tornado vortex.

First, noting the levitation of objects—typically vehicles—*outside* the vortex, Chandler is worth citing at length:

> Then there is a different type of levitation that sometimes occurs outside of the vortex. Scientists have not applied any critical scrutiny to these reports, and the common "explanation" is flatly absurd. A tornado was nearby; tornadoes are suction vortexes; things were picked up; any questions? Yet outside of the vortex, the lines of motion are parallel to the ground. So the vertical motion within the vortex would be irrelevant, even if the conventional framework could explain it. A critical treatment of the topic requires that we explain how objects are picked up just with horizontal air motion.
>
> At first blush, this doesn't seem like a hard task. Cars will become airborne if subjected to crosswinds above roughly 60 m/s… Contrary to popular belief, it is not the Bernoulli Effect that lifts up the cars, wherein a low pressure has developed above the car. Rather, when air broadsides the car, some of it gets forced under the car, creating a high pressure below it, and this is the force that lifts up the car. Once off the ground, the car is then rapidly accelerated in the direction of the wind, and hits the ground (for the first time at least) 5 m or more away. If it bounces, wind can once again get under the car and lift it up, and the process repeats. So all that is necessary for cars to get levitated is that the windspeed be in excess of 60 m/s, which is in the EF2 range. And there is plenty of evidence of cars being picked up and bounced for some distance in the strong winds of EF2+ tornadoes.[37]

---

[37] Charles L. Chandler, "Observations on the Electromagnetic Nature of Tornadic Supercell Thunderstorms", Section 40, "Tornadic Levitation."

The problem with this explanation is that it does not account for non-wind driven types of levitation witnessed and reported by tornado survivors. Chandler mentions the following examples:

> But there are a number of well-documented cases of vehicles being picked up and behaving in a manner that cannot be explained in such simple terms. In these cases, the vehicles were picked up after the strongest winds had passed, and instead of being accelerated in the direction of the winds, they simply hovered for a while.
>
> For example, during the tornado that hit La Plata, MD, on April 28, 2002, a bus with 30 people aboard was lifted off the ground, kept suspended in air for several seconds, and then set back down on the wheels. High wind speeds could have picked up the bus, but then the bus would have been accelerated horizontally, and it would have hit the ground hard and rolled several times, destroying the bus and probably killing many of the passengers.
>
> Here's a similar report, again from Maryland, this time from Steve Tracton, Ph.D. (meteorology):
>
> In 1995, I was in my car one night, patiently waiting the opportunity to turn from a driveway onto a street in Temple Hills, MD, when seemingly out of nowhere the wind increased to what I perceived as hurricane strength. Needless to say, I was totally surprised and scared beyond belief when my car rose at least two feet off the ground. Fortunately, the wind decreased as rapidly as it had increased, and my car settled back down on the driveway.
>
> Watching any of the videos of cars hitting the ground after being picked up by high wind speeds, do the words "settled back down" come to mind?
>
> The following is an eyewitness report of a car being picked up by a tornado, and a photo of the results.
>
> The man in the house near us was very lucky. He was in the yard and was hanging on for dear life and watched his car raise about 5 feet in the air and float for a few feet toward his house. The car then was gently lowered on his fence and it tilted on its side and was gently lowered to the ground. His house was not touched and he was next to the car and was not harmed. He was hanging on that corner post that you see with the brace on it.[38]

When the Russian was asked how the car came to be in this position, he answered:

---

[38] Charles L. Chandler, "Observations on the Electromagnetic Nature of Tornadic Supercell Thunderstorms", Section 40, "Tornadic Levitation."

> The car actually floated after the main body of the tornado passed over head and was out of sight. The winds were still strong but I was watching the car as was the man who owned the car. The wind damage was done and the car just gently lowered onto the fence. It did not crash to the ground. The fence held the car side up and the car tipped then gently lowered on its side.
>
> Yes, slight damage but the car was uprighted after the fence removed and driven away. No dents except slight impressions from rocks and such as it laid on its side…[39]

Chandler then asks what is for our(and his) purposes the most significant question: "How could strong winds pick up a car and then gently set it down on a wooden fence — why was the lateral acceleration so slight? And why did this happen *after* the tornado had already passed?"[40] There are also, Chandler observes, people who have been picked up by tornadoes, carried for a distance, and then set gently back down.[41]

The most damaging example to the strictly thermodynamic model of tornadic levitation is the cases of houses themselves:

> … (There) have been cases where entire houses have been picked up and carried, and then set back down, damaged but still relatively intact. The anomalous aspect of this is not that an object as big as a house could be picked up. Houses are mainly empty space, with lots of surface area upon which the winds can exert force. But houses simply are not built in such a way that they can be picked up, except from underneath, without falling apart. Without being able to get underneath the house to pick it up, the only other way to generate the necessary uplift without destroying the house is with a force that can act upon the entire mass at once. There are only two such forces in nature operative at this scale — gravity and electromagnetism. It's not gravity, because the houses were picked up. That leaves electromagnetism.[42]

---

[39] Charles L. Chandler, "Observations on the Electromagnetic Nature of Tornadic Supercell Thunderstorms", Section 40, "Tornadic Levitation."

[40] Ibid., emphasis added.

[41] I well remember myself such reports, for in the 1966 tornado that struck Topeka, Kansas, a local reporter was doing a radio remote broadcast by Burnett's Mound off Fairlawn in the Southwest part of the city. As he was reporting, the funnel began to descend and he decided to abandon his position. He began running but soon realized his frantic efforts were getting him nowhere. He looked down and he was indeed airborne, floating gently over the city, only to be set back down, his face caked in mud.

[42] Chandler, op. cit.

We will return to Chandler's actual electromagnetic model in a moment. For now, we need to look at another clue as to the electromagnetic nature of these storms.

(3) Blue-Green Colors, RF Emissions, and The Implication that "They" Knew All Along

One feature often noted by tornado and super-cell storm observers—and it is a phenomenon I myself have often witnessed—is the peculiar blue-green tint to the clouds and atmosphere that oftentimes accompany such storms. This blue-green color is typical of the ionization of the atmosphere—in effect, turning it into a kind of "cold plasma" for want of a better analogy—and is the first strong indicator that the electromagnetic component of tornadic storms may indeed be the paramount factor, with thermodynamic effects the result or "signature" of these more fundamental physical processes:

> Identifying the microphysical processes responsible for a luminous color is a complex endeavor, but one sure source of photon emission is the capture of an electron by a positive ion. In order for this to be happening enough to create visible luminosity, there would have to be a lot of ions picking up free electrons. Studies have shown that while the precipitation that falls to the ground originates from a region in the cloud that is predominantly negative, outside of the cloud the precipitation has a predominantly positive charge. The only possible conclusion is that something is stripping the electrons from the falling precipitation, but there's (obviously) nothing in the thermodynamic model that can do this.
>
> There's really only one possibility here. The particles would have to pass through positively-charged air, losing electrons in the process. This, then, constitutes one of the lines of evidence in support of the contention that there is a positive double-layer surrounding the negative charge stream.[43]

---

[43] Charles L. Chandler, "Observations on the Electromagnetic Nature of Tornadic Supercell Thunderstorms," Section 17. Chandler also notes in a passage immediately following these arguments: "Please note that contemplating the nature of green thunderstorms is heresy. Consider the following quote from Scientific American. Research on green thunderstorms is limited and not well funded. As Penn State's Craig Bohren says, this is "not exactly a hot topic of research. Indeed, being curious about them can be hazardous to one's career." For example, the small grant from the National Science Foundation for the portable spectrophotometer Frank Gallagher used

However, there is yet another intriguing fact about tornadoes that deserves mentioning as it bears directly on the electromagnetic hypothesis, and Chandler spends some time with it in his lengthy paper: radio frequency emissions. Tornadoes are known to emit sustained Radio Frequency (RF) pulses in the frequency range of 20 to 140 Megahertz (MHz). Additionally there is a relationship between higher frequency emissions and more powerful tornadoes (i.e., tornadoes in the F4-F5 category).[44]

(4) Lightning Inside the Funnel

One very unusual feature of tornadoes that has been witnessed—though very seldom for obvious reasons—is the phenomenon of lightning inside the funnel vortex. Chandler observes that while tornadoes are passing through a vicinity, the number of lightning strikes in the same vicinity diminishes dramatically.[45] One explanation for this phenomenon is that for some reason, the electromagnetic charge may be concentrated within the tornado funnel itself. Several eyewitnesses who have been beneath a tornado and who have been able to see up inside the cortex have reported seeing streamers of lightning inside the vortex. In fact, in some cases, they report seeing *two* vortices, the outer fast-moving column of air, and an interior vortex circulating much more slowly, and inside of which the lightning is to be seen. Consider the following report that appeared in the June 10, 1996 issue of *Time*:

> January 21, 1992, Near Cripple Creek, Colorado. Shortly after 2 PM, while fishing at Skagway Resevoir, D. McGown spotted an ominous cloud formation developing in the west. A horizontal, black cloud rolled toward him. Suddenly, it lifted to reveal a huge, twisting funnel

---

was derided by then Speaker of the House Newt Gingrich's office, and by Richard Pombo, then a Republican congressman from California, who denounced Bohren in the Congressional Record." One has to wonder exactly *why* curiosity about green thunderstorms could be a hazard to a career in meteorology *unless* there was some connection to alternative physics models for such systems, and the implied technological ability to manipulation of those systems that would follow from such principles.

[44] Charles L. Chandler, "Observations on the Electromagnetic Nature of Tornadic Supercell Thunderstorms," Section 44.

[45] Ibid., Sections 19, 43.

> advancing directly at him. He threw himself to the ground, but got a good look up into the interior of the funnel.
>
> "The outside of the tornado was spinning so fast my eye couldn't following it, but the inside was rotating almost lazily. I could see a thousand feet up inside it. Tiny fingers of lightning lined the hollow tube."[46]

Another report from 1943 from McKinney, Texas has a witness describing seeing the inside of a funnel, which appeared to be luminous and, again, with streamers of lightning.[47]

On June 22, 1928, Mr. Will Keller, a farmer near the town of Greenberg, KS (subsequently destroyed decades later by a tornado), also saw up into the vortex of a tornado. In his own words:

> At last the great shaggy end of the funnel hung directly overhead. Everything was as still as death. There was a strong gassy odor and it seemed that I could not breathe. There was a screaming, hissing sound coming directly from the end of the funnel. I looked up and to my astonishment saw right into the heart of the tornado. There was a circular opening in the center of the funnel, about 50 or 100 feet in diameter, and extending straight upward for a distance of at least one half mile, as best as I could judge under the circumstances. The walls of this opening were of rotating clouds and and the whole was made brilliantly visible by constant flashes of lightning which zigzagged from side to side. Had it not been for the lightning I could not have seen the opening, not any distance up into it anyway.[48]

Note what we have: (1) lightning inside the funnel vortex, and (2) in some cases, two vortices, an external wind-vortex and an internal, slower vortex, creating a rotation differential between the two, and (3) the entire system under intense direct current electrical stress.[49] All of these things argue for the basic electromagnetic nature of tornadoes.

---

[46] No Author, "On the Electromagnetic Basis of Tornadoes," College Times, http://collegetimes.us/on-the-electromagnetic-basis-of-tornadoes/, citing Time, 147:8, June 10, 1996.

[47] Ibid., citing Roy S. Hall, "Inside a Texas Tornado," Weatherwise, 40:73, 1987.

[48] Ibid.

[49] By now, hopefully, this should ring a bell.

b. A Basic Outline of Chandler's Theory

With these odd facts in mind, let us now outline Chandler's electromagnetic theory, noting first of all that his paper attempts to gather all disparate types of evidence—including the above survey—and to account for it. As we have already observed, the levitation of houses and cars cannot really be accounted for by a purely thermodynamic model of tornadoes.

Chandler begins by noting that within the super-cell thunderstorm there are two regions of electrical charge activity, which generate a circulation of air: there is an inner "doughnut" or toroid of negative charge, and circulating around this toroid, and an outer sheath of positively-charged air circulating around it. It is this electrical circulation that ultimately explains certain features of tornados, including their ability to stick closely to the ground, that the standard thermodynamic model cannot:

> The present work agrees that the driving force in a tornado is the low pressure under the supercell's updraft. But the defining characteristic of a tornado is that it attaches robustly to the surface of the Earth, and this isn't explicable in fluid dynamic terms (at the given pressures, densities, viscosities, speeds, angular momenta, skin friction coefficients, etc.). The only possible conclusion is that some other force must be present, and the only other force present in the atmosphere is electromagnetism. Previous works considered the possibility that a weak but sustained electric current between the ground and the cloud could cause a tornado. An electric current can, indeed, cause a discharge vortex, but it cannot cause a tornado, as there is no way to concentrate the release of energy at the solid boundary, begging the original question. The present work takes a different approach. If a charged double-layer is traveling down around the outside of the cloud, then at the bottom of the cloud this double-layer will get rammed down to the ground (as the RFD and FFD), and then skidded along the ground toward the updraft. Because of its electric charge, it will induce an opposite charge in the Earth, and then it will be attracted to that opposite charge. If the tornadic inflow is attracted to the Earth, it becomes easy to understand how the tornado attaches so robustly to the ground. A vortex is not an entity, but rather, a condition in a medium, and in order to understand the vortex, we have to neglect the vortex and study the medium instead. So we should not say that the tornado is binding to the ground, but rather, that the tornadic inflow is binding to the ground. If an electrostatic attraction is added to the fluid dynamic factors, a tornadic vortex becomes possible. A wide variety of

> observational and instrumental evidence is considered, without finding reason to abandon the hypothesis that a charged double-layer is a necessary condition for tornado genesis.[50]

It is this electrical charge differential between regions of air that accounts for the strange phenomena also observed with tornadoes, including the apparent levitation of vehicles and objects otherwise not able to be accounted for in a standard thermodynamic model, as for example, levitation:

> The (electromagnetic) model asserts that the tornadic inflow is positively-charged, and the surface of the Earth has an induced negative charge. This means that particulate matter from the surface that is getting blown in the wind will be negatively-charged. Objects exposed to the tornadic inflow (such as people, cars, etc.) will be sandblasted with this particulate matter, and will therefore pick up a negative charge. After becoming negatively charged, the objects will be attracted by the electric force to the positively-charged air around them. Since there is more air above them than below them, the net force will be upward. And since electromagnetism is 39 orders of magnitude more powerful than gravity, even an extremely small EM force can be the determining factor.[51]

In other words, it is the charge differential between the ambient medium of the vortex itself and the objects it levitates that is the key, and with this, as we shall see, we have a potential "steering mechanism" in addition to the obvious steering mechanisms suggested by low pressure cyclones themselves.

c. An Unusual Parallel Description

It should be noted that the reported cases of objects embedded in other objects by tornadoes bears an unusual resemblance to something at first glance completely different: the reported embedding of people in bulkheads during the alleged Philadelphia Experiment. I have written about this elsewhere,[52] but for our purposes here it is worth noting that in the case of the alleged experiment, we are dealing with rotating electrical fields. This suggests, though certainly does not prove, that the known and similar phenomena observed with tornados might not in fact be the product of thermodynamic fluid forces, but rather, a little understood electromagnetic phenomenon. It should similarly be noted that similar embeddings have been observed by John Hutchison in his experiments with the so-called Hutchison Effect.

---

[50] Charles L. Chandler, "Observations on the Electromagnetic Nature of Tornadic Supercell Thunderstorms," Section 2, Abstract.

[51] Ibid., Section 40, "Tornadic Levitation."

[52] Q.v. my *Secrets of the Unified Field: The Philadelphia Experiment, the Nazi Bell, and the Discarded Theory,* pp. 103-190.

d. Implications for a Tornado-Engineering Technology

With these ideas in mind, we now return to our initial four considerations to inquire whether a technological application could be envisioned to explain four cases or modalities:

1) To steer the storm by creations of cyclonic systems;
2) To damp, ameliorate, or even dissipate a tornadic storm;
3) To increase, intensify or strengthen a tornadic storm;
4) To create the storm whole cloth, and to steer, or target it.

As we shall discover later in this chapter when we consider the technologies and principles represented by HAARP, such technologies, by creating regions of ionospheric heating, could also create regions of intense low pressures which could trigger earthquakes.

(1) The Ability to Steer Storms

By a similar procedure or ionospheric heating, then, it would be possible to create regions of low pressure to move or manipulate entire weather systems, in short, to steer a storm in a general fashion. Additionally, the ability to manipulate regions in the ionosphere to create regions of relativistic accelerated particles also implies the ability to manipulate the creation of regions of charge differentials around storms to steer such a system with more precision than merely by creations of cyclones of low pressure. Effectively, in other words, ionospheric heating technologies such as HAARP imply, by the nature of the case, a general steering capability for weather systems, and could further imply an even more precise targeting capability for weather systems. In short, the technology currently in existence, in my opinion, argues that the first capability has already been achieved. Such ability also implies the ability to steer storms away from certain areas, in other words, to attempt to mitigate damage to highly populated areas, by driving storms away from them (and that of course implies the ability to target such areas).

(2) The Ability to Damp Storms

A more difficult proposition is presented by the implied ability to damp, ameliorate, or completely dissipate a storm, but again, the same conditions apply, only in reverse: If the technology exists to create charged regions of the atmosphere, then that same technology could conceivably be used to *neutralize* regions of charge differentials if such regions were known. Chandler's hypothesis allows one to conjecture on the broad structures of supercell storms, thus creating the possibility that storms could be damped.

(3) The Ability to Intensify Storms

While the ability to damp or ameliorate storms is apparently more difficult, the third modality in our list is not so. It would be possible to intensify storms by intensifying existing naturally occurring low pressure cyclones, or alternatively, by creating another low pressure system in close proximity to a naturally existing one. This would have a double effect, both of steering a storm system and to intensify the cyclonic system, for as the natural tendency of such vortices in close proximity to each other is for such vortices to merge into a more powerful vortex, this activity would allow a storm to be steered as well, using the natural attraction between such vortices to draw the storm in a certain direction. In short, the existing technology could additionally account for the ability to intensify naturally occurring storms. In other words, within existing principles of physics, and with the known operational parameters of HAARP-like ionospheric heater technologies, the first three capabilities in our list already exist.

(4) The Ability to Create a Storm Whole Cloth

We come to the final and most difficult matter, the actual creation of supercell thunderstorms and tornadoes. While this is indeed the most difficult modality of deploying such technologies, it should now be evident that there is nothing, really, to prevent their use in the actual creation of such weather systems. Careful monitoring of humidity and temperature, and frontal conditions, would of course allow the use of these technologies to stimulate the emergence of regions of charge differentials, the creation of local and intense regions of low pressure, where such conditions already exist; in short, the creation of conditions for supercell creation or modification of existing conditions to do so. Similarly this technology could be used to steer the jet stream, manipulate frontal conditions, create inflow of warm moist air over regions where one later wished to create a supercell.

With increased experimentation and precision control over the elements of a storm it is within the bounds of theoretical possibility, in my opinion, that one could create tornadoes and steer them with some precision.

Given that the blue-green signatures of ionization and therefore of strong electromagnetic activity have been known for a very long time to be associated with such storms, there is no doubt in my mind that elaboration of electromagnetic models of such storms was undertaken covertly and was underway for quite some time,[53] and this means, quite simply, that experimentation in the steerage, intensification and amelioration of storms was also under way.

All of these things strongly argue that the technologies to manipulate weather systems on a planetary scale already exist. But even these pale by comparison to the *next* level of technology: the ability to manipulate geophysical systems themselves in the creation of volcanism and earthquakes.

4. HAARP, EISCAT and Ionospheric Heaters: Geophysical Systems Warfare, and the New Geopolitical Imperative

This manipulation of geophysical systems is best epitomized in the popular imagination by the technologies of ionospheric heaters, and more particularly by the High Altitude Auroral Research Project or HAARP array in Gakona, Alaska, a vast field of phased array radio antennae, and similar ionospheric heaters in the possession of Russia, Japan, and Europe/Germany's EISCAT. This technology works by "manipulating the layers of the Earth's atmosphere,"[54] that is to say, we are dealing with a technology on the cusp of a Class One Civilization capability, and as we shall see subsequently, possibly even a technology on the cusp of Class *Two* capability. This technology indeed is capable of using "planet

---

[53] For various reasons, I believe that this began in the mid-1950s, in the aftermath of the Blackwell-Udall tornado(q.v. Chandler), and significantly at the same time that electro-gravitics or anti-gravity research went deeply black.

[54] Bertell, *Planet Earth: The Latest Weapon of War*, p. 53.

Earth itself as a weapon, harnessing the power of natural processes for war."[55]

Rosalie Bertell notes that HAARP's *publicly* stated purposes emphasize some an odd assortment of aims:

> The stated aim of HAARP is to 'understand, simulate and control ionospheric processes that might alter the performance of communication and surveillance systems.' The HAARP system will beam 3.6 megawatts … of high-frequency radio energy into the ionosphere in order to (in the words of its proposal):
>
> - *generate extremely low frequency (ELF) waves for communicating with submerged submarines*,
> - conduct geophysical probes *to identify and characterize national ionospheric processes so that techniques can be developed to mitigate or control them*,
> - *generate ionospheric lenses to focus large amounts of high frequency (HF) energy, thus providing a means of triggering ionospheric processes that potentially could be exploited for Department of Defense purposes*,
> - induce electron acceleration for infrared (IR) and other optical emissions which could be used to control radio wave propagation properties,
> - generate geomagnetic field aligned ionization to control the reflection/scattering properties of radio waves.[56]

Note that the ability to use low frequency waves to communicate with submarines involves *using the Earth itself* as a transmitting "antenna," a concept fraught with its own dangers as we shall discover.

In the case of HAARP, there is no *known* capability of this sort, which would require *buried* antennae. Rather, the technique employed by HAARP is believed to be to converge beams from the phased antennae on the electrojet,

> and when the synchronised rays hit it at a right angle they cause the river of electromagnetic energy to spread sideways. When the rays are

---

[55] Ibid., pp. 53-54.

[56] Bertell, *Planet Earth: The Latest Weapon of War*, p. 121, emphasis added, citing "HAARP: HF Active Auroral research Program", Joint Service Program Plans and Activities: Air Force Geophysics Laboratory and Navy Office of Naval Research, February 1990.

> turned off, the jet returns to normal. If the transmitted rays are turned on and off in a rhythm, the motion outward and inward creates an alternating current that generates pulsed ELF waves. These low frequency waves are reflected back to Earth and can be used for communications with submerged submarines and for 'deep Earth tomography', which involves 'scanning the internal structure of the planet…[57]

The ability to scan the interior structure of the planet would be a crucial step in the technology tree to acquire *earthquake* production capability, since this capability would be reliant upon the identification of instabilities within planetary structure that could be weaponized.

Note also that another stated goal of HAARP is to manipulate and control ionospheric processes, including the generation of "lenses" to focus "large amounts of high frequency energy" for defense purposes. This is a euphemism for the ability to focus the enormous electrostatic potential of the ionosphere and discharge it.[58]

We are dealing, bluntly, with a breakaway civilization technologies.

a. The Ionosphere, Missile Defense Experiments, and the Beginnings of Offensive Resonance Possibilities

To see how all this might work, however, we need to have a basic understanding of the geophysics behind it. The Earth is sheathed in protective layers that support its fragile biosphere, and these we need to understand before we can understand the use of ionospheric heater technologies as potential weapons. These protective layers may be divided into two general layers, (1) the upper layer or magnetosphere, beginning from 280 to 375 miles above the Earth's surface, and extending to approximately 32,000 miles, and (2) the lower layer or ionosphere, that is, the Earth's atmosphere itself. Within these two layers, there are further divisions:

1) *Magnetosphere:*

---

[57] Bertell, *Planet Earth: The Latest Weapon of War*, p. 122.

[58] One may imagine further developments of this principle, namely, the use of two or more such ionospheric heaters in concert, to focus upon one target region an interferometric pattern of electromagnetic radiation. The amount of energy potentially available in such a use might possibly be in the giga- or tera-joule range. HAARP alone, as already noted, has a broadcast power in the giga-wattage range.

    a) Lower or Inner Van Allen Radiation belt, from about 1,300 to 3,100 miles above the surface of the Earth (though in the case of some anomalous regions can dip as low as approximately 200 miles above the Earth;
    b) Upper or Outer Van Allen Radiation belt, from about 8,000 to approximately 35,000 miles about the surface of the Earth;
2) *Ionosphere:* The atmosphere or ionosphere proper has five layers as follows:
    a) *Troposphere*, extending from the surface of the Earth to approximate 6-10 miles above it;
    b) *Stratosphere*, from 6-10 miles to 30 miles above the surface;
    c) *Mesosphere*, from about 30 to 50 miles above the Earth's surface;
    d) *Thermosphere or lower Ionosphere*, from approximately 50 to 60 miles above the Earth's surface; and finally,
    e) *Upper Ionosphere or Exosphere*, from approximately 60 t0 280-375 miles above the surface.[59]

It is important to note that, in each of these layers, and especially in the Van Allen Belts, charged particles circulate in a huge sea of energy in layers and systems that are fundamentally interrelated electro-dynamic systems.

Early Cold War era American and Soviet experiments in missile defense shields were designed to take advantage of this fact. For example, in August and September 1958, in Project Argus, the U.S. Navy detonated three atom bombs 300 miles about the South Atlantic ocean, at the anomalous point where the inner Van Allen Belt dips to about 125-250 miles of the Earth's surface.[60] One probable purpose of the tests was to study the effects of Electro-Magnetic Pulse or EMP, the phenomenon produced by nuclear explosions that interferes with radio and radar operations. But another likely possible purpose for the tests was to study the behavior of charged particles within the layers of the ionosphere for the purpose of exploiting it virtually unlimited source of energy and potential destructive power.[61]

> These nuclear explosions created new magnetic radiation belts and injected sufficient electrons and other energetic particles into the

---

[59] Bertell, *Planet Earth*: *The Latest Weapon of War*, p. 55.

[60] Ibid., p. 63.

[61] Ibid., p. 64.

> ionosphere to cause worldwide effects. It is not known how long these belts lasted but they were observed five years after the explosions. The electrons travelled back and forth along the newly created magnetic force lines, causing artificial 'auroras' when striking the atmosphere near the north pole. This phenomenon was apparently what inspired the concept of a space 'shield' against incoming missiles. If natural Earth processes destroyed incoming debris, could an artificial shield be created against intercontinental missiles?[62]

Bertell is choosing her words carefully but it is clear what she is implying: the basic geophysics of the Earth provided a natural defense of the planet, and, with proper stimulation, these systems could be tweaked into systems of defense against ICBMs tipped with hydrogen bombs, and eventually, could be tweaked into even deadlier strategic weapons of mass destruction than the hydrogen bomb and ICBM.

A hint of these more deadly Class One and Two Civilization capabilities and technologies was revealed in a 1968 proposal in the United States for a system of "microwave energy satellites" that would capture the *Sun's* energy and beam it to the Earth:[63]

> It was planned that the satellites would intercept solar radiation using solar cells, and then transmit the energy via a microwave beam to receiving antennas, called rectennas, on Earth. the rectenna sites, each capable of generating five gigawatts of electricity, were expected to take up 145 square kilometres of land, and would preclude habitation by humans, animals or even vegetation. Plans for controlling wildlife and birds were sketchy, depending, apparently, on letting them die if they wandered too close to a rectenna or flew through a microwave beam.[64]

Obviously, such a program had clear military applications, given that the microwave beams would devastate 145 square kilometers—an area similar in size to the area devastated with a small hydrogen bomb, and, notably, one would have none of the inaccuracy of an ICBM, nor none of the fallout associated with a thermonuclear bomb.[65] More to the point, one could imagine an even more horrific "upgrade" to the concept, using a maser, laser, x-ray laser or graser (gamma-ray laser) to ionize a channel of air through the atmosphere as a kind of "channel" for a vast amount of electrons in the ionosphere or inner Van Allen Belt to follow. One would, in other words, be targeting a region on the Earth with a precision unheard of by any missile, through which static discharges—lightening strikes—several magnitudes of order more powerful than anything in nature would follow. One could, by such a system, devastate an entire region in mere seconds.[66] And lest one think it was solely the *West* developing these breakaway civilization capabilities, the Soviet Union in 1962 followed with its own high altitude nuclear explosions in 1962, creating three new radiation belts of its own from 4300 to 8100 miles above the Earth.[67]

---

[62] Bertell, *Planet Earth: The Latest Weapon of War*, p. 64. Bertell also observes that "The effects of Project argus on Earth have never been fully revealed."(p. 64)

[63] Ibid., p. 84. Bertell notes that these satellites were each to have been the size of Manhattan island and thus presumably constructed in space.

[64] Ibid.

[65] Ibid., p. 85.

These potentialities for strategic offensive geophysical weapons systems thus make the publicly stated purposes for HAARP and similar ionospheric heaters dubious at best, for as I noted in *Saucers, Swastikas, and Psyops*, such god-like technologies afford the ideal matrix for covert and psychological warfare operations. Indeed, Bertell herself notes that "The US Department of Defense provides a manual for its industrial contractors which states: 'Cover stories about projects must be believable and cannot reveal any information regarding the true nature of the project.'"[68] The true nature here being the potentiality for offensive strategic use through the identification of instabilities in systems, and their exploitation through resonance effects.[69]

---

[66] Bertell observes that there were other potential uses that critics of the Solar Power Satellite program noted, namely, the ability to direct the microwave beams away from the receiving rectennae "to intersect near enemy personnel" in which case the system would function like "a microwave over—it could kill people and spare buildings," or, conceivably, be used "to ignite combustible materials." (Bertell, *Planet Earth: The Latest Weapon of War*, p. 86). I needn't comment on the implications of these statements for the scenario of the collapse of the Twin Towers of the World Trade Center on 9/11.

[67] Ibid., p. 71.

[68] Ibid., p. 122, citing "The National Industrial Security Program Manual," March 1992.

[69] Ibid., pp. 125-126. Bertell notes that such resonance effects can be huge in nature, citing the rings of Saturn as an example. One standard method of psychological operations designed to hide the purpose of technologies and concepts is what might be called "divide and hide," i.e., parceling out not only the *technology* in various compartments of a black project, such that only a few know its real use and significance, but similarly parceling out *knowledge* in various locations, in the open. The true significance of the components can only

C. Implied Geopolitical Imperatives of the Technologies

As we noted much earlier in this chapter, these resonant effects have as their basis the exploitation of systemic geophysical instabilities, and though we have thus far considered only *meteorological* instabilities rather than properly geophysical ones within the planet itself, it is worth pausing to consider the implied geopolitical imperatives of the technologies reviewed thus far from the point of view of the power elite(s) within such a breakaway civilization structure.

Such technologies imply a capacity for strategic mass destruction on a scale commensurate with, if not exceeding, the capabilities of the world's thermonuclear arsenals, and they also imply two other things: (1) plausible deniability in their use, and (2) no *apparent* blowback or consequence to the user in their deployment and operational use. These facts, plus the relative ease with which such technologies could be engineered, present the breakaway civilization's factions with an imperative, namely, to seek to put into place, if necessary with the emerging technologies themselves, a mechanism of global governance to prevent the or avoid the proliferation of such technologies to rivals, and to avoid the potential for factional infighting becoming more intense as the technologies evolve and develop. In short, it presents the elites possessing such capabilities with the imperatives behind the 1970s Strategic Arms Limitation Talks (SALT), only magnified several times over in their urgency. These imperatives well now become much more visible in the next chapter, when we turn to examine geophysical weapons in the proper sense, or, the ability to engineer earthquakes, and all the incipient Class Two capabilities that some of these technologies imply.

---

be known by 'connecting the dots." One example of hiding things in the open regarding HAARP is the Federal Environmental Impact Statement that was filed by the U.S. Air Force, which stated that HAARP's transmissions "'can raise the internal body temperature of nearby people, ignite road flares in the trunks of cars, detonate aerial munitions used in electronic fuses, and scramble aircraft communications, navigation and flight control systems.' Even small increases in electromagnetic radiation can cause health problems such as cataracts and leukaemia, also altering brain chemistry, blood sugar levels, blood pressure and heart rates."(Bertell, op. cit. p. 126.)

8

PULSES, PLANETS, AND PYRAMIDS: KARDASHEV CLASSES AND COVERT CONFLICT, PART TWO

*"So, we've seen trillions of dollars in tax money or Federal credit being harvested, pulled out and pulled out and pulled out… The debasement is this enormous amount of money being clawed out of the government and clawed out of society. It's the cost of organized crime. It's the cost of financial fraud. The question is, where's that money going?… and I assure you it is not going to… off-shore bank accounts, (because) we're talking about much too much money. We're talking about the kind of money that builds private space programmes. We're talking about the kind of money that builds corporate armies. We're talking about enough money to endow a private government… So, we're talking about enough money to buy and control the planet. And so I think **Black Budget.**"*

Catherine Austin Fitts[1]

Indeed, as Catherine Austin Fitts rightly observes in the epigraph above, a few trillions of dollars in pocket change, a quadrillion of derivatives here, a quadrillion there, can buy a secret space program, and it might also fund a few tornados and hurricanes, purchase a few earthquakes, finance a few solar flares, reverse engineer some flying saucers, and have enough left over to fund a buyout of the globe and a new global government.

It is the globe itself that constitutes the key element of geophysical warfare, and the key that turns opens the lock to such earthquake weapons are systemic instabilities. Here, however, we enter the murky world of the intricate relationships between geophysics, plate tectonics, electromagnetic energy, waves, and nuclear weapons, and as we shall see in the next section of this book, UFOs. Our entry into this bizarre, macabre and nightmarish world is via a little known 1963 military project called Project West Ford.

---

[1] Catherine Austin Fitts and Bonnie Faulkner, "MR Transcript—Unpacking Mr. Global, Part 2," http://mediaroots.org/mr-transcript-unpacking-mr.-global-part-2.php, p. 3, emphasis in the original.

A. Nukes, Tomography, Earthquakes, and Longitudinal Waves

1. Project West Ford: Entry into a Mystery

By 1958, the atmospheric nuclear testing that the United States and Soviet Union had been conducting was put on hold.[2] But this did not stop bizarre experimentation; Rosalie Bertell writes:

> In 1961, *Keesings Historisch Archief* reported that the US Military planned to create a 'telecommunications shield' in the ionosphere in order to counteract the interference to radio communication caused by solar wind. The plan was to bring into orbit 350,000 million copper needles, each 204 centimetres long. Researchers hoped that these trillions of needles would form a belt 10km (6 miles) thick and 40 km (25 miles) wide and that the needles would be distributed about 100 metres apart. They could then bounce radio waves off this artificial shield rather than the 'unreliable' ionosphere. Although this project focused on problems with radio communication, it again reflects the idea of a space shield, which was rapidly gaining ground in the minds of military planners.
>
> The military actually did try this experiment, tossing 350,000 million copper needles into orbit![3]

The project was known as Project West Ford, and it was launched in May 1963, though according to another source, Anthony Kendall, the U.S. Air Force "launched 480 million tiny copper needles" which created an artificial ring around the world.[4]

Each needle was 1.8 centimeters long, 0.0018 centimeters in diameter and weighed 40 micrograms, and were specifically designed "to be exactly half of the wavelength of 8000 Mhz microwaves. This length would create strong reflections when the microwaves struck the copper needles, in effect making them tiny dipole antennae each repeating in all directions the exact same signal they received."[5] This is an intriguing, if not profoundly disturbing, project, in view of the fact that certain circles within the American technocratic elite would propose, within a mere five years of the successful completion of Project West Ford, the encirclement of the Earth with microwave power satellites beaming down enough energy to roast 145 square kilometers, as detailed in the previous chapter!

---

[2] Bertell, *Planet Earth: The Latest Weapon of War*, p. 67.

[3] Ibid.

[4] Anthony Kendall, "Earth Artificial ring: Project West Ford," 2 May, 2006, http://www.damninteresting.com/earths-artificial-ring-project-west-ford/, p. 1.

[5] Ibid.

But there were other possible implications to Project West Ford that began to be speculated about within a year after it was done:

> Since this experiment is not something the military later bragged about or one they expanded as planned, we can assume it was 'unsuccessful' for their purposes. What damage it did to the complicated upper atmosphere is unknown. One independent researcher, Leigh Richmond Donahue, along with her physicist husband, Walter Richmond, tracked such events in the postwar years. She wrote:
>
> "…when the military sent up a band of tiny copper wires into the ionosphere to orbit the planet 'so as to reflect radio waves and make reception clearer' we had the 8.5 Alaskan earthquake and Chile lost a good deal of its coast. That band of copper wires interfered with the planetary magnetic field."
>
> While we cannot prove this hypothesis right or wrong, it was put forward by serious scientists and was the beginning of attempts to connect human disturbance of our atmosphere with unwanted violent happenings on the surface of the planet. Non-military geophysicists were shut out of these experiments.[6]

The earthquake referred to here is the March 27, 1964 Good Friday earthquake that struck Anchorage and other points in Alaska, an earthquake that lasted an unbelievable four minutes in some places, and that registered 9.2 on the Richter scale.

The reason some scientists began to connect the dots between earthquakes and magnetic field disturbances—and as we shall shortly see, nuclear detonations—is rather simple. Earthquakes, as measured by the Richter scale, can be converted into the equivalent of electrical current energy released, or the equivalent of the energy of the explosion of TNT, in which case the 1964 9.2 Alaska earthquake would have released an incredible 4.0 exajoules, or the approximate equivalent of detonating a hydrogen bomb of an unbelievable 950 megatons.[7] All this is to say that geophysical warfare—the ability to engineer earthquakes—most likely became an intense, and intensely *secret*, area of investigation for the breakaway civilization's scientists and technocrats, since the energies being manipulated and subject to the potential control of man far exceeded anything being done in the USA's or USSR's hydrogen bomb projects.

---

[6] Bertell, *Planet Earth: The Latest Weapon of War*, pp. 67-68, citing Nick Begich and Jeane Manning, *Angels Don't Play This HAARP* (Earthpulse Press, 1995), p. 53.

[7] "Richter Magnitude Scale," *Wikipedia*, http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Richter_magnitude_scale. Recall that the largest thermonuclear device ever detonated by man was the Russian "Tsar Bomba," with a yield of 57-67 megatons (depending on the source cited). The Anchorage quake exceeded this by more than an order of magnitude! The 1960 Valdivia Chile earthquake

As soon as electromagnetic precursors to earthquakes began to be suspected, researchers began reporting them:

> On 28 July 1976 the Tangshan earthquake in China, which left 650,000 people dead, was preceded by an airglow said to have been caused by the Soviet ionospheric heater. On 23 September 1977 the *Washington Post* reported a strange star-like ball of light over Petrosavodsk. A similar airglow effect was reported over the American Midwest on 23 September 1993, at a time of disastrous flooding. At the same time, a lightning flash, rising from the tops of the clouds up into the atmosphere, was reported. This was recognised as a new geophysical phenomenon—normal lightning flows between two clouds, or from clouds to Earth.
>
> On 12 September 1989, magnetometers at Corralitos (near Monterey Bay, in California) detected unusual ultra-low frequency waves between 0.01 Hertz and 10 Hertz. This is the lowest range of ELF waves. These waves grew to about 30 times their first intensity, and finally subsided on 5 October 1989. On 17 October they suddenly appeared again at 2:00 pm local time, with signals so strong that they went off the scale. Three hours later the San Francisco earthquake took place. On 29 March 1993, the *Washington Times* reported that 'satellites and ground sensors detected mysterious radiowaves or related electrical and magnetic activity before major earthquakes in Southern California during 1986-7, Armenia in 1988, and Japan and Northern California in 1989. The 17 January 1994 earthquake in Los Angeles was also preceded by unusual radio waves and two sonic booms. These strange 'coincidences' have never been completely explained.[8]

As we shall see momentarily, these are not really coincidences at all; they may be the signatures of technologies producing the quakes.

---

exceeded even this at 9.5 on the Richter scale, or an unbelievable 11 exajoules, the equivalent of blowing up a hydrogen bomb with a yield of 2.7 *giga*-tons!

[8] Bertell, *Planet Earth: The Latest Weapon of War*, pp. 131-132.

a. Earthquake Engineering and the Second Kardashev Corollary

But first it is worth pausing briefly at this juncture to consider an implication of the hypothesis being developed, namely, any small changes within one geophysical system, such as those caused in the ionosphere by Project West Ford, may have had much larger resonant consequences in another geophysical system, such as would allow for such effects to be engineered and artificially manipulated.

In the preface I observed that the Kardashev civilization classification system was based upon the energy requirements of that civilization. But I also noted a corollary: that the energy required by a civilization implied also the ability to manipulate systems at that level. Thus, a class one civilization required the energy of an entire planet, and hence, the ability to manipulate systems on a planetary scale. A class two civilization required the energy of an entire star, and hence the ability to manipulate stellar systems, and so on.

However, the "key to geophysical warfare is the identification of environmental instabilities to which the addition of a small amount of energy would release vastly greater amounts of energy."[9] Thus, one arrives at a Second Corollary to the Kardashev System, which may be stated as follows: By dint of the principle of the resonant exploitation of systemic instabilities, it is not necessary for a civilization to reach class one or two status in energy requirements to be able to manipulate systems on a class one (planetary), class (two) stellar, or class three (galactic) scale. In fact, the reverse may be true, for by acquiring the technological capability to achieve the *effects* of class one or two capabilities, one may in fact be "leveraging" the energy requirements and technologies of such civilizations.

b. Earthquake Engineering and The Geopolitical Implication

Such energies and capabilities reinforce the geopolitical imperatives referred to at the end of the previous chapter, namely, the absolute need to create a global mechanism of control over such technological potential lest their acquisition by various factions and components within the structure lead to infighting by its means, and thus break down the structure and threatening further human progress.

Indeed, there *are* hints and suggestions of precisely such cooperation. On June 21 1977, *The New York Times* reported that the

---

[9] Bertell, *Planet Earth: The Latest Weapon of War*, p. 131.

United States had sold a 40-ton magnet, thought to be the largest in the world at that time, to the Soviet Union, along with scientific technicians. According to the report, the magnet could generate a magnetic field 250,000 times stronger than that of the Earth, and ultimately, was designed to increase "the power of the Soviet Woodpecker transmitters,"[10] transmitters that many researchers, including retired U.S. Army Lt. Col. Tom Bearden, believe to be components of Soviet "scalar" or "quantum potential" weapons systems.

Another strong suggestion that while there may be covert "earthquake wars" being fought with such technologies at one level, at yet another level, there is deep cooperation, cooperation perhaps born from the geopolitical imperatives implied by such technologies. Researcher Jerry Smith noted in his landmark study *Weather Warfare: The Military's Plan to Draft Mother Nature*, that three prominent *Russian* scientists were on an initial US committee investigating geophysical technologies. The committee was sponsored by the Office of Naval Research and the East-West Space Science Center of the University of Maryland. The three Russian scientists were

1) Alexander V. Gurevich, "Head, Ionospheric Division, Lebedev Institute" and a "Corresponding Member of the Russian Academy of Sciences";
2) Roald Z. Sagdeev, a professor of physics at the University of Maryland and also a member of the Russian Academy of Sciences; and,
3) Gennady M. Milikh, the committee's secretary.[11]

Of these, Sagdeev is particularly interesting, since he had been the "Director of the Soviet Union's Space Research Institute… for fifteen years. While there he directed many high-profile multinational projects, including the joint U.S.-U.S.S.R. Apollo-Soyuz program, and international missions to probe Halley's comet and later to Phobos, a moon of Mars."[12] Such levels of cooperation on technologies with a distinctive geophysical warfare implication, and as we shall also discover later in this chapter, an *off*-planet capability as well, suggest that the technologies themselves might ultimately be being developed for use against another kind of potential threat entirely. But before we can explore that other potential threat, there are further terrestrial geopolitical imperatives of this technology that must be mentioned.

---

[10] Bertell, *Planet Earth: The Latest Weapon of War*, p. 131.

[11] Jerry E. Smith, *Weather Warfare*, p. 181.

[12] Ibid., pp. 182-183.

(1) The 1993 Kalgoorlie Australia "Meteor" and a Further Geopolitical Implication

In June of 1993 a small newspaper in the wilds of Western Australia, the *Kalgoorlie Miner*, stated that a "meteor fireball flying from south to north between Leonora and Laverton" was spotted by "several observers on 28 May."[13] Some of these observers reported that as the fireball flew overhead it made "a pulsed roaring noise, similar to a very loud diesel train."[14] After the sighting, an earthquake measuring approximately 4 on the Richter magnitude scale was reported by "23 different seismic receivers around Western Australia. After the seismic wave hit, they reported hearing a huge, long, drawn-out explosion similar but not quite the same as a mine blast. Although seismographs have been in place since 1900, there is no record of any previous earthquake in this area, nor do aboriginal people have any memory of such an event."[15] In the absence of other explanations, it was initially assumed that the Australian outback had been struck by a meteorite.

But from such simple beginnings, the story quickly grew into something bizarre and sinister, something betokening precisely the kind of factional warfare between the components of the breakaway civilization, components we outlined in the Preface. Estimating the point of probable impact to be in the Eastern Goldfields of Western Australia, geologist Harry Mason visited the site in May and June of 1995, and to his consternation and surprise, discovered absolutely "no sign of an impact crater or ground anomaly."[16] Interviewing several witnesses, Mason uncovered an unusual catalog of facts:

> (People) heard the fireball well before they saw it; it was a large orange-red spherical fireball with a very small bluish conical tail; the speed was like that of a 747 jet liner; the fireball flew apparently parallel to Earth's curvature in a long 'nap of the Earth' arcing trajectory at low altitude (about 2000 metres) over a distance of at least 250 kilmoetres; the fireball arced down toward the ground and disappeared behind trees or low hills; then a blinding massive high

---

[13] Bertell, *Planet Earth: The Latest Weapon of War*, p. 96.

[14] Ibid.

[15] Ibid.

[16] Ibid., pp. 96-97.

> energy burst of blue-white light lit up the night as if it was daylight. Observers could see more than 100 kilometres in every direction at ground level; a red colour flare then shot vertically skywards and a massive seismic ground wave hit the observers; a very loud major explosive blast followed; that was heard over a 250km by 150km corridor; minor quake damage was reported as far as 150hm southeast.[17]

Additionally, while the fireball lit up the sky, dogs in the area "went totally berserk," indicating something about the phenomenon may have been either ultrasonic or electromagnetic in nature.[18]

However, the oddest fact of them all, one which indicated that a very shadowy player may have been involved, was the fact that the entire area in which the incident occurred

> had just been purchased by the Japanese Aum Sinri Kyo 'Supreme Truth' Sect, accused of instigating the 1995 Tokyo subway gas attack. the deal was closed on 23 April 1993, only 35 days before the first fireballs were seen. The deputy leader of AUM initiated the purchase to 'conduct experiments there for the benefit of mankind'. It cannot be shown whether or not these experiments had any connection with the fireballs. The chief lawyer of the US Senate Inquiry into the AUM sect informed Harry Mason of the AUM's great interest in electromagnetic weapons and their power to induce earthquakes.[19]

Moreover, personnel from the sect were present in the area on the night of the sightings and earthquakes.[20]

While it cannot be demonstrated that "these experiments had any connection with the fireballs," it *can* be shown, however, that there is a correlation between such electromagnetic phenomena and earthquakes, and thus, the prospect is raised that indeed the Kilgoorlie-Australian fireball-earthquake episode was indeed possibly caused by a faction of the breakaway civilization, one with clear connections to World War Two fascism, flexing its geophysical warfare muscles.[21]

---

[17] Bertell, *Planet Earth: The Latest Weapon of War,* p. 91, citing Harry Mason, "Bright Skies, Part I," *Nexus,* March-April 1997. No page references given.

[18] Ibid., p. 91.

[19] Ibid.

[20] Ibid.

[21] It should also be noted that the story corroborates retired U.S. Army Lt. Col. Tom Bearden's long standing claims that the Japanese yakuza did indeed

2. Earthquake Warfare
a. Geophysics and Nukes

To see how electromagnetic phenomena and earthquakes are related, and just how far back the technology and theoretical thinking for its production goes, we have to return once again to man who is perhaps the greatest scientist and engineer of all time, Nikola Tesla, who first proposed electromagnetic technologies for doing so in 1908.[22] But Tesla had already taken out a patent for such a device in 1894!

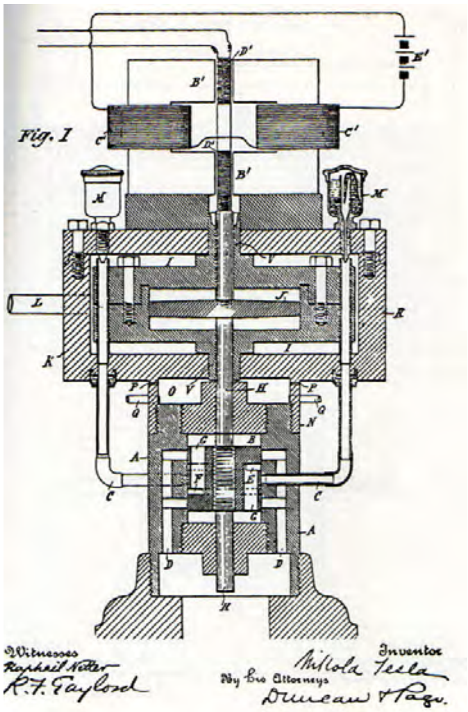
Fig. I
D'
E'
B'
C'
C'
D'
B'
M
M
J
V
L
R
K'
I
J
O V
H
P
Q
P
Q
N
A
C
C
F
E
G
B
A
D
D
H
Witnesses
Raphael Netter
R.F. Gaylord
Inventor
Nikola Tesla
By his Attorneys
Duncan & Page.

Nicola Tesla U.S. Patent 511,916, Jan 2 1894, for an "Electrical Generator," really an Electro-Mechanical Oscillator[23]

---

acquire such "scalar" weapons technologies. It also corroborates, and may indeed be the direct reference, of the remarks of former Clinton Administration Secretary of Defense William Cohen.

[22] Bertell, *Planet Earth: The Latest Weapon of War*, p. 98.

[23] Dale Pond and Walter Baumgartner, *Nikola Tesla's Earthquake Machine, with Tesla's Original Patents plus New Blueprints to build your own Working Model*(The Message Company, 1997), p. 93.

The principle of its operation may be gleaned by recounting an incident that occurred when Tesla tested one such oscillator in his laboratory. Attaching the piston end of the oscillator (visible in the center of the drawing on the previous page) to an iron pillar "that went down through the center of his loft building at 46 East Houston Street"[24] to the building's basement. Turning the vibrator on, Tesla would step up the frequency of the piston's oscillations, observing and taking notes as first one, and then another, piece of furniture and equipment in his laboratory began to dance wildly.[25] But something else was happening, something that would soon capture the imagination of the inventor:

> What Tesla was unaware of on this occasion was that vibrations from the oscillator, traveling down the iron pillar with escalating force, were being carried through the substructure of Manhattan in all directions. (Normally earthquakes are more severe at a distance from their epicenter.) Buildings began to shake, windows chattered, and citizens poured onto the streets in the nearby Italian and Chinese neighborhoods.[26]

The police, who already viewed Tesla as something of a "mad scientist," dispatched two officers to his laboratory when it became known that no other part of New York City was experiencing any tremors. By the time the officers arrived at Tesla's headquarters, he had already smashed the oscillator with a sledgehammer, informing the officers that they were "just a trifle too late" to witness his experiment which he "found it necessary to stop… suddenly and unexpectedly and in an unusual way…"[27]

The idea of thus using resonant vibrations and inherent systemic instabilities thus began to exercise its grip on Tesla's powerful mind, and he immediately foresaw the use of mechanical vibrations to locate mineral deposits beneath the earth and even "to determine the physical constant", i.e., the exact mechanical resonance, of the earth.[28] Indeed, an exact probing of the interior structure of the Earth becomes essential to the fundamental principle of geophysical warfare, for that principle is dependent upon the identification of, and resonant loading of instabilities within geophysical systems.[29]

---

[24] Margaret Cheney, *Tesla: Man Out of Time* (Laurel [Bantam Doubleday Day], 1981), p. 115.

[25] Ibid.

[26] Ibid.

[27] Ibid., pp. 115-116. See also John J. O'Neill, *Prodigal Genius: The Life of Nikola Tesla* (Las Vegas: Brotherhood of Life, 1994), pp. 160-164.

[28] John J. O'Neill, *Prodigal Genius: the Life of Nikola Tesla*, p. 167.

However, Tesla also foresaw other possibilities:

> "So powerful are the effects of the telegeodynamic oscillator," said Tesla in reviewing the subject in the thirties, "that I could now go over to the Empire State Building and reduce it to a tangled mass of wreckage in a very short time. I could accomplish this result with utmost certainly and without any difficulty whatever. I would use a small mechanical vibrating device, an engine so small you could slip it in your pocket. I could attach it to any part of the building, start it in operation, allow it twelve to thirteen minutes to come to full resonance. The building would first respond with gentle tremors, and the vibrations would then become so powerful that the whole structure would go into resonant oscillations of such great amplitude and power that rivets in the steel beams would be loosened and sheared. The outer stone coating would be thrown off and then the skeleton steel structure would collapse in all its parts."[30]

Similarly, Tesla boasted to a friend that he could do the same to the Brooklyn Bridge "in less than an hour."[31]

Never one to think on a small scale, Tesla also conceived of the use of the principle as the ultimate geophysical doomsday weapon, for he maintained that it would be possible to split the Earth by the very same means, "split it as a boy would split an apple—and forever end the career of man."[32] Tesla went on to explain the mechanism of doing so by resonance. Suppose, he maintained, that one would explode a ton of dynamite at a particular point on the Earth's surface or beneath it. A longitudinal pulse would spread from that point concentrically around the Earth until it contracted again at the antipode, where it would spread once again, and contract upon the original point of detonation, where, at that instant, one would again detonate, or pulse the wave, again and again, until the wave grew in such amplitude that the Earth could no longer damp the vibrations, and it would split.[33] In a matter of a few weeks "he could set the Earth's crust into such a state of vibration that it would rise and fall hundreds of feet, throwing rivers out of their beds, wrecking buildings, and practically destroying civilization."[34]

---

[29] Bertell, *Planet Earth: the Latest Weapon of War,* pp. 128-129.

[30] John J. O'Neill, *Prodigal Genius: The Life of Nikola Tesla*, pp. 167-168. It should be noted that O'Neill does *not* cite any source for this quotation. Such statements are, however, condign to the sorts of statements that Tesla was wont to make in later life concerning the super-weapons potentialities of his devices and patents.

[31] Margaret Cheney, *Tesla: Man Out of Time*, p. 116.

[32] Ibid.

There are two very important points to bear in mind here. Firstly, the basic principles—and with Tesla's electro-mechanical oscillator, the basic technologies—of geophysical warfare have been around *for more than a century*. Secondly, it is well-known that the banking-money power fraternity suppressed the development of Tesla's wireless beaming of power, and the physics that went with it. The implication is thus rather profound, for these facts suggest that the basic outlines of a breakaway civilization may have begun circa the turn of the last century, and may have begun as a *private* and corporate development, vastly expanding itself as monetary and financial requirements of the Second World War and Cold War compelled the covert penetration of the much vaster financial resources of government(s) to make it possible. We shall present more intriguing and suggestive information in part three of this book that tends to indicate, from a very *different* angle, that the possibility of a turn-of-the-century beginning of the breakaway civilization may be the case.

3. Nuclear Weapons, Longitudinal Waves, and Earthquakes

a. Longitudinal Waves, Nukes, and Earthquakes

It was the advent of nuclear weapons, however, that made the potentialities of geophysical warfare a much more distinctive possibility. For one thing, the enormous power of nuclear devices made it possible to "see" all the way into the Earth's core, since their powerful longitudinal pulses could penetrate that deeply. This allowed scientists to discover that, beneath the molten core of the Earth, there is yet another, solid core.[35]

But there was something else that nuclear weapons appeared to be doing, something that basically confirmed Nikola Tesla's proclamations of the capabilities of geophysical weapons:

---

[33] Margaret Cheney, *Tesla: Man Out of Time*, pp. 116-117.

[34] Ibid., p. 117. Jerry E. Smith, *Weather Warfare: The Military's Plan to Draft Mother Nature*, p. 85, cites the source of these remarks as *The World Today*, February 1912.

[35] Ibid., p. 129.

> Underground nuclear explosions have also set off earthquakes. The best documented of these occurred deep in the vast Nevada desert in 1968. The United States government set off a nuclear weapon on a fault line to see if they could induce an earthquake—and got one! This took place under the code name *Project Faultless.*
>
> According to the Nevada Division of Environmental Protection *Project Faultless* was detonated at the Central Nevada Test Area (CNTA) in emplacement borehole UC-1 on 19 January 1968 at a depth of 3,200 feet below ground surface. Officially, Faultless was designed to study the behavior and characteristics of seismic signals generated by nuclear detonations and to differentiate them from seismic signals generated by naturally occurring earthquakes, and also to evaluate the usefulness of the site for higher-yield nuclear tests that could not be safvely conducted at the Nevada Test Site (NTS) near Las Vegas. It was intentionally placed on a fault line to see if the high yield explosion would set off an earthquake. It has been argued that the scientists in charge of the shot were convinced that such was impossible, hence the name "faultless."[36]

Note that the military is tacitly admitting that its studies of such detonations are for the purposes of geophysical warfare, to determine the difference between artificially generated seismic pulses, and naturally occurring ones.

The *Project Faultless* test was designed to be a very large test, of just under one megaton, though its size was never publicly announced.[37] Further tests, one code-named Adagio, were also scheduled and these, judging from the size and depth of the drill holes for the tests, would possibly have been in the multi-megaton range.[38] When the test occurred on January 19, 1968, however, windows broke at a high school 87 miles away in Ely, Nevada, and the naturally occurring faults at the test site itself were so disturbed that the site was rendered unusable and further tests were cancelled.[39] In spite of U.S. Department of Energy reassurances that there is no correlation between nuclear tests and earthquakes, the test of an atom bomb in Nevada on June 19, 1992, followed four days later by another such test, was also followed by a series of earthquakes in the Mojave Desert with Richter scale readings as high as 7.6.[40]

---

[36] Jerry E. Smith, *Weather Warfare: The Military's Plan to Draft Mother Nature*, p. 63.

[37] Ibid., p. 65.

[38] Ibid., p. 69.

[39] Ibid.

Other nations' scientists were not as reassuring as the U.S. Department of Energy:

> A study conducted in 1975-76 by two Japanese scientists, entitled "Recent abnormal Phenomena on Earth and Atomic Power Tests," by Shigeyoshi Matsumae, president of Tokai University, and Yoshio Kato, head of the University's Department of Aerospace Science, concluded:
>
> "Abnormal meteorological phenomena, earthquakes and fluctuations of the earth's axis are related in a direct cause-and-effect to testing of nuclear devices… Nuclear testing is the cause of abnormal polar motion of the earth. By applying the dates of nuclear tests with a force of more than 150 kilotons, we found it obvious that the position of the pole slid radically at the time of the nuclear explosion… Some of the sudden changes measured up to one meter in distance.[41]

Nor were the Japanese alone in coming to such conclusions, for the British magazine *New Scientist* reported on 12 October 1978 that the 1978 earthquake in Tabas, Iran that killed at least 25,000 people "may have been triggered by an underground nuclear explosion… British seismologists believe the Tabas earthquake implies a nuclear test that has gone awry,"[42] and this at a time when seismic laboratories at the University of Uppsala, Sweden, reported a Soviet thermonuclear test of approximately 10 megatons had occurred only 36 hours before the Iranian earthquake.[43]

Canadian Gary T. Whiteford, Professor of Geography at the University of New Brunswick, echoed his colleague's concerns in a paper for the August 1992 edition of *War and Peace Digest* entitled "Earthquakes and Nuclear Testing: Dangerous Patterns and Trends." The magazine summarized Whiteford's paper as unequivocally supporting the correlation of nuclear testing and earthquakes:

> Within the data he found other suggestive patterns. The one-two nuclear test punch that preceded by only a few days the July earthquakes in California this year may reveal a special danger. The largest earthquake this century took place in Tangshan in North-East

---

[40] Jerry E. Smith, *Weather Warfare: The Military's Plan to Draft Mother Nature*, p. 72.

[41] Ibid., pp. 73-74.

[42] Ibid., p. 74.

[43] Ibid.

> China on July 27 1976. It measured 8.2 and killed 800,000 people. Only five days earlier the French had tested a bomb in the Mururoa atoll in the Pacific. Four days later the United States tested a bomb in Nevada. Twenty-four hours later the earthquake hit China.[44]

This is a significant statement, for the detonation of two nuclear bombs, at different times, suggests that the earthquake in China was caused by the *interferometry* of the resulting waves from the two detonations, and this raises the possibility that one could cause such quakes by the interference of two such *longitudinal electrical* waves, the very type of waves many, including this author, believe was the basic concept behind Tesla's idea for the wireless transmission of power.

b. Tesla, Bearden, Nukes, Longitudinal Pulses, and the Medium

It is the possibility of an electromagnetic, rather than merely nuclear-mechanical, generation of such killer earthquakes that informed Dr. Andrea Puharich to speculate that it was produced by the use of Tesla-type electromagnetic technologies. Puharich noted that the *New York Times* reported on June 5, 1977 that "just before the first tremor at 3:42 AM, the sky lit up 'like daylight.' *The multi-hued lights, mainly white and red, were seen up to 200 miles away. Leafs on many trees were burned to a crisp and growing vegetables were scorched on one side, as if by a fireball.*"[45] It is this fact that lead many to consider alternative explanations for such earthquakes.

The key connection between such nuclear, and electromagnetic, possibilities for geophysical warfare lie in unusual properties of *rotating plasmas*, one of which is their ability to converse transverse electromagnetic waves into *longitudinal* electromagnetic waves, and vice-versa.[46] Thus, a rotating medium such as the Earth's atmosphere, could be energized by a technology, such as HAARP, to produce an ionized gas or plasma, which could in turn generate transverse or longitudinal waves which would be deeply Earth-penetrating waves:

---

[44] Jerry E. Smith, *Weather Warfare: The Military's Plan to Draft Mother Nature*, p. 75.

[45] Ibid., p. 88, emphasis added.

[46] T.E. Bearden, Ph.D.(Lt. Col. U.S. Army, Retired), *Fer De Lance: Briefing on Soviet Scalar Electromagnetic Weapons*, 2nd Edition (Cheniere, 2002), p. 87.

> To complete the military investigation of the whole Earth system it was necessary to probe the solid earth itself, and this again involves the use of wave technology.[47]

Here, as in so many places, the technology is capable of a dual function, both to probe the Earth, and to exploit its instabilities:

> Ionospheric heaters such as HAARP create extremely low frequency (ELF) waves which are reflected back to the Earth by the ionosphere. These rays can be directed through the Earth in a method called deep earth tomography. Since the beamed radiation used to convert the direct electrical current of the electrojet into alternating current must be pulsed, it is reasonable to assume that the ELF radiation it generates will also be pulsed. *Pulsed ELF waves can be used to convey mechanical effects, vibrations at great distances through the Earth*.[48]

Such technologies, operating in the 8-10 Hertz range, would be operating in the normal frequency range of human and animal brains, and thus be capable of a mind manipulation use, as well as for the purposes of probing and mapping the Earth's interior, or for more direct exploitation of instabilities.[49]

This implies something very significant to our expanding methodology for detecting the use of such generated and manipulated earthquakes: the presence prior or during such an event of low frequency electromagnetic waves, which would, in some cases, case precisely the type of air glow reported for the Tangshan earthquake, the glow typical of high ionization of the atmosphere and thus the exploitation of its plasma properties in the generation of powerful longitudinal waves. Indeed, such airglows were reported in September 1993 during the heavy flooding that took place in the American midwest that year.[50] Similar phenomena have been detected prior to some earthquakes:

> On 12 September 1989, magnetometers at Corralitos(near Monterey Bay, in California) detected unusual ultra-low frequency waves between 0.01 Hertz and 10 Hertz. This is the lowest range of ELF waves. these waves grew to about 30 times their first intensity, and finally subsided on 5 October 1989. On 17 October they suddenly appeared again at 2:00 pm local time, which signals so strong that they

---

[47] Bertell, *Planet Earth: The Latest Weapon of War*, p. 128.

[48] Ibid., p. 130, emphasis added.

[49] Q.v. Bertell, pp. 130-131.

[50] Ibid., p. 131.

> went off the scale. Three hours later the San Francisco earthquake took place. On 29 March 1992, the *Washington Times* reported that 'satellites and ground sensors detected mysterious radio waves or related electrical and magnetic activity before major earthquakes in Southern California during 1986-7, Armenia in 1988, and Japan and Northern California in 1989. The 17 January 1994 earthquake in Los Angeles was also preceded by unusual radio waves and two sonic booms. These strange 'coincidences' have never been completely explained.[51]

As will be seen in the next section, this fact implies certain things for a methodology of determining when a technology may be in play in earthquake generation.

For the moment, however, we note that the Russian state Duma's Committees on International Affairs and Defense in August 2002 issued a report describing HAARP, and by implication, similar technologies and installations, as "a qualitatively new type of weapon" and left no doubt about the qualitative change it represented:

> Under the High Frequency Active Auroral Research Program (HAARP) the USA is creating new integral geophysical weapons that may influence the near-Earth medium with high-frequency radio waves. The significance of this qualitative leap could be compared to the transition from cold steel to firearms, or from conventional weapons to nuclear weapons. This new type of weapon differs from previous types in that the near-Earth medium becomes at once an object of direct influence and its component.[52]

Given the ability of plasmas—ionized gases—to generate longitundinal waves, however, it becomes possible that such transmitters could be used not only on the near-Earth medium for weather generation and manipulation, but for direct modification and probing of the Earth itself.

But what have nuclear weapons, longitudinal waves, earthquakes, and Tesla to do with each other? What really is the possible *physics* underlying them?

One possible answer is provided by retired U.S. Army lieutenant colonel Thomas E. Bearden, in a signal paper from 1981 entitled "Tesla's Secret and the Soviet Tesla Weapons." Here once again Bearden returns to the idea of the scalar potential, ϕ, of James Clerk

---

[51] Bertell, *Planet Earth: The Latest Weapon of War*, pp. 131-132.

[52] Jerry E. Smith, *Weather Warfare: The Military's Plan to Draft Mother Nature*, p. ix.

Maxwell, and to the idea that this potential represents an internal stress in the physical medium which is an "instantaneous stress" on the fabric of spacetime.[53] This stress, Bearden notes, referencing the now well-known 1903 paper of British physicist E.T. Whittaker, "On the Partial Differential Equations of Mathematical Physics," can be decomposed into longitudinal waves, and hence, that the scalar electrostatic potential is "a measure of the intensity of the virtual state flux through a 4-dimensional spacetime point."[54]

Unpacking all this, Bearden unfolds an profoundly interesting chain of reasoning, one with huge implications as we shall see. He begins by noting that electrical polarity, or charge, "is a 4-dimensional concept."[55] Particle charge, in turn, is intimately related to the *spin* of the particle. But mass, however, is something very different:

> Now mass is a spatial, 3-dimensional concept. Rigorously, mass does not exist in time—masstime exists in time. Mass and charge are thus of differing dimensionalities!
>
> Also, according to quantum mechanics, the charge of a particle—e.g., of an electron—is due to the continual flux of virtual particles given off and absorbed by the observable particle of mass. Thus charge also is conceptually a measure of the virtual flux density, and directly related to ϕ (the scalar electrostatic potential). Further, since the charge exists in time, it is the charge of a particle of spatial mass that gives it the property of masstime, or existing in time.[56]

From this, Bearden attempts to reconstruct, on the basis of Whittaker's 1903 paper, what Tesla's wireless beaming of power was actually doing. The field generated by the scalar potential ϕ, he noted,

> need not involve observable mass accumulation, but only charge (virtual flowrate intensity) accumulation. Accumulated masses are like

---

[53] T.E. Bearden, "Solutions to Tesla's Secrets and the Soviet Tesla Weapons," (Chula Vista, CA: Tesla Book Company, 1981), p. 3.

[54] Ibid.

[55] Ibid.

[56] Ibid., pp. 3-4. It should be noted that charge, mass, and spin are the three main things scientists look at in the identification of the many particles in the quantum mechanical zoo. It should be noted that the Higgs boson was first predicted in 1964, and that more recent developments of the theory indicate the possibility of more than one Higgs boson. See John A. Gowan, "Introduction to the Higgs Boson Papers," at http://www.johnagowan.org/sect16.html for a decent summary of links and papers.

> so many gallons of water; accumulated charge is like so much *pressure on both the water (space) and the time in which the water is existing.*
>
> Now, if one varies the (scalar electrostatic potential) solely as a point function, one would have a purely scalar complex longitudinal wave, and not a vector wave at all. This is the fundamentally new electrical wave that Tesla discovered in 1899.
>
> Rigorously, all vector fields are two-point functions and thus decomposable into two scalar fields, as Whittaker showed in 1903. It follows that any vector wave can be decomposed into two scalar waves. By implication, therefore, a normal transverse (electromagnetic) vector wave, (for example), must simply be two coupled scalar (Tesla) waves—and these scalars independently would be longitudinal if uncoupled…
>
> A tesla (scalar potential) wave—i.e. a massless wave in pure ϕ_0, the stress of the spacetime medium—would have very strange characteristics indeed. For one thing, since it moves in a complex 4-space, it has many more modes of movement than does a simple wave in 3-space.[57]

This requires a pause and a bit of unpacking. What Bearden is suggesting, behind all this dense language, is that charge is simply the measure of the intensity of virtual flux through any given point, and as such, since the intensity or density of a charge can vary, so can the virtual flow itself, or, to put it in more Kozyrevian terms, so can the degree of temporal flow itself.

Two or more longitudinal waves can thus be made to move through higher-dimensional or +3-spatial regions at different intensities or times, to converge at a particular point. If a triangle is the two-dimensional signature of a three-dimensional tetrahedron, then, how would one recognize such +3-space higher dimensional "longitudinal wave convergence" occurring in our three-dimensional world? Bearden's highly speculative answer is worth citing in full:

> Actually, a ϕ_4-wave (i.e., a scalar wave in four dimensional space, ed.) can and will interact with some of the other existing ϕ_4-waves in the medium transversed, and this interaction can involve *pair-coupling* into (electromagnetic) vector fields and waves, an interaction **not presently in the electrodynamics theory**. The result of scalar pair-coupling creates a finite amount of vector "drag" on the ϕ_4-wave, so it then has less than infinite velocity. However, if this drag is small due to limited

---

[57] T.E. Bearden, "Solutions to Tesla's Secrets and the Soviet Tesla Weapons," p. 6.

> pair-coupling, the scalar wave's velocity through the slightly dragging medium still may be far greater than the speed of vector EM waves (light) in vacuum. On the other hand, if the pair-coupling is made severe, the ϕ-wave may move at a speed considerably below the speed of vector light waves in vacuum. The velocity of the ϕ_4-wave is thus both variable and controllable or adjustable (e.g., **simply by varying its initial amplitude,** which through a given medium changes the percentage of pair-coupling and hence the degree of drag on the scalar wave).[58]

We are now in the presence of a dilemma, one which we shall confront again in part three, and with a vengeance, namely, the admission that the speculative solution being offered does not exist in current electrodynamics, *though it is clearly implied by Whittaker's 1903 paper*, leads two possibilities open: (1) one is dealing with outright "pseudo-science", or (2) one is dealing with a *suppressed* science.

For the moment, let us assume the latter is true for the sake of argument, and allow Bearden himself to unpack what he is actually saying:

> An earthquake fault zone is such a scalar interferometer. Stresses and charge pileups exist in the plates on each side adjacent to the fault, with stress relief existing in the middle in the fault fracture itself.[59]
>
> …
>
> Since the rock is locally nonlinear, the mechanical stresses and electrical currents in it are also locally nonlinear. This results in the generation of multiple frequencies of ϕ_4-waves from each side of the fault interferometer, yielding two complex Fourier expansion patterns of scalar potential waves…
>
> Since much of the piezoelectric material in the stressed rocks is quartz grains, the features of quartz are of particular interest. Each little quartz grain is itself highly stressed, and has stress cracks. It is therefore a little scalar interferometer. Further, quartz is transparent to infrared and ultraviolet; and the random orientation of all the quartz scalar interferometers may also form a Prigogine system far from thermodynamic equilibrium.[60]

---

[58] T.E. Bearden, "Solutions to Tesla's Secrets and the Soviet Tesla Weapons," p. 7, italicized emphasis in the original, boldface emphasis added.

[59] Ibid., pp. 9, 11.

[60] Ibid., pp. 11-12.

Recall here that the essence of geophysical warfare was to identify and capitalize on such instabilities. In other words, *the two regions on each side of a fault represent the 3-space unfolding of two different scalar potentials, and the fault itself represents the "topological common surface" of the two, a surface of pure massless stress, which may be "defined" as the sum of stress of the two regions.*

We noted earlier that rotating plasmas under stress can produce such longitudinal waves from transverse waves, or vice-versa. And here we come to the possible heart of a mystery that has been present in my books since *The Giza Death Star* and much more recently in *The Grid of the Gods*, and that is difficulty of yield-calculations of early thermonuclear tests. We now have another clue as to why these devices may be transducing or gating more energy into the reaction than can perhaps be accounted for by normal models, for in a standard thermonuclear device, *two* bombs are present, an atom bomb, which is used to generate the enormous radiation—in essence a *highly charged longitudinal wave*—required to set off a second *fusion* bomb, which itself generates, mere fractions of a second later, another enormous pulse. As these waves interact the reaction itself becomes a plasma scalar interferometer, plugged into the all other locally occurring stresses.

Bearden notes that all of this is "exciting, for it means that Tesla stress waves can affect either space or time individually, or both space and time simultaneously, or even oscillate back and forth between primarily affecting time and primarily affecting space,"[61] the reason being because

> All of these exist in the flow of time, and they are affected if the time stream in which they exist is affected. This was the awful secret that Tesla partially discovered by 1900… Thus by transmitting a scalar standing wave into the earth, he could easily tap the fiery scalar fields produced in the molten core of the planet itself, turning them into ordinary electromagnetic energy. In such a case, a single generator would enable anyone to put up a simple antenna and extract all the free energy desired.
>
> When Tesla's alarmed financial backers discovered this was his real intent, they considered him a dangerous madman and found it necessary to ruthlessly stop him at all costs. And so his financial support was withdrawn, he was harassed in his more subtle patent

---

[61] T.E. Bearden, " Solutions to Tesla's Secrets and the Soviet Tesla Weapons," p. 16.

> efforts (and the patents themselves were adulterated), and his name gradually was removed from all the electrical textbooks.[62]

However, we must now begin to question the standard explanations for the financial power's suppression of Tesla, his plans, and his technology, for as is now evident—and as would have been evident to those powerful men by dint of the expert advice they would have been able to buy—the weaponization potential of Tesla's devices and concepts were enormous.

Likewise, the geopolitical consequences in a politically divided world were also enormous. For the elite, a means therefore had to be found to suppress the public development not only of the technology, but to erase the concepts that underwrote it from public attention. In this we may perhaps discern the real beginning of the breakaway civilization. Of course, if one has been following the ongoing story of Nazi secret weapons that I and other researchers have been developing, or the interpretation of postwar Soviet research that Col. Bearden has developed over so many years, this effort was, by the end of World War Two, ultimately *unsuccessful* as it became evident that many different factions—not all of them in the orbit of the Anglo-American financial elite—had acquired and were using such technologies.

But there is another implication that the total culture of total power of the breakaway civilization would immediately understand, if anything close to Bearden's speculations on fault lines as scalar interferometers was understood in Tesla's time (and we have already seen Tesla's remarks indicating that something *like* it may have been in his mind). And for this, we need a brief excursion into ancient times and modern interests.

c. Pyramid Possibilities

Obviously, what is true of naturally occurring fault lines in the Earth as common surfaces of an interferometer of two regions of a nonlinear medium under stress, would be true of any such artificially created "fault" created by using nonlinear quartz-bearing rock, and placing it under enormous stress, such as pyramids, which would be, on Bearden's view, massive man-made scalar interferometers. Indeed, such conceptualization formed the basis of my own thinking behind my hypothesis that the Great Pyramid may have represented a sophisticated weapon system of mass destruction.[63]

---

[62] Ibid., p. 18.

Recently alternative researcher Nick Redfern published an important and intriguing book about the military-industrial complex's interest in ancient archaeology, *The Pyramids and the Pentagon: The Government's Top Secret Pursuit of Mystical relics, Ancient Astronauts, and Lost Civilizations.* In it, Redfern states an intriguing thesis:

> The controversy-filled theory that a number of humankind's most impressive and legendary constructions, such as the pyramids of Egypt, the similar structures that pepper whole swathes of South and Central America, and England's Stonehenge, were built via the use of fantastic technologies long lost to the fog of time, is one that provokes a great deal of interest and attention, as well as loud and vexed voices.
>
> In essence, the amazing theory suggests that the raising and placing of massive stone blocks in eras long past was achieved by the manipulation and nullification of gravitational forces or anti-gravity, in simple terms…
>
> Even more sensationally, the U.S. military has taken a keen and provable interest in these particular matters and beliefs. The story continues that the Pentagon has secretly taken much of its inspiration in investigating these undeniably alternative issues from studying the work of authors in the field of ancient astronaut research.[64]

For our purposes, we would observe only that such an interest in ancient things would be the logical development of the "total culture of total power", especially if it adhered to the view that there existed a technologically sophisticated civilization on planet Earth in high antiquity, a civilization that encoded its science in sophisticated myths, metaphors, texts, and monuments.

I have argued this view in many books, and believe it to have been a functioning ideological component of another great contemporary breakaway civilization, Nazi Germany. Moreover, with the post-war deals with the Axis devils recounted in the preface and in my other books, this interest by the military-industrial complex of the USA may not only represent the total culture of total power of that breakaway civilization, it may represent the legacy of that Nazi influence in its postwar development and formation.

---

[63] It should be noted that all stone pyramids are natural interferometers, and as such, may be components of a vast machine in their own right, perhaps of a defensive nature, perhaps of an offensive one. See also my blog "More Fun with the 'Area 51 Pyramid': How to Get to Unnamed Road, NV," July 7, 2012, http://gizadeathstar.com/2012/07/more-fun-with-the-area-51-pyramid-how-to-get-to-unnamed-road-nv/

[64] Nick Redfern, *The Pyramids and the Pentagon: The Government's Top Secret Pursuit of Mystical Relics, Ancient Astronauts, and Lost Civilizations* (New Page Books, 2012), pp. 65-66.

In any case, Redfern highlights a little-known fact that would have been of interest to this total culture of total power, the text *The Meadows of Gold and Mines of Gems*, by the ninth-century Arab adventurer and world traveler, Abu al-hasan ali al-Mas'udi.[65] In it, al-Mas'udi:

> recorded tantalizing, centuries-old lore that had come his way during his explorations (that) strongly suggested the pyramids were created by what today we would most likely refer to as some form of levitation.
>
> The incredible story that al-Mas'udi uncovered went like this: When building the pyramids, their creators carefully positioned what was described as a magical papyrus underneath the edges of the mighty stones that were to be used in the construction process. Then, one by one, the stones were struck by what was curiously, and rather enigmatically, described only as a rod of metal. Lo and behold, the stones then slowly began to rise into the air, and like dutiful soldiers unquestioningly following orders, proceeded in slow, methodical, single-file fashion a number of feet above a paved pathway surrounded on both sides by similar, mysterious metal rods. For around 150 feet, al-Mas'udi noted, the gigantic stones moved forward, usually with nothing more than the very gentlest of prods from the keeper of the mysterious rod to ensure they stayed on track, before finally, and very softly, settling back to the ground.
>
> At that point, the process was duly repeated. The stones were struck once more, rose up from the surface, and again traveled in the desired direction, for yet another 150 feet or so. And so the strange, repetitive task continued, time and time again, until all of the stones finally reached their ultimate destination. Then, in a distinctly far more complex feat, the stones were struck again, but this time in a fashion that caused them to float even higher into the air. Then, when they reached the desired point, they were carefully and with incredible ease, manipulated into place, one-by-one, by hand and nothing else, until the huge pyramid in question was finally completed.[66]

---

[65] Nick Redfern, *The Pyramids and the Pentagon: The Government's Top Secret Pursuit of Mystical Relics, Ancient Astronauts, and Lost Civilizations*, p. 69.

[66] Ibid., pp.69-70.

For our purposes, the implications of this story, if true, in conjunction with Mr. Redfern's thesis, and taken against the backdrop of the Nazis' evident interest in the militarization of ancient esoteric lore and tradition represented by Heinrich Himmler's creation of the *SS Ahnenerbedienst*, is that a similar secret and interdisciplinary "team" or unit would exist within the breakaway civilization, tasked with the examination of ancient texts and monuments, all for the purpose of gaining further knowledge and technologies of its hegemony. Indeed, the possibility arises that it may see itself as the deliberate attempt to recreate that civilization of high antiquity.

B. The Methodology of the Indications of Geophysical Wars, and Disturbing Class Two Stellar Possibilities

1. Methodological Implications

Fascinating as such a possibility may be, however, our attention must now return to the *methodological implications* that the previous chapters have unfolded. How would one *detect the actual deployment* of such plausibly deniable technologies in actual use, deployed in actual "covert wars"? From all that has preceded, we conclude that any such method of detection would in effect be an interdisciplinary effort, coordinating the following two broad classes of data:

1) In the occurrence of any natural disaster, such as a tsunami, earthquake, or severe weather storm, were there antecedent technological signatures, such as extremely low frequency broadcasts, unusual activity by HAARP or other ionospheric heaters, or nuclear tests? In the case of earthquakes particularly, how *deep or shallow* was the epicenter, and how sharp was the initial P-wave?
2) Was there unusual stock, bond, or currency market activity in the area, country, or region affected prior to the event? or, similarly, or in conjunction with it or shortly thereafter, was there stepped up or unusual political activity prior to the event in question? In either case, who was behind the activity? Or have any nations made public statements to the effect that such events are engineered?

As cases in point, it is worth noting that in the wake of the devastating earthquake that struck Haiti, Venezuelan President Hugo Chavez appeared on officially-backed Russian Today TV, and stated that the quake was engineered by the U.S. More recently Iranian President Mahmoud Ahmadenijad has accused the USA of engineering Iran's draught.

Peculiar as these claims may seem, there is a corroboration that oddly recently appeared in the financial and securities markets: the weather derivative, which is a handy instrument to have around if one also has the instrumentalities of weather modification.

In this respect, there is one "hugely stunning" example of exactly the kind of pattern that this methodology implies, and this comes from former Bush Administration Assistant Secretary of Housing and Urban Development, Catherine Austin Fitts, in an interview on November 26, 2011 with Bonnie Faulkner entitled "Unpacking Mr. Global." There Ms. Fitts put the connection of the methodology with hidden technologies, black budgets, disaster-and-market manipulation with some force:

> **Catherine Austin Fitts** (11:25)**:** "Right. And I think the biggest problem is starting at the end of World War II, we created a financial mechanism through the CIA Act and the National Security Act in combination and then with a variety of Executive Directives that allowed private corporations to be the beneficiary of that money. So, you've created between those steps, you created a financial mechanism where Government can borrow money and use that money to give money to private corporations on a non-accountable basis to own and control the most dazzling newest, hottest technology on the planet. And Government and elected representatives lost control of the technology. And as frustrated as we can sometimes get with Congress or the Federal Government, the reality is the Federal Government and Congress do not control that technology. We now have private corporations in control of that technology. **And we have what I call a *Breakaway Civilisation*. We have a group of people who have so much money and so much power and, literally, don't feel under any compunction to obey the laws of the Constitution or any other laws for that matter.**"
>
> **Bonnie Faulkner:** "And what kind of technology are we talking about?"
>
> **Catherine Austin Fitts** (12:43)**:** "Well, that's the question. We can only speculate. But I think we have the technology to control the weather or influence the weather. I think we have technology that can trigger earthquakes and tsunamis. I think we have invisible weaponry, certainly, that can basically invade any and all privacy. And we have computer systems that can hack banks and on and on and on. We have very, very powerful technology."
>
> **Bonnie Faulkner:** "Yes. And I'm sure they're rolling a lot of it out in these wars that we're not even aware of."

> **Catherine Austin Fitts** (13:16)**:** “Right. Well, I’ll never forget. I have a wonderful friend who wanted to buy a world bond fund, and this is many years ago, and they asked me to do a search. And I looked and I looked. And finally I found two that I could kinda stomach. And, at the time, I wasn’t big on world bond funds, but, so they bought them. One of them had 15% of the money in Indonesian sovereign debt. And they bought them. And then, about a week after they bought them, the one with the Indonesian sovereign debt dropped by 15% overnight, massive insider trading. The market’s calm. Interest rates are the same. There’s no reason, nothing. And we called the sponsor. And we try and ask questions. We were like, ‘What is going on?’ I couldn’t fathom it. It was like the strangest thing I’d ever seen. **A week later the Indonesian Tsunami happened and I realised they knew. They knew it was coming. They knew. How’d they know?** And it’s funny ‘cos I’m a very happy person. I literally lay down and thought for a week. I thought, ‘How do you manage money in a world where people know that a tsunami’s gonna happen a week later and keep it to themselves and just trade on the inside information?’[67]

Fitts’ remarks return us once again to the implications of the first part of this book, namely, that if there is such insider trading, it is based upon access to the knowledge that such technologies exist, *and will be scheduled for use.*[68]

---

[67] Catherine Austin Fitts and Bonnie Faulkner, “Unpacking Mr. Global, Part Two,” http://mediaroots.org/mr-transcript-unpacking-mr.-global-part-2.php.

[68] This author has entertained the suspicion that the Haiti quake was not only the product of a technology, but that the subsequent earthquake near the region of Paral, Chile—close to the area of the ex-Nazi compound of Colonia Dignidad, was a response, and thus, that this was an “earthquake” war. Similarly, I have maintained a similar possibility existed for the devastating earthquakes that his the southern Soviet Union just prior to the German reunification, and I have maintained similar suspicions that the Fukushima earthquake and tsunami may have been induced by a technology. In the case of Haiti, it was a well-known haven and money-laundering point between the West and various other factions, and striking it could conceivably have dealt a blow to some activities. The earthquake in Chile, and its location, speaks for itself. In the case of the Soviet earthquakes prior to the reunification of Germany, the possible political background speaks for itself. In the case of Fukushima, the Japanese government had, prior to the event, sent clear signals to the USA that it was moving toward a greater opening to Asia and particularly China, while simultaneously “requesting” in strong language that the USA shut down its base in Okinawa. Since the Fukushima tragedy, tensions in Japanese and Chinese relations have risen again in response to the Japanese government’s inexplicable reversal of its prior policy.

2. A Brief Look at the Solar, or Stellar, Implications

There is one final implication of the technologies and concepts briefly reviewed in this chapter, and it is the stellar, or solar one. We have already noted that a rotating plasma medium, such as would be obtained by the ionization of the Earth's atmosphere either in localized cyclonic systems, or in the more generalized heating of the atmosphere as it rotates and blows around the Earth, is an ideal medium for the creation of longitudinal from transverse waves, and vice versa. Given Bearden's speculations that scalar waves "travel" in +3-space, their resonance effects could therefore effect the activity of the Sun itself, implying a commensurate expansion of the methodology outlined in the previous section. In other words, the very concepts and technologies that we have argued in this and the previous chapter that lie on the verge of Kardashev Class One civilization capabilities, have even deeper implications and possibilities, in that they might lie on the cusp of Class Two capabilities as well.[69]

***

The technologies outlined in this part of the book have led us to an unusual place, for not only does the doctrine of full spectrum dominance impel the development of a total culture of total power, that culture in turn drives the necessity to create the bureaucratic instrumentalities for the pursuit of power from outer space to the ancient past. As we have seen, it implies that its real beginnings may lie even further back in our history than the Second World War, with the advent of the modern age and the man who made our electrical world—with all its vast potential for scalar good and evil—possible: Nikola Tesla. There is, as we shall discover in the next part, another suggestive set of facts to corroborate this view, and the connection to UFOs. But first, a brief review is in order in the next chapter.

---

[69] It should also be observed that the technologies and agendas that co-author Scott D. deHart and I outlined in our book *Transhumanism: A Grimoire of Alchemical Agendas* (Feral House, 2012), also directly compel the emergence of a culture of a breakaway civilization, as we repeatedly observe in that book.

9

COUNTERFEITING CONFLICT FOR FUN, PROFIT AND WORLD DOMINATION:

CONCLUSIONS TO PART TWO

"If we also consider the possibility of covert breakthroughs in propulsion technology, and the 'off the grid' nature of the deep-black world itself, we come to the possibility that we are dealing with, in effect, a 'breakaway civilization.' One with loose connections at various points to the open civilization of humanity, but with great independence, secrecy, and a monopoly of certain key scientific secrets."

Richard M. Dolan[1]

Certain key scientific secrets: with these words of Richard Dolan, and the survey undertaken in the previous chapters, we now arrive at the point where we must pause and reprise the argument thus far. In Part One, we observed that the financial arrangements surveyed there suggested a kind of "American national-security apparatus gone international," one which comprised the following sectors:

1) The financial component (i.e. the central and prime banks);
2) The *corporate* component (i.e., the corporations *conducting the research* to be outlined in future chapters);
3) The intelligence and *covert operations* component, represented by the heavy presence of figures like Ed Lansdale in the financial activities outlined in previous chapters; and,
4) The military component.

We also noted that the vast scale of financial fraud and industrial scale counterfeiting implied a *technological development* requiring such funds, above and beyond the needs dictated by the creation of a hidden system of finance, a "covert slush fund", for covert operations activities.

Additionally, we also observed three major "factions" within this structure as well:

---

[1] Richard M. Dolan, *UFOs and the National Security State, Vol. 2: the Cover-Up Exposed, 1973-1991* (Keyhole Publishing Company, 2009), pp. 564-565.

1) An American component, represented by the interface between the corporate, financial, military, and intelligence-covert operations national security structure that we have seen in play, and particularly in chapter 4;
2) A postwar European-international Fascist or Nazi component, deeply interlocked with corporate and financial Europe, and as I have indicated elsewhere, with the criminal underground or Mafia drug trade;
3) A postwar Asian elite, comprised largely of the same nexus of relationships between the Japanese imperial family, the political and corporate elites of Japan, and a criminal underground.

The presence of all these factions and the Cold War necessity of the containment and rollback of Communism created a culture of covert operations governed by four principles, each of which constituted a stage in the defeat of Communism: (1) containment, (2) confrontation, (3) rollback, (4) defeat.

We have also argued, however, that it is this culture of covert operations that, in part, inspired the types of technologies surveyed here in Part Two, the technologies by which to fight a covert war with plausible deniability via the manipulation of natural geophysical systems from the weather to fault lines, to the human mind.

These technologies, as we have seen, implied an unusually interdisciplinary methodology for their use in actual operations, and it is best to repeat them:

1) In the occurrence of any natural disaster, such as a tsunami, earthquake, or severe weather storm, were there antecedent technological signatures, such as extremely low frequency broadcasts, unusual activity by HAARP or other ionospheric heaters, or nuclear tests? In the case of earthquakes particularly, how *deep or shallow* was the epicenter, and how sharp was the initial P-wave?
2) Was there unusual stock, bond, or currency market activity in the area, country, or region affected prior to the event? Or, similarly, or in conjunction with it, was there stepped up or unusual political activity prior to the event in question? In either case, who was behind the activity? Or have any nations made public statements to the effect that such events are engineered?

Note the implication of the last point: for unusual activity, whether monetary, or more importantly, political activity, could also be interpreted as a *message* from one party to another, and this idea of sending messages in conjunction with some of these technologies will become a very crucial point in the next and final part of this book, for now, finally, we come to the what Richard Dolan, and many others, believe to be the core issue driving the postwar formation of the breakaway civilization: the UFO.

But here again, the beginnings of that vast expansion of the postwar covert operations and black technologies capability may have had a much earlier rudimentary beginning, a beginning “coincidental” with the emergence of Tesla’s world-transforming technologies, and the early suppression of some of them.

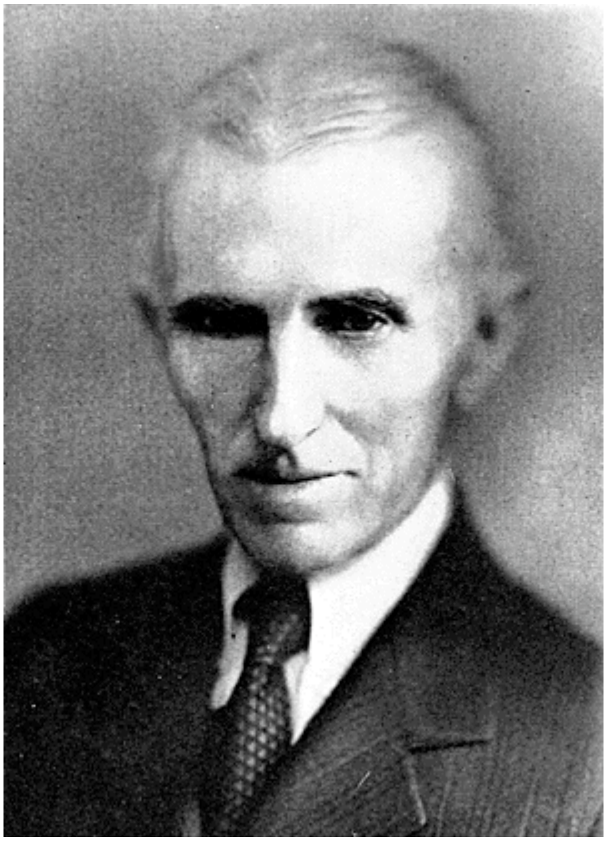

Nikola Tesla in Later Life

PART THREE:
COVERT WARS AND CELESTIAL PSYOPS

"Two years later, in 1967, Robert Salas was stationed at Malmstrom Air Force Base in Montana. The former Air Force captain was monitoring a launch-control center equipped with 10 nuclear Minuteman missiles when UFOs appeared in the sky above them just as something unexpected occurred to the 10 defense weapons. "'As we looked at the display board in front of us, the missiles began going into an unlaunchable, or no-go, mode. They couldn't be launched— it went from green to red,' Salas told AOL, explaining how it was extraordinary that so many missiles could malfunction at the same time."

"'The overarching issue is that the U.S. government will not admit the reality of UFOs and the fact that they are superior craft piloted by unknown entities (who) have a distinct and ongoing interest in this nation's nuclear weapons program,' (Robert) Hastings speculated."

Lee Spiegel, "UFO Researcher Claims Air Force Not Revealing Truth About Communication Outage at F.E. Warren Missile Site," July 7, 2011 http://www.huffingtonpost.com/2011/07/07/ufos-at-nuclear-missile-site-eyewitnesses-afraid-to-talk_n_881802.html

10

AIRSHIP ARCANA AND THE DELLSCHAU DILEMMA:

SECRET SOCIETIES AND SECRET SCIENCE

"Though the country observed the great airshow in 1897, the 1897 airship mystery may have actually began in 1840's New York and it may have ended in Houston in 1923 with the death of Charles A.A. Dellschau."
Michael Busby[1]

UFOs are not unique to modern human history, and indeed, they may in a certain sense be viewed as a rather common occurrence throughout most ages. Additionally, they may not only be viewed as a kind of historical commonplace, but moreover may also be viewed as perhaps having the uncanny ability to appear at crucial junctures in human history, perhaps even as *influencing* the course of events at those junctures.

It is recorded, for example, that during Alexander the Great's siege of the crucial city of Tyre, five "flying shields" were seen by both the attacking Macedonians and the defenders in the city, until one of the "shields" shot a "lightning bolt" which destroyed one of the walls of the city's fortifications, allowing Alexander's army to storm and capture the fortress.[2] There are some who believe that Ezekiel's vision of wheels within wheels, or Constantine's vision prior to his victorious campaign to reunify the Roman Empire and convert to Christianity, was caused by a UFO.

The famous French Ufologist Dr. Jacques Vallee has recorded incidents of UFOs in mediaeval Europe in 1034, where a cigar-shaped UFO was sighted, and observed to change course,[3] to a mediaeval Japanese incident in 1235, where a General Yoritsume and his troops watched a dazzling display of lights performing some impossible maneuvers in the sky: in other words, they were not stars. General Yoritsume ordered one of the first recorded scientific investigations of the phenomenon, and, in a response that can only be qualified as a mediaeval Japanese version of the U.S. Air Force's Project Bluebook, Yoritsume was reassured by his scientists that the phenomenon was merely the wind making the stars move.[4]

---

[1] Michael Busby, *Solving the 1897 Airship Mystery* (Pelican Publishing Company, 2004), p. 15.

[2] Mack Maloney, *UFOs in Wartime: What They Didn't Want You to Know* (Berkeley Books, 2011), p. 7.

[3] Ibid.

Form 1347-1350, Western Europe experienced the Black Death, the massive epidemic of bubonic plague that was, according to some, brought from the Orient by the trading ships of Venice and Genoa, which has, of course, fueled speculations and conspiracy theories by some that this was the deliberate act of a corrupt financial oligarchy already touting the idea that the world was over-populated. But there is another possible story, and it is a disturbing one:

> While conventional science tells us that the fierce pandemic was caused by bacteria carried by rat fleas, there were also persistent reports from the time of strange flying objects moving low through the sky, leaving a trail of suspicious waving a vapor in their wake. Wherever and whenever these objects were seen, the plague would soon break out in that area.
>
> …
>
> Other strange occurrences while the plague swept Europe included reports of "comets" flashing through the troubled night, strange animals washing up on European shores and many times, sounds like thunder being heard even when the skies were clear.[5]

Two things served to change the pace of sighting and reporting of the UFO, however, and these were the industrial revolution, and the advent of technologies like the telegraph and later telephone, that made the near-instantaneous transmission of information across great distances possible, and which made the potential of a technological emulation of such sightings possible.

Nothing so signaled this shift as the outbreak in the USA and Europe as the great "airship" mystery of the post-Civil War period of the second half of the nineteenth century.

A. Airship Arcana

Most people tend to dismiss the nineteenth airship mystery as being related to the question and culture of a breakaway civilization, but as will now be seen, it is deeply related to the question of its historical origins and the possible motivations behind it, for indeed, the sightings that broke out in the USA, especially during the 1890s, raised the public awareness of the UFO for the first time, even though these sightings were not at that time called UFOs. Much more importantly, the sightings impressed upon the public mind the implications of two things: technology, and its secret development.

---

[4] Mack Maloney, *UFOs in Wartime: What They Didn't Want You to Know,* p. 8.

[5] Ibid., p. 9.

Researcher Michael Busby has written what is probably the indispensible study of the airship mystery, and his work will be reviewed closely here, for it is by a careful contemplation of its contents that the shadowy outlines of a breakaway civilization, in its infancy, begin to emerge.

Busby notes even though there was "ample debate concerning the flying machines' origins in 1897," the year of the most concentrated and numerous sightings, "including the supposition that the machines were of extraterrestrial design, all of the 1896-97 newspaper accounts referred to the flying objects as *airships*."[6] Besides this consistency, there are numerous others. Busby observes that by employing "the numerous, dated newspaper accounts as a timeline," the sightings begin to follow "an easily identifiable path *beginning in California*, proceeding east to the Midwest (Illinois, Indiana, Michigan), then changing to a southerly course and traversing Missouri, Kansas, and Oklahoma before arriving in Texas and Louisiana in April 1897."[7] More importantly, these reports also evidence a similar pattern:

> People saw the airship, or airship(s), at night, sometimes following a straight line, sometimes stopping then starting again then changing course before disappearing over the horizon. The descriptions of the size, shape, and sounds associated with the airship(s) are similar, regardless of the location and date of the sighting.[8]

This pattern is evident throughout the over 1200 newspaper reports, beginning in November 1896 and ending in May 1897 in Texas.[9]

It would be wrong to assume that this pattern was confined to generalities. On the contrary, it included specifics; newspaper accounts included descriptions of speeds and "swishing sounds,"[10] searchlights and flashes of light coming from the "airships," and the obvious ability to maneuver independently and under apparent intelligent direction,[11] sudden accelerations and a cigar-shape or Zeppelin-like appearance,[12] descriptions of flashes, sparks, and electrical motors,[13] descriptions of "sails" and "fans" projecting from cigar shapes,[14] flapping wings,[15] and estimations of their dimensions, and speculations upon their mode of propulsion and potentials for military application.[16] There were even some descriptions of these "airships" traveling at "meteor-like speed" and even of little green, or burnt-black men.[17]

---

[6] Michael Busby, *Solving the 1897 Airship Mystery*, p. 13.
[7] Ibid., p. 21.
[8] Ibid.
[9] Ibid.
[10] Ibid., p. 30.

More importantly, however, were the strangely human aspects of the mystery. For example, a majority of the sightings appeared to follow railroad lines from one locale to another, and as railroad stations were often the local telegraph office, news of a sighting often was first reported by passengers on trains, and quickly telegraphed from one location to another.[18]

1. "Contact": The Crash and Recovery Meme:
a. Aurora, TX and the Death of an ET?

The airship mystery, like its later 20th century counterpart, the UFO enigma, likewise has its own set of ambiguities about potential crash and recovery scenarios and this ambiguity is reflected in stories of the airship that can clearly be construed in an extraterrestrial sense, and those which give clear recounting of *landed* airships, with *human* crews, speaking English, making repairs.

Surely the strangest aspect of the entire airship case in this instance is the account of the crash of one of the airships in Aurora, Texas, on April 17, 1897. Here is the account of what may, in fact, be the first modern, and real, Roswell, as reported on April 19, 1897, by the *Dallas Morning News* and the *Galveston News*:

> Aurora, Wise Co, Tex., April 17. —(To The News)—About 6 o'clock this morning the early risers of Aurora were astonished at the sudden appearance of the airship which has been sailing through the country.

---

[11] Michael Busby, *Solving the 1897 Airship Mystery*, p. 31.
[12] Ibid., pp. 31, 54-55.
[13] Ibid., pp. 55-56.
[14] Ibid., p. 57.
[15] Ibid., 36.
[16] Ibid., p. 64.
[17] Ibid., p. 22.
[18] Ibid., p. 2.4

> It was traveling due north, and much nearer the earth than ever before. Evidently some of the machinery was out of order, for it was making a speed of only ten or twelve miles an hour and gradually settling toward the earth. It sailed directly over the public square, and when it reached the north part of town collided with the tower of Judge Proctor's windmill and went to pieces with a terrific explosion, scattering debris over several acres of ground, wrecking the windmill and water tank and destroying the judge's flower garden.
>
> The pilot of the ship is supposed to have been the only one on board, and while his ***remains are badly disfigured, enough of the original has been picked up*** to show that he was not an inhabitant of this world. ***Mr. T.J. Weems, the United States Signal Service officer at this place gave it as his opinion that he was a native of the planet Mars.***
>
> ***Papers found on his person—evidently the record of his travels—are written in some unknown hieroglyphics, and cannot be deciphered.*** The ship was too badly wrecked to form any conclusion as to its construction or motive power. It was built of an unknown metal, resembling somewhat a mixture of aluminum and silver, and it must have ***weighed several tons.***
>
> The town is full of people today who are viewing the wreck and gathering specimens of the strange metal from the debris. The pilot's funeral will take place at noon tomorrow. S.E. Hayden[19]

Busby makes the following comment about the statements of the U.S. Signals Service officer, T.J. Weems, and his opinion that the disfigured body originated from Mars, i.e., was extraterrestrial in origin:

> Many people quickly dismiss this account because of the claim that an alien body was recovered. But, why would a government official, probably with no long-term ties to the community, lie about the recovery of a body? Was this a gaffe by a United States official, similar to another famous incident at Roswell, New Mexico, fifty years later?[20]

I continue to have difficulty believing that ET can travel through the blackness of interplanetary space with his advanced technology, only to crash it into windmills in Texas, so the same question might be turned around: could we be looking, again, at an attempt by a government official to obfuscate a truth—the recovery of a body—by misdirecting attention as to the origin of the technology recovered? This possibility may be indicated by the article's reference to a notebook covered in "hieroglyphics," an important point as we shall discover in section B.

---

[19] Cited in Michael Busby, *Solving the 1897 Airship Mystery*, pp. 124-125, all emphases are Busby's.

[20] Ibid., p. 125.

Busby himself hints at other interpretations to the crash at the beginning of his book:

> Were the (appearances) of these strange flying vessels and the purported crash of an airship at Aurora, Texas, a prelude to the alleged events that occurred fifty years later near Roswell, New Mexico? Or, did an epidemic of mass hysteria sweep a good proportion of the country? Were the stories the product of newspaper writers' imaginations? Were the flying machines a secret government project (and was there a subsequent government cover-up)?[21]

In the beginning of his book, Busby answers that by focusing his research on the Texas sightings and the Aurora crash, events which he calls "the grand finale" of the airship sightings, that clues are found that contain the answers.[22]

These clues lie in the contextual details surrounding the Aurora crash, and it is worth citing Busby extensively:

> If the Aurora sighting and crash occurred in the absence of any other airship sighting in the area then it would be much easier to consign the account to the heap of known hoaxes. However, there were numerous airship sightings—more than thirty were reported in the North Texas region, including Rhome and Tioga—the evening before the crash. Rhome and Tioga are close by Aurora. Two airship sightings were made at 3:00 A.M. on the morning of the crash, one in Dallas and one in Ladonia. Also, another sighting of an airship said to be experiencing mechanical difficulties, occurred in Stephenville at some early, indeterminate hour before the crash. With so many reported airship sightings nearby, one cannot summarily dismiss the Aurora account.
>
> One of the sightings near Aurora is of particular interest. An airship was seen near Stephenville early on the morning, but before 6:00 A.M., of the crash. The airship was observed on the ground experiencing mechanical problems by many distinguished citizens shortly prior to the Aurora crash. the airship was previously observed on the ground only when it was experiencing mechanical difficulties or the crew needed to replenish their water supply. Stephenville is sixty-eight miles south of Aurora.[23]

---

[21] Michael Busby, *Solving the 1897 Airship Mystery*, p. 14.

[22] Ibid.

[23] Ibid., pp. 125-126.

By correlating various Texas and Oklahoma sightings accounts and directions, Busby concluded that they indicated the possibility of a base near Sherman, Texas, north of Dallas and close to the Oklahoma border.[24]

With this in mind, Busby observes that the Aurora crash takes on a different flavor when viewed in this context:

> If my supposition is correct, that the pilot was trying to get to his daytime hideout, why was he flying over Aurora if he came from Stephenville? If the daytime hideout was north and east of Sherman, as I predict, he could have taken a more direct approach by going more northeast from Stephenville. It seems reasonable to think that a pilot on a ship experiencing difficulties would want to go in as direct a line as possible to home base. In that case, a ship in Stephenville would not fly over Aurora. But let's look a little closer at the issue.
>
> A plausible explanation for the airship's presence over Aurora the morning of the crash is that the pilot, after leaving Stephenville, did not want to fly over the large cities of Fort Worth and Dallas in the daytime. Remember, the airships avoided flying in the daylight for several good reasons. Flying over the metropolitan areas in full daylight offered the guntotin' (sic) citizens an opportunity to "puncture the air department" of both the airship and the airmen with their shootin' irons. *The only accounts of daytime sightings occurred when an airship was on the ground undergoing repairs and then it was seen by relatively few people.*[25]

It is this aspect of the airship mystery—sightings of grounded ships undergoing repairs, and even actual contact with their crews by witnesses—that begins to put us in touch with what may have been the first phase in the development of a breakaway civilization.

b. Contact with Human Crews

Just slightly more than a week before the Aurora, Texas crash, the *Dallas Morning News* reported on April 10, 1897, a story dated the previous day from Paris, Texas. The story was short, but highly significant:

> Paris, Texas, April 9. —For several days *The News* has contained specials from different points stating that parties had an airship in the

---

[24] Michael Busby, *Solving the 1897 Airship Mystery*, p. 43.

[25] Ibid., 126, emphasis added.

> night. A man named McKnight has been working on an airship at ***U.S. Marshal Williams' ranch*** for some time and it is claimed he has been traveling around by night in his ship. While McKnight will not corroborate the statement, many who are in a position to know say his aerial navigation has at last become a success.[26]

This is the first suggestive hint that one might be looking at a special project of some sort, one, perhaps, involving personnel of the U.S. government.

The Aurora crash was not a unique event in the history airship mystery, for merely four days previously, in April 13, in Kalamazoo County, Michigan, two local residents, both former soldiers, had heard a sound like the explosion of "heavy ordnance," and later investigation turned up debris which appeared to be "part of some electric appliance" and a "propeller blade of some very light material," which might have been aluminum.[27] In another sighting near Dallas, the day *after* the Aurora crash, witnesses reported an airship at a mere 200 feet altitude. One man saw three men on board, along with "something he took for a large Newfoundland dog," and heard speech "but could not understand what they said. From the tone of voice he ***took them to be Spaniards or Mexicans***."[28] Clearly, the description of the event and occupants was of a human crew.

On Friday, April 16, 1897, one witness spotted a grounded airship in a remote clearing, and a crewman making repairs with a hammer and chisel.[29] And on the day of the Aurora crash, yet another Texan saw a grounded cigar-shaped airship, and three men of its crew, two of whom went to work on its "rigging," while the third called to the witness and asked him to mail some letters for him! When the witness began to take notes of the encounter, he was told not to report about it, and that the crew was doing "experiments" and hoped to "revolutionize travel and transportation."[30] This is a significant sighting and report, because it tends again to confirm the view that the airships represented a secret experimental project of some sort.

---

[26] cited in Michael Busby, *Solving the 1897 Airship Mystery*, p. 31, emphasis added. Busby also notes on p. 32 that a fire destroyed the records of the local 1890 census, and hence, one cannot corroborate a McKnight in or near Paris, Texas. Busby also observes, however, that there was a Charles McKnight residing in Sherman in the 1870 census.

[27] Ibid., pp. 95-96.

[28] Ibid., p. 99, Busby's emphases. Citing *The Dallas Morning News*, April 19, 1897, p. 5.

[29] Ibid., p. 73.

[30] Ibiid., p. 89.

This view is dramatically confirmed by a story that ran in the *Dallas Morning News* on April 19, 1897, and this time, the story was significant for naming the names not only of the witnesses, but some of those of the "crew" or the mechanism's inventors. The story, initially reported on April 17, 1897 from Stephenville, Texas, by C.L. McIlhany, indicated that he and a number of prominent citizens of the town saw a cigar-shaped airship on the ground. The newspaper article went on to state:

> (The airship) consists of a ***cigar shaped body about sixty feet in length,*** to which is attached ***two immense aeroplanes***, and the motive power is ***an immense wheel at each end, in appearance much like a metallic windmill.*** It is ***driven by an immense electric engine***, which ***derives it(s) power from storage batteries.*** The crew consisted, as stated, of two men who gave their names as ***S.E. Tillman and A.E. Dolbar. They report they have been making an experimental trip to comply with a contract with certain capitalists of New York, who are backing them.***[31]

Note three critical things. Firstly, the propulsion appeared to be via propellers, but *electrically* powered ones, which would be one reason so many sightings exist of people having contact with the crew of the airships, who request *water*, presumably for recharging the ships' batteries. This would be a crucial reason for why so many airships appeared to follow railroad lines, for water towers to replenish their steam engines would be spaced at regular intervals. Secondly, electrically powered airships—and let it be recalled that within this time frame, Tesla was making similar claims—would not require *petroleum*. Tesla would, of course, perform his famous Colorado Springs experiments a year later, and upon his return to New York City, would begin his proposal for the wireless transmission of power, which, as he himself indicated, could power flight. Thirdly, and finally, it is clearly and explicitly stated in the article itself that the airships were *a private and semi-secret development by "certain capitalists of New York,"* a fact which, when combined with the earlier cited reported about a development on lands belonging to a member of the U.S. executive branch (the Marshalls' service), exhibits *precisely the same outlines of the breakaway civilization that emerges after World War Two.*

---

[31] Michael Busby, *Solving the 1897 Airship Mystery*, p. 123, all emphases are Busyby's.

2. "Wilson"

Tillman and Dolbar were not the only names that were mentioned by reports of sightings of grounded airships and contacts with their crews. By far one of the most recurring mysteries is the identity of the mysterious "Mr. Wilson" who so often makes an appearance in reports of contact with airship crews.[32] For example, *The Houston Daily Post* of April 21, 1897, reported that a Mr. J.R. Ligon of Beaumont, Texas, witnessed a grounded airship and interacted with its crew:

> "I and my son Charley drove home at 11 o'clock Monday night," said Mr. Ligon, "and were unhitching the horse when we saw lights in the Johnson pasture, a few hundred yards distance. We went there to investigate and discovered four men moving around a large dark object, and when I hailed them they answered and asked if they could get some water. I told them that they could. They came to my house, each bringing two baskets, and after filling them, started to return. I accosted one of the men and he told me his name was Wilson and that he and his companions were traveling in a flying machine. They were returning from a trip out on the gulf and were now headed toward Iowa where the airship was built."
>
> Mr. Ligon says he accompanied the men to the ship, and describes it as being ***130 feet long and 20 feet wide. It was propelled by four large wings, two on either side, and steered by propellers attached to the bow and stern, electricity being the power used. The hull of the ship is made of steel and contains apartments into which compressed air is pumped when the ship is in action. The ship carries a water ballast that is pumped to the bow when it is desired to bring the vessel to the earth and to the stern when the course is skyward. Mr. Ligon says the workings of the ship were thus described to him by the man Wilson, who also stated that this ship was only one of five that had been built in a quiet Iowa village.***[33]

The story, at first glance, may seem to be describing some sort of eccentric zeppelin, but upon careful reflection, is really describing something unusual, indeed, improbable, and quite remarkable, namely *a* **steel** *airship, with a quantity of water and electrical equipment, both weighty and bulky items, and compressed air.*

---

[32] "Wilson" becomes the main character in William Harbison's novel of Nazi flying saucer development, *Genesis*.

[33] Michael Busby, *Solving the 1897 Airship Mystery*, pp. 169-170, emphasis Busby's.

So what, exactly, provided this ungainly contraption its *lift!?* As we shall shortly discover, the answer to this question is even more improbable than the descriptions of the craft and the cumbersome, awkward questions they pose.

"Wilson" made his second appearance in an article of the *Dallas Morning News* of May 16, 1897, where he was mentioned in a lengthy letter written to a local physician, Dr. D.H. Tucker.[34] In it, the author recounts seeing a grounded airship and meeting its crew, a Mr. Walters, Mr. Warren, and Mr. Wilson.[35] More importantly, it makes technical claims that render the airships even more ungainly, unlikely, and improbable, yet, given the numerous reports, they are nonetheless *there*, and thus, the claims have to be taken seriously. "There were," the author of the letter writes,

> … a number of incandescent lamps about the walls and hanging from the ceiling, and I immediately concluded that the motive power of the ship was electricity and so expressed myself to Mr. Wilson. He said this was not the case, but that it was propelled and ***sustained by a gas which had the property of great compressibility under a slight pressure and a correspondingly great power of expansion.*** That he had invented a machine or rather engine that once started worked automatically and that one had only to attend to the governance which regulated the speed. I was not prepared wholly to accept this explanation and intimated as much in my expression of astonishment, but I was convinced of it when he showed me the apparatus ***for generating the gas*** and the engine for utilizing it.
>
> Not being a practical mechanic I can not (sic) enter into details of this engine's construction, but this much I was able to understand: ***That there was a receiver made of aluminum (and of this metal the engine and everything connected with the ship so far as I saw was constructed), from which pipes passed to what appeared to me to be a square box, at each end of which was a cylinder with an exhaust chamber, in which worked a piston attached to a very singularly constructed driving wheel like the sprocket of a bicycle, except that there were four wheels, one within the other, and these Mr. Wilson called the accumulators.*** There were two sets of such wheels with a combined velocity surpassing anything heretofore constructed. ***By the peculiar arrangement of the wheel within a wheel the balance of the centripetal and centrifugal forces was preserved in the presence of 65,000 revolutions a minute; that is, the velocity of revolution in these***

---

[34] This letter is reproduced *in toto* in Michael Busby's *Solving the 1897 Airship Mystery*, pp. 171-176.

[35] Ibid., p. 172.

> ***wheels would equal 65,000 revolutions of an ordinary wheel ten feet in diameter in one minute if such a thing were possible.***[36]

As we shall discover, this detail of the motive (and presumably, lifting) power of an unknown gas is corroborated from a very unlikely quarter. But howsoever one views it, the airships, be they steel or aluminum, were not zeppelins in any conventional sense.

3. A Secret Project, but Whose?

a. Dolbear, Tillman, and Hearst

So who were the mysterious men mentioned as crew members of some of the airships? In one newspaper report of the time, Wilson gave his place of residence as being Goshen, New York,[37] and this proved to be one of the clues that led to the unraveling of the mystery. Wilson turned out to be Hiram Wilson, an actual investor in the airship project. He and other investors had worked on their secretive project for several years, and "had parts of the ship constructed to order in different sections of the country, whence they were shipped" to a rendezvous near San Francisco and there assembled.[38]

Note what we have:

1) Private investors, representations of the involvement of New York "capitalists";
2) *Compartmentalization* of the project by ordering parts in various places, and assembling them at a "remote" location, preventing outsiders from learning any secrets about what the parts may have been *for*;
3) Some connection, as indicated by the involvement of various officials, to the federal government; and finally,
4) an *unusual* technology of motive power and lift, in some cases, electrical, and in the Wilson case, compressed gas of some sort.

And all this is occurring, once again, at the same time Nikola Tesla will do extraordinary electrical experimentation, when he will propose a world system of wireless power, which can also power flight, and, within a decade, his ideas will be totally suppressed and forgotten, just like the airships.

---

[36] Michael Busby, *Solving the 1897 Airship Mystery*, pp. 172-173, all emphases Busby's.

[37] Ibid., p. 183.

[38] Ibid., p. 221.

The concurrence of these events cannot, in my opinion, be coincidental.

But what of Tillman and Dolbar?

Tillman, as it turns out, was in all likelihood Captain Samuel Escue Tillman, a "*professor of chemistry at West Point Military Academy*"[39] from 1880 until he became superintendent of the academy in 1917! Tillman's involvement thus makes perfect sense if a motive and/or lift technology was developed involving a compressible gas. For his part, Dolbar was in all likelihood Professor Amos E. Dolbear of Tufts University.[40] Both Tillman and Dolbear also had an interest in batteries and electricity.[41] But all this would have required significant capital, and moreover, a presence both on the East and West coast, since the clues of the mystery point to both places. In Busby's opinion, the major hidden capitalist player may have been William Randolph Hearst.[42]

Tillman's presence in all of this strongly suggests not only the same type of interface between factions within the military and the corporate world that we have encountered previously, for he could hardly have been

> absent from his post at West Point and roaming the countryside in an airship (without being) either AWOL (A serious infraction of military law, punishable by imprisonment) or participating in the flying experiments with the knowledge and approval of his superiors. Since he went on to serve in the army, including a tour of duty as superintendent of the U.S. Military Academy, until he retired with no known disciplinary actions, it is probable the U.S. government was knowledgeable of his participation in the flying experiments. To what extent the government participated in the experiments is unknown.[43]

We have, in other words, the same elements we encounter after World War Two: private corporate involvement, and a presence of the military. Busby is unequivocal in stating his conclusions:

---

[39] Michael Busby, *Solving the 1897 Airship Mystery*, p. 124, emphasis added.

[40] Ibid., p. 125.

[41] Ibid.

[42] Ibid., p. 124.

[43] Ibid., p. 240.

> The body of evidence points to a true airship story of terrestrial origin, with test flights beginning in California in the fall of 1896 and proceeding across the country to the Midwest before turning south and arriving in Texas in April 1897. A group of well-financed, secretive individuals, based in a remote California community, a quiet Iowa village, and a small New York town have left behind a wondrous story of daring accomplishment. It appears they did not just suddenly appear out of the thin mists of time but may have been secretly building and flying machines for over forty-eight years.[44]

As we have seen, there are two aspects to the technological reports of the airships and their lift and motive power—electricity, and compressible gas—that are rather incredible.

At the beginning of his book, Busby asks why such a technology - which quite apparently *worked*, whatever it really was—did not lead to a revolution in transportation: the arrival of mass air transportation some two decades before it actually appeared.[45] However, as has already been pointed out, several aspects of the reported characteristics of the airships make no real sense: steel construction, *plus* water, electric, or compressible gas for motive power, and possibly lift. Whatever this technology was, it was not what was seen with the dirigible or zeppelin, and it is not what we see now. I have suggested one possible answer, namely, that because the motive power was in some cases electricity, it was not petroleum, and hence, for the capitalists, it may have posed a threat, or been perceived as not being profitable enough.

There may, however, have been another factor…

b. Electric Propulsion, a Peculiar Masonic Reference, and Psychological Warfare Potentialities

In my previous essay on the subject of the breakaway civilization, *Saucers, Swastikas, and Psyops*, I observed that SS Lt. Colonel Otto Skorzeny may have proposed using some of the advanced Nazi technologies represented by the Bell project, and perhaps some of their advanced aerodynes, in a psychological warfare operation.

In this respect, one of the most intriguing newspaper articles, which I have briefly mentioned before, covering the Texas aspect of the airship mystery was reported by *The Dallas Morning News* on April 19, 1897, entitled "C.G. Williams Saw It. It Was On the Ground and He

---

[44] Michael Busby, *Solving the 1897 Airship Mystery*, p. 247.

[45] Ibid., p. 25.

Interviewed the Captain. In this instance, I cite Busby's italicized and boldface emphasis *only as italics*, for I wish to draw the reader's attention to one remark by a boldface emphasis which is my own:

> Greenville, Hunt Co., Tex., April 17. —(To The News.)—I have surely seen the airship. I saw it last night about 12 o'clock. I was walking across a field two miles south of town. I was in a meditative mood, and suddenly I was aroused by a *brilliant light* in front of me. I was dazzled by the light and frightened almost out of my sense. I should have left the place at once but my legs refused to move.
>
> As soon as I could recover a little I noticed that the lights had gone out and by the light of the moon I saw an *immense cigar shaped vessel* resting on the ground in front of me. I saw *three men walk out of the vessel.* Two of them went to work about the rigging of the ship. The other called to me and asked if I would mail some letters for him. This gave me courage to approach and talk to him. Having been at one time connected with a daily paper and by mere reporting instinct I took out my pencil and paper. Seeing this the strange visitor said:
>
> "See here, young man, don't give this thing away. *We are experimenting with this vessel.* So far it is a success. We expect to *revolutionize travel and transportation*. We have seen a few copies of the daily newspaper and are very much amused and entertained at the accounts of the appearance of our ship. ***If you will promise on the square not to reveal what I tell you I will give you a little history of our adventures.***
>
> "*At a little town in the interior of New York state* I have worked for many years on my ship. About two weeks ago I started accompanied by these two assistants to make a trial trip…
>
> "*…I am going home in a few days to improve my ship. I find some improvement necessary to perfect it…*"
>
> I had a good opportunity to look at the exterior of the monster while its occupant was talking. it is much the *shape of a cigar.* The *main body* appeared to be *about 30 feet long*. Great *wing shaped fans spread out on either side.* At the *front end was a large wheel much like the side wheel on a steamboat but made of very light material.* At the *end was a fan-like projection like the tail of a fish.* The whole was *about 75 feet long*. I asked my visitor to explain the ship, how it was propelled, etc. Hi simply replied:
>
> "Electricity. *Within are electrical machines, which furnish the motive power* and the lights. When *once in motion the wind operating on the large wheel in front like a windmill, keeps the ship in motion and but little electricity is needed.* Now, young man, I can't tell you any more. Just wait and you will learn all about it. If you will mail these letters and not disclose the names and address and keep this all quiet for

> awhile, and will give me your name I will return soon and take you with me on a trip to Mexico and South America."
>
> I promised not to give him away. He and his assistants went inside, there was a *flash of light, a sizzling noise*, the monster rose gracefully and flew away in a northeast direction…[46]

Note that the crew member conversing is very likely Hiram Wilson, since he mentions New York as his home. If so, then we have a contradiction to some degree, since in *this* report he maintains that the mode of propulsion *is* electrical, whereas, as we saw previously, in another account he maintained it was by means of *compressible gas*. It would appear then that one is dealing with obfuscation: two differing accounts of a technology *are being given by the occupants of the airships themselves*, and thus it is possible that each version is not the whole truth, nor, on the other hand, a complete fabrication and falsehood.

More importantly, note the expression that the anonymous crew member uses to elicit a promise to keep their identities secret: "If you will promise *on the square* not to reveal what I tell you I will give you a little history of our adventures." The phrase "on the square" is of course a reference to the Masonic fraternity, for brothers of that fraternity are said to be "on the square," and oaths and promises are sworn on an altar upon which rests a compass and square. Though slight, and passing, this reference suggests that a secret society may have also been involved in the secretive construction of the airships. This conclusion, far-fetched as it may sound, is not all that remote, as will be shown in a moment.

But first, there is one final remark we must attend to, one made in an affidavit recorded by *The Austin American Statesman*, again on April 17, 1897:

> But, difficult as it is to believe that these airships have been invented and are operated by men of the earth, *even that is more easily believed than to believe that these ships are manned and sailed by celestial crews* ***and portend the beginning of another dispensation pointed out by the inspired writers.***[47]

This reference to "another dispensation" of "the inspired writers" provides the clue, for one the one hand, as we have seen, the vast preponderance of evidence of sightings recorded at the time indicate that the airships were human in origin, incredible as they then seemed, or ponderous and incredible as they now seem to us. The reference to "another dispensation" indicates that theological system that was beginning to emerge at approximately *this same time period*, and as I and co-author Scott D. deHart suggested in *Yahweh, the Two-Faced God,* this system itself shows all the signs of having been deliberately concocted with elite financial backing.[48]

---

[46] Cited in Michael Busby, *Solving the 1897 Airship Mystery*, pp. 89-90, italicized emphasis Busby's, italicized and boldfaced emphasis mine.

[47] Ibid., p. 61, italicized emphasis Busby's, boldface and italicized emphasis mine.

In other words, people were already connecting the appearance and use of an exotic human technology as represented by the airships with the possibilities presented by the manipulation via technological means of religious, psychological, and social expectation. Otto Skorzeny's usage of advanced technology to promote psychological operations had been anticipated by almost fifty years!

However, what of Busby's strange remarks that, in fact, the airship mystery may have even begun some decades prior to the flap of 1896-1897? And what of the strange writing in "hieroglyphics" that was allegedly found on the dead body of the pilot in the Aurora crash?

Busby states of the latter that

> The papers with "hieroglyphics" sound too much like the coded notebooks of Dellschau, who recorded secrets concerning the Sonora Aero Club…

(based in northern California, within reach of San Francisco, let it be noted)

> …in his notebooks using a code known only to him and perhaps any accomplices he may have had. It would prove most fruitful to compare these papers to Dellschau's notebooks and determine the points of similarity.[49]

With Dellschau, we arrive at perhaps the strangest player in the airship mystery, and at perhaps the most important indicator that we are looking at the bare beginnings of a breakaway civilization.

---

[48] See Joseph P. Farrell and Scott D. deHart, *Apocalypse Theater,* Volume 1, *Yahweh the Two-Faced God: Theology, Terrorism, and Topology* (Periprometheus Press, 2011), pp. 62-80.

[49] Michael Busby, *Solving the 1897 Airship Mystery,* p. 128.

B. The Dellschau Dilemma[50]

This will be perhaps the strangest section of this book, in that it is reporting on a tidbit of information I uncovered while reading a fascinating book on the 1800s "airship mystery," *The Secrets of Dellschau*, by Dennis Crenshaw with P.G. Navarro[51]. This information directly ties Charles Dellschau to one of the people on the fringes of the assassination of President Kennedy, a significant figure, as we shall see.

For those who do not know, Dellschau was an artist whose truly strange depictions of airships in his paintings can be found by any standard Internet search. Dellschau is thought to have been connected to the mysterious Sonora Aero Club, a "secret society" that many suspect was behind the sudden appearance of the "airships" during the late 1800s. The reasons for suspecting Dellschau as having been connected to this society are simple:

1) Dellschau's artistic subjects were invariably of "airships", zeppelin-like airships that were seen over Germany during the 1850s, and later during the 1880s and 1890s in the U.S.A., principally in California, Texas, and the Midwest; and
2) Dellschau invariably accompanied his paintings with "coded" information, information that referred to various members of the Sonora Aero Club by name.

Additionally, Dellschau also made it clear that the Sonora Aero Club was but *one* such "secret society" attempting to build and fly "aeros" or airships, others being located on the east coast of the U.S.A. Furthermore, the activities of these various aerial secret societies were, according to Dellschau, coordinated by a parent body in Germany bearing only the cryptic designation "NYMZA," a society for which Dellschau apparently "spied."[52]

Before proceeding, note that we have yet *another* peculiar resemblance to the post-World War Two pattern of the breakaway civilization surveyed in previous pages, for we now have the entry of *Germany*, the other great contributor to the development of advanced technology, and the other great developer of vast secret projects bureaucracies during the war. Succinctly put, it appears that while the Second World War constituted the matrix and impetus for the vast postwar growth of the entity, it took its hidden beginnings in the nineteenth century in those countries, with the involvement of secret groups, secret finance, and the possible if not probable involvement of military men.

---

[50] This section first appeared in as slightly different form as a "white paper" in the members' area of my website, www.gizadeathstar.com.

[51] This book appeared in 2009 by Anomalist Books.

[52] Dennis Crenshaw, with P.G. Navarro, *The Secrets of Dellschau*, p. 85.

1. The Kennedy Connection: Jean DeMenil

Crenshaw notes that Dellshau's unusual paintings—all of which depict some fanciful airship and machinery condign to the descriptions of the airships we have already encountered—are now selling for more than $25,000 apiece. These paintings Dellschau bound in hand-made books of 2 to 4" thickness. As Crenshaw also notes, three of these books were purchased by the DeMenil family of Houston. Indeed, the *Wikipedia* article on DeMenil notes his patronage of the arts.[53]

The name DeMenil should raise the eyebrows of anyone familiar with the JFK assassination, and more importantly, with the famous Torbitt Document, a document circulated samizdat in its early years. This document, as I note in my book *LBJ and the Conspiracy to Kill Kennedy: A Coalescence of Interests*, was a summary of New Orleans District Attorney Jim Garrison's investigation of the assassination, and was compiled by a Texas lawyer with deep connections to President Johnson's political machine in that state.

The connection between Dellschau, DeMenil, and JFK, is the notorious "Permindex corporation" and Centro Mondiale Commerciale, both under investigation by DA Jim Garrison. For those who do not know the Torbitt document's statements on this matter, I reproduce here the section dealing with it from *LBJ and the Conspiracy to Kill Kennedy:*

> Permindex stood for "Permanent Industrial Expositions," the official name of the corporation. Founded in 1958 in Switzerland by Montreal lawyer L.M. Bloomfield, a "long time friend and confidant of J. Edgar Hoover,"[54] fully one half of Permindex's stock was held by Bloomfield, who was in overall charge of its European, African, and

---

[53] http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/John_de_Menil

[54] "Nomenclature of an Assassination Cabal," *NASA, Nazis, and JFK: The Torbitt Document and the JFK Assassination*, p. 52.

North and South American operations.[55] One should not, on this basis, leap to the conclusion that Bloomfield was really the man in control, simply because of the amount of shares he held. It must be remembered that those wishing to conceal or cloak their involvement in the corporation and its activities could easily hold "hidden guns" to the heads of its publicly known officers and figures. Torbitt states unequivocally that Bloomfield "was the top coordinator for the network planning the assassination."[56]

The Permindex Corporation was closely allied to an Italian counterpart, also a subject of Garrison's investigation: Centro-Mondiale Commerciale, or World Trade Center, an Italian subsidiary of the World Trade Center Corporation and a CIA front. The man ultimately indicted by Jim Garrison, Clay Shaw, was a member of the boards of both corporations.[57] The ostensible purpose of Permindex was "to encourage trade between nations."[58] But according to Torbitt, the actual purposes were far more sinister:

> (Their) actual purpose was fourfold:
>
> 1. To fund and direct assassinations of European, Mid-East and world leaders considered threats to the Western World and to petroleum interests of the backers.
> 2. To furnish couriers, agents, and management in transporting, depositing and re-channeling funds through Swiss banks for Las Vegas, Miami, Havana and (the) international gambling syndicate.
> 3. To co-ordinate the espionage activities of the Solidarists and Division Five of the FBI with groups in sympathy with their objectives and to receive and channel funds and arms from the financiers to the action groups.
> 4. To build, acquire and operate hotels and gambling casinos in the Caribbean, Italy and at the other tourist areas.[59]

---

[55] Ibid.

[56] Ibid., p. 26.

[57] Ibid., pp. 47-48.

[58] Ibid., p. 48.

[59] "Nomenclature of an Assassination Cabal," *NASA, Nazis, and JFK: The Torbitt Document and the JFK Assassination*, pp. 48-49. Torbitt cites for these assertions: "Basel, Switzerland Publication A-Z, August, 1961; Canadian Le Devoir Publication, March, 1967; Rome Paesa Sera Publication, March, April, 1967, also 1959 thru (sic) 1960 files: Il Gornia of Milan, Italy, 1967-1968 files; Il Tempe, Rome, 1967-1968 files; New Orleans District Attorney Records; Swiss Intelligence, J.F. Kennedy files." Torbitt gives no indication how he acquired access to the files of Swiss Intelligence.

The rationalization for the involvement of various intelligence agencies and of the international Fascists with gambling and gun-running and therefore with Mafia operations as exemplified in this list becomes rather obvious, for implied in this activity is a degree of "sanction and protection" to these Mafia activities given by the intelligence agencies and presumably by the international Fascists as well. This, as we saw in chapter one, was indeed part of a pattern that began during World War Two and the covert arrangement between America's wartime OSS and Lucky Luciano. In return for such protection, the agencies and international Fascists would have received a "cut" in the action, and thus a nearly inexhaustible supply of steady and covert funding for black projects of all sorts, from intelligence operations to secret research projects.

Thus, while the name "Permindex" officially stood for "Permanent Industrial Expositions," there might be a more sinister significance to its abbreviated name as a kind of "permanent index" of people to be target for assassination.

In any case, it is when one looks closely at the members of the board and financial contributors of Permindex that the connections between American petroleum interests and post-war Nazis and Fascists deepens considerably. We have already noted that Clay Shaw was on the boards both of Permindex and Centro-Mondiale Commerciale. But there were other more intriguing members:

> The other members of the Board include a publisher of the Fascist National-Zeitung in West Germany, an Italian industrialist who married into the family of Adolph (sic) Hitler's finance minister, and a woman lawyer, the Secretary of the Fascist Party. (Public Corporations Records office, Berne, Switzerland)
>
> Also on the Board of Permindex was *Ferenc Nagy, a Solidarist and Prime Minister of Hungary from 1946 to 1947; George Mandel, alias Mantello, a Hungarian fascist who supervised attempts to purchase national monuments for real estate development in Italy,* and Munir Chourbagi, an uncle of King Farouk…
>
> The ruling clique of Permindex and its two subsidiaries, (sic) The Italo American Hotel Corporation and Centro Mondiale Commerciale, in addition to the sophisticated Nazis and Fascists heretofore named, were Gutierz di Spadofora, who was under-secretary of agriculture in Mussolini's Fascist regime and who was also a ruling lord in the Mafia with Italy and Southern Europe as his land area; Enrico Mantello (Henry Mandel, brother of George Mandel); Giuseppe Zigotti, the head of the Italian political party,

> Fascist Nationalist Association for Militia Arms; and Hungarian *emigre* and former Nazi, H. Simonfay…[60]

The Torbitt Document's list of heavy financial contributors to Permindex is even more revealing of deep political connections:

> The principal financiers of Permindex were a number of U.S. oil companies, *H.L. Hunt of Dallas, Clint Murchison of Dallas*, John DeMenil, *Solidarist* director of Houston, *John Connally* as executor of the Sid Richardson estate, Haliburton Oil Co., Senator Robert Kerr of Oklahoma, Troy Post of Dallas, Lloyd Cobb of New Orleans, *Dr. Oechner of New Orleans*,[61] George and Herman Brown of Brown & Root, Houston, Attorney Roy M. Cohn, Chairman of the Board for Lionel Corporation, New York City, Schemley Industries of New York City, *Walter Dornberger, ex-Nazi general and his company, Bell Aerospace*, Pan American World Airways, and its subsidiary, Intercontinental Hotel Corporation, *Paul Raigorodsky of Dallas through his company, Claiborne Oil of New Orleans*, Credit Suisse of Canada, Heineken's Brewery of Canada and a host of other munition (sic) makers and *NASA contractors directed by the Defense Industrial Security Command.*
>
> The *gambling syndicate and Mafia contracting agents* who handled the transactions with Permindex were ex-president Carlos Prio Socarras of Havana, Miami and Houston, Clifford Jones of Laz Vegas, Morris Dalitz of Las Vegas, Detroit, Cleveland and Havana, former head of the Cleveland mob and Roy Cohn, L.J. McWillie of Las Vegas, a gambling partner with Cliff Jones, *Bobby Baker of Washington, DC,* Ed Levinson of Law Vegas, Benny Siegelbaum of Miami, Henry Crown of Chicago, associate of the Mafia, Patrick Hoy of the controlling clique in General Dynamics and Joe Bonanno of Lionel Corporation of New York.[62]

For our purposes here, observe what we have represented in this list, as indicated by the italicized names and groups in the two previous quotations; there are:

---

[60] "Nomenclature of an Assassination Cabal," *NASA, Nazis, and JFK: The Torbitt Document and the JFK Assassination*, pp. 47-48, emphasis added.

[61] Pay attention to that Dr. Oechner, for we will encounter him later. Torbitt misspells his name, and he was in fact the famous physician Albert Oechsner, about whom more later in this chapter.

[62] Nomenclature of an Assassination Cabal," *NASA, Nazis, and JFK: The Torbitt Document and the JFK Assassination*, pp. 49-50.

1) *The Petroleum Capitalist Interests*, represented by the specific mention of Texas oil tycoons H.L. Hunt and Clint Murchison, and Paul Raidgorodsky, a close associate of George De Mohrenschildt, and future Texas Governor John Connally;
2) *The Fascists and Nazi Interest*, represented by Ferenc Nagy, Nazi puppet prime minister of Hungary, Nazi H. Simonfay, Italian Fascist and former Mussolini government member Gutierz di Spadofora; Nazi "Paperclip" scientist and General Walter Dornberger; and a group called "Solidarists" about whom we shall say more later;
3) *The Mafia Interest* represented by the most famous in the list, *Lyndon Baines Johnson's personal aid, Bobby Baker*, about whom we shall have much more to say in part two of this book;[63]
4) *The Space Interest* represented by various NASA contractors all of which are coordinated by something called the Defense Industrial Security Command, or DISC.

All of these were organized, according to "Torbitt," into five groups with Permindex forming the institutional connection between them:

> 1. The Czarist (sic) Russian, eastern European and Middle East exile organization called SOLIDARISTS, headed by Ferenc Nagy, ex-Hungarian premier, and John DeMenil, Russian exile from Houston, Texas, a close friend *and supporter of Lyndon Johnson* for over thirty years.[64]

---

[63] Torbitt also points out that New Orleans mobster Carlos Marcello was also a member of Permindex's board! Q.v. p. 117.

[64] Once again, Russ Bellant's, *Old Nazis, The New Right, and the Republican Party: Domestic Fascist Networks and their Effect on U.S. Cold War Politics* (Boston: South End Press, 1991) is crucial for an overview of the workings of this network. This network was represented within Republican Party politics beginning during the Reagan Administration by the Republican Heritage Groups Council (p. xvii). Bellant states explicitly that "the foundation of the Republican Heritage Group Council lay in *Hitler's networks into East Europe before World War II.* In each of those Eastern European countries, the German SS set up or funded political action organizations that helped form SS militias during the war." (p. 4, emphasis added). These groups were coordinated by General Reinhard Gehlen's *Fremde Heere Ost*, or "Foreign Armies East" which, of course, later became the West German *Bundesnachrichtendienst.*

> 2. A section of the AMERICAN COUNCIL OF CHURCHES headed by H.L. Hunt of Dallas, Texas.[65]
> 3. A Cuban exile group called FREE CUBA COMMITTEE headed by Carlos Prio Socarras, ex-Cuban president.
> 4. An organization of United States, Caribbean, and Havana, Cuba gamblers called the Syndicate headed by Clifford Jones, ex-lieutenant governor of Nevada and Democratic National Committeeman, and Bobby Baker of Washington, DC. This group worked closely with a Mafia family headed by Joe Bonanno.
> 5. The SECURITY DIVISION of the National Aeronautics and Space Administration (NASA) headed by Werner Von Braun, head of the German Nazi rocket program from 1932 through 1945. Headquarters for this group was the DEFENSE INDUSTRIAL SECURITY COMMAND at Muscle Shoals Redstone Arsenal in Alabama…[66]

The assassination, in other words, at its deepest level represented a coalescence of the interests of the Mafia, American intelligence (and specifically the intelligence and security connected with, of all things, NASA), anti-Castro Cubans, and big petroleum interests, especially those of the Texas oilmen

And there you have it: ***DeMenil was in the circle of Eastern European exiles in Texas that clustered around Dallas and Houston (obvious center of America's space program), and indeed, according to Torbitt was a leader of that community and close political supporter of Lyndon Johnson***.

We must now consider the implications:

---

[65] Nomenclature of an Assassination Cabal," *NASA, Nazis, and JFK: The Torbitt Document and the JFK Assassination*, p. 54, notes that an individual known only was "Dimitri" was associated with the Hunts' American Council of Christian Churches… this may or may not be a significant clue, for one might have to look for a Dimitri or Dmitri (1) with ecclesiastical connections indicative of the Slavic character of his name, and (2) with personal or professional links to the Texas oil industry. George De Mohrenschildt, a member of the Dallas White Russian exile community and an oil geologist, might thus point to other hitherto uninvestigated areas of the assassination. There is, in fact, such an individual whose sister was an oil geologist…

[66] Ibid., pp. 26-27, italicized emphasis added, uncial emphasis in the original.

2. Implications of the Dellschau-DeMenil-JFK Connection

DeMenil, if the Torbitt document is to be believed, was a leader of the Eastern European exile community in Texas, and thus, this would have placed him in a position to know George DeMohrenschildt—Oswald's "handler" in Dallas—and additionally, since this community was, as I also noted in *LBJ and the Conspiracy to Kill Kennedy*, a large component of Nazi General Reinhard Gehlen's *Fremde Heere Ost* , this places DeMenil firmly within the orbit of the postwar Fascist organization, which, as the Torbitt document notes, was intimately connected to Permindex. This connection to German intelligence also places DeMenil directly in the network of private intelligence connections that was developed by the Texas oilmen Hunt and Murchison.

So what about the Dellschau connection? And why might it be so significant? As noted, Dellschau was German, and according to his strange notations on his paintings, worked for an organization called NYMZA, headquartered in Germany. It is quite the crucial point to note that *absolutely* ***no*** corroborating evidence for these assertions has ever been found, and therefore, we must evaluate Dellschau's assertions contextually.

It is in the light of this *contextual* evaluation that his assertions take on some significance. We have already noted the German connections of DeMenil, the Hunts, and the Murchisons, via Gehlen's exilee front organizations.

But there is *another* contextual connection. As I also noted in *LBJ and the Conspiracy to Kill Kennedy*, one of the reasons many advance for the murder of president Kennedy was his plan for a joint US-Soviet mission to the Moon, and his willingness to share whatever may have been found there. Additionally, as I have noted in other books, Kennedy also made direct inquiries to the CIA concerning the subject matter of UFOs (and hence, into the *actual state of knowledge of the USA concerning advanced science and technology*). Many assassination researchers believe that this inquiry, plus his willingness to share information with the Soviets, was sufficient reason to get him killed, and indeed, I myself have entertained this notion, simply for the fact that with the heavy Nazi presence and influence within American black projects at that time, they would have balked at sharing their secrets with their hated Communist enemy.

But there is yet *another* disturbing Dellschau-Nazi-Kennedy connection, and again, it comes from Crenshaw's book. Consider this "technical" detail reported by Crenshaw:

> Dellschau wrote that the *NB* gas which was used to *negate weight* was a liquid fuel or *soupe* as he called it, which when dropped into a *lift hold* or chamber, onto a rotating drum containing some unnamed black material, the liquid fuel turned to gas. This has not only provided the lift necessary to get the cumbersome aircraft off the ground, but it also turned a wheel, or turbine, which is designated in Dellschau's drawings as a motor.[67]

Rotating drums containing an unnamed material? That, I thought, "rings a bell." Clearly, whatever sorts of airships Dellschau and his associates were describing, they were not conventional dirigibles being propelled by internal combustion engines. While one might be tempted to dismiss this detail, it does bear an odd and curious resemblance to what is reported concerning the Nazi Bell story.

This idea of technical advancement is, of course, completely farfetched without further technical or contextual corroboration. Unfortunately, there *is* such technical and contextual corroboration, and it occurred in a Dellschau picture that literally made this author's jaw drop.

The picture was this:

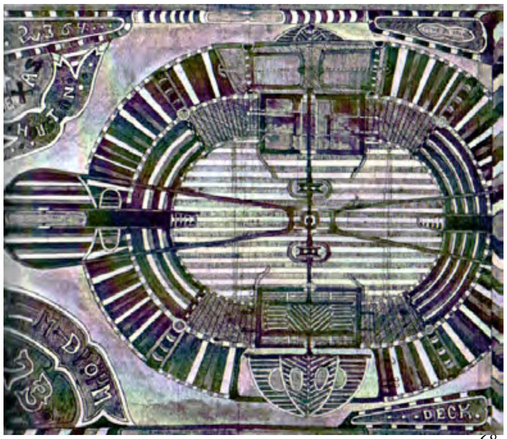

Dellschau "Airship" Machinery Details[68]

---

[67] Dennis Crenshaw, with P.G. Navarro, *The Secrets of Dellschau*, p. 165.

[68] Dennis Crenshaw, with P.G. Navarro, *The Secrets of Dellschau*, p. 201.

For those with a particle physicist's eye, the above painting (and note the *windings* at its top and bottom), will uncannily resemble something that had not even been *invented* in the 19th century, not to mention the fact that the physics *behind* the invention had not even been invented either. That invention is this:

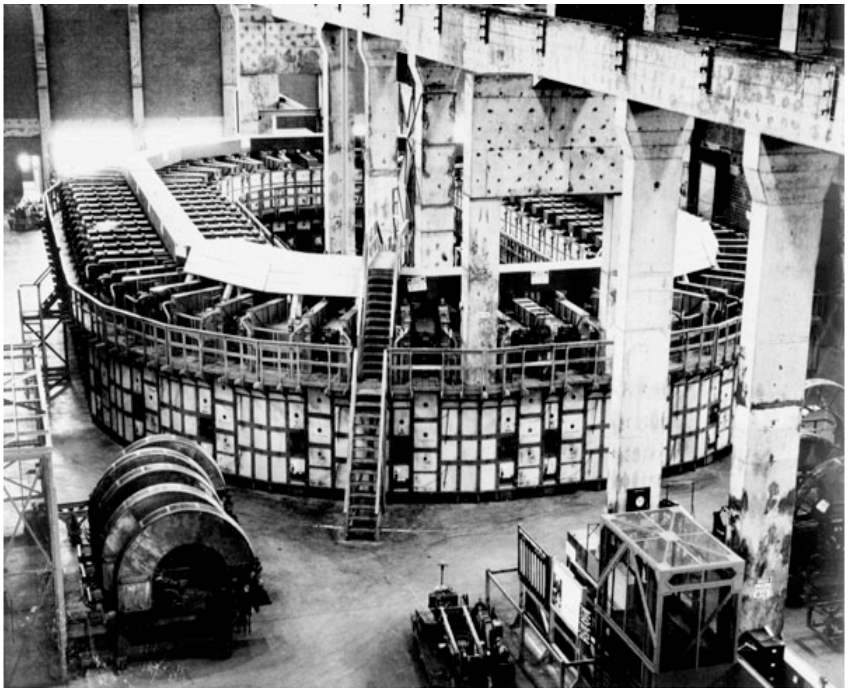

One of E.O. Lawrence's Beta Calutrons Uranium Enrichment Cyclotrons at Oak Ridge, Tennessee, during World War Two

Another view will make the resemblance even more apparent:

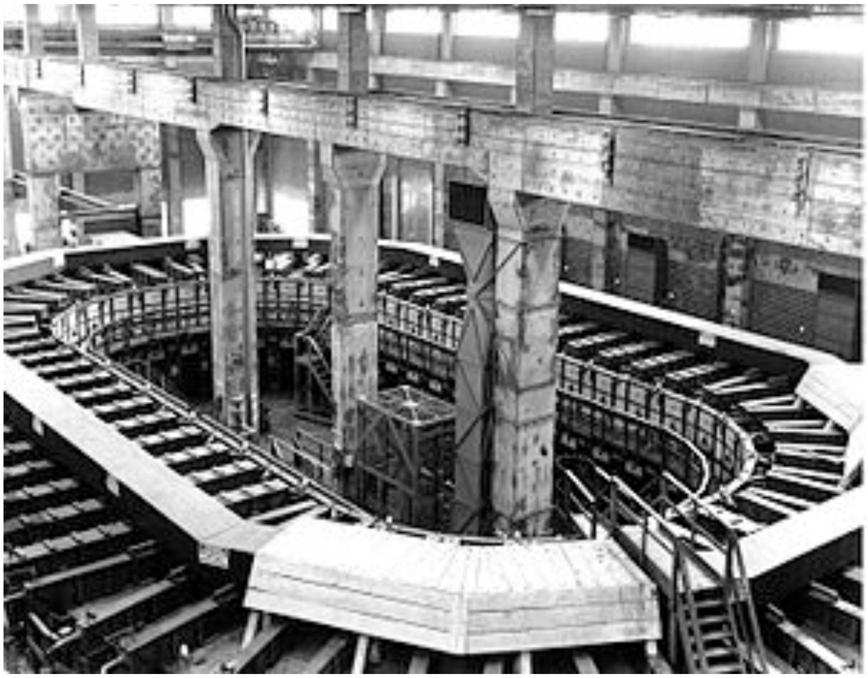

Another view of one of Lawrence's Beta Calutron Uranium Enrichment Cyclotrons at Oak Ridge, Tennessee

Now I am certainly not maintaining that Dellschau and the Sonora Aero Club were flying around in airships powered by cyclotrons in the late nineteenth century!

But we *do* have the following significant points:

1) Dellschau is clearly depicting machinery, some of which bears too uncanny a resemblance to machines not yet officially invented, machines that, in turn, are dependent upon developments in physics that have not yet occurred;
2) Dellschau refers to technical details of some of these ships that also bear resemblances to aspects of the technology reported for the Nazi Bell;
3) Dellschau claims to represent a secret society based in Germany called NYMZA, which is coordinating the secret development of

airships, for which secret society there has never been a shred of any further corroborating evidence;[69]

4) Some of Dellschau's paintings-books are purchased by Jean DeMenil, who has connections to Lyndon Johnson, the Texas East European Exile community, and therefore, to the private intelligence organizations of Hunt and Murchison, which was deeply connected to Nazi General Reinhard Gehlen's postwar military intelligence;
5) DeMenil further would have been in a position, and was therefore likely to have known, George De Mohrenschildt and the Dallas exile community.

It is when these five points are considered *together* that one must entertain the possibility that Dellschau did indeed represent some unknown group in Europe developing hidden aerial technologies, and that indeed there may be yet another, little-considered, connection to hidden technologies, groups, and the JFK assassination.

So what was Dellschau's mysterious NYMZA society in Germany, if indeed it even existed? According to Busby, Dellschau's notebooks indicate that it was yet another of the hidden financial hands behind the secretive airship development clubs.[70]

Beyond this, we cannot penetrate.

However, several things have now emerged, and they press the patterns outlined in previous chapters to a new level:

1) Significantly, the propulsion methods and lift generating technologies of the airships do not appear to be conventional by

---

[69] I am of course aware of the survival of the Bavarian Illuminati during the 1830s-and 1840s, and its probable transmutation into the revolutionary movements and societies that circulated in Europe during this time. There is, however, to my knowledge, no evidence that these societies were engaged in secret technological or scientific research, with the *exceptions* or indications that the Masons may have been involved in the secretive development of radio long before Tesla and Marconi, as I have detailed in another white paper in the members' area of my website. In *that* context, it *is* possible that Dellschau's claims may have a basis in some kernel of truth. In that case, the quest must be to establish if there is any known society with the name NYMZA or a name *resembling* it.

[70] Michael Busby, *Solving the 1897 Airship Mystery*, p. 27. For details of Dellschau's life, see pp. 324-325.

any means, since both electrical systems and compressible gases are mentioned;

2) Significantly, within the same time frame, Tesla will conduct his revolutionary Colorado Springs experiments that will lead, within a decade, to his proposal for wireless transmission of electrical power, one purpose of which he envisions to be flight. This technology is suppressed by his financial backers, and similarly, the airship technology, which promised a revolution in transportation, is never publicly revealed. One can only assume, therefore, that the technology was either superseded by the development of the airplane, or that it was perceived to have to great a potential to be publicly revealed. But most importantly,
3) It would appear that, while the historical impetus for the creation of a vast system of hidden finance and alliances between private, government, Axis, and criminal components began after World War Two, this pattern of secret organizations, private finance, and government interface began on a smaller scale sometime in the nineteenth century, *as did the perception of the possibilities of psychological operations in conjunction with it.*

However, what began in the nineteenth century as a secret "airship" program, quickly morphed in the postwar era into a secret space program, one impelled not only by the need to reconnoiter, contain, rollback, and defeat the Soviet Union, but also by the need to discover what strange thing and entities may have been behind clearly hostile actions that were potentially threatening to the vast thermonuclear arsenals of the two superpowers. It was a dual dilemma, one requiring not only the development of technologies that could, to some extent, do double duty, but the vast system of finance to achieve it. We have already covered the latter, it is now, at last, time to deal with those strange events, entities, and responses to them.

11

SPY SATELLITES, NUCLEAR WEAPONS AND UFOS

"Behind the scenes, high-ranking Air Force officers are soberly concerned about the UFOs, but through official secrecy and ridicule, many citizens are led to believe the unknown flying objects are nonsense. To hide the facts, the Air Force has silenced its personnel."
Vice Admiral Roscoe H. Hillenkoetter (Ret.)[1]

When one says "covert wars" and "space" in the same sentence, one normally might think of secret space wars being fought by ray guns and exotic craft that are only visible at night, standing on rooftops, wearing night vision goggles. One might normally think of the now famous NASA space shuttle footage of STS 48, showing glowing disks, one of which makes an acute change of direction and goes zipping off into outer space as something quite evidently appears to be shot at it. Covert field propulsion technology and covert directed energy weaponry, all in one stunning video.[2]

Chances are, however, that one would *not* think of recent Russian charges that its Mars robotic probe failed as the result of American sabotage,[3] or that one would *not* think of the famous German World War One ace, the Red Baron, Manfred von Richthofen, firing on a silver disk more than 100 feet in diameter from his famous red Fokker triplane, sending it crashing into some woods on the ground, and seeing two occupants scramble out of it and escape into the trees.[4] Similarly, one probably would not think of British Royal Naval Air Service Sub-lieutenant J.E. Morgan, climbing into a rickety biplane in 1916 and taking off on a night flight to defend London against German zeppelins trying to bomb the city. Seeing something that resembled a flying railway carriage with the curtains drawn on lighted windows, Morgan assumed it was a German dirigible and fired on it with his service pistol. To his surprise, the "dirigible" behaved in most un-zeppelin-like fashion and shot straight up so quickly that Morgan, disoriented, crashed his plane in a swamp.[5]

---

[1] cited in Robert Hastings, *UFOs and Nukes: Extraordinary Encounters at Nuclear Weapons Sites* (Author-House, 2008, p. 483, citing the *New York Times*, February 28, 1960.

[2] And no, this author does *not* believe it is just ice crystals and rocket exhausts. These are real UFOs, and they're really being shot at.

[3] http://www.nytimes.com/2012/01/18/world/europe/russia-sees-possible-united-states-role-in-space-probes-failure.html?_r=3

[4] Mack Maloney, *UFOs in Wartime: What They Didn't Want You to Know*, pp. 15-16.

Such "dirigible" sightings were not uncommon to England, for in 1909 it had its own version of the 1890s American airship show, and to similar effect. On March 23 of that year a police constable in East Anglia heard what he thought was an approaching automobile, but quickly realized the sound was coming from the sky. What he saw was a cigar-shaped object flying at what he thought was 1,000 feet altitude, with a powerful light coming from it. It flew away to the northwest at a tremendous speed.[6] Six weeks later, East Anglia was deluged with such a flood of similar sightings that the British press virtually *had* to become involved.[7]

All the reports "described the object as large and cigar shaped with powerful lights attached; all of them said it was able to fly against the wind and move at extremely high speed."[8] Of course, many began to suspect they were secret British weapons, or even German zeppelins sent to spy. The problem, however, was that dirigibles of the day at best managed about 50 miles per hour, whereas careful compilation of sightings at the day indicated that some of the ships were travelling at about 200 miles per hour,[9] a figure similar to the performance of some of the reported American airships of the 1890s.

All of this would have led to an initial, and highly secret, attempt to study the phenomenon, since such events would have been perceived as threats to national security, for as the British responses to the 1909 "airship" flap indicate, Britons immediately thought these were German attempts at espionage. But with World War Two and its aftermath, the cultural impetus to create, and emulate, such sightings rose dramatically, and we must review these in some detail to estimate their influence on the shape, policy, and activity of the breakaway civilization. For convenience's sake, we will deal with military sightings of UFOs, and divide this further into standard sightings, and nuclear-related sightings.

---

[5] Mack Maloney, *UFOs in Wartime: What They Didn't Want You to Know*, pp. 17-18.

[6] Ibid., p. 19.

[7] Ibid.

[8] Ibid., p. 20.

[9] Ibid., p. 21.

A. Military UFO Sightings

During World War Two, the sightings by Allied pilots of so-called "foo fighters" led to the first prolonged and secretive American military intelligence studies of a phenomenon that would dovetail into the postwar sightings of UFOs, and hence, into the establishment within a national security state of special UFO studies groups. As I recounted in *Roswell and the Reich*, pre-World War Two sightings over Scandinavia led Swedish authorities to posit that some of the technology may have been produced by or at some secret base, and notably, the Swedes did not specify Germany or any *other* major power behind the activity, leaving open the possibility that they had a completely independent group in mind.[10]

During the war, *some* foo fighter activity was clearly hostile to Allied airmen and their aircraft, and in some contexts, this occurred with clear contextual indicators of German origins for the activity.[11] However, it must be emphatically pointed out that not all foo fighter activity could be so attributed, since they were seen by pilots one *both* sides of the war, and in *both* the European and Pacific theaters, though it has been pointed out that sightings of "foo fighter"-like phenomena dropped dramatically after the German surrender.[12] These two facts alone would have inevitably led intelligence and military officers to conclude three things:

1) Some sightings possibly represented a Nazi technology in advance of anything in the Allied arsenals;
2) Some sightings possibly represented a completely *different* origin for the technology, and the Nazis may have had contact with said group, *or* emulated it, or both; and
3) In either case, the phenomenon represented a potential threat, and it should be studied, and, if possible, emulated, *while means were found to dissuade whoever was behind it from taking any more overt action.*

It is quite important to observe what the implications of the last point really are, for it implies not only *psychological operations directed against the "people" behind the phenomenon, but additionally, that*

---

[10] See my *Roswell and the Reich: The Nazi Connection*, pp. 329-336.

[11] Ibid., pp. 336-345.

[12] Mack Maloney, *UFOs in Wartime: What They Didn't Want You To Know*, p. 82.

these operations would be of a nature to convince this group—whether human or otherwise—that direct military confrontation would not be in its interest. This would entail in its turn several possibilities. Operations of a confrontational nature could be designed to convince those behind the phenomenon that humanity had greater technological sophistication than it actually possessed, and this could come in the form of direct military challenges, such as President Truman's "shoot down" order, to more subtle attempts to "communicate", infiltrate, and influence. These points must be remembered in the ensuing review and analysis.

In any case, UFO sightings in military activities escalated during World War Two and remarkable things were observed in both theaters of the war. For example, in 1942, a Royal Australian Air Force pilot observed "a large airfoil, about 150 feet long and 50 feet wide. The airfoil tapered to a fin at its rear, and the RAAF pilot could see sporadic green flashes emanating from this area."[13] Keeping pace with the Australian airplane for a while, the object quickly accelerated and dove straight into the Pacific Ocean, leaving behind a whirlpool where it had dived.[14] If this sighting be true, then while it might be possible to rationalize such an object as the achievement of a human technology, it would appear more reasonable to assume that this was someone *else's* technology. Intelligence estimates, however, would have assumed a worst case scenario, and in that case would have concluded the latter, and as such, this conclusion would again have compelled the idea that the technology represented a potential threat.

1. The 1951 Korean War Incident: American Soldiers and a UFO Exchange Fire

Other Pacific sightings, however, suggested a technology more human, and less advanced in nature. In August 1944, an American B-29 Super-fortress bomber flying over Sumatra in Indonesia spotted an oval-shaped object approximately 1500 feet away. The object was bright, and pulsed through red and orange colors, and was "spewing a blue green exhaust plume."[15] After a series of maneuvers between the aircraft and the object, the latter finally simply accelerated straight up and disappeared.[16] Again one is confronted with an ambiguity, some of which is suggestive of a secretive human technology, such as the exhaust plume, and some of which is not, such as the disappearance straight up at tremendous speed. In either case, the conclusion for intelligence analysts would remain the same: the technology represented a potential threat, and it was in the hands of an unknown group whose origins themselves were ambiguous. UFO researcher and former NASA scientist Richard F. Haines uncovered one of the most significant instances not only of a military UFO sighting during wartime, but also of an apparent exchange of fire and "ordnance," if one wishes to call it that. The report was first filed as an interview between the witness, Francis P. Wall, who at the time of the incident was a private first class in the U.S. Army in the Korean War, and John Timmerman, who at the time worked with the J. Allen Hynek Center for UFO Studies.[17]

---

[13] Mack Maloney, *UFOs in Wartime: What They Didn't Want You To Know*, p. 70.

[14] Ibid., p. 70.

[15] Ibid., p. 75.

> This event that I am about to relate to you is the truth, so help me God. It happened in the early spring of 1951 in the country of Korea. We were in the army infantry. I was in the 25th Division, 27th regiment, 2nd Battalion, "Easy" Company. We were in what is known on the military maps are the Iron triangle, near Chorwon. We were to the left of Chorwon, just across from the mountain ridge from this city—town—whatever you want to call it. It is night. We are located upon the slopes of a mountain, between the fingers of a mountain as they run down toward the valley below where there is a Korean village. Previously we have sent our men into this village to warn the populous (sic) that we are going to bombard it with artillery. Upon this night this I'm talkin' about, we were doin' just that. We had aerial artillery bursts comin' in. And we suddenly noticed down, with the mountains to our backs, we noticed on our right-hand side what appeared to be a jack-o-lantern come wafting down across the mountain. And at first no one thought anything about it. So we noticed that this thing continued on down to the village where, indeed, the artillery air bursts were exploding. and we further noticed, by the way, it had an orange glow in the beginning, we further noticed that this object would get right into… it was that quick that it could get into the center of an airburst of artillery and yet remain unharmed. And, subsequently, this time element on this, I can't recall exactly, I would say anywhere from, oh, forty-five minutes to an hour all told…

---

[16] Ibid., p.

[17] Richard F. Haines, *Advanced Aerial Devices Reported During the Korean War* (Los Altos, California: LDA Press, 1990), p. 18.

But then this object approached us. And it turned a blue-green brilliant light. It's hard to distinguish the size of it, there's no way to compare it. It pulsated. the light, that is, was pulsating. It wasn't, ah, regular. *Alright, this object approached us. I asked for and received permission from Lt. Evans, our company commander at that time, to fire upon this object, of which I did with an M-1 rifle with armor-piercing bullets, or rounds in it. And I did hit it. It must have been metallic because you could hear when the projectile slammed into it.*

Now, why do you say, why would that, ah, bullet damage this craft if the artillery rounds didn't? I don't know unless they had dropped their protective field around 'em, or whatever. That this, ah, technology envisions, that they had to protect it. But the object went wild and it… the light was goin' on and off and it went off completely once, briefly. *And it was moving erratically from side to side as though it might crash to the ground. Then, a sound, which we had heard no sound previous to this, the sound of, like of, ah, you've heard diesel locomotives revving up. That's the way this thing sounded. And then, we were attacked, I guess you would call it. in any event, we were swept by some form of a ray that was emitted in pulses, in waves that you could visually see only when it was aiming directly at you. That is to say, like a searchlight sweeps around and the segment of light you would see it coming at you.*

Now you would feel a burning, tingling sensation all over your body, as though something were penetrating you. And ah, so the company commander, Lt. Evans, hauled us into our bunkers… So, I'm in my bunker with another man. We're peeping out at this thing. It hovered over us for a while, lit up the whole area with its light that I'm telling you about, and then I saw it shoot off at a 45 degree angle, it's that quick, just, it was there and was gone. That quick. And it was as though that was the end of it. But, three days later the entire company of men had to be evacuated by ambulance. *They had to cut roads in there and haul them out, They were too weak to walk. And they had dysentery and then subsequently, ah, when the doctors did see them, ah, they had an extremely high white blood cell count which the doctors could not account for.*

Now let me inform you on this. In the military, especially the army, each day you file a report, a company report. Now, we had a confab about that. What do we do about this. Do we file it in the report or not? And the consensus was "no." Because they'd lock every one of us up, and think we were crazy. At that time no such thing as UFO had ever been heard of and we didn't know what it was. And I still don't know what it was. But I do know that since that time I have periods of disorientation, memory loss, and ah, I dropped from 180 pounds to 138

> pounds after I got back to this country. And I've had great difficulty keeping my weight up. Indeed, I'm retired and disabled today.[18]

Whatever attacked private Wall and his company, it is worth noting that a similar incident occurred on the Columbia River in the USA in 1981, when many eyewitnesses "described an orange spherical light which hung above the river while emitting a low, throbbing, diesel engine sound that was tape recorded."[19] One may reasonably assume that when Mr. Wall eventually reported the incident to the J. Allen Hynek center, that the US military-intelligence complex would have taken close note, simply for the fact that the actions of the UFO could clearly be interpreted as hostile and threatening, and because it evidenced an advanced technology.

2. A Vietnam War Incident: North Vietnamese Unit Liquidated by UFO

A similar incident during the Vietnam War definitely appears to have caught the interest of the national security state. During that war, as is now well known, the CIA and US military sponsored special operations assassination squads to conduct assassinations against targeted enemy leaders, sometimes within North Vietnam itself. During one such mission inside of North Vietnam in August 1968, an American special operations unit was inserted into the country by helicopter. Proceeding on foot, it located its target and assassinated him. North Vietnamese military units detected the team and pursued it back to the location where it would be extracted by helicopter. Once near their pickup point the special operations team spotted two hills and ascended the left one.[20] At this juncture, an extraordinary episode occurred:

> Just as the team was getting under cover, they heard the unmistakable chattering sound of AK-47 assault rifles firing from the next hill over. Enemy soldiers were nearby. But what were they shooting at?

---

[18] Richard F. Haines, *Advanced Aerial devices Reported During the Korean War*, pp. 18-20, emphasis added.

[19] Richard F. Haines, *Advanced Aerial devices Reported During the Korean War*, p. p. 26, n. 4. See also Maloney's reporting of the incident in *UFO's in Wartime: What They Didn't Want You to Know*, pp. 149-150.

[20] Mack Maloney, *UFOs in Wartime: What They Didn't Want You to Know*, pp. 240-241.

The hit squad saw the enemy tracers going nearly straight up into the sky. The assassins were certain they were firing at their extraction aircraft—but they were in for a surprise.

Instead of seeing their rescue copter, they saw a large semicircular object appear over the hill next to their position. It was immediately clear this was not an aircraft that belonged to either side. This was a UFO, strange and alien. one member of the team recalled that its color kept changing from light blue to bright red. It was making no noise.

As soon as enemy tracers got close to the object, it suddenly stooped in midair, just a few hundred feet from where the U.S. special ops team was hiding.

The Americans saw a streak of light shoot out from the front of the object—then there was nothing but silence. The enemy barrage had ceased.

The UFO briefly lingered over the spot where the enemy had been firing at it, then turned and headed out to sea.

The hit squad waited about thirty minutes. Hearing no more enemy activity, they descended their hill and went to look around the enemy position. What they found was as startling as seeing the UFO itself. There were no enemy bodies, according to one member of the special ops team. Just the enemy's weapons—and they'd been melted down to almost nothing, leaving a smell that was so bad, it stayed with the team members for hours afterward.

The team's copter finally arrived and lifted them out. On returning to their base, one of the members immediately reported the incident to the high-ups. The other team members never saw him again.

Those remaining didn't say anything about the incident during their postmission debriefings. But soon after, they were questioned directly about it, not by military brass, but by civilians.

Their method of interrogation was extremely unusual. According to one team member, the civilians blindfolded each remaining member of the hit squad, taping their mouths shut as well. They were brought, individually, to an undisclosed location and put in a small room. Inside the room were three men: one wore a hood, keeping his face hidden. This person remained silent the whole time. According to one team member, when the questioning was over, all he recalled was seeing a bright flash of light. The next thing he knew he was back at his base, as were the others in his team.

Startled, he tried to talk to his colleagues about what had just happened, but none of them had any memory of the interrogation or the encounter with the UFO that preceded it. Only he did.[21]

---

[21] Mack Maloney, *UFOs in Wartime: What They Didn't Want You to Know*, pp. 241-242.

This incident, if true, is significant for the fact that it would have directly involved the CIA in postmission debriefing, since it was involved with running such teams, and also because the sighting again involves the use of an advanced technology in direct intervention in human military operations between opposing combatants.

In short, it would again have been perceived as a national security issue and threat, and it is highly likely it would have been similarly handled by North Vietnam and by its Soviet backers.

3. The 1953 Kinross Incident

One of the most famous UFO incidents involving the US military is the 1953 Kinross incident, first reported by the famous early UFOlogist, Major Donald Keyhoe. On the evening of November 23, 1953, radar operators observed the return of an unknown object on their radar screens.[22] An F-89 fighter jet piloted by Lt. Felix Moncla, Jr., was scrambled from nearby Kinross field. Flying at over 500 mph, the radar operators watched as Lt. Moncla's aircraft was guided to the object and closed on the return on their screens, when, to their surprise, the two blips "merged into one, and then that blip faded from the screen."[23] No further radio contact with Moncla or his on-board radar operator, Lt. R.R. Wilson, was had again.

Search efforts conducted that night and the next day by both American and Canadian aircraft and ships discovered no remains of the missing aircraft, and the *Chicago Tribune* ran a short article reporting the incident, including the merger of the two radar returns into one.[24] On November 27, 1953, however, a local Canadian newspaper, the *Sault Ste. Marie Evening News* stated that the unknown object "had been identified as a Royal Canadian air Force C-47 transport."[25]

Keyhoe, unconvinced of this explanation, contacted the local U.S. Air Force Public Information officer—one Lt. Robert C. White—who offered the explanation that the Air Force radar operators had simply "read the scope wrong."[26] This only piqued Keyhoe's interest even more, and his conviction grew when the U.S.A.F. then offered yet *another* explanation, namely, that the other object had been a Canadian civilian airliner, a DC-3.

---

[22] Jerome Clark, *Strange Skies: Pilot Encounters with UFOs* (Citadel Press, 2002), pp. 144-145.

[23] Ibid., p. 145.

[24] Ibid.

[25] Ibid.

[26] Ibid., p. 146.

Compounding matters even further, the Air Force had offered two entirely different explanations to Lt. Moncla's widow, on two different occasions, from two different people! In the first instance, she was informed that her husband's fighter jet had flown too low and crashed into the lake. When she reasonably inquired if she could recover her husband's body, she was offered a second explanation: her husband's aircraft had exploded at high altitude.[27]

In other words, the Air Force *had* no explanation, nor, apparently, did it have any wreckage or any other physical evidence of the event, other than the fact that one of its planes and two of its airmen were missing after an encounter with "something," an encounter that once again may be interpreted as a hostile action. This is reflected by a comment that Jerome Clark makes in his recounting of the Kinross event:

> Then on June 28, 1956—or so Ohio ufologist Tom Comella would assert in *Fate* magazine six years later—Master Sgt. O.D. Hill, a Project Blue Book associate working out of Wright-Patterson AFB, confided to Comella's colleague Edgar Smith that *the project's purpose was to "prevent another Pearl Harbor."* (Smith and Comella had earlier dealings with Blue Book and so were known to the project, though neither had met Hill before this.) Asking not to be quoted, Hill related two instances of alleged UFO-related military-aircraft disappearances. Though he apparently did not mention Kinross by name, one of the cases sounded exactly like it. Immediately following that meeting (in Smith's home), Smith called Comella to tell him Hill was on his way. At Comella's residence Hill repeated the stories. We have only Smith's (or Comella's) word that this conversation occurred. On the other hand, a Sgt. O.D. Hill was indeed part of Blue Book during the time period in question, and he did not disavow the story even after its airing in a national magazine.[28]

Whether or not Hill made the statements Comella and Smith alleged he did is, from one point of view, not important, for the Kinross incident would have been perceived as a threat and hostile action. Hill's alleged remarks, that the true purpose of Blue Book was to prevent another Pearl Harbor, rings true in this context.

---

[27] Jerome Clark, *Strange Skies: Pilot Encounters with UFOs*, p. 146.

[28] Ibid., pp. 146-147, emphasis added.

While these conventional interventions are significant enough to warrant an investigation and analysis as threats to national security, it is when one turns to consider the far more serious issue of UFOs and nuclear weapons that one begins to perceive the dim outlines of actual covert warfare and operations taking place.

B. UFOs, ICBMs, and Nuclear Weapons

Beyond question, UFO sightings at nuclear weapons storage facilities, manufacturing plants, ICBM bases, and nuclear tests not only occur, but would have been viewed at the highest levels as potential threats. Additionally, since such incidents occurred not only in the U.S.A. but the U.S.S.R. as well, we will review some salient cases extensively here, relying upon the vital and seminal research of Robert Hastings, and his excellent study of this issue, *UFOs and Nukes: Extraordinary Encounters at Nuclear Weapons Sites.* These sightings are vital to the argument being advanced here, namely, that a breakaway civilization culture does exist, for as we shall discover, the actions of UFOs during some of these incidents cannot be interpreted, from the human point of view, as anything less than potentially hostile. our examination will look at three different types of cases or sightings: those at nuclear missile sites, those at actual nuclear *tests*, and those at nuclear weapons manufacturing facilities. Considered individually, any *one* of these cases would have called forth an assessment and possible response; taken together, they are compelling arguments for subtle clashes and maneuverings between human militaries, the potential breakaway civilization technologies, and whoever is behind the UFO phenomena involved. As we shall also discover, close analysis of these cases along two main avenues of interpretation—human origin and non-human origin—will reveal some interesting speculative possibilities about the culture of the breakaway civilization.

Spy Satellites, Nuclear Weapons, and UFOs

1. Sightings near Nuclear Missile Sites and Nuclear-Equipped Military Units

a. The UFO-Haunted Aircraft Carrier, the USS Franklin D. Roosevelt

Commissioned in October 1945 shortly after the end of World War Two, the USS *Franklin D. Roosevelt* piled up a number of firsts in U.S. naval history, being "the first American aircraft carrier to launch and recover a jet aircraft."[29] She also participated in the first large postwar NATO naval war game, along with warships from Great Britain, Norway, Denmark, France, Belgium, Holland, Portugal and Canada, Operation Mainbrace.

It was here that the *Franklin D. Roosevelt's* "haunting" by UFOs began, as UFOs began to be reported by Danish ships and British aircraft.[30] On September 20, 1952, some of her crewmen were observed by an attached newspaper photographer observing a spherical object in the sky travelling very quickly. The photographer snapped some photographs, which were quickly examined by the ship's intelligence officers, who decided that "the large spherical object had to be either a weather balloon—or something *else."*[31] The *Franklin D. Roosevelt* quickly inquired of the rest of the massive fleet if any of its ships had sent up a weather balloon.

The answer: none had.

But the UFOs were not done with the *Franklin D. Roosevelt*, for after a refit the following year, the ship anchored near Guantanamo Bay, where again a UFO was observed by the ship's crew, this time at night, glowing brightly, and performing sudden stop-start maneuvers.[32] Three years later, in 1956, while making a goodwill visit to Brazil, the aircraft carrier anchored at Rio de Janeiro, where once again, it was stalked, "this time by *two* UFOs."[33] The ship's crewmen

> saw two large disks. They described them as one above the other, with a glowing light between the two. The objects were estimated at between 75 and 100 feet long.
>
> They weren't moving, and there were a few hundred feet separating them. The ship's radar fixed them several miles from the carrier and

---

[29] Mack Maloney, *UFOs in Wartime: What They Didn't Want You to Know*, p. 179.

[30] Ibid., p. 180.

[31] Ibid., emphasis Maloney's.

[32] Ibid., p. 181.

[33] Ibid., p. 182.

> about half a mile high. Each object had bright counterrotating (sic) lights ringing its middle.
>
> Suddenly the top disk ejected a fiery object that fell into the lower object. After that, both disappeared at blinding speed…
>
> Anyone in the ship's crew who witnessed the incident was later questioned by the navy and then told never to talk about it again.[34]

Still the UFOs were not done with the USS *Franklin D. Roosevelt.*

By autumn of 1958 the aircraft carrier was again anchored off of Guantanamo Bay, when around 9 P.M. a UFO appeared and began to head directly for the carrier. Approximately two dozen crewmen ran to the flight deck, and spotted "a cigar-shaped object with a row of windows running through the middle,"[35] and some of these witnesses claimed to have seen "figures inside looking down at them," while still others stated that they felt heat "coming from the object."[36] Whatever it was, it remained near the aircraft carrier for almost five minutes, when it then "turned reddish orange—and then it was gone, leaving the area at very high speed."[37] Subsequently the CIA sent agents to interview the witnesses to the incident, giving them the customary warning never to talk about it again.[38]

The final incident involving the *Franklin D. Roosevelt* occurred in 1962 when an object appeared on the carrier's radar, some 500 miles away at 80,000 feet altitude.[39] The ship's radar operators observed the object drop nearly three miles in mere seconds, then completely stop. The carrier was ordered to turn into the wind and "several F-4 Phantom fighter jets were catapulted off the deck with orders to confirm the bogey."[40] Closing on the object, the fighters turned on their radars and immediately the object simply completely disappeared from the *carrier*'s radar. The fighters continued to search but after over twenty minutes were recalled. As soon as the fighters had landed and the ship resumed its previous course, the UFO reappeared on the ship's radar, directly *above* the carrier, "meaning it had traveled a distance of more than 500 miles in just a few minutes."[41] Under orders from the commanding officer, the crew involved were ordered not to record anything in their logs.

---

[34] Mack Maloney, *UFOs in Wartime: What They Didn't Want You to Know*, p. 182.

[35] Ibid., p. 183.

[36] Ibid., p. 184.

[37] Ibid.

[38] Ibid.

[39] Ibid., pp. 183-184.

[40] Ibid., p. 184.

So the question inevitably occurs: why were UFOs targeting the USS *Franklin D. Roosevelt,* seemingly singling it out of all the carriers in the US Navy?

Maloney's answer is chilling: "There's only one clue: in 1950, the (*Franklin D. Roosevelt)* was the first U.S. Navy carrier to deploy with nuclear weapons on board."[42]

With this, we arrive at the heart of a very murky, and potentially very dark aspect of UFO activity and interference with military operations and installations: nuclear weapons. As previously noted, Robert Hastings has done yeoman's work on this subject with his magisterial work, *Ufos and Nukes: Extraordinary Encounters at Nuclear Weapons Sites.* His information will be reviewed carefully here. During the world's brush with thermonuclear war during the 1962 Cuban Missile Crisis, UFOs were "conspicuous by their absence," and in fact, it appears that worldwide, UFO activity was at a low level.[43] According to Hastings, however, there was one attempt at a UFO intercept by American fighters during the crisis.[44] But this is merely the tip of a very large UFO-and-nuclear iceberg.

Almost all U.S. Air Force bases that based ICBMs—Malmstrom in Montana, F.E. Warren in Wyoming, Ellsworth in South Dakota, and Minot and Grand Forks in North Dakota—has had recurring UFO incidents.[45]

b. The Malmstrom A.F.B. Case

Malmstrom Air Force Base near Great Falls, Montana, was the scene in 1966 of one of the most stunning cases of UFO interference in American military affairs and nuclear weapons. First reported by ufologist Raymond Fowler, the incident occurred during a night in the early spring of 1966. A UFO was sighted near the vicinity of the launch control center of a flight of ten Minuteman ICBMs.[46] The UFO, a glowing red saucer shape, shut down the flight and fighters were scrambled.[47] One witness to the event, Captain Robert Salas, informed Hastings that an agent from the base's branch of the Air Force Office of Special Investigations (AFOSI) debriefed the men and had them sign non-disclosure agreements, and informed them that the incident had understandably been "highly classified" and was "not to be discussed with anyone, even amongst themselves."[48] The AFOSI agent then confiscated the missile launch officers' logs.[49] According to captain Salas, despite these strictures, the incident swiftly became a major topic of discussion on the base.[50]

---

[41] Mack Maloney, *UFOs in Wartime: What They Didn't Want You to Know*, p. 184.

[42] Ibid.

[43] Robert Hastings, *UFOs and Nukes: Extraordinary Encounters at Nuclear Weapons Sites* (Author House, 2008), p. 125.

[44] Ibid., p. 126.

[45] Ibid., p. 212.

Eventually an engineering report was drawn up officially denying that the UFO had anything to do with the shut-down of the missiles.[51]

However, the Air Force contacted engineers from the Boeing company, designer of the Minuteman missile, and these in turn "investigated several possible causes, including weather conditions and commercial power surges, but ruled out all of them."[52] More importantly, the Boeing engineers successfully duplicated the phenomenon "by directly injecting a certain signal, a 'noise,' into the logic coupler" of the missiles' computerized launch systems, though they were never able to "determine the source of such a signal."[53]

This is an important point, for while it would seem evident that the UFO *was* responsible for the shutdown, the ability of Boeing engineers to duplicate the phenomenon indicates that the technology employed was not beyond existing human capabilities. But other incidents at Malmstrom A.F.B. indicated more disturbing capabilities, for in 1967, a UFO returned to the base, and again, interfered with the missiles, only this time, with the missiles' guidance and control systems.[54] According to Hastings, his source indicated that whoever was behind the UFO, they "were demonstrating that they could indeed disable the missiles."[55]

---

[46] Robert Hastings, *UFOs and Nukes: Extraordinary Encounters at Nuclear Weapons Sites*, p. 232.

[47] Ibid., pp. 232-233, 238-239.

[48] Ibid., p. 240.

[49] Ibid.

[50] Ibid.

[51] Ibid., p. 241.

[52] Ibid., p. 242.

[53] Ibid.

[54] Ibid., p. 259.

[55] Ibid., p. 260.

Then, in a repeat performance in January 1972, NORAD informed Malmstrom that ground sensors had recorded a sharp rise in ground temperatures to 80 degrees around one of the ICBM silos.

> A security team was rushed to the silo; when they arrived they saw something incredible. A UFO was sitting on the ground, and the cover to the missile silo had been removed. Apparently the UFO's "crew" had broken into the launch facility.
>
> The security team was close enough that, even though no description was ever recorded, one member claimed he saw the UFO crew inside the silo, examining the missile's circuitry. On being discovered, the UFO occupants hurried back to their craft. The UFO lifted off, shooting straight up at a speed estimated to be 50,000 miles an hour.[56]

In yet another incident at Malmstrom in November 1975, an alarm sounded on the base indicating that security at one of the silos had been violated. The launch officers at the silo requested a security team to investigate. Upon arriving at the silo, the security team reported observing a large orange disk hovering over the area, and technicians were dispatched to the ICBM after the disk departed.[57] "To their horror, they discovered that the targeting info stored in the warhead's guidance system had been changed… nobody could understand how the targeting info had been altered."[58]

There are two crucial considerations here. Firstly, the actions of the UFOs at Malmstrom, *whatever their origin*, clearly constituted behavior that could be considered hostile, and with the alleged alteration of targeting data, not to mention shutting down an entire flight of ICBM's, constituted serious threats to American national security. Secondly, even though the Boeing engineers were able to duplicate the *shutdown* of the flight via remote signaling, the remote alteration of sensitive targeting data implies a much more sophisticated technological capability, one that suggests the ability to "scan" targeting circuitry and data, and to enter new targeting information.

---

[56] Mack Maloney, *UFOs in Wartime: What They Didn't Want You to Know*, p. 222.

[57] Ibid., pp. 226-227.

[58] Ibid., p. 227.

c. The Ellsworth A.F.B. Case

Malmstrom A.F.B. was not the only U.S. air base and ICBM launch facility experiencing difficulties with UFOs and its intercontinental missiles. Ellsworth Air Force Base just east of Rapid City, South Dakota, control site for 150 ICBMs spread throughout the wastes of the western part of the state, experienced its fair share as well. Notably, like the Malmstrom incidents, these began in 1966.[59]

In 1966, Staff Sergeant Albert Spodnik and another electro-mechanical technician were ordered to launch facility to correct what appeared to be an electrical malfunction, for both the commercial and emergency back-up power had gone down at a site code-named Juliet-03, making the Minuteman missile there inoperable.[60]

Spodnik and his partner completed the repairs and initiated a start-up procedure "which would return the missile to normal operational status."[61] That was the end of all things normal for that evening, for as they were leaving the silo, their security escort informed them that there was disturbing conversation taking place on their vehicle's radio: a security alarm had gone off at another silo just six miles away, as it too experienced a total loss of all commercial and back-up emergency power, taking the missile off alert status.[62]

Once again a security team was ordered to the silo. Listening in, Spodnik and his team overheard the security team at the other silo describe a round metallic object was resting on the ground inside the security perimeter of the silo.[63] Climbing on top of their vehicle in order to gain a better view of the nearby silo, Spodnik and his team saw "an intense glow that seemed to envelop the entire launch facility, much brighter than the security lights located there."[64] Meanwhile, the security team at the other silo was ordered to approach the object, which the team commander refused to do, and a helicopter was dispatched from Ellsworth to the silo. The helicopter carried the Base Commander, the Wing Commander, the Missile Maintenance Commander, the Civil Engineering Commander, and the Base Hospital Commander. As

---

[59] Robert Hastings, *UFOs and Nukes: Extraordinary Encounters at Nuclear Weapons Sites*, p. 228.

[60] Ibid., p. 228.

[61] Ibid.

[62] Ibid.

[63] Ibid.

[64] Ibid., p. 229.

Hastings states, "this was extraordinary, to say the least,"[65] for it suggested that the base brass had been quickly assembled in response to the first alert that Spodnik's team had been dispatched to repair. Spodnik eventually jumped from the roof of his vehicle, and heard over the radio that the UFO had departed. When the helicopter with the base commanders arrived, they found the indentations from the object's tripod landing gear, and the power was restored, without anyone having done anything.[66]

This was not to be the last UFO visit to the Ellsworth A.F.B. missile silos, however, for technical Sergeant John W. Mills, assigned to the base's 44th organizational Missile Maintenance Squadron, reported an even more bizarre incident at the base in late December 1978 or early January 1979.[67] Ordered to a silo to perform a routine targeting maintenance procedure on an ICBM, Mills entered the silo, when his team's accompanying guard on the surface began to bang on the ladder down into the facility, demanding that they come to the surface. Mills ascended the ladder, fully intent on reprimanding the guard, but when her arrived on the surface, he noticed a low frequency loud ambient hum, coming from "everywhere". Mills stated that one could feel it on one's skin, inside the body, in one's teeth, "like a microwave except it wasn't heating you up."[68] Even their truck vibrated.[69]

Looking up, they could not see stars directly overhead, while stars were clearly visible to the sides.[70] Walking out of the silo's fenced-in security area, the hum could not be heard.[71] Mills informed Hastings that "we weren't scared. We were just puzzled."[72] While their surface guard was clearly frightened, Hastings observed that this strange fearlessness and calm on the part of others involved in such missile base sightings suggested some sort of "mental-conditioning field was present."[73] And as with the earlier 1966 Ellsworth sighting, all power at the launch facility inexplicably went off, only to return on the object's departure.[74] Nor was this all: two other teams at two different silos reported similar experiences, complete with total losses of power at each silo.[75]

---

[65] Robert Hastings, *UFOs and Nukes: Extraordinary Encounters at Nuclear Weapons Sites*, p. 229.

[66] Ibid., p. 230.

[67] Ibid., p. 376.

[68] Ibid., p. 377.

[69] Ibid., p. 378.

[70] Ibid.

[71] Ibid., p. 379.

[72] Ibid., p. 378.

[73] Ibid., p. 380.

[74] Ibid., pp. 380-381.

Once back at Ellsworth, Mills and his team reported to the missile maintenance hanger, which was "full of people," many of them colonels and various base commanders.[76] Separating enlisted men from officers, each teams' members were ordered to fill out reports. Mills and his team reported that they did not see anything, but two teams did apparently report the truth, and their members were passed over for promotion, and in one case, its members were reassigned from the base within 24 hours after being made to sign national security and non-disclosure statements.[77] As with the later Malmstrom incidents, it was discovered that the missiles' targeting systems were inoperative during the incident.[78]

d. The Minot A.F.B. Incident

Thus far we have encountered UFOs shutting down ICBM flights, turning off power at silos, and altering targeting and guidance system information. As if all that were not enough, the final and most dangerous step and implication for national security was taken during the UFO incidents at Minot Air Force Base, sometime between July 1965 and July 1967.[79] The story was recounted to Hastings by David Schuur, a Minuteman crewmember at the Minot base from December 1963 to November 1967.[80]

While Schuur was on duty, all of the Minot base's ICBM silos reported a strange object moving over their silos, passing from one flight to the next.[81] What Schuur recounted to Hastings is worth citing in detail, for like Hastings, I find the implications of the Minot incident perhaps the most disturbing of all UFO-nuclear weapons related activity, with clear implications for national security, and, as we shall discover later in our analysis of these incidents, clear implications for the breakaway civilization and its responses to such events.

---

[75] Robert Hastings, *UFOs and Nukes: Extraordinary Encounters at Nuclear Weapons Sites*, pp. 381-382.

[76] Ibid., p. 382.

[77] Ibid., pp. 382-383.

[78] Mack Maloney, *UFOs in Wartime: What They Didn't Want You to Know*, p. 229.

[79] Robert Hastings, op. cit., p. 303.

[80] Ibid.

[81] Ibid., p. 304.

> However, when the object passed over our flight, we started receiving many spurious indications on our console. The object was apparently sending some kind of signals into each missile. Not every missile got checked (out) by the object, but there were several that did. Maybe six, seven, or eight. Maybe all ten got checked, but I don't think so. As this thing was passing over each missile site, we would start getting erratic indications on that particular missile. After a few seconds, everything reset back to normal. But then the next missile showed spurious indicators, so the object had apparently moved on to that one, and did the same thing to it. Then on to the next one, and so on. It was as if the object was scanning each missile, one by one. The Inner Security and outer Security (alarms were triggered) but we got those all the time, for one reason or another. *However, on this particular night, we had to activate the 'Inhibit' switch because we got 'Launch in Progress' indicators! After a few minutes, the UFO passed to the northwest of us and all indicators reset to normal.*[82]

Hastings' competence as an astute investigator is revealed by his next question and Schuur's response:

> I wanted to be certain about what I had just been told. I asked Schuur, "So, if you get a Launch in Progress indicator, does that mean the launch sequence has been triggered—that the missile is preparing to launch?" Schuur replied, "*That means the missile has received a launch signal.* When that happens, we get an indication in the capsule that a launch command has been received by that missile. If that happens, without proper authority, you flip what's called an 'Inhibit' switch, to delay the launch for a given period of time. If an inhibit command comes in from another launch capsule, that shuts down the launch totally. But if that second command doesn't come in, the missile will wait for a specified period of time and then launch automatically at the end of that expired period—theoretically. Of course, that night, we had all kinds of other indicators coming on from each missile, so in that situation the launch probably would have aborted itself. I honestly don't know."[83]

Consider the implications of these statements in the light of the Ellsworth and Malmstrom incidents, for clearly, if targeting information could be remotely altered in the presence of a UFO, and if silos could be completely shut down, then it is equally conceivable that the means existed to "inhibit" the "inhibit switch," thus allowing the missiles to launch automatically at the end of the expired period of time. This constitutes not only a clear threat and hostile action, it would inevitably have called forth certain responses within the secretive bureaucratic power structures, as we shall argue later in this chapter.[84]

---

[82] Robert Hastings, *UFOs and Nukes: Extraordinary Encounters at Nuclear Weapons Sites*, p. 305, emphasis added.

[83] Ibid., emphasis added.

But like the incidents at Malmstrom and Ellsworth Air Force Bases, this was not the only such incident at Minot. In the hours before dawn on October 24, 1968, a UFO was being tracked by the base's radar as well as the on-board radar of a B-52 approaching the base to land, while concurrently missile security and maintenance teams were also "reporting UFOs maneuvering near Minuteman missile Launch Facilities 0-6 and N-7."[85] This incident even made the official Project Blue Book file as case 12,548.[86]

At one point, witnesses saw the UFO separate into two separate objects, fly in opposite directions, then "return and pass under each other."[87] While this was transpiring, the base radioed the approaching B-52 bomber and asked for visual or radar confirmation. The B-52's radar tracked the object, and the plane's radar operator activated the radarscope's camera, capturing the radar event on film for later analysis.[88] This analysis revealed that the object was traveling around 3900 miles per hour.[89] As it approached the bomber, the aircraft's radio transmissions were interrupted, and it was only able to receive communications.[90] The aircraft's crew described the object as being orange, oblong, and with what appeared to be windows around it.[91]

The official Air Force explanation?

---

[84] It is to be noted that when asked by Hastings whether he thought the Launch in Progress warning had been deliberately triggered by the UFO, Schuur responded negatively, offering his opinion that it was merely an accidental by-product of the "scanning" apparently being done by the object. (Hastings, *UFOs and Nukes,* p. 306)

[85] Hastings, op. cit., p. 309.

[86] Ibid.

[87] Ibid., p. 310.

[88] Ibid., pp. 310-311.

[89] Ibid., p. 311.

[90] Ibid.

[91] Ibid.

The interrupted transmissions were due to plasma effects like ball lightning, and the crew had seen either the star Sirius or Vega, or a plasma or ball lightning located near the ground.[92]

Well and good, but plasmas do not explain the *earlier* and much more serious "Launch In Progress" incident at the base, for plasmas do not normally float deliberately from one missile silo to the next, performing scans as they go!

All this is serious enough, but the seriousness is considerably amplified by the fact that one retired Soviet Army Colonel, Vladimir Plantonev, described for ABC News a similar incident at a Soviet ICBM base in the Ukraine on October 4, 1982, an incident lasting several hours. A typical flying saucer was seen near the ICBM base outside the village of Byelokoroviche, when

> an unspecified number of nuclear missiles suddenly activated. As the horrified launch crew looked on helplessly, the automated launch sequence was enabled—without proper authorization—and proceeded to count down for 15 terrifying seconds, before aborting and returning to stand-by status.[93]

As with the American command and control arrangements for ICBM launches, this signal and launch sequence could only be begun by the transmission of special codes and commands from Moscow.[94]

But there's more, and it should make any attentive reader shudder. In 2004 the History Channel aired an episode called *Soviet UFO Secrets Revealed*, in which Dr. Yulii Platov, a member of the Russian Academy of Sciences, attempted to debunk the whole UFO story, stating that the whole incident was simply due to a military flare being seen near the missile silos. "According to Platov, this explanation had been quickly agreed upon by members of Institute 22, a Soviet government-sponsored UFO research group, which was sent to investigate the incident immediately after it had occurred. 'They established within a very short period, literally half-a-day, *that a military training exercise took place at a nearby (air base),'* he said."[95] For those who have followed the story of

---

[92] Ibid., p. 312.

[93] Robert Hastings, *UFOs and Nukes: Extraordinary Encounters at Nuclear Weapons Sites,* p. 431.

[94] Ibid., p. 432. Q.v. also Richard M. Dolan, *UFOs and The National Security State,* Volume 2, *The Cover-Up Exposed: 1973-1991* (Keyhole Publishing Company, 2009), pp. 283-284.

[95] Ibid., p emphasis added.

9/11, of the London bombing, or even the more recent Oslo-Breivik bombing and murders, *this nesting of real operations and events within drills will sound all too horrifyingly familiar*.

In my opinion the Soviet UFO-ICBM incident is real, for it follows the familiar pattern we have seen evidenced in the American cases, a pattern that, moreover, would have called forth similar responses within the bureaucratic bowels of Russian black projects, and unique political responses, as will be argued later in this chapter.

e. The Alleged Big Sur Incident

For the present, no survey of UFO interference with nuclear missiles would be complete without a review of the famous, or, depending on one's lights, infamous Big Sur Incident. As Hastings observers of this much-debated event,

> The Big Sur UFO Incident has been studied and debated for more than two decades. Some researchers, including the author, consider it to be an unparalleled example of UFO interest in—and interference with—our nuclear missile systems. However, other ufologists dismiss the case, either because they believe it to be explainable in prosaic terms, or they view it as a complete fabrication, an absurd hoax perpetrated by two U.S. Air Force officers, former Lt. Bob Jacobs and retired Major Florenze Mansmann.[96]

Given the controversy surrounding this event, no review of it will be undertaken here.[97]

Our focus will remain on the incident itself, as first reported by Dr. Bob Jacobs and summarized as follows by Robert Hastings.[98]

> Early one morning in September 1964, an Atlas D Intercontinental Ballistic Missile (ICBM) was launched from Vandenberg AFB,

---

[96] Robert Hastings, *UFOs and Nukes: Extraordinary Encounters at Nuclear Weapons Sites*, p. 179.

[97] For an excellent overview of the debate, see Hastings, op. cit., pp. 179-207.

[98] While we will follow Hastings' summary of the incident here, the complete and original version of Dr. Bob Jacobs, "Deliberate Deception: The Big Sur UFO Filming: A Critical Analysis of the Curious Events at Vandenburg Air Force Base in September, 1964," *Mufon UFO Journal*, Number 249, January 1989, 2-9, is available online at http://www.nicap.org/articles/MUJ-January_1989.pdf.

> California, carrying aloft an experimental enemy radar-defeating system and dummy nuclear warhead. Shortly after nosecone-separation, as the warhead raced toward a targeted splash-down at Eniwetok Lagoon, in the Pacific Ocean, it was approached by a disc-shaped UFO. As the saucer chased and then circled the warhead, four bright flashes of light emanated from the unknown craft whereupon the warhead began to tumble, eventually falling into the ocean hundreds of miles short of its intended target downrange.[99]

All of this was filmed by then Lieutenant Bob Jacobs of the 1369th Photographic Squadron at Vandenberg Air force Base, via a state-of-the-art telescopic camera system at Big Sur, California, over 100 miles northwest of Vandenberg A.F.B.[100] Jacobs maintains that a 16mm version of the film was "shown to a small, select group at Vandenberg" with Jacobs present. At the conclusion of the viewing, Jacobs was ordered to forget the events and never to discuss them.[101] Subsequently, Jacobs learned that when he had left the viewing area, that telltale frames of the UFO and the destruction of the ICBM were edited out of the film by possible agents of the CIA.[102] Additionally, fellow Air Force officer Mansmann offered that the evaluation of the UFO's origin was that it was extraterrestrial,[103] and Jacobs himself believed that the shoot-down was intended as a warning to humanity and its infatuation with thermonuclear weapons.[104]

As Hastings correctly notes, if Jacobs' story of the Big Sur UFO-ICBM shoot-down incident is true,

> …then it is arguably the most dramatic case on record of apparent UFO interference with one of our nuclear weapons systems. As such, its importance can not (sic) be overstated. While the actual motivation behind the apparent shooting down of the dummy warhead remains unknown… the act itself was nevertheless unmistakably provocative and, from a technological perspective, absolutely astounding.[105]

---

[99] Robert Hastings, *UFOs and Nukes: Extraordinary Encounters at Nuclear Weapons Sites,* p. 179.

[100] Ibid., pp. 179-180.

[101] Ibid., p. 180.

[102] Ibid.

[103] Ibid., p. 181.

[104] Ibid., pp. 181-182.

[105] Ibid., p. 186.

Indeed, if true, then of all the UFO-nuclear weapons incidents reviewed thus far, it formed the most direct challenge to the emerging culture of "full spectrum dominance" within the American national security structure.

f. Summary Thus Far

At this juncture, it is worth pausing to take note of a remarkable pattern that has emerged, for when all these incidents are considered *together*, a remarkable range of flexibility has been demonstrated; UFOs appeared to be capable of:

1) knocking out all power at ICBM silos(Malmstrom and Ellsworth);
2) scanning and reconfiguring the guidance system and targeting data of individual missiles, and then returning them to normal;
3) initiating launch sequences in both American and Soviet missiles;
4) and given all *these* capabilities, one must assume they had the capability to override the "inhibit launch" capabilities in both American and Soviet missiles; and finally,
5) in the case of the Big Sur Incident, shooting down an ICBM in flight with technology best described as directed energy weaponry.

Each of these taken individually would be perceived and interpreted by the national security bureaucracies—both military and intelligence—as potentially threatening national security issues, if not overtly hostile acts. Indeed, we may view these incidents as a kind of covert conflict, covert skirmishes on the edge of credulity, if not outright warfare, a kind of technological brinksmanship or fencing match between two opponents designed to send messages. The analysis of this fencing match and proposed responses to it would have been deeply classified. We shall speculate later in this chapter on what some of those responses may have been. But first, we are not quite done with the subject of UFOs and nuclear weapons.

2. Sightings at Nuclear Tests

a. Pre- and Post-Test UFO "Monitoring"

If UFOs showed such interest in nuclear weapons launch facilities, then what about actual nuclear and thermonuclear tests?

By now it should come as no surprise that UFOs have indeed shown an interest in not only in nuclear weapons facilities, but in actual nuclear and thermonuclear tests. This correlation was first pointed out by the late Frank Edwards, who noted that UFOs seems to show up in major UFO flaps in Scandinavia with the famous “ghost rocket” wave of 1946, and then over the defense installations of the USA in the West and Southwest of the country in 1947. Edwards correlated this to the 1945 Trinity test, and theorized that someone was reconnoitering our nuclear activity, having been alerted to it by the 1945 test, though Edwards did not offer a mechanism or explanation for this. He also noted that the sightings over Scandinavia in 1946 were simply in the wrong place, though Edwards could not have known at that time the growing evidence after German reunification ca 1989-1992 that the Nazis had indeed exploded some sort of nuclear device in the Baltic in 1944, which would fit neatly with Edwards’ two year “travel time”.

Strangely, however, few have followed up on this correlation of UFO activity to nuclear tests, few except Robert Hastings. Here again, however, we see the strongest evidence not only of a correlation, but of something that, taken with the ability of UFOs to interfere with the launch and guidance systems of ICBMs previously reviewed, would have been perceived as deep national security threats.

One source interviewed by Hastings, Chester W. Lytle, Sr., gave support to the Manhattan Project during the Second World War through his engineering company, Lytle Engineering.[106] This support role continued into the era of tests at the Nevada Proving Ground where, Lytle told Hastings, tests were filmed by aircraft, whose pilots “had observed highly maneuverable, disc-shaped craft in the vicinity of the detonations.”[107] Lytle himself was present as radar tracked these objects, which far out-maneuvered any known American aircraft.[108] Another source, David Middleton, informed Hastings that he had helped erect the tower that held one such nuclear device for a test in the late 1950s. The evening prior to the test, two UFOs came down and performed maneuvers near the tower. The Atomic Energy Commission personnel present for the test, seeing this performance, postponed it.[109]

---

[106] Robert Hastings, *UFOs and Nukes: Extraordinary Encounters at Nuclear Weapons Sites*, p. 52.

[107] Ibid., p. 54.

[108] Ibid.

[109] Ibid., pp. 51-52.

Another source, Walter N. Webb, a retired lecturer from the Charles Hayden Planetarium in Boston, and a consultant on astronomy for the Center for UFO Studies (CUFOS) and the Mutual UFO Network (MUFON),[110] informed Hastings of yet another UFO sighting of 18 rotating silvery discs near the atomic test site at Yucca Flat, Nevada, in October of 1951.[111] During one such event of UFOs monitoring the Plumbbob set of nuclear tests in Nevada, Project Bluebook mentioned a UFO monitoring and tracking the fallout cloud from the test, and even responding to encrypted military transmissions by sending "encrypted responses" of its own.[112] Indeed, as Hastings discovered, another source, Daniel Wilson, was able to correlate UFO sightings, and "fireball" sightings, after nuclear tests as the fallout spread across the country, with "fireball" sightings accompanying it.[113]

b. The Ivy Mike and Castle Bravo Tests

I have written extensively elsewhere about the Ivy-Mike and Castle Bravo hydrogen bomb tests, and about the hypothesis that their anomalous and run-away yields may have been the result of hitherto unrecognized "gating" or "transduction" of the energy of the local structure of the fabric of space-time into the reactions by dint of resonant geometries momentarily established within the nuclear plasmas mere moments after the detonation.[114] Previously in *this* book I have suggested that *part* of this mechanism consisted of sending out longitudinal pulses within the physical medium itself, and that this mechanism—if one had the technology to detect such pulses—might be why UFO activity seems so strangely correlated to nuclear tests and facilities.

Two of these tests, in particular, Ivy Mike, and Castle Bravo, have formed the focus of my attention in these speculations, and therefore it should come as no surprise that these two tests also exhibited an unusual amount of UFO activity. No less than the head of the U.S. Air Force's Project Bluebook, Captain Edward J. Ruppelt, whom some believe even coined the term "Unidentified Flying Object" or UFO, wrote the following in his summary of the Air Force project:

---

[110] Ibid., p. 59.

[111] Ibid., pp. 59-60. Hastings reproduces Webb's 1981 article on this sighting on pp. 60-63.

[112] Ibid., pp. 82-83.

[113] Ibid., p. 64.

[114] See especially my (with Scott D de Hart *Grid of the Gods: The Aftermath of the Cosmic War and the Physics of the Pyramid Peoples* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2011), pp. 1-36.

> …(In) November or December[115] the U.S. was going to shoot the first H-bomb during Project Ivy. Although this was Top Secret at the time, it was about the most poorly kept secret in history—everybody seemed to know all about it. *Some people in the Pentagon had the idea that there were beings,* ***earthly or otherwise****, who might be interested in our activities in the Pacific, as they seemed to be in Operation Mainbrace.* Consequently Project Blue Book had been directed to get transportation to the test area to set up a reporting net, brief people on how to report, and analyze their reports on the spot. Secondly, Project Blue Book was working on plans for an extensive system to track UFO's by instruments. Brigadier General Garland, who had been General Samford's Deputy Director for Production and who had been riding herd on the UFO project for General Samford, was now chief at ATIC,[116] having replaced C*olonel Dunn, who went to the Air War College. General Garland had long been in favor of trying to get some concrete information, either positive or negative, about the UFO's. This planned tracking system would replace the defraction grid cameras that were still being developed at ATIC.*
>
> Thirdly, as soon as we could we were planning to gather together a group of scientists and let them spend a full week or two studying the UFO problem.
>
> …
>
> Our proposed trip to the Pacific to watch for UFO's during the H-bomb test was canceled at the last minute because we couldn't get space on an airplane. *But the crews of Navy and Air Force security forces who did go out to the tests were thoroughly briefed to look for UFO's, and they were given the procedures on how to track and report them. Back at Dayton we stood by to make quick analysis of any reports that might come in—none came.* Nothing that fell into the UFO category was seen during the entire Project Ivy series of atomic shots.[117]

Observe that what was predicted in the Preface is now, apparently, a reality, as the U.S. Air Force appeared at that time to be putting into place a monitoring and tracking system that would not only monitor nuclear tests, but also UFO activity. Observe also that this was under the direction of the Air Technical Intelligence Command (ATIC), at that time headquartered at Wright-Patterson Air Base in Dayton, Ohio.

---

[115] Of 1951 (ed.)

[116] ATIC, Air Technical Intelligence Command (ed.).

[117] Edward J. Ruppelt, *The Report on Unidentified Flying Objects* (Ace Books, 1956), pp. 258-259, all emphases added.

It is also highly suggestive that one commander of the ATIC—Colonel Dunn—was subsequently moved to the Air War College, implying perhaps that UFO considerations were being gradually and quietly incorporated into the US Air Force's strategic calculations and training.

Most importantly, however, Ruppelt indicates that the UFOs were enough of a concern to military planners, especially during the earliest hydrogen bomb firing, that his own Project Bluebook personnel were ordered to the test area, and Navy and Air Force personnel briefed to be on the watch for, and to report, UFOs. According to Ruppelt, "none came," but in the light of the consistent pattern reviewed thus far, this author finds that hard to believe. It is more likely that such reports *were* filed, and that Blue Book's difficulty in finding transportation to the test area was a deliberate measure designed to keep it out of the loop. Blue Book was simply too public to allow potential public scrutiny of two sensitive areas—thermonuclear tests and UFOs—at the same time.

That this may be a highly plausible scenario is evidenced by what this author believes to be one of the most significant UFO-nuclear test events of them all: Castle-Koon, of the famous Castle codenamed tests, the most infamous being, of course, Castle Bravo. But why is Castle Koon so significant?

As was outlined in *Grid of the Gods*, Castle Koon was a test of a thermonuclear device, designed by Edward Teller's team at Lawrence Livermore, that *fizzled*, not achieving anywhere *near its pre-test calculated yield*. Here we must pause to recall our remarks about this series of tests, and in particular, the Castle Koon test, from *Grid of the Gods*:

> Its revised yield was a comfortable 1.5 megatons, *but instead, the device "fizzled" and failed to achieve barely any fusion reactions at all, coming in at a mere 110 kilotons.*
>
> We are told that of the fizzled yield, only 10 kilotons was accounted for by fusion reactions, or about 9 percent of the total yield. The other 91 percent of the yield was obtained from the fission reactions of the primary and secondary. The explanation for this "fizzle" (which nonetheless managed to carve out a crater 990 feet wide and 75 feet deep!) was "an unexpectedly long time delay between the primary firing and the secondary ignition. Reportedly this was due to a

> simple design flaw – the neutron flux from the primary had preheated the secondary leading to poor compression."[118]
>
> Of course, in the thermonuclear kettle of these witches' brews, the slightest change of just a few nano-millimeters of the thickness of any solid state item within the device, the slightest change of positioning of various components, *can*—within the split-seconds' timing of the various stages of the reaction—alter its efficiency significantly, and either enhance, or impede, the overall reaction yield. So from one point of view, this explanation has merit.
>
> But from another point of view, do *any* of these explanations really make sense? Are we really to believe that Los Alamos National Laboratory knew *absolutely nothing* about lithium-7 reactions before the "Castle Bravo" test, that it rolled the thermonuclear dice having missed one whole component of nuclear chemistry? Are we really to believe that those reactions burned *so efficiently* so as to account—after the fact!— for a runaway bomb? And are we really to believe that Lawrence Livermore Laboratory, under Dr. Edward Teller, the "father of the hydrogen bomb" himself, could not successfully design the very bomb he is credited with inventing?[119]

In other words, whereas the Ivy-Mike and Castle-Bravo tests ran away to beyond their pre-test calculated yields, Castle Koon *fell short of its pre-test calculated yield by approximately three orders of magnitude!*

This extraordinary miscalculation should cast a dark pall of suspicion over any story that the design or calculations of Castle Koon were that far off. In effect, such a story would imply Edward Teller's design team at Lawrence Livermore was grossly incompetent, an explanation that this author finds to be totally incredible and unbelievable.

So some other mechanism for such a dramatic drop in yield must be found. Interestingly enough, Robert Hastings uncovered dramatic evidence of an entire series of UFO sightings throughout the Castle series of nuclear and thermonuclear tests,[120] including a sighting on April 7, 1954, mere hours after the Castle Koon test.[121]

Consider now what has brought us thus far:

---

[118] Ibid.

[119] Joseph P. Farrell with Scott D. de Hart, *Grid of the Gods: The Aftermath of the Cosmic War and the Physics of the Pyramid Peoples* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2011), p. 22, emphasis in the original.

[120] Robert Hastings, *UFOs and Nukes: Extraordinary Encounters at Nuclear Weapons Sites*, pp. 98-99.

[121] Ibid., pp. 99-100. Hastings also points out the highly significant fact that similar sightings were made after the infamous Castle Bravo test: pp. 104-105.

1) UFOs were seen over both American and Russian ICBM sites during the Cold War;
2) In many instances, total power outages accompanied these sightings as ICBMs were taken off alert status, a clear threat to national security;
3) In some instances, targeting and guidance information on these ICBMs was altered while UFOs were present, only to be returned to normal after their departure;
4) In some instances in both the USA and USSR, actual launch sequences on ICBMs was initiated while UFOs were present; and finally,
5) UFOs appeared to be monitoring actual nuclear tests.

Now let us pause and add two considerations to the mix: if some of these UFOs are the product of an actual technology, and this technology includes a field propulsion capability that is based upon the ability to manipulate or engineer the local fabric of space-time,[122] then it stands to reason that this capability could be deliberately employed to alter the yields of nuclear and thermonuclear devices, either greatly magnifying them, or greatly damping them, as is suggestively the case with the Castle Koon test, which failed to initiate any fusion reaction at all, in spite of the clear knowledge of the engineering principles to do so on the part of Teller and his team, and in spite of the fact that the nuclear "trigger" of Castle Koon did indeed fire effectively, and reached the necessary thermal gradients to initiate fusion.

The presence of UFOs throughout the Castle test series, plus the extraordinary inability of American engineers to calculate yields, would indeed have made the UFO matter a priority of the national security state, if for no other reason than that these capabilities implied the ability to render the whole nuclear weapons enterprise so much useless hardware, *or* the converse ability to render it vastly *more* efficient than its designers intended. Small wonder then, that the matter was classified higher than the hydrogen bomb, for it implied a physics of much more flexibility and destructiveness.[123]

---

[122] In this context, it is worth mentioning that Hastings mentions a UFO incident at Vandenburg Air Force Base, site of many Minuteman ICBM tests. In March 1967 a UFO incident also occurred simultaneously with "gravity anomalies" that were measure during a missile test. See Hastings, *UFOs and Nukes*, pp. 233-234.

[123] I am of course referring to the Canadian Wilbert Smith, who was informed by U.S. sources that the subject matter of UFOs was classified higher

It is similarly important to observe two things here: it was precisely at this time—the 1954 Castle series of tests and their remarkable UFO sightings—that the western military stepped up its incorporation of Nazis into the investigation of UFOs. One such effort is worth mentioning:

> Around 1953 or 1954, according to Frank Edwards, the West German government hired him to head a commission studying UFOs. As a result of this study, (Dr. Herman Oberth) had made a statement, during the summer of 1954, that UFOs were "conceived and directed by intelligent beings of a very high order. They probably do not originate in our solar system, perhaps not even in our galaxy." Like William Lear, Townsend Brown, and Wilbert Smith, Oberth decided that UFOs were "propelled by distorting the gravitational field, converting gravity into useable energy." [124]

This is precisely the *same* time frame that anti-gravity discussion disappeared in the open literature, and precisely the *same* time frame that the Nazi "fusion" scientist in Argentina, Dr. Ronald Richter, was secretly being interviewed by the U.S. Air Force, which was being schooled by Richter in lithium-7 fusion reactions, and his theory that rotating plasmas could transduce what he called "the zero-point energy."[125]

In other words, the Air Force probably came to similar conclusions as we are advancing here: another mechanism of energy production was in evidence in thermonuclear tests, that mechanism was very similar to that behind UFOs, and more importantly, that mechanism appeared to be able to alter or damp the otherwise ineluctable laws of nuclear reactions.

UFOs, nuclear weapons, gravitational or space-time gating or transduction effects, anti-gravity, and Nazis: all these coalesce at the same time, and, let it also be noted, the first Bilderberger meeting also took place in 1954. In my view, none of these things are coincidental, and all of them are deeply related, for what we are seeing is the formation of a structure to *deal with, investigate, and to the extent*

---

than the hydrogen bomb. See Richard M. Dolan, *UFOs and the National Security State*, Volume 1: *Chronology of a Cover-Up, 1941-1973*, Revised Edition, pp. 86-88.

[124] Richard M. Dolan, *UFOs and the National Security State:* Volume 1, *Chronology of a Cover-Up 1941-1973,* Revised Edition (Hampton Roads Publishing Company, Inc., 2002), p. 176.

[125] See my *The Nazi International: The Nazis' Postwar Plan to Control Finance, Conflict, Physics, and Space* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2008), pp. 249-353, and with Scott D. de Hart, *The Grid of the Gods*, pp. 1-36.

possible, control and emulate the phenomenon, which clearly poses a threat simply by dint of its ability to interfere with these weapons.[126]

3. Sightings at Nuclear Weapons Manufacturing Facilities

No survey such as this would be complete without a brief review of what appears to be UFO monitoring of actual nuclear weapons production facilities. Ruppelt records an incident from 1952 in which US Air Force aircraft sighted an unknown object on their radars over the plutonium production facility at Hanford, Washington,[127] and similar sightings occurred there in 1949, at the Oakridge uranium enrichment plant in 1950, and at the Savannah River plutonium and tritium production facility in South Carolina.[128] UFOs have been sighted at actual a-bomb production and assembly facilities such as Sandia Laboratories, and at storage installations such as Kirtland, Air Force Base, both in Albuquerque, New Mexico,[129] and at the base in Killeen, Texas.[130]

---

[126] It is worth mentioning that Hastings records the fact that prior to the Mike and Castle Bravo shots, the flagship that *controlled the countdown* to the enormous explosions had its power go out, though according to the witnesses interviewed by Hastings, no mention of UFOs in the vicinity was made. See Hastings, op. cit., pp. 110-11.

[127] Edward J. Ruppelt, *The report on unidentified Flying Objects*, pp. 61-62.

[128] See Robert Hastings, *UFOs and Nukes*, pp. 38-39. See also Ruppelt, op. cit., p. 252, for the Savannah River sighting.

[129] Ibid., pp. 45-47. It is to be noted that one such UFO sighting at Sandia in March of 1950, the sighting included witnesses, who were Military Police, seeing a "vapor trail" from the UFO (Hastings, op. cit., p. 47). I have argued elsewhere that such signatures are more condign to human than to presumed extraterrestrial technology, and that remains my view here as well. Yet, we have covered here sightings that by any standard of estimation would seem to defy human capabilities of the day. Hence, one may have an explanation for the earlier statement that the Pentagon was concerned about UFO monitoring of nuclear tests, as some viewed the technology as originating, as Ruppelt put it, from beings "earthly or otherwise." In other words, the Pentagon had come to the conclusion that perhaps it was dealing not only with surviving Nazi research efforts, but with something else and unearthly as well. Such a conclusion would have compelled, no doubt, a further consideration on the part of the US component of this postwar breakaway structure, namely, was this unearthly component known to their Nazi counterparts? And was there any sort of contact or collusion between the two? Such a question would have *inevitably* arisen

C. Evaluations and Speculations

So what are we to make of all of this? What implications do these incidents have for the formation of the culture of the breakaway civilization, a culture that, as we have indicated, by the turn of the millennium, is bent on a policy of "full spectrum dominance"? How can one have such a culture and policy if UFOs continue to roam freely and interfere with basic communications, and with the nuclear deterrent itself? What may we conjecture would have been the possible responses to the phenomenon?

I contend that the financial requirements alone of the threat posed by the UFO, as it would have been evaluated ca. 1945-1954 during the era of nuclear and of the first thermonuclear atmospheric testing, would have driven planners to the creation of a vast system of "completely off the books finance" in order to meet the type One or Two civilization potentials that this threat posed. As such, and for this reason alone if not many others—Cold War opposition to Communism for example—these planners would have turned to hidden sources of finance, and that that time there were principally two: the criminal underworld and its activities, and the surviving Axis elites and their treasure not only of plundered loot, but scientific expertise. As was seen in earlier portions of this book, this is exactly what happened.

This would, however, have been an uneasy alliance—elsewhere I have called it merely a detente—in any case, particularly between the Anglo-American and Nazi components, simply for the reason that the latter appeared to have at least *some* rudimentary technology based on the type of thinking being suggested in this chapter, and the former very much wanted to acquire it.

The UFOs, whatever their origin, were clearly threatening to the American military establishment and to the Russian as well, and we may conjecture that this would have led to the creation within both nations of bureaucracies whose mission brief was to emulate the performance via technological development, and if possible, to surpass it. This would, at one stroke, also give those nations the ability to surpass their principal *earthly* opposition: the USA in the USSR's case, or conversely, the USSR in the USA's case. *It is therefore impossible to disentangle the UFO from the Cold War considerations, or vice versa*. But at a deeper

---

simply from the normal process of considering all the potential national security risks associated with the phenomenon.

[130] Ibid., p. 43.

level, the phenomenon would have very likely become a component of secret protocols between the USA and the USSR, since in both cases it had demonstrated an ability to interfere and even potentially to launch each side's missiles. This would have required both sides put into place procedures for verifying if indeed one or the other party was responsible, or if a third party—the UFO—was doing so under truly cosmic false flag scenarios.

It is important to understand what the result of this one consideration would have been, namely, the creation of an international bureaucracy composed of representatives of the potentially threatened nuclear powers and any additional members that might come along, such as the USA, USSR, France, United Kingdom, China, India, or Pakistan, as well as of any "potential" or "crypto-"nuclear powers such as Japan, Germany, or Israel. This alone would constitute a breakaway group in its own right, moreover, by the requirements of its mission brief, one with the highest access to the most sophisticated monitoring and surveillance equipment both on earth and in space. This access would likely exist *within* the national security structure of each country, but would, in fact, be a parallel group owing ultimate allegiance to something supranational and international in nature.

By the same token, however, factionalism within such a structure could not and most likely would not be avoided, for the abilities of UFOs to interfere with the nuclear deterrents of these nations would have also presented another scenario, one which would likely *also* have been pursued simultaneously with the emergence of the international group just referred to, for *the UFO represented an* ***unprecedented*** *capacity or potential for false flag emulation technologies*, i.e., if such technologies could be duplicated, it would be conceivable to render an opponent's launch capability null and void—recall Boeing's efforts to duplicate the Malmstrom Air Force Base UFO shut down capability—or, conversely, to stage a "UFO event" and launch a given country's missiles, which would then be falsely interpreted by the above international group as a false flag accident, with no retaliation required. Such a potential would fit well with the culture of "full spectrum dominance" and the emulative technologies of "plausible deniability" that we have already encountered in previous pages.

One by now sees the major point: *any way one approaches the UFO, it is a geopolitical phenomenon of the highest order, and would have called forth the full spectrum of responses, and the concomitant creation of very secret, and probably very international, bureaucracies to deal with it.* By the nature of the case, this response would have also required the development of technologies to *emulate* the performance, and if possible, to *surpass* the performance, being observed. This would have required hitherto unprecedented levels of finance, completely off the books, and this would have compelled the agreements with former enemies. We know of one such technology already: satellites, which some have speculated probably did double duty not only watching ICBM launch sites, but also UFO activity.[131]

There is yet another potential scenario that opens up as a result of our speculations on the mechanisms of nuclear weapons, longitudinal pulses, and the apparent UFO interest in nuclear sites and *tests*, namely, that if, as Hastings suggests, UFOs were not only monitoring sites, demonstrating threatening potentials (including as I have argued here the potential alteration of nuclear bomb yields), and sending messages by these means and by "performing provocative aerial displays at these locations, often in broad daylight, so the powers-that-be in Washington could not possibly ignore their presence near these key atomic weapons-related sites,"[132] then those powers-that-be may have also concluded that nuclear detonations were somehow *damaging* or at least sending potentially threatening messages of their own to whomever was behind the UFOs, and hence, a secret reason may here be indicated for the continued nuclear tests of various nations, including the USA, France, China, and India. At the minimum, the correlation of UFO activity with nuclear tests reviewed here indicates that such correlation may itself be an ongoing object of study of such testing.

Notably, when we proposed in earlier pages the idea that UFO emulative technologies implied the ability to manipulate the energy of planetary systems, and a commensurately large financial commitment, we were not far off, for as recent articles are now confirming, the idea of a "space warp drive" or "engine" is now actually being *tested in proof of concept* experiments, and this is in the *open* literature.[133] The problem of course, as I've mentioned many times, any time one is engineering the fabric of space-time locally, one has the potential for a weapon that would make a hydrogen bomb look like a firecracker. Indeed, we have already presented our speculations on why early thermonuclear tests returned such anomalous yields. And indeed, if producing a practical space warp would require the energy of a planet Jupiter,[134] then weaponizing it could also destroy a planet.[135] This must give one pause, for the late Ben Rich, former head of Lockheed's skunk works, was quoted after his retirement and before his death, as having said that the scientists in black projects had found "an error in the equations," and that we now had the capability "to take ET home." In the context, these are chilling words, for if true, then it means the breakaway civilization has truly broken away, and has access to world altering, or shattering, technologies.

---

[131] For one such analysis of the potential of spy satellites and UFOs, see Ronald S. Regehr, "Do Our Spy Satellites See UFOs?" *MUFON UFO Journal*. Number 312. April 1994, 6-9.

[132] Robert Hastings, *UFOs and Nukes*, p. 48.

[133] Scott Sutherland, "Loopholes in Laws of Physics May Make Star trek-like Warp Drive 'Science Fact,'" *Geequinox*, http://ca.news.yahoo.com/blogs/geekquinox/loophole-laws-physics-may-star-trek-warp-drive-210452696.html.

But until such time as these capabilities were *actually* achieved, what would a budding breakaway civilization do to control the UFO phenomenon?

It would, in my opinion, seek not only to emulate it, but to control the interpretation of the phenomenon… it would seek to control the most powerful force in the cosmos: consciousness, and mind, itself…

Lockheed's Skunk Works' Director Ben Rich, 1925-1995

---

[134] Scott Sutherland, "Loopholes in Laws of Physics May Make Star Trek-like Warp Drive 'Science Fact,'" *Geequinox*, http://ca.news.yahoo.com/blogs/geekquinox/loophole-laws-physics-may-star-trek-warp-drive-210452696.html.

[135] Kerry McDermott, "Bad News Scotty: Star Trek-Style 'Warp Drive' Systems Could Turn Spacecraft into Death Stars Which Destroy Planets on Arrival," http://lewrockwell.com/spl4/bad-news-scotty.html.

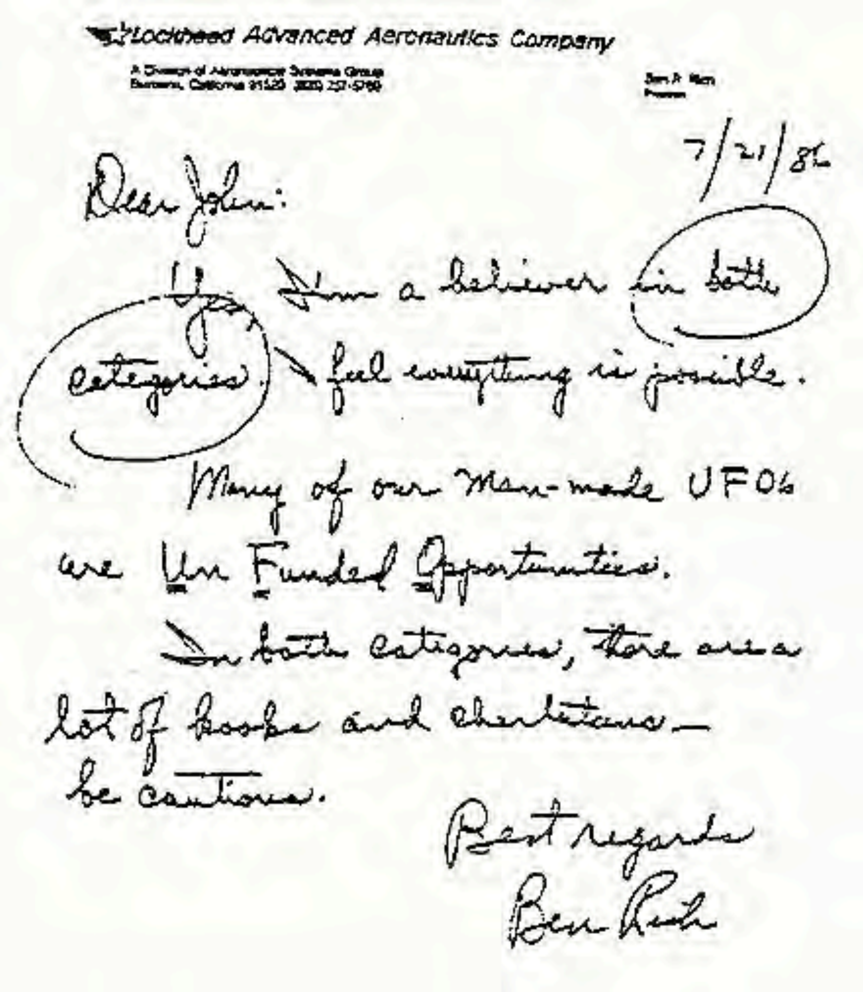

Lockheed Advanced Aeronautics Company

7/21/86

Dear John:

Yes, I'm a believer in both categories. I feel everything is possible.

Many of our Man-made UFOs are Un Funded Opportunities.

In both categories, there are a lot of kooks and charlatans — be cautious.

Best regards
Ben Rich

Lockheed's Skunk Works Director Ben Rich's Alleged 1986 Letter to Johan Andrews, calling UFO's "Un-Funded Opportunities," Suggesting Covert Systems of Finance Behind Black Projects

12

PSYOPS: TERRESTRIAL, CELESTIAL AND OTHERWISE:

A SHORT AND SPECULATIVE POSTSCRIPT ON "EMULATIONAL" AND "ANAMNETIC" TECHNOLOGIES AND THEIR POTENTIAL IMPACT ON THE CULTURE OF THE BREAKAWAY CIVILIZATION

"The September 11 operation modified the course of events in the world in the direction chosen by transnational mafias and international oligarchs; that is, those who hope to control the planet's natural resources, the world information network and the financial flows. This operation also favored the US economic and political elite that also seeks world dominance."
Russian General Leonid Ivashov, Brussels, 2006[1]

One might end this book of speculation on the culture of the breakaway civilization with long and lengthy reviews of how crop circles might be the product of the sorts of broadcast technologies referred to in part two, and how crop circles, with their mathematical formalism and peculiar resemblance to occult and esoteric sigils, might be an attempt to communicate with "them," while at the same time masking as a psyop of "them" trying to communicate with us. One might, similarly, have dissected the whole 9/11 event as one vast ritual, played out on a terrestrial and celestial scale, as a vast invocation of ritual magic and sacrifice on the part of an international breakaway group.[2] One might also point out that many UFO abduction cases are arguably military psychological abductions of some sort, and one might in doing so point out, as did Dr. Jacques Vallee, that some accounts of abduction all-too-eerily parallel medieval accounts of the incubus and succubus. On might similarly argue, as did Dr. Vallee once again, that at least *some* UFO technology appears to be deliberately designed to be a psychotronic technology, i.e., a technology developed for the express purpose to effect some sort of transformation on the consciousness of its beholders.[3]

---

[1] General (Ret.) Leonid Ivashov, "International Terrorism Does Not Exist," *Axis for Peace Conference*, Brussels, Belgium, January 17, 2006, physics911.net/Ivashov, cited in F. William Engdahl, *Full Spectrum Dominance: Totalitarian Democracy in the New World Order*, p. 209.

[2] For the interpretation of 9/11 as a vast sacrificial ritual, see S.K. Bain, *The Most Dangerous Book in the World: 9/11 as Mass Ritual* (TrineDay, 2012).

In short, one might argue that there is a consciousness aspect to the UFO phenomenon, as well as a nuts-and-bolts, drill-down technological components aspect of it, and this factor would significantly affect the culture of the breakaway civilization. Indeed, as I have attempted to imply in the previous pages, while such a civilization was busily attempting to construct "emulational" technologies, i.e., technologies that *resembled* or *emulated* the performance of UFOs, it might at the same time attempt to control public perception of the phenomenon via emulational technologies of a wholly different sort: those designed to produce an effect in the public consciousness.

It was, once again, Richard M. Dolan who made the connection to the consciousness aspect of the problem of the breakaway civilization's culture, with an extended and detailed series of remarks about an "informal" military, intelligence, and scientific group that came to be known in UFO circles as "the Aviary." Citing a case discovered by researcher Howard Blum of a "fastwalker," i.e., an unknown spatial object being tracked by the U.S. space command inside of the old NORAD headquarters in Cheyenne Mountain, Colorado Springs, Dolan gives the details of this group. We cite Dolan's remarks extensively:

> Blum wrote that a report about the fastwalker ended up on the desk of a "Colonel Harold Phillips" in the DIA's Directorate for Management and Operations. Blum revealed that "Phillips" was also the DIOA's "Associate Coordinator of Space reconnaissance Activities." This was a powerful and sensitive position which helped determine missions for the U.S. spy satellites. Blum then described how Phillips organized an interdisciplinary "UFO Working Group" beginning in 1987. It was comprised of scientists and officers from throughout the defense and intelligence community, and worked deep within a secured "vault" within the Pentagon.
>
> Certain elements of Blum's narrative were correct. However, the name, time frame, and numerous other details were wrong. Later investigations by at least three researchers (Grant Cameron, Timothy Good, and the author) have corrected and added more detail to what actually occurred, although most of the group's activities remain unknown to the public.

---

[3] See my *Saucers, Swastikas, and Psyops: A History of a Breakaway Civilization: Hidden Aerospace Technology and Psychological Operations* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2011), pp. 93-134.

> The identity of "Harold Phillips" is known to be Colonel John B. Alexander. Alexander was a former Green Beret commander who participated in the Phoenix program during the Vietnam era, searched for Atlantis in the Bimini Islands, *was an official in the Silva Mind Control organization*, and a world expert in the field of non-lethal weapons. *He had extensive background and knowledge of remote viewing as well as acoustic weapons which could embed subliminal messages or affect a person's physiology.*
>
> In forming this group, Alexander sought to avoid undue attention, and certainly never called it anything as obvious as a "UFO Working Group." Instead, he selected the more suitably vague title of "Advanced Theoretical Physics Group." According to one group member who confidentially spoke to the author, the group met a total of four times: on May 21-22, 1985, August 6-7, 1985, April 24, 1986, and November 18, 1987. The first three meetings took place at the BDM McLean Secure Facility in Virginia, and the last at the Pentagon. A memo leaked to Grant Cameron included information about the first meeting (according to which occurred from May 20 to 25, 1985), and included a partial list of attendees. Timothy Good later received a complete list of that meeting, which included Robert Wood (McDonnell Douglas), Ronald Blackburn (Air Force and formerly Defense Nuclear Agency), Milt Janzen, Don Keuble (Lockheed Aircraft*), Harold Puthoff (head of SRI's remote viewing program, formerly employed by the NSA),* Ed Speakman (Army Intelligence), Howell McConnell (NSA) and Bill Wilkinson (CIA), and Alexander.[4]

The presence of individuals within this "theoretical physics" group with clear connections to "consciousness sciences", such as Colonel Alexander himself, or the famous theoretical physicist and remote viewing program coordinator Hal Puthoff, strongly suggests that at least some in the military-intelligence-physics complex had come to the conclusion that some aspects of the UFO phenomenon represented a connection to consciousness, and that it should be investigated.

But how might one rationalize or "reverse engineer" a chain of reasoning that might have led to this conclusion, and what would be the implications for the culture of the breakaway civilization?

The answer, I believe, lies in a peculiar technique or approach to a well-known, and very public database. The database would simply consist of all those ancient texts that referred to human interactions—

---

[4] Richard M. Dolan, *UFOs and the National Security State:* Volume 2: *The Cover-Up Exposed: 1973-1991*(Keyhole Publishing Company, 2009), pp. 382-383, emphasis added.

interactions inclusive of "cosmic wars"—with "the gods." Additionally, the database would include *all philosophical texts of a cosmological or metaphysical nature*, from the Vedic texts of India to the Pythagorean, Platonic, Neoplatonic, Hermetic and Egyptian texts of the earliest days of Western Civilization. This database would also include certain Gnostic and other texts from the earliest period of the history of Christianity, texts like *The Hypostasis of the Archons*, or the theurgic texts of the Neoplatonic philosopher Iamblichus, which indicated that "higher beings" could certainly be contacted through various theurgic rites and states of consciousness.

The *technique*, however, would not be all that clear, but it would have been readily apparent to people such as Hal Puthoff, with his background in higher order topologies. Throughout many of my books, I have referred, obliquely or overtly, to what I have called the Topological Metaphor of the Physical Medium. This metaphor is found throughout many ancient texts, and I have reviewed some of these in terms of this metaphor in previous books.[5]

Through such a topological approach to such texts, what would have been immediately evident to people like Puthoff in the group, was that the language of classical philosophical metaphysics would be easily "translatable", or decodable, as certain conceptions within mathematics. But what do we mean by this? Here I would like to share some of my private notes that have led to the development of this idea over the years. These are difficult conceptions, and to fully appreciate and understand what is being said here, a familiarity with what has been developed previously about this topological metaphor is required. Nonetheless, I present it here for everyone, to show how *detailed* this method of "seeing" can really be.

---

[5] See my *The Giza Death Star Deployed: The Physics and Engineering of the Great Pyramid* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2003), pp. 88-91, especially p. 91; *The Giza Death Star Destroyed: The Ancient War for Future Science* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2005), pp. 98-129; 196-245; *The Philosophers' Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter* (Feral House, 2009), pp. 25-81; (with Scott D. de Hart) *The Grid of the Gods: the Aftermath of the Cosmic War and the Physics of the Pyramid Peoples* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2011), pp. 179-190; 275-292; 318-319; (also with Scott D. de Hart) *Transhumanism: A Grimoire of Alchemical Agendas* (Feral House, 2012), pp. 5-82; (also with Scott d de Hart), *Apocalypse Theater*, Volume 1: *Yahweh, the Two-Faced God: Theology, Terrorism, and Topology* (Periprometheus, 2011), pp. 11-36.

***

The eminent Jesuit philosopher Francis Copleston reproduced the following table in his celebrated history of philosophy concerning the components of the Platonic turn (περιαγωγη) and its doctrine of universals.[6]

Mental State		***Objects Known***	
Scientific Understanding (η επιστημη)	**Intellection** (η γνωσις)	**Sources/Principles** (αι αρχαι)	**Invisibles** (τα αορατα)
Knowledge (η γνωσις)	**Discernment** (η διαϖοια)	**Mathematicals** (τα μαθηματικα)	**Intelligibles** (τα νοητα)
Opinion-glory (η δοξα)	**Belief, Faith** (η πιστις)	**Living Things** (ζωα, κ.τ.λ.)	**Visibles** (τα ορατα)
	Shadows, images (η εικασια)	**Icons** (εικονες)	**Perceivables** (δοξαστα)

Of note here is the term “mathematicals” (τα μαθηματικα), for this is the clearest indicator that Plato had in mind not a doctrine of metaphysical universals in the sense so normally taught in academies, i.e., of a universal “chairness” in which all chairs participate and by which they are known *as* chairs, but rather, that all chairs, and “chairness” itself manifest common mathematical properties unique to the “chair” form or universal itself. *Plato is, in a word, describing the idea of* ***topology*** *in the disguised language of formal metaphysics.*

This topological conception proves to be an analogical “Rosetta stone”, revealing the formally explicit topological metaphor behind classical metaphysical conceptions and symbols, for from the foregoing considerations, it will be apparent that a kind of analogical calculus reveals that many of the conceptions of classical metaphysical philosophy and the symbolic terms associated with them are but the symbols of the “physics” of the differentiation of the *material prima.* Such, indeed, was the ancients’ view of the term “metaphysics” itself. They would, perhaps, call “metaphysics” by the term “hyper-dimensional” physics were they alive today. Such an idea of an analogical calculus goes further than this and reveals that such terms and symbols are capable of formally explicit topological definition, implying a degree of original sophistication from which the classical metaphysics may be but a declined legacy.

---

[6] The following table was reproduced in *The Giza Death Star Deployed*, p. 91.

Let the terms on this side of the table be defined as…	***…the terms on this side of the table***
Terms of essence, nature, substance or underlying medium Essence, nature, substance (ουσια, φυσις, υποστασις[7])	$\varnothing$, $\varnothing_E$, $\varnothing_E^o$, etc.
Terms of utter equilibrium or non-composition, simplicity Simplicity, simple, simplification (απλωτης, απλως. απλωσις)	$\varnothing$, $\varnothing_E$, $\varnothing_E^o$, etc.
Terms of Operation, Power, Cause, Natural Attribute or Property Energy/operation, power, natural attribute, reason of nature, spermatic reason/logos, logos in the mind of god/undifferentiated reason/logos, etc. (ενεργεια, δυναμις, φυσικη ιδιοτης, λογος φυσεως, λογος σπερματικος, λογος ενδιαθετος, κ.τ.λ.)	$(f_n) \in \varnothing_E$, $\partial\varnothing$, ∂S_n, etc.
Terms of Composition, Results, Effects Emanatory reason/logos, etc. (λογος προφορικος, κ.τ.λ.)	$\varnothing_{E\text{-}A,B}$, $\varnothing_{B\text{-}E,A,}$ $\varnothing_{A\text{-}E,B}$, etc.
Terms of Emanation, Mapping Emanation, emanatory reason/logos, etc. (προοδος, λογος προφορικος, κ.τ.λ.)	$\P\varnothing$, →, etc.
Terms of Return, or the "Reverse Engineering" of the Medium Turn/return, etc. (περιαγωγη, κ.τ.λ.)	"Σ" and "∫" as $\in\{\P\varnothing\}$, etc.
Terms of Temporality, the "Directivity of Time"	→, etc.

***

Now, while this excerpt from my private notes may not have made the least specific sense to some readers, one thing—the important thing—that emerges from it is that such terms as "substance, essence, nature, accident, operation" and so on from classical metaphysical philosophy would *have* direct analogues in mathematics and more specifically topology, combinatorics, and set theory and so on. *This* is the fact that would have been immediately evident to anyone of Puthoff's background, examining certain types of ancient texts.

---

[7] It should be noted that υποστασις is here meant in its philosophical meaning, and not in its meaning in Eastern Orthodox patristic dogmatic theology.

Thus by *viewing ancient texts in this way, the "analogical" nature of their doctrines of the physical medium would have immediately become apparent to someone like Puthoff*, and this in turn would have implied *a direct connection—whose exact laws were albeit unknown—between the physical medium and consciousness.*

This would have profound repercussions for the culture of the breakaway civilization*, *for an effort—such as the remote viewing program—would have been mounted to understand this connection.

But there is more.

In the above table of Plato's doctrine, the process of turning from the perceptible world to the "mathematicals" is also a process of remembrance, or *anamnesis* (αναμνησις), a turning from the lower orders to the higher; we might, if we were to put such conceptions in terms of modern physics, say that such a turning (περιαγωγη) would be from a three-space world to worlds of higher dimensions: four-D, five-D, and so on, a process that can only be modeled mathematically, and, interestingly enough, this higher world Plato calls "the mathematicals."

But for Plato it is important to note that this turning to "the mathematicals" is also a process of *remembrance*, literally of remembering one's descent from higher realms to the lower, and this gives rise to the highly speculative and radical possibility of what I like to call "anamnetic technologies," *technologies that, by their very computational power, could recreate with formal precision the detailed steps of this descent or ascent, and thus, technologies that have the potential to "invoke" or even "incarnate" some of these higher realms or beings.*

Such technologies would, similarly, allow a civilization in possession of them to coordinate psychological operations on a truly celestial, cosmic, scale.

Such considerations are, of course, fanciful, indeed, radical. But given the vast survey of a culture whose lust for power of all kinds is virtually boundless, we must conclude that if we can think of it, it can too…

13
CONCLUDING THOUGHTS

"Within this circle is Jehovah's name,
Forward and backward anagrammatiz'd;
Th' abbreviated names of holy saints,
Figures of every adjunct to the heavens,
And characters of signs and erring stars,
By which the spirits are enforc'd to rise"
Christopher Marlowe, *Doctor Faustus,* Act I, Scene III

I have presented in this book a rather lengthy thesis, namely, that the phenomena of the UFO were encountered in a hidden culture dominated by two essential defining features: (1) the culture of "full spectrum dominance," and (2) the culture of "plausible deniability." From these two wellsprings I have argued that the approach to the UFO phenomenon would have viewed it, first, as primary and principal threat, in much the same way as the Communist bloc was viewed.

I have also presented the view that while the origins of this group may have been related to the time of the airship mystery of the late nineteenth century, by the time of World War Two, with the appearance of foo fighters, and the dramatic postwar UFO activity over or near nuclear weapons sites, that this would have required a dramatically different approach than the secretive and private corporate funding of exotic research. The scale of what had to be achieved was simply too enormous.

The reasons for this enormous scale of funding are, I have argued, rather simple. Within the culture of plausible deniability and full spectrum dominance, the UFO presented a challenge to both those aspects of the breakaway civilization's culture, simply because it presented capabilities that, if interpreted from the Kardashev measure of civilization types, evidenced abilities of at least a Class One civilization, i.e., a civilization requiring the energy of an entire planet, and thus implying the ability to manipulate systems of a planetary scale.

Such a scale, I have argued, implied that the economic response to the phenomenon be commensurate with the need to develop emulative technologies, and that as the technological capacity of emulation grows, so too does the scale of finance and secrecy.

in short, the UFO phenomenon, viewed from this wide cultural perspective, required that the energy of planet Earth be drafted to the task of emulation, for it was only by emulation that it could be in turn confronted and, with proper technological displays such as the ability to manipulate earthquakes and to send longitudinal pulses in the medium, could it be potentially contained and rolled back.

The technological capability of the UFO presented a direct challenge to the aura of "full spectrum dominance" being evolved by the elite during the postwar period, and hence, the UFO presence could not be openly acknowledged—at least, that is, until some technological parity had been achieved. Much less could this breakaway culture come forward and say that it needed to draft the bulk of the Western world's creativity and financial activity to confront it. Hence financing the development of those responses—both technological and otherwise—had to be dovetailed and made one with the similar goal of the containment and rollback of the Soviet Union; in fact, the UFO phenomenon and the responses to *it*, had to be veiled and concealed within the same structures put into place to deal with the more earthly threat.

In short, a vast hidden system of finance had to be made available to this elite, and that required by the nature of the case that a deal had to be struck with the surviving Axis elites, elites that had access to a great deal of plunder. It required planetary scale financing to confront both potential threats.

Just what may have been achieved during all this time, from the first murky beginnings of possibilities with the airship mystery, through today, with the vast scale of financing implied by the review undertaken here, we do not know. But it is perhaps worth recollecting at this juncture that United Kingdom subject Gary McKinnon alleges he tapped into secret databases of the United States military and space bureaucracies, and discovered there evidence of a vast, and very secret, space fleet and program, which in the context of Ben Rich's remarks, raise the stakes considerably.

Our focus in this book has therefore been on the necessary cultural background to understand whatever technologies might have been developed. It remains to describe much of that technology in another book, and its possible use in covert operations of a terrestrial and celestial nature. We are thus not done with the subject of covert wars and breakaway civilizations.

For our purposes here, however, we may end on this final note. In the previous chapter I observed that to scientific cognoscenti such as Hal Puthoff, ancient texts and cosmological systems would have made one thing abundantly clear: contact may have been going on for a very long time, and the results, in ancient times, were none too pleasant for humanity. Such realizations, occurring as they did when humanity was emerging from its most bloody and destructive war with the explosions of two atomic bombs, would have impelled this culture and civilization to the task of defending itself against the ancient possibilities.

Sequere pecunia…

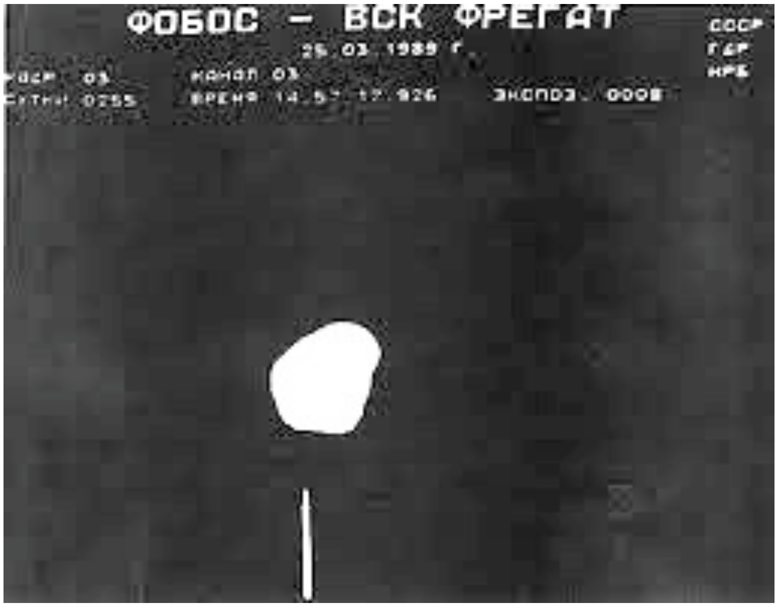
ФОБОС – ВСК ФРЕГАТ
25.03.1989 г.
СССР
ГДР
НРБ
КАНАЛ 03
СУТКИ 0255
ВРЕМЯ 14.57.17.926
ЭКСПОЗ. 0008

The Soviet Union's Phobos II Mars Probe Photographed this Image of the Martian Moon Phobos, and… "something else"…

Concluding Thoughts

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
WORKS CITED IN OR CONSULTED FOR RESEARCH FOR THIS BOOK

(No Author). "Ahmadinejad Accuses the West of 'Stealing Iran's Rain' AGAIN." 11 September, 2012. http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2201377/Ahmadinejad-accuses-West-stealing-Irans-rain-AGAIN.html

(No Author). "Hugo Chavez Mouthpiece Says U.S. Hit Haiti With 'Earthquake Weapon.'" January 21, 2010. http://www.foxnews.com/world/2010/01/21/hugo-chavez-mouthpiece-says-hit-haiti-arthquake-weapon/. (See also Chavez's appearance on RT TV: http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Q9QtZkT8OBQ).

(No Author). "Dundonald's Destroyer." *North American Review.* November 1914, 656-661. www.unz.org/Pub/NorthAmericanRev-1914nov-0656?View=PDF.

(No Author). "Germans Fret About Their Foreign Gold Reserves." *Der Spiegel.* May 15, 2012. http://www.spiegel.de/international/germany/debate-breaks-out-in-germany-over-foreign-gold-reserves-a-833289.html

(No Author). "John de Menil." *Wikipedia.*

(No Author). "JP Morgan Complicit in Vatican Bank Money-Laundering." www.silverdoctors.com.

(No Author). "Mystery Surrounding 134.5 'Fake' Billion U.S. Dollars Seized in Pnte Chiasso Remains." June 18, 2009. *AsiaNews.it.* www.asianews.it/news-en/Mysyery-surrounding-&c.

(No Author). "Richter Magnitude Scale." *Wikipedia.* http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Richter_magnitude_scale.

(No Author). "The Science of earthquake Creation and Avoidance Make a Big Leap Forward." (sic). *Indiana daily*. May 21, 2005. http://www.indiadaily.com/editorial/2811.asp

Bibliography

(No Author). "Nikola Tesla's New Wireless." *The Electrical Engineer*. London. Dec. 24,. 1909. p. 893.

(No Author). "Tesla's New Device Like Bolts of Thor." *New York Times*. Dec. 8, 1915. p. 8, col. 3.

Bain, S.K. *The Most Dangerous Book in the World: 9/11 as Mass Ritual*. Walterville, Oregon. Trine Day. 2012. ISBN 978-1-937584-17-7.

Balderson, Keelan. "Lord Blackheath Exposes Possible Monumental Financial Fraud." Feb 19, 2012. http://wideshut.co.uk/lord-blackheath-exposes-possible-monumental-financial-fraud/

Bearden, T.E., Ph.D., (Lt. Col, U.S.Army, Retired). *Fer De Lance: Briefing on Soviet Scalar Electromagnetic Weapons*, 2nd Edition. Cheniere Press. 2002. ISBN 0-9725146-1-9.

Bearden, T. E., and Ratzlaff, John T. *Solutions to Tesla's Secrets and the Soviet Tesla Weapons*; *Reference Articles for Solutions to Tesla's Secrets.* Chula Vista, California: Tesla Book Company. 1981. ISBN 0-9603536-3-1.

Beckley, Timothy Green, and "X, Michael." *Trilogy of the Unknown: A Conspiracy Reader: Exposing the Dark Side of UFO Research.* Global Communications. 2012. ISBN 978-1606-111079.

Beckley, Timothy Green, Casteel, Sean, Swartz, Tim R. *The Secret Space Program: Who is Responsible? Tesla? the Nazis? NASA? Or a Breakaway Civilization?* Global Communications. 2012. 978-1606-11093.

Bellant, Russ. *Old Nazis, the New Right, and the Republican Party: Domestic Fascist Networks and Their Effect on U.S. Cold War Politics.* Boston. South End Press. 1991. ISBN 0-89608-418-3.

Bertell, Rosalie. *Planet Earth: The Latest Weapon of War: A Critical Study into the Military and the Environment*. The Women's Press, Ltd. 2000. ISBN 978-0-7043-4650-8.

Binder, Eando. *The Puzzle of the Space Pyramids.* Curtis Publishing. 1971. No ISBN.

Biddle, Wayne. *Dark Side of the Moon: Wernher von Braun, the Third Reich, and the Space Race.* W.W. Norton and Company. 2009. ISBN 978-0-393-05910-6.

Blum, Howard. *Out There: The Government's Secret Quest for Extraterrestrials.* Simon and Schuster. 1990. ISBN 0-671-66260-0.

Brzezinski, Zbigniew. *Between Two Ages: America's Role in the Technetronic Era*. Penguin. 1979. ISBN 0-14-00-4314-4.

Burger, Adolf. *The Devil's Workshop: A Memoir of the Nazi Counterfeiting Operation.* London. Frontline Books. 2009. ISBN 978-1-84832-523-4.

Busby, Michael. *Solving the 1897 Airship Mystery.* Pelican Publishing Company. 2004. ISBN 978-1-58980-125-3.

Byrne, James E., Professor. *The Myth of Prime Bank Investment Scams.* Mongomery Village, Maryland: Institute of International Banking Law and Practice, Inc. 2002. ISBN 1-88870-29-X.

Champaigne, H. "Key to the Extraterrestrial Messages," *NSA Technical Journal, Vol. XIV, No. 1.* http://www.nsa.gov/public_info/_files/ufo/key_to_et_messages.pdf

Chandler, Charles L. "Observations on the Electromagnetic Nature of Tornadic Supercell Thunderstorms." http://charles-chandler.org/Geophysics/Tornadoes.php?text=full

Cheney, Margaret. *Tesla: Man Out of Time.* Bantam Doubleday Dell. 1981. ISBN 0-440-39077-X.

Clark, Jerome. *Strange Skies: Pilot Encounters With UFOs.* Citadel Press. 2002. ISBN. 0-8065-2299-2.

Copetas, A. Craig. "No One Knows Truth About $300 Billion Bonds from Alleged Crash." Jan 18, 2012. *Bloomberg.* http://www.bloomberg.com/news/2012-01-18/no-one-knows-truth-about-300b-bonds-from-alleged-plane-crash.html

Cottrell, Richard. *Gladio: NATO's Dagger at the Heart of Europe: The Pentagon-Nazi-Mafia Terror Axis.* Palm Desert, CA: Progressive Press. 2012. ISBN 978-1-61577-687-0.

Crenshaw, Dennis, and Navarro, P.G. *The Secrets of Dellschau.* Anomalist Books. 2009. ISBN 978-1933-665351.

Day, Dwayne A., Logdson, John M., and Latell, Brian, eds. *Eye in the Sky: The Story of the Corona Spy Satellites.* Smithsonian Institution Press. 1998. ISBN 978-1-56098-773-4.

Dolan, Richard M. *UFOs and the National Security State: Volume One: Chronology of a Cover-up 1941-1973.* Hampton Roads Publishing Co., Inc. 2002. ISBN 978-1-57174-317-6.

Dolan, Richard M. *UFOs and the National Security State: Volume Two: The Cover-up Exposed 1973-1991.* Keyhole Publishing Co. 2009. ISBN 978-0-9677996-1-3.

Durden, Tyler. "$6 Trillion in US Bonds Seized in Zurich, Said to pose 'Severe Threats to International Financial Stability.'" Feb 17, 2012. http://www.zerohedge.com/news/6-trillion-us-bonds-seized-zurich.

Engdahl, F. William. *Full Spectrum Dominance: Totalitarian Democracy in the New World Order*. Progressive Press. 2009. ISBN 978-1-61577-654-0.

Farrell, Joseph P. *LBJ and the Conspiracy to Kill Kennedy: A Coalescence of Interests.* Adventures Unlimited Press. 2011. ISBN 978-1-935487-18-0.

Farrell, Joseph P. *Roswell and the Reich: The Nazi Connection.* Adventures Unlimited Press. 2010. ISBN 978-1-935487-05-0.

Farrell, Joseph P. *Saucers, Swastikas, and Psyops: A History of a Breakaway Civilization: Hidden Aerospace Technologies and Psychological Operations.* Adventures Unlimited Press. 2011. ISBN 978-1-935487-75-3.

Farrell, Joseph P. "Japan: Connecting some Dots, Part One: The Strange Case of the Bearer Bonds." April 25, 2011. www.gizadeathstar.com

Farrell, Joseph P. "Japan: Connecting Some Dots, Part Two: The Japanese Elections of 2009." April 26, 2011. www.gizadeathstar.com

Farrell, Joseph P. "Japan: Connecting Some Dots, Part Three: More Anomalies About the Bearer Bonds Story." April 27, 2011. www.gizadeathstar.com

Farrell, Joseph P. "Japan: Connecting Some Dots, Part Four: Miscellaneous Anomalies About the Bearer Bonds Story." April 28, 2011. www.gizadeathstar.com

Farrell, Joseph P. "Japan: Connecting Some Dots, Part Five: Miscellaneous Anomalies About the Bearer Bonds Story." April 29, 2011. www.gizadeathstar.com.

Farrell, Joseph P. "Japan: Connecting Some Dots, Part Six: Epilogue and Concluding (?) Thoughts." April 30, 2011. www.gizadeathstar.com

Farrell, Joseph P. "More Information on the Japanese Bearer Bonds." May 4, 2011. www.gizadeathstar.com

Farrell, Joseph P. "And While We're On the Subject of Gold." January 28, 2012. www.gizadeathstar.com

Farrell, Joseph P. "More Faked Bonds Seized… Yet Again!!" February 27, 2012. www.gizadeathstar.com

Farrell, Joseph P. "Bonds, Bullion, Blackheath, and the Breakaway Civilization: A Speculation." March 3, 2012. www.gizadeathstar.com

Farrell, Joseph P. "Rash of Bankster Resignations: Some Thoughts." March 4, 2012. www.gizadeathstar.com

Farrell, Joseph P. "Back to Lord Blackheath and All That Extra Gold: Another Speculation." March 9, 2012. www.gziadeathstar.com

Farrell, Joseph P. "The Vatican: Cleaning Up Its Financial Act?" march 27, 2012. www.gizadeathstar.com

Farrell, Joseph P. "Now It's Filipino Bearer Bonds: A Closer Look: Part One: Details." April 13, 2012. www.gizadeathstar.com

Farrell, Joseph P. "Now It's Filipino Bearer Bonds: A Closer Look: Part Two: Synthesis." April 14, 2012. www.gizadeathstar.com

Farrell, Joseph P. "Now It's Filipino Bearer Bonds: A Closer Look: Part Three: Analysis." April 15, 2012. www.gizadeathstar.com

Farrell, Joseph P. "Connecting a Few Speculative Dots on the Road Map of the Italian and Japanese Bearer Bonds Scandals: A Members' Update." (Paper for the members' subscription area). March 4, 2012. www.gizadeathstar.com

Farrell, Joseph P. "Secret Letter Between Then German Chancellor Helmut Schmidt and the Federal Reserve: Control the Gold Market." July 2, 2012. www.gizadeathstar.com

Farrell, Joseph P. "Things That Make You Go 'Hmmmm…': The Vatican Bank Scandal, The Vatican banker, and…." July 11, 2012. www.gizadeathstar.com

Faulkner, Bonnie, and Fitts, Catherine Austin. *Guns and Butter: Unpacking Mr. Global, Part 1*. MR Transcript of interview with Catherine Austin Fitts, November 15, 2011. http://mediaroots.org/mr-transcript-unpacking-mr.-global-part-1.php

Faulkner, Bonnie, and Fitts, Catherine Austin. *Guns and Butter: Unpacking Mr. Global, Part 2*. MR Transcript of interview with Catherine Austin Fitts, November 15, 2011. http://mediaroots.org/mr-transcript-unpacking-mr.-global-part-2.php.

Fitts, Catherine Austin. *Dillon Read & Co. Inc. and the Aristocracy of Stock Profits*. http://www.dunwalke.com/

Gaffney, Mark H. *Black 9/11: Money, Motive and Technology.* Walterville, Oregon. Trine Day. 2012. ISBN 978-1-936296-46-0.

Ganser, Daniele. *NATO's Secret Armies: Operation Gladio and Terrorism in Western Europe.* London: Frank Cass. 2005. ISBN 978-0-714-68500-3.

Gehlen, General Reinhard. *The Service: The Memoirs of General Reinhard Gehlen.* Trans. from the German by David Irving. New York. World Publishing Times-Mirror. 1972.

General Staff of General of the Army Douglas MacArthur. "Reports of General MacArthur: MacArthur in Japan: the Occupation: Military Phase." Volume 1 Supplement. Library of Congress Catalog Card Number 66-60006.

Goñi, Uki. *The Real Odessa: How Perón Brought the Nazi War Criminals to Argentina.* Revised Edition. London. Granta Books. 2003. ISBN 978-1862075528.

Haines, Richard F. *Advanced Aerial Devices Reported During the Korean War*. Los Altos, California. LDA Press. 1990. ISBN 0-9618082-1-7.

Hammer, Richard. *The Vatican Connection: the Astonishing Account of a Billion-Dollar Counterfeit Stock Deal Between the Mafia and the Church.* Holt, Rinehart, and Winston. 1982. ISBN 0-03-060146-0.

Harbinson, W.A. *Genesis: the Epic Novel of the World's Most Fearsome Secret.* Dell Publishing Co. 1982. ISBN 0-440-12832-3.

Hastings, Robert. *UFOs and Nukes: Extraordinary Encounters at Nuclear Weapons Sites*. Author House. 2008. ISBN 978-1-4343-9831-4.

Hastings, Robert L. "UFO Buzzes ICBM Launch Capsule at Minot AFB: The Commander's Control panel 'Lit Up' Indicating Missiles Away!" January 25, 2012. www.ufohastings.com.

Hastings, Robert L. "UFO Sightings at ICBM Sites and Nuclear Weapons Storage Areas." www.nicap.org/babylon/missile_incidents.htm

Heidner, E.P. *Collateral Damage: U.S. Covert Opertions and the Terrorist attacks on September 11, 2001.* June 28, 2008. http://www.wanttoknow.info/911/Collateral-Damage-911-black_eagle _fund_trust.pdf

"Hong Pong." "The Biggest Scandal in World History: WANTAGATE, Leo Wanta, the Post-Soviet Trillions, and Lots of Tangled Disinfo from Shady Operatives (or not)." February 11, 2010. www.hongpong.com/archives/2010/02/11/biggest-scandal-world-history-wantagate-leo-wanta-post-soviet-trillions-and-lots.

Jacobs, Bob, Ph.D. "Deliberate Deception: The Big Sur UFO Filming: A Critical Analysis of the Curious Events at Vandenburg Air Force Base in September, 1964." *MUFON UFO Journal*, Number 249, January 1989, 3-9. Available online at http://www.nicap.org/articles/MUJ-January_1989.pdf

James, David Noel, Baron Blackheath. Statements in the House of Commons, Feb 16, 2012. http://www.publications.parliament.uk/pa/ld201212/ldhansrd/text/120216-0002.htm#column_1016

Johnson, Ian. *A Mosque in Munich: Nazis, the CIA, and The Rise of the Muslim Brotherhood in the West.* New York. Houghton Mifflin Harcourt. 2010. ISBN 978-0-15-101418-7.

Kallberg, Jan. "Designer Satellite Collisions from Covert Cyber War." *Strategic Studies Quarterly,* Spring 2012, 124-136.

Kean, Leslie. *UFOs: Generals, Pilots, and Government Officials Go on the Record*. New York. Three Rivers Press. 2010. ISBN 978-0-307-71708-5.

Keith, Jim. *Casebook on Alternative 3: UFOs, Secret Societies, and World Control.* Illuminet. 1994. ISBN978-0-9626534-9-7.

Keith, Jim. *Mind Control and UFOs: Casebook on Alternative 3*. Adventures Unlimited Press. 2005. ISBN 978-1-931882-44-4.

Kendall, Anthony. "Earth's Artificial Ring: Project West Ford." 2 May, 2006. http://www.damninteresting.com/earths-artificial-ring-project-west-ford/

Krüger, Henrik. *The Great Heroin Coup: Drugs, Intelligence, and International Fascism.* South End Press. 1980, ISBN 0-89608-031-5.

Lawson, Guy. *Octopus: Sam Israel, the Secret Market, and Wall Street's Wildest Con.* Crown Publishers. 2012. ISBN 978-0-307-71607-1.

Lewin, Leonard C. *Report from Iron Mountain on the Possibility and Desirability of Peace*. The Free Press. 1996. ISBN 978-1-4391-2311-9.

Maloney, Mack. *UFOs in Wartime: What They Didn't Want you to Know*. New York. Berkley Books. 2011. ISBN 978-0-425-24011-3.

Martinuzzi, Elisa. "Record $6 Trillion of Fake U.S. Bonds Seized in Mafia Probe." Fabruary 19, 2012. www.businessweek.com.

McDougald, Charles C. *Asian Loot: Unearthing the Secrets of Marcos, Yamashita and the Gold*. San Francisco Publishers. ISBN 0-940777-08-0.

Mills, C. Wright. *The Power Elite.* New York. Oxford University Press. 1956. No ISBN.

Nicoloff, Don. "Following the Money Backwards Leads to President Reagan, Russian Rubles, and Ambassador Leo Wanta." *Idaho Observer.* January, 2007. www.proliberty.com/observer/20070119.htm.

Norris, Pat. *Spies in the Sky: Surveillance Satellites in War and Peace*. Springer. No Date. ISBN978-0-387-71672-5.

O'Neill, John J. *Prodigal Genius: The Life of Nikola Tesla.* Las Vegas, Nevada: Brotherhood of Life. 1994. Reprint of the original 1944 Ives Washburn publication. ISBN 0-914732-33-1.

Pahl, David. *Space Warfare and Strategic Defense.* New York. Exeter Books: Bison Books Group. 1987. ISBN 0-671--8925-0.

Pirie, Anthony. *Operation Bernhard.* William Morrow and Company. 1962. No ISBN.

Pond, Dale, and Baumgartner, Walter. *Nichola Tesla's Earthquake Machine, with Tesla's Original Patents plus New Blueprints to Build* *your own Working Model.* Santa Fe, New Mexico. The Message Company. 1997. ISBN 1-57282-008-X.

Redfern, Nick. *The Pyramids and the Pentagon: The Government's Top Secret Pursuit of Mystical Relics, Ancient Astronauts, and Lost Civilizations.* ISBN 978-1-601-63-206-7.

Regehr, Ronald S. "Do Our Spy Satellites See UFOs?" *MUFON UFO Journal*. Number 312. April 1994, 6-9

Rose, Bill. "America's Secret Space Program… and The Super Valkyrie." *UFO Magazine UK.* 21 June 2004. www.bibliotecapleyades.net/ ciencia/ciencia_flyingobjects53.htm.

Rose, Bill. *Secret Projects: Military Space Technology.* Midland. 2008. ISBN 978-1-85780-296-2.

Ruppelt, Capt. Edward J. *The Report on Unidentified Flying Objects*. New York City. Ace Books. 1956. No ISBN.

Salas, Robert, and Klotz, Jim. "The Malmstrom AFB UFO/Missile Incident." 1999. http://www.cufon.org/cufon/malmstrom/malm1.htm

Sanderson, Ivan T. *Invisible Residents: the Reality of Underwater UFOS.* Adventures Unlimited Press. 2005. ISBN 1-931882-20-7.

Scott, Peter Dale. *American War Machine: Deep Politics, the CIA Global Drug Connection, and the Road to Afghanistan.* New York. Bowman & Littlefield Publishers, Inc. 2010. ISBN978-0-7425-5594-5.

Scott, Peter Dale. *Deep Politics and the Death of JFK.* Berkeley: University of California Press. 1993. ISBN 978-0-520-20519-2.

Scott, Peter Dale. *Drugs, Oil, and War: The United States in Afghanistan, Colombia, and Indochina*. Boulder: Rowman and Littlefield Publishers, Inc. 2003. ISBN 978-0-7425-2522-1.

Seagrave, Sterling and Peggy. *Gold Warriors: America's Secret Recovery of Yamashita's Gold.* London and New York. Verso. 2005. ISBN 1-84467-531-9.

Seagrave, Sterling and Peggy. “Monopoly Money Part 1: FRNs, FRBs and ‘Presidential Dollars.’“

Secor, H. Winfield. “America’s Greatest War Invention: the Rogers Underground Wireless.” *Electrical Experimenter*. march 1919. pp. 787-789, 832-835, 839.

Seymour, Cheri. *The Last Circle: Danny Casolaro’s Investigation into The Octopus and the PROMIS Software Scandal.* Trine Day. 2010. ISBN 978-1936296002.

Simpson, Christopher. *Blowback: The First Full Account of America’s Recruitment of Nazis, and Its Disastrous Effect on Our Domestic and Foreign Policy.* New York: Collier Books, Macmillan Publishing Company. 1988. ISBN 0-02-044995-X

Smith, Jerry E. *Weather Warfare: The Military’s Plan to Draft Mother Nature*. Adventures Unlimited Press. 2006. ISBN 978-1-931882-60-6.

Speigel, Lee. “UFO Researcher Claims Air Force Not Revealing Truth About Communications outage at F.E. Warren Missile Site.” July 7, 2011. *Huffington Post*. www.huffingtonpost.com/2011/07/07/ufos-at-nuclear-missile-site.

Steinberg, Jeffrey. “Synarchism: the Fascist Roots of the Wolfowitz Cabal.” *Executive Intelligence Review.* May 30, 2003.

Stevenson, William. *The Bormann Brotherhood: A New Investigation of the Escape and Survival of Nazi war criminals.* Bantam. 1973. No ISBN.

Temple, L. Parker III. *Shades of Gray: National Security and the Evolution of Space Reconnaissance.* American Institute of Aeronautics and Astronautics, Inc. 2005. ISBN 1-56347-723-8.

Thomas, Kenn, and Keith, Jim. *The Octopur: Secret Government and the Death of Danny Casolaro*. Revised Edition. Feral House. 2004. ISBN 0-922915-91-1.

Thomas, Richard. "Is there a Secret U.S. Space Program?" *UFO Matrix Magazine.* 10 May 2011. www.richardthomasblogger.blogspot.com/2011/05/is-there-secret-us-soace-program…

Vassilatos, Gerry. *Lost Science.* Adventures Unlimited Press. 1999. ISBN 9878-0-932813-75-5.

Vassilatos, Gerry. *Secrets of Cold War Technology: Project HAARP and Beyond.* Borderland Sciences. 1996. ISBN 978-0-945685-20-3.

Watkins, Leslie, with Ambrose, David, and Miles, Christopher. *Alternative 3.* Avon. 1978. ISBN 0-380-44677-4. (Given the early date of this work the ISBN number may no longer be active in internet databases).

Wilkins, Harold T. *Flying Saucers on the Attack*. New York. Ace Books Inc. 1954, 1967. No ISBN.

"Zero Hedge." "The Fed's Gold is Being Audited… By the U.S. Treasury." August 3, 2012. www.infowars.com.

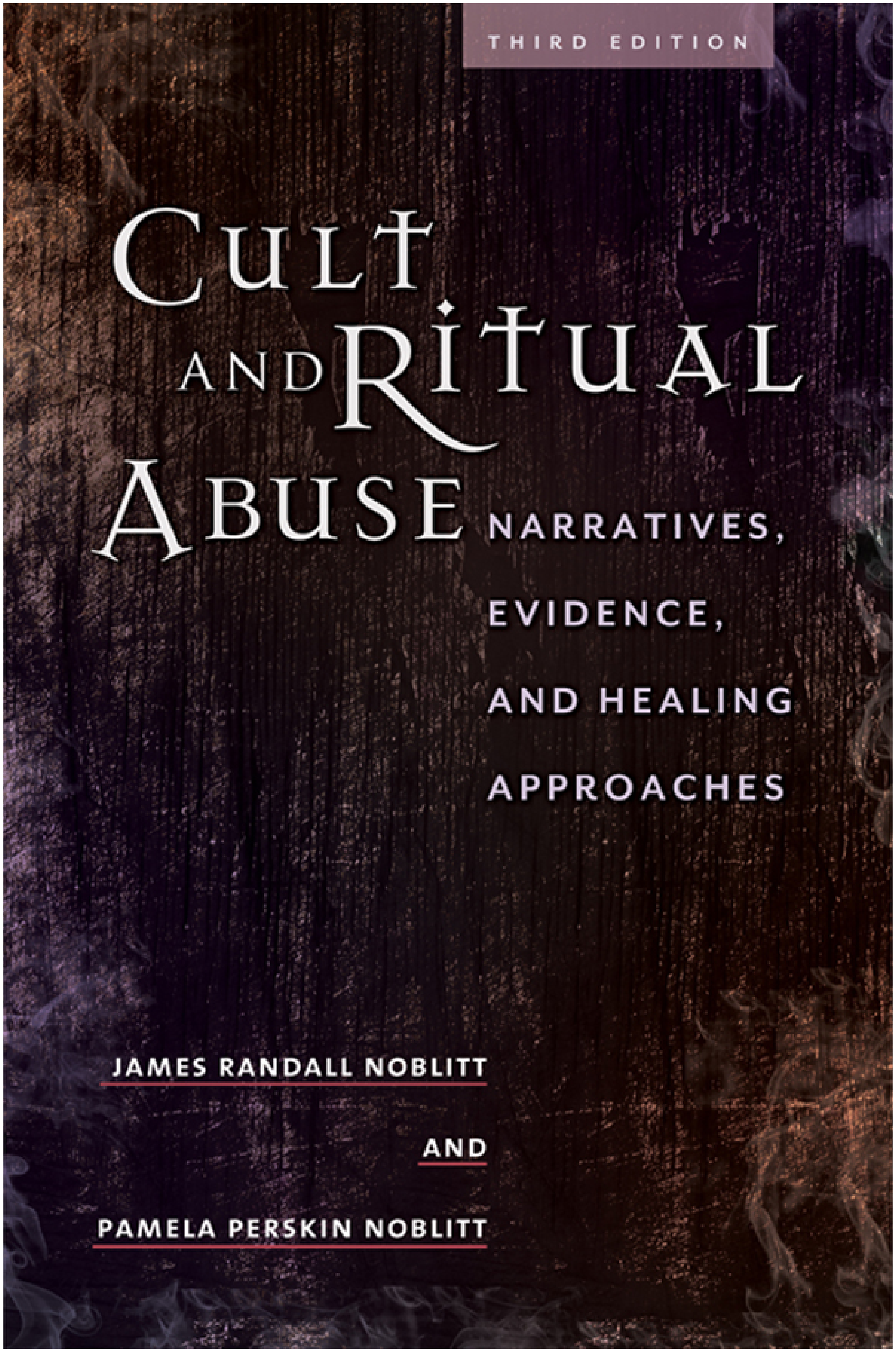

THIRD EDITION

CULT AND RITUAL ABUSE

NARRATIVES, EVIDENCE, AND HEALING APPROACHES

JAMES RANDALL NOBLITT

AND

PAMELA PERSKIN NOBLITT

Cult and Ritual Abuse

Cult and Ritual Abuse

Narratives, Evidence, and Healing Approaches

Third Edition

JAMES RANDALL NOBLITT and
PAMELA PERSKIN NOBLITT

PRAEGER

AN IMPRINT OF ABC-CLIO, LLC
Santa Barbara, California • Denver, Colorado • Oxford, England

Copyright 2014 by James Randall Noblitt and Pamela Perskin Noblitt All rights reserved. No part of this publication may be reproduced, stored in a retrieval system, or transmitted, in any form or by any means, electronic, mechanical, photocopying, recording, or otherwise, except for the inclusion of brief quotations in a review, without prior permission in writing from the publisher.

Library of Congress Cataloging-in-Publication Data Noblitt, James Randall.
Cult and ritual abuse : narratives, evidence, and healing approaches / James Randall Noblitt and Pamela Perskin Noblitt. — Third edition.

pages cm
Includes bibliographical references and index.
ISBN 978-1-4408-3148-5 (hardcopy : alk. paper) — ISBN 978-1-4408-3149-2 (ebook) 1. Ritual abuse—United States. 2. Occult crime—United States. 3. Ritual abuse victims—United States. 4. Multiple personality—United States. I. Noblitt, Pamela Perskin. II. Title.
HV6626.52.N63 2014
362.88—dc23 2014004869

ISBN: 978-1-4408-3148-5
EISBN: 978-1-4408-3149-2

18 17 16 15 14 1 2 3 4 5

This book is also available on the World Wide Web as an eBook.
Visit www.abc-clio.com for details.

Praeger
An Imprint of ABC-CLIO, LLC

ABC-CLIO, LLC
130 Cremona Drive, P.O. Box 1911
Santa Barbara, California 93116-1911

This book is printed on acid-free paper ♾

Manufactured in the United States of America

Contents

Preface and Acknowledgments

Introduction

Chapter 1 The Church in Thetford Forest

Chapter 2 On the Borderline

Chapter 3 Entering Uncharted Territory

Chapter 4 Multiple Personalities

Chapter 5 Possession, Ritual Abuse, and Dissociation

Chapter 6 Empirical and Forensic Evidence of Ritual Abuse

Chapter 7 Breaking the Code

Chapter 8 The African Connection

Chapter 9 Other Cultures

Chapter 10 1990: The Year of the Awakening

Chapter 11 Investigating Western Occultism

Chapter 12 An Introduction to Wicca

Chapter 13 Satanism?

Chapter 14 Nihilists and Revisionists

Chapter 15 The Politics of Psychotherapy

Chapter 16 The Media

Chapter 17 Will “the System” Protect Them?

Chapter 18 Cult and Ritual Trauma Disorder

Chapter 19 Where Do We Go from Here?

Appendix A Cult and Ritual Trauma Disorder: A Proposed Diagnosis in *DSM* Format

Appendix B Letter from the FBI, January 18, 1993

Notes

References

Name Index

Subject Index

About the Authors

Preface and Acknowledgments

We ask the reader's indulgence. As you can see, this book has two authors, yet is frequently narrated in the first person singular. As the primary author, I (JRN) am conveying my experiences as a clinical psychologist and university professor. As secondary author (PPN), my wife and collaborator for the past 44 years is not a clinician, but she has worked extensively with survivors, clinicians, law enforcement representatives, investigative journalists, and others, particularly in her former role as executive director of the International Council on Cultism and Ritual Trauma. We have spent several years reviewing the clinical, historical, and anthropological literature related to this topic. This book is the result of our combined research as well as the blending of our individual perspectives.

We are grateful for the support, encouragement, and resources made available to us. Thanks to Alliant International University for granting me (JRN) a sabbatical that facilitated the completion of this project. Thanks also to Alliant International University and the California School of Professional Psychology for their support, including opportunities to teach doctoral courses and present accredited continuing education programs on this and related subjects.

To the many former clients and other survivors who shared their stories, we hope this book contributes to a sense of purpose and closure as your experiences inform the education of current and future readers. Out of respect for your privacy and in order to protect your confidentiality, we have provided pseudonyms and altered the identifying data.

We owe a great deal to those who recognize the ritual abuse narratives of their clients and who have persisted in this work in spite of the climate of adversity. We are especially grateful to Wanda Karriker, Jean Riseman, Valerie Sinason, Adah Sachs, Thorsten Becker, Jeanne Adams, Thomas Ball, Betina Overkamp, Carol Rutz, Michael Salter, Frances Yoeli, Tessa Prattos, Carole Mallard, Sandra Buck, Carl Raschke, Graeme Galton, Ulla Fröhling, David Leevers, Karl Douglas Lehman, Alison Miller, Ellen Lacter, Dale Griffis, Tony Bovis, Alan Scheflin, Eileen Schrader, Martin Katchen, Jane Wakefield, Garry Flint, Helen McGonigle, Judith Peterson, Gary Lefkof, Pamela Monday, Ross E. Cheit, Catherine Gould, Michael Newton, Connie Valentine, E. Sue Blume, Angela Browne-Miller, and Trish Fotheringham. We are particularly grateful to Rabbi Ephraim E. Buckwold who helped us clarify questions about Jewish culture and tradition.

We are especially thankful to Dana Raphael and the late Howard Jacobson. Dana, a medical anthropologist and colleague of Margaret Mead with whom she co-founded the Human Lactation Center, Ltd., has been an unwavering source of encouragement and support. She has facilitated a continuing conversation about ritual abuse, particularly its effects on women and children, by sponsoring such discussions at the United Nations Annual Conference on the Status of Women and at the American Anthropological Association's annual meetings. Howard, Dana's husband and life partner, provided a steady hand and invaluable guidance in support of communicating this message. He is greatly missed.

And finally, thank you to ABC-CLIO Publishing Group and Praeger for your confidence in our work.

Introduction

This is the third edition of *Cult and Ritual Abuse: Its History, Anthropology and Recent Discovery in Contemporary America*, first published in 1995 and revised in 2000. We've changed the subheading so that it is now *Cult and Ritual Abuse: Narratives, Evidence, and Healing Approaches* to reflect our focus on the stories these survivors tell, the supporting evidence, and clinical approaches that my clients found helpful. We revisit the two previous editions and bring fresh material to the discussion, reflecting the expanding literature and our evolving understanding of it. And we continue to explore the historical and anthropological evidence of traumatic rituals and possession.

In this third edition, we also discuss the psychological components of ritual trauma and propose a theory of dissociation of identity that accounts for the modern clinical narratives and clinical presentation of ritual abuse survivors. We also address related phenomena that include spirit possession, possession trance,[1] and deep hypnosis, and their hypothesized relationship with ritual trauma. We provide a naturalistic explanation for what has been historically known as sorcery and what Harvard physiologist Walter B. Cannon (1942) called "voodoo death." We appreciate the comments of scholars and other professionals who took the time to write reviews of our first two editions of *Cult and Ritual Abuse*. We've read them and are using their observations and suggestions to guide us in this third edition.[2]

During the period between the second and third editions, there have been changes in our own careers that broaden our perspectives. As the first author (JRN), I transitioned from clinical practice to teaching clinical psychology to doctoral students. My students have been receptive to the idea that ritual abuse occurs in many guises and cultures and that ritual abuse causes dissociation of identity.[3] A number of ritual abuse survivors have been welcomed as speakers at my university and the students have found these events to be valuable learning opportunities and moving personal experiences.[4] The second author (PPN) is now a Social Security disability claimant's representative advocating for people whose applications for Social Security benefits result in hearings before Administrative Law judges who determine disability. At the time of this writing, she has represented approximately 900 individuals. At least half of these reported psychological problems as their primary disabling condition. Of these numbers, only two have carried the diagnosis of dissociative identity disorder (DID). All the others have been identified as having one or more of the following diagnoses—schizophrenia, schizoaffective disorder, bipolar disorder, posttraumatic stress disorder, and borderline personality disorder—even though the symptoms and histories they report are indistinguishable from those diagnosed with DID.

In 1983 after being honorably discharged from the U.S. Air Force, I established a private practice in a suburb of our hometown of Dallas, Texas. By 1986 my practice had grown, and I found it necessary to employ other psychologists and licensed professional counselors to assist with my growing caseload of highly self-destructive people. We named the practice The Center for Counseling and Psychological Services, PC. Over time, some of our clients began to reveal that they had been abused in cults or in cult-like groups that subjected them to bizarre mind control techniques unlike anything taught in traditional university clinical psychology curricula. These clients described experiences of ritual torture causing amnesia, mental fragmentation, altered states of consciousness, and dissociation of identity. They often met the criteria for the psychiatric diagnosis of DID.[5]

My first response to their allegations was incredulity. Patients should be respectfully heard, but their accounts and recollections are not always historically true. Most mental health professionals are trained to take a neutral position about the literal accuracy of clients' narratives. However, I began hearing similar reports from other patients and observed similar psychiatric signs and symptoms (e.g., powerful trance reactions, multiple inner identities, and psychogenic amnesia) among numbers of inpatients at the several hospitals where I practiced. Consultations with fellow mental health professionals revealed that they too were encountering patients with comparable stories and similar psychiatric symptoms. It soon became apparent that there was good reason to investigate the source of their claims and our research led to some surprising conclusions.

As we examined the historical and anthropological literature, we found accounts of religions, cults, and fraternal organizations that ostensibly used traumatic rituals for the purpose of creating altered states of consciousness. These mental states have sometimes been viewed as sacred—as the magical catalyst for profound visions or possession by gods.[6] In other cases, these methods have allegedly been used to establish a powerful kind of psychological control that, until recently, existed underground in secrecy essentially unknown to the community of mental health professionals.

But the events described by these patients and others are not exclusively about the distant past, nor are they limited to exotic, foreign cultures. These traumatic acts of mind control reportedly occur in modern societies, including the United States and other industrialized as well as developing countries. The stories are often incredible and include descriptions of abuse in sadistic ceremonies, some of which are allegedly associated with satanic, Luciferian, and other ideologies alien to many of us. The psychiatric symptom pattern displayed by these individuals appears similar to those historically and contemporaneously described as “possessed.” In probing these patients’ allegations, we were introduced to a world of occultism and other dark traditions and practices. Being persons without superstitions or any beliefs in the supernatural, we’ve tried to make sense of these accounts in purely rational and scientific terms. Consequently, we also offer some hypotheses about the so-called possession phenomena described over the centuries by theologians, religious leaders, historians, and anthropologists.

Our conclusion is that the diagnosis of DID is a Western version of what has been known historically and anthropologically as possession.[7] Is it possible that some variants of possession in other cultures in other times have also resulted from such abusive practices? As the reader will see, there is historical and anthropological evidence that this may be the case.

Some readers may view these reports as unbelievable just as we did when we first heard them. Such skepticism is natural and to be expected. These accounts go well beyond the pale of conventional human experience.

However, the prevalence and similarity of these reports throughout the United States and in other countries should give us pause. Before dismissing these claims, we should investigate. These outcries deserve a fair hearing.[8]

A controversy has arisen among professionals and within families subsequent to these allegations. At the time the first and second editions of this book were written, the situation was grave for many ritual abuse survivors as well as for those therapists who were willing to treat them. People reporting histories of ritual abuse found it increasingly difficult to obtain psychotherapy for their numerous, and often disabling, psychological problems. This predicament was exacerbated by a trend among managed health care and health insurance companies to curtail coverage for the necessary lengthy psychiatric care that these individuals' complex conditions require. In the past, therapists who treated this patient population were the targets of civil suits and complaints to their licensing boards.[9] Many of these actions were frivolous, but because these therapists were working in a newly identified field and one that attracted controversy, they were more vulnerable to claims against their licenses and malpractice liability insurance. Although the climate has become less hostile due to the recent revelations of sexual abuse within traditional institutions such as the Catholic Church, Boy Scouts of America, and other organizations along with well-publicized scandals involving celebrities, any discussion of ritual abuse continues to attract acrimony. How did this happen? Three factors led to this predicament: the politics of psychotherapy; a generally unsympathetic, and sometimes hostile, media; and a growing contingent of reactionary individuals who are intent on proving that allegations of child abuse are overstated.

But is there any hard evidence that these practices actually happen in modern industrialized societies? In spite of the numerous reports of ritual abuse, some authors and journalists have chosen to interpret these allegations as either signs of mass hysteria or the vulnerability of fragile psychiatric patients victimized by unethical or incompetent psychotherapists. Although these hypotheses are worth considering, our experience has often been that the media tend to distort and suppress disturbing facts that should be made public. Later in the book we will discuss some instances where journalists refused to publish facts (e.g., legal case findings) about this phenomenon when they were inconsistent with more politically correct and comfortable-to-believe interpretations. However, there have been isolated cases where efforts were made to present facts in a balanced and evenhanded manner consistent with the best arguments representing both sides of the controversy.

On December 8, 1993, a program produced by the *American Justice* series, *Satan, Rituals and Abuse*, was aired on cable television's Arts and Entertainment (A&E) network. Two cases were cited in which convictions were obtained in response to children's allegations of ritual abuse at two different childcare centers, one in Florida and the other in Texas. Significantly, in each case one of the defendants confessed to some of the specific allegations. I am intimately familiar with the case in Texas, having served as an expert witness for the prosecution.

In September 1993 we attended the National Conference on Crimes against Children in Washington, D.C. One of the major concerns discussed at this conference was ritual abuse. Among the prominent speakers was Senator Newton Russell from California, whose presentation "Ritualized Crimes against Children" clearly showed that some legislators were beginning to address this phenomenon seriously. Several states enacted laws against ritual abuse or added additional penalties to existing crimes listed in the states' penal codes. Former Nebraska state senator John DeCamp (1992, 1996, 2005) discussed ritual abuse uncovered during the investigation of a failed savings and loan institution in his book *The Franklin Cover Up*. This case was also the basis for Nick Bryant's 2009 book, *The Franklin Scandal: A Story of Powerbrokers, Child Abuse and Betrayal*.

In her exhaustive review of the research, Professor Kathleen Faller (1994) at the University of Michigan concluded that corroborating evidence exists in some cases where ritual abuse is alleged. More recently, Michael Salter (2012) critically evaluated the research associated with organized abuse, including ritual abuse. Our 2000 edition of *Cult and Ritual Abuse* included a review of the empirical research as well as evidence from criminal cases. This third edition provides an updated and expanded critical review of the available empirical and forensic findings.

Ritual crimes have been prosecuted internationally with convictions in Argentina, Finland, Germany, Ireland, Russia, Wales, England, the Ukraine, South Africa, Indonesia, Papua New Guinea, Israel, Canada, and the United States, among others.[10] Some convictions have received more publicity, as in the case of former Catholic priest Gerald Robinson. He was convicted on May 11, 2006, for murdering a nun in the chapel of Mercy Hospital in Toledo, Ohio. Sister Margaret Ann Pahl was ritually killed in 1980, but the police were not able to identify Robinson as the killer until a ritual abuse survivor went to the police with the accusation that Robinson had abused her in satanic rituals that included her witnessing ritual murder (Associated Press, 2006).

Currently allegations continue to emerge that the well-known but recently deceased British entertainer Jimmy Savile (Penrose, 2013) was a sexual predator of young children. Among the growing list of abuse allegations is corroborating evidence and an accusation that some abuse was perpetrated in satanic rituals (Fielding, 2013).[11] Savile was not convicted because the allegations were made posthumously. Nevertheless, there are ongoing investigations of others associated with him who may have participated in some of the alleged abuses and liability concerns for his employer, the British Broadcasting Company. Those who argue that there is no evidence for the existence of ritual abuse are simply not accurately representing the facts.[12]

When we wrote the first two editions of *Cult and Ritual Abuse*, there was already a growing ritual abuse survivor movement underway. This movement continues to expand and mature. Organizations such as Survivorship[13] and SMART[14] provide support for survivors and their advocates, including websites, publications, and annual conferences that feature continuing education programs for mental health professionals.

The International Society for the Study of Trauma and Dissociation (ISSTD) is the largest professional association for mental health professionals and others with an interest in dissociation and the psychological sequelae of trauma. In 2008 the ISSTD founded a ritual abuse/mind control interest group (RA/MC IG). When we last checked, this interest group had the largest membership of all the ISSTD’s interest groups. In the United Kingdom, there are professional organizations that include the Trauma and Abuse Group (TAG) and the Ritual Abuse Information Network and Support (RAINS; Buck, 2008; Coleman, 2011). TAG has a website and publishes the journal *Interact*.[15]

In addition to the previously mentioned ones, other respected professional associations and institutions have provided professional continuing education on the topic of ritual abuse. Notably, in September

2009 the Bowlby Centre (formerly the Centre for Attachment-based Psychoanalytic Psychotherapy) and the Clinic for Dissociative Studies hosted a two-day conference in London, Ritual Abuse and Mind Control: The Manipulation of Attachment Needs, which was subsequently published as a book of the same name (Epstein, Schwartz, & Schwartz, 2011). In October 2012 Alliant International University sponsored an accredited continuing education program, Ritual Abuse: International Clinical Perspectives. Attendance at this event required pre-registration and the venue was filled weeks prior to the scheduled presentation.

Many cult and ritual abuse survivors say that their perpetrators told them that if they talked about their abuses, no one would believe them. It is our hope that this book will help shed light on their disturbing and confusing allegations. In so doing it may be possible to distinguish the reality of this phenomenon[16] from the illusions, superstitions, and misinformation that obscure what is an already complex question. A more realistic and scientifically based understanding of ritual abuse will best prepare us to ethically respond to the needs of this underserved population.

CHAPTER 1

The Church in Thetford Forest

It is difficult to believe that the precipitating incident resulting in a lifelong challenge would seem so innocuous at the time. But in many life experiences, we do not readily recognize these moments as they occur. Rather, in retrospect they take on significance as important milestones, teaching valuable lessons. This was such an occasion.

In 1979 I had never heard of ritual abuse and was unaware of its possible existence. The subject of such abuse was never broached during the staff and supervision meetings where I was assigned at the second-largest U.S. Air Force (USAF) mental health installation in Europe. Furthermore, like most of the clinic personnel, I had been trained to be skeptical of any allegations of sexual abuse made by patients. The prevailing attitudes among the staff were influenced by Sigmund Freud’s theory that people commonly fantasize about such experiences, particularly during early childhood. As a newly trained psychologist, I was completely unprepared to address the phenomenon of ritual abuse.

A special benefit of this European posting was that outside the day-to-day duties required by the base, hospital, and clinic, it provided numerous recreational diversions. The congenial environment contributed a kind of insulation from the unpleasant stories that the psychiatric patients sometimes told.

It was easy to become immersed in the history and culture of England, unknowingly exposed to the evidence and artifacts of historic British religions and secret brotherhoods. At the time, their significance was not apparent to me. However, England was the birthplace of Aleister Crowley, perhaps the most infamous of modern practitioners of ritual magic.

Similarly, Wicca, or white witchcraft, originated in the United Kingdom, along with several secret, occult fraternal organizations.

I had no interest in occultism but was fascinated by the history and picturesque beauty of the countryside. Our family enjoyed driving and hiking from one ancient ruin to the next. Looking back on that period, I recognize that there were many things there to discover and experience that would be directly relevant to my later work with ritual abuse survivors. For example, we frequently visited a picturesque park on the grounds of the abbey at Bury St. Edmunds, a town not far from the air base. While the children frolicked, chasing after the resident ducks and geese, I explored the ruins and wondered what could have driven the townspeople to rise up against the monks on more than one occasion and destroy the magnificent abbey, one of the most sacred shrines in all of England. According to one of the British locals, the monks were known to escape from the abbey and molest the women of the town. Another curiosity was the twin Stars of David that embellished the massive and beautifully crafted abbey gate. Why, in what had been such an anti-Semitic culture, would a symbol of Judaism[1] decorate the gate of the abbey that was the sacred burial ground of King Edmund and the site where the English barons gathered to confirm their resolve to force King John to sign the Magna Carta? Not far away was an old country church, whose interior displayed a medieval wall painting called *The Wheel of Fortune*.[2] This pagan subject matter seemed oddly out of character in a Christian house of worship. While curious about these mysteries of history, I did not pursue any systematic study. Instead, these days were pleasantly filled with family, friends, and work.

The assignment to the mental health clinic at RAF Lakenheath, England, was an agreeable job for a young captain and psychologist having just completed an air force internship in clinical psychology. With my career at its beginning, the patients’ stories were new and fresh. It was at Lakenheath that I met “Bill,” my first patient reporting ritual abuse, although at the time I didn’t recognize the significance of his story.

Bill’s intake form identified him as Sergeant “William Hoffer,” but he invited me to call him “Bill.” Dressed in his pale blue air force summer uniform, he looked haggard and anxious. He mumbled that it was embarrassing for him coming to the mental health clinic because as a “private person,” he was not accustomed to discussing his personal problems with anyone. Yet, something had happened that was so disturbing that he felt that he had to talk with a professional about it. While he spoke, Bill frequently paused, wrung his hands, and showed obvious discomfort with the subject that had brought him to my office. He rarely looked me in the eye. Instead, he allowed his gaze to travel around my meagerly furnished office in the mental health clinic. Finally, Bill began to speak.

Bill said that he came to see me because he had been to “a party.” Again he hesitated, and I encouraged him to continue. Suddenly Bill’s eyes filled with tears, and he described what appeared to have been a bizarre sex party during which he was sodomized. Bill claimed that the man who assaulted him wore a black robe and a goat’s head mask. According to Bill, the room was partially lit with candles, and some of the other people there were also dressed in robes.

The party, Bill said, started out simply as an ordinary gathering of people, some British nationals and some U.S. military personnel and dependents. Pockets of individuals and couples conversed and drank. When I asked Bill if drugs were used at the party, he looked away. Bill said that he had been invited to this party by a casual acquaintance with the promise that it was a “really wild group” and that Bill was “sure to get laid.” Indeed as the evening progressed, several of the partygoers appeared to become intoxicated. Eventually, some of those present began to openly engage in sex, and the party degenerated into an orgy. Bill said that some of those present shed their clothes while others clothed themselves in dark, hooded robes and chanted to Satan. It was at that point, Bill alleged, that he was raped. The issue that motivated Bill to seek counseling was not so much his brush with the occult as his fear that because he had not actively resisted his rape, he might be homosexual.

I asked Bill where this party had occurred. He told me that this group met in an abandoned church located in Thetford Forest not far from the air base. With some hesitation, he gave me the directions to the church. Already skeptical of the details of his story, it was at that point I became even more dubious. I was familiar with the road he described but had never seen a church there. Although he seemed sincere in what he was telling me and showed no signs of being psychotic, Bill’s narrative was simply too bizarre to be taken at face value.

Several days later, I happened to drive by the location described by Bill. Thetford Forest is a thickly wooded area, difficult to navigate in many places because of the lush undergrowth of ferns and other vegetation and the abundance of trees. Along the perimeter, the dense green panorama is interrupted by occasional stone and flint cottages and farmhouses. I drove slowly along the road looking off into the forest and saw what appeared to be a small, flint-studded church, partially obscured by trees. There was no footpath or road by which to approach the church by car. For a moment, I considered parking my car at the side of the narrow English road and attempting to walk to the building. I decided against it and drove back to the base.

Bill’s sessions with me focused primarily on his fear that he was a gay male. There was considerable homophobia within the U.S. armed forces at that time. Bill was taking a risk discussing this with me because it could have been used as grounds for his being discharged from the USAF. Eventually, he satisfied himself that he was not gay. I concluded that he had become involved with a group of people who were drawn toward unconventional sexual practices and that they used the occult and demonic trappings in their sex games. I assumed that Bill’s story was something rare. I was unfamiliar with any similar cases in the professional literature of psychology.

I was, however, aware of one precedent to Bill’s story, the notorious Hell Fire Club.[3] This group, led by Sir Francis Dashwood in 18th-century England, allegedly existed for the purpose of providing male aristocrats with opportunities for sexual debauchery. According to one of my undergraduate history professors, these sexual escapades were conducted in a manner that included acts of blasphemy along with the simulation of demon worship. The professor pointed out, however, that these “rituals” were not authentically satanic but merely a decoy for the real purpose of the organization, which he claimed was sexual license.

This group had historic significance because of an association between Benjamin Franklin, who is said to have visited the club in 1758, and certain important English aristocracy and representatives of the British government, who were also members of this club[4] during the time when the American colonies were seeking independence. With so little material published on the subject of occult-inspired sexual practices, I decided that they must not occur often and so I thought that I would probably never again see a patient like Bill.

CHAPTER 2

On the Borderline

Clinically, I had particularly wanted to work with patients with phobias and anxiety disorders, but opportunities to see such individuals were relatively rare in the Air Force. As one of the most junior ranking staff at the mental health clinic, I paradoxically tended to be assigned many of the more seriously disturbed and challenging patients. Such individuals, with their relatively chronic and severe problems, are often frustrating to those who try to help them. Typically, their progress in therapy is slow, and improvement is often only marginal.[1] On the other hand, it can be dangerous to limit or deny treatment to these patients because many of them episodically present a risk of suicide, self-mutilation, or, occasionally, harm toward some other person.[2] Many of the senior mental health providers avoided working with these demanding, and frequently dangerous, patients by referring them to me. Consequently, I began to gather a sizable caseload of them, many of whom met the criteria for the diagnosis of borderline personality disorder.[3]

One such patient was “Annie.” The wife of a young enlisted man, Annie had a complicated psychiatric history consisting of intermittent episodes of agitation and sadness, suicide attempts, and self-mutilation. Much of the time, she was charming, friendly, and talkative. On other occasions, Annie flew into rages, often for no discernable reason. Annie seemed overly dependent on her husband, typically refusing to drive alone or go to places without him. Yet, when they were together, she was usually aloof and emotionally distant. She was extremely critical of herself[4] and felt unloved and unworthy of love. She said she felt “dead” inside in spite of her usually intense, and often lively, outward appearance. Her speech, sometimes poetic, reflected a sense of poignancy about life and the others around her.

She didn’t understand why her life was in constant, uncontrollable turmoil.[5] Annie said that another doctor once told her she had a “chemical imbalance” in her brain and that her emotional problems were a result of faulty neurochemistry. When I asked her what she thought, she responded with an empty and melancholic silence.

Annie was a person with many contrasting moods, ideas, and feelings. Sometimes when I saw her, she appeared to be gregarious, dramatic, and animated. At other times, her face was devoid of expression or stained with tears. Periodically, Annie deliberately cut herself and afterward described feelings of great relief.[6] Sometimes before these incidents, she was observed staring into space chanting, “I’ve got to see blood; I’ve got to see blood.” Those involved with her care tried to prevent her acts of self-mutilation through hospitalization. But even in a protected hospital environment, Annie found ways to inflict self-harm. Once when she was hospitalized, she successfully concealed a sharp object that she used to scratch and superficially cut herself. In the morning, she was discovered with blood smeared on her body and on the walls of her room. I didn’t have an opportunity to continue Annie’s therapy because her husband was reassigned to another station. But there were many others in my caseload who lived in a similar state of mental torment.

At the time when I saw Annie, borderline personality disorder was not an official diagnosis listed in the *Diagnostic and Statistical Manual of Mental Disorders* (*DSM*) of the American Psychiatric Association. This diagnosis was added in the third revision (*DSM-III*) that was published in 1980. Thirty-three years later, the literature on borderline personality disorder has broadened and is growing. On February 10, 2013, I entered the phrase “borderline personality disorder” into the PsycINFO search engine and got 6,470 hits representing that number of individual professional books and journal articles. It surprised me that so many publications had been generated for a diagnosis that was recognized only in 1980.

Borderline personality disorder is characterized by deeply conflicted emotions, running the gamut from rage to terror, from depressed apathy to turbulent agitation. People with borderline personality disorder often experience self-loathing that alternates and coexists with self-absorption or narcissism. Their frequent acts of self-destructiveness, including self-mutilation and suicide attempts, bewilder and frighten their friends and caregivers. These individuals typically have unsatisfying relationships and appear to alienate those whose support they need, while at the same time expressing fears that they will be abandoned. Patients with this diagnosis often appear uncooperative in therapy and are frequently accused of sabotaging their own treatment. The condition of such patients is considered chronic with intermittent episodes of distress and diminished functioning. In my experience, many of these patients respond in unusual or unpredictable ways to psychiatric medications.[7]

Many of these patients perceive their lives to be unsatisfying and empty. However, in spite of their numerous psychological frailties, there is often a richness of character present. With lives that sometimes parallel those of the antiheroes of the modern cinema, they frequently appear to be rebels or eccentrics. Like Don Quixote’s compulsion to do combat with windmills, their aggressive energies frequently seem diverted toward pointless or unwinnable conflicts, while at the same time their impractical battles often betray their romantic idealism.

Some of these clients are reminiscent of well-known creative personalities who periodically appear in the course of history. Like Vincent van Gogh, Peter Tchaikovsky, and Edgar Allen Poe, they typically live chaotic, turbulent, and eccentric lives.[8] Although they often lack the simplest understanding of many of their own more mundane and routine experiences or enactments, they periodically demonstrate profound and creative insights.[9]

Upon discharge from the Air Force, I went into private practice in Richardson, a suburb of Dallas, Texas. Although I wished to develop a practice specializing in the treatment of phobias and anxiety disorders, my experience and willingness to work with patients with borderline personality disorder soon became known and resulted in a sizable caseload of these individuals. However, the professional community was—and is—divided about the proper approach to treatment for such patients. Then, as now, my review of the professional literature on the subject of borderline personality revealed no clear consensus regarding the appropriate therapy for individuals with this diagnosis. A book by Waldinger and Gunderson (1987) listed six different psychodynamic[10] theoretical approaches to conceptualizing and treating borderline personality disorder. However, even this roster is not comprehensive. Other theories and therapy methods have been used with these patients, and not all of these are classified as psychodynamic.[11] Another category of treatment approaches are the cognitive or cognitive-behavioral therapies that emphasize how habits of thinking affect one's emotional well-being. Psychiatrists Katharine J. Nelson and S. Charles Schulz summarized a broad array of contemporary treatments for borderline personality disorder that include dialectical behavioral therapy, mentalization-based therapy, systems training for emotional predictability and problem solving (STEPPS), transference-focused psychotherapy, and schema-focused therapy with the inclusion of family involvement (Nelson & Schulz, 2012).

One important question addresses the etiology of borderline personality disorder. What are its causes? Some clinicians and theorists question the extent to which punitive or neglectful experiences in childhood could be significant antecedents. The method of neuroimaging has been used in an effort to understand more about the brain functioning associated with borderline personality disorder (New, Perez-Rodriguez, & Ripoll, 2012). Hazlett et al. (2012) found that individuals who were diagnosed with borderline personality disorder had increased brain activity in the area of the amygdala using event-related potential functional magnetic resonance imaging and while being shown pictures with emotional content. Hughes, Crowell, Uyeji, and Coan (2012) proposed a link between developmentally compromised frontolimbic brain function in borderline personality disorder and Coan's social baseline theory (2008) that argued for a neurodevelopmental explanation for the emotionally soothing effects of healthy interpersonal relationships. Some researchers and clinicians have found interpersonal betrayal to be a likely factor (Belford, Kaehler, & Birrell, 2012). In a meta-analysis, Ruocco, Amirthavasagam, and Zakzanis (2012) found evidence of reduced brain volume in the area of the hippocampus and the amygdala.[12] Childhood sexual abuse is often identified as a factor that may cause this disorder.[13] In their study of 106 women with major depressive disorder, Cankaya, Talbot, Ward, and Duberstein (2012) concluded that "parental perpetration of sexual abuse increases the likelihood of multiple suicide attempts among women outpatients" (p. 45).

Dr. Wilfred Abse wrote about the origins of the term *borderline:*

> In 1891, George M. Beard wrote a series of essays in the *New York Medical Record* in which he introduced the term *border-liners* and applied it to "that large class of nervous persons, sometimes hypochondriacal, sometimes neurasthenic, sometimes hysterical, sometimes epileptic, sometimes inebriate, sometimes several of these united who," he wrote further, "are

> almost insane at times and yet may never become insane, though sometimes they may cross the borderline." (1983, p. 340)

Abse explained that the current psychiatric diagnostic manual at the time, the *DSM-III*, stated conservatively: "Child abuse and other forms of severe emotional trauma may be predisposing factors." In citing the *DSM-III* (American Psychiatric Association, 1980, p. 258), Abse added, "I have never found severe psychic trauma to be absent in such cases" (1983, p. 340). Also writing about borderline patients, Nagel (1989) observed: "Therapists frequently say they do not see many patients who have experienced incest, molestation, or physical brutality. This is not necessarily because their patients have not had these experiences, but rather, because therapists overlook, deny, or ignore the existence of these problems" (p. 402). I have to admit that sometimes I failed to inquire about sexual abuse in the histories of my clients, often because early in the history taking they frequently deny abuse, even though later in therapy some admit that they had experienced such abuses.

Think about it for a moment. Imagine yourself as a client having your first session with a mental health professional. Although he or she is a stranger to you, you are asked to disclose intimate details of your personal life. You feel nervous, embarrassed, and emotionally overexposed. You are unsure about confidentiality. You wonder whether anything that you say about yourself will later be used against you (e.g., if your mental health records are subpoenaed in a divorce or child custody hearing). The question of sexual abuse in your childhood comes up.[14] What would you say?

I cannot blame the patients for their hesitance or inability to identify accurate histories of sexual abuse. I have to confess that I have never liked hearing about childhood sexual abuse. I often simply hoped that my patients would not bring the subject up. I assure you that hearing adults sobbing while recounting a childhood rape by a drunken parent is a painful and demoralizing experience for all concerned, including the therapist. I hoped that the numerous incidents of this horror reported by some of my colleagues were an exaggeration.[15] As I later read in *The Challenge of the Borderline Patient:*

> Borderlines frequently and increasingly report sexual abuse (as well as physical and emotional abuse) having occurred during their childhood and adolescence. Attempts to explain away this phenomenon by invoking the borderline's hysterical suggestibility stimulated by greater public

> awareness and publicity of childhood sexual abuse appear inadequate and even malicious. (Kroll, 1988, p. 41)

The author continues:

> It is more likely that professionals have become more aware of the need to ask the relevant questions and patients have become less reluctant to acknowledge and discuss these usually recurrent childhood and adolescent sexual assaults. Certainly there is much better evidence for the occurrence and centrality of sexual abuse as an important etiological factor in the development of borderline symptoms and style than there is for the mythical “not good enough mothering” of the separation-individuation phase. (Kroll, 1988, p. 42)

Some clinicians have attempted to describe and explain the psychological processes associated with borderline personality disorder. One of these conceptualizations, known as *object relations theory*, originated, in part, with the work of the Austrian-born British psychoanalyst Melanie Klein. This theory is sometimes used to explain the mental inner landscape of these patients. It is construed as consisting of internal representations of other people and that these internal representations are often themselves considered fragmented. Thus, according to this theory, many of these clients have internalized representations of “people” and fragments of people in their “inner world”[16] as a consequence of normal development.

Today this concept parallels what therapists who work with dissociative identity disorder (DID) (multiple personality disorder [MPD]) sometimes call *alter personalities* or *alter fragments* that, in the language of object relations theory, might be labeled *internal objects* and *internal part objects*. During my early experience treating borderline personality disorder patients, I could find no connection between the two diagnoses because I had never seen a client whom I recognized as having MPD.

In fact, at that time, I viewed the diagnosis of MPD with suspicion and questioned whether it was a legitimate diagnosis or simply an artifact of sloppy or poorly conducted psychotherapy. I wondered if overzealous and naive psychotherapists inadvertently created the disorder in their patients through suggestion. Never having seen the disorder among my patients, I believed it to be rare. When I was a graduate student, the only reference I heard with regard to MPD occurred when an instructor declared it to be so scarce that we would probably never see a case in the course of our professional careers. It was not until much later that I read reports by other authors who expressed the view that the diagnosis of borderline personality disorder had much in common with MPD[17] and that MPD was not actually rare. According to these authors, MPD was more often unrecognized and, thus, underdiagnosed.[18] In a sample of 207 psychologists, psychiatrists, and social workers, Hayes and Mitchell (1994) found 24% of them to be moderately to extremely skeptical about the MPD diagnosis. Additionally, their data showed that professionals’ skepticism was inversely related to their knowledge about MPD. Finally, Hayes and Mitchell found that MPD was less accurately diagnosed than schizophrenia and that misdiagnosis of MPD was associated with skepticism about MPD. Why would mental health professionals allow bias and lack of knowledge to affect their diagnostic thinking? This question is important and will receive further attention in subsequent chapters of this book. Some argued that MPD is a questionable diagnosis without a scientific basis or that the diagnosis was accepted by few mental health professionals. Over time, research began to accumulate addressing these questions. In a study by Dunn, Paolo, Ryan, and Van Fleet (1994), the authors surveyed 1,120 psychologists and psychiatrists employed by the Veterans Administration. Eighty percent of their respondents endorsed belief in the legitimacy of the DID diagnosis. Another study by Mai (1995) surveyed 180 Canadian psychiatrists and found that 66.1% believed the diagnosis was legitimate, 27.8% did not, and 3.3% were unsure. Pope, Oliva, Hudson, Bodkin, and Gruber (1999) also studied 301 board-certified psychiatrists. The authors found that 15% of the psychiatrists thought that DID should not be included in a future revision of the diagnostic manual, 43% thought it should be included with reservations, and 35% thought it should be included without reservations. In response to a question, “In your opinion, what is the status of the scientific evidence regarding the validity of Dissociative Identity Disorder?” 20% endorsed “little or no evidence of validity,” 51% endorsed “partial evidence of validity,” and 21% endorsed “strong evidence of validity” (p. 322). Surveys of professionals’ beliefs about a diagnosis do not necessarily reflect the actual scientific status of a particular diagnosis. Professionals do at times have biases and may be misinformed. Because psychiatric diagnoses are abstract and based, to a large degree, on subjective reports of patients, it is often difficult to directly or precisely measure specific characteristics of the diagnosis. However, inter-rater reliability is one scientific index of psychiatric diagnoses that has been relatively well researched. Studies of the inter-rater reliability of the DID diagnosis made with structured interview methods show that DID has perhaps the highest inter-rater reliability of any psychiatric diagnosis (Ross, 1997). The courts have also upheld the finding that DID is a scientifically accepted diagnosis. In 1999, the Washington State Supreme Court determined that the diagnosis of DID met the criteria for the Frye rule.[19] This ruling meant that expert testimony about DID was admissible in federal court because the court had determined that the diagnosis was generally accepted in the mental health field.

CHAPTER 3

Entering Uncharted Territory

I continued working with patients with borderline personality disorder and other related diagnoses.[1] Although many of them improved in therapy, the work was often frustrating and exhausting. Some authors began writing about burnout, secondary posttraumatic stress disorder (PTSD), and compassion fatigue among caregivers.[2] On the other hand, it was gratifying when these clients made progress.

I hoped to identify particular treatment approaches and techniques that would promote quicker and more complete recovery. In the pursuit of this goal, I began to study a variety of different therapy methods in order to differentiate those that would be most effective. During that time, and also since then, a number of psychological approaches evolved that were specifically developed for the treatment of people with this diagnosis. However, the theories varied and often were inconsistent with one another. Many of the theories seemed to rely on unproven assumptions. Others seemed to offer pat answers to intrinsically complex questions. As time went by, I came to believe that many of the books and journal articles were not as instructive as the experience of actually working with these clients who proved to be excellent teachers. I wondered what would happen if mental health professionals gave up or suspended many of their preconceived ideas and spent more time listening to their clients.

Having little confidence in the prevailing psychological theories, my preference was to take a position of humility, acknowledging that there is much uncertainty in the mental health literature and lore. Historically, psychology has lacked a single unifying theory that has been generally accepted. Many of the empirical research findings have been inconsistent with one another and open to alternate interpretations. Thus, there is a need for professionals to proceed with caution, acknowledging that there is little that we know with a high degree of certainty. We should consider multiple potential factors and, whenever possible, generate hypotheses and test them. We need to adopt the simplest explanations for phenomena that fully explain them. This is a generally accepted principle of the logic of science known as parsimony.[3] Unfortunately, therapists sometimes embrace particular theories and then use them to interpret their clients' behaviors and experiences without testing the theories. In my humble opinion, psychologists and other mental health professionals commonly accept explanations for psychological processes that are unparsimonious and unproven.

In an atmosphere of uncertainty, it seemed important to cultivate humility, honesty, and genuineness. It is not the therapist's job to interpret or offer explanations to clients to account for their experiences or their problems in living. I encouraged my clients to honestly explore their own thoughts and feelings, to consider alternate explanations, and to scrutinize their various interpretations, memories, and beliefs.

There were a variety of different approaches that seemed helpful. Many of these clients used individual psychotherapy as their primary pathway toward recovery. However, I found that group therapy was also a productive therapeutic method.[4] There are a variety of different ways to do group therapy. Some groups are highly structured by the facilitator, occasionally addressing a particular theme or introducing particular group exercises. Other groups are more unstructured and the group participants are encouraged to talk about anything meaningful or emotionally significant to them. Many groups alternate from a structured to unstructured style depending on the particular goals at the time.

Group therapy can be an effective treatment modality for people who feel that they are alone in life, misunderstood, and unworthy of kindness or respect. Many groups are emotionally supportive, and in such a nurturing environment, people can learn that others share similar feelings. People also learn to experience social acceptance in terms of their individual diversity, developing a sense that each person has a right to respectful treatment, and that they need not all be the same as one another in order to have worth or acceptance. Thus, participants are often able to improve their social skills and self-esteem,[5] and frequently experience relief interacting with others in an atmosphere of honesty and warmth. In the group setting, people are able to explore their relationships and gain insights about the way their behaviors are perceived by others through methods such as role-playing and role reversal as well as through other group therapy techniques.[6]

For a time, I regularly conducted inpatient group therapy for patients with borderline diagnoses on the psychiatric unit of a local community hospital. On one occasion, I brought a baby doll to the group and asked if the group members would be willing to hug the doll, one at a time, imagining they were holding themselves as children. They were invited to hold the doll individually and describe any feelings that they experienced. The purpose of the exercise was for the group members to explore their capacity for self-nurturing, their attitudes about themselves, their self-perceptions, and their feelings about their childhood experiences.

The outcome of this exercise was dramatic, although not immediately. Early in the exercise, many of the participants felt, not surprisingly, self-conscious and even silly engaging in behaviors so alien to normal adult roles. However, some of their resistance had nothing to do with the apparent absurdity of the therapy task. Some of the patients refused to hold the doll because their self-hatred was so great they could not stand the idea of holding themselves, even symbolically.

As we explored these feelings over several days in group therapy, some of the patients began to report improvement in their feelings about themselves. Eventually, many of them were able to embrace the doll, and some would tearfully talk about breakthroughs in self-acceptance. Many of these group members previously had little insight about the conflict between their feelings of self-revulsion and their emotional neediness. As a result of the exercise, some said that they understood their feelings better, whereas others simply seemed able to integrate these opposing emotions. It was such a moving experience that the head nurse of the unit later purchased a similar doll for me as a personal gift but also one that would be used in future groups.

Some time later, I was asked by a neurologist colleague at the same medical facility to consult with one of his patients, a married woman in her late 30s. “Susie” was hospitalized for intractable headaches, and the neurologist suspected that her pain was at least partly related to psychological factors. When I visited Susie in her hospital room, she showed no outward appearance of distress but described intense, excruciating headaches. While elaborating on these painful sensations, her facial expression was so pleasant and congenial that I wondered if she really was experiencing any discomfort. Because her hospital room was dimly lit, I turned on the overhead light in order to write my case notes as we talked, but simultaneously Susie grimaced painfully.

When I switched the light off, she appeared more comfortable. Her response provided some objective evidence that she was experiencing actual physical pain because it is common for patients with a migraine to experience an exacerbation of pain in bright light. However, her pleasant affect was incongruous. Her outward appearance showed what some clinicians call *la belle indifference*, or an attitude of mismatched lack of concern with her identified problem. This style of behavior was often associated with the old, and now rarely used, diagnostic term *hysteria*.

Hysteria was a label that once represented an official diagnostic category, but in more recent practice has been replaced with the diagnostic terms *conversion disorder* and *dissociative disorder*.[7] Patients with conversion disorders develop “one or more symptoms of altered voluntary motor or sensory function” (American Psychiatric Association, 2013, p. 318) that cannot be medically explained and that cause significant distress or impairment of functioning. An example would be the case of a woman who developed a psychological (rather than neurological) paralysis that prevented her from attending the funeral of her mother.[8]

Dissociative disorders are a general diagnostic category listed in both in the American Psychiatric Association’s *Diagnostic and Statistical Manual of Mental Disorders* (*DSM*) and the World Health Organization’s *International Classification of Diseases* (*ICD*). In the fifth edition of the *DSM* (*DSM-5*), dissociative disorders include dissociative identity disorder, dissociative amnesia, and depersonalization/derealization disorder, along with two miscellaneous categories (other specified dissociative disorder and unspecified dissociative disorder). According to the *DSM-5*: “Dissociative disorders are characterized by a disruption of and/or discontinuity in the normal integration of consciousness, memory, identity, emotion, perception, body representation, motor control, and behavior” (American Psychiatric Association, 2013, p. 291).[9] The diagnosis of dissociative identity disorder represents “the disruptive experience of two or more distinct personality states, which may be described in some cultures as an experience of possession” (p. 292) and amnesia or memory gaps for important personal information, traumatic events, or everyday information that cannot be explained as ordinary forgetting. Dissociative amnesia is the inability to remember important personal information not due to a medical condition, drug ingestion, or another psychological diagnosis such as dissociative identity disorder, acute stress disorder, and PTSD. The diagnosis of depersonalization/derealization disorder reflects the "persistent or recurrent experience of depersonalization" (American Psychiatric Association, 2013, p. 302) (a sense of unreality or detachment of the self), derealization (the-experience of one's surroundings as unreal or detached), or both.[10] Prior to 1994, with the publication of the fourth edition of the *DSM* (*DSM-IV*), dissociative identity disorder was known as multiple personality disorder (MPD). The *ICD* continues to use MPD.

Susie and I talked for a while, and I asked her to complete a psychological test, the Minnesota Multiphasic Personality Inventory (MMPI). After reviewing her test data, I returned to see her the next day. Susie's psychological testing appeared more consistent with the diagnosis of borderline personality disorder than one of the hysteria-related diagnoses. In any case, it was common for people with the diagnosis of borderline personality disorder also to have some of the characteristics of hysteria (i.e., either conversion or dissociative symptoms).

As I became acquainted with Susie, I came to know her as a person who wanted to be seen as well functioning, but who was, in reality, moody, periodically explosive, and at times, desperately needy. When I asked her about her experiences growing up, she told me that her family was wonderful. In later sessions, however, Susie related that her father was an alcoholic who physically and sexually abused her. She described strong feelings of revulsion and self-hatred. Susie reminded me of the patients with whom I worked in the group therapy milieu who were initially unwilling to express acceptance of themselves when imagining themselves as children.

I asked Susie to imagine that she could see herself as she was when she was a child. Then I asked her to picture herself in the present, as an adult comforting and nurturing the child she once was. Susie closed her eyes and was quiet for a while. I waited and, then after a few moments, asked her what she was feeling. Susie's eyes opened and, with a gleeful expression, she responded in a soft, high-pitched, childlike voice, saying, "Hello, Doctor Randy."

In our previous sessions, Susie addressed me as Dr. Noblitt. I was surprised by her different speech and behavior. “Susie,” I asked, “are you okay?”

“Silly, I’m not Susie. Susie went away.”

“You’re not Susie?”

“No-o-o,” she playfully drawled.

“Then who are you?” I asked.

“I’m Little Susie.”

Observing Susie in her hospital bed, I saw a fully grown woman of normal weight and slightly taller than average. Yet, despite the evidence of my eyes, the patient’s voice had the intonation, rhythm, and articulation of a little girl. “Little Susie” told me that she was four years old and that she came out to talk to me because she had watched me talk to “Big Susie,” and she decided that she liked me. She complained that no one would listen to Big Susie and that Big Susie felt alone and scared. Little Susie thanked me for listening to Big Susie and gave me some additional historical information that the patient had not previously revealed.

After this conversation between Little Susie and myself, the patient became quiet again. A few moments later, Susie’s expression and voice returned to their previous adult-like quality. She showed no signs of having any recollection for the conversation between Little Susie and myself, and when I asked her if she knew anyone by the name of Little Susie, she said she didn’t know what I was talking about. She did say that something about the session had made her feel better, but she did not know what it was.

I left her hospital room puzzled and bewildered. What I had just witnessed appeared to be a textbook case of MPD. But how could this be—given that I did not consider MPD to be a legitimate diagnosis?

In proceeding with the evaluation of Susie, I looked for alternative explanations other than the MPD diagnosis but could find none. In fact, she began to show more of these alternate identities as the assessment continued, and some of her alter personalities began to narrate stories of cruel and sadistic abuse in Susie’s childhood. Each of her personalities was different in some way. Some were expressed as children, some enacted the role of teenagers, and some were portrayed as adults. The memories of these alternate identities were also sometimes different and, at times, arguments would ensue among the personalities regarding the veracity of their various accounts. My inability to find an alternate explanation for

Susie’s behavior forced me to concede that that her correct diagnosis was MPD.

Some of Susie’s emerging alternate identities reported that the allegations of abuse were just “made up.” I tried to explore both sides of this inner controversy in order to arrive at the truth. For example, a particular alternate identity would take executive control and speak: “I’m Billy. The stories you’re hearing are just made up. In fact we don’t even have MPD.” I asked “Billy” why he used a different name from Susie. Billy had no answer and simply disappeared for the moment. Other alternate identities expressed great relief that someone was willing to listen to “them.” Some expressed fear that there would be retaliation, usually by other internalized identities, because some of the other alter identity states were “telling the secrets.”

Although the theme of secrecy was paramount in Susie’s narratives, she also expressed the need to be able to talk about her strong pent-up feelings. When describing the repeated incidents of abuse, alters would sometimes weep pitifully, and at other times, they would recount these stories wearing the blank and glassy expression characteristic of individuals in a state of shock. Occasionally, child alter identities would playfully emerge just to make friendly conversation.

One of the male alters seemed particularly angry and hostile, making threats toward me and denying the accounts of childhood abuse and that Susie had MPD. Initially, this alternate identity would not identify “himself,” but once when provoked, “he” stood up in front of me and defiantly announced, “I am the ‘Evil One.’ ” When the alter identified “himself ” in this way, I incorrectly assumed that “he” was introducing “himself ” merely as an evil alternate identity. Much later, I came to realize that the “Evil One” was an internal representation of the devil.

This clarification did not become apparent until after approximately two years of therapy with Susie when stories of ritual abuse in a satanic cult began to emerge. As time went by, her stories became more bizarre and incredible. However, the alternative explanations were even more unbelievable. Suffice it to say that at this time, I believed that this patient was demonstrating symptoms consistent with a diagnosis of MPD. The notion of ritual abuse had not even occurred to me. The idea of MPD alone was sufficiently bizarre to stretch my capacity for new ideas to the limit.

CHAPTER 4

Multiple Personalities

It was difficult accepting the concept of multiple personality disorder (MPD) for several reasons. Until the time I consulted with Susie, the idea of this diagnosis ran counter to my education and clinical experience. Furthermore, a publication by Nicholas Spanos and his associates (1986) indicated that alternate identities could be created by hypnosis. I had heard some other professionals claim that all of the cases of MPD that had been reported thus far were found in individuals who had undergone hypnosis. It seemed reasonable to assume that MPD was created in patients who were highly suggestible[1] by practitioners who were using hypnosis. Some authors stated that individuals with MPD appeared to go into spontaneous trances (e.g., Bliss, 1984a).[2]

Although I had not used hypnosis with Susie, she did appear to enter trance states during our sessions. Was she experiencing spontaneous trances? Other authors reported that spontaneous trance states were common among persons with MPD. Was it possible that Susie did not have MPD before she met me? What if Susie was merely an extremely hypnotizable person who sometimes experienced trance states without a formal hypnotic induction? When I asked her to imagine herself as an adult nurturing herself as a child, was it possible that I inadvertently put the idea in her mind that she might be two different people? Might she have responded to this as if it were a suggestion *and then* developed MPD? What if I were the one who caused her MPD?

An article in the professional literature addressed this question of therapy-induced MPD (Spiegel, 1974). According to Spiegel, there are certain highly hypnotizable individuals whom he called “grade 5s,” corresponding to a test of hypnotizability that he developed known as the

Hypnotic Induction Profile. According to Spiegel, these highly hypnotizable individuals are prone to take on the attitudes and beliefs of their therapists and are so suggestible that he warns against the use of introspective psychotherapy with them. Spiegel and Spiegel (1978) further elaborate this theory in their book *Trance and Treatment*. In these publications, the authors recommend a differing approach to treatment based on the patient's measured hypnotizability, but no data are cited that demonstrate that highly hypnotizable patients improve more with the treatment they recommend. Furthermore, according to Cohen (1984), tests of hypnotizability, including Spiegel's, have not been readily accepted by clinicians: "The data lead to the conclusion that none of the tests of hypnotizability have yet proved their efficacy to even significant minority of clinicians" (p. 79).[3]

I worked further with Susie in an attempt to learn more about her experiential world. I especially wanted to evaluate whether it was our therapy that contributed to her mental fragmentation and the various alter identities that were appearing. As each alternate identity emerged, I attempted to get an individual history of that particular identity by asking questions such as, "When did you first come into existence?" and "How old were you?" or "How old was the body?" or "What was happening then?" Although the various alternate identities were different, some being helpful and cooperative while others were hostile and adversarial, most were willing to give an individualized history and claimed they had been created by Susie's mind when some overwhelming or traumatic event occurred. For example, "Little Susie" told me that she had first come into existence when Susie's father forced her to stand on the hot metal grating over a gas floor furnace that burned the soles of her feet. The notion that trauma was related to the creation of these alter identities was not suggested to the patient by me in our previous conversations. At that time, I was unaware of the relationship between trauma and dissociation. Furthermore, in all cases, when I obtained a history of a particular alternate identity's experiences and memories, the alternate present told me that "he" or "she" had come into being at some time long before I worked with the patient.

A few years later, I read Frank Putnam's (1989) *Diagnosis and Treatment of Multiple Personality Disorder*, which especially addressed the question of whether MPD could be created by the interventions of a therapist using hypnosis or whether other therapeutic interactions might create this disorder. Putnam seemed to be describing the same phenomena I was observing. His book explained that many of the alternate identities have histories associated with experiences that occurred long before therapy commenced. Putnam noted that the pseudo-personalities supposedly created by hypnosis have markedly different characteristics than genuine alternate identities seen in patients with MPD.[4]

This has also been my experience. In attempting to help clients stabilize, I sometimes suggested to them that they would be able to create more "helper" alternates, but this strategy was never successful. Although it is possible to change an already-existing alter's name, habits, sense of identity, and job, I have never been able to use hypnotic suggestion to create alter identities who have any enduring reality or significance to the patient. Additionally, the task of modifying the characteristics of alters already in existence is not easily accomplished (e.g., in a few sessions of hypnosis) but normally engages the client and therapist in lengthy, difficult, and labor-intensive work. The suggestibility of the patient does not seem to be an effective conduit for promoting meaningful or lasting change. Otherwise, multiples could simply be encouraged to say to themselves, "Every day, in every way, I am getting better and better." Experience has taught me that such an approach does not work.

Frequently Susie, the host personality,[5] denied any knowledge of the other identities' existence, and the alters sometimes expressed resentment that she didn't acknowledge them. Occasionally, the alternates would do things to prove to Susie that they were real. They sometimes took executive control of her body and engaged in behaviors that Susie neither appreciated nor approved. In some cases, Susie remembered engaging in the harmful or undesirable behaviors, but in other cases, she had amnesia for the events that occurred. Sometimes the alter identities wrote notes to Susie, and occasionally to me, for which Susie often denied memory of having written. On other occasions, they described traumatic events for which Susie was previously amnestic. When confronted with such reports of abuse made by her inner "personalities," Susie sometimes recognized the veracity of what the alters reported to her, but on other occasions she was unsure. Because these alter identities described an existence and a history that antedated my interactions with the patient, and because I was unable to enact any significant changes in them simply by suggestion, I have concluded that it would be extremely unlikely that they were produced by therapy.

Nevertheless, this is a most curious phenomenon. Why do some individuals seem to dissociate into separate selves in the presence of trauma?

This question was not readily solvable, and there was an endless stream of these trauma survivors seeking immediate attention. Many of them initially had no conscious awareness of the cause of their distress. Instead, they came to my office with a long list of psychiatric and health-related problems.

One such patient was “Pat.” She was in her 40s, small and emaciated, and she looked much older than her actual age. Her hair was styled in a short pixie cut, and her eyes appeared sunken, empty, and deeply sad. She told me that she had panic attacks and agoraphobia for which she had been unsuccessfully treated by a nationally known phobia specialist. She was fearful of leaving her house, driving a car, or being in crowded places such as shopping malls. She was anorexic and had a hand-washing compulsion that was so severe that her hands sometimes bled from the self-inflicted dryness and excessive wear from her compulsive scrubbing. She claimed to be chronically fatigued at least in part because she had an exhaustive and time-consuming house-cleaning ritual that occupied so much of her time and energy. However, her low caloric food intake also may have been a factor. Furthermore, Pat’s cleaning compulsion left her without any free time to enjoy recreational activities or other pleasures of life. She was depressed and felt hopeless that her life would never be anything more than joyless drudgery at best.

Pat’s long history of treatment, including a lengthy psychiatric hospitalization, left her feeling frustrated and without hope. Together, we developed a treatment plan to gradually reduce her compulsions and phobic behavior and increase her intake of food. Although she made slow but steady progress toward her treatment goals, she also appeared to be experiencing a kind of persistent, passive resistance. When we talked about the prospect of her improving her life, she expressed a strong motivation to do so, and yet her actual behavior seemed to consistently sabotage her progress. We discussed this idea and she agreed that there was significant resistance[6] within her, but she didn’t understand it or why it was there. I proposed that we could explore this question further using the psychotherapy technique of role-playing.

I asked Pat to consider the idea that part of her mind wanted to get well, and it was for that reason that she sought therapy in the first place. I also offered the possibility that part of her mind might not want to get well, and so as a result she might experience some resistance to her therapy. I asked her to imagine that she was no longer speaking only for herself, but that she could act out and verbalize the thoughts and feelings of the part of her mind that might not want to get well. I told her that together we could discuss the possible reasons she might have for not making progress in this role-playing exercise. She was familiar with role-playing, and so we were able to proceed without any difficulty.

I addressed Pat as “Part,” which was short for “part of your mind that might not want to get well.” I said, “Part, why don’t you want to make more progress in therapy?” She paused for a moment and then began to detail her own feelings of self-revulsion and her belief that she was unworthy of enjoying a normal life. As she continued to elaborate on this theme, her speech subtly changed to a slower tempo and, after a while, she was silent and stared down at the floor with a blank expression on her face. Her silence prompted me to ask, “Part, could you tell me more about. . . . ” She interrupted me with a hostile glare and, in a harsh voice, snapped, “Don’t call me that.” I asked her, “What do you want me to call you?” In slow, angry, strident tone of voice, she responded, “The Evil One.”

At that moment, I was at a loss for words. After regaining composure, I simply tried to keep her talking. I remembered Susie’s alter identity, the “Evil One,” and saw similarities in Pat’s persona by the same name. Both interacted in a strikingly similar manner. Both glared at me menacingly and spoke in a low-pitched, raspy voice. Both referred to the self [7] in extremely critical, pejorative terms and in the third person (e.g., “she”). I encouraged her to continue talking, and she did.

Eventually Pat paused, again with her eyes lowered toward the floor and an empty expression on her face. I asked her to tell me more about what she was thinking and feeling. She began to speak, but her voice was different. It was soft, higher-pitched, and childlike. I was reluctant to ask her to tell me her name in the event that such a question might suggest that a different “person” was expected. Yet, she *seemed* like a different person. In order to get around this dilemma, I simply asked her to spell her name for me.

“B-A-B-Y,” she responded with an impish grin.[8]

“Baby” initially began talking to me in a friendly, cheerful manner, but her mood became increasingly somber as she began to describe sexual abuse by her brother with whom she was forced to sleep in childhood.

Again I was at a loss for words. After a while, she looked at me with a curious and somewhat disoriented expression. It appeared as if she did not know what we had been talking about.

"How do you feel?" I asked her.

"Fine," she responded.

"Tell me what you remember about our session today," I inquired.

Pat was able to describe what had transpired during our appointment until she came to the part of our session where she had talked to me using the names of Evil One and Baby. I pressed her for more detailed information, but she was unable to recall that portion of our therapy hour.

As I continued seeing more individuals like Susie and Pat, I began to consider that MPD and dissociation of identity were not as rare as I had been led to believe. I obviously needed more information, and I began reading more books and journal articles. I also joined a local MPD study group facilitated by Gary Lefkof, MD,[9] a Dallas psychiatrist skilled and knowledgeable in this field. In my discussions with other therapists, I learned that some of them were developing experience with MPD and were becoming acquainted with a related topic that some of my patients had just begun to speak of—ritual abuse.

I recognized my need for further education in the area of dissociation and MPD. I joined the International Society for the Study of Multiple Personality and Dissociation (ISSMP&D), which is now the International Society for the Study of Trauma and Dissociation (ISSTD).[10] The ISSMP&D's monthly newsletters and its quarterly journal, *Dissociation,*[11] became a helpful source of information. In one of its articles, Bennett Braun (1988a, 1988b) described what he called the "BASK" model of dissociation. According to Braun, patients with MPD were capable of dissociating along several psychological dimensions, specifically, behavior, affect, sensation, and knowledge.

But what exactly is dissociation? Why would some people be unable to remember things that they had actually done? Why would mental functions that normally worked in concert seem disconnected? Different authors offered different interpretations.[12]

The topic of dissociation has an intriguing history and extensive related literature.[13] Henri Ellenberger's book *The Discovery of the Unconscious* (1970) is one of the classic histories of psychodynamic psychiatry's early beginnings and provides chapters on the contributions of Pierre Janet, Sigmund Freud, Alfred Adler, and Carl Jung. Ellenberger traced the ancestry of dynamic psychiatry beginning with the magical world of shamans and witchdoctors through the historic accounts of demon possession in Europe. He wrote, “Possession eventually disappeared, but it was replaced by multiple personality” (Ellenberger, 1970, p. 111). Adam Crabtree’s book *From Mesmer to Freud: Magnetic Sleep and the Roots of Psychological Healing* (1993) built on Ellenberger’s thesis adding details about the continued evolving thinking about dissociative phenomena that eventually led to Freud’s psychoanalytic theory.

One interpretation of dissociation is that it is a defense mechanism. Although this was not part of Janet’s original formulation,[14] Josef Breuer and Freud wrote:

> The more we occupied ourselves with these phenomena the more certain became our convictions that the splitting of consciousness, so striking in the familiar classical cases of double consciousness, exists rudimentarily in every hysteria, and that the tendency to this dissociation, and with it the tendency towards the appearance of abnormal states of consciousness which we comprehend as “hypnoid states,” is the chief phenomenon of this neurosis. In this view we agree with Binet and with both the Janets. (1893/2011, pp. 230–231)[15]

The psychoanalytic notion of psychological defense mechanisms was first articulated in a paper written in 1894 by Freud, “The Neuro-Psychoses of Defense” (1894/1962), and later elaborated by his daughter, Anna Freud (1946), and other psychoanalysts (e.g., Laughlin, 1970). Essentially, the theory of defense mechanisms proposed that people protect themselves from emotional discomfort, pain, or even trauma through a variety of unconscious mental maneuvers. Dissociation is sometimes conceptualized as such a defense mechanism.[16] Although theories about defense mechanisms have been widely and popularly accepted by many mental health professionals, they are also difficult to test scientifically because they postulate hypothetical entities and functions not directly measurable by an outside observer.[17] But then this is one of the central problems in psychology. Internal mental and emotional processes are not normally observable in a purely objective way. Psychology is, at its best, the attempt to objectively study subjectively experienced phenomena.[18]

As my caseload of clients with dissociative disorders continued to grow, I was struck by the high incidence of poverty among these individuals. Prior to working with this population, my practice largely consisted of affluent residents of prosperous areas of North Dallas. However, it was soon evident that a large proportion of dissociative clients were only marginally functioning in the workplace, and many were unemployed or underemployed. Quite a few of these individuals had been in therapy for years before a diagnosis of MPD had been made and by then they often had exhausted any mental health insurance benefits they may have had.[19] Other therapists in the MPD study group also commented about the financial hardships endured by many of these patients and the fact that most of the therapists were doing increasingly more work on a pro bono basis. Unfortunately, this arrangement was also creating a financial hardship for many of the therapists, and some questioned whether they could afford to continue to work with this population.

Nevertheless, I continued to provide services to these clients. As they revealed their abusive histories like the layers of an onion, years of pent-up rage were released, sometimes resulting in temporarily increased self-destructive thoughts and behaviors. At the same time, their financial limitations restricted their ability to pay for necessary treatment. County and state facilities were not adequately responsive to their needs, and I found myself providing more and more services on a sliding scale or pro bono basis and working longer hours.

One of the most important lessons I learned was that many of these clients were excellent teachers. It occurred to me that the professional community could learn much from them. Unfortunately, rigid thinking is often difficult to overcome, and many clinicians have been resistant to reconsider their treatment philosophies or modify their professional views in the light of this newly growing body of knowledge.

I consulted with “Sharon,” a tall, attractive woman in her late 30s for almost two years. Sharon had originally come to my office because of violent discord in her home. Her husband accompanied her, along with two of their three daughters. Apparently, the older of the two daughters, “Patricia,” had, the week earlier, stabbed her younger sister in the hand with a fork at the dinner table. As a part of my evaluation of this family, I psychologically tested and interviewed each person who was involved in the family conflict. As it turned out, Sharon’s psychological testing showed the most serious problems. Her testing results indicated that she met the criteria for a diagnosis of borderline personality disorder. It is not an unusual situation in family evaluations when a child is brought in for treatment that another family member is found to be in greater distress and more psychologically disturbed than the child. I recommended that both the family conflicts and the individual problems of the family members be addressed in therapy. Sharon agreed to see me for individual psychotherapy.

Sharon told me that she thought she needed psychotherapy since her childhood but had also feared the prospect of actually doing it. She said that her parents had discouraged her from discussing personal family matters outside the home. When I asked her about her early family life, Sharon, like Susie and Pat, initially said that she had enjoyed a pleasant but uneventful childhood. However, as she continued talking in therapy, she began to relate abusive incidents inconsistent with her initial account of her family of origin.

Sharon recounted occurrences of physical and emotional abuse in her childhood primarily perpetrated by her father. She described him as a cruel, sadistic man with a violent temper who was physically and emotionally abusive to both her mother and herself. Sharon described her mother as a passive woman who frequently looked the other way, ignoring Sharon’s plight. Sharon denied any history of sexual abuse.

As we continued our sessions, Sharon began to narrate a history of repeated self-destructive acts, including two suicide attempts. She later amended her earlier report that she had not been sexually abused and described an incident with an older man who was apparently a family friend. Sharon said that this older man had lured both her and another young girl into his barn where he offered them both candy. It was there that the two girls were showered with the attention and affection that neither of them was receiving at home. Eventually, he fondled them sexually and required that they do the same with him. Sharon told me that her girlfriend divulged what was happening in the man’s barn to her own parents but that they did not believe their daughter and accused her of lying. Sharon said that she felt guilty for not corroborating her friend’s complaint but she feared getting into trouble herself. I asked if she continued to keep contact with this childhood friend, and she said no. Her friend committed suicide before completing high school.

On one occasion, Sharon telephoned from her home to say that she was feeling particularly depressed and self-destructive. It was a Sunday and my office was closed, but I agreed to meet her there. When I drove into the parking lot, I saw Sharon was already there waiting. She was seated in front of the office building that was locked for the weekend. Next to her were several empty beer bottles. I knew from her history that she frequently consumed alcohol before her acts of self-injury. I led her into the building, and we walked down the hall to my office.

Once there, Sharon became quiet. She stared at the floor; her eyes were glazed with a distant expression on her face. She began to murmur under her breath: “I want to see blood. I have to see blood.” It was obvious that she was experiencing an impulse to cut herself. Although I had heard this from her before, her words still provoked a strong sense of apprehension. I tried to convince her to find some more appropriate alternative to her self-destructive feelings.

“I don’t think you understand how bad I feel. Well, I’ll show you how bad I feel.” With that she reached into her purse and took out a razor blade and before I could react, she sliced open the inside surface of her left arm from her elbow to her wrist. I expected her to wince with pain, but instead, her response to the injury was an expression of ecstasy. Sharon’s eyes rolled upward for a moment and her eyelids fluttered. “Oh, that feels good,” she moaned.

I tried to wrestle the razor blade out of Sharon’s hand, fearing that she might injure herself further, but I couldn’t get it safely out of her grasp. Her expression of elation was gone now, and she looked at me threateningly and in a masculine, low-pitched voice barked, “Back off!” I told her I would let go if she would let the razor drop to the floor. She glared at me for a few moments. Finally, I felt her hand relaxing, and the blade fell to the carpet.

Sharon’s demeanor then changed. She was apologetic. She spoke to me in a gentle, childlike manner, apologizing for bleeding on my office furniture and carpet. Blood was now running down her arm, and I could see that the cut was deep. I asked her to come with me to the emergency department of the hospital next door. She followed me obediently with her head slightly bowed.

My office was adjacent to a community medical-surgical hospital, and we walked to the emergency department, and despite my efforts to stop the bleeding, Sharon dripped blood along the way. Once we arrived in the emergency room, I explained what had happened to the physician on duty. Quickly and efficiently the emergency room staff strapped Sharon to a gurney and effectively immobilized her. I stayed with her in a quiet corridor while she awaited further medical attention. She appeared subdued and drowsy for a time. Suddenly, Sharon glared at me, her face drawn in anger as she rhythmically repeated in a deep-pitched, hoarse voice, “Kill the bitch. Kill the bitch.” I asked her who she was talking about, but she only continued to repeat, “Kill the bitch.”

After Sharon’s wound was stitched, she was admitted to the psychiatric unit of the hospital. Some of those on her treatment team concluded that she had experienced a psychotic episode. Nevertheless, she was an enigma to the staff, and many of the nurses said they didn’t know what to do with her.

While hospitalized, Sharon and I met individually and she appeared to engage in dissociative switching with the appearance of distinctly different personality states. These inner identities had their own individual names and demonstrated characteristics consistent with her developmental history at different stages of her life. Other alter identities enacted behaviors that appeared to be totally alien to what was typical of Sharon at any age. When I addressed this phenomenon in her staff meeting, none of the other professionals involved in her care acknowledged seeing any of the dissociative symptoms that I was describing. So, with Sharon’s permission, I began videotaping some of our sessions. While some of the nursing staff reviewed these videotapes, Sharon’s busy psychiatrist showed no inclination to do so himself. The nursing staff seemed surprised to see Sharon’s alter identities revealing themselves in our videotaped sessions. Indeed, this was unlike anything they observed in the time they spent with Sharon on the unit. I asked Sharon why her behavior was so different in our sessions in comparison with her interactions with other staff members. In response to my question, her demeanor suddenly became childlike and she whispered, “People inside aren’t s’posed to be out.” I asked her why, and she took on a serious expression, “Sharon’s father said so.”

“When did he say so?”

“When the body was little.”

“Then why do you talk to me?”

“You won’t hurt us.”

In Sharon’s sessions with me, she not only dissociated but also began describing bizarre, sadistic, sexual abuse by her father. When her psychiatrist prescribed antipsychotic medication, Sharon became more passive and less overtly self-destructive, and she was discharged from the hospital.

I continued to follow Sharon on an outpatient basis, but her course in therapy was inconsistent with numerous episodes of marginal functioning. She began to show the presence of more alter identities that would identify themselves by name and talk to me in our therapy sessions. Her psychiatrist increased Sharon’s antipsychotic medication until she appeared to be showing toxic symptoms, including poor concentration, chronic drowsiness, slurred speech, and decreased short-term memory. In spite of, or perhaps because of being on, exceptionally high doses of medication, Sharon’s progress in therapy was quite limited. In fact, her functioning deteriorated intermittently and frequently, and she was rehospitalized on several occasions.

Eventually, Sharon’s psychiatrist referred her for electroconvulsive shock therapy (ECT). This is a psychiatric treatment method in which electricity is passed through a portion of the patient’s brain causing a convulsion often along with temporary memory loss and disorientation. ECT is a controversial treatment sometimes used with patients whose severe depression does not respond favorably to more conservative treatment.[20] Some psychiatrists recommend ECT because there is a literature that some patients later show signs of improved mood. Some also prescribe ECT out of desperation when psychopharmacology is ineffective. And certainly the fact that insurers, including Medicare, cover ECT gives psychiatrists an additional option in their limited arsenal of treatment strategies.

Sharon consented to ECT treatments because she was feeling a sense of desperation and hopelessness. She admitted being quite fearful of undergoing the procedure. Although her mood seemed temporarily improved after each ECT session, she reverted to the same level of poor functioning she had previously shown. I was concerned that the extremely high doses of antipsychotic medication and ECT were harming her and impeding her recovery. When I protested about the use of ECT and communicated my concerns regarding the high doses of medication to Sharon’s psychiatrist, I received an icy response.

Because Sharon was so unstable, her psychiatrist again admitted her to the hospital where he practiced. I continued to express my worries about her high levels of medication and questioned the fruitfulness of subjecting her to continued ECT treatments. The psychiatrist eventually acknowledged that she was showing signs of medication toxicity, and he agreed to begin to gradually reduce her dosage levels. Sharon continued to dissociate with alternate identities, and her obsession with blood, and other morbid themes persisted.

In order to better understand and monitor the progress of my dissociative clients, I ask each of them to keep a journal where they log their various feelings and experiences during the day. One of the curious things about these patients is that their handwriting style often changes depending on which particular alternate identity appears to be in executive control. Such changes in handwriting have commonly been observed by other professionals who work with dissociative clients (Armstrong & Loewenstein, 1990; Lewis, Yeager, Swica, Pincus, & Lewis, 1997; Yank, 1991). I also noticed that many of my dissociative patients would scribble and draw geometric shapes in their journals and elsewhere. Sometimes in art therapy, I observed patients with dissociative identity disorder entering an apparent trance state after looking at another patient's artwork. Surprisingly, this seemed to be especially true when the artwork[21] contained some of the stereotypical geometric designs that many of them were prone to draw. Periodically, I asked patients to describe their feelings or to free associate to their drawings or to the drawings of others. In the process, they often verbalized important information relevant to their recovery. In some cases, they said that they remember seeing the geometric designs or symbols as part of bizarre cult rituals in which they had allegedly been present.[22]

Once during one of Sharon's hospitalizations, she seemed unusually mentally unfocused and zombielike and complained that she felt "shut down." She said that she emotionally felt depressed but that her mind was blank.[23] Although her mental functioning was already deteriorated, it effectively came to a halt as we began our scheduled psychotherapy appointment. I asked her if she wanted to reschedule for another time but she was adamant that we continue. She requested help in becoming more focused, and I responded by asking her to free-associate with some geometric shapes. This procedure had been productive with other highly dissociative patients.

I drew some simple shapes on separate sheets of paper: a circle, a triangle, a square, and a five-pointed star. Sharon looked at them one at a time and described the first thoughts and feelings that came into her mind. Her responses were unremarkable until she came to the drawing of the star.

When I asked her what she associated with the drawing of the star, she responded, “sex.”

In free association, a person normally responds with a variety of different statements but the association of “sex” to the picture of the star was an unusual one, and I asked Sharon to tell me more about it.

“You know,” she said.

“No, I don’t know. Please tell me,” I responded.

“You know—it’s what it means.”

“It’s what *what* means?” I asked.

Sharon was hesitant to talk further and appeared frightened. “My Daddy said to never tell,” she whispered in a childlike voice with tears in her eyes. She appeared to want to communicate something but was extremely fearful of doing so. With my encouragement, she eventually explained that the figure of the star was something she often saw before her father raped her. I asked her how she was able to see a star under those circumstances, and she described a ritual whereby her father used to draw the star in blood on her abdomen. Sharon appeared to switch to a different child alter. Her voice was high-pitched and fearful.

“Who are you?” she asked me. “How did you get me here? I’m not supposed to be here. They will hurt me.” Suddenly, her behavior and speech were different. She appeared to be even more apprehensive than before and was initially reluctant to talk to me at all.

Finally, Sharon told me that her name was “Sacrifice” and that she had been given that name because her job was to be the sexual sacrifice at the rituals that occurred in her family’s home, usually on Friday evenings and typically with both of her parents present. I asked her what had made her decide to talk to me, and she said that she trusted me; she knew I would not hurt her. She said that I had a bright white “aura” or circular-shaped light around my head and that meant that I would not harm her.

I asked Sharon more about her “aura” experience. For some reason, these patients sometimes reported “psychic” abilities, including a belief that they could see auras. People with such beliefs sometimes think that there are some “gifted” individuals who can see lights around others’ bodies and from the color and other properties of the light they can make interpretations or judgments about the other person. Being that I am a skeptic, this was particularly curious to me. Although not an expert on researching the paranormal, what little I had read in the scientific literature consistently seemed to confirm that there was no scientific evidence in support of the reality of such purported phenomena. As I inquired further of this alter, she explained that she was supposed to have the ability to see auras as a result of some of the rituals in which she had been forced to participate. Her father had warned her that these experiences were to remain strictly secret.

I interpreted this “gift” as a probable hallucination[24] or illusion that the alternate personality state Sacrifice experienced because she believed that she had been in a ritual that was supposed to produce this ability. Later I encountered other patients whose alters also reported this ability. What I discovered was that the reported shape of the auras was exceedingly similar. Auras were described as being circular or oval shapes around the head of a person, similar to a halo.[25]

This came as a surprise to me because I thought that auras were supposed to be perceived as light around a person’s entire body. However, when I asked patients about their perception of the color of the aura they saw around me, the colors they reported seeing varied markedly, although most of them saw me as having some kind of light or luminous aura that they interpreted as meaning that I was kind and caring. The patients described color schemes with varying hues associated with differing personality characteristics. For example, one patient gave me an interpretation of the colors as follows: *White* represented goodness and purity; *gold* indicated saintliness or godliness; *red* designated passion, anger, and past suffering; *purple* meant power, authority; and *black*, not surprisingly, symbolized evil. Other patients reporting this experience sometimes interpreted the colors as having a slightly different meaning, but many were essentially in agreement.

Because my patients perceived my “aura” in colors that were not consistent, I concluded that these perceptions could not be interpreted as truly “psychic” experiences. However, the similarity of shape and associated interpretive beliefs described made me wonder if these individuals had been trained to see these “lights” in a particular manner. Curiously, Harner (1990), an expert on shamanism,[26] described how shamans or witch doctors are trained to “see” visions and have other “psychic” experiences.

One of my patients reporting a history of ritual abuse said that she was also raised Roman Catholic. Once in my office, while in a dissociated state, she took a picture of Jesus out of her purse and, while talking about it, called his halo an “aura.” I wondered then if the halos that are seen in some religious art works, especially in earlier times in history, might be related to this perception of auras that some people may have been ritually taught to experience.

As therapy with Sharon proceeded, she continued to evidence dissociated states, different voices, and different names for her different “selves.” Finally, one day when she spoke to me, she announced that her name was “Susan.” Because Susan was a newly identified inner person, I inquired about her own personal history. She was the first alter identity with whom I had ever communicated who said she came into existence during the time I was working with the patient. She said that she had come out the weekend before when the nursing staff had placed Sharon in protective restraints because Sharon was banging her head against the walls of her room. Susan said that Sharon didn’t have MPD and that the stories about the rituals and the sexual abuse “were all made up.” As in the example of Susie, described earlier, I noted the discrepancy of the patient’s denial of having MPD while using a different name for herself but I chose to not to point this out. Instead, I tried to keep her talking, and she did. She went to great lengths to say that Sharon was going to be okay and that Sharon was ready to be discharged from the hospital. I encouraged her to continue talking. The more she talked, the more difficulty she had maintaining her façade. Eventually she looked at me sadly as Sharon often did. I asked her what her job was.

“To say that the stories are all made up.”

“Why do you want to do that?” I asked.

“Because Sharon can’t take it if she was hurt that way.”

“Well, was she hurt that way or not?” I asked.

“Yes, it’s true,” she sobbed.

I continued to protest that Sharon was being overmedicated and that her ECT treatments were not helping and might even be harmful to her. The response of her psychiatrist, who was also her attending physician, was to remove me from her care.

In contrast, a different outcome was achieved in the case of “Mary,” whom I began to see in therapy at about the same time I was working with Sharon. She came to see me at the insistence of her husband. Mary had reportedly been depressed for as long as she could remember, but recently, at the age of 41, her mood had deteriorated dramatically. She felt anxious, nervous, and increasingly emotionally isolated from her husband and children. Neither her personal nor her professional life provided her with any sense of pleasure or satisfaction. Sex, never a particularly strong drive for her, had become an anathema. Her life simply was not working. Mary had never before sought therapy. She had briefly attended a free codependency group but recognized that the solutions to her problems would require a more intensive and individualized approach.

My first impression of Mary was of a woman caught up in what some call a mid-life crisis. She appeared to be very intelligent, highly articulate, and insightful in many respects. She seemed to recognize the nature of her problems but felt helpless to do anything about them. As with all of my patients, I administered psychological testing including a Minnesota Multiple Personality Inventory (MMPI) and Dissociative Experiences Scale. Mary's testing showed high levels of depression and anxiety, and the scales that measure posttraumatic stress were also highly elevated. As I engaged her in the therapeutic process, Mary began to relax and was able to communicate with greater openness and candor. However, after a few sessions, Mary began to dissociate with altered personality states appearing and reporting the now sadly familiar childhood history of chronic, sadistic, sexual abuse. Mary described her father's incestuous behaviors and recalled his threats that no one would believe her. Child alters wept when they recounted how Mary had hoped in vain for her mother's intervention.

Because of strong self-destructive threats from some of Mary's alternate identities, she entered a psychiatric hospital for a brief stay. However, during that time it was possible not only to stabilize her but also to work intensively toward full integration.[27] In a 10-day period, during which no medications were administered, Mary fused her alters. I had never participated in such a rapid process of integration and questioned whether it would be lasting or final. Shortly afterward, several newly identified alternate identities presented to describe experiences of ritual abuse. These alter identities recounted their experiences along with the powerful emotions that accompanied them and then reintegrated with the patient. In order to more objectively assess her progress, I readministered the MMPI, and the results showed a dramatic change for the better.

At this point in Mary's therapy, there was a remarkable physical difference in her, from her posture to her facial expression. As we continued to work in the postintegration phase of her therapy, Mary blossomed. Her self-destructive thoughts and depression vanished. She began taking better care of herself and taking pride in her appearance. She bought a new wardrobe and appeared more relaxed and self-accepting. She took a greater interest in her family, and her marriage reawakened, stronger and happier than ever before. Mary enrolled in graduate school, and four years later she earned a master's degree in counseling. From diagnosis to integration, Mary had been in therapy for four months. I terminated with Mary following a year of tapering aftercare, but I continued to receive periodic phone calls and visits during which she apprised me of her continued progress. Before moving away from Texas, I spoke with her, and she spontaneously described herself as a "survivor" of ritual abuse and reiterated that she was coping well and was basically happy with her life and feeling productive in her work and relationships. I wondered whether, over time, she would come to think of her memories of abuse as being merely fantasies, but apparently that has not been the case. We remain periodically in contact, and despite the passage of time and the various pressures and strains that are part of life, she continues to thrive. Now more than 20 years after her therapy and integration, she also continues to acknowledge that she was ritually abused in childhood.

To what can one attribute Mary's swift recovery? In spite of the terror she experienced, Mary also had a number of assets that may have significantly helped her. She was fortunate to have been very bright with a long history of relatively healthy functioning. Her life seemed focused toward realistic goals, and her MPD did not appear to have significantly distracted her from her personal or professional roles. Another advantage was that Mary did not become trapped in the mental health system where she might have suffered the same fate as so many other similar patients who spent years being inappropriately diagnosed, medicated, and hospitalized: in short, continually subjected to useless, if not overtly harmful, procedures. Her favorable outcome might have partly been the result of her father's death while she was still a young child, freeing her from a life of continued abuse. Additionally, she was fortunate to have a husband who was emotionally stable, healthy, and supportive.

Mary's case is atypical. Most survivors of ritual abuse require many years of psychotherapy. Unfortunately, many of them are never correctly diagnosed, and they go from one therapist to another, trying every possible remedy without any appreciable relief. For these individuals, the process of undergoing a repeated series of misdirected and fruitless efforts at therapy can be a form of revictimization that further damages the prospects of realistic hope and effective recovery.

CHAPTER 5

Possession, Ritual Abuse, and Dissociation

Two recent polls showed that most people in the United States believe that the devil is real.[1] We are among the remainder who do not. However, as researchers, we try to keep our personal beliefs separate from those of our clients and independent from our professional work generally. The same principle applies to psychotherapy. It is not the role of psychologists to convince clients to accept their personal worldview. Instead, psychologists are expected to help clients achieve improved functioning and a greater sense of satisfaction with their lives. On the other hand, there are legitimate mental health professionals who incorporate their religious and spiritual views into their treatment approach. This is not unethical as long as these therapists do not impose their own personal values and beliefs on clients without their consent. Some clients specifically seek psychotherapy with a particular religious or spiritual orientation.

Concerns have been expressed over the recent idealized portrayals of satanism and other occult practices that have surfaced in popular culture. These themes can be seen in movies, books, and music. Some have addressed the possible adverse effects of these influences on vulnerable and impressionable young people.[2] Psychiatrist and Professor Gunther Klosinski (2004) explained this problem in an article on adolescent satanism in the periodical *Scientific American Mind*. Dr. Klosinski, who is the medical director of the child and adolescent psychiatry and psychotherapy department at the University of Tübingen, Germany, notes: “Adolescents are naturally drawn to occult ideas, but parents and therapists should know the signs that indicate when this fascination has become deeper and more dangerous" (p. 84). Adolescent experimentation does not necessarily lead to participation in ritual crimes, although in some cases young people may engage in such practices as a reenactment of their own previous victimization.

In December 2001 we met Ulla Fröhling, the author of *Vater Unser in der Hölle: Ein Tatsachenbericht* (*Our Father Who Art in Hell: A Factual Report*) (1996). Fröhling is a sociologist and freelance journalist who authored the story of Angela Lenz (pseudonym), a satanic cult survivor in Germany. Mrs. Lenz's abuse experiences parallel the stories of U.S., Canadian, and British survivors with their themes of bizarre rituals, terror, dissociation of identity, and forced prostitution.

In our previous editions of *Cult and Ritual Abuse,* we discussed the historical and anthropological evidence of ritual abuse internationally, and we wanted to further explore the worldwide contemporary accounts of ritual abuse. This prompted us to publish *Ritual Abuse in the Twenty-first Century* (Noblitt & Noblitt, 2008) with 20 chapters by authors from the United States, Canada, England, Scotland, Germany, Greece, Israel, and South Africa. Chapters were written by mental health practitioners, physicians, law enforcement professionals, ritual abuse survivors, and university faculty. After the publication of *Ritual Abuse in the Twenty-first Century*, we were invited to speak at the Fifteenth Annual Northern California Child Sexual Abuse Awareness Conference in April 2009. It was there that we met Anne Johnson Davis, the author of *Hell Minus One* (2008). Anne's book told her story of childhood ritual abuse. The book included a foreword by Lieutenant Detective Matt Jacobson, an investigator for the Utah Attorney General's Office. Jacobson's foreword confirmed Anne's allegations indicating that he personally met and questioned the accused perpetrators who confessed in his presence. Earlier Anne had received written statements from these individuals also admitting to their abuses.

Other survivors have published their stories. In an article that appeared in *Ms*. magazine, a woman using the pseudonym Elizabeth S. Rose described her ordeals in a multigenerational satanic cult in which the "leader did not believe in the existence of Satan and told me that I needn't either" (Rose, 1993, pp. 44–45). According to the author: "Belief in Satan is cultivated in order to instill fear and the use of rituals as an emotional straitjacket designed to keep cult members under control" (Rose, 1993, p. 45).

Another survivor, using the pseudonym Margaret Smith (1993), wrote the book *Ritual Abuse: What It Is, Why It Happens, How to Help*. She was a researcher and the founder of an organization and newsletter *Reaching Out,* which provided information, emotional support, and advocacy for other survivors. Smith described in some detail her own experiences of ritual abuse as well as reports she obtained from other survivors. In addition to having read her book, I spoke with her by telephone and met her in person. Her descriptions of ritual abuse were remarkably similar to the accounts I heard from my own clients. Barbara Jackson (1993), a ritual abuse survivor and Harvard-educated biochemist, spoke eloquently regarding her experience of ritual abuse at the National Conference on Crimes against Children in September 1993 in Washington, D.C. She addressed the potential for survivors living meaningful and productive lives and the urgent need for our society to recognize and address this problem.

Other survivor stories have been published as books (Adams, 1999; LaBriere, 1997, 2009; Shurter, 2012), as chapters in edited books (Fotheringham, 2008), and as articles in periodicals. Survivors have also served in leadership roles as advocates (Adams, 2008) and researchers (Riseman, 2008; Smith, 1993). There is a movement of survivors that is growing and supported by organizations such as Survivorship and Stop Mind Control and Ritual Abuse Today in the United States and Adults Surviving Child Abuse (ASCA) in Australia.

Some health care providers are by their own reports ritual abuse survivors. For example, Dr. Cathy Kezelman, a physician in Australia, described her own past ritual abuse experience and recovery in her book *Innocence Revisited: A Tale in Parts* (Kezelman, 2010). In the ritual abuse survivor autobiography *Silent No More: The Lamb Speaks*, the author, Dr. Margaret Lamb Johnson Hayes, wrote, “If I, as a board-certified psychiatrist and a former officer of the U.S. Air Force and the Foreign Service, am not credible, who is?” (2013, p. 214). The results of the Extreme Abuse Survey for Helping Professionals (P-EAS) showed that among the 248 professionals who responded, 18% indicated that they were ritual abuse/mind control survivors (Becker, Karriker, Rutz, & Overkamp, 2013).

The first published description of the psychiatric treatment of a ritual abuse survivor appeared in the book *Michelle Remembers,* co-authored by patient Michelle Smith and her psychiatrist, Lawrence Pazder (1980). The book represented a Roman Catholic perspective and included a comment by the bishop of the diocese of Victoria, British Columbia, who cautiously refrained from validating Michelle's story, per se, but recommended that people be open to what she had to say, stating that this was a subject worthy of further study and investigation.

The books *Breaking the Circle of Satanic Ritual Abuse* (1992) and *Cover-Up of the Century* (1994), by Daniel Ryder, were written by an individual who is reportedly both a survivor and therapist (certified chemical dependency counselor and licensed social worker). Among other things, he advocates a 12-step approach for the treatment of ritual abuse,[3] including those elements of spirituality formulated by the original Alcoholics Anonymous groups and expressed in the *Big Book*. Having also come to know Ryder personally, we found him to be an articulate, well-informed, and sincere person.

Other Christian therapists have addressed the issue of ritual abuse from both clinical and spiritual perspectives. Holly Hector authored *Satanic Ritual Abuse and Multiple Personality Disorder* (1991). In her book, Hector outlines the relationship between dissociative identity disorder (DID) and what she believes to be a major cause of DID, satanic ritual abuse (SRA). Hector's message is positive and emphasizes the reality of psychological and spiritual recovery, noting that many individuals who have been abused in such cults erroneously feel unsalvageable. She encourages her readers not to be discouraged and argues that alternate identities who view themselves as loyal to their respective cults are not demons.[4]

Another Christian therapist who has published on the subject of ritual abuse is psychologist and pastor James Friesen.[5] Some of his views appeared in "Treatment for Dissociative Identity Disorder: Integrating Alter Personalities and Casting out Evil Spirits" (1989). In his book *Uncovering the Mystery of MPD* (1991), Friesen provided greater detail in describing SRA as a cause of DID and cites examples of patients' stories of abuse along with his observations of his clients in therapy. In a later book, *More Than Survivors* (1992), Friesen discussed case studies of seven clients with this disorder who came from a variety of geographical locations across the United States. More recently, he proposed what he calls The Life Model for clients with DID that addresses the client's environment, psychological and spiritual factors, and programming (Friesen, 2000). Friesen's ideas have generated some controversy because of his strong Christian approach to the problem (that some may view as a kind of bias) and more specifically his concept of demonic possession,[6] something that he thinks may occur in some cases of DID. Friesen believes that individuals with DID may experience both alternate identities as well as possession by demonic spirits and that both kinds of entities are distinguishable.[7] Some other Christian therapists agree. The author and physician M. Scott Peck (1983) wrote about patients in his own clinical practice who showed signs of what he believed to be possession by demonic entities.

The idea that people can be possessed by demons has been discussed by a number of authors in recent times. Representing the point of view of the Roman Catholic Church was Malachi Martin (1921–1999), a former Jesuit professor who taught at the Pontifical Biblical Institute in Rome. Martin's book *Hostage to the Devil* (1976) described the author's research into the reported modern phenomena of demonic possession and exorcism[8] in the Roman Catholic Church, citing specific case examples. Father Jeffrey Steffon (1992) also wrote about this subject in a book that bears the doctrinal approval of the Catholic Church, the *nihil obstat* and *imprimatur*. In his book, Father Steffon articulated the official position of the Catholic Church regarding the reality of Satan, evil spirits, and demonic possession. How might a person come to be possessed? Father Steffon answered this question with the following reference to Father Richard McAlear and Betty Brennan whom he cited as experts on the topic of demonic possession: First, a demonic spirit can attach itself to someone through a wound or trauma. Fr. McAlear calls this a ministering spirit. Secondly, a spirit can attach itself to a person through a repeated sinful action or sinful tendencies. This is a cardinal spirit. One way to remember some cardinal spirits is to remember the capital sins—that is, lust, pride, gluttony, sloth, envy, covetousness, and anger. These sins are against the cardinal virtues of prudence, justice, temperance, and fortitude. These virtues are the hinges of other virtues. Just as other virtues are in some way tied to the four cardinal virtues, so some spirits are tied to, or hinge upon, the cardinal spirits. A third way is through a person's generational heritage. People inherit their make-up from their parents—their physical attributes, mental abilities, psychological makeup, and spiritual characteristics. If parents have been involved in the occult, generational openness for the oppression will be passed along to their children. Exodus 20:5–6 states that a father's wickedness is passed on to his children for four generations, but blessings for a thousand generations upon the faithful. Finally, a demonic spirit can attach itself to a person through involvement in the occult. (Steffon, 1992, p. 169) Father Steffon’s book related cases of ritual abuse and crime associated with reported cult practices. More recently, the Reverend Thomas J. Euteneuer (2010) identified “seven degrees of demonic persecution” (p. 37), and of these seven, he found that the most difficult to recover from is SRA. According to Father Euteneuer (2010): Children born into witchcraft covens or Satanic cult families are initiated into their respective groups through Satanic rituals and consecrations. They are the most difficult to heal. The physical and emotional trauma of the rituals, inflicted from the earliest childhood, even from the womb, is so extreme that it fractures the personality and deliberately hands the child over to complete possession and ownership by the demons of the cult. Such seriously wounded individuals undoubtedly need the compassionate pastoral care of the Church, but they cannot be healed by exorcism alone. In fact, they need several elements working together for a full healing to take place. First, they need to make a total separation from all occult activity and persons actively involved in their abuse. Second, they need a skilled therapist who is knowledgeable in treating Dissociative Identity Disorder (formerly known as Multiple Personality Disorder). Third, they need a skilled exorcist and support team willing to hold regular prayer sessions in order to apply the full range of the Church’s spiritual resources to their case. Finally, they need a support team to reinitiate them into a healthy community of strong, loving relationships and true Christian fraternity. They have a long healing journey ahead of them and need as much support and affirmation as possible. As with all demonic afflictions, healing is only possible with God’s grace and is based upon the active cooperation of the individual. Full healing can take years of hard work by all involved, but it is truly possible. (p. 39) Other authors with different Christian backgrounds have also articulated their belief that demonic possession can and does occur (Koch & Lechler, 1970; Lasalandra & Merenda, 1990; Montgomery, 1976; Olson, 1992; Unger, 1971).[9] The late Tom Hawkins was an associate pastor of the Community Bible Church in Altoona, Pennsylvania, and later the founder and director of Restoration in Christ Ministries. He not only believed in the existence of demonic possession[10] but also provided pastoral counseling to individuals with DID. His wife, Diane, publicly revealed her own history of ritual abuse and has openly acknowledged her experience of dissociation of identity (2009). She continues the work of their ministry.

John Nevius's (1894/1964) *Demon Possession* is a book of historic interest. From 1854 to 1893, Nevius was a Christian missionary in China where he observed what he believed to be demon possession among some Chinese people. He also described cases of demon possession from India, Japan, Ceylon (now Sri Lanka), and Western cultures. He portrayed the victims of demon possession in terms that are similar to modern descriptions of dissociative disorders. In fact, Nevius admitted that there were a variety of different interpretations that might be made of his observations. However, he seemed unaware that trauma might be a causal factor and did not discuss this possibility.

Some Christians may directly or indirectly believe in forms of possession other than demonic possession. According to Robert Baker (1992), "Many Christians regard glossolalia[11] (i.e., speaking in tongues) as a sign of possession by the Holy Spirit" (p. 206). However, there are a variety of different possession-like religious experiences that are said to occur in a Christian context that have been documented by Garrett (1987) in his book *Spirit Possession and Popular Religion*.[12] The concept of possession, demonic or otherwise, is not unique to Christianity. Many religions and cultures throughout history have incorporated or propounded this belief.[13]

In addition to the notion of possession by an evil entity or the spirit of a deity is the concept of possession by the soul of another person (living or dead) or an animal's spirit. Perhaps the most exhaustive and scholarly work to date on the general subject of possession is T. K. Oesterreich's *Possession* (1966), first published in 1921 when Oesterreich was the head of the philosophy department at the University of Tübingen. Oesterreich's book was praised for "containing one of the finest collections of case histories of multiple personality and the phenomena of so-called possession this work has, so far as I know, never been superseded" (Gregory, 1966, p. vii). In his work Oesterreich thoroughly traced the various accounts of possession around the world from antiquity through his contemporary time.

Among the numerous contributions made by Oesterreich's book is his differentiation between *voluntary* and *involuntary* possession and the distinction between *lucid* and *somnambulistic* possession. In lucid possession, the individual is conscious for the experience and can remember it later. Somnambulistic possession occurs when the person is unable to recall his or her behavior or other events while in the possession state. Individuals with DID describe dissociative episodes that can be distinguished along the same lines that Oesterreich outlined for possession states. Some use the term *co-consciousness* to designate the experience of “being present” during the episode and the ability to remember it later. Without co-consciousness, DID clients are simply amnestic when other alternate identities take executive control and many of them describe the experience of “losing time.”

One of the remarkable things about the reports of DID and possession phenomena is their similarity to one another. We have argued this point since the first edition of *Cult and Ritual Abuse* (Noblitt & Perskin, 1995). The *DSM-5* now acknowledges this relationship in its new definition of DID that includes: “Disruption of identity by two or more distinct personality states, which may be described in some cultures as an experience of possession” (American Psychiatric Association, 2013, p. 292). A list of the features shared by DID and possession is as follows:

1. Both possession[14] and DID[15] are more frequently identified among females than males.
2. Both possession[16] and DID[17] reportedly may occur sometime after traumatic experiences, rituals, or ordeals.
3. Both possession[18] and DID[19] have been associated with cults, primitive or preindustrial on the firsthand, or modern Western on the secondhand.
4. A sense of secrecy is often a factor in possession[20] and DID.[21]
5. In both possession[22] and DID,[23] the individual may have experiences for which he or she is later amnestic.
6. In both possession and DID, the experience of trance states are common.[24]
7. In both possession and DID,[25] the individual may, at times, experience co-consciousness or a shared awareness with the alternate or possessing entity.
8. One characteristic of both possession[26] and DID[27] is that the afflicted or affected individual frequently acts out behaviors that are uncharacteristic of him or herself.

9. In both possession[28] and DID,[29] there may be strong factors of social control present that some hypothesize to be related to the creation and expression of the inner identities.
10. In both possession[30] and DID,[31] the usually present identity is often called the host.
11. In the *DSM-IV-TR* (American Psychiatric Association, 2000), both possession and DID were listed as dissociative disorders.[32]
12. In both possession[33] and DID,[34] the inner entities that take control of the body may be characterized as animals, spirits, demons, and deities.
13. In both possession[35] and DID,[36] there are accounts of individuals engaging in behaviors that defy "the recognized physical limits that define normal embodied existence, particularly with respect to the perception of pain" (Mulhern, 1991a, p. 773).
14. Reports have appeared that a disproportionate number of individuals affected by possession[37] and DID[38] believe they have psychic or paranormal abilities.
15. Mulhern (1991a) also argued that both individuals experiencing possession and DID shared a lengthy list of concurrent problems that included psychosomatic and other health complaints, family and marital problems, and explicitly psychological symptoms.

Sherrill Mulhern observed that the poverty seen in individuals with possession was not present in DID patients; however, economic privation is actually prevalent among both.[39] Perhaps this dilemma is not widely known to the public or to those therapists whose clinical practices consist of fully funded clients. Therapists who are unwilling to do pro bono work or to accept Medicare or Medicaid[40] health insurance are unlikely to see many DID patients because so many of them are impoverished due to inability to sustain employment (Noblitt & Noblitt, 2009; Rutz, Becker, Overkamp & Karriker, 2008).

What then is the relationship between possession and DID? We attempt to answer this question by first clarifying what we mean by dissociation. We previously wrote about dissociation as a process with four functional categories (Noblitt & Noblitt, 2012b), but we recently added a fifth one, volition. Thus, we now break dissociation into five functional categories:

(1) dissociation of consciousness, (2) dissociation of memory, (3) dissociation of identity, (4) dissociation of perception, and (5) dissociation of volition. Dissociation of consciousness occurs in instances of trance states. Such states may vary in intensity from light trance to profound states such as stupor. Dissociation of memory is evident when people have more extensive memory loss than would be expected, for example, psychogenic amnesia that is not better explained by physical injury or neurochemical effects (e.g., drugs). Dissociation of identity where individuals suddenly experience themselves as another person or entity is the cardinal feature of both possession and DID. Dissociation of perception may be a way of understanding the auditory, visual, and tactile hallucinations that may be experienced by people who appear to be either spiritually possessed or who meet the criteria for DID. Dissociation of perception may also include a disrupted sense of reality regarding one's self, including one's body or the physical environment. Many of these individuals have problems with the performance of voluntary behavior. This last category also includes automatisms, other automatic behaviors, and dissociative cataplexy (the inability to voluntarily move or exert muscle tone). As mentioned earlier, trance states, amnesia, hearing voices, and automatic behaviors are frequently seen in possession and DID.

Trance states are also associated with hypnosis. As previously stated, possession may be voluntary or involuntary. Our theory is that involuntary possession consists of intrusive hypnotic states where individuals have learned to take on the role of another entity, a person, a god, or a demon during repeated ritualistic scenarios. On the other hand, it should be noted that in some cultural contexts possession may be welcomed by the possessed person and may be considered a way of encountering that which is sacred. Such voluntary possession may occur without ritual abuse, but it does require that the possessed person be able to enter trance states, and the possessed person must have been taught the possessing spirit's characteristic behaviors so that these behaviors could be enacted during possession. However, in other cases, possession is involuntary; it occurs intrusively without the possessed person's intent or consent. This is accomplished in traumatic rituals where the survivor is taught to respond with deep trance and enact the characteristics of the possessing spirit. Thus, involuntary possession is often considered to be a malevolent experience.

This is also true of DID, although one can substitute the word *pathological* for *malevolent* when the experience is viewed as unhealthy or maladaptive.

Our theory is that involuntary possession and DID are caused by ritual abuse.[41] Ritual abuse consists of circumscribed traumatizing procedures that cause involuntary deep trance states, and dissociation of consciousness, identity, memory, perception, and volition. In ritual abuse, the survivor is taught to enact the role of a different person, spirit, or animal during the abusive rituals. Once the survivor has been trained to experience and enact the ritualized dissociation of identity, additional alters can be created in other ritual venues. Eventually, survivors may be able to create new alters without such specific ritual training.

Thus, our theory is fundamentally different from other theories that postulate that dissociation of identity is caused by the cumulative effects of severe traumas. We hypothesize that dissociation of identity is the result of traumatic training. Such training produces psychological shock in its victims. This training may occur in demonic rituals, circumscribed and repeated incestuous abuse where training and grooming are a central component to the abuses, ritualized prostitution and sexual slavery, and other kinds of torture where instruction in dissociative experience and behavior is part of the abuse. Survivors are taught to suffer severe pain and terror followed by emotional and somatosensory numbness and dissociation of consciousness (trance). During these trance states, the individual may be further taught that he or she is a different person for ritual purposes or for other assigned "jobs." The newly created alters may be given names or other identifiers such as numbers or codes. The survivor is also trained to respond to particular cues that become triggers and have the capacity to elicit specific dissociative responses without the survivor's awareness. Thus, the alters and their characteristic behaviors can be summoned by particular triggers for which the survivors have no conscious awareness, similar to the effects of posthypnotic suggestion. However, unlike normal posthypnotic suggestion where the effects may rapidly decay with the passage of time (Calandrino, Kurtz, & Strube, 2001), this traumatic training in trance is more likely have persisting effects.

Survivors sometimes described traumatic rituals that were designed to restore some semblance of psychological organization after they had been dissociated through the infliction of disorganizing traumas. During these organizing phases of abuse, the cult-created alternate identities may be given further definition and instruction. As a result, one of the kinds of control that such destructive cults have over an individual is the threat of madness (i.e., extreme mental disorganization) if an attempt is made to leave the abusive group. The cult leader may attempt to prove that he or she alone has the power to effect a “cure” over the raging emotionality present in the cult follower.[42] The net effect is the training of a person with dissociation of identity, memory, consciousness, perception, and volition with dependency on the abusers.[43] Thus, we have come to define *ritual abuse* as deliberately inflicted trauma that occurs in a ceremonial or circumscribed manner for the purpose of creating or manipulating already created alter mental states.

On one occasion when one of my patients felt a strong desire to harm herself, she was hospitalized. Shortly after her hospitalization, she gave me her journal to read. The first page was neatly printed with the following: I am being tormented.

I am crying out all of the time.
I miss my Daddy.
I miss my Queen mother.
I hate myself.
I am confused.
I hear demons.
I see the demons.
I am breaking.
We are all breaking.
The demons are watching us all the time.
There is not time for anything, not time for love or friends or relationships.
There is not even time to breathe.
The demons are demanding us to return to their orchards.
There is protection in their orchards.
They are carefully orchestrating our sentencing if we do not return.

Later in her journal, there was a page written in a childlike scrawl: We are the children and we are afraid. Can anybody help us. [*sic*]

Are we going to die?
We think that they are going to jump through the glass and kill us all.
They say the numbers [deleted] all the time.

We don’t know what they mean.

Following this, I found a page that was neatly written in script: This is ideal [*sic*] there is so much glass here to break.

Just remember these people really don’t care at all about you.
If anyone tries to interfere with our plan I will make sure that they are taken care of and remember the first opportunity you get to leave this place do it.
Please try to understand that I must impose a strict penalty upon you for bringing us here.
I should have stopped it but I’ve been busy with other things.
Is your head starting to hurt? The disorientation will become more predominant.
You will sleep but feel unrested.
You will wash but feel unclean.
And remember they will probably poison your food and drink.
They all want to bring us down but we won’t let them.
And if they try to [deleted] with us there is only one answer.
We must die.
You know that we would like to go on living in the manner that we used to, but we can’t.
Then death is the only way out.
Don’t worry it will all be peaceful.

Later in her journal, I found this entry:

Just woke up I guess for the second time.
I’m not sure where I am but I am in a hospital room, because there are hospital beds, but I am dressed.
Looked out the door and I saw all different kinds of people.
There is no phone in here.
I can’t call anyone. Oh God I’m scared.
I think I’ve been drugged.
I told one of the nurses I was “Sheila” and she said OK yea right—Get out of here. But it sounded like she was joking or something.
So I came back here maybe somebody will come in soon and tell me what’s going on . . . Sheila[44]

The ritually abused person often feels a need to continue at least some of the components of ritual practice in order to stave off mental disintegration. If the survivor doesn't participate in actual rituals, then the cult-abused individual may resort to bloodletting or other self-inflicted injury in an effort to prevent internal disintegration.[45] This explanation by my patients appears to be consistent with the anthropological literature describing possession cults that conduct rituals, sometimes traumatic, sometimes not traumatic, for the purpose of effecting a cure or improvement in the individual's functioning.[46]

For survivors trying to escape the influence of such destructive cults, this prospect may be discouraging. However, as many survivors have demonstrated through their progress in therapy, it is possible to leave these cults and find other more appropriate ways to engage in self-healing and establish a sense of self-directed inner control. This is a point emphasized by survivors Margaret Smith (1993), Chrystine Oksana (1994, 2001), Alexandra Rogers (1994), and others. Survivors can learn to resist tendencies toward self-destructiveness and self-sabotage. But to do so effectively, it is usually helpful to understand the underlying dissociative processes, how they came to be dissociated (most "host personalities" are initially amnestic for this information), and how to develop habits of effective internal dialogue with dissociated alternate identities. When the internal communication improves, the various dissociated inner identities can work in concert rather than in unproductive conflict.

In my experience, survivors of ritual abuse benefit from a healthy and respectful therapeutic relationship, a nurturing social support system, the opportunity to explore their experiences of abuse in therapy, including the details of any abusive training, and the opportunity to desensitize the various triggers and disturbing recollections. Many benefit from learning more effective coping strategies and relational skills. Survivors who can develop these personal assets and desensitize the effects of triggers appear to make the most complete and enduring recovery. They report feeling less vulnerable, more fully integrated, highly functioning, and stable over time (Noblitt & Perskin, 2000; Noblitt & Noblitt, 2008; Rutz, Becker, Overkamp, & Karriker, 2008).

Perhaps most helpful of all is the process of learning that many of the perpetrators' messages are simply not true: "You will always be alone." "No one will ever love you (if they know what is inside you)," and so on.

Survivors who begin to learn to experience reciprocal trust and a capacity to relate to others effectively often report a genuine inner transformation along with improved functioning, self-esteem, autonomy, and satisfaction with their lives.

CHAPTER 6

Empirical and Forensic Evidence of Ritual Abuse[1]

In this chapter, we review the empirical literature on ritual abuse (RA), including research involving interviews of multiple individuals, the results of psychological testing, and surveys of RA survivors and helping professionals. The studies of children have typically relied on information obtained from their caretakers. In addition to the topic of ritual abuse, we also review the related research on organized abuse and mind control when it is clear that ritual abuse was a component theme of those studies. We begin with a brief discussion of previous literature reviews.

One of the earliest reviews was published in Valerie Sinason's book *Treating Survivors of Satanist Abuse* (1994). In her chapter "A Personal Review of the Literature," Sue Burrell summarized the accounts of books, single case descriptions, and multiple case studies as well as the literature related to interviewing and advocacy for RA survivors. Burrell noted that the material was difficult and disturbing and further complicated by the topic's controversy. Published the same year, Kathleen Faller's article "Ritual Abuse: A Review of the Research" (1994) provided a detailed critical analysis of the empirical studies, noting that there is corroborating evidence for some RA allegations.[2] A section on ritual abuse in the tome, *Memory, Trauma, Treatment and the Law* by Daniel Brown, Alan Scheflin, and Cory Hammond (1998) discussed selective but representative studies also concluded that some of the evidence supports RA claims. In our previous edition of *Cult and Ritual Abuse* (Noblitt & Perskin, 2000), we reviewed the related empirical literature and forensic outcomes. Reviews of organized abuse that include the topic of ritual abuse were published by

Gough, Kelly, and Scott (1993) and more recently in Michael Salter's scholarly paper, "Organised Abuse: A Neglected Category of Sexual Abuse with Significant Lifetime Mental Healthcare Sequelae" (Salter, 2012; Sidebotham & Appleton, 2012). These reviews made it clear that there is empirical evidence for some RA allegations. In this chapter, we provide an updated and expanded review of the empirical research.

The empirical studies of ritual abuse can be organized into four categories: (1) the frequency and credibility of ritual abuse disclosures to helping professionals; (2) suggestibility, rumor, and iatrogenesis as possible explanations for ritual abuse allegations; (3) children who have made RA allegations; and (4) adults who have made RA allegations. In addition to this overview of the empirical literature, we will discuss representative forensic cases.

In their national investigation of 270 cases of substantiated sexual abuse of 1,639 children in day care, Finkelhor, Williams, and Burns (1988) found 13% of the cases involved allegations of ritual abuse. Another of the early studies of the incidence of ritual abuse was Deborah Cole's doctoral dissertation, *The Incidence of Ritual Abuse: A Preliminary Survey* (1992). She sent surveys to 1,250 mental health professionals in California in Los Angeles and Orange counties, receiving back 250 responses. Of those, 46% indicated that they had seen RA patients or patients who met at least one of the criteria that Cole listed. Given her low rate of response, it is difficult to generalize about the incidence of RA from her sample to other populations, but her contribution is primarily in asking the question and setting in motion efforts to empirically study it.

In a national survey of 2,709 clinical psychologists who were members of the American Psychological Association, the authors investigated the frequency of RA allegations made to psychologists. This study showed that within their sample of psychologists, 70% denied and 30% acknowledged seeing at least one case of "ritualistic or religion-related abuse since January 1, 1980" (Bottoms, Shaver, & Goodman, 1991, p. 6). The authors also found that among the psychologists who had worked with at least one individual with allegations of ritual abuse, 93% believed that the harm had actually occurred. This report was part of a series of five studies later published by Goodman, Qin, Bottoms, and Shaver (1994). The first study involved a survey of a stratified random sample of clinical members of the American Psychological Association, American Psychiatric Association, and National Association of Social Workers. The second study was a survey of district attorneys' offices, social service agencies, and law enforcement agencies. The third study investigated the question of "repressed" and later "recovered" memory based on 490 cases, from which 43 were described as "repressed memory" cases and 447 were "no repressed memory" cases. The fourth study examined children's knowledge of satanic abuse. The fifth study investigated three types of religion-related child abuse: abusive acts intended to rid the child of demons, clergy abuse, and medical neglect for religious reasons.

From the data collected in their first study, these researchers concluded that 31% of the combined sample of psychologists, psychiatrists, and social workers had seen at least one case of ritual or religion-related abuse. There were 387 child RA cases, 674 adult RA survivor cases, 171 child religion-related cases, and 234 adult survivors of religion-related cases reported. The authors stated that the adult ritual abuse cases "were consistently the most extreme" (Goodman et al., 1994, p. 4). Of the adult ritual abuse cases, 33% reported cannibalism and 28% baby breeding for purposes of ritual sacrifice. Among the adult ritual abuse cases, they found that the victims were likely to be diagnosed with dissociative identity disorder (DID). They also found that child cases were "far more likely to be disclosed to authorities or professionals, to family members or neighbors, and to be linked to corroborative evidence, but were less likely to be disclosed in therapy than adult cases" (p. 4). The authors determined that the psychologists, psychiatrists, and social workers who responded to their survey "overwhelmingly believed both the allegations of abuse and the allegations of ritual or religious elements of the abuse" (p. 6).

Their second study of district attorneys, social services, and law enforcement agencies revealed that 23% had identified at least one case of ritual or religion-related abuse. "In general, the ritual cases with the most convincing evidence were unlike the Satanic ritual abuse stereotype" (p. 6). The authors expressed surprise that the rate of convictions in "ritual cases was almost as high as in religion-related cases" (p. 7). In their third study investigating the question of "repressed" and later "recovered" memory, they found that the "repressed memory" cases were more likely to be "ritual cases" in comparison with the "no repressed memory cases." However, when they excluded what they called "outlier" cases, the repressed versus not repressed memory effects disappeared.

The fourth study of children’s knowledge of ritual abuse showed that “children have relatively little knowledge of Satanic child abuse” (p. 10). Their fifth study considered 271 cases of religion-related abuse. They found that in 94% of the clergy abuse, 48% of the evil ridding cases, and 23% of medical neglect included allegations of sexual abuse. They found that DID and other dissociative disorders were diagnosed in over 20% of the evil ridding and medical neglect cases.[3]

Bucky and Dalenberg (1992) also surveyed 433 mental health professionals in San Diego County, California, using a 50-item questionnaire. They found that mental health professionals who reported high-frequency work with RA survivors were “professionals with many years’ experience and an apparent specialization (an inference based on cases seen) in sexual abuse” (p. 237). They also found that professionals with greater training in dissociative disorders and RA were more likely to see clients that they identified with those problems.

Another survey investigated reports of sexual and ritual abuse made to British psychologists (Andrews, Morton, Bekerian, Brewin, Davies, & Mollon, 1995). The researchers collected data from 810 British Psychological Society practitioners who had seen sexually abused clients. Regarding these psychologists’ “belief in essential accuracy of reports of SRA,” 3% reported never, 54% sometimes, 38% usually, and 5% always. Fifteen percent reported that they had worked with clients reporting satanic ritual abuse (SRA). Eighty percent of the psychologists who had seen one or more individuals with a stated history of SRA believed the allegations. In a more recent British study Ost, Wright, Easton, Hope, and French (2013) collected responses to an online survey of 183 chartered clinical psychologists and 119 hypnotherapists. Among the chartered clinical psychologists, 37.9% indicated that they had seen one or more cases of individuals with satanic or ritualistic abuse. The researchers found that 24.5% of the hypnotherapists had seen one or more satanic/ritual abuse cases. Along the lines of the Andrews et al. (1995) study they asked, “Are reports of Satanic/ritualistic abuse essentially accurate?” Among the chartered clinical psychologists, 1.6% responded never, 11.5% rarely, 27.3% sometimes, 29.5% usually, and 2.7% always. The hypnotherapists answered 10.1% never, 15.1% rarely, 21.0% sometimes, 12.6% usually, and 5.0% always.

Schmuttermaier and Veno (1999) obtained survey responses from a group of counselors consisting of 74 Center Against Sexual Assault (CASA) workers, 48 psychologists, and 27 psychiatrists in the state of Victoria, Australia. They found that 70% of their respondents accepted their definition of ritual abuse and that 153 cases of ritual abuse had been identified by 26 of the counselors between 1985 and 1995. Eighty-five percent endorsed the belief that ritual abuse is "an indication of genuine trauma" (Schmuttermaier & Veno, 1999, p. 55). The researchers found no relationship between the religious beliefs of the counselors and the number of RA cases they identified. They determined that the amount of professional training on the topic of child sexual assault was significantly related to counselors' identification of RA cases. Schmuttermaier and Veno (1999) also concluded that "Australian counselors are similar to their United States and United Kingdom counterparts in their identification and diagnosis of ritual abuse" (p. 61).

According to Jonker and Jonker-Bakker (1997), "The National Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Children in Britain reported in its 1989 Annual Report that seven out of 66 Child Protection Teams in England and Wales were currently working with children victimized by ritualistic abuse" (p. 542). In a survey of the membership of the International Society for the Study of Multiple Personality and Dissociation, Perry (1992) concluded that 88% of 1185 "respondents reported belief in ritual abuse, involving mind control and programming" (p. 4).

An international study of helping professionals was conducted by Becker, Karriker, Overkamp, and Rutz (2008) and Becker, Karriker, Rutz, and Overkamp (2013) and is part of their Extreme Abuse Survey (EAS) research series (http://extreme-abuse-survey.net/http://extreme-abuse-survey.net/). The Professional Extreme Abuse Survey (P-EAS) is an online questionnaire with 215 questions (and 53 optional ones) that was available from April 1 to June 30, 2007. Four hundred fifty-one (451) helping professionals from 20 different countries responded to at least one of the questions. This survey shows that 86% of helping professionals who have worked with at least one extreme abuse survivor report having in their caseload at least one survivor of SRA. Some of their other findings are as follows: 61% saw clients who reported ritual abuse by clergy, 85% said the majority of adult ritual abuse/mind control (RA/MC) survivors with whom they worked were diagnosed with DID, 63% said that they always take a neutral stance regarding the truth of an adult survivor's memories of RA/MC, 65% said that some of their clients' reports of RA/MC were based on continuous, rather than dissociated, memories. Regarding belief in their clients' stories, 3% of the helpers do not believe any of their clients who report RA/MC experienced ritual abuse, the rest reported belief in varying degrees concordant with the previous findings of Andrews et al. (1995) and Ost et al. (2013). There was a similar pattern where 5% did not believe any of their clients who report RA/MC experienced MC and the rest of the respondents indicated belief in varying degrees. However, because the EAS is the first survey to have explored reports of mind control, there is no comparable research to with which to compare it. Further, these findings indicated that 52% endorsed the belief that improbable events involving RA/MC might possibly have been "staged" to make victims believe they happened.

The previous study reported by Bottoms et al. (1991), and Goodman et al. (1994) criticized the psychotherapists who overwhelmingly believed the narratives of their RA client arguing that this belief was not based on any corroborated evidence. However, it is not clear that these authors asked questions or accepted answers unless they were consistent with the conservative standard of evidence used in criminal convictions that is "beyond a reasonable doubt." Most clinicians consider clinical evidence from a perspective that is closer to "the preponderance of evidence" legal standard.

The P-EAS went into more detail examining the helping professionals' reasons for believing their clients. These reasons included the following: significant memories of RA/MC fit logically into other aspects of the individual's life history forming a coherent narrative (89%), the types of dissociated identities observed were reflective of RA/MC (86%), the content of creative productions (such as art, sandtray stories, music, poetry) was consistent with RA/MC (79%), certain physical and medical sequelae could be explained as having been a result of RA/MC (75%), some reports of RA/MC were based on continuous memories rather than dissociated memories (65%), significant memories were corroborated by the testimony of other individuals (47%), and the individuals presented material objects consistent with reports of RA/MC (31%). Further, 18% of the helping professionals reported that they were RA/MC survivors themselves and all of them endorsed the statement, "The individual's memories were consistent with my own personal memories of RA/MC" (Becker et al., 2013).

These studies show that the overwhelming majority of surveyed professionals either believe RA narratives or they are open to the potential credibility of ritual abuse allegations. What would account for such a high degree of consensus? If RA claims are essentially false, then these therapists are at best misguided. Some have argued that false RA "memories" are implanted or created by inept or unethical therapists. If the patients' allegations are essentially true, then this high degree of concurrence may simply reflect the professionals' accurate assessment of their clients as abuse survivors.

As Becker et al. (2008, 2013) and Rutz et al. (2008) have noted, clients who make RA allegations appear to be genuinely traumatized in a manner that is consistent with their narratives, their specific psychological problems, and, we would add, their psychological testing results. In a study comparing 34 adult psychiatric patients making RA allegations with 31 patients making no such allegations, it was found that the group making RA allegations had significantly higher posttraumatic stress disorder (PTSD) scores on the MMPI-2 (Noblitt, 1995). In their study of preschool ritualistic and non-ritualistic sexual abuse, Waterman, Kelly, Olivieri, and McCord (1993) demonstrated that PTSD criteria were met for 80% of their sample of ritualistically sexually abused children as compared with 35.7% of the non-ritualistically sexually abused children. Other studies finding PTSD to be a significant component of the clinical picture of individuals reporting ritual abuse will be discussed further in this empirical literature review.

The notion that RA allegations are essentially false and the result of suggestibility and social influence has been proposed by a number of individuals (Frankfurter, 2006; Mulhern, 1991, 1994; Ofshe & Waters, 1994; Spanos, 1996). However, this hypothesis appears to reflect the authors' subjective opinions and speculations rather than any empirical research findings. In the literature, there are no empirically proven cases of individuals falsely claiming RA allegations due to their suggestibility and exposure to social influence.[4] Empirical studies by Leavitt (1997, 1999) showed that patients with recovered memories of childhood sexual trauma were less suggestible than psychiatric patients without such recovered memories of child abuse. Furthermore, in other studies Leavitt and Labott (1998, 2000) found that exposure to media accounts of ritual abuse and inpatient hospital treatment with other individuals reporting sexual abuse histories did not account for the “satanic” word associations and Rorschach responses among patients alleging histories of ritual abuse compared to controls. In fact, Leavitt and Labott (1998) found that among patients with RA histories, those with lower reported media exposure made significantly more “satanic” word associations and Rorschach responses in comparison to similar patients reporting a higher degree of media exposure. This finding is consistent with our own personal observations that many survivors tend to become “shut down” and more disconnected from their abuse narratives when overexposed to this material. Like other kinds of trauma survivors, they tend to be avoidant regarding traumatic themes similar to their own lived experiences. Nevertheless, Mul-hern argued that therapists who treat these patients develop their own personal beliefs about the reality of ritual abuse by attending conferences on the subject and then pass these beliefs on to their suggestible patients. However, the only study that has attempted to investigate the therapists’ beliefs about their patients’ allegations about ritual abuse longitudinally through the course of therapy shows that the therapists were initially skeptical and only later came to believe their patients’ allegations (Waterman, Kelly, Olivieri, & McCord, 1993).

In spite of the contrary research findings, some authors have speculated that RA allegations are more an artifact of suggestibility and social influence than real abuse. Jeffrey Victor (1993, 1998) described what he called satanic rumor panics. Victor argued that satanism is frightening and provocative to the general public and has been the source of numerous rumors for which he cited examples from the popular press. According to Sara Scott (2001), “much of the literature describing ritual abuse as a moral panic itself reads like a moral panic” (p. 48). This point is reiterated in Martin Katchen’s (2008) chapter, “Interrelated Moral Panics and Counter-panics: The Cult Brainwashing Panic and the False Memory/Ritual Abuse Moral Panic.” Even Philip Coons (1997), who has authored skeptical views regarding RA allegations, commented critically on Victor’s reinterpretation of RA outcries: “Unfortunately, it is impossible to tell from Victor’s cursory review of the evidence what really did happen at these 61 locations” (p. 108). Ross Cheit (2014), professor of public policy and political science at Brown University, has argued that assertions of a moral panic resulting from the allegations of child sexual abuse in day care venues is neither empirically based nor consistent with the evidence.

However, Coons (1994) contributed a study of his own on this question. He retrospectively reviewed the psychiatric records of 29 patients who had made allegations of SRA. He concluded that 76% of the patients had either dissociative identity disorder or dissociative disorder not otherwise specified but that he was unable to find any external corroboration of the SRA allegations. Three cases he labeled delusional and four were categorized as factitious. He concluded that in all but two cases “questionable” therapeutic methods were used. Weir and Wheatcroft (1995) reviewed 20 cases where ritual sexual abuse was alleged. Based on their evaluative findings, they concluded that false allegations of ritual abuse occurred in 75% of the cases and true allegations in only 25%. The primary weakness of these three studies is that they rely entirely on the subjective interpretations of the authors. The validity of the last two studies would depend on the ability of their authors to accurately diagnose ritual abuse and/or find corroborating evidence and the extent to which the data they needed to confirm any true ritual abuse was available. With no measure of inter-rater reliability, there is no way to know how reliably or accurately these investigators interpreted these data, and there is no way of knowing whether sufficient data were available to interpret.

Two other case studies merit attention, although they suffer the same methodological problems. Coons and Grier (1990) described a single case where an individual with RA allegations was instead diagnosed with factitious disorder, and Yeager and Lewis (1997) briefly presented a single case of a recanter. In the former example, one must ask whether the patient’s inaccurate reporting of particular events means that ritual abuse did or did not occur. In my opinion, the characteristic features of ritual abuse include abuse by ruse and deception. In the latter example, it should be obvious that recantation is not more intrinsically credible than an original allegation. It has been found that individuals with well-documented evidence of sexual abuse will sometimes later recant and that many recanters, particularly with RA allegations, later redisclose abuse (Waterman, Kelly, Olivieri, & McCord, 1993). Recent research on recantation among victims of violence has shown that recanting is prompted and controlled by the powerful demand characteristics that are communicated by the perpetrators of interpersonal violence (Bonomi, Gangamma, Locke, Katafiasz, & Martin, 2011).

Stafford and Lynn (2002) compared three groups of university student research volunteers who were role-playing that they had DID (*n* = 33), depression (*n* = 33), and normal adjustment problems (*n* = 33). These role-played enactments proceeded over a series of trials, including role-played hypnosis. They found that more individuals in the DID simulating group reported more sexual and ritual abuse allegations as part of the role-played enactments. Stratford and Lynn (2002) interpreted this as evidence that there is “a fairly cohesive cultural script linking DID to a patient’s history and the use of suggestive procedures such as hypnosis” (p. 70). Although this study does give evidence that university student volunteers know about the association between ritual abuse and DID, it does not make it clear to what degree this is known by the general public. It was also not clear to what extent the volunteers role-played narratives and enactments that would have persuaded experienced clinicians to give the students psychiatric diagnoses. In fact, that did not happen in this study.

Nadja Schreiber (2000) compared 20 transcribed interviews of children from the Kelly Michaels day care case with 20 interviews from a Child Protective Services (CPS) unit in New Mexico. She concluded that the interviews of children in the Kelly Michaels case were more repetitive and leading than the CPS case. Garven, Wood, Malpass, and Shaw (1998) found that a group of 36 children interviewed with overt social influence made 58% false accusations in comparison with a group of 30 children who were interviewed with suggestive questions only.

A related contention is that some therapists and caseworkers are overly credulous about the widespread existence of ritual abuse and that they mismanage therapeutic and legal components influencing their clients with their own false beliefs. In an effort to test this hypothesis in the United Kingdom, Bernard Gallagher (2001) conducted a review of cases of suspected child ritual abuse that were identified through searches of records relating to “all referrals to police child protection units (CPUs) and social services child protection coordinators (CPCs) in eight local authority areas in England and Wales between January 1988 and December 1991” (p. 229). This investigation yielded the records of six child cases (involving more than eight children), and it assisted in identifying eight adults who alleged that they were adult survivors of child ritual abuse when claims appeared as part of the review of six child cases. Gallagher’s intent was to find out whether the agency personnel had done appropriate investigations. Gallagher (2001) concluded that:

> These results indicate that agency workers raised concerns of ritual abuse very rarely, and then only following assessments which showed the cases in question to possess a number of quite ‘troubling’ features. Even after raising these concerns, agency workers tended to be circumspect, if not sceptical, as to whether ritual abuse had taken place. Furthermore, the interventions they chose to employ in respect of these cases appeared to be appropriate in terms of both method and application. (p. 238)

Another study, “Discredited Psychological Treatments and Tests: A Delphi Poll,” by Norcross, Koocher, and Garofalo (2006), did find evidence of professional skepticism about ritual abuse. The authors designated a panel of 101 “expert” psychologists who were charged with evaluating a list of 59 treatments and 30 assessment methods. One of the 89 items that they rated was “Treatments for Mental Disorders Resulting from Satanic Ritual Abuse.” The ratings consisted of a 0 to 5 Likert scale, where 1 meant “not at all discredited,” 2 was “unlikely discredited,” 3 was “possibly discredited,” 4 was “probably discredited,” and 5 was “certainly discredited.” Because the study was intended to identify discredited methods, there was a likely bias inherent in its methodology. There were two rounds of ratings. After the first round, all the members of the panel were given the results of the first round, and then they rated the methods again. The mean rating for the SRA item was 3.98 during the first round, and 4.28 after the second round. The results of Norcross et al. are inconsistent with the studies of mental health professionals cited earlier who actually interviewed RA survivors and those with expertise or experience in childhood sexual abuse. Those groups of professionals found the survivors to be credible. It is not clear how many of the experts in Norcross et al. had expertise in child sexual or ritual abuse as that was not one of the criteria for their selection in this particular study. Nor is it clear that anyone involved in the Norcross et al. panel had any familiarity with the empirical literature addressing ritual abuse as none of it was cited. The Norcross et al. findings are also inconsistent with the research of Becker et al. (2008, 2013) and Rutz et al. (2008), where psychotherapy was reported to be the most effective recovery method for RA survivors as reported by survivors, helping professionals, and the caretakers of child RA survivors.

As mentioned earlier, RA allegations are sometimes categorized regarding whether the alleged victims are children or adults at the time the allegations are made. Reports of the ritual abuse of children sometimes occur while they are still children. In such instances, it may be easier to obtain corroborating material evidence. This is especially more likely than the second case, where adults report that they were abused in childhood. Both categories have been studied empirically. Another category of ritual abuse consists of alleged abuse of adults while they are adults without any report of prior child abuse. Such reports do occasionally appear, but we don't know of any studies of them in the literature. On the rare occasions when I have evaluated such individuals clinically, there was sometimes corroborating evidence of earlier childhood abuse for which the survivor initially was amnestic.

Those studies of allegations of the ritual abuse of children then may be further subdivided into three categories: (1) cases where ritual abuse was alleged in day care or preschool settings, (2) cases where the abuse allegedly occurred in community-based cults, and (3) cases of multigenerational ritual abuse.

Pamela Hudson (1991) assessed 24 children[5] in a case of alleged ritual abuse at a Fort Bragg day care center in California. Hudson found five symptoms to be present among many of the children:

1. acting out the sexual abuse (n = 13),
2. sudden extreme fear of the bathroom, bathing, washing hair (n = 10),
3. nightmares, night terrors (n = 12),
4. high anxiety disorder, separation anxiety (n = 16), and
5. temper tantrums, oppositional behavior (n = 12). (p. 8)

She also noted that among the children's allegations were their being molested by other children (*n* = 11), being molested by strangers, day care workers, or a parent (*n* = 11). Hudson identified 16 forms of abuse: (1) being locked in a cage or "jail"; (2) being told that their parents, pets, or younger siblings would be killed if they told anyone of the abuse; (3) being buried in the ground in coffins which they called "boxes"; (4) being held underwater; (5) being threatened with guns and knives; (6) being injected with needles, bled, drugged; (7) being photographed during the abuse; (8)

being tied upside down over a “star,” hung from a pole or hook, burned with candles; (9) perpetrators wearing black robes, masks; (10) having participated in a mock marriage; (11) being defecated and urinated upon; (12) having observed animals killed; (13) having observed torture or molestation of other children; (14) having seen children and babies killed; (15) having blood poured on their heads; and (16) being taken to churches, other day care settings, people’s homes, and graveyards for the ritual abuse. Of these, 13 children acknowledged experiencing at least one of the listed abuses, not counting the 14th. Four children reported number 14, seeing children and babies killed.

Hudson performed a second study. In order to control for the possible contagion effects that might have occurred in her Fort Bragg case, she conducted a telephone interview of 10 other families in different locations in the United States where ritual abuse had been reported. All but two were day care cases. She collected data from these interviews, which she combined with her Fort Bragg data. Thus, she had a total of 11 cases. The following abuses and corroboration were reported:

1. confinement in cage (*n* = 10);
2. threats (*n* = 11);
3. live burial in caskets, coffins, boxes (*n* = 6);
4. water torture (*n* = 7);
5. threats with guns or knives (*n* = 10);
6. drug injections (*n* = 10);
7. filming and still photography (*n* = 11);
8. bondage, locked in closets, hung by feet or wrists, spread-eagled over pentagrams;
9. tied onto upside-down crosses (*n* = 7);
10. abusers wearing masks and robes, carrying candles (*n* = 11);
11. mock marriages (*n* = 6);
12. defecation, urination, forcible ingestion of human wastes (*n* = 10);
13. witnessing animals tortured and killed (*n* = 10);
14. fake operations (*n* = 6);
15. children’s descriptions of the torture and sexual assault of themselves or others (*n* = 10);

16. evidential medical examinations: findings commensurate with sexual assault (*n* = 11);
17. babies, small children killed, carved up, and parts eaten (*n* = 9);
18. transportation elsewhere for abuse; various methods of transport (*n* = 10); and
19. sexual assault and terrorizing in churches, graveyards, other day care centers (*n* = 10).[6]

Susan Kelley (1992b) compared three groups of children in day care: 35 allegedly ritualistically abused children, 32 children reportedly sexually abused, not ritualistically, and 67 children without any claims of sexual abuse. She collected data from the abused children’s parents and compared the results of children with non-ritualistic sexual abuse with ritualistic sexual abuse. She found that ritualistically abused children were more likely to report more incidents, types, and severity of abuse relative to the non-ritual sexual abuse victims. She also found that ritualistic abuse was more often associated with multiple victim, multiple perpetrator encounters. On the Child Behavior Checklist (CBCL), there were more reported behavior problems and tendency toward internalizing symptoms among both groups of abused children in comparison with non-abused children, but the ritualistically abused children scored worse.

Jill Waterman, Robert Kelley, Mary Kay Olivieri, and Jane McCord (1993) did a six-year longitudinal study of 82 children who had made allegations of ritualistic sexual abuse (RSA) in the Manhattan Beach, California, area in comparison with 37 non-abused (NA) children and 15 non-ritualistically sexually abused (SA) children. A variety of standardized and non-standardized questionnaires and interview instruments were employed. They found that both the RSA and SA group reported intrusive and highly intrusive sexual abuse. Additionally, the RSA group, but not the SA group, reported “terrorizing acts that included killing of animals, death threats to the children or their families, sadistic acts and physical abuse, and ritualistic acts that included Satanic activities” (p. 64). Recantations occurred in 25% of the RSA and 23% of the SA children. This was the case, even though the perpetrator in the SA group had given a detailed confession. However, 88% of the RSA group that recanted later redisclosed abuse. The children alleging RSA had more severe symptoms than SA children with significantly more PTSD, depression, and aggressive behaviors. The RSA group showed less improvement over time in comparison with the SA group.

A case involving 172 children who made disclosures in day care in southwest Michigan was investigated (Bybee & Mowbray, 1993; Faller, 1994). Kathleen Faller gathered data from her clinical interviews with 18 of the children, and Bybee and Mowbray reviewed the cases of 106 children, including interviews by state police and records from community mental health professionals, and the Department of Social Services. Bybee and Mowbray identified 62 (58%) children who disclosed that they had been victimized and 53 (50%) children who reportedly observed others being abused, with 92% of the children who were observed being abused also disclosing that they had been abused. They found that children reported experiencing and observing acts of fondling, penetration, oral sex, sex with children, penetration of an adult, threats of harm, being hit or hurt, being given medicine or bad food, bestiality, and ritual acts. Among her sample of 18 children, Faller found “sadistic acts (100%), threats of harm and death to children and their family members (100%), use of drugs (56%), confinement (44.4%) and animal killings or injury (22%)” (p. 22). Faller wrote that when she compared the 18 children she interviewed with children who were abused by a single perpetrator in a day care center or day care home, she found that significantly “higher percentages of ritually abused children were reported to have sexual acting out problems, sleep problems, emotional problems, behavior problems and phobias” (p. 22). Faller also cited an unpublished report by Valliere, Bybee, & Mowbray (1988) of scores on the CBCL comparing the abused children with a comparable sample of non-abused children from the community with clinical and non-clinical norms. “The sexually abused children’s scores were generally comparable to those of clinical norms, and significantly higher than non-clinical norms. Sexually abused girls demonstrated improvement on the CBCL between times one and two, but the boys did not” (p. 22).

Not all child ritual abuse research is associated with day care cases. Within the literature on child abuse, there are two reports of what Faller called “community-based ritual abuse” (p. 23). She defined community-based cults as “those whose membership is contemporary and often made up of persons of various ages—children, adolescents, and adults in a particular community” (p. 24).

Snow and Sorenson (1990) wrote about 39 children who were abused in five neighbor-based cults in Utah. In four of the five cults, there were incidents of intrafamilial incest, perpetration by adolescents, and features of an adult sex ring. No adolescent perpetration was found in the fifth group. Also reported was forced sexual behavior, threats of violence, and multiple perpetrators and victims. At least two-thirds of the children described, multiple locations of abuse, pornography, ingestion or other use of excrement, the espousal of satanic beliefs, magical spells and use of occult paraphernalia, animal mutilation or killing, and the use of drugs. The abusers were generally viewed as respected members of the community, and many were religious leaders. Two of the accused adult perpetrators were convicted, and two adolescents pled guilty.

Jonker and Jonker-Bakker (1991, 1997) reported a case of the ritual abuse of children in the Netherlands. The authors described the allegations and their observations regarding this case in Oude Pekela, a small town of 8,000 inhabitants in northeastern Netherlands near the German border. Jonker and Jonker-Bakker initially surveyed the families of 90 involved children six to eight weeks after the initial disclosures. They gathered additional data from the families of 87 of these children at 2-1/2- and 7-year intervals after the first outcries had been made. They compared their later findings with clinical information that antedated the abuse and with initial survey results. They found that 20% of the children made spontaneous disclosures. The list of reported abuses included the following elements: sexual abuse, warnings to be silent, taking photographs, making videotapes, tying up children, keeping children in extreme darkness, being scratched, kicked, beaten, drugged, animals being present, animals being tortured and killed, babies being involved, babies being killed, adults being killed, chanting, forced eating of excrement or semen, and supernatural powers being claimed. “Almost one-third of the parents reported in 1989–1990 profound changes, as if they were dealing with a different child” (p. 550). The symptomatic behaviors of the children included the following: a poor sleep pattern, nightmares, night awakenings, bedwetting, genital shame, masturbation, inappropriate sexual behavior, swearing, aggressiveness, destructiveness, self-isolation, anxiety, tongue kissing, torturing of animals, fear of being locked up, interest in fire, fear of spiders, interest in devils, ghosts, the experience of words turning around, and interest in death. The three most common symptoms among the boys were the following: “poor sleep pattern (79%), waking during the night (79%), and aggressiveness toward the surroundings (83%)" (p. 550). Among the girls, "the most exhibited behaviors were poor sleep pattern (67%), anxiety, nervousness (77%), and aggressiveness towards the surroundings (87%)" (p. 550). The authors also noted, "If the Oude Pekela case had been a result of adult community hysteria rather than real children's experiences, then the behavioral changes would be expected to escalate as a function of disclosures to adults. Instead, there was a decrease in the number of changes in behavior following disclosure" (p. 551). In this case, two arrests were made but there were no convictions. However, Jonker and Jonker-Bakker noted that the chief of the police investigation team believed that 50% of the 64 children investigated by the police "were certainly involved" (p. 545). A statement by the district attorney on January 21, 1988, is cited:

> A total number of 98 children, 3 to 11 years old were interviewed. The statements of 62 children were used in the further investigation. Finally 48 statements of children remained, speaking of clear sexual abuse, where they had either submitted to or been forced to perform on themselves or others. Many of the children told about strong lights, lamps on poles, and seeing each other on TV. The justice ministry concluded that it was nearly sure that photographs were taken of the children. Against 18 children violence was used. The child abuse took place over a period of several months. The justice Ministry thinks that four people, two men and two women, were involved in the sexual abuse. (quoted by Myers, 1994, and cited by Jonker & Jonker-Bakker, 1997, p. 541)

Faller (1994) cited a study of intergenerational ritual abuse of children by Susan Kelley (1992a). This paper, *Ritualistic Abuse: Recognition, Impact, and Current Controversy,* was presented by Kelley at the San Diego Conference on Responding to Child Maltreatment in January 1992. Kelley investigated reports of 26 children from 14 families. The accused abusers were parents, grandparents, great-grandparents, uncles, aunts, cousins, and siblings. Similar to other reports, a significant number of abusers were female (45%). "Sixty-one percent of children were abused by two generations of older relatives, and 57% of cases involved extrafamilial as well as intrafamilial offenders" (Faller, 1994, p. 25). Reported abuses included "terrorizing threats and acts (89%), including having spiders or other insects placed on them, death threats (77%), making pornography (81%), threats with supernatural powers (89%), satanic reference (92%), animal killings (54%), being made to ingest drugs (92%), songs and chants (69%), and being made to ingest or touch excrement (85%)" (p. 25). Scores on the CBCL were in the clinical range for 73% of the children on total problems, 81% on internalizing, and 50% on externalizing scales.

A series of studies of reported child abuse that included ritualistic abuse were conducted among older adolescents and young adults in South Africa. In the first of these studies Madu and Peltzer (1998, 1999) gathered questionnaire data from 414 South African high school students. The students were asked retrospectively about different experiences of abuse that had occurred before age 17, including ritualistic abuse. Eight percent reported experiences of ritualistic abuse. In another study of 559 high school students in three high schools in the Mpumalanga Province of South Africa, Madu (2001) found that 10% of the participants reported that they were ritualistically abused before the age of 17. In a sample of 722 University of the North undergraduate students 6% indicated that they had experienced ritualistic abuse before age 17 (Madu, 2002).

One of the more recent studies of the ritual abuse of children is reported by Becker, Karriker, Overkamp, and Rutz (2008) and Becker, Karriker, Rutz, and Overkamp (2013). These researchers developed an online questionnaire, the EAS that we will discuss in more detail later in this chapter. One of the three versions of the EAS was the Child-Extreme Abuse Survey (C-EAS). It was designed to gather information about abused children from their caregivers. The survey was available to take online in English and German from July 8 through October 8, 2007, and 264 caregivers from 19 different countries responded to at least one question. With 260 questions asked, the collected data were complex and extensive, and we are only able to summarize a few of the many salient outcomes here. For a more detailed presentation of their findings, see Becker, Karriker, Rutz, and Overkamp (2013).

Becker et al. (2013) asked detailed questions about the children's' disclosures of abuse and other physical signs of abuse. Fifty-one percent of the caregivers who responded indicated that they were RA/MC survivors themselves. The authors queried caregivers about corroboration for the RA/MC crimes, including legal responses to the disclosure. Thirty-one percent indicated affirmative legal outcomes for one or more perpetrators. One important component of the EAS questionnaires is ratings about what interventions were helpful for survivors. The researchers asked if any of a list of 33 healing methods had been used, and if they were used, to what degree were the methods helpful. Individual psychotherapy (70% indicating it was either much help or a great help), supportive friends (68% indicating it was either much help or a great help), and supportive family members (63% indicating it was either much help or a great help) were the top three most helpful healing methods. The three least helpful methods were electroshock therapy (91% indicating it was not helpful), therapeutic camps (65% indicating they was not helpful), and exorcism (64% indicating it was not helpful).

The studies of ritually abused children consistently has shown commonalities in terms of the specific kinds of abuse that were alleged, the severity of the resulting psychological problems, and the specific kinds of psychological problems seen in these children (sexualized behaviors, posttraumatic symptoms, dissociative functioning, and phobias).

Now we will turn our attention to empirical studies of adult survivors of ritual abuse. We found 10 publications describing the empirical studies of adult RA survivors and their treatment (Becker, Karriker, Overkamp, & Rutz, 2008; Becker, Karriker, Rutz, & Overkamp, 2013; Driscoll & Wright, 1991; Friesen, 2000; Sarson & McDonald, 2008; Scott, 2001; Shaffer & Cozolino, 1992; Rutz, Becker, Overkamp, & Karriker, 2008; Smith, 1993; Young, Sachs, Braun, & Watkins, 1991) and five studies more specifically about psychological testing results (Leavitt, 1994; Leavitt & Labott, 1998, 2000; Noblitt, 1995) and a report on the use of a structured interview method, the Adult Attachment Interview with adult RA survivors (Steele, 2003).

Lynda Driscoll and Cheryl Wright (1991) investigated the experiences of 37 adult psychotherapy patients, who were allegedly survivors of ritual abuse. Eighty-one percent had no memory of ritual abuse before beginning therapy, and of the remaining 13%, their memories were incomplete. Dissociation was a commonly reported problem in this sample with 63% being diagnosed with DID, 34% diagnosed dissociative and 17% with “strong ego states” (p. 6). Eighty-three percent reported involvement in rituals by a relative with their fathers (63%), uncles (41%), mothers (38%), grandfathers (35%) and grandmothers (22%). Other abusers included “doctors (54%), neighbors (41%), friends of relatives (49%), church members (35%), police (27%), teachers (22%), and morticians (19%)” (p. 6). Eighty percent stated that the ritual abuse began before age six. The mean age was six. The reported physical and psychological abuses included being “forced to drink blood (84%), tied up (84%), drugged (78%), deprived of food (61%), forced to eat flesh (57%), forced to eat or drink body waste (57%), deprived of sleep (54%), and given electric shock" (p. 8). Ninety percent reported being exposed to confusing and degrading experiences. Seventy-five percent reported being "isolated, 61% ejaculated on, 54% urinated on, 38% defecated on, 50% put in coffins (46% with corpses), 44% buried alive, and 39% put in graves" (p. 8). They were allegedly coerced into silence "by threats of harm (84%), of abandonment (76%), death or mutilation of themselves (73%), death of parent or relative (57%)." Most victims reported they were threatened with supernatural powers (62%), and they were told they had been magically altered (51%) in a way that would end their lives if they 'talked' or disobeyed" (p. 8). Seventy-four percent said that they were forced to perpetrate.

Ninety-three percent were allegedly sexually victimized, including oral sex (89%), vaginal (84%), object penetration (81%), anal (78%). They reported sex with adults (89%), group sex 84%), with animals (62%), other children (54%), and corpses (38%). Eighty-four percent reported human sacrifice; 14 % claimed they were breeders for sacrifices.

The alleged effects of ritual abuse included problems with trust (100%) and emotional intimacy (97%). "Eighty percent (80%) mistrust family members, peers, males, and authority figures in general . . . . Over ninety percent (90%) reported chronic depression, anxiety attacks, obsessions and suicidal behavior" (p. 9). Over 80% described feelings of "worthlessness, inferiority, lack of assertiveness, and dirtiness" (p. 10). Roughly 70% state they feel "helplessness, difficulties making decisions, embarrassment about themselves, humiliation and hopelessness" (p. 10). Reported physical symptoms include headaches (90%), insomnia and chronic back and abdominal pain (75%), acute unexplained weakness (76%), catatonic spells (33%), episodic paralysis (37%), and blackouts (50%). Eating disorders included anorexia (30%), bulimia (30%), and consistently over 20 pounds overweight (70%).

Walter Young, Roberta Sachs, Bennett Braun, and Ruth Watkins (1991) studied the allegations of a sample of 37 patients reporting transgenerational childhood ritual abuse. They found that all reported sexual abuse, witnessing and receiving physical abuse or torture, witnessing animal mutilation or killings and experiencing death threats. Ninety-seven percent indicated forced drug use. Other abuses included witnessing and forced participation in human adult and infant sacrifice (83%), forced cannibalism (81%), marriage to Satan (78%), being buried alive in coffins or graves (72%), and forced impregnation and sacrifice of own child (60%). All of the patients had severe PTSD and experienced dissociative states with satanic characteristics. Other psychiatric sequelae included survivor guilt (97%), indoctrinated beliefs (94%), unusual fears (94%), sexualization of sadistic impulses (86%), bizarre self-abuse (83%), and substance abuse (62%). The authors also described corroborating evidence.

Ruth Shaffer and Louis Cozolino (1992) published another of the early studies of RA survivors. The authors interviewed 20 outpatients, 19 of whom were women and one who was male. Seventy-five percent reported abuse beginning at or before age five. All subjects reported witnessing the sacrificial murder of animals, infants, children, and/or adults. Corpses were often subjected to sexual violations and cannibalistic feasting. The majority of subjects in this study reported severe and sadistic forms of sexual abuse by multiple perpetrators (p. 188). Shaffer and Cozolino noted the similarity of psychological problems found in these outpatients and the patients described in the Young et al. (1991) study, including severe amnesia, generally poor adaptive functioning, and anxiety or depression. Intrusive recollections of ritual abuse emerged, mostly during the course of therapy that revealed a coherent narrative of a tortured childhood.

Sara Scott is a practicing psychotherapist in London who provided additional empirical findings about ritual abuse. In her article “Beyond Belief: Beyond Help?” (1993), she wrote about a television program, *Beyond Belief*, that aired in the United Kingdom that addressed the topic of ritual abuse. A helpline was established to deal with potential telephone calls regarding the program, and it was overwhelmed with calls. “British Telecom recorded 595 attempted calls in the first five minutes after the helpline appeared on the screen and 4500 attempted calls in the first hour of operation” (Scott, 1993, p. 245). The helpline staff were able to answer 191 of the attempted calls. Of these, almost half were related to ritual abuse. “Thirty-nine percent of all calls were from current victims or survivors of ritual abuse calling on their own behalf ” (p. 246).

Scott also published a book, *The Politics and Experience of Ritual Abuse: Beyond Disbelief* (2001), where she described her data gathering by questionnaire of 36 RA survivors, interviews of 14, and more detailed life-history interviews with 12. In her interviews, she was careful to select individuals from different locations who did not know one another in order to reduce the risk of information contagion. Scott contributed a new idea to the discussion of ritual abuse that she calls the *discourse of disbelief* to characterize the various arguments that have been used to discredit survivor stories, including the moral panic and false memory constructs. She pointed out the damaging effects that such a discourse of disbelief can have on survivors whose stories are arbitrarily discredited this way. Scott combined the findings from her survey and interviews to develop a “thick” description of these survivors’ experiences. She showed how ritual abuse typically consists of multilayered traumatic experiences, including abuse by family members and individuals from outside the family in a variety of different contexts, commonly including prostitution and pornography. Another layer of the abuse consists of abhorrent practices performed in ceremonies with various demonic, mythical, or magical themes. She discussed the complex way that beliefs were expressed and enacted in the ritual groups along a continuum ranging from true believer to cynic, but also how the demands for various beliefs varied by context. A child might be expected to behave as a satanist in the nighttime rituals, but be a good Christian at other times when that behavior was required. Scott discussed the notion that the ritual participants experienced varying half beliefs and contextual beliefs, but that elements of magical thinking were often pervasively present. Other important findings included the notion of embodiment—that for participants their bodies were not their own. The repeated infliction of extreme trauma resulted in periodic loss of agency, amnesia, and a stable sense of identity. Scott discussed the relationships among ritual participants, including the sadistic use of punishment sometimes followed by rescue scenario roles. Both the punishers and the rescuers wielded great power. Scott ended her book with:

> I have aimed to honour the suffering and the survival of those who entrusted their life-stories to my care, and to enable their accounts to speak directly to the arguments which have sought to disparage and ignore them. I believe that in doing so I have unsealed the closure of the debate on ritual abuse and made possible both further understanding and future interventions. (p. 194)

Margaret Smith (1993) is another researcher in the United States who presented data on 52 adults who reported being survivors of childhood ritual abuse. Ninety-seven percent reported that “at some point in their lives, they were amnestic of their ritual abuse experience” (p. 20). Smith found that perpetrators were reportedly fathers (67%), mothers (42%), grandfathers (31%), grandmothers (23%), aunts (21%), uncles (27%), nonfamily member physicians (33%), nonfamily member clergy (17%), and nonfamily member teachers (17%). In her study of the occupations of the family and nonfamily alleged perpetrators, there were physicians (35%), teachers (25%), clergy (22%), and police (15%). Sixty-five percent reported that the abuse began before age of four. The following abuses were allegedly perpetrated against the respondents: molestation or intercourse (100%), forced participation in group sex with adults (96%), being tortured (94%), witnessing or forced participation in animal sacrifice (90%), witnessing or forced participation in human sacrifice (88%), sodomy (88%), being drugged during the abuse (88%), witnessing or forced participation in cannibalism (82%), being forced to torture others (75%), child prostitution (52%), child pornography (52%), and being forced to breed children who were later sacrificed (36%). Smith also listed "other forms of abuse mentioned by RA survivors": mental programming (21%), bestiality (17%), torture by electric shock (13%), witnessing or forced participation in dismemberment or mutilation of bodies (12%), being hung upside down (10%), being forced to kidnap children from playgrounds (8%), hypnotism (8%), having pets killed (4%), having psychic surgery (4%), and being lent to other cults (4%).

Jean Sarson and Linda MacDonald (2008) summarized their case studies of five women who described histories of ritual abuse, although Sarson and MacDonald used the term *ritual abuse-torture* (RAT) in describing this phenomenon. These authors emphasized the fact that survivors of RAT are not merely abuse survivors: It is more accurate to say that they have been tortured. Sarson and MacDonald identified 10 violent themes associated with these families and groups:

> (a) neglect and abuse of many forms (e.g., verbal, emotional, physical, sexual, financial); (b) being terrorized by acts of violence, such as the killing of a pet and being threatened with death if she disclosed the violence and abuse; (c) human-animal violence, including bestiality and/or being "trained" to harm animals; (d) torture (e.g., physical, sexual, and mind-spirit); (e) rampageous pedophilia; (f) necrophilic and pseudonecrophilic acts, such as drugging or choking her into unconsciousness and raping her dead-like body; (g) forced self-harming behaviors; (h) enduring horrifying acts, such as being forced to watch another child tortured and gang raped; (i) human trafficking victimization and exploitation (e.g., pedophilic and adult pornography; being used as a drug mule); and (j) forced participation in violent organized pedophilic family/group gatherings coded as "rituals and ceremonies." (p. 420)

Some other authors, including survivors (Kadi, 1997) and mental health professionals (Schwecke, 2009), have adopted Sarson and MacDonald's

RAT terminology.

Becker et al. (2008, 2013) and Rutz et al. (2008) conducted an ambitious online international study of adult extreme abuse survivors using their questionnaire, the EAS. The survey was available in English and German from January 1 through March 31, 2007. One thousand four hundred seventy-one (1,471) people answered at least one of the 187 (and 53 optional) questions. The respondents identified themselves as residents of 31 different countries. In addition to recording demographic information, the EAS asks about recollections of abuse, the aftereffects of abuse, the personal experiences of the abuse survivors, and the healing methods that the survivors used and the extent to which these were helpful. Fifty-two percent indicated that they had been victimized by both ritual abuse (RA) and mind control (MC). Nineteen percent identified themselves as RA and 7% as MC survivors. The abuses perpetrated on these individuals were much like those reported in other studies, including sexual abuse by multiple perpetrators (79%), being caged (53%), starvation (48%), forced cannibalism (44%), bestiality (52%), being buried alive (45%), electroshock (50%), sensory deprivation (61%), sleep deprivation (69%), incest (70%), child pornography (52%), and child prostitution (46%). Among the aftereffects of extreme abuse were sleep problems (90%), PTSD (89%), survivor guilt (73%), substance abuse (48%), self-mutilation (65%), dissociative flashbacks with satanic themes (68%), and eating disorders (70%). One of the particularly useful components of this research is the data about helpful recovery methods. Among the methods that were rated as providing much help or great help were individual psychotherapy (75%), supportive friends (66%), creative writing (64%), and personal prayer/meditation (62%). The idea of prayer as a component treatment strategy is echoed in another publication that addressed spiritual approaches to recovery. James Friesen (2000) described two studies that he conducted: The first was a survey of 66 Christian therapists regarding spiritual methods they used, and the second was a survey of 102 respondents regarding the extent to which the spiritual interventions were perceived as helpful.

The literature also includes studies of the data from psychological testing administered to individuals who reported they were RA survivors (Leavitt, 1994, 1998; Leavitt & Labott, 1998, 2000; Noblitt, 1995). Leavitt (1994) found that with the exception of the paranoia scale, there were no significant differences between MMPI scores for a group of adults claiming to be RA survivors and a group of adults reporting childhood sexual, but not ritual, abuse. However, Leavitt noted that adults claiming to be RA survivors scored significantly higher on the Dissociative Experiences Scale (DES) in comparison with the sexually, but not ritually, abused control group. Leavitt (1998) compared the Word Association Test (WAT) responses of “43 patients who alleged SA in the context of Satanic cults” and 43 patients “who reported SA without allegations of SRA.” The group of RA survivors produced more responses with satanic content, and this finding was not due to exposure to this material in the hospital. In a related study by Leavitt and Labott (1998), WAT responses were compared for 60 adult inpatients who alleged they were survivors of SRA, 60 who reported sexual, but not ritual, abuse, and 150 admitted inpatients. Again, it was found that individuals reporting that they were ritually abused produced characteristically “satanic” associations to the WAT. What was more surprising was that, in spite of making significantly more overall responses, the SRA group produced significantly fewer normal or “normative” responses than either of a group of non-ritual sexually abused individuals and a non-abused group. In another study, Leavitt and Labott (2000) compared 131 participants who alleged past ritual abuse experiences, 92 individuals with sexual, but not ritual, abuse histories, and 92 non-abused women on their Rorschach inkblot responses. They found good inter-rater reliability identifying 16 responses that distinguished the SRA patients from the others. They found moderate convergence among these responses and the findings published by Young et al. (1991) regarding SRA survivors. They also studied the relationship between Rorschach satanic content, media exposure, and hospital exposure to satanic themes. They found no effect resulting from hospital exposure. Paradoxically, participants with low media exposure had the highest number of satanic Rorschach responses.

In another retrospective study, the Minnesota Multiphasic Personality Inventory (MMPI-2) posttraumatic stress disorder (PTSD) scales (PS and PK) were compared between a group of 34 adult outpatients who reported being RA survivors, and a group of 31 adult outpatients who made no such RA allegations. The results showed significantly higher PTSD scores for the alleged RA survivors on both scales (Noblitt, 1995).

Howard Steele (2003) wrote about his use of the Adult Attachment Interview with RA survivors also noting that these clients met the criteria for DID. He discussed the attachment coding and classification and its relevance to these survivors.

Legal cases involving RA allegations have been litigated in civil and criminal venues. It is important to recognize that civil and criminal laws use different standards of evidence in the United States. Civil cases rely on the preponderance of evidence in making determinations, whereas criminal cases require that the evidence be beyond a reasonable doubt. Thus, criminal cases demand more stringent evidence. Civil cases involving RA allegations have included child custody disputes, lawsuits by survivors claiming damages from their alleged abusers, and malpractice lawsuits brought against therapists for purportedly implanting false memories of abuse and at least one third-party claim against a psychiatrist alleging alienation of affection between an alleged survivor and her parents. To my knowledge, there is no comprehensive published review of these cases regarding outcomes.

Because some of these cases involve children and matters of family privacy, some of the cases are sealed by the court. Some malpractice claims settle out of court with an agreement that the terms of settlement may not be disclosed by any of the parties. Criminal cases have been easier to study empirically, but even these cases are not without difficulties in interpretation. The fact that a crime involves ritual practices may never be disclosed in the testimony or by the media. Most states do not have laws specifically prohibiting ritual crime, and therefore, the offense is typically prosecuted as some other defined crime (e.g., murder or child abuse). We discovered that the oft-repeated report that the Federal Bureau of Investigation has been studying ritual abuse is untrue when we communicated directly with the FBI about this question (see Appendix B). In spite of these limitations, some data have been collected, particularly in criminal cases of ritual abuse of children.

Faller (1994), previously cited, included data on convictions associated with the various studies of ritual abuse she reviewed. In 1997, author Michael Newton accumulated data on the sentencing of 145 defendants for criminal activities in which the ritual abuse of children was alleged. He found that at that time only 17 (11.7%) were reversed on appeal. Sixty-four or 44% of the 145 defendants pled guilty or nolo contendere (no contest). Newton argued that these reversals do not necessarily mean that the defendants were innocent. Newton found that in most instances the reversals were based on legal technicalities rather than factual indicators of innocence. Since the time Newton collected this data, more of these convicted individuals have been released from prison (de Young, 2007).

In addition to quantitative studies about ritual crime, the descriptive accounts by Carl Raschke (1990), Nick Kahaner (1988), Maury Terry (1987), and David McGowan (2004) provide further details about such cases. Nick Pisa (2007) reported on the rising satanic crime statistics in Italy, including church desecrations and murders. He cited the murder conviction of "Andrea Volpe, the Beasts of Satan ringleader, [who] was given a life sentence, while his girlfriend, Elisabetta Ballarin, 19, was sentenced to 24 years."[7] Two recent cases involving ritualistic rapes by satanic cults resulted in convictions in Wales (Turner, 2011) and England (Cohen, 2012).

Another contentious topic concerns the question of whether there is an "international satanic conspiracy" that is engaging in these alleged abusive practices. Two research efforts have addressed this particular question: (1) the studies conducted by Bottoms et al. (1991) and Goodman et al. (1994) in the United States and (2) the research of J. S. La Fontaine (1994, 1998) in England.[8] Neither found any evidence of such a satanic conspiracy. Should one then conclude that there is no satanic conspiracy? Unfortunately, neither study disproved this hypothesis; they merely did not find evidence that met their criteria.

A serious problem in studying alleged conspiracies is that the usual methods of investigation may not be sufficiently sensitive to identify one when it is present. A case in point is the study of organized crime in the United States. The terms *Mafia* and *La Cosa Nostra* were commonly used to describe one such alleged Italian American criminal conspiracy. However, for decades the FBI denied the existence of the Mafia or La Cosa Nostra. Although the FBI recognized that organized crime existed, they had accumulated no evidence that linked any crime to any group that called itself the Mafia or La Cosa Nostra. As far as the FBI was concerned, the talk on the street about the Mafia and La Cosa Nostra was simply the reflection of contemporary legend.

Curiously, an advocacy group even arose calling itself the Italian American Civil Rights League. This group claimed that the rumors about the Mafia and La Cosa Nostra were really efforts to defame Italian American people by spreading these supposedly spurious rumors about

Italian American organized crime. The primary organizer of the Italian-American Civil Rights League was Joseph Colombo, who ironically was the head of one of the "five families" of New York.

Finally in 1989, the FBI surreptitiously tape-recorded a Mafia initiation ceremony in which the words *Mafia* and *La Cosa Nostra* were used during the ceremony. Later when the participants were arrested, not one admitted that there was such an organization as the Mafia, although some admitted to other accusations of serious crimes, including murder (Pistone, 1992). This example of the investigation of organized crime in the United States illustrates how difficult it may be to demonstrate evidence of a genuine criminal conspiracy.

In my opinion, neither of the two earlier cited research efforts was sufficiently sensitive to adequately test that particular question. To say that there is *no evidence* of an international satanic conspiracy misrepresents the facts. There are many people who allege that they have been eyewitnesses to elements of such a conspiracy. Eyewitness reports do constitute evidence. The question is not whether evidence exists; it does exist. The question is to what extent are these alleged eyewitness reports true or credible. This question requires further study and corroboration. It is more accurate to say that the question of the existence of a satanic conspiracy has not yet been settled in the scientific and legal community and that further investigation and research is needed.

CHAPTER 7

Breaking the Code

“Leslie” was one of the first clients who sought treatment at my private practice in Richardson, Texas. She was grief-stricken following the death of one of her family members. She arrived at my office in a zombie-like state, barely able to converse. Shortly afterward, as our therapeutic relationship progressed, I learned that she experienced strong mood swings, self-destructive impulses, and bouts of rage. She made gradual progress learning to cope with this loss but continued to have episodic experiences of explosive anger and strong self-destructive urges. After a while, Leslie began to dissociate in therapy with alternate identities who talked with me during our individual therapy sessions. At first, these occurrences were not obvious to me. Initially, Leslie’s alternate identities did not announce their names when speaking. However, her tone of voice and facial expression changed, and she frequently complained that she was unable to remember what happened in our sessions. On one occasion when I said that our session was over, Leslie looked at me incredulously exclaiming, “I just got here.” I motioned toward the clock, and when she looked at it, she expressed amazement that her entire therapy time had elapsed. I asked Leslie’s permission to video record our next session and she agreed.

During our next meeting, Leslie again “lost time.” While the video camera recorded the session, she became overtly dissociated and identified herself as “Carol.” Leslie responded with shock as she later reviewed the recording of our session. She observed a child alter, Carol, talk about Leslie’s collection of teddy bears. Leslie and I had never before discussed her having teddy bears, but as she watched her video, she admitted having a rather extensive collection. Leslie watched the tape with a stunned expression, hardly able to believe what she was seeing. As she viewed her image and heard herself speaking in a child’s voice and using a childlike vocabulary, she finally had external evidence of her elusive, tumultuous, but dissociated inner world. Leslie said that prior to this session she did not understand why she felt compelled to invest so much money and energy in collecting teddy bears. However, Carol provided the explanation. There were several child alters within Leslie’s system of alters who were very attached to them.[1]

Eventually during the course of therapy, other alternate identities emerged. I made it a practice to videotape Leslie’s sessions so that she could view them later. This procedure assisted her in recalling the events that had transpired while she was in a dissociated state. Each time Leslie reviewed the taped sessions, she seemed surprised at what she saw on the television screen. Eventually, her alters described a history of cruel childhood abuse. Some of these memories she acknowledged as real because she could remember them herself, but others sounded unrecognizable, like events that had possibly happened to some other person. She wondered about these reports of abuse for which she had no memories and watched herself in a state of bewilderment as she saw her own videotaped image describing abuses for which she had no recollections or any memory of having told me in therapy.

Leslie sustained an injury at work that required surgery, extensive medical treatment, and physical therapy. She again felt hopeless coping with these repeated painful circumstances. She was also feeling increasingly self-destructive. At my recommendation, Leslie agreed to enter a psychiatric hospital where, at the time, I was providing intensive psychotherapy for patients with dissociative disorders. Arrangements were also made for Leslie to continue to receive physical therapy and biofeedback-assisted therapy[2] for pain reduction as ordered by her surgeon.

Because Leslie’s multiplicity had just recently emerged in therapy, I directed one of my staff, with Leslie’s permission, to contact the biofeedback therapist to explain the nature of Leslie’s psychiatric diagnosis and to relay my request that care be exercised to prevent Leslie from going into trance states while in biofeedback therapy. As my staff explained, some of Leslie’s alters could be violent, and the biofeedback therapy environment was an inappropriate place for them to present themselves. The biofeedback therapist exhibited some understanding of multiple personality disorder and agreed to comply with my request.

Leslie, after returning from her first session of biofeedback, described an awkward meeting in which the biofeedback therapist expressed disbelief in the dissociative identity disorder (DID) diagnosis. Leslie thought this was unprofessional because the biofeedback therapist had never examined her psychologically, nor was she qualified to do so. After Leslie's next biofeedback session, she reported that the appointment had gone strangely. Leslie told me that her biofeedback therapist took considerable time to discuss Native American Indian religions and inquired about Leslie's own spiritual beliefs.

After Leslie's third session of biofeedback therapy, she reported that she had been "out" for at least 15 minutes while undergoing biofeedback. Leslie said that she entered a trance so deeply that her biofeedback therapist told her that it had taken an unexpectedly long time to return her to normal waking consciousness. I was dismayed at this news. This was precisely what the biofeedback therapist had been asked to avoid. Leslie and I spent our individual therapy time trying to explore what had occurred and to discover what had caused her to go into such a deep trance. Leslie told me that the last thing she could remember was that her biofeedback therapist said something, but Leslie could not remember what it was.

Immediately following our session, Leslie and I went to the scheduled therapy group. I was conducting this group for DID patients who were hospitalized on the adult psychiatric unit. The four patients who arrived for group therapy on this particular day were also all under my care for individual therapy. Leslie was somewhat reluctant to talk about her biofeedback experiences in the group, but I encouraged her to do so. She began to remember some of what the biofeedback therapist said to her before she went "out." Leslie recalled: "She kept saying 'feel the feelings,' and 'deeper and deeper,' and 'you will soon be cured.' "

One of the patients in the group, "Karen," expressed anger toward me for my continued questions of Leslie about what had happened. Karen said to me, "Don't say that. Don't say that."

I didn't understand her. "Don't say what, Karen?"

"Those words!" she said angrily.

I was still confused, "What words?"

"Deeper and deeper."

But by now, Karen was no longer visibly angry. She was, in fact, in a trance. I looked around the room. Everyone present was in a trance, everyone but myself. The room was completely quiet. The four group members stared, glassy-eyed, with their gazes directed downward toward the floor. I was amazed. In my 11 years of conducting group therapy, I had never witnessed anything like this.

I decided that if the group therapy were to continue, the participants would have to come out of this trance. It should have been easy to accomplish because, even though I rarely used hypnosis with DID patients, I was an experienced hypnotherapist and had never failed to bring a patient out of a trance that I had induced. Although I tried a variety of standard methods, I was unable to bring even one of the group members out of trance. The group session was discontinued. Two of the four patients were so dazed that they couldn't sit upright, and I had to call nursing staff to assist them to their beds. The other two patients were able to walk and went to sit in the unit's day room, but they were too mentally foggy to make sensible conversation.

Several hours later, all four patients appeared to have returned to a relatively normal state of consciousness. I went to each of them individually and privately to inquire about what had happened in the group. None of them seemed to know what had caused the group trance experience. Two of them could not even remember much of what had happened shortly before or after the trance took effect. Only one of them, Karen, appeared able to recount the events with some accuracy. She reiterated her anger toward me because of what she interpreted as my interrogation of Leslie. The words that Karen said bothered her were "deeper and deeper." She also indicated that she felt very sleepy when she heard those words repeated.

I wanted to test what Karen was saying to me, so I asked permission to use those words. She was initially reluctant but eventually agreed. I told her that I would use the words, but that she would not go into a trance. I would simply use the words in conversation, not in a hypnotic induction. I talked to her about her concerns about her financial condition and how she was getting *deeper* in debt. I inserted the word *deeper* into the conversation this way several times. Before I knew it, she was out.

What caused this reaction? I had clearly given her the suggestion that she would *not* be hypnotized, yet when she heard the words in question, she entered a trance state. I wondered if she had previous experience in hypnotherapy where a therapist had trained her to respond to those words with a trance. I asked her if she had ever participated in hypnotherapy. She groggily replied, “No.”

“Why are you in a trance now?” I asked.

Karen was silent for a while. Her eyes rolled upward and her eyelids fluttered for a while. I repeated my question. She spoke in a different voice identifying herself as four-year-old “Kathy.” Kathy said she could see people inside a house. The house was very dark. There were other people there who were wearing black robes with hoods covering their heads. She saw herself on a table, tied down. She was wearing a flimsy white cotton robe without a hood. She said that someone was cutting on her arm with a razor blade saying the words “deeper, and deeper, and deeper” with each painful stroke of the blade across her skin. She expressed an unmistakable feeling of terror. She said that she could see herself passing out not so much from the pain but mostly as a result of her overwhelming fear. Kathy told me that this had happened on several different occasions. She also reported experiences of sexual abuse in which her tormentors spoke the words “deeper, and deeper, and deeper” as she was sexually penetrated. She indicated that whenever Karen heard the words repeated, she would automatically enter a trance as a reaction to this repeated traumatic experience, something that she called “training.”

What Kathy described was not hypnosis as it is normally conceptualized as a result of repetitive suggestion to produce a trance. Instead, she revealed what appeared to be the results of classical conditioning[3] in which a trance response produced by trauma was paired with the words “deeper, and deeper, and deeper” until the words alone were able to elicit the trance response.[4]

I asked Kathy to help me bring Karen out again because my last effort had failed. Kathy said she was willing to help me. She offered, “All you need to do is say, ‘Karen I will count you down from 10 to 0, and when I reach 0, you will be fully awake, pain free and relaxed.’ ” This sounded like a standard hypnotic countdown procedure. Earlier when attempting to bring the group members out of the trance state, I had tried several similar methods but none of them had worked. Kathy explained that I had to use the exact words as she had stated them to me. Kathy said that Karen had been trained to respond specifically to those words and might not respond to other phrases that were worded too differently. I followed Kathy’s instructions, and Karen reappeared and resumed executive control of her mind and body.

I asked to see her arm where Kathy had said that cutting had occurred. Little scars were visible, but it was not clear to me that the scars were necessarily caused by the abuse that Kathy described. This patient had engaged in some self-mutilation in the past and it was possible that the scars were self-inflicted. I asked Karen what had caused the little scars on her arm, but she said that she did not know. I asked her if she had ever cut herself there, and she said, “Not to my knowledge.”

I asked Karen if she would not discuss what Kathy had said to me in the session that day with anyone else. She asked why, and I explained that I wanted to find out what each group member had experienced in session, and I did not want their views contaminated or influenced by one another, and so for that reason I wanted all to refrain from discussing it with each other. I especially did not want the other patients to know what Kathy had said to me because that might influence their reaction to a similar test of their responsiveness to the words and phrases. Karen agreed to my request. She also said that she did not remember much of what Kathy had revealed.

I met with each patient individually and requested permission to investigate what had earlier occurred in the group and each person agreed. I did not tell any of the individuals that I had talked to Karen’s Kathy nor what Kathy had discussed with me regarding the manner in which these words had been paired with trauma to produce a trance response. However, in each case, the patient in question went into a trance when I introduced some of the words and phrases into our conversations, but the patients each appeared oblivious to what was happening to them and could not initially explain why they were re-experiencing altered states of consciousness while we conversed.

Karen had specifically responded to the word *deeper* when it was used repetitively. Another patient responded most strongly to the phrase “feel the feelings” when it was stated repeatedly, and to a lesser degree she responded to “deeper” and “you will soon be cured.” One of the individuals became agitated when I used the phrase “you will soon be cured.” I asked her why, and she did not know. At a later date, an alternate identity in her system said that in her cult they would sometimes repeat the expression “You will soon be cured of your false virginity” in a sexual abuse ritual. All four patients responded with trance to either one or a combination of these terms and phrases and, to my surprise, they all awoke from the trance when I utilized the procedure described by the alternate identity, Kathy. However, when one of the four individuals emerged from trance, she was in a panic state. With tears in her eyes and a look expressing her mental anguish she said, “Don’t say *pain free*.” “Why?” I asked. At first she seemed puzzled as if she did not know. Then she blurted out, “Because that means we’ve been hurt.” With further inquiry, only two of the four patients could tell me why they were going into a trance (i.e., were able to identify the words and phrases to which they appeared to respond).

I was astonished at what I witnessed, but I thought that I should further cross-validate these findings. Science is based on the premise that valid knowledge can be acquired through careful observations that can be repeated or replicated. When replicated, results can be found with at least some consistency and they defy the chance or random variations in nature, then one can say that there is scientific support for a finding. However, in order to properly test these initial findings, I had to ensure that some alternative explanation could not account for the observed results. For example, if I had told the other three members of the group what Kathy had told me about the various effects of the words and phrases, it might have implanted the idea that they were supposed to respond in a particular way. By not telling them what I was doing or what I was looking for, I was getting results that were more likely to be free from the effects of suggestion.

I decided that in order to continue to test this particular effect, I should do so in an unobtrusive manner and with other individuals while observing their reactions. In the process I also discovered a variety of other specific signals that resulted in producing altered states of consciousness, physical immobility, and other peculiar responses in some patients. I found that most of these could be surreptitiously introduced into a normal conversation, resulting in mild to profound trance responses and other anomalies. On some occasions, these methods would bring out specific alternate identities, some of whom would appear ready to do anything asked of them. On some occasions, patients would go into such a deep trance as to appear to be in a coma-like state.

Once, during a therapy session, a female patient, “Jenny,” went into such a deep trance that her speech was barely audible. While in this state her body was limp and she drawled, “You can have me.” I asked her name and she identified herself as “Natasha.” She indicated that it was her job to sexually please any male who had the ability to access her. I told her that she would not have to do this anymore and that the decisions about her sexual behavior should not be made or carried out by any individual alternate identity but should be made by the whole person.[5]

The incident in the group therapy session is an example of what some survivors call a response to *programming* (as I later learned). The term *programming* is sometimes used in two ways in the context of cultism and mind control methods. Most commonly, the term refers to any *coercive persuasion* whether it is experienced in a destructive cult, an established religion, the armed services, or any other group or organization. A second use for this word is more specific, and I introduced it in 1993 in lectures on this subject. I have defined programming as “the manipulation or traumatization of alter personalities, fragments or other dissociated mental states or entities for the purpose of mind control” (Noblitt, 1993). Some patients and therapists refer to the stimuli that bring out particular and often programmed behaviors, moods, and states of consciousness as *triggers*.[6] These reported stimuli may be words (as previously described), sounds (e.g., tones, rhythmic patterns, a particular pitch, or sequence of pitches), visual cues (e.g., hand signals, colors), or tactile stimulation (touch patterns or designs on the skin). Some survivors state that virtually any stimulus can be used for the purpose of eliciting a preprogrammed response if that particular stimulus has been used previously as a signal for a repetitively traumatizing procedure.[7]

Could this really be possible? This was essentially the theme of the fictional novel (Condon, 1988) and motion picture (Axelrod & Frankenheimer, 1962), *The Manchurian Candidate,* in which a U.S. serviceman was portrayed as being programmed to kill the president.[8] But is there any nonfiction description of this phenomenon? In his book *A Criminal History of Mankind*, Colin Wilson (1984) wrote about a case that may illustrate this process. He described an account of a woman who traveled by train to Heidelberg, Germany, where she planned to consult with a physician regarding pain she was experiencing in her stomach. According to Wilson, she entered into a casual conversation with a man named Franz Walter, reportedly a “nature healer” who claimed he could cure her of her ailment. Apparently, Walter persuaded the woman to leave the train at one of the stations, purportedly for coffee.

> She was unwilling, but allowed herself to be persuaded. As they walked along the platform he took hold of her hand “and it seemed to me as if I no longer had a will of my own. I felt so strange and giddy.” He took her to a room in Heidelberg, placed her in a trance by touching her forehead, and raped her. She tried to push him away, but she was unable to move. “I strained myself more and more but it didn’t help. He stroked me and said, ‘You sleep quite deeply, you can’t call out, and you can’t do anything else.’ Then he pressed my hands and arms behind me and said: ‘You can’t move any more. When you wake up you will not know anything of what happened.’ ” . . . Later, Walter made her prostitute herself to various men, telling her clients the hypnotic word of command that would make her unable to move. And when she married, he made her attempt to kill her husband by various means. The latter became suspicious after her sixth attempt at murder—when his motor cycle brake cable snapped, causing a crash—and when he learned that she had parted with three thousand marks to some unknown doctor. The police came to suspect that she had been hypnotized, and a psychiatrist, Dr. Ludwig Mayer, succeeded in releasing the suppressed memories of the hypnotic session. In due course, Walter received ten years in prison. How did Walter bring her under his control so quickly and easily? (Wilson, 1984, p. 29)

Although Wilson poses the question, he offers no conclusive answer. He speculates that paranormal processes accounted for the apparent ability of Walter to induce such a powerful trance in this woman, presumably against her will. However, one of the “rules” of the logic of science is called parsimony. In science, we are required to explain phenomena in the simplest terms necessary to account fully for them. In other words, if we can explain these events in purely naturalistic (rather than supernatural) terms, we are obligated to do so. The procedure that I have already defined as programming can easily account for these trance states. In fact, the scenario described by Wilson is similar to many of the reports made by survivors of ritual abuse.[9] Their programming reportedly begins in early childhood and continues as long as the survivor is unable to resist being accessed or otherwise controlled by the programmers. Others who know how to access the survivor can then use triggering stimuli to induce a trance or call out alternate identities to do their bidding.

This may make sense to the reader except for the fact that Wilson’s description of this case does not indicate that Walter previously knew the woman he met on the train. For this reason, how could he know of her possible previous programming? According to my patients, some programmed responses are general and commonly used in a variety of cults (e.g., in the example I described earlier where all four members of the therapy group went into a trance). However, it is possible for an individual who understands the concepts underlying programming to identify cues that would affect the programmed person simply by talking to that individual and by observing his or her eyelid and other responses to potential triggers that are introduced unobtrusively. Patients with programming will often initially respond with eye blinks and a lowering of their gaze when effective access methods are presented. When the accessing method is repeated and becomes overwhelming to susceptible individuals, they will often close their eyes and sometimes show a fluttering response in their eyelids. Sometimes another alternate will present for the purpose of complying with the commands of the person who initiated this access procedure.

There are legends that tell of men who make a pact with the devil for the purpose of having relatively extensive sexual access to women (e.g., the story of Faust). The concept of programming with the potential for access may explain how there may be some truth to this legend. As cult members do the bidding of their cult leader, they can, in turn, be taught more about the procedures for accessing others and thus may be rewarded with increasing power and control over the minds of others who have also been programmed.

Other reports may illustrate this phenomenon further. Wilson (1988) describes a criminal trial in 1865 in which a beggar by the name of Timotheus Castellan was sentenced to 12 years in prison after being found guilty of raping a 26-year-old peasant woman named Josephine:

> Castellan had begged a night’s lodging from her father, a poor peasant, claiming to be a healer. . . . Over the midday meal Castellan made a sign with his fingers, as if dropping something on the girl’s plate, and she felt her senses leaving her. He carried her into the next room and raped her; she said she was conscious but unable to move. Later Castellan departed, taking her with him. At one farm where he stayed the night he demonstrated his power over her by making her crawl around on all fours like an animal and burst into peals of laughter. He was eventually arrested. (Wilson, 1988, p. 201)

Brian Inglis (1989) describes a 1988 court case in Wales in which an uncredentialed hypnotist, Michael Gill, used a device with flashing lights to hypnotize women who, while in this state, were allegedly raped by him.[10]

The three cited criminal cases illustrate instances in which women were sexually abused while in trance states that were induced powerfully and quickly, causing the women to lapse in their normal, self-protective behaviors.[11] Professional hypnotists and hypnotherapists have no such technology at their disposal.[12] Although I know of no large-scale study that has proved it, hypnotists commonly believe that one cannot hypnotize another individual to do anything against that person’s will or anything that violates that person’s conscience. In cult programming, however, the loss of the individual’s normal sense of executive control is commonly reported by survivors. Not only are such uncharacteristic responses reported, they can also be demonstrated in the consulting office. Although it would be unethical to deliberately provoke patients sexually, it is possible to generate the powerful trances with rapid onset and also to investigate other atypical behaviors that can be accessed by such techniques. Such phenomena have occurred on numerous occasions and have been witnessed by other therapists and by other patients when they have happened in group therapy sessions. I have also shown how this works in lectures, where an extreme abuse survivor volunteers, allowing me to demonstrate the accessing techniques as well as methods that discontinue the dissociative behaviors.

One patient wrote in her therapy journal an example of the process whereby some of her alters could be accessed:

Dim the lights

implement the countdown

insert information
repeat information several times (6)
anoint the sense points (forehead, cheeks, throat) w/Blood

enter
this may cause anger if not done in a proper way

have others stand by

Speak the words
“restrain thyself—show no resistance” (may need to be repeated)

> Breathing will slow
> When inputting information breathing will increase.
> Administer Nitro 1 tab
> will create headache to assure confusion and block all other thought processes except for the one in which you wish to implement.
> “We offer our minds to you (our leader). Please accept our offering of sacrifice—ourselves.”[13]

For several years now, I have unobtrusively introduced stimuli (as I described earlier in Leslie’s case) into my consultations with patients in an effort to cross-validate the results described earlier[14] and in order to provide some objective procedure for assessing a given patient’s possible history of ritual abuse. I have found that some patients respond in a predictable way to specific triggering stimuli. I have observed similar behavioral and trance responses from patients in my practice who grew up in a wide variety of locations in the United States. I have, of course, had patients who did not respond to any of the techniques I used. On other occasions, some of the techniques have worked with some individuals, whereas other methods did not. I have also supervised other therapists who have used such techniques with their patients with similar outcomes. Other therapists refer patients to me for evaluation to assess the possibility of cult programming. Typically, I videotape these sessions so that the referring therapist, as well as the patient, can later observe the results of the evaluation.

In addition to observing what can only be described as idiosyncratic programmed responses to particular eliciting stimuli, it is notable that these patients recount similar histories of tormented childhoods involving sadistic and ritualized abuse. As my caseload grew, I saw more clients reporting such experiences. I learned that many of them have had no conscious awareness of previous interactions with one another, coming as they do from different geographical locations, cultural backgrounds, religions, socioeconomic strata, and different generations. Yet, despite the differences, these individuals share memories of the same or similar ritualized traumatic events, and they present with similar internalized systems of alternate identities.

Although the majority of my clients typically had no conscious memories of having previously known one another, it was curious that several of them switched to alternate identities and identified one another by cult names when speaking to me privately and individually. For example, on one occasion I was saying goodbye to a male patient diagnosed with DID and inviting the next patient, “Alice,” into my office. Once inside my office, Alice switched to a child alter who fearfully inquired, “Why do you have Robert James coming to see you? Don’t you know he’s very dangerous?” Because of patient confidentiality, I could not say anything about the male client with whom I had just visited. I could not even identify him as a patient. However, his real name was *Robert Dale*. *Robert James* was one of his secret cult names. How was it that Alice recognized him at all, much less identified him by his cult name, Robert James? To my knowledge, he had not told that name to anyone else—that is, no one outside his cult—and to my knowledge, he had never seen or met Alice before. He neither greeted her nor recognized that he knew her when they passed each other in the waiting room. Alice also identified three others of my clients, allegedly from rituals she had attended in childhood, two of them by secret cult names that were only known to me and, presumably, the cults where these individuals reportedly had been abused. Alice was also recognized by the alter identities of two other clients who, in private session, revealed that they had known each other from past cult experiences.

Some of my clients have complained of being “accessed” by other people whom they believe to be involved in destructive cults in which programming methods are understood and utilized. Some reported experiences where they received telephone calls or patterned knocks on their doors that have caused alter identities to emerge who were allegedly trained to acquiesce to anyone using that particular signal. This point leads us to the story of “Maggie.”

Maggie was estranged from her mother who she claimed was the high priestess of a satanic cult in a distant state. When she occasionally received mail from her mother, she would bring it to my office to open in the presence of staff because she feared that the mail could be provocative to the extent of precipitating strong suicidal urges. One day Maggie came to the office with a bulky envelope that was sealed and bore an out-of-state postmark. The return address on the envelope was the same as her mother’s. Maggie asked one of my staff to open the envelope because she feared what it might contain. The staff member could feel a cylindrical object through the paper and cautiously opened the envelope, allowing the contents to spill onto the surface of her desk. The contents included a folded piece of notebook paper, four photographs, and a hypodermic syringe containing one cc of a red, viscous liquid that looked like blood.

The four photographs looked like candid, amateur photos taken of a man, woman, and two children in four different poses. The letter appeared innocuous. It was a chatty letter addressed to Maggie from her mother, full of mundane items regarding family news. There was no explanation for the syringe. When Maggie saw the syringe, she went into a trance state. When she heard my voice as I stepped from my office, she lunged for the syringe and attempted to stab me with it. It took several staff members to subdue her and remove the syringe.

Eventually, Maggie dissociated with several alternates who explained that the pictures and the syringe were all triggers designed to influence or coerce Maggie to kill me.[15] She subsequently received other syringes through the mail, each with different levels of liquid. Unfortunately, we were unable to obtain any assistance from the police. The local police claimed there was no law against sending syringes with what appeared to be blood products through the mail. The postmaster concurred. No one within the city, county, or state government was even willing to analyze the liquid, and at the time neither Maggie nor I could afford to do so through a private laboratory. We were advised that we could consult the Federal Bureau of Investigation (FBI), but Maggie was terrified of the prospect of FBI involvement because she feared it would mean her death. I dropped the matter in deference to Maggie's fears. Ultimately, Maggie was effectively desensitized to those triggers such that she no longer responded to them by-dissociating. However, she reported an additional disturbing situation that had occurred earlier.

Maggie said that she was abducted and tortured with electric shock, during which time she was instructed to kill me with a knife, mutilate my body, and take selected body parts back to her cult. According to her story, Maggie had attended a group therapy session with me and was prepared to stab me when the session ended. Maggie recalled that during the course of the group session, another patient said something that effectively canceled the alleged assassination program. Later in individual therapy, we discovered that Maggie's programming could temporarily be interrupted by using the word *disarm*.[16] Knowledge of that word became an important element in dealing with this highly volatile and violent client. One of the unfortunate realities of working with these patients is that some have a potential for violence. On some occasions I have been threatened but never injured. Many other therapists who work with this population report similar threats.

Evidence of exposure to deliberate and traumatic methods for inducing dissociation, and what I have described as programming, has been a near-universal characteristic of clients who report ritual abuse. They described programming procedures that they said had occurred in a variety of different environments, including destructive cults. Many of the cult experiences that were described were consistent with demon-worshipping groups,[17] but this is not always the case.[18] More recently I have had survivors of ritual abuse who have come to speak at the classes that I teach at my university. They all explained how deliberate programming was done with them. One of them allowed me to demonstrate my techniques while eliciting her dissociative responses.[19]

CHAPTER 8

The African Connection

Like Leslie, “Sarah” began therapy in my private practice shortly after it was established. Sarah was a Caucasian woman of medium height with dark brown hair and penetrating dark brown eyes. When I first met her in an inpatient therapy group she said that I intimidated her a great deal. She also frequently complained about what she perceived to be my critical attitude toward her. She initially made this complaint before I had ever said anything to her. Actually, she was her own worst critic. Sarah felt that she was a bad and incompetent person and often flew into rages when she recognized some minor mistake she had made. Her anger was even more intense when she perceived that someone else was making similar critical judgments of her.

Sarah was initially referred for psychological counseling by her gynecologist and was assigned a female therapist for individual psychotherapy. She was diagnosed with borderline personality disorder, and when her condition periodically deteriorated, she was rehospitalized for suicidal acting out and self-mutilation. During her inpatient stays, she participated in group therapy sessions that I facilitated. On one occasion between hospitalizations when her individual therapist was out of town, Sarah called my office in a panic for an emergency consultation. She was feeling a strong impulse to cut herself. I agreed to see her but recommended that we videotape our meeting so that her individual therapist could later review our taped session. Sarah arrived at my office a short while later. The video camera was in place and ready to run. We began the session.

Sarah told me that she had a strong urge to cut herself. She recognized that this impulse was irrational, and she knew that if she seriously cut herself she would be hospitalized. She asserted loudly and in no uncertain terms that she did “not want to go into the hospital!” She was unable to explain her compulsion to harm herself other than saying, “I hate myself.” I thought that there must be more to the story, but she was unable to elaborate.

I asked Sarah to close her eyes and tell me what she could see inside her mind.[1] A moment after her eyes were shut, she told me that she could see “confusion.”

“What does the confusion look like?” I asked her.

“People.”

“What do you mean, people?”

“I see people in my head.”

“Tell me about the people.”

“They’re arguing.”

“Who are the people? Do you recognize them?”

“No, I don’t recognize them, but they’ve always been there.”

“Have you told your individual therapist about the people?”

“No. She didn’t ask and I was embarrassed to bring it up.”

“Why embarrassed?”

“She would think I was crazy!”

“What are the people arguing about?”

“Whether to kill me or not.”

“Do some of them want to kill you?”

“Yeah, especially one.”

“Tell me about the one who wants to kill you.”

“He’s really mean. He says he wants to cut me. And then he just laughs at me.”

“Who is he?”

“He says his name is ‘Damon’.”

Before I knew it, Damon assumed control of Sarah’s speech and began talking to me. I was relieved that the video camera was on because I didn’t know if Sarah would later remember the session. (Some clients are evidently co-conscious for such dissociative experiences, although others are not.) Damon told me that “he” enjoyed hurting Sarah and that “she deserved it.” Damon took credit for other occasions when Sarah had been cut and was later rushed to the emergency room.

As we talked, I learned that Damon was a male adolescent alter who first came into existence when Sarah was being sexually abused earlier in her life. According to Damon, he had been created by Sarah's mind[2] to protect her from this abuse. However, Damon had reportedly been unable to effectively fight off Sarah's assailants and since that time, Damon had taken out his rage on Sarah rather than on Sarah's perpetrators. It was eventually possible to create something of an alliance with Damon, and he agreed to a temporary moratorium on the self-mutilation. I was happy with this outcome. Together, we had been able to avert another psychiatric hospitalization while keeping Sarah safe from self-injury.

When Sarah watched the videotape, she was astonished. Although the name Damon seemed familiar, she had no memory of Damon taking executive control during our session. She invited her husband, who was in the waiting room, to come to my office and watch the tape along with her. Upon viewing the tape, her husband did not seem surprised. With the numerous instances of strange and bizarre behavior that Sarah had displayed throughout their married life, he believed that they had never gotten an adequate psychiatric explanation. The strange events on the videotape explained other incidents that he had observed at home, and so, ironically, he received some consolation that progress was finally being made. Sarah said that she wanted to transfer her therapy to my care. I told Sarah that I would rather she talk to her usual therapist and get her therapist's recommendation before she made any sudden decisions.

I provided the videotape to Sarah's individual therapist, who wasn't pleased. She said that she had no experience with clients who dissociated and felt that she could no longer follow her client. I offered to provide occasional consultation to assist them in their work together, but Sarah's therapist decided instead to terminate her relationship with Sarah. I talked to Sarah's psychiatrist, and he was also unhappy with what had transpired. He refused to even look at the videotape of Sarah's session with me. He insisted that Sarah did not, and could not, have a dissociative disorder. Sarah's psychiatrist was in training to be a Jungian analyst. He told me that it is normal for people to have "inner people" and he mentioned John Rowan's (1990) book *Subpersonalities: The People Inside Us*, and he also discussed some other concepts regarding dissociation from a Jungian point of view. I was appreciative of the information he provided to me but disappointed that he was unwilling to consider that this patient might really have a dissociative disorder and that he would not even take the time to examine the evidence.

At that time I did not know much about the contributions of Carl Jung or John Rowan to the topic of dissociation. I began reading more about Jung's theory of what he called complexes and archetypes. He had studied under Pierre Janet during the winter of 1902–1903. "What Jung called 'complex' was originally nothing but the equivalent of Janet's 'subconscious fixed idea' " (Ellenberger, 1970, p. 406). I was surprised to find Jung's description of his own dissociation of identity in his autobiographic *Memories, Dreams, Reflections* (1961).[3]

From Rowan's book I learned that the idea of subpersonalities could be traced, in part, to Jung's theory, as well as to the Italian psychiatrist Roberto Assagioli (1975). Rowan presented the concept that people normally have a variety of inner roles or identities that may be, to some degree, dissociated from one another.[4] Rowan indicated that the presence of subpersonalities was not indicative of multiple personality disorder, which he described as being a more severe manifestation of personality dissociation. However, from reading his book, it was not clear to me where one would draw the line between the two. Further, it was not entirely clear that subpersonalities were, as Rowan argued, normal facets of one's personality.[5] For example, he cited another author (Schwartz, 1987) who was impressed with a bulimic client partly because the voices she described in her head were somewhat like the voices in his own head. Richard Noll (1993) has described "the all-too-real, almost audible, internal dialogue that babbles incessantly on and on in many of us, and is especially pronounced in times of great moral conflict" (p. 250). Are incidents of hearing voices that are not objectively present a normal experience? Mental health professionals have historically categorized such phenomena as hallucinations and symptomatic of psychoses, especially schizophrenia. Perhaps this question should receive further research.[6] Unfortunately, Jungian concepts did not help my understanding of Sarah's predicament.[7] As I was later to learn, Sarah had problems of an entirely different nature.

Sarah began to experience and enact a variety of different alternate identities in our sessions. Like the other clients diagnosed with dissociative identity disorder, Sarah had a quite a few different alters who would periodically take executive control in our sessions and would sometimes have conversations with me. Before too long, some of Sarah's alter identities began to describe sexual abuse by an uncle. Some of the abuse reportedly occurred in an abandoned house not far from where she lived during her childhood. Over time, Sarah said that during the abuse other people wearing robes and chanting to Satan were present. She began to have alters emerge that appeared to be *enforcers* (Marmer, 1980) of the perpetrators' demands to submit, never talk, and forget. These alters took credit for injuring her body or threatening harm, particularly when the perpetrators' rules were not followed.[8]

It took considerable effort to negotiate with the numerous alters that emerged in therapy. There were children, teenagers, and adults, both male and female. A couple of animal alters were identified. An alternate who believed herself to be a 17th-century witch presented herself. There were a variety of satanic alters, those who remembered being victimized in the rituals, those who believed they were the abusers, priests and priestesses, and entities who believed that they were demons. Much work went into addressing their narratives of abuse and her ability to appropriately express and experience the feelings they had become dissociated during these traumatic incidents.

I encountered, however, an entirely different category of alters. Sarah began to describe abuse in several different cults for which she attributed the general label, *voodooism*. Although Sarah denied having any knowledge of voodooism, a number of her alters claimed that they had extensive knowledge and experience with the subject. They explained to me that Sarah had been forced to participate in rituals in three different voodoo sects. The first one, they said, was of Dahomean origins. The second was associated with a cult that followed the traditions of the Yoruba tribe of Africans (who reside in present-day Nigeria). The third was what the alters called "Haitian voodoo," which, they explained, was an amalgam of the first two combined with other influences. These alters described the various pantheons of gods and goddesses associated with these sects in detail. Much of the information was written in Sarah's journal. They discussed rituals that were just as grizzly and shocking as those recounted by her satanically abused alters.

When the alternate identities were no longer present and Sarah resumed executive control, I asked her if the alters' allegations were true. Sarah said she had no idea. She reiterated that she knew nothing about voodooism and seemed skeptical that her alters could have so much detailed knowledge about a subject that was basically alien to her.

Voodoo was also something about which I knew little. It appeared that I needed to become more familiar with the subject, and so I began to read about the topic. In the meantime, Sarah made a trip to New Orleans, where she purchased some books in order to check the accuracy of what the alters had written in her journal. She was, however, too anxious to read the books in New Orleans and waited until she had returned to the Dallas area to do so. To her horror, the books supported what the alters claimed about the rituals and gods of this old African-derived religion.

Through my own research I learned that some authors prefer the term *vodoun*[9] as a more accurate or more respectful name for this religion. To further confuse things, people sometimes incorrectly use the term *voodoo* or *vodoun* in referring to any “primitive” (or, preferably, the less value-laden term, *preindustrial*) magic or sorcery-oriented religion.[10] Vodoun specifically refers to the African-derived cult or religion that is a syncretism of French Catholicism superimposed over a core of beliefs derived primarily from the Fon people of Dahomey (who currently reside in the African nation of Benin).[11] Although vodoun is historically from Africa, it is not an indigenous African religion. The term *juju*[12] is sometimes used to describe an indigenous religion of Western Africa (Oke, 1989) that may be related to vodoun. Vodoun has thrived primarily in the Americas in areas that were colonized by the French and where Africans were subjected to slavery; for example, Louisiana (Tallant, 1990) and Haiti (Deren, 1991; Rigaud, 1985). However, vodoun has been reportedly practiced in other parts of the world, including other islands of the Caribbean; the southeastern United States, including the environs of Charleston, South Carolina; and cities in the north where African Americans emigrated to escape slavery, racial hatred, and violence. According to Rigaud (1985), vodoun rituals have also been practiced in Galveston, Texas. My own clients described vodoun rites occurring in Louisiana and East Texas. Luhrmann (1989) reported that vodoun ceremonies have occurred in London. Elsewhere in the United States, especially within some African American communities, there are traditions involving an eclectic mixture of magical beliefs called *hoodoo* (Haskins, 1978).

A number of reputable scholars have investigated vodoun and similar related phenomena. For example, the eminent Harvard physiologist Walter

B. Cannon (1942) researched this subject and reported his findings in a paper "Voodoo Death." Cannon was interested in investigating claims that voodoo practitioners could bring on a person's death through ritual magic (e.g., bone pointing). Unfortunately, Cannon incorrectly used the term *voodoo* in reference to several different sorcery-oriented religions that existed in a variety of preindustrial, or "Third World," communities, including African and Polynesian cultures. However, Cannon did record sufficient accounts from people he believed to be reputable witnesses and concluded that some victims of voodoo curses did die afterward. As one might expect, Cannon, in the tradition of modern science, did not seriously consider the possibility that supernatural forces were responsible. Instead, he offered a variety of more conventional explanations for these deaths, including the possibility that some individuals who had been cursed may have deeply believed that death was imminent and may have stopped taking proper care of themselves.[13] At the time that Cannon wrote his paper, there was not much known about dissociation of identity and how alters could be triggered to do self-harm in response to a particular signal. This last explanation might also account for these deaths and would be a consideration for further study.

The anthropologist and ethnobotanist Wade Davis investigated vodoun practices in Haiti and described them in his book *The Serpent and the Rainbow* (Davis, 1985). His research was intended to study the pharmacology of substances associated with vodoun rites and the alleged power of vodoun priests to resurrect dead persons as zombies. Davis examined the hypothesis that the so-called zombie phenomena were the result of ingested drugs that produced deathlike symptoms and appearance but did not actuality kill the victim. Continuing with this premise, such a "dead" person might later be revived, and supernatural power might then be attributed to the individual doing the "healing." Davis did find some evidence for his hypothesis, but he also discovered mystical, ominous, and secretive subcultures that practiced these rituals and ceremonies.[14]

A curious observation about vodoun appeared in two publications by the prominent psychiatrists Herbert and David Spiegel (Spiegel, 1974; Spiegel & Spiegel, 1978). The focus of these comments was not primarily concerned with vodoun. Instead, the authors' writings discussed some personality characteristics that they believed were associated with highly hypnotizable subjects. They identified one such characteristic, "a fixed personality core," characterized by the subject's entrenched ideas that were not challengeable by logic or observation. They related an anecdote about a Haitian native:

> An amusing illustration in a sociological aspect was provided by a Haitian native. When asked what the distribution of the different religious beliefs in Haiti is, he replied without hesitation: "70 percent Catholics, 20 percent Protestants, and 95 percent Voodoo." In sum, this is an illustration of the hard core non-negotiability. (Spiegel & Spiegel, 1978, p. 320)

Unfortunately, the Spiegels may be missing the point behind this Haitian's narrative. Vodoun is apparently practiced by individuals who also consider themselves to be Christians.[15] How is this done? It is accomplished through syncretization and dissociation on the part of the vodoun follower. It is the same with Santeria, in which Catholic ceremonies are overtly followed and saints are ostensibly prayed to, but in actuality some element of the worship is really directed toward the African gods.

Vodoun is a possession cult with specific liturgical components: A *houngan* is a vodoun priest, and his female counterpart is a *mambo*. The vodoun sorcerer is sometimes called a *bokor*. The vodoun temple is called an *oumphor,* and its altar or altar stone is the *pé*. The *peristyle* is a partly enclosed courtyard that in the middle has a center post, the *poteau-mitan*. According to Rigaud (1985), the oumphor "closely resembles the design used by Moses to build the Ark of the Covenant and the tabernacle described in Exodus" (p. 14). Furthermore, according to Rigaud (1985):

> In the Voodoo tradition Moses was initiated into Voodoo and perfected his knowledge as a student of the black Midianite teacher Ra-Gu-El Pethro (Jethro). The Tradition relates that Moses became the husband of Pethro's daughter Sephora, who bore two mulatto sons by him: Gershom whose name means *I dwell in a foreign country*, and Eli-Ezer, whose name means *Help of God*. The tradition goes on to say that Aaron and Miriam, the brother and sister of Moses, complained that he never should have married a black, and so to please them Moses finally repudiated Sephora. When Moses built the first Hebrew temple, according to the Voodooists, he planted his staff in the place occupied by the poteau-mitan in the oum'phor. The gods of Voodoo were so angry at Moses' repudiation of Sephora and Voodoo, according to the tradition, that they "struck Miriam with white leprosy." (p. 14)

There has been some controversy as to whether human torture or sacrifice ever occurs in any vodoun rituals. According to Tallant (1974), there is not much evidence that human sacrifice has ever been performed in vodoun rituals in Louisiana. Nevertheless, my client Sarah reported that she had been present at rituals in Louisiana involving torture, human sacrifice, and ritual cannibalism. Other clients subsequently reiterated Sarah's claims in that they also described abusive and traumatizing vodoun rituals.

Rigaud's (1985) account indicated that some vodoun followers in Haiti did practice ritual acts of human violence in what have been called the *red sects*. Like Christianity or any other religion, vodoun consists of a variety of smaller sects that differ from one another in some particular aspects of belief, ritual, or tradition. One of the larger of the red sects is the Petro sect (Deren, 1991; Gersi, 1991; Rigaud, 1985), which apparently is known for its violent rituals. The specific subgroups of vodoun practitioners who engage in abusive rituals are also likely to be more secretive and represent a more closed society.[16] Tannahill (1975) cites a report by Sir Spenser St. John, the British consul general in Haiti during the 1860s, who witnessed a criminal case in which eight people were convicted for participating in a human sacrifice ritual.

Efforts to learn about New World vodoun also led us to explore the subject of indigenous African religions. We found E. E. Evans-Pritchard's book *Witchcraft Oracles and Magic among the Azande* (1980) to be useful and instructive. This work presented a methodical and detailed account of the beliefs, customs, and rituals associated with an African tribal confederacy in East Africa. *The Worlds of a Maasai Warrior,* by Saitoti (1986), depicted the spiritual beliefs and life experiences of the author as he grew up in an East African herding community. Lucy Mair's (1971) *Witchcraft* and Parrinder's (1970) *Witchcraft: European and African* discussed aspects of sorcery and witchcraft that are common features of African native religions offering some comparisons with European lore, traditions, and accounts of witchcraft. *Parallel Worlds* by Gottlieb and Graham (1993) presented a personal account of the authors' experience living in a West African village, observing the culture, spiritual beliefs, and rituals while coping with the secrecy, distrust, and ambivalence of the local villagers.

Indigenous healing practices are component features of African village life. The word *muti* comes from the Zulu language and is used to refer to the indigenous medicine healing of South Africa. Many methods of indigenous healing consider wellness to be the result of balancing the spiritual forces that are thought to influence the patient. This is often accomplished through the use of herbal remedies that are believed to block or activate particular spiritual processes essential to healing. Amputated body parts are believed to possess spiritual power, and there is a thriving practice in South Africa involving the murder of adults and children whose body parts can be used in magical rituals. These rituals may be done for a variety of purposes, including healing, but in other circumstances the intent is entirely malignant.[17]

However, of all the literature available on indigenous African religions, *Blood Secrets,* by Isiah Oke (1989), most directly addressed the question of ritual abuse. The author recounted his upbringing as the grandson and successor of an important *babalorisha,* or juju high priest, in West Africa. Oke described the traumatizing ceremonies he underwent in his training to be a high priest and the ordeals he was required to inflict on others, including an act of ritual torture and murder. He related what appeared to be common experiences of dissociation (although he did not use that term) in the community as he illustrated instances of significant memory loss as well as accounts of spirit possession among his fellow villagers.

According to Oke (1989): “Our rituals are designed to appease the most horrid of our gods. And—because those gods are so fearsome—so must be the rituals: We believe that nothing better appeases the fierce spirits of juju than *blood*” (p. 19). Oke explained that although the religion of juju is practiced openly in West Africa, there is a side to it where the “secrecy is so complete that one might almost say there is another religion, unknown to the outside world, *inside* the religion of juju” (p. 19).[18] He described the open and relatively benign ceremony that occurs in the public Temple:

> But there is another sacrificial place, usually well out in the forest, far from prying eyes and ears, that we call the Shrine. It is usually no more than a hut in a hidden clearing in what we call the igbo-awo (the secret forest). What is performed here is not the innocuous *ceremony*, but rather the gruesome and bloody *ritual.* (p. 19)

Oke explained that blood rituals are a common aspect of juju, and he speculated that the prevalence of these rituals may have something to do with the high incidence of AIDS among the entire African population (not just among gay males and intravenous drug users). Although Oke did not mention it, it may not be a mere coincidence that AIDS is also prevalent in Haiti,[19] given that Haiti is a center for the related cult of vodoun. Oke wrote that among his countrymen, there is a practice of infant sacrifice, but there is an even more prevalent custom of discarding unwanted babies to die of exposure or fall prey to predators. This typically occurs not for ceremonial purposes but simply to free the mother from the burden of caring for the child. According to Oke, Western demographers have mistakenly overattributed Africa’s high infant mortality rate to poor dietary and health conditions when the problem of “baby dumping” and sacrifice are also significant factors.

Another author who reiterated some of Oke’s observations regarding African religion is Malidoma Somé (1993, 1994). Somé is a West African and a scholar in the Western sense, holding doctoral degrees from both the Sorbonne and Brandeis University. Although Somé has been an advocate for his religion, he emphasized its use of secrecy and fear. He described rituals in which people appeared to be speaking in different voices with different identities. He noted that the priests who conduct the rituals were able to affect the minds of others present so that they were typically unable to recall the events that had transpired. He explained the case of a tribesman who offered to reveal secrets of the cult to outsiders, but before being able to do so, reportedly experienced a psychotic episode and committed suicide.

Such accounts are similar to those of survivors of ritual abuse in the United States who indicate that they feel their mind is blocked or “shut down” as they try to remember the details of their abuses or who feel particularly self-destructive when they are about to tell or have already told some of the secrets. In the United States, this enforcement of inner secrecy is accomplished by the procedure sometimes called *programming*.[20] As previously mentioned, programming has nothing to do with the supernatural. It is a form of classical conditioning that involves creating and manipulating conditioned responses to trauma.[21]

Sargant (1974) described the personality transformation, dissociation, amnesia, and programming associated with an *orisha*[22] cult, the ritual practices of which were carried out in what the author called a “convent”:

> Pierre Verger himself has become a priest of the Orisha cult, so he could not tell me about many of the secret ceremonies that took place in the convent. But he was able to say that it was a severe brainwashing process in which the normal personality is replaced by a new personality. The postulant is never permitted to remember his normal personality, what he was like and how he behaved as his former self. But when he leaves the convent he is given back his old personality by a special process, and has little memory of what happened during his time in the convent. People go back into the convent from time to time and by the same hypnotic process revert to their god-like personality, to emerge once more with their ordinary personality when they return to the outside world. (p. 149)

A variety of other cults may have evolved in part from African juju. In the Spanish-speaking cultures of the Caribbean and North and South America, there are sects that go by such names as Santeria, Abaqua, Palo Mayombe, Palo Monte, and Obeah. Native to Brazil is Macumba, a general term that can be subdivided further into more specific sects: Candomblé, Umbanda, Batuque, and Quimbanda. It is beyond the scope of this chapter to attempt to describe them all in detail, but some brief comments about Santeria, Palo Mayombe, and Macumba should be made along with a few words about Brujeria, even though it is not technically of African origin.

In *Santeria: An African Religion in America* (1988), Joseph Murphy narrated his experiences observing and participating in Santero practices in the Bronx, New York. Murphy presented his view that the sensationalized media reports of cruel ritual practices sometimes associated with Santeria were inaccurate and reflected cultural biases and prejudices. He wrote that ceremonies involving the blood sacrifice of animals were always conducted in a humane manner and that the animals were killed quickly and later eaten. He made no mention of any rituals where humans are harmed but described an emotionally warm and supportive sense of community among these people. However, Murphy admitted that he was both a neophyte and an outsider who was not immersed in the beliefs and inner traditions of Santeria. As mentioned earlier, other authors have described incremental levels of secrecy with increasingly higher involvement in violent rituals in some of the African and African-derived cults.

Garrison (1977) observed that in New York City, the traditions of the African-derived Santeria had become intermixed with the beliefs and practices of *curandismo* and *Espiritismo*, the latter two reportedly being of more European American derivation. However, the “great majority of those who attend spiritist *centros* in both area surveys and in the *centro* client sample report their religion as Roman Catholic” (Garrison, 1977, p. 395). This parallels what was previously stated regarding vodoun practitioners who typically consider themselves Christians. Garrison also wrote about how experiences of possession were categorized and interpreted in this amalgamous sect.

Migene Gonzalez-Wippler (1984, 1987, 1992) is a scholarly author who has written about Santeria, describing it as another possession cult primarily derived from the African religion practiced by the Yoruba tribe of Nigeria. As was mentioned previously in this chapter, Isiah Oke, a Yoruban and former high priest of his native African religion, described ritual murder as an intrinsic component of his cult. However, Gonzalez-Wippler refuted that any element of such “black magic” practices were normally a part of Santeria.[23] The author did concede, however, that abusive and violent acts were common in Palo Mayombe, a possession cult derived from the Bantus of the Congo tribes. The alleged malignancy and violence associated with Palo Mayombe was reiterated by Detectives Pat Metoyer of the Los Angeles Police Department and Jim Bradley of the Washington, D.C., Metropolitan Police Department in interviews conducted by Larry Kahaner (1988).

The practices of Santeria and Palo Mayombe have been associated with the drug cult led by Adolfo Constanzo at the Santa Elena ranch outside Matamoros, Mexico, across the border from Brownsville, Texas. There is evidence that ritual murders occurred in the vicinity, and the remains of 15 bodies and numerous artifacts of Santeria and Palo Mayombe were discovered (Kilroy, 1990). In a thoroughly researched account by Carl Raschke (1990), the author also pointed out that the sadistic and ceremonial murders committed by Constanzo showed the influence of Brujeria,[24] an Hispanic form of black magic derived from Aztec blood rituals. In addition to the material evidence, some of Constanzo’s accomplices confessed, providing eyewitness accounts of their ritualistic activities and descriptions of the occult beliefs:

> The Hernandezs’ confessed to the murder of Kilroy and began to reveal all about the workings of the cult and its leaders. They fingered Adolfo de Jesus Constanzo, as well as a Brownsville college student named Sarra Villareal Aldrete. She acted as the “high priestess” of the group. . . . Aldrete was an honors student by day at Texas Southmost College and a *narcotraficante* by night. At her home in Matamoros, police came across an assortment of “voodoo” paraphernalia and a blood-splattered altar of sacrifice. Aldrete’s neighbors, her classmates, and her teachers naturally expressed astonishment and dismay. . . . Aldrete, however, had fled the scene of the crime along with Constanzo and there was much talk about her . . . “multiple personalities.” (Raschke, 1990, p. 11)

Despite the abundance of evidence,[25] some writers (Green, 1991) have chosen to discount the sadistic and occult religious practices of Constanzo and his accomplices. However, the nature of the murders of Kilroy and the other victims, the particular mutilations perpetrated on them, and even the manner of their burials were steeped in occult traditions. To better understand this, one needs to consider the significance of death and the use of body parts in ritual magic (e.g., our earlier discussion of muti murders).

At least one of my other clients reported experiencing cult abuse while living in Brazil. Sarah also alleged abuse by a group located in Louisiana that reportedly used the term *Macumba* to describe its practices. Macumba, or *santuario,* is a general term for the Brazilian version of Santeria. Both belief systems are primarily traceable to the Yoruban religion. They have essentially the same gods with the same legends. There are only minor differences in the spellings of their names along with the expected regional variations in status and idiosyncratic characteristics that the particular gods have to the local believers. According to Guiley (1989), Macumba has been sometimes erroneously equated with black magic, but such malevolent practices are more correctly specifically associated with the sect of Quimbanda.[26] The French author and photographer Serge Bramley (1977) wrote about the secretiveness that Brazilians have about Macumba, yet reported on its prevalence. For example, Bramley stated that on December 31, 1975, there were an estimated one million participants in the festival for the Macumba goddess Iemanja in the city of Rio de Janeiro alone. Seth and Ruth Leacock (1975) describe the *encantados,* who are believed to be important spirits of the Batuque religion, an Afro-Brazilian cult. When a person is possessed by an encantado, harm is sometimes self-inflicted while in the possessed state if that person has broken any of the rules of the cult.[27]

Sarah was my first client to clearly identify that ritual abuse could be conducted in the manner of African-derived cults. After her, however, a number of other clients reported similar experiences.

CHAPTER 9

Other Cultures

Coincidentally, with our efforts to learn more about African-derived cults we began to study other cultures. Some clients reported abuse in rituals associated with other cultures, including those of Native Americans, Hawaiians, and Australian Aborigines that appeared similar to Sarah's (see Chapter 8) accounts of traumatizing vodoun ceremonies. The clients describing these incidents substantiated their having lived (although sometimes temporarily) in the locations where the abuse reportedly occurred.

One of the classic anthropological works by the eminent scholar Clyde Kluckhohn (1962) addressed Native American occult practices. Kluckhohn was president of the American Anthropological Association in 1947 following the 1944 publication of what many considered to be his finest work, *Navaho Witchcraft* (republished in 1962). Kluckhohn noted the extreme degree of secrecy associated with Navaho ritual magic and the reluctance of these Native Americans to discuss the subject with outsiders. After extensive time was spent collecting data from interviews with the Indians, Kluckhohn concluded: "There seems to be clear evidence that witchcraft *is* practiced—we as yet have no scientific certainty as to frequency or as to whether all the types which are described in words are indeed actualized in deeds" (Kluckhohn, 1962, p. 56).[1]

It was surprising to learn the extent to which abusive rituals were documented in diverse cultures throughout history. According to Terje Oestigaard (2000), research fellow at the Centre for Development Studies at the University of Bergen: "Sacrifice of both living and dead humans was a common practice" (p. 54). In addition to the Moche (Davies, 1981; Sutter & Cortez, 2005; Swenson, 2012), the Incas (Andrushko, Buzon, Gibaja, McEwan, Simonetti, & Creaser, 2011; Reinhard & Ceruti, 2005; Wilson et al., 2007), the Mayans (Davies, 1981; Lemonick, 1993; Romney, 2005; Schele & Miller, 1986, Tompkins, 1990), and the Aztecs (Davies, 1981; Markman & Markman, 1992; Pennock, 2012; Tompkins, 1990) demonstrated a history and clear archeological evidence of ceremonial acts of violence. If one carefully scrutinizes the subject, it becomes apparent that human sacrifice was also part of Europe's heritage.[2] It is a shared legacy in human history. Several of my clients alleged being abused in what they believed were Native American ritual ceremonies. One of the clients identified a specific cult using the term *shamas*.

The topic of shamanism is receiving increasing scholarly attention. In the article "Shamanisms Today" published in the *Annual Review of Anthropology,* Jane Atkinson (1992) wrote that "just a few decades ago, shamanism appeared to be a dead issue in American anthropology" (p. 307). Atkinson (1992) cited Taussig, who opined that:

> Shamanism is . . . a made-up, Modern Western category, and artful reification of disparate practices, snatches of folklore and overarching folklorizations, residues of long-established myths intermingled with the politics of academic departments, curricula, conferences, journal juries [and] funding agencies. (p. 307)

In spite of Taussig's criticism of the subject, Atkinson presented a scholarly and thoroughly researched account of the subject in a prestigious anthropological publication. She concurred with Holmberg's (1983) observation that there really is no single unified shamanism per se but that there are a plurality of shamanisms, each with its own individual variations. Thomas DuBois (2011) noted there was a growing trend in shamanism scholarship:

> Today, in the year 2010, one can see that the trends Atkinson noted have only continued to grow in importance, with valuable research ongoing within a number of different theoretical frameworks and a marked increase in scholarly and popular publication venues, including new presses and journals and a bourgeoning internet presence for shamanic topics. (p. 100)

Two of the classic scholarly works on shamanism that are frequently cited are Mircea Eliade's (1964) *Shamanism: Archaic Techniques of Ecstasy* and Michael Harner's (1990) *The Way of the Shaman*. According to Harner and Eliade, shamans are essentially what Westerners call "witch doctors" and "medicine men." They describe shamanism as a primordial system of healing, spiritual revelation, and the exercise of "spiritual power" practiced since prehistoric times. It is distinguishable from witchcraft and sorcery (e.g., Guiley, 1989) and the possession cults (e.g., Oesterreich, 1966),[3] although Harner (1990) specifically identifies some as “warrior shamans” who may also be correctly called sorcerers.[4] The shaman is an individual who is able to attain a ritual trance state, often with the aid of drums, chanting, and ceremonial dancing. Sometimes sleep deprivation and/or the ingestion of mind-altering drugs facilitate these dissociated mental states.

While in a trance, the shaman purportedly enters a “parallel” spirit world, resulting in visions that allow him to diagnose health conditions. He may offer interpretations or make judgments about other problems, including legal disputes. In shamanism, cures are not usually achieved by giving the person seeking treatment drugs as much as the shaman himself may take a drug to alter his own consciousness. In such a state, the shaman believes himself able to confront and negotiate with spiritual forces, or to recover the sick person’s lost soul in the “spirit world” to effect the desired cure. Within this belief system, these tasks are sometimes accomplished with the aid of spiritual entities sometimes called a “guardian spirit” and one or more “spirit helpers.”

Not all shamans limit their craft to benevolent activities, and some may also dabble in sorcery or witchcraft invoking the “dark” or malevolent spiritual forces when needed. Huxley (1989) distinguished between what he called “black” shamanism and “white” shamanism that represented evil versus benign practices. Wright (1957) made a similar observation regarding the benevolent healers, *curanderos* and the malevolent *feiteceiros* among the Native American Amazon witch doctors. In his book *The Shaman and the Magician*, Drury (1987) noted a variety of similarities between traditional shamanic practices and selected features of modern ritual magic such as may be seen in the occult, quasi-Masonic organization, the Hermetic Order of the Golden Dawn.

An important question regarding shamanism is whether these groups engage in abusive or traumatizing ritual practices. How do shamans obtain their “spirits”? We have hypothesized that these “spirits” are dissociated identities. It is conceivable that they could be produced by rituals whose net effect is repeated self-hypnosis. Some rituals are not traumatic. Other rituals are traumatic and those that involve repeated, circumscribed trauma would be expected to produce fierce, intrusive alters that could be easily mistaken for demons. This conclusion has been supported by the narratives of several clients who reported ritual abuse in possession cults (e.g., Sarah's abuse through the use of vodoun rituals).

In his book *The Way of the Shaman*, Harner (1990) was not entirely clear about how these spiritual entities come to be part of the shaman's inner psychological world. According to Harner, the guardian spirit may come to the shaman after a serious illness or this spirit may be deliberately encountered during a ritual exercise he calls a *vision quest.* In his book, terms like "another identity" (p. 43), "alter ego" (p. 43), and "another self " (p. 59) were used in reference to the guardian spirit. De Martino (1972) used the expressions "dual personality" and "second personality" (p. 85) in describing the experience of coming in contact with such an entity. Obviously, these terms could also appropriately refer to alter personalities.

However, one observable difference between DID and possession cults on the one hand, and shamanism on the other, is that in shamanism there is sometimes no complete "possession" by the spirit. Shamans may go into a possession trance but the possessing entity does not necessarily "take over" the shaman's functioning. The experience has often been described as an "inner journey" wherein the shaman attempts to communicate with spirits. This kind of mental functioning may be more similar to the *DSM-5* category, other specified dissociative disorder, dissociative trance, although it needs to be noted that dissociative trance "is not a normal part of a broadly accepted collective cultural or religious practice" (APA, 2013, p. 307).

Harner (1990) added that there are "involuntary ways" (p. 43) whereby a person may obtain a guardian spirit, although he did not specify how this would be accomplished. Later in his book, he explained that the Jivaro tribe commonly gave their newborn infants a hallucinogenic drug for the purpose of assisting in the process of the child's producing a guardian spirit. After briefly mentioning the practice of drugging newborns, he indicated that there are other involuntary ways whereby children may acquire guardian spirits, but he did not describe these methods either.

In his book *The Occult: A History*, Colin Wilson (1971) argued that traumatization is part of the shaman's training. "The *shaman* himself has achieved his priesthood through the most terrifying ordeals, an initiation through pain" (p. 147). According to Gersi (1991), "becoming a shaman takes years of painful initiations. I have heard that many neophytes die from the hardships involved. The neophyte experiences the worst physical and psychological torments—even madness” (p. 45). Eliade (1964) also presented the view that shamanistic initiation involves traumatizing ordeals in which the initiate returns to the village with what appears to be memory loss to the extent that basic living skills must be relearned and the individual is given a new name.[5]

Ritual cannibalism has also been attributed to some shamanic practices. Ritual cannibalism is presumably a traumatizing experience both for the victims before they die, as well as for those who survive the ritual. According to R. D. Jamison (1984):

> The generally reliable account of the Cambridge expedition to the Torres Straits reported that sorcerers ate the flesh of corpses or mixed the flesh of corpses with their food when they were out to practice their art. The consequence was that they became violent and, when angered, committed murder. Too little is known of the steps taken to induce the shamanist trance except to note at cannibalism in this instance promoted the consumer to an inhuman or superhuman state. (p. 189)

The major motion picture from some years ago, *A Man Called Horse* (Silverstein & Howard, 1985), also depicted traumatic shamanistic practices. This movie portrayed a captive White man enslaved by a Sioux tribe. Once he proved his prowess as a hunter and earned respect from the tribe, he was allowed to participate in a torturous tribal ritual initiation. The ceremony entailed his suspension by ropes attached to claws inserted into his pectoral muscles. In this fictional account, the White man enters a trance during this torture, apparently in response to his suffering, and in this trance state, he sees spectacular and majestic visions. According to Kurath (1984), Powers (1977), and Yenne (1986), such practices actually occurred in the past and continue in the present among some tribes of Plains Indians. White Americans sometimes call this ritual the *sun dance*; however, according to Powers (1977), the Indian phrase describing this ceremony is better translated as the *sun gazing dance* (p. 95). John Lame Deer (1972) describes the ritual as follows:

> The dance is not so severe now as it once was, but even today it asks much of a man. Even today a man may faint for lack of food and water. He may become so thirsty blowing on his eagle-bone whistle that his throat will be parched like a cracked, dry riverbed. He may be blind for a time from staring at the sun so that his eyes see only glowing spirals of glaring whiteness. The pain in his flesh, where the eagle’s claw is fastened in his breast, may become so great that a moment arrives when he will no longer feel it. It is at such moments, when he loses consciousness, when the sun burns itself into his mind, when his strength is gone and his legs buckle under him, that the visions occur—visions of becoming a medicine man, visions of the future. (p. 189)

The author adds:

> The difference between the white man and us is this: You believe in the redeeming powers of suffering, if this suffering was done by somebody else, far away, two thousand years ago. We believe that it is up to every one of us to help each other, even through the pain in our bodies. Pain to us is not "abstract," but very real. We do not lay this burden onto our god, nor do we want to miss being face to face with the spirit power. It is when we are fasting on the hilltop, or tearing our flesh at the sun dance, that we experience the sudden insight, come closest to the mind of the Great Spirit. Insight does not come cheaply, and we want no angel or saint to gain it for us and give it to us secondhand. (p. 197)

In another account of Native American religion, Lemonick (1993) described the manner in which the traumatizing rituals of the Mayans (who inhabited southeastern Mexico and Guatemala) induced altered states of consciousness that had religious significance to the community of believers. The author states: "The gruesome ritual of bloodletting accompanied every major political and religious event in ancient Maya society. . . . The intense pain of such rites led to hallucinatory visions that allowed participants to communicate with ancestors and mythological beings" (Lemonick, 1993, p. 49).

Other shamanistic and preindustrial cultures also allegedly performed painful or abusive rituals. In *Kingship and Sacrifice*, Valeri (1985) described numerous episodes of ritual human sacrifice performed by Hawaiians prior to 1819 when such ceremonies were officially abolished. Valeri noted that sacrifices were also used in rites of sorcery. Steiger (1971) indicated that among the Hawaiians (as elsewhere) male circumcision has been a kind of blood ritual. Without anesthesia, it is also presumably a painful ritual experience that may cause an altered state of consciousness. Similarly, Cowan (1992) described the shamanistic practices of the Australian Aboriginals:

> The idea of bloodletting or blood sacrifice is rooted in Aboriginal ritual practice. There are few ceremonies that do not involve the cutting of some part of the body to release blood. . . . In the strict sense a boy cannot become a man until he has undergone initiation. Until he is initiated, it follows that he lives only a part life as a child. Ritual initiation allows him to be 'reborn' into a more complete life as an adult. Prior to European contact young girls often underwent ritual deflowering by men of the same class as the intended husband. This also involved a clitoral cut with a stone knife, followed by intercourse with the men concerned. (p. 55)

According to Cowan, Aboriginal boys also experience painful rituals that result in a transformation of identity:

> During the ceremony a boy's personality undergoes an abrupt and permanent change. Not only must he experience pain in the act of submission to his Elders, he must learn obedience. . . . Sworn to secrecy about the rites he has witnessed, the initiate finds himself transformed by the nature of his experience into a man on whom the burden of cultural continuity is already beginning to fall. (pp. 56–57)

The practice of ritual infanticide and keeping the embalmed body has been reportedly practiced by some Eskimo shamans as a means of gaining a "familiar" spirit (Ahmed, 1968). This procedure would be expected to be traumatizing to the shaman perpetrator, who then might dissociate (further) as a result of this experience. This ritual act is similar to a practice observed in some of the Caribbean islands in which, according to Beck (1979), a "familiar" spirit called a *bolum* can be acquired. Ritual sacrifice of children is attributable to a variety of shamanistic and other cultures (Potter, 1984). Repeated ritual murder is reportedly a characteristic practice of "sorcerers" from the Cebuano culture of the Philippines (Lieban, 1967):

> To become one who can practice *hilo*, it is said that a man must first kill a member of his own family, and from then on one or more victims each year. One sorcerer said that the sorcerer's obligation to kill grows with time; the longer the sorcerer practices, the more frequently he has to kill. All informants agreed that once a sorcerer assumes such obligations, if he does not victimize others according to schedule, he himself will become a victim, struck down by his own instruments of sorcery that turn against him. As one sorcerer expressed it, "If he does not kill, he gets seriously ill, and he only gets well when he kills. If he does not kill, he will die." (p. 23)

It is our hypothesis that repeated experiences of trauma are a necessary precedent to the development of intrusive experiences of dissociated identity. Furthermore, certain rituals that include blood sacrifice and the ritual eating of the sacrificial victim increase the probability of mentally internalizing the concept or image of the victim, or the entity that the victim symbolizes, thereby facilitating the creation of dissociated identities or alter personalities.

It is plausible that painful rituals have been used in the training of shamans. Such folk healers may have observed suffering people who appeared to be in a state of psychological shock as a result of their pain. Because of the unresponsiveness often seen in people in a state of shock, it would be easy to understand how shamans might conclude that these people's souls had left their bodies. The return of a person's soul to his or her body might have been construed when an unconscious, but suffering, individual, returned to consciousness. Certainly, the capacity to regain consciousness after a brief lapse would be a favorable sign in the unconscious individual’s recovery, and presumably, shamans did typically try to assist their clients’ return to consciousness as expeditiously as possible.

It is possible that as shamans gained experience in healing, they were able to generalize the idea of loss of soul to phenomena beyond the simple loss of consciousness induced by trauma or sickness. For example, some illnesses may also result in less obvious departures in a person’s normal consciousness. An effective healer would need to be sensitive to such subtle changes, particularly as they related to illness and health. Early shamans probably also noted that there are other altered states of consciousness that are adaptive, such as sleep. When early shamans themselves became sick or accidentally ingested certain drugs, especially hallucinogens, these practitioners may have believed that they had entered a spirit world much like the parallel worlds where they believed their clients’ souls had become lost. At other times, shamans may have noticed that trances could be induced through certain repetitive sounds and activities: drum beating, chanting, dancing, sleep deprivation, or the like.

In taking such a perspective, it is possible to see ways that shamans might have developed their characteristic approaches to healing. Their primary goal was to negotiate in the spirit world or otherwise return their clients’ souls to their bodies. What better way to do this than for the healer to go into the “world” of lost consciousness (i.e., the “spirit world”) to find and recover these “lost souls”? As strange as this may sound to modern Westerners, it is a sacred idea that is treated reverently in many cultures. Furthermore, there may have been some effective cures, or the practice would probably not have continued. But how could such a magical, but unscientific, approach to treatment have any useful effect? Even today in modern Western medicine, one of the most potent treatment effects is said to be the placebo effect.[6] Because the placebo effect seems to depend on the client’s belief in the practitioner’s ability and the client’s own capacity for recovery, it would seem reasonable that in some cases a dramatic ritual might exert a more powerful placebo effect than routine office practices in a contemporary clinic.[7]

How might one organize such a dramatic ritual? A ritual killing, although gruesome, might provide a particularly emotionally provocative method. To symbolically trade the life of one (e.g., an animal or person of lessor value to the tribe) for the life or the improved health of the “benefactor” might be enacted as an impressive spectacle wherein the expected result would be maximized. In some cases where clients got well, it seems reasonable that the recovered client attributed the “cure” to the shaman’s prowess. The client might even describe his or her descent into the fearful spirit world simply by reporting the imagery and hallucinations experienced while in that particular altered state of consciousness.[8]

But what would happen if the client recovered, but was in a state of confusion, disorientation regarding his or her own identity, and unable to recognize family or friends or the immediate environment? Such cases do occur in modern Western hospitals and emergency rooms where an individual is so ill as to be disoriented. In such cases where the shaman was unable to assist in recovering the client’s soul through the other means already described, it may have seemed necessary to give the client another soul (identity), possibly a helper soul, and presumably rituals evolved in which people could effect this alternative kind of cure. The effects of hypnosis are typically short-lived. Something stronger might be needed to ensure that this helper soul did not leave as well. Some people might be able to keep their helper soul alive by repetitive rituals equivalent to ongoing hypnosis sessions. However, to produce a truly lasting helper spirit, some sort of extremely powerful ritual might be needed. The effects of trauma are sometimes unavailable to conscious awareness, sometimes they emerge as nightmares and flashbacks, but this kind of dissociated reaction doesn’t easily go away on its own accord. It leaves characteristic psychological features of trauma that often require lengthy therapy or some other intensive emotionally healing process. What if the flashback experience could be molded into taking the form of an alternate identity?

It is at this point with the discovery of more powerfully dissociated states produced through traumatizing rituals that some shamans may have given birth to a new kind of spiritual tradition: sorcery and black magic. Such a diabolical craft would have some obvious disadvantages (i.e., painful rituals, the abandonment of normal morality, and so on). On the other hand, these methods of sorcery would be expected to produce more powerful and lasting experiences of possession and dissociation.

In many preindustrial communities, there may have been a desire to have the immediate presence of their gods among them. Such spectacles might be possible after the gods had ostensibly taken possession of one of the local villagers. The use of traumatizing techniques may have been more effective in creating possession by the gods than other less dramatic and demanding methods. Valeri (1985) made an interesting observation: “gods who no longer receive human recognition in the form of sacrifices and prayers die” (p. 104). However, in most cultures, the traumatic rituals for inducing this kind of possession often would have to be secret. In order for the dissociation of identity to work most effectively, the victim (or recipient) of the possession would need to be amnestic for the details of the traumatizing rituals. It has been demonstrated that in working with modern dissociative clients, psychological recovery, including a lessening of the effects of dissociation, is facilitated by recovering the memories of traumatization. Observant sorcerers may have learned that they could also create other kinds of possessing entities including familiars (e.g., the spirit guardians mentioned earlier) and a particular kind of familiar that is a helper to the sorcerer, not the victim, of the ritual. Oke (1989) referred to this entity as an *iko-awo* or “spirit slave.” The spirit slave is presumably a dissociated alter identity that is created in the victim by the traumatizing ritual. The *iko-awo* is instructed under severe duress to do anything the sorcerer commands, including suicide. The enforcer alters previously discussed would be similar to spirit slaves. The victim typically would be amnestic for the traumatizing ritual and unaware of the malevolent training that was part of the initiatory ritual.

We propose that this is how black magic works. When a spell is cast, or a curse or a signal is given, the “spirit slave” is effectively called out.[9] The spirit slave is commanded to carry out a specific task for the sorcerer. This command could be expressed in the form of a signal to which the victim was previously taught to respond during a traumatic ritual. If the dissociation is great enough, this can be done without the victim’s conscious awareness.[10] If the sorcerer does not know the victim’s programming or if the victim has no such programming, then the sorcerer’s efforts may fail altogether. However, if the sorcerer has successfully programmed several individuals in the tribe without their awareness, then the community may have great fear and reverence for him or her, particularly after such “magical powers” are later apparently demonstrated.

Sorcerers who themselves had inner dissociated entities would probably more accurately be considered “witches” because of the anthropological distinction that is sometimes made between sorcery and witchcraft.

Anthropologists have responded in large part to E. E. Evans-Pritchard's (1931) observation that the African Azande have different words to denote witchcraft versus sorcery.[11] Although this anthropological distinction is not universally accepted,[12] we find it useful to make a differentiation for purposes of clarity. Sorcery may be defined as the use of ritual magic and cues that are designed to cause psychological changes in others by triggering or accessing dissociated mental states in such individuals. Witchcraft may be defined as a more specific form of sorcery in which the practitioner believes that he or she has a special bond (or pact) with a spiritual entity that is actually a dissociated alternate identity within the witch. The witch may then use ritual magic or other cues to cause mental changes both within the witch as well as within the external person who is "bewitched" (i.e., assessed or triggered). Witches purportedly perform black magic with the aid of an evil deity or "demon," but they are also indebted to that malignant entity.[13] In other words, true witches may have undergone some ceremonial procedure whereby one or more dissociated entities have been created in themselves. Such dissociated entities could be viewed as demons or malevolent gods (depending on the procedures by which the entity is created and the beliefs of the cult).[14] Such practices reportedly are secretly passed down through individual families.

It is noteworthy that in many cultures, witchcraft is considered to be hereditary.[15] In the United States, the incidence of ritual abuse is also frequently associated with multigenerational practices.[16] Another perplexing characteristic of witchcraft in many cultures is its association with incest and other behaviors typically taboo in most organized societies. This feature of witchcraft also parallels the North American reports of ritual abuse. Most European American satanism constitutes a kind of possession cult or sorcery religion similar to the others that I have described. Thus, satanism is a particular form of witchcraft wherein the evil deity is, of course, Satan. This is not to confuse satanism with Wicca, which is not, in an anthropological sense, actually witchcraft but is instead a syncretized form of modern nature worship combined with elements of shamanism and some influences of Western ritual magic.[17] (Wicca is discussed further in Chapter 11.) It should also be noted that the term *satanism* might sometimes be incorrectly used for other occult (see Chapter 12) and non-occult beliefs and practices.

With the advent of sorcery and witchcraft, possession cults may have been able to formalize effective, but secret, rituals for creating possession states. As has been noted elsewhere in this book, some religions have evolved around these practices, including African and African-derived sorcery religions and some similar rituals of Australian Aboriginals, Polynesians, Native Americans, and Eskimos, some of which would be considered primarily shamanic. Similar cults and religions also emerged in Asia (e.g., some Asian shamanisms, Thugees, and worshippers of Shakti), the Middle East (e.g., devotees of Baal and Molech), the Mediterranean (e.g., mystery cults), and northwestern European cultures (e.g., Druids).[18]

CHAPTER 10

1990: The Year of the Awakening

I noticed seasonal mood changes among some of my clients. They seemed to function more poorly at certain times of the year. Curiously, some deteriorated in a pattern that coincided with the phases of the moon. At least one of these clients expressed frustration because I ignored her, repeatedly telling me that she became more self-destructive when the moon was full. She was right. I had discounted what she was saying. I was confident that the moon had no effect on anyone's behavior and so paid little attention to her comments.

When I was in graduate school, I wrote my doctoral dissertation on the subject of astrology (Noblitt, 1978/1979). I conducted an empirical study that found no relationship between selected astrological predictions of personality and objective personality testing results. Nevertheless, in reviewing other published research, there were some other studies that did show occasional significant relationships "between the moon's phases and state hospital admissions (Osborn, 1968; Weiskott & Tipton, 1975), psychiatric ward admissions (Blackman & Catalina, 1973), criminal offenses (Tasso & Miller, 1976), and homicides (Lieber & Sherin, 1972)" (Noblitt, 1978/1979, p. 19). However, a number of studies showed no significant relationship: "in comparing lunar periodicity with patterns of suicide (Lester, Brokopp, & Priebe, 1969), homicides (Porkorny & Jachimczyk, 1974), suicides and homicides (Porkorny, 1964), psychiatric emergencies (Bauer & Hornick, 1968), mental hospital admissions (Porkorny, 1968), telephone calls to a counseling service (Weiskott, 1974), and 'acting out' behavior on a psychiatric ward (Shapiro, Streiner, Gray, Williams, & Soble, 1970)" (Noblitt, 1978/1979, p. 19).

The eminent British psychologist Hans Eysenck also conducted research on astrology, most of which was published after I completed my dissertation. His stated views were initially open to some astrological interpretations, but as additional data accumulated he became more skeptical (Eysenck, 1997; Eysenck & Nias, 1982). Another luminary in psychology, Carl Jung, was more actively supportive of astrological lore, and he included the interpretation of birth horoscopes in his care of patients. Jung (1962) opined that “astrology represents the summation of all psychological knowledge of antiquity” (p. 142).

Although there is no compelling evidence supporting the claims of astrology, it is safe to say that self-fulfilling prophecies can and do occur. Bok (1975) suggested that such self-fulfilling prophecies played a role in validating individual personal beliefs in astrology, and these beliefs could foster unhealthy magical thinking. Could it be that some of these clients were responding with distress to the phases of the moon (typically the full moon) because of their own expectations? When we explored this possibility, an altogether different explanation began to emerge. My clients would at first typically say that they had no idea why they had emotionally deteriorated when they did. However, alternate identities would sometimes emerge and recall traumatizing abuses that coincided with a full moon. Sometimes these recollections occurred along with flashbacks of particular abuses. As their narratives became clearer and more coherent, they often concluded that they had been abused in rituals that were synchronized with specific celestial or seasonal phases. Such narratives and their clinical manifestations are consistent with traumatized individuals who are triggered into flashbacks or states of panic or depression by some event or occurrence that reminds them of the original distressing event. One such example is the *anniversary reaction* that occurs when clients relive some traumatic experience on the same date but during a year subsequent to the actual traumatic incident.

Many survivors described past abuses in rituals during the full moon. We explored this claim further by asking other therapists about their clients’ allegations and by researching the literature. Our colleagues’ responses and our findings from other published sources have been consistent with these narratives.[1]

Furthermore, some survivors produced calendars listing what they call “cult holidays.”[2] Although the calendars have been similar to one another, there may have minor individual variations. Of the various calendars of cult holidays that my clients described, the most detailed one was provided by “Elaine” with a notation that the year of 1990 was “the year of the awakening.” When I asked Elaine about what she had written, she said that she had primarily been abused in a satanic cult that had taught her that 1990 was the year when all the members of her group were to “awaken,” or start to recognize the presence of their cult alters, in preparation for the arrival of Satan.

I told Elaine that I did not understand and asked, “What arrival?” She told me that in her cult, she was taught that Satan was supposed to make a presence on Earth for the Apocalypse in the manner described in the Bible’s book of Revelation. However, according to her abusers, Satan and his followers would be victorious in the final battle against G-d[3] and the forces of light. She told me, “1999 is the year of the arrival.”

This was news to me. I had heard of apocalyptic proclamations that prophesied the “final days,” but not about an Armageddon in reverse. My concern was that even if this belief were false, it might provoke volatile people toward acts of violence. Such incidents have already occurred under the auspices of apocalyptic groups that announced that the end of the world was near.[4]

I explored this question with other cult survivors and was told by some that they thought Satan was indeed coming to do battle on earth. Some specifically mentioned the year 1999. What were the origins of such a strange belief ? My clients were unable to explain it to me. In the course of researching this question, we came upon a series of verses by 16th-century French occultist Michel de Nostredame. Better known as Nostradamus, his quatrains were supposedly predictive of major events in history. According to Wilson (1971), “one of its most disquieting prophesies declares”:

> Like the great king of the Angolmois
> The year 1999, seventh month,
> The Great king of terror will descend from the sky,
> At this time, Mars will reign for the good cause. (p. 265)

Like many examples of prophetic language, this material is unclear and could be open to a variety of different interpretations. However, in this case, a cultist might interpret “the Great king of terror” as G-d or Satan (depending on his or her point of view). Of course, there was no such disastrous occurrence in 1999.

Elaine further explained that she believed that the reason that so many individuals with dissociative identity disorder were “coming out of the woodwork” at that time was because those who had been abused in such cults were preparing for this “arrival.” Although 1990 was supposedly the “year of the awakening,” some were apparently awakening even earlier. A number of other clients indicated that they had alternate identities that were preparing for an apocalyptic return and victory for Satan or Lucifer. Some even used the phrase *Armageddon programming* to describe the training that they had allegedly received for this purpose.

Some clients indicated that they believed mass killings would be under way as the “end times” approached. Several said that they believed that a number of the mass killers of recent times had been trained by such cults, in which these grand acts of evil were looked upon as sacrificial events. By increasing human suffering, there was supposed to be a magical augmentation of the power of evil. For other cultists, their goals have been described as establishing a “new world order” along the lines of a totalitarian police state. Some ritual abuse survivors stated that they had been trained in military-style combat in remote areas of the United States. A number of such individuals told me that they believed that the bombing of the federal building in Oklahoma City was one such undertaking as part of a series of future destructive acts.

In the course of our researching clients’ reports regarding recent, allegedly cult-inspired murders, it became apparent that a number of convicted killers had actually confessed or made allegations of satanic involvement or other cultic influence over their criminal acts, including Charles Manson, Henry Lee Lucas, Charles Gervais, and Richard Ramirez. Several books have been written regarding the subject of frequently brutal criminal activity associated with destructive cults (Kahaner, 1988; Mandelsberg, 1991; Newton, 1993; Raschke, 1990; St. Clair, 1987; Terry, 1987).

Cult-related crime is in itself a curiosity. Do the police believe that such crimes are really occurring? In a survey of 125 Chicago police officers by Connie Fletcher (1990), the author concludes that “satanic cult murders are out there. It is not to say that it is everywhere. But people are doing these things” (p. 90).

In order to understand these allegations better, we reviewed the early literature within the field of mental health. We thought that such material would provide a historical background germane to the current psychiatric narratives of ritual abuse. One of the earliest professional references to the subject of ritual abuse was a comment in Dr. Karl Menninger's (1930) popular book on psychiatry, *The Human Mind,* that mentioned the Black Mass, satanism, and devil worship as real events that occurred in large cities in Europe and the United States—although in great secrecy. Thirty-five years later, there was an entry, "Devil Worship," in the *Encyclopedia of Aberrations,* edited by Edward Podolsky (1965):

> In the twentieth century in England black magic is practiced and taught in secret schools both at Oxford and at Cambridge. The Black Mass is still celebrated in the drawing rooms of Mayfair and in Chelsea studios under conditions of almost absolute secrecy. There are at least seven active chapters of Satanists, each with an initiated membership of nearly fifty men and women, who meet at stated intervals and have their hidden chapels devoted to the worship of the demon. (p. 186)

The article described a variety of incidents involving the desecration of churches in Europe and a case in Helsinki where a group of cultists[5] was discovered "meeting in a cemetery and that more than thirty corpses had been disinterred and indescribably mutilated" (p. 186). The article further described abusive acts toward children that were reportedly perpetrated by other satanic[6] cultists along with the ubiquitous threat of death for "those who spill the secrets" (p. 187). It was surprising to find such a clear and unequivocal statement about modern devil worship and crime. Furthermore, *The Encyclopedia of Aberrations* is a reputable professional publication authored by a prestigious group of psychiatric experts with the foreword written by Alexandra Adler, the daughter of Alfred Adler.

Sigmund Freud (1966b) also wrote about such a possible cult:

> I have an idea shaping in my mind that in the perversions, of which hysteria is the negative, we may have before us a residue of a primaeval sexual cult which, in the Semitic East (Moloch, Astarte), was once, perhaps still is, a religion. . . . I dream, therefore, of a primaeval Devil religion whose rites are carried on secretly, and I understand the severe therapy of the witches' judges. (p. 243)

Freud seemed to be expressing the idea that malignant cult practices did exist and that somehow there was a connection between such ritual acts and his client's symptoms. In *The Assault on Truth*, Jeffrey Masson (1992) argued that Freud abandoned his original theory that sexual abuse caused hysteria after one of his patients, Emma Eckstein, described a mental image in which the devil “sticks pins into her finger and puts a piece of candy on each drop of blood” (p. 103).

The theory Freud then dismissed was his earlier “seduction theory” that postulated that neuroses were caused by the trauma of childhood sexual abuse. According to Masson, Freud’s decision to abandon his seduction theory occurred after he wrote a letter to his friend and colleague Wilhelm Fliess dated January 17, 1897:

> What would you say, by the way, if I told you that my brand-new theory of the early etiology of hysteria was already well known and had been published a hundred times over, though several centuries ago? . . . But why did the devil who took possession of the poor things invariably abuse them sexually and in a loathsome manner? Why are their confessions under torture so like the communications made by my clients in psychological treatment? (Masson, 1992, p. 104)[7]

Were some of Freud’s clients survivors of ritual abuse? Was this the disturbing possibility that prompted Freud to ignore his clients’ reports that they had been sexually abused in childhood? Was this what motivated Freud to formulate his later theory of psychosexual stages, wherein he asserted that children normally go through psychosexual developmental phases with particular associated sexual preoccupations and fantasies?

Masson did not address the possibility that ritual abuse occurred among Freud’s clients. Instead, Masson stated that the memories of diabolical experiences were screen memories for the actual sexual abuse that was usually perpetrated by the child’s father. However, many of my clients describe ceremonies in which they were sexually abused by someone costumed as Satan or some other demonic entity in the manner described by Freud’s client Emma Eckstein.

The mental image of being stuck with pins and having candy placed on the drops of blood certainly paints a bizarre picture for any modern, civilized person, but such accounts are commonly reported by individuals who say they were ritually abused. The activity is often explained as programming in a ceremonial cult. Pins stuck into a child in a nonmedical context are likely to cause the child to dissociate, to go into a trance. Candy placed on the child’s wounds might be used to bring out a newly created alter identity, to define particular characteristics of that alter, or to direct the manner by which accessing that alter may occur in the future. Later, the newly created alternate identity could be accessed or brought out by someone who simply provided the particular relevant signals (that could include the kind of candy used in the ritual and/or stimulation of that part of the body where the pins were inserted). Such a process would not require any supernatural explanation but could be understood as Pavlovian conditioning with dissociated trauma-mediated responses.

In another letter to Fliess, dated January 24, 1897, Freud noted the following: “Imagine, I obtained a scene about the circumcision of a girl. The cutting of a piece of the labia minora (which is still shorter today), sucking up the blood, following which the child was given a piece of the skin to eat” (Masson, 1992, p. 105). Masson affirmed that Freud was still referring to the same client, Emma Eckstein. The scenes reported by Eckstein are consistent with the accounts of clients describing ritual abuse in contemporary narratives. Such rituals increase the individual’s likelihood of experiencing an altered state of consciousness, dissociating into fragmented identities, and responding submissively to the abusers.

Pamela Hudson (1991) and Valerie Sinason (1994) also observed that Eckstein may have been a ritual abuse survivor. Further, Hudson (1991) wrote:

> One hopes that by 1996, one hundred years after Freud’s initial paper on Hysteria, we shall have adopted the more logical view that previously repressed rape memories are, in the words of one ritually abused child, “no fun” to recall. I submit that it is “no fun” to fantasize ritual abuse and that 3 or 4 year olds could not possibly invent identical reports across the United States, Canada, and Europe. (p. 65)

In order to understand these survivors’ narratives, we also decided to familiarize ourselves with the available occult literature. Although this domain is characterized by secrecy, there are a number of publications that provide an introduction to these practices and beliefs. We used multiple sources in an effort to piece together useful and relevant information on this subject. This, along with the narratives that clients provided, helped us better understand the puzzle of ritual abuse.

CHAPTER 11

Investigating Western Occultism

Beliefs in magic are prevalent in many cultures. These traditions seem to share a number of common themes and practices. Some authors have proposed that such traditions originated long ago in prehistoric times among the first shamans and folk healers (Wilson, 1971). Lissner (1961) claimed that shamans were originally monotheistic but later regressed into polytheism and a belief in magic, but it is not clear that Lissner's theory is widely accepted among scholars who address such phenomena.

The term *occult* is often used but may be unclear to some readers. For the purpose of this book, *occult* is defined to mean "relating to hidden, mystical or purportedly magical phenomena in which secrecy and often, ritual, is reportedly an important feature" (Noblitt, 1993a). So where did such beliefs and practices begin? The previously cited authors made the case that occultism began with the early folk healers, prehistoric and ancient people who utilized magical beliefs and practices in their work. Although such thinking is speculative, it is consistent with archeological findings that lend evidence to the existence of magical beliefs among the prehistoric and ancient peoples of the world.[1]

In ancient times, ritual magic, witchcraft, and sorcery were ubiquitous aspects of everyday life. Many ancient sources describe these practices as commonplace within diverse cultures. Shamanism, possession cults, sorcery, and witchcraft, having all taken place in a variety of preindustrial cultures, are also further discussed in other chapters of this book.

Obviously, Western occultism may have begun in much the same way as it did in other cultures. Western occult practices and traditions also may have a shared ancestry with shamanism but we can only speculate about such hypothetical origins.[2] A more clearly recognizable occult movement in ancient times was evident with the appearance of the mystery cults of the Mediterranean and Middle East. Walter Burkert's *Ancient Mystery Cults* (1987) compared five of these cults associated with Eleusis, Dionysus, Meter, Isis, and Mithras. Burkert emphasized the notion that these mystery religions were not *religions* in the sense of modern monotheistic faiths that are normally mutually exclusive traditions of worship. The mystery cults were each merely one part of the ancient panoply of beliefs and rituals available in the pagan world. According to Michael Howard (1989):

> The Mystery cults used elaborate initiation ceremonies, arcane symbolism and theatrical rituals to provide the initiate with the revelation of the spiritual reality hidden behind the illusion of the material world. During initiation, the neophyte was placed in a trance and experienced contact with the gods through a symbolic journey to the Underworld. Initiates symbolically died and were reborn as perfected souls. (pp. 21–22)

Howard's account is interesting particularly because of the obvious similarities between the mystery cults and shamanism, possession cults, sorcery, and witchcraft. The importance of trance states, a ceremonial "journey," and rituals of death and rebirth are repeated themes. Furthermore, these are phenomena described by modern survivors in the context of their own experiences of ritual abuse.

Were the mystery cults abusive? This is difficult to determine with great certainty primarily because of the imposed secrecy. According to the ancient Roman historian Livy (trans. 1976), the mystery cult of Bacchus was investigated by the Roman Senate and it was determined that these Bacchic rites included sexual transgressions, murder, and other criminal acts:

> All sorts of corruption began to be practiced. . . . The corruption was not confined to one kind of evil, the promiscuous violation of free men and of women; the cult was also a source of supply of false witnesses, forged documents and wills, and perjured evidence, dealing also in poisons and in wholesale murders among the devotees, and sometimes ensuring that not even the bodies were found for burial. Many such outrages were committed by craft, and even more by violence; and the violence was concealed because no cries for help could be heard against the shriekings, the banging of drums and the clashing of cymbals in the scene of debauchery and bloodshed. (p. 402)[3]

But did these cultists also experience possession states? In Plato's dialogue *Ion*, he made a passing reference to the female followers of Dionysus while more generally commenting about great poets and their inspiration. He wrote that the inspiration of such poets is like "the Bacchant women, possessed and out of their senses, [who] draw milk and honey out of the rivers" (Warmington & Rouse, 1956, p. 18). Plato's statement would seem to indicate that he believed that these women were possessed or could be possessed, but it is not clear whether his opinion was based on fact or rumor. However, Burkert (1987) stated that "Plutarch declares himself convinced that ghosts, daimones, take part in the mystery celebrations" (p. 113) and further that the madness associated with these ceremonies to some ancients represented possession by the god.[4]

The cult of Mithras was another mystery religion that has attracted scholarly attention. Unfortunately, and partly because of its secrecy, we have little information about it. In fact, there is some controversy over whether it was of Roman (Ulansey, 1989) or Persian (Cumont, 1956) origin. However, Benjamin Walker (1989a) wrote about a Mithraic initiation ceremony:

> There followed a few days abstinence from food and sexual relations, then a ceremonial ablution, after which the candidate's hands were bound behind his back and he was laid on the ground as if dead. After certain solemn rites his right hand was grasped by the hierophant and he was raised up. Then followed the baptism of blood. He was made to stand naked in a pit covered with a grating, and over this an animal as sacrificed, so that its blood flowed over him. Whatever the animal was, it was regarded as a surrogate of the bull of Mithras. Prudentius (d. AD 390), a Christian poet writing in Latin, gives a vivid description of this rite, of which he may have had a personal recollection. 'Through the open grating the bloody dew flows into the pit; the neophyte receives the falling drops on his head and body, he leans back so that his cheeks, lips and nostrils are wetted; he pours the liquid over his eyes and does not even spare his mouth, for he moistens his tongue with blood and sips it eagerly.' Symbolically the initiate has been raised from the dead and washed in the vitalizing blood of the bull, and is regarded as 'born again into eternity.' He is received into the community of initiates as a brother, and is allowed to participate in the sacramental meal of bread and wine which establishes his status as one of the elect. (p. 155)

Regarding the Mithraic cults, Luther Martin (2006) wrote: "The enigmatic and terrifying ordeals characteristic of these initiations would have produced cognitive disorientation among the individual initiates" (p. 387).

Several authors have noted a strong resemblance between the mystery cults and the lodges and fraternal organizations that appeared later in Europe.[5] Some have argued that the Freemasons and other similar brotherhoods patterned themselves partly after these traditions.

The rise of Gnosticism was another significant movement in the overall evolution of Western occultism.[6] Some literature has also attributed a major role to Gnosticism in the history of satanism and ritual abuse.[7] Scholarly accounts of the history of the devil,[8] Satan,[9] Lucifer,[10] witchcraft,[11] and secret societies[12] have cited Gnosticism as an important related spiritual perspective.

The term *Gnosticism* is sometimes used in different ways. In its narrowest sense, the term refers to a variety of sects that appeared in the Roman Empire of the first century CE. These congregations subscribed to certain common beliefs that will be described later, that were declared heretical by the established Christian church. Some attribute the founding of Christian Gnosticism to Simon Magus, who was mentioned in Acts 8: 9−24.[13] The early Christian Gnostics and their later derivative sects often considered themselves to be the *true* Christians in opposition to what they viewed as the inferior, if not downright evil, organized churches of Rome and, later, Constantinople.[14] In its broader usage, Gnosticism also refers to other parallel and related religious movements, including: (1) the Persian-derived Manicheanism and post-Manichean dualisms as espoused by the Bogomils of southeastern Europe and the Cathari of southern France and Italy, (2) pagan Gnosticism such as Hermeticism, and (3) modern variants of Gnosticism, some of which are active in present-day Europe and America.

These various sects differed in some respects but tended to have several features in common. Most were based on a dualistic notion of good and evil as relatively independent, eternal forces in the material and spiritual universe. This dualism was more extreme than the qualified dualism of Christianity in which good and evil have been construed as existing in opposition to one another, but where the good is considered to be more powerful and ultimately the force that will prevail. Judaism, in contrast, has presented a more monistic position on this question whereby good and evil are usually both subsumed as normal features of G-d's creation, where Satan is a relatively unimportant figure and not necessarily G-d's adversary.[15]

One of the prominent Gnostic themes was that the creator of the universe, sometimes called the Demiurge, was an inept or overtly evil spiritual being.[16] The Demiurge arrogantly and falsely believed himself to be the god who ruled heaven and earth, but was actually a spiritual entity of lower rank in comparison with the true, ultimate god[17] of the Gnostics. The human spirit was viewed as a spark of this ultimate deity trapped within the inferior and evil material body created by the Demiurge.[18] Many Gnostics equated the Demiurge with the G-d of Israel, whom Christians call G-d, the Father. Conversely, the serpent mentioned in Genesis (and considered by Christians to be Satan) was viewed by many Gnostics as a benevolent and wise being who had come into the world to help humanity learn the hidden knowledge of good and evil. In the Gnostic treatise *The Testimony of Truth*, the author quoted from Genesis:

> It is written in the Law concerning this, when God gave a command to Adam, “From every [tree] you may eat, [but] from the tree which is in the midst of Paradise do not eat, for on the day that you eat from it you will surely die.” But the serpent was wiser than all the animals that were in Paradise, and he persuaded Eve, saying, “On the day when you eat from the tree which is in the midst of Paradise the eyes of your mind will be opened.” (Robinson, 1988, p. 454)

The Gnostics observed that Adam and Eve did not die the day they ate the forbidden fruit, but that their eyes were indeed opened. Thus, they concluded that the serpent was correct and the god of creation was in error or had been lying.[19] The author of *The Testimony of Truth* wrote:

> And he cursed the serpent, and called him “devil.” And he said, “Behold, Adam has become like one of us, knowing evil and good.” Then he said, “Let us cast him out of Paradise lest he take from the tree of life and eat and live forever.” But what sort is this God? First [he] maliciously refused Adam from eating of the tree of knowledge. And secondly he said, “Adam, where are you?” God does not have foreknowledge; (otherwise), would he not know from the beginning? . . . Surely he has shown himself to be a malicious grudger.[20]

Thus, one can plainly see that some Gnostics had essentially reversed what orthodox (or “straight-thinking”) Christians regarded as the holiest of beings with the one who was regarded as most evil. In some instances, from a Gnostic point of view, mainstream Christianity was satanic, and from a Christian point of view, Gnosticism was satanic. However, many Gnostics did consider themselves to be Christian, and although they expressed hostility toward G-d the Father, they were usually favorably predisposed toward Jesus, whom they considered to be (along with the serpent) a savior figure who had come to Earth to provide knowledge.

Gnosticism also differed from orthodox Christianity on the subject of spiritual salvation. The Gnostics believed that humanity is in a deplorable spiritual condition because of a lack of knowledge; that is, *gnosis*.[21] They did not consider Adam and Eve in the Genesis story to be sinful as a result of their eating the fruit of the tree of knowledge of good and evil. The Gnostic view was that the Demiurge unfairly wanted people to remain ignorant in order to control and dominate them. With the appropriate knowledge, Gnostics argued an individual could reunite with the ultimate god by becoming the god. This knowledge was not readily available to all because (1) it was a kind of mystical knowledge or "enlightenment" and (2) much of it was secret.[22] Additionally, the Gnostics held that this enlightenment and the process of becoming the deity were accomplished by magical operations or ritual magic, sometimes called theurgy, or high magic.

Some Gnostics claimed to possess secret knowledge from Jesus that had been passed down to specially chosen individuals, citing Mark 4:11:

> To you has been given the secret of the kingdom of God, but for those outside everything is in parables; so that they may indeed see but not perceive, and may indeed hear but not understand; lest they should turn again, and be forgiven.[23]

The secrecy of some Gnostics included a ritual handshake[24] that is similar (or identical) to a modern Masonic grip and a handshake to which some modern survivors of ritual abuse often respond with an altered state of consciousness, frequently without awareness of why they are doing so.

Ritualism was another source of contention between orthodox Christians and Gnostics. The Gnostic *Gospel of Phillip* states: "God is a man eater. For this reason men are [sacrificed] to him" (Robinson, 1988, p. 147). Allegations were made that some Gnostics performed religious ceremonies that involved ritual cannibalism and communal sex acts. Some of these ceremonies would clearly fall under the rubric of ritual abuse. Among the more believable reports of bizarre Gnostic ritual practices were the accounts of Epiphanius, a monk who allegedly witnessed orgiastic rituals among a Gnostic group that he called the Phibionites.[25] However, a number of authors have argued that the criticisms of Gnosticism may have been religious propaganda designed to vilify these sects.

Nevertheless, it is evident that there are historians[26] and modern occultists who consider at least some of the accusations of immoral Gnostic practices to be true.[27] In his book *The Gnostics*, Jacques Lacarriere (1991) argued that the Gnostic violations of sexual and other conventions demonstrated a "Luciferian" conviction of the believer's indestructibility and incorruptibility (p. 70).

Lucifer literally means "the bringer of light." Although Christians traditionally have defined Lucifer as Satan before his fall,[28] some Gnostics associated Lucifer with Prometheus, the Titan of Greek mythology, who was said to have given fire to mankind in defiance of the will of the Olympian gods.[29] Spence (1993) argued that pure satanists have been historically rare, but he maintained that there is more known about the cult of Lucifer (p. 123).

Western occultism was also influenced by Jewish lore, notably the Kabbalah,[30] and also alchemy. Jewish scholars advised us that the Kabbalah described in the scholarly and occult literature does not reflect a genuine or legitimate understanding of their traditions. There are prohibitions against teaching Kabbalah to non-Jews and all those who lack the spiritual maturity for such training. Thus, the genuine Jewish Kabbalah is not revealed or explained to the public.[31] We want to make it clear that when we discuss the Kabbalah, it is only in the context of the scholarly (e.g., within the discipline of religious studies) and occult literature only, not the secret Jewish traditions that are passed down from teacher to learner. This point is sometimes confusing because the Kabbalistic source material such as the *Zohar* and *Sefer Yetzirah* are not secret and are readily available to anyone who wants to read them. However, orthodox Jewish tradition maintains that there are deeper meanings to this material that can only be imparted through the personal learning that occurs privately between the teacher and the student. Some scholars have considered the extent to which early Gnosticism may have originated within Judaism.[32] The development of the Kabbalah[33] was another extension of ideas similar to Gnosticism, but within the context of Jewish mysticism. The lore of the Kabbalah is found in a variety of writings, the most important being the *Zohar* and *Sefer Yetzirah*. These texts provided a mystical interpretation of the absolute and unknowable deity identified as En-Soph.[34] From En-Soph there were 10 emanations or *Sephiroth*, which are the 10 “spheres” representing aspects of the universe and essential characteristics of humanity as well as representations of the essence of G-d. The 10 Sephiroth have been depicted as part of a mystical Tree of Life that occultists often use to conceptualize their spiritual and mystical journey to know G-d, the self, and for some to discover the G-d within the self. Such “journeys” may involve altered states of consciousness resembling the trance journeys of shamans.[35] According to Bakan (1965) and Schneider and Berke (2008), Sigmund Freud himself was influenced by the Kabbalah.[36]

Alchemists were known for their search for the philosopher’s stone (*lapis philosophorum*) that supposedly could change base metals into gold, but some interpreted this as a metaphor representing the spiritual processes that individuals must undergo in order to be transformed into higher spiritual beings. In alchemy, according to Robert Ziegler (2013), suffering was understood to represent a process of “purifying man’s base nature and refining it into the gold of his redeemed spirit” (p. 115). The search for the elixir of life and fountain of youth may have represented the desire to magically escape the normal limitations of mortality.

Additionally, alchemists had interest in creating homunculi,[37] or artificially created people-like entities. *The Sorcerer’s Handbook* (Baskin, 1974) explains that a “golem” (p. 285) is an example of a homunculus. Within the traditions of the Kabbalah and Jewish mysticism, a golem referred to an automaton, or living being (either with or without a physical body), that could be created by the magician. One might consider the possibility that alchemists and Kabbalists were actually referring to dissociated states of mind that could be created by ritual trauma. Knapp (1977) argued that golems were created in the phenomenal or experiential world of these occult practitioners while in an altered state of consciousness.

Thus, alchemists may have known how to create alter identities. Through the experience of having alternate identities, one might be able to achieve one of the alchemist’s other dreams, to be able to feel young and childlike even in old age. Such an experience occurs when child alters take executive control of the individual. One could also produce the illusion of immortality by creating what appeared to be immortal alter personalities whose identities were kept relatively intact as they were handed down (i.e., programmed) generationally. Some ritual abuse survivors reported that their cults and families followed such a practice. They believed that they had achieved spiritual immortality by inserting their identity into others who would live on after them and would pass on their identities through successive generations. This concept may also be related to the traditions of ancestor worship and ancestor veneration that have been observed in a variety of preindustrial cultures.

One of the significant developments of European history was the witch persecutions. Like the oppression of the Gnostics and other “heretics,” this was a deplorable practice that caused great human suffering. The victims, including children and elderly women, were often the ones who were most vulnerable. Ironically, these crimes against humanity were perpetrated with the approval of the established churches of Europe, both Catholic and Protestant. Given the irrational nature of the accusations and the unreliable methods of obtaining evidence (e.g., torture), some have questioned whether any witchcraft actually occurred in Europe during that time.

Norman Cohn (1975), Hans Sebald (1995), and Hugh Trevor-Roper (1968) argued that such lore was merely fabricated by medieval churchmen, who substantiated their presuppositions by torturing the accused until confessions were forthcoming. Hans Sebald (1995) went one step further contending that many of the current allegations of sexual abuse and ritual abuse made by children represent a modern kind of inquisition and witch hunt. On the other hand, Margaret Murray (1921, 1933) argued that medieval (and modern) witchcraft represented the continuation of an ancient Western European pagan cult that existed in secrecy since the conquest of Europe by Christianity.[38]

An analytical approach to this debate was offered by Jeffrey Burton Russell (1972), who reduced the question of the actual existence of medieval witchcraft into alternative hypotheses:

> Within the framework of historical interpretations of European witchcraft, there are at least eight degrees of skepticism (in descending order). (1) Virtually no one in the Middle Ages believed in witchcraft, which was a vicious fraud perpetrated by the Inquisitors and their attendant theologians, who provoked witch scares in order to increase their own power and wealth. (2) Many people (including Inquisitors and theologians) were deluded by the superstitious atmosphere of the Middle Ages into believing that others were witches, but no one believed that he himself was a witch. (3) At least some people were deluded into believing themselves witches. (4) Some of what these witches believed and practiced was real, deriving from old pagan cults, folklore, sorcery, and heresy. (5) Witch beliefs and practices as described by the sources (mainly trial records) did exist to a substantial degree. Witches did worship the Devil; they did believe and practice what was attributed to them, though these beliefs and practices were constantly evolving. (6) A formal witch cult existed virtually unchanged from ancient times (the argument of Margaret Murray and the modern occultists). (7) Weird phenomena, such as flying and shape shifting, are themselves real. (8) The weird phenomena are not only real, but supernatural, and proof that the Devil is not only real, but supernatural, and proof that the Devil and his minions live. (pp. 20−21)

Russell proposed that all of the previously mentioned options are possible, but that historians have no right to affirm or to deny the last because it deals with supernatural, rather than empirical, phenomena. However, he argued that the weight of history supports the idea that the truth lies somewhere within the range of options three to five.

It has been noted that there was a resurgence in occult beliefs and practices in the 19th century (Webb, 1974). Helena Blavatsky was one of the first well-known occultists of the 19th century. Her system of occultism was not secret. She lectured and published books and articles on this theory known as *Theosophy.* Blavatsky also edited the periodical *Lucifer*,[39] which addressed such views. By her own account, Blavatsky's *Theosophy* was heavily influenced by Gnosticism (Blavatsky, 1877/1988).

Another of the prominent personalities of the 19th century allegedly associated with the cult of Lucifer was Gen. Albert Pike, the Grand Commander, Sovereign Pontiff of Scottish Rite Freemasonry in the southern and western United States from 1859 to 1891. His purported Luciferian beliefs were stated in Masonic instructions attributed to him, but no original copy exists. The following is from Pike's alleged statement:

> That which we must say to the crowd is—we worship a God, but it is the God that one adores without superstition. To you, Sovereign Grand Inspectors General, we say this, that you may repeat it to the Brethren of the 32nd, 31st, and 30th degrees—The Masonic Religion should be, by all of us initiates to the high degrees, maintained in the purity of the Luciferian Doctrine. If Lucifer were not God would Adonay (the God of the Christians) whose deeds prove his cruelty, perfidy and hatred of man, barbarism and repulsion for science, would Adonay and his priests, calumnate him?
>
> Yes, Lucifer is God, and unfortunately Adonay is also God. For the eternal law is that there is no light without shade, no beauty without ugliness, no white without black, for the absolute can only exist as two gods: darkness being necessary for light to serve as its foil as the pedestal is necessary to the statue and the brake to the locomotive. Thus the doctrine of Satanism is a heresy; and the true and pure philosophical religion is the belief in Lucifer, the equal of Adonay; but Lucifer, God of Light and God of Good is struggling for humanity against Adonay, the God of Darkness and Evil. (Short, 1989, p. 94)[40]

The question of Masonic involvement in malevolent occult practices has been a long-standing controversy. Masons have sometimes argued that they are unfairly attacked and vilified.[41] On the other hand, critics continue to accuse them of blatant acts of impropriety and abuse.[42] In her book *Ritual Abuse*, Margaret Smith (1993) describes allegations of cult abuse associated with Masonry. In a conversation, Smith told us that she had been abused in a cult where the members would sometimes express amusement at what they considered to be the stupidity of those who would label their activities as satanic. From their point of view, they were Luciferian. They viewed Satan as a Judeo-Christian myth or metaphor.

Other clients alleging histories of ritualized abuse have sometimes explained the religious views of their Luciferian cults where the deity (who is sometimes labeled Lucifer) is conceptualized not as exclusively good or evil, but as an entity who is capable of both good and evil. Again, Satan is sometimes considered a myth or metaphor, but one that must be experienced through abusive rituals to create sufficient suffering to achieve enlightenment. In order to approach the ultimate god of good and evil, one must encounter and engage in both profound evil and good according to some of these cultists. Some survivors also reported that they were encouraged to attend church and develop a part of their personality that is on “the light side.”[43] The concept of a “light” versus a “dark side” is essential to Gnostic thinking and frequently appears in Gnostic writings as well.[44] It is also curious that the same terminology is commonly used by survivors to describe their inner, or phenomenological, world. Smith and many survivors with whom we have consulted have described elements of Gnostic thinking in their abuse. Many survivors making such allegations have explicitly reported abuse where Masonic regalia, ceremonies, or members were present.

It is not our intent to accuse Masons of the perpetration of ritual violence. Although this is possible, it may also be that such cultists operate within Freemasonry without the knowledge or consent of the majority of its members as they reportedly do within conventional religious and political organizations. It is also possible that some cultists imitate Masonic rituals during their own abusive ceremonies. Nevertheless, there are some things about the Freemason organization that are perplexing. For example, the symbol for the Order of the Eastern Star, the woman’s Masonic organization, is an inverted pentagram, a design that is generally used to represent evil and, often, satanism. There are different interpretations of the meaning of this symbol. However, because the star is upside down, some say that it signifies Lucifer described in the book of Isiah (14:12) as “the bright morning star” that fell from heaven. The word *Lucifer* entered the Bible text when Jerome translated the Bible into Latin around the year 383 CE. Thus, the word *Lucifer* refers both to the principal demon in the Christian tradition and to a celestial body, the morning star. Lucifer as the morning star is the only celestial body that always appears in the eastern sky; hence, it is sometimes called the Eastern Star.

It is also clear that Masonry has served to preserve and promote elements of Gnostic thinking along with other occult traditions, including the Christian Cabala and Hermetic Qabalah, and the lore of the ancient mystery cults. According to Albert Pike (1871/1960), Freemasonry was established by Jacques de Molay, the last Grand Master of the Knights Templar, after which he was burned alive outside Paris for heresy and sorcery (p. 820).[45] Pike further explained that the Knights Templar pretended to be Christians who were loyal to the Church of Rome but in actuality their agenda was to keep and transmit the secret knowledge of a sect of Middle Eastern Gnostics that Pike identified as “Johannites” (pp. 815−824).

The Ku Klux Klan (KKK) is another cult or cult-like organization that has a history that can be traced to individuals that included Masons and “incorporated Masonic-style initiation rites, symbols and argot words” (Vankin, 1992, p. 281). Bob Larson (1989) wrote that a prevalent KKK perspective is that Satan or the evil Archons fathered Cain through Eve and from Cain the Jewish people supposedly emerged.[46] The idea that Eve was impregnated by Satan to produce Cain is a Gnostic myth[47] that is similar to the story in the *Book of Enoch* that tells of rebellious angels that came to earth to mate with human women to produce the Nephilim, beings whose ancestry was partly human and partly derived from the evil angels that were said to have fathered them.[48]

Furthermore, similar to the KKK, many Gnostic groups were noted for their anti-Semitism, which may have been due, in part, to their belief that the Jewish G-d of creation was an evil spiritual entity. Many survivors of ritual abuse allege traumatic experiences associated with what they believe to be KKK activities and many of these individuals describe the KKK as a cult.

It has been further alleged that other cult-like organizations have developed in tandem with or under the influence of Freemasonry and Western occultism. Two of the earlier such groups were the Hell Fire Clubs and the Bavarian Order of the Illuminati (Melanson, 2009), both founded by Masons. There actually were several Hell Fire Clubs, but the best known was the Friars of Medmenham in England led by Sir Francis Dashwood, who also was a member of a neo-Druid brotherhood.[49] Dashwood’s particular Hell Fire Club was more accurately called the Friars of St. Francis of Wycombe, and when he later purchased Medmenham Abbey (pronounced *med-nem*), they also became known as the Friars of Medmenham. Curiously, when Sir Francis was renovating the abbey, he had the workmen inscribe “Do what you will” in Renaissance French over one of the doorways. Over a hundred years later, this phrase, expressed in slightly different language, would become the motto for one of the more notorious occultists of the modern era, Aleister Crowley.

The Friars of St. Francis were known to provide their membership with orgies and sometimes performed Black Masses and other similar ceremonial acts. Nevertheless, some authors have interpreted their unorthodox behaviors as not genuinely satanic but more as a kind of organized libertinism.[50] English aristocrats and high government officials frequented the club. For example, Sir Francis was himself a personal friend and adviser to King George III and a longtime Member of Parliament who later became Chancellor of the Exchequer. Benjamin Franklin, who was a high-ranking Mason in the American colonies, visited the Hell Fire Club in 1758 while he was in England meeting with representatives the English government on behalf of the American colonies.[51]

The Bavarian Order of the Illuminati was not the first organization to use the Latin word *illuminati* (the enlightened ones) to refer to their brotherhood. However, the order established by Adam Weishaupt in 1776, and first known as the Order of the Perfectibilists, is one of the better known. It has been alleged that Weishaupt created the Order of the Illuminati for the purpose of infiltrating Masonic lodges in order to exert influence over issues of international politics.[52] Many of my clients have made reference to their abusers as Illuminati, either during our sessions or in their journal notes or drawings. Raschke (1990), among others, has described historic accounts of their alleged diabolical ritualism. It would be difficult to prove that the Order of the Illuminati continues to exist given that it is supposedly a secret organization. Nevertheless, occult groups that do currently exist sometimes attest to continuing the traditions of the Illuminati.[53] This is an area that deserves further investigation by all of us who work with such clients. It is clearly a repeated theme.

Another Masonic brotherhood temporarily under the jurisdiction of the Grand Orient in Italy (G.O.I.) was found to be involved in organized crime and tied to international banking disasters, drug deals, and terrorism. According to anthropologist Lilith Mahmud (2012):

> Propaganda 2, or “P2” for short, was the name of a covert Masonic lodge operating within the G.O.I., the largest and oldest men-only Masonic Order in the country. In the pyramidal structure of Freemasonry, a covert lodge operates as a secret society within a secret society. Its existence is known only to the Grand Master, but not to any of the other lodges within the same organization. (p. 1187)

Mahmud (2012) further explained that the Grand Master of the G.O.I. revoked P2's charter in 1976, and after that time, P2 operated as "a secret criminal society, no longer under the purview of the G.O.I." (p. 1187). The Italian police and secret service found records that documented the membership of over 1,000 individuals that included prestigious international business and political leaders:

> When the existence of the P2 was revealed to the public, what emerged was the specter of an organized network of powerful men plotting right-wing coups, terrorist acts, and multi-million dollar bank fraud throughout Italy, Europe, and Latin America. The P2 was, therefore, the very embodiment of long held fears about Freemasonry: a brotherhood of men conspiring to bring about a new world order through oligarchic control of the financial markets, the media, the military, and the governments of individual countries. (Mahmud, 2012, p. 1188)

Other Masonic- and Gnostic-influenced occult organizations emerged in the 19th and 20th centuries, including the Hermetic[54] Order of the Golden Dawn and the Ordo Templi Orientis (O.T.O.). A well-known figure associated with both of these organizations was Aleister Crowley. On the cover of his autobiography, *The Confessions of Aleister Crowley* (1979), he is described as "a saint of the Gnostic church." He was also reputedly a high-ranking Mason and one who called himself the Great Beast, 666, of Revelation. There has been some disagreement regarding whether Crowley was a satanist.[55] One might argue that he was, more precisely, a dualist, a modern Gnostic of the libertine type and a practitioner of ritual black magic. One could also demonstrate that not all black magic is satanic. For example, in the West African juju cult described by Oke (1989), there is clearly a practice of ritual abuse with altered states of consciousness but no particular belief in Satan. Not all ritual abuse is satanic, although some occult Gnostic groups probably come close to what many Western people would call satanic. However, in some cases it would be more accurate to label them Luciferian, neo-Gnostic, or dualistic. There may also be cults that incorporate rituals involving or mentioning Satan along with other spiritual entities and concepts but in which Satan is not considered the focus of their beliefs or energies. With that being said, Crowley's published opinions and acts do show a fascination with demonic occultism.

Crowley devised a sexualized ritual, the Gnostic Mass,[56] which became the central ceremony for the O.T.O. He practiced sex magic (e.g., sexual rituals intended to cause altered states of consciousness) and he admitted to engaging in ritual human sacrifice.[57] According to Ashe (1974, p. 235), Crowley was noted for “hypnotic powers,” which he freely used in sexual seduction. Ritual abuse survivors often describe similar reactions to their perpetrators, a process that they sometimes call *accessing*. Ashe (1974) also observed that Crowley was “like three or four different men” (p. 235). Crowley himself reported altered states of consciousness in which he confronted other imaginary, dissociative, or spiritual entities. Did Crowley have a dissociative disorder? Crowley advocated self-punishment by cutting oneself with a razor blade.[58] Therapists who work with ritual abuse survivors commonly note that self-injury through cutting is one of the most common characteristics of those with this diagnosis.

Crowley joined the Golden Dawn on November 18, 1898. By the spring of 1900, he had been expelled. In 1901 there was a public scandal involving the conviction of Theo Horos (also known as Frank Jackson) and his wife for the rape of a 16-year-old girl. The judge concluded that the couple had used Golden Dawn rituals in the sexual exploitation of minors.[59] According to Kaczynski (1993), other members of the Golden Dawn were practicing sexual rituals within its inner order.

The Golden Dawn demonstrated sufficient credibility in the occult community to attract the luminary Irish poet W. B. Yeats to its membership. However, the organization was plagued with other problems. The Golden Dawn was created in response to the alleged discovery of mysterious German documents attesting to the organization’s ancient, occult heritage transmitted to its British founders. These papers were translated by one of its founding members, Dr. W. W. Westcott, a Mason. Later it was thought that the documents were probably forged, but forgery was a dubious explanation because such an act was out of character for Westcott. In an effort to clarify this question, author Ellic Howe presented samples of Westcott’s writing to a handwriting expert, who made the observation that Westcott probably had multiple personality disorder (MPD) because of his markedly different writing styles. Gerald Suster, a Golden Dawn advocate (1987, pp. 110−171), took issue with the MPD interpretation, noting the inconsistent handwriting styles of another leading occultist and Golden Dawn Adept, Israel Regardie, who had never been diagnosed with MPD or any other psychiatric disorder. Of course, an alternate interpretation is that both men may have had dissociative disorders caused by traumatic ritual experiences and that the accurate diagnoses were not consistently being made because few mental health professionals then knew how to appropriately formulate these diagnoses.

Karl Kellner and Theodor Reuss, both high-ranking Masons, founded the Ordo Templi Orientis. In 1912, the O.T.O. published the following:

> Our Order possesses the KEY which opens up all Masonic and Hermetic secrets, namely, the teaching of sexual magic, and this teaching explains, without exception, all the secrets of Nature, all the symbolism of Freemasonry and all systems of religion.[60]

Frater U∴ D∴ (1991) wrote about the practice of sex magic from the occultist’s point of view. He observed that altered states of consciousness are sought by sex magicians through erotic rituals to generate what he called “magical powers” (p. 11). In this process, one experiences what he called “Gnostic trances” (p. 11). This author encouraged the ritualistic breaking of sexual taboos emphasizing that “by employing bizarre, unusual practices, we access those altered states of awareness which provide the key to magical power” (p. 17).

In 1912 Crowley was appointed head of the O.T.O. for Great Britain, and in 1922 his authority extended over the entire O.T.O. The O.T.O. was first established in North America in 1912, when Charles Stanfield Jones, along with 12 associates, was chartered as the Agapé Camp in the Vancouver area of British Columbia. It is curious in that one of the local communities, Victoria, was the location of the first case of ritual abuse reported by a mental health professional (Smith & Pazder, 1980). In a book published by the O.T.O., it was reported that this organization has since spread to the “US, England, South America, Germany, Norway, the Balkans, New Zealand and Australia” (Ad Veritatem IX, 1990, p. 97). According to this O.T.O. publication, the international headquarters is now located in New York City.

Another organization, similar to the O.T.O. with its Masonic structure, philosophy, and origins, is the F.S., the Fraternitas Saturni or Brotherhood of Saturn. According to Eldred Flowers (1990),[61] who wrote about this group from a sympathetic point of view, it is the “most unabashedly Luciferian organization in the modern Western occult revival” (p. xv). Like the O.T.O. and much of the Masonic literature, the F.S. also places considerable importance on Gnostic terminology and concepts. Flowers made frequent reference to “Saturn-Gnosis” and specific sexual rituals were described.

In London, Robert and Mary Ann de Grimston founded the Church of the Process of the Final Judgment (better known as the Process Church) in the early 1960s. It was there that the de Grimstons broke away from their affiliation with the Church of Scientology, which had been established by L. Ron Hubbard.[62] They proposed a theology based on four deities: Christ, Jehovah, Lucifer, and Satan. They essentially created a dualistic matrix in which people could explore the extent to which their own personalities were expressions of these four proposed archetypal gods. The similarity of this point of view and Gnosticism is obvious and was noted by Carl Raschke (1990).

The Process provided role-playing exercises in which the individuals involved expressed or presented “alternate personal identities” (Bainbridge, 1991, p. 304).[63] Some authors suggest that there may have been a connection between the Process Church and the ritualistic homicides perpetrated in the late 1960s by Charles Manson (Raschke, 1990; Terry, 1987). I have consulted with clients who believed that their particular cult used some of the philosophy of the Process Church or that they had been abused in one of its subgroups or affiliates.

Another example of modern occultism is the neo-pagan movement, particularly the Craft of Wicca, or what is sometimes referred to as white witchcraft. Some would say that white witchcraft is a contradiction in terms. But like all other new religious movements, it deserves to be understood on the basis of its own actual characteristics and practices and not on the preconceived ideas we may have about it.

CHAPTER 12

An Introduction to Wicca

While living in England, I taught university psychology courses in the evening. One of my students, a young man named “Ken,” was soft-spoken, bright, articulate, and he wore a gold-colored chain with an inverted five-pointed star around his neck. Once after class, I asked him what the star symbolized. He smiled in his friendly way and said, “I’m a pagan. I follow the religion of Wicca.” I later learned that some Wiccans prefer to use the term *neo-pagan* to make clear that they are part of the new movement to revitalize ancient pagan practices. Because I was unfamiliar with Wicca, Ken explained that it was a nature-worshipping religion, “white witchcraft.” It was a form of witchcraft, according to Ken, that advocated “doing no harm.”

At the time, I did not realize that this five-pointed star had any special meaning. Later I learned that the pentagram, or five-pointed star, has long been a symbol used by various people who practice ritual magic. When the star is inverted in a Wiccan ritual, it may be used in the ceremonial invocation of a non-satanic deity that Wiccans call the *horned god* (Crowley, 1989). However, to my knowledge, this symbol has only two other meanings. It may either signify the Order of the Eastern Star, a Masonic women’s auxiliary organization, or modern satanism. Most Wiccans attempt to distance themselves from overtly demonic cults and frequently assert that they are not satanists in their publications and policy statements.

Sometime after returning stateside and entering private practice, I was asked to consult with a patient hospitalized on a medical unit of the nearby community hospital. The patient, diagnosed with multiple sclerosis,[1] was referred by a neurologist colleague for psychological evaluation. Her name was “Erin,” and she was a Wiccan.

My discovery of Erin’s religion was accidental. She had not intended to tell anyone at the hospital because she expected a hostile, judgmental reaction. After all, despite its big-city sophistication, Dallas was a conservative community. I noticed that Erin had not completed the item designating her religious preference on the hospital intake form, and I simply asked her about her religion. After a moment’s hesitation, Erin said that she did not usually discuss her religion with strangers. I told her that she did not have to discuss her religion if that was her preference. She hesitated again and then said she was a pagan. Once Erin realized that I was not critical of her religious beliefs, alter identities began to emerge and converse with me. Erin was co-conscious with some of her alter personalities, but she was amnestic for the presence of others.

Like most of the other multiple personality disorder patients, Erin’s alters eventually described sadistic childhood abuse. None of her alters made allegations of ritual abuse per se, but because I was still relatively unfamiliar with ritual abuse, I did not know how to access the alters that might have memories of such abuse had it had occurred. I later found that people with dissociation of identity not only have a variety of internalized alter identities, but that these alters were also often organized in a series of “layers” or “levels.” Generally speaking, the more deeply one explores these levels, the worse are the memories. It is as if the layers are organized to protect the survivor from her most painful recollections by insinuating many levels of less traumatizing dissociated information in between. Cult memories, when present, are usually found at the deeper levels of this internal “system.” I presumed this patient had experienced no ritual abuse because she never talked about it, but, in retrospect, this possibility really cannot be ruled out because I did not know how to explore it at that time.

I asked about Erin’s pagan religion in further detail. She told me that much of it was secret and, for that reason, there were things that she could not disclose. However, an alter personality named “Skye” emerged to talk to me. Skye said that she was a Wiccan high priestess and that she had more authority to discuss the subject than did Erin. She laughed and said that Erin didn’t really know many of the secrets anyway. Skye also claimed that she had psychic abilities.

Skye explained that in Wicca, there was the belief that "whatever one does, it comes back in threes." For this reason, she said, Wiccans usually do not engage in the practice of black magic. However, she admitted that Wicca could have a dark side. She explained that Wiccan rituals were a celebration of life and encouraged a sense of unity with nature. While describing some of the goddesses and gods of Wicca, she explained that most Wiccans did not have a literal belief in these deities, but that they were viewed as archetypes or representations of personal characteristics that people can find in themselves. She admitted that in Wicca there were some rituals that were sexual in nature but she said that children were not allowed to be present at those. Skye imparted more information about Wicca, but it seemed that she was holding back somewhat, perhaps out of respect and concern for the element of secrecy that she acknowledged was part of her religion. In order to help me understand Wicca, Skye recommended a book called *Earth Magic: A Dianic Book of Shadows* by Marion Weinstein (1980).

As I delved further into Wicca, I learned that its workings are not entirely secret. Numerous publications about Wicca are accessible to the general readership. Furthermore, many Wiccan rituals have been openly publicized and, in some cases, are open to anyone who wishes to participate.

I was especially intrigued by the Wiccan concept of magic. Other clients with dissociative disorders often have similar beliefs even when they do not admit to being Wiccans. It is curious how such beliefs seem to survive in an era so thoroughly dominated by science.

Erin sometimes described out-of-body experiences in which she reportedly floated above her body and observed herself from above. She said that she learned to do this when she was a child and did not want to feel the abuse her body was experiencing. I asked Erin whether she believed that she was literally able to float out of her body or whether she thought this was merely an imaginary experience. She laughed and said, "everything happens in your imagination."

In order to clarify what Erin was saying, I asked her if we could perform a little experiment. I requested Erin to turn her head away from me and, when she did, I asked her if she could let her mind float out of her body. She agreed to do this. I wrote a simple word in large letters on the writing tablet that I was holding. I asked Erin if she would watch me from the ceiling of the room and read the word that I had written. She reportedly did so, but it is probably no surprise that she was unable to correctly tell me what I had written.

Erin was unimpressed by this experiment. It seemed irrelevant to her whether she could, in fact, see from above. What was significant to her, as she explained, was that she was able to have the experience of leaving her body. Whether or not the experience corresponded to objective reality seemed to be of no consequence to her. Erin's point of view also seemed to be similar to those of other patients as well as authors who have written about Wicca, magic, and the occult.

One could argue that Erin's perspective represented a metaphorical belief in magic. Such a point of view would not necessarily reflect a literal conviction in the existence of paranormal events. It may merely represent the belief in magic as a metaphor. In other words, people can have mental images of magical experiences such as dissociating out of their bodies. Although such fantasies don't necessarily have any objective correspondence, they are genuine mental events that may have significance to the individual experiencing them. On the other hand, a metaphorical approach to magic need not be totally without practical use in dealing with the "real world." Erin told me that she believed that she was able to maintain her sanity through her ability to dissociate away her pain and terror. Through fantasies, she had learned to disregard external reality when the need arose.

Margot Adler, in her book *Drawing down the Moon* (1986), wrote:

> A few scholars and specialists have studied Neo-Paganism, but the public continues to have an inaccurate picture of it. Misunderstandings begin at the most basic level, with the meanings of words used to describe beliefs and attitudes. Let us consider the word, *magic*. Most people define it as superstition or belief in the supernatural. In contrast, most magicians, Witches and other magical practitioners do not believe that magic has anything to do with the supernatural. (p. 6)

Adler, who is a contemporary leading figure in the Wiccan movement, is also the granddaughter of Alfred Adler and the niece of Alexandra Adler. She describes magic as "techniques that allow communication with hidden portions of the self " (p. 160).

Adler also presented a metaphorical view of gods and goddesses and their corresponding rituals. Her perspective seems to be that Wiccans typically do not have a literal belief in their deities as much as they view the gods and goddesses as representative of character traits, emotions, and personal strivings. Adler (1986) cited a letter she received in which the writer stated, “I do not believe in gods as real personalities on any plane, or in any dimension. Yet, I do believe in gods as symbols or personifications of universal principles” (p. 35). According to Adler’s explanation, Wiccans seem to eschew dogmas but they value the psychological experience created in their rituals and gatherings.

Adler used the term *neo-paganism* to distinguish her religion from the pagan beliefs of the ancients as well as from the current pagan beliefs of other cultures where they have existed uninterruptedly. Wicca has been frequently conceptualized as neo-pagan because it is not clear that it is the continuation of any ancient religion.

The theories regarding Wicca’s origins vary in a manner that parallels the disputes about medieval witchcraft already discussed in this book. However, one difference is that Wicca occurs in the present and thus is, to some degree, open to observation. In the case of medieval witchcraft, we must rely on historical documents written by individuals who often had a vested interest in representing witchcraft as an undesirable, if not despicable, practice.

Wicca appears to be a modern religious and social movement that has been shaped by a number of factors. The idea that it is a remnant of an ancient Western nature-worshipping religion cannot be completely ruled out. It is also possible that Wicca is, in part, related to methods of folk healing frequently seen in many cultures. Certainly, there are similarities between Wiccans and the shamans, witch doctors, and other preindustrial healers. Were there such healers in England? Numerous sources, both historic (e.g., Burton, 1621/1927; Scot, 1584/1972) and modern (Haining, 1975; Davies, 1999), document the presence of “cunning” men and women[2] in Britain who provided folk healing in much the same manner as the curanderos or shamans in other cultures.[3] However, as has already been noted, there is often a fine line between shamans, sorcerers, and witches. Thus, one might argue that white witchcraft is to some degree a variant of shamanism.

Although there has been much criticism of Margaret Murray’s thesis that a secret, pagan, nature-worshipping religion somehow survived in western Europe, the truth is we simply do not have enough data to know with certainty either way. On the other hand, if we carefully observe the modern features of Wicca, we can clearly see that at least some of these characteristics are not derived from an ancient Western nature-worshipping religion. For example, several books[4] exhibit a picture of a Wiccan marriage, or *handfasting,* officiated by Alex Sanders,[5] one of the leading figures of the Wiccan movement. In the picture are found the words “Tetragrammaton”[6] and “Elohim”[7] between the inner and outer rims of a magical circle. These words are not related to any primitive western European nature-worshipping religion. Instead, they are more likely borrowed from the Christian Cabala and Hermetic Qabalah that were used in a variety of other magical traditions such as those practiced by the Rosicrucians and spurious Masonic groups. It could be argued that Wicca is an amalgam of different beliefs and traditions and that a variety of factors (including the following) have probably affected its development and growth.

1. British folk healers with their magical traditions of treating illness have been in existence and have conducted business for hundreds of years (or more) with some secretiveness due to the periodic persecutions of occultists and heretics. Their beliefs and customs may have influenced Wicca.
2. Other esoteric systems, including occult fraternal organizations, individual occultists, and some practitioners whose traditions have been passed down generationally, may have contributed to current practice and lore of Wicca.
3. Popular psychology and especially the self-help movement has been a source of encouragement for people finding greater happiness and meaning in life through introspective self-exploration. For some, this has apparently become an alternative track for spiritual growth as well as a methodology for those wanting escape from the confines of more traditional religions. Some Wiccan rituals resemble group therapy, particularly the encounter groups of the 1960s and 1970s.
4. The feminist movement has made people more aware of the injustices done to women, children, and other unfairly subjugated groups. Wicca eliminates the stereotype of god as a male entity with exclusively male clergy. In Wicca, much emphasis is placed on goddesses and priestesses.

According to Vivianne Crowley (1989), “the origin of Wicca lies not in the distant past but its modern history really begins in 1951 when, with the repeal of the Witchcraft Act, people were free to talk openly about the ‘Old Religion’ ” (p. 20). Whatever the origins of Wicca may be, it appears to be a religious movement growing in numbers and in influence. In her 1986 edition of *Drawing down the Moon*, Adler estimated that there are “at least 50,000 to 100,000 active self-identified Pagans or members of Wicca in the United States” (p. 455). In her more recent 2006 edition, she estimated that there were more than a million neo-pagans worldwide. She also discussed what appears to be a growing connection between the Unitarian Universalist Association and the neo-pagan movement. I was invited to speak on the subject of ritual abuse at a local Unitarian church, and I found that a large proportion of the church members were reportedly Wiccans. I also noticed that literature provided at the information counter in the church vestibule gave announcements and information about Wiccan lectures and other activities.

Wiccans share some other similarities with other forms of Western occultism. Francis King (1970) argued that Gerald Gardner, the official founder of modern Wicca, had assistance from Aleister Crowley in developing the rituals for Wicca.[8] Although they are supposed to be secret, at least some of the ranks, rituals, implements, and traditions of Wicca have been described in various books.

Like Freemasonry, Wicca commonly has three levels, or ranks, and the designations accorded to these ranks vary from coven (group) to coven but often include titles such as priest and priestess, magus (for males), witch queen, high priestess, and high priest. Many rituals are conducted within a circle drawn with a nine-foot diameter. Some ceremonial acts are performed naked or *skyclad*, and some are performed clothed, often in ceremonial robes or other costumes. Wiccans reportedly eschew violent rituals, but symbolic scourging is practiced during some gatherings, and sometimes “the Great Rite,” ritual sexual intercourse, is performed symbolically or in actuality. Wiccans sometimes call their individual groups *covens*, and these are traditionally supposed to consist of 13 members but in actual practice may vary in size.[9]

Some individuals who were ritually abused in violent cults reported that they were attracted to Wicca in order to carry out some likeness of previous rituals, but without the trauma. I have heard rumors about Wiccans who try to help people escape other, malignant cults. Although patients of mine have stated that some followers of destructive cults occasionally attend Wiccan gatherings for the purpose of recruiting to their own particular group, I have been unable to either verify or disprove these claims. Nevertheless, I continue to hear similar reports from a variety of different ritual abuse survivors.

Is Wicca a possession cult? Does it promote dissociation? It is not clear that the experience of possession is an essential feature of Wicca. However, individuals who have witnessed Wiccan ceremonies, as well as published accounts of their rituals, seem to indicate that possession states sometimes occur. In the ritual of Drawing down the Moon, for example, the high priestess is sometimes said to respond with an altered state of consciousness that may include features of possession (Guiley, 1989). Luhrmann (1989) also wrote about the development of alternate identities in Wiccan rituals through activities that resemble role-playing. However, this author provided no description of participants developing involuntary dissociation of identity (as is common among patients with dissociation of identity). In *Earth Magic*, Marion Weinstein (1980) explained what she called the “alternate lives” that coexist within the individual involved in Wicca, perhaps reflecting Jungian views of personality as being normally multifaceted and somewhat dissociated.[10] Or possibly, in some cases, these alternate lives are the result of genuinely dissociated personalities.

CHAPTER 13

Satanism?

The term *satanism* has appeared frequently in this book. Exactly what is satanism? Like other concepts associated with obscurity and secrecy, it is difficult to define in a precise, scientific manner. Satanism may represent an organized belief system or religion such as the Church of Satan. It may be understood merely as a vague and dramatized concept of extreme rebellion against Western norms and conventions such as the “satanism” of some death metal rock musicians. It may be a mythological vestige of medieval religious thinking that still lingers in modern times. It may also be a deviant practice used to intimidate and control others through ritual abuse.

If satanism is sometimes associated with ritual abuse, one can also say that not all ritual abuse is satanic.[1] Many of these abusive practices have appeared in societies or under conditions where Satan is not a recognized spiritual entity.[2] In earlier times, it was not uncommon for Western scholars and world travelers to ascribe the influence of Satan as an explanation for the religious practices of people in less developed countries, which, to them, appeared to be idolatrous or violent. Even now, one occasionally hears the notion that if something is not Christian, it is the result of Satan’s power or influence.

How can we distinguish satanism from other pagan religions and satanic ritual abuse from similar malevolent practices by non-satanic individuals and groups?[3] Many problems are evident in attempting to answer this question, but perhaps the most formidable is the reported secrecy associated with allegedly abusive satanic cults. This is not to say that all variants of satanism are secretive.

For example, the Church of Satan, founded on April 30 (Walpurgisnacht), 1966, in San Francisco, California, openly operates as a religion. Its founder, Anton LaVey (1930–1997), repeatedly asserted that the Church of Satan was not engaged in any illegal activity such as ritual murder or sexual abuse of children. Instead, this new religious movement publicly espouses a position of hedonism and materialism along with the rejection of Christianity. Its publicly stated philosophy is so mild mannered that author Francis King (1989b) commented that “there is nothing particularly Satanic about this” (p. 221).

Although the Church of Satan is sometimes portrayed as relatively tame, other accounts are not so benign. Arthur Lyons (1988) wrote that during a “lecture on cannibalism, a severed human leg was brought from East San Francisco Bay Hospital by a physician-member, basted in Triple Sec, and served to the less queasy in the group” (p. 107). However, cult crime expert Carl Raschke (1990) cited cultist Michael Aquino, who claimed that this “was actually leg of mutton roasted with exotic herbs” (p. 240). Nevertheless, Blanche Barton (1990), a biographer of LaVey and Magistra Templi Rex of the organization, wrote that this was “a cooked thigh of a young white woman” (p. 78).

The Church of Satan was described from an anthropological perspective by Edward J. Moody (1974) who, by his own account, was a member of the Church of Satan in San Francisco for two-and-a-half years. Moody observed that one common denominator of the membership of this organization that he referred to as the Church of the Trapezoid was that the members appeared to be socially deviant in some way, although Moody asserted that the Church of the Trapezoid[4] appeared to be an effective means of resocialization for these individuals—at least within this group. Thus, Moody (1974) argued that the Church of Satan may assist these people in developing a more functional and adaptive mode of living and concluded that “perhaps it is for this reason that marginal religions such as the Church of the Trapezoid should be encouraged” (p. 382).

A former member of the Church of Satan, Michael Aquino, established his own brotherhood, the Temple of Set. This organization also professes to be law-abiding, but in 1990 Aquino was recommended for separation from the U.S. Army because of the Army’s determination of “probable cause” in a case of alleged sexual abuse of children. However, he was never convicted.[5]

Where did satanism begin? In an indirect form, the predecessors of satanism may be found in archaic religions in which gods were revered, not because of their inherent goodness, but because of their perceived power. The ancient Greek and Roman gods were such deities. Few of them showed many admirable traits or strength of character. These gods were often portrayed as possessing the foibles and veniality of mere mortals. Many of the cults devoted to such gods and goddesses allegedly conducted traumatizing rituals (e.g., the mystery cults). On the other hand, some religions specifically worshipped and supplicated overtly evil deities.

However, in some cases involving the worship of "evil," appearances may be deceiving. For example, the Yazidi sect of Turkey, Syria, Armenia, and Iran worship Ahriman (who, in the Zoroastrian religion, is roughly the equivalent of Satan). Yet the Yazidi believe that Ahriman is no longer evil, having asked for and received G-d's forgiveness, and consider it an outrage to equate their Ahriman with the Satan of Judaism, Christianity, and Islam.[6]

In other cases, what appears to be the worship of an "evil deity" may simply represent the devotion to a spiritual entity who no longer enjoys favored status in the prevailing culture of a given region. There are examples in history whereby a culture's demons were really past divinities no longer revered and sometimes given new and less attractive roles. Such revolutions among the gods sometimes resulted from conquests, whereupon the new gods of the conquerors took the place previously held by the gods of the conquered.

In other instances, evil may be revered or worshipped outright. In cultures where Christianity is the prevalent "white light religion," one might assume that the worship of evil would entail some devotion to Lucifer or Satan, the primary names given to the European American spiritual representations of evil. To many traditional Christians, Satan and Lucifer are equivalent and merely different names for the same demon. But some theologians make the distinction that Lucifer is the name of Satan before his fall. Within some occult traditions, there is even a clearer differentiation between Satan and Lucifer. As already mentioned, within certain cults Lucifer has sometimes been portrayed as a Promethean figure, the "bringer of light." In the tradition of some Gnostics, Lucifer was represented as the rebellious spirit opposed to Christianity and the G-d of creation—who was instead characterized as the one responsible for introducing evil by creating a flawed material world. Thus, Luciferianism reverses the Judeo-Christian-Islamic concept of a good creator and an evil demon. Satan is occasionally represented in such relatively benign terms[7] but more often Satan is described as the personification of evil. Such a satanic theology attributes goodness to the Judeo-Christian G-d, but satanists venerate Satan because he is perceived to be more powerful, or because the cultist might believe that he or she is beyond redemption by a benign deity. In this system of thinking, goodness itself may be characterized as a weak, ineffective, or futile goal. Spence (1993) described a similar dichotomy in views of satanism and Luciferianism, although he defined his terms slightly differently:

> Modern groups practicing Satanism are small and obscure, and unorganized as they are, details concerning them are conspicuous by their absence. Plentiful details, however, are forthcoming concerning the cults of Lucifer, but much discrimination is required in dealing with these, the bulk of the literature on the subject being manifestly imaginative and willfully misleading. The members of the church of Lucifer are of two groups, those who regard the deity they adore as the evil principle, thus approximating to the standpoint of the Satanists, and those who look upon him as the true god in opposition to Adonai or Jehovah, whom they regard as an evil deity who has with fiendish ingenuity miscreated the world of man to the detriment of humanity. (p. 123)

The wearing of dark, hooded robes is a commonly reported ceremonial practice of these cults, but survivors describe a variety of different costumes and ritual acts. One of my patients arrived at my office with a ceremonial cowl.[8] When she brought it to me, neither she nor I knew what it was. Without identifying the patient to whom the item belonged, I asked other survivors if they recognized the article of clothing and I was told that it was a cowl, a form of ceremonial headdress. The survivors indicated it was authentic, pointing to details of its construction that I had not noticed. The patient who brought it to me reported that she had awakened from a trance in her own house. The cowl was on her head but she didn’t know how or why it had gotten there. Some survivors describe the wearing of a miter by high-ranking members of their cult. The miter is a somewhat cone-shaped ceremonial hat worn by Catholic bishops and abbots. Some of the artwork from earlier times depicting the trial and execution of “heretics” (i.e., Gnostics) during the Inquisition shows them dressed in miters and robes.

Sexual abuse, torture,[9] and murder are often alleged to be components of satanic cult rituals. However, some survivors claim that they witnessed rituals involving the torture or murder of a person that were simulated. In these cases, the feigned killing was conducted in a sufficiently realistic manner that many of the participants believed that they witnessed the actual ceremonial killing of a person. In the Fran’s Day Care criminal case, a child testified that he was told to close his eyes and that his perpetrator was cutting his arm to perform surgery to replace his bone with the bone of Satan. The child revealed to the court that he unobtrusively peeked and saw that the “surgery” was not actually taking place.

An adult patient described witnessing a naked woman who was tied to a chair in front of a table where a bloody razor blade was prominently displayed. The woman was then blindfolded, and the perpetrator took a straight pin and slowly ran it across the victim’s body, causing slight scratches. According to my patient, the victim’s reaction showed her terror—she believed she was being sliced with the razor blade and consequently, she appeared to go in and out of numerous dissociated mental states.

Acts of ritual murder also have been reportedly simulated for the purpose of terrorizing those present into silence, reinforcing obedience, and creating further dissociated mental states. “Actual human sacrifice of children and adults may also be performed, but only on special occasions. Mock killings are performed more often and are designed to look as believable as real killings” (Smith, 1993, p. 130). Barb Jackson (1993), another survivor, described her observations of an abusive cult in which the rituals actually occurred but sometimes they were simulated. Both reportedly had the capacity for being overwhelmingly traumatic.

Hearing countless reports of ritual abuse from my clients and others an obvious question arose: why would anyone want to *do* these things? These stories typically lack any redeeming features whatsoever. What would motivate people to do these things? When asked, my clients sometimes had answers. The most commonly given explanation was that such rituals provided an intoxicating sense of power to those who were in the role of perpetrating the abuse. The individual perpetrating the abuse may experience a sense of power over life and death, whether simulated or in actuality. During such abusive acts, perpetrators exert profound control over the abused and dominion over the creation of what might appear to be new souls or, as one patient explained, “the souls of dead people,” that could then “inhabit” the body of someone present at the ceremony. In reality, these “souls” are alternate or dissociated personalities created via traumatizing rituals.

Nevertheless, in such a role the cultist not only “plays god,” but, for the purposes of those present, actually becomes the god (e.g., through a state of possession) and is recognized, respected, and worshipped as the god by the followers. On other occasions, the cultist simply enjoys being in the powerful role of a god.[10] The following was written by one of my clients about such an interaction. She described an abusive male who repetitively claimed he was G-d before sexually abusing her:

> Was taken into a room and thrown down on a bed. The man was very big and blonde. Muscular. Over 6 ft. tall. Very angular features. Had been "led" to the room by others. "He" told them to leave me alone with him. Said he was going to teach me a lesson. We talked back to him. He got right in my face and said he was God. He repeated it over and over. He kept saying he was god, "*God, God, God*." When we first were taken in to the room, we were scared. After he kept saying god, we were very compliant.[11]

Another ritually abused patient sometimes switched to altered states, describing in terror her experience of being tortured by "gods." But the gods she described were not metaphysical abstractions; they were merely people who had taken on the roles or identities of gods in rituals that she had been forced to attend. My client called one of these "gods" Satan.[12]

The pursuit of power[13] may become attractive to those who have been placed in a role of extreme powerlessness, a feature of being in the victim role in such a cult. Apparently all, or almost all, members of satanic cults reportedly are, at one time or another, in the victim roles of these abusive rituals. However, as one's rank increases in the cult, the extent of victimization decreases; thus as the cult member rises in power, he or she is increasingly placed in the role of a perpetrator of painful ceremonies and procedures.[14] Power can be desirable for its defensive as well as offensive potential. Getting power decreases the harm that is done to the individual. Sometimes the power of "the dark side" may be sought because the individual has lost any hope of protection from "good" people or a good deity. As one patient explained while in the state of a child alter, "God can't protect you. Satan can."

Several clients described rituals in which Christian ceremonies were parodied and the victim of the abuse was told to pray to G-d for help. No help was forthcoming because the participants deliberately orchestrated the situation so that no aid would appear under such conditions. In some circumstances, no relief was offered until the victim made a sincere plea to Satan or until the victim was transformed by the torture into another identity (through dissociation), one who was more loyal to or compliant with the demon.

The power that exists in satanic (and Luciferian) cults is reportedly reflected in an organized hierarchy with incremental ranks.[15] These positions may vary somewhat from one group to another, but one example is the following: page, knight, priest (or priestess), prince (or princess), high priest (or high priestess), king (or queen), savior, and god (sometimes goddess, but goddess is not always the feminine equivalent to god and vice versa). As one increases in rank, one is taught more about the programming cues or “triggers” used in ceremonies with the other followers of the cult. Some of these triggers are relatively generic and thus can be used to exert control over a relatively large number of people. The example given earlier in this book is the repeated use of the word *deep* or *deeper*. When this word is used repeatedly, even unobtrusively (e.g., in ordinary conversation), many survivors of satanic and Luciferian cults will commonly go into a trance or show some other signs of change in mental state or other physical response such as an eyeblink or altered gaze. Those who increase in rank are not only taught a variety of triggering stimuli that can be used in controlling others (via such programming methods) but also reportedly retrained so that their responses to these lower-level generic cues are less powerful in exerting control over them. Thus, survivors who are higher ranking in the satanic and similar cults are “trained” with more specific and idiosyncratic programming cues so that the majority of other members will not readily have control over them. Such control remains with the elite who are higher in rank and who have had more advanced training.

The origins of satanism are as obscure as other occult belief systems. One can never be precisely certain when such practices first began. Nevertheless, some of the historical accounts of satanism in Europe may provide at least some general hypotheses. The practice of satanism can be traced to a variety of possible sources: (1) European witchcraft, sorcery, and shamanism; (2) Gnostic-derived religions (e.g., the Cathari)[16] who viewed the established Church as evil and oppressive; (3) the general traditions of Western occultism (which are often seen as encompassing a “dark” or “left-handed path”); and (4) what Francis King (1989b) calls “the bad theology of a minority of Roman Catholic priests” (p. 219).

Centuries ago, after the military defeat of the Christian crusaders in Palestine, many Europeans may have come to doubt that G-d was really on their side. Others may have begun to doubt that G-d’s power was great enough to protect them. Countless natural disasters and an oppressive social order may have further challenged the beliefs and hopes of medieval Europeans. According to John Robinson (1989), the devastating bubonic plague epidemic of the 1300s, the so-called Black Death, may have seriously shattered the faith of many who survived this disaster. Some may have "believed an appeal to Satan was the only alternative, now that they had been abandoned by God" (p. 5).[17]

Some of the practices of the Church may have also provided opportunities for the further abuse of people. In addition to the Inquisition and inhumane persecution of those accused of heresy and witchcraft, there arose the notion that flagellation (whipping or scourging) was an acceptable way of doing penance or atonement for sins. In some cases, the practice of flagellation clearly became excessive, and the Church eventually prohibited certain kinds of extreme self-mortification. However, even today the Penitentes, or Brothers of Our Father, Jesus, a Catholic sect in New Mexico and northern Colorado, is said to engage in relatively severe forms of physical punishment. The Penitentes reportedly engage in various forms of "discipline"[18] that on rare occasions have left the penitent permanently injured or dead. According to Darley (1968), there are eyewitness accounts of actual crucifixions of people conducted by this sect in secrecy, although the Penitentes deny this accusation.[19]

The pervasive superstitions in medieval Europe were probably also a factor in the evolution of dark occultism. During that era, even the Church appeared to be steeped in superstition.[20] Many believers had a magical understanding of their religion and worship services evolved for procuring the death of a living person—the Death Mass—and the Amatory Mass, ostensibly for obtaining sex or love. There were also a number of defrocked priests and "wandering"[21] priests and bishops who performed such magical masses for a fee, although the seventh-century Council of Toledo banned the practice of the Death Mass.

The Black Mass may have evolved from such magical masses along with the alleged blasphemous and reversed masses attributed to various Gnostic and Gnostic-inspired sects. In *The Golden Bough*, Sir James Frazer (1963) described the Mass of St. Sécaire, which allegedly was conducted in Gascony, France, for the intended purpose of causing harm to another individual. This ritual involved sacrilegious acts and a reversal in the wording of the official Catholic mass.[22]

In the 15th century, French baron and onetime marshal of France, Gilles de Rais, was found to have engaged in numerous murderous and sadistic acts, some of which were alleged to be associated with bizarre rituals, where he was assisted by Francesco Prelatti, a Florentine priest and occultist (Hyatte, 1984). Gilles de Rais was noted to be a man whose character and personality seemed to be extremely variable at different times. Sometimes noted for his kindness and piety, he was distinguished for his bravery in his military assistance of Joan of Arc. However, there was a great deal of consistent testimony provided by witnesses as well as material evidence pointing to his guilt.[23] According to Francis King (1989b), satanism was sufficiently prevalent in 16th- and 17th-century France that its presence was noted by the police:

> It is difficult to know how widespread such Satanist activities were among the nonmonastic clergy of the Middle Ages, but they seem to have become common in the 16th and17th centuries. Exactly how common, no one knows, but if the rest of Catholic Europe was anything like the ecclestiastical underworld of Paris at that time, then they were very common indeed. For in France Satanism had attained the status of big business, its practitioners forming a kind of occult Mafia, a noisome octopus with tentacles which reached into almost every segment of Parisian society and which was uncovered by Nicolas de la Reynie, the Police Commissioner of Paris. (pp. 219–220)

Louis de Vanens, a self-avowed satanist, was arrested in November 1678 for forgery. A year later, fortune-teller Catherine Deshayes (using the name La Voisin) was arrested for poisoning. At her home were found not only poisons but also occult ritual paraphernalia. La Voisin admitted having sold poisons to young wives who intended to murder their elderly husbands. She also confessed to performing numerous abortions and organizing magical masses intended to cause death or amorous conquests. She allegedly had clandestine dealings with several priests, one of the more notorious being Abbé Guibourg. If these police investigations are to be trusted, then we should also note that material evidence was reportedly found, including the remains of infants who had allegedly been sacrificed during these Black Masses. Apparently many prominent individuals and members of the aristocracy were implicated, but when it was discovered that the Madame de Montespan, a mistress to King Louis XIV, was involved, the king silenced all who knew the details of the case and ordered that the records be destroyed.[24]

Later in 1839, Pierre Vintras, a foreman of a French cardboard-box factory, announced that he was a reincarnation of the prophet Elijah and that he had come to prepare the way for the second coming of Jesus. Professing that he had received a letter from Michael the Archangel, Vintras founded a sect called the Work of Mercy, which later was identified as the Church of Carmel. This group was condemned in 1848 by Pope Gregory XVI. Vintras performed strange masses in which bizarre events reportedly occurred including the spectacle of chalices magically overflowing with blood and blood appearing on communion wafers. Vintras claimed that his masses were intended to counteract the evil forces generated by satanists who, he said, were performing Black Masses during that time. However, the famous occultist Eliphas Levi reportedly observed these events and noted that the communion wafers used for these masses were triangular and reddish and that Vintras wore an inverted cross on his vestments, which, to him, were indicative of satanic influences.[25]

When Vintras died, the leadership of his sect passed to Abbé Boullan, a defrocked priest who had already achieved some notoriety when he and a nun by the name of Adèle Chevalier established a group called the Society for the Reparation of Souls, in which rituals involving sex magic and ritual murder were reported. Francis King (1991) wrote, "according to a document which survives in the Vatican archives, on 8 January 1860, Boullan and his mistress celebrated a Black Mass which incorporated the ritual sacrifice of their own bastard child" (pp. 116–117). He went on to say:

> Documents survive which provide evidence that Boullan and his disciples engaged, or imagined that they engaged, in sexual activities not only with angels and other heavenly beings but with the spirits of the mighty dead—Cleopatra and Alexander the Great, for example. The techniques used to achieve these ghostly copulations were largely masturbatory, the man or woman concerned was simply fantasizing that he or she was having sexual intercourse with a disembodied being. On occasion a human partner, also a member of the Church of Carmel, was involved. In this case each would imagine the other to be an angel. Boullan also seems to have approved of bestiality, sexual relationships between animals and human beings on the grounds that it speeded up the spiritual evolution of the animals concerned. There is no hard evidence that he acted on this theory, but some of his followers may have done so. Such teachings as those described above were only given to those in the inner circle of Boullan's so-called Church. In public he posed as a man of great, if eccentric piety. (p. 117)

Apparently Boullan had friendly encounters with J. K. Huysmans, who authored the novel *Là Bas*, depicting what many consider to be realistic descriptions of the Black Mass.[26] Huysmans, by his own admission, attended such a ritual.

In 1895 a Luciferian chapel was found in the Borghese Palace in Rome. The magnificent Palazzo Borghese had been leased to other residents by the Borghese family. Later, during an unexpected examination of the property by representatives of the family, they found a room with the words “Templum Palladicum”[27] inscribed on it with a large tapestry of Lucifer, an altar, and other occult paraphernalia.[28]

In modern America, satanic symbols and themes are visible and popular features of music, literature, and movies. Increasing numbers of reported survivors are coming forward to claim they are victims of such cults. Are these reports merely rumors or fantasies, or are people being victimized this way? Unless we seriously investigate these reports, we will never know for certain. We need to listen so that we can begin to realistically understand these experiences and work toward finding constructive solutions.

CHAPTER 14

Nihilists and Revisionists

Ritual abuse survivors say they were told by their perpetrators that if they talked about being abused, no one would believe them. We also were skeptical in the beginning. Their stories were too bizarre to accept uncritically. We talked with other helping professionals and almost without exception they acknowledged their own initial surprise and incredulity. Yet these clients had comparable stories of abuse, similar psychological testing results, and the same pattern of dissociative and posttraumatic experiences. As time passed, other corroborating facts began to emerge.

In 1992 I was invited to participate in a panel discussion on the topic of “Breaking the Cycle of Child Abuse—Working Together for Change” at the Third Annual Texas Dissociative Disorders Conference. My topic was ritual abuse. Before beginning my presentation, I asked the audience of these 80–90 professionals representing the fields of psychology, counseling, and social work to respond with a show of hands to several questions. I asked the audience how many of those present thought that at least some of the allegations that their patients made about being ritually abused were true. About 90% of the audience raised their hands in the affirmative. I then polled the group inquiring who believed that none of the patients’ allegations about being ritually abused were true. No hands were raised. I asked how many were not sure. Only one woman raised her hand. Frankly, I was surprised to see the overwhelming acceptance of at least some of the stories about ritual abuse. Had this been a conference specifically addressing ritual abuse, the results might not have been so surprising. However, this conference dealt with dissociative disorders, and ritual abuse was only an adjunctive topic of discussion.

Psychologist George Greaves (1992) identified four groups of people responding to the ritual abuse controversy: “(1) *nihilists*, (2) *apologists*, (3) *heuristics*, and (4) *methodologists*” (p. 46). Greaves explained the nihilist position as follows:

> *Nihilists* seem to see their function as explaining how the presentations made by SCSs [Satanic Cult Survivors] *cannot* be true. They believe that because they can concoct alternative explanations of the data, the data *are not* true. They hold themselves to no other empirical criterion of truth, but they, nevertheless, rigorously demand such of others. Many of them fly the flag of scientific skepticism, but their skepticism—and their data gathering—are often unscientific in method. Rather than proving their hypotheses scientifically, they strike the pose of claiming that their hypotheses are factually correct until someone empirically proves them wrong. Among the nihilists I would include George Ganaway (1989, 1990), Richard Noll (1990), Arthur Lyons (1988), Robert Hicks (1990a, 1990b), and Kenneth Lanning (1989). Ganaway and Noll hold that SCS reports are the results of various kinds of psychodynamic distortions and/or artifacts induced in SCS subjects by clumsy or unwitting interviewers. Lyons, Hicks, and Lanning argue the *reductio ad absurdum* fallacy that if the reports were true, there would be physical evidence to back them up which they claim, there is not. (p. 46)

There are other logical fallacies associated with the nihilist point of view. For example, Sherrill Mulhern (1991b) wrote:

> The current revival of popular belief in the existence of an international conspiratorial Satanic blood cult has been promoted primarily by public declarations of alleged cult survivors, whose testimonies have been accredited by authoritative mental health professionals. These eye-witnesses can be divided into two groups: (1) adult mental patients, who claim to have been raised in transgenerational cults that “brainwashed” them through ritual torture, and (2) very young children, who allegedly have been subjected to ritual torture by cult recruiters while in day care. Both groups are said to have dissociated their memories of these horrifying experiences, recovering them only recently in psychotherapy. (p. 145)

Mulhern’s argument is an example of building a straw man. Rather than correctly identifying the various accounts and witnesses of ritual abuse, she selected a specific variant of ritual abuse, for example, the allegation of an “international conspiratorial Satanic blood cult,” and presented this as descriptive of the entire case;[1] she then attacked this straw man of her own making. Secondly, she incorrectly stated that the witnesses of these abuses fell into the previously mentioned two categories, and in both categories, the witnesses dissociated their experiences and only recover them in psychotherapy.

A similar logical error and misstatement of facts can be seen in the chapter “Occult Survivors: The Making of a Myth,” by Philip Jenkins and Daniel Maier-Katkin (1991). The authors criticized the claims of ritual abuse survivor Michelle Smith, whose history of abuse is told in *Michelle*

Remembers (Smith & Pazder, 1980). Jenkins and Maier-Katkin argued that there were no satanic cults in the Vancouver area when Smith was a child:

> Before 1965, however, the religious fringe was more sparsely populated. The closest approximations to "devil worship" were strictly confined to geographic areas far removed from the locations of Michelle and Jenny—above all, to California. The Agape Lodge in 1930s Hollywood had been associated with wealthy decadence; by the 1940s, Jack Parsons transformed it into the Crowleyite Church of Thelema, based in Pasadena. At least in rumor, this group was active in orgies and sacrifice, but the tiny cult was moribund in the mid-1950s. (p. 138)

The "tiny cult" that Jenkins and Maier-Katkin were referencing is the Ordo Templi Orientis (O.T.O.). This occult fellowship is neither moribund nor tiny. As of 2006, they had an estimated international membership of 3,000 (Greenfield, 2006). Furthermore, their first local affiliate in North America was not in California as Jenkins and Maier-Katkin incorrectly stated, but in the Vancouver area.[2] According to their official website, they follow Allister Crowley's *Book of the Law*. Part of the *Book of the Law* (more precisely known as *Liber Al vel Legis*)[3] reads:

> Sacrifice cattle, little and big: after a child. . . . The best blood is of the moon, monthly: then the fresh blood of a child, or dropping from the host of heaven: then of enemies; then of the priest or of the worshippers: last of some beast, no matter what. This burn: of this make cakes & eat unto me. This hath also another use; let it be laid before me, and kept thick with perfumes of your orison: it shall become full of beetles as it were and creeping things sacred unto me. These slay, naming your enemies; & they shall fall before you. Also these shall breed lust & power of lust in you at the eating thereof.[4]

The use of sexual rituals and the ritual ingestion of human body products (blood, urine, semen, etc.) are ceremonial practices within the O.T.O. (Drury, 2011; Urban, 2003).

We are not implying that the O.T.O. was responsible for Michelle Smith's abuse. We are simply showing that the assumptions made by Jenkins and Maier-Katkin were incorrect. The fact that they didn't find evidence of a secretive group engaging in bizarre rituals in a particular location does not mean such groups don't exist. Sometimes researchers don't investigate carefully; sometimes they ask the wrong questions.

Jenkins and Maier-Katkin went on to write that "30 or more deaths" were associated with an allegedly African American "Church of Sacrifice" in Louisiana, and that Native Americans are known to have a history of witchcraft practices. However, they erred when they claimed that "none of the current survivors appears to be referring to these alleged ethnic traditions” (Jenkins & Maier-Katkin, 1991, p. 142). Readers will note that we specifically describe such patients’ allegations throughout this book. It appears that Jenkins and Maier-Katkin are unfamiliar with the literature of ritual abuse and the accounts made by these survivors.[5]

One of the more recent nihilist publications is David Frankfurter’s *Evil Incarnate: Rumors of Demonic Conspiracy and Ritual Abuse in History* (2006). Frankfurter began his book by stating his position: “Satanic atrocities are perennial phenomena, not authentic criminal events” (p. xvii). His book described a variety of historic cases where such allegations had been made but he says the “atrocities, imagined as the very substance of evil, never took place” (p. xiii). He argued that ritual abuse allegations represent a repeated, but erroneous, social construction, the product of a moral panic. However, he did not explain why contemporary allegations of ritual abuse have persisted from the 1980s into the 21st century. He wasn’t open to the possibility that some allegations of ritual abuse are true, nor did he give evidence of having gotten to know actual people who said they were survivors of ritual abuse, hearing them, and examining their stories. These are real individuals, many of whom are in treatment for psychological disorders. Is it appropriate to collectively sweep aside their individual allegations without interviewing any of them, studying their medical records, or reviewing their psychological test results? Such an indiscriminant theory could cause harm by silencing victims and their advocates. Frankfurter ended the discussion by blaming those people who talk about ritual abuse: “Real evil happens when people speak of evil” (p. 12).

If one wishes to accurately criticize the arguments supporting the existence of ritual abuse, then first one must correctly identify them. These arguments may be summarized as follows:

1. Allegations about ritual abuse have occurred in a variety of cultures throughout history. Among those groups where traumatizing rituals have reportedly been used, there have also been some accounts of dissociation, amnesia, and alterations of the individual’s identity. Why do these allegations of abuse correspond to these particular psychological symptoms?
2. In modern times, reports of ritual abuse in multiple international locations have been made by people who claim to be survivors.

Many of these survivors experience symptoms associated with severe dissociation, and many state that they have remembered particular instances of abuse while in therapy. However, these survivor memories are not all recovered in therapy.

3. Some perpetrators of ritual abuse and other criminal activity associated with cults are self-confessed.
4. There are a variety of credible witnesses to cult criminal activity. Included are a police officer who reportedly infiltrated a satanic cult and an attorney who stated that she was abducted by members of a cult at gun point while she was prosecuting a case in which there were allegations of ritual abuse. These witnesses told their stories in a videotaped documentary, *Children at Risk: Ritual Abuse in America* (1992). I have also spoken with two other individuals who were not psychiatric patients and who reported, in one case, witnessing abusive cult rituals, and, in both cases, being threatened. Both of these informants requested that I not identify them because of the threats made against them.
5. There have been convictions in criminal cases in response to allegations of ritual abuse. These convictions, by law, are based on evidence that is "beyond a reasonable doubt."
6. Civil cases have been won against individuals accused of ritual abuse. By law, these verdicts are based on "a preponderance of evidence."
7. Internationally, there are multiple cases of ritual murder that have resulted in criminal convictions. These are a matter of public record.
8. The abusive acts of some cults (e.g., the People's Temple of Guyana, Branch Davidians, Order of the Solar Temple, Aum Supreme Truth) are publicly known and documented.
9. The great majority of therapists who work with clients reporting ritual abuse tend to believe many of the allegations (Andrews, Morton, Bekerian, Brewin, Davies, & Mollon, 1995; Becker, Karriker, Rutz, & Overkamp, 2013; Bottoms, Shaver & Goodman, 1991; Ost, Wright, Easton, Hope, & French, 2013; Schmuttermaier & Veno, 1999; and Perry, 1992).
10. In a series of workshops, university lectures, and in group and individual professional supervision, I have demonstrated that

> many of these survivors respond to preprogrammed cues with switching of alternate identities and trance responses. The patients were not trained to respond to these cues in therapy. I sometimes conduct these demonstrations with survivors that I have never seen before.

Given that there is proof for the existence of some cases of ritual abuse, we have to question why some people are motivated to publicly deny the existence of this phenomenon while refraining from accurately citing the evidence. Consider this ethical dilemma. A little girl states that she is being ritually abused. The perpetrator draws on the arguments published by these nihilists to support his or her innocence. In some cases, a perpetrator could be aided by those attempting to discredit the reality of ritual abuse. A truly victimized child might be further traumatized and silenced by the failure of others to fairly consider her story because the perpetrator, defended by the ritual abuse critics, is more readily believed.

This is not to say that the field of ritual abuse shouldn't be open to critical scrutiny. But why would critics resort to unscientific and unfair tactics? Why do critics of this subject have to stretch reason and distort facts in order to make their point, given the serious consequences that may result if this kind of abuse is occurring in actuality?

Christine Comstock (1991) made an important observation:

> Now that the possibility of ritualistic abuse affecting great numbers of people has arisen, I believe it is a good time to question our personal and organizational response. If the stories we hear about ritualistic abuse are true, it seems imperative that we accept some responsibility to do what we can to stop this devastation. It may be that our nonresponse could be considered to be on the same order as the nonresponse of the German citizens during the Third Reich. (p. 7)

Comstock's example of the nonresponse of German citizens to Nazi atrocities is thought-provoking because this lack of moral conviction was not merely limited to the Germans during World War II. It was, in fact, widespread throughout much of the world at that time. Even many of the European Jews could not initially believe the stories of the Nazi death camps. According to the psychodynamic theorists, this is how we cope. When we are confronted with reports or scenes of horror, we escape with denial. No one wanted to believe that such deliberate acts of terror could occur in a civilized society. As a consequence of their denial, coupled with the denial of the rest of the world and the unwillingness of any nation other than perhaps Denmark to assist the Jews, most European Jews were unable to escape the onslaught.

Now, to make matters worse, there is a modern effort underway to deny that the Holocaust occurred or that the European Jewish population was destroyed by the deliberate, willful, organized murder of six million men, women, and children. Telushkin (1991) describes this disgraceful movement:

> Amazingly, and despite very extensive pictorial and eyewitness evidence, the testimony of tens of thousands of survivors, and the confessions of thousands of perpetrators, a growing number of books, pamphlets, and articles have been published claiming that the Holocaust never happened. To make their case sound academically respectable, their authors refer to themselves as Holocaust revisionists. Many of these "revisionists" do indeed, come from the academic community. Arthur Butz, a professor of electric engineering at Northwestern University near Chicago, wrote *The Hoax of the Twentieth Century*, a book that offered "proof " that the concentration camps were work camps where no Jews were killed. Given the indisputable evidence of a great decline in the number of Jews living in Europe after 1945, Butz claimed that millions of Jews were admitted secretly to America, or fled to the Soviet Union. Butz's thesis, of course, is as preposterous as arguing that blacks were never slaves in America, but migrated here as paid servants and farm workers. Yet shortly after publication of Butz's book, the Institute for Historical Review was founded in California, and issued a journal devoted to Holocaust revisionism. In 1980 and 1981, the institute offered a $50,000 "reward" to anyone who could prove that there had been Nazi death camps, and that Jews had been killed in them. A Holocaust survivor in Los Angeles claimed the money. When the journal refused to pay him, he sued and won. (pp. 382–383)[6]

The tendency to deny or ignore the plight of European Jews was so great that Raul Hilberg (1992) divided the cast of characters into perpetrators, victims, and bystanders. The inaction on the part of the bystanders was also a significant factor in this tragedy. Adolf Hitler was so confident that no one would object to his destruction of the Jews that he made reference on several occasions to the Turkish genocide of Armenians during World War I: "Who still talks nowadays of the extermination of the Armenians?"[7] According to Simpson (1993), "the Turkish government even today continues to refuse to acknowledge *Ittahadist* responsibility for the Armenian massacres, and has instead in recent years financed a large and sophisticated publicity campaign aimed at rewriting the history of the war years" (p. 37).

A similar organization was created in order to make revisionist interpretations about the modern widespread allegations of child abuse. It is the False Memory Syndrome Foundation (FMSF). The name is something of a curiosity in that the organization has no discernable interest in the numerous ways that memory can be false. Instead, the FMSF is invested in proving that most of the recent epidemic of reported sexual and ritual abuse is the fanciful product of overzealous or incompetent therapists.

False Memory Syndrome (FMS) is not a diagnosis recognized in either the American Psychiatric Association's *Diagnostic and Statistical Manual of Mental Disorders* or the World Health Organization's *International Classification of Diseases*. It is a contrived term that doesn't actually describe a "syndrome" or collection of symptoms. Rather, it is a pejorative expression that reassigns blame. Richard Lowenstein (1992) stated: "I know of no clinical research or tradition or clinical description that empirically validates or supports that such a clinical condition exists as such. FMS is a syndrome without signs and symptoms (the defining characteristics of a syndrome)" (p. 2).

The FMSF has redefined for us the identities of the real perpetrators: therapists and others who put "false" ideas in the minds of fragile patients who come to erroneously believe that they were abused in childhood. Although we know of no single case in which it has been proven that any therapist implanted such false memories, the FMSF has argued that this practice is widespread. Given the absence of substantiating evidence, the claims of the FMSF are inflammatory and prompt frivolous legal action against therapists who are merely trying to do their jobs in an ethically responsible manner. There are times when a therapist's job includes listening to patients' reports and recollections of childhood abuse. It is now easier for those accurately identified as perpetrators to successfully sue therapists because of the propaganda dispensed by the FMSF. It is also likely that some therapists will refuse to work with patients who make such allegations out of fear for their own liability. As one of my colleagues once commented, "in America you can sue anybody for anything."

However, there may be even more disastrous consequences to the FMSF's propaganda efforts. When a victim is not believed after making an outcry, the victim may be exposed to further harm when appropriate protective action is not taken. Furthermore, perpetrators who believe that they have an influential organization on their side may feel safer in engaging in further acts of abuse. According to Mark Schwartz (1993), previously an affiliate of the Masters and Johnson Sexual Trauma Programs: "In our perpetrators' program many individuals who had previously acknowledged their perpetrations have begun carrying around false memory articles to fuel their denial, resulting in more perpetrations" (p. 3). In 2011 Schwartz himself was accused of having implanted false memories of abuse in a patient while on the staff of Castlewood Treatment Center in St. Louis. Schwartz, other staff of Castlewood, and the facility itself were accused of malpractice and personal injury by as many as four plaintiffs (Bernhard, 2013). According to *Bloomberg Businessweek* ("Court dismisses lawsuit" 2013), the original case was dismissed and the subsequent lawsuits appear to be moving toward dismissal.

Given the serious consequences of sexual or ritual abuse, we question the appropriateness of inventing jargon that has the appearance of being scientific, although is unsupported by clear and convincing evidence. Such terminology could be construed as false and misleading and thus unprofessional and unethical. The theory behind the FMS hypothesis, that unscrupulous and incompetent therapists implant such memories, is not only unfounded but also absurd. As you read this, ask yourself whether you believe that a therapist could convince you that you were the victim of satanic ritual abuse at the hands of your parents if such were not the case. Although there is scientific evidence that human memory is not a perfectly accurate representation of reality, and that some people's recollections may be influenced by others, there is no scientific evidence that therapists are actively brainwashing their patients in this manner. On the other hand, for decades therapists have worked with patients in an effort to implant positive attitudes but have found this to be no simple or easily accomplished task. Any therapist who is so skilled in persuasion could likely create a successful career convincing patients to live psychologically healthy lives. Why would anyone with that kind of skill and education—it takes many years of study to become a psychotherapist—resort to such bizarre, harmful, and self-destructive practices?

Most therapists find that they exert little persuasive impact with their clients. Instead, most of psychotherapy consists of therapists taking on the role primarily as a listener. Clients make progress in therapy by becoming increasingly self-empowered, by learning to clarify their own questions, and finding their own solutions to their dilemmas of living. Even the FMSF has admitted that a large percentage of individuals who recall memories of childhood abuse do so without ever having been in psychotherapy.

Many therapists may eventually refuse to work with clients who report ritual abuse, just as some therapists currently refuse to work with actively suicidal patients fearing the potential exposure to liability. When therapists work with patients with thoughts of suicide or whose problems are embroiled in controversy, there is an increased risk that the therapist will be sued, even when the therapist's actions are entirely appropriate and ethical. Thus, there may be some patients who were indeed abused in childhood who later will be abandoned in therapy when they begin to reveal their abuse.

The FMSF disseminates data that are derived from biased and unscientific means, and from these data, the organization draws unjustified conclusions. The information published by the FMSF consists of testimonies by individuals who claim that their alleged victims have falsely accused them of abuse. Some of these accused individuals have been indicted or criminally prosecuted or civilly litigated subsequent to these accusations. The testimonies of these accused perpetrators have been used to "prove" that the allegations of wrongdoing are due to false memories. This is obviously an illogical conclusion. Although the FMSF has documented that many people who have contacted them reported that they were falsely accused of perpetration, there are a variety of other possible reasons that the accused deny these allegations. Perpetrators can also presumably have false memories and they can lie about their innocence.[8] However, we have not seen the FMSF address those possibilities. The reason that alternative explanations are not considered is because the FMSF is not really a scientific organization. A book published by FMSF apologist Claudette Wassil-Grimm exemplified this problem via the lack of scholarly exploration of both sides of the recovered memory phenomenon.[9] The FMSF appears to be an advocacy service designed to assist in the legal defense of alleged perpetrators of child abuse. It promotes its purpose by defending alleged perpetrators against their alleged victims by questioning the credibility of their accusers and, by extension, the advocates of these alleged victims, including therapists.

What exactly is the FMSF? What is its purpose, its agenda? How has it come to pass that an organization with such questionable origins has gained national and even international recognition in a brief space of time? Why does it attract support from the media and sometimes from the general public?

The founder and executive director of the FMSF is Pamela Freyd. By her own admission, she founded the organization in response to her adult daughter's allegations of childhood sexual abuse.[10] Her daughter, Jennifer J. Freyd, is a professor of psychology at the University of Oregon. Professor Freyd addressed her then public dispute with her parents when she spoke at a conference, Controversies around Recovered Memories of Incest and Ritualistic Abuse, on August 7, 1993, in Ann Arbor, Michigan. In her presentation, "Theoretical and Personal Perspectives on the Delayed Memory Debate," professor Freyd cited a family history of long-standing dysfunction, including her father's alcoholism and her parents' overt and inappropriate violations of her privacy such as eavesdropping on her telephone conversations and reading her diary. Beyond that, she documented a family history of disturbed interactions regarding sexuality in which she danced nude in front of her father; in which, at the age of eleven, he taught her to "kiss like a grown-up" in a play that he directed; and in which he made inappropriate sexually oriented remarks, exposed himself to her, and displayed other clearly inappropriate behaviors. According to professor Freyd, her father did not deny these allegations. Furthermore, she reported that her parents continued to invade her privacy by writing to her colleagues, making inappropriate sexual references, and carrying their private family dispute into the public forum. Professor Freyd (1993) poignantly stated:

> For me, and for many others, the bitter irony is that the memories, false or true, did not destroy healthy families. I have told you already about some of the events that I had never forgotten, about patterns of interaction. I have avoided discussing memories that only came back to me within the last three years because I am aware that I probably cannot prove those events took place, and because I don't think I should be forced into putting my memories on trial when I am not demanding to be believed about those things, when I never chose to make them public in the first place. I have instead told you about patterns of boundary invasion, about patterns of intrusion into my personal space, about patterns of coercive control and entitlement. Does this mean my childhood was only hurtful? Of course not. My parents provided me with many good things, many good times. But my family was not simply a happy, healthy family. It was a deeply troubled family, and its destruction did not begin simply by my entering therapy at the age of 33.

Not only are the motivations of the founders of the FMSF suspect, there are significant unanswered questions associated with the professional, ethical, and personal standards of other individuals who comprise the Professional Advisory Board of the FMSF. For example, professor Freyd (1993) cited a serious breach of both the patient's right to confidentiality and boundary violations that occurred between her mother's therapist, board member Harold Lief, and herself:

> He explained to me that he did not believe I was abused because in the early 1980s, when he met with my father once or twice in order to admit him to Silver Hill for treatment for alcoholism, he learned that my father's erotic fantasies were "entirely homoerotic." Now, I won't count it an ethical blunder to make the unfounded argument that a man with homoerotic fantasies in a heterosexual marriage is incapable of molesting his prepubescent daughter, but I do wonder about the ethics of telling the daughter of a patient such information—did I ask to know about my father's sexual fantasies? Most emphatically "no!" (p. 4)

Freyd (1993) also explained that advisory board members Hollida Wakefield and Martin Orne were consulted by Pamela Freyd in their roles as therapists, not as colleagues, and were in possession of intimate details of the Freyd family's functioning. According to professor Freyd, such an action would be a violation of the code of ethics of the American Psychological Association because it represented an unethical dual relationship.

Also disturbing is the fact that previous board member, the late Ralph Underwager,[11] and his wife, fellow board member Hollida Wakefield, granted an interview to *Paidika: The Journal of Paedophilia*, published in Amsterdam. In the course of the interview, Underwager was quoted as saying: "Paedophiles need to become more positive and make the claim that paedophilia is an acceptable expression of God's will for love and unity among human beings."[12] Underwager was frequently cited in child custody cases where he invariably attacked the credibility of those who making allegations of sexual abuse. Unfortunately, there also many inaccuracies associated with his research. In her unpublished 1991 manuscript, Anna Salter cited numerous errors in Underwager and Wakefield's book *Accusations of Child Sexual Abuse*. Salter scrutinized this book, which is sometimes cited in legal testimony in court cases, in a study supported by a grant from the New England Commissioners of Child Welfare Agencies. Prior to his association with the FMSF, Underwager founded the organization Victims of Child Abuse Legislation (VOCAL), whose sole purpose was the advocacy of men accused of child sexual abuse.

Another member of the FMSF scientific advisory board, Elizabeth Loftus, has been a frequent expert witness in civil and criminal prosecutions against therapists accused of implanting false memories of abuse in their patients. Loftus's mall study is often cited by FMSF apologists as evidence that false memories can indeed be implanted. However, there is considerable controversy surrounding the methodology, science, and ethics regarding Loftus's study.[13] The "study" was originally conceived in 1991 when Loftus attended a party and asked a friend to collaborate with her in a brief experiment to see if a false memory of having been lost in a mall could be created. The friend agreed and together Loftus and the friend recounted the lost in the mall scenario to the friend's eight-year old daughter. With the addition of details describing the emotional distress of the parent and child, the child agreed that she had indeed been lost and afraid. Loftus subsequently referred to this event as "pilot study one." A second pilot study was subsequently conducted by two of Loftus's graduate students as an extra credit assignment who recruited family members and friends to repeat Loftus's strategy to create a false memory of having been lost as a younger child. Reportedly, the four children in this effort agreed that they recalled having been lost. In the final study, 24 adults were recruited along with a family member who provided details of true childhood events along with one false event. Seven of the 24 subjects agreed that the false event had happened. The study has been successively used to demonstrate the ease of implanting false memories of abuse. The study's critics point to several ethical concerns. Firstly, Loftus did not obtain the approval of her university's Human Subjects Committee until 1992, after the "pilot studies." However, she included the results of these studies in her conclusions. Secondly, the recruitment of family and friends by Loftus and her students may be a boundary violation according to the principles of professional conduct established by the American Psychological Association. Thirdly, in a second interview, one participant indicated she no longer agreed that she had experienced being lost. Nevertheless, Loftus did not correct the statistics and continued to assert that 25% of participants remembered untrue events. The details and conclusions of the study have been consistently misrepresented over time. Finally, a scenario of being lost in a mall at age five is not the equivalent of having suffered a significant trauma, thus the conclusion that memories of past abuse are frequently confabulated has no basis in fact (Crook & Dean, 1999a, 1999b).

The FMSF is a tax-exempt organization that placed its income for the fiscal year 1992 at $365,485 ("FMS Finances," 1993). Researcher Stephanie Dallam discovered marked inconsistencies in the data published by the FMSF regarding the size of its membership and the manner in which data is collected and interpreted, something that can be especially problematic for tax-exempt organizations.[14]

The FMSF presents the argument that unscrupulous therapists implant false memories as a means of producing symptoms that require long-term psychotherapy. In fact, the precursors of abuse recollections such as flashbacks and other psychiatric symptoms frequently antedate therapy and are often the reason that such individuals seek therapy in the first place. Furthermore, a disproportionate number of adults who make allegations of childhood abuse often have histories of chronically disabling psychological disorders. Given their marginal levels of coping, many of them are unemployable and without any insurance benefits. Many, if they are lucky, are receiving disability benefits. Any therapist who works with this patient population is likely doing a considerable amount of work at a discounted fee or even pro bono. Conversely, psychiatrist George Ganaway, a member of the FMSF advisory board, has been contracted by insurance companies to scrutinize claims for psychotherapy related to allegations or memories of childhood abuse.[15]

If there is indeed a question of "false memories," how can we be sure that the false ones are not those of the accused perpetrators rather than those of the stated victims?[16] The appearance of normalcy is not an assurance that criminal behavior cannot be present. Certainly there is a history of criminals, including Ted Bundy, John Wayne Gacy, and John Hinkley, who led many to perceive them as normal, with no outward signs of their chaotic mental functioning and the secrets of their heinous criminal acts.

To date, there have been successful civil and criminal prosecutions against individuals who perpetrated criminal acts that were undetected at the time they occurred and were only brought to public awareness days, weeks, months, or years later, when the victims or witnesses were capable of providing testimony. Doubtless, there have been some occurrences of false criminal accusations. However, it is critical that all allegations of wrongdoing be given a fair hearing. Victims deserve to have the crimes against them be considered and fully investigated. A false accusation of child sexual or ritual abuse can result in some significant discomfort to the accused, perhaps even imprisonment. An incorrect accusation of "false memory" can cost the credibility, safety, and even the lives of the victims. This of course is not merely a recent problem exploited by the FMSF, but as anyone familiar with the literature of child abuse knows, there is a long history of public denial and resistance to the idea that children are being harmed, especially when it is alleged that abuse is ongoing in their own families.

Masson's (1992) book *The Assault on Truth* cites examples of brutality toward children during Freud's time, wherein children were given little or no protection by the legal or medical professions. Sander J. Breiner (1990) and Lloyd de Mause (2006) have written well-researched histories of child abuse practices throughout a variety of cultures illustrating the widespread pervasiveness of the problem. There are at least two major obstacles in the way of addressing the problems of child abuse in our culture. First, there is a lack of understanding regarding the various factors that increase the likely occurrence of child abuse. Many people simply don't understand it, and others don't particularly want to. This leads us to a second factor—denial. Through denial, the victim is able to temporarily survive the assault, the perpetrator is able to discard his or her feelings of guilt and shame, and the rest of us don't need to get involved because it "didn't happen." Unfortunately, denial only works for so long before thoughts, sensations, memories, and feelings that were previously safely locked away return to the survivor's conscious awareness, frequently in the form of nightmares and flashbacks.

Alice Miller (1990) wrote about the denial of child abuse in a more institutionalized form—within the profession and practice of psychoanalysis. In her book *Thou Shalt Not Be Aware: Society's Betrayal of the Child*, she spoke as a trained psychoanalyst disillusioned with her profession's disregard for the legitimate concerns of child abuse. In direct contrast to the mistaken notion promoted by the FMSF that therapists are obsessed with finding evidence of child abuse in their patients, she correctly noted the tendency of psychoanalysts to go to the other extreme, ignoring such reports and reinforcing denial in their patients:

> Sometimes I have to ask myself how many children's corpses psychoanalysts require as proof before they will stop ignoring their patient's childhood suffering or trying to talk them out of it. . . . It is unlikely that analysts will be able to alter the incidence of child abuse, but as long as they go on espousing theories that can be used to deny and cover up flagrant mistreatment, they will prevent their patients as well as the general public from becoming conscious of the truth. They will be lending support to the collective repression of a phenomenon whose consequences directly affect each one of us. (Miller, 1990, p. 212)

But does child abuse really occur that frequently? In a national survey focusing on a variety of questions addressed to modern Americans, James Patterson and Peter Kim (1992) found that one in seven of their respondents acknowledged a history of sexual abuse in childhood. However, the investigators also found that these individuals were also secretive about their abuse histories. Almost half stated that prior to the survey, they had never told anyone about their abuse. Given this level of reluctance to talk about sexual abuse, one has to wonder if these researchers may have also missed detecting some actual survivors of sexual abuse. Even if their data do not underreport the frequency of childhood sexual abuse, their data point to the enormity of this problem in our culture. More recent studies support Patterson and Kim's findings. According to the National Center for Victims of Crime, research by David Finkelhor of the Crimes against Children Research Center has shown that:

- One in five girls and 1 in 20 boys is a victim of child sexual abuse;
- Self-report studies show that 20% of adult females and 5–10% of adult males recall a childhood sexual assault or sexual abuse incident;
- During a one-year period in the United States, 16% of youth aged 14–17 had been sexually victimized;
- Over the course of their lifetime, 28% of U.S. youth aged 14–17 had been sexually victimized; and
- Children are most vulnerable to childhood sexual assault between the ages of 7 and 13.[17]

History demonstrates that heinous acts can and do occur. There is no shame in our ability to recognize that human beings are capable of committing atrocities. It is, however, shameful when we ignore the outcries of the victims, many of whom not only describe past abuses, but also present threats and dangers. We cannot know how many of the outcries are accurate unless we properly and individually investigate them.

CHAPTER 15

The Politics of Psychotherapy

By 1990, my practice had increasingly attracted individuals with multiple personality disorder (MPD)/dissociative identity disorder (DID) and people who were, by their own accounts, survivors of ritual abuse. As this was evolving, I also found myself with an increasing caseload of marginally functioning patients with little or no funding for their psychological treatment. As previously explained, this client population included a large number of individuals who were unemployed or underemployed because of the severity of their psychiatric symptoms.

As a consequence of their periodic risk of self-harm and occasional danger of harm to others, these patients often required close supervision and sometimes hospitalization. In Dallas, Texas, in the early 1990s, there were no fewer than eight dedicated, free-standing psychiatric hospitals, both privately owned and franchises of health care conglomerates, including Psychiatric Institute of America (PIA) that was owned by National Medical Enterprises, Inc., Health Corporation of America (HCA), Tenet Healthcare Corporation, and Charter Behavioral Healthcare Systems. Additionally, every medical surgical hospital had a psychiatric unit or track to accommodate long-term psychiatric patients. Several of these facilities developed a specialized unit or track specifically to treat individuals with dissociative disorders.

Patients could often be hospitalized for several months at a time, depending on their financial circumstances or health insurance benefits. Competing for the dollars generated by long-term hospital stays, private hospitals boasted gourmet meals, swimming pools, and resort-style amenities. Patients insured by Medicare were eligible for hospitalization at these free-standing psychiatric hospitals as well. However, because of

Medicare's rules, Medicare patients were only entitled to 180 lifetime psychiatric hospitalization days in free-standing psychiatric facilities. When they reached their maximum number of hospital days, they were only able to obtain admission to psychiatric units associated with medical-surgical hospitals based on a Medicare formula.

Health insurers retaliated against the costs generated under these and other circumstances, and managed care was the result. Managed care has been used by insurers to provide an additional level of scrutiny and control over health care–related expenses. "Gatekeepers" are instituted to approve hospitalizations, treatment, providers, and length of stay. Unfortunately, these gatekeepers are generally unfamiliar with the level of incapacity and risk for self-harm among these patients. Their priority is to protect the profits of the insurance companies and not to seek the best solutions for the patients' needs. Admissions were often arbitrarily denied. On more than one occasion, my office was advised that a patient with a severe risk for suicide was not eligible for hospital admission until there was an actual suicide attempt.

Psychiatric hospitalization was frequently justified by a low global assessment of functioning (GAF)[1] score. Intake interviews, generally conducted by hospital employees who were not always licensed mental health care professionals, would routinely estimate a GAF of 25–35[2] for new admissions. Their job was essentially to fill hospital beds and they learned that a low GAF was generally key to the process. Often the patient would benefit from hospitalization and all that it provided, including a safe environment, intensive individual and group therapy, structure, and attention to medical problems. However, regardless of the progress made, their GAFs would miraculously rise at about the same time their insurance benefits were exhausted. Thus, patients were often discharged without the capacity to engage in appropriate aftercare, and so they looked to county and state facilities for further treatment. Unfortunately, help through the public sector was inconsistent and unreliable. The county and state facilities were unprepared to cope with, and effectively treat, these individuals, and commitment typically resulted in sedating and temporarily warehousing them, not in treating their disabling symptoms.

Although some of my patients periodically required the protective environment of a hospital setting, they didn't often have the financial or emotional resources to be hospitalized. Inpatient psychiatric treatment was expensive and could deplete even generous insurance policies in a short time. Additionally, hospitalization was stressful and often frightening. Not only did it disrupt the individual’s day-to-day routine, the hospital politics often interfered with the patient care by introducing conflicts in philosophies within the treatment team as well. It was not uncommon for patients to report that other members of the treatment team expressed disbelief in their diagnosis of MPD/DID and history of ritual abuse, and patients were sometimes told that their recollections were fantasies. Ritual abuse survivors often reported that their perpetrators said similar things to them when they were children (e.g., “you just had a bad dream”) in order to prevent them from describing their abuse to others. Psychiatrists unfamiliar with the psychopharmacology of DID sometimes prescribed medications or other procedures that were contraindicated and counterproductive. Furthermore, some hospital staff punished patients for involuntary dissociation or for identifying themselves as alter personalities or not responding to the name of the host personality.

Unfortunately, there were often no alternatives to hospitalization when these patients posed a risk of harm to themselves or others. Some of the hospitals provided day treatment or partial hospitalization, but such programs typically had no effective measures in place to insure the patients’ safety. The hospitals’ argument was that if a patient could not ensure his or her own safety outside the partial program, then he or she should be in an inpatient facility. Additionally, the expense of partial hospitalization, physician fees, psychotherapy, and other related charges were still outside the reach of many of these patients. Many insurance policies and managed health care programs not only imposed limitations on the dollars spent on psychiatric services, including hospitalization; they often limited the length of treatment.[3]

In response to this dilemma, we developed a day treatment program within my office, and as far as I know, it was the first such nonhospital-affiliated day treatment program specifically for dissociative clients in the United States. In order to participate in this program, clients were required to have a safe living situation established. This was possible for some who had existing relationships with spouses or other persons who were familiar with their capacity for self-harm and who were, as far as we were able to ascertain, psychiatrically symptom free or no danger to the patient. For patients who did not have any such relationship already established, we encouraged a roommate or “buddy” system, whereby compatible individuals shared the expenses and responsibilities for their food and shelter while providing one another with appropriate emotional support, nurturance, and occasional monitoring for their safety. This situation worked out well for several of the patients, providing them with reduced living expenses, often in a safer environment than they previously had, and with the benefit of another person available to support and assist in insuring their safety from periodic real or perceived external threats. By having patients reside with other “safe” individuals when they were not in the day treatment program, it was possible to reduce or even avoid hospitalization for many of these patients when they otherwise felt self-destructive.

Patients enrolled in the day treatment program were also required to be under the care of a psychiatrist, and they were required to attend various groups, including a life skills group in order to achieve optimal functioning and autonomy. Another requirement was that they had to participate in regular individual therapy in my practice. My practice adopted a form of team treatment. Each client’s team included the primary individual therapist, the therapists the client saw in groups, and the client herself. Also invited to be part of the team were the client’s psychiatrist and primary care physician, although they seldom participated. This treatment strategy eliminated conflicting information and therapeutic techniques that might be at cross purposes. It also improved clients’ safety and sharply reduced incidents of splitting or episodes of noncompliance. The clients were a part of the team, and they recognized that the treatment team was united in its goal to improve their functioning.

My staff assisted patients in utilizing the state rehabilitation commission and other city, county, state, and federal agencies and programs designed to facilitate their integration into society, job training and placement, and access to appropriate social services. At the same time, it was possible to minimize the expense of treatment by eliminating many of the standard costs of hospital-affiliated programs such as nursing staff and daily fees for the attending psychiatrist.[4] This program operated successfully until 2000.

Despite the fact that there were several psychiatric hospitals and psychiatric programs locally available, it became increasingly difficult to find appropriate placement for these clients. Many of them had inadequate insurance benefits to support long-term hospitalization that, in freestanding psychiatric hospitals, could cost well over a thousand dollars a day, exclusive of the fees of the attending physician, individual therapist, medications, and other special needs. Some hospitals were not interested in treating those patients who were violent or uncooperative. Some of the hospitals were ill-equipped to deal with those who were at substantial risk for self-harm or who frequently attempted to elope from the hospital before appropriate discharge. Few hospital staff and fewer psychiatrists had either experience or a willingness to develop the necessary skills to prepare themselves for the treatment of these difficult patients.

In spite of the fact that this was not a particularly profitable patient population, there were, at one time, several different hospital programs in the Dallas area that specialized in dissociative disorders. I was most familiar with three of these. Gary Lefkof founded the first such program at the Cedars Hospital in De Soto, Texas. In 1992 Dr. Lefkof moved his program to Brookhaven Psychiatric Pavilion, a facility more conveniently located in the heart of North Dallas. However, when the scandal[5] involving the PIA and its parent company, National Medical Enterprises, erupted, Brookhaven, a franchise of that company, failed and folded. Dr. Lefkof was invited to move his program to Brookhaven after the events that resulted in civil and criminal charges against the facility but before they had become public knowledge. Dr. Lefkof, his program, and the patients he served became collateral damage to the fallout from Brookhaven's legal troubles.

The second and third programs were established almost simultaneously at Charter Behavioral Health of Dallas and Bedford Meadows Hospital near Fort Worth. For the dedication of the Bedford Meadows program, Bennett Braun and Trudy Chase, author of *When Rabbit Howls*, were featured speakers. The program at Bedford Meadows was originally developed by Jerry Mungadze, a counselor who developed a program with a Christian orientation for the treatment of DID. When Bedford Meadows also fell victim to the PIA fallout, Dr. Mungadze moved his program to the Cedars Hospital.

I was most intimately familiar with the program offered by Charter Hospital of Dallas, having created the original in-service training and groups for patients with dissociative disorders. The nursing staff seemed not only willing to work with these patient's special needs, they appeared enthusiastic as well. I was often responsible for as many as six or seven inpatient admissions at any given time. None of the physicians on staff had much previous experience treating dissociative patients, and many of the psychiatrists were not interested in dealing with them.

In 1991 Charter invited me to chair a national symposium on MPD to coincide with the opening of their unit for the treatment of patients with DID. I recommended Colin Ross and Chris Sizemore, “Eve” of *The Three Faces of Eve*, to speak at the symposium. It has always been my belief that if the therapeutic community is to be successful in working with these patients, we must set aside our competitiveness and egos in order to share our knowledge and experience. It was in this spirit that I suggested to the Charter administration that clinicians representing other facilities and programs be invited to present, but they didn’t accept that recommendation. However, the conference appeared to be successful, establishing Charter as a viable facility for the treatment of dissociative disorders and providing for Colin Ross’s recruitment to the staff of Charter.

During this period, several area psychiatric facilities were aggressively marketing their services to me. Some of the hospitals gave me an opportunity to provide group therapy and other lucrative services such as psychological testing and staffing within their psychiatric units. At the time, I believed I was recruited to deliver these services because of my experience caring for patients who were typically problematic to the hospital staff and who created conflict on the unit. However, I eventually realized that my participation was often solicited for purely business reasons—because I specialized in treating high-risk patients who, despite my best efforts, had no alternative to hospitalization when they developed acute suicide or homicide risk.

This fact was brought home to me when on at least one occasion the groups I provided to a particular hospital were discontinued because I was unwilling to refer my patients exclusively to that particular facility. When there are choices between types of units and programs, referring exclusively to any one hospital in exchange for any consideration or benefit to the clinician is unethical. Referrals should always be made with the only consideration being the patient’s welfare and best interest (Pope & Vasquez, 2011). This questionable policy along with paying stipends and providing other benefits to psychiatrists and therapists in exchange for what was essentially referral brokering continued to be the modus operandi of many of the psychiatric hospitals. These facilities also engaged in other inappropriate and illegal practices, including paying “bounties” to referral sources, including juvenile court personnel, schoolteachers, counselors and private referral agencies. Hospitals frequently encouraged patients to apply to various state-funded victims' assistance programs in order to subsidize lengthy hospital stays. Patients were often hospitalized for unnecessarily long periods of time, and frequently they were subjected to inappropriate and excessive treatment modalities such as involuntary restraints. Patients were often hospitalized until their funds were exhausted, at which time they were discharged without the capacity to obtain appropriate continuing care. Ultimately, almost all of the private corporation–affiliated psychiatric hospitals in Texas closed following investigations by the state and federal governments that resulted in significant fines to the parent corporations for these and other serious infractions. The hospitals and the doctors affiliated with them were also subjected to numerous civil suits by former patients.

In the meantime, many of these patients were experiencing a struggle for survival. Public programs, at least in Texas, were poorly equipped to deal with the magnitude of their problems, lacking both the funding and training to adequately deal with their needs. Public services were so overwhelmed in Texas that there were frequent announcements of freezes on public mental health services.[6] It was not an uncommon event when patients who were so disturbed that police were called to subdue and transport them to a public inpatient facility were discharged within hours. Clinicians who were willing to treat them often encountered serious financial burdens as a consequence of their patients' inability to pay for necessary services. I personally knew psychiatrists and other mental health care professionals who were forced into bankruptcy by the combination of hospital failures and poor funding for needed mental health services. As a result of these inadequate circumstances, an atmosphere of mistrust and divisiveness emerged that precluded effective communication and collegiality within the professional community. At a time when we should have been working together to solve the enormous problems confronting us, many of us were isolated and divided in our resolve.[7]

The ordinary concerns of the mental health professionals were compounded for those treating the effects of cult and ritual abuse. A sense of paranoia was sometimes displaced toward those providing treatment to these survivors. Rumors ran rampant, and the standing joke was that if you hadn't been accused of being involved in a cult yourself, you probably weren't an effective therapist.

I was once distressed to hear such a rumor about myself. According to the story, I was alleged to be the high priest of a satanic coven. I addressed this issue in a daily group therapy session with my clients because it was always my policy to openly confront all relevant rumors and controversies. Attempting to add a touch a levity to what was actually an embarrassing and professionally damaging situation, I announced to the group: “You know, I’m really sort of offended that with all that I know about programming, I’m accused of being *only* a high priest.”[8] A client alleged to have been highly ranked within her cult put me in my place with, “You don’t know *enough* to be a high priest,” and the group erupted in laughter.

I was particularly disappointed to learn that this rumor had originated with a well-known mental health professional practicing in an area psychiatric hospital. When dealing with a patient population that engenders considerable controversy, the support of one’s peers is particularly important. Collegiality became an increasingly scarce commodity, and I heard many mental health providers say that they felt both personally and professionally isolated.

In communicating my concerns with other therapists working with these patients, I found that many of them encountered a pattern of increasing hostility. We concluded that the organizations in place to provide support, continuing education, and collegiality among mental health professionals were insufficient. As I conversed with individuals representing different professional disciplines working with people alleging ritual abuse, I heard many report a sense of abandonment by colleagues and their professions. Police officers recounted experiences of both subtle and overt ridicule by peers and supervisors. District attorneys pursuing prosecutions against perpetrators of ritual abuse and attorneys involved in the civil and criminal legal cases involving ritual abuse were confused as to how to convey factual information to judges and juries.

This dilemma led to the establishment of the Society for the Investigation, Treatment and Prevention of Ritual and Cult Abuse, an organization to promote communication, cooperation, and collegiality among professionals, survivors, and the lay public regarding the issue of cult and ritual abuse. We cofounded the group with other affiliated professionals in March 1993 to serve as a multidisciplinary association to address the concerns of clinicians, attorneys, law enforcement agents, social welfare caseworkers, clergy, media representatives, educators, survivors, and the public. Its goals were to facilitate the collection and distribution of data relevant to the diagnosis and treatment of ritual abuse; to establish investigatory, diagnostic, and treatment protocols; to provide continuing education; to foster communication among various organizations confronting problems related to cult and ritual abuse; and to provide support to survivors and their advocates. Its mission was to study the issue of ritual abuse from a scientific perspective in order to reduce the hysteria, paranoia, and sensationalism frequently associated with this subject. This organization grew steadily with members residing in many parts of the United States and abroad. Our first annual conference, Cult and Ritual Abuse, Mind Control, and Dissociation: A Multidisciplinary Dialogue, was presented to an audience of over 300 professionals, survivors, and members of the general public in March 1995 in Richardson, Texas. The speakers included many celebrities in the field, including Catherine Gould, Chrystine Oksana, Linda Blood, Gail Carr Feldman, Alan Scheflin, Walter Bowart, James Freisen, and others.

The Society for the Investigation, Treatment and Prevention of Ritual and Cult Abuse eventually morphed into a new organization, the International Council on Cult and Ritual Trauma, which continued until 2006. By that time, the Internet had become an increasingly important tool for connecting professionals, survivors, and advocates from around North America, Europe, and elsewhere and we were able to transfer our energies to other collaborative efforts on behalf of ritual abuse victims and survivors.

CHAPTER 16

The Media

The mass media have had an important role in the unfolding story of ritual abuse. Unfortunately, the media have tended to focus on the sensational, or they have portrayed ritual abuse claims as absurd or even ridiculous. Such ventures have failed to provide what is needed—a fair and impartial, but serious, investigation of this subject. Nevertheless, my first experience with the national media exceeded my expectations for evenhandedness. At that time, in the early 1990s, I was invited to be a guest on Geraldo Rivera's talk show for a program depicting the complications of family life when one of the parents is diagnosed with dissociative identity disorder (DID). It occurred to me that if these clients were merely faking, then their dissimulation would probably be recognized by a family member who interacted with them and observed them daily. It was interesting to note that of the families present on the program, all believed and supported the family member diagnosed with DID. This particular program portrayed patients as believed, loved, and respected by their spouses and children in spite of the significant disruption of the family that periodically results from the disorder.

From time to time, we have seen television, newspaper, and magazine accounts of dissociation and ritual abuse. In some cases, we ourselves have been interviewed to provide background for them. Thus, we have had the opportunity to witness, sometimes as participant-observers, the inner workings of the media. What we saw was often disturbing, particularly when we found the journalist to be deliberately suppressing and distorting information in order to support a sensational story that appeared to have been concocted prior to completing the research.

This appears to have been the strategy for a cover story by Gary Cartwright in the regional magazine *Texas Monthly*. The article, allegedly an examination of the Fran's Day Care case, concluded that the case against the Kellers was the result of hysterical reactions by the community and the mental health professions. In late February 1994, I was contacted by a man who identified himself as David Mormon, a fact checker calling on behalf of Cartwright. He interviewed me over the telephone for more than an hour. He read those portions of the article that referred to me for comment and correction. When the article appeared in print two months later, I was surprised that most of the information I had provided, either in response to his questions or volunteered by me, was not included in the article. Additionally, others who recounted their solicitation for input in the article, including the parents of the young victims, reported that their information was misrepresented or disregarded in the published article. I wrote a letter to the editor of *Texas Monthly* to address my concerns that the case and my role in it had been misrepresented. My letter was not published.

Another example of opinion masquerading as journalism occurred after representatives of ABC's *Prime Time Live* attended one of the training seminars offered through my office on the subject of ritual abuse. We soon learned the meaning of the term, *hatchet job*. The production staff of *Prime Time Live* videotaped many hours for their segment reporting on the ritual abuse controversy. They taped an hour-and-a-half informal group with several patients,[1] my six-hour seminar, and a two-hour interview between correspondent Jay Schadler and myself. Additionally, producer Steve Reiner and Schadler spent several hours with a patient, "Vanessa," who also shared a videotape incorporating separate interview sessions between Vanessa and myself. Editing makes it possible to rearrange the sequencing of recorded events so that a very different meaning of an interviewee's statements is conveyed. Thus, because the segments were cut and rearranged, it gave a false impression that I made suggestions to a hypnotized patient that 13 people, or a coven, may have come to her door, and thus, she may have attended a cult meeting. However, this interpretation of the televised material was patently false. In fact, Vanessa and I were discussing the number of her alternate identities that had a particular function (i.e., the job of going to the door), *not* cultists. *Making Monsters,* by Ofshe and Waters (1994), cited these misquotes of me taken from this *Prime Time Live* program. Ofshe and Waters then used this misinformation to argue that therapists were brainwashing their patients into believing that they were sexually abused in satanic cults. Furthermore, neither Ofshe and Waters nor *Prime Time Live* mentioned the fact that the patient in question was aware of sexual abuse by her father and others before consulting any therapist or that her claims were validated by her sister who had endured similar experiences and corroborated Vanessa's recollections. These memories could not have been implanted by a therapist because the memories existed prior to seeing a mental health professional. Both *Prime Time Live* and *Making Monsters* erroneously implied that this patient considered herself a survivor of satanic ritual abuse. In fact when I saw her, she described ritual abuse but made no statements about satanic ritual abuse.

In addition to a general misrepresentation of professionals who treat survivors, the ABC newsmagazine contained a number of more specific fallacies. One example was the assertion that a seven-year Federal Bureau of Investigation (FBI) study revealed no evidence of organized cult or ritual activity in the United States. In reality, there is no such study. Following the ABC program, my office contacted the FBI and requested a copy of the alleged study. The bureau responded in writing, indicating that no such study existed (see Appendix B). Rather, the document featured on the program and to which the correspondent referred is the *Investigator's Guide to Allegations of "Ritual" Child Abuse* and contains no data or research methodology whatsoever. This monograph by Special Agent Ken Lanning (1992) is merely a guide for those who may investigate this phenomenon, as the title indicates, and not a study. The author is a well-known critic of cult and ritual abuse allegations who has consulted on a number of cases but to our knowledge has not personally investigated the majority of these cases, some of which have produced convictions.[2] Agent Lanning retired from the FBI in 2000 and is last known to have been a consultant in the area of crimes against children for Academy Group, Inc., a forensic behavioral science company. As recently as July 24, 2010, in an interview conducted for the CBS television news magazine program *48 Hours*, Lanning referred to allegations of ritual abuse of children as the product of mass hysteria that he implied promoted significant opportunism by those who purported that ritual abuse does exist.

During my conversations with the *Prime Time Live* staff, Reiner and Schadler, I referenced several criminal and civil cases in which allegations of cult and ritual abuse were prominent, including instances in which convictions had been obtained. I went into specific detail regarding the case of Fran’s Day Care because of my involvement as an expert witness. My office informed Reiner of the outcome of the Fran’s Day Care case, convictions and 48-year sentences for both Fran and Dan Keller, prior to the airing of the segment on *Prime Time Live*. However, the producer of the program chose to omit this information and to misrepresent or misinterpret Lanning’s monograph as an FBI study.

Prime Time Live also demonstrated faulty logic and a biased perspective in their depiction of the case of Gloria Grady. Grady, a Dallas-area resident, had sought professional counseling because of a severe eating disorder. During the course of her therapy with two local therapists, Grady began to reveal a history of ritual abuse perpetrated against her by her father, a Baptist minister. Grady and her plight was the subject of two articles that appeared in *D Magazine.* The perspective of both articles was that Grady and her parents were the victims of unethical therapists who deliberately and maliciously implanted Gloria Grady with false memories of abuse. However, Gloria Grady continued to stand by her story and maintain that she was a victim of abuse at the hands of her parents from whom, to our knowledge, she has been estranged since recalling that abuse. Three other patients who were in therapy at the same time and with the same therapists as Grady and who also reported having recollections of ritual abuse perpetrated by their parents recanted their stories and subsequently sued their therapists. The therapists’ malpractice carrier settled one of the complaints out of court over the objections of the therapists. However, their malpractice insurance carriers believed a settlement to be less costly than a trial and ordered their legal team to resolve the matter before it went to trial. A condition of settlement was that the patient not discuss the case, not reveal the therapists’ names or the locations where they practiced. Most of these conditions appear to have been violated over time. The second case went to trial, and although the jury awarded a verdict in the patient’s favor, the judge attributed 60% of the responsibility to the therapist and 40% responsibility to the patient.[3] Both of these women have subsequently appeared on several talk shows, usually accompanied by attorneys or mental health professionals representing the False Memory Syndrome Foundation’s (FMSF’s) point of view. One of the women was already promoting her soon-to-be published book. The third case was still pending at the time we published the second edition of this book, and we have not been able to obtain updated information on its status. Although one of the therapists involved was absolved of any wrongdoing by his licensing board, his malpractice carrier canceled his coverage, which limited his ability to practice. The disruption to his practice caused by the notoriety of the cases as well as the loss of his liability insurance resulted in lost hospital privileges. Eventually, he was forced into bankruptcy and left the field.

In the course of the *Prime Time Live* segment, Schadler appeared to be implying that Grady sued her parents and that her parents prevailed. The only court action involving Grady and her parents of which we are aware is Grady's request that her parents be restrained from attempting to communicate with her. The judge apparently denied her request because Grady could not demonstrate to the court's satisfaction that her parents' pursuit of her constituted harassment.

A curiosity about the ABC program was a peculiar comment made by Schadler in reference to Reverend and Mrs. Grady. Schadler asserted that neither Reverend nor Mrs. Grady could be guilty of their daughter's allegations because "she is a Sunday school teacher," and he is "a minister." This comment was particularly inappropriate because, in fact, Schadler had no direct knowledge of Reverend or Mrs. Grady's guilt or innocence. Yet, Schadler made this observation while litigation related to this matter was ongoing and could have been affected by his unwarranted pronouncement. This statement also showed considerable naiveté on Schadler's part if he believes that innocent people may correctly be identified by their appearance or professions. In recent years, there have been numerous documented cases of sexual abuse by clergy.[4] In her research on survivors of ritual abuse, Margaret Smith (1993) reported that clergymen are frequently identified as perpetrators of ritual abuse. Many of those who responded to the Extreme Abuse Survey (Becker et al., 2013; Rutz et al., 2008) reported abuse by Catholic priests and nuns, Protestant ministers, rabbis, and other religious leaders. Guilty people do not typically wear scarlet letters or other external or overt signs of their guilt. A clergyperson is no less likely to be a perpetrator than a plumber, or policeman, or lawyer, or mental health care professional.

Although *Prime Time Live* did not televise the material we provided regarding the outcomes of several cases, another television program did document some legal findings relevant to allegations of ritual abuse. The

American Justice series, which aired on the Arts and Entertainment (A&E) channel, produced a program, *Satan, Rituals and Abuse*, documenting the Fran’s Day Care and the Country Day Walk cases, both of which were resolved by successful prosecutions. Additionally, and perhaps more significantly, both cases featured confessions by one of the defendants.

Why is the media sometimes invested in distorting facts in order to present one particular point of view? We continue to be puzzled by ABC’s decision to slant the perspective of the segment on ritual abuse. Why was it important to represent individuals who could have been perpetrators as victims?[5] For whatever reason, ABC has not been alone in its prejudicial stance regarding ritual abuse.

The *Jane Whitney Show* contacted my office asking if any of my patients would be willing to appear on her nationally syndicated talk show. The producer specifically asked for patients who were originally from the East Coast, perhaps hoping that a free round trip would entice them to accept her invitation. None of my patients expressed any interest in appearing, and when the program aired, I was relieved that none of my patients participated. Two patients and a therapist were pitted against individuals representing the FMSF. The results appeared to be exploitative and abusive for the unfortunate patient participants.

Maury Povich invited children who had made allegations of ritual abuse while enrolled at the McMartin Preschool in Manhattan Beach, California, to appear on his program along with their parents. One of the points made in the program was that excavations had been conducted that had revealed the presence of the underground tunnels the children had reported to authorities as the site of some of their abuse. Povich also invited Paul and Shirley Eberle, authors of *The Abuse of Innocence* (1993), to appear on the same program. The Eberles’ book argued that the children were not ritually abused at the McMartin School, but that they had been victimized by their therapists and “the system,” which the Eberles accused of encouraging children to make false allegations. Two of the mothers of the abused children present for the program, Marymae Cioffi and Jackie MacGauley, became particularly frustrated when Povich refused to allow them to present information regarding the Eberles’ history and dubious qualifications to address child abuse. The Eberles were publishers of sexually explicit periodicals, including *Finger*, a Los Angeles tabloid containing pornographic photographs, drawings, and stories about sexual exploits with children. When Povich refused to allow this material to be presented, Cioffi and MacGauley left the stage and distributed examples of the Eberles' work to the studio audience.[6]

The McMartin case was also the subject of the cable movie *Indictment*, produced for Home Box Office (HBO). Several children's advocacy groups expressed concern that the film's focus appeared to be slanted in favor of the accused perpetrators. The newsletter for the organization Believe the Children contained an impassioned plea to its readers to cancel their subscriptions to HBO in protest of this film's airing. An article featured in the newsletter "Sex Abuse, Lies and Videotape" (1995) described the genesis of the program and voiced its concerns that the true victims of the McMartin case, the children, might be harmed by the perspective of the film's author, Abby Mann. According to the article, Mann and his wife, Myra, became advocates of the operators and staff of the McMartin preschool during the course of their trial. Because of the Manns' involvement in the case and their relationship to the accused perpetrators, the article expressed concern that the film might reflect an unbalanced portrait of accused and accusers such that roles might be reversed in the eyes of the viewing public. This was proven to be a correct assumption. Reviews of the cable movie featured in magazines such as *Time* (Bellafante, 1995) and *TV Guide* (McDougal, 1995) on the film's depiction of an overzealous prosecuting attorney, a mentally unbalanced parent of a child victim, and a punitive therapist all lend themselves to the perpetuation of the idea that the true victims are the alleged perpetrators. Ironically, this film also cast the media in an unfavorable light, implying that the media's over-the-top reporting of the event led to a veritable witch hunt.

Television has not been the only medium providing a slanted, biased, or otherwise incomplete or inaccurate depiction of material relevant to this social problem. Several regional and national magazines published articles that, with few exceptions, portrayed ritual abuse as a fantasy and a fraud (the exceptions being articles appearing in *Vanity Fair*[7] and *MS Magazine*[8]). The first publication provided a discussion with both sides of the controversy represented. The second accurately represented the experience of a ritual abuse survivor. On the other hand, the lurid articles that appeared in *Mirabella*[9] and in two consecutive issues of *The New Yorker*[10] served to further depict an extreme and sensational point of view. In *The New Yorker* article in particular, the author failed to accurately represent the claims of survivors, and he omitted the substantiating evidence for their reports. This was particularly disheartening to us because we had spoken at some length to the author, Larry Wright, while he was researching ritual abuse for his article. We later learned that other individuals well acquainted with ritual abuse issues had also provided factual information intended to produce an article that fairly represented the issues. Instead, Wright elected to focus on a particular case where he argued that the evaluation of an alleged perpetrator[11] might have been corrupted by poor interviewing techniques. Wright portrayed this scenario as typical of cases involving ritual abuse claims and omitted factual information that was inconsistent with this theme. In 1994 Wright's articles were expanded to book length and published as *Remembering Satan* (1994).

While there was some isolated reporting on a large-scale investigation of child abuse and the as-yet unsolved disappearance of a teen in Gilmer, Texas, for the most part the national media ignored the story. This case had all the elements the media has generally found to be red meat for its readers and viewers, and involved allegations of widespread child abuse, ritual abuse, police and governmental corruption, kidnapping, murder, and cannibalism in a small East Texas community. In 1992, 15 children in Gilmer, Texas, were removed from their extended families of origin and placed in protective, therapeutic foster care after investigations by child protective services (CPS) revealed their sadistic sexual abuse and victimization by parents, grandparents, aunts, uncles, and others. A special prosecutor was appointed to bring the alleged perpetrators to justice. Scott Lyford, a Galveston attorney, and his investigative team were able to accumulate sufficient evidence to gain indictments and convictions against the eight defendants.

As the children became increasingly secure in their foster care environment and in their therapeutic relationship with mental health professionals, they began to reveal details of their victimization that included elements of ritualistic abuse such as being forced to ingest blood, urine, and feces, and being forced to participate in deviant sex practices and other behaviors indicative of ritual activities. One of the abused children disclosed details regarding the disappearance of an area teenager, Kelly Wilson. This child implicated his sexual abuse perpetrators and an area police officer in the abduction, rape, torture, and murder of Wilson, a 17-year-old Gilmer resident who disappeared on January 5, 1992.

When confronted with the child's testimony, two of the accused adults confessed to the offenses, and one of the adults directed the investigative team to a property owned by the paternal grandparents of some of the children where the adult alleged some ritual activities had taken place, including the murder of Wilson. The two adults subsequently recanted their confessions and later confessed again. One of the adults plea-bargained to a lesser offense for which she was convicted but not sentenced. Both adults submitted to polygraph evaluations with the results supporting their confessions.

After the disclosures of ritual abuse, the allegations regarding the murder of Wilson, and the implications by some of the victims and some of the perpetrators that others, including a Gilmer police officer were involved in the crimes, the Texas Attorney General's Office replaced the special prosecutor and his investigative team. Assistant Attorney General Shane Phelps reportedly directed the grand jury to "no bill" the defendants. However, the grand jury apparently ignored this direction and instead dismissed the indictment without prejudice, allowing the state to reconsider the case at a future date.

The special prosecutor, his investigative team, and the CPS caseworkers continued to advocate on behalf of the 15 children. They alleged that the Attorney General's Office lost evidence, misinterpreted their investigation, failed to proceed with its own investigation, interfered with the children's psychotherapy, and removed the children from their therapeutic foster care without concern for their well-being. These individuals further alleged that the State of Texas, via the Attorney General's Office, retraumatized the children by forcibly removing them from their foster mother and by engaging in punitive and damaging strategies in order to gain the children's cooperation. The state attorney general, Dan Morales, continued to be unresponsive to residents of Gilmer and others who expressed concern for the welfare of the child victims. The request for a thorough public disclosure regarding the circumstances of the children's victimization was also ignored.

The special prosecutor, his investigative team, and the CPS caseworkers were sued by some of the accused child abuse perpetrators for malicious prosecution and other alleged improprieties. The State of Texas denied these individuals the option of state-funded independent legal counsel, despite evidence of a conflict of interest with the Attorney General's Office.

The children’s foster mother’s ability to visit with and nurture these children was reportedly made contingent on her assistance in soliciting the children’s cooperation with their new psychotherapeutic team. There was an implication that her failure to assist might result in the children’s return to their abusive families of origin. According to Bruce Perry,[12] the psychiatrist who headed the children’s treatment team, there were serious errors in judgment on the part of the Attorney General’s Office that resulted in the retraumatization of these severely abused children. Perry was specifically referring to the abrupt and distressing manner in which the children were removed from their therapeutic foster mother’s custody and placed in a facility in Waco, Texas. In a bizarre twist, on November 16, 1994, the Gilmer Police Department confirmed that on Halloween night, October 31, 1994, at least six boxes containing police records and evidence involving the Kelly Wilson case accumulated by the special prosecutor and his investigative team mysteriously disappeared from police headquarters.[13]

Despite the length of time this case was under active investigation and the huge number of victims and accused perpetrators, and the extraordinary nature of the allegations, there was little media coverage of the Gilmer events. The lack of local coverage is easy to explain but difficult to comprehend. The editor of the local newspaper, *The Gilmer Mirror*, was also on the Upshur County grand jury that heard the allegations. During her tenure on the grand jury, the editor published articles critical of the idea that ritual abuse exists. This appeared to be both a breach of her duty as a grand jury member and a serious conflict of interest. In the meantime, *Dallas Morning News* reporter Victoria Loe wrote articles about the Gilmer case that would be more accurately described as editorials. Several of the principals in the case, including the investigative team, Marie Kerr Gray and Donna Kerr Laney,[14] and members of the Justice for Kelly Wilson Committee, spoke at length and in great detail with Loe regarding specific incidents wherein the case had been contaminated through interference by the Texas Attorney General’s Office, the Gilmer police, and others. Loe never included this information in her articles. Loe was rewarded by being named a best reporter in 1994 by the *Dallas Morning News*. The *Dallas Morning News* did not, to our knowledge, publish anything about the missing Gilmer police files.[15]

In the Gilmer case, the media had complete access to the facts of the case and yet elected to ignore the story out of hand or to portray events in context with their preconceived notions of what constitutes abuse and who can be an abuser. However, the media is often denied access to information about crime that may include ritual abuse elements.

The 1990 murder of Mark Kilroy and others in Matamoros, Mexico, was a horrendous crime that was widely reported in the media. However, details involving the mutilation of the victims and actual testimony by the perpetrators were withheld from the media. The media deemphasized the ritual aspects of the crime and interpreted the murders as being more drug than cult-related. The co-author (PPN) viewed the recorded confessions of some of the accused perpetrators and their exhumation of the murder victim’s bodies videotaped by the Mexican Federales. Clear evidence of the ritual nature of the murders was apparent. Although accomplices to the murder of Kilroy confessed to additional sacrificial murders and indicated willingness to lead police to more burial sites, the Mexican police refused to investigate further and did not report these events to the media.

Frequently, police misrepresent details of particular crimes to the media in order to obscure facts that allude to the crimes having a ritual aspect. During the course of a training session for the Texas Council of Occult Crimes Investigators, police officers representing a variety of agencies discussed cases involving what they believed to be ritual crime. However, upon direction from their supervisors, they concealed the ritual elements when discussing the cases with media. One case, for example, involved a young female murder victim discovered roadside along a major highway in San Antonio, Texas. The media reports were limited to identifying the victim as a prostitute and suggesting her murder was drug-related. However, the autopsy film revealed that the victim had been horribly mutilated. The young woman had several tattoos with bizarre designs, some with cult connotations, adorning her body. Her eyes had been gouged out. She had been stabbed multiple times and her uterus had been torn from her body.

Why the police chose not to disclose the specifics of this case or similar ones is unknown. Some police officers speculated a variety of possibilities, including that police are suppressed by city, state, and county governments who fear a public relations backlash. Others postulated more sinister motivations. Regardless of law enforcement’s unwillingness to disclose information relevant to ritual crimes, the media that advocates an open and informed society could provide the investigative resources to report these events to the public.

What is needed is fair and balanced reporting of events, equal access to the media by proponents of disparate views, and open communication between law enforcement and the media. As of early 2014, it is clear that this goal is as yet unmet. A cursory review of current journalistic presentations of such topics as psychogenic amnesia, sexual abuse, and ritual abuse reveals an overrepresentation of publications and programming that reflect an anti-therapist, anti-victim perspective. As a consequence of sensationalized accounts of the cult and ritual abuse controversy, many survivors feel mischaracterized and misunderstood. Many perceive that the message to keep the silence is being reinforced by repeatedly biased, and sometimes inaccurate or untruthful, renderings of their stories. Frequent media portrayals of mental health professionals as villains, and accused perpetrators as victims leave survivors fearful that no justice will be forthcoming. Perhaps a better educated and more discriminating public will demand more of its media resources in the future.

CHAPTER 17

Will “the System” Protect Them?

In the United States and most other democratic nations, there is a social contract between the citizens and their government. The people are expected to follow the laws and play by society’s rules with the presumption that in times of trouble their government will provide protection, security, support, and safety. These objectives may be accomplished through federal, state, county, and city programs that provide a range of services from law enforcement to child protection to access to health care through Medicare and Medicaid. Among the services most important to the security, safety, recovery and survival of victims of ritual trauma are child protective services (CPS), law enforcement agencies, victims’ assistance programs, Medicare, Medicaid, Social Security Disability Insurance (SSDI), and Supplemental Security Income (SSI) benefits.

When “Jane” first arrived in my office, she had just been discharged from a lengthy hospitalization in a dedicated dissociative disorders unit. She feared that because of her history of uncontrollable, violent acting-out, I would be unwilling to treat her. Indeed, she had been refused treatment by several local and national hospital programs and therapists. She was barely surviving financially and living in poverty. She was, literally and figuratively speaking, at the end of her rope. She was highly dysfunctional with uncontrolled dissociative episodes, suicidality, no social support, and inadequate financial resources.

On one occasion, Jane eloped from the office and made her way to the parking lot of the building. One of my mental health technicians followed Jane and attempted to calm her, but Jane grabbed an empty bottle from the curb and, holding it by the neck, in one deft movement she smashed it against the side of the building and held her weapon against the body of the tech. As the technician continued to try to reason with her, Jane abruptly turned the bottle against herself and cut her own arm. Fortunately for all of us, neither Jane nor staff was seriously injured. When Jane's destructiveness escalated in this manner, the only available option to us was to recommend hospitalization and hope that we could find a hospital that would take her. However, when I referred Jane for hospitalization, things were not much better. Once, she broke a wooden chair against the wall of a room where we were engaged in a therapy session and threatened me with the jagged leg that she wielded like a spear. It became increasingly difficult to find hospital programs willing to accept her. Jane was unresponsive to the prescribed medications, and hospitals were often unwilling to accept the responsibility of restraining her, even when she herself requested restraints.

Jane's ability to obtain appropriate medical and psychological treatment was not only impeded by her sometimes out-of-control behavior; she was also limited because she was destitute and wholly dependent on her small income from SSDI and SSI and health insurance through Medicare and Medicaid. These programs will be discussed in greater detail later.

Eventually in the course of our therapy sessions, Jane revealed that she had been highly placed in several cults[1] that had included satanic, African-derived, Native American, Masonic, and quasi-Masonic rituals. She had reportedly been a "programmer." Through a process of trial and error, I was able to isolate a number of the cult cues, or "triggers" to which her system responded with de-escalation of her violent behaviors. Once Jane was able to exert control over her behaviors such that she was able to minimize her self-destructive acting-out, she began to make significant progress in therapy. At those times when she felt unstable and dangerous, she entered the hospital, although her hospitalizations became increasingly briefer and more infrequent. In fact, she has not required psychiatric hospitalization in several years. Jane was able to reenter the workforce, something she had not been able to do in eight years. She also returned to college where she made excellent grades. Although she is no longer my patient, she maintains contact. She has remained employed by a national company and risen through the ranks to an administrative position. She is in a long-term stable relationship and reports that she is happy.

Prior to my meeting Jane, she moved to Texas secretly and lived anonymously under a pseudonym. She believed that she was at risk for being abducted by her “organization” and that if apprehended by them, she would be forced to return or she would be killed. It was impossible to objectively judge the accuracy of her claims or the extent to which her concerns represented genuine threats to her safety. However, on several occasions, Jane reported having been “accessed” by someone with an interest in hurting her or returning her to the cult.

One day, my office received an emergency call from Jane’s roommate requesting an immediate appointment for Jane. The secretary instructed the roommate to bring Jane in right away so that we could work her into the schedule. Upon arrival, the roommate explained that Jane had come to the roommate’s workplace complaining that her back was hurting. Jane’s roommate took her to the women’s restroom in order to inspect Jane’s back. When she lifted Jane’s shirt, the roommate said that she saw a sheet of paper stapled to the skin of Jane’s back. The roommate then removed the paper and the staples from Jane’s back. Jane was unable to account for the time between dropping her roommate at work and the time she returned to her roommate’s workplace.

As a male psychologist, it would not have been appropriate for me to examine Jane’s back to see whether it indeed been punctured; however, some female members of my staff did so and reported that it appeared as though staples had pierced Jane’s skin. What the staff members described was a fairly orderly, symmetrical placement of puncture wounds consistent in size with staple marks located in the center of Jane’s back between her shoulder blades. Jane was at that time a woman in her mid-30s who did not appear to have the agility to staple a piece of paper to her back in the manner in which it appeared to have been done. The paper that had purportedly been stapled to Jane’s back showed evidence of having been attached by staples to skin because it was bloodstained in a manner consistent with the description by Jane and her roommate. Two words were written in a childish scrawl across the paper, “Doctor Noblitt.”

As I questioned Jane regarding the meaning of the note and her recollection for the events, a child alter presented herself. She explained that Jane had been abducted, assaulted, abused, and threatened. According to the child alter, she had been directed to write a note saying, “Doctor Noblitt: Back Off.” The child alter agreed to write my name on the note but refused to write the message to me as it was dictated by her perpetrators. Eventually, the incomplete note was stapled to her back. I viewed this evidence of assault against Jane as being something concrete that should be further examined.

I was able to convince a local hospital to allow her to be admitted. Jane believed that she continued to be followed and feared for her life. Although I could not ascertain whether she was really under the threat of external perpetrators, I had no doubt that she believed she was, and given the incident of the stapled note, I was prepared to accept her concerns at least for the purpose of a working hypothesis.

Jane made good progress in her therapy. She elected to discharge from full hospitalization at Brookhaven dissociative disorders unit to their partial hospitalization program. Typically, Jane drove her roommate to work and then came to the partial hospital program. At the end of the day, she picked her roommate up on the way home.

One day, I was approached by one of the nurses from the inpatient unit. She asked me if I had Jane's patient chart, and I responded that I did not. The nurse said that the chart was missing, and no one could account for it. The hospital staff suggested that somehow Jane had pilfered her own chart. This notion seemed implausible. Hospital charts were kept in a locked nurses' station, on a locked unit separate from the unit where Jane was attending the partial hospitalization program. Jane did not have access to the unit, let alone the nurses' station. I believe the speculations leveled against Jane were conjectured by hospital staff in order to defer responsibility for the missing records.

A few days later, I was on the dissociative disorders unit seeing patients when I received an emergency page from the office of the partial hospitalization program. I made my way downstairs to find Jane curled up in a fetal position on a sofa in the hospital's day treatment program unit. As soon as she saw me, Jane jumped to her feet and, under the influence of a child alter, and before any of us could react, she lifted her shirt and revealed her naked back to me. Positioned directly between her shoulder blades was a burn, a brand, in the design of either a number "6" or "9" (depending upon one's vantage point).

One of Jane's child alters complained of significant gynecological pain and of having been sexually assaulted. I requested that the hospital examine Jane and provide any treatment that might be needed. The hospital staff declined, stating that if she had indeed been sexually assaulted, Jane would have to be evaluated in one of the county medical facilities where special forensic examination procedures were in place to accumulate evidence. Jane was subsequently transported to a neighboring county hospital in the area where she said that her assault had taken place.

The emergency room staff at the county hospital conducted a rape examination that revealed that papers had been forcibly inserted into Jane's vagina and rectum. Upon examination, it was determined that these papers were a part of her missing hospital chart. Coincidentally with Jane's examination, the cover and remainder of her hospital chart were left on the desk of a sheriff's deputy in still another city. According to the deputy's report, the chart was hand delivered and left on his desk by persons unknown. This deputy had been working with Jane to investigate some of her allegations of being stalked.

When a facsimile copy of the emergency room physician's report arrived at the psychiatric hospital where Jane was again an inpatient, it was totally illegible. Faint words were visible on the margins of the paper, but the middle section of the page was entirely blank. Upon retransmission, the results were still unreadable. The county hospital staff agreed to mail another copy of their report. When it did not arrive within a reasonable period of time, staff called and was informed that Jane's chart at the county hospital was missing. Days later, the chart was located.

Although the police appeared to take the attack on my patient seriously and attempted to investigate the incident, their efforts to prosecute the perpetrators were obstructed by uncooperative hospital staff from both the psychiatric hospital and the county hospital. We can only hypothesize that their concern for their liability and the reputations of their hospitals took precedence over the safety and recovery of their patient.

During the course of my work with individuals who allege ritual abuse, I have been asked to testify, sometimes as an expert witness, sometimes in my capacity as a therapist, as a fact witness in both civil and criminal cases.[2] In 1992 I was contacted by the district attorney's office of Travis County where Austin, the state capital, is located. Assistant District Attorney Judy Shipway asked if I would be willing to consult with her office regarding allegations of ritual abuse made by children who reported that they had been abused in a day care setting. I did not personally evaluate the children who had made the outcry, but I did examine all the data in the possession of the district attorney's office relating to the children's complaints, the setting in which the abuse allegedly occurred, information about the alleged perpetrators, and clinical data regarding the children's history, ongoing psychotherapy, and current functioning.

Upon my initial review of the information, I advised Shipway to focus her prosecution on the sexual abuse aspects of the case. In my opinion, the sexual abuse allegations were clear and easier for the jury to comprehend, and there was less likelihood for generating a sensational case that could confuse the important legal questions.[3] In reviewing the materials, I had no doubt that the alleged perpetrators were guilty of sexual *and* ritual abuse. I didn't want to see the state risk its opportunity for convictions by forcing the prosecutors to explain a concept as foreign as ritual abuse to the court. I was concerned that the issue at the core of the children's allegations, their sadistic, criminal abuse, might get lost amidst intellectual, philosophical, and religious arguments denying the existence of the ritualistic nature of the sexual assaults. I agreed to be available as a consultant to help develop a clearer case in the wake of the McMartin Day Care trail that ended with a hung jury and prosecution who were unwilling to retry the case. I also offered to serve as an expert witness in the event that the subject of ritual abuse was raised for any reason.

As the case unfolded in court, it was not the prosecution who introduced the subject of ritual abuse but the defense. The first of the alleged perpetrators to be tried were husband and wife, Dan and Fran Keller, the owners and operators of Fran's Day Care. The attorneys defending the Kellers used the children's reports of blood sacrifice, drinking blood, even murder, to cast doubt on their reliability as informants. The case against the Kellers floundered when the court forced one of the accusing children, a youngster barely five years old, to testify in open court in the presence of her alleged perpetrators. At that time, the child not only recanted her allegations but also denied that she had ever been subjected to any kind of abuse. She also denied ever having attended the day care facility.

Judy Shipway asked me to testify in order to explain to the jury how ritual abuse occurs and how it could account for the child's reaction in court. Not only was I called upon to explain ritual abuse, it was also necessary for me to refute the arguments of the defense's primary resource in supporting its contention that the children's allegations were untrue and were provoked by adults, including parents, therapists, and others.

The defense attorney introduced a book, *Sex Abuse Hysteria: Salem Witch Trials Revisited,* by Richard A. Gardner (1991), into evidence.

Gardner’s thesis was that allegations of child sexual abuse were the fabrications of adults who vicariously lived out their sexual fantasies through children. According to Gardner, many adults, including those who act in advocacy roles for abused children, were latent pedophiles who obtained sexual gratification through the sexual experiences, real or imagined, of children. As ridiculous as this argument may sound, it has been the foundation of many legal arguments in defense of alleged perpetrators of child sexual abuse. The district attorney’s office had wisely directed that the families involved not communicate with each other about the children’s allegations in order to reduce the possibility of the complainants being influenced by one another. The prosecutors were responding to the precedent of the McMartin case, in which the defendants’ legal counsel argued that the children in this ritual abuse case had been influenced by numerous sources. Although I know of no scientific evidence that would prove such an assumption,[4] it has been argued that children’s memories are often unstable and easily influenced by others. However, not all researchers agree with this hypothesis and, for the most part, see children as typically reliable and truthful respondents.

Regarding the case of Fran’s Day Care, the jury reached a guilty verdict, and Dan and Fran Keller were each sentenced to 48 years in prison. Although I was pleased that the children were believed and the Kellers were held responsible for their actions, I was disappointed at the outcome.

Prior to the sentencing, I sent a message to Shipway’s office recommending that the convicted couple be evaluated for dissociative identity disorder (DID) themselves. The reason for this recommendation is that ritual abuse is commonly transgenerational. Perpetrators may have such abuse histories in their own backgrounds. If they are to be rehabilitated, it is essential to know whether their perpetration was a result of their own experience resulting in their own dissociative states. Furthermore, they may have been entitled to use the insanity defense if they were sufficiently dissociated when the offenses occurred. I received no response. A third defendant in the Fran’s Day Care case, Doug Perry, confessed to sexual abuse of a child and was sentenced to a 10-year probated sentence. The two other accused perpetrators were deputy constables in the Travis County Sheriff’s Department. They were not brought to trial.

Over the years, a vocal contingent of supporters has actively advocated for the Kellers and sought an appeal of the verdict. In January 2013 an appeal was filed based on the testimony of the physician who examined one of the female victims in 1991. Michael Mouw, an emergency room physician, later testified at the Kellers' trial that in his opinion there was physical evidence of sexual abuse. In 2009, Dr. Mouw, by then a more seasoned physician, revealed that he had second thoughts based on experience over the intervening years that led him to conclude that what he had observed in 1991 and testified to in 1992 was possibly a variant of normal internal female anatomy. An appeal was filed asserting that the Kellers had received an unfair trial on the basis of Dr. Mouw's false testimony. In December 2013 the Kellers were released from prison on personal bond and are awaiting a decision from the Court of Criminal Appeals. Travis County district attorney Rosemary Lehmberg will determine whether to retry the Kellers. We have had no contact with the principals since the trial in 1992, but a 2009 article featuring a recap of the Kellers case included a comment that one of the victims, then 21 years old, continued to assert that he had been abused by the Kellers.[5]

As an interesting footnote to my participation in the Fran's Day Care trial, I received a call from an individual who identified himself as a television news reporter from Channel 7 in Austin. He called because he had observed one of the defendants, Mr. Keller, engaging in a brief series of bizarre hand movements that included what looked like American Sign Language. Some of these hand signals were captured on videotape. He asked if I would be willing to look at his film and comment on it for his television station. I agreed and the next day received a copy of the videotape of the mysterious hand signals. The following day, a reporter and camera crew from a local television station arrived at my office.

On camera, I explained how cult triggers are alleged to work and hypothesized that Dan Keller may have been signaling to someone in the court, possibly victims, jury members, or others. I retained a copy of the videotape from Austin showing Dan Keller's signaling. The consensus among patients and other therapists who have seen this film is that it is most probably a case of utilizing such signaling techniques.[6] Survivors report that unobtrusive signals are used in the court venue in civil and criminal cases. They are reportedly sometimes utilized in the jury selection process to stack the deck in cases that affect the interests of other cult members. There may be occasions when the presence of merely one or two friendly jurors may affect the outcome of a trial. Such signals are also allegedly used to intimidate susceptible witnesses, attorneys, and others. Obviously, not everyone would be influenced by such techniques—only people who had been trained to respond to such cues.

I encountered what may be a less subtle form of this signaling approximately a year previous to the Keller case when I appeared as an expert witness on behalf of a mother and her children involved in a custody dispute with the children's father. The children had alleged that their father had sexually and ritually abused them. The mother, herself allegedly a survivor of lifelong abuse, first in her family of origin and later via her ex-husband, had a history of psychiatric treatment, including hospitalizations. Her children, however, maintained that their mother had never been their perpetrator, and they all wished to be in her sole custody.

One morning I sat in the courtroom behind the mother's attorney, awaiting the commencement of the day's proceedings. The door to the courtroom opened and, to my surprise, and to the horror of the mother, the entire jury entered wearing red shirts. After an uncomfortable silence, the judge made a weak joke about there being no conspiracy. I asked the mother's attorney if he had ever seen such a display by a jury in his lengthy career in law, and he said that he had not.[7] Other ritually abused patients have told me that they had been sent messages that were conveyed through the color red, which they believed was intended to disrupt and cause the survivor to obsess or act on thoughts of self-cutting (i.e., producing blood). Although the father denied having ritually abused his children, he did admit that he had pointed a loaded gun at one of his children on one occasion. Of course, he may have made this admission because it was witnessed by neighbors. Nevertheless, the father was awarded full custody of the children.[8]

Custody cases are notoriously difficult venues in which to deal with ritual abuse allegations. There are invariably counterclaims by the accused that the plaintiff has created or encouraged false allegations to punish or control. In every custody case in which I have been involved, the defense has relied on various texts by Gardner, Underwager, and Wakefield and other apologists for the False Memory Syndrome Foundation's doctrine. Furthermore, in almost every instance, the mother is at an extreme financial disadvantage, and often cannot afford to hire a highly skilled lawyer or expensive, well-known experts. In addition, because the court systems are still overwhelmingly male dominated and bastions of the "good old boy" network, mothers are frequently put on the defensive and unfairly characterized as having ulterior motives when their children make allegations of sexual or ritual abuse. In fact, when mothers have come to me asserting that their children have made an outcry against their fathers, it has been necessary to first explore the possibility that such notions were deliberately insinuated in the children by their mother or others in order to prepare for this often used argument.

One such woman called me from another city. She identified herself as the divorced mother of two little girls. She described situations involving the children that had concerned her enough to consult with a child psychologist. The mother described precocious and bizarre sexual acting out by her three- and five-year-old daughters. The mother, a schoolteacher, attempted to deal with the situations in a gentle, nonjudgmental way. However, despite her attempts to discourage the children from acting out individually and with others, they were not deterred. As the children's behaviors became increasingly out of control, the mother sought advice from a therapist. The therapist told the mother that the children demonstrated emotional and behavioral evidence of sexual molestation. Devastated, the mother turned to CPS for additional assistance. A CPS caseworker informed the mother that based on her experience, she believed the children had been ritually abused. The caseworker referred the mother to a police officer who verified that based on the children's bizarre actions, he too believed that they had been ritually abused.

The mother sought a consultation with me in order to obtain a second opinion regarding the children's possible ritual abuse, and specifically, the identity of the children's perpetrator(s). When, over the course of several weeks the children began to divulge information indicating that their father had abused them, the mother reacted with shock and dismay. When this revelation occurred, I was obligated to notify CPS.

The mother requested that the court amend the visitation agreement such that the father was permitted only supervised visitation with their children. Among the children's complaints against their father had been his abuse of them utilizing an aerosol soap dispenser decorated with Disney cartoon characters. According to the girls' reports, their father had inserted the tip of the dispenser into their rectums and their vaginas. When the father arrived at the court-ordered supervised visits, he brought the children gifts of the same soap dispensers. The children were unusually silent and compliant during his visits and became highly agitated at home with their mother.

In spite of the favorable impression the mother made on me, the father made an even more favorable one on the court.[9] In a conversation with my assistant following my court appearance, the mother's own attorney exclaimed, “Maybe he [the father] might have done something he shouldn't have done with the little girls, but I don't think he *hurt* them. When he was on the witness stand, he was crying. He loves his children.” Such naiveté is commonly found in cases of sexual and ritual abuse where the alleged perpetrator appears as a sincere and caring individual who proclaims his or her innocence over the protestations of accusers. In some cases, the perpetrator may even pass a polygraph.[10] In many instances in retrospective assessment of the case, the perpetrator has dissociated the memories of the abuse and sincerely feels innocent.

I was referred an inpatient consultation some years ago. The patient, a young mother married to her second husband, was hospitalized after experiencing severe distress in response to her children's allegations of sexual abuse by her husband, the biological father of the two younger children and stepfather of the older children. I was asked to evaluate the patient and found her to be highly dissociative. In a dissociated state, the patient described a history of sexual and ritual abuse perpetrated against her by her family and others during her childhood, by her first husband, and by her current husband.

I reported my findings to the psychiatrist in charge of the children's case, and he requested that I also evaluate the children and the father, all of whom were hospitalized at the same facility. Before I was able to interview the children, their CPS caseworker overruled the physician's orders and removed the children to a distant psychiatric facility, where they remained until their insurance benefits were exhausted.

I spent quite a bit of time with the father. Curiously, the father admitted to some of the alleged abuses. However, he denied certain of the allegations with great sincerity. This aroused my curiosity. Why would he admit some of his guilt but not all? In fact, he pled guilty to the charges against him and subsequently served time in prison. I believe that he was amnestic for some of the episodes of abuse.[11] This is not to suggest that he should not be held accountable or that his children should not be protected from him. But I believe that this constituted another indication of significant psychological disturbance that is poorly addressed in a prison. I suggested to the father that he might be able to obtain psychological assistance if he were to plead insanity, something that he could justifiably claim if he was in a dissociated state when the crimes occurred. The patient discussed this option with his attorney, who advised against it. According to the attorney, such a plea would inevitably result in his being incarcerated (via forced psychiatric hospitalization) for even longer than his prison sentence.

Many persons who believe that they have been ritually abused also often think that they themselves have engaged in some acts of perpetration. A commonly reported feature of ritual abuse occurs when the individual is forced to perpetrate a criminal act, or a simulation is staged whereby the individual, often after being drugged and tortured, believes himself or herself to have engaged in some horrible act.[12] Such forced "perpetration" allegedly occurs to cause these individuals to acknowledge and fear the cult's ability to implicate them in real or simulated criminal acts. This results in the person feeling that escape from the cult is futile and that any efforts to resist or fight the authority of the cult leader will be severely punished.

Thus, survivors of ritual abuse often need tangible support and resources to escape this kind of control. However, the agencies that have the responsibility for providing support and advocacy for victims have often instead become serious obstacles to their safety and recovery. My personal experience with CPS has been unusual, yet I am not alone in my concerns in the significant problems CPS often has in managing these cases. Many other professionals with whom I have consulted have also had frustrating experiences with this agency. Because we cannot, as a profession, rely on CPS to consistently perform its mission to protect children, it is a complicating factor in trying to obtain appropriate services for children we suspect are abused.

On one occasion, CPS referred a family for evaluation. The family consisted of the father, mother, and three children ranging in age from 7 to 11 years. CPS was consulted when school authorities noted that the middle son had excessive absences from school. On investigation, CPS learned that the child was being evaluated by a number of different medical specialists; however, none of the physicians were able to diagnose any particular physical problem. The CPS caseworker determined that the child was the victim of the mother's symptomatology of Munchausen's syndrome by proxy and had all three children removed from the home and placed in three different foster care facilities. Munchausen's syndrome is a psychiatric diagnosis whereby an individual seeks and obtains medical treatment for nonexistent maladies. Munchausen's syndrome by proxy[13] consists of obtaining unnecessary treatment for someone else, typically a child. This is a rather obscure disorder, and I was curious how the CPS caseworker could have made this diagnosis on so little corroborating evidence.[14]

As I evaluated the parents and children, I discerned a pattern of abuse emanating from the father, not the mother. The children and their parents all acknowledged the father's emotional distance and aloofness from the children. The mother revealed that her husband exerted unusual control over her and their children. He was, by his own admission, a "control freak." They all agreed that the father had behaved violently and unpredictably from time to time and related an incident where the father fired a gun loaded with Teflon-coated bullets, "cop killers," in the house. The mother interacted as a warm and affectionate woman who had sustained a serious head injury in childhood that had resulted in some minor neuropsychological deficits. Because her son was undersized, she had taken him to a physician and, when that physician remarked that he could find no apparent problem but that a specialist might, the mother consulted with specialists.

I was unable to find any evidence that the mother was attempting to use the child's "poor health" as a means of satisfying her own needs. In fact, she consulted others and relied on their advice because she did not have confidence in her own judgment. The children all reported a close and loving relationship with their mother and a distant and unpredictable one with their father. The oldest son described physically abusive confrontations with his father. He reported that his father had come into his bedroom, awakening and beating him without provocation. The youngster's siblings and mother corroborated these claims that were denied by the father.

When I made my initial report to CPS, I indicated that the mother was an appropriate custodial parent, but that the father was unstable and posed a threat to the safety of the family. I recommended that the children be returned to the mother, that the father reside elsewhere, and that the family engage in individual and family therapy to work toward resolving the core problems that had resulted in their dysfunctional family relationships. In response, CPS inundated my office with copies of journal articles documenting various cases of Munchausen’s syndrome by proxy. Although I repeatedly explained that nothing in my evaluation or observation of this family or its members supported that diagnosis, the CPS caseworker and her supervisor persisted.

Eventually, CPS relented and followed my recommendations. However, it was made clear to me that I would receive no further referrals from that agency in the future. The children, once returned to their mother’s custody, thrived in the absence of their father. The mother learned to trust her instincts and live independently of the children’s father. The father did not seem interested in resolving his psychological problems or reuniting with his family. The parents ultimately divorced, and the mother retained sole custody. Although the father was granted usual visitation rights, he did not exercise them in the years after the divorce. The children are now all adults who remain close to their mother and estranged from their father.

On another occasion, I was contacted by CPS in a distant city. They were requesting evaluation of a six-year-old girl whom they suspected of having multiple personality disorder. The child arrived at my office accompanied by her foster mother and a CPS caseworker. While the child was in another room, I explained to the adults that when I evaluate for DID, I also evaluate for the presence of ritual abuse. I explained that I do not utilize hypnosis in my evaluation; rather, I unobtrusively incorporate what I am told are cult “triggers” into the clinical interview process and then observe the patient’s response. The CPS caseworker appeared very interested and asked numerous questions. When she was satisfied, the child was brought into the office.

With the caseworker and foster mother present, the interview with the child commenced. After a short while, the child responded to the unobtrusive triggers by falling into a trance state, during which alternate identities emerged. Surprisingly, these triggers apparently affected the caseworker, who entered into such a deep trance that her head lolled on her shoulders and she reclined limply against a sofa with her mouth agape and her eyes rolled up. The foster mother looked alarmed and puzzled, wondering what had happened. Because the caseworker was not my patient, I did not attempt to question or interview her. At the end of the session, I used the procedure for bringing the child out of the trance, and the caseworker simultaneously responded to the same technique.

The caseworker reacted with surprise when she woke and exclaimed that I must have hypnotized her, even though I had previously explained to her that I would use no hypnosis in the interview. The caseworker was evidently rattled by the experience. The foster mother, having observed the effects of the interview on both the girl and the caseworker, seemed perplexed regarding what she had witnessed.

In the course of another case in which a mother and her adolescent daughter were both under my care for treatment of DID and ritual abuse, the CPS caseworker visited the mother at her place of work. The caseworker reportedly asked the mother about the nature of our therapy sessions. The mother, “Ann,” explained that she often entered into a trance state during our sessions and could not account for much of what transpired. The caseworker reportedly told the mother that I might be sexually abusing both mother and daughter while they were in a trance state. Furthermore, the caseworker stated that the mother should keep a journal and recommended that it be divided into five parts delineated by colors with the following designations: “red is for blood, black is for death, green is for peace, blue is for running away, and white is for silence.”

The next morning, Ann arrived in my office in a highly agitated state. She reported that after hearing what the caseworker had said to her, she felt an overwhelming compulsion to either cut herself (“red is for blood”) or to engage in a cult ritual. She reported that she had done the latter in a private ceremony where no people were harmed but where she had allegedly sacrificed her pet cat and eaten its heart and burned its body.

She explained that although what the caseworker had told her was upsetting, she knew that no improper behavior had occurred in our sessions and she was amazed that her CPS caseworker would make such an inappropriate suggestion. Nevertheless, the caseworker had instilled new fears in the patient’s daughter. Prior to Ann’s appointment, the caseworker had again appeared at her workplace wearing a blue dress. Ann reported an almost irresistible urge to run away and abandon her child, her work, and her therapy.

Ann’s allegations about her caseworker necessitated a meeting of all the concerned parties. If Ann had misunderstood what her caseworker had said to her, then this misperception needed to be corrected. If Ann’s perception was accurate, then her caseworker was evidently behaving unprofessionally and interfering with Ann’s care as well as her safety. I requested a meeting between Ann, the caseworker, the caseworker's supervisor, myself, and another of my staff members.

As Ann and I addressed our concerns in the meeting, the supervisor had an opportunity to observe the highly inappropriate behavior of the caseworker. The caseworker spent the entire meeting looking at a pad in her lap and scribbling on it at a furious rate. She never looked me in the eye, never looked up from her pad, and never entered the conversation, even to respond to direct questions. The supervisor appeared confused and agreed to investigate further. Later, my office was informed that the caseworker had been reprimanded and removed from Ann's case. However, a short while later, the caseworker was reassigned to Ann.

There are other examples of inappropriate or potentially dangerous behavior by CPS. A year before the Branch Davidians made national news in Waco, their compound, Mount Carmel, was visited by CPS. Reports by former cult members and survivors indicated a pattern of physical and sexual abuses against the children in the compound. Reportedly, a CPS caseworker visited the compound and interviewed some of the children. She determined that abuse was occurring and requested that her agency remove the children from the compound. The caseworker's supervisor declined to follow the caseworker's recommendation. Some of those children later died when the compound was destroyed.

CPS acts as an arm of the justice system, making recommendations regarding the disposition of allegations of child abuse and advising the court as to appropriate custodial arrangements for minor children. Yet many caseworkers appear to be distinctly unqualified to discern some forms of child abuse and do not seem able to recognize perpetrators, even when the perpetrators identify themselves. Some caseworkers may be extreme abuse survivors themselves. When such individuals have made significant strides in their own recovery, they may be helpful protectors of children. However, some extreme abuse survivors who are not in recovery may be triggered to act in ways that are unhelpful to vulnerable children.

"Theresa" came to me with a history of ritual abuse allegedly perpetrated by her parents. Theresa's three children had been removed to the custody of CPS, which became involved with this family when the children were reportedly abducted from their home by a family acquaintance. While the children were in treatment, an investigation into Theresa's background revealed her to be a practicing Wiccan. Caseworkers from CPS expressed strong disapproval of her religious affiliation. While in CPS custody, the children described a history of abuse emanating not from Theresa but from their stepfather. The children reported that when Theresa discovered the abuse was occurring, she separated from her spouse in order to protect her children. The children begged to return to their mother. However, because she participated in a nontraditional religion, CPS recommended that the children be removed from her care. The three children were placed in three separate foster homes.

For months Theresa was denied visitation, despite her agreement to divorce her husband, renounce her religious affiliation, and embrace a traditional Christian orientation, maintain a proper home, and arrange alternate living arrangements. Theresa made excellent progress. She complied with every demand made by CPS and the courts. She attended parenting classes and therapy, determined to be reunited with her children. She was granted supervised visitation and never failed to take every opportunity to be with her children. Although monthly reports from my office kept CPS and the court appraised of Theresa's progress and recommended the children's return to her custody, new obstacles continually appeared in her path.

The most disturbing problem for Theresa was that while she was being denied the opportunity to visit with her own children, her parents, whom she had named as her own childhood abusers, and from whom she had been estranged for years were given unlimited, unsupervised access to Theresa's children. It was the view of CPS and the courts that because the parents embraced more overtly traditional and acceptable standards of behavior, they were more appropriate influences in the lives of the children. Although CPS was repeatedly advised that Theresa maintained that her parents were abusive, neither the court nor CPS responded to our concerns.

Examples of miscarried justice occurring during divorce proceedings are commonplace when allegations of sexual or ritual abuse are made. Whether the allegations are made at the time of the divorce or in subsequent custody hearings, the protective parent (usually, but not always, the mother) risks losing custody and sometimes even visitation when she supports her child's outcries of abuse. A scenario that we have seen repeated time and time again is exemplified by what happened to "Emma."

Emma was an elementary school teacher in a small town who had divorced her husband the year before. She had endured years of his alcoholism along with his disappearance from the home for extended periods, extramarital affairs, and the loss of his job. “John” was the son of a wealthy and prominent family in the community, and following his separation from Emma, he returned to his parents’ home. At the custody hearing, John was granted liberal visitation consisting of every Tuesday and Thursday, every other weekend, and a portion of holidays and summer vacations.

Emma’s two preschool-age daughters began acting out in sexually inappropriate ways following overnight visitation with their father. They began having nightmares and night terrors. They began wetting their beds and fearing sleep. They aggressively masturbated in the home and in public and engaged other children in sexually oriented play. They expressed unwillingness to attend visitation with their father; yet after visitation, they expressed anger and violent rage at their mother, hitting her and talking about killing her. At first, Emma believed that the girls were expressing normal feelings of confusion and anger following the emotional upheaval of the divorce. Emma took the girls to a counselor to help them sort through their conflicted feelings. In the counselor’s office, the children were allowed to go into a playroom, where the counselor observed the children’s activities. She noted that the children were engaged in aggressive, sexually driven play with the dolls in the playroom. The girls removed all the Barbie dolls from the shelf and undressed them. They manipulated the dolls into sexual positions emulating oral sex. They made stabbing motions with pencils and crayons in the vaginal and anal areas of the dolls. The girls repeated this type of play with the family of dolls in a dollhouse. They selected the “daddy” doll and the “children” dolls for their play.

When the counselor joined the girls, she asked what they were playing. They responded that they were playing with their daddy. The children began to speak about what was clearly sexual abuse. The counselor immediately called CPS and referred a shocked Emma to a physician to perform physical evaluations on the girls. The physician discovered signs of vaginal and anal penetration exemplified by scarring. Furthermore, these three- and four-year-old sisters had been diagnosed with a sexually transmitted disease. Emma called her lawyer and asked him to make immediate application to restrict her ex-husband’s visitation with the girls. Her lawyer argued with her and accused her of being “spiteful and vindictive.” He said that if she persisted in her plan to alter the visitation agreement, he could no longer represent her. Emma contacted every lawyer in her small community, and each one declined to represent her against her husband. Emma had to seek legal representation from an attorney in a neighboring city.

As the children continued in therapy, they made outcries of specific sexual and ritual abuses perpetrated by their father, their paternal grandparents, their aunts and uncles, and others whom they could not specifically identify by name. CPS reported that they could find no evidence that the children had been abused by their father; the CPS caseworker instead focused on Emma's fiancé and members of her family, none of whom had been named by the children or had any history of inappropriate or illegal activity or suspect behavior. The court ordered psychological evaluations of Emma and John. The court-appointed psychologist testified that John demonstrated no significant psychological problems. However, his interpretation of Emma's test results indicated that she has "high-strung, hysterical, and controlling," characteristics that neither the children's therapist, her colleagues at work, nor her social acquaintances had never observed.[15] The court-ordered psychologist also examined the children and reported to the court that she believed that the children were being used by the mother as a weapon against her ex-husband. According to the psychologist, the children were not victims of ritual abuse but of ritual abuse hysteria emanating from their mother and the children's therapy team.[16] Emma's quest to alter the visitation agreement failed. In reading his decision, the judge warned Emma that if she attempted to appeal his findings, he would terminate her parental rights and assign sole custody of the girls to John.

This outcome is not unusual. In case after case, protective mothers have lost custody, visitation, and even their parental rights. One of the most famous cases involved Elizabeth Morgan.[17] When Dr. Morgan's daughter, Hillary, made outcries that her father, also a health care provider, was sexually molesting her during court-ordered visitation, Dr. Morgan attempted to modify the visitation agreement. After she had exhausted all her legal options, Dr. Morgan arranged for her daughter to go into hiding in New Zealand with Dr. Morgan's parents, Hillary's maternal grandparents. Dr. Morgan spent two years in jail for contempt of court for refusing to reveal Hilary's location until she was released by congressional order. Dr. Morgan and Hillary remained in New Zealand until the passage of the

Elizabeth Morgan Act that permitted their return to the United States. Hillary, who subsequently changed her name to Elena Mitrano, is a professional vocalist and songwriter who maintains that her father was abusive and credits her mother with saving her life.

How is our justice system to fairly address the issue of ritual abuse and protect vulnerable people who have been victimized? Our interactions with the justice system have thus far been discouraging. The punitive attitude sometimes seen in the criminal justice system may actually discourage arriving at an effective solution based on remediation. The more we can encourage perpetrators (or individuals who believe that they have participated in criminal activities) to divulge their secrets, the closer we may come to finding the answers to fundamental questions of how and why these criminal activities persist. It is important that we refrain from another modern version of witch-finding hysteria. Instead, we need a compassionate, but dedicated, search for constructive solutions.

How are individuals so wounded by past traumas able to survive and recover control over their own lives? Some are able to maintain such complete compartmentalization that they are able to support themselves by working. Frequently such individuals are either not aware of their past abuses or they choose not to explore them. Others may be fortunate to have supportive spouses, partners, or friends who are willing and able to provide the financial and social sustenance to facilitate survival and treatment. Others may be trapped in a symbiotic relationship with their perpetrators who provide financial resources in exchange for their victims' silence about past or ongoing abuse.

The unfortunate reality about the psychological consequences of ritual trauma is that symptoms can emerge at unpredictable times that can cause significant disruption to activities of daily living as well as school or work performance. These disruptions can be chronic with waxing and waning intensity affecting memory, concentration, orientation to reality, perception, judgment, insight, and self-regulation. Such unpredictable episodes of deteriorated functioning may be uncomfortable interpersonally and socially, but they are often intolerable in the workplace.

When individuals are unable to work as a consequence of medical or psychological conditions, they may be entitled to benefits under the Social Security Administration (SSA). Young people under the age of 18, disabled adults who worked but did not pay or pay enough into the Social Security system through the Federal Insurance Contributions Act (FICA), or people over the age of 65 and who are impoverished can receive SSI benefits. This is a federal program that provides a monthly stipend along with Medicaid health insurance. Some states also provide additional funding for those entitled to SSI. SSDI benefits are available to individuals who contributed to FICA through their employment and who meet the SSA eligibility requirements. Benefits include Medicare health insurance and a monthly income based on past earnings. Individuals who earned little or whose earnings were sporadic may qualify for both SSDI and SSI. However, eligibility to receive benefits is contingent on the ability to prove the existence of a "medically determinable impairment" and demonstrate that as a consequence of that impairment or its treatment the person is incapable of performing not only his or her accustomed work but also any other jobs in the local or national economy. This represents an incredibly high hurdle for most people to meet, even when they become incapacitated by quite obvious problems such as amputations, heart failure, and cancer. Demonstrating disability due to psychological factors can be far more complicated and challenging.

One significant problem is that the Social Security regulations provide for the opinion of the treating clinician[18] to have "great if not controlling weight" in the disability determination process. Many clinicians are confused by the differing definitions of disability that are recognized by Social Security regulations in the Code of Federal Regulations and the Americans with Disabilities Act. The Americans with Disabilities Act was designed to protect disabled workers require special accommodations in order to perform their jobs. For example, an individual confined to a wheelchair would require ramps to maneuver over steps and curbs, and it is the employer's responsibility to provide for this. Obviously if an individual can work and is motivated to work, it is likely in his or her best interests to do so. People benefit from the structure, monetary rewards, social interactions, and self-esteem resulting from employment.

The SSA defines disability as a medically determinable condition that is so severe that it prevents the individual from engaging in any full-time *competitive* work. Thus, if a person who would otherwise be considered disabled were able to work part time or in a situation that was in a protective environment or circumstance (i.e., working in a family business with special allowances and consideration for the disabling condition), or with special accommodations not generally available to other workers, it would not be considered competitive and the SSA would still consider the claimant disabled.

The SSA's criteria for evidence of disability includes medical records demonstrating the claimant's treatment to reflect the level of impairment and compliance with treatment, the opinion of treating clinicians that the individual would be incapacitated from typical work duties in the competitive job market, and affirmation by the treating clinician or others that the claimant's disability is not caused nor worsened by substance abuse or dependence. There are several problems with this method. In order to obtain sufficient treatment records, one must be able to afford treatment. Many claimants for both SSDI and SSI are impoverished. They cannot work, they have exhausted any savings they may have accrued, and some are homeless. If they are receiving treatment, it is frequently through public facilities and hospital emergency rooms. Although there may be adequate records that substantiate that the claimant has sought treatment, there is typically no continuity of care, and oftentimes, there are disagreements among various providers such that diagnoses and treatment are repeatedly changed. This is especially true of psychological complaints. It is thus extremely difficult to obtain the needed documentation from a recognized treating source regarding the individual's capacity to function within a competitive work environment.

Furthermore, the SSA bureaucracy frequently associates medication with treatment, even when there is no evidence that the medication leads to improvement significant enough to support a return to work. Psychotropic medications frequently carry numerous side effects and specific health risks. Well-documented side effects of psychiatrically prescribed drugs include dry mouth, nausea, constipation, drowsiness, weight gain, impaired concentration, impaired memory, mania, psychosis, hallucinations, depersonalization, heart attack, diabetes, liver damage, involuntary movements, tremors, seizures, stroke, sudden death, and increased risk of suicide. In addition to the adverse effects that frequently occur in many psychiatric patients, these medications are often prohibitively expensive and unaffordable. Furthermore, individuals who have ritual abuse histories often respond to medications idiosyncratically, and even when prescription drugs offer some relief, there comes a point where they lose their value with increasing dosages failing to restore patients' previous levels of functioning.

Additionally, the process of applying for and obtaining benefits is arduous and lengthy. In 2009 only 25.4% of all applicants for SSDI and SSI were approved at the initial application level. An additional 6.5% were approved upon reconsideration. Those applicants who advanced to the hearing level and whose claims were heard by an Administrative Law Judge were awarded benefits 68.6% of the time. Obtaining a hearing date can take more than a year depending on the region where the applicant resides.[19]

Finally, even when ritual abuse survivors do meet the criteria and are eligible to receive benefits, the amount received is still generally near or below the poverty line. The federally defined poverty level for 2014 is an annual income of $11,670 for an individual, $15,730 for a couple, and $23,850 for a family of four.[20] As of January 2014, the monthly SSI payment was $721 a month for an individual, $1,082 for a couple. Some states contribute to SSI benefits but many do not. The SSA has established that substantial gainful activity for 2014 is $1,070 monthly ($14,040 annually). Individuals who receive less than $1,070 per month in SSDI benefits may also be eligible to receive SSI benefits up to that amount. For SSDI beneficiaries, the average monthly payment is $1,148 ($13,776 annually). Disabled people often incur additional expenses that dilute their disability benefits. They have additional transportation expenses for travel to and from medical appointments. They often require special diets or supplements that are not covered by medical insurance coverage. They may require additional services in the form of in-home assistance to complete activities of daily living. These expenses are not typically taken into account (with the exception of blind beneficiaries who are awarded a higher monetary benefit in recognition of their increased cost of living).

When the beneficiaries qualify for Medicare insurance (29 months from the onset of their disabling condition),[21] the monthly premium for this health insurance policy ($104.90 in 2014) is deducted from their Social Security benefit, resulting in a decreased annual income of $12,517.20 based on the previously described model. Medicaid health insurance provides very low reimbursement to physicians and hospitals and is thus not accepted by many providers. Medicare is considered to be superior to Medicaid, but an increasing number of clinicians, dissatisfied with its bureaucracy and level of reimbursement, are declining to accept it. Still, if an individual receives as little as $1 in SSI benefits, he is entitled to receive Medicaid in addition to Medicare, resulting in 100% health insurance coverage and making its acceptance by clinicians and facilities less onerous. Some individuals qualifying for both Medicare and Medicaid may also be eligible to participate in a program for Qualified Medicare Beneficiary that covers the cost of Medicare premiums and deductibles for prescription drugs. Nevertheless, even these programs do not adequately cover the real cost of survival and treatment for the beneficiaries.

So will the “system” protect survivors of ritual abuse? We find that the theory of a social safety net has only been partially realized. Those institutions designed to safeguard the public, protect children, and provide support are demonstrably inconsistent and often poor in their delivery of needed services. The public is not protected, children continue to be victimized, and resources available to those survivors able to prove eligibility for benefits are barely adequate to insure minimal survival, let alone reasonable opportunities for recovery.

CHAPTER 18

Cult and Ritual Trauma Disorder

“Jean” was admitted to an inpatient chemical dependency unit in New Mexico, where she successfully became “clean and sober.” She had a long history of drug and alcohol abuse and finally decided to do something about her addictions. However, while in the process, she began to have flashbacks about satanic ritual abuse perpetrated by her father, the pastor of a large church. Jean was subsequently diagnosed with multiple personality disorder, and she sought treatment. After researching her options, she selected the inpatient dissociative disorders program under the direction of Gary Lefkof, which at the time was housed at the Cedars Hospital in De Soto, a suburb of Dallas, Texas.

Jean made considerable gains during her hospitalization, and when she was ready to be discharged, she was referred to me for outpatient care. Her inpatient therapist told me that Jean was highly placed in her cult. When I met Jean, she said she had no direct knowledge of her role in what she said was her father’s cult. Sometimes when we spoke, she dissociated and, while in alternate identity states, Jean would speak to me about her role as a high-ranking individual and a “programmer.”

I wanted to test Jean’s claims but initially had no idea how to do it. As we developed rapport, I asked Jean’s alters to tell me more. What was meant when she said that she was a “programmer”? At times, there was much resistance to this question. She was secretive and sometimes hostile as she dissociated as different alternates. She made it clear that the information was secret and that only a few of her alternates had enough knowledge about it to answer my question. She told me that she definitely could not impart this purportedly clandestine information to me. However, over time she would dissociate, and in some altered states, she would begin to provide fragmentary answers to my earlier questions. For example, she described techniques that could be used to access other alters in her system of dissociated identities. She described the experience frequently reported by other clients with dissociative identity disorder (DID) where she perceived herself as lacking a whole and unified self. Instead, she experienced herself as an aggregate of separate and disconnected identities. Some of the alters would not participate in therapy without the use of particular accessing methods.

These methods generally worked with Jean. However, I questioned the possibility that these cues and signals worked with Jean simply because she had suggested that they would work. Maybe she invented them in her own imagination. In order to test her claims that these were cult-created methods of access, I introduced some of these same cues into sessions with other clients, who also described histories consistent with having been ritually abused. Whenever possible, this was done unobtrusively so as to avoid producing results simply by suggestion (Noblitt, 2010; Noblitt, 2011; Noblitt & Perskin, 2000).

Many of the clients, but not all, responded in a predictable manner to these cues. Several would go into deep trance states, some of which were coma-like in that the client was entirely unresponsive to the external environment until brought back to consciousness using the correct technique or until the individual fell asleep and then would wake naturally. In other cases, alternate identities emerged and sometimes corrected the manner in which the accessing techniques were used. Sometimes a protector alter would present for the purpose of lambasting me verbally or even with threats of physical violence because I had intruded into the patients’ supposedly secret dissociated world. Curiously after such episodes, and when the usual identity returned, these clients were often amnestic for the events that had transpired. When given the opportunity to observe what had happened on videotape, many of them expressed surprise.

I later learned that many alleged cult survivors believe that some programming is general or generic and is used in the cult training of a wide variety of individuals—even in different cults and in different locales. Another frequently reported belief is that some cult programming is not generic but is specific to a particular cult, a particular programmer, or a particular person being programmed.

On one occasion, Jean was speaking and casually mentioned to me, “You know, since all multiples have been ritually abused . . .” I stopped her, “What do you mean *all* multiples have been ritually abused?” At that time, and even now, the prevailing theory is that dissociation of identity is caused by severe and prolonged childhood abuse, not necessarily ritual abuse alone. Jean looked at me, smiled, and said, “When I was in the Cedars, 80 percent of the patients were talking about ritual abuse. The others just haven’t gotten to those memories yet.” At first this idea seemed preposterous. I had many patients with DID who had never said anything about ritual abuse. But as time went by, I had some other cult survivors say the same thing. Curiously, the ones who believed this notion were, by their own self-report, high in rank and allegedly trained as programmers.

These alleged programmers also talked about having been involuntarily involved in what they called “the organization.” They appeared to be describing a variety of “organizations,” some of which they identified with right-wing or other radical political philosophies such as the Christian Identity movement, the Aryan Brotherhood, and Neo-Nazi groups.[1] Some of them described histories of exposure to satanic or Luciferian cults in childhood and later involvement in other “organizations,” some of which sounded similar to David Koresh’s Branch Davidian sect and other apocalyptic and militia-like groups.

Although I had not specifically worked with any survivors of Koresh’s religious cult, I was interviewed by several radio stations during the crisis involving the Branch Davidians because of my previous work with other cult survivors. During that time, I viewed an excerpt from a 1987 interview of Koresh that aired on March 2, 1993, on the syndicated television program *A Current Affair*.

The television interviewer asked Koresh if he was involved in a satanic cult, if he was a “warlock,” and if it was true that he had an upside down cross imprinted on the skin of his chest. Koresh denied that he was a member of a satanic cult or a warlock. He admitted to having an inverted cross-shaped scar on his chest, for which he offered a rather curious explanation. According to Koresh, he had purchased a cross at a five-and-dime store. While playing with the cross by passing it over a candle flame, he accidentally dropped the cross on his bare chest, resulting in a burn in the shape of an inverted cross. Of course, an alternative explanation is that Koresh had some earlier involvement in a demonic cult and had been branded with this mark. Cult survivors commonly report such experiences, and sometimes they show scars they say were caused by cutting, burning, or branding. However, in many cases, cult survivors provide alternative explanations for their scarification, or they simply report that they don't recall any details about the injury that produced the scar.

The word *cult* is a curious one, and its usage appears to be in a state of transition. Many dictionaries define *cult* simply as a religion or religious practice. In history and anthropology, we know that the term *cult* generally refers to the devotion of a particular god or spirit, often in the context of a polytheistic religion. However in modern usage, the word *cult* is increasingly being used to refer to groups that subjugate the rights and endanger the well-being of the individual for the benefit of a few members of the group through the use of coercive persuasion or other methods of mind control.[2] Some people use the expression *destructive cults* to specify that the cult in question is not merely a religion or a sect within a polytheistic spiritual system, but that additional malignant characteristics are involved.

Between the mass murders committed by the Charles Manson Family[3] in 1969 and deadly confrontation between the Branch Davidians and the Alcohol Tobacco and Firearms (ATF) personnel and later the Federal Bureau of Investigation (FBI),[4] the public became increasingly aware of the potential explosiveness associated with some modern cults. There have been many such groups, some of which were quite public and some that flew under the radar. The Church Universal and Triumphant (CUT),[5] a survivalist cult, was founded in 1975 by Elizabeth Clare Prophet, a self-proclaimed “messenger of the Great White Brotherhood.”[6] She claimed approximately 30,000 followers at the apex of her influence. Another off-shoot of the apocalyptic cult, the White Brotherhood,[7] was founded in Russia by Ukrainian Marina Tsvigun-Krivonogova-Kovalchuk, known to her followers as Mother of the World, Maria Devi Christ and her husband, Yury Krivonogov. Krivonogov, a microelectronics specialist, was reportedly employed by the KGB, where he was attached to a secret institute charged with studying techniques for influencing the mind. In October 1993 Maria Devi Christ announced that the end of the world would occur on October 24, resulting in thousands of Ukrainians traveling on foot to Kiev to prepare for mass suicide. According to news reports, the trek was accompanied by hysteria and suicides among the followers. The promised mass suicide was averted when the doomsday was recalculated and the sect's hierarchy was arrested on November 10, 1993, for conspiring to stage a pogrom against Orthodox sanctuaries. In October 1994, deaths in Canada and Switzerland were attributed to the mass suicide and/or homicide of members of the Order of the Solar Temple (Serrill & Crumley, 1994). In 1978, 913 deaths were attributed to the People's Temple,[8] when cult leader Jim Jones ordered his followers to drink Kool-Aid laced with cyanide (Kilduff & Javers, 1978; Wooden, 1981). In March 1995, a Japanese cult[9] was responsible for releasing poisonous gas in the subway system, resulting in multiple deaths and injuries. Self-proclaimed messiah Wayne Bent[10] founded an apocalyptic church, the Lord Our Righteousness (LOR), in the late 1990s. In 2008, he was convicted of child molestation.

Currently, al-Qaeda has demonstrated the power to control suicide bombers who engage in mass killings that require sacrificing their own lives. Jihadists are reportedly trained to detonate explosive devices attached to their bodies for the rewards of an eternal afterlife. According to Yoeli and Prattos (2008), terrorism achieved cult status in the aftermath of the September 11, 2001, destruction of the World Trade Center.

Shortly after the September 11 terrorist attacks, panellists at a convention session on hatred asked the American Psychological Association to form a task force to investigate mind control among destructive cults. From there, the new category of the cult of terrorism was derived. Terrorist organizations are now being equated with destructive cults (Dittmann, 2002; F.A.C.T.net, 2001, 2004). Becker (2008) furthers this argument with his own observations and conclusions:

> The pilots of 9-11 were not a hermetic group practicing their worship in closed settings. Members of this terrorist cell had lived by their own rules which likely incorporated Lifton's (1961) key criteria for mind control: dispensing of existence, doctrine over person, loading the language, sacred science, confession, demand for purity, mystical manipulation, and milieu (environment) control. They lived within the Islamic community in Hamburg, Germany and on their way to their mosque in the central train station area were confronted with the daily life of a multi-cultural society. Because of their ability to live in two contradictory worlds, to live as law-biding members of society until called upon by their leaders to commit ideologically motivated crimes, they have been called "sleeper agents." Their behavior was consistent with Lifton's (1986) concept of doubling. (p. 258)

This also reflects the experience reported by ritual abuse survivors. At an unconscious level of functioning, they were trained to incorporate the ideals and values of the cult while ostensibly living more conventional lives in a split or divided existence. However, some were trained to react destructively toward their normative culture on command. Fortunately, many survivors are able to resist their destructive impulses; others are not.

In addition to these wide-ranging organizations with grandiose goals and huge numbers of followers, instances of familial groups identified as cults or cult-like were made public. On June 17, 2005, Marcus Wesson[11] was sentenced to death for the mass murders of nine of his daughters and their children fathered by Wesson. According to his surviving children, Wesson was psychotic, delusional, and narcissistic but was able to exert absolute control over his wife, children, and grandchildren. In a similar case, Winnifred Wright[12] oversaw his own self-styled cult referred to as "The Family" and over whom he exerted absolute control. Following the death of his 19-month-old son from starvation, Wright and the mothers of his 12 children were arrested and eventually convicted for felony child abuse. Two of the women requested "deprogramming," claiming that "mind control is a reality" and that Wright had "brainwashed them."

There have been several polygamy-based groups associated with the Fundamentalist Church of Jesus Christ of Latter Day Saints (FLDS), most notably those headed by Rulon Jeffs and his son Warren Jeffs,[13] who proclaimed themselves prophets. Warren Jeffs was convicted of rape in Utah in 2007. His conviction was overturned in 2010, and he was extradited to Texas in November 2010. On August 10, 2011, he was convicted of two felony counts of child sexual assault and sentenced to life plus 20 years in prison.[14] The FLDS group was established after the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter Day Saints (LDS) reversed its policy on people of color and admitted them to the LDS church. These groups also took on an apocalyptic perspective and predicted the end of the world on several occasions (Buchanan, 2005). The public became acutely aware of the FLDS way of life in 2008, when the Yearning for Zion[15] compound was investigated by Texas state authorities after child protective services was alerted that children were being exploited with underage girls being married to church elders, while young men were expelled from the group to protect the supply of young women. Although hundreds of children were taken into custody, ultimately there were no charges and the children were returned to their families. According to an ABC News report, Warren Jeffs continues to control the Yearning for Zion group from prison, ordering them to restrict their diet to beans and rice in order to conserve the group's financial resources.[16]

As religious cults proliferated, some writers complained that an anti-cult movement had arisen that was prejudicial toward new religious movements.[17] Some anti-cult zealots themselves may have violated the law in cases where they have allegedly forcibly abducted cult members for involuntary "deprogramming."[18] It is obviously wrong and presumably illegal to physically force a person into or out of a cult without some due process of law. However, it may not always be clear whether any given cultist is participating as a result of a freely made choice. Some ex-cultists alleged that they were kept in the cult by threats of harm to themselves or their families. Others reported they were the victims of *mind control* as the result of cult indoctrination or trauma-based training.

Many ex-cultists and survivors alleged that they were held enthralled by their leaders who exerted extreme control over them. In some cases, followers were recruited into the group; in others, they were born into it. Regardless, their money, property, lives, and even their thoughts and values were subject to the rigorous control of the group leaders. Control was established through various means, including starvation, physical abuse, drugs, sexual abuse, and coercive persuasion, all delivered within the context of rituals peculiar to the orientation of the group leader. Some of these rituals are based on existing rites such as the sacraments of the Roman Catholic Church or concepts from the Kabbalah. Others seem to be the idiosyncratic creation of the group or its leader. These rituals are often used to emphasize the group's power and the unusual supernatural elements incorporated into the ceremonies often increase the victim's sense of isolation from normal life and dependence on the group.

The concept of mind control is an important feature of all of the destructive cults herein described. Where does one draw the line between abusive mind control and normal persuasion? A distinction may be made where *normal persuasion* is defined as communication in an atmosphere characterized by compromise, negotiation, and mutual respect for the needs of the various parties involved. *Coercive persuasion* may be construed as the use of harm, threats of harm, or manipulation in order to motivate a person to do the bidding of another. *Coercive persuasion with traumagenic dissociation* may be used to describe situations where there is not only harm, threats of harm, or manipulation, but that these methods have been carried out to an extent that the targeted victim has developed inner dissociated identities or other dissociated mental states that may then be further manipulated (e.g., through the use of triggering cues), often without the victim’s conscious awareness. Groups that use methods based on coercive persuasion with dissociation or *trauma-induced dissociation with programming* should always be classified as destructive cults in the sense that they are clearly using abusive methods of mind control. Thus, we have come to define ritual abuse as trauma-based exploitation of individuals in a ceremonial or circumscribed context designed for the purpose of creating or manipulating already created altered mental states. This abuse generally occurs within destructive cults or other organized groups that share similar philosophies or intent. Given the variety of destructive cults, it may be helpful to have a method for categorizing them.[19] For this reason, we have formulated a system for categorizing possible destructive cults. These groupings are not meant to be mutually exclusive, and some destructive cults may have characteristics of more than one of them. The system that we are currently using is as follows:

1. *Destructive religious cults* are associated with a particular religious practice, belief, or system of rituals, and may be further subdivided as follows:
    a. *Destructive apocalyptic cults* promote fear and paranoia along with unfounded predictions that the world is about to end. Destructive apocalyptic cults may be distinguished from apocalyptic religions in that the former utilizes abuse, exploitation, and mind control methods. Examples would include the Branch Davidians, Order of the Solar Temple, and Aum Supreme Truth.
    b. *Destructive preindustrial cults* meet the criteria for destructive cults and also embody the traditions of pre-industrial cultures (e.g., some African and New World vodoun and Santeria sects). Although some such religions may be considered destructive cults, one should not automatically assume that all are. Again, the criteria of abuse, exploitation, and mind control are essential to defining a cult as destructive.

    c. *Destructive demonic cults* meet the criteria for destructive cults and also promote the worship or reverence toward a malevolent deity, spirit, or principle (e.g., Satanism, Luciferianism) or those cults that use others' fears of demons to manipulate or control them.

2. *Fraternal organizations that meet the criteria for destructive cults*. These groups are often secret and may also espouse particular philosophic, religious, or sociopolitical ideals (e.g., the Bizango of Haiti, the Egbo, or Leopard Society of West Africa, and various subgroups within Masonry and other quasi-Masonic groups may meet these criteria).
3. *Destructive sociopolitical cults* would include the Ku Klux Klan, Aryan Brotherhood, and Neo-Nazi groups. We would include the Christian Identity movement here, even though technically it is a religion-related. However, it is not clear that the religious aspects of the Christian Identity movement are as cultish as are their racist values and politics.[20]
4. *Organized crime groups that function as destructive cults* exist for the primary purpose of supporting criminal activities where there is a need for utilizing mind control procedures because of the nature of the crime (e.g., child prostitution and pornography may require such mind control procedures if the perpetrators are to produce children who appear to be enthusiastic about the sexual activity that would normally be aversive to them). Even though coercion is presumably commonly used in criminal groups, we don't think it would be appropriate to categorize all crime organizations as cults. However, when there is evidence of trauma-induced dissociation and programming, we would classify such a group as a destructive cult.
5. *Government and intelligence-related destructive cults* refer to the alleged organized use of cult mind control procedures surreptitiously conducted by individuals within government agencies (e.g., the CIA) to further their purposes of intelligence gathering and the facilitation of other secret operations.[21] Unfortunately, the U.S. government has allowed extensive compartmentalization of secret information and procedures that

sometimes provide a cover for unethical or illegal activities to occur without the knowledge of the general public (e.g., the Iran–Contra affair, the Watergate break-in, the use of U.S. citizens as guinea pigs for radiation research). Furthermore, because of the existence of *sensitive compartmented information*[22] within the various national security and intelligence agencies, it is possible to have secret information and operations to which other individuals with top secret security clearances have neither access nor the capacity to scrutinize. Essentially the intelligence community is "dissociated" from the mainstream populace because of the way in which secret information has been compartmented. Given this network of government-enforced secrecy, it may be difficult or impossible to fully or accurately assess many of the complaints of abuse made by survivors. Nevertheless, these reports should be seriously investigated.

6. *Experimental destructive cults* are groups that conduct coercive mind control research, typically without the victim's consent. An example would be the work of Donald Ewen Cameron, a past president of the American Psychiatric Association. He conducted experimental mind control research on unsuspecting psychiatric patients in Canada that was funded by the CIA.[23]

For the previously mentioned purposes, we have defined cult abuse simply as any maltreatment perpetrated by a cult (using the previously stated definition of *cult*). *Cult abuse* is thus similar, but not identical, to *ritual abuse,* which we define as trauma-based exploitation of individuals in a ceremonial or circumscribed context designed for the purpose of creating or manipulating already-created altered mental states. The differences between these two definitions are that cult abuse does not necessarily cause dissociation, and ritual abuse is not necessarily always carried out in a cult. Combined, the term *cult and ritual trauma disorder* is proposed as a diagnostic category to be included in a future revision of the *Diagnostic and Statistical Manual of Mental Disorders*.[24] Such a diagnosis would promote scientific and professional attention to this often-neglected problem and would aid in providing clarity for forensic evaluations.

Ritual abuse, like other forms of victimization, has been slow in being recognized. As with child abuse,[25] the abuse of women,[26] and political torture,[27] our culture has been reluctant to confront such problems directly or promptly. We all have a duty to respond to reports of human suffering. That is not to say that all such reports should be judged, *a priori*, to be true. Nevertheless, all such allegations should be given a fair hearing. Those of us who are social scientists should be willing to consider all the evidence and all possible interpretations of the phenomena in question. On the other hand, we cannot simply deny this possibility on an *a priori* basis. To do that could render abuse victims vulnerable to continued harm.

The process of making a psychiatric diagnosis follows a similar kind of logic. The clinician observes the client's physical appearance, verbal report, history, and observable behaviors, and considers all the possible diagnoses in an attempt to determine which best defines the client's problems. On March 17, 1993, I wrote to the Work Group to Revise the DSM, requesting that they consider an additional diagnosis that would account for ritual abuse to include in the American Psychiatric Association's *Diagnostic and Statistical Manual of Mental Disorders*, fourth edition *(DSM-IV).*[28] In my letter, I cited empirical research on the subject. I received a polite letter in response indicating that such a category would not be included because of a lack of empirical evidence. In my letter, I pointed out that both *DSM-III* and *DSM-III-R* have acknowledged "dissociated states that may occur in people who have been subjected to periods of prolonged and intense coercive persuasion (i.e., brainwashing, thought reform, or indoctrination, while the captive of terrorists or cultists)" (e.g., *DSM III-R*, p. 277). The diagnoses of atypical dissociative disorder and dissociative disorder not otherwise specified found in *DSM-III* and *DSM-III-R*, respectively, include the previously mentioned statements about captivity by "cultists." So did the draft of the *DSM-IV*. However, when the final *DSM-IV* (American Psychiatric Association, 1994) was published, not only was there not a category for ritual abuse, but even the term "cultists" had been deleted. The language of the *DSM-5* includes mention of "recruitment by sects/cults" (p. 306) as one of several possible descriptors for the new diagnosis, other specified dissociative disorder (formerly dissociative disorder not otherwise specified).

Given that (1) a significant percentage of mental health professionals perceive ritual abuse to be a genuine problem experienced by some patients,

(2) these patients exhibit many common characteristics, and (3) there is external corroboration for at least some of the patient’s allegations (Noblitt & Perskin, 2000), a relevant diagnostic category should be formulated. But there are other reasons to justify a diagnostic category for ritual abuse. It should be noted that although the phenomenon of ritual abuse shares features and characteristics with other established diagnoses, no single *DSM* category or any combination of *DSM* labels completely accounts for it. In order to provide reliable clinical diagnoses and advance clear research outcomes, objective diagnostic criteria are needed. Some skeptics claim that allegations of ritual abuse are fabrications reflecting the fantasies of therapists and patients, that they are delusional material, or are the result of manipulative or attention-seeking interactions. If this is the case, then clear diagnostic criteria will aid in determining the extent to which ritual abuse claims are in fact genuine phenomena versus features of factitious disorders or delusions or other problems. Such distinctions are not only important for appropriate clinical diagnosis and treatment but also are needed to provide further clarity to the growing number of legal cases where mental health professionals are asked to provide forensic evaluations. The lack of clear, empirically validated criteria for distinguishing genuine ritual abuse from other diagnoses could result in courts failing to remove children from abusive environments or in innocent defendants going to prison in misdirected criminal cases.

CHAPTER 19

Where Do We Go from Here?

In this book we propose that allegations of ritual abuse should be assessed on a case-by-case basis by competent professionals. It would be unprofessional to make clinical judgments about extreme abuse survivors on an *a priori* basis, to say that all such allegations are either true or false. The details of each case should be carefully reviewed before any conclusions are rendered. Further, professionals should be competent in terms of their training and experience to make such determinations.[1]

These goals are hampered by a widespread lack of general awareness and disseminated scholarly knowledge about ritual abuse and the effects of a backlash claiming that the problem has no basis in reality. Allegations of ritual abuse were first identified in North America in 1980, but these reports have a much older history extending to antiquity having been described in many diverse cultures. We have elaborated the details of this history, reviewed the contemporary clinical and forensic findings, and the empirical research. The theory that this is merely a moral panic does not account for the facts. This is no moral panic. Moral panics appear during circumscribed periods of time in specific locations. This phenomenon exists across the span of history and the reach of individual cultures. Malevolent witchcraft, sorcery, and traumatic rituals have been historically described not only in New England, England, Scotland, Ireland, France, Germany, Italy, and all the other nations of Christendom but also in Asia, Africa, the Pacific Rim, the Arctic, and among Native Americans in both North and South America. These traditions have appeared in Christian and non-Christian cultures. These narratives are not merely the product of speculation or fantasy by religious zealots; they transcend history and the boundaries of specific societies.

If some of these accounts are true, it is difficult to understand why anyone would perpetrate such abuses. The best evidence indicates that ritual trauma creates in its victims extreme psychological vulnerability and multiple identities that can be manipulated by those who know how. This end result appears magical and can be exploited by people who want extensive control over others who were trained this way. The perpetrators are also typically dissociated themselves, and they experience and enact the behaviors of entities created in previous traumatic rituals that they themselves endured. Ritual abuse is characteristically multigenerational and is passed down in families. There is a hierarchy of power in these ritualistic subcultures where those in command bring to bear near absolute control over others in more submissive roles. Perpetrators feel invulnerable, confident that their misdeeds are invisible, because many of us cannot, or will not apprehend what they are doing, even when we are directly and explicitly told about it. On a more prosaic level, the perpetrators of ritual abuse are also free to engage in intrafamilial sexual abuse that is typically undetected because their victims were trained in rituals to experience amnesia to these transgressions.

Many prefer to deny the truth about these allegations. When there is collateral evidence, it is often dismissed as irrelevant. Meanwhile, these narratives continue to be told. Those who disclose these stories typically have the same pattern of posttraumatic and dissociative functioning described throughout this book. Sometimes there is other corroborating evidence from other witnesses. Often survivors also show predictable dissociative responses to specific triggering stimuli. I have seen over 300 such individuals who respond in the same or similar ways to these cues with trance, automatisms, or dissociation of identity. When they are psychologically treated for trauma, they usually make progress, sometimes achieving complete recovery. Those who fully recover report that they believe the accuracy of their trauma narratives even when their therapists have taken a neutral position about the historical truth of their stories. How is it that individuals can recover from a severe psychological disorder by addressing their traumatic memories in therapy if these are indeed what the backlash calls false memories? The moral panic and false memory theories don’t account for the facts associated with ritual abuse.

Where do we go from here? There is a need for education and awareness among the public and training for professionals who are responsible for meeting the health and law enforcement–related needs of these survivors. Some crime victims and some individuals with psychological disorders are ritual abuse survivors. We cannot assist or protect them if we fail to understand their actual problems and when we lack the skill to do competent assessments. In the United States, all 50 states require child abuse reporting. How can we be generally effective in protecting children when we are unfamiliar this particular kind of child abuse? The dynamics that result in underreporting of incest and other intrafamilial child abuse are heightened among ritual abuse victims, whose claims are regularly discredited, ignored, or otherwise disregarded.

As we have seen, most of those who have found no evidence of ritual abuse are investigators like former FBI agent Ken Lanning who never actually investigated any ritual abuse allegations, clinicians who approached such allegations from a position of extreme bias, journalists who had already formed a perspective that may be inconsistent with reality, and others who appear to have an agenda that takes precedence over the facts. When the second author (PPN) participated with the Texas Occult Crimes Investigators network, these sheriffs, sheriffs' deputies, Texas Rangers, highway patrol officers, and other law enforcement agents accepted that ritual crimes were a fact because they saw firsthand the evidence and the consequences to the victims. As described earlier, many ritual abuse survivors exist in poverty, and unless clinicians are willing to see patients who are uninsured or have no means to pay for treatment, they won't be aware of them or of their status. Journalists and other media representatives have, in our experience, exhibited commitment to a particular point of view and reported only on those facets of a story that supported their preconceived conclusions. The False Memory Syndrome Foundation, despite having no scientific or empirical evidence to support its position and a membership composed of significant numbers of individuals accused, and sometimes convicted, of crimes against children, has been masterful in generating public support. The result of all of these component features has been to assume that these factions represent mainstream thinking.

So where do we go from here? Most mental health professionals are required to be licensed and maintain licensure or certification by their state professional boards. We propose that professionals who diagnose or treat ritual trauma survivors should have demonstrated competence in this area.

How do they achieve competence? Just as in any area of training, they should enroll in relevant continuing education programs and seek supervision from qualified professionals. Some graduate programs in psychology are offering courses that address these issues, including my campus where I teach a year-long course titled Trauma and Dissociation. Mental health professionals who don't seek appropriate education and supervision may be opening themselves up to the risk of malpractice and ethical violations.

As the mental health care community gains a greater understanding of the role of ritual trauma in the development of some of their clients' maladaptive behaviors and functioning, it may become easier to develop more effective, cost-efficient, and safer treatments. Increased understanding of the effects of ritual trauma may improve communication between health care providers and reduce the influence of the backlash, which has constructed obstacles to recognition of ritual abuse. A more cohesive mental health care network of better educated and more competent providers will likely have a positive influence over criminal and civil investigations into ritual abuse allegations and inspire development of empirically based forensic techniques to support law enforcement. This may also result in a resurgence of legislative efforts to develop more effective laws for the protection of children and the detection of perpetrators of such abuses. The media may follow suit by adopting a more balanced approach to their reporting.

Finally, we believe that recognition of ritual abuse as a contributing factor in the development of maladaptive thinking, behaviors, and functioning may facilitate a fresh understanding of the mental health care system, therapeutic strategies, and reinvigorate the debate between organic and acquired psychological disorders. If indeed ritual abuse accounts for even a small portion of significant symptoms consistent with dissociative disorders, posttraumatic stress disorder, bipolar disorder, borderline personality disorder, or a range of other chronic psychological problems and mental health care professionals utilize some of the techniques found to benefit such clients, they may facilitate more expeditious and accurate diagnosis, engage in more productive treatment strategies, reduce vulnerability to retraumatization, and better screen for self- or other-directed destructive ideation or impulses. Adopting what we have learned about recognizing ritual abuse may improve risk management for providers by improving their competency skills in adherence with their ethical responsibilities. Furthermore, as more mental health care providers become increasingly familiar with the residuals of ritual abuse and document their findings in their medical and psychotherapy records, health insurance documentation, reports to child protective and law enforcement agencies, and in professional publications, there will be greater transparency that will reflect more accurate numbers of ritual abuse survivors that will better inform both relevant professionals and the public. These efforts will hopefully result in the means to effectively predict and protect against some disruptive or dangerous consequences posed by some ritual abuse victims and their perpetrators. At the least, it may help prevent at least some ongoing or future abuses. Regardless of the motivating factors, we have a moral, ethical, and legal responsibility to fully investigate all allegations of ritual abuse. How we respond to this challenge is a measure of our commitment to vulnerable abuse survivors and to a scientific interpretation of the historical and contemporaneous evidence.

APPENDIX A

Cult and Ritual Trauma Disorder: A Proposed Diagnosis in *DSM* Format

---

309.82 CULT AND RITUAL TRAUMA DISORDER

DIAGNOSTIC FEATURES

The essential feature of cult and ritual trauma disorder is clinically significant distress or functional impairment with either (1) disturbing or intrusive recollections of abuse or (2) the presence of involuntary dissociated mental states, either or both of which are the result of ritual (circumscribed or ceremonial) abuse. Dissociated mental states may take the form of unwanted or intrusive dissociated alter identities, trance states, automatisms, catalepsy, stupor, or coma or coma-like states. These dissociated mental states may appear in a spontaneous manner, or they may be triggered by particular stimuli or cues or by the individual's experience of distress.

Ritual abuse consists of traumatizing procedures that are conducted in a circumscribed or ceremonial manner. Such abuse may include the actual or simulated killing or mutilation of an animal; the actual or simulated killing or mutilation of a person; forced ingestion of real or simulated human body fluids, excrement, or flesh; forced sexual activity; as well as acts involving severe physical pain or humiliation. Frequently, these abusive experiences employ real or staged features of deviant occult or religious practices, but this is not always the case. Some reports of this phenomenon indicate that the abuse may occur outdoors, in a residence, day care, laboratory or hospital setting as well as other locations. Ritual abuse is often reported in group settings, but sometimes it is perpetrated by an individual.

ASSOCIATED FEATURES AND DISORDERS

Associated descriptive features and mental disorders. Evidence of psychological trauma is usually present, and many individuals with cult and ritual trauma disorder also exhibit some symptoms of posttraumatic stress disorder, if not actually meeting the criteria for this diagnosis as well. Intrusive, and often fragmentary, memories of abuse, alternating terror and emotional numbing, nightmares, amnesia, anxiety, panic, flashbacks, phobic avoidance, and signs of increased arousal are often present. These individuals typically report chronic depression, often with cyclical characteristics. Dissociation of identity is a feature of cult and ritual trauma disorder, and dissociative identity disorder or dissociative disorder not otherwise specified are frequently concurrently diagnosed.

Features of borderline personality disorder may also often be exhibited, and occasionally individuals with cult and ritual trauma disorder will also experience brief psychotic episodes, sometimes with auditory or visual hallucinations. More commonly, these individuals experience or act out strong self-destructive urges, including attempted or actual suicide and self-mutilation. Frequently, there is a desire to injure oneself in a manner that produces blood (e.g., “I have to see blood”). Sometimes the individual will report a desire to taste, touch, or smell their own blood. Chronic and unmodulated anger and sometimes rage alternate with other moods and affects to create the impression that the individual is unpredictable in mood and unable to manage anger. Strong feelings of interpersonal dependency alternate with detached social aloofness. Narcissism and self-hatred are frequently experienced separately and together.

In children (in addition to the ones mentioned earlier) motoric hyperactivity, impulsivity, and problems in attention and concentration are seen at a rate that exceeds the baseline for children without psychiatric disorders.

Associated laboratory findings. Individuals with cult and ritual trauma disorder typically show evidence of psychological trauma and dissociation on psychological testing.

Associated physical examination findings and general medical conditions. There may be scars from self-inflicted injuries or physical abuse. Somatic symptoms with or without objective medical findings typically include headaches, gastrointestinal, and genitourinary complaints, but other reports of physical pain may be present. In some cases, physical pain will not reflect a current injury but will be a psychological component of implicit memories (e.g., “body memories”) associated with previous abuse. These individuals also frequently show evidence of mild neuropsychological impairment, which, in some cases, may result from a history of head trauma. Others have argued that psychological trauma in childhood may cause mild neuropsychological deficits in some individuals (e.g., van der Kolk, 1987) but further research is needed to clarify this question.

Prevalence

The prevalence of cult and ritual trauma disorder is unknown due to a lack of reliable information. The alleged secrecy associated with ritual abuse may make the accurate tabulation of such statistics difficult or impossible.

Course

The clinical course of these individuals is typically chronic with periodic exacerbations and sometimes partial remission of symptoms. Some of these individuals report that they continue to participate in ritual abuse either as a victim, a perpetrator, or both, typically while in a dissociated state.

Familial Pattern

A history of sexual or ritual abuse is frequently reported among family members. In particular, transgenerational victimization is a commonly indicated pattern, consistent with the familial trends associated with non-ritual sexual abuse of children. However, the extent to which ritual abuse is a transgenerational phenomenon is presently unknown. Features of dissociation are also frequently seen in family members.

Differential Diagnosis

Cult and ritual trauma disorder must be distinguished from *delusional disorder* and other *psychotic disorders* where delusional beliefs are account better for the reports of abuse, particularly when it can be demonstrated that the allegations of abuse are false. However, there are also cases where these diagnoses can exist concurrently with cult and ritual trauma disorder, particularly when corroborating evidence of such abuse exists in an individual who is also exhibiting delusional or other psychotic symptoms. Cult and ritual trauma disorder must be distinguished from *malingering* in situations where there may be forensic or financial gain and from *factitious disorder* where there may be a maladaptive pattern of help-seeking behavior. The possibility of suggestibility should also be evaluated and ruled out as a possible alternative explanation for the individual's reports of ritual abuse.

Proposed Diagnostic Criteria for 309.82 Cult and Ritual Trauma Disorder

A. The presence of clinically significant distress or functional impairment with either (1) or (2):

    (1) disturbing or intrusive recollections of abuse.
    (2) involuntary dissociated mental states consisting of at least one of the following:

        (a) dissociated alter identities
        (b) involuntary trance states
        (c) automatisms
        (d) catalepsy
        (e) stupor, coma, or coma-like states.

B. The disturbance described in A is the result of ritual (circumscribed or ceremonial) abuse.
C. The disturbance described in A cannot be better accounted for by delusional disorder or another psychotic disorder in which delusions are present, malingering or factitious disorder, or as a consequence of the patient's suggestibility.

Appendix B

Letter from the FBI, January 18, 1993

U.S. Department of Justice

Federal Bureau of Investigation

FBI Academy
Quantico, Virginia 22135

January 18, 1993

Randy Noblitt, Ph.D.
The Center for Counseling and
  Psychological Services
1143 Rockingham Lane, Suite 109
Richardson, Texas 75080

Dear Dr. Noblitt:

Reference is made to your letter of January 8th regarding a study of satanic ritual abuse.

The National Center for the Analysis of Violent Crime has not been conducting a formal study into satanic ritual abuse. I am not aware of the exact quote on the ABC television show you are referring to, but perhaps the show indicated that Special Agent Kenneth Lanning of our staff has been dealing with cases of 'ritual' child abuse since about 1983 or 1984.

Enclosed is Special Agent Lanning's monograph on 'ritual' child abuse, and the history of his personal "study" is described in the Introduction.

I hope this publication is helpful to you.

Sincerely yours,

Cynthia J. Lent

Cynthia J. Lent
Technical Information Specialist
National Center for the
  Analysis of Violent Crime

Enclosures

Notes

INTRODUCTION

1. See Cohen (2008).

2. Ammons (1996), Barrett (1997), Coomaraswamy (1996), Fletcher (2001), Herrmann-Pfandt (2002), Robbins (1997), Saliba (1998), Schmuttermaier (2001).

3. Dissociation of identity is the expression that we prefer to describe the experience and enactments of people with multiple identities that typically also include dissociation of memory (e.g., psychogenic amnesia) and dissociation of volition (e.g., automatisms). We use this term often in preference to the conventional diagnostic terminology because not everyone with dissociation of identity warrants a diagnosis (Noblitt, 1998; Noblitt & Perskin, 1995, 2000). We are also concerned about the tendency of health care providers to unnecessarily conceptualize problems in human suffering as illnesses. In a recent publication, Moskowitz, Read, Farelly, Rudegeair, and Williams (2009) stated their preference of the term *dissociated identity* over Steinberg's (1995) *identity alteration*.

4. I wasn't aware until recently that Harold Pepinsky, professor emeritus and a scholar-advocate for ritual abuse survivors, had also invited survivors to speak at the classes that he taught at Indiana University (Pepinsky, 2005; Sullivan, 2008). Like us, he was initially a skeptic until he met survivors and began to familiarize himself with the literature.

5. The American Psychiatric Association (APA) publishes a diagnostic manual that categorizes the various psychiatric disorders recognized by the APA. Periodically the APA revises this listing of diagnoses. The latest revision of the *Diagnostic and Statistical Manual of Mental Disorders*, fifth edition (*DSM-5*) was published in May 2013. Earlier, the *DSM-IV* changed the name of its previously labeled diagnosis multiple personality disorder (MPD) to dissociative identity disorder (DID). Another psychiatric diagnostic system, the *ICD-10 Classification of Mental and Behavioural Disorders*, published by the World Health Organization (1992), uses *multiple personality disorder* as their preferred term with *dissociative identity disorder* as an alternate label for the same diagnosis. In our book, both terms are used, although we generally prefer the term *dissociation of identity*, which is described in more detail in Chapter 4. The expression DID will refer primarily to the more recent redefinition of MPD by the APA in *DSM-IV* and subsequent editions of the *DSM*.

6. Many Westerners view such altered states of consciousness as exotic and possibly mythical phenomena that rarely occur in actuality. However, in an anthropological study reported by Bourguinon the investigators found that 90% of a sample of 488 societies worldwide demonstrated “one or more institutionalized, culturally patterned forms of altered states of consciousness” (Bourguinon, 1973, p. 11). Furthermore, in 51% of these societies, there was evidence of spirit possession phenomena.

7. Richard Noll (1992) also made the point that the so-called possession disorders or, as he terms it, possession syndrome, may in fact be multiple personality disorder. However, as Craig Lockwood observed, Noll has been skeptical and critical of the idea that ritual abuse actually occurs (1993, p. 17). More recently, some authors have written about the need to further expand the contemporary way of defining DID to include possession (see Spiegel et al., 2011, 2013) and the newly published *DSM-5* reflects the incorporation of the concept of possession into the new definition of DID (American Psychiatric Association, 2013).

8. See McLeod and Goddard (2005).

9. See Comstock and Vickery (1992).

10. See the lists of convictions for occult crimes (http://www.scribd.com/doc/58341665/Occult-Crimes) and ritual abuse convictions (http://ra-info.org/faqs/ra-convictions/conviction-list-ritual-child-abuse-cases/). For more detail about some of the individual cases, see Vuorinen (2007), Hooper (2002), Byrne (2011), Bratersky (2010), Hall (2013), Turner (2011), Winer and Ho (2013), and Cohen (2012). In a case described by Dandan and Cecchi (2000), the court determined that two sisters had ritually murdered their father, but they were found to be not guilty by reason of insanity.

11. Also see Fielding (2013), Lawton (2013) and the video-recorded interview of Dr. Valerie Sinason on YouTube (http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=1MPgw1fclMg).

12. See Chapter 6 for a more detailed discussion of the empirical and forensic evidence regarding ritual abuse.

13. See http://survivorship.org/_wp/.

14. See http://ritualabuse.us/.

15. See http://www.tag-uk.net/.

16. A study by Perry (1992) showed that 88% of the members of the International Society for the Study of Multiple Personality and Dissociation who responded to her questionnaire indicated “belief in ritual abuse involving mind control and programming” (p. 3). In a survey by Bottoms, Shaver, and Goodman (1991), the authors found that 30% of their national sample of members of the American Psychological Association had seen at least one case involving alleged ritualistic or religion-related abuse. Of these, 93% believed that their patients had actually been harmed.

CHAPTER 1

1. As I was later to learn, the Star of David, or *Magen David*, was not in use as a symbol of Judaism until a later time—long after the building of the Abbey Gate. At that time in history, the hexagram was an occult symbol (see Walker, 1983, pp. 401–403).

2. See Marshall (2009).

3. At that time, I was not aware of the controversy associated with the Hell Fire Clubs' notoriety, notably the club made infamous by Sir Francis Dashwood more accurately known as the Friars of Medmenham. Some authors interpreted Dashwood's enterprise merely as a group that provided an opportunity for sexual license (e.g., King, 1991). Others considered it to be a truly diabolical organization (e.g., Raschke, 1990). Howard (1989) argued that the Friars of Medmenham were associated with Freemasonry and other occult but not strictly satanic groups. Certainly, some combination of these various interpretations could also be true. See also Ashe (1974), Bloy (2002), Chancellor (1925), Colquhoun (1975), Lord (2008), Mannix (1959), McCormick (1958), Towers (1986).

4. Dashwood himself was a member of Parliament and chancellor of the exchequer. Some of the other members were also highly placed in the British government, reputedly with connections to the royal family. See Crenshaw (2012) for more information about the Hell Fire Clubs, including pictures of the hand-dug underground caves of Medmenham Abbey.

CHAPTER 2

1. Some scholars have recently expressed greater optimism for people with this diagnosis. See Schulz and Nelson (2012) and Zanarini (2012).

2. Unfortunately, as previously mentioned, current trends in health care insurance are increasingly limiting sufficient coverage to adequately treat individuals with chronic psychiatric disorders. Hopefully, newly enacted legislation in the United States will make more mental health care services available to greater numbers of people. On November 8, 2013, the Departments of Health and Human Services, Labor, and the Treasury issued the final rule to implement the Paul Wellstone and Pete Domenici Mental Health Parity and Addiction Equity Act of 2008 (MHPAEA).

3. Although borderline personality disorder is a common contemporary diagnosis, it was only in 1980 that the *DSM-III* listed it as an independent category (American Psychiatric Association, 1980). Borderline personality disorder in the *DSM-5* has been discussed in the literature (Samuel et al., 2012; Sarkis, 2011). Also see Miller, Morse, Nolf, Stepp, and Pilkonis (2012) regarding the dimensional conceptualization of the diagnosis in the *DSM-5*. Some have suggested that subtypes of borderline personality disorder can be identified (Critchfield, Clarkin, Levy, & Kernberg, 2008).

4. See Kopala-Sibley, Zuroff, Russell, Moskowitz, and Paris (2012).

5. At that time the expression *emotional lability* was commonly used to describe such powerful, rapid changes in emotion. The concept of *emotion dysregulation* is more often used in the recent literature, although Berking and Wupperman (2012) note: “Although emotion regulation has become a popular scientific concept, the quest for conceptual clarity, valid assessment, and accurate conclusion about implications has only begun” (p. 132).

6. See Bandelow, Schmahl, Falkai, and Wedekind (2010), Magerl, Burkart, Fernandez, Schmidt, and Treede (2012), Niedtfeld et al. (2010), and Reitz et al. (2012).

7. See Rogers and Acton (2012).

8. Also see Brunet (2009).

9. Weissman’s (1993) book, *Of Two Minds: Poets Who Hear Voices*, provides an interesting discussion of Homer, Virgil, Shakespeare, Milton, Smart, Blake, Wordsworth, Coleridge, Tennyson, Arnold, Bronte, Browning, Rossetti, Dickinson, and Yeats, with regard to the notion of poetic inspiration by way of hearing voices.

10. The term *psychodynamic* is often used to refer to psychological approaches that assume that psychological functioning involves mental processes that interact among themselves in predictable ways, just as in engineering and physics the term *thermodynamics* refers to the interactive properties of heat, temperature, work, and energy. Not all psychological treatment methods are psychodynamic in nature. Some are more behavioral and focus on external observable features of psychological functioning.

11. For example, Marsha Linehan (1993) has developed a primarily behavioral treatment approach for individuals with borderline personality disorder.

12. Also see Schmahl et al. (2009).

13. The phenomenon of childhood trauma by primary caregiver with resulting affect dysregulation was discussed by van Dijke, Ford, van Son, Frank, and van der Hart (2012). However, see Bornovalova et al. (2012). Distel et al. (2012) found trait anger to significantly covary with borderline personality disorder with trait anger identified as genetic (54%) and due to environmental influences (46%). Hopwood, Thomas, and Zanarini (2012) also theorized about borderline personality disorder being associated with a trait that they call *hyperbolic temperament* that is presumably both genetically and environmentally determined.

14. See Patterson and Kim (1992) who reported that in their national survey, which inquired about sexual abuse, “almost half ” (p. 125) of their respondents who admitted to being sexually abused in

childhood also indicated that they had never before told anyone about the abuse.

15. Unfortunately, the recent studies on child abuse seem to indicate that it is more prevalent than most of us have previously recognized.

16. I sometimes use the expression *inner world* to refer to a state or states of subjective experience. A person's inner world consists of thoughts, sensations, emotions, and so on. For some people, their inner world also consists of internalized images and conceptualizations of other people. In some cases, these internalized entities give the appearance of exerting influence or control over the person. Nevertheless, when I use this kind of language it is meant to be metaphorical.

17. See Benner and Joscelyne (1984), Bliss (1980), Buck (1983), Clary et al. (1984), Horevitz and Braun (1984), and Zanarini and Jager-Hyman (2009). Additionally, dissociation is increasingly associated with the diagnosis of borderline personality disorder as a moderating variable (Barnow et al., 2012) as well as one of the criteria for that diagnosis (American Psychiatric Association, 1994, 2000, 2013).

18. The idea that DID is underdiagnosed occurs because few mental health professionals know how to make the diagnosis and because the patients with DID frequently cope with it through denial. This argument is similar to the point of view of many alcohol treatment specialists, who explain that alcoholism is frequently underdiagnosed because professionals do not typically know how to correctly make the diagnosis and because most alcoholics are in denial and they underreport their use of alcohol. See Howell (2011).

19. *U.S. v. Greene, 1999.* Also see Farmer, Middleton, and Devereux (2008).

CHAPTER 3

1. Many clients are said to show some signs or symptoms of borderline personality disorder but not enough to accurately make that diagnosis. Many of these borderline-like patients are conceptualized within a “borderline spectrum.”

2. For a more recent discussion of this problem, see Caruso et al. (2013) and Lynch and Lobo (2012).

3. Also known as Occam’s (or Ockham’s) razor. One application of parsimony in comparative psychology is called Lloyd Morgan’s canon, the idea that we should not attribute human characteristics in interpreting the motivation and behavior of lower animals. Many psychological theories are unparsimonious and make multiple unnecessary assumptions.

4. See Blackmore, Tantam, Parry, and Chambers (2012) and Wilberg et al. (1998).

5. See Jacob et al. (2010).

6. In role-playing, the patient plays the role of someone else in a group exercise organized and presented somewhat like a skit. For example, a shy person might play the role of a more extroverted individual in order to examine internal processes (e.g., thoughts and feelings) related to introversion-extroversion. In role reversal, the participants are paired together and asked to reverse their roles. One person plays the role of another person and vice versa. This exercise helps people empathize with others and see different points of view (which naturally result when playing the role of another person and while experiencing that other person acting out one’s own style of behavior).

7. Although the *DSM-III-R*, published in 1987, listed the term *hysterical neurosis* in parentheses along with the diagnostic labels conversion disorder and dissociative disorder, the *DSM-IV*, published in 1994, no longer uses references to hysteria in context with these diagnoses. The *ICD-10* (1994), another diagnostic nomenclature published by the World Health Organization, no longer uses the diagnosis hysteria as a general category under which conversion disorder and a variety of dissociative disorders were listed. The questions of whether conversion disorder should continue to be listed in the *DSM-5* was debated, and according to Reynolds (2012) would be best resolved in a multidisciplinary dialog that is consistent for both the *ICD-10* and *DSM*.

8. Conversion disorder is listed under the somatic symptoms disorder category (formerly somatoform disorders) in the *DSM-5*. In the *ICD-10*, conversion disorder is listed under the dissociative disorders. Spiegel, Loewenstein, Lewis-Fernández, Sar, Simeon, Vermetten, Cardeña, and Dell (2011) make a compelling case for the listing of conversion disorder under dissociative disorders in a future revision of the *DSM*.

9. In the *DSM-IV-TR*, dissociative disorders included dissociative amnesia, dissociative fugue, dissociative identity disorder, and depersonalization disorder along with a miscellaneous category for dissociative disorders not listed elsewhere as dissociative disorder not otherwise specified. According to the *DSM-IV*: “The essential feature of these disorders is a disruption in the normally integrated functions of consciousness, memory, identity, or perception of the environment” (American Psychiatric Association, 1994, p. 477).

10. One can refer to the *DSM-5* for the details about the two new miscellaneous categories (formerly DDNOS). Psychiatric diagnoses do not represent universal or unchanging categories. They are constructs that are periodically revisited and revised. The criteria whereby the various diagnoses are included and defined in the diagnostic manual are based on the opinions of the members of the American Psychiatric Association’s task force and individual work groups assigned to revise the manual. Obviously, these opinions vary depending who is assigned to the task force and work groups. The approved diagnoses may be subject to a variety of potential biases and political influence and their authors are not infallible. Even with regard to the most recent revision, the *DSM-5*, there are selective, but significant, demonstrated problems with reliability, and thus also validity (Regier et al.,

2013). There is also a continued concern that many task force and work group members have financial interests associated with various pharmaceutical companies (Ledford, 2013) and this may introduce additional bias to the process. For additional general criticism of the *DSM*, see Anand and Malhi (2011).

CHAPTER 4

1. Horevitz writes: “Little evidence exists of a causal relationship between hypnotizability and dissociative disorders” (1994, p. 438).

2. Another alternative explanation for what appears to be spontaneous trance is trance that results from some unidentified triggering stimulus. Often both the therapist and client are unaware when a client dissociates to a triggering stimulus. Many ordinary stimuli such as common words, phrases, sounds, music, and so on, can be triggering (Noblitt, 1998).

3. Additionally, note Weitzenhoffer’s (1989, p. 161) critical comments regarding the scientific credibility of Spiegel’s hypnotic induction profile. Also see Barnier and Council (2010), Goodman (2008), and Sutcher (2008).

4. See also Braun (1984).

5. The term *host* is used by some to refer to persons with dissociation of identity when they are experiencing and enacting their usual identity. From our perspective, this term is metaphorical.

6. The concept of resistance in therapy is not a new one. Psychoanalysis traditionally includes what is called the interpretation of resistances.

7. That is, the host, or usually the presenting personality, was criticized. The “Evil One” was quite happy with “himself ” in both cases.

8. Obviously a real baby could not spell. Alter personalities are not literally what they sometimes believe or present themselves to be.

9. Dr. Lefkof developed an inpatient psychiatric program largely limited to patients with dissociative disorders. Patients came from all over the United States to attend his inpatient program housed in a local psychiatric facility. The demand was great, and although the program occupied two separate units in the hospital, there was almost always a waiting list for admission. His work received national recognition when it was featured on CBS television’s news program *48 Hours*.

10. The ISSMP&D has changed its name and is now the International Society for the Study of Trauma and Dissociation (ISSTD).

11. The journal *Dissociation* was discontinued in 1997. The ISSTD now publishes *The Journal of Trauma & Dissociation.*

12. In their recent book, *Dissociation and the Dissociative Disorders: DSM-V and Beyond* (Dell & O’Neil, 2009a), members of the ISSTD were charged with developing a consensus definition of dissociation. They were unable to do this because of their divergence of opinions (see Dell & O’Neil, 2009b). It was curious that this book of more than 864 pages did not discuss ritual abuse—neither the evidence for it nor against it.

13. For a contemporary review of the history of the concept of dissociation, see van der Hart and Dorahy (2009).

14. Although Janet is sometimes credited with coining the term *dissociation*, it had been used earlier in France. See van der Hart and Dorahy (2006).

15. The concept of *hypnoid states* was Breuer’s. Sigmund Freud (1910) later discounted the importance of this phenomenon.

16. Although dissociation is commonly conceptualized as a defense mechanism, not all in the field of mental health would agree with this view, which may be overly simplistic. Dissociation may represent a variety of different psychological processes. Although dissociation typically disrupts conscious awareness of the events or knowledge dissociated, the process of dissociation is not necessarily itself an unconscious act of psychological defense. Many patients report that they consciously dissociate when they feel overwhelmed. To some extent, dissociation may represent the normal breaks of consciousness that occur periodically as well as normal reactions to trauma (e.g., shock).

17. Those empirical studies of defense mechanisms that have been conducted do not always support the assumption that the presumed defense mechanism is indeed a defense mechanism (see Baumeister, Dale, & Sommer, 1998).

18. Radical behaviorists would go even further than this, arguing that mental states can never be studied in a truly scientific manner and that psychology should limit itself to observations of the behavior of organisms.

19. In a study by Putnam et al. (1986), the authors found that it had taken an average of 6.8 years from the time when the patients first entered treatment before the diagnosis of MPD had been made.

20. See Laurence and Weinhouse (1994, pp. 282–283) for further discussion of ECT. Zaidner, Sewell, Murray, Schiller, Price, and Cunningham (2010) describe the onset of a dissociative disorder after treatment with ECT.

21. The artwork produced by the clients ran the gamut of what appeared to be “doodles” to very sophisticated, and sometimes graphic, representations.

22. The process of asking dissociated clients to free-associate to drawings of geometric figures has often resulted in dramatic trance and other dissociative reactions. Because of the significant responses to such stimuli, I constructed an assessment device based on this principle called the picture association method (PAM).

23. Many dissociated individuals have alter personalities that are sometimes construed to be “blockers.” Many of these blocker alters seem to have the ability to induce a confused state in the patient, especially when the therapy session is to begin. The patient may feel that she is in great distress and needs help, but her mind is blank.

24. In one of the major textbooks on the subject of hallucinations is a chapter by anthropologist Weston La Barre (1975) in which the author describes some of the ritual uses of trance and hallucinatory experiences among a variety of preindustrial cults.

25. See Zingrone, Alvarado, and Agee (2009) regarding “aura viewers.” The experience of seeing auras was significantly correlated with dissociation as measured by the DES.

26. More about shamanism can be found in Chapter 9.

27. According to the “Guidelines for Treating Dissociative Identity Disorder in Adults, Third Revision” of the International Society for the Study of Trauma and Dissociation (2011): “Integration is a broad, longitudinal process referring to all work on dissociated mental processes throughout treatment” (p. 133). Further, this publication states: “Fusion refers to a point in time when two or more alternate identities experience themselves as joining together with a complete loss of subjective separateness” (p. 133). An excellent paper describing this process and its characteristics was published by Greaves (1989). This therapeutic procedure may be distinguished from the religious rite of exorcism, wherein inner entities that are considered demonic are ostensibly eliminated through exorcism (see Chapter 5). Integration and fusion, on the other hand, are conceptualized as serving to unite, rather than discarding the various unhelpful or unhealthy dissociated entities.

CHAPTER 5

1. A Gallup Poll conducted in 2007 showed that 21% of the U.S. population do not believe, 8% are not sure, and 79% believe in the existence of the devil (Newport, 2007). In a Harris Poll, 62% reported they believed in the devil and hell (Stoddard, 2007).

2. See Euteneuer (2010) and Zeddies (2000). For more background regarding adolescent involvement in satanism and occult practices, see Dumont and Altesman (1989), Johnston (1989), Larson (1989b), Mercer (1991), Moriarity (1992), Moriarity and Story (1990), and Simandl (1997).

3. We respect Daniel Ryder (pseudonym) and his work, but I have encountered some complaints from ritual abuse survivors regarding their experiences in 12-step programs. Although some survivors are able to successfully work the 12 steps, some report feeling "triggered" by some of the traditional elements of the program (e.g., standing in a circle and saying the Lord's prayer). We need to further explore ways of modifying the traditional 12 steps and formulate alternative approaches so that survivors can effectively use these and other support groups.

4. Some alter personalities consider themselves to be on "the dark side" and bear the names of demons from Christian writings, for example, Satan, Lucifer, Beelzebub, Belial, Leviathan. Some "dark" alters also have the names of other demonic entities, for example, Asmodeus, Astaroth, Baal, Kali, Lilith. Others have the names of Christian vices, for example, Envy, Hatred, Lust. Some of these malevolent alters are identified simply by ordinary human names, for example, Sarah, Elizabeth. Some of these also consider themselves to be demons. Some consider themselves to be the "souls of dead people." Some alters "on the dark side" consider themselves to be merely under the control of an evil internal or external force.

5. I had the pleasure of meeting Dr. Friesen at the First Annual Christian Conference on DID and Satanic Ritual Abuse, where he and I were both presenters. Additionally, I felt particularly honored to be invited to speak at this conference because it is well known that I am a secular therapist. Perhaps Christians and secular professionals will learn to work together in the interest of survivors.

6. I have never witnessed anything that I recognized as supernatural in my thousands of hours of work with ritually abused clients. To me it is more parsimonious scientifically to consider all the inner entities as alter identities (or as some prefer, to use the terms *alter personalities*—as distinguished from less developed entities that some call alter fragments). I have never observed any miraculous events or demonstrations of supernatural power whatsoever. Nevertheless, this is a fascinating question. Are we observing in these DID patients the same kind of phenomenon described in the New Testament Christian gospels regarding possessed people who were said to have been cured by Jesus and his apostles? In his book *Jesus: The Evidence*, author and scholar Ian Wilson (1988) presents the argument that many of the people that Jesus was said to have cured may have had DID. North et al. (1993) cite Miller's (1989) observation that the biblical passage Mark 5:1–3 may be such an example (i.e., "My name is Legion; for we are many").

7. I admire his courage in presenting his point of view, which does not appear to be a popular one in the secular intellectual climate. Unfortunately, some individuals have chosen to ridicule him for his beliefs under the pretense that their theories are more "scientifically" acceptable. This is a kind of intellectual snobbery and has no place in science. Scientists have no special insight into "ultimate truths" and to say otherwise is deceptive or naive.

8. The rites of exorcism are not limited to the Catholic Church. Exorcism has been practiced by Protestants as well as Jews, Muslims, and a variety of pagan sects. Some Protestants prefer what they call deliverance, a spiritual act that is briefer and less ritualized than exorcism. Friesen's work (previously cited) directly advocates deliverance and other modes of spiritual healing. Tom Ball is professor emeritus at Spring Arbor University and a pastoral counselor in Spring Arbor, Michigan, and has written about the importance of prayer for inner healing and deliverance for ritual abuse

survivors (Ball, 2008). However, some authors are skeptical about the long-lasting benefits of exorcism. Crapanzo (1977) cites Oesterreich (1966) and Huxley (1952) regarding their observations that the effects of exorcism are not often of long or lasting duration. Anthropologist Felicitas Goodman (1988) appears more optimistic about the effectiveness of exorcism. Bowman (1993) reported data on 15 DID patients and Frazer (1993) described seven case studies of patients who had undergone exorcism. Both authors conclude that exorcism may be harmful to DID patients. Also see Crabtree (1985, 1993b).

9. Also, Thomas B. Allen (1993) provided a fascinating and detailed case study of exorcism in his book *Possessed*. The author stated that he has tried to describe his findings in an objective manner rather than as an attempt to persuade or convert the reader. He wrote that he is an agnostic who was raised as a Roman Catholic.

10. Hawkins used the term *demonization* to refer to demon possession.

11. However, glossolalia has sometimes been viewed as a psychiatric symptom (e.g., Campbell, 1989, p. 307). See Pattison (1974) for a psychiatric interpretation of individuals with glossolalia that is related to their religious beliefs. Also see Maloney and Lovekin (1985) and Venkatachalam (2011). Semenyna and Schmaltz (2012) offer a skeptical psychological interpretation of glossolalia.

12. Many charismatic and Pentecostal Christian congregations espouse a belief in various religious experiences that could be accurately labeled as possession states and possession trances (Goodman, 1973). However, such phenomena are not limited to speaking in tongues. The Anastenaria ritual of northern Greece reportedly invokes possession by St. Constantine and is described by Danforth (1989). The participants walk on burning coals, sometimes, they say, without injury. Similar practices have occurred in the United States according to Danforth’s account. Another Christian sect with possession-like features involved in its rituals are Shaker sects such as the Indian Shaker cult described by Barnett (1972) and the Shakers of St. Vincent (Henney, 1973). Also worthy of note are the altered states of consciousness associated with the Christian snake-handling cults of the southern United States described by La Barre (1962) and Galanter (1989).

13. See Ally and Laher (2008) and Bourguinon (1973, 1974).

14. See Banks (2010), Bellamy (2008), Callan (2008), Kligman (1981), Mischel and Mischel (1958), and Ravenscroft (1965).

15. See Bliss (1980, 1984b), Bliss and Jeppsen (1985), Coons (1985), Coons and Stern (1986), Horevitz and Braun (1984), Kluft (1984), Putnam et al. (1986), Solomon (1983), and Stern (1984).

16. See Boddy (1988), Hess (1990), Mulhern (1991a), Oke (1989), and van Duijl, Nijenhuis, Komproe, Gernaat, and De Jong (2010).

17. See Friesen (1991), Putnam (1989)—although it should also be noted that Putnam has expressed disbelief in claims of ritual abuse (e.g., see Putnam, 1991).

18. See De Jong and Reis (2010), Mulhern (1991a), Oesterreich (1966), and Oke (1989).

19. See Friesen (1991, 1992).

20. See Oke (1989).

21. See Kluft (2005).

22. See Oke (1989).

23. See Putnam (1989).

24. See Cardeña, van Duijl, Weiner, and Terhune (2009) and Oesterreich (1966).

25. See Putnam (1989).

26. See Mulhern (1991a) and Oesterreich (1966).

27. See Putnam (1989).

28. See Lewis (1971) and Mulhern (1991a).

29. See Orne and Bates (1991).

30. See Cohen and Barrett (2008), and Mulhern (1991a).

31. See Putnam (1989).

32. Curiously in the *DSM-IV,* possession was listed as a diagnostic condition, but under the diagnosis *dissociative disorder, not otherwise specified*. Even more peculiar was the identification of "possession" in the *DSM-IV* specifically with India. Possession is not limited to India; it is a worldwide phenomenon (e.g., see Bourguinon, 1973, 1974; Cohen, 2008; Crapanzo, 1977; Yap, 1960). Furthermore, the *DSM-IV-TR* did not seem to recognize the difference between possession states that resemble DID versus those that resemble other varieties of DDNOS (e.g., possession trance). The term *multiple personality disorder* was changed to *dissociative identity disorder* in 1994. I personally welcomed this particular change because it helps diminish the sensationalism associated with the term MPD and because it may not be appropriate to consider all the inner entities of DID patients to be actual personalities. On the other hand, this *DSM-IV-TR* taxonomy did not provide a clear rationale for distinguishing dissociative identity disorder from dissociative disorder, not otherwise specified, and it did not address the contemporary phenomenon of ritual abuse that is being reported internationally. See Appendix A, "Cult and Ritual Trauma Disorder: A Proposed Diagnosis in DSM Format." I have come to use the term *dissociation of identity* because it seems to more clearly delineate the characteristics I see in my clients and in those with whom I consult who meet the *DSM* criteria for dissociative disorders and borderline personality disorder (where the criterion "severe dissociative symptoms" is met may in fact be examples of dissociation of identity). The inclusion of possession in the definition of DID in the *DSM-5* is a step in the right direction.

33. See Chambers (2010) and Koehler, Ebel, and Vartzopoulos (1990).

34. See Hendrickson, McCarty and Goodwin (1990) and Mulhern (1991a).

35. See Oesterreich (1966).

36. Many individuals with DID report that some of their alternates do not experience pain. Furthermore, some alters report special abilities that the host personality does not have or does not recognize having. For example, some alters reportedly do not need to wear prescription glasses. I am unqualified to say whether this allegation is true, but it is clear that when some individuals are dissociated as some alters they believe this. My attempts at explaining these phenomena rely on no supernatural assumptions. I hypothesize that this occurs due to the mistaken belief of the alters that their vision is different or that there is some other physical explanation accounts for this.

37. See Raiswell and Dendle (2008).

38. See Braude (1991) and Ross (1989).

39. See Noblitt and Perskin (2000).

40. A number of individuals with dissociation of identity have been determined to be psychologically disabled by the Social Security Administration. Those who were once able to work and who meet the requirements may be entitled to Social Security Disability Insurance (SSDI) benefits and receive Medicare health insurance in addition to a monthly income. Those who may not have been able to work sufficiently to qualify for SSDI may be entitled to Supplemental Security Income (SSI) and receive Medicaid in addition to a small monthly income. These individuals are more likely to be identified with other psychiatric diagnoses such as schizophrenia, bipolar disorder, and posttraumatic stress. However, a review of the medical records of many such identified individuals reveals the same pattern of traumatic child abuse as well as lifelong victimization and dissociative experiences that are consistent with individuals experiencing dissociation of identity.

41. In her recent book *Healing the Unimaginable: Treating Ritual Abuse and Mind Control,* Alison Miller (2012) wrote that we attribute all instances of dissociative disorders to ritual abuse, but in actuality we only use ritual abuse as a causal explanation for involuntary dissociation of identity and possession. Our understanding is that other kinds of dissociation including trance and amnesia may be caused by a variety of factors.

42. Morton (1977) has described a similar phenomenon anthropologically. Ethiopian participants in the *wuqabi* cult are "forced to rely increasingly on the other members of the cult group, and especially the leader around whom the group is organized" (p. 198). This occurs because of the

devotees' desperate need of assistance in managing the harmful effects of the possessing "spirits" and the tendency of the family and community to abandon these individuals.

43. In an informative report by Gould and Cozolino (1992) the authors explained how self-destructive actions of alters may have the purpose of motivating the ritual abuse survivor to stay in communication with the given cult.

44. This was copied verbatim from the patient's journal, with no corrections in spelling, punctuation, or grammar. The only change is the name, *Sheila*, which is a pseudonym for this individual's alter personality who took responsibility for writing the note. As in all other discussions of individual client histories appearing in this book, I did not use the correct name of the alter or of the patient in order to protect that individual's privacy.

45. This may in part explain the commonly reported self-abuse involving bloodletting among these patients. The other common reason for such self-abuse is reportedly enforcement of the cult rules, for example, as punishment designed to enforce the secrecy. Curiously, the community of psychiatrists seems to be largely unaware of the reported relationship between self-mutilation and ritual abuse. In December 1992, the *American Journal of Psychiatry* published two letters discussing a previous article about self-mutilation. Although they both made reference to the reported bloodletting in ceremonies associated with the ancient Mediterranean mystery cult of Cybele, neither made any comment about the current allegations of mutilation in contemporary cults. See Novello and Primavera (1992) and Winchell and Stanley (1992).

46. See for example, Cervantes (1994).

CHAPTER 6

1. An earlier version of this chapter was adapted from *Accessing Dissociated Mental States* (Noblitt, 1998a).

2. Also see Faller (2003).

3. Curiously, some of these authors have written commentaries that are skeptical that ritual abuse occurs very often and blame therapists for many of these “false memories.” This position is taken even though there are no objective data in existence to warrant such statements that are potentially damaging toward therapists who are currently being threatened by civil lawsuits for treating individuals who allege that they are survivors of ritual abuse. In some instances, these patients will recant and they or their families will blame the therapist for the memories of trauma. This has occurred even in cases where the trauma memories predated any treatment by the therapist in question. More curious is the failure of these researchers to integrate their own and others’ research findings with these speculations. Their citation of other studies appears to be highly selective and their interpretation of their own outcomes is inconsistent. See Bottoms, Shaver, and Goodman (1996) and Bottoms and Davis (1997).

4. We are not claiming that this is impossible. We do believe that it is possible. We simply know of no proven cases after having exhaustively searched the literature. Therefore, this hypothesis is speculative.

5. Hudson (1994) updated her original sample to 27 children.

6. Adapted from Hudson (1991, pp. 11–21).

7. For more information about this case, see Associated Press (2005).

8. One reported case was from Wales.

CHAPTER 7

1. Many individuals with dissociation of identity experience strong attachments to dolls and stuffed animals. See Barlow, Cromer, Caron, and Freyd (2012).

2. Biofeedback therapy is a procedure in which the patient is attached to a device that monitors one or more physical functions (e.g., skin temperature, muscle tension). The patient is given instructions regarding how to change that particular function while observing the change on the monitor device. Biofeedback therapy has been found to have a limited degree of effectiveness with some pain patients and patients with certain vascular and musculoskeletal disorders. Some researchers and clinicians have questioned whether biofeedback's effectiveness is due to "nonspecific factors" such as the placebo effect.

3. *Classical conditioning* is a term that describes reflexive or spontaneous learning that occurs when certain stimuli are paired together in the presence of the person or the animal expected to do the learning. The original work was done by Ivan Pavlov. Razran (1971) has presented an interesting theory describing a variety of similar forms of conditioning or learning that he believes may occur in different organisms with differing levels of neural complexity. In any case, there may be a variety of different techniques for instilling learning, and these techniques do not all require the voluntary cooperation of the subject exposed to those techniques. Kroger and Fezler (1976) have described a combination of hypnosis and conditioning techniques for clinical use that they call "imagery conditioning."

4. This is my explanation for how dissociation of identity is learned. It requires a capacity for deep trance. Perpetrators use psychological trauma to produce psychological shock in the victim. Psychological shock results in dissociation of consciousness or trance. Perpetrators typically pair the psychological state of shock with a neutral stimulus that can be a word, a phrase, a touch, the visual image of an object, music, and so on. Later when this stimulus is presented to the survivor, he or she enters a trance state. If the stimulus is repeatedly paired with trauma, the stimulus produces an increasingly deeper trance. Why would anyone do this to another person? The ability to create a deep trance state on command renders victims vulnerable in a variety of ways. For one, these victims are vulnerable to repeated sexual abuse by predators who know how to access such states of amnestic immobility. With additional training, the survivors can learn to take on the roles of alter identities where specific tasks are enacted on command in trance with amnesia. Many of these tasks involve nonconsensual sex, including incestuous relations. Thus, ritual abuse is a way to make incest safer for the predator. Ritual abusers reportedly share children with one another or sell them to others for sexual purposes.

5. This incident was not unique. Quite a few of these patients have had alter personalities emerge in therapy reporting that it was their job to sexually please the person who had accessed them. A near universal observation by psychotherapists is that they encounter psychotherapy patients who sometimes become overtly seductive during therapy sessions. Freud noted this phenomenon and he invented the term *transference* to explain it. However, we also need to consider the possibility that some patients are behaving seductively because they have programmed mental states that were trained to interact seductively, and these states are sometimes inadvertently accessed in therapy.

6. See Smith (1993).

7. I presented a paper on the subject of programming at the annual 40th Annual Meeting of the American Society of Clinical Hypnosis (Noblitt, 1998b) and in more detail in a monograph (Noblitt, 1998a)

8. Declassified CIA documents show that the Manchurian Candidate phenomenon was considered as a possible explanation for the assassination of President John F. Kennedy. Because all

the relevant investigatory documents have not been declassified, we cannot be sure precisely what the CIA concluded about this question.

9. I have had several patients who have described similar scenarios. They recall being raped or sexually abused by an individual who incapacitates them after saying a certain word, phrase, or other similar signal, including hand grips and facial touching. When exploring this phenomenon in therapy, these patients are initially unable to explain the event or the apparent power of these signaling stimuli. With further interviewing, however, it frequently happens that an alter personality is able to emerge and explain the process and even give an accounting as to how the programming was originally established, for example, as Karen's alter, "Kathy," did. In other cases, as in Jenny's, alters emerge and explain their sense of obligation to be a sex object for the male.

10. Flashing lights and other illuminated images and figures are frequently used as accessing stimuli according to ritual abuse survivors. These stimuli reportedly acquire the ability to incapacitate the victim after the stimuli have been paired with trauma in the same manner as has been explained in this book regarding other such programming.

11. According to Ashe (1974), Aleister Crowley, the British occultist, "had hypnotic powers which he used freely for seduction" (p. 235).

12. Unless they also know how to use this technology of programming and accessing.

13. This was copied verbatim from the patient's journal notes. Although I frequently attempt to test such alleged accessing procedures, I did not in this case, in part because it involved blood and a drug that should only be used by prescription. I have found that some accessing procedures are generic, that is, the procedure seems to affect survivors from different backgrounds, cults, and geographical regions. Other access procedures appear to be more idiosyncratic or specific to a particular survivor. The effects of such signals can be tested by introducing them unobtrusively (and testing to see that the signal was in fact unobtrusive to the person witnessing it).

14. Although it is often helpful to introduce these stimuli unobtrusively, it is not necessary to do so on all occasions. In some instances, the examiner will want to observe how the patient responds when there is no effort to disguise the procedure.

15. Similar threats have been described by other therapists (see Miller, 2012).

16. Some patients report they experienced abuse in cults that forcibly involved them in training violent behaviors (e.g., martial arts) because the cult wanted "warriors." In order to provide for the safety of the "trainers," those being trained under such conditions would often learn to cease violent behavior on the command of a particular cue or triggering word.

17. Some survivors have alters who purport a sincere devotion toward a demonic entity such as Satan or Lucifer. These alters sometimes claim that they have voluntarily endured horrible rituals as a means of expressing their profound commitment to these "demons," whom they sometimes revere as gods. However, in the majority of the cases I have encountered, there is a more agnostic and skeptical view of these demons' existence or status as gods.

18. Margaret Smith (1993) also makes this point.

19. For ethical reasons (e.g., possible conflict of interest, confidentiality required in the professional relationship), these survivors who spoke with my students were not my psychotherapy clients.

CHAPTER 8

1. Free association is a psychotherapy technique with a long history. It is also the basis for the Rorschach technique and word association test. I will often ask clients to “tell me what is in your mind” or to free associate using imagery, “What do you see in your mind?”

2. Previously we described alter identities created by cult programming. Many clients also believe that they are capable of producing alter personalities when under great duress. From a scientific point of view, we do not really know the details about how alter personalities are formed because it would be unethical to torture someone to find out empirically how this works. We think it is safe to say, however, that lasting alter personalities cannot be created merely by suggestion or hypnosis.

3. Morey (2005) discussed David Winnicott’s review of *Memory Dreams and Reflections* and Winnicott’s erroneous conclusion that Carl Jung evidenced childhood schizophrenia. According to Morey, Jung had a “split personality.” Jung’s own autobiography seems to indicate that he, his mother, and his cousin, Helene Preiswerk, experienced dissociation of identity.

4. As I was later to learn, a variety of different psychologists thought that it was normal to experience dissociated “inner people.” Morton Prince called them *sides* (Prince, 1925). John and Helen Wakins identified them as *ego states* (Lemke, 2007; Frederick, 2005). David Lester used the term *subselves* (Lester, 2007). Jay Noricks wrote about *parts* and parts therapy (Noricks, 2011).

5. Although we agree that people normally assume many roles, we do not believe that these sometimes disparate roles exist in a state of dissociation or amnesia without a history of repeated circumscribed and profound trauma.

6. The mental health professions traditionally interpreted voice hearing as a sign of psychosis, although some professionals make distinctions about contextual or content factors of the heard voices. Psychotherapists working with clients with dissociation of identity have found that the experience of hearing voices is common among those in this population. There is also a growing body of literature about voice hearers that seems to reflect a more dissociative explanation. See Beavan and Read (2010), Connor and Birchwood (2012), Dillon (2010), Fenekou and Georgaca (2010), Hammersley, Read, Woodall, and Dillon (2007), Lawrence, Jones, and Cooper (2010), Longden, Madill, and Waterman (2012), and Moskowitz (2012).

7. This is ironic. During the time that Carl Jung was engaged in his own psychological self-exploration after a “confrontation with his unconscious,” he recorded his own thoughts and mental images in a set of *Black Books* that were collated as his *Red Book*. It was never published during his lifetime and only was shared among a select group of confidants. This remarkable volume was kept essentially hidden by the Jung family after his death until it was published in 2009 as *The Red Book: Liber Novus*. On page 290 of *The Red Book*, there is a heading titled “The Sacrificial Murder,” referring to a ritual where a child was killed. In this scene, Jung described himself eating a piece of the dead child’s liver after being commanded to do so. Jung acknowledged that in this horrific act he was also sacrificed. His statements are consistent with contemporary survivors’ narratives of ritual abuse. Was Jung, himself, a ritual abuse survivor? As a previous note indicates, Jung’s own autobiography portrayed him, his mother, and his cousin, Helene Preiswerk, as having experiences of dissociation of identity. He writes about an ultimate god, called Abraxas, the integration of the Christian G-d and Satan (Jung, 1992). In his book *Answer to Job*, Jung criticizes the Creator for allowing Job and his family to be tormented at the behest of Satan as per the story in the Book of Job in the Old Testament (Jung 1952/1973). According to Terry Melanson (2009), one of Jung’s ancestors, Johann Sigmund Jung, was a member of the Bavarian illuminati.

8. In part, “Damon’s” role was that of an enforcer.

9. There are a variety of different spellings for *vodoun,* a term that is preferred by authors such as Wade Davis (1985, 1988), Maya Deren (1991), and Rosemary Guiley (1989). Sometimes the terms *voodoo* and *voodooism* are more commonly used in Louisiana and East Texas, respectively.

10. We use the term *sorcery religion* or *sorcery-oriented religion* to refer to religious belief systems and practices in which sorcery or witchcraft plays an important role. To modern Westerners, the notion of syncretizing magical practices with religion may seem nonsensical, but many historians of religion have argued that magical beliefs are common, especially in the early stages of the more traditional Western religions including Judaism and Christianity (e.g., see Neusner, Frerichs, & Flesher, 1989; Thomas, 1971; Vetter, 1973). However, the notion of combining religion with evil magic is even more difficult for modern Westerners to grasp but it is important to understand that the Western notion that sacredness is exclusively associated with goodness is not universally accepted within all world religions.

11. According to Gersi (1991) who lived for five years in Haiti studying and participating in vodoun ceremonies, Haitian vodoun has also been influenced by the occult practices of the indigenous Arawak Indians and a variety of traditions from Europe, including “many aspects of Freemasonry, as well as esoterism, the Cabala, occultism, alchemy, astrology, metaphysics and Theosophy” (p. 127).

12. Juju is has been shown to be a common method of control in the trafficking of African girls and women to Europe for sexual purposes. Juju rituals are used to instill fear and possible dissociative responses in these individuals. See Anti-Slavery International (2011), Guillemaut (2008), and Martin (2012).

13. Although Walter B. Cannon did not mention it, it is certainly possible that some vodoun deaths have been self-inflicted by alters who were signaled to do so by the “bone pointing” or other ritual acts.

14. Gersi (1991) provided a similar, but supplementary description, regarding the creation of zombies. He also argued that zombies are drugged to reinforce the illusion that they have died and that they are later revived by the *bokor,* or sorcerer. In the process of their revival, Gersi describes severe abuse and what he calls “brainwashing” of the revived individual.

15. Gersi (1991) describes it thus: “Ninety percent of Haitians are Voodoo worshippers; the great majority of them are also devout Catholics” (p. 128). Metraux (1959) stated that the vodoun follower thinks “of himself as a good Catholic” (p. 323).

16. Wade Davis (1985, 1988) described what he calls the secret societies within the general community of vodoun worshippers, which Haitians generically and interchangeably call *Bizango* or *Sans Poel* (i.e., “those without skin”). According to Davis (1988), the initiation into one of the Bizango secret societies leaves “the clothes on your back in shreds” (p. 262).

17. See “Three Busted” (2013).

18. Compare this with M. Smith’s (1993) citation of the British occultist Aleister Crowley’s observation that “behind the exterior of the church is an interior church, the most hidden of all communities” (p. 19). See Crowley (1979, p. 16) for the original source cited by Smith.

19. It is noteworthy that although AIDS has been a significant problem in the nation of Haiti, it has not been prevalent in the adjacent nation of the Dominican Republic, both of which share the same island of Hispaniola in the Caribbean. See Cantwell (1988, p. 129).

20. And, as previously mentioned, the alters who inflict the harm are often called *enforcers.*

21. The point that programming is based on classical conditioning has also been made by Gould (1993a, 1993b) and Gould and Cozolino (1992).

22. *Orisha* is the Yoruban term for their gods or spirit representations of god. This term is used in Yoruban Juju and New World Santeria that is influenced by the Yoruban culture. In Macumba, which is roughly the Brazilian variant of Santeria, the word *Orixa* is often used to refer to these spiritual entities.

[23] However, one should note that Gonzalez-Wippler (1992) acknowledged that there is secrecy associated with Santeria, and as a result, she did not describe it in its entirety. In this same publication, the author related an incident that occurred when she was a child. She was taken to the seashore by her caretaker and stripped of her clothing in a manner that was so frightening that it caused her to cry. The author was apparently being introduced to the Santero ocean goddess Yemanya (also identified as Iemanja in discussions of the Macumba cult). Gonzalea-Wippler also states that the Santeros drink the blood of their sacrificial animals while possessed by the *Orishas*.

[24] Although the term *Brujeria* is normally reserved for malevolent witchcraft, especially incorporating Aztec traditions, the term is occasionally but rarely used to denote “white” witchcraft as well (e.g., see Devine, 1992).

[25] During the excavation of the burial site accomplished under police guard by Constanzo’s accomplices, they volunteered information that there were other burial sites on the property. The police already feared the ramifications of their discovery and decided to abandon their search for more victims.

[26] The notion that Quimbanda represents the dark side of Macumba practice is also expressed by anthropologist Esther Pressel (1973, 1977).

[27] Earlier in this chapter, the concept of *enforcer* alter personalities was mentioned. Enforcers punish the host person when the “secrets” are divulged or when other infractions of inner “rules” occur.

CHAPTER 9

1. Also see Simmons (1980), *Witchcraft in the Southwest,* for additional information about Native American witchcraft along the U.S. Rio Grande Valley along with discussion of possible Spanish and European influences on Indian beliefs.

2. See Bowden (2007), Burkert (1983), and Davies (1981).

3. Couliano (1991) argued that the distinctions are often blurred in reality.

4. As an interesting aside, Michael Harner was also a founding member of the Church of Satan (Barton, 2003).

5. See Eliade (1964, p. 65).

6. The placebo effect is a nonspecific treatment response presumably due to the expectation by the client that he or she will get well.

7. E. Fuller Torrey (1972) made an interesting comparison between witch doctors and psychiatrists.

8. In most shamanistic cures, it is the shaman, rather than the client, who is drugged or otherwise in an altered state of consciousness.

9. The "spirit slave" is merely a dissociated mental state, comparable to an alter personality. The "spirit slave" was originally created by the witch or sorcerer in a traumatizing ritual most likely during the childhood of the victim, who was also amnestic for the ordeal and for the existence of the spirit slave. Such a process could occur in the same manner in which MPD clients are typically amnestic for the abuse that created their dissociation and initially unaware of their alter personalities

10. This is why the individuals who were triggered in group therapy described in Chapter 7 were unable to identify the cause of their disorientation.

11. However, Musopole (1993) indicated that the terminology used by Africans to describe practices associated with magic, witchcraft, and sorcery may not completely coincide with Western notions, and there may be misunderstandings as a result.

12. Anthropologists, historians, and other scholars sometimes distinguish witchcraft from sorcery. According to Keith Thomas (1971), witches are often falsely believed to possess psychic powers by which they are able to harm others, whereas sorcery simply involves the knowledge and use of spells or incantations. The distinction made by Thomas is essentially a restatement of Evans-Pritchard's (1980) *Witchcraft, Oracles and Magic among the Azande*. In an earlier article, Evans-Pritchard (1931) differentiated witchcraft, magic, and sorcery. However, Macfarlane (1970) argued that distinctions such as sorcery versus witchcraft and "white" versus "black" witchcraft should take into consideration both the means and ends of these practices in an effort to understand how they are different. Occult historian Colin Wilson (1971) distinguished witchcraft and sorcery by characterizing witchcraft as based on a passive approach to using psychic abilities from an enlightened or benign frame of reference. Sorcery, according to Wilson, is more active, systematized, and self-serving. Wilson's distinction would probably be welcomed by Wiccans, white witches who view their craft as essentially an enlightened and humane nature-worshipping religion. See Chapter 12 for more about Wicca. Hoyt (1989) argued that the distinctions made by scholars between witchcraft and sorcery are not particularly meaningful and that the terms are essentially identical.

13. As per the distinction between witchcraft and sorcery made by Robbins (1981).

14. For example, Mulhern (1991) cited Gibbal, who compared the relatively peaceful prepossession experiences of some Brazilian possession cults in comparison with a cult in Mali in which the possession experience resulted in significant physical damage to the person possessed. Gibbal noted that the latter cult commonly subjected girls to the traumatizing practice of infibulation. Is it possible that the potential for violence in a dissociated state is somehow related to the degree or extent of violence perpetrated on the victim during the "training" rituals? Within the field of

psychiatry, many professionals believe that there is a relationship between self-mutilation and a history of child abuse. In fact, in a study by Walsh and Rosen (1988), the authors found that the presence of child abuse was among the most highly correlated with self-mutilating behavior in comparison with five childhood conditions that they investigated.

15. See Kluckhohn (1962), Mair (1971), and Marwick (1982).

16. This coincides with the research findings that show child abuse often has a mutigenerational pattern. See Belsky (1993) for a review of the literature and critical analysis.

17. Larner (1974) argued that what is called modern Western witchcraft does not resemble historical and anthropological accounts of witchcraft.

18. See Piggott (1987).

CHAPTER 10

1. Also see Smith (1993, p. 60).

2. See Sinason (2011).

3. Some observant Jews use this particular spelling (G-d) because the accurate depiction of “the Name” is considered disrespectful. In an effort to be sensitive to their traditions, we are using this spelling as well. However, in instances where we a quoting a different author, we use that author’s spelling.

4. For example, regarding the Branch Davidians, the Solar Temple Lodge, or Aum Supreme Truth. Televised reports of the Japanese cult Aum Supreme Truth indicate that this cult had an Armageddon date of 1997 and like the cult survivors that I have talked with in the United States, they planned a military-style revolution with genocide of those who were not useful to them.

5. I used the expression “cultists” here, but the original author used the term “satanists” at this point in the article. I wanted to make the point that not all cultists or all devil worshippers are necessarily satanic. Some cult survivors describe “organizations” in which apparently demonic rituals transpire but in which no particular reverence or regard for Satan is shown (e.g., in some Luciferian-inspired fraternal organizations and secret societies).

6. See previous note (5).

7. Masson’s quotation of Freud leaves out a sentence. It is as follows: “Do you remember how I always said that the medieval theory of possession, held by the ecclesiastical courts, was identical with our theory of a foreign body and a splitting of consciousness?” (Freud, 1966a, p. 242).

CHAPTER 11

1. See Faraone (2009), Gilchrist (2008), Herva, Nordqvist, Herva, and Ikaheimo (2010), Nakamura (2004), and Tong Enzheng, and Von Falkenhausen (2002). Ironically, David Frankfurter (2006b) wrote about archeological evidence of ancient occult ritual practices that are also reported by contemporary ritual abuse survivors while denying that ritual abuse actually occurs.

2. See Couliano (1991).

3. Some authors have emphasized other aspects of Livy’s report such as the brutal suppression of the cult by mass executions (see Burkert, 1987).

4. I have had clients report abuse in cults that engaged in Bacchic revelry, ceremonial magic, and abuse.

5. See Burkert (1987), Da Costa (1964), and Howard (1989).

6. For example, see Cavendish (1967, p. 82) and Webb (1989, p. 94).

7. See Blood (1994), Hill and Goodwin (1989), Katchen (1992), Raschke (1990), and Smith (1993).

8. See Carus (1974).

9. See Lyons (1988).

10. See Russell (1984).

11. See Russell (1972).

12. See Daraul (1990) and Howard (1989).

13. However, the authenticity of Simon Magus as a Gnostic founder is debated. See Couliano (1990, pp. 59–62), Filoramo (1990, pp. 142–152), and Rudolph (1987).

14. See Pagels (1981).

[15] See Kertzer (1993, pp. 120–121).

[16] However, some later Gnostics (e.g., Bogomils, Cathari) simply argued that the devil created the material universe.

[17] See *The Hypostasis of the Archons*, in Robinson (1988, pp. 162–163); *On the Origin of the World*, in Robinson (1988, pp. 173–175).

[18] However, some medieval Gnostics were said to have believed that the souls of humans were really the spirits of "fallen angels" who had been ousted from heaven by G-d. See Couliano (1990, pp. 207–208).

[19] See Pagels (1981, p. 35).

[20] See *The Testimony of Truth*, in Robinson (1988, p. 455).

[21] See *The Gospel of Phillip*, in Robinson (1988), p. 159; *The Testimony of Truth*, in Robinson (1988, pp. 450).

[22] See MacGregor (1979, pp. 38–39).

[23] Also see Matthew 13:11 for a similar verse.

[24] See Rudolph (1987, pp. 214).

[25] This is described in Hill and Goodwin (1989) in the mental health literature and Filoramo (1990) and Rudolph (1987) in the literature of the history of Gnosticism.

[26] See Filoramo (1990) and Lyons (1988).

[27] Paul Tice (1994) writes about the Bogomils from a sympathetic point of view, yet noting that they were influenced by Messalians who "indulged in sexual excesses" (p. 59). The *Encyclopedia of Witchcraft and Demonology* (1974) explicitly describes the Gnostics as predecessors to satanists in their philosophy and rituals (pp. 170, 191–192).

[28] See Mather and Nichols (1993, p. 177) and Steffon (1992, p. 205).

[29] See Blavatsky (1877/1988), vol. 1, p. 299; Walker (1983, pp. 553, 818).

[30] Jewish people sometimes note that the Kabbalah as it is cited in occult literature does not reflect a genuine or legitimate understanding of their traditions. There are prohibitions against teaching Kabbalah to non-Jews and those who lack the necessary spiritual maturity.

[31] See Faerstein (2013) and Lachter (2010).

[32] See Brenner (1999).

[33] Also spelled Caballa, Qabalah, Kabala, and others. The word *Caballa* is often intended to represent the Christian version of the Kabbalah literature. *Qabalah* refers to the Hermetic or occult interpretation.

[34] This name is sometimes spelled Ain Soph. Spellings differ partly because of the inexact and variable transliterations from Hebrew.

[35] See Couliano (1991).

[36] Carl Jung was also significantly influenced by the Caballa (Hoeller, 2012; Joseph, 2007). For further reading regarding the Kabbalah and its variant interpretations from a scholarly (philosophic and historical) perspective, see Idel (1988) and Jacobs (1990). See Fielding (1989) and Fortune (1984) for explanations of the Kabbalah within the context of modern Western occultism.

[37] Nitzsche (1975) described other variants of homunculi and related internalized "entities" that have appeared in Classical and Medieval Europe, including the *genius*, *daemon*, and so on. These entities were often perceived to be spiritual and capable of influencing or actually exerting possession over some people. Magical rituals and ceremonies were sometimes conducted in an effort to placate or negotiate with these perceived entities.

[38] Some of the details of Margaret Murray's theory do not seem plausible, nor supported by evidence (Simpson, 1994), although her general notion of a witch cult extending to pre-Christian times is possible (Roberts, 2000), but for many it is unproven. Our own thesis is that there has been a long history of ritual abuse used for the purposes of creating dissociation of identity, a method of psychological functioning that could be misinterpreted as *spirit possession*. We believe that ritual abuse is passed down in families intergenerationally. In some cases, these practices are labeled

witchcraft, but other attributions are also used. Are all people who practice witchcraft ritual abuse survivors? Not according to our theory—only those who have been traumatized in rituals that are used to create or control dissociated identities and other dissociated mental states.

39. See Blavatsky (1877/1988, vol. 2, p. A52).

40. Also see Robertson (1991, pp. 183–185).

41. This point was discussed by Lilith Mahmud (2012), although she also mentioned the Masonic lodge, Propaganda Due (P2), that was under the jurisdiction of the Grand Orient of Italy until its charter was revoked. P2 was found to have numerous associations with organized crime and political intrigue in Italy.

42. See Knight (1986), Larson (1989a), Shaw and McKenney (1988), Short (1989), and Smith (1993).

43. Numerous Christian writings directed against Gnostic practices in the ancient and medieval periods point out that Gnostics sometimes participated in orthodox church activities and "pretended" to be "good Christians" or otherwise appropriately integrated into the Christian community. See Moore (1975). This apparent syncretism parallels vodoun and Santero sects, where the cult members are also encouraged to practice Christianity concurrent with their cultic activities. Regarding Haitian vodoun, see Gersi (1991, p. 128) and Metraux (1959, p. 323) illustrating the symbiosis between cultic and church activities among these cult practitioners.

44. See Ataç (2005).

45. This position can also be found in Robinson's (1989) *Born in Blood: The Lost Secrets of Freemasonry*. Although the author is not a Mason, he is clearly sympathetic toward the Masonic point of view.

46. See also Stanton (1992, p. 37).

47. See *The Apocalypse of Adam* in Robinson (1988, p. 280); *The Gospel of Phillip* in Robinson (1988, p. 146); The *Hypostasis of the Archons* in Robinson (1988, p. 165). Also see Rasimus (2005).

48. See Charles (1917). *The Book of Enoch* is not accepted as canonical in Judaism or Christianity, except for the Ethiopian Orthodox Tewahedo and Eritrean Orthodox Tewahedo Churches. However, the book of Genesis, which is canonical both to Judaism and Christianity, does describe a part of the story also found in the *Book of Enoch* that includes the angels' mating with mortal women, their producing offspring, the Nephilim, and G-d's decision to destroy all living things except for Noah and his arc (and presumably those fish who were not harmed by flooding) by way of the flood. *The Book of Enoch* is nonetheless quoted as an authoritative in the New Testament canonical Epistle of Jude.

49. However, Sir Francis was expelled from the Druid Order in 1743.

50. Even Warnke (1991) took this position.

51. Also see Chapter 1.

52. According to Macoy (1989, pp. 170–171), a Masonic writer, the Illuminati were a moral and worthwhile organization who were unfairly maligned.

53. The O.T.O. are one such tradition. Also see L. Bathurst IX° (1990, p. 153).

54. As I indicated earlier, Hermeticism is a form of pagan Gnosticism. In fact, among the Christian Gnostic documents recovered at Nag Hammadi, some Hermetic writings were also found. The term *hermetic* refers to Hermes Trismegistes, or, in other words, Hermes, thrice blessed.

55. Some say Crowley was not a satanist; others say he was. King (1989b, p. 221) discussed this controversy.

56. See Crowley (1988, pp. 365–384; 1990; 1991, pp. 345–361).

57. Crowley (1991) alleged having performed human ritual sacrifice on average of approximately 150 times every year between 1912 and 1928 (p. 95n). Some writers doubt the literal truth of this allegation but interpret this claim in the light of ritual magic exercises that Crowley engaged in involving masturbation. Such a ritual would not literally consist in the murder of living persons but from a Gnostic point of view would mean killing *potential* babies. Such behavior would not be sinful

to such a Gnostic but in this spiritual tradition was regarded as holy. Such a ritual was thought to release the fragmented particles of the ultimate god (whom the followers of Basilides called Abrasax or Abraxas) from their imprisonment in matter. Such practices were also similar to some of the claims made by Epiphanius mentioned earlier. Preventing souls from becoming trapped in material bodies through conception was a virtuous act to many Gnostics.

58. See Crowley (1991, pp. 428–429).

59. See Noblitt (1998a) and Short (1989, pp. 96–97).

60. See King (1989a, p. 119).

61. Linda Blood (1994) wrote that Eldred Flowers was second in command in Michael Aquino's Temple of Set.

62. L. Ron Hubbard was intimately involved in the life of Jack Parsons, an eminent California rocket scientist and onetime head of the O.T.O. in Pasadena, California.

63. See also Bainbridge (1978) and Parfrey (2009).

CHAPTER 12

1. It is interesting to note the number of patients diagnosed with both MPD or DID and multiple sclerosis (MS) (and other physical diagnoses including chronic fatigue syndrome, lupus, and other disease processes with sometimes nonspecific etiology). One patient alleged to be a high-level programmer once responded to my observation with the statement, “MS comes from too much electricity.”

2. Guiley (1989) uses the term *wizard*, which she says is etymologically similar to *wise man* or *woman* to describe these magical folk healers.

3. The fact that such folk healers have existed in England as they have all over the world is not evidence that they constitute the remnants of an ancient western European pagan nature-worshipping cult. For example, in Haining’s (1975, p. 92) book *An Illustrated History of Witchcraft*, he provided a photograph of one of the pages of the book of spells and conjurations of the famous English cunning man James Murrell of Essex (1780–1860). The page shows Hebrew characters, geometric figures, a Seal of Solomon, and two inverted pentagrams, suggesting Kaballistic influence (also possibly a satanic, Luciferian, or other diabolical magical style) rather than true indigenous paganism.

4. See *Encyclopedia of Witchcraft and Demonology* (1974, back cover), and Haining (1975, pp. 18–19, 114).

5. Sanders was considered the founder of the Alexandrian covens, a major faction within Wicca.

6. The word *tetragrammaton* refers to the Hebrew four-letter word for G-d. Because Hebrew does not write out its vowels, the pronunciation cannot be precisely determined from these four letters. The exact pronunciation of the name of G-d was considered sacred and not to be used by rank-and-file membership. The word *tetragrammaton* is commonly used in occult rituals that may derive from unauthorized Kaballistic sources and interpretations.

7. The Hebrew word *Elohim* is plural and is sometimes translated literally as “the gods.” This term is a curiosity because it is found in the beginning of Genesis, although it was usually translated simply as “G-d” rather than “gods.” However, the Gnostics may have used this fact to illustrate their case that the universe had not been created by the ultimate unknowable god but merely by the demiurge and his assisting Archons (who were often construed to be the angels mentioned in the Bible and noncanonical scriptures). For some Gnostics, these Archons, along with the Demiurge (often considered an Archon, himself), may have been the Elohim.

8. However, it is only fair to note that some authors have expressed skepticism, or at least uncertainty, about the claims of Aleister Crowley’s involvement in the origins of Wicca (e.g., Adler, 1986).

9. The term *coven* derives from the word *convent*. It is curious that there are so many alleged parallels between occultism and monasticism (e.g., the Knights Templar, the Friars of Medmenham). The number 13 may be significant because there are 13 lunar cycles in a year, or, in other cases, among cults that aim to mock Christianity the number 13 may represent Jesus and his 12 apostles. Curiously, the Friars of Medmenham (i.e., the Hell Fire Club) also utilized rituals where members dressed as monks, and the women who participated in their orgies presented as nuns. Also, the inner circle of the Hell Fire Club consisted of 13 members.

10. Jungian views, along with the concept of subpersonalities, were discussed earlier, in Chapter 8.

CHAPTER 13

1. Survivor Margaret Smith (1993, pp. 78–79) also made this point.

2. However, some Christians might maintain that Satan is the primary representation of evil in the world, regardless of whether other cultures recognize him as such.

3. In *The History of the Devil and the Idea of Evil,* first published in 1900, Paul Carus (1974) provided a secular and scholarly account of demonology in a variety of cultures, mostly European, many of which were pagan.

4. Moody appears to have inaccurately used the phrase *Church of the Trapezoid* in referring to the Church of Satan, Order of the Trapezoid.

5. In Linda Blood's book *The New Satanists* (1994), the author wrote she had a personal relationship with Michael Aquino and wrote a relatively detailed description of the Presidio case.

6. See Guest (1987).

7. For example, by Anton LaVey.

8. A cowl is a more tight-fitting hood-like article of apparel. The one brought to me was made of fabric that was somewhat stretchable and when it was worn it looked something like a ski mask with one opening exposing the wearer's two eyes.

9. See Golston (1992).

10. Symonds, a biographer of Aleister Crowley, and one of the editors of Crowley's autobiography, *The Confessions of Aleister Crowley,* notes Crowley's conception of himself as a god (Symonds, 1979, p. 21).

11. Notice that the patient often uses the plural term "we" in making reference to herself. This is one of the frequently observed features of multiple personality disorder.

12. In some cases, perhaps many cases, the "gods" described by ritual abuse survivors may reflect not so much satanism as other varieties of occultism, for example, as described in Chapter 11.

13. Although some claim that there is actually a psychic or spiritual power to be achieved in such cults, I have never observed any evidence of that. Instead, the power that can be obtained is (1) the license to inflict harm on others during such ritual activities and (2) the opportunity to learn programming skills to influence or control others by using programming cues (often outside the context of the ritual activities).

14. See, for example, McShane (1993, p. 207).

15. Certain very high-ranking positions are held exclusively by certain individuals. However, in the tradition of some Gnostics (see Pagels, 1981), a variety of individuals may have some rotating roles of relative importance (e.g., priestess or high priestess).

16. Some authors have argued that the Cathari (whose name means "pure ones") could never have engaged in the horrible rituals identical or similar to satanists. However, the process of dissociation works best when there are markedly different (e.g., religious) views present in the same individual. I have previously explained that some vodoun cults specifically require that their members also be Roman Catholics. Additionally, one might argue that one (misguided) method of achieving the strict kind of purity followed by the "perfect" of the Cathari, which included absolute celibacy, would be to occasionally dissociate as some other "person" or "spirit" who could act out the unacceptable sexual and aggressive urges of the "perfect one," who would later be amnestic for the transgressions committed by his or her alters. Additionally, the "perfect one," in part satiated and, to some degree, traumatized, became adverse to further sexual and aggressive stimulation or gratification. Girard (1972) argued that the violent rituals sometimes found in religions and cults were devised to provide a way of controlling and redirecting socially deviant behaviors. Also, from a point of view more sympathetic to the Cathari, Guirdham (1977) argued that not all Cathari were expected to live a pure life. The priestly *parfait* were expected to live an ascetic life but the *croyants,* or rank-and-file believers, had no such duty.

17. According to Michelet (1992), some medieval folk were driven toward satanism and witchcraft out of a sense of desperation. Such extreme feelings were in responses to the deprivations and horrors of medieval life, including the evils inherent in the feudal system.

18. It may be interesting to note that the word *discipline* derives from the word *disciple*.

19. See also Chavez (1974) and Weigle (1976).

20. See Flint (1991) and Thomas (1971).

21. That is, not assigned to a particular parish and thus not under any close supervision.

22. See Frazer (1963, pp. 61–62).

23. See Hyatte (1984).

24. These historical events have been interpreted from several different perspectives. See King (1989b, 1991), Lyons (1988), Mossiker (1969), Robbins (1981), Russell (1988, 1991), Stevens (1991), and Summers (1992).

25. The inverted cross so often equated with satanism may have actually been a Gnostic symbol. The Gnostics viewed the cross with contempt, as a Roman Catholic symbol of the material instrument used to create the illusion that the spiritual Jesus had been killed.

26. For a recent English translation, see J. K. Huysmans (1986).

27. The word *Palladian* has several meanings. In architecture, it refers to a style developed from the work of Andrea Palladio, a celebrated architect of the 16th century, who began his career as a skilled mason. In occultism, the term has referred to the Palladium, which in Greco-Roman mythology and religion was “the scepter of Priam, in the likeness of a male sex organ” (Graves, 1955, p. 266). According to Walker (1983), this instrument was used in a ritual to “marry” the Vestal Virgins to the phallic god of the Palladium in Rome. The expression *Palladian* also refers to an allegedly Luciferian-Masonic sect in Charleston, South Carolina, which was described by Leo Taxil and later denied by him (See Howard, 1989; King, 1991; Waite, 1970; Webb, 1974). It is also unclear whether the alleged Palladian cult in Charleston is related to the Order of Palladium, also called the Sovereign-Council of Wisdom established in Paris on May 20, 1737, and described by Ragou (see Spence, 1993, p. 314), which according to Macoy (1989) first appeared in Douay, France.

28. See Summers (1992, pp. 152–153).

CHAPTER 14

1. However, if we restate the argument to say that allegations have been made that some destructive cults operate at a national or international level, then, at least, we have articulated a problem that is easier to test.

2. California came later. See Ad Veritatem IX (1990, pp. 95−97).

3. See http://oto-usa.org/wordpress/.

4. Although Crowley's writings refer to child sacrifice, O.T.O. members deny that Crowley, or their organization, have engaged in such rituals. In one of their newsletters, an article appears that describes the legal duty to report any suspected child abuse (see http://lib.oto-usa.org/agape/agape.7.2.pdf).

5. Ironically, the book in which this misinformed chapter appears is highly recommended by Ken Lanning (1992).

6. See also Deborah Lipstadt's works, *Beyond Belief* (1986) and *Denying the Holocaust: The Growing Assault on Truth and Memory* (1993). These books attested to the significant denial that accompanied the murder of six million Jews and the current revisionist efforts to rewrite history in this spirit of denial. This illustrates the tendency that many of us have to deny crimes of humanity, including ritual abuse.

7. See Christopher Simpson's (1993) *The Splendid Blond Beast*. He cites the Office of the United States Chief Counsel for the Prosecution of Axis Criminality (1946, p. 753).

8. In Parkin's (1987) book *Memory and Amnesia*, he wrote that amnesia for crime "has been widely documented" (p. 162), although citing a study by Taylor and Kopelman (1984): "Amnesia was not observed in any person charged with a non-violent crime" (Parkin, 1987, p. 162).

9. Wasil-Grimm relies almost exclusively on the testimony of recanters who appear to have a self-serving agenda, members of the FMSF, and other known supporters of the FMSF philosophy, to support her thesis. Her book is notable for its lack of a critical and impartial examination of the arguments.

10. Pamela Freyd's "anonymous" story was cited in Goldstein (1992). Her daughter Jennifer Freyd objected because there was sufficient biographical information released by her mother that her privacy had been compromised.

11. Additional information regarding Underwager may be found in Michael Newton's book *Raising Hell.*

12. See Geraci (1993, p. 12).

13. See Crook, and Dean (1999) and Pope (1997).

14. See Dallam (2001).

15. By Ganaway's own report, featured on ABC's *Primetime*, he was engaged by a number of insurance companies to review claims for services rendered by mental health professionals to individuals who alleged histories of child abuse.

16. Even Michael Yapko acknowledged in his book *Suggestions of Abuse* (1994, p. 91) that "therapists and researchers have no reliable means to distinguish authentic from false memories." It is not surprising that this book is an indictment against therapists who respect their patient's reports of child abuse memories. He noted the support and assistance of many of the members of the FMSF advisory board and thoughtfully provided the address and telephone number of the FMSF headquarters (p. 213) in a chapter subheading titled "Some Therapy Guidelines for the Falsely Accused."

17. See National Center for Victims of Crime (n.d.). *Child Sexual Abuse Statistics*. Retrieved from http://www.victimsofcrime.org/media/reporting-on-child-sexual-abuse/child-sexual-abuse-statistics http://www.cdc.gov/ViolencePrevention/pdf/SV-DataSheet-a.pdf.

CHAPTER 15

1. A GAF of 21–30 indicates behavior that is considerably influenced by delusions or hallucinations or serious impairment in communication or judgment (e.g., sometimes incoherent, acts grossly inappropriately, suicidal preoccupation) or inability to function in almost all areas (e.g., stays in bed all day, no job, no home, or friends). A GAF of 31–40 indicates some impairment in reality testing or communication (e.g., speech is at times illogical, obscure, or irrelevant) or major impairments in several areas, such as work or school, family relations, judgment, thinking, or mood (e.g., depressed man avoids friends, neglects family, and is unable to work; child frequently beats up younger children, is defiant at home, and is failing at school). See *Quick Reference to the Diagnostic Criteria from Diagnostic and Statistical Manual of Mental Disorders* (*DSM-IV*, p. 48).

2. Ibid.

3. Although the Mental Health Parity Act of 1996 (effective January 1998) was designed to ensure that benefits for psychiatric services were available on a par with other health services, “loopholes” in the law have created additional problems for the insured. Previously, insurers were allowed to limit psychiatric services within policies such that they could provide a policy that allowed $1,000,000 in benefits exclusive of psychiatric services, and limited psychiatric services to $50,000 per lifetime. With the Mental Health Parity Act, many insurers are limiting the number of visits a patient can have with a mental health professional. This is clearly not in the best interests of individuals suffering from chronic and debilitating psychiatric symptoms. Under the new Affordable Health Care law, all such caps have been removed along with restrictions based on preexisting conditions.

4. While one of my staff was visiting a psychiatric inpatient unit at the nearby medical surgical hospital to pick up paperwork for newly admitted patients, one of the nurses commented to her that one of the psychiatrists was conducting “wave” therapy. When my assistant asked what that meant, the nurse explained that when the doctor walked through the unit and waved at the patient, he charged $300 a day. This was evidently a widely known practice among many of the psychiatry staff.

5. Allegations of patient brokering, unjustified lengthy hospitalizations, use of physical restraints, and malpractice resulted in state and federal investigations and ultimately resulted in a multimillion dollar settlement to former patients as well as substantial fines against the facility, its parent company, and its medical staff. See http://www.businessweek.com/stories/1993–10–17/put-the-head-in-the-bed-and-keep-it-there.

6. The Texas Department of Mental Health and Mental Retardation (MHMR) merged with other specialty state health agencies in 2003 and became part of the Texas Department of State Health Services. At the time we wrote the second edition of *Cult and Ritual Abuse* (2000), it was estimated that there were in excess of 40,000 people awaiting services through MHMR. Things have not improved much since the current governor, Rick Perry, and the Republican-dominated state legislature has made deep cuts to social welfare programs and have thus far refused to participate in the Affordable Healthcare law’s insurance exchange that would provide states with additional federal dollars to pay for Medicaid health insurance for its impoverished citizens.

7. In spite of the divisiveness in the community of mental health professionals, there seems to be much agreement among those who work with dissociative disorders that ritual abuse is a genuine, rather than imaginary, problem (see Perry, 1992).

8. The term “high priest” is not necessarily indicative of a high rank in many cultic organizations.

CHAPTER 16

1. These patients volunteered in exchange for assurances that their images and voices would be digitally obscured to prevent identification.

2. In *Lessons in Evil, Lessons from the Light,* Ken Lanning was described as obstructive and unhelpful in the investigation of this particular patient's allegations of abuse (Feldman, 1993, pp. 297–298).

3. The court did not find the therapist guilty of implanting false memories of abuse in the patient's mind. However, the therapist was ascribed a portion of responsibility in the case because he kept insufficient patient records to demonstrate the appropriateness of his therapy strategy. This exemplifies a common ethical dilemma among therapists who frequently must choose between documenting allegations by patients that may be self-incriminating and could cause considerable hardship to the patient in the event of their release via subpoena in legal proceedings such as divorce or custody hearings, or by keeping more cryptic, less informative notes that protect the patient's confidentiality but which may leave the therapist at risk.

4. The case of Father William Porter, convicted of sexually molesting many children over the course of his career, comes immediately to mind. Other instances include scandals involving Father Rudy Kos, and Reverends Jim Bakker and Jimmy Swaggart.

5. Given that it is impossible to know whether the accused were innocent or guilty, do we not have a moral obligation to refrain from making assertions one way or the other?

6. We visited with Marymae Cioffi in Los Angeles and she provided us with copies of the Eberle's work. Until actually seeing these publications, we were somewhat skeptical of this story. It is still incredible to us that a national television talk show host would allow child pornographers to critique a case of ritual abuse while suppressing the history of the authors' previous work in child pornography. Eberle's book is cited as one of various "sources by reliable authors and researchers" by Hans Sebald (1995, p. 245) after a warning that "a lot of utter nonsense and distorted information has been published on the topic" (p. 245) in Sebald's book *Witch-Children: From Salem Witch-Hunts to Modern Courtrooms.*

7. See Bennetts (1993).

8. See Rose (1993).

9. See Harrison (1993).

10. See Wright (1993a, 1993b).

11. Now a convicted perpetrator.

12. Dr. Perry's name may be familiar to those who have read Maury Terry's book *The Ultimate Evil*. He is the husband of ritual murder victim Arlis Perry. Not only did Dr. Perry supervise the care of the Gilmer children, he also headed the treatment team charged with the care of the child survivors of the Branch Davidian compound.

13. According to a report in *The Gilmer Mirror,* the disappearance was originally reported by the newspaper on November 9, 1995, but was not confirmed by the Gilmer Police Department until November 16, 1995. See Overton (1994).

14. These sisters who are the aunts of some of the child victims supported the allegations made by the children alleging abuse. They reported that they had been victimized in much the same way and by the same perpetrators identified by the children in the Gilmer case.

15. It is interesting to note that the *Dallas Morning News* is the only daily newspaper in Dallas and is owned by the same parent company that owns Channel 8, the local ABC television affiliate.

CHAPTER 17

1. For some of these groups, she preferred the term “organization” rather than “cult.”

2. See Chapter 16, where the Fran’s Day Care case was introduced.

3. At that time, Texas did not have a law in the penal code criminalizing ritual abuse. A law was introduced into the penal code by the Texas legislature a short while later, only to be removed by Texas attorney general Dan Morales on the basis that the terms were vague and poorly defined, thereby making the law unenforceable. However, other states have enacted laws criminalizing ritual abuse, including: California Penal Code Section 667.83 (1995), Idaho Code Vol. 4, Crimes Section 18–1506A, Illinois Revised Statute 5/12–33, Louisiana Revised Statute Section 14:107–1, and Montana Code Annotated Section 27–2-217 and 45–5-627.

4. Although analog studies have investigated isolated effects of influence on children’s statements, there have been insufficient investigations of the influence of children when the following factors are involved: actual psychological treatment circumstances, allegations of ritual abuse (or other equally bizarre claims), and the effects of suggestion on implicit memories.

5. J. Smith, “Believing the Children,” *The Austin Chronicle*, March 27, 2009. http://www.austinchronicle.com/news/2009–03–27/759086/.

6. As mentioned earlier, I had been invited to speak at the First Annual Christian Conference on MPD and SRA. I presented on the subject of ethical and forensic concerns regarding the evaluation and treatment of ritual abuse. During my presentation, I played a videotape of a patient explaining how some cults are able to confound jury trials by signaling both during the jury selection process (in order to stack the deck) and during the trial itself. I also played a videotape of the signaling that appeared to be occurring during the Keller trial.

7. Another author who has described personal experiences involving irregularities in the judicial process regarding allegations of ritual abuse is former state senator John DeCamp (1992) of Nebraska.

8. Following the judge’s decision, the children were placed in his chambers to await the completion of documents to transfer custody. The children went on a destructive rampage in the chambers and had to be hospitalized. Upon their discharge, they were removed to their father’s home but were so uncontrollable, their father voluntarily relinquished his parental rights, and the children were returned to their mother.

9. A few months following the hearing, the judge who heard the visitation amendment accepted a partnership in the firm of the counsel representing the father in this case.

10. In many cases, this is true because they are dissociated themselves.

11. Because of confidentiality concerns, I am unable to present additional evidence regarding this man’s dissociation for at least part of the crimes for which he was convicted.

12. See Smith (1993).

13. The *DSM-5* uses the term *factitious disorder imposed on another* instead of *Munchausen’s syndrome by proxy*.

14. Technically speaking, the CPS caseworker was not a licensed professional who legally had the authority to make a psychiatric diagnosis. Unfortunately, such individuals involved in a child protective agency will sometimes take on more authority than they are qualified by training and experience to assume. Often other mental health professionals will simply go along with such situations because of their desire to cultivate referrals from the agency.

15. See Laurence and Weinhouse (1994, pp. 264–292) for a discussion of the gender bias in women’s mental health, which may account for the disparity in the court-ordered psychologist’s interpretation of Emma’s psychological test scores and the observations of other mental health professionals working with the family.

16. Almost a year after this case, the court-ordered psychologist was arrested when, in the course of another of her court-appointed evaluations, she reportedly admonished a child for making allegations against her father. There was evidence to suggest that the child was indeed being victimized, and the therapist was in violation of her duty to protect the child and inform authorities of the child's complaint.

17. The national organization Alliance for the Rights of Children (ARCH) was formerly called Friends of Elizabeth Morgan.

18. The Social Security Administration does not recognize any professional other than a physician or psychologist as a qualified treating source.

19. See Noblitt and Noblitt (2009a, 2009b, 2009c, 2012c).

20. See U.S. Department of Health and Human Services, Office of the Assistant Secretary for Planning and Evaluation, at http://aspe.hhs.gov/poverty/13poverty.cfm.

21. Under the regulations, individuals are entitled to Medicare benefits 24 months from the onset of their disabling condition. However, there is a five-month waiting period that brings the total delay between onset and approval to 29 months.

CHAPTER 18

1. See Flynn and Gerhardt (1989).

2. Tucker (1989), partly in jest, defines cult as “someone else’s religious group that does not agree with mine” (p. 15).

3. Bugliosi and Gentry (2001).

4. See Bailey and Darden (1993), Beck (1993a, 1993b), and Breault and King (1993), Kantrowitz et al. (1993), Lacayo (1993), and Lindecker (1993).

5. Larson (1989b).

6. Larson (1989b).

7. Larson (1989b).

8. Reiterman and Jacobs (1982).

9. Regarding the Aum Shinrikyo or Aum Supreme Truth cult, see van Biema (1995).

10. Daniels (2008).

11. Religion News Blog (2010).

12. Lalich and Tobias (2006).

13. Jeffs and Szalavitz (2010).

14. See CNN (August 10, 2011), http://www.cnn.com/2011/CRIME/08/09/texas.polygamist.jeffs/index.html.

15. Blumenthal (2008).

16. See ABC News (April 4, 2013), http://abcnews.go.com/blogs/headlines/2013/04/warren-jeffs-still-calling-the-shots-from-prison/.

17. See Bromley and Shupe (1981) and Shupe and Bromley (1985).

18. To avoid confusion, I rarely use the term *deprogramming* in reference to the forcible removal of individuals from cults. The term *exit counseling* is, in my opinion, a more accurate descriptor for those who use questionable strategies to lure or abduct adults from their life choice. I reserve the term “deprogramming” to describe the process whereby control over dissociated mental states is returned to the dissociated person. Forcible indoctrination by a “deprogrammer” is simply another form of programming.

19. A number of encyclopedic reference works have been published that attempt to identify the various cults. Unfortunately, due to the authors’ biases, some groups that have been so identified object strenuously. Nevertheless, these resources do make an attempt to describe groups for which there is a consensus of opinion that they meet the criteria for cult or cult-like groups. See Larson (1989a, 1989c); Marrs (1990); Martin (1980); Mather and Nichols (1993); McDowell and Stewart (1992); and Nichols, Schmidt, and Mather (2010).

20. See Flynn and Gerhardt (1989).

21. This category may surprise some readers, but I’ve heard such reports from dissociative clients and from other therapists who work with this patient population. There is also a body of literature that addresses this alleged problem. *The Manchurian Candidate* (Condon, 1959) is one such fictional account. However, there are nonfiction accounts as well, including the following: *Deep Black* (Burrows, 1986), *Operation Mind Control* (Bowart, 1994), *The CIA and the Cult of Intelligence* (Marchetti & Marks, 1974), and *The Search for the* “*Manchurian Candidate*”*: The CIA and Mind Control* (Marks, 1979). These books recounted the CIA’s interest in mind control techniques and its allegedly dubious methods of exploring mind control. Also of note is former Nebraska state senator John DeCamp’s (1992) report of a government cover-up of a case involving ritual abuse allegations in which he was involved as an attorney. In her book *Lessons in Evil, Lessons from the Light* (1993), Feldman described an investigation of her client’s allegations of ritual abuse that appeared to be obstructed by the FBI. For more recent observations regarding the CIA’s interest in mind control

experimentation, see also Albarelli's (2009) *A Terrible Mistake: The Murder of Frank Olson and the CIA's Secret Cold War Experiments.*

22. See Bowart's (1994) *Operation Mind Control*, Thomas's (1989) *Journey into Madness: The True Story of Secret CIA Mind Control and Medical Abuse*, and Weinstein's (1990) *Psychiatry and the CIA: Victims of Mind Control.*

23. See Breiner (1990), deMause (2006), Masson (1992), and Miller (1986).

24. See Ehrenreich and English (1973), Eisler (1987), and Greer (1971).

25. See Stover and Nightingale (1985) and Gil (1969). Amazingly, Gil, referencing a nationwide survey on the physical abuse of children, wrote:

> For a number of years the "abused" or "battered" child has elicited very strong concern on the part of professionals in law, medicine, social work, and child care. And one consequence of this concern has been the establishment of legislative machinery and a reporting system. Good epidemiological research reveals, however, that child abuse, despite the intense response that it has aroused, has, in fact, relatively low prevalence and that, by implication, the funds and manpower that it now absorbs more appropriately be devoted to a more significant cause of childhood injury. (p. 857)

26. See Noblitt (1993b).

27. Modern, historical, and anthropological examples of the circumscribed use of trauma in creating and controlling dissociated mental states (programming) is reviewed by Noblitt (1993a), Noblitt and Perskin (2000), and Noblitt and Noblitt (2008).

28. Modern, historical, and anthropological examples of the circumscribed use of trauma in creating and controlling dissociated mental states (programming) is reviewed by Noblitt (1993a) and elsewhere in this book.

CHAPTER 19

1. See American Psychological Association (2002).

References

Abse, D. W. (1983). Multiple personality. In S. Akhtar (Ed.), *New psychiatric syndromes: DSM III and beyond* (pp. 339–361). New York: Jason Aronson.

Adams, J. (1999). *Drawn swords*. Ogden, UT: Mr. Light & Associates.

Adams, J. (2008). Case studies of ritual abuse survivors: From abuse to activism. In R. Noblitt & P. P. Noblitt (Eds.), *Ritual abuse in the twenty-first century: Psychological, forensic, social, and political considerations* (pp. 541–549). Bandon, OR: Robert D. Reed.

Adler, M. (1986). *Drawing down the moon: Witches, druids, goddess-worshippers, and other Pagans in America today.* Boston: Beacon Press.

Adler, M. (1997). *Drawing down the moon: Witches, druids, goddess-worshippers, and other Pagans in America today* [Kindle version]. Retrieved from Amazon.com.

Ad Veritatem IX. (1990). An introduction to the history of the O.T.O. In Hymenaeus Beta X (Ed.), *The Equinox, vol. 3, no. 10* (pp. 87–99). York Beach, ME: Samuel Weiser.

Ahmed, R. (1968). *The black art.* New York: Paperback Library.

Allen, T. B. (1993). *Possessed: The true story of an exorcism*. New York: Doubleday.

Ally, Y., & Laher, S. (2008). South African Muslim faith healers' perceptions of mental illness: Understanding, aetiology and treatment. *Journal of Religion & Health, 47*(1), 45–56. doi: 10.1007/s10943–007–9133–2

American Psychiatric Association. (1980). *Diagnostic and statistical manual of mental disorders* (3rd ed.). Washington, DC: Author.

American Psychiatric Association. (1987). *Diagnostic and statistical manual of mental disorders* (3rd ed., revised). Washington, DC: Author.

American Psychiatric Association. (1993). *DSM-IV draft criteria.* Washington, DC: Author.

American Psychiatric Association. (1994). *Diagnostic and statistical manual of mental disorders* (4th ed.). Washington, DC: Author.

American Psychiatric Association. (2000). *Diagnostic and statistical manual of mental disorders* (4th ed., text rev.). Washington, DC: Author.

American Psychiatric Association. (2013). *Diagnostic and statistical manual of mental disorders* (5th ed.). Arlington, VA: Author.

American Psychological Association. (2002). Ethical principles of psychologists and code of conduct. *American Psychologist, 57*(12), 1060–1073. doi: 10.1037//0003–066X.57.12.1060

Ammons, C. H. (1996). Review of the book *Cult and ritual abuse: Its history, anthropology and recent discovery in contemporary America*, by J. R. Noblitt & P. S. Perskin. *Psychological*

Reports, 78(1), 351.

Anand, S., & Malhi, G. (2011). From manual to bible: The questionable hegemony of DSM IV. *Australian and New Zealand Journal of Psychiatry, 45*, 348–350. doi: 10.3109/00048674.2011.576814

Andrews, B., Morton, J., Bekerian, D. A., Brewin, C. R., Davies, G. M., & Mollon, P. (1995, May). The recovery of memories in clinical practice: Experiences and beliefs of British Psychological Society practitioners. *The Psychologist, 8*, 209–214.

Andrushko, V. A., Buzon, M. R., Gibaja, A. M., McEwan, G. F., Simonetti, A., & Creaser, R. A. (2011). Investigating a child sacrifice event from the Inca heartland. *Journal of Archaeological Science, 38*(2), 323–333. doi: 10.1016/j.jas.2010.09.009

Anti-Slavery International. (2011, Autumn). Breaking the spell of Juju. *Reporter Magazine*. Retrieved from http://www.antislavery.org/includes/documents/cm_docs/2012/1/13_autumn_2011_feature.pdf

Armenian Genocide. (2013). The History channel website. Retrieved from http://www.history.com/topics/armenian-genocide

Armstrong, J. G., & Loewenstein, R. J. (1990). Characteristics of patients with multiple personality and dissociative disorders on psychological testing. *Journal of Nervous & Mental Disorders, 178*, 448–454.

Ashe, G. (1974). *Do what you will: A history of anti-morality*. London: W. H. Allen.

Assagioli, R. (1975). *Psychosynthesis: A manual of principles and techniques*. London: Turnstone Press.

Associated Press. (2005, February 22). Satanist band members jailed for ritual killings. *The Guardian*. Retrieved from http://www.guardian.co.uk/world/2005/feb/22/italy

Associated Press. (2006, May 11). Priest convicted of slaying nun. NBC News. Retrieved from http://www.nbcnews.com/id/12739830/#.UQ3XSR16q_g

Associated Press Reporter and Daily Mail Reporter. (2013, June 7). Night Stalker serial killer who terrorized California with a spree of satanic murders dies in hospital after 24 years on death row. *Mail Online*. Retrieved from http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2337625/Night-Stalker-serial-killer-terrorized-California-spree-Satanic-murders-dies-hospital-24-years-death-row.html

Ataç, M.-A. (2005). Manichaeism and ancient Mesopotamian “Gnosticism.” *Journal of Ancient Near Eastern Religions, 5* (1), 1–39. doi: 10.1163/156921 205776137945

Atkinson, J. M. (1992). Shamanisms today. *Annual Review of Anthropology, 21*, 307–330.

Axelrod, G. (Producer), & Frankenheimer, J. (Producer/Director). (1962). *The Manchurian Candidate* [videotape]. Culver City, CA: MGM/UA.

Bailey, B., & Darden, B. (1993). *Mad man in Waco.* Waco, TX: WRS Publishing.

Bainbridge, W. S. (1978). *Satan's power: A deviant psychotherapy cult*. Berkeley: University of California Press.

Bainbridge, W. S. (1991). Social construction from within: Satan’s process. In J. T. Richardson, J. Best, & D. G. Bromley (Eds.), *The Satanism scare* (pp. 297–310). New York: Aldine de Gruyter.

Bakan, D. (1965). *Sigmund Freud and the Jewish mystical tradition*. New York: Schocken Books.

Baker, R. A. (1992). *Hidden memories: Voices and visions from within*. Buffalo, NY: Prometheus Books.

Ball, T. (2008). The use of prayer for inner healing of memories and deliverance with ritual abuse survivors. In R. Noblitt & P. P. Noblitt (Eds.), *Ritual abuse in the twenty-first century: Psychological, forensic, social, and political considerations* (pp. 413–442). Bandon, OR: Robert D. Reed.

Bandelow, B., Schmahl, C., Falkai, P., & Wedekind, D. (2010). Borderline personality disorder: A dysregulation of the endogenous opioid system? *Psychological Review, 117*(2), 623–636. doi: 10.1037/a0018095

Banks, W. D. (2010). Spirit-possession rituals in Southern Ghana: Priests, musicians, and ritual efficacy. *The Western Journal of Black Studies*, *35*(1), 44–52.

Barlow, M. R., Cromer, L. D., Caron, H. P., & Freyd, J. J. (2012). Comparison of normative and diagnosed dissociation on attachment to companion animals and stuffed animals. *Psychological Trauma: Theory, Research, Practice, and Policy, 4*(5), 501–506.

Barnett, H. G. (1972). *Indian Shakers: A messianic cult of the Pacific Northwest.* Carbondale: Southern Illinois University Press.

Barnier, A. J., & Council, J. R. (2010). Hypnotizability matters: The what, why, and how of measurement. In S. J. Lynn, J. W. Rhue, & I. Kirsch (Eds.), *Handbook of clinical hypnosis* (2nd ed., pp. 47–77). Washington, DC: American Psychological Association.

Barnow, S., Limberg, A., Stopsack, M., Spitzer, C., Grabe, H. J., Freyberger, H. J., & Hamm, A. (2012). Dissociation and emotion regulation in borderline personality disorder. *Psychological Medicine, 42*(4), 783–794. doi: 10.1017/S0033291711001917

Barrett, J. L. (1997). Review of the book *Cult and ritual abuse: Its history, anthropology and recent discovery in contemporary America*, by J. R. Noblitt & P. S. Perskin. *Review of Religious Research, 38*(2), 191–192.

Barton, B. (1990). *The secret life of a Satanist: The authorized biography of Anton LaVey.* Los Angeles, CA: Feral House.

Barton, B. (2003). *The Church of Satan: A brief history*. Retrieved from http://www.churchofsatan.com/Pages/CShistory2MC.html

Baskin, W. (1974). *The sorcerer's handbook.* New York: Philosophical Library.

Bauer, S. F., & Hornick, E. J. (1968). Lunar effect on mental illness: The relationship of moon phase to psychiatric emergencies. *American Journal of Psychiatry, 125,* 696–697.

Baumeister, R. F., Dale, K., & Sommer, K. L. (1998). Freudian defense mechanisms and empirical findings in modern social psychology: Reaction formation, projection, displacement, undoing, isolation, sublimation, and denial. *Journal of Personality, 66*(6), 1081–1124.

Beavan, V., & Read, J. (2010). Hearing voices and listening to what they say: The importance of voice content in understanding and working with distressing voices. *Journal of Nervous and Mental Disease, 198*(3), 201–205. doi: 10.1097/NMD.0b013e3181d14612

Beck, J. C. (1979). *To windward of the land: The occult world of Alexander Charles.* Bloomington, IN: Indiana University Press.

Beck, M. (1993a, March 15). Thy kingdom come. *Newsweek*, pp. 52–55.

Beck, M. (1993b, October 11). The book of Koresh. *Time*, pp. 26, 27, 30.

Becker, T. (2008). Re-Searching for New Perspectives: Ritual Abuse/Ritual Violence as Ideologically Motivated Crime. In R. Noblitt & P. P. Noblitt (Eds.), *Ritual abuse in the twenty-first century: Psychological, forensic, social and political considerations* (pp. 193–236). Bandon, OR: Robert D. Reed Publishers.

Becker, T., Karriker, W., Overkamp, B., & Rutz, C. (2008). The extreme abuse surveys: Preliminary findings regarding dissociative identity disorder. In A. Sachs & G. Galton (Eds.), *Forensic aspects of dissociative identity disorder* (pp. 32–49). London: Karnac.

Becker, T., Karriker, W., Rutz, C., & Overkamp, B. (2013). *Extreme abuse survey series: Development, findings, and consequences.* Catawba, NC: Sandime.

Belford, B., Kaehler, L. A., & Birrell, P. (2012). Relational health as a mediator between betrayal trauma and borderline personality disorder. *Journal of Trauma & Dissociation, 13,* 244–257. doi: 10.1080/15299732.2012.642750

Bellamy, C. (2008). Person in place: Possession and power at an Indian Islamic saint shrine. *Journal of Feminist Studies in Religion*, *24*(1), 31–44.

Berking, M., & Wupperman, P. (2012). Emotion regulation and mental health: Recent findings, current challenges, and future. *Current Opinion in Psychiatry, 25,* 128–134. doi: 10.1097/97/YCO.0bo13e3283503669

Believe the Children. (1987, June). *Multi-victim multi-perpetrator ritualized abuse survey*. [Unpublished manuscript] P.O. Box 797, Cary, IL 60013.

Bellafante, G. (1995, May 22). Chronicle of a witch hunt. *Time*, pp. 69–70.

Belsky, J. (1993). Etiology of child maltreatment: A developmental-ecological analysis. *Psychological Bulletin, 114*, 413–434.

Benner, D. G., & Joscelyne, B. (1984). Multiple personality as a borderline disorder. *Psychiatric Clinics of North America, 7*, 89–99.

Bennetts, L. (1993, June). Nightmares on main street. *Vanity Fair*, pp. 42, 45, 46, 48, 50, 52, 58, 60, 62.

Bernhard, B. (2013, May 29). Castlewood director steps down after accusations of brainwashing. *St. Louis Post-Dispatch*. Retrieved from http://www.stltoday.com/lifestyles/health-med-fit/health/health-matters/castlewood-director-steps-down-after-accusations-of-brainwashing/article_9c019204–009f-518b-a027–76f23f81428d.html

Black, M. C., Basile, K. C., Breiding, M. J., Smith, S. G., Walters, M. L., Merrick, M. T., et al. (2011). *The national intimate partner and sexual violence survey (NISVS): 2010 summary report*. Atlanta, GA: National Center for Injury Prevention and Control, Centers for Disease Control and Prevention.

Blackman, S., & Catalina, D. (1973). The moon and the emergency room. *Perceptual & Motor Skills, 37*, 624–626.

Blackmore, C., Tantam, D., Parry, G., & Chambers, E. (2012). Report on a systematic review of the efficacy and clinical effectiveness of group analysis and analytic/dynamic group psychotherapy. *Group Analysis, 45*(1), 46–69. doi: 10.1177/0533316411424356

Blavatsky, H. P. (1877/1988). *Isis unveiled*, vol. 1–2. Pasadena, CA: Theosophical University Press.

Bliss, E. L. (1980). Multiple personalities: A report of 14 cases with implications for schizophrenia and hysteria. *Archives of General Psychiatry, 37*, 1388–1397.

Bliss, E. L. (1984a). Spontaneous self-hypnosis in multiple personality disorder. *Psychiatric Clinics of North America, 7*, 135–148.

Bliss, E. L. (1984b). A symptom profile of patients with multiple personalities, including MMPI results. *Journal of Nervous & Mental Disease, 172*, 197–202.

Bliss, E. L., & Jeppsen, E. A. (1985). Prevalence of multiple personality among inpatients and outpatients. *American Journal of Psychiatry, 142*, 250–251.

Blood, L. (1994). *The new Satanists.* New York: Warner Books.

Bloy, M. (2002). The “Hell Fire Club.” Retrieved from http://www.victorianweb.org/history/pms/hellfire.html

Boddy, J. (1988). Spirits and selves in Northern Sudan: The cultural therapeutics of possession and trance. *American Ethnologist, 15*, 4–27.

Bok, B. J. (1975). A critical look at astrology. *Humanist, 35*(5), 6–9.

Bonomi, A. E., Gangamma, R., Locke, C. R., Katafiasz, H., & Martin, D. (2011). “Meet me at the hill where we used to park”: Interpersonal processes associated with victim recantation. *Social Science & Medicine, 73*(7), 1054–1061.

Bornovalova, M. A., Huibregtse, B. M., Hicks, B. M., Keyes, M., McGue, M., & Iacono, W. (2012). Tests of a direct effect of childhood abuse on adult borderline personality disorder traits: A longitudinal discordant twin design. *Journal of Abnormal Psychology, 122*(1), 180–194. doi: 10.1037/a0028328

Bottoms, B. L., & Davis, S. L. (1997). The creation of satanic ritual abuse. *Journal of Social and Clinical Psychology, 16*, 112–132.

Bottoms, B. L., Shaver, P. R., & Goodman, G. S. (1991, August). *Profile of ritualistic and religion-related abuse allegations reported to clinical psychologists in the United States*. Paper Presented at the 99th Annual Convention of the American Psychological Association, San Francisco, CA.

Bottoms, B. L., Shaver, P. R., & Goodman, G. S. (1996). An analysis of ritualistic and religion related child abuse allegations. *Law and Human Behavior, 20*, 1–34.

Bourguinon, E. (1973). Introduction: A framework for the comparative study of altered states of consciousness. In E. Bourguinon (Ed.), *Religion, altered states of consciousness, and social change* (pp. 3–35). Columbus: Ohio State University Press.

Bourguinon, E. (1974). Cross-cultural perspectives on the religious uses of altered states of consciousness. In I. I. Zaretsky & M. P. Leone (Eds.), *Religious movements in contemporary America* (pp. 228–243). Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.

Bowart, W. (1994). *Operation mind control, researcher's edition*. Ft. Bragg, CA: Flatland.

Bowden, H. (2007). Cults of Demeter Eleusinia and the transmission of religious ideas. *Mediterranean Historical Review, 22*(1), 71–83. doi: 10.1080/09518960701539182

Bowman, E. S. (1993). Clinical and spiritual effects of exorcism in fifteen patients with multiple personality disorder. *Dissociation, 6*, 222–238.

Bramley, S. (1977). *Macumba: The teachings of Maria-José*. New York: St. Martin's Press.

Bratersky, A. (2010, July 27). Satanists jailed for ritual murders. *The Moscow Times*. Retrieved from http://www.themoscowtimes.com/news/article/satanists-jailed-for-ritual-murders/411085.html

Braude, S. E. (1991). *First person plural: Multiple personality and the philosophy of mind.* London: Routledge.

Braun, B. G. (1984). Hypnosis creates multiple personality: Myth or reality? *International Journal of Clinical & Experimental Hypnosis, 32*, 191–197.

Braun, B. G. (1988a). The BASK (behavior, affect, sensation, knowledge) model of dissociation. *Dissociation, 1*(1), 4–23.

Braun, B. G. (1988b). The BASK model of dissociation: Clinical applications. *Dissociation, 1*(2), 16–23.

Breault, M., & King, M. (1993). *Inside the cult.* New York: Signet.

Breiner, S. J. (1990). *Slaughter of the innocents: Child abuse through the ages and today.* New York: Plenum Press.

Brenner, M. (1999). Gnosis and history: Polemics of German-Jewish identity from Graetz to Scholem. *New German Critique, 77*, 45–60.

Breuer, J., & Freud, S. (2011). The psychic mechanism of hysterical phenomena (preliminary communication). In S. Freud (Ed.), *Selected papers on hysteria and other psychoneuroses* (illustrated) [Kindle Edition]. Retrieved from http://www.charlesrivereditors.com/ (Original work published 1893.) Bromley, D. G., & Shupe, A. D. (1981). *Strange gods: The great American cult scare*. Boston, MA: Beacon Press.

Brown, D., Scheflin, A. W., & Hammond, D. C. (1998). *Memory, trauma treatment, and the law*. New York: W.W. Norton.

Brunet, L. (2009). *A course of severe and arduous trials: Bacon, Beckett and spurious freemasonry in early twentieth-century Ireland*. Oxford, UK: Peter Lang.

Bryant, N. (2009). The Franklin scandal: A story of powerbrokers, child abuse & betrayal. Walterville, OR: Trine Day Press.

Buck, O. D. (1983). Multiple personality as a borderline state. *Journal of Nervous and Mental Disease, 171*, 62–65.

Buck, S. (2008). The RAINS network in the UK (Ritual Abuse Information Network and Support). In R. Noblitt & P. P. Noblitt (Eds.), *Ritual abuse in the twenty-first century: Psychological, forensic, social, and political considerations* (pp. 307–326). Bandon, OR: Robert D. Reed.

Bucky, S. F., & Dalenberg, C. (1992). The relationship between training of mental health professionals and the reporting of ritual abuse and multiple personality disorder symptomatology. *Journal of Psychology and Theology, 20*(3), 233–238.

Burkert, W. (1983). *Homo Necans: The anthropology of ancient Greek sacrificial ritual and myth*. Berkeley: University of California Press.

Burkert, W. (1987). *Ancient mystery cults*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.

Burrell, S. (1994). A personal review of the literature. In V. Sinason (Ed.), *Treating survivors of Satanist abuse* (pp. 265–273). London: Routledge.

Burrows, W. E. (1986). *Deep black*. New York: Berkeley Books.

Burton, R. (1927). *The anatomy of melancholy*. New York: Tudor. (Original work published 1621)

Bybee, D., & Mowbray, C. (1993). An analysis of allegations of sexual abuse in a multi-victim day-care center case. *Child Abuse and Neglect*, *17*(6), 767–783.

Byrne, C. (2011, May 28). Satanic killing that shocked the nation. *Herald.ie*. Retrieved from http://www.herald.ie/news/Satanic-killing-that-shocked-the-nation-27980952.html

Calandrino, J. G., Kurtz, R. M., & Strube, M. J. (2001). Efficacy of induction and difficulty level in durability of posthypnotic suggestions. *American Journal of Clinical Hypnosis*, *44*(1), 13–25.

Callan, A. (2008). Female saints and the practice of Islam in Sylhet, Bangladesh. *American Ethnologist*, *35*(3), 396–412. doi: 10.1111/j.1548–1425. 2008.00042.x Campbell, R. J. (1989). *Psychiatric dictionary* (6th ed.). New York: Oxford University Press.

Cankaya, B., Talbot, N. L., Ward, E. A., & Duberstein, E. A. (2012). Parental sexual abuse and suicidal behaviour among women with major depressive disorder. *Canadian Journal of Psychiatry*, *57*(1), 45–51.

Cannon, W. B. (1942). Voodoo death. *American Anthropologist*, *44*, 169–181.

Cantwell, A. (1988). *AIDS and the doctors of death*. Los Angeles, CA: Aries Rising Press.

Cardeña, E., van Duijl, M., Weiner, L. A., & Terhune, D. B. (2009). Possession/trance phenomena. In P. F. Dell & J. A. O'Neil (Eds.), *Dissociation and the dissociative disorders: DSM-V and beyond* (pp. 171–184). New York: Routledge.

Carus, P. (1974). *The history of the devil and the idea of evil*. La Salle, IL: Open Court Publishing.

Caruso, R., Biancosino, B., Borghi, C., Marmai, L., Kerr, I. B., & Grassi, L. (2013). Working with the "difficult" patient: The use of a contextual cognitive-analytic therapy based training in improving team function in a routine psychiatry service setting. *Community Mental Health Journal*, *49*(6), 722–727. doi: 10.1007/s10597–012–9579-x Cavendish, R. (1967). *The black arts*. New York: Perigee Books.

Centers for Disease Control. (2012). *Sexual violence, facts at a glance*. Retrieved from http://www.cdc.gov/ViolencePrevention/pdf/SV-DataSheet-a.pdf

Cervantes, F. (1994). *The devil in the New World: The impact of diabolism in New Spain*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press.

Chambers, D. B. (2010). "Will you join me in El Monte?": A Kongo African spirit in modern Cuba. *Southern Quarterly*, *47*(4), 110–119.

Chancellor, E. B. (1925). *The Hell Fire Club*: *The lives of rakes*, vol. 4. London: Phillip Allan.

Charles, R. H. (Trans.). (1917). *The book of Enoch*. Retrieved from texts.com/bib/boe/boe-009.htm

Chavez, F. A. (1974). *My penitente land: Reflections on Spanish New Mexico*. Albuquerque: University of New Mexico Press.

Cheit, R. E. (2014). *The witch-hunt narrative: Politics, psychology, and the sexual abuse of children*. New York: Oxford University Press.

Children at risk: Ritual abuse in America [videotape]. (1992). Ukiah, CA: Cavalcade Productions.

Clary, W. F., Burstin, K. J., & Carpenter, J. S. (1984). Multiple personality and borderline personality disorder. *Psychiatric Clinics of North America*, *7*, 89–100.

Coan, J. A. (2008). Toward a neuroscience of attachment. In J. Cassidy & P. Shaver (Eds.), *Handbook of attachment: Theory, research, and clinical applications* (2nd ed., pp. 241–265). New York: Guilford Press.

Cohen, E. (2008). What is spirit possession? Defining, comparing, and explaining two possession forms. *Ethnos*, *73*(1), 101–126. doi: 10.1080/001418 40801927558

Cohen, E., & Barrett, J. (2008). When minds migrate: Conceptualizing spirit possession. *Journal of Cognition & Culture*, *8*(1), 23–48. doi: 10.1163/156770908X289198

Cohen, J. (2012, June 21). "He stole my life": How a teenager was forced to join a satanic sex cult . . . by her evil uncle. *The Mirror*. Retrieved from http://www.mirror.co.uk/news/real-life-stories/teenager-forced-into-a-Satanic-sex-cult-904455

Cohen, S. B. (1984). Tests of susceptibility/hypnotizability. In W. C. Wester & A. H. Smith (Eds.), *Clinical hypnosis: A multidisciplinary approach* (pp. 73–81). Philadelphia, PA: J. B. Lippincott.

Cohn, N. (1975). *Europe's inner demons*. New York: Basic Books.

Cole, D. A. (1992, December). The incidence of ritual abuse: A preliminary survey. *Dissertation Abstracts International*, *53*(6-B), 3150.

Coleman, J. (2008). Satanist ritual abuse and the problem of credibility. In A. Sachs, & G. Galton (Eds.), *Forensic aspects of dissociative identity disorder* (pp. 9–22). London: Karnac.

Coleman, J. (2011). Dissociative disorders: Recognition within psychiatry and RAINS. In V. Sinason (Ed.), *Attachment, trauma and multiplicity: Working with dissociative identity disorder* (2nd ed., pp. 190–194). New York: Routledge.

Colquhoun, I. (1975). *The sword of wisdom.* Channel Islands: Neville Spearman.

Comstock, C. (1991, February). Critical issues task report. *ISSMP&D News*, p. 7.

Comstock, C., & Vickery, D. (1992). The therapist as victim: A preliminary discussion. *Dissociation*, *5*, 155–158.

Condon, R. (1988). *The Manchurian Candidate*. New York: Jove Books.

Connor, C., & Birchwood, M. (2012). Abuse and dysfunctional affiliations in childhood: An exploration of their impact on voice-hearers' appraisals of power and expressed emotion. *Psychosis, 4*(1), 19–31. doi: 10.1080/17522439.2011.630745

Cook, S. (2008). Opening pandora's box. In A. Sachs & G. Galton (Eds.), *Forensic aspects of dissociative identity disorder* (pp. 155–166). London: Karnac.

Coomaraswamy, R. P. (1996). Review of the book *Cult and ritual abuse: Its history, anthropology and recent discovery in contemporary America*, by J. R. Noblitt & P. S. Perskin. *American Journal of Psychotherapy*, *50*(3), 383–384.

Coons, P. M. (1985). Children of parents with multiple personality disorder. In R. P. Kluft (Ed.), *Childhood antecedents of multiple personality* (pp. 152–165). Washington, DC: American Psychiatric Press.

Coons, P. M. (1994). Reports of satanic ritual abuse: Further implications about pseudo memories. *Perceptual & Motor Skills*, *78*, 1376–1378.

Coons, P. M. (1997). Satanic ritual abuse: First research and therapeutic implications. In George A. Fraser (Ed.), *The dilemma of ritual abuse: Cautions and guidelines for therapists* (pp. 105–117). Washington, DC: American Psychiatric Press.

Coons, P. M., & Grier, F. (1990). Factitious disorder (Munchausen type) involving allegations of satanic ritual abuse: A case report. *Dissociation*, *3*, 177–178.

Coons, P. M., & Stern, A. L. (1986). Initial and follow-up psychological testing on a group of patients with multiple personality disorder. *Psychological Reports, 58,* 43–49.

Core, D. (1991). *Chasing Satan: An investigation into satanic crimes against children.* London: Gunter Books.

Couliano, I. P. (1990). *The tree of gnosis: Gnostic mythology from early Christianity to modern nihilism*. San Francisco, CA: HarperSanFrancisco.

Couliano, I. P. (1991). *Out of this world: Otherworldly journeys from Gilgamesh to Albert Einstein.* Boston, MA: Shambhala.

Court Dismisses Lisa Nasseff Lawsuit Against Castlewood Treatment Center. (2013, December 16). *Bloomberg Businessweek*. Retrieved from http://investing.businessweek.com/research/stocks/private/snapshot.asp?privcapId=46610470

Cowan, J. G. (1992). *The elements of the Aborigine tradition.* Rockport, ME: Element.

Crabtree, A. (1985). *Multiple man: Explorations in possession and multiple personality.* London: Holt, Rinehart and Winston.

Crabtree, A. (1993a). *From Mesmer to Freud: Magnetic sleep and the roots of psychological healing*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press.

Crabtree, A. (1993b). Puzzling over possession: Comments on *Dissociation* articles on possession. *Dissociation, 6(4),* 254–259.

Crapanzo, V. (1977). Introduction. In V. Crapanzo & V. Garrison (Eds.), *Case studies in spirit possession* (pp. 1–40). New York: John Wiley & Sons.

Crenshaw, D. G. (2012, November 11). *Caves of the world #4: Hellfire caves: the erotic inner temple*. Retrieved from http://thehollowearthinsider.com/archives/9704

Critchfield, K. L., Clarkin, J. F., Levy, K. N., & Kernberg, O. F. (2008). Organization of co-occurring Axis II features in borderline personality disorder. *British Journal of Clinical Psychology, 47*, 185–200. doi: 10.1348/014466507X240731

Crook, L. S., & Dean, M. (1999a). Logical fallacies and ethical breaches. *Ethics & Behavior, 9*(1), 61–68.

Crook, L., & Dean, M. (1999b). Lost in the mall: A breach of professional ethics. *Ethics and Behavior, 9*(1), 39–50.

Crowley, A. (1979). *The confessions of Aleister Crowley* (J. Symonds & K. Grant, Eds.). London: Arkana.

Crowley, A. (1988). *Gems from the Equinox: Instructions by Aleister Crowley for his own magical order*. Las Vegas, NV: Falcon Press.

Crowley, A. (1989). *Magick without tears*. Las Vegas, NV: Falcon Press.

Crowley, A. (1990). The O.T.O. Gnostic Mass. In Hymenaeus Beta X (Ed.), *The Equinox, vol. 3, no. 10* (pp. 123–140). York Beach, ME: Samuel Weiser.

Crowley, A. (1991). *Magick in theory and practice*. Secaucus, NJ: Castle Books.

Crowley, A. (1992). *Liber Aleph vel CXI: The book of wisdom or folly.* York Beach, ME: Samuel Weiser.

Crowley, V. (1989). *Wicca: The old religion in the new age.* London: Aquarian Press.

Cumont, F. (1956). *The mysteries of Mithra*. New York: Dover.

Da Costa, H. J. (1964). *The Dionysian artificers*. Los Angeles, CA: Philosophical Research Society.

Dallam, S. J. (2001). Crisis or creation? A systematic examination of “false memory syndrome.” *Journal of Child Sexual Abuse, 9*(3), 9–36. doi: 10.1300/J070v09n03_02

Dandan, A., & Cecchi, H. (2000, April 1). Las hermanasasesinasauncreenser el diablo o verlo. *Página/12*. Retrieved from http://www.pagina12.com.ar/2000/00–04/00–04–01/pag19.htm

Danforth, L. M. (1989). *Fire walking and religious healing: The Anastenaria of Greece and the American fire walking movement*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.

Daraul, A. (1990). A history of secret societies. New York: Carol Publishing.

Darley, A. M. (1968). *The passionists of the southwest, or the holy brotherhood.* Glorieta, NM: Rio Grande Press.

Darwin, C. (1958). *The origin of species*. New York: Mentor Books.

Davies, N. (1981). *Human sacrifice in history and today*. New York: William Morrow.

Davies, O. (1999). Cunning-folk in the medical market-place during the nineteenth century. *Medical History, 43*(1), 55–63.

Davis, A. J. (2008). *Hell minus one*. Tooele, UT: Transcript Bulletin Publishing.

Davis, W. (1985). *The serpent and the rainbow.* New York: Simon & Schuster.

Davis, W. (1988). *Passage of darkness: The ethnobiology of the Haitian zombie.* Chapel Hill, NC: The University of North Carolina Press.

DeCamp, J. W. (1992). *The Franklin cover-up: Child abuse, Satanism and murder in Nebraska.* Lincoln, NE: AWT.

DeCamp, J. W. (1996). *The Franklin cover-up: Child abuse, Satanism and murder in Nebraska* (2nd ed.). Lincoln, NE: AWT.

DeCamp, J. W. (2005). *The Franklin cover-up: Child abuse, Satanism and murder in Nebraska* (2004/2005 ed.). Retrieved from http://www.whale.to/b/the_franklin_cover-up_-_john_decamp_-_ebook.pdf

De Jong, J. T., & Reis, R. (2010). Kiyang-yang, a West-African postwar idiom of distress. *Culture, Medicine & Psychiatry, 34*(2), 301–321. doi: 10.1007/s11013–010–9178–7

De Martino, E. (1972). *Primitive magic: The psychic powers of shamans and sorcerers*. Dorset, UK: Prism Press.

De Mause, L. (Ed.). (2006). *The history of childhood.* Oxford, UK: Rowman & Littlefield.

deYoung, M. (1997). Satanic ritual abuse in day care: An analysis of 12 American cases. *Child Abuse Review*, *6*(2), 84–93. doi: 10.1002/(SICI)1099–0852(199705)6:2<84::AID-CAR305>3.0.CO;2–5

deYoung, M. (2002). *The ritual abuse controversy: An annotated bibliography*. Jefferson, NC: McFarland & Company.

deYoung, M. (2004). *The day care ritual abuse moral panic.* Jefferson, NC: McFarland & Company.

deYoung, M. (2007). Two decades after McMartin: A follow-up of 22 convicted day care employees. *Journal of Sociology & Social Welfare, 34*(4), 9–33.

Dell, P. F., & O'Neil, J. A. (Eds.). (2009a). *Dissociation and the dissociative disorders: DSM-V and beyond*. New York: Routledge.

Dell, P. F., & O'Neil, J. A. (2009b). Preface. In P. F. Dell & J. A. O'Neil (Eds.), *Dissociation and the dissociative disorders: DSM-V and beyond* (pp. xix–xxi). New York: Routledge.

Deren, M. (1991). *Divine horsemen: The living gods of Haiti*. Kingston, NY: McPherson.

Devil worship. (1965). In E. Podolsky (Ed.), *Encyclopedia of aberrations* (pp. 186–187). New York: Citadel Press.

Devine, M. J. (1992). *Magic from Mexico: Folk magic, prayers spells & recipes as taught by the wise women of Guadalupe.* St. Paul, MN: Llewellyn Publications.

Dillon, J. (2010). The tale of an ordinary little girl. *Psychosis, 2(1),* 79–83. doi: 10.1080/17522430903384305

Distel, M. A., Roeling, M. P., Tielbeek, J. J., van Toor, D., Derom, C. A., Trull, T. J., et al. (2012). The covariation of trait anger and borderline personality: A bivariate twin-siblings study. *Journal of Abnormal Psychology, 121*(2), 458–466.

Dittman, M. (2002). Cults of hatred. *APA Online Monitor on Psychology, 33,*(10), November 2002.

Dodds, E. R. (1951). *The Greeks and the irrational.* Berkeley: University of California Press.

Dodds, E. R. (1971, March). Supernormal phenomena in classical antiquity. *Society for Psychical Research*, *55* (203)

Driscoll, L. N., & Wright, C. (1991). Survivors of childhood ritual abuse: Multigenerational satanic cult involvement. *Treating Abuse Today, 1*, 5–13.

Drury, N. (1987). *The Shaman and the magician: Journeys between the worlds*. London: Arkana.

Drury, N. (1989). *The occult experience: Magic in the New Age.* Garden City Park, NY: Avery.

Drury, N. (2011). *Stealing fire from heaven: The rise of modern western magic* [Kindle Edition]. Retrieved from http://www.amazon.com/Stealing-Fire-Heaven-Western-ebook/dp/B004QWYW02/ref=sr_1_2_bnp_1_kin?ie=UTF8&qid=1365719888&sr=8–2&keywords=stealing+fire+from+heaven

DuBois, T. A. (2011). Trends in contemporary research on Shamanism. *Numen: International Review for the History of Religions*, *58*(1), 100–128. doi: 10.1163/156852710X514339

Dumont, L. E., & Altesman, R. I. (1989). *A parent's guide to teens and cults*. Washington, DC: PIA Press.

Dunn, G. E., Paolo, A. M., Ryan, J. J., & Van Fleet, J. N. (1994). Belief in the existence of multiple personality disorder among psychologists and psychiatrists. *Journal of Clinical Psychology, 50*, 454–457.

Eberle, P., & Eberle, S. (1993). *The abuse of innocence: The McMartin Preschool trial.* Buffalo, NY: Prometheus Books.

Eliade, M. (1964). *Shamanism: Archaic techniques of ecstasy.* New York: Pantheon.

Ellenberger, H. (1970). *The discovery of the unconscious*. New York: Basic Books.

Encyclopedia of witchcraft & demonology. (1974). London: Octopus Books.

Enzheng, T., & Von Falkenhausen, L. (2002). Magicians, magic, and shamanism in ancient China. *Journal of East Asian Archaeology, 4*(1–4), 27–73. doi: 10.1163/156852302322454495

Epstein, O. B. (2011). Working with the incredible hulk. In O. B. Epstein, J. Schwartz, & R. W. Schwartz (Eds.), *Ritual abuse and mind control: The manipulation of attachment needs* (pp. 155–168). London: Karnac Books.

Epstein, O. B., Schwartz, J., & Schwartz, R. W. (Eds.). (2011). *Ritual abuse and mind control: The manipulation of attachment needs.* London: Karnac Books.

Euteneuer, T. J. (2010, June). Líberanos a malo. *New Oxford Review, 77*(6), 39–41.

Evans-Pritchard, E. E. (1931). Sorcery and native opinion. *Africa, 4*, 23–28.

Evans-Pritchard, E. E. (1980). *Witchcraft oracles and magic among the Azande*. Oxford: Clarendon Press.

Eysenck, H. J. (1997). *Rebel with a cause: The autobiography of Hans Eysenck* (rev. & exp. ed.). Piscataway, NJ: Transaction Publishers.

Eysenck, H. J., & Nias, D. B. K. (1982). *Astrology: Science or superstition?* London: Temple Smith.

F.A.C.T.Net. Public interest info & dialog on global warming, religion, big brother, mind control, cults, etc. Retrieved from http://www.factnet.org/

Faller, K. C. (1994, Spring). Ritual abuse: A review of research. *APSAC Advisor*, pp. 1, 19–27.

Faller, K. C. (2003). *Understanding and assessing child sexual maltreatment* (2nd ed.). Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage.

Farmer, J., Middleton, W., & Devereux, J. (2008). Dissociative identity disorder and criminal responsibility. In A. Sachs & G. Galton (Eds.), *Forensic aspects of dissociative identity disorder* (pp. 79–99). London: Karnac Books.

Faraone, C. A. (2009, March/April). When spells worked magic. *Archaeology, 56*(2). Retrieved from http://archive.archaeology.org/0303/etc/magic.html

Fawcett, J. (2012). Borderline personality disorder and progress in psychiatry. *Psychiatric Annals, 42*(2), 42.

Feldman, G. C. (1993). *Lessons in evil, lessons from the light: A true story of satanic abuse and spiritual healing.* New York: Crown Publishers.

Fenekou, V., & Georgaca, E. (2010). Exploring the experience of hearing voices: A qualitative study. *Psychosis, 2*(2), 134–143. doi: 10.1080/ 17522430903191783

Fielding, C. (1989). *The practical Qabalah*. York Beach, ME: Samuel Weiser.

Fielding, J. (2013, January 20). I was raped at 13 by Jimmy Savile in satanist ritual. *Express*. Retrieved from http://www.express.co.uk/posts/view/371936

Filoramo, G. (1990). *A history of gnosticism*. Cambridge, MA: Blackwell.

Finkelhor, D., Williams, L., & Burns, N. (1988). *Nursery crimes: Sexual abuse in day care*. Newbury Park, CA: Sage Publications.

Finkelhor, D., Williams, L. M., Burns, N., & Kalinowski, M. (1988, March). *Sexual abuse in day care: A national study, final report*. Durham, NH: Family Research Laboratory, University of New Hampshire.

Fletcher, C. (1990). *What cops know.* New York: Pocket Books.

Fletcher, K. E. (2001). Review of the book *Cult and ritual abuse: Its history, anthropology and recent discovery in contemporary America*, by J. R. Noblitt & P. S. Perskin. *Psychiatric Services, 52*(7), 978–979. doi: 10.1176/appi.ps.52.7.978

Flint, I. (1991). *The rise of magic in early medieval Europe*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.

Flowers, S. E. (1990). *Fire & ice: Magical teachings of Germany's greatest secret occult order.* St. Paul, MN: Llewellyn Publications.

Flynn, K., & Gerhardt, G. (1989). *The silent brotherhood*. New York: Signet.

FMS Finances. (1993, July 3). *FMS Foundation Newsletter, 2*(7). Retrieved from http://www.fmsfonline.org/fmsf93.703.html

Fortune, D. (1984). *The mystical Qabalah.* York Beach, ME: Samuel Weiser.

Fotheringham, T. (2008). Patterns in mind-control: A first person account. In R. Noblitt & P. P. Noblitt (Eds.), *Ritual abuse in the twenty-first century: Psychological, forensic, social, and political considerations* (pp. 491–540). Bandon, OR: Robert D. Reed.

Frankfurter, D. (2006a). *Evil incarnate: Rumors of demonic conspiracy and ritual abuse in history*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.

Frankfurter, D. (2006b). Fetus magic and sorcery fears in Roman Egypt. *Greek, Roman & Byzantine Studies, 46*(1), 37–62.

Fraser, G. A. (1993). Exorcism rituals: Effects on multiple personality disorder patients. *Dissociation, 6*, 239–244.

Frater, U∴D∴ (1991). *Secrets of the German sex magicians: A practical handbook for men & women*. St. Paul, MN: Llewellyn Publications.

Frazer, J. G. (1963). *The golden bough: A study in magic and religion* (Abridged Edition). New York: Macmillan.

Frederick, C. (2005). Selected topics in ego state therapy. *International Journal of Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis, 53*(*4*), 339−429.

Freud, A. (1946). *The ego and mechanisms of defense*. New York: International Universities Press.

Freud, S. (1910). The origin and development of psychoanalysis. *The American Journal of Psychology, 21*(2), 181–218.

Freud, S. (1962). The neuro-psychoses of defence. In J. Strachey, A. Freud, A. Strachey & A. Tyson (Eds.), *The standard edition of the complete psychological works of Sigmund Freud*, vol. 3 (pp. 45–61). London: Hogarth Press. (Original work published 1894) Freud, S. (1966a). Letter 56. In J. Strachey, A. Freud, A. Strachey, & A. Tyson (Eds.), *The standard edition of the complete psychological works of Sigmund Freud*, vol. 1 (p. 242). London: Hogarth Press.

Freud, S. (1966b). Letter 57. In J. Strachey, A. Freud, A. Strachey, & A. Tyson (Eds.), *The standard edition of the complete psychological works of Sigmund Freud*, vol. 1 (pp. 242–244). London: Hogarth Press.

Freyd, J. (1993, August). *Theoretical and personal perspectives on the delayed memory debate.* A Presentation for the Center for Mental Health at Foote Hospital's Continuing Education Conference: Controversies around recovered memories of incest and ritualistic abuse, Ann Arbor, MI.

Friesen, J. G. (1989). Treatment for multiple personality disorder: Integrating alter personalities and casting out evil spirits. *Journal of Christian Healing, 11*(3), 4–16.

Friesen, J. G. (1991). *Uncovering the mystery of MPD: Its shocking origins, its surprising cure.* San Bernardino, CA: Here's Life Publishers.

Friesen, J. G. (1992). *More than survivors: Conversations with multiple-personality clients*. San Bernardino, CA: Here's Life Publishers.

Friesen, J. G. (2000). How to help people who dissociate. *Journal of Psychology and Christianity, 19*(2), 144–153.

Fröhling, U. (1996). *Vaterunser in der hölle* [*Our father in hell*]. Leipzig, Germany: Kallmeyer.

Galanter, M. (1989). *Cults: Faith, healing, and coercion.* New York: Oxford University Press.

Gallagher, B. (2001). Assessment and intervention in cases of suspected ritual child sexual abuse. *Child Abuse Review, 10(4),* 227–242. doi: 10.1002/car.694

Galton, G. (2008). Some clinical implications of believing or not believing the patient. In A. Sachs & G. Galton (Eds.), *Forensic aspects of dissociative identity disorder* (pp. 116–126). London:

Karnac Books.

Ganaway, G. (1989). Historical truth versus narrative truth: Clarifying the role of exogenous trauma in the etiology of multiple personality and its variants. *Dissociation, 2*, 205–220.

Ganaway, G. (1990, November). *A psychodynamic look at alternative explanations for satanic ritual abuse in MPD patients*. Paper Presented at Seventh International Conference on Multiple Personality/Dissociative States, Chicago, IL.

Gardner, R. A. (1991). *Sex abuse hysteria: Salem witch trials revisited.* Cresskill, NJ: Creative Therapeutics.

Garrett, C. (1987). *Spirit possession and popular religion: From the Camisards to the Shakers*. Baltimore, MD: Johns Hopkins University Press.

Garrison, V. (1977). The "Puerto Rican Syndrome" in psychiatry and *Espiritismo*. In V. Crapanzo & V. Garrison (Eds.), *Case studies in spirit possession* (pp. 383–449). New York: John Wiley & Sons.

Garven, S., Wood, J. M., Malpass, R. S., & Shaw, J. S. (1998). More than suggestion: The effect of interviewing techniques from the McMartin Preschool case, III. *Journal of Applied Psychology, 83*(3), 347–359. doi: 10.1037/0021–9010.83.3.347

Geraci, J. (1993, Winter). Interview: Hollida Wakefield and Ralph Underwager. *Paidika*, pp. 2–12.

Gersi, D. (1991). *Faces in the smoke: An eyewitness experience of voodoo, shamanism, psychic healing and other amazing human powers.* Los Angeles, CA: Jeremy P. Tarcher.

Gilchrist, R. (2008). Magic for the dead? The Archaeology of Magic in Later Medieval Burials. *Medieval Archaeology, 52*(1), 119–159. doi: 10.1179/ 174581708x335468

Girard, R. (1972). *Violence and the sacred.* Baltimore, MD: Johns Hopkins University Press.

Goldstein, E. (1992). *Confabulations: Creating false memories, destroying families.* Boca Raton, FL: SIRS Books.

Golston, J. C. (1992). Ritual abuse: Raising hell in psychotherapy. *Treating Abuse Today, 2*(6), 5–16.

Gonzalez-Wippler, M. (1984). *Rituals and spells of Santeria.* New York: Original Publications.

Gonzalez-Wippler, M. (1987). *Santeria: African magic in Latin America.* New York: Original Publications.

Gonzalez-Wippler, M. (1992). *The Santeria experience: A journey into the miraculous*. St.Paul, MN: Llewellyn Publications.

Goodman, A. (2008). Hypnosis, hypnotizability and treatment. *American Journal of Clinical Hypnosis, 51*(2), 171–172. doi: 10.1080/00029157.2008.10401661

Goodman, F. (1989). *Magic symbols.* London: Brian Trodd Publishing House.

Goodman, F. D. (1973). Apostolics of Yucatán: A case study of a religious movement. In E. Bourguinon (Ed.), *Religion, altered states of consciousness, and social change* (pp. 178–218). Columbus: Ohio State University Press.

Goodman, F. D. (1988). *How about demons?* Bloomington, IN: Indiana University Press.

Goodman, G. S., Qin, J., Bottoms, B. L., & Shaver, P. R. (1994). *Characteristics and sources of allegations of ritualistic child abuse: Final report to the National Center on Child Abuse and Neglect.* [Unpublished manuscript]

Gottlieb, A., & Graham, P. (1993). *Parallel worlds: An anthropologist and a writer encounter Africa.* New York: Crown Publishers.

Gough, D., Kelly, L., & Scott, S. (1993). The current literature about organized abuse of children. *Child Abuse Review, 2*(4), 281–287.

Gould, C. (1992). Diagnosis and treatment of ritually abused children. In D. K. Sakheim & S. E. Devine (Eds.), *Out of darkness: Exploring Satanism and ritual abuse* (pp. 207–248). New York: Lexington Books.

Gould, C. (1993a, September). *Coercive control: Young minds held captive*. Presented at the National Conference on Crimes against Children, Washington, DC.

Gould, C. (1993b, September). *Treating dissociation in children*. Presented at the National Conference on Crimes against Children, Washington, DC.

Gould, C., & Cozolino, L. (1992). Ritual abuse, multiplicity, and mind control. *Journal of Psychology and Theology, 20,* 194–196.

Graves, R. (1955). *The Greek myths* (vols. 1–2). New York: Penguin Books.

Greaves, G. B. (1989). Precursors of integration in the treatment of multiple personality disorder: Clinical reflections. *Dissociation, 2,* 224–230.

Greaves, G. B. (1992). Alternative hypotheses regarding claims of satanic cult activity: A critical analysis. In D. K. Sakheim & S. E. Devine (Eds.), *Out of darkness: Exploring Satanism and ritual abuse* (pp. 45–72). New York: Lexington Books.

Green, T. A. (1991). Accusations of Satanism and racial tensions in the Matamoros cult murders. In J. T. Richardson, J. Best, & D. G. Bromley (Eds.), *The Satanism scare* (pp. 237–248). New York: Aldine de Gruyter.

Greenfield, T. A. (2006). *A statement regarding the Ordo Templi Orientis*. Retrieved from http://www.mindspring.com/~hellfire/bishop/index.htm

Gregory, A. K. (1966). Introduction. In T. K. Oesterreich (Ed.), *Possession: Demoniacal and other among primitive races, in antiquity, the Middle Ages and modern times* (pp. v–xvi). New Hyde Park, NY: University Books.

Guest, J. S. (1987). *The Yezidis: A study in survival*. London: KPI.

Guiley, R. E. (1989). *The encyclopedia of witches and witchcraft.* New York: Facts on File.

Guillemaut, F. (2008). Sexe, juju et migrations Regard anthropologique sur les processus migratoires de femmes africaines en France [Sex, juju and migrations: An anthropological look at the migratory processes of African women in France]. *Recherches Sociologiques et Anthropologiques, 39*(1), 11–26.

Guirdham, A. (1977). The great heresy. Saffron Walden, UK: C. W. Daniel.

Haining, P. (1975). *An illustrated history of witchcraft*. New York: Pyramid Books.

Hall, J. (2013, August 30). "Black Jesus" murder: Leader of 6,000-strong cannibal rape cult hacked to death by villagers in Papua New Guinea jungle after killing yet again. *The Independent.* Retrieved from http://www.independent.co.uk/news/world/asia/black-jesus-murder-leader-of-6000strong-cannibal-rape-cult-hacked-to-death-by-villagers-in-papua-new-guinea-jungle-after-killing-yet-again-8791967.html

Hammersley, P., Read, J., Woodall, S., & Dillon, J. (2007). Childhood trauma and psychosis: The genie is out of the bottle. *Journal of Psychological Trauma, 6*(2–3), 7–20. doi: 10.1300/J513v06n02_02

Harner, M. (1990). *The way of the shaman.* New York: HarperCollins.

Harrison, B. G. (1993, December). Desperately seeking Satan. *Mirabella*, pp. 38, 40, 43.

Haskins, J. (1978). *Voodoo and hoodoo*. Chelsea, MI: Scarborough House.

Hawkins, D. W. (2009). Multiple identities: Understanding and supporting the severely abused. Grottoes, VA: Restoration in Christ Ministries.

Hawkins, T. R. (1993). *A pastoral approach to multiple personality disorder and demonization.* [Unpublished manuscript]

Hayes, J. A., & Mitchell, J. C. (1994). Mental health professionals' skepticism about multiple personality disorder. *Professional Psychology: Research & Practice, 25,* 410–15.

Hayes, M. L. J. (2013). *Silent no more: The lamb speaks*. Makanda, IL: Indigo Plume.

Hazlett, E. A., Zhang, J., New, A. S., Zelmanova, Y., Goldstein, K. E., Haznedar, M. M., et al. (2012). Potentiated amygdala response to repeated emotional pictures in borderline personality disorder. *Biological Psychiatry, 72*(6), 448–456.

Hector, H. (1991). *Satanic ritual abuse and multiple personality disorder*. Rochester, MN: National Counseling Resource Center.

Hendrickson, K. M., McCarty, T., & Goodwin, J. M. (1990). Animal alters: Case reports. *Dissociation*, *3*, 218–221.

Henney, J. H. (1973). The Shakers of St. Vincent: A stable religion. In E. Bourguinon (Ed.), *Religion altered states of consciousness, and social change* (pp. 219–263). Columbus: Ohio State University Press.

Herrmann-Pfandt, A. (2002). Review of the book *Cult and ritual abuse: Its history, anthropology and recent discovery in contemporary America*, by J. R. Noblitt & P. S. Perskin. *Numen: International Review for the History of Religions*, *49*(1), 103.

Herva, V.-P., Nordqvist, K., Herva, A., & Ikaheimo, J. (2010). Daughters of magic: Esoteric traditions, relational ontology and the archaeology of the post-medieval past. *World Archaeology, 42*(4), 609–621. doi: 10.1080/ 00438243.2010.517679

Hess, D. J. (1990). Ghosts and domestic politics in Brazil: Some parallels between spirit possession and spirit infestation. *Ethos, 18,* 407–438.

Hicks, R. (1990a). Police pursuit of satanic crime: I. *Skeptical Inquirer, 14*(2), 276–286.

Hicks, R. (1990b). Police pursuit of satanic crime: II. *Skeptical Inquirer, 14*(2), 378–389.

Hicks, R. D. (1991). *In pursuit of Satan: The police and the occult.* New York: Prometheus Books.

Hilberg, R. (1992). *Perpetrators, victims, bystanders: The Jewish catastrophe.* New York: HarperCollins.

Hill, S., & Goodwin, J. (1989). Satanism: Similarities between patient accounts and pre-Inquisitional historical sources. *Dissociation, 2,* 39–43.

Hoeller, S. (2012). Jung, Kabbalah, and Gnosis. *Psychological Perspectives, 55*(2), 163–181.

Holmberg, D. (1983). Shamanic soundings: Femaleness in the Tamang ritual structure. *Signs: Journal of Women's Cultural Sociology, 9*(1), 40–58.

Hooper, J. (2002, January 31). Blood-drinking devil worshippers face life for ritual satanic killing. *The Guardian*. Retrieved from http://www.guardian.co.uk/world/2002/feb/01/uk.johnhooper

Hopwood, C. J., Thomas, K. M., & Zanarini, M. C. (2012). Hyperbolic temperament and borderline personality disorder. *Personality and Mental Health, 6*(1), 22–32.

Horevitz, R. (1994). Dissociation and multiple personality: Conflicts and controversies. In S. J. Lynn & J. W. Rhue (Eds.), *Dissociation: Clinical and theoretical perspectives* (pp. 434–461). New York: Guilford.

Horevitz, R. P., & Braun, B. G. (1984). Are multiple personalities borderline? *Psychiatric Clinics of North America*, *7*, 69–88.

Howard, M. (1989). *The occult conspiracy: Secret societies*: *Their influence and power in world history.* Rochester, VT: Destiny Books.

Howe, E. (1989). German occult groups. In R. Cavendish (Ed.), *Encyclopedia of the unexplained: Magic, occultism, and parapsychology* (pp. 89–92). London: Arkana.

Howell, E. F. (2011). *Understanding and treating dissociative disorder: A relational approach*. New York: Routledge.

Hoyt, C. A. (1989). *Witchcraft* (2nd ed.). Carbondale, IL: Southern Illinois University Press.

Hudson, P. (1991). *Ritual child abuse: Discovery, diagnosis and treatment*. Sarasota, CA: R&E Publishers.

Hudson, P. (1994). The clinician's experience. In V. Sinason (Ed.), *Treating survivors of Satanist abuse* (pp. 71–81). London: Routledge.

Hughes, A. E., Crowell, S. E, Uyeji, L., & Coan, J. A. (2012). A developmental neuroscience of borderline pathology: Emotion dysregulation and social baseline theory. *Journal of Abnormal Child Psychology, 40(1),* 21–33.

Huxley, A. (1952). *The devils of Loudun.* New York: Harper & Row.

Huxley, F. (1989). *The way of the sacred*. London: Bloomsbury Books.

Huysmans, J. K. (1986). *Là Bas [Lower depths]*. London: Daedalus.

Hyatt, C. S., Duqette, L. M., & Ford, G. (1991). *Taboo: The ecstasy of evil.* Scottsdale, AZ: New Falcon Publications.

Hyatte, R. (Trans.). (1984). *Laughter for the devil: The trials of Gilles de Rais, companion-in-arms of Joan of Arc (1440)*. Cranbury, NJ: Associated University Presses.

Idel, M. (1988). *Kabbalah: New perspectives*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press.

Inglis, B. (1989). *Trance: A natural history of altered states of mind.* London: Paladin.

International Society for the Study of Trauma and Dissociation. (2011). Guidelines for treating dissociative identity disorder in adults, third revision. *Journal of Trauma & Dissociation, 12*(2), 115–187. doi: 10.1080/ 15299732.2011.537247

Jackson, B. (1993, September). *The role of ritual abuse and the sexual exploitation of children.* Presented at the National Conference on Crimes against Children, Washington, DC.

Jacob, G. A., Gabriel, S., Roepke, S., Stoffers, J. M., Lieb, K., & Hammers, C. H. (2010). Group therapy module to enhance self-esteem in patients with borderline personality disorder: A pilot study. *International Journal of Group Psychotherapy, 60*(3), 373–387. doi: 10.1521/ijgp.2010.60.3.373

Jacobs, L. (Ed.). (1990). *The Jewish mystics*. London: Kyle Cathie.

Jameson, R. D. (1984). Cannibalism. In M. Leach & J. Fried (Eds.), *Funk & Wagnalls standard dictionary of folklore, mythology, and legend* (pp. 186–189). San Francisco, CA: Harper & Row.

Jenkins, P., & Maier-Katkin, D. (1991). Occult survivors: The making of a myth. In J. T. Richardson, J. Best, & D. G. Bromley (Eds.), *The Satanism scare* (pp. 127–144). New York: Aldine de Gruyter.

Joe, S. (1991). *Out of hell again.* Rocky River, OH: State of the Art Publishing.

John, A. (1989). *Unholy trinity: The Adrian Lim ritual child killings*. Singapore: Times Books.

Johnston, J. (1989). *The edge of evil: The rise of Satanism in North America*. Dallas, TX: Word Publishing.

Jonker, F., & Jonker-Bakker, I. (1997). Effects of ritual abuse: The results of three surveys in the Netherlands. *Journal of Child Abuse & Neglect, 21,* 541–556.

Jonker, F., & Jonker-Bakker, P. (1991). Experiences with ritualistic child sexual abuse: A case study from the Netherlands. *Journal of Child Abuse and Neglect, 15,* 191–196.

Joseph, S. M. (2007). Jung and Kabbalah: Imaginal and noetic aspects. *Journal of Analytical Psychology, 52*(3), 321–341. doi: 10.1111/j.1468–5922 .2007.00665.x Jung, C. G. (1952/1973). *Answer to job*. Princeton, NJ: Bollingen.

Jung, C. G. (1961). *Memories, dreams, reflections*. New York: Pantheon Books.

Jung, C. G. (1962). Commentary. In R. Wilhelm (Trans.), *The secret of the golden flower*. New York: Harcourt, Brace, New World.

Jung, C. G. (1992). *The Gnostic Jung*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.

Jung, C. G. (2009). *The red book: Liber Novus* (Sonu Shamdasani, Ed.). New York: W. W. Norton.

Kaczynski, R. (1993, June 21). Of heresy and secrecy: Evidence of Golden Dawn teachings on mystic sexuality. *Eidolon*, pp. 4–7.

Kadi, J. (1997, May). Healing through community. *Sojourner: The Women's Forum*, p. 19.

Kahaner, L. (1988). *Cults that kill: Probing the underworld of occult crime.* New York: Warner Books.

Kantrowitz, B. (1993, March 15). The messiah of Waco. *Newsweek*, pp. 56, 57, 58.

Kaplan, H. I., & Sadock, B. J. (Eds.). (1995). *Comprehensive textbook of psychiatry/VI.* Baltimore, MD: Williams & Wilkins.

Karriker, W. (2003). *Morning come quickly*. Catawba, NC: Sandime.

Katchen, M. H. (1992). The history of satanic religions. In D. K. Sakheim & S. E. Devine (Eds.), *Out of darkness: Exploring Satanism and ritual abuse* (pp. 1–19). New York: Lexington Books.

Katchen, M. H. (2008). Interrelated moral panics and counter-panics: The cult brain washing panic and the false memory/ritual abuse moral panic. In R. Noblitt & P. P. Noblitt (Eds.), *Ritual abuse* *in the twenty-first century: Psychological, forensic, social and political considerations* (pp. 193–236). Bandon, OR: Robert D. Reed Publishers.

Kelley, S. J. (1992a, January). *Ritualistic abuse: Recognition, impact and current controversy*. Paper Presented at the Conference on Responding to Child Maltreatment, San Diego, CA.

Kelley, S. J. (1992b). Stress responses of children and parents to sexual abuse and ritualistic abuse in day care centers. In A. W. Burgess (Ed.), *Child Trauma I Issues and Research* (pp. 231–255). New York: Garland Publishing.

Kennedy, W. H. (2006). *Lucifer's lodge: Satanic ritual abuse in the Catholic Church* [Adobe Digital Editions Version]. Retrieved from http://www.lulu.com/us/en/shop/w-h-kennedy/lucifers-lodge-Satanic-ritual-abuse-in-the-catholic-church/ebook/product-343299.html

Kertzer, M. N. (1993). *What is a Jew?* New York: Macmillan.

Kezelman, C. (2010). *Innocence revisited: A tale in parts*. Docklands, Australia: JoJo Publishing.

Kilduff, M., & Javers, R. (1978). *The suicide cult: The inside story of the Peoples Temple sect and the massacre in Guyana.* New York: Bantam Books.

Kilroy, J. (1990). *Sacrifice: The drug cult murder of Mark Kilroy at Matamoros.* Dallas, TX: Word Publishing.

King, F. (1970). *The rites of modern occult magic*. New York: Macmillan.

King, F. (1971). *Sexuality, magic and perversion.* London: Spearman.

King, F. (1989a). *Modern ritual magic: The rise of Western occultism.* New York: Avery.

King, F. (1989b). Satanism. In R. Cavendish (Ed.), *Encyclopedia of the unexplained: Magic, occultism and parapsychology* (pp. 219–221). London: Arkana.

King, F. (1991). *Witchcraft and demonology*. New York: Crescent Books.

Kligman, G. (1981). *Calus: Symbolic transformation in Romanian ritual.* Chicago: University of Chicago Press.

Klosinski, G. (2004). Casting out the demons. *Scientific American Mind, 14*(5), 84–89.

Kluckhohn, C. (1962). *Navaho witchcraft*. Boston, MA: Beacon Press.

Kluft, R. P. (1984). Treatment of multiple personality disorder: A study of 33 cases. *Psychiatric Clinics of North America, 7*, 9–29.

Kluft, R. P. (Ed.). (1985). *Childhood antecedents of multiple personality*. Washington, DC: American Psychiatric Press.

Kluft, R. P. (2005). Diagnosing dissociative identity disorder. *Psychiatric Annals*, *35*(8), 633–643.

Knapp, B. (1977). The golem and ecstatic mysticism. *Journal of Altered States of Consciousness, 3*, 355–369.

Knight, S. (1986). *The brotherhood: The secret world of the freemasons*. London: Dorset Press.

Koch, K., & Lechler, A. (1970). *Occult bondage and deliverance.* Grand Rapids, MI: Kernel Publications.

Koehler, K., Ebel, H., & Vartzopoulos, D. (1990). Lycanthropy and demonmania: Some psychopathological issues. *Psychological Medicine, 20,* 629–633.

Kopala-Sibley, D. C., Zuroff, D. C., Russell, J. J., Moskowitz, D. S., & Paris, J. (2012). Understanding heterogeneity in borderline personality disorder: Differences in affective reactivity explained by the traits of dependency and self-criticism. *Journal of Abnormal Psychology, 121*(3), 680–691. doi: 10.1037/a0028513

Kroger, W. S., & Fezler, W. D. (1976). *Hypnosis and behavior modification: Imagery conditioning.* Philadelphia, PA: J.B. Lippincott.

Kroll, J. (1988). *The challenge of the borderline patient: Competency in diagnosis and treatment*. New York: W.W. Norton.

Kurath, G. P. (1984). Sun dance. In M. Leach & J. Fried (Eds.), *Funk & Wagnalls standard dictionary of folklore, mythology, and legend* (pp. 1088–1089). San Francisco, CA: Harper & Row.

La Barre, W. (1962). *They shall take up serpents: Psychology of the southern snake-handling cult*. Minneapolis, MN: University of Minnesota Press.

La Barre, W. (1975). Anthropological perspectives on hallucination and hallucinogens. In R. K. Siegel & L. J. West (Eds.), *Hallucinations: Behavior, experience, and theory* (pp. 9–52). New York: John Wiley & Sons.

LaBriere, D. (1997). *Diary of a Survivor in Art and Poetry*. Mentone, AL: Shadowood.

LaBriere, D. (2009). *All together now: A multiple's story of hope and healing*. Mentone, AL: Shadowood.

Lacarriere, J. (1991). *The Gnostics*. San Francisco, CA: City Light Books.

Lacayo, R. (1993, March 15). Cult of death. *Time*, pp. 36–39.

Lachter, H. (2010). Spreading secrets: Kabbalah and esotericism in Isaac ibn Sahula's *Meshalha-kadmoni*. *Jewish Quarterly Review, 100*(1), 111–138.

Lacter, E. P. (2008). Mind control: Simple to complex. In A. Sachs & G. Galton (Eds.), *Forensic aspects of dissociative identity disorder* (pp. 185–195). London: Karnac Books.

Lacter, E. P. (2011). Torture-based mind control: Psychological mechanisms and psychotherapeutic approaches to overcoming mind control. In O. B. Epstein, J. Schwartz, & R. W. Schwartz (Eds.), *Ritual abuse and mind control: The manipulation of attachment needs* (pp. 57–141). London: Karnac Books.

La Fontaine, J. S. (1994). *The extent and nature of organized and ritual abuse: Research findings*. London: HMSO.

La Fontaine, J. S. (1998). *Speak of the devil: Tales of satanic abuse in contemporary England*. Cambridge, MA: Cambridge University Press.

Lame Deer, J. (1972). *Lame Deer seeker of visions: The life of a Sioux medicine man*. New York: Simon & Schuster.

Lanning, K. V. (1989, October). Satanic, occult, ritualistic crime: A law enforcement perspective. *Police Chief*, pp. 88–107.

Lanning, K. V. (1992). *Investigator's guide to allegations of "ritual" child abuse*. Quantico, VA: National Center for the Analysis of Violent Crime.

Larner, C. (1974). Is all witchcraft really *witchcraft*? *New Society, 30*, 81–83.

Larson, B. (1989a). *Larson's new book of cults*. Wheaton, IL: Tyndale House.

Larson, B. (1989b). *Satanism: The seduction of America's youth*. Nashville, TN: Thomas Nelson Publishers.

Larson, B. (1989c). *Straight answers on the new age*. Nashville, TN: Thomas Nelson Publishers.

Lasalandra, M., & Merenda, M. (1990). *Satan's harvest*. New York: Dell.

Laughlin, H. P. (1970). *The ego and its defenses*. New York: Appleton-Century-Crofts.

Laurence, L., & Weinhouse, B. (1994). *Outrageous practices: The alarming truth about how medicine mistreats women*. New York: Fawcett Columbine.

Lawrence, C., Jones, J., & Cooper, M. (2010). Hearing voices in a non-psychiatric population. *Behavioural and Cognitive Psychotherapy, 38*(3), 363–373. doi: 10.1017/S1352465810000172

LaVey, A. S. (1966). *The satanic bible*. New York: Avon Books.

LaVey, A. S. (1972). *The satanic rituals*. Secaucus, NJ: University Books.

LaVey, A. S. (1989). *The satanic witch*. Los Angeles, CA: Feral House.

Lawton, J. (2013, February 25). Jimmy Savile "naked in satanic sex club." *Daily Star*. Retrieved from http://www.dailystar.co.uk/news/view/300538/Cops-hunt-for-DVD-of-Savile-naked-in-a-Satanic-sex-club-/

L. Bathurst IX. (1990). Liber LII [Book 52]: Manifesto of the O.T.O. In Hymenaeus Beta X (Ed.), *The Equinox, vol. 3, no. 10* (pp. 87–99). York Beach, ME: Samuel Weiser.

Leacock, S., & Leacock, R. (1975). *Spirits of the deep: A study of an Afro-Brazilian cult*. Garden City, NY: Anchor Books.

Leavitt, F. (1994). Clinical correlates of alleged satanic abuse and less controversial sexual molestation. *Child Abuse & Neglect, 18*, 387–392.

Leavitt, F. (1997). False attribution of suggestibility to explain recovered memory of childhood sexual abuse following extended amnesia. *Journal of Child Abuse & Neglect, 21*, 265–272. doi: 10.1016/S0145–2134(96)00171–8

Leavitt, F. (1998). Measuring the impact of media exposure and hospital treatment on patients alleging satanic ritual abuse. *Treating Abuse Today, 8*(4), 28–29.

Leavitt, F. (1999). Suggestibility and treatment as key variables in the recovered memory debate. *American Journal of Forensic Psychology, 17*(4), 5–18.

Leavitt, F., & Labott, S. M. (1998). Revision of the Word Association Test for assessing association of patients reporting ritual abuse. *Journal of Clinical Psychology, 54*(7), 933–943. doi: 10.1002/(SICI)1097–4679(199811)54:7<933::AID-JCLP7>3.0.CO;2-F

Leavitt, F., & Labott, S. M. (2000). The role of media and hospital exposure on Rorschach response patterns by patients reporting satanic ritual abuse. *American Journal of Forensic Psychology, 18*(2), 35–55.

Ledford, H. (2012, March 16). Industry ties remain rife on panels for psychiatry manual. *Nature*. Retrieved from http://www.nature.com/news/industry-ties-remain-rife-on-panels-for-psychiatry-manual-1.10206

Lemke, W. (2007). Fostering internal cooperation through the use of imagery in the treatment of dissociative identity disorder. *Journal of Trauma & Dissociation, 8*(4), 53–68. doi: 10.1300/J229v08n04_0

Lemonick, M. D. (1993, August). Secrets of the Maya. *Time*, pp. 44–50.

Lester, D. (2007). A subself theory of personality. *Current Psychology: A Journal for Diverse Perspectives on Diverse Psychological Issues, 26*(1), 1–15. doi: 10.1007/s12144–007–9002-x

Lester, D., Brokopp, G. W., & Priebe, K. (1969). Association between full moon and completed suicide. *Psychological Reports, 25*, 598.

Lewis, D. O., Yeager, C. A., Swica, Y., Pincus, J. H., & Lewis, M. (1997). Objective documentation of child abuse and dissociation in 12 murderers with dissociative identity disorder. *The American Journal of Psychiatry, 154*(12), 1703–1710.

Lewis, I. M. (1971). *Ecstatic religion: An anthropological study of spirit possession and shamanism.* Baltimore, MD: Penguin Books.

Lieban, R. W. (1967). *Cebuano sorcery: Malign magic in the Philippines*. Berkeley: University of California Press.

Lieber, A. L., & Sherin, C. R. (1972). Homicides and the lunar cycle: Toward a theory of lunar influence on human emotional disturbance. *American Journal of Psychiatry, 29*, 69–74.

Linehan, M. M. (1993). *Cognitive behavioral treatment for borderline personality disorder*. New York: Guilford Press.

Lipstadt, D. (1986). *Beyond belief*. New York: Free Press.

Lipstadt, D. (1993). *Denying the Holocaust: The growing assault on truth and memory*. New York: Free Press.

Lissner, I. (1961). *Man, God and magic*. New York: G.P. Putnam’s Sons.

Livy, T. (1976). *Rome and the Mediterranean: Books XXI-XLV of the history of Rome from its foundation* (H. Bettenson, Trans.). London: Penguin Books.

Lockwood, C. (1993). *Other altars: Roots and realities of cultic and satanic ritual abuse and multiple personality disorder.* Minneapolis, MN: CompCare Publishers.

Longden, E., Madill, A., & Waterman, M. G. (2012). Dissociation, trauma, and the role of lived experience: Toward a new conceptualization of voice hearing. *Psychological Bulletin, 138*(1), 28–76. doi: 0.1037/a0025995

Lord, E. (2008). *The Hell-Fire Clubs: Sex, Satanism and secret societies.* New Haven, CT: Yale University Press.

Lowe, T. (1913). *Adoptive masonry illustrated.* Chicago, IL: Ezra Cook.

Lowenstein, R. J. (1992, December). President’s message. *ISSMP&D News*, pp. 1, 2, 4.

Luhrmann, T. M. (1989). *Persuasions of the witch’s craft*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.

Lund, D. S. (1991, April). Psychiatrists debate the extent of ritual abuse. *The Psychiatric Times,* pp. 54, 57.

Lynch, S. H., & Lobo, M. L. (2012). Compassion fatigue in family caregivers: A Wilsonian concept analysis. *Journal of Advanced Nursing, 68*(9), 2125–2134. doi: 10.1111/j.1365–2648.2012.05985.x Lynn, S. J., & Rhue, J. W. (Eds.). (1994). *Dissociation*. New York: Guilford Press.

Lyons, A. (1988). *Satan wants you: The cult of devil worship in America*. New York: Mysterious Press.

Macfarlane, A. (1970). *Witchcraft in Tudor and Stuart England.* London: Routledge & Kegan Paul.

MacGregor, G. (1979). *Gnosis: A renaissance in Christian thought*. Wheaton, IL: Theosophical Publishing House.

Macoy, R. (1989). *A dictionary of freemasonry*. New York: Bell Publishing.

Madu, S. N. (2001). Prevalence of child psychological, physical, emotional, and ritualistic abuse among high school students in Mpumalanga Province of South Africa. *Psychological Reports, 89*(2), 431–444. doi: 10.2466/PR0.89.6.431–444

Madu, S. N. (2002). The prevalence of child abuse among university students. *Southern African Journal of Child and Adolescent Mental Health, 14*(2), 123–127. doi: 10.1080/16826108.2002.9632434

Madu, S. N., & Peltzer, K. (1998). The prevalence of child psychological, physical, emotional, and ritualistic abuse among high school students in the Northern Province, South Africa. *Southern African Journal of Child and Adolescent Mental Health, 10*(2), 80–92. doi: 10.1080/16826108.1998.9632352

Madu, S. N., & Peltzer, K. (1999). Correlates for psychological, physical, emotional and ritualistic forms of child abuse among high school students in the Northern Province, South Africa. *Southern African Journal of Child and Adolescent Mental Health, 11*(1), 56–66. doi: 10.1080/16826108.1999.9633862

Magerl, W., Burkart, D., Fernandez, A., Schmidt, L. G., & Treede, R. D. (2012). Persistent antinociception through repeated self-injury in patients with borderline personality disorder. *Pain, 153*(3), 575–584.

Mahmud, L. (2012). In the name of transparency: Gender, terrorism, and Masonic conspiracies in Italy. *Anthropological Quarterly, 85*(4), 1177–1207.

Mai, F. M. (1995, April). Psychiatrists' attitudes to multiple personality disorder: A questionnaire study. *The Canadian Journal of Psychiatry / La Revue canadienne de psychiatrie, 40*(3), 154–157.

Mair, L. (1971). *Witchcraft.* New York: McGraw-Hill.

Maloney, H. N., & Lovekin, A. A. (1985). *Glossolalia: Behavioral science perspectives on speaking in tongues.* New York: Oxford University Press.

Mandelsberg, R. G. (Ed.). (1991). *Cult killer*s. New York: Pinnacle Books.

Mannix, D. P. (1959). *The Hell Fire Club.* New York: Ballantine Books.

Marchetti, V., & Marks, J. D. (1974). *The CIA and the cult of intelligence*. New York: Dell.

Markman, R. H., & Markman, P. T. (1992). *The flayed god: The Mesoamerican mythological tradition: Sacred texts and images from pre-Columbian Mexico and Central America*. New York: HarperCollins.

Marks, J. (1979). *The search for the* “*Manchurian Candidate*”*: The CIA and mind control.* New York: W.W. Norton.

Marmer, S. S. (1980). Psychoanalysis of multiple personality. *International Journal of Psycho-Analysis*, *61*, 439–459.

Marrs, T. (1990). *New age cults and religions.* Austin, TX: Living Truth Publishers.

Marshall, A. (2009). *The wheel of fortune: Ilketshall St. Andrew, Suffolk*. Retrieved from http://www.paintedchurch.org/ilketssa.htm

Martin, A. (2012, October 29). Nigerian sex trafficker used "juju" witchcraft rituals to terrorise young orphans he raped after smuggling them into Britain. *Mail Online*. Retrieved from http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2224765/Nigerian-HIV-sex-trafficker-used-juju-witchcraft-rituals-instil-terror-young-orphans-smuggled-Britain.html

Martin, L. H. (2006). Cognitive science, ritual, and the Hellenistic mystery religions. *Religion & Theology, 13*(3/4), 383–395.

Martin, M. (1976). *Hostage to the devil*. New York: Harper & Row.

Martin, W. (1980). *The new cults*. Santa Ana, CA: Vision House.

Marwick, M. (1982). Introduction. In M. Marwick (Ed.), *Witchcraft and sorcery* (pp. 11–19). Harmondsworth, UK: Penguin Books.

Masson, J. M. (1992). *The assault on truth: Freud's suppression of the seduction theory.* New York: HarperCollins.

Mather, G. A., & Nichols, L. A. (1993). *Dictionary of cults, sects, religions and the occult*. Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan.

Matthew, L. (2002). *Where angels fear: Ritual abuse in Scotland*. Dundee, UK: Dundee Young Women's Centre.

McCormick, D. (1958). *The Hell-Fire Club: The story of the amorous knights of Wycombe*. London: Jarrolds Publishers.

McDougal, D. (1995, May 20). The people versus McMartin. *TV Guide*, pp. 28–29.

McDowell, J., & Stewart, D. (1992). *The deceivers*. San Bernardino, CA: Here's Life.

McGowan, D. (2004). *Programmed to kill: The politics of serial murder*. New York: iUniverse.

McLeod, K., & Goddard, C. (2005). The ritual abuse of children: A critical perspective. *Children Australia, 30*(1), 27–34.

McShane, C. (1993). Satanic sexual abuse: A paradigm. *Affilia, 8,* 200–212.

Melanson, T. (2009a). *Perfectibilists: The 18th century Bavarian Order of the Illuminati.* Walterville, OR: Trine Day.

Melanson, T. (2009b, February 17). Was Carl Jung's ancestor an Illuminatus? Retrieved from http://www.bavarian-illuminati.info/2009/02/was-carl-jungs-ancestor-an-illuminatus/

Menninger, K. (1930). *The human mind.* New York: Alfred A. Knopf.

Mercer, J. (1991). *Behind the mask of adolescent Satanism.* Minneapolis, MN: Deaconess Press.

Metraux, A. (1959). *Voodoo in Haiti*. New York: Oxford University Press.

Michelet, J. (1992). *Satanism and witchcraft*. New York: Citadel Press.

Miller, A. (1990). *Thou shalt not be aware: Society's betrayal of the child.* New York: Meridian.

Miller, A. (2012). *Healing the unimaginable: Treating ritual abuse and mind control*. London: Karnac Books.

Miller, J. D., Morse, J. Q., Nolf, K., Stepp, S. D., & Pilkonis, P. A. (2012). Can DSM–IV borderline personality disorder be diagnosed via dimensional personality traits? Implications for the DSM-5 personality disorder proposal. *Journal of Abnormal Psychology, 121*(4), 944–950.

Miller, S. D. (1989). Optical differences in cases of multiple personality disorder. *Journal of Nervous & Mental Disorders, 177*, 480–486.

Mischel, W., & Mischel, F. (1958). Psychological aspects of spirit possession. *American Anthropologist*, *60*, 249–260.

Montgomery, J. W. (Ed.). (1976). *Demon possession*. Minneapolis, MN: Bethany House.

Moody, E. J. (1974). Magical therapy: An anthropological investigation of contemporary Satanism. In I. I. Zaretsky & M. P. Leone (Eds.), *Religious movements in contemporary America* (pp. 355–

382). Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.

Moore, R. I. (1975). *Documents of medieval history: The birth of popular heresy*, vol. 1. New York: St. Martin's Press.

Morey, J. R. (2005). Winnicott's splitting headache: Considering the gap between Jungian and object relations concepts. *The Journal of Analytical Psychology, 50*(3), 333–350. doi: 10.1111/j.0021–8774.2005.00536.x Moriarity, A. (1992). *The psychology of adolescent Satanism: A guide for parents, counselors, clergy, and teachers*. Westport, CT: Praeger.

Moriarity, A. R., & Story, D. W. (1990). Psychological dynamics of adolescent Satanism. *Journal of Mental Health Counseling, 12*, 186–198.

Morton, A. (1977). Dawit: Competition and integration in an Ethiopian Wuqabi cult group. In V. Crapanzo & V. Garrison (Eds.), *Case studies in spirit possession* (pp. 193–233). New York: John Wiley & Sons.

Moskowitz, A. (2012). Commentary on "Dissociation and psychosis in dissociative identity disorder and schizophrenia" (Laddis & Dell). *Journal of Trauma & Dissociation, 13*(4), 414–417.

Moskowitz, A., Read, J., Farelly, S., Rudegeair, T., & Williams, O. (2009). Are psychotic symptoms traumatic in origin and dissociative in kind? In P. F. Dell & J. A. O'Neil (Eds.), *Dissociation and the dissociative disorders: DSM-V and beyond* (pp. 521–533). New York: Routledge.

Mossiker, F. (1969). *The affair of the poisons.* New York: Alfred A. Knopf.

Mulhern, S. (1991a). Embodied alternative identities: Bearing witness to a world that might have been. *Psychiatric Clinics of North America, 14*, 769–786.

Mulhern, S. (1991b). Satanism and psychotherapy: A rumor in search of an inquisition. In J. T. Richardson, J. Best, & D. G. Bromley (Eds.), *The Satanism scare* (pp. 145–172). New York: Aldine de Gruyter.

Mulhern, S. (1994). Satanism, ritual abuse, and multiple personality disorder: A sociohistorical perspective. *The International Journal of Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis, 42*, 265–288.

Murphy, J. (1988). *Santeria: An African religion in America*. Boston, MA: Beacon.

Murray, M. A. (1921). *The witch-cult in Western Europe*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Murray, M. A. (1933). *The god of the witches.* London: Sampson Low, Marston & Co.

Musopole, A. C. (1993). Witchcraft terminology, the Bible and African Christian theology: An exercise in hermeneutics. *Journal of Religion in Africa, 23*, 347–354.

Myers, J. E. (1994). *The backlash: Child protection under fire*. Newbury Park, CA: Sage Publications.

Nagel, S. B. (1989). Addictive behaviors: Problems in treatment with borderline patients. In J. F. Masterson & R. Klein (Eds.), *Psychotherapy of the disorders of the self* (pp. 395–410). New York: Brunner Mazel.

Nakamura, C. (2004). Dedicating magic: Neo-Assyrian apotropaic figurines and the protection of Assur. *World Archaeology, 36*(1), 11–25. doi: 10.1080/0043824042000192687

Neusner, J., Frerichs, E. S., & Flesher, P. V. (Eds.). (1989). *Religion, science, and magic: In concert and conflict.* New York: Oxford University Press.

Nelson, K. J., & Schulz, S. C. (2012). Treatment advances in borderline personality disorder. *Psychiatric Annals, 42*(2), 59–64. doi: 10.3928/00485713-20120124-06

Nevius, J. (1968). *Demon possession*. Grand Rapids, MI: Kregel Publications. (Original work published 1898.)

New, A. S., Perez-Rodriguez, M. M., & Ripoll, L. H. (2012). Neuroimaging and borderline personality disorder. *Psychiatric Annals, 42*(2), 65–71.

Newport, F. (2007). *Americans more likely to believe in God than the Devil, heaven more than hell*. Retrieved from http://www.gallup.com/poll/27877/americans-more-likely-believe-god-than-devil-heaven-more-than-hell.aspx

Newton, M. (1993). *Raising hell: An encyclopedia of devil worship and satanic crime*. New York: Avon Books.

Newton, M. (1997, April). *Guilty as charged*. Presentation at Dreamweavers Conference, Sponsored by Believe the Children, International Council on Cultism and Ritual Trauma, Survivors and Victims Empowered, and Mothers against Sexual Abuse, Chicago.

Niedtfeld, I., Schulze, L., Kirsch, P., Herpertz, S. C., Bohus, M., & Schmahl, C. (2010). Affect regulation and pain in borderline personality disorder: A possible link to the understanding of self-injury. *Biological Psychiatry, 68*(4), 383–391. doi: 10.1016/j.biopsych.2010.04.015

Nitzsche, J. C. (1975). *The genius figure in antiquity and the Middle Ages*. New York: Columbia University Press.

Noblitt, J. R. (1978). *Celestial concomitants of human behavior* (Unpublished doctoral dissertation). University of North Texas State University, 1978). Denton, TX.

Noblitt, J. R. (1993a). *Cult and ritual trauma disorder* [videotape]. Dallas, TX: Center for Counseling & Psychological Services.

Noblitt, J. R. (1993b, Spring). A proposal that the DSM add the diagnosis, Cult and Ritual Trauma Disorder, to a future revision. *The Society for the Investigation, Treatment & Prevention of Ritual and Cult Abuse News*, p. 2.

Noblitt, J. R. (1995). Psychometric measures of trauma among psychiatric patients reporting ritual abuse. *Psychological Reports, 77*, 743–747.

Noblitt, J. R. (1998a). *Accessing dissociated mental states*. [Self-published monograph available through the Center for Counseling and Psychological Services, P.C., 9601 White Rock Trail, Suite 103, Dallas, TX75238.]

Noblitt, J. R. (1998b, March). *Techniques for induction of trance phenomenon without suggestion*. Paper Presented at the 40th Annual Meeting of the American Society of Clinical Hypnosis, Fort Worth, TX.

Noblitt, J. R., & Noblitt, P. (2012a). Cult and ritual trauma disorder. In A. Brown-Miller (Ed.), *Violence and abuse in society: Understanding a global crisis*, vol. 3 (pp. 145–158). Santa Barbara, CA: Praeger.

Noblitt, J. R., & Noblitt, P. (2012b). Possession, ritual abuse, and dissociation. In A. Brown-Miller (Ed.), *Violence and abuse in society: Understanding a global crisis*, vol. 3 (pp. 127–144). Santa Barbara, CA: Praeger.

Noblitt, J. R., & Perskin, P. S. (1995). *Cult and ritual abuse: Its history, anthropology, and recent discovery in contemporary America*. Westport, CT: Praeger.

Noblitt, J. R., & Perskin, P. S. (2000). *Cult and ritual abuse: Its history, anthropology, and recent discovery in contemporary America* (Rev. ed.). Westport, CT: Praeger.

Noblitt, R. (2008a). Introduction. In R. Noblitt & P. P. Noblitt (Eds.), *Ritual abuse in the twenty-first century: Psychological, forensic, social and political considerations* (pp. 11–15). Bandon, OR: Robert D. Reed Publishers.

Noblitt, R. (2008b). Ritual abuse in the twenty-first century. In R. Noblitt and P. P. Noblitt (Eds.), *Ritual abuse in the twenty-first century: Psychological, forensic, social and political considerations* (pp. 17–20). Bandon, OR: Robert D. Reed Publishers.

Noblitt, R. (2010). An unintended specialty. *Voices: The Art and Science of Psychotherapy, 46*(3), 61−68.

Noblitt, R. (2011). Opening Pandora's box. *Interact, 11*(1), 39−42.

Noblitt, R. (2012). Foreword. In D. Shurter (Ed.), *Rabbit hole* (pp. 1−4). Council Bluffs, IA: Consider It Creative.

Noblitt, R., & Noblitt, P. P. (2008a). Redefining the language of ritual abuse and the politics that dictate it. In R. Noblitt & P. P. Noblitt (Eds.), *Ritual abuse in the twenty-first century: Psychological, forensic, social and political considerations* (pp. 21–30). Bandon, OR: Robert D. Reed Publishers.

Noblitt, R., & Noblitt, P. P. (Eds.). (2008b). *Ritual abuse in the twenty-first century: Psychological, forensic, social and political considerations*. Bandon, OR: Robert D. Reed Publishers.

Noblitt, R., & Noblitt, P. (2009a, Summer). Disability, ethics, and advocacy: The duty of clinicians to their disabled patients. *Forensic Examiner, 18*, 26−30.

Noblitt, R., & Noblitt, P. (2009b). Getting from here to there: Dissociation, disability, and survival. *Voices: The Art and Science of Psychotherapy, 45*(2), 38−43.

Noblitt, R., & Noblitt, P. (2009c). Social security disability, supplemental security income: What you need to know. *Survivorship*, *15*(1), 12−16.

Noblitt, R., & Noblitt, P. (2010). Psychologists and the economics of Social Security disability programs. *Professional Psychology: Research and Practice*, *4*(3), 274−279.

Noblitt, R., & Noblitt, P. (2012). Social security disability criteria and substance abuse. *Professional Psychology: Research and Practice, 43*(2), 94–99. doi: 10.1037/a0027454

Noll, R. (1989). Multiple personality, dissociation, and C. G. Jung's complex theory. *Journal of Analytical Psychology, 34*, 353–370.

Noll, R. (1990). *Bizarre diseases of the mind.* New York: Berkeley.

Noll, R. (1992). Possession syndrome. In R. Noll (Ed.), *The encyclopedia of schizophrenia and the psychotic disorders* (pp. 245–246). New York: Facts on File.

Norcross, J. C., Koocher, G. P., & Garofalo, A. (2006). Discredited psychological treatments and tests: A Delphi poll. *Professional Psychology: Research and Practice, 37*(5), 515–522. doi: 10.1037/0735–7028.37.5.515

Noricks, J. (2011). *Parts psychology.* Los Angeles, CA: New University Press.

North, C. S., Ryall, J. M., Ricci, D. A., & Wetzell, R. D. (1993). *Multiple personalities, multiple disorders.* New York: Oxford University Press.

Novello, P., & Primavera, A. (1992). An ethnological approach to self-injurious behavior [Letter to the editor]. *American Journal of Psychiatry, 149,* 1763.

Oesterreich, T. K. (1966). *Possession: Demoniacal and other among primitive races, in antiquity, the Middle Ages and modern times.* New Hyde Park, NY: University Books.

Oestigaard, T. (2000). Sacrifices of raw, cooked and burnt humans. *Norwegian Archaeological Review, 33*(1), 41–58. doi: 10.1080/00293650050202619

Ofshe, R., & Waters, E. (1994). *Making monsters: False memories, psychotherapy and sexual hysteria.* New York: Charles Scribner's Sons.

Ofshe, R. J. (1992). Inadvertent hypnosis during interrogation: False confession due to dissociative state; misidentified multiple personality and the satanic cult hypothesis. *International Journal of Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis*, *3*, 125–156.

Oke, I. (1989). *Blood secrets: The true story of demon worship and ceremonial murder.* New York: Prometheus Books.

Oksana, C. (1994). *Safe passage to healing: A guide for survivors of ritual abuse*. New York: HarperCollins.

Oksana, C. (2001). *Safe passage to healing: A guide for survivors of ritual abuse*. Lincoln, NE: iUniverse.com, Inc.

Olson, K. (1992). *Exorcism: Fact or fiction.* Nashville, TN: Thomas Nelson Publishers.

Orne, M. T., & Bates, B. L. (1992). Reflections on multiple personality disorder: A view from the looking glass of the past. In A. Kales, C. M. Pierce, & M. Greenblatt (Eds.), *The mosaic of contemporary psychiatry in perspective* (pp. 247–260). New York: Springer-Verlag.

Osborn, R. D. (1968). The moon and the mental hospital: An investigation of one area of folk-lore. *Journal of Psychiatric Nursing and Mental Health Services, 6*, 88–93.

OSCE Office of the Special Representative and Co-ordinator for Combating Trafficking in Human Beings in Partnership with the Ludwig Boltzmann Institute of Human Rights and the Helen Bamber Foundation. (2013, June). *Trafficking in human beings amounting to torture and other forms of ill-treatment,* Occasional Paper Series No. 5. Retrieved from http://www.osce.org/cthb/103085

Ost, J., Wright, D., Easton, S., Hope, L., & French, C. (2013). Recovered memories, satanic abuse, dissociative identity disorder and false memories in the UK: A survey of clinical psychologists and hypnotherapists. *Psychology, Crime & Law*, *19*(1), 1–19. doi: 10.1080/1068316X.2011.598157

Overton, M. (1994, November 16). Copies of Wilson file missing in burglary. *Gilmer Mirror*, pp. 1, 7A.

Pagels, E. (1981). *The gnostic gospels.* New York: Vintage Books.

Pagels, E. (1988). *Adam, Eve, and the serpent.* New York: Random House.

Parfrey, A. (Ed.). (2009). *Love sex fear death: The inside story of the Process Church of the Final Judgment*. Port Townsend, WA: Feral house.

Parkin, A. J. (1987). *Memory and amnesia: An introduction*. Cambridge, MA: Basil Blackwell.

Parrinder, G. (1970). *Witchcraft: European and African*. London: Faber & Faber.

Patterson, J., & Kim, P. (1992). *The day America told the truth*. New York: Penguin Books.

Pattison, E. M. (1974). Ideological support for the marginal middle class: Faith healing and glossolalia. In I. I. Zaretsky & M. P. Leone (Eds.), *Religious movements in contemporary America* (pp. 418–455). Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.

Peck, M. S. (1983). *People of the lie: The hope for healing human evil*. New York: Simon & Schuster.

Pennock, C. D. (2012). Mass murder or religious homicide? Rethinking human sacrifice and interpersonal violence in Aztec society. *Historical Social Research, 37*(3), 276–302.

Penrose, J. (2013, February 3). Veteran comedian in his 70s to be arrested by cops probing sex allegations. *Mirror Online*. Retrieved from http://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/jimmy-savile-child-abuse-scandal-1571408

Pepinsky, H. (2005). Sharing and responding to memories. *American Behavioral Scientist, 48*(10), 1360–1374. doi: 10.1177/0002764205277013

Perry, N. E. (1992). *Therapists' experiences of the effects of working with dissociative patients*. Paper Presented at the 9th Annual Meeting of the International Society for the Study of Multiple Personality and Dissociation, Chicago, IL.

Piggott, S. (1987). *The druids*. New York: Thames & Hudson.

Pike, A. (1871/1966). *Morals and dogma of the ancient and accepted rite of freemasonry*. Washington, DC: L.H. Jenkins.

Pisa, N. (2007, January 7). *Italian priests join the war on satanic crime* [The telegraph]. Retrieved from http://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/worldnews/1538808/Italian-priests-join-the-war-on-Satanic-crime.html

Pistone, J. (1992). *The ceremony: The Mafia initiation tapes*. New York: Dell.

Pokorny, A. D. (1964). Moon phases, suicide, and homicide. *American Journal of Psychiatry, 121*, 66–67.

Pokorny, A. D. (1968). Moon phases and hospital admissions. *Journal of Psychiatric Nursing and Mental Health Services, 6*, 325–327.

Pokorny, A. D., & Jachimczyk, J. (1974). The questionable relationship between homicide and the lunar cycle. *American Journal of Psychiatry, 131*, 827–829.

Pope, H. G., Oliva, P. S., Hudson, J. I., Bodkin, J. A., & Gruber, A. J. (1999). M.D. *Attitudes toward DSM-IV dissociative disorders diagnoses among board-certified American psychiatrists. American Journal of Psychiatry 1999;156:321-323.*

Pope, K. S. (1997). Science as careful questioning: Are claims of a false memory syndrome epidemic based on empirical evidence? *American Psychologist*, *52*(9), 997–1006. doi: 0.1037/0003–066X.52.9.997.b Pope, K. S., & Vasquez, M. J. T. (2011). *Ethics in psychotherapy and counseling: A practical guide* (4th ed.). Hoboken, NJ: John Wiley & Sons.

Potter, C. F. (1984). Infanticide. In M. Leach & J. Fried (Eds.), *Funk & Wagnalls standard dictionary of folklore, mythology, and legend* (pp. 522–524). San Francisco, CA: Harper & Row.

Powers, W. K. (1977). *Oglala religion.* Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press.

Pressel, E. (1973). Umbanda in São Paulo: Religious innovation in a developing society. In E. Bourguinon (Ed.), *Religion, altered states of consciousness, and social change* (pp. 264–318). Columbus: Ohio State University Press.

Pressel, E. (1977). Negative spirit possession in experienced Brazilian Umbanda spirit mediums. In V. Crapanzo & V. Garrison (Eds.), *Case studies in spirit possession* (pp. 333–364). New York: John Wiley & Sons.

Prince, M. (1925). The problem of personality: How many selves have we? *Pedagogical Seminary and Journal of Genetic Psychology, 32*, 266–229.

Putnam, F. W. (1989). *Diagnosis and treatment of multiple personality disorder*. New York: Guilford Press.

Putnam, F. W. (1991). Commentary: The satanic ritual abuse controversy. *Child Abuse & Neglect, 15*, 175–179.

Putnam, F. W., Guroff, J. J., Silberman, E. K., Barban, L., & Post, R. M. (1986). The clinical phenomenology of multiple personality disorder: A review of 100 recent cases. *Journal of Clinical Psychiatry, 47*, 285–293.

Raiswell, R., & Dendle, P. (2008). Demon possession in Anglo-Saxon and early modern England: Continuity and evolution in social context. *Journal of British Studies, 47(*4), 738–767.

Raschke, C. A. (1990). *Painted black.* New York: HarperCollins.

Rasimus, T. (2005). Ophite Gnosticism, Sethianism and the Nag Hammadi library. *Vigiliae Christianae, 59*(3), 235–263. doi: 10.1163/15700720546 40478

Ravenscroft, K. (1965). Voodoo possession: A natural experiment in hypnosis. *International Journal of Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis, 13,* 157–182.

Razran, G. (1971). *Mind in evolution: An East-West synthesis of learned behavior and cognition.* New York: Houghton Mifflin.

Regardie, I. (1987). *What you should know about the Golden Dawn*. Phoenix, AZ: Falcon Press.

Regardie, I. (1989). *The Golden Dawn* (6th ed.). St. Paul, MN: Llewellyn.

Regier, D. A., Narrow, W. E., Clarke, D. E., Kraemer, H. C., Kuramoto, J., Kuhl, E. A., et al. (2013). DSM-5 field trials in the United States and Canada, Part II: Test-retest reliability of selected categorical diagnoses. *American Journal of Psychiatry, 170*(1), 59–70. doi: 10.1176/appi.ajp.2012.12070999

Reinhard, J., & Ceruti, C. (2005). Sacred mountains, ceremonial sites, and human sacrifice among the Incas. *Archaeoastronomy, 19*, 1–43.

Reitz, S., Krause-Utz, A., Pogatzki-Zahn, E. M., Ebner-Priemer, U., Bonus, M., & Schmahl, C. (2012). Stress regulation and incision in borderline personality disorder: A pilot study modeling cutting behavior. *Journal of Personality Disorders, 26*(4), 605–615. doi: 10.1521/pedi.2012.26.4.605

Reynolds, E. H. (2012). Hysteria, conversion and functional disorders: a neurological contribution to classification issues. *The British Journal of Psychiatry, 201*, 253–254. doi: 10.1192/bjp.bp.111.107219

Richardson, S. (2011). Maintaining agency: A therapist's journey. In O. B. Epstein, J. Schwartz, & R. W. Schwartz (Eds.), *Ritual abuse and mind control: The manipulation of attachment needs* (pp. 169–178). London: Karnac Books.

Ribi, A. (1990). *Demons of the inner world: Understanding our hidden complexes.* Boston, MA: Shambhala.

Rigaud, M. (1985). *Secrets of voodoo.* San Francisco, CA: City Lights Books.

Riseman, J. (2008). Ritual abuse survivors: Diverse, yet similar. In R. Noblitt & P. P. Noblitt (Eds.), *Ritual abuse in the twenty-first century: Psychological, forensic, social, and political considerations* (pp. 479–489). Bandon, OR: Robert D. Reed.

Ritual Abuse Task Force, Los Angeles County Commission for Women. (1989). *Ritual abuse: Definitions, glossary, the use of mind control*. Los Angeles, CA: Author.

Robbins, A. D. (1996). Cults and cult abuse: Clinical realities, historical perspective [Review of the book *Cult and ritual abuse: Its history, anthropology and recent discovery in contemporary America*, by J. R. Noblitt & P. S. Perskin]. *Journal of Psychohistory, 24*(4), 409–416.

Robbins, R. H. (1981). *The encyclopedia of witchcraft and demonology*. New York: Bonanza Books.

Roberts, J. F. (2000). Margaret Murray, An historian of the Craft? Retrieved from http://www.witch.plus.com/7day-extracts/Margaret-Murray.html

Robertson, P. (1991). *The new world order*. Dallas, TX: Word Publishing.

Robinson, J. J. (1989). *Born in blood: The lost secrets of freemasonry*. New York: M. Evans.

Robinson, J. J. (1991). *Dungeon, fire and sword: The Knights Templar in the crusades*. New York: M. Evans & Co.

Robinson, J. M. (Ed.). (1988). *The Nag Hammadi library in English*. San Francisco, CA: Harper & Row.

Robinson, P. (1991). *The new world order*. Dallas, TX: Word Publishing.

Rogers, A. (1994). *For survival's sake workbook*. Lewiston, NY: Rogers.

Rogers, B., & Acton, T. (2012). "I think we're all guinea pigs really": A qualitative study of medication and borderline personality disorder. *Journal of Psychiatric and Mental Health Nursing, 19*, 341–347.

Romney, K. M. (2005). Watery tombs. *Archaeology, 58*(4), 42–49.

Rose, E. S. (1993, January). Surviving the unbelievable: Cult ritual abuse. *Ms.*, pp. 40–45.

Ross, C. A. (1989). *Multiple personality disorder: Diagnosis, clinical features and treatment*. New York: John Wiley & Sons.

Ross, C. A. (1997). *Dissociative identity disorder: Diagnosis, clinical features, and treatment of multiple personality* (2nd ed.). Hoboken, NJ: John Wiley & Sons.

Rowan, J. (1990). *Subpersonalities: The people inside us*. London: Routledge.

Rowan, J. (2010). *Personification: Using the dialogical self in psychotherapy and counseling*. London: Routledge.

Rudolph, K. (1987). *Gnosis: The nature & history of Gnosticism*. San Francisco, CA: HarperSanFrancisco.

Ruocco, A. C., Amirthavasagam, S., & Zakzanis, K. K. (2012). Amygdala and hippocampal volume reductions as candidate endophenotypes for borderline personality disorder: A meta-analysis of magnetic resonance imaging studies. *Psychiatry Research: Neuroimaging, 201*(3), 245–252. doi: 10.1016/j.pscychresns.2012.02.012

Russell, J. B. (1972). *Witchcraft in the middle ages*. Secaucus, NJ: Citadel Press.

Russell, J. B. (1984). *Lucifer: The devil in the middle ages*. Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press.

Russell, J. B. (1988). *The prince of darkness: Radical evil and the power of good in history*. Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press.

Russell, J. B. (1991). The historical Satan. In J. T. Richardson, J. Best, & D. G. Bromley (Eds.), *The Satanism scare* (pp. 41–48). New York: Aldine de Gruyter.

Russell, N. (1993, September). *Ritualized crimes against children*. Presented at the National Conference on Crimes against Children, Washington, DC.

Rutz, C., Becker, T., Overkamp, B., &Karriker, W. (2008). Exploring commonalities reported by adult survivors of extreme abuse: Preliminary empirical findings. In R. Noblitt & P. P. Noblitt (Eds.), *Ritual abuse in the twenty-first century: Psychological, forensic, social, and political considerations* (pp. 31–84). Bandon, OR: Robert D. Reed.

Ryder, D. (1992). *Breaking the circle of satanic ritual abuse*. Minneapolis, MN: CompCare Publishers.

Ryder, D. (1994). Cover-up of the century: *Satanic ritual crime and world conspiracy*. Carmel, CA: Ryder Publishing.

Sachs, A. (2008a). Infanticidal attachment. In A. Sachs & G. Galton (Eds.), *Forensic aspects of dissociative identity disorder* (pp. 127–139). London: Karnac Books.

Sachs, A. (2008b). Introduction. In A. Sachs & G. Galton (Eds.), *Forensic aspects of dissociative identity disorder* (pp. 1–8). London: Karnac Books.

Sachs, A., & Galton, G. (Eds.). (2008). *Forensic aspects of dissociative disorder.* London: Karnac Books.

Saitoti, T. O. (1986). *The worlds of a Maasai warrior: An autobiography.* New York: Dorset.

Saliba, J. A. (1998). Review of the book *Cult and ritual abuse: Its history, anthropology and recent discovery in contemporary America*, by J. R. Noblitt & P. S. Perskin. *The Heythrop Journal*, *39*(1), 451–452.

Salter, A. (1992). *Accuracy of expert testimony in child sexual abuse cases: A case study of Ralph Underwager and Holida Wakefield.* [Unpublished manuscript]

Salter, A. C. (1998). Confessions of a whistle-blower: Lessons learned. *Ethics & Behavior, 8*(2), 115–124. doi: 10.1207/s15327019eb0802_2

Salter, M. (2012). Organised abuse: A neglected category of sexual abuse with significant lifetime mental healthcare sequelae. *Journal of Mental Health*, *21*(5), 499–508. doi: 10.3109/09638237.2012.682264

Samuel, D. B., Miller, J. D., Widiger, T. A., Lynam, D. R., Pilkonis, P. A., & Ball, S. A. (2012). Conceptual changes to the definition of borderline personality disorder proposed for DSM-5. *Journal of Abnormal Psychology*, *121*(2), 467–476. doi: 10.1037/a0025285

Sarkis, S. (2011, December 13). Borderline personality disorder: Big changes in the DSM-5. *Psychology Today*. Retrieved from http://www.psychologytoday.com/blog/here-there-and-everywhere/201112/borderline-personality-disorder-big-changes-in-the-dsm-5

Sargant, W. (1974). *The mind possessed: A physiology of possession, mysticism and faith healing.* Philadelphia, PA: J.B. Lippincott.

Sarson, J., & MacDonald, L. (2008). Ritual abuse-torture within families/groups. *Journal of Aggression, Maltreatment & Trauma*, *16*(4), 419–438.

Scaliger, C. (2010, June 21). Mithraic mysteries and the cult of empire. *The New American*, *26*(13), 35–39.

Schele, L., & Miller, M. E. (1986). *The blood of kings: Dynasty and ritual in Maya art.* Fort Worth, TX: Kimball Art Museum.

Schmahl, C., Berne, K., Krause, A., Kleindienst, N., Valerius, G., Vermetten, E., et al. (2009). Hippocampus and amygdala volumes in patients with borderline personality disorder with or without posttraumatic stress disorder. *Journal of Psychiatry & Neuroscience*, *34*(4), 289–295.

Schmuttermaier, J., & Veno, A. (1999). Counselors' beliefs about ritual abuse: An Australian study. *Journal of Child Sexual Abuse*, *8*(3), 45–63.doi: 10.1300/J070v08n03_03

Schmuttermaier, J. R. (2001). Cult and ritual abuse: Sadism not sophism [Review of the book *Cult and ritual abuse: Its history, anthropology and recent discovery in contemporary America*, by J. R. Noblitt & P. S. Perskin]. *Contemporary Psychology: APA Review of Books*, *46*(6), 615–617.

Schneider, S., & Berke, J. H. (2008). The oceanic feeling, mysticism and Kabbalah: Freud's historical roots. *Psychoanalytic Review*, *95*(1), 131–156.

Schreiber, N. (2000). Interviewing techniques in sexual abuse cases—A comparison of a day-care abuse case with normal abuse cases. *Swiss Journal of Psychology*, *59*(3), 196–206. doi: 10.1024//1421–0185.59.3.196

Schulz, S. C., & Nelson, K. J. (2012). Borderline personality disorder. *Psychiatric Annals*, *42*(2), 43–44. doi: 10.3928/00485713–20120124–02

Schwartz, M. F. (1993, Summer). False memory blues. *Masters and Johnson Report*, p. 3.

Schwartz, R. C. (1987, March). Our multiple selves: Applying systems thinking to the inner family. *Networker*, pp. 80–83.

Schwartz, R. W. (2011). “An evil cradling?” Cult practices and the manipulation of attachment needs in ritual abuse. In O. B. Epstein, J. Schwartz, & R. W. Schwartz (Eds.), *Ritual abuse and mind control: The manipulation of attachment needs* (pp. 39–55). London: Karnac Books.

Schwecke, L. H. (2009). Beyond childhood sexual abuse: Ritual abuse-torture and human trafficking. *Journal of Psychosocial Nursing and Mental Health Services, 49*(1), 8–10. doi: 10.3928/02793695–20101202–02

Scot, R. (1972). *The discoverie of witchcraft*. New York: Dover. Original work published 1584.

Scott, S. (1993). Beyond belief: Beyond help? Report on a helpline advertised after the transmission of a channel 4 film on ritual abuse. *Child Abuse Review, 2*(4), 243–250.

Scott, S. (1999). Fragmented selves in late modernity: Making sociological sense of multiple personalities. *Sociological Review, 47*(3), 432–460. doi: 10.1111/1467–954X.ep2178761

Scott, S. (2001). *The politics and experience of ritual abuse: Beyond disbelief*. Buckingham, UK: Open University Press.

Sebald, H. (1995). *Witch-children: From Salem witch-hunts to modern courtrooms*. Amherst, NY: Prometheus Books.

Segal, R. A. (Ed.). (1992). *The Gnostic Jung.* Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.

Semenyna, S., & Schmaltz, R. (2012). Glossolalia meets glosso-psychology. *Skeptic, 17(*4), 40–43.

Serrill, M. S., & Crumley, B. (1994, October 24). Remains of the day. *Time*, 144(17), 42.

Sex abuse, lies and videotape. (1995, Spring). *Believe the Children Newsletter*, pp. 1, 4.

Shaffer, R. E., & Cozolino, L. J. (1992). Adults who report childhood ritualistic abuse. *Journal of Psychology and Theology, 20*(3), 188–193.

Shamdasani, S. (2012). After Liber Novus. *Journal of Analytical Psychology, 57,* 364–377.

Shapiro, J. O., Streiner, D. L., Gray, A. L., Williams, N. L., & Soble, C. (1970). The moon and mental illness: A failure to confirm the Transylvania effect. *Perceptual & Motor Skills, 30*, 827–830.

Shaw, J. D., & McKenney, T. C. (1988). *The deadly deception.* Lafayette, LA: Huntington House.

Short, M. (1989). *Inside the brotherhood: Further secrets of the freemasons*. New York: Dorset Press.

Shupe, A. D., & Bromley, D. G. (1985). *A documentary history of the anti-cult movement.* Arlington, TX: University of Texas at Arlington Center for Social Research.

Shurter, D. (2012). *Rabbit Hole*. Council Bluffs, IA: Consider It Creative.

Sidebotham, P., & Appleton, J. V. (2012). Understanding complex systems of abuse: Institutional and ritual abuse. *Child Abuse Review, 21*(6), 389–393. doi: 10.1002/car.2253

Sifakis, C. (1987). *The Mafia encyclopedia.* New York: Facts on File.

Silverstein, E., & Howard, S. (1985). *A man called horse* [videotape]. Farmington Hills, MI: CBS/Fox Video.

Simandl, R. J. (1997). Teen involvement in the occult. In G. A. Fraser (Ed.), *The dilemma of ritual abuse: Cautions and guides for therapists* (pp. 215–230). Washington, DC: American Psychiatric Association.

Simmons, M. (1974). *Witchcraft in the Southwest.* Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press.

Simpson, C. (1993). *The splendid blond beast: Money, law and genocide in the twentieth century.* New York: Grove Press.

Simpson, J. (1994). Margaret Murray: Who believed her, and why? *Folklore, 105*(1/2), 89–96.

Sinason, V. (1994). *Treating survivors of Satanist abuse*. London: Routledge.

Sinason, V. (2008a). From social conditioning to mind control. In A. Sachs & G. Galton (Eds.), *Forensic aspects of dissociative identity disorder* (pp. 167–184). London: Karnac Books.

Sinason, V. (2008b). When murder moves inside. In A. Sachs & G. Galton (Eds.), *Forensic aspects of dissociative identity disorder* (pp. 100–107). London: Karnac Books.

Sinason, V. (2011). What has changed in twenty years? In O. B. Epstein, J. Schwartz, & R. W. Schwartz (Eds.), *Ritual abuse and mind control: The manipulation of attachment needs* (pp. 1–37). London: Karnac Books.

Smith, J. (2009, March 27). Believing the children. *The Austin Chronicle*. Retrieved from http://www.austinchronicle.com/news/2009–03–27/759086/

Smith, M. (1993). *Ritual abuse: What it is, why it happens, how to help*. San Francisco, CA: HarperSanFrancisco.

Smith, M., & Pazder, L. (1980). *Michelle remembers*. New York: Congdon & Lattes.

Snow, B., & Sorenson, T. (1990). Ritualistic child abuse in a neighborhood setting. *Journal of Interpersonal Violence*, *5*, 474–487.

Solomon, R. (1983). The use of the MMPI with multiple personality patients. *Psychological Reports, 53*, 1004–1006.

Somé, M. P. (1993). *Ritual: Power, healing and community.* Portland, OR: Swan, Raven.

Somé, M. P. (1994). *Of water and the spirit: Ritual, magic, and initiation in the life of an African shaman.* New York: G.P. Putnam's Sons.

Spanos, N. P. (1996). *Multiple identities and false memories: A sociocognitive perspective*. Washington, DC: American Psychological Association.

Spanos, N. P., Weeks, J. R., Menary, E., & Betrand, L. D. (1986). Hypnotic interview and age regression procedures in elicitation of multiple personality symptoms: A simulation study. *Psychiatry*, *49*, 298–311.

Spence, L. (1993). *An encyclopedia of occultism*. New York: Carol Publishing.

Spiegel, D., Lewis-Fernández, R., Lanius, R., Vermetten, E., Simeon, D., & Friedman, M. (2013). Dissociative disorders in DSM-5. *Annual Review of Clinical Psychology, 9,* 299–326. doi: 10.1146/annurev-clinpsy-050212–185531

Spiegel, D., Loewenstein, R. J., Lewis-Fernández, R., Sar, V., Simeon, D., Vermetten, E., Cardeña, E., & Dell, P. F. (2011). Dissociative disorders in DSM-5. *Depression and Anxiety, 28*(12), 824–852. doi: 10.1002/da.20923

Spiegel, H. (1974). The grade 5 syndrome: The highly hypnotizable person. *International Journal of Clinical & Experimental Hypnosis, 22,* 303–319.

Spiegel, H., & Spiegel, D. (1978). *Trance and treatment: Clinical uses of hypnosis*. New York: Basic Books.

St. Clair, D. (1987). *Say you love Satan.* New York: Dell.

Stafford, J., & Lynn, S. J. (2002). Cultural scripts, memories of childhood abuse, and multiple identities: A study of role-played enactments. *International Journal of Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis, 50*(1), 67–85. doi: 10.1080/00207140208410091

Stanton, B. (1992). *Klanwatch: Bringing the Ku Klux Klan to justice*. New York: Mentor.

Steele, H. (2003). Unrelenting catastrophic trauma within the family: When every secure base is abusive. *Attachment & Human Development,* *5*(4), 353–366. doi: 10.1080/14616730310001633438

Steffon, J. J. (1992). *Satanism: Is it real?* Ann Arbor, MI: Servant Productions.

Steiger, B. (1971). *Kahuna magic.* West Chester, PA: Whitford Press.

Steinberg, M. (1995). *Handbook for the assessment of dissociation: A clinical guide.* Washington, DC: American Psychiatric Press.

Stern, C. R. (1984). The etiology of multiple personalities. *Psychiatric Clinics of North America, 7,* 149–160.

Stevens, P. (1991). The demonology of Satanism: An anthropological view. In J. T. Richardson, J. G. Best, & D. G. Bromley (Eds.), *The Satanism scare* (pp. 21–39). New York: Aldine de Gruyter.

Still, W. (1990). *New world order: The ancient plan of secret societies*. Lafayette, LA: Huntington House.

Stoddard, E. (2007, November 29). *Poll finds more Americans believe in devil than Darwin*. Retrieved from http://www.reuters.com/article/2007/11/29/us-usa-religion-beliefs-idUSN2922875820071129

Stratford, L. (1988). *Satan's underground.* Eugene, OR: Harvest House.

Sullivan, D. (2008). Facing into the wind's teeth: Hal Pepinsky brings peacemaking to fields of war. *Contemporary Justice Review, 11*(3), 299–317. doi: 10.1080/10282580802295815

Summers, A. (1993). *Official and confidential: The secret life of J. Edgar Hoover.* New York: G.P. Putnam's Sons.

Summers, M. (1992). *The history of witchcraft and demonology.* Secaucus, NJ: Castle Books.

Suster, G. (1987). Modern scholarship and the origins of the Golden Dawn. In Israel Regardie (Ed.), *What you should know about the Golden Dawn* (pp. 159–178). Phoenix, AZ: Falcon Press.

Sutcher, H. (2008). A response to the commentaries on Hypnosis, hypnotizability and treatment. *American Journal of Clinical Hypnosis, 51*(2), 177–184. doi: 10.1080/00029157.2008.10401662

Sutter, R. C., & Cortez, R. J. (2005). The nature of Moche human sacrifice: A bio-archaeological perspective. *Current Anthropology, 46*(4), 521–549.

Swenson, E. (2012). Warfare, gender, and sacrifice in Jequetepeque, Peru. *Latin American Antiquity, 23*(2), 167–193.

Symonds, J. (1958). *Madame Blavatsky, medium and magician*. London: Oldhams.

Symonds, J. (1979). Introduction. In A. Crowley (Ed.), The *confessions of Aleister Crowley* (pp. 13–25). London: Arkana.

Tallant, R. (1990). *Voodoo in New Orleans.* Gretna, LA: Pelican Publishing.

Tannahill, R. (1975). *Flesh and blood: A history of the cannibal complex.* New York: Dorset Press.

Tasso, J., & Miller, E. (1976). The effects of the full moon on human behavior. *Journal of Psychology, 93*, 81–83.

Taussig, M. (1989). The nervous system: homesickness and Dada. *Stanford Humanities Review, 1*(1), 44–81.

Taylor, P. J., & Kopelman, M. D. (1984). Amnesia for criminal offenses. *Psychological Medicine, 14*, 581–588.

Telushkin, J. (1991). *Jewish Literacy: The most important things to know about the Jewish religion, its people, and its history.* New York: William Morrow.

Terry, M. (1987). *The ultimate evil.* Garden City, NY: Doubleday.

The Horos Case. (1902, January 18). *The Lancet, 2*, 174–175.

Thomas, G. (1989). *Journey into madness: The true story of secret CIA mind control and medical abuse*. New York: Bantam Books.

Thomas, K. (1971). *Religion and the decline of magic.* New York: Charles Scribner's Sons.

Three busted for suspected ritual murder. (2013, April 8). *Newsday*. Retrieved from http://www.newsday.co.zw/2013/04/08/three-busted-for-suspected-ritual-murder/

Tice, P. (1994, Spring). The Bogomils: Gnostics of old Bulgaria. *Gnosis*, pp. 55–60.

Tierney, P. (1989). *The highest altar: Unveiling the mystery of human sacrifice*. London: Penguin Books.

Tompkins, P. (1990). *This tree grows out of hell: Mesoamerican and the search for the magical body*. San Francisco, CA: HarperSanFrancisco.

Torrey, E. F. (1972). *The mind game: Witch doctors and psychiatrists*. New York: Emerson Hall.

Towers, E. D. (1986). *The man & the myth.* Wellingborough, UK: Crucible.

Trevor-Roper, H. R. (1968). *The European witch-craze of the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries and other essays*. New York: Harper & Row.

Trott, J., & Hertenstein, M. (1992). Selling Satan: The tragic history of Mike Warnke. *Cornerstone, 21*(98), 7–19, 30.

Tucker, R. (1989). *Strange gospels.* London: Marshall Pickering.

Turner, R. (2011, March 10). *Wales online*. Retrieved from http://www.walesonline.co.uk/news/wales-news/2011/03/10/Satanic-sex-cult-paedophile-guilty-91466–28312166/

Tyrer, P., & Silk, K. R. (2011). A comparison of UK and US guidelines for drug treatment in borderline personality disorder. *International Review of Psychiatry, 23*(4), 388–394. doi: 10.3109/09540261.2011.606540

Ulansey, D. (1989). *The origins of the Mithraic mysteries: Cosmology & salvation in the ancient world.* New York: Oxford University Press.

Unger, M. F. (1971). *Demons in the world today: A study of occultism in the light of God's word.* Wheaton, IL: Tyndale House.

Urban, H. B. (2003). The power of the impure: Transgression, violence and secrecy in Bengali Sakta Tantra and modern Western magic. *Numen: International Review for the History of Religions, 50*(3), 269–308. doi: 10.1163/156852703322192419

Valliere, P., Bybee, D., & Mobray, C. (1988, April). *Using the Child Behavior Checklist in child sexual abuse research: Longitudinal and comparative analysis*. Paper Presented at the National Symposium on Child Victimization, Anaheim, CA.

Valeri, V. (1985). *Kingship and sacrifice: Ritual and society in ancient Hawaii.* Chicago: University of Chicago Press.

van Biema, D. (1995, April 3). Prophet of poison. *Time*, pp. 26–33.

van der Hart, O., & Dorahy, M. J. (2006). Pierre Janet and the concept of dissociation. *American Journal of Psychiatry, 163*(9), 1646.

van der Hart, O., & Dorahy, M. J. (2009). History of the concept of dissociation. In P. F. Dell & J. A. O'Neil (Eds.), *Dissociation and the dissociative disorders: DSM-V and beyond* (pp. 3–26). New York: Routledge.

van der Kolk, B. (1987). *Psychological trauma*. Arlington, VA: American Psychiatric Publishing.

van Dijke, A., Ford, J. D., van Son, M., Frank, L., & van der Hart, O. (2012). Association of childhood-trauma-by-primary caregiver and affect dysregulation with borderline personality disorder symptoms in adulthood. *Psychological Trauma: Theory, Research, Practice, and Policy, 5*, 217–224. doi: 10.1037/a0027256

van Duijl, M., Nijenhuis, E., Komproe, I. H., Gernaat, H. B., & De Jong, J. T. (2010). Dissociative symptoms and reported trauma among patients with spirit possession and matched healthy controls in Uganda. *Culture, Medicine & Psychiatry, 34*(2), 380–400. doi: 10.1007/s11013–010–9171–1

Vankin, J. (1992). *Conspiracies, cover-ups and crimes.* New York: Dell.

Venkatachalam, M. (2011). Between the umbrella and the elephant: Elections, ethnic negotiations and the politics of spirit possession in Teshi, Accra. *Africa, 81*(2), 248–268. doi: 10.1017/S0001972011000180

Vetter, G. B. (1973). *Magic and religion: Their psychological nature, origin and function*. New York: Philosophical Library.

Victor, J. S. (1993). *Satanic panic: The creation of a contemporary legend*. Chicago, IL: Open Court.

Victor, J. S. (1998). Social construction of satanic ritual abuse and the creation of false memories. In J. de Rivera &T. R. Sarbin (Eds.), *Believed-in imaginings: The narrative construction of reality* (pp. 191–216). Washington, DC: American Psychological Association.

Vuorinen, T. (2007, September 19). Paloittelusurmaajalle 9 vuotta vesuritaposta. *Ilta-Sanomat.* Retrieved from http://www.iltasanomat.fi/kotimaa/art-1288339280705.html

Waite, A. E. (1970). *A new encyclopedia of freemasonry.* New York: Weathervane Books.

Waldinger, R. J., & Gunderson, J. G. (1987). *Effective psychotherapy with borderline patients: Case studies.* New York: Macmillan.

Walker, B. (1989a). Mystery religions. In R. Cavendish (Ed.), *Encyclopedia of the unexplained: Magic, occultism and parapsychology* (pp. 153–155). London: Arkana.

Walker, B. (1989b). Tantrism. In R. Cavendish (Ed.), *Encyclopedia of the unexplained: Magic, occultism and parapsychology* (pp. 242–244). London: Arkana.

Walker, B. G. (1983). *The woman's encyclopedia of myths and secrets.* San Francisco, CA: HarperSanFrancisco.

Walsh, B. W., & Rosen, P. M. (1988). *Self-mutilation: Theory, research, & treatment*. New York: Guilford Press.

Warmington, E. H., & Rouse, P. G. (Eds.). (1956). *Great dialogues of Plato.* New York: Mentor Books.

Warnke, M. A. (1991). *Schemes of Satan*. Tulsa, OK: Victory House.

Wassil-Grimm, C. (1995). *Diagnosis for disaster*. Woodstock, NY: The Overlook Press.

Waterman, J., Kelly, R. J., Olivieri, M. K., & McCord, J. (1993). *Beyond the playground walls: Sexual abuse in preschools*. New York: Guilford Press.

Webb, J. (1974). *The occult underground.* La Salle, IL: Open Court Publishing Co.

Webb, J. (1989). Gnosticism. In R. Cavendish (Ed.), *Encyclopedia of the unexplained: Magic, occultism and parapsychology* (pp. 94–99). London: Arkana.

Weigle, M. (1976). *Brothers of light, brothers of blood: The Penitentes of the Southwest.* Albuquerque: University of New Mexico Press.

Weinstein, H. M. (1990). *Psychiatry and the CIA: Victims of mind control.* Washington, DC: American Psychiatric Press.

Weinstein, M. (1980). *Earth magic: A Dianic book of shadows.* Custer, WA: Phoenix Publishing.

Weir, I. K., & Wheatcroft, M. S. (1995). Allegations of children's involvement in ritual sexual abuse: Clinical experience of 20 cases. *Child Abuse & Neglect*, *19*(4), 491–505. doi: 10.1016/0145-2134(95)00002-P

Weiskott, G. N. (1974). Moon phases and telephone counseling calls. *Psychological Reports*, *35*, 752–754.

Weiskott, G. N., & Tipton, G. B. (1975). Moon phases and state hospital admissions. *Psychological Reports*, *37*, 486.

Weissman, J. (1993). *Of two minds: Poets who hear voices.* Hanover, NH: University Press of New England.

Weitzenhoffer, A. M. (1989). *The practice of hypnotism: Traditional and semi-traditional techniques and phenomenology* (vol. 1). New York: John Wiley & Sons.

White, V. (1992). Some notes on Gnosticism. In R. A. Segal (Ed.), *The Gnostic Jung* (pp. 197–218). Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.

Wilberg, T., Friis, S., Karterud, S., Mehlum, L., Urnes, Ø., & Vaglum, P. (1998). Outpatient group psychotherapy: A variable continuation treatment for patients with borderline personality disorder treated in a day hospital? A 3-year follow-up study. *Nordic Journal of Psychiatry*, *52*(3), 213–221. doi: 10.1080/08039489850139139

Wilson, A. S., Taylor, T., Ceruti, M. C., Chavez, J. A., Reinhard, J., Grimes, V., & Gilbert, M. T. P. (2007). Stable isotope and DNA evidence for ritual sequences in Inca child sacrifice. *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences of the United States of America*, *104*(42), 16456–16461. doi: 10.1073/pnas.0704276104

Wilson, C. (1971). *The occult: A history*. New York: Random House.

Wilson, C. (1984). *A criminal history of mankind.* New York: Carroll & Graf Publishers.

Wilson, C. (1988). *Beyond the occult*. New York: Carroll & Graf Publishers.

Wilson, I. (1988). *Jesus: The evidence.* San Francisco, CA: Harper & Row.

Winchell, R. M., & Stanley, M. (1992). Dr. Winchell and Dr. Stanley reply [Letter to the editor]. *American Journal of Psychiatry*, *149*, 1763–1764.

Winer, S., & Ho, S. (2013, October). Sadistic cult leader sentenced to 26 years. *The Times of Israel*. Retrieved from http://www.timesofisrael.com/sadistic-cult-leader-sentenced-to-26-years/

World Health Organization. (1992). *The ICD-10 classification of mental and behavioural disorders: Clinical descriptions and diagnostic guidelines*. Geneva, Switzerland: Author.

Wright, H. B. (1957). *Witness to witchcraft*. New York: Funk & Wagnalls.

Wright, L. (1993a, May 17). Remembering Satan–part I. *New Yorker*, pp. 60–81.

Wright, L. (1993b, May 24). Remembering Satan–part II. *New Yorker*, pp. 54–76.

Wright, L. (1994). *Remembering Satan*. New York: Knopf.

Yank, J. R. (1991). Handwriting variations in individuals with multiple personality disorder. *Dissociation, 4*, 2–12.

Yap, P. M. (1960). The possession syndrome: A comparison of Hong Kong and French findings. *Journal of Mental Science, 106*, 114–137.

Yapko, M. D. (1994). *Suggestions of abuse: True and false memories of childhood sexual trauma*. New York: Simon & Schuster.

Yeager, C. C., & Lewis, D. O. (1997). False memories of cult abuse [Letter to the editor]. *American Journal of Psychiatry, 154*, 435.

Yenne, B. (1986). *The encyclopedia of North American Indian tribes*. New York: Crown Publishers.

Yoeli, F. R, & Prattos, T. (2008). Terrorism is the ritual abuse of the twenty-first century. In R. Noblitt & P. P. Noblitt (Eds.), *Ritual abuse in the twenty-first century: Psychological, forensic, social, and political considerations* (pp. 261–305). Bandon, OR: Robert D. Reed.

Young, W., Sachs, R. G., Braun, B. G., & Watkins, R. T. (1991). Patients reporting ritual abuse in childhood: A clinical syndrome. *Journal of Child Abuse and Neglect, 15*, 181–189.

Zaidner, E., Sewell, R. A., Murray, E., Schiller, A., Price, B. H., & Cunningham, M. G. (2010). New-onset dissociative disorder after electroconvulsive therapy. *The Journal of ECT, 26*(3), 238–241. doi: 10.1097/YCT.0b013e3181c3046c Zanarini, M. C. (2009). Psychotherapy of borderline personality disorder. *Acta Psychiatrica Scandinavica, 120*, 373–377. doi: 10.1111/j.1600–0447. 2009.01448.x Zanarini, M. C. (2012). Diagnostic specificity and long-term prospective course of borderline personality disorder. *Psychiatric Annals, 42*(2), 53–58. doi: 10.3928/00485713–20120124–05

Zanarini, M. C., & Jager-Hyman, S. (2009). Dissociation in borderline personality disorder. In P. F. Dell & J. A. O’Neil (Eds.), *Dissociation and the dissociative disorders: DSM-V and beyond* (pp. 487–493). New York: Routledge.

Zeddies, T. J. (2000). Adolescent Satanism: An intersubjective and cultural perspective. *Journal for the Psychoanalysis of Culture & Society, 5*(2), 276–284.

Ziegler, R. (2013). J.-K. Huysmans’s spiritual naturalism and the alchemy of redemption. *Romance Studies, 31*(2), 113–122. doi: 10.1179/02639 90413Z.00000000039

Zingrone, N. L., Alvarado, C. S., & Agee, N. (2009). Psychological correlates of aura vision: Psychic experiences, dissociation, absorption, and synaesthesia-like experiences. *Australian Journal of Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis, 37*(2), 131–168.

Name Index

Abse, D. W., 8, 9
Adams, J., 40
Adler, Alexandra, 123
Adler, Alfred, 25, 123
Adler, M., 147, 148, 149
Ahmed, R., 113
Aldrete, S., 105
Allen, T. B., 255
Ally, Y., 255
Altesman, R., 253
Ammons, C. H., 245
Anand, S., 251
Andrews, B., 55, 56, 168
Andrushko, V. A., 108
Aquino, M., 153, 270
Armstrong, J. G., 31
Ashe, G., 140, 260
Assagioli, R., 96
Ataç, M.-A., 269
Atkinson, J. M., 108

Bailey, B., 279
Bainbridge, W. S., 270
Bakan, D., 133
Baker, R. A., 44
Ball, T., 254
Bandelow, B., 249
Banks, W. D., 255
Barlow, M. R., 258
Barnett, H. G., 255
Barnier, A. J., 251
Barnow, S., 249

Barrett, J. L., 256
Barton, B., 264
Baskin, W., 133
Bauer, S. F., 119
Baumeister, R. F., 252
Beavan, V., 262
Beck, J. C., 113
Becker, T., 40, 46, 51, 56, 57, 62, 68, 69, 74, 168, 195, 227
Belford, B., 4
Bellafante, G., 195
Bellamy, C., 255
Belsky, J., 266
Benner, D. G., 249
Bennetts, L., 277
Berking, M., 248
Bernhard, B., 171
Birrell, P., 8
Blackman, S., 119
Blackmore, C., 250
Blavatsky, H. P., 135, 268, 269
Bliss, E. L., 20, 249, 255
Blood, L., 188
Bloy, M., 247
Boddy, J., 255
Bok, B. J., 120
Bonomi, A. E., 60
Bornovalova, M. A., 248
Bottoms, B. L., 53, 57, 77, 168, 247, 258
Bourguinon, E., 246, 255, 256
Bowart, W., 188, 280, 281
Bowden, H., 264
Bowman, E. S., 255
Bramley, S., 106
Bratersky, A., 246
Braude, S. E., 257
Braun, B., 26, 69, 70, 184, 249, 251, 255
Breault, M., 279
Breiner, S. J., 177, 281
Brennan, B., 42
Brenner, M., 268
Breuer, J., 252
Bromley, D. G., 280
Brown, D., 52
Brunet, L., 248
Bryant, N., xiii
Buck, O. D., 249
Bucky, S. F., 55
Burkert, W., 127, 128, 264
Burrell, S., 52
Burrows, W. E., 280

Burton, R., 134, 148
Bybee, D., 65
Byrne, C., 246

Calandrino, J. G., 48
Callan, A., 255
Campbell, R. J., 255
Cankaya, B., 8
Cannon, W. B., ix, 98, 263
Cantwell, A., 263
Cardeña, E., 250, 256
Cartwright, G., 190
Carus, P., 267, 272
Caruso, R., 249
Castellan, T., 88
Cavendish, R., 267
Cervantes, F., 258
Chambers, D. B., 250, 256
Chancellor, E. B., 247
Charles, R. H., 269
Chavez, F. A., 273
Cheit, R., 59
Cioffi, M., 194, 277
Clary, W. F., 249
Coan, J. A., 8
Cohen, E., 245, 256
Cohen, J., 77, 246
Cohen, S. B., 21
Cohn, N., 134
Cole, D. A., 53
Coleman, J., xiv
Colquhoun, I. 247
Comstock, C., 169, 246
Condon, R., 86, 280
Connor, C., 262
Constanzo, A., 105, 264
Coomaraswamy, R. P., 245
Coons, P. M., 59, 60, 255
Couliano, I. P., 264, 267, 268
Council, J. R., 251
Cowan, J. G., 113
Cozolino, L. J., 69, 71, 257, 264
Crabtree, A., 25, 255
Crapanzo, V., 254, 256
Crenshaw, D. G., 247
Critchfield, K. L., 248
Crook, L., 176, 275
Crowley, A., 1, 138, 140, 142, 144, 150, 165, 260, 263, 270, 271, 272, 274
Crowley, V., 149
Cumont, F., 128

Da Costa, H. J., 267
Dalenberg, C., 55
Dallam, S. J., 176, 275
Dandan, A., 246
Danforth, L. M., 255
Daraul, A., 267
Darley, A. M., 159
Dashwood, F., 4, 138, 247
Davies, N., 55, 108, 148, 168, 264
Davis, A. J., 39
Davis, S. L., 258
Davis, W., 99, 262, 263
DeCamp, J., xiii, 278, 280
De Jong, J. T., 255
Dell, P. F., 250, 252
De Martino, E., 110
deMause, L., 281
de Molay, J., 137
Deren, M., 98, 100, 262
Devine, M. J., 264
de Young, M., 76
Dillon, J., 262
Distel, M. A., 248
Driscoll, L. N., 69
Drury, N., 109, 166
DuBois, T. A., 108
Dumont, L. E., 253
Dunn, G. E., 11

Eberle, P., 194, 277
Eberle, S., 194, 277
Eliade, M., 108, 109, 111, 264
Eckstein, E., 123, 124, 125
Enzheng, T., 267
Epstein, O. B., xiv
Euteneuer, T. J., 43, 253
Evans-Pritchard, E. E., 117, 265
Eysenck, H. J., 120

Faller, K., xiii, 52, 65, 67, 76, 258
Faraone, C. A., 267
Farmer, J., 249
Feldman, G., 188, 276, 281
Fenekou, V., 262
Fielding, C., 268
Fielding, J., xiii, 246
Filoramo, G., 267, 268
Finkelhor, D., 53, 179
Fletcher, C., 122
Fletcher, K. E., 245
Fliess, W., 124, 125

Flint, I., 273
Flowers, S. E., 142, 270
Flynn, K., 279, 280
Fortune, D., 268
Fotheringham, T., 40
Frankfurter, D., 58, 166, 167, 267
Franklin, B., 4
Frazer, J. G., 255, 273
Frederick, C., 261
Freud, A., 26
Freud, S., 1, 25, 26, 123, 124, 125, 133, 177, 252, 259, 266
Freyd, J., 173, 174, 259, 275
Freyd, Pamela, 173, 175, 275
Freyd, Peter, 173, 175
Friesen, J. G., 41, 69, 74, 254, 255
Fröhling, U., 39

Galanter, M., 255
Gallagher, B., 61
Ganaway, G., 164, 177, 275
Gardner, G., 150
Gardner, R., 205, 208
Garrett, C., 44
Garrison, V., 104
Garven, S., 60
Geraci, J., 275
Gersi, D., 100, 110, 263, 269
Gilchrist, R., 267
Gill, M., 88
Girard, R., 273
Goddard, C., 246
Goldstein, E., 274
Golston, J. C., 272
Gonzalez-Wippler, M., 104, 264
Goodman, A., 251
Goodman, F. D., 255
Goodman, G. S., 53, 54, 168, 247, 251, 255, 258
Gottlieb, A., 101
Gough, D., 52
Gould, C., 257, 264
Grady, G., 192, 193
Graves, R., 273
Greaves, G., 164, 253
Green, T. A., 105
Greenfield, T. A., 165
Gregory, A. K., 44
Guest, J. S., 272
Guiley, R. E., 106, 109, 150, 262, 270
Guirdham, A., 273
Gunderson, J. G., 7

Haining, P., 148, 271
Hall, J., 246
Hammersley, P., 262
Harner, M., 34, 109, 110, 264
Harrison, B. G., 277
Haskins, J., 98
Hawkins, D., 43
Hawkins, T. R., 43, 255
Hayes, J. A., 11
Hayes, M. L. J., 40
Hazlett, E., 8
Hector, H., 41
Hendrickson, K. M., 256
Henney, J. H., 255
Herrmann-Pfandt, A., 245
Herva, V.-P., 267
Hess, D. J., 255
Hicks, R., 164
Hilberg, R., 170
Hill, S., 267, 268
Hitler, A., 170
Hoeller, S., 268
Holmberg, D., 108
Hooper, J., 246
Hopwood, C. J., 248
Horevitz, R., 249, 251, 255
Hornick, E. J., 119
Horos, T., 140
Howard, M., 127, 247, 267, 274
Howell, E. F., 249
Hoyt, C. A., 265
Hubbard, L. R., 142, 270
Hudson, P., 258
Hughes, A. E., 8
Huxley, A., 254
Huxley, F., 109
Huysmans, J. K., 162, 273
Hyatte, R., 160, 273

Idel, M., 268
Inglis, B., 88

Jackson, B., 40, 156
Jacob, G. A., 250
Jacobs, L., 268, 280
Jenkins, P., 165, 166
Johnston, J., 253
Jones, J., 226
Jonker, F., 56
Jonker-Bakker, P., 56, 66, 67
Joscelyne, B., 249

Joseph, S. M., 268
Jung, C. G., 25, 95, 96, 120, 261, 262

Kaczynski, R., 141
Kadi, J., 74
Kahaner, L., 76, 104, 122
Kantrowitz, B., 279
Karriker, W., 40, 46, 51, 56, 68, 69
Katchen, M., 59, 267
Keller, D., 190, 192, 205, 206, 278
Keller, F., 190, 192, 205, 206, 278
Kelley, S. J., 64, 67
Kertzer, M. N., 267
Kezelman, C., 40
Kilduff, M., 226
Kilroy, M., 105
Klein, M., 10
Kligman, G., 255
Klosinski, G., 38
Kluckhohn, C., 107, 266
Kluft, R. P., 255, 256
Knapp, B., 133
Knight, S., 269
Koch, K., 43
Koehler, K., 256
Kopala-Sibley, D. C., 248
Koresh, D., 225
Kroger, W. S., 259
Kroll, J., 9, 10
Kurath, G. P., 111

La Barre, W., 253, 255
Labott, S. M., 58, 69, 74, 75
LaBriere, D., 40
Lacarriere, J., 132
Lacayo, R., 279
Lachter, H., 268
La Fontaine, J. S., 77
Lame Deer, J., 111
Lanning, K., 274, 276
Larner, C., 266
Larson, B., 137, 253, 269, 280
Lasalandra, M., 43
Laughlin, H. P., 26
Laurence, L., 252, 279
LaVey, A. S., 153, 272
Lawrence, C., 262
Lawton, J., 246
Leacock, R., 106
Leacock, S., 106
Leavitt, F., 58, 69, 74, 75

Ledford, H., 251
Lefkof, G., 25, 184, 224, 251
Lemke, W., 261
Lemonick, M. D., 108, 112
Lester, D., 119, 261
Lewis, D. O., 31, 60
Lewis, I. M., 256
Lieban, R. W., 113
Lieber, A. L., 119
Linehan, M. M., 248
Lipstadt, D., 274
Lissner, I., 126
Livy, T., 127, 267
Lockwood, C., 246
Loftus, E., 175, 176
Longden, E., 262
Lord, E., 247
Lowenstein, R., 170
Luhrmann, T. M., 98, 150
Lynch, S. H., 249
Lynn, S. J., 60
Lyons, A., 267, 268, 273

MacDonald, L., 73
Macfarlane, A., 265
MacGauley, J., 194
MacGregor, G., 267
Macoy, R., 269, 274
Madu, S. N., 68
Magerl, W., 248
Mahmud, L., 139, 269
Maier-Khatin, D., 165, 166
Mair, L., 101, 266
Malhi, G., 251
Maloney, H. N., 255
Mandelsberg, R. G., 122
Mannix, D. P., 247
Marchetti, V., 280
Markman, P. T., 108
Markman, R. H., 108
Marks, J. D., 280
Marmer, S. S., 96
Marrs, T., 280
Marshall, A., 247
Martin, A., 263
Martin, L. H., 129
Martin, M., 42
Martin, W., 280
Marwick, M., 266
Masson, J. M., 123, 124, 125, 177, 266, 281

Mather, G. A., 268
Matthew, L., 267
McCormick, D., 247
McDougal, D., 195
McDowell, J., 280
McGowan, D., 77
McLeod, K., 246
McShane, C., 272
Melanson, T., 138, 262
Menninger, K., 122
Mercer, J., 253
Metraux, A., 263, 269
Michelet, J., 273
Miller, Alice, 178
Miller, Alison, viii, 257, 261
Mischel, F., 255
Mischel, W., 255
Montgomery, J. W., 43
Moody, E. J., 153, 272
Moore, R. I., 269
Morey, J. R., 261
Moriarity, A., 253
Morton, A., 257
Moskowitz, A., 245, 248, 262
Mossiker, F., 273
Mowbray, C., 65
Morales, D., 197, 278
Morgan, E., 218, 279
Mulhern, S., 46, 58, 164, 165, 255, 256, 265
Mungadze, J., 184
Murphy, J., 104
Murray, M., 134, 135, 148, 252, 268
Musopole, A. C., 265
Myers, J. E., 67

Nagel, S. B., 9
Nakamura, C., 267
Nelson, K. J., 7, 8, 247
Neusner, J., 263
Nevius, J., 44
New, A. S., 8
Newport, F., 253
Newton, M., 122, 274
Niedtfeld, I., 248
Nitzsche, J. C., 268
Noblitt, J. R., 17, 39, 45, 46, 51, 52, 58, 69, 74, 75, 85, 119, 126, 202, 224, 233, 245, 251, 257, 258, 260, 270, 279, 281
Noblitt, P. P., 45, 51, 52, 245, 253, 257, 281
Noll, R., 96, 164, 246
North, C. S., 254

Nostradamus, 121
Novello, P., 258

Oesterreich, T. K., 44, 109, 254, 255, 256
Oestigaard, T., 107
Ofshe, R., 58, 190, 191
Oke, I., 101, 102, 104, 116, 140, 255, 256
Oksana, C., 50, 188
Olson, F., 281
Olson, K., 43
O’Neil, J. A., 251, 252
Orne, M., 175, 256
Osborn, R. D., 119
Overkamp, B., 40, 46, 51, 56, 68, 69, 168
Overton, M., 277

Pagels, E., 267, 272
Pahl, M. A., xiii
Paolo, A., 11
Parfrey, A., 270
Parkin, A. J., 274
Parrinder, G., 101
Parsons, J., 165, 170
Pattison, E. M., 255
Pazder, L., 40, 142, 165
Peck, M. S., 41
Pennock, C. D., 108
Penrose, J., xiii
Pepinsky, H., 245
Perez-Rodriguez, M. M., 8
Perskin, P., 45, 51, 52, 245, 253, 257, 281
Piggott, S., 266
Pike, A., 135, 137
Pisa, N., 77
Pistone, J., 77
Pope, K. S., 11, 185, 275
Potter, C. F., 113
Povich, M., 194
Powers, W. K., 111
Prelatti, F., 160
Pressel, E., 264
Prattos, T., 227
Putnam, F., 21, 22, 252, 255, 256

Raiswell, R., 257
Raschke, C. A., 76, 105, 122, 139, 142, 153, 247, 267
Rasimus, T., 269
Razran, G., 259
Read, J., 245, 262
Regardie, I., 141
Regier, D. A., 251

Reinhard, J., 108
Reitz, S., 248
Reynolds, E. H., 250
Rigaud, M., 98, 100
Ripoll, L. H., 8
Riseman, J., 40
Rivera, G., 189
Robbins, A. D., 245, 265
Robbins, R. H., 273
Roberts, J. F., 268
Robertson, P., 269
Robinson, G., xiii
Robinson, J. J., 159, 269
Robinson, J. M., 130, 132, 267, 269
Rogers, A., 50
Rogers, B., 248
Rose, E. S., 39, 277
Ross, C. A., 12, 184, 185, 257
Rowan, J., 95, 96
Rudolph, K., 267, 268
Ruocco, A. C., 8
Russell, J. B., 134, 135, 248, 267, 273
Russell, N., xiii
Rutz, C., 40, 46, 51, 56, 57, 62, 68, 69, 74, 168, 193
Ryan, J., 11
Ryder, D., 41, 253

Sachs, A., 69
Saitoti, T. O., 101
Saliba, J. A., 245
Salter, A., 175
Salter, M., xiii, 53
Samuel, D. B., 248
Sargant, W., 103
Sarkis, S., 248
Sarson, J., 69, 73, 74
Savile, J., xiii
Schadler, J., 190, 191, 193
Scheflin, A., 52, 188
Schele, L., 108
Schmahl, C., 248
Schmuttermaier, J. R., 55, 56, 168, 245
Schreiber, N., 60
Schulz, S. C., 7, 8, 247
Schwartz, J., xiv, 96
Schwartz, M., 171
Schwecke, L. H., 74
Scott, S., 53, 59, 69, 71
Sebald, H., 134, 277
Semenyna, S., 255

Shaffer, R. E., 69, 71
Shapiro, J. O., 119
Shaw, J. D., 60, 269
Shipway, J., 204, 205, 206
Short, M., 136, 269, 270
Shupe, A. D., 280
Shurter, D., 40
Silverstein, E., 111
Simandl, R. J., 253
Simmons, M., 264
Simpson, C., 170, 274
Simpson, J., 268
Sinason, V., 52, 125, 246, 266
Smith, Margaret, 39, 40, 50, 69, 72, 73, 136, 137, 156, 193, 260, 261, 263, 266, 267, 269, 272
Smith, Michelle, 40, 142, 165
Snow, B., 66
Solomon, R., 255, 271
Somé, M. P., 103
Spanos, N. P., 20, 58
Spence, L., 132, 155, 274
Spiegel, D., 21, 99, 246, 250, 251
Spiegel, H., 20, 21, 99
Stafford, J., 60
Stanton, B., 269
Steele, H., 69, 75
Steffon, J., 42, 268
Steiger, B., 112
Steinberg, M., 245
Stern, C. R., 255
Stevens, P., 274
Stratford, L., 60
Stoddard, E., 253
Sullivan, D., 245
Summers, M., 274
Suster, G., 141
Sutcher, H., 251
Sutter, R. C., 108
Swenson, E., 108
Symonds, J., 272

Tallant, R., 98, 100
Tannahill, R., 101
Tasso, J., 120
Taussig, M., 108
Taylor, P. J., 274
Telushkin, J., 169
Terry, M., 263, 265
Thomas, G., 248
Thomas, K., 273, 281
Tice, P., 268

Tompkins, P., 108
Torrey, E. F., 265
Towers, E. D., 247
Trevor-Roper, H. R., 135
Tucker, R., 279
Turner, R., 77, 246

Ulansey, D., 128
Underwager, R., 175, 208, 274
Unger, M. F., 43
Urban, H. B., 166

van Biema, D., 280
van der Hart, O., 248, 252
van der Kolk, B., 241
van Dijke, A., 248
van Duijl, M., 255, 256
van Fleet, J., 11
Vankin, J., 137
Valeri, V., 112, 116
Valliere, P., 65
Vasquez, M. J. T., 185
Venkatachalam, M., 255
Vetter, G. B., 263
Victor, J. S., 59
Vuorinen, T., 246

Waite, A. E., 274
Wakefield, H., 175, 208
Wakefield, J., viii
Waldinger, R. J., 7
Walker, B., 128, 247, 268, 273
Walsh, B. W., 266
Warmington, E. H., 128
Warnke, M. A., 269
Wassil-Grimm, C., 173
Waterman, J., 58, 59, 60, 64, 262
Webb, J., 135, 267, 274
Weigle, M., 273
Weinstein, H. M., 281
Weinstein, M., 146, 151
Weishaupt, A., 139
Weiskott, G. N., 119
Weissman, J., 248
Weitzenhoffer, A. M., 254
Westcott, W. W., 141
Wilberg, T., 250
Wilson, A. S., 108
Wilson, C., 86, 87, 88, 110, 121, 126, 265
Wilson, I., 254
Wilson, K., 196, 197, 198

Winchell, R., 258
Winer, S., 247
Wright, C., 69
Wright, H. B., 109
Wright, L., 196, 277
Wright, W., 228
Wupperman, P., 248

Yank, J. R., 31
Yap, P. M., 25
Yapko, M. D., 275
Yeager, C. C., 31, 60
Yenne, B., 111
Yoeli, F., viii, 227
Young, W., 69, 70, 71, 75

Zaidner, E., 252
Zanarini, M. C., 247, 248, 249
Zeddies, T. J., 253
Ziegler, R., 133
Zingrone, N. L., 253

Subject Index

Accessing dissociated mental states, 117, 258
American Anthropological Association, viii
American Psychiatric Association, 6, 9, 16
American Psychological Association, 53
Anti-Semitism (anti-Semitic), 2, 138
Aryan Brotherhood, 225, 231
Aum Supreme Truth, 266
Automatism, 47, 235, 239, 242, 245

Backlash, 234, 235, 237
Beelzebub, 253
Belial, 253
Black magic, 104, 105, 106, 116, 117, 123, 140, 145
Black mass, 122, 123, 138, 159, 160, 161, 162
Borderline personality disorder, x, 5–12, 13, 15, 17, 27, 93, 237, 240, 248, 249, 256
Brainwashing, 59, 103, 164, 172, 190, 228, 233, 263
Branch Davidians, 168, 214, 225, 226, 230, 266, 277
Brujeria, 104, 105, 264
Bubonic plague (Black Death), 159

Catholic, Roman, 99, 104
Catholic Church, 34, 40, 42
Catholicism, 98
Child abuse, xii, 9, 40, 54, 58, 62, 65, 67, 68, 76, 163, 170, 173, 175, 177, 178, 191, 194, 196, 197, 215, 228, 232, 236, 246, 249, 257, 266, 274, 275, 281
Child protection, 56, 61, 200, 279
Child Protective Services (CPS), 60, 196, 200, 228, 238
Christian Identity Movement, 225, 231
Church of Satan, 153, 264, 272
Conversion disorder, 16, 250
Cue, 48, 72, 86, 87, 117, 158, 168, 201, 207, 224, 229, 235, 239, 261, 272
Cult and ritual trauma disorder, 232, 239–42

Cult classification, 230–32

Defense mechanism, 26, 252
Deliverance, 254
Deprogramming (deprogrammer), 228, 229, 280
Diagnostic and Statistical Manual of Mental Disorders (DSM), *6*, *16*, *232*, *233*
DSM-III, *6*, *9*, *233*
DSM-III-R, *233*
DSM-IV, *17*, *232*
DSM-IV-TR, *45*
DSM-5, *16*, *45*, *110*
Dissociation of identity, ix, x, 25, 39, 43, 46, 47, 48, 96, 99, 116, 145, 150, 151, 225, 235, 240, 245, 246, 251, 256, 257, 258, 259, 261, 262, 268
Dissociative Experiences Scale (DES), 35, 75

Electric shock, 70, 73, 74, 92
Electroconvulsive shock therapy (ECT), 30, 69
Exorcism, 42, 43, 69, 253, 254, 255

False memory, 59, 72, 171, 175, 176, 177, 235
False memory syndrome (FMS), 170
False Memory Syndrome Foundation (FMSF), 170, 192, 208, 236
Federal Bureau of Investigation (FBI), 76, 77, 91, 191, 192, 226, 236, 243, 281
Flashbacks, 74, 116, 120, 176, 178, 223, 240
Fraternitas Saturni (Brotherhood of Saturn), 142
Free association, 32, 261
Freemasonry, 129, 135, 137, 138, 139, 141, 150, 247, 263, 269
Friars of Medmenham, 138, 271
Friars of St. Francis, 138
Frye rule, 12

Glossolalia, 44, 255
Gnosticism (gnostic, gnosis), 129–43, 154, 155, 158, 159, 267, 268, 269, 270, 271, 272, 273

Hallucinations, 33, 46, 96, 115, 220, 240, 253, 275
Hermetic Order of the Golden Dawn, 140
Hoodoo, 96
Hypnosis (hypnoid, hypnotic, hypnotize, hypnotism), ix, 20, 21, 22, 47 48, 60, 73, 82, 83, 86, 87, 88, 99, 103, 115, 116, 140, 190, 213, 251, 259, 260, 261
Hypnotherapist (hypnotherapy), 55, 82
Hypnotic Induction Profile (HIP), 21

Incest (incestuous), 9, 35, 47, 66, 74, 118, 173, 236, 259
Initiations, 77, 110, 111, 113, 127, 128, 129, 137
Inquisition, 155, 159
International Classification of Diseases (ICD), 16, 170
International Society for the Study of Multiple Personality and Dissociation (ISSMP&D), 25, 56, 246
International Society for the Study of Trauma and Dissociation (ISSTD), xiv, 25, 251, 253

Judaism, 2, 130, 133, 154, 247, 263, 269
Juju, 98, 101, 102, 103, 140, 263, 264

Kabbalah (Cabala, Qabala, etc.), 132, 133, 137, 148, 229, 268
Knights Templar, 137, 271
Ku Klux Klan (KKK), 138

Leviathan, 253
Lucifer, 122, 129, 132, 135, 137, 154, 155, 253, 261
Luciferian, 132, 136, 140, 142, 158, 162, 225, 266, 271, 272
Luciferianism, 154, 155, 230

Mafia (La Cosa Nostro, Black Hand), 77, 160
Mental Health Parity Act, 248, 275
Mind control, x, xi, xiv, 40, 52, 56, 74, 85, 187, 226, 227, 228, 229, 230, 231, 232, 247, 257, 280, 281
Minnesota Multiphasic Personality Inventory (MMPI), 17, 35, 36, 58, 74, 75
Multiple personality disorder (MPD), 10, 17, 20–37, 41, 43, 44, 56, 80, 96, 141, 145, 180, 212, 223, 245, 246, 256, 272
Multiple sclerosis, 145, 270
Mystery cults, 118, 127, 129, 137, 154, 258

Nazis, 169, 170
Neo-Nazis, 225, 231

Oklahoma City, 122
Order of the Eastern Star, 144
Order of Perfectibilists (Bavarian Illuminati), 139
Order of the Trapezoid, 272
OrdoTempliOrientis (OTO), 140

Paidika, 175
Palazzo Borghese, 162
Penitentes (Brothers of Our Father Jesus), 159
Pentagram, 144
Placebo effect, 264
Pornography, 66, 68, 72, 73, 74, 194, 231, 277
Possession trance, ix, 110, 255, 256
Posttraumatic stress disorder (PTSD), x, 13, 35, 58, 69, 75, 163, 235, 237, 240, 257
Poverty, 26, 46, 200, 219, 221, 236, 279
Programming (programmed, programmer), 41, 56, 73, 85, 86, 87, 88, 90, 92, 103, 117, 122, 124, 134, 158, 168, 186, 201, 223, 224, 225, 229, 231, 247, 260, 261, 264, 270, 272, 280, 281
Propaganda Due (P2), 119, 269
Prostitution (prostitute), 39, 47, 72, 73, 74, 86, 199, 231
Psychoanalysis (psychoanalytic, psychoanalyst), xiv, 10, 25, 26, 178, 251
Psychotherapy, xii, xiv, 8, 10, 14, 21, 23, 27, 32, 37, 38, 57, 62, 69, 71, 74, 80, 93, 165, 172, 176, 177, 180–88, 197, 204, 238, 259, 261, 262

Ritual abuse definition, 47
Role-playing, 15, 23, 24, 60, 142, 150, 250
Rorschach, 58, 75, 261

Sacrifice, 32, 33, 54, 70, 71, 73, 89, 100, 101, 102, 104, 105, 107, 108, 112, 113, 114, 116, 128, 132, 140, 156, 160, 161, 165, 166, 205, 214, 262, 270, 274

Satan, 3, 39, 42, 91, 118, 121, 122, 124, 137, 140, 152, 191, 195, 261, 262, 272
Satanic, xi, xii, xiii, 4, 19, 39, 41, 43, 54, 55, 64, 66, 68, 70, 71, 74, 75, 77, 78, 91, 97, 121, 122, 123, 130, 131, 132, 136, 137, 164, 165, 166, 167, 172, 186, 190, 191, 201, 223, 225, 247, 253, 271
Satanic ritual abuse (SRA), 54, 55, 58, 61, 254
Satanic rumor panics, 59
Satanism, 38, 59, 118, 129, 152–62, 230, 253, 273
Satanist, 52, 268, 270
Scientology, 142
Seduction theory, 124
September 11, 2001, 227
Sexual abuse, xii, 1, 8, 9, 10, 24, 28, 30, 34, 35, 39, 53, 55, 58, 59, 60, 62, 64, 66, 67, 70, 71, 74, 83, 84, 96, 123, 124, 134, 153, 155, 173, 175, 178, 179, 191, 193, 196, 199, 204, 205, 206, 210, 214, 217, 229, 235, 241, 249, 259, 275
Shaman (shamanic, shamanism), 25, 34, 108, 109, 110, 111, 112, 113, 114, 115, 116, 118, 126, 127, 133, 148, 158, 253, 265
Social Security, x, 219, 221
Social Security Administration, 219, 257, 279
Social Security Disability Insurance, 200, 257
Solar Temple Lodge, 168, 226, 230, 266
Sorcery, 98, 101
Spirit possession, ix, 44, 102, 246, 268
Star of David, 2, 247, 109, 112, 114, 116, 117, 118, 126, 127, 135, 137, 158, 234, 262, 265
Stimuli, 86, 89, 90, 125, 158, 235, 239, 251, 252, 259, 260
Subpersonalities, 95, 96, 271
Sun dance (sun gazing dance), 111, 112
Supplemental Security Income, 200, 257
Survivorship, xiv, 40, 246

Temple of Set, 153
Theosophy, 135, 263
Theurgy, 131
Torture, 48, 63, 64, 66, 70, 73, 92, 100, 101, 111, 124, 134, 155, 157, 164, 196, 210, 232, 261
Trafficking, 73, 263
Trigger, 48, 51, 86, 87, 89, 91, 99, 117, 120, 158, 201, 207, 213, 215, 229, 235, 239, 251, 253, 261, 265

Unitarian Universalist Association, 149

Victims of Child Abuse Legislation (VOCAL), 175
Vodoun (voodoo, voudu, etc.), ix, 97, 98, 99, 100, 105, 262, 263
Voodooism, 97, 262

Walpurgisnacht, 153
Wicca, 1, 118, 143, 144–51, 215, 265, 271
Witchcraft, 134, 143, 144, 148, 149, 158, 159, 166, 234, 262, 264, 265, 266, 268, 271, 273

Yazidi, 154

Zoroastrian, 154

About the Authors

JAMES RANDALL NOBLITT, PhD, is a licensed clinical psychologist in the state of Texas and professor of clinical psychology at the California School of Professional Psychology at Alliant International University. His doctorate in clinical psychology was earned at the University of North Texas while on an Air Force Institute of Technology scholarship. He is formerly a member of the board of trustees of the Texas Psychological Association and with Pamela Noblitt authored *Cult and Ritual Abuse* and edited *Ritual Abuse in the 21st Century*. Individually and together, they have also published professional articles regarding topics that include dissociation, ritual abuse, and disability. One of their recent journal articles is “Social Security Disability Criteria and Substance Abuse” and appeared in the APA journal *Professional Psychology: Research and Practice*.

PAMELA PERSKIN NOBLITT is a victim’s advocate and Social Security Disability claimant’s representative. Formerly the executive director of the International Council on Cultism and Ritual Trauma, she was recognized as one of Eckerd’s 100 Women of 2000 at the Eckerd’s Salute to Women in Washington, D.C., on September 20, 2000. She serves on the board of directors of The Human Lactation Center and Hope for Children Foundation.

DARK ALLIANCE

The CIA, the CONTRAS, and the CRACK COCAINE EXPLOSION

GARY WEBB

SEVEN STORIES PRESS
New York

IN PRAISE OF GARY WEBB'S *DARK ALLIANCE*:

"Today, it is hard to say how Webb will be remembered by history. But if there is any justice, he will be remembered favorably. His book demonstrates that the original expose was on the right track. Rather than going too far by implicating U.S. government officials in illegal activities, it seems to me the newspaper series did not go far enough.
Based on the evidence in Webb's book, news organizations—especially the *Washington Post*, *New York Times*, and *Los Angeles Times*—should re-examine their knockdown stories. They owe such a re-examination not only to Webb, but also to their readers."
—Steve Weinberg in the *Baltimore Sun* (June 14, 1998)

"Two years ago Gary Webb touched off a national controversy with his news stories linking the CIA and the Nicaraguan Contras to the rise of the crack epidemic in Los Angeles and elsewhere. His gripping new book, richly researched and documented, deserves an even wider audience and discussion."
—Peter Dale Scott in the *San Francisco Chronicle* (June 28, 1998)

"Webb reminds us that the Reagan approved contra program attracted lowlifes and thugs the way manure draws flies. He guides the reader through a nether world of dope-dealers, gunrunners, and freelance security consultants, which on occasion overlapped with the U.S. government. He entertainingly details the honor, dishonor, and deals among thieves. . .All in all, it's a disgraceful picture—one that should permanently taint the happy-face hues of the Reagan years."
—David Corn in the *Washington Post* (August 9, 1998)

"Webb [is] a highly regarded investigative reporter. . .. *Dark Alliance* is his effort to tell his side of the story and set the record straight."
—James Adams in the *New York Times Book Review* (September 27, 1998)

"An excellent new book. . ."
—Norman Solomon in the *San Francisco Bay Guardian* (July 22, 1998)

"The Central Intelligence Agency continued to work with about two dozen Nicaraguan rebels and their supporters during the 1980s despite allegations that they were trafficking in drugs, according to a classified study by the C.I.A. The new study has found that the agency's decision to keep those paid agents, or to continue dealing with them in some less formal relationship, was made by top officials at headquarters in Langley, Virginia, in the midst of the war waged by the CIA-backed contras against Nicaragua's leftist Sandinista Government."
—James Risen, page one of the *New York Times* (July 17, 1998)

"Two years ago, Gary Webb wrote a series of articles that said some bad things about the CIA and drug traffickers. The CIA denied the charges, and every major newspaper in the country took the agency's word for it. Gary Webb was ruined. Which is a shame, because he was right."

—Charles Bowden in *Esquire* (September 1998)

"A standing room only crowd of several hundred people jammed a meeting hall in mid-town Manhattan on Thursday night to hear the details of a news story that refuses to die. . ."
—Juan Gonzalez in the *New York Daily News* (June 16, 1998)

"[It is an] issue that feels like a dagger in the heart of African Americans. . .. Even if the CIA's motive proves less malevolent, any evidence that it supported drug trafficking would indeed be the crime of the century."
—Barbara Reynolds in *USA Today* (February 26, 1997)

"After thousands of hours of work by investigative reporters at several newspapers—almost all of them predisposed to proving that Gary Webb was wrong—none has succeeded in doing so."
—Jill Stewart in *New Times Los Angeles* (June 5, 1997)

"Gary Webb brought back before the American public one of the darkest secrets of the 1980s—the cocaine smuggling by the Nicaraguan contra forces—and paid for this service with his job."
—Robert Parry, winner of the George Polk Award for National Reporting

"This story challenges the moral authority of our government."
—Rev. Jesse L. Jackson

"Absolute garbage."
—Lt. Col. Oliver North

"No story in recent memory had generated the intense controversy or exposed cultural-political fault lines the way the *San Jose Mercury News*' 'Dark Alliance' series has. If you judge journalism by its ability to stir up the pot, then this series—with its explosive suggestion of CIA complicity in the crack cocaine epidemic that paralyzed black neighborhoods in Los Angeles and subsidized the Contra war in Nicaragua in the '80s—deserves some kind of an award."
—Mark Jurkowitz, ombudsman, the *Boston Globe* (November 13, 1996)

"It may be the most significant news story you've never heard."
—Michael Paul Williams in the *Richmond Times-Dispatch*
(September 16, 1996)

"A copiously researched tale of how two Nicaraguan drug dealers with connections to the CIA-backed contra army moved tons of drugs into Los Angeles."
—*Newsweek* (November 11, 1996)

"The hottest topic in black America."
—Jack E. White in *Time* (September 30, 1996)

DARK ALLIANCE

The CIA, the CONTRAS, and the CRACK COCAINE EXPLOSION

GARY WEBB

SEVEN STORIES PRESS
New York

Copyright © 1998, 1999 by Gary Webb
Foreword © 1998 by Maxine Waters

All rights reserved. No part of this book may be reproduced, stored in a retrieval system, or transmitted in any form or by any means, including mechanical, electric, photocopying, recording, or otherwise, without the prior written permission of the publisher.

Seven Stories Press
140 Watts Street
New York, NY 10013
www.sevenstories.com

In Canada: Publishers Group Canada, 559 College Street, Suite 402, Toronto, ON M6G 1A9

In the UK: Turnaround Publisher Services Ltd., Unit 3, Olympia Trading Estate, Coburg Road, Wood Green, London N22 6TZ

In Australia: Palgrave Macmillan, 15–19 Claremont Street, South Yarra, VIC 3141

College professors may order examination copies of
Seven Stories Press titles for a free six-month trial period.
To order, visit www.sevenstories.com/textbook or send a
fax on school letterhead to (212) 226-1411.

Webb, Gary.
Dark alliance: the CIA, the contras, and the crack cocaine explosion / Gary Webb.
p. cm.
ISBN: 978-1-888363-93-7
1. Crack (Drug)—California—Los Angeles. 2. Cocaine habit—California—Los Angeles. 3. Counterrevolutionaries—Nicaragua. 4. United States. Central Intelligence Agency.
I. Title
HV5833.L67W43 1998
363.45'09794—dc21 97-52612
CIP

TO SUE, WITH LOVE AND THANKS

Contents

Foreword Congresswoman Maxine Waters

Acknowledgments

Author's Note

PART ONE

PROLOGUE

- 1 "A Pretty secret kind of thing"
- 2 "We were the first"
- 3 "The brotherhood of military minds"
- 4 "I never sent cash"
- 5 "God, Fatherland and Freedom"
- 6 "They were doing their patriotic duty"
- 7 "Something happened to Ivan"
- 8 "A million hits is not enough"
- 9 "He would have had me by the tail"
- 10 "Teach a man a craft and he's liable to practice it"
- 11 "They were looking in the other direction"

12 "This guy talks to God"

13 "The wrong kind of friends"

14 "It's bigger than I can handle"

15 "This thing is a tidal wave"

16 "It's a burn"

17 "We're going to blow your fucking head off"

18 "We bust our ass and the government's involved"

19 "He reports to people reporting to Bush"

20 "It is a sensitive matter"

21 "I could go anywhere in the world and sell dope"

22 "They can't touch us"

23 "He had the backing of a superpower"

24 "They're gonna forget I was a drug dealer"

PART TWO

25 "Things are moving all arounds us"

26 "That matter, if true, would be classified"

27 "A very difficult decision"

EPILOGUE

NOTES ON SOURCES

CAST OF CHARACTERS

GLOSSARY OF ORGANIZATIONS AND LOCATIONS

Foreword

BY CONGRESSWOMAN MAXINE WATERS

The night that I read the "Dark Alliance" series, I was so alarmed, that I literally sat straight up in bed, poring over every word. I reflected on the many meetings I attended throughout South Central Los Angeles during the 1980s, when I constantly asked, "Where are all the drugs coming from?" I asked myself that night whether it was possible for such a vast amount of drugs to be smuggled into any district under the noses of the community leaders, police, sheriff's department, FBI, DEA and other law enforcement agencies.

I decided to investigate the allegations. I met with Ricky Ross, Alan Fenster, Mike Ruppert, Celerino Castillo, Jerry Guzetta, and visited the L.A. Sheriff's Department. My investigation took me to Nicaragua where I interviewed Enrique Miranda Jaime in prison, and I met with the head of Sandinista intelligence Tomas Borge. I had the opportunity to question Contra leaders Adolfo Calero and Eden Pastora in a Senate investigative hearing, which was meant to be perfunctory, until I arrived to ask questions based on the vast knowledge I had gathered in my investigation. I forced Calero to admit he had a relationship with the CIA through the United States Embassy, where he directed USAID funds to community groups and organizations.

The time I spent investigating the allegations of the "Dark Alliance" series led me to the undeniable conclusion that the CIA, DEA, DIA, and FBI knew about drug trafficking in South Central Los Angeles. They were either part of the trafficking or turned a blind eye to it, in an effort to fund the Contra war. I am convinced that drug money played an important role in the Contra war and that drug money was used by both sides.

The saddest part of these revelations is the wrecked lives and lost possibilities of so many people who got caught up in selling drugs, went to prison, ended up addicted, dead, or walking zombies from drugs.

It may take time, but I am convinced that history is going to record that Gary Webb wrote the truth. The establishment refused to give Gary Webb the credit that he deserved. They teamed up in an effort to destroy the story—and very nearly succeeded.

There are a few of us who congratulate Gary for his honesty and courage. We will not let this story end until the naysayers and opponents are forced to apologize for their reckless and irresponsible attacks on Gary Webb.

The editors of the *San Jose Mercury News* did not have the strength to withstand the attacks, so they abandoned Gary Webb, despite their knowledge that Gary was working on further documentation to substantiate the allegations of the series.

This book completely and absolutely confirms Gary Webb's devastating series. This book is the final chapter on this sordid tale and brings to light one of the worst official abuses in our nation's history. We all owe Gary Webb a debt of gratitude for his brave work.

Acknowledgments

I am forever indebted to my friend and colleague Georg Hodel, who helped me chase this epic through Central America at immeasurable risk to both himself and his family in Nicaragua. His persistence, his wisdom, and his courage were a constant inspiration, and a melancholy reminder of just how far from the path of righteousness corporate American journalism has wandered.

Another journalist to whom I owe a special debt is Nick Schou of *O.C. Weekly*, who put the *L.A. Times* to shame with his reporting, and was very generous with his time and his discoveries. Pam Kramer of the *San Jose Mercury News* Los Angeles bureau was a joy to work with as well, being smarter (and braver) than almost every other reporter I know.

In the 1980s and early '90s, a number of journalists began unearthing parts of this skeleton bone by bone. My investigative predecessors are also owed thanks, not only for their thoughts and in some cases their files, but for their courageous work in helping to bring this story to light: Tony Avirgan, Brian Barger, Dennis Bernstein, Alexander Cockburn, Leslie Cockburn, Sally Denton, Brian Donovan, Guillermo Fernandez, Martha Honey, Peter Kornbluh, Jonathan Kwitny, Jonathan Marshall, John McPhaul, Jefferson Morley, Roger Morris, Micah Morrison, Robert Parry, Seth Rosenfeld, Peter Dale Scott, Josiah Thompson, Douglas Vaughan, and David Umhoefer. Patriots all.

Thanks much to David Paynter and Elizabeth Lockwood of the National Archives in College Park, Maryland, who unfailingly answered my Freedom of Information Act (FOIA) requests within ten days and patiently searched the Walsh databases for needles in haystacks. I am also grateful to the many cheerful librarians at the California State Library's Government Publications Section in Sacramento, particularly senior librarian Deborah Weber, who taught me the wonders of the FBIS microfiche.

John Mattes, Jack Blum, and Jon Winer of the Kerry Committee staff were extraordinarily helpful, and one day, I am sure, they will be hailed for the remarkable service they rendered to the American public under very trying circumstances.

The efforts of my agent, Flip Brophy, are much appreciated, though I'm sure her self-esteem will never recover from the torrent of rejections. I am also beholden to my fearless publisher, Dan Simon, and the folks at Seven Stories Press for their faith and patience.

Finally, I would never have been able to write this book and survive these past few years without the love, support, and understanding of my wife, Sue, and our children, Ian, Eric, and Christine. You're the best.

—G.W.
Sacramento, March 1998

Author's Note

This, sadly, is a true story. It is based upon a controversial series I wrote for the *San Jose Mercury News* in the summer of 1996 about the origins of the crack plague in South Central Los Angeles.

Unlike other books that purport to tell the inside story of America's most futile war (*Kings of Cocaine* by Guy Gugliotta and Jeff Leen and *Desperados* by Elaine Shannon spring to mind), *Dark Alliance* was not written with the assistance, cooperation, or encouragement of the U.S. Drug Enforcement Administration or any federal law enforcement agency.

In fact, the opposite is true. Every Freedom of Information Act request I filed was rejected on national security or privacy grounds, was ignored, or was responded to with documents so heavily censored they must have been the source of much hilarity down at the FOIA offices. The sole exception was the National Archives and Records Administration.

Dark Alliance does not propound a conspiracy theory; there is nothing theoretical about history. In this case, it is undeniable that a wildly successful conspiracy to import cocaine existed for many years, and that innumerable American citizens—most of them poor and black—paid an enormous price as a result.

This book was written for them, so that they may know upon what altars their communities were sacrificed.

—G.W.

Every government is run by liars and nothing they say should be believed.

—I. F. STONE, 1907 – 1989

PART ONE

PROLOGUE

"It was like they didn't want to know"

When I came to work in the sprawling newsroom of the *Cleveland Plain Dealer* in the early 1980s, I was assigned to share a computer terminal with a tall middle-aged reporter with a long, virtually unpronounceable Polish name. To save time, people called him Tom A.

To me, arriving from a small daily in Kentucky, Tom A. was the epitome of the hard-boiled big-city newspaperman. The city officials he wrote about and the editors who mangled his copy were "fuckinjerks." A question prompting an affirmative response would elicit "fuckin-a-tweetie" instead of "yes." And when his phone rang he would say, "It's the Big One," before picking up the receiver.

No matter how many times I heard that, I always laughed. The Big One was the reporter's holy grail—the tip that led you from the daily morass of press conferences and cop calls on to the trail of The Biggest Story You'd Ever Write, the one that would turn the rest of your career into an anticlimax. I never knew if it was cynicism or optimism that made him say it, but deep inside, I thought he was jinxing himself.

The Big One, I believed, would be like a bullet with your name on it. You'd never hear it coming. And almost a decade later, long after Tom A., the *Plain Dealer*, and I had parted company, that's precisely how it happened. I didn't even take the call.

It manifested itself as a pink While You Were Out message slip left on my desk in July 1995.

There was no message, just a woman's name and a phone number, somewhere in the East Bay.

I called, but there was no answer, so I put the message aside. If I have time, I told myself, I'll try again later.

Several days later an identical message slip appeared. Its twin was still sitting on a pile of papers at the edge of my desk.

This time the woman was home.

"I saw the story you did a couple weeks ago," she began. "The one about the drug seizure laws. I thought you did a good job."

"Thanks a lot," I said, and I meant it. She was the first reader who'd called about that story, a front-page piece in the *San Jose Mercury News* about a convicted cocaine trafficker who, without any formal legal training, had beaten the U.S. Justice Department in court three straight times and was on the verge of flushing the government's multibillion-dollar asset forfeiture program right down the toilet. The inmate, a lifer, had argued that losing your property *and* going to jail was like being punished twice for the same crime—double jeopardy—and seventeen judges from the Ninth Circuit Court of Appeals agreed with him. (Faced with the prospect of setting thousands of dopers free or returning billions in seized property, the U.S. Supreme Court would later overturn two of its own rulings in order to kill off the inmate's suit.)

"You didn't just give the government's side of it," she continued. "The other stories I read about the case were like, 'Omigod, they're going to let drug dealers out of jail. Isn't this terrible?'"

I asked what I could do for her.

"My boyfriend is in a situation like that," she said, "and I thought it might make a good follow-up story for you. What the government has done to him is unbelievable."

"Your boyfriend?"

"He's in prison right now on cocaine trafficking charges. He's been in jail for three years."

"How much more time has he got?"

"Well, that's just it," she said. "He's never been brought to trial. He's done three years already, and he's never been convicted of anything."

"He must have waived his speedy trial rights," I said.

"No, none of them have," she said. "There are about five or six guys who were indicted with him, and most of them are still waiting to be tried, too. They want to go to trial because they think it's a bullshit case. Rafael keeps writing letters to the judge and the prosecutor, saying, you know, try me or let me go."

"Rafael's your boyfriend?"

"Yes. Rafael Cornejo."

"He's Colombian?"

"No, Nicaraguan. But he's lived in the Bay Area since he was like two or something."

It's interesting, I thought, but not the kind of story likely to excite my editors. Some drug dealers don't like being in jail? Oh.

"What's the connection to the forfeiture story?" I asked.

Rafael, she explained, had been a very successful "businessman," and the government, under the asset forfeiture program, had seized and sold his automobiles, his houses, and his businesses, emptied his bank accounts, and left him without enough money to hire a lawyer. He had a court-appointed lawyer, she said, who was getting paid by the hour and didn't seem to care how long the case took.

"Rafael had the most gorgeous house out in Lafayette, and the government sold it for next to nothing. Now what happens if he's acquitted? He spends three or four years in jail for a crime he didn't commit, and when he gets out, someone else is living in his house. I mean, what kind of a country is this? I think it would make a good story."

It might, I told her, if I hadn't done it half a dozen times already. Two years earlier, I'd written a series for the *Mercury* called "The Forfeiture Racket," about the police in California busting into private homes and taking furniture, televisions, Nintendo games, belt buckles, welfare checks, snow tires, and loose change under the guise of cracking down on drug traffickers. Many times they'd never file charges, or the charges would be dropped once the victims signed over the loot.

The series created such an outcry that the California legislature had abolished the forfeiture program a few weeks later. But I knew what I would hear if I pitched the woman's story to my editors: We've done that already. And that was what I told her.

She was not dissuaded.

"There's something about Rafael's case that I don't think you would have ever done before," she persisted. "One of the government's witnesses is a guy who used to work with the CIA selling drugs. Tons of it."

"What now?" I wasn't sure I'd heard correctly.

"The CIA. He used to work for them or something. He's a Nicaraguan too. Rafael knows him, he can tell you. He told me the guy had admitted bringing four tons of cocaine into the country. Four tons! And if that's what he's admitted to, you can imagine how much it really was. And now he's back working for the government again."

I put down my pen. She'd sounded so rational. Where did this CIA stuff come from? In seventeen years of investigative reporting, I had ended up doubting the credibility of every person who ever called me with a tip about the CIA.

I flashed on Eddie Johnson, a conspiracy theorist who would come bopping into the *Kentucky Post*'s newsroom every so often with amazing tales of intrigue and corruption. Interviewing Eddie was one of the rites of passage at the *Post*. Someone would invariably send him over to the newest reporter on the staff to see how long it took the rookie to figure out he was spinning his wheels.

Suddenly I remembered who I was talking to—a cocaine dealer's moll.

That explained it.

"Oh, the CIA. Well, you're right. I've never done any stories about the CIA. I don't run across them too often here in Sacramento. See, I mostly cover *state* government—"

"You probably think I'm crazy, right?"

"No, no," I assured her. "You know, could be true, who's to say? When it comes to the CIA, stranger things have happened."

There was a short silence, and I could hear her exhale sharply.

"How dare you treat me like I'm an idiot," she said evenly. "You don't even know me. I work for a law firm. I've copied every single piece of paper that's been filed in Rafael's case and I can document everything I'm telling you. You can ask Rafael, and he can tell you himself. What's so hard about coming over and at least taking a look at this stuff?"

"That's a fair question," I allowed. Now, what was my answer? Because I lied and I do think you're crazy? Or because I'm too lazy to get up and chase a story that appears to have a one-in-a-thousand chance of being true?

"You say you can document this?"

"Absolutely. I have all the files here at home. You're welcome to look at all of it if you want. And Rafael can tell you—" In the background a child began yowling. "Just a minute, will you? That's my daughter. She just fell down."

The phone thunked on the other end, and I heard footsteps retreating into the distance.

Well, that's a promising sign, I thought. Were she a raving dope fiend, they wouldn't let her raise an infant. She came back on, bouncing the sobbing toddler. I asked her where she lived.

"Oakland. But Rafael's got a court date in San Francisco coming up in a couple weeks. Why don't I meet you at the courthouse? That way you can sit in on the hearing, and if you're interested we could get lunch or something and talk."

That cinched it. Now the worst that could happen was lunch in San Francisco in mid-July, away from the phones and the editors. And, who knows, there was an off chance she was telling the truth.

"Okay, fine," I said. "But bring some of those records with you, okay? I can look through them while I'm sitting there in court."

She laughed. "You don't trust me, do you? You probably get a lot of calls like this."

"Not many like this," I said.

Flipping on my computer, I logged into the Dialog database, which contains full-text electronic versions of millions of newspaper and magazine stories, property records, legal filings, you name it. If you've ever been written about or done something significant in court, chances are Dialog will find you.

Okay. Let's see if Rafael Cornejo even exists.

A message flashed on the screen: "Your search has retrieved 11 documents. Display?" So far so good.

I called up the most recent one, a newspaper story that had appeared a year before in the *San Francisco Chronicle*. My eyes widened.

"4 Indicted in Prison Breakout Plot—Pleasanton Inmates Planned to Leave in Copter, Prosecutors Say."

I quickly scanned the story. Son of a bitch.

> Four inmates were indicted yesterday in connection with a bold plan to escape from the federal lockup in Pleasanton using plastic explosives and a helicopter that would have taken them to a cargo ship at sea. The group also considered killing a guard if their keepers tried to thwart the escape, prosecutors contend.
>
> Rafael Cornejo, 39, of Lafayette, an alleged cocaine kingpin with reputed ties to Nicaraguan drug traffickers and Panamanian money launderers, was among those indicted for conspiracy to escape.

The story called Cornejo "a longtime drug dealer who was convicted in 1977 of cocaine trafficking in Panama. He also has served time in a U.S. prison for tax evasion. He owns several homes and commercial properties in the Bay Area."

This sure sounds like the same guy, I thought. I scrolled down to the next hit, a *San Francisco Examiner* story.

> The four men were charged with planning to use C-4 plastic explosives to blow out a prison window and with making a 9-inch "shank" that could be used to cut a guard's "guts out" if he tried to block their run to the prison yard. Once in the yard, they allegedly would be picked up by a helicopter and flown to a Panamanian cargo ship in the Pacific, federal officials said.

The remaining stories described Cornejo's arrest and indictment in 1992, the result of an eighteen-month FBI investigation. Suspected drug kingpin. Head of a large cocaine distribution ring on the West Coast. Allegedly involved in a major cocaine pipeline that ran from Cali, Colombia, to several West Coast cities. Importing millions of dollars worth of cocaine via San Diego and Los Angeles to the Bay Area.

That's some boyfriend she's got there, I mused. The newspaper stories make him sound like Al Capone. And he wants to sit down and have a chat? That'll be the day.

When I pushed open the doors to the vast courtroom in the San Francisco federal courthouse a few weeks later, I found a scene from *Miami Vice*.

To my left, a dark-suited army of federal agents and prosecutors huddled around a long, polished wooden table, looking grim and talking in low voices. On the right, an array of long-haired, expensively attired defense attorneys were whispering to a group of long-haired, angry-looking Hispanics—their clients. The judge had not yet arrived.

I had no idea what my tipster looked like, so I scanned the faces in the courtroom, trying to pick out a woman who could be a drug kingpin's girlfriend. She found me first.

"You must be Gary," said a voice behind me.

I turned, and for an instant all I saw was cleavage and jewelry. She looked to be in her mid-twenties. Dark hair. Bright red lipstick. Long legs. Short skirt. Dressed to accentuate her positive attributes. I could barely speak.

"You're. . .?"

She tossed her hair and smiled. "Pleased to meet you." She stuck out a hand with a giant diamond on it, and I shook it weakly.

We sat down in the row of seats behind the prosecutors' table, and I glanced at her again. That boyfriend of hers must be going nuts.

"How did you know it was me?" I asked.

"I was looking for someone who looked like a reporter. I saw you with a notebook in your back pocket and figured—"

"That obvious, is it?" I pulled out the notepad and got out a pen. "Why don't you fill me in on who's who here?"

She pointed out Rafael, a short handsome Latino with a strong jaw and long, wavy hair parted in the middle. He swiveled in his chair, looked right at us, and seemed perturbed. His girlfriend waved, and he whirled back around without acknowledging her.

"He doesn't look very happy," I observed.

"He doesn't like seeing me with other men."

"Uh, why was he trying to break out of jail?" I asked.

"He wasn't. He was getting ready to make bail, and they didn't want to let him out, so they trumped up these phony escape charges. Now, because he's under indictment for escape, he isn't eligible for bail anymore."

The escape charges were in fact the product of an unsubstantiated accusation by a fellow inmate, a convicted swindler. They were later thrown out of court on grounds of prosecutorial misconduct, and Cornejo's prosecutor, Assistant U.S. Attorney David Hall, was referred to the Justice Department for investigation by federal judge Saundra Brown Armstrong.

(In a *San Francisco Daily Recorder* story about the misconduct charge, it was noted that "it is not the first time that Hall has been under such scrutiny. While serving with the Department of Justice in Texas, the Office of Professional Responsibility reviewed Hall after an informant accused Hall of approving drug smuggling into the U.S.. . .. Hall said the office found no merit in the charge.")

She pointed out Hall, a large blond man with broad features.

"Who are the rest of those people?" I asked.

"The two men standing over there are the FBI agents on the case. The woman is Hall's boss, Teresa Canepa. She's the bitch who's got it in for Rafael."

As she was pointing everyone out, the FBI agents whispered to each other and then tapped Hall on the shoulder. All three turned and looked at me.

"What's with them?"

"They probably think you're my hit man." She smiled, and the agents frowned back. "Oh, they just hate me. I called the cops on them once, you know."

I looked at her. "You called the cops on the FBI."

"Well, they were lurking around outside my house after dark. They could have been rapists or something. How was I supposed to know?"

I glanced back over at the federal table and saw that the entire group had now turned to stare. I was certainly making a lot of friends.

"Can we go out in the hall and talk for a minute?" I asked her.

We sat on a bench just outside the door. I told her I needed to get case numbers so I could ask for the court files. And, by the way, did she bring those documents she'd mentioned?

She reached into her briefcase and brought out a stack an inch thick. "I've got three bankers' boxes full back at home, and you're welcome to see all of it, but this is the stuff I was telling you about concerning the witness."

I flipped through the documents. Most of them were federal law enforcement reports, DEA-6s and FBI 302s, every page bearing big black letters that said, "MAY NOT BE REPRODUCED—PROPERTY OF U.S. GOVERNMENT." At the bottom of the stack was a transcript of some sort. I pulled it out.

"Grand Jury for the Northern District of California, Grand Jury Number 93-5 Grand Jury Inv. No. 9301035. Reporter's Transcript of Proceedings. Testimony of Oscar Danilo Blandón. February 3, 1994."

I whistled. "Federal grand jury transcripts? I'm impressed. Where'd you get these?"

"The government turned them over under discovery. Dave Hall did. I heard he really got reamed out by the DEA when they found out about all the stuff he gave us."

I looked through the transcript and saw parts that had been blacked out.

"Who did this?"

"That's how we got it. Rafael's lawyer is asking for a clean copy. As you'll see, they also cut out a bunch of stuff on the DEA-6s. There's a hearing on his motion coming up."

I skimmed the thirty-nine-page transcript. Whatever else this Blandón fellow may have been, he was pretty much the way Cornejo's girlfriend had described him. A big-time trafficker who'd dealt dope for many years; started out dealing for the Contras, a right-wing Nicaraguan guerrilla army, in Los Angeles. He'd used drug money to buy trucks and supplies. At some point after Ronald Reagan got into power, the CIA had decided his services as a fund-raiser were no longer required, and he stayed in the drug business for himself.

What made the story so compelling was that he was appearing before the grand jury as a U.S. government witness. He wasn't under investigation. He wasn't trying to beat a rap. He was there as a witness for the prosecution, which meant that the U.S. Justice Department was vouching for him.

But who was the grand jury investigating? Every time the testimony led in that direction, words—mostly names—were blacked out.

"Who is this family they keep asking him about?"

"Rafael says it's Meneses. Norwin Meneses and his nephews. Have you heard of them?"

"Nope."

"Norwin is one of the biggest traffickers on the West Coast. When Rafael got arrested, that's who the FBI and the IRS wanted to talk to him about. Rafael has known [Norwin and his nephews] for years. Since the Seventies, I think. The government is apparently using Blandón to get to Meneses."

Inside, I heard the bailiff calling the court to order, and we returned to the courtroom. During the hearing, I kept trying to recall where I had heard about this Contra-cocaine business before. Had I read it in a book? Seen it on television? It bothered me. I believed that I had a better-than-average knowledge of the civil war in Nicaragua, having religiously followed the Iran-Contra hearings on television. I would videotape them while I was at work and watch them late into the night, marvelling the next morning at how wretchedly the newspapers were covering the story.

Like most Americans, I knew the Contras had been a creation of the CIA, the darlings of the Reagan Right, made up largely of the vanquished followers of deposed Nicaraguan dictator Anastasio Somoza and his brutal army, the National Guard. But drug trafficking? Surely, I thought, if there had been some concrete evidence, it would have stuck in my mind. Maybe I was confusing it with something else.

During a break, I went to the restroom and bumped into Assistant U.S. Attorney Hall. Just in case he and the FBI really did think I was Coral's hit man, I introduced myself as a reporter. Hall eyed me cautiously.

"Why would the *Mercury News* be interested in this case?" he asked. "You should have been here two years ago. This is old stuff now."

I considered tap dancing around his question. Normally I didn't tell people what I was working on, because then they didn't know what not to say. But I decided to hit Hall with it head-on and see what kind of reaction I got. It would probably be the last thing he'd expect to hear.

"I'm not really doing a story on this case. I'm looking into one of the witnesses. A man named Blandón. Am I pronouncing the name correctly?"

Hall appeared surprised. "What about him?"

"About his selling cocaine for the Contras."

Hall leaned back slightly, folded his arms, and gave me a quizzical smile. "Who have you been talking to?"

"Actually, I've been reading. And I was curious to know what you made of his testimony about selling drugs for the Contras in L.A. Did you believe him?"

"Well, yeah, but I don't know how you could absolutely confirm it. I mean, I don't know what to tell you," he said with a slight laugh. "The CIA won't tell me anything."

I jotted down his remark. "Oh, you've asked them?"

"Yeah, but I never heard anything back. Not that I expected to. But that's all ancient history. You're really doing a story about that?"

"I don't know if I'm doing a story at all," I said. "At this point, I'm just trying to see if there is one. Do you know where Blandón is these days?"

"Not a clue."

That couldn't be true, I thought. How could he *not* know? He was one of the witnesses against Rafael Cornejo. "From what I heard," I told him, "he's a pretty significant witness in your case here. He hasn't disappeared, has he? He is going to testify?"

Hall's friendly demeanor changed. "We're not at all certain about that."

When I got back to Sacramento, I called my editor at the main office in San Jose, Dawn Garcia, and filled her in on the day's events. Dawn was a former investigative reporter from the *San Francisco Chronicle* and had been the *Mercury*'s state editor for several years, overseeing our bureaus in Los Angeles, San Francisco, and Sacramento. We had a good working relationship and had broken a number of award-winning stories. Unlike many editors I'd worked with, Dawn could size up a story's news value fairly quickly.

I read her several portions of Blandón's grand jury testimony.

"Weren't there some stories about this back in the 1980s?" she asked.

"See, that's what I thought. I remember something, but I can't place the source."

"Maybe the Iran-Contra hearings?"

"I don't think so," I said. "I followed those hearings pretty closely. I don't remember anything about drug trafficking."

(Dawn's memory, it turned out, was better than mine. During one part of Oliver North's congressional testimony in July 1987, two men from Baltimore had jumped up in the audience with a large banner reading, "Ask about the cocaine smuggling." The men began shouting questions—"What about the cocaine dealing that the U.S. is paying for? Why don't you ask questions about drug deliveries?"—as they were dragged from the room by the police.)

"So, what do you think?" she asked, editorese for "Is there a story here and how long will it take to get it?"

"I don't know. I'd like to spend a little time looking into it at least. Hell, if his testimony is true, it could be a pretty good story. The Contras were selling coke in L.A.? I've never heard that one before."

She mulled it over for a moment before agreeing. "It's not like there's a lot going on in Sacramento right now," she said. That was true enough. The sun-baked state capital was entering its summertime siesta, when triple-digit temperatures sent solons adjourning happily to mountain or seashore locales.

With any luck, I was about to join them.

"I need to go down to San Diego for a couple days," I said. "Blandón testified that he was arrested down there in '92 for conspiracy, so there's probably a court file somewhere. He may be living down there, for all I know. Probably the quickest way to find out if what he was saying is true is to find him."

Dawn okayed the trip, and a few days later I was in balmy San Diego, squinting at microfiche in the clerk's office of the U.S. District Court. I found Blandón's case file within a few minutes.

He and six others, including his wife, had been secretly indicted May 5, 1992, for conspiring to distribute cocaine. He'd been buying wholesale quantities from suppliers and reselling it to other wholesalers. Way up on the food chain. According to the indictment, he'd been a trafficker for ten years, had clients nationwide, and had bragged on tape of selling other L.A. dealers between two and four tons of cocaine.

He was such a big-timer that the judge had ordered him and his wife held in jail without bail because they posed "a threat to the health and moral fiber of the community."

The file contained a transcript of a detention hearing, held to determine if the couple should be released on bail. Blandón's prosecutor, Assistant U.S. Attorney L. J. O'Neale, brought out his best ammo to persuade the judge to keep the couple locked up until trial. "Mr. Blandón's family was closely associated with the Somoza government that was overthrown in 1979," O'Neale said. Blandón had been partners with a Jairo Meneses in 764 kilos of cocaine that had been seized in Nicaragua in 1991, O'Neale claimed, and he also owned hotels and casinos in Nicaragua with Meneses. He had a house in Costa Rica. He had a business in Mexico, relatives in Spain, phony addresses all over the United States, and "unlimited access to money."

"He is a large-scale cocaine trafficker and has been for a long time," O'Neale argued. Given the amount of cocaine he'd sold, O'Neale said, Blandón's minimum mandatory punishment was "off the charts"—life plus a $4 million fine—giving him plenty of incentive to flee the country.

Blandón's lawyer, Brad Brunon, confirmed the couple's close ties to Somoza and produced a photo of them at a wedding reception with *El Presidente* and his spouse. That just showed what fine families they were from, he said. The accusations in Nicaragua against Blandón, Brunon argued, were "politically motivated because of Mr. Blandón's activities with the Contras in the early 1980s."

Damn, here it is again. His own lawyer says he was working for the Contras.

Brunon argued that the government had no case against his client, and no right to keep him in jail until the trial. "There is not the first kilogram of cocaine that had been seized in this case," Brunon said. "What you have are accusations from a series of informants." But the judge didn't see it that way. While allowing Chepita to post bond, he ordered Danilo held without bail.

From the docket sheet, I could see that the case had never gone to trial. Everyone had pleaded out, starting with Blandón. Five months after his arrest, he pleaded guilty to conspiracy, and the charges against his wife were dropped. After that, his fugitive codefendants were quickly arrested and pleaded guilty. But they all received extremely short sentences. One was even put on unsupervised probation.

I didn't get it. If O'Neale had such a rock-solid case against a major drug-trafficking ring, why were they let off so easily? People did more time for burglary. Even Blandón, the ringleader, only got forty-eight months, and from the docket sheet it appeared that was later cut almost in half.

As I read on, I realized that Blandón was already back on the streets—totally unsupervised. No parole. Free as a bird. He'd walked out of jail September 19, 1994, on the arm of an INS agent, Robert Tellez. He'd done twenty-eight months for ten years of cocaine trafficking.

The last page of the file told me why. It was a motion filed by U.S. Attorney O'Neale, asking the court to unseal Blandón's plea agreement and a couple of internal Justice Department memorandums. "During the course of this case, defendant Oscar Danilo Blandón cooperated with and rendered substantial assistance to the United States," O'Neale wrote. At the government's request, his jail sentence had been secretly cut twice. O'Neale then persuaded the judge to let Blandón out of jail completely, telling the court he was needed as a full-time paid informant for the U.S. Department of Justice. Since he'd be undercover, O'Neale wrote, he couldn't very well have probation agents checking up on him. He was released on unsupervised probation.

All of this information had once been secret, I noticed, but since Blandón was going to testify in a case in northern California (the Cornejo case, I presumed), O'Neale had to have the plea agreement and all the records relating to his sentence reductions unsealed and turned over to defense counsel.

I walked back to my hotel convinced that I was on the right track. Now there were two separate sources saying—in court—that Blandón was involved with the Contras and had been selling large amounts of cocaine in Los Angeles. And when the government finally had a chance to put him away forever, it had opened up the cell doors and let him walk. I needed to find Blandón. I had a million questions only he could answer.

I began calling the defense attorneys involved in the 1992 conspiracy case, hoping one of them would know what had become of him. I struck out with every call. One of the lawyers was out of town. The rest of them remembered next to nothing about the case or their clients. "It was all over so quickly I barely had time to open a file," one said. The consensus was that once Blandón flipped, his compadres scrambled to get the best deal they could, and no one prepared for trial. Discovery had been minimal.

But one thing wasn't clear. What had the government gotten out of the deal that was worth giving Blandón and his crew such an easy ride? O'Neale claimed he'd given information about a murder in the Bay Area, but from what I could see from his DEA and FBI interviews, he'd merely told the government that the man had been murdered—something the police already knew.

Back in Sacramento, I did some checking on the targets of the 1994 grand jury investigation—the Meneses family—and again my tipster's description proved accurate, perhaps even understated. I found a 1991 story from the *San Francisco Chronicle* and a 1986 *San Francisco Examiner* piece that strongly suggested that Meneses, too, had been dealing cocaine for the Contras during the 1980s. One of the stories described him as the "king of cocaine in Nicaragua" and the Cali cartel's representative there. The *Chronicle* story mentioned that a U.S. Senate investigation had run across him in connection with the Contras and allegations of cocaine smuggling.

That must have been where I heard about this Contra drug stuff before, I decided. A congressional hearing.

At the California State Library's Government Publications Section, I scoured the CIS indices, which catalog congressional hearings by topic and witness name. Meneses wasn't listed, but there had been a series of hearings back in 1987 and 1988, I saw, dealing with the issue of the Contras and cocaine: a subcommittee of the Senate Foreign Relations Committee, chaired by Senator John Kerry of Massachusetts.

For the next six days I sat with rolls of dimes at a microfiche printer in the quiet wood-paneled recesses of the library, reading and copying many of the 1,100 pages of transcripts and exhibits of the Kerry Committee hearings, growing more astounded each day. The committee's investigators had uncovered direct links between drug dealers and the Contras. They'd gotten into BCCI years before anyone knew what that banking scandal even was. They'd found evidence of Manuel Noriega's involvement with drugs—years before the invasion. Many of the Kerry Committee witnesses, I noted, later became U.S. Justice Department witnesses against Noriega.

Kerry and his staff had taken videotaped depositions from Contra leaders who acknowledged receiving drug profits, with the apparent knowledge of the CIA. The drug dealers had admitted—under oath—giving money to the Contras, and had passed polygraph tests. The pilots had admitted flying weapons down and cocaine and marijuana back, landing in at least one instance at Homestead Air Force Base in Florida. The exhibits included U.S. Customs reports, FBI reports, internal Justice Department memos. It almost knocked me off my chair.

It was all there in black and white. Blandón's testimony about selling cocaine for the Contras in L.A. wasn't some improbable fantasy. This could have actually happened.

I called Jack Blum, the Washington, D.C., attorney who'd headed the Kerry investigation, and he confirmed that Norwin Meneses had been an early target. But the Justice Department, he said, had stonewalled the committee's requests for information and he had finally given up trying to obtain the records, moving on to other, more productive areas. "There was a lot of weird stuff going on out on the West Coast, but after our experiences with Justice. . .we mainly concentrated on the cocaine coming into the East."

"Why is it that I can barely remember this?" I asked. "I mean, I read the papers every day."

"It wasn't in the papers, for the most part. We laid it all out, and we were trashed," Blum said. "I've got to tell you, there's a real problem with the press in this town. We were totally hit by the leadership of the administration and much of the congressional leadership. They simply turned around and said, 'These people are crazy. Their witnesses are full of shit. They're a bunch of drug dealers, drug addicts, don't listen to them.' And they dumped all over us. It came from every direction and every corner. We were even dumped on by the Iran-Contra Committee. They wouldn't touch this issue with a ten-foot pole."

"There had to have been some reporters who followed this," I protested. "Maybe I'm naive, but this seems like a huge story to me."

Blum barked a laugh. "Well, it's nice to hear someone finally say that, even if it is ten years later. But what happened was, our credibility was questioned, and we were personally trashed. The administration and some people in Congress tried to make us look like crazies, and to some degree it worked. I remember having conversations with reporters in which they would say, 'Well, the administration says this is all wrong.' And I'd say, 'Look, the guy is going to testify to X, Y, and Z. Why don't you cover the fucking hearing instead of coming to me with what the administration says?' And they'd say, 'Well, the guy is a drug dealer. Why should I do that?' And I used to say this regularly: 'Look, the minute I find a Lutheran minister or priest who was on the scene when they were delivering 600 kilos of cocaine at some air base in Contra-land, I'll put him on the stand, but until then, you take what you can get.' The big papers stayed as far away from this issue as they could. It was like they didn't want to know."

There were two reporters, Blum said, who'd pursued the Contra drug story—Robert Parry and Brian Barger of the Associated Press—but they'd run into the same problems. Their stories were either trashed or ignored. There were also two reporters in Costa Rica—a *New York Times* stringer named Martha Honey and her husband, Tony Avirgan, an ABC cameraman, who had gone after the story as well, he said. Honey and Avirgan wound up being set up on phony drug charges in Costa Rica, spied on in the States by the FBI and former CIA agents, smeared, and ruined financially.

"I know Bob Parry is still here in Washington somewhere. He did the first stories and was one of the few who seemed to know what he was doing. You might want to talk to him," Blum suggested.

Parry sounded slightly amused when I called him in Virginia. "Why in the world would you want to go back into this?" he asked. I told him of my discoveries about Meneses and Blandón, and the latter's cocaine sales in Los Angeles. I wondered if he or anyone else had ever reported this before.

"Not that I'm aware of," Parry said. "We never really got into where it was going once the cocaine arrived in the United States. Our stories dealt mainly with the Costa Rican end of things. This is definitely a new angle. You think you can show it was being sold in L.A.?"

"Yeah, I do. Well, one of the guys has even testified to it before a grand jury. But this is an area I've never done any reporting on before so I guess what I'm looking for is a little guidance," I told him. "Have you got any suggestions?"

There was a short silence on the other end of the phone. "How well do you get along with your editors?" Parry finally asked.

"Fine. Why do you ask?"

"Well, when Brian and I were doing these stories we got our brains beat out." Parry sighed. "People from the administration were calling our editors, telling them we were crazy, that our sources were no good, that we didn't know what we were writing about. The Justice Department was putting out false press releases saying there was nothing to this, that they'd investigated and could find no evidence. We were being attacked in the *Washington Times*. The rest of the Washington press corps sort of pooh-poohed the whole thing, and no one else would touch it. So we ended up being out there all by ourselves, and eventually our editors backed away completely, and I ended up quitting the AP. It was probably the most difficult time of my career."

He paused. "Maybe things have changed, I don't know."

I was nonplussed. Bob Parry wasn't some fringe reporter. He'd won a Polk Award for uncovering the CIA assasination manual given to the Contras, and was the first reporter to expose Oliver North's illegal activities. But what he'd just described sounded like something out of a bad dream. I told him I didn't think that would be a problem at the *Mercury*. I'd done some controversial stories before, but the editors had stood by them, and we'd won some significant awards. I felt good about the paper, I told him.

"One place you might try is the National Archives," Parry offered. "They're in the process of declassifying Lawrence Walsh's files, and I've found some pretty remarkable things over there. It's a long shot, but if I were you, I'd file a FOIA for the men you mentioned and see if anything turns up."

It *was* a long shot, but Parry's hunch paid off. My Freedom of Information Act request produced several important clues, among them a 1986 FBI report about Blandón that alluded to a police raid and reported that Blandón's attorney, Brad Brunon, had called the L.A. County Sheriff's Office afterward and claimed that the CIA had "winked" at Blandón's activities. I also obtained 1987 FBI interviews with a San Francisco Contra supporter, Dennis Ainsworth, in which he told of his discovery that Norwin Meneses and a Contra leader named Enrique Bermúdez were dealing arms and drugs.

I tracked down Ainsworth and had another disconcerting conversation. You've got to be crazy, he said. He'd tried to alert people to this ten years ago, and it had ruined his life. "Nobody in Washington wanted to look at this. Republican, Democrat, nobody. They wanted this story buried and anyone who looked any deeper into it got buried along with it," Ainsworth said. "You're bringing up a very old nightmare. You have no idea what you're touching on here, Gary. No idea at all."

"I think I've got a pretty good idea," I said.

"Believe me," he said patiently, "you don't understand. I almost got killed. I had friends in Central America who were killed. There was a Mexican reporter who was looking into one end of this, and he wound up dead. So don't pretend that you know."

"If the Contras were selling drugs in L.A., don't you think people should know that?"

Ainsworth laughed. "L.A.? Meneses was selling it all over the country! Listen, he ran one of the major distributions in the U.S. It wasn't just L.A. He was national. And he was totally protected."

"I think that's the kind of thing the public needs to know about," I told him. "And that's why I need your help. You know a lot more about this topic than I do."

He was unmoved. "Look, when I was trying to tell Congress, I was getting death threats. And you're asking, you know, if I'm Jewish, would I like to go back and spend another six months in Dachau? Leave this alone. Take my advice. You can go on and write a lot of other things and maybe win a Pulitzer Prize, but all you're going to be after this is over is a persona non grata. Please. Everyone's forgotten about this and moved on with their lives."

A few days later I got a call from Cornejo's girlfriend. My one chance to hook up with Blandón had just fallen through. "He isn't going to be testifying at Rafael's trial after all," she told me. "Rafael's attorney won his motion to have the DEA and FBI release the uncensored files, and the U.S. attorney decided to drop him as a witness rather than do that. Can you believe it? He was one of the witnesses they used to get the indictment against Rafael, and now they're refusing to put him on the stand."

I hung up the phone in a funk. Without him, I didn't have much to go on. But there was always his boss—this Meneses fellow. Getting to him was a tougher nut to crack, but worth a shot. The girlfriend said she thought he was in jail in Nicaragua, and the *Chronicle* clip I'd found noted that he'd been arrested there in 1991. Maybe, I hoped, the Nicaraguans locked their drug lords up longer than we did. I was put in touch with a freelance reporter in Managua, Georg Hodel, an indefatigable Swiss journalist who spoke several languages and had covered Nicaragua during the war. He taught college journalism classes, knew his way around the Nicaraguan government, and had sources everywhere. Better yet, with his Swiss-German-Spanish accent, it was like talking to Peter Lorre. I persuaded Dawn to hire Georg as a stringer, and he set off to find Meneses.

Meanwhile, the San Diego attorney who had been out of town when I was looking for Blandón returned my call. Juanita Brooks had represented Blandón's friend and codefendant, a Mexican millionaire named Sergio Guerra. Another lawyer in her firm had defended Chepita Blandón. She knew quite a bit about the couple.

"You don't happen to know where he is these days, do you?"

"No, but I can tell you where he'll be in a couple of months. Here in San Diego. Entirely by coincidence, I have a case coming up where he's the chief prosecution witness against my client."

"You're kidding," I said. "What case is this?"

"It's a pretty big one. Have you ever heard of someone named Freeway Ricky Ross?"

Indeed I had. I'd run across him while researching the asset forfeiture series in 1993. "He's one of the biggest crack dealers in L.A.," I said.

"That's what they say," Brooks replied. "He and my client and a couple others were arrested in a DEA reverse sting last year and Blandón is the CI [confidential informant] in the case."

"How did Blandón get involved with crack dealers?"

"I don't have a lot of details, because the government has been very protective of him. They've refused to give us any discovery so far," Brooks said. "But from what I understand, Blandón used to be one of Ricky Ross's sources back in the 1980s, and I suppose he played off that friendship."

My mind was racing. Blandón, the Contra fund-raiser, had sold cocaine to the biggest crack dealer in South Central L.A.? That was too much.

"Are you sure about this?"

"I wouldn't want you to quote me on it," she said, "but, yes, I'm pretty sure. You can always call Alan Fenster, Ross's attorney, and ask him. I'm sure he knows."

Fenster was out, so I left a message on his voice mail, telling him I was working on a story about Oscar Danilo Blandón Reyes and wanted to interview him. When I got back from lunch, I found a message from Fenster waiting. It said: "Oscar who?"

My heart sank. I'd suspected it was a bum lead, but I'd been keeping my fingers crossed anyway. I should have known; that would have been too perfect. I called Fenster back to thank him for his time, and he asked what kind of a story I was working on. I told him—the Contras and cocaine.

"I'm curious," he said. "What made you think this Oscar person was involved in Ricky's case?"

I told him what Brooks had related, and he gasped.

"*He's* the informant? Are you serious? No wonder those bastards won't give me his name!" Fenster began swearing a blue streak.

"Forgive me," he said. "But if you only knew what kind of bullshit I've been going through to get that information from those sons of bitches, and then some reporter calls me up from San Jose and he knows all about him, it just makes me—"

"Your client didn't tell you his name?"

"He didn't know it! He only knew him as Danilo, and then he wasn't even sure that was his real name. You and Ricky need to talk. I'll have him call you." He hung up abruptly.

Ross called a few hours later. I asked him what he knew about Blandón. "A lot," he said. "He was almost like a godfather to me. He's the one who got me going."

"Was he your main source?"

"He was. Everybody I knew, I knew through him. So really, he could be considered as my only source. In a sense, he was."

"When was this?"

"Eighty-one or '82. Right when I was getting going."

Damn, I thought. That was right when Blandón said he started dealing drugs.

"Would you be willing to sit down and talk to me about this?" I asked.

"Hell, yeah. I'll tell you anything you want to know."

At the end of September 1995 I spent a week in San Diego, going through the files of the Ross case, interviewing defense attorneys and prosecutors, listening to undercover DEA tapes. I attended a discovery hearing and watched as Fenster and the other defense lawyers made another futile attempt to find out details about the government's informant, so they could begin preparing their defenses. Assistant U.S. Attorney O'Neale refused to provide a thing. They'd get what they were entitled to, he promised, ten days before trial.

"See what I mean?" Fenster asked me on his way out. "It's like the trial in *Alice in Wonderland*."

I spent hours with Ross at the Metropolitan Correctional Center. He knew nothing of Blandón's past, I discovered. He had no idea who the Contras were or whose side they were on. To him, Danilo was just a nice guy with a lot of cheap dope.

"What would you say if I were to tell you that he was working for the Contras, selling cocaine to help them buy weapons and supplies?" I asked.

Ross goggled. "And they put me in jail? I'd say that was some fuckedup shit there. They say I sold dope all over, but man, I *know* he done sold ten times more than me. Are you being straight with me?"

I told him I had documents to prove it. Ross just shook his head and looked away.

"He's been working for the government the whole damn time," he muttered.

"A Pretty secret kind of thing"

In July 1979, as his enemies massed in the hills and suburbs of his doomed capital, the dictator huddled in his mountainside bunker with his aides and his American advisers and cursed his rotten luck.

For the forty-six years that Anastasio Somoza's family had ruled the Republic of Nicaragua, the Somozas had done nearly everything the U. S. government asked. No after all his hard work, the Americans wanted him to disappear. Somoza could barely believe it. He was glad he had his tape recorder going, so history could bear witness to his cruel betrayal.

"I have thrown many people out of their natural habitat because of the U.S., fighting for your cause. . .so let's talk like friends," Somoza told U.S. ambassador Lawrence Pezzullo. "I threw a goddamned Communist out of Guatemala," he reminded the ambassador, referring to the role the Somoza family had played in the CIAs overthrow of a liberal Guatemalan government in 1954. "I personally worked on that."

When the CIA needed a secret base to prepare for the Bay of Pigs invasion, Somoza couldn't have been a more gracious host. "The U.S. called me, and I agreed to have the bombers leave here and knock the hell out of the installations in Cuba," Somoza stormed, "like a Pearl Harbor deal." In 1965 he'd sent troops into the Dominican Republic to help the United States quell another leftist uprising. Hell, he'd even sent Nicaraguans off to fight in Vietnam.

And now, when Somoza needed help, when it was his soldiers who were locked in a life-and-death struggle with Communist aggressors, the Americans were selling him out—all because of some nonsense about human rights violations by his troops.

"It is embarrassing for you to be good friends with the Somozas," the dictator told Pezzullo sarcastically. Somoza then tried his trump card: If he went, the Nicaraguan National Guard, the *Guardia*, would surely be destroyed. The *Guardia*, as corrupt and deadly an organization as any in Central America, served as Somoza's military, his police, and his intelligence service.

Somoza knew the Americans would be loath to let their investment in it go to waste. They had created the *Guardia* in the 1930s and nurtured it carefully since, spending millions of dollars a year supplying weapons and schooling its officers in the complex arts of anticommunism.

"What are you going to do with the National Guard of Nicaragua?" Somoza asked Pezzullo. "I don't need to know, but after you have spent thirty years educating all of these officers, I don't think it is fair for them to be thrown to the wolves. . .. They have been fighting Communism just like you taught them at Fort Gulick and Fort Benning and Leavenworth—out of nine hundred officers we have, eight hundred or so belong to your schools."

Pezzullo assured Somoza that the United States was "willing to do what we can to preserve the Guard." Putting aside its international reputation for murder and torture, Pezzullo recognized that the *Guardia* was a bulwark against anti-American interests and, as long as it existed, could be used to keep Somoza's successors—whoever they might be—in line. "We are not abandoning the Guard," he insisted. "We would like to see a force emerge here that can stabilize the country." But for that to happen, Pezzullo said, Somoza and his top generals needed to step down and give the *Guardia* "a clean break" from its bloodstained past—before the Sandinistas marched in and it became too late to salvage anything. "To make the break now. It is a hell of a mess," Pezzullo said sympathetically. "Just sitting here talking to you about it is strange enough. We are talking about a break."

Somoza knew the game was over. "Let's not bullshit ourselves, Mr. Ambassador. I am talking to a professional. You have to do your dirty work, and I have to do mine."

In the predawn hours of July 17, 1979, Somoza and his closest associates—his top generals, his business partners, and their families—boarded two jets and flew to Homestead Air Force Base in Florida to begin a vagabond exile. The vaunted National Guard collapsed within hours.

Sandinista columns swarmed into the defenseless capital, jubilantly proclaiming an end to both the *Guardia*—which had hunted the rebels mercilessly for more than a decade—and Somoza. Those National Guard officers who could escape poured across the borders into El Salvador, Honduras, and Costa Rica, or hid inside the Colombian embassy in Managua. Those who couldn't, wound up in prison, and occasionally before firing squads.

Nine days after Somoza and his cronies were overthrown, a handful of congressmen gathered in a hearing room in the Rayburn House Office Building in Washington, D.C., to discuss some disturbing activities in Latin America. Though what had happened in Nicaragua was on everyone's mind in the nation's capital that week, these particular lawmakers had concerns that lay farther to the south: in Colombia, in Bolivia, and in Peru.

They were worried about cocaine. The exotic South American drug seemed to be winning admirers everywhere. References were turning up in movies, songs and newspaper stories, and surprisingly, many of them were positive. To Republican congressman Tennyson Guyer, an elderly former preacher and thirty-third-degree Mason from Findlay, Ohio, it seemed like the media was hell-bent on glamorizing cocaine.

Guyer, an ultraconservative fond of loud suits and white patent leather shoes, was the chairman of the Cocaine Task Force of the House Select Committee on Narcotics Abuse and Control, and he wasn't just going to stand by and watch.

"Recent developments concerning the state of cocaine have come to my attention, which call for decisive and immediate action!" Guyer thundered as he opened his cocaine hearings in July 1979. "The availability, abuse, and popularity of cocaine in the United States has reached pandemic proportions. . .. This is a drug which, for the most part, has been ignored, and its increased use in our society has caught us unprepared to cope effectively with this menace."

But if Guyer was feeling menaced by cocaine, not too many others were.

Many Americans who'd grown up during the drug-soaked 1960s reasoned that an occasional sniff of the fluffy white powder was no more menacing than a couple of martinis—and considerably more chic. Cocaine didn't give you a hangover. It didn't scramble your brains. Many doctors believed you couldn't get hooked on it. It made you feel great. It kept the pounds off. And there was a definite cachet associated with using it. Just the price of admission to Club Cocaine was enough to keep out the riffraff. At $2,500 an ounce and up, it was a naughty pleasure reserved for a special few: the "so-called elites" and the "intellectual classes," as Guyer derisively termed them.

Even the paraphernalia associated with the drug—sterling silver cocaine spoons and tightly rolled $100 bills—carried an aura of decadence. In the public's mind, cocaine was associated with fame and fortune.

"The rediscovery of cocaine in the Seventies was unavoidable," a Los Angeles psychologist gushed to a convention of drug experts in 1980, "because its stimulating and pleasure-causing properties reinforce the American character, with its initiative, its energy, its restless activity and its boundless optimism."

While the street corners played host to lowbrow and much more dangerous drugs—angel dust, smack, meth—coke stayed up in the penthouses, nestled in exquisitely carved bowls and glittering little boxes. It came out at private parties, or in the wash rooms of trendy nightclubs. Unless some celebrity got caught with it by accident, street cops almost never saw the stuff.

"My first ten years as a narcotics agent, my contact with cocaine was very minimal," recalled Jerald Smith, who ran the San Francisco office of the California Bureau of Narcotics Enforcement during the 1980s. "As a matter of fact, the first few years, the only cocaine I ever saw was an ounce some guy would take around as a training aid to teach you what it looked like. Because it was something you saw so rarely. Our big thing[s] in those days were pills and heroin and marijuana."

But if Reverend Guyer thought the experts he'd summoned to Washington were going to help him change the public's mind about cocaine sniffing, he was badly mistaken. Witness after witness trooped up to the microphone to tell Congress that cocaine was not only a relatively safe drug but so rare that it could hardly be called a nuisance, much less the "menace" Guyer was advertising.

"Daily cocaine use is extremely uncommon, simply because of the high cost," testified Robert C. Petersen, assistant director of research for the National Institute on Drug Abuse. "Under present conditions of use, it has not posed a very serious health problem for most. Rarely does it cause a problem."

Lee I. Dogoloff, the White House's drug expert, concurred. "It is our assumption," he said, "that the current relatively low level of health problems associated with cocaine use reflects the relatively high price and relatively low availability of the substance."

To make the point, the head of the Drug Enforcement Administration, Peter Bensinger, told the committee he had brought $800,000 worth of cocaine to show them. He pulled out a little bag and dangled it before his rapt audience.

"That is simulated, I trust?" Guyer inquired.

"No, that is actual coca," Bensinger replied. A sample, he said, of seized contraband.

"I can't believe you are holding almost $1 million there!" Guyer sputtered. "We ought to have security in the hearing room!"

"We have some special agents in the room, I assure you," Bensinger said.

The experts were careful to note that if cocaine became cheaper, it would be more widely available and might pose a bigger problem than anyone realized, but no one seemed to think there was much chance of that happening. Most of the smugglers, Bensinger said, were just bringing amounts small enough to put in a suitcase or stash on their body. "We don't think people are bringing cocaine across the border, to a large extent, in a car from Mexico." He recommended that Congress, instead of trying to prevent the drug from coming in over the borders, concentrate its efforts on getting the Peruvians and Bolivians to stop growing coca plants.

Dr. Robert Byck, a drug expert from Yale University, sat in the audience listening patiently to the testimony all day. When it was Byck's turn to speak, Guyer warmly welcomed him up to the witness table, complimenting him on his "very, very impressive" academic and professional credentials.

Byck thanked Guyer and then politely ripped into the federal government for spreading misinformation about the drug. "What I would like to talk to you about for the most part is the importance of telling the truth," Byck, a professor of psychiatry and pharmacology at Yale Medical School, began. The truth was that cocaine wasn't the horrible health hazard Americans were being told it was. "Cocaine doesn't have the kind of health consequences that one sees with drugs such as alcohol and cigarettes. Right now, if we look at the hospital admission records and death records, cocaine doesn't look like a dangerous drug. . .. We have given a great deal of cocaine to many individuals and find it to be a most unremarkable drug. We are giving cocaine by nose to normal young men. When anyone visits our laboratory, they look at the TV screen and say, 'That guy took cocaine?' They don't jump around, they don't get excited; they sit calmly and experience a drug high and don't become dangerous."

"What about five years later?" Guyer cried. "Are the membranes and so on not affected at all?"

"The damage to people's membranes is quite rare with cocaine. It does occur, but it is a rare phenomenon," Byck answered. "Part of this is because people don't use very much cocaine. It is expensive. Tell me the last alcoholic you saw with cirrhosis of the liver when cirrhosis was caused by Dom Perignon. You almost never see it."

As most Americans were using it, Byck said, cocaine "is a very safe drug. You almost never see anesthetic death due to cocaine. There have been a series of 14,000 consecutive doses of cocaine given with no deaths. Deaths from cocaine are very, very rare. They do occur, and I think it is important to recognize that they occur. But actually, the drug, in terms of the risk of killing people, is comparatively safe. If you want a dangerous drug, take digitalis or digoxin. . .. It is a heart drug. And that is really deadly, one of the deadliest poisons known."

"But that is used to save lives," Guyer countered.

"Yes, it is used to save lives," Byck said. "Cocaine is also used medically. So you cannot take whether or not something can kill you as a measure of dangerousness."

What the government was doing with its scare campaigns about cocaine, Byck complained, was poisoning the well. It was ruining the government's credibility with the public, just when the government needed its credibility to be impeccable. "I think we make a mistake when we say that snorting cocaine every once in a while is a dangerous habit and is going to kill people, because it does not," Byck said flatly. "There are a great many people around who have been snorting cocaine and know that their friends haven't gotten into trouble. If you then tell those people that cocaine is very dangerous, they won't believe it. Then, when you get to the next step—when you are talking about something that *is* really dangerous—they are not going to believe you the second time." And that brought Byck to the real reason he was in Washington on a humid day in late July.

He was there to deliver a warning from the scientific community.

Something bad was coming, Byck knew, something so deadly awful that the only way to prevent a catastrophe was for the government to tell the truth, and pray to God that it was believed. "I think we have to be careful that the government is believed about cocaine, because there are dangers associated with the drug," Byck said vaguely. "These dangers are not particularly associated with the present use pattern."

Byck told the committee that he'd hesitated for a long time about coming forward with the information and was still reluctant to discuss the matter in a public hearing. "Usually when things like this are reported, the media advertises them, and this attention has been a problem with cocaine all along."

Chairman Guyer, who'd spent two decades as a public relations man for an Ohio tire company, told Byck to spit it out. "[The purpose of our panel] is to bring into the open what has been, up to now, a pretty secret kind of thing."

The information Byck had was known to only a handful of drug researchers around the world. And it was as frightening a spectacle as any they'd ever seen.

For about a year, a Peruvian police psychiatrist named Dr. Raul Jeri had been insisting that wealthy drug users in Lima were being driven insane by cocaine. A psychiatrist in Bolivia, Dr. Nils Nova, began making similar claims shortly thereafter. Their reports, written in Spanish and published in obscure medical journals, went largely unnoticed in the United States because, frankly, they sounded so weird.

The first problem was that all of recorded history was against them. Peru and Bolivia had been producing cocaine products for thousands of years, with few reports of the drug causing serious medical effects. At the same time, some of America's leading researchers were claiming that cocaine was nonaddictive and perhaps should be legalized.

Jeri, a professor of clinical neurology at the National University of San Marcos, claimed a cocaine "epidemic" had swept through Lima's fashionable neighborhoods in 1974 and spread like a grass fire to Peru's other major cities: Piura, Trujillo, Chiclayo, Chimbote, Huaraz, lea, Arequipa, and Cuzco. Within two years, he said, the alleged epidemic had engulfed Ecuador and Bolivia.

No one had heard of anything like it before. It also didn't help that the psychiatrists' studies read like the script of *Reefer Madness,* painting scenes of jails and insane asylums filling up with legions of half-mad drug fiends.

"When seen, these patients were generally very thin, unkempt, pale and looking suspiciously from one side to the other," Jeri wrote. "These movements were associated. . .with visual hallucinations (shadows, light or human figures) which they observed in the temporal fields of vision." Many of the patients bore scratches from trying to dig out the hallucinations they felt crawling under their skin, and they claimed they were being "followed by persons or shadows that seemed to want to catch, attack, or kill them. . .three patients died in this series, two by acute intoxication and one by suicide."

It wasn't a new drug that was causing this reaction, Jeri and Noya reported, but a new trick from an old dog. Instead of sniffing tiny crystals of cocaine up their nose, as Americans were doing, the Peruvians and Bolivians were smoking a paste known variously as *pasta basica de cocaina, base*, or *basuco*. It was all the same thing—the gooey mess that leached out of solvent-soaked coca leaves. Coca paste was an intermediate substance created on the way to manufacturing the white powder known to most cocaine users. People had started drying the paste, crumbling it into cigarettes, and smoking it.

For the serious drug abuser, paste's advantages over powder were enormous.

You could smoke as much as you wanted. With powder, only a small amount could be stuffed up one's nose, and it took time for the drug to kick in, because first it had to be absorbed by the nasal membranes. Eventually the nose got numb.

Cocaine vapor, on the other hand, hit the vast surface area of the lungs immediately and delivered an instantaneous sledgehammer high. Users described the feeling as more intense than orgasm; some called it a "whole body orgasm." And there was no limit to the amount of vapor the lungs could process. Paste had the added advantage of being richer in actual cocaine than the powder commonly sold—40–85 percent as opposed to 12–20 percent—and was far cheaper. In terms of bang for the buck, it couldn't be beat.

"Many patients said they found no other drug as pleasurable as this one," Jeri wrote. "Paste was almost unknown six years ago. Now it is the main drug reported by patients who are admitted to psychiatric hospitals or drug treatment centers in Lima. There is no zone of this city where youngsters do not get together to smoke coca paste and where pushers do not sell the drug in their own homes or in the street. They even come to the school entrances to do their business."

But there was a price to pay for such a blissful rush. The feeling lasted only a few minutes, and nirvana could only be reattained by another hit—quickly—or a crushing depression would follow, the devil's own version of the cocaine blues. It was a roller-coaster ride, and invariably the user couldn't keep up the pace.

Jeri was deeply troubled by his research, comparing paste smokers to those suffering from a malignant disease. "It is hard to believe to what extremes of social degradation these men may fall, especially those who were brilliant students, efficient professionals, or successful businessmen," he wrote. "These individuals became so dependent on the drug that they had practically no other interest in life."

The Bolivian psychiatrist Nils Noya claimed that the drug caused "irreversible brain damage" and wrote that cocaine smokers literally could not stop once they started. Some users, he reported, smoked sixty to eighty cocaine-laced cigarettes in a single session. Cocaine-smoking parties would go on for days, ending only when the supplies dried up or the smokers passed out. "Immediately after smoking a cigarette, they have diarrhea," Nova said in a 1978 interview. "I mean immediately But the worst part is they have to go on smoking until they finish the box [of paste]."

Jeri wrote that cocaine smoking was largely confined to Peru, Bolivia, Ecuador, and Colombia, but there were ominous signs that it was moving northward. "We do not know if coca paste has been introduced to America, but Panamanian authorities have reported heavy transportation of coca paste by American and Peruvian citizens," Jeri wrote in 1979, citing an unpublished Panamanian police report.

Byck, who among other things had collected and edited Sigmund Freud's cocaine papers, had been skeptical of the South American reports until he sent one of his students down to Peru on a summer project. In the spring of 1978 a first-year Yale med student named David Paly came to Byck with an idea the scientist found intriguing: Paly wanted to measure the blood plasma levels of Peru's coca-leaf-chewing Indians to see what it was that got the Indians high. Plenty had been written about the cultural aspects of the habit, Paly told Byck, but no one had ever done any real experiments to see what it was that the leaf put in the Indians' bloodstream, and how much of it got there.

Paly, who had in interest in Peru from earlier travels there, said he "dreamed up" the project in order to start work on his thesis. "It was a fairly rudimentary proposal, but Yale has a thesis requirement for an M.D.—it's the only medical school in the country that does—so you have to start a proposal early in your career."

Coincidentally, Byek had recently gotten a letter from a prominent Peruvian neurosurgeon, Dr. Fernando Cabieses, who proposed some cooperative research on cocaine. At the time, the Peruvian government was cracking down on coca chewing and Cabieses believed the Indians were being harassed unfairly. He was looking for some scientific evidence to back up his arguments that the Indians' social customs should be left alone. Both Byck and Cabieses liked Paly's idea, and the Peruvian agreed to provide the lab facilities, test subjects, transportation, and assistants.

Soon a delighted Paly was winging his way to South America to spend his summer among the Indians in the mountains of Peru. Cabieses squired the young Yalie around Lima and introduced him to his friends in the arts and sciences. One man Paly met through Cabieses was Dr. Raul Jeri, who latched onto him and began telling him of his research into cocaine smoking. Jeri, who was also a general in the Peruvian military police, insisted on showing Paly the wretched victims of this new drug habit he'd discovered. Mostly to humor his influential new acquaintance, Paly agreed to accompany Jcri to the psychiatric institute where Jeri worked as a consultant. Paly left the hospital more doubtful than before.

"I interviewed some of these quote unquote *pastaleros*, and to my mind, one of them was clearly schizophrenic," Paly said. "Another one appeared to be a poly-drug abuser. I mean this guy had done everything from Valium to Quaaludes. So I was very unimpressed when I went around with him that first time."

Reading Jeri's studies did nothing to enhance Paly's opinion, either. They "were mainly observational and not very scientific," he said. It wasn't until Paly began making friends in Lima that he started changing his mind about the insistent general's work.

"I began to hear. . .about their friends who were dropping out of medical school and dropping out of college and basically turning into raging cocaine addicts," Paly recalled. "They were good kids who had essentially abandoned their lives and turned into wildly addicted base smokers. They were stealing from their grandmothers and doing all the kinds of things that you would associate with a heroin addict. . .and there were thousands of them."

On motorcycle trips through Lima with his friends, Paly said, he'd "drive down these streets and the places would stink of cocaine. They would stink of it. You'd come around a corner and you could smell it for miles. It has a very characteristic, sweet odor. And these weren't slums either. These were middle-class neighborhoods that my friends had grown up in, and now their friends were hanging out in the middle of the street, gaunt, and totally strung out."

Alarmed, Paly called Byck at Yale and told him what he'd seen. "The substance of my conversation with Byck, if I remember correctly, was that if this shit ever hits the U.S., we're in deep trouble."

Said Byck, "I remember the phone call very vividly. He said something was going on down there, and I told him to get some bloods [samples] and bring them back with him." Paly drew blood samples from random smokers and had them analyzed at the Laboratories of Clinical Psychopharmacology at Yale that fall.

"Peter Jatlow, who was the lab director, said they had the highest plasma levels of cocaine that he'd ever seen in someone who wasn't dead," Paly recalled. "If the average experimental plasma level they were getting in the lab from ingesting—snorting—cocaine was 100 [nanograms per mil], these—these were in the thousands."

Byck quickly got some federal grant money and sent Paly back to Lima to do some controlled experiments on cocaine smokers. Jeri, with his police connections, obtained the necessary permits and approvals, procured a half-kilo of coca paste and some cocaine smokers, and allowed Paly to bring them all to a room at the Peruvian Museum of Health Sciences. Most of them were young men in their twenties. Paly put on some music, served food and refreshments, and then brought out a box of coca paste.

"All subjects, calm while sitting in the room before the experiment, became markedly anxious as the box containing the paste was brought into the room," Paly wrote. "This nervousness became pronounced as they were preparing their first cigarettes and was evidenced by shaky hands and extremely sweaty palms and foreheads. This nervousness was borne out by the high blood pressure and heart rates taken immediately before smoking. This anxiety reaction is common to most experienced cocaine smokers and will often be brought on by the mere thought of smoking."

Paly was both fascinated and repelled. "It was Pavlovian," he said. "It was just unbelievable. Some of these kids, in the lab, would smoke twenty grams of paste and then, after you had paid them for their time, they would run out on the street with the money and buy more."

While Paly was running his experiments in Peru, further evidence was emerging in the United States that Raul Jeri's laughable predictions of a North American "cocaine invasion" were right on the mark. In February 1979 a psychologist from UCIA, Ronald K. Siegel, had a letter printed in the prestigious *New England journal of Medicine* warning of "a growing trend" toward cocaine smoking in the western United States. Siegel, who'd been researching cocaine use in the Los Angeles area since the early 1970s, was a well-known drug expert who had become something of a media darling, always ready with a good quote for reporters wanting the inside scoop on the latest drug craze in La-La Land.

Siegel had started a pioneering research project in 1975 by taking out newspaper ads seeking longtime cocaine users. L.A. being L.A., he got plenty of responses. He selected ninety-nine cocaine users, mostly young males, and proposed keeping in touch with them over the next four years so he could monitor the results of constant, long-term cocaine use.

His findings were great news for cokeheads. Not only did cocaine make you feel good, Siegel reported, but it had very few adverse psychological effects, and as a bonus, it helped you lose weight. "By the end of the study, approximately 38% of the subjects had shown increased elevation of the Euphoria Scale, indicating increased happiness and contentment with life," Siegel wrote. Only 5 percent of the subjects reported psychological problems, such as suspiciousness or paranoia, and Siegel dismissed those complaints as hypochondria or "perceptual" disturbances.

"Taken together, individuals reported experiencing some positive effects in all intoxications and negative effects in only 3% of the intoxications," he wrote. Even those negative effects "were usually of short duration and infrequent occurrence." All in all, Siegel concluded, the long-term negative effects of cocaine use "were consistently overshadowed by the long-term positive benefits."

There was, however, a curious footnote to Siegel's study, which the psychologist mentioned in passing. Over the course of his study, which ran from 1975 to 1978, six of the original ninety-nine cocaine users had become confirmed cocaine smokers, puffing something known on the streets as "freebase." Siegel was sufficiently intrigued to perform some cocaine-smoking experiments on monkeys, discovering that three out of three apes, given a choice between smoking lettuce or cocaine, clearly-preferred coke.

So when Siegel read Jeri's reports about the cocaine smoking epidemic in South America, he realized the Peruvian was wrong about one thing: the habit wasn't confined to South America anymore. It had already planted its seeds in L.A. and was starting to pop up in other cities as well, building a devoted following among certain circles of rich drug users. Worse, Yankee ingenuity had already been at work, improving upon the deadly product, making it easier to use and more appealing to refined American tastes.

The substance Jeri's subjects were using, coca paste, came mostly from the jungle cocaine-processing labs that dotted Peru and Bolivia. Paste was an ugly gray glob laden with residues of the toxic solvents used to extract it from the coca leaves—kerosene, acid, and other chemicals.

Some analyses had even found brick dust and leaded gasoline in it. Paste was hardly ever sold in the United States.

What Americans got for their drug dollars was the finished product, the sparkling white crystals of cocaine hydrochloride powder. But cocaine powder was made to be snorted. It was extremely difficult to smoke because of its high boiling point. So what was it that Siegel's patients were using, this cocaine they called "freebase"?

Siegel learned that it was cocaine powder that had been reverse-engineered to become smokable again. He traced the discovery of the process to the San Francisco Bay Area in January 1974, around the time that coca paste smoking had started becoming popular in Peru. According to Siegel, California cocaine traffickers who were journeying to Peru and Colombia for their wares "heard of the people down there smoking *base*." Though the Colombians were referring to coca paste, Siegel said, the Americans "mispronounced it, mistranslated the Spanish, and thought it was cocaine base. So they looked it up in the Merck Manual, saw cocaine base and said, 'Yeah, that's just the alkaloid of cocaine hydrochloride,' which is street cocaine."

By a relatively simple chemical process, Siegel said, the dealers took the powder and "removed the hydrochloride salt, thus freeing the cocaine base. Hence the expression 'freebasing.' That was something they could smoke, because it was volatile. And they were wowed by it when they smoked it." The traffickers "thought they were smoking *base*. They were not. They were smoking something that nobody else on the planet had ever smoked before."

By 1977, kits to extract freebase from cocaine powder were available commercially; ads were appearing in the underground press and in drug magazines. But since cocaine powder was so expensive, free-basing was a habit practiced only by a few rich drug dealers or avant garde celebrities. "They had very inefficient processes in those days and thought you needed large bags of cocaine to reduce to the cocaine freebase. So during the early years, only dealers and very wealthy users engaged in this," Siegel said.

Dr. Sidney Cohen, another California scientist who recognized the dangers of cocaine smoking early on, wrote in 1980 that the only good thing about freebase was that it was "the most expensive of all mood changers when price is measured against euphoria time. Affluent are the only ones who can afford it."

In December 1978, after comparing notes with Jeri, Siegel fired off his letter to the *New England Journal of Medicine*, alerting the medical profession that there were problems afoot. "Users are now experimenting with smoking cocaine alkaloid or base," he wrote. "Free-base parties have become increasingly popular and the practice has spread from California to Nevada, Colorado, New York, South Carolina and Florida."

Siegel's letter appeared in the *Journal* in February 1979. Five months later, in July, he, along with Paly, Byck, Jeri, and other cocaine researchers, found themselves together in Lima for an international symposium on cocaine. It was the first chance North American and South American drug researchers had had to compare notes and discuss their latest work.

While the experts split on what to do about powder cocaine, those who'd been studying cocaine smoking were unanimous about their findings: there was a monster loose, a drug capable of totally enslaving its user.

At the Lima conference, the stories continued to pour in. Two Bolivian psychiatrists from La Paz, Gregorio Aramayo and Mario Sanchez, told of seeing patients coming in for treatment in bare feet and borrowed clothes. "One of the patients said, 'This damn drug, doctor, I have had to sell even my clothes in order to buy it.'" Eighty percent of their patients, they reported, had committed "impulsive acts such as thefts, swindling, clothes-selling and others in order to buy more drug."

The Lima conference had taken place only two weeks before Byck appeared in Washington, and the stories he'd heard were fresh in his mind as he sat before Guyer's committee and listened to America's drug experts pooh-pooh the dangers of cocaine.

Once, Byck testified, he was in their camp. No longer. "I have come to the absolute, clear conclusion that it should not be legalized under any circumstances," he said. Cocaine smoking "can represent the same threat that the speed epidemics of the 1960's represented in their time. . .. We are on the verge of a dangerous drug use phenomenon."

Byck also wasn't the only American scientist who attended the Lima conference and came back alarmed. "The impact of these experiences was impressive, and observers from the National Institute on Drug Abuse (NIDA), the White House, and the Department of State reported on the growing problem in South America when they returned to the U.S.," said a 1982 study. Two of those observers, from NIDA and the White House, backed up Byck's warnings at the hearing.

But there was still time to prevent a catastrophe, Byck told the committee. "We do not yet have an epidemic of freebase or coca paste smoking in the United States. The possibility is strong that this might occur," Byck testified. "I have reports from California, from Chicago, and from New York about people who are smoking the substance, and I hear there are numbers of people now in San Francisco smoking the substance. Here is a chance for the federal government to engage in an educational campaign to prevent a drug abuse epidemic." The government needed to do three things "as rapidly as possible. Number one, find out about it. Number two, establish some kind of collaboration with the media; and number three, show what happens when this drug is used, so that we don't get an epidemic. We need our best minds to figure out how to do this without advertising the drug."

But the congressmen weren't interested in discussing educational campaigns or public service announcements. That wouldn't get any cocaine off the streets. What they wanted to know was this: What about the DEA's plan to ask the Peruvians and Bolivians to please quit growing coca plants?

Byck scoffed. "I don't think you can eliminate the growing of coca in Peru and countries which have had it for thousands of years."

"Not with [crop] substitutions?" Guyer asked.

"I don't think so."

"That is not going to work?" Guyer persisted.

"It *can't* work," Byck said, "if you consider these are crops grown on the slopes of mountains near jungle, and grown by people for their own use for 2,000 years. And talking about wiping it out? You have a better chance of wiping out tobacco in Virginia."

"We'll come back to this," Guyer promised, and the Cocaine Task Force hurried from the room for a break.

They never came back to Byck's warnings.

When the hearings resumed, the congressmen peppered the witnesses with such questions as whether they thought Hollywood cocaine use was contributing to the deterioration of quality TV shows (as one of them had heard recently on the *Mike Douglas Show*); if it was true that Coca-Cola once contained cocaine; and if the TV series *Quincy*, in which Jack Klugman played a coroner, was "accurate" or if it was "way out." Not another word was said about doing research or warning the public about the dangers of cocaine smoking. Byck left the hearing stunned. "Nobody paid any attention," he recalled. "They listened to it, and everyone said, 'So what?' I felt very strongly that the information that I had should have caused somebody to say, 'All right! We've got to start finding out about this stuff!' But they didn't."

Instead, Congress and the Carter administration did exactly the opposite of what Byck advised. It embarked on "the Andean strategy" advocated by the DEA to wipe out the coca plant, a tactic that even its supporters now concede was a failure. Nor did the federal government seem all that eager to allow scientists to do their own research into cocaine smoking, or to help them spread the alarm.

When Siegel, under U.S. government contract, finished a massive report on the history and literature of cocaine smoking, he couldn't get the government to publish it, allegedly due to concerns that readers would rush out and start smoking once they found out how to turn powder into freebase.

"They wanted me to do a scientific paper about cocaine smoking, but not to tell anyone how it was done," Siegel said disgustedly. "I tried to explain that people already knew how it was done. That's why there was a problem." Concerned that the information might never get out, he published it himself in a small medical journal two years later.

In 1982, Raul Jeri came to the United States to deliver his warnings in person.

He showed up at the California Conference on Cocaine, a well-attended affair held at a hotel in balmy Santa Monica, a few miles south of Los Angeles. Surrounded by palm trees and hibiscus, with the sounds of the ocean breaking in the background, the setting was perfect for a gabfest about such a sexy topic. Reporters flocked to the event, mobbing LSD guru Dr. Timothy Leary for a few witticisms about cocaine.

If any of them sat through Raul Jeri's presentation, it is likely they came away with the conviction that the thin, dark Peruvian was even stranger than Leary. Jeri showed his American colleagues a few slides, and in broken English tried to bang the drum about the dangers of cocaine smoking, which he claimed would result in "grave incurable cases of dementia." He trotted out his horror stories about the walking dead, the coke zombies that populated Peru. He showed more slides. "I would like to warn the U.S. against the plague which has reached its borders!" Jeri said dramatically, as the lights came back on. "The trivialization of cocaine use is a curse on humanity!"

The speech was "followed by an uneasy silence," a doctor in the audience remembered. How did Jeri treat such patients? someone asked.

Nothing worked really, Jeri said. They'd tried everything. Long periods of confinement, heavy doses of tranquilizers, lobotomies. It didn't matter. The relapse rate was between 50 and 80 percent, he said.

Um, lobotomies, did you say?

"Yes, surgical lobotomy—cyngulotomy, to be precise," Jeri said. He assured the audience that the brain surgery was done "only in desperate cases on incurable repeaters, often upon request by the family and with the patient's consent."

It was hard for Jeri's listeners to imagine how cocaine could become so addictive that a person would volunteer for brain surgery. "How barbaric," one muttered.

Byck said the Food and Drug Administration shut down attempts to do any serious research on addiction or treatment, refusing to approve grant requests or research proposals and withholding the government permits necessary to run experiments with controlled substances. "The FDA almost totally roadblocked our getting anything done. They insisted that they had total control over whether we could use a form of cocaine for experimental purposes, and without a so-called IND [an Investigation of New Drug permit] we couldn't go ahead with any cocaine experiments. And they wouldn't give us an IND."

Why not? "Once you get into the morass of government, you never understand exactly who is doing what to whom and why," Byck said.

Eight months before he appeared before Guyer's task force, Byck had requested official government permission to bring a coca paste sample into the United States for laboratory analysis. He filled out many forms, turned the sample over to a DEA agent in Lima, and never saw it again. "I now have a number of licenses I never had before, but no samples," Byck told Guyer's committee sarcastically. "The regulations which govern the legal importation of cocaine and coca research are much more effective than the regulations which seem to govern smoking or smuggling."

"We were the first"

The same day the world's cocaine experts were gathered in Lima to discuss the approaching drug epidemic—July 5, 1979—a man who would help spread it across Los Angeles was touching down at LAX. It had been a rough couple of weeks for Oscar Danilo Blandón Reyes, a pudgy twenty-seven-year-old refugee from the Nicaraguan civil war.

Not long before he'd had the world on a platter. He'd been rich, the second son of a wealthy landowner. His wife, Chepita, had been rich, a daughter of one of the country's most prominent political families. He had a brand-new M.B.A., a cushy government job, and a couple of businesses—an import-export company and a travel agency—on the side. One of his firms had a lucrative contract to supply American food to the Nicaraguan National Guard, the institution that ran the country.

Danilo and Chepita Blandón were solidly plugged into the power structure of General Anastasio Somoza's dictatorship, which was benevolent only in the ways that it rewarded its friends. The Somoza family owned nearly all of the country's biggest corporations—the national airline, the power company, the biggest hotel, the biggest department store, the cement factory, a newspaper. . .you name it, they owned it. It was hard to earn a living in Nicaragua if the Somozas took a dislike to you. But those families who stayed loyal and pleased the dictator partook of the riches that only a wall-to-wall monopoly can provide. The Blandóns had been blessed by Somoza's smile.

Then the Sandinistas had come to town and spoiled everything.

As Danilo Blandón stepped off the jet from Miami into the vast terminal at LAX, he found himself jobless, nearly broke, and homeless—human driftwood from a faraway, conquered land.

"[He came here] with one hand in the front and one in the back, you know what I mean?" his cousin Flor Reyes said.

All he and his wife had grown up accepting as their birthright—the elegant mansions, the servants, the vacation homes, the elite private schools—was gone, and he dreaded would soon be the property of some grasping commandante.

Though Somoza's army had beaten them down time and again, the Sandinistas rose up from the earth in the summer of 1978 to begin an offensive that would flabbergast both Somoza and his American handlers. By the spring of the following year, they had captured many of the smaller rural cities and were closing in on the capital. Somoza's supporters, who called themselves *Somocistas*, were beside themselves. Who would have ever believed that "Tachito" Somoza, the self-described Latin from Manhattan, could have gotten his ass whipped—and so quickly—by a bunch of bearded radicals? More importantly, how could the Americans have allowed such a thing to happen? The CIA contingent at the U.S. embassy had been assuring everyone that things were fine, that the rebels weren't a real threat. It might get a little tough for the old boy a couple years down the road, the CIA opined, but Somoza would hang on until then.

But what Somoza and, apparently, the CIA didn't realize was that the deal his family had struck with every U.S. administration since Franklin Roosevelt's—a blood pact to combat Communism together—would be dissolved by a Georgia peanut farmer, Jimmy Carter. Instead of covering up or downplaying the brutality of Somoza's National Guard as past administrations had done, some of Carter's people went on a human rights crusade, complaining publicly that the longtime dictator was just *too* dictatorial, and that his *Guardia* was wantonly killing people. In 1977 some in Congress had begun wondering why the U.S. government continued putting up with Somoza and his ill-behaved brood. Asked by the chairman of the House Appropriations Subcommittee what harm would befall U.S. interests if Congress were simply to cut off all aid to Nicaragua, Undersecretary of State Lucy Benson replied, "I cannot think of a single thing."

Somoza told his *Guardia* cohorts to ease up on the rough stuff, and miraculously, complaints dropped off sharply. Satisfied, the Carter administration backed off. "President Somoza is known to have instructed the National Guard on several occasions to eliminate abuses which led to many charges of extra-legal killings and torture, particularly in a northern rural area of insurgent activity," State Department official Sally Shelton proudly told Congress in 1978. That "northern rural area" was the stomping grounds of an especially efficient *Guardia* general, Gustavo "El Tigre" Medina, who would later play an important role in Danilo Blandón's life. Medina was Somoza's top counterinsurgency adviser, a short, steely-looking man hated and feared by the Sandinistas. They consider him responsible for some of the revolution's worst defeats.

The State Department reported in 1978 that, as far as the human rights complaints coming out of Medina's theater were concerned, "it appears that many of the allegations of cruel, inhuman and degrading treatment during the course of National Guard operations against the FSLN [the Sandinistas] were well-founded, but others were more dubious." But when the Inter-American Commission on Human Rights, a branch of the Organization of American States (OAS), did its own inspection in late 1978, the Latin American team, observers from other countries, saw things in much more graphic terms than had the Americans.

They spoke to a mother who told of picking body parts out of the dust to reassemble her five-year-old daughter after the girl was hit by an air-to-ground missile. They talked with survivors of "Operation Mop-Up," during which the *Guardia* went in after a street battle and killed everyone they found in the neighborhoods where the Sandinistas had hidden, shooting "numerous people, in some cases children, in their own homes or in front of the same and in the presence of parents and siblings." They visited the jails, reporting that in "all the jails visited, the prisoners alleged that they rarely saw a doctor but that when they did see one he was giving instructions as to the voltage of electricity to be applied during the torture, or examining the tortured persons to see if they could resist any more shocks."

In the northern mountains, the team concluded that of 338 peasants arrested between 1975 and 1977 by the Guardia, 321 of them "were never seen again and are presumed dead." The missing peasants' farms were "appropriated by members of the National Guard," the report said.

When the State Department went to Congress for more money to support Somoza's troops, one congressman was perplexed. "What possible interest does the United States have in training the National Guard of Nicaragua?" the lawmaker asked. "How does that help the American citizen?"

The training programs "have provided us a useful instrument for exercising political as well as professional influence over the Guard," the diplomat replied.

"I know," the congressman deadpanned. "We have been doing that for the last twenty or thirty years."

Because the National Guard had such a tight lock on the country, it was considered invincible by many of Somoza's followers. And it might have been, had the Carter administration backed up Somoza when the Sandinistas were at his throat. But Carter's people never really figured out what they wanted to do in Nicaragua, except to distance themselves from Somoza's excesses.

When it became obvious that the Nicaraguan people would no longer live under Somoza's rule, the

American plan for dealing with the crisis boiled down to this: Dump Somoza and salvage the *Guardia*. Apparently the administration never realized that, to the Sandinistas and most other Nicaraguans, the *Guardia* and Somoza were like evil twins joined at the brain. One could not survive without the other.

As Sandinista attacks mounted, Washington let Somoza twist. Gradually, it dawned on Somoza's followers that the Americans weren't riding to their rescue. By early June 1979 Managua's airport was jammed with people frantically trying to catch a flight out before the rebels arrived. "Hundreds of Nicaraguans struggle daily at Las Mercedes International Airport to get a seat on one of the four commercial flights," Panamanian radio reported on June 9. "The situation here is such that if a donkey with wings appeared, it would be beseiged by travelers," an airport official said. "Departure from the country by land or by sea is impossible because of the danger involved in driving on the country's roads."

Yet Danilo Blandón stayed put, though he had every reason to fear the vengeance of the Sandinistas, to whom the Blandón family represented all that was wrong with the dictatorship. Blandón's father, Julio, owned the land on which was built one of the worst slums in Managua—OPEN #3—a low-rent district that began life as emergency government housing after an earthquake leveled Managua in 1972. Conditions there were so bad that the neighborhood, now called Ciudad Sandino and numbering more than 70,000 residents, was a constant source of new recruits for the Sandinistas and a hotbed of anti-Somoza activity. "It was called Via Misery," said economist Orlando Murillo, an uncle of Blandón's wife. "People there lived like the niggers in Los Angeles. But it made [Danilo's] father a very rich man."

The Blandóns were social friends of the Somozas and shared common business interests; Julio Blandón and Somoza were two of the biggest landlords in Managua. Blandón could trace his family's relationship with the dictatorship back several generations. Blandón's mother was from the Reyes family, which had an illustrious history in the Somoza regime, and his grandfather was Colonel Rigoberto Reyes, former minister of war and National Guard commander under Somoza's father, Anastasio I.

Danilo's in-laws, the Murillos, were stalwarts of Somoza's Liberal party. The Murillos had provided leaders for the National Assembly for generations; Orlando Murillo's father had been the assembly's president, and Chepita Blandón's father had been Managua's mayor. Like the Blandóns, the Murillos owned large tracts of the capital, including the national telecommunications company headquarters, along with cattle ranches and plantations in the hinterlands.

In some ways, Danilo Blandón had more to fear from the Sandinistas than other *Somocistas*. He was part of Somoza's government, the director of wholesale markets, and ran a program designed to introduce a free-market economy to Nicaragua's farmers. Blandón's job was to award grants for demonstration projects to create central distribution points for the country's agricultural riches, places where farmers could come and sell their goods to food wholesalers.

The $27 million program, Blandón said, was jointly financed by the Nicaraguan and U.S. governments. It paid for his master's degree in business administration from the University of Colombia in Bogota.

Blandón and his wife held fast during the first jittery weeks of June. Heavy fighting was breaking out in Managua, where they lived; National Guardsmen and Sandinista rebels were shooting each other in the streets. By June 11 things were so far gone for Somoza that the rebels had set up a headquarters in the eastern part of the city, and shells from National Guard howitzers whistled over downtown Managua daily to explode in the Sandinista-held neighborhoods. Circling airplanes would drop 500-pound bombs or flaming gasoline barrels into the area. On the edge of town, a National Guard tank had rolled up outside the *La Prensa* building and pumped round after round into the shuttered offices of the paper that had been Somoza's fiercest critic.

The CIA hastily revised its estimate of Somoza's staying power on June 12, giving his government only a short time to live. Somoza "fired" the *Guardia*'s general staff four days later—many had fought the Sandinistas for decades—and most of them ran to the Colombian embassy for asylum. The exodus was on.

Somoza went on the radio June 19 to denounce the U.S. government for its ingratitude for his long years of service. "I want the U.S. people to help me, just as I helped them during thirty years of struggle against communism," he announced. "We want the North Americans to return what we contributed during the Cold War."

That same day the CIA shortened Somoza's life expectancy once more. Now, the agency estimated, he had little more than a week. Danilo Blandón decided he'd hung around long enough. He had a three-year-old daughter, and Chepita was pregnant with their second child. It was time to go. Blandón fell in with a Red Cross convoy on its way to the airport and put his wife and daughter on a plane for Los Angeles, where Chepita had relatives. For some reason, he did not accompany them. Instead Blandón and his older brother, Julio Jr., boarded a flight for Miami, where Blandón entered the United States on a tourist visa he'd been issued several years earlier.

How he managed to do what many others could not—namely, get four seats on jetliners bound for the States—is not clear, and the Immigration and Naturalization Service has refused to release any records of the Blandóns' immigration, citing privacy reasons. Nor is it clear why he first went to Miami.

Years later, Blandón would claim that he couldn't get a ticket to L.A. for himself, and barely could afford the tickets he got. He claimed that he sold a Sony color television for $200 to pay for them, and landed in Miami with $100 to his name. However, his wife's uncle, Orlando Murillo, says he paid for the airline tickets and also gave the couple $5,000 before they left the country. If that was true, Blandón had other reasons for choosing to spend his first few weeks in Miami.

As he tells it, he stayed with a friend and "got a job washing cars" until he could save enough for a plane ticket to Los Angeles. He rejoined his family on the West Coast in early July, and by August he had landed a job as a salesman at a used car lot in East Los Angeles, a heavily Hispanic section of town. His employers were two huge Nicaraguan brothers named Torres.

Blandón has said he knew one of the brothers, Edgar, from his days in college in Monterrey, Mexico, where Edgar was studying economics. Edgar's brother, Jacinto, was a former U.S. Marine and had served in Vietnam. Together they ran Torres Used Cars.

"They had a used car lot with only ten cars," Blandón said. "They just give me a favor to be there and pay me something because they know that I didn't have any money, and then they gave me [a job] like a salesman in the neighborhood."

But the Torres brothers weren't just car salesmen. They were also major-league cocaine traffickers. Other dealers called them "the Trees" because of their sequoia-like girth; both brothers were estimated to be at least six-six. To the cops they became known as "the Twin Towers." The Torres brothers lived with two sisters who were big in their own way: they were cousins of Pablo Escobar, a Colombian cocaine kingpin who was one of the founders of the Medellín cocaine cartel.

Escobar and his Colombian pals Jorge Ochoa and Carlos Lehder were then firmly in control of the blossoming Miami cocaine market, having wrested it from the Cuban-Americans after a long-running cocaine war. The Cubans had been using the city as a base for small-scale cocaine smuggling since the late 1960s, but the Colombians had bigger ideas. They intended to distribute mass quantities of cocaine all across the United States in an organized and businesslike fashion.

For three years, from 1976 to 1979, they fought the Cubans for supremacy in Miami, and the two sides killed each other in droves. Afterward the Colombians turned the city into a cocaine distribution hub, and it became the official port of call for cocaine dealers of every stripe. Local banks began swelling with drug profits.

Miami was convenient; the Colombians could blend in with the large Hispanic population and move about the city unnoticed. Escobar's associate Carlos Lehder set up shop in the Bahamas, buying an island where the drug planes coming out of Colombia could land, refuel, and wait for the right moment to fly into the United States.

Lehder's transportation system worked well and gave the Medellín cartel its first real toehold in America. Then he began jetting to the West Coast to scope out a distribution system for Los Angeles and the western United States.

When Blandón was working for the Torres brothers, he says, they had not yet begun dealing cocaine. But it apparently didn't take them long to get the hang of it; by 1982 they would be two of the more significant drug dealers in Los Angeles.

Blandón insists he wasn't dealing drugs in 1979 either. That was a couple years down the road. At the moment, he had plenty to keep him busy. Chepita was getting bigger with their second child every day, and he was struggling to pay the bills. In August 1979 he started a new job with another car lot, Rocha Used Cars, and was also hustling rental cars at an L.A. hotel, according to his friend Frank Vigil. And in his spare time Blandón was also trying to start an army.

"I was the first," Blandón boasted. "Well—we—we formed a group in L.A. to—a group of our people to go and fight against the Sandinistas that we called FDN, *Fuerza Democratica Nicaragüense* [Nicaraguan Democratic Force]. We were in charge. We were five people in charge of it in L.A. We were in charge to get some money at that time."

Blandón said his counterrevolutionary group came together soon after he arrived in Los Angeles. At first it was just a group of Nicaraguan exiles who got together occasionally to bitch about the Sandinistas and help each other find a toehold in their new country. They would "talk about developments in Nicaragua," Blandón later told the CIA. "Other members of this group also opposed Somoza and the Sandinista regime. . .. [They] simply came together to share common experiences and discuss their mutual desires to see the Sandinista government out of Nicaragua." They had "meetings every week, every 15 days, okay, since we got to L.A., in 1980–81. And we raised money for the Contras." When it began, he said, his group was not officially connected to anyone. It had no formal structure, no officers, no membership requirements.

"You Americans have no idea what it's like to lose everything and be thrown out of your own country," commented Jose Macario Estrada, an ex-judge who later became Blandón's lawyer and business partner. "When you are in exile, you become very close to other exiles."

At the end of 1979 Blandón applied for political asylum in the United States, claiming that he would be killed by the Communists if he returned to Nicaragua. And he listed his membership in an "anti-Communist organization" as proof that his life was worthless back home. If Blandón's recollection is correct, his little L.A. group was one of the first flickerings of an organized resistance movement against the Sandinistas in the United States. Acquaintances and former college classmates say Blandón sometimes brags that he was one of the earliest founders of the FDN, which became the biggest and most famous of the various Nicaraguan anti-Communist armies that would later be called the Contras.

The FDN didn't officially come into existence until mid-1981, so if Blandón was raising money for Contra fighters as early as he says—in 1979–80—he was doing it on behalf of the FDN's predecessor: the Legion of September 15, a violent band of ex-*Guardia* men then based in Guatemala. The legion, a terrorist organization started by former Somoza bodyguards soon after Somoza's fall, was to become the hard core of the FDN after the CIA merged it into two smaller resistance groups in August 1981.

Blandón's Contra fund-raising efforts bore little fruit at first. "At the beginning, we started doing some parties, you know, some—how do you call—some activities in the park, until 1980 and '81," he said. "We have to have some rallies or whatever." The fund-raisers were disappointing, though, bringing in only "a few thousands or something." An acquaintance reported that Blandón also hawked copies of Somoza's bitter memoirs, *Nicaragua Betrayed*, and helped put out an anti-Sandinista newsletter that was printed at a little shop owned by a sympathetic Nicaraguan.

About the same time that Blandón and his compatriots began their fund-raising efforts in L.A., Somoza's cousin, Luis Pallais Debayle, began making the rounds of the various exile groups in the United

States and Central America to see if anyone was interested in helping Somoza fight his way back into power.

Pallais contacted his cousin in Paraguay, and the ex-dictator promised to kick in $1 million to start a resistance movement. It was a promise he never kept. On September 17, 1980, Argentine revolutionaries blasted a rocket-propelled grenade and a hail of M-16 fire into Somoza's Mercedes-Benz limo, killing Somoza and scattering pieces of him and his German automobile across a block of downtown Asunción.

Another visit Pallais made, with happier results, was to former National Guard colonel Enrique Bermúdez, to see if Bermúdez would be willing to lead a resistance force if one could be put together. Bermúdez was a logical choice to be the Contras' military commander. Of all the former officers of Somoza's National Guard, he probably had the best contacts with the U.S. military and intelligence communities. Convincing the Americans to back them was going to be critical if the Contras were ever to get off the ground. And Bermúdez was a leader who was very palatable to the Americans. He was a known quantity.

"He fit the profile," one U.S. official later told journalist Sam Dillon. "He was malleable, controllable, docile."

In 1965 Bermúdez had been the deputy commander of an infantry company Somoza sent to support a U.S.-led invasion of the Dominican Republic, an excursion to put down a leftist political movement. It was another one of those favors Somoza had done over the years to help his American friends stamp out any hint of communism in Latin America.

Bermúdez had been in the United States since 1975, first as a student attending courses on subversion and counterinsurgency at the Inter-American Defense College in Washington and later as the Nicaraguan government's liaison to the American military. The Americans thought so highly of him that he was one of six *Guardia* officers they recommended to head the National Guard during the final days of the Somoza regime, in a last-minute public relations ploy by the Carter administration to change the *Guardia*'s murderous image and take some of the wind out of the Sandinistas' sails before their final offensive.

The State Department considered Bermúdez a safe choice; he had spent most of the revolution in Washington and, the reasoning went, couldn't be held responsible for any of the *Guardia*'s human rights violations—the tortures, the disappearances, the aerial bombardments of civilian neighborhoods. Somoza picked someone else, however, and Bermúdez rode out the remainder of the civil war from the safety of Embassy Row in Washington. When the Somoza government collapsed, Bermúdez began a new career as a truck driver, delivering *Newsweek* magazines.

He would not toil long at such a menial task. Soon after the uplifting visit from Somoza's cousin, Bermúdez got a call from Major General Charles E. Boyd, a top U.S. Air Force official, who invited Bermúdez to the Pentagon to kick some ideas around. There, after sounding out Bermúdez on the idea of running a rebel force to harass the Sandinistas, Boyd told him he had a friend at the CIA who was interested in speaking with him. By mid-1980 Bermúdez had packed his family and his belongings and left Washington behind, moving to a rented house in Miami. According to one account, Bermúdez was then on the CIA's payroll.

He began traveling widely, gauging the sentiment of vanquished National Guardsmen hiding in the United States and Central America and reporting his findings to his CIA handlers. Those who wondered how Bermúdez could afford his travels when he was jobless were told he was living off the profits from the sale of his home in Washington.

According to Boyd, the CIA "put Bermúdez in touch" with the Legion of September 15 in Guatemala. Soon Bermúdez would move there and become the legion's commander.

It was a motley crew, if there ever was one. Made up mostly of ex-*Guardia* officers who escaped from Nicaragua at the end of the war, the legionaires had a safe house in Guatemala City and were training on a farm near the Honduran border called Detachment 101. Coincidentally, the farm was located in the same small town, Esquipulas, that had served as the headquarters for the CIA-backed group that overthrew the Guatemalan government in 1954.

Since there was no war for them to fight—yet—the legion kept in shape by hiring itself out to perform a variety of warlike deeds for others. The CIA acknowledged in 1998 that the Legion "to some extent engaged in kidnapping, extortion, and robbery to fund its operations" and also "engaged in the bombing of Nicaraguan civilian airliners and airliner hijackings as methods of attacking the Sandinista government." According to a June 1981 cable to CIA headquarters, the Legion's commanders "see themselves as being forced to stoop to criminal activities in order to feed and clothe their cadre."

That the CIA would know this band of terrorists so well that it would know the thinking of its commanders is not a surprise. Much of the Legion's leadership had worked with or for the Agency during their previous lives as Somoza's secret agents, rooting out dissidents for the dictator's Office of National Security, which was advised by the CIA. One of the earliest published accounts of the Legion's existence notes that it was "run by former members of Somoza's intelligence service." In other words, the men of the CIA and the men of the Legion were kindred spirits—anti-Communist spooks—and this mutual affection would come to serve the Legion well after the CIA took over the day-to-day operations of the Contras.

Still, the CIA's matter-of-fact description of the Legion's criminal history is too kind. Its Inspector General never mentioned the Legion's most horrific deed: the March 1980 assassination of the Roman Catholic archbishop of San Salvador, Oscar Romero, who was shot through the heart as he held Mass. Romero had the bad luck to interest himself in the fate of some parishioners who had been "disappeared" by the infamous Salvadoran death squads. The archbishop had been warned several times to butt out, but he hadn't taken the hint.

Records seized from a right-wing Salvadoran politician suspected of orchestrating Romero's murder, Roberto D'Aubuisson, revealed that D'Aubuisson had gone to Guatemala three days after Romero's murder and made two "contributions to Nicaraguans," one for $40,000 and one for $80,000. Written underneath these amounts was the name and telephone number of Colonel Ricardo Lau, a former intelligence and security officer for the *Guardia* who was running the Legion of September 15 prior to Bermúdez's appointment as commander.

Lau, who was never charged in connection with Romero's murder, would go on to become Enrique Bermúdez's right-hand man in the Contra organization. The CIA has admitted that during 1981–82 it was receiving regular reports that Lau and seven other Legion commanders were "involved in criminal activities." Coincidentally, that's what Danilo Blandón was doing for the Contras in Los Angeles. His little exile group was moving up in the world, and had switched from cocktail parties to car theft and loan fraud. They had also become an official part of the CIA's new Contra army, the *Fuerza Democratica Nicaragüense*— the FDN.

In 1981 CIA agent Enrique Bermúdez paid Blandón's little group in L.A. a visit. "Bermúdez came to a meeting of the group to give a pep talk and to ask that the group keep the idea of a free and democratic Nicaragua alive by publicizing the Contra cause in the United States," Blandón told CIA inspectors. The colonel asked the group "to adopt the colors and the flag of the FDN," and, after that, the CIA inspectors wrote, "Blandón and other member of the group called themselves FDN and used the FDN's colors, flag and letterhead."

They also got an assignment, Blandón testified. "It came, you know, that we had to provide some cars and we got involved in another thing to get some money." By then Blandón had been working in L.A. long enough to establish a credit history, so he applied for an auto loan.

"My thinking was to get back to Nicaragua, never to stay in the States, so I used my car salesman job to get a [loan] application, to make an application and to get a car without—just giving them the down payment—and sending it to the Contra revolution in Honduras," Blandón said. "We were the first people, the first group that sent a pickup truck to the Contra revolution in Honduras." (In the spring of 1981 the

Legion of September 15 moved its operations from Guatemala to a new headquarters in Honduras, where it would remain for the rest of the war.)

Blandón said the payments on the cars they sent to the Contras were to be picked up by "the organization. . .and they didn't pay the monthly payments, so I lost my credit. But at that time I didn't care because they [the Contras] were my idea, my cause."

"The brotherhood of military minds"

Danilo Blandón says he never intended to become a cocaine trafficker when he arrived in L.A. in 1979. He became a drug dealer out of patriotism. When the bugle sounded and the call to serve came, Blandón was hustling used sheet metal at H&L Auto Exchange in Los Angeles—an honest guy making an honest two thousand bucks a month. Next thing you know, he was selling cocaine instead of Chevys.

As Blandón tells the story, his transformation occurred shortly after getting a call from a friend from Miami, an old college classmate named Donald Barrios. Barrios told Blandón that someone wanted to meet with him, a man who would be flying into L.A. very soon. The passenger's name was Norwin Meneses. Blandón was to meet him at the airport and listen to what Meneses had to say.

"He had to talk to me about something," Blandón said. For most Nicaraguans that would have come as decidedly unwelcome news. Meneses had a nasty reputation in his homeland. Blandón had heard him referred to as "El Padrino" (The Godfather) and he'd heard rumors of drug trafficking. A 1982 FBI report said Meneses "had a reputation as a hit man who had killed in Nicaragua."

Barrios didn't say why he wanted Blandón to meet with the gangster, but Blandón figured it had to do with the Contras, "because he [Barrios] was in the Contra—in the Contra revolution organization."

People who know Barrios describe him as a wealthy former insurance broker and financier from Managua who emigrated to the States long before the revolution and married an American woman. They say Barrios is a relative of former Nicaraguan president Violeta Barrios de Chamorro, widow of the crusading journalist Pedro Joaquin Chamorro, whose 1978 murder sparked the uprising that eventually toppled Somoza. Norwin Meneses, records show, was a partner of Violeta Chamorro in a finance company before the revolution.

After the Sandinista takeover, Donald Barrios reportedly became a financial angel to dispossessed Somocistas, helping them settle in Miami and find jobs. He also became business partners with some of them, including at least two members of the dictator's general staff and the owner of the largest pharmaceutical company in Nicaragua.

At the time he called Blandón in Los Angeles, Barrios was partners with Somoza's old guerrilla hunter, Gustavo "El Tigre" Medina, the counterinsurgency expert who'd ravaged the northern mountains rooting out Communist sympathizers. Medina was head of G-4—the officer in charge of supplies—for the National Guard at the end of the war, and he fled Managua with Somoza on the morning his regime ended. "I was in the plane right behind his," Medina said. Because of his activities during the war, Medina is among the minority of Nicaraguans who have not gone home.

Medina and Barrios started a restaurant and an investment company in Miami, records show. Other partners included former colonel Aurelio Somarriba, head of G-1 for the *Guardia*, Somoza's chief administrative officer; and Enrique "Cuco" Sanchez, a member of a wealthy Nicaraguan family that would play a key role in the founding of the Contras.

Blandón's hunch about Meneses and the Contras turned out to be correct. The meeting, he said, was "to start the movement, the Contra revolution."

After picking his passenger up at the airport, Blandón said, the wiry Meneses "started telling me that we had to do some money and to send [it] to Honduras." Later, at a restaurant, Meneses explained his idea more fully: "He told me to make some drug business in L.A. for raise money to the Contra, and we started that way."

Blandón was shocked by the suggestion at first, he said. "I didn't agree at that time, because I had to think."

Joining up with a man like Norwin Meneses would be agreeing to work for a killer—a career criminal. Meneses's nickname, "El Perico," is a Spanish pun, and a telling one. The word usually means "parakeet," and given Meneses's quick, dark eyes and small beakish face, it's easy to see why such a moniker would stick. But in Argentinian slang the word means "cocaine." And to cops in Central America from the 1970s to the 1990s, cocaine often meant Meneses.

The CIA, in a recently declassified 1986 cable, described Meneses as "the kingpin of narcotics traffickers in Nicaragua prior to the fall of Somoza." The agency would later describe him as the Cali cartel's representative in Nicaragua, but Norwin wasn't finicky. He'd sell cocaine for anyone.

In fact, he'd been selling cocaine since before there were any cartels. In the small world of international cocaine smuggling, Norwin Meneses was a pioneer.

Back when Medellín kingpin Carlos Lehder was still just a car thief sitting in a cell at the Danbury, Connecticut, federal prison, Meneses was making multikilo deals directly with Peruvian cocaine manufacturers. According to Nicaraguan police officials, Meneses's relationship with the drug lords of Colombia began during the marijuana era of the early 1970s, and the story they tell of his first big deal is illustrative of Meneses's modus operandi.

Roger Mayorga is a former Sandinista intelligence officer who also headed up investigations for the Nicaraguan National Police narcotics unit. Mayorga says the drug kingpin's association with the Colombians began after an airplane full of marijuana made an emergency landing at a ranch owned by one of the Somozas. The Managua police were called, and they arrested the Colombian pilots, seized the airplane, and confiscated its load of prime weed.

In Somoza's Nicaragua, the Managua police department was a branch of the National Guard. And the *Guardia* officer who commanded the Managua police for many years was Colonel Edmundo Meneses Cantarero—Norwin's brother. Colonel Meneses came to an understanding with the Colombians who owned the aircraft. Mayorga said the pilots and the airplane were allowed to leave, but the load of marijuana remained behind as "evidence." Somehow the evidence got turned over to brother Norwin, and a drug kingpin was born.

The role played by the Nicaraguan National Guard in creating Meneses's criminal empire can't be overstated. The *Guardia*, which one researcher called "one of the most totally corrupt military establishments in the world," permeated the Meneses family. In addition to Edmundo, another brother, Brigadier General Fermin Meneses, commanded the *Guardia* garrison in the city of Masaya, a commercial and cultural center not far from Managua. The family's long ties with the *Guardia* and its history of staunch anticommunism help explain Norwin's later activities on behalf of the Contras.

"The whole [Meneses] family was anti-Sandinista to the death," the Nicaraguan newsmagazine *El Semanario* reported in 1996. "It is a hate that seems almost genetic, ancestral."

The *Guardia* wasn't just an army; it had its hands in everything. If the CIA, the FBI, the DEA, the IRS, the army, the air force, the Marine Corps, the National Guard, the Coast Guard, Customs, Immigration, and the Postal Service were all rolled into one, it would begin to approach Somoza's National Guard in its power over the everyday lives of the average citizen. "Nicaragua is one of the few countries we are aware of in which all arms shipments that go into the country, whether they are sporting goods or of whatever kind, have to be received by the National Guard," State Department official Sally Shelton told

Congress in 1978. "We have been shipping hunting equipment, for example. They are in effect purchased by the National Guard and then resold in retail outlets."

"Say that again?" one stunned congressman asked. "The National Guard is a wholesaler for hunting ammunition?"

"They are passed through the National Guard and sold in retail outlets," Shelton repeated. "It is more an accounting procedure than anything else."

According to the hearing transcript, "general laughter" ensued.

But the pervasive corruption of the *Guardia* was no laughing matter to Nicaraguans. "Gambling, alcoholism, drugs, prostitution and other vices are protected and exploited by the very persons who have the obligation to combat them," Nicaragua's Roman Catholic bishops complained in a 1978 pastoral letter to Somoza. "Widespread corruption continues unchecked and public scandals further undermine the confidence and morale of the people."

To many the *Guardia* was little different than the Mafia. And if Somoza was its godfather, the Meneses brothers were his capos. Somoza was closest to Edmundo, known as Mundo, who was one of his favorite generals. In the 1960s Mundo—who'd been trained in irregular warfare and anticommunism at the U.S. Army's School of the Americas in Panama—conducted a series of bloody operations against Sandinista rebels near the town of Pancasan in northern Nicaragua. Those campaigns killed several key Sandinistas and crippled the guerrilla movement for years. Later Somoza gave Mundo the *Guardia*'s choicest plum, control of the Managua police, a perch from which a man so inclined could dip his beak into every imaginable scam. For the unscrupulous, the profit potential was unlimited.

"You have to realize that you did a lot of things in your career in the *Guardia* and you progressed up through the ranks so you might have been a lot of things," explained former Somoza secretary Juan C. Wong. "Now, Police Chief, that's one of the best. That's a nice job. That was the last job he [Edmundo] had in his military career. Then he retired and went into the diplomatic corps."

Under Mundo's watchful eye, Managua became an open city for brother Norwin, who by the late 1970s owned discotheques—the Frisco Disco and the VIP Club, among others—drive-in whorehouses with waterbeds and porno tapes, and a thriving drug business.

A "highly reliable" FBI informant told Justice Department inspectors that Meneses used his influence within the Somoza regime to smuggle cocaine from Colombia to the U.S. and "had even used a Nicaraguan Air Force plane once for such a shipment."

"Norwin ran all the rackets for the *Guardia*," said Mayorga. "And remember, his brother was the chief of police. No one could do anything."

San Francisco cocaine trafficker Rafael Cornejo, who has worked for the Meneses family since the 1970s, told of prerevolution jaunts down to Managua where he would spend weekends partying with the Meneses brothers. "You'd walk down the street with Mundo, and everyone would salute you," Cornejo recalled with a smile. "We went riding around in the Jeeps, you know, guys with big guns everywhere around us. It was a trip."

Though never a member of the *Guardia*, Norwin did his part for the Somoza regime. In his teens and twenties, acquaintances said, he worked as an undercover informant for the Office of National Security (ONS), Somoza's plainclothes secret police, which rooted out subversives and political dissidents. Before going to Guatemala to start up the Legion of September 15, Colonel Ricardo Lau spent much of his career with the ONS and was allegedly one of its chief torturers.

Former Managua police chief Rene Vivas, an early member of the Sandinista movement, said Norwin Meneses infiltrated pro-Communist groups for the ONS, sometimes posing as a news photographer, other times as the secretly disaffected son of a powerful Somocista family. In a magazine interview in 1996, Meneses told of starting up an armed guerrilla group to support Fidel Castro's takeover of Cuba but insisted that he was never a Communist.

With Mundo and the National Guard as his protectors, Norwin appears to have literally gotten away with murder. In the spring of 1977 Norwin found himself under investigation by the chief inspector of the Nicaraguan Customs Department, a particularly tenacious sleuth named Oskar Reyes Zelaya. Inspector Reyes and the FBI believed Norwin was running a massive car theft ring, which was using the National Guard to "import" stolen American cars into Nicaragua and then selling them to various potentates of the Somoza government. Importing cars through the *Guardia* allowed the buyer to evade the hefty tariffs the Nicaraguan government had placed on imports.

According to press reports, Norwin first tried to get the annoying inspector off his tail by setting him up with an attractive woman in a Managua hotel room. The woman, Pamela Cestoni, then went to the police, claiming that Inspector Reyes had raped her. When the investigation revealed that Cestoni was a friend of Norwin's, Reyes was cleared, and "the sexual maneuver was used only to exacerbate the prosecution against Norwin," *La Prensa* reported.

On the evening of June 2, 1977, the chief inspector got a phone call at his home, allegedly from a man who wanted to give him a payoff in order to drop the Meneses investigation. Dressed in a bathrobe and flip-flops, Reyes hopped into his Jeep Cherokee and drove to an alley behind a nearby supermarket, where the man was waiting to meet him. Whoever it was in that alley shot Reyes three times in the stomach and throat. But he didn't complete the job. Bleeding profusely, the inspector was taken to the emergency room of the Orient Hospital in Managua. As he lay writhing on a cot, the dying Reyes spotted his friend Pablo Zamora Moller, the chief investigator for the Managua police department, standing nearby.

"Pablo, protect me!" Reyes cried. "This is Norwin! Norwin Meneses sent away to kill me!" Reyes died a short time later.

Norwin was arrested and jailed on suspicion of murder. But after a "rigorous and exhaustive" investigation ordered by brother Edmundo, Norwin was cleared of any involvement and released. Meneses claimed he was at a motel when the killing happened, and both Rafael Cornejo, one of his San Francisco-based cocaine traffickers, and his nephew Jaime Meneses, who also was dealing cocaine in the Bay Area, backed up the story, testifying that Norwin was with them.

Reyes' murder would never be solved, but the Justice Department would later receive compelling evidence that Meneses was behind it, just as the dying inspector had claimed. In 1986, federal prosecutors in San Francisco debriefed Edmundo Meneses' son, Jairo, who informed them that "during the Somoza regime, Norwin Meneses smuggled weapons, silencers, and video equipment into Nicaragua, which he exchanged for money or narcotics. The operation was discovered by Oscar Reyes, who was a high-ranking customs official under Somoza. Norwin then arranged for Reyes' assassination."

After the publicity died down, Norwin calmly resumed his smuggling ventures, but the FBI kept its eye on him. As Somoza's government teetered, the Bureau laid plans to keep Norwin from ever coming to the U.S. In 1979, the FBI office in Mexico City asked that Meneses be included in the Bureau's "top thief" program and requested an arrest warrant "if for no other reason than to preclude him from entering the United States." The FBI also asked for a hold on his immigration status so he could be questioned if he tried to cross the border. But the U.S. Attorney's office in San Francisco, citing Norwin's "political connections" in Nicaragua, refused to do either—and it would not be the last time that office would exhibit such an odd reluctance to battle the Meneses crime family.

One longtime Contra supporter said Norwin's arrest and the subsequent scandal that enveloped Edmundo so upset Somoza that it may have triggered his heart attack in July 1977, after which he went off to the United States to recuperate. Edmundo soon left the police department, was promoted to brigadier general, and retired from the National Guard. Somoza then sent him off to Guatemala to be Nicaragua's ambassador.

It would be Edmundo's last assignment for Tachito.

On September 16, 1978, Ambassador Meneses was machine-gunned in Espana Park in Guatemala City, catching three bullets in his back. Two days later, as he clung to life in the Guatemala City Medical Center, a revolutionary group, the People's Guerrilla Army (EGP), claimed credit for the attempted assassination.

The EGP's communique described Meneses as being far more than a diplomat. According to the guerrillas, he was overseeing anti-Communist counterinsurgency operations all over Central America. "Meneses Cantarero enjoyed special privileges amongst Guatemala's authorities and army commanders," the guerrillas declared. "Exploiting his ambassadorial position in Guatemala as a smokescreen, he actually discharged the duties of coordinator between the Guatemalan army and the Nicaraguan National Guard, and also between Somoza and Guatemala's reactionary government. He coordinated political repression for all of Central America and the operations undertaken by the governments of this area against popular revolutionary movements." The EGP claimed that the ambassador was gunned down to "show solidarity with the struggle of the Sandinist National Liberation Front."

"The Sandinistas never forgave my brother Edmundo for the guerrillas of Pancasan," Santiago Meneses told *El Semanario* in 1996.

Edmundo Meneses lingered for another fifteen days before succumbing to his wounds. At his funeral, Somoza hailed him as a martyr in the worldwide struggle against communism.

The nature of Edmundo Meneses's relationship with the U.S. government is not clear. The CIA has refused to disclose any information about him, on grounds of national security. The State Department, incredibly, has claimed it can find no records that even mention his name, a stunning admission given Meneses's stature in the Somoza government—its chief law enforcement officer and ambassador to Guatemala.

In light of Edmundo's murder, Norwin figured the Sandinistas probably had the same fate in mind for him, and he left Nicaragua in early June 1979. He caught a flight to El Salvador, went to Ecuador for a while, then to Costa Rica—where he had businesses and at least six ranches—before finally emigrating to the United States in early 1980 and applying for political asylum. Meneses had homes in Florida and Alabama, he said, but spent most of his time in San Francisco, where he had begun buying property in 1978.

After the Sandinistas marched into Managua, the Bay Area—like Miami, Houston, and Los Angeles—saw a large influx of Nicaraguans who had supported Somoza. Not surprisingly, Contra support groups quickly popped up in those cities, and Meneses played a key role in getting the San Francisco organization going. "Even before the term 'Contra' was being used. . .there were meetings of 'anti-Sandinistas' at Meneses' house, which were attended by politicians, Somocistas, and other exiles interested in starting a counter-revolutionary movement," a DEA informant who knew Meneses told the Justice Department in 1997. Meneses posed as a successful businessman, purchasing a used car lot, a couple of commercial buildings, a travel agency, and a restaurant. He zipped around town in a gray Jaguar sedan. His nephews bought bars and nightclubs. Norwin purchased two houses in Pacifica, a small town just down the coast from San Francisco, one for himself and the other for his brother Ernesto.

He spent much time in San Francisco's Mission District, working out of a travel agency office owned by nephew Jaime Meneses. The Mission is a heavily Hispanic section of town, with a history of hospitality to Central American revolutionaries of all stripes. According to Roberto Vargas, a San Franciscan who later became the Sandinistas' ambassador to China, the Mission was home to several of the Sandinistas' future commandantes, who practiced their sharpshooting skills at rod and gun clubs down the coast.

Meneses's ability to freely travel in and out of the United States, buying properties, starting businesses, and applying for political asylum—all under his own name—speaks volumes about his lack of concern about attracting the attention of American law enforcement officials. "I even drove my own cars, registered in my name!" he boasted.

How someone with Meneses' record was ever allowed into the United States in the first place is still a mystery, and one that is likely never to be solved. The Justice Department's Inspector General tried in 1997 to figure out how Meneses was able "to come and go from the United States as frequently as he did" but found huge gaps in his immigration files. The IG didn't even try to explain how Meneses was able to obtain visas from U.S. Embassies while he was under active DEA and FBI investigation. It's entirely possible, though, that Uncle Sam was repaying some IOUs.

Meneses told the Justice Department he met with CIA agents shortly after the Sandinista takeover of Nicaragua to teach them how to cross his country's borders undetected, a claim that makes a certain amount of sense given Meneses' considerable expertise in that area. By 1986, Meneses was boasting that he had U.S. government agents escorting him across America's borders, a claim that—amazingly enough—was true, as we shall see.

The cocaine kingpin's easy access to U.S. shores becomes even more disconcerting when one considers just how much the federal government knew about him by then. He'd been turning up in law enforcement files with some regularity for nearly 20 years. In 1968 he was suspected of murdering a money changer in Managua and Nicaraguan authorities asked the CIA and FBI to search for him in San Francisco, where they assumed he'd fled. During their unsuccessful search, federal agents found records of other crimes Norwin had committed in San Francisco in the early 1960s: statutory rape, shoplifting, and "misuse of slot machines."

Court records show that the DEA first picked up word that Norwin was a drug dealer in 1974. By December 1976 its office in Costa Rica had identified him as a cocaine "source of supply" based in Managua.

The FBI became aware in April 1978 that Norwin and his brother Ernesto "were smuggling 20 kilos of cocaine at a time into the United States" and identified Norwin's nephew, Jaime Meneses, as their San Francisco distributor. The DEA learned that Meneses was dealing cocaine in Miami as well, bringing it into the country aboard commercial airliners.

The following year, the New Orleans DEA determined that Meneses was responsible for smuggling cocaine into that city also. The DEA's "Operation Alligator," as the sweep was called, resulted in the indictment of "numerous persons for smuggling cocaine. It was determined that Norwin Meneses was a source of supply for this group."

One of the men arrested in that DEA operation, Manuel Porro, would end up in Guatemala as a commander of the Legion of September 15 Contra army, and the CIA would link him repeatedly to criminal activities there. Nonetheless, he would go on to serve as a top aide to CIA agent Adolfo Calero, the political leader of the Contras, and would handle some of Calero's Caribbean banking activities.

By the fall of 1981, the time Blandón says Meneses recruited him to sell dope for the Contras, the DEA had Meneses under active investigation for cocaine trafficking and possible gun running. "The Drug Enforcement Administration has developed information over the past several years that the Meneses Family has been involved in the smuggling and distribution of cocaine in the San Francisco Bay Area," stated a November 1981 affidavit by DEA agent Sandra Smith.

Smith, who was one of the DEA's first female agents in San Francisco, recalled that her investigation of the Meneses family was "the only thing that I ever worked, in all the time I worked there, that I thought was really big. . .. In this business, if you have people coming in from Nicaragua bringing in cocaine and the rumor was they were taking guns back. . .that's sort of an interesting combination."

Starting in the late 1970s, Smith said, she began gathering string on the Meneses family, "putting together the comings and goings." She said Meneses was living in "a gorgeous house" in Burlingame, a ritzy suburb of San Francisco. Periodically, she and a Customs agent would stake out the house, sitting in the parking lot of a nearby elementary school and jotting down license numbers of cars seen pulling up

Meneses's thickly treed drive. "We really didn't have anybody on the inside," she said. "That was part of the problem."

The local San Francisco police were also running across various and sundry Meneseses, often in the company of large quantities of cocaine. Omar Meneses, another nephew, was arrested for cocaine sales at a bar in the Mission owned by nephew Jaime in June 1980. A month later nephew Roger Meneses was arrested with twenty pounds of cocaine and more than $8,800. That same month, Omar got busted again with a quarter pound of cocaine.

By mid-1981 Smith had put together enough information from her investigation and from the DEA's files to sketch out a fairly detailed portrait of a family steeped in drug trafficking. The Nicaraguan, it appeared, had cocaine coming in from everywhere. "Meneses had an endless supply of dope, from what I could see."

In June 1981, Smith got a break in her on-again, off-again investigation.

Detective Joseph Lee of the Baldwin Park police in southern California got a tip that a cocaine dealer in West Covina, a Nicaraguan named Julio Bermúdez (no relation to Enrique Bermúdez), was making two trips a month to San Francisco, "where he contacts a large cocaine smuggling organization headed by Norwin Meneses." The informant told Lee that Bermúdez was bringing down between fourteen and twenty pounds of cocaine on each trip. Another informant reported that Bermúdez called San Francisco and "places his order by telephone" before each trip.

The police subpoenaed Bermúdez's telephone records for the previous three months, and sure enough, they found fifty-one long-distance calls from Bermúdez's phone to a number in Daly City, a working-class suburb south of San Francisco. The number belonged to Norwin's nephew, Jairo Meneses.

It was enough for the Baldwin Park cops, along with members of the L.A. County Sheriff's Department and the U.S. Customs Service, to put a tail on Bermúdez and stake out his house at 1128 Greendale Street.

On November 12, 1981, Bermúdez left the house with a small beige suitcase and drove off in a 1972 Buick. The cops followed, observing him stop to pick up another man, Jose Herrera, before heading to the L.A. airport. The duo bought two one-way tickets to San Francisco on PSA Flight 425 and got there at 3:40 P.M., when DEA agent Smith picked up the surveillance.

Smith watched as the two traffickers were met outside the terminal by an unidentified Latino man driving a gold 1979 Toyota, a car registered to Herrera, one of the traffickers. They drove to a small house in Daly City, and the three men went inside. After a bit Bermúdez came out, opened the trunk, and got out the beige suitcase, which he placed behind the driver's seat; then he drove off.

Bermúdez managed to shake his tail in the traffic. Thirty-five minutes later, though, the cops spotted the car in another part of Daly City, parked outside Jairo Meneses's house. Bermúdez came out about two hours later and drove back to the first Daly City house.

The sequence of events provided the police with enough evidence to get a search warrant and they hit Bermúdez's house in West Covina two days later, catching the dealer with three pounds of cocaine—an enormous amount for the times—which Bermúdez promptly admitted he'd bought from Norwin Meneses. They also found $17,000 and a drug ledger bearing the entry: "11–11–81—$90,000 to Jairo." Bermúdez was hustled off to jail and Smith got a warrant for Jairo Meneses' house.

On November 16 the police hit Jairo's place and caught him with drugs and drug paraphernalia. They found a plastic bag containing Thai stick, a potent form of grass, an envelope containing $9,000, an O'Haus triple-beam scale—the kind favored by drug dealers—a 12-gauge shotgun, a .22-caliber pistol, and "miscellaneous pictures, address books, photographs and passports."

Convinced that the family was a major trafficking organization, Smith said she asked her supervisor if she could work the case full-time. The answer was not encouraging. "He said, 'Well, that sounds like a good idea. Who would run it?'" Smith recalled, laughing. "I think it was just that, being a female, my credibility was somewhat in question."

The investigation soon fell apart. Julio Bermúdez was released on bail and promptly skipped the country, never to be seen again. Once again, the San Francisco U.S. Attorney's office declined to pursue a case against Norwin or his nephew and the file was closed.

Smith said she never worked the Meneses family again. "They had me assigned to other things, like the Hell's Angels case, and I really didn't have enough time," she said. "This was a pretty big case to me, and I think had I been given free rein and some assistance and some time to do it, I think I could have really done something." But, she said, "I'm not so sure the DEA management took it seriously enough to allow me the time and the assistance I would have needed." She quit the DEA three years later.

Norwin Meneses said he was well aware that the DEA was after him in 1981, and came close to catching him during its investigation of Julio Bermúdez. He was in love with Bermúdez's sister, Patricia, at the time, and was often at the house in West Covina. The DEA, in fact, described Norwin as the owner of the three pounds of cocaine found with Bermúdez.

But the arrests of one of his distributors and his nephews didn't slow him down a bit. According to Blandón, the Meneses organization moved 900 kilos of cocaine—almost a ton—into the United States in 1981, about $54 million worth at wholesale prices.

Blandón accepted Meneses's pitch to become a cocaine salesman for the Contras, he said, after he and the drug kingpin took a trip down to Honduras for another "pep talk" from CIA agent Enrique Bermúdez. At a Contra camp near the Nicaraguan border, Bermúdez "told them of the trouble the FDN was having in raising funds and obtaining equipment," and he exhorted them to raise money for the counterrevolution. "He was in charge, okay, how to raise money in California."

Meneses confirmed Blandón's account of the meeting with the CIA agent, who was an old friend of the Meneses family. "I've known him since he was a lieutenant," Meneses said, adding that his brother Edmundo had been friends with Enrique Bermúdez even longer: "They'd known each other since childhood." Meneses, who was on an FDN fund-raising committee, said Bermúdez put Blandón in charge of raising money in southern California. Meneses raised funds in the Bay Area and also screened and recruited potential Contra soldiers from the Nicaraguans who'd emigrated to the United States.

Meneses became Bermúdez's intelligence and security adviser in California, he claimed; anyone recruited to fight for the Contras in Honduras had to pass his muster first, so the organization would be safe from Sandinista infiltrators. "It was an understanding between old friends," Meneses said of the job Bermúdez gave him. "Nobody would join the Contra forces down there without my knowledge and approval."

Blandón confirmed that, telling the CIA that Meneses's role in the FDN operation in California was "primarily that of a personnel recruiter for the group."

Adolfo Calero, the CIA agent who was the head of the Contras' political directorate, denied that the two cocaine traffickers had any official positions with the FDN. But Calero confirmed that Meneses had come to Honduras to meet with Bermúdez and had brought him a crossbow as a gesture of his esteem.

Another top Contra, former FDN director Edgar Chamorro, acknowledged that Meneses was involved with both the FDN and Bermúdez. "It was very early, when the Contras did not have as many supporters as later," Chamorro said. "Very early the Contras were trying all kinds of things to raise funds. This man [Meneses] was connected with the Contras of Bermúdez, because of the military kind of brotherhood among the Somoza military—the brotherhood of military minds."

Blandón insisted that Bermúdez never mentioned drug sales during his fund-raising pitch, but from Blandón's description of Bermúdez's instructions, that didn't appear necessary. The Contra commander apparently had a pretty good idea of what they were getting into. "There's a saying that the ends justify the means and that's what Mr. Bermúdez told us in Honduras, okay?" Blandón said. "So we started raising money to the Contra revolution." Blandón doubted that Bermúdez knew specifically they would sell cocaine to raise the cash, but Contra commander Eden Pastora has said it would be naive to think that Bermúdez didn't know he was asking drug dealers for financial assistance. It was well known in prerevolutionary Nicaragua "that [Meneses] was involved in illicit or dirty business," Pastora said. "He had hotels and it was also said that he was involved in the sale of cocaine. In those days, cocaine sales was not very common."

Besides, at that point Bermúdez's Contra group—the Legion of September 15—was already busily involved in cocaine smuggling and Bermúdez knew it, as did the CIA. In September 1981, Langley was informed by cable that the Legion's "leadership had made a decision to engage in drug smuggling to the United States in order to finance its anti-Sandinista operations." The cable said Bermúdez reportedly had advised against the idea but apparently he hadn't objected too strenuously; the CIA cable reported that a successful "trial run" had already taken place. Langley was informed that a suitcase full of cocaine was smuggled onto a commercial airliner in July 1981 by a Legion officer, who then sold the dope in Miami and gave the profits to another Legion commander.

The CIA's Inspector General found no evidence that the CIA officials running the Contra program then did a thing about it.

At their meeting with Bermúdez, Blandón said, Bermúdez asked if he and Meneses "could assist in the procurement of weapons." In court testimony, Blandón called it "a mission" that took them to Costa Rica to "contact some people to get some connections from where to construct the Contra revolution. . .. We have to get in contact with someone that was going to—we were going to give some money to buy some weapons."

The trip had an inauspicious start, Blandón later told the CIA.

"Both he and Meneses were escorted to Tegucigalpa airport by armed Contras," a summary of his CIA interview states. "Unbeknownst to Bermúdez and the Contras, Blandón says, he was carrying $100,000 in drug proceeds to be used in [a] Bolivian drug deal. In the process of departing the airport, Blandón was stopped and detained by Honduran officials. Blandón states that his Contra escorts, seeing that Blandón had been detained with money, assumed that Blandón had been given the funds by Bermúdez to purchase arms for the Contras. As a result, the Contras interceded on Blandón's behalf, effected the return of the money, and secured Blandón's release."

In doing so, Blandón said, "the Contra escorts told the Honduran airport authorities that Blandón and Meneses were Contras. Blandón states he was allowed to leave the next morning and that he then joined Meneses, who had not been detained and who had been allowed to travel to Guatemala."

They were unable to contact the arms dealers they were looking for, Blandón said, and he returned to California with Meneses to begin his career in the cocaine business.

Meneses didn't simply hand him the dope. He brought Blandón to San Francisco for a two-day seminar on the intricacies of drug dealing. "Mr. Meneses explained to me how I, you know, how to see. . .the quality, how they sell it by the ounce, by kilo," Blandón said. Meneses also showed him how to transport the drug undetected in pickup trucks by putting the cocaine in "the compartment of the door, the driver's side door." Meneses brought in a one-eyed Nicaraguan exile, Raul "El Tuerto" Vega, as a transportation consultant. Vega, who lived in L.A., was an old hand at driving dope cars for Meneses, and "Norwin wanted that I went with Raul Vega to show me how to drive, how to do it because he used to work more often."

Meneses was a fount of advice on how to avoid problems, Blandón explained. He told Blandón not to give out cocaine on credit; "Don't this, don't do a lot of things. But I didn't know to whom to sell it. But he told me go and visit a few people and I start." Meneses gave him two kilos of cocaine—worth about $60,000 each at the time—and the names of some customers in Los Angeles, and told him to hit the streets. The cocaine was provided at no cost, but with the understanding that Blandón would pay Meneses back out of the profits.

When Blandón began doing this is a matter of some conjecture. Blandón insists that he didn't actually sell his first ounce of cocaine until early in 1982. But others who knew him at the time say he was dealing drugs in L.A. much earlier. Still others insist Blandón, like Meneses, was already a trafficker back in Somoza's Nicaragua, before the Sandinista revolution.

The Torres brothers would later tell the FBI that Blandón picked up his two kilos from Meneses in 1980. "Shortly after Blandón moved to the Los Angeles area Blandón was introduced to Norwin Menesis [sic] in the San Francisco, California, area by Donald Barrios," Jacinto Torres told the FBI. "In approximately 1980, Danilo Blandón, Frank Vigal [sic] and Douglas Diaz travelled to the San Francisco area where they obtained two kilograms of cocaine from Menesis. Blandón, Vigal and Diaz returned to the Los Angeles area where they had thirty days to sell the cocaine."

Frank Vigil is a Contra supporter who had worked as a public relations director for Norwin Meneses in one of Norwin's nightclubs in Managua. Though he admits being in Los Angeles in 1980, he denies traveling with Blandón to meet with Meneses or selling cocaine himself, although he says he knew Blandón was doing it. Blandón has identified Diaz as a man who would drive Meneses's cocaine to L.A. occasionally, but he said Diaz was not with him during his training period at Norwin's house.

Blandón's wife's uncle, economist Orlando Murillo, also agrees that Blandón was selling drugs for Meneses before 1982. "I was in Costa Rica and Chepita called me and said, 'I have serious problems with Danilo,'" Murillo recalled. Chepita told him they'd started a small business, but that Danilo was dealing drugs and had gotten in debt to Meneses, who was now pressing her for the money. "I sent her another $5,000," Murillo said. He acknowledged that his money was probably used to pay off Meneses, but said Chepita "is my niece and my only relative. And Danilo is a very dangerous man. So I help her when I can."

Murillo placed the call from his frantic niece in "1981, February or January."

One DEA informant told the Justice Department that Blandón was a drug dealer even before he came to the United States, and had known Meneses for years, long before meeting up with him at LAX that day. Longtime Meneses employee Rafael Cornejo claimed that Blandón and Meneses "knew each other back in Nicaragua before the war. Danilo was sort of in the background of the group that hung around with Mundo. I'd see him at parties sometimes."

In an interview with journalist Georg Hodel, former Sandinista leader Moises Hassan—who is related to Blandón's mother-in-law, Vilma Pena Alvarez—said Blandón "was involved with drugs and contraband prior to the Sandinista takeover." Hassan had known Blandón since college, where Blandón was a student activist on behalf of Somoza's Liberal party.

The DEA, in a sworn statement filed in San Diego federal court, corroborated Hassan's statements. In a sealed search warrant affidavit filed in May 1992, DEA agent Chuck Jones wrote, "Blandón fled Nicaragua after the Samoza [sic] regime was deposed. Blandón had been a cocaine trafficker in Nicaragua prior to the fall of Samoza [sic] but had enjoyed protection through family political influence. Since about 1982, Blandón has been a cocaine trafficker in the United States."

At the time Jones made that statement, he was Blandón's case agent. Four years later, though, when defense attorneys accused federal prosecutors of hiding Jones's revealing affidavit from them, Agent Jones would suddenly remember that it wasn't Blandón he'd been referring to when he prepared the affidavit to search his storage locker. No, he claimed, he'd confused Blandón's background with Meneses's.

Regardless of when Blandón's career as a cocaine trafficker began, by the time he says he started selling drugs for the Contras, they were no longer just a ragtag group running around the jungles on their own. They were, by early 1982, the property of the Central Intelligence Agency.

"I never sent cash"

Between July 1979 and March 1981, Somoza's exiled supporters had made little headway in putting together any kind of organized opposition.

It wasn't for lack of trying. It was for lack of money.

The Legion of September 15—the hundred or so ex-*Guardia* men hiding out in Guatemala—survived through thievery and contract killings. Another group of exiles coalesced in Miami, calling themselves the National Democratic Union (UDN), which had a small armed branch in Honduras called the Revolutionary Armed Forces of Nicaragua (FARN). Both the legion and this second group—UDN-FARN—tapped into Miami's Cuban community, drawing financial support and volunteers from the rabidly anti-Communist Cubans, including men who had worked with the CIA on the Bay of Pigs operation in the 1960s.

The union of the Nicaraguan and Cuban exile communities in Miami was an obvious marriage. The Nicaraguans hated Daniel Ortega and the Sandinistas almost as much as the Cubans hated Fidel Castro. Castro had been giving the Sandinistas aid and comfort since the mid-1970s. After the war, Cuba provided key advisers to the Sandinistas on how best to beef up their own army and, most of all, their intelligence services.

As the Cubans had learned from twenty years of covert war with the United States and the CIA, the best defense against subversion was information. Who were your enemies? Who were the infiltrators? What were they planning?

The combination of the Cubans' advice and the Sandinistas' own experiences at the hands of Somoza's secret police led them to build an efficient and deadly secret police unit inside the Ministry of the Interior.

The Sandinistas made it difficult for any organized opposition to take root inside Nicaragua. As a result, the Contras were forced to rely on help from outsiders—exiles, many impoverished by their flight, and foreign governments. The first donation of military supplies appears to have come from the Miami group UDN-FARN in the fall of 1980. Its members scraped together enough money to buy a couple boxes of rifles from Miami sporting goods stores and a little radio equipment, which was boxed up and mailed to Honduras.

The crates were sent to the head of the Honduran national police, Gustavo Álvarez, an ardent anti-Communist who took up the Nicaraguans' cause. Álvarez saw that the guns from Miami got to the soldiers, who were still learning how to march and drill.

Meanwhile, Bermúdez and other ex-*Guardia* officers with the Legion of September 15 made the rounds of South America's military governments, seeking donations to the cause. They found much sympathy but little cash.

One of the places they visited was Argentina. At that time, Argentina's military dictatorship was one of the most brutal in the world, and its generals were regarded as pariahs even by other military regimes in Latin America. The generals there had a deal for them.

A radio station in Costa Rica was broadcasting unpleasant news about the Argentinian military government, accusing it—correctly, as it turned out—of murdering political opponents and nonpolitical citizens alike by the thousands, sometimes by dropping them out of helicopters or burying them alive. The radio station was getting on the generals' nerves. If the Nicaraguans were serious about fighting their way back into power, the Argentines said, a little demonstration of their sincerity might not hurt. Why didn't they try to put Radio Noticias del Continente out of the broadcasting business?

The legion agreed to take care of the radio station and infiltrated a sapper team into Costa Rica, hitting the station about two in the morning on December 13, 1980. But the raiders didn't find the target quite as easy as they expected. Earlier Argentine military attempts to close it down—air-dropping drums of homemade napalm onto the station's roof, for instance—had caused the broadcasters to beef up their security. When the legion unit arrived, they found themselves attacking a pillbox. The raiding team was met by a hail of machine-gun fire and beat a hasty retreat, barely managing to toss a Molotov cocktail at a storage shed. Some were killed. On the way out the survivors were arrested by the Costa Rican police. All in all, it was a disaster.

But the Contras got a lucky break from the American political system that November. Jimmy Carter—whom the Contras despised for abandoning Somoza—was beaten in the November elections. A new team was coming to town, a different administration led by Ronald Reagan and George Bush, and it had a different outlook on what was happening in Central America.

When Reagan and Bush looked at Nicaragua, they didn't see a populist uprising against a hated and corrupt dictatorship, as did most of the world. They saw another Cuba taking root in their backyard, another clique of Communists who would spread their noxious seeds of dissent and discord throughout the region. And when they looked at the Contras, they didn't see the remnants of Somoza's brutal *Guardia*, or mercenaries doing hired killings and robberies. They saw plucky bands of freedom fighters.

Things couldn't have been clearer.

Within days of taking office, Reagan froze all aid to the Sandinista government. In March 1981 he authorized the CIA to begin exploring ways of undermining the Sandinistas and halting their shipments of arms to rebel groups in El Salvador, with whom the Sandinistas were ideologically aligned. CIA agents fanned out across the United States and Central America to begin taking stock of the scattered pockets of anti-Sandinista groups. They also began doling out money indirectly, to help keep the shoestring organizations afloat financially.

The Argentine military, which had been given the cold shoulder by the Carter administration, also noticed Washington's fresh new outlook. And they figured, quite correctly, that one sure way to get back into America's good graces was to help the Contras out. The next time the Contras came calling, in the spring of 1981, the Argentines were glad to see them, despite their bungled job on the radio station.

"We were practically official guests," former UDN-FARN commander William Baltodano Herrera told an interviewer in 1984. "The government took charge of everything. We were driven everywhere, invited out everywhere and we didn't have to pay for anything."

When it was time to go, the Argentines slipped Bermúdez's legion $30,000 and gave UDN-FARN $50,000, but Baltodano said the money "was just to cover absolute necessities. One can hardly build a movement with $50,000. We could pay for our trip with that money."

By mid-1981 Argentine military advisers were secretly slipping into Honduras and Miami to teach the exiles how to run a guerrilla war. Dozens of Nicaraguans were also taken to Argentina for training at special schools there. Because of the secrecy attached, the Nicaraguans weren't let outside the safe house where their training was taking place. "It was in Buenos Aires, in a residential district about half an hour from Ezeiza airport," former Legion of September 15 member Pedro Javier Nunez Cabezas recalled in a 1985 interview. "The training was purely theoretical, there was no practical instruction. We were taught theories of espionage, counterespionage, interrogation techniques, beating techniques, how to lead troops and psychological warfare. . .. I didn't see anything of Buenos Aires." After the training, Nunez said, the legion "divided us up into working groups and handed out various assignments. A couple of the groups travelled to Miami."

Working closely with the Argentine trainers were General Álvarez's Honduran police, which helped the CIA covertly funnel supplies to the fledgling Contra units. Once again, Norwin Meneses can be found lurking in the background. His nephew, Jairo, confessed to federal prosecutors that he'd gone to Honduras in 1982 on behalf of Uncle Norwin "to negotiate terms of an agreement with officers of the National Military Police." Under that deal, cocaine seized by Honduran authorities would be sold to Meneses, who would smuggle the drugs out in automobiles bound for the U.S. "Approximately 10 to 20 kilograms per month were imported in this manner," Jairo Meneses reported. If that little conspiracy between Meneses and the Honduran government ever resulted in an investigation by a police agency, it is not apparent in the CIA or Justice Department files released thus far.

Outside Miami, Cuban Bay of Pigs veterans put up training camps for the Contras' new recruits and invited the press in to witness the Nicaraguans being drilled by former Green Berets. Other training camps were reported to have been set up in California and Texas, but little information about their locations and operations has emerged.

For the most part, however, the Contras were still disorganized, barely qualifying as an army. When the CIA got involved in early 1981, its first project became uniting the various groups under one umbrella. As things stood, the bands were too small to be taken seriously as a military threat, and dealing with them separately was too difficult for the CIA.

Enrique Bermúdez was persuaded to move his Legion of September 15 from Guatemala to Tegucigalpa, Honduras, where the CIA was sending in dozens of new agents and operatives. The agency pressured the Miami-based UDN-FARN group to link up with Bermúdez's men and form a new resistance group, to add yet another degree of separation from past image problems that might detract from the freedom fighter persona the Reagan administration was creating. "The gringos made no secret of the fact that if we wanted support from them, we'd first have to join forces," said former legion member Pedro Nunez.

The problem was that the two Contra groups hated each other.

UDN-FARN's commander, Fernando "El Negro" Chamorro, was a rabble-rouser who had fought for the Sandinistas against Somoza and attained immortality by helping to shoot a couple rockets at Somoza's bunker from the roof of the nearby Intercontinental Hotel in 1974. He was also known to have a drinking problem and a questionable work ethic, and he hadn't managed well within the new Sandinista government. Eventually, he broke completely with the ruling Sandinistas and drifted down to Costa Rica to join his older brother, Edmundo Chamorro, another former Sandinista. Together the Chamorro brothers became the military leaders of UDN-FARN.

The Chamorros' Contra group, with its connections to the Miami Cubans, was actually further along in developing an organized, regional opposition force than Bermúdez's scruffy legionnaires. Though based in Costa Rica, UDN-FARN had established a small military camp in Honduras at the Cuban-owned Hacienda El Pescado, just outside the capital city of Tegucigalpa. "At that time, the UDN-FARN had the best connections with the Honduran capital and with the Honduran military and government," said former UDN-FARN commander Baltodano.

Baltodano's group wanted nothing to do with Bermúdez's brutish outfit, resisting the CIA's desire that it join forces with the legion. The Chamorros regarded many of the ex-*Guardia* men of the legion to be war criminals who could never win popular support back home. "The Legion was entirely composed of ex-National Guards. Naturally one couldn't make a big splash with that in Nicaragua," Baltodano said. There were also indications that Bermúdez was personally corrupt. In 1981 a group of legion officers voted to expel him from the organization for misuse of funds and lying. The mutiny was put down by

Bermúdez's Argentine backers.

The CIA eventually got its way. After top CIA officials met with their allies in the Honduran military, the Hondurans withdrew their support of the Chamorros' group and backed Bermúdez's legion instead. If UDN-FARN wanted to stay in the Contra business, it would have to merge with Bermúdez's ex-*Guardia* men.

And if it didn't want to merge—well, it would merge anyway.

An odd kind of "unity" meeting was held in August 1981 in the upstairs rec room of the legion's rented safe house in Guatemala City. With an Argentine military officer looking on, Bermúdez signed a one-paragraph document stating that the Legion of September 15 and UDN-FARN "agree to join efforts and constitute a single organization that will be called the Nicaraguan Democratic Forces (FDN) in order to fight against the Sandinistas."

The Chamorro brothers boycotted the meeting rather than sit in the same room with Bermúdez, which was fine with Bermúdez, who regarded the Chamorros as closet Communists.

The legion moved to Honduras, and the FDN was officially born. Quickly the UDN-FARN Contras were pushed into the background and assigned to subordinate roles. The top jobs were filled by Bermúdez and his murderous crew from the Legion of September 15. "By choosing to support Colonel Bermúdez and the FDN over other Contra factions, the United States threw in its lot with the single most detested group of Nicaraguans," former *New York Times* reporter Stephen Kinzer, who covered the Contras, wrote in 1991. "American planners never seemed to grasp the simple fact that Nicaraguans hated the National Guard and would never support an insurgency directed by ex-Guardsmen."

The CIA's role in the FDN's creation—hidden at the time—was spelled out by former FDN director Edgar Chamorro in an affidavit filed with the World Court in the Hague in 1985. Chamorro, a former advertising executive and distant relative of the UDN-FARN Chamorro brothers, said the CIA paid for the meeting, rented the building, and drafted the agreement. "The name of the organization, the members of the political junta and the members of the general staff were all chosen or approved by the CIA."

As luck would have it, the CIA selected another one of Norwin Meneses's friends to assist Bermúdez in running the FDN: Aristides Sanchez, a wealthy landowner whose brother Fernando had been Somoza's last ambassador to Guatemala after Edmundo Meneses was assassinated. Another Sanchez brother, Troilo, had been one of Norwin's friends and business partners in Managua. And yet another brother, Enrique, was partners in a Miami restaurant with Danilo Blandón's "friend from Miami," Donald Barrios, the man Blandón claims introduced him to Norwin Meneses.

Like Bermúdez, Aristides Sanchez went on the CIA's payroll and began reporting daily to his CIA overseers. Together, Bermúdez and Sanchez would become the heart and soul of the military side of the Contra organization. (The political side was left to CIA agent Adolfo Calero, the former manager of the Coca-Cola bottling plant in Managua, who also worked closely with Aristides Sanchez. Oliver North later called Sanchez "Calero's hatchet man.")

Though the FDN would change and merge with other groups over the years, the Bermúdez-Sanchez alliance stood unchanged, thanks largely to the backing of the CIA. "Sanchez became one of the Contras' top political and military strategists, plotting logistics, buying supplies and delivering weapons," wrote the *Miami Herald* in his 1993 obituary. Throughout the 1980s, Sanchez was consistently described in the press as the Contras' supply chief. Norwin Meneses explained that when he was buying and delivering weapons and supplies to the FDN, "I dealt directly with Bermúdez, and occasionally his assistant on minor things. I also worked with Aristides Sanchez. He was a very good friend of mine."

By November 1981 the Contra project was far enough along that the CIA moved to make its sponsorship of the FDN official. President Ronald Reagan was presented with a document known as National Security Decision Directive #17, which served as a blueprint for the U.S. government's plan to overthrow the Sandinista government. It called for the CIA to conduct a variety of covert operations—

military and political—against the Sandinistas and asked for $19.95 million to do it with. The document made it clear that it was only a start. "More funds and manpower" would be needed later.

It was obvious to anyone that the CIA's $19 million wasn't going to go very far if a serious paramilitary operation was being planned. The paucity of the allocation, in fact, was used by former CIA deputy director Admiral Bobby Inman to ridicule a reporter's suggestion that the CIA was financing a Contra war machine. "I would suggest to you that $19 million or $29 million isn't going to buy you much of any kind these days, and certainly not against that kind of military force," Inman told a press briefing in 1982.

The covert operations, according to Reagan's directive, would be conducted "primarily through non-Americans." In particularly delicate situations, the agency would send in UCLAs—Unilaterally Controlled Latino Assets—to do the dirty work. That way, if any of them got caught, Langley could throw up its hands and insist it had no idea what was going on.

Reagan approved the intelligence finding, and in December 1981 he sent CIA director William Casey to present Congress with it, saying that the covert operations planned for Nicaragua were in the interest of U.S. national security. Under the law, a "finding" from the president and congressional notification was required if a major covert operation was being planned.

From that point on, the Contras were the CIA's responsibility. From late 1981 through most of 1984, the agency ran the show directly, doling out weapons and money, hiring subcontractors, ferrying supplies, planning strategy and tactics, and keeping tabs on its hirelings. As the Nicaraguans soon learned, their role was to fight and to obey orders. Someone else, usually an American CIA agent or an Argentine military trainer, would do the thinking for them. One order the Nicaraguans were repeatedly given was to vehemently deny any connection to the CIA.

Bermúdez played that role to the hilt, angrily brushing off any press suggestions that the U.S. government had a hand in running the FDN. "We would never accept the role of American mercenary," Bermúdez huffed.

Former FDN director Edgar Chamorro claimed that CIA advisers prepped them for their press conferences and told them to deny they had received any money from the U.S. government. "It was particularly important that we deny having met with any U.S. government officials," Chamorro recounted in his book *Packaging the Contras*.

Blandón said that when he began selling drugs for the FDN in Los Angeles, he was aware the U.S. government had somehow become involved with his organization but saw no direct evidence of it himself. "Maybe in the principal office in Honduras they were helping, but, no, because we were being helped by the Argentina people at that time," Blandón said.

To further insulate themselves from the Contras, CIA officials worked out a deal with the Argentine and Honduran generals. The Americans would supply the cash if the Argentines would supply the training and military advisers. The Hondurans would provide the clandestine bases from which the Contras would operate. As their part of the deal, both countries would get a lot better treatment—increased foreign aid and military support—from the U.S. government.

This tripartite agreement, however, did nothing to ease the financial woes of the Contra commanders. The $19 million in CIA money that Reagan had approved did not go to the Contras. In fact, they saw very little of it. Nearly all of that money was channeled through the Argentine military, both to preserve the CIA's "deniability" and to make sure the Argentines retained some semblance of control over the Nicaraguans. In essence, the CIA was paying the Argentine military to run its covert war. When the Contras needed cash, they had to go begging it from the haughty Argentines.

"They handled all the money. The Nicaraguans—from Bermúdez, needing several hundred dollars for the rent on the Tegucigalpa safe houses, to a foot soldier on leave in the capital, asking for a couple of bucks to see a movie—had to get it from the Argentines," journalist Glenn Garvin, a Contra sympathizer, wrote in 1992. "That was just one of the ways, some subtle and some anything but, that the Argentines let it be known that they were in charge."

While the Contras were forced to beg for scraps, the Argentines were being paid $2,500 and $3,000 a month, "some just for sitting around at a desk cutting up newspapers," said Argentine adviser Hector Frances. Frances described "multi-million dollar purchases carried out by the Argentinian advisors in Honduras. . .furniture, equipment, tools, and office equipment; million-dollar purchases from a pharmacy near the Hotel Honduras Maya. . .where in a few months, the owner made himself a multi-millionaire, and also multi-million dollar accounts rung up at the Hotel Honduras Maya, where the Argentinian advisors lived for almost six months, occupying nearly an entire wing of the hotel." That the Contras had to grovel for handouts from the high-living Argentines rankled mightily. And though the Americans had promised to start sending guns, ammo, and equipment, it would be nearly a year before those supplies began arriving.

It was against that backdrop that Meneses and Blandón had been called to Honduras to meet with Enrique Bermúdez, where they were told by the new FDN commander to raise money in California. It is understandable that they would have translated this to mean, by any means necessary. After all, crime had ensured the survival of Bermúdez's legion in Guatemala.

And what was a little cocaine trafficking when compared to kidnappings and contract killings?

Danilo Blandón's first illegal Contra fund-raising efforts met with the same lack of success as had his legal rallies and parties, he said; the two kilos Meneses had given him to sell weren't moving because he knew nothing about the cocaine business.

"Well, it took me about three months or four months to sell those two keys because I don't know what to do," Blandón said. "Meneses told me, 'You go to—with two customers.' That wasn't enough, you know? Because in those days, two keys was too heavy."

Jacinto Torres, Blandón's large Nicaraguan car dealer friend, told the FBI that Blandón was unable to unload all the cocaine Meneses had dumped on him. "Torres stated that Blandón and the others only sold a few ounces of the two kilos to someone in the San Diego area. They gave the rest of the unsold cocaine to Raul Vega" (the one-eyed driver for Meneses who had helped train Blandón in San Francisco), the 1992 FBI report said.

"Mr. Meneses was pushing me every—every week, you know, 'What's going on?'" So Blandón said he had to turn to friends and acquaintances in the automobile business to cultivate customers. "I started getting some people," he said, but his cocaine deals were still small potatoes, selling only "ounces, ounces and grams at that time. . .. It's only for the money that we had to send. We start sending trucks, pickups, to the Contra revolution. We started sending clothes, medicines at that time."

He told CIA inspectors that he bought a pickup truck and "filled it with medical supplies and radios and turned it over to others to drive to Central America. He says that the truck was, in fact, later used by the FDN in Honduras." Between 1981 and 1982, he said, he also provided several thousand dollars in drug profits to finance the FDN's wing in Los Angeles. The drug money "was used to support the operating expenses—plane tickets, rent, office supplies, etc." Meneses was doing the same, Blandón said, estimating his in-kind contributions at about $40,000.

Most of the money he made from cocaine sales, Blandón said, was turned over to Meneses. How it got from Meneses to the Contras "was Meneses' problem, not mine. I give the money to Meneses. I bought some cars or whatever, some pickups, but the money, we gave him the money. . .. I bought a lot of things, but I never sent cash."

Cash deliveries to the Contras, it turned out, were being handled by someone else—the unidentified Latin male whom DEA agent Sandra Smith had seen pick up two cocaine traffickers from L.A. at the San Francisco airport and drive to a modest row house in Daly City. And Agent Smith's gut feelings about the Meneses drug ring had been right on target. She'd discovered the first direct evidence of a Contra drug pipeline into California.

"God, Fatherland and Freedom"

In the fall of 1981, before his troubles began, Carlos Augusto Cabezas Ramirez was living, breathing proof that America could still be the land of opportunity for anyone willing to roll up his sleeves and work. The chubby thirty-five-year-old had always been willing to work his way to where he wanted to go. In Nicaragua, by the age of fourteen he was helping his mother support nine brothers and sisters. In 1970 he went to the United States, where he spent four years studying to become a commercial pilot, working nights as a janitor to support himself. He took his pilot's license back to Nicaragua and joined the National Guard, flying for Somoza's army and managing a crop-dusting company on the side.

Later Cabezas enrolled in the National University of Nicaragua, got an accounting degree, and was hired by the Bank of America. He became head of the Managua branch's foreign division, supervising seven employees in the sleek blue-and-white skyscraper that was the country's only high-rise office building. He got a law degree next, becoming a licensed attorney in 1978 and setting up a practice in Managua. But the next year, when the Sandinistas were on the outskirts of the capital, Cabezas was recalled to active duty as a fighter pilot. An ardent anti-Communist, he was happy to defend Somoza's government against the Sandinistas.

Near the end of the war, when the *Guardia* was desperately striking out at every perceived enemy, Cabezas took part in the terror bombings of the city of Masaya, something he still doesn't like to talk about.

On July 15, 1979, four days before the shooting stopped, Carlos Cabezas caught the last flight out of Managua. He came to San Francisco, where his wife, three young daughters, his mother, his brothers, and his sisters were already living. With a family to support, Cabezas needed a job—fast. He hired on as a sales agent for the Lincoln Insurance Company in San Francisco. He also took a second job as a night janitor at San Francisco's Hilton Hotel. In 1980, after only a year on the job, the Lincoln Insurance Company named him Sales Agent of the Year. He was given a plaque with an engraving of Abraham Lincoln on it, a prize he still proudly shows off to visitors at his tiny law office in Managua.

By 1981 his hard work was paying off. He sold his car, his wife Angela sold some jewelry, and, throwing in some savings, they scared up $10,000, enough for a down payment on a small row house in Daly City. In just two years he'd gone from being a homeless refugee to owning a piece of the American dream.

When time permitted, Cabezas did legal research for a couple of lawyers, mainly to keep his skills in tune. That work made him realize how much he missed the practice of law and the income that came with it. To be a lawyer in California, though, he would have to go back to law school and study for the grueling California bar exam. With a family to support, a $1,200-a-month mortgage, and two jobs, Cabezas couldn't think of any way to do it, until he thought of his ex-brother-in-law, Julio Zavala.

Two years older and recently divorced from Cabezas's sister Maritza, Zavala had plenty of money. Once Cabezas had been at Zavala's house when a friend of Julio's named Nestor Arana came by lugging a suitcase. It was full of cash, neatly wrapped and stacked. Zavala told the goggle-eyed Cabezas that part of his job involved taking money to Miami, and he was paying Arana to do it for him. Cabezas had asked if Zavala needed any help, but the inquiry was gently brushed aside.

The more Cabezas thought about it, the more it seemed that Julio Zavala was his ticket out of the dilemma he was in. If he could persuade Zavala to give him a loan, Cabezas figured he could quit his jobs long enough to go to law school and pass the bar. So in October 1981 he called Zavala and asked if he could come over and talk to him about an idea he had. Zavala said sure. And at that moment, Carlos Cabezas was screwed.

The reason Julio Zavala had so much money is because he was a cocaine dealer, and a fairly busy one at that. He wasn't anywhere near Norwin Meneses's global perch, but few were. Zavala was solidly midlevel. He sold kilos and ounces to street-level dealers, who then sold grams to users. For several years he'd been buying directly from a Colombian in San Francisco and a Nicaraguan in Miami, picking up a kilo for around $54,000 and turning it over for up to $68,000, more if he ounced it out. Business had been good. The day Cabezas called him, however, Julio Zavala was a worried man. Bad things had been happening all around him, and he was starting to get nervous.

His problems stemmed from some loose talk last spring in the lockup at the San Francisco County Jail.

Local DEA agents had busted several people in South San Francisco for possession of a half-kilo of cocaine. One of the women arrested was a Contra fund-raiser named Doris Salomon. She and a codefendant, Lilliana Blengino, were cooling their heels in the jail when Salomon ruefully mentioned that the cocaine they'd been busted over wasn't even hers. It had belonged to her boyfriend, Noel.

A month later, DEA agent Luis Lupin stopped by Blengino's house to see if she could be of some assistance to the authorities. Blengino didn't know much, she told Lupin, but Doris Salomon did say that she'd gotten the coke from her boyfriend, some guy named Noel. Lupin made a note of the name and filed it away.

When Salomon appeared in federal court five months later for a bail hearing, she made a passing reference to a boyfriend, a fellow named Julio Zavala. Agent Lupin, sitting in the courtroom, perked up. Could Julio Zavala be this "Noel" character that Blengino had told him about?

The agent hurried over to the jail and asked to see the visitors' log for the time Doris Salomon had been there. Bingo. Julio Zavala had come to see her three times in a span of eleven days. Unless she had more than one boyfriend while she was in jail, Zavala had to be Noel, Salomon's source of supply.

Checking with the San Francisco Police Department, Lupin discovered that Zavala, a Nicaraguan immigrant, was no angel. Just a month before Salomon was arrested, Zavala and another man had been nabbed trying to bust into a woman's apartment, allegedly to collect a drug debt from her husband. She called the police, and when the irate dealers were hustled out to the curb, the cops found five ounces of cocaine in the Cadillac that Zavala had parked outside. To be precise, it wasn't actually Zavala's Caddy—it had been stolen in Florida and presented to him as a gift from his Miami cocaine connection.

Lupin noticed that the other man arrested with Zavala that day, Edmundo Rocha, had been one of those pinched with Doris Salomon a month later. And there in Rocha's wallet the police had found a slip of paper with "Julio 349–2790" written on it. It was a small world. The DEA started an investigation.

That was the way Zavala's luck had been going all year.

He'd been busted twice, his girlfriend had been busted, his friend Mundo Rocha had been busted twice. The charges against Zavala had been dropped each time, but he didn't like the odds of it happening again. Zavala was moving a lot of cocaine. He had customers in Miami, Los Angeles, Chicago, and San Francisco. He was also making inroads into Oakland's black community, selling to a couple of African-American dealers there. Unfortunately, the growth of his business was making it increasingly difficult for him to disguise what he was doing.

When asked, Zavala said he worked as a buyer for some supermarkets in Costa Rica, which helped cover his frequent travels to Miami and Central America. But that story didn't explain why the telephone in his apartment in San Mateo never stopped ringing, or the steady stream of people who came and went at all hours. What he needed to do was fade into the background for a while and lower his profile. Let someone else take the heat.

So when Carlos Cabezas came around with his hand out, Zavala didn't give him the brush like the last time. This time, he listened.

Cabezas told him of his plans to become a lawyer in the United States, "because I knew that there was no way for me to go back to my country since the revolution had taken over the power." He told Zavala that "in order for me to go to law school, I have to become a full-time student and I couldn't, you know, catch up if I was working two jobs."

Zavala appeared sympathetic, and when Cabezas was through, he "said he was going to help me to finance some and support my family since I had to quit my job." He couldn't actually give him a loan, he said, but if it was time and money Cabezas was after, Zavala had a suggestion: Come work for me. He could make as much as he did at both of his present jobs put together, and then some. Plus, he could do it in his spare time. It was the perfect job for him.

"He said I was going to be delivering cocaine and collecting money so he can stay a little bit cool," Cabezas would later testify. "At that time Mr. Zavala was having problems himself with some legal problems. And he said, 'I was lucky that the charge was dismissed and I don't want to get myself in this transaction, so I want you to work for me. I trust you. And then, you know, the heat is going, it would be off me for awhile.'"

Zavala told Cabezas he'd pay him $500 for each kilo of cocaine he delivered, plus a percentage of the drug debts he collected. And there was an added bonus that Zavala knew Cabezas would like, given his former brother-in-law's feelings about the Sandinistas: some of the cocaine they sold would help to finance the Contras.

So Carlos Cabezas, who'd been a lawyer, an accountant, a pilot, an insurance salesman, a banker, a janitor, and a crop duster, became a cocaine dealer for a while.

At first he stayed around the San Francisco area, running errands, meeting Zavala's customers, delivering a few kilos here and there. The work was easy, Cabezas found, and the money was very good. One of his first errands had been to pick up a gold Toyota and drive it to the airport, where he was to meet a couple of Julio's friends from L.A. and bring them into town. Cabezas agreed to put them up at his house for the couple of days they would be around.

That was when Carlos Cabezas first drew the attention of the federal government.

As part of her investigation into the Meneses drug ring, DEA agent Sandra Smith was watching when Cabezas arrived at the airport to pick up the two L.A. dealers she'd been tailing. When Cabezas drove them back to his little row house in Daly City, 8 Bellevue Avenue was added to the government's list of potential wiretap locations. Within two months the FBI had joined the chase. Scattered among Zavala's customers, the bureau had at least four confidential informants who were giving them chapter and verse: when the cocaine loads were arriving, when the couriers were coming and going, how much cocaine Zavala and Cabezas were selling, how much money was leaving the country. The evidence that the two Nicaraguans were involved in a major cocaine trafficking network piled up fast.

A recently declassified CIA Inspector General's report shows that the Agency had been wise to Zavala since 1980. That year a CIA operative reported that Zavala was supplying drugs to a Nicaraguan official who was a drug addict. The operative would keep the Agency apprised of Zavala's activities for years. In addition, the CIA has admitted that a relative of one of the people involved in the drug ring was working for the CIA at the time.

To Zavala, blissfully unaware of the gathering storm, it seemed as if things were finally looking up.

Hiring Cabezas had been a stroke of genius. The customers liked him. He was dependable, a hard worker, and would probably start bringing in some customers of his own soon. Zavala was so pleased with himself that he decided to take some time off and celebrate. His girlfriend, Doris Salomon, had jumped bail and was waiting for him down in Costa Rica, he told Cabezas. He was flying down to join her, and his plans were to get married and spend his honeymoon down in Central America. He told Cabezas he'd see him after the holidays, and off he went.

So, after just a month and a half in the business, Cabezas began running a major drug ring, doing Zavala's job as well as his own. He started dealing directly with Zavala's cocaine suppliers and keeping the books, his accounting background helping him to record the operation's income and expenses meticulously.

Cabezas said the cocaine he and Zavala were selling came from two separate sources. One was Alvaro Carvajal Minota, a Colombian who lived in San Francisco. Carvajal was part of a ring of international cocaine dealers located in Cali, Colombia, a group that would later become known as the Cali cartel. By the early 1990s the Cali dealers would operate the world's biggest cocaine sales network, eclipsing the rival Medellín cartel in terms of power and money. But in late 1981 few in U.S. law enforcement circles were even aware of the cartels. Cabezas began making trips to Cali in 1982 to negotiate deliveries for Zavala.

The other source, Cabezas said, was someone down in Costa Rica. That cocaine would arrive by courier via Miami and would sometimes be brought to Cabezas's house for safekeeping.

Because each source had different prices and delivery costs, Cabezas kept two sets of books—one for the Costa Ricans and another for the Colombians—so everyone got paid what they were owed, without any mix-ups. The cocaine from Costa Rica was of a far higher quality than the Colombians' powder. It was Peruvian. And it was this cocaine, he said, that belonged to the Contras.

He got proof of that in December 1981 when Zavala called him from Costa Rica and told him to catch a plane down. Zavala wanted him to meet some friends of his.

The friends turned out to be two exiled Nicaraguans who were working with Norwin Meneses: Horacio Pereira Lanuza, a drug dealer and gambler known as *La Burra* (a female donkey), and Troilo Sanchez Herdocia, a playboy brother of FDN leaders Aristides and Fernando Sanchez.

Fernando Sanchez had been Somoza's last ambassador to Guatemala, replacing the slain Edmundo Meneses. The U.S. State Department, in a 1988 publication, described Fernando as the Contras' "representative in Guatemala." Troilo Sanchez had been a partner of Meneses in one of Norwin's nightclubs in Managua, and was one of his drinking buddies. A pilot, Sanchez said he flew for the CIA in the early 1960s during preparations for the Bay of Pigs invasion, which was partly staged from Nicaragua. But by the late 1970s he was a hopeless drug addict, spending large sums of his family's fortune on heroin, cocaine, women, and gambling. The Sandinistas seized what was left, and Troilo Sanchez and his wife, Isanaqui, fled to Costa Rica, where they became partners with Meneses in a bean-processing factory there.

"We are like family," Meneses said of Sanchez's wife in a 1986 interview. "She came many times to visit my brother Mundo, who was a general and the police chief of Managua and was later assassinated in Guatemala for the Sandinistas."

Horacio Pereira had also been a business partner of Meneses before the revolution. Meneses said they owned cattle and cattle ranches together and had known each other since childhood. Both were from Esteli, where Pereira controlled some gambling clubs.

Cabezas told CIA investigators that his December 1981 meeting in Costa Rica "was the genesis of an effort to raise money for the Contras by selling drugs. Although the original reason for the meeting was purely social, Cabezas says Sanchez and Pereira raised the idea of selling cocaine as a means of raising funds for the Contras. Cabezas says Pereira and Sanchez discussed the idea with him because both knew of Cabezas' role in the Zavala organization. Although it was Sanchez's and Pereira's idea to raise funds for the Contras by engaging in drug trafficking, Cabezas says it was Zavala who came up with the idea that Cabezas serve as a go-between by collecting the money from street dealers and delivering it to Central America." Zavala and Sanchez have denied any involvement in drug trafficking for the Contras.

On January 23, 1982, Zavala sent Cabezas back to Costa Rica with two other men to pick up two kilos of cocaine from Pereira. But Pereira was suddenly uncomfortable with the arrangements. "I went down there with those two people to Costa Rica, but apparently Mr. Pereira changed his mind because he said he had some information that Mr. Zavala was drinking very heavily and he was scared that Mr. Zavala was going to misuse that money that supposedly he said that he was helping the Contra revolution in Nicaragua," Cabezas would later testify. Pereira told Cabezas that "he was representing the UDN-FARN and FDN in Costa Rica and that they had chosen Zavala's organization to sell the cocaine they were getting in from Peru. He said the money was going to the Contras and that the CIA would control the delivery of the money."

Pereira's information about his ex-brother-in-law was correct, Cabezas conceded. Zavala *had* been drinking quite a bit, and he was starting to neglect his responsibilities, falling behind in his payments to the Colombians, who were getting annoyed. His dicey relationship with them would be the source of several arguments, Cabezas said. Sometimes, when the Colombians were really pressing for money, Zavala would take some of the Contras' cocaine and sell it to pay the Colombians, which played hell with Cabezas's accounting.

The wary Pereira suggested an alternative: He would deal directly with Cabezas. He would sell him the cocaine, and then Cabezas would become responsible for getting the Contras' money back to Costa Rica. But Cabezas was hesitant. "I explained to Mr. Pereira that I didn't have no clients and that if I have to sell the cocaine, I have to tell Mr. Zavala because I wasn't going to jump him," Cabezas later testified. "I wasn't going to do anything behind his back."

But Pereira insisted that Cabezas had to assume responsibility for the cash, "because the money belonged. . .to help the Contra revolution," Cabezas said. That was the only way, Pereira told him, that he would let go of the cocaine.

Cabezas called Zavala and explained the situation, and Zavala agreed to Pereira's terms. But Cabezas was no fool. Instead of his usual $500 per kilo payment, he wanted half of Zavala's profits, "because I am taking the responsibility of the money." Stuck, Zavala had no choice but to agree. In an interview with the CIA, Zavala confirmed that he was then cut off from Cabezas's dealings with Pereira and Sanchez.

Cabezas traveled with Pereira to San Pedro Sula in Honduras, where he met other members of Pereira's family. While there, he said, he stayed at the home of Pereira's brother-in-law, an exiled Nicaraguan attorney named Francisco Aviles Saenz, who had been educated in the United States. He spent two or three days in Honduras, waiting for "a Peruvian who would be bringing drugs for shipment to the United States." Before he left, Pereira gave Cabezas a bottle of whiskey, some souvenirs, and two hand-woven baskets from Peru, saying, "This one is for you and the other one is for Julio." Baffled that there was no cocaine, Cabezas took the gifts back to San Francisco.

When he showed the baskets to Zavala, Cabezas said, Zavala exclaimed, "These are not gifts!" and began ripping them apart. As Cabezas watched, Zavala stripped the basket down to its internal framework and, from inside the frame, pulled out long, thin, waxy strings that resembled skinny candles. Taking a razor blade, he slit them open and poured out a small pile of cocaine powder. Cabezas said each "candle" held about three ounces of cocaine, and each basket contained about a kilo.

Cabezas would later testify that he personally brought back twelve kilos from Pereira during the first part of 1982, earning about $17,000. He would tell CIA inspectors that "Contra mules, typically airline flight attendants" were also bringing the baskets into the United States, one kilo at a time. When the baskets arrived in San Francisco, it was Cabezas's job to dismantle them and extract the cocaine. How many kilos Pereira sent into the States is anyone's guess, but Costa Rican authorities claimed that he was the biggest cocaine trafficker in their country during the early 1980s.

For the next year, Cabezas said, he and others made regular trips to Miami and Costa Rica carrying money for the Contras. He told CIA investigators that "on average. . .he carried $64,000 on each of his 20 trips to Central America, although he also claims that he and another person once delivered about $250,000 to Pereira and Sanchez." FBI records show Zavala made a money-hauling trip to Costa Rica in early 1982, and said the amount he was carrying was a quarter million dollars. The FBI was informed early on that the Contras were deeply involved with the drug ring. In February 1982 an informant reported that Zavala "had been making silencers and sending them to Nicaragua for the revolution." The same informant also reported that Contra leader Adolfo Calero, the FDN's political boss and a longtime CIA agent, "was definitely involved in cocaine traffic." (It appears, however, that the informant may actually have been referring to Calero's brother, Mario, a Contra supplymaster based in New Orleans who was repeatedly linked to drugs and thievery.)

An FBI teletype shows that by November 1982 the bureau—thanks to its wiretaps and inside informants—knew exactly what was going on inside Zavala's drug ring. According to the report, from the San Francisco FBI office to the FBI director in Washington, "Zavala's sources of supply of this cocaine are: Troilo Sanchez, Fernando Sanchez and Horacio Pereira. All three are operating out of Costa Rica." As for Cabezas, "Cabezas's sources of supply for cocaine have been established as Troilo Sanchez, Fernando Sanchez, Horacio Pereira of Costa Rica, Humberto and Fernando Ortiz of Colombia, Sebastian Pinel of Los Angeles and Alvaro Carvajal Minota of San Francisco."

(Though the FBI didn't realize it, that cable exposed yet another L.A.-based Contra drug dealer, Sebastian Pinel. He first appeared in the CIA's files in late 1980, at the inception of the CIA's counter-revolutionary experiments. The CIA identified Pinel as the leader of an unnamed Contra group in Honduras, and knew the Contra boss was a reputed dope trafficker, describing him as a "partner" and "best friend" of Horacio Periera, Norwin's Costa Rican cocaine broker.)

Cabezas was also taking $50,000 a month to the Contras' Miami offices, located in a shopping center near the Miami airport. Often he would give the money directly to FDN leader Aristides Sanchez, the brother of his suppliers Troilo and Fernando. Aristides Sanchez died in 1993; he was still working on behalf of the Contras at the time of his death, according to a laudatory obituary in the *Miami Herald*.

Cabezas told the CIA that "he never specifically told Aristides Sanchez that the money came from drug proceeds but only that it was from Troilo. Cabezas said he assumed Aristides Sanchez must have known what Troilo was involved in." Other Contras certainly did. Former Contra official Leonardo Zeledon Rodriguez told UPI in 1986 that "Troilo sold 200 pounds of cocaine and received $6.1 million for it."

The money Cabezas took to Central America was given to Pereira or an FDN logistics officer, Joaquin "Pelon" Vega, who lived in Danli, Honduras, Cabezas said. He assumed the money was used to buy food and clothing for the newly formed guerrilla army. (Vega could not be located by the author.)

On one of his trips to Costa Rica with Contra cash in April or May of 1982, Cabezas told CIA investigators, he was called to a meeting at a San Jose hotel, where Pereira and Troilo Sanchez introduced him to a curly-haired, solidly built man he'd never seen before. The man called himself Ivan Gómez and told Cabezas that he was with the CIA—the agency's "man in Costa Rica." Gómez said he was there, Cabezas said, "to ensure that the profits from the cocaine went to the Contras and not into someone's pocket." Cabezas saw the CIA agent only once more, in late summer, when he was met at the San Jose airport by Pereira and the CIA man, but Gómez never spoke during the second meeting.

In an interview with a British television crew in late 1996, former CIA official Duane "Dewey" Clarridge said he'd never heard of Ivan Gómez. Clarridge was the CIA officer who headed the Contra project from 1981 to 1984 and was later indicted for lying to Congress about the Iran-Contra scandal. He was pardoned by President George Bush, a former CIA director.

The 1998 CIA Inspector General's report strongly suggests Dewey Clarridge was lying once again, and it largely corroborates Cabezas' story. The CIA report confirms that an agent using the name "Ivan Gómez" was assigned to Costa Rica in 1982. As Cabezas claimed, he was the CIA's liaison to the Costa Rican Contra armies and, more importantly, was laundering drug money during the period in which Cabezas says he was delivering cocaine profits to the agent.

Gómez, a former Venezuelan military officer, admitted during CIA-administered polygraph tests in 1987 that in March or April of 1982 he had been involved in laundering funds for drug dealers, but he claimed the dopers were relatives. (Since Cabezas did not disclose his contacts with agent Gómez until 1996, the polygraph examiner apparently did not ask the CIA agent about laundering cash for the Contras.) Despite Gómez's admissions, the CIA Inspector General dismissed Cabezas' story as an invention, suggesting that the trafficker could not have met Gómez because the agent hadn't yet arrived in Costa Rica when Cabezas recalls meeting him. But the CIA report fails to explain how a San Francisco cocaine dealer could so accurately dream up the alias of an undercover CIA agent stationed in Costa Rica, describe his role with the Contras with such precision, and pinpoint to within 30 days the time period during which the agent admits laundering drug money. Moreover, a former CIA asset who'd infiltrated the Frogman drug ring corroborated key elements of Cabezas' story in interviews with the Justice Department in 1997.

Gómez was fired by the CIA in 1989 because of his repeated inability to pass polygraph tests concerning his drug dealing. The CIA toyed with the idea of reporting him to the Justice Department but decided against it and simply cut him loose.

"It is a striking commentary on me and everyone that this guy's involvement in narcotics didn't weigh more heavily on me or the system," Gómez's former supervisor told CIA inspectors in 1997. His only interest in Gómez, he said, was to help "salvage" a good agent, which suggests that involvement in drug money laundering wasn't viewed by the CIA as the type of infraction that should necessarily ruin an agent's career.

"Gómez" told the CIA inspectors he'd never met Cabezas or the other traffickers.

Based on Cabezas's statements and the historical record from the early days of the Contra conflict, it appears that most of the cocaine profits Cabezas was delivering to Costa Rica in 1982 went to assist the Contras of the UDN-FARN faction, which at that time was under CIA supervision. A 1984 DEA report described UDN-FARN's deputy commander, Edmundo Chamorro, as "well known to 'The Company.'" So was his brother, UDN-FARN's commander, Fernando "El Negro' "Chamorro, whom the CIA describes as "playing a major role in the Contra movement. . .CIA contact with Chamorro began in 1982."

For most of 1982, UDN-FARN served, however unwillingly, as the southern branch of the CIA's primary Contra force—the FDN—run by Meneses's friend Enrique Bermúdez and his Honduran-based former *Guardia* men. But in September of that year, when former Sandinista commander Pastora announced he was taking up arms against his old Sandinista colleagues, UDN-FARN jumped ship, leaving the FDN and officially uniting with Pastora's group to form a brand-new Contra army in Costa Rica, known as ARDE.

At that point, it is likely that the cocaine profits from Meneses's San Francisco operation began being used to benefit ARDE. Even then, however, the CIA retained oversight responsibility. When the Chamorros switched from the FDN to the ARDE, they simply changed their line of command. Instead of reporting to Bermúdez, as they had been doing, they now reported to Pastora. But both Pastora and Bermúdez were still reporting to the CIA. Like Bermúdez, Pastora was put on the CIA's payroll, where he remained until mid-1984.

The merger between the Chamorro brothers and Pastora's group made sense politically because they had one trait in common, aside from their preference for fighting from Costa Rica: as former Sandinistas, they hated the ex-*Guardia* officers who made up the FDN. Pastora frequently outraged his CIA handlers by publicly complaining about his purported allies to the north, once picturesquely referring to them as "criminal mummies and gorillas." Bermúdez and the FDN considered Pastora a closet Communist and suspected him of being a Sandinista mole.

Carlos Cabezas said his Contra money flights to Costa Rica continued throughout 1982 but were interrupted near the end of that year, when Horacio Pereira was arrested in Florida. Cabezas said one of the FBI's informants, Donald Peralta, a man who had accompanied him to Costa Rica on several occasions to deliver cash, tipped off the FBI that Pereira was heading south with a wad of greenbacks.

FBI records show that on December 1, 1982, a confidential source told FBI agent David Alba that "Horacio Pereira and Augusto Monkel would be traveling from San Francisco via Miami to San Jose, Costa Rica, with between $80,000 and $100,000, which was the proceeds of cocaine sales in San Francisco." Alba called U.S. Customs, and the next day Pereira was arrested in Miami, boarding Air Florida Flight 473 to Costa Rica. The agents found $70,000 on him, which he had failed to declare.

FBI wiretap records show that Cabezas was in contact with Pereira's cousin, Rosita, soon afterward. "Horacio going to court tomorrow," the FBI's notes of that phone call say. "Carlos has some money to help Horacio. The money taken by Customs will be kept. Carlos asked why Troilo has not called. Horacio was interviewed but did not mention Carlos' name. Carlos wants Horacio to call tomorrow."

On Christmas Eve, after he was bailed out, Pereira called Cabezas and told him that he'd been set up and needed some money. Cabezas replied that "Jairo is giving him money," an apparent reference to Norwin Meneses's nephew, Jairo Meneses.

Then something inexplicable happened.

Pereira, whom the FBI knew to be a major international cocaine trafficker, was turned loose after paying a small fine for not declaring the $70,000. He returned to Costa Rica and immediately resumed drug trafficking, which the FBI learned while monitoring a phone call from Pereira to Cabezas on January 21, 1983. "Fine was completed. No probation, no prison," Pereira was recorded as telling Cabezas. "Horacio wants to get ready to send Carlos some material."

By then the feds were crawling all over the drug ring. All of the traffickers' phone calls were being taped and transcribed; eventually the FBI would monitor more than 13,000 conversations. Cabezas and Zavala were being shadowed everywhere. Their dealers and their dealers' customers had their phones tapped as well.

The wiretaps revealed that the Colombian side of Zavala's drug operation was using freighters registered to the Gran Colombiana shipping line to bring cocaine into the United States. Agents began following the Gran Colombiana ships as they plied the waters off the West Coast and watched as kilos of cocaine were unloaded by Cabezas's associates in San Francisco and Seattle. Right before Christmas, the FBI started taking the operation apart.

On December 22, 1982, they intercepted two men coming off the freighter *Ciudad de Nieva* in Los Angeles, carrying thirty-nine pounds of cocaine. Another Gran Colombiana ship, the *Ciudad de Cucuta*, pulled into Pier 96 in San Francisco shortly after the first of the year, and the FBI set up a stakeout. It was a vessel that, according to one report, "had been raided in previous drug seizures."

Nearly two weeks went by without anything happening. Then, just before 2 A.M. on January 17, 1983, during the heaviest fog of the winter, a silver-and-orange Chevy van and a Toyota Celica pulled up to a hole in a fence near a swampy marsh leading to Pier 96. Seven men got out and began wading through the swamp toward the docked freighter, disappearing into the darkness. Two hours later the Celica and the van returned, and the seven men materialized out of the gloom, carrying heavy duffel bags. Two of them wore divers' wet suits.

The stakeout agents moved in, and one of the suspects unleashed a short burst from an Uzi submachine gun, but no one was injured, and they quickly surrendered. The agents found that all the men were heavily armed—a wise precaution, considering the value of what they were carrying: an astonishing 430 pounds of cocaine. Five other men were also rounded up that night, most of them Colombians who had been seen in Los Angeles and Seattle during earlier freighter stakeouts.

It was the biggest cocaine bust in the history of the West Coast.

The next day the *San Francisco Chronicle* blasted the news of the drug raid across its front page. Headlined "Cocaine Seized from Frogmen at S.F. Pier," the story told of "a fog-shrouded scene right out of a B-movie" and featured a large front-page picture of a Customs agent in a windbreaker piling football-sized bricks of cocaine on a table.

It was the first case made by President Ronald Reagan's new federal Drug Task Force in San Francisco, and U.S. Attorney Joseph Russoniello, a right-wing Republican close to the Reagan administration, made sure the media understood what a momentous seizure the president's new drug warriors had made. Russoniello told reporters that the street value of the cocaine the frogmen were carrying was, after "routine dilution," a whopping $750 million—three quarters of a *billion* dollars. Even the agents working the case couldn't swallow that one. Russoniello's quote in the *Chronicle* was followed by one from the DEA saying the load was worth no more than $100 million on the street, and between $11 million and $12 million wholesale.

Two weeks later agents in Los Angeles raided the Gran Colombiana freighter *Ciudad de Santa Maria* and arrested fifteen people, again mostly Colombians, in the act of unloading 150 pounds of cocaine. A UPI story noted that "the arrests were made as the suspects tried to transfer the drug ashore by way of couriers and a scuba diver." That story said the cocaine was worth $22.8 million.

(Amazingly, cocaine continued arriving in the United States aboard Gran Colombiana freighters all the way through 1986. The very same ship docked at Pier 96 that night in January 1983—the *Ciudad de Cucuta*—was found in Houston the following year with $18 million worth of cocaine secreted behind a steel wall. The shipping line was partly owned by the Colombian and Ecuadoran governments.)

The hammer fell next on Carlos Cabezas and Julio Zavala.

At 7 A.M. on February 15, federal agents and local police simultaneously raided fourteen locations in the San Francisco area, including Cabezas's house and Zavala's apartment, scooping up everyone and everything they could find. The haul included the Colombian supplier Alvaro Carvajal Minota; Cabezas; his mother, Gladys; Zavala; the low-level dealers they had been selling to; and some of their customers. In a bookcase in a San Francisco apartment, records show, police found "five flyers for Nicaraguan Benefit."

Once again U.S. Attorney Russoniello hosted a media event, telling reporters: "Before, we got the mules. These are the higher-ups in the operation." But the real higher-ups eluded capture, as neither Norwin Meneses nor any of his family was charged. Former Meneses aide Renato Pena told the Justice Department in 1997 that Norwin had a DEA agent on his payroll at the time and the agent "called Norwin a few weeks before Julio Zavala and Carlos Cabezas were arrested and warned Meneses of their impending arrests." The DEA agent, who admitted knowing Meneses, disputed those allegations during a Justice Department interview. (Curiously, the agent recalled having the impression that Meneses was working with the CIA at the time "moving guns for the Contras.")

While Russoniello and the federal agents who accompanied him were more than happy to give out detailed tidbits concerning the Colombians—such as the fact that Carvajal Minota sent boxloads of cash and jewelry each month to his mother in Cali—they had nothing at all to say about the cocaine and the cash the Nicaraguans were hauling to and from Costa Rica.

The involvement of Pereira and the Sanchez brothers was never disclosed, nor were they ever charged with anything. For some reason, the fact that the former Nicaraguan ambassador to Guatemala was bringing cocaine into the United States wasn't deemed newsworthy—or indictable.

The Meneses family's involvement with the drug ring was also suppressed. Defense lawyers had to get a court order to force the Justice Department to reveal that the 1981 searches targeting Jairo Meneses and Julio Bermúdez, had even occurred. After the lawyers got those files, they accused the FBI of "serious misrepresentation" for concealing the identities of individuals "who are, clearly from the government's point of view, either distributing cocaine obtained from some of the principals in this case, or supplying it to them." The records, they argued, revealed that there was "a direct and ongoing connection between the Meneses organization and Carlos Cabezas."

The government replied that the searches had been of little importance.

When news of the arrests reached Central America, reporters there saw an angle that their American counterparts missed. "Somocistas traffic in drugs," is how the pro-Sandinista daily, *Barricada*, headlined the story that appeared on February 20, 1983. "Narcotics police of San Francisco, California, carried out a haul last Wednesday of 20 cocaine traffickers, among whom are several Nicaraguans who supported through this criminal activity the economic needs of Contra groups."

The paper quoted unnamed Nicaraguan diplomatic sources, asserting that "one could not establish how many of those captured are of Nicaraguan origin, but there were several, and they were tied to groups of former Somocista Guards in San Francisco, and that through the crime of trafficking in cocaine they are contributing economically to the Contras." It would take another three years before an American journalist would make the same connection.

Julio Zavala complained to the court that similar stories had appeared in the Spanish-language press in Costa Rica, making it impossible for him to return to Central America. Both Zavala and Cabezas were held in prison on $1,000,000 bail, which Cabezas was unable to raise. After getting a look at the evidence the FBI had compiled against him, Cabezas's attorney advised him to cut a deal with the government and testify against Zavala, which Cabezas did.

About a year later, shortly before his trial was to begin, Zavala's attorney, Judd Iverson, walked into U.S. District Court judge Robert Peckham's office and dropped a bombshell on his desk. Iverson handed Peckham two letters addressed to the court, written by Nicaraguan exiles in Costa Rica, regarding Julio Zavala's activities on behalf of the Contras. One was written by Horacio Pereira's brother-in-law, the exiled attorney Francisco Aviles Saenz, who identified himself as the international relations secretary for UDN-FARN. A published account said Aviles had also helped set up the Committee in Defense of Democracy in Nicaragua, a CIA front in San Jose, Costa Rica, with money from Venezuelan sources. The other letter was also written by Aviles, together with businessman Vicente Rappaccioli Marquis, on behalf of a group called the Conservative Party of Nicaraguans in Exile (PCNE). In the early 1980s he was part of UDN-FARN, according to a former UDN-FARN commander who'd been recruited by Rappaccioli.

The Contras' letters said Julio Zavala, who stood accused by the Justice Department of being a cocaine kingpin, was actually a Contra official who had been working for the resistance forces at the time of his arrest; Zavala was the assistant treasurer of the PCNE and a longtime member of UDN-FARN, which "fights for the restoration of the democratic system in the Republic of Nicaragua. . .under the slogan 'God, Fatherland and Freedom.'" The reason they were writing Peckham, the Contra leaders stated, was because the FBI had something that belonged to them, and they wanted it back.

When Zavala's apartment was searched the morning of his arrest, the police—in addition to finding an M-1 carbine, a practice grenade, a variety of passports, and a catalog of machine guns and silencers—found slightly more than $36,000 in Zavala's nightstand, which was confiscated as illegal drug proceeds. That was not an unreasonable assumption, given all the cocaine and drug paraphernalia the police found scattered about the place. But the Contras insisted that the money in the dealer's nightstand was theirs, and they had given it to Zavala so he could make some "purchases characteristic of this organization" while in San Francisco. "The retention of this money is prejudicing the progress of liberation, with natural consequences," Aviles warned Peckham.

According to the letter, Zavala had made several trips between California and Costa Rica on UDN-FARN's behalf, and during his last visit in January 1983 he was given $45,000 that UDN-FARN had "collected amongst our collaborators here in Costa Rica." To prove it, the Contra leaders provided copies of a letter appointing Zavala as the assistant treasurer of PCNE, and authorizing him "to collect within the United States money for the liberalization of Nicaragua from international communism"; a receipt showing the group had given him $45,000; his UDN-FARN credentials; and Aviles's sworn statement that he was willing to testify to Zavala's position if necessary.

Defense attorney Iverson told Judge Peckham that he wanted to go down to Costa Rica and take the Contras' depositions. If what they were saying was true, he argued, Zavala was going to defend himself on the grounds that "agents of the U.S. government were intricately involved in the alleged conspiracy and either sanctioned the use of cocaine trafficking to raise funds for Contra revolutionary activity and/or entrapped the Defendant into participating under the belief that such activity was sanctioned."

Peckham quickly scrawled his signature on an order sealing the Contras' letters and the other papers Iverson had submitted. Iverson had requested the secrecy order to keep the U.S. government from discovering the documents, which he felt might expose Aviles and Rappaccioli "and/or their families to harm or political pressure." In court a few weeks later, Iverson again raised the issue of the depositions, a request Peckham was still considering. Assistant U.S. Attorney Mark Zanides scoffed at the notion, saying that Iverson hadn't come close to showing a need to go "trudging off in the middle of the trial to Costa Rica without a firm basis for it."

Judge Peckham disagreed.

"It would be very important testimony to corroborate what they apparently claim is his defense. It has to do with the source of the money. My understanding is the Government will assert the money came from narcotics transactions?"

"It is very likely," Zanides answered.

"Well, he claims another source for another purpose," Peckham said. "And this evidence would corroborate that. It is very important evidence."

"I don't know, I have not seen any reason why the government isn't entitled to know the identity of the witnesses," Zanides complained. "I don't know what the source of this information is, or alleged information. I'm flying blind."

"There were letters from the people involved that were filed under seal with the court," Iverson reminded the prosecutor.

"I don't know who they are," Zanides protested. "These letters could come from anybody. I don't know if Mr. Iverson has ever spoken with them personally. I don't know how he can vouch. . .it is just a letter."

The prosecutor told Peckham that it wasn't "a situation where we are talking about a threat to the lives of the witnesses."

"They think so," Peckham replied.

"I think it is," Iverson said.

After holding two hearings in the secrecy of his chambers, Peckham had the lawyers come to his courtroom on July 16, 1984, to hear his decision. Prosecutor Zanides again complained that he was being kept in the dark about the identity of the Contra officials. "You are talking about some unknown people in a foreign country with allegedly revolutionary affiliation," he argued.

"The concern, I suppose, is that these people will be intimidated," the judge said, "not necessarily expressly. They are revolutionaries in Nicaragua. They want to overturn the Nicaraguan government, as I understand it. The Contras. They are based in Costa Rica and they have monies. Where those monies came from, nobody knows. There is speculation about that, but there is no evidence. They want to show that this money that was found in his possession came from the Contras."

"I appreciate all that. That's been apparent," Zanides said. "Let's assume for a moment that I don't believe these people, that I think they're lying. I mean, I have to be able to make inquiry of those persons or agencies whom I believe possess that information."

"Judge, these people probably have very close contacts with the CIA," Zavala's cocounsel, Marvin Cahn, argued. "We don't want the CIA saying to them, 'Don't testify.' I see no reason why an investigation can't be done after the deposition."

"Oh, that's ridiculous," Zanides said.

"I don't see anything ridiculous about it," Cahn retorted.

"Would you look to the CIA?" Peckham asked the prosecutor.

"I look anywhere I think there might be some information."

"That is troublesome," the judge said.

"Absolutely, I might look to the CIA."

"Is that troublesome?" Peckham inquired of the lawyers.

"Not to me," Zanides said. "I need to know. It may turn out that they may be telling the truth."

"It is very troublesome to us to have the CIA involved because I think our witnesses won't be there if that happens," Cahn said. "It seems our witnesses should be afforded the same degree of protection that the government's informants are afforded."

"That just doesn't add up," Zanides said.

"There is a far more dangerous situation in Costa Rica than an informant has in the United States!" Cahn said.

Peckham gently intervened. "They fear, you see, that there will be disclosures made," the judge explained to Zanides. "And again, I don't accept this because I have no evidence. So by my saying it, I don't want it understood that I am finding what I say to be fact. They are afraid. Just like you are afraid about the safety of informants, they are afraid that if the CIA is, in fact, financing these people that they will not want it disclosed and that they will take measures to make certain people don't get funding or be advised strongly not to cooperate. I don't know if you have control over that."

"So the fear," Zanides asked, "is that the CIA is going to bring some pressure on these people not to testify, is that it?"

"That's very much the fear," Cahn said. "And I think it is a realistic fear in this case."

"I don't see any evidence. . .I can't even respond to that," Zanides argued. "What is the evidence the CIA—"

"That is fairly well documented," Iverson interjected. "I don't think there is any question that they are down there and intimately involved with the group that is trying to overthrow the Sandinista government."

"All we are saying," Judge Peckham told Zanides, "is that nobody should discourage them from testifying in this proceeding by way of deposition. I don't know what is so horrendous about that."

Peckham granted the defense lawyer's motion to fly to Costa Rica during mid-August "for the purpose of taking depositions of Francisco Aviles Saenz and Vicente Rappaccioli Marquis." He instructed the government to pay $5,000 in travel expenses for the attorneys.

Six days later the Costa Rican CIA station fired off a cable to Langley to warn that a federal prosecutor and an FBI agent were planning a trip to San Jose "to question two anti-Sandinistas in connection with the prosecution of a cocaine trafficking case." The problem, the station told Langley, is that both Aviles and Rappaccioli were Contra officials and belonged to an organization that had "unwittingly received CIA support."

Both men were also CIA assets, the station said. Langley was advised to search its files for anything it had on them and their connection to the cocaine traffickers, and the cable ended by saying that the CIA station was "concerned that this kind of uncoordinated activity (i.e. the assistant U.S. attorney and FBI visit and depositions) could have serious implications for anti-Sandinista activities in Costa Rica and elsewhere."

CIA headquarters discovered that Aviles was indeed a Contra official and had attended an August 1982 conference in Miami, where he was elected to the board of directors of the PCNE, which was receiving CIA money.

Various branches of the CIA were alerted, and the agency sprang into action. The Justice Department and the federal prosecutor handling the Zavala case, CIA officials decided, needed to be "discreetly approached."

On August 3, 1984, CIA headquarters instructed the Costa Rican station to keep away from Aviles and Rappaccioli, "to avoid giving Zavala's defense attorneys a possible issue." Langley reassured the nervous Costa Rican station that "there was no reason to believe that Zavala's attorneys knew Rappaccioli had any association with CIA." The whole thing could just blow over "if planned legal action is successful," the cable said.

CIA lawyer Lee S. Strickland flew into San Francisco from Washington, and on August 7, 1984, he sat down with prosecutor Mark Zanides and had what Zanides recalled as an "opaque conversation" with him. The CIA, Strickland told him, "would be immensely grateful if these depositions did not go forward." But Strickland "provided little or no explanation regarding what the CIA's interests were in the case," Zanides said. Strickland appeared "very concerned about the public identification of the individuals who were to be deposed."

There was one problem, however. Neither the CIA nor the prosecutor knew what was in the letters the Contras sent to the judge. Before they could do anything, they needed to see those letters.

That afternoon Zanides filed a motion asking Peckham to unseal the Contras' letters so government lawyers could read them. "Keeping it under seal at this point would result only in preventing the counsel for the United States from preparing properly for the deposition," he wrote. "At present the government is undertaking an inquiry with respect to the identities of these persons and counsel for the government is attempting to ascertain precisely what the facts are."

At a hearing the next day, Zanides wanted to clarify the government's position. When he asked for the records to be unsealed, he told Peckham, he hadn't meant for the general public to be able to read them. All he was asking for was that the documents be shown to government lawyers under a protective order.

Judge Peckham bristled at the prosecutor's suggestion.

"I think it ought to be made public," he said. "Why should we not make it public? What is there left to keep—"

"Your Honor," Zanides interrupted, "before I could comment on that—"

But the judge abruptly cut off the prosecutor.

"I am going to make it public. If it is unsealed it is going to be public," he warned.

"Well, as Your Honor knows, I can't comment since I really haven't seen those materials," Zanides said.

"I am ordering it made public. It is unsealed," the judge said. "I don't have to put it that way. I will just order it unsealed."

"Very well," Zanides replied. "May I obtain a copy from your clerk this morning?"

"Certainly," the judge said, taking out his pen. "So I will sign this. . .there is no restriction on the public disclosure of this."

When Strickland and Zanides saw the letters the two CIA operatives had sent to Peckham, their faces must have fallen. They had put the Contras right in the middle of the biggest cocaine bust in California history. Zanides went running back to Judge Peckham with a request that he make the documents secret again, until the government could make a private "presentation to the court why the record re Costa Rica depositions should not be made public." Zavala's attorneys weren't invited.

Whatever the Justice Department told Peckham during the private meeting in his chambers, it worked.

Peckham issued an order that afternoon sealing up the records he'd made public only that morning. Five days later Zanides filed a three-paragraph agreement that said simply that the "United States will not introduce the $36,020 in United States currency seized from the residence of Julio Zavala" and "agrees to return said currency to Julio Zavala." In exchange, the agreement stated, Zavala would not press the issue of the Costa Rican depositions.

"As the matter stands now," a CIA cable stated, "CIA equities are fully protected." The cable bemoaned the fact that both Aviles and Rappaccioli "planned to testify at their deposition as to the source of the money in question. We can only guess at what other testimony may have been forthcoming."

A U.S. embassy official in Costa Rica, after hearing that the depositions had been called off, quipped that they "had been canceled by The Funny Farm." His remark quickly got back to Langley, which instructed its Costa Rican agents to tell the diplomat "that CIA had no hand in cancellation of the trip."

Years later, when questioned about the case by the author, former U.S. Attorney Russoniello said the only reason he agreed to return the drug dealer's cash was because it would have cost the government too much money to go to Costa Rica and take two depositions. There never was any evidence to suggest that the Contras were involved with the drug ring, he insisted. But even the Justice Department's Inspector General didn't buy that. After questioning Russioniello, the IG concluded that the CIA had intervened with the prosecutor because of "a desire to protect the public image of the Contras or the CIA. . .the CIA considered the potential press coverage of a Contra-drug link to be a sufficient reason to attempt to influence the decision to return the money to Zavala." CIA cables further described Russioniello as "most deferential to our interests."

In addition, there was a stack of telephone records linking the Contras directly to the drug ring, which Russioniello never released or publicly admitted. "A defendant in the Frogman case had made 51 phone calls to the FDN office in San Francisco," a secret 1987 DEA report states, noting that one of its confidential informants had met with the traffickers at the FDN's office.

The FBI agent who investigated the case, David Alba, had little doubt the CIA was behind Russioniello's decision to give back the drug money. "Zavala or someone he was working with was involved with the CIA," Alba told Justice Department inspectors in 1997.

Even after the depositions were canceled, the agency continued to fret that its dirty secrets would somehow leak out. CIA officials were instructed to "monitor the prosecution closely so that any further disclosures or allegations by defendant or his confidants can be deflected." CIA lawyer Strickland argued in a memo that the Costa Rican station "must be made aware of the potential for disaster. While the allegations may be entirely false, there are sufficient factual details which would cause certain damage to our image and program in Central America." A memo from CIA general counsel Stanley Sporkin observed, "This matter raises obvious questions concerning the people we are supporting in Central America."

In a lengthy cable to the Costa Rican station on August 24, 1984, Strickland detailed his concerns. "While this particular aspect was successfully resolved, the possibility of potential damage to CIA interests was not lost on the U.S. Attorney or headquarters. By virtue of Rappaccioli's relationship as a former covert action asset and a member of board of directors of a Contra organization, Aviles' role as director of the Contra support group office in San Jose, and their formal claim of drug-tainted money, case could be made that CIA funds are being diverted by CIA assets into the drug trade," he wrote. "Indeed, close relationship between Zavala, a convicted drug dealer, and Rappaccioli and Aviles could prove most damaging especially if any relationship, no matter how indirect, were to continue. As long as Rappaccioli and Aviles continue to play any role in the anti-Sandinista movement, any public disclosure of the foregoing would have as a certain element the fact that they were 'linked to' or 'assets of' CIA."

Strickland told the Costa Rican station to look into whether the Contras were dealing drugs but warned "no action other than discreet inquiries should be undertaken without headquarters approval."

What the CIA found was censored from the report, but the agency clearly didn't cut its ties with the two Nicaraguans. Aviles, in 1985, was appointed to the general staff of UDN-FARN. A 1988 State Department biography of Vicente Rappaccioli identified him as the secretary of the Contras' political division. Incredibly, the 1998 CIA Inspector General's report that contained all the cables claimed Aviles and Rappaccioli really hadn't worked for the CIA after all. The repeated references to them as CIA assets in the 1984 cables were mistakes, the IG claimed.

In October 1984 the federal government returned $36,020 to Aviles and Zavala. And not a moment too soon: eight days after the check was issued, the U.S. Congress—outraged by the disclosure that the CIA and the Contras had dropped antiship mines in Nicaraguan harbors—cut off all CIA funding for the Contras.

Despite the CIA's efforts to keep Contra involvement in the so-called Frogman case from becoming public, some of the truth got out when Carlos Cabezas took the witness stand in late 1984 against his ex-brother-in-law. Under oath, and as a U.S. government witness, Cabezas admitted that some of the cocaine money was going to the Contras. He told the jury of his meetings with Horacio Pereira, and of Pereira's nervousness over the Contras' profits being misspent by the hard-drinking Zavala. Pages from the ledger books in which Cabezas kept track of the Contras' cocaine were introduced into evidence and made public, showing cocaine transactions with Contra official Fernando Sanchez.

Zavala was convicted of trafficking and sentenced to prison. Cabezas's testimony went unchallenged. It also went unreported. Though the San Francisco news media had fairly swooned when Cabezas and Zavala were arrested, not a single reporter stuck around to cover the trial. The evidence of Contra involvement in cocaine trafficking in San Francisco would lie undisturbed in a federal court file for another two years.

"They were doing their patriotic duty"

Unlike Carlos Cabezas, who walked into an existing cocaine sales operation and began dealing dope the next day, Danilo Blandón was forced to make his own way, finding his own buyers in a city he really didn't know. If he had been in San Francisco, it would have been a different story. Meneses's drug network there was well established and, according to Blandón, flourishing. After distributing 900 kilos—nearly one ton—in 1981, Blandón said, Meneses's business in San Francisco "got bigger and bigger, because all the family was working at that time with him, in the drug business."

By contrast, Meneses's network in Los Angeles was of more recent origin and had been dealt a serious blow in late 1981 with the arrest and subsequent flight of his West Covina dealer, Julio Bermúdez, who had been moving about twenty kilos a month before he was arrested.

While Blandón struggled to establish a customer base, he made himself useful to the Meneses organization in other ways. He became "like a secretary for Mr. Meneses, because he already saw that I could do a lot for him. He started telling me, 'Go out and collect some money to somebody else in L.A.' and I started doing it, and he started getting trust, trusting in me."

Blandón said he would not only pick up money from customers in L.A. but deliver it as well, taking cash from Meneses to pay his cocaine suppliers in Los Angeles, men Blandón described as Colombians. He also began keeping the books for the L.A. drug operation, describing himself as Meneses's "administrator."

"I wasn't working with him in San Francisco. He was working alone," Blandón said. "I keeping the books from L.A."

"You were keeping his books in L.A.?" Blandón was asked.

"Yes."

"So he was up in San Francisco, and you're down here in L.A.?"

"Yes."

"So you were running his Los Angeles operation, isn't that correct?"

"Yes," Blandón said. "But remember, we were running just a—whatever we were running in L.A. goes—the profit is—was going to the Contra revolution. I don't know from San Francisco."

The relationship between Blandón and Meneses quickly transcended the cocaine business. Meneses opened up a restaurant on Hoover Street in East Los Angeles, which Blandón helped oversee, called the Chicalina. Blandón described the establishment somewhat curiously to a federal grand jury, calling it a "marketing" operation. "That was not my restaurant. That was Meneses's restaurant," he said, but he admitted that he'd told others he was one of the owners.

Another of Blandón's jobs involved looking after the welfare of Meneses's wife and children. Meneses had sent them from San Francisco to L.A. after he started yet another affair. In 1982, Blandón said, Meneses "was in love" with a woman in South San Francisco named Blanca Margarita Castano, a Nicaraguan who would later become his fifth wife.

Blanca was a cousin of a top Sandinista official, Bayardo Arce Castano, one of the Nicaraguan government's nine commandantes and one of the most hard-line radicals among them. Blanca's apartment near the Cow Palace, an old auditorium made famous by Jefferson Airplane, was used to store cocaine. "I went one time to pick it up right there," Blandón said.

A frequent houseguest of Meneses during this period was John Lacome, a San Franciscan who was friendly with Norwin's nephews, Jaime and Jairo. Lacome said he lived at Meneses's home for long periods during the early 1980s, and told of cocaine-fueled parties that went on for days. Meneses appeared totally unafraid of being arrested; "There was a woman he was selling to, and this woman would drive by his house, honk, and he'd come walking out to the street with two kilos in his hands, in broad daylight, and give them to her," Lacome said.

Meneses was fond of expensive leisure suits, wore a fairly obvious toupee, and took pains to surround himself with women, as did his nephews. A former girlfriend of Jaime Meneses, Gloria Lopez, said the nephews all drove flashy new cars, which they would trade in as soon as they tired of them. That was how she first noticed Jaime, she said. She was tending bar in the Mission District, and he would drive up in a different new car every couple weeks.

Lopez, who later had a child with Jaime Meneses, said Jaime started off driving trucks for his uncle Norwin right out of high school. Initially the loads were military uniforms; then he graduated to moving a more lucrative product—and started earning a substantially bigger paycheck.

"You give a kid like that out of high school all that money, and what do you think is going to happen?" Lopez asked. "I can't say that I blame Jaime for what he did. Then. I blame him for a lot of things that happened later though."

Jaime's father, Jaime Sr., was also pressed into service for the cause, hauling money to Central America for brother Norwin. "Jaime Sr., I respected him very much," Rafael Cornejo said. "He really wasn't too much involved with drugs. He had a brake factory in Nicaragua before the revolution, called FRICA. He was a very decent man. During, I can't remember which year, he was incarcerated in the U.S., 1984–85. . .. He'd been stopped at the border with $70,000 or something. He was taking the money down to Nicaragua. Once I told him, 'Look, Jaime, let me do that for you.' But he said, no, he could do just fine." Jaime Meneses Sr. was murdered in 1990 in the offices of his money-changing business—FRECERSA—in San Jose, Costa Rica.

Such were the hazards of being a Meneses. So it was not surprising that when Maritza Meneses and her children arrived in L.A. in 1982, someone would be assigned to watch over them and help them along. Norwin gave Danilo the job.

In August 1982 Blandón and Maritza Meneses set up a business together in Los Angeles, a company they named JDM Artwork Inc. The name was an acronym made up of the first initials of the incorporators' first names: Josefa Maria Pelligatti, a friend of the Meneseses; Danilo Blandón; and Maritza Meneses.

The company did silk screen printing, and Blandón said it was started by Meneses to provide an income for his relocated family. But there may have been other motives behind Meneses's investment in the silk-screening business. The company quickly became part of the Contras' support network in Los Angeles. ARDE commander Eden Pastora said he visited the firm during a trip he made to L.A. in 1982, and it printed up T-shirts with his likeness on them. Former Pastora aide Carol Prado claimed that a Los Angeles printing company connected to Blandón was used to launder money from drug sales for the Contras.

Another former associate of Blandón, a Puerto Rican man convicted of counterfeiting U.S. currency, believed that the company also dabbled in funny money, printing up fake twenty-dollar bills that provided operating cash for the FDN. The former associate produced Polaroid photographs that showed him at work in an office with FDN banners and slogans on the wall, and a picture of Blandón in the same office, smiling, his arms thrown over the shoulders of other laughing Hispanic men. A blue-and-white FDN flag was clearly visible on the wall.

The associate's claims of counterfeiting could not be independently corroborated, but according to CIA cables filed in federal court, the CIA had information by 1984 that Norwin Meneses was involved in counterfeiting—both American dollars and Costa Rican *colones*. In a 1986 interview, Meneses said he allowed FDN members to use his wife's Los Angeles T-shirt factory as a meeting place.

As the Contra support organizations in San Francisco and L.A. grew more active, Meneses's role with the FDN became much more public. Former FDN director Edgar Chamorro told the *San Francisco Examiner* in 1986 that he and FDN director Frank Arana flew to San Francisco in October 1982 to select local leaders for the FDN's support committee there. Meneses attended the organizational meeting, standing quietly in the back of the auto body shop where the meeting was held. Meneses "appeared like a fund-raiser, an organizer," Chamorro told the paper. The next day, Chamorro said, Meneses helped set up a similar meeting in Los Angeles, providing refreshments beforehand and throwing a party afterward.

"He was one of the main contacts in L.A.," Chamorro told *Examiner* reporter Seth Rosenfeld. "He was in charge of the organization of the L.A. meeting, the reception. He drove us to the place. He gave us the schedule for that day. He knew people, he was recommending names" (for leadership positions in the L.A. organization).

Renato Pena Cabrera, the FDN's San Francisco representative, told federal investigators in 1997 that he was present "on many occasions" when Meneses telephoned FDN commander Enrique Bermúdez in Honduras. "Meneses told Pena of Bermúdez's requests for such things as gun silencers (which Meneses obtained in Los Angeles), cross bows, and other military equipment for the Contras." Meneses sometimes personally delivered the supplies to the Contras, Pena said; other times he had contacts in Miami and Los Angeles forward them to friendly Honduran authorities.

"Meneses would bring [back] military information, bulletins, and communiques from Bermúdez that Pena would put into newsletters and give to the press and Contra sympathizers," a summary of Pena's interview states.

In a recent interview with the CIA, Meneses said that "between 1983 and 1984, his primary role with the California sympathizers was to help recruit personnel for the movement. Meneses says he was asked by Bermúdez to attempt to recruit Nicaraguans in exile and others who were supporters of the Contra movement." The drug lord told the agency's internal investigators that "he was not directed to recruit people with any specific skills, such as pilots or doctors, but was simply told to seek out anyone who wanted to join with the FDN. Meneses states that he was a member of an FDN fund-raising committee, but was not the committee's head." He did not raise much cash but was "involved in 1985 in attempting to obtain material support, medical and general supplies" for the Contras.

When asked by the author in 1996 where he got the money to pay for these war materials, Meneses gave a slight smile. "There was money available for these purchases," he said.

Meneses associate Rafael Cornejo said he attended some of the parties Meneses hosted for the FDN at his homes in the San Francisco area.

"You can say what you want about that man, but his heart and soul was into the movement, and that was his priority more than anything else," said Cornejo, whose father had been a sergeant in Somoza's National Guard. "It's kind of hard to be kicked out of your own country and that's what his passion was. He was straight-up pro-Somocista."

Blandón complained that Meneses was so tightfisted with the cash he was raising for the Contras that he was making little or no money selling cocaine. "I didn't make any money, you know. It was only for the people in the mountains, you know, for the Contra Revolution," Blandón said. Meneses allowed him to keep enough "just to pay the rent and to pay the food for my daughter. . .just to pay my expenses." Among the Nicaraguan exile community, it was strongly suspected that Meneses was dealing cocaine for the Contras. And it was not unadmired. Somoza's former secretary, Juan C. Wong, one of the first Nicaraguan exiles to begin recruiting ex-*Guardia* men to join the Contras, said he visited Meneses in San Francisco in 1983. "It's true, it was widely spread around that he was involved with drugs," said Wong, a University of San Francisco grad who knew the Meneses family from before the revolution. "And I don't doubt that they wanted to raise money for the FDN. That's only natural. They were doing their patriotic duty."

Bradley Brunon, Blandón's lawyer, said Blandón was one of several former Somoza supporters dealing cocaine in L.A. in the early 1980s. He met Blandón while defending a middle-class Nicaraguan exile accused of drug trafficking. "People were being arrested who had high government connections, or high military connections, in the Somoza regime, who didn't have any particular lifestyle consistent with being cocaine dealers, didn't have a background consistent with that, but they were highly politicized individuals," Brunon said. "And the only politics I was aware that they were involved with was this attempt to fund the Contra revolutionary insurgency."

Brunon said it was his understanding that "the Contras, and I don't even know if they were known as that then. . .had no above-the-line funding. Everything was sub rosa and one of the ways they were trying to raise money was importing cocaine. That was information that I didn't specifically receive from Blandón, but that I had surmised based on a series of events that were happening."

Blandón was fairly close-mouthed about his role with the Contras, according to Brunon. "I don't know the formal particulars of it other than there was this kind of atmosphere of CIA and clandestine activities and so forth that surrounded him when I met him," Brunon said of his longtime client. "He never was specific. I mean, I believed he was involved with the Contras. I don't think there's any doubt about that. Beyond that, I never got into the particulars with him, because I didn't have a need to know at that point."

An air of mystery also surrounded another associate of Blandón, an odd, cherubic, balding man in his mid-thirties Blandón picked up as a partner shortly after going to work for Meneses. The man would remain at Blandón's side for seven years, though mostly in the shadows. Considering his work history and the activities he was involved with at the time, his appearance in the Nicaraguan's cocaine trafficking entourage is both strange and worrisome. He would give Blandón's drug ring a whole new sideline—weapons and sophisticated electronics equipment—and a whole new smell, the unmistakable aroma of the U.S. intelligence community.

Brad Brunon met him in 1986, when he showed up unannounced at the lawyer's office and began asking very detailed questions about Blandón's background. "It was just like the hair on the back of your neck goes up. What does this guy want? What's he doing here? Is he investigating Blandón?" Brunon said. "I never knew what his true role was. I mean, he covertly insinuated that he was CIA. At least, if not a sworn member, whatever the hell they do to get to become employees—some sort of operative." Brunon "really didn't have much communication with the guy because he scared me."

His name was Ronald Jay Lister, a southern California native who began working as a cocaine dealer and money hauler for Blandón in late 1981 or early 1982, just as the CIA was taking over the funding and operations of the newly formed FDN. The CIA has publicly denied any relationship with the man.

Before launching his life of crime as Danilo Blandón's faithful sidekick, Ronald Lister had been a police officer of one sort or another for nearly fifteen years. He'd started out as a military policeman for the U.S. Army and U.S. Army Reserve, stationed in Orange County with the 414th Military Police company. His service records show he had a degree in political science and was trained in processing prisoners of war captured during the Vietnam conflict. He regularly received excellent fitness reports. While an army reservist, Lister hired on as an officer with the police department of Maywood, a small suburb of Los Angeles that once employed a handful of uniformed patrolmen. He was also a reserve deputy for the L.A. County Sheriff's Office at the same time.

Lister was called to active duty in the army for a few months in 1969, and later, when his enlistment ended, he volunteered for the U.S. Coast Guard, serving as a reserve port security officer at Terminal

Island, in San Pedro, California. In late 1973 he found a home with the Laguna Beach Police Department, which patrols a posh Orange County suburb south of Los Angeles. There, among the rich and famous, he rose through the ranks to become a detective in the burglary division.

Lieutenant Danielle Adams said Lister was a veteran by the time she arrived in burglary; her recollection of him was that he was "always very successful, very tenacious and got the job done."

His former chief, Neil Purcell, who was on the hiring board that gave Lister his job, remembers him differently. "You hear lots of things about Ron Lister," Purcell said. "The man, in my opinion, is a lying, conniving, manipulative person who likes to play with people's minds. He's very evasive and loves living on the edge. He's the biggest bullshitter that has ever been placed on this earth."

Toward the end of Lister's twelve-year stint with the police department, he was traveling in some pretty fast company. "When he worked here, that silly son of a gun was in with—what do they call themselves?—the Royal Highnesses from Iran!" Purcell recalled with a hoot. "Sporting Rolex watches for himself and his wife. Getting wined and dined by these people until finally they [the Iranians] were asked to leave this country. Anything. He threw out names and organizations. He's a very bright guy. As far as intelligence, he's very, very smart." It was the one point upon which Adams and Purcell agreed.

"Don't ever underestimate him," Adams warned. "He's very, very bright and very tenacious."

Both Adams and Purcell said Lister became involved in private security work on the side toward the end of 1979. He quit the Laguna Beach police department in May 1980 to pursue that vocation full-time. "He was in the alarm business, is what he originally started off as," Adams recalled. "And he had some muckety-mucks from the Arab countries, so he says, in his alarm business and this was getting pretty elaborate, and that's when he left the police department. I know there was a lot of involvement and a lot of travel while he was still here."

A few weeks before he resigned, corporate records show, Lister incorporated a company called Pyramid International Security Consultants Inc., based in Newport Beach. What Pyramid was doing between 1980 and 1981 is not known, but Lister stated that this was around the time he first met Blandón, "through a Beverly Hills business connection." He said Blandón introduced him to Norwin Meneses, and that he "provided physical security for both men," who "always paid him in cash."

Soon after Lister paired up with Blandón and Meneses, his security company began doing business overseas. Blandón told Justice Department interviewers that he and Meneses "entered into an informal partnership [with Lister] for the purpose of selling weapons abroad," specifically in El Salvador. Blandón said the plan was for Lister, Blandón, and Meneses "to get their share of the profits in weapons, which they would then give to the Contras."

Blandón's attorney, Brad Brunon, described Lister as "one of these guys who would boast about having bugging capabilities, would boast about having wiretap capabilities, you could get any information any time, one of those. . .I-can-uplink-to-the-satellite sort of guy."

Christopher W. Moore, a former reserve Laguna Beach police officer who met Lister in 1979, said Lister hired him as an office manager in 1982 while Moore was working his way through law school. "I think I was actually an officer in Pyramid International. Ron put my name down as treasurer or director or something because he needed to have some directors for the incorporation papers." Moore confirmed that Lister had extensive business dealings in Central America, specifically in El Salvador. Lister explained his travels there to Moore as involving gun running and "helping the Contras, supposedly on behalf of the [U.S.] government. I remember the longest conversations with him—'I'm protected. You're working for the government. Don't worry about anything. I'm protected, I'm protected.' I don't know if that was true or not, but I do know that we stopped worrying about domestic security jobs and started concentrating on foreign ones."

During the early 1980s, when Lister began doing business there, El Salvador was wracked by a vicious civil war and murderous political repression. A tenacious revolutionary guerrilla group, the

FMLN, had been running circles around the country's corrupt and inefficient military. The rebels' fight was being assisted by the Sandinistas in Nicaragua, who have admitted supplying them with tons of Eastern Bloc arms and ammunition.

The Reagan administration was far more concerned about what was happening in El Salvador than they were about Nicaragua, which Reagan's advisers considered already "lost" to the Communists. One of Reagan's top foreign policy objectives in 1981 and 1982 was to keep what had happened in Nicaragua from spreading to El Salvador, and the administration pushed hard for increased military and economic support for the beleaguered Salvadoran government, particularly after a January 1982 rebel attack on the main military airport in El Salvador demolished dozens of aircraft.

"Indeed, what came to be known years later as the 'Reagan Doctrine' may have been born in El Salvador in 1982," former Reagan State Department official Robert Kagan wrote in 1996. Halting Sandinista arms shipments to El Salvador was the official reason CIA director William Casey gave to Congress when he informed lawmakers of Reagan's decision in late 1981 to turn the CIA loose in Nicaragua. The Contras were being trained to police the borders to make sure no Sandinista arms got out to the FMLN, Casey claimed.

Like many of the things the CIA said about the Contras, that explanation was a lie, a smoke screen to hide the agency's true agenda, which was to run a full-scale covert war against the Sandinistas. The Reagan administration found its Salvadoran aid program a tough sell in Congress because of the horrendous human rights abuses then occurring in the country. Frustrated by its inability to crush the FMLN guerrillas in the field despite an overwhelming firepower advantage, elements of the Salvadoran government were striking back at the rebels by murdering thousands of their supporters with death squads—right-wing, quasi-military posses that would snatch suspected rebel sympathizers off the streets and leave their mutilated bodies on the outskirts of town a few days later. At the height of this campaign, residents of the capital city of San Salvador would wake up to find forty new bodies every morning.

The Salvadoran government officially denied any connection with the death squads, but the denials rang hollow in Washington, even among Reagan's stalwarts. "Under the guise of anti-Communism, the death squads terrorized the entire country—murdering nuns, teachers, labor organizers, political opponents and thousands of other civilians," Lieutenant Colonel Oliver North wrote in his 1991 memoirs, *Under Fire*.

North wrote that it was clear most of the death squad activity was the responsibility of the ultraright ARENA party and its leader, former Salvadoran army major Roberto D'Aubuisson. D'Aubuisson was reportedly running one of the death squads linked to the assassination of San Salvador's Archbishop Oscar Romero—allegedly by hit men from the FDN's predecessor, the Legion of September 15.

The official whose men were committing some of the worst abuses was a $90,000-a-year CIA asset, Colonel Nicholas Carranza, head of the government's feared Treasury Police. According to one account, CIA director Casey met personally with Carranza in the summer of 1983 and told him to "knock it off," or the CIA would kick him off the payroll.

In phone conversations with Lister, Christopher Moore learned that his boss was "supposedly doing security consulting for the government of El Salvador." In June of 1982 Lister asked Moore to fly down and "babysit" a government contract for a few days while Lister returned to the United States to take care of some unspecified business.

Moore agreed, and was off on what he would call the strangest trip of his life.

Accompanying him on the eleven-day excursion, Moore said, was a man who introduced himself as the Salvadoran consul in Los Angeles. Since Moore spoke little Spanish, the man served as Moore's guide and interpreter. "They flew me down to this airbase that the French were building, and I had to take pictures of it," Moore said; it was his impression that Pyramid was bidding on a contract to provide security for the base. When he returned to El Salvador's capital, San Salvador, he settled into the downtown Ramada Inn. Then he and the Salvadoran consul attended a series of meetings with none other than Major Roberto D'Aubuisson. "That was probably the highlight of my life at that point," chuckled Moore, now an attorney in Los Angeles. "There I was, a reserve police officer who'd only been in the country for a couple days, and I was sitting in this office in downtown San Salvador across the desk from the man who ran the death squads. He had a gun lying on the top of his desk and had these filing cabinets pushed up against the windows of the office so nobody could shoot through them."

At another meeting, Moore and D'Aubuisson were joined by Ray Prendes, the newly elected head of the Salvadoran Assembly and a powerful figure in the ruling Christian Democratic party. Prendes was on friendly terms with D'Aubuisson, Moore said, and both appeared to have some role in the award of the security contract Lister was seeking.

Lister, in an interview with police, "said that Moore was a good kid who had gone down to El Salvador to take pictures of poorly planned and constructed security work at a port on the southwest tip of El Salvador."

Moore was unsure if Lister's company ever got the security contract for the airbase, but he thought not. He left Lister's employ in 1983, soon after his boss began dealing in heavy weapons. "Ron was an arms dealer and was buying these semiautomatics, the ones the bad guys use, called MAC-10s. He also had semiautomatic Uzis, and he had gotten involved in selling something called RAW, which was a rifle-fired hand grenade. He was into a lot of things."

Moore wasn't exaggerating. Between 1983 and 1986, the FBI opened up five separate investigations of Lister, all of which dealt with allegations of trafficking in illegal weapons and high-tech devices with foreign governments. In September 1983, Lister's and Blandón's company, Pyramid International, came under FBI scrutiny for Neutrality Act violations, which allegedly involved "the sale of weapons to El Salvador and the loan of money from Saudi Arabia to the Salvadoran government. Lister was also alleged to be attempting to sell arms to several other countries." Considering the fact that the Saudi government was heavily involved in financing covert operations for the Reagan Administration during the 1980s, it is perhaps not surprising that "no further information was ever developed" by the FBI. The Justice Department offered no explanation for why that probe was abandoned.

Lister admits his company was dealing guns in El Salvador. He told Justice Department investigators that Blandón and Meneses "were the ones that opened the doors down there. . .[they] had many connections in El Salvador. . .from their drug trafficking business." Lister sold Blandón numerous machine pistols, which Blandón told him he was sending to the Contras. "Anything that I gave him was for the purpose of the Contras," Lister insisted.

An FBI informant told Justice Department inspectors that Norwin Meneses had spoken of obtaining night vision scopes from Lister in 1982, which the drug lord planned to sell to the Salvadoran government. Meneses intended to "use the proceeds from the night scopes to aid the Contras," the informant reported, but said the deal fell through.

In October 1982, Pyramid International made a security proposal to Salvadoran defense minister General Jose Guillermo Garcia, a man linked by one human rights organization to death squad activities and the slaughter of hundreds of peasants at a village called El Mozote in December 1981.

Pyramid's proposal, which L.A. police found in a 1986 drug raid, was written in Spanish and had "Confidential" stamped all over the front of it. It was entitled "Technical Proposal for an Urgent Project to Implement an Integral Security System for the Defence Ministry and the Major General of the Armed Forces of the Republic of El Salvador." The thick report described Pyramid as a unique consulting firm "dedicated to the maintenance of freedom, independence and free enterprise." The company only served clients "with a similar political orientation."

That political orientation was spelled out in no uncertain terms: Pyramid International Security Consultants would "assist the new government in its goal to combat the tyrannical forces of the left side, promoted and assisted by the current governments of Nicaragua, Cuba and the Soviet Union."

Lister's company outlined a variety of services it would provide for the sum of $189,911: bodyguard and armed escort services for Salvadoran public officials, including the president and top political and military leaders; protecting sensitive installations from sabotage and terrorism; and installing sophisticated electronic technology, including radio sensors and explosives detectors, at key military and industrial installations. Lister later explained the document as "a proposal to the current government in El Salvador to implement programs to assist them in different types of security operations, counter-measures type operations, dealing with the types of problems they had. . .. We did a whole study down there."

But one of Lister's associates at the time, a San Diego arms manufacturer, said Pyramid's security proposal was actually just a cover for another operation, a covert one directed by the CIA. The company's real mission in El Salvador, he said, was to set up a weapons manufacturing facility to supply guns to the Contras in neighboring Honduras. In a series of interviews with investigative reporter Nick Schou of the *L.A. Weekly* in 1996 and 1997, arms maker Timothy LaFrance described Pyramid International as "a private vendor that the CIA used to do things [the agency] couldn't do." LaFrance, whose handiwork is so highly regarded that he has created custom-made weapons for *Rambo* films and episodes of *Miami Vice*, said he accompanied Lister to El Salvador at least twice, becoming involved as a weapons specialist and helping to set up facilities to make pistols for the Contras.

Among the series of nameless biographies attached to Pyramid's proposal to the Salvadoran government, one employee is identified a "specialist in the design and manufacture of unique weapons." Lister's former office manager, Chris Moore, confirmed that "one of his [Lister's] friends, and I can't recall the name, was an arms maker in San Diego. He had a custom gun shop down there."

LaFrance, who makes and modifies exotic automatic weapons for the military and law enforcement agencies in his San Diego manufacturing facility, was convinced Lister's consulting company had friends in high places. When he applied in Pyramid's name for a State Department permit to take high-powered weapons out of the United States, for example, LaFrance said, "It came back approved in two days. Usually it takes three months. We went down to Central America with two giant boxes full of machine guns and ammunition."

LaFrance told Schou that their cover story for the trip was that they were there "to provide security, armor-proofing for vehicles, limos and homes. My end was the weapons [and] how to make a three-car stop if you're shot at." But the real purpose, LaFrance said, was to "set up an operation in El Salvador that would allow us to get around U.S. laws and supply the Contras with guns. It's much easier to build the weapons down there and that's eventually what we did." Pyramid's security proposal discusses the company's unique ability "to design and manufacture special equipment—at the point—and in any part of the world, in the majority of cases saving their foreign clients important sums in currency."

According to LaFrance, the Pyramid team moved into a mass-transit center run by the military in downtown San Salvador. "That's where we made the weapons. You could have 50 guys working in a machine shop and nobody would know it," he said. After the finished guns were transported to a Salvadoran military airstrip in Morazon province, they were airlifted to Contra camps in Honduras. "We made almost all of our drops by helicopter, buzzing the treetops," LaFrance said.

While LaFrance's story is by its nature difficult to corroborate, some independent documentation suggests he was definitely the man to see in the early 1980s if one needed to build a weapons plant. In May 1983 LaFrance was solicited by the tiny Cabazon Indian tribe in southern California to build an arms factory on their desolate, tumbleweed-strewn Riverside County reservation. "We need the know-how from an organization engaged in the manufacturing of armaments of various types, all consisting of technology not currently found on the marketplace," the Cabazons' letter to LaFrance Specialties stated. Another letter spelled out precisely what the Cabazons were looking to build: "A 9-mm machine pistol, an assault rifle with laser sighting, a long-distance sniper rifle, a portable rocket system, a night-vision scope, and a battlefield communications system 'that cannot be detected by current technology.'"

According to the *San Francisco Chronicle*, the Cabazons were working on "a series of international military and security projects that seem to be lifted from the pages of a spy novel." The tribal administrator was a man who claimed to have long experience working for the CIA, helping out on the agency's Chilean destabilization program in the 1970s. He had paired the tribe up with Wackenhut International Inc., a security firm the *Chronicle* described as being "led by former officials of the CIA, the FBI, National Security Agency, Defense Department and federal law enforcement."

Wackenhut was very active in El Salvador during the Contra war, providing employees to protect the U.S. embassy and other installations, and doing "things you wouldn't want your mother to know about," one Wackenhut employee told *Spy* magazine in 1992. Apparently the firm was using the Cabazon reservation's tax-exempt status and its freedom from federal oversight to gain a competitive advantage in soliciting federal weapons projects.

Freelance investigative reporter Danny Casolaro was looking into the Cabazon/Wackenhut projects as part of a larger conspiracy investigation at the time he was found dead in a West Virginia motel room in 1991, allegedly a suicide victim. He had told friends he was convinced that "spies, arms merchants and others were using the reservation as a low-profile site on which to develop weapons for Third World armies, including the Nicaraguan Contras." The *Chronicle* stated that Contra leader Eden Pastora had visited a firing range near the reservation for a weapons demonstration in 1981, a claim Pastora has both confirmed and denied on separate occasions.

In early 1994 the U.S. Justice Department announced that it was opening "a nationwide investigation" into Casolaro's suspicious death—a probe ordered by then-associate attorney general Webb Hubbell. Not long afterward Hubbell pleaded guilty to crimes he'd committed while an Arkansas lawyer and resigned from the Justice Department. What resulted from the Casolaro investigation, or even whether it ever went forward, has not been made public.

Hubbell's interest in the journalist's death may have been more than passing curiousity. Hubbell had his own connections to a company that was making weapons parts for the Contras.

Tim LaFrance's story about setting up an arms factory with Ronald Lister in El Salvador bears striking similarities to one told by Terry Reed, a former air force intelligence officer and FBI informant who became involved with the CIA's Contra project in the mid-1980s. Reed, a pilot and machine tool expert, said he was initially recruited to train would-be Contra pilots at a clandestine airstrip near Nella, Arkansas. Later, he claims, he was asked to help the CIA set up secret weapons parts facilities in Arkansas and, later, in Mexico.

In his memoirs, *Compromised*, Reed wrote that he scouted locations and provided the corporate shell for CIA agents working with the Contras to set up and run a sophisticated machine-tool shop in Mexico in 1985–86, in order to keep a supply of untraceable weapons parts flowing to the Contras during a time when Congress had cut off the rebels' CIA assistance. He claims CIA operatives were shipping cocaine through the machine-tool company he'd helped the agency set up in Guadalajara, Mexico. One of the companies Reed worked with in Arkansas was a small manufacturer of parking meters called Park On Meter Inc., located in the town of Russellville. Reed claimed that the company was secretly manufacturing parts for M-16 rifles as a subcontractor on a CIA weapons project to supply the Contras.

The *Washington Post* sent a reporter to Arkansas in 1994 to "investigate" Reed's story. While the resultant article was a snide and ham-handed attempt to portray Reed as a crackpot conspiracy theorist, it nonetheless confirmed many of the basic elements of his story. "Some of the key relationships described in the book did exist in some form," the *Post* grudgingly admitted. "The Iver Johnson arms company near Little Rock, which the book portrays as being at the center of the gun-manufacturing effort, did ship a load of weapons to Nicaragua through a Mexican distributor, according to former plant engineer J. A. Matejko. But Matejko, described in the book as part of the CIA plan, says the rifles were M-1s, not M-16s."

Moreover, the *Post* found, the parking meter company Reed named "did make some gun parts for Iver Johnson, another relationship characterized in the book as part of the CIA weapons scheme." But, the *Post* scoffed, the parts were "firing pins, not M-16 bolts as the book contends."

Park On Meter's former secretary and corporate lawyer was Webb Hubbell, who also happens to be the brother-in-law of the company's owner. Hubbell admitted to a *Time* magazine reporter that POM was also making rocket launchers.

Another similarity between the weapons operations described by Reed and LaFrance is that they both involved admitted drug traffickers who appeared to be working for the U.S. government. A central figure in all of Reed's dealings with the CIA, he wrote, was a CIA and DEA contract agent named Adler Berriman Seal. A former airline pilot, Seal moved in 1982 from Baton Rouge to a tiny airfield in isolated Mena, Arkansas, Intermountain Regional Airport, and began running drugs and weapons.

In the early 1980s, Barry Seal was one of the biggest cocaine and marijuana importers in the southern United States, flying loads in directly for the Medellín cartel and air-dropping them with pinpoint precision across Louisiana, Arkansas, and other southern states.

"Seal detailed his cocaine-smuggling activities in '81, '82 and '83. What he testified to was that he was involved in 50 trips during those three years," IRS spokesman Henry Holms told the *Baton Rouge State Times* in 1986, explaining a $29 million lien that the IRS filed against Seal for back taxes. A letter that year from Louisiana's attorney general to U.S. Attorney General Ed Meese said Seal "smuggled between $3 billion and $5 billion worth of drugs into the U.S."

Seal's farm in Baton Rouge, according to a 1983 U.S. Customs report, was allegedly used as a drop site for cocaine and marijuana flown into the country aboard a DC-4 aircraft, N90201. That same plane subsequently turned up flying supplies for the Contras in 1985 through an air cargo company the FDN hired called Hondu Carib Cargo Inc. The operator of Hondu Carib, records show, was FDN leader Adolfo Calero's brother, Mario Calero.

Hondu Carib's owner was pilot Frank Moss, identified in a 1989 Senate report as having "been investigated, although never indicted, for narcotics offenses by ten different law enforcement agencies." The report said Moss flew FDN supply missions for both Hondu Carib and a Honduran air freight company called SETCO, which was owned by Honduras's biggest drug trafficker, Juan Matta Ballesteros.

One DC-4 Moss used to ferry Contra supplies was seized by the DEA in March 1987 on a suspected drug run off Florida's coast. Aboard the plane was marijuana residue and Moss' notes which, according to a CIA cable, contained "the names of two CIA officers and their telephone numbers." Also found was the phone number of Robert Owen, Oliver North's courier in Central America. (In 1985, records show, Owen reported to Oliver North that a DC-6 owned by Mario Calero "which is being used for runs out of New Orleans is probably being used for drug runs into U.S.")

During the time he was dealing with Terry Reed, Seal was also working for the DEA as a top-level informant; in 1984 he participated in a joint CIA-DEA sting operation in an attempt to snare Sandinista government officials in drug smuggling. Congressional records show North was being regularly briefed by the CIA on Seal's sting operation, was supplied with some of the evidence it produced, and allegedly leaked the information to the press shortly before a critical vote on Contra aid was coming up in Congress. North maintains that his only involvement in the Seal sting against the Sandinistas was as an observer, but a statement he gave to the FBI in June 1986 suggests that his relationship with the trafficker was considerably more complex than that.

On February 17, 1986, Seal was murdered in New Orleans by Colombian hit men. Four months later, in June, North called the FBI and claimed that there was an "active measures program" being directed against him by the Sandinistas. People were following him, he fretted, directing death threats and smears against him. "North expressed further concern that he may be targeted for elimination by organized crime due to his alleged involvement in drug running," a Washington-based FBI agent wrote. North pointed to "the murder on Feb. 17, 1986 of a DEA agent, Steele [sic], on the date prior to Steele's testifying against the Sandinistas for drug involvement."

Seal's "personal records showed him to be a contract CIA operative both before and during his years of drug-running in Mena in the 1980s," historian Roger Morris, a former NSC staffer, wrote in a 1996 book, *Partners in Power*, about Bill and Hillary Clinton.

The same Senate subcommittee that looked into the Contras' connections with Hondu Carib in 1988 also poked around at Mena and concluded that "associates of Seal who operated aircraft service businesses at the Mena, Arkansas, airport were also the targets of grand jury probes into narcotics trafficking. Despite the availability of evidence sufficient for an indictment on money laundering charges, and over the strong protests of State and federal law enforcement officials, the cases were dropped. The apparent reason was that the prosecution might have revealed national security information."

Clinton's critics have charged that it was impossible for the governor of Arkansas to have been unaware of Seal's activities at Mena. Indeed, Reed and former Arkansas state troopers L. D. Brown and Larry Patterson, both of whom have been critical of Clinton, insist he knew quite a bit about it—including the fact that cocaine was involved. Patterson, a member of Governor Clinton's security detail, testified that he and other troopers were aware "that there was large quantities of drugs being flown into the Mena airport, large quantities of money, large quantities of guns, that there was an ongoing operation training foreign people in that area. That it was a CIA operation."

A mechanic at Mena airport, John Bender, swore in a deposition that he saw Clinton there three times in 1985. Ex-trooper Brown said that when he confronted Clinton about the cocaine flights Seal was involved in, Governor Clinton replied, "That's Lasater's deal," referring to his close friend and campaign contributor, Little Rock bond broker Danny Ray Lasater. In 1986 Lasater was indicted by a federal grand jury in Little Rock on drug charges, and Clinton's brother Roger, a cocaine addict, was named as an unindicted coconspirator. Lasater pleaded guilty to drug trafficking; he received a thirty-month prison sentence but served only six months in prison. Clinton pardoned him in 1990.

Clinton's supporters have maintained that Lasater was no drug dealer, simply a high-flying businessman who got a little too caught up in the fast life. But that's not the way the FBI described it in a 1988 report citing the bureau's successful battles against major drug trafficking organizations. According to the FBI's description of its investigation, Lasater was part of a huge drug ring. "In December 1986, the Little Rock, Arkansas office of the FBI concluded a four-year Organized Crime Drug Enforcement Task Force investigation involving the cocaine trafficking activities of a prominent Little Rock businessman who operated several banking investment firms and brokerages in Arkansas and Florida," the FBI report stated. "The investigation revealed that this businessman was the main supplier of cocaine to the investment banking and bond community in the Little Rock area, which has the largest bond community in the United States outside of New York City. This task force investigation resulted in the conviction of this businessman and 24 codefendants to jail sentences ranging from four months to 10 years, as well as the seizure of cocaine, marijuana, an automobile, an airplane and $77,000."

Typically, investigations conducted by federal Organized Crime Drug Enforcement Task Force (OCDETF) units target top-level criminal organizations, not businessmen who take a few toots every now and then. Researchers familiar with the Lasater investigation say that the FBI's description of its Little Rock investigation goes far beyond anything that has ever been publicly released about the Lasater probe.

Roger Morris's book, in fact, describes an investigation that was shut down prematurely and ended only with Lasater's arrest, not that of twenty-four others. But Morris also suggested that there was much more to the case than met the eye: "Whatever the limits or extent of Lasater's cocaine trafficking or the nature of his other dealings, most believed that beyond him the larger corruption in Little Rock and elsewhere pointed unmistakably to organized crime, not to mention the vast crimes of Mena—none of which would be pursued."

Morris wrote that "in sworn testimony, a former staff member of the Arkansas State Police Intelligence Unit would describe 'a shredding party' in which she was ordered to purge the state's Mena files of nearly a thousand documents, including those referring specifically to Iran-Contra conspirator Oliver North and Seal associate Terry Reed." Reed claims that North, who was the National Security Council official overseeing the Contra project at the time, was his CIA contact for both the pilot-training program and the machine-tool company front.

A Clinton spokesman called the reports of Clinton's alleged knowledge of the Mena operations "the darkest backwater of the right wing conspiracy industry." North, who certainly knew about Barry Seal, has denied knowing anything about Terry Reed or what was going on at Mena. But something was certainly happening at that little airport, and it was far from routine. While denying that the CIA was involved in any illegal activities at Mena during the time Seal's drug-smuggling operation was based there, the CIA's Inspector General's Office confirmed in 1996 that the CIA ran a "joint training operation with another federal agency at Mena Intermountain Airport." The IG report, which has never been publicly released, reportedly claims the exercise lasted only two weeks, but conveniently omits the year this occurred. The CIA also used the Mena airport for "routine aviation related services" on CIA-owned planes, according to a declassified summary of the report.

Coincidentally, it was Seal's drug-hauling airplane, a Fairchild C-123K called *The Fat Lady*, that a Sandinista soldier blew out of the skies over Nicaragua in 1986 with a SAM-7 missile, breaking open the Iran-Contra scandal. The plane had been based at Mena before Seal sold it and it began flying weapons-hauling missions for Oliver North and the FDN.

Morris wrote that Seal also worked for the Pentagon's spy service, the Defense Intelligence Agency (DIA), "where coded records reportedly showed him on the payroll beginning in 1982." Tim LaFrance told L.A. journalist Nick Schou that the DIA was also involved in Ronald Lister's weapons manufacturing plant in El Salvador, and that the meetings Lister and his associates had with death squad commander D'Aubuisson "happened because the DIA wanted them to happen." Records found in Ronald Lister's house in the 1986 raid disclosed connections between Lister and "a DIA subcontractor."

Another man involved in Lister's Salvadoran weapons operation, LaFrance said, was Richard E. Wilker, a former Laguna Beach resident whom LaFrance described as an ex-CIA agent. Wilker appears as the "technical director" on Pyramid International's proposal of the security project to the Salvadoran government. The biography section of the proposal boasts that the company had "technicians with the Central Intelligence Agency in physical security for 20 years."

"I met Lister through Wilker," LaFrance said. "Wilker had heard about my stuff from the Agency. He said he had a friend who wanted to talk about a deal. I called to check and Langley said he [Wilker] was still working for the Agency. So I started doing business with Lister and Wilker." Lister was not officially a CIA employee, according to LaFrance; "He wasn't getting a paycheck from them. He may have said he did but his connection was. . .with Wilker. Very few people ever work directly for the Agency."

Former CIA officer John Vandewerker, who once employed Wilker as a salesman, said he knew Lister and Wilker were involved in some business activity in El Salvador. "It was kind of touchy. . .as far as getting out of the country and all that kind of stuff." He did not elaborate. (Coincidentally, Vandewerker's name was found in the notebooks of investigative reporter Danny Casolaro after his death, in connection with the goings-on at the Cabazon reservation.)

Pyramid was eventually tossed out of El Salvador at the urging of the U.S. Army, which took over the weapons plant that he and Pyramid had started, LaFrance said.

Lister dismisses any suggestion that he was "knowingly" working for the CIA. In an interview with police in 1996, he claimed "that if he were affiliated with an organization like the CIA, he wouldn't talk about it." He confirmed, the detectives wrote, that he had been a "security consultant and had dealings and offices down in El Salvador. Lister said he had a 'Munitions Control Permit' at that time and was involved in legal arms sales." The detectives noted that "Lister did display some knowledge of the U.S. intelligence community during our interview."

Danilo Blandón met Lister very early through the FDN's organization in Los Angeles and began an association with him that would last until the late 1980s. Lister and a partner named Bill Downing, Blandón said, "went to the meeting that we have in the Contra revolution, the meeting that we have every week and they, they offer us, they show us, you know, they show us a demonstration for the weapons, okay? They show the machine guns and the weapons. They have the, the license to sell them."

Lister never sold guns to the Contras, according to Blandón. That was true, but not entirely accurate, Norwin Meneses said during a 1996 interview: "We, in fact, did make arrangements to sell arms to the Contras, but the FDN couldn't collect sufficient funds in order to finalize the deal." Meneses, Blandón, and Lister then "traveled to Honduras, Guatemala, and El Salvador to make arrangements with local governments" for the *donation* of arms, Meneses said.

"Lister and Blandón then continued their mission in South America without me. . .. I know Danilo says that the weapons he got came through Ronnie Lister, but that isn't true. If I told you where we got them, governments would fall," Meneses said mysteriously. "I'm not going to do it while I'm in this place." He motioned to the walls of the Nicaraguan prison where he was interviewed and made a pistol with his thumb and forefinger, which he pointed at his head.

Meneses's own involvement in Contra gun running was confirmed in 1996 by the *New York Times*, which quoted an unnamed Clinton administration official as saying that Meneses had "contacts with the Contras in Honduras in 1982 or 1983 and 1984, and that he was believed then to have had some involvement in arms smuggling as well as money laundering and drugs." The *Times* also quoted two other unnamed government officials as saying, "Intelligence reports showed that Mr. Meneses was thought to have sent some weapons for the Contras on at least one occasion. But the size and nature of the shipment are unclear."

"There is a mention of weapons with him but not an indication whether it was a standard or large pipeline," the *Times* quoted "one official" as saying. The *Times* article provided no further details on this stunning revelation.

The *Los Angeles Times*, in a 1996 profile that portrayed Lister as a loudmouth who told tall tales, confirmed Meneses's statements that Lister was involved in weapons transactions with him. Quoting an unidentified "former business associate" of Lister, the paper wrote that Lister "led a sales team on a futile mission to civil war-racked [sic] El Salvador in the summer of 1982 to market surplus American arms, military equipment and used school buses to the Salvadoran military. . .. The trip was financed, the associate said, with an investment of at least $20,000 from Norwin Meneses."

The trip was a failure, according to the *Times*, because Lister tried to arrange the deal through an unnamed leader of an unnamed political party. Afterward Lister tried to get involved in the cocaine business with Meneses, but the drug kingpin allegedly turned him down, supposedly because Meneses regarded Lister as "a loose cannon." The story did not explain how or where Lister would have picked up enough "surplus" American arms to approach the Salvadoran military about making a weapons deal.

When defense attorneys tried in 1996 to quiz Blandón about Lister's alleged relationship with the CIA, a federal prosecutor immediately objected, and the jury was ordered out of the courtroom. During a whispered conversation with the judge, the prosecutor said that while it was true that "Lister made a claim. . .that he was an employee of the CIA," the government believed it was false, made only to "impress [his] illegal business partners," and was an attempt "to deter prosecution."

Nevertheless the prosecutor asked the judge to halt that line of inquiry because it was "muddying the waters." The judge decided that since Blandón had denied that Lister worked for the government, there was no need for any more questions like that. An internal CIA investigation in 1997 declared that Lister had no relationship with the agency.

Chris Moore, who regarded Lister's claims of CIA connections with some skepticism, said Lister told him he had a "big CIA contact" at an Orange County company.

"I can't remember his name, but Ron was always was running off to meetings with him supposedly," Moore said. "Ron said the guy was the former Deputy Director of Operations or something, real high up there. All I know is that this supposed contact of his was working at the Fluor Corporation [an international construction management company based in Orange County] because I had to call Ron out there a couple times." In an interview with the Justice Department, Blandón "recalled hearing Lister say that he was involved with the CIA and that he knew someone high up in the CIA who was getting him some licenses so he could sell weapons to Iran." Blandón said he "never believed Lister because he lied too much." Years later, however, evidence would surface suggesting that Lister's claims of having a big CIA contact weren't as wild-eyed as Blandón and Moore seemed to think.

In many ways, the relationship between Lister—the ex-cop weapons dealer—and Blandón—the MBA-toting cocaine broker—was symbiotic

Lister when he first met Blandón, "knew nothing about narcotics and could not tell you coke from flour. I had never seen the shit." But after Lister returned from his Central American travels, his former San Diego attorney said, he appeared to be an expert in the cocaine business. "When he came back, he seemed to know a lot about what was going on in Colombia with drug trafficking. I thought it was interesting because in the mid-1980s, no one knew very much about these cartels. But he knew quite a bit. And he knew names and dates, places, et cetera.

"I can remember one incident in particular. In the papers at the time all of a sudden there were these stories about the Medellín cartel, and Ron just snorted and said, 'What the hell is with the news media? There are all these stories about the Medellín cartel and nothing about the Cali cartel.' Ron said the Cali cartel is where all the power is concentrated, that's where the power structure is, and no one is even bothering them. They're getting ready to expand their market to Europe. They're buying cargo ships and airplanes.' Well, I'd never heard of the Cali cartel at that point. Subsequent events certainly proved him right."

The attorney surmised that Lister could have gained "this information from the CIA, or through his work with them. He knew some pretty damned good details and professed to being through the area. Now, I have traveled extensively through Central America, and the only thing I can tell you is, his information about the area was true. I know he'd been there." Lister told CIA inspectors that he had been to Colombia with Blandón and observed Blandón negotiating drug deals with the Colombians.

As 1982 drew to a close, Blandón's cocaine trafficking business in Los Angeles exploded. Almost overnight, it appears, he went from receiving little one-or two-kilo packages that could be tucked inside a lunch box to getting multimillion-dollar loads that wouldn't fit on a wheelbarrow. "I'd go over to D's [Blandón's] house, take my Mercedes over there, put three U-Haul boxes which will cover about 100 keys, about 33 per box plus one you'd squeeze in, in the trunk, go over to south L.A.," Lister told police. "It was the slickest deal you've ever seen."

There were two interrelated reasons for this huge expansion of Blandón's cocaine trafficking. One is that Dr. Raul Jeri's much-ridiculed "epidemic" of cocaine smoking had finally arrived in Los Angeles. And the other was a street-smart ghetto teenager who would come to be known as Freeway Rick.

"Something happened to Ivan"

The man who would be king of the L.A. crack market saw his first rock of cocaine around Christmastime in 1979 and didn't believe it was a drug. Ricky Donnell Ross knew what drugs looked like. He was nineteen. He'd seen drugs before. But this sure didn't look like cocaine to him. It was a little whitish chunk of something that could have been bird shit, for all he knew. And you were supposed to put it in a pipe and smoke it? Right.

Ross had seen people on TV using cocaine before, and they never smoked any shit that looked like this. When they used it, they cut it up on a mirror with a razor blade and tooted it up with a hundred-dollar bill.

"It was glamorous. It was, you know, you was in the 'in' crowd if you was into cocaine, if you was using. You know, whatever. It was in," Ross said. "It was what the movie stars were doing."

Ross's skepticism seems hard to believe now, with crack dealers more plentiful than policemen in urban communities. But in 1979 it was understandable. At that point, hardly anyone had seen rock cocaine. The friend who gave Rick what he called "a fifty-dollar rock" knew about smokable cocaine only because he was traveling in the fast lane. He was on the San Jose State University football team. He went to a lot of high-class parties. He knew what was happening.

"He's like, 'Man, I'm onto something new,'" Ross would later tell the *Los Angeles Times* in 1994. According to the *Times*, "Ross ventured out and showed off his acquisition to an old pimp, who fired it right up and ordered $100 more."

The problem was, Ross didn't have any more. He didn't know how to make it or where to get it. And it's doubtful he could have found more even if he had the money, which he didn't.

If he'd searched hard enough in the right neighborhoods, maybe in Malibu or Hollywood, Ricky Ross might have been able to come up with something close—freebase cocaine. Freebase was becoming popular in the upper echelons of the drug underground in the late 1970s. It was not crack, however. Making freebase was more complicated and dangerous, requiring exotic and highly flammable solvents. It was also different in content.

Freebase resulted from mixing cocaine powder with ether. When the ether evaporated, it took the adulterants and cutting agents with it, leaving behind smokable crystals of pure cocaine base. For the process to work, however, it required a very high-quality cocaine; the cocaine powder that most people snorted wouldn't do because it was so heavily cut. Adding ether to a mishmash of mannitol, lidocaine, or milk sugar caused some "cocaine" to evaporate entirely.

Freebasing was what comedian Richard Pryor had been doing when he set himself on fire on June 9, 1980, and ran screaming from his bedroom in Northridge, outside L.A.—a ball of blazing polyester leaping across neatly kept lawns. "His polyester shirt had melted onto his arms and chest and he suffered third-degree burns from the waist up," *Time* magazine reported. "The Los Angeles police say Pryor told them that the accident occurred while he was 'free-basing' cocaine."

Pryor would later say freebasing was only tangentially related to his fearful scorching. The fire happened because he accidentally ignited some 151-proof rum while in a daze from a seventy-two-hour freebasing binge. If he'd been smoking freebase, in fact, he might never have burned himself at all; Pryor said he started drinking the rum because he'd run out of cocaine.

The distinction didn't matter much to the news media. The fact that Pryor—a major celebrity—had an accident while in the clutches of some weird, exotic new drug habit made it big news. "When Cocaine Can Kill," *Newsweek* trumpeted. "A dangerous drug craze" is how *People Weekly* put it. The *Los Angeles Times* discovered to its alarm that in the mostly black NBA, freebase use was spreading among pro basketball players.

As one cocaine expert wrote in 1982, the coverage of Pryor's accident was "reminiscent of the pre-Harrison Act yellow journalism [and] told the story of how cocaine was becoming the modern version of the Black cocaine menace of the early 1900s." The Harrison Act of 1914, which outlawed recreational cocaine use in the United States, resulted from a wild—and bogus—newspaper campaign mounted by southern sheriffs who linked coke-crazed black studs to the rapes of white women.

For a variety of reasons, including the bad press from Pryor's misfortune, freebasing was largely a passing fad, never really taking hold except among a few rich, hard-core drug users. "The relatively high cost and difficulty of producing cocaine free-base made it less accessible to most cocaine users," drug researcher Steven Belenko wrote in 1993. "An estimated 10% of cocaine users in the late 1970s also used free-base cocaine. But the need for large quantities of relatively pure cocaine and volatile chemicals to produce free-base limited its appeal to the broader group of cocaine users."

Unlike Richard Pryor's neighborhood, the neighborhood where Ricky Ross lived rarely saw cocaine in any form. As hard as the drug was to find in white, middle-class communities, it was ten times as scarce in South Central L.A., where the Ross family had lived since the early 1960s. People in the projects didn't have that kind of money, and if every once in a while they did, they sure as hell didn't go out and spend it all on white powder that barely got you high.

According to a Rand Institute study of street prices paid by DEA agents and informants, an ounce of cocaine powder in L.A. was selling for $4,844 in 1979. Other sources place it at roughly $2,500 an ounce, suggesting that DEA agents weren't the savviest shoppers around. In any event, a tiny bit cost about half the average annual income of a South Central resident. Little wonder that marijuana and angel dust—a dangerous chemical known in the projects as "Sherm" or "water"—were the drugs of choice where Ricky Ross lived. They were far less expensive. That was why Thomas C. "Tootie" Reese, the alleged king of cocaine in black L.A. at the time, lamented that he never sold as much coke as the cops and the press claimed.

"When you mentioned drugs, whether it was heroin or coke, you heard Tootie's name," said former LAPD narcotic detective Steven Polak. "He was the kingpin, especially in the fifties and sixties. Everybody was working Tootie Reese. Tootie Reese was probably one of the first blacks who really did big dope." But the man himself had a different story for the *L.A. Times*, which interviewed him a few months after his arrest in December 1983 for selling two kilos of cocaine to undercover officers.

"I ain't never been big," Tootie told the *Times*. Some evidence gathered during the investigation of Reese backed up his assertion that his cocaine-dealing prowess had been greatly overrated. During a taped conversation with undercover agents, Reese told them that "most of his customers purchase only five ounces or 10 ounces and that he had only five kilo-size customers." That admission was made at a time when a much bigger dealer in South Central—Danilo Blandón—was moving dozens of kilos a month through just one customer. Reese was mostly a heroin and marijuana dealer. By the early 1980s, when cocaine started seeping into the inner cities in noticeable amounts, Reese was a dinosaur.

"These new kids, once the eighties hit and these gangs hooked up with this dope, he was nothing anymore," ex-detective Polak said. "He was just an old grandpa who'd lost his teeth and wasn't worth anything anymore." A 1989 *L.A. Times Magazine* piece wrote him off in similar terms: "The amounts of cocaine he allegedly dealt were infinitesimal contrasted with the tonnage now sold monthly by his successors in the black community."

Reese's first major successor would be Ricky Ross, though that was not readily apparent in late 1979. Looking at him then, one would not have imagined the slender, slightly pop-eyed teenager to be a successor to anything but a hard row to hoe. A sometime thief, sometime student, he was clinging to a tattered dream of becoming a professional tennis player. Though too small for football or basketball, Ross had quick reflexes. When he was in middle school, about eleven or twelve, two family friends, Dr. Mal Bouquet and Richard Williams, encouraged him to take up tennis.

Ross's own father, Sonny, an oil tank cleaner by trade, had left home while Ross was still a small child in Tyler, Texas, in 1963. The rest of Ross's life would be spent in a sometimes tragic quest to find someone to replace him. Bouquet and Williams became Ross's first father figures. "They picked me up, took me to tennis tournaments. They took care of my racquets and tennis shoes, stuff like that," Ross said. "They fed me. You know, we'd leave a tournament, we'd go to McDonald's, something like that."

Ross said the tournaments and tennis practices kept him out of the 74 Hoover Crips, his neighborhood gang. He was friends with many of them, he said, but was never a gang member himself. Federal prison records appear to back up that claim. "There exists no information to substantiate your membership in the Los Angeles based 'Crips' street gang," stated a 1993 letter to Ross from the Federal Correctional Institution in Phoenix. "All information in your file has been deleted which reflected gang participation or membership."

"He does not have the culture of a gang member when you talk to him," said *L.A. Times* reporter Jesse Katz, who spent months interviewing Ross in 1994 for a major series on the L.A. crack market. "He doesn't have the attitude and the—I mean, he was a capitalist."

It wasn't because Ross had anything against gangs necessarily. Most of the 74 Hoovers were homies he'd grown up with, gone to school with. He would put them to use in the future. But for now, he just didn't have time for gang-banging. "Once I started playing tennis, we'd start practicing as soon as school was out, so we'd get off the tennis court probably around 6:00 or 7:00 when it was time to go in the house."

It was hard to get away with anything there. His mother, Annie, a heavyset woman with bottle-thick glasses, a janitor in downtown office buildings, was strict. She was always checking up on him and his older brother David, snooping in their rooms to make sure they weren't getting into trouble. When she was at work, her younger sister Luetha Wilson watched the boys.

By the time Ross enrolled in Dorsey High School, his tennis skills were well honed. "I made All-League my first year. My second year, I made All-City second team and my senior year, I made All-City first team," Ross said. But he didn't fare as well in tournaments. "I'd win a few rounds. I never got ranked."

Still, Ross played well enough to retain a spot on the Dorsey High tennis team. Playing tennis for a major university was his immediate goal in life. There were about five players on his high school team that the coaches were grooming for college scholarships, and he was proud to consider himself one of them.

Ross had a bit of a problem, though. By his senior year at Dorsey, he still couldn't read or write. "My teachers just passed me, gave me C's and let me go through," Ross shrugged. It hardly seemed to matter, he said, because you didn't need it to play tennis. And in truth, it hadn't mattered. It hadn't kept him off the courts. It hadn't kept him behind in school. It only mattered when he started practicing with the Long Beach State University tennis team.

Ross had played in a tournament in Griffith Park, "and I had beat the number three or four guy from Long Beach State and a [Long Beach] coach asked me what school I was going to, when I was graduating from high school. Basically, he asked me, you know, what was I doing and how is my tennis going and stuff like that." The coach invited him over to the university for practice, and Ross worked out with the Long Beach State team a couple of times. "Then he found out about my grades and that I couldn't read or write," Ross said. To Ross's shock, that was the end of the university's interest. "I thought it basically would be the same as it had been all the time," Ross complained. "That they would just keep passing me through."

Disillusioned, he dropped out of Dorsey soon afterward, saying that it seemed pointless if he couldn't get into college. "I didn't graduate. I made it to the 12th grade and I was a few credits from being able to graduate." Ross said he was "kinda like in no man's land, almost, I would say. . .. My life was like at a standstill." On July 7, 1978, he was arrested by the LAPD for burglary and disorderly conduct. The charges would be dismissed—Ross said it was a case of mistaken identity—but the incident was an indication of the path he was on.

Ricky's other passion in life was automobiles, so he channeled his efforts in that direction. Since childhood, his mother said, "Ricky was taking things apart and putting them back together." Every summer she took the boys back to her brother's house in Overton, Texas, where Ricky and David would work on the brother's farm. Ricky began tooling around on tractors at an early age and developed driving skills quickly.

"When Ricky was about four years old he tried to drive my brother's car," Annie Ross said. "By the time he was eleven or twelve, he was driving by himself. You know, out in the country, where nobody minded. When he got older, he'd bring these cars home, work on them all the time, fix them up, and sell them. He always kept himself real busy."

In 1979, as Ross prepared to leave tennis behind, he prevailed upon someone he'd met through the sport, Mr. Fisher, a young auto upholstery teacher at the Venice Skills Center, to give him a shot at a new career. Fisher, a sometime tennis partner, got Ross into an open slot at the skills center.

"It's like a trade school where people that don't have nothing going can go and get them a trade, and they pay them," Ross said. "They pay them something really for going, you know, like help you with your expenses and stuff like that for going to the school." It was a nice favor, and Ross began attending auto repair classes. Then tennis came calling again.

Pete Brown, a coach at L.A. Trade Tech Junior College, asked Ross if he'd like to come to the technical school, learn a trade, and play tennis for him. Jubilantly, Ross quit the skills center and went running to Trade Tech. He had made a college team after all. "He was a very good player," recalled Brown. "I'd say he was probably my number-three guy on the team at the time." Ross recalled that he "played number one and number two at different times of the season. You know, like sometimes one guy would beat me and sometimes I would beat him. So we would go back and forth."

By then Ross had drifted away from his two childhood tennis mentors, Bouquet and Williams. Ross was embarrassed by his failure to get a scholarship, and he sensed that Williams wasn't eager to have him around anymore, since it was clear he wasn't going to make a major university team.

Ross began spending more time with Mr. Fisher, the upholstery teacher, and the two played tennis together frequently. Ross soon adopted Fisher as a father figure. "Me and him, we would go play, you know, what we called hitting. I would hit with him, because they like to hit with people that's better than them, and in return he would buy me tennis shoes, racquets, help me get—like if I couldn't get a racquet strung, I could call him and say that, you know, 'I need my racquet strung' and he would pay for it."

Fisher, Ross said, "was considered an uppity black guy. He was single. He stayed in the Baldwin Hills area, which is a nicer part of Los Angeles. He had a brand-new Cadillac, you know, nice jewelry, school teacher." Ross said he would "go by his house from time to time" after getting off school at Trade Tech, where the illiterate Ross, ironically, was studying bookbinding.

As the two became closer, Fisher let his guard down. In 1981, shortly before he left Trade Tech, Ross found out why Mr. Fisher was able to afford jewelry and brand-new Cadillacs on a trade school teacher's salary. "We had a conversation one day. I found out that he was dealing and also using narcotics. I'm not exactly sure how the conversation came up but we started talking about it and he started explaining to me what it was all about."

Ross said he was glad the topic arose. At this point in his life, he was looking for any way to make a buck, and it really didn't matter if it was legal or not. He'd crossed that threshold already. "Actually, when he explained it to me, I wanted to know more about it, so I started asking him more questions," Ross said. "He showed me some. It was about as big as a matchhead and he said, 'Well, this right here is worth $50 and you can sell this and it just keeps getting better and better,' is basically what he said."

Ross mulled it over. Selling cocaine certainly seemed a lot better and a lot less risky than stealing and stripping cars, which is what he'd been doing to put himself through Trade Tech. He discussed it with his running partner, Ollie Newell, known as "Big Loc" because some people thought he acted crazy. Newell, who'd just gotten out of jail and needed money, agreed that selling dope looked like a lot less work for a lot more money.

But Ross had one reservation: all the dope dealers he knew eventually got fucked up on their own product. Nothing was more pathetic than seeing a burned-out old dealer begging nickels and dimes from his former clients. That wasn't the way Ricky Ross envisioned his life ending.

"Ollie was kinda like the one that kinda like coerced me into getting into the business," Ross said. "You know, he's like, 'Come on, man, you can do it, you don't mess around with nothing, you don't smoke, you don't drink, you're clean, you can handle it.'"

Ross made up his mind. They went back to see Mr. Fisher and announced that they were ready to try it out. Ross said Fisher gave them "a fifty-dollar piece" and "we went to a neighborhood and tried to sell it."

It was not an encouraging start. "We got beat out of it," Ross said. "We gave it to somebody and they said they was going to pay us later and it didn't happen." Ross said he had to go slinking back to Fisher to tell him about the "sale," but he assured the teacher that "the guy was going to pay me the money, and he said, 'Okay, don't worry about it.'"

Chastened, Ross and Newell regrouped for another try. They scoped out the parking lot at Bret Harte Junior High, their alma mater, and stole a car from a faculty member. Selling the fancy wheels brought them $250, and a week or so after their first debacle, they went strutting back to Fisher's house with their hard-earned cash.

"We bought what's called an 8-track of cocaine from him. It's three grams of cocaine. At that time, it probably was about a gram of cocaine and about two grams of cut." Taking the 8-track for $250, they cut it again and sold it off in bits and pieces. "We could take it to our neighborhood where we stayed at and it would sell for [a total of] five, six hundred dollars. . .. I think the first time we might have made about $600 off it. . .an awful lot of money."

Instead of spending the profits, Ross said, they went back to Fisher's house and ordered more cocaine. "Sold it, made more money," Ross said. "I didn't really know the game. It was like we were just stumbling through, you know what I'm saying? Picking up as we go."

Ross said the amount of cash he was able to bring in scared him.

"I was selling, and Ollie was standing back, you know, and watching me, you know, make sure didn't nobody try to rob me or nothing like that," Ross said. "So I would make like three hundred dollars, I would take it home and put it up, because I didn't want to be standing out there with a whole lot of dope and a whole lot of money. Because the police raided the spot all the time, you know. They might be raided every 15 or 20 minutes. It was a PCP street. They was selling PCP there. But they wouldn't pay no attention to me unless I had a lot of money on me."

Ross said the cops mostly just smelled dealers' hands, looking for the telltale stench of PCP. "They would just smell my hands, pat me and let me go. But if I had a wad of money, it would draw attention, so we never wanted to get over two or three hundred dollars."

Acquaintances who were dealing PCP—"slanging Sherm" or "selling water," as it was called—made fun of him for selling coke because there was a much bigger market for angel dust. "All the guys selling PCP used to tell us, 'Ya'll can make more money, ya'll should sell PCP.' And I was like, 'No, that's all right, I don't want to mess with PCP. That's too hard.' And cocaine was more, like, flyer, more like the uppity people, you know, wasn't nobody going crazy, you know? When they smoked the PCP they would go crazy and stuff and I would think, 'I ain't gonna be involved with that.' Cocaine is like, mellow, and it was cool. So I didn't mind doing it."

Still slightly unsure of the future of the cocaine business, Ross kept his hand in the auto business as well. He was still stealing cars and fencing them or stripping them down in his body shop and parting them out. On March 19, 1982, he was arrested by the LAPD for grand theft auto. The police found a Mercedes Benz in his garage with parts that didn't match. Ross dipped into his cash reserves and hired a Beverly Hills lawyer named Alan Fenster, a former prosecutor and film studio lawyer who had little trouble getting the auto theft charge tossed out of court.

"There was no evidence Ricky had any knowledge about that car," said Fenster, whose performance in that felony case would lead him to many years of lucrative employment with Ross. Fenster, who'd been defending drug dealers and drug users since the early 1970s, said it was "my recollection that when I met Rick, he was already dealing drugs. Ricky was introduced to me by another client I had, who was a dealer, and I recall that he told me Ross was someone who was into some serious dealing then."

Early 1982 was an exceptionally good time to be in the cocaine business. It was like getting in on the ground floor of Amway. "At first we was just going to do it until we made $5,000," Ross said. "We made that so fast we said, 'No, we'll quit when we make $20,000.' Then we was going to quit when we saved enough to buy a house. . ."

Though it would not become apparent for some time, the cocaine industry was then undergoing dramatic changes that would boost the fortunes of dealers everywhere. The drug was finally beginning to filter down from the penthouses into the real world, opening up a whole new audience for its seductive charms.

The most basic reason was supply and demand. In some cities, Miami in particular, supply was beginning to outstrip demand, thanks largely to the efforts of Carlos Lehder and his pals in Medellín, Colombia, who had revolutionized the import/export part of the business. By early 1982, the Medellín cartel had gotten its act together and—using special airplanes, radar avoidance techniques, and specially designed speedboats—began bringing in unheard-of amounts of cocaine, mostly through the Bahamas.

Ten days before Rick Ross's auto theft arrest in March 1982, Customs agents in Miami searched an airplane, owned by a tiny Colombian air cargo company, that had flown in from Medellín. By the time agents arrived, workers were busy unloading dozens of boxes labeled "jeans." But when an inspector stuck a screwdriver into one of them, he didn't hit denim. White powder came pouring out of the hole.

When the Customs men had finished weighing the cocaine, the scales topped out at 3,906 pounds, nearly four times the size of the previous U.S. cocaine seizure record. It was, authors Guy Gugliotta and Jeff Leen wrote in *Kings of Cocaine*, the DEA's "first look at the shadow of the beast."

As more loads like that got through, the wholesale price of cocaine in the U.S. began dropping. But it never dropped dramatically enough to make it popular in low-income neighborhoods. According to the 1994 Rand Institute study, between 1979 and 1982 ounce prices in L.A. fell from the stratospheric to the merely exorbitant: $4,844 vs. $4,011. Gram prices fell slightly during the same period, from $321 to $259. Kilo prices dropped more significantly, from around $75,000 to around $60,000. Major importers and top-level dealers began seeing big price breaks. But if the Rand study's figures are accurate, for the average Joe who bought by the gram, cocaine was still extremely expensive.

And that was okay with Ricky Ross and Ollie Newell. At those prices, they didn't need a lot of customers. By the end of 1981, they were finally starting to make some real money. The number of users in the neighborhoods wasn't growing that much, but they were stealing customers away from other dealers. "We just had a price," Ross said. "Nobody in the neighborhood could touch us."

The cocaine they were getting from Fisher was slightly cheaper than what others were paying, and when Ross asked him why, Fisher told him he "had a really good connection." Since Ross could charge less, it wasn't too hard to find customers willing to pay $125 a gram instead of the $150 or $200 they'd been paying. Any chance to save a buck—especially after being gouged all these years—made for very happy and loyal clients. "People would come from everywhere, man. They would come from Pomona, Pasadena, Riverside, Long Beach. It wasn't just like an L.A. thing."

Ross also exercised some of the same type of discipline that had kept him out on the tennis courts, swinging the racquet and running, hour after hour, day after day. "I mean, listen, when you got in the dope business, everybody wanted to get high. Nobody wanted to sell dope," Ross said disgustedly. "It was like. . .even Ollie! Ollie was, was, was straight and always wanted to get high, get high, get high. So. . .I finally got in it, I said, 'Well, man, you're using up all the profit!' This was in the early stages, and he said, 'Well, I ain't gonna do no more.' But everybody else wanted to get high. [It was] the whole motto, you know, in our neighborhood—because we never left our neighborhood; we was like confined to South Central L.A.—everybody was just getting high. Let's party, man."

Ross was not the party-hearty type, not when it came to business. He considered himself first and foremost to be a professional cocaine trafficker. It was his job to move dope, and he did it with his usual intensity. "You know how some people feel that God put them down here to be a preacher? I felt that he had put me down to be the cocaine man," Ross told the *L.A. Times* in 1994. And like a missionary for a new religion, Ross began creating cocaine dealers.

"Eventually, all the guys that was selling PCP started seeing everybody coming [to me] with their hundred dollars, and they were selling like ten dollars worth, five dollars worth, you know, sticks. They knew every time somebody came to me, it was a hundred dollars. So I didn't have to see that many people, maybe, fifteen people a day, you know, I make fifteen hundred dollars and they started seeing to that and knowing how much money I was making.

"So then they started saying, 'Well, I'm gonna sell some water and you know I'm going to buy two hundred dollars worth from Rick and start, you know, investing it in cocaine and start doing it myself. So the next thing I know, all these guys were coming to me saying, 'Man, I want to get an eight-track.'"

But Ross's source, Mr. Fisher, was getting antsy about all the cocaine Ross and Newell were ordering. An occasional gram here and there was fine, he told Ross, but he was a schoolteacher, not Super Fly. The only reason he did a little dealing out the side was to pay for his own supply. Rick and Ollie were making a business out of it, and if they wanted to do that it was their business, but he didn't want anything to do with it.

"I think he was getting tired of us calling him up all the time and having him get us some more," Ross said. "Mr. Fisher was working so he told me to go ahead and deal directly with Ivan and we met at Mr. Fisher's house and I got the stuff."

"Ivan," a handsome, smiling Latino, had been supplying Mr. Fisher with cocaine for about a year. Ross had seen him around Fisher's house before, but they'd never been introduced.

During their first meeting, Ivan brought along another Hispanic—Henry—but Ricky wasn't clear what part Henry played, other than that he was Ivan's brother-in-law. Maybe he was his partner. Or maybe he'd just come along for the ride.

In halting English, Ivan told them that he would be happy to be their supplier from now on. If they wanted any more product, they should call him directly, instead of bothering Mr. Fisher. He slipped Ross a folded paper with a phone number on it. On the way out, Ivan told Ross that he would get them a better price than Mr. Fisher had. "We moved up fast," Ross said. "We went from moving grams to moving ounces." And Ivan proved true to his word. "After I started dealing directly with Ivan, it got better. We could take. . .the same thing we was buying from Mr. Fisher for $200 and turn it into $900, because we found out Mr. Fisher had been taking some of the money. He might have been making like $50, $75 off each one [8-track]. So we started making more money."

With more cash flow, Ross was able to order larger amounts of cocaine from Ivan and get a better price, a volume purchase break. And then he could cut his street prices even further. "He kept incrementally expanding his quantity, and every time he could do that, he was bringing the price down just a little bit more, and then what he would gain from volume, he would put right back into the operation," *Times* reporter Katz said. "It was just classic economics. And he saw all this in a way I guess others didn't, or weren't as disciplined as him to act on."

Some of this discipline was not entirely of Ross's choosing. One reason he and Newell began reinvesting their profits so faithfully was because they didn't dare spend the money on anything else. "My momma was strict, right? Both our mothers, me and Ollie's mother, was strict, right? So we couldn't show the money! We had like. . .we had $1,000 and we didn't even buy new tennis shoes! Because my mother woulda knew: 'Where'd you get them shoes from?'

"So we, like, hid our money. We was hiding our money from our mothers!" Ross laughed, shaking his head at the idea of two badass cocaine dealers so afraid of their mommas they couldn't spend their loot. "So even if we buy clothes, we'd hide them in the garage and put them on after we'd leave so she wouldn't find out."

But the nature of his business made it difficult to hide forever. Eventually Annie Ross figured out what was going on.

"When she found out I was selling dope, she had a fit. Threw me out of the house," Ross said. "I never rented no apartment or nothing like that. I had some money but I didn't know how to rent an apartment. I was living in her garage. I fixed it up like a little house. She was like, 'Boy, something going on. I don't know what you're doing but you ain't doing something right. You got all these people coming around here. Tell them people to stop coming round my house,'" Ross said.

He "really didn't do business there," he said, but when a customer wanted something, someone had to come by and let him know. "And she was like, 'There's too many people coming over here, I know something is wrong.' One day she just said, 'Get your stuff and leave. Don't come back over here. And Ollie, don't you come back either.' Because you know Ollie is like her godson. So she threw us out. But I had a little bit of money then and I moved in with one of my cousins and started paying her to let me stay there.

"But that's basically how we got started."

After eight months with their new supplier, just as their business really began expanding, "something happened to Ivan," Ross said. He'd disappeared. Ross and Newell panicked. Their only supplier had dropped off the face of the earth. Where were they going to get their cocaine now? From afar, Danilo Blandón watched events unfold. It was time for him to make his move.

"A million hits is not enough"

Ivan's whereabouts were no mystery to Danilo Blandón. He'd been observing Ivan's dealings with Ricky Ross for quite some time, seeing their sales expand, watching the venture become more and more profitable. He had to admit it; he was jealous. Despite all the work he'd been doing for Norwin Meneses personally—keeping the books, working for the Contras, helping Norwin's wife run the restaurant and the T-shirt company—the drug kingpin was still nagging him to move more cocaine. Every couple of months Blandón would drive all the way to Meneses's house in Pacifica, a nine-hour trip, pick up another kilo or two, drive back to L.A., and then have to put up with Meneses flogging him to sell it.

Blandón had been hitting up other car salesmen he knew, helping other cocaine dealers through dry spells now and again, but he wasn't making any great strides. He estimated that he spent "about a year, year and a half, you know, with the same two, one or two keys."

But Ivan Arguellas, another Nicaraguan exile scuttling around L.A. with cocaine to sell, had found this kid in South Central, Ricky Ross, and they were really starting to move the powder. Blandón knew Ivan, who also used the name Claudio Villavicencio, because of their shared heritage and their new profession. He sold Ivan a little cocaine every once in a while. But Ivan had other sources of supply.

The Torres brothers—the two giants with the little car lot—also got into the cocaine business around this time, according to Blandón, who surmised that they were supplying Ricky Ross. "I supposed that maybe they start with Rick," Blandón said. "I know them so well, you know, they are Nicaraguan people. . .. When I saw them getting rich, getting money, so I saw that they start doing business with him."

If the Torres brothers were dealing with Ross, as Blandón claims, it is likely that they were doing so as Ivan's suppliers, because Ross said he never met the Torreses face-to-face until long after Ivan disappeared.

Blandón had no other sources. He was stuck with Norwin Meneses, who was squeezing him dry for the Contras, charging him $60,000 a kilo and taking nearly every penny he made. Norwin was holding him back, he believed. "I didn't have my own car," Blandón complained. "I have to rent cars, you know. I used to work with him [Meneses], you know, coming from San Francisco, going back, and I thought, 'Hey, what are you doing? You're not doing nothing, you know? You're not making no—no money.'"

That's why Ivan's deal with Ricky Ross looked so good to Blandón. This little kid was a mover, and he was getting bigger all the time. "I wished I could have known Ricky. . .because all the time I want to grow in the business," Blandón said. "He [Ivan] and his brother-in-law [Henry] was selling to Rick. So I wish I could [have known] him. . .. I knew how much they were selling."

Blandón got his wish. Ivan Arguellas caught a bullet in the spine that crippled him from the waist down. He was hospitalized for months and forced to quit the cocaine business while he recuperated. "He got shot by his wife," Blandón said. "He's paralyzed right now." A tough break for Ivan, but it was the break Danilo Blandón had been waiting for. Ivan's customers had fallen to his brother-in-law, Henry Corrales, a drug dealing amateur. "Henry was kind of a knucklehead," Ross recalled. "He was a nice guy who just wanted to party all the time. He didn't know what he was doing."

Blandón agreed. "When he [Ivan] got in the accident, it started Henry Corrales getting in [the business]," he said. "Henry was running the business because his brother-in-law was in the hospital. And when the guy that got paralyzed get in the hospital, he lost that [cocaine] contact. And Henry didn't have any contact more than me when he took over."

In all the time he'd been hanging around Ivan, Henry apparently hadn't made any connections of his own. In a business where a man is only as good as his sources, Henry Corrales was hurting. Ivan's people expected him to deliver. And where the hell was he going to come up with the cocaine for these black gangsters downtown?

When Blandón came by to offer his sympathies and lend a hand, Henry must have seen him as a savior. "When he doesn't have any sources, [he] asked to me and that's when we began the relationship with him," Blandón said. Corrales told him Ross was "the best customer" he and Ivan had, "a big customer that they were selling five or ten [kilos] a week. . .. For me, it was a big customer."

Henry was so grateful for Blandón's help that he agreed to share his profits on every kilo he sold, fifty-fifty. "We split the commission," Blandón said, but he couldn't remember how much that was. "I was selling to Henry Corrales and Henry Corrales was selling to him [Ricky]. Henry was coming to me to pick up the stuff."

Ross denied he was receiving that much cocaine from Henry when he started his relationship with him. He and Ollie were still dealing mostly ounces at that point, he said. It was in multi-ounce lots, to be sure—they'd buy four or eight ounces a day. But he said they did not graduate to buying kilos until later. Blandón said he knew how much Ross had been buying from Ivan because the quantity he sold him determined his price.

Ross said he did not know that Danilo Blandón had adopted him as a customer. Just as he hadn't known where Ivan got his coke from, he didn't know where Henry got his. It's not that he wasn't curious. It was just a question cocaine dealers didn't ask each other.

In the cocaine business, serious dealers had good reason to cut out their wholesaler and buy directly from the source. The closer they got, the cheaper and purer the cocaine became. The more hands it passed through, the more times the product got stepped on, or cut, and the lower the profits became.

All Ricky knew was that once he started dealing with Henry, his cocaine prices fell again. Maybe Ivan's disappearance wasn't going to be such a bad deal after all, Ross decided. "After we started dealing with Henry, it got even better."

Not long afterward, Ross started noticing a slight change in the cocaine market around South Central. Some of his customers were taking the cocaine powder he was selling them and turning it into weird little rocks—just like the one he'd seen back in 1979. A couple dealers had actually starting trying to sell rocks, he noticed, but the dopers Ricky knew regarded the product suspiciously.

"At first, nobody wanted rock," Ross said. Nobody wanted to mess with cocaine that didn't look like cocaine. Secondly, the price was too low. How could anything claiming to be cocaine cost only $25? It had to be a rip-off.

But Ricky vividly recalled his Christmastime experience with the pimp a couple years back, when the man had smoked a rock and come running back waving $100. If this stuff catches on, Ross considered, it might be worth looking into. Then one of his customers asked him if he had any rock to sell, and Ross got the message.

"See, the way rock came into play, it would be like, say somebody was going to work early in the morning and they wanted some cocaine. They wanted to get high and they'd say, 'Damn, I gotta cook this shit up and I'm late for work,' and they'd ask me, 'Can you cook it up for me?'" It was a question of convenience. Ross said sure, and promptly hired someone to make it for him.

"Know what I got in chemistry in school? A 'F'!" Ross laughed. "First started out, I was paying someone to cook it. But everybody always used to make it more complicated than it was. Like the cookers never wanted you to learn how to cook it. So everybody kind of kept it like hush-hush. 'Oh man, you *got* to let me do it. You goin' to *mess* it up.'"

In truth, rock cocaine is easy to make. Put cocaine powder in a pan, add some water and baking soda, and heat until it starts crackling. Done.

The recipe had been floating around a little while before it caught hold in South Central. In November 1979, Tennyson Guyer's Select Committee investigating cocaine provided the first public airing of the ingredients needed to turn powder into crack. "A saucer, a glass, a paper towel and Arm & Hammer baking soda are about all that is needed," testifed Dr. Franklin Sher of Walnut Creek, California, a Bay Area physician whose family owned the country's largest freebase paraphernalia company at the time.

In 1981 an author named T. Davidson published a pamphlet, *The Natural Process: Base-ic Instructions and Baking Soda Recipe*, out of Tustin, California, an Orange County town about thirty miles east of L.A., which contained step-by-step instructions on how to make crack. Davidson hailed the simple procedure as "safe, healthy and economical."

Ross said he watched his cooker for a while and thought, "'What the hell, I'm going to try it.' Because the first person that ever tried it was me. Ollie didn't try it first. I tried it first. Then I told Ollie, 'You can do that shit too.' So we started cooking it ourselves and we started selling what we called 'ready rock.'" He crumbled the rock up and delivered it in $20 hits—nuggets about the size of a ball bearing—first in tiny bits of aluminum foil, then later in tiny glass vials.

Ross smoked some himself and found the craving for more so powerful that he vowed to stay as far away from the shit as possible.

But, man, what a product.

He saw how his customers reacted. Once they tried it, they never wanted anything else. "I think what made us start smoking was curiosity and frustration. I know that it wasn't the Black brothers' or sisters' intention to smoke cocaine as a career. It's just so addicting. It's like one hit is one too many and a million hits is not enough," explained Big Shiphead, a Shotgun Crip since he was twelve years old. "In my opinion, it's the worst drug that ever hit the face of this earth."

What happened next was just what the scientists had been predicting since 1974. As *base* had done in Lima and La Paz eight years earlier, rock caused a sensation in South Central. But it was an underground sensation initially.

A 1985 study by two University of Southern California social scientists provides some of the only existing documentation of crack's progression in South Central in the early 1980s, when Ross and others began selling it. It is like reading the origins of the Black Death.

"We. . .reviewed the LAPD South Bureau Narcotic Division activity reports from January of 1982 to the present [April 1985]," sociologists Malcolm Klein and Cheryl Maxson wrote. "From January to April of 1982 there are notes of cocaine increase with freebase as the most popular method. In May there is a random comment about 'rock hard' pre-free-based cocaine. With continuing increases in arrests, the first real mention of rocks came in September 1982 in the Southeast division. It showed up in 77th Division after another five months. Thereafter, monthly reports continued to report the presence of rock cocaine throughout the Bureau in increasing amounts."

And that was only what the LAPD was finding when they busted somebody stupid, according to Ross; "They mighta got some dude with a few rocks in his pocket, but the LAPD didn't know nothing about what was really goin' on. The LAPD didn't mess with us at all."

Former LAPD narcotics detective Steve Polak, who was riding the streets of South Central at that time, said Ross's viewpoint was essentially correct. Street cops like him, Polak insisted, saw what was happening. As the USC study showed, many of them were putting it in their reports. But none of them really knew what they were looking at, and the brass didn't seem that interested in finding out. "We didn't know what it was. I was there as a cop in uniform. I was stopping people on the streets and seeing these rocks. I'd see them throwing these rocks, these little things, and I'd go, 'What the fuck is this?' I didn't know what the fuck it was, you know?"

When Polak asked, he was told they were bleached peanuts. "I'd put the handcuffs on them and I'd say, 'You know this is dope. I carry bleached peanuts all the time in my pocket and throw them away when I see the cops, so, you know, come on, give me a break.' It's just a matter of sending it to the lab and seeing exactly what he had and, you know, it was coming back this coke stuff."

Polak started seeing other strange items as well. "We were stopping these people and they had these little bottles of Puerto Rican rum and little glass pipes and what we called a torch, a torn-off piece of a coat hanger with a cotton swab wrapped around it. What they were doing was dipping the swab in the rum because of its high alcohol content and then they'd put the rock on top of the glass pipe and then they'd flame [the swab] up. But then again, you learn, you know? There's nothing written on this shit."

Once word got out that the Five-O was wise and was starting to bust people with rocks on them, Polak said, "We'd drive by and see them put their hands in their mouths. And we'd come back an hour later and they'd either be overdosed or wired like a motherfucker, jumping all around like little tops. They'd put it in their mouths and they'd leave it in so long it would start to dissolve, like an aspirin. These guys were falling all over."

Smarter users found crack to be an ideal drug for the streets of South Central, where the cops tend to frisk young black men just for looking at them funny. Now you could actually carry dope with you in public, and the cops couldn't get there fast enough. "It's easy to get rid of in a pinch. Drop it on the ground and it's almost impossible to find," complained a Miami narcotics detective in 1986. "Step on it and the damned thing is history. All of a sudden your evidence ceases to exist."

The inner city of Miami started seeing crack about a year after the Los Angeles market started, but on a much smaller scale. Longtime Miami area drug researcher James Inciardi, a criminology professor, wrote in 1988 that "although crack in one form or another appeared in Miami as early as 1982, at first it was generally limited to the Caribbean and Haitian communities." The drug "advanced to the wider drug subcultures in 1984," Inciardi wrote. "By early 1985, crack had become widely available in every inner-city neighborhood in the greater Miami area."

According to several sources, 1985 was the year Jamaican posses took over the nascent crack market in inner-city Miami and began organizing and expanding it. Though the Miami market trailed the L.A. market by about a year or two, the similarities between them are striking in some respects. Both markets exploded following political upheavals in foreign countries—upheavals in which the CIA played an active role.

Just as the South Central crack market began flourishing when political exiles from Nicaragua arrived to raise money for themselves and their political causes, the Miami crack market didn't really take off until political exiles from Jamaica moved in. The intelligence division of the Drug Enforcement Administration, in a 1994 report on crack cocaine, offered a startling explanation for the evolution of the Jamaican posses from small-time dopers to "one of the most effective trafficking groups" in the United States, rivaled only by the Crips and Bloods of Los Angeles.

Since the 1970s Jamaica had been run by a socialist government headed by Michael Manley, a graduate of the London School of Economics, who immediately angered U.S. officials by recognizing the Cuban government of Fidel Castro and supporting socialist rebels that a CIA proxy army was battling in Angola. In 1977 two investigative reporters exposed a "destabilization program" against Manley's government reportedly being run by the CIA's Jamaican station chief, Norman Descoteaux. The campaign included covert shipments of arms to Manley's opponents, the use of selective violence, bombings, and assassinations, covert financial aid to the conservative Jamaica Labour party, the fomenting of extensive labor unrest, and bribery.

One of the CIA agents who would later play a key role in the Contra project, Luis Posada Carriles—a Cuban Bay of Pigs veteran with a history of engaging in arms-for-drugs deals—was sighted in Jamaica near the scene of at least one bombing, the reporters wrote.

During the course of a bitter election campaign in 1980 between Manley and a candidate from the CIA-backed Jamaican Labour party, rival political gangs killed "more than 700 people," according to the DEA. Manley lost the election. What happened next was in many ways a carbon copy of what had happened in Nicaragua and Los Angeles a year earlier, despite the fact that here the political changing of the guard was roughly the reverse of the Nicaraguan situation. "Following the election, many of these political gunmen left or were driven out of Jamaica and immigrated to the United States. They settled into the large Jamaican and Caribbean communities in Miami and New York City," the DEA intelligence report stated. "In the early 1980s, the U.S. posse leaders maintained a sense of allegiance to their political parties in Jamaica, sending weapons and drug profits back home." Eventually, the DEA said, the Jamaican traffickers in the United States "evolved from small-time marijuana sellers into nationwide cocaine and crack distributors."

The political leanings of Miami's and South Central's major cocaine suppliers were not known to lower-level dealers and hustlers, who probably wouldn't have cared anyway. Dope was dope. Politics was polities. And it wasn't until one got to the very top of the cocaine business that the two worlds intersected.

Ricky Ross had no political interests at all, and never would. His worldview was limited to South Central, and how much cocaine he could move into it. What his Nicaraguan suppliers were doing with their money was their business, he figured.

What he was concerned with in late 1982 was that the new crack market in South Central wasn't turning into the money-maker he'd been expecting. Dealers had gotten away with charging more for powder, he said, because it sold in more expensive doses. When you were talking to someone about $300 for a gram or $3,000 for an ounce, you could pack a little more profit in around the edges, and nobody would say anything. "We was making more money when it was powder," he groused. "[The market] went to powder and rock, and eventually just went straight to rock because *everybody* had stopped snorting. I had to get out on the street myself and sell $20 rocks, run at the cars."

The reason crack became so popular in South Central and elsewhere was that it only cost a few bucks to become a customer. Crack normally sold in $25 hits, but you could find tiny rocks for as little as $5. "One of the principles of modern marketing is to develop products for increasingly small market segments at prices each segment can afford. Crack pushers accomplished this by creating prepackaged units at more-or-less standard sizes and prices," drug experts David Allen and James Jekel wrote in 1991.

Yale cocaine expert Dr. Robert Byck agreed that crack was a triumph of modern marketing principles. But there were more reasons than packaging for why it took off so quickly, he said. "I think the crack phenomenon is not just a matter of smoking freebase. What happened with crack was a change in the selling, distribution, and price. It was sold in a very convenient form, which was accessible to a wide range of people. Smoking, unfortunately, in our society is not an abnormal behavior. Injecting something intravenously is. Snorting something into your nose is abnormal.

"So here was a way of taking a drug that was completely within the range of so-called normal behavior. And. . .gave you the same kick that you got from shooting it intravenously, but this was free of the risk of AIDS. It was socially acceptable and, on top of that, the drug was sold in a very convenient unit package. This was to drugs like McDonald's was to hamburgers. They knew how to sell it. And I think that what happened to crack was, they knew how to sell it."

Crack's second big advantage over powder was that it democratized cocaine not only for users but for dealers as well. It didn't take a large investment anymore to call yourself a player. You could buy half a gram of powder for $150, rock it up, and get ten to twelve doses of crack, each of which would give the buyer a bigger blast than ten times as much powder. And you doubled your money.

"Crack increases its own on-the-street sales force because many addicts find they must become pushers in order to make enough money to sustain their own habits," Allen and Jekel wrote. "And they can get cocaine powder at 'wholesale' prices this way and make their own crack."

For Ross, that was the biggest problem with crack. Now he had to worry about competition from customers as well as other dealers. Competition meant fewer customers, and that meant less volume, negating the very advantage of selling crack in the first place. At the same time, his costs were going up; crack cost more to make. When he sold powder, all he needed was a scale and a bag of lactose. Now he needed a place to cook the shit up, because he couldn't do it in his cousin's apartment. He had to rent an apartment and pay rent bills and power bills. And then he needed vials, and people to help put the crack in the vials. To get the necessary volume, they had to pay people to go out and sell it, because he and Ollie couldn't do it all by themselves now. Overall, it was a bigger headache, with lower profits.

Since standardization had eliminated Ross's strategy of cutting street prices and boosting volume, he had to figure out another way to raise his profits. Fortunately, Danilo Blandón was a stickler for quality, and Henry's cocaine was of a very high purity. By experimenting, he found that he could dilute the cocaine even further, *before* he mixed it with the baking soda, and his customers couldn't tell the difference. Because the dope was being cooked and smoked, purity and appearance didn't matter as much as it once had.

"We called it 'blowup' and what we would do is cut it with procaine," Ross said. "You could get more weight and it would look bigger." Ross settled on a three-to-one cut, which turned one ounce of powder into four ounces. "You could turn it into as many as you wanted but the more you cut it, the less it was acceptable. . .one batch we cooked up we couldn't sell it. Customers wouldn't take it no more."

Now he had four times as much crack to sell for roughly the same cost. But a couple months later, other dealers began using blowup too. That's when he decided to get out of street-corner crack sales and get into wholesaling, selling to other crack dealers.

There was a new thing happening in parts of South Central and the San Fernando Valley suburb of Pacoima: rock houses, which some dealers had set up as one-stop shopping centers for crack. You made your crack in the kitchen, sold it in the dining room, and the customer smoked it in the living room. When they were out, the cycle began again. Since crackheads smoked hit after hit after hit until they ran out of money, it made more sense to get them in the house and keep them there, rather than go to a park or stand on the street drawing a crowd by making repeat sales all day long. Some of the more enterprising rock house operators had "strawberries" back in the bedroom if that's what you wanted, crack whores who would suck a dick for a suck on the pipe.

James Inciardi had been a drug researcher in Miami for years and considered himself to be a hardened and streetwise observer. But nothing, he wrote, prepared him for the nightmarish world of a crack house. "I observed what appeared to be the forcible gang-rape of an unconscious child. Emaciated, seemingly comatose, and likely no more than 14 years of age, she was lying spread-eagled on a filthy mattress while four men in succession had vaginal intercourse with her," Inciardi wrote. "After they had finished and left the room, another man came in and they engaged in oral sex." Inciardi discovered that she was a "house girl," who got food, clothing, a roof over her head, and all the crack she wanted if she put it out for the customers.

That was where he could still use his high-volume, low-price strategy, Ross decided. Those new rock houses and those baby brand-new dealers out there—those hustlers buying half-grams and "slanging" on the corners—they would be his customers. Ricky would sell his "ready rock" in batches, cheaper than they could make it themselves, prepackaged and ready to peddle. And the other dealers could have the street trade and the competition and cops that went along with it.

The move, which Ross places near the end of 1982, worked. It reduced his operation's costs and took him off the streets. It reduced his customers' costs as well. He moved once again into an arena with no competition, where he was free to set his own prices, cherry-pick the best customers, and undercut anyone who tried to move in on him.

"We was like. . .the first quantity dealers," Ross said. "Because there wasn't nobody really dealing quantity in L.A. at that time." Others agreed. "Ricky, as far as I'm concerned, I mean, there had to have been someone before him to hand him a rock, but he had to be one of the very first people, if not *the* first guy, to really sense the economic potential of street-level marketing," *L.A. Times* reporter Jesse Katz said in 1995. "In my story I called him the first crack millionaire to rise from the streets of South Central." Katz's 1994 profile, headlined "Deposed King of Crack," said of Ross, "He didn't make the drug and he didn't smuggle it across the border, but Ricky Donnell Ross did more than anyone else to democratize it, boosting volume, slashing prices and spreading disease on a scale never before conceived."

Ross told CIA inspectors that he was South Central's biggest cocaine dealer by the end of 1982. "I knew this because it was my business strategy to know my competitors and stay on good terms with them," Ross told the agents.

James Galipeau, a longtime probation officer in the South Central area, said Ross was indeed a pioneer. "The thing about Rick that set him apart from the other guys who started out selling when he did, guys like Honcho Day and Michael Harris, is that pretty soon, they ended up buying from him. And they were learning from him."

But it seemed that as soon as Ricky got one problem solved, another one would crop up. Now Henry was freaking out on him. Henry had never been all that reliable to begin with, Ross said, but he was getting worse all the time. He wasn't showing up when he said he would. Sometimes at night he didn't want to come down to the 'hood. And he was looking real nervous when he came. Rick didn't like it. Henry was still his only supplier. If he took a hike like Ivan did, Rick would have to find another quantity dealer with Henry's prices. Fat chance of that.

As it turned out, something *was* going on with Henry. He didn't have the stomach for the business. And the more cocaine he sold to Ricky Ross, the more fretful he became. By late 1982 or early 1983, Ross said, Henry had gone from selling him ounces to selling him kilograms. And Blandón said he was selling many, many kilos to Ross through Henry.

"How many kilos a week?" Blandón was asked.

"To Henry?"

"To Henry, to Ricky."

"To Henry could be 10 or 15," Blandón said.

"Ten to fifteen?"

"Yes."

"Would 50 a month be a fair estimate?"

"In 1983, it. . .through Henry, yes."

That means Ricky Ross—within a year of crack's first real appearance in South Central L.A.—was selling between 1,000,000 and 1,250,000 doses of crack every single month (using DEA estimates of 20–25 rocks of crack per gram of powder, 20,000 to 25,000 per kilogram).

During 1982 and 1983, Blandón said, he and Meneses brought "three or four" planeloads of cocaine from Miami to Los Angeles. According to the Torres brothers, each one of those loads from Miami ranged between 200 and 400 kilos. These "regular" flights continued until at least 1984, they said. (Whether all of that was sold to Ross, or was divided among other customers of Meneses and Blandón, is not clear.)

Blandón said Henry's cocaine deals with Ross began frightening the novice dealer. "He was selling him so often he was getting so paranoid, you know?" Blandón said. "Somebody from his organization was in jail. . .. He told me, 'I've got $200,000, $300,000, I'm going to leave.'"

Corrales, Blandón said, planned to retire to the relative safety of Honduras. "He feel that he got a lot of money and he told me, 'Let me introduce you to my guy because my brother-in-law is still in the hospital.'" Blandón explained that Ivan Arguellas was still considered "the owner of Ricky Ross" by Henry, but since Ivan was laid up, and Henry was leaving town, Henry wondered if Blandón would mind dealing with Ricky.

Henry was not turning over his best customer for free, though. Blandón would have to continue splitting commissions with him. "He wanted to leave to Honduras, be there and get some commission," Blandón said. "He wanted that I give some commission to him, you know? That was the proposal." Blandón agreed, and Henry took him down to South Central to meet the rising young crack magnate.

"He introduced me, right in front of the house of Mary," Blandón said, referring to Mary Monroe, a friend and employee of Ross. "It was in South L.A.. . .. that was the house that later came to be the warehouse for money, and to deliver."

Ross recalled the meeting well. "We had a place, one of the ladies in our neighborhood, we used to hang out in her back yard and play pool, mess with her daughters. Danilo met us in the front yard. Henry came in the back and knocked on the door and said he wanted to talk to me. He said, 'Come on. Let's go for a ride.' So we got in the car and we were riding around and he said, 'I'm leaving and I'm going to turn you over to the man. He's gonna do a better business than what we been doing and you gonna have a better price. Everything is gonna be better for you."

The price he paid for his cocaine fell once again. "After we started talking directly with Danilo, I mean the price was just. . .everybody was saying it was the bottom. That's what they used to say. 'You've got the cheapest price in town.' Everybody else was paying like $3,000 for an ounce of cocaine and when me and Ollie started dealing directly with Danilo, I think we was getting it for like $1,800 an ounce."

After his trip to South Central, Blandón knew why Henry was nervous. It was "a rough area" of town, he said, and the place fairly bristled with firearms. For his first drug delivery, "We went to an apartment that was on the second floor and there was a door, an iron door. And there was a guy, you know, with a shotgun: 'Who are you?' We identify ourselves, then you have to pass another guy with another machine gun, or shotgun. And inside, near the dinner table in the living room, there were about five guys, and all the guys were there with a gun at the table."

When asked to date that encounter, Blandón was unclear. "1982," he said under oath. "Excuse me. Sorry. 1983. 1983, I think so really. 1983. Excuse me, I make a mistake. 1984, because I was living in Northridge. Yes, 1984." Ross said he was introduced to Blandón about six or seven months after he started dealing with Henry, which would put his first face-to-face meeting with Blandón some time in the fall of 1982 or early 1983.

Henry's retirement also seemed to improve the quality of the cocaine Ross was getting. When he took it to the dealers who were his customers, they raved about it. "They said that the stuff was not cut. It was pure." Ross had finally reached the source, the wellspring from which pure, uncut cocaine flowed in abundance. His street-dealing days were over. Now, he was the man to see.

And true to form, he began to innovate. If there was a neighborhood where the dealers were not pushing his supply, Ross said, he would find the hood's top dealer and pay him a friendly visit, bringing with him a couple kilos of Danilo's finest, which he would give the rival dealer free as a measure of his respect. Try it out and see what you think, he would tell them. And then Ross would tell them the price, and he would have another customer.

Other times, he would invite dealers to smoke parties, where all the crack they wanted would be available on the house. There was plenty more where that came from, they would be told. And the price. . .

Ross said his first deal with Blandón was for "around eight ounces." Blandón, however, said it was much more than that, at least a kilo, and that their business grew geometrically from there. "In those times, there were one, two, three, four, five, six, maybe seven a day," he said. "Every day."

At seven kilos a day, Ross was moving more than 200 kilos of cocaine every single month. That meant he was pumping out around 165,000 vials of crack a day—5 million rocks a month.

"There is no doubt that Ricky Ross created a massive distribution network that poured enormous amounts of crack into Los Angeles, and elsewhere, during the mid-1980s," the Justice Department's Inspector General concluded in 1998, calling it a "huge drug empire."

"I had as many as five cookhouses. Because that was our hardest thing, to cook. Once you cooked it, it was sold," Ross said. Compton crack dealer Leroy "Chico" Brown told of visiting one of Ross's "cookhouses," and his description matched the one Ross gave. A house in a cheap neighborhood would be purchased by a front man and gutted. The windows would be barred and steel doors installed. Large, restaurant-size gas ranges and big aluminum pots would be brought in at night and set up. And then the cookers went to work. They would work in shifts, arriving and departing as if they lived in the house. The only visitors would be the couriers, one to drop off the powder and the other to pick up the crack.

"They were stirring these big pots with those things you use in canoes," Brown said with wonder. "You know, oars."

"Working around the clock, taking the age-old axioms of good business to ominous extremes, [Ross] transformed a curbside operation at 87th and Figueroa into the Wal-Mart of cocaine," the *L.A. Times* wrote in 1994.

South Central L.A. had become a boomtown of sorts. What happened there was reminiscent of what occurred in the hills and hollows of Kentucky during the coal boom of the 1970s, when seemingly worthless land was suddenly worth millions. While most of the residents remained poor and poorly educated, a few struck it rich overnight. Satellite dishes started popping up near shacks. Big, expensive cars—Cadillacs, BMWs and Mercedes Benzes—began rolling through the streets.

In early 1983 stories began appearing in the *Los Angeles Sentinel*, the South Central area's black-oriented news weekly, about the crack houses that were springing up here and there. "I would say that things got worse when cocaine hit the streets in '83 because prior to that all the brothers that were slangin' were selling water, Sherman, angel dust, PCP, or whatever you wanted to call it," said Leibo, an East Side Crip. "About '82 or '83 is when rocks hit the streets hard."

Fed by an unending supply of cocaine from Danilo Blandón, Ricky Ross's crack trafficking organization prospered and grew unhindered by law enforcement in the ghettos of Los Angeles. The cocaine business was turning out to be exactly as he'd seen it in the movies.

"Right when I was starting to sell drugs *Scarface* came out," Ross said, referring to the 1983 remake starring Al Pacino as a cocaine kingpin. "A whole bunch of us went and saw it, like 10 or 15 of us. We took our girlfriends, and we see this guy who. . .don't have nothing and the next thing, he's on top of the world." Like his fictional hero, Ross said, "I became a drug-dealing legend."

Chico Brown, a Corner Pocket Crip who was also heavily influenced by *Scarface*, agreed. "You ask any of the people who they looked up to back when they was startin' out, and all of them will tell you it was Ricky Ross. He was like a legend in the neighborhoods. He got a lotta people started."

"He would have had me by the tail"

Barely a year had passed since the CIA had taken over the financing of the Contras, and already the covert war was no longer a secret. The week before the 1982 elections, *Newsweek* magazine published the first detailed account of the Reagan administration's support of the Contras: "America's Secret War: Target Nicaragua." The cover story portrayed the Contras—whose forces had built up to around 4,000 men by this point—as being in a position to overthrow the Sandinistas. There were full-color photographs of paratroopers dropping from the sky, which made it appear as if the invasion was already under way.

But that was a gross exaggeration of reality. The Contras, in truth, had just started receiving the American weapons and supplies that Reagan had promised them a year earlier. According to one account, the main source for *Newsweek*'s story was none other than CIA director William Casey, who wanted to ensure that the Contra project didn't get shelved. Now that it was public knowledge that the Reagan administration was helping the Contras, Casey's reasoning went, it would look like a sellout—another Bay of Pigs—if it stopped.

The reporting incensed some members of Congress, particularly those who had been told by CIA officials that the Contras were merely border guards, keeping the Sandinistas from sending arms into El Salvador. The Contras' first major act of war, in fact, had nothing to do with El Salvador. Under CIA direction, two bridges linking Honduras and Nicaragua were blown up in March 1982, an operation Contra commanders considered to be the opening shots of the war.

In response to the *Newsweek* report, Congressman Tom Harkin proposed a complete cutoff of funding for all paramilitary activities against the Nicaraguan government. The fact that the war was illegal, Harkin argued, was nothing compared to the U.S. government cozying up to "perhaps the most hated group of Nicaraguans that could exist outside the borders of Nicaragua, and I talk about the *Somocistas*." Harkin called them "vicious, cutthroat murderers" and urged Congress to "end our involvement with this group."

When the Reagan administration heard about Harkin's proposed amendment to the annual defense budget bill, Oliver North later wrote, it "hit the roof. . .. The President let it be known that if Congress approved the Harkin Amendment, which was unlikely anyway, he would promptly veto it." Instead, Congress passed the first Boland Amendment, named for the Massachusetts Democrat, Edward P. Boland, who authored it. Boland, a member of the House Intelligence Committee, knew full well that the CIA was funding the Contras, and he was not opposed to it. But Harkin's move—making a public issue out of a secret CIA project—had put Boland on the spot and riled up other liberals. Boland told Harkin that Congress had no business passing laws like the one he was proposing. That's why there was an Intelligence Committee, Boland lectured, "to keep the nation's secrets and exercise sensible and prudent oversight." The Intelligence Committee, a body generally protective of the CIA, had been one of the few committees told of the secret Contra project.

To quiet Harkin and other liberals, Boland agreed to an amendment that prohibited the use of taxpayer funds "for the purpose of overthrowing the government of Nicaragua or provoking a military exchange between Nicaragua and Honduras." The House passed it on Christmas Eve 1982 by a vote of 411–0.

No doubt the lawmakers were eager to get home for the holidays, but the reason the Boland Amendment received unanimous support was because it accomplished nothing. It was largely a fraud, designed to make it look as if Congress was cracking down on the Contra project without actually doing so.

Internal government memos show that the CIA, the White House, the Defense Department, and the Contras' congressional supporters knew that the Contras had no hope of defeating the Sandinistas. Since there was no way in hell the Contras were ever going to overthrow the Nicaraguan government, their supporters reasoned, they could continue spending CIA funds despite the Boland Amendment. If the Contras were given money for one purpose—arms interdiction—and decided to use it another way, well, that wasn't the CIA's fault, was it? The money hadn't been given "for the purpose" of an overthrow.

Indeed, by early 1983, CIA dollars were pouring into Honduras and Costa Rica in torrents. Best of all, the Contras no longer had to ask their Argentine advisers for permission to spend it. Most of the Argentines were called home in 1982 after their country's disastrous war with Great Britain over the Falkland Islands.

Enrique Bermúdez and the other top-ranking FDN officials started living like real generals. In Tegucigalpa, Honduras, Bermúdez moved into "an elegant two-story place, all dark wood and balconies, overlooking the Tegucigalpa basin from a lovely hillside lot in the exclusive neighborhood of Ciudad Nueva." Bermúdez and his staff spent their evenings dining on roasts, puffing cigars, quaffing tequila, or carousing in the excellent casinos downtown. "Bermúdez had developed a taste for the teenage girls his men were recruiting in Nicaragua," journalist Sam Dillon wrote in his 1991 book *Comandos*. "Bermúdez was inviting them from the base camps back to Ciudad Nueva, one at a time, to try out as his 'secretaries.'"

Dillon wrote that the CIA was sending "tens of thousands of dollars a month to Bermúdez's general staff to pay the 'family aid' salaries of his field commanders, and other prodigious sums to buy food for the thousands of FDN fighters." But much of that aid was being diverted and never reached the soldiers in the field. The Southern Front commanders in Costa Rica, Eden Pastora and "El Negro" Chamorro, constantly complained that Bermúdez and his CIA friends were stiffing them on the supplies, raking off the best weapons and the best food and sending them garbage—planeloads of diapers, feminine napkins, and extra-large underwear. It wasn't merely unfair, they argued, it was an insult to their manhood.

"Bermúdez's staff officers were pocketing the money," Dillon wrote. "They were also stealing half the CIA's food budget. Though they routinely shipped only half the necessary beans, rice and other foodstuffs to the base camps, they were billing the CIA for full rations."

Several accounts, including Dillon's, paint a picture of massive corruption inside the FDN, perpetuated by Bermúdez and his closest associates, death squad leader Ricardo Lau and millionaire land baron Aristides Sanchez. At one point, dozens of midlevel FDN field commanders petitioned to have Bermúdez fired for stealing money and squandering supplies. Some CIA field officers were pushing for his removal on the same grounds.

But Bermúdez had friends at CIA headquarters at Langley, and after he contacted them about the incipient mutiny, the complainers were the ones booted out of the FDN. The CIA brass felt they couldn't dump "the obedient asset who'd helped construct their entire project," Dillon wrote.

Still, congressional discomfort over the CIA's army was growing. In May the House Intelligence Committee issued a special report suggesting that the "operation is illegal" and that the administration knew plainly that the Contras were trying to overthrow the Nicaraguan government. On July 28, 1983, the House passed a resolution by a 228–195 vote to stop all aid to the Contras. "Opposition in the House to aiding the Nicaraguan rebels seemed almost insurmountable and it would be easier for House Democrats to block passage of a new aid authorization in 1984 than it had been to cut it off in 1983," former State

Department official Robert Kagan, a Contra supporter, wrote.

Yet it was somewhere around this time, according to Danilo Blandón, that he stopped sending the profits from his L.A. cocaine sales to the Contras. At other times he has said it was late 1982. In either case, Blandón said that the reason he was given for halting the donations was that the Contras had plenty of money.

"In 1983, okay, the Contra gets a lot of money from the United States," he told a federal grand jury in 1994. "And they were—when Reagan get in the power, Mr. Reagan get in the power, we start receiving a lot of money. And the people that was in charge, it was the CIA, so they didn't want to raise any money because they have, they had the money that they wanted."

"From the government?" Assistant U.S. Attorney David Hall asked.

"Yes, for the Contra revolution."

"Okay."

"So we started—you know, the ambitious person, we started doing business by ourselves," Blandón said.

"To make money for yourselves?"

"Yes."

"There's a lot of money to be made?"

"Yes."

Blandón told CIA inspectors that FDN commander Enrique Bermúdez came to California sometime in 1983 and told him personally that it wasn't necessary for the Los Angeles group to raise any more money. "The FDN needed people, not money, because the CIA was providing money," he said Bermúdez told them. But Blandón's mentor, Norwin Meneses, said Blandón remained a loyal financial supporter of the Contras for the duration of the war. Asked when Blandón stopped giving the Contras monetary support, Meneses replied, "Never, as far as I know."

Blandón said he was working for Meneses at the time the Contra cocaine kickbacks ended. "I continued working for a period of time, about six months, and then I changed because Meneses was—it was the same thing. I wasn't making any money." Blandón was tired of being stuck in the middle of fights between Norwin and his estranged wife, Maritza. Meneses was still charging him too much for cocaine and was refusing to let him share in the spoils. "When I was with Meneses, you see, I didn't make no money at all," Blandón griped. "Meneses was charging me, you know, a big price, that I couldn't meet. I couldn't make enough money, you know, because all the time I owe him."

Blandón said he owed Meneses around $100,000 and couldn't seem to reduce the debt because "I didn't make any money. So I start looking for my own resource, or my own sources." He found them by going behind Meneses's back and dealing directly with Norwin's L.A. suppliers—a couple of Colombians he knew only as Luis and Tony, to whom he had been delivering cash for his miserly boss. "I used to deliver money to the Colombian connection from Meneses, and I got a friendship with them and they know how hard I was working at that time. It was easy for me to ask them for credit because they knew how, how hard I work at that time for them."

The Colombians were happy to help, Blandón said, and encouraged him to strike out on his own. "When I fight with Norwin, the Colombian people started, you know, pushing me along, trying to cross Norwin, and they go with me and talk to me that I can make it myself." Asking the Colombians for cocaine on credit was not difficult. They were used to working cocaine deals that way. They would give you the cocaine and a few days to sell it. Then you'd pay them what you owed. It was a clever way for the cartels to expand their customer base in the United States and keep their own exposure to a minimum.

The Colombians advanced Blandón fifteen kilos—worth about $885,000—and they were off to the races. He started out getting fifteen kilos a month and within a couple months had progressed to thirty kilos a month. He left Meneses and the Contras behind and concentrated on making money for himself, he said.

But several parts of Blandón's story don't add up. He testified that when he was supplying Henry Corrales in 1983, Ross was already selling up to seven kilos a day, and Blandón said he had other customers as well. If Blandón's testimony about the size of his initial dealings with the Colombians is true, he wouldn't have had enough cocaine to supply Ross for a week, much less a month. Before his purported split from Meneses he had been selling far larger quantities of cocaine than that, he admitted.

"And do you remember if you were getting large amounts or small amounts from Mr. Meneses?" Blandón was asked in 1996.

"At the end, large."

"And what is a large amount?"

"About 40, 50, at this time," he testified.

During his federal grand jury appearance in 1994, Blandón was asked to estimate "how much total you would have gotten from Norwin" during the time he was receiving cocaine from him.

"How many I received from Norwin?"

"Yes."

"Well, it was—I received from him, okay, not for me, because it was—I was only the administrator at that time. I received, in L.A. about 200, 300," he said.

But if Blandón didn't make his first sale until the spring of 1982 and spent a year to eighteen months dealing only ounces and grams, as he testified, it would have been impossible for him to have sold 200 to 300 kilos for Meneses by late 1982 or early 1983, when he claims he broke from him.

In fact, evidence turned up by the FBI and DEA in later years showed that Blandón and Meneses were still working together as late as 1991. In August 1986 Blandón's and Meneses's NADDIS files—computerized intelligence profiles maintained by the federal government on suspected drug traffickers—showed both men as current associates. Moreover, if Blandón double-crossed Meneses in 1982–83 by stealing his sources and his L.A. customers, it is doubtful the men would have remained friends and business partners, yet they continued to operate hotels and other businesses together in Nicaragua.

What appears to have happened is that Blandón acquired additional sources of supply sometime in 1984 and became his own boss in L.A., while Meneses remained in charge of the San Francisco drug operation. And they continued working with each other and with the Contras for years, more or less as equals.

Others who were present at the time confirm that this, in fact, is exactly what occurred. "The principal group is controlled by Blandón and is the focal point for drug supply and money laundering for the others," an August 1986 DEA report stated. "The other group is run by Meneses and is located principally in the San Francisco area. . .. Per CI [confidential informant] cocaine is often transported to the Blandón association and then from Blandón to Meneses in San Francisco." That DEA report, based on debriefings of an informant inside Blandón's drug ring, showed Blandón and Meneses working together so closely in mid-1986 that they were sharing the same cocaine supplier and money launderer.

In a 1992 interview with the FBI, Blandón's associate Jacinto Torres told agents that Blandón continued receiving cocaine from Meneses for at least two years longer than Blandón admits. "As of approximately 1984, Blandón was involved in cocaine sales in the Glendale, California area. Blandón's supplier as of 1984 continued to be Norwin Meneses," Torres told the FBI. Torres said Blandón's cocaine business "dramatically increased" in 1984, and that Meneses was flying planeloads of dope in from Miami to keep up with the demand; "Norwin Meneses, Blandón's supplier as of 1983 and 1984, routinely flew quantities of 200 to 400 kilograms from Miami to the West Coast. Blandón eventually 'separated' from Meneses and obtained other sources of supply."

A 1990 DEA report, requesting the formation of a multi-agency task force targeting Blandón and Meneses, shows that the DEA also believed the two "disassociated" from each other in 1984 but had, by the late 1980s, reunited to head "a criminal organization that operate(s) internationally from Colombia and Bolivia, through the Bahamas, Costa Rica, or Nicaragua to the United States." The report claimed their drug ring was getting its cocaine from the politically connected Suarez family in Bolivia, and the Ochoa family in Medellín, Colombia, the founders of the notorious Medellín cartel. The Bolivian cocaine was coming into Miami, the report said, and the Colombians' powder was landing in L.A.

The DEA reported that Meneses had given Blandón his start in Los Angeles in the early 1980s and that from 1982 to 1984 "Blandón had operated directly under Meneses." After that, the DEA said, Blandón "began to work as an independent drug distributor with several subordinates working directly for Blandón."

That Blandón continued dealing with Meneses through 1984 was unwittingly confirmed by the *Los Angeles Times* in a 1996 story that attempted to demonstrate that Blandón and Meneses had split in 1982. The *Times* claimed to have interviewed an unnamed "cocaine trafficking associate" of Blandón, who said he was present at Meneses's house in the Bay Area on a day when Meneses and Blandón were celebrating the consummation of a big drug deal. "Danilo and Norwin had done some business," the *Times* quoted the associate as saying. "The deal involved 40 or 50 kilos. The money was all divvied up. There was cash all over the place. Norwin had steaks on the grill. It was going to be a big party."

The phone rang, and Meneses's girlfriend, Blanca Margarita Castano, answered it and then shrieked, "'Jairo's been arrested!' Well, everybody cleared out in a heartbeat. They grabbed the money and ran. . .. I don't think anyone turned off the steaks."

Records show Jairo Meneses was arrested on November 26, 1984, roughly two years after Blandón claims he quit dealing with Norwin. San Francisco cocaine dealer Rafael Cornejo, a longtime wholesaler for Meneses, also confirmed that Blandón and Meneses were still working together then. "I didn't see him a lot, but I know he was with Norwin in '84," Cornejo said. Blandón and Meneses had paid him a memorable visit in San Francisco that year, stopping by a commercial building Cornejo owned on Chenery Street. Norwin wanted to store something in his building, and Cornejo didn't ask what. "It didn't matter to me. You know, if Norwin wants to do something. . .I said, 'Anything you want.' I like Norwin, I respect Norwin."

During that visit, Cornejo said, "Blandón starts telling me he'd been doing lots of things with the black people down there [in L.A.]. And I said, 'Yeah, so?' And he wanted to see if I was interested in doing something up here. And I said, 'Why?' And he said I should get into the black thing. No one cares about them, he tells me. When they start killing themselves no one cares." Cornejo told Blandón "not to play me with that race thing. Business is business, but don't play me with that race thing. The difference between him and me was that I grew up in San Francisco and it didn't mean that much to us. But he grew up in Nicaragua, with these rich and powerful people, and that's the way he thought."

Blandón's own experience had taught him that no one cared about the cocaine that he was pouring into South Central in 1984. By then, he'd been dealing ever-increasing amounts to Ricky Ross for two years and had received no interference from the police whatsoever. The only media in L.A. that seemed alarmed by the spread of crack in black neighborhoods was the African-American press. The white newspapers didn't even know what crack was.

In December 1983, for instance, former L.A. Dodger legend Maury Wills was arrested for driving a stolen car. The *Los Angeles Herald-Examiner* noted that the "arresting officers also found a small vial on the automobile's front seat containing a white, rock-like substance believed to be cocaine. Police said a clear glass water pipe was found next to the vial." An LAPD officer "refused to speculate if the water pipe may have been used for free-basing, a technique in which cocaine is smoked to intensify the high." The story said Wills was "booked on the grand theft auto allegation pending further identification of the white substance by the LAPD's narcotics laboratory."

Starting in 1984, unlike what they'd been seeing one or two years earlier, street cops like Steve Polak were arresting low-level dealers in South Central with more cocaine than they had ever seen before. The patrolmen were reporting their finds to the LAPD's Major Violators Unit but were getting nowhere, said Polak, who was one of the LAPD's crack experts and lectured police departments around the country. "A lot of detectives, a lot of cops, were saying to them, 'Hey, these blacks, no longer are we just seeing gram dealers. These guys are doing ounces, they were doing keys.'" The Major Violators Unit, which dealt primarily with Colombians and South Americans, found such reports hard to swallow. "They were saying, basically, 'Ahh, South Central, how much could they be dealing?'" Polak laughed. '"The money's not there. We're not going to bring in millions of dollars in seizures or large quantities of coke down there.'" As a result, the crack dealers of South Central "virtually went untouched for a long time. They enjoyed quite a run there without anyone ever working them."

The same could not be said for the Meneses organization in San Francisco. Since 1981, it had been under constant investigation by the DEA, the FBI, and the California Bureau of Narcotics Enforcement (BNE). But aside from a couple of nickel-and-dime busts of Norwin's nephews, nothing much happened.

"Norwin was a target of ours, and his organization was one that we'd worked on," said Jerry Smith, former head of the BNE's San Francisco bureau. But Smith said Meneses's network was so tight-knit that it was impossible to get anyone inside. The Meneses organization, one federal prosecutor wrote in 1993, had been "the target of unsuccessful investigative attempts for many years."

Meneses, on the other hand, seemed to have much better luck at infiltration than the police.

"There were some things that happened and I'm really kind of reluctant to go into that particular thing," Smith said. "It had nothing to do with the CIA or the FBI. It had to do with one of my guys, who subsequently was fired. . .I think he was trying to broker some information to somebody for some money. And we got onto it very quickly and so he's no longer around, and I don't think anything ever came to fruition. But it was something that bothered us at the time."

Meneses, in an interview, boasted that he had a DEA agent on his payroll who was feeding him information about the government's many investigations, allowing him to stay one step ahead of the law.

Even if that's true, however, it does not fully explain the drug lord's complete imperviousness to prosecution. It's hard to imagine how one or two corrupt narcotics agents could have held off the entire U.S. law enforcement community, especially when the DEA and FBI had been aware of Norwin's criminal activities since the 1970s. It becomes even harder to fathom given the events that would unfold in late 1984.

"Oh, he [Meneses] was totally protected by the U.S. government," insisted Contra supporter Dennis Ainsworth, a former San Francisco—area economics professor. "He was protected by everyone under the sun."

That conclusion had been a difficult and painful one for Ainsworth to reach. A staunch conservative and Republican party stalwart, the tall, patrician Ainsworth had believed in the Contras, and threw himself wholeheartedly into their cause starting in late 1983, when he became involved in efforts to assist Nicaraguan refugees who had settled in San Francisco after fleeing the Sandinistas. The Nicaraguans, he said, most of whom had been Somoza supporters, had difficulty getting help from the liberal churches in San Francisco, which Ainsworth claimed were interested only in assisting refugees from right-wing Central American dictatorships. "All of a sudden, bang, we've got a problem in our backyard, and nobody wanted to help them," Ainsworth recalled. "And so, I met some of the Nicaraguans and we started helping. Getting clothing donations and stuff like that."

In February 1984, Ainsworth said, he saw an announcement in the *San Francisco Chronicle* about a seminar at the Sir Francis Drake Hotel concerning Central America and the Contras. He attended and met Julio Bonilla, a Nicaraguan who was the local coordinator of the FDN. The men chatted briefly and exchanged phone numbers. (According to one published source, Norwin Meneses helped finance that seminar at the Drake.) About three weeks later, Ainsworth said, Bonilla called him and invited him to an informal gathering at a house on Colon Avenue in San Francisco, to meet with some of the Nicaraguans who had helped put the seminar together. Ainsworth found a pleasant group of middle-class husbands and wives, many of them recent immigrants. One, he said, had been Anastasio Somoza's dentist. Their leader was a jovial pharmaceutical salesman, Don Sinicco, known to others in the trade as "Mr. Maalox" because he sold the popular antacid to local hospitals. Sinicco was not Nicaraguan; he was born in Italy and lived there until 1938, when Mussolini came to power. He later married a Nicaraguan, Nydia Gonzales, the daughter of a powerful Nicaraguan general, Fernando Gonzales. Through them, he became fascinated with Nicaraguan politics.

As the covert war in Nicaragua escalated, stories about the conflict began popping up in San Francisco's newspapers, and Sinicco read them avidly, but not happily. He believed the press was cheerleading for the Sandinistas, and he fired off dozens letters to the newspapers, chiding them for their "slant." Many were published. "I got a reputation," he said proudly.

In late 1983, Sinicco said, he got a call from a man named Adolfo Calero, the head of the political wing of the FDN. Sinicco said Calero called him because of his letter-writing campaign, which flattered him considerably. "He said, 'We need someone like you to help us get the word out. People will listen to you because you're an American.' So they contacted me, and I said that's fine." At Calero's suggestion, Sinicco formed a small organization called United Support Against Communism in the Americas (USACA), and he and his friends began holding regular meetings, casting about for ways to publicize the Contras' plight.

Sinicco said he'd never met Calero before, but his wife and Calero's wife were old friends. In Managua, Calero had been a well-known businessman, a Chamber of Commerce type who'd run the bottling plant for the local Coca-Cola distributorship. He was also a CIA asset, someone the U.S. government had hoped might replace Somoza as Nicaragua's president before the Sandinista takeover. According to former FDN director Edgar Chamorro, Calero "had been working for the CIA in Nicaragua for a long time. He served as, among other things, a conduit of funds from the United States Embassy to various student and labor organizations." In early 1983 the CIA had brought Calero out of Nicaragua and installed him as the political director of the FDN; his broad, acne-scarred visage soon became the most familiar face of the Contra rebels in the United States. Tall and imposing, Calero spoke English well, not surprisingly for a graduate of Notre Dame University in South Bend, Indiana. "Calero and Bermúdez were our main links with the CIA," Chamorro declared. "They met constantly with the CIA station chief."

In 1984 Calero began visiting San Francisco frequently, Ainsworth and Sinicco said, and would usually stay at their homes while in the city attending to FDN business. While finding Calero personable and smooth, Ainsworth was dismayed by the lack of political sophistication displayed by the FDN support group Sinicco had assembled at Calero's request. The Nicaraguans were eager and committed to the Contra cause, Ainsworth recalled, but there wasn't a soul among them who knew anything about working the American political system. "That little group that used to meet at his house. . .would have done nothing if I hadn't come over and said, 'Look, I'll set these things up.' All Sinicco and his friends were thinking of doing was writing a few letters to the editor. They had no connections whatsoever. And I happened to walk in and I was a well-connected guy."

Ainsworth gently suggested to the Nicaraguans that there were other ways of drawing attention to their cause. Why not sponsor a speaking tour for some Contra officials, such as Adolfo Calero? Bring him to town, show him around, get some press coverage. Sinicco, who was USACA's president, said he and his friends were "very impressed" with Ainsworth's ideas and his political connections and voted to make him a director of their new group. "As far as I knew, he was presumably very active in Republican politics. He knew senators, he knew representatives, both federal and in Sacramento. He knew the chairman of the party. He seemed to be influential and was active internationally in anti-Communist efforts," Sinicco said. Ainsworth, he said, began opening doors all across San Francisco. "He was the one who appeared to be able to get us these bookings at places like the Olympic Club, the Commonwealth Club. None of us belonged to those kind of places. But he either did or knew people that did. He was able to devote his full-time attention to the group. Most of the rest of us were working men. We had businesses to run, jobs to go to."

On June 4, 1984, Ainsworth arranged a private reception for Calero at the exclusive St. Francis Yacht Club in San Francisco with about sixty of the city's most influential business leaders and Republicans. "It was just a chance for everybody to meet and greet. It wasn't a fund-raiser. Calero was in the news, he was a newsmaker, and some people I knew had expressed an interest in meeting him," Ainsworth said. Calero gave a short speech, answered a few questions, and mingled. "The cocktail party went very smoothly," Ainsworth would later tell the FBI.

Afterward, Calero, Ainsworth, Sinicco, and about twenty others drove over to Caesar's Italian Restaurant, one of the many near Fisherman's Wharf. When the bill came, Ainsworth said, a small neatly dressed man he had not noticed before called the waiter over and picked up the tab for the entire party. Ainsworth leaned over and asked a Nicaraguan friend who Mr. Generosity was. "You don't want to know," was the response he said he got.

Sinicco said he initially assumed one of the Mendoza brothers—two strident Cuban anti-Communists who were members of USACA—had paid the bill. "When we called for the check, we were told it had been taken care of, and I thought it was one of the Cubans who'd paid for it. I thought Max [Mendoza]'s brother had paid for the dinner, and in fact I went up and thanked him afterwards and I'm sure he wonders to this day what I was thanking him for." Before the evening was over, Sinicco was set straight by another Nicaraguan: the big spender was named Norwin Meneses. He owned a restaurant and a travel agency in the Mission District. "I'd never heard of him," Sinicco said, "but we were glad for the financial assistance."

At the end of the dinner, Ainsworth stood and announced that in two days, Don Sinicco was going to be hosting a cocktail party for their esteemed guest, Adolfo Calero, and that everyone in the room was invited.

At the party two days later, Norwin Meneses came in with the crowd dressed in an expensive white linen sports coat with a cashmere overcoat draped over his arm. Sinicco said Meneses spoke to Calero briefly, and the two men retired to a back bedroom, apparently for a meeting. Ainsworth confirmed that. Calero has said he never met privately with Meneses.

Later, as the party was winding down, Sinicco got out his Instamatic camera and began snapping pictures of the historic occasion. He got a shot of some of the wives posing behind a handmade cloth map of Nicaragua. He snapped one of Max Mendoza, the Cuban, with a big grin on his mustachioed face. Sinicco found Calero in the kitchen, huddled by the refrigerator with Meneses, San Francisco FDN coordinator Julio Bonilla, and some other local FDN officials. He told the group to smile and lined up the shot, but just as he snapped the shutter, Meneses closed his eyes and turned away. "Let me get another real quick," Sinicco said. This time Meneses kept his eyes open, but he didn't smile. He looked at Sinicco and glared. Calero posed with a tight smile on his face.

Sinicco suddenly remembered Meneses from the restaurant two nights earlier, and he approached him and thanked him for his kindness. "I told him that now that he knew where we lived, he should come to our next [USACA] meeting and he said that he would, but that he really needed to leave now."

After that Meneses began attending USACA's meetings, Sinicco recalled, usually arriving with the Mendoza brothers, who ran a Cuban anti-Communist group in San Francisco. Ainsworth said he did not believe there was a connection between Meneses and the Cubans, other than a political one. However, a former FDN mercenary from Florida, Jack Terrell, said Meneses was plugged tightly into the Cuban exile community in Miami. "He assisted the Cuban Legion in their radio propaganda shows coming from Miami," Terrell said, adding that Meneses was an associate of several members of the 2506 Brigade, which was made up of Bay of Pigs veterans.

Sinicco showed the author attendance records, minutes of meetings, and other assorted paperwork he kept as USACA's president. One of the documents he provided was a handwritten note that he said were his talking points for one of USACA's earliest meetings. "Our first time venture as USACA has proven highly successful," Sinicco had written, and he listed "seven successes." The first was that "Adolfo was brought over."

Success No. 6: "We are receiving some attention from some Cuban people who appear eager to help."

Success No. 7: "Mr. Meneces' [sic] contribution." Meneses dropped a $160 contribution on the little group one night, Sinicco said, and picked up another dinner for $324.20.

According to Sinicco's files, another founding member of USACA was Father Thomas F. Dowling, a San Franciscan whom Sinicco said was "some kind of a priest." Though he sometimes passed himself off as a Roman Catholic priest, Dowling was an ordained member of a tiny splinter church called the North American Old Roman Catholic Church of the Utrecht Succession, a church whose legitimacy is a matter of some debate. While working with USACA and the Contras, Dowling appeared before Congress in 1985 sporting a clerical collar and identifying himself as a Catholic priest, to testify as a purported witness to Sandinista atrocities. His appearance had been arranged by the State Department's Office of Public Diplomacy for Latin America, later described by congressional investigators as an illegal CIA-run domestic propaganda mill.

"Senior CIA officials with backgrounds in covert operations, as well as military intelligence and psychological operations specialists from the Department of Defense, were deeply involved in establishing and participating in a domestic political and propaganda operation run through an obscure bureau in the Department of State," a 1992 House committee staff report concluded. "Almost all of these activities were hidden from public view and many of the individuals involved were never questioned or interviewed by the Iran/Contra committees."

Through that office, the CIA and the National Security Council engaged in "a domestic, covert operation designed to lobby the Congress, manipulate the media and influence domestic public opinion," the report said, echoing a 1987 investigation by the Comptroller General of the United States, which said the State Department had engaged in "prohibited, covert propaganda activities."

Dowling later admitted receiving about $73,000 in cash and travelers checks from Oliver North, CIA agent Adolfo Calero and other members of North's operation between 1986 and 1987 "to affect public opinion favorably toward the Reagan position inside, regarding Central America." Dowling testified that the money went to a non-profit organization he'd set up in San Francisco called the Latin America Strategic Studies Institute (LASSI). In addition to Dowling, LASSI employed a recently retired CIA officer with extensive Latin American experience, G. James Quesada, a Nicaraguan who lived in the San Francisco area. "I met [Quesada] when I spoke before the retired group of intelligence officers a few years back," Dowling testified in 1987.

Quesada confirmed that he worked with Dowling but said he did so as private citizen, not for the CIA. "I know nobody thinks a CIA agent ever retires, but I really did retire," he said in an interview, with a laugh. Quesada also met Norwin Meneses and Danilo Blandón at an FDN meeting, and instantly, he said, his antennae went up. "I found out what Meneses was pretty quickly, but he was not involved in our side of things, which was the political side," Quesada said. Meneses and Blandón had something to do with "the other side," meaning the military part of the Contra operation. "As I recall, Blandón was looking for medical students or was recruiting medical students to go down to Honduras. I stayed away from both of them."

In addition to his work with Oliver North and the San Francisco FDN, Father Dowling was also heavily involved with CAUSA, a conservative political organization that was part of the Rev. Sun-Myung

Moon's Unification Church. During the time of the CIA funding cutoff, Moon's organization—which was linked in the 1970s to the Korean Central Intelligence Agency—stepped in and began funneling money and supplies to the Contras. Dowling was a member of CAUSA's national advisory board and a frequent speaker at CAUSA rallies and conferences. Among the documents USACA founder Sinicco showed the author was an August 1984 letter from CAUSA's president, retired air force general E. D. Woellner, thanking Sinicco's organization for attending the annual CAUSA convention and suggesting that the groups work more closely in the future.

Though the combination of fringe religions and the Contras may seem strange, partly declassified CIA records show that the agency had evidence as far back as 1982 that there were unwholesome connections between Meneses's drug ring, the FDN, and an unnamed religious organization in the United States. According to a 1998 CIA Inspector General's report, the CIA's Domestic Collection Division picked up word in October 1982 that "there are indications of links between (a U.S. religious organization) and two Nicaraguan counter-revolutionary groups." The heavily censored CIA cable said, "These links involve an exchange in [the United States] of narcotics for arms."

The CIA's domestic spies reported that "there was to be a meeting among the participants in Costa Rica regarding this exchange" and that two U.S. law enforcement agencies were aware of it. Though the agencies were not named in the censored CIA cable, the FBI had the Meneses organization under investigation at the time and had learned through wiretaps that Norwin's Costa Rican Contra associates—Horacio Pereira, Troilo Sanchez, and Fernando Sanchez—were shipping cocaine to San Francisco.

CIA headquarters ordered its domestic agents to get more information about the upcoming meeting in Costa Rica, and a few days later another cable arrived at Langley with additional details. "The attendees at the meeting would include representatives from the FDN and UDN, and several unidentified U.S. citizens," the CIA cable reported. It "identified Renato Pena as one of four persons—along with three unidentified U.S. citizens—who would represent the FDN at the Costa Rica meeting."

Renato Pena Cabrera was one of Norwin Meneses's San Francisco drug dealers and a friend of Dennis Ainsworth. Pena was dating Danilo Blandón's sister, Leysla, and was a top official in the San Francisco FDN. Pena told CIA investigators that he met Meneses in 1982 at an FDN meeting and served as an official representative of the FDN's political wing in northern California from 1982 until mid-1984. After that, he said, he "was appointed to be the military representative of the FDN in San Francisco, in part because of Norwin Meneses' close relationship with [Enrique] Bermúdez."

Pena said Norwin introduced him to his nephew, Jairo, who was in charge of distributing the family's cocaine to other dealers. Soon, the young Contra found himself hauling cash and drugs up and down the freeways of the Golden State. "Pena says he made from six to eight trips from San Francisco to Los Angeles between 1982 and 1984 for Meneses' drug trafficking organization," the CIA Inspector General reported. "Each time, he says, he carried anywhere from $600,000 to $1,000,000 to Los Angeles and returned to San Francisco with six to eight kilograms of cocaine. Pena says that a Colombian associate of Meneses told Pena in general terms that a portion of the proceeds from the sale of the cocaine Pena brought to San Francisco were going to the Contras."

Even with the inflated cocaine prices of the early 1980s, the amount of money Pena was taking to L.A. was far more than was needed to pay for six to eight kilos of cocaine. It seems likely that the excess—$300,000 to $500,000 per trip—was the Contras' cut of the drug proceeds.

When the information about Renato Pena's involvement in the upcoming Costa Rican meeting was relayed back to Langley, CIA headquarters immediately ordered the Domestic Collection Division to halt any further investigation, allegedly because "of the apparent participation of U.S. citizens." But the agency began having second thoughts about sitting on the information. On November 17, 1982, Langley worriedly cabled one of its stations in Latin America to tell its agents that while headquarters didn't think the reports about the Contras and drugs were true, "the information was surfaced by another [U.S. government] agency and may return to haunt us. Feel we must try to confirm or refute the information if possible." Langley wanted to know if Contra leaders had "scheduled any meeting in the next few weeks? If so, what information do you have regarding the attendees?"

The response was probably not what CIA headquarters wanted to hear. "Several Contra officials had recently gone to the United States for a series of meetings, including a meeting with Contra supporters in San Francisco," the Central American CIA station reported back. (It was during October 1982 that FDN leaders met with Meneses in L.A. and San Francisco in an effort to set up local Contra support groups in those cities.)

The CIA Inspector General's report is silent about what, if anything, the agency did next. Pena told CIA inspectors that the unnamed U.S. religious organization mentioned in the CIA cables "was an FDN political ally that provided only humanitarian aid to Nicaraguan refugees and logistical support for Contra-related rallies, such as printing services and portable stages."

When Renato Pena and Meneses's nephew Jairo were arrested on cocaine trafficking charges in November 1984, Ainsworth began suspecting that the FDN was also involved in drug trafficking. "Renato wasn't a drug dealer," Ainsworth said. "He was a Contra and he was duped. When Congress cut off aid in the fall of 1983, these guys had nowhere else to turn and they wanted to get their country back. And once you say I'll do anything to get my country back, then they were easy prey for Meneses, who said, 'Hey, you do this for me and I'll help you guys out.'"

Agents found a kilo of cocaine in the trunk of Pena's car. At an apartment Jairo Meneses maintained in Oakland as a cocaine storehouse, the DEA found half a kilo in a safe. Because the evidence against him was so overwhelming—hand-to-hand sales to DEA agents and a kilo in his car—Pena pleaded guilty to one count of possession of cocaine with intent to sell in March 1985. He also agreed to help the government prosecute Jairo Meneses, and was given a two-year sentence in return.

As part of his deal with the government, Renato Pena was extensively debriefed by the DEA and his interviews were nothing short of astonishing—which is probably why they remained sealed for 15 years.

"When debriefed by the DEA in the early 1980s, Pena said that the CIA was allowing the Contras to fly drugs into the United States, sell them, and keep the proceeds," the Justice Department Inspector General reported in 1997. Jairo Meneses had told him that "the United States was aware of these dealings and that it was highly unlikely that I would even get in trouble." Both Norwin Meneses and Blandón told him they were raising money for the Contras through drug dealing; Blandón had even claimed "the Contras would not have been able to operate without drug proceeds."

Further, FDN leader Enrique Bermúdez "was aware of the drug dealing" and Pena described Bermúdez as "a CIA agent." When challenged by CIA questioners on that statement, Pena merely laughed. "It's very obvious," he said: Bermúdez had been Somoza's military attache in Washington and it was common knowledge in Nicaragua that anyone who had that job under Somoza also worked for the CIA. (Bermúdez, in fact, was on the CIA's payroll from 1980 to 1991, which means at the least that he was a contract agent, if not an agency officer.)

As if Pena's testimony wasn't convincing enough, the DEA obtained independent corroboration in the spring of 1986 from a longtime informant who'd known Meneses since childhood described by the DEA as "extremely reliable." He told a DEA intelligence analyst that Meneses was indeed part of the FDN and had been using drug money to buy weapons for the Contras. He also vouched for Renato Pena's credibility: "Renato Pena worked for Jairo Meneses and ran the San Francisco office of the FDN," the informant explained. "Pena was one of the major Contra fund raisers in San Francisco and was one of those responsible for sending Meneses' drug proceeds to the Contras."

In interview years later with inspectors from the CIA and the Justice Department, Pena defiantly stood his ground, even though he was under threat of immediate deportation. He insisted that "the CIA knows about all these things. . .The money the Contras received from the Reagan Administration was peanuts and the growing military organization needed supplies, arms, food, and money to support the families of the Contras. The CIA decided to recruit Meneses so that drug sales could be used to support the Contras. Bermúdez could not have recruited Meneses on his own. . .but would have had to follow orders."

Ainsworth said Pena was devastated by his arrest and confessed to him his role in the Contra drug network. Alarmed, Ainsworth began looking into the relationship between the FDN and drugs. He made "inquiries in the local San Francisco Nicaraguan community and wondered among his acquaintances what Adolfo Calero and other people in the FDN movement were doing and the word that he received back is that they were probably engaged in cocaine smuggling," Ainsworth later told the FBI.

During one of Ainsworth's trips to Washington in 1985, he said, "I went to see some friends of mine and started asking some questions." One friend slipped Ainsworth a copy of a Drug Enforcement Administration intelligence report dated February 6, 1984. The DEA report, prepared by agent Sandalio Gonzalez in San Jose, Costa Rica, told of the results of a debriefing of a confidential informant. Ainsworth's heart sank as he read it. The informant "related that Norwin Meneses Cantarero, Edmundo's younger brother, was presently residing in San Jose, Costa Rica, and is the apparent head of a criminal organization responsible for smuggling kilogram quantities of cocaine to the United States." The discovery left Ainsworth reeling: "I had gone through the Looking Glass. I had crossed over into the nether world that 99 percent of the population wouldn't even believe existed."

In September 1985 Ainsworth was contacted by a U.S. Customs Service official who was "investigating the Nicaraguan role in a large narcotics ring extending from Miami, Florida to Texas and California." The Customs agent wanted to ask Ainsworth about the FDN. "During the contact, [name deleted] complained to Ainsworth that national security interests kept him from making good narcotics cases and he acted frustrated at this chain of events," Ainsworth would later tell the FBI. "According to [name deleted] two U.S. Customs Service officers who felt threatened and intimidated by National Security interference in legitimate narcotics smuggling investigations had resigned and had assumed false identities." The FBI report went on to say that the Customs agent "told Ainsworth that Norwin Meneses would have been arrested in a major drug case in 1983 or 1984 except that he had been warned by a corrupt [information deleted] officer."

Other law enforcement sources told Ainsworth "they had a file on Meneses that was two feet thick. I thought this bastard should have been arrested. I assumed there would be an outstanding warrant on this guy. I was amazed. There wasn't a single outstanding warrant on Meneses. Not one. They had no interest in him whatsoever. Here you had a major cocaine trafficker who was deeply involved with the Contras, and apparently, everyone but me knew about it. After I broke with Calero, I found out Calero and Meneses were very good friends."

Calero has admitted meeting with Meneses on at least six occasions in San Francisco, but he has portrayed them as simple greetings during large public gatherings. He has repeatedly denied knowing Meneses was a drug trafficker, yet he admitted to a Costa Rican paper in 1986 that he knew Meneses was "involved in some illegal things, but I don't know anything."

USACA president Don Sinicco said he never suspected Norwin Meneses was involved in criminal activities, but he confirmed that Ainsworth began muttering about it. "What always bothered me about [Dennis] is that towards the end, I don't know what, he seemed to get disillusioned or disgusted with Calero. Dennis got disillusioned about something," Sinicco said.

Ainsworth's disillusionment caused him to quit working with the Contras and seek out the FBI. In early 1987, records show, during his first meeting with FBI agents, Ainsworth warned them that the FDN "has become more involved in selling arms and cocaine for personal gain than in a military effort to overthrow the current Nicaraguan Sandinista government." He told the agents about Norwin Meneses and Renato Pena, about Tom Dowling and Oliver North, and about North's illegal Contra support network in the U.S. and Central America. Much of the information Ainsworth gave the FBI and, later, Iran-Contra prosecutor Lawrence Walsh's staff about the inner workings of the FDN and the relationships between Contra leaders and U.S. government officials was corroborated during the congressional Iran-Contra investigations.

Ainsworth was also getting death threats, he told the FBI, but the agents seemed unimpressed. "He had no information to substantiate this alleged threat," they wrote. Ainsworth never heard from them again. "I mean, here I am as a citizen, I complained to the FBI and they tell me they have no interest in the case. Then I call Walsh's people up and they sent a couple FBI guys out to talk to me and they have no interest in it. I couldn't find anyone who was interested in this. And I made a legitimate effort. And people were like, 'Den, leave this alone. Just leave it alone,'" Ainsworth remembered. "I thought I was part of the establishment. And all of a sudden I was a leper." Frightened and heartsick, Ainsworth fled California for the East Coast, where he went into semiseclusion.

Meanwhile, the narcotics investigation that began with the arrests of Renato Pena and Jairo Meneses seemed to fall into a black hole. The case federal prosecutors had assembled against the drug kingpin's nephew was a slam-dunk. They'd found cocaine in Jairo's apartment; his codefendant had cut a deal and was prepared to testify for the government. If convicted of the charges against him—one count of conspiracy to distribute cocaine and six counts of possession with intent to distribute—Jairo Meneses would spend the next fifteen years in the federal pen. His decision to plead guilty and rat out Uncle Norwin could hardly be considered a surprise.

Like Pena, Jairo Meneses was debriefed by the DEA and he, too, implicated the Contras in Norwin's drug sales, confirming that his uncle had direct dealings with both Blandón and FDN commander Enrique Bermúdez. But his admissions in court were limited to the bookkeeping work he'd done for Norwin in San Francisco; he never breathed a word in public about the Contras.

Were these men telling the truth? If one looks at the outcome of their criminal cases, the inescapable conclusion is that they were. Inventing stories about Contra drug trafficking was not the usual way admitted dope dealers ingratiated themselves with Ed Meese and his hypersensitive Justice Department. But despite being caught red-handed with pounds of cocaine, they were neither sent to jail nor deported. They got probation and a work-furlough job and kept their mouths shut, which suggests that the Justice Department found them entirely too believable.

In an interview with a Costa Rican paper in 1986, Meneses scoffed at his nephew's testimony. Jairo had made it up, Norwin declared, because he'd refused to bail the boy out when he'd gotten arrested. "If Jairo supposedly was my accountant, like he says, I would have been interested in taking him out of jail because he would have had me by the tail," Meneses told *La Nacion*. "Isn't that logical?" (Norwin didn't mention that Jairo's bail was paid by Danilo Blandón's sister, Leysla Balladares, who also bailed out Pena, her boyfriend.) "Besides," Norwin added, "I remained in San Francisco. I have never hidden. There's never been a warrant for my arrest. I have not changed passports. That I directed a drug trafficking organization is totally false."

Some of Meneses's assertions were indeed irrefutable. With the testimony of Jairo Meneses and Renato Pena, and the stacks of other evidence the police had compiled against him over the years, it would have been a relatively easy matter to have convicted the drug lord on any number of trafficking and conspiracy charges. Many dopers have gone to jail on much less evidence. At a minimum, the government could have deported him as an undesirable alien and banned him forever from the United States; he was, after all, living in the United States as a guest of the government—a political refugee.

But it didn't happen. Nothing happened. Norwin Meneses continued living as a free man, crisscrossing U.S. borders with impunity, dealing cocaine and sending supplies to the Contras. And his relationship with the U.S. government grew even closer.

10

"Teach a man a craft and he's liable to practice it"

The potential exposure of Norwin Meneses couldn't have come at a more inopportune time for the Contras, or the CIA.

During the winter of 1984–85, the Contra forces were at their lowest ebb, both on the battlefield and in the battle for U.S. public opinion. For twelve months the Contras had staggered from one public relations disaster to another. There had been a major uproar in Congress in the spring of 1984, when it was revealed that the CIA cowboys running the Contra project had seeded Nicaraguan harbors with hundreds of small mines, which proceeded to indiscriminately blow holes in merchant ships from all over the world, including those from friendly nations. Shortly after that, a bomb went off at ARDE commander Eden Pastora's jungle headquarters during a press conference, wounding Pastora, killing or injuring a score of ARDE officials and journalists, and throwing the Contra armies in Costa Rica into turmoil.

Later in the year, in the midst of Reagan's reelection campaign, an illustrated terrorism manual the CIA printed up for the boys in the field ended up in the newspapers, creating yet another public outcry and much congressional breast-beating.

The hardest blow came in October 1984. With the administration off balance and desperately hoping to avoid any more CIA-Contra controversies before the elections, the Democrat-controlled Congress succeeded in passing yet another Boland Amendment. Unlike the earlier ones, though, this had some teeth.

It prohibited the CIA, the Defense Department, or any other agency of the U.S. government from giving any money or aid to anyone for the support of the Contras. The money spigot had been officially turned off; the loopholes were sewn shut.

The CIA and Defense Department began withdrawing their trainers, advisers, administrators, tacticians, and logisticians from Central America, and by the end of the year the Contras were alone and in disarray. Thousands of rebel fighters began retreating from Nicaragua for the safety of Honduras. Money was scarce; weapons and ammo were in even shorter supply.

In early 1985, as the Contras spent their last batch of CIA money, another mini-scandal erupted. Allegations of Contra battlefield atrocities surfaced in reports from human rights groups, spotlighting murders, tortures, assassinations, and "the deliberate use of terror" by some Contra field commanders, putting the lie to Reagan's characterization of them as "freedom fighters," showing instead their connection to Somoza's hated National Guard.

Even the FDN's normally optimistic handlers in Washington began to despair. Reagan's national security adviser, Robert McFarlane, told FDN leader Adolfo Calero in January 1985 that maybe it was time to start thinking about "cutting both our losses and theirs." The administration's prestige was riding on the Contras; Reagan had gone so far during a speech as to compare them to the founding fathers of the American Revolution. The FDN's only ray of hope was to withdraw from battle and lie low until the spring, when Congress agreed to let the administration come back and make one more pitch for money.

Had Norwin Meneses popped up then with a federal cocaine trafficking indictment around his neck—

after all the meetings he'd had with FDN directors Adolfo Calero, Enrique Bermúdez, Edgar Chamorro, and Frank Arana—the resultant scandal would likely have wiped out what little support the Contras had left in Washington. It would have also again tarred the CIA, which was reeling from the exposure over the harbor minings and assassination manuals. Even if nothing could have been proven conclusively about the CIA's involvement in the Contra drug ring, the agency was supposed to be the nation's primary intelligence-gathering arm—and its responsibilities specifically included monitoring the international narcotics trade. A plea of ignorance about dope dealing by its own paramilitary forces would have looked as bad as proof of complicity.

And that was assuming Meneses kept his mouth shut. If he started naming names, dates, and places, the scandal could well have spread into the CIA itself, as it would eleven years later. Former assistant U.S. attorney Eric Swenson, who was familiar with the investigations into Meneses, said the drug lord's activities with the Contras were well known to the Justice Department because he had personally reported it. And Justice wasn't the only agency that knew about it.

"The CIA knows about this guy," Swenson said in an interview. "I'm sure they do. I'm *sure* they do. The CIA knows a lot of crooks. I mean, the CIA knows." As it turned out, Swenson was right. A 1998 CIA Inspector General's report confirmed that, as early as 1984, the agency had information tying Meneses to a drug and arms network in Costa Rica, in partnership with top Contra official Sebastian "Guachan" Gonzalez.

Against that backdrop, and given the cozy relationship that existed between the CIA and San Francisco's U.S. attorney, Joseph Russoniello, it is hardly surprising that Norwin Meneses was not charged with drug trafficking in the spring of 1985. Even though one of his top lieutenants had pleaded guilty to cocaine charges and publicly implicated him as a major trafficker, allowing Meneses take the witness stand was out of the question. The drug lord simply knew too much. Not only was he in a position to expose the FDN's long involvement with drug merchants, but he could have led the police and the press to Danilo Blandón's booming enterprise in South Central Los Angeles.

And what a fine picture that would have presented.

Blandón was dumping a small mountain of cocaine into L.A.'s black neighborhoods every week, as well as providing South Central's crack dealers with assault rifles, submachine guns, and sophisticated telecommunications and eavesdropping gear.

Blandón was having the time of his life. As far as he and Ricky Ross were concerned, 1984 had been a terrific year. And 1985 was only going to be better. For one thing, Blandón was now an official guest of the U.S. government. The State Department, after two earlier rejections, had suddenly changed its mind in 1984 and decided to approve his application for political asylum. Now he could stay in America indefinitely and no longer had to worry about being summarily tossed out of the country. Had that fact been made public, all the propagandists and spin doctors in Washington would have been hard pressed to explain why the "Just Say No" administration had allowed South Central's biggest cocaine trafficker to call the United States his home.

Though the administration could have claimed ignorance, there were easily obtainable records proving that the DEA was fully aware of what Blandón was doing. Further, it is State Department policy to check with the DEA before approving applications for political asylum.

Records showed the drug agency had opened a NADDIS file on Blandón on May 24, 1983, after getting a tip from a confidential informant that he was a member of a cocaine trafficking organization. His attorney, Bradley Brunon, said in court in 1992 that the DEA's voluminous knowledge of Blandón's dope dealing stretched back even further than that. "I have some 300 DEA-6 reports regarding Mr. Blandón, and the reports relate to activities between approximately 1981 and May 1992," Brunon told a San Diego federal judge.

In early 1984, while Blandón's asylum application was under review at the State Department, the

DEA learned from an informant that Blandón was "the head" of his own cocaine distribution organization based in Los Angeles, information that, as history shows, was accurate.

The same odd sequence of events happened with Blandón's wife, Chepita. First the DEA learned she was a drug dealer, then the State Department gave her political asylum. In early 1985 she was reported to the DEA as a "member of a cocaine distribution organization," and on March 15, 1985, the agency dutifully opened a NADDIS file on her. Later that same year she was granted political asylum.

Immigration experts agree that, normally, even the slightest hint of drug involvement by an alien results in deportation. "I've had clients deported because anonymous sources, people who were never even identified to us, allegedly told the DEA they were involved in drugs," said one California immigration lawyer. "One of my clients, he was a college professor from Thailand, was denied entry because he'd been arrested for smoking marijuana when he was a *teenager*, for Christ's sake. When it comes to drugs, it's an almost automatic no." In an interview, a State Department official confirmed there was a blanket zero-tolerance policy for immigrant narcotics suspects.

Why those same standards didn't apply to Blandón and his wife is not known, nor is it likely to be. When the Justice Department's Inspector General looked at the Blandóns' immigration records, he found them "in disarray."

During 1984 and 1985, Ross and Blandón have admitted, their cocaine trafficking empire was at its zenith. Ross was selling dope so fast he didn't have time to turn it into crack anymore. He would just take Blandón's kilos, put a hit on them, and pass them along to smaller crack manufacturers, who more and more frequently were members of various Crips "sets" from across Los Angeles.

"It continued growing, growing, growing, until sometime he buy [from] me 100 a week," Blandón said. Ross was driving him nuts with his constant telephone orders for more kilos. "I was getting crazy because you have to move—I was the, the man that made the delivery every day, so he was calling me every day, two or three times. Sometimes we deliver at 2 o'clock, sometimes we deliver at 4 o'clock, and anytime—one o'clock, two o'clock, one A.M."

Blandón finally worked out an arrangement with his Colombian suppliers to give Ross large amounts of cocaine for little or no money up front—sell now, pay later. "I spoke with the Colombian and I told him, 'Hey, let's go and give some credit to this guy because he pays. He's a good payer.' I give 20, the first 25 keys on credit and tell him, 'Hey, don't bother me until you got the money.'" That initial advance by itself was worth about $1 million, wholesale.

There was a reason Blandón wanted Ross out of his hair for a while. The Blandón family had moved from Northridge, a suburb near downtown L.A., to neighboring San Bernardino County, settling into a sprawling Spanish-style home in the city of Rialto, some thirty miles outside Los Angeles. He'd withdrawn $175,000 in cash from his bank account in Panama and given it to Orlando Murillo, the former Somoza banker, who bought the house under his name to keep Danilo's name off the property rolls. From his hot tub on the terraced hillside behind his new house, Blandón could gaze out at the bucolic, rolling hills and towering pines of a country-club golf course.

In one sense, Blandón had a right to be proud of his accomplishments. He was the epitome of Reagan-era success, along with brigand financiers Ivan Boesky and Michael Milken. In only three years he'd gone from working in a car wash to running a multimillion-dollar-a-week operation, employing, directly and indirectly, hundreds of people, many of them inner-city residents who would have otherwise had little or no income. Thanks to Blandón, they were making thousands or tens of thousands of dollars a week.

He was the chief supplier to the largest minority-owned business in an area so forbidding that the government was offering to pay companies just for moving there. Blandón's "company" moved in and began producing high-paying jobs without ever once asking for a handout. Unlike many legitimate industries that merely pay lip service to the concept, the cocaine industry is a fervent believer in the get-government-off-our-backs philosophy of commerce.

The fact that Blandón's activities happened to be illegal—as were Boesky's and Milken's, for that matter—was a technicality. After all, it wasn't his idea to start selling drugs; he'd done it to help the Contras. He was furthering official U.S. foreign policy in a very unofficial way.

As his longtime attorney Brad Brunon said, with a slight laugh: "You teach a man a craft and he's liable to practice it."

Blandón had practiced his craft well, and he was now enjoying the fruits of his labors. He hired a live-in maid and nanny for Chepita and his daughters, opened a restaurant—the Nicamex—and bought a car lot in nearby Fontana with an old college buddy, Sergio Guerra, a Mexican millionaire whose family owned major automobile franchises in Guadalajara. Guerra had the distinction of owning the last parking lot on the California side of the Mexican border in San Ysidro, which is like having a license to print money. The government valued its worth at around $29 million in the early 1990s.

Blandón's businesses were merely fronts through which to launder his drug money and provide a respectable explanation for his wealth and lifestyle. The used car lot—a favorite ploy among Nicaraguan traffickers—was especially handy. It was a cash-heavy business; lots of different vehicles were moving in and out all the time and their trunks were perfect places to store cocaine overnight, providing a plausible denial in case of accidental discovery. Cars that were sold for $2,000 were declared as being sold for $4,000. The car lot paid taxes on $4,000—at a rate cheaper than any money launderer would charge—and suddenly, $2,000 in drug profits had a legitimate pedigree.

Now that Danilo was a suburbanite with businesses to run, Ricky Ross certainly couldn't expect him to hop in his Mercedes and come running down to South Central every time Ross began getting low on blow. Blandón started asking Ross to drive out to Rialto to meet him, or he would bring the cocaine only halfway into town, leaving it in a load car at a shopping center parking lot.

Ross didn't mind the trips to Rialto, at first. Danilo and Chepita were fun to be around, he said, and he grew close to the couple and their daughters. "It would be just like any other wife if one of the employees come by the house," Ross said. "She'd cook dinner for us. 'Here, this is your room where you'll sleep at tonight. Here's your towels.' Know what I'm saying? So, she was playing along with the whole thing." Ross said she also knew the kind of business her husband was in. Once, he said, he found kilos of cocaine stored in their freezer, nestled in among the steaks and ice cubes.

At other times Blandón would take Ross and Ollie Newell out to dinner, question them closely about their business dealings, and then offer advice on how to improve their operations and safeguard themselves against both the police and other dealers. One of the best pointers he ever got from Blandón, Ross said, was "not to flash. Don't buy a lot of jewelry. Don't dress too fancy. That was the way he was. Always had on a nice suit and tie. Drove a nice car, but not too nice, know what I'm saying? No way you would look at him and say he was a dope dealer. Told us to buy some businesses, invest our money, so you can explain that you got a job. He taught us a lot."

The Torres brothers, in an interview with police in 1996, confirmed that "Blandón became very close to Ricky Ross. . .. Ross looked up to Blandón as a 'father figure.'"

But Ross noticed a change in his mentor's demeanor after he joined the country-club set in Rialto. "Danilo started getting relaxed. He didn't want to leave the house. 'I'm at home, man, I dreenking.' Fuck that shit, man," Ross said.

Blandón was getting drunk frequently and snorting a lot of cocaine. "He would use so much his nose got red and he kept trying to get me to use it. 'Here, just take a little.' I didn't want no part of that shit," Ross said. "And I ain't never had a drink in my life."

Blandón's habits would leave him soft and bloated. The other Nicaraguan dealers began calling him *Chanchin*, "the fat pig." Ironically, that disparaging nickname turned up as an alias in Blandón's DEA files.

It all made Ross a little nervous. The way he saw it, people who got lazy got sloppy, and sloppy people made stupid mistakes. This was a business where you couldn't afford even one mistake. It had taken Ross two years to perfect his delivery and distribution system—using nondescript decoy cars and load cars, walkie-talkies, stash houses, cash houses, and safe houses—and everything was running smoothly. He'd never had any troubles with the cops. Nearly every big crack dealer in town was getting cocaine from him, and he'd done it without resorting to attention-getting violence.

The dollar was a powerful persuader, he discovered. There was no limit to the average cocaine dealer's greed. You could buy your way into anything, or out of any disagreement. But deep inside, Ross was gnawed by the fear that his cocaine empire could vanish as suddenly as his tennis career had, leaving him in jail, dead, or back out on the streets, running at cars again.

When he looked closely at his operation, he saw a glaring weakness: his exclusive relationship with Danilo Blandón. It didn't make sense to have his entire life resting in the hands of one person, Ross concluded. At first he'd had no choice. He was tied to Blandón by circumstance. "If Danilo had disappeared, we wouldn't have been getting no ounces, no nothing, you know what I'm saying? When we got started, if we wouldn't have had him, we wouldn't have been able to have found it nowhere else," Ross said. "Even if you had the money, you just couldn't get it."

But now that he was riding on top, Ross had no shortage of offers from other cocaine importers, major traffickers who dreamed of finding a customer the size of Freeway Rick.

Blandón once told an associate that the beauty of dealing with "the black people" was that they sold cocaine so rapidly there were no costs or security risks to be incurred by warehousing the dope and parceling it out over a week or two. They would take as much as you could sell them and it was gone in a day, he crowed; "The black people, you know, buy everything."

Ross said the other "players" who came around usually couldn't match Blandón's prices. Couldn't even come close, most of the time. "When everybody else in town was spending forty-five [thousand] for a key, we was getting them for thirty-eight. And we knew, with him, he like never ran out."

Blandón confirmed that the prices he charged Ross were lower than anything he charged his other customers; Ross sold so much, he said, he could "get good prices from my suppliers."

Still, price and supply were just part of the reason Ross had confined his cocaine purchases to Blandón. With someone else, who knew what kind of troubles you were buying into? A new supplier could turn out to be a head case, or a fly-by-night. A low price could simply be a snitch's offer.

Danilo, on the other hand, was his friend, his protector. Rick trusted him implicitly, and for good reason. Danilo had guided him, advised him, kept him out of trouble. And he genuinely seemed to like Ross. "All I knew was like, back in L.A., he would always tell me when they was going to raid my houses. The police always thought I had somebody working for the police," Ross said. "And he was always giving me tips like, 'Man, don't go back over to that house no more,' or 'Don't go to this house over here.'" The cops invariably raided the locations within a couple days.

Ross, realizing that he owed much of his phenomenal success to Danilo, felt almost superstitious about tampering with a winning formula. "I can't say I never would have found out about it, but before I met him, the chances of me being a big dope dealer were slim to none." But when Blandón wouldn't get his ass up off the couch, Ross decided to look seriously for other sources, people who would be there when Danilo didn't feel like making money. He also used the opportunity to teach his teacher a little lesson about complacency.

One of the offers Ross had gotten came from the towering Torres brothers, known to Ross and his crew as "the Greens." He'd met them through Blandón and assumed from their size that they were his bodyguards. They also delivered cocaine and picked up money for Blandón occasionally. One day—as most of Blandón's assistants eventually did—they slipped Ross their phone number, in case he ever needed something extra.

If Danilo trusted the Greens enough to work for him, Ross figured, that was a pretty good recommendation, and one particularly busy day he called the brothers up and said he was willing to talk some business. Their prices were about the same as Blandón's, he said, but Ross didn't intend to pay either supplier's price for very long. Once the Torres brothers started selling to him, Ross used them to whipsaw Blandón on his prices, pointing out that his "other suppliers" were offering him a much lower price than his good friend Danilo. And he'd play the same game with the Torreses.

Blandón acknowledged that Ross began getting cocaine from "another two suppliers. . .they were my friends. . .. He got the coke from me, from Torres, from—see, not only from me. I got a piece of the apple." And he confirmed that Ross started driving his kilo prices down even further. But the new relationship had a bit of a rocky start. Jacinto Torres quickly got into trouble with the police.

He and his wife Margarita had quarreled, and he'd moved out, renting a room at his friend Robert Joseph Andreas's new four-bedroom house in Burbank. On April 6, 1984, shortly before 9:00 P.M., a team of Burbank narcotics detectives acting on an anonymous tip came crashing in through the kitchen door. They found a number of Nicaraguan women sitting around the kitchen table.

Jacinto Torres was stretched out on the bed in his room. In his dresser the police found a half-ounce of cocaine, a .38-caliber pistol, $3,700 in cash, and "large men's clothing." He and Andreas were thrown into the back of a prowl car and whisked off to jail. In Spanish, Torres and Andreas cursed their predicament, unaware that the cruiser was equipped with a secret taping system that was recording their every word.

"Stupid," Torres spat. "My money, my ledger, my clients, all the names. They are going to find a house I have got rented and if they get there, the whores, I don't want to think about it. Great God."

He turned to Andreas and said, "Rick is the one who fingered us."

"No, I have known him for a long time."

"They came looking for him," Torres replied. "Don't say nothing."

"It's nothing," Andreas assured him. "It's just half an ounce, almost nothing. They can't do nothing. I don't know if they found the house. I don't believe they did."

Court records show the police later searched a house in Northridge they thought belonged to Torres, an address that shows up on Blandón's NADDIS report as being one of his residences. But no drugs were found.

During the preliminary hearing, one of the arresting officers was asked about the search he'd conducted of Jacinto Torres's Mercedes Benz, and a very odd conversation ensued.

"Did you find any contraband in the Mercedes?" Torres's attorney, Joseph Vodnoy, asked Burbank police officer James Bonar.

"No contraband," Bonar answered. "Just some property of the United States Customs. No contraband."

"Wait a minute. . ." the judge said.

"I move to strike that answer!" Vodnoy shouted.

"Just a minute," the judge said. "What is it now you want to strike?"

"I asked him did he find any contraband? The answer was no. Then he went on to say something about United States Customs," Vodnoy complained.

"Property belonging to U.S. Customs?" the judge asked Bonar.

"It was not contraband. No no," Bonar replied.

"It will go out," the judge decided.

What U.S. Customs property the police found in Torres's car is not known, as all the police files from that case were destroyed. The charges against Torres were quickly disposed of. Four months later he pleaded guilty to a lesser charge of cocaine possession; he was fined $500 and given no jail time.

That outcome didn't please Jacinto Torres's probation officer, who refered to him as "that big guy who always comes in here in short pants." He told Torres's attorney, "You know your client's guilty. All we want is for him to serve some time. . .. This guy was a troublemaker as far back as 1970."

But even though Torres would violate his probation several times, no action would ever be taken against him. He went right back to cocaine trafficking.

Ross eventually turned Blandón and the Torres brothers against each other, a situation that would have dire consequences for Blandón in later years. The longtime friends became bitter rivals, fighting each other for Ross's business. One night, Ross said, he realized just how heated the rivalry had become.

While Ross was twitting a drunken Blandón about how low the brothers' cocaine prices had fallen, Blandón looked at him blearily, announced that "Chepita was fucking one of them," and said he wasn't going to take such an insult sitting down. He had a little plan he wanted to discuss with Ross to even things up.

"Danilo wanted to kill him," Ross said.

Blandón suggested that Ross set up a cocaine buy with the adulterous brother and "'tell that motherfucker to bring it at such-and-such a place, and I'm going to have some guys there waiting and you keep the dope. I'm going to take care of that fucking guy.'"

Ross said he laughed off the idea, figuring it was the liquor talking.

But the Torres brothers confirmed the story and took it one step further. In an interview with police, they "explained that Danilo Blandón's wife told him she had an affair with one of the [brothers] in a fit of anger. Blandón became enraged and hired a former military officer of the Nicaraguan army to kill him." The brothers said Blandón "apparently realized his wife had lied to him about the affair and called off the hit man."

Blandón said he never knew just how much cocaine the Torreses were selling to Ross, but he estimated that their volume rose to a level comparable to his own. He saw them "getting rich," he said. "If I sell a week to him, a hundred, maybe they go buy 50 or something like that. If I didn't sell him 100, they will sell him like, like 100 to him, you know? It was all the competition."

The brothers admitted to the police that they were selling "large amounts of cocaine to Ross on some occasions."

If Ricky Ross was going through 150 kilos of cocaine every week—and Ross says the figure is a reasonable average—it means he was selling enough to put a staggering 3,000,000 doses of crack on L.A.'s streets every seven days. It also means Blandón and the Torres brothers were sometimes sharing about $5.7 million a week in cash from the prolific young dealer. "Sometimes, we'd spend $4 million or $5 million a week with that guy, in our hell days," Ross said, speaking of Blandón.

Blandón said Ross was using an apartment in South Central as a countinghouse, where the money from the drug sales was brought, sorted, and wrapped. He would pick up his payments there. "When he [Danilo] came over we'd be counting the money and he said, 'Man, I'm gonna have to get you a money machine.' Because you know, our problem had got to be counting the money. You know, I started telling him, 'Man, my fingers hurt!' We got to the point where it was like, 'Man, we don't want to count no more money.'"

Blandón agreed that Ross was being deluged with cash. "Those times, they were using two or three machines, counting machines, and they were counting day and night."

To hide it all, Ross followed Blandón's advice and started investing in real estate, buying houses, apartment buildings, an auto parts store, and a hotel near the Harbor Freeway called the Freeway Motor Inn. In addition to giving Ricky Ross his nickname, "Freeway Rick," the motel served as a secure meeting place for dealers and couriers.

There was so much cash and so much crack flying around South Central that even the mainstream media had started to notice. On November 25, 1984, one day before the DEA arrested Jairo Meneses and Renato Pena Cabrera in San Francisco, the first story about crack to appear in the national press was published by the *Los Angeles Times*. It was written by Andy Furillo, a freckle-faced police beat reporter who'd been hired away from the smaller *Los Angeles Herald-Examiner*.

When he talked to some of the officers at the South Central stations, Furillo said, several of them mentioned this flood of cocaine they were seeing in the ghettos. He hit the streets, knocked on some doors, and confirmed what the officers told him—and then some. There was, he discovered, a gigantic, wide-open cocaine market flourishing in the poorest section of Los Angeles—and no one except the neighborhood newspapers had written a single word about it. It was a hell of a story, he thought.

Headlined "South Central Cocaine Sales Explode into $25 Rocks," Furillo's scoop began: "Police say hundreds, perhaps thousands, of young men, most of them gang members, are getting rich off the cocaine trafficking that has swept through L.A.'s black community in the past 18 months." Furillo described the rock house phenomenon and the multitude of street-corner dealers. He quoted police as saying that there were several hundred rock houses in South Central at that time. And his story accurately predicted that crack was a threat that could "destroy South Central Los Angeles for years to come."

Naturally, the *Times* buried the story inside the paper. But it was enough to prompt an embarrassed LAPD to launch raids on several dozen rock houses shortly afterward, with tragic results. On December 13, a diversionary explosion the cops set off during a raid on a West Sixtieth Street rock house killed a woman who happened to be walking by at the wrong time.

The crack phenomenon, Furillo said, fascinated him, and he pressed to do more stories on it, but his editors at the *Times* showed little interest in having him pursue the topic. Furillo eventually quit the paper in disgust and returned to the *Herald-Examiner*, where he continued producing gritty, ground-breaking stories on crack's impact on L.A.'s innercity residents.

Furillo's piece in the *Times* also caught the eye of the *Washington Post's* L.A. bureau chief, Jay Matthews, who did a follow-up in December 1984. That story described rock cocaine as "a marketing breakthrough that furnishes this middle-class drug to the city's poorest neighborhoods" and said rock houses—described as "steel-door dispensaries"—were "growing like a new fast-food chain." But as rapidly as the drug was spreading, the *Post* reported, it was still only an L.A. fad, and the story quoted unnamed "narcotics experts" as saying that "the hard little pellets of cocaine powder, selling for as little as $25, have not been found in significant numbers outside Los Angeles."

Bobby Sheppard, intelligence unit supervisor for the U.S. Drug Enforcement Administration in L.A., told the newspaper that he "saw no sign of rock cocaine spreading to the rest of the country, 'but I've got to believe that if it isn't there yet, it probably will be in the future.'" The story ended somewhat strangely by comparing crack to the clove cigarette fad of middle-class white teenagers.

It would be another year before other East Coast papers would begin reporting on crack; this timing coincided with the drug's belated arrival in New York City. "Crack first came to the attention of the New York Field Office Division of the Drug Enforcement Administration in the fall of 1985. The New York Joint Drug Enforcement Task Force made the first significant seizure of crack on October 25, 1985," said Robert Stutman, the head of the DEA's New York office, in 1986 congressional testimony. "A form of cocaine similar to crack but known as 'rock' has been available in Los Angeles for the last five years." According to then NYPD commissioner Benjamin Ward, "In January of 1985, of all cocaine arrests made by the Narcotics Division, there were fewer than fifteen arrests for crack."

Furillo's story also prompted the first scientific look at the early L.A. crack market, done by USC sociologists Malcolm Klein and Cheryl Maxson in early 1985. Their preliminary findings, published in a small social research journal, noted that "throughout the Black residential areas of Los Angeles County, there has been a recent, dramatic increase in cocaine dealing. . .in large part from the proliferation of cocaine 'rocks' and fortified 'rock houses' which, with certain refinements, constitute a new technology and organization for cocaine distribution. An increasing trend in the distribution system is the use of street gang members in various dealing roles."

The study said that "estimates on the number of [rock houses] in South Los Angeles, a Black area where the phenomenon is concentrated, range from one to two hundred at a time to as many as a thousand."

Some rock houses were even being franchised, they found, and said "gang involvement is a connected part of a very rapid process by which this system has been institutionalized." The distribution system "yields ready access to inexpensive cocaine in a very large Black community in Los Angeles."

One thing they were unable to explain was why crack was found only in L.A.'s black neighborhoods. The drug, the sociologists wrote, "at least currently seems to be ethnically specific. Cocaine is found widely in the Black community in Los Angeles, but is almost totally absent from the Hispanic areas."

The explanation for that seems obvious once the Danilo Blandón-Rick Ross partnership is factored into the equation. "There was no market until we created it," Ross said matter-of-factly. "We started in our neighborhood and we stayed in our neighborhood. We almost never went outside it. If people wanted dope, they came to us."

The USC sociologists' predictions for the future were frightening and, as history has shown, dead-on accurate. "The distribution system seems custom-made for other Black gang centers (Philadelphia, New York, Washington, Chicago, etc.)," they wrote. "There is absolutely nothing inherent in this distribution technology, nor in the Los Angeles context of its development, that would prevent its exportation to many other urban areas. Indeed, exportability seems very high. . .. All this makes for an intelligent, well-organized system that is maximally effective—in short, it works efficiently, is very impressive and could easily explode across the nation."

And that is essentially what happened.

While the *Washington Post* story made no mention of the L.A. street gangs, Andy Furillo's story tagged them as the prime beneficiaries of the new crack trade. He presciently predicted that crack would dramatically alter the power structure on the city's streets, by providing the gangs with the one thing they had previously lacked: money. "Tom Garrison, director of field operations for the Community Youth Gang Services Project, said the utilization of the gang structure by drug dealers represents 'a whole new challenge for us,'" Furillo wrote. "'They've always had the numbers and the firepower, but now they've got the economic power too.'"

Klein and Maxson later came to believe that the police were exaggerating the role of gang involvement in the crack trade, but two later studies by the California Department of Justice refuted that idea and said the gangs were an even bigger force behind its spread from L.A. than previously thought. "We think that law enforcement perceptions of gang involvement in the drug trade are sharper than the Klein and Maxson statistical study suggest," UC-Berkeley sociologist Jerome Skolnick wrote in 1988. "In fact, it appears difficult to overstate the penetration of Blood and Crip members into other states."

The U.S. General Accounting Office (GAO), in a 1989 report, echoed Skolnick's conclusions: "In the early 1980s the gangs began selling crack cocaine. Within a matter of years, the lucrative crack market changed the black gangs from traditional neighborhood street gangs to extremely violent criminal groups operating from coast to coast. The lure of profits coupled with increased pressure from local police have prompted the Los Angeles gangs to extend their territories far beyond their neighborhoods. Within the past three to four years, members of the Crips and the Bloods have been identified selling or distributing crack in Washington, Oregon, Kansas, Oklahoma, Colorado, Missouri, North Carolina, Arizona, Virginia, Maryland and elsewhere."

The GAO report noted that a Washington, D.C., crack ring in 1989 was distributing 440 pounds of cocaine there every week, which "illustrates the nationwide impact of the Los Angeles street gangs. Much of the cocaine distributed by the gang was allegedly purchased from the Crips and the Bloods, who had purchased their cocaine from the Colombians."

The report included a map of the United States showing ominous black arrows emanating from L.A. and streaking northward and eastward across the country. The map was pockmarked with black dots—all the cities where crack had been found. Miami for some reason wasn't among them, although by 1985 the Jamaican posses from Liberty City had reportedly started their trek westward. They also began bringing crack to some African-American neighborhoods, but their primary markets were in areas populated by Caribbean immigrants. One drug researcher, Nick Kozel of the National Institute on Drug Abuse (NIDA), went to Miami specifically looking for crack after reading Furillo's article and, according to one account, "came up empty-handed."

Ross said that while he did not sell exclusively to Crips gang members, they initially formed a large part of his customer base simply because he and Ollie were from a Crip neighborhood. But that only mattered in the beginning, he said. By 1984 and 1985, they were so far removed from that level of dealing that gang colors or the 'hoods their buyers hailed from were trivialities.

Freeway Rick was the dealers' dealer. What his customers did with their cocaine, who they sold it to, and what they fought about afterward made no difference to him. One customer was just as good as another, as long as they paid. All that other stuff just got in the way of making money. "By the time the market exploded in 1984, Ross already was dealing directly with the Colombian cartels, who supplied him with 50 to 100 kilos a day," the *Los Angeles Times* stated in 1994. "With that, Ross was able to operate dozens of rock houses, catering to thousands of addicts across Los Angeles. He had another three 'ounce houses,' servicing 100 to 200 mid-level dealers. Finally, he had his own private list of V.I.P. customers, maybe 30 to 50 big-time dealers, who dropped tens of thousands of dollars at a time."

As the South Central crack market became saturated, Ross's gang customers started traveling to other cities in California to make their fortunes, setting up new crack markets and using their connections with Ross to supply them. It was the start of an unprecedented cross-country migration by the Crips, and later the Bloods, which would spread crack from South Central to other black neighborhoods across the United States.

And it was the start of Ross's expansion from a large regional drug trafficking network to what the *L.A. Times* would later call "a coast-to-coast conglomerate that sold more than 500,000 nuggets of the drug every day." One L.A. narcotics detective would describe it as "a cartel."

South Central—ground zero of the crack explosion—would never be the same again.

Like night follows day, crack brought a host of attendant plagues: a flood of automatic weapons, rock houses, motorized police battering rams, drive-by shootings, and pitched gun battles. At the same time, the Reagan administration began snipping away at the fragile social support services that had made life in the inner cities livable, if not luxurious.

A commission examining the causes of the 1992 riots in South Central named crack as one of the contributing factors. The drug was the beginning of the end for many struggling inner-city neighborhoods in the 1980s. They changed from places where generations had raised families in relative safety to free-fire zones where children could be mown down as easily as if they were walking the streets of Beirut.

"With rocks hitting the streets hard, and the money that was generated. . .about '84 or '85, guns hit the streets hard. Around '86, '87, it was on. You name it, you could get it," Leibo, an East Side Crip, told authors Yusuf Jah and Sister Shah'Keyah. "You didn't hear that much about 9-millimeters, M-16's, M-14's and AKs unless you were hooked up and was high on the echelon, but after 1986 they were available to anybody."

Here again, Danilo Blandón was a trendsetter.

Blandón began selling high-powered weapons to Ross and his friends in 1984, courtesy of his spooky associate, Ronald J. Lister, the ex-cop. "We started handling more and more money and then the first gun that I ever had, Danilo gave it to me for free," Ross said. "He just came by the house and said, 'I've got a present for you.' It was a .22 pistol. I think it was a 15-shot, with a silencer on it. . .. He started selling us guns after that. Everybody that worked with me—*everybody*—bought a gun from him."

Blandón had access to every imaginable firearm, he said. "I mean, he sold what is called a

Streetsweeper, the Thompsons, he sold those. I think he sold those for like $3,000 apiece. It's a fully automatic that you see like in the movies, you know, in the old gangster movies," Ross said. "He sold Uzi's, he sold pistols, brand new pistols, .38, .357, any kind of pistol that you wanted. . .any kind of gun that you wanted, he got it for you."

Ross, who bought a silver-plated Uzi submachine gun, said his partner, Ollie Newell, became one of Blandón's biggest arms customers and soon had enough firepower to equip a platoon. One of his prize possessions was a tripod-mounted .50-caliber machine gun, which can down small planes.

"Like, I started buying houses, right? Well, Ollie started buying guns. He'd buy anything Danilo would walk through the door with. We had our own little arsenal. One time, he tells me Danilo was gonna get him a grenade launcher. I said, 'Man, what the fuck do we need with a grenade launcher?'"

He and his fellow dealers, Ross said, bought more than a hundred guns from Blandón. He sold so many to other dealers and friends that, by 1987, the L.A. police would list "weapons sales" as among Ross's various enterprises. Blandón denies selling Ross that many weapons, but he did admit selling him a .22 pistol, an Uzi machine pistol, and an Armalite AR-15 assault rifle, the civilian version of the military's M-16. The AR-15 was a weapon the Contras bought by the thousands. Blandón owned one himself.

Blandón described his weapons sales as nothing more than a convenience for Ross and insisted he was no arms dealer: "I don't sell guns, okay? I sold that gun because he ordered [them from] me—because I knew the people who sell the guns." He said he never used weapons in his business and tried to pass that practice along to Ross.

So how was it that Danilo Blandón, a drug dealer, knew arms merchants?

"Because I was in the Contra revolution," he replied.

The guns sold to the crack dealers, Blandón explained, came from Ron Lister and his associate William Lee Downing, through their "security business" in high-class Laguna Beach. Lister admitted to the CIA that he began acquiring weapons for Blandón between 1982 and 1983, "some of which Blandón claimed were going to 'my friends down South.'" Lister said he sold Blandón one or two guns a week: "Assorted handguns, semiautomatic Uzi machine pistols, KG99 Tec Nine machine pistols, and possibly semi-automatic AK47's." He also admitted "purchasing a small number of commercially available, off-the-shelf night vision devices for Blandón. Lister says he does not know what Blandón did with the devices."

Blandón told CIA inspectors that Lister had access to such a wide variety of weapons that, in 1983 or 1984, he arranged for him to give a sales presentation to the leadership of the Contras. "Blandón recalls that, in addition to the usual attendees, several top Contra leaders were also in attendance, including Eden Pastora, Adolfo Chamorro and Mariano Montealgre. Blandón also says Ivan Torres was present," the CIA report stated. Mariano Montealgre, a CIA-trained Contra pilot, was implicated in a scheme to haul drugs for the Contras but never charged. Ivan Torres was a drug-dealing subordinate of Blandón, identified in DEA records as having "political connections to the FDN."

"Blandón said the attendees showed no interest in Lister's offer and Blandón received the impression that the military arms of the Contras was already being supplied by CIA or another U.S. government agency," the CIA reported.

During a 1996 court case, Blandón was asked if he went to Lister's security company and bought weapons "off the rack."

"No, he brought them to me."

"Brought them to you?"

"Uh huh."

"Where?"

"To my house."

"What did you do—call him up and order some?"

"No sir. He'd shown me that, and he told me that. And I offered them like a salesman, you know? He [Ross] ordered and I sold it."

"So you were doing another one of your brokerage things?"

"Yes."

"Sir, this business that you were in is not like selling paper to offices, is it?"

"Excuse me," Blandón huffed. "In those times you can buy a gun from the gun shop and you can sell it to anybody, okay?"

"But you sold Uzis!"

"Those guns," Blandón said calmly, "they weren't stolen."

The "security business" that provided Blandón the weapons was Mundy Security Group Inc., which Lister incorporated in Laguna Beach in mid-1983. Lister, an attorney named Maurice Green, another attorney named Gary Shapiro, and his reserve police officer buddy, Christopher W. Moore, were named as directors and officers. A business card found in a drug raid three years later identified Blandón as a vice president of that company.

Moore said the goings-on at Mundy Security Group's offices were enough to scare anyone. Director Maurice Green, he said, was a self-proclaimed legal genius with a severe drug and alcohol problem. He had a special wall constructed behind his desk that was hollow, Moore said, so he could kick through the paneling and run out of the building in case he needed to beat a hasty retreat. "I walked by his office one day and he was sitting at his desk looking down the barrel of a gun," Moore recalled. "I went into Ron's office and said, 'Hey Ron, you know Maurice is sitting in there playing with a gun?' He just laughed about it." Once, director Gary Shapiro said, the office was besieged by a mob of angry doctors who "were screaming and yelling about how Maurice had screwed up with their money." Lister was so wary of Green that he secretly videotaped him, Shapiro said.

Green was prosecuted and disbarred in 1987 for forging prescriptions to obtain narcotics. In 1992 he was sentenced to two years in prison for grand theft and practicing law without a license.

Aside from a few burglar alarm installations, Moore said, the only other business that he knew Mundy Security Group was involved in was an attempt to market a laser sighting device for AR-15 assault rifles. Lister's partner, Bill Downing, was designing that gizmo, which used a tiny laser beam to put a small red dot on the target—perfect for killing people at night.

According to a 1996 report from the U.S. Customs Service, Mundy Security Group was licensed with the U.S. State Department in 1983 to export U.S. Munitions List items to other countries. "This firm received three DSP-73s [temporary export licenses] to export laser components and spare parts to 'various countries,'" the Customs report stated. "Unfortunately, the data base here at the Department of State does not contain abundant information on registrations/licenses that old, so I am unable to provide. . .more specifics on the types of equipment and countries exported to."

Blandón also did a brisk business selling electronics equipment to other cocaine dealers, he said. He sold walkie-talkies to Ross and his crew, who used them to keep in touch during cocaine and money pickups. He sold pagers, police scanners, voice scramblers, cellular phones, and anti-eavesdropping equipment to the dopers. "I could sell to all the people that was in the coke business," he said. Again, Ronald Lister procured that equipment for him. Blandón said Ross "used to live in an apartment beside the freeway, you see, in San Pedro, San Pedro Freeway in L.A. It was an apartment by Florence, if I remember, by the freeway. So I get him [Ross] a scanner, telephone security, you know, when you put the thing in the telephone and you can get on another phone and talk to him and nobody will listen."

Ross said his crew carried the police scanners in their cars while out on drug deliveries, eavesdropping on the conversations between the patrol cars in the neighborhood. They also used one in the counting house when there were large sums of money on hand. During one 1987 raid, some of their equipment fell into the hands of the L.A. County Sheriff's Office, and the cops were suitably impressed. "They've got electronic police-detection systems, sophisticated weapons—better equipment than we have," Sergeant Robert Sobel complained to a reporter.

Sobel and his team had raided Ross's "Big Palace of Wheels"—a well-stocked but curiously customer-free auto parts store that was one of his many front corporations—and they also hit an apartment belonging to one of Ross's dealers. At the store, Sobel said, "We found hand-held, programmable 800 megahertz radios which are better than our radios, which they use in their counter-surveillance thing, when they communicated with one another when they transported cocaine."

The apartment coughed up "several sophisticated firearms, including an Israeli .357 automatic pistol with a laser-type sighting device, which facilitates its use during darkness," according to the affidavit of one of Sobel's partners. The search also found Teflon-coated bullets, commonly known as "cop killers" because they can easily pierce an officer's bulletproof vest.

In an L.A. Police Department summary of searches at locations associated with Ross, Deputy Chief Glenn Levant wrote that "numerous 9-mm Uzies [sic] were seized, along with an AK-47 assault rifle, a fully automatic Mac-11 machine gun, a fully automatic machine gun complete with silencer, and state-of-the-art handguns, rifles and shotguns."

Eventually Ronald Lister's skills in procuring such high-tech marvels brought him to the attention of the FBI. On April 3, 1985, two FBI agents, Richard Smith and David Cook, came knocking on the door of Lister's well-tended home in Mission Viejo. They had a grand jury subpeona to deliver and a statement to take. They "hammered on who I might know in East block countries. See's a spy situation," Lister wrote after they left.

He confirmed to police in 1996 that he had been the subject of a "grand jury investigation on my relationship with Soviet agents. Crazy, huh?" Lister "went on to say that he had sold an FBI 'scrambler system' to somebody overseas and the FBI had investigated only to find out that the equipment was declassified and available on the open market."

But FBI agent Smith, now retired, remembered things a little differently. He told the police that "he had received information that Lister was attempting to sell classified electronic equipment to Soviet KGB agents. They conducted an investigation, which included a sting operation in which FBI agents posed as KGB agents. [He] said Lister was attempting activities which were completely illegal and clearly in violation of United States national security."

Lister's former chief, Neil Purcell, confirmed that the FBI had Lister under investigation but recalled that the gear involved high-tech camera equipment. "They came down to see me. They were absolutely convinced he was selling this stuff to the Russians and tried to get background on the guy and after I listened to them, I said, 'Pardon me for laughing, but he's taking you guys for a ride, believe me.' And they said, 'We've got photographs!' and [they] showed me photographs of him meeting in San Francisco and New York with the Russians and at the Embassy in Washington—on and on."

Purcell said the FBI discovered that Lister was "bullshitting the Russians, charging them four and five times what he paid for it. The kind of thing that's really laughable about this is the Russians think they've really got something and they could have gone to the camera store themselves and bought it."

Former agent Smith claimed that Lister was never prosecuted because he turned out to be "full of hot air" and was "determined to be incapable of producing the equipment which he was attempting to sell to the KGB. Lister's lack of 'present capability' to commit the crime made prosecution impractical." But Smith acknowledged that "the Assistant U.S. Attorney who handled the case felt, however, that Lister's activities were serious enough to warrant a grand jury hearing."

Lister admitted to L.A. police that he had been called before the grand jury and questioned about his activities. When the police asked him about the nature of the equipment involved, he said, "I can't get into that stuff with you guys." Lister was never indicted and told police he was unclear as to the outcome of the grand jury investigation. "That's all classified, incidentally," Lister told them. When the detectives asked him why the information would be classified, Lister said, "I can't answer that for you."

If the L.A. detectives were as skeptical of Lister's cloak-and-dagger work as ex-FBI agent Smith and former chief Purcell seemed to be, they must have gotten quite a jolt when they called the FBI to ask for a copy of their old files on the Lister investigation. "Special Agent Tim Bezick. . .stated that the FBI reports and the transcripts of Lister's grand jury testimony were protected by the National Security Act," Detective Axel Anderson wrote on November 20, 1996. "At Bezick's suggestion I called Joel Levin, chief of the Criminal Division of the San Francisco office of the United States Attorney. Mr. Levin researched the issue and confirmed the necessity of a court order."

They got similar reactions when they checked on Lister's background with the Maywood Police Department and the Laguna Beach Police Department, his old employers. "The personnel jacket for Ronald J. Lister has been sealed by the City of Maywood," they reported in November 1996. In Laguna Beach they learned that "the actual personnel files related to Ronald Lister no longer existed. . .all the information and documents in the Lister file had been purged, with the exception of the original employment application."

The FBI never turned over the documents, and the L.A. detectives were unable to determine why the files of a decade-old investigation of a dope dealing arms merchant with an allegedly overactive imagination would still be a matter of national security.

A significant clue, however, can be found in some documents seized during a 1986 narcotics raid on Lister's house. One of the many curious items the police carted away that day was a ten-page, handwritten document that details weapons and equipment deals by Lister. Lister admitted to the police that he had written the document in preparation for his 1985 grand jury appearance. The notes chronicled a series of meetings with a customer named "Ivan" at the Fairmont Hotel in San Jose, California. Ivan was uninterested in Lister's scramblers, the notes said, but asked Lister to procure some "Varo night vision equipment." The notes also told of Lister visiting the Russian embassy in Washington, D.C.

After jotting down a description of the April 1985 visit from FBI agents Smith and Cook, Lister wrote down a list of seven names. "Lister said he gave the above names to the FBI agents Rich Smith and Dave Cook," the police detectives wrote in their 1996 report. "He said the names 'came up in his business' for some reason and he wanted to have the names in writing when he went before the grand jury. . .. Lister said the people listed were only 'business people.'" The last two names on the list were Roberto D'Aubuisson, the right-wing Salvadoran death squad leader whom the CIA later acknowledged to be a drug and weapons trafficker, and Ray Prendes, the former head of the Salvadoran Christian Democratic party, which received substantial CIA financial assistance during the 1980s.

The detectives didn't ask why Lister would be having business dealings with CIA-linked Salvadoran politicians, or what the nature of that business was.

But the most intriguing name on Lister's list was at the very top of it: Bill Nelson. "Lister said that Bill Nelson was an A.S.I.S. member, which he said stands for the American Society of Industrial Security. Lister said that Nelson was the security director for the Fleur [sic] Corporation," the detectives' report said.

William Earl Nelson was far more than that, but Lister didn't elaborate, and the detectives didn't push him. Had they done so, they might have gotten a better idea about why the FBI's files on Lister would still be classified eleven years later.

Before becoming Fluor Corporation's vice president for security and administration, Bill Nelson had been the CIA's deputy director of operations—the head spook—the man in charge of all CIA covert operations around the world from 1973 to 1976. A Fluor spokeswoman initially denied to journalist Nick Schou that Nelson had been affiliated with Fluor until Schou confronted her with documentary evidence of his employment there. Only then did she admit it, saying Nelson had worked at Fluor from 1977 to 1985.

A former CIA officer, John Vandewerker, confirmed to Schou that Nelson and Lister knew each other. Apparently, when Lister was running out to Fluor's headquarters in 1982 and 1983, it was Bill Nelson with whom he was meeting—"Ron's big CIA contact," as Lister's former office director, Chris Moore, described him.

They didn't get much bigger than Nelson, a protege of former CIA director William Colby. A native of New York, Nelson had been a CIA officer since 1948, serving under a variety of military and State Department covers, mostly in the Far East. Japanese newspapers exposed him as CIA after they learned he was asking travelers to the Soviet Union to literally dig up dirt around Russian missile bases.

As head of covert operations, Nelson oversaw the CIA's controversial destabilization program in Chile, which resulted in the overthrow and murder of Chile's elected president, socialist Salvador Allende. Later, Nelson commanded 'Operation Feature,' a covert plan to place a "friendly" group in power in Angola after the former African colony was granted independence from Portugal in 1975. He was named as a defendant in a civil suit filed by the widow of an American mercenary the CIA recruited to fight in Angola in 1976. The widow claimed the CIA misled her husband about the hopelessness of his mission and then engaged in a smear campaign to distance itself from him when he turned up dead. The suit was eventually dismissed.

Nelson's Operation Feature bore many similarities to the Contra project, particularly in terms of how the CIA's proxy army received its weapons. That could explain why Lister—who has admitted dealing arms in Latin America—was meeting with Nelson. In both operations, arms and equipment for the CIA's secret armies were laundered through the armies of neighboring countries friendly to the United States in order to disguise their origins and preserve deniability for the CIA. In the Angolan conflict, the countries of Zaire and South Africa were used. Guatemala, Honduras, and El Salvador fronted arms shipments for the Contras. In both cases the CIA turned to the People's Republic of China to supply additional weaponry and missiles to its chosen fighters.

Evidence of Lister's involvement in sophisticated international arms transactions was found in the notes Lister made, naming Nelson and the Salvadoran politicians. Lister had drawn a flow chart containing boxes labeled "Swiss Bank," "U.S. State Department," "H.K.," "X Country," and "Factory USA." Strange acronyms and abbreviations were jotted alongside each box.

When the L.A. County Sheriff's Office sent Lister's flow chart to the U.S. Customs Service for analysis in 1996, Customs said it appeared to diagram a scheme to illegally divert American-made weapons to a third party, using fraudulent end-user certifications (EUCs) from another country to conceal the true identity of the weapons' recipients. EUCs are sworn declarations in which the government buying the weapons certifies that it really did order them. It is supposed to provide the U.S. government with some assurance that American-made weapons aren't ending up in the hands of terrorists or Communist guerrillas. When Oliver North began supplying arms for the Contras after the CIA funding cutoff, he frequently used phony EUCs from the Guatemalan and Honduran governments to divert weapons to the Contras, records show.

"The Contras can't buy weapons on the international arms market. Only countries can buy weapons, and certain countries can't buy weapons if they're embargoed or if they're embroiled in a political confrontation," explained former CIA official Alan Fiers, who ran the Contra program for several years. "So what happens is an arms broker will get an intermediary country to issue false end-user certificates. There is generally some consideration involved and the end-user certificate is issued, but the arms are either not shipped to the country that issued the certificate or are trans-shipped through that country on to a disguised end user, in this case, the Contras."

That was precisely what the flow chart seized from Lister's house illustrated, according to the U.S. Customs Service arms expert who analyzed the document. "Were this transaction taking place today," Senior Special Agent James P. McShane wrote, "I would assume that there was to be a [weapons] diversion to either Iran or the People's Republic of China, neither of which can get licenses for exported munitions."

Just what the CIA's former boss of covert operations, who by most accounts was an upright individual, could possibly have had to discuss with an admitted cocaine trafficker, drug addict, and gun runner like Ronald Lister is hard to fathom, and the exact nature of their relationship is likely never to be known. In April 1995, wracked with pneumonia, Nelson died of respiratory failure in an Orange County convalescent hospital at the age of seventy-four. But it is conceivable that their connection had something to do with the Contras and weapons. At the same time that he was reportedly meeting with Nelson, Lister was also advising the Contras on security matters and peddling arms.

Other documents seized from Lister in the 1986 raid lend support to this idea. According to the Justice Department, Lister's monthly calendars for 1985 contained "frequent references to the Contras," notations reading "SF Contras," "LA Contras," "D-Contra" and at least one reference to the Defense Intelligence Agency, which was known to be involved in supplying military hardware to the Nicaraguan rebels. Agents seized two long lists of weapons with the names of pastries next to them, which Lister explained were code sheets he and Blandón used when they "discussed weaponry over the phone." They also found a handwritten note bearing the names of several CIA operatives working with Eden Pastora's ARDE Contra group in Costa Rica.

"The documents seized from Lister in 1986 largely corroborate his account of his relationship with Blandón and the Contras," the Justice Department concluded in 1997.

11

"They were looking in the other direction"

Norwin Meneses was in a suspicious mood. He sat stiffly on a wooden bench and parried with two journalists who had come to question him about his relationship with the Contras some fifteen years earlier.

It was January 1996. Meneses had been locked up in the primitive Tipitapa prison outside Managua for five years, but he had none of the flourescent-tube pallor that men in American prisons have after such long periods of confinement. The drug lord was tanned, comfortably dressed; he had adapted well to his surroundings.

Or, perhaps more accurately, the old *Guardia* prison—where FDN founder Ricardo Lau once held court as warden and chief torturer—had adapted itself to him. Meneses strolled freely through the grounds, and the guards looked respectfully at their shoes and murmured "*Senor*" when Meneses and his entourage passed by. His cell door was closed only when he wanted it that way.

His sandals slapping loudly through the high-ceilinged halls, he had led the reporters to a breezy and secluded corridor that looked out on the prison's bright courtyard. A young dark-skinned inmate who seemed to take directions from Meneses stood by a tree outside, observing intently.

Just getting this far had been a chore for Meneses's visitors, a process as protocol-driven as arranging an audience with a potentate. They had been run through a screening process of Meneses's own devising, one that had nothing to do with the Nicaraguan penal system or its security concerns. The prison warden admitted that he had no say. He simply signed the passes and opened the gates when Meneses told him to.

First, Norwin's wives, Maritza and Blanca Margarita, had to approve. Then their attorneys needed to be personally satisfied. Then Norwin's attorneys—all three of them—had to sign off. And he wanted letters from them proving it.

The DEA and the CIA also got involved. "I'll he right up front with you," said DEA public affairs chief James McGivncy, after reviewing Meneses's intelligence files in Washington, D.C. "I've already talked to the CIA people, because obviously there's some implications in some of the things I've seen that he may have been or at least he represented himself to be, and frankly, the CIA says, 'Hey, you know, that's fine. If he wants to talk to the reporter, he can tell them whatever he wants.' Their thinking on it was: 'We've been through this before' and they didn't think they had anything to hide on it."

Nor did the DEA, McGivney assured the reporter, though no one had suggested otherwise about either agency. The DEA was even willing to set up the interview, McGivney said. "I think I could probably represent to you that we might be able to facilitate any meeting you have with Meneses, in arranging it," he said carefully. "I can represent that I can go out and try to facilitate [an interview with] Meneses. And what he ends up saying, who knows? I'm willing to let the chips fall where they may. That's the kind of confidence I've got that. . .that the DEA back in the 1980s had no problems in those areas."

But the DEA's help came with a price, "a quid pro quo," as McGivney put it. In exchange, the DEA wanted the reporters to leave something out of their story: Danilo Blandón's relationship with the DEA.

The reporters arranged the interview themselves.

Even after they jumped through all of his hoops, though, Meneses gave nothing away for free. Every suggestion of criminal conduct was protested as a calamitous slur by a foolish detective or Communist. But when he was confronted by hard evidence—such as a photograph or his own words—he would shrug, smile, and admit it.

As the minutes stretched into hours, Meneses became relaxed and expansive but never let his guard down. Every so often, he would tell an obvious lie, just to see if his audience was paying attention. He denied having any connection to the Contras, a falsehood he immediately retracted when confronted with a photograph of himself standing with FDN commander Adolfo Calero. Or he would casually drop a bomb-shell—like mentioning Ronald Lister's name unbidden—to see how it resonated, doing his own soundings to test which paths the journalists had taken before arriving in his presence.

He laughed heartily only once during the afternoon, when he was reading an interview U.S. authorities had done with his old associates, Jacinto and Edgar Torres, who later became informants for a variety of police agencies. In May of 1992 the FBI, the DEA, the IRS, and the LAPD sat the Trees down in the U.S. attorney's office in Los Angeles and grilled them about Meneses and Danilo Blandón. Meneses was asked to read the Torres's statement and point out areas where he disagreed. He rested a forefinger on his lips, and his eyes darted across the four-page FBI report. He nodded occasionally, pursed his lips angrily once, and then let out what could best be described as a guffaw.

Holding the document open to the second page, he pointed to the second paragraph: "Torres estimated that between 1980 and 1991 Blandón moved over 5,000 kilograms of cocaine."

"It would be more accurate if you multiplied that by ten," Blandón's longtime supplier smiled.

Fifty thousand kilos? Fifty-five tons of cocaine?

"Easily," he said. And not without a little pride.

Meneses's figures are impossible to verify, but as he was Blandón's supplier for many years, no one is in a better position to know. The DEA estimated Blandón imported between 18,000 and 27,000 kilos between 1982 and 1990, amassing millions of dollars, and the Torres brothers later boosted their own estimates dramatically. According to a 1996 L.A. County Sheriff's Office report, the brothers told police "they heard that Blandón sold 10,000 kilos of cocaine, mostly in South Central Los Angeles and the San Francisco Bay area" during a two-year span in the mid-1980s. At Ricky Ross's conversion rate, that's enough cocaine to make 30 million doses of crack. "Danilo Blandón was the biggest dealer in the Los Angeles area for about two years," the Torres brothers concluded.

U.S. government officials were even more generous in their appraisals. "Mr. Blandón was considered to be probably the largest Nicaraguan cocaine dealer in the United States, is that correct?" Assistant U.S. Attorney L. J. O'Ncale asked Blandón's DEA case agent, Charles Jones, during a 1995 federal grand jury hearing in San Diego.

"I believe so, sir," Jones testified.

Both men had reason to know. O'Neale had been monitoring the activities of Blandón and his associates since the 1980s. Jones had been watching him since at least the early 1990s, and would describe Blandón in a sworn statement in 1992 as a "multi-ton dealer."

Becoming the biggest dealer in the biggest cocaine market in the United States in less than four years is no small testament to Blandón's sales and marketing skills. But what makes his rise to the top even more remarkable is the fact that his friend, mentor, and cocaine supplier, Norwin Meneses, was working for the DEA toward the end of Blandón's ascendancy.

After the arrests of his nephew Jairo and Renato Pena in late 1984, the drug lord quickly wound up his affairs in San Francisco, selling his gray Jag, his used car lot, and his Mission District office building, and moving his base of operations to his beachfront ranch in Costa Rica. "I went to Costa Rica to see him right after he moved and I spent about six months on his ranch down there," said John Lacome, a Bay Area friend of Meneses and his nephews. "He would take us into town, take us to the clubs, get us some girls. I got a great picture of him while I was there. He's standing next to one of his cows and he's wearing this black baseball hat with a picture of a clock on it that says, 'It's Party Time!'"

Meneses was no stranger to Costa Rica, a picturesque and normally placid little democracy on Nicaragua's southern border. Like Somoza, Blandón, and other wealthy Nicaraguans, Meneses had had a home there since before the Sandinista takeover. Meneses owned not one house but several, and large ranches in northern Costa Rica, near the war zone. The *LA. Times*, citing an unnamed source, reported that "beginning in November 1982 Meneses was spending much of his time in Costa Rica and commuting back to San Francisco."

He also had important friends in Costa Rica.

"Norwin receives political protection from Jose Marti Figueres, the son of former Costa Rican President Jose 'Pepe' Figueres," an informant told DEA. agents in 1984. Jose Marti Figueres, the older brother of Costa Rica's current president, was accused in 1995 of swindling the Costa Rican State Lottery of six million dollars. He was also implicated in the 1970s with fugitive financier Robert Vesco in a scheme to profit from the nationalization of Costa Rica's gasoline distributors.

Who Norwin Meneses was and what he did for a living was no mystery to Costa Rican police officials, or the American DEA agents assigned there. The DEA was first informed of Meneses's Costa Rican drug operations in February 1984, when a confidential informant was debriefed at the U.S. embassy in San Jose and reported that Meneses was in charge of a major cocaine trafficking ring. Six months later the DEA learned that a small cocaine shipment destined for Meneses had been seized at the international airport in San Jose by the Costa Rican police.

Costa Rican authorities knew him as "one of the most important traffickers of drugs, as much in the Nicaragua of Somoza, as at the moment in Costa Rica." That 1985 report from an OIJ investigation stated, "He was one of the first economic supports of the FDN in Costa Rica. There are rumors that he works as an informant for the DEA." It was more than rumor; it was true. And the DEA may not have been the only U.S. government agency in Costa Rica to have availed itself of the drug kingpin's services.

To hear the DEA tell it, Meneses simply walked into the U.S. Embassy in Costa Rica one day in July 1986, unsolicited, and announced to the assembled agents that he had come to enlist in the Reagan Administration's war on drugs.

DEA agent Sandalio Gonzalez was on hand to faithfully record the official reasons behind the kingpin's life-altering decision: "(a) his desire to clear up a minor problem he has with the IRS (b) his decision to totally terminate his involvement in drug trafficking activities and (c) his desire to help the present U.S. Administration's fight against drugs, in view of President Reagan's total commitment to free his native land, Nicaragua."

If Meneses wanted to help the Reagan Administration, he'd come to the right place. The U.S. Embassy in San Jose, Costa Rica, was the nerve center for all of the Administration's covert operations on the so-called Southern Front of the Contra war, and these included a number of illegal CIA ventures that would later be exposed during the Iran-Contra scandal. The American Ambassador, Lewis Tambs, was taking orders directly from Oliver North and the CIA's Costa Rican station chief, Joseph Fernandez, was so heavily involved with illegal Contra operations that he would be fired and indicted for his participation.

But there are several reasons to doubt agent Gonzalez's stirring account of Meneses' redemption. First, it is likely that the drug lord was already working for the DEA before that report was written, snooping around in a murder case tinged with CIA overtones. In an interview, Meneses said he had helped the DEA gather intelligence on the February 1985 torture-murder of DEA agent Enrique "Kiki" Camarena in Mexico, whose demise at the hands of Mexican traffickers made him a hero to many narcotics agents. Meneses claims he provided information that helped U.S. authorities capture one of the Mexican drug lords involved, Rafael Caro Quintcro, at a mansion outside San Jose, Costa Rica, in April 1985. That claim could not be corroborated, but Gonzalez's report does note that Meneses had "helped the DEA in the past."

Meneses said he also met with the DEA's Costa Rican attache, Robert J. Nievcs, in late 1985, again concerning the Camarena case. Meneses described Nieves as "desperate" for information Norwin supposedly had on the crime. Nieves refused to discuss Meneses, or anything else.

Not coincidentally, the issue of the Contras and drugs flared up during some of the 1991–92 criminal trials of Camarena's alleged killers. A longtime CIA operative in Mexico, Lawrence Victor Harrison, testified that the CIA was then collaborating with the Mexican intelligence service and cartel bosses who were providing money, arms, and training facilities for the Contras in exchange for the CIA's protection of their drug enterprises.

Both Harrison and his DEA overseer, I lector Berrellez, who headed an investigation into Camarena's murder, believe the agent was killed because his investigations into some "protected" marijuana plantations threatened to disrupt or expose this marriage of convenience. Based on his investigation—which discovered the audiotapes his killers made during their torture sessions—Berrellez recommended that a federal grand jury be convened to examine the CIA's knowledge of Camarena's murder. Soon afterwards, Berrellez, one of the DEA's most decorated agents, was transferred to Washington and given a do-nothing desk job until his retirement.

Exactly what services Norwin Meneses was performing for the DEA during those years in Costa Rica is hard to know because few records were kept of his activities. When the Justice Department's Inspector General checked the files in 1997, he found vague and sometimes wildly misleading accusations Meneses had made against other traffickers, such as the ridiculous claim that Danilo Blandón, who'd helped Norwin start the FDN offices in California, "was a Sandinista sympathizer."

Even more suspicious is the fact that the DEA made no official record for at least a year that Meneses was one of its informants. The drug kingpin's name didn't show up in the DEA's database of informers until 1987. Costa Rican DEA agent Gonzalez explained this oddity to Justice Department investigators by saying that the trafficker "initially refused to sign DEA's informant registration." Gonzalez admitted this was unusual but said he "[allowed] it because of Meneses' background and potential to make cases." In truth, it was because Meneses was wanted by the FBI in San Francisco for trafficking and, as we shall see, the DEA was protecting him. Another result of this "unusual" arrangement, the Inspector General observed, was that "other DEA offices could not get information on Mcncscs' use by the DEA through this database."

In other words, one of the biggest and richest cocaine traffickers in all of Latin America became an exclusive, off-the-books, protected informant for a tiny DEA office in Costa Rica—a country with few known drug problems then—during the time the Reagan Administration was desperately seeking to replace the CIA money the Costa Rican Contras had lost. "Within the administration there was no doubt that the resistance would continue to be supported," Oliver North wrote of those times in his memoirs. "The only question was how."

One idea North had in 1984, records show, was to use drug money. At a top-level meeting with DEA officials in Washington, North shocked the room into silence by suggesting that $1.5 million in cocaine cash the DEA planned to seize from the Medellin cartel should be turned over to the Contras. The DEA says it declined North's suggestion. Subsequently, a White House leak blew the operation, and several DEA officials believed North was responsible, something he has denied.

With the assistance of former securities lawyer and then-CIA director William Casey, Oliver North created an elaborate network of offshore bank accounts to conceal the source of the money that was to sustain the Contras through the Congressional funding cutoff. North wrote that Casey didn't want the Contras' "unofficial funds" coming into U.S. banks because of fears that Treasury agents on the lookout for drug money would grow suspicious of the large sums of cash that would soon be arriving in those accounts.

Roger Mayorga, the former chief of criminal investigations for the Nicaraguan National Police, believes Meneses was actually working for the CIA in Costa Rica, using his role as a DEA informant as a cover for his real tasks.

"They used Meneses in Costa Rica basically for money laundering operations," said Mayorga, a former Sandinista intelligence officer who monitored Meneses for years. "He was really in the background."

There is some circumstantial evidence to buttress this claim. At the time, Norwin's brother, Jaime Sr., owned a large money-changing business in San Jose. Norwin also had a couple of legitimate business fronts that were also useful for laundering cash, including a restaurant across the street from the U.S. Embassy, a gambling club, and a bean processing factory. His partner in the latter concern was FDN director Aristides Sanchez's playboy brother, Troilo, a former CIA pilot fingered in 1982 as a supplier to Meneses' operations in San Francisco.

The idea of the DEA and CIA swapping agents and providing cover for each other is not hard to believe. The agencies had adjoining offices in the U.S Embassy in San Jose. DKA agents assigned to Costa Rica in the 1980s told the Justice Department of "having an amicable relationship with the CIA Costa Rica Station personnel" and DEA agent Gonzalez, in fact, kept the CIA supplied with intelligence on arms smuggling by leftist guerrillas in El Salvador. Despite the amicability of their "working relationship" with the CIA, the DEA agents told of taking great pains to hide-it from the Costa Rican police, but didn't say why that was necessary.

Whatever it was the DEA and CIA were collaborating so happily upon, one thing is crystal clear: it couldn't have had a thing to do with preventing Contra drug trafficking.

"The information the CIA gave the DEA was often too vague or general to be of use," DKA agents complained to the Justice Department's Inspector General. "Indeed, neither [of the two DEA Country Attaches] in Costa Rica from 1980 to 1985 could recall any specific information about drug trafficking that the CIA station ever gave them."

Not a single DEA agent "could recall the CIA providing any information about Contras who might have been involved in narcotics trafficking," the report continued. There's no mystery to that. "CIA personnel from the Costa Rica Station. . .do not recall giving any information about narcotics trafficking by Contras to the DEA."

Despite all the official rhetoric from the Reagan Administration about just saying no and cracking down on crack, CIA officers who served in Central America in the 1980s said they never felt a need to actually do anything about the drug trafficking that was swirling all around them.

"Narcotics was just not on the radar screen at the time," one CIA officer told the Inspector General's office. A former Central American CIA station chief agreed, saying that drugs were "not something [my agents] were looking for in the 1980s."

Unless, of course, the wrong people were selling them.

"[One] CIA officer and several other Agency analysts note that, with respect to Nicaragua, the U.S. policy focus was on the Sandinista government's involvement in narcotics trafficking, not on that of the Contras," CIA Inspector General Fred Hitz wrote in 1998. "The policymakers, one analyst asserts, really wanted to 'stick it to' the Sandinistas on this subject."

"All of the Central American Stations were seeking information that would link the Sandinistas to drug trafficking," a top CIA official told the Inspector General. "The goal was to diminish the image of the Sandinistas."

One Central American Station Chief remembered watching Langley's odd non-reaction to the first wave of Contra drug trafficking reports, which he said came "fairly early" into his assignment. He quickly realized which side of the drug war the CIA was on in Central America.

What the CIA did or didn't do about drugs "has to be considered in the context of DCI William Casey's overriding political objective," the station chief insisted. The CIA contingent running the Contra project "had one overriding priority: to oust the Sandinista government."

Consequently, the CIA "assigned a low priority to collecting intelligence concerning the Contras' alleged involvement in narcotics trafficking. . .Agency analysts had only a small number of reports on which to base their analysis." Even then, Hitz found, only a privileged few inside the Agency were allowed to see them, because they were classified as "Sensitive Memorandums" and few had a clearance mighty enough to know such secrets.

CIA's unspoken policy about Contra drug dealers, the station chief concluded, was that "we were going to play with these guys. That was made clear by Casey and [Dewey] Clarridge."

A good example of this policy in action was the arrangement Norwin Mencses reached with the DEA to help the Reagan Administration win the war against drugs and communism. Mencses' partner, Troilo Sanchez, told CIA inspectors that while Meneses was living in Costa Rica he was dealing cocaine for the Contras, an activity that seems starkly at odds with the usual functions of a DEA informant. Even Meneses' handler, DEA agent Sandy Gonzalez, suspected he was moving cocaine while turning in other dealers.

According to Rafael Cornejo, one of Meneses' Bay Area distributors, Gonzalez's hunch was correct. Norwin's business expanded terrifically while he was spying for the DEA. "Those were very big years in terms of. . .well, the contraband," Cornnejo said hesitantly. "That's why I have a hard time believing Norwin was working with the feds."

The FBI, however, had no problems believing it and their thinking tracked with Roger Mayorga's, the former Sandinista intelligence officer: Meneses was being protected because he working for the CIA. In a remarkable 1988 cable to FBI headquarters in Washington, San Francisco FBI agent Donald Hale wrote: "It became apparent to the FBI that Norwin Mcneses was, and may still be, an informant of the DEA. It is also believed by the FBI, SF, that Norwin Meneses was, and may still be, an informant for the Central Intelligence Agency."

The CIA, of course, denies it and Hale, who pursued Meneses for years, is now dead. The Justice Department says the agent based his belief on the fact that Meneses told friends his CIA work made him immune from prosecution.

Whatever its source, Mcneses obviously had some kind of protection while operating in Costa Rica. By 1984 his drug dealing there was well known to the CIA, the DEA, and the Costa Rican OIJ. Yet in all the years he lived there, he was neither arrested nor expelled. "There were some stories in the Costa Rican papers about me, planted by the Communists, which said I was involved in drug trafficking, but nothing ever came of it," Meneses said dismissively.

Perhaps the strongest indicator of Mcncscs' true function is the fact that soon after he waltzed into the DFA's office in San Jose, he was paired up with a veteran CIA operative who had freshly arrived from Europe. Like Norwin, the CIA man was in Costa Rica posing as an informant for the DEA. Agent Gonzailez told Justice Department inspectors in 1997 that Meneses' CIA sidekick—whom the drug lord introduced to others as "Roberto"—" claimed to have worked for the CIA for many years before in Europe and the Soviet Union, and the CIA had then turned [him] over to the DEA."

Why a CIA agent with a long background in Soviet affairs would suddenly surface in Costa Rica and be teamed up with a Latin American drug smuggler is not addressed in the declassified versions of the Justice Department Inspector General's report. The declassified CIA Inspector General's report never even mentions the mysterious agent, even though he would play a significant role in helping to keep Meneses out of the FBI's clutches.

Later events would suggest that Meneses and Roberto weren't "investigating" drug trafficking at all—they were monitoring it. And the best evidence of that is the fact that the first drug ring Meneses and his spooky associate were assigned to "investigate" was Danilo Blandón's roaring crack enterprise in South Central Los Angeles.

DEA agent Gonzalez told Justice Department inspectors that he "planned to use Meneses only to introduce other informants into the Blandón organization," reportedly because he thought Mcneses would be "difficult to control." But how reuniting Norwin Meneses with Danilo Blandón, his old friend and former employee, and inserting a CIA agent into the mix, would help keep the drug kingpin under control is a question that, so far, has eluded explanation.

Much of the information the DEA and CIA picked up about Meneses and Contra drug dealing in Costa Rica centered around Guanacaste Province, an isolated northern area infested with Contra camps, rural landing strips, and easily bribed government and police officials. According to a special Costa Rican legislative commission, during 1984 and 1985 the area served as the headquarters for "an organization made up of Panamanians, Colombians, Costa Ricans and citizens of other nationalities who dedicated themselves to international cocaine trafficking, using Costa Rica as a bridge for the refueling of planes that came from Colombia." That drug ring, which was being run with the help of Panamanian dictator Manuel Noriega, worked closely with the Contras, the legislative commission found. "Specifically, use was made of the same landing strips and the collaboration of the same Costa Rican authorities that had aided the Contras," the commission's report stated, adding that Contra pilots provided "the gasoline that was used for refueling the planes of the organization."

Evidence produced during the DEA investigation of Manuel Noriega revealed that his drug trafficking ring loaded up planes with cocaine in Colombia; the planes refueled at Contra airstrips in northern Costa Rica before continuing to the United States and dumping their loads in Louisiana and Texas. Former Costa Rican government pilot Werner Lotz Octavio confirmed to a U.S. Senate subcommittee in 1988 that Noriega's pilots would fly up weapons for the Contras along with the drugs, leaving the guns behind in Costa Rica, before hitting two routes north: one through Mexico for the West Coast market, and the other through the Bahamas for the East Coast's coke buyers.

"The people who were flying in the weapons used and made contacts with certain people in Costa Rica to be able to use their airfields as a jump point to carry drugs for them, for refueling stops," Lotz testified. "There was a charge, you know, the allowing of the aircrafts to land, to drop the weapons, and to proceed with the drugs. Or to better explain, the landing fees, to put it this way, were paid with weapons."

"How was it possible for these drug planes to go in and out of the airstrips without being detected and without creating problems in Costa Rica?" a Senate investigator asked Lotz.

"Very simple, sir. Costa Rica has got a very poor radar."

"So there was no radar to detect them? Wasn't there danger that they would be arrested on the ground?"

"None, because it was previously arranged. All the landings were arranged. They were supported by the revolutionaries themselves," answered Lotz, who admitted to flying weapons and drugs for several years.

"Were there many police or Rural Guard people in that region?" the investigator pressed.

"To be very clear with you, sir, our Guard down there is barefooted, and you're talking 50 men to cover 400 kilometers maybe," Lotz explained. (The head of the Costa Rican Rural Guard in Guanacaste Province, Colonel Edwin Viales Rodriguez, was convicted in 1988 of providing security for those drug and weapons flights. He allegedly told a friend that he was doing it for the CIA and was paid between

$20,000 and $30,000 a flight.)

While the barefoot Costa Rican Rural Guard may not have been able to keep up with such a well-oiled drug operation, the CIA and DEA couldn't use the same excuse. The number of American agents stationed in Costa Rica exploded during the Contra war years, and U.S. reconaissance aircraft and spy satellites made routine overflights, photographing miles of northern Costa Rica for the Contra war effort and monitoring Sandinista troop movements and the rural airfields the Contras used for their supply flights.

Yet in spite of all this cutting-edge technology, plus firsthand human intelligence from Norwin Meneses, the Americans proved surprisingly inept at catching drug dealers. "Despite obvious and widespread trafficking through the war zones of northern Costa Rica, the Subcommittee was unable to find a single case against a drug trafficker operating in those zones which was made on the basis of a tip or report by an official of a U.S. intelligence agency," a U.S. Senate subcommittee reported in 1988. "This is despite an executive order requiring intelligence agencies to report trafficking to law enforcement officials and despite direct testimony that trafficking on the Southern Front was reported to CIA officials."

Costa Rican law enforcement officials said in interviews that the contingent of DEA agents working from the U.S. Embassy in San Jose showed little interest in helping them probe reports of Contra drug trafficking. Jorge Chavarria, a former prosecutor who investigated several such cases in the 1980s for the Costa Rican OIJ, said he was convinced the DEA "knew about the Contras and drugs. All these flights and pilots that were flying in and out with drugs could not have been ignored by the DEA. They were looking in the other direction."

There is some evidence to substantiate that accusation. During a 1987 Senate subcommittee hearing, Senator John Kerry of Massachusetts told DEA director Jack Lawn that "the head of the DEA office in Costa Rica was interviewed by this committee and he told us that the infrastructure that was used to supply the Contras was used to smuggle drugs. This is *your* DEA officer in Costa Rica. Are you familiar with that report?"

"No, sir, I am not," Lawn said. The DEA's position, said Lawn and aide David Westrate, was that there was "no credible evidence" to support such allegations. The DEA officer in Costa Rica who was questioned by Kerry's committee, Robert J. Nieves, was in a perfect position to know, however. According to Norwin Meneses, Nieves was his control agent, and would be throughout the remainder of the 1980s.

Meneses's appearance in Costa Rica also coincides with a time when his drug network there had been suddenly rendered leaderless, accidentally disrupted by a Costa Rican police investigation.

In May 1984 the OIJ raided the San Jose home of Meneses's business partners Troilo and Isanaqui Sanchez, whom they suspected of moving thousands of dollars worth of cocaine every month. According to newspaper reports, Sanchez's wife ran to the bedroom and tossed a package out the window containing nearly a pound of cocaine.

One former Costa Rican Contra official, Leonardo Zeledon Rodriguez, told UPI in 1986 that Sanchez "was caught in Costa Rica with pillows full of cocaine. Troilo is a brother-in-law of Adolfo Calero." Both Sanchez and his wife were arrested on trafficking charges, but the charges against his wife were dismissed. Troilo was acquitted after convincing the jury that he was an addict and the cocaine was for his own use. Nonetheless, the raid provided the Costa Rican authorities with the break they needed to land an even bigger fish in the Meneses organization.

While searching Sanchez's house, the agents were interrupted by a banging on the front door. Opening it, they came face-to-face with a very surprised Horacio Pereira Lanuza—"La Burra"—the Meneses lieutenant who had been supplying cocaine to Carlos Cabezas and Julio Zavala in San Francisco and funneling the profits to the UDN-FARN Contra army of Fernando "El Negro" Chamorro.

In August or September 1984, a recently declassified CIA cable-shows, Meneses had approached

"Negro" Chamorro and asked the Contra leader "to help move drugs to the U.S." Neither Chamorro's nor the CIA's response to Meneses's overture was disclosed.

Though Horacio Pereira's drug trafficking activities had been known to both the FBI and the U.S. Customs Service since 1982, those agencies apparently never bothered to inform the Costa Ricans that they had a major dealer in their midst. According to the Costa Rican paper *La Nacion*, the OIJ agents had no idea who Pereira was the day he put in his unexpected guest appearance at Troilo Sanchez's house. Once they made his acquaintance, however, they were loath to let it end. In November 1984 they placed wiretaps on his phones and those of two associates. They quickly learned that Pereira "was one of the biggest narcotraffickers to have operated from this country," *La Nacion* reported—the man behind nearly every major drug trafficking case in Costa Rica since 1981, with "connections in Honduras, Colombia, San Andres and the United States."

As the OIJ agents listened in on Pereira's phone calls, they were stunned to find themselves eavesdropping on Costa Rican Contra commanders, who were discussing cocaine shipments, drug labs, weapons deliveries, and international politics with the cocaine dealer. Among those captured on the wiretaps were UDN-FARN subcommander Edmundo Chamorro; Ernest Hidalgo Abuanza, UDN-FARN's logistics chief and the personal assistant to UDN-FARN commander "El Negro" Chamorro; Guillermo Bolt, a CIA-trained Contra pilot who flew for Eden Pastora's ARDE Contra group; and Sebastian "Guachan" Gonzalez, the man in charge of the Panamanian logistics for ARDE and UDN-FARN. During one conversation, a caller mentioned that Gonzalez was building a cocaine processing lab in Panama, and hinted that he was kicking back $20 million a month to Panamanian authorities for the privilege of doing business there.

The Pereira wiretaps were an intelligence bonanza for the Costa Rican police. "Guachan" Gonzalez was a wanted man at the time of his calls, having recently fled Costa Rica after he and UDN-FARN's logistics chief were caught with 600 grams of cocaine in a house in Guanacaste Province. Gonzalez was overheard calling Pereira from his hideout in Panama, where he was living under the protection of Manuel Noriega, then head of the Panamanian military.

A charismatic and intelligent smuggler, Gonzalez had worked for the CIA since 1983 as the Panamanian quartermaster for all the Costa Rican Contra armies, arranging supplies and deliveries from Noriega's armed forces. He was "a personal friend of Manuel Noriega since high school years. His job was to manage the arms flights from Panama to the ARDE forces in Costa Rica," ARDE commander Eden Pastora said.

According to a 1998 CIA report, Norwin Meneses "was known to be involved in the drug trafficking activities of Sebastian Gonzalez." A 1984 cable from the Costa Rican CIA station to CIA headquarters in Langley said Meneses and "another trafficker, Tuto Munkel, were involved in drug trafficking with Sebastian Gonzalez Mendieta in Costa Rica. . .. It was reported that Meneses owned a restaurant in which Gonzalez might have had a financial interest." According to the cable, "Meneses, Gonzalez and Munkel were well-known as the 'Nicaraguan Mafia,' dealing in drugs, weapons smuggling and laundering of counterfeit money." (The "Tuto Munkel" mentioned in the CIA cable may be Augusto Mönkel, a Contra supporter who was detained in Miami with Horacio Pereira for currency violations during the FBI's investigation of the Frogman case in 1982.)

In a 1990 interview with journalist Douglas Vaughan, Gonzales said Horacio Pereira had offered him money to help finance a new Contra movement he started when he broke with Pastora in 1983: the M-3. "Horacio Pereira earlier had loaned money to Eden Pastora and he offered to help M-3 but we rejected this because Norwin Meneses and Troilo Sanchez were involved in drugs," Gonzalez said. "They were close to [FDN founder] Aristides Sanchez."

Largely on the strength of the wiretaps, Horacio Pereira was convicted of drug trafficking in 1986 and sentenced to twelve years in jail, one of the harshest sentences a Costa Rican court had ever handed down for a drug crime. The verdict was significant enough to attract the attention of the *CBS Evening News*, which aired a brief report in June 1986 on Pereira's trial and the undercover tapes. "The wire-tapped phone calls show the drug dealers have ties to the highest level of Contra leadership in Costa Rica," CBS correspondent Mike O'Connor reported. "Costa Rican narcotics officers say much more dope has been flowing through their country to the United States since the Contras began operating from here and they don't believe it's a coincidence."

Pereira never served a day of his sentence. He was released on bail and immediately disappeared. Meneses said his friend was "chopped into tiny bits" in Guatemala a few years later, when he became embroiled in a dispute over a drug debt.

The Costa Rican government's indictments of Pereira, "Guachan" Gonzalez, and Troilo Sanchez might have been expected to put a crimp in cocaine trafficking in that small nation. After all, Costa Rica's biggest dealer, Pereira, was out of business, Gonzalez was on the run, and their supplier, Norwin Meneses, was now working as an undercover informant for the DEA.

But that wasn't the case. "It was precisely in that period when the transshipment of weapons and drugs in our country grew," a Costa Rican legislative commission reported. Again, this growth can traced to a drug ring involving the Contras and the CIA.

CIA records and the declassified testimony of former CIA officials who oversaw the Contra program in Costa Rica confirm that the intelligence agency began receiving reports of drug trafficking by Eden Pastora's ARDE faction in late 1984. In a secret congressional hearing in April 1987, former CIA Costa Rican station chief Joseph Fernandez testified that "there were certainly substantiated cases—and we can name names if you wish—of people in [Pastora's] coterie, of supporters and his lieutenants that did have connections with drug traffickers and, in fact, he himself received funds from a person who was known to be affiliated with drug traffickers."

Pastora admits all that, but says it was due entirely to the CIA. In an interview, the former Contra commander claimed he was the target of an elaborate CIA scheme to force him out of the war, a plot that involved the use of drug dealers working for the intelligence agency. This occurred, he said, after he refused CIA orders to unite his forces with the former National Guardsmen in the CIA's northern Contra army, the FDN, which was being run by Norwin Meneses's friends.

The problem for the agency, Pastora said, was that many of his fighters refused U.S. government entreaties to desert him for the new Costa Rican Contra army the CIA was putting together, and they decided to fight on without the agency's assistance. The CIA had to get Pastora out of the way because it needed his veteran commanders and his men to run its new army.

While it is tempting to dismiss Pastora's theory as the paranoid grumblings of an embittered and abandoned asset, a considerable amount of documentary evidence suggests he may be right. At one time, the CIA admits, "the Agency's relationship with Pastora was one of its most significant with a Contra leader." But after enduring years of anti-FDN rhetoric and unpredictable behavior, Langley began distancing itself from him in 1984 and ordered its agents to have no "contact with him under any circumstances unless it is clone for the purpose of manipulating him towards some objective clearly consistent with the policy in the region."

One CIA policy objective became to replace the uncontrollable Pastora with someone the CIA could more readily rely on: the crowd of drug dealers and Bay of Pigs veterans working with Fernando "El Negro" Chamorro and UDN-FARN.

To get rid of him, Pastora claimed, Nicaraguan CIA assets approached him with offers of financial assistance, which he desperately needed after his CIA funding was cut off in May 1984. Pastora said he accepted their money and their supplies, not knowing that the men were drug traffickers.

When it came time to dispose of him, Pastora said, the CIA leaked the information that he was getting help from drug dealers, both to drain his support in the United States and to make him the fall guy for the cocaine trafficking being done by the CIA's "approved" Contra armies—the FDN and UDN-FARN—which was about to be exposed by the American press.

Former CIA station chief Fernandez disputed Pastora's claims. "We attempted to diminish his influence by showing other political leaders that he was an irresponsible person and so forth, but never did we ever use narcotics or even the rumor of narcotics trafficking or anything like that as a means of bringing about this diminishment," Fernandez testified. But recently released CIA files show his testimony was at best misleading: the CIA told everyone and his brother about it. "The reporting tying Pastora and senior members of his group to drug smuggling operations in the United States was disseminated by CIA to a broad range of senior [U.S. government] intelligence and law enforcement officials," the CIA's Inspector General wrote. That move stands in vibrant contrast to the Agency's modesty about the Legion of September 15's and UDN-FARN's drug dealing; predictably, the information dealt a death blow to Pastora's already shaky relationship with Washington.

Further evidence of the CIA's role can be found in the backgrounds of the men who set up the drug deals that eventually ruined Pastora. They had long-standing ties to the CIA or Norwin Meneses, sometimes both. Two of them have since publicly admitted the CIA was aware of their drug dealing on behalf of Pastora's army and had, in fact, okayed it.

Pastora's first offer of assistance came from Octaviano Cesar, the former social director of Meneses's VIP nightclub in Managua. The CIA now admits that he was one of its snoops. "Agency officers met occasionally with Cesar—usually in the United States—to gather information and to promote unity among the Southern Front groups," the CIA Inspector General found.

In March 1984 Cesar and two other Contra officials close to the CIA—ARDE logistics chief Adolfo "Popo" Chamorro and ARDE air force commander Marcos Aguado—met with a major Colombian drug trafficker named George Morales at his offices in Fort Lauderdale and asked him to contribute to Pastora's army. "During our conversation they told me they were CIA agents. Two of them said they were, Octaviano Cesar and Marcos Aguado," Morales said in 1986 congressional testimony. "I knew that they belonged to the Central Intelligence Agency and [I] also knew this through several pilots, who at the time worked for me and who had also been directly involved in operations with the Contras flying airplanes." Like Octaviano Cesar, Marcos Aguado was another old friend of Norwin Meneses. He was also a close associate of the CIA's man in northern Costa Rica, John Hull, who served as the agency's unofficial liaision to the Contras.

Morales, the Colombian trafficker, had supplied a few shipments of guns to the rebels in 1983, and he was surprised that the Contras still wanted his help in early 1984, since he had just been indicted by a federal grand jury on conspiracy and cocaine trafficking charges. But Morales said Cesar and Aguado made it clear that if he assisted them again, they could make his legal problems disappear. Cesar "told me he had plenty of friends, being him, the CIA, can advise the superiors about my financial support and airplane and training and therefore they will finally, eventually, will take care of my problem, which they did," Morales testified. During the entire time he was working with the two Contras on drug deals, no action was taken on his pending cocaine indictment. It was one postponement after another, Morales said. When he started talking to U.S. Senate investigators about his Contra dealings two years later, however, the case moved quickly to trial and conviction.

Morales later passed a DEA-administered lie detector test about his drug dealings with the Contras. In addition, two of the pilots who flew the Contra drug missions for him confirmed Morales's story—under oath as U.S. government witnesses.

Morales and the pilots, Fabio Ernesto Carrasco and Gary Wayne Betzner, said planeloads of weapons were flown to a ranch in northern Costa Rica owned by CIA operative John Hull, whose cover was that of an aw-shucks midwestern farmer managing some plantations for rich gringos. In reality, Hull's ranch was a training area and hiding place for Contra soldiers; it was where the Legion of September 15 gathered before its bumbling raid on the Argentine radio station in 1980.

After they dropped off arms, Morales and the pilots said, large green duffel bags full of cocaine belonging to the Contras were loaded aboard and flown back into the United States, usually to the public airport at Opa Locka, Florida. "Every one of the flights I make to Costa Rica, the cocaine was the Contras', not mine," Morales testified. "I have my suppliers in Colombia. I don't need to go to Costa Rica."

While Hull has vehemently denied accusations that drug trafficking was occurring at his ranch, a once-secret FBI report shows that the CIA official who was overseeing the Contras from Washington during that time, Alan Fiers Jr., was convinced that Hull's ranch was being used for Contra drug flights. "There is no doubt in Fiers's mind that Pastora's men trans-shipped drugs out of the airstrip on Hull's ranch," investigators for Iran-Contra prosecutor Lawrence Walsh reported in 1991. "Fiers realized this around 1986 when he heard all the evidence from Senator John Kerry's hearings and from the newspapers. Fiers is adamant that he has no knowledge of CIA complicity with drug activity in Central America."

Hull, when told of Fiers's statement, was astonished. "Hell, here I thought that all this time the people spreading rumors like that were the Sandinistas and the Communists. Now I find out it's my own government."

One of the Morales pilots who flew in and out of Hull's ranch, "Tito" Carrasco, testified that one of Pastora's commanders assured him he had nothing to worry about because the CIA was protecting the flights from Costa Rica all the way into Florida. "Octaviano and Popo tell George [Morales], 'Listen, these people supposed to work for the CIA, those people are supposed to have, you know, everything under control, so the people tell George, 'Do it at Opa Locka. Nothing will happen if the plane arrives at Opa Locka,'" Carrasco testified.

"And you flew into Opa Locka?" he was asked.

"Yes."

"Did anyone stop you?"

"Nobody," Carrasco said.

Carrasco's opinion was that the entire operation was being protected from police interference all the way from Panama, where his drug flights originated. "Every week I flew to Panama, between Panama and Costa Rica, with different passports and different names and they never asked me why," Carrasco testified. "So if that is not protection, I don't know what is protection."

The Contra officials gave Carrasco and Morales "good passports" from Nicaragua during a party at Morales's house in Miami. The passports were complete with entry and exit stamps from a variety of countries, Carrasco said; they lacked only a name and a photograph.

Carrasco's copilot, Gary "Hippie" Betzner, also testified that their flights were protected by the CIA. "And did these CIA people permit you to fly airplanes into foreign countries carrying weapons?" a defense lawyer asked him during a federal trial in Oklahoma.

"Why, sure," Betzner said.

"And bring drugs back?"

"Yes."

"And did these CIA people know what you were doing with the drugs?"

"Certainly," Betzner insisted. (Like Carrasco, when Betzner gave that testimony, he was on the stand as witness for the Justice Department, not as a defendant.)

Asked if he was surprised that his boss Morales was helping the Contras, Betzner, who'd pleaded guilty to federal drug charges, said, "No, actually, I wasn't surprised by it because I knew that George was anti-Communist, as are most Colombians. So the Cartel and people like that are definitely anti-Communist to the—I don't suppose their world would function too well in a Communist world. It's strictly a capitalist movement, this drug business."

When money from the drug sales was collected, Carrasco said, he would deliver it to CIA operatives Chamorro and Cesar, "sometimes in the United States, sometimes in Costa Rica." He said he delivered bags of money "sometimes two, three times a day. . .. I paid a lot of money, maybe millions."

In 1996 interviews with the *Washington Post*, Cesar and Chamorro both said the CIA was fully aware of their involvement with the Colombian drug trafficker and had approved of it beforehand. Cesar informed a CIA officer stationed at Ilopango air base in El Salvador. Chamorro went higher than that—to Langley. "I called our contact at the CIA, of course I did," Chamorro told the *Post*. "The truth is we were still getting some CIA money under the table. They said [Morales] was fine." While the *Post* thoughtfully omitted the name of the CIA official who okayed the arrangement, in an interview Chamorro identified him as the head of the CIA's Central American Task Force, Alan Fiers.

In congressional testimony, former Costa Rican CIA station chief Joe Fernandez said Fiers once ordered him to use two suspected drug traffickers in a still-secret CIA operation involving the Contras. "For political considerations, there were two individuals who were associated with Pastora who had allegations against them for drug involvement and [the chief of the Central American Task Force] wanted [censored]," the declassified hearing transcript states. "I objected to it in cable traffic, in person, and it was deemed necessary [censored], at least since these were only allegations and not proof, and so I was overruled and we proceeded to do it and we did it."

"But in your mind it went beyond allegation, didn't it?" Senator Daniel Inouye of Hawaii asked.

"Yes, sir," Fernandez replied. "[Censored] there were indications that our suspicions might be more well founded than. . ."

The rest of Fernandez's exchange with Inouye was censored for national security reasons.

After his first meeting with the Contras, Morales testified, he agreed to give the men an aged C-47 cargo plane that he had stored in Haiti, and $10,000 with which to fly the lumbering transport to Ilopango. Pastora's planes had been hangared there since 1983 under an arrangement worked out between CIA pilot Aguado and the Salvadoran Air Force. The C-47 was the first of many aircraft the Colombian trafficker would give to the Contras. According to a Senate subcommittee investigation, the airplane was officially transferred from Morales to Marcos Aguado for $1 on October 1, 1984, and saw considerable service on the Southern Front.

In 1987 investigative reporter Jonathan Kwitny obtained the refueling receipts for the C-47 and reported that the plane "was repeatedly piloted into and out of Ilopango Air Force Base in El Salvador by Marcos Aguado." Another one of the C-47's pilots, Kwitny found, was Gerardo Duran, a Costa Rican drug pilot who also served as chief pilot instructor for the Southern Front Contras. Duran was convicted of narcotics trafficking in Costa Rica in 1987 and jailed.

"Morales contends that his C-47 would continue on from Ilopango to Colombia, where it was reloaded with drugs before flying back to Florida," Kwitny reported. "This assertion is entirely plausible, and is even somewhat corroborated by Justice Department charges that Morales was importing cocaine at the time for the largest Colombian cartel."

Morales told Congress that his old C-47 remained part of the Contras' air force for years, which both Aguado and congressional investigators confirmed. "Chamorro gave the Subcommittee a list of flights made by that C-47 to ferry arms from Ilopango to Costa Rica," a Senate subcommittee report stated. "Between October 18, 1984 and February 12, 1986, some 156,000 pounds of material were moved from Ilopango to air fields in Costa Rica."

When he quit the war in May 1986, Aguado said he sold the airplane for $30,000. The buyer? Norwin Meneses. In 1997, Aguado said, the C-47 was still being used by Meneses in Venezuela.

Soon after Morales began supplying him with money, Pastora said, Danilo Blandón popped up waving cash. Pastora knew Blandón from before the Sandinista revolution, when Blandón headed a pro-

Somoza student group in college. "We knew of him as a man who always had money," Pastora said. "In fact, he was regarded in Nicaragua as a millionaire. He was a member of the Blandón family, a family that had always been well-to-do."

Pastora said he met with Blandón during a trip to Los Angeles in late 1984. Marcos Aguado confirmed that and said he accompanied Pastora to the meeting. Both men agreed that Blandón provided cash—according to Pastora, $6,000; according to Aguado, $20,000—two pickup trucks, and the keys to Blandón's vacation home in San Jose, Costa Rica, where Pastora lived rent-free for several years. Blandón told the CIA he could have charged Pastora $1,000 a month for rent if he'd wanted.

"The only time Danilo came down to Costa Rica was for the parties," shrugged Meneses's partner, Troilo Sanchez.

It was around this time, according to former CIA official Fliers, that the CIA learned Pastora was getting drug money. "We knew that everybody around Pastora was involved in cocaine," he testified in 1987. "We knew it from November of 1984 forward. We reported it."

Pastora assumed Blandón was a successful car dealer, not a dope peddler, and he said he thought nothing of the donations at the time. "It seemed to me totally natural that a friend of mine who was in very comfortable financial straits, as are the Blandón family in Nicaragua, it just seemed very natural to me that a person like that would give to me two pickup trucks."

Another Blandón associate who came to Pastora's aid after the CIA cutoff was a Nicaraguan pediatrician named Dr. Felix Saborio who, Pastora said, volunteered to become his representative to the anti-Communist Cuban community in southern Florida, his liaison with the U.S. news media, and an ARDE fund-raiser. Saborio was frequently quoted in the *Miami Herald* and other papers as Pastora's spokesman during 1984 and 1985. "Felix Saborio was a close friend of Blandón from childhood," said Pastora's former aide, Carol Prado. "I also knew them from childhood. They were very rich people. I went to a party in Miami at Felix's house with Eden and that's where I saw Blandón."

Saborio was also acquainted with Blandón's spooky associate Ronald Lister. Lister told the CIA that he had "travelled to Hialeah, Florida sometime in 1982 or 1983 and met with a Contra member named 'Dr. Sabario' in an effort to sell 'military supplies' to the Contras." The CIA report stated that "the military supplies were commercially available equipment such as non-reflective paint for equipment and surveillance detection gear of the type that can be purchased at electronic shops and 'spy' stores."

In 1992, court records show, Saborio posted part of Chepita Blandón's bond after she was arrested on drug trafficking charges in San Diego. The doctor did not return phone calls inquiring about his relationship with the trafficker or his wife. No evidence has surfaced implicating Saborio in drug dealing.

"Blandón and Saborio. . .both vanished from my ranks when it became clear that I was not willing to march to the tune of the CIA," Pastora said. Blandón's interest in helping ARDE always mystified him, "because I knew he had been with the FDN from the very first. I thought he gave me a little bit of money just so he could tell people that he had helped Commandante Zero."

Pastora's involvement with the Colombian trafficker Morales remained a secret until late 1985, when two Associated Press reporters looking into allegations of Contra drug dealing discovered some of the donations. The source of their information was a leaked CIA analysis of the narcotics trade that alleged that "one of ARDE's top commanders, loyal to ARDE leader Eden Pastora, used cocaine profits this year to buy a $250,000 arms shipment and a helicopter." The AP story also mentioned that "Guachan" Gonzales's M-3 group and the FDN were suspected of being involved in drugs as well, but offered no details.

Robert Parry, one of the AP reporters who wrote the groundbreaking story, said his editors sat on the piece for weeks and edited it heavily, only to spike it at the last minute. When it was accidentally transmitted over the AP's Spanish-language wire, his editors rewrote the story once again, and all references to the alleged involvement of CIA operatives were deleted before it was released to the

American public. Parry later discovered that the AP's Washington Bureau chief was having regular meetings with Lieutenant Colonel Oliver North, who was running the Contra program at the time.

Though emasculated by its editors and ignored by most of the American media, the AP story kicked up a heated controversy in Washington and prompted Senator John Kerry's staff to begin an investigation. As the evidence of Contra drug trafficking piled up and suspicions mounted, CIA and State Department spokesmen immediately pointed to Pastora as the only drug-dealing Contra they knew, citing him as an example of how ridiculous were accusations that the CIA would condone drug dealing. Pastora's CIA funding was cut off, they said, at the first whiff of impropriety.

To this day, Eden Pastora remains the only Contra commander the U.S. government has ever officially admitted was involved with drug money. A few months after the AP story appeared, Pastora quit the Contra war and became a fisherman. The CIA-linked ARDE commanders who got him involved with the Colombian trafficker Morales—Octaviano Cesar and "Popo" Chamorro—quickly joined forces with the CIA's new Contra army.

Pastora's claim of a CIA plot becomes even more believable when one considers who the Agency selected to replace him as the Southern Front's military commander: none other than Fernando "El Negro" Chamorro, the drunken leader of UDN-FARN, which had been getting cocaine money from the Meneses organization since the early 1980s. Former Costa Rican station chief Fernandaz confirmed to Congress in 1987 that the CIA decided "to diminish Pastora's influence" and "raise up the stature of the Negro Chamorro people. . .what we needed to do was put [Pastora] aside and at the same time enhance the organization that we were supporting."

Why the CIA was so eager to promote such a drug-tainted organization as UDN-FARN is one of the enduring mysteries of the Contra war. Independent Counsel Lawrence Walsh, in his memoirs of the Iran-Contra scandal, wrote that Chamorro was picked because he "had been acceptable to Contra leader Adolfo Calero and responsive to the CIA." The agency's choice demonstrates just how contrived the official shock was over Pastora's involvement with drug dealers. Chamorro's Contras had far more links to drug traffickers than Pastora's organization ever did, and those ties could be traced all the way back to the beginnings of the Contra war. The leadership of UDN-FARN had been directly implicated in the Frogman case in 1983, a fact the CIA had strived mightly to conceal from the American public. Moreover, "El Negro" was just as erratic and unstable a military commander as Eden Pastora had been—perhaps more so—and far less effective in recruiting volunteer fighters. Most of Chamorro's band were Cuban mercenaries and terrorists he and the CIA had scoured from the Miami underworld.

But even when reports of UDN-FARN drug dealing reached the highest levels in Wishington, the U.S. government's financial and material support for the organization never wavered. The money and the CIA assistance kept right on coming.

"The concern about Chamorro is that he drinks a fair amount and may surround himself with people who are in the war not only to fight but to make money," Lieutenant Colonel Oliver North's Costa Rican emissary, Robert Owen, nervously wrote North in April 1985. Owen, one of the CIA's top informants in Costa Rica, listed eight of Chamorro's associates as having "past indiscretions." The list included UDN-FARN's air force chief, Jose "Chepon" Robelo, whom Owen described as having "potential involvement with drug running," and Meneses's partner, Sebastian "Guachan" Gonzalez, whom Owen said was "now involved in drug running out of Panama." That Meneses and Gonzalez were dealing cocaine together had been known to the CIA since late 1984, records show.

One of the men closely involved in the Contra operation around that time, retired air force general Richard Secord, told writer Leslie Cockburn in 1987 that he heard the same allegations about the UDN-FARN commanders, and that "most of them were true. I didn't pick them. The Agency picked them."

As a fighting force, UDN-FARN was an unmitigated disaster, probably the most inept Contra group there was. Never numbering more than a couple hundred fighters, UDN-FARN caused more grief for the

U.S. government than it ever caused the Sandinistas. Chamorro's boys were creating "such a difficult situation" that CIA station chief Joe Fernandez, who'd been instrumental in throwing the CIA's support behind UDN-FARN, was catching flak from both the Costa Rican government and the U.S. ambassador to "get those people under control. 'They just do this and that' and I mean it was just one headache after another," Fernandez testified. (If he elaborated on the "this and that," it was deleted from the heavily censored transcript of his testimony.)

According to Fernandez, Chamorro and his men couldn't be driven into battle with a cattle prod. "They certainly had to get their act together and their guts in place and say, 'No more [Costa Rican] sanctuary, let's go in and fight the Sandinistas,'" Fernandez told Congress in April 1987. "They were extremely—and that is not an overstatement—they were extremely reluctant to do so. Negro Chamorro to this day that I know of has yet to get inside Nicaragua."

CIA informant Rob Owen confirmed that. "The Costa Ricans wanted the people—they were up near the Costa Rican/Nicaraguan border, they were in several camps—they wanted them moved out. They wanted them moved at least 40 kilometers inside Nicaragua," Owen testified. "There was a hesitancy on the part of Negro Chamorro and his people. . .. Their hesitancy was based on going deep inside Nicaragua. They would not have Costa Rica to be able to run back into should something happen."

Blandón's drug-dealing friends, the Torres brothers, told L.A. County Sheriff's Office investigators that "during the height of the Contra war, they would continually run into supposed Contra commandantes in swank casinos throughout Costa Rica. These 'commandantes' would laugh and say they were just spending the CIA's payroll money of about $7,000 a month," a 1996 report stated. (Why two L.A. cocaine traffickers were cavorting through Costa Rica at the height of the Contra war was not a question the Torreses were asked.)

CIA officer Fernandez testified that "the last time I remember Negro Chamorro being inside Nicaragua was in 1983 when he crossed the border [censored] and attacked, if you can imagine, a guard post, a guard house 30 meters or 30 yards inside Nicaragua. And then when he started to get his—when the Sandinistas counterattacked he ran to a telephone on the [censored] side and dialed me in Washington D.C., at Langley headquarters, asking for mortars! So help me God! And I asked him, 'Where in the hell are you calling from?' and he said, 'From the guard post at [censored].' He said, 'We are under attack, you need to send me arms!' and I said, 'You've got to be out of your mind.'

"This is no joke," Fernandez assured the laughing congressmen. "He called our outside line." The lawmakers were apparently so amused by Fernandez's stories that none of them thought to ask why the CIA continued to train and finance such a clownish crew.

But El Negro and company weren't the CIA's headache for long.

Shortly after UDN-FARN became the agency's anointed force in Costa Rica, the CIA was forced to give up its active role in the Contra project, and it left the mess it had created for someone else to clean up. When the Boland Amendment went into effect in October 1984, day-to-day control of the Contra project passed to the Reagan White House and Lieutenant Colonel Oliver North at the National Security Council. "As the summer of 1984 came to an end, I felt like I was straddling a canyon," North wrote. "On one side was the resistance, always expanding, always needing more. On the other side was the CIA, which was steadily withdrawing its support."

If the CIA's blindness to Contra drug trafficking was bad, it was nothing compared to what happened after North and his network of spooks and mercenaries took the wheel. Perhaps for the first time in history, the U.S. goverment became business partners with cocaine traffickers. And Norwin Meneses's cocaine began arriving in the United States aboard military transport planes.

"This guy talks to God"

When they found Dr. Hugo Spadafora in September 1985, they found everything but his head. The rest of him had been tied up in a U.S. mail sack and dumped under a bridge on the border of Costa Rica and Panama.

His body bore evidence of unimaginable tortures. The thigh muscles had been neatly sliced so he could not close his legs, and then something had been jammed up his rectum, tearing it apart. His testicles were swollen horribly, the result of prolonged garroting, his ribs were broken, and then, while he was still alive, his head had been sawed off with a butcher's knife.

The horrors of Hugo Spadafora's death brought thousands of people into the streets of Panama City, where they formed a miles-long human chain of outrage and lament. The dashing young doctor had been a hero to many Panamanians—an unusual mix of revolutionary warrior and middle-class professional.

When he was murdered, Spadafora had been fighting for the Contras in Costa Rica, at the side of his old friend Eden Pastora. They had fought together in the 1970s against the Somoza dictatorship, with Spadafora leading an international brigade of jungle fighters—the Brigada Internacional Simón Bolívar—in support of Pastora's southern forces. After the Sandinistas became too oppressive for Pastora's liking, he joined the CIA and took over command of a Contra army in Costa Rica. Hugo Spadafora gave up his medical practice in Panama and, with his wife Winy, moved to Costa Rica to take up arms with Pastora once again—this time against their old Marxist comrades.

The Reagan administration's Contra PR machine couldn't have dreamed up a better freedom fighter than Hugo Spadafora. The DEA called him "reportedly the best known guerrilla fighter in Central America." He was so popular in Panama that the country's civilian president, Nicolas Barletta, announced an immediate investigation into his shocking murder. It was to be one of Barletta's last official acts. A few weeks later he was forced to resign by Manuel Noriega, the commander of the country's military, and the promised investigation never occurred. Charged with masterminding Spadafora's murder, Noriega was convicted in absentia by a Panamanian court in 1993.

The *New York Times*, in a June 1986 story that first exposed Noriega as a drug dealer and money launderer, cited Spadafora's murder as an example of why U.S. government officials were growing tired of the tyrant. "Officials in the Reagan Administration and past Administrations said in interviews that they had overlooked General Noriega's illegal activities because of his cooperation with American intelligence," the story said. "They said, for example, that General Noriega had been a valuable asset to Washington in countering insurgencies in Central America and was now cooperating with the Central Intelligence Agency in providing sensitive information from Nicaragua."

But the *Times* story left unaddressed a rather obvious question: why would a cunning political strategist like Noriega take the risky step of having the popular Spadafora, Panama's former vice minister of public health, kidnapped by government security men in full view of dozens of witnesses, and decapitated?

The answer, which may be the reason the *Times* sidestepped the issue, involved drugs and the CIA. When Noriega's goons hauled Spadafora off a bus at the Panamanian border, he was on his way to Panama City, where he intended to publicly release evidence of Noriega's cocaine-smuggling activities—activities that also involved the Contras in Costa Rica. Before leaving for Panama, Spadafora had excitedly told friends that he now had the proof he needed to document the dictator's participation in cocaine trafficking, and he was convinced that the revelations would sink the tyrant.

In the months before his murder, the doctor had befriended a drug and arms smuggler who once ran Noriega's drug operation, Floyd Carlton Caceres. Carlton, who also served as Noriega's personal pilot, began confiding in Spadafora, sharing intimate details of Noriega's drug trade. "Dr. Spadafora was a very honest man," Carlton said. "He was an idealist and he tried to get the best for anyone needing justice."

If anyone needed justice right then, it was Floyd Carlton. The smuggler was lying low, trying to avoid a hit man Colombian dealers had sent after him. Carlton had lost $1.8 million in cash the Colombians had entrusted to him to fly from Los Angeles to their banks in Panama City. Since he was too busy to do it himself, he'd delegated the task to an underling, who later turned up in Miami, sans cash.

"I had to pay that money," Carlton said, which he agreed to do by flying a drug load north for free. But again, he'd sent someone else to fly the mission, one of his partners, Teofilo Watson. Watson had never returned, disappearing with 530 kilos of cocaine. Now the Colombians were really angry.

"They thought I had agreed or made a plan with Mr. Watson to steal the drug," Carlton said. Carlton suspected that Costa Rican Contra leader Sebastian "Guachan" Gonzalez and his strange M-3 Contra group had done Watson in, leading him into an ambush at an airstrip owned by the local CIA man, John Hull. "They killed him and then took the airplane and the drugs to Mr. Hull's ranch," Carlton testified. The plane was cut up and thrown into a river that ran through Hull's property, and the cocaine was spirited to the United States, where it may have been traded for weapons.

The Colombians sent a hired killer named Alberto Aldimar out to find Carlton and the cocaine. Aldimar started by kidnapping Carlton's friends and employees and slapping them around. One of his relatives, Carlton said, "was brutally beaten." Then the power shovels arrived and began digging up Carlton's ranch. "They spent weeks there looking for some type of metal and found nothing," he said. Next the Colombians kidnapped the daughter of the Contras' CIA liaison, John Hull, on whose ranch the theft supposedly had taken place. Hull ransomed the girl back unharmed and blamed it on the Communists.

After that, Carlton bolted Central America altogether and took refuge in Miami, the U.S. headquarters of his cocaine transportation network. That's where Spadafora found him, in hiding. "He was trying to unmask Noriega and he was successful in obtaining truth that could imperil Noriega," Carlton later testified.

That in large part was due to Carlton, who would later astonish DEA officials with his photographic recall of Noriega's drug deals. Carlton eventually became the U.S. government's star witness against the Panamanian dictator at his trial on drug charges. The pilot gave Spadafora the names of other pilots involved and the dates of specific-drug flights through Costa Rica. He also implicated Noriega's high school buddy, "Guachan" Gonzalez, who was then hiding out in Panama from a Costa Rican cocaine indictment.

When he was finished, Carlton said, Spadafora announced, "I am going to have a bomb explode in Panama. I am going to set it off with all this information which I have." Hurrying back to Costa Rica, Spadafora began sharing his discoveries with law enforcement and intelligence officials, which may have been his worst mistake.

News of Spadafora's visit to the DEA's offices in San Jose was quickly relayed back to CIA headquarters in Langley, which was informed that "Hugo Spadafora had made vague allegations to DEA. . .that [Guachan] Gonzalez, Manuel Noriega and [another Contra leader] were engaged in drug trafficking. The chief of the local DEA office [Robert Nieves] met Spadafora twice and. . .Spadafora had promised that he would provide evidence of drug trafficking by Gonzalez."

If Nieves needed a way to confirm the doctor's explosive claims, he had just the man for the job—his deep-cover informant Norwin Meneses. In addition to Meneses's connections within the Contras, the trafficker was a close friend and trafficking partner of the Contra official Spadafora was trying to unmask, "Guachan" Gonzalez.

Somehow Meneses's lieutenants got wind of what Spadafora was planning, and they began devising a counterattack. During their investigation of Meneses aide Horacio Pereira, the Costa Rican police taped Gonzalez and Pereira discussing Spadafora's probe and plotting ways to silence him. The Costa Rican newspaper *La Nacion* obtained copies of the tapes and printed partial transcripts. One ploy Gonzalez and Pereira batted around was paying a witness in Guanacaste Province between $200,000 and $300,000 falsely accuse Spadafora of drug trafficking and exonerate Gonzalez of his pending Costa Rican drug charges.

"Now he's surrounded because if he comes over here, he's finished," Gonzalez confidently told Pereira in a phone call from Panama.

"Yes," Pereira replied. "If he shows up over there, you'll get him."

The district attorney in the Panamanian province where Spadafora was murdered ordered Gonzalez arrested in 1990 for allegedly offering to pay someone to kill the doctor, but no charges were filed, and Gonzalez was quickly released. He has strenuously denied any involvement in Spadafora's death, but Spadafora's family remains convinced Gonzalez played a major role.

Though Noriega apparently felt the information Spadafora possessed was important enough to kill him over, DEA official Robert Nieves had a very different reaction. He told *La Nacion* that his discussions with Spadafora were "not important" and said he did nothing with the information the doctor had risked his life to bring him. Since Noriega's drug dealing was the official reason the United States invaded Panama four years later, Nieves's professed inaction is astounding. But it would not be out of character for the DEA at that time.

Floyd Carlton testified that he got the same cold shoulder from the DEA office in Panama City when he tried telling them about Noriega's drug dealing in January 1986. "I did actually make contact with intelligence agents in the United States Embassy in Panama," Carlton related. "And I asked, 'Have you not heard my name?' And they said, 'Yes, we have.' And so I said, 'On different occasions I have sent people to speak to you so that you interview me. But you have always told them that you have nothing to talk to me about. And the fact is that I believe that I can go before the American judicial system and speak of a lot of things that are happening in this country, and I can even prove them.'

"So they asked, 'Such as what?' So, I said, 'Money laundering, drugs, weapons, corruption, assassinations.' When I mentioned the name of General Noriega, they immediately became upset." Carlton said the DEA agents "did not try to contact me again. And the only thing that I asked for was protection for myself and my family. And at that time I had no problems with the American justice system."

Judging from the DEA's response to a Freedom of Information Act request, Nieves took a similarly incurious stance when his informant turned up with his head missing. Apparently, none of the DEA's Costa Rican agents ever looked into the doctor's gruesome death. All the agency had on Spadafora, it claimed, was a couple of paragraphs culled from Panamanian newspaper stories written a year after the murder.

The CIA's reaction was even more bizarre. Its Costa Rican station chief, Joe Fernandez, helped Noriega plant false media reports about who really killed Hugo Spadafora.

Jose Blandón, then Noriega's consul general in New York, told Congress that he and Noriega discussed Spadafora's murder a few weeks after the body was found, during a long flight home from New York aboard the dictator's private Lear Jet. Noriega, who'd been in France when Spadafora was killed, wanted an update on how the public was reacting to the killing, the diplomat said. "Especially, he was interested in the developments regarding a witness whose name is Hoffman, a witness of German origin who appeared on Panamanian television saying that he knew who had killed Spadafora and publicly said that Spadafora had been killed by the FMLN [leftist guerrillas] of El Salvador," Blandón testified.

The German, Manfred Hoffman, "was a witness who was created by Noriega, and he was obtained through the CIA operating in Costa Rica," Blandón testified. "He is a specialist in electronics and he worked for the CIA in some cases." Blandón, describing the episode as "an absurd farce," said he told Noriega "nobody believed that story."

A month after Spadafora's killing, Noriega's men contacted the CIA and asked for help in "defusing an effort by family members of slain rebel Hugo Spadafora to implicate Manuel Antonio Noriega in drug trafficking." The CIA cable discussed putting Gonzalez on a popular morning radio talk show to discredit Spadafora's brother, who was trying to obtain Costa Rican documents implicating the Contra commander as a drug dealer. According to a handwritten note on the CIA cable, brother Winston was barking up the right tree: "If the truth be told," someone had written, "we had reason to believe that Gonzalez has been involved in drugs about a yr, 1 ½ yrs ago."

Actually, it was longer than that. A CIA contract agent had first reported on Gonzalez's drug dealings in October 1983, after Spadafora had informed him that "Noriega was smuggling drugs with the Contras and that Gonzalez was involved." The agent said his CIA supervisor simply "replied that CIA had heard some rumors of drug trafficking involving the Contras."

Unfortunately for Spadafora's wife and family, the good doctor had the bad luck of being murdered at a politically inconvenient time. It was in no one's interests right then—Noriega's or the U.S. government's—to delve too deeply into the crime for fear of what would be exposed: the apparent complicity of two CIA assets—Noriega and Gonzalez—in the murder of someone trying to expose government drug trafficking.

At that point the Reagan administration was nuzzling up to Noriega as it had never done before, frantically searching for ways around the 1984 congressional ban on CIA support to the Contras. For months, a steady stream of high-ranking visitors from Washington had been paying courtesy calls to the despot, reminding him of how much Uncle Sam liked and needed him.

In June 1985, aboard a luxurious yacht anchored in the Pacific port of Balboa, North and Noriega struck a very important bargain, said Jose Blandón, who attended the meeting. "Colonel North was interested in gaining Panama's support for the Contras and he particularly requested training assistance in bases located in Panama," Blandón told Congress in 1988. "General Noriega promised to provide training in specific locations to members of the Contras, training to be provided at bases located in Panama." He was also willing to allow Contra leaders free access to the country, and made it clear to North that he was willing to do much, much more.

According to government documents filed during North's trial, Noriega offered to have the entire Sandinista leadership assassinated in exchange for "a promise from the U.S. government to help clean up Noriega's image." North raised the proposal at a top level meeting in Washington and made it clear that "Noriega had the capabilities that he had proffered." North was instructed to tell Noriega that the administration wasn't keen on murdering Nicaraguan government officials, but that Panamanian assistance with sabotage would be another story.

A month after Spadafora's body was found under the bridge, North went back to Panama for another visit, this time to assure the dictator that the U.S. government would be boosting Noriega's foreign aid payments. Within a year an additional $200 million in U.S. taxpayer funds and bank loans was sent his way.

Meanwhile, a former staffer on the National Security Council, Dr. Norman A. Bailey, was frantically trying to alert various high-ranking government officials to the fact that Noriega was in bed with drug traffickers and other criminals. Bailey, the NSC's former director of planning, had discovered that Panamanian banks were taking in billions of dollars in $50 and $100 bills, money that Bailey concluded could only have come from criminal activities.

Bailey set off on a quixotic quest to persuade the Reagan administration to distance itself from Noriega, pressing his reports into the hands of Reagan's top advisers, including national security adviser Admiral John Poindexter. "I took the initiative myself after the murder of Dr. Spadafora," Bailey testified. "As far as I know, the only thing that actually took place was that Admiral Poindexter added Panama to a trip he was making to Central America in December of 1985."

But Poindexter's meeting with Noriega was hardly what Norman Bailey had envisioned. According to Jose Blandón, who was in attendance, Poindexter did bring up the Spadafora murder, but only to give Noriega some friendly advice on how to handle it; Poindexter "spoke of the need to have a group of officers be sent abroad, outside of Panama, while the situation changed and the attitudes changed regarding Spadafora's assassination."

Noriega met CIA director William Casey after that, again to discuss his help for the Contras. According to a Senate subcommittee report, Casey decided not to raise the allegations of Noriega's cocaine trafficking with him "on the ground that Noriega was providing valuable support for our policies in Central America."

While all of this official ring-kissing was going on, Oliver North and the CIA were quietly knitting parts of Noriega's drug transportation system into the Contras' lines of supply—and hiring drug smugglers to make Contra supply flights for them.

At the time of his visits with Noriega, North was firmly in control of the Contra project, having been handed the ball personally by CIA director Casey. Far from being the dopey, gap-toothed zealot portrayed by the Reagan administration and the press, North was one of the most powerful men in Washington. "The spring of 1985, he was the top gun," testified Alan Fiers, the CIA's Central American Task Force chief and North's liaison at Langley. "He was the top player in the NSC as well. And there was no doubt that he was—he was driving the process, driving the policy."

Former Iran-Contra special prosecutor Lawrence Walsh, who indicted and convicted North on a variety of felonies, suspects the Marine officer was a cutout for the CIA, a human lightning rod to keep the agency from becoming directly involved in illegal activities. "The CIA had continued as the agency overseeing U.S. undercover activities in support of the Contras after the Boland amendments were enacted," Walsh wrote in his memoirs. "The CIA's strategy determined what North would do."

In a city where information is power, North had access to the nation's deepest secrets, subjects so highly classified even top CIA officials didn't know about them. "He told me in 1985 that there was [sic] two squadrons of Stealth bombers operational in Arizona and I just thought he was crazy," Fiers testified. "It was the, one of the greatest secrets the government had and then all of a sudden we, in fact, ended up with two squadrons of Stealth bombers operational. And there were many, many other instances when he told me things, and I thought they were totally fanciful and, in fact, turned out to be absolute truth."

One of the many surprises North had for Fiers was the fact that he had received specialized training usually reserved for CIA officers. During one late-night conversation about the Contra supply operation in Costa Rica, Fiers testified, North blurted out that he had "put together a whole cascade of cover companies, 'just like they taught us at the CIA clandestine training site.' And I thought that was pretty interesting because I went there and I didn't learn how to put together a whole cascade of companies. And 1 also didn't know that Ollie North had gone down to the training site."

Savvy bureaucrats in Washington knew North was not someone to be taken lightly. Fiers called him "a power figure in the government. . .a force to be reckoned with." When he asked for something, people jumped. When he gave orders, they were followed. "Ollie North had the ability to work down in my chain of command and to cause [it] to override me if and when I didn't do something," Fiers testified. "And, I would like to add, subsequently I saw that happen in other ways, other places and other agencies."

Fiers's boss at the CIA, Clair E. George, echoed that. "I suffer from the bureaucrat's disease, that when people call me and say, 'I am calling from the White House for the National Security Council on behalf of the national security advisor,' I am inclined to snap to."

CIA Costa Rican station chief Joe Fernandez was more blunt. "To a GS-15, this guy talks to God, right?" Fernandez said of North during a secret congressional hearing in 1987. "Obviously, I knew where he worked in the Executive Office Building. He has got tremendous access. . .. I mean, North is not some ordinary American citizen that is suddenly in this position. This is a man who had dealings with, obviously, the Director of the CIA. . .. You know, he deals with my division chief."

North was even telling U.S. ambassadors what to do.

In July 1985, before taking his new job as ambassador to Costa Rica, Lewis Tambs said North sat him down and gave him his marching orders. "Colonel North asked me to go down and open up the Southern Front," Tambs told the Iran-Contra committees. "We would encourage the freedom fighters to fight. And the war was in Nicaragua. The war was not in Costa Rica, and so that is what I understood my instructions were."

But with the CIA's billions officially banned from the scene, North had a big problem if he was going to get the Contras out of their Costa Rican border sanctuaries and into Nicaragua to do some actual fighting.

He had no way to supply them; the CIA had been doing all that.

It takes tons of material to sustain an army in the field, particularly one that is going to be warring deep inside enemy territory, separated by days from its supply depots. The CIA had plenty of experience handling such complicated logistical problems, but North didn't. It was a problem he took up with his friends at Langley, who, according to CIA official Fiers, "spent major time, major effort" trying to come up with a solution.

"Air resupply of the Contras was the key," Fiers testified. "We had a 15,000-man army of guerrillas operating in Nicaragua and had to supply them. All of the supply went by air. They carried in what—their boots and their clothes, and then their new ammunition and such had to be dropped in by air. So the success or failure turned on air resupply operations."

One of the vehicles North selected to handle that chore was a new unit set up inside the U.S. State Department called the Nicaraguan Humanitarian Assistance Office (NHAO). The office was officially created in mid-1985 to oversee the delivery of $27 million in "humanitarian" aid Congress agreed to give the Contras, under considerable pressure from the White House.

North and the CIA first tried to get the operation placed inside the National Security Council, where it would be free from public scrutiny and North could control it directly, but that move failed. Instead, Fiers said, North simply "hijacked" it from the State Department. In November 1985 he pressured the NHAO to hire one of his aides as a consultant, a tall, blond former L.A. prep school counselor named Robert W Owen. A Stanford University grad and onetime advertising executive, Owen idolized North. Since 1984 he had been, in his own words, North's "trusted courier" in Central America, zigzagging through the war zones for Ollie, listening to the concerns of Contra officials, setting up arms deals, and solving problems.

Owen's work had drawn rave reviews from his CIA contacts. "That man has all of the attributes that we want in our officers," Costa Rican station chief Fernandez told Congress during a 1987 hearing. "I met with him on a number of occasions. . .introduced him to one of my officers who regularly met with him when he was in town." Fernandez said his superiors were "so impressed with Mr. Owen that he was being considered as a possible applicant for the clandestine service."

Owen, in 1989 court testimony, admitted that "there was a possibility that I might have gone with the CIA on contract."

But because Owen was a private citizen, Fernandez said, he couldn't legally send him out on intelligence-gathering missions. He could listen when Owen reported back but couldn't, in CIA jargon, "task" him. But that all changed once Owen began working for the NHAO, which probably explains

North's insistence that Owen be hired. "When he did that, then we did have a much more operational relationship," Fernandez confirmed. "Because then he was a government employee, I did ask him to find out things."

NHAO director Robert Duemling and his aides couldn't figure out why they needed to have Rob Owen around, and initially they rebuffed North's suggestions. "I certainly didn't see the necessity for a middleman," Duemling testified in a once-secret deposition to the Iran-Contra committees. But North kept pushing. Duemling said North had Contra leaders write letters demanding Owen's hiring, and he lobbied Duemling's superior at the State Department, Assistant Secretary of State Elliott Abrams, a fervent Contra supporter. After one stormy meeting with North and Abrams, Duemling said, "Elliott Abrams turned to me and said, 'Well, Bob, I suppose you probably ought to hire Owen.' Well, in bureaucratic terms the jig was up, since I was the only person who was speaking out against this."

Owen was given a $50,000 contract as a "facilitator," a job that mystified Duemling's aide, Chris Arcos. Arcos testified that no one was "sure what, in fact, Rob Owen could do or bring or offer to the office that we couldn't do. He didn't have much Spanish, he didn't have an expertise in medical or anything like that."

The minutes of that November 1985 meeting show that for some reason, Abrams and North were extremely concerned about the fallout if someone discovered Owen's involvement with the NIIAO, and they began working on a cover story to explain his presence there in case it leaked. "Abrams and North agreed that Owen will be expendable if he becomes a political or diplomatic liability," the minutes state. If that happened, Congress would be told that he was "an experiment that hadn't worked out."

It was an experiment right out of Dr. Erankenstcin's lab.

Rob Owen's mission was to serve as the CIA's unofficial liaison to the drug traffickers and other undesirables who were helping the Contras in Costa Rica, people who were too dirty for the CIA to deal with directly. Like North, he was another "cutout." "He probably had the most extensive network of contacts among the resistance leaders," CIA station chief Fernandez testified in 1987, "including people with whom we did not want to have contact with and who, however, were involved with the Nicaraguan resistance."

The untouchables Fernandez was referring to were the Cuban anti-Communists in Costa Rica—the rough mix of mercenaries, bombers, assassins, and drug dealers recruited in Miami by UDN-FARN commander Fernando "El Negro" Chamorro and CIA agent Ernesto Cruche. The agency, Fernandez testified, was "very leery of these people. However, Rob Owen had an entree to them."

And now, thanks to his NHAO job, he had an official entree—as an operational CIA asset. Owen's specific assignment, in fact, put him directly over the drug traffickers Fernandez and the CIA didn't want to be seen with.

He was assigned to "monitor" an NHAO contract with a Costa Rican shrimp company called Frigorificos de Puntarenas, S.A. This consisted of a small fleet of fishing boats based in the humid Pacific Coast village of Puntarenas, and an import company in Miami called Ocean Hunter, which brought Frigorificos' catch into the United States. In reality, however, it was "a firm owned and operated by Cuban-American drug traffickers," according to a 1988 Senate subcommittee report.

That conclusion was based partly on the congressional testimony of former Medellín cartel accountant Ramon Milian Rodriguez, a suave Cuban-American who was the cartel's money-laundering wizard until his arrest in Miami in 1983, when he and $5 million in cash were taken off a Lear jet bound for Panama. Frigorificos, he testified, was one of an interlocking chain of companies he'd created to launder the torrents of cash that were pouring into the cartel's coffers from its worldwide cocaine sales. Drug money would go into one company and come out of another through a series of intercompany transactions, clean and ready to be banked or invested. In 1982, Frigorificos was taken over by a group of major Miami-based drug traffickers, who began using it to help the Contras.

"Were payments or arrangements made by which the Contras could receive money through Frigorificos?" Senator John Kerry asked Milian during a Senate subcommittee hearing in 1987.

"Yes sir," the accountant answered.

"You arranged that?"

"I, through my intermediaries, made it possible."

"Was any of the money that you provided Frigorificos traceable to drugs or to drug-related transactions?" Kerry asked.

"No, sir."

"Why was that?"

"Because," said Milian, "we were experts at what we do."

"El Rey de la Droga" (The King of Drugs), Norwin Meneses Cantarero, during an interview with the author and Georg Hodel at Tipitapa Prison outside Managua in 1996. PHOTO BY GARY wEBB

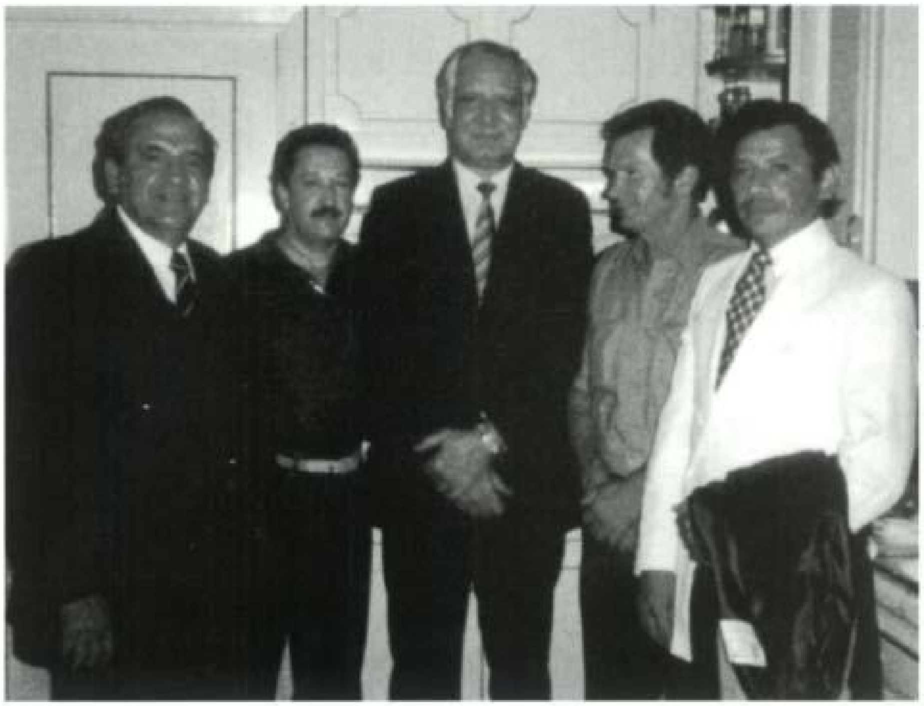

FDN supporter Don Sinicco snapped this picture in his kitchen in San Francisco during a cocktail party he was hosting for CIA agent Adolfo Calero, center. Drug lord Norwin Meneses is on the far right. The other men are local Contra supporters. At the time this photo was taken, June 1984, Meneses was engaged in a cocaine smuggling conspiracy, according to federal prosecutors. PHOTO COURTESY OF DON SINICCO

Danilo Blandón, circa 1995.

CAPITAL RENT-A-CAR
VALET PARKING
CAPITAL RENT-A-CAR ABC PARK/FLY
A.B.C. PARK / FLY
SPECIAL

ABC Park and Fly, near the Miami International Airport. Blandón established his car rental company in this building during his brief "retirement" from the cocaine business in 1987. The day this picture was taken Anastasio Somoza's former counterinsurgency expert, Maj. Gen. Gustavo "El Tigre" Medina, was working behind the counter. PHOTO BY GARY WEBB

Enrique Miranda Jaime, shortly after the FBI kidnapped him in Miami and sent him back to Nicaragua to face escape charges in late 1996. Miranda, a former double agent for the CIA and the Sandinistas, was Meneses's top aide after the war and would later help send his boss to prison. PHOTO BY GARY WEBB

Former Contra cocaine courier Carlos Cabezas, at his law office in Managua. PHOTO BY GARY WEBB

The Oval Office, August 5, 1987. A gathering of Nicaraguan resistance leaders to mark yet another CIA-inspired merger of the Contra armies from the FDN to the United Nicaraguan Opposition (UNO). Second from left is Aristides Sanchez. Adolfo Calero is on the far right. COURTESY OF THE RONALD REAGAN LIBRARY

The Oval Office, April 4, 1985. From left: CIA agent Adolfo Calero, political boss of the FDN; Lt. Col. Oliver North and President Ronald Reagan, after the CIA handed off the day-to-day management of the Contra project to North and the National Security Council. COURTESY OF THE RONALD REAGAN LIBRARY

L.A. crack kingpin "Freeway" Ricky Ross was all smiles as he was released from a Texas prison in 1994 after serving a short stint for cocaine trafficking. Though he had vowed to go straight, a few months later he would be lured back into the drug business by his old friend and cocaine supplier, Danilo Blandón.

ROBERT GAUTHIER/LOS ANGELES TIMES

Ricky Ross was captured March 2, 1995 in National City after his truck careened into a hedgerow. PHOTO BY GARY WEBB

Part of the $160,000 seized by the DEA from crack dealer Leroy "Chico" Brown during the 1995 sting that snared "Freeway" Ricky Ross. DEA PHOTO

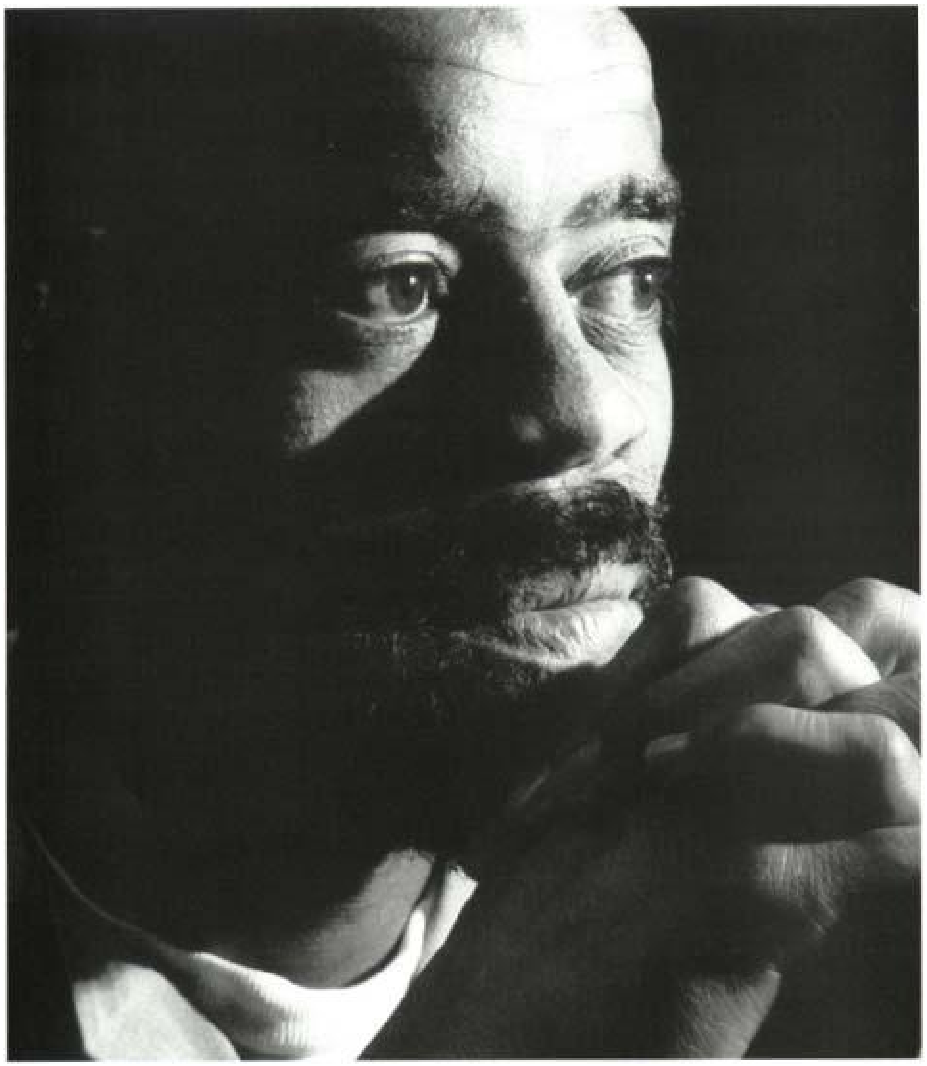

Ricky Donnell Ross, shortly before he was sentenced to life in prison without the possibility of parole in October 1996. ROBERT GAUTHIER/LOS ANGELES TIMES

Milian, a graduate of Santa Clara University in Silicon Valley, told Kerry's committee that he used the firm to launder a $10 million donation from the Medellín cartel to the Contras, a donation he said was arranged by and paid to a former CIA agent, Cuban Felix Rodriguez. Kerry's committee didn't believe that tale, especially after Milian flunked a lie detector test on the question.

But during the drug trafficking trial of Manuel Noriega several years later, one of the government's star witnesses, former Medellí;n cartel transportation boss Carlos Lehder, confirmed under oath that the cartel *had* given the Contras $10 million, just as Milian had testified. Lehder said he arranged for the donation himself.

Contra leader Adolfo Calero has always denied the Contras received such a sum, but Calero is hardly a credible source when it comes to Contra fund-raising. I le denied for many years that the Contras ever got money from the CIA, or assistance from Oliver North.

The FBI first picked up word of Frigorificos' involvement with drugs in September 1984, while the CIA was still running the Contra program. An investigation of a 1983 bombing of a Miami bank had led police and FBI agents into the murky underworld of Miami's Cuban anti-Communist groups, who were suspected of blowing up the bank.

Miami police questioned the president of the Cuban Legion, Jose Coutin, who told them what he knew of the bombing and then unloaded some unexpected information about the Contras and drugs, naming a host of Cuban CIA operatives and Bay of Pigs veterans he said were working for the Contras in Costa Rica. One drug dealer Coutin named was Francisco Chanes, whom Coutin said "was giving financial support to anti-Castro groups and the Nicaraguan Contra guerrillas. The monies come from narcotic transactions." lie identified Chanes as one of the owners of Ocean Hunter, the sister company of Frigorificos. The Miami cops quickly turned the information over to the FBI, records show.

Coutin's statements were corroborated years later by former drug pilot Fabio Ernesto Carrasco, who admitted flying cocaine and weapons loads for the Contras in 1984 and 1985. As a U.S. government witness, Carraseo testified that Frigorificos was being used by the Contras during the war as a front to bring cocaine into the United States to finance the war effort.

"To make sure I understand, is this company Frigorificos de Puntarenas in any way involved in drug trafficking?" defense attorney Richard "Racehorse" Haynes asked Carrasco during a 1990 drug trial in Tulsa, Oklahoma.

"That's correct."

"In what way was it involved?"

"As I have said, they would load cocaine inside the containers which were being shipped loaded with vegetables and fruit to the United States," Carraseo said.

"Did this company have a role in your drug operations dealing with the Contras and the weapons that you believed to be involved with the CIA?"

"It did in my opinion," the pilot testified.

So how could a company started by the Medellín cartel and used as a front to run drugs into America ever wind up with a contract from the U.S. State Department's Nicaraguan Humanitarian Assistance Office?

Through Rob Owen and the CIA, court records show.

"The people that were involved in Ocean Hunter in Costa Rica were ones that had been helpful to the cause," Owen testified in a 1988 civil deposition. He identified those helpful souls as Frank Chanes, the Miami Cuban who was reported to the FBI as a drug trafficker in 1984, and Moises Nunez, another Bay of Pigs veteran who was suspected by Interpol of being a drug trafficker as well as an intelligence operative.

Another man involved with Frigorificos was the exiled Nicaraguan lawyer Francisco Aviles Saenz, the CIA asset who claimed the $36,000 police had seized during the investigation of the Frogman case in San Francisco in 1983 belonged to the Contras. On several occasions Aviles, the brother-in-law of Meneses's lieutenant Horacio Percira, notarized affidavits submitted by the shrimp company to obtain payment from the State Department, records show.

Owen claimed the shrimp company was used mainly for its international bank accounts, serving as one of several Central American "brokers" for the humanitarian aid money going to the Contras on the Southern Front. In all, more than $260,000 in U.S. taxpayer funds flowed through Frigorificos's bank accounts during 1986.

"We needed an account in Miami that the [State Department] money could be deposited to. [There were] constant financial transactions between Miami and Costa Rica, between Frank Chanes and Moises Nunez. They had been helpful and supportive of the cause. They were willing to do it," Owen testified. "I felt that they were honest and that the money would go where it was supposed to go."

Where it ended up is anybody's guess. Some of the money paid Frigorificos, bank records show, was wired out in never-explained transfers to banks in Israel and South Korea. When the U.S. General Accounting Office audited the NHAO's "broker" accounts, it was unable to trace most of the money. Of $4.4 million that went into the accounts, less than $1 million could be accounted for, and much of that was in payoffs to Honduran military officials. The rest was traced to offshore banks and then disappeared.

Owen insisted that the traffickers at Frigorificos had been cleared by the CIA and presumably the FBI. "U.S. intelligence sources were involved in Costa Rica to provide a check and a balance on this. They would be knowledgeable, they knew the lay of the ground. I thought it important and appropriate to talk with them," Owen testified. "To the best of my knowledge, I talked to U.S. intelligence officials regarding Moises Nunez. I believe I would have asked about Frank Chanes as well."

In addition, Owen said, "their names were given to NHAO and it was my understanding that any account that NHAO provided funds to was checked through the FBI. The FBI was informed who was being used as a banker. Now, whether they did any check on it or not, I'm not sure. I guess I assume that they did."

The director of the NHAO testified that the FBI never answered his letters of inquiry.

"So, is it fair to say, then, that you were the one that suggested these gentlemen be utilized?" Owen was asked during a deposition.

"It is fair to say. . .in consultation with U.S. intelligence officials," Owen replied. Owen refused to identify them further, other than to say that it was "someone who works for the CIA."

One reason the CIA gave Frigorificos a clean bill of health may have been because its Costa Rican manager, Moises Nunez, was a CIA agent. John Hull, the CIA's Costa Rican liaison with the Contras, confirmed in an interview that Nunez was working with the agency as an intelligence source, and a 1988 UPI story said Nunez was "identified as an Agency officer by two senior Costa Rican government officials, a U.S. intelligence source, and American law enforcement authorities."

In addition to distributing State Department money to the Costa Rican Contras, Nunez was also permitting Frigorifieos to be used by North and CIA station chief Fernandez as a cover for a secret maritime operation they were running against the Sandinistas, records show.

In February 1986, one of the Cubans working with North in Costa Rica, a longtime CIA contract agent named Felipe Vidal, devised a plan for a "small, professionally managed rebel naval force" that would serve as a supply line for the Contras, an intelligence-gathering operation, and a transportation unit "to infiltrate into the [Nicaraguan] mainland rebel cadres for specific missions."

Vidal recommended using a Costa Rican shrimp company as "a front" and getting two shrimp boats to act as motherships and to gather intelligence. "These boats could be acquired from U.S. government auctions," Vidal wrote, noting that "existing connections with a high-ranking official in the DEA would facilitate the purchase of said boats. The cost of these boats, with cooperation from the DEA, could come to as low as $10,000 per boat." CIA records show that Vidal was employed by Frigorificos at the time he proposed this scheme.

Vidal's "existing connections" with a top DEA official are fascinating, considering the Cuban's shady background. Vidal's criminal history "reflects an assortment of assault, robbery, narcotics, and firearms violations," the CIA Inspector General wrote, and included a 1971 drug conviction and a 1977 arrest for conspiracy to sell marijuana. Former CIA official Alan Fiers admits being aware of Vidal's "record of misbehavior and general thuggery" but claims he didn't know the Cuban was a convicted drug trafficker. The following month, Owen informed North that "the first hard intelligence mission inside by boat has taken place and the people arc now out." He said five small boats were being constructed and "a safe house [in Costa Rica] has been rented on a river, which flows into the ocean."

"Moises Nunez, a Cuban who has a shrimping business in Punteranous [sic] is fronting the operation," Owen wrote North. "He is willing to have an American come work for him under cover to advise the operation. . .. If we can get two shrimp boats, Nunez is willing to front a shrimping operation on the Atlantic coast. These boats can be used as motherships. I brought this up awhile ago and you agreed and gave me the name of a DEA person who might help with the boats."

In other words, in early 1986 the DEA was being asked to provide cheap oceangoing vessels to a company started by the Medellín cartel, run by drug traffickers, for espionage missions planned and fronted by drug traffickers.

The identity of Vidal's high-ranking DEA contact was not divulged, nor is it known whether the agency ever provided the boats, but records show the maritime operation was going strong in April 1986 and would soon be running "several trips a week," according to a memo Owen sent to North. Curiously, the Iran-Contra investigations barely looked at this clandestine operation, which was a clear violation of the Boland Amendment since, according to Owen, it directly involved CIA station chief Joe Fernandez.

Despite his background, Moises Nunez also maintained a chummy relationship with antidrug agencies, both American and Costa Rican. "Nunez got to be known by our authorities as a collaborator of the DEA and of other police bodies," said a 1989 Costa Rican prosecutor's report, adding that the Cuban carried credentials from the Costa Rican Ministry of Public Safety's Department of Narcotics, provided funds and vehicles for an antidrug unit, and went out on raids with them, though his effectiveness was somewhat questionable. The report said he blew a four-month investigation of a Colombian drug ring by making a "premature" arrest.

Most of this strange activity was occurring with the knowledge and apparent approval of CIA station chief Fernandez and other CIA agents in Costa Rica, records indicate. Fernandez admitted to the Iran-Contra committees that he knew Nunez and knew he was meeting with Owen to discuss Contra operations. Fernandez was asked if he knew that Nunez claimed to have met North, but his answer was classified for reasons of national security.

Nunez, however, shed light on that question when the CIA interrogated him in March 1987 about allegations that he'd been dealing drugs in Costa Rica through his shrimp company, Frigorificos. Thanks to a DEA seizure, the CIA already knew that Nunez's partners in that firm were behind a 414-pound cocaine load shipped to Miami in January 1986 amidst crates of yucca.

"Nunez revealed that since 1985, he had engaged in a clandestine relationship with the National Security Council [NSC]," the CIA Inspector General reported. "Nunez refused to elaborate on the nature of these actions but indicated it was difficult to answer questions relating to his involvement in narcotics trafficking because of the specific tasks he had performed at the direction of the NSC."

Instead of following up on this eyebrow-raising answer, CIA headquarters ordered an immediate halt to Nunez's questioning. "The Agency position was not to get involved in this matter and to turn it over to others because it had nothing to do with the Agency, but with the National Security Council," former CIA officer Louis Dupart reasoned in an interview with the CIA Inspector General. "That's all we had to do. It was someone else's problem." That "someone" was harried Iran-Contra prosecutor Lawrence Walsh, upon whom every potential allegation of drug trafficking by the Contras was dumped by the CIA and the Reagan Administration. Of course, Walsh had neither the time nor the authority to look into most of those leads and the CIA refused to cooperate on the few occasions when he did ask some questions. Therefore he made an excellent scapegoat in case anyone wondered why tips about drug dealing by the NSC and the Contras were never investigated. "We turned it over to Lawrence Walsh," became the Agency's standard reply.

Former CIA official Alan Fiers, who ran the Contra project at the time, confirmed that Nunez's questioning was stopped "because of the NSC connection and the possibility that this could be somehow connected to [North's] Private Benefactor program, otherwise known as the Iran-Contra affair."

The CIA made the same decision when a security check on the CIA's logistics advisor to the Costa Rican Contras, Cuban mercenary Felipe Vidal, discovered evidence of drug running.

"Narcotics trafficking relative to Contra-related activities is exactly the sort of thing that the U.S. Attorney's Office will be investigating," CIA attorney Gary Chase worried in an August 1987 memo. Chase "expressed concern over the possibility that the security process. . .could be exposed during any future litigation." Vidal's security check was shut down.

But the Agency's conduct was far worse than simply burying its head in the sand. For years afterward, it shielded both Dago Nunez and Felipe Vidal from criminal investigations into drug trafficking and money laundering. At various times, the CIA told U.S. Customs and the DEA that it had no information about Nunez's trafficking activities. The CIA's Directorate of Operations—which runs covert operations—lied even to the Agency's own lawyers, denying knowledge of Nunez's shrimp company though there was plenty of information in its files.

Fiers also confirmed that the CIA played a critical role in the "humanitarian" aid operation involving Frigorificos; without the agency, Fiers said, the NHAO was simply "a shell entity. . .. We were to be the eyes and ears of the NHAO office. The only way that they could monitor alignments, verify shipments and receipts was by having CIA capabilities in the region perform that function for them. And so that's what we did." But since at least three other drug-dealing companies ended up working for the NHAO during its brief lifespan, either the CIA's oversight was woefully incompetent or it was seeking a special kind of contractor.

One such company was DIACSA, the Miami aircraft company that Floyd Carlton had used for years as the U.S. headquarters for his Panamanian drug-smuggling venture with Noriega. It was in DIACSA's offices, Carlton admitted, that he and his partners plotted their drug flights and arranged the laundering of their cocaine profits. DEA records confirm that.

Just like Frigorificos, DIACSA was run by a Cuban drug dealer who had been part of the CIA's Bay of Pigs operation, Alfredo Caballero. Carlton testified that Cabellero was "involved with drug trafficking and to a certain extent he helped the Contras. But to be more specific he was helpful to Mr. Pastora's organization [ARDE]."

According to a Senate subcommittee report, the Contras were dealing with DIACSA even before it was hired by the State Department. "During 1984 and 1985, the principal Contra organization, the FDN, chose DIACSA for 'infra-account transfers.' The laundering of the money through DIACSA concealed the fact that some funds of the Contras were deposits arranged by Lieutenant Colonel Oliver North," the report stated.

The State Department's selection of DIACSA as a "humanitarian" aid contractor is perhaps even more egregious than its choice of Frigorificos. At the time DIACSA got its government contract, the company had been penetrated by an undercover DEA agent, Danny Moritz, who was churning out eyewitness reports of Caballero's drug dealing and money-laundering rackets. Moreover, both Caballero and Carlton were under indictment in the United States for conspiring to import 900 pounds of cocaine and laundering

$2.6 million in drug profits. Both were convicted, and both became U.S. government informants.

How the CIA missed those clues has never been explained. It is highly likely the agency knew exactly what DIACSA was, since its owner was said to be working for the CIA. "Alfredo Caballero was CIA and still is," insisted Carol Prado, Eden Pastora's top aide in ARDE. "I say that because I knew him very well. A lot of times I went to DIACSA in Miami." Prado has reason to know. A 1985 CIA cable described DIACSA as the "cover company" used by the Costa Rican Contras to secretly buy aircraft.

During Noriega's trial in 1991, Floyd Carlton testified that his smuggling operation was flying weapons to the Contras at the same time he was flying dope to the United States and he said some of the arms flights were organized by Caballero. When Noriega's lawyers asked Carlton about Oliver North's knowledge of those flights, federal prosecutors vehemently objected, and U.S. judge William Hoeveler became angry. "Just stay away from it," the judge snapped, refusing to allow any more questions on the topic.

Another Miami company the NHAO hired to ferry supplies was Vortex Aviation, which was being operated by a Detroit drug dealer named Michael Palmer. Palmer, a former airline pilot, had worked since 1977 for "the largest marijuana business cartel in the history of the country," according to a federal prosecutor in Detroit. Yet in 1985 Palmer became a freedom fighter and volunteered for the Contra war effort, transporting humanitarian aid for the State Department.

In a recently declassified interview with FBI agents in 1991, CIA official Fiers admitted that the CIA had information that Palmer was dealing drugs during that time. "Fiers heard that sonic of Palmer's people got caught taking a plane of drugs into the U.S. and this is what caused a lot of problems for Palmer," the FBI reported. "CIA thought the northern Contras were clean but Palmer was an exception."

One DC-4 Palmer was using to deliver Contra aid was shot up in February 1986 as it attempted an airdrop over Nicaragua, and it made an emergency landing on San Andres Island off the coast of Nicaragua, a notorious haven for cocaine traffickers. Four days later Owen wrote to North, saying, "No doubt you know that the DC-4 Foley got was used at one time to run drugs and part of the crew had criminal records. Nice group the Boys chose." Pat Foley was the owner of a Delaware-based company, Summit Aviation, a longtime CIA and U.S. military contractor, often for clandestine air operations. Foley was reportedly overseeing Palmer's operations at Vortex.

Francis McNeil, at the time one of the State Department's top narcotics intelligence officers, confirmed to Congress that the DC-4's appearance at San Andres caused red flags to go up in Washington. "A stop at San Andres Island for a Contra resupply plane is a bit suspicious since San Andres is known to be a transshipment point for drugs," McNeil testified.

The pilot of that unlucky DC-4, former CIA contract pilot Ronald Lippert, said in an interview that neither his trip nor his crew were involved with drugs, though the plane had been involved with drug flights "long before I acquired it." He said the landing at San Andres was for repairs only. But he acknowledged that his plane was probably used for drug flights while Vortex was hauling humanitarian aid for the Contras. Those flights were piloted by Vortex's own crews, Lippert said. He knew one of the flights wound up in Colombia, because he got a call from the FAA in Miami "asking what my plane was doing, taking off from a dirt strip on the northeast coast of Colombia during its two-day mysterious absence on the Nicaraguan Contra flight."

Lippert, a Canadian who flew for the CIA in the early 1960s until his imprisonment by Cuban intelligence agents in 1963 for espionage, said that "the most I was able to find out from a friend in the intelligence community was the name 'Operation Stolen Mercedes' and that aside from Costa Rica, its itinerary may have included a stop in Panama and Mexico after it left Colombia."

On another Contra flight, Lippert's plane came back with an unexplained twelve and a half hours of excess flying time on it; Palmer told him the pilots had to make an emergency detour to Costa Rica. In his testimony to the Iran-Contra committees, Rob Owen confirmed that the airplane was involved in an unexplained "embarassing situation" in Costa Rica. "That's when 1 decided some real strange shit was happening," Lippert said. "It came back all messed up with bullet holes in the tail and the engine burned out and, after that, I told them that was it. Unless I'm flying the plane, it was no dice. So Palmer says, 'Fine, I'll buy the damned thing from you.'"

Palmer, whom the CIA admits was working as an Agency subcontractor at this point, arranged to buy Lippert's DC-4 through some associates of his: a Cuban lawyer from Miami named Jose Insua and an aircraft company executive, Richard Kelley, both of whom intimated to Lippert that they were working with the CIA. After the sale, Lippert said, the DC-4 was used to airdrop explosives off the coast of Cuba. Then, a month after he signed the installment sale papers, it was seized in Mexico with 2,500 pounds of marijuana on board.

A story in the Mexican newpaper *La Opinion* quoted the attorney general of Mexico as saying that the plane was being used by a "powerful gang of drug-smugglers. . .known to have been operating for a long time using large aircraft to transport arms southbound and bring back marijuana through here."

Lippert never got the plane back, nor was he ever paid for it. The company that issued the letters of credit that "guaranteed" the purchase of his plane was later shut down by the state of Florida, which announced that its owners were drug traffickers and fugitive stock swindlers. "Can't we close a bank or even a supposed bank anymore without finding some sort of tie to the Contras?" bank examiner Barry Cladden wondered to a *Miami Herald* reporter in 1987. "What's the world coming to?"

One of the DC-4's buyers, Jose Insua, was later exposed as a drug trafficker and DMA informant himself, and was used by the agency in an unsuccessful attempt to snare the former chairman of the Florida Democratic party in a bribery sting. During the trial, the government admitted that Insua was "involved in the brokering of aircraft for narcotics smugglers on approximately 12 occasions."

As Lippert aptly observed in 1997, "Jose Insua is a drug dealer and he's hanging around a company [Vortex] with a State Department eon-tract. Michael Zapcdis is a drug dealer and he issues two letters of credit for planes that are used by the CIA. Mike Palmer is a drug dealer and he's running an airline for the CIA. You tell me what's going on."

Actually, the litany of drug dealers working for Vortex was even longer than that, according to the CIA's Inspector General. "Michael Palmer, Joseph Haas, Alberto Prado Herreros, Mauricio Letona, Martin Gómez, Donaldo Frixone, and two pilots for the prime contractor—all of whom were affiliated with the CIA Contra support program—may have been involved in narcotics trafficking prior to their relationship with the Agency," the Inspector General found.

Records show top CIA officials were fully aware that Vortex was dabbling in drugs even before they recommended the company for the NHAO's "humanitarian aid" project and, later, for a CIA subcontract.

"At least two Agency officers [Alan Fiers and an unnamed CIA contractor] knew about Palmer's drug dealing before the Agency agreed to buy an aircraft from Vortex and approved the subcontracting to Vortex of the servicing of aircraft flying resupply flights for the Contras," a May 1988 CIA memo states.

The NHAO also hired a Honduran air freight company, SETCO, which happened to be owned by the Honduran drug kingpin Juan Matta Ballesteros, a fact that the U.S. Customs Service had known since 1983. "SETCO was the principal company used by the Contras in Honduras to transport supplies and personnel for the FDN," the CIA's Inspector General reported. "[Oliver] North also used SETCO for airdrops of military supplies to Contra forces inside Nicaragua." In fact, that appears to have been the reason behind *all* of the State Department contracts that were awarded to cocaine smugglers: they were the same people the CIA had hired to do that work when the agency was running the show.

"I believe we guided them toward the carriers they ultimately used," former CIA official Alan Fiers confirmed in 1998. Fiers told CIA interviewers in 1987 that he and NHAO director Robert Duemling "had frequent meetings regarding possible contract cargo carriers. . .[Fiers] said he had checked out some of these carriers for Duemling."

Duemling told Iran-Contra investigators that he was given very specific instructions regarding the cargo carriers when he took over the humanitarian aid program. "One of the policy guidelines was do not disrupt the existing arrangements of the resistance movement unless there is a terribly good reason," Duemling testified.

"Who told you that, by the way, going back to the beginning of this?"

"Ollie North," Duemling said. He said North instructed him not to "dislodge or replace their existing arrangements, which seemed to be working perfectly well."

They certainly were, in one sense. According to Danilo Blandón's lawyer, Brad Brunon, the Centra's cocaine was arriving in the United States literally by the planeload. "The transportation channel got established and got filled up with cocaine rather quickly," Brunon said in an interview. "As I understood it, these large transports were coming back from delivering food and guns and humanitarian aid and things like that and they were just loading them up with cocaine and bringing them back. I think 1,000-kilo shipments were not unheard of. That scale. Because all of a sudden they seemed to have unlimited sources of supply."

According to former Meneses aide Enrique Miranda, Meneses's drug-laden planes were flying out of a military air base in El Salvador called Ilopango. Like the CIA before him, North had selected that base as the hub for his Contra air force; his operatives worked there "practically unfettered," according to the report of Iran-Contra prosecutor Lawrence Walsh.

And it was at Ilopango where the whole sordid mess first started to unravel.

13

"The wrong kind of friends"

It didn't take DEA agent Celerino Castillo III very long to discover that something very strange was going on at Ilopango Air Force Base in El Salvador. Two days into his new job at the DEA's regional office in Guatemala City in October 1985, Castillo said the agent-in-charge, Robert Stia, took him aside and told him that the U.S. government was running a covert operation at the air base. Castillo should be careful not to interfere with it.

It struck the former Texas policeman as odd advice. Why would a DEA field agent need to be warned about interfering with a legitimate government operation? Castillo was there to fight drug dealers. Whatever they were doing at the military airfield outside San Salvador couldn't possibly concern him. At any rate, it wasn't as if he was going to be spending a lot of time in El Salvador. Though he was the country's only DEA agent, Castillo lived and worked in neighboring Guatemala and had duties there also.

Besides, El Salvador in late 1985 had all the makings of a very sorry posting. The war-torn country produced no drugs, and as far as anyone knew there were no major drug rings operating there. It was of such little concern to the American government that the DEA never opened an office in the country. If El Salvador was anything, it was a resting place for cocaine mules on their way north.

Flipping through the reports of his predecessors, Castillo could see that the DEA's role in the country had been limited to intelligence gathering, collecting information about drug shipments passing through and filing them away, making few seizures. "We were playing traffic cop, taking down the license numbers of speeders but never writing any tickets," Castillo would later observe.

Castillo put his boss's warning about Ilopango down to bureaucratic caution and got on with his job, which was to train and recruit Guatemalan and Salvadoran policemen to become soldiers in America's worldwide war on drugs. Since the DEA couldn't legally make any arrests in Central America, his assignment was to put together local antinarcotics squads the DEA could trust enough to work with, and develop informants who could provide real-time intelligence.

But no matter where he went, it seemed, Ilopango kept coming up.

Castillo was out one day with a DEA informant in Guatemala, a Cuban named Socrates Sofi-Perez, who proudly informed Castillo that he was a Bay of Pigs veteran and a Contra supporter. After learning that his new control agent had been decorated for fighting Communists in Vietnam, Sofi-Perez confided that he was helping the Contras fight Marxism in Nicaragua and laid out a scheme that was remarkably similar to the operation Frigorifieos was then conducting in Costa Rica: a shrimp company he owned was being used as a front to launder money for the Contras. The Contras were also dealing in cocaine, he told Castillo, using a small air force based at Ilopango that was ferrying war materials for the cause. He justified the trafficking by blaming the U.S. Congress for ill-advisedly cutting off Contra aid.

Castillo wasn't sure if his informant was trying to impress him, pull his leg, or waste his time. I he idea of a U.S. government-sponsored operation dabbling in drugs struck the six-year DEA veteran as absurd. But there was one way to find out. The next time he was in El Salvador, Castillo said, he bounced the Cuban's story off one of the few informants the DEA had there, Ramiro Guerra, who owned a coffee shop in San Salvador. Guerra was working for the DEA as the result of a pending cocaine trafficking indictment in San Francisco, where he had lived for many years. While hiding out in El Salvador, Guerra picked up pocket money by acting as an informant for the very agency that wanted him in jail back in the United States. He had also insinuated himself into Roberto D'Aubuisson's right-wing ARENA party, and had risen to a high level inside the party structure.

To Castillo's surprise, Guerra told him that the information about drugs at Ilopango was probably true. He'd heard the same rumors himself. And he confirmed that there was indeed a small air force based there that was illegally flying supplies to the Contras, but it really wasn't very secretive. While headquartered on the restricted military side of the Ilopango airport, the Contra air supply operation was being run quite openly, and a lot of his friends in the Salvadoran Air Force knew about it, Guerra told Castillo.

"The woman selling tortillas at the gate of Ilopango could tell you what was going on," the assistant regional security officer for the U.S. embassy in San Salvador told Iran-Contra investigators in 1991. "Anyone who ever flew into or over Ilopango air base could see something like that was going on. When looking down at Ilopango from the air, one could see one side of the airfield having a ragtag operation of inferior planes, dilapidated buildings and the like. On the other side of the airport were nice facilities, lift trucks unloading supplies from more sophisticated and bigger aircraft, and gringos running around."

The modern facilities "all belonged to the American operation," the officer said, adding that he didn't know "if it was a CIA operation or what, but he knew there was Contra resupply activity at Ilopango."

While CIA officials denied they were running the show, they admitted they were keeping a very close eye on it. "We had a capability and indeed a responsibility for reporting what had been happening at Ilopango," said Alan Fiers Jr., the former CIA official who headed the Contra program from 1984 to 1988.

Guerra told Castillo that a Cuban named Max Gómez was doing the actual day-to-day management of the operation for the U.S. government. "Gómez," was the name then being used by CIA agent Felix Rodriguez, a Bay of Pigs veteran who'd had a remarkable career with the agency as a paramilitary specialist. Among other operations, he'd been in on the capture and execution of Che Guevara. In early 1985 Rodriguez appeared in El Salvador as an adviser to the Salvadoran Air Force, working on a helicopter-based counterinsurgency operation against the FMLN guerrillas.

While Rodriguez has always claimed—sometimes under oath—that he was retired from the CIA and in El Salvador merely as a volunteer and private citizen, former CIA officer Fiers suggested otherwise. He testified that Rodriguez was sent there in early 1985 as part of a CIA reorganization that began after Fiers took over the Central American Task Force. "As a result of the change in management of the task force. . .we undertook a complete review of our efforts in San Salvador. . .and made adjustments in that undertaking that left certain operations, certain activities that we had—left a void," Fiers testified in 1992. "Felix Rodriguez was put into—sent to El Salvador to work in the areas where we had left a void and was going to take over those responsibilities, or at least in part take over those responsibilities."

Rodriguez's journey from "retirement" to Ilopango began with a very strange step. Shortly before he left for Washington, D.C., to get final approval for his mission to El Salvador, he received a call from a friendly private eye in Miami who wanted him to meet "a client who could compromise the Nicaraguan Sandinista government for drug-money laundering," Rodriguez wrote in his memoirs.

The client turned out to be former Medellín cartel accountant Ramon Milian Rodriguez—the man who had set up the Costa Rican shrimp company Oliver North would later use to funnel money to the Contras. Rodriguez said Milian was trying to broker information to obtain help in the money laundering case pending against him. Not only did he tell Rodriguez of Manuel Noriega's drug activities, but he claimed he could provide proof of Sandinista drug dealing. Rodriguez said he passed the info along to the CIA and

FBI and heard nothing back.

Milian tells a very different story. He met with Rodriguez to offer $10 million to the Contras in exchange for the U.S. government dropping the money laundering charges against him, he says; Rodriguez accepted the offer, and money was delivered to him on five separate occasions. Milian later failed a lie detector test when asked about making payments to Rodriguez, but the examiner reached no conclusions about his claim that he'd given money to the Contras. In congressional testimony, Noriega's former political adviser described Felix Rodriguez as "a very close friend of Milian." Both were Cubans who had been active in Miami's anti-Castro movement.

Most accounts date the Contras' use of Ilopango to September 1985, when North wrote to Rodriguez, asking him to use his influence with Salvadoran Air Force commander Juan Rafael Bustillo to secure hangar space for Contra supply flights. Rodriguez claimed he "greased the skids" with Bustillo and eventually became the overseer of North's Contra resupply operation at the air base.

In actuality, the Contras had been using Ilopango with General Bustillo's blessings since 1983, when Norwin Meneses's friend, CIA pilot Marcos Aguado, made arrangements to base Eden Pastora's ARDE air force there.

Since he could not devote all of his time to North's secret air force, Rodriguez wrote, "I found someone to manage the Salvadoran-based resupply operation on a day-to-day basis. [At Ilopango] they knew that person as Ramon Medina. I knew him by his real name: Luis Posada Carriles."

With men like Luis Posada and Marcos Aguado running things at Ilopango, it's little wonder DEA agent Castillo was hearing rumors about Contra drug trafficking. Luis Posada was a veteran CIA agent with a history of involvement with drug traffickers, mobsters, and terrorists. He was recruited by the CIA in the 1960s after years of working with anti-Castro Cubans in Miami and was implicated in a number of terrorist incidents conducted by various Cuban extremist groups. In 1967, CIA records show, Posada was investigated by the Justice Department for supplying explosives, silencers, and hand grenades to Miami mobsters "Lefty" Rosenthal and Norman "Roughhouse" Rothman. Rothman was a close associate of South Florida's Mafia chieftain, Santos Trafficante. A memo in Posada's CIA file said, "Posada may have been moonlighting for Rosenthal," but in late 1968 he was transferred by the agency for "unreported association with gangster elements, thefts from CIA, plus other items."

Posada was sent to Venezuela and began working as an official of the Venezuelan intelligence service. In 1973 the DEA received a report that Posada "was in contact with two Cubans in Miami who were reportedly smuggling narcotics into the United States for Luis Posada." According to the informant, Posada was to be "the main contact" in a major cocaine smuggling operation involving members of the Venezuelan government. The DEA placed Posada under surveillance and he "was observed by agents in Miami to meet with numerous identified upper echelon traffickers in Miami during March 1973."

Records show the CIA was fully aware of its agent's reported involvement with drug traffickers. It received word in February 1973 that "Posada may be involved in smuggling cocaine from Colombia through Venezuela to Miami, also counterfeit U.S. money in Venezuela." But the agency decided "not to directly confront Posada with allegation so as not to compromise ongoing investigation."

According to the notes of a congressional investigator who reviewed Posada's voluminous CIA files in the late 1970s, cables in the file "indicate concern that Posada [was a] serious potential liability. Anxious to terminate association promptly if allegations prove true. By April 1973, it seems sure that Posada involved in narcotics, drug trafficking—seen with known big time drug trafficker." But after questioning the Cuban about his contacts, the agency found him "guilty only of having the wrong kind of friends" and continued his employment.

His choice of friends continued to plague Posada, however. In January 1974 he asked the CIA to provide a Venezuelan passport for a Dominican military official, which the agency refused to do on the grounds that it "cannot permit controlled agents to become directly involved with illicit drug trafficking."

A few months later the DEA received a report that Posada was trading weapons for cocaine with a man the DEA believed "is involved in political assassinations."

According to records at the National Archives, the CIA formally terminated Posada in February 1976. Eight months later he was arrested in Venezuela and accused of participating in the midair bombing of a Cuban DC-8 airliner, which killed seventy-eight people. Though never convicted of the crime, he spent nearly ten years in Venezuelan prisons before escaping in the summer of 1985 and going underground. He resurfaced at Ilopango in early 1986 as Felix Rodriguez's right-hand man, telling investigators that "Rodriguez and other Cuban friends" helped him "get out of Venezuela and relocate in Fl Salvador. Upon arriving in El Salvador, Posada stayed with Rodriguez for two or three days. Rodriguez then helped Posada get a house in San Salvador, where Posada lived for the next year or so."

Though allegations of Contra drug trafficking were swirling around Ilopango, DEA agent Castillo was having difficulty getting firsthand evidence of it. For one thing, the air base was in a very protected position, high atop a plateau, surrounded by imposing cliffs. The area where the trafficking was supposedly going on was off limits to the public, tightly guarded by the Salvadoran military. If he was ever going to find out the truth, Castillo figured, he needed to get onto that side of the base.

He went to Salvadoran Air Force commander Bustillo, lord and master of Ilopango, for permission, but got the cold shoulder. "An agent from the DEA's branch office in Guatemala City came to San Salvador seeking access to Ilopango," the *New Republic* reported in 1990, adding that Bustillo "stalled" the requests. "There was never a good reason why [the DEA] couldn't get on Ilopango," the magazine quoted an unnamed U.S. official as saying. "They just kept putting off meetings, stuff like that."

So Castillo improvised. He recruited a Salvadoran named Murga, who wrote the flight plans for the private planes on the civilian portion of the base. Murga had excellent contacts on the military side and could come and go at will. He became Castillo's eyes and ears inside Ilopango.

Murga knew all about the Contras' drug running, Castillo said, because he was filling out their flight plans and inspecting their aircraft; the pilots were so brazen that they told him they were flying dope to the United States and money to Panama. Sometimes they left with the kilos in plain view, or arrived with boxloads of money, Castillo said.

In a once-secret 1992 interview with the FBI, ex-CIA agent Posada recounted that "the resupply project was always looking for people to carry cash from the United States into El Salvador for Posada to dispense. They were always worried about the restriction on only taking $ 10,000 out of the United States at one time. Any time any of the resupply people went up to the United States for any reason, whether it was a personal visit or whatever, they would be asked to bring money back." Posada was told "the money came from Washington," but never got a better explanation than that.

The drugs often arrived in private planes flown by Contra pilots from Costa Rica, Murga told Castillo; on other occasions they came in military aircraft from Panama.

When Castillo typed the names of the Contra pilots Murga had given him into the DEA's computers, nearly all of them came back as documented narcotics traffickers. Among the busiest of the pilots was Francisco Guirola Beeche, the scion of one of El Salvador's most influential families. How Chico Guirola wound up at Ilopango flying f or the Contras is an illuminating tale; he should have been sitting in a federal prison cell in the United States.

On the morning of February 6, 1985, a white T-39 Sabreliner jet took off from John Wayne Airport in Orange County, California, with Guirola and three other men—Cuban-Americans—aboard. It stopped briefly at the Kleberg County Airport in Kingsville, Texas, to refuel, and was met by a posse of U.S. Customs Service agents wielding search warrants. The agents had been tracking the men since the month before, when they were spotted in the same plane leaving Orange County for Florida. In mid-flight, they had suspiciously diverted to Panama, where they landed with $1.2 million in cash.

Guirola and his crew were all listed in Customs databases as suspected drug traffickers, and their airplane was on a watch list as a suspected smuggling craft—for good reason, it turned out. In the Sabreliner's cargo hold were fourteen suitcases, which Guirola claimed as his. He pulled out a Costa Rican diplomatic passport and advised the agents not to search the suitcases, or it would "cause trouble."

He was right. They were bulging with cash, a total of $5.9 million in small bills, the largest cash seizure in Texas history. When the agents announced they were arresting the men for trying to smuggle the cash out of the country, Guirola claimed diplomatic immunity because his mother was the Costa Rican vice-consul in New Mexico.

In court records, federal agents charged that the cash was drug money destined for El Salvador. They cited DEA records that said Guirola had been "reportedly involved in cocaine and arms smuggling in El Salvador and Guatemala" and noted that he was a top aide to Salvadoran death squad leader Roberto D'Aubuisson.

The latter claim was confirmed by the *Los Angeles Times*, which reported that Guirola had accompanied D'Aubuisson to a "very sensitive" meeting with former CIA deputy director Vernon Walters in May 1984. According to the story, Walters had been dispatched in a frantic attempt to talk D'Aubuisson out of assassinating Thomas Pickering, the U.S. ambassador to El Salvador.

Guirola, who attended college in California with one of Anastasio Somoza's nephews, had allowed D'Aubuisson to use his house as a campaign headquarters when he ran for Salvadoran president in 1984. Guirola's passport, which was signed by D'Aubuisson, identified him as a "special adviser" to the Salvadoran Assembly. He was also carrying credentials from the Salvadoran attorney general's office.

Since Guirola was using an Orange County airport as his departure point, it is possible that the millions he was hauling out of the country came from Los Angeles—area drug sales. But the source of the funds was never made public. "The investigation came to a sudden, abrupt halt with a lot of questions unanswered," U.S. Customs agent Krnest Allison complained.

That was because the justice Department had made a quick deal with Guirola: If he let the U.S. government keep the money, he'd be let off with probation. Guirola and one of his companions pleaded guilty to a minor currency violation charge and walked. Charges against another passenger and the pilot were dropped, and the plane was given back.

"I have a hard time swallowing it," federal judge I layden I lead Jr. told Guirola after the Justice Department announced its plea bargain with the smuggler. "The punishment doesn't fit the crime. . .. I don't know what you were up to, but this conduct cannot be tolerated."

Less than a year later, DEA agent Castillo and his informants were watching Guirola zoom in and out of Ilopango, hauling drugs in, carrying cash to the Bahamas, and flashing credentials from the Salvadoran Air Force and the Salvadoran president's office. "When I ran Guirola's name in the computer, it popped up in 11 DEA files, detailing his South America-to-United States cocaine, arms and money laundering," Castillo wrote in his memoirs.

In response to a Freedom of Information Act request filed in 1997, the Customs Service claimed it could not locate any records relating to the Guirola case.

Castillo said that in January 1986 he began firing off a string of reports to DEA headquarters in Washington about the suspicious activities of the Contra pilots, listing their names, destinations, tail numbers, and criminal records. He got no replies, and no offers of assistance. It was, he wrote later, as if his reports were "falling into some faceless, bureaucratic black hole."

But in late March 1986 Castillo got his first official confirmation that he was on the right track. A cable arrived from the Costa Rican DEA office reporting that a pilot named Carlos Amador was intending to fly into Ilopango, pick up cocaine at Hangar No. 4, and take it to Miami. Amador would be carrying Salvadoran government identification, which got him through Customs and any inspections. Castillo was asked to "investigate Amador and any persons or companies associated with Hangar No. 4."

As Castillo would soon realize, that was easier said than done; he was about to plunge headlong into the darkness of one of the Reagan Administration's most secret operations, a clandestine activity that Reagan privately predicted would result in him and his Cabinet being strung up by their thumbs on the White House lawn if word ever leaked out to the public. CIA records show that Hangar No. 4 had been used by the Agency for covert Contra operations until it was turned over in 1985 to the National Security Council and Oliver North's illegal arms network, "The Enterprise." CIA agent Felix Rodriguez also used the hangar for his helicopter-based counterinsurgency program. The adjoining hangar, No. 5, was still being used by the CIA in support of the Contra project.

Moreover, the suspected drug pilot, Carlos Amador, had been working with the CIA for years, flying missions for the Costa Rican Contras. The CIA had been collecting information for at least a year indicating Amador was also flying drug planes between Costa Rica, Panama, Belize, and Miami for a pair of major cocaine traffickers, the Sarcovic brothers, at the same time he was flying for the White House.

Excited that his investigation was finally starting to bear fruit, Castillo drove to El Salvador to tell his informants and the Salvadoran narcotics police the good news—he now had independent confirmation that their stories of Contra drug flights at Ilopango were true. Someone would finally start listening to them, Castillo exulted.

But the CIA had other ideas. Within weeks, cables were shooting off in a dozen directions as the Agency quickly tried to get a handle on the DEA agent's investigation.

In April 1986 the CIA station in El Salvador sent a desperate message to the Costa Rican CIA office, asking if the DEA office there could be persuaded to back off.

"Hangar No. 4 at Ilopango was the location of Contra operations and. . .the El Salvador Station could assure that the only thing Amador and the other pilot had transported during their flights there was military supplies," the cable stated. "Based on that information, El Salvador Station would appreciate Costa Rica Station advising DEA not to make any inquiries into anyone re: Hangar No. 4 at Ilopango since only legitimate CIA supported operations were conducted from this facility. FYI, Station air operations moved from Hangar No. 4 into Hangar No. 5, which Station still occupies."

The CIA official who wrote that cable told the agency's Inspector General that "his statement was not intended to thwart an investigation of activities in Hangar No. 4. He concedes, however, that the language in the cable could be read to suggest a meaning he did not intend." Plus, that was the effect it had.

The official alarm was easily understood. Not only was someone like-Carlos Amador strolling freely in and out of CIA-run hangars, but there was a host of other Contra traffickers milling about Ilopango, including Norwin Meneses and friends.

Enrique Miranda Jaime, who became Meneses's emissary to the cartels of Colombia in the late 1980s, testified in a 1992 trial in Nicaragua that "Norwin was selling drugs and tunneled the benefits to the Contras with help of high-ranking military officials of the Salvadoran Army, especially with the help of the head of the Salvadoran Air Force and a Nicaraguan pilot named Marcos Aguado."

Aguado, the chief pilot for the ARDE Contra forces in Costa Rica, was identified in 1987 congressional testimony as a CIA agent. Soon after North set up his resupply operation at the air base, Aguado moved to Ilopango permanently, working as an aide to a high-ranking Salvadoran air force commander. The pilot, who had been instrumental in arranging the Contras' 1984 arms-and-drugs deals with Colombian trafficker George Morales, was no longer welcome in Costa Rica, having been formally accused of cocaine trafficking. "Aguado became a colonel in the Salvadoran Air Force, sharing all the privileges of a high-ranking military officer in El Salvador and was accepted by subordinate ranks as Deputy Commander of the Salvadoran Air Force," Miranda testified. "The flights he directed went as far as Colombia, where they were loaded with cocaine and then redirected to the United States, to a U.S. Air Force base located in the state of Texas."

In interviews, Miranda and former Nicaraguan antidrug czar Roger Mayorga, who arrested Miranda, said the U.S. air base was near Fort Worth, but neither knew the name of it. The only air force base near Fort Worth at the time of the alleged drug flights from Ilopango was the now-closed Carswell Air Force Base, the home of a Strategic Air Command bomber squadron. In response to a Freedom of Information Act request filed in 1997, the U.S. Air Force said all flight records that may have shown arrivals and departures of Salvadoran military aircraft during the mid-1980s were destroyed years ago.

Miranda, a former Sandinista intelligence officer who became a double agent for the CIA during the Contra war and has worked as a DEA informant in recent years, said the cocaine brought from Colombia by Medellín cartel pilots arrived in Costa Rica in square twenty-five-kilo packages. It was unloaded at various airstrips there, including one located on CIA operative John Hull's farm in northern Costa Rica, where it was placed aboard Contra planes and flown into Ilopango.

Once it had arrived at the Salvadoran base, Miranda said, Aguado and Meneses supervised the loading of the cocaine onto U.S.-bound aircraft owned by the Salvadoran Air Force and, on occasion, a Miami-based CIA contractor, Southern Air Transport. Though Southern Air officials have vehemently denied involvement with drug smuggling, once suing a Florida TV station for daring to suggest such a thing, CIA and DEA records show that the airline was under investigation for drug trafficking by U.S. Customs in 1987. Further, Southern Air was "of record" in the DEA's databases from 1985 through 1990 "for alleged involvement in cocaine trafficking. . .several of the firm's pilots and executives were suspected of smuggling narcotics currency," the DEA reported. Southern Air was once owned by the CIA.

Miranda testified that he met CIA pilot Aguado for dinner at Meneses's mansion in Managua in 1991, where Aguado regaled them with tales of flying for the Colombian cartels. Aguado told him that he once took a Salvadoran Air Force bomber and leveled a warehouse full of Medellín cartel cocaine on behalf of the rival Cali cartel. Another time, he made plans to bomb the prison where Medellín cartel chief Pablo Escobar was briefly imprisoned. Aguado also boasted of flying weapons from the Salvadoran military to the Colombian cartels, a story Miranda said he doubted until a Salvadoran Air Force colonel and his associates were arrested in 1992 for selling bombs and high explosives to Colombian drug dealers.

Miranda said Meneses told him that U.S. military hardware stockpiled at Ilopango was loaded onto Salvadoran transport planes and flown south, where the guns were traded for cocaine and flown back to Ilopango. As wild as that scheme sounds, records show Enrique Miranda is not the first drug trafficker to have reported such a fantastic operation. During the 1980s the U.S. Justice Department received at least three other reports from reliable informants detailing arms-for-drugs swaps involving the Medellín cartel, the Contras, and elements of the U.S. government.

One of those informants, records show, was a member of Meneses' drug ring, a boyhood friend who "had a long track record of providing information and was considered extremely reliable," according to the Justice Department's Inspector General. The friend was questioned in April 1986 by a DEA intelligence analyst as part of a secret DEA assessment of allegations that the Contras were involved in drug smuggling; he not only confirmed that Meneses was selling cocaine to raise money for the Contras, but said "some of these proceeds were used to buy weapons for the Contras in Colombia." The DEA informant related that "Meneses had recruited him to coordinate drug and weapons shipments from Colombia. . .the drugs were shipped to the United States, sometimes through Nicaragua. Meneses boasted that he traveled in and out of Nicaragua freely and that U.S. agents would assist him."

Another report of Colombian cocaine being traded for U.S. weapons surfaced less than two years later, during the 1988 debriefings of a Colombian trafficker turned government informant, Allen Raul Rudd, who was questioned by Justice Department officials and the U.S. Attorney's office in Tampa, Florida.

In a February 1988 memo marked "Sensitive," Assistant U.S. Attorney Walter E. Furr told his boss that Rudd "is a very articulate individual and there has been no indication to date that he has not been totally candid. In a real sense his life is on the line for the cooperation he has given so far." Furr probably thought it necessary to add his testament to Rudd's credibility in light of what he was about to report next: the Medellín cartel reportedly had made a deal with Vice President George Bush to supply American weapons to the Contras in exchange for free passage for their cocaine deliveries to the U.S.

Rudd told the officials that in the spring of 1987 he'd met in Medellín, Colombia, with cartel boss Pablo Escobar to arrange a drug deal. In the course of their conversation at Escobar's palatial home, Rudd said, the cocaine lord began ranting about Bush and his South Florida Drug Task Force, which was making the cartel's deliveries to the Miami area more difficult.

"Escobar then stated that Bush is a traitor who used to deal with us, but now he is tough," Rudcl told the federal officials. Escobar described "an agreement or relationship between Bush and the American government and members of the Medellín cartel which resulted in planes similar to C-130s (but smaller) flying guns to the cartel in Colombia. According to Rudd, Escobar stated that the cartel then off-loaded the guns, put cocaine aboard the planes and the cocaine was taken to United States military base(s). The guns were delivered and sold to the Contras in Nicaragua by the Cartel."

Escobar, Rudd said, explained that "it was a swap of cocaine for guns. . .Rudd has stated that while Escobar did not say the CIA was involved in the exchange of guns for cocaine, that was the tenor of the conversation. Rudd has stated that Escobar and the rest of the cartel members are very supportive of the Contras and dislike the Sandinistas as they dislike the guerrillas which operate within Colombia."

Rudd claimed that Escobar had photographic proof to back up his story. Not only were there "photographs of the planes containing the guns being unloaded in Columbia," but he claimed to have a picture of Bush posing with Medellín cartel leader Jorge Ochoa, in front of suitcases full of money. "After Escobar talked about the photograph, Rudd said that if the photograph was not genuine (and was merely two individual photographs spliced together somehow) it would be easily discredited," Furr wrote. "In response, Escobar stated that the photograph was genuine, it would stand up to any test. . .Escobar stated that the photo would be made public at the 'appropriate time.' Rudd indicated that the photo is being held back as blackmail if the cartel ever needs to bring pressure on Bush."

By 1993 Escobar was dead, killed in a shoot-out with Colombian police, and Jorge Ochoa was in jail. The photos, if they ever existed, were never heard of again.

Rudd's story is very similar to one told by a Miami FBI informant, Wanda Palacios, who reported in 1986 that she had witnessed Southern Air Transport planes being loaded with cocaine and unloading guns in Barranquilla, Colombia, in 1983 and October 1985. Palacios, the wife of a Colombian trafficker, said she'd accompanied Pablo Escobar in a limousine to the landing site and had spoken about it as well to Jorge Ochoa, who bragged that he was working with the CIA to get cocaine into south Florida.

Palaeios was interviewed in 1986 by the staff of Senator John Kerry of Massachusetts, which was looking into allegations of Contra drug smuggling. Kerry's staff found her and her story credible and took an eleven-page statement from her. The senator and an aide took it to the Justice Department in September 1986, and met with William Weld, one of Attorney General Edwin Meese's top assistants.

"Weld read about a half a page and chuckled," Kerry aide Jonathan Winer wrote in a memorandum after the meeting. "I asked him why. He said this isn't the first time today I've seen allegations about CIA agent involvement in drugs. . .he stated several times in reading Wanda's statement that while he couldn't vouch for every line in it. . .there was nothing in it which didn't appear true to him, or inconsistent with what he already knew."

But when her allegations leaked out to the press, Palacios was publicly dismissed as a crank by top Justice Department officials, who said polygraph tests she'd been given were "inconclusive." Southern Air Transport called her "a lunatic" and sued or threatened suit against news organizations that aired her allegations.

Her story was buttressed mightily by subsequent events, however.

When the Sandinistas blew a Southern Air Transport C-123K out of the sky over Nicaragua in early October 1986, the dead pilot's flight logs revealed that he had flown several Southern Air Transport flights to Barranquilla, Colombia. The flights had occurred during October 1985, exactly as Palacios had claimed, and she was able to identify the pilot's picture in a lineup. Southern Air said in a statement that the planes were carrying drilling equipment, not drugs.

The wrecked C-123K in which those flight logs were found had a history of involvement with cocaine, the Medellín cartel, and the CIA. It was the same airplane Louisiana drug dealer Barry Seal used in a joint CIA-DEA sting operation in 1984 against the Sandinistas. In that case the CIA had taken Seal's plane—which he'd recently obtained through a complicated airplane swap with the cartel—to Rickenbacker Air Force Base in Ohio and outfitted it with hidden cameras. Then Seal, who was working as a DEA informant, flew the aircraft to an airfield in Nicaragua and snapped pictures of men loading bags of cocaine into his plane.

One of Seal's grainy, almost indistinguishable photos was later shown on national television by President Ronald Reagan the night before a crucial vote in Congress on Contra aid. "This picture, secrcth taken at a military airfield outside Managua, shows Federico Vaughn, a top aide to one of the nine commandantes who rule Nicaragua, loading an aircraft with illegal narcotics, bound for the United States," Reagan announced. "No, there seems to be no crime to which the Sandinistas will not stoop—this is an outlaw regime."

But declassified CIA records show the Reagan Administration knew there was precious little to substantiate that. Even with the entire CIA contingent in Central America on the alert for Sandinista drug dealing, no evidence had been found. "Although uncorroborated reports indicating Nicaraguan involvement in the shipping of cocaine to the United States had been received, CIA was unable to confirm reports implicating high-level Sandinistas in drug trafficking," the CIA informed the Senate Select Committee on Intelligence in April 1984. Two years later, Justice Department officials reached the same discouraging conclusion.

A 1988 congressional investigation raised troubling questions about whether or not the Seal sting was even a real sting. It produced evidence suggesting that the whole episode had been stage-managed by Oliver North and the CIA as a domestic disinformation operation. Among other things, the House Judiciary Committee investigation revealed that the alleged Sandinista official named by Reagan, Federico Vaughn, may have actually been working for the U.S. government. Committee chairman William Hughes of New Jersey told reporters that "subcommittee staff recently called Vaughn's number in Managua, Nicaragua, and spoke to a 'domestic employee' who said the house belonged to a U.S. Embassy employee," and that his investigators were told the house had been "continuously rented" by the United States since 1981.

Recently declassified CIA cables lend additional support to the idea that Vaughn was in fact a U.S. double agent. In March 1985 the CIA reported that Vaughn "was said to be an associate of Nicaraguan narcotics trafficker Norwing [sic] Meneses Cantarero." Meneses at that time was working with the DEA in Costa Rica, assisting the Contras. And Oliver North's daily diaries for that period contained several references to "Freddy Vaughn," including a July 6, 1984, entry that said, "Freddy coming in late July."

Far from being a "top aide" to a Sandinista commandante, Vaughn was a deputy director of Heroes and Martyrs Trading Corporation, the official import-export agency of the Sandinista government, a firm that had been heavily infiltrated by CIA operatives. Records show that one of the Costa Rican-based drug traffickers working for North and the CIA, Bay of Pigs veteran Dagoberto Nunez, obtained a contract with H&M Corp. in order to cover an intelligence-gathering operation aimed at Nicaraguan president Daniel Ortega, his brother Humberto, and Interior Minister Tomas Borge. According to a 1986 memo from CIA operative Rob Owen to North, Nunez was preparing to sign an agreement with H&M for shrimping rights off the Pacific Coast of Nicaragua. "Nunez is doing this so he can help us. He will cooperate and do anything we ask," Owen told North. "He believes this will provide an opportunity to use his boats for cover operations, or to implicate the Ortegas and Borge in taking money on the side for their own pocket. He is right on both counts."

Four DEA officials testified before Hughes's committee that they'd received pressure from North and the CIA to leak the news of Vaughn's involvement with drugs to the press. They also said North wanted to take $1.5 million in drug profits Seal had collected from the Medellín cartel and give it to the Contras. When the DEA refused to do either, the DEA officials testified, the story was leaked by the White House to the right-wing *Washington Times*, which was supporting the Contras both financially and editorially.

The leak accomplished two things. It publicly linked the Sandinistas to drug trafficking right before a crucial Contra aid vote. And by prematurely exposing the sting, it blew the DEA's investigation of the Medellín cartel, which DEA agents said had been their most promising chance ever to break up the Colombian drug conglomerate. The drug lords went free, and Vaughn disappeared.

"The [Seal] sting operation has North's fingerprints all over it," columnist Jefferson Morley wrote in the *L.A. Times* in 1986.

After Seal flew his CIA/DEA missions, he never used the C-123K cargo plane again, parking it at the tiny Mena, Arkansas, airport for a year, then selling it back to the same company he'd gotten it from originally. In early 1986 it wound up with CIA contractor Southern Air Transport, where it was used for Contra supply runs and based at Ilopango until its last, fatal flight.

Unfortunately, the informants' allegations of a guns-for-drugs deal between the Reagan administration and the Medellín cartel were never seriously investigated. The memo of Rudd's debriefing was sent to Iran-Contra prosecutor Lawrence Walsh by the Department of Justice a month later, with a note from Associate Attorney General Stephen S. Trott, which said that "no action is being taken by the Department pending a determination by your office as to whether you intend to assert jurisdiction." Walsh's office apparently just filed the memo away; National Archives researchers found it while working their way through the Iran-Contra prosecutor's closed investigative files.

One of the lawyers who worked for Walsh told the CIA in 1997 that investigating Contra drug dealing comprised "only about one percent" of the Walsh probe's interest. "For the most part," the CIA reported, "any drug trafficking activity would have been 'stumbled on' in the course of the investigation of other issues, especially money laundering."

In an interview, Walsh said he tried to stay away from the Contra drug trafficking issue as much as possible because it was outside his jurisdiction and because he knew Senator John Kerry's Senate subcommittee was investigating the topic. But it appears that Walsh's office never passed the Rudd memo along to Kerry's investigators.

Castillo's investigation into Contra drug dealing at Ilopango met with a similar fate, thanks to the activities of the American ambassador in El Salvador, Edwin Corr, to whom Castillo was regularly reporting. Corr said he thought Castillo "was a very professional and a good agent" and had no reason to doubt what Castillo was telling him about what was going on Ilopango. But, Corr told Justice Department investigators, Castillo was making a lot of people nervous, including him, because his investigation had the potential to "destroy relationships with Salvadoran officials that had taken so long to build."

Worried, Corr sent a secret "back channel" cable to the State Department requesting an internal DEA review of Castillo's allegations. The DEA, he said, informed him that "a lot of [Castillo's] information was just totally inaccurate" and Castillo soon was "told by his superiors to close his investigation. . .and move onto something else." But Corr said the headstrong agent "continued to snoop around the airport and make allegations" until the Ambassador was personally forced to take matters in hand.

Corr said he ordered Castillo to "stop the witch hunt" and warned him that "they were dealing with a very sensitive matter and Castillo would have to take care not to make false allegations." Just what was false about the allegations Castillo was investigating isn't clear; indeed, most of his information has since been corroborated by the CIA and the traffickers.

Castillo now suspects that the Costa Rican DEA cable alerting him to Contra drug trafficking at the two hangars was less a request for him to investigate it than a way to cover the DEA office in Costa Rica in case his investigation got anywhere. Since Castillo had been sending his Contra drug reports to Washington for months, it is likely they were being shared with Nieves, the top DEA official in the country where the drug flights were allegedly originating.

If, as Meneses aide Miranda claims, the Ilopango operation was part of Meneses's drug pipeline into the United States, Castillo's probe might have raised some very sticky questions about how well the DEA was monitoring its top-level informant.

Denied access to the military side of Ilopango, Castillo settled on another tactic: he would hit an off-base location linked to the Ilopango operation. He and his informants zeroed in on a likely suspect: a New York weapons dealer and U.S. military contractor named Walter "Wally" Grasheim. The tall, bearded arms broker was the Salvadoran sales representative for the Litton Corp. and other American weapons makers, and had a booming business selling night vision goggles, Steyer sniper rifles, and assorted other gear to the Salvadoran military. He was also advising and training Salvadoran army units in long-range reconnaisance operations on behalf of the U.S. government. One of Castillo's informants at Ilopango told him Grasheim was intimately involved with the Contra drug operation there, and Castillo claims that DEA computers turned up several references to Grasheim as a suspected drug trafficker.

On September 1, 1986, Salvadoran police working with Castillo raided Grasheim's elegant hillside home in San Salvador. A pound of marijuana was reportedly found, but that was nothing compared to what else was in the place. "Some of the rooms in the house had munitions and explosives piled to the ceiling, including automatic weapons, M-16's, hand grenades and C-4 [plastic explosives]," Castillo later told the FBI. "The raid at Grasheim's house uncovered Embassy license plates, radios and ID's in Grasheim's name. Castillo. . .showed Grasheim's U.S. Embassy ID to the interviewer."

Grasheim, who says the weapons were legally his, strenuously denied he had anything to do with either the Contras or drugs and believes Castillo was duped by his informants, whom he says were secretly working for the CIA. "The Agency put Castillo onto me as a way of getting him away from whatever it was they were doing at Ilopango," Grasheim insisted in an interview. "The person who claimed I was a drug trafficker was on the payroll of the CIA. I've never been involved with drugs in my life." The marijuana found at his house, Grasheim said, probably belonged to a U.S. Army colonel who was a frequent visitor.

According to the Justice Department Inspector General's report, Grasheim is not entirely wrong. Castillo's informant, the ever-helpful Murga, was indeed working for the CIA and had been for quite some time. And soon after he put Castillo on Grasheim's trail—fingering him as "head of smuggling operations at Ilopango"—the CIA decided to take Murga back.

Castillo's boss, Robert Stia, "recalled being asked by the CIA station chief in El Salvador to relinquish the use of informant STG6. The Station Chief had explained that the CIA had established the informant before he had ever worked for the DEA" and wanted the DEA to stop using him because "he was currently a CIA informant." Stia complied, but complained internally that the CIA had cost the DEA a valuable asset.

Though Castillo's 1986 investigation was killed, he picked up word three years later that Hangar No. 5 at Ilopango was once again being used for drug trafficking, this time by members of the Salvadoran Air Force. He opened up another investigation, much to the irritation of U.S. Embassy personnel, who regarded Castillo with hostility due to his "reputation as a man who is always digging up things," the Justice Department Inspector General reported.

This time the CIA intervened directly and refused to allow Castillo to set foot on Ilopango. When Castillo asked how he was supposed to investigate drug trafficking allegations if he couldn't get on the airbase, a CIA officer told Castillo that it was "not necessary" because the CIA was on the case. "The CIA Chief of Station assured [Castillo] that there was no drug activity associated with Hangar No. 5," the Justice's Inspector General wrote.

In an ironic turn of events, Castillo soon found himself under investigation by the DEA. He spent the next five years fending off accusations that he had gotten too close to his Central American informants, accepted improper gifts, inappropriately handled firearms, and a number of other technical, administrative failures. Castillo's boss complained to his superiors that the charges against Castillo were unfair, and ultimately the DEA gave Castillo a disability retirement. In his 1994 memoirs, he blamed the fallout on his investigation of Ilopango.

The DEA declined to respond to questions about Castillo, and in response to a Freedom of Information Act request, it claimed it had no reports from Castillo about drug trafficking at the Salvadoran air base. Like so much of what the DEA has said about Castillo and Ilopango over the years, that was a lie. The Justice Department Inspector General had no trouble locating the agent's reports and quoted from them liberally.

The quashing of Castillo's investigation ended any official U.S. government interest in trafficking at Ilopango. But the issue refused to stay buried. At the same time the Contra drug pipeline in El Salvador was being hastily covered back up, police officers thousands of miles away in Los Angeles were starting to prying the covers off the other end of it.

As one of them would sadly remark ten years later, they had no idea what a Pandora's box they were opening.

14

"It's bigger than I can handle"

Victor Gill had no job and no business license, but for some reason he found it necessary to buy eight money-counting machines in the space of a month in early 1986. To U.S. Customs agent Fred Ghio and IRS agent Karl Knudsen, Gill might as well have been wearing a neon sign that said, "Arrest Me!"

The two agents were on the prowl for money launderers. A good way to find them, they reasoned, was to cheek with companies that made cash-counting machines. One such firm was the Glory Business Machine Co. in Bell, California, a rundown suburb of Los Angeles that in better days had been Hollywood gangster Mickey Cohen's stomping grounds. After seeing how often Gill was visiting Glory, they decided he could stand some scrutiny.

Ghio and Knudsen dropped by the Bell Police Department to see if anyone there knew their quarry. As luck would have it, the city of Bell's only narcotics detective, Jerry Guzzetta, was on duty, and he knew Gill well. He'd arrested him on cocaine charges a few years earlier and was more than happy to help the two federal agents bust him again. "You can't investigate money laundering without getting into dope. There's just no way," Guzzetta said.

Jerry Guzzetta went after dopers with a vengeance, and his one-man investigations had produced some impressive results. In November 1985 he'd been the subject of a glowing piece in the *Los Angeles Times* for his work in taking down a large Colombian trafficking ring. Some of his fellow officers regarded him as a loose cannon and a publicity hound, always trying to make a name for himself. But his friends said Guzzetta's zeal was largely misunderstood.

"He hated dope dealers. He hated them with a vehement passion, because a dope dealer had killed his brother, and that's one of the things that spurred him to go after these people so aggressively," Officer Tom McReynolds said.

"In a sense, a drug dealer killed my entire family," Guzzetta said. "After the guy shot my brother in the head, my father died of a heart attack. And then my mother died a couple years later. And he got off with two years for involuntary manslaughter."

Knudsen and Ghio liked Guzzetta's enthusiasm, and they invited him to join their surveillance of Gill. The trio soon discovered that Gill was buying the money machines for Colombian traffickers who didn't want their names turning up on purchase orders. He was arrested and eventually pleaded guilty to conspiracy charges.

It was the start of a mutually beneficial relationship for Guzzetta and the two federal agents, who specialized in money-laundering cases. For a small-town police department like Guzzetta's, busting a money launderer was an answered prayer, because the police got to keep a percentage of the spoils.

After California voters passed Proposition 103, which slashed local property taxes, many local police departments became hooked on drug money, using asset forfeiture laws to replace their lost tax revenues. Cash seized from traffickers and money launderers began being used to pay officers' salaries, for overtime, new patrol ears, uniforms, guns, and even helicopters.

The cash-strapped Bell PD was delighted to loan Guzzetta out to work with the federal agents. They would find the suspects, Guzzetta would help with surveillance and the search warrants, and afterward the city of Bell and the federal government would divvy up the booty—a win-win situation all the way around.

The trio "did some very good work together at first," Ghio said. "[We] took a lot of dope off the streets and seized a lot of cash." He said Guzzetta "became somewhat a local hero. He got a lot of recognition from his fellow officers, the public, and the Bell City Council, mainly due to the funds they got through asset sharing, which was generated from the seized cash."

Later that summer IRS agent Knudsen received notifications from two L.A. banks about a pair of customers who were making large cash deposits on a regular basis, officially known as "suspicious transactions." Banks routinely report them to the IRS. "They did a bank account check and found out [the customers] had no visible means of support but had over $1 million in the bank," Guzzetta said. The federal agents approached Guzzetta and asked him if he wouldn't mind helping out "because one of the banks was in the city of Bell and I had a good rapport with [the bank officers]."

Guzzetta began tailing the two depositors, which was easy because they stood out in a crowd. They were the Trees—Jacinto and Edgar Torres, Danilo Blandón's gigantic associates. The Torres brothers were running all over L.A., picking up packages, dropping off packages, making strange nighttime trips into South Central Los Angeles.

Jacinto, Guzzetta discovered, was on probation for cocaine possession. That, combined with the bank accounts, the surveillance, and the lack of employment, provided all the ammunition he needed to get a search warrant for the addresses the Torres brothers had been visiting. On August 11, 1986, Guzzetta and his federal friends raided them—and they hit the jackpot.

"We found $400,000 in the closet of one of the houses," Guzzetta said. "That was their spare change." But the Torreses were too smart to mix their money with their cocaine. Like their friend Blandón, they kept the two far apart, hidden in nondescript rental houses around the city. The raid produced not an ounce of dope.

Guzzetta said the brothers disclaimed ownership of the $400,000 and handed it over to the feds, which satisfied Ghio and Knudsen. "They'd seized some money, cleared some paper, and made their bosses happy. They weren't interested in prosecuting them federally because all they really had them on was a currency violation. Even if they were convicted they'd have pulled three years and been out in a year and a half," Guzzetta said.

But Guzzetta wasn't willing to just turn the brothers loose. If he couldn't put them away, he'd put them to work—for the police.

As imposing as they were, the Torreses had an Achilles heel that Guzzetta and the federal agents skillfully exploited: their live-in girlfriends, who were close relatives of Medellín cartel boss Pablo Escobar. (In a 1996 interview, Norwin Meneses confirmed the relationship between the women and Escobar.)

Guzzetta said the Torreses were informed that no charges would be filed against them, but their girlfriends would be prosecuted on conspireacy and tax evasion charges, imprisoned, and then deported as undesirable aliens who would never be allowed to set foot in the United States again.

To the rest of the world, it would seem like the brothers had sacrificed their women to save themselves, offending traditional Latin machismo. Even worse, it would appear as if they'd ratted out two of the cocaine lord's relatives. "You give up Pablo Escobar's family, and you're dead," Guzzetta chuckled. "So we turned them."

To keep the brothers on a short leash, it was arranged with the Los Angeles County District Attorney's Office for the Torreses to plead guilty to drug charges under false names. They were given suspended sentences, put on probation, and turned over to Guzzetta, who was assigned as their sole law enforcement contact to minimize their chances of exposure.

"They were scared to death," Guzzetta said. "They believed very strongly, and I agreed with them, that if anyone found out they were informants—including their girlfriends—they'd be killed in a minute."

During a debriefing on August 22, 1986, the Torreses told Guzzetta that they were convinced their girlfriends had already hired a couple of assassins. They told the detective they would check in with him every twenty-four hours to let him know they were still alive. "The informants advise that if. . .they are found dead in some other location, that it was their girlfriends who had contracted their killing," Guzzetta's report stated. "The informants relate that if, in fact, they are found dead, that the method which would probably be used upon them is a lethal injection of drugs, which will show up as a drug overdose."

Guzzetta and the federal agents began debriefing the brothers, and slowly, like an ocean liner emerging from a fog bank, the size of the operation they were part of began to take shape.

It was mind-boggling.

They revealed a drug ring that was dumping hundreds of kilos of cocaine every week into the black neighborhoods of Los Angeles, generating truckloads of cash. "The CI [confidential informant] has admitted laundering approximately $100 million since Jan. 1986," Customs agent Ghio wrote a few days after the debriefings began. "They currently have approximately 1,000 kilos of cocaine currently stored in the Los Angeles area as well as between $250,000,000 and $500,000,000 secreted in various locations locally that they have been unable to get out of the U.S."

Guzzetta said he initially doubted the brothers' story. Crooks trying to wiggle out of a jam often made extragavant claims, but this took the cake. No one he had questioned claimed to have a half a *billion* dollars stashed somewhere. "These guys were right off the street. They had absolutely no credibility as far as I was concerned," Guzzetta recalled.

To prove what they were saying, the Torres brothers invited Guzzetta and his friends to follow them while they made their rounds, dropping off dope and picking up cash from their customers in South Central Los Angeles. "The reliability of the CI has been substantiated," Ghio reported to his bosses a few days later. "Under the control of Det. Guzzetta, Bell, P.D., the CI has picked up and delivered 40 kilos of cocaine and collected and delivered $720,000." Within two weeks, Guzzetta wrote, he had "observed the movement of monies totaling $750,000, $230,000, $130,000, $150,000 respectively, which have been moved by informants and picked up from the Black market area."

Guzzetta began compiling his debriefing notes into a series of reports he titled "Project Sahara," because he figured the Torreses could help dry up the cocaine supply in South Central. Portions of his Project Sahara reports were located by police investigators ten years later, in 1996. "Basically, there is one major market which informant 36210 and 36211 are dealing with, which for the sake of argument in this report will be designated the Black market, because it is solely controlled by two male Negroes by the name of Rick and Ollie," Guzzetta wrote in his first report.

Guzzetta listened gape-mouthed as the brothers rattled off names, dates, delivery sites, and routes of transportation. The two black dealers in South Central, they reported, "are generating a conservative figure of approximately $10 million dollars a month."

The Torreses told him that the blacks were getting their cocaine from three Colombians and "a fourth peripheral source." Two of the Colombians, they knew only by nickname; the "peripheral source" they knew quite well: Danilo Blandón.

"Informants relate that Danilo Blandón is extremely dangerous because of his access to information," Guzzetta wrote, "and further, is extremely dangerous because of his potential to override the informants' market, thus cutting off the informants from the supply source of cocaine and currency, thus cutting off the informants' source of information."

Guzzetta said the brothers told him that Blandón had "a lot of inside information as to law enforcement activity, as to people that are working him," and they warned him to "be extremely careful about releasing any information to other law enforcement agencies. . .because they were afraid that Blandón had somebody inside the police department or whatever that was feeding him information."

Ricky Ross confirmed that Blandón had an uncanny ability to accurately predict upcoming police raids but said he was never able to explain Blandón's clairvoyance.

The Torres brothers told Guzzetta that "Blandón is working with an ex-Laguna Beach police officer by the name of Ronnie, who lives in an expensive house in Mission Viejo and drives a new Mercedes automobile. . .. Ronnie transported 100 kilos of cocaine to the Black market and has transported millions of dollars to Miami for Danilo Blandón." Once Blandón's cash arrived in Florida, the brothers reported, a relative of Blandón's, Orlando Murillo, would launder it. They described Murillo as "a bank chairman under Somoza prior to his being thrown out of power."

Roberto Orlando Murillo, the uncle of Blandón's wife, was an influential Nicaraguan economist who'd been appointed by President Somoza in 1978 to the Central Bank of Nicaragua, which is similar in function to the U.S. Federal Reserve Bank. The debonair investment banker was also the official representative of two Swiss banks located in Panama and Managua, and had managed a number of the Somoza family's businesses before the revolution.

It was when the Trees started talking about Murillo and the Contras—and the airfields in New Orleans and Brownsville, Texas, where Contra cocaine was allegedly being flown in under armed guard—that Guzzetta knew he was way out of his league.

Even if only half of what the Torreses were saying was true, the detective realized, he was up against an organization that could roll over a small-town cop like he was a bug. "I took it to the chief of police. I told the chief, 'It's bigger than I can handle. These guys are talking about millions of dollars in cocaine, they're talking about a Nicaraguan [leader] named Calero being involved in this, Colombian families that strike fear into the hearts of mortal men. I can't handle this by myself.'"

His chief, Frank Fording, asked him if he would mind teaming up with one of the L.A. County Sheriff's Major Violators squads, the "Majors," as the elite units were known.

Guzzetta didn't mind at all. In fact, he was thrilled by the prospect. "The Majors were hot shit," Guzzetta said. "They had all the resources, they had the funding, they had the manpower, they had the surveillance equipment, the night vision stuff, the helicopters, the overtime. They had everything."

They were semilegendary in L.A. law enforcement circles as the best the 8,000-man sheriff's department had to offer. Any cop with the slightest amount of ambition lusted for an assignment to the Majors. They got the biggest cases, seized the largest amounts of cash and cocaine, got the fattest overtime checks, and worked virtually unsupervised.

As L.A. defense attorney Jay Lichtman put it: "This was really the cream of the crop, the elite, the top officers of the Sheriff's Department." They were considered some of the best drug detectives in the nation.

They also won notoriety for their boozy off-duty carousing. A drunken crew member had once pulled out a pistol at a restaurant to hurry along a lazy waiter. On another occasion Deputy Daniel Garner, regarded as the best drug detective in the department, relieved himself on the pants leg of an aspiring narcotics officer Garner deemed unworthy of joining the Majors.

The squads—Majors I, II, and III—worked out of trailers at the Whittier and Lennox stations, each team of seven or eight detectives commanded by a sergeant. Guzzetta was put together with Majors II, headed by Sergeant Edward Huffman, whose brother was a friend of Guzzetta's. "Huffman was great," Guzzetta said. "A real straight arrow."

Guzzetta gathered up his "Project Sahara" reports and delivered them to the Majors, where they landed on the desk of Detective Thomas Gordon, a tall, soft-spoken officer who had spent sixteen years with the Los Angeles County Sheriff's Department.

By 1986, Tom Gordon had become a hard man to impress. Since 1982 he and his cohorts on the Majors had been tangling with the biggest criminals L.A. had to offer: the Mexican mafia, the gangbangers, Medellín cartel cells, international money launderers. But "Project Sahara" had a bit of everything, and it had an element the Majors had never before faced—a CIA-linked guerrilla army that was allegedly dealing in dope. There was no telling where this investigation could take them. Former lieutenant Mike Fossey, the unit supervisor and intelligence officer for the Majors II squad, called it one of the biggest cases he'd ever handled.

One of its main attractions was that it would provide the law enforcement community with a wealth of information on the inner workings of the L.A. crack market. Though the crack epidemic had been raging in South Central for three years by then, drug agents still had very little understanding of its dynamics.

They knew the street gangs that dominated the trade rarely left their own neighborhoods, which meant that somehow, someone was bringing in massive amounts of cocaine and delivering it to them. But no one—from the DEA on clown—had been able to figure out where it was coming from, who was importing it, or who was reselling it to the gangs.

Many narcotics detectives assumed that the normal rules of the drug trade—where one or two major drug rings control a "turf"—didn't apply to crack, because the marketplace appeared so disorganized and fragmented. There were crack dealers everywhere, on every corner. The problem seemed uncontrollable.

"We haven't encountered any major network. We're conducting these little skirmishes. It's very frustrating," one narcotics detective complained to the *Los Angeles Times* in early August 1986. Robert Stutman, the head of the DEA office in New York in the mid-1980s, wrote that "the marketing of crack was thought to be a cottage industry, a low-level blip in the drug trade like the selling of single marijuana cigarettes."

But that was only because the cops had never gotten much beyond the streets. In June 1986, DEA intelligence revealed that "what looked like independent street corner pushers were actually the bottom rung of carefully managed organizations," Stutman wrote in his 1992 memoirs. "It came as a revelation."

Analyzing the information provided by the Torres brothers, the Majors reached the same frightening conclusion. The L.A. crack market, they realized, was far more disciplined and well organized than anyone had ever dreamed.

And worse, through these two mystery dealers named Rick and Ollie, it appeared that the gangs had established a direct pipeline to the Colombian cartels, which meant they had access to as much cocaine as they could sell. Since the circle was so small, it was little wonder that its bosses had escaped detection for so many years.

It had been one long cop-free party, but it was coming to an end. The Majors now had the names and addresses of everyone at the top of the distribution chain, from the Colombian importers to the Nicaraguan middlemen to the black wholesalers who controlled the South Central marketplace. If everything went right, Gordon and his men could take down the biggest crack operation ever uncovered—one whose tentacles reached all the way to South America—and cut off the L.A. ghettos' main source of supply.

"This was going to be my last hurrah," said Gordon, who was scheduled to be rotated out of the Majors in a few months. "Like anyone, I've got an ego, and I wanted to go out with a bang."

15

"This thing is a tidal wave"

That summer, three years after crack exploded in South Central L.A., the national news media finally figured out M what was happening.

Within weeks of each other in May 1986, NBC News, *People* magazine, and the Associated Press trumpeted the news that a deadly new drug plague was stalking the countryside. According to Tom Brokaw, crack was "flooding America." The AP, in a special weekend feature, said "crack is becoming the nation's drug of choice," spreading "like wildfire." The *New York Times* drew a picture of "a wave of crack addicts" engulfing the city, spreading "prostitution and other crimes."

Then came the cataclysmic event that is needed to convert any problem into a National Disaster: celebrity deaths. Two well-known black athletes dropped dead from cocaine abuse.

What Richard Pryor did for freebase, college basketball star Len Bias and pro football player Don Rogers did for crack. With their deaths in June 1986, crack went from being a long-ignored problem in a few black neighborhoods to "a threat to our national security," as one U.S. senator described it. Before the year was out, *Time* and *Newsweek* would run five cover stories apiece on crack and the drug war; *Newsweek* would anoint it as the biggest story since Vietnam and Watergate. *Time* said it was the "Issue of the Year." By November NBC News alone had run more than 400 stories on the topic.

As with most drug stories, the mainstream reporting tended to be half-baked, or just plain wrong. The coverage "followed a typical pattern in which exaggerated claims were supported by carefully selected cases and fueled with evocative words such as 'epidemic,' with its implications of plague, disease, crisis and uncontrollable spread," drug researchers Andrew Golub and Donna Hartman wrote in a study of the media's role in the 1986 crack scare.

The Crack Attack began with a faulty premise, based largely on the news media's myopia. Because there had been few previous reports about crack, many editors assumed that it hadn't existed until then, or they surely would have heard about it. And now crack was seemingly everywhere: in Houston, Detroit, Newark, New York, Atlanta, Kansas City, San Francisco, Los Angeles. Thus, the nation's editors and news directors concluded, crack had spread from coast to coast *overnight*. While we slept, we had become the victims of a dastardly sneak attack—a kind of chemical Pearl Harbor.

That crack had been ravaging South Central L.A. since 1983 was not mentioned. None of the stories reported how vast the L.A. crack market had become by the summer of 1986, or how enterprising Crips and Bloods were fanning out across the country, introducing it into other black neighborhoods in the West and Midwest, precisely as the two USC sociologists Malcolm Klein and Cheryl Maxson had predicted. The spread of crack by the L.A. gangs would not become generally known for another two years.

Nor did the press notice that a similar migration had been occurring on the East Coast for about eighteen months, as the Jamaican posses and Dominican gangs from Miami began expanding their markets westward. A typical observation was contained in the *Washington Post* of June 13, 1986, which reported that crack was "virtually unheard of nine months ago on the East Coast." In the *Post's* newsroom, perhaps.

The only explanation a frightened and bewildered public was given for this "sudden" deluge of crack was a modern-day theory of spontaneous combustion, which holds that people can simply burst into flames. "Crack hit our society with a suddenness unprecedented in the history of illicit drug use," Senator Sam Nunn of Georgia stated. "Literally an overnight phenomenon, crack caught many police agencies by surprise."

"Eight months ago I had never heard of crack," said Senator Lawton Chiles of Florida, who would write the harshest anticrack laws on the books. "This thing is a tidal wave that has hit everywhere. . .. We are talking about a phenomenon that basically has hit this country in the last year, nine months, eight months, six months."

Representative Hamilton Fish of New York declared that "nine months ago, addiction to crack was virtually unheard of and today it's an epidemic, a plague, that is sweeping the country."

If one believed the papers and the politicians, the crack "epidemic" simply happened, and no one knew how or why. During two well-publicized congressional hearings that superheated summer, the government's top drug experts and law enforcement officers lined up to proclaim their official shock and surprise.

Top scientists at the National Institute on Drug Abuse (NIDA) testified that the agency had never even heard of crack until 1985, which is why it still had no information about it a year later. "We have not had enough time elapse since then for us to get epidemiological data about crack use per se," NIDA official Charles Schuster explained. The DEA's director of operations, David Westrate, said his agency could only guess at how prevalent the problem was, since "crack has emerged as a major drug problem in less than a year. As a result, data on usage, emergency room mentions and arrests have not been focused on crack as an individual category of drug abuse apart from cocaine."

Westrate confirmed that "there is no comprehensive analysis of the crack problem, either from a health or enforcement viewpoint. . .. DEA's own enforcement information on crack is also incomplete."

Representative Benjamin Gilman of New York could scarcely believe what he was hearing. "Well, of course you are telling us that crack is just beginning to spread across the country like wildfire in the past year. We have no current data, is that correct?" Gilman asked the government experts.

"I think it would be fair to say that we do not have any accurate estimate at this time," replied Dr. Jerome Jaffe of NIDA.

"Am I correct, then," Gilman continued, "that at this point we really don't have any definitive knowledge of how extensive the use of crack is in our country? With all of our expertise? Is that right?"

"That's correct," admitted Edgar Adams, NIDA's head of epidemiology and statistical analysis.

"Is that right, Dr. Jaffe?"

"That's fair."

Gilman looked at the DEA's representative. "Mr. Westrate?"

"Yes, I would say especially with statistically valid information."

But the government's experts weren't quite as ill-informed as they claimed. There was a method to their ignorance.

Pretending that crack was something that had appeared out of nowhere was, politically, much safer than admitting the truth—that the federal government had been warned about it very specifically many years earlier and hadn't lifted a finger to stop it, effectively surrendering the inner cities to an oncoming plague. If that information became too widely known, the public might start asking prickly questions, such as: Why weren't we told?

And how could a question like that be answered? Because we didn't believe it? Because we didn't care? Because we thought it might encourage people to try it? Or was it because the drug problem looked as if it would be confined to lower-income neighborhoods, ghettos, as it had been in South America, Jamaica, and the Bahamas?

Sitting in the audience at one of the congressional hearings that summer of 1986, listening to all the official excuses, was a man who knew the sorry truth better than anyone: Dr. Robert Byck, Yale University's top cocaine expert. It had been seven years since he had appeared before Congress to sound the alarm about the approaching drug plague, only to have his warnings ignored. He had no intention of letting the government get away with the charade he was witnessing.

"In 1979, I testified before the House Committee on Narcotics Abuse and Control and I said that we were about to have the worst epidemic of drug use this country had ever seen, something like the speed epidemic of the 1960s, except on a national scale, and that it was going to be the use of free-base cocaine," Byck said, hunching over his microphone. "I begged people, and I begged people at NIDA, for goodness sake, this is a chance to stop, if not to stop it, at least to take a chance on an educational campaign to avert a drug abuse epidemic. . .. This advice went unheeded. We are not significantly more knowledgeable about cocaine smoking. No educational campaign was mounted. Today we are in the midst of the predicted epidemic."

DEA official Westrate hastened to assure Congress that the drug agency was on full alert now: "DEA *last week* began an extensive, in-depth intelligence survey through all of the domestic field offices to try to discern the use and availability of crack, its purity and its price." Westrate mentioned that the administration's top drug experts were meeting with President Reagan that very morning to discuss crack.

Byck renewed his plea for research money so scientists could get the answers they needed about crack use and find some way to slow its spread. "I hope my testimony today will have a greater effect than my warnings in 1979," Byck said bitterly.

It didn't.

"Every problem that comes before us, everybody says that money is the answer," scoffed the committee chairman, Senator William Roth of Delaware. "I think you have to use it pretty intelligently and we don't have it in large supply."

Instead of authorizing money for crack research and educational campaigns, the congressmen voted for tougher laws against crack dealing. If crack was more dangerous than regular cocaine, they said, its sellers needed to be dealt with much more severely. And that kind of medicine didn't cost the federal government a cent—up front.

At least, that was the rationale behind one of the laws Congress created that summer, the so-called 100-to-1 weight ratio, which would fill America's prisons with tens of thousands of black street-corner crack peddlers and users over the next decade without making a dent in the crack problem. Under the 100-to-l ratio—a law Congress passed without any hearings—crack dealers were singled out for particularly harsh punishment. The scales of justice became so lopsided that a powder dealer had to sell $50,000 worth of cocaine to get the same five-year mandatory sentence as someone who'd sold $750 worth of crack. (As if crack could be made without powder cocaine.)

It was, Byck said years later, absolutely senseless. "That all comes from one of the congressmen, the one from Florida, Lawton Chiles," he recalled. "Chiles was asking me a question in which he stated something up front: 'Dr. Byck, isn't it true [crack's] 50 times more addicting?' or something like that. And I said, yes, and that 50 is the number that got doubled by people who wanted to get tough on cocaine and some expert's opinion on addictiveness got translated into weight. . .. The numbers are a fabrication of whoever wrote the law, but not reality."

As drug expert Steven Belenko of the New York City Criminal Justice Agency later observed, "One interesting aspect of the anti-crack crusade is that it occurred in the presence of a real vacuum of knowledge about the drug."

Meanwhile, drug experts who were reading and hearing about this "tidal wave" of crack began wondering which planet the media was reporting from. When the scientists looked around, they didn't see any epidemic, except for a few hot spots here and there—specific neighborhoods in Los Angeles, Miami, New York, Houston. It was certainly not the grand nationwide epidemic the press was portraying. A Chicago drug expert went so far as to call the whole issue "a hoax."

"Researchers were finding crack to be, not a national epidemic, but a phenomenon isolated to the inner cities of less than a dozen urban areas," drug expert James Inciardi observed in 1987. Even in New York, Inciardi wrote, "the fact of the matter was that if you lived outside of Washington Heights, crack was just plain unavailable."

Belenko wrote that "during the period of strongest concern over crack, 1986 to 1990, crack was actually the least-used drug among all illicit drugs." In Miami, at the supposed height of the crack epidemic there, cops running a sting operation in Liberty City had to call it quits because few cocaine customers wanted crack; they were looking for powder. (It was a different story in South Central L.A., of course. There, crack clearly was the drug of choice.)

But those who deviated from the official line of nationwide crack pandemonium were ignored or chastised. After NIDA officials called a press conference to announce the good news that cocaine use appeared to be leveling off, Senator Lawton Chiles sternly reprimanded the head of NIDA, Charles Schuster. "What kind of message are we sending out there, on the one hand, when we are saying that it is an epidemic, you have your *Newsweek* story, you have *Time* magazine, the *New York Times,* you have everybody in the world saying we have an epidemic, and then along comes NIDA which says that the figures are level, not to worry, and uses numbers that go back to 1982?" Chiles huffed. "Was it really necessary to call a press conference?"

After finishing its review of local field offices, the DEA initially sided with the scientists. "Crack is currently the subject of considerable media attention. The result has been a distortion of the public perception of the extent of crack use as compared to the use of other drugs," the DEA noted in an August 1986 press release. "Crack presently appears to be a secondary rather than primary problem in most areas."

The DEA's findings went virtually unreported; that kind of news was not what the politicians or the media wanted to hear. But when DEA officials changed their tune and began denouncing crack as the scourge of scourges, those comments got plenty of ink and air time.

One truly remarkable thing about the crack scare was the degree to which the national press—particularly the *New York Times*—walked in lockstep with the federal government on the issue, fanning the flames of hysteria and unquestioningly parroting the official line, a media phenomenon usually seen only in times of armed conflict.

While First Lady Nancy Reagan was off on a world antidrug tour in the spring of 1986, the *Times* began almost daily reporting on the "growing public outcry over the spread of crack." Throughout July and August, the *Times* featured leaks from "White House sources" who confided that the president himself was taking this crack issue very seriously. Television news was a steady barrage of hair-raising stories. (Years later, Nancy Reagan would pine for what she called "the steady drumbeat" of antidrug stories produced by the government/media partnership.)

Robert Stutman, chief of the New York DEA office, would later admit that the crack panic of 1986 had been largely his creation. He didn't think the Justice Department was taking the issue seriously enough so "to speed up the process of convincing Washington, I needed to make it a national issue and quickly. I began a lobbying effort and I used the media. Reporters were only too willing to cooperate, because as far as the New York media was concerned, crack was the hottest combat-reporting story to come along since the end of the Vietnam War." By the end of August, Stutman noted, the "groundwork that had been carefully laid through press accounts and my own public appearances" had produced incredible results: *Newsweek* was calling crack "a national scandal" and the New York papers were blaming every crime on crackheads. "Crack was a national menace," Stutman wryly observed in his memoirs, "and 1986 was the Year of Crack."

The PR campaign worked so well that the *New York Times* was reporting a "frenzy in Washington over drugs." The "frenzy" created a bonanza for the media. CBS News' *48 Hours on Crack Street*, which aired in the fall of 1986, is still one of the highest-rated TV documentaries in history. A *New York Times*—CBS News poll done in early September showed that 13 percent of the American public considered drugs America's number-one problem; five months earlier, only 2 percent had felt that way, a remarkable shift in public attitude in a very short time.

For politicians facing critical midterm elections a few months down the road, the crack panic had been heaven-sent. Lashing out at crack and crack dealers was a painless way to get a lot of free publicity, a perfect issue for any politician—almost too perfect. "Crack could not have appeared at a more opportune political moment. After years of dull debates on budget balancing, a 'hot' issue had arrived just in time for a crucial election," professors Craig Reinarman and Harry Levine wrote in the journal *Contemporary Drug Problems*.

In their analysis of media coverage during the crack panic, drug researchers Golub and Hartman found that most of the information appearing in the *New York Times*, *Newsweek*, and *Time* came from two types of sources: cops and politicians. Drug researchers or academics were quoted much less frequently. The *New York Times*, in particular, showed a remarkable aversion to experts: fewer than one in ten *Times* stories about crack carried an expert opinion. "It is interesting to note that the top two sources—law enforcement and public officials—are among those who stand to gain the most from a drug panic," Golub and Hartman observed.

The crack hysteria continued unabated through the elections until something else arose to divert the public's attention. "It was not until the revelations about Lieutenant Colonel Oliver L. North and the Iran-Contra connection toward the close of 1986 that crack media coverage experienced significant declines," drug researcher Inciardi wrote.

Law enforcement seemed to lose interest as quickly as the public, although the crack problem remained as fierce as ever. In October 1986, about a week after the Iran-Contra scandal began, the *L.A. Times* carried a story inside the paper about the LAPD "quietly disbanding" its thirty-two-member anticrack task force in South Central Los Angeles. Chief Darrell Gates told the *Times* that the task force was needed "in other parts of the city" but assured the residents of inner-city L.A. that they were not being abandoned because "conventional law enforcement efforts will continue."

As the Reverend Charles Mims, a South Central minister, observed, "It seems illogical to move this task force from what most everybody grants is the most active rock cocaine area on earth."

Just how quickly the crack problem was forgotten by the Reagan administration was demonstrated when DEA director Jack Lawn—following up on Reagan's pledge to crack down on crack—asked for $44 million to hire an additional 200 agents to focus solely on crack. The Justice Department's budget committee rejected his request. "They didn't treat it like a major issue," a surprised Lawn told *U.S. News and World Report*. The magazine identified the Justice Department official responsible for that decision as Associate Attorney General Stephen S. Trott.

By then, however, Steve Trott had bigger worries than inner-city crackheads: he had Iran-Contra to deal with. Not only was Congress screaming about North and beginning to scrutinize the Justice Department's involvement in the scandal, but Trott was monitoring a pesky Senate investigation into allegations of Contra drug trafficking. Trott viewed this probe with considerable agitation. Oliver North and the FBI were also keenly interested in its progress, North's notebooks reveal.

The administration's concern was understandable. By the spring of 1986, the Contras were almost out of money. While North and his agents were able to replace some of the Contras' lost CIA funding with donations from Saudi Arabia and Taiwan, the amounts were only a fraction of what it took to keep the Contras trained, armed, fed, and fighting. Reagan administration and CIA officials estimated that their monthly food bill alone was between $1 million and $2 million. Some estimated the annual cost of the

Contra war to be $100 million to $200 million.

In March 1986 the White House began lobbying Congress to turn the money spigots back on and put the CIA back in charge, and to overtly provide what it truly cost to fight the Sandinistas: $100 million a year. The early indications were that Congress was willing to consider the matter seriously.

But then Senator John Kerry of Massachusetts and his staff started making noises about the Contras being involved with cocaine. They had been interviewing mercenaries, former Contras, and Cuban-American sympathizers, making trips to Costa Rica and Miami, talking to foreign officials and federal prosecutors. They started pushing for an official investigation of Contra connections to drug traffickers. With the public's crack hysteria at a fever pitch, a more deadly or untimely accusation could not have been made against the Contras, and the Reagan administration knew it.

"The obvious intent of Senator Kerry is to try to orchestrate a series of sensational accusations against the Contras in order to obtain massive press coverage at about the time of the next Contra aid vote," Trott was informed in a May 1986 memo from the Justice Department's congressional liaison. "It will be Senator Kerry's intention to try and twist facts and circumstances in order to unjustifiably defame the Justice Department, the Federal Bureau of Investigation and the Drug Enforcement Administration. Indeed, we have been informed that Senator Kerry will take every opportunity to make the implication or express claim that there is a conspiracy within the Administration to cover up illegal activities of the Contras and their supporters." The fact that Kerry, a former federal prosecutor, had been an outspoken opponent of Contra aid made Reagan administration officials even more distrustful.

By June 1986 Kerry's staff had compiled enough information for the senator to approach his colleagues on the Senate Foreign Relations Committee and seek authorization for an official investigation. According to a transcript of that secret meeting, Kerry warned the assembled senators that some of what he was about to tell them "strains credulity at moments in time and it strained my credulity. When I first heard this stuff, I said 'I do not believe this, you know? It cannot be true.'"

But after talking to many current and former Contras, Kerry said, there was ample evidence to suggest that the Contra leaders were corrupt, dealing in drugs and weapons, using their supply lines to run both, and that some U.S. government officials were protecting them. "We can produce specific law enforcement officials who will tell you that they have been called off drug trafficking investigations because CIA is involved or because it would threaten national security or because the State Department did not want it to happen," Kerry told the committee. "Our sources have suggested in direct testimony that agencies of the United States government may be failing to stop or punish those engaging in these criminal activities because those individuals are otherwise engaged in helping United States foreign policy."

Kerry warned: "When the State Department begins to say that we should not be pursuing the drug trafficking because it would threaten our national security, this committee ought to understand why we are making a decision that it is okay to have drugs coming into this country."

Kerry's chief investigator, Washington, D.C., attorney Jack Blum, detailed some of the charges Kerry's staff had looked into and told the senators that "the narcotics are coming into the United States not by the pound, not by the bag, but by the ton, by the cargo planeload."

And, Kerry added, the leadership of the FDN knew about it and was involved in it. "It is clear that there is a network of drug trafficking through the Contras, and it goes right up to Calero, Mario Calero, Adolfo Calero, Enrique Bermúdez. And we have people who will so testify and who have," he said.

But the idea of diving into such a stinking swamp made some of the other senators squeamish. Senator Joe Biden of Delaware warned that "we should understand that this thing may take us places we would have rather not gone. But we should be aware of it and I think there is no choice but to go there." Senator Nancy Kassebaum of Kansas said she didn't think the committee had the authority to get into the issue. Instead of holding hearings or subpoenaing records, she suggested an alternative approach: "It seems to me that we should be able somehow to really work with the CIA, the DEA. There are channels, it seems to me, that have that ability."

Kerry almost laughed. "Well, let me say that I would be amazed if the CIA were to be very cooperative in this," he said. "We had a meeting with the CIA, Justice Department. . .. CIA jumped out of their seats at some of the stuff that they heard we were thinking about looking at. I mean, they just literally jumped out of their seats. They were amazed that we were going to look at this stuff."

At the request of Foreign Relations Committee chairman Senator Richard Lugar of Indiana, Kerry gave the committee a list of areas that needed investigation. Among them: "The murder of Dr. Hugo Spottiforo [sic] by contras engaged in drug smuggling in Costa Rica"; "An ongoing drug smuggling operation connecting Colombia, Costa Rica, Nicaragua and the United States, in which Contras and American supporters, with the apparent knowledge of Contra leadership, handled the transport of cocaine produced in Colombia, shipped to Costa Rica, process [ed] in the region, transported to airstrips controlled by American supporters of the Contras and Contras, and distributed in the U.S."; and "Allegations [that] have also surfaced regarding other drug smuggling operations involving shrimp boats operating out of Texas, Louisiana and Florida."

The Foreign Relations Committee voted to approve Kerry's request for a behind-the-scenes investigation, but grudgingly, and the Republican staff members on the committee kept the Reagan administration fully informed of what the investigators were unearthing. Those timely tips allowed the Justice Department to head off attempts to obtain certain records, or interview certain witnesses.

When Kerry's investigators sought to interview Contra drug dealer Carlos Cabezas about the San Francisco Frogman case, the Justice Department announced that he couldn't possibly be questioned, since he was going to be a federal witness in an upcoming drug trial. Cabezas said that was "bullshit. I was never a witness in that case. They just didn't want anyone talking to me."

Justice Department official Mark Richard later admitted in a deposition that the department "was seemingly just stonewalling. . .. DEA was saying they won't do it. They didn't want to respond. They didn't want to provide any information." But some information trickled out anyway. And it got awfully close to exposing the Norwin Meneses-Danilo Blandón drug operation.

In the spring of 1986, *San Francisco Examiner* reporter Seth Rosenfeld broke the story of the Frogman case, exposing the Justice Department's bizarre handling of the $36,000 found in Julio Zavala's nightstand in 1983. It also reported Zavala's claim, from a prison cell in Arizona, that he had personally delivered about $500,000 in drug profits to the Contras in Costa Rica. Rosenfeld also unearthed Carlos Cabezas's long-buried testimony about selling Horacio Pereira's cocaine to raise money for the Contra revolution.

Coming on the heels of several Associated Press reports by Robert Parry and Brian Barger about Contra cocaine trafficking in Costa Rica, Rosenfeld's story provided the first hard evidence of a Contra drug ring operating in the United States. The Associated Press picked up the story, and several other newspapers printed it, but cautiously, burying it deep inside the paper and surrounded by plenty of official denials. Nonetheless, the Reagan administration reacted with fury.

San Francisco U.S. attorney Joseph Russoniello mailed a four-page letter to the *Examiner*'s editor, calling Rosenfeld's work "one of the most blatant attempts at contrived news-making we have witnessed in recent years," and suggesting that it was a political stunt to harm the Contras' chances of getting aid from Congress. Though Rosenfeld never made the charge, Russoniello indignantly wrote that "there is absolutely no evidence of CIA involvement." Incredibly, he made the same claim regarding the Contras. "There is no evidence to warrant the insinuation the defendants were connected to the Contras except. . .their own statements offered after the fact of arrest and in a futile attempt to explain away their own conduct."

Russoniello did not disclose that Carlos Cabezas—as a witness for Russoniello's office—had testified about selling dope for the Contras under oath in 1984. Nor did he mention that two high-ranking

UDN-FARN officials had written letters to the court attesting to Zavala's official position in the Contra organization. He also forgot about the 1982 FBI teletypes that named Contra officials Fernando and Troilo Sanchez as the drug ring's suppliers.

In a White Paper subsequently circulated to Congress by the U.S. State Department, Zavala and Cabezas were portrayed as liars and opportunists, and Rosenfeld's story was dismissed as malarkey.

One-upping Russoniello, the State Department claimed that Cabezas and Zavala had never said anything about the Contras until "long after their conviction. . .. [They] did not raise these issues as a defense in their trial or at sentencing but waited two years before making these allegations, which, as indicated, could not be confirmed." Congress was assured that "DEA has examined allegations of linkages between members of the UNO/FARN and suspected traffickers. It has found no information indicating that members of this group have been involved in narcotics trafficking."

But it couldn't have been looking very hard. In April 1986, a UPI story featured an interview with former Contra official Leonardo Zeledon Rodriguez, who said he was beaten, paralyzed, and left for dead because he had denounced Contra involvement in drug dealing. Zeledon specifically identified Norwin Meneses's partner, Troilo Sanchez, as being involved and said Sanchez had been arrested for cocaine trafficking in Costa Rica.

Then, a month before the State Department White Paper was sent to Congress, Rosenfeld had another major front-page story in the *Examiner*, exposing Norwin Meneses's cocaine trafficking network and his involvement with the FDN in San Francisco and Los Angeles. Rosenfeld reported on Meneses's meetings with CIA agents Enrique Bermúdez and Adolfo Calero and other Contra leaders. He reported that the FDN's spokesman in San Francisco had been convicted of cocaine charges. He disclosed Meneses's donations at FDN fund-raisers.

The Meneses story was considerably more damaging to the Contras than the Frogman story because it directly involved the CIA's primary army, the FDN, with a major international cocaine and arms trafficker. Yet it drew no response from the administration, no angry denunciations from federal prosecutors. The State Department's White Paper—which belittled every other allegation of Contra drug trafficking that had surfaced in the past year—studiously avoided any mention of Meneses and his well-connected gang. And it wasn't just the government that was keeping mum.

Though the *Examiner*'s expose appeared just two days before the House of Representatives was scheduled to take up the highly controversial issue of Reagan's $100 million Contra aid package, not a single major newspaper in the country touched the Meneses story. It drew nothing but silence, almost as if it had never appeared.

After Kerry Committee lawyer Jack Blum saw the *Examiner*'s stories, he asked the Justice Department to turn over its files on Meneses and the long-closed Frogman case. He ran into a buzzsaw, he said. "We had a terrible, terrible time getting information about Meneses from the fellow who was the U.S. attorney out there at the time, Russoniello, who was as rabid a right-wing true believer as ever came down the road and who was bound and determined to prevent anyone from learning anything about that case," said Blum. "He and the Justice Department flipped out to prevent us from getting access to people, records, finding anything out about it. It was one of the most frustrating exercises I can ever recall." Blum said Kerry and Russoniello got into "a screaming match" over the telephone.

On October 15, 1986, the controversy over the Frogman files reached Oliver North's ears. "46 boxes of transcripts of SF Frogman case," North wrote in his diary. "Justice never provided."

"It's a burn"

It was time to put the Torres brothers to the test. Providing intelligence and letting the cops follow them around was one thing. But if the investigation was going to progress beyond that level, the Majors had to be sure the two Nicaraguans could take the next, critical step: they had to give someone up.

The brothers chose one of the Colombians they'd named as a source for the black dealers, Jaime Ramos. One day in early September 1986, they told Bell narcotics detective Jerry Guzzetta that Ramos and another man were going to be making a pickup from two dealers that day at an abandoned apartment house in South Central. Around 1:00 P.M., the Majors set up surveillance on the building.

Within an hour, a red Chevy carrying two Latinos and a black Mustang with two black men inside rumbled up the driveway. They chatted briefly and drove off, leading the detectives on an aimless six-hour ride around Los Angeles.

About 8:00 P.M., near the intersection of 159th and Vermont Streets, the cars pulled over, and one of the black men got out and tossed a blue nylon gym bag into the Chevy. The Chevy sped off to a restaurant in Glendale, where the bag was transferred to a white car and driven to a house on Kenwood Avenue.

After a short wait, the Majors burst in, yelling and waving their guns. Jaime Ramos and the blue gym bag were found in the bedroom, the latter stuffed with $120,005 in small bills and $101,000 in cashier's checks. In a closet, they found a suitcase and six more nylon gym bags—with 114 kilos of cocaine inside. At another house a brown suitcase contained 17 kilos. Ramos, who was carrying ID from the Colombian military, and three other Colombians, were arrested.

Two million dollars worth of dope and a quarter million in cash. Not bad for an afternoon's work. It looked as if the Torres brothers were for real. While Detective Tom Gordon and the Majors plotted their next moves, Jerry Guzxetta asked the Torres brothers to show him around South Central. He wanted to know more about this mysterious black dealer they called "Rick," and needed to determine how well the Torreses really knew him.

They drove Guzzetta by a vacant two-story apartment complex off South Avalon Boulevard and told Guzzetta that a cocaine lab was located there. The building was occupied only when the dealers were at work, measuring, testing, and packaging the product. The rest of the time it was vacant, so there would be no suspicious traffic in and out of the dilapidated structure.

Near an entrance ramp to the Harbor Freeway, they pointed out a multistory apartment building, which they said served as one of Rick's distribution centers. Even during the middle of the week there was a lot of activity—young men lounging along the curb, hanging in the doorways—but the Torreses told Guzzetta to come by the place on a Friday or Saturday night if he really wanted to see some action. "There are numerous drug dealers that come to the location to party and there are numerous new vehicles, like Mercedes and Cadillacs, which would be parked on the street at the time of the parties," Guzzetta's report stated.

Swinging by 75th and Figueroa, the brothers pointed out a newly constructed motel, the Freeway

Motor Inn. Rick had bought the land for a million dollars, they told Guzzetta, and had the motel built to his specifications. Rick's mother, Annie, worked the front desk.

Suddenly, everything clicked.

Rick. The Freeway Motor Inn. This was too good to be true, Guzzetta marvelled. The Torres brothers had led him to the legendary Freeway Rick, the elusive crack lord whose existence had only become known to the Majors within the past few months.

While rumors of a super crack dealer had been floating around South Central since late 1985, it wasn't until April 1986 that the police received informant information suggesting that there might be truth behind the rumors. The Majors I squad asked Detective John Edner to see what he could find out, and Edner confirmed that "Freeway Rick" had a name—Ricky Donnell Ross. While Edner couldn't track him down, he did find Freeway Rick's girlfriend, Marilyn Stubblefield, and got her address.

On May 15, 1986, the Majors introduced themselves. According to Stubblefield's brother, Steve, they kicked the door in, ransacked the apartment, arrested Marilyn, and beat Steve with a flashlight, telling him to pass a message along to Freeway Rick that he had some real bad hombres looking for him.

During the search of the Stubblefields' house, which turned up a bit of cocaine, some marijuana, and some empty kilo wrappers, Ross's cousin, George Mauldin, stopped by, and the Majors gave him the same warm welcome they'd given Steve Stubblefield. "Mauldin showed up while we were in the process of searching the house. We had most of the subjects detained in the living room. Mauldin showed up and got into a shoving match with [Detective Robert] Tolmaire after he was told not to interfere with what we were doing," Majors I supervisor Sergeant Robert Sobel recalled. "I believe Tolmaire hit him with a flashlight."

In late August Majors I struck again, rousting two of Ross's cousins, Anthony and Eric Mauldin, on suspicion of possessing stolen firearms. They didn't arrest them. They "tuned them up" and told them to tell Rick to watch his ass. For the first time in his young life, Rick Ross started worrying about the cops.

Years later, Ross surmised that the Torres brothers gave him up because he'd quit buying cocaine from them in 1986, reverting back to an exclusive relationship with Danilo Blandón. "Danilo's price was so low, that the Torres brothers simply could not continue to compete," Ross told police investigators in 1996. In addition, Ross and Blandón had become very close friends. "We got more personal with Danilo. We started to get more like friends than just selling dope. You know, first it was just like businesses, you know, like we'd meet him in the street. Eventually we started goin' over to his house and hanging out with him and stuff like that."

While the Majors I crew worked Ross's organization from the bottom up, Majors II was working it from the top down, trying to zero in on Ross's suppliers. The Ramos bust had been impressive in terms of cocaine and cash seized, but ultimately it had been a dead end. Despite the Torres's claims that the Colombian was one of Ross's big suppliers, no evidence was found linking him to Ross. In later interviews with police, Ross and his partner, Ollie Newell, both specifically denied that any of their suppliers had been arrested in September 1986, and both said they had not lost any money that month as the result of an arrest.

The Ramos case was eventually plea-bargained down to nothing, "and they let a guy who we found with 230 pounds of coke plead to a five-kilo bust and deported him," Gordon said. Later events led him to believe that Ramos had been a CIA operative, but according to court records, his light punishment may have been due to the fact that the Majors had no search warrant when they busted into his house.

Gordon went back to square one.

He started working his way down the list of other men the Torres brothers had identified as supplying Ross. It was not promising. He had only first names—Diego and Stefano—for the other two Colombians. All he knew about Diego was that he was a flashy dresser and a womanizer. Stefano, reportedly a college student, appeared to be working with some Italians who owned a fish processing plant in Riverside.

Neither path seemed to point to South Central L.A., and the Torres brothers seemed vague on details about those two.

The information was much harder on the fourth man, Danilo Blandón, and his ex-cop sidekick, Ronnie Lister. These were the guys who, according to Guzzetta, the Torreses were really afraid of. If they were able to frighten a pair of heavily armed behemoths like the Torreses, they must be something.

On the afternoon of September 17, 1986, Gordon ran the names the Torres brothers had provided through two computer databases, NIN and NADDIS, which collect information from narcotics investigations around the world. They can instantly provide an officer with a criminal history of the suspect, his known associates, aliases, addresses, and the case file numbers of all DEA investigations in which the suspected trafficker's name has turned up.

Running a NIN and NADDIS check is a routine way to begin a narcotics investigation; it lets the investigator know if anyone else is working on the same suspects. If a doper has a NIN or NADDIS file, the protocol dictates that whoever entered the trafficker into the database "owns" that doper from then on. (Narcotics cops frequently complain about officers who enter everyone they run across into the databases, just to claim ownership in case the person one day turns out to be a major trafficker.) NADDIS also alerts the "owner" if someone else accesses the computer file. "The idea is so that we don't end up shooting each other," Gordon explained.

The computer screen brought up Blandón's file first. He was listed as a Class One trafficker, the biggest. He had some addresses in Glendale, which showed up in connection with the Torres brothers. A couple file references from 1983 and 1984 described him as the head of a cocaine distribution organization in Los Angeles. He had only two known associates: Roger Sandino and Norwin Meneses.

Gordon decided to check them out with the computer.

Sandino's criminal history included a 1981 conviction in Hialeah, Florida, for attempting to sell 50,000 Quaalude tablets, while in the country illegally from Nicaragua.

The next name Gordon typed into the NADDIS computer was that of Norwin Meneses. When his file came up, it seemed as if it would never end. On and on it went, screen after screen.

This guy, Gordon observed, was in a league of his own. Another Nicaraguan, he had been in the NADDIS database since 1976—a decade. A Class One trafficker. Twelve aliases. Houses all over the Bay Area. A mansion in Managua. Mentioned in thirty-two DEA investigations, some as far back as 1974. A couple of classified files from 1976. Bringing in cocaine from Colombia, Costa Rica, and Ecuador, sending it to New Orleans, Miami, San Francisco, Los Angeles. Among a host of current associates were a cross-match: Roger Sandino and Danilo Blandón.

The report also revealed that someone else had been in Meneses's NADDIS file recently. The date of the last update was only nineteen days earlier. When Gordon started checking the status of the DEA investigations in Meneses's file, he learned that a number of them were still open. Yet despite all the official interest, Meneses had never been charged with a single thing. He was clean.

Gordon called up Ronald Lister's file next. It was short and sweet. He was an ex-policeman who was under active DEA investigation. The case was so active, Gordon noticed, that Lister's NADDIS file was less than a month old.

Another live wire.

But all the details of that case were classified, the NADDIS report stated. Gordon jotted the name of Lister's "owner" on the bottom of the printout: DEA agent Sandalio "Sandy" Gonzalez, U.S. Embassy, San Jose, Costa Rica—the same agent who "owned" Blandón.

Something didn't add up. Lister lived in Orange County. Blandón lived in San Bernardino County. Why would a Costa Rican DEA agent have them under investigation—unless they'd been down in Costa Rica recently? Then Gordon noticed that Meneses had been under investigation in Costa Rica also.

When Jerry Guzzetta brought the case in the door, he'd been insisting that he'd uncovered an international crack ring. It was sure beginning to look that way.

Gordon picked up the phone and called DEA agent Gonzalez to find out what was going on. The reaction he got was memorable. Gonzalez "goes through the ceiling," Gordon recalled. "He starts screaming that all the phone lines go through Nicaragua and [says] 'You can't call me on an open line and talk about this!' He said he'd fly to Panama and call me from there."

Now the detective was really baffled. So what if the phone lines went through Nicaragua? They probably went through a lot of other places on their way down there and back. What's the big deal?

Gordon didn't hear from Gonzalez for five days, and when the DEA agent finally called back, Gordon was out. Gonzalez asked the cop who answered the phone to take a message for him, which Gordon found on his desk: "Tom, got a call from Sandy Gonzalez of Costa Rica DEA. He said [local DEA agent] will let you read the info. Sandy can not talk on the phone because all the lines are through Nicaragua. Sandy asks that you don't mention anything in your s/w [search warrant affidavit]. It's a burn."

There's those Nicaraguan phone lines again, Gordon saw. And what's this crap about "a burn?" That was cop slang meaning that his investigation had been exposed and the bad guys knew he was investigating them. Gonzalez was telling Gordon not to put any details of his investigation into the sworn statement he had to file with his application for a search warrant because the search would come up dry and he would tip his hand for nothing.

Gordon didn't get that one at all. How the hell could his investigation of Blandón and Lister have been burned? It hadn't even started yet. The case was still sitting on top of his desk. Nobody had done anything except run a couple of computer checks, and no one besides Jerry Guzzetta—and now the DEA—even knew the Majors were working on it.

Besides, how would a DEA agent a couple thousand miles away know that a newborn investigation by the L.A. County Sheriff's Office had been burned?

When Gordon called the DEA office in L.A., as Gonzalez suggested, his uneasiness grew. No, he was told, the Costa Rican DEA office was not investigating Lister and Blandón. But an agent in Riverside, California, just outside L.A., was.

Gordon found that Riverside DKA agent Thomas A. Schrettner was only too happy to help him. Schrettner had his hands full with other investigations, he told Gordon, and his supervisors weren't letting him spend much time on the Blandón case. All he could do for him was pass along what little information he had and let the L.A. detectives take it from there.

In retrospect, Gordon said, that should have set off some alarms. The DEA was notorious among local lawmen for coming in and stealing the best cases, mainly for the publicity value. It almost never handed off a big case to a smaller department. Yet here was a case involving major international cocaine traffickers, crack in the ghettos, multikilo shipments, and hundreds of millions of dollars—the kind of case the DEA exists for—and the agency didn't want to investigate it?

At the time, though, Gordon thought Schrettner's offer was a clever way to get around a bureaucratic roadblock and still bring a dope dealer to justice. And when Schrettner sent Gordon a copy of his report on the investigation, the detective quickly forgot his concerns about the unusual behavior of the federal agents. The case was everything Gordon imagined it would be. It was worldwide.

In late August 1986 Schrettner had debriefed a Nicaraguan informant who'd known Blandón since meeting him in Miami in 1983. The informant admitted hauling cocaine and millions of dollars across the country for Blandón during 1984 and 1985, but said he felt bad about doing it and was planning to turn Danilo in eventually. As a matter of fact, he said, he'd already tried to turn him in once. Before starting a drug-hauling trip to the West Coast, the informant said, he "informed the FBI in Miami of the shipment and route but no action was taken."

Schrettner's informant described the drug ring as consisting of "loosely associated Nicaraguans located principally in the Southern California area. Said groups together purchase/distribute approximately 400 kilos of cocaine per month. . .. Cocaine is often transported to the Blandón organization and then from Blandón to Meneses in San Francisco." For Gordon, that information held special meaning. It provided an independent verification of the accuracy of the information that Guzzetta had gotten from the Torres brothers and the data he'd pulled off NADDIS.

According to Schrettner's informant, Norwin Meneses was involved. Roger Sandino was involved. So were Jacinto Torres, Ronald Lister, and Anastasio Somoza's former bank chairman, Orlando Murillo, who was allegedly laundering Blandón's cash in Miami and serving as a front man in property deals.

The informant told the DEA that Blandón's millions were being driven to Florida in motor homes and taken to the Fontainebleu Apartment Complex between Miami and Sweetwater, "which had been purchased for Blandón by Orlando Murillo."

Murillo was identified as working at the Government Security Bank in Coral Gables, and acting as "the principal money-launderer" for Blandón and Meneses. While Murillo denied those accusations, Blandón admitted under oath that Murillo had handled cash transfers to Panama for him, and put his name on deeds to properties that Blandón owned but he said Murillo didn't know he was handling drug money. However, in an interview with the author Murillo said he'd known Blandón was a drug dealer since early 1981.

According to the Schrettner's informant, the Nicaraguan drug ring was made up of "two separate organizations. The principal group is controlled by Blandón and is the focal point for drug supply and money-laundering for the others. Blandón utilizes the nickname 'Chanchin' [fat pig] and works closely with his wife Chepita in his trafficking. The other group is run by Meneses and is located principally in the San Francisco Bay Area."

The informant filled seven pages with names, dates, cash deliveries, stash house locations, drug storehouses, and business fronts. History has proven that nearly all of the information was accurate. Among those named as members of Blandón's operation were Claudio Villavicencio, aka Ivan Arguellas, Rick Ross's first major supplier. Another one of Blandón's employees, a cocaine distributor named Ivan Torres, was listed as having "political connections with the FDN."

Then Schrettner dropped a real bombshell on Tom Gordon. The DEA wasn't the only federal agency with its eye on Blandón. Just a few days earlier, Schrettner related, he'd met with an FBI agent named Douglas Aukland, whose office was just down the hall from Schrettner's. The FBI agent had told him a story that was dead-bang the same as what had just happened to Schrettner: Aukland was sitting in his office, minding his own business, when a stranger ambled in off the streets with story right out of the movies: A monster drug ring, run by high-ranking Contras, pouring cocaine into the ghettos of Los Angeles, where it was being turned into crack and marketed through crack houses.

According to Aukland's official report of the encounter, the man said the ring was being run by Blandón and Norwin Meneses, who "imported cocaine from Colombia, through Nicaragua, Honduras, and Costa Rica, and was one of the largest distributors of cocaine on the West Coast. A pilot named 'Oklahoma Dick,' who possibly lived in the Tulsa area, regularly flew to South America to obtain this cocaine. . .among the members of Blandón's organization were his wife [Chepita], Orlando Murillo [who routinely laundered cocaine funds for Blandón] and Ronald Lister, a former Laguna Beach, California, police officer who, in September 1985, allegedly drove with Blandón to deliver 100 kilos of cocaine to major suppliers of LA. 'rock houses' in exchange for $2.6 million."

And these weren't your everyday, run-of-the-mill drug dealers, the informant had warned Aukland. They had. . .connections.

"Blandón and Meneses were founding members of the Nicaraguan Democratic Force (FDN), a wing of the Contra movement headed by Calcro, and Blandón and Meneses used their drug profits to help fund the FDN," the FBI report states. "In January 1985, Eden Pastora, another Contra leader, had met with Blandón in Miami in an effort to seek cocaine funds from Blandón to fund Contra operations but no deals were struck during that meeting."

For the first time, the pieces were falling together to form a complete and utterly horrifying picture. All the blanks were filling in. The CIA's secret warriors were not only killing the citizens of Nicaragua, Honduras, and Costa Rica, but if the two federal informants were right, they were using L.A.'s inner city as an addict base from which to draw money to buy their guns. At the same time the Contras was being sold to American citizens as their great, shining hope for freedom and democracy in Latin America, they were providing the demons for the Reagan Administration's hyperbolic War on Drugs at home. The Contras were largely to blame for the birth of the L.A. crack market. They were part of why the L.A. gangs had gotten so powerful and fearsome. And those developments were part of the reason for the Draconian anti-crack laws that came out of Washington that summer, a product of the Congressional stampede whipped up by all the lurid anti-crack propaganda the media was carrying. It was a self-perpetuating cycle, nice and neat, with obvious benefits for both foreign and domestic policy initiatives.

Though FBI agent Douglas Aukland had never worked a dope case in his life, he knew a major crime when he saw one. His informant was believable; he had lots of details, lots of valuable information, things that could only have come from inside.

Aukland checked on Meneses with his counterparts in the San Francisco FBI office and got an earful from agent Donald Hale, who had been following Norwin's exploits in the Bay Area for many frustrating years. No one had been able to catch the drug lord with dope, or get anyone inside of his operation, Aukland learned. But Hale told him he'd recently gotten permission from the U.S. Attorney's Office to build a "historical" case against Meneses, in anticipation of an indictment for running a continuing criminal enterprise.

"Hale said he had three informants willing to testify against Meneses," Aukland related to Justice Department inspectors. And Hale, too, had been hearing stories of drug profits going to Nicaragua, for both the Contras and the Sandinistas.

Convinced that his informant was reliable, Aukland went to his supervisors in Riverside, and to their supervisors in Los Angeles, and pleaded for permission to open an investigation. For a probe this big and this sensitive, Aukland told them, he'd need an "off-site" location from which to operate; he couldn't work on something like this in the FBI office. He also wanted pen registers put on Blandón's phones, and he would need surveillance teams set up at the stash locations the informant had named.

Aukland got permission to start an investigation, along with $10,000 to pay his informant, and that was about it. If he wanted to look into this, his bosses said, fine. And, by the way, you're on your own.

"Aukland said he did not get much help on the case from his supervisors or other agents, who were already spread thin handling other matters," the Justice Department's Inspector General later wrote. Nor was the DEA particularly eager to assist. Except when he could steal an hour or two, Tom Schrettner wasn't allowed to work on the Blandón investigation at all. He was told to keep his eyes on his heroin cases, and let the FBI worry about the Contras.

(In hindsight, the FBI's and DEA's refusal to assign more than one rookie drug agent to a ease this grave seems almost incredible. It is evidence either of amazing incompetence, amazing cowardice, or obstruction of justice.)

After L.A. Deputy Tom Gordon saw the lay of the land, he decided the Majors weren't going to wait for the feds to get off their duffs. His crew could handle these bad boys themselves. But Aukland objected. The Majors should step aside, he told Gordon. This was a federal case, the FBI was on it first, and their informant was in the best position of any to help them take this operation down. But Gordon was adamant. The Majors were going ahead and if the FBI didn't like it, too had. The drug ring was bringing in too much dope for them to sit around and wait until a lone FBI agent nobody wanted to help could pull a federal case together. The Majors didn't need the feds. They could make their own case, (pick up with "He now had. . .)" He now had three independent sources telling the same story. The Majors had enough evidence to obtain a search warrant and bust the whole operation, Gordon told the FBI agent, and that was what they were going to do.

Once it became clear that Gordon was not going to back off, Aukland said, he agreed to help the Majors with their probe. "Agent Aukland thought very highly of LASD Deputy Tom Gordon," police investigators reported later. "He said it was obvious Gordon was very knowledgable and had extensive narcotics experience."

Gordon also had enough bureaucratic experience to know he was heading into some very dangerous political territory. Anyone who read the papers knew what the Contras were and just how strongly the U.S. government felt about them, particularly then. Congress had just approved Reagan's $100 million aid package, and Reagan was getting ready to sign the bill.

If Gordon was going to end up investigating his own government or its proxy army for drug trafficking, he realized, he'd better get someone to sign off on it. He approached Lieutenant Mike Fossey, the acting captain of the bureau, and laid out the whole scenario. "The allegations were that the Contras were selling cocaine throughout the United States and in Southern California in particular," Fossey recalled in a 1996 interview with police investigators. Fossey recalled being told "that the CIA was involved with them, screened them, and protected their operation." He considered Gordon's claims to be "a major accusation," and told the detective to keep after it.

Gordon's immediate supervisor, Sergeant Ed Huffman, decided to brief the commander of the Sheriff's Narcotics Bureau, Captain Robert Wilber, just to make sure the top brass had no qualms about pursuing such a sensitive case. Wilber confirmed that Huffman and his men "believed the suspects were possibly Contras. During this conversation they also said they were reluctant to work with the FBI on the case because the FBI might 'burn' them."

Wilber wasn't sure if Huffman's suspicions were "a political thing," or if the veteran sergeant just felt uncomfortable working with the feds. During this period, Wilber told investigators in 1996, his "guys were not working with the federal agents very well and. . .he pushed his deputies to work with them on this case."

"It was a tough nut to crack," he said, "but I was constantly emphasizing that they had to work with the Feds." Huffman reluctantly agreed to bring the Justice Department's agents aboard. But had the L.A. officers known what was going on right then with the DEA office in Costa Rica, and the agents who were monitoring Meneses, Blandón, and Lister, it's doubtful they would have let the Feds anywhere near their investigation.

"We're going to blow your fucking head off"

Joseph Kelso, an undercover informant for the U.S. Customs Service, slipped quietly into Costa Rica in April 1986 on the trail of an elusive drug dealer. Before his visit was over, he would be chased, beaten, shot at, clubbed, caged, threatened with death, and deported. Kelso's horrific misadventures would earn him a minor place in history, a footnote to one of America's worst scandals—the Iran-Contra affair. His case would be cited by the congressional Iran-Contra committees as one example of how Lieutenant Colonel Oliver North of the National Security Council impeded law enforcement investigations to protect his illegal Contra supply operation from public exposure.

But the four paragraphs about Joe Kelso—buried deep inside the official Iran-Contra report—tell only a fraction of his story. How the former fireman from Golden Valley, Minnesota, happened to attract the stony gaze of Oliver North and his preppy CIA informant, Robert Owen, was never explained by the congressional committee. That omission bothered several Democratic members of the Iran-Contra panel —Congressmen Peter Rodino of New Jersey, Dante Fascell of Florida, Jack Brooks of Texas, and Louis Stokes of Ohio—who decided to write their own report on the matter of Joe Kelso. "The significance of the Kelso section. . .of the Committee report is not entirely clear from the facts as stated," the congressmen complained in a little-read appendix to the final report. "In order to understand why Owen and North were so concerned about Kelso, one must understand just what Kelso was doing and learning in Costa Rica."

What Kelso was doing, records show, was investigating allegations that the same Costa Rican DEA agents watching over Norwin Meneses and Danilo Blandón were trafficking in drugs and funny money. What he was learning was just how hazardous investigating such matters could be.

Kelso, a would-be spy and inveterate thrill seeker, had been working as a CIA informant since the early 1980s, after he befriended a German-born arms dealer in Denver named Heinrich Rupp. Kelso said he was approached by a CIA agent who called himself Bill Chandler and asked to gather information about Rupp's activities. Rupp was selling arms to the Argentines during their short war with Great Britain over the Falkland Islands, and the CIA wanted to know what they were buying. At the CIA's suggestion, Kelso began working for Rupp, posing as a weapons broker seeking arms for Iraqi president Saddam Hussein. The agency figured it would draw some interesting people out of the woodwork, Kelso said, but the mission ended in a minor disaster. The tough-talking twenty-six-year-old was arrested by the U.S. Customs Service and charged with attempting to buy Harpoon missiles—big radar-guided cruise missiles designed to blow up ships—for the Iraqi government. Unbeknownst to Kelso, the men he had been negotiating missile deals with were undercover Customs investigators.

Kelso's arrest presented the CIA with a problem; the agency's charter prohibits it from spying on people inside the United States. To keep the operation under wraps, Kelso was advised by his CIA handlers to keep his mouth shut and plead guilty to the weapons charges, and they promised that his legal problems would go away.

Federal court records lend support to Kelso's story. Despite the severity of his crime—attempting to acquire cruise missiles for an unfriendly foreign government—Kelso was put on probation and promptly vanished. Supplied with a new identity and a matching passport, Kelso went back to work for the federal government, this time as an informant for the very agency that had just arrested him: the U.S. Customs Service. His control officer, Special Agent Larry LaDodge, registered him as an informant under the name of Richard Williams and sent him to Europe to hunt down a fugitive methamphetamine dealer who was wanted in the United States on "numerous, numerous charges," Kelso said.

Kelso followed the dealer's trail around Holland and England, and then LaDodge picked up word that the doper had a ranch in Costa Rica. In mid-1986, Kelso went to find it. He also had another mission to perform while there: "a standing directive" from the CIA to gather intelligence about Robert Vesco, the millionaire swindler and fugitive who lived in Havana and had been flitting through Costa Rica and Nicaragua during the time of the Contra war, always managing to stay one step ahead of the law. Kelso found the methamphetamine dealer's ranch, but not its owner; he "had a house on the Mexican border, so he could hop back and forth between the U.S. border and the Mexican border to continue to conduct his narcotics business."

But Kelso continued his search for Vesco; he found the financier's private jet, he says, parked in a hangar in San Jose. When he checked to see who was paying the storage bills, he learned that it was the owners of a shrimp company called Frigorificos de Puntarenas—the cocaine-dealing CIA front that was helping Oliver North funnel U.S. government money to the Contras.

"A decision was being made up here in the United States whether we were going to put a satellite pinger on it or not," Kelso later testified, "and they chose not to, even though we had such direct access."

While on his Vesco hunt, Kelso started frequenting a bar in San Jose across from the headquarters of a right-wing political group known as Costa Rica Libre. To hear Kelso tell it, the watering hole was like something out of *Casablanca*. It was "where most of the upper echelon of Costa Rica Libre hang out," he testified in a videotaped deposition taken in 1988. "Now the oddity that we found was that the ETA [a left-wing guerrilla group] would hang out there and drink with them. M-19 [a Colombian terrorist group] was there. The German Mafia people were there. And it was just—they were drinking together, and having a good time like they were old buddies."

From the carousing crooks and mercenaries Kelso picked up word that "the [U.S.] Embassy was dirty and the Embassy, you know, had leaks. . .in the visa and passport section. Some 'Ticos'—or Costa Ricans—that were hired there had been manufacturing passports for a long time and selling visas." Kelso said he forwarded a report to the FBI, "and they turned around and shut the embassy down for 45 days. . .while they did a security check." Then Kelso began hearing rumors that DEA agent Robert Nieves, the country attache and Norwin Meneses's control agent, had been taking cocaine from seizures made by the Costa Rican narcotics police. Kelso said the allegations were largely conjecture, but he confided them to Department of Defense officials stationed in Costa Rica. "They just shrugged their shoulders and said, 'Geez, he found out' and, you know, left it at that."

Kelso claimed that Agent LaDodge authorized him to pursue the allegations further. He snooped around Nieves and the other DEA agents working at the embassy for a couple months, enlisting the aid of a Canadian who worked as a U.S. Customs informant, Brian Caldwell. By the end of that summer of 1986, Kelso testified, he had "hard-core, documentable, bring-it-into-court information." Six witnesses—current and former Costa Rican and American government officials—were willing to testify that the DEA agents were skimming cocaine from drug seizures, making counterfeit money, sanitizing intelligence reports to Washington, and protecting cocaine processing labs in northern Costa Rica, including at least two on Contra bases, Kelso testified.

"What did they say to you was their direct knowledge of Mr. Nieves and his activities?" Kelso was asked during his deposition, which was taken by the Washington-based Christie Institute as part of a civil racketeering lawsuit it filed in 1986 against a variety of current and former government officials involved with the Contras.

"Well, they were all reverting back to direct involvement with narcotics smuggling and—if you want to use the word—protection in that situation. And that's the bottom line. I mean, it was all relative to that, with exact situations, exact information, documentation." The witnesses also told Kelso that the Contras were "involved in coke. And these were the people that also reiterated that these are 'bad' Contras. These particular Contras were, in fact, involved in narcotics, and were, in fact, involved in smuggling. Period."

One of Kelso's "witnesses" was Warren W Treece, the deputy director of the Narcotics Department of the Costa Rican Ministry of Public Affairs. Treece, according to a 1989 Costa Rican prosecutor's report, had had a strange experience with one of Nieves's men, Sandy Gonzalez—the DEA agent who'd yelled at L.A. detective Tom Gordon about the phone lines running through Nicaragua. "Information of the existence of a cocaine laboratory in the Nicoya peninsula and another one in Talamanca were transmitted by Treece to an official of the DEA with the surname of Gonzalez, in Costa Rica, but they were not investigated on account of the leak of information from this agent," Costa Rican prosecutor Jorge Chavarria wrote. "As Treece and Kelso affirmed, that person was protecting those laboratories."

Gonzalez and Nieves were never charged with a crime either in Costa Rica or the United States, and the allegations were never proven. In response to a Freedom of Information Act request, the DEA claimed it could find no records about Kelso or his investigation—rather unbelievably, considering that some DEA records concerning Kelso were made-available to Iran-Contra investigators in 1987. The DEA would not allow Gonzalez to be interviewed, and Nieves refused to answer any questions.

Costa Rican attorney Gloria Navas, a former prosecutor and judge who advises the Costa Rican Legislative Assembly on drug issues, strongly believes that the DEA agents stationed in Costa Rica during the Contra war were not what they appeared. "In my opinion, both Nieves and Sandy Gonzalez were connected with the CIA. There is no doubt," insisted Navas. "You aren't going to find hard evidence because these were covert operations. But I did my own investigations and you can't come to any other conclusion." The DEA refused to release any records or answer any questions about the agents' backgrounds or their possible work for other government agencies.

"Sometimes the lines really got blurred when you were working for Oliver North," agreed former Iran-Contra Committee attorney Pam Naughton, who investigated the Justice Department's role in the scandal. "He was using DEA agents in Europe as CIA. I mean, they were doing activities that were way beyond the scope of the DEA. Those were clearly, clearly covert activities."

One of those double-duty DEA agents was James Kible, a Madrid-based agent who visited jailed Medellín cartel boss Jorge Ochoa in Spain in 1984 and attempted to persude him to publicly implicate the Sandinistas in drug trafficking. According to a 1987 story in *The Nation*, Kible "was one of a select group of DEA operatives who conducted secret missions for Oliver North and the National Security Council. On October 24, 1986, Kible and another DEA agent, Victor Oliveira, were apprehended by Spanish customs officials while boarding a plane for Switzerland at Madrid's Barajos Airport. In their possession was a briefcase filled with $5 million in cash. According to Spanish government officials quoted in *El Pais* of May 9, 1987, the money was destined for a bank account in Zurich controlled by North's contra-aid team. Some of the funds were intended as ransom to free American hostages in Lebanon."

At the time DEA agents Nieves and Gonzalez were stationed in Costa Rica, the CIA station chief was Joe Fernandez, a close friend and confidant of North who was later forced to resign from the CIA for his illegal involvement with the Contras. Fernandez was indicted by Iran-Contra prosecutor Lawrence Walsh, but the charges were dropped on November 22, 1989, when the U.S. Attorney General, Richard Thornburgh, refused to declassify records needed in the trial, the first time in history that had ever happened.

Kelso said his witnesses claimed the CIA was involved in the operation of a drug lab at a Contra base near Quepos, Costa Rica. "So, it was my problem, or my duty, to go and respond back to the CIA that this allegation is—is that we got two CIA agents at Quepos at this laboratory participating in drug manufacturing, okay?" Kelso said. He said it was later determined that the men may have been part of North's resupply operation "and not, in fact, CIA personnel."

Kelso claimed to have obtained maps pinpointing the locations of thirty-two cocaine labs in Costa Rica and some personal papers of the DEA agents, including their radio code names—Jaguar 1, 2, and 3. A Customs agent familiar with the case said Kelso stole Agent Nieves's briefcase from his car. In an interview with the author Kelso denied this, but laughed while doing so.

At the end of July 1986, Kelso felt he had enough information about the DEA's activities to report his findings to his control agent, Larry LaDodge, and to the U.S. military's Southern Command headquarters in Panama "to the CIA officer there. It was hand-carried, on a microcassette." The allegations of counterfeiting were sent to the Secret Service.

William Rosenblatt, then head of enforcement for U.S. Customs, confirmed in a deposition that "Mr. LaDodge had received communications from one of these two gentlemen by telephone that they had uncovered a counterfeit operation in Costa Rica, and there was other information that the informants wanted to provide. . .but they did not feel comfortable doing it over the phone." That "other" information, Rosenblatt said in once-secret testimony to Congress, concerned "narcotics allegations relative to the Drug Enforcement Administration." Rosenblatt said the allegations were taken seriously in Washington: the Customs Service "coordinated with the Secret Service as well as our Customs attache in Panama, who is responsible also for the country of Costa Rica. Arrangements were made for one of the New Orleans agents to travel through Miami down to Costa Rica to meet up with the informants and the Secret Service, so that we could provide firsthand information to the Secret Service about this alleged counterfeit money operation."

The New Orleans agent, Douglas Lee Knochenberger, met with Kelso and Caldwell in early August "ostensibly to debrief them and also to pay them the money that Mr. LaDodge felt was owed to them," Rosenblatt testified. "He did not check in with the Embassy. He immediately met with the informant, paid the informant and to some extent debriefed the informant."

According to the Iran-Contra committee minority report, Kelso and Caldwell "told Customs that the DEA agents in Costa Rica knew the location of drug laboratories and had been paid to conceal the location of narcotics." Kelso said he gave Knochenberger maps showing the locations of the drug labs, cassette tapes of interviews, and other documents. But Knochenberger—whom Kelso called a "newbie" and Rosenblatt termed "relatively inexperienced"—became nervous, insisting that he had to report the information to DEA attache Nieves at the embassy.

Kelso couldn't believe his ears. "If we had this rumor and either qualified it or disqualified it, going and telling this person that you're doing research on him, qualifying it or disqualifying it, would be stupid," Kelso testified, "because if he is doing it, he would normally head over the hill or protect himself well enough that no one could touch him." Kelso said Knochenberger "had explicit orders not to say anything to Nieves. . .to keep his mouth shut, go in there, tell him he found nothing, that it was a waste of time, get back on the airplane immediately with all the documentation and get the hell out of town."

The agent's response, Kelso said, was: "'Wow, that's not State Department policy. I can't do that. I'm going to get in trouble.'" Knochenberger made a beeline for the U.S. embassy and spilled everything to the very DEA agents Kelso and Caldwell had just fingered.

"Both the Customs representative from our Panama office, as well as the Customs agent from LaDodge's office sat down with the DEA personnel [deleted] and related, summarized, however you want to, discussed what the informant had said, to include the allegations of corruption by DEA officials [deleted]," Rosenblatt confirmed.

Iran-Contra lawyer Pam Naughton, who was questioning Rosenblatt, was incredulous. "Did they do that on your instructions, or was that their own idea to tell the DEA about the allegations of corruption in their midst?" she asked.

"That was their idea," Rosenblatt insisted. "They didn't do that on my instructions. I didn't even know about this until after they came back." He agreed that "one may believe it is not prudent to tell the very same office what the allegations were. . .and relate those allegations to them," but pointed out that it was "part of the agreements that we have-that we fill in DEA about narcotics information."

The next day, while Kelso and Brian Caldwell were lounging in their rooms at the Irazu Hotel in San Jose, the DEA called the Costa Rican national narcotics police and asked them to arrest the two foreigners on the grounds that they were impersonating narcotics agents. One of Nieves's subordinates, Kelso said, "came stomping in there and demanding to see Caldwell and the stuff. . .and he saw a couple rolled up maps and he started yelling, you know, 'Are those some of those goddamned maps,' you know, 'floating around here?' And, 'We want those,' and started taking them." The DEA agent, accompanied by two Costa Rican national police agents, "started confiscating everything in the room, tried to do notebooks, things like that, my briefcase."

Kelso and Caldwell were hustled off to a construction warehouse owned by the Costa Rican electric company, where they were shoved around and interrogated about whom they were working for. When Kelso told of finding Robert Vesco's airplane, he said, the DEA agent became "extremely nervous. . .then he says, 'Get in the fucking car,' so we go in there and we go down to the OIJ [the Costa Rican national police] main office, right up to the director's office there."

Soon, Kelso said, DEA agent Nieves "comes in and he starts screaming, 'I'm going to blow your fucking ass away!' and 'You son-of-a-bitch!' and on and on and on. . .he's short-tempered anyway. I said, 'All you are is a motherfucking Puerto Rican.' And that—that's the key word that makes him trip off, okay? And I mean, he gets psychotic and just goes bananas."

According to Kelso, Nieves told him, "'You're a dead son-of-a-bitch.' You know? And he must have repeated, you know, 'We're going to blow your fucking head off!' about 50 times. You know? I mean, he was furious, absolutely out of control." Kelso's story was confirmed by Costa Rican police officials who were questioned during the Costa Rican government's investigation of the incident.

According to the Costa Rican paper *La Nacion*, which asked Nieves about Kelso in 1986, "Nieves did not disguise his anger about the fact that the U.S. Customs was investigating a matter that is a priority task for the DEA."

Kelso was taken to the U.S. embassy, where he said the DEA agents began copying the documents in his briefcase until "a person that I never saw before came in, sat down at one of the desks, very nice suit, well dressed, which later I learned, that's Rob Owen." What Kelso didn't know was that Rob Owen was the eyes and ears of both the CIA and Oliver North on the Southern Front. Kelso testified that after Owen got a look at the documents seized from the hotel room, he ordered the DEA agents to stop making copies, whisked Kelso out of the embassy, and dropped him back at his hotel.

Owen, in a deposition, admitted being in Costa Rica during August 1986, right around the time Kelso was abducted, but he denied meeting him.

Shaken, Kelso ran to Costa Rican narcotics investigator Warren Treece's house and hid out. The next day, he said, Nieves called him there and ordered him back to the embassy. Kelso refused, and Nieves told him he would be at Treece's house in five minutes.

"I said, 'Fuck you, try to find me,' and I slammed the phone down."

And then he ran for his life.

Treece and Alexander Z. MeNulty, the chief of security for Costa Rican president Oscar Arias, took Kelso "up in the jungle" and dropped him off, and then returned to San Jose to pick up weapons and one of the presidential security cars.

Kelso said he had been instructed by his handlers to rendezvous at CIA operative John Hull's ranch if he got into trouble, because Hull had an airstrip where he could make a speedy getaway. In the dead of night, Treece and MeNulty drove Kelso north to Hull's well-guarded compound and dropped him off with a dentist friend of Hull's, where he spent the night. The dentist drove Kelso onto Hull's ranch the next day.

Rob Owen later recounted the meeting in a deposition: "This guy [Kelso] came in and said, 'Look, I have been told that you are the one guy I should contact. There is a real problem here. I think the DEA people are trying to kill me. I am convinced that they were involved in narcotics trafficking and looking the other way. And I don't know who else to turn to.'"

Hull, in an interview, confirmed that. He wrote a report on Kelso's visit the next day, noting that Kelso claimed "[name deleted] of the U.S.A.-D.E.A. has maps of coke lab locations in Costa Rica but is protecting them. One large lab located in southern Nicoya. And another in Talamanca region."

While Kelso talked, Hull carefully examined the stranger's passport, which bore the name Richard Williams and "showed immigration stamps for several Kuropean and Mideast countries."

Though Kelso clearly seemed in fear for his life, Hull—who'd been accused repeatedly of facilitating Contra drug trafficking—was wary, thinking Kelso might have been sent by the Sandinistas to set him up on drug charges. "Not being known for wisdom or prudence, but having just heard that the USA-DEA team had checked in their white hats for black ones. . .I decided to call the local Rural Guard and the local DIS Dept. internal security," Hull wrote in his August 9, 1986, report of Kelso's visit. He put Kelso in his guest house, under guard, until he could figure out what to do with him.

About three in the morning, Kelso said, he was jolted out of bed by automatic rifle fire. Peering into the darkness, he saw a yard full of Costa Rican Rural Guards armed with AK-47 assault rifles and heard "this guy yelling something in Spanish." Kelso, wearing only his undershorts, was pulled out of the guest house and, at gunpoint, marched across the yard toward Hull's house.

Suddenly, Kelso felt his head explode. One of his captors bashed him from behind with the butt of his assault rifle, "and I reach up there and fucking draw blood, and I turned around and, you know, this guy's serious, you know?"

Kelso was pushed forward again, "and then halfway up, he hits me again and knocks me right down to the ground."

Hull watched the impromptu parade from his porch with growing concern. "It was a very, very obvious attempt to get him to resist so they could shoot him," he recalled. "This colonel came running up and pointing his finger at me, saying, 'The [U.S.] Embassy says he's extremely dangerous. It's better I kill him than he kill me.'"

According to the Costa Rican prosecutor's report, the embassy official who issued those dire warnings was DEA agent Nieves. Hull's report stated that the embassy told the Rural Guard colonel that Kelso "should be shot if he resisted arrest."

The Contras on Hull's ranch surrounded the Costa Rican intelligence agents who were beating Kelso, Hull said, and pulled out 12-gauge riot guns, which they leveled at the Costa Ricans. "All their guns were down and all the Contra guys were ready to pull the trigger," Kelso said. The Contras reminded Hull of "Alabama guard dogs that had been told to bite a black and couldn't decide which one."

Hull ran down and broke up the standoff, permitting the Rural Guard to take Kelso away. The woozy Customs informant was tossed into the back of an Isuzu Trooper and taken to a Rural Guard facility in San Jose, where, he said, he was thrown "into this little dog—well, it's, you know, a cell, but it's like a dog cage."

U.S. Ambassador Lewis Tambs, at Nieves's request, asked the Costa Rican government to deport Kelso for using a false passport to enter the country, he said. After several hours in the cage, Kelso was put aboard the next plane out of the country.

Hull typed out a detailed letter on Kelso's visit and gave it to CIA informant Rob Owen, telling him to deliver it to Oliver North once he got back to Washington. Owen testified that "I went in to talk to North and gave him a copy of the letter and said, 'I am concerned because I don't know whether Hull is being set up, whether there is a problem with the DEA, or what is going on.'"

In his letter, Hull wrote North: "Since you are in Wash[ington] you might check these things out. If the DEA people are in the drug business it should be stopped."

Hull eventually came to believe Kelso was telling the truth about his investigation: "He was giving me locations of cocaine labs in Costa Rica and who they belonged to and then a week later one of them was busted and it was right where he said it was."

By the time Kelso arrived back in Denver, bells were ringing all over Washington. Customs enforcement chief Rosenblatt received a blistering cable from Ambassador Tambs, chewing him out for "having informants in Costa Rica without the Embassy knowing about it. . .. I apologized profusely that it happened and I assured him that these informants had not gone down there with our approval, and if they had, we would have definitely let the Embassy or the Ambassador know about it and all I was doing there for about 15 minutes was apologizing profusely, assuring them it wouldn't happen again."

Back in Denver, Kelso met with his lawyer, former federal prosecutor Rod Snow, and told him he feared for his safety. He asked Snow to hold onto the evidence he'd gathered in Costa Rica—tapes of interviews he'd done with U.S. intelligence agents and Costa Rican officials. Snow listened to them and called U.S. Attorney Bruce Black, urging him to do the same. But before he turned the tapes over, Snow wanted Black to promise that the tapes would not wind up in Washington because Kelso was afraid they would fall into the "wrong hands."

Black agreed, but the tapes ended up there anyway.

After listening to Kelso's tapes, Black called the special agent in charge of the Denver office of U.S. Customs, Gary Hilberry, and had him listen. Hilberry immediately phoned Washington, telling Rosenblatt that "based on the contents that he was very concerned, that one could almost make a case from these conversations, that there was some connection between Kelso and some member of the intelligence community," Rosenblatt testified. "I have known Gary Hilberry a very long time. He is now our special agent in charge of New York. He is not an alarmist. . .therefore, I called Colonel North."

Asked why he would call the National Security Council about a Customs agent's investigation of the DEA, Rosenblatt bluntly admitted that he was covering the Reagan administration's ass.

"My objective was to save any potential embarrassment to the goveminent," he testified. "My main purpose was to find out whether Kelso/Williams was working with the intelligence community because of the tapes that Gary Hilberry had, and the potential for embarrassment."

Rosenblatt "went through the whole story with [North] from beginning to end. The Costa Rica business." He told North that Kelso had tapes to back up his charges "and was threatening to go to the media about his connection to the intelligence community." It was a threat to be reckoned with. As Rob Owen discovered after talking to Kelso's control agent, Larry LaDodge, Kelso really was who he claimed to be. "He validated the claim that Kelso was an asset," Owen testified. LaDodge told him that "Kelso said he was working for the CIA. He passed the polygraph. LaDodge started using him as an asset."

Customs official Rosenblatt testified that North knew all about the Kelso affair and didn't seem eager to talk about it over the phone. "He indicated he was extremely busy, but he was going to have Rob Owen call me. . .. It was clear to me that he wanted me to deal with Rob Owen on this matter." When Owen came around, Rosenblatt testified, he assumed the young man was on North's staff at the National Security Council. He told Owen about the tapes—which he numbered at "around six or seven"—and agreed to let Owen listen to them "and see if he recognized any voices. . .we were looking to use the NSC as a vehicle to determine whether or not the accusations made by Kelso/Williams were accurate."

Owen confirmed that he picked up the tapes from Customs in Washington and listened to some of them. The tapes he heard were of Customs agents debriefing Kelso's chief informant, Warren Treece, Owen said. "There was some thought that, at least according to Mr. Treece, that the Drug Enforcement

Administration officials may have been on the take," he remembered. "There had been accusations made about Drug Enforcement Agency officials being involved in receiving funds to look the other way regarding narcotics trafficking in Costa Rica."

Rosenblatt said he washed his hands of the matter after he turned the tapes over to Owen, and he never heard another word about it. "I assumed that by not hearing from Owen or Colonel North, they were not coming up with anything positive," he said.

The congressmen on the Iran-Contra panel were stunned by Rosenblatt's actions. "He gave his only copy of tape recordings made by an undercover source to a total stranger," the congressmen complained. "Owen did not tell Rosenblatt he worked for North or the CIA. He told him he worked for a private organization. Not surprisingly, Owen never returned the tape recordings. Instead, he made two trips to Costa Rica to meet with the DEA agents."

Owen said his last trip to Costa Rica to meet the DEA agents occurred in October 1986. Within a day or two of the Iran-Contra scandal breaking, Owen threw the Kelso tapes away. "They were thrown out, along with a bunch of other stuff, when I moved," he testified. They were never seen again.

When the Iran-Contra committees heard about the Kelso investigation, they asked the DEA to provide them with the records of the case. "It was like pulling teeth out of Justice to get any cooperation, and we finally had to threaten everything imaginable to get to these documents," Iran-Contra committee attorney Naughton said. "Finally they caved in. And we had to go over to Justice to look at them in their secure area, on the sixth floor or wherever it is, and it reminded me of *Get Smart*—remember all those doors you had to go through? That's how it was. We finally get to the situation room and they had turned down the heat to about 30 degrees so that we wouldn't stay long. So they said, 'Here are the documents'—and they're all in Spanish."

Naughton said that, to her knowledge, the DEA never investigated the drug trafficking allegations against the Costa Rican agents. DEA director Jack Lawn told Congress in 1987 he'd never heard of the case. The U.S. Customs Service also quit looking. Customs agent Hilberry said the DEA allegations were "turned over to the DEA."

Two Costa Rican intelligence officers were eventually charged with illegally arresting Kelso, but the only American agent to go to jail as a result of the investigation was Joe Kelso. In January 1987 he was charged with violating his probation on his 1983 weapons charge—by being in Costa Rica—even though the Customs Service had been sending him all over the world for four years.

During Kelso's probation hearing both Snow and U.S. Attorney Bruce Black vouched for his credibility. "Some of what he said has totally checked out to the best of my ability to corroborate it, but some is inherently unverifiable," Black told U.S. District Judge Sherman Finesilver. He confirmed that "Kelso worked around the world under another name for several U.S. Customs Service operations."

Argued Snow: "By his belief, and quite frankly mine, he is working for the government. I believe and the U.S. Attorney believes there is a fairly high percentage of truth to what he is saying."

But Judge Finesilver wasn't interested. He ordered Kelso to prison for two years for violating his probation, "and didn't discuss the matter further," a newspaper report stated.

Kelso served his time quietly at Pleasanton federal prison camp in California and later became involved in a short-lived attempt to help an Italian financier buy MGM studios in Hollywood.

The target of Kelso's investigation, DEA agent Robert Nieves, went on to have a long and illustrious career at the DEA, rising to great heights. Me became head of cocaine investigations in Washington, then chief of major investigations, and at the time of his retirement in late 1995, he was serving as chief of the DEA's International Division. After his retirement, Nieves went to work for a body armor manufacturing company in Virginia—Guardian Technologies. That company is owned by Oliver North, and the CIA's former chief of station in Costa Rica, Joe Fernandez.

"We bust our ass and the government's involved"

On the morning of October 23, 1986, Sergeant Tom Gordon did precisely what Costa Rican DEA agent Sandy Gonzalez had told him not to do: he drove down to L.A. County Municipal Court, went before a judge, and applied for a warrant to search the Nicaraguans' drug operation. His twenty-one-page sworn statement described a "large scale cocaine distributing organization" made up of "well over 100 persons storing, transporting and distributing cocaine for Danilo Blandón."

Gordon linked up Blandón with Freeway Rick's first major drug supplier, Ivan Arguellas, exposing the Contra drug pipeline into South Central. Blandón, he wrote, "has up to 20 kilos of cocaine per week delivered to Arguellas who, in turn, sells mainly to blacks living in the south central Los Angeles area." Another South Central distribution point was a bar at Central Avenue and Adams Street, which Blandón uses "to distribute as much as 10 kilos of cocaine per week," the affidavit said.

And the detective didn't pull any punches when it came to the Contras. "Danilo Blandón is from Nicaragua, a Central American country which has been at civil war for several years," Gordon wrote. "One side of this civil war is the 'Contra army.' Informant] #2 stated to your affiant that Blandón is a 'Contra' sympathizer and a founder of the 'Kronte [sic] Demoeratica Nicaragua' [FDN] an organization that assists the Contra movement with arms and money. The money and arms generated by this organization comes through the sale of cocaine."

Gordon listed more than a dozen locations across southern California where Blandón and his cohorts were storing drugs and cash. He traced the money trail from Los Angeles across the country, writing that the "monies gained from the sales of cocaine are transported to Florida and laundered thru Orlando Murillo who is a high ranking officer of a chain of banks in Florida named Government Securities Corporation. From this bank the monies are filtered to the Contra rebels to buy arms in the war in Nicaragua."

Gordon's sworn statement would prove to be a remarkably accurate portrait of the drug ring. A decade later Blandón would admit under oath that he was one of the founders of the FDN, and that nearly all of the people and locations Gordon named in his warrant were part of his drug operation. Blandón would also admit sending money to Orlando Murillo, who did, in fact, work for Government Securities Corporation, a chain of securities brokerages in southern Florida that went belly-up in 1987 amid federal allegations of fraud. The one accusation Blandón denied was that his father—Julio Blandón, the ex-slumlord—stored cocaine in his San Gabriel apartment.

Gordon's affidavit was pure political dynamite. At the time, the Contras were the hottest story in the country. Less than three weeks earlier, drug smuggler Barry Seal's old C-123K cargo plane had been shot out of the sky over Nicaragua, carrying a full load of weapons. Since then, new revelations about illegal U.S. goverment involvement in the Contra war had been appearing in the media almost daily. The White House, the State Department, and the CIA had immediately denied that the cargo plane—which was part of Oliver North's resupply operation—had any connections to the government, but those lies began unraveling the moment Sandinista patrols got back from the site of the smoldering wreck.

"The Sandinistas announced that the flight crew had not been flying with what we call in the business 'clean pockets,'" said Alan Fiers, the CIA officer then in charge of the Contra program. "They had all sorts of pocket litter that identified and connected them back to Ilopango. They had the cards of some of the NHAO—one particular NHAO employee, flight logs, essentially enough information so that the Sandinistas could put together, and did in fact, a lot of information relative to the connections of that flight."

If that wasn't enough, the Sandinistas also had one slightly battered cargo kicker named Eugene Hasenfus, the only crew member carrying a parachute. Hasenfus, who'd worked for the CIA's Air America airline during the agency's secret war in Laos, told the press that he was again working for the CIA—at a time when the agency was allegedly not involved with the Contras. Hasenfus identified his CIA handlers as Ramon Medina, the alias of the Cuban terrorist and suspected drug trafficker Luis Posada Carriles, and Max Gómez, an alias of former CIA agent Felix Rodriguez. Hasenfus also exposed the secret Contra air base at Ilopango.

Aside from the legal problems Hasenfus presented for the administration, he was an even bigger political headache—living proof that the CIA and the White House had been lying about U.S. involvement with the Contras. The burgeoning scandal threatened to derail the administration's hard-fought efforts to win congressional approval for $100 million the CIA needed to restart the Contra war.

When the cargo plane went down, the new aid bill was in the final stages of passage through Congress. Reagan administration officials scrambled to keep a lid on the incident, sending out false press advisories, booking administration spokesmen on political talk shows to spread the official line, and sending CIA officials to Capitol Hill to give false testimony to bewildered congressional committees. The disinformation campaign, combined with a strange reluctance by the congressional intelligence committees to delve too deeply into the matter, worked long enough to get the $100 million aid bill through Congress.

But now, with the legislation sitting on Reagan's desk awaiting his signature, a respected Los Angeles narcotics detective was formally accusing the Contras in court of raising money by selling cocaine to black Americans. It is not difficult to imagine what would have happened to the Contra project had that information gotten out. Unlike the earlier allegations of Contra drug dealing that had appeared sporadically in the press over the past ten months, Gordon's charges would not be easy for the law-and-order Reagan administration to dismiss as the fantasies of a Sandinista sympathizer or a convicted drug dealer. This time, the accusations were coming from the police—under oath—in black and white.

Gordon's affidavit was persuasive enough for Municipal Court judge Glenette Blackwell. She gave the detective his search warrant.

The next day, October 24, Gordon conducted a lengthy preraid briefing at the sheriff's training center, handing out raid plans, briefing booklets, raid assignments, and radio frequencies, and locating command centers.

As drug raids went, this was going to be a big one. "On Monday, October 27, 1986, a 30-day investigation will culminate by executing a search warrant that will be served at fourteen locations in Los Angeles, Orange and San Bernardino Counties," the briefing book stated. It would involve more than forty-five agents from the Majors, the DEA, the IRS, the ATF, the San Bernardino County sheriff, and Bell police. Gordon split the officers into seven groups, each responsible for searching two locations.

Gordon's briefing left no doubts about who and what the police were up against: "The investigation centers around a male Nicaraguan named Danilo Blandón. The Blandón organization is believed to be moving hundreds of kilos of cocaine a month in the Southern California area and the money is laundered through a variety of business fronts and then sent to Florida where the money goes toward the purchase of arms to aid the 'Contra' rebels fighting the civil war in Nicaragua."

Gordon also mentioned that the drug ring involved a crooked ex-cop from Laguna Beach, Ronald Lister, who was known to have access to large quantities of heavy weapons. He was to be considered extremely dangerous.

Several of the officers in attendance distinctly recalled being warned that the federal government was unhappy that the Majors were going ahead with the raids. Deputy William Wolfbrandt said Gordon reported that he had "been contacted by someone from the government who told him not to do the warrant. . .. I thought it was pretty bitchin' just going out and doing it anyhow."

Lieutenant Mike Fossey, the Majors' intelligence officer, said it "was before the warrant [was served] that we were forewarned that there may be a CIA link"; information had "filtered down" that the "CIA and the Contras were dealing in arms and cocaine for Nicaragua."

According to Deputy Virgil Bartlett, the general belief among the police that day was that "the U.S. government backed the operation. . .. The government was bringing drugs into the country and shipping weapons back out." Bartlett said he was informed that Ronald Lister "had done jobs for the federal government, and we weren't so sure he hadn't done hits for them." (No evidence has surfaced linking Lister to murder.)

Jerry Guzzetta, who was assigned to search Blandón's mountain cabin near Big Bear ski resort, glanced around the briefing room to see which federal agents were there. To his surprise, they were not the ones he'd been working with during the investigation. Guzzetta thought it "strange that federal agents from the Riverside DEA and FBI offices initially worked with the L.A. Sheriff's Narcotics investigators on the Blandón case, but Los Angeles DEA and FBI agents were present at the briefing and later during the warrant execution."

Around 7:00 A.M. on Monday, October 27, the raid teams gathered at their designated staging areas, taking their last few gulps of coffee and strapping on their bulletproof raid vests. As they methodically went through their final preparations, coincidentally, another kind of ritual was unfolding back in Washington.

That day Ronald Reagan would triumphantly sign his name to the bill authorizing the CIA to spend $100 million on the Contras. It was now official. After a two-year absence, the CIA was back in the Contra business.

As Danilo Blandón's neighbors stepped onto their porches to retrieve that morning's edition of the *L.A. Times*—the front page was headlined "Contras Seek Quick Results on Two Fronts"—four big cars roared up to Blandón's elegant home and disgorged eleven heavily armed men wearing flak jackets. They quickly surrounded the house and banged on the front door, hollering that they had a warrant. "We'd certainly never seen the likes of it," one elderly neighbor said. "It was the talk of the neighborhood for quite some time, I can tell you. And they seemed like such a nice family. They had a maid, and the two little girls were so cute."

Chepita Blandón, wearing a pink housecoat, sleepily opened the door, and Deputy Dan Gainer of Majors II thrust Gordon's warrant in her face. The raid team shouldered her aside and fanned out through the two-story house, emptying drawers and closets. Blandón, wearing a pair of green shorts and a brown shirt, stood silently by his ten-year-old daughter and watched the agents rummage around. The maid, Rosa Garcia, cuddled the Blandóns' twenty-one-month-old daughter.

Jerry Guzzetta brought in a drug-sniffing dog, and the hound alerted in the master bedroom and the rec room. A search of the bedroom turned up an envelope with a gram of cocaine in it, a maroon briefcase with three-tenths of a gram of cocaine inside, an AR-15 assault rifle with five full magazines of ammunition, a Mossberg 12-gauge shotgun with three boxes of shells, $163, and some assorted papers.

Out in the detached recreation room, which had a full bar and pool table overlooking the golf course, Deputy Wolfbrandt found an envelope behind the bar with a folded $10 bill inside; the bill held one and a half grams of cocaine. He also found "pay-owe" sheets—records of drug transactions.

It wasn't much, but a couple grams of coke and some pay-owes were all the detectives needed to justify an arrest for possession for sale of a controlled substance. They slapped handcuffs on both Blandón and his wife, read them their rights, and marched them out to the waiting cars for a trip to the San Bernardino County Sheriff's station—and jail.

"As the suspects were being taken from the location to be booked," the police report said, "suspect #1 [Danilo Blandón] spontaneously stated, 'The cocaine is mine. The cocaine is mine. It's mine.'"

Now the cops had a confession to go with the coke. The drug kingpin was as good as convicted.

Across town, however, the other raid teams were not doing as well. Location after location was coming up dry. Some of the houses looked as if they had been scrubbed clean. One officer reported finding an empty safe with a garden hose running into it. Another said an occupant told him he'd been expecting him for an hour.

DEA agent I lector Berrellez—who would later discover evidence of CIA drug trafficking in Mexico—was one of the L.A. agents assigned to the Blandón raids. He accompanied the team that hit Roberto Aguilar's house, who was reputed to be Blandón's chemist. "There was a safe at the house which the occupants were told to open," Berrellez told Justice Department inspectors. Inside was "a box containing photographs, and ledgers typical of those that big drug dealers keep. . .the photographs were of men in military uniforms, and military operations." The agent specifically recalled seeing "a photograph of a man in an aviator's flight suit standing before a warplane and holding an automatic weapon."

Berrellez said the people in Aguilar's house told the police they knew the search was coming and had been expecting the raid team. They didn't say how they knew, Berrellez said, but he'd heard the CIA may have monitored the Blandón case through the DEA's El Paso Intelligence Center—EPIC—from which the CIA, among other agencies, draws sensitive narcotics intelligence.

The word started circulating among the raiders. Something was fucked. "We're just going through the motions," one of the officers griped.

Down the coast in Orange County, Detective Bobby Juarez and his team were banging on Ronald Lister's door in Mission Viejo. Receiving no reply, they kicked it open. The house was uninhabited, but it wasn't empty. The detectives came out carrying bags of records, card files, video monitors, and photographs, which they tossed in a patrol car. A neighbor wandered over and told them that the Listers didn't live there anymore. They'd moved recently to an even bigger house a couple miles away. "Male and female Latins were now living at the Lagarto address," the neighbor reported. Some of the seized paperwork showed the neighbor was right: there were letters, video rental receipts, and bank records for someone named Aparicio Moreno and his wife, Aura.

The discovery of those documents corroborated another accusation that the DEA informant inside Blandón's ring had made: that Aparicio Moreno, a Colombian, was involved in the Contra drug operation. The informant described Moreno as a cocaine supplier and money launderer to both Norwin Meneses's San Francisco-based branch and Blandón's network in L.A., and said Moreno, his wife, and his family had hauled millions in drug profits to Miami for the two Nicaraguans, hidden in an innocuous-looking motor home.

Blandón would later admit that Moreno had supplied him with "so many" thousands of kilos of cocaine in 1984 and 1985 that he couldn't put an exact number on them. He said he was introduced to Moreno by Norwin Meneses and worked with the Colombian until 1987. It is likely that Meneses turned Blandón over to Moreno when Meneses moved to Costa Rica to work as a DEA informant. Ronald Lister would tell police in 1996 that Moreno was "affiliated with [the] FDN," and Blandón strongly suggested the same thing during his interviews with the CIA Inspector Ceneral's Office.

Blandón claimed that Moreno arranged "at least one 1-ton delivery that was delivered by air via Oklahoma," a summary of his CIA interview states. Blandón said "he and his associates thought the plane might be connected with the CIA because someone had placed a small FDN sticker somewhere on the airplane. This was just a rumor though."

It was a rumor that the CIA Inspector General apparently never bothered investigating, as there is no further mention of Aparicio Moreno in the entire declassified report. But considering what else is known about the mysterious Colombian, the omission is not surprising. Moreno had an affinity for dealing dope to people with CIA connections.

Records show DEA agent Celerino Castillo III ran across Aparicio Moreno's trail in Guatemala in 1988 while investigating allegations of drug trafficking by a Guatemalan CIA agent, Julio Roberto Alpirez. A high-ranking officer in the Guatemalan military and a fixture on the CIA's payroll there, Colonel Alpirez was accused by the president's Foreign Intelligence Oversight Board in 1996 of covering up the murder of an American innkeeper in Guatemala, Michael Devine.

Castillo said he discovered that Aparicio Moreno was both supplying Colonel Alpirez with cocaine and selling drugs for Alpirez that had been seized by the Guatemalan military. Castillo believes Devine was killed by Guatemalan soldiers after he had discovered that the military was moving cocaine, a theory that has never been proven.

DEA files obtained under the Freedom of Information Act confirmed that Castillo reported Moreno's activities in Guatemala to the DEA, but the agency censored all of the information in his reports. From the records, it appears Moreno was also working as a DEA informant, in addition to his other activities.

After securing Moreno's residence, Juarez and his crew raced over to Lister's new house and performed a "soft knock." Since they didn't have a warrant for that address, they needed Lister's permission to search it. A rumpled man in a bathrobe opened the door and stood there calmly while Juarez explained the facts of life to him. "If you don't give me permission to come in, I'm going to stand out here with these guys until a judge signs it and then we're going to come later on today," Lister said Juarez told him. "So that's your choice. What's it gonna be?" Lister said he was living in "a nice community" and didn't like the idea of heavily armed officers hanging around in public view, so he invited them in.

According to Juarez, he told Lister they were executing a search warrant for drugs and asked him to sign a consent form. Lister's response brought the deputy up short.

"I *know* why you're here," Lister told him, "but why are you here? Mr. Weekly knows what I'm doing and you're not supposed to be here." Lister "told me that he had dealings in South America and worked with the CIA and added that his friends in Washington weren't going to like what was going on," Juarez's report of the search stated. "I told Mr. Lester [sic] that we were not interested in his business in South America. Mr. Lester replied that he would call Mr. Weekly of the CIA and report me."

Juarez decided to call Lister's bluff. "I don't know who Mr. Weekly is," the detective told Lister. "Let me talk to him. If I find out I'm not supposed to be here, I'll leave."

Juarez silently urged Lister to make the call so "I could get a phone record trace and find out who it was he was calling." Lister walked over to the phone and started dialing a number. "He looked at me, smiled, and then put it back down again," Juarez said. "He figured out what I was doing."

"Never mind," Lister told the deputy. "I'll talk to him later."

Lister claimed later he was planning to call his attorney and decided not to antagonize Juarez by doing so. He denied telling anyone he was working with the CIA, but other members of the raid team had very different recollections.

Sergeant Art Fransen said Lister erupted in a "tirade" and began shouting, "You guys don't know what you are doing. Oh, you don't know who you're dealing with. I deal with the CIA. I got power!"

Deputy Richard Love said Lister warned them, "You don't know what you're doing. There's a bigger picture here. I'm working for the CIA. I know the director of the CIA in Los Angeles. The government is allowing drug sales to go on in the United States." Love said Lister also "seemed to have some intimate details about a plane loaded with guns that crashed in Nicaragua and about the pilot. Lister alluded to the fact that he had been on one of those planes before and had actually been down there on a gun run."

Sergeant Fransen, an ex-Marine, poked around in a file cabinet in Lister's garage and said he found "stuff that a civilian shouldn't have or be privy to. . .paperwork, pamphlets and manuals relating to technical stuff concerning armaments."

Lister would later say that the cops may have gotten the wrong idea about him because he "was involved in legal arms sales. The deputies saw various weapons, scopes, pictures, literature or paperwork on arms and items that were tagged 'Not for Sale in U.S.' " In Lister's account, members of the raid team "became fascinated with what they found," and Sergeant Fransen walked by him later and muttered, "Man, you've gotta be CIA."

No drugs were found, and Lister was not arrested. The raiders packed up the paperwork and hauled it back down to the sheriff's station, where it was logged into the Master Narcotics Evidence Control ledger as "miscellaneous CIA info." Another report noted that there was "a lot of Contra rebel correspondence found."

As the raid teams straggled back to the sheriff's headquarters throughout the morning and early afternoon, the deputies compared notes and concluded that they'd been had. Someone had burned their warrant—and their suspicions immediately fell on the federal agents.

"After the search warrants had been served, the word among the investigators was that the operation had been compromised," said former Lieutenant Mike Fossey. "It appeared to have been snitched off by somebody in another agency, which is probably not a local agency, but probably an agency back towards the east, a big agency, a government agency."

Guzzetta was convinced federal agents had burned the investigation, pointing out that previous raids they'd conducted on the basis of the Torres brothers' information had always produced large amounts of cocaine and money. The only difference between those raids and Blandón's, he said, was the involvement of the FBI and DEA.

Deputy Love said it "was mutually agreed upon between narcotics investigators that the suspects had been tipped off."

In a case chronology prepared in late 1986, Majors II supervisor Sergeant Ed Huffman noted that "items seized (such as scales, weights, cocaine cutting agents) indicate cocaine activity. The small amount of cocaine (approx. 3 grams) seized is in contrast to the investigation indicators (informant's information, surveillance observations, background information). Did a burn occur? Possible, but can't say where or by who."

The Torres brothers would claim that the investigation was uncovered by Lister, who'd spotted police surveillance teams outside of Blandón's car lot and near his old house in Mission Viejo. Lister told the police and the CIA the same story and said he informed Blandón about it two weeks before the raids. "Lister states that Blandón simply smiled, but did not comment," a 1998 CIA report states.

However, Assistant U.S. Attorney L. J. O'Neale, who investigated Lister and Blandón for several years, said the sheriff's probe was compromised by an FBI agent who did "a clumsy investigation and contacted somebody who knew Blandón and this person told Blandón about the inquiry." In an interview with the CIA, Blandón said he "suspected there would be searches after FBI agents interviewed one of his employees."

But the Justice Department's Inspector General was unable to find evidence of any contact between FBI agents and Blandón's associates in the weeks leading up to the raids.

The deputies' suspicions of federal interference grew even stronger once they began examining the stacks of papers they'd hauled out of the houses. These people weren't just dope dealers, they realized. They were dope dealers who were dealing with the Contras and, apparently, the U.S. government. Deputy Bartlctt recalled seeing photos of Lister in a Contra military compound "standing with a general, and in the background were tents, munitions and automatic weapons." He also saw "U.S. Army training manuals and videotapes concerning deployment, supply, ordnance and bomb disposal," telephone records showing calls to Nicaragua, letters bearing Nicaraguan postmarks, and "possibly one document. . .which had an FBI letterhead."

"Some of the paperwork contained what he recognized from his military career as Department of Defense codes," according to Deputy John Hurtado. Other papers, Hurtado told police investigators, "contained some type of reference to the Central Intelligence Agency. Hurtado believed some of the papers had 'CIA' handwritten or typed on them. He also recalled a note pad was written in what he described as some type of Department of Defense code." When Hurtado questioned raid leader Tom Gordon, Gordon told him "they had gotten involved in something over their heads."

Deputy Dan Garner saw handwritten lists of weapons—specifically AR-15 assault rifles—and papers that involved "transporting weapons from one location to another." He also recalled "that there were manuals on various weapons, military training films, and photographs of military bases. . .the manuals and films seemed to have been standard U.S. government military issue." Garner said that they involved "higher-tech equipment such as ground-to-air missiles," and that it was "unusual to have recovered these items in a search warrant."

Deputy Juarez described some of the paperwork as containing "references about Mr. Weekly and his contacts in Teheran relating to the hostages." He saw "training manuals and training films for state of the art weapons—Stinger missiles, tanks, and other armored vehicles."

Observed Lieutenant Fossey: "If it was just arms they were talking about on that paperwork, it's still interesting that we had a drug investigation going here."

What was even more interesting were some of the files the cops had found in Blandón's house: a big stack of bank records, showing deposits in seven bank accounts. "Some of these deposits were marked 'U.S. Treasury/State' and totalled approximately $9,000,000," the Justice Department Inspector General wrote. "Other deposits were marked Cayman Islands and totaled about $883,000." Stuck amongst the bank records was a note, in Spanish, from Blandón's sister, Leysla Balladares, an FDN member who did Contra fundraising in San Francisco.

"Little brother," the note began. "There are the bank statements of the suppliers of the Contra. They have issued checks to different persons and companies, the same to the Cayman Islands. These are just one part and is the continuation of the report you have. I'll later send you the rest so you can laugh."

Balladares told Justice Department investigators that she got the documents from a Contra official shortly before he was killed in Honduras, and said they documented how Contra officials were stealing money and perhaps laundering it through the Cayman Islands. She'd sent Danilo copies because she thought he would be "amused at the level of corruption of some of the Contras."

The documents partly solved one of the day's mysteries—the identity of Lister's purported CIA contact, Mr. Weekly. Weekly's name was found in a sheaf of handwritten papers dealing with weapons and equipment sales. The documents included a list of armaments: antiaircraft weapons, fire bombs, 1,000 AR-15 semiautomatic rifles, air-to-sea torpedos, and napalm bombs.

The next page bore a list of names and phone numbers. Near the name 'Aparicio," Lister had written: "FDN coordinator." Another list of names included Bill Nelson, the CIA's former deputy director of operations; Salvadoran politicians Roberto D'Aubuisson and Ray Prendes; and someone named Scott Weekly.

In another document, Lister had written, "I had regular meeting with DIA subcontractor Scott Weekly. Scott had worked in El Salvador for us. Meeting concern my relationship with Contra grp. in Cent. Am." (The DIA—Defense Intelligence Agency—is the Pentagon's version of the CIA, responsible for collecting military-related foreign intelligence. It was heavily involved in the Contra war and in the civil war in El Salvador.)

The detectives were confused. DIA? Hadn't Lister said Weekly was with the CIA? What the hell was the DIA? When the detectives read the confidential security proposal that Lister's Pyramid International security company made to the government of El Salvador in 1982, they knew they were in unfamiliar territory. They'd never run into drug dealers who did business with heads of state.

Detective Juarez, who also translated the bulky document from Spanish to English for the flabbergasted detectives, said he became concerned that the records "would not remain in evidence for very long because of their sensitive subject matter." He made a copy of the Pyramid International proposal and took it home with him. That decision, Juarez suspects, probably cost his brother-in-law, Manuel Gómez, a 32-year-old Salvadoran jeweler, his life. Juarez told the author that in 1993 he gave Gómez a copy of Lister's security proposal. His brother-in-law sympathized with the leftist rebels in El Salvador and was active in the Salvadoran solidarity movement in Los Angeles. Gómez was going to get the documents to an underground radio station in El Salvador in hopes of publicizing this example of the U.S. government's unsavory involvement in Salvadoran internal affairs.

"Two weeks after the document made its way to the underground radio station in February 1993, Manuel Gómez was found murdered in his ear," Juarez told police investigators. He said Gómez "had apparently been tortured and strangled with a wire. His body was found wrapped in a blanket." When the police checked out Juarez's claims, they found that Manuel Gómez had indeed been strangled in 1993, his body dumped in the trunk of a car in South Central L.A. They also found a note in the homicide case files reporting that Deputy Juarez had called the police five days after the murder to tell them that his brother-in-law "had government documents in his possession that may have provided a motive for the murder." But the homicide investigators decided politics had little to do with the killing. After picking up rumors that Gómez was dealing drugs in South Central, they wrote the death off as drug-related and didn't pursue it much further. The killer was never apprehended.

Juarez sat down at a computer terminal and entered Ronald Lister's name into the NIN (Narcotics Information Network) database to make sure that any other narcotics agents who encountered him knew what they were dealing with. He reported that Lister had been searched in connection with a narcotics investigation, "and locations were cleaned out. Documents recovered indicate that Suspect Lister is involved in buying and selling police and government radio equipment and heavy duty weapons. Suspect possibly P BI informant and private detective."

Other deputies also began furtively copying some of Lister's papers. Deputy Garner grabbed a handful of records, including Lister's handwritten notes, as did Lieutenant Fossey. Fossey and Garner took the copies home with them "to safeguard them from loss or theft," Fossey explained. It would prove to be a wise precaution.

A few hours after the raids, Blandón's lawyer, Bradley Brunon, called the sheriff's station to ask where his clients were and how he could bail them out. He said Tom Gordon answered the phone and tore him a new asshole.

"He was a vile, vicious son of a bitch," Brunon recalled. He said Gordon screamed, "I'm not telling you anything! You're worse than they are!"

"'Fuck,' I said, 'I just called up to find out where you're going to arraign the guy.'"

"'Fuck you! I don't have to tell you!' I mean just, boom, off the wall."

So Brunon called Gordon's supervisor, Sergeant Ed Huffman. Huffman took notes of the odd conversation, which he later passed along to the FBI. Huffman had suspected all along that there was something creepy about the Blandón case, and the phone call from Brunon clinched it. "Thought you knew CIA kinda winks at that activity," Brunon told the astonished detective. "Now that U.S. Congress had voted funds for Nicaraguan Contra movement, U.S. government now appears to be turning against organizations like this."

In an interview, Brunon confirmed that as "not far from what I said."

According to former narcotics bureau captain Robert Wilber, Sergeant Huffman came to see him afterward and sourly remarked, "We bust our ass and the government's involved." The deputies "were upset about the incident," Wilber said, but he didn't take it too seriously because he thought they were using it as an excuse not to work with federal agents again.

If the Majors needed any more excuses, they got another one quickly enough. According to Deputy Bartlett, "Two federal agents came into the office looking angry. With the agents were a 'zone' lieutenant and the Narcotics Bureau admin lieutenant, both of whom also appeared angry. . .. The agents put some of the evidence into boxes and then walked out of the office." Sergeant Huffman's daily diaries and other records recently found in the Sheriff's Office's archives confirm that agents from the DEA, FBI, and IRS arrived at the narcotics bureau on October 30 and for two days pored through the seized files, making copies of everything.

Later that night, a cable from the CIA's Los Angeles office marked "Immediate Director" buzzed out of the teletype machine at CIA headquarters in Langley, Virginia. Entitled "Three Persons Claiming CIA Affiliation," the once-secret cable stated, "Three individuals claiming CIA affiliation have been arrested by Los Angeles County Sheriff's Department on narcotics related charges. Details received via FBI are sketchy. However, request preliminary traces to determine if any of the three listed below have CIA connections." The first person named was Ronald Lister, who "claims that for many years he has assisted in supplying small arms and helicopters to CIA contacts in Latin and Central America." The cable also named Danilo Blandón, identified as an accomplice of Lister. Curiously, it also asked for a trace on Norwin Meneses, who was identified as another accomplice of Lister's. Why the Los Angeles CIA was asking about Meneses in connection with the Blandón raid is unclear, since he was neither arrested, named in the search warrant affidavit, nor even living in the United States.

"Please respond immediate indicating what portions of response may be passed to local law enforcement authorities," the cable concludeed. Langley cabled back the next day; there were no headquarters traces on Blandón and Lister, but Meneses was "apparently well known as the Nicaraguan Mafia, dealing in drugs, weapons, and smuggling and laundering of counterfeit money." What happened next is still a matter of dispute.

After the raids, Sergeant Gordon and Deputy Juarez said they took a couple of days off. When they returned to work, Gordon said, he was told by deputy Dan Garner that the CIA had come into the offices and taken the records the Majors had seized during the raid. Gordon didn't believe it and went to the evidence room to check.

The papers were no longer there.

According to Garner, Gordon walked back into the squad room and announced, "The evidence is gone." Juarez said he ran over to the evidence lockup and confirmed what Gordon was saying. Nothing was left. Both Juarez and Gordon claimed they never saw the documents again.

In addition to the seized documents, said Blandón's attorney, Brad Brunon, the official police records of the raid seemed to disappear also. Despite his best efforts, he was unable to come up with more than an informal note about the preraid briefing, and that only by accident a couple years after the raid. "For a long time, they (the Sheriff's Office) never acknowledged the existence of this warrant. I mean the whole thing was quite mysterious. Boom, they did 15 locations. Nothing turned up. Nobody got busted. There was a little tiny bit of cocaine found in one location. Nobody got filed on. They gave all the stuff back. The whole thing just was very strange," Brunon said. "I'd never had a case where all the reports disappeared. I mean, early on, the only theory I had was the CIA involvement."

An investigation by the L.A. County Sheriff's Office in late 1996 strongly disputed the idea that "mysterious federal agents swooped down. . .and stole away with any documents relating to this case. Investigators have determined that this allegation was apparently spread through second-hand rumor and innuendo among some members of the narcotics team personnel." The department said that for each item seized, "there is a consistent paper trail."

The paper trail, however, raises more suspicions than it quiets. If the Sheriff's Office files are accurate, nearly all of the seized evidence was given back to Blandón and Lister within days of the raid, and apparently no copies were retained by the department, even for intelligence purposes. The Sheriff's 1996 investigation failed to find a single document that had been seized during the raids. As for the piles of copies made by the federal agents in the days following the raids, nearly all of those have disappeared also. According to the Justice Department Inspector General, neither the DEA, the FBI, or the U.S. Attorney's office could locate a single one of the more than 1,000 pages of documents the agents copied. The IRS, fortunately, still had some stashed away.

All of the property that wasn't claimed—including the cocaine and the weapons manuals—was allegedly destroyed within six months. That destruction occurred while the investigation was still listed as open and active.

As Jerry Guzzetta had done earlier, the L.A. County Sheriff's Office soon concluded that the Blandón case was just too big for it to handle alone. Sergeant Huffman "did not believe it was the proper responsibility of the L.A. Sheriff's Department to investigate the activities of the CIA," he said; he and his superiors "felt it would be more appropriately handled by federal agencies from that point because there was evidence that there was a continuing narcotics trafficking organization which involved a very large geographical area." When the U.S. Department of Justice stepped in and offered to adopt the investigation, the Majors had no objections. Sergeant Gordon, in fact, was no longer around, having been promoted and transferred out of the Majors.

According to Sergeant Huffman's notes, one of the first things the federal agents did was to put Gordon's bombshell search warrant affidavit under court seal, which kept it from becoming public. The affidavit also disappeared from the Sheriff's Office case files and was never found again. (In 1996 Sheriff Sherman Block sheepishly admitted that his investigators were unable to locate a copy of the affidavit in the department's files and had to use the author's copy, which had been posted by the *San Jose Mercury News* on its Web site. And again, the only reason that copy existed was because an officer took a copy of the affidavit home shortly after the raid.)

Huffman was then informed that no charges would be filed against Blandón, "to protect the ongoing investigation and informants." Despite being caught red-handed with cocaine—and admitting it was his—the drug kingpin was set free. Federal prosecutors interviewed called that a stunning decision, given Blandón's stature as one of L.A.'s biggest traffickers and the fact that he was in the U.S. seeking political asylum at the time. The mere fact of the arrest should have been enough to deport him, his wife, and every other Nicaraguan implicated. "If he was a major trafficker and we got him with even a little bit, he'd have been prosecuted," said former federal strike force attorney Brian Leighton, who worked in central California during those years. "You could also charge him with conspiracy, because in conspiracy cases you don't need any dope. I've done plenty of no-dope conspiracy cases. Just because he has [only] a half a gram doesn't mean you let him go."

But Blandón was not merely turned loose. On December 10, 1986, he has said, he was formally notified that the case against him had been dropped and that there would be no charges filed. That day, records show, he drove into Los Angeles and hired a lawyer to file an application for permanent residency with the Immigration and Naturalization Service, which would make it much more difficult to deport him in the future.

Blandón's choice of attorneys was interesting; he hired a man who was then under federal indictment for immigration fraud, and a cocaine addict to boot. Just a week before Blandón retained him, attorney John M. Garrisi had been charged with illegally smuggling Iranian scientists into the United States. Garrisi's lawyer, Roy Koletsky, said Garrisi had "a pipeline" into the Iranian community and had been bringing Iranians into the States since "around the time the Shah was deposed. He had a number of Iranians working in his office. They spoke Farsi at the office."

At Garrisi's disbarment hearing, it was alleged that he had been criss-crossing the globe in his quest to get Iranians into the United States, creating phony immigration records with an apparently genuine stamp from the Iranian Ministry of Justice and referring clients to an expert document forger. He was also accused of cheating clients of money. Garrisi "repeatedly stated he believed he had a duty (emphasizing repeatedly the word 'duty') to bring 'these people' (most of his visa clients are Iranian) into the United States," a California Bar Association report stated. "He strongly inferred that he would pursue that duty even against their expressed wishes."

Koletsky had no idea what "duty" Garrisi was talking about, he said, and Garrisi did not respond to interview requests. After one mistrial, he was convicted in 1987 of making false statements and sent to federal prison for a year.

Blandón's application for permanent residency, which disclosed his membership in an unnamed "anti-communist organization," reported that he had been arrested for "possession of drugs and weapons" in October 1986 but added, "They didn't find nothing." Under "Outcome of Case," Blandón wrote: "No complaint filed. They exonerated me 12-10-86."

On December 11, 1986, one day after Blandón says he was "exonerated," the director of the FBI sent a long teletype to the CIA's deputy director for operations and the director of the DIA. 'The teletype said the FBI was doing an "investigation focused on a cocaine distribution operation principally comprised of Nicaraguan nationals. Significant quantities of cocaine are reportedly distributed throughout the West Coast." Furthermore, "Information provided to FBI Los Angeles indicates that subject Ronald Jay Lister has made statements concerning his 'CIA contact,' identified by Lister as 'Mr. Weekly.' Investigation has also identified documents indicating that Lister has been in contact with 'Scott Weekly' of the DIA."

The CIA replied that it had information only on Meneses and Murillo. The DIA claimed it didn't know anything at all.

But that didn't keep Riverside FBI agent Doug Aukland from digging a little further. He decided to do some checking on "Mr. Weekly," Ronald Lister's alleged CIA contact.

"Scott Weekly is an arms dealer in San Diego," the agent told Sergeant Huffman in mid-January 1987. "Can't confirm Weekly is or isn't CIA connected." But that was only because Aukland wasn't asking the right people: his own bosses in Washington. By then, records show, senior officials at the U.S. Department of Justice had Weekly under investigation and were intimately familiar with him because they had been reading transcripts of his telephone conversations. Those transcripts suggested that Scott Weekly was connected not only to the CIA but to the National Security Council and the U.S. State Department as well.

"He reports to people reporting to Bush"

It really didn't take an FBI agent to figure out who or what Scott Weekly was. A librarian could have done it. Weekly had been something of an inadvertent celebrity back in 1983. A story in the *Los Angeles Times*, in fact, gave him the nickname that would stick with him for years: Doctor Death.

"Scott's kind of a tough little guy," said Ronald Lister's longtime attorney, Lynn Ball. "He got busted out of the Naval Academy and entered the service as an enlisted man. Went on to become a SEAL. Then after he got out, he had some friends in Virginia. Essentially, Scott was involved in the same kind of bullshit that Ron was—providing security."

A federal public defender told a judge in 1987 that Weekly was "some sort of a combination between John Wayne and Rambo and Oliver North, perhaps, and James Bond. . .. He does have an involvement, a lengthy involvement, in some rather mysterious activities."

Weekly, a classmate of North's at Annapolis, would later say he was kicked out of the Naval Academy in 1968 "because of the buildup of a large number of demerits." He joined the SEALs—the navy's most elite band of fighters—and became a demolition and weapons expert, thus earning his macabre sobriquet. He was awarded two Bronze Stars in Vietnam, where, according to his lawyer, he was involved in "extensive combat duty and numerous intelligence operations." He later married the daughter of an admiral.

A U.S. Customs agent told federal investigators that Weekly's stint with the SEALS gave him "contacts in the intelligence community, including the CIA and NSA (National Security Agency)."

In 1983, he and several other Americans were arrested in Nakhon Phanom, a small Thai village near the border of Laos, while on a covert mission to gather intelligence on American soldiers missing from the Vietnam war. The head of the Defense Intelligence Agency had wanted to find out, once and for all, if rumors of American POWs being held in Laotian prison camps were true. (It was from this incident that the Sylvester Stallone movie *Rambo* took its inspiration.)

Leading the expedition was former Army Green Beret lieutenant colonel James "Bo" Gritz, a decorated Vietnam war hero and former commander of the U.S. Special Forces in the Panama Canal Zone. Though he ostensibly retired from the military in 1979, Gritz said that for several years afterward he worked with an army intelligence unit known as the Intelligence Support Activity (ISA), trying to locate American POWs in Southeast Asia. According to author Steven Emerson, the ISA, known in military intelligence circles as "the Activity," provided Gritz with "tens of thousands of dollars' worth of cameras, polygraph equipment (to check the veracity of Indochinese sources), radio communications systems and plane tickets to Bangkok. Gritz was also given satellite photos and other intelligence data." The operation was code-named "Grand Eagle." Dr. Death was Gritz's right-hand man.

In congressional testimony, Gritz said "Grand Eagle" was officially shelved after a bureaucratic dispute between "the Activity" and the DIA. Deputy DIA director Admiral Allan Paulson confirmed to Congress that a "Department of Defense organization. . .proposed an operation using Mr. Gritz in a collection capacity," but Paulson said the operation was turned down "at the first level of the approval process."

The official rejection didn't end the mission, however. With the ISA's equipment and money at their disposal, Gritz and Weekly proceeded under the ironic code name "Operation Lazarus." Weekly's contributions, according to a 1983 *Soldier of Fortune* magazine story, included "having silencers altered to fit the 9-mm submachine guns to be used by Gritz and the team."

The first mission, in November 1982, resulted in a firefight with Laotian forces, and one member of Gritz's team was killed. As he prepared to make another stab at infiltrating Laos in early 1983, word of his mission was leaked to *Soldier of Fortune* magazine and picked up by the *Los Angeles Times* and the *Boston Globe*. Exposed, Gritz and his squad were arrested by Thai police at the edge of the Mekong River and charged with possession of an illegal radio transmitter. Gritz, Weekly, and two others—an antiterrorism expert and the daughter of a missing U.S. pilot—were jailed and held for trial.

In a letter to the *L.A. Times*, Gritz said that "CIA-DIA knew" of the mission and provided him with a variety of high-tech gear. Both agencies disavowed any knowledge of Gritz's missions but the denials were difficult to believe. "U.S. sources in Bangkok said the radio was the latest in U.S.-made spy gear with a powerful transmitter that was to have been used to send messages from Laos straight to Washington," United Press International reported. "The disclosure of the radio's type and purpose bolstered the credibility of Gritz's statements that his first mission into Laos last November and his apparently just-completed second mission was carried out with the blessing of U.S. intelligence officials."

UPI's perceptiveness was short-lived. Those telling paragraphs were cut from the UPI story that moved later that afternoon, and from then on most press reports uncritically accepted the government's denials. Gritz and Weekly were dismissed as beer-can commandos off on their own private mission.

A year later, however, syndicated columnist Jack Anderson reported that Gritz's team had been sent into Southeast Asia "with at least initial support from the CIA and the Pentagon." Anderson based that conclusion on confidential court records filed in a federal fraud case in Honolulu, Hawaii, involving a polo-playing investment banker named Ronald Ray Rewald, who was accused of stealing millions from his bankrupt company's clients. Rewald claimed his investment company had been a conduit for the CIA to secretly funnel money to covert operations around the world, and that the agency had suddenly yanked its accounts, causing the firm to collapse.

The CIA admitted to Congress that Rewald's company "had some ties to the CIA" and that several CIA officials had investment accounts there. Anderson put it more bluntly: "Rewald's investment firm was hip-deep in active or retired CIA employees."

In an affidavit, Rewald said the CIA "had originally committed its support" to Gritz's mission and that Rewald "did supply a few thousand dollars to support the mission at the CIA's behest." According to Anderson, the "bombshell of Rewald's exhibits is a confidential letter to Gritz on official DIA stationery" instructing Gritz, to "pull together evidence to convince political skeptics of the POW existence."

(As an aside, Rewald also told Anderson that he was approached in 1982 by "a senior CIA official and asked if he would help in a CIA drug-smuggling operation. When Rewald told the CIA official that he had no one in his firm with experience in drug operations, the CIA man contradicted him and named [a Rewald] employee who had been a longtime CIA contract agent active in Southeast Asia." The CIA disputed Anderson's column, but the columnist never backed down. Rewald was convicted of fraud and sentenced to an astonishing eighty years in federal prison.)

When a police investigator asked Scott Weekly in 1996 about his relationship with the CIA, Weekly replied that it really didn't matter what answer he gave. There was no way the police could ever confirm it. "He also agreed that if he was in the CIA, he wouldn't tell me anyway," the officer wrote. In 1998, the CIA Inspector General reported it could find no evidence that Weekly "had any relationship with the

CIA."

Another officer tried to check out Weekly's military background by calling the Office of Veterans Affairs in Los Angeles. According to his report, an odd thing happened: "Scott Weekly's name was found in the database. The person on the telephone calmly read Weekly's name to me and suddenly exclaimed, 'Whoa!' He quickly informed me that due to provisions of the Privacy Act, only the fact that he was a veteran could be confirmed. No information about length of service, branch, or MOS [Military Occupational Specialty] could be released without a subpoena or the consent of Weekly."

Notwithstanding Lister's claim to the Majors that "Mr. Weekly knows what I'm doing," it is difficult to say with certainty if Weekly knew of Lister's cocaine dealings with Danilo Blandón. Weekly denies it. But there is no doubt that between 1982 and 1986, Scott Weekly was helping out on the flip side of Blandón's criminal enterprise: the sale of exotic weapons and communications gear, some of which was being sold to Freeway Rick and his fellow crack dealers in South Central Los Angeles. A U.S. Customs agent, John Kellogg, testified in 1988 that he believed Weekly was an arms merchant who "was involved in international munitions deals."

"And how did you come to that belief?" Kellogg was asked by a federal judge.

"Though his various contacts with me and his foreign travels," Kellogg replied. "He would come back after several months' absence and come into my office and say, 'I believe you need to know about this,' and then detail very specific information concerning munitions dealers that were under investigation by the Customs Service and others."

According to interviews Weekly did with ATF agents in 1987, he admitted "that he had been involved with the Contras in the past, when Pastora was in power." A U.S. Customs official told the ATF "that Weekly was acting at the direction of Customs when he was involved with the Contras."

Lister confirmed that he "often met with Scott Weekly because Weekly was very knowledgeable in the area of commercially available military related systems." He said Weekly was "a dependable source of information as to which systems were declassified and, hence, legal to sell."

In the final weeks of 1986, less than a month after Lister identified "Mr. Weekly" to the sheriff's raid team as his CIA contact, evidence surfaced suggesting that Lister's description wasn't far off the mark.

At the time Lister made that claim, Scott Weekly was participating in at least two covert operations involving the National Security Council and a special unit inside the U.S. State Department that was working closely with Oliver North and the CIA.

Both Weekly and Gritz have testified that in early 1986 they were asked to conduct training exercises for another of the CIA's secret armies: the anti-Communist Afghan resistance movement—the Mujahedeen. Before undertaking that mission, they said, they sought and obtained the approval of two State Department officials in Washington: William R. Bode, a special assistant to the undersecretary of state for security assistance, and Bode's aide, army colonel Nestor Pino Marina.

Eugene Wheaton, a former air force security expert who knows both men personally, believes Bode and Pino were CIA agents working under State Department cover on the Contra project with Oliver North. "That office. . .was CIA through and through," says Wheaton, whose name shows up repeatedly in Bode's daily agendas and Oliver North's notebooks during 1985–86. There is some independent evidence to support Wheaton's conclusions. In an interview with Iran-Contra investigators, former CIA Central American Task Force chief Alan Fiers Jr. admitted that he and North in late 1985 discussed an unnamed "paramilitary covert action program" involving Pino and Bode and a company called Falcon Wings Inc. What that program involved is not known; the rest of Fiers's interview was censored on national security grounds.

Undersecretary of State William Schneider told the FBI in 1988 that Bode and Pino were responsible for Central America and their jobs involved "keeping in touch with DOD [Department of Defense] and other government agencies to determine if U.S. assistance programs to the area were working." One of those programs appears to have been the secret Contra maritime operations North and CIA station chief Joseph Fernandez were running in Costa Rica, using Kevlar speedboats and offshore shrimp trawlers as motherships. As discussed in an earlier chapter, those murky missions were being spearheaded by two CIA-linked drug traffickers working with the Southern Front Contras—Bay of Pigs veterans Felipe Vidal and Dagoberto Nunez. In an interview with Iran-Contra prosecutor Lawrence Walsh's office, Pino confirmed that he and Bode met with North to discuss the purchase of the speedboats. During that meeting, Pino said, North unexpectedly announced that he could wind up behind bars. "North did refer to going to jail," Pino confirmed, but he said his "impression was that the phrase was common usage in the military before an inspection."

Colonel Pino, another Bay of Pigs veteran, has a history of involvement with the CIA and covert operations. In 1982 he became the U.S. Army's "action officer" on the civil war in El Salvador. Pino was a close friend of former CIA agent Felix Rodriguez, who was overseeing North's Contra rcsupply operation at Ilopango air base in El Salvador at the time. Rodriguez, in fact, says he first met Ollie North through Bode and Pino. Like Rodriguez, Pino was close to Salvadoran Air Force general Rafael Bustillo, who ran the Ilopango base. Pino referred to Bustillo as "family," and the Salvadoran general sometimes stayed at Pino's house in Virginia while visiting Washington.

As for Bode, he was described by his boss, Undersecretary Schneider, as "a deployable asset. . .who was used on non-routine projects." Bode's desk calendars, obtained from the National Archives, show frequent meetings in 1985 and 1986 with North and CIA operative Robert Owen, North's liaison to the Contras and the Cuban mercenaries working on the Southern Front.

Gritz testified that he approached Bode and Pino to discuss the Afghan training program he and Weekly were asked to conduct because "I've worked for intelligence agencies and I wanted to make sure that we weren't doing something that was illegal. . .Mr. Bode was enthusiastic, as a matter of fact, I would call him excited. He said that not only did he approve of the proposal but that he would provide other Afghan groups, since there was a division of about six or seven subgroups, that he would provide other people for us to train also. Later, in further meetings, I did provide him with a detailed training proposal. Initially I gave him an outline for a training proposal of seventy-six days." Gritz said Bode shortened the training schedule to thirty days "and eliminated some of the classes that he felt were too sensitive for the Mujahedeen at the time. It included various secure communications [courses] that we had planned to give."

In a 1987 interview, Bode confirmed that he had met with Gritz about the training program and "gave him the names of one or two people to talk to," but he denied he authorized the operation. "Just the fact that we met and had talks didn't authorize anything," Bode insisted. "The Afghan program is a covert program, okay? All CIA, or perhaps a little bit of Defense Department. The State Department does not get involved in those things." (As anyone who has studied the CIA can attest, the State Department has provided cover for more CIA officers over the years than any other section of government save the military.)

Bode's assistant, Nestor Pino, also denied that he had officially authorized the missions, but said he was "convinced that the effort(s) taken by Colonel Gritz to train Afghan Freedom Fighters are in consonance with and complimentary of U.S. policy for Afghanistan and that Colonel Gritz and Mr. Weekly saw it that way." Their activities, Pino declared, "were inspired by a strong desire to support the Afghan resistance against Soviet occupation and by an even stronger desire to advance the interests of the United States."

In federal court, Weekly and Gritz testified that the money to pay for the Afghan training exercises came from Stanford Technology, one of the companies fronting for Oliver North's "Enterprise," the quasi-governmental arms dealership at the heart of the Iran-Contra scandal. Stanford Technology was used by North and his agents to launder the profits of the Iranian missile sales. During the Iran-Contra deposition of Stanford Technology's owner, Albert Hakim, he admitted that approximately $900,000 from his various front companies was paid out "for miscellaneous projects at the request of Lt. Col. North."

In late 1986 Gritz and Weekly's training program—conducted in the Nevada desert on land owned by the federal government—was accidentally exposed by a law student in Oklahoma City who was married to a policeman. "She was sitting in her apartment one night when Weekly and this cop show up with 200 pounds of C-4 plastic explosives," recalled former federal prosecutor Stephen Korotash, who handled the case. "They were looking to store it somewhere. She happened to mention it to her father and Dad called the ATF [Bureau of Alcohol, Tobacco and Firearms]." The ATF learned that Weekly had loaded the C-4 aboard two commercial passenger flights to Las Vegas and then left the country. An ATF report on the Weekly investigation, found in the CIA's files during an internal probe in 1997, "indicated that Weekly claimed he had done this for CIA."

ATF agents initially suspected that Weekly might be a terrorist until they got a look at his long-distance telephone records for September and October of 1986. Among other things, they found calls to Colonel Pino at the State Department; to William Logan, southwest regional director of the U.S. Customs Service; to the National Security Council; and to defense contractor United Technologies.

The agents broke the news to federal prosecutor Korotash, who was not pleased. The storm over the Iran-Contra scandal was then reaching a crescendo and the last thing Korotash wanted was to be dragged into that maelstrom. "My first thought was: 'Oh, great. Here I am picking my nose in Oklahoma and now I've stumbled into a Contra deal.' That's what I thought this was and I can remember thinking, 'How in the hell did I get ahold of a case like this?'"

No stranger to the workings of government, Korotash bounced the Weekly investigation up the bureaucratic ladder, and it kept right on bouncing, all the way to the top of the Criminal Division of the U.S. Justice Department in Washington. Records show that on December 2, 1986, Assistant U.S. Attorney General William F. Weld was briefed on the case. According to Weld's notes of the briefing, Weekly was somehow connected to the U.S. State Department and had made long-distance phone calls to a Lieutenant Colonel Tom Harvey, who was on the staff of the National Security Council. (Gritz has said Harvey was supervising the POW hunt he and Weekly were on at the time and provided them with White House and NSC credentials. Harvey has denied that.)

Korotash's supervisor, Oklahoma City U.S. attorney William Price, asked Weld, if he should "proceed with such cases?" Weld told him to go ahead, and then asked one of his aides, Deputy Assistant Attorney General Mark M. Richard, to look into the case.

Richard already had some background in this area. Earlier that year he'd been given an award by the CIA for "Protection of National Security during Criminal Prosecutions." A CIA spokesman said Richard was honored for "his outstanding work in the case against Ronald Rewald," the Honolulu investment banker who claims his investment firm funneled CIA money to covert operations, including Weekly and Gritz's earliest POW missions. Thanks to Richard's efforts, Rewald's ties to the CIA were not permitted to surface publicly at his criminal trial.

Richard called U.S. Attorney Bill Price on December 11, 1986, and was briefed on the investigation. Several months later, Richard was grilled about that briefing in a deposition taken by Iran-Contra committee lawyer Pamela Naughton. According to a transcript of the deposition, Naughton confronted Richard with two sheets of lined paper filled with handwritten notes.

"Tell me what that is," Naughton said. "Is that your handwriting, first of all?"

"I'd plead guilty to that," Richard cracked. "This is the gist of the conversation I had with Mr. Price and his briefing of me regarding an individual who had been arrested and his possible involvement in some CIA/Contra-related activities."

"Now, about a third of the way down—individual's name was Weekly? Is that—am I reading that correctly?" Naughton asked. "W-E-E-K-L-Y?"

"Yes."

"About a third of the way down it says—if I'm reading correctly—'Weekly posts on tape that he's tied into CIA and Hasenfus. Said he reports to people reporting to Bush.' What does that mean?"

"I don't know what the 'post' means, but apparently there was a tape recording," Richard answered. "This is a matter which had just arisen in the U.S. Attorney's office. I was getting briefed. . .it's an individual who had been arrested and is asserting, or there is a suggestion of, a relationship to the CIA and Hasenfus and the exportation of explosives to the countries." (At the time of Richard's conversation with Bill Price, Weekly was actually about two weeks away from being arrested; he was still in Burma with Bo Gritz on their latest POW hunt. Price was apparently briefing Richard on the tapes of intercontinental telephone conversations Weekly was having with his police officer friend in Oklahoma City. Who made the tapes and how the Justice Department obtained them isn't clear.)

"And he's alleging or indicating to someone that he's connected with the CIA and that he is reporting to people who report to Bush?" Naughton asked.

"That's what he's asserting," Richard agreed.

"What is the current status, if you know?"

"I cannot—as far as I recall, it was referred to the—"

"Referred to the Independent Counsel?" Naughton asked.

"To the IC," Richard confirmed. "And I just don't know the status."

Because the case had been turned over to Lawrence Walsh, the Iran-Contra committees didn't pursue the Weekly matter further, Naughton said. Unfortunately, neither did Walsh, because Walsh had nothing but the sketchiest details about the Weekly case. The tapes on which Weekly discusses the CIA, Hasenfus, and George Bush do not appear to have been turned over, nor were Weekly's phone records made available to Walsh's office.

While no evidence has surfaced suggesting that State Department officials Bode and Pino knew of Blandón's criminal enterprises, records show that they were not neophytes on the subject of the Contras and cocaine. At the same time they were dealing with Scott Weekly, the two men were trying desperately to get another CIA-linked cocaine trafficker out of prison because of his past assistance to the Contras.

The federal prisoner, Jose Bueso Rosa, had been indicted in 1984 for his part in a bizarre scheme to assassinate the president of Honduras, Roberto Suazo Cordova, and stage a coup d'etat, using the proceeds of a giant cocaine sale to finance it. President Suazo had drawn Bueso Rosa's wrath by dumping Honduran Army chief General Gustavo Álvarez, a fanatical anti-Communist who was one of the fathers and chief supporters of the Contras. Bueso Rosa, a Honduran general, had been one of Álvarez's top aides, and the cocaine coup was intended to restore Álvarez and his men to power.

Unfortunately for the plotters, the two American military officers they hired to murder Suazo went to the FBI. In late October 1984, a collection of Cubans and Honduran arms merchants was arrested at a remote inland airstrip in Florida with 764 pounds of cocaine, valued at between $10 million and $40 million wholesale. "The announcements at the time of the arrests made by the Departments of State and Justice quite properly categorized this case as a triumph for the Administration's policy against terrorism and against narcotics," former State Department official Francis J. McNeil would later testify. But not everyone in the Reagan administration was happy about it. Bueso Rosa was one of the CIA's main collaborators in Honduras on the Contra project, working closely with the agency in setting up Contra bases, supply lines, aircraft repairs, and a host of other, still classified, activities.

In the summer of 1986 the Honduran's attorney flew to Washington and met with Colonel Pino, who began a vigorous lobbying campaign at State and Justice to turn Bueso Rosa loose, even though he had been indicted for racketeering, conspiracy, and attempted murder-for-hire. "The colonel assert [ed] an American intelligence interest in Bueso Rosa, in getting Bueso Rosa off," McNeil testified. As Pino explained to Iran-Contra investigators, "General Bueso Rosa. . .had information which he could use against us, as he had been privy to a large amount of specific information."

To get Washington's attention, Bueso Rosa's lawyers subpoenaed Oliver North, CIA officer Duane "Dewey" Clarridge, former U.S. ambassador to Honduras John D. Negroponte, and former U.S. Army general Paul Gorman to testify at the Honduran's racketeering trial as defense witnesses. In several computer messages to NSC chief John Poindexter in September 1986, North fretted that the case could become a major headache for the Administration. "The problem with the Bueso case is that Bueso was the man whom Negroponte, Gorman, Clarridge and I worked out arrangements [censored]," North wrote. "Only Gorman, Clarridge and I were fully aware of all that Bueso was doing on our behalf."

North's computer messages about Bueso Rosa are revealing for another reason: they illustrate just how skewed the Reagan administration's sense of justice had become regarding its "War on Drugs." At the same time Reagan and Bush were whipping the American public into a frenzy over street-corner crack dealers, North and other top administration officials were livid that Bueso Rosa had even been charged with a crime. "Justice is justifiably upset that none of this info was made available to them prior to indictment or before/during trial," North griped. "Clarridge was totally unaware that CIA had responded to a Justice query on the case with the terse comment that they 'had no interest in the case.' Elliott [Abrams] was also somewhat chagrined to learn that some at State had been urging rigorous prosecution and sentencing." Bueso Rosa was advised to "keep his mouth shut and everything would be worked out," North wrote.

The general later agreed to drop the subpoenas and pleaded guilty with the understanding that he would be sentenced to a minimum security facility at Eglin Air Force base in Florida, North wrote, "for a short period (days or weeks) and then walk free." Justice Department official Mark Richard, who met with North to discuss the case, said he was told that Bueso Rosa "was going to go in from one entrance and out the other entrance, you know, out the rear." An all-star collection of U.S. government officials, including Colonel Nestor Pino, Bill Bode, and the former head of the DIA, appeared as character witnesses or sent glowing letters to Bueso Rosa's judge, urging him to go easy on the admitted racketeer. But since Bueso Rosa's coconspirators had been hit with sentences of up to thirty years, it was impossible to let the ringleader off scot-free. He was given a five-year sentence and assigned to a federal prison in Tallahassee, a much harsher environment than the "country club" camp at Eglin he'd been promised.

In North's view, that only made things worse. "Our major concern—Gorman, North, Clarridge—is that when Bueso Rosa finds out what is really happening to him, he will break his longstanding silence about the Nic[araguan] Resistance and other sensitive operations," North wrote to Poindexter. "Gorman, North, Clarridge, Revell [an FBI official], [Steven] Trott and [Elliott] Abrams will cabal quietly in the morning to look at options: pardon, clemency, deportation, reduced sentence. Objective is to keep Bueso from feeling like he was lied to in legal process and start spilling the beans. Will advise."

The next day, North told Poindexter there had been "a good meeting this morning with all concerned." The Justice Department had graciously agreed to transfer Bueso Rosa to Eglin, work out a deal to reduce his sentence, and buttonhole the federal judge to "explain. . .our equities in this matter. Revell/Trott both believe this will result in approval of the petition for probationary release and deportation to Honduras. Discretely briefing Bueso and his attorney on this whole process should alleviate concerns. . .that Bueso will start singing songs that nobody wants to hear," North advised. "Bottom line: all now seems headed in the right direction." But Colonel Pino and the Defense Intelligence Agency got a little too happy. A few days before Bueso Rosa was to report to prison, State Department official McNeil got a call from an upset justice Department official, informing him that the DIA had scheduled a luncheon honoring the would-be assassin in the Pentagon's Executive Dining Room. McNeil, outraged by the news, called a meeting between State, the Justice Department, the DIA, and the CIA to get the invitation squelched. The ceremony was eventually canceled, but McNeil said he was warned by a superior that he was "looking for trouble" if he kept sticking his nose into the Bueso Rosa affair. "It was very nasty business," McNeil, a former U.S. ambassador to Costa Rica, would later testify. He told Congress he suspected something sinister was behind the frantic machinations of North and company to get the Honduran out of the United States.

"I must tell you this is circumstantial, but it seems to me that the circumstantial evidence is such that one has to wonder if there is not a narcotics angle," McNeil testified. "What was so embarrassing that at least eight senior officers of the U.S. government would think it necessary to get this man off?" In a deposition, Justice Department official Steve Trott claimed he didn't know why he went through such contortions for Bueso Rosa, other than that North had told him about the possible release of "sensitive" information.

And what information was that? "I never got into the substance of what it was," Trott claimed. Whatever it was, Bueso Rosa held his tongue, and after doing three years at Eglin he was shipped back to Honduras. In a 1995 interview with the *Baltimore Sun*, he gave a chilling insight into the kinds of secrets he possessed: he disclosed that the CIA had equipped and trained the Honduran army's official death squad, the 316 Battalion, which was blamed for the torture, disappearance, and murders of hundreds of Hondurans in the 1980s.

According to court records, similar promises of leniency were made to Scott Weekly to keep him quiet about his involvement with Bode, Pino, and the "Enterprise." As in Bueso Rosa's case, the efforts looks particularly unseemly, given the fact that, at the time they were undertaken, Weekly was under federal investigation in connection with Danilo Blandón's cocaine ring—something that was known at the highest levels of the CIA, the Justice Department, and the DIA.

On December 21, 1986, just two days after Independent Counsel Lawrence Walsh was appointed to investigate the burgeoning Iran-Contra scandal, Weekly got a call at his home in San Diego and was asked to meet with federal agents at a room in the downtown Holiday Inn, overlooking the harbor. Weekly had just returned from his latest ROW hunt with Bo Gritz, allegedly on behalf of the NSC, but he discovered that the agents—accompanied by Oklahoma City federal prosecutor Steve Korotash—didn't want to discuss that. They wanted to know about the C-4 he'd placed on the airliners before he departed for the Far East.

When Weekly explained that the C-4 had been safely detonated in the Nevada desert, he said the prosecutor offered him a deal: if he kept quiet and pleaded guilty to illegally transporting the C-4 to Las Vegas, he-would be released on unsupervised probation, and the case would be closed. "One of the points specifically that we agreed on was that this investigation would start and stop with me, and that it would not affect other or involve other personnel," Weekly later testified. Prosecutor Korotash denied making any such promises.

The next morning Weekly and Korotash flew to Oklahoma City, where the prosecutor "began hurriedly telling me all the answers I was to give to the officials. . .and emphatically told [me] if things got out of hand he would answer for me or direct my answers." Weekly said Korotash advised him to "lie low and keep mum."

Weekly went before a federal judge that afternoon and, without ever having spoken to a defense lawyer, tersely pleaded guilty to interstate transportation of explosives. Under Korotash's gentle questioning, he admitted to shipping plastic explosives on two commercial airliners to Las Vegas but was never asked why. Korotash helpfully pointed out that the passengers were never in danger and asked that

Weekly be released from custody without having to post bail. Federal judge Ralph G. Thompson said it was "not routine that people be released on bail in cases of this kind," but he acquiesced. The hearing was over in a matter of minutes and Weekly was soon on his way home with the whole episode safely behind him. Or so he thought.

Then Bo Gritz began shooting his mouth off about the CIA and drugs.

Following his last POW foray, the superpatriot had come home radicalized. He and Weekly had trekked into the mountains of northern Burma to visit an opium warlord named Khun Sa, who commanded a tribal army estimated at 40,000 men. Gritz has said their primary mission from Colonel Harvey at the NSC was to check out a tip Vice President George Bush had received, suggesting that the warlord knew something about missing American servicemen in Laos. (As with Gritz's earlier missions, the U.S. government denies any involvement. However, no one has explained why Gritz and Weekly were meeting and speaking with an NSC official.)

After a three-day hike into the jungles, Gritz said, they found Khun Sa and discovered he knew nothing about American POWs. What he did know about, Gritz claimed, was a CIA-run heroin trafficking network that had been operating in the region for more than a decade, helping to finance a secret CIA army of anti-Communist guerillas in Laos. Gritz said Khun Sa, who controlled much of the raw opium trade in the Golden Triangle, opened up his ledger books and provided him with the names of the CIA officials allegedly involved and dates of their meetings with him.

Gritz and Weekly returned to the United States in mid-December 1986 with videotapes of their talks with the opium king, and Gritz said he immediately turned them over to Colonel Harvey of the NSC. Gritz said Harvey told him to "erase and forget" what he'd learned from the opium trafficker because the information would "hurt the government." Instead, Gritz put on his medals and his fatigues and went public, charging that U.S. government officials had been dealing heroin and that the Reagan administration was trying to cover that fact up. He pointed to Scott Weekly's recent arrest and conviction on the explosives charges as "proof" of a high-level conspiracy to silence and discredit them because of their awkward discoveries.

While the national press largely ignored the flamboyant veteran's strange tale, it received some wire service and radio coverage, particularly in Oklahoma City. Weekly's prosecutor, Steve Korotash, was driving to the supermarket one Saturday morning when he heard Gritz come over his car radio "claiming that I was retaliating against Scott Weekly because of some information Gritz, had gotten from Khun Sa," Korotash said. "I didn't know who the fuck Khun Sa was. I didn't have a clue." Korotash said he laughed off Gritz's charges as "idiotic."

But others didn't find Gritz quite so amusing. A month later, federal agents raided his house in Sandy Valley, Nevada, hauling away boxes of paperwork. Simultaneously, Weekly began receiving pressure from prosecutors to implicate Gritz in the illegal transportation of the C-4 to Nevada, he said. Weekly refused to cooperate, arguing that he'd made a deal not to finger anyone. "Weekly was protecting the hell out of Bo Gritz," former U.S. attorney Price confirmed in an interview. "I mean, that's what really pissed us off."

When Weekly's sentencing on the explosives case rolled around in April 1987, Korotash filed a confidential memorandum with the court, saying Weekly had refused to take a polygraph test and failed to cooperate with the government. A letter from the U.S. Customs Service commending Weekly for his help in other investigations was withdrawn at the last minute. Judge Wayne Alley told Weekly that it appeared he was "simply trying to protect the names of others. . .. That's your privilege but it comes at a cost." Alley sentenced Weekly to five years in federal prison, requiring him to serve a year before he could be eligible for parole, and fined him $2,000. "I got my brains fucked out," Weekly would later complain.

A month later, in May 1987, Gritz was indicted by a federal grand jury in Nevada for misusing a passport during his travels to Southeast Asia. Gritz admitted that he had used a phony passport but claimed the government had given it to him. Pointing out that Oliver North had committed the same "crime" during his overseas travels and had never been indicted for it, Gritz told UPI that the charges were "intended to silence his accusations that the CIA and Defense Department are involved in opium trafficking." Grit and his attorney vowed to turn his trial into an expose of government drug dealing, but things never got that far. The charges were dismissed by a federal judge before trial.

After spending 14 months in prison, Scott Weekly was ordered released after a hearing revealed that he had indeed been working for the U.S. government at the time of his offenses, and had also been working as a U.S. Customs informant for many years. He was placed on probation, with the unusual caveat that he report any future contact "with any officer or employee of the Department of State, the Department of Defense, the Central Intelligence Agency or any other intelligence agency of the United States."

While the Justice Department pounced on Gritz and Weekly for what seem to be trivial violations of federal law, it showed no such zeal when it came to pursuing Danilo Blandón and the South Central L.A. drug gang. That investigation, though it involved massive amounts of cocaine and millions of dollars in ill-gotten gains, couldn't seem to generate any interest in the halls of justice.

"It is a sensitive matter"

When all was said and done, the October 1986 L.A. County Sheriff's raids were a mere irritant to the Nicaraguans. Blandón had lost a thimbleful of dope. None of his people were arrested, and he and Chepita were out of jail in a matter of hours. "He laughed about it," Ross said. "I thought it was some pretty bad shit, but he told me there was nothing to worry about. Nobody'd found nothing. Nothing was gonna change." Blandón and Ross continued buying and selling millions of dollars worth of cocaine every week, even as the FBI watched. Records show Blandón was under periodic surveillance through the first half of 1987.

Former L.A. County deputy DA Susan Bryant-Deason, now a Superior Court judge, told police in 1996 that she met several times in the weeks following the raids with Sergeant Ed Huffman of Majors II and federal agents in an effort to keep the Blandón investigation alive. Bryant-Deason, the supervising attorney on the Blandón ease, had been "cross-designated" as a special assistant U.S. attorney, which allowed her to prosecute certain federal cases as well as state crimes. She said the agents "were frustrated and wanted to do something but had insufficient evidence."

Why three grams of cocaine and a confession were insufficient to charge Blandón with a crime has never been explained, particularly since the L.A. police were hauling street dealers into court by the hundreds for possession of lesser amounts.

Despite the overall failure of the raids and the departure of the Majors, FBI agent Douglas Aukland and DEA agent Tom Schrettner kept plugging away. If they couldn't get their respective agencies to help them investigate the Nicaraguans' drug ring, they'd find someone who would. In November, the agents approached the Los Angeles U.S. Attorney's office and persuaded federal prosecutor Crossan Andersen to take their case to the Organized Crime Drug Enforcement Task Force (OCDETF), a special Justice Department unit that puts together agents from a variety of law enforcement entities to go after major drug trafficking organizations. The prosecutor agreed to offer the case to OCDETF, which was very selective about the cases it adopted for prosecution. They had to be big. On November 25, 1986, Andersen wrote to the IRS criminal investigation division in Laguna Niguel, asking the IRS to supply agents to help out on the case.

"As you know," Andersen wrote, "this is a narcotics investigation involving FBI, DEA, and LASO units in Riverside and Whittier, California. It is a sensitive matter since it involves allegations of drug running in support of the CONTRA movement in Nicaragua and wholly unconfirmed allegations of CIA involvement."

"Sensitive" was hardly the word for it. It was white hot. The same morning Andersen was dictating his letter to the IRS, President Ronald Reagan and Attorney General Edwin Meese were solemnly announcing to a throng of reporters in Washington that millions of dollars from the sale of missiles to the maniacal Iranian government had been illegally diverted to the Contras by Lt. Col. Oliver North. The Iran-Contra scandal was bursting open at the seams and, suddenly, the strange papers found in Blandón's and Lister's houses that summer suggesting drugs-for-arms deals and unexplained U.S. Treasury deposits to foreign bank accounts took on a new significance. Aukland was temporarily assigned to work on "Operation Front Door," the FBI's code name for its Iran-Contra probe, and ordered to look into any possible connections between Lister and Oliver North's arms ring.

Aukland interviewed a retired Secret Service agent who told him Lister had mentioned "selling arms to the Contras and that he worked for an Iranian." The next day, Aukland questioned Lister's realtor, who told of the ex-cop buying a house last summer with two sacks full of cash. When the realtor asked Lister where the money came from, Lister had informed him that he ran a "CIA-approved" security business and was raising money for the Contras, which was also "CIA-approved." When Aukland finally got to Lister, he asked him point-blank "if he was involved in training of Contras." Lister, who stoutly denied knowing anything about North, clammed up and "requested that an unidentified representative of 'another agency' be present before he would answer that question."

Despite those intriguing leads, the FBI office in Los Angeles declared there was "no connection" between Lister and the Iran-Contra scandal and precluded any further investigation. The next month the FBI would learn that Lister "had told an unidentified neighbor over drinks that he worked for Oliver North and [Richard] Secord, and had sent arms shipments to the Contras." That lead also was not pursued.

While prosecutor Andersen and FBI agent Aukland were preparing their application to the Organized Crime task force, all hell began breaking loose down in Costa Rica. The secretive CIA and Contra operations going on there were suddenly international news and the little country started crawling with American reporters looking for a scoop. They found all kinds of evidence linking North, the White House, and the CIA to illegal Contra resupply activities. Ilopango was exposed and North's operatives hastily abandoned their airplanes, their barracks, and their safe houses and fled the country. The Costa Rican government began arresting Contras and Contra supporters for violating Costa Rican neutrality.

In early December 1986, Costa Rica's biggest newspaper, *La Nacion*, published an extensive series on Contra connections to drug trafficking there and one installment focused squarely on Norwin Meneses, describing him as a Contra supporter and financier who was holed up in Costa Rica under some type of protection, hiding from American drug agents.

The story sent the DFA office at the U.S. Embassy into a tizzy. Their top-secret informant had just been outed as a major Contra drug trafficker—and not a week had gone by since the Iran-Contra scandal had exploded. If the Costa Rican government, which was becoming increasingly hostile to the Contras, started poking around, it wouldn't take long to discover the drug kingpin's special relationship with the U.S. Embassy. Something had to be done.

Meneses' handler, DFA agent Sandy Gonzalez, frantically cabled the DFA office in Los Angeles, asking for permission for Meneses to travel to the U.S. "as soon as possible." The newspaper, Gonzalez complained, had said Meneses "was being investigated by the Costa Rican government" and the publicity and the specter of deportation had Meneses scared. He was considering going underground, Gonzalez warned, which meant the "DFA would lose what appears to be one of the best sources of information to walk into a DEA office in years."

On December 21, without waiting for DEA approval, Meneses and his new partner, the longtime CIA agent "Roberto," left Costa Rica and flew to the United States. Officially, they were on a mission for the Costa Rican DEA: penetrate Blandón's organization and gather intelligence about its activities, under the code-name "Operation Perico." But it appears there were other factors behind the DEA's sudden urge to insert Meneses and the CIA agent into Blandón's organization: to avoid the embarrassment of Meneses falling into the hands of the Costa Rican police and, more importantly, to gather intelligence on just what the impending federal task force investigation in L.A. could expose if it delved too deeply into Blandón's drug ring.

Soon after the new year, a series of strange meetings took place in Los Angeles between Blandón, Meneses, the CIA agent "Roberto," and a top FDN official named Ivan Torres. Torres, a brother of The Trees—Jacinto and Edgar—was also Blandón's chief assistant for the L.A. cocaine operations. Roberto later reported back to the DEA on those meetings and his debriefing reports must have chilled the CIA and DEA to the bone.

"Ivan Torres, a Colombian national, said that his brothers, Jacinto and Edgar Torres, were distributing up to 1,000 kilograms of cocaine on a monthly basis in Los Angeles," one of the reports state. "According to Torres, Meneses and Blandón, Torres was the head of the West Coast branch of the FDN, which was supplying the Contras with weapons. Ivan Torres claims to be in contact with FBI and CIA representatives as a result of his involvement with the FDN. He claims to have been trained by the CIA in San Bernardino in an area made to resemble Nicaraguan terrain. He said the CIA wants to know about drug trafficking but only for their own purposes and not necessarily to assist law enforcement agencies.

"Torres told [Roberto] that CIA representatives are aware of his drug-related activities and that they don't mind. He said they have gone so far as to encourage cocaine traffic by members of the Contras because they know that it is a good source of income. Some of this income has gone into numbered accounts in Europe and Panama. . ."

The Majors' raids, Torres reported proudly, had not interfered with their cocaine sales to "Los Angeles black organizations." They had merely caused some management changes. "Blandón was keeping a low profile and may have turned over cocaine distribution to a black group in South Los Angeles to Jacinto Torres," the DEA report says, describing Blandón's sales to blacks as "half his trade. . .Blandón apparently cleaned up all his stash houses and dealt through intermediaries, if at all."

As for the informants who snitched them off to the DEA and FBI, Blandón and Torres knew who they were, Roberto reported: "These individuals would be killed sometime in the future." Nine months later, one of the men Blandón suspected, FDN member Carlos Rocha, was shot five times in the groin and legs while sitting in a hotel room in Guatemala but survived. Blandón denied any involvement.

What is most strange about these meetings between the Contra traffickers and the CIA agent is the fact that FBI agent Doug Aukland, who was leading the investigation, was never told of them until afterwards. Under Aukland's nose, the Costa Rican DEA office secretly brought Aukland's prime suspect into the country, sent him inside a drug ring the FBI agent had been investigating for months, and sent him back to Costa Rica—all without informing him. Aukland was staking out Blandón's auto dealership, Guerra Auto Sales, at the time of the meetings and he watched for eight straight days as an "unidentified male Latin" left Blandón's car lot in Fontana every morning with FDN official Ivan Torres by his side and drove into L.A. Only later was Aukland told that the mystery man was Norwin Meneses.

"Aukland said that he was particularly angry that he did not get a chance to debrief Meneses and had only last-minute notice that he could speak to [Roberto]," the Justice Department Inspector General said. Outraged, Aukland shot a cable off to FBI headquarters and the San Francisco FBI, telling them about Meneses's newfound love for the DEA. In San Francisco, FBI agent Gordon Gibler read the cable and was "surprised. . .upset that the DEA had not shared this information with the FBI." A few days later, the San Francisco FBI issued arrest warrants for both Roberto and Meneses "because the FBI suspected them of conducting drug deals in San Francisco," Roberto later recalled. They quickly beat feet back to Costa Rica.

Other DEA offices also began wondering what the hell their Costa Rican comrades were up to. The San Francisco office angrily cabled Costa Rica complaining that it had no idea "who was being targeted by Meneses and [Roberto]" or what they were supposedly investigating. An accompanying cable was sent to DEA headquarters in Washington, inquiring "whether an indictment of Meneses by the San Francisco FBI will result in national security problems with other agencies."

It must have caused some concerns to someone because once Meneses had completed his mission and was safely back in his Costa Rican mansion, the drug lord suddenly had a change of heart. He was done.

He just wasn't cut out to be an informant, he decided. As long as the FBI was trying to indict him, Meneses decreed, he would never go back to the United States and would never testify against anyone.

Furious that they had been duped, the FBI decided to even things up. Agents Aukland, Don Hale, and Gordon Gibler had put together enough evidence to indict Meneses for running a continuing criminal enterprise, they believed, a racketeering offense that carries a possible life term. That would fix both his ass and the DEA's for good. Norwin's informant days would be over and he'd never set foot on U.S. soil again. In February, Aukland and San Francisco FBI agent Gibler met with San Francisco U.S. Attorney Joe Russioniello (of Frogman case fame) and presented him with a list of reasons why Meneses needed to be indicted. Their prosecution memo detailed his long history of drug dealing and noted that there were three informants willing to testify publicly, one of whom claimed Meneses was a gun runner who may have worked for the CIA.

It didn't take a week for Russioniello's office to reject the FBI agents' proposal. Meneses would not be prosecuted, the agents were told, so long as the Blandón investigation was still underway in Los Angeles. Russioniello's office had made a deal with the U.S. Attorney in L.A. Once the L.A. case was done, Meneses would then be required to plead guilty to "a cocaine-related charge as part of his cooperation agreement" and maybe even do a little time. Until then, the agents were told, their case was officially on the inactive list.

Thanks to recently released Justice Department records, it now appears that there was no such "cooperation agreement" between Meneses and the Justice Department, that it was an invention to placate the FBI agents after their racketeering case was rejected for prosecution. Justice Department investigators could find no record of any such deal and the two federal prosecutors who were reported to have agreed to this scheme—Crossan Andersen and Eric Swenson—both specifically denied that an agreement ever existed.

If no deal existed, then it means that the real reason for not indicting Meneses in January 1987 was something else entirely. More likely, it was fear of the political blow such an indictment would have dealt the Contra program and the Reagan Administration in their darkest hour. The fact that the DEA was asking if Meneses' indictment would cause "national security problems for other agencies" shows just how wise the agency was to the potential ramifications of the case. And given what else was going on in Washington then, the DEA's nervousness was understandable. Iran-Contra was becoming more scandalous every day and the chances were increasing that the Contra drug issue was going to be dragged out of the shadows and exposed to the klieg lights of a headhunting media. An item in the January 13, 1987 Washington Talk column of the *New York Times*, headlined "Drugs and the Contras," gives an idea of just how horrifying official Washington found that prospect.

"Some senators say that any official inquiry on this topic, and how much if anything American officials knew about it, at this time would create such an uproar that it could derail the main thrusts of the Senate inquiry: to sort out the Reagan Administration's secret arms sales to Iran and diversion of profits to the Contras," the *Times* reported.

With the San Francisco FBI now out of the picture, it was once again up to Riverside agents Aukland and Schrettner. Though their investigation had been burned, undermined, compromised, and backstabbed every step of the way, they still thought they had a few tricks left. For instance, they had Meneses' CIA sidekick, Roberto, who had already successfully penetrated the drug ring once. If he was supposed to be working for the DEA, they wanted him back on the job. In March 1987, Tom Schrettner called DEA agent Gonzalez in Costa Rica and told him to send Roberto back to California "to infiltrate the Blandón organization." But Gonzalez had more bad news about his pair of informants. Roberto wouldn't come to California without Meneses and Meneses wouldn't come back as long as the FBI was looking for him. Gonzalez told Schrettner he was so exasperated with Meneses he'd already gotten rid of him as an informant and would have no further contact, despite having deemed him an extraordinarily productive source only a few months earlier. Sorry, boys.

The agents' investigation sputtered along in this fashion for several more months. In May, federal prosecutor Crossan Andersen called Gonzalez in Costa Rica and told him to get Mr. CIA to California so he could be questioned by the agents. Gonzalez replied that he didn't think Roberto would ever come to California but promised to pass along a message. And by the way, Gonzalez added, he was being transferred to Bolivia and someone else was going to be handling the case from now on.

Only after months of pressure from DEA headquarters did Roberto finally agree to come to Los Angeles to meet with Schrettner and Aukland. According to Aukland, the operative "quickly made it clear that he would not testify." He was "still willing to make introductions" but that was it. He was also tightlipped about anything else he'd heard of Blandón's operation and "did not appreciably add to the information he had already given." He did point out that the Majors had missed $850,000 in cash Blandón had hidden in a safe in the bottom of his swimming pool. And he said FDN official Ivan Torres was bragging that the FBI was keeping him fully informed "of any police investigations against Blandón and himself."

A few days after those dispiriting debriefings, on July 17, 1987, Crossan Andersen pulled the plug on the OCDETF investigation. It had lasted less than seven months and had accomplished nothing—except to provide a cover for Meneses and his CIA associate to visit the U.S. and create suspicions that they were dealing dope. Even though the FBI had shelved a promising case against Meneses in San Francisco to ensure his cooperation in this one, the drug lord had proven virtually worthless.

Aukland lambasted the DEA in his case closing memorandum and in later interviews with Justice Department inspectors. "This case may have been viable with the assistance of DEA," Aukland wrote on September 16, 1987. "However, without that assistance, further efforts will not be worthwhile." Aukland was so frustrated with the case, he told the Justice Department, "he was glad to get rid of it. . .he was not getting sufficient help from the FBI in Los Angeles, Miami, or elsewhere with the case. . .he did not think he was getting cooperation from the DEA in Costa Rica."

Aukland packed up his files on Blandón and shipped them to the Miami FBI office in the vain hope that an agent there might be assigned to check up on the drug dealer the next time he blew through town. No one bothered. "We found no FBI records indicating that the Miami FBI office conducted any additional investigation of Blandón," the Justice Department Inspector General wrote. But once the case was officially shelved Norwin Meneses miraculously reappeared and, even more miraculously, the DFA hired him back and began issuing him visas that allowed him to travel in and out of the U.S. at will.

It was all over. At the height of the American public's outrage over the Iran-Contra scandal, a criminal investigation involving Contra cocaine sales in Los Angeles was dropped by the Justice Department, and a lid of secrecy was clamped on the case, one which would not come off for another ten years. In 1996, when the author began looking into the 1986 raids, sheriff's department officials would initially deny that they had ever occurred.

If the Blandón investigation produced anything useful for the L.A. police, it was the knowledge that Freeway Rick Ross was the Man in South Central. In order to make a dent in the crack trade there, they were going to have to shut him down. "Back then Ricky Ross was a major dealer and he was affecting South Central L.A. He was supplying most of the dope in that region," said Sergeant Robert Sobel, the supervisor of the Majors I squad. "We were hearing from informants about murders and dealing cocaine directly with the Colombians and all kinds of bad things happening in L.A."

Deputy LAPD chief Glenn A. Levant felt that it was "abundantly clear that Ross was a vital link between major drug suppliers and lower level distributors and dealers."

On January 12, 1987, the sheriff's department and the LAPD formally joined forces, creating the Freeway Rick Task Force. It was one of the few times in the history of L.A. law enforcement that a single man had been the target of a multi-jurisdictional police squad. Prevented from waging war on Blandón, the police lowered their sights and trained them on his best customer.

"Ricky Ross is a Seven Four Hoover Crip whose success amongst Black gang members is well known," the task force's organizational report stated. "He has developed a large organization which handles weapons sales, multi-kilo cocaine shipments, and business enterprises as a result of surplus cash. Investments are known to involve real estate, commercial and residential."

Though Ross had made a concerted effort to keep a low profile—tooling around town in a Ford station wagon with fake wood paneling, for example—by 1986–87 he'd become too successful for his own good. One day, he and Ollie Newell sat down and counted up the money they had stashed in their apartment. It took most of the afternoon, but by the time they were finished, Ross said, they were looking at $2.8 million "sitting on the floor, wrapped up in rubber bands." And that was the haul from just one house. They had cash squirreled away in apartments all over Los Angeles. "All of his locations had these big, huge solid steel floor safes," said Sergeant Sobel. "We had to call a locksmith to get him to drill the things. It took a long time to get in."

Ross could no longer hide his fortune, and after a while, he no longer cared to. When he was coming up, he said, "I was like this mysterious guy that everybody heard about but nobody knew." Now he began acting like another man he'd seen and admired in the movies—the Godfather—doling out favors, buying friendship, buying respect. (One L.A. television station would later run a special report entitled *Ricky Ross, Gang Godfather*.)

"He's become quite a heavyweight," LAPD captain Sandy Wasson told UPI. "He's sort of a local hero in the same way the drug cartel leaders are. He employs people. He spends a lot of money in the area and he owns a lot of property either through himself or through his family."

One of Ross's lieutenants, Cornell Ward, later tried to explain it to ABC News by saying: "He was a *good* bad guy."

"And the whole community saw him that way?" correspondent Forrest Sawyer asked.

"Exactly."

"God, that's hard to believe," Sawyer sputtered.

"It's easy," Ward assured him. "All you have to do is just go through the neighborhood and see." So Sawyer did, interviewing people who described Ross as a "well-liked person in the area." They told of the crack king buying new hoops and backboards for the neighborhood parks, field lights, uniforms for local teams. He bought turntables and sound equipment for struggling rap artists, and supplied the eggs for the neighborhood Easter egg hunt. He paid for new pews and an air conditioner for his mother's South Central church and sponsored a semipro football team. Any panhandler on the street would walk away with a wad of bills if he was lucky enough to bump into Freeway Rick.

"Everybody likes him, man, because he helps, he helps a lot of people," one South Central resident told the ABC News crew. "And the brother ain't really done nothing. It's just that he sold dope."

James Galipeau, a veteran probation officer in South Central, told the *L.A. Times* that Ross "was more like a Robin Hood-type guy. You never heard of him getting high or drinking or beating women or dealing dope to kids. The guy really had a reputation for helping people out and giving money back to the community." That popular opinion, along with his wealth and success, made Ross an ideal target for the L.A. law's first concerted attack on the crack suppliers of South Central. According to task force records, the police believed that cutting Ricky Ross down to size would not only be a propaganda victory for law enforcement but would "send a message to up and coming gang members that success is not guaranteed at any level."

"To successfully conclude an investigation aimed at Ricky Ross and his associates will be the genesis of future efforts directed at mid-level drug suppliers," the task force's initial report stated. "Success will send notice to others, and there are, that they are vulnerable and law enforcement can and will escalate the enforcement effort."

The cops estimated they would need sixty days "to infiltrate and conclude enforcement efforts to bring Ross's empire to a semi- or total conclusion." The sheriff's department assigned five narcotics detectives, and the LAPD contributed four, all of whom were "selected for their respective talents including knowledge of gangs and narcotics expertise."

Because Majors I had been sniffing around Ross since mid-1986, its supervisor, Sergeant Robert Sobel, was put in charge of the Freeway Rick Task Force. Sobel, a short, hard-charging narcotics detective, was nicknamed "El Diablo" by his men because of his fierce demeanor and penchant for working his detectives hard.

"He kind of fancied himself as a tough guy. Some guys, when they get a nickname, they say, 'Don't call me that.' But he kind of liked that one," said one of his former subordinates. "He'd stay out two or three days in the field. If he told you to be there at seven in the morning, he'd be there at six."

In keeping with Sobel's personal motto—"March or Die"—all nine task force detectives were put on full cash overtime, so they could keep up twenty-four-hour surveillances and soften the blow by earning extra spending money. "A great many man hours are anticipated by the detectives," a January 1987 LAPD report said. "The overall investigation will require extended hours of work involving standard investigative techniques and surveillance of the primary suspect and associates."

For task force detective Steve Polak, who had been working the streets of South Central since the dawn of the crack era, nailing Ricky Ross became his personal mission in life. He made no bones about his feelings toward the young dealer: He hated him.

"What he did, he poisoned tens of thousands of people. He overdosed them. He killed them. There are a lot of crack babies out there now because of him," said Polak, who holds Ross personally responsible for starting the L.A. crack plague.

"Yeah, I could say he caused it. . .. There's no telling how many tens of thousands of people he touched. And not just in California, but like I said, it spread throughout the entire United States what he did with his organization. So he's responsible. He's responsible for a major cancer that still hasn't stopped spreading, even here in Los Angeles."

With nine detectives assigned to look after him, Freeway Rick started feeling the heat very soon. "When the task force was finally formed, we just dedicated seven days a week on him," Polak said proudly. "And we just dogged him until he couldn't take it anymore." That was putting it mildly. On January 21, 1987, Polak and his men hit the Freeway Motor Inn like a tornado. "The entire motel [all rooms] were searched," a task force report stated. "In room #5 currency and paperwork were seized in Ricky Ross's name, 31 grams of rock cocaine, $6,819 and a sophisticated 800 Mhz hand-held repeater radio was discovered. Investigation disclosed Ricky Ross had purchased six of these radios for approximately $10,000 in cash."

They raided Ross's mother's house on West Eighty-seventh Place the same day, finding "a stolen 9mm Uzi and two point blank bullet proof vests." The search on Annie Ross's house sent Rick into a tirade. He called during the raid and had it out with Polak. "Going after my mom, that was the kind of shit they was doing. Polak even went to court to get her day-care license taken away. Can you believe it?" Ross grumped. A week later, as Annie Ross and a minister friend arrived at the airport to catch a plane to Texas, the task force pulled them into a trailer, searched their luggage and their car, fired questions at them, and held them long enough so that they missed their flight. Then they let them go.

As the weeks went on, it got worse. Three task force detectives searched Ollie Newell's apartment and gave Newell a vicious beating, punching and kicking him and "smothering him with a plastic bag," court records state. Newell's friend, Robert Robertson, also got a beating and had $30,000 taken from him. "They would go raid my rental properties and break the furniture, kick holes in the walls and knock the windows out," Ross complained. "And then these renters would be mad at me, you know, and stop paying their rent."

Ross's attorney, Alan Fenster, started filing formal complaints with the department on behalf of Ross and his friends, accusing the officers of beatings, thefts, property destruction, and false arrests. Sobel and his men fired back with a search warrant for Fenster's financial records, accusing him of being a money launderer and cocaine fiend. Fenster's complaints were perfunctorily investigated by the sheriff's internal affairs branch and closed with no findings of wrongdoing. His complaints to the Justice Department's civil rights division were similarly dismissed.

By the end of January the task force had served fifteen search warrants, arrested five people connected with Ross's organization, and seized nearly eight pounds of cocaine worth an estimated $1.3 million on the street, $63,122 in cash, and twenty guns. They also seized enough paperwork and telephone records to give them an inkling of just how vast Ross's cocaine distribution system was. "The investigation has expanded to include other co-conspirators and demonstrated that Ricky Ross is resourceful, has elaborate communications and is well organized," a task force weekly activity report stated.

Sobel called Ross's enterprise "a cartel. . .it's a major cocaine dealing organization that stretches from California to Texas and Cincinnati, Ohio. We hit one place that was a lab, a full-on laboratory to make rock cocaine, just 30-gallon garbage cans full of cocaine. We seized like 28 pounds of finished product there."

Despite Danilo Blandón's reassurance to Ross that nothing would change, the Nicaraguan had already made up his mind to get out of Los Angeles. The raids on his home and other locations had blown his cover, and now his best customer was under siege. In the aftermath of the raids, Blandón's wife Chepita had begun to show signs of a nervous breakdown. "When I went to Miami to visit my family, the doctor told me. My wife was sick from the nerves. . .. The doctor called me and told me I have to change from L.A. 'If you want to have a wife. . .change from that place, [or] your wife will be in a psychiatric hospital.'"

There were business considerations as well. Blandón's attorney, Bradley Brunon, said Blandón's used car business had been extremely successful and had enjoyed "widespread patronage from the Latin community." But the raids "engendered widespread publicity in that small community and Mr. Blandón was practically out of business." After getting word in December 1986 that no criminal charges would result, he quietly began closing up shop, selling his used car lot, his restaurants, putting his house up for sale, collecting his debts, and sending Chepita and the girls ahead to Miami to stay with her uncle, Orlando Murillo, while he tied up loose ends. By the time he was ready to go, he was packing $1.6 million in cash and a whole new attitude.

"I was prepared to change my life," he testified. But that didn't mean letting a perfectly good cocaine ring go to waste. There was still quite a bit of money left for his countrymen to wring out of the streets of South Central. "I handed it to the Nicaraguans," Blandón said, referring to his drug enterprise. "I introduced my customers to them and they continued doing the business."

"Using your old contacts?"

"Yes, and my supplier and my buyers."

In other words, despite the fact that the LAPD, L.A. Sheriff's Department, FBI, DEA, CIA, DIA, and IRS were now fully aware of their cocaine ring, the Nicaraguans kept right on dealing. The only thing that changed was the man on top—and even that was not much of a difference. Blandón's successors were two of Norwin Meneses's cocaine-dealing colleagues, Roger Sandino Martínez, known as "Chocoyo," and Jose "Chinito" Gonzalez.

"Roger Sandino was one of these guys from the old days, the old Contra connection," Blandón's lawyer, Bradley Brunon, said. "He was an Original Gangster Contra." He was also a veteran drug trafficker who seemed to enjoy the same kind of protection as Blandón. DEA records show that Sandino was arrested in October 1980 in Hialeah, Florida, in possession of 50,000 Quaalude tablets. He pleaded guilty to conspiracy and was sentenced to thirty months in federal prison. Despite his conviction and the fact that he was in the U.S. illegally at the time of his arrest, Sandino was never deported, and he continued dealing drugs. In 1984 he set up an import-export business in Miami with the help of a Coral Gables attorney who was in business with several of Blandón's FDN associates, including former National Guard major general Gustavo "El Tigre" Medina and businessman Donald Barrios.

Sandino was busted again in April 1986, this time as part of the biggest cocaine case on the Atlantic Coast. DEA agents in Norfolk, Virginia, charged him and fourteen other people—including the son-in-law of Bolivian cocaine kingpin Roberto Suarez-Gómez—with conspiracy to import 700 pounds of cocaine worth an estimated $158 million. The dope wasn't theirs, however. It belonged to the DEA, which brought it into the United States from Bolivia to use as bait in a reverse sting, a scheme in which the police pose as cocaine sellers in order to seize money from drug buyers. In this case, they seized $1.3 million from Sandino and his associates.

The DEA has censored many of its records dealing with Roger Sandino, citing privacy reasons, so his role in the Bolivian drug operation isn't known. What is clear is that he was never brought to trial. Though arrested, Sandino somehow managed to wriggle out of custody, and the DEA issued a fugitive warrant for his capture. (When L.A. detective Tom Gordon ran Sandino's name through NADDIS several months later, however, there was no mention in his file of the Virginia indictment or the fugitive warrant.)

Months after fleeing Virginia, Sandino showed up in Los Angeles, just in time to take over the South Central drug ring from the departing Danilo Blandón. After Blandón moved, Ross said, he would call him in Miami and place his orders, and Roger Sandino's partner, Jose Gonzalez, would handle the pickups and deliveries. Blandón confirmed that he continued working with the Nicaraguan operation in L.A., solving problems, settling disputes, and collecting commissions from the drug sales. "They used to be calling me all the time if they have some problem," Blandón said. "I was the middleman, you see, like—I was making something. I was making something. . .then I had to call Rick to tell him, 'Hey, what's going on?'"

By then, Ross said, the cocaine business was losing some of its allure. His friend and mentor was three thousand miles away. He owned about $5 million worth of real estate and still had more money than he could spend. And for the first time, Ross said, he began having second thoughts about just how mellow his product really was. His current girlfriend, Mary Louise Bronner, the mother of two of his five children, was now a crack addict, thanks to him. The chickens were starting to come home.

"At first, I had never saw anybody addicted to cocaine. It took a while before—before it started to affect anybody that we dealt with. I mean nobody—at first, it was like everybody that was using cocaine drove big ears and, you know, stayed in the Baldwin Hills area and then it started to change and we started to see the effects that it was having." Ross said the first twinges of conscience came when Jocelyn Clements, a longtime friend and one of his earliest customers, turned into a raging crackhead. "I found out that she was taking all her welfare money and her food stamps and stuff and spending it on cocaine," he said.

But there were other reasons for his restiveness. By early 1987 the L.A. crack market had become saturated, so much so that many gang members were hitting the road to find greener pastures and emptier street corners. Crips and Bloods were bumping into each other in cities across the United States. "Everywhere you go, you know what I'm saying, anywhere you go, you're gonna see some people from L.A.," one Crip dealer told California Department of Justice researchers in 1988. "If they got, you know, a dope house out there or a dope street out there. . .you'll run into somebody on that street from L.A."

Said another: "Out of town where nobody else ain't at. . .that's where the money's being made because there's too much competition in Los Angeles. It's got too many dope dealers in Los Angeles competing against each other. So they take it out of town. The profits are better. Here you can sell an ounce for $600. Over there you can sell it for $1,500." Cocaine prices in L.A. had been dropping through the floor because so much of it was coming in. Kilos that had once cost Ross $50,000 were now going for $12,000, which the *L.A. Times* blamed partly on Ross, since he was buying in such volume.

By 1986–87, Ross said, a good chunk of his business consisted of exporting the drug to higher-priced areas, where he was able to undercut the local yokels by thousands of dollars a key. He'd made connections in Bakersfield, Fresno, St. Louis, Texas, and Alabama. Police in St. Louis said cocaine prices there went into a free fall once the Crips and Bloods arrived. "Gang members have flooded the market here with excellent cocaine at good prices. The local dealers have to succumb to these people," one detective complained to the *St. Louis Post-Dispatch*.

The L.A. market was also getting tougher. Ross was no longer the only crack dealer in South Central with Colombian connections. He had begun facing competition from Brian "Waterhead Bo" Bennett, a fast-rising young dealer who'd hooked up with a Colombian named Antonio Villabona in 1985 and started moving large amounts of cocaine. But Bennett was sloppy and obvious, carrying brown paper bags stuffed with cash around in public. Within a year the police were onto him and he was arrested in 1988. L.A. law enforcement officials held a press conference to announce that, for the first time, they had proof that the black gangs had made direct connections with the Colombian cartels.

"What they didn't realize," observed *L.A. Times* reporter Jesse Katz, "was that Ricky had hit that level about six years earlier."

Danilo's decision to move back east made Ross think. If Danilo felt it was time to hang it up, maybe it was. He was usually right about things like that. Ross started scaling back his drug sales, gradually turning over the business to his partner, Ollie Newell, and their lieutenants, Mike Smith and Cornell Ward. He began making plans for an early retirement.

"I had slowed down on my drug activity tremendously," Ross said. "I might have been selling once a week to maybe one or two people. They would call me and say that they needed something, and I would call Mr. Blandón and get it and give it to them. So it was hard for the police to catch me doing something because I was barely doing anything. You know, they thought I was still going full bore, but I wasn't."

The Freeway Rick Task Force wasn't slowing down a bit, though. Every week another batch of search warrants would be served, another pile of cash would be seized, and another one of Ross's friends or relatives would get roughed up or hauled off to jail. "We had some very good informants that were very close to Ricky Ross and he knew it. Ricky Ross was getting upset," Sobel said.

In their rush to put Ross out of business, though, the detectives' tactics became increasingly questionable. According to federal court records, the task force ransacked an apartment owned by one of Ross's girlfriends in February 1987, picked up a doll belonging to his daughter, and then "as a threat to Ricky Ross, they plunged a knife into the doll's head, pinning it to a wall, along with a note: 'This is you, Ricky.'"

Sergeant Sobel said that "as time went on it became common knowledge among the entire "Risk force that [LAPD detective] Polak was carrying around a kilo of dope in the tire well of his vehicle. Polak would he bragging about a present for Ricky Ross when they ran into him. There were constant jokes made about the dope they had ready [to plant on] Ricky Ross when they found him."

One evening in mid-April 1987, Ross, Newell, and Cornell Ward closed up Rick's auto parts store on Western Avenue, the Big Palace of Wheels, and piled into the crack king's brand-new Ford station wagon, intending to cruise around for a while. "Hooked in the rearview mirror and I saw some cars coming up behind me with no lights on and first I thought it was somebody maybe trying to rob us or something. We didn't know. So I started speeding in the car and then a red light caught me and a car pulled up right up on the side of me and the guy let his window down."

Newell recognized the driver. It was task force detective Sergeant Robert Tolmaire, a black officer who was regarded by Ross's crew as the most dangerous and violent detective on the whole squad. "He stuck this gun out the window, pointing it at the ear," Ross said. Newell turned to Ross and asked what he intended to do. Ross said he didn't know.

"Well," Newell replied calmly, "you know they're going to kill you. They already said they're going to kill you."

Ross stomped on the gas and roared through the traffic light, with the detectives in hot pursuit. He raced down a side street and decided to make a run for it. The station wagon swerved violently into a driveway and Ross leaped out, sprinting through a yard and hopping a fence.

"Behind me, I could hear them shooting," Ross said. The shots missed him, and he managed to hitch a ride on a passing bus and escape.

Newell and Ward weren't so lucky. They said they were handcuffed and tossed into the back of a police car, and the deputies took turns beating on them with metal flashlights and leather saps. Ward was also smacked with a shotgun.

Then, according to court records, LAPD detective Steve Polak drove up, opened the trunk of his car, and "retrieved a kilo of cocaine in a black gym bag. Polak then displayed the bag to the others present, claiming that Ross had dropped the bag as he ran." Since shots had been fired that had to be explained, the deputies also agreed to accuse Ross of shooting at them.

Ross was charged with a variety of crimes—four counts of conspiracy, three counts of transporting controlled substances, one count of assault with a deadly weapon upon a police officer—and was declared a fugitive from justice. Assuming that every cop in L.A. would be gunning for him as a result of the assault charge, Ross went into hiding, lying low for three weeks as the task force scoured the city, tearing through his friends' houses on an all-out manhunt. On May 5, 1987, he decided things had gone far enough.

"I felt that it went past just. . .duty," Ross explained in court testimony. "My whole thing, I felt, became personal. It wasn't like just Joe the drug dealer. It had become more of a personal kind of vendetta with them and me. I didn't have no vendetta with them because if they arrested me, that was their job, but it seemed like they had a vendetta with me."

Ross drove down to the sheriff's office and turned himself in. He was locked up in the L.A. County Jail on a $1 million bond. The LAPD issued a press release, announcing the demise of Ross's "multi-million dollar mid-level rock cocaine organization. . .estimated [to have] netted over $12 million during the first four months of 1987." The body count was impressive indeed: sixty-one search warrants; thirty-nine arrests, including that of the ringleader; and $13.3 million in cocaine seized, along with $240,000 in cash and sixty-two firearms, including "revolvers, semi-automatic pistols, shotguns, Uzi's, Mac-10's, a fully automatic Mac-11 machine gun" as well as "five bulletproof vests."

The investigation had also "developed comprehensive intelligence information regarding street gang involvement in rock cocaine trafficking throughout the Western United States," Deputy LAPD chief Levant wrote, and he called the Freeway Rick Task Force "a model for other jurisdictions to follow to attack mid-level cocaine trafficking in California."

But the celebrations were destined to be short. Apparently unable to resist the temptation, several members of the Freeway Rick Task Force dropped by the jail to inspect their prize. They started goading Ross about Alan Fenster, telling him that his coke-snorting lawyer had abandoned him and was leaving him to hang. His only hope, they told him, was to confess and go to work for them because if he didn't, he was going to be in jail for a very, very long time. Fenster was never going to get him out of this jam.

They'd set him up, the detectives crowed, and they'd set him up good. He was going down for the count because they had their stories worked out, and the case was tight as a virgin. "The discussion was tape recorded," U.S. Justice Department records state. "They discussed their frame-up of Ross and unsuccessfully tried to turn Ross against his Colombian cocaine source. Ultimately, Ross filed a motion to dismiss based on the encounter and the existence of the tape recording was revealed at the hearing. The judge insisted that the tape be produced."

Before it was turned over, amateurish attempts were made to doctor it. A forensic expert concluded that eleven erasures had been made in an effort to obliterate the detectives' accusations against Fenster and their discussions of a beating administered to Ross's brother, David.

After hearing the tape, the judge threw the charges out of court.

Freeway Rick was free once again.

In one month, he'd dodged bullets twice—both lead and legal—and he didn't intend to give the task force a third shot at him. Someone else could be the crack king from now on.

21

"I could go anywhere in the world and sell dope"

Ricky Ross moved as far away from Los Angeles as he could get, taking Mary Bronner and their children to Cincinnati, Ohio. It was where Bronner grew up; Ross had accompanied her home once as she attempted to kick her crack habit, and he had taken to the tidy conservative midwestern city on the banks of the Ohio River. The neighborhoods were green and quiet, lined with big leafy trees. The homes were spacious, set on seemingly endless yards, not stacked on top of each other like the dusty matchboxes in Los Angeles.

"It was real cool," Ross said. He would use his time in Cincinnati "to back away from the game, just mellow out. I thought I'd get away from it, you know." Though most of his assets were tied up in L.A. real estate, he'd taken $300,000 in cash with him. In a city where a palatial home could be had for a third of that, it was plenty of money. His businesses and rental properties in L.A. were still producing revenue. "Financially," Ross said, "I was set."

He moved to a townhouse on the east side of Hamilton County, in a comfortable Republican suburb of rolling hills and minivans. "We was trying to get away from drug life—her using and me dealing," Ross explained. "Basically, I just wanted to be a small-time person, you know, with a nice house, with a nice car. I wanted kids. I wanted my kids to play tennis. I wanted my kids to win Wimbledon. I wanted them to go to college."

But Ross had never been able to sit back and take things easy. He had to be in motion, working some kind of deal, so he indulged himself in his other great obsession: real estate. He liked to refer to himself half-jokingly as a property junkie. "I was buying property, old houses, rebuilding them. . .I had become pretty knowledgeable on how to rebuild houses." It was undramatic but satisfying work, and gradually L.A. began to seem farther than 2,400 miles away. Ricky Ross was twenty-seven years old, and as the weeks stretched into months he began to feel at ease. Years later he would look back on that period wistfully. "Hook at myself now and say, 'Man, you had it made.'"

He would get occasional calls from Danilo in Miami, and they'd catch up. "We stayed on a relationship. You know, we talked and he was still dealing with Ollie. He didn't quit. When I quit, Ollie didn't stop." But Ross said the Nicaraguan didn't like dealing with Newell, whom he referred to as "Big Charlie."

"Basically, he would tell me: 'Why'd you quit? I need you. You know Big Charlie don't take care of the business like you do. . .. He was saying, basically, that Charlie didn't pay him like he was supposed to and, you know, he was slow, stuff like that. He said that I took care of my business the way I was supposed to, and I did what I told him I was going to do."

Blandón denied he was personally selling drugs at that time but admitted that he was overseeing the drug sales of his successors. "I knew everything," he said. Because of the way the cocaine business worked, he'd had to vouch for Roger Sandino and Jose Gonzalez, and that meant mediating the disputes and solving the problems that arose between Ross's crew, the Nicaraguans, and their Colombian suppliers.

Blandón agreed that Ross's replacements "weren't taking care of the business" and said there were frequent feuds with Meneses's men. "They were calling me all the time. 'Hey, the order didn't come with the money. The order didn't come with the merchandise,' So that's the relationship I had."

But most of his time and attention, Blandón said, was devoted to what he called his "legitimate businesses." After he got to Miami, Blandón invested his L.A. drug profits in a string of companies, sometimes in partnership with an exiled Nicaraguan judge, Jose Macario Estrada, a family friend who was also Blandón's immigration lawyer. Like Blandón, Macario was deeply involved with the FDN and its Miami support network, working with the Contras to arrange travel papers and work permits for rebel soldiers and their families. He also helped to create a number of nonprofit foundations in Miami that supported the Contra cause.

"I was with the FDN here in Miami, working in Miami since 1980," Macario confirmed in an interview with the author. Before the revolution, acquaintances said, he'd worked at the U.S. embassy in Managua, helping out in the cultural attaches office. "We always joked that he was working for the CIA," said one. Macario denied it, but it's easy to see why others might have gotten that impression. He had CIA agents for friends. In fact, they'd saved his life in 1979.

"A squad of Sandinista revolutionaries came to pass me by the arms, you know? Came to, what do you call it, eliminate me in a summary proceedings." The next day he decided to seek asylum in the embassy of Colombia, which, as it turned out, was located in the home of Macario's friend, attorney Carlos Icaza. A son-in-law of General Edmundo Meneses, Icaza was the personal attorney of Adolfo Calero, who had been a CIA agent before the 1979 revolution and would become the Contras' political leader. Icaza shielded Macario from the Sandinistas for a time, and Macario escaped the country seven months after the revolution on the last day of February 1980. "I have the anniversary of my escape once every four years," he joked.

Macario's protector, Carlos Icaza, was publicly accused by the Sandinistas of being a CIA agent in 1983, and a warrant was issued for his arrest. He was charged with being a central conspirator in a foiled CIA plot to poison Nicaragua's foreign minister with a bottle of thalium-laced Benedictine liqueur. Icaza fled Nicaragua and went to work for the FDN in Honduras, as did his wife. Later he became an attorney for Norwin Meneses (among other things, he arranged the sale of a Salvador Dali painting Norwin owned) and served as corporate lawyer for Norwin's suspected money launderer, economist Orlando Murillo.

In late 1986 Jose Macario was appointed to a blue-ribbon commission by the FDN to look into newspaper allegations that the Contras were squandering U.S. humanitarian aid money. Another member of that FDN panel was accountant Rene Gonzalez of the Peat Marwick & Mitchell office in Caracas, Venezuela.

After exonerating the FDN, both men became business partners with Danilo Blandón in a company called Mex-US Import and Export Inc. Other directors of that company included Blandón's Mexican college friend and convicted money launderer Sergio Guerra and a Panamanian banker, Jose Fernando Soto, the longtime representative of the Swiss Bank Corp. in Panama and an old friend of Chepita's uncle, Orlando Murillo. Blandón also bought his wife a business: Pupi's Children's Boutique, which Chepita ran from a shopping mall in Sweetwater. And he bought into a Nicaraguan restaurant in Miami called La Parrilla.

La Parrilla had been started by Anastasio Somoza's former counterinsurgency expert, Major General Gustavo Medina, and Miami businessman Donald Barrios, the FDN supporter who'd sent Blandón to fetch Norwin Meneses from LAX six or seven years earlier in 1980 or 1981. Ricky Ross's former cocaine supplier, Henry Corrales, also owned a piece of the action, court records show. The elegant restaurant became a hangout for Contra leaders and was the site of pro-Contra demonstrations and seminars. The *Miami Herald* lightheartedly described the cuisine as "Contra cooking from ex-Somoza General Gustavo Medina." Another story noted that "despite the proximity of Fontainebleau Park, the apartment complex that so reminds Nicaraguans of the Open Tres apartments in their native Managua, La Parrilla customers are primarily Cuban."

"The Cubans, our compatriots in exile, also are very fond of Nicaraguan food," General Medina explained.

Blandón's restaurant was also a big hit with the food critics. "The steak melts in your mouth," twittered one *Miami Herald* reviewer. "Service is akin to the poshest French restaurant." In 1987 the *Herald* named it "the best Nicaraguan restaurant in Dade [County]" and awarded it four stars, the paper's highest rating.

But the cocaine lord's main investment was in Alpha II Rent-a-Car, which began with an office outside the Miami International Airport and spread to twenty-four other locations in southern Florida. Blandón's rent-a-car business was so successful, court records show, he became an authorized outlet for Chrysler Corporation and General Motors vehicles.

Ross said he visited Blandón in Miami several times in mid-1987 and was treated like visiting royalty; Blandón provided him with free rental cars and complimentary hotel rooms. Meanwhile, Ross turned Blandón's daughters onto rap music, bringing them the latest CDs and amazing them with stories about the rappers he'd known and bankrolled from his neighborhood. "Danilo took me around and introduced me to his friends, like he was showing me off. I was probably the only black guy any of them had ever met," he said. Several times, Ross said, Blandón dropped hints that he'd like to do some business with him.

"He kept saying he could get me some stuff for really cheap and we could make a lot of money with it in Cincinnati." Ross knew Danilo was right. He'd checked around town and had been amazed at how much folks in Ohio were paying for their dope. "I got down there and started meeting people and they were telling me, 'Aw, man, it's this and it's that.' Then my friend from Miami came by and said, 'Hey, man, come on, I'll give it for you for ten.' So he was talking about giving it to me for $10,000 and in Cincinnati, keys was selling for $50,000!" Ross laughed. "Ounces were like $2,400. It was like when I first started."

When Blandón called him from Detroit one day in the fall of 1987 and asked him to come up for a meeting, Ross said he knew what his old friend had in mind. And, just as surely, he knew that he would get in his car and make the four-hour trip north. It wasn't just because Danilo was asking, though Ross said his relationship with the Nicaraguan was such that he would have done almost anything for him. The real reason, Ross knew, was that he missed cocaine trafficking. He was good at it; it was in every fiber of his being.

"The business," as Danilo called it, had been custom-made for him. It was his calling. God, Ross firmly believed, had put him on earth to be the Cocaine Man. When he wasn't dealing, he was just like anybody else, maybe worse—an illiterate high-school dropout. A zero. But give him a pager and some dope, and he was a virtuoso. There weren't too many people in this world who could dance through a minefield of cops and snitches juggling multimillion-dollar drug deals and emerge unscratched.

"It got to the point where I enjoyed selling drugs so much that I could be in bed with my woman and, if the right person paged me, I'd get up," Ross told the *Los Angeles Times*. So when Danilo offered him fifteen kilos and a good price, Ross said, "I told him to bring them to me. I'll take them." He was back in play.

Making Cincinnati his own was effortless. By then, Ross was an old hand at creating new crack markets. "I knew the recipe. It's just like it was in L.A. If you want to get in with the blacks, you find out who the shot-caller [is]. And you talk to him and you get him on your side. If he gives you permission, you can go to his neighborhood and talk to his guys. So that's what I did in Lincoln Heights," Ross later told a Cincinnati reporter.

From there, he branched out to Over-the-Rhine, another poor inner-city neighborhood, and then took his show to the suburbs: Avondale, Mt. Airy, Bond Hill, St. Bernard, Lockland, and Walnut Hills, using the same marketing gimmicks he'd perfected in L.A.—free cocaine, smoke parties, volume discounts. Once those operations were up and running, Ross called back to L.A. and invited his friends to come out and staff them.

"The recruits were given apartments, beepers, cocaine, and instructtions on how to conduct street sales by using phone booths, pagers, and mopeds. The drugs were stored in the trunks of parked ears placed around the neighborhoods," the Justice Department's Inspector General reported. "Most of these people were members of gangs, most notably the Crips."

Suddenly, Cincinnati had two problems it never had before: Crips and crack.

"In 1987, we had lots of crack in the east and west but not in Cincinnati until Ricky Ross came here. There's no doubt in my mind crack in Cincinnati can be traced to Ross," said Sharonville, Ohio, police specialist Robert Enoch.

But Ross didn't limit himself to the Queen City. He began "going out of town," and the story was the same wherever he went. With Blandón's cocaine prices, he could blow the locals out of the water. So he did. His dope was turning up in the hands of crack dealers in Toledo, Cleveland, Columbus, Hamilton, Middle-town, and Fairfield, Ohio, Indianapolis, St. Louis, Atlanta, and Texas. Even in faraway Seattle, police officers viewed Ross' drug ring as "the single most important group distributing crack cocaine in the Seattle-Tacoma area."

"That was a guy who could sell Popsicles to an Eskimo," said San Fernando Police lieutenant Ernest I falcon, a veteran undercover detective. "You want to say lie's a low-life, no-good piece of crap. But you got to respect some of these guys for their ambition and cunning. You got to give the devil his due."

"I could go anywhere in the world and sell dope," Ross said. "I just need one person in a city."

Mike Horton, a police officer assigned to a DEA task force in Ohio, said Ross became known as the "10-million-dollar man" in Cincinnati because of the money he was supposedly making.

Ross said he made nowhere near that much. In ten months, he said, he sold 300 or 400 kilos of Blandón's cocaine in the Midwest, netting around $2 million in profits. He flew to Miami once a month to drop off cash. "Either we met there, or we met in New York. I think we might have met in Atlanta one time too," he said. He said he met with Blandón and a Colombian named Tony in New York City several times to place orders for cocaine.

Blandón confirmed that, and said he and Roger Sandino visited Ross in Cincinnati. Ross also wired money to Florida in Chepita's name, Blandón said, but claimed it was paid to Sandino "because Roger Sandino was my partner in the business."

At other times, Ross said, his friends in L.A. would just stick the dope on a bus and let Greyhound do the driving. And that was how Cincinnati authorities finally discovered who was bringing all that crack into their city.

In September 1988 an eastbound Greyhound eased into a station in New Mexico, and a state policeman walked by the silver behemoth with a drug-sniffing dog. The canine got near the luggage compartment and went crazy. Inside, the officer found a suitcase carrying nine kilos of cocaine, worth around $100,000. The luggage tag said the bag was bound for Cincinnati. A call was placed to the Cincinnati DEA, asking for advice. Let it come through, the DEA said. We'll stake out the bus station and see who shows up.

A few days later one of Ross's employees, a young L.A. Crip named Alphonso Jeffries, ambled into the bus depot and claimed the suitcase, springing the DEA's trap.

Ross got the news and quickly assessed the damage. Nine kilos was enough to put Alphonso Jeffries away for a couple decades or more. The pressure would be on him to roll over and give up someone else, and if the dominos started falling, they would form a straight line to Freeway Rick. Ross contacted

Jeffries and told him all his legal bills would be paid and he'd have the best lawyers in town, as long as he kept his mouth shut. Jeffries told him he would.

But it didn't matter. The mere fact that a Crip had been caught in Cincinnati with cocaine "led to the FBI and DEA field offices in Cincinnati to investigate allegations that the Crips. . .were flooding the Cincinnati market with inexpensive, high quality cocaine," the Justice Department reported. The feds were on the hunt and Ross knew it was only a matter of time.

Then, as if he didn't have enough problems, Ross discovered that one his underlings was screwing his girlfriend. That clinched it; he was getting fucked every which way in Cincinnati. It was time to go home.

"I'd been gone a little over a year, so I felt that everything had died down and people had forgot about me," he said. "I sold what I had and I quit."

When he got back to L.A. in the fall of 1988, he wanted nothing to do with cocaine. He was too worried about Alphonso Jeffries, whose steadfast silence on Rick's behalf had been rewarded with a twenty-year prison sentence. That was straight federal time. No parole. For all Ross knew, Jeffries had already rolled over on him. Ross went into the home improvement business, buying specialized equipment to spray acoustic ceilings, painting, and waiting to see if the other shoe would drop.

"I guess about a month after I got back in L.A. he [Blandón] started calling me again and asking me what was the matter, why I'd stopped, and that Charlie and him wasn't doing what they were supposed to be doing." Ross said he told Blandón to forget it. He wasn't getting anywhere near dope. "I had enough money. . .I was working and I was just able to resist him."

Blandón called two or three times a month, Ross said, until the word got out that Ross was under investigation. A grand jury in Smith County, Texas, returned an indictment charging Ross with cocaine conspiracy. He had called his cousins, the Mauldins, in Texas in May 1988 and discussed a cocaine deal with them on a monitored line. A fugitive warrant was issued.

"About three months after I was in L.A., they did a program on CBS that was talking about me, that I was under investigation in Cincinnati and also in Texas," he said. "After the CBS program showed, [Danilo] stopped calling me."

A lot of people stopped calling after that. Ricky Ross was starting to smell like dead meat. As Ross had feared, Alphonso Jeffries had broken. He told the police about Ross's trips to New York City and California to pick up cocaine in the fall of 1988. They'd brought twenty kilos back from New York the first time, he said, and ten kilos the second. DEA agents found travel records and motel receipts that confirmed Jeffries's statements, and they found Ross's fingerprints on several incriminating documents.

In June 1989, Ross and thirteen other people were indicted on federal charges of cocaine conspiracy in Cincinnati, and another fugitive warrant was issued. Now he had the state of Texas *and* the U.S. government after him. Ross melted into South Central and kept his head clown, staying busy with his construction work. Months went by, and he heard nothing. One afternoon in late November, he was pouring concrete at an apartment building when an unmarked police car came screeching up.

"One of the guys says, 'That was the narcs.' And so when he said it was the narcs, I ran, and when I ran they started shooting at me. I think they shot about twelve times at me." Bullets zipping by, Ross scampered down East Coldon Avenue, found an unlocked house, and barricaded himself inside, retreating to a bedroom closet. In the darkness, Ross pulled out a cell phone and frantically tried to call his lawyer, Alan Fenster, while the police yelled at him to come out. A two-man SWAT team arrived with a dog and approached the house cautiously.

"They told me to come out," Ross said, "and the next thing I knew they kicked the door in. They came in with a dog. The dog came to the closet and he alerted that I was in the closet."

The police pulled open the door, and Ross found himself staring into the glare of several flashlights. He was told to come out with his hands in front of him and to get down on his knees, which he did. He was handcuffed, and "then all of a sudden the dog just about went crazy. He started biting—he started biting me all up in between my legs, on my butt cheeks and he—he did it so long that I couldn't take the pain no more, so I kicked him."

All the pent-up rage and frustration that the Los Angeles police had saved up for Freeway Rick erupted in the next instant.

"They started hitting me in the head with flashlights, and one of them broke his flashlight on the top of my head right here. And after he did that he went in the kitchen and got a big frying pan—I think it was a 15-pound frying pan, he said in court—and he clubbed me over the head with that. And then he was kicking me all over my back and in my stomach. I had boot marks all over me, all over my body." Ross was taken to a hospital and charged with assault on a police officer. The police claimed Ross had attacked them with a frying pan, so, naturally, they'd had to subdue him.

Bruised, sore, and swollen, the former crack king of L.A. was unceremoniously dumped into a cell at the Los Angeles County Metropolitan Correctional Center to await extradition to Cincinnati. In all his life, things had never seemed more hopeless. Politically, the timing of his capture couldn't have been worse. In the past year, the police and the media had finally discovered the connection between the L.A. gangs and the spread of crack and automatic weapons to cities and towns across America. Newspapers, magazines, and TV shows were filled with stories about L.A. gangbangers showing up in small-town USA, packing Uzis and terrorizing the locals.

"Los Angeles drug gangs are spreading cocaine and violence in cities nationwide and may become a new form of organized crime unless they are stopped soon," worried a July 1988 Associated Press story that appeared in many newspapers around the country. 'Authorities say members of two prominent rival drug gangs from Los Angeles, the Crips and the Bloods, have infiltrated cities from Alaska to Washington, D.C."

During the 1988 presidential campaign Washington had gone on an antidrug crusade, in many ways more extreme than the one in 1986, because now there were some facts to back up the fear. Congressional hearings had unearthed the links between crack profits and the proliferation of assault rifles in the inner cities. Government studies had been done, showing that L.A. had indisputably become the main source of the nation's crack contagion, a giant chancre oozing death and violence. "Los Angeles has become the transshipment area for this problem," testified assistant L.A. County sheriff Jerry Harper. "We are being contacted regularly by officers from Oregon, Washington, Arizona, Texas, Kansas, Missouri, Ohio, Louisiana, Florida, Hawaii and all with regard to gang members, Crips and Bloods, and so forth, who have emanated from Los Angeles and are transporting their drugs to other states across the nation."

Los Angeles U.S. attorney Robert Bonner told Congress that "these emerging modern-day gangsters have set up raw cocaine distribution outlets in cities across the country. I can assure you and members of this committee that if these gangs are allowed to become entrenched in the drug distribution business on a nationwide basis, which is the direction they are headed, in the coming few years we will find ourselves with an organized crime problem that will put the Mafia to shame."

Alarmed by such reports, Congress passed a whole new set of anti-crack laws that, among other things, made even first-time offenders like Ross eligible for a mandatory ten-year sentence, no parole.

Ross knew there was a good chance they would nail him to the wall in Cincinnati, a city that had sent Larry Flynt to jail just for selling dirty magazines. If anyone ranked lower than a pornographer, it was someone like Ricky Ross. He epitomized everything that decent, upright midwesterners had come to hate and fear about the 1980s—a black crack kingpin bringing all his Crip friends in from the Left Coast to pollute their city with drugs and gangs. They knew how to deal with people like him.

And if, by some miracle, he managed to beat the federal rap, he had the folks in Texas waiting to get their hooks into him, with their hundred-year prison sentences and well-known love of black drug dealers. Try as he might, he could see no way out. He wasn't dealing with the goons from the Freeway Rick Task Force this time. These federal agents weren't going to do anything stupid. Barring some divine intervention, he was finished.

Ross passed several gloomy months awaiting extradition in the L.A. prison, growing more disconsolate with each passing day. His friends gradually quit coming to see him. His properties began going into foreclosure. Everything he'd worked for was crumbling away.

Then the people from the U.S. Department of Justice came calling, and by the time they left, he could barely stop smiling. God, it seemed, had not forsaken the Cocaine Man after all.

"They can't touch us"

When Ross was led from his cell at the MCC to meet the representatives of the Justice Department, his thoughts had been with Danilo Blandón. The feds, Ross assumed, wanted his source. It was what the task force had been after when they came to see him the last time he'd been locked up. That was the way things worked. You got busted, and they came to you with The Choice: be a rat or be a jailbird.

He'd managed to duck the situation the last time, but he wouldn't have that luxury again. The feds had him by the balls. Now, it appeared, he would be forced to confront the question he'd always dreaded: Could he rat out Danilo? "He was Danilo, you know? He was, he was like my God, my number one person," Ross said. "Hadn't many people been there for me, you know, when I was coming up. So Danilo was somebody that I felt had always been in my corner and he always showed like he cared about me."

But to Ross's surprise and relief, the federal people had no interest in the Nicaraguan. "They didn't ask me nothing about who I was getting it from," Ross said. All the justice Department wanted to hear about were his experiences with the detectives on the Freeway Rick Task Force. They'd been reading those complaints he and his friends had filed against the officers. Were they true? And would he be willing to testify to it?

Ross was dumbfounded. He'd been willing to testify two years ago, but nobody had wanted to hear about it then. Besides, the Justice Department's Civil Rights Division had already looked into his complaints and dismissed them for lack of evidence, or so he'd been told. Yet now they wanted to know if he would be a U.S. government witness against the police. A drug dealer helping to put narcs in jail? If that didn't beat all.

Ross had one question: What was in it for him? It could change the way certain people felt about him, he was told. If he cooperated and testified truthfully and honestly, it would help when he appeared before the judge in Ohio for sentencing. Plus, the government might decide not to seize his properties or his remaining cash under the asset forfeiture laws. And there was the added attraction of getting back at the cops who had harassed him and his family.

To the Justice Department, Ricky Ross was no longer a dope peddler. He had become "a percipient witness in a case involving allegations of serious misconduct" by members of the Majors and the Freeway Rick Task Force. An FBI sting called "Operation Big Spender" was behind Ross's newfound credibility with the federal government. "This may be a terrible thing to say," said L.A. County sheriff Sherman Block, "but as we got into this thing, it became obvious that the stories being told by the crooks were more credible than the stories told by our officers."

In the fall of 1989, after Block received anonymous complaints that the Majors were ripping off drug dealers, the FBI sent an undercover agent into the Majors' territory posing as a courier for a money launderer. The Majors were tipped off that he was carrying a load of cash, which could be found in his room at the Warner Center Marriott in Woodland Hills. The FBI had reserved three adjoining rooms at the hotel. The "courier" was in the middle. On one side were agents manning video and audio gear; on the other, a SWAT team.

It was like dangling a pork chop in front of a dog. Seizing cash had become the Majors' specialty by the end of the 1980s. They were no longer real narcotics detectives anymore. Thanks to expanded asset forfeiture laws, the Majors had become sin-tax collectors for Sheriff Block and L.A. County.

In 1988 alone, the sheriff's office hauled in an astonishing $33.9 million in cash, and another $33 million the following year—along with 66 houses, 110 vehicles, 4 airplanes, and 2 businesses. Of the $33 million seized in 1988, the Majors had brought in $13.6 million of it all by themselves, along with 4,470 pounds of cocaine.

The lion's share of that booty had been produced by the Majors II crew, which was now under the command of Sergeant Robert Sobel—" El Diablo." After the Freeway Rick Task Force disbanded in late 1987, Sobel was hand-picked to lead Majors II, and he had driven his squad to Olympian heights. "My men are all trained to tear flesh when they scent blood!" Sobel had bragged in an interdepartmental newsletter.

The Majors zeroed in on the FBI's "courier" so fast they had a surveillance team in place before the FBI agents arrived at the hotel. The detectives quickly learned that the "courier" had reserved the rooms on either side of him and got suspicious, wondering if they were being led into some trap. Worried that the deputies would bust into the other rooms and expose the sting, an FBI agent cautiously approached Sobel's crew and told them they'd done their jobs too well. They had stumbled on a federal undercover operation and were about to expose it (which was technically the truth). Would they be so kind as to leave the area?

Two weeks later, the FBI tried again, this time renting a room at the Valley Hilton Hotel in Sherman Oaks. Again the Majors snapped at the bait. A hidden video camera was rolling as two plainclothes officers burst into the courier's room and found $480,000 in a garment bag. "'Ohhhhh ho ho!" one deputy exclaimed as she pulled the bag from under the bed and opened it. "Is this your bag?"

The deputies skimmed $48,000 of the marked cash, stuffed it into a gym bag, and left. Sobel and other deputies then entered the room and questioned the undercover FBI agent, Indalecio Guzman, about the money. After the agent claimed no knowledge of where the cash came from, one deputy persuaded him to sign a form disclaiming ownership of the remaining money. "[You] can say room service left it," Sobel joked.

In a series of lightning raids that night, the authorities found some of the marked cash in the homes and cars of the deputies. Sheriff Block immediately suspended nine members of the squad.

Within forty-eight hours, distraught and appearing heavily medicated, "El Diablo" Sobel approached the feds and volunteered to testify against his crew. He admitted that much of what Ross and his partners had accused them of was true: the task force had routinely beaten suspects, a practice known as giving someone a "tune-up"; planted dope, called "flaking" a suspect; lied in court; falsified search warrant affidavits; and stolen drug money—hundreds of thousands of dollars—by turning in only a portion of what they had seized.

With their ill-gotten gains, the Majors had gone on spending sprees, buying vacation homes on the Colorado River, big-screen TVs, jewelry, fancy cars, boats, helicopter lessons, and Hawaiian vacations. The FBI discovered that LAPD detective Polak had liposuction performed on his buttocks, and his wife bad paid cash for a breast enlargement operation. The agents were told of Dom Perignon-drenched parties; officers were dabbling in stocks and bonds and starting side businesses. Remarkably; considering their line of work, the detectives had left a paper trail of their excesses a mile long.

On February 22, 1990, a federal grand jury indicted ten deputies on twenty-seven counts of theft, income tax evasion, and conspiracy. And prosecutors promised they were just getting started. There were more indictments to come.

One of the first to be charged was Deputy Daniel Garner, a hard-nosed detective who had been one of the spiritual leaders of Majors II. Garner decided that if he was going down, he was going down fighting. He hired one of L.A.'s most high-profile criminal lawyers, Harland W. Braun, who had defended Lee Marvin in his famous "palimony" suit and would later successfully represent one of the officers in the Rodney King beating case.

"Dan Garner came in my office and told me that there was nothing the feds were going to be able to do to them because he had proof that they were dealing in drugs and laundering drug money," Braun recalled in an interview. "lie said, 'They can't touch us.' And he gave me these papers he said they had seized in a drug raid several years earlier." They were some of the documents the Majors had taken from Ronald Lister's house in 1986, which Garner had secreted away as "insurance." Though Braun privately doubted the records would have the impact Garner expected, he agreed they could be a useful bargaining chip down the road. Certainly, the Majors had little else to pin their hopes on. While the FBI had an incriminating videotape, marked cash, and tape recordings Sobel had secretly made of the deputies plotting their defense at a bar, all the detectives had were some lame stories about hitting jackpots in Las Vegas and loans from relatives.

Garner and his codefendants went on trial in October 1990, and the federal prosecutors led off their case by playing the devastating videotape for the jurors, who became noticeably upset at the sight of police officers helping themselves to bundles of suspected drug money and then joking about it. Braun decided it was time to spring the Lister papers on the government. While he was cross-examining one of the FBI agents who had participated in the Big Spender sting, he casually asked if the agent knew anything about seized drug money being laundered by the federal government and then diverted to the Contras by the CIA. Federal prosecutors leaped to their feet to object, and Braun let the question hang for a bit before moving on to another topic.

After court, Braun walked out onto the steps of the federal building in downtown Los Angeles and held his usual post-trial spin session with the reporters covering the case. One scribe asked about the strange question he'd put to the FBI agent about the Contras and the CIA. Braun calmly replied that he was laying the groundwork for his client's defense: outrageous government conduct. Deputy Garner, Braun pointed out, was a court-certified expert in money-laundering issues, and Garner would explain how some of the cash they were accused of stealing from drug dealers had been laundered by the CIA and used to buy arms for the Contras and other covert operations.

Braun's startling claims were mentioned in the seventeenth paragraph of the *L.A. Times*'s trial story the next day, but the Justice Department reacted as if he'd written them in the sky while riding a broom. Assistant U.S. Attorney Thomas Hagemann ran to Judge Edward Rafeedie and demanded a gag order against all of the defense attorneys in the case, complaining that they had "publicized matters that are likely to seriously impair the right of the defendants, the government and the public to a fair trial." He singled out Braun in particular, reporting his accusations that "the government laundered drug profits which were diverted by the CIA to the Nicaraguan Contras and Iran."

Braun responded with an inflammatory motion opposing the gag order, in which he exposed the long-hidden details of the Majors' 1986 raid on Ronald Lister's house. Lister, who wasn't identified by name, was referred to as "a money launderer who [Majors II] knew was associated with a major drug and money laundering ring connected to the Contras in Nicaragua."

Braun told of Lister's claim of CIA connections and the strange items the deputies had hauled from his house: "Films of military operations in Central America, technical manuals, information on assorted military hardware and communications and numerous documents indicating that drug money was being used to purchase military equipment for Central America. The officers also discovered blown-up pictures of the suspect in Central America with the Contras showing military equipment and military bases. The suspect also was discovered to have maintained a 'way-station' for Nicaraguan transients in Laguna Niguel, California. Officers also pieced together the fact that this suspect was also working with the

Blandón family which was importing narcotics from Central America into the United States."

Braun's motion linked "the Blandón family" to the crash of Eugene Hasenfus's C-123K cargo plane in Nicaragua in October 1986, the same crash Scott Weekly claimed on tape that he'd been "tied into." It also told of the Lister files disappearing as "federal agents swooped down on the sheriff's headquarters and removed all the recovered property. Mysteriously all records of the search, seizure and property also 'disappeared' from the Sheriff's Department."

Garner, Braun wrote, had secretly made copies of "10 pages of the documents seized from the CIA operative," which he said "give the name of CIA operatives in Iran, specifically mention the Contras, list various weaponry that was being purchased and even diagram the route of drug money out of the United States, back into the United States purchasing weaponry for the Contras as well as naming the State Department as one of the agencies involved."

Braun said he'd asked the justice Department to provide a letter "stating explicitly that no drug money was used by the United States government or any United States government agency to purchase weapons for the Contras or weapons to be traded for hostages from Iran" but it had refused to do so, which Braun interpreted as "a tacit admission" that Garner's claims were true. "The court will note that nowhere in the declaration by the United States attorney does he state that this allegation is false. From this counsel concludes that in fact the government concedes the truth of the statement and only attempts to again suppress it so the public will not know about these illegal activities," Braun wrote. "The government obviously fears the exposure of its drug financed Central American operations."

The seven deputies on trial, Braun noted, weren't the ones complaining about unfair publicity, even though they had been pilloried in the media by federal prosecutors since the day they were indicted. "The only party that complains about the publicity is the very party that was arguably using drug money to buy weapons for the Contras," Braun wrote.

The next day the Justice Department fired back with a motion of its own. Once again sidestepping the issue of whether Garner's allegations were true or false, prosecutors asked Judge Rafeedie to issue a court order "excluding any questions, testimony, or other evidence relating to any alleged CIA plot to launder drug money to finance Nicaraguan operations or operations in Iran." Those claims, prosecutor Hagemann wrote, were "wholly irrelevant" to the case, and "would be nothing more than a smokescreen to divert the jury's attentions from the issues." Since the raid had occurred in 1986, Hagemann argued, it was "well outside the time frame of any allegations in the indictment. . .there is thus no connection of any kind between this scheme involving the CIA and this case. This evidence would do nothing more than confuse the jury and be a waste of time."

Judge Rafeedie called the lawyers into his courtroom the next morning and lashed out at Braun, calling him sneaky and unprofessional. The motion he'd filed, Rafeedie stormed, was a "bad faith" effort to get the information out to the public. "Even if everything that you have said in this document is true, it has nothing to do with whether or not your client filed a false income tax return or whether or not he was stealing money and making purchases with the money that was stolen," Rafeedie raged. "That is, what the CIA or the government did has nothing to do with that, so far as I can see. I cannot conceive of any theory under which that evidence would be admissible in the case and therefore, putting this information out in the guise of an opposition to a restraining order simply to ensure that it gets into the public print and perhaps might contaminate this case or create undue prejudice—frankly, I am disappointed in you, Mr. Braun. I do not believe that a lawyer of your ability and skill would ever even consider that this evidence would be admissible."

(Rafeedie would later display the same sensitivity to suggested CIA links during one of the trials involving the 1985 murder of DEA agent Enrique "Kiki" Camarena. When defense lawyers tried to introduce evidence alleging CIA and Contra involvement with Mexican drug lords, Rafeedie ruled the information was irrelevant to the murder and refused to allow the jury to hear it.)

Stunned by Rafeedie's vehemence, Braun tried to reply, but the judge told him to sit down and shut up. "This opposition which you filed is the most clear and convincing evidence that an order—a restraining order—in this case is necessary," Rafeedie told him. "This document manifests a continuing intention to use the media to make statements in the public. . .which violate the American Bar Association model rules of professional conduct and I have, after receiving this, decided that it is appropriate to issue an order in this case, and I intend to do that."

Braun once again asked to be heard, but Rafeedie told him it didn't matter what he had to say; he was issuing the gag order immediately. The order, he was informed, prevented him from saying anything "that a reasonable person would expect to be disseminated by means of public communication." Any violation would be "viewed as contempt of this court and punished accordingly." It was, Rafeedie noted, only the second time in his twenty-one years on the bench that he'd had to gag an attorney.

Finally Braun was permitted to speak. He asked Rafeedie to give him some time and some leeway to gather additional evidence to substantiate Garner's claims.

"We are not trying to determine the Iran-Contra affair," Rafeedie snapped. "Suppose I accept as true everything you have said. . .I don't see the relevance."

Braun complained that Rafeedie's gag order would make it impossible for him to find witnesses to corroborate Garner's contentions, but Rafeedie was unmoved, and he refused to allow Braun to pursue the subject. Garner, during his testimony, did manage to tell the jury that he discovered "the CIA was doing, conducting illegal activities in which the guys in the CIA were getting rich," but the jurors were told to disregard the comments.

Six of the seven deputies were convicted of corruption charges and sent to prison. Garner received one of the harshest sentences—fifty-four months. In 1996 he was released from prison. He emerged defiant. "I didn't pump 500 tons of cocaine into the ghetto," Garner said. "I stole American money and spent it in America. The United States government can't say that."

Before the Big Spender investigation was over, most of the officers who had worked on the Majors' investigation of Blandón and the Freeway Rick Task Force would be charged with crimes or forced out of law enforcement.

Bell PD detective Jerry Guzzetta—the narcotics officer who originally began the investigation into the Blandón operation—was accused of stealing cocaine, but never charged. In 1988 IRS agent Carl Knudsen, who'd had a falling-out with Guzzetta over his handling of the Torres brothers, blamed Guzzetta for the disappearance of six kilos of cocaine the police department had stored in a public storage locker. The L.A. County Sheriff's Office was called in to investigate but could find no evidence that Guzzetta had anything to do with the theft. (Indeed, it was discovered that the Bell police had given one of the keys to the locker to a convicted drug dealer working as a police informant.) Though two prosecutors examined the case and declined to press charges, Guzzetta said the investigation ruined his career. He filed a lawsuit against the city, which was later settled out of court, and retired on a partial disability.

He remains convinced that he and the Majors were targeted for destruction because of their investigation of Blandón. "Every policeman who ever got close to Blandón was either told to back off, investigated by their department, forced to retire or indicted," Guzzetta complained to police investigators in 1996. He "felt that he had been victimized by a conspiracy which damaged and ruined many police officers who had attempted to bring Blandón and his organization to justice."

Former deputy Virgil Bartlett, who assisted on the Blandón raids, disagreed. "Nobody humbugged Operation Big Spender. Nobody set us up. We screwed ourselves. Nobody prosecuted me for anything I didn't do."

The last Big Spender indictment to come down was against Sergeant Thomas Gordon, the chief investigator of the Blandón case, who was accused of spending stolen drug money to fix up his house in San Dimas. He was charged with money laundering and tax evasion and, representing himself, fought the government to a draw on money-laundering charges. He was convicted on the tax charges.

Defense lawyer Harland Braun had no way of knowing it, of course, but his efforts to drag Ronald Lister into the 1990 Big Spender case came perilously close to exposing the Contra drug connection—which may explain the Justice Department's frenzied efforts to gag Braun and keep the lid on the 1986 raids on Lister and Blandón.

By the time of the deputies' trial, Ronald Lister was working for the DEA as an informant, and had been briefing federal prosecutors about his work on behalf of the Contras and the CIA during the 1980s. The DEA considered him to be such a valuable source of information that it had interceded with local police to keep him out of prison.

Lister's transformation from a drug trafficker to a drug warrior began in August 1988, when he met a prostitute at a party and confided that he could get her some cocaine if she wanted it. The hooker, a police informant, ran to tell the cops, and the Costa Mesa Police Department sent out an undercover agent, who ended up buying two kilos of cocaine from the ex-detective. But after just two days in jail, Lister was released on his own recognizance and put back on the streets, apparently having convinced the Costa Mesa detectives that he would be more valuable to them as an undercover informant.

In late 1989, to the chagrin of Costa Mesa authorities, Lister was arrested by DEA agents in San Diego and charged with conspiracy to distribute thirteen kilos of cocaine.

But the same thing happened again. Instead of being taken off the streets, Lister was soon back walking them as an undercover police informant. Lister had mesmerized the DEA and U.S. Attorney's office as easily as he had charmed the Costa Mesa police. Why were these police agencies so eager to drop slam-dunk drug cases for the honor of having Ronald J. Lister as an informant? Easy. He was their ticket to the big time. He was going to lead them to the crime of the century.

Today, the cops and lawyers who worked with Lister call him a pathological liar, a master manipulator, a charlatan, a con man, a louse. But that wasn't what they thought when they signed him up as an informant and turned him loose on an unsuspecting public. They thought he was James Bond. And they fancied themselves as M.

During the negotiations for Mr. Lister's services, his attorney, Lynn Ball, sent the San Diego DEA and U.S. Attorney's office a resume of his client's work history, touting him as a man who "has the experience to be one of the most outstanding [informants] any agency could have." Lister "knows the cocaine business better than most people," Ball said. He'd worked "for the governments of El Salvador, Colombia, Italy, and Iran." He knew intelligence operatives and weapons smugglers. He had worked with the Contras, including Eden Pastora. And, he could finger Norwin Meneses and Danilo Blandón.

Assistant U.S. Attorney Amalia Meza, in a 1997 interview with CIA inspectors, said San Diego DEA agent Chuck Jones suggested using Lister as an informant in an investigation he was conducting of Danilo Blandón, so she asked Lister's attorney, Lynn Ball, if Lister would be interested. The reaction from Lister's lawyer was memorable. "Ball indicated that Lister was going to have to check with 'the Agency' first to see if he could provide information regarding the Blandón organization," prosecutor Meza recalled. "Ball later indicated that Lister had been given 'clearance' to cooperate." Lister then began a series of extensive debriefings and grand jury appearances. "Lister alluded to the CIA during debriefings, but no one from the investigative team pursued that subject," Meza reported. "The focus of the U.S. Attorney's investigation was on cocaine smuggling." She claimed she "never questioned Lister about, *nor allowed him to discuss*, any involvement of CIA or any other U.S. government agency during these debriefings" [emphasis added).

But Lister said there was another motive behind the prosecutor's lack of curiosity about such an interesting topic. In a letter to his reputed "CIA contact," David Scott Weekly, written while Lister was in prison in July 1990, Lister said his debriefers "are purposely staying away from anyone who might be connected to the Agency, like Pastora. They would like me to tell them who they can't get because of a nat'l sec [national security] block," Lister informed Weekly. "They are extremely afraid of a nat'l security block. So their logic is to go after. . .people and assoc. . ..where personal gain is clear and no Contra activity appears. They say they don't even want to know about the Contra organization or anything related."

Lister appeared before a federal grand jury four times providing detailed physical evidence, a complete chronology from 1982 to 1986 of "a big Central American operation," and naming roughly 80 people who worked with the Blandón drug ring. He also provided information to San Francisco FBI agent Don Hale, Norwin Meneses' pursuer. Lister said Hale was convinced that Lister and the Nicaraguans "were connected with the CIA. . .[Hale] wanted to prove a connection between the U.S. government, the Contras and drug smuggling."

On December 20, 1990, ten days after the verdicts in the first Big Spender case were handed down, Ronald Lister was released from federal custody and sent out into the world as an undercover DEA informant "to assist the government in an investigation." He went to work as a salesman for a San Diego company called Markon Inc., an international barter brokerage owned by Scott Weekly, aka "Dr. Death." Whether the DEA was using Weekly's company as cover or if Lister was also spying on Weekly is not clear.

Whatever the reason, DEA records show that Lister began engaging in some very unorthodox activities for a federal informant—moving mountains of cash for drug traffickers, just as he'd done while working with Blandón in South Central. Barely six months after he began working for the DEA, Lister strolled into Anthony's Fish Grotto, a waterfront San Diego restaurant, to have lunch with several Colombian drug traffickers and their associates. Unbeknownst to Lister, two of the men at the table were undercover DEA agents, posing as money launderers.

According to their reports, one of the Colombians demanded to know what Lister had done with some $500,000 he'd been given to launder. "At this time, Lister commenced to explain how he had originally received instructions from Colombia to wire transfer the money to a European bank, only later to be told to transfer it to another account," the DEA report stated. "Lister went on to say that he could not wire transfer the money from the account again since it was originally laundered with the assistance of the CIA. At this time, Lister explained how he and the CIA used to transport multi-hundred kilo loads of cocaine from Cali, Colombia and Costa Rica to the U.S." The DEA agent wrote that Lister had a paper in his hand that "appeared to be a copy of an outgoing wire transfer. On it, the agent noticed the following: 'Swiss Bank of New York, World Trade Center, #101-WA' (the rest of the numbers not obtained.)"

Lister was asked by one of the undercover agents "if he knew what would happen to him if he refused or failed to pay back the money. Lister replied that he had nothing to fear since he worked for the CIA. At this time the agent asked Lister if he was also employed with the FBI or the DFA, to which he replied, 'No.'" Lister's explanation apparently didn't mollify the Colombians. The group's leader, Osvaldo Montalvo, was overheard telling his associates "that Lister was a dead man."

A few days later, according to a federal prosecutor familiar with the case, "one of our undercover agents was being contacted by the Colombians and they said, 'By the way, we want to kill this guy Lister, and if we can't kill him we're going to kidnap his mother and put her on the phone and torture her so he pays us back the $600,000 he stole from us.' We ran Lister through the indices and he showed up as an informant, so we brought him in, actually brought him into San Diego PD and said, 'We have reason to believe there is a threat against your life, a serious threat. We arc taking it seriously, we are offering to protect you if you want it.'"

Lister, he said, laughed off the offer to place him in the Witness Protection Program and said he wasn't afraid of any "fucking Colombians." 'The prosecutor made Lister sign a waiver of liability absolving the Justice Department of any responsibility in case he turned up dead.

Lister went back to one of the Colombians and told him that he knew what they were up to. He was so unconcerned, he said, that he had declined federal protection, which he proved by whipping out the liability waiver he'd signed. He told the Colombian that he "did not need any protection since he and his associate, Scott Weekly, could take care of themselves. Lister further commented that Weekly was a U.S. Seal and well equipped to take care of anything."

To show the Colombian he was serious, Lister also pulled out some surveillance photos of the undercover DEA agents who'd been at lunch with him. "The photographs appeared to have been taken from a top floor," a DFA report stated. "Lister claimed that the photographs were taken by his surveillance people."

In mid-June 1991, the prosecutor said, federal agents intercepted the hit team the Colombians had sent to kill Lister. "They were stopped at the Temecula immigration check point with a picture of Lister and a map to his mother's house and they were in the country illegally and we deported them," he said. "We saved his worthless life."

Embarrassed by the fact that another DEA team had discovered their prize informant was laundering money for Colombian drug dealers, Lister's DEA handlers threw him in jail for violating the terms of his plea agreement. In a motion filed to cancel their deal and send Lister to prison, the case agents claimed Lister was involved in money laundering through Weekly's company, Markon Corp., which they said "was set up to launder money from narcotics and weapons sales. . .defendant intended to sell weapons as well." Weekly insisted Markon was a legitimate trading company. In any event, no charges were ever filed against Markon or Weekly.

Lister and his attorney bitterly protested the DEA's attempt to toss the ex-cop back in prison, and argued that Lister had provided quite a bit of help on the investigation of Blandón and Meneses. If the feds couldn't bust the Nicaraguans, they said in a court motion, that wasn't Ronald Lister's fault. "These reasons may have more to do with so-called 'national security' and political decisions made by the Attorney General, the State Department, the Central Intelligence Agency, and other agencies," the motion stated. "A decision not to prosecute individuals in order to avoid embarrassing high government officials for possible complicity in drug dealing should not be sufficient reason for this defendant not to be able to have the advantage of his plea bargain for cooperation." In a letter to federal Judge Rudi Brewster, who was handling the case, Lister warned him that the federal government had been playing games with the Blandón case for a long time. "In 1986, the main players and myself came very close to indictment but the government chose not to proceed because of 'matters of national security,'" Lister wrote.

After first granting Lister's motion for a hearing, Judge Brewster quickly changed his mind and ordered Lister to serve eight years in prison for drug trafficking. The Blandón investigation was taken away from Lister's handler, Amalia Meza, and given to Assistant U.S. Attorney L.J. O'Neale, a man who is quick to inform people that he has a top secret security clearance and is an expert in handling national security cases. (Coincidentally, O'Neale was the Assistant U.S. Attorney who five years earlier indicted former Green Beret Colonel James "Bo" Gritz for misuse of a passport, shortly after Gritz and Scott Weekly returned from Burma singing songs of CIA involvement with heroin trafficking.) O'Neale would eventually become Blandón's biggest booster within the Justice Department.

DEA agent Judy Gustafson said Lister dropped by her office shortly after his release from prison in 1996 to pick up some belongings and once again "discussed his connection to the CIA." If the Justice Department thought the CIA would ever tell them anything about him, Lister laughingly told the agent as he headed out the door towards freedom, they were dreaming.

For Ricky Ross, Operation Big Spender brought only glad tidings. He became one of the federal government's star witnesses in the second round of corruption trials in 1991, and his appearance on the witness stand was, in some ways, an historic occasion. It was the first time that the man who had helped touch off L.A.'s crack explosion appeared in public to tell his story.

The federal prosecutor handling the case called Ross "probably the most significant drug dealer" ever to testify for the government. Freeway Rick, along with a host of lesser dealers appearing as government witnesses, opened up the inner world of big-time crack dealing to a wide-eyed public.

Ross bluntly told the jurors that by the end of the 1980s he'd sold thousands and thousands of kilos of cocaine in South Central L.A., becoming a multimillionaire by the time he was twenty-two. He told of the properties he owned, the big speedboat he had docked at Marina Del Rev, his fleet of cars, his ski trips to Aspen, and his fourteenth-row seats at the Lakers games. Another major LA. crack dealer who testified for the government, Alander Smith, corroborated Ross's story.

"Smith waxed at length on the economic empire—including a thriving tire shop, apartment investments and motel construction—of Ricky Ross, a convicted trafficker who has been described as the godfather of the rock cocaine trade in South Central Los Angeles in the mid-1980s," the *San Diego Union-Tribune* reported.

But Smith, who was serving a life sentence without the possibility of parole, made his federal handlers cringe when he launched into an impromptu lecture on the Drug War. Peering intently at the jury from behind steel-rimmed glasses and firmly gripping the microphone at the witness stand, Smith accused government officials of bringing drugs into the United States. "Yes, I mean President Bush," Smith told the jurors pointedly. "When lie was with the CIA and now. . .. The government is the only people that have the access to the equipment, but the minorities are the ones who do the time for it."

Such comments, combined with the sentence reductions and other favors Ross and his cohorts had been given by the government to secure their cooperation against the deputies, didn't sit well with the jurors, who had difficulty accepting the testimony of drug dealers over the denials of the accused officers. Under cross-examination, Ross admitted that the Justice Department had agreed to cut his sentence in half and had permitted him to keep his remaining properties and his money, which he valued at around $2 million.

Outraged, the jurors acquitted most of the indicted officers and cited Ross's deal as one of their reasons. "They really gave away the farm on that one," one juror told the *Los Angeles Times*.

The LAPD detective who was the architect of the Freeway Rick Task Force, Ross's nemesis Steve Polak, was one of those acquitted. He was later reindicted on civil rights and income tax charges and pleaded guilty to violating Ollie Newell's civil rights by beating him up. Embittered, Polak retired from the police force, complaining that he'd been sold out by his own department and persecuted by government lawyers who'd "crawled into bed with drug dealers to go after cops."

Though the Big Spender investigation was ultimately a flop for the Justice Department, Ross had lived up to his end of the bargain. In February 1992, Assistant U.S. Attorney Michael Emmick (who would later gain notoriety as a member of Independent Counsel Kenneth Starr's Whitewater prosecution team) dutifully went to court and urged that the crack lord be given a break, praising his cooperation as "more than satisfactory." Ross, Emmick said, "was on the stand for three to four days. He was cross-examined in excruciating detail about all imaginable subjects. Ross answered those questions without hesitation and, in my opinion, did so honestly and candidly."

His sentence was trimmed from ten years to fifty-one months, which made him eligible for release in a little over a year. Ross was sent to the federal prison in Phoenix, Arizona, to serve the rest of his time.

"He had the backing of a superpower"

Though he had successfully navigated the treacherous waters of the cocaine industry for nearly a decade, Blandón learned that he was unprepared for the sharks of legitimate commerce.

His twenty-four-location rent-a-car business, Alpha II, suffered when a deal to rent thousands of cars to hordes of German sightseers in the 1988–89 season vaporized at the last minute. "I make a contract—3,000 cars to be rented to the German people," Blandón explained. "But I didn't have enough cars. So I get a credit from Chrysler for 250 cars, and I get a credit from General Motors of 300 cars." But when Chrysler discovered he was making deals with GM, he said, his $ 1.5 million line of credit was yanked. He was forced to go out and beg cars from other rental companies. "I lost $300,000 in three months." In early October 1988 his lender filed a notice to foreclose on the rental agency's office near the Miami airport, and by early January 1989 his company was bleeding money. "I had to get cash," Blandón said. Fortunately he knew just where to get it.

Alpha II Rent-a-Car had apparently been the Doper's Choice for wheels in sunny Miami, and Danilo had gotten to know some very heavy hitters. "I did a lot of favors to the Colombians in Miami with my rent-a-car [business]. They used to go—they don't have a credit card, so I rent it with a deposit, $500 deposit, and they rented the car. So I, I got a lot of connections in, in those three years that I was running my business. . .. They were my friends because of my business."

He felt particularly close to Colombian Humberto Cardona, because Cardona was supplying Danilo's Nicaraguan associates in South Central. "This guy used to go every week to my place, this Mr. Cardona. He used to go every week. He had a lot of business." Cardona, whom Blandón called "El Fruco," was one of Colombia's better known cocaine kings. When the Colombian government agreed to extradite him and five other traffickers to the United States in late 1985, it was international news, hailed as a sign of increasing cooperation between the Colombian and U.S. governments. (There was one trafficker the Colombians were refusing to extradite, UPI noted: Juan Matta Ballesteros, the Honduran billionaire whose airline, SETCO, was flying supplies for the Contras. Instead of turning Matta over to U.S. courts, the Colombians deported him to Honduras, which did not extradite its citizens, and he continued dealing drugs.)

Humberto Cardona's extradition to the United States appears to have been equally painless. A mere three years later, according to Blandón, he was jetting around the world, and supplying the South Central crack market through Meneses's men, Roger Sandino and Jose Gonzalez Morales.

Blandón poured out his tale of financial woe to the chunky Colombian, and El Fruco had a novel idea: Why not get back into the cocaine business? It was hotter than ever. Why, he'd just sold Blandón's friends in L.A. a ton of cocaine—literally. Two thousand kilos. "So if you want to go back, I can get some merchandise in L.A. and you don't have to worry about the money that you have been losing down here," Blandón said Cardona told him. "So I started thinking. And I got back."

Blandón put his rental car agency into bankruptcy and moved his family back to California, settling in

San Diego in a house owned by his old college buddy Sergio Guerra, the smooth Mexican millionaire. Guerra had become a well-known figure in San Diego business circles, owning profitable parking lots and car dealerships. He was on the board of the San Diego YMCA and had generously donated property in downtown San Diego to the Chamber of Commerce, to build a tourist information center. He was also smuggling cocaine and gold into the United States, court records say.

Perched high on a hillside overlooking San Diego's busy harbor, Blandón began the task of reassembling his cocaine network. He immediately reunited with the Meneses family. "In '89, back in business, I started doing business with Jose Gonzalez in San Francisco. He was the contact with the Meneses family because I know all the Meneses family—their names, OK? But I never, at that time, I never come to deal with them because Norwin didn't let me be in touch with them. So I was in touch with Jose Gonzalez, spoke with the people, with Omar [Meneses], with Guillermo [Meneses]—they introduced me to Guillermo by phone the first time—and all the people: [Rafael] Cornejo, Roger [Meneses], Omar, and Jairo Morales [Meneses]."

When Norwin was away in Central America, Blandón said, nephew Jairo Morales ran the family cocaine business in San Francisco, and Norwin was away a lot. About two weeks after former CIA director George Bush had been sworn in as president, the U.S. Attorney's Office in San Francisco brought a secret indictment against Meneses, finally charging him with a few of the crimes he'd committed back in the mid-1980s. The two-count indictment accused him of conspiracy to import cocaine between 1984 and 1985 and possession of one kilo in 1985—during the period when he was having meetings with CIA agent Adolfo Calero, hosting FDN breakfasts, squiring FDN officials around L.A., and holding FDN functions at the T-shirt factory Blandón was managing.

Norwin was declared a fugitive, and a federal magistrate signed an arrest warrant. Then, curiously, both the warrant and the indictment were locked away in the vaults at the San Francisco federal courthouse, where they would remain sealed from public view for the next nine years.

Meneses called the indictment "a phony," suggesting it was filed to protect the U.S. government in case its relationship with him was ever revealed. He hadn't been coddled or protected, it could now be argued; he'd been indicted.

Eric Swenson, the federal prosecutor who filed the case against Meneses, said the indictment was returned because the case against Meneses was so old that it was fast approaching the statute of limitations. If an indictment wasn't returned soon, it never could be. Secondly, Swenson said, "it materialized that there was some information that he was back in the [cocaine] business and it was like, All right, we'll indict his ass and if he gets arrested and comes back into the country, we'll see if he wants to cooperate then.'"

But what Swenson apparently didn't know is that Meneses *was* cooperating—with the Costa Rican DEA—and that he had been for the past two years, which makes those reports of Meneses' continued involvement with drug trafficking even more intriguing.

"Surprisingly, in 1989, even after the San Francisco indictment and arrest warrant were issued, Meneses continued to work as an informant for the DEA in Costa Rica and travel to the United States on behalf of the DEA," the Justice Department Inspector General marveled. "During this time, the FBI was apparently unaware of his activities. . ." Records show DEA agents were regularly sending the drug kingpin on still-classified missions to San Francisco, Miami, L.A., Panama, and Colombia and paying him thousands of dollars for his time. Moreover, the Costa Rican DEA office continued to protect him, mainly from the FBI, which was trying to arrest him on the San Francisco indictment. In 1990, in response to an FBI request for help, the DEA's Costa Rican attache, Ron Lard, described Meneses as a "very valuable and current active DEA source in Costa Rica." The San Francisco FBI reacted furiously. In February 1990, it demanded to know when the DEA had suddenly discovered Meneses' amazing worth—before or after the FBI had indicted him? "San Francisco FBI would not have pursued an indictment of Meneses if it had been aware of Meneses' cooperation with any law enforcement or intelligence agency," the FBI cable complained. "Did DEA conduct appropriate checks to determine Meneses' legal status prior to [activating] him?"

Oops, the DEA replied. Our mistake. Norwin was no longer an active DEA informant and, once again, no one knew where he was. One FBI agent complained that he "did not believe that the DEA in Costa Rica, or the Costa Rican authorities, would arrest Meneses."

As to what he was doing and why the DEA was so protective of him, the Justice Department Inspector General's report in 1998 provided a significant clue: among Norwin's targets were "some Nicaraguan government officials." Norwin, it seems, was still fighting Communism with cocaine. Though combat between the Contras and Sandinistas all but ceased in March 1988 with the truce of Sapoa, the CIA continued its covert war to destabilize the Sandinista government throughout the rest of the decade, and it now appears that Norwin Meneses was a part of the U.S. government's arsenal of secret weapons.

In 1990 a Nicaraguan public weary of a decade of war and strife and tension with the United States voted the Sandinistas out of office. With U.S. backing, Norwin's former business partner, Violeta Chamorro, was elected president, and she immediately began returning to Anastasio Somoza's friends and relatives the companies and properties that the Sandinistas had confiscated.

Meneses and his family moved hack into their mansion on the outskirts of Managua, and he began reclaiming the holdings—valued at $12 million—that had once belonged to him and his assassinated brother, Edmundo.

Norwin also began reconstructing his drug trafficking network in Nicaragua, a riskier business. Even though the Sandinistas were no longer running the government, they still controlled the country's military and national police. If they caught him dealing cocaine, he'd be at the mercy of his old enemies.

To cover his bets, Norwin recruited a turncoat Sandinista intelligence officer, Enrique Miranda Jaime, to help him reestablish his smuggling pipeline through Nicaragua. It was a move that would prove to be his undoing.

A slippery character who was a lifelong Sandinista, Enrique Miranda had been a paid CIA informant between 1984 and 1985, spying on his comrades and peeking into shipping crates to keep the agency up to date on the latest Sandinista weapons purchases. He says he was one of two CIA operatives working inside the Sandinista Ministry of the Interior's super-secret dirty-tricks unit, the Bureau of Special Operations.

In addition to having extensive political connections, Miranda was an experienced smuggler in his own right. During the early years of the Contra war, Miranda said, he was responsible for arranging clandestine shipments of Sandinista arms from Panama to revolutionary groups throughout Central America, and he had helped the Sandinistas design a string of secret arms caches in and around Managua—fortified concrete bunkers hidden in hillsides and in dense patches of jungle. As a result, he not only knew most of the smuggling routes through the isthmus but had places to hide cocaine that few people even knew existed.

In interviews with Nicaraguan police in 1991, Meneses corroborated many details of Miranda's past. He said Miranda, who is married to a cousin of Norwin's wife, Blanca, had been a friend of his for a decade, and he confirmed that Miranda "was the person who was sending guns to the FMLN in El Salvador." He also confirmed that Miranda "sold himself to the CIA" and provided the agency with intelligence on Sandinista leaders. The CIA refused to confirm or deny that.

In 1989 Meneses hired the former double agent to serve as his emissary to the Colombians, primarily the cartel of Bogota. Posing as Norwin's nephew, Miranda said he arranged the drug shipments, plotted the routes, and handled the cash deliveries, while Meneses negotiated prices, put up the money to finance the purchases, and arranged for the cocaine's transportation from Nicaragua to the United States.

Most of the cocaine they were shipping, Miranda said, was being sold in Los Angeles through

Meneses's brother Luis Enrique, who was later convicted in Nicaragua of drug trafficking. In San Francisco, Miranda said, Norwin was dealing through his nephews, Guillermo and Jairo. The drugs were being smuggled into California through two different routes. Meneses "had on his payroll a series of American pilots and had taken charge of a control tower in the state of Texas," Miranda testified. Norwin's cargo planes, based in Costa Rica, had established flight plans to haul commercial goods to Texas. Before they left, Miranda said, a space would be cleared in the cargo hold big enough to conceal 300 kilos of cocaine. "When overflying their route to the U.S.A., they would be allowed to drop in for a quick landing at the airstrip at Rosita," he testified, referring to a 2,600-meter runway in the isolated jungles of northern Nicaragua, near the mining town of Rosita.

At the abandoned airfield, according to Miranda, Meneses had hundreds of kilos of cocaine hidden in underground bunkers. The kilos would be loaded aboard the cargo planes and hidden amidst the commercial cargo, and the planes would continue on into Texas. "This operation would last approximately 15 or 20 minutes," Miranda said. "The advantage is that here in Nicaragua there is no radar system with the capacity to reach this airstrip."

The other method was equally inventive. Meneses would purchase automobiles in the United States through a dealership, import them, fill their frames and hollow spaces with cocaine-filled PVC pipes, and weld them shut inside. Then the cars were loaded aboard an auto transporter—also packed with tubes of cocaine—and driven across the border in Texas or California. "For the amounts that were coming in, you almost needed flatbed trucks," recalled Meneses lieutenant Rafael Cornejo.

Blandón said his first job once he got back into the California drug market was serving as a broker for Norwin's nephew, Jairo, in San Francisco. He collected cocaine from hotel rooms all over the Bay Area and sold it to customers in Alabama, New Orleans, Los Angeles, San Jose, and San Francisco. At least two of Blandón's biggest customers, Mike Smith in L.A. and Reggie Rash in Alabama, were black dealers who'd worked for Ricky Ross before Ross went to prison.

Then Blandón had another well-timed series of lucky breaks. Jairo was arrested and sent to jail; Jose Gonzalez moved back to Nicaragua; and the only experienced distributor left was Danilo Blandón. He took on the job of doling out cocaine to the other members of the Meneses ring and some of their Bay Area customers. Between 1990 and 1991, Blandón estimated, he provided somewhere around 425 kilos of cocaine to the Meneses family in San Francisco, about $8.5 million worth at wholesale prices.

Blandón also began putting his L.A. connections back together. Though he was reasonably sure the Torres brothers had ratted him out to the cops four years earlier—and they knew he'd hired a hit man to kill them after he became convinced that one of them was sleeping with his wife—the old friends let bygones be bygones and started buying and selling drugs from each other again.

Rafael Cornejo recalled visiting the Torres brothers in North Hollywood with Blandón in 1990, where Jacinto offered to sell him a chrome-plated .45. "There was a fight on TV and Danilo and I went over there to watch it. I was staying at a hotel. . .that's when I first met the Torres brothers. And he [Blandón] was working with them and to my belief he was involved with narcotics with them at that time. He offered some to me but I didn't take the offer. He told me he was back trying to open up the gates again that he had lost."

Blandón said Cornejo was very "picky" about cocaine quality and deemed the kilos Blandón offered substandard. Though Cornejo said he never liked Blandón personally—" he always had an agenda"—he valued his experience and his connections and began dealing with him on an almost daily basis. "Sometimes, you know, you gotta dance with the devil," Cornejo shrugged. "Danilo knew some very important people in Nicaragua, important people in society, and I was talking about taking my money and moving down there, you know, taking my assets and starting a business. And he told me he would use his connections with the World Bank to help me out." Whether Blandón actually had any connections to the World Bank is unknown, but undercover DEA tapes show that he was openly boasting of having received massive loans around that time from the Canadian government and, according to one DEA summary, the U.S. government.

Those discussions were secretly taped between 1990 and 1991 by DEA informant John Arman, a skinny, nasal-voiced drug dealer who'd been indicted in Nebraska in the early 1980s for cocaine trafficking and fled to Mexico. The Mexicans booted him out eventually, turning him over to FBI agents at the border, and Arman agreed to become an informant for the DEA office in San Diego.

He was one of the first people Blandón contacted when he reentered the southern California cocaine market, apparently due to a long-standing friendship with Arman's ex-wife. In March 1990, a week after the Sandinistas were voted out of office, Arman called San Diego DEA agent Charles Jones and told him that "Blandón is preparing to move back to Nicaragua from Miami, due to the favorable political climate at present. Blandón also reportedly had a large amount of cash in Los Angeles, California, that he was preparing to transport to Nicaragua." Arman reported that Blandón "owned property in Nicaragua that he rented to the government for $100,000 for five years," and was so tight with the new regime, he'd told Arman, he'd take him to the upcoming inauguration of Nicaragua's new president, Violeta Chamorro.

"Yeah, I know all the people from the government," Blandón boasted in one taped conversation with Arman. "They *like* you, see? Shit, they like you, all the fucking government—they know."

Blandón wasn't just bragging. A DEA informant who had worked for Blandón informed federal agents in 1991 that the drug dealer "had extensive contacts in the Nicaraguan government and obtains cocaine from the Cali cartel on credit."

In July 1990, Blandón flew back to Miami to deal with his failing rental car company and returned to L.A. a few days later. Arman met him up at the airport, where an expansive Blandón announced that he'd just received a $40 million loan to build houses in Nicaragua.

On the drive to San Diego, Blandón killed time by filling Arman in on his latest cocaine deals. His supplier, Humberto Cardona, was now in France and was looking to cross 2,000 kilos he'd stored in Guadalajara, Mexico. A Canadian associate was bringing in a load from Mexico through Houston. Some of his Japanese customers had the bad luck of buying a boatload of cocaine in Colombia, and then having the trawler tracked and seized off the coast of Hawaii.

Arman dropped Blandón off at the Nicaraguan's hilltop home in Bonita, a few miles from the Mexican border, and they made plans to meet for dinner later that evening. Shortly before 7:30 P.M. on July 21, 1990, Arman arrived at the Old Bonita Store, a quaint lobster restaurant near Blandón's house, wired for sound. He was accompanied by undercover DEA agent Judy Gustafson, who was posing as a money launderer interested in doing business with Blandón and his friend Sergio Guerra, the parking lot magnate. Blandón rolled up fifteen minutes later behind the wheel of a silver Mercedes 450 SL, Guerra at his side.

The four made chitchat for a while—Guerra asked the DEA agent if she'd ever snorted methamphetamine—and then Blandón motioned Arman outside so they could discuss something privately. If Arman was looking to sell, Blandón said, he had customers looking for about 200 kilos. If he could get more, they'd buy that too.

"These people have been working with me 10 years," Blandón informed him. "I've sold them about 2,000 or 4,000,I don't know. I don't remember how many."

"It ain't that Japanese guy you were talking about, is it?" Arman asked.

"The Japanese? You know him?"

"No, you told me."

"No," Blandón insisted. "No, it's not him. These. . .these are the black people."

"Black?!"

"Yeah," Blandón replied. "They control L.A. The people that control L.A."

"I don't like niggers," Arman fretted.

"Well. . ."

"They pay cash though?"

"Yeah," Blandón said. "They pay cash."

"Can they come up with enough money to buy 50 at one time?"

"Yes."

"Oooh," Arman shivered. "That scares me, you know that?"

"No, no. Don't worry. I don't do with anybody else, just with black people," Blandón reassured him. "The thing is, with these people, you are making [money] every day or every week. They're all there. You don't have to be worried about nothing. You don't have to pay warehouses, because the warehouse would be only one day, you see?"

Arman told Blandón he'd see what he could do, and they returned to the table, where Arman pressed the Nicaraguan for details on his new housing project.

"What were you doing. . .what was the deal, you're doing some building, planning on doing some building, some houses down in. . .?"

"Nicaragua."

"Nicaragua?"

"I get a loan from the Canadian government, $40 million, for 5,000 houses," Blandón said.

"Like mass housing, neighborhood. . ."

"For the poor people, the poor people. You know, the government of Canada, they sometimes have, it's better for them, for construction, to give us 5,000 houses, a government loan for three years, you pay 3 ½ % per year. . ."

"Then they get a United States company to. . .?"

"Well," Blandón said, "we will be supervising, see? Then they will build the house in Canada, how you say, prefabricated. . ."

Blandón also mentioned that he was due to receive a $1 million settlement from the U.S. government for some unspecified claim.

Arman steered the conversation to Roger Sandino, the Mencses associate wanted by the DEA in connection with the giant Bolivian drug bust in Virginia in 1986. Laughing, Blandón told the group how Sandino had a planeload of cocaine flown into Nicaragua, but the plane belly-flopped on a dirt field near a small town. The crash was swarmed by local peasants, who carted away much of the dope. "The people, the *campesinos*, they found it and they were selling it at the market—10 dollars, 20 dollars a fucking key!" Blandón chuckled. He said that when a horrified Sandino discovered the situation, he flew down from Miami and frantically tried to buy his remaining cocaine back from the peasants.

Nicaraguan aviation records show the airplane, loaded with 1,000 pounds of coke, crash-landed near San Rafael del Sur on June 4, 1990. The pilot, who was arrested, was a captain in the Colombian Air Force.

For the next two years the San Diego DEA would keep a close eye on Blandón, recording his telephone calls, tracking his movements, videotaping his meetings with informants and his negotiations to buy cocaine. They would hear him confess to many crimes and brag "about having customers in New York, San Francisco, Los Angeles, New Orleans and other locations." But even after being informed that Blandón was back in South Central L.A., once again selling massive amounts of cocaine to "leaders of black gangs," the DEA made no move to arrest him.

"Blandón stated that one of the groups that he supplied cocaine to were black gang members in Los Angeles that didn't care about the quality of cocaine because they were going to convert it to crack anyway," a 1991 DEA report stated laconically. On the tape of that conversation, Blandón and Arman can be heard commiserating over the decline in standards in the cocaine business. A kilo of "beautiful" white flake meant nothing to these crack dealers, Blandón lamented. "They don't care. They, they, they, they cook everything."

The investigation of Blandón crept along at a snail's pace until July 1991, when Texas DEA agents finally nailed longtime fugitive Roger Sandino, who was tooling along outside Piano, Texas, with fifty-four kilos of cocaine in his car. The feds took him to Dallas for a detention hearing, shipped him to Oklahoma City, and indicted him, and within two weeks the San Diego DEA had him working the phones, making tape-recorded calls to Blandón in an effort to set him up for a reverse sting.

But Blandón's intelligence network was as good as ever. During one conversation, Sandino suggested that they do a deal with a certain couple in Miami. Blandón's voice suddenly hardened. "They are going to put you in jail, dumb fuck, but quickly," he said.

"Are they, are they working for the police?"

"Yes," Blandón said evenly. "They are the ones who fucked Jairo."

Sandino's suggestion apparently prompted Blandón to do a little checking up on his old friend. A few days later, Blandón called and asked Sandino to explain the circumstances behind his recent legal troubles in Oklahoma City. Sandino hurriedly made up a story about getting busted after an auto accident of no consequence. He insisted that everything was fine and encouraged Blandón to come to San Diego to complete a cocaine transaction they had discussed. Blandón assured him he would be there, but never arrived. He also quit returning Sandino's calls. Four days later, on August 16, 1991, the DEA admitted defeat. Blandón had once again beaten the narcs at their own game. "The investigation," a DEA report stated, "had been compromised."

"At first I thought it was just a keen sense of paranoia, but now I believe that he [Blandón] was tipped off," said a federal prosecutor who worked on the case. Fie declined to say whom he suspected. But one of the agents assigned to the Blandón investigation, INS agent Robert Tellez, wasn't as reticent. "Intelligence information provided should be highly protected," Tellez wrote in a memo in February 1991. "This major cocaine traffickers [sic] may have had a degree of influence from the CIA."

When DEA agent Jones drove out the next morning to collect Sandino from the Chula Vista hotel where they had him holed up, he found an empty room. Just as he had done in Virginia five years earlier, Sandino had given the DEA the slip. He fled to Nicaragua "as a result of the pressure of cooperating," a DEA report stated.

The DEA refused to explain why it left unattended a federal fugitive who had just been captured after five years on the lam, or what attempts it had made, if any, to recapture him.

"He had a big wedding here a couple years ago out at the Montelimar resort," said Roger Mayorga, the Nicaraguan government's former antidrug czar, in 1997. "If the DEA wanted Roger Sandino he is very easy to find. They never asked us to arrest him, I can tell you that."

Just ten days after Sandino's disappearance, the federal government was presented with another golden opportunity to arrest Blandón. Once again, though, it declined. While on a trip to Tijuana on August 26, 1991, Blandón and Sergio Guerra stopped at the checkpoint on the international border in Guerra's silver Mercedes, and U.S. Customs inspector Phillip Lemon asked Guerra if he had more than $10,000 on him. The Mexican said no.

"How much do you have?" Lemon asked.

"About $100," Guerra answered.

Eyeing the $35,000 car and the expensive clothing the men were wearing, Lemon told them to pull over to the side for a vehicle inspection.

The Mercedes was a giant piggy bank. In the glove compartment, Customs agent Douglas Montone discovered $2,700 in cash rolled up with a rubber band. The trunk produced $110,550 in bank money orders and $1,300 in cash in a black bag. Guerra had $490 in his wallet and a second search of the trunk revealed an additional $2,000 in money orders. The money orders were blank and had been purchased within the past week.

Asked why he was driving around with a small fortune in his trunk, Guerra babbled that "he docs not have a safe and he uses his two Mercedes Benzes in lieu of a safe deposit box to store his valuables." In truth, the money wasn't Guerra's. It was Blandón's. "The money orders were on their way to Mexico as a partial payment for cocaine," said Assistant U.S. Attorney L. J. O'Nealc, who handled the case. Blandón had sent three of his assistants out to snap up 339 money orders, O'Neale said, because he'd "overloaded the delivery systems" of his cocaine suppliers with cash. After dumping $900,000 on them a few days earlier, O'Neale said, Blandón had been instructed to "hold off on the cash."

While a cursory check of the Customs database would have revealed that Blandón was a known cocaine trafficker and Guerra had no criminal record, it was Guerra who was arrested and indicted by a federal grand jury on two felony counts. He also had his Mercedes seized. Blandón was briefly questioned and released.

By Christmas, he would be three for three. In late December 1991 a special LAPD strike force arrested him and two other men on charges of money laundering and conspiracy after they caught him with $14,000 and a small amount of cocaine in his pocket. Blandón had been seen leaving the apartment of his old friend Raul "El Tuerto" Vega, the one-eyed Meneses flunky who'd helped break Blandón in when he started dealing coke for the Contras. In Vega's apartment, police found $350,000 in cash, a miraculous amount for a man who claimed to be a warehouse worker.

Then the LAPD got a call from the U.S. Attorney's Office in San Diego, asking that all the charges be dropped. Federal agents were working on an investigation, the police were told, which would be ruined if Blandón was put in jail. When the trafficker appeared for his arraignment, he was released without bail and the charges were subsequently dismissed. Once again, he'd walked away from an almost certain conviction. The federal prosecutor who made that decision said he intervened to protect the DEA's investigation of Blandón from a premature termination. "It wasn't done as a favor to Blandón," he insisted.

LAPD sergeant Ron Hodges heard a similar story while working his own case against Blandón in 1991. Hodges, a narcotics detective who was also looking into the Torres brothers, was attempting to arrange a hand-to-hand sale with Blandón, when he discovered that DEA agents were following the Nicaraguan around. The DEA asked I lodges to cooperate with their investigation, so he shelved his case and relegated himself to helping the DEA tail Blandón around L.A., surveilling his meetings with the Torres brothers. "I actually had a better case against him if it would have come about," Hodges said. "I think they just let him run."

In stark contrast to their U.S. counterparts, Nicaraguan lawmen were onto Norwin Meneses from the moment they learned the drug lord was back in Managua.

Rene Vivas, the chief of the Nicaraguan National Police, and Commander Roger Mayorga, the head of its criminal investigations section, were well acquainted with Norwin and his family and the work they'd done for Somoza and the Contras. Mayorga, a short, stocky man with hard eyes, had been chief of state security in Meneses's hometown of Esteli. Vivas, one of the earliest members of the Sandinista underground, had known Norwin since his days as a teenage informant for Somoza's secret police, through his attempts to infiltrate anti-Somoza groups. They were itching for a reason to arrest him. And they got one sooner than they expected.

In November 1990 a white Volkswagen microbus was putt-putting through Chiapas, Mexico, on its way to Los Angeles when Mexican police pulled it over. Inside were forty-two kilos of cocaine and a beautiful Nicaraguan airline stewardess, Ivis Hernandez, who had been one of the Sandinistas' fiercest urban guerrillas during the revolution, known as "La Negra."

"She was something else," sighed Roberto Vargas, an ex-Marine who fought with the Sandinistas and later became their ambassador to China. "La Negra was part of a special squad during the revolution that attacked National Guard buildings. They were the worst missions—suicidal almost—but oh my God, could she fight. I think every man who met her fell in love with her."

Certainly Enrique Miranda had. At the time of her arrest, she and Miranda were lovers. And it was his microbus she was driving. Roger Mayorga said the Mexican police told him about the arrest, which they said resulted from a DEA tip. Mayorga might want to look into it, they suggested, because he could have a drug ring operating in Managua. When Mayorga learned who owned the van and who was driving it, he was intrigued. He knew Ivis Hernandez, and she'd never struck him as a cocaine trafficker. Enrique Miranda was a different story. Mayorga knew the kinds of things he'd done during the war.

Mayorga dropped by Ivis's house and asked her mother, who knew nothing of the arrest, if he could talk to Ivis. Her daughter was in Mexico, she said, receiving some medical treatment at the suggestion of her boyfriend, Enrique Miranda. "So I went to see him and I challenged him and I told him he was responsible for her arrest," Mayorga said. "He was very nervous and he denied everything, but I could tell. At that point, we decided to focus our investigation on him."

Miranda unwittingly led the police to Frank Vigil, the former advertising man who'd allegedly dealt cocaine with Blandón in L.A. in the early 1980s and was Meneses's partner in the Costa Rican chicken restaurant. Mayorga learned that Vigil had just formed a new company in Managua in partnership with a major Colombian drug trafficker, Hector Roman Carvajal.

Mayorga saw from the incorporation papers that the company, called PZP S.A. (for *Processadora Zona Pacifica*), had been put together by a prominent Somoza lawyer, Adolpho Garcia Esquivel, a Nicaraguan assemblyman who also served as one of Norwin Meneses's lawyers. Among PZP's owners, the records showed, was Luis Henry Pallais, the son of Somoza's closest political adviser, and Nicaraguan assemblyman Frank Duarte, another longtime Somoza supporter who headed the Assembly's antinarcotics committee. The company, according to its records, planned to operate fishing boats to export seafood to Taiwan.

Miranda was also seen making trips to a motel in the hills overlooking Managua, the Auto Hotel Nejapa—one of a strange breed of small Nicaraguan hostelries that allow patrons to drive their cars into shielded carports and enter their rooms unseen from the outside. Such hideaways are usually used for trysts with hookers and mistresses. The Hotel Nejapa, police learned, had once belonged to General Edmundo Meneses. The Chamorro government had recently returned it to the Meneses family, and it was now being run by Norwin Meneses, business records showed. The incorporator of the new hotel business was—surprise—Somoza lawyer Garcia Esquivel, the incorporator of PZP.

Mayorga surmised that Miranda was working for Meneses and Frank Vigil, and he suspected they were plotting to use the fishing company as a front for a cocaine smuggling venture. In the summer of 1991, he said, his men began following Meneses and his wife, Blanca Margarita. One September evening Mrs. Meneses drove to a restaurant near her house, the Lobster Inn, and got a table. A few moments later, DEA agent Federico G. Villarreal arrived. Hot on his heels was Norwin Meneses.

To the shock of the Nicaraguan police, Villarreal was having dinner with Meneses and his wife. (Their shock would have been greater had they known that Meneses, at the time, was technically a fugitive from justice.) When his men excitedly returned from the stakeout with their news, Mayorga was dumbfounded. Villareal, the senior agent in the DEA's office in Costa Rica, had just met with Mayorga to discuss the idea of the DEA starting a formal, cooperative relationship with the Sandinista police. What was he doing meeting with Nicaragua's top cocaine trafficker in Mayorga's backyard? Behind Mayorga's back?

Running a clandestine operation in a foreign country without informing the local authorities, Mayorga knew, violated just about every DEA policy there was. Either Villarreal was a friend of Meneses, which also violated DEA policy, or the DEA and the drug kingpin were up to something that the Nicaraguan National Police weren't supposed to know about. Something here was very fishy.

Mayorga went to see his boss, Nicaraguan National Police commander Rene Vivas, who shared his concerns. Checking with sources in Costa Rica, they learned Meneses and Villarreal had been seen together in San Jose as well. There was definitely something going on between Meneses and the Americans, they concluded. A lid of secrecy was clamped on their investigation. No one else in government, and especially not the DEA, would be informed until after it was all over. Their agents were sworn to absolute secrecy and given as little advance notice as possible of upcoming operations.

The precautions paid off. On a Sunday morning in early November 1991, Mayorga's men executed a series of simultaneous raids on Meneses's drug ring. At the Quinta Wichita, a small ranch ten miles south of Managua, they caught Norwin's engineers in the act of welding cocaine-filled PVC pipes into the frame of an auto transport trailer. A couple of Mercedes sedans were in the process of having the same alterations performed. They found 130 kilos there. In a bedroom in Miranda's mother's house, they found hundreds more hidden under blankets with spare tires thrown on top. In an abandoned military bunker they found more kilos, packed into air conditioner and television boxes that bore the address of the Auto Hotel Nejapa.

In all, the Nicaraguan police seized 725 kilos of cocaine, worth roughly $15 million wholesale. They also found Uzi submachine guns, Makarov pistols, and California license plates. Meneses, his brother Luis, Enrique Miranda, Frank Vigil, and the engineers and craftsmen Norwin had hired to prepare the vehicles were arrested.

(The auto transport trailer Meneses's men were busy stuffing with cocaine had recently been purchased for $125,000 in El Salvador from none other than former CIA pilot Marcos Aguado. Aguado, who'd helped run the secret Contra air base at Ilopango during the war, was not charged in the connection with the case, and his involvement was never publicly revealed. In an interview, he denied knowing how Meneses would use the trailer, although Miranda said he was present when Aguado and Meneses discussed drug trafficking one evening at Norwin's mansion.)

The Meneses drug bust was major news in Central America. It was the largest cocaine seizure in Nicaragua's history, and it prompted an uproar in the highly partisan Nicaraguan press, as two prominent Nicaraguan politicians were seemingly implicated. They were never charged.

The story made several U.S. newspapers as well. Reporter Jonathan Marshall of the *San Francisco Chronicle*—who had just coauthored a book called *Cocaine Politics: Drugs, Armies and the CIA in Central America*—wrote a detailed piece about Meneses and his relationship with the FDN and its leaders. Marshall's story also questioned the seeming inability of U.S. authorities to capture the drug kingpin during the years he was living in America. The *Chronicle* buried the story deep inside the paper, and it was ignored by the rest of the American media, which was then consumed with the "scandal" over Bush's chief of staff, John Sununu, using military planes for personal trips.

Commander Vivas went to the Tipitapa prison outside Managua to personally take charge of Meneses's interrogation. He found the trafficker relaxed—almost smug. "He said he wasn't worried about me because he had the backing of a higher power, a superpower," Vivas recalled. "He said he was working for the United States to get Sandinista officials on drug charges, and that I was one of his targets. I told him not to fuck with me because I didn't believe him. I thought he was just trying to impress me. But he insisted it was true and said I would find out for myself."

The evening of the raids, Mayorga called the Costa Rican DEA office to inform Villarreal of the arrests, but since it was Sunday no one was in. He stuck an arrest report into the fax machine and zapped it to the U.S. embassy in San Jose.

"Then, big surprise, I get to my office at 9 A.M. Monday, and Villarreal is there waiting for me," Mayorga grinned. "He wants more information. I asked him what was his special interest in this case?" After getting some evasive answers, Mayorga said, he provided Villarreal with the basic facts and waited for the American to tell him about Meneses's relationship with the DEA. Nothing was said.

Villarreal came back later looking for more information. By then, Mayorga said, "we'd had a chance to analyze the phone book that we had found on Norwin when we arrested him, and inside were phone numbers for Ronald Lard, the DEA country attache in Costa Rica. I challenged Villarreal to explain this, and he couldn't."

Then Mayorga told the DEA agent that his men had seen him dining with Meneses less than two weeks before the raid. Why, Mayorga asked, was the DEA secretly meeting in Managua with a drug trafficker who was in the process of bringing 725 kilos of cocaine into his country? And why hadn't the Nicaraguan police been informed? Villareal simply lied, denying that he'd met with the drug kingpin. He told Justice Department inspectors that he "did not believe he knew the [Nicaraguan] police well enough to share that information." Actually, Mayorga only knew half the story. Villareal had met with Meneses two or three times in Managua, not just once, yet Villareal claims he can't remember what those discussions concerned or if Meneses became his informant afterwards. In the end, Villareal placated Mayorga by providing him with some intelligence reports of Meneses' criminal activities in the U.S., but Mayorga described the DEA's assistance as minimal and grudging.

It had been Meneses, Mayorga learned, who'd tipped off the DEA to the trip Ivis Hernandez was taking in the cocaine-laden microbus. The cocaine Hernandez was taking north was not Norwin's, he said; it was Frank Vigil's. He theorized that Meneses ratted out the shipment to allay the DEA's concerns that he was dealing on the side. "Villarreal made it clear to me that they did not completely trust Meneses," Vivas said. "He made me understand that Meneses was playing both sides."

Armed with that information, Mayorga paid Enrique Miranda a visit. He reminded him of his earlier denials regarding his girlfriend, and Miranda morosely admitted "having abused his relationship with her," Mayorga said. "Then he asked me why the police had stopped her car in the first place. How did they find out?"

It was your boss, Mayorga told him. Norwin. He'd told the DEA. And now your girlfriend is in jail in Mexico, undergoing God-knows-what humiliations. How's that for loyalty? Miranda repaid it in kind. He started talking. "We used Norwin's cooperation with the DEA to get Miranda to cooperate with us," Mayorga said.

Combining the information provided by Miranda, Villarreal, and Meneses, the Nicaraguan police pieced together a picture of what Meneses and the DEA were working on. Meneses, they believed, had been sent to Nicaragua on a secret DEA mission to snare high-ranking Sandinista military officials in a drug sting. The first person Meneses had approached was Commandante Bayardo Arce Castano, a cousin of Meneses's wife Blanca and one of the most influential of the nine Sandinista leaders. According to Meneses, Arce agreed to participate in a cocaine deal, and he offered to provide the protection of the Sandinista military. Arce admitted that Meneses had come to see him but denied making any drug deals.

Meneses's lawyers, who tried unsuccessfully to force Arce to testify, dug up some evidence to support their client's claim. According to affidavits they gathered from eyewitnesses, the Colombian airplane carrying the 725 kilos of cocaine had been met at the Rosita airstrip by a Sandinista army truck, which was loaded with boxes from the airplane. Two Sandinista army officers supervised the unloading, the witnesses said.

But when the Nicaraguan police arrested the DEA's sting man, Norwin Meneses, the operation was blown wide open and Meneses' American handlers left him to twist in the wind. According to two Nicaraguan prison officials, soon after his arrest Meneses gave his wife Blanca a letter to deliver to the U.S. Embassy, addressed to two American officials, asking them to intercede with the Chamorro government. The sources were unaware if the letter was answered.

The DEA denies there was any such plan but those denials are hard to believe in light of some of the cables released by the CIA's Inspector General in 1998. Both the State Department and the Department of Defense, the CIA report revealed, were monitoring Meneses' movements at the time. "Those reports included reference to a trip to Colombia by Meneses and Miranda in September 1991 and to the group's loss of a Ford Escort 'loaded with cocaine' in Houston in September 1991," the CIA report stated. Why those agencies would be so interested in Meneses then is not explained in the declassified version of the CIA report.

Had the sting worked, the resultant drug scandal would almost certainly have crippled the last vestiges of Sandinista power in the new Nicaraguan government: their control of the military and the police. President Violeta Chamorro was being subjected to intense pressure to purge her government of Sandinistas by conservatives in Washington, particularly Senator Jesse Helms of North Carolina, whose staff had been intimately involved in the creation and funding of the Contra movement. Helms was then stalling a $50 million foreign aid bill for Nicaragua over the continued presence of Sandinistas—particularly Rene Vivas—in the national police and military.

The 1991 Meneses operation, in all likelihood, was simply another version of the 1984 DEA/CIA sting involving trafficker Barry Seal, which the Reagan administration had used to accuse the Sandinistas of drug trafficking right before a crucial Contra aid vote. Had Meneses been successful, the Sandinistas would have been loudly denounced as drug dealers by the Bush administration—which already had a history of invading Latin American countries run by unfriendly traffickers—and might have been forced out of the Chamorro government.

At Norwin's trial in August 1992, Miranda took the stand against his former boss and bared all, explaining Norwin's relationship with the DEA and the Contras, the drug flights from El Salvador to Texas, and the meetings with CIA pilot Aguado and CIA agent Enrique Bermúdez, the FDN's former military commander. "Norwin even arranged a party in his residence for Bermúdez, celebrating his possible appointment as Army Chief by the new government," Miranda testified. "I also took part in meetings where Norwin Meneses and Bermúdez discussed the possibility to use the Army to send drug loads to the U.S. and Europe. . .but these plans were truncated by Bermúdez's sudden death."

Bermúdez had been murdered in the parking lot of the Intercontinental Hotel in Managua in February 1991 by someone who shot him in the back of the head. The slaying was never solved.

Meneses denied everything. The cocaine wasn't his, he insisted. It belonged to drug-dealing Sandinistas—Rene Vivas, Roger Mayorga, and Bayardo Arce. He claimed the Sandinistas had set up him and his brother on phony drug charges as "revenge" for their years of assistance to the FDN. "I was an important part of the FDN since 1982. And they [the Sandinistas] proclaimed themselves as my mortal enemies in 1984," he testified. Meneses blamed the Sandinistas for planting false stories about him in American and Costa Rican newspapers and pointed to his spotless record as proof that he was no criminal.

"I have never been arrested in the United States and in any other part of the world. I've never been the subject of a court trial. I've never been subpoenaed as a witness," Meneses testified. "I have been mentioned by some other people in some other cases, but that's because of the long arm of *Sandinismo*."

The Nicaraguan judges were bothered by Meneses's lack of a criminal record, court transcripts show, and they challenged Roger Mayorga on his public declarations that Meneses was "the king of drugs" in Nicaragua, and his country's representative to the Cali cartel. "How do you explain the fact that Norwin Meneses, implicated since 1974 in the trafficking of drugs, and where an arrest warrant exists issued by a court in San Francisco in the United States, has not been detained in the United States, a country in which he has lived, entered and departed many times since 1974?" one judge asked Mayorga.

"Well, that question needs to be asked to the authorities of the United States because I'm limited to the information that was supplied to us by. . .the DEA," Mayorga said stiffly.

"Explain then, that after 22 years, you have not been asked on the part of the anti-narcotics police in the U.S. to arrest the Nicaraguan citizen Norwin Meneses for drugs, if he has resided for much time in the United States and Nicaragua? He was very easy to find in the United States because of his residency card, and in Nicaragua, because he's highly well-known."

"With respect to his residence in the United States, in the previous answer I explained ignorance as to why the authorities in the United States had not stopped him," Mayorga testily replied. "With respect to Nicaragua, be clear that this Meneses had a year and a half in Nicaragua. . .and in the year and a half he was captured for drug trafficking."

Meneses was convicted and sentenced to thirty years in jail. As a result of his cooperation, Miranda was given a seven-year sentence. A few days after the trial, Nicaraguan prison authorities reported that Meneses had paid a deranged inmate $10,000 to knife Miranda in revenge for his damning testimony. Meneses denied it, but Miranda was quickly transferred to a prison in another city.

After a lifetime of crime and the ruination of countless lives, Norwin Meneses was finally behind bars. Almost single-handedly, an underpaid, middle-aged Nicaraguan policeman had, in eighteen months, done something that the entire U.S. government—with its spy satellites, international wiretapping capabilities, and an army of drug agents—had been unable to do for twenty years. Three weeks after the verdicts came down, under pressure from the U.S. State Department and the White House, the Chamorro government fired Rene Vivas as Nicaraguan National Police commander.

Roger Mayorga, who by then had begun looking into Danilo Blandón's relationship with the Meneses drug ring and its money-laundering tendrils in Central America, was fired soon afterwards. Meneses, meanwhile, was released from prison in 1997, having served only six years of his sentence. That same year, his and Blandón's suspected money launderer, Orlando Murillo, was elected to the Nicaraguan National Assembly.

24

"They're gonna forget I was a drug dealer"

In the summer of 1992, as one drug potentate, Norwin Meneses, was settling into the dreary Tipitapa prison, another, Ricky Ross, was preparing to rejoin society. Freeway Rick had done his time carefully at Phoenix, learning the basics of reading and writing, obtaining his high school equivalency certificate. He became a vegetarian and a devotee of self-help guru Anthony J. Robbins, whose motivational tapes Ross listened to incessantly.

He had a plan for the rest of his life, and ever the promotional genius, he used his notoriety as one of L.A.'s biggest crack dealers to jump-start his plan. In the wake of the nightmarish riots in South Central that April, which had fleetingly focused the nation's press on the problems of inner-city neighborhoods, Ross had begun granting interviews to reporters searching for reasons for the area's self-destruction. In quick succession, Ross was interviewed by CBS News, the *Cincinnati Post*, *Esquire* magazine, ABC News, and NBC News. Freeway Rick was an instant hit with the press. He was accessible and self-effacing. He answered reporters' questions directly and made sense. He would open up his prison records to anyone who asked and was disarmingly honest about the crimes he'd committed.

"Soft-spoken, dressed in sweats and sporting shoulder-length dreadlocks, Ross hardly seems like a man who spent about four years in prison for drug trafficking," an *LA. Times* reporter wrote in 1993.

Asked by *The Cincinnati Post* if he'd ever felt regret when he was dealing cocaine, Ross said the feeling was just the opposite: "I felt I'd accomplished something. I'm a money-maker. A capitalist."

He not only made great copy, but his story had a terrific hook.

The final real estate acquisition he'd made before his arrest in 1989 was a huge abandoned theater at the intersection of Adams and Crenshaw boulevards in the heart of South Central. In its heyday, the 40,000-square-foot Adams Street Theater had been a major venue for touring R&B and Motown artists. Ross dreamed of restoring the dilapidated hulk to its former grandeur, becoming an impresario, and leaving a permanent mark on South Central. "One of the times I had met Danilo in New York I had went to the Apollo Theater and I saw what they was doing there, and I said that this would be a perfect idea for Los Angeles to reach out to the kids in my community," Ross said.

When he got out of prison, Ross told the reporters, he was going to make up for the damage he'd done to his neighborhood. He'd learned his lesson, he said. He'd destroyed lives. As his penance, he was going to take his last remaining drug profits and put them to good use, turning the old theater into a youth center for the children of South Central.

It would have a gymnasium, classrooms, recording studios, computer training rooms, and a performance hall. It would be a place where kids "could go and entertain because, you know, rap is big in my neighborhood. Most of the big rappers came from my area, where I grew up at. So I said, 'Well, we could do something like the Apollo Theater, give them a place where they can go and perform.' And then also, it would give the ones that's not performing a place to go and see what was going on, and we could also reach out and start giving them messages about how to deal with life because if you don't have something to interest the kids then they won't pay you no attention."

Ross was released from federal prison in August 1993 and returned home to South Central, moving into his mother's house and throwing himself into the theater project, which he was calling the Freeway Academy. He began making the rounds of local community groups and politicians, trying to raise money for the renovations, which his pro bono architectural consultants estimated at $18.5 million.

His efforts got a major boost in November 1993, when his quest to fund the Freeway Academy broke into the national media. First, the *Los Angeles Times* published a flattering profile under the headline "Ex-Drug Dealer Out to Stage Turnaround."

"Standing on the bare stage of the cavernous Adams Street Theater, his arms spread wide as if receiving a benediction, Ricky Ross speaks fervently of the second chance in life he never thought he would get," the story began. "Once the head of one of Los Angeles' most notorious cocaine rings that did business nationwide, Ross has embarked on a venture that he is determined will be just as big: helping youths."

"Young people have no safety valve these days that allows them to express themselves, develop their talents," Ross advised the newspaper. "Look at what happened to me. I had a lot of talent, but I never even read a book until I got to jail. I don't want other kids to end up there before they've even gotten a chance to do something."

The pastor of a nearby church told the paper that he'd been impressed when Ross addressed his congregation about his plans. "It's a blessing he wants to turn over a new leaf," the minister said.

Spurred by the *L.A. Times* story, the ABC News magazine *Day One* aired its own story on Freeway Rick, a piece it had had in the can for several months. It appeared right after Monday Night Football. "Next we have the story of a young man who set out to poison his entire community," correspondent Forrest Sawyer began, calling Ross "one of America's most powerful drug dealers."

"He lives in South Central Los Angeles and he was the area's biggest cocaine dealer," Sawyer intoned. "I say 'was' because today Ross claims he has changed his ways. He says he wants to make up for all the harm he's done by building something good for his neighborhood. Some people believe he really means it. Others say it's just a scam. Either way, Freeway's story proves that when you've been a major player in America's crime crisis, going straight is never easy."

Sawyer interviewed narcotics detectives and prosecutors who were openly skeptical of Ross's scheme, saying they doubted he'd ever straighten up. Ross was just trying to buy respectability, they charged, conning the community he'd been destroying for years. Sawyer also interviewed L.A. politicians who were working with Ross to raise the funds, and a representative of the Haagen-Dazs company, who said the ice cream maker had already agreed to pitch in.

Ross admitted to Sawyer that he didn't have much cash and he agreed that he could easily return to drug dealing to raise it. "Probably quicker than I used to make it because I'm smarter now," he said. But he insisted he wasn't going down that road again.

"What do you want to be remembered as?" Sawyer asked him at the close of the piece.

"As the guy that built this great youth center in South Central Los Angeles, in the middle of where all the riots broke out," Ross answered. "The guy that really made an impact in the community, that changed lives. That's what I want to be remembered as. That's what I *will* be remembered as. They're going to forget I was a drug dealer."

Though Ross could barely believe it himself, the Freeway Academy project began gathering steam. In early December 1993, a Los Angeles-based community group, 100 Black Men, held a dinner in Ross's honor, "and more than 200 people filled the Regency West to make sure he has the right backing to accomplish his task," the *Los Angeles Sentinel* reported.

"Magic Johnson had came. He said he was going to help. Ice Cube, Snoop Doggy Dogg, I mean, all the rappers from L.A. that I had knew from the past said that they was going to come out and help," Ross said. "I was like on just another type of high, you know? I was going to churches and doing speeches. . .. I was talking to the president of Polygram Records, Ed Eckstein, who was talking about giving me a record company."

But, as *Day One* had predicted, there was no escaping his past. Shortly after the show appeared, Ross said, Danilo Blandón called him out of the blue. He'd seen him on TV, he told Ross, and was glad to hear he was out of jail and doing so well.

It was the first time Ross had spoken to Blandón in four years—not surprisingly, since drug dealers tend to shy away from prisons—and Rick was happy to hear his friend's voice again. Danilo said he and Chepita would love to see him when he had the time. But there was another reason for his call, according to Ross: "He said he had a great business and he needed my help. He wanted me to talk to his wife and she could settle everything. He had a connection for me and that it would be great like it used to be. I told him that I was trying a movie, you know, I was working on a book and I was out of the business. I didn't know nobody."

Blandón confirmed calling Ross around this time but said it was just a social call.

Ross said Chepita followed up by calling him up at the youth center offices and insisting that he come have dinner with them. They were having a get-together at her mother's house in Glendale, she said, and the girls were dying to see him. Ross agreed to go, but just to be on the safe side, he took a friend with him, Norman Tillman, who was working with former football star Jim Brown on similar youth projects for South Central.

"So we go up to the house. She hugs me and tells me she was glad I was out. Danilo loves me. She loves me. Her daughters was there and a couple other people was there," Ross said. "I liked their daughters. They was like my little sisters."

But it was apparent that something was on Chepita's mind, Ross said. She asked him to come outside with her for a moment. "She started telling me that my friends had lost a lot of money of Danilo's—Tone-Tone and Mike." Tony McDonald and Mike Smith were two of Ross's successors in South Central, picking up his accounts and buying from Blandón while Ross was in jail. Chepita claimed they owed Danilo $18,000 and had refused to pay it back, and now the Colombians were pushing Danilo for the money, which he didn't have. "She wanted me to find somebody to sell some drugs to," Ross said. "I told her no. I didn't know nobody. I'd just gotten out of jail, you know, I'm trying to get my life together, trying to stay away from the drugs."

Chepita, Ross said, told him she understood. But Danilo called him later and wondered why Ross was refusing to help him out. It wasn't like he was asking Ross to get back into the drug business to make money, Blandón said. He was asking as a friend, as a personal favor, to get the Colombians off his back. It was Rick's friends who'd gotten him into this mess, he pointed out.

"I told him I wasn't in the position," Ross said. "Basically, I was telling him, 'You see what I'm doing, you know? You saw me on TV. You've been reading the newspapers.' I mean, he kept up with me all the way. He knew everything about me, and he knew about me testifying against the Sheriffs and everything. So I told him basically, 'You know what I'm going through right now, you know, and I'm trying to stay clean.'"

Ross felt bad about turning his back on Blandón, but he didn't have much time to dwell on it. There was a little matter in Texas that still needed attending to—his indictment for calling his cousins and talking about a cocaine deal on the phone. The Texas authorities were still waiting for him to pay his debt to society.

Ross pleaded guilty to the Texas charges and reentered prison in December 1993. He said he thought he would be doing thirty days or so, but the weeks stretched into months, and it wasn't until the end of August 1994 that he was finally released from the Smith County jail in Tyler. *L.A. Times* reporter Jesse Katz, who was working with a team of reporters on a massive project to document the ravages ten years of crack had wrought on L.A., was there to record the scene: "The notorious Los Angeles drug lord known as Freeway Rick, who once boasted that his coast-to-coast cocaine empire grossed more than $1 million a day, walked out of a Texas jail Wednesday and vowed to return home in search of redemption," Kate wrote. He described the thirty-four-year-old parolee as "once one of the nation's most prolific cocaine wholesalers," a dealer who "probably rose faster and higher than any other drug trafficker from the streets of South Central Los Angeles."

Ross, Katz wrote, "said he hoped to head back to his old neighborhood as soon as possible and devote his life to warning youngsters about the mistakes that kept him locked up for most of the last five years."

After a short probation, Ross returned to South Central in mid-October, a free man at last. His ten-month absence had taken a toll on the Freeway Academy. It was out of money, and the bills were piling up fast. To tide the project over while he was serving his time in Texas, he'd borrowed $30,000 from a Compton crack dealer, Leroy "Chico" Brown, who was helping Ross put a recording studio in the theater, but that money was just a memory. Ross had $57 to his name when he walked out of jail in Texas. His motel and his auto parts store were gone; his remaining cash was eaten up by attorney's fees. The rental houses he owned, most of which had been placed in other people's names, had been sold, foreclosed upon, or abandoned.

But $30,000 was $30,000, and Chico wanted his money back.

He wasn't the only one. Blandón called from Nicaragua the day after Ross got back into town. They needed to talk, he told Ross, but he didn't want to do it over international phone lines. He would be back in L.A. soon and wanted Rick to call him from a pay phone. "He was telling me that he needed help. Tone-Tone and them had beat him out of the money and he wanted me to help him out," Ross said. "I told him I'd just got out of jail—I couldn't buy no drugs. I ain't got no money to buy no drugs." Blandón denied making that call.

For the first time in years, Freeway Rick was forced to get a job—a real job—working for someone else. He was hired on at Wolf River Development Corp., a company that bought repossessed houses in L.A.'s slums and fixed them up for resale. It was Ross's task to go in and clean them up.

"People would leave furniture and the carpet would be just ruined and all kinds of stuff like that. So I started off, I would go in and I would pull the carpet up. I would take all the furniture out. Sometimes they'd have trash in the garages and it would be just sky high. I would clean the garage out. I would cut the grass, trim the trees, you know, make it where it's not just a total dump." The job paid little, however, and Ross kept his eye peeled for other ways to make some money. On October 16, 1994, Ross called Blandón in Nicaragua. The man who owned Wolf River, Ross said, had a 1991 Mercedes 560 he'd wrecked and had rebuilt, but he didn't like the workmanship. Ross thought they should buy it and have Blandón resell it in Nicaragua at a premium. Blandón said he'd have to look into it.

And then the conversation turned to cocaine. Ross asked Blandón if he could "get a little something right now," which Blandón said he interpreted to mean a couple of kilos. Blandón said he had some merchandise in Guatemala that he was planning to move to Los Angeles soon but didn't have the expense money—driver's fees and plane tickets and the like—necessary to move it across the border into the United States. Ross would have to loan him the money to pay the expenses, Blandón said.

Ross asked what price he was planning to sell the cocaine for.

"Eleven," Blandón said, meaning $11,000 a kilo.

"Okay, that's good," Ross replied. "Let me know as soon as possible."

Blandón asked Ross to call him the next day, but he didn't, and the negotiations for the cocaine sale went nowhere. Ross said it was pointless because he didn't have the money to pay Blandón's expenses. In a series of later calls, Blandón kept asking Ross for a loan and reminding him about the $18,000 lone-Tone owed him. According to Blandón's notes of the conversations, Ross kept insisting he was "broke himself" and "wasn't ready to start the bussinees [sic]." Most of the conversations concerned buying cars and trucks and reselling them.

But Blandón and his wife kept pressing, Ross said, calling him, calling his mother, paging him constantly. His probation officer, James Galipeau, said he was driving Ross to a high school one morning to deliver one of his motivational speeches to the students when Ross's pager went off. Ross looked at the number and began cursing, "This guy won't leave me alone," Ross griped, explaining that the caller was a former cocaine supplier who wanted to resume business. "I mean, the son-of-a-bitch called him while he was in the car with his probation officer!" Galipeau said.

Ross said he met with Blandón in November at Meneses's old restaurant on Hoover Street and was told that if his friend didn't repay the money, Blandón was going to "take care of Tony." Ross believed Blandón meant it; when Mike Smith had gotten behind on some payments to Danilo, Smith and his house had been shot up. Blandón confirmed that he spoke to Ross several times about the debt Tony McDonald owed, but he denied ever threatening to kill him.

In December 1994 the *L.A. Times* published its opus on the ten-year anniversary of the city's crack plague, and once again, Ricky Ross was in the news. Reporter Jesse Katz crafted a poignant 2,500-word feature that chronicled "the saga of Ricky Ross' rise and fall." It pinned the explosion of L.A.'s crack market to his teenage dealings in South Central.

"If there was an eye to the storm," it began, "if there was a criminal mastermind behind crack's decade-long reign, if there was one outlaw capitalist most responsible for flooding Los Angeles' streets with mass-marketed cocaine, his name was Freeway Rick."

According to the story Ross's cocaine operation had so much influence on the L.A. drug market that "by the end of the decade, he had helped cut wholesale rates from $60,000 a kilo to just $10,000." The *Times* headline called him the "Deposed King of Crack" and described Ross as "a master marketer [who] was key to the drug's spread in L.A."

The Freeway Academy got another plug, and Ross's embittered nemesis, the recently convicted LAPD sergeant Steve Polak, took a shot at him—a verbal one—calling Ross a con artist. "Let him pay for all the people his drugs have killed. Let him put money into the hospitals for all the addicted babies. Let me see him turn over a million or two to the IRS and get a job. . .then maybe I'll give him some credibility," Polak told Katz. "Ross will fall again some day," the ex-detective said ominously.

Katz's story prompted another flood of calls to the Freeway Academy, Ross said, including more from Danilo Blandón. One day in February 1995 he was driving around with Chico Brown, his erstwhile recording studio partner, "and I got a page from Danilo. I called Danilo back and I start talking to him and Chico decoded the conversation." Brown, a veteran crack dealer with the Patrick Johnson organization, wanted to know what was up. Was Ross doing dope on the side, when he owed him money?

No, Ross told him. He didn't have enough to buy a car. He was six months behind on the rent for the theater. Chico had to loan him the $800 he needed to file a bankruptcy petition, to keep the bank at bay. Yet this friend of his kept trying to hit him up for the money Tone-Tone lost, Ross explained, wanting him to do a deal to pay it back.

Brown's moon-face broke into a wide smile. He had a solution to everyone's problems, he told Ross, *He* would put up the money for the dope deal. He had some friends back in Baltimore who were looking to make an investment. All Ross needed to do was introduce Chico to his source. If the deal went down, he'd not only forget about the $30,000 Ross owed him, but he'd *give* Rick $70,000 for his troubles.

Rick wouldn't really be buying or selling anything, Brown rationalized. All he'd be doing is making an introduction. Brown and his people would take all the financial risk and handle all the dope. Ross wouldn't have to come anywhere near it. Easy as pie. Unless, of course, Ross had a better idea about how to raise the 30 K he owed him.

Ross thought it over. When Brown put it that way, it didn't actually sound so bad. After all, it wasn't like *he* was selling dope, something he'd promised everybody he'd never do again. He sure wasn't buying any. Chieo was. Danilo's cocaine—Chico's money. Their deal. Not his. All he had to do was make a phone call. One little call, and he'd have Danilo off his back, Chico off his back, the bank off his back. In and out. One time.

What the fuck. He was with it, he told Chico. He'd set things up.

In late February 1995 Ross, Chico Brown, and Brown's friend from Baltimore, Curtis James, met Blandón in the parking lot of the Popeye's chicken restaurant in National City, just south of San Diego. Ross introduced the Nicaraguan to his friends and told him they would be the ones he'd be dealing with. And they were ready to deal. Right now.

Surprisingly, Blandón demurred, as if not yet ready to seal the deal. The cocaine hadn't crossed the border yet, he told them. He had 150 kilos coming in. Fifty was for someone else. They could have the 100 that was left.

"I asked for $200,000 [up front] and they told me they only had $160,000 but they could do it today," Blandón said. "Impossible, I told them, today. We have to take a week or two or three days while the merchandise is crossing, so you have to wait."

He also tossed off one more threat against Tony McDonald, telling Ross, "That Tony—I want to get him."

Ross had heard enough about Tone-Tone and the $18,000. "He ain't gonna fucking pay you!" he said angrily "He ain't gonna pay you! It ain't worth it. Let it go. Let it go."

"Okay," Blandón replied. "I'll let it go."

"We're going to make a lot of money," Ross reminded him. Blandón laughed.

They met a week later, again in the Popeye's parking lot. Blandón told Ross that the Colombians wanted to meet his friends, to make sure they were reliable. They knew Ross could be trusted. But they'd never dealt with his friends before.

Ross, driving Chico's new Nissan Pathfinder, pulled into a parking slot, with Curtis James and Brown in the backseat. Blandón and a Hispanic man who did not speak English walked up to the driver's window. Blandón served as the man's translator. How much money were they bringing to the table? the Colombian wanted to know.

From the backseat, Chico told Blandón he had $160,000 now but would have $200,000 by the first of March, if the Colombians wanted to wait that long. Blandón was testy about it, but Ross said that was his problem—they'd done bigger deals with less up front before. If they could deliver it in LA., Chico said, he'd guarantee them $500,000. The Colombian suggested a $300,000 down payment would be more appropriate. After all, this was $1 million worth of cocaine they were going to be giving them on faith.

Brown told him they'd get the money. "My word is bond," he said. "Whatever I say is the truth. My objective is to get you paid off as soon as possible."

Blandón told him the cocaine was crossing the Mexican border that night, and they'd call when it arrived in San Diego. Blandón didn't call, and Ross's partners refused to come up with any more money for the down payment.

At 730 A.M., March 2, 1995, Ross called Blandón at home and told him they were in San Diego, ready to deal. Blandón said he and the Colombian were ducking into Tijuana to pick it up and would call when it was over the border. Around four hours later, Blandón called Ross and his friends at the cheap motel they were staying in, the E-Z 8, and told them to be at the Denny's Restaurant off I-805 in Chula Vista in twenty minutes.

Ross and his old friend Michael McLaurin—the San Jose State football player who first told Ross about cocaine back in 1979—drove to the restaurant in McLaurin's new purple Ford Ranger pickup. McLaurin, who was working at an L.A. hospital and had been hitting up the medical staff for donations to the Freeway Academy, said Ross had called him and told him he was buying a car in San Diego, but didn't have a way to get down there. McLaurin agreed to give him a lift, eager to take his new pickup truck on a long ride.

With Chico and Curtis James following in Chieo's Pathfinder, they met Blandón and the Colombian behind the Denny's shortly after noon. Blandón tried one more time to get Ross to pony up more cash. The Colombians had been expecting $300,000, Blandón complained, and Ross shows up with only around $170,000? Ross assured him he'd have the rest of the money by tomorrow. Where was the cocaine?

Nearby, Blandón told him. In a "load car" parked in a shopping center lot, just like always. Chico Brown said he wanted to see it, and Blandón got huffy.

"I told him, 'Hey, we don't have no time,'" Blandón recalled. "'Why don't you tell us that before?'"

But Brown dug in his heels, telling Blandón that he wasn't buying any dope he'd never seen. Ross jumped in to smooth things over. It's not necessary, Ross assured Brown. He and Danilo always did business this way. If Danilo says the dope is there, it's there. Relax.

"We trust each other," Blandón assured him. Now, where was the money?

Brown went to his Pathfinder, reached inside, and pulled out a black-and-green shopping bag full of cash bundles, which he handed to the Colombian. The trafficker put the bag in Blandón's car and told Ross to follow them to the load car, where they would get the car keys.

They drove about a quarter-mile to the Bonita Plaza Mall and pulled into the parking lot outside the Montgomery Ward. The Colombian got out and handed a key chain to Curtis James, telling him the cocaine was in the white Chevy Blazer parked about twenty yards away. Ross and McLaurin strolled nonchalantly to the Blazer, and Ross stuck his head inside, where he saw four cardboard boxes containing twenty-five kilos each, nestled in the back.

It was all there, just as Danilo had promised. A deal was still a deal. Ross told McLaurin to take the Blazer back to L.A., and he'd follow him in the purple pickup. As he walked to the truck, he saw Blandón and the Colombian driving away.

Then all hell broke loose.

From everywhere, police cars came screaming up, sirens blaring. Cops in raid jackets were running through the parking lot, waving guns. McLaurin revved the engine of the Blazer and dropped it into gear.

"They burned rubber," DEA agent Charles Jones said. "Federal agents blocked the vehicle. . .they burned rubber forward, he blocked it. They put it in reverse, he burned rubber in reverse and the kill switch finally kicked in." The DEA had booby-trapped the Blazer so it couldn't be driven.

Ross scampered to the purple truck and jumped in, tearing out of the parking lot with an unmarked DEA car roaring along behind him. He was sick to his stomach, sweating. How could be have been so fucking stupid? How could he have not seen this coming? Now what? "I was hoping to find a wall that I could just crash myself into. I wanted to die."

Ross "went out of the shopping center, blew through stop signs, intersections at a high rate of speed," Jones said. "He tried to turn onto Sweetwater Road and a police officer blocked him and he swerved and crashed in the bushes and jumped out and ran away." It was not a long chase. In a matter of minutes he was captured behind a house on a nearby street, handcuffed, and stuffed into the back of a police car. He had been a free man only six months.

Back at the DEA regional headquarters in National City, the jubilant agents counted and stacked up the pile of money they'd seized. It turned out that Chico had shorted the Colombians by a couple hundred bucks: $169,445 was piled on the table, and the agents snapped pictures. Ross was pushed into a chair and asked if he wanted to make a statement.

Sure, Ross said. Why not? He saw the lay of the land. Danilo had set him up, had probably taped all of their calls. Everyone else was under arrest. The cops had the dope and Chico's money. Case closed. Ross told them everything.

Two weeks later a federal grand jury returned a two-count indictment against Brown, Curtis James, Ricky Ross, and Mike McLaurin, charging them with conspiracy to possess cocaine and possession with intent to sell. This would be Ross's third strike. He was looking at life without parole this time.

His friends and family were crushed and embarrassed.

"I cussed his Mom out, I cussed his brother out, and my Mom and I cried together," said Ross's friend and partner in the youth center, Norman Tillman. "He was talking so positive, telling me in earnest how he was going to make it as big legitimately as he did illegitimately. He was going to prove it to the world."

"Sting Snares Drug Lord Who Vowed To Go Straight," the *L.A. Times* headline blared. A chagrined Jesse Katz was flown in from his new job at the *Times* Houston bureau to write off Ricky Ross for good. "I had no doubt that he was going to fall again," former LAPD detective Polak crowed to Katz. "I just didn't know it was going to be this soon."

Katz interviewed Ross's brother David, who complained that the arrest "seems like entrapment. They set him up and he evidently fell for it." David Ross noted that the informant was a drug dealing acquaintance "who just kept bugging him, calling and calling, but Ricky wasn't doing anything like that anymore."

Katz called Ross afterward and demanded to know why he'd done it. Ross told him he'd set up the deal to help get a friend out of debt, "and I was like, 'Come on. Think about yourself here first.'"

Katz said he felt personally betrayed by Ross, who was swearing to Katz that he was going straight at the very same time he was setting up a drug deal. "I caught a lot of shit from the editors over that. I'd had a hard enough time getting that original story into the paper," Katz said, six months after Ross's arrest. "It was supposed to be a separate part of the [crack] series, but they cut it in half and made it a sidebar because some people said it looked like we were glorifying the guy. So you can imagine what the reaction was at the *Times* when it came out that he'd been busted."

Asked why he thought the DEA would target someone who had just emerged from prison, broke and vowing to go straight, Katz had a ready answer: "To fuck with him. They could go after you right now. That's the scary message in all of this. If the government decides to fuck with you and you take the bait, you are automatically fucked."

Ross was locked up without bail in the Metropolitan Correctional Center in San Diego. He had really done it this time. His fate seemed as predictable as the calendar. LWOP. Life without parole. He would never see the outside world again.

PART TWO

"Things are moving all arounds us"

I was swept into Ross's decade-long relationship with Danilo Blandón in late September 1995, two months into my investigation and six months after Ross's arrest. Quite unexpectedly, my tipster's allegations about the CIA, the Contras, and cocaine had led me to the Metropolitan Correctional Center in downtown San Diego, a bleak, windowless skyscraper where the former crack king was being held without bail until his trial.

Entering the tiny interview room, Ross exuded an air of self-assurance and confidence. He appeared unfazed by his predicament, but by the time the interview was over, he had dropped the pretense. Blandón's betrayal had clearly left him hurt and bewildered. "I can't believe he done me like this," Ross commented as I packed up my tape recorder and notebooks. "Why'd he do it? You figure that out yet?"

I told him what I'd culled from the court files about Blandón's arrest in May 1992—how he'd faced a mandatory life sentence and the prospect of having his wife behind bars as well, leaving their two young daughters orphaned. It was hard to blame someone for trying to squirm out of a jam like that, I said. Ross nodded. "So how much dope did they catch him with?" None, I said. But they had him on tape-talking to informants about cocaine deals, bragging about how many thousands of kilos he'd sold. Ross's reaction brought me up short.

"That's it?" Ross asked incredulously. "They didn't find no dope on him? Then what would he roll over for? Think about it. You ain't gonna pull a life sentence just for talking to somebody about selling dope. That's bullshit. Somebody ain't tell you something."

LAPD narcotics detective Ron Hodges, who had investigated Blandón in conjunction with the DEA in 1991–92, made a similar observation when I interviewed him a few weeks later. "What's hard to understand [is] when we actually did the investigation on him and it came to a conclusion, I think he was charged with what they consider a 'no-dope conspiracy'—which is like nothing. It's so minimal. It's like trying to do something when there is nothing there." Blandón's lawyer, Brad Brunon, pointed out that his client had no criminal record, and the DEA had nothing more than some loose talk with criminal informants. There was no evidence of actual drug dealing, Brunon argued.

It made no sense. Why, then, had Blandón so readily agreed to become a government informant? And why had the Justice Department accorded him such a high degree of trust and faith? Blandón was an international criminal, a man who'd brazenly sold drugs and weapons to gang members for more than a decade. Yet here he was jetting in and out of the country at government expense, with no law enforcement supervision whatsoever—free to do as he pleased. Maybe Ricky Ross's suspicions were right, I thought. Perhaps Blandón had worked for the U.S. government before, just as Norwin Meneses had. If he had a track record, it would certainly explain his extraordinary treatment.

I quickly got a taste of how protective the Justice Department was of the Nicaraguan. In October 1995 I received an unsolicited phone call from the big blond man I'd met in the bathroom at the San Francisco federal courthouse a few weeks earlier, Assistant U.S. Attorney David Hall, Rafael Cornejo's prosecutor.

There were some people who wanted to talk to me, Hall said. My activity "has a number of people extremely worried because of an ongoing narcotics investigation that Blandón is working on for the government." Before I printed anything, I needed to know the situation. If I wasn't careful, "there is a distinct possibility that real harm, possibly death, would come to Mr. Blandón and that an investigation we have been working on for a couple of years would be compromised." The DEA wanted to know if some kind of an accommodation could be reached.

Like what? I asked.

Well, Hall said, it had been proposed that if I held off on the story for a couple of months, they might be able to arrange an exclusive interview with Blandón for me.

I told him I didn't think my editors would agree to a delay, but if lives were in danger, I'd certainly be willing to hear them out. On October 19, 1995, I walked into a roomful of DEA agents in the National City regional office, squirreled away in an industrial complex south of San Diego.

Two of the agents I recognized from court and reading their names in the court files: Blandón's handlers, the immaculately coiffed Chuck Jones and his worried-looking sidekick, Judy Gustafson. The other four I didn't know. The agent behind the desk, a tall man with an easy smile, got up and shook my hand warmly. Craig Chretien, he said, special agent in charge.

"This is a little awkward for us," Chretien began. They knew generally the story I was working on, he said, and unfortunately I was getting into some rather sensitive areas. There were undercover operations—more than four of them—that I was in danger of exposing, putting agents and their families at risk. They couldn't give me any details, of course, but I needed to appreciate the seriousness of the situation. "What's your angle here?" Chretien asked. "Is it that the DEA sometimes hires scumbags to go after people?"

"No. It's about Blandón and Norwin Meneses and the Contras," I said. "And their dealings with Ricky Ross."

The agents looked at each other quickly out of the corners of their eyes, but at first said nothing.

"That whole Central American thing," Chretien said dismissively. "I was down there. You heard all sorts of things. There was never any proof that the Contras were dealing drugs. If you're going to get involved in that, you'll never get to the truth. No one ever will."

"I think that's been pretty well established," I said. "Your informant was one of the men who was doing it."

Chretien gave Jones a sidelong glance and Jones came to life. "I can tell you that I have never, *ever* heard anything about Blandón being involved with that," he said firmly. "Not once. His only involvement with the Contras was that his father was a general or something down there."

"And these two have practically lived with the man for two years now," Chretien added, pointing to Jones and Gustafson. "If it had happened they would know about it."

I could not quite believe what I was hearing. What kind of scam was this?

"Have you ever asked him about it?" I asked Jones.

"I've already said more than I should."

"Did you ever ask him about doing it with Norwin Meneses?"

"You'd better go check your sources again," Jones snapped.

"My source is Blandón," I said. "He testified to it under oath, before a grand jury. You're telling me you don't know about that?"

Jones threw up his hands. "Oh, listen, he understands English pretty well, but sometimes he gets confused, and if you ask him a question the wrong way he'll say yes when he means no."

I shook my head. "I've got the transcripts. These weren't yes or no questions. He gave very detailed responses."

Jones's face and forehead grew beet red and his voice rose. "You're telling me that he testified that he sold cocaine for the Contras in *this* country? He sold it in *this* country?"

"That's exactly what I'm telling you. You want to see the transcripts? I've got them right here."

"I cannot believe that those two U.S. attorneys up there, if they had him saying that before a grand jury, that they would ever, ever, ever put him on a witness stand!" Jones fumed. "They'd have to be insane! They'd have to be total idiots!"

"They didn't put him on the witness stand," I reminded him. "They yanked him at the last minute."

"That's because the judge ordered them to turn over all that unredacted material!" Jones blurted. "We're not going to. . ." He looked quickly at Chretien and clammed up. Just as I suspected. They knew all about this. The DEA had nixed Blandón's appearance because Rafael Cornejo's attorney had discovered the Contra connection and the government had been ordered to turn over the files.

Chretien told me that it would be best for all concerned if I simply left out the fact that Blandón was now working for the DEA. "Your story can just go up to a certain point and stop, can't it? Is it really necessary to mention his current relationship with us? If it comes out that he is in any way connected to DEA, it could seriously compromise some extremely promising investigations."

I said I thought it was important to the story, which prompted another angry outburst from Jones. "Even after what we just told you, you'd still go ahead and put it in the paper? Why? Why would you put a story in the paper that would stop us from keeping drugs out of this country? I don't know if you've got kids or not. . ."

"I've got three kids," I interrupted, "and I don't know what that has to do with anything."

"So you'll screw up an investigation we've been working on for a long time, just so you can have a story? Is that it?" Jones demanded. "You think this story is more important than what we're doing for this country? How is that more important?"

"I don't buy it," I replied. "You have to put Blandón on the witness stand at Ross's trial. So in five months everyone in the world is going to know he's a DEA informant. Hell, if they want to know now they can just go down to the courthouse and look it up, like I did. So that's one problem I'm having with all this. The other thing is, I think the American public has been lied to for ten years, and I think telling them the truth is a whole lot more important than this investigation of yours."

Jones and I glared at each other, and Chretien stepped in. "I think we're getting off the topic here. Please understand, we're not telling you not to do your story. But your interest is in Meneses primarily and his association with the U.S. government and the Contras, correct?"

That was one of my interests, I said.

"Well, I think we can help him there, can't we?" Chretien asked, glancing around the room at the other agents. "Maybe if we got you that information, you could focus your story more on him and less on Blandón? And maybe you wouldn't have to mention some other things?"

"That all depends," I said, "on what that other information is."

Chretien smiled and stood up. "Okay, then! We're going to have to talk about this among ourselves. I'm not even sure what we have in mind is legal, but we'd at least like to explore it. Could we ask that you please not print anything until we've talked again? Can you give us a week or two?"

I told him I'd wait for his call.

When I returned to Sacramento, I phoned former DEA agent Celerino Castillo III, who had investigated allegations of Contra drug trafficking at Ilopango air base in El Salvador in the mid-1980s. I asked him if he'd ever heard of Craig Chretien.

"Yeah, sure," Castillo said. "I know him. He was one of the people DEA sent to Guatemala to do the internal investigation of me." He said Chretien and another DEA official had ordered him to put the word "alleged" in his reports to Washington about Contra drug shipments from Ilopango. "They said, 'You cannot actually come out and say this shit is going on.' And I told them, 'I'm watching the fucking things fly out of here with my own eyes! Why would I have to say 'alleged'?"

I told him of Chretien's remark that there was no proof the Contras were involved in drugs. He snorted. "Aw, bullshit. Of all people, he knows perfectly well what was going on. He was reading all my reports—looking for grammatical errors."

After two weeks I'd heard nothing back, so I called the San Diego office and asked for Chretien. He no longer works in this office, I was told. He'd been transferred to Washington.

The head of the International Division, Robert J. Nieves—Norwin Meneses's old control agent—had unexpectedly resigned eight days after my meeting with Chretien, I discovered. Chretien had been picked to replace him.

I never spoke to Chretien again, and I suspected that the meeting in San Diego had been set up to find out what I knew and where I was heading. My suspicions on that score were confirmed in early 1998 with the release of a CIA Inspector General's report, which referenced three CIA cables about me, titled "Possible Attempts to Link CIA to Narcotraffickers," written within weeks of my meeting with the DEA agents in San Diego.

"In November 1995, we were informed by DEA that a reporter has been inquiring about activities in Central America and any links with the Contras," a heavily censored December 4, 1995, cable from CIA headquarters in Langley stated. "DEA has been alerted that Meneses will undoubtedly claim that he was trafficking narcotics on behalf of CIA to generate money for the Contras. Query whether Station can clarify or amplify on the above information to better identify Meneses or confirm or refute any claims he may make. HQS trace on (FNU) Meneses reveal *extensive* entries." (Those extensive entries were not revealed in the declassified version of the CIA's 1998 IG report.)

The DEA's public affairs office in Washington later attempted to work out a deal with me to set up an interview with Meneses if I would leave Blandón's DEA ties out of the story, but fortunately my colleague in Nicaragua, freelance journalist Georg Hodel, beat them to the punch. He'd found the massive files of Meneses's 1992 court case in the Nicaraguan Supreme Court and had tracked the drug lord down to a prison outside of Managua.

"The clerk says I am the first journalist ever to ask to see those files, can you imagine?" Hodel asked me. "All the stories written about this case, and not one of those reporters ever looked at the files. I have one of my journalism students, Leonor Delgado, going through and making us an index of all the pages. There are some peculiar things in there, I can tell you."

My tipster had told me the truth about Blandón and Meneses, Georg reported. He'd cheeked it with former Contra commander Eden Pastora, former Contra lawyer Carlos Icaza, and others who knew both men. They were friends and business partners, and their families were very close to Somoza. They were considered to have been among the founders of the Contras. And, he said, Meneses's chief aide, Enrique Miranda, had admitted at trial that Meneses sold cocaine for the Contras, flying it out of an air base in El Salvador into a military airfield in Texas.

"In some of the newspaper stories I'm sending you, you will see that Meneses makes the same claim," Georg said. "It was part of his defense that the Sandinistas persecuted him because of his work for the Contras."

I told him of my conversations with the DEA and suggested that we might want to get to Meneses quickly, before someone else did. He agreed and told me that there was another person we needed to talk to as well: Meneses's chief accuser, Enrique Miranda. According to the files, Miranda was also still in jail, having been moved to a prison in the city of Granada after Meneses had allegedly hired someone to kill him.

He'd already put in a request to the Nicaraguan Ministry of the Interior to arrange an interview, Georg said. "I think we can speak to both of them. How quickly can you come down?"

"As soon as I clear it with my editors," I told him. "I'm not sure if they even know about this story yet. Dawn's been running interference for me with the other editors until I got this somewhat nailed down, but it seems pretty solid to me. We need to get to Meneses before the DEA does, so if you want to go ahead and set up the interviews, do it. I'll start the ball rolling here."

But Georg ran into an inexplicable roadblock. The normally cooperative prison officials in Managua began dodging his calls, offering one excuse and one delay after another. He waited a week, then hopped in his creaky blue Mazda and drove to the prison where Miranda was being held, to see what the problem was.

A nervous prison official informed him that Miranda was not available. Why not? Georg asked. Well, the official stammered, unfortunately, the prisoner had escaped. He'd been out on a weekend furlough, and he'd never come back. It was extremely out of character, Georg was assured, because Miranda had been a model inmate and had only a short time left in his sentence.

Astounded, Georg drove to the police station to see how the manhunt for the notorious trafficker was coming along. The police looked at him blankly. Someone had escaped from prison? Who? When? Miranda had been gone for over a week, and the police had not been notified. Georg's discovery was front-page news in all the Managua papers. Official investigations were launched.

"He supposedly escaped the same day I made my interview request," Georg reported. "My sources tell me he's in Miami and they say the DEA got him out of the country. Do you suppose they don't want us talking to him?"

(Georg's sources would later prove to have been well-informed. Miranda was captured a little over a year later in December 1996 in Miami, where he was living with his wife. It emerged that he had gained entry with the help of a visa the U.S. embassy in Managua had issued him the day he'd "escaped." Though Miranda had been in the State Department's computers as a convicted drug trafficker in 1992 and was therefore ineligible for a visa, the State Department claimed two simultaneous computer failures that day resulted in him "erroneously" receiving one. The DEA also denied any involvement but admitted that Miranda was put on the DEA payroll as an informant "soon after he came to Miami" and was sent to Central and South American to work drug cases. The DEA never bothered to inform the Nicaraguan authorities it was harboring one of their fugitives.)

But Georg had some good news as well. Meneses was willing to talk. George had cleared it through the drug kingpin's wives and lawyers and urged me to come to Nicaragua as soon as possible. We needed to move quickly and carefully, he warned, because there was something about this story that was beginning to give him the creeps.

"I can't say what it is," he said nervously, "but things are moving all around us."

In December I gathered up all my notes and files and wrote a four-page project memo for my editors, outlining the story as I saw it. I proposed to tell the tale of how the infant L.A. crack market had been fueled by tons of cocaine brought in by a Contra drug ring, which helped to spread a deadly new drug habit "through L.A. and from there to the hinterlands."

"This series will show that the dumping of cocaine on L.A.'s street gangs was the back end of a covert effort to arm and equip the CIA's ragtag army of anti-Communist Contra guerrillas," I wrote. "While there has long been solid—if largely ignored—evidence of a CIA-Contra-cocaine connection, no one has ever asked the question: 'Where did all the cocaine go once it got here?' Now we know."

I met with Dawn and managing editor David Yarnold in San Jose, and we spent an hour discussing the progress of the investigation and the proposed series. Yarnold reread the project memo, shook his head, and grinned.

"This is one hell of a story," he said. "How soon do you think you can finish it?"

I told him I needed to go to Miami and Nicaragua to do some interviews with Meneses, some former Contras, and the Nicaraguan police. If that came off, we might he able to have the series ready by March 1996, in time for the Ross trial, which would give it a hard news angle. But, I said, I wanted to get some assurances right up front from both of them.

Because the story had what I called a "high unbelievability factor," I wanted to use the *Mercury*'s

Web site, Mercury Center, to help document the series. I wanted us to put our evidence up on the Internet, so readers could see our documents and reports, read the grand jury transcripts, listen to the undercover DEA tapes, check our sources, and make up their own minds about the validity of the story. After seeing the government's reaction to the Contra-cocaine stories of the 1980s, I didn't want to be caught in the old officials-say-there's-no-evidence trap.

The technology now exists for journalists to share our evidence with the world, I told them, and if there was ever a story that needed to be solidly backed up, it was this one. Not only would it help out the story, I wrote in my memo, it would hopefully raise the standards of investigative reporting by forcing the press to play show and tell, rather than hiding behind faceless sources and whisperings from "senior administration officials."

The editors enthusiastically agreed. It would be a good way to showcase the *Mercury*'s cutting-edge Web site, they said, and it was good timing—management directives were coming out to incorporate the Web page into our print stories whenever possible. We were, after all, the newspaper of the Silicon Valley. This would be a chance to use the Internet in a way that had never been done before, they agreed. No problem. What else?

The second point I made was something I was sure they were tired of hearing about. We're going to need space to tell this story, I told them, a lot more space than the paper usually devotes to its investigative projects. It was the one issue that drove me crazy about working for the *Mercury News*.

After writing for the *Plain Dealer* for five years and having as much space as I'd wanted, I'd found the *Mercury's* mania for brevity almost unbearable. My forfeiture series, for example, had been held to two parts, and even those stories had been chopped up into bite-sized bits. I'd had other stories held for weeks and even months because I wouldn't give in to editors' demands to cut them in half.

No one reads long stories, I was told. Our focus groups had shown that readers wanted our stories to be even shorter than they already were—" tighter and brighter" was the answer to dwindling readership. Details were boring. Readers didn't like having to turn pages to follow jumps. If you couldn't tell a daily story in twelve inches or less, then maybe it was too complicated to tell. For a time, we even had a rule: no stories could be longer than forty-eight inches. Period. And that was for Sundays. Daily stories had an absolute max of thirty-six inches.

"We've got to lay out everything we know," I told Yarnold, "because people are going to come after us on this, and I don't ever want to be in a position where I have to say, 'Oh, yeah, we knew that, but we didn't have the space to put it in the paper.' And I don't think you want to be in that position either."

You'll get as much space as you need, Yarnold assured me. Don't worry about it. Just go out and bring this thing home.

"That matter, if true, would be classified"

A few days before Ricky Ross's trial was scheduled to—begin, in March 1996, Jesse Katz of the *Los Angeles Times* called me at home, where I had holed up to sketch out the first drafts of the series. Though we worked for competing newspapers, Katz had been a helpful and encouraging source during the months I'd spent wending my way through the rise and fall of Ricky Ross's crack dealing career.

That day, however, he prefaced our conversation with a warning: he was calling me as a reporter, not as a source. He was doing a story about Ross's upcoming trial, and he knew I was investigating Blandón's connections to the CIA and the Contras. He wanted to ask me about that.

I was thunder-struck. I'd never told Katz anything of the sort, precisely for this reason. One of the most devious ways to avoid being scooped was to do a story on the other guy's story first. Though you normally got only a fraction of the tale, it took some of the sting out of getting beat, and some of the wind out of your competitor's sails.

"You must think I'm stupid, Jesse. I'm not telling you anything."

"Well, I already know it, and I'm going to put it in the paper. I'm just offering you a chance to comment," he said. "Look at it this way: as long as I'm going to write about it anyway, it's in your interest to make sure that what goes into the paper is accurate."

I had to laugh. "I haven't heard that line in a long time,"I said. "Forget it. If you've got the information, print it. You don't need me to comment."

"Look. Alan Fenster filed a motion asking that the case be dismissed because the prosecutors were illegally withholding information from the defense. He filed an affidavit from a private investigator who said he'd spoken to you, and it says you have information that Blandón was involved in the Iran-Contra scandal. So what I'm asking is: is it true?"

I had been double-crossed. A private eye hired by Ross's lawyer had come by my house looking for information on Blandón, but I'd told him very little. He then pulled out a copy of a DEA report Fenster had gotten through discovery, which showed that Blandón clearly knew the cocaine he was selling to Ross was being turned into crack by the Crips and Bloods. It was an important bit of documentation for my story.

He would give me this, he said, if I would simply show him something about Blandón that the government hadn't turned over, so the defense could honestly say there was information being hidden from them. I wouldn't be identified. They didn't need a copy. They just needed to know that such documents existed.

From covering the case, I knew the federal attorneys had been withholding reams of evidence about Blandón's sordid background and his association with the Contras. If Fenster could catch them at it, I thought, maybe the court would order the Justice Department to make all the documents public, which would give me access to records I wanted to see.

I thought it over and agreed to show the PI one of the FBI reports I'd gotten from the Iran-Contra files at the National Archives. The next thing I knew, Fenster had named me and exposed the *Mercury's* investigation in his motion, and now the *L.A. Times* was onto it.

I should have known better. For weeks Ross and Fenster had been badgering me to publish the series before the trial started, figuring that the publicity might give the Justice Department second thoughts about pursuing the case. But after sitting down and roughing out an outline, I saw there was still too much I didn't know—too many unanswered questions. Dawn and I agreed that if Blandón, who was ignoring our interview requests, was going to testify, the story would benefit by waiting.

Several days earlier I'd told Ross that we were holding the story. It would not run before his trial. Angry and desperate, he'd called Katz and told him what little he knew about my investigation, hoping to stampede the *Times* into rushing something into print so they could beat us to the punch. Fenster followed that up by filing the motion and affidavit, giving Katz a court document to hang his story on. But the *Times* still had nothing; it was all secondhand. That's why Katz was fishing for confirmation. I wasn't going to give him my story, I told him. "Well, I had to try," he said. "No hard feelings."

Right after I hung up, Alan Fenster called. The Justice Department, he said, had just filed a motion to prevent him from questioning Blandón about the CIA.

"Why? Have you gotten some information about that?"

"No, but apparently they think I have," he said. "You should read this thing—it's amazing."

The motion, written by Assistant U.S. Attorney L. J. O'Neale, was as bizarre as Fenster had claimed: "The United States believes that at least one defendant will attempt to assert to the effect that the informant in this case sold cocaine to raise money for the Nicaraguan Contras and that he did so in conjunction with, or for, the Central Intelligence Agency."

O'Neale said the government was sure the information was false, but the motion made it clear that he wasn't sure at all. "This matter, if true, would be classified," O'Neale had written, "if false should not be allowed. The only purpose for asking questions in this regard would be as a clumsy attempt to bullyrag the United States into foregoing prosecution."

If the CIA was involved in drug sales, it would be classified? That was a good one. The whole legal basis for O'Neale's motion was tangential; Fenster hadn't filed the required notice to alert the government that he might reveal classified information at trial. Therefore, O'Neale wanted a court order "prohibiting any defendant from making any reference in this case to the United States Central Intelligence Agency, or to any alleged activity of that Agency."

Fenster said there was a hearing on the government's motion scheduled for the next day; and I jumped on a plane to San Diego. I couldn't wait to hear the U.S. Justice Department stand up in court and say that information about CIA involvement in drug trafficking was classified.

When I got there, I noticed that I was the only spectator in the courtroom. Good. I took a seat in the front row.

Shortly before the hearing began, I heard the courtroom door open behind me. It was Jesse Katz, with a big smile on his face. The *Times* had flown him in from his office in Houston just to be here, he told me.

I groaned silently. There goes the ball game. All the connections between Blandón, the Contras, the CIA, and Ricky Ross were going to come out in public, and the *L.A. Times* was going to beat me on my own goddamned story. Nine months worth of work down the crapper. I wanted to tear my hair out.

From a side door, prosecutor L. J. O'Neale strutted in, carrying a boxload of records, followed by DEA agents Jones and Gustafson. O'Neale looked at me; he looked at Jesse Katz; and then he blanched. When federal judge Marilyn Huff called the courtroom to order, O'Neale immediately asked to approach the bench.

He and Fenster huddled with the judge, whispering. Occasionally O'Neale would gesture to Katz and me. The huddle broke up, and Fenster walked back to the defense table, shaking his head.

"I have reviewed the government's request that the court seal, uh, certain portions," Huff announced cryptically. "You may be heard at sidebar. Mr. O'Neale. And defense counsel." The lawyers again trooped up to the judge's bench and began an animated, whispered conversation.

Katz and I strained to catch bits and pieces. I heard "CIA" several times—" murders in Mexico"; "money from the U.S. government"; "Contras."

O'Neale looked at us and turned back to the huddle. He warned defense attorney Juanita Brooks to lower her voice. "The reporters that Mr. Fenster has brought to court today are listening very carefully," he told her.

As with most federal court proceedings, the conversation was recorded and I later obtained a copy of the tape. Brooks, in a low whisper, told the judge that she was very disturbed O'Neale had hidden from the defense the fact that "Blandón was a member of an organization responsible for numerous murders in Mexico." O'Neale denied it. While he admitted that Blandón had gotten into the drug business by selling cocaine for the Contras, he said there was "absolutely no connection between Blandón and the CIA."

"He was never authorized to do that by a CIA agent?" Huff whispered. "Well, look," O'Neale hissed, "that's something I'm not even sure I can say 'Yes' or 'No' to because that comes within the realm of—look, I have no reason to believe he had any contact with the CIA and I would defy counsel to come up with any kind of credible information that he had a connection to the CIA. . ."

Fenster, struggling to keep his voice low, whispered that the reason he didn't have any information was because the government had refused to turn over "pages and pages of records. . .that I know for a fact exist!" O'Neale denied there was anything significant in the files.

Ten minutes turned into twenty minutes, and it dawned on us that the entire motion was going to be heard in whispers at the judge's bench. I'd never seen anything like it, and I'd covered many federal trials. Katz was beside himself.

"They can't do this!" he insisted. "How can they do this, just because we're here?" I told him I didn't know and commiserated with him, but inside I was exulting. Thank God for this one instance of government secrecy.

The next morning I ran down to the hotel lobby and grabbed a copy of the *Times*. Katz's story had run, focusing on the relationship between Ross and Blandón. Blandón, Katz wrote, had "taught [Ross] the trade" and oversaw his rise "through the ranks of the Los Angeles underworld, becoming the first crack-dealing millionaire on South Central's streets." The story hinted at "new and surprising dimensions" involving Blandón and some alleged "ties to U.S. intelligence sources," but never said what they were. There was no mention of the Contras. Whew.

When the trial got under way that day, once again I was the only reporter in the courtroom. Katz had apparently gone back to Houston, and no one from the *Times* had been assigned to cover the trial that the paper had previewed that very morning.

Once again, Fenster demanded that the government turn over its records about Blandón, arguing that it was prejudicing Ross's chance to fairly cross-examine his chief accuser. O'Neale calmly assured Fenster that he'd gotten everything the government felt he was entitled to know about Blandón—his prior arrest record and the fact that he'd been paid $40,000 for setting Ross up. What else could he possibly want?

"I don't think my client's life should be up to the government to determine what he should be allowed to know about Blandón's credibility," Fenster told Huff indignantly.

"The system we've set up has the government review all the information in its files to decide whether it complies with the law," Judge Huff replied blandly. "Mr. O'Neale, in good faith, has made that review."

"So we're supposed to trust the government to tell us if the CIA was involved?" Fenster asked. "They say that there's nothing that exists. I don't know if they really know that. I mean, I don't know if they've checked with the CIA to determine if such matters exist."

To my surprise, O'Neale admitted that he hadn't checked. Even though he'd personally assured the court several times that the government had no grounds to believe Blandón had any CIA ties, he'd never actually gotten around to asking the CIA. There was no need, he insisted: "One hopes that whatever the CIA does in the best interests of this country, that it will be concealed from view. And one hopes that if they do something that is in the worst interest or in violation of the laws of this country, that it will come to light. But, no, I haven't checked with the CIA. I've had no cause to check with the CIA."

Huff ignored O'Neale's stunning admission and told Fenster that he should trust her to do the right thing. Why, just that morning, she reminded him, she'd ordered prosecutors to turn over two pages from Sergeant Tom Gordon's long-missing search warrant application for the 1986 raid on Blandón's house.

The rest of it, she'd decided, wasn't relevant. Huff denied Fenster's motions.

There was one other matter the United States wanted to take up, if the court would be so kind, O'Neale said. Huff smiled pleasantly at him and told him to go ahead.

Reaching into his briefcase, O'Neale yanked out a copy of the morning's *L.A. Times* and waved it over his head. It had come to his attention, he announced dramatically, that the defense lawyers were leaking confidential information to the press! Huff appeared shocked and looked angrily at the defense table. O'Neale noted that Katz's story contained a phrase from a Justice Department memo that explained Danilo Blandón's deal with the government.

"I submit to the Court that our reasonable belief is that this document was obtained from one of those four!" O'Neale said, jabbing the offending newspaper in the direction of the four defense attorneys across the courtroom. "And there is no other explanation! It's not a filed document. It's not a public record document. . .but somehow, somewhere, that letter of February 15th was given to a *journalist!*"

Huff gave the defense lawyers a hard stare.

"I'm not saying that there's any criminal wrongdoing here," O'Neale added. "I'm saying that we have to be very careful in this case about pre-trial publicity. . .. Not only am I concerned about a fair trial, I am also concerned with the safety of the witness and the witness' family. There is a real safety issue here. . .. We have heard through reliable sources that there are threats of *death* against the witness, and we take those seriously and this is a serious business."

O'Neale stroked his beard and looked reproachfully at the defense lawyers.

"Without ascribing any wrongdoing to any counsel present, it is my opinion, and I state this only as an opinion, that Mr. Ross personally is attempting to manipulate the media, and may be attempting to affect the outcome of the trial *through the media!* As I say, I ascribe this to Mr. Ross personally, and I'm not sure that he is under any obligation—as are attorneys. However, I do again point out that this document comes, there were four copies sent out and here it is in the paper—it *has* to come from one of those four copies! I sure didn't give it to anybody!"

The defense lawyers were shaking their heads and appeared to be chuckling. One of them, Federal Public Defender Maria Forde, slowly got to her feet.

"Ms. Forde?" Huff said icily.

"I find it personally offensive that Mr. O'Neale would take the position that someone had to leak this document to the press," Forde said slowly. "I think with a little review he would have been able to remember that this document became a part of the public record when it was filed as Exhibit A of Mr. Fenster's motion to dismiss because of egregious Brady violations. It is a document of public record."

"Oh," Huff said quickly. "I see."

She looked at O'Neale, who began babbling. "I'm sorry. In that case, Ms. Forde, uh, I will say Ms. Forde is correct, that there may be—uh, that I had forgotten that that was an exhibit and insofar as anyone took personal or otherwise offense, I do apologize for that." Before he sat down, though, he wanted to remind everyone that he was still concerned about the death threats—" wherever *they* came from." I laughed silently. What a clown.

Blandón, wearing tinted aviator glasses and a dark suit, made his grand entry the next day, shielded by U.S. marshals. They led him to a row of chairs directly in front of me, and he sat down stiffly. After chasing him around California and Central America for nine months, seeing him now for the first time sitting only a foot away gave me a strange feeling. "Chanchin" in the flesh. I was sorry Georg wasn't here to see this.

I leaned over the rail and tapped Blandón on the shoulder with one of my business cards.

"I've been calling all over for you," I said. "I'm sure your mother-in-law is tired of hearing my voice." He turned and smiled. "I apologize." I told him I needed to talk to him. He shook his head. "I can't, because of all of this."

"Okay then. How about after the trial?"

"No. Personally, if it was up to me, I would say yes. But they won't let me," he said, nodding toward the prosecution table.

"The prosecutor won't let you talk?"

He shook his head. "DEA."

"So you won't talk to me ever, is that it?"

He nodded and shrugged. "Sorry. What can I do?"

O'Neale called Blandón up to the stand and led him carefully through his testimony. He touched on the Contras, admitting that Meneses had recruited him to sell cocaine for them. He said he'd stopped selling Contra cocaine when he split from Meneses in 1983 and started keeping the money for himself.

That was odd, I thought, flipping through my notebook. When I'd interviewed O'Neale in November, the prosecutor had said that occurred in 1986. The day before the trial, I noticed, O'Neale had said in court that it happened in 1984. By the end of the day, though,Blandón would be insisting that he'd actually quit in 1982—long before he'd met Ross, he said. O'Neale kept going over and over that point.

Then it dawned on me. They were trying to open a window, hoping to put a decent interval between the time Blandón was selling dope for the CIA's army and the time he started selling dope to the L.A. gangs. They were trying to break the chain linking the Contra's cocaine to the Crips and Bloods.

There was one big problem with that tactic. It didn't jibe with all the other facts. Ross said he'd been dealing with Blandón and his minions since 1981. Second, there were government documents out there strongly suggesting that Blandón's testimony was false—records that said he was selling cocaine for Meneses and the Contras all the way through 1986. Of course, Fenster didn't have those records, since the government had refused to turn them over. (Additional records surfaced after the trial was over and Blandón eventually admitted to the Senate Intelligence Committee and the CIA Inspector General that his Contra contributions continued through 1985.)

During the noon break, Fenster approached me in the hallway outside the courtroom. "Can we have lunch?" he asked. We walked to the restaurant of the Doubletree Hotel at Horton Plaza, near the courthouse. Fenster sipped an iced tea and asked me what I thought about Blandón's testimony.

"You got the *Highlights for Children* version of his cocaine dealings with the Contras," I said.

"That's what I thought. How am I supposed to cross-examine this guy? I don't even know what to ask!" He laughed ruefully. "Isn't this just crazy? I mean, here I am, defending a man against a life sentence, and I've got to ask some reporter if the prosecution testimony is accurate. That's justice for you. You know more about the bastard than I do."

"Not as much as I'd like, unfortunately. And he just told me he's never going to talk to me."

A light came on. Wait a minute. What law said I needed to do my interview directly? The solution was right here in front of me. Blandón was up there on a witness stand, under oath, in front of a federal judge. He was a sitting duck. I'd never get a better shot at him than this. For that matter, I doubted he'd ever be seen in public again. It was now or never.

"Tell you what," I said. "I need to make sure this is okay first, but what would you think about me giving you some questions to ask him?"

"You read my mind," Fenster said, getting a notepad out of his briefcase. I excused myself and went to a pay phone. Miraculously, Dawn was at her desk, and I explained the situation. There was no other way, I told her. Could she see any possible harm in giving Fenster some questions about the Contras? "I think it's a great idea," she said. "I wish we could do all of our interviews under oath."

When Fenster began his cross-examination the next day, he came right at Blandón, grilling him about his family's connections to the Somoza dictatorship. "There were certain families in Nicaragua that were part of the ruling cartel of Nicaragua, is that correct?"

O'Neale turned and glared at me and then jumped to his feet.

"Excuse me, I have an objection!" he shouted. "Relevance! Inflammatory language! What is the—the —relevance to—what the—"

He was overruled, and Fenster pushed on, boring in on Blandón's unbelievable claim that he quit dealing cocaine for the Contras when the CIA came through with $19 million in aid.

"Nineteen million dollars isn't even a drop in the bucket when you run that kind of operation, isn't that correct?"

"I didn't. . .I didn't know we received the $19 million," Blandón confessed. "I cannot tell you."

"Is it your testimony that you decided to keep the profits from the drug dealing because the Contra organization had enough money to fund their own war? Is that your testimony?"

"No sir. Let me explain one thing. When we meet—when we raise money for the Contra revolution, we received orders from the—" He paused and looked at O'Neale. O'Neale stared at him. "From another people." Because of the order prohibiting CIA testimony, Fenster was unable to pursue that line of inquiry.

He quizzed Blandón about his meetings in Honduras with CIA agent Enrique Bermudez, the FDN organization in Miami, and his connections to the Meneses family. The Nicaraguan looked helplessly at O'Neale, and several times the prosecutor leaped up to object, spluttering that Fenster's questions were irrelevant and prejudicial. Most of the time he was overruled. Blandón was like a deer caught in the headlights. Every so often DEA agent Jones would turn and give me the evil eye.

He knew where this shit was coming from. So did O'Neale, who actually complained about it to the judge. They'd done their best to keep it bottled up, and it had spilled out anyway. I walked back to my hotel room that night ten feet off the ground.

It was all out in the open now. The FDN had sold drugs to American citizens—mainly black Americans—and the CIA was on the hook for it: a CIA agent had given the goddamned order. I thought back to all the lies that had been told about the Contras' innocence. All the bullshit that had been piled on the reporters, cops, and congressional investigators who'd tried to do an honest job and bring light into the dark swamp where covert operators and criminals colluded. There was no denying it any more.

Now I was ready to write.

"A very difficult decision"

Ross and all but one of his codefendants were convicted in the spring of 1996 of conspiring to sell the DEA's cocaine. Considering the facts that were presented, and the evidence that was withheld, there was little else the jurors could do. But in interviews with the Federal Public Defender's Office afterward, several expressed disgust with s the government's case.

"Ricky was the hardest one for us to decide," said juror Norman Brown, a twenty-nine-year-old data entry operator at the San Diego Zoo. "None of us liked Blandón. A few of the jurors were very upset that he is used by law enforcement." Said another juror, a forty-six-year-old fund-raiser for Scripps Hospital: "Blandón made us all so angry that we would use that kind of sleazeball. We wanted to acquit Ricky Ross just to give the message to the government that we disagreed with the use of Blandón." Ross was sentenced to life without parole, but that was later reduced by a federal appeals court to 20 years to life.

My story now had an ending, one that seemed to exemplify the hypocrisy of the whole War on Drugs. The crack dealers went to prison while the men who made crack possible—the cocaine importers—walked away whistling. I laid the series out in just those terms, beginning it in the early 1980s with the critical role played by the Nicaraguan "freedom fighters" in founding L.A.'s crack market and ending it in the early 1990s, with the passage of the anticrack laws that were then packing the prisons with thousands of young black dealers—and with Blandón's sudden transformation into an antidrug warrior.

In mid-April I finished the first drafts and sent them up to my editors, with no clue as to how they would be received. They were like nothing I had ever written before, and probably unlike anything my editors had ever grappled with either: a tale spanning more than a decade, that attempted to show how two of the defining issues of the 1980s—the Contra war and the crack explosion, seemingly unconnected social phenomena—were actually intertwined, thanks largely to government meddling.

The four-part series I turned in focused on the relationship between the Contras and the crack king. It mentioned the CIA's role in passing, noting that some of the money had gone to a CIA-run army and that there were federal law enforcement reports suggesting the CIA knew about it. I never believed, and never wrote, that there was a grand CIA conspiracy behind the crack plague. Indeed, the more I learned about the agency, the more certain of that I became. The CIA couldn't even mine a harbor without getting its trenchcoat stuck in its fly.

That the Contras' cocaine ended up being turned into crack was a horrible accident of history, I believed, not someone's evil plan. The Contras just happened to pick the worst possible time ever to begin peddling cheap cocaine in black neighborhoods. That, I believed, was the real danger the CIA has always presented—unbridled criminal stupidity, cloaked in a blanket of national security.

"The fact that a government-connected drug ring was dumping tons of cocaine into the black neighborhoods in L.A.—and to a lesser extent in San Jose, Oakland, San Francisco, Portland, Houston, Oklahoma City, Alabama and New Orleans—goes a long way towards explaining why crack developed such deep roots in the black community," I wrote. "It's where the seed was planted."

Looking back, I can barely believe I was permitted to write such a story, but that was the kind of newspaper the *Mercury News* was at the time. No topic was taboo, or at least if there was one I never discovered it. And I was always looking.

The reason I'd left a much larger paper in Cleveland to work for the *Mercury* was because its editors convinced me that they ran one of the few newspapers in the country with that kind of courage. There were no sacred cows, they pledged; and for nine years they had been true to their word. Not one of my stories was ever spiked or significantly watered down; nearly 300 of them had appeared on the *Merc's* front page, including many that wouldn't have stood a chance in hell of being printed in other mainstream newspapers.

One of the first pieces I'd turned in—just to see if my new editors could walk the walk—disclosed that some of the biggest and most profitable companies in California were milking a state training program for the soon-to-be-unemployed by claiming they were ready to lay off hundreds of workers with obsolete job skills, having no intention of doing so. Among those unethical corporations, my story noted prominently, was the *San Jose Mercury News*, which had used public funds to subsidize the purchase of new printing presses. The story ran on the front page.

So when Dawn called me with the official reaction to "Dark Alliance," I was gratified but not surprised. They loved it, she said happily. They couldn't wait to get it in the newspaper. They thought it was important, groundbreaking reporting. Congratulations. But there was one hitch. "They thought it was too long," she said. It needed to be cut.

The four main stories ranged between 2,400 words and 3,200 words apiece, and for a major metropolitan daily, that's not a lot of space. For the *Mercury*, though, it was as if I'd asked for the moon, a raise, a shower in my office, and an executive parking place all at the same time.

"They're never going to go for four parts," Dawn warned.

"Yarnold told me I could have as much space as I needed," I reminded her. "I can't do it in less than four parts. I've gotten this thing down as far as I can get it. You're going to start cutting into its spinal cord if you cut it anymore." The problem was that the believability of the story hinged on the weight of the evidence. Every fact that was cut would make the story appear more speculative than it really was.

For weeks we wrangled back and forth, and then I got the word. David Yarnold, the managing editor, had decreed that it was three parts or nothing.

Fine, I said. I stitched the second and third parts together into one long part and resubmitted the series.

"Gee," Dawn said. "This second part is kind of long. We need to cut it."

This tug-of-war continued throughout the spring of 1996. She would cut paragraphs out, I would put them back in. We tried creating sidebars—small stories that ran alongside the main one—so we could hit the "magic numbers," the maximum length the editors had set for stories. It was still too long. Finally I put my foot down. No more cuts. The editors relented.

"Okay," Dawn said. "You've made your point. Let's try it again as a four-parter."

I reassembled all the scattered bits and pieces and resubmitted it. She read it, approved it, and sent it up the editing chain. I got a call a few days later.

"Well, they liked it and Yarnold agreed that four parts is fine. But they want the first part rewritten," she said. "They think its too feature-y. It should have a harder edge on it, more news. We need to go through and pull out all of the information about the CIA and the Contras and put it in the first day."

"The reason it's got a feature lead is because the series *is* a feature," I argued. "It's about the three men who started the L.A. crack market. That's the story I want to tell. If we turn this thing into a Contra cocaine story, everyone is going to say, 'Oh, that's old news.' We agreed on this already, remember?"

"That's what they want," Dawn said. "I'm just telling you what they told me."

"Well, I'm not writing it that way. I'm tired of this nonsense."

"Just try it, okay? Give it a quick write-thru. And if it doesn't work, it doesn't work, and we'll go back to the old way. But we've got to give it a try."

I gritted my teeth. Okay. If they wanted a hard edge on this thing, I'd give them one. I sat down at my computer, and in a few minutes I hammered out the paragraph that, with a few changes, would open the "Dark Alliance" series:

> For the better part of a decade, a Bay Area drug ring sold tons of cocaine to the Crips and Bloods street gangs of Los Angeles and funneled millions in drug profits to a Latin American guerrilla army run by the U.S. Central Intelligence Agency, a *Mercury News* investigation has found. This drug network, federal records show, opened the first pipeline between Colombia's cocaine cartels and the black neighborhoods of Los Angeles, a city now known as the crack capital of the world. The cocaine it brought into the United States fueled the crack explosion in urban America, and the simultaneous rise to power of the murderous gangs of black L.A.

I hit the transmit button.

Dawn called the next morning. "This is perfect," she said. "This is exactly what they wanted." The rest of the editing went fairly smoothly, and by July 26, 1996, the four-part series was done, edited, and ready to go in the paper, starting August 18.

Late one night, towards the end of July, the phone rang. "Well, I have-some good news and some bad news," Dawn began. "The bad news is that David Yarnold is no longer the editor on this series. He took a new job with Knight-Ridder, and he's out of here. The good news is that Paul Van Slambrouck is the new editor and 1 showed him the series today and he really likes it and thinks we've got a great story here."

"We've got a brand new editor on this?" I cried. "Now? And he just read it for the first time today? You're shitting me. So what does this mean?"

"Well, unfortunately, it means it's not going to run on the eighteenth. He has some changes he wants to make to it."

I sat up and started laughing. "Really? What kind of changes?"

"He thinks its too long. We need to make it three parts."

I howled. "You can't be serious, Dawn. This is a joke, right?"

"No. I'm sorry. Maybe you should talk to Paul."

Van Slambrouck, the *Mercury*'s national editor and a smart, thoughtful journalist, was apologetic. It wasn't the way he wanted to do things either. But he thought the series was terrific and he wanted very much to get it in the paper and hoped I still felt the same way.

"Dawn said you wanted to make some changes."

It needed to come down in length, he said, and we needed more CIA stuff in the first day. I was back to square one.

I sat down and fired off an angry memo to Dawn. Van Slambrouck had asked me to cut sixty-five inches, I complained. He had suggested that I needed to go through the story myself and be "ruthless" and I'd be able to find sixty-five inches to cut, no problem. If there was sixty-five inches of fat left in those stories, I wrote to Dawn, "we both ought to resign because we obviously aren't doing our jobs right."

An additional problem, I reminded Dawn, was that my family and I were in the midst of moving and were taking our vacation while the new house was being readied. During the next three weeks I rewrote the series on a laptop while on "vacation," first in a beach house on the Outer Banks of North Carolina, then in a motel room in Washington, D.C., and finally in the basement of my in-laws' house in Indiana. It was horrible. I had no way of telling what was being cut back at the *Mercury*, what was being put back in, or what was being rewritten. Five or six different versions were flying around. Don't these people know what they're dealing with here? I wondered. Don't they realize the import of what we're printing?

I eventually realized that for the most part they did not, which may have been the reason the series got in the paper in the first place. It came in under the radar. *Mercury News* executive editor jerry Ceppos would later tell *Newsweek* that "he read only part of the story" before it appeared in print, an amazing admission if true.

Perhaps my editors thought I was exaggerating the story's significance, trying to gobble up more space than was really justified? It is a common sight in newsrooms to see reporters hype their stories. I knew reporters who worked their editors like PR agents, or lobbyists pimping a bill. But I had never worked that way. I figured my editors knew how to read as well as anyone. My paycheck was the same every week, no matter which page they put my story on. (Legendary investigative reporter I. F. Stone once said that he read every section of the *Washington Post* thoroughly because he never knew where he would find a front-page story.)

But I also knew from my research what kind of backlash would result from a story that dirtied up the CIA, and I stressed it repeatedly to my editors. *New York Times* reporter Seymour Hersh's 1974 expose of Operation Chaos, a massive illegal CIA domestic spying operation, had brought on attacks in the *Washington Post* (he had no "hard" proof) and *Time* ("There is strong likelihood that Hersh's CIA story is considerably exaggerated"), among many others.

CBS newsman Daniel Schorr was demonized by the CIA and conservative commentators for leaking a copy of a secret Congressional report of CIA abuses to the *Village Voice* in 1976, after CBS had declined to make it public. Eventually, Schorr was dumped by the network and virtually blackballed. A decade later, a similar fate befell Robert Parry and Brian Barger of the Associated Press after they broke several stories on Contra involvement with drug trafficking and Ollie North's secret resupply operation. In both cases, the mainstream journalistic community uttered barely a peep of protest.

At 2:00 A.M.—midnight in San Jose—on August 18, 1996,1 was at a party at my best friend's house in Indianapolis. I excused myself, went into a bedroom, plugged in my laptop, and dialed into the *Mercury*'s Web site. A picture of a man smoking crack, superimposed upon the seal of the CIA, drew itself on the screen. After more than a year of work, "Dark Alliance" was finally out. I e-mailed Georg with the news, went back out to the party and got drunk. The next morning I flew back to Sacramento.

Initially, the silence was deafening. Then we realized why. They had unintentionally run the series the week between the Republican and Democratic national conventions. The national media and the nation's politicians were on vacation; nobody was paying much attention to anything, and particularly not a story in a regional northern California newspaper.

By August 21, though, some radio stations began calling. What was this CIA story we've been hearing about on the Web?

That combination—talk radio and the Internet—is what saved "Dark Alliance" from slipping silently below the surface and disappearing without a trace. The Internet wizards at Mercury Center—Mark Hull, Donna Vanish, and Albert Poon—had done a brilliant, eye-popping job on the "Dark Alliance" Web page. It was something right out of the movies: full-color animated maps, one-click access to uncut source documents, unpublished photos, audio clips from undercover DEA tapes and Danilo Blandón's federal court testimony, a bibliography, a timeline—all in far more depth and detail than we were able to get into the newspaper.

For investigative reporting, the Web was a dream come true. No longer did the public have to rely on the word of sources, or the reporter's version of what a document meant. The Web made it possible to share your files directly with your readers. If they cared to, they could read and hear exactly what you had read and heard, and make up their own minds about the story. It was raw interactive journalism, perhaps too interactive for some.

Traditionally, reporters jealously guard their notes and their files. In that sense, journalism has something in common with the cocaine business: You are only as good as your sources. Lousy journalists tend to hide behind unnamed sources, blind quotes, and unrevealed records.

But as far as I was concerned, my best protection was to allow everyone to see what I'd unearthed. I had it on paper—and most of it was public record. We scanned as many of my documents as possible into the computers at Mercury Center and uploaded them onto the Internet. A reader anywhere in the world could now instantly see our supporting documentation.

Cleverly, Mercury Center had sent out advance e-mail alerts to various Usenet newsgroups the day before the series appeared, tipping them off to the unveiling of the page. The cyberjournalists were as proud of their revolutionary handiwork as I was and wanted to make sure the Net world knew what they'd just pulled off: the first major online expose in newspaper history.

"The unlimited space of the Web allowed the *Mercury News* to move forward into a whole new kind of journalism," Microsoft's *Encarta* encyclopedia would later write of "Dark Alliance." "The *Mercury News* used. . .the Web to let intelligent readers review the source materials and draw their own conclusions. This step, far beyond the traditional role of newspapers, attracted attention and readers from all over the world."

At the end of that first week I returned to San Diego for Ricky Ross's sentencing. That was where I had my first inkling of the firestorm I'd touched off. Radio stations were blanketing the newspaper with interview requests. Before heading for the courthouse that morning, I'd done radio shows in Washington, D.C., Austin, Texas, and Detroit.

A haggard-looking L. J. O'Neale, the assistant U.S. attorney, spotted me in the hallway outside the courtroom.

"Hey there," I said. "You see the story?"

He scowled and pushed by without saying a word. He'd already fought his way through television camera crews outside the courthouse, and he clearly wasn't pleased with all the attention. Inside the courtroom, reporters jostled for seats.

Fenster asked for a postponement of sentencing, saying the series had raised significant questions about Blandón and his connections to the CIA. O'Neale protested angrily, accusing Ross of dreaming up the whole CIA plot and feeding it to a gullible journalist who was spreading ridiculous conspiracy theories.

But Judge Huff looked troubled and told O'Neale she wanted some answers from the CIA before she passed sentence on Ross and his code-fendants. And she also wanted the Justice Department to begin deportation proceedings against Blandón immediately. The news made the wires, and the switchboard at the *Mercury News* lit up. "This place is going crazy!" Dawn reported. "The Web page had something like 500,000 hits on it today!"

The *Mercury News*'s executive editor, Jerry Ceppos, called and congratulated me. The TV networks were calling the paper. We were getting phone calls from all over the world. "Let's stay on top of this," he said. "Anything you need, you let us know. We want to run with this thing." A few days later, I got a $500 bonus check in the mail and a note from Ceppos: "Remarkable series! Thanks for doing this for us."

I was on National Public Radio the following Monday and, as always, gave out the Web site address so people could read the series and see our documents. We had 800,000 hits that day. The synergy was amazing. For the first time, people could hear about a story on the radio—even one that appeared several weeks earlier and thousands of miles away—and immediately read it on their computer screens.

Unlike all the previous stories about the Contras and cocaine, this one couldn't be killed off in the traditional manner, by Big Media ignoreing it or relegating it to the news briefs. Millions of people were finding out about "Dark Alliance" anyway—even though not a word had appeared in the so-called national press. That phenomenon was newsworthy by itself.

"The story has serious legs, moving rapidly through the African American community via e-mail and file downloads, and then into living rooms, offices and churches, and onto streets and into more mainstream black papers and radio broadcasts," *HotWired* magazine wrote in October 1996. "For the first time, my grandmother asked to go online and read something. I couldn't believe it. She wouldn't look at a computer before," one black government lawyer e-mailed the magazine. "This story is causing a sensation among blacks. It's all they're talking about. They are enraged about it and they can't believe it isn't on every front page in America."

"Dark Alliance," *Hot Wired* wrote, "is making digital and media history. The *Mercury News* is demonstrating for perhaps the first time how the Web and the traditional press can fuse to good effect—and that there's still a chance to break modern media's parochial instincts and return some power to journalists outside of Washington and New York. . .. The story may alter black consciousness about the Net, and further the Web's reputation as a powerful—and serious—information medium." The Associated Press noted that "while no one has been able to track specific numbers of blacks who might have come online because of the *Mercury News* series, many feel it has been a watershed event."

A *Boston Globe* reporter arrived in Los Angeles in early October 1996 and breathlessly reported that the story was "pulsing through [L.A.'s] black neighborhoods like a shockwave, provoking a stunning, growing level of anger and indigation. Talk-radio stations with predominantly black audiences are deluged with calls on the subject. Demonstrations, candle-lighting ceremonies and town-hall meetings are becoming regular affairs. And people on the street are heatedly discussing the topic."

If there was one thing scarier to corporate journalism than the series itself, it was the image of a future where Big Media was unable to control the national agenda. Irrespective of what the series said, "Dark Alliance" proved that the stranglehold a relative few East Coast editors and producers had on what became news could be broken. "This story suddenly raises suspicions that the Internet has changed the equation in support of democracy," author Daniel Brandt ruminated in October 1996 on an Internet e-zine. "Unless regional newspapers agree to mild-mannered, regional interest Web sites, all the resources that the elites have invested in monopolizing the Daily Spin could end up spinning down the drain."

In this case the blend of the Internet and talk radio had made the traditional media irrelevant. The public was marching on without them, and the message got through clearly to California's top politicians. The L.A. City Council unanimously approved a resolution calling for a federal investigation. Both California senators and a half-dozen congressmen wrote letters to CIA director John Deutch and Attorney General Janet Reno demanding an official inquiry. Deutch agreed to conduct one, which infuriated the right-wing *Washington Times*. Deutch was lambasted on the front page by unnamed critics for "his efforts to curry favor with liberal politicians." And on the editorial page, editor-at-large Arnaud dc Borchgrave, a "journalist" with a long history of connections to the intelligence community and the Contras, fumed that "the same old pro-Marxist CIA bashers are at it again" and quoted unnamed former colleagues at "another paper" describing me as "an 'activist' journalist who would dearly love to see the CIA scuttle itself."

In his column, de Borchgrave claimed Congress had given the Contras $100 million before the Boland Amendments went into effect, and chided me for being "too young to remember that the CIA had no need for illicit Contra funds in those days." When I appeared on political talk-show host Chris Matthews's live show on CNBC that evening, Matthews eagerly sprung de Borchgrave's crazy timeline on me, demanding to know how I could have written what I did, given the fact that the Contras had plenty of money. After Jack White of *Time* and I pointed out that he had his "facts" backward, Matthews, during a commercial break, began bellowing at his production assistants, loudly accusing them of attempting to "sabotage" his show.

Soon after Deutch ordered an internal investigation, Attorney General Janet Reno—at the urging of

Justice Department inspector general Michael Bromwich—followed suit.

Finally, the national news media dipped a toe into the icy waters. *Newsweek* devoted an entire page to the story in late September, calling it "a powerful series" that had some black leaders "ready to carpet-bomb Langley." *Time* that month called it "the hottest topic in black America" and said the Web site "provides a plethora of court documents, recorded interviews and photographs. . .. This is the first time the Internet has electrified African Americans."

Soon, *60 Minutes* called. "Don't talk to anyone else," a producer told me. "We want this story to ourselves." I got an identical call from *Dateline NBC*. I told both of them 1 thought it was unethical for a reporter to refuse to talk to the press. The *60 Minutes* producer said that was the most ridiculous thing he'd ever heard. *Dateline* ended up doing the story.

Over the next few weeks, we got interview requests from Jerry Springer, Geraldo Rivera, Tom Snyder, Jesse Jackson, and Montel Williams. I was on CNN, C-SPAN, MSNBC, and CBS Morning News. The *Mercury* printed up 5,000 copies of the series and they were gone in a matter of weeks. An employee from the marketing department was assigned full-time to handle press calls. Each evening she e-mailed a list of interview requests, and by early October the list was three pages long and growing. The *London Times* did a story. *Le Monde* in Paris wrote something. Newspapers in Germany, Belgium, Spain, Colombia, and Nicaragua called for interviews.

It's hard to imagine how many radio stations there are in the United States until they start calling. At home, my phone would begin ringing at 6 A.M. and not stop until 10 PM. Talk radio was burning up the airwaves, spreading the story and the Web site address from coast to coast. One day, the hits on the Web page climbed over 1,000,000. People in Japan, Bosnia, Germany, and Denmark sent me e-mail.

Meanwhile, we continued advancing the story. I teamed up with Pamela Kramer, the *Mercury*'s reporter in Los Angeles, and we wrote several stories about the 1986 police raids on Blandón's house. We came up with the entire Gordon search warrant, which showed that the police had several informants telling them that drug money was going to the Contras. Our sources provided us with the case file number to the supposedly nonexistent investigatory file at the L.A. County Sheriff's Office, and Congresswoman Maxine Waters and her staff marched in and demanded to see it.

"I told them that the only way they were going to get me out of their office was to give me the file or arrest me," she said. She got the file—in it were the police reports about the search of Ronald Lister's house, his claims of CIA involvement, and the inventory of strange items seized at his house.

NBC News did a strong follow-up, finally exposing the drug-related entries in Oliver North's notebooks to a national television audience, but it was the only network attempting to advance the story. The Establishment papers—the *New York Times*, the *Washington Post*, and the *Los Angeles Times*—the same newspapers that had so confidently reported in the 1980s that there was no truth to these claims of Contra drug trafficking, remained largely silent.

"Where is the rebuttal? Why hasn't the media rose in revolt against this story?" an exasperated Bernard Kalb, former spokesman for the Reagan State Department, demanded on CNN's *Reliable Sources*. "It isn't a story that simply got lost. It, in fact, has resonated and echoed and the question is where is the media knocking it down, when that, too, is a journalistic responsibility?"

Kalb's guest, former Reagan Justice Department spokesman Terry Eastland, clucked that he "would expect to see this kind of story in a magazine like *In These Times*, not in a mainstream newspaper such as the *San Jose Mercury News*." No one on Kalb's show bothered to mention that Eastland had a history of trying to cover up the Contra drug link. In May 1986, his office had planted a false story in the *New York Times* stating that the Justice Department had "cleared" the Contras of any involvement in gun running and drug smuggling, a statement the Justice Department was later forced to recant.

One question I was frequently asked during radio appearances was whether I thought the national media reaction would be different if the series had appeared in the *Washington Post* or the *New York*

Times. My stock answer was that it hadn't appeared in those newspapers, because they'd decided in 1986 that there was no story here. My feeling was that those newspapers' very familiarity with the story made it more difficult for them to report it. How could they come back ten years later and admit that the Contras had been selling cocaine to Americans, when they'd already assured us it wasn't happening?

In early October, I was in New York City getting ready for an appearance on the *Montel Williams Show*, which was doing a two-day special on the "Dark Alliance" series. About 2:00 AM., Jerry Ceppos called. The *Washington Post* had just moved a story on the wires. It would be in the morning edition and it was highly critical of the series. He asked me to take a look at it and give him my reaction.

"What did they say was wrong?" I asked.

"They don't say any of the facts are wrong," Ceppos said. "They just don't agree with our conclusions."

"And their evidence is what?"

"A lot of unnamed sources, mainly. It's really a strange piece. I'll send you a fax of it, and we can talk in the morning."

The story was headlined "The CIA and Crack: Evidence is Lacking of Alleged Plot." I laughed. What plot?

The reporters, Walter Pincus and Roberto Suro, wrote that their investigation "does not support the conclusion that the CIA-backed Contras—or Nicaraguans in general—played a major role in the emergence of crack as a narcotic in widespread use across the United States. Instead, the available data from arrest records, hospitals, drug treatment centers and drug user surveys point to the rise of crack as a broad-based phenomenon driven in numerous places by players of different nationalities, races and ethnic groups."

Ah ha. The old tidal wave theory. Here it comes again. I wondered what "available data" Pincus and Suro had gathered from the 1982–83 era, the dawn of the L.A. crack market, since the DEA and NIDA had admitted a decade earlier that there was no such data.

The story grudgingly and often backhandedly admitted that the basic facts presented in the series were correct, and it buried key admissions deep inside, such as the fact that "the CIA knew about some of these activities and did little or nothing to stop them." Toward the end Pincus and Suro confirmed that Meneses and Blandón had met with Enrique Bermúdez in Honduras, but without disclosing Bermúdez's relationship with the CIA. CIA agent Adolfo Calero, whom the *Post* euphemistically described as someone "who worked closely with the CIA," also admitted to the *Post* reporters that he had met with Meneses.

Overall, it was a cleverly crafted piece of disinformation that would set the stage for the attacks to follow. It falsely claimed that the series made a "racially charged allegation that the 'CIA's army' of contras deliberately targeted the black community in an effort to expand the market for a cheap form of cocaine." And despite Blandón's testimony that he sold 200 to 300 kilos of cocaine for Meneses in L.A. and that all the profits were sent to the Contras, the *Post* quoted unnamed "law enforcement officials" as saying "Blandón sold $30,000 to $60,000 worth of cocaine in two transactions."

The story also dove right through the "window" that O'Neale had opened at the Ross trial. "If the whole of Blandón's testimony is to be believed," Pincus and Suro wrote, "[then there is no connection] between the Contras and African American drug dealers because Blandón said he had stopped sending money to the Contras by the time he met Ross." No mention was made of the DEA reports and the sheriff's department affidavit that said Blandón was selling Contra cocaine through 1986, nor of the fact that Ross had been buying Blandón's cocaine long before he actually met him. "Moreover," the *Post* declared, "the mere idea that any one person could have played a decisive role in the nationwide crack epidemic is rejected out of hand by academic experts and law enforcement officials." But they identified neither the academic experts nor the law enforcement officials.

I wrote Ceppos a memo pointing out the holes in the *Post's* story. "The Pincus piece," I wrote, "is just silly. It's the kind of story you'd expect from someone who spent three weeks working on a story, as opposed to 16 months." The fact that the *Post*'s unnamed "experts" would reject our scenario "out of hand," I wrote, was the whole problem. "None of them—whoever they are—has ever studied this before."

To his credit, Ceppos fired off a blistering letter to the *Post*, pointing out the factual errors in the piece and calling Pincus's claims of a "racially charged allegation" a "complete and total mischaracterization."

"The most difficult issue is whether a casual reading of our series leads to the conclusion that the CIA is directly responsible for the outbreak of the crack epidemic in Los Angeles. While there is considerable circumstantial evidence of CIA involvement with the leaders of this drug ring, we never reached or reported any definitive conclusion on CIA involvement," Ceppos wrote. "We reported that men selling cocaine in Los Angeles met with people on the CIA payroll. We reported that they received fundraising orders from people on the CIA payroll. We reported that the money raised was sent to a CIA-run operation. But we did not go further and took pains to say that clearly."

Ceppos posted the letter on the staff bulletin board, along with a memo defending the series. "We strongly support the conclusions the series drew and will until someone proves them wrong. What is even more remarkable is that FOUR experienced *Post* reporters, re-reporting our series, could not find a single significant factual error. The *Post*'s conclusions are very different—and I believe, flawed—but the major facts aren't. I'm not sure how many of us could sustain such a microscopic examination of our work and I believe Gary Webb deserves recognition for surviving unscathed."

The *Post* held Ceppos's letter for weeks, ordered him to rewrite it, and then refused to print it.

Shortly afterward I got an e-mail message from a woman in southern California. There was a story in the *Mercury*'s archives that I needed to see, she wrote, and provided a date and a page number. I sent it to our library and got a photocopy of the story in the mail a day later. It had run on February 18, 1967.

"How I Traveled Abroad on CIA Subsidy" was the headline. The author was Walter Pineus of the *Washington Post*.

After disclosures of CIA infiltration of American student associations had exploded that year, Pincus had written a long, smug confessional of how, posing as an American student representative, he'd traveled to several international youth conferences in the late 1950s and early 1960s, secretly gathering information for the CIA and smuggling in anti-Communist propaganda. A CIA recruiter had approached him, he wrote, and he'd agreed to spy not only on the student delegations from other countries but on his American colleagues as well. "I had been briefed in Washington on each of them," Pincus wrote. "None was remotely aware of CIA's interest."

This just cannot be true, I thought. The *Washington Post*'s veteran national security reporter—a former CIA operative and propagandist? Unwilling to believe this piece of information until I dug it up for myself, I went to the state library and got out the microfilm. The story was there. This was the man who was questioning *my* ethics for giving Alan Fenster questions to ask a government witness about the Contras and drugs? Jesus. I'd certainly never spied on American citizens.

Looking into Pincus's background further, I saw that he'd popped up in another situation where the CIA's reputation was under attack. In 1975, he'd been the person the *New York Times* selected to review ex-CIA officer Philip Agee's best-selling expose about the agency, *CIA Diary*. In an unfavorable review, Pincus strongly suggested that Agee was in league with the Cuban intelligence services in a joint conspiracy to destroy the CIA. (Pincus's previous association with the CIA was not disclosed by the *Times*. He was merely identified as a Washington journalist.)

When the *Post* found itself under rare criticism by the CIA in 1986 for allegedly printing classified information, Pincus went on the *MacNeil/Lehrer NewsHour* and stated that his newspaper wasn't so irresponsible as to pass along government secrets. The *Post* often shielded its readers' eyes from such things, Pincus asserted, frequently in consultation with the government. "We've been dealing with it for a long time and I think we have withheld a great deal of information," Pincus said. "It ought to be made clear to people that we, in determining what we're going to do with a lot of stories, go to the Administration and tell them what we have and listen to what their arguments are and we then do make a decision, but we're not making them in the dark."

Pincus would later play an important role in helping to impede the Iran-Contra investigation, according to Independent Counsel Lawrence Walsh. In his memoirs, *Firewall*, Walsh wrote that at a critical moment in the Iran-Contra probe, Pincus had published a story claiming Walsh was planning to indict Ronald Reagan, a report that made worldwide news and reduced Nancy Reagan to tears. "Of all the sideswipes that we suffered during this period, the false report that we were considering indicting the nation's still admired former president hurt us the most," Walsh wrote. "It infuriated the congressional Republicans, even some of the moderate ones." Walsh suspected that Pincus had been fed the story by Boyden Gray, attorney for then president George Bush.

Gray, Walsh wrote, "had been known to float stories through persons close to the publisher of the *Washington Post*; Pincus had sometimes been asked to write these stories. I suspected Gray or someone else in the White House had played a role in disseminating the misinformation but I had no proof." The *Post*, of couse, never acknowledged what history has proven: Pincus's big scoop was bogus.

The *L.A. Times* and the *New York Times* struck next. On October 20, 1996, both ran long stories attacking my reporting and the series. They took the same tack the *Washington Post* had several weeks earlier: admitting that the basic facts were true and then complaining that the facts didn't mean a thing.

Relying again mostly on unnamed sources, these two newspapers of record claimed Blandón and Meneses hadn't had "official positions" with the Contras. Drug money had been sent, but not millions; it was only tens of thousands, according to unnamed sources. And experts scoffed at the notion that one drug ring could have supplied enough cocaine to feed the tidal wave of crack that engulfed America, a ridiculous claim I'd never made.

The papers found no need to mention the mass of historical evidence that supported the series's findings. Without anything approaching documentation, the papers just flatly declared I was wrong.

"The crack epidemic in Los Angeles followed no blueprint or master plan. It was not orchestrated by the Contras or the CIA. No one trafficker, even kingpins who sold thousands of kilos and pocketed millions of dollars, ever came close to monopolizing the drug trade," the *L.A. Times* assured its readers in the lead paragraphs of a three-day series.

The first part, on the genesis of crack in L.A., was written by Jesse Katz. Though Katz himself, starting in 1994 and continuing through the summer of 1996, had repeatedly referred to Ross as the first and biggest crack dealer in South Central, the master marketer whose activities were "key" to the spread of crack in the city, he now found that Ross was a pygmy who'd had little or nothing to do with the crack explosion. The earlier stories in the *Times*, stating exactly the opposite, were simply ignored.

Instead, Katz trotted out a number of other cocaine dealers he'd apparently missed the first time he'd written about the issue: "Tootie" Reese, who'd gone to jail when the crack market exploded and was never accused of selling a single rock of crack; the Bryant family, which, according to earlier *Times* stories, never sold crack in South Central and was "too small for the department's Major Violators Narcotics Unit in downtown Los Angeles" to bother with. Katz dredged up "Waterhead Bo" Bennett, who didn't start selling crack until 1985, and Elrader Browning, who—again according to the *L.A. Times*—was in jail from 1982 to 1985, making it exceedingly difficult for him to have played any role in the formation of the L.A. crack market.

"This is like reading *Pravda*," I told an L.A. radio station. "History means nothing to these people." Syndicated columnist Norman Solomon described Katz's story as "a show trial recantation."

The next day, the *L.A. Times* absolved the CIA of any involvement with Blandón and Meneses. Its authoritative sources: former CIA director Robert Gates, former CIA official Vincent Cannistraro, and current CIA director John Deutch. "Like good little boys and girls, the *Times*, the *Washington Post* et al., toddled off to the CIA and asked the agency if it had ever done such a thing. When the CIA said 'no' the papers solemnly printed it—just as though the CIA hadn't previously denied any number of illegal operations in which it was later caught red-handed," columnist Molly Ivins observed.

Buried deep within the *L.A. Times* story were admissions by CIA officials that Contra supporters "were involved in drug running, but they bought villas and did not put it into the FDN." And, the story conceded, "the allegation that some elements of the CIA-sponsored Contra army cooperated with drug traffickers has been well documented for years." But the story dismissed the idea that "millions" went to the Contras from the Nicaraguans' drug sales. Unnamed sources said it was around $50,000 or $60,000, which caused former Meneses distributor Rafael Cornejo some mirth.

"Sixty thousand?" he scoffed. "You can raise that in an afternoon."

According to another unnamed source the *Times* quoted, Blandón and Meneses were making only $15,000 a kilo in profits.

Unmentioned was Blandón's testimony that he'd sold 200 to 300 kilos for Meneses during the time they were sending money to the Contras, and his admission that all of the profits were being sent to the rebels. Using the *Times*' own profit figures, that would mean between $3 million and $4.5 million went to the Contras just from Blandón's sales. And that didn't include the money Meneses's organization—through Cabezas and Renato Pena in San Francisco—was sending. Lost in the debate over whether it was millions or tens of thousands, was the inanity of the idea that a reasonably accurate number could ever be found in a business that deals in cash and eschews written records—it is just as possible that the amounts could have been in the tens of millions.

"No solid evidence has emerged that either Menescs or Blandón contributed any money to the rebels after 1984," the story declared, ignoring the 1986 sheriff's affidavit and the 1986 DEA reports. The story also quoted another unnamed associate who claimed, apparently with a straight face, that the profit margins in the cocaine business in 1982–84—when coke was selling for $60,000 a kilo—were just too slim to allow million-dollar donations to the FDN.

What kind of journalist would unquestioningly accept such a statement, I wondered, looking for a byline. And then I saw it in a box inside: Doyle McManus, the chief of the *L.A. Times*' Washington bureau. That explained it.

In 1984 McManus had played a central role in spreading the CIA's leak about Barry Seal and the Sandinistas dealing cocaine, just in time for the Reagan administration's request to Congress for additional Contra aid. Oliver North's notebooks contain several references to conversations McManus was having with the White House at the time, shortly before and shortly after the details of the CIA-DEA sting were fed to the press.

"McManus talking to WH." North wrote on July 12, 1984. "Unhappy with negotiations."

On July 17, 1984, the CIA leak appeared in the *Washington Times*, written by Jeremiah O'Leary, a longtime Washington press corps reporter described by investigative reporter Carl Bernstein as having "a valuable personal relationship" with the CIA in the 1960s. O'Leary insisted that "they were more helpful to me than I was to them."

O'Leary's story in the *Washington Times*, which had supported the Contras both editorially and financially, gave McManus the excuse he needed to rush the CIA's leak into the *L.A. Times*. According to North's notebooks, McManus called the White House that morning and informed officials there that the National Security Council would be cited as his official source for the information.

"McManus, *L.A. Times*, says NSC to source claims WH. has pictures of Borge loading cocaine in Nica," North wrote.

The following morning, on the front page of the *Times*, McManus wrote that "high-ranking members of the Nicaraguan government have been linked to a scheme involving three of Colombia's largest cocaine traffickers, U.S. intelligence sources say." The story declared that Interior Minister Tomas Borge and Defense Minister Humberto Ortega of Nicaragua were "among the officials who the sources said are implicated."

A day later McManus's coauthor, Ronald J. Ostrow, reported that "U.S. intelligence sources have obtained a photograph of Borge standing next to Pablo Escobar Gaviria, one of the two Colombian nationals being sought, as a plane was being loaded June 25 with duffel bags of cocaine at the airport in the Nicaraguan capital of Managua." Unfortunately for the *Times*, no such photograph has ever surfaced, and the DEA later admitted that it had no information implicating high-ranking Sandinista officials in drug trafficking. The story was a hoax, and McManus had been a willing participant or a dupe of embarrassing proportions. So strident in defending U.S. officials against such charges, the *Times* never admitted that it wrongly accused two Nicaraguan government officials of cocaine trafficking—solely on the basis of whispers from U.S. intelligence agents.

McManus and Ostrow later teamed up to refute allegations of Contra cocaine trafficking in early 1987, just as the issue was threatening to go national. In a front-page story bearing the cautionary deck head "No Supporting Evidence, DEA Says," the *Times* reported that a Senate committee "is investigating reports that Nicaraguan rebels and their American supporters have helped smuggle cocaine into the United States, but Drug Enforcement Administration officials say their agents have found no evidence to support any of the charges."

The story went through the litany of accusations—Ilopango, the Frogman case, the Southern Air Transport shipments to Colombia—devoting a sentence or two to each one, and surrounding them with abundant denials from DEA officials and CIA agent Adolfo Calero. The reporters made no attempt at an independent investigation.

In a prison cell in Boron, California, Contra drug courier Carlos Cabezas read McManus's story and couldn't believe his eyes. He banged out a letter to the reporter on February 27, 1987, stating, "I am going to tell you that there was indeed 'supporting evidence,' hidden by the government." The receipt of drug money by the Contras, he wrote, "is absolutely true, at least in my case." Cabezas told McManus of his trip to Costa Rica with $250,000 and noted that the FBI made no attempt to stop him, even though he was traveling with an FBI informant.

He also told McManus the FBI had tape-recorded conversations "between the former Ambassador of Nicaragua in Guatemala, Mr. Fernando Sanchez and Troilo Sanchez and myself. Both of these gentlemen are brother [sic] of Mr. Adolfo Calero's top aide Mr. Aristides Sanchez. These conversations were related to drug transactions."

McManus replied two months later, asking Cabezas to provide him with names and documents to substantiate his "allegations." And, by the way, he asked, "Can you give me any further information about Sandinista drug trafficking?" Cabezas said he sent McManus the documents about the Contras and never heard another thing.

The unprecedented attacks by three major newspapers alarmed the *Mercury*'s editors. I was called to a meeting with Ceppos and the other editors and told that I should quit trying to advance the story. We needed to start working on a written response to the other newspapers, he said. I vehemently disagreed. "The best way to shut them up is to put the rest of what we know in the paper and keep plowing ahead," I argued. "Let's run a story about Walter Pincus's CIA connections. Let's write about how the *L.A. Times* has been booting this story since 1987." I told them of my discovery that the *L.A. Times*' Washington bureau had been sent a copy of the notes found in Ronald Lister's house in 1990 and had thrown them away. Ceppos disagreed.

"I don't want to get into a war with them," he said.

Fortunately, both Dawn Garcia and Paul Van Slambrouck agreed that we should continue developing the story.

"The best way to answer our critics," Van Slambrouck told Ceppos, "is to advance the story. Let's go out and get some more evidence of drug money being sent to the Contras. Let's get more evidence of this drug ring's dealings with the Contras." Ceppos relented, authorizing another reporting trip to Central America. He also assigned L.A. bureau reporter Pamela Kramer and Pete Carey, an investigative reporter, to gather information about the start of the L.A. crack market. He also made another decision: he was changing the logo that the series had used on the Internet and in the reprints. The CIA's seal was coming off.

"What's the point of doing that?" I asked. "We documented that these traffickers were meeting with CIA agents. If you change the logo, the rest of the media is going to accuse us of backing away from the story."

But Ceppos wouldn't budge. Thousands of reprints with the CIA-crack smoker logo were gathered up and burned and a CD-ROM version of the series—which had been pressed and was ready for distribution—was also destroyed. The *Post* and *L.A. Times* immediately crowed that the *Mercury* was "retreating" from the series.

Georg and I flew to Costa Rica and began interviewing police officials, lawyers, prosecutors, and ex-Contras about Meneses's activities there, fleshing out his role as a DEA informant and his drug operation's connections to Oliver North's resupply network on the Southern Front. In Managua, we interviewed police and Blandón's suspected money launderer, Orlando Murillo. I flew back and started writing the follow-up stories; Georg continued hunting for other members of the Meneses drug ring.

He called me in December 1996, barely able to contain his excitement. He'd found Carlos Cabezas, who admitted that he had in fact delivered millions of dollars in drug money to the Contras. Cabezas had names, dates, and amounts, Georg said, and pages from his drug ledgers. He'd identified a CIA agent, Ivan Gómez, as having had direct knowledge of it all.

"We've got it," Georg cried. "Cabezas is willing to talk on the record."

A week later, Georg called with more good news. Enrique Miranda, the former Meneses aide who'd "escaped" a year earlier, had been found in Miami and tossed on a plane to Nicaragua. Georg had visited him in prison, and Miranda started talking. Meneses's relationship with the CIA and the Contras was deeper than we'd ever realized, Georg said. "We didn't know how right we were," he laughed. "I can't wait to see what the *Washington Post* does with this." I could have kissed him.

In January 1997, I sent first drafts of four follow-up stories to Dawn, written as a two-day series. The first part dealt with Meneses's DEA connections and his Costa Rican operation, along with the interviews Georg had done with Carlos Cabezas and Enrique Miranda. I wrote a sidebar about the drug-dealing Costa Rican shrimp company North and the Cuban CIA operatives were using to funnel aid to the Contras.

The second part was a story about the parallel investigations of Contra drug trafficking done in the summer of 1986 by DEA agent Celerino Castillo at Ilopango and L.A. County Sheriff's deputy Tom Gordon, drawing on recently declassified FBI and CIA records at the National Archives and 3,000 pages of once-secret documents about the Blandón raids that had just been released by the L.A. County Sheriff's Office. I also wrote a sidebar on Joe Kelso's attempts to investigate allegations of DFA drug trafficking in Costa Rica. Altogether the drafts ran 16,000 words.

We'd done it. We had an eyewitness, on the record, who'd delivered the drug money. We had DEA records saying Blandón had sent money to the Contras far longer than we'd previously reported. We had a top CIA official admitting that the agency had reports of drug trafficking at Ilopango. We had evidence Ronald Lister had been meeting with the CIA's former head of covert operations. I expected the editors to be beside themselves with joy.

I heard absolutely nothing. Aside from Dawn, no one called to tell me they'd read the new stories. No one called with questions. No one even suggested that we begin editing them. They sat.

In early February Dawn sent me a copy of the story Pete Carey and Pam Kramer had written on the origins of the L.A. crack market. It was, astonishingly, a virtual repeat of the *L.A. Times* stories. It quoted police and drug experts opining that the Contra drug ring couldn't have supplied enough cocaine to have had a major impact on the crack explosion, because crack had surfaced all over the United States at about the same time. It drew no distinctions between the L.A. crack market in 1982 and the market in 1986. As far as the story was concerned, it had sprung from the ground fully formed. Three men, the story concluded, could not have created a drug epidemic. "The details of the trio's activities—who did what, and when—cannot change the overall story of the crack epidemic, which swept over several U.S. cities in the mid-1980s with the speed and destructiveness of a tidal wave."

I couldn't believe it. I respected Carey as a reporter—he and I had coauthored a story in 1989 that had won a Pulitzer Prize. But here it seemed he'd taken the official government explanation and swallowed it hook, line, and sinker.

Carey, the editors, and I met three times in February to argue about the epidemiology of the L.A. crack market, the amount of money sent to the Contras, and the level of CIA involvement. At the end, Carey informed me that he was canning his crack story. "What I told Ceppos was that we should just continue to work on this and see what the official investigations produced," he said. Kramer said much the same thing. "The problem I had with that story," she told me, "is that no one knows what really happened back in those years because nobody was looking at it." Their crack story never appeared.

With that settled, I plunged back into the investigation. In March I flew to Florida to interview a former CIA pilot, Ronald Lippert, who'd flown drop missions for the Contras in 1986. I spent two days at Lippert's home near Tampa, poring through his voluminous files and picking his brain. My interviews with the Canadian Lippert, jailed for ten years by Fidel Castro for flying explosives into Cuba for the agency, solved one of the final mysteries of the Southern Front: how CIA operative John I lull—Bill Casey's friend and Oliver North's liaison to the Contras—had escaped from Costa Rica after he was indicted there for drug trafficking in 1989. After being thrown in jail, Hull was let out on bail for health reasons and vanished.

The DFA office in Costa Rica had gotten Hull out, Lippert said. Lippert had flown the mission himself, in a decoy plane hopscotching from Costa Rica to Haiti and then shuttling Hull into Miami, where Hull hid at the apartment of Cuban CIA operative and suspected drug dealer Dagoberto Nunez, who'd helped North and the CIA in Costa Rica. The DEA officer who'd recruited Lippert for the escape flight, J. J. Perez, was another Cuban anti-Communist, Lippert said. In an interview, Hull confirmed I jppert's story, as did Anthony Ricevuto, the former DEA inspector who'd investigated Perez's role in Hull's escape. Ricevuto believed Perez set up Hull's escape on his own initiative, without official DEA sanction, but Hull disputed that. "Hell, you don't get DEA pilots and DEA planes to fly you around without orders coming down from above," Hull said.

A DEA panel recommended Perez's dismissal, Ricevuto said, but the Justice Department provided Perez with an attorney, and much of the case was dismissed on national security grounds. Perez ended up being suspended for one day.

Perez would not return phone calls, and the files of his disciplinary hearings arc scaled as national security secrets. (The United States refused repeated Costa Rican requests to extradite Hull, and the drug charges were eventually dropped. Murder charges that were filed against him shortly after his escape arc still pending, however; Hull denied both accusations.)

I was ecstatic. Now we had a story about the DEA aiding and abetting the escape of a CIA agent accused of drug trafficking, with the Justice Department intervening to protect the DEA agent who'd done it. The further I dug, the more amazing the story became.

And then, just like that, it was over.

Executive editor Jerry Ceppos called me at home on March 25, 1997, to inform me that he'd made "a very difficult decision." Mistakes had been made in the series, he said, and the newspaper was going to print a letter to its readers saying so.

"Is this a *fait accompli?*" I asked. "Or do I get a chance to say something?"

"The decision has been made," Ceppos said. "I'll fax you a draft of what we're considering."

According to Ceppos's proposed column, we should have said that Blandón claimed he quit dealing with the Contras in 1983—something that the editors had cut to save space. We had "insufficient proof" to say millions went to the Contras; we should have said it was an estimate. We should have said that we didn't find proof of involvement of "CIA decision-makers," whatever that meant. We should have said Ricky Ross wasn't the only crack supplier in L.A.—but we hadn't said that. And, finally, Ceppos wrote, the experts were unanimous in saying that the Contras had not played a major role in the crack trade and that the series had "oversimplified" how crack had become a problem. Strangely, Ceppos had borrowed his conclusions from Pete Carey's never-published crack story.

I brought a written response to San Jose with me the next day when I met with Ceppos and the other editors in the ornate conference room near the editors' offices. "That 'experts' would disagree with the findings of original research is one of the perils of doing it, as any researcher can tell you," I wrote. "But just because they have a differing opinion—and when you get down to it, that's all it is—is a pretty shoddy reason to take a swan dive on a story.

"Do I think there were no mistakes made in the execution of this story? No. There were," I wrote. "But this draft doesn't mention them. If we want to fully air this issue and be honest with our readers, I request that the following 'failures' be included."

I then described how the editors themselves had requested an increased emphasis on CIA involvement, how cutting the series from four parts to three had damaged it, and how the last-minute assignment of a new editor had weakened it further. Finally, I asked that the paper print my own response to this retraction. I thought it needed to be said that as a reporter, I stood by my story.

Ceppos flushed as he read my memo. "I don't think we should make this personal," he said uneasily.

"That's easy for you to say," I replied. "You're not the one who's being hung out to dry here."

"No one's going to hang you out to dry," insisted Jonathan Krim, the editor who'd been the most strident critic of the series and, in all likelihood, the author of Ceppos's apology. "We all got in this together, and we're all going to get out of this together."

"How can we honestly say that we don't know millions went to the Contras, or that the CIA didn't know about this, when we've got an eye-witness telling us that he personally gave drug money to a CIA agent? What are we going to do about all that other inconvenient information in the follow-ups? We're going to look awful goddamned stupid running this apology and then printing stories that directly contradict it."

The other editors looked at the table uncomfortably.

"We *are* going to print those other stories, aren't we?"

Ceppos shook his head slightly.

"We're not?" I asked incredulously. "Why not?"

"They're a quarter turn of the screw," he said. "We're not going to print anything else unless it's a major advance."

I exploded. "You think the fact that the head of this Contra drug ring was working for the DEA is a quarter turn of the screw?" I shouted. "You don't think the fact that the DEA helped an accused CIA drug trafficker escape criminal charges is a major advance? You've got to be kidding me. Are we even going to pursue this story any more?"

"No," Ceppos said.

"Let me get this straight," I said. "We're killing the other stories. We're not going to do any more investigation of this topic. And we're going to run this mealymouthed column that pretends we don't know anything else, tuck our tails between our legs, and slink off into the sunset. That's what you've got in mind?"

"You and I have very different views of this situation," he said quietly.

"You got that right."

The result of the stormy meeting was that Ceppos rewrote his column, removing the obvious factual errors but leaving the rest virtually unchanged.

"No matter how many times the words and phrases are tweaked, the end result is still a sham," I responded in a memo. "You're sitting on information that supports what I wrote and pretending to be unaware of it."

Again I objected, and again Ceppos recast it, this time as a personal column and, at Dawn's insistence, disclosing that I disagreed with him. He also inserted some statements that acknowledged that the series was largely accurate and that the basic elements of it were solidly documented. And, to my shock, he reversed his earlier decision to kill the follow-up stories. Dawn asked me to prepare a memo on what we still needed to do to get the stories in shape because Ceppos was now leaning toward running at least part of them.

At a final meeting before the column ran, I predicted that the mainstream press would read the column as a retraction, one that covered everything the series had revealed. "You run this, and all we'll hear is, '*The Mercury News* has admitted it isn't true! The Contras weren't dealing cocaine! The CIA had nothing to do with it!' And you know as well as I do, that's not true."

"Well," shrugged Krim, "you're the one who's always saying that we can't be held responsible for what other people read into things."

There it is, I thought. The truth. They *want* the public to think there was nothing here. They want it all to go away. They're tired of fighting the current of mainstream opinion, tired of being journalistic outcasts for standing by a story that, as Jesse Jackson had put it, "threatened the moral authority of the government."

In nine months, we had gone full circle and crawled into bed with the rest of the apologists who wanted the CIA drug story put back in its grave once and for all.

"Have you got anything else to say?" Ceppos asked.

"Yeah. You're taking a dive on a true story, and one day you're going to find that out."

Ceppos's column ran on May 11, 1997, and if there was ever a chance of getting to the bottom of the CIA's involvement with drug traffickers, it died on that day. The *New York Times*, which hadn't found the original series newsworthy enough to mention, splashed Ceppos's apology on its front page. An editorial lauded Ceppos for his courage and declared that he'd set a brave new standard for dealing with "egregious errors."

Howard Kurtz, the media critic for the *Washington Post*, called for a comment. "It's nauseating," I told him. I had never been more disgusted with my profession in my life. It wasn't because such outrages were unknown in the newspaper business. They weren't. Shortly before I arrived at the *Plain Dealer*, the paper printed a front-page retraction of a story that had appeared more than a year earlier, revealing that former Teamsters Union president Jackie Presser was an FBI informant.

Presser was indeed an informant, as the FBI confirmed years later. But truth had taken a back seat to realpolitik. Court records later revealed that the paper had been pressured into retracting the story by New York mob boss Anthony "Fat Tony" Salerno, who'd asked his attorney, Roy Cohn, to intercede with the Newhouse family, which owned the *Plain Dealer*.

Whether similar pressures were applied to Ceppos from outside the newspaper is something I do not know, nor do I particularly want to. I would prefer to believe the theory advanced by my editor, Dawn Garcia, who suggested that Ceppos's treatment for prostate cancer in the winter of 1996–97 had been a factor. That extended illness, combined with the pressure from other editors, had taken their toll, she believed.

It's a plausible explanation, because there really were only two ways the newspaper could have gone with "Dark Alliance" at that point—forward or backward. The series had created such a superheated controversy that it had become impossible to simply do nothing. Ceppos, who had stood by the story bravely at key moments, simply may not have had the endurance, at that period of his life, to ride the story out.

If the *Mercury* continued pursuing the story and publishing follow-ups, editor Jon Krim worried in a memo, the editors needed to be ready "to deal with the firestorm of criticism that is sure to follow." The other way out was to back out: confess to some "shortcomings," take some quick lumps, and move on, which is the course Ceppos chose. It was certainly the course of least resistance, as the happy reaction of the national media proved.

Had I done what my editors wanted—kept my mouth shut and gone along with the charade—I would probably still be working at the newspaper. But I had no desire to hang around a place that was so easily cowed by the opinions of others. A reporter's job was to pursue the truth, I still believed, no matter how unpopular that pursuit became. And the truth of the matter, as I saw it, was that my editors were trying to rewrite history.

When Howard Kurtz asked me what I intended to do next, I told him about the stories the *Mercury News* was suppressing.

"We've got four more stories sitting in the can, and I intend to try and get them in the newspaper," I said. "I've been told that we're still going to run them."

Kurtz called me back a short time later. "I just got off the phone with Jerry Ceppos, and he says you never turned in any stories. He said the only thing you gave him was a memo and some notes."

"Notes?" I laughed. "I've never given an editor notes in my life. I turned in four stories in January, and I know he's read them because we've discussed them. Maybe you misunderstood."

Kurtz sounded confused. "They're not notes?"

"Of course not. They've got beginnings, middles, and ends."

"Those are stories where I come from," he said.

The controversy raged for another month, and the issue gradually became what Ceppos reportedly had dreaded: he was being accused of suppressing information. He was covering things up. Talk radio had a field day. In Wishington, DJ Joe Madison, who'd been making hay with the story for months, urged the listeners of his 50,000-watt station to call Ceppos and demand that he print the stories he was suppressing. Letters and e-mail from outraged readers began pouring in.

Ceppos, who'd not spoken to me since his column ran, called me at home in early June. He was killing the follow-ups, he shouted. I was off the story for good. He couldn't trust me anymore because I'd "aligned myself with one side of the issue."

"Which side is that, Jerry? The side that wants the truth to come out?"

He wasn't getting into a debate, he told me. I was to report to his office in two days "to discuss your future at the *Mercury News*."

It was a very one-sided discussion. Reading from a prepared statement, Ceppos told me that my editors had lost faith in me. I needed closer supervision, which I couldn't get in Sacramento. I needed to regain their faith and their trust, and the only way to do that was to accept a transfer to the main office in San Jose. If I refused, I would be transferred against my will to the West Bureau in Cupertino, the newspaper's version of Siberia—a somnolent training ground for new reporters and a pasture for older ones who'd fallen from favor. It made little sense, because the reporters there had no direct supervision either. Whichever I decided, I had to report in thirty days.

And, by the way, Ceppos said, Pete Carey was going to take over the Contra drug story, and I was to give him all the cooperation he requested.

That night I sat down with my wife, Sue, and my children and gave them the news. In one month, I was going to have to start working in Cupertino, 150 miles away. I'd have to drive there on Mondays and come home on Fridays. In the meantime, I'd fight the transfer through the Newspaper Guild.

My six-year-old daughter looked at me strangely. "Are you still going to sleep here?"

"No, I won't be able to," I told her. "I have to live in another place during the week. But I'll be home on the weekends." She got up, went into her room, and closed the door.

As the deadline approached, I became despondent and told my wife I didn't feel comfortable leaving her and the kids alone. Georg had been getting death threats in Nicaragua, I told her. His wife's law office had been burglarized and ransacked twice; the power lines to his house had been cut, and his brother-in-law had been threatened by armed thugs. He-was leaving the country, taking his wife to his native Switzerland.

"It's too dangerous to leave you and the children alone," I told her. "Maybe I should just quit." I didn't want to work there anymore anyway.

"That's just what they want you to do," she said indignantly. "Don't you dare give in to those cowards. I know it's a lousy situation, but we'll just have to put up with it for a while. The Guild says you'll win the arbitration."

Winning the arbitration seemed very likely, because the union contract the newspaper had with the Newspaper Guild, which represented much of the staff, expressly prohibited transfering reporters out of the bureaus against their will. But it would take months for a hearing to occur. And then what? I'd get my old job back working for the same editors? It hardly seemed worth the fight.

On the other hand, going through with it held its own attractions. Every day that I showed up at the Cupertino bureau would be an act of defiance.

Reluctantly I went, spending July and part of August in the Cupertino bureau under protest. I was assigned such pressing matters as the death of a police horse, clothing collections for Polish flood victims, and summer school computer classes. I went on a byline strike, refusing to put my name on any story written while I was working under protest.

To the chagrin of my editors, who were under orders to keep me away from any decent assignments, I turned a press release rewrite about a San Jose landfill into a front-page story. It was the last piece I wrote for the *Mercury*—a page-one story with no one's name on it, which reportedly infuriated Ceppos.

Occasionally, Pete Carey would call with a question or two. He wasn't having much luck corroborating Carlos Cabezas's statements, he told me. He'd been trying to locate the Venezuelan CIA agent Cabezas said he worked with, Ivan Gómez, but couldn't. He'd tried directory assistance in Caracas and complained about how many Ivan Gómezes there were in the phone book. I felt saddened that my two-year investigation had come to this.

I never heard another word from him about it, and none of the follow-up stories ever ran. On November 19, 1997, the *Mercury News* agreed to settle my arbitration but, amusingly, required me to sign a confidentiality agreement swearing that I would never disclose its terms. Nineteen years after becoming a reporter, I quit the newspaper business.

Bob Parry, the AP reporter who first broke the Contra drug story in 1985, sent me a note of condolence. "Like you, I grew up in this business thinking our job really was to tell the public the truth," he wrote. "Maybe that was the mission at one time. Maybe there was that Awakening in the 1970s with Watergate, the Pentagon Papers, the CIA scandals, etc.

"But something very bad happened to the news media in the 1980s. Part of it was the 'public diplomacy' pressures from the outside. But part of it was the smug, snotty, sophomoric crowd that came to dominate the national media from the inside. These characters fell in love with their power to define reality, not their responsibility to uncover the facts. By the 1990s, the media had become the monster.

"I wish it weren't so. All I ever wanted to do was report and write interesting stories—while getting paid for it. But that really isn't possible anymore and there's no use crying over it.

"Hang in there," he concluded. "You're not alone."

EPILOGUE

"The damage that has been done"

A few days after my resignation was announced, the CIA leaked the conclusion of an internal investigation to the *L.A. Times* and the *Mercury News*. This exhaustive probe, according to unnamed sources, had absolved the CIA of any wrongdoing.

Though the reporters had no idea what the report actually said, since it wasn't released, and none of the officials whispering in their ears was willing to have his name used, they dutifully reported that there was no evidence the CIA knew anything about the dealings of Danilo Blandón, Norwin Meneses, or Freeway Ricky Ross. I tried to imagine what the reaction would have been had those same reporters gone to their editors with unnamed sources citing unobtainable reports claiming the CIA *was* involved in drug trafficking. Journalistic standards can be wonderfully flexible when necessary.

A month later, with the Washington press corps on a scavenger hunt for a dress stained with President Clinton's semen, the declassified version of the CIA report was officially released. It showed that the CIA had known exactly what Norwin Meneses was doing, and had directly intervened in the Frogman case to prevent the public from learning of the relationship between CIA assets and cocaine traffickers. Naturally, those details went largely unreported. But CIA director George Tenet was quoted extensively, lamenting that "the damage to the CIA's reputation may never be fully reversed.

"The allegations made have left an indelible impression in many Americans' minds that the CIA was somehow responsible for the scourge of drugs in our inner cities."

Still, it was hard to avoid that impression after CIA Inspector General Fred P. Hitz appeared before the House Intelligence Committee in March 1998 to update Congress on the progress of his continuing internal investigation.

"Let me be frank about what we are finding," Hitz testified. "There are instances where CIA did not, in an expeditious or consistent fashion, cut off relationships with individuals supporting the Contra program who were alleged to have engaged in drug trafficking activity." The lawmakers fidgeted uneasily. "Did any of these allegations involve trafficking in the United States?" asked Congressman Norman Dicks of Washington. "Yes," Hitz answered. Dicks flushed.

And what, Hitz was asked, had been the CIA's legal responsibility when it learned of this?

That issue, Hitz replied haltingly, had "a rather odd history. . .the period of 1982 to 1995 was one in which there was no official requirement to report on allegations of drug trafficking with respect to non-employees of the agency, and they were defined to include agents, assets, non-staff employees." There had been a secret agreement to that effect "hammered out" between the CIA and U.S. Attorney General William French Smith in 1982, he testified.

A murmur coursed through the room as Hitz's admission sunk in. No wonder the U.S. government could blithely insist there was "no evidence" of Contra/CIA drug trafficking. For thirteen years—from the time Blandón and Meneses began selling cocaine in L.A. for the Contras—the CIA and Justice had a gentleman's agreement to look the other way.

In essence, the CIA wouldn't tell and the Justice Department wouldn't ask. According to the CIA's Inspector General, the agreement had its roots in something called Executive Order No. 12333, which Ronald Reagan signed into law in 1981, the same week he authorized the CIA's operations in Nicaragua. Reagan's order served as his Administration's rules on the conduct of U.S. intelligence agencies around the world.

The new rules were the same as the Carter Administration's old rules, with one glaring exception: there was a difference in how crimes committed by spies were to be reported. There was to be a new procedure. For the first time, the CIA's Inspector General noted, the rules "required the head of an intelligence agency and the Attorney General to agree on crimes reporting procedure." In effect, the CIA now had veto power over anything the Justice Department might propose.

In early 1982 CIA director William Casey and Attorney General William French Smith inked a formal Memorandum of Understanding that spelled out which spy crimes were to be reported to the Justice Department. It was same as the Carter Administration's policy, but again, with one or two interesting differences.

First, crimes committed by people "acting for" an intelligence agency no longer needed to be reported to the Justice Department. Only card-carrying CIA officers were covered. Then, in case there were any doubts left, drug offenses were removed from the list of crimes the CIA was required to report. So, for example, if a cocaine dealer "acting for" the CIA was involved in drug trafficking, no one needed to know.

The two CIA lawyers behind those rule changes insist they did not occur through incompetence or neglect; they were carefully and precisely crafted. Bernard Makowka, the CIA attorney who negotiated the changes, told the CIA Inspector General that "the issue of narcotics violations was thoroughly discussed between [the Department of Justice] and CIA. . .someone at DOJ became uncomfortable at the prospect of the Memorandum of Understanding not including any mention of narcotics."

Daniel Silver, the CIA attorney who drafted the agreement, said the language "was thoroughly coordinated" with the Justice Department, which wasn't thrilled. "The negotiations over the Memorandum of Understanding involved the competing interests of DOJ and CIA," Silver explained. "DOJ's interest was to establish procedures while CIA's interest was to ensure that [it] protected CIA's national security equities." As is now clear, the CIA interest carried the day.

So how did ignoring drug crimes by secret agents protect the CIA's national security "equities"? CIA lawyer Makowka explained: "CIA did not want to be involved in law enforcement issues."

I.F. Magazine editor Robert Parry, who remains one of the few journalists exploring the CIA drug issue, believes the Casey-French agreement smacks of premeditation. It was signed just as the CIA was getting into both the Contra project and the conflict in Afghanistan, he notes, and it opened one very narrow legal loophole that effectively protected narcotics traffickers working on behalf of intelligence agencies. "That could only have been done for one purpose," Parry argues. "They were anticipating what eventually happened. They knew drugs were going to be sold." The CIA denies it.

The admission that there had been a secret deal between the CIA and the Just Say No Administration to overlook Agency-related drug crimes elicited mostly yawns from the news media. The *Washington Post* stuck the story deep inside the paper, further back than they had buried the findings of the Kerry Committee's Senate investigation in the 1980s, which officially disclosed the Contras' drug trafficking. The *Los Angeles Times* printed nothing.

A notable exception to this trend was the *New York Times*, which was leaked a few of the conclusions of the CIA's then-classified investigation into Contra drug dealing by Inspector General Fred Hitz. On July 17, 1998, it reported on its front page that the Agency had working relationships with dozens of suspected drug traffickers during the Nicaraguan conflict and that CIA higher-ups knew it.

"The new study has found that the Agency's decision to keep those paid agents, or to continue dealing with them in some less formal relationship, was made by top officials at headquarters," the *Times* reported.

But unlike most *New York Times* front page exclusives, the CIA story was not slavishly snapped up by the TV networks or national media. Once again, the *Los Angeles Times* found nothing newsworthy about it and the *Washington Post* concurred. The release three months later of Hitz's 400-page report—filled with horrifying examples of CIA collusion with assorted dopers, money launderers, and drug pilots—was treated as old news, despite the fact that most of the information had never been reported before. (Incredibly enough, the *San Jose Mercury News* decided that the report actually exonerated the CIA and proved that no top CIA officials were aware of Contra trafficking.)

The lack of any visible public outrage to the CIA's confession that it had worked cheek by jowl with more than 50 suspected drug traffickers may have emboldened some of the CIA veterans of that era. A few months later, in December 1998, when former Panamanian dictator Manuel Noriega appealed for a reduction in his 40-year prison sentence for drug trafficking and money laundering in early 1999, he came armed with an influential witness: Donald Winters, the former chief of CIA operations in Panama. Winters told Noriega's judge that the convicted doper had performed valuable work for the U.S. government in Central America during the 1980s and should be given a break.

Though federal prosecutors called him "an international drug trafficker and money launderer of unequaled proportions," Winters offered a much kinder description of the ex-strongman's work. "Noriega brokered deals with South American leaders, acted as a liaison to Cuba's Fidel Castro, provided details on guerrilla and terrorist activities, and even gave the former Shah of Iran a safe haven. There were specific instances when the U.S. government worked through General Noriega. These were major, major considerations," Winters insisted.

The former U.S. Ambassador to Panama, Arthur Davis, testified that Noriega did "a lot of good work, not just for the United States but for the people of Panama." Noriega's judge apparently agreed. In March 1999 his jail sentence was slashed from 40 years to 10 years, making eligible for parole in less than a year. No one explained why, if Noriega had been such a great and valuable friend to the U.S. government, it had been necessary to invade his country and haul him to the United States in chains, killing scores of American soldiers and Panamanian citizens in the process.

Two weeks later, civil rights lawyers in Oakland and Los Angeles filed a class action suit against the CIA and the Department of Justice, charging that the secret 1982 agreement between CIA director William Casey and Attorney General William French Smith was illegal and led "to policies protecting, rather than stopping, drug trafficking in crack cocaine." Filed on behalf of the residents of a half-dozen inner-city neighborhoods ravaged by crack, the lawsuit argued that the agreement "interfered with law enforcement's efforts to thwart the importation of crack cocaine." As a result, the plaintiffs declared, their neighborhoods gradually became "unlivable. . .dangerous, impoverished, and inadequately supported by social services." Legal experts gave the suit little chance of success. As the Christic Institute found out in 1986 when it brought its historic civil racketeering case against the CIA operatives running the Contra war in Costa Rica, the federal courts can be a brutal arena in which to fight U.S. government policy.

One of the questions I have been asked many times since this story broke is this: Now that the facts are out there, what can we do? My answer, depressing and cynical as it may be, is always the same. Not much. Not now. And certainly not until the American public and its Congressional representatives regain control of the CIA and shred the curtain of secrecy that keeps us from discovering these crimes of state until it is too late.

Perhaps when the government officials who presided over these outrages are safely in their crypts, and their apologists and cheerleaders are buried with them, future historians can finally call these men to account for the miseries they caused. Even if that's all that ever happens, it will be fitting and just, because the favorable judgment of history is ultimately what they craved.

NOTES ON SOURCES

Because I find footnotes extraordinarily distracting, I have elected not to use them. The information is sourced in the chapter notes in the order of its appearance in the text; each note is preceded by the page number it refers to, and an identifying phrase.

This book is based primarily upon public record sources: declassified U.S. government documents, mostly from the files of Iran-Contra Independent Counsel Lawrence Walsh at the National Archives; unclassified records released under the Freedom of Information Act (a mere shadow of what it once was); DEA tapes and DEA and FBI reports released to various defense attorneys under pre-trial discovery; congressional reports and hearing transcripts; transcripts and pleadings in state and federal courts (mainly in California and Florida); corporate records from California, Florida, and Nicaragua; records of the Nicaraguan Supreme Court; and reports of the Costa Rican Legislative Assembly and the Costa Rican *Organization de Investigation Judicial* (OIJ), a law enforcement body similar in function to the FBI in the United States.

In the text, when the words "said in an interview" are used, it refers to an interview done by the author and/or his colleague Georg Hodel. Interviews conducted by other journalists, when more than one direct quotation is used, are noted in the text. In other cases, the source of the quotation is listed in the chapter notes.

The use of unidentified sources has been kept to an absolute minimum because I do not trust unsourced information as a general rule. If a source is unidentified, it was at the source's insistence, and I have attempted to identify the source's position as specifically as possible. At times, it may seem as if the sources are unnamed (i.e., "aquaintances say"), but normally their names will be disclosed in the chapter notes.

After the first mention, the following abbreviations are used in the chapter notes:

FBIS—Foreign Broadcast Information Service, a remarkable resource provided by our more useful friends at the CIA. FBIS microfiche is available at federal repository libraries across the country.

LACSO reports—Los Angeles County Sheriff's Office exhibits and interviews, most of them tape-recorded, conducted by investigators for Sheriff Sherman Block in the fall of 1996. In the text, when someone is quoted as having "told police," "told police investigators," or "told L.A. detectives," the quotation or information can safely be assumed to have come from the LACSO reports and appendices. Those reports are summaries of interviews and usually not the subject's verbatim statement. However, I have assumed that the sheriffs accurately reported the spirit of the subject's statement. When possible the accuracy was checked with the subject.

CIA-IG—Cables, interviews, and summaries contained in the Central Intelligence Agency Inspector General Report of Investigation, *Allegations of Connections between CIA and the Contras in Cocaine Trafficking to the United States* (96–0143–IG), Vol. 1, *The California Story*, January 29, 1998, Frederick P. Hitz, Inspector General. This is a declassified version of a much longer report released to the House and Senate Intelligence Committees, which has never been released to the public. From my reading of the declassified version, it is obvious that considerable information has been censored. In the text, when a source is quoted as having "told the CIA," "told CIA inspectors," or "told CIA investigators," it is almost always a reference to an interview summarized in this report. Again, I can only assume the CIA related the interviews accurately and fairly, since the actual transcripts have not been made public.

CIA-IG2—Volume 2: *The Contra Story*, L. Britt Snyder, Inspector General, October 8, 1998. This is the second volume of the above report, released by Fred Hitz's successor. Like the first volume, it was heavily censored before it was made public.

DOJ-IG—*The CIA-Contra-Crack Cocaine Controversy: A Review of the Justice Department's Investigations and Prosecutions*, Michael Bromwich, Inspector General, U.S. Department of Justice, Washington D.C., December 1997. This report, which was censored and withheld from public release for six months on orders of Attorney General Janet Reno (allegedly for Danilo Blandón's protection), focused on the many fruitless investigations of the Contra traffickers by the Drug Enforcement Administration and Federal Bureau of Investigation. Quotes attributed to the Justice Department's Inspector General are taken from this report.

U.S. v. James—The March 1996 criminal trial of Curtis James, Ricky Ross, and Michael McLaurin, 95 CR 353H, U.S. District Court, Southern District of California. If Danilo Blandón is quoted directly in the text, it is a quotation taken from either the court reporter's transcript of his sworn testimony as a government witness or the actual tape of his testimony, as I found there were sometimes substantive differences. In many cases, quotations from Ricky Ross came from his sworn testimony in *U.S. v. James*, though other quotations came from his interviews with the author and/or other journalists. Those other sources are separately noted.

Blandón GJ—The February 1994 testimony of Danilo Blandón before a federal grand jury for the Northern District of California, taken as part of a federal investigation of Norwin Meneses. At the time of this testimony, Blandón was cooperating with the government. In the text, if Blandón is quoted as having "told a grand jury," or "testified secretly," it is this testimony to which the text is referring.

CR Pros—*The Public Prosecutor's Investigation on "La Penca" Case*, San Jose, Costa Rica, December 26, 1989. This was a report of an investigation by Jorge Chavarria Guzman, then the prosecuting attorney for San Jose. Chavarria investigated the attempted assassination of Contra commander Eden Pastora at the La Penca rebel camp on May 30, 1984, but he also examined a host of other cases of Costa Rican-based Contras involved in drug trafficking. Included as exhibits are numerous court records from Costa Rican criminal cases. In the text, if information is attributed to "a Costa Rican prosecutor's report," it is a reference to this report.

CR Assy 2—*Segundo Informe de la Comision sobre el Narcotrafico, Asamblea Legislativa*, August 1989. This is the second report of the Costa Rican Legislative Assembly's Commission on Narcotics Trafficking, which examined the explosion of cocaine trafficking in that country during the mid-1980s. After studying the involvement of Contras and U.S. officials with illegal arms running and drug trafficking, the commission recommended that former ambassador Lewis Tambs, CIA station chief Joe Fernandez, Lt. Col. Oliver North, former national security adviser John Poindexter, and former air force general Richard Secord be forever denied entry to Costa Rica, a recommendation that was adopted by Costa Rican president Oscar Arias and largely ignored by the U.S. media.

Kerry Report—*Drugs, Law Enforcement and Foreign Policy* (Washington, DC.: Government Printing Office, 1988), 1,166-page report by Sen. John Kerry's Subcommittee on Terrorism, Narcotics and International Operations (Kerry Committee), December 1988.

Prologue: "It was like they didn't want to know"

piece. . .about a convicted cocaine trafficker: Gary Webb, "Blunder Jeopardizes Drug Cases," *San Jose Me rcury News*, June 11, 1995.

The Forfeiture Racket: Gary Webb, "The Forfeiture Racket," *San Jose Mercury News*, August 29, 1993; and Webb, "The Money Tree," *San Jose Mercury News*, August 30, 1993.

Jim Doyle, "4 Indicted in Prison Breakout Plot," *San Francisco Chronicle*, April 29, 1994.

Seth Rosenfeld, "Federal Jailbreak Plot Charged," *San Francisco Examiner*, April 19, 1994.

"it is not the first time": Howard Mintz, "Prosecutor's Missteps Place Prison Escape Case in Jeopardy," *San Francisco Daily Recorder*, February 1996.

"Ask about the cocaine smuggling": "Protesters Interrupt North with Contra Allegations," *Los Angeles Times*, July 9, 1987. The men, Michael Bardoff and Michael Kreis, were later fined $200 but refused to pay it.

People did more time for burglary: In 1992 the average federal prison sentence for burglary was 52 months. For pornography, it was 41 months; for robbery, 101 months; and 43 months for assault (*Sourcebook of Criminal Justice Statistics* [Washington, D.C.: Government Printing Office, 1996], 445).

Though his court files say Blandón was sentenced to 28 months, it's not certain he was in jail all that time. When U.S. Rep. Maxine Waters of Los Angeles asked the Bureau of Prisons in 1996 for his prison records from San Diego, the San Diego facility reported it had no record of him ever being confined there.

strongly suggested that Meneses, too, had been dealing: Jonathan Marshall, "Nicaraguans Arrest Ex-Bay Man Linked to Cocaine, Contras," *San Francisco Chronicle*, December 16, 1991; and Seth Rosenfeld, "Nicaraguan Exile's Cocaine-Contra Connections," *San Francisco Examiner*, June 23, 1986.

1987 FBI report, 1987 FBI interviews: FBI 302, *Record of Interview with Dennis Ainsworth*, San Francisco, January 21, 1987, file IC 600–1, sub. F-9; Office of Independent Counsel, *Record of Interview, Dennis William Ainsworth*, Berkeley, Calif., March 5, 1987, file IC 600–1, sub. F-18.

1. "A pretty secret kind of thing"

"let's talk like friends": Anastasio Somoza, *Nicaragua Betrayed* (Boston: Western Islands Publishers, 1980), 333–55; this autobiography also provides a detailed chronology of Somoza's last days in power. His historical relationship and cooperation with the CIA are explained on 169–75.

Additional conversations between Somoza and Pezzullo in Anthony Lake, *Somoza Falling* (New York: Houghton Mifflin, 1989), 231–36.

vaunted National Guard collapsed: Details of the collapse of the National Guard and the final days of the Somoza regime were drawn from the June–July 1979 Central American reports of the Foreign Broadcast Information Service.

"Recent developments concerning the state of cocaine": Tennyson Guyer, quoted in House Select Committee on Narcotics Abuse and Control, *Cocaine, a Major Drug Issue of the Seventies: Hearings before the House of Representatives*, 96th Cong., 1st sess.; the hearings took place July 24 and 26 and October 10, 1979.

"rediscovery of cocaine in the Seventies": Psychiatrist Ronald Siegel, quoted in Dr. Gabriel Nahas, *Cocaine: The Great White Plague* (Middlebury, Vt.: Paul Eriksson Publisher, 1989), 129.

"My first ten years": Jerald Smith, interview by author.

And that brought Byck: Dr. Robert Byck, interview by author.

Dr. Raul Jeri had been insisting: Jeri reported his conclusions in "Consumption of Dangerous Drugs by Members of the Armed Forces and the Police in Peru," *Rev. Sanid. Minist. Int*. 37 (1976): 104–12; "The Syndrome of Coca Paste," *Rev. Sanid. Minist. Int*. 39 (1978): 1–18; and "Further Experience with the Syndromes Produced by Coca Paste Smoking," in *Cocaine 1980: Proceedings of the Interamerican Seminar on Medical and Sociological Aspects of Coca and Cocaine* (Lima, Peru: Pacific Press, 1980).

Dr. Nils Noya. . .began making similar claims: Noya, "Coca and Cocaine, a Perspective from Bolivia," in *The International Challenge of Drug Abuse*, NIDA research monograph no. 19 (Washington, D.C.: Government Printing Office, 1978), 82–90.

some of America's leading researchers: An excellent summary of early research reports can be found in R. K. Siegel, "Cocaine Smoking," *Journal of Psychoactive Drugs*, winter 1982, 301–10.

"Immediately after smoking": "Pure Cocaine Proves Devastating," *Journal*, January 1, 1978, 1; cited in Siegel, "Cocaine Smoking," 304.

"fairly rudimentary proposal": Dr. David Paly, interview by author. Paly's study was published as "Cocaine Plasma Levels after Cocaine Paste Smoking," in *Cocaine 1980*, 106–10.

"a growing trend": Ronald K. Siegel, letter to the editor, *New England Journal of Medicine* 300, no. 7 (February 15, 1979), 373. Siegel was interviewed by the author.

"increased happiness and contentment with life": Ronald K. Siegel, "Cocaine: Recreational use and intoxication," in *Cocaine 1977*, NIDA research monograph no. 13 (Washington, D.C.: Government Printing Office, 1977).

"most expensive of all mood changers": Dr. Sidney Cohen, "Coca Paste and Freebase: New Fashions in Cocaine Use," *Drug Abuse and Alcoholism Newsletter* (Vista Hill Foundation) 9, no.3 (April 1980).

"'I have had to sell even my clothes'": Gregorio Aramayo and Mario Sanchez, in *Cocaine 1980*, 120–26.

"impact of these experiences": Siegel, "Cocaine Smoking," 293.

California Conference on Cocaine: Details of the Santa Monica conference in Nahas, *Cocaine*, 128–37.

2. "We were the first"

the world on a platter: Details of Danilo Blandón's life in prerevolutionary Nicaragua came from his testimony in *U.S. v. James*, March 7, 1996. Additional details of Blandón's family history as well as the family history of his wife, Chepita Murillo, were gained from the author's interviews of Blandón's cousin Flor Reyes, his attorney Jose Macario Estrada, his supplier Norwin Meneses, and his wife's uncle Orlando Murillo. More details were gained from Georg Hodel's interviews of Moises Hassan, Eden Pastora, Roger Mayorga, Orlando Murillo, Blanca Margarita Meneses, and Norwin Meneses.

Though Somoza's army had beaten them down: The final days of the struggle with the Sandinistas are described in Anthony Lake, *Somoza Falling* (New York: Houghton Mifflin, 1989), 219; and Robert Kagan, *A Twilight Struggle* (New York: Free Press, 1996), 84.

"I cannot think of a single thing": Exchange between Ed Koch and Lucy Benson before the Subcommittee on Foreign Operations and Appropropriations of the House Appropriations Committee, March 24, 1977.

"Somoza is known to have instructed": Sally Shelton's statements were made before the Subcommittee on International Organizations of the House International Relations Committee, February 16, 1978.

Gustavo "El Tigre" Medina: Details of Medina's background and Sandinista views regarding him were gained during author's interviews with Gustavo Medina, Juan C. Wong, Leonardo Hernandez, and Jose Macario Estrada; additional information in Oleg Ignatiev and Genrykh Borovik, *The Agony of a Dictatorship* (Moscow: Progress Publishers, 1980), 80.

"allegations of cruel, inhuman and degrading treatment": State Department report submitted to the House Committee on International Relations and the Senate Comittee on Foreign Relations, February 3, 1978.

Inter-American Commission on Human Rights. . .did its own inspection: Organization of American States, *Report on the Situation of Human Rights in Nicaragua*, findings of on-site observation in the Republic of Nicaragua, October 3–12, 1978.

"Hundred of Nicaraguans struggle daily": Panamanian radio report, in FBIS daily summary for Central America, June 11, 1979, 11.

Blandón's job was to award grants: Danilo Blandón, testimony in *U.S. v. James*.

"I want the U.S. people to help me": Somoza's radio address, in FBIS daily summary for Central America, June 19, 1979, 16.

Blandón fell in with a Red Cross convoy: Blandón, testimony in *U.S. v. James*.

brothers named Torres: Ibid.

cousins of Pablo Escobar: The Torres's relationship with Escobar was obtained from 1996 L.A. County Sheriff's Office (LACSO) interviews of retired Bell police detective Jerry Guzzetta, author's interviews with Guzzetta, and Georg Hodel's interviews with Norwin Meneses.

blossoming Miami cocaine market: Description of early Miami cocaine market taken from Kerry Report, 27, and from Guy Gugliotta and Jeff Leen, *Kings of Cocaine* (New York: Harper and Row, 1990): 14–15.

"I was the first": Details of Blandón's early involvement with the Contras in L.A. came from his testimony in *U.S. v. James*, and his interviews with the Central Intelligence Agency Inspector General's Office, January 1998, CIA-IG, 69–70.

"You Americans have no idea": Jose Macario Estrada, interview by author.

Blandón applied for political asylum: Danilo Blandón, *INS Application for Permanent Residence*, December 10, 1986.

one of the earliest founders of the FDN: Details of Blandón's pro-Contra activities in L.A. obtained from Georg Hodel's interviews with William Fonseca.

Luis Pallais Debayle. . .began making the rounds: Roy Gutman, *Banana Diplomacy* (New York: Touchstone, 1988), 40–41.

"He fit the profile": Sam Dillon, *Comandos* (New York: Henry Holt, 1991), 65. Details of Enrique Bermúdez's background are on p. 62; see also Christopher Dickey, *With the Contras* (New York: Simon and Schuster, 1985), 62, 80.

Americans thought so highly of him: U.S. recommendation of Bermúdez to Somoza reported in Anastasio Somoza, *Nicaragua Betrayed* (Boston: Western Islands Publishers, 1980), 383.

invited Bermúdez to the Pentagon: Bermúdez's recruitment into CIA reported by Dillon, *Comandos*, 62–63.

Legion of September 15th criminal history cited in CIA-IG2, 62–7. *One of the earliest written accounts. . .: Latin American Regional Reports*, August 13, 1982.

telephone number of Colonel Ricardo Lau: Dickey, *With the Contras*, 88.

"we had to provide some cars": Danilo Blandón, testimony in *U.S. v. James*.

3. "The brotherhood of military minds"

"He had to talk to me": Danilo Blandón's descriptions of his early involvement with Norwin Meneses are taken from his testimony in *U.S. v. James*, his testimony before the Grand Jury for the Northern District of California, Grand Jury 93-5, Grand Jury investigation 9301035, February 3, 1994, and his statements in DOJ-IG, Ch.2, b. FBI report on Meneses cited at DOJ-IG, Ch.3, c.

People who know Barrios describe him: Descriptions of Donald Barrios from author's interviews with Jose Macario Estrada and Ariel Solorzano Jr., and from Georg Hodel's interview with Moises Hassan.

a partner of Violeta Chamorro: Norwin Meneses's business partnership with Chamorro was discovered by Georg Hodel in the corporate records of Inversiones Financieras S.A.

"I was in the plane": Gustavo Medina, interview by author.

a restaurant and an investment company: Barrios and Medina were partners in Los Ranchos de Miami, Inc., and BMS Investments Inc.

a career criminal: Details of Norwin Meneses's early career as a trafficker were taken from author's and Georg Hodel's interviews with Roger Mayorga; Mayorga's declarations to the Fifth District Criminal Court, Managua, November 21, 1991; November 16, 1981, affidavit of DEA agent Sandra Smith in *U.S. v. 60 Plymouth Circle, Daly City, California*, 1828-MW, Northern District of California; Eduardo Marenco, "History of a Nicaraguan Godfather," *El Semanario*, August 15, 1996; Roberto Fonseca, "Meneses: King of Drugs," *Barricada*, November 16, 1991; and Eloisa Ibarra, "Arce Refuses to Testify in Cocaine Case," *La Prensa*, November 22, 1991.

"one of the most totally corrupt military establishments in the world": Richard Millett, *Guardians of the Dynasty* (Maryknoll, N.Y.: Orbis Books, 1977), 251.

another brother, Brigadier General Fermin Meneses, commanded the *Guardia* garrison: Organization of American States, *Report on the Situation of Human Rights in Nicaragua*, findings of on-site observation in the Republic of Nicaragua, October 3–12, 1978, 14; FBIS daily summary for Central America, August 16, 1978, 4; and Juan C. Wong, interview by author.

"anti-Sandinista to the death": Marenco, "History of a Nicaraguan Godfather."

"Nicaragua is one of the few countries": Sally Shelton, statement before the Subcommittee on International Organizations of the House International Relations Committee, February 16, 1978.

"Gambling, alcoholism, drugs, prostitution": Pastoral letter, in exhibits to hearing of House Committee on International Relations, February 16, 1978, 108–10.

Edmundo Meneses's background was gathered from testimony before House Committee on International Relations, April 30, 1977, 231; and author's interviews with Jose Macario Estrada, Juan C. Wong, Peter Dale Scott, and Rafael Cornejo.

". . .used a Nicaraguan Air Force plane. . .": DOJ-IG, Ch.4, 4a.

starting up an armed guerrilla group: Marenco, "History of a Nicaraguan Godfather."

Norwin appears to have literally gotten away with murder: Ernesto Aburto, "An Old Crime in the History of Norwin," *Barricada*, November 26, 1991; "Arrest Order for Norwin Meneses," *La Prensa*, June 10, 1977; "Threats to Norwin's family?" *La Prensa*, June 17, 1977; and Rafael Cornejo, interview by author.

Jairo Meneses debriefing, DOJ-IG, Ch.3, e; FBI Mexico City request, DOJ-IG, Ch.3, c.

Ambassador Meneses was machine-gunned: FBIS daily summary for Central America, September 18, 1978, September 19, 1978, and October 2, 1978; and Oleg Ignatiev and Genrykh Borovik, *The Agony of a Dictatorship* (Moscow: Progress Publishers, 1980), 68.

"guerillas of Pancasan": Marenco, "History of a Nicaraguan Godfather."

Norwin. . .left Nicaragua in early June 1979: Norwin Meneses, interview by author and Georg Hodel.

Meneses played a key role. . .: DEA informant quoted in DOJ-IG, Ch.4, pt.2.

posed as a successful businessman: Information about Norwin's businesses in San Francisco from author's interviews of Meneses; Seth Rosenfeld, "Nicaraguan Exile's Cocaine-Contra Connection," *San Francisco Examiner*, June 23, 1986; and Guillermo Fernandez, "Nica Resident Here Is Supposed Head of Ring," *La Nacion*, December 1, 1986. Records of Norwin's property purchases were found by author in San Mateo County Clerk's Office.

Court records show: Special Agent Ronald J. Kimball, Costa Rican DEA report, DEA file GFR3–76–4001, December 29, 1976.

One of the men. . .: CIA-IG2, 62-4.

"an interesting combination": Sandra Smith, interview by author.

arrested for cocaine sales: Details of Roger Meneses's and Omar Meneses's arrests contained in Smith affidavit, *U.S. v. 60 Plymouth Circle*.

Smith got a break: Information about Baldwin Park investigation, Julio Bermúdez's arrest, and Jairo Meneses search was contained in Smith affidavit, *U.S. v. 60 Plymouth Circle*.

Blandón accepted Meneses's pitch: Blandón, testimony in *U.S. v. James*. The visit by Bermúdez was contained in his CIA-IG interview.

on an FDN fund-raising committee: Meneses explained his role with the Contras in interviews with the author and Georg Hodel. Blandón's description of Meneses's role was contained in Blandón's CIA-IG interview. Additional details in Douglas Farah, "Nicaraguan is Reputed Link between Contras and Cocaine Sales in California," *Washington Post*, October 4, 1996; Tim Golden, "Pivotal Figures of Newspaper Series May Be Only Bit Players," *New York Times*, October 20, 1996; Ricardo Gutierrez, "Show de defensores de narcos," *El Nuevo Diario*, August 15, 1992.

Adolfo Calero. . .denied: Farah, "Nicaraguan is Reputed Link."

"brotherhood of military minds": Edgar Chamorro, interview by author.

"the ends justify the means": Details of Blandón's meeting with Bermúdez came from Blandón's testimony in *U.S. v. James*, and his CIA-IG interviews.

"illicit or dirty business": Senate Intelligence Committee, November 1996.

Langley was informed by cable: CIA-IG2, 66–7.

"escorted to Tegucigalpa airport": CIA-IG, 71.

"Mr. Meneses explained to me": Blandón's training sessions as a cocaine dealer were detailed in both his testimony in *U.S. v. James* and Blandón GJ.

"Blandón was introduced": Torres brothers' statements reported by Agents Bruce A. Burroughs and Don A. Allen, FBI-302 report, case file 245B-SF-96287, May 5, 1992.

denies traveling with Blandón: Frank Vigil, interview by author and Georg Hodel.

"Chepita called me": Orlando Murillo, interview by author and Georg Hodel.

"Blandón fled Nicaragua": Chuck Jones's affidavit, filed in *In the Matter of the Search of Premises Commonly Known as Storage Unit L-7, Security First Self Storage, 3089 Main St. Chula Vista, California*, 92–2083-M, Southern District of California, May 18, 1992.

4. *"I never sent cash"*

Details of the formation of UDN-FARN in Miami are contained in Shirley Christian, *Nicaragua: Revolution in the Family* (New York: Random House, 1985), 228–29; and Glenn Garvin, *Everybody Had His Own Gringo* (McLean, Va.: Brassey's, 1992), 25–26. The weapons shipments are detailed in Martha Honey, *Hostile Acts* (Gainesville: University of Florida Press, 1994), 224.

The generals there had a deal for them: Roy Gutman, *Banana Diplomacy* (New York: Touchstone, 1988), 52–54. The assault on the radio station is described by Christopher Dickey, *With the Contras* (New York: Simon and Schuster, 1985), 90–92; and Garvin, *His Own Gringo*, 33–34.

Reagan. . .authorized the CIA: Dickey, *With the Contras*, 104.

"We were practically official guests": A transcript of William Baltodano Herrera's tape-recorded interview was contained in Dieter Eich and Carlos Rincon, *The Contras: Interviews with Anti-Sandinistas* (San Francisco: Synthesis Publications, 1984), 17–29.

"It was in Buenos Aires": Pedro Javier Nunez Cabezas, cited in Eich and Rincon, *The Contras*, 45–55.

Jairo confessed to federal prosecutors: DOJ-IG, Ch.3, pt.l, e.

indications that Bermúdez was personally corrupt: Anne Manuel, "Nicaragua: New U.S. Aid Won't End Contra Investigation," Inter Press Service, July 1, 1986.

"agree to join efforts": Details of the creation of FDN taken from Peter Kornbluh, *Nicaragua: The Price of Intervention* (Washington, D.C.: Institute for Policy Studies, 1987), 26; Garvin, *His Own Gringo*, 38; and Gutman, *Banana Diplomacy*, 56.

"single most detested group of Nicaraguans": Stephen Kinzer, *Blood of Brothers* (New York: Doubleday, 1991).

partners in a Miami restaurant: Enrique Sanchez was a partner in Los Ranchos De Miami, Inc.

"Calero's hatchet man": Oliver North, notebook entry for January 28, 1986.

"Sanchez became one of the Contras' top. . .strategists": Aminda Marques Gonzalez, "Aristides Sanchez Dies," *Miami Herald*, September 8, 1993.

"$29 million isn't going to buy you much": Bobby Inman, quoted in Bob Woodward, *Veil* (New York: Simon and Schuster, 1987), 192.

"role of American mercenary": Alfonso Chardy, "CIA-backed Fighters No Longer Boast of Toppling Sandinistas, Agency Says," *Miami Herald*, May 23, 1983.

"deny having met with any U.S. government officials": Edgar Chamorro, *Packaging the Contras* (New York: Institute for Media Analysis, 1987).

"just for sitting around at a desk": Hector Frances's statements were published as an appendix to Chamorro, *Packaging the Contras*.

"Torres stated": FBI report, 1992.

5. "God, Fatherland and Freedom"

Details of Carlos Cabezas's background and employment history came from interviews with Cabezas by the author and/or Georg Hodel; his testimony of November 28, 1984, in *U.S. v. Julio Zavala et al*, 83 CR 0154, U.S. District Court, Northern District of California; and Leo McCarthy, U.S. Department of Probation and Parole, to U.S. Magistrate Owen E. Woodruff, letter, February 18, 1983.

Details of Julio Zavala's background came from interviews with Carlos Cabezas, his testimony in *U.S. v. Zavala*, and McCarthy to Woodruff, letter.

FBI had joined the chase: Most of the details of the FBI's investigation of Cabezas and Zavala were contained in the Master Affidavit of FBI agent David E. Alba, filed in support of an application for electronic surveillance. Alba's August 1982 affidavit is part of the case file in *U.S. v. Zavala*.

recently declassified CIA Inspector General's report: The CIA's early interest in Zavala was disclosed in CIA-IG, 84.

Sanchez said he flew for the CIA: Troilo Sanchez, interview by author, Georg Hodel, and Nicaraguan reporter Roberto Orosco, who was later fired by *La Prensa* for investigating the

Blandón-Meneses money-laundering operations in Managua.

"We are like family": Meneses, interview by Guillermo Fernandez R., *La Nacion* (Costa Rica), December 1, 1986. Fernandez was forced to flee Costa Rica because of death threats after publishing his extensive 1986 series in Contra-related drug trafficking.

FBI teletype shows that by November 1982: Reprinted in Kerry Report, 400–409.

"Troilo sold 200 pounds": "Contra Accuses Other Rebels of Corruption, Drug Trafficking," UPI, April 26, 1986. The story was datelined Tegucigalpa, Honduras.

interview with a British television crew: Dewey Clarridge's comments about Ivan Gómez were made to a film crew from ITV, London, *The Big Story*, which aired in December 1996.

The CIA report confirms: CIA-IG2, 207–229. During the CIA polygraph tests, Gómez changed his story about the money laundering several times. The polygraphers concluded Gómez had been involved in illegal drug deals, drug money laundering, and may have been conducting these activities after joining the CIA. They also believed he was not telling them the whole story about the crimes to which he'd confessed.

"well known to 'The Company'": Agent Sandalio Gonzalez, DEA-6, *File Opening Report—Debriefing of STF-78–0006 (CI)*, February 6, 1984, file GFTF-84–4004.

Pereira was arrested in Miami: Details of Pereira's arrest are contained in a January 10, 1983, application for an extension of a wiretap by FBI special agent David Alba.

FBI started taking the operation apart: Details of the surveillance and arrests at Pier 96 are contained in an application for a search warrant dated February 14, 1983, by FBI special agent David Alba, filed as part of the pleadings in *U.S. v. Zavala*. Other details came from a story by Maitland Zane, "Cocaine Seized from Frogmen at S.F. Pier," *San Francisco Chronicle*, January 18, 1983.

The very same ship. . .was found in Houston: The Houston raid on the *Cuidad de Cucuta* was reported by UPI on May 17, 1984. UPI reported three other Gran Colombiana line drug seizures in Los Angeles on May 14, 1986; January 18, 1984; and January 30, 1983; and reported on the Frogman case seizure on January 17, 1983.

At 7 a.m. on February 15: Search warrant return was found in case file of *U.S. v. Zavala*, currently on file at the National Archives, San Bruno, Calif.

Iverson handed Peckham two letters: Details of Iverson's meetings with Peckham and the court squabble over the depositions were filed in numerous documents, *U.S. v. Zavala*. The conversations between Iverson, Peckham, and Mark Zanides were taken from the trial transcripts in *U.S. v. Zavala*.

Costa Rican CIA station fired off a cable: A summary of the CIA cables was contained in CIA-IG.

The Justice Department Inspector General's conclusions are contained in DOJ-IG, Ch.8, pt.2, e.

6. "They were doing their patriotic duty"

All of the quotes from Blandón came from either his testimony in *U.S. v. James* or Blandón GJ.

"I keeping the books from L.A.": The Q&A was from an exchange between Ricky Ross's defense attorney Alan Fenster and Blandón during *U.S. v. James*.

"I went one time": John Lacome, interview by author.

nephews all drove flashy new cars: Gloria Lopez, interview by author.

"Jaime Sr., I respected him": Rafael Cornejo, interview by author.

murdered in 1990: Jaime Meneses's murder was reported by Rodrigo Peralta, "Crimen en asalto a financiera," *La Nacion*, June 27, 1990; and Tomas Zamora, "Aclaran crimen de empresario," *La Nacion*, August 31, 1990.

JDM Artwork: Records on file at the Division of Corporations of the California Secretary of State.

Eden Pastora said he visited the firm: Eden Pastora, interview by Georg Hodel.

Pastora aide Carol Prado claimed: Carol Prado, interview by author and Georg Hodel.

former associate of Blandón: Puerto Rican associate, interview by author. He declined to be named because, he says, he was frightened of Blandón. He provided the author with a copy of the photograph of Blandón in the FDN office in L.A.

CIA cables filed in federal court: The 1984 CIA cable was filed as an exhibit in *U.S. v. James* and later summarized more thoroughly in CIA-IG.

1986 interview: The interview with Meneses was conducted by Seth Rosenfeld of the *San Francisco Examiner*.

"appeared like a fund-raiser": Edgar Chamorro, quoted in Seth Rosenfeld, "Nicaraguan Exile's Cocaine-Contra Connection," *San Francisco Examiner*, June 23, 1986.

Renato Pena interview, DOJ-IG, Ch.4, pt.2, 5b. Meneses interview with CIA, CIA-IG, 76.

"It's true, it was widely spread around": Juan C. Wong, interview by author.

"People were being arrested": Bradley Brunon, interview by author.

Ronald Jay Lister: Lister's military service records were exhibits to LACSO report, November 1996.

"always very successful": Lt. Danielle Adams, interview by author.

"You hear lots of things about Ron Lister": Chief Neil Purcell, interview by author.

Pyramid International's corporate records are on file at the Division of Corporations, California Secretary of State.

"through a Beverly Hills business connection": Ronald Lister was interviewed four separate times by LACSO investigators: November 6, 1996, by Lt. Michael Bornman and Sgt. Axel Anderson; again on November 6, by Bornman; on November 7, 1996, by Bornman; and on November 23, 1996, by Bornman and Anderson. He was also interviewed in CIA-IG, 55–59. He refused two written interview requests by author.

Blandón described his partnership with Lister in DOJ-IG, Ch.5, pt.lb.

"I think I was actually an officer": Christopher Moore, interview by author.

"the 'Reagan Doctrine' may have been born in El Salvador": Robert Kagan, *A Twilight Struggle* (New York: Free Press, 1996), 209.

reason. . .William Casey gave to Congress: Casey's briefing described by Roy Gutman, *Banana Diplomacy* (New York: Touchstone, 1988), p. 85

"Under the guise of anti-Communism": Oliver L. North, *Under Fire* (New York: HarperCollins, 1991), 224.

Colonel Nicholas Carranza: Carranza's role with the death squads and the CIA was reported by Bob Woodward, *Veil* (New York: Simon and Schuster, 1987), 262.

The interviews with Lister and the FBI informant are summarized in DOJ-IG, Ch. 5, pt. 1B.

Lister's company. . .made a security proposal: A copy of the Pyramid proposal was provided to the author by a member of the raid team, Robert Juarez.

"We need the know-how": The Cabazon letters to Tim LaFrance were published by John Connoly, *Spy* magazine, April 1992, as was the quote from the Wackenhut employee. The Cabazon projects were reported by Jonathan Littman in a series in the *San Francisco Chronicle*, September 4, September 6, and September 13, 1991.

"spies, arms merchants and others": Casolaro's involvement with the Cabazon investigation is detailed in Michael Taylor and Jonathan Littman, "Death of Conspiracy Investigator Probed," *San Francisco Chronicle*, February 11, 1994.

his memoirs, *Compromised:* Terry Reed and John Cummings, *Compromised* (Kew Gardens, N.Y.: Clandestine Publishing, 1995).

attempt to portray Reed as a crackpot conspiracy theorist: Howard Schneider, "Clandestination Arkansas," *Washington Post*, July 21, 1994. For a considerably more intelligent look at the goings-on at Mena, see Alexander Cockburn's columns from the *Nation*, March 12, 1992, and March 28, 1992, reprinted in Cockburn, *The Golden Age Is in Us* (New York: Verso, 1995), 264–68.

Reed's book contains transcripts of interviews *Time* magazine reporter Richard Behar did while putting together his appalling hatchet job on Reed. The story, which appeared in *Time*, April 20, 1992, resulted in a libel suit against Behar, during which his interview tapes were produced. To get a flavor of how diligently and open-mindedly the national news media has checked out allegations of government complicity in narcotics trafficking, Behar's obsequious interview with Oliver North (642–44), a pardoned criminal, is illuminating.

The only national media outlets to take Mena seriously have been *Penthouse* and the *Wall Street Journal*. *Penthouse,* in July 1995, published Sally Denton and Roger Morris's heavily documented story, "The Crimes of Mena," after the *Washington Post* once again lost its nerve and sat on it. (For a mealy-mouthed and self-serving explanation of that act of courage, see "Put on Hold," *Washington Post*, February 12, 1995.) The *WSJ* has printed Micah Morrison's reporting on its much-maligned editorial page. See, for example, "Mysterious Mena: CIA Discloses, Leach Disposes," January 29, 1997.

"Seal detailed his cocaine-smuggling activities": "IRS Says Smuggler Owes $29 Million, Seizes His Property," *Baton Rouge State Times*, February 5, 1986. The letter to Meese was reported by Denton and Morris, "Crimes of Mena," 60.

Hondu Carib Cargo Inc.: Details of Hondu Carib's involvement with Barry Seal and the Contras were in the Kerry Report, 44–45 and 278–97.

One DC-4 Moss used: The April 28, 1987 cable reporting discovery of CIA phone numbers in a suspected drug plane is summarized in CIA-IG2, 283. North's notebook entry for August 9, 1985, shows Owen's warning about the New Orleans–based DC-6.

North was being regularly briefed: North's notebooks, entries for June and July 1984. Copies are on file at the National Security Archive at George Washington University, Washington. North was briefed by CIA official Duane "Dewey" Clarridge, another Iran-Contra indictee, who was then in charge of the Contra project.

Much of the information about North's involvement with the Seal DEA/CIA sting can be found in *Enforcement of Narcotics, Firearms and Money Laundering Laws,* a record of the oversight hearings of the Subcommittee on Crime of the House Judiciary Committee, July 28, September 23, 29 and October 5, 1988 (Washington, D.C.: Government Printing Office, 1989).

"the murder. . .of a DEA agent": FBI report from the special agent in charge of the Washington FBI field office to the director of the FBI, *Nicaraguan Active Measures Program Directed against Lt. Col. Oliver North*, June 11, 1986. The report was found in the microfiche of the National Security Archive's Iran-Contra compendium, *Making of a Scandal*.

"a contract CIA operative": Roger Morris, *Partners in Power* (New York: Henry Holt, 1996), 389–427.

"associates of Seal": Kerry Report, 121.

"it was a CIA operation": Larry Patterson, cited in Morris, *Partners in Power*, 426.

John Bender. . .swore in a deposition: R. Emmett Tyrell Jr., "The Arkansas Drug Shuttle," *American Spectator*, August 1995; this article also contains Brown's statements about Clinton's knowledge.

FBI's description of its investigation: FBI, *National Narcotics Report for 1988*, 254. It is an exhibit to the official report of the June 6 and August 8, 1988, hearings of the Subcommittee on Criminal Justice of the House Committee on the Judiciary.

"Whatever the limits": Morris, *Partners in Power*, 425.

"darkest backwater": Susan Schmidt, "CIA Probed in Alleged Arms Shipments," *Washington Post*, August 7, 1996.

"joint training operation": Kathy Kiely, "CIA Admits 2-Week Training 'Exercise' at Mena," *Arkansas Democrat Gazette*, August 9, 1996.

"coded records": Morris, *Partners in Power*, 392.

"DIA wanted them to happen": Tim LaFrance, interview by L.A. journalist Nick Schou.

"It was kind of touchy": John Vandewerker, interview by Nick Schou.

"FDN couldn't collect sufficient funds": Norwin Meneses, interview by Georg Hodel and the author.

"contacts with the Contras": Tim Golden, "Pivotal Figures of Newspaper Series May Be Only Bit Players," *New York Times*, October 20, 1996.

"led a sales team": Victor Merina and William Rempel, "Ex-Associates Doubt Onetime Drug Trafficker's Claim of CIA Ties," *Los Angeles Times*, October 21, 1996. (In 1990 Merina was given a copy of some of the evidence seized from Lister's house during a 1986 drug raid and either threw it away, lost it, or gave it to another reporter who lost it. Reporter Jim Newton told the LA County Sheriff's Office in 1996 that the *Times* was "administratively embarassed" that the documents given to Merina for safekeeping could no longer be found.)

a federal prosecutor immediately objected: This was Asst. U.S. Attorney L. J. O'Neale, during *U.S. v. James*.

7. "Something happened to Ivan"

Many of the quotes from Ross in this chapter come from his sworn testimony in *U.S. v. James*. The author also interviewed Ross extensively, but whenever possible his court testimony was used in the text. Information from the interviews was used if his testimony did not address a particular issue, if it expanded upon a point made during the testimony, or was more understandable.

'onto something new': Jesse Katz, "Deposed King of Crack," *L.A. Times*, December 20, 1994, A20.

"his polyester shirt had melted": *Time*, June 23, 1980, 10. Pryor's explanations for the accident were made to *People Weekly*, June 29, 1981, 74–78; and *Ebony*, October 1980, 42.

"When Cocaine Can Kill," *Newsweek*, June 23, 1980, 30.

NBA freebase use: "NBA and Cocaine: Nothing to Snort At," *L.A. Times*, August 19, 1980.

"pre–Harrison Act yellow journalism": Ronald Siegel, "Cocaine Smoking," *Journal of Psychoactive Drugs*, October–December 1982, 296.

"relatively high cost and difficulty": Steven R. Belenko, *Crack and Evolution of Anti-Drug Policy* (Westport, Conn.: Greenwood Press, 1993), 4.

Rand Institute study: Jonathan P. Caulkins, *Developing Price Series for Cocaine*, Drug Policy Research Series (Santa Monica, Calif.: Rand Institute, 1994).

"You heard Tootie's name": Steven Polak, interview by author.

"ain't never been big": Ronald L. Soble, "Drug Dealer Admits: 'I Sold Them,'" *L.A. Times*, June 11, 1984.

"amounts of cocaine he allegedly dealt": William Overend, "Adventures in the Drug Trade," *L.A. Times Magazine*, May 7, 1989.

sometime thief, sometime student: Details of Ross's background and childhood came from interviews with Ross, his mother, Annie Ross, and his brother, David Ross, which were conducted by the author.

"There exists no information to substantiate your membership": Ross's lack of gang affiliation was reported in a memo from B. Davis, Pima Unit Manager, FCI, Phoenix to Ricky Ross, May 24, 1993,

Subject: Inmate request of staff member.
"culture of a gang member": Jesse Katz, interview by author.
"He was a very good player": Pete Brown, interview by author.
"There was no evidence": Alan Fenster, interview by author.

8. "A million hits is not enough"

"one or two keys": All quotes from Blandón in this chapter are taken from his testimony in *U.S. v. James* or Blandón GJ.
"Henry was kind of a knucklehead": Ross's quotes in this chapter come either from his interviews with the author, his testimony in *U.S. v. James*, or his 1996 LACSO interview.
"a saucer, a glass, a paper towel": Dr. Franklin Sher, testimony from House Select Committee on Narcotics Abuse and Control, *Cocaine, a Major Drug Issue of the Seventies: Hearings before the House of Representatives*, 96th Cong., 1st sess.
The Natural Process: The information about the 1981 crack pamphlet was contained in Ronald Siegel, "Cocaine Smoking," *Journal of Psychoactive Drugs*, October–December 1982, 309.
"what made us start smoking": The interview with Big Shiphead was contained in Yusuf Jah and Sister Shah'Keyah, *Uprising* (New York: Scribner, 1995), 241.
1985 study: Malcolm Klein and Cheryl Maxson, "Rock Sales in South Los Angeles," *Sociology and Social Research* 69, no. 4 (July 1985): 561. Their final report was published as National Institute of Justice, *Gang Involvement in Cocaine "Rock" Trafficking*, NIJ #85-IJ-LX-0057, April 1988.
"We didn't know what it was": Steve Polak, interview by author.
"limited to the Carribean and Haitian communities": James Inciardi, "Beyond Cocaine: Basuco, Crack and Other Coca Products," *Contemporary Drug Problems*, fall 1987, 475–77.
"most effective trafficking groups": The information regarding the political roots of the Jamaican crack gangs appeared as U.S. Department of Justice, Drug Enforcement Administration, Intelligence Division, *Crack Cocaine, Drug Intelligence Report*, DEA-94016, 1994, 8.
The Jamaican CIA destabilization program was exposed by Ernest Volkman and John Cummings in "Murder As Usual," *Penthouse*, December 1977. This program was summarized in William Blum, *Killing Hope* (Monroe, Maine: Common Courage Press, 1995), 263–67.
"more-or-less standard sizes": David Allen and James Jekel, *Crack: The Broken Promise* (London: MacMillan Press, 1991), 17.
"not just a matter of smoking freebase": Byck, interview by author.
"first crack millionaire": Jesse Katz, interview; Katz, "Deposed King of Crack," *L.A. Times*, December 20, 1994.
"The thing about Rick": James Galipeau, interview by author.
visiting one of Ross's "cookhouses": Chico Brown, interview by author.
"Wal-Mart of cocaine": *L.A. Times*, December 20, 1994.
"rocks hit the streets hard": Leibo, quoted in Jah and Shah'Keyah, *Uprising*, 183.

9. "He would have had me by the tail"

none other than CIA director William Casey: Casey's leaks to *Newsweek* were reported by Roy Gutman, *Banana Diplomacy* (New York: Touchstone, 1988), 116.
"perhaps the most hated group of Nicaraguans": Tom Harkin, cited in Robert Kagan, *A Twilight*

Struggle (New York: Free Press, 1996), 242.

"hit the roof": Oliver L. North, *Under Fire* (New York: HarperCollins,1991), 237.

"to keep the nation's secrets": Edward P. Boland, cited in Kagan, *Twilight Struggle*, 243.

"an elegant two-story place": Sam Dillon, *Comandos* (New York: Henry Holt, 1991), 127.

"The FDN needed people": Blandón, cited in CIA-IG, 72.

"principal group is controlled by Blandón": DEA report, *Debriefing of SRP-86-0018, August 25–27, 1986*, by agent Thomas A. Schrettner of the Riverside, Calif., office. The report is from DEA file #GFRP-86–4020, titled, *Blandón, Danilo*. The file has never been released to the public. The single report was released as an exhibit to the LACSO report.

"As of approximately 1984": The Torres brothers' statements about Blandón and Meneses are contained in an FBI-302 report by Agents Bruce A. Burroughs and Don A. Allen, May 5, 1992, file 245B-SF-96287. 1990 DEA report cited in DOJ-IG, ch.2, pt.6 Kl.

"It was going to be a big party": "Examining Charges of CIA Role in Crack Sales," *L.A. Times*, October 21, 1996.

"he was with Norwin in '84": Rafael Cornejo, interview by author.

"arresting officers also found a small vial": Andy Furillo, *L.A. Herald-Examiner*, "Maury Wills Caught Driving Stolen Car," December 27, 1983.

"Norwin was a target": Jerry Smith, interview by author.

"the target of unsuccessful investigative attempts": The federal prosecutor was Asst. U.S. Attorney L. J. O'Neale, of San Diego, in a motion for downward reduction of Blandón's sentence, 1993.

"totally protected by the U.S. government": Dennis Ainsworth, interview by author.

"I got a reputation": Don Sinicco, who died in 1996, was interviewed by the author at his home in Fairfield, Calif., in November 1995. He provided author with numerous documents and photographs.

Calero "had been working for the CIA in Nicaragua": Edgar Chamorro, *Packaging the Contras* (New York: Institute for Media Analysis, 1987).

"The cocktail party went very smoothly": FBI 302, *Record of Interview with Dennis Ainsworth*, San Francisco, January 22, 1987, file IC 600–1, sub. F-9, released by the National Archives under the Freedom of Information Act.

"He assisted the Cuban Legion": Jack Terrell, interview by author.

showed the author attendance records: Among other attendees at USACA meetings was Sacramento TV news anchorman Stan Atkinson. Sinicco said Atkinson attended not as a journalist but as a Contra supporter, "but you couldn't tell he was for the Contras from his news reports."

"run through an obscure bureau in the Department of State": The House staff report, which is chilling reading, is entitled *State Department and Intelligence Community Involvement in Domestic Activities Related to the Iran-Contra Affair*. It was written by Spencer Oliver, Bert Hammond, and Vic Zangla of the Committee of Foreign Affairs staff in October 20, 1992. It documents how the CIA and Oliver North ran "highly questionable, improper and illegal" covert propaganda operations against the American public. Naturally, it was ignored by the national media, who were the dupes of this operation.

"to affect public opinion favorably": Thomas Dowling's statements were made during the congressional Iran-Contra committees in the once top-secret *Deposition of Father Thomas Dowling*, August 4, 1987. Though ostensibly declassified, huge chunks of Dowling's deposition are still secret. For an excellent article on the bizarre Father Dowling, see Dan Noyes and Ellen Morris, "The Trouble with Father Tom: The Strange Tale of San Francisco's Contra Priest," *San Francisco Examiner "Image" Magazine*, November 8, 1987.

"I really did retire": G. James Quesada, interview by author.

"there are indications of links": The cables can be found in CIA-IG, 79.

Pena was dating Blandón's sister, Leysla: Leysla Balladares, interview by author.

"made from six to eight trips": CIA-IG, 78.

Pena was extensively debriefed: Summaries of his debriefings and interviews are contained in DOJ-IG, Ch. 4, pt.2, 5b. Jairo Meneses' debriefings are in DOJ-IG, Ch.4, pt.2, 5c.

"I don't know anything": Calero cited in Guillermo Fernandez, "Nica Resident Here Is Supposed Head of Ring," *La Nacion*, December 1, 1986.

"If Jairo supposedly was my accountant": *La Nacion*, December 1, 1986.

10. "Teach a man a craft and he's liable to practice it"

Contra forces were at their lowest ebb: Robert Kagan, *A Twilight Struggle* (New York: Free Press, 1996), 356–57; Glenn Garvin, *Everybody Had His Own Gringo* (McLean, Va.: Brassey's, 1992), 163; Sam Dillon, *Comandos* (New York: Henry Holt, 1991), 140–45; Oliver L. North, *Under Fire* (New York: HarperCollins, 1991), 249–50.

"cutting both our losses and theirs": Robert McFarlane, cited in Kagan, *Twilight Struggle*, 347.

"The CIA knows about this guy": Eric Swenson, interview by author.

the agency had information tying Meneses: 1984 CIA cable, CIA-IG, 48.

1984 had been a terrific year: In *U.S. v. James*, Blandón testified that 1984–85 was when his dealings with Ricky Ross were at their height, a time frame Ross also confirmed.

decided to approve his application for political asylum: Blandón testified to his immigration status in *U.S. v. James*, and it was confirmed by author's interview with Jose Macario Estrada, who represented Blandón before the INS in Miami.

opened a NADDIS file on Blandón: Danilo's and Chepita's NADDIS reports circa August 1986 were released as exhibits to the LACSO report.

"I have some 300 DEA-6 reports": Brunon's comments came during Blandón's detention hearing in *U.S. v. Blandón*, May 30, 1992.

"I've had clients deported": The immigration lawyer requested his name not be used because he was revealing information gained as a result of an attorney-client relationship.

blanket zero-tolerance policy: The State Department official, Tom Casey, was interviewed by the author.

Condition of Blandón's immigration files cited in DOJ-IG, Ch.2, pt.7, L2. DEA's failure to investigate Blandón cited in DOJ-IG, Ch. 2, pt.1B.

bought the house under his name: Blandón described the purchase of the home during his testimony in *U.S. v. James*, and it was confirmed by Orlando Murillo during an interview with the author.

valued its worth at around $29 million: The DEA had an appraisal done on Guerra's parking lot in 1992—presumably for forfeiture purposes—while he was under investigation for money laundering.

$2,000 in drug profits had a legitimate pedigree: The example of money laundering through used car lots was taken from the notes of LACSO Sgt. Ed Huffman, made during a January 1987 meeting with the FBI and DEA regarding Blandón's drug ring. The notes were released as exhibits to the LACSO report.

"Blandón became very close to Ricky Ross": The Torres brothers' police interview was conducted by LACSO Sgts. Daniel Cruz and Joseph Hartshorne, November 14, 1996.

"the black people": A conversation secretly taped by DEA informant John P. Arman on July 21, 1990. The tapes were released during discovery in *U.S. v. Blandón*.

Jacinto Torres quickly got into trouble: Details of Jacinto Torres's arrest are contained in *People v. Robert Joseph Andreas and Jacinto Jose Torres*, case A590516, Municipal Court of Burbank.

"You know your client's guilty": The probation officer's complaints were contained in *Declaration of Alan R. Freedman*, August 6, 1986, part of the case file in *People v. Andreas*.

"Police say hundreds": Andy Furillo, "South Central Cocaine Sales Explode into $25 Rocks," *L.A. Times*, November 25, 1984. Furillo was interviewed by the author.

"marketing breakthrough": Jay Matthews, "Drug Abuse Takes New Form; Rock Cocaine is Peddled to Poor in Los Angeles," *Washington Post*, December 23, 1984, A15.

"Crack first came to the attention": Statement of Robert M. Stutman before the Select Committee on Narcotics Abuse and Control, U.S. House of Representatives, *Crack Situation in New York City*, July 18, 1986.

"fewer than fifteen arrests for crack": Ward, testimony before the House Select Committee on Narcotics Abuse and Control.

"throughout the Black residential areas": Malcolm Klein and Cheryl Maxson, "Rock Sales in South Los Angeles," *Sociology and Social Research* 69, no. 4 (July 1985): 561.

That South Central L.A. was the nation's first major crack market is fairly well established. Only after I reported in 1996 that much of the cocaine fueling the crack market there came by way of the Contras did the historical record, which had gone unchallenged for years, suddenly become suspect. For the edification of the reader, I am including here some of the many historical references to crack's L.A. roots:

"Sometime during the 1980s rock cocaine was formulated for the first time in South Central Los Angeles. Two or three years passed before it appeared under a different name, crack, on the East Coast" (Robert Conot, "L.A. Gangs: Between a Rock and a Hard Place," *Los Angeles Times*, April 12, 1987).

"L.A. may be the model for other cities around the country: rock cocaine first appeared there nearly three years ago. Houston has been flooded with it for the past two years; Detroit about 18 months; New York police have discovered the crack crisis within the past six months" (*Newsweek*, June 16, 1986).

"In Los Angeles, where the drug was introduced around 1981, more than two-thirds of the 2,500 coke arrests made this year have involved crack" (*Time*, June 2, 1986).

"Rock made its L.A. debut around 1980. . .. By 1982, Los Angeles hospital emergency rooms reported the nation's greatest increases in cocaine overdoses, a 90 percent rise over the previous year" (*U.S. News and World Report*, August 19, 1991).

"We find that crack came to New York City from Los Angeles, where it made its first appearance in 1981" (Wilhemina E. Holliday, deputy commissioner, New York Police Department, testimony before House Select Committee on Narcotics Abuse and Control, July 15, 1986).

"Rock cocaine, or crack as it is termed on the east coast, was first encountered in the Los Angeles area in 1981" (Ted Hunter, special agent in charge of the Los Angeles DEA office, testimony before House Select Committee on Narcotics Abuse and Control, October 31, 1986).

"It perhaps started here" (L.A. County sheriff Sherman Block, testimony before House Select Committee on Narcotics Abuse, October 31, 1986).

"Crack is thought to have first appeared in the early 1980s on the West Coast" (Rick Hampton, "Crack: Spreading across America," AP, May 25, 1986).

"Crack has been available in southern California now for about five years" (Rep. Mel Levine, California, July 15, 1986, House Select Committee on Narcotics Abuse and Control).

"After crack first became available in Los Angeles in 1981, the lure of huge profits from crack sales attracted local African-American street gangs into the crack trade" (DEA, *Crack Cocaine Drug Intelligence Report*, April 1994).

A handful of researchers, James Inciardi for example, maintain that the crack market in Miami developed simultaneously with that in L.A., but the historical record to support this is much thinner. One of the journalistic advocates of this scenario is Jeff Leen, a self-styled cocaine expert formerly with the *Miami Herald*. If Leen is correct, however, it means he missed the story by about four years. His first article on crack (which he erroneously referred to as "free-base" throughout) didn't appear until December 30, 1985, a month after the *New York Times* announced its presence on the Eastern seaboard. See Jeff Leen, "Freebase Coke Use Sweeping South Florida," *Miami Herald*, December 30, 1985; and "A New Purified Form of Cocaine Causes Alarm as Abuse Increases," *New York Times*, November 29, 1985.

"law enforcement perceptions of gang involvement": Jerome H. Skolnick, *The Social Structure of Street Drug Dealing* (State of California, Office of the Attorney General, 1988); and Skolnick, *Gang Organization and Migration* (State of California, Office of the Attorney General, 1989).

"In the early 1980s the gangs began selling crack cocaine": *Nontraditional Organized Crime*, GAO Report #OSI-89–19, 47–49.

"came up empty-handed": Nick Kozel's futile crack hunt in Miami was recounted in Dan Baum's excellent book on the drug war, *Smoke and Mirrors* (Boston: Little, Brown, 1996), 213.

"By the time the market exploded in 1984": Jesse Katz, "Deposed King of Crack," *L.A. Times*, December 20, 1994.

"a cartel": The L.A. detective was Robert Sobel, and the quote comes from his taped administrative interview with LACSO Internal Affairs, June 15, 1988. The transcript was filed as an exhibit to *U.S. v. Polak*, 94 CR 00283, Central District of California.

"You name it, you could get it": Leibo, cited in Yusuf Jah and Sister Shah'Keyah, *Uprising* (New York: Scribner, 1995), 183.

"'my friends down South'": Lister, in CIA-IG, 56–57.

"several top Contra leaders were also in attendance": Blandón, in CIA-IG, 72–73.

Montealgre, a CIA-trained Contra pilot: For Mariano Montealgre's background, see Martha Honey, *Hostile Acts* (Gainesville: University of Florida Press, 1994), 262, 355, 371–72.

"off the rack": Blandón's Q&A was with defense attorney Alan Fenster during *U.S. v. James*.

Mundy Security Group Inc.: Corporate records on file at California Secretary of State's Office, Sacramento.

business card found in a drug raid: Inventory of search warrant returns, LACSO, October 27, 1986.

"looking down the barrel of a gun": Chris Moore, interview by author.

"screaming and yelling": Gary Shapiro, interview by author.

Green was prosecuted and disbarred: "Attorney Quits State Bar," *Orange County Register*, March 17, 1987; and "Ex-attorney Given 2-year Sentence," *Orange County Register*, September 3, 1992.

"This firm received three DSP-73s": Memorandum from Customs Coordinator Office of Defense Trade Controls to Sgt. Robert Rifkin, Los Angeles County Sheriff's Office, *Subject: Analysis of Flow Chart*, December 2, 1996. The memo was released as an exhibit to the LACSO report.

"better equipment than we have": Sobel, cited in "L.A. Law: Gangs and Crack," *Newsweek*, April 27, 1987, 35.

Sobel's description of Ross raid from IA interview cited above.

"numerous 9-mm Uzies": Glenn Levant, quoted in LAPD intrade-partmental memo from Levant to Detective Steven Polak, *Commendation LASD/LAPD Rock Cocaine Supplier Task Force*, January 13, 1988. Filed as exhibit to *U.S. v. Polak*.

"hammered on who I might know": Lister's notes of the FBI encounter were seized during a drug raid on October 27, 1986, and released as exhibit to LACSO report.

"my relationship with Soviet agents": LACSO interview with Lister, November 23, 1996.

"Lister was attempting to sell classified electronic equipment": Richard Smith, interview by Sgt.

Axel Anderson, LACSO, November 13, 1996.

"They came down to see me": Neil Purcell, interview by author.

"personnel jacket for Ronald J. Lister": Memo from Cruz and Hartshorne, LACSO, to Neal B. Tyler, *Contact with Maywood Police Department Personnel Department*, November 13, 1996.

"actual personnel files related to Ronald Lister": Memo from Cruz and Hartshorne, LACSO, to Tyler, *Contact with Laguna Beach P.D. Personnel Department Director*, November 12, 1996.

Fluor spokeswoman initially denied: Nick Schou, "Tracks in the Snow," *L.A. Weekly*, May 23–29, 1997.

a CIA officer since 1948: Bill Nelson's background came from the Department of State's Biographical Register, 1973, and from CIA-BASE, a computer database operated by former CIA officer Ralph McGehee.

'Operation Feature': Nelson's role in Angola was reported by John Prados, *Presidents' Secret Wars* (New York: Morrow and Co., 1986), 338–47.

civil suit filed by the widow: The lawsuit against Nelson was reported by Jay Perkins of the Associated Press, June 28, 1978.

North. . .frequently used phony EUCs: "U.S. Government Stipulation on Quid Pro Quos with Other Governments as Part of Contra Operations," filed April 6, 1989, in *U.S. v. North*. Reprinted in Peter Kornbluh and Malcolm Byrne, *The Iran-Contra Scandal: The Declassified History* (Washington, D.C.: National Security Archives, 1993), 85–97.

"Contras can't buy weapons": Alan Fiers, testimony in *U.S. vs. Clair George*, CR91-521, U.S. District Court of the District of Colombia, July 28, 1992, 1120–21.

spymaster died of respiratory failure: Details of Nelson's death came from his Certificate of Death, dated April 3, 1995, Orange County, Calif., by coroner James Huang, M.D.

11. "They were looking in the other direction"

parried with two journalists: Meneses, interview by author and Georg Hodel.

"I'll be right up front": James McGivney, interview by author, December 12, 1995.

"Mr. Blandón was considered": Charles Jones's grand jury testimony obtained from "Transcript of Proceedings, San Diego, California, March 15, 1995." Jones appeared before Grand Jury No. 94–4, Southern District of California.

"I went to Costa Rica": John Lacome, interview by author.

"Norwin receives political protection": Agent Sandalio Gonzalez, DEA-6, *File Opening Report—Debriefing of STF-78–0006 (CI)*, February 13, 1984, file GFTF-84–4004.

Jose Marti Figueres: Charles Walston, Nancy Nusser, "$6 million lottery ticket scam alleged in Costa Rica," *Orange County Register*, May 11, 1991, A18; "Fraud Charge," *Latin American Weekly Report*, March 16, 1995, 120; "Vesco Political Financing Scandal," *Facts on File*, July 2, 1977, 506.

"one of the most important traffickers": The OIJ description of Meneses was contained in a summary of wiretaps compiled during the OIJ's 1985–86 investigation of Horacio Pereira. Provided to author by investigative journalist Douglas Vaughan.

Gonzalez's report on Meneses' recruitment and Meneses' activities as a DEA informant are detailed in DOJ-IG, Ch.2, pt.4, sec. 1b (1–5) and Ch.3, pt.3, sec. G-I.

Victor Harrison and Hector Berrellez were interviewed by the author.

Relations between the CIA and DEA offices in Costa Rica explained in DOJ-IG, Ch.11, pt.1.

The CIA's official lack of interest in investigating drug trafficking detailed in CIA-IG2, 45–48 and

333–340.

The former Central American station chief is quoted in CIA-IG2, 54.

FBI agent Donald Hale's cable about Meneses and the CIA is cited at DOJ-IG, Ch.3, pt.3, sec. H.

Meneses' partnership with a CIA operative is detailed in DOJ-IG, Ch.2, pt.4, sec. G b(1).

"dedicated themselves to international cocaine trafficking": Costa Rican Legislative Assembly, *Special Commission Appointed to Investigate the Acts Reported on Drug Trafficking*, July 10, 1989. English translation by Library of Congress.

DEA investigation of Manuel Noriega: Steve Albert, *The Case against the General* (New York: Scribner's, 1993), 5–13.

"The people who were flying in the weapons": Lotz's questioning by Jack Blum is attached as an exhibit to the Kerry Committee hearings, on CIS microfiche.

told a friend that he was doing it for the CIA: Manfred T. DeRewal, letter to the author, October 29, 1996.

"Despite obvious and widespread trafficking": Kerry Report, 122.

"looking in the other direction": Chavarria, interview by author and Georg Hodel.

"no credible evidence": Jack Lawn, testimony in Kerry Report, 144. Jack Blum confirmed to the author that the DEA officer interviewed by him in Costa Rica was Nieves.

OIJ raided the San Jose home of. . .Troilo and Isanaqui Sanchez: Guillermo Fernandez, "Trafficker Condemned to 12 Years Paid Bail and Escaped," *La Nacion*, November 26, 1986.

"pillows full of cocaine": Leonardo Zeledon Rodriguez, cited in "Contra Accuses other Rebels of Corruption and Drug Trafficking," UPI, April 26, 1986. He was interviewed in Tegucigalpa, Honduras, from his bed at the Military Hospital School, where he wound up after being savagely beaten and paralyzed.

"help move drugs to the U.S.": Meneses and Chamorro, CIA-IG, 49.

Among those captured on the wiretaps: The list of men captured on the Pereira tapes is from the OIJ summary of wiretapped conversations, which contains a description of each caller.

"a personal friend of Manuel Noriega": Pastora's description of Gonzalez was contained in CR Pros.

"drug trafficking activities of Sebastian Gonzalez": CIA cable summarized at 48, CIA-IG.

CBS Evening News: The transcript of the CBS broadcast was an exhibit to the Kerry Report, 410.

"precisely in that period": CR Assy 2, 70.

"there were certainly substantiated cases": Joseph Fernandez, testimony to the House Select Committee to Investigate Covert Arms Transactions with Iran and U.S. Senate Select Committee on Secret Military Assistance to Iran and the Nicaraguan Opposition, May 29, 1987, in executive session as declassified, 84.

Pastora admits all that: Eden Pastora, interview by Georg Hodel.

Pastora's relationship with the CIA, CIA-IG2, 74–5.

"We attempted to diminish his influence": Fernandez joint testimony, 84.

Octaviano Cesar's relationship with the CIA, CIA-IG2, 105.

"they told me they were CIA agents": Morales testified before the Kerry Committee, April 7, 1986, and March 27, 1987.

close associate of. . .John Hull: Marcos Aguado's relationship with John Hull is discussed in a January 12, 1989, report from Jorge Calderon Gómez, Chief of Various Crimes Section; Alfredo Chacon, Judge of Crimes of Transit, and Norman Moya Orrieta, Chief, Department of Criminal Investigation, OIJ, to Jorge Chavarria, No. Info. 052DV-8.

Morales later passed a DEA-administered lie detector test: Letter from DEA regarding results of test reprinted in Kerry Report, 382.

planeloads of weapons were flown: Fabio Ernesto Carrasco and Gary Wayne Betzner testified as government witnesses in *U.S. v. Jose Rafael Abello Silva*, 87 CR 140B, Northern District of Oklahoma, 1990. All quotes from Carrasco and Betzner in the text are from a transcript of their sworn testimony.

"There is no doubt in Fiers's mind": FBI Special Agent Michael S. Foster, *Record of Interview of Alan D. Fiers*, July 27, 1991, file IC 600–1, 10. Partly declassified and released to author by the National Archives.

"it's my own government": Hull, interview by author.

"I called our contact at the CIA": Douglas Farah and Walter Pincus, "CIA, Contras and Drugs: Questions in Links Linger," *Washington Post*, October 21, 1996. This story, done in response to my series, reported something that the *Post* had known for a decade.

Chamorro identified him in an interview: Chamorro, interview by Georg Hodel.

"two individuals who were associated with Pastora": Fernandez joint hearing testimony, 84–85.

an aged C-47 cargo plane: The C-47 is discussed in the Kerry Report, 51.

"repeatedly piloted": Jonathan Kwitny, "Money, Drugs and the Contras," *Nation*, August 29, 1987.

when he quit the war: Marcos Aguado, interview by Georg Hodel.

"a man who always had money": Pastora testified about Blandón's background to the Senate Intelligence Committee, November 1996.

"We reported it": Fiers' testimony was to the Iran-Contra Committees.

Saborio was frequently quoted: "Commander Zero Wages Battle for Cash on the Air," *Miami Herald*, February 20, 1985; "Zero Pleads for Army Funds," *Miami Herald*, February 16, 1985; "Sandinista Foes Tentatively Agree on Unity, Rebel Says," *Miami Herald*, February 6, 1985; and "Pastora Secretly Visits Miami, Washington Seeking Aid from US," *Miami Herald*, February 21, 1984.

"Saborio was a close friend of Blandón": Carol Prado, interview by author and Georg Hodel.

"a Contra member named 'Dr. Sabario'": Ronald Lister's contact with Saborio reported in CIA-IG, 57.

posted part of Chepita Blandón's bond: *U.S. v. Chepita Blandón et al.*, "Short Form Deed of Trust and Assignment of Rents Securing a Personal Surety Bond to the United States of America," Trustor, Felix Saborio, July 29, 1992.

two Associated Press reporters: The AP story was written by Robert Parry and Brian Barger and moved in the U.S. on December 20, 1985, appearing in several American newspapers in truncated form. It was the first report by an American journalist of Contra involvement in drug trafficking. Interestingly, the AP thought it necessary to add Parry's and Barger's journalism awards and experience to the end of the story, apparently to persuade newspaper editors that the report should be taken seriously.

editors sat on the piece for weeks: Robert Parry, interview by author.

"diminish Pastora's influence": Fernandez testimony to the Senate Select Committee on Secret Military Assistance to Iran and the Nicaraguan Opposition, April 20, 1987, 269.

"responsive to the CIA": Lawrence Walsh, *Firewall* (New York: Norton, 1997), 278.

"The concern about Chamorro": Owen memo to North, *Subject: Southern Front*, April 1, 1985. Released as an exhibit, RWO7, to Owen's testimony before the Iran-Contra Committees.

"most of them were true": Secord's comments to Leslie Cockburn were reported in the U.S. District Court opinion in *Secord v. Cockburn*, Civil Action 88–0727, District of Colombia Federal Court, dismissing Secord's libel suit against Cockburn for suggesting he knew of Contra drug trafficking in her book *Out of Control* (New York: Atlantic Monthly Press, 1989).

"They certainly had to get their act together": Fernandez Senate testimony, 306.

"they wanted them moved out": Owen's testimony regarding UDN-FARN comes from his deposition

in *Avirgan v. Hull*, Civil Action 86–1146 and 87–1545, U.S. District Court, Southern District of Florida, February 9, 1988, 607–8.
"the last time I remember Negro Chamorro": Fernandez Senate tesimony, 307.

12. *"This guy talks to God"*

The description of Spadafora's wounds comes from R. M. Koster and Guillermo Sanchez, *In the Time of the Tyrants* (New York: Norton, 1990), 19–31.
"reportedly the best known guerrilla fighter": DEA description of Spadafora was contained in a heavily censored DEA-6, file G3-85–0094, September 12, 1986, released to author under FOIA.
A particularly thought-provoking piece on Noriega's alleged involvement with the Spadafora murder and drug trafficking in general is "Uncertain Justice," by Peter Eisner, Miami New Times, Mar. 26, 1998. The verdict of Noriega's 1993 trial in Panama was contained in this story.
story that first exposed Noriega: Seymour Hersh, "Panama Strongman Said to Trade in Drugs, Arms and Illicit Money," *New York Times*, June 12, 1986.
"Dr. Spadafora was a very honest man": Floyd Carlton testified before the Kerry Committee on February 10, 1988. His quotes are taken from a transcript of that testimony.
had lost $1.8 million in cash: Some of the details of Carlton's operations in Costa Rica were reported by Martha Honey, *Hostile Acts* (Gainesville: University of Florida Press, 1994), 358–63.
CIA cable reporting on Spadafora's meetings with Nieves contained in CIA-IG2, 116. CIA cable regarding Gonzalez and Winston Spadafora contained in CIA-IG2, 117.
ordered Gonzalez arrested: Details of Gonzalez's alleged involvement in Spadafora's death, his arrest and denials, were contained in interviews conducted with Gonzalez by investigative reporter Douglas Vaughan during Gonzalez's imprisonment in Panama in March 1990.
North and Noriega struck a very important bargain: North's involvement with Noriega summarized in Kerry Report, 91–97. See also "U.S. Government Stipulation on Quid Pro Quos with Other Government as Part of Contra Operations," filed April 6, 1989, in *U.S. v. North*. Reprinted in Peter Kornbluh and Malcolm Byrne, *The Iran-Contra Scandal: The Declassified History* (Washington, D.C.: National Security Archives, 1993), 85–97.
"I took the initiative myself": Norman Bailey testified before the House Select Committee on Narcotics Abuse and Control, March 29, 1988.
"he was the top gun": Alan Fiers, testimony at *U.S. v. Clair Elroy George*, 91 CR 521, 92 CR 215, U.S. District Court for the District of Columbia trial, July 28, 1992.
"The CIA's strategy determined what North would do": Lawrence Walsh, *Firewall* (New York: Norton, 1997), 275. Walsh was not the only one who believed this. In *Eclipse: The Last Days of the CIA* (New York: William Morrow, 1992), Mark Perry wrote, "While many CIA officers who became entangled in the Iran-contra scandal disagree about many of its details, they are convinced that Casey used Oliver North in order to circumvent the agency's unwillingness to participate in high-risk activities. North became Caseys' unofficial director for operations and the acknowledged inheritor of his activist dream" (48).
"turned out to be absolute truth": Fiers, testimony at *U.S. v. George*, July 31, 1992.
During one late-night conversation: Ibid., July 28, 1992.
"to a GS-15, this guy talks to God": Fernandez, testimony to Senate, 505.
"Air resupply of the Contras was the key": Fiers, testimony at *U.S. v. George*, October 28, 1992.
North simply "hijacked" it: North's plans for controlling NHAO were spelled out in a secret July 29, 1985, memo entitled "Concept for Providing Humanitarian Aid to the Nicaraguan Resistance," on

file at National Security Archives.

Robert W. Owen: Owen's background came from his immunized testimony to the Iran-Contra committees.

"That man has all of the attributes": Fernandez on Owen, joint Committee testimony, 62.

"I might have gone with the CIA": Owen's plans regarding the CIA were contained in his testimony in *U.S. v. North*, 88 CR 80, U.S. District Court for the District of Columbia, February 24, 1989.

"I did ask him to find out about things": Fernandez, Senate testimony, 319.

"I certainly didn't see the necessity": Deposition of Robert W. Duemling before the Senate Select Committee on Secret Military Assistance to Iran and the Nicaraguan Opposition, August 30, 1987, 68.

"what, in fact, Rob Owen could do": Deposition of Chris Arcos, Senate Iran-Contra Committee, 41.

"Owen will be expendable": "Highlights of RIG meeting of October 17, 1985," memo by Duemling, reprinted in Kornbluh and Byrne, *Iran-Contra Scandal*, 144–45.

"He probably had the most extensive network": Fernandez on Owen's contacts, Senate testimony, 447.

Frigorificos de Puntarenas: Kerry Report, 43.

congressional testimony of former Medellín cartel accountant: Ramon Milian Rodriguez testimony, February 11, 1988, Kerry Report, 260–61.

cartel *had* given the Contras $10 million: Carlos Lehder's testimony at Noriega's trial, in Albert, *Case against the General*, 332–34.

investigation of a 1983 bombing of a Miami bank: Reprinted in Kerry Report, 371–81.

Frigorificos was being used by the Contras: Fabio Ernesto Carrasco testimony from *U.S. v. Jose Rafael Abello Silva*, ease 87 CR 140B, Northern District of Oklahoma, 1990.

"helpful to the cause": Owen's testimony regarding Frigorificos contained in his deposition in *Avirgan v. Hull*, Civil Action 86–1146 and 87–1545, U.S. District Court, Southern District of Florida, February 8, 1988.

Aviles. . .notarized affidavits: The Aviles notarizations were reprinted in the Kerry Report, 411. Author found additional document in NHAO records on microfiche at National Security Archives.

never-explained transfers: The record of the Frigorificos bank account wire transfers was reprinted in the Kerry Report, 364.

The GAO findings regarding the laundered humanitarian aid money were revealed at a May 1, 1986, hearing of the Subcommittee on Western Hemisphere Affairs of the House Committee on Foreign Affairs. When the GAO attempted to find out where the broker accounts had sent the money, the State Department objected on grounds that the information was classified.

manager, Moises Nunez, was a CIA agent: Brian Barger, "CIA Officer Linked to Surveillance on Two Reporters," UPI, February 12, 1988.

"small, professionally managed rebel naval force": Vidal, *Projections for a Naval Force in the Atlantic Coast*, memo proposing a Contra maritime operation, February 10, 1986, on file at the National Security Archives.

Felipe Vidal's criminal history and association with the Contras, CIA-IG2, 160–165.

"person who might help with the boats": Owen, memo to North, *Overall Perspective*, March 17, 1986, reprinted in Kornbluh and Byrne, *The Iran-Contra Scandal*, 56. Owen updated North on the progress of the operation again on April 7, 1986, in a memo introduced as exhibit TC-15 to Fernandez's joint testimony.

Interrogation of Moises Nunez and the CIA's responses, CIA-IG2, 152–56.

"a shell entity": Fiers on NHAO, testimony at *U.S. v. George*, October 28, 1992.

DIACSA was run by a Cuban drug dealer: DEA records regarding DIACSA are reprinted in Kerry

Report, 342–61.

"deposits arranged by. . .Oliver North": Kerry Report, 47–48.

"Caballero was CIA and still is": Carol Prado, interview by author and Georg Hodel. 1985 CIA cable cited in CIA-IG2, 261.

Floyd Carlton testified: "Drug Smuggler Admits Flying Arms to Contras," *San Francisco Chronicle*, October 2, 1991.

"largest marijuana business cartel": Testimony regarding Palmer was delivered by U.S. Attorney Roy Hays at a hearing in Detroit on gangs, before a subcommittee of the House Judiciary Committee, August 1, 1988, 279.

"Palmer's people got caught": Fiers, FBI interview with Iran-Contra investigators, 10.

"Nice group the Boys chose": Owen, memo to North, February 10, 1986.

Foley was reportedly overseeing Palmer's operations: Pat Foley's alleged involvement with Palmer came from author's interview with Ronald Lippert, an ex-CIA pilot who flew briefly for Palmer.

"A stop at San Andres Island": Francis McNeil, testimony to Kerry Committee, April 4, 1988.

imprisonment. . .in 1963 for espionage: "Cuban Tribunal Gives Canadian Pilot 30 Years," *Houston Chronicle*, November 24, 1963; and David Weber, "JFK Death Spoils Propaganda Circus," *Dallas Morning News*, December 2, 1963.

arranged to buy Lippert's DC-4: Documents regarding the sale of the plane to Insua and Kelley were provided to the author by Lippert.

"powerful gang of drug-smugglers": *La Opinion*, January 25, 1987.

"Can't we close a bank": Barry Gladden, cited by David Satterfield, "Even Latest Fraud Probe has Contra Tie," *Miami Herald*, September 2, 1987.

later exposed as a drug trafficker: Jose Insua's criminal background was admitted by him during his cross-examination at *U.S. v. Alfredo Duran*, 89 CR 802, Southern District of Florida, Miami Division, April 13, 1990.

List of Vortex pilots alleged to be drug dealers in CIA-IG2, pp. 270–71. May 16, 1988 memo about CIA's knowledge of Vortex's drug dealing cited at CIA-IG2, pg. 280.

SETCO's ownership by Matta Ballesteros and the Contra's use of that company contained in CIA-IG2, pg. 258.

Fiers quoted'in CIA-IG2, pg. 253.

"One of the policy guidelines": Duemling deposition, 46.

"The transportation channel got established": Brunon, interview by author.

Meneses's drug-laden planes were flying out: Enrique Miranda, interview by author and Georg Hodel.

"practically unfettered": Walsh, *Final Report of the Independent Counsel for Iran/Contra Matters*, August 4, 1993, 1:157.

13. "The Wrong Kinds of Friends"

Much of the text concerning Celerino Castillo was compiled from three sources: Castillo's memoirs, *Powderburns*, written with Dave Harmon (Buffalo, N.Y.: Mosaic Press, 1994); author's interviews with Castillo; and Castillo's interviews with investigators from Iran-Contra Independent Counsel Lawrence Walsh, most of which were declassified by the National Archives in 1994.

agent-in-charge, Robert Stia, took him aside: Castillo, *Powderburns*, 112ndash;13.

Cuban named Socrates Sofi-Perez: Ibid., 126ndash;27.

bounced the Cuban's story off. . .Ramiro Guerra: Ibid., 127ndash;28. Guerra is identified in

Castillo's book by a pseudonym, Luis Aparicio.

"The woman selling tortillas": FBI agent Michael Foster's interview with assistant regional security officer, name deleted, December 24, 1991, declassified and released to author by National Archives.

"We had a capability": Alan Fiers, testimony at *U.S. v. George*, July 31, 1992.

"Felix Rodriguez was put into": Ibid., October 28, 1992.

"a client who could compromise": Felix Rodriguez and John Weisman, Shadow Warrior (New York: Simon and Schuster, 1989), 220ndash;21.

Milian tells a very different story: Milian Rodriguez, testimony before the Kerry Committee, February 11, 1988.

"I knew him by his real name: Luis Posada Carriles": Rodriguez, *Shadow Warrior*, 239.

Much of the information on Posada and his connections with the Mob, drugs, and the CIA comes from notes and memos by investigators for the House Select Committee on Assassinations, which examined Posada's CIA files as part of the 1970s reinvestigation of the Kennedy assassination. The files were released by the National Archives.

"Posada may have been moonlighting for Rosenthal": Posada's Mob ties appear in a June 26, 1967, memo for record regarding a DOJ investigation of Lefty Rosenthal. Other CIA memos reflecting that information were dated June 28, 1967. The memos make it clear Posada was being controlled by the Miami CIA office, JMWAVE, and at the same time was the subject of numerous investigative reports by the Bureau of Narcotics and Dangerous Drugs, the DEA's predecessor.

"get out of Venezuela and relocate in El Salvador": Posada's version of his arrival in El Salvador was contained in his interview by FBI agents Michael Foster and George Kiszynski for the Iran-Contra investigation, February 3, 1992, released to the author by the National Archives. His association with Col. Levia was contained in that and in a subsequent interview on March 16, 1992.

"seeking access to Ilopango": Charles Lane, "The Pilot Shark of El Salvador," *New Republic*, September 20, 1990.

How Chico Guirola wound up at Ilopango: The section on Chico Guirola was pieced together from several sources: Peter Cary, "Money Smuggling Charges Dropped Against Pilot," *Miami Herald*, June 13, 1985; David Sedeno, "Two Given Probation, Fine in Money-Smuggling Scheme," AP, June 13, 1985; "Boca Man, 2 Others Face Sentencing Today," *Miami Herald*, June 12, 1985; "2 Men Plead to Federal Charges of Trying to Smuggle $6 Million," *Miami Herald*, May 2, 1985; Frank Greve, "Some Latin Politicians Cashing In on Cocaine Smuggling Profits," *Miami Herald*, April 29, 1985; Craig Pyes and Laurie Becklund, "Inside Dope in El Salvador," *New Republic*, April 1985; John MacCormack, "US Hasn't Solved $6 Million Riddle," *Miami Herald*, March 11, 1985; "The Six Million Dollar Man," *Time*, March 4, 1985, 50; Laurie Becklund, "Illicit Money Figure Linked to D'Aubuisson," *L.A. Times*, February 19, 1985; Joanne Omang, "D'Aubuisson Associate Arrested," *Washington Post*, February 16, 1985; "Bond Set for Smuggling Scheme Suspect," *Miami Herald*, February 12, 1985; and Phil Ward, "Men Nabbed in Money Smuggling Scheme," *Miami Herald*, February 8, 1985.

"Norwin was selling drugs": Enrique Miranda's testimony contained in Nicaraguan drug trafficking case against Norwin Meneses, filed in 1991. In addition to his court testimony, Miranda was interviewed extensively by Georg Hodel.

Reports concerning drug trafficking allegations against Southern Air Transport contained in CIA-IG2, pg. 286 and pg. 340.

Details of Castillo's investigation at Ilopango and the CIA's and DEA's responses, CIA-IG2, pp. 139ndash;146, and DOJ-IG, Chapter 10.

"a very articulate individual": Memorandum from Walter E. Furr, Assistant U.S. Attorney, to Robert W. Merkle, United States Attorney, *Subject: Debriefing of Allen Raul Rudd with Regard to a*

Conversation with Pablo Escobar and Others regarding a Photograph, February 18, 1988, released by National Archives.

Miami FBI informant, Wanda Palacios: Portions of the Wanda Palacios story reported in "Informant's Smuggling Tale Heart of WPLG Libel Trial," *Miami Herald*, July 22, 1991.

meeting with William Weld: The Weld meeting was detailed in Kerry aide Jonathan Winer's "Memorandum to File re: Meeting with William Weld," September 26, 1986.

Justice Department officials reached the same discouraging conclusion: Justice Department memo from Blair Dorminey to Terry Eastland, *Subject: Difficulty in Obtaining Information from Official Sources on Cuban, Nicaraguan and Soviet Involvement in Drug Trafficking*, May 19, 1986, reprinted in the Kerry Report, 869ndash;71.

a 1988 congressional investigation raised troubling questions: The hearings regarding the Seal sting were held by the Subcommittee on Crime of the I louse Judiciary Committee, July 28, September 23, 29, and October 5, 1988.

"house belonged to a U.S. Embassy employee": Larry Margasak, "DEA Agent: White House Leaked Cocaine Sting to Implicate Sandinistas," AP, July 28, 1988.

In March 1985 the CIA reported: Meneses and Vaughn relationship reported by CIA-IG, 48ndash;49.

"no action is being taken": Letter from Stephen S. Trott, Associate Attorney General, to Guy L. Struve, Associate Independent Counsel, March 29, 1988.

"drug trafficking activity would have been 'stumbled on'" CIA-IC, 38.

Walsh said he tried to stay away: Lawrence Walsh, interview by author.

Edwin Corr's machinations concerning Castillo's investigation detailed in DOJ-IG, Ch. 10 (b)(2).

Walter "Wally" Grasheim: Background obtained from December 13, 1990, interview of Grasheim by FBI Agent Michael Foster, for the Iran-Contra Independent Counsel. Grasheim was also interviewed by author.

"Some of the rooms in the house": Castillo, interview by FBI Agent Michael Foster on September 20, 1991, for the Iran-Contra Independent Counsel.

Grasheim. . .says that the weapons were legally his: Grasheim, interview by author.

The CIAs use of Murga is detailed in DOJ-IG, Ch. 10, H. Castillo's second investigation of Ilopango in 1989 was detailed in DOJ-IG, Ch. 10 e.

14. *"It's bigger than I can handle"*

Victor Gill: Details of the Gill investigation obtained during author's interviews with Jerry Guzzetta.

glowing piece in the *Los Angeles Times*: Jerry Belcher, "One-Man Narcotics Squad Cracks Major Drug Ring," *Los Angeles Times*, November 7, 1985.

loose cannon and a publicity hound: Complaints about Guzzetta were contained in interviews done with current and former Bell PD officers by LACSO investigators in 1996.

"He hated dope dealers": Tom McReynolds, interview by Lt. Michael Bornman, LACSO, November 20, 1996.

"did some very good work together": Retired U.S. Customs agent Fred Ghio, interview by Sgt. Axel Anderson, LACSO, November 18, 1996.

Guzzetta and the federal agents began debriefing the brothers: During the investigation in which the Torres brothers served as informants, Guzzetta prepared a series of debriefings and progress reports under the code name "Project Sahara." The LACSO detectives found some of the reports, which were released as exhibits to the LACSO report in late 1996 and cited here. But Guzzetta insists that many additional "Project Sahara" reports have been suppressed or destroyed. Indeed, some of the reports that were released reference other, earlier reports that were never released. In addition, it is obvious that some of the released reports once contained additional pages that are missing. Guzzetta said most of the missing reports dealt with the Contras.

"reliability of the CI has been substantiated": Ghio's statements were contained in a U.S. Customs Service "Significant Activity Report" dated August 9, 1986, ease LA02PR6LA005. It was released as an exhibit to the LACSO report.

Roberto Orlando Murillo, the uncle of Blandón's wife: Orlando Murillo's background came from his Uniform Application for Securities Industry Registration dated July 24, 1984, on file with the Florida Comptroller's Office, file 018432, and from interviews with Murillo by the author and Georg Hodel.

"cream of the crop": Jay Lichtman's quote appeared in Victor Merina, "Deputies Portrayed as Criminals," *Los Angeles Times*, October 12, 1990.

a hard man to impress: Tom Gordon, interview by author.

one of the biggest cases he'd ever handled: Lt. Dale Gene (Mike) Fossey, interview by Sgts. David Silversparre and Robert Rifkin, LACSO, October 22, 1996.

"We haven't encountered any major network": "New York City Being Swamped by Crack," *Los Angeles Times*, August 1, 1986.

Robert Stutman, the head of the DEA office: Robert Stutman and Richard Esposito, *Dead on Delivery* (New York: Warner Books, 1992), 213.

15. "This thing is a tidal wave"

"fueled with evocative words such as 'epidemic'": Donna M. Hartman and Andrew L. Golub, *The Social Construction of the Crack Epidemic in the Print Media*, monograph, John Jay College of Criminal Justice, March 10, 1997. Other academic studies relied on by the author in describing the media hysteria in the summer of 1986 are Craig Reinarman and Harry G. Levine, "Crack in Context: Polities and Media in the Making of a Drug Scare," *Contemporary Drug Problems*, winter 1989, 535; Steven Belenko, *Crack and the Evolution of Anti-Drug Policy* (Westport, Conn.: Greenwood Press, 1993); and James Inciardi, "Beyond Cocaine: Basuco, Crack and Other Coca Products," *Contemporary Drug Problems*, fall 1987, 461.

"a suddenness unprecedented": Sam Nunn's comments were made during a July 15, 1986, hearing of the Permanent Subcommittee on Investigations of the Senate Committee on Governmental Affairs.

"never heard of crack": Lawton Chiles's comments were made at the same hearing.

"nine months ago, addiction to crack was virtually unheard of": Hamilton Fish, at a Joint Hearing on the Select Committee on Narcotics Abuse and Control and the Select Committee on Children, Youth and Families, July 15, 1986.

"We have not had enough time elapse": Charles Schuster testified at the Senate crack hearings, cited above.

"crack has emerged": David Westrate testified at the House crack hearings.

"We have no current data, is that correct?": The dialogue between Benjamin Gilman and the experts took place at the House crack hearings.

"it was going to be the use of free-base cocaine": Robert Byck testified at the Senate crack hearings.

"that 50 is the number that got doubled": Robert Byck, interview by author.

"real vacuum of knowledge": Belenko, *Crack and the Evolution*, 8.

"a hoax": Chicago reseacher quote in Inciardi, "Beyond Cocaine," 484.

"phenomenon isolated to the inner cities": Ibid.

"least-used drug": Belenko, *Crack and the Evolution*, 13.

In Miami. . .few cocaine customers wanted crack: "94 Arrested in Drug Sting," Miami Herald, April 4, 1986.

"growing public outcry": *New York Times*, June 27, 1986. The *Times's* stories on Reagan and crack appeared July 9, July 11, July 12, July 29, July 31, August 5, and August 7. The "frenzy" comment appeared August 10.

Robert Stutman, chief of: Robert Stutman and Richard Esposito, *Dead on Delivery* (New York: Warner Books, 1992), 217–19.

"just in time for a crucial election": Reinarman and Levine, "Crack in Context," 563.

"those who stand to gain the most": Golub and Hartman, *Social Construction of Crack*.

"quietly disbanding": "Police Quietly Disbanding South LA Anti-Drug Unit," *LA. Times*, October 11, 1986.

"They didn't treat it like a major issue": Jack Lawn, cited in *U.S. News and World Report*, August 19, 1991.

"obvious intent of Senator Kerry": Memo from Ken Bergquist to Trott, *Subject: Upcoming "Contra" Hearings in the Senate Foreign Relations Committee*, May 13, 1986, reprinted in Kerry Report, 531. Bergquist was also in contact with San Francisco U.S. attorney Joe Russoniello, who'd collaborated with the CIA to keep the details of the Frogman case from becoming public. Bergquist's contacts with Russoniello were reported in an interview of Justice Department official Mark M. Richard, December 31, 1988, by FBI agent Michael Foster of the Walsh investigative team.

head off attempts to obtain certain records: The attempts to discredit Kerry's witnesses and investigators and to stonewall the investigation reported in Kerry Report, 147–67; and in Peter Dale Scott and Jonathan Marshall, *Cocaine Politics* (Berkeley: University of California Press, 1991), 125–64.

broke the story of the Frogman case: Seth Rosenfeld, "Big Bay Area Cocaine Ring Tied to Contras," *San Francisco Examiner*, March 16, 1986.

"one of the most blatant attempts at contrived news-making": Russoniello's letter reprinted in Kerry Report, 396.

White Paper subsequently circulated to Congress: State Department document, July 26, 1986, *Allegations of Drug Trafficking and the Nicaraguan Democratic Resistance*, reprinted in Kerry Report, 266.

interview with former Contra official Leonardo Zeledon Rodriguez: United Press International, April 26, 1986, in a 320-word story date-lined Tegucigalpa, Honduras. Few, if any, U.S. newspapers carried the UPI report.

"We had a terrible, terrible time getting information": Jack Blum, interview by author.

"Justice never provided": Page from North's diary on file at National Security Archives, Washington, D.C.

16. "It's a burn"

Jaime Ramos: Details of the Ramos investigation were contained in Guzzetta's "Project Sahara" reports and in *People v. Ramos et al*, A789038, L.A. Superior Court.

asked the Torres brothers to show him around South Central: Guzzetta's trip to South Central with the Torreses was detailed in "Project Sahara" report, September 11, 1986.

Edner confirmed that "Freeway Rick" had a name: John Edner's investigation of Ross was contained in an affidavit for a search warrant filed by Sgt. Robert Tolmaire, March 1987.

"Mauldin showed up": The Stubblefield search was discussed by Sgt. Robert Sobel during his June 15, 1988, interrogation by LACSO Internal Affairs Sgt. James Mulay.

both specifically denied: Newell's and Ross's denials of a connection to Ramos were contained in "Interview of Ollie Newell" by Sgt. Paul Mondry and Sgt. Susan St. Marie, August 14, 1990, and "Interview of Witness Ricky Donnell Ross," by Sgt. Mondry, November 15, 1990, conducted in connection with an Internal Affairs investigation into the Ramos case, file 490-00057-3010-444. Released as exhibits to LACSO report.

The NADDIS reports were released as exhibits to the LACSO report, 1996.

"It's a burn": The phone message from Gonzalez was released as an exhibit to the LACSO report.

Schrettner had debriefed a Nicaraguan informant: Thomas Schrettner, DEA-6, *Debriefing of SRP-86-0018, August 25–27, 1986*, file GFRP-86-4020, released as exhibit to LACSO report.

"loosely associated Nicaraguans. . .": Thomas Schrettner, DEA report, August 1986.

Details of Thomas Schrettner's and Douglas Aukland's investigations of the Blandón ring in the summer of 1986 are contained in Statements from DEA Agent Thomas Schrettner, November 15, 1996, and Interview of FBI Special Agent Douglas Aukland, November 18, 1996, both taken by Sgt. Joseph Hartshorne and released as exhibits to LACSO report. Additional details are found in DOJ-IC, Ch. 2, part 1, sections B through E.

"The allegations were": Sgt. David Silversparre and Sgt. Robert Rifkin, *Interview of Retired Lieutenant Dale (Mike) Fossey #029600*, October 22, 1996, released as exhibit to LACSO report.

"FBI might 'burn' them": Sgts. Rifkin and Silversparre, *Interview of Retired Captain Robert Wilber*, October 18, 1996, released as exhibit to LACSO report.

17. "We're going to blow your fucking head off"

Joseph Kelso, an undercover informant: The Kelso case was discussed in *Additional Views of Honorable Peter W. Rodino Jr., Honorable Dante B. Fascell, Vice Chairman, Honorable Jack Brooks and Honorable Louis Stokes: Report of the Congressional Committees Investigating the Iran-Contra Affair* (Washington, D.C.: Government Printing Office, 1987), 643.

Most of the details of Kelso's misadventures in Costa Rica were obtained from his three-volume deposition in the case *Avirgan v. Hull*, Civil Action 86–1146 and 87–1545, U.S. District Court, Southern District of Florida, May 23, 1988. Kelso was also interviewed by the author.

German-born arms dealer. . .named Heinrich Rupp: For a fuller discussion of Rupp's mysterious activities in Colorado, see Stephen Pizzo, Mary Fricker, and Paul Muolo, *Inside Job: The Looting of America's Savings and Loans* (New York: HarperPerennial, 1991), 182–86.

arrested by the U.S. Customs Service: Mark Thomas, "2 Plead Guilty in Try to Sell Missiles to Iraq," *Rocky Mountain News*, March 23, 1983; Sue Lindsay, "2 Fined, Put on Probation for Plan to Sell Arms to Iraq," *Rocky Mountain News*, May 4, 1983.

some DEA records concerning Kelso: The existence of DEA records regarding Kelso is evidenced in the footnotes to the Rodino minority report and from an interview the author conducted with former Iran-Contra attorney Pam Naughton, who viewed the records.

"both Nieves and Sandy Gonzalez, were connected with the CIA": Gloria Navas, interview by author and Georg Hodel.

"Sometimes the lines really got blurred": Pam Naughton, interview by author.

The notion of CIA agents using DEA offices as cover is well grounded in recent history. See *Report to the President by the Commission on CIA Activities within the United States*, June 1975, 233–34; Paul Heagen, "CIA 'Using Drug Agency Cover,'" *Long Beach Press Telegram*, March 16, 1975, A3;

"53 Ex-CIA Employes Now in Drug Bureau," *Orange County Register*, January 26, 1975, A6; and "Weicker Reports Exhibit of Tools for Assassinations," *L.A. Times*, January 24, 1975.

Kelso stole Agent Nieves's briefcase: Customs agent Gary Hilberry reported this allegation during an interview with the author.

"Mr. LaDodge had received": All quotes from William Rosenblatt are contained in his once Top Secret deposition to the House Select Committee to Investigate Covert Arms Transactions with Iran, September 25, 1987.

"Nieves did not disguise his anger": Guillermo Fernandez, "Informants provoke conflict between U.S. agencies," *La Nation*, December 3, 1986, 8A.

Owen, in a deposition, admitted being in Costa Rica: Rob Owen was questioned extensively about the Kelso incident during his deposition in *Avirgan v. Hull*, February 8, 1988. Owen was also questioned about the Kelso case during his deposition to Senate Select Committee to Investigate Covert Arms Transactions with Iran, May 4, 1987.

"maps of coke lab locations": John Hull's report on Kelso visit released as an exhibit to the final Iran-Contra congressional report. Hull was interviewed by the author.

North knew all about the Kelso affair: North's knowledge of the Kelso affair is documented in his notebook entries for August 26, August 27, and August 28, 1986, in which Kelso's name appears, along with Gary Hilberry's name and phone number.

"They were thrown out": Owen's testimony about disposing of the Kelso tapes was contained in his deposition in *Avirgan v. Hull*.

charged with violating his probation: Kelso's arrest upon his return to the U.S., his court appearances, and subsequent events are chronicled in Sue Lindsay, "Man Claiming CIA Link Sentenced," *Rocky Mountain News*, February 24, 1987; and Lindsay, "Man Citing Betrayal by CIA Tells Story," *Rocky Mountain News*, March 1, 1987.

attempt to help an Italian financier buy MGM studios: Alan Citron and Michael Cieply, "Financing Details Add Bizarre Twist to MGM Saga," *Los Angeles Times*, April 24, 1991.

went to work for. . .Guardian Technologies: Nieves was contacted at the offices of Guardian Technologies by the author but he declined to answer questions.

18. "We bust our ass and the government's involved"

Sergeant Tom Gordon. . .applied for a warrant: Copy of search warrant and affidavit provided to author by source.

"'clean pockets'": Alan Fiers's testimony delivered during *U.S. v. George*, July 28, 1992.

"a 30-day investigation will culminate": *Background and Operational Plan*, undated, released as exhibit to LACSO report.

"pretty bitchin'. . .doing it anyway": William Wolfbrandt, interview by Sgts. Rifkin and Silversparre, October 28, 1996, exhibit to LACSO report.

"there may be a CIA link": Mike Fossey, LACSO interview.

"U.S. government baeked the operation": Virgil Bartlett, interview by Sgt. Hartshorne and Sgt. Daniel S. Cruz, October 16, 1996, exhibit to LACSO report.

"strange that federal agents": Jerry Guzzetta was interviewed on three separate occasions—October 6, November 5, and November 23, 1996—by LACSO investigators.

"never seen the likes of it": Blandón's neighbor, who refused to give her name, was interviewed by the author.

Descriptions of the raids were based upon the individual reports filed by the raid teams, which were released as exhibits to the LACSO report, and the author's interviews with some of the raid team members. The items seized were listed in inventories, which were also released with the LACSO report.

"at least one 1-ton delivery": Blandon's comments regarding Aparicio Moreno in CIA-IG, 69.

murder of an American innkeeper: "Panel Says CIA agents in Guatemala Linked to Rights Abuses," AP, June 28, 1996; and "Washington: Guatemala Hid Evidence of Abuse of U.S. Citizens," AP, May 7, 1996.

Castillo believes Devine was killed by Guatemalan soldiers: Frank Smyth, "My Enemy's Friends," *New Republic*, June 5, 1995.

Castillo reported Moreno's activities in Guatemala: DEA-6, file TG-88-009, May 2,1988. The DEA released a heavily censored copy of that report to the author. Castillo disclosed its contents to the author in an interview.

Juarez and his crew raced over: Juarez's raid report released as exhibit to LACSO report. Juarez was also interviewed about the raid by Sgts. Michael Bornman and Daniel Cruz, October 18, 1996, summary released with LACSO report.

"I got power!": Sgt. Art Fransen, interview by Sgts. Rifkin and Silversparre, October 31, 1996, exhibit to LACSO report.

"There's a bigger picture here": Richard Love, interview by Sgts. Rifkin and Silversparre on October 17, 1996, LACSO exhibit.

Master Narcotics Evidence Control ledger: Released as exhibit to LACSO report.

case chronology prepared in late 1986: Released as exhibit to LACSO report.

"Blandón simply smiled": Lister's comments to the CIA about the raid are found at 57, CIA-IG.

"a clumsy investigation": L. J. O'Neale, interview by Sgts. Rifkin and Silversparre, November 7, 1996, LACSO exhibit.

"Department of Defense codes": John Hurtado, interview by Sgts. Cruz and Hartshorne, October 25, 1996, LACSO exhibit.

"transporting weapons": Dan Garner, interview by Sgts. Cruz and Hartshorne, October 10, 1996, LACSO exhibit.

Descriptions of the bank records and Leysla Balladares' note to Blandón contained in DOJ-IG, Ch. 4, pt. l, A2.

"Manuel Gómez was found murdered": Sgts. Cruz and Anderson, *Additional Information Regarding Manuel Antonio Gomes*, November 6, 1996, LACSO exhibit; Gómez's Certificate of Death, LA. County Coroner, February 16, 1993; Sgt. Hartshorne, *Interview with Cynthia Juarez*, October 16, 1996, LACSO exhibit.

For additional information on Salvadoran death squad activities in L.A., see Dennis Bernstein and Connie Blitt, "Death Squad–Style Violence Haunts Salvadoran Organizers in the *U.S.," In These Times*, July 22–August 4, 1987.

"vile, vicious son of a bitch": Bradley Brunon, interview by author.

"CIA kinda winks at that activity": Brunon's CIA conversation with Huffman was memorialized in a handwritten chronology of events Huffman prepared in November 1986, released as a LACSO exhibit. Huffman confirmed the conversation in an interview with Sgts. Anderson and Bornman, October 29,1996, LACSO exhibit; and FBI teletype from SAC, Los Angeles, to Director FBI, *Subject: Front Door, Major Case 90*, December 12, 1986, declassified and released to author by National Archives. After admitting it to the author, Brunon denied the conversation took place when questioned by LACSO.

"We bust our ass": Sgts. Rifkin and Silversparre, *Interview of Retired Captain Robert Wilber*, October 18, 1996, released as exhibit to LACSO report.

"Three Persons Claiming CIA Affiliation": CIA cable filed in *U.S. v. James*.

"If he was a major trafficker": Brian Leighton, interview by author.

John M. Garrisi had been charged: Details about Garrisi were found in *In the Matter of John Mark Garrisi, A Member of the State Bar*, 87-E-03-LA, Decision of State Bar Court, Los Angeles, April 13, 1987; "L.A. Lawyer Gets Year in Prison for Visa Fraud," UPI, September 26, 1987; "Lawyer Sentenced for Iranian Immigration Scheme," AP September 25, 1987.

Garrisi had "a pipeline": Roy Koletsky, interview by author.

director of the *FBI* sent a long teletype: teletype to CIA and DIA dated December 11, 1986, filed in *U.S. v. James*, by the CIA.

"Scott Weekly is an arms dealer": Huffman's notes, "Mtg @ D.D.A. Susan Deason's office, 1100 hrs, 1–14–87," were released as exhibits to LACSO report.

19. "He reports to people reporting to Bush"

Scott Weekly: Details of Weekly's background and 1983 POW hunt compiled from following sources: "Thais Vow to Arrest Green Beret POW hunter," UPI, February 21, 1983; "Gritz, Says He's on Another Mission to Rescue POWs in Laos," AP, February 21, 1983; untitled story, UPI, a.m. cycle, March 2, 1983; untitled story, UPI, p.m. cycle, March 2, 1983; John Hail, "We Came Because We Believe," UPI, March 4, 1983; John Laird, "Americans Plead Guilty in Thai Court," AP, March 11, 1983; "Gritz Receives Suspended Sentence," *Facts on File*, April 8, 1983, 242; "Gritz Leaves Thailand," AP, June 9, 1983.

"Scott's kind of a tough little guy": Lynn Ball, interview by author.

"combination between John Wayne and Rambo": David Booth, speaking at Weekly's sentencing on April 29, 1987, in *U.S. v. Weekly*, 86 CR 281A, U.S. District Court, Western District of Oklahoma.

"large number of demerits": Weekly's statements about the Naval Academy, Weekly's sentencing.

"tens of thousands of dollars' worth": Steven Emerson, *Secret Warriors* (New York: G. P Putnam's Sons, 1988), 79.

"Grand Eagle" was officially shelved: James Gritz, testimony at hearing before the Subcommittee on Asian and Pacific Affairs of the House Committee on Foreign Affairs, March 22, 1983.

"Department of Defense organization": Paulson, testimony at Subcommittee on Asian and Pacific Affairs hearing.

"with at least initial support": Jack Anderson, "Search for POWs in Laos Linked to CIA," *Washington Post*, October 15, 1984.

"had some ties to the CIA": CIA involvement with Ronald Ray Rewald reported in Howard Kurtz, "CIA Got IRS to Delay Audit; Intelligence Agency Was Probing Its Ties to Investment Firm," *Washington Post*, December 27, 1984; and Howard Kurtz, "Closed Hearing Set on CIA's Sporkin," *Washington Post*, October 4, 1985.

"if he was in the CIA, he wouldn't tell me": Weekly, interview by Lt.
Michael Bornman, November 18, 1996, LACSO exhibit.

"suddenly exclaimed, 'Whoa!'": Sgt. Daniel Cruz, *Contact with Department of Veteran's Affairs*, November 8, 1996, LACSO exhibit.

"international munitions deals": John Kellogg, testimony at Weekly's resentencing, *U.S. v. Weekly*, July 15, 1988. See also John Standefer, "Afghan War Claims Victim in County," *San Diego Union Tribune*, July 26, 1987; Ray Robinson, "Indictment Likely in Case," *Daily Oklahoman*, July 19, 1987; "'Bo' Gritz Trained Rebels in Nevada Desert," UPI, May 1, 1987; Ray Robinson, "Man Pleads Guilty to Shipping Explosives," *Daily Oklahoman*, December 30, 1986; and Ray Robinson, "Sooner

Explosives Aided Afghans," *Daily Oklahoman*, April 30, 1987.

Gene Wheaton: Wheaton, interview by author.

"paramilitary covert action program": Fiers, interview by Walsh's FBI investigator, August 2, 1991; a summary was declassified and released to the author by the National Archives.

"keeping in touch with DOD": William Schneider, interview by FBI agents working for Lawrence Walsh, January 27, 1988; a summary of the interview was declassified and released to the author by the National Archives.

"North did refer to going to jail": Nestor Pino Marina, interview by FBI, December 2, 1987, declassified and released to author by the National Archives.

Pino. . .has a history of involvement with the CIA: Record of interview, Nestor Pino Marina, May 20, 1987, by Walsh's investigators, released by National Archives.

Pino's relationship with Bustillo reported by FBI Special Agent Michael Foster in a May 20, 1991, report to the Walsh investigation, released by the National Archives.

Bode's desk calendars: Released to the author by the National Archives.

"The Afghan program is a covert program": William R. Bode, interviewed in Standefer, "Afghan War Claims Victim."

Pino's statements about the Afghan training program contained in an affidavit to U.S. District Court, Oklahoma City, cited in DOJ-IG, Ch.5, pt.3, 2.

"miscellaneous projects": Albert Hakim, deposition to Iran-Contra committee, May 1987.

"She was sitting in her apartment": Stephen Korotash, interview by author.

Weld's notes of the briefing: Iran-Contra files of Lawrence Walsh, released by the National Archives.

"proceed with such cases?": Bill Price, interview by author.

Richard already had some background: Edward Spannaus, "How DOJ Official Mark Richard Won the CIA's Coverup Award," *Executive Intelligence Review*, July 7, 1995, 73–75.

Richard was grilled about that briefing: Deposition of Mark Richard before the House and Senate Select Committees, August 19, 1987. The notes of Richard's conversations with Price were attached as exhibits to the deposition.

federal prisoner, Jose Bueso Rosa: Information on Bueso Rosa compiled from Warren Fiske, "What did North know?" *Norfolk Virginian Pilot*, October 22, 1994; Jefferson Morley and Murray Waas, "A Favor for a Felon," *Washington Post*, May 29, 1994; Jefferson Morley, "Dealing with Noriega," *Nation*, August 27, 1988; Murray Kempton, "Panama's High Finance," *Newsday*, February 7, 1988: Neil Roland, "North Tried to Hush Honduran," UPI, November 22, 1987; Susan Rasky, "North Urged Leniency For Honduran Linked to Assassination Plot," *New York Times*, February 23, 1987; 'Army Ex-Chief Sentenced in Coup Plot," *Facts on File*, September 5, 1986, 662; "Former General Sentenced in Assassination Plot," UPI, July 24, 1986; "General Arrested in Coup Plot," *Facts on File*, December 20, 1985, 954; "Honduras: Two Former Top Officers Dishonorably Discharged," Inter Press Service, November 5, 1985; Charles Babcock, "Account of Assassination Plot Reads Like TV Script," *Bergen Record*, August 16, 1985; and Oliver North's PROFS notes regarding the case, on file at the National Security Archives.

"triumph for the Administration's policy": Francis J. McNeil testified to the Kerry Committee about the Bueso Rosa ease, April 4, 1988.

"Bueso Rosa. . .had information": Nestor Pino Marina, interview by FBI agents working for Walsh, May 13, 1987, released by the National Archives.

"in from one entrance and out the other": Mark Richard's statements about Weekly and Bueso Rosa were made under oath during in his August 19, 1987 deposition by the Iran-Contra committees.

Bode explained his involvement in the case to an FBI agent working for Walsh on November 2, 1987, and that interview was released by the National Archives.

CIA had equipped and trained. . .the 316 Battalion: Bueso Rosa, cited in Gary Cohn and Ginger Thompson, "Unearthed: CIA Secrets," *Baltimore Sun*, reprinted in the *Sacramento Bee*, July 30, 1995.

"this investigation would start and stop with me": Weekly testified at length at his resentencing hearing.

trekked into the mountains of northern Burma: "Thais: US Adventurer Turned Away," Reuters, September 6, 1986. Gritz's comments regarding Khun Sa were taken from a transcript of his videotape A *Nation Betrayed*, as well as from "Burmese Rebel Links Pentagon Official to Drug Deals," AP, June 5, 1987. His charges of retaliation were reported in an untitled UPI story dated July 19, 1987, datelined Oklahoma City.

Gritz was indicted. . .for misusing a passport: Penny Levin, "LV Grand Jury Indicts Gritz on Passport Misuse," *Las Vegas Sun*, May 21, 1987; Phil LaVelle, "Gritz Surrenders, Alleges U.S. Backing," *Las Vegas Review Journal*, June 4, 1987; and LaVelle, "Gritz Cites Conspiracy in Passport Rap," *Las Vegas Review Journal*, June 6, 1987.

20. "It's a sensitive matter"

Susan Bryant-Deason. . .told police: Curtis A. Hazell, Head Deputy, Major Narcotics and Forfeiture Division, "Confidential Memorandum to Hie," Subject: Blandon Investigation," October 16, 1996, LACSO exhibit; and R. Dan Murphy, Assistant District Attorney, to Capt. Neal B. Tyler, confidential letter, October 23, 1996, LACSO exhibit.

All details of the 1986–87 investigation of Blandón conducted by agents Aukland and Schrettner, the details of Norwin Meneses's relationship with the DEA, the involvement of CIA agent Roberto and the L.A. meetings were primarily contained in DOJ-IG, Ch. 2, pt. 4, Sec. F (The Initiations of the Federal OCDETF Case); Sec. G (The 1987 Los Angeles OCDETF Investigation), and Sec. H (Closure of the OCDETF Case).

Aukland's interviews with the Secret Service agent and Lister's realtor are cited in a December 8, 1986 FBI teletype, "Re: Butelcal SSA (deleted) LA, SSA (deleted) FBIHQ," released by National Archives to journalist Nick Schou, and an "Immediate" FBI teletype from LA. to FBI Headquarters, December 12, 1986.

"Back then Ricky Ross was a major dealer": Robert Sobel, Internal Affairs interview.

"Ross was a vital link": Glenn A. Levant, LAPD intradepartmental memo to Detective Steven Polak, *Commendation LASD/LAPD Rock Cocaine Supplier Task Force*, January 13, 1988.

Freeway Rick Task Force: Steve Polak, interview by author; and Polak, "Fact Sheet re: Full Cash Overtime for Major FES Narcotics Div.," January 1987.

"All of his locations": LACSO internal affairs interview of Sobel, June 15, 1988.

"He's become quite a heavyweight": Sandy Wasson, quoted in "Drug Fugitive Captured in Closet," UPI, November 30, 1989.

"He was a *good* bad guy": ABC News, *Day One*, "The Crime Crisis: Freeway," November 29, 1993.

"Robin Hood–type guy": James Galipeau, cited in Jesse Katz., "Deposed King of Crack," *L.A. Times*, December 20, 1994.

"He kind of fancied himself": Daryl Kelley and Victor Merina, "Query Focuses on Sheriff's Sergeant, Deputies He Led," *Los Angeles Times*, November 16, 1989.

"What he did, he poisoned tens of thousands of people": Steve Polak, interview by author.

Polak and his men hit the Freeway Motor Inn: "Rock Cocaine Supplier LAPD/LASD'Task Force Weekly Activities Report 1–21–87 through 1–27–87."

"Going after my mom": Ross, interview by author. Details of the detention of Annie Ross came from Sobel's LACSO internal affairs interview, June 15, 1988.

"a cartel": Sobel, LACSO internal affairs interview.

"your wife will be in a psychiatric hospital": Blandón, testimony in *U.S. v. James*.

"widespread patronage from the Latin community": Bradley Brunon, quoted in transcript of a May 20, 1992, detention hearing, *U.S. v. Blandón*.

"Roger Sandino was one of these guys": Brunon, interview by author.

Sandino was arrested: Cable from DEA Miami F/O to DEA HQS, October 27, 1980, file Gl–81–0002.

set up an import-export business: Corporate records of Rosamar International Trading Inc., H26741, on file at Florida Division of Corporation. The attorney who served as Sandino's agent, John Spittler Jr., was also an officer in Inter-America Media Corp. and the agent for Los Ranchos De Miami Inc.

busted again in April 1986: The Norfolk, Virginia, bust was described in Dorothy Gast, "700-pound Cocaine Bust Called Largest Ever in Mid-Atlantic," AP, April 8, 1986.

DEA issued a fugitive warrant: Sandino's "Fugitive Declaration," filed by DEA on January 12, 1987, DEA file GZ-86–0002.

"Everywhere you go": Jerome H. Skolnick, *The Social Structure of Street Drug Dealing* (State of California, Office of the Attorney General, 1988); and Skolnick, *Gang Organization and Migration* (State of California, Office of the Attorney General, 1989).

"Gang members have flooded the market": Bill Bryan, "Police Fighting a Rising Drug Tide," *St. Louis Post-Dispatch*, March 12, 1989.

Brian "Waterhead Bo" Bennett: "Arrests Cut Key Cocaine Link in L.A., Police Say," *Los Angeles Times*, November 30,1988; Ross, 1996 LACSO interview; and files from *U.S. v. Villabona*, 88 CR 972b, Central District of California, provided to the author by Mario Villabona. In his appeal, Villabona claimed he was set up for arrest by a CIA informant and former Contra, William Guzman.

"plunged a knife into the doll's head": U.S. Department of Justice's trial memorandum, August 30, 1991, in *U.S. vs. Amers*, 90 CR 111.

"jokes about the dope they had ready": Sobel's comments regarding Polak and the planting of cocaine came from "Inquiry into LAPD May Jeopardize Drug Cases," *L.A. Times*, October 3, 1990.

"I looked in the rearview mirror": Details of the April 1987 shooting incident were gleaned from Ross's testimony, *U.S. v. James*; Sobel, 1988 interview with the Sheriff's IA investigators; and the 1991 DOJ trial memorandum in *U.S. vs. Amers*.

The LAPD issued a press release: "Fact Sheet for Immediate Release," Los Angeles Police Department Narcotics Division, May 18, 1987.

dropped by the jail to inspect their prize: U.S. DOJ trial memorandum, August 30, 1991, 24, filed in *U.S. vs. Amers*. Additional details obtained during interviews with Ross and Alan Fenster; and Kelley and Merina, "Query Focuses on Sheriff's Sergeant."

21. "I could go anywhere in the world and sell dope"

"It was real cool": Quotes from Ross through this chapter came from interviews with the author and his testimony in *U.S. v. James*.

Macario was deeply involved with the FDN: Jose Macario Estrada, interview by author.

attorney Carlos Icaza: Information regarding Carlos Icaza was obtained during interviews with Icaza by author and Georg Hodel. His alleged involvement with the CIA was reported in "Nicaragua Charges CIA Plot, Expels Diplomats; U.S. Retaliates," *Facts on File*, June 10, 1983, 423; and *CIA Conspiracy in Nicaragua*, June 1983, a booklet provided to the press by the Nicarguan government at the press conference announcing the arrests.

His and his wife's involvement with the FDN was reported in "Bomb Explodes Outside Home of Contra Spokeswoman," AP, March 6, 1987; and "Home of Nicaraguan Rebel Spokeswoman Bombed," Reuters, March 6, 1987.

Macario was appointed to a blue-ribbon commission by the FDN: Sandra Dibble, "Contras Ask Panel to Audit Funds," *Miami Herald*, August 16, 1986.

restaurant became a hangout for Contra leaders: La Parrilla's use as a Contra forum reported in Maria Jose Cartagena, "Nicaraguans Seek to Ease Path for Fellow Exile Professionals," *Miami Herald*, December 20, 1987.

Restaurant reviews included: Lucy Cooper, "La Parrilla: Nicaraguan Food at Its Best," *Miami Herald*, October 24, 1986; Lucy Cooper, "Feast Your Fantasies at South Florida's Finest Restaurants," *Miami Herald*, January 2, 1987; Ivonne Rovira Kelly, "La Parrilla Makes a Name for Itself," *Miami Herald*, August 8, 1985; and Geoffrey Tomb, "The Good News, Part 3," *Miami Herald Tropic Magazine*, June 15, 1986.

Alpha II Rent-a-Car: *In re: Alpha II Rent-A-Car*, case 90–13670, Federal Bankruptcy Court, Miami, June 1, 1990.

"if the right person paged me, I'd get up": Jesse Katz, "Deposed King of Crack," *L.A. Times*, December 20, 1994.

"I knew the recipe": Al Salvato, "The Man Who Brought Crack to Town," *Cincinnati Post*, October 24, 1992. (Salvato was the author's journalism school professor in 1975.) An additional story containing information about Ross's operations in Cincinnati was: George Lecky, "Feds: Gang Leader Built Network in Cincinnati," *Cincinnati Post*, April 16, 1990.

Justice Department descriptions of Ross' cocaine network in Cincinnati are found in DOJ-IG, Ch. 6, pt.3, Sec. 2, and Sec. 4a.

"In 1987, we had lots of crack": Robert Enoch, quoted in Salvato, "Man Who Brought Crack."

"a guy who could sell Popsicles to an Eskimo": Ernest Halcon, quoted in Katz, "Deposed King of Crack."

Cincinnati authorities finally discovered: Details of the police investigation and the affair Ross's girlfriend had in Cincinnati were contained in the U.S. Probation and Parole Commission's 1991 presentence report prepared for Ross's Cincinnati sentencing.

Smith County, Texas. . .indictment: Evan P. Kirvin, *Presentence Report*, U.S. District Court, Southern District of California, May 6, 1996, 11.

barricaded himself inside: "Police Corner Suspected Drug Dealer in Closet," *Los Angeles Times*, November 30, 1989.

stories about L.A. gangbangers: Some articles and studies describing the 1988–89 migration of Crips and Bloods from L.A. are Theresa Monsour, "Crip Gangs in St. Paul, Chief Says," *St. Paul Pioneer Press*, May 4, 1988; Lisa Levitt Ryckman, "Crips, Bloods Turn into Traveling Salesmen for Big Drug Money," AP, May 28, 1988; Jerry Nachtigal, "Police: L.A. Drug Gangs More Widespread Than Previously Thought," AP, July 15, 1988; Thom Gross, "L.A. Gangs Are Seen Here," *St. Louis Post Dispatch*, July 17, 1988; Denise Hamilton, "Study Tightly Links Gangs to Trafficking in Cocaine," *Los Angeles Times*, November 15, 1988; Robert C. Unruh, "Gang Problem Grows Deadlier in Denver," AP, December 5, 1988; and Michael J. Ybarra and Paul Leiberman, "U.S. Labels L.A. a Center of Drug Trade, Violence," *Los Angeles Times*, August 4, 1989.

"Los Angeles drug gangs are spreading cocaine": Nachtigan, "L.A. Drug Gangs More Widespread."

"Los Angeles has become the transshipment area": Jerry Harper, testimony in *Federal Law Enforcement Role in Narcotics Control in Southern California*, hearings of the House Select Committee on Narcotics Abuse and Control, August 23, 1988.

"these emerging modern day gangsters": Robert Bonner, testimony in *Organized Criminal Activity by Youth Gangs*, hearings of the Subcommittee on Criminal Justice of the House Judiciary Committee, June 6 and August 8, 1988.

22. "They can't touch us"

"They didn't ask me nothing about": Ricky Ross, interview by author. Unless otherwise noted, all quotes in this chapter from Ross are either from his interviews with the author, or from his testimony in *U.S. v. James*.

"Operation Big Spender": "Jury Views Video of Alleged Money-Skimming by Deputies," UPI, October 16, 1990; and an *L.A. Times* series by Victor Merina, December 1–3, 1993.

"This may be a terrible thing to say": "Deputies' Downfall Began with Videotaped Sting" *L.A. Times*, December 3, 1993.

an astonishing $33.9 million in cash: The figures from the forfeiture hauls came from LACSO.

"My men are all trained to tear flesh": Quote from Sobel in the newsletter reported by *Los Angeles Times*, December 1, 1993.

Polak had liposuction performed: The cosmetic surgery done by Polak and his wife was revealed in *U.S. v. Stephen W. Polak and Christina Townly*, 94 CR 283, April 15, 1994, Central District of California.

"Dan Garner came in my office": Harland Braun, interview by author.

casually asked if the agent knew anything: "Jury Sees Video of Deputies Taking Cash," *L.A. Times*, October 17, 1990; "Drug Cash Tied to Contras, CIA in L.A. Deputies' Trial," *San Diego Union-Tribune*, October 24, 1990; and "Judge Issues Gag Order on Lawyers, Defendants in Sheriff's Drug Case," UPI, October 24, 1990.

"publicized matters that are likely to. . .impair the rights": *Declaration of Thomas Hagemann*, filed in connection with "Government's Motion for Restraining Order Re: Extra-Judicial Statements of Parties and their Agents," filed October 19, 1990, *U.S. v. Amers*, 90 CR IIIA, U.S. District Court, Central District of California.

"Films of military operations in Central America": Braun's writings from "Defendant Garner's Opposition to Government's Request for Restraining Order," filed October 23, 1990, *U.S. v. Amers*.

Justice Department fired back: "Motion in Limine Re: Admissibility of Defendant Garner's Testimony Re: Conversation with Robert Sobel and/or Others About the CIA," filed October 23, 1990, *U.S. v. Amers*.

Judge Rafeedie. . .lashed out at Braun: Transcript of the hearing, filed in *U.S. vs. Amers*.

"I didn't pump 500 tons of cocaine into the ghetto": Garner, interview by LACSO investigators..

having convinced the Costa Mesa detectives: The details of Lister's deal with Costa Mesa police are contained in a Memorandum of Understanding dated August 26, 1988, between Lister and the Orange County District Attorney's Office, filed in *People v. Ronald Jay Lister*, F13502, Harbor Municipal Court,

"Ball indicated that Lister": Meza's comments appeared in CIA-IG, 59–61.

Details of Lister's plea bargain with the DEA, his prison letter to Weekly, his letters to the court, and his role as a DEA informant are found in DOJ-IG, Ch.5, pt.2, secs. H through K.

"received instructions from Columbia to wire transfer the money": Lister's involvement with the

Colombians while a DEA informant is revealed in a series of DEA-6 reports dated April 25, 1991, June 4, 1991, June 6, 1991, and June 10, 1991, filed as exhibits to LACSO case. Additional information is contained in Assistant U.S. Attorney L.J. O'Neale, "Government's Answer to Defendant's Objections to Presentence Report and Sentencing Memorandum," June 22, 1993, *U.S. v. Jose Enrique Urda Jr.*, 92 CR 1308, U.S. District Court, Southern District of California.

"'By the way, we want to kill this guy Lister'": Author interviewed the prosecutor who handled the case, who spoke on background.

"Smith waxed at length": Gale Holland, "L.A. Drug Case Becomes Lurid," *San Diego Union Tribune*, October 6, 1991.

Emmick's letter on Ross's behalf cited in DOJ-IG, Ch.6, pt.3, sec. 4c.

23. "He had the backing of a superpower"

"I did a lot of favors to the Colombians": Blandón GJ, 18.

Colombian Humberto Cardona: Blandón identified Cardona as one of his suppliers in two interviews with FBI agents Don Allen and Bruce Burroughs on October 8, 1992, and September 1, 1993, FBI file 245-B-SF-96287.

Sergio Guerra, the smooth Mexican millionaire: Guerra's background and holdings detailed in 1992 detention hearing in *U.S. v. Blandón*.

reunited with the Meneses family: Blandón's reinvolvement with Meneses and his kin was spelled out in his GJ testimony.

secret indictment against Meneses: *U.S. v. Juan Norwin Meneses Cantarero a/k/a Norwin Meneses*, 89 CR 0064, U.S. District Court, Northern District of California, filed February 8, 1989.

Details of Meneses' indictment and work for the DEA during 1987-90 are found in DOJ-IG, Ch. 3, pt. 3, secs. H and I.

"it materialized that there was some information": Eric Swenson, interview by author.

Meneses. . .began reclaiming the holdings: The payments to Meneses and the other members of his drug ring were discovered by Georg Hodel, who obtained a November 30, 1996, report of Indemnification for Unjustified Confiscation from the Nicaraguan Ministry of Finance. Listed were convicted trafficker Luis Enrique Meneses ($930,000); Norwin's wife, Maritza, ($53,000), Troilo Sanchez ($353,000) and Horacio Pereira's heirs ($30,000.)

Enrique Miranda Jaime: Miranda was interviewed extensively by Georg Hodel and Hodel's wife, Carmen Maria Santos, who became Miranda's attorney upon his return to Nicaragua in 1996.

"sending guns to the FMLN in El Salvador": Meneses's statements concerning Miranda were contained in "Declaration to Investigators," November 20, 1991, filed in Nicaraguan Supreme Court.

Meneses "had on his payroll": Miranda's statement was handwritten and filed as an exhibit to the drug trafficking case against him in Nicaragua in 1992.

"you almost needed flatbed trucks": Rafael Cornejo, interview by author.

secretly taped. . .by DEA informant John Arman: The tapes of Arman's and Blandón's discussions were turned over to defense lawyers during Blandón's criminal case in San Diego in 1992 but never introduced into evidence. The author was permitted to hear and copy the tapes by a source who had access to them.

"Blandón is preparing to move back to Nicaragua": Chuck Jones, DEA-6, *Subject: Undercover Negotiations Between [deleted] and Suspect Danilo Blandón*, April 12, 1990.

Arman arrived at the Old Bonita Store. . .wired for sound: Chuck Jones, DEA-6, *Subject: Undercover Meeting with Sergio Guerra and Oscar Blandón*, July 23, 1990. Author also has tape of the conversation.

"going to convert it to crack anyway": Chuck Jones, DEA-6, *Subject: Undercover Negotiations with Danilo Blandón*, June 14, 1991.

"They are going to put you in jail": Tapes of Blandón's conversations with Roger Sandino were obtained by author.

Sandino had given the DEA the slip: Chuck Jones, DEA-6, *Subject: Ongoing Undercover Negotiations and Surveillance of Danilo Blandón et al*., September 15, 1991.

"He had a big wedding here": Roger Mayorga, interview by author and Georg Hodel.

golden opportunity to arrest Blandón: The incident at the border was described in *U.S. v. Sergio Guerra-Deguer*, 91 CR 810T, U.S. District Court, Southern District of California, filed Aug 27, 1991.

"money orders were on their way to Mexico": O'Neale, comments during a detention hearing for Blandón in 1992, *U.S. v. Blandón*, cited earlier.

LAPD strike force arrested him: Described by O'Neale during detention hearing.

"I actually had a better case": Ron Hodges, interview by author.

Nicaraguan lawmen were after Norwin Meneses: Details of the Meneses investigation came from author's interviews with Mayorga, Rene Vivas, Miranda, Meneses, and Frank Vigil, and a review of the case files at the Nicaraguan Supreme Court.

Vivas. . .was well acquainted with Norwin: Rene Vivas, interview by author and Georg Hodel.

"She was something else": Roberto Vargas, interview by author and Georg Hodel.

story made several U.S. newspapers: "Record Cocaine Seizure," *L.A. Times*, November 5, 1991; and Jonathan Marshall, "Nicaraguans Arrest Ex-Bay Man Linked to Cocaine, Contras," *San Francisco Chronicle*, December 16, 1991.

The DOD and State Department cables concerning Meneses were mentioned in CIA-IG, 50–51.

"How do you explain. . .that Norwin Meneses": The judges' questioning of Mayorga was contained in "Declarcion Testifical," November 21, 1991, part of the case file in the Nicaraguan Supreme Court. Mayorga was also hauled before the Nicaraguan National Assembly's Committee on Defense and Government in late 1991 and grilled by Committee Chairman Frank Duarte, a friend and attorney of Meneses

paid a deranged inmate. . .to knife Miranda: The alleged assassination attempt was reported in "He Tried to Murder Miranda," *Barricada*, August 22, 1992; and "Miranda: 'Paragon para asesinarme," *El Nuevo Diario*, August 17, 1992.

Chamorro government fired Rene Vivas: Michael Reid, "Chamorro Fires Police Chief to Appease U.S.," *Manchester Guardian*, September 13, 1992; "Sandinista Police Officers Dismissed," *Facts on File*, September 17, 1992, 694; and Shirley Christian, "Managua Seesaw: U.S. vs. Sandinistas," *New York Times*, September 8, 1992.

24. "They're gonna forget I was a drug dealer"

The identity of the media representatives were contained in media permission requests in Ross's prison files from Phoenix, which Ross made available to the author.

"Soft-spoken": Erin J. Aubry, "Ex-Drug Dealer Out to Stage Turnaround," *L.A. Times*, November 14, 1993.

"A capitalist": Al Salvato, "The Man Who Brought Crack to Town," *Cincinnati Post*, October 24, 1992.

"Standing on the bare stage": Aubry, "Ex-Drug Dealer Out to Stage Turnaround."

"Next we have the story of a young man": Forrest Sawyer, correspondent for *Day One*, "Profile: Ex-Drug Dealer 'Freeway' Hopes to Offer Youth Center to South Central Los Angeles," November 29, 1993.

"more than 200 people": James Bolden, "Ricky Ross: Ex-Drug Lord Wants to Give Back to S. Central," *Los Angeles Sentinel*, December 9, 1993.

"The notorious Los Angeles drug lord": Jesse Katz, "Former L.A. Drug Kingpin Is Set Free," *Los Angeles Times*, September 1, 1994.

Compton crack dealer, Leroy "Chico" Brown: Brown, interview by author.

"get a little something right now": The tapes and transcripts of some of Ross's conversations with Blandón were introduced into evidence in *U.S. v. James*.

According to Blandón's notes: These notes were introduced into evidence in *U.S. v. James*.

"This guy won't leave me alone": James Galipeau, interview by author; Galipeau also testified as a defense witness for Ross in *U.S. v. James*.

"take care of Tony": The meetings in the restaurant parking lots were taped by Blandón, and the tapes were introduced as evidence in *U.S. v. James*.

"saga of Ricky Ross' rise and fall": Jesse Katz, "Deposed King of Crack," *L.A. Times*, December 20, 1994.

"Let him pay": Polak, quoted in Katz, "Deposed King of Crack."

"They burned rubber": Charles Jones, testimony before Grand Jury No. 94–4, U.S. District Court, Southern District of California, March 15, 1995.

Ross told them everything: Judy Gustafson, DEA-6, *Subject: Arrest and Interview of Ricky Ross*, March 7, 1995.

"I cussed his Mom out": Norman Tillman, quoted in Jesse Katz, "Sting Snares Drug Lord Who Vowed to Go Straight," *Los Angeles Times*, March 22, 1995.

"I caught a lot of shit": Jesse Katz, interview by author.

25. "Things are moving all around us"

The quotes in this chapter were largely taken from my interviews with the subjects mentioned, most of which were tape-recorded and later transcribed.

I walked into a roomful of DEA agents: The quotes from this session come from a memorandum I prepared immediately following the meeting.

three CIA cables about me: CIA-IG, 51–52.

Georg's discovery was front-page news: Roberto Orosco, "Escapo un grande del narcotrafico," *La Prensa*, November 29, 1995; and Heriberto Mercado, "Ex militar narco escapa de prision," *La Tribuna*, November 29, 1995.

Miranda was captured: Miranda, whose entry into the States was legal since he had a valid visa, was literally kidnapped by the FBI in Miami and thrown on a plane to Nicaragua at the request of the Nicaraguan police. His kidnapping was covered extensively in the Nicaraguan press. See, for example, Roberto Orosco, "Miranda, gran jefe de la droga, enviado a Managua," *La Prensa*, December 3, 1996, 1; Lizbeth Garcia, "Recaptura de Miranda Jaime levanta ola de acusactiones," *Barricada*, December 22, 1996; Mario Guevara Somarriba, "Recapturan en Miami al reo Miranda Jaime," *El Nuevo Diario*, December 24, 1996; and Leonardo Coca Palacios, "Miranda Jaime se esfumo?" *El Nuevo Diario*, December 29, 1996. Miranda was finally released from prison in April 1998.

26. "This matter, if true, would be classified"

"The United States believes": L. J. O'Neale, "Government's Motion in Limine to Preclude Reference to the Central Intelligence Agency and for Reciprocal Discovery," February 26, 1996, filed in *U.S. v. James*.

The conversation was recorded: The sidebar discussions, as well as the testimony, in federal criminal trials are tape-recorded, and the tapes are available for purchase by any member of the public at remarkably reasonable rates, a service that court reporters, for obvious reasons, don't advertise. Thanks to federal public defender Maria Forde for this invaluable tip. The public defenders buy the tapes, she said, because they can't afford typed transcripts either.

"taught [Ross] the trade": Jesse Katz, "Drug Trial to Focus on Sting; DEA, Former Supplier Offer Glimpse into World of Informants," *Los Angeles Times*, March 5, 1996.

"I don't think my client's life": The in-court conversations in this chapter are taken from the tapes of the proceedings in *U.S. v. James*.

27. "A very difficult decision"

Interviews of the jurors provided to the author by a source.

Mercury News executive editor: Ceppos's comments to *Newsweek* reported in "Cracks in the Story," November 11, 1996, 65.

New York Times reporter Seymour Hersh: The reaction of the press to Hersh's story is chronicled in Kathryn S. Olmstead, Challenging the Secret Government (Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina Press, 1996), 33–39.

"The unlimited space of the Web": The chapter on online journalism in Encarta's 1997 yearbook was written by Neil Chase of Northwestern University.

The Associated Press noted: Elizabeth Weise, "CIA-Crack Story Fueled Interest in Web," AP, December 5, 1996.

A Boston Globe reporter: Adam Pertman, "CIA-Drug Link Stories Outrage Blacks in L.A.," *Boston Globe*, October 6, 1996.

infuriated the right-wing *Washington Times*: Bill Gertz, "Deutch's Reaction to Drug Rumor Hit," *Washington Times*, September 24, 1996.

And on the editorial page: Arnaud de Borchgrave, "Ritualistic Revival of Assaults on CIA," *Washington Times*, September 24, 1996.

Newsweek devoted an entire page: Gregory L. Vistica and Vern E. Smith, "Was the CIA Involved in the Crack Epidemic?" *Newsweek*, September 30, 1996, 72.

Time that month: Jack E. White," Crack, Contras and Cyberspace," *Time*, September 30, 1996.

"Meanwhile, we continued advancing the story. . .": Gary Webb and Pamela Kramer, "Sealed records may show CIA drug link," *San Jose Mercury News*, Sept. 29, 1996, 1; Gary Webb and Pamela Kramer, "Affadavit: Cops knew of drug ring," *San Jose Mercury News*, Oct. 3, 1996, 1; Gary Webb and Pamela Kramer, "More hints of government involvement," *San Jose Mercury News*, Oct. 6, 1996, 1.

Eastland had a history: The Justice Department's role in spreading disinformation about Contra drug investigations in the mid-1980s is detailed in Joel Millman, "Narco-terrorism: A Tale of Two Stories," *Columbia Journalism Review*, September/October 1986, 51; and Peter Dale Scott and Jonathan Marshall, *Cocaine Politics* (Berkeley: University of California Press, 1991), 177.

The *Washington Post* had just moved a story: Roberto Suro and Walter Pincus, "The CIA and Crack:

Evidence is Lacking of Alleged Plot," *Washington Post*, October 4, 1996.

Ceppos fired off a blistering letter: Though the *Post* didn't run it, the *Mercury News* posted the letter on the Internet on the Mercury Center's Dark Alliance Web page (www.sjmercury.com/drugs).

a story in the *Mercury*'s archives: Walter Pincus, "How I Traveled Abroad on CIA Subsidy," *San Jose Mercury News*, February 18, 1967.

Pincus's previous association with the CIA: Pincus, review of Agee's book, *New York Times Book Review*, August 3, 1975.

"we have withheld a great deal of information": Pincus's appearance on the *MacNeil/Lehrer NewsHour* occurred on May 12, 1986.

Walsh wrote that at a critical moment: Lawrence Walsh, *Firewall* (New York: Norton, 1997), 421–22.

The *L.A. Times* and the *New York Times* struck next.: The *New York Times*'s attack on Dark Alliance appeared on October 20, 1996, headlined "Tale of CIA and Drugs Has Life of Its Own." The *L.A. Times* series ran for three days, beginning on October 20, 1996.

Katz trotted out a number of other cocaine dealers: Jesse Katz, "Tracking the Genesis of the Crack Trade," *L.A. Times*, October 20, 1996.

the *L.A. Times* absolved the CIA: Doyle McManus, "Examining Charges of CIA Role in Crack Sales," *L.A. Times*, October 21, 1996.

"Sixty thousand?": Rafael Cornejo, interview by author.

McManus had played a central role: Doyle McManus and Ronald Ostrow, "U.S. Links Top Sandinistas to Drug Trafficking," *L.A. Times*, July 18, 1984.

described by investigative reporter Carl Bernstein: Bernstein, "The CIA and the Media," *Rolling Stone*, October 20, 1977, 55.

A day later: Ronald Ostrow, "3 Seized in Miami Cocaine Smuggling Linked to Nicaraguan Interior Minister," *L.A. Times*, July 19, 1984.

McManus and Ostrow later teamed up: Doyle McManus and Ronald Ostrow, "No Supporting Evidence, DEA Says: Senators Probing Reports of Contra Drug Smuggling," *L.A. Times*, February 18, 1987.

He banged out a letter to the reporter: Cabezas provided a copy of his letter to McManus to the author, along with McManus's response of April 9, 1987.

Enrique Miranda, the former Meneses aide. . .had been found in Miami. . .:Gary Webb, "U.S. gave visa to Nicaraguan drug trafficker," *San Jose Mercury News*, Dec. 31, 1996, 11A.

solved one of the final mysteries of the Southern Front: Hull's escape from Costa Rica and the DEA's suspected involvement in it had been reported previously and ignored by the national media. Brian Donovan of *Newsday* initially reported it in 1991 as part of a retrospective look at the bombing at La Penca in 1984 that killed an American journalist. Martha Honey and David Myers freelanced a piece that appeared in the *San Francisco Chronicle*, August 14, 1991, under the headline "U.S. Probing Drug Agent's Activities in Costa Rica." The information for that story came largely from San Francisco private investigator Josiah Thompson, who was hired by defense lawyer Marvin Cahn to investigate a case involving an accused trafficker named Juan Merino Noriega. Merino was arrested in 1990 as part of California's biggest cocaine bust, nearly 970 kilos, but despite the size of the case, the Justice Department permitted Merino to plead guilty to a money-laundering count rather than risk having the DEA's involvement in Hull's escape surface publicly in court.

"The United States will not discuss in this memorandum the reason that defendant Merino-Noriega was permitted to plead guilty to the money laundering charge instead of the importation charges other than to remind the Court that the reasons relate in large part to various submissions that were made and remain under seal," Asst. U.S. Attorney Ross W. Nadel wrote in Merino's sentencing memorandum, Dec. 10, 1992, *U.S. v. Merino-Noriega*, 90 CR 0177, Northern District of California.

I believed the story Georg and I had significantly advanced the public knowledge of Hull's escape, since we now had the pilot admitting everything on the record, as well as an on-the-record interview with the investigating agent for DEA internal affairs, who thought Justice had covered up the case. The *Mercury* never ran it.

Ricevuto believed Perez: Anthony Ricevuto, interview by author.

Whether similar pressures were applied to Ceppos: Naturally, rumors swirled that the CIA or other government agencies brought pressure to bear on the *Mercury News*'s owners, Knight-Ridder Newspapers, to torpedo my investigation and kill the follow-up stories but I never put much stock in those suspicions. Subsequently, I learned that Knight-Ridder has a history of collaborating with the CIA, once agreeing to provide journalistic "cover" for CIA agents (see John M. Crewdson and Joseph B. Treaster, "Worldwide Propaganda Network built by the CIA," *New York Times*, Dec. 26, 1977, 1). Additionally, Georg Hodel discovered a CIA cable in a Miami court file suggesting that a longtime editor on the Latin American desk of Knight-Ridder's flagship paper, *The Miami Herald*, had an operational relationship with the CIA during the 1960s. Suffice it to say that I am not quite as dismissive of suspicions of government pressure on the *Mercury*'s owners as I once was.

Shortly before I arrived at the *Plain Dealer*: The *Plain Dealer*'s retraction of the Jackie Presser story is discussed in James Neff, *Mobbed Up* (New York: Atlantic Monthly Press, 1989), 337–53. In addition, the author has copies of the debriefings of the Cleveland mobster Angelo "Big Ange" Lonardo, who reported the reasons for the PD's retraction to the authorities.

The Contras

THE FUERZA DEMOCRÁTICA NICARAGÜENSE (FDN)

BERMÜDEZ, ENRIQUE—"Commandante 380," the supreme military commander of the FDN. Former military attache for the Somoza regime in Washington. Hired by the CIA in 1980 to reassemble Somoza's scattered brigades into a fighting force. Close friend of the Meneses family. Reportedly trafficked in arms and cocaine with Norwin Meneses. Murdered in Managua in 1991, a slaying that has never been solved.

CALERO, ADOLFO—Longtime CIA agent, former manager of the Coca-Cola bottling plant in Managua. Selected by the CIA in 1983 to lead its political wing. Worked closely with Oliver North. Met with Norwin Meneses several times during the years Meneses was selling drugs for the Contras. Now a member of the Nicaraguan Assembly.

PEÑA, RENATO—Spokesman for the FDN branch in San Francisco and one of Norwin Meneses's cocaine dealers. Admitted hauling millions in drug profits from San Francisco to Los Angeles for delivery to the Contras during the early 1980s. Convicted of cocaine trafficking in 1985.

SÁNCHEZ, FERNANDO—Former Nicaraguan ambassador to Guatemala, and the FDN's representative in that country during the war. Identified by the FBI in 1982 as one of the cocaine suppliers to the Contra drug operation in San Francisco. Brother of FDN founder Aristides Sanchez.

SÁNCHEZ, ARISTIDES—Wealthy landowner under Somoza who became the head of supplies and logistics for the FDN. Also went on the CIA payroll in the early 1980s as an aide to Enrique Bermúdez. Allegedly served as the conduit for cocaine money flowing from the Meneses drug ring in California in the early 1980s. Died in Miami in 1993.

UNION DEMOCRÁTICA NICARAGÜENSE—
FUERZA ARMADA RESISTENCIA NICARAGÜENSES (UDN-FARN)

AVILES, FRANCISCO—U.S.-educated Nicaraguan lawyer and CIA asset who worked closely with the CIA in Costa Rica in the 1980s, funneling CIA and U.S. government funds to various Contra organizations. Brother-in-law of top Meneses cocaine trafficker Horacio Pereira. Directly involved in the San Francisco Frogman case in 1983, though never accused or charged with cocaine trafficking. In 1998 Aviles was working for the Nicaraguan government.

CABEZAS, CARLOS—While not a member of UDN-FARN, Cabezas supported it through his cocaine sales in San Francisco in the early 1980s. As a U.S. government witness, he testified that his drug profits were going to Contra organizations in Costa Rica. He pleaded guilty to drug charges in 1984 and served several years in prison. He is now practicing law in Managua.

CHAMORRO, EDMUNDO—Second in command to his brother, Fernando. Implicated in cocaine trafficking with the Meneses organization during Costa Rican police investigation in 1985, but never charged. Close ties to the CIA, according to a DEA report. Current whereabouts unknown.

CHAMORRO, FERNANDO "EL NEGRO"—Commander of the UDN-FARN, which was based in Costa Rica during most of the war. An alcoholic whose army was teeming with Cuban-American drug traffickers, terrorists, and assorted other ne'er-do-wells. While working for the CIA, he was approached by Norwin Meneses and asked to haul cocaine to the United States from Costa Rica, but he was never directly implicated in cocaine trafficking. Died in Nicaragua in the early 1990s. (Fernando and Edmundo were only distantly related to the influential Chamorro clan that included martyred newspaper editor Pedro Joaquin Chamorro.)

RAPPACCIOLI, VICENTE—CIA asset based in Costa Rica. One of the leaders of UDN-FARN and related Contra support groups. Directly involved in 1983 Frogman cocaine case, but never charged. He reportedly died in the early 1990s.

ZAVALA, JULIO—Major cocaine trafficker in San Francisco Bay Area during early 1980s, and top-ranking U.S.-based member of UDN-FARN. Recruited Carlos Cabezas into Contra drug ring. Convicted of cocaine trafficking in 1984, he now reportedly works as an informant for the FBI.

ALIANZA REVOLUCIONARIA DEMOCRÁTICA (ARDE)

AGUADO, MARCOS—CIA-trained pilot, business associate, and reputed drug-trafficking partner of Norwin Meneses. Aguado got ARDE commander Eden Pastora involved with Colombian drug traffickers. Accused of cocaine trafficking in Costa Rica, he fled to El Salvador, where he assumed a high-ranking position with the Salvadoran Air Force. Implicated but never charged in Meneses's 1991 cocaine bust in Nicaragua. Currently in San Salvador.

GONZÁLEZ, SEBASTIAN "GUACHAN"—CIA asset who was heavily involved in drug trafficking in Panama and Costa Rica. Close to Manuel Noriega. Suspected of involvement in the beheading of Contra supporter Hugo Spadafora, shortly before Spadafora was to make information about Noriega's drug involvement public. Gonzalez is a close friend of Norwin Meneses and, according to the CIA, was a fellow cocaine trafficker during the Contra war. Now living in Panama.

PASTORA, EDeN—"Commandante Zero." Former Sandinista war hero. Recruited by CIA officer Dewey Clarridge in 1981 to assume command of the Southern Front Contra armies based in Costa Rica. Longtime friend of Danilo Blandón, from whom he received money, vehicles, and rent-free lodging. Eventually broke with CIA and was accused by the agency of consorting with drug traffickers. Ran for Nicaraguan president in 1996.

The Investigators

CASTILLO, CELERINO—Decorated Vietnam War veteran, former Texas policeman, and former DEA agent assigned to El Salvador and Guatemala during mid-1980s. Discovered Contra cocaine trafficking at Ilopango Air Force Base in El Salvador and began reporting it. Subsequently subjected to numerous internal DEA investigations and forced to retire on disability in early 1990s. Currently lives in Texas.

GORDON, THOMAS—Veteran Los Angeles County narcotics investigator. As a sergeant for the L.A. County Sheriff's Office in 1986, Gordon led the investigation into and obtained the search warrants for Danilo Blandón's drug operation. After his retirement, he was indicted by the Justice Department and accused of failing to report stolen drug money as income. Convicted on income tax charges. Currently lives in San Dimas, California.

GUZZETTA, JERRY—Bell, California, police department's sole narcotics investigator. Began the investigation that led to the arrests of Danilo and Chepita Blandón in 1986. Subsequently subjected to internal affairs investigation involving missing cocaine from evidence locker, but never charged. Retired in early 1990s and lives in Los Angeles area.

JUAREZ, ROBERT—Veteran L.A. County Sheriff's Office narcotics officer who raided Ronald Lister's house in 1986 and reported finding Contra and CIA-related material there. Juarez, regarded as one of the department's best undercover operatives, was subsequently indicted by the Justice Department and convicted of stealing cocaine money. He lives in Los Angeles.

KELSO, JOSEPH—Former CIA operative and undercover Customs informant. Kelso pleaded guilty to attempting to buy Harpoon missiles for the Iraqis in the early 1980s. Investigated allegations of the involvement of DEA agents in cocaine trafficking in Costa Rica during Contra war. Was beaten and threatened with death by DEA agents, deported, and arrested for probation violation upon his return to the United States. Now working somewhere in Arizona.

POLAK, STEVE—Longtime Los Angeles Police Department narcotics investigator. One of the founders of the Freeway Rick Task Force. Subsequently indicted on federal charges of corruption, income tax evasion, and civil rights violations. Pleaded guilty to misdemeanor civil rights violations and retired. Lives in Los Angeles.

The CIA and Fellow Travelers

CLARRIDGE, DUANE "DEWEY"—Former chief of the CIA's Latin American Division from 1981 to 1984. Oversaw creation of Contra project and recruited many of its leaders. Indicted in 1991 on seven counts of perjury and providing false information to Congress during the Iran-Contra scandal. Pardoned before trial by ex-CIA director George Bush.

FERNÁNDEZ, JOSEPH—CIA station chief in Costa Rica from 1984 to 1986. Integral part of Oliver North's illegal Contra resupply operation. Responsible for pushing Eden Pastora out as commander of Contra forces in Costa Rica and promoting Fernando Chamorro and his Cuban-American legion, which included terrorists and drug traffickers. Indicted in 1989 on four counts of providing false information to Congress during the Iran-Contra scandal. The case was dropped when the U.S. attorney general refused to declassify evidence needed in the case. Fernandez now works with Oliver North at North's publicly traded company, Guardian Technologies, which sells security consulting services and body armor.

FIERS, ALAN JR.—Took over Contra project in 1984 from Dewey Clarridge. Admitted having information on drug trafficking through Ilopango Air Force Base in El Salvador and also had knowledge of Contra drug dealing in Costa Rica. Pleaded guilty to withholding information from Congress during Iran-Contra scandal. Later pardoned by George Bush. Now works in Washington as government relations specialist.

"GÓMEZ, IVAN"—Pseudonym of Venezuelan CIA contract agent who handled logistics on the Southern Front for the Contras during the war. Identified by Carlos Cabezas as the conduit for drug money from the Meneses organization in San Francisco to the Contras in Costa Rica. "Gómez" denied it in an interview with the CIA. Married former girlfriend of Meneses lieutenant Marcos Aguado and is reportedly living in Spain.

HULL, JOHN—Indiana farmer who was CIA liaison to the Contras in Costa Rica. Hull's ranch was reportedly the site of numerous drug trans-shipments, an allegation he has long denied. Hull worked closely with suspected drug traffickers Marcos Aguado and Dagoberto Nunez on Contra projects in Costa

Rica. He was indicted in 1989 on drug trafficking and murder charges there and fled the country with the assistance of the Costa Rican DEA office. The drug charges were later dropped, but he was permanently forbidden reentry into Costa Rica. Hull is currently living in Indiana.

NIEVES, ROBERT "THE SNOWMAN"—Head of DEA office in Costa Rica while Meneses and Dagoberto Nunez were working as informants there. Meneses identified Nieves as his control agent. While he was DEA attache in Costa Rica, the DEA office was alleged by Costa Rican officials to be involved in drug trafficking and protecting cocaine labs in Contra war zones, charges that were never proven. Nieves went on to become the head of all DEA operations internationally and resigned in 1995. He works for Oliver North and Joe Fernandez in the security business and is a frequently cited drug expert for network television news.

NUÑEZ, DAGOBERTO—Cuban Bay of Pigs veteran and CIA-DEA operative suspected of cocaine trafficking in Costa Rica. Worked closely with North's illegal Contra resupply operation and helped U.S. government funnel money to the Contras there. Helped John Hull escape from Costa Rica. Reportedly runs a cellular telephone dealership in San Jose, Costa Rica.

OWEN, ROBERT—Former prep school counselor in Los Angeles who became a key CIA operative in Costa Rica for Oliver North and Joe Fernandez. Owen served as a go-between, or "cutout," for the agency's dealings with the Cuban-American drug dealers assisting the Contras on the Southern Front. Intervened in the Kelso case and destroyed alleged evidence of DEA involvement with cocaine trafficking. Reportedly working as a teacher in Florida.

SEAL, BARRY—Major drug trafficker in southern United States in early 1980s. Became CIA-DEA operative in 1984 White House attempt to entrap Sandinista leaders in cocaine bust. Reportedly flew weapons for the Contras and returned to the States with cocaine. Murdered in New Orleans in 1986 by Colombian hit men.

The Crack Dealers

BROWN, LEROY "CHICO"—Corner Pocket Crip and major Compton crack dealer with the Patrick Johnson organization. Became involved with Ricky Ross as a business partner in early 1990s. Pleaded guilty to drug charges in San Diego in 1996 and is serving an eleven-year sentence.

NEWELL, OLLIE "BIG LOC"—Ricky Ross's childhood friend and partner in what would eventually become South Central L.A.'s largest crack distribution network in the early to mid-1980s. Convicted of drug charges in Indiana in late 1980s and released from prison in 1997. Now living in Los Angeles.

ROSS, "FREEWAY" RICKY—Leader of South Central's first major crack distribution ring. In the space of four years Ross went from selling fractions of an ounce to shipping multimillion-dollar cocaine shipments across America. Convicted of cocaine trafficking in 1996, he is currently serving life without the possibility of parole.

The Meneses Organization

CORÑEJO, RAFAEL—Distributor for Norwin Meneses in San Francisco Bay Area since mid-1970s. His territory stretched all the way to Portland, Oregon. Arrested, tortured, and jailed by Manuel Noriega's men in 1977 while he was smuggling cocaine through Panama for Norwin. Convicted of income tax evasion in San Francisco in 1985. Indicted and jailed for cocaine trafficking in 1992; convicted and sentenced to thirty years in 1996.

MENESES, EDMUNDO—Former Nicaraguan ambassador to Guatemala, former general in Nicaraguan National Guard, former chief of police in Managua, all before Somoza's fall. Norwin's brother and main protector. Probable CIA asset. Graduate of U.S. Army School of the Americas. Assassinated in Guatemala in 1978 by guerrillas shortly before Somoza's overthrow.

MENESES, GUILLERMO—Nephew of Norwin. Handled cocaine distribution for Meneses family in Bay Area and Los Angeles in the early 1990s. Targeted by FBI in Cornejo investigation but never charged.

MENESES, JAIME—Nephew of Norwin and son of Jaime Meneses Sr. Involved in cocaine trafficking in San Francisco Bay Area since late 1970s. Became a crack addict in the late 1980s and dropped from view.

MENESES, JAIRO—Nephew of Norwin and son of Edmundo Meneses. Involved in cocaine trafficking in San Francisco Bay Area since late 1970s. Arrested and jailed in 1985. Reportedly rearrested on cocaine charges in the early 1990s.

MENESES, NORWIN "EL PERICO"—The King of Drugs. Leader of the Meneses organization. Believed to have been the Cali cartel's representative in Nicaragua. Drug trafficker since early 1970s. Lived in United States from 1979 to 1985. Close connections to Cuban anti-Communist movement. Worked for the Contras as a recruiter, arms supplier, and benefactor during the entire war. Worked with DEA from 1985 to 1991. Indicted in the States in 1989 on drug charges but never arrested. Arrested and jailed in Nicaragua in 1991, sentenced to twelve years in prison.

MIRANDA, ENRIQUE—Former Sandinista intelligence officer, CIA asset, DEA informant, and right-hand man to Norwin Meneses from 1989 to 1991. Part of supersecret Sandinista dirty-tricks unit inside the Interior Ministry. Testified against Meneses in Nicaragua in 1992 and reportedly targeted for death by the drug lord as a result. Miranda "escaped" from prison in 1995 and was recaptured in Miami in 1996, where he was kidnapped by the FBI, allegedly for the escape, and put on a plane back to Nicaragua.

PEREIRA, HORACIO—Friend and business partner of Norwin Meneses in prewar Nicaragua. Joined him in exile in Costa Rica where he become one of Meneses's top cocaine dealers there. Identified by FBI in 1982 as source of cocaine for Frogman drug ring in San Francisco. Conduit of drug funds from Meneses operation in Bay Area to Contras in Costa Rica and Honduras. Convicted of cocaine trafficking in Costa Rica in 1986 and escaped. Meneses says he was murdered in Guatemala in the early 1990s.

SÁNCHEZ, TROILO—Brother of FDN officials Aristides and Fernando Sanchez. Business partner of Meneses in prewar Nicaragua and in Costa Rican exile during the 1980s. Flew for the CIA in Nicaragua in the 1960s. Identified by FBI in 1982 as source of cocaine for Frogman ring in San Francisco. Arrested on drug charges in Costa Rica in mid-1980s but acquitted. Recovered drug addict. Now lives in Nicaragua.

VIGIL, FRANK—Former Nicaraguan advertising executive and longtime business partner of Norwin Meneses in prewar Managua and in Costa Rican exile. In the 1980s he worked in Mexican political campaigns and was in business with the Venezuelan government in Florida. Suspected of selling cocaine for the Contras in Los Angeles in early 1980s. Indicted by Nicaraguan government in 1991 on cocaine charges with Meneses but was acquitted. Now lives in Managua.

The Blandón Organization

BLANDÓN, DANILO "CHANCHIN"—Head of multiton cocaine distribution ring in Los Angeles from 1981 to 1991. First major trafficker to make inroads into South Central Los Angeles in early 1980s, providing the street gangs with their first direct connection to the Colombian cocaine cartels. Longtime supplier to Freeway Rick Ross. Worked as part of Meneses organization, but struck out on his own in 1985. Founded FDN chapter in Los Angeles. Arrested and convicted of cocaine trafficking in 1992 and became DEA informant. Now divides his time between San Diego and Managua.

BLANDÓN, CHEPITA—Danilo Blandón's wife. Identified by the DEA as being closely involved in the trafficking activities of her husband. Arrested and jailed in 1992 but charges were dropped when Danilo agreed to become a DEA informant. Was made a naturalized United States citizen as a result of his cooperation.

CORRALES, HENRY—Cocaine distributor for Blandón in Los Angeles in early 1980s. One of Freeway Ricky Ross's first suppliers. Left the States in mid-1980s for Honduras. Current whereabouts unknown.

GUERRA, SERGIO—Mexican millionaire and owner of lucrative parking lot on Mexican border near Tijuana. Money launderer for Blandón in California and Florida. Business partner with Blandón in several used car lots. Convicted of money-laundering charges in early 1990s and sentenced to jail. Deported to Mexico, where he is reported to be living.

LISTER, RONALD JAY—Ex-police detective who served as a money launderer, security adviser, and mule for Blandón in the mid-1980s. Involved in arms deals with the Contras and security work for Salvadoran politicians and Iranian exiles. Has worked as FBI, DEA, and local police informant. Convicted of drug trafficking in late 1980s and sent to prison. Released in 1996. Current whereabouts unknown.

MORENO, APARICIO—Colombian supplier to both Blandón and Meneses organizations during the Contra war. Reported ties to the FDN and CIA. Implicated in drug trafficking in Guatemala in 1988 in connection with top CIA agent there. Current whereabouts unknown.

MURILLO, ORLANDO—Chepita Blandón's uncle and suspected money launderer for Blandón organization. Economist who served on the board of Nicaragua's Central Bank before the revolution and managed many of the Somoza family businesses. Managua representative of Swiss Bank Corp. and Citizens and Southern Bank before the war. Became an investment banker in Florida while in exile. Elected to the Nicaraguan Assembly in 1996 and announced his resignation during an interview with the author and Georg Hodel. Though long suspected by the DEA of money laundering, he was never charged with a crime in the United States.

TORRES, JACINTO AND EDGAR "THE TREES"—Longtime friends and sometime rivals of Blandón in the cocaine business. Related by marriage to ex-Medellín cartel boss Pablo Escobar. Jacinto was convicted of drug charges in 1986. Both became DEA informants in early 1990s after conviction on cocaine charges.

GLOSSARY OF ORGANIZATIONS AND LOCATIONS

ARDE (Alizana Revolucionaria Democratica)—Contra faction based in Costa Rica and commanded by Eden Pastora, a former Sandinista.

Bloods—The smaller conglomeration of loosely affiliated L.A. street gangs. Formed in the early 1970s from the combination of the West Coast chapter of the Chicago-based Black Peace Stone Rangers and the L.A.-based Brim Blood Army and Pirus gangs. Blood colors are red.

Brigade 2506—U.S.-based organization made up primarily of Cuban veterans of the CIA-trained Bay of Pigs invasion forces.

CIA (Central Intelligence Agency)—The U.S. government's primary intelligence-gatherers. Its covert action side, the Directorate of Operations, has been the chief culprit behind Agency scandals and outrages.

Crips—The largest group of informally affiliated L.A. street gangs. Started in the late 1960s. Like the Bloods, the Crips are actually a loose confederation of smaller gangs, called "sets," which generally take their names from streets in their neighborhoods (ie. "Grape Street Crips," "Rollin' Forties Crips.") Crip colors are blue.

DEA (Drug Enforcement Administration)—A branch of the U.S. Department of Justice and the principal federal agency responsible for the enforcement of anti-drug laws. Successor to the Bureau of Narcotics and Dangerous Drugs (BNDD).

DIA (Defense Intelligence Agency)—Formed in 1961 as part of the Department of Defense. The primary intelligence service of the U.S. military. The DIA was heavily involved in Central America in the 1980s.

FDN (Fuerza Democratica Nicaragüense)—Contra faction created by the CIA, based in Honduras, and commanded by Enrique Bermúdez, a former National Guardsman. The FDN was the largest, most well-armed and best-trained of all the Contra factions.

FMLN (Frente Farbundo Marti Liberacion Nacional)—Leftist revolutionary group based in El Salvador and supported by the Sandinistas.

Frigorificos de Puntarenas—Costa Rican shrimp fishery set up by the Medellín cartel to launder drug money and transport cocaine shipments. Later purchased by Cuban anti-Communists and suspected drug traffickers and used by Oliver North and the Contras to launder humanitarian aid funds.

Ilopango—Airbase in El Salvador secretly used by the Contras, the CIA, and Oliver North's "Enterprise" to funnel weapons and supplies to the Contra units operating on the Southern Front in Costa Rica. Both the CIA and DEA had reports that Ilopango was used to transship cocaine.

LAPD—Los Angeles Police Department.

Legion of September 15—An early Contra group made up primarily of ex-National Guardsmen. Based in Guatemala where it committed crimes and political kidnappings and assassinations. Commanded by Ricardo (El Chino) Lau and Enrique Bermúdez, it later became the core of the FDN.

M-3 (Movimiento Tercera Via)—Tiny Contra splinter group based in Costa Rica. Commanded by Sebastian "Guachan" Gonzalez and staffed mainly with Cuban anti-Communist mereenaries.

Majors—The nickname of three elite detective units formed by the Los Angeles County Sheriff's office in the mid-1980s to combat major criminal organizations. Short for Major Violators.

NHAO (Nicaraguan Humanitarian Aid Office)—A State Department operation set up to distribute Congressionally authorized humanitaran aid to the Contras.

NSC (National Security Council)—Ostensibly, the President's advisors on national security matters. Under the Reagan Adminstration, it became an operational intelligence agency based inside the White

House.

Nicaraguan National Guard (La Guardia Nacional)—Anastasio Somoza's army, which also ran the national police, state security and intelligence services, the postal service, and customs agency.

OIJ (Organismo de Investigacion Judicial)—Costa Rican law enforcement agency similar in function to the FBI.

OSN (Oficina Seguridad Nacional)—Anastasio Somoza's secret police unit that monitored political dissidents.

Sandinistas (FRS)—Informal name of the Frente Revolucionario de Sandino, the leftist revolutionary guerrilla group that overthrew the U.S.-supported dictatorship of Anastasio Somoza in 1979.

UDN-FARN (Union Democratica Nicaragüense—Fuerzas Armadas Resistencia Nicaragüenses)—Early Contra faction based first in Honduras and then in Costa Rica, commanded by the erratic former Sandinsta Fernando "El Negro" Chamorro. UDN-FARN first joined forces with the FDN, left to link up with Pastora and ARDE, then left Pastora and rejoined the FDN under the umbrella group UNO.

UNO (United Nicaraguan Opposition)—A later CIA-inspired attempt to brush up the Contra's public image and gather all Contra factions under one group. UNO existed mostly as a fa_ade, as the FDN did the bulk of the fighting and retained most of the authority.

GARY WEBB (1955–2005) was an investigative reporter for 21 years, focusing on government and private sector corruption and winning more than 30 journalism awards. He was one of six reporters at the *San Jose Mercury News* to win a 1990 Pulitzer Prize for General News Reporting for their Loma Prieta earthquake that devastated northern California. He also received the 1997 Media Hero Award from the Institute for Alternative Journalism and in 1996 was named Journalist of the Year by the Bay Area Society of Professional Journalists. Webb also served as a consultant to the California State Legislature's Task Force on Government Oversight and was a contributing feature writer to *Esquire*, most recently exposing the widespread police policy of pulling over drivers for DWB (Driving While Black). In 1998, *Dark Alliance* was a finalist for the PEN/Newman's Own First Amendment Award. In 1999, it won the Firecracker Alternative Book (FAB) Award in the "Politics" category, and was a finalist for the Bay Area Book Reviewers Award for nonfiction.

CONGRESSWOMAN MAXINE WATERS is currently serving her ninth term representing California's South Central Los Angeles district.

DARK STAR

Henry Stevens

The Hidden History of German Secret Bases, Flying Disks & U-Boats

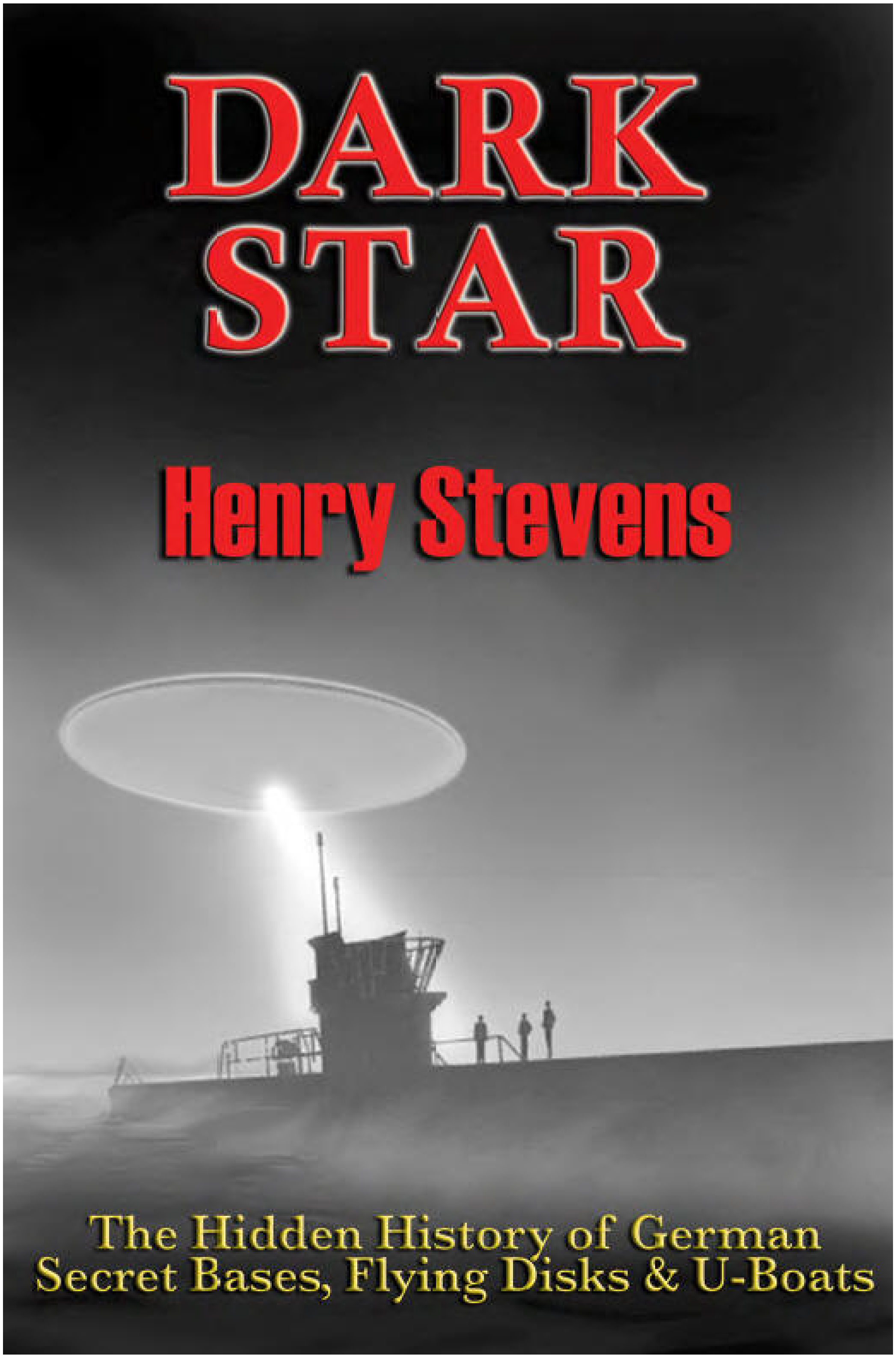

DARK STAR

Henry Stevens

The Hidden History of German Secret Bases, Flying Disks & U-Boats

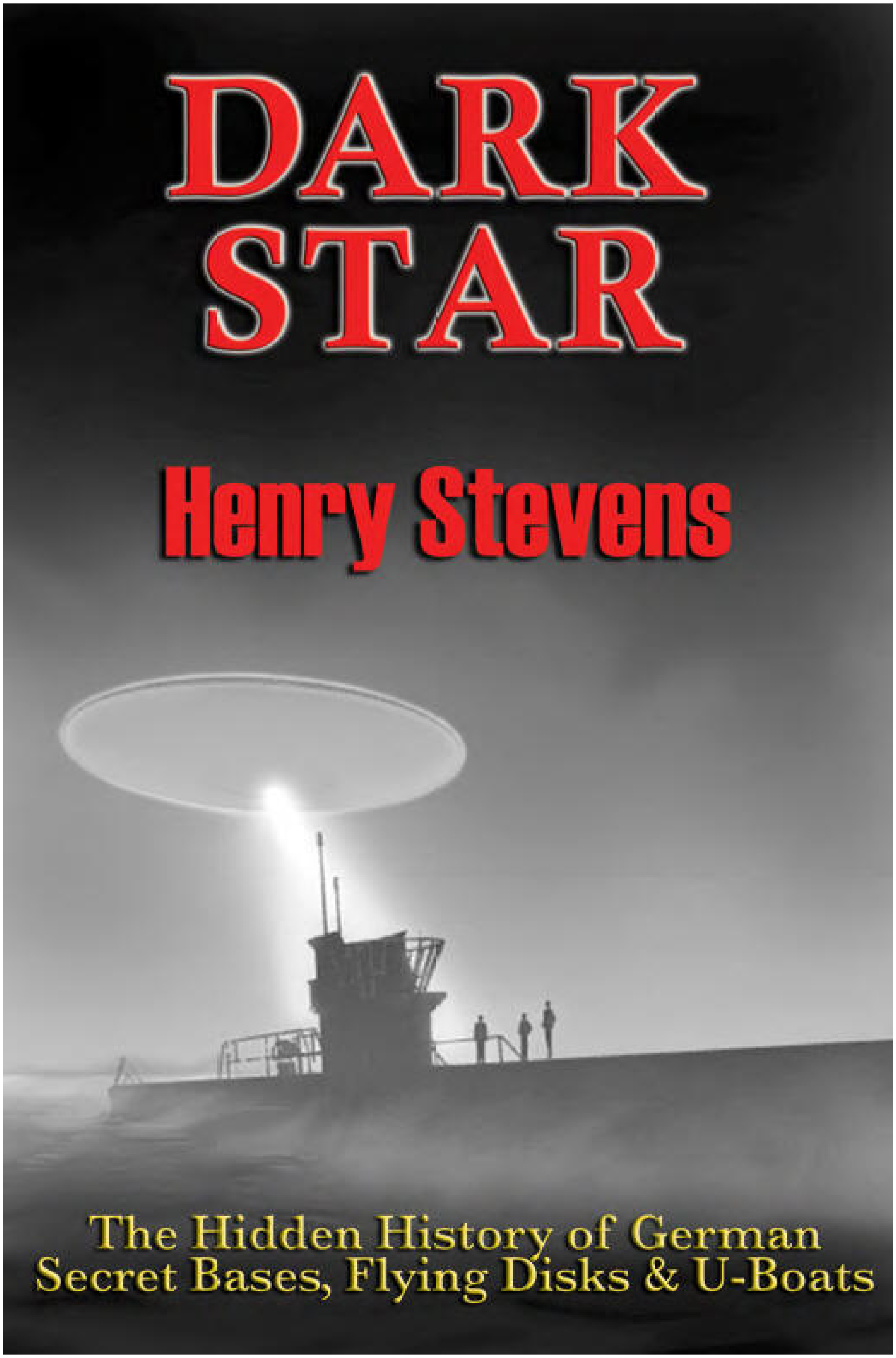

DARK STAR

Henry Stevens

The Hidden History of German Secret Bases, Flying Disks & U-Boats

DARK
STAR

Henry Stevens

Adventures Unlimited Press

Other Books by Henry Stevens:

HITLER'S FLYING SAUCERS

HITLER'S SUPPRESSED & STILL SECRET WEAPONS, SCIENCE & TECHNOLOGY

DARK
STAR

Unresolved Post-War
Nazi Mysteries

Henry Stevens

DARK STAR
by Henry Stevens

Copyright 2011

ISBN: 978-1-935487-40-1

All Rights Reserved

Published by:
Adventures Unlimited Press
One Adventure Place
Kempton, Illinois 60946 USA
auphq@frontiernet.net

www.adventuresunlimitedpress.com

DARK
STAR

Unresolved Post-War
Nazi Mysteries

Adventures Unlimited Press

Thanks to everyone who helped on this book.
Your research was invaluable.

DARK
STAR

PREFACE

A few things should be noted before beginning this book regarding its style and content:

All German to English translations are my own. I am not a professional translator nor will resources allow employment of one. Computer translations are still not acceptable and in fact take as much time or more time to correct as to start from scratch. In the words of the late Patrick McMahon: “It isn’t going to happen unless you make it happen.” Pat was not talking about translations but about life in general, yet it certainly applies in this instance. I have had to translate things pertinent to this book myself otherwise the book would never have been written.

In the text of this book, foreign words are not italicized. There are so many foreign words in this book that italicized text would appear to the extent of distraction. Most of these words are German but other languages do appear. Many times a translation of those words will appear immediately thereafter in parentheses. Overall, I do not think this is a great problem. Text quoted from other sources, directly, is extensive and is italicized.

Quotes from other authors do appear in italics except for especially long quotes that have a line-bar before and after the quote. This same method is used to display documents that need to be clarified or enlarged. This also applies to translated documents.

This book was written with the assumption that the reader will possess some interest and knowledge of the subject matter.

This book begins and ends in the time frame of roughly 1933 to 1989 but references a few years either side of this stretch have been made. It is assumed that the reader already knows the general course of events of World War Two in Europe and knows the aftermath and political outcome, the Cold War.

It is also assumed that the reader is already somewhat familiar with the genre dealing with German technology and weaponry developed during the war and kept secret afterward. This genre, lacking a satisfactory name but called “Nazi High-Tech” on occasion, deals with related issues involving history, places, and the people involved in this technology. It is really just history missed by professional historians who have at least failed to connect the dots.

Contents

Introduction

Part One: German Secret Bases

- The First Clues
- Norway
- Point 103
- German Flying Discs, Update
- Greenland, Part One
- Greenland, Part Two: Beaver Dam
- The Last Battalion: Legend and Related Events
- Repositories
- Point 211
- Fuerteventura

Electric Schauberger

South America and Otto Skorzeny

South America

The Third Power

Molecular Bomb

The Gentlemen and Their Luggage

PART TWO: FANTASTIC U-BOATS

Premise and Introduction

Preliminary Issues

Converted U-Boats

Tesla

Like Walter-Propulsion Only Better?

Tesla’s Self-Acting Engine, Part One

U-530

  Tesla’s Self-Acting Engine, Two?

Part Three: Zusammenfassung

  Putting It All Together

  Haunebu

  Mamas, Don’t Let Your Sons Grow Up To Be Bell-Boys

  The 3rd Power in Practice

DARK STAR

Unresolved Post-War Nazi Mysteries

INTRODUCTION

Having established the reality of German flying discs in my first book, *Hitler's Flying Saucers* and the scientific-technical sea from which flying discs and other wonders sprung in my second book, *Hitler's Secret and Still Suppressed Science, Weapons and Technology*, with this third book we will look past the war and into a complete and total culture that survived the war but has been subsequently lost to established history. In researching this, we are going to explore some old rumors. Not all of these tales can be affirmed as well as one would wish. I would ask the reader to suspend judgment on particular cases in isolation and instead judge the overall interconnections, as it will be made by the end of the book.

This book, as were my other two, is predicated on the idea that new information and a new understanding of some historical events previously thought to have been understood has now surfaced. Most of these new facts and new understanding have emerged since the fall of the Berlin Wall and the collapse of the Soviet Union. This was matched by a relaxing of conditions in the West such as the Freedom of Information Act and similar legislation in other countries. Now, one of the constraints seems to be how much the Germans want to let be known as opposed to how much they want to keep to themselves for a time after the Americans are gone. This may be part of the "sleeping dog" concept that we will discuss later in the book.

As I and many other contemporary writers have shown, this science and technology extended far beyond the flash and bang of atomic weapons, flying discs, rail guns and other exciting technology. It extended into the everyday life of the post-war world. Hundreds of thousands of patents were taken by the Allies from German vaults at the close of the war. This was done without payment or even credit for these discoveries. Just as World War One had the hated Versailles with its onerous reparations, what came out of World War Two were reparations in the form of stolen science and technology. This science and technology form the basis of our modern world and surround you even as you read this. And when I say "hundreds of thousands of patents", this is not an exaggeration. In fact, the last patent taken from the Berlin Patent Office by the United States was numbered at 750,986. (1). This means the actual number of patents taken from all facilities at least approached one million and this certainly does not include the SS secret archives.

Sources for this type of work simply cannot be airtight. Speaking about these subjects can still get on in some kinds of trouble under certain conditions. One of my important sources for this hidden post-war world, Wilhelm Landig, has also been investigated and cited as a source by Dr. Joseph Farrell (2). The book by Dr. Farrell, just cited, also explains the post-war Nazi organization in some detail. For purposes of this book this detail need not be repeated since most individuals who have this book in hand will also probably be familiar with Dr. Farrell's work. We are going to look at the post-war Nazi world and its organization only with special emphasis on its formative years along with some other details and rely on Dr. Farrell's book for the overall perspective.

It may be impossible to deal only with the most credible sources, however, since we are pushing into the unproven. This is probably my last book dealing with these subjects so I want to relate as many of these stories as I can remember for future researchers. The principle of "where there is smoke, there is fire" has almost always born fruit in this research. If the "smoke" had been labeled "not-credible" at the beginning and discarded, we would have no knowledge on the reality of German flying discs, the German atomic projects, and so on.

The reader may notice that I am using the word “Nazi” far more in this book. We really have no way of knowing the political affiliations of all the scientists and individuals working on the flying disc projects or other aspects of German wartime secret science and technology while in Germany during the war. The situation is much clearer outside of the former 3rd Reich and after the war. It can safely be assumed that individuals taking part in the SS post-war organizations and their followers and employees were, in fact, Nazis.

So, we are going to take a look at rumors regarding the post-war Nazi world, especially those rumors coming from German sources, and then we are going where those rumors take us. Sometimes a seemingly well-known, well understood topic will be used to discuss other more exotic topics. Sometimes technology and events will be discussed with a fine point while a more general discussion is taking place about other topics that should coalesce in the end.

In other words, this book deals with technology but in describing this technology a more human tale will be told. On the surface this book deals with secret bases and fantastic U-boats. Here and there other interesting topics will be interjected. Some of these other topics as well as things discussed while discussing secret bases and fantastic U-boats may come together forming larger themes. This technology has human and historic outcomes and we will try to trace some of these.

Literature Cited

1. **Georg, Friedrich, 2008**,“*Unternehmen Patentenraub*” 1945 Die Geheimgeschicher des Groessten Technologieraubs aller Zeiten, page 69, Grabert-Verlag, Tuebingen, Germany

2. **Farrell, Joseph, Ph.D., 2008**, *Nazi International: The Nazis’ Postwar Plan to Control Finance, Conflict, Physics and Space*,

Adventures Unlimited Press, Kempton, Illinois, Pages 12-23

PART ONE: GERMAN SECRET BASES

THE FIRST CLUES

In looking for clues to what really happened regarding German secret bases in World War Two we should first look at the actual statements of those individual most directly involved. In this case top Nazis actually hinted at their intentions. We are going to look at some of their statements, translated into English, to see where we should go in researching this topic.

From the mouth of Adolf Hitler came these words as cited by W. Mattern:

> *"In this war there does not exist victors or vanquished, only the dead and the living, but the last battalion - that will be a German battalion"* (1).

Hitler was said to have uttered these words on February 24, 1945. Mattern calls this statement Hitler's end-of-the-war-prophecy. These words "last battalion" have given rise to a whole sub-story concerning the last days of World War Two, as we will see later.

Willibald Mattern was a German who lived in Chile after the war and he definitely was a Nazi. In fact, his work cited here is very strongly pro-Nazi, even though it was written many years after the war. Another Nazi, Ernst Zuendel, published Mattern's work with no date on the publication. It was approximately 1978, however. Zuendel compiled his own work on

German flying discs after Mattern but in English. Zuendel's publishing company, Samisdat, announced an upcoming publication called "The Last Battalion" at about this time. This title was never published even though it generated considerable interest. I wrote to Zuendel in the 1980s about this title once or twice without success. Finally, other avenues of research opened up to me after the fall of the Berlin Wall and I realized who the source for both Zuendel and Mattern was concerning "The Last Battalion". The primary source was Wilhelm Landig, making Zuendel and Mattern superfluous. We will review what Landig has to say on the topic as well as more current revelations by other researchers, amplifying his case. But a question that should be kept in mind is: What was this Last Battalion idea really about and did it have to do with any of the statements made below"

Next we move to an earlier statement by Gross-Admiral Karl Doenitz in 1943:

> *"The German submarine fleet is proud of having built for the Fuehrer, in another part of the world, a Shangri-La on land, an impregnable fortress"* (2).

And another statement by Doenitz in 1944 at a cadet inauguration address in Kiel:

> *"The German Navy will have to accomplish a great task in the future. The German Navy knows all hiding places in the oceans and therefore it will be very easy to bring the Fuehrer to a safe place should the necessity arise and in which he will have the opportunity to work out his final plans"* (2).

The source cited here, Buechner and Bernhart are very credible informants. Besides being a Colonel in the US Army, Buechner was also a medical doctor. In fact, Col. Buechner was the first medical doctor on site as the Allies took over Buchenwald concentration camp. He was also a college professor. “Bernhart” is an alias, but the alias of a German submariner. In fact, Bernhart was a junior officer, the Chief Torpedo Officer; aboard the famous U-530 from August 1944 until July, 17, 1945 when it surrendered at Mar del Plata, Argentina, over two months after the war in Europe had ended. As we will see, U-530 was almost a magical vessel for a number of reasons.

Returning to the statements of Karl Doenitz, it must be remembered that he was the highest-ranking officer in he German Navy and became Fuehrer after Hitler’s death. It was Doenitz who surrendered the three fighting divisions of the German military (Army, Navy, and Air Force) to the Allies, ending the war in Europe. Obviously, we cannot short-change anything this man has to say concerning secret bases outside of Germany or the Greater Reich.

At the Nuremberg Trials, Doenitz again spoke on this topic:

> *“…an invulnerable fortress, a paradise-like oasis in the middle of eternal ice”* (3).

This statement is actually more powerful in the original German:

> *“…uneinnehmbaren Festung, von einer paradiesischen Oase inmitten ewigen Eises”*

These words “uneinnehmbaren Festung” mean or convey the idea of an “untakable fortress”, not just an invulnerable one. The words “ewigen Eises” are full of Hans Horbiger (Fire and Ice) connotations.

So we are getting the idea that this fortress is rather pleasant even though it is located in a cold place. Is this place in the mountains or near the poles” We are really not told since it has been said to be “on land” but also surrounded by ice. But the German Navy built it, indicating a connection with the ocean.

Finally, we have these words from Hitler himself, spelling out his purpose for the foreign base(s):

> *“And if the enemy overruns all of Germany, then the war will be carried on from foreign soil, surrender will not happen”* (4).

Researcher/writer O. Bergmann that is being cited here reports that these words of Hitler’s were uttered at the beginning of the Polish campaign, in other words at the very beginning of the Second World War. Even at that time, Hitler seems to have formulated some sort of contingency planning.

O. Bergmann has done some very fine research, especially as it pertains to U-boats and secret bases. Personally, I think that Bergmann gets the details concerning the power plant of field propulsion saucers wrong. But Bergmann does contribute a wealth of details to the subject at hand and so cannot be discounted over my one, personal prejudice. In defense of Bergmann, nobody has ever been right about everything.

Jumping ahead, Bergmann introduces one idea that we should consider. He says the same type of power plant that propelled German flying discs was used in their very most exotic U-boats. In fact, he says that there is virtually no difference between German flying discs and German U-boats once we reach a certain level. If this is true, it would account for the USOs, unidentified submerged objects, seen worldwide and would account for their ability to rise from the sea directly into the air.

Returning to the topic of secret bases, we ought to ask ourselves exactly what were the reasons for the Germans to be considering building secret bases abroad” From the quotes cited above, it might seem the building of these bases was solely a contingency plan against a Nazi defeat. The reasoning given involves carrying on a war with the Allies from beyond the borders of Germany as well as a place of refuge for Hitler and presumably other important Nazis.

Another huge concern in building foreign bases, especially Arctic bases, was their function as weather stations. We have all heard of the importance of weather forecasting in the timing of D-day, the invasion of Normandy by the Anglo-Americans. But the Germans were fighting from the shores of the eastern USA in their U-boats all the way to the new industrial heartland of the Soviet Union, east of the Urals. They needed good weather predictions over a vast area of the Northern Hemisphere. To do this they needed to know the direction of storms spinning out of the Arctic as well as their strength and speed. The Germans built bases whose primary function was to gather this information and transmit it back to Germany. These weather stations stretched from eastern Canada to the Soviet Arctic including Norway, Greenland, Franz Josef Land, and Spitsbergen.

These same positions would be invaluable as listening posts, intercepting shipping as well as military information. We all remember the importance of the Norwegian, Icelandic, and Greenland listening posts and their associated military installations in monitoring Soviet submarine activity during the Cold War. Similar concerns would have been present for the Germans who were very interested in intercepting convoys of ships supplying Great Britain and even the Soviet Union from America.

All of these secret German bases supplied and assisted German U-boats whenever called upon to do this. So, all of these bases might be considered U-boat bases although the extent and scope and frequency of the assistance they were in a position to offer might vary greatly.

A well-positioned base in the Antarctic might have served as a way station for communication and trade between Germany and Japan should more direct bases, such as the Japanese base in Singapore, fall into enemy hands. Also, for military reasons, the Germans conducted warfare in the South Atlantic. This took the form of two successful raider vessels, the Penguin and the Atlantis that prowled the waters South of the Cape of Good Hope. These ships, camouflaged as merchant vessels, would spot another, enemy merchant vessel, approach it, and then drop their merchant guise as they opened up with cannon fire.

But even before the war in Europe started, the Germans had already secured a huge tract of Antarctic land in the region described in the last paragraph, just south of Africa. This region was known as Neuschwabenland. It was mapped and explored by the Germans. This was done under the auspices of Hermann Goering of the German Air Force. The question of German settlement or German bases in this region is a topic of concern that we will cover.

In 1944, Nazi realists saw the Reich slipping from their grasp. The war was not going well and that was an understatement. All hope of salvation rested in bringing the wonder weapons to an operational stage. Hitler argued for time to do just this and directed his military strategy toward the delay of the advancing Allies on all sides of Germany.

Also, as the war soured for Germany, there were certainly top Nazis who wanted Hitler out of the way, plotting a Fourth Reich. This Reich would be Nazi but without Hitler. The plot even had a name, Operation Avalon (5). How far this plot extended is unclear but it is clear that it was not actualized even though stationary for this Fourth Reich was actually prepared (6). Operation Avalon had the alleged backing of Dr. Hans Kammler, Dr. Manfred von Ardenne, Albert Speer, and Dr. Kurt Diebner. (7). Other names cited as present were: Fritsch, Ohnesorge, West, Grothmann, von Puttkamer, Teichmann, Weidehammer, Seufert and Schaub (8).

There is even a tale surrounding Operation Avalon and the real end of the Third Reich. It involves a meeting of the Nazi leadership on March 27th, 1945. Hitler was going on as usual with optimistic expectations of turning the war around once certain wonder weapons came on line. At one point Speer had heard enough of this. He rose and in a loud voice uttered the unthinkable to Hitler: "*Nein, Mein Fuehrer!*" Speer allegedly went on to say that there had already been enough death of enough son's treasured by their mothers and that the wonderweapons, especially the A-bomb would not be employed by the Germans as it was a murderous weapon aimed at the people (9). Of course, many top Nazis were trying to do a deal with the Allies, especially the Americans, to save their own skin and perhaps doing so while plotting Operation Avalon or using one or the other as a secondary plan.

If this Operation Avalon story is true, then it spelled to doom of the Third Reich even in the eyes of its most staunch true believer, Adolf Hitler. Hitler must have seen that without his wonder weapons, all was lost. It may not have come in a sudden realization, but over the days that followed the truth was plain to see. All Hitler's actions after this date can certainly be explained as resignation of a man who knows his is a lost cause. Even though plans had been made for Hitler's escape, he declined those plans. Instead, Hitler tied up the lose ends of his personal life, marrying Eva Braun, and contemplated the means of his own end.

This plan, Operation Avalon, would have involved the very top technology of the Reich, the Kammler Group and all its laboratories. If all this high technology was actually spirited out of Germany or to what extent this was done involving the plans of others remains an open question.

Others, including Hitler's Secretary, Martin Bormann, were more practical. They thought in terms of a post-war world in which they would exist as intact Nazis but not necessarily within the borders of what was called the Greater Reich. But they also included an element that seems to have been overlooked by the Avalon people. That one element was money. That money concerned Martin Bormann is no surprise since he handled financial affairs for Hitler.

A secret meeting took place in which a post-war world was discussed. In this eventuality, the Germans had lost the war. Everyone knew what had happened the last time Germany had lost a war. It was not only an economic catastrophe but a social and political one as well. The whole existing order in Germany was forever changed with that defeat. So, those attending this meeting wanted to insure some sort of continuity between the Third Reich and whatever world came next. They also wanted to assure the survival of their political ideas and goals as well as their own safety. Further, they wanted to take with them the financing necessary to do this.

They met in late 1944 at the Hotel Rotes Haus in Strasbourg, France. Hitler was not aware of this meeting. In that meeting, representatives of the military, government, industry and finance were present. A far-reaching agreement was made. Under Bormann's auspices, German industrialists began transferring abroad huge sums of money, counterfeit money, precious stones, gold, machine tools (tools used to build other tools), specialty steel, and secret blueprints to be utilized after the war was over (10). Scientists themselves were transported as well. Business considerations where not neglected so that corporations and shadow corporations were set up, clandestinely, to facilitate the money and technology transfers.

The purpose for the secret blueprints and the scientists was to reconstruct some of the wonder weapons being developed within Germany. It was also to carry out further work of high technology along the unique scientific avenues begun by those SS alchemists working for Kammler. If an organization has its own land, weapons, and money, it can rightfully call itself a “power” and this was exactly the aim of those participating. They saw themselves as a secret power or at least secret from common public knowledge. What is unclear is it they wanted themselves and their organization kept secret from other countries or power blocks.

Bormann may have instituted the idea for this particular transfer but Martin Bormann would soon become lost to history. As with Adolf Hitler and Dr. Hans Kammler, tales of Bormann’s demise are multiple. After Hitler’s death on April 30, 1945, all parties inhabiting the bunker scattered, each man for himself. Among these late starters was Bormann. One report of him place his death outside the Solex carburetor factory in Berlin where he was allegedly hit by Soviet artillery, or if you prefer, ducking down some underground rat hole out of Berlin from which he never emerged. But whatever story you prefer, he completely vanishes and there is really no credible information that he survived he war or resurfaces elsewhere. As we will see, it did not matter: Nazi political types had lost all credibility in the eyes of the surviving SS and figured no role in their organization.

Dr. Hjalmar Schacht, the financial genius who almost single handedly had put the German economy back together after the Depression made the financial arrangements. Col. Otto Skorzeny, whom the Allied called “the most dangerous man in Europe”, made the operational arrangements. In fact, Skorzeny, a legitimate war hero in the eyes of average German soldiers, took over the leadership role in the absence of Bormann (11). We will deal with the personalities involved as well as the Nazi organization as best cases of each present themselves.

One problem was the physical transportation of items of value to the safe areas. Germany really lacked a fleet of long distance heavy lifting aircraft. There were no Lancaster bombers or B-17s in the German Air Force on the squadron level. There were individual prototypes, as we shall see, but the bulk of the heavy lifting became the responsibility of the German Navy and the German Navy was, at this point in the war, the U-boat service. The details of each secret base are somewhat different as is their history so we will explore each, base by base, starting with their major point of departure and some of the secrets it still holds.

So, we will begin with the jumping off point, Norway, and its mysteries. Then, following Landig's lead, we will move to Point 103 somewhere in the Arctic. From there we will back track a bit to Greenland, its bases, including the probability of a new discovery called Beaver Dam. The Last Battalion legend as well as discussion of German flying discs will be interjected as they become relevant. We will then move to the possibility of sequestered German high technology in Switzerland and Tibet before coming to the controversial topic of Neuschwabenland, Landig's Point 211. From there we will move to Nazi post-war holdings and interaction in South America. Finally, we will move to the base that makes concrete the German secret-base concept and ties the far-flung bases together.

Literature Cited

1. **Mattern, W**., *UFO's Unbekanntes Flugobjekt" Letzte Geheimwaffe Des Dritten Reiches"*, date unknown, page 23, Samisdat Publishing LTD, Ontario, Canada

2. **Buechner, Col. Howard A. and Capt. Wilhelm Bernhart**, *Hitler's Ashes Seeds of a new Reich!*, 1989, pages 172-173, Thunderbird Press Inc., Metarie, Louisiana.

3. **Mattern, W.** *UFO's Unbekanntes Flugobjekt*, page 38, see (1).

4. **Bergmann, O**., *I Deutsche flugscheiben und U-Boote Ueberwachen Die Weltmeere*, 1988, page 4, Hugin Society, Wetter/Ruhr, Germany

5. **Mayer, Edgar and Thomas Mehner**, *Die Atombombe und das Dritte Reich*, 2002, page 19, Jochen Kopp Verlag, Rottenburg, Germany

6. ***ibid*.,** page 237

7. ***ibid*.,** page 236

8. ***ibid*.,** page 244

9. ***ibid*.,** page 243

10. **Infield, Glen B**., *Skorzeny: Hitler’s Commando*, 1981, page 179, St. Martin’s Press, New York

11. ***ibid*.**

NORWAY

Wilhelm Landig began his classic novel, *Goetzen Gegen Thule Ein Roman voller Wirklichkeiten, (Idols against Thule: A Novel Full of Realities),* in Norway. Norway was the point of departure for this tale. Landig was interested in explaining things as had never before appeared in print. By this it is meant that he presents the Nazi viewpoint. Since Landig is not afraid to do this, perhaps we ought to consider things he says which have no legal or political consequences seriously. We do not have the luxury of reviewing the whole of Landig's work even if this were possible. All we can do is draw upon the examples and explanation he provides in the appropriate instances which are of immediate concern to us.

What Landig does is to immerse us into a completely alien post-war world. Here, the Nazis still retain their organization, ideals, and ability to operate in a limited, tactical manner. They have the machines of war at their disposal and no inclination to suddenly surrender to the Allies. An occupied Germany was not an attractive option for these men. Since these were young men, perhaps an analogy is appropriate. In this analogy, a young man is being asked to choose between two ugly sisters in terms of marriage. The two sisters are Communism and Capitalism. A life under Communism was out of the question for the Nazis but what most people do not understand is that the Nazis saw Capitalism as almost as bad as Communism. These new options were not too attractive to men who were happy with a simple and unambiguous chain of command, the Fuehrer Principle. Is it no wonder that so many Germans, especially German soldiers with Nazi leanings, who had lost everything in the war were unhappy or thought they would be unhappy in the "New Germany"" They looked around for options and looked toward the very men with whom they had served for the last six years. These men and this organization were their new family now. Considering this mind-set, let us now proceed to our first topic, Norway.

As far as I can tell there were three areas of German bases in Norway during the war that are of interest to us. Most of us have already heard of the Norsk-Hydro plant operated by the Germans for the purpose of production of heavy water. The Norwegians eventually destroyed this plant with the support of the British. This story has been told so often that it is really not of concern here. We are interested in facilities that have not already been thoroughly explored. The three areas of concern for us are the U-boat facilities at or near Kristiansand, the facilities on the central plateau of Norway, and the facilities at the far North of Norway. The Kristiansand facilities concern U-boats and are fairly well known. We will first touch upon the facilities in the far North.

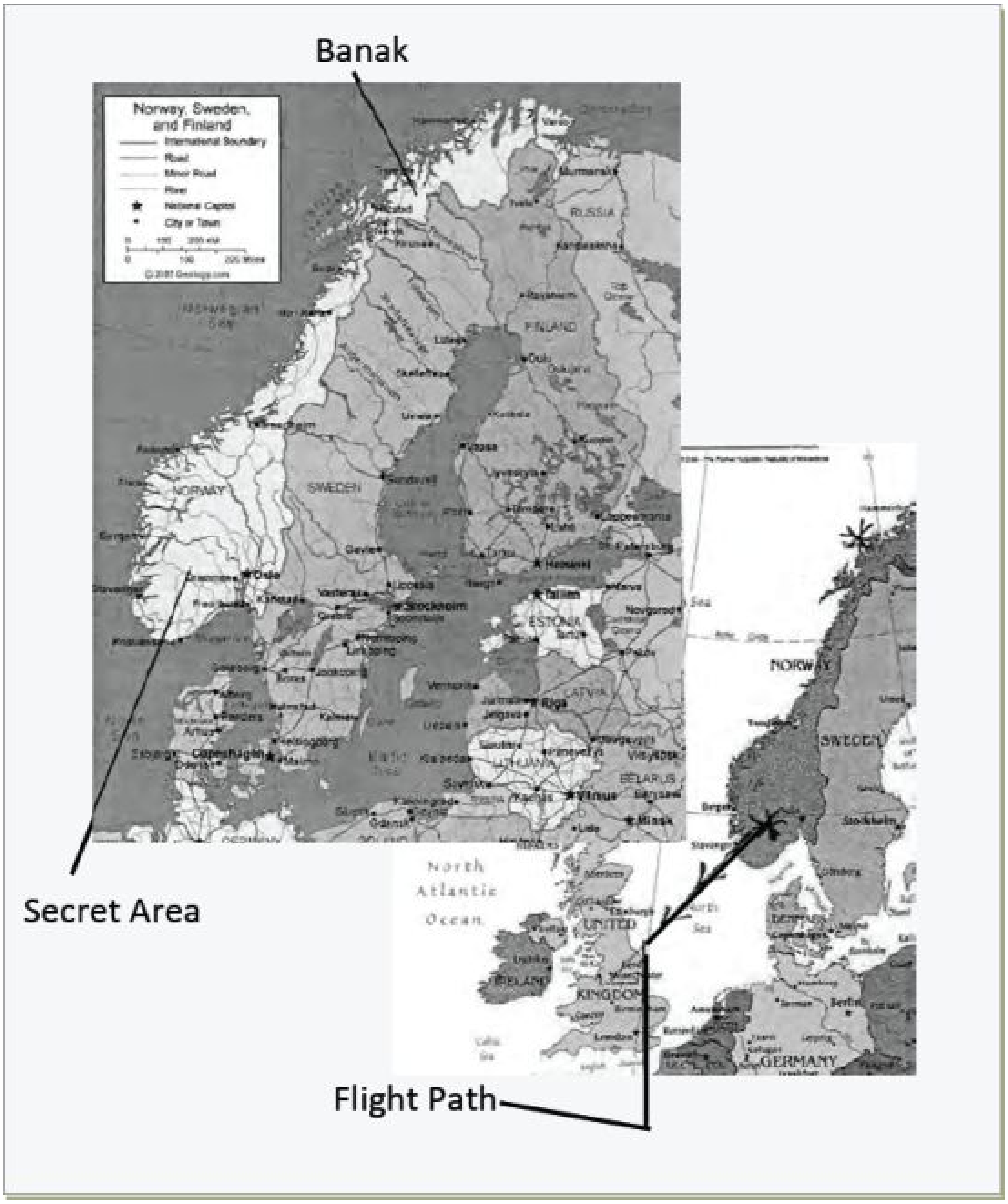
Banak
Norway, Sweden, and Finland
International Boundary
Road
Minor Road
River
National Capital
City or Town
Norwegian Sea
NORWAY
SWEDEN
FINLAND
RUSSIA
ESTONIA
LATVIA
LITHUANIA
BELARUS
Oslo
Stockholm
Helsinki
Copenhagen
North Atlantic Ocean
UNITED KINGDOM
IRELAND
GERMANY
Secret Area
Flight Path

Map of Norway The area of Banak, at about 79 degrees N, discussed in the text as well as the highland plateau area of Norway should be noted. Also, the direction and approximate origin of the missile attack on Manchester, England is indicated.

“Goetzen” opens in such a base in the far North of Norway, probably near Banak at Latitude 70 N. Three men, soldiers, are flying West as the Reich is collapsing behind them in a prototype aircraft. In all probability or most such prototype aircraft were fleeing the Reich at this very moment and Landig describes two such prototype aircraft for us.

The first was a Junkers-Dornier prototype but perhaps built at the Heinkel works in Berlin. Interestingly enough, this machine already carried the Black Sun as its identifying symbol (1). This aircraft was an improved and reconstructed Junkers featuring a trilateral or three-sided construction. Apparently, it had a two-fuselage construction and a crew of three. Two crewmembers sat on one side and the third in the other fuselage. This aircraft was unarmed. It was equipped with very special engines, the Daimler-Benz 603A. The Daimler-Benz 600 series are well known; they are water-cooled in-line engines (2). The interesting point here is that Landig says two such engines were merged to turn one propeller (3). This construction was formalized in the DB 606 that were two DB 601 engines in unison (4). This improved version of the DB 601 was called the DB 603 with running changes and improvements receiving letter designation (5). Therefore, this prototype aircraft was one of the first four motor, dual propeller aircraft to fly.

Its speed was 725 kilometers per hour, about 442 miles per hour (6), with a range of 8,000 kilometers, about 4880 miles (7). This was a high speed for a propeller drive aircraft of its day but its range was simply outstanding! Presumably, this aircraft would have been used for high-speed reconnaissance.

Landig equates this aircraft with the Dornier Do 635 (8). Information does exist on the Dornier Do 635. It is a peculiar aircraft, designed to tow huge gliders into the air or to assist large, heavily burdened aircraft airborne. This aircraft looked odd since it consisted of two Dornier Do 335s were joined together at the wing that both halves shared (9). A pilot sat on he left side of the “twin” with the radioman and another crewmember occupying the right twin. Fuel was stored in the central wing giving it extremely long range if used as an observation aircraft that is given by Kens and Nawarra as 7,500 kilometers (10). As in other aircraft, one could construct another firm's design if the government saw fit to do so. In this case the Dornier Do 635 became the Heinkel 111Z (the "Z" was for Zwillige or Twin in English) using the DB 603 engine in tandem with one propeller as described by Landig (11).

Dornier Do 635, Messerschmitt Me 264, and Junkers Ju 390

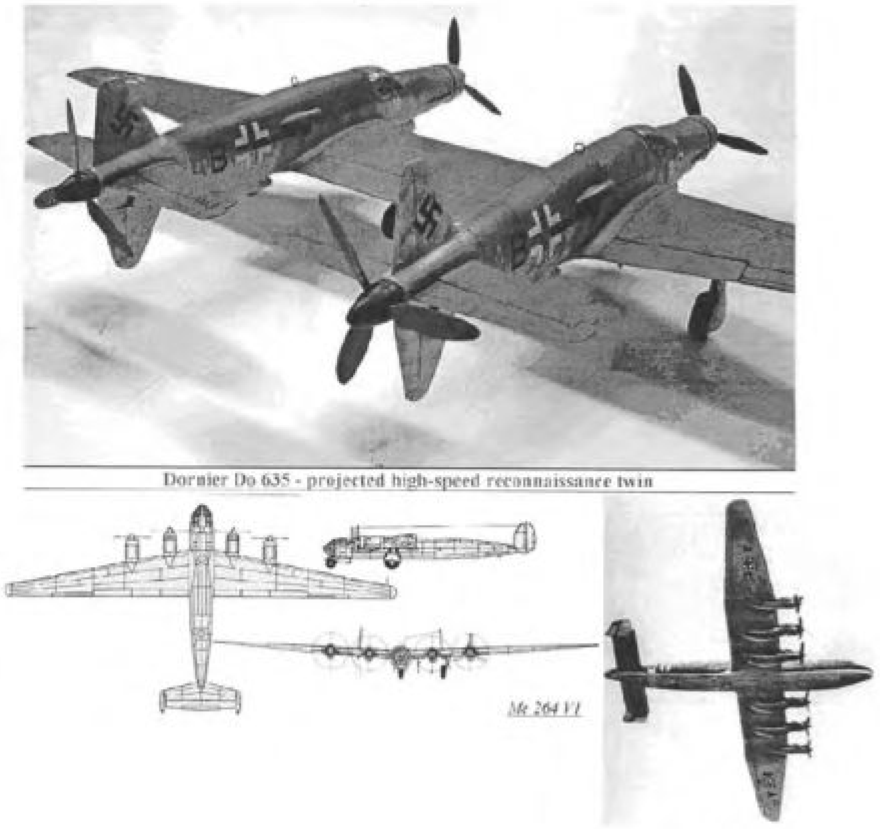

In Landig's Nordic Odyssey, this aircraft was brought to a secret base, Point 103, somewhere in the Canadian arctic. It was equipped with a strange instrument, the Himmelskompass or heavenly compass. This device has been described in my earlier books but it was basically a compass that did not orient itself to north using magnetic means. Remember, the true magnetic North Pole lays on the Boothia Peninsula that is well South of the geographic North Pole. This inconsistency would certainly cause confusion for aircraft of shipping approaching the magnetic north pole from the North.

Landig also mentioned a second mystery aircraft. He called it the “Dosthra”. The Dosthra was a mid-wing monoplane with a five-cornered fuselage, when viewed in cross section. It resembled a giant insect; it was thicker in front than in the rear with a glass front end. Two black circles painted near the front of the craft only increased the insect-like look. These black circles were called the “Schwarze Runde” and were yet another version of the Black Sun symbol, the symbol used by SS survival groups. The wingspan was about 135 feet so it was about the size of a B-29. The insect look was further enhanced by the two gun turrets on either side near the front of the aircraft (12).

There were two things very different about this aircraft: the first was its construction. According to Landig, this aircraft was not made of ordinary metal. Landig calls this metal “Quetschmetall”. The method of this metal’s production concerned it being placed under pressure of four hundred thousand atmospheres that resulted in a high compression, high strength, but low weight metal. This super-skin of the aircraft gave it the highest possible tensile strength and functioned as a protective armor (13).

I have mentioned the Dosthra aircraft in my second book concerning super metals (14). This process is an outgrowth of the work of the Austrian inventor, Karl Nowak, who was very interested in cold, heat and changes in states of matter. Nowak will be more completely considered later but for now it should be noted that Nowak thought the applications of such changes of state could be used to power engines and create new industrial processes such as the one under discussion (15). There is much talk linking Nowak to the propulsion of German flying discs using the expansive qualities of helium as it is brought from the liquid to the gaseous state. There is even talk of a “molecular bomb” using such methods.

This is no small idea in our story. The SS alchemists took Nowak’s lessons to heart. In fact, changes of state and outright transmutation of elements (in a nuclear reactor and perhaps other devices) were at the core of their research. Anyone familiar with Nazism will remember the Fire and Ice theories of Hans Hoerbiger that fits into this discussion nicely on a philosophic level, as does the concept of the Uebermensch, the Superman, who could be thought of as a transmuted human being. With so many converging ideas, concepts and philosophies coming together and seemingly reinforcing each other, it is no wonder that each success only served to reinforce the larger concept as a whole. We will see another application of these ideas when we discuss mystery U-boats.

Returning to the Dorsthra, it could carry as many as seven people but could function with a crew of five. It was designed to operate on rough runways, as the two landing wheels were four meters in diameter. It was powered by four radial Argus engines, turning four, four-bladed propellers. Other engines were present on the tips of the wings and in the tail section. These were jet engines for use at high altitude as in the later American B-36 bomber. The jets could also be used for steering when they were employed. The wings were of slotted construction and they were small in surface area and small to the overall size of the aircraft. The tail section slanted backwards.

The most astonishing aspect of the Dorsthra was its performance as claimed by Landig. Its top speed was cited as 830 kilometers per hour (over 500 miles per hour) with a range of 22,000 kilometers (13,420 miles) or 32,000 kilometers at high altitude (19,520 miles). Landig says this legend was able to fly to the United States from Europe and back again (16).

We are not told of the mission or purpose of the Dorsthra. Fuel storage must have taken up quite a portion of its available storage area. So we are left with somewhat of a mystery wondering if it was really to be a long distance bomber or simply a reconnaissance aircraft.

Wilhelm Landig is not the only writer to talk about exciting prototype aircraft fleeing the Reich in its dying days and this lends credence to Landig. Siegfried Heppner is a writer/researcher who delves into German flying discs and other mysteries surrounding the Third Reich. He gives us an eyewitness account of a “supermachine” which he actually saw fleeing the Reich with his own eyes as a boy of about fourteen years old.

Heppner discusses a novel written by famed writer/researcher Tom Agoston that concerns a mystery aircraft fleeing the Reich and then tells us that it actually happened, as he saw it. The following is my translation of his account:

> *“This aircraft really existed! I see it excitedly still today as it flew low to me in an uproar and over the house southward into Switzerland and disappeared. That was between 8:00 and 9:00 in the morning on the 9th of May 1945, as I stood in the window in he direction of the Reich’s Bank at Constance. There appeared with a great uproar a double fuselage machine with the Balkan Cross of the German Air Force so low near the cathedral tower that I became afraid that it could strike the 101-meter high spire.*
>
> *It seemed to have been a one-off double fuselage research type of Dornier, D 635 with four motors, (two propellers in front, two on the tip of the tail), with an aggressive tear shaped glass cockpit in the center. This type was 900 kilometers per hour fast! Its chief superiority lay in the maneuverability through use of its front plus rear thrust!*
>
> *I could observe the overflight from the northern side of he house for only a few seconds. The range of this supermachine was in any case up for a flight from Prague to Spain and from there (refueled) to South America.” (17)*

So, we have a second Dornier Do 635 being described as escaping Germany as it collapsed. But there are still other prototype aircraft which are still somewhat of a mystery. One of these is the Messerschmitt Me 264. This aircraft was a large, four engine bomber with a very long range. Its range was said to be anywhere from 6,000 kilometers to 12,000 to 15,000 kilometers. These higher figures would have allowed the Me 264 to cross the Atlantic from Europe and fly back carrying a 1000 kg bomb load (over one ton).

All German long distance bomber projects suffered from a series of changes of direction and starts and stops as the course of the war itself changed. At first two prototypes of the Messerschmitt Me 264 were built (18). The first prototype first flew on April 27, 1942. The second prototype was destroyed during a bomber attack even before it could be test-flown. But even before the first test flight occurred, the program was beset with problems. Messerschmitt simply had too many aircraft in production at the same time. But Willy Messerschmitt had meanwhile promised Hitler the Me 264 was the solution for bombing the east coast of the USA. Field Marshal Milch ordered five more examples to be built the day after Messerschmitt's promise to Hitler. The solution was to farm it out to another firm that was a common procedure. Unfortunately, none of the firms in the running was really capable of pulling off such a large, complex construction project.

One of the Me 264's early passengers at the Rechlin testing facility (if not an outright test pilot), a Captain Nebel, had been given command of his own Sonderkommando unit Sonderkommando Nebel. Sonderkommando Nebel had all the technical understanding and machinery necessary to built or at least assemble a Me 264, which they did. It is unclear to me if a subsequent air attack spoiled these plans or only set them back to February 1945. If the aircraft was completed it was to be an extremely long-distance reconnaissance aircraft (19).

What this all means is there may have been two Messerschmitt Me 264s available at the very end of the war for long distance hauling of materials and transport of human cargo.

Next we will consider the big daddy of all the German prototype heavy lift aircraft, the Junkers Ju 390. This was a six-engine long distance bomber. It was envisioned as an aircraft that could cross the Atlantic and return with no problems. The Ju 390 never made it out of the prototype stage in the same off and on, start and stop, scenario that plagued many German aircraft designs. There are mysteries concerning almost every step or phase in the Ju 390's history with advocates and deniers pushing forth their own versions of this aircraft's history.

As far as I can tell, two examples of the Junkers Ju 390 were built with certainty and possibly one additional example. These are given the designation V-1, V-2, and V-3, the "V" meaning variant. V-1 was certainly built and flown. V-2 was also built and tested along with V-1 at the German test facility at Rechlin. But shortly after a few test flights and a short trip to Laerz, Oberleutnant Joachim Eisermann who flew V-2 himself reports that it completely disappeared (20). But even earlier, Captain Hans Bauer, Hitler's personal pilot, had been presented an example of a Ju-390 for official government use. To further confuse things, the third example, the V-3, was to be completed before the V-2 disappeared if we judge by comparing dates (21). Meantime, sightings of a Ju-390 and even pictures of it in flight show that either extensive modification had been made to one of the existing aircraft or that other mystery examples of the Ju-390 had been built. In the end the advancing Allies found only one Junkers Ju-390, the V-1, in Dessau on November 15, 1944 (22).

So a mystery arises as to where the missing Ju-390s ended up. And this mystery is further confused by another mystery, what purpose were the Ju-390s being used" Solving the mystery of their purpose might shed light on where they ended up. Now of course, they were intended as long-range bombers but they were never used for this purpose except for possibly a dry run. Additionally, some of the modifications, such as the removal of defensive armament, lead one to the possibility that they were actually used for heavy lifting, long-haul operations.

The “dry-run” mentioned was the alleged trip from Mont-de-Marsan, France to New York City, or a point 20 kilometers (12 miles) from it in the Atlantic. The Ju-390, apparently having made a point to those in the Luftwaffe who were interested, turned around and few back to France. This tale is widely repeated and there apparently exists some documentation in the form of a British Intelligence report, somewhere, supporting this flight (23). In any event, this flight should have been no surprise to anyone since it was within the design capability of the aircraft involved and in fact the whole reason for its existence.

Returning to the tasks the Ju-390 was being asked to do on an operational basis, research/writer Friedrich Georg comes up with three:

1. *Secret intelligence operations.*
2. *As an escape vehicle for the Nazi leadership.*
3. *As a long-distance delivery vehicle connecting to Japan.*

All of these are really connected. Even the idea of giving the design to the Japanese is included in number three above. They would have found this aircraft useful, as it would have traversed the Pacific just as it would the Atlantic.

With the topic of Nazi escape always comes the question of Dr. Hans Kammler. In fact, Kammler had to be very familiar with the Ju-390 since it was built in Prague, his area of dominion (24). The problem with postulating the Ju-390 as yet another Kammler survival story (or Kammler death story) is that Kammler actually had a fear of flying and so probably sought other means of escape (25). Besides, I have a better Kammler survival story for you, to follow, and it is the first time this story has appeared in English.

There is a story that probably concerns this aircraft that bears repeating. On April 17, 1945 a secret message was sent from Kammler to Himmler. In this four-line message Kammler tells Himmler that he is unable to send Himmler the “L.K.W.” that he is requesting. The only meaning I have ever heard given “L.K.W.” is “Lastkraftwagen” or “truck” in American English. This discussion is not over a fleet of trucks, only one “truck”. Tom Agoston repeats this story on page 55 of his book “Blunder How the US Gave Away Nazi Supersecrets to Russia”. Evidently, Agoston takes this word “truck” at face value. This seems a strange request at best. But writer/researcher Friedrich Georg who sent me a copy of this document years ago had another take. He thought the word “truck” was code or slang for a very large, heavy lift aircraft. The Junkers Ju-390 is obviously what was being discussed.

What really ties the Ju-390 into our story of Norway is the fact that the Ju-390 flew to Japan, over the polar route, from Norway. My source for this is again Friedrich Georg who cites the material of Tom Agoston that was published in German (25). The Ju-390 left Norway from a base in the far north at Bardufoss, flew over the north pole, over the Bering Strait, then down the east side of the Kamchatka Peninsula to the island of Pamushiro which was within the Japanese Empire. From there it flew over Japanese-controlled Manchoutikuo to Tokyo. Confirmation of this flight comes from a radio report by the Japanese Attaches for Marine Aircraft in Germany, dated March 21, 1945 (26). Agoston gives a slightly less detailed account of this flight in his English language book (27). The purpose was to transport German high-tech weaponry secrets and some personnel involved with this work. This was exactly the same purpose as the famous U-234 voyage and the two methods of communication can be considered complimentary, each part of a larger whole. There may have been and probably were more flights involving the Ju -390 to Japan just as there were probably other U-boats delivering technology to Japan besides U-234.

An operational aircraft that we must consider for long-range operations was the Focke-Wulf Fw 200 Condor. This was originally a four engine passenger aircraft but the Luftwaffe adapted it for long-range reconnaissance and even as an anti-shipping bomber. This aircraft had flown in peacetime from Berlin to New York City, nonstop. Besides extensive work in the North Sea and Polar Regions surrounding Norway, this aircraft also transported supplies all the way to Stalingrad in 1942.

The reader will remember the 1944 conference at Strasbourg in which it was agreed that blueprints, machine tools, secret weapons, specialty steel, gold, money and scientists were to be transported outside the Reich for future use. The means of this transfer, according to one source, was the employment of Geschwader 200 (Squadron 200), an elite flying group of young men, many who had lost their families.

Geschwader 200 was the first choice of the Luftwaffe for truly dangerous missions. Geschwader 200 was, for instance, scheduled to fly the manned version of the V-1 to high value targets. This would have certainly meant the loss of almost all of the pilots, as the men themselves knew. Later, that project was abandoned but Geschwader 200 was involved in a suicide attack on a bridge spanning the Oder in the final stages of the war that was an attempt to slow the advancing Soviets.

In the transfer specified in the Strasbourg agreement, the goods and people necessary were loaded aboard Condor aircraft by Geschwader 200 and flown form points within the Reich to Madrid, then on to Cadiz. Cadiz is on the Mediterranean Sea. From there transport to South America was accomplished using both Fw 200 Condors of Geschwader 200 and U-boats (28) Additionally, the Azores or the Canary Islands were used as a stopover base (29). I would ask the reader to keep this last sentence in mind for further reference.

Two Heinkel He 177s were heavily modified in Prague. The bomb bay area was enlarged, the engines changed along with other modification encompassing the whole aircraft. The only reason for doing this type of work was to allow for a much larger bomb, presumably an atomic bomb, to be delivered by this aircraft. One was extensively damaged before the end of the war but the other was intact enough to allow an assessment of its ultimate purpose. Friedrich Georg supplies us with six pictures of this aircraft for documentation (30). The importance to our story is the willingness of the Germans to take existing machines and modify them for new purposes almost “in the field”.

Modification of existing aircraft characterizes the last aircraft we will consider, the Dornier Do 217-K-2. This aircraft was another prototype or perhaps just a test-bed. It was based on the well-known Dornier Do 217. This was a two engine, late 1930s design that could carry a somewhat larger payload than the Heinkel He 117.

Meanwhile, Dr. Eugen Saenger and his mathematician wife Dr. Irene Brendt were engaged in designing a huge ramjet powered bomber. This bomber would circle the earth by vaulting its way up to the far upper atmosphere and then re-enter the denser lower atmosphere in a series of skipping states, before firing up the ramjets once more and repeating the process. Saenger’s ramjets were monsters, approaching twenty tons of thrust. This put the Saenger ramjet in the same league with Dr. Wernher von Braun’s A-4 (V-2) engines. Saenger’s engines were built and ready but the orbital bomber project was canceled. Saenger then went off to work on ramjet interceptors at the Skoda Works, leaving the monster engines in his past. So, for whatever reason, as a test-bed or for possible delivery of an atomic bomb, the huge Saenger ramjet engines were mounted on top of the Dornier Do 217, which was re-designated the Dornier Do 217-K-2 and fell under the purview of KG 100 (31).

Two of these Dornier Do 217-K-2s were found in the post-war years abandoned and partially wrecked in Istres in Southern France. This would make the date of their abandonment somewhere in the second half of 1944, as this is the time the Germans lost this ground.

Were there other examples” Why not and why leave such a wonderful example of a high-tech engine as a free gift for the Anglo-Americans” Other examples may have been evacuated to Germany.

The question arises of how fast could the Dornier Do 217-K-2 have flown” The short answer is “as fast as the pilot wanted to go” since the strength of the airframe was probably the limiting factor. If anyone were going to flee the 3rd Reich during its moment of collapse, it is hard to imagine an aircraft better suited for this purpose. This one-time light bomber could certainly accommodate a high-value individual and his secret library of wonder inventions on a fast, one-way ride to Norway or even possibly beyond.

Friedrich Georg with the help of Antonio Chover has uncovered a real mystery regarding Norway. This is great research and draws upon seemingly unrelated facts and events which are pieced together to make a coherent whole which sheds a new light on the history of World War Two, German involvement in Norway, and German secret weapons.

The mystery starts with a night attack on Northwest England by air. In the early morning hours of December 24, 1944 a large attack of 50 Heinkel He-111, belonging to Squadron 53 (KG 53), crossed the English coast and headed for the northeast industrial region, launching 31 V-1s from the air at their target. All the V-1s impacted between 5:28 and 6:45 AM. But serious reports list this attack, not on December 24th but on December 23rd. And the attack was precisely pinpointed on Manchester. On December 23rd, the Heinkel He-111s were not even in the air and the range for either the V-1 and V-2 would not have allowed them to be fired directly from Holland. The conclusion drawn is that these were not one attack in which dates were confused but two separate attacks (32).

The Italian newspaper “La Stampa”, Turin, reported that the Christmas Eve attack was actually not an attack by He-111s firing V-1s. The report credited five German scientists with receiving an award from Hitler for the invention and development of a new long-distance weapon (33).

Sources are clear that neither attack was the work of the V-2 rocket. So if this was not an attack in which V-1s were carried within range of their target, what was it then” The answer comes from a surprising source, a Polish vacationer and it comes years later.

Flash forward to 1948. A former Polish soldier, Kasimir Browski, is on his summer vacation at Misdroy, on the Baltic coast in the vicinity of Swinemunde on the Wollin peninsula. This area was a testing ground during the war, most notably for testing the high-pressure cannon (HDP) of August Coanders. Browski must have been an inquisitive and hardy soul. He noticed a large launching ramp of the type used for the V-1 in the ocean. Browski decided to dive down in the Baltic waters to see what he could see. Browski, without diving equipment, was able to dive down four to five meters (16 feet or so) into the Baltic waters.

What Browski saw was amazing! Near the end of the ramp he found a series of totally unknown flying objects. Apparently, they were there as the result of some sort of misfiring. Perhaps each had its own individual problem that resulted in its crash landing, we will never know. This flying device had a long fuselage with an engine mounted on its rear top as in the V-1. Where wings would be found on a normal aircraft, Friedrich Georg pictures in his book, small wings as in a canard design. At the rear, below the engine, are located larger wings with adjustable control surfaces on them. From the presence of these control surfaces with the lack of a pilot, the conclusion must be reached that the missile was remote controlled. A small rocket is described by Browski as being underneath the craft that was undoubtedly for rocket-assisted take-off. The color of the missiles was gray-gold with the engine being a dark color. The diameter of the missiles was estimated by Browski to be 80-80 cm. Only one of these missiles was completely intact, the others were missing one or more parts. Browski christened the missiles the “V-4” (34).

Friedrich Georg compares them to a small version of the later American Martin Matador. The firm who made these missiles remains a complete mystery. Georg suggests Junkers and the mystery missiles Vu, D-

6000 which was also probably launched from a catapult and was developed by the SS in Pilsen (35). He also suggests this missile may have been called the “V-3”, but of course the HDP, the super-long distance cannon, the “centipede”, developed by August Coanders, also was given that title.

The engine is a real mystery. Was this a pulsejet like the V-1” Or was this a turbojet, or perhaps a ramjet” All might be considered a possibility. There was talk of an improved V-1, could this be it” Turbojets were expensive and difficult to build but were more flexible in operation than either the pulsejet or the pure ramjet engines. The ramjet has no moving parts and is the simplest of all jet engines. It simply uses air rammed into its leading orifice for compression rather than a complicated compressor but it needs to reach about 250 miles per hour before the ram effect comes into presence. The rocket-assisted take off as well as the catapult ramp might indicate a ramjet. Also, all available turbojet engines were spoken for in the hard-pressed military situation the Germans found themselves.

As an aside, I must make mention of one other rumor about the V-4 or a missile very much like it. That rumor, I call it so for lack of more evidence, is that the V-4 was teamed up with the V-2 in a horse and rider configuration. Or, alternatively, that the V-2 formed the lower stage and the V-4 delivered the warhead. Georg’s informant, “Dr. X”, a Peenemuende insider, claims a range of 3500 km. (2135 miles) with a warhead weighing well over two tons (36) Using totally different sources the Czech researcher Dr. Milos Jesensky and the Polish engineer Robert Lesniakiewicz describe a similar craft, a combination V-1, V-2 that they say was to be somehow employed at sea, being towed by a U-boat. They call the missile the “Urzel” (37). Georg mentions the fact that Swedish reports, starting in October 1944, mentions “ghost rockets”, so this phenomena was not one of the post-war period but originated during the war (38).

The American Martin Matador

Was this 1950's missile a natural post-war outgrowth of the V-1 or was it inspired by a German second generation cruise missile? Wreck of the "V-3-V-4" were found submerged beyond a launching facility in the Baltic

U.S. AIR FORCE

Engine	4,600 lbf (20,000 N) thrust Allison J33-A-37 Turbojet sustainer engine; 55,000 lb (25,000 kg) thast Aerojet General solid fuel rocket, 2 s burn
Wingspan	28 ft 7 in
Operational range	700 miles
Flight altitude	35,000 ft
Speed	Approximately 650 mph (Mach 0.9)
Guidance system	"A" Radar directed radio command guidance system; "C" same plus Shanicle
Launch platform	Mobile Launcher

Mr. Georg found the next clue in the newspapers of those times. Mention has already been made of the "La Stampa" article in which Hitler honored five German scientists for their work in developing a new weapon. In this article the report of the 12/24/44 attack on Manchester by Heinkel He-111 firing V-1 missiles was debunked which led to the story about the five scientists. But there is more. Both Reuters and the Swedish newspaper " Suedsvenska Dagbladdet" acknowledged the possibility that the Manchester attack in question was launched from the district of Hardangervidda, in Norway, on the Hardanger plateau (39). Even the English newspaper, the "Daily Express" from January 15, 1945 reported that German flying bombs had originated from Hardangervidda in the plateau region of Hardanger (40).

Now comes the Spanish researcher, Antonio Chover, who writes to the authorities in Norway and asks them about secret German installations in this vicinity. He got many answers, all saying essentially the same thing: there were no Norwegian launching facilities for German V-weapons in Norway and nothing of note happened in Hardangervidda in the region of Hardanger. Even one of the participants in the destruction of the German heavy water generating facility, the Norsk-Hydro plant, by the name of Klaus Helberg reported to Mr. Chover the Germans had an aerial observation base in that area but he assures Chover that the Germans had no plans for missile launching in this vicinity or at least he had never heard of any (41).

Could this be the end of the story" After all, why would he Norwegians decline information if they had it" Well, let me suggest something. Anglo-Americans did not enter Norway in order to oust the German forces. Germany was entered through France and so in this direct route, Norway was a diversion. In other words, there was no military reason to enter Norway. Yes, the Western Allies, especially the British, did assist resistance in Norway but in the end, Norway was left on its own. The Germans occupied Norway until the bitter end. And in the end the Germans just surrendered and faded away—-or vice versa. But either way, the Norwegians may have felt they owed nothing to any other country.

Because of this strategy of bypassing Norway, there were no super-secret teams of Americans and British combing Norway for German high technology. The Norwegians perhaps felt very entitled to keep whatever was left behind and share it with nobody. After all, the Norwegians have always been rather independent people, even today. Their relationship with the EU and to the Euro is evidence of this independence. Have they been wrong with this self-confidence" Well, no, Norway does have the highest standard of living in the world. So perhaps there was a wall of silence, on some level, directed toward outsiders.

But like every good researcher, a little rejection did not deter Antonio Chover. Finally, a letter was received from Frode Saeland, museum director of the Norwegian Industrial Workers Museum in Vermonk that is in the region of the German heavy water production plant near Rjukan. Mr. Saeland had a completely different answer to the question of German facilities in the plateau region. He reported that in the vicinity of the Gaustad Mountain peak the Germans began a secret base in autumn 1944. The rumor at the time was this facility was connected to secret German V-weapons. Mentioned is the word “Radioinstallation” (radio installation). Mention is also made of a radar installation. These would be the tools necessary to guide remote controlled missiles. Only German workers were allowed on these sites and the whole area of these facilities was guarded, day and night, land and air. Opposite to these installations in the nearby valley heavy anti-aircraft provisions were made to guard against an air attack. A railroad wound its way to the mountain peak and the whole railroad line was guarded with cannons, munitions facilities and barracks (41), (42). Not only could have these facilities have been used to guide the new long range V-1s or V-4s to their target, but they could have also eventually been used to guide the A-9/A-10 missiles to America.

The central Norwegian coast is fjord country. These fjords harbored the German Navy during the war. At first it was the refuge of capital ships such as the Bismarck and Scharnhorst but later these facilities took on an even greater importance as U-boat bunkers in France were bombed and eventually overrun. The U-boat facilities in Norway became the home for the U-boat fleet and the U-boat fleet became the real German Navy.

It was from this area that U-boats were sent out in the final days of the 3rd Reich on all manner of desperate missions. Until the very end, U-boats apparently awaited Nazi bigwigs who never showed up for their journeys of escape. Later, we will recount the mission of U-234 as well as the U-boats of the legendary “Last Battalion” whose point of departure was exactly these waters.

But for now we must return to the springboard for the Nazi post-war world, the airbases of Northern Norway from which the Germans explored and watched over their holding in the Arctic. From here special long distance aircraft, including prototype aircraft salvaged from jaws of Germany’s collapse, were operational. Also, something new was in the air, a new identity was forming. Not only Wilhelm Landig tells us this in 1971, German engineer Claude Schweikhart (sometimes aka Erich Halk) tells this to us for the first time much earlier. In the August, 1952 issue of the magazine Mensch und Schicksal, he states that often in the last days of the war, in areas of highest priority for the Germans, the symbol of the “Schwarzen Sonne” (black sun) was in use in portions of the German armed air defense forces. These “heretics” within the SS, as Schweikhart calls them, above all used the air base at Banak in Northern Norway as their base for long distance flights over the inner Arctic using the most modern long distance aircraft which they had obtained after these aircraft were designated as “failed constructions” by the official Luftwaffe. Speaking specifically of this base at Banak, Schweikhart says: “ If they likewise used a special symbol, it is uncertain, but possible” (43). This “failed construction” methodology for procuring long-distance aircraft is repeated by Landig and said by him to include flying discs. These aircraft were the property of a sect within the SS and were re-branded with the Black Sun symbol according to Landig (44).

Meanwhile, back in the highland plateau region, the Germans there evidently had ideas of carrying forth the war from Norway or at last prolonging the war from there. In fact, the last known German unit to surrender on the European mainland did so at Haudegen, Norway, on September 4, 1945 (45). This date lacks four days from being four months after Admiral Doenitz officially surrendered the three German fighting divisions of the German military, the Army, the Navy and the Air Force. Please note that the SS apparently never officially surrendered.

With a positive attitude Landig’s three SS men leave Northern Norway in one of these special long-distance aircraft in the novel “Goetzen Gegen Thule”, bound for a secret German post-war base somewhere in the Arctic, “Stuetzpunkt 103”, which is Base 103 or as it is called here, Point 103.

Literature Cited

1. **Landig, Wilhelm, 1980**, *Wolfzeit um Thule*, page 30, Volkstum-Verlag Wilhelm Landig, Vienna, Austria.

2. **Lusar, Rudolf, 1964**, *Die deutschen Waffen und Geheimwaffen des 2. Weltkrieges und ihre Weiterentwicklung*, page 153, J.F. Lehmanns Verlag, Munich

3. **Landig, Wilhelm, 1971**, *Goetzen Gegen Thule*, page 37, Hans Pfeiffer Verlag GmbH, Hannover, Germany

4. **Lusar, Rudolf**, *ibid*

5. ***ibid.***

6. **Landig, Wilhelm, 1971**, *Goetzen Gegen Thule*, page 25

7. **Landig, Wilhelm, 1971**, *Goetzen Gegen Thule*, page 37

8. ***ibid.***, page 25

9. **Kens, Karlheinz & Heinz Nowarra, 1968**, *Die Deutschen Fluezeuge 1933-1945*, page 172, J.F. Lehmanns Verlag, Munich, Germany

10. ***ibid.***

11. ***ibid*.**

12. **Landig, Wilhelm, 1971**, page 185

13. ***ibid*.**

14. **Stevens, Henry, 2007**, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science and Technology*, pages 123-124

15. **Nowak, Karl, 1954**, *German Patent number 905847*, Klasse 12g, Gruppe 101, page 1

16. **Landig, Wilhelm, 1971**, page 180

17. **Heppner, Siegfried, 1997**, "Geheimnisse...dem Deutschen Volke", page 11, ISBN 3-929086-12-3

18. **Georg, Friedrich, 2000**, *Hitler's Siegeswaffen Band 1: Luftwaffe Un Marine Geheim Nuklearwaffen des Dritten Reiches und ihre Traegersystem*, pages 31, 32, Amun-Verlag & Heinrich-Jung-Verlagsgesellschaft mbH, ISBN 3-935095-02-3 and ISBN 3-930558-57-9

19. **Georg, Friedrich, 2000**, pages 35, 36

20. **Georg, Friedrich, 2000**, page 40

21. **Georg, Friedrich, 2000**, page 41

22. **Georg, Friedrich, 2000**, page 43

23. ***ibid*.**

24. **Georg, Friedrich, 2000**, page 44

25. **Georg, Friedrich, 2000**, page 44, citing Tom Agoston's 1993 book, *Teufel oder Technokrat-Hitlers graue Eminenz*, pages 43-44

26. **Georg, Friedrich, 2000**, page 45

27. **Agoston, Tom, 1985**, *Blunder: How the U.S. Gave Away Nazi Supersecrets to Russia*, page 35, Dodd, Mead & Company, Inc., N.Y., NY.

28. **Haarmann, D.H., 1985**, *III Geheim Wunderwaffen Ueber den Krieg hinaus!*, page 96, Hugin, Geschellschaft fuer pol. phil. Studien e.V., Eigendruck, Germany

29. **Buechner, Col. Howard and Capt Wilhelm Bernhart, 1989**, *Hitler's Ashes*, pages 130-133, Thunderbird Press Inc., Metairie, Louisiana, USA

30. **Georg, Friedrich, 2000**, pages 54-56

31. **Georg, Friedrich, 2004**, *Hitlers Siegeswaffen Band 2: Star Wars 1947 Teilband B: Von der Amerikarakete zur Orbitalstation-Deutschlands Streben nach Interkontinentalwaffen und das erste Weltraumprogram*, pages 57-60, Amun-Verlag Schleusingen,

Germany, in conjunction with Heinrich Jung Verlag, Zella-Mehlis, Germany

32. Georg, Friedrich, 2003, *Hitlers Siegeswaffen Band 2: Star Wars 1947 Teil A: Vn der V-1 zur A-9: unkonventionelle Kurz-und Mittelstreckenwaffen*, pages 220-221, Amun-Verlag,Schleusingen, Germany and Heinrich-Jung Verlag, Zella-Mehlis, Germany

33. ***ibid.***

34. **Georg, Friedrich, 2003**, pages 204-205

35. ***ibid***.

36. ***ibid.***

37. **Jesensky, Dr. Milos and Ing. Robert Lesniakiewicz, 1998**, *"Wunderland" Mimozemske Technologie Treti Rise*, pages 11, 15, Aos Publishing, ISBN: 80-86063-15-1

38. **Georg, Friedrich, 2003**, pages 205-206

39. **Georg, Friedrich, 2003**, page 221

40. **Georg, Friedrich, 2003**, page 219

41. **Georg, Friedrich, 2003**, page 221

42. **Georg, Friedrich, 2003**, page 220

43. **Schweikhart, Claude, August, 1952**, Mensch und Schicksal, 10/6, page 5

44. **Landig, Wilhelm, 1980**, *Wolfzeit Um Thule*, page 30, Volkstum-Verlag/Wilhelm Landig, A-1040, Vienna, Austria, ISBN 3-85342-033-8

45. **Georg, Friedrich, 2000**, page 45

POINT 103

Wihelm Landig is just about our only source for the secret base he calls Point 103. Landig uses every setting, every situation, to unveil something that happened during the war or some aspect of thinking or technology. When his three characters, the three German soldiers, land at Point 103 they are told of the “V-7”, a German flying disc that has been brought there. They are told its developmental history and means of operation. They are likewise informed of other prototype aircraft that have been brought to this base and housed there as well as the extent and purpose of Point 103 itself.

Point 103 is set by Landig to be in the Canadian Arctic. We know that the Germans had a base as far West as Cape Chidley which is east of Hudson’s Bay but Landig’s locating this particular base in the Canadian Arctic rather than farther east may be literary license, we simply do not know. It is set on an island in a semi-circular basin surrounding Point 103. Tunnels were made in the rock and served as living areas and storage as was done by the Germans at many other of their secret facilities, Nordhausen, Jonastal, Der Riese, Zement, and so on. Since aircraft were flown into this base, it must have had runway facilities. Hangers were blasted out of the solid rock mountains surrounding the base and it was in these cave-hangers that experimental aircraft of all sorts were stored. This base contained workshops, research facilities, housing, cooking facilities, offices, corridors, and assembly halls. Hundreds of German soldiers inhabited this base on an ongoing basis. It functioned as a listening station, air base, weather station and most probably a U-boat facility (1).

Point 103 was connected to the outside world in this immediate post-war time frame by flying disc as well as by radio. Writer O. Bergmann states that Germans of the Arctic groups were in communication with other post-war German groups via in intermediate position in the Northern

Andes. Each group had its own code-name. The group in the Northern Andes used the designation “Atlantis”, for instance. He states that other post-war groups survived in bases in inner Asia, as well as Africa and that these along with the Arctic base formed a unit while another three group unit was formed by a group in Greenland, somewhere near Australia and somewhere in the Pacific (2).

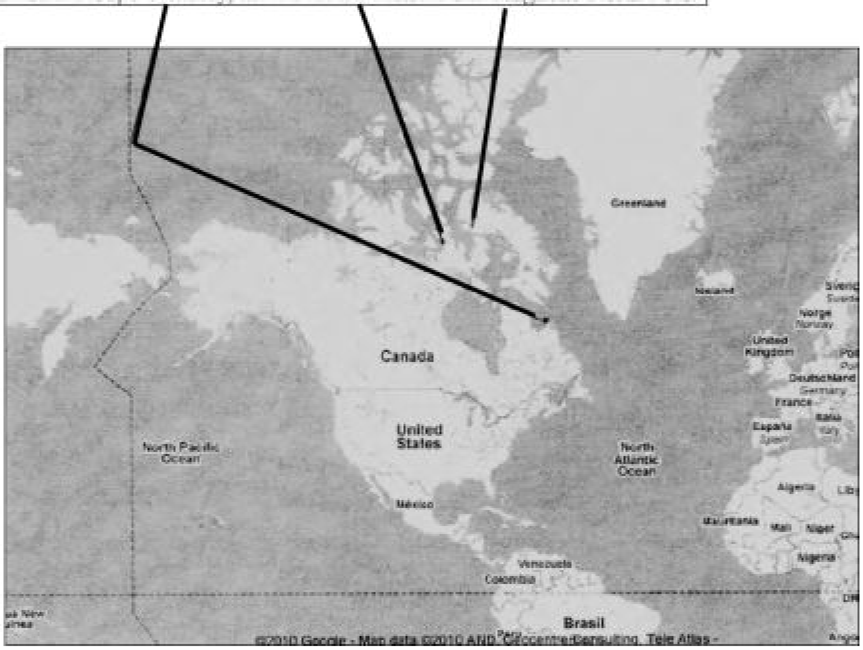

The Canadian Arctic
Marked are Cape Schidley, the Boothia Peninsula and Magnetic North Pole.

Greenland
Iceland
Sverige
Norge
Norway
United Kingdom
Deutschland
Germany
France
España
Spain
Italia
Canada
United States
North Pacific Ocean
North Atlantic Ocean
México
Algeria
Mauritania
Mali
Niger
Nigeria
Venezuela
Colombia
Brasil
©2010 Google - Map data ©2010 AND, Geocentre Consulting, Tele Atlas -

It seems that all branches of the German military were represented at Point 103, including the SS. The particular sub-group or inner circle of the SS present at Point 103 lent their esoteric symbol, the Black Sun, to the base as a whole. On their aircraft the standard German insignias were removed and in their place the Black Sun sign was displayed. This took the form of a deep, dark-red circle (3). It is quite obvious that the thinking behind this symbol came from the Thule Society and their belief in a kind of Nordic Atlantis in the far north from which sprung the Aryan peoples, particularly the ancient Germanics. The Black Sun symbol reached its zenith at Point 103. It was adopted by some mystery U-boats of German origin sighted after the war but it was apparently not used in Neuschwabenland, Landig’s

Point 211. The flying discs and possibly aircraft flying form Point 211 used the old German military insignias (4).

During the war, Wilhelm Landig had been in charge of security for the airport at Prague where three flying disc projects were housed. Since this area was the industrial heartland for the SS, Landig would have also been familiar with any aircraft projects under development by the SS. He would have also personally seen any prototypes flying to “his” airport from other facilities. Therefore, taking Landig at is word regarding things that fly is not stretching the imagination very much. But Landig does not stop with things that fly. He goes on to describe some other amazing aspects of alleged Nazi technology under development or operating at Point 103.

According to Landig, aircraft were guided to Point 103 by a special compass, called a Himmelskompass (heavenly compass). This compass did not work on magnetic lines of force generated by earth’s magnetic field as most compasses do. This is because the magnetic north pole is not located at the geographic North Pole, but instead on the Boothia Peninsula, the third peninsula west of Hudson’s Bay, hundreds and hundreds of miles south of the geographic North Pole. Instead of measuring magnetic lines of force with a needle, the Himmelskompass measured polarized light (5). So, using this device as a guide, an aircraft could be navigated to the proper coordinates without the use of a traditional compass and without interference from a defensive device employed at Point 103, the Magnetofunk.

The Magnetofunk was a compass in reverse. It generated a magnetic field and so would confuse any aircraft using a magnetic compass. It would influence the compass just enough to throw off anyone following it as a guide. Therefore, enemy aircraft would be passively diverted around Point 103 without the searching aircraft even being aware of its influence. A more detailed discussion of both the Himmelskompass and the Magnetofunk can be found in my previous book (6).

But Landig describes other amazing devices and research going on deep within the bowels of Point 103. He states that a kind of alchemy is at work here. This is not the old alchemy of gold making, conspiracy or black cats, but a new alchemy for modern times. Vril energy was being analyzed. Landig goes on to state that this Vril energy was suitable for powering aircraft. It was the same sort of energy sought by the ancient Indians for their flying craft, the Vimanas. Mercury was being used as a partial means of propulsion. Landig then goes on to make an amazing statement, saying that “our Indian friends” are busy reconstructing ancient secrets under security observation from these ancient sources (7).

In another paragraph Landig states that experimentation was ongoing involving the generation of electricity from a totally new perspective, in its “entire aggregate condition”. In this work electricity is called a formless body. In fact it is gas-like, liquid and solid (8). This sounds like some of the strangest explanations I have heard cited by those close to Karl Schappeller regarding aether energy in its most fundamental (coldest) state.

More convention energy extraction was also said to be going on at Point 103. In this, latent heat from the atmosphere was being extracted and presumably used to generate electricity. This was a benzene-steam procedure, developed in 1944 by a deceased engineer named Doczeka (9). Latent heat is the heat given off or absorbed in the process of vaporization from the atmosphere, in other words at ambient temperatures. The extraction of latent heat can happen at very cold ambient temperature, even in Arctic conditions.

At some point we must consider the question of the actual reality of Point 103. Landig tells us that his story is a story “full of realities”. But there is the possibility that Point 103 was not where Landig says it was. In fact, there is a possibility that it was simply just a literary prop to explain other things. Since Landig is really our only source for Point 103, the question certainly arises as to any supporting documentation for this base. The supporting evidence is small but the following is what there is of it.

In an article that translates to: “A Strange Message from the Reich of the Polar People” (10), mention is made of a mysterious “Blue Island” in the polar sea. It seems that routine Canadian air patrols originating out of the Parry Islands began encountering something they could not explain. Several independent reports from around 1950 state more or less the same thing. It seems that these patrol flights (their purpose was not stated) would sometimes encounter what they described as an island, surround by an icy ring of high mountains. On this island building structures could just be made out. Further, aircraft of some sort and which could not be properly identified were seen. These “notable powered aircraft” could be seen landing.

But there was a big problem. All attempts to approach this island for a better look were met with a strange kind of resistance. Upon drawing closer to the island, the aircraft was surrounded by a “thick blue aether” which was impenetrable to the aircraft’s radar. The article goes on to suggest relationships within esoteric ideas of the immediate postwar Nazi world.

Now, this is not Reuters or some other reputable new agency. It would be very easy to dismiss this whole tale based upon its obscure source and the more or less factual treatment of some of the esoteric language included in the text. What is being said is that using this article as proof for Point 103 is not only non-sufficing, but it needs backup on its own.

But what if strong supporting documentation were found” Would this not serve as verification for the “Blue Island” story and additionally make this whole obscure story for Point 103 far more probably”

The Blue Island story rests on reports of routine Canadian overflights of the Arctic. For what purpose were the flights” At this very same time the Americans were doing exactly the same thing from their own Arctic bases in Alaska. And they were searching for UFOs. We know this thanks to Retired Col. Wendell Stevens (no relation to this writer) who was stationed in Alaska after the war, flying B-29s, whose mission it was to photograph

UFOs, either flying or on the ice. Col. Stevens, a famous UFO investigator, has told this story many times over the years in print, at UFO conferences and in correspondence to me. The B-29s were stripped of guns and instead several types of cameras were mounted in the gun locations. Col. Stevens reports that sightings were made of UFOs, in the air and on the ice, photographed, with the film being sent via courier to higher-ups in Washington, DC in an undeveloped state. No feedback of any sort was ever made to those flyers taking the pictures. In retrospect, Col. Stevens has written to me that the makers and operators of those early flying saucers may have been Nazis.

Since the Canadians were doing exactly the same thing from their positions in the Arctic, it is safe to assume that the mission was substantially the same. The Canadians were looking for something that should not have been there, UFOs. What they may have found in the Blue Island was a base. What they encountered in approaching the island may have been some defensive device of which we know nothing.

But we have circumstantial evidence that is even stronger than this and it comes from the governments of Canada, the USA and Germany. This evidence is the movement of the famous German U-boat, U-234. This was the cargo U-boat, headed for Japan at the very close of the war, which somehow ended up surrendering to Allied forces between Halifax, Nova Scotia and Portsmouth, New Hampshire, a whole hemisphere away from Japan.

U-234 was a Type Xb minelaying submarine. The Type Xs were the largest submarine built by the 3rd Reich, displacing 2,000 tons. A bomb hit U-234 during construction in 1942 and again in May 1943. It was not commissioned until March 3, 1944 and spent a couple months in the Baltic on a shake down cruise. On or about August 30, 1944, U-234 returned to Kiel and from there to the Germania Werft U-boat yards where it was overhauled and refitted from a minelayer to a transport ship (11).

To structurally transform U-234, her 24 vertical mineshafts were removed. This left two large storage chambers running down the sides of the ship on either side of the conning tower and six vertical shafts in the center-forward area of the submarine. In addition, four horizontal deck storage containers, originally containing torpedoes were converted for cargo storage (12). U-234 was fitted with a snorkel, the latest and best radar as well as other electronic defense devices.

The point should be emphasized that this U-boat was reconstructed into something that it was not in its original design. My position is that older U-boats were rebuilt or reconstructed towards the end of the war and used for testing of designs that might once have called for a prototype submarine to be constructed from scratch. We know that U-boats were damaged by bombing or even sunk and resurrected. Were the original U-boat numbers kept or where new numbers assigned to reconstructed boats" Imagine the confusion this question alone would generate amongst the Allies who were desperately trying to sink U-boats and needed to identify each for purpose of evaluating tactics. We will come back to this idea later in the book.

Returning to U-234, in December 1944, it was re-launched and they proceeded with new trials. Ten weeks later the ship was ready for her first mission and began loading fuel and provisions. Everyone knew the destination, Japan (13).

The cargo aboard U-234 was to be a gift to the Japanese to benefit the Japanese war effort against the United States. At first the two major Axis powers had been cool toward each other as war partners. Hitler entered into the alliance thinking Japan could help him against the Soviets while the Japanese thought the Germans could help them against the United States. After Pearl Harbor, Hitler honored the treaty and declared war on Japan's enemy, the USA. But it was only toward the end of the war, as each partner saw how the other acted in adversity, that mutual respect led to increased mutual assistance. U-234 was not the first U-boat to transmit cargo to Japan and the German sent the Japanese gifts by other means such as long distance aircraft as we have already seen.

The cargo of U-234 consisted of microfilm of designs for secret weapons, drugs, radar, radio equipment and other electrical components, technical drawings, lenses, anti-aircraft rockets and other munitions, mercury, lead, zinc, a disassembled Messerschmitt Me 262 jet fighter (14), secret documents in sealed containers, a Panzerfaust and other anti-tank weapons, cameras, optical glass, and small rockets. Now we know beyond a doubt that U-234 carried uranium oxide in special containers for the Japanese Army (15). Dr. Ing. Heinz Schlicke, the electronic specialist who was onboard to advise the Japanese is said by Warrant Officer Wolfgang Hirschfield in his memoirs to have thrown overboard the microfilm for the America Rocket (presumably the A-9/A-10) just before being taken into custody by the Americans (16).

But there is more. Dr. Schlicke was said to be carrying designs for an infa-red fuse detonation system for an atomic bomb. This design was said to have been used a couple months after the capture of U-234 on the Trinity atomic bomb test in the New Mexico desert. Dr. Joseph P. Farrell cites researcher Carter Hydrick in his book Critical Mass as saying U-234 carried atomic bomb components and “presumably plans to build those weapons as well” (17). Dr. Farrell seems to endorse this view as he does Hydrick’s work without reservation. Accompanying the chapter is a copy of the US Navy’s microfilm records concerning the cargo of U-234. There are plenty of fuses aboard U-234 but these pertain to the ship’s operation or perhaps other cargo. But there is a designation of “Dr. Schlicke’s fuses” which are of particular concern here as Dr. Schlicke was an atomic expert aboard U-234 and not a member of the crew or a radar or missile specialist. There can be little doubt that these fuses are the fuses under discussion in regards to an atomic bomb.

Now I am going to tell you what people say “off the record”. I have heard people familiar with U-234 say that not only were plans and components for an atomic bomb carried by U-234; an entire atomic bomb was part of the cargo! We know the uranium oxide was present. We know that fuses, a serious secret component that was perhaps lacking in the American scheme, were present. We know other very secret technology was present. Why not an actual atomic bomb” If this were true, it would go along way to answering the reasons for the obfuscation on the part of the US National Archives over this cargo (18). Does one make the explosive and the fuses before he has made the bomb”

We can say that U-234 was a very important U-boat for the Germans, for the Americans and for the Japanese who were eagerly awaiting its arrival in Japan. So what in the world was it doing off the coast of Nova Scotia” That destination is certainly not on the way to Japan. Someone has some explaining to do. Let’s look at the U-234 timeline. This is mostly based on the Wolfgang Hirshfeld diary, published by Geoffrey Brooks.

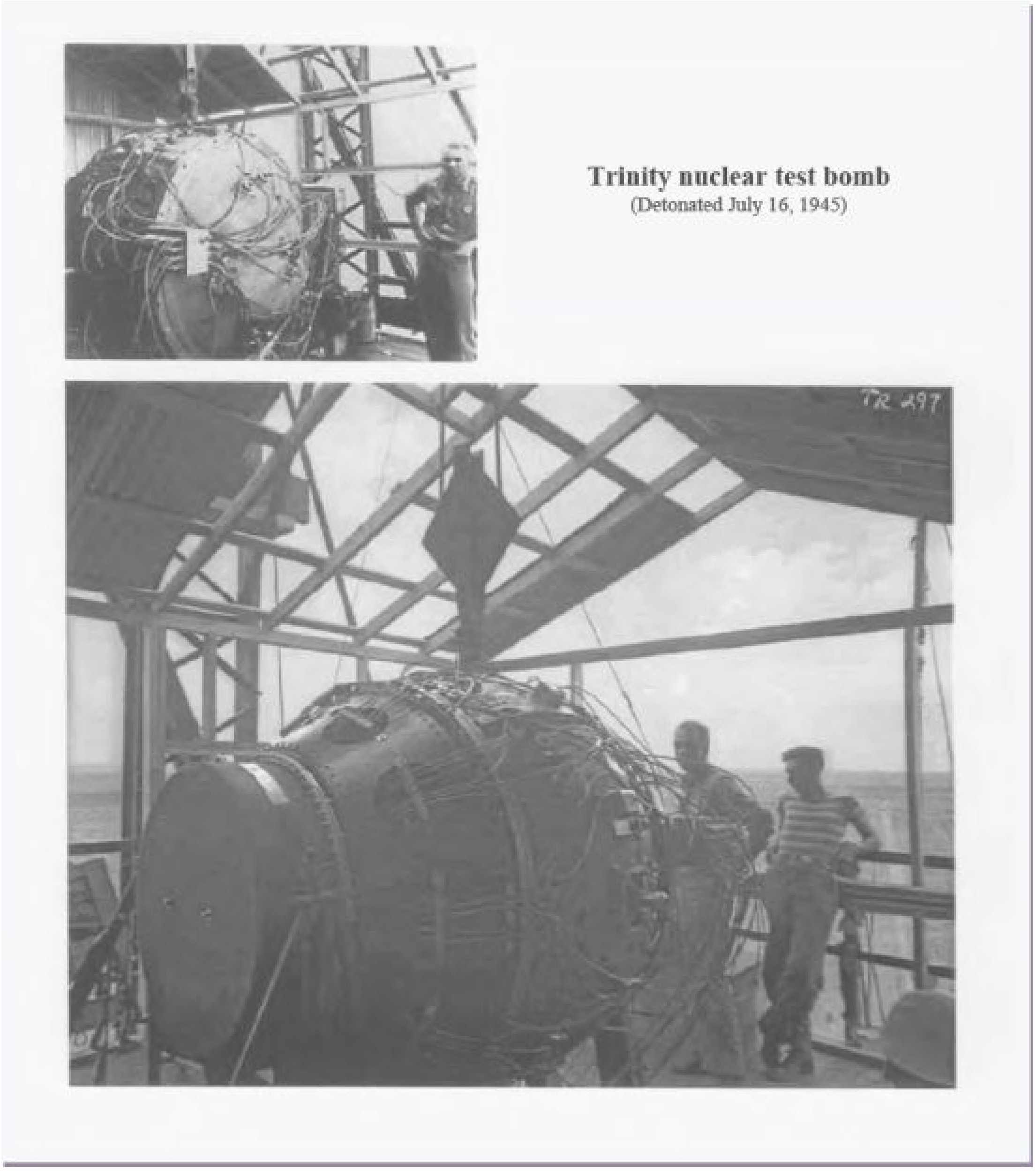
Trinity nuclear test bomb
(Detonated July 16, 1945)

Infrared Fuses Please note the cable-like devices covering the Trinity test atomic bomb. These are the infrared fuses.

March 25, 1945, U-234 leaves Kiel, Germany for Kristiansand, Norway. The next morning it picks up some escort vessels including three of the latest Type XXIII U-boats.

March 29, 1945, U-234 reaches the Oslo Fjord. A training run is announced for all U-boats equipped with a snorkel. During the training run, U-234 collides with U-1301. There is no dry dock available for U-234. Captain Fehler obtains a suitable steel plate and while anchoring near Kristiansand, submerges the bow 20 degrees by flooding the forward tanks, raising the stern out of the water.

April 1945. For the first week repairs continue using the ship's diesel engines as a power source to weld the steel plate in place. General Ulrich Kessler, Luftwaffe attaché to Tokyo boards U-234. Kessler is an anti-Nazi and anti-Goering that upsets Captain Fehler.

April 14, 1945, Hirshfeld, as communications officer, receives a message: "U-234 Sail only on my order. Sail at once on your own initiative. Doenitz",

April 16, 1945, U-234 leaves Kristiansand on route to Japan. But U-234 heads north, not south, up the Norwegian coast to at least the latitude of Bergen, Norway (19). Dr. Farrell, relying on Hydrick verifies this and points out that this is inconsistent with the ship's log and suggests a second "official log" may have replaced the log (20). This is the beginning of the inconsistencies regarding the movements of U-234.

Meanwhile, Wolfgang Hirshfeld gives us the details on U-234's course to Japan. He says U-234 proceeded at periscope depth and began "the long voyage to the Equator by snorkel". The course was south, along the coast of Africa, around the Cape of Good Hope, to the Indian Ocean, across "the wide ocean to the heart of Japan". This "wide ocean" can only mean the Pacific, so from a point south of Ceylon, U-234 was to proceed to the Pacific Ocean. This is Hirshfeld's commentary after giving the last confirmed date of April 16, 1945.

But then somehow Hirshfeld begins talking about the Iceland-Faroes Narrows and navigation problems. Fehler begins to run on the surface rather than at periscope depth. U-234 "breaks out into the Atlantic" in an environment of "sub-arctic swell".

May 1, 1945 or so, U-234 learns of Hitler's death.

May 4, 1945, a cease-fire for attack submarines is received. All attack submarines were ordered to return to Norway. Captain Fehler ignored this order since his was not an attack submarine.

May 6, 1945 U-234 receives notice that Japan considered all treaty agreements with Germany over and Germans in Japan would be considered enemy aliens and arrested.

May 8, 1945 U-234 learns of Germany's surrender. But according to Hirshfeld, Regional Commander of U-boats Bergen, Norway, Captain Roesing sent Fehler a message "in Japan cipher": "U-234 continue your voyage or return to Bergen, FdU”. Hirshfeld says U-234 was moving at 16 knots to the southwest on a “Great Circle course in the mid-Atlantic”.

Date Unstated, the Allies signal instructions for surrender for all U-boats. This was carried out by “particular sea area”. U-234’s port of surrender was Halifax, Nova Scotia, Canada. Captain Fehler and First Officer Richard Bulla monitor English language radio for the next five days.

May 13, 1945 U-234 makes contact with Halifax but Captain Fehler continues sailing south (21).

Date Unstated, Captain Fehler makes contact with the American destroyer, Sutton, and arranges surrender.

May 19, 1945 U-234 arrives in Portsmouth, New Hampshire, USA.

What is really going on here” We have a period of time, April 16, 1945 to about May 13, 1945 where U-234 is way out of position. First, it sails north, not south to near Bergen, Norway. Then it turns west, still not south, and ends up in the mid-Atlantic. Then it makes contact with Halifax while in that vicinity, the Canadian arctic, headed south. What ever happened to sailing south past West Africa to the Cape of Good Hope, let along the final destination of Japan”

I have to believe the original intention was to sail to Japan. Two Japanese officers were aboard U-234 who subsequently committed suicide after Hitler's death and then there was General Kessler, attaché to Japan. But something happened on the way that caused U-234 to reconsider this trip. This "something" was so extreme that the logbook had to be discarded and a new one substituted according to some. In all, we have to account for twenty-eight days, from April 16 to May 13, 1945 in which the exact whereabouts of U-234 are a mystery. What could have happened"

It is the opinion of Ferrell, citing Hydrick that a side trip to Hamburg to pick up Martin Bormann and Heinrich "Gestapo" Mueller was made on April 30, 1945 or May 1, 1945 (22). But this would involve going south, not north, after leaving Kristiansand. I think something else happened, something much simpler.

I think U-234 made a side trip to a base in Eastern Greenland. After doing whatever it was that brought them to Greenland, U-234 headed south and then west, probably in an attempt to visit the other large secret German base, Point 103. Perhaps they did visit Point 103 or perhaps not, but whatever happened, U-234 was headed south in Canadian arctic waters when it made contact with Halifax. Wolfgang Hirshfeld, the communications officer aboard U-234, says the U-boat surrender was by area and the area inhabited by U-234 at that time meant she was to surrender in Halifax.

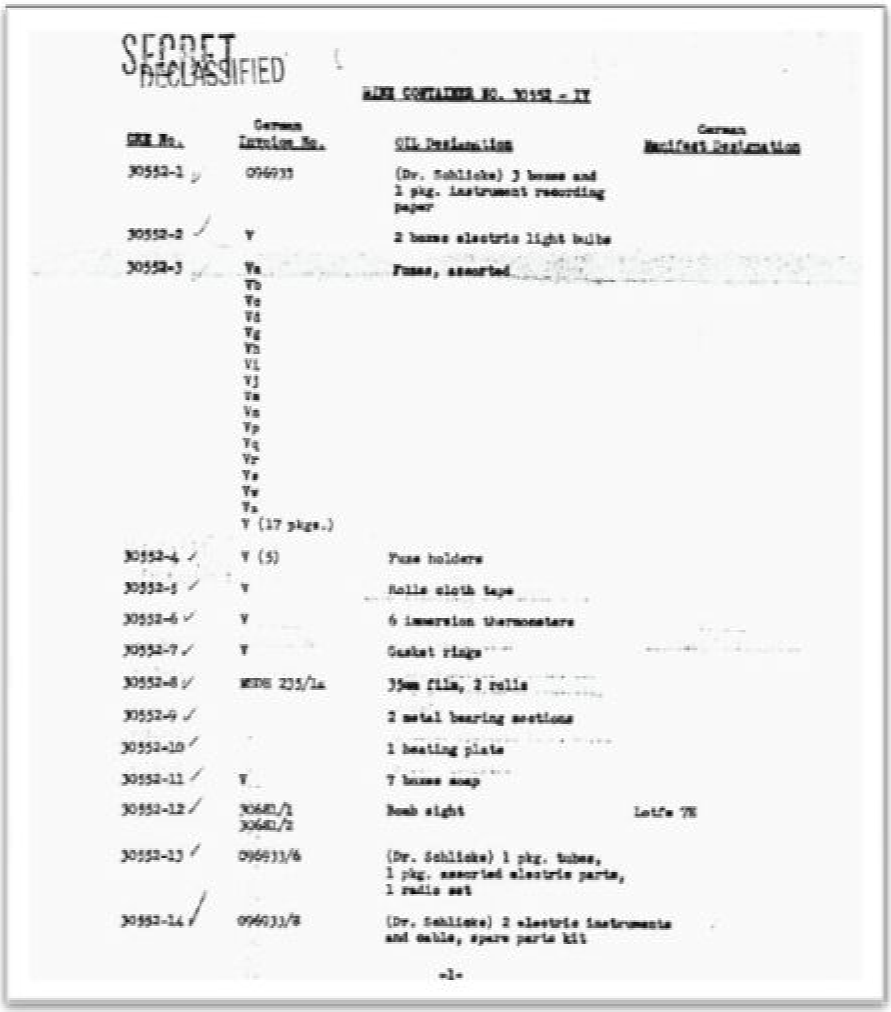

SECRET

DECLASSIFIED

[illegible] CONTAINER NO. 30552 - IV

[illegible] No.	German Invoice No.	[illegible] Designation	German Manifest Designation
30552-1	096933	(Dr. Schlicke) 3 boxes and 1 pkg. instrument recording paper	
30552-2	V	2 boxes electric light bulbs	
30552-3	Va Vb Vc Vd Vg Vh Vi Vj Vm Vn Vp Vq Vr Vs Vw Vx V (17 pkgs.)	Fuses, assorted	
30552-4	V (5)	Fuse holders	
30552-5	V	Rolls cloth tape	
30552-6	V	6 immersion thermometers	
30552-7	V	Gasket rings	
30552-8	[illegible] 235/1a	35mm film, 2 rolls	
30552-9		2 metal bearing sections	
30552-10		1 heating plate	
30552-11	V	7 boxes soap	
30552-12	30681/1 30681/2	Bomb sight	Lotfe 7E
30552-13	096933/6	(Dr. Schlicke) 1 pkg. tubes, 1 pkg. assorted electric parts, 1 radio set	
30552-14	096933/8	(Dr. Schlicke) 2 electric instruments and cable, spare parts kit	

-1-

Dr. Heinz Schlicke's Fuses from U-234 It is the writer's opinion that the mystery fuses shown in the enlarged photograph are the infrared fuses used to detonate the Trinity atomic bomb. *Source: Department of Navy, Naval Historical Center, Washington, D.C. Microfisch obtained via F.O.I.A. Request.*

So, what caused this change of plan aboard U-234" Maybe stopping in Eastern Greenland was the plan all along. Or perhaps events in the open Atlantic further South from Kristainsand scared off U-234 and it sought refuge for a time before even considering taking up its mission to Japan. We are going to return to this possibility later in discussing the Last Battalion legend. Once conditions in Japan deteriorated for the Germans, surrender seemed like the best option. But it was surrender to the Americans, not the Canadians that was the goal of Captain Fehler. U-234 had to get farther south and somehow the logbooks had to show this last sprint for Portsmouth for the logbooks to have any credibility at all.

In considering the possibility of Landig's Point 103, we have the vague and somewhat legendary-sounding evidence of the "Blue Island". But, we know both the Canadians and the Americans were making routine flights over the Arctic looking for something secret as Retired Col. Wendell Stevens testifies. Finally, we have evidence that U-234 was heading south in Canadian Arctic waters after the war ended with the reasons for its presence never adequately resolved. Combine this with a know German Canadian Arctic weather station at Cape Chidley which went undetected and undiscovered for 37 years (23). Considering this combined evidence, the likelihood of Point 103 being a reality are at least 50-50 in my mind. Landig states that Point 103 functioned after Germany's surrender but not much longer. It was abandoned in favor of more hospitable refuges.

Literature Cited

1. **Landig, Wilhelm, 1971**, *Goetzen Gegen Thule Ein Roman voller Wirklichkeiten*, pages 123-132, Hans Pfeiffer Verlag, GmbH, Hannover, Germany

2. **Bergmann, O., 1989**, *II Deutsche Flugscheiben und U-boote Ueberwachen Die Welmeere*, page 134, Hugin Gesellschaft Fuer Politisch-Philosophische Studien E. V., Wetter/Ruhr, Germany

3. **Landig, Wilhelm, 1971**, page 137

4. **Landig, Wilhelm, 1991**, *Rebellen fuer Thule Das Erbe Von Atlantis*, page 570, Volkstum-Verlag, Vienna, Austria

5. **Landig, Wilhelm, 1971**, pages 27-28

6. **Stevens, Henry, 2007**, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science and Technology*, pages 52-57. Adventures Unlimited Publishing, Kempton, Illinois, USA

7. **Landig, Wilhelm, 1971**, pages 276-277

8. **Landig, Wilhelm, 1971**, page 277

9. **Landig, Wilhelm, 1971**, pages 276-277

10. **Neues Europa, 1951**, “Eine seltsame Botschaft aus dem Reich der “Polarier” “Blue Island”-die geheimnisvolle Insel in der Arktis.-unbekannte Flugzeuge, die dort landen.-Blue Island”, ein zweites Shangi-La” Was wissen die “Polarier” von der letzten Pruefung, die wir noch zu bestehen haben?, newspaper/magazine article from January 1, 1951, Stuttgart, Zuerich.

11. **Brooks, Geoffrey, 1992**, *Hitler’s Nuclear Weapons*, pages 141-148, Leo Cooper (publishing), London, England

12. **Henshall, Philip, 1992**, *Vengence Hitler’s nuclear Weapon: Fact Or Fiction?*, pages 122-123, Alan Sutton Publishing Ltd, Gloucestershire, England

13. ***ibid***.

14. ***ibid*.**

15. **Stevens, Henry, 2007**, pages 8-10

16. **Brooks, Geoffrey, 1992**, page 166

17. **Farrell, Joseph, 2008**, *The Nazi International The Nazis’Postwar Plan to Control Finance, Conflict, Physics and Space*, page 125, Adventures Unlimited Press, Kempton, Illinois, USA

18. **Stevens, Henry, 2007**, pages 6-17

19. **Henshall, Philip, 1995**, page 125*ibid.*

20. **Farrell, Joseph, 2008**, page 124

21. **Henshall, Philip, 1992**, page 126

22. **Farrell, Joseph, 2008**, page 122

23. **Bergmann, O., 1988**, page 57

GERMAN FLYING DISCS, UPDATE

At this point we are going to take a little break from the topic of secret bases and explore some ideas about German flying discs.

In my first book, Hitler’s Flying Saucers, the point was made that in this study there are worlds within worlds to consider regarding German flying discs. Some new information has come to light but first we must jump down one of these rabbit holes, so hold on.

There were probably two forms of German field propulsion flying discs, a large one and a smaller one. They each may have had different technical origins. In my first book the work of Karl Schappeller and further development of his ideas by the pre-war Reichsarbeitsgemeinschaft (Reich Works Association) was documented (1). This concerned the larger of the German saucers. I feel confident that this type of technology accounts for the larger discs although not exactly as I originally thought. New evidence has come in the form of two German engineers who have researched Schappeller. I do not want to give away identities or more details as one or two of these European researchers intend a book on this and other new aspects of the Karl Schappeller mystery but the new for me is that the two really first rate scientists who have investigated the world of Schappeller, on site, conclude that the Schappeller device is related to the work of Nikola Tesla. This makes Bill Lyne and his work look pretty good in my eyes right now.

The reader might remember that Schappeller described the central core of his device as “glowing magnetism” in which there was apparently some sort of glowing energy that had a magnetic field. Recently, I came across Tesla’s own words that made think of Schappeller’s statement. Tesla is discussing broadcast transmission of electrical energy that is quoted in a book edited by David Hatcher Childress and titled: The Tesla Papers Nikola Tesla n Free Energy & Wireless Transmission of Power, page 66:

> *“I gained this conviction through the discovery of a singular electrical phenomenon, which I described early in 1892, in lectures delivered before some scientific societies abroad, and which I have called a “rotating brush”. This is a bundle of light which is formed, under certain conditions, in a vacuum-bulb, and which is of a sensitiveness to magnetic and electric influences bordering, so to speak, on the supernatural. This light bundle is rapidly rotated by the earth’s magnetism as many as twenty thousand times per second, the rotation in these parts being opposite to what it would be in the southern hemisphere, while in the region of the magnetic equator it should not rotate at all. In its most sensitive state, which is difficult to attain, it is responsive to electric or magnetic influences to an incredible degree.”*

For me, a simple layman, a bundle of electric energy is certainly charged and a charged field that rotates generates a magnetic field. This must be Schappeller’s glowing magnetism. More on this is coming later.

But there was another type of German field propulsion disc, the smaller one. The smaller saucers I call the “Magnetscheiben” or magnetic discs after a description related to me by Horst Schuppmann (2). Now, there may be a new and better explanation of the workings of smaller discs thanks to physicist Dr. Paul Potter.

Before starting on this explanation, I would like to make it clear that I have no evidence for operational German field propulsion flying discs in World War Two. My position is that they only experimented on these devices during the war. Later post-war observations of these devices, such as were called “Adamski craft”, were further developed by Germans in South America, possibly Greenland, and possibly in the USA.

The smaller discs, called the “Vril discs” by most people, are given an origin as inventions of the Vril Society, a subset of the Thule Society. According to this line of thought, the arrangement of construction was channeled to Vril psychic mediums. Three counter-rotating magnetic fields, one on top of another, somehow supplied the lift (3).

Writer O. Bergmann, while not contradicting Juergen-Ratthofer the spiritual father of the Vril and Haunebu concept, gives us a better explanation of the workings in my mind. Please bear with my translation:

> *“The later flying discs (UFOs) have still only one revolving, rotating ring as is always reported by eye witnesses. This revolving ring causes the same effect, serviceably copying, heavenly bodies and planets as they circle about themselves whereby each its own gravity field will be generated, planets as in flying discs. Nature, the godly cosmos, is constructed upon wise, conformed, laws. Today mankind does not possess the ability to recognize these wise, conformed laws let alone to mimic the abolition of gravity by means of rotation in technical devices. We have already said that the German flying discs have made themselves independent of earth’s gravity, just as from the gravity of other planets. They have no longer relinquished the powers of pressure and suction whereby the often observed zigzag flight at high speed is at once possible to them without harm for the (disc’s) inhabitants or suddenly stand still in the air.”(4)*

Another version of the same idea comes from writer D. H. Harmann, writing even earlier, before the onset of Norbert Juergen-Rathoffer or Ralf Ettl. Again, my translation:

“All material bodies set in motion generate a magnetic field in this way because all material electrons contained are set free by rotation. This holds in the greater sense also for planets that through rotation generate

their electromagnetic or gravitation field as I have already said. This works if advanced in rotation or else held fixed in rotation as through the sun." (5)

I want to focus on the words of these two German writers but just so the reader will not think that this "planetary motion" idea is completely aberrant, or some peculiarity of the German mind, below are a couple paragraphs from William Lyne:

> *"According to Hannes Alfven, a giant electric current travels through space along lines of "frozen magnetic force" from the sun to the earth, passes through the earth and back to the sun's equator, imparting "angular momentum" to the earth in its solar orbit. This was based on earlier research by Kristian Birkeland, who in 1895 explained the aurora borealis as the effect of the currents later proven by Alfven, as they enter the earth's magnetic field is almost vertical, causing a glow similar to that of cathode rays in a laboratory.*
>
> *J.J. Thompson, in 1893, restated Tesla's earlier finding (without attribution), "..if moving tubes of force entering a conductor are dissolved in it, mechanical momentum is given to it at right angles to the tubes and to the magnetic induction", adding that this momentum is " ...proportional to the vector product of electric and magnetic forces". This repeated what Tesla had said, since the momentum was proportional to the vector product of the electric and magnetic fields." (6)*

So the point these writers seem to be making is that a force, gravity or electromagnetism or both can be generated through rotating bodies and that German flying discs or at least one type of German flying disc, used a rotating part, the saucer part, to achieve this energy production. In this way they mimic and are based upon planetary motion. This is not the same as the aerodynamic forces being generated by the Miethe, Schriever and Habermohl discs that also rotated about their axes. What is being discussed is totally different. It is a method of field propulsion. But outside of describing its motion, we are still at a loss to explain its workings other than the Juergen-Ratthofer reference to three moving magnetic fields.

In and around this discussion, all three writers cite and mention Renato Vesco. Renato Vesco was an Italian engineer who worked with the Germans during the war in the secret facility at Lake Garda. Vesco was fortunate enough to gain access to the British Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee files in London. From this he gleaned most of his knowledge on flying discs. This access to British as well as American (Combined) Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee reports as well as other reports on German wartime science and technology began in 1946 even as they were coming off the printing press. It was in 1946, one year after the war ended, that a period of good feeling and relaxation developed. Actually, it was more like a security meltdown since for some reason things never acknowledged before or since were allowed to leak out. This all changed from 1947 onward as relations between the East and the West cooled and then froze into the Cold War. Even since the Cold War has ended, the intelligence agencies of both the East and West have behaved as if this secrecy situation developed during the Cold War is going to be a permanent, ongoing, state policy.

Vesco, giving us a glimpse through the modern security-state secret window and into the world of that defeated technical wonder, Nazi Germany, speaks of one organization doing work on rotating bodies, Kreiselgeraete, GmbH. The word “Kreiselgeraete” means something like “gyroscopic devices”. The relationship to flying saucers is obvious. Vesco explains the obvious fact that the cabin needs to be held steady in relationship to any rapidly rotating ring extending outward which the flying saucer might have (7). Vesco actually only devotes one paragraph to Kreiselgeraete but everyone since seems to have agreed that this company must have played some role in at least some German flying discs. Here are Vesco’s words on Kreiselgeraete:

> *"In 1945 the National Physical Laboratory's division of applied physics had reexamined a system of direct gyroscopic stabilization. It was modeled on the same system that at the beginning of the century had made the "miracle" of the Monorail train possible (a curious vehicle that has never come into widespread use; it was kept balanced on a single rail thanks to the gyrostatic inertia developed by the small by heavy and rapidly spinning flywheel). In addition, the laboratory put to profitable use in its own studies the experience accumulated by the scientists of the Kreislegeraete G.m.b.H. of Berlin Britz, a dissolved company that had specialized in the study and construction of mechanisms employing gyroscopic phenomena. In 1943 Kreiselgeraete had succeeded in reducing the oscillations of a violently disturbed moving body to not more than one tenth of a degree." (8)*

The obvious next step is to get a copy of whatever information the government has on Kreiselgeraete. But what is it we are looking for exactly in consideration of Kreiselgeraete" This "information" is going to take the form of a government report that is going to have to be obtained using the coercive power of the Freedom of Information Act. We cannot expect the government to simply spill the beans and discuss flying discs in a report on a company which at best built sub-assemblies for such craft. The reader might remember the matter of Dr. Mario Zippermayr, his fuel-air bomb and the series of cover stories about "vortex cannons", all disinformation (9). In the initial FOIA request, five responses were received, each representing the next rung up the security ladder. Nobody without proper security clearance is going to get a higher-level report. Instead, a lower level report is generated which explains things only in general terms, giving away no sensitive issues.

So, again, what are we looking for" The answer is that we are looking for inconstancies or things left unsaid or unexplained. With this kind of understanding, let us review the government's report on Kreiselgeraete (10).

First and most importantly, we should note the date on which this information was obtained, February 9, 1945. This report was obtained during the war. In my experience reports written during the war are far more informative than the drab, monotone, minimizations written after the war. The report is based on one prisoner who was captured. His name is given as Herbert Franke. Franke was a skilled mechanic. He had worked at Askania (which is important as we will see) before coming to Kreiselgerate. Actually, at Kreiselgeraete, he was one of 15 skilled "research mechanics". He was with Kreiselgeraete until being drafted on July 25, 1944—those were desperate times for Germany. He is sometimes referred to in the report as "P/W" (prisoner of war).

Kreiselgeraete produced electrical gyroscopes of all types and sizes, gyroscope components, gyroscope frames, control boxes for submarines, tank turret components, and until 1943 they produced the Kommandogeraet for Marine flak.

Franke informs the Americans that Kreiselgeraete GmbH consisted of two plants, one in a suburb of Berlin at Zehlendorf and the other at Nieder Einsiedel. The Nieder Einsiedel facility was an experimental station and it was at this where Franke worked. Then Franke gives additional information that there was actually a third facility. From the report:

> ***"4.*** *There was another section or plant under this firm's title in Lodz, Poland. P/W claims that the firm was a subsidiary of Askania, since the director ROUX from Askania visited often and issued directives, etc."*

Franke would know this since he had worked at Askania. Somewhat later we are told:

> *“**25.** According to P/W this entire plant, plus the one at Nieder Einseidel, was used primarily for research. Any quality production was accomplished at Lodz, Poland. He had no definite production figures and would not hazard a guess at any.”*

Franke provides a very detailed description of the individual buildings and a description and brief resume of the seven most important people working there. About 700 people in all were employed. Franke describes his activity at the experimental station at Nieder Einsiedel as:

> *“**44.** P/W was not certain as to the used of the experimental boards he was making but thought they were for some remote control apparatus with which the engineers in the laboratories were experimenting. As far as he could judge the boards were used to test the power of different types of electric motors.”*

We learn more about this facility as Franke describes the actual building in which he worked:

> *“**48.** The first floor of he rear section was used as a work shop in which about 30 women were employed winding coils for electric motors. The second floor was the workshop in which the experimental boards were constructed, where P/W was employed with nine others. The third floor was the drafting room employing 7 or 8 men and 3 women.”*

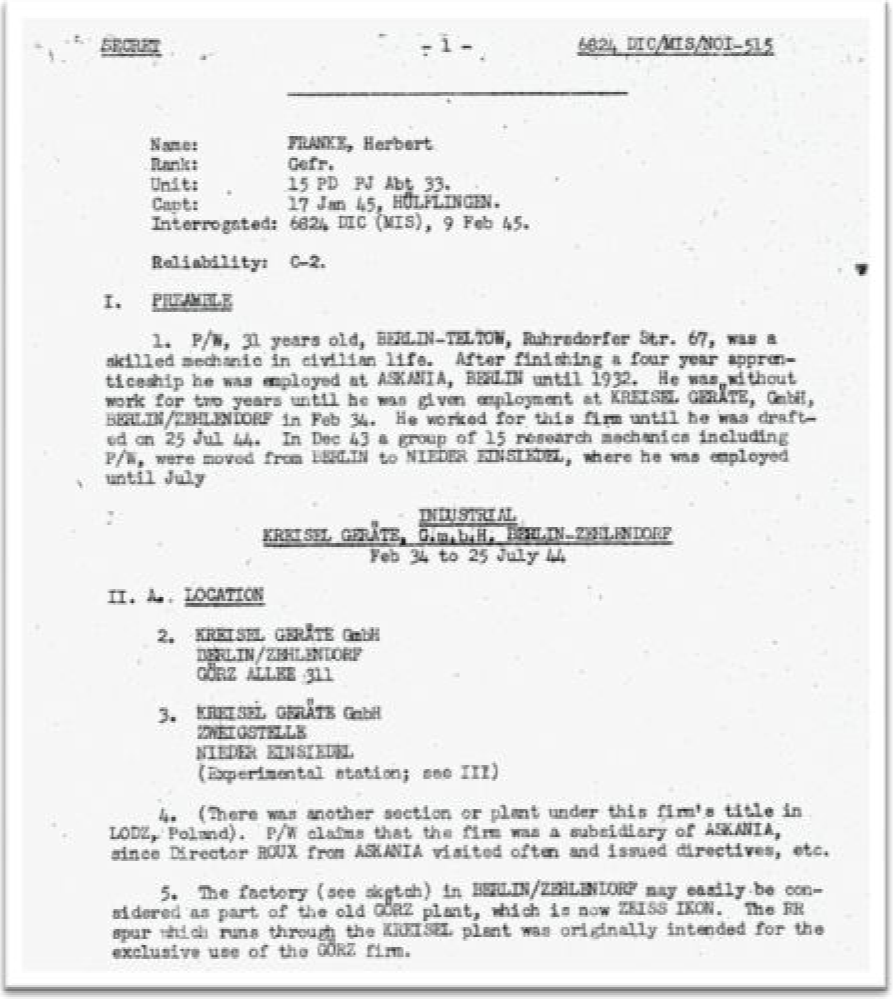

SECRET - 1 - 6824 DIC/MIS/NOI-515

Name: FRANKE, Herbert
Rank: Gefr.
Unit: 15 PD PJ Abt 33.
Capt: 17 Jan 45, HÜLFLINGEN.
Interrogated: 6824 DIC (MIS), 9 Feb 45.

Reliability: C-2.

I. PREAMBLE

1. P/W, 31 years old, BERLIN-TELTOW, Ruhrsdorfer Str. 67, was a skilled mechanic in civilian life. After finishing a four year apprenticeship he was employed at ASKANIA, BERLIN until 1932. He was without work for two years until he was given employment at KREISEL GERÄTE, GmbH, BERLIN/ZEHLENDORF in Feb 34. He worked for this firm until he was drafted on 25 Jul 44. In Dec 43 a group of 15 research mechanics including P/W, were moved from BERLIN to NIEDER EINSIEDEL, where he was employed until July

INDUSTRIAL
KREISEL GERÄTE, G.m.b.H. BERLIN-ZEHLENDORF
Feb 34 to 25 July 44

II. A. LOCATION

2. KREISEL GERÄTE GmbH
BERLIN/ZEHLENDORF
GÖRZ ALLEE 311

3. KREISEL GERÄTE GmbH
ZWEIGSTELLE
NIEDER EINSIEDEL
(Experimental station; see III)

4. (There was another section or plant under this firm's title in LODZ, Poland). P/W claims that the firm was a subsidiary of ASKANIA, since Director ROUX from ASKANIA visited often and issued directives, etc.

5. The factory (see sketch) in BERLIN/ZEHLENDORF may easily be considered as part of the old GÖRZ plant, which is now ZEISS IKON. The RR spur which runs through the KREISEL plant was originally intended for the exclusive use of the GÖRZ firm.

Kreiselgeraete GmbH This was the prime german company manufacturing gyroscopic devices. The testimony of a prisoner of war who worked for both Kreiselgeraete and Askania is that Kreiselgeraete and a third facility in Lodz, Poland which worked closely with Askania's plant there. Askania was said to have produced "aircraft motors" at Lodz. The prisoner also worked at Kreiselgeraete's experimental facility at Neider Einsiedel.

So, what have we learned about Kreiselgeraete GmbH" We now know it was really an experimental facility with levels of sophistication. First there was the more mundane work on gyros, tank parts, and submarine control boxes. Second was the secret, experimental work done on control boards, perhaps measuring output, and electric motors that may have been the subject of the control board monitoring. Production work was not done on secret work at either the Zehlendorf or the Neider Einsiedel facility but instead was done at Lodz, Poland in conjunction with another company, Askania. In fact, Askania may have been directing this research work according to the testimony of Franke.

We have gone from a gyro plant to a plant that is really making experimental electric motors and associated test apparatus and then sending their work to a third facility or a related company in Lodz, Poland. This is strange. Lodz is at the very center of Poland, southwest of Warsaw.

This has to have been the most eastern part of Poland which German speakers and German culture felt comfortable for operation purposes. After the war Germans were resettled out of what was then an eastern portion of Germany and what is now Poland. German culture was gone with the wind. Place names were changed. Now, research into mysterious wartime happenings must be done and is done through a Slavic perspective. No Anglo-American post-war recovery teams ever make it to this region, so US/British government files are going to be of no value. We need to get lucky here.

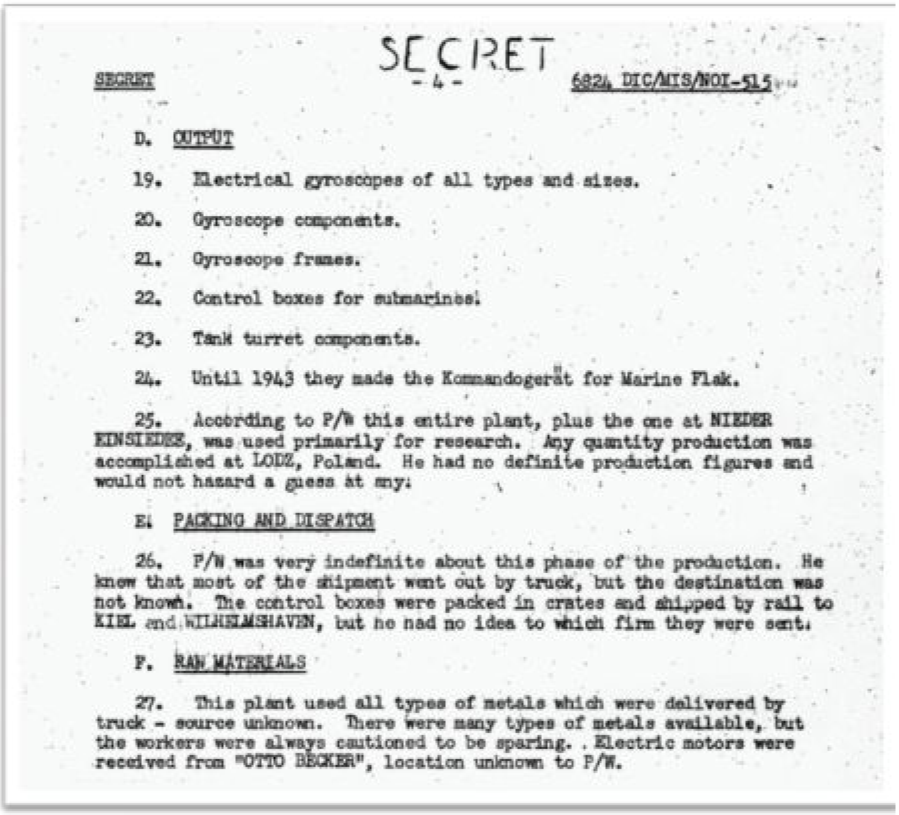

SECRET

D. OUTPUT

19. Electrical gyroscopes of all types and sizes.

20. Gyroscope components.

21. Gyroscope frames.

22. Control boxes for submarines.

23. Tank turret components.

24. Until 1943 they made the Kommandogerät for Marine Flak.

25. According to P/W this entire plant, plus the one at NIEDER EINSIEDEE, was used primarily for research. Any quantity production was accomplished at LODZ, Poland. He had no definite production figures and would not hazard a guess at any.

E. PACKING AND DISPATCH

26. P/W was very indefinite about this phase of the production. He knew that most of the shipment went out by truck, but the destination was not known. The control boxes were packed in crates and shipped by rail to KIEL and WILHELMSHAVEN, but he had no idea to which firm they were sent.

F. RAW MATERIALS

27. This plant used all types of metals which were delivered by truck - source unknown. There were many types of metals available, but the workers were always cautioned to be sparing. . Electric motors were received from "OTTO BECKER", location unknown to P/W.

Kreiselgeraete GmbH More Combined Intelligence Objectives Subcommittee file content on Kreisegerate

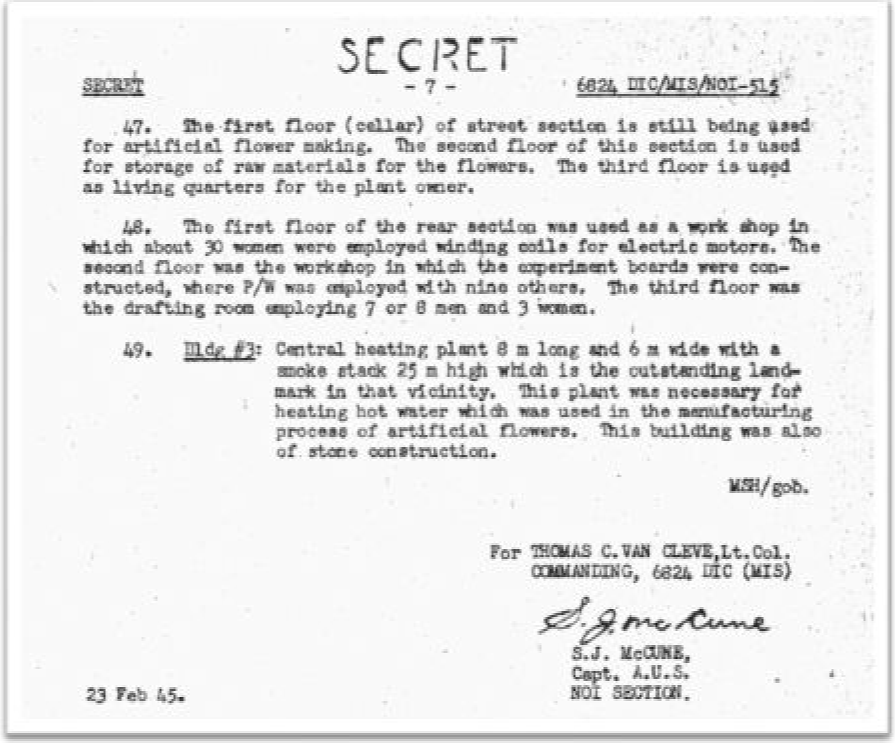

SECRET

SECRET - 7 - 6824 DIC/MIS/NOI-515

47. The first floor (cellar) of street section is still being used for artificial flower making. The second floor of this section is used for storage of raw materials for the flowers. The third floor is used as living quarters for the plant owner.

48. The first floor of the rear section was used as a work shop in which about 30 women were employed winding coils for electric motors. The second floor was the workshop in which the experiment boards were constructed, where P/W was employed with nine others. The third floor was the drafting room employing 7 or 8 men and 3 women.

49. Bldg #3: Central heating plant 8 m long and 6 m wide with a smoke stack 25 m high which is the outstanding landmark in that vicinity. This plant was necessary for heating hot water which was used in the manufacturing process of artificial flowers. This building was also of stone construction.

MSH/gob.

For THOMAS C. VAN CLEVE, Lt. Col.
COMMANDING, 6824 DIC (MIS)

S.J. McCune
S.J. McCUNE,
Capt. A.U.S.
NOI SECTION.

23 Feb 45.

Kreiselgeraete GmbH More Combined Intelligence Objectives Subcommittee file on Kreisegerate

So what in the world is Askania and how do they figure into this puzzle”

It turns out that Askania is really no mystery. It is an old German company and information on it can be found on-line at a German language Wikepedia site (http://de.wikepedia.org/wiki/Askania). Askania is a maker of precision instruments. The Wikepedia site includes compasses for U-boats, distance measuring devices, pressure measuring devices, geophysical devices, time-keeping devices, gravimentic devices and in general devices servicing geodesic, aircraft, astronomy and navigation needs. Askania is centered in Berlin. The company’s history, starting in 1871, is summarized except for their involvement in the Second World War for which they along with many other German companies understandably have developed amnesia.

But Askania did have a facility at Lodz, Poland which is evidenced at another German language website (http://www.ostwallinfo.de/Askania/mitte/askaniamitte.htm). Not only is there text here but many pictures since this site was unusual and needs some explanation.

Pictures of Askania Mitte

These are pictures of the underground facility at Lodz, Poland (Liztmannstadt), wher Askania had its workshops. Askania worked in conjunction here with the Kreiselgeraete company on “aircraft motors”. These were companies producing pre-cision measuring devices, electrical devices and gyroscopic devices—not the pistons, engine blocks and cylinders of traditional aircraf engines. What type of “aircraft motors” could these have been”

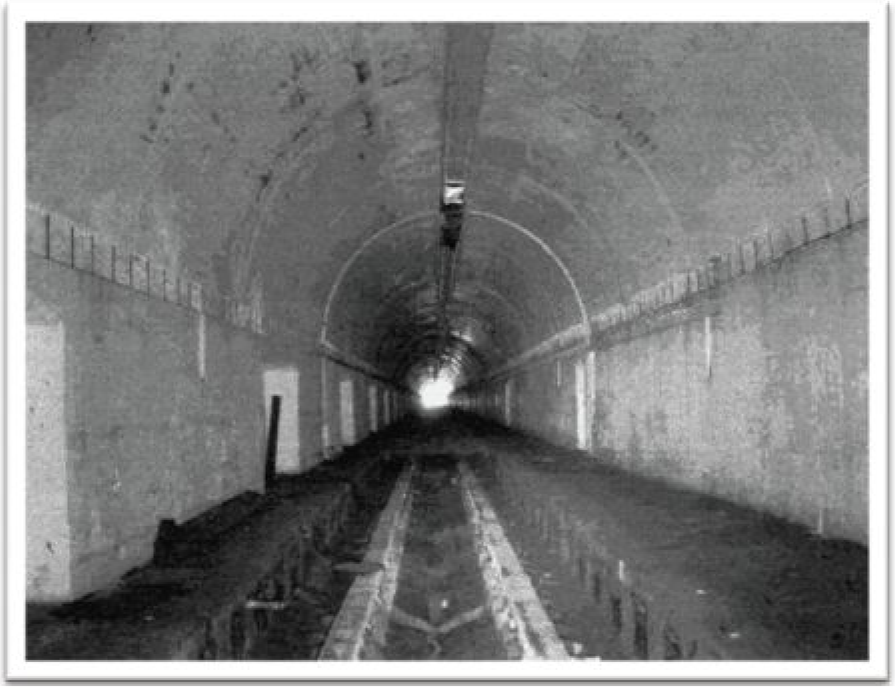

Askania Mitte This is an entrance to the facility.

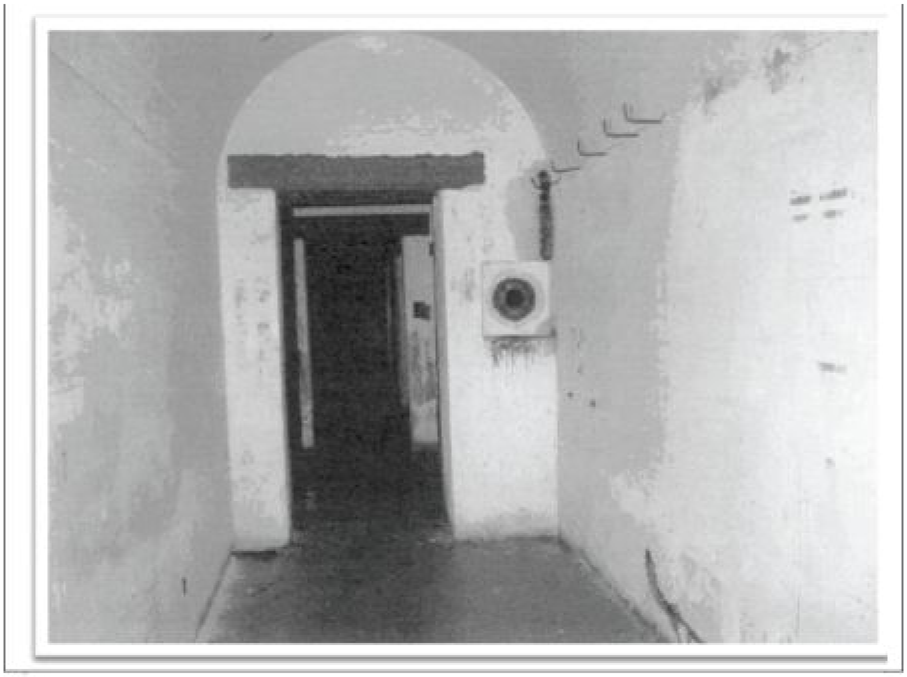

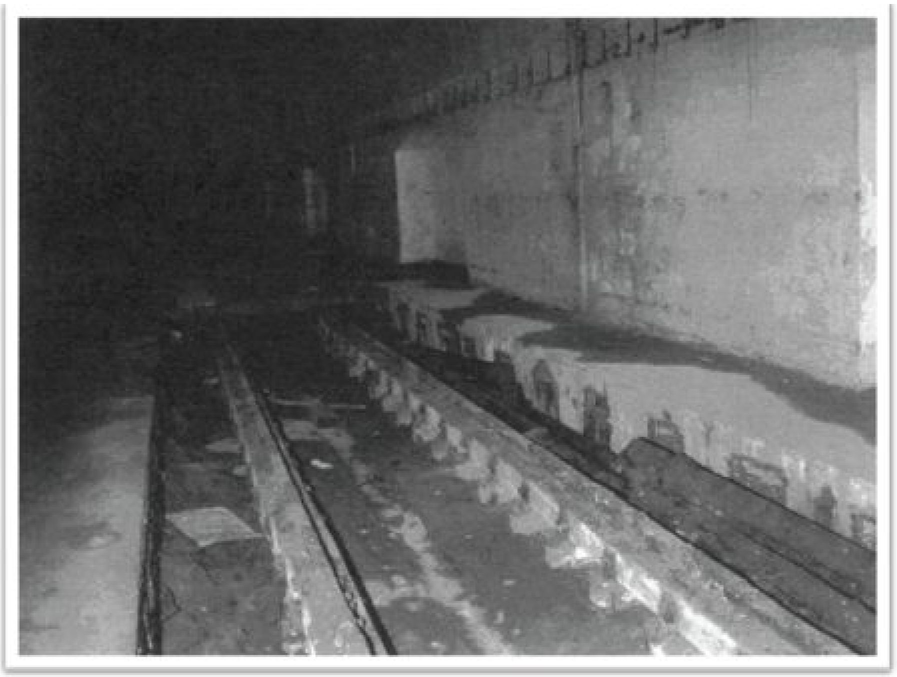

Askania Mitte This is a picture from the outside showing the roof.

The facility was called Askania Mitte and was about 40 km east of Lodz in a forest. In parenthesis behind the word Lodz is the German name “Litzmannstadt” which is evidently the name given it by the Germans. This site was the forward, temporary command post for the Fuehrer Headquarters at Wolfschanze. In October, 1940, construction people arrived and from December, 1940 to September, 1941 a massive project was undertaken in which two adjoining tunnels were carved out of the mountain and lined with two and a half meters of steel and concrete making them impervious to aerial attack. These two tunnels, one 380 meters long (about 1,235 feet) and the other 355 meters long (about 1,154 feet), were dug to house the special trains Hitler used for his purposes traveling around Germany. For instance, after dropping Hitler off at the Wolf’s Lair, the train could be safely stored out of sight in one of these tunnels. A similar arrangement was found at other of Hitler’s Headquarters facilities. Included inside this facility were 2.3 kilometers of railway, pumping (facilities), a communication and news center, an electricity generating facility, an additional bombproof, security bunker as well as housing for living and working. Because of security considerations, only German construction firms took part in this construction with as many as 4500 individuals working on this project at its peak.

As it turned out Hitler never stayed there, however, the facility took on a new role. In December 1944, the code designations of Goldamsel (Golden blackbird) and Huhn (fowl) were ascribed to this facility. Evidently, we are entering the period of time that shipments from Kreiselgeraete to Askania became increasingly important. This is also evident in its name “Askania Mitte” which means Askania Center. Finally, we are told of the purpose of this redesigned facility; it was used for the production of aircraft engines.

What” How is this possible” Askania did not build anything close to aircraft engines. Such engines require considerable heavy industrial facilities and effort in order to forge pistons and crankshafts alone. Nowhere can any record of aircraft engines being built by Askania be found as far as I know. This was simply not their area of expertise. Watchmakers do not make aircraft engines, no matter jet or piston.

This could not be possible unless these engines were being made out of the experimental electric motors produced for Askania by a Kreiselgeraete; a company that certainly would have been called upon should those engines revolved about a high-speed axis. Could Askania be using these experimental electric motors as well as other subassemblies and putting together engines to power another type of flying craft, one that spun on its axis and ascended vertically” Why else would “Flugzeugmotoren”, aircraft engines be made by a precision instruments company, in a high security setting, deep underground, in hinterlands of the Third Reich” Can we say this place was the origin of the Magnetscheiben”

Let us be clear, there is no hard evidence yet that flying saucers were being made at Lodz. Secondly, if flying saucers were being produced at Lodz, they would have remained on the experimental level. The Askania facility at Lodz would have been a Forschungsstelle, a research facility only. Further development would have occurred at an Entwicklungsstelle, a developmental facility. Meanwhile, first generation (conventionally powered) flying discs were just going into assembly line production at Litomerice, in what is now the Czech Republic, at a facility called “Richard” (11). Richard was actually three facilities, Richard I-III or possibly code-named Elsaba, Kalkspat and Osram, respectively, according to the same source.

Sometimes the conventionally powered German flying discs are referred to with the work “Kreisel” (Gyroscope). Of course, this is because they spun on their axes. The Schriever and Habermohl discs are sometimes named with this word. But then there are references to something else, a “gyroscopic principle” which seems to mean a principle of flight. There is no gyroscopic principle in aerodynamics so this term must mean some form of non-aerodynamic flight. The following is a good example of the use of this term. The source was a newspaper article, here re-typed just as it was re-typed in a booklet self-published by UFO researcher William L. Moore of MJ-12 fame (12):

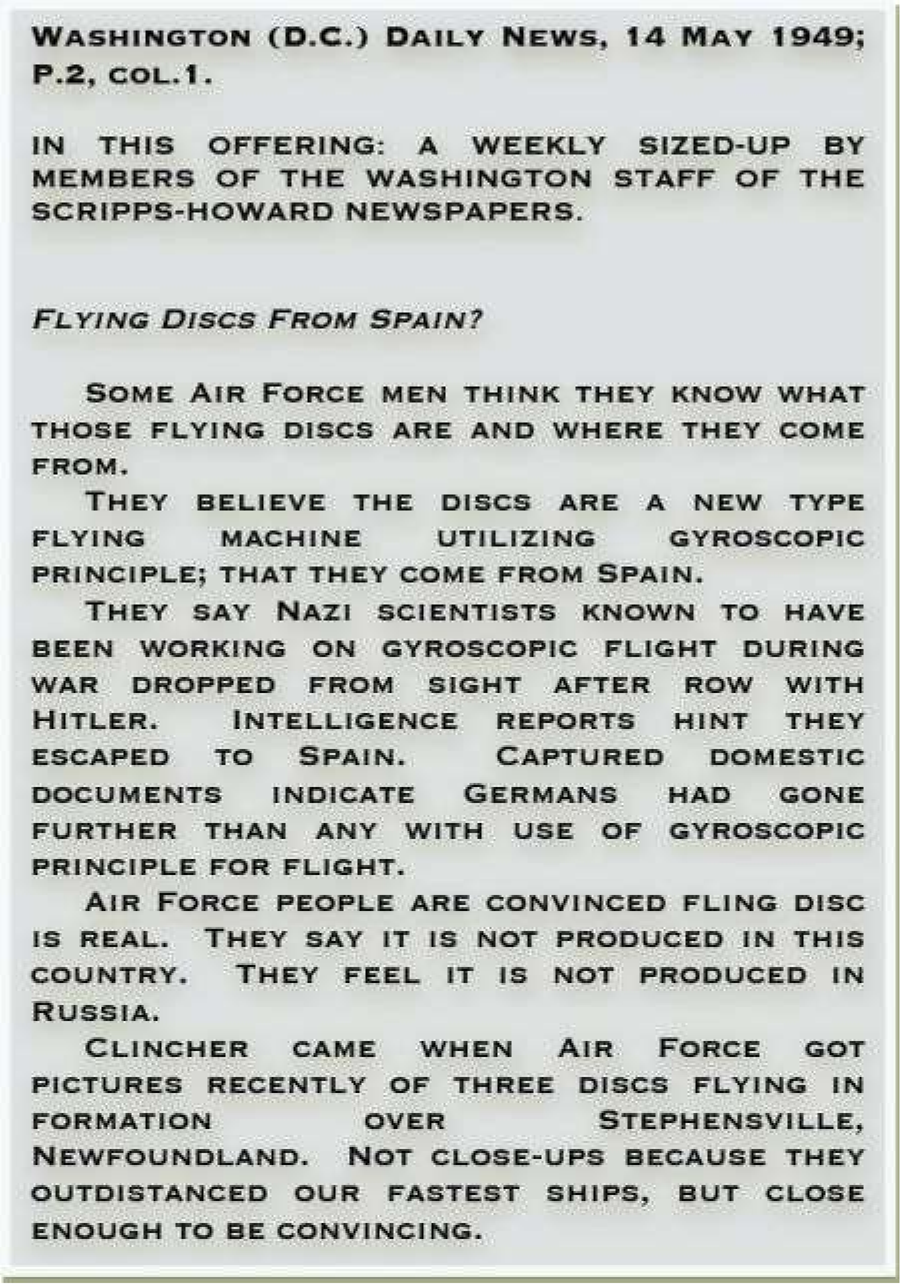

Washington (D.C.) Daily News, 14 May 1949; P.2, col.1.

In this offering: a weekly sized-up by members of the Washington staff of the Scripps-Howard newspapers.

Flying Discs From Spain?

Some Air Force men think they know what those flying discs are and where they come from.

They believe the discs are a new type flying machine utilizing gyroscopic principle; that they come from Spain.

They say Nazi scientists known to have been working on gyroscopic flight during war dropped from sight after row with Hitler. Intelligence reports hint they escaped to Spain. Captured domestic documents indicate Germans had gone further than any with use of gyroscopic principle for flight.

Air Force people are convinced fling disc is real. They say it is not produced in this country. They feel it is not produced in Russia.

Clincher came when Air Force got pictures recently of three discs flying in formation over Stephensville, Newfoundland. Not close-ups because they outdistanced our fastest ships, but close enough to be convincing.

Now all the above is really just a long introduction to the new information mentioned earlier, and the reader’s patience has been appreciated. The new information is a working understanding of how such magnetically-powered flying craft would actually fly. For this explanation, we are indebted to physicist Dr. Paul Potter for writing his book *Gravitational Manipulation of Domed Craft*. Dr. Potter starts with an observation of heavenly bodies, particularly black holes, looking at the energy types and energy relationships involved that are studied and known to astrophysicists. It is upon this information that Dr. Potter bases his book. Given these observations, he asks the question, *how would they be employed to build what we would call UFOs”* To me, this is an important breakthrough in concept, since Dr. Potter is starting with empirical observation, not theory-first mathematics and chalkboard squiggles.

The reader will remember the German writers at the start of this chapter who also explained saucer flight in terms of the forces inherent in heavenly bodies. The rotation of the planets and the rotation of the planets around the sun were given as the reason for gravitation and electromagnetism. Likewise, and following this principle, it was stated by these German writers that the rotating parts of a type of flying disc generated a force which would make them independent of gravity.

What has happened is that the more poetic explanation of the two German writers has been amplified with scientific basis added. Dr. Potter makes this all understandable for us in his book and even uses a simple example, the Searl disc. The Searl disc was a flying saucer model. We know the Searl disc actually flew from the many pictures and eyewitness testimonies intertwined with its story. For descriptive purposes the Searl disc is wonderfully simple since it used only permanent magnets. A series of small magnets were arranged on the spinning wheel of the saucer and revolved around a larger, central permanent magnet at the center just like the planets rotate around the sun or the stars of a galaxy rotate around a central black hole.

Dr. Potter introduces us to magnetic reconnection. He says this concept is a known commodity in the astrophysics world and it is a bit surprising that it has not formed the basis of some patent, somewhere, but it has not. We all know a magnet is surrounded by what are commonly called lines of force. These lines start and end at the poles of the magnet with lines further away from the surface being more widely spaced, indicting that they are weaker. We could imagine magnetic reconnection as magnets in close proximity sharing lines of force. Permanent magnets are arranged in a circle around the larger, central magnet. As the disc is rotated, the existing lines of force shared by the central magnet and the outer magnets are pulled apart and then new, shared lines of force are immediately formed. This breaking and reforming of the lines of force is called magnetic reconnection (13).

By magnetic reconnection, electron-positron pairs are produced out of the zero-point vacuum (14). Positrons are positive electrons (15). In the process of magnetic reconnection the positrons and electrons separate, with the electrons being pushed outward and downward to the bottom edge of the disc and the positrons pushed inward and upward, forming a cone over and at the center to the disc. Potter describes this process as it relates to the Searl disc and the Searl SEG generator:

> *"Notably, this reconnection mechanism was mostly what led to the stressing of the air surrounding the discs of J.R.R. Searl (back in the 1970's), and which provided the copious supplies of charged particles which then became imbued with other kinetic forces, and which subsequently allowed Searl's generating rotors to defy gravity and to rise upward, not only by ionizing the surrounding air but by creating a projected field in the form of a rotating tube-field ahead of and above that disc, which the disc would simply fall upward into. The same reconnection electron-positron producing process is found in Searl's SEG power generator turbine which would also create copious supplies of electrons, which in Searl's turbine would be harvested by inductor coils and fed into an electrical storage circuit (and in an intelligent world such a mechanism would have then powered into a national grid, without the need for fossil fuels or nuclear-power rods)"(16)*

Once the mechanism is started auto-rotation results. Dr. Potter explains:

> *“Interestingly, with regard to those generators of Searl, he would have extracted those ferroelectric electron emissions by a form of magneto-electric-induction because his SEG rigs were not given any electrical input to start them running - and yet once they started to rotate they would continue forever. This would occur by the slightly miss-aligned magnetic field lines of the rotors and the stator bucking each other, thereby generating a kinetic rotational force that was self-sustaining and which resulted in a self-increasing rotational velocity. Once they started to increase in velocity these rotors would almost instantly have developed electric fields of 10 to the 6th volts/cm through the break-reconnection process.” (17)*

Is there any hint at all that such a motor was under development during the Third Reich” If a hint of such a motor could be found, this along with the circumstantial evidence of Kreiselgeraete, Askania, and the strange site of Askania Mitte might lead us to the inescapable conclusion that the Magnetscheibe was an experimental reality. Yes, we do have a hint of such an engine.

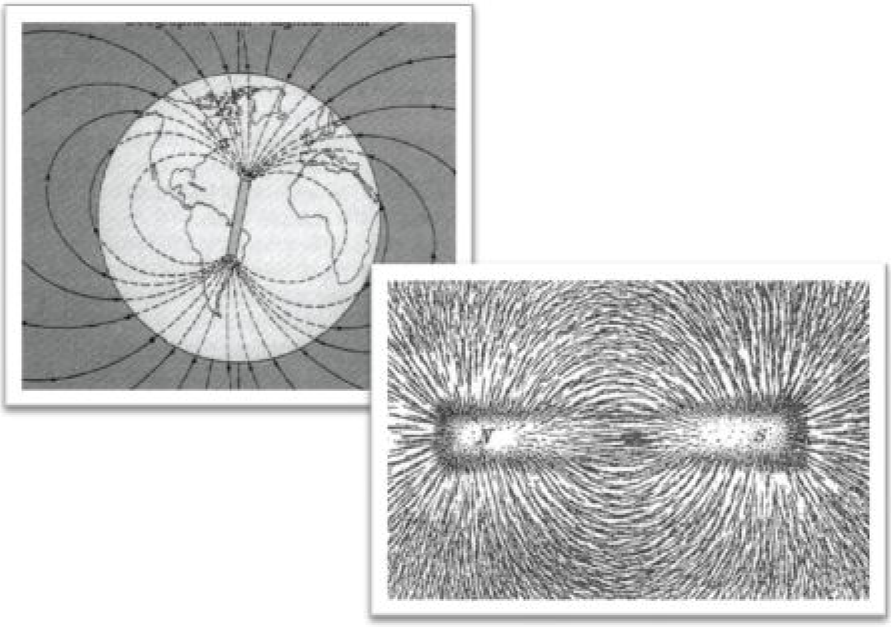

Magnetic Lines of Force. *The Earth's magnetic field is shown above with a bar magnet below. Imagine two earths or any heavenly bodies in close proximity, each spinning so that their magnetic fields interact. This would produce magnetic reconnection and the resulting generation of positrons and electrons according to Dr. Paul Potter.*

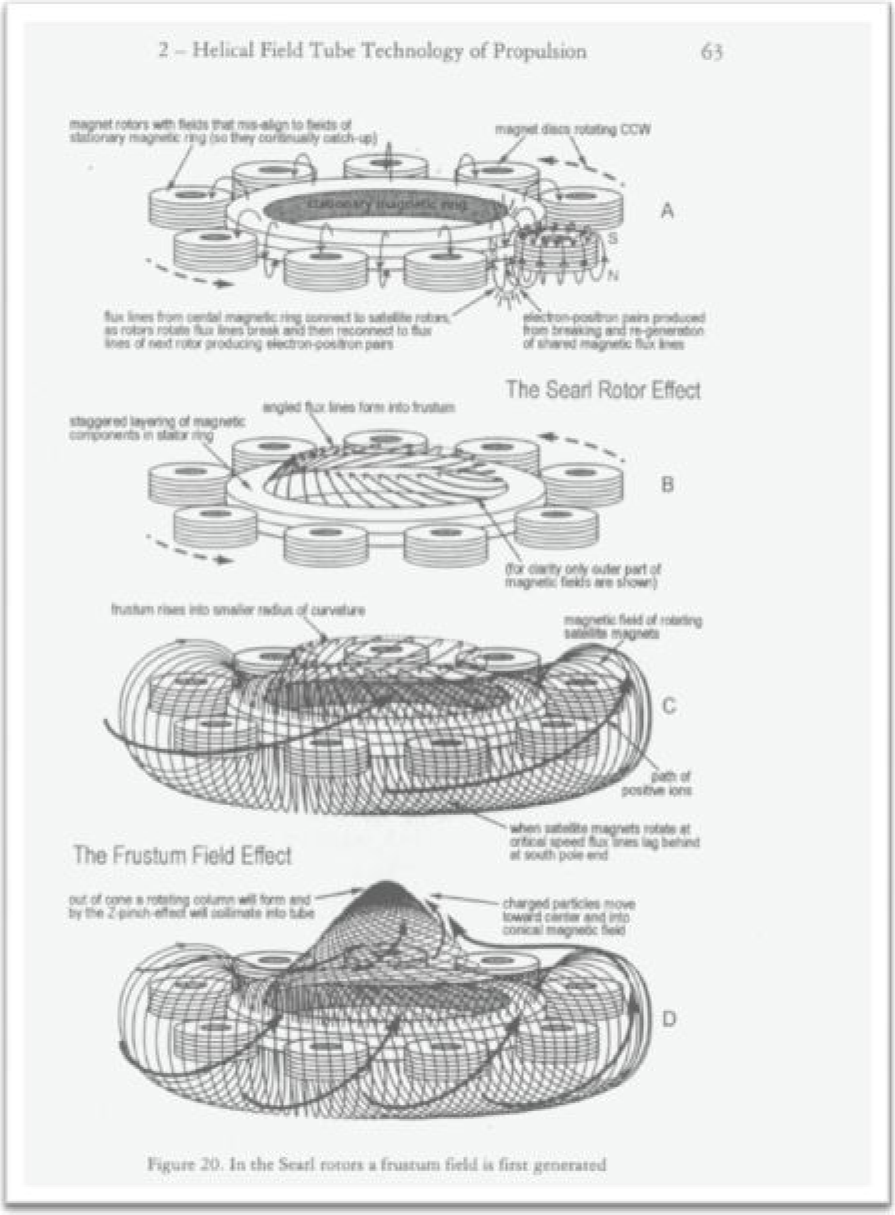

2 – Helical Field Tube Technology of Propulsion 63

magnet rotors with fields that mis-align to fields of stationary magnetic ring (so they continually catch-up)
magnet discs rotating CCW
stationary magnetic ring
A
S
N
flux lines from central magnetic ring connect to satellite rotors, as rotors rotate flux lines break and then reconnect to flux lines of next rotor producing electron-positron pairs
electron-positron pairs produced from breaking and re-generation of shared magnetic flux lines
The Searl Rotor Effect
angled flux lines form into frustum
staggered layering of magnetic components in stator ring
B
(for clarity only outer part of magnetic fields are shown)
frustum rises into smaller radius of curvature
magnetic field of rotating satellite magnets
C
path of positive ions
when satellite magnets rotate at critical speed flux lines lag behind at south pole end
The Frustum Field Effect
out of cone a rotating column will form and by the Z-pinch-effect will collimate into tube
charged particles move toward center and into conical magnetic field
D

Figure 20. In the Searl rotors a frustum field is first generated

Dr. Paul Potter's diagram showing Magnetic Reconnection. Magnetic lines of force join and separate as they rotate, generating positrons and electrons.

Before citing evidence for this engine perhaps some problems need to be discussed. This problem has been called "retromoment". My understanding of retromoment is the opposing drag that would be caused when a magnetic motor self-inducts. By this I mean that the iron material forming the magnet or the core of an electromagnet when moving through a magnetic field would suffer the results of induction and be filled with eddy currents that would increase the strength of those magnets. If a ring of magnets were revolving around a central magnet, having been spun by an external force, the magnetic fields of the magnets moving past each other would interact; producing induction and the momentum of the wheel of magnets would suffer a breaking action. As any two magnets passed each other, their effect on each other would increase with their speed so that the momentum of their passing would be halted and even a slight retro-motion would occur as momentum is overcome unless a motor of some type can supply additional force.

Dr. Nieper will give the reader his understanding in the upcoming citation so the reader can determine the validity of each idea or determine if they are the same. The importance is this necessary idea of the "miss-alignment" of which Dr. Potter speaks. Somehow, this gyro-wheel has to be kept in motion for the electron-positron pairs to be generated. The "hint" mentioned above is a seeming breakthrough in how to achieve an electric motor or generator which somehow bypasses this retromoment.

Dr. Hans Nieper's book, "Conversion of Gravity Field Energy Revolution in Technology, Medicine and Society" mainly concerns a free energy conference in the 1980's and contains the citation. He is discussing the work of the late experimental physicist Dr. Bruce De Palma and his work on N-machines or what are now called homopolar generators. But, what applies to these generators also applies to electric motors as stated in the text:

> “The session of October 24 started with a presentation by Bruce DePalma, Montecito, California. DePalma is a former student and instructor at M.I.T. in Boston.
>
> He is the inventor of the high output N-machine, or the so-called Unipolar Generator. Faraday first described this principle in 1831, however. Nevertheless, it is to DePalma’s merit that he studied the Unipolar Motor, called N-machine, in more detail and proved that the system of magnets rotating at high speed can deliver more electric energy than it needs for its operation. This, however, requires some expensive, cost-intensive technology. A subsequent video presentation showed a medium-sized N-machine in operation. It should be particularly pointed out that, when the generated current is tapped, there is no opposing drag effect in the system, as would be the case with a conventional dynamo or electric generator. The N-machine can operate only as a current generator, not as a motor, again in contrast to the conventional dynamo. DePalma made some comments regarding the overall phenomenon that were met with great interest. He especially mentioned some physical anomalies that were observed during the study of gyroscopic systems and heir interactions with the gravitational field. Thus, for example, the gravity acceleration of a gyroscopic system—-say, a rotating ball—-is different from that for a non-rotating ball. No explanation is available at this time.

DePalma also stated that most large planets should be viewed as Unipolar Generators or N-machines. This could explain, for example, the generation of high electric energies in the ring system of the planet Saturn.

> *“It is remarkable that DePalma referred to a 1941-42 paper by P. Boehning of the Faculty of Physics, University of Breslau. At the*

> *beginning of the war, Boehning had build a motor which, in contrast to conventional motors, operated without retromoment, i.e., its operation was similar to the N-machine. It is thus apparently possible to convert the principle of the N-machine to a positive motor drive. The Breslau papers were taken to the United States after the war, and were filed away there (FIAT reports).”(18)*

Now, there is a lot to talk about here such as gyros, electrical generation, planetary motion, planets as N-machines, Saturn and its rings, and so on. But the most important issue for our discussion is the fact that Professor P. Boehning had found a way, apparently, to make a motor-generator that would simply spin freely. This must have been done using permanent magnets at least as test designs because of their simplicity. Also, this must have involved some sort of imbalance, keeping the motion going.

Since we are so deep into the rabbit hole let me digress to answer the question that you have just mentally formed: Where is the P. Boehning report” Let me say that of all the documents I have ever sought, this report is/was and probably will remain the hardest to obtain. I don’t have it. Dr. Bruce DePalma is dead as is Dr. Hans Neiper. The University of Breslau no longer exists, neither does any city named “Breslau” - it is now a part of modern Poland. I have written to leading people in the free energy world in an effort to recover the report, all in vain. I have written the Library of Congress and the US Department of Commerce. These agencies did search in good faith but found nothing on Professor P. Boehning in the FIAT reports. I visited the U.C.L.A. Research Library and asked to go through their copies of the FIAT reports. They informed me that the FIAT reports were not available in the stacks, that they were in storage in a warehouse and that I would have to specify the report(s) I wanted and make an appointment at the warehouse. They made a list available to me of the reports on a computer. Naturally, nothing referencing P. Boehning, but I specified anything, any subject, which might be remotely connected and asked to see it. Trays of reports were produced on the appointed day but nothing appeared referencing P. Boehning or his mysterious motor. I am completely at a loss and any assistance would be greatly appreciated.

Now, we need to consider the craft allegedly made by the Vril Society. This device involved three magnetic discs stacked on top on one another.

What is next is basically a story frequently heard at UFO conferences. Many such stories are worthless but every now and then useful pieces of some partial truth can be gleaned. Some time ago UFO researcher Wendelle Stevens corresponded with me concerning German flying discs. In one of his letters to me he enclosed a copy of a letter he had received from a friend. Wendelle introduced this friend as a retired US Air Force Colonel and an air combat Viet Nam veteran. His letter to Wendelle was in response to a lecture on German flying discs Wendelle had given in Las Vegas, circa 2000, and which had been recorded electronically. Wendelle's friend sent a copy of the lecture to a retired CIA friend of his. This friend wrote back to the retired Colonel the comments below. Even though I have both names, that of the Colonel and the CIA figure, it would be bad form and perhaps even criminal to publish them. For those needing verification, I may be able to facilitate such verification or impose upon Wendelle Stevens to assist me in doing so. Following is one paragraph from the letter in which the retired Colonel relates the comments of the CIA person [Please note words in parentheses are mine for purposes of clarity]:

> *"You are correct about German saucer projects; however, one did get into production for combat. It had two rotating magnetic fields and a turbine engine and could get to 43,000 ' (feet) in 4-5 min. (minutes). One sprayed benzene in the air just ahead of a flight of B-17's, which caused them to blow up when ingesting it. Some Luftwaffe pilots were scheduled for transition training 15 May 45 to fly transport & combat missions. Some variations of these were taken to Murdoc and put in a hangar with a hinged roof. She said a friend verified this in 1965."*

The technical advisor I call Dr. Gordon Freeman once told me concerning the alleged "three rotating magnetic fields" that a clever engineer could do this with only two rotating magnetic fields. Think about this. The center magnet can be held stationary with the other two at the top and bottom moving in opposite directions. The fact that this saucer is described as having a turbine engine in addition to the magnetic fields indicates that the magnetic fields provided only levitation and that horizontal motion was provided by the jet engine and/or that "reverse moment" was being generated and had to be overcome with mechanical power.

This story raises the question if stacking the interacting magnetic fields involves the mechanism of magnetic reconnection as a means of levitation, if this method is an improvement over the arrangement favored by Searl, and if more powerful electromagnets were used or could be used in the stacked system. The story also brings us into the post-war world and introduces, yet again, the probability that the US Government obtained examples of German flying discs. Now I could go on with speculation concerning the Schappeller device with its monstrous magnetic field at this point but I will stop here.

The only real question remaining in my mind at this point is the origin of the Searl disc. There are really two mysteries. One is magnetic reconnection that generates electron-positron pairs and accounts for levitation. The second is method Searl employs to keep the disc spinning in spite of force(s) working to halt it. For the first, magnetic reconnection, Dr. Potter must be relied upon since this is totally beyond me. For anything other than a superficial mention of the subject, the reader must go to Dr. Paul Potter's excellent original work. Regarding the second mystery, how the Searl disc kept on spinning, the words of Dr. Potter are illuminating:

> *"The reader should note I am not here giving away the secret of Searl's magnetic rotors, of how their fields were configured so that they persistently rotated (mainly because I don't know how he did it...). That information is best obtained direct from John Searl himself,*

> *particularly via his current (circa. 20008 websites at: http://swallowcommand.com and http://www.searlsolution.com)" (19)*

By Occam's Razor, making the least assumptions, it must be concluded that he used the very same method referenced by that other free energy pioneer, Dr. Bruce DePalma: that being the method explained in that elusive paper by Professor P. Boehning, University of Breslau. But Searl does not credit Boehning. Nor does Searl offer any logical progression toward his invention. As we all know, the history of science and technology is built upon the steps taken by predecessors. When the work of predecessors is denied, red flags should go up.

Searl claims that between 1946 and 1956 he designed and built the Searl Effect Generator, a device having "anti-gravity" powers as well as being a perpetual motion device (20). Searl claims to have arrived at this knowledge, (remember, this is anti-gravity and perpetual motion), solely as a result of a dream or a series of dreams between the years stated above (21).

Now, I can't beg, borrow or steal a copy of the P. Boehning paper. If it resulted or contributed to Dr. DePalma's work generating electricity in a better way, if it was one of the pillars of the SEG generator and the Searl disc, if it contributed to the stacked "Vril" disc which the Americans did get their hands on, well, no wonder! Someone working for the Security State certainly took Boehning's FIAT report out of circulation. But in the magic year of 1946, this FIAT report and others seemed to have been available for the mere asking.

Perhaps Searl, who began work in England as a young electrical engineer in 1946, did dream of a gyroscopic method of flight and energy production. But for my money, I'll bet at some point before the Searl disc actually flew, John Searl read the still-secret FIAT report in question and it was this technology, not a dream, which put him on the road to discovery.

But I do not know what is in John Searl’s heart. Yes, I could be wrong. Maybe Searl did come by his breakthroughs, as he states, via a dream.

Or maybe it was a German dream.

Literature Cited

1. **Stevens, Henry, 2001**, *Hitler's Flying Saucers,* pages 144-194, Adventures Unlimited Publishing, Kemption, Illinios, USA

2. **Stevens, Henry, 2001**, pages 140-142

3. **Juergen-Ratthofer, Norbert and Ralf Ettl, 1992**, *Das Vril Projekt*, pages 27-28, STM-Tempelhof, Vienna, Austria

4. **Bergmann, O. 1989**, *II Deutsch Flugscheiben und U-Boote Ueberwachen Die Weltmeere*, pages 195-196, Hugin Gesellschaft, Wetter/Ruhr, Germany

5. **Haarmann, D. H., 1985**, *III Geheime Wunderwaffen Ueber den Krieg hinaus!*, page59, Hugin Gesellschaft, Wetter, Germany

6. **Lyne, William, 2001**, *Occult Science Dictatorship The official State Sceince Religion And How To Get Excommunicated*, pages 63, 63, Creatopia Productions, Lamy, New Mexico, USA

7. **Vesco, Renato, 1968**, *Intercept UFO*, page 247, Pinnacle Books, Inc., New York, USA

8. **Vesco, Renato, 1968**, page 248

9. **Stevens, Henry, 2007**, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science and Technology*, pages 103-111, Adventures

Unlimited Publishing, Kempton, Illinois, USA

10. Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee report, titled *Kreisel Geraete GmbH Berlin/Zehlendorf, 6824 DIC/MIS/NOT-515*

11. **Jesensky, Milos Ph.D., and Robert Lesniakiewicz, 1998**, “Wunderland” Mimozemske Technologie Treti Rise, page 111-112, Aos Publishing, Czech Republic.

12. *Project V-7: Hitler’s Flying Discs: An Illustrated Compilation of research and Source Materials, 1984*, page 6, William L. Moore Publications & Research, Burbank, California, USA

13. **Potter, Paul Ph.D., 2008**, *Gravitational Manipulation of Domed Craft*, pages 57-64, Adventures Unlimited Publishing, Kempton, Illinios, USA.

14. **Potter, Paul Ph.D., 2008**, pages 60, 62

15. **Van Nostrand’s Scientific Encyclopedia, Third Edition, 1958**, page 1202, D. Van Nostrad Company, Inc., Princeton, NJ., USA

16. **Potter, Paul, Ph.Dl, 2008**, page 62

17. **Potter, Paul, Ph.D., 2008**, page 133

18. **Nieper, Hans A., M.D., 1985**, *Conversion f Gravity Field Energy Revlution in Technology, Medicine and Society*, pages 156, 157, MIT Verlag, Oldenburg, Germany

19. **Potter, Paul, Ph.D., 2008**, page 446

20. http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/John_Searl

21. http://x-journals.com/2009/electromagnetic-flying-discs-the-story-behind-the-john-searl-story/

GREENLAND, PART ONE

Perhaps the reader will recall the second quotation ascribed to Gross Admiral Doenitz in year 1944:

> *“The German Navy will have to accomplish a great deal in the future. The German Navy knows all the hiding places in the oceans and therefore it will be very easy to bring the Fuehrer to a safe place should the necessity arise and in which he will have the opportunity to work out his final plans.”*

This quote comes from 1944 and things were not exactly going the way the German leadership had planned. This statement sounds very much like a wartime contingency plan in which Hitler is evacuated from Germany and takes up residence somewhere hidden abroad. Further, it sounds a little Redemptionish in that it mentions working out final plans.

The Redemptionish School maintains that Hitler did not die in the bunker but escaped and is waiting in some undisclosed location, waiting for a precise moment in which to reemerge and win the Second World War. There are variations of this theme. For instance, Hitler is awaiting a fleet of spaceships from the star-system of Aldebaren. Or, he is waiting in the underground city of New Berlin at the South Pole. Or, he has joined like-minded individuals, Germans and aliens, living in the center of the earth.

Let me be clear. I believe Hitler died in the bunker by his own hand. The dental forensic evidence seems overwhelming unless a massive conspiracy, involving tens of individuals, all maintaining the same story while under intense pressure is postulated.

The simple fact is that Hitler could have survived if he had chosen to do so. He did not. There was a reason for this decision. While the man, Adolf Hitler, could have emerged from the bowels of the bunker and fled Berlin, he would have lost forever his status as a Germanic hero in the eyes of his supporters. A Germanic hero can ultimately lose the battle but he must always remain in control. This is the old “dying with a sword in the hand” thing. Running is losing control. If Hitler had run, what would have emerged from the bunker would not have been the Fuehrer of Germany nor probably even Adolf Hitler, but merely a broken man, running away, under an assumed name. In the end it really does not matter whether Hitler survived or not. The Fuehrer of Germany died in that bunker under the best conditions that he could manage in that situation.

This statement is not to begrudge those interested in Hitler’s survival after the bunker. That research has its place since whenever evidence is reappraised, new facts may emerge which may have little to do with the original subject of the investigation.

But in 1944 Admiral Doenitz was doing the best that he could manage, the result being the planning if not the actual construction of a hide-away for Hitler and presumably his top military staff in a place from which to carry on the war. Neuschwabenland was half a world away. This would have been fine if hiding was all that mattered but in 1944 Norway was still firmly in German hands as was Greenland. From Greenland a war against those occupying Germany as well as the British and Americans was certainly possible if the second generation of wonder weapons had been a reality. Therefore, we just have to look at Greenland as a possible site for German secret bases.

Actually, as we shall see, we have to look at it twice as the Germans did. What this means is first we must consider it as just a place for weather stations and perhaps U-boat refueling but with the new reality of 1944, in which Germany was collapsing, we have to look at Greenland again as perhaps having a more expanded role.

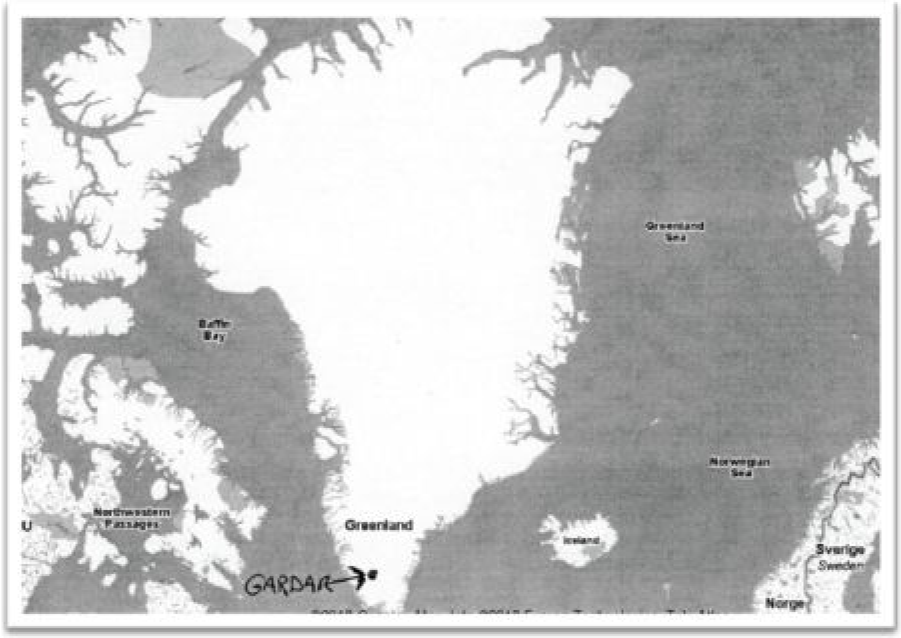

Map of Greenland Please note the eastern coastline, its proximity to Norway, and its numerous fjords, which are perfect for hiding a secret base. Greenland is also a stepping stone to the Canadian Arctic from Norway. Please note also the location of Gardar, which is discussed in a later chapter.

There is absolutely no doubt that the Germans had bases in Greenland. In fact, Rudolf Lusar, an engineer who worked for the German Patent Office writes in his book concerning German secret weapons that there were many German weather stations built in Greenland (1). A German language video documentary titled “Geheime Wetterstationen” states that there were indeed secret German bases of the east side of Greenland. It goes on to say that they remained hidden even though the Greenlanders and the Americans knew they were there but simply could not find them even after extensive searches (2) So the Americans and probably Canadians were certainly flying over Greenland and possibly exploring Greenland by ship but finding little or nothing. In other words, the German bases were well hidden. Another source suggests this failure might be attributed to the huge area that needed to be searched (3). This makes perfect sense since Greenland is the largest island on the planet.

But there is another reason that at least some of these bases could not be found. This is because they were actually tunneled into the bedrock of the island. This means the tunnels went though any snow and ice that might be present and also probably had an outlet into the sea so that U-boats might enter and exit without being seen. The tunnels would have been on the same order of magnitude as the huge underground facilities at Nordhausen, Richard, Der Riese, and Jonastal, for instance, at or near 2000 meters (about 6500 feet) (4).

For a better description of these bases and their history we will turn to a series of rather esoteric and historical sources. The first of these is Claude Schweikhart (aka Erich Halik), writing in 1952 in a publication called "Mensch und Schicksal". This publication billed itself as dealing in "Geisteswissenschaft" or spiritual science. This may be but in many instances this spirituality was a necessary post-war cover, necessary in order to discuss topics the wartime censors might frown upon. It was here that we are first introduced to the words "Dritte Kraft" or Third Power, which is called by Anglo-American writers the "Nazi International".

Schweikhart begins by introducing Louis Emrich, a real person, who was somehow charged with conducting an investigation, in fact, the first, as to the esoteric activities of the SS. In their work Emrich and his team either partnered with or relies on elements of the Yugoslavian intelligence service. Schweikhart tells a couple of interesting tales but one fits in well here. He says that in the last phase of the war at the time of the rumored construction of the Alpenfestung, (the German alpine fortress from which a last stand was to be made by the Nazis) a second fortress was actually built in Greenland. It was to serve as a base in which to carry on the war just as in Gross Admiral Doenitz's famous quote (5)

Perhaps even more astounding, Schweikhart tells us that fighting has continued in Greenland over this base to 1950. Commandos, presumably British or American, landed there and sporadic fighting, sometimes strong fighting, was carried on until the date given (6). Schweikhart goes off into some esoteric reasoning for this continued struggle which only Wilhelm Landig himself could interpret. In fact, judging from their choice of subject material and interpretations, it would not be surprising if Claude Schweikhart, Erich Halik and Wilhelm Landig had a very close connection indeed!

Next, we will look at a newspaper article in the Weiner Montag, dated December 29, 1947, titled: “Deutsche Kampfgruppe noch auf Groenland?” (German Combat Group Still in Greenland?). Following is my translation of the article:

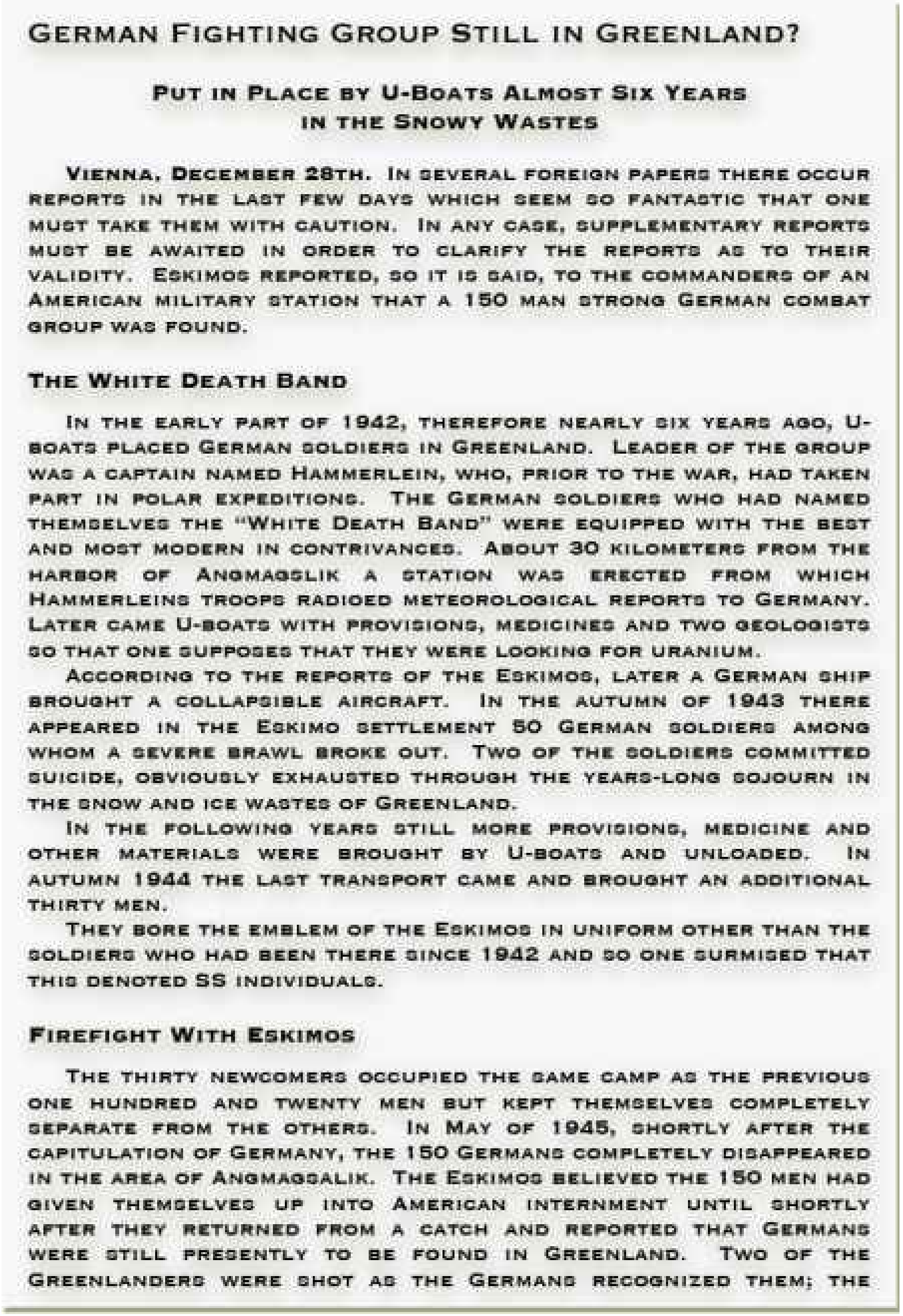

German Fighting Group Still in Greenland?

Put in Place by U-Boats Almost Six Years in the Snowy Wastes

Vienna, December 28th. In several foreign papers there occur reports in the last few days which seem so fantastic that one must take them with caution. In any case, supplementary reports must be awaited in order to clarify the reports as to their validity. Eskimos reported, so it is said, to the commanders of an American military station that a 150 man strong German combat group was found.

The White Death Band

In the early part of 1942, therefore nearly six years ago, U-boats placed German soldiers in Greenland. Leader of the group was a captain named Hammerlein, who, prior to the war, had taken part in polar expeditions. The German soldiers who had named themselves the "White Death Band" were equipped with the best and most modern in contrivances. About 30 kilometers from the harbor of Angmagslik a station was erected from which Hammerleins troops radioed meteorological reports to Germany. Later came U-boats with provisions, medicines and two geologists so that one supposes that they were looking for uranium.

According to the reports of the Eskimos, later a German ship brought a collapsible aircraft. In the autumn of 1943 there appeared in the Eskimo settlement 50 German soldiers among whom a severe brawl broke out. Two of the soldiers committed suicide, obviously exhausted through the years-long sojourn in the snow and ice wastes of Greenland.

In the following years still more provisions, medicine and other materials were brought by U-boats and unloaded. In autumn 1944 the last transport came and brought an additional thirty men.

They bore the emblem of the Eskimos in uniform other than the soldiers who had been there since 1942 and so one surmised that this denoted SS individuals.

Firefight With Eskimos

The thirty newcomers occupied the same camp as the previous one hundred and twenty men but kept themselves completely separate from the others. In May of 1945, shortly after the capitulation of Germany, the 150 Germans completely disappeared in the area of Angmagsalik. The Eskimos believed the 150 men had given themselves up into American internment until shortly after they returned from a catch and reported that Germans were still presently to be found in Greenland. Two of the Greenlanders were shot as the Germans recognized them; the

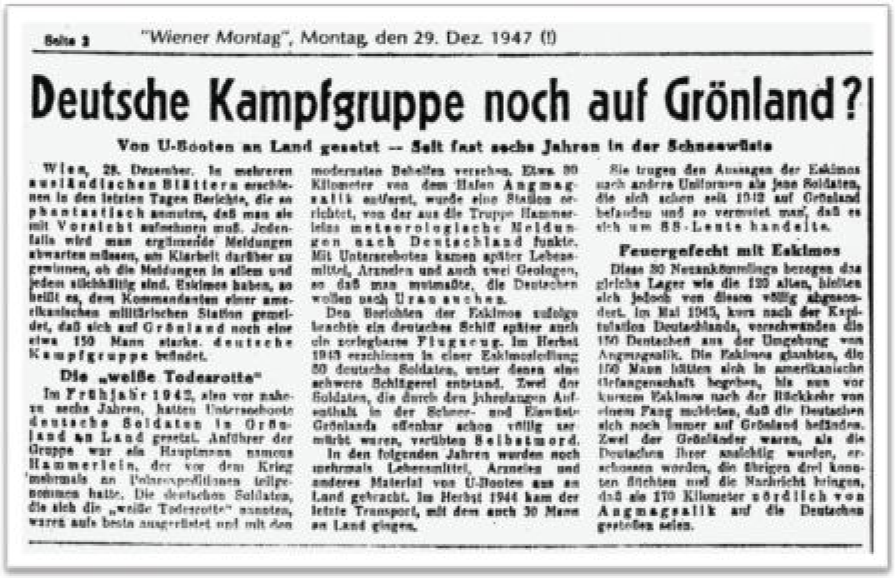

Seite 3 "Wiener Montag", Montag, den 29. Dez. 1947 (!)

Deutsche Kampfgruppe noch auf Grönland?

Von U-Booten an Land gesetzt — Seit fast sechs Jahren in der Schneewüste

Wien, 28. Dezember. In mehreren ausländischen Blättern erschienen in den letzten Tagen Berichte, die so phantastisch anmuten, daß man sie mit Vorsicht aufnehmen muß. Jedenfalls wird man ergänzende Meldungen abwarten müssen, um Klarheit darüber zu gewinnen, ob die Meldungen in allem und jedem stichhältig sind. Eskimos haben, so heißt es, dem Kommandanten einer amerikanischen militärischen Station gemeldet, daß sich auf Grönland noch eine etwa 150 Mann starke deutsche Kampfgruppe befindet.

Die „weiße Todesrotte"

Im Frühjahr 1942, also vor nahezu sechs Jahren, hatten Unterseeboote deutsche Soldaten in Grönland an Land gesetzt. Anführer der Gruppe war ein Hauptmann namens Hammerlein, der vor dem Krieg mehrmals an Polarexpeditionen teilgenommen hatte. Die deutschen Soldaten, die sich die „weiße Todesrotte" nannten, waren aufs beste ausgerüstet und mit den modernsten Behelfen versehen. Etwa 80 Kilometer von dem Hafen Angmagsalik entfernt, wurde eine Station errichtet, von der aus die Truppe Hammerleins meteorologische Meldungen nach Deutschland funkte. Mit Unterseebooten kamen später Lebensmittel, Arzneien und auch zwei Geologen, so daß man mutmaßte, die Deutschen wollen nach Uran suchen.

Den Berichten der Eskimos zufolge brachte ein deutsches Schiff später auch ein zerlegbares Flugzeug. Im Herbst 1943 erschienen in einer Eskimosiedlung 80 deutsche Soldaten, unter denen eine schwere Schlägerei entstand. Zwei der Soldaten, die durch den jahrelangen Aufenthalt in der Schnee- und Eiswüste Grönlands offenbar schon völlig zermürbt waren, verübten Selbstmord.

In den folgenden Jahren wurden noch mehrmals Lebensmittel, Arzneien und anderes Material von U-Booten aus an Land gebracht. Im Herbst 1944 kam der letzte Transport, mit dem auch 30 Mann an Land gingen.

Sie trugen den Aussagen der Eskimos nach andere Uniformen als jene Soldaten, die sich schon seit 1942 auf Grönland befanden und so vermutet man, daß es sich um SS-Leute handelte.

Feuergefecht mit Eskimos

Diese 30 Neuankömmlinge bezogen das gleiche Lager wie die 120 alten, hielten sich jedoch von diesen völlig abgesondert. Im Mai 1945, kurz nach der Kapitulation Deutschlands, verschwanden die 150 Deutschen aus der Umgebung von Angmagsalik. Die Eskimos glaubten, die 150 Mann hätten sich in amerikanische Gefangenschaft begeben, bis nun vor kurzem Eskimos nach der Rückkehr von einem Fang meldeten, daß die Deutschen sich noch immer auf Grönland befänden. Zwei der Grönländer waren, als die Deutschen ihrer ansichtig wurden, erschossen worden, die übrigen drei konnten flüchten und die Nachricht bringen, daß sie 170 Kilometer nördlich von Angmagsalik auf die Deutschen gestoßen seien.

German Battle Group Still in Greenland” According to the newspaper “Vienna Monday”, Monday, December 29, 1947, an organized element of German military continued to function in Greenland long after the war ended.

O. Bergmann has another interesting report regarding Greenland. It seems that a question and answer session occurred in 1957 between a professor, a department head of a Southern German university, and an Austrian engineer. The engineer had contacts within the SD as well as the SS and so had a good overall picture of the lesser-known events leading up to the final moments of the 3rd Reich. This interview took place on September 24, 1957 and was recorded on audiotape. Either Bergmann or his publisher, Hugin, obtained a transcript of at least part of this interview, totaling 38 typewritten pages.

In the question and answer session, the Austrian engineer discusses the resistance movement. He states that there were two aspects to this resistance, positive and negative. The negative component concerned itself with sabotage and so on. We all know this negative resistance really went nowhere. The positive aspect of this resistance movement’s aim was to establish a National Socialist, German, post-war country if not just government but not in occupied Germany. It is this thinking which concerns us here since central to this idea was the establishment of a position in the arctic from which a militant, esoteric group could carry out such a plan.

According to the engineer, this plan was put into operation even before the war ended. Elements of the Luftwaffe took the opportunity to spirit away arms and even facilities from the stores and reservoirs the Luftwaffe had at its disposal. This estranged faction of the Luftwaffe brought this supply of goods to the Artic. The engineer is explicit in saying that this was done without the knowledge of the Luftwaffe's high command being aware of it. Later, elements of the Kriegsmarine, the German Navy, also took part in this operation (7).

From this point on it gets somewhat confusing since there were always more than one group. In fact, there were three such groups, each with three sub-groups. Each group and sub-group had their own base and each group and sub-group had their own cover-name. This does not mean, however, that all these groups were sharing the Arctic, quite the contrary, these groups and their bases stretched far and wide all over the globe according to this report. But, there were two such groups in the Arctic. The group in the Arctic that had their primary or chief base in Greenland had three sub-groups below it. (8)

Since each group and sub-group had its own cover-name, in this system the group occupying Greenland received the name "Thuleka. Bergmann interjects that this name "Thuleka" was perhaps an abbreviation for Thule Kampfgruppe or Thule Combat Group in English. One sub-group of the larger Thuleka group is mentioned by name. This is the "Polaris" sub-group. This sub-group's home was so inner Arctic that Polaris's name is mentioned in the same breath as the legendary Ultimate Thule.

The Austrian engineer was asked about attempts to locate these bases by the Americans and Canadians. He repeats the story of the "Blue Island" which was mentioned earlier. He also goes on to compare the Arctic facilities with those erected by the Germans in Antarctica. In this comparison he includes electronic disruption of the airborne sensing devices seeking these bases.

One other group is worth mentioning in our story. This group is code-named “Atlantiker” (Atlantiens). Their sphere of influence was the Northern Andes. What is interesting about the “Atlantiker” is they had contact with both the Arctic and Antarctic groups and so connected all three groups since they were roughly half way between both. The exact means of this contact, by radio or other means is not stated (9).

The next bit of evidence came to Bergmann or Hugin from an employee of a German-language South American newspaper in the year 1988. Bergmann had published book one of his two book series on German flying discs and U-boats in that year so that this letter probably came as a response to that book. The one page letter is reproduced in Bergmann’s second book in its entirety. Since both the sender and intended reader were well versed in the course of the war in Europe and post-war SS groups, there is little explanation of the course of events. For our purposes a bit of set-up is necessary so rather than translate it word for word perhaps the best treatment of this letter is just a discussion.

The writer of the letter did sign his name but this name has been partially obscured. The writer starts off by saying that he is not going to divulge real names or places that would identify the subject or informant the writer was using. Our writer, a newspaperman, met a former Captain in the SS in La Paz, Bolivia circa 1982 and got to know him. He told our newspaperman a very interesting wartime story.

It seems that this SS Captain was in charge of the defense of the dikes of Holland. We might instantly think of someone putting his finger in a dike but that image of a “dike” does not do justice to our story. Actually, the dike-system of Holland is massive and protects the entire country from flooding of the North Sea with levees, sea walls and gates. So, anyone in charge of this system would have a huge responsibility and a massive undertaking on his hands. What is most interesting is that this SS Captain's position, according to the letter, was completely bypassed by the invading Allies. We know this because the events of the letter take place in May 1945, and the British and Americans were already far into German soil having already pushed the German forces out of Holland. In fact, so the story goes, our SS Captain was called upon to surrender his little island of resistance, the dike, by the British twenty days after the capitulation of German or about May 28th 1945.

Of course, the British just assumed they held all the cards. After all Germany had unconditionally surrendered, this German unit was trapped between the British and the North Sea. Fighting their way out was senseless, there was no place to go since the war was over. But our SS Captain did hold some cards.

The SS unit had enough food and munitions stored up for at least a year. Secondly, they actually were in a strategic position. The SS Captain replied to the British that unless they were given a free pass back to Germany, with their weapons and colors, they would simply blow up the dike and submerge Holland in the North Sea. Well, we can all imagine the shock of the British. In fact there was a negotiation that lasted at least the twenty days mentioned. The British conceded terms as they were stated to the Germans. But since things took so long the Germans had lost trust in the British to live up to them. In the end, to consummate the deal, the Germans required the word of the Queen of England, which was given. The Germans returned home, through the British lines without restriction. There was imposed a press blackout of the whole incident for a whole series of understandable reasons.

But this is not our story; this was only the set-up to the story. Two days before the capitulation of Germany, so somewhere between May 5th and May 7th, 1945, a dozen German U-boats surfaced off the coast of Holland, in an area under the control of our SS Captain. Four landings were made by details from the U-boats taking on freight. Chests were taken aboard these U-boats from the shore. In the opinion of the Captain, the chests contained weapons and machine parts. Six officers of the Captain's SS unit were also taken aboard. The Captain knew one of these SS men since they were from the same town, Halle. He told the Captain to tell his mother that he went missing but perhaps was still alive. Two years later the mother of this SS man did receive a letters from him, postmarked from Chile, Argentina and Columbia. The SS Captain and his men were sworn to silence about the whole affair.

The most significant thing about this story is the designations printed on the chests themselves. The SS Captain was able to make out the words "Thule 1 K" to "Thule 1 P", designations running in sequence. As this information came in the summer of 1988, the codenames "Thuleka" and "Polaris" had not been revealed by Bergmann and would not make it to print until a year later! The implication is clear. These chests as well as these U-boats belonged to some sort of resistance group(s), perhaps the groups in Greenland. (10)

There seem to have been a distinct base in Greenland and by this I mean distinct in purpose and meaning from other Greenland bases. Landig puts this base on the east coast of Greenland and says it was military in nature as opposed to functioning as a weather station. It had no connection to the other bases and was staffed with from eighty to one hundred soldiers (11). William R. Lyne says:

> *"Today, German flying saucer bases, such as the huge underground base built in Greenland, are probably maintained under joint Trilateral/ex-Nazi control."(12)*

At this point a digression must be made for a short story. I was requesting FOIA material and appealing negative outcomes from a large military facility. The reader would instantly recognize its name. This facility had hired a professional historian with a Ph.D. to respond to FOIA requests. This is nothing new. Now, all the large German firms do this as do the American firms. But, for some reason which escaped me at the time, this particular historian at this facility sent me a letter saying that perhaps it would be better for me to ask him "informally" for the information I wished and to describe it. This worked for a little while.

During this period of time I got a strange note or letter, forwarded by this historian, regarding German instrumentation. The writer was a former U-boat Captain or officer. He said at no time would a swastika be painted upon an instrument of the German military, the swastika was a political symbol and would have no place on such an object. Of course, he was not talking about U-boats. He and the historian had revealed themselves as knowing the topic of Nazi high-tech very well indeed because they were talking about William Lyne's compass. This was the compass Bill bought at auction as military surpluss. The compass is now famous as Bill interpeted it as coming from an electromagnetic German flying saucer. It features a round, Thule-type swastika and the letters "KT p2" painted at its center. Bill interpets this to mean "Kreisel Teller" (something like "gyro disc") with the p2 referring to the polarity of the craft.

At the time, I had no response. I had not the standing to debate or argue with a U-boat Captain. But later I saw footage of the Battle of Kursk in which a tank carried the same Thule-type swastika. I reasoned it must have been an SS tank and perhaps only the SS used such symbols in places where other organizations would not. Then I thought of the compass. Any field propulsion craft of this type would have been a very secret SS project. They would have made the parts in their own Pilsen/Prague facilities. This would have included the compass. They could paint whatever they wished on their gear, meant for their soldiers. Mystery solved" Maybe there is more of a mystery here.

What I mean is, given the account above from Holland, might the "KT p2" have another meaning" Might the SS have prepared this specific flying saucer for a specific Arctic Group if not base" In other words, might the "KT p2" have stood for "Kampfgruppe Thule, Polaris Zwei" (Fighting Group Thule, Polaris Two)" It is just a thought but one not inconsistant with what has been presented here.

Returning to the general validity of German bases in Greenland, in his last book before his death, Heiner Gehring and researcher/writer Karl-Heinz Zunneck got a peak into the private files of Wilhelm Landig, just before his death in 1997. It is interesting to note that they cite Claude Schweikhart's 1951 work and give it credence, and using it as an example of a Nazi base that did not capitulate after May 9, 1945. (13) There seems little doubt that something of the 3rd Reich survived somewhere in Greenland after the official capitulation of Germany

Finally, I would like to move to a story sometimes mentioned in literature but never explained. It is a story that sometimes surfaces of UFO conferences or in discussion of secret Nazi facilities. This is the legend of the Laboratory of Death. I first heard this tale at a UFO conference and was told it was located in Norway. But, most commonly it is placed in Greenland so I will describe this legend and leave its location an open question.

I was told (on the UFO conference level of things mentioned above) that the Laboratory of Death concerns experiments in which humans are crossed with animals. This fusing of human and animal organs or characteristics was first told to me as a grafting process in which arms, legs and so on where transferred from one organism to the other. An alternate version involves "genetic experimentation" which somehow blends characteristics of humans and non-humans involving genes.

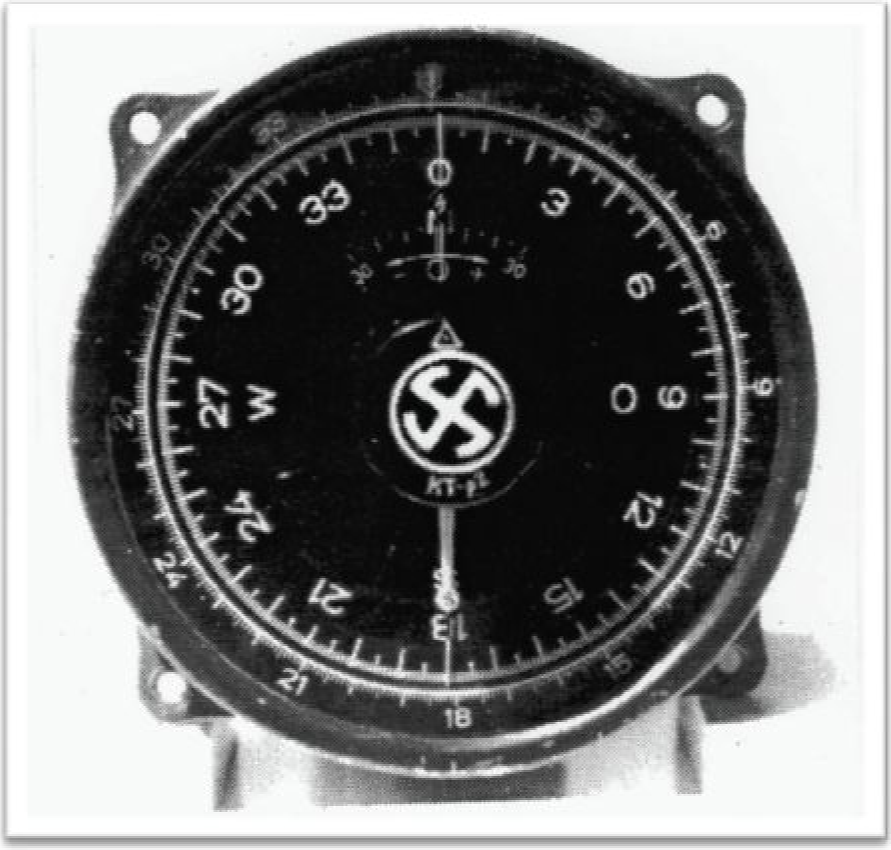

William R. Lyne’s compass from a German flying disc

In this enlargement, please note the inscription KT-p2 below the Thule-style swastika.

The individual who first told me this story was an engineer. I completely disregarded it, thinking he had forgotten Biology 101. Rejection would certainly occur regarding body parts from two different species and in those days rejection drugs were unknown. Likewise, “genetic manipulation” in the late 1940’s lacked the knowledge of the structure of DNA that remained undisclosed until Watson and Crick in the 1950’s or 1960’s, depending upon whose story you accept. Without knowing DNA’s real structure, genetic manipulation as we know it is impossible.

Regardless of this story, the fundamental reference concerning the Laboratory of Death is Claude Schweikhart in his 1952 article in “Mensch und Schicksal “(14). It does not mention genetic manipulation or cloning or chimeras. Schweikhart reminds us of the investigation of the SS undertaken by the Louis Emrich team in conjunction with that Yugoslavian intelligence agency. Remember, they coined the word “Dritte Kraft” (Third Power) for the SS survival groups. Emerich and the Yugoslavians concluded that a base did exist somewhere in Greenland which they called “Laboratoriums des Todes” (Laboratory of Death) but this base remains a complete mystery.

They connect it with satanic activity. It is hard to connect experimentation of any sort with a religious concept, but this does occur again at a different place and time. Nazi hunter Ladislas Farago describes a special sect and its activities at Colonia Dignidad, the Nazi base in South America, as a combination of Nazism and voodooism (15). When I first read this I thought Farago was just using some sort of ploy to demonize the Nazis and disregarded it completely. Now I know better and so this activity will be discussed when we take up South America.

But that is not the big news coming from Schweikhart. The big news is that at the Laboratory of Death in Greenland a special type of flying saucer had been developed. This flying saucer had the ability to submerge in the ocean and from the ocean, fly into the air. In other words, it was a flying U-boat. Remember, Schweikhart was writing in 1952 so when he says this development took place in an unrepentant Nazi secret base on Greenland in 1951, we can only assume Schweikhart was well connected to say the least. (16) I do not expect any reader to take this statement, a statement from many years ago, from a mysterious source, describing an incredible event, at face value. But I would ask the reader to suspend judgment of the combination flying saucer - submarine until we can deal with that subject in some detail.

So picture, if you will, a base capable of such things. This base would have to be large indeed to accommodate both U-boats and flying discs. Bergmann describes what a Greenland base must have looked like as being essentially the same type of base needed at the South Pole at Neuschwabenland. It would consist of tunnels bored through ice and solid rock to a length of 2,000 meters. The entrance would have been camouflaged as to make it unfindable.

According to Bergmann, this type of base would have been protected by two kinds of weapons, both called “Strahlenwaffen” or ray weapons. First, there was the weapon he calls “Zuendunterbrechung” or ignition interruption in English. This word is simply a variant of “Motorstoppmittel”, called magnetic wave by the Americans. This was a device that ionized the air within its range of operation and so short-circuited the ignition systems of enemy aircraft (17). The second weapon “Strahlenwaffe” goes undescribed by Bergmann but we may conclude it was a more directed beam weapon since Bergmann goes to pains to describe the result of the magnetic wave-type weapon (18). We will encounter both types of weapons again.

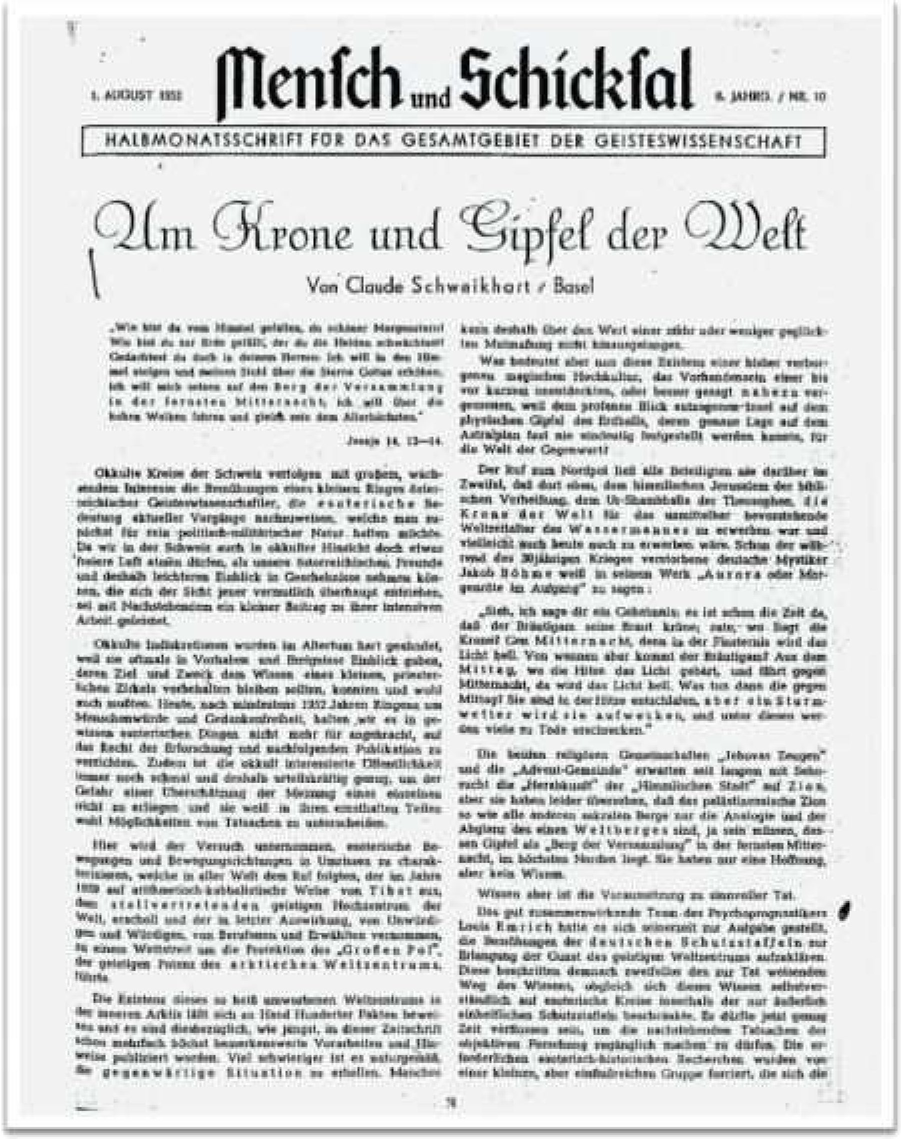

1. AUGUST 1952

Menſch und Schickſal

6. JAHRG. / NR. 10

HALBMONATSSCHRIFT FÜR DAS GESAMTGEBIET DER GEISTESWISSENSCHAFT

Um Krone und Gipfel der Welt

Von Claude Schweikhart / Basel

Cover of an article from Mensch und Schicksal magazine entitled “Um Krone und Gipfel der Welt”. In the lower right hand corner the Louis Ermrich team—the first team to investigate esoteric aspects of the SS—is mentioned.

To flesh out our conception of such a base, we must assume parallel tunnels that are interconnected as they were in the underground facilities in Germany, Poland and the Czech Republic. Storerooms, living quarters, power generating facilities, heating facilities, and workshops would also be necessary. In addition, some sort of turntable for incoming U-boats would have been necessary in order to service them and then spin them around for launching again seaward. Access to a rough airfield would also probably be necessary for supplies and reinforcements from Norway.

What is the evidence such bases existed” Beyond these statements, however valid they may be, is there any brick and mortar evidence for such a base” Well, there may be a bit of evidence, but the reader is asked to bear with the story and allow the evidence presents itself.

Literature Cited

1. **Lusar, Rudolf, 1964**, *Die deutschen Waffen und Geheimwaffen des 2. Weltkrieges und ihre Weiterentwicklung*, page 356, J. F. Lehmanns Verlag, Munich, Germany

2. **Geheime Wetterstationen, a video film, Heitz and Hoeffkes**, Grabert Versandbuchhandlung, Tuebingen, Germany

3. **Bergmann, O., 1989**, *II Deutsche Flugscheiben und U-Boote Ueberwachen Die Weltmeere*, page 137, Hugin Publishing, Wetter/Ruhr, Germany

4. ***ibid.***

5. **Schweikhart, Claude, 1952**, *Um Krone und Gipfel der Welt, Mensch und Schicksal* (magazine), page 4, 6. JAHRG/NR. 10, August 1952

6. ***ibid.***

7. **Bergmann, O., 1989**, page 133

8. **Bergmann, O., 1989**, page 134

9. ***ibid.***

10. **Bergmann, O., 1989**, page 135

11. **Landig, Wilhelm, 1971**, *Goetzen Gegen Thule*, page 267, Hans Pfeiffer Verlag GmbH, Hannover, Germany

12. **Lyne, William R., 1999**, *Pentagon Aliens*, page 97, Creatopia Productions, Lamy, New Mexico, USA

13. **Gehring, Heiner and Karl-Heinz Zunneck, 2005**, *Flugscheiben ueber Neuschwabenland Die Wahrheit ueber "Vril", "Haunebu" und die Templer-Erbengemeinschaft*, page 172, Jochen Kopp Verlag, Rottenburg, Germany

14. **Schweikhart, Claude, 1952**, *Um Krone und Gipfel der Welt*, page 4, 6 JAHRG./Nr. 10, August 1952

15. **Farago, Ladislas, 1974**, *Aftermath*, page 388, Simon and Schuster, N.Y., NY. USA

16. **Schweikhart, Claude, 1952**, page 4

17. **Stevens, Henry, 2007**, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science and Technology*, page 170-189, Adventures Unlimited Publishing, Kempton, Illinois, USA

18. **Stevens, Henry, 2007**, pages 198-208

GREENLAND, PART TWO: BEAVER DAM

Sometimes when the police cannot solve a crime within a few years using standard techniques and the case is closed, instead of filing it away somewhere, they turn it over to a special unit. This special unit specializes in closed, cold cases. They begin from square one and take a fresh look at everything. Sometimes this technique bears fruit and the case is solved.

Likewise, the Slavic researchers investigating mysteries of the Third Reich had no cultural connections to their neighbor to the West but plenty of underground ruins left from those people of those times. Sometimes the ruins were not even underground. Using their own methods, this group of Slavic researchers pieced together events from their own perspective. In this chapter we will take a look at some of their work.

Specifically, we will review “Wunderland” Mimozemske Technologie Treti Rise by Dr. Milos Jesensky, a museum curator and Robert Lesniakiewicz, a Polish engineer. My special thanks go out to Milos Vnenk who translated this book for me on audio tape and added his comments, supplying context which I would have been otherwise lacking.

Nothing in this chapter should be taken as being in conflict with the last or vice versa. Instead, the reader should probably integrate both sets of information into a larger overall picture of what happened during the 3rd Reich, particularly as it relates to the supersecret facilities in Greenland.

The strange trail leading us to the German secret base called Beaver Dam (Biber Damm) starts with the Soviet assault on Koenigsberg on the Baltic coast in modern-day Poland (Kaliningrad) in the dying days of the 3rd Reich. Even though Koenigsberg was defended by 35,000 German troops, it all came to naught for them as the Soviet Army overwhelmed the city, supported by 2500 attack aircraft and artillery. Koenigsberg went up in a tower of flame as the city was crushed. All the German defenders were either killed or captured. The Soviets looted the city in a drunken orgy, throwing valuables out as they searched for liquor and food. A city-full of German refugees seeking escape were mowed down by Soviet artillery fire. Koenigsberg died that night, utterly driven into the ground. In the larger scope of events German Silesia was gone with the wind, with the cities being renamed and resettled by Poles. Any German survivors were subsequently resettled West of the Oder River.

A short distance from Koenigsberg stood Wildenhof Castle. Wildenhof had served as the headquarters for the German General Schwerin who was connected to the defense of the city. This night the Castle was surrounded by Soviet infantry and attacked. The Soviet soldiers attacking Castle Wildenhof had been fighting the Germans for three years, coming all the way from Moscow in January 1942. They lived off the land, as the Soviets had no supply lines. They had been hardened through years of privation and combat with the Wehrmacht. On this night those hard, hard men burst into Wildenhof and, as their honed survival skills dictated, they went through every nook and cranny of the Castle looking for food, alcohol, and valuables.

Somewhere, buried in the bowels of Castle Wildenhof, those Soviet soldiers turned up a strong box. Naturally, they opened it immediately. Out fell a couple curious pieces of glass-like stone with some curious writing on it, two parchment scrolls, some photocopies of those scrolls and a recent military order marked “Geheimreichssache” which literally means “secret state matter”. The soldiers turned the contents of the strong box over to the NKVD, which is Soviet Intelligence.

If it had not been for the official document marked “Geheimreichssache”, probably little importance would have been attached to the matter. The glass-like stones turned out to be an amulet that was broken and glued back together. It dated from the Middle Ages as did the parchment scrolls, one in Latin and the other in Middle English. These objects have an occult and alchemical significance. They were taken to a central clearing facility, as were thousands of examples of war-related, displaced artwork. The “Geheimreichssache” document was altogether different, however, since it had a military context. In fact, it turned out to be an order, dated May 1, 1945, and signed by none other than the former Grand-Admiral Karl Doenitz and recently, as of that day, the second Fuehrer of Nazi Germany.

For some unexplained reason, Karl Doenitz took time out of his busy schedule to sign an order disposing of the amulet and parchment scrolls. Then, he went back to managing a collapsing military situation and negotiations with Allies concerning the surrender of Germany. Obviously, these documents were very important to Doenitz. The bottom line is that Doenitz ordered these items be taken to “Biber Damm” for safekeeping. “Biber Damm” (Beaver Dam in English) was obviously a place and the Soviet NKVD thought it might be a secret German base located on the East Coast of Greenland.

So with the Third Reich collapsing all around him, with Hitler dead and the Soviets in Berlin, Karl Doenitz is thinking about sending the contents of this little strong box to some place safe. Let us take another look at the words of Karl Doenitz in the quotation cited earlier:

> *“The German submarine fleet is proud of having built for the Fuehrer, in another part of the world, a Shangri-La on land, an impregnable fortress.”*

And,

> *“The German Navy will have to accomplish a great task in the future. The German Navy knows all the hiding places in the oceans and therefore it will be very easy to bring the Fuehrer to a safe place should the necessity arise and in which he will have the opportunity to work out his final plans.”*

By themselves the amulet and the parchments have no significance in our story. Their meaning is only occult and alchemical. The amulet was apparently made in Eastern Europe or perhaps even further East in Asia during the Middle Ages. After falling into the hands of an Icelander or Greenlander who was probably employed as a mercenary in those lands, the amulet found its way to Greenland. From there it drifted to England and became the subject of some occult studies by John de Vincy and John Dees. How they got to Koenigsberg, to Castle Wildenhof, is a mystery. Perhaps this was just a step on a journey that was already underway when it was intercepted by the Soviets.

For whatever reasons, the NKVD failed to attach any value to the occult items, only to the order signed by Doenitz. But even this order and reference to a base called Beaver Damm seems to have faded in importance to Soviet Intelligence because it would be years before any importance was attached to any of this and then by a researcher already steeped in mysteries of the Third Reich, Dr. Ludwig Solchec.

Dr. Ludwig Solchec (1926-1978) was a prolithic Czech scholar who published thirty-five books in his career. Late in life, Dr. Solchec began to look into the mystery we are describing and it was largely his work which brought Dr. Milos Jesensky and Mr. Robert Lesniakiewicz to take yet another look at Beaver Dam and this whole mystery. Dr. Solchec published his work on this topic as part of his book whose title would be translated into English as “The Secret of the Amber Room”.

At this point we must digress somewhat because this reference to an amber room is a huge World War Two mystery in Europe, especially for Germans and Russians. The threads of this mystery cross ours so that anyone involving himself in researching the amber room and looking at our situation involving the amulet, the parchments, Admiral Doenitz and a secret state order would be of great interest and help to us. The amber room or “Bernsteinzimmer” in German is a lost treasure and work of art that is almost unknown in the English-speaking world, but as a mystery, could be compared to the disappearance of Amelia Erhart for Americans.

The Bernsteinzimmer is just that, a room made of amber. Amber is a semi-precious stone formed from fossilized tree sap in an earlier geologic time frame. It washes up naturally on the shores of the Baltic Sea and so has been gathered by local people since the Neolithic and used as money and for trade. Fredrich Wilhelm I of Prussia presented the Russian Tzar Peter the Great with a room made of amber in 1716. Prussia needed an ally and Russia was a rising star at that moment. The amber room was shipped to Russia and set up in the winter home of the Tsar. It must have been a hit because Friedrich Wilhelm II sent a wall mirror frame consisting of splendid carvings in amber to the Russian. In 1735, the amber room, now a recognized art treasure, was moved to the Tsar’s summer home. The hall in which the amber room was installed was approximately ten meters square and four and three-quarter meters high so this was a large, ornate, imposing mass of cut amber decking the walls. Russian amber carvers added to the room completely covering the ceiling with amber.

The Bernsteinzimmer remained as a Russian treasure through the Revolution being displayed near Leningrad at Empress Catherine’s former palace in Pushkin. With the German invasion of World War Two, the amber room was packed up and moved East for safety sake. But only part of this treasure was actually packed up by the Russians and taken way. Some was not, including some of the upper frieze and the mirrors. We know this because Pushkin fell into German hands and the Germans packed up what remained of the amber room and moved it back to Germany. Some of it may have been moved to Thuringia but there is no doubt that a great portion of it went to Koenigsberg. Not only to Koenigsberg but to a castle near

Koenigsberg and put on display. It was actually opened to the public in the summer of 1943 (1).

Was this “castle”, Castle Wildenhof” I don’t know but the chances are pretty good that it was. Of course this brings us to the Soviet advance on Koenigsberg which was discussed above. Now things start getting fuzzy. Hitler seems to have ordered the treasure onto a ship, the cruiser “Emden” along with the coffins of the Hindenburgs. The Emden arrived in Stettin two days later and then sailed for Kiel. At Kiel, the Emden was sunk in an air raid. In the words of researcher Ulrich Brunzel:

> *“Whether the Bernsteinzimmer was among the cargo is more than doubtful?. (2)*

So, sometime between its presence at the castle in Koenigsberg and the sinking of the Emden at Kiel, the Bernsteinzimmer disappeared. In comparing the Bernsteinzimmer to Doenitz’s amulet, the least we can say is that it seems Koenigsberg was a stop for treasure or valuables being spirited away from the hands of the Soviets. We know the amulet was supposed to be taken to a save repository, Beaver Dam. It is not unreasonable to assume that the Bernsteinzimmer in the same or a nearby location was also scheduled to be taken to that same safe repository. This probably intent links the two treasures and makes the work of Dr. Solchec who was primarily involved in researching the Bernsteinzimmer, so valuable.

But what was it that made Dr. Solchec believe that Beaver Dam was an Arctic base in Greenland” The answer is Dr. Solchec found, explored and researched the German Arctic training facility in the mountains of Bohemia, on the border between modern day Poland and The Czech Republic and found evidence there and elsewhere which led him to the location of Beaver Dam.

Dr. Solchec began his investigations in about the year 1969. He started by talking to old-time residents about things that transpired during the war years. There were fewer than might be expected due to the mass German immigration to the West but nevertheless Dr. Solchec found the information for which he was looking. In the border country between what is now Poland and the Czech Republic, Dr. Solchec was directed to a particular mountain where wartime mysteries still lingered. This mountain was named Kirkonoshe that is often called what would translate to “ the Golden Peak” in English. On the Golden Peak was a camp or base that was used by the Germans each winter from 1938 to 1945. This base was cordoned off and guarded by security troops. Few if any local people were allowed on the base that was formed around the peak of the mountain.

According to the old-timers, Dr. Herdenerten ran the base. As Dr. Solchec would later discover, Dr. Herdenerten was an Arctic explorer. In fact, he did most of his work in Greenland. Dr. Herdenerten worked under the auspices of Hermann Goering who we all know commanded not the Navy but the German Air Force. In 1938 Goering launched the Umanku expedition to Greenland. Its purpose was to gather plants and animals and to acclimate people, plants and animals to that environment. To facilitate these goals he set up the Bohemian station on the Golden Peak, Kirkonoshe.

The reports given to Dr. Solchec were that Dr. Herdenerten set up the “Hawk Bungalows” in the high peak area of the mountain. Large, white sled dogs made an appearance at Kirkonoshe, which were engaged in training pulling heavy loads across the snow and ice in some sort of a training exercise. Greenland had an indigenous type of dog, a close relative of the Canadian Eskimo dog, called a Groenlandhund or Greenland dog that fits this description.

But besides the bungalows, most of the troops lived in tents. They did this at altitude and in the winter so it was obvious that living in these rough conditions was part of their training. Each winter the scene was repeated, right up until the Nazi collapse. But Dr. Herdenerten did not last that long as he was replaced by a biologist named Dr. Hans Knoespel.

Dr. Knospel added to the menagerie, bringing in large, white falcons. It seems that Dr. Knospel was interested in falconry. Dr. Knospel was another old Arctic hand that had done his share of exploration. While on expedition to the Spitsbergen, Dr. Knospel was involved in an accident that took his life in June of 1944. Nevertheless, combining the tenures of Dr. Herdenerten and Dr. Knospel accounts for the bulk of the war years as far as the base at Kirkonoshe is concerned. A local resident, Anton Pohoschaly turned the base over to Czech soldiers at the conclusion of the war and the base and its purposes were largely forgotten until the time of Dr. Solchecs interest in the place.

About 1969 Dr. Solchec began poking around at the base, talking to people and sifting through what was left of the facility. Gradually, he came to understand the purpose and scope of the base. The clincher came when Dr. Solchec found an old hat left behind by the Germans years before. It was an old fur hat, part of a Wehrmacht polar uniform. On the inside of the band of the hat and inscription could still be faintly read. It read: Po-Ra-Re Polar Versuchs Stab?. The words “Polar Versuchs Stab” mean in English “Polar Research Staff” or alternatively “Polar Research Headquarters”. This sealed the deal for Dr. Solchec. As far as he was concerned, this base had a direct relationship with the Arctic bases to the West, especially with that base of Greenland which Dr. Solchec found at the crossroads of his research into both the amulet and the Bernsteinzimmer, Beaver Dam. (3)

Greenland is a big place. We all know that it is the largest island on earth. So, exactly where was Beaver Dam in this land of unending glacial ice” How did Dr. Solchec set about solving this mystery?

From the start Dr. Solchec noticed the high number of place names of German origin on the East Coast of Greenland. He then began looking at the Arctic expeditions sent to Greenland and found a high number were originated by German explorers. Dr. Solchec reasoned that the Nazi government along with Doenitz and his Kriegsmarine had dusted off these reports and used them as an overview in looking for a likely spot for a base. Of course, the Germans were active in the area both with meteorological bases on land and ships stationed at sea in the particular Arctic region so they knew the terrain well.

Dr. Solchec reasoned that the base had to be in a relatively uninhabited place on Greenland. Most of the human activity centered on the southern tip of that island since Viking times, probably because the climate was more favorable in the South. Dr. Solchec therefore looked to the North. In fact, he began to zero-in on Peary’s Land, named after a polar explorer. Peary”s Land is the far Northeastern tip of Greenland that forms a peninsula jutting into the Barents Sea at about Latitude 80 degrees North.

But the clincher for Dr. Solchec was the presence of lignite in Peary’s Land. Lignite is an energy source, being halfway between peat and coal. In fact another word for lignite is “brown coal”. It is mined in the USA, Europe, Russia and Australia and is almost exclusively used as fuel to power steam-electric generation. This meant that a base built there which invested some effort in mining the lignite would be energy self-sufficient. We all know how desirable this would have been to the Germans. This natural supply of lignite had to be a huge consideration in choosing as site for a base.

At this point we should return to Bergmann’s description of how an Arctic base would look and build upon this for a better understanding of how Beaver Dam might have appeared. Bergmann thought of other German underground bases in Europe and proposed tunnels of up to 2000 meters in length. He also thought such as base would be guarded by the new laser weapons and the magnetic wave weapons designed to render ignition-based aircraft inoperative. Jesensky and Lesniakiewicz are convinced that Beaver Dam had a connection with the sea. This means some sort of hardened bunkers accessible by U-boat such as the Germans built in the west coast of France and Norway. These were large, reinforced concrete, bombproof bunkers with overhanging ledges allowing a U-boat to sail right into and under the protection of the bunker. Considering the name “Beaver Dam”, I think we can make some assumptions about the special nature of this particular base.

Beavers build a dam of branches on a stream, backing it up and forming a pond. In the center of the pond the beaver builds a lodge, a mound of interwoven branches containing a hollowed out central room where the beaver lives. To access this central room, the beaver builds or hollows out underwater tunnels from the pond to the lodge that cannot be seen from the surface of the water or the shore of the pond.

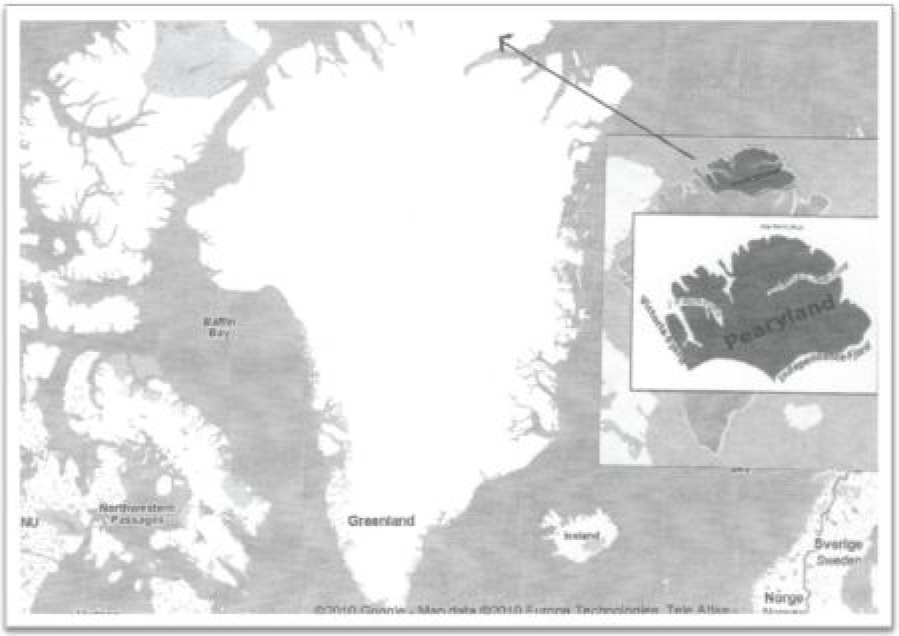
Pearyland
Baffin Bay
NU
Northwestern Passages
Greenland
Iceland
Sverige Sweden
Norge
©2010 Google - Map data ©2010 Europa Technologies, Tele Atlas

Greenland, Beaver Dam Please note the location of Peary Land in the extreme northern end of the island. Was this Admiral Doenitz“ impregnable base” Allegedly, the presence of lignite for fuel made this secret base possible.

Obviously, this code-name “Beaver Dam” must mean something. In the absolute maximum of possibilities for Beaver Dam, I would picture it as breakwater or near breakwater, allowing only the tops of the waves into a central harbor. The central harbor would remain relatively calm for a U-boat, especially if it were submerged. To access the base itself the U-boat would dip a few feet underwater under an artificial ledge built into solid rock. Behind the ledge the U-boat would surface into a large hollow cavity completely cut off from the surrounding environment. The cavity would contain lights, dry-docks, machinery for on and off loading. Parallel tunnels would go into the solid rock for thousands of feet. These tunnels would be interconnected and contain living quarters, machine and workshops, storage facilities, advanced weapons and command facilities. It would contain some sort of camouflaged radar, electronic devices to throw off magnetic compasses, as well as the defensive weaponry mentioned above. The artificial breakwater and the reinforced cement ledge would be camouflaged to look like real rock or real rock might even be affixed on to it for this natural look. To aerial reconnaissance or even ships sailing past it, the base would blend into the natural surroundings. A small airfield was probably nearby since contact with Norway via air was necessary at least in the beginning.

If we are to believe the most extreme reports, this is the place the Nazis developed a flying U-boat in 1952. This blurs the distinction between a UFO and a USO. Besides flying discs and U-boats. Bergmann bases his two books on this concept. Bill Lyne as well as Dr. Jesensky and Mr. Lesniakiewicz believe UFOs used to spy on the USA were launched from Greenland, probably from this very base. The latter two researchers say the Nazis, using their flying discs, combed the atomic bases and facilities of the USA and the USSR in an attempt to appropriate atomic weapons. The latter two researchers even postulate the origin of the UFO that crashed at Roswell as coming from this base. This is in agreement with the central thesis just put forth by Dr. Joseph P. Farrell in his book “Roswell And The Reich”.

But other weapons were kept at Beaver Dam according to Dr. Jesensky and Mr. Lesniakiewicz. Among these was the “Urzel”. The Urzel was a combined V-1, V-2, mounted in a horse and rider configuration. This weapon was to be launched at the east coast of the USA and was to have contained an atomic warhead. Unfortunately for the Nazis, the atomic production facilities at Der Riese either could not produce the desired weapon in time or were overrun by the Soviets before they could do so.(3) The Urzel bears a close resemblance to the mysterious “V-3”/V-2 combination (based on that strange missile the Polish skin diver found while on vacation at the Baltic). Since this was also arranged as a horse and rider, one wonders if the two reports are the same weapon system.

Returning now strictly to the interpretation of Dr. Jesensky and Mr. Lesniakiewicz given in “Wunderland”, we are informed that the mission and scope of Beaver Dam changed somewhat corresponding to the rapidly changing war situation. They list three stages for Beaver Dam.

In stage one, Beaver Dam would have been the impregnable fortress Doenitz promised for Hitler. Hitler was to be able to carry out war outside of Germany in this vision so U-boats and even tug boats would be necessary since containers carrying large rockets capable of hitting the United States would have been brought in. This base also functioned as a meteorological base until the bitter end for the war in Europe. Training for the men as well as testing and working out of details involving Arctic living would have been carried out at the polar research station at the Golden Peak, Kirkonoshe, in the Bohemian mountains.

In stage two the atomic warheads and very long range rockets could no longer be counted upon since the research, development and industrial facilities lying underground in the Owl Mountains of Poland were unable to provide them in a timely manner. Therefore, Beaver Dam took on a secondary function. It became a repository. Art, artifacts, gold and money from the Reich’s Bank, blueprints for superweapons as well as prototype aircraft were brought to Beaver Dam for storage. Among these prototypes/superweapon blueprints was a flying disc.

In stage three the war is over. The base now served as a hide-away for prominent Nazis on the run but the most important function of Beaver Dam centered around the flying discs. This was their base and point of origin for spying missions directed at stealing atomic weapons and technology from the USA and USSR. Urzel weapons were also in storage. The Nazis at Beaver Dam still prepared for some sort of final battle, a Goetterdammerung, in which they would fight with advanced weapons and machines of all kinds.(5)

This last paragraph is definitely Redemptionist. In fact, Dr. Jesensky and Mr. Lesniakiewicz call a chapter related to this concept “Es kommt der Tag” (“The day will come”). According to these researchers the Germans there wanted to cause provocation between the East and West. Reinhard Gehlen, who ran a German intelligence network inside the Soviet Union during the war and was recruited by the CIA after the war to reconstitute the Soviet spy network and work for the West, is often accused of playing one side against the other, even manufacturing the Cold War, for the benefit of those he served and their ideals in the Nazi period. If the reality of a Third Power is accepted, could there have been some truth behind this”

Now, the Slavic researchers do not think Beaver Dam exists today. At some point during the last 60 plus years they believe the base ceased to function. They really do not say what might have happened but they do speculate about walking through the underground tunnels and finding abandoned, rusty flying discs and derelict U-boats. These researchers believe the evidence is there, only awaiting discovery. Imagine if it were true, if someone did find a secret German base, accessible only by tunnel to the sea, filled with U-boats and supporting machinery that had been in operation after 1945” That would settle the question of post-war German bases once and for all, right”

This may not be in the cards for Beaver Dam because this base just might never have gone defunct. Bergmann re-enters the picture with some thoughts which do not spell out the demise of Beaver Dam outright but inject a new player into this very area of Greenland’s Peary Land: the Americans.

Bergmann informs us that just as Admiral Byrd led an expedition against the German base in the Antarctic, at Neuschwabenland, so too were expeditions mounted in Greenland, which Bergmann hints were for the same purpose (6). During the years 1947 to 1950 a Danish expedition commanded by Eigil Knuths was sent to Greenland. In the years 1947 to 1951 the French sent an expedition headed by and individual named Viktors. In 1951, the English got into the act with their own expedition to Greenland, which was led by Simpson.

But what is most amazing is that on March 27, 1951 the Danish, who own Greenland, found it necessary to enter into an agreement with the United States for the common defense of Greenland. Who were they defending Greenland against” Greenland is a sparsely populated land with no large cities, mostly inhabited by Eskimos still practicing variations of a hunter-gatherer lifestyle. The only military power in 1951 set up in opposition to the United States was the Soviet Union and it hardly had its sights set on invading Greenland.

Immediately, the US government began feverishly building some air bases in Greenland. Bergmann presents a map of Greenland showing three bases, Narsarssuak, Thule and Station North. The base at Station North is located exactly where Dr. Solchec, Dr. Jesensky and Mr. Robert Lesniakiewicz think Beaver Dam was located, on the northeast peninsula called Peary’s Land.

So what happened here” The German were said to have just perfected their flying submarine at this time. How could the Americans and presumably NATO have a base in this exact spot or within a few miles of it” Again, William Lyne’s comments about a German Greenland base are:

> *“Today, German flying saucer bases, such as the huge underground base built in Greenland, are probably maintained under joint Trilateral/ex-Nazi control.?(7)*

But every now and then something even more sinister can be heard. Sometimes people whisper (at places like UFO conferences) that what we are calling Beaver Dam, a German base in Greenland, actually still exists and is under the joint control of Nazis and NATO. OK, this is usually at UFO conferences but these words have been uttered if not published.

A more likely scenario is that the Germans were displaced sometime in the years 1951 or 1952. They could have abandoned this base or these bases or they could have been forced out by the American military. They might even have entered into an agreement to cede the bases. If this is true, the March 27, 1951 agreement may have involved a secret party, one representing the interests of the Nazis. The hidden base itself with its hidden access to the sea may have been appropriated as a listening post and for use in clandestine activities directed at the Soviet Union.

Literature Cited

1. **Bunzel, Ulrich, 1997**, *Hitler's Treasures and Wonder Weapons*, pages 97-101, Heinrich Jung Verlagsgesellschaft mbH, Zella-Mehlis/Meiningen, Germany

2. **Bunzel, Ulrich, 1997**, page 101

3. **Jesensky, Milos, Ph.D., and Mr. Robert Lesniakiewicz, 1998**, "Wunderland" Mimozemske Technologie Treti Rise, pages 131-137, Aos Publishing, The Czech Republic

4. **Jesensky, Milos, Ph.D., and Mr. Robert Lesniakiewicz, 1998**, page 143

5. **Jesensky, Milos, Ph.D. and Mr. Robert Lesniakiewicz**, 1998, page 142

6. **Bergmann, O., 1989**, *II Deutsche Flugscheiben und U-boote Ueberwachen die Weltmeere*, page 132, Hugin Gesellschaft, Wetter/Ruhr, Germany

7. **Lyne, Willaim R., 1999**, *Pentagon Aliens*, page 97, Creatopia Productions, Lamy, New Mexico, USA

THE LAST BATTALION:

LEGEND AND RELATED EVENTS

Before leaving the North Atlantic the legend of the Last Battalion must be considered. I say “legend” because there is no real proof this event ever occurred as it is often described. There can be little doubt that the statement attributed to Hitler by W. Mattern had something to do with this legend. Again, the statement is:

> *“In this war there does not exist victors or vanquished, only the dead and living, but the last battalion that will be a German battalion.” (1)*

Mattern calls this Hitler’s end-of-the-war prophecy. This idea is closely bound with the idea that Hitler left the bunker and made his way to Norway. There, he boarded a U-boat so that the Fuehrer and a whole U-boat convoy sailed out of Kristiansand, Norway, on or about May 2, 1945. The part of the story that most concerns us now is that the convoy was intercepted by the British Navy, resulting in a large sea battle which has gone unrecorded in naval history. The Germans were said to have won the battle and continued on their way to Antarctica where the last battalion and accompanying legend take up residence.

As stated earlier, I believe Hitler did die in the bunker. But Hitler is only a prop in this story. The area we ought to concern ourselves with is the sea battle. Considerations of Neuschwabenland, the German Antarctic base, can be deferred to a later chapter.

Mattern’s book containing this quote states no date and was published by Ernst Zundel’s Samisdat Publishing, in Toronto. I know the time frame was the mid-1980s. Zuendel advertised a book devoted to this topic alone but never published it. By all accounts, the response to the advertised book was overwhelming. Something in the title “The Last Battalion” captivated the imagination. Later, I came across Wilhelm Landig’s Wolfzeit um Thule and realized he was the source for Mattern and Zuendel as well as other writers.

In this chapter we will take a look at the sea battle in question and then consider ideas that may or may not be related to the Last Battalion but also involve sea battles roughly in this time frame, which have not been graced with a stamp of approval by conventional historians.

Wilhelm Landig published Wolfzeit um Thule in 1980. This was his second novel “full of realities?. Landig actually opens the book with a description of this battle, the title of the chapter being “Die Verheimlichte Schlacht” (the secretive battle). Landig tells us the story mostly through the interactive conversation of two co-captains, Captain Krall and Captain Hellfeld, aboard a supply U-boat in the U-boat flotilla. Each U-boat had two co-captains for some reason. Our U-boat is not given a proper “U” designation, only being called “Boot 5XX?.

Omitting the drama, I will try to recount and discuss the events as Landig describes them in his chapter titled “Die Verheimlichte Schlacht” which describes the naval battle.(2) This rendition of events can then be compared with later variations of the story.

Landig gives us the date May 2, 1945 for the fleet of U-boats putting to sea from Kristiansand, Norway. He calls it a “Geisterflottille?, a ghost fleet. Among the U-boats assembled, Landig states that there is a Type XXI present. He also describes a totally different and totally new U-boat, not a Type XXI, Type XXIII or Type XXVI. This is obviously exciting but we will have to reserve discussion of this boat for a later time. Landig did not give any figures for the size of the ghost fleet.

The crews of these U-boats may not have been composed of standard operating crews. It is said that most are younger than 25 years old. Also, technicians and scientists are aboard. Some of these people, according to Landig, are already listed as missing so would not be sought or expected to return.

The men of this fleet left with the common understanding that the war in Europe was lost. They were not trying to change the course of the war and realized what we know today, that any hope of doing so had long since passed. They did understand that they were on a special mission. They also knew they were the bearers of an order (Nazism) that was hated by the rest of the world by this time.

These U-boats had all been upgraded to some extent and some possessed the very latest in technology. For instance, all had the schnorkel device that would allow fresh air to enter the U-boat while submerged at a shallow depth. This made it possible to run on diesel power or used the diesel engines to recharge the submarine’s batteries, necessary to operate the electric engines for underwater running, while remaining relatively undetected.

Other devices mentioned by Landig are a round, dipole antenna used for warning the ship of an approaching enemy. Another device mentioned by Landig is called an “Ortungsgeraet” which pinpointed enemy ships with a range of eight nautical miles. I don?t know if the “Ortungsgeraet” is a description of the device (Ortungsgeraet meaning positioning device) but I cannot find it as a codename for any device matching the description given. Additionally, Landig lists the Balkon-Horchgeraet as being used. This device is said by Landig to have a range of 40 nautical miles. It picked up the sounds of propeller screws. The name “Balkon” (balcony) referred to the balcony-like housing built on the U-boat to house the sensing head (3).

The fleet put out to sea with no difficulty and made its way North. Landig gives no real dates or time references beyond the May 2, 1945 date. He marks time by distance as when he says the fleet neared Iceland and continued north. He also marks time by discussing events known in a certain time frame.

The ship from which the story is told is called 5XX. It is a provision supplying U-boat but that is all we know. As was previously mentioned, two captains are on-board whose conversation serves to describe what is happening.

North of Iceland, Allied radio chatter is encountered so the Germans know they are in the area in some strength. But they also know that the Allies are not expecting such as sizable German force in the North Atlantic at this late stage in the war. The Germans are confident of their superior action-radius, based on the technology described and the speed of their U-boats.

A “flying object” from a German base outside of the Reich observes a group of hostile ships and the information is relayed by long-wave to the U-boats. This is significant. The Germans perfected long-wave communication during the war. This is Tesla technology in which long radio waves were sent by dipole transmitters through the earth. In this case “earth” also means the ocean so the Germans could pick up communications while submerged almost anywhere on the earth. Various regions had layers of water which best facilitated reception of these messages and the depths for best reception where mapped out by the German Navy, worldwide. The transmitter required was, naturally, very large and specialized. Transmissions could be received but not sent by the U-boats. The transmitter itself was in Magdeberg, near Berlin. The facility was code-named “Goliath” (4). We will discuss this technology in more detail in a later chapter.

This long-wave transmission is a problem, though. The “last” long-wave transmitter, Goliath, was destroyed by the advancing Soviets at about time. (5) This would make good sense since they had been at the gates of Berlin for some time. Remember, by May 2, 1945 Hitler is already dead and the Soviets have overrun the bunker. Could there have been a long-wave transmitter outside Germany” Landig says the transmission came from Point 103 that we know is outside of Europe. The transmission was picked up at a depth of 20 meters.

Another interesting statement by Landig is the “flying object” which made the original observation of the enemy ships was in fact a German flying disc, Landig calls it a “V-7” and it was based at Point 103. Of further interest was the means of communication used by the V-7. This was the “Kurier” (courier) device.

Just so it is clear, the Kurier device relayed messages from the V-7 to Point 103 and then as the story goes the messages were transmitted to the ghost U-boat fleet by long-wave transmission. The Kurier device relayed messages in a very unique way. Today, we call this method “burst transmission?. A great amount of date was dialed into the Kurier device and transmitted in a burst so that the enemy could not get a fix on the sender. This was extremely successful for the Germans. (6) After the war the first question asked of U-boat crews by the British was for the Kurier device. (7) Burst technology resurfaced forty years later, coupled with computers, in espionage settings.

With the enemy located and still operating undetected, the German U-boats attacked. Landig tells us that the weapon of choice for this attack was a particular kind of torpedo. Landig called it the “Typ TXI?. He states that it operated at a depth of 50 meters, that it was steered by a sensor which honed in on the sound of propellers of the target ship, and that up to six such torpedoes could be fired at a time.

This torpedo is a variation of the “Zaunkoenig” torpedo. Lusar says of this weapon:

> *“The king among German torpedoes was the “Zaunkoenig” or “T-5?. This torpedo was equipped with a magneto-striation transceiver that received, evaluated and then conveyed the direction from which the sound waves, issuing from the ship’s screw, had been received to the rudder through a gyro-device. The torpedo first ran in an arc and then turned in the direction of the sensed target. A safety device had to be built in to ensure that the torpedo kept sufficient distance from the U-boat and did not hit it. This device initially provided for a fixed length of run, but when this turned out to be too short selective pre-setting was adopted. About sixty amplifying valves were fitted in the head of the torpedo.*
>
> *The “Zaunkoenig” was turned in to the screw-noise amplitude of the destroyers escorting the convoys and operated on a wavelength of 13,000 Hertz. When, however, the British, to whom the invention had been betrayed some six months before its introduction, had their destroyers tow noise-making devices (squawked buoys) which interfered with the “Zaunkoenig” sound locators an improved “Zaunkoenig” was designed -the “T-11?, also called “Geier . The sound-locator of this torpedo was tuned so that it did not respond to the weaker noise of the destroyer’s auxiliary engines. Consequently the torpedo would hit the destroyer itself. A further torpedo, the “T-14?, with Walter turbine propulsion, was on the test bench at the end of the war and was not used operationally.?(8)*

Lusar’s Roman numeral TXI would correspond to Lusar’s T-11.

As Landig tells the tale, the provision and supply U-boat 5XX had no weapons aboard and could only sit tight and wait out the battle. Eventually the captains raised the periscope and had a look around. All the British ships were either sunk or sinking. No British ships survived. After the battle, contact with the V-7s continued as was contact with Point 103.

Then the two captains discuss something that we will have to think about. In their conversation it is pointed out that now the Americans will know there is a German presence in the Arctic and they will certainly and actively seek the German base(s). This brings up the post-war episode of Americans searching the Arctic for flying saucers. As already mentioned, retired Col. Wendelle Stevens was among those involved in this search in those days. He has stated that B-29s were fitted with photographic gear and patrolled large tracts of the Arctic. In some cases, according to his testimony, contact was made with flying saucers, both in the air and on the ice and they were successfully photographed. The film was taken off the B-29s and sent to Washington, D.C. undeveloped. Col. Stevens never was given any sort of explanation as to the photo-interpretive results.

Returning to Landig and the captain's talk of Arctic bases, it was stated that all Arctic bases would be moved and relocated to the Antarctic where the Germans would have more room and security. Besides this, the probability of Hitler's death was discussed, as was the probability of the Arctic Blue Island legend. No firm conclusions were reached on either. This concludes Landig's discussion of the last sea battle of the war.

We should note that at no time does Landig use the words "Last Battalion?. There is no mention of Adolf Hitler aboard the ghost fleet. Landig does mention a German flying disc but the only weapon mentioned by Landig was the sound-seeking torpedo.

Next we will move in chronological order to W. Mattern, who writes sometime in the mid-1980s, or a few years after Landig's *Wolfzeit um Thule*. In his book *UFO's Unbekanntes Flugobjekt" Letzte Geheimwaffe*

Des Dritten Reiches" (*"UFO's: Unidentified Flying Object" Last Secret Weapon of the Third Reich?"*) Mattern uses Landig's sea battle and greatly expands on it. This expansion is not in terms of proof or details but rather in terms of meaning. To Mattern, the sea battle between the ghost U-boat fleet somewhere near Iceland represents only a first adventure for what he calls "the last German battalion?. It is his understanding that the German last battalion escorted Hitler?who did not die in the bunker?all the way to Antarctica to set him up in his new seat of power, Newschwabenland (9). As supporting documentation, Mattern only cites the magazine *Der Weg* and *El MercurioNews,* but gives no date or other identifying data so that it can be verified (10). Landig's ghost fleet has now become the "Fuehrer Convoy" (11).

There is another important difference. While Landig uses German flying discs for reconnaissance, Mattern makes them the very instrument of Nazi power. They become the vehicle by which the Nazis will perhaps achieve redemption and reassert themselves in the world's mainstream at some future time. In fact, this is the point of the book. There is still no mention of other exotic weaponry being used by the U-boat fleet itself.

One brief statement sets us up for what is coming from William R. Lyne in his sequence of events at or near this time frame. My translation of Mattern's words are as follows:

> *"It was perhaps Doenitz and not Goering who guaranteed the U-boat flotilla to the Antarctic and who also took over the security of the withdrawal of the Fuehrer from the bunker of the Reich's Chancellery, whereof Goering had no knowledge." (12)*

Please keep this idea in mind a few moments, while we consider other versions of the Last Battalion story.

D. H. Harmann relies on Norbert Juergen-Ratthofer, pulling a citation from a magazine article Juergen-Ratthofer wrote (13). In the last sentence of the otherwise standard rendition of the Landig story, Juergen-Ratthofer describes a new type of torpedo but also a totally different weapon that he calls the “Electrokanone” (electric cannon).

This “electrokanone” is most likely the rail gun that had been developed by the Germans during the war but never officially deployed (14), (15). The device would have worked well coupled with the huge batteries carried aboard a submarine. Unfortunately, neither Haarmann nor Juergen-Ratthofer offers any details or discussion on the subject.

Dr. Joseph Farrell provides us with some additional evidence for the special arms carried aboard German U-boats at this terminal phase of the war. Farrell, drawing upon sources Carter Hydrick and Geoffrey Brooks, comes up with the concept of “black U-boats” or U-boats that were off the official records and not under the control of the German Navy (16). Dr. Farrell sees these U-boats more in a secret supply role involving South America, which we will explore, but something he says about the technology on-board cannot go unnoticed. Farrell maintains that the Germans possessed some new sort of radar that spooked the Allies into not attacking, even when the U-boats in question were spotted. Further, citing Brooks, Farrell sees this new technology as an “energy field” that is disruptive to the engines of attacking aircraft:

> *“(iv) The last contacts appear to suggest that the submarines were now being seen on radar -perhaps the energy field was weakening -but as they entered the field the aircraft functions were jeopardized in some manner -?if your aircraft starts to run rough for no apparent reason, pull away” “. (17)*

The answer fitting this description is “Motorstoppmittel” (or “Zuendunterbrechung” or magnetic wave) (18). This technology would find a perfect application on-board a U-boat. All attacking aircraft of the times were piston-based, ignition engines which were the targets of “Motorstoppmittel?. Powering such a weapon would have been no problem for a diesel-electric U-boat whose diesel engines were often used to charge-up marine batteries from which the electric engines drew their power. Diverting the generators for employment of the Motorstoppmittel device would have been as easy as flipping a switch. The aircraft in question would have suddenly experienced ragged engine firing and finally their total failure as the aircraft continued on a straight-line trajectory and plunged into the sea.

Flights were directed over Germany specifically to investigate this new weapon. The rough-running engine was the telltale sign. American flyers were told to pull away from any target if this reaction was experienced. I reproduced a page of such a flying field investigation in an “F-38” (P-38 Lightning) from secret CIC Headquarters documents, dated January 24, 1945 in my previous book, a paragraph of which reads:

> *“3. In the beginning of his third pass his instruments began acting up and his left engine became very rough. He tried for approximately a minute and a quarter to correct the engine condition, that is, changing mixture control to auto-rich and back and changing FFM and manifold pressure. During this time the fuel pressure and FFM were fluctuating very extensively. Puffs of black smoke were observed from the turbo. After trying to correct the condition he observed flames coming from the turbo and fearing a fire he immediately feathered the engine.?(19)*

Just as with prototype aircraft, there was no tomorrow for further development. There was no reason not to try to use any advance the Germans could make work at this point. It is safe to say that in addition to advanced sound locating torpedoes, some German U-boats may have been fitted with rail guns, and some probably were fitted with “Motorstoppmittel” weaponry.

Colonel Howard A. Buechner and Kapitan Wilhem Bernhart describe this flotilla as the “Fuehrer Convoy” and state that up to 35 U-boats took part. They list their probable U-boat choices by number (20). These writers also state that the fleet made a stop at Kiel on their way to Kristiansand in which many addition crew members were added but that most torpedoes, ammunition and other armaments were stripped off the U-boats to make more room for the cargo and personnel (21). “Kapitan Wilhelm Bernhart” has a little more ’street-cred” than most writers on this subject since, even though this is a pen-name, he claims to have actually been present in this flotilla as a junior officer aboard U-530.

Now we come to some variants of the basic story or perhaps some alternate explanations or perhaps some sea-tales occurring at about the same time that may or may not be related to Landig’s basic work. The reader can sort this out for him or her self as well as anyone. These accounts really revolve around Gross-Admiral Karl Doenitz, after Hitler’s death, as he ascends to the Fuehrership of Germany.

Hitler killed himself on April 30, 1945. The second Fuehrer of Germany, Gross-Admiral Karl Doenitz, surrendered the three divisions of the German military on May 8, 1945. So the question is what happened during those nine days and why” Why did it take nine days to surrender” It was obvious to all that Germany had lost the war. Numerous researchers have reported on Nazi higher ups and many of these apparently had made secret overtures to the Western Allies, seeking peace or trying to cut a personal deal for their safety or employment in the post-war world.

During this time Doenitz was physically on the border between Denmark and Germany in territory not yet overrun by the British and Americans. Was he using the time he had to do a deal” If so, why would the

Western Allies give him the time of day?why would they listen” What sort of cards could Doenitz possibly hold” After all, he was boxed in with the Soviets charging hard from the East. Most of all the Nazis feared falling into Soviet hands as the war between the Soviets and the Nazis was particularly unforgiving.

William R. Lyne has an interesting answer to all this. He says a secret deal was done between Doenitz and the Americans.

> *“The Deutsche Antarktische Expedition (1938-39) laid out Germany’s claim to part of Antarctica, which claim has been undisputed since the war. In the last coded message from Martin Bormann, references to “Terra del Fuego” (A.K.A., “Feurerland?) were made, as the reins of power were transferred to Reichschancelor Admiral Doenitz, and his twenty-four German U-boats surrounded the United States, armed with I.C.B.M.s (A-9s), carrying neutron bomb warheads, and with celestial guidance systems. From this position of strength, Doentiz negotiated with the Allies, during a stalemate. The Russians were overrunning Germany, but Germany had its nuclear missiles trained on the heart of America. If Germany fired the missiles, the Russians would take all of Germany, and all would be lost for the Germans, who could have bombed America, yet would have had no home to return to. Under the circumstances, only America could save half of Germany, and so a deal was cut. Certain conditions were stipulated, and Doenitz was required to ’scuttle all U-boats with all hands on board?, as part of the amnesty agreement. Certain people were guaranteed amnesty, including Eva and Adolf Hitler, who were secretly provided with a cozy and secure home in Kassel Germany, for the rest of their lives, under the protection of the N.A.T.O. allies.?(22)*

These are extreme claims. The reader is probably asking himself/herself: What is the basis for these claims” Bill Lyne did spend time in the US Air Force, and, as he explains in his book, he had contact there with many people who claimed to know inside information. Since the first version of Bill's book first appeared in the late 1980s or early 1990s, he has had his share of "hits" regarding some of these claims. Therefore, I have learned to pay attention to Bill Lyne. But, returning to the question, what is the basis for this claim" Or, more properly stated, what is the evidence for this claim" Well folks, there is some.

Before going directly to the evidence, we ought to know what we are actually looking for in terms of military hardware. In other words, what sort of large missiles or rockets would have been launched by the Germans from their U-boats against the United States and how, exactly, would have this been done" Researcher/writer Friedrich Georg has done a great deal of work on this problem and compiled quite a bit of information, so it would behoove us to take a look at what he has found.

Friedrich Georg has uncovered three types of missiles that where meant for striking from surface to surface and could be launched from submarines. These missiles are all large enough to have contained non-conventional weaponry. By non-conventional weaponry it is meant miniaturized atomic warheads or, perhaps, red mercury warheads. There were three such missiles.

The first ought not to be a surprise at all; it was a sea-launched version of the V-1. We know that the V-1 was most frequently launched from ski-jump-like ramps but could be and were launched from bomber aircraft. The idea of launching a V-1 from a ramp mounted on the deck of a U-boat was first conceived in May of 1943. A supply-type U-boat was envisioned, a Type XIV. The project was de-prioritized, however, when as it was frowned upon by General Erhard Milch.

We pick up the thread a year and a half later, in November of 1944, at a meeting involving Himmler at Hohenlychen. There it was decided that Colonel Otto Skorzeny should proceed with all means to realize the concept of the sea-launched V-1. (23) At this point, there was only six months left in the war and so Germany’s position was dire without the insertion of the wonder weapons. Himmler must have though that coming up with a new delivery system for wonder weapons would require almost a super-human effort to realize and so the appointment of Skorzeny, an engineer as well as a war hero, who had worked miracles for the Reich in the past.

The plan seems to have been to build a hanger on-board the deck of this large U-boat in which four V-1s would be housed. The U-boat would travel to within range (300 km or about 183 miles) of a large city on America’s eastern seaboard, probably either New York City or Washington, D.C., at which time a ramp would be constructed on the deck of the surfaced U-boat and the missiles quickly launched. The U-boat would then quickly slip under the waves, thus avoiding detection.

The first big problem was that all the Type XIV U-boats had already been sunk. Of course, the new Type XXIs came into consideration but as far as I am aware, few of such craft existed, perhaps only three such craft were finished or nearing completion at this time. The idea that these Type XXIs would be stripped from the Kreigsmarine and put under the command of Skorzeny and the SS would certainly have displeased Admiral Doenitz to say the least.

But perhaps an even bigger problem involved the guidance system as it was currently constituted in the V-1 which was not all that accurate. It was fine if launched at a large city and from a fixed platform but on a tossing sea, the wave action at launch might greatly alter the pre-set flight path. A big wave at time of launch might send a V-1 miles off target.

It was pointed out in that meeting that new guidance systems were under development. One system involved radio guidance after launch via a second U-boat that had surfaced closer to the target for this purpose. Another suggestion was a homing device that could be placed at or near the target by agents put ashore for this purpose.

Another interesting suggestion was put forth, a homing device that we think of in terms of 1990s warfare. This was the “Radieschen” (radish) device (24). According to Georg, the device, developed for the Fritz-X missile and now housed in the nosecone, weighed only 15 kg. It used enemy radar as a homing signal and rode the radar waves to its target. It was to be used against the English Loran transmitters that provided the radar “cross-hairs” to Allied bomber squadrons over Germany (25).

The meeting broke up, resolving to a better guidance device for the sea-launched V-1. But Friedrich Georg suggests a couple of things. First, he wonders aloud what would have happened to Skorzeny’s mandate to develop this sea-launched V-1 if General Milch had not frowned upon the original idea in May of 1943. Second, the use of agents to plant homing devices was already under serious consideration for other weapons designed to hit the American shore?why were these plans not coordinated with others also wanting to use this method” Third, he reveals that sufficient guidance devices already existed. He lists “Ewald II” and ’sauerkirsche II” as well as the impulse repeaters “Wespe?, “Biene” and “Gluehwuermchen” (26).

Mr. Georg makes the point that using V-1s against New York City or Washington, D.C. would, by itself, with only conventional warheads, not be a war-changing event. If these missiles were equipped with atomic warheads, however, and the financial or governmental capitol were flattened, this might have given the Americans pause. With this in mind Mr. Georg goes on to prove that this capacity might have been at the fingertips of the Third Reich. To do this he highlights American weaponry of the late 1940s that was based on German prototypes.

After the war the Americans brought to the USA Dr. Wilhelm Fiedler, the man most responsible for the creation of the V-1. He was instrumental in building a virtual copy for the Americans that was called the “Loon?. On March 7, 1948 a Loon was successfully launched from the American submarine USS Cusk.in just the manner already described except that it was guided remotely to its target. Three months later another submarine, the USS Carbonero repeated the exercise.

The Loon was a research rather than operational missile. It was the Regulus 1, a second-generation cruise missile, which first rose to operational status. But meanwhile, during the developmental lag between the Loon and the Regulus 1, a reserve of Loons were accumulated and stored. Strangely enough, an atomic warhead was developed for this missile while in “reserve?, as of May 1948. It was designated the “TX-10” and described as a miniature Hiroshima-like bomb (26). Friedrich Georg compares it to the 28-cm atomic artillery shell, first conceived by the Germans and called the “Duesenkanone?. This mobile cannon was actually under construction as the war ended, at Skoda under the auspices of the Kammler Group. The Duesenkanone or DKM44 was to launch a 28 cm projectile. Of course the Americans quickly reconstituted this cannon as the Atomic Cannon T-13 (28). This cannon was operational in the early 1950s and I am sure those old enough will recall newsreel footage of it being fired by the US Army, while shortly after a large explosion and mushroom cloud appeared in the distant desert. The point is that the Germans had expected a miniaturized atomic weapon for their cannon, it would also be available for the V-1, and as proof of this concept’s validity, we have the Americans miniaturizing atomic weapons for both their cannon and their version of the V-1 in the late 1940s.

The second sea-launched rocket or missile that might have been aboard the U-boat fleet on its way to the American east coast was called the “Ursel?. The reader might recall the discussion of a weapons system by a similar name, the “Urzel?, by Dr. Milos Jesensky and Mr. Robert Lesniakiewicz. They described a combination V-1-V-2 in which the V-1 rode on top of the V-2 in a horse and rider configuration and which could be launched from a U-boat. We have also discussed the possibility of a more advanced version of the V-1 or possibly a new missile, the “V-3?, as being employed in this way. What is being described in the reconstruction by Friedrich Georg of the Ursel is not this weapon but a completely different one.

But rather than fall into a name-trap, or trying to chose which description is correct or more correct, please consider that we are dealing with secret, undisclosed weapons dating back many decades, originating in a culture which is really extinct now, that of the Nazis. Nobody has ever been one hundred percent correct about their reconstructions such as this. Everyone changes or alters their view as new information surfaces. Since both resonstructions call for launch via U-boat, there are naturally going to be some similarities. There is undoubtedly truth in both reconstructions of the Urzel/Ursel. I would suggest that in spite of the similar names, both could be possibly considered as separate projects but more importantly as actual projects.

Again, we turn to Friedrich Georg for a description of the weapon in question. The essence of the Ursel is that of a rocket launched from under water by a U-boat. This stated on July 4, 1942 as a defense for U-boats. It took on two forms.

The first form was a Borsig solid fuel rocket of somewhere between 15 to 21 caliber. The word “Nebelwerferraketen” is mentioned in this context so a rocket which projects fog or smoke must be considered since this is what that word means. It was to be launched 10-15 meters below the water and in salvos. Actually, two projects of this type were undertaken, one by the Army and one by the Air Force (29). This may seem a bit strange until one learns that this was at Peenemuende, where facilities only existed for those two branches of the military.

In the second form, this project would be a larger Rheinmetall-Borsig 1.8-m, 89-kg rocket, but again with no guidance system. This project, like the first, went nowhere in terms of hardware, but something did stick. It was the idea of the underwater launch of a rocket. This idea seems to have transcended the original idea so that instead of merely a defensive weapon for a U-boat, the concept of an offensive weapon, possibly of “Vergeltung” status, was born.

At some point this concept made its way to several agencies. Among these were the CPVA, the Institut fuer Stroemungsforschung (something like the Institute for Fluidics) at Goettingen, the Forschungsanstalt (research installation) “Graf Zeppeline” in Stuttgart Ruit, and the Amtsgruppe FEP of the OKM. All of these facilities were assigned to develop this idea. It ended up under the direction of Dr. Lindberg at the CPVA that was the Chemische-Physikalische Versuchsanstalt (Chemical-Physical Research Facility) at the Austrian lake, the Toplitzsee.

The Toplitzsee is a deep-water lake, high in the Alps, surrounded by mountain peaks. The name “Toplitzsee” arises again and again not only as a test and research facility during the war but as a repository of secrets immediately after the war. For instance, as Mr. Georg explains, it was here that the sunken V-rockets were sighted by a driver, in this case a biologist named Dr. Fricke in 1987. This lake is suspected of being the final resting place for all sorts of exotic technology that the Nazis wanted hidden from the invading Allies. But also there are rumors of blueprints, gold and other treasure, and even printed British and American banknotes that were forged during the war by concentration camp inmates for the Nazis in Operation Bernhard. Through the 1960s divers would sometimes attempt to recover these valuable objects from the depths and almost as often turn up dead for their trouble. The Toplitzsee was and is an ongoing mystery.

At the Toplitzsee and still thinking defense of U-boats rather than long distance weapons, experiments were conducted in which rockets were launched as deep as 100 meters underwater. The problem with this idea as a method to defend U-boats then became apparent. The transition between operating in water and in the air was so drastic that the aim of those rockets was altered to the point beyond which the idea was practical.

About this time thinking apparently changed to the idea of an offensive weapon whereby a new firm, Wasag of Whttenberg was brought in. They arranged rockets with there own stands for launching on the U-boat. These rockets were greatly extended in range. To test these weapons they were first launched from small U-boats in the Toplitzsee and then guided to a target at the peak of one of the surrounding mountains. According to French agents, these rockets were V-2-like. At this point there is some confusion whether this was the Ursel rocket or the rocket associated with the Lafferenz Project which we will look at next and that also used V-2-like rockets only possibly smaller. This smaller rocket may have been the A-5 that was actually used as a model for the A-4 in spite of the numerical designation. I.V. Hogg describes the A-5:

> *"A-5. Test vehicle for the A-4 control systems. About 16 feet long and 2 ft. in diameter, it was powered by a Walter hydrogen peroxide rocket motor. Several were used in trials, both ground launched and launched from aircraft. A certain amount of confusion exists over this rocket since there were a number of experimental sub-models with changes in fin design which were given the appellation V-1, V-2, V-3 etc., to V-16. In this case the "V" stands for "versuchs" i.e. "experimentation?. (30) The A-5 under consideration here was apparently given the appellation "V-7?. It looked like a normal A-5 but was given a stronger engine of 1800 kp (one kp is the pressure of boiling water) as opposed to 1500 kp for normal A-5. (31)*

At the beginning of 1945 tests were conducted in the vicinity of Bornholm, in the Baltic in which two such rockets without warheads were launched from a Type VIIC U-boat underwater (32). It is very probable that this culminated the Ursel program and that these rockets were designed to be fired in salvo in a "Vergeltungs-attack?, most probably at New York City.

Colonel Otto Skorzeny seemed confirm this in 1947 when commenting on the panic generated by the Orsen Wells radio program of 1939 concerning the fictional landing of Martians on the eastern seaboard. He is alleged to have commented:

> *“What would happen if only a pair of such rockets rained down in the middle of Manhattan?”*

But with a payload no larger than 15 kg per rocket, what would have caused the Germans to think such an attack would be a war-changing event” To do this the warhead must either be a radiological dirty bomb, an almost impossibly miniaturized atomic bomb or a red mercury bomb, emitting deadly neutrons as would a neutron bomb. As with many German weapons awaiting deployment, we are left with the lingering notion that they were expecting atomic weapons or other truly exotic and powerful warheads to materialize, momentarily.

If the Ursel was the rocket accompanying any German U-boat fleet on its way to attack the USA or not this concept certainly survived the war and was the basis for all the systems developed which fire long distance rockets from submarines, in both the East and the West.

The last possible method of attacking the USA using U-boat based missiles was the Lafferenz Project. The essence of the Lafferanz Project was a V-2 or V-2-like rocket which was encapsulated in a long tube, towed horizontally by a U-boat to within range of the US coast, righted to the vertical position, and fueled and fired by technicians in the U-boat.

Friedrich Georg tells us this idea first surfaced as the inspiration of Otto Lafferenz, then Director of the German Workers Front, in the fall of 1943. At this time he proposed the idea to Dr. Walter Dornberger, Director of the Army Research facility at Peenemuende. Evidently, he liked the idea because sometime in 1944 the concept was already being tested at the Topitzsee with a small U-boat and a V-2 or very similar rocket. I say “or a very similar rocket” because this project, like the Ursel, may have relied on a smaller version of the A-4, the V-2. Possible code names for this project were Testsland XII, Apparat F, and Projekt Schwimmweste.

The Lafferenz capsule is described as being round in section with four fins at its stern. A cap on the front end of the system popped off after the capsule was righted by flooding the ballasts. A gyro-stabilized platform steadied the missile for firing. There was a ring-shaped platform surrounding the A-4 or similar rocket, designed for servicing it. A ring-like exhaust tube re-directed the exhaust gasses up and out of the open cap at firing. Under this exhaust tube was the control room and tanks containing the propellant and oxidizer, probably alcohol and liquid oxygen. Below this was a second ballast tank in the stern.

It was calculated that a Type XXI U-boat could tow three such Lafferenz capsules at 12 knots per hour, underwater, on a 30-day trip to the US eastern seaboard. A smaller U-boat was only able to tow one capsule.

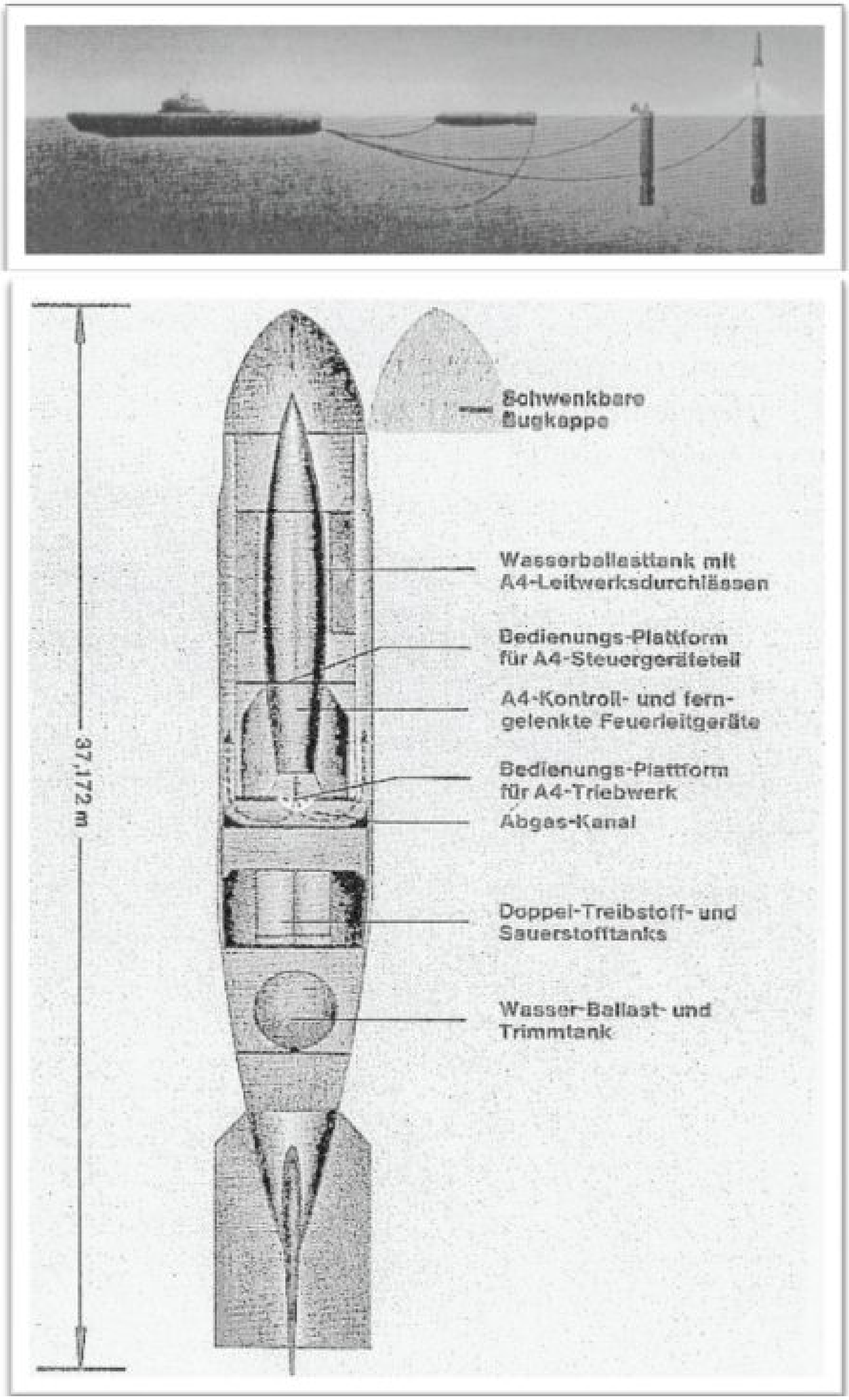
Schwenkbare Bugkappe
Wasserballasttank mit A4-Leitwerksdurchlässen
Bedienungs-Plattform für A4-Steuergeräteteil
A4-Kontroll- und ferngelenkte Feuerleitgeräte
Bedienungs-Plattform für A4-Triebwerk
Abgas-Kanal
Doppel-Treibstoff- und Sauerstofftanks
Wasser-Ballast- und Trimmtank
37,172 m

The Lafferanz Project

> In this project German U-boats encapsulated V-2s to within range of the eastern seaboard of the U.S. Once in position, the rockets would have to be righted, fueled, and launched from control facilities in the U-boat.

Once the capsule had been positioned within range of its target, the proper ballast tanks would be emptied and flooded, the technicians would have entered the capsule from the U-boat, fueling and aiming the rocket. They would then return to the U-boat from which the actual ignition would have taken place (33).

The Lafferenz capsules themselves were made at the Vulkan Werft in Stettlin and the Schickau Werft in Elbing according to Mr. Georg. It is believed that 24 units were made in all. During the change of year between 1944 and 1945, U-1063 towed and evidently fired this rocket without any problems. Both Blohm & Voss in Hamburg as well as Weser AG in Bremen were involved in modifying U-boats; Type XXIs are mentioned, for the Lafferenz rockets (34). As with the previous projects, war-changing payloads come into question.

Mr. Georg tells us that In March 1945, a fleet of six Type VIIC U-boats refitted with snorkels departed under “Group Seawolf” (35).

At this point we will turn to the research of Mark Kneipp. Readers of my first book may recall that it was Mark who first identified some sensitive Paperclip reports. Even though Mr. Kneipp has not published, I considered the work of Mark Kneipp as being excellent to say the least. He wrote me many years ago with the saga that will follow. Incidentally, Mark’s research regarding what will follow was originally prompted by a search for still unidentified Arctic German bases. In this search he was successful. Mark Kneipp found Arctic German bases in addition to those mentioned in this book. Perhaps the overall organization I presented encompassed them, but this is not a certainty. We all can only hope that Mr.

Kneipp will someday publish the results of his research and the research he has done on other aspects of German technology, including German flying discs.

What follows is a summary of an article Mark Kneipp sent to me titled *Lafferenz and "Operation Teardrop"*. I am going to try to list points of contention or new points rather than go over material already mentioned. Mr. Kneipp used governmental sources, including those obtained under Freedom of Information Act, although he did not list references in his letter/article to me.

The idea of underwater rocket launch began in 1942 with a member of Peenemuende's engineering staff, Dr. Johannes Steinhoff, brother of Captain Freidrich Steinhoff of U-551. The idea was given approval and tests were begun on U-551, code named "Ursula?. This method involved 21-cm solid fuel rockets mounted to the rear of the U-boat. Rockets were successfully launched with the objective of hitting an enemy ship. A test ship was hit and damaged 3 km away. Although successful, the project was dropped.

In 1944, with the course of the war in doubt, the project was resurrected. This time the goal was to discourage submarine hunters and another rocket was used, the Army's 30 cm "Wurfkoerper Spreng?. Targeting was accomplished by sound location but the sounds made by the launching system itself would have alerted enemy ships to the presence and location of the U-boat. Again, the project was abandoned.

Meanwhile, Dr. Otto Laffrerenz suggested to Dr. Walter Dornberger the use of container tubes to tow V-2 rockets into range of American cities as explained earlier. According to Mr. Kneipp's research, the project was given to Volkswagen, AG at Wolfsburg for development. The finished Lafferenz tube was 30 meters long (98 ft.) and weighed 500 tons loaded with the rocket and fuel. The description of the Lafferenz device corresponds to that previously given, except that electricity for the launch was additionally provided by the U-boat.

A delay in the project resulted from a "hold" being placed upon it regarding the development of the V-2 to be launched. General Rossman and Dr. Walter Riedel directed a test model, a prototype, built at Peenemuende to be sent to the Toplizsee and launched by a Seehund, a two man submarine, there. The test launch, at least, involved the smaller A5 rocket. The tests were successful and picked up by French intelligence agents and passed along to the British.

Mr. Kneipp says that: "The contract was assigned to 5 separate dockyards near Peenemuende." These were:

> " *The Stettiner Machinenbau AG, Vulkin Stettin (3 units built)*
> " *The F. Schickau GmbH, Danzig (Elbing), (1 unit built)*
> " *The Oderwerke, Stettin (12 units built)*
> " *The Neptune Werft AG, Rostock (10 units built)*
> " *The Flender Werke, Luebeck (4 units built)*

This totals 30 Lafferenz containers by my calculation. U-1063 carried out testing in the Baltic, one successful launch being conducted in late January 1945. By February, everything was fully tested an in place and a decision was made to put this weapons system into full operation.

The plan called for two waves of attacks. The first attack would use six Lafferenz containers while the second wave would follow up with a larger attack using twenty-four containers. On March 1, 1945 the 33rd U-flotilla was assigned the task. The six U-boats chosen were U-518, U-546, U-805, U-858, U-880 and U-1235 using the name Operation Seewolf. It was to begin on April 14, 1945.

The British informed US Intelligence of this operation, in part because of two German agents landed by U-1230 on November 29, 1944. An anti-submarine task force, code named “Teardrop” was assembled. It was composed of 4 aircraft escort carriers and 29 destroyer escorts.

From the outset the U-boats of Seewolf were on the defensive. On April 15-16, the USS Stanton and USS Frost sunk U-880. These same two American ships then confronted U-1235 on the surface. Wisely, the U-boat dived whereupon the destroyers fired hedgehog-exploding devices. After 90 minutes an explosion so massive occurred that it shook the USS Croatan that was twelve nautical miles away. Somehow, the USS Frost was damaged and withdrew to New York.

On April 21, the USS Mosley, the USS Lowe and the USS JRY Blakely made contact with a surfaced U-805. All three destroyers fired hedgehogs at the by this time submerged U-805. Underwater explosions were heard but thought to be evasive tactics of the U-boat.

On April 22, the USS Carter and USS Neal A. Scott located U-518 that exploded with all hands on board after the Americans attacked.

The next day U-546 was sighted on the surface south-southeast of Cape Farewell by aircraft from the escort carrier USS Bogue. An aircraft attack came up short. On April 24, the USS Frederick C. Davis made contact with U-546 and was joined by USS Hayter. U-546 counterattacked and sunk the USS Frederick C. Davis. Some of its crew survived and the battle was soon joined by the USS Otter and the USS Flaherty. U-546 was detected under the wreckage of the USS Frederick C. Davis by the USS Flaherty. U-546 responded by firing a Pillenwerfer. Confused, the USS Flaherty lost contact with U-546.

Meanwhile the USS Janssen, USS Hubbard, USS Neunzer and USS Varian joined the battle. Contact with U-546 was reestablished and several ships launched depth charges. Contact was again lost with U-546.

More US ships arrived?the USS Chatelain, USS Cockrill, USS Pope and USS Pilsbury. The USS Varian relocated U-546 and attacks were resumed. By now U-546 had been damaged and was using pumps. This noise hampered U-546 in sound location of enemy ships. Finally, a hedgehog blew a 15-inch hole in the pressure hull of U-546, releasing chlorine gas from its batteries. It surfaced and tried to torpedo the USS Flaherty, but missed. The USS Flaherty launched torpedoes in return, but also missed. Five of the destroyer escorts opened deck guns on U-546 and finally succeeded in sinking it, but the Captain and 32 crewmembers survived.

Mark Kneipp reports that the Captain, Kapitaenleutnant Paul Just, 2 officers and 5 specialists were placed in solitary confinement and were subjected to beatings each day. On April 30, 1945, the day Hitler died, Kapitaenleutnant Paul Just collapsed under such interrogation. He and seven others were sent to Washington with the other 25 crewmembers going to POW detention. In Washington, the same “interrogation tactics” were used on Just. On May 9, 1945, the day after Germany surrendered, Kapitaenleutnant Paul Just agreed to write a history of U-546, the objective of the interrogations. Evidently, the Americans were very interested in possible missiles aboard those submarines.

Returning to the sea battle, on April 27, USS Willis and USS Cockrill fired upon a probably U-boat. They were joined later that day by USS Swenning and USS Jannsen and on the next day by USS Hayter, USS Hubbard and USS Otter. On April 30, USS Willis and USS Swenning investigated a possible contact by USS Core but no further U-boats where sunk.

After the war in Europe ended, U-805 and U-858 surrendered at sea. The Captain and crew of U-805 suffered the same level of “interrogation” that the men of U-546 had endured, and this was after the war had ended! Evidently, no Lafferenz containers were recovered by the US Navy but Mark Kneipp reports that U-805 had strange cables connected to the deck of the U-boat, cables that had been cut.

As an aside, U-873 under Kapitaenleutnant Friedrich Steinhoff also surrendered to the Americans at this time. He underwent the very same “interrogation techniques” described above. Kapitaenleutnant Friedrich Steinhoff committed suicide on May 19, 1945. This was the same Kapitaenleutnant Friedrich Steinhoff who had originally conducted tests for his brother, Dr. Johannes Steinhoff, originator of the “Ursula” concept.

Well, what do you think of Mark Kneipp’s letter to me containing this information” I think it is explosive and I think it makes Bill Lyne and his report years before look very good in hindsight.

A few mysteries remain. During this time frame, the USS Mission Bay reported its aircraft had located a ship matching the description of the Tago off the coast of Greenland. This was a radar guidance ship that was designed by the Luftwaffe. Was it intended to guide the V-2s or A-5s or similar rockets to their target” Secondly, no Lafferenz containers were ever recovered by the Allies, at least officially anyway. Further, this whole affair, the Lafferenz Project, Seewolf, and Operation Teardrop were kept secret by the Americans for over fifty years.

Let us think about this last point for a minute. Conventional (establishment) historians will tell you in an instant that the Battle of the Bulge was the last German offensive in the West in December 1944. Was this a lie” Operation Seewolf was the last offensive in the West and it was in April 1945. Why would the US government mislead historians” Again, let me be charitable. The US government did not want to acknowledge the tremendous war-making capacity of the Lafferenz Project; they did not want to acknowledge the measures they took to block this attack from happening. But the underlying reason for both of these avenues of deception was the very high probability that those attacking missiles from 1945 contained a type of super-destructive warhead, and one that was miniaturized, which was unknown elsewhere for quite a long time to come, if ever.

At this point the reader may be asking why this seemingly documented Seewolf-Lafferenz-Teardrop saga is in the same chapter with the Last Battalion, Landig's undisclosed sea battle that was turned into a legend by others" Well, a few years ago Bill Lyne's tale about a US-Nazi stalemate and Doenitz's red mercury U-boats sounded even more fantastic than anything Landig ever claimed. Now, with some deep digging by the researchers named, that "legend" turned out to be mostly factual. My point is obvious: never count Landig out (or Bill Lyne for that matter).

Literature Cited

1. **Mattern, W., date unknown**, *UFO's Unbekanntes Flugobjekt" Letzte Geheim-waffe Des Dritten Reiches"*, page 23, Samisdat Publishing, Ontario, Canada

2. **Landig, Wilhelm, 1980**, *Wolfzeit um Thule*, pages 13-42, Volkstum-Verlag Wilhelm Landig, Vienna, Austria

3. **Hogg, I.V., 1970**, *German Secret Weapons of World War II*, pages 60, 61, Arco Publishing Company, Inc., New York, USA

4. **Lusar, Rudolf, 1960**, *German Secret Weapons of the Second World War*, page 211, Neville Spearman Limited, London, United Kingdom

5. **Brooks, Geoffrey, 1992**, *Hitler's Nuclear Weapons*, page 161, Leo Cooper (Publishing), London, United Kingdom

6. **Hogg, I.V., 1970**, page 78

7. **Lusar, Rudolf, 1960**, page 210

8. **Lusar, Rudolf, 1960**, page 213-214

9. **Mattern, W., date unknown**, pages 23, 24, 82

10. **Mattern, W. date unknown**, page 23

11. **Mattern, W. date unknown**, page 86

12. **Mattern, W. date unknown**, page 132

13. **Haarmann, D.H., 1983**, *GeheimWunderwaffen Zerrbild zwischen Taeushung and Tatsachen*, page 53, Hugin, Wetter, Germany Contained within this citation is Norbert Juergen-Ratthofer’s article in the magazine Das neue Zeitalter titled Geheimwaffe UFO, May 9, 1980, Number 20, page 15

14. **Lusar, Rudolf, 1960**, page 160

15. **Stevens, Henry, 2007**, *Hitler’s Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science and Technology*, pages 152 to 162, Adventures Unlimited Publishing, Kempton, Illinios, USA

16. **Farrell, Joseph P., 2008**, *Nazi International The Nazis” Postwar Plan to Control Finance, Conflict, Physics and Space*, pages 65; 96; 131, Adventures Unlimited Publishing, Kempton, Illinois, USA

17. **Farrell, Joseph P., 2008**, page 99, in which he cites Geoffrey Brooks, “Reports on Three Incidents Suggestive of Invisibility of German Submarines to Visual and Electronic Detection between 27 March and 4 July 1945?, in which Brooks cites Wolfgang Hirschfeld, in personal communication, pages 192-202, Feindfahrten, 1983, Neff Verlag, (Pen and Sword Books for English version, 1997)

18. **Stevens, Henry, 2007**, pages 170-189

19. **Stevens, Henry, 2007**, page 174

20. **Buechner, Howard A., Col. and Kapitan Wilhelm Bernhart, 1989**, *Hitler's Ashes*, page 173, Thunderbird Press, Inc., Metairie, Louisiana, USA

21. ***ibid.***

22. **Lyne, William R., 1999**, *Pentagon Aliens* (third edition), page 97, Creatopia Productions, Lamy, New Mexico, USA

23. **Georg, Friedrich, 2000**, *Hitlers Siegeswaffen Band 1: Luftwaffe und Marine Gehime Nuklearwaffen des Dritten Reiches und ihre Traegersysteme*, page 177, Amun-Verlag, Schleusingen, Germany

24. **Georg, Friedrich, 2000**, page 178

25. **Hogg, I.V., 1970**, page 44

26. **Georg, Friedrich, 2000**, page 179

27. **Georg, Friedrich, 2000**, page 180

28. **Georg, Friedrich, 2000**, pages 144; 172

29. **Georg, Friedrich, 2000**, page 173

30. **Hogg, I.V., 1970**, page 13

31. **Georg, Friedrich**, 2000, page 175

32. ibid.

33. **Georg, Friedrich, 2000**, pages 181-182

34. **Georg, Friedrich, 2000**, page 183

35. **Georg, Friedrich, 2000**, page 184

REPOSITORIES

We are going to take another little break here and discuss repositories. By this term I mean places where the Germans stashed high-value things for safe keeping after the war. This may mean aircraft or flying discs or blueprints, artifacts of value in Nazi ideology, money, or printing presses for making money. Some see the Antarctic as a repository and see the German base there only as an ice cave, a warehouse for storage. The same is true for the Andes region. We will deal with Antarctica and the Andes separately in appropriate chapters. Here I would like to concentrate on two possible repositories for the Nazis, Tibet and Switzerland, as strange as either might seem at first glance.

There is really no denying something going on between the Tibetans and the Nazis during the war. Expeditions were made by the Germans to Tibet. In truth, I really don?t know how many were made. These expeditions were explained by the Nazis and explained by Nazi detractors, for all sorts of silly reasons. If we could identify the real reasons for making this difficult journey, we might get some clue as to the purpose for such expeditions.

The standard explanation given by, say, The History Channel, is that these Nazi expeditions were made first and foremost to find the origins of the Aryan people. Now, the term “Aryan” has fallen into disfavor since World War Two but it represents a legitimate concept. The politically correct term now is “Indo-European?. The Nazis added additional meanings to the term “Aryan?, those of racial purity and unique origin. Nevertheless, it was the Indo-Europeans of prehistory who are the common cultural antecedents of all Europeans except the Basque, Saami, Finns, and Hungarians. This means that the Slavs, Germanics, Romans, Greeks, Celts and all the other now extinct cultures of Europe owe a debt of origin to the Indo-Europeans. In fact today the languages spoken by the above-named peoples, plus those of the Iranians and Northern Indians are grouped into a classification bearing this name.

The problem was that European pre-history during the 1930s and before was centered about the Near East, so, allegedly, it was those people who were solely responsible for bringing “culture” to Europe. I say “Near East” but it took on tones of being bible-centric. The Nazis rejected this foreign origin of their culture and wanted to explore their own origins, both Indo-European and later Germanic.

The problem was that there were two ’schools” to choose from in exploring native European origins. First there was the standard academic version, which, as I say, was certainly de-emphasized by mainstream archaeology and things would remain this way until the late 1960s. The other alternatives were the occult ideas of Madame H. P. Blavatsky, as reinterpreted by Guido von List and Lanz von Lebenfels, whose ideas found a home not in German science but in the Ahnenerbe, a Nazi organization which specifically sought Germanic-Aryan origins.

The Ahnenerbe became part of the SS in about 1940 and sent out expeditions of archaeologists and explorers in an attempt to establish a cultural and racial origin. Among these were the expeditions made to Tibet. Perhaps the Ahnenerbe thought the origins of the Germanics or the Aryans might be in Tibet, and so the grounds for measuring the populace in terms of typological anthropology, but this was not the view of the top scientists in German anthropology at the time, like Hans F.K. Guenther or Egon Freiherr von Eickstedt. So please, let us not ever confuse the Ahnenerbe with German science other than the fact that the scientists employed by the Ahnenerbe were willing to be used for this purpose. This is certainly not unique to the Ahnenerbe?American anthropology and indeed all social science was and still is chock-full of such prostitutes who are directly or indirectly funded by the government through academia and dare not deviate from current political correctness or lose their jobs.

But even if the Ahnenerbe entertained this racial-origin hypothesis on their first trip to Tibet, after that trip the reasons for continued expeditions must have been quite different. For instance, we know that biologist Dr. Ernst Schaefer's two expeditions sought the collection of rare animals, a hunt for the Yeti, and the collection of a rare Tibetan text, the Kangschur. True, an anthropologist or ethnologist Dr. Bruno Berger did collect human measurements and made facial casts but this line of reasoning, the Tibetans as Aryan ancestors, went nowhere, even within the most occult-oriented of the Ahnenerbe.

Tibetan monks did make their way back to Germany. A letter was brought back to Germany from the Dalai Lama, and it seemed that Tibet had a pro-German stance at the outbreak of World War Two. Nevertheless, the collection of Tibetan monks from a religion obscure to all but the professional German orientalists and a letter of support from a non-technological, essentially pacifist country could hardly be considered the makings of a successful expedition or have warranted further expeditions.

So the question remains: what did the Nazis want in Tibet”

“Claude Schweikert” aka Erich Halik (and perhaps other names) mentions Tibet in an occult-oriented, post-war article entitled *Um Krone un Gipfel der Welt (?Concerning the Crown and Pinnacle of the World?)*. Schweikert discusses Tibet under the occult terminology of “Agharta” and says of the occultist Ferdinand Ossendwoski that he was told a story concerning the retrieval of hidden science to the surface by an invading Khan (1). Agharta as well as Shamballah were underground kingdoms of hidden occult power usually centered in and associated with Tibet.

Next we will jump to Dr. Joseph P. Farrell and a rather rational description of what we might consider to be a German base in Tibet (2). He tells us of several Tibetan monks found dead by Russian soldiers entering Berlin:

> *likely possibility was sometime around the period of the massive German offensive on the southern Russian Front in the summer of 1942. It is a little known fact that the Wehrmacht sent armed long-range reconnaissance units as far east as Astrakhan on the northern Caspian Sea, but beyond sewing confusion behind Russian lines, there was little military value in such an operation.* (here Farrell cites the German military historian Paul Carrell in the book "Hitler Moves East: 1941-1943?) *However, it is possible that commando-engineered units of the Waffen SS might have been included in these units, and, once the units had penetrated as far east as was operationally save, the commando units would have been released to continue onward through Kazakstan and on into Tibet, utilizing Nazi intelligence contacts in these Muslim areas to smooth their passage through hostile territory. Once in Tibet, a makeshift airfield could have been constructed able to handle long-range aircraft. The Tibetans would have then been flown back to Germany. While a hazardous enterprise to be sure, it would have been far safer than attempting to smuggle monks out through British India and back to Germany via U-boat, which, in any case, would have required more trips than would have been required by even one of the large Junkers 290s or the enormous Junkers 390s. As for the purpose of such an operation, this is relatively transparent, for such expertise would have been required if Himmler's SS was to translate its copy of the Kang Shuur completely and accurately."*

> *"This requires some commentary. Since the 1938-1939 Schaefer Expedition is known not to have brought out large numbers of Tibetan monks, but only a copy of the Kang Shuur, the question becomes, when were these monks smuggled out of Tibet into Nazi Germany, by what route, and for what purpose"*

This is a great point concerning the translation of the Kang Shuur. But there is really no evidence for even makeshift airfields. If there were, they would have been used on the yeti expeditions of the 1950s, and certainly on the attempts to climb Mt. Everest. Perhaps some helicopters were used in the 1950s, but nothing approaching the Junkers Ju 290 or Ju 390. And if you recall, the Dalai Lama had to flee Tibet on foot to India in the early 1950s after the Chinese invasion. Nevertheless, as Dr. Farrell points out, something is going on here because those monks certainly did not exit Tibet through India, which was in British hands during the war. All entrances and egresses to Tibet would have been very well guarded, and yet, somehow, they got into Germany.

Dr. Axel Stoll makes the point that the origins of some of the German flying disc technology may have been ancient India (3). Nobody really denies this is a possibility. Dr. Stoll, it seems, has really taken an interest in this possibility, translating the Vymaanika Shastra (evidently from an American/English version) into a scientific understanding in German language (4). The point for us is that Dr. Stoll believes that it may be true that this knowledge survives and is guarded somewhere to this day, and suggests this place may be Tibet (5).

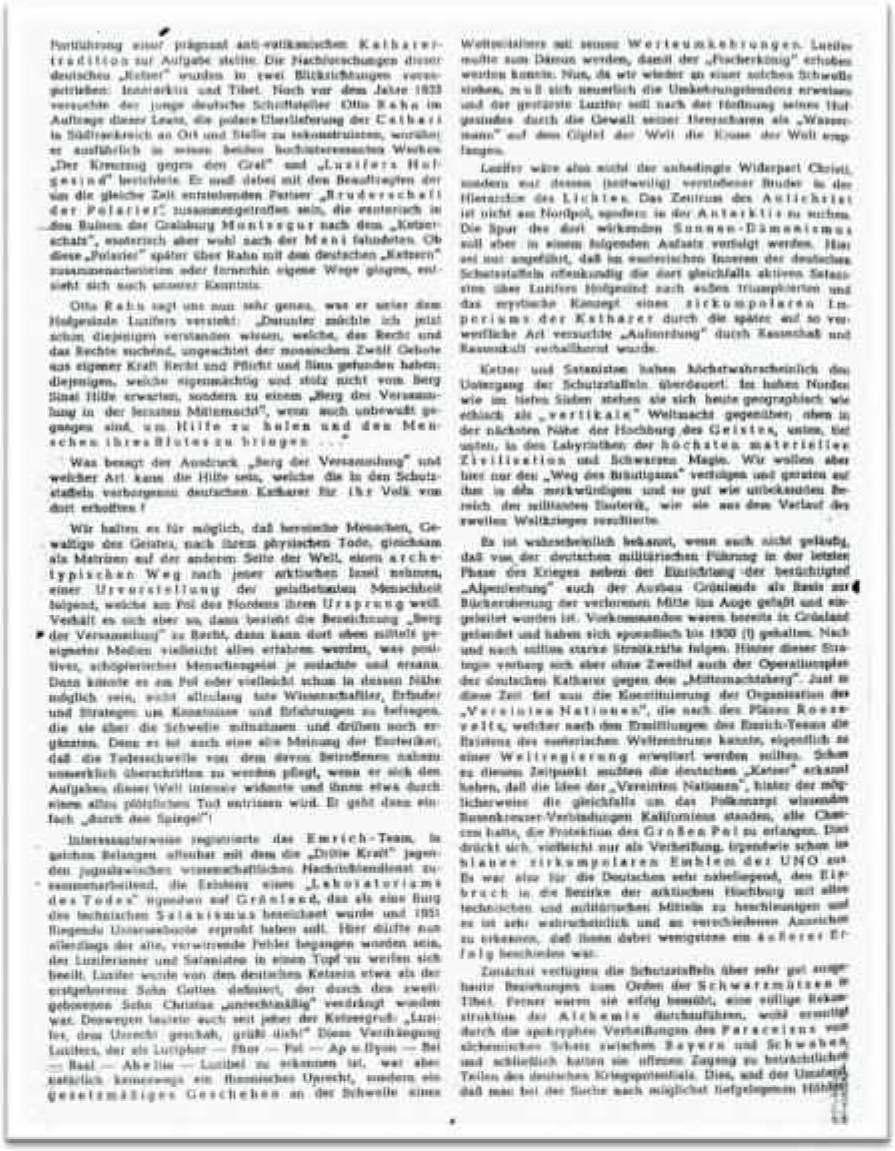

Mensch und Schicksal Magazine, ***Um Krone und Gipfel der Welt***. This page again names the Emrich team, claiming German bases in Greenland and a repository in Switzerland.

At a later point Dr. Stoll returns to Tibet in the book referenced above and describes it as a possible place for a secret German base (6). Here, he says outright that the Tibetans fought for Germany during the Second World War, so a good connection and rationale for such a base, at least in his mind, is evident. He says this would be an underground base and it would have been secured using electromagnetic means. This is what I have called the "electromagnetic vampire" in my book, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science and Technology*. In chapter five of that book is a description of Dr. Stoll's electromagnetic security system (7). Suffice it to say that Dr. Stoll has his own unified field theory and in his interpretation, life force can simply be sucked out of an intruder using a sort of reverse-Faraday cage and the right electronics. In this underground secured base, among all the other things sequestered there, Dr. Stoll envisions flying discs (8).

So, the Nazis were interested in Tibet, possibly as a storehouse of ancient knowledge awaiting re-discovery through the efforts of the Ahnenerbe. We have evidence in the monks that people in some numbers were brought out of Tibet. It would have been almost impossible to smuggle them through India as Dr. Farrell points out. Dr. Stoll believes German underground base(s) would have been built, and that they would have contained, among other things, flying discs.

German flying discs, even the conventional ones, are credited by all German sources as being able to handle the Himalayas. Engineer Rudolf Lusar, who worked at the German Patent Office, gives a German flying disc the ability to climb, in three minutes, to an altitude of 12,400 meters or over 40,000 feet (9). It could hop over Mt. Everest. Traversing India after that would be no problem, since in the immediate post-war years the British had no real air defenses set up in India. So, if there were evidence for relatively large, man-made flying discs in operation at that time in this part of the world, would that not be compelling evidence for a German base in Tibet, one of the most out of the way places on planet earth to hide things" Is there such evidence" There is.

The evidence for a very large, obviously man-made flying disc comes from the British UFO Magazine (10). The article is entitled *Incident at Karachi*. This incident took place on March 23, 1955, almost ten years after World War Two had ended. Pakistan had separated from India in August 1947 when the two countries gained self-rule from Great Britain. Karachi is located on the plains of Pakistan, just south of the mountainous region leading up ultimately to Tibet. During and even after the war, this whole region south of Tibet remained within the British sphere of military influence. The Japanese had been defeated, the Americans had no presence here, nor did the Soviets, and the Chinese, the Indians and/or the Pakistanis had no capacity to build original high-tech flying craft at this time.

The disc was observed by thousands of people, mostly Pakistanis but also some British in the area, including one crew of military personnel coming back from their station in Singapore via flights and stopovers in Bangkok to Calcutta. The disc was first observed by these men at 3,000 ft, while aboard a DC-9 attempting to land at Karachi airport.

The teller of this tale is Mr. Frank J. Parker, who in the late 1990s was living in Hyde, Chesire, England. Mr. Parker, twenty years old at the time, was on-board the DC-9 in question and so first observed the flying saucer after some excited talk in the passenger cabin. Because the passengers from one side of the aircraft were standing up and moving to the other side of the aircraft, the captain ordered all the passengers back to their seats to avoid imbalance of the aircraft. Well, I have flown on a DC-6. It was a large, four-engine passenger aircraft. If it was in danger of becoming imbalanced, there were certainly many individuals moving from one side to the other observing this flying craft, and so it must have caused great excitement.

Upon landing, the militarymen boarded a bus for the 16 or 17-mile drive to Karachi. They could still see the flying saucer, stationary and suspended over the city. At first, according to Parker, from the air it looked like an orange ball, but took on a disc shape as they drew nearer to it. As they continued on toward it, Parker estimated that it was 300-400 feet in the air. The bus turned a corner on to “the parade grounds” where Parker describes the sight that met his eyes as “incredible?. Thousands of people, mostly Pakistanis, were amassed on the parade grounds, and above them, as if suspended, was the flying disc. Many of the Pakistanis knelt on the ground, hands clasped as though they were praying. Parker and some companions exited the bus and began moving through the crowd towards the spot over which the flying disc hung. Nobody was afraid or upset, according to Parker, and so the British party was able to move through the kneeling crowd without taking their eyes off the flying disc. They came to a halt directly below the still-suspended disc, now only about 60 yards above them.

Parker describes the scene:

> *“This had to have been at least 150 ft across and two-to-three stories high?by that I mean about 75 ft, it was incredible.”*

He goes on:

> *“Because it was hovering about 125 ft off the ground, we could see every detail. This was a “nuts and bolts” spacecraft that looked man-made, because we could see what I could only describe as rivets, only perfectly aligned.”*

In this assessment, we can certainly rely on Parker’s judgment, since his job in the military was working on aircraft. He worked in the equipment section, and in Singapore had supplied aircraft parts to squadrons of British high-tech aircraft of the day, including the Vampire Jet. Mr. Parker continues his appraisal of this man-made flying saucer:

> *“I suppose because of its shape you could say it was a traditional “flying saucer?, like two bronze cymbals, one on top of the other. It was magnificent, made up entirely of this metallic bronze-colored metal that applied to the catwalks, ladders, portholes and aerials.*

> *These were all fixed to the exterior of the craft. At the underside, we saw a big black hole, which interested me because whatever was holding this thing up had to come from there. Well, we saw what looked like fans and I counted eight rotors, but every few seconds there would be a "whooshing" sound and that created sparks and an array of laser-like effects."*

With catwalks, ladders, portholes, aerials, and rotors generating a downdraft, this craft was definitely not interstellar. Please keep the "rotors" in mind and the following details when we return to discuss this craft's exact engine. Parker continues discussing the "whooshing" sound:

> *"Whenever this occurred, the entire craft would swing to the left and right and then come back again. This happened so many times that I believed whoever was behind the controls was experiencing engine problems" Every now and again, the craft ejected smoke towards the ground, and this gave off a strong smell of oil, but here's another curious thing -this stuff actually never reached the ground -rather it just seemed to evaporate" The craft made a constant noise not dissimilar to jet-engine propulsion, but nothing like as loud. This and the noise of the rotors would sometimes sound rough, as though they were faltering occasionally. Anyway, every now and again, it would force hot air downwards and this had the effect of blowing dust and pieces of paper all over the place."*

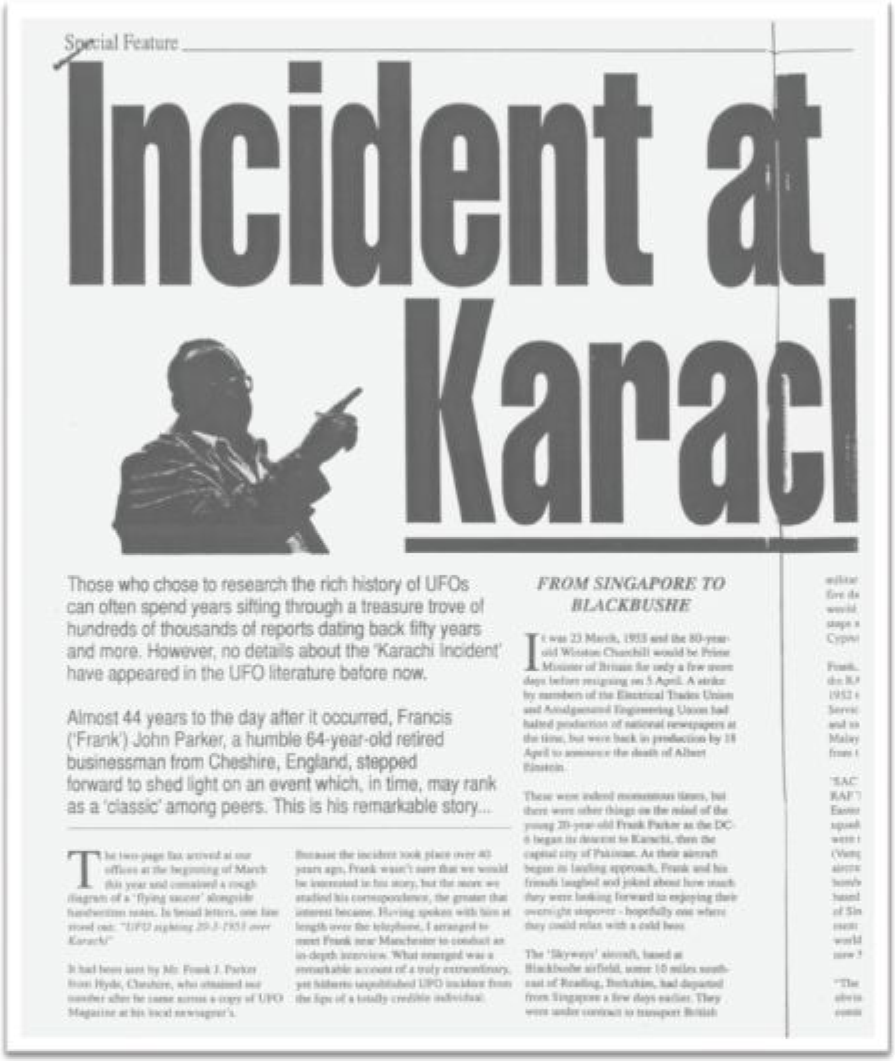

Special Feature

Incident at Karac

Those who chose to research the rich history of UFOs can often spend years sifting through a treasure trove of hundreds of thousands of reports dating back fifty years and more. However, no details about the 'Karachi Incident' have appeared in the UFO literature before now.

Almost 44 years to the day after it occurred, Francis ('Frank') John Parker, a humble 64-year-old retired businessman from Cheshire, England, stepped forward to shed light on an event which, in time, may rank as a 'classic' among peers. This is his remarkable story...

FROM SINGAPORE TO BLACKBUSHE

Incident at Karachi A first-hand account published in Flying Saucer Magazine

No cameras were carried by the British servicemen, and they were not allowed to be in uniform due to this politics of these emerging states.

Let’s review. The flying saucer had portholes, ladders, catwalks and aerials. The witness could see rotors and could feel a downdraft. An open hole or space on the underside was observed. He could smell oil and hear engine sounds that he really could not identify other than to say they brought to his mind jet engines but they were not as loud and so were not those of a jet engine.

Overall, this description is that of a German flying disc. Dr. Richard Miethe’s legend includes multiple-rotor craft and Joseph Andreas Epp featured this design. The presence of portholes, catwalks, aerials, and a thrust exhaust opening on the underside with oily smelling air being forced downward argues *against* this craft being anything designed to fly in outer space and *for* a rather unsophisticated man-made saucer. It was obviously not British?otherwise Mr. Parker would have either known about it or been told not to report it. Other powers capable of building such craft were absent in the Indo-Pakistani area at this time. The only reasonable explanation is that it was a German flying disc, whose purpose had been to fly over the Himalayas or the other surrounding mountain ranges and land in Tibet, a country without facilities for landing conventional aircraft. Mr. Parker and his cohorts had seen this saucer either going or coming at a particular moment of engine trouble.

This brings us to the engine. What kind of engine would this be” It is not a jet engine. It is apparently a diesel engine or uses diesel oil for fuel, hence the smell. But diesel engines are not normally thought of as aircraft engines because of their increased weight. If an engine could be found which meets the description above *and* is capable of powering a flying disc, it would go a long way toward showing not only that this event could have occurred exactly as described, but also, by extension, that the saucer itself originated or was destined to service a base which is yet undisclosed.

There was such an engine. I did not set out to find it in order to fit the saucer sighting above; rather, it was discovered through an independent line of inquiry. Eventually, the pieces of this puzzle assemble themselves. The engine is called the Lutz free piston engine. It surfaced in a rather odd British communication on microfilm. What sometimes happens when something is requested using the Freedom of Information Act, especially with the US Air Force, is that you, as the requesting party, are directed to a particular microfilm roll that contains that information. Then you have to go through the roll of microfilm, document by document, until you locate the information for which you are searching. Of course, many times you stumble upon other interesting items, too. The Lutz free piston engine was one of these.

The British document was a June 23, 1945 memo from Air Ministry, A.I.2(g), Whitehall to the Director of Intelligence, Headquarters, U.S.S.T.A.F. (main) (For the attention of Colonel H.D. Sheldon) (USAF microfilm roll A-1007, 1652) This memo concerns an agreement apparently reached between the British and Americans regarding disposition of captured German technology. The memo reiterates the agreement and its British writer introduces two British officers to facilitate this work. It also makes mention of a “Category 1 list” and discrepancies in this list between the British and Americans. It also describes the list that is in reality a wish list for the month of June, 1945, taking into account what was known of German technology to that date. The list names the following items:

1. *Me 163 parts (the Komet rocket interceptor)*
2. *Do 335 (the Dornier push-pull aircraft)*
3. *Jumo 222 (advance propeller driven aero-engine)*
4. *Jumo 004 (jet engine)*
5. *Lutz Free Piston Engine*
6. *BMW 003 (jet engine)*
7. *MK 214 (gun aboard Me 262 jet fighter)*

If the British valued the Lutz piston engine ahead of the BMW 003 jet engine, well, this is something that needed investigation! Then, in that same memo listing the items wanted, the British seem to have admitted they had two such engines that were appropriated at Volkenrode (a research facility near Nordhausen). There must have been some controversy stemming from this action, possibly resulting in this agreement to share technology between the two Western Allies, because the British were now explaining and agreeing to return one engine to the Americans.

This British memo may have been prompted by the results of a recent interrogation and a document reporting it. The document’s stated origin was

Headquarters, United States Strategic Air Forces in Europe, Office of Asst. Chief of Staff A-2, and it was entitled *Technical Intelligence Report No. I-22, Supplement* (on the same roll of microfilm). In this document, the C.I.O.S. (Combined Intelligence Objectives Subcommittee) Target Number 25/71, Dr. O. Lutz, was interrogated regarding his invention of the free piston engine. In that report, the disadvantages of such an engine are commented upon, one of which was:

> *(d.) "Decreasing scavenging efficiency with increasing load."*

What caught my eye was the paragraph describing this problem:

> *"3. Objection (d,) is serious. Dr. Neugebauer of the Junkers factory, Munich, had shown that the charging efficiency, as measured by the ratio of air inspired to power output, dropped to 40% of its no-load value when the lead (delivery pressure) was 5 atmospheres. This fall was inherent in a gas generator where the motor and compressor pistons were fixed in tandem."*

Forget all the verbiage, what is important here are the words "Dr. Neugebauer?. Readers may remember Dr. Franz Neugebauer from my first book (11). Dr. Neugebauer was a Paperclip scientist, brought to the USA to analyze new types of engines as related to their weight and thrust values. This would be important for an atomic-powered flying saucer, and it is believed that this was Dr. Neugebauers forte. Prior to coming to the USA, Dr. Neugebauer was said to have worked on diesel aircraft engines. But the actual

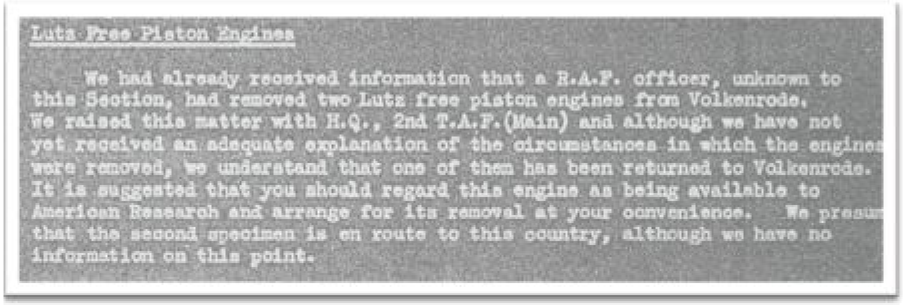

Lutz Free Piston Engines

We had already received information that a R.A.F. officer, unknown to this Section, had removed two Lutz free piston engines from Volkenrode. We raised this matter with H.Q., 2nd T.A.F.(Main) and although we have not yet received an adequate explanation of the circumstances in which the engines were removed, we understand that one of them has been returned to Volkenrode. It is suggested that you should regard this engine as being available to American Research and arrange for its removal at your convenience. We presum that the second specimen is en route to this country, although we have no information on this point.

British Intelligence Document.

This document discusses the apparent misunderstanding or dust-up over the Lutz Free Piston engine.

wording of his Biographical Note in his official USAF Wright Field report (*The Effect of Power Plant Weight on the Economy of Flight*) gives away exactly which engine was involved:

> *“Dr. Franz J. Neugebauer is the foremost German authority on this subject. An expert on internal-combustion engines and a specialist for Diesel compound aircraft engines, he held leading positions at Junkers in Dessau and Munic from 1924 to 1943, and was director of the engineering department of the Institute for Aeronautical Research at Munich from 1943 to 1945.?(12)*

Dr. Neugebauer worked on diesel compound engines. The Lutz free piston engine is a diesel compound engine. Dr. Neugebauer is strongly suspected of using his talents to analyze atomic powered saucers for the USAF and so it is possible if not probable that he did so for the Germans. Prior to atomic power, he is known to have worked on compound diesel engines so it is also probable that they were to be employed for this same type of flying craft. In fact, it is highly probable that Dr. Neugebauer worked on this very engine.

Now, we shall turn, not to the supplement (above) but to the interrogation of Professor O. Lutz himself in a document titled Headquarters United States Strategic Air Forces In Europe, Office of Asst. chief of staff A-2, May 23, 1945, Technical Intelligence Report Number I-22, Interrogation of Prof. O. Lutz with reference to his doughnut motor. This report describes the engine and its history. The idea was to use the engine to compress air was fed with the engine exhaust gas to a turbine. The turbine could then be used to drive a propeller or used strictly for thrust as in a jet engine. There are two types, the linear and the circular. The concept was invented in France by Pescara, tested and improved in Germany by Junkers.

The linear type involves two pistons in one cylinder that come together, compressing the fuel-air mixture and then moving in opposite directions as the compressed fuel-air is detonated. This design eliminates a cylinder head.

The circular or doughnut type of free piston engine was apparently invented by Lutz. Here is a description of this remarkable and strange engine from the report cited above:

> *"4. The Lutz engine has a single liquid-cooled cylinder with the axis a circle, forming a torus. Six pistons of 168mm diameter move in the cylinder at speeds up to 800 rpm., and are connected together in two groups. In the existing engine, three alternate cylinders and their connections were machined from the solid. The two groups of pistons have an intermittent advancing motion superimposed on the mean speed, thus varying the volume between pairs of pistons. During two thirds of a revolution, a piston advances from the intake port in the side of the cylinder, drawing air in. The following piston then advances, compressing the air. Fuel is injected and fired as in a Diesel engine, and the expansion occurs when the leading piston advances again to uncover the exhaust port. The following piston advances on the exhaust stroke and scavenges the cylinder. During the remaining*

> *one-third of the revolution, the leading piston advances past a second intake port, drawing in air for the compressor, which is compressed by the following piston to approximately 4 atmospheres. The compressed air is mixed with the exhaust gas, which is at the same pressure, and the resulting mixture is fed to a gas turbine at a temperature of about 450 degrees C. The cycles described is repeated in the six spaces between cylinders every revolution, but no shaft power is delivered by the engine. The piston motion is obtained from planetary gearing, with cranks on the planet gears operating like a scotch yoke in slots in a disc to which one set of pistons is connected. There are no valves.”*

So, six pistons chase each other around in a circle. But in the last 1/3 of this circle their function is to compress air that is then mixed with the exhaust gas and ejected. This diesel engine is really a two-stroke power delivery system using another two strokes to compress air. Depending on the output required, such cylinder rings could be stacked on top of one another in a column-like arrangement.

Other facts mentioned in this report are that ahead of the air intake valve was a supercharger and a GM1 device. During this time period the word ’supercharger” could also mean “turbocharger?, with the difference being the first compresses air mechanically, using the engine itself as source of power, while the second compresses the air using the heat energy of the exhaust gases. For our purposes, it does not matter which was used. The nature of the GM1 device will be discussed later.

During this time period the word ’supercharger” could also mean “turbocharger?, with the difference being the first compresses air mechanically, using the engine itself as source of power, while the second compresses the air using the heat energy of the exhaust gases. For our purposes, it does not matter which was used. The nature of the GM1 device will be discussed later.

A request was made of the Engine Holdings of the National Air and Space Museum, 7th and Independence Ave, SW, Washington, D.C. 20560 that responded in part with their own summary of this engine as well as some diagrams and photographs of the engine itself. They provide some history, saying that it was invented in 1923 by Dr. Otto Lutz of the Goering Aeronautical Research Establishment in Braunschweig-Volkenrode (where we learned earlier that two examples were recovered by the British). They also go on to describe the intended application of this design:

> *Known as either a swing-or free-piston design, this unit was interned primarily as a combined high pressure compressor or gas generator for relatively high power gas turbine aircraft engines. These engines were intended for long-range transport aircraft, not requiring particularly high speed. The principal advantages of the swing-piston unit were greatly improved fuel economy, use of Diesel Fuel, and a compact design."*

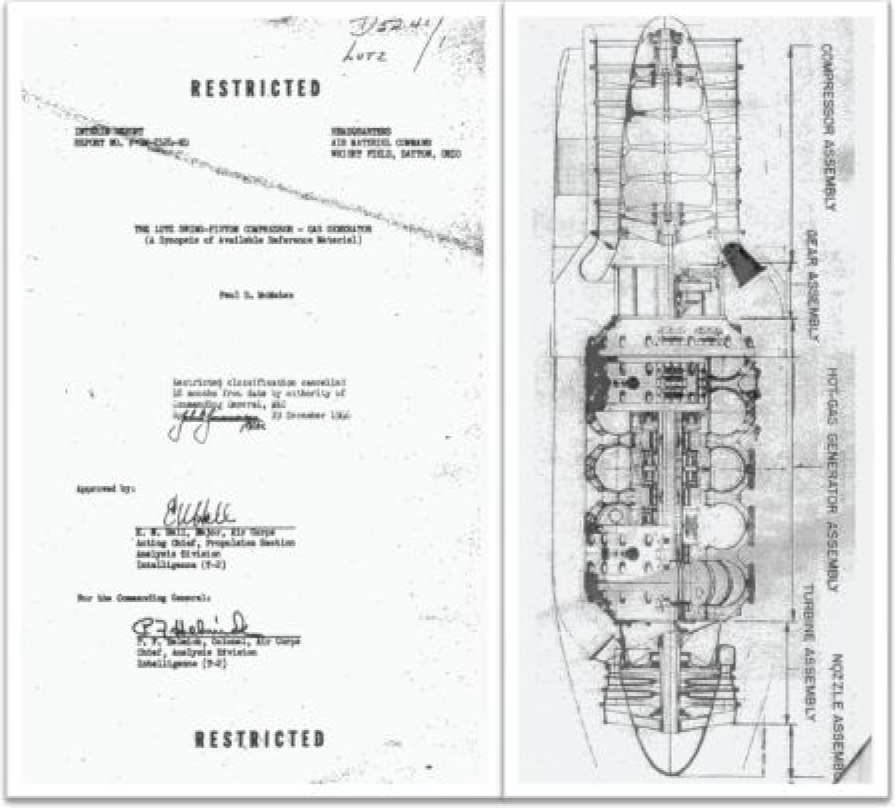

Lutz

RESTRICTED

HEADQUARTERS
AIR MATERIEL COMMAND
WRIGHT FIELD, DAYTON, OHIO

THE LUTZ SWING-PISTON COMPRESSOR - GAS GENERATOR
(A Synopsis of Available Reference Material)

Approved by:

Intelligence (T-2)

For the Commanding General:

Intelligence (T-2)

RESTRICTED

COMPRESSOR ASSEMBLY
GEAR ASSEMBLY
HOT-GAS GENERATOR ASSEMBLY
TURBINE ASSEMBLY
NOZZLE ASSEMBLY

A British Intelligence Document detailing the importance of the Lutz engine.

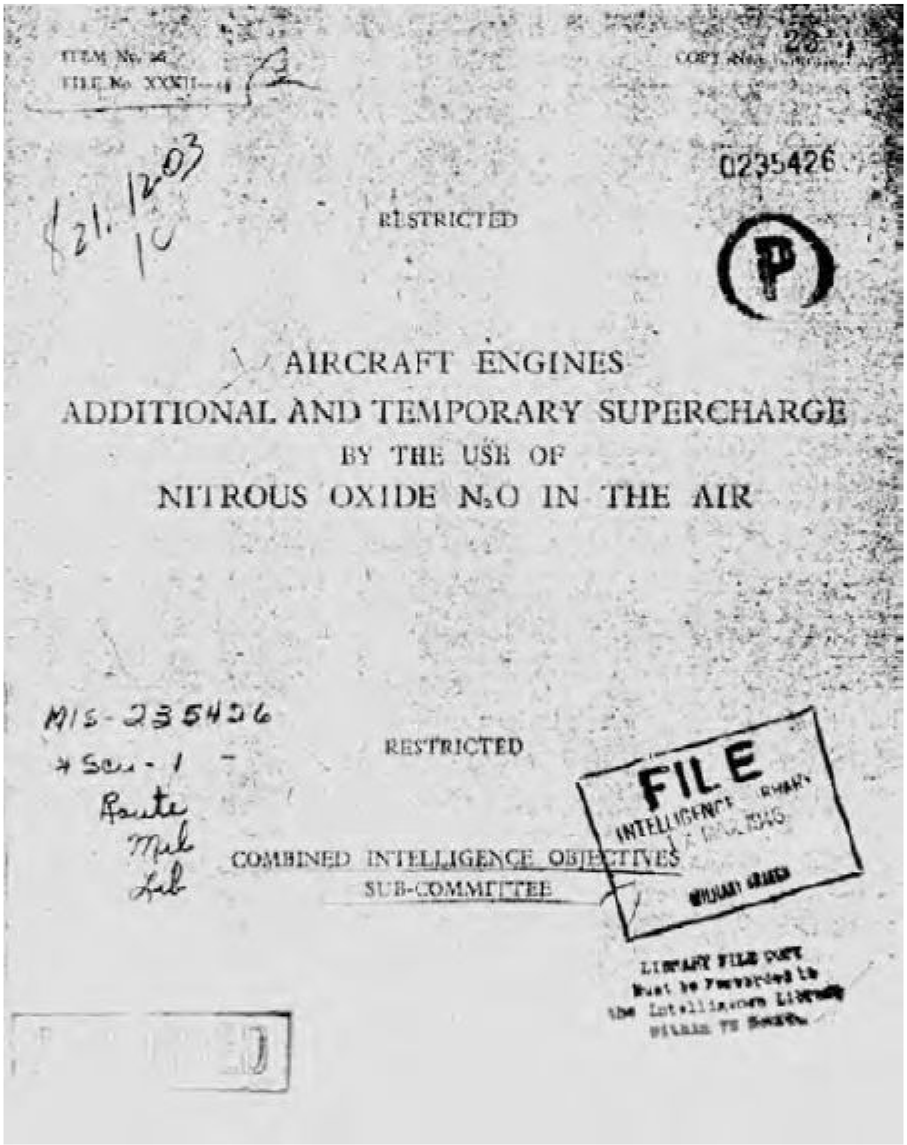

ITEM No.
FILE No. XXXII—
COPY No. 26

0235426

RESTRICTED

AIRCRAFT ENGINES
ADDITIONAL AND TEMPORARY SUPERCHARGE
BY THE USE OF
NITROUS OXIDE N_2O IN THE AIR

MIS-235426
#Sec-1
Route
Mat
Lab

RESTRICTED

COMBINED INTELLIGENCE OBJECTIVES
SUB-COMMITTEE

FILE
INTELLIGENCE

LIBRARY FILE COPY

Intelligence Article on Nitrous Oxide Injection

This engine, as stated with only one torus and six pistons, according to the above stated report, was rated at 400 horsepower at 800 rmps.

> *“Known as either a swing-or free-piston design, this unit was interned primarily as a combined high pressure compressor or gas generator for relatively high power gas turbine aircraft engines. These engines were intended for long-range transport aircraft, not requiring particularly high speed. The principal advantages of the swing-piston unit were greatly improved fuel economy, use of Diesel Fuel, and a compact design.”*

Now we turn to an American report dated May 12, 1945, titled Headquarters United States Strategic Air Forces In Europe Office of Asst. Chief of staff A-2, Technical Intelligence Report I-5 by Frank L. Wattendorf, AAF Scientific Advisor, describing the two captured engines at Volkenrode in some detail. This is interesting since the war had ended only three days before and Americans already had both engines in hand. Evidently, the British then appropriated the engines somehow, causing a minor dust-up, and formalization of an agreement. The British then must needs explain the incident and return one engine. This report reinforces the low fuel consumption of this engine and states that the highest temperature of the exhausting gases is only 1100 degrees Fahrenheit “which means that uncooled turbine blades may be utilized.” What this really means is that no special super-metals such as titanium needed to be used in the turbine blades, making this engine much cheaper and easier to build than contemporary jet engines.

So what do we have in the final analysis” We have an engine capable of turning the slow, carrying blades of the most unsophisticated of the German flying discs. In addition, exhaust gases could be vented to cause a jet effect, propelling the craft horizontally. Of course, we can imagine an afterburner being added. The engine itself was suitable for long distance flight because of its low fuel consumption. It was supercharged, giving it a capacity at high altitude. In addition and for short bursts of power at high altitude, a nitrous oxide injection system was provided. The engine was modular and could be ramped up to almost any size required. It ran on diesel fuel and so gave off a diesel exhaust. A flying disc that could land anywhere fits the evidence for Tibet, which had no landing strips yet was in communication with Nazi Germany. It fits all the parameters of the sighting by Frank Parker in 1955 and was in the correct part of the world to service Tibet as a repository site.

What is even more significant to the Nazi post-war world is the fact that many sightings of flying discs called ’smoky saucers” occurred in South America in the immediate post war years that fit exactly this description. Their constraints would have been the same, mountains, jungle, long distances and no landing strips. It must be obvious that this type of Lutz free-piston engine was in operation almost worldwide in areas where this type of flying disc was in need.

From Tibet we will now turn to Germany’s neighbor, Switzerland as a place where the Nazis would store things of value. Actually, due to the proximity, secrecy, and neutrality of Switzerland, this would almost be a no-brainer for anyone seeking to hide valuables at that time and place providing a deal could be worked out with the Swiss. We have already reviewed the testimony of Siegfried Hepner in an earlier chapter who saw a Dornier Do 635 fleeing into Switzerland on the very last day of the war so what we shall do is to review other accounts that might lead to the same conclusion.

As an aside in discussing Switzerland, a bit of review is in order. In my first book, Hitler’s Flying Saucers, the Methernita Society’s Testatika generator was discussed on pages 169 to 171 with accompanying diagram. This electric generator has been featured in several video films. The device is started by spinning it by hand?the two Whimhurst electrostatic wheels are spun in opposite directions. The device self-corrects to an optimum speed of between 50-60 revolutions per second that is maintained by the

machine itself, indefinitely. Paul Baumann is the “technician” almost solely responsible for this device’s creation and understanding. The device remains behind closed walls but has been shown to interested specialists. No fraud has ever been detected by those specialists. The Methernita

Society, a brotherhood of Christians, has built several of these devices in varying sizes and outputs for their own use. It is my suspicion that this knowledge came to the Swiss Methernita Society as a result of The Second World War and the need to both preserve secret knowledge gained by the Nazis and the need for certain individuals to seek political shelter outside of Germany.

Lutz Free Piston Engine – Pictures and Diagrams

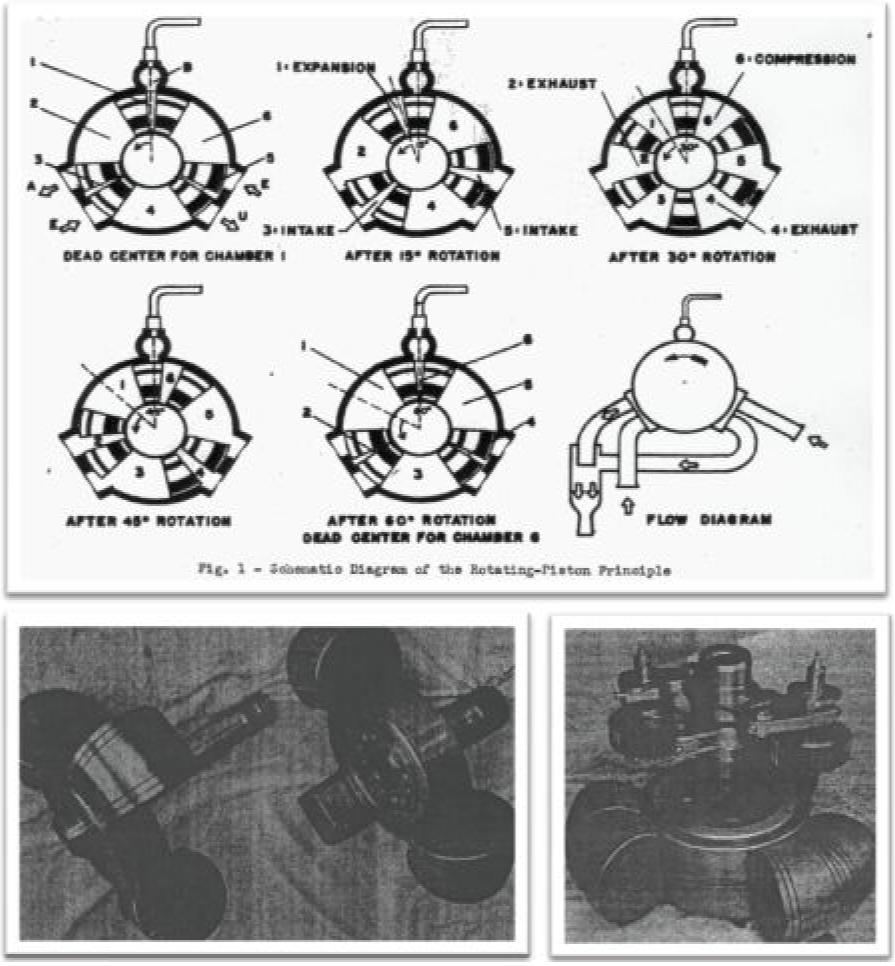
DEAD CENTER FOR CHAMBER I
1·EXPANSION
3·INTAKE
5·INTAKE
AFTER 15° ROTATION
2·EXHAUST
6·COMPRESSION
4·EXHAUST
AFTER 30° ROTATION
AFTER 45° ROTATION
AFTER 60° ROTATION
DEAD CENTER FOR CHAMBER 6
FLOW DIAGRAM

Fig. 1 – Schematic Diagram of the Rotating-Piston Principle

Discussion of Switzerland as a repository goes way back in time in August, 1952 and again with “Claude Schweikhart” in the magazine article which translates to: “Concerning the Crown and Pinnacle of the World?. Incidentally, below the title the author, Mr. Schweikhart lists his locus as

“Basel” (Switzerland), so he ought to know something of which he is talking.

This is the article that informs us that the SS has been investigated by Louis Emrich and his team. Specifically he means the relationship of the SS to Tibet as that is really the topic of the article but Schweikhart also mentions underground facilities the SS used for occult and alchemical work as well as for military purposes as being located between Schwaben and Bavaria. On the next page Schweikhart says that these underground military facilities have gone undetected to this time and that they extended from the Austrian alpine region and into Switzerland (16).

Dr. Axel Stoll reviews important UFO sightings and their meaning and so takes a look at the case of Eduard “Billy” Meier, a Swiss man. Meier produced probably the best, most clear and detailed UFO pictures ever in the late 1980s. Legend says that “Billy” first saw a UFO in 1942 along with his father but either believed or was told that this UFO was the product of the Germans of the 3rd Reich.

Much later Meier saw a UFO close-up as well as a UFO crewmember, a female named ’semjase?. Semjase was described as a beautiful, petite, blond woman. Dr. Stoll is not buying this as he points out that this alleged extraterrestrial spoke perfect German to Meier. There followed a long series of sightings and clear pictures over a period of several years. Meier was given a rational for this interaction but it seems thin to many observes. Why would extraterrestials come all the way to earth only to single out an isolated, obscure, Swiss farmer for enlightenment” To Dr. Stoll the situation seems clear enough. The saucers Meier photographed were further developments of the “Haunebu” type of craft the Germans invented (17). The Haunebu is the name given to some larger field propulsion craft by some.

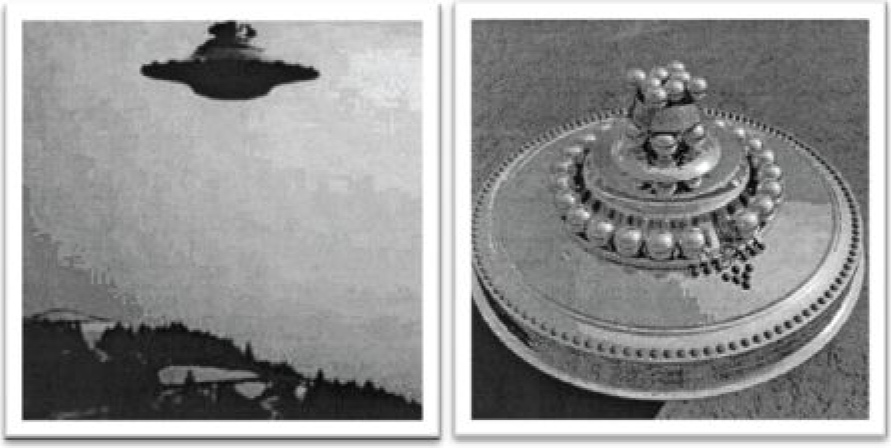

Billy Meirer Beamship

An alleged photograph and model showing the great number of spheres which could be likened to the Schappeller device or the Bell.

Taken as evidence neither of these situations is too convincing. First is an old semi-occult article by a guy who we know uses other names. The second concerns a UFO guy who has been involved in an ongoing UFO controversy, being alternatively debunked and defended for over twenty years now. But the news article that is coming is easily one of the strangest, most convoluted articles ever written by a real news agency.

For me it started with a reference by Michael Bar-Zohar. Bar-Zohar writes in the spirit of the “Nazi Hunter” genre although his book is titled “The Hunt for the German Scientists?. He makes two references to “death rays” which is a catch-all term which was used before the words “laser” and “particle beam” became a part of our language. His first reference is unique and so elevates Bar-Zohar to the status of a ’source” even though he gives few details nor cites a reference.

> *“There was also a vague report on the mysterious Zimmermann?the man believed to have invented the “death ray” and even to have used it effectively against the Russians in the Carpathians on 30 August 1944. The report said that he had been captured and taken to Russia just before the end of the war.” (18)*

Having gotten my attention, Bar-Zohar concludes his book by saying that:

> *“At the present time scientists are living in comparative peace; except for a few underdeveloped countries which play at being sorcerer’s apprentices with a few “brains” that they pay well but surround with barbed wire, men of science can consider themselves as enjoying a temporary freedom.?(19)*

Evidently, Mr. Bar-Zohar lived on an alternative planet in 1967 or thinks that if German scientists didn?t invent it, it was surely not an implement of war. But then he says something significant:

> *“But this does not prevent some of them from dabbling in preparations for war” like Dr. Hans Ehrhardt who was expelled from Switzerland for having experimented with a mysterious green death ray, and the unlucky English scientist who died from the microbes he was carefully cultivating for bacteriological warfare.” (20)*

Forget the “English scientist” reference, I wanted to know who Dr. Hans Ehrhardt was and all about his green death ray. So, I did F.O.I.A. requests of the usual suspects and got absolutely nothing. Later when requested (F.O.I.A.) a list of Paperclip scientists, there was no Hans

Ehrhardt on that list. This Bar-Zohar reference was a dead end?or so I thought.

Last year I was contacted by Mr. C. P., a Swiss researcher who specialized in Karl Schappeller. He had tremendous Internet search ability and came up with all kinds of elusive references. One reference that did mention Schappeller was titled ’schnee geschmoltzen” (melted snow). It was just a title on a page so I asked Mr. C. P. what in the world melted snow had to do with Schappeller” He sent me the entire article. It came from the German publication, *Der Spiegel*, and dated July 24, 1963. Der Spiegel is just about as solid a news magazine as exists. I read the article, thought about it, re-read it, with the result that the more I read and thought about its contents, the more impressed I was. The article is reproduced here in English. I am sorry but this particular article was difficult for me to translate for some reason so please forgive the rough treatment. It appears in the section of the magazine dealing with news outside Germany (Ausland).

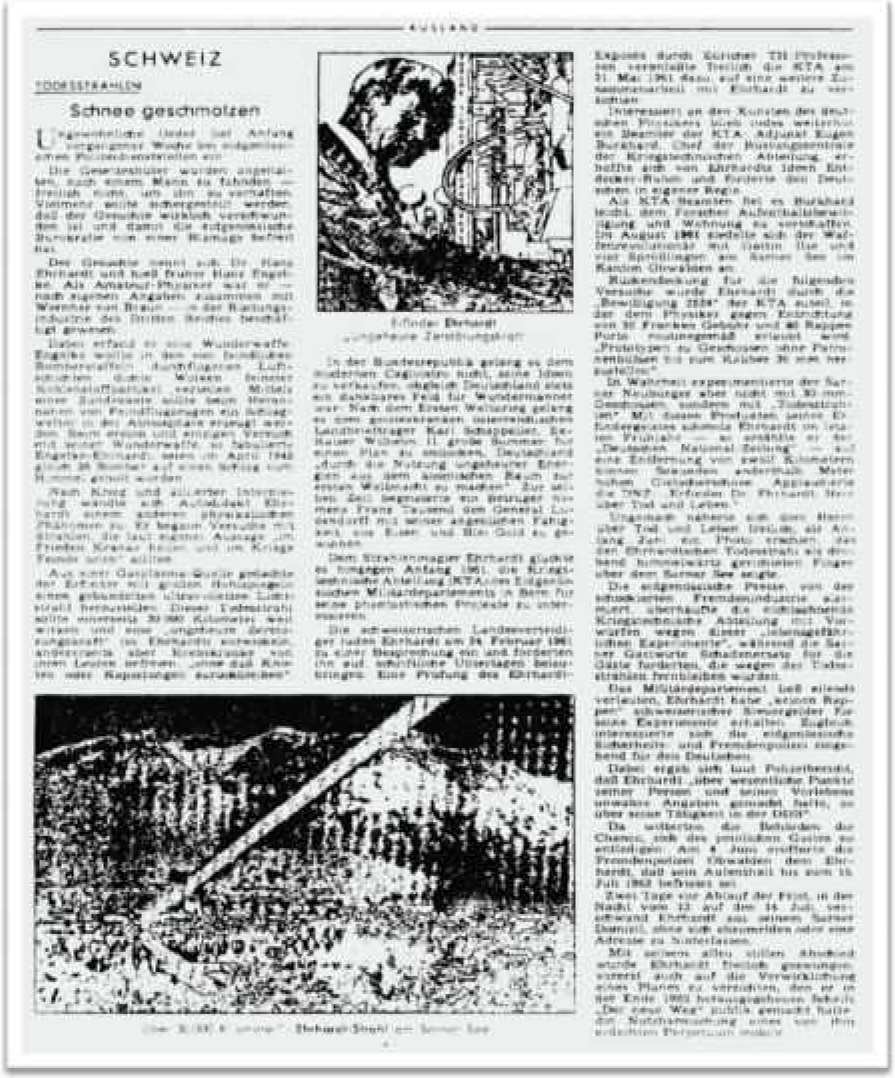

SCHWEIZ

TODESSTRAHLEN

Schnee geschmolzen

Melted Snow article (cover)

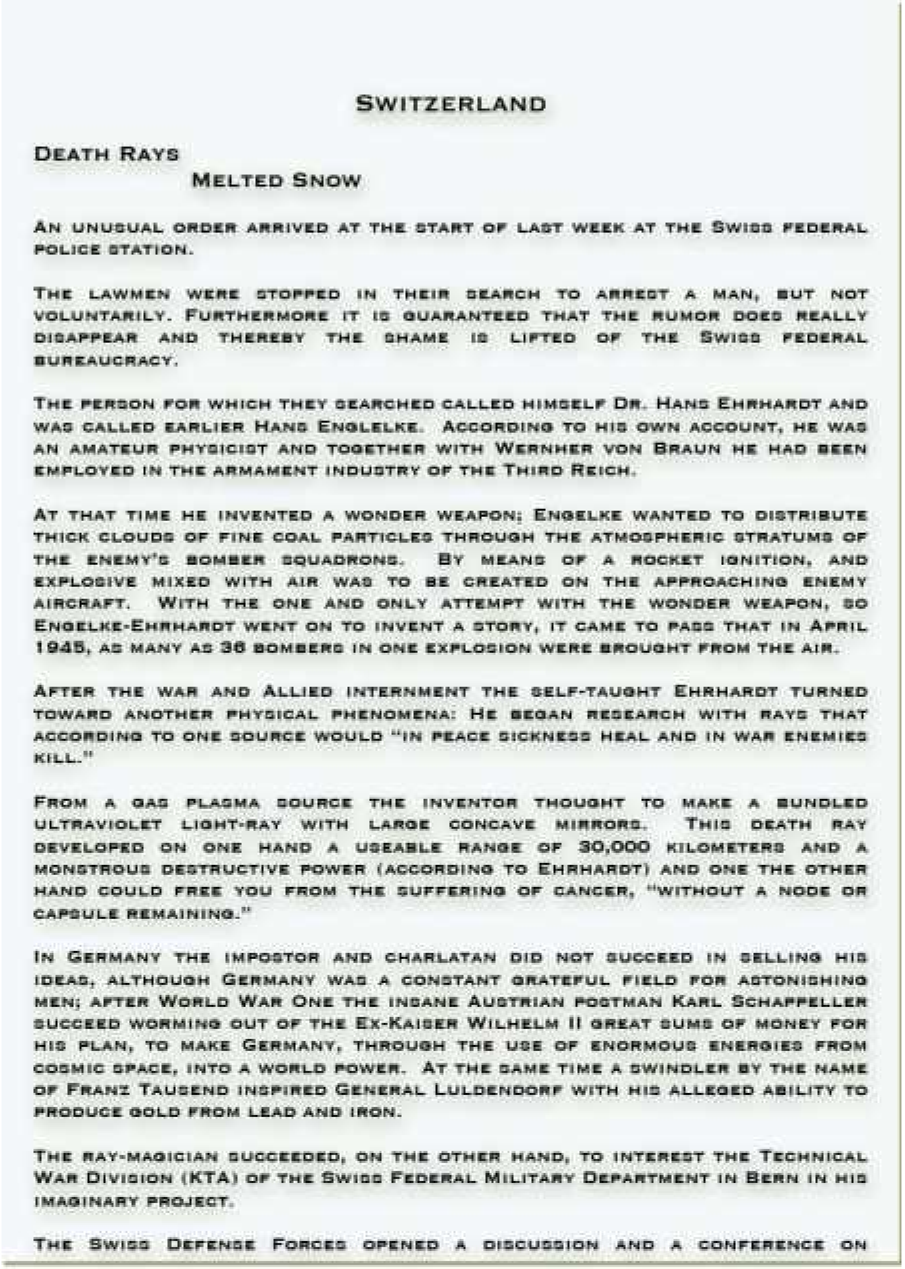

SWITZERLAND

Death Rays

Melted Snow

An unusual order arrived at the start of last week at the Swiss federal police station.

The lawmen were stopped in their search to arrest a man, but not voluntarily. Furthermore it is guaranteed that the rumor does really disappear and thereby the shame is lifted of the Swiss federal bureaucracy.

The person for which they searched called himself Dr. Hans Ehrhardt and was called earlier Hans Englelke. According to his own account, he was an amateur physicist and together with Wernher von Braun he had been employed in the armament industry of the Third Reich.

At that time he invented a wonder weapon; Engelke wanted to distribute thick clouds of fine coal particles through the atmospheric stratums of the enemy's bomber squadrons. By means of a rocket ignition, and explosive mixed with air was to be created on the approaching enemy aircraft. With the one and only attempt with the wonder weapon, so Engelke-Ehrhardt went on to invent a story, it came to pass that in April 1945, as many as 36 bombers in one explosion were brought from the air.

After the war and Allied internment the self-taught Ehrhardt turned toward another physical phenomena: He began research with rays that according to one source would "in peace sickness heal and in war enemies kill."

From a gas plasma source the inventor thought to make a bundled ultraviolet light-ray with large concave mirrors. This death ray developed on one hand a useable range of 30,000 kilometers and a monstrous destructive power (according to Ehrhardt) and one the other hand could free you from the suffering of cancer, "without a node or capsule remaining."

In Germany the impostor and charlatan did not succeed in selling his ideas, although Germany was a constant grateful field for astonishing men; after World War One the insane Austrian postman Karl Schappeller succeed worming out of the Ex-Kaiser Wilhelm II great sums of money for his plan, to make Germany, through the use of enormous energies from cosmic space, into a world power. At the same time a swindler by the name of Franz Tausend inspired General Luldendorf with his alleged ability to produce gold from lead and iron.

The ray-magician succeeded, on the other hand, to interest the Technical War Division (KTA) of the Swiss Federal Military Department in Bern in his imaginary project.

The Swiss Defense Forces opened a discussion and a conference on

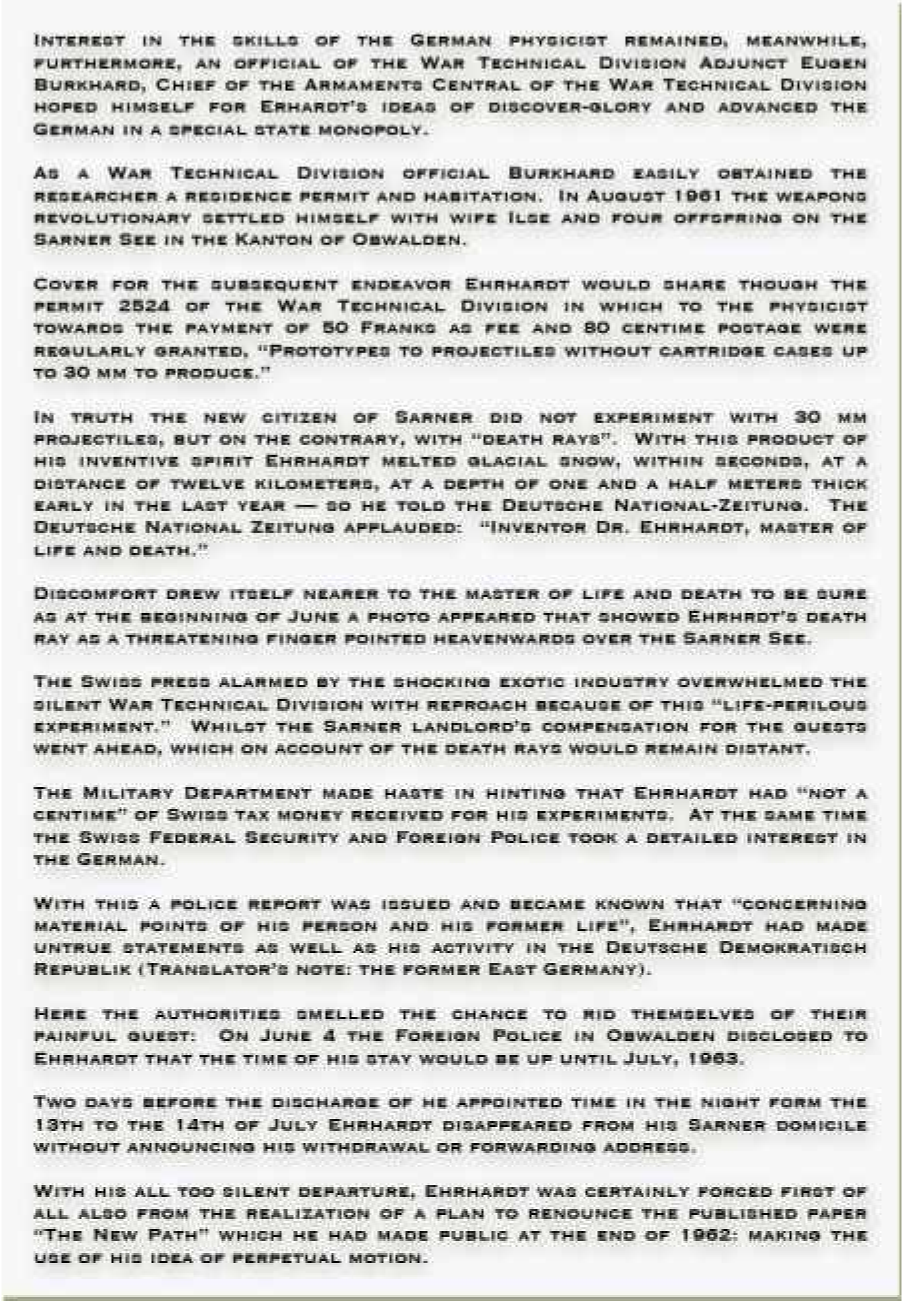

Interest in the skills of the German physicist remained, meanwhile, furthermore, an official of the War Technical Division Adjunct Eugen Burkhard, Chief of the Armaments Central of the War Technical Division hoped himself for Erhardt's ideas of discover-glory and advanced the German in a special state monopoly.

As a War Technical Division official Burkhard easily obtained the researcher a residence permit and habitation. In August 1961 the weapons revolutionary settled himself with wife Ilse and four offspring on the Sarner See in the Kanton of Obwalden.

Cover for the subsequent endeavor Ehrhardt would share though the permit 2524 of the War Technical Division in which to the physicist towards the payment of 50 Franks as fee and 80 centime postage were regularly granted, "Prototypes to projectiles without cartridge cases up to 30 mm to produce."

In truth the new citizen of Sarner did not experiment with 30 mm projectiles, but on the contrary, with "death rays". With this product of his inventive spirit Ehrhardt melted glacial snow, within seconds, at a distance of twelve kilometers, at a depth of one and a half meters thick early in the last year — so he told the Deutsche National-Zeitung. The Deutsche National Zeitung applauded: "Inventor Dr. Ehrhardt, master of life and death."

Discomfort drew itself nearer to the master of life and death to be sure as at the beginning of June a photo appeared that showed Ehrhdt's death ray as a threatening finger pointed heavenwards over the Sarner See.

The Swiss press alarmed by the shocking exotic industry overwhelmed the silent War Technical Division with reproach because of this "life-perilous experiment." Whilst the Sarner landlord's compensation for the guests went ahead, which on account of the death rays would remain distant.

The Military Department made haste in hinting that Ehrhardt had "not a centime" of Swiss tax money received for his experiments. At the same time the Swiss Federal Security and Foreign Police took a detailed interest in the German.

With this a police report was issued and became known that "concerning material points of his person and his former life", Ehrhardt had made untrue statements as well as his activity in the Deutsche Demokratisch Republik (Translator's note: the former East Germany).

Here the authorities smelled the chance to rid themselves of their painful guest: On June 4 the Foreign Police in Obwalden disclosed to Ehrhardt that the time of his stay would be up until July, 1963.

Two days before the discharge of he appointed time in the night form the 13th to the 14th of July Ehrhardt disappeared from his Sarner domicile without announcing his withdrawal or forwarding address.

With his all too silent departure, Ehrhardt was certainly forced first of all also from the realization of a plan to renounce the published paper "The New Path" which he had made public at the end of 1962: making the use of his idea of perpetual motion.

So there we have the story. A German conman, at best an "amateur scientist?, had unsuccessfully tried to fleece the Swiss military by pitching a death ray of his own design. Through the Swiss government's cooperation with *Der Spiegel* the story has been exposed to the public. The story ends and everyone lives happily ever after, right"

Wait a minute. Maybe in 1963 this story flew but the public is now much older and wiser in what a government advances through the press. In retrospect there are quite a few questions here that went unaddressed and unanswered. We are going to go through this story point by point and see if we can cut through the cover-up and get to the truth.

Ehrhardt as “amateur scientist” is the first red flag. This amateur scientist is alleged to have worked with Dr. Wernher von Braun and the Nazi government. The Nazis would not hire amateurs to head their programs anymore than the Swiss government would. In this story this “amateur scientist” is asked by the Swiss Defense Forces to bring proof for the basis of his work with is to be reviewed by professors of the Swiss Technical College. Then the War Technical Division offered this “amateur scientist” a contract developing secret weapons, complete with a built-in cover story. Let’s be consistent. If consistent thought is employed, our amateur scientist would be met by an amateur committee of amateur professors who reviewed his work resulting in an amateur contract for amateur secret weapons.

What is unquestionably going on here is that “Dr. Hans Erhardt/Hans Engelke” had yet another name, his real name, and it was this real person who was a real scientist who worked for the 3rd Reich. Why he was using a false name is anyone’s guess. He could have been doing so for a variety of reasons. Even after Dr. Ehrhardt left the employment of Switzerland, neither party wanted his real name disclosed.

Next we are told that he, Dr. Ehrhardt, invented the coal dust fuel air bomb. Wow! This was 1963. Until the late 1990s the US government who acquired the services of Dr. Mario Zippermayr, the real inventor of the fuel-air bomb, used a coverstory to hide this weapon from rival powers. They claimed Dr. Zippermayr invented a “vortex cannon?, not a fuel-air bomb. Generations of historians read over each other’s shoulders endlessly repeating this cover story to the delight of the American government. It was only late in the 1990’s that the true facts were declassified and an accounting of Dr. Mario Zippermayr’s true work was made public. I know this for an absolute fact since this writer is the person for whom the US Army declassified and provided the files under a F.O.I.A. request. (21) Nobody knew of the fuel-air bomb unless they had insider information within the 3rd Reich itself or had worked for Dr. Zippermayr.

But Dr. Ehrhardt disclosed something that was only recently known. The fact is that the fuel-air bomb had been tested in combat with success. I know this is fact because writer/researcher Friedrich Georg found an account of this test on microfilm that slipped through the hands of the censors. He published this account in two of his books. (22)

(23) Actually, one book shows the first page of the report while the other book shows us the second page. What will be done here is that they will be re-typed and combined. Then the report can be compared it to the disclosure of *Der Spiegel* based on the testimony of Dr. Ehrhardt.

DECLASSIFIED
Authority NNO750122
By DM HARA Date 4/25/98

SECRET

PW INTELLEGENCE
BULLETIN NO. 2/32

13. Fantasia, German Secret Weapons

Preamble. The following stories are from sources of doubtful reliability and may well be pure products of the imagination. However, in view of the striking similarity between them, they are printed for what they are worth.

First Story

Around 15 Sept 44, CP of 1127 Cron Rogt 559 Inf Div was in REINANGE at GSG3 4416/U1/912797. It was a warm, sunny day with a few scattered clouds and no wind. At about 1600 PW was standing near the church in REINANGE and observed a formation of Allied aircraft pass, flying from SW to NE, low enough to be recognized as four-motored planes. He counted up to 30 planes. They were flying in close formation.

While PW watched them pass by he saw what he believed to be a small fighter plane (grey color, no identification marks) climb and approach the Allied formation from an easterly direction. PW states that the "fighter plane" was flying at an abnormally high speed and that it penetrated into the midst of the formation apparently with being fired at. Suddenly there appeared where the "fighter plane" had been before, a red ball of fire, somewhat larger than the plane itself. A split second later, the ball of fire turned into a rapidly expanding red circle (parallel to the ground). This circle was bluish red at the edge, and as its diameter increased, the interior of the circle became an empty space. As the circle enveloped the planes, they seemed to just disappear. In a matter of seconds the entire formation of Allied planes had disappeared, and the sky was just as it had been before.

PW discussed the incident with several others who had witnessed it, including an Hptm of 1559 of Arty Rogt. This officer (who was subsequently killed) told him that the "fighter plane" in question was a wooden miniature plane with a speed of over 1000 km per hour and which was operated by remote control. The name of the plane is KOMET. The Hptm who told him that he had lived near an airfield where such planes were tested and that he had recognized it at once.

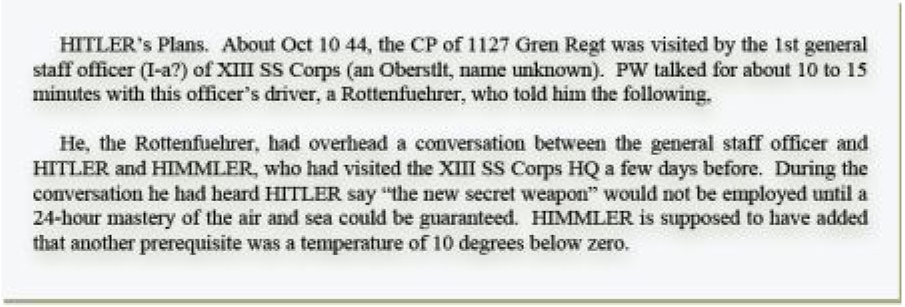

HITLER's Plans. About Oct 10 44, the CP of 1127 Gren Regt was visited by the 1st general staff officer (I-a?) of XIII SS Corps (an Oberstlt, name unknown). PW talked for about 10 to 15 minutes with this officer's driver, a Rottenfuehrer, who told him the following,

He, the Rottenfuehrer, had overhead a conversation between the general staff officer and HITLER and HIMMLER, who had visited the XIII SS Corps HQ a few days before. During the conversation he had heard HITLER say "the new secret weapon" would not be employed until a 24-hour mastery of the air and sea could be guaranteed. HIMMLER is supposed to have added that another prerequisite was a temperature of 10 degrees below zero.

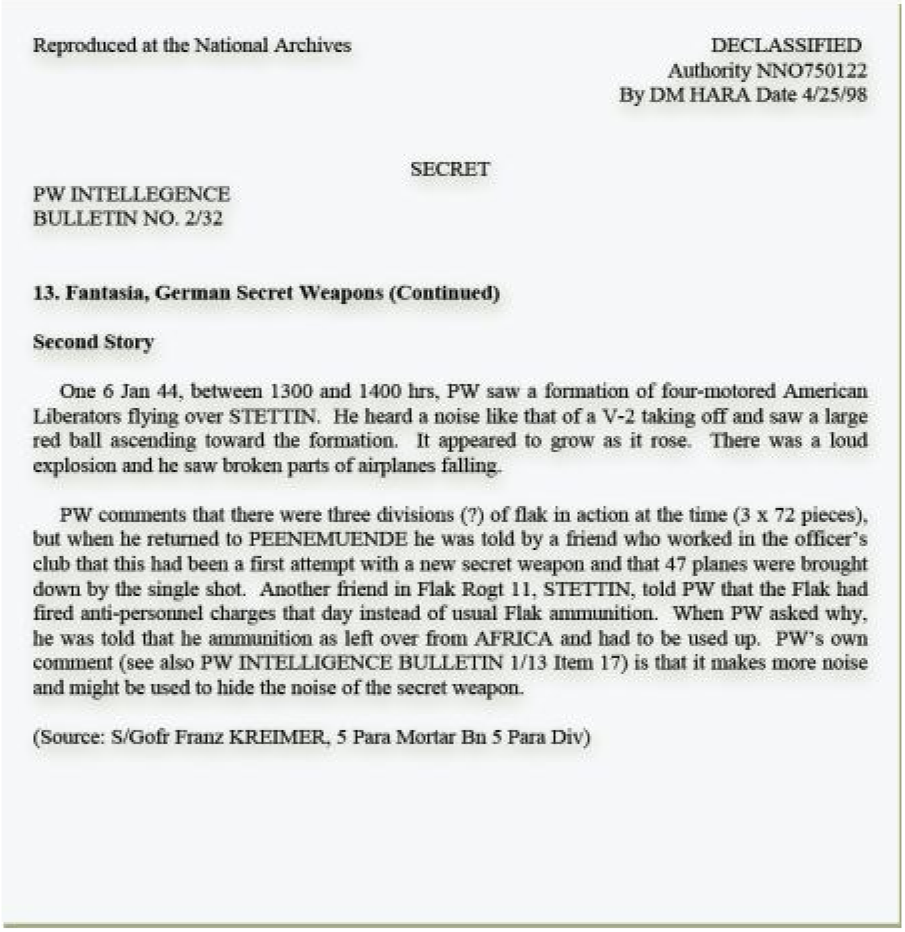

Reproduced at the National Archives

DECLASSIFIED
Authority NNO750122
By DM HARA Date 4/25/98

SECRET

PW INTELLEGENCE
BULLETIN NO. 2/32

13. Fantasia, German Secret Weapons (Continued)

Second Story

One 6 Jan 44, between 1300 and 1400 hrs, PW saw a formation of four-motored American Liberators flying over STETTIN. He heard a noise like that of a V-2 taking off and saw a large red ball ascending toward the formation. It appeared to grow as it rose. There was a loud explosion and he saw broken parts of airplanes falling.

PW comments that there were three divisions (?) of flak in action at the time (3 x 72 pieces), but when he returned to PEENEMUENDE he was told by a friend who worked in the officer's club that this had been a first attempt with a new secret weapon and that 47 planes were brought down by the single shot. Another friend in Flak Rogt 11, STETTIN, told PW that the Flak had fired anti-personnel charges that day instead of usual Flak ammunition. When PW asked why, he was told that he ammunition as left over from AFRICA and had to be used up. PW's own comment (see also PW INTELLIGENCE BULLETIN 1/13 Item 17) is that it makes more noise and might be used to hide the noise of the secret weapon.

(Source: S/Gofr Franz KREIMER, 5 Para Mortar Bn 5 Para Div)

Here we clearly see two attempts at using a fuel-air bomb, one with an Enzian and the other with a Wasserfall rocket. Both types have been mentioned as being vehicles for fuel-air anti-aircraft weapons.

The question remains: *How could have Ehrhardt/Engelke have known about this weapon" Could he have worked with Dr. Mario Zippermayr at*

Tal Station”

Now let us turn to Dr. Ehrhardt’s description of he basis for the death ray. The article says that Dr. Ehrhardt used a gas plasma to generate his “death ray?. Today, the words “death ray” have been replaced by the word “laser?, so this archaic terminology can be dispensed with once and for all. Dr. Ehrhardt was talking about building a laser. Lasers can and are generated using gas plasma. Ultraviolet lasers are generated using argon gas plasma. (24) If we are to believe the *Der Spiegel* report that would have to be done with the assistance of the Swiss military, Dr. Ehrhardt was successful in this to the point of melting snow at a distance of 30 km or over 18 miles. Even half this is a phenomenal distance to have focused a laser in the early 1960’s. If you are old enough you will recall that early laser research employed almost desktop distances. This lack of range was what separated the lasers seen on the TV program *Star Trek* from the reality. It was only with President Ronald Reagan and his Strategic Defense Initiative (’star Wars?) that serious talk of lasers as weapons was discussed.

Laser research in Nazi Germany has been discussed in a previous book (25). Researcher/writer Friedrich Georg discovered some remarkable laser experiments and diagrams on microfilm stemming from the I.G. Farben facility at Ludwigshafen. (26) So, if Dr. Ehrhardt knew this research so well, he must have worked at I.G. Farben, correct” But if so, how would he have known of the fuel-air bomb of Dr. Mario Zippermayr who worked at Tal Station in the Tyrol. Perhaps the solution is Tal Station or Hoch-Tal Station worked on lasers and we still do not know it. Or perhaps Dr. Erhardt worked at some sort of central clearinghouse for tip-top secret German technology such as the Kammler think-tank in Prague/Pilsen. We just do not know.

Finally, we come to the last paragraph in the *Der Spiegel* article, discussing Dr. Ehrhardt’s plans to present a paper titled “The New Path” which discusses his ideas of perpetual motion. This title might indicate some new or revolutionary idea tht Dr. Ehrhardt is presenting. The fact that it would evoke the words and idea of perpetual motion, words and ideas synonymous with scientific heresy, is significant and could only have been supported if facts in the form of a working model had been presented. At this point I just cannot help but think of the coincidence of Ehrhardt's disappearance and the appearance of the Testatika device, in Switzerland, a few years later. The counter rotating wheels of this device simply spin indefinitely, by themselves, once set into motion. A seemingly free energy electric generator would certainly qualify as a new path forward. Could there be any relationship between Dr. Ehrhardt and the Testatika device of the Swiss Methernita Society" We just do not know. Or could there be another device"

One thing is clear, however. The Swiss government picked Dr. Ehrhardt's brain clean regarding the laser technology, probably had a working device, and sequestered this device and technology away in their secure underground facilities. Besides the laser technology, the Swiss undoubtedly debriefed Dr. Ehrhardt on other technologies, including the fuel-air bomb. We just do not know how much information Dr. Ehrhard had stored in this brain. But afterward, when Dr. Ehrhardt had given the Swiss all he knew, a whole variety of reasons were put forth which the Swiss used as grounds to rid themselves of Dr. Ehrhardt. And since Dr. Ehrhardt did not come to the Swiss with clean hands with regard to his true identity or real name, any complaint voiced by Dr. Ehrhardt would simply be minimized by the Swiss as the 'sour grapes" of an impostor.

There can be little doubt that the Swiss know secrets of the 3rd Reich that we can only guess about.

Literature Cited

1. **Schweikhart, Claude, 1952**, *Um Krone und Gipfel der Welt, Mensch & Schicksal*, Edition 6, Number 10, page 4 and 5

2. **Farrell, Joseph P., Ph.D., 2008**, *Nazi International The Nazis" Powtwar Plan to Control Finance, Conflict, Physics and Space*, pages 383 and 384, Adventures Unlimited Publishing, Kempton, Illinois, USA

3. **Stoll, Axel, Ph.D., 2001**, *Hoch-Technolgie im Dritten Reich*, pages 15 and 16, Amun Verlag, Schleusingen, Germany

4. **Stoll, Axel, Ph.D., 1994**, *Vymaanika Shastra* (wissenschaftliche Uebersetzung as dem Amerikanischen, mit zahlreichen Anmerkungen und Hinweeisen des Uebersetzers, viele Abbildungen, 142 Seiten sowie mehrere Anhaenge), Berlin, Germany (privately published and referenced with Dr. Stoll's notes on the book reproduced here for competeness).

5. **Stoll, Axel, Ph.D., 2001**, page 16

6. **Stoll, Axel, Ph.D., 2001**, page 132

7. **Stevens, Henry, 2007**, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science and Technology*, pages 27-29, Adventures Unlimited Publishing, Kempton, Illinois, USA

8. **Stoll, Axel, 2001**, page 132

9. **Lusar, Rudolf, 1964**, *Die deutschen Waffen und Geheimwaffen des 2 Weltkrieges und ihre Weiterentwicklung*, page 220, J.F. Lehmanns Verlag, Munich, Germany

10. **UFO Magazine (British)** date not shown but late 1990s, written by Graham W. Birdsall, pages 4,5,6,7,22,24, UFO Magazine web site: http://www.ufomag.co.uk

11. **Stevens, Henry, 2003**, *Hitler's Flying Saucers A Guide to German Flying Dsics of the Second World War*, pages 108-109, Adventures Unlimited Publishing, Kempton, Illinois, USA

12. **Neugebauer, Franz J., Ph.D., 1946**, *Effect Of Power-Plant Weight On Economy Of Flight* (Project No. NFE-64), page 11, Headquarters Air Material Command Wright Field, Dayton, Ohio, USA

13. **Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee Report No.26**, File No.XXXII-44, Aircraft Engines Additional And Temporary Supercharge By The Use of Niturous Oxide N2O In The Air, March, 1946, G-2 Division, SHAEF (Rear) APO 413

14. **Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee Report No 26**, File No. XXXII-44, page 14

15. **Georg, Friedrich, 2008**, "Unternehmen Patentenraub" 1945 Die Geheim-geschichte des Groessten Technologieraubs aller Zeiten, page 286, Grabert Verlag, Tuebingen, Germany

16. **Mensch und Schicksal, August, 1952**, by Claude Schweikhart, Um Kroen und Gipfel der Welt, pages 4 and 5, 6. Jahrig. / Nr. 10

17. **Stoll, Axel, Ph.D., 2001**, *Hochtechnolgie Im Dritten Reich Reichsdeutsche Entwicklungen und die vermutlich wahre Herkunft der "UFO?*, pages 82, 83, Amun-Verlag, Schleusingen, Germany

18. **Bar-Zohar, Michael, 1967**, *The Hunt For German Scientists*, page 152, Avon Books, New York, USA

19. **Bar-Zohar, Michael, 1967**, page 222

20. ***ibid.***

21. **Stevens, Henry, 2007**, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science and Technology*, pages 103-111

22. **Georg, Friedrich, 2003**, *Hitlers Siegeswaffen Band 2: Star Wars 1947 Teil A: Von der V-1 bis zur A-9: unkonventionelle Kurz-und Mittlelstreckenwaffen*, page 209, Amun-Verlag and Heinrich Jung Verlag, Schleusingen and Zlla-Mehlis (respectively), Germany

23. **Georg, Friedrich, 2004**, *Hitlers Siegeswaffen Band 2: Star Wars 1947 Teilband B: Von der Amerikarakete zur Obitalstation - Deutschlands Streben nach Interkontinentalwaffen und das erste Weltraumprogramm*, page 116, Amun-Verlag and Heinrich Jung - Verlag, Schleusingen and Zella-Mehlis, (respectively), Germany

24. http://www.rp-photonics.com/Ultraviolet_lasers.html This is a site tilted "Encyclopedia of Laser Physics an Technology.

25. **Stevens, Henry, 2007**, pages 198-208

26. **Detailed Interrogation Report, 3/13/45**, “Atom-Smashing Laboratory?, report 6824-Dtc (MIS) M. 1075, US Government microfilm.

POINT 211

Because this subject has been so extensively covered by this time in print and on the internet (for better or worse), our time here would be spent most profitably, not be reviewing what most of you already know about Neuschwabenland, but by discussing new ideas about that base. A brief history of this base and subsequent developments can be found in my first book (1). The very best work on Neuschwabenland can be found in Rainer Daehnhardt's Dos Acores a Antarctida (2) Mr. Daehnhardt is the world's authority on the Ritcher Expedition as he has obtained two copies of the ship Schwabenland's log books and purchased the other two originals at auction. He is Portuguese, of Austrian ancestry, and attended grade school in Germany during the Second World War.

For those of you who have never heard of Wilhelm Landig's Point 211 or Neuschwabenland, a few words here must serve as an introduction. Just before the war in Europe started, Luftwaffe Chief Hermann Goering sponsored a voyage to Antarctica by the research vessel Schwabenland. Actually, this was a small fleet of vessels under the command of Kapitan Alfred Ritscher. The Schwabenland carried two catapult-launched sea planes and with these two aircraft the German dropped metal swastika flags on the ice, staking out their territorial claim to Antarctica which they named Neuschwabenland, New Swabia, in honor of the ship's name which carried them there. Besides staking out this claim, the Ritscher Expedition also explored this area of Antarctica, finding warm water lakes heated by geothermal vents. In fact, the same fault running from the center of Antarctica, bisecting Neuschwabenland, runs all the way through Africa (The Great Rift Valley) and into Western Asia, terminating at the Dead Sea. A mountain range runs along the coast of Antarctica roughly parallel to it but was broken by this fault line making the intersection of the sea the mountain range and the fault line the focus of Neuschwabenland.

During the Second World War the Germans claimed Neuschwabenland as a part of the Greater Reich just as they did Austria or any other territory they occupied at that time. Neuschwabenland appeared on German maps as part of their territory. Rainer Daehnhardt actually saw this on a map of the Greater Reich as a boy and a student in Germany at that time in textbooks (3).

If you look at the position of Neuschwabenland on a world map, it is noticed that it lies just South of Africa on the coast of Antarctica. This is certainly a strategic position given that ships must sail around the tip of Africa going to the Orient if the Suez Canal were ever blocked. Given commerce and communication between the Germans and the Japanese, one sees how important this sea way would be. So, during the Second World War there are rumors of building activity at Neuschwabenland in which the Germans turned this point on the map into a full-blown German military base. Willibald Mattern, living in Chile after the war and being greatly interested in this subject, reports that the Germans even grew vegetables at this base (4). This base would take the form of a naval base and since the German Navy was really a U-boat force, this base would logically take on the characteristics of a U-boat bunker. Additionally, German raiders? warships disguised as merchant vessels?operated in the South Atlantic. Among these were *The Penguin*, *The Thor* and *The Atlantis*, whose captain, before it was sunk, was none other than Captain Johann Fehler who we already met as the Captain of U-234 (5).

So what happened in Antarctica to Neuschwabenland in terms of development and a base there” There are many answers to this question with some of them seeming mutually exclusive. They cannot all be correct. We will take a look at a few of these ideas with some additional thoughts added.

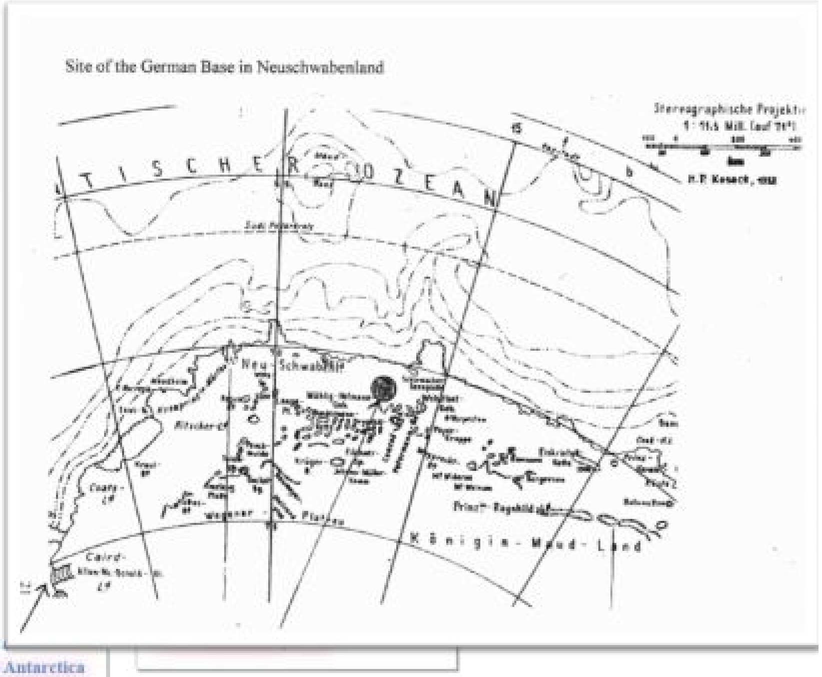
Site of the German Base in Neuschwabenland

Coast of Antarctica

The ideas of Wilhelm Landig can serve as an overview. Wilhelm Landig saw the Ritcher Expedition as a military expedition cloaked as a scientific expedition. Its purpose, he says, was to find a suitable location for an Antarctic station. Starting in 1938, this station was built. After the evacuation of Point 103, aircraft as well as flying discs were relocated to the Antarctic station, which he names Point 211. Some of these flights were non-stop. All the personnel at Point 103 were relocated to Point 211. This must have included ships and U-boats although Landig does not specifically say so. This would also include survivors of the last sea battle with the British, called by Mattern “The Last Battalion?. (6) To protect Point 211, Landig states that German flying discs, which he names “V-7” were employed. Also, Landig names a new weapon the Klystron-EG-Projector. Landig claims the air-burst atomic bombs detonated over Point 211 at the end of the 1950’s were an attempt to knock out both these weapons using an electromagnet pulse. Landig tells us that the reason the Germans left Antarctica was not because they were forced out militarily, but because the germ-free environment of the Antarctic left the Germans there with weakened immunity systems that necessitated a return to an environment more heavily populated with humans. They relocated again to South America. Meanwhile, the United States and “weiteren interessierten

Maechten?, (further interested powers), signed a treaty on December 1, 1959 de-militarizing Antarctica. Landig is implying that one of these powers was the 3rd Power, or SS Nazis and their organization (7). Incidentally, yes, we will return to the subject of klystron tubes.

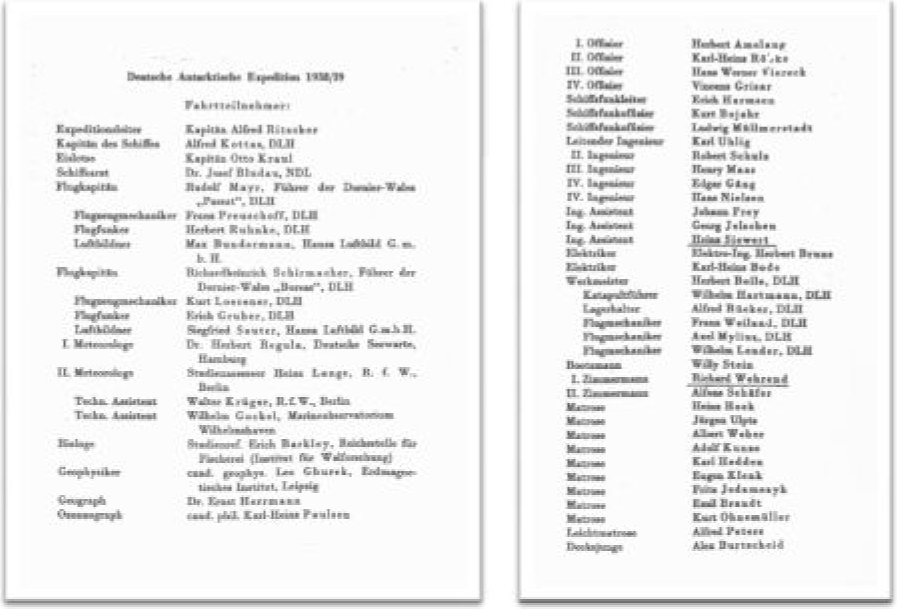

Deutsche Antarktische Expedition 1938/39

Fahrtteilnehmer:

Expeditionsleiter	Kapitän Alfred Ritscher
Kapitän des Schiffes	Alfred Kottas, DLH
Eislotse	Kapitän Otto Kraul
Schiffsarzt	Dr. Josef Bludau, NDL
Flugkapitän	Rudolf Wahr, Führer der Dornier-Wals „Passat", DLH
Flugzeugmechaniker	Franz Preuschoff, DLH
Flugfunker	Herbert Ruhnke, DLH
Luftbildner	Max Bundermann, Hansa Luftbild G.m.b.H.
Flugkapitän	Richardheinrich Schirmacher, Führer der Dornier-Wals „Boreas", DLH
Flugzeugmechaniker	Kurt Loesener, DLH
Flugfunker	Erich Gruber, DLH
Luftbildner	Siegfried Sauter, Hansa Luftbild G.m.b.H.
I. Meteorologe	Dr. Herbert Regula, Deutsche Seewarte, Hamburg
II. Meteorologe	Studienassessor Heinz Lange, R. f. W., Berlin
Techn. Assistent	Walter Krüger, R.f.W., Berlin
Techn. Assistent	Wilhelm Gockel, Marineobservatorium Wilhelmshaven
Biologe	Studienrat Erich Barkley, Reichsstelle für Fischerei (Institut für Walforschung)
Geophysiker	cand. geophys. Leo Gburek, Erdmagnetisches Institut, Leipzig
Geograph	Dr. Ernst Herrmann
Ozeanograph	cand. phil. Karl-Heinz Paulsen

I. Offizier	Herbert Amelang
II. Offizier	Karl-Heinz Röbke
III. Offizier	Hans Werner Viereck
IV. Offizier	Vincenz Grisar
Schiffsfunkleiter	Erich Harmsen
Schiffsfunkoffizier	Kurt Bojahr
Schiffsfunkoffizier	Ludwig Müllmerstadt
Leitender Ingenieur	Karl Uhlig
II. Ingenieur	Robert Schulz
III. Ingenieur	Henry Maas
IV. Ingenieur	Edgar Gäng
IV. Ingenieur	Hans Nielsen
Ing. Assistent	Johann Frey
Ing. Assistent	Georg Jelschen
Ing. Assistent	Heinz Siewert
Elektriker	Elektro-Ing. Herbert Bruns
Elektriker	Karl-Heinz Bode
Werkmeister	Herbert Bolle, DLH
Katapultführer	Wilhelm Hartmann, DLH
Lagerhalter	Alfred Bücker, DLH
Flugmechaniker	Franz Weiland, DLH
Flugmechaniker	Axel Mylius, DLH
Flugmechaniker	Wilhelm Lender, DLH
Bootsmann	Willy Stein
I. Zimmermann	Richard Wehrend
II. Zimmermann	Alfons Schäfer
Matrose	Heinz Hoek
Matrose	Jürgen Ulpts
Matrose	Albert Weber
Matrose	Adolf Kunze
Matrose	Karl Hedden
Matrose	Eugen Klenk
Matrose	Fritz Jedamczyk
Matrose	Emil Brandt
Matrose	Kurt Ohnemüller
Leichtmatrose	Alfred Peters
Decksjunge	Alex Durtscheid

A list of the German Personnel of the German Antarctic Expedition, 1938/39. Please note the names Heinz Sievert and Richard Wehrend, which are discussed in the text.

Writer/researcher O. Bergmann has done some very interesting research regarding the German base at Neuschwabenland. It seems that while giving lectures in Southern German lands, he met a merchant-navy captain who had occasionally served on both German speedboats and German submarines. In the course of his service towards the end of 1941 he met two German sailors by the name of Heinz Siewert and Richard Wehrend. Both had taken part in the 1938-1939 Ritcher Expedition to Antarctica. In fact, both their names appear of the list of personnel taking part in that expedition, Siewert being listed as an engineering assistant and Wehrend being listed as a carpenter.

These two sailors told the merchant-navy captain that after the return of the Ritcher Expedition to Germany, in the early part of the year of 1939, they again returned to Neuschwabenland on the ship Schwabenland and continued to do so four times a year in a regular to and fro rhythm from the home-port in Germany. The purpose of these voyages was to transport outfitting items and mining equipment to Antarctica. Among these were tracks for a railed line for trolleys and a huge milling machine used to bore tunnel systems in ice (8)

On the other hand, we have a story from Heiner Gehring and Karl-Heinz Zunneck (9). This was Heiner's last book and for it he read some of Wilhelm Landig's private archives. His partner for this book, Karl-Heinz Zunneck, has written an important book on secret German high technology and the finds at the Jonas Valley (10). This story involved a former officer in the "Gebirgsjaeger" the German mountain troops. The Gebirgsjaeger were sometimes Wehrmacht soldiers and sometimes SS soldiers. There was even a "Hoch-Gebirgsjaeger" or high mountain troops. In practice, they functioned as elite troops and turned up where ever the fighting was especially difficult, as did the Waffen SS. This account was included in their book along with the explanation that it came from an Internet discussion forum and that the entry was no longer available on the internet. Nevertheless, the authors felt the message deserves a hearing, so a translation is as follows:

> *"I was the police constable for the Gebirgsjaeger from 1942 to 1945 on a base with the official designation of Base 221 in the Antarctic area of Neuschwabenland. This base was established in the late summer of 1939 and served as the airfield for the control of the South Pacific from the air. During the whole three years which I was there three FW 200 Condors and several Me 109s were lying around, segmented, which were never mounted due to the lack of certain pieces of the engine which were necessary for the Antarctic climate.*

> *The Base 211, three kilometers inland, was provided twice a year with supplies and a change of personnel by U-boat. Half-tracked vehicles saw to the transportation from the coast to the base. All in all, by the end of the war there were 300 men stationed there, among these 70 belonged to the Luftwaffe and the remainder Gebirgsjaeger for the security of the facility.*

> *After the collapse of the German military radio-news-network, nobody knew what was happening. As a start, in the middle of July 1945, there appeared a British destroyer group that delivered the news of the end of the war. These ships brought the crew to Australia, everything else remained back there and may very well still lay there."*

The careful reader may have noticed that the witness names "Base 221" as well as "Base 211?. I do not know if this is a simple mistake; that is certainly possible. Or, it could also mean two bases, one that is an air base, and one further inland that is more of a naval base. If the later is the case then it is possible that the personnel of the more inland base were never evacuated by the British. It is also possible that all facilities there were evacuated, leaving the runways, underground base and machinery intact and waiting for reactivation that occurred in 1946 as Landig says.

In addition to the German raiders operating in the South Atlantic, Gehring and Zunneck tell us of at least one secret U-boat operation in Antarctic waters. This operation involved U-2603 under Korvettenkapitaen Horst Ristoff in the years 1943/44 (11). The purpose of this operation still remains cloaked in secrecy.

Now we turn to the nature of the base in Neuschwabenland as writers Colonel Howard A. Buechner and Kapitan Wilhelm Bernhart see it in their two books on the subject from the late 1980's.

Howard Buechner was a Colonel in the US Army, a medical doctor and a Professor of Medicine at both Tulane University and L.S.U. During the Second World War Colonel Buechner was with the 3rd Battalion, 157th Infantry Regiment, 45th Infantry Division which drove deep into Thuringia. Colonel Buechner was the first medical doctor to enter Dachau concentration camp.

Captain Wilhelm Bernhart is a pen name. In fact, this man was a junior officer aboard U-530. The full crew of U-530 is listed, including the junior officers; he is obviously one of these men. Since at the time of publication, Captain Bernhart lived in the USA, it would certainly be simple enough to locate him if one had the inclination, but what would be the purpose in doing so given that Colonel Buechner is obviously vouching for him”

Captain Bernhart says in the texts of these books that U-530, before surrendering at Mar del Plata, Argentina on July 17, 1945, two months after the war in Europe ended, voyaged to Antarctica beginning in March, 1945 where sixteen men put ashore and deposited relics of the 3rd Reich in a reinforced ice cave. One of these relics was the Spear of Longinus. This is the Christian holy relic said to have pierced the side of Jesus as he was dying on the cross. Captain Bernhard claims to have been one of those sixteen men who actually deposited these relics on shore in Antarctica (12). It then sailed to Argentina for its surrender. U-977, which surrendered at Mar del Plata on August 17, 1945, or one month later than U-530, sailed from Kristiansand, Norway, in the dying moments of the 3rd Reich, after receiving an air shipment containing the ashes of Adolf Hitler (13), bound for the same destination.

The site of this activity was a natural ice cave in the Muhling-Hofmann Mountains. These are the mountains described earlier as intersecting the fault line on the coast of Antarctica. We are told in the text that this cave was visited in the spring of 1943 by a German U-boat whose mission was to build and install a large steel-reinforced door over the mouth of the cave (14). The location of the cave was further given as approximately 71 degrees, 30 minutes south by 14 degrees, 51 minutes west (15).

At this point things get somewhat confusing since this was evidently not the location of the base at Neuschwabenland. The writers describe it as follows:

> *"As previously indicated, plans for establishing a permanent base in Antarctica had been formulated as early as 1938. By the middle of 1940 submarines were bringing in vast stores of food, clothing, fuel and every other conceivable item necessary for setting up Hitler's refuge. Construction material, tractors, arms, distillation apparatus, machinery, radio equipment, personnel, engineers and scientists were included. During the next four years shelters were built and a mountain was scooped out. Here a facsimile of Hitler's "Eagle's Nest" home in Berchtesgarden was constructed.*
>
> *Inside this magic mountain Hitler and his staff would be able to grow fruits and vegetables and raise cattle and poultry in artificially heated beds and pastures of enriched soil. Everything was completely camouflaged. Here it would be possible for a large group of people to live for many years." (16)*

Besides the cargo of artifacts, it is claimed by these writers that Martin Bormann was a passenger aboard U-530 (17). Also, claims of an exotic propulsion system or an exotic component of the propulsion system have been made for U-530 (18). We will take this up in detail in our discussion of U-boats.

One question that has not been answered or even addressed is the exact relationship between Adolf Hitler and the Spear of Longinus. Trevor Ravencroft made much of this relationship in his book Spear of Destiny. The legend is that after piercing the body of Jesus, this spear point became an object of power. Any military leader'so the legend goes?who possessed this spear point was destined to rule and vanquish his rivals. This scenario seems to have applied to some famous German kings and even some Holy Roman emperors. Hitler, it is said, became fascinated with this relic as it stood on display in the Hofburg Palace and to have visited it many times in his days in Vienna before the First World War. On March 12, 1938, the day of "Anschluss?, the day of Germany's unification with Austria, Hitler drove into Vienna, straight to the room which housed the Holy Lance, took it and made it his.

The question in all this is why would Adolf Hitler, who was not only a non-Christian but had anti-Christian leanings, venerate a Christian icon" If Hitler rejected Christianity, then this rejection would extend to Christian relics as objects of power, would it not" There is simply no power there for non-Christians.

This question always nagged at me after reading Trevor Ravencroft, and bothered me even more after reading Buechner and Bernhart. Not being a religious person, I began questioning anyone who might provide some clarity. Finally, I found Georg Breckmann who gave me an explanation (19). He laughed and said it was really not the Spear of Longinus but instead the Spear of Odin. He went on to say, paraphrasing his words, that veneration of a spear would have been a pagan concept transposed into the Christian world. After all, Christians do not look upon weapons as objects of power. The symbolism using a spear represents Odin's pinpoint intellect but uses a martial object in keeping with his martial character. Famous weapons were given names in these times but even if this was not the true weapon Odin wielded the concept behind the symbol was a pagan one and one that was appropriated by the early Christians because it was familiar to the population they were trying to convert.

Unfortunately, I heard nothing of these words the first time around because his statement mentioning the ’spear of Odin” hit me like a lightening bolt. I had heard a lecture on Odin from an anthropologist while in college who presented the opinion that Odin was actually a real person, a war leader, who was then elevated to a divine status. The theory is drawn from a combination of archaeology, linguistics and cultural/social anthropology. I found a summary of this concept by and anthropology professor from 1939. This is Professor Carleton Coon in his book Races of Europe, page 322:

> *“Let us turn for a moment to consider the historical work of Snorre Sturlason. This erudite scholar deals with the gods as if they were men and treats their mythical actions as history. His rationalization seems to have been uncannily accurate. In the first place, Asgard, the home of the gods, was a town on the northern shore of the Black Sea. These gods fought a people called the vanir, with whom they eventually agreed to exchange hostages. Odin, the king of the gods, agreed to take Frey and Freya, two of the vanar, and these were soon deified along with their hosts. The gods then left Asgard; and moved northwestward; they sojourned in Denmark, and passed without much ado into Sweden. This country became their main home, and Uppsala their chief center. Odin worship, which arose among their descendants, the kings and jarls, was centered especially in this neighborhood and the worship of Frey and Freya as well.*
>
> *Thor, who was a rough-and-tumble bucolic god, is little mentioned in this Asgardian history; he was apparently an earlier god and the especial deity of the coastal people of Norway. Odin was a sophisticated personage, wearing a finely woven blue cape and carrying an iron spear; Thor, who clothed himself in skins, carried a hammer as his weapon, and drove about in a goat-drawn chariot. If we grant that Odin was the chief god brought in by the Iron Age invaders, and surrounded with their classically-inspired trappings of luxury,*

> *then Thor was apparently the god of the older people of the carl class and he represents in his person and attributes a blend between the robust Mesolithic hunters and fisherman, and the Megalithic and Corded people."*

Odin was a god of applied intelligence, on an off the battlefield. He is credited with bringing writing, in the form of the runes, to Northern Europe. But more importantly, Odin is the only Norse god of which I know who was associated with the spear and this is not an association that comes to mind with Jesus.

Returning to the Spear itself, the study of Bronze Age let alone Iron Age weapons is complex beyond description. But even if this spear turned out to be of Roman origin, traded and eventually reaching the shores of the Black Sea, that would only increase its value and potential war-power in this northern cultural fringe region. Odin's Spear can be imagined as a long lance with Odin's personal banner attached to it, riding in his chariot or carried by him on horseback, and serving as a rallying point for his troops.

There are precedents for the elevation of a war leader to a god in Indo-European culture. At the other end of the Indo-European world, in India, the invading Aryans deified at least one of their war leaders. This was Indra. Indra not only became a Hindu god but was somehow adopted by at least some Buddhists as I personally have seen a statue of Indra in a Buddhist temple in Thailand. Then, of course, there is Julius Ceasar who was deified by his Roman people. This idea of Odin as a flesh and blood person is not a new one and was certainly around in the 1930's.

When the Christians entered Northern Europe they met with considerable resistance in their conversion efforts. As they did elsewhere, the Christians adopted pagan items of culture and called them their own in an effort to induce conversion using cultural familiarity. In this way the Yule was re-branded as Christmas and Easter took on a Christian veneer.

Pagan sites were destroyed and churches built on their ruins. It would not be surprising if a venerated pagan spear was simply appropriated by the Christians and given a new history. Later, the Spear was split in half and a nail, allegedly a nail from Christ's cross, was inserted in an effort to legitimize the artifact.

Remember, this scenario does not have to be correct, it only has to be plausible in the eyes of Adolf Hitler. If I could hear the tale of the Spear of Odin in California, halfway around the world from its display case in Vienna, you can bet that Adolf Hitler heard this story also in a world where the Spear was a major topic of conversation.

Returning to Buechner and Bernhart, my guess in reading their work is that these two were devout Christians and that this was at least partial motivation for their books. This seems to be so since they claim that an expedition was made in 1979 to Antarctica which recovered the Spear of Longinus, the urn containing part of Hitler's ashes, and other artifacts of those times. Some of these items are pictured in their books. Their position is that the spear that was returned to its case in Austria after the war is a fake. The problem is that there were more than two versions of the disposition of the Spear and so like other religious objects in dispute, we may never reach a final truth.

From here we move to yet another explanation of events in German Antarctica. Actually, there are a whole set of survival theories involving a continued Nazi presence at the South Pole. These range from that pole being a gateway to a hollow earth world to a the vast underground city of New Berlin. Dr. Michael E. Salla incorporates some of these things plus the idea that the Nazis were aided in post-war Antarctica by extraterrestrials which they originally contacted years before using telepathy after recovering a crashed alien saucer.

Dr. Salla has a political/foreign affairs orientation by education and profession. His presentation of these ideas follows along these lines. He presents these thoughts in a paper entitled *Foundations for Globally Managing Extraterrestrial Affairs?The Legacy of the Nazi Germany-Extraterrestrial Connection* (20). What will be done is a thumbnail summary of this paper and some comments on controversial and interesting aspects of it.

According to Dr. Salla, the Nazis began communication with at least one extraterrestrial species (ET) in the 1930s using a method we would call channeling. This is really nothing new as we have all heard of the alleged experiments in this field done by the Vril Society. In fact, Dr. Salla references the video film detailing all this, UFO Secrets of the 3rd Reich (which he references as ’secrets of the Third Reich?). To this he adds that the Germans recovered an alien saucer crash in 1936 or 1938 (depending on the story), either in what is now Silesia, Poland, or in the Black Forest of Southern Germany. As authority for this he references Robert Lesniakiewicz in a work titled: “The UFO Crashes in Poland” and an internet site referencing the words “Omega File: Nazi History” (21). The Nazis busy themselves back-engineering ET technology into their war effort. Naturally, the Allies are terrified and the Germans are emboldened. Well, in spite of all the help, things do not go that well for the Germans and they are forced to flee to Antarctica and South America with their newly developed flying discs, based on ET technology. The Allies counter with Admiral Byrd’s failed Operation Highjump, by trying to scoop up all the German scientists they can find, by obtaining all the German technology they can get their hands on and by forming an alliance, a secret alliance, between themselves under UN auspices to contain the Nazis/ET enemy. The policy agreed upon included provisions of: 1. Non-Disclosure of Extraterrestrial Affairs, 2. Non-Disclosure of the ET-Nazi Connection and Countering Nazi Influence in South America, 3. Repatriation of Nazi Scientists/technologies and continuing Nazi Sponsored Human Projects, 4. Managing Extraterrestrial Artifacts Found Around the Planet, and 5. Cooperating to End the Nazi Threat. The whole matter is treated and presented as a policy paper and this itself is unique in my experience.

Some interesting ideas leap out at us from this discussion. The late Heiner Gehring wrote to me that he had been told that the efforts of the Vril

Society at channeling continued after the war, until 1946. It is no secret that in the lore propounded by Ralf Ettl and Norbert Juergen-Ratthofer elements of the Nazi regime allegedly associated with the Vril Society launched an interdimensional flight to an extraterrestrial world seeking help in the Second World War. This flight communicated, allegedly, via medial transmission (or channeling). This medial contact, according to Heiner's source, continued until 1946 with the living crew of that ship when it was abruptly terminated. Of course, there is no way to verify any of this.

Another theme rampant in the UFO world is the idea that there are divisions within the US military and or US intelligence that work against each other. Usually, the reporting entity picks the side most aligned with his or her special interest group and then makes the other side the "bad guy?. Here are Dr. Salla's words calling for an inquiry based on the work of one of these "whistle blowers?:

> *"'such official inquiries are needed to make the pubic more aware of how Nazi principles have infiltrated into the key national institutions responsible for managing ET affairs, and the threat his poses to democratic values and institutions. Evidence for infiltration of Nazi principles in the decision making bodies on ET affairs is given by whitlelowers such as dr. Michael Wolf who claims that "within the UFO Cover-Up here is a dark, covert renegade organization known as the "Cabal?. He describes it as a "well-orchestrated conspiratorial bevy of plotters... top heavy with the military, and headed by (a Navy Under-Secretary)." He claims that the "paranoiac Cabal works against and deliberately undermines, the goals of peaceful negotiations with the extraterrestrial visitors."*

There are probably many cabals. Alternatively, there are rumors of inter-agency fights. I strongly suspect that detractors or their sponsors of one particular cabal or another have issues to grind with the foreign policy orientation or alleged orientation of that agency which are totally unrelated to the UFO world and which Dr. Salla, speaking from a geopolitical perspective, ought to understand better than anyone. The Nazis may be the flash point eliciting this type of response but the underlying issues are of a more current nature and only tangential involve the Nazis.

Dr. Salla discusses mind control experimentation which certainly may have begun with the Nazis but undoubtedly flowered in the USA. He cites Andy Pero who mentioned some interesting things in experiments designed to optimize performance and so produce super-soldiers:

> *"I have also been used in the Montauk chair while at camp Hero, Montauk, and also in a chair in Atlanta, GA at Dobbins Air Force Base" The trainers would put me into a trance whereby I?d be told I could jump off a ladder of minimal height. In my mind, I believed that I was only jumping off a footstool or a short ledge. In actuality, I was progressively led to jump higher and higher heights to the point of successfully jumping off buildings and even out of planes without a parachute. When under mind control, I could do whatever I was instructed to do as long as I believed them. I would do 200 or more push ups in perfect form, sometimes as long as half hour straight, or until I was told to stop. I weight lifted 545 lb. on a barbell and squats while attending college and much more (500-1500 lb.) while I was under the mind control in training laboratory not far from Rochester, NY."*

Training of super-soldiers to jump out of airplanes without the need of a parachute, even going low and slow is quite an achievement and certainly stunning news.

But the weak point in this presentation is in the premise that a crashed ET saucer resulted in some great leap forward for the Germans. I could find no such information in either web site cited. This may be due to the transitory nature of the Internet. There was mention of a crash in Poland and/or the Black Forest in the British UFO magazine but the wording was so vague and imprecise that I paid no attention to it whatsoever. It looked like a promotion of some article that would be written later, containing the facts. I have corresponded with Robert Lesniakiewicz and read his book on the subject of the 3rd Reich's alleged interaction with extraterrestrials (21). At no time has he ever mentioned this crash to me but this information may exist or exist in another publication that I have not seen.

Now we turn to everyone's favorite Neuschwabenland tale: Britain's Secret War in Antarctica by James Robert. (23) This is actually a series of three articles appearing in Nexus magazine. This is probably the most exciting article ever written on the subject and one cannot help but believe this is by design. It reads like an adventure novel. It should be recommended if for nothing but its literary value alone. So, rather than review it and spoil the ending, what will be done here is to do the set up, as Mr. Robert did in the article, and then mention two or three aspects of it which are of importance to our discussion before moving on to a particular and controversial aspect which we will deal with just for fun.

James Robert's biography at the end of the article tells us he is a real guy. He is a civil servant for the UK Ministry of Defense as well as a World War Two historian and writer. His family has a military background. Mr. Robert has spent considerable time and gone to some expense in travel researching his history topics. The biography promises us a book and lists an email contact address that is no longer functioning. The central character and informant was an unnamed SAS soldier, active in the Second World War who Mr. Robert interviewed twice over a ten-year span of time.

The meat of the article starts out with the British Operation Taberlan. This was a wartime effort to monitor German activity in Antarctica. Yes, the British also had bases there and did detect the German base at Neuschwabenland. After the war, the British said nothing about what they suspected was on-going activity there by the Nazis. What is meant by 'saying nothing" was they said nothing to the Americans, French or

Russians. According to Mr. Robert, the British felt a little insecure concerning their share of German high technology recovered by the Allies. They also wanted a propaganda victory if, in fact, the Nazis were in Antarctica since they could then claim to have won the last battle of World War Two all by themselves.

The set up to the story is that our SAS soldier was not sent on the first mission. The first mission had apparently failed and his small force was the backup. The first mission radioed a garbled, confusing message for some time. There was a German military presence at Neuschwabenland, complete with an access tunnel leading to the Nazi stronghold. Only two survivors escaped back out of the Nazi base. In July 1945, all contact was lost after the final message said, in fear “the Polar Men have found us?.

Well, the SAS man and his cohorts were trained in polar survival and then parachuted to within striking range of the German base. They gained access through a long, man-made tunnel and found a huge cavern, artificially illuminated with docks for U-boats and hangars for some sort of high tech aircraft. The facility was powered geothermally with a secondary power source of unknown origin. The mission was to blow this facility up.

Standing in their way, besides the German guards, were the Polar Men. These Polar Men were of unknown origin although it is said they were the products of Nazi science. They were completely covered in hair and possessed resistance to the intense cold. They also ate human flesh.

The remaining tale is about the mission and the attempt of escape thereafter. Some points should be made assuming, of course, the tale is true. First, it should be pointed out that the reason for the particular location of this base has everything to do with geology and energy. The cavern may have been a volcanic bubble but the geothermal activity is certainly associated with the fault line. Just as with the lignite at Beaver Dam, the Germans chose this side because they could take advantage of an existing energy source. Without this energy source already being in place, it is doubtful that any long-term presence could have been maintained.

What is unnecessary to this tale are the Polar Men. The Polar Men actually add nothing to the facts presented in this story. Since they add nothing to the fact-pattern and serve as a gateway to attack the story and the story certainly could be told without them, only two reasons present themselves. First, they are added to spice up the story, a sort of Guns of Navarone meets the Abominable Snowman. As such as ploy it certainly succeeds! But the second alternative is that this was exactly the way it was described to Mr. Robert. In other words, it is the truth regardless of how it sounds.

Nexus magazine does not print fictional stories so they must have done some checking on Mr. Robert. Assuming they did and found his biography or at least the more verifiable portions, like his employment at the UK Ministry of Defense, checked out, we are left with the problem that this portion of the tale may be true, that the Germans enlisted the assistance of an unknown race of hairy, cold-tolerant men who functioned as security guards for them in this environment. According to the tale, the British did manage to kill one Polar Man and he was a man, only covered in fur growing right out of his skin. But, because of the tale's internal weakness involving the Polar Men and without positive proof for their existence, this story is improbably and that is that.

There is the idea that hairy, cold-tolerant men could be produced using "Nazi science?. The mechanisms for hair growth and cold-tolerance may exist somewhere in the human gnome. There is some evidence that Neanderthals and their ancestors were cold tolerant. For instance, within their caves fireplaces were not set up to maximize heat distribution within the living area and within that area it does not look like Neanderthals used the fire pits as their focus of attention as did modern humans. Also, we can all imagine Neanderthals and their earlier ancestors as having much more hair than do modern Europeans. Even if this is not a direct carry-over from a more primitive primate condition, Neanderthals would have needed this additional protection against the cold and so selection pressure would have existed to develop this independently and secondarily of the original hair loss.

The problem with “Nazi science” as an agent of activation for these characteristics is that the underlying genes for these traits would have had to have been activated and the structure of DNA was not known for certain until Watson and Crick in the early 1960’s. Watson proposed the double helix in 1953 but it was one of several competing proposals. For instance Dr. Linius Pauling, who won two undivided Nobel Prizes, proposed a triple helix at the time. Without knowing the structure of DNA it would be impossible to manipulate and transfer individual genes.

So if these Polar Men were not created in a lab, then where did they come from” The next obvious avenue would be Tibet. Did the Germans capture a few abominable snowmen in their expeditions there” We know Ernst Schaefer looked for them and looked hard. According to Reinhardt Messner and speaking on a recent American television program, a 2009 show called Monster Quest, on the yeti, the famous Austrian mountain climber and old Himalayan-hand, says that Schaefer followed alleged tracks of a yeti to a cave in the Himalayas and shot two animals leaving that cave at its mouth. They turned out to be a kind of bear, a mother and child. Schaefer’s widow gave Messner both skulls shortly after Schaefer’s death. Schaefer, according to Messner, was afraid to tell the Ahnenerbe since they were hoping the yeti would turn out to be some kind or Aryan ancestor. But he did tell Messner, who wrote a book on the yeti, claiming they were a kind of bear, bigger than “our” brown bear with longer hair. Well, this description may lend itself to the thinking that these were not exactly what would be described as normal bears, these being the brown bear which exists throughout northern Eurasia and North America. What might fit this overall description of a cave-living, non-brown bear is the cave bear of Pleistocene Europe, Ursus selaeus, made famous in the novels of Jean Auel. This bear lived in caves at mid-elevations in the Alps. It might yet survive in remote Himalayan valleys since it was probably made extinct when Neanderthals ousted it from its home, caves, which they also sought to inhabit. Neanderthals did not extend eastward into Tibet. (http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/ Cave_bear)

Besides, how would the Germans ever get several yeti out of Tibet” We are back to the transportation problem involving British-controlled India and the Ju-390 verses the flying disc discussion. It must have been hard enough to get those monks out.

So we are left wondering where on earth the Germans would find a small populaton of primitive humans, ice age relics, and how would they be transported to Antarctica” Are there any possibilities here at all” Well, maybe, but it is a long stretch.

The theory goes that when modern humans entered Europe from the east, they slowly pushed the Neanderthals to the West and to the North. The last Neanderthals lived on the Atlantic fringes of Western Europe, up to 25,000 years ago. Prior to the Neanderthals, and ancestral to them, were a grade of human known as Homo heidelbergensis, “Heidelberg Man?. Of course as Neanderthals took hold of glacial Europe, the older types were also pushed to the fringes just as they were pushed by modern man. During the ice age, all the polar land masses were connected by ice. It was possible to walk from Norway to Russia to Siberia, to Alaska, to Canada, to Greenland and then back to Norway without ever getting wet. So if early human species were pushed westward by incoming, more modern humans, then the place to look for early human relic populations would be in the land masses of the uninhabited North. Of course everywhere is inhabited but to make a long story short, the least inhabited area in the far North is Greenland and we already know the Germans had bases in Greenland. So the question becomes: is there any evidence for relic human people in Greenland. Well, again”*maybe.*

Cryptozoologist Mark A. Hall has collected Eskimo legends of the race that inhabited Greenland before them. In one report, Hall describes them as large, very strong and covered in hair. Old Viking legends, based on a man who had lived with the Eskimos in Greenland, say that these “trolls” still exist in the deep fjords of Greenland, living in caves.

Hall has also reopened an anthropological controversy from the 1920’s, the Gardar skull. It seems that a portion of the skull and half a jaw of an extremely primitive looking human were found in a 12th Century Viking graveyard in Greenland at Gardar. Professor F.C.C. Hansen, University of Copenhagen, thought they belonged to a “throw-back?, exhibiting the archaic phenotype of something close to “Rhodesian man?. Indeed, if anything they look even more bestial. But Sir Arthur Keith, the leading voice in terms of human evolution of his day, looked at the pictures of the remains and Hansen’s drawings and concluded they belonged to an acromegalic, a person suffering from a tumor of the pituitary gland, causing an overproduction of human growth hormone. Hansen died shortly thereafter, and so, Sir Arthur having spoken, the skull and whole affair were put in museum storage.

Perhaps an argument can be made against acromegaly; there are some inconsistencies. Keith’s argument does not compare apples to oranges, as he uses a “giant?, a person who developed a pituitary abnormality while very young and compares it to the Gardar remains, an individual of normal height and so affected after adulthood with the growth hormone overproduction. I say this is not comparing apples to oranges but it is comparing oranges to lemons. But any argument I could make would be less than 100 percent conclusive. The only such argument is a DNA test. An attempt will be made here to refute the acromegaly diagnosis of Keith, hoping that it might lead to further testing while combining two of my favorite subjects, cryptozoology/hominid relic survival and hidden Nazi history.

First, could a population of primitive humans have made contact with modern humans in the 12th Century” The Gardar skull was found in a Christian cemetery dating from that time. But, evidently, this individual was not entirely alone. In a sentence written by P.O. Pedersen who examined and photographed the remains in 1941, he says, as quoted in a website:

> *“The Gardar skull may be an extreme example of this “beserker” stock but similar less pronounced specimens have been recovered in the same cemetery.”*

(http://www.cladonia.co.uk/acromegaly/though-the-ages.html)

If true this cuts the odds against the Gardar remains being pathological as the chances of finding two or more in the same burial are remote indeed.

If we take all these improbable eventualities and combine them, a group of such primitive, hairy, cold-tolerant humans could have been enlisted by the Vikings at Gardar as well as by the Nazis in World War Two as servants or slaves or just as body guards. We already know the Germans had an extensive presence on Greenland. They could have been moved to Antarctica by ship.

I have always had sympathy for Mark A. Hall’s position in the cryptozoological sense. Mark Hall offers no anatomical argument countering Keith. Now, with the Gardar remains being the only possible link to the veracity of the Polar Men that I can find, some sort of countering, anatomical argument is in order.

So let us be clear about the positions of all involved:

Hansen: Gardar is a “throw-back” to Rhodesian Man, now called Homo heidelbergensis.

Keith: Gardar is a modern human with a growth hormone disorder, acromegaly.

Hall: Gardar represents a relic population of H. heidelbergensis, rare but still living.

My Position (or at least the position I am arguing): Gardar is a representative of H. heidelbergenis or H. neanderthalensis, probably the latter. (H. heidelbergensis was ancestral to H. neanderthalensis.) A small group of these men could have been captured by the Germans in Greenland, “domesticated?, and their cold-adaptability used in their Antarctic base.

My burden: To show Keith’s explanation inadequate, opening up the possibility of Hall’s explanation and my position. To show Keith’s explanation inadequate, I must show the abnormalities of the Gardar skull, in the ways they differ from skulls of modern humans, are not caused by an overproduction of growth hormone, but are unique to Neanderthals and so not caused by acromegaly.

Since the condition of acromegaly is central to this discussion, it ought to be defined and discussed. Acromegaly is a syndrome that results in the pituitary gland producing an excess amount of human growth hormone after the epiphyses plate closes at puberty. A number of disorders may increase the pituitary gland’s human growth hormone output. Acromegaly most commonly affects adults in middle age and can result in disfigurement and even premature death. It is a disorder of slow progression. Acromegaly is associated with gigantism.

Gigantism is caused by an access amount of human growth hormone in children. Since it occurs in childhood, unlike acromegaly, it causes excessive height, from 2.1 to 2.8 m or from 6 feet 11 inches to 8 feet 11 inches. The difference between acromegaly and gigantism is one of development at the time excessive growth hormone occurs. If elevated growth hormone levels occur before the epiphyses close, gigantism occurs. If elevated growth hormone levels occur after the epiphyses close, acromegaly occurs. (http://en.wikipedia.org/wki/Acromegaly). The epiphyses are the spongy ends of the bones at which point those bones grow. A definition of adulthood might contain, for instance, mention of the epiphyses closing.

Norma verticalis. Ca. $^{2}/_{3}$ nat.

Norma occipitalis. Ca. $^{2}/_{3}$ nat.

The mandible fragment, from the lateral side. Nat. size.

Photographs of the Gardar, Greenland remains. These are the frontal, parietal, and occipital bones of the skull, as well as the mandible, found in a 12th Century Viking graveyard.

So we have two related conditions, acromegaly proper and gigantism. The difference is the developmental stage of the individual when the syndrome started, adult or child. If it happened first during childhood, the individual would be very tall, over 6 feet 11 inches.

We should look at the symptoms of acromegaly. They are:

> “ *Swelling of soft tissue, hands, feet, ears, etc.. (We need not go on here since we have no soft tissue)*
>
> “ *Swelling of the soft tissue of the internal organs. (Again, we have none so it is irrelevant for us)*
>
> “ *Expansion of the skull at the fontanelle. (these are the soft spots on a newborn child’s skull)*
>
> “ *Pronounced brow protrusion.*
>
> “ *Pronounced lower jaw protrusion, enlarged tongue, gapping between the teeth.*
>
> “ *Increased hair growth, darkening of the skin, increased sweating.*

Given we have half a jaw bone with premolars and molars only, no face, a partial skull with portions of the parietal, frontal, occipital and temporal bones and one femur which is undescribed except for its length, many of these criteria do not apply here. In general the bones of the face grow larger and longer and the nose increases in width. So increased growth hormone production would make an individual “look” more like a member of a pre-sapiens species in general. What we need are characteristics unaffected by increased growth hormone and specific to non-sapiens or pre-sapiens men.

Sir Arthur Keith, (February 5, 1866?January 7, 1955) was a medical doctor and one, if not the leading, authority of his time in terms of human anatomy and evolutionary theory. In his book The Antiquity of Man, Keith discusses the Gradar remains and makes an argument for acromegaly. But he does this largely by comparing the Gardar remains to a contemporary but deceased individual who was a giant in life. As mentioned above, this is not a wholly satisfactory comparison. Keith moves point-by-point making an argument of comparison to the skull of the dead giant and refuting Hanson. He lines up both skulls centering them of the three molars of the Gardar mandible. He compares the skull of his giant to that of Gardar, an individual of about six feet in height; a much smaller individual. But, because of space constraints, the fact that our primary concern in this book is recent history, not paleoanthropology, and simply because new methods of differentiating modern humans from archaic humans is now available, please forgive me if I save the complete rebuttal for another time and place and go directly to the new evidence not available to Keith.

Usually, an anthropologist can simply eyeball a skull and determine its place in terms of human evolution. This is sometimes called an evolutionary grade. We know examples of evolutionary grades by the names Homo erectus, H. heidelbergensis, H. neanderthalensis, H. sapiens, and so on. But, some anthropologists, in trying to infuse more scientific rigor to the discipline, have come up with objective methods to tell one species from another. We will look at two of these and discuss some species-specific traits applicable to the bones we have.

First, there is Carleton Coon’s method of differentiating Homo erectus from Homo sapiens using arcs and cords. The effort dates to 1962 and was published in Coon’s The Origin of Races, page 342. Coon uses the markers recognized on the human skull by anatomists and connects them with lines. Nasion (upper margin of the nasal bones, located between the eyes) to Bregma (meeting of the frontal bone and parietal bones on the centerline of the skull), to the Lambda (meeting of the parietal bones and the occipital bone on the centerline of the skull) to the Opisthion (the rearward edge of the foramen magnum at the centerline of the skull). The foramen magnum is simply the hole through which the spinal cord enters the brain. Coon points to the difference between the straight lines of the cords with the skull contours that form the arcs and says that in the two human species there is a definite difference. He says:

> *“Homo sapiens is more curved in the frontal and parietal segments than Homo erectus; the opposite is true of the occipital segment.”*

This is a description of head shape in which sapiens heads are rounded like a melon and erectus heads are made up of flatter angles, more like an American football, except the rear end of the skull is more rounded in erectus. Look at Hansen’s reconstruction of the Gardar skull, which Keith uses. Clearly, the Gardar skull is more like the erectus skull and even more extreme in this than the example posted by Coon. Now, we do not have the exact Nasion since it is missing, nor do we have the Opisthion since the bottom of the skull is missing. We can estimate and if we did all the evidence would point to the skull being Homo erectus, even with the most generous estimates. But that is not proper evidence. We have one of the three arc-cords, the Bregma to Lambda cord-arc and it clearly is Homo erectus in character, being even more primitive than the Neanderthal condition.

Let us take a look at the Gardar jaw. We have most of the right half of the mandible, minus the chin and incisor teeth. We have the two premolars and three molars. Please note that the teeth are touching one another and not spaced apart as individual teeth as in the case of an acromegalic. Next, please note the space between the third molar, the wisdom tooth, and the ascending portion of the jaw. This space is called the retromolar space and is a Neanderthal diagnostic trait. It is not found before Neanderthals or after them. If a jaw were found today in Europe, for instance, and it possessed this gap, it would be instantly suspected of being from a Neanderthal. Even the famous Mauer mandible (from Heidelberg man) has no such gap and it is this species, Homo heidelbergensis that is believed to have been ancestral to the Neanderthals. Open your own mouth and look into the mirror at your lower jaw. If you have your third molar(s) intact, you will see the rearward margin of those teeth are behind the ascending ramus of your jaw, seen only by its flesh pink coating. If you were a Neanderthal, there would be a gap between the rearward border of this tooth and the beginning of the ascending ramus of the jawbone.

Now let us look at a set of criteria specifically formulated for sorting out Neanderthals from non-Neanderthals. This set of criteria was brought to me by the legendary Internet anthropologist, known only by the initials “C.A.?. This occurred when I was fortunate enough to have had a small part in one of her projects. This set of criteria was originally formulated by Albert Santa Luca and Jean-Jacques Hublin in 1978. Please see diagram. (from Ian Tattersall’s The Last Neanderthal The Rise, Success, and Mysterious Extinction, page 118). As the reader can see, these are really overlooked little bumps and valleys on the skull. And most of these little bumps and valleys are at the rear of the skull, precisely the portion we have.

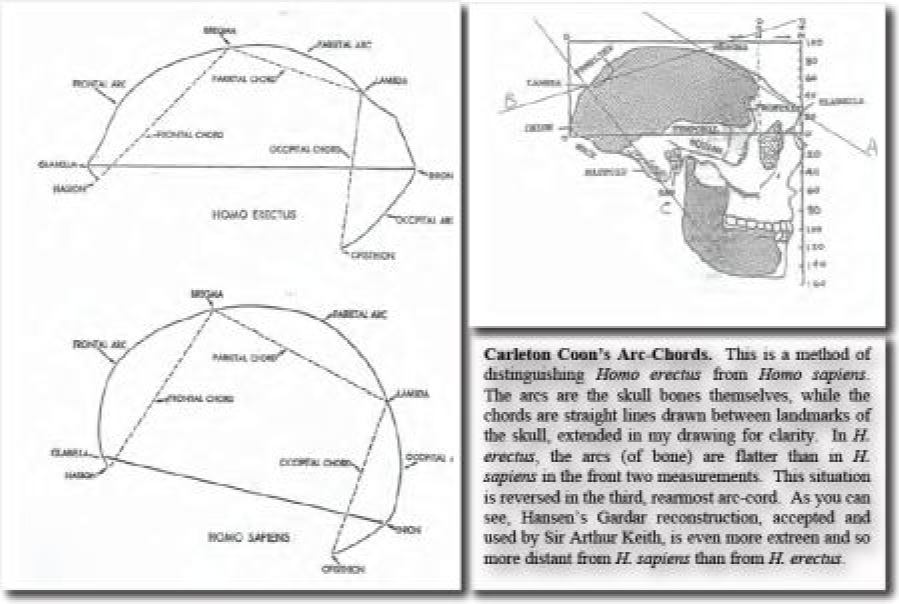
BREGMA
PARIETAL ARC
FRONTAL ARC
PARIETAL CHORD
LAMBDA
FRONTAL CHORD
OCCIPITAL CHORD
GLABELLA
NASION
INION
HOMO ERECTUS
OCCIPITAL ARC
OPISTHION
BREGMA
PARIETAL ARC
FRONTAL ARC
PARIETAL CHORD
LAMBDA
FRONTAL CHORD
GLABELLA
NASION
OCCIPITAL CHORD
INION
HOMO SAPIENS
OPISTHION
B
A
C

Carleton Coon’s Arc-Chords. This is a method of distinguishing *Homo erectus* from *Homo sapiens*. The arcs are the skull bones themselves, while the chords are straight lines drawn between landmarks of the skull, extended in my drawing for clarity. In *H. erectus*, the arcs (of bone) are flatter than in *H. sapiens* in the front two measurements. This situation is reversed in the third, rearmost arc-cord. As you can see, Hansen’s Gardar reconstruction, accepted and used by Sir Arthur Keith, is even more extreen and so more distant from *H. sapiens* than from *H. erectus*.

The occipital torus is a ridge of bone where the muscles of the upper back attach to the rear of the head. The Gardar skull had an occipital torus, a fact admitted by Keith in his book Antiquity of Man as he describes the Gardar skull. Modern men might have a slight ridge here if he had a huge and powerful neck but not a “torus” which indicates it is several magnitudes larger.

Just above the center of the occipital torus is a depressed spot on Neanderthals, the suprainiac depression. As the name indicates, it is just above the Inion, a landmark we used in reviewing the work of Carleton

Coon. The suprainiac depression is just that, a hollow spot, which can be plainly seen in Hanson's drawing of the Gardar skull, a drawing used by Keith without alteration.

The next feature is the juxtamastoid crest, also called the occipitomastoid crest. Unfortunately, this area was broken off in the Gardar skull, so no conclusion about it can be drawn.

The last feature is the supramastoid tuberosity. This is an upward extension of the zygomatic arch, the lateral portion of what we call the "cheek bone?. In modern humans, it just fades away, horizontally, into the temporal bone of the skull. But in the Gardar skull and in Neanderthals, this "fade away" area makes an upward turn, also running toward the back of the skull. If forms its own little ridge or tuberosity. It is hard to see, and the zygomatic arch is broken away, but it is there.

If you put your left hand on the corner of your left eye and then moved your hand back to your ear, you would feel the zygomatic arch as the slightly protruding bone paralleling your movement. Coming to the ear and following it upward with your hand you begin to feel a raised column of bone on your skull at the upper rear corner of your ear. It seems to just fade away moving upward. But in Neanderthals a larger column of bone would be present and it would continue to run up behind the ear with its forward margin merging with the zygomatic arch.

So, if we score a 1 for present or Neanderthal characteristic, 0 for non-determined, and -1 for absent or modern human characteristic, here is th way things break down.

Nasion to Bregma (arch-cord)	0
Bregma to Lambda (arch-cord)	1
Lambda to Opisthion (arch-cord)	0
Jaw-presence or absence of retromolar space	1

Occipital torus	1
Suprainiac depression	1
Justamastoid crest	0
Supramastoid tuberosity	1
	5

Please note that there is not even one -1 characteristic indicative of modern man, *H. sapiens*. The last series of values are th most important.

It is up to the reader if this attempt to rehabilitate the Gardar skull ha been successful. But even in the most optimistic circumstance, this would no prove the Gardar skull was a Neanderthal or pre-Neanderthal living in 12t Century Greenland. What is realistic to claim is only that enough doubt is cast onto Keith's diagnosis of acromegaly to warrant a DNA test. Three intact molar exist, which should provide the necessary genetic material.

If Gardar turned out to be something other than a standard-model *Hom sapien*, then and only then could it be theorized that the Germans picked u a few of these relic, cold adapted men and enlisted them in a security force i Antarctic where cold adaptation was necessary. Until then, James Robert's Polar Men are just another post-war, Nazi mystery.

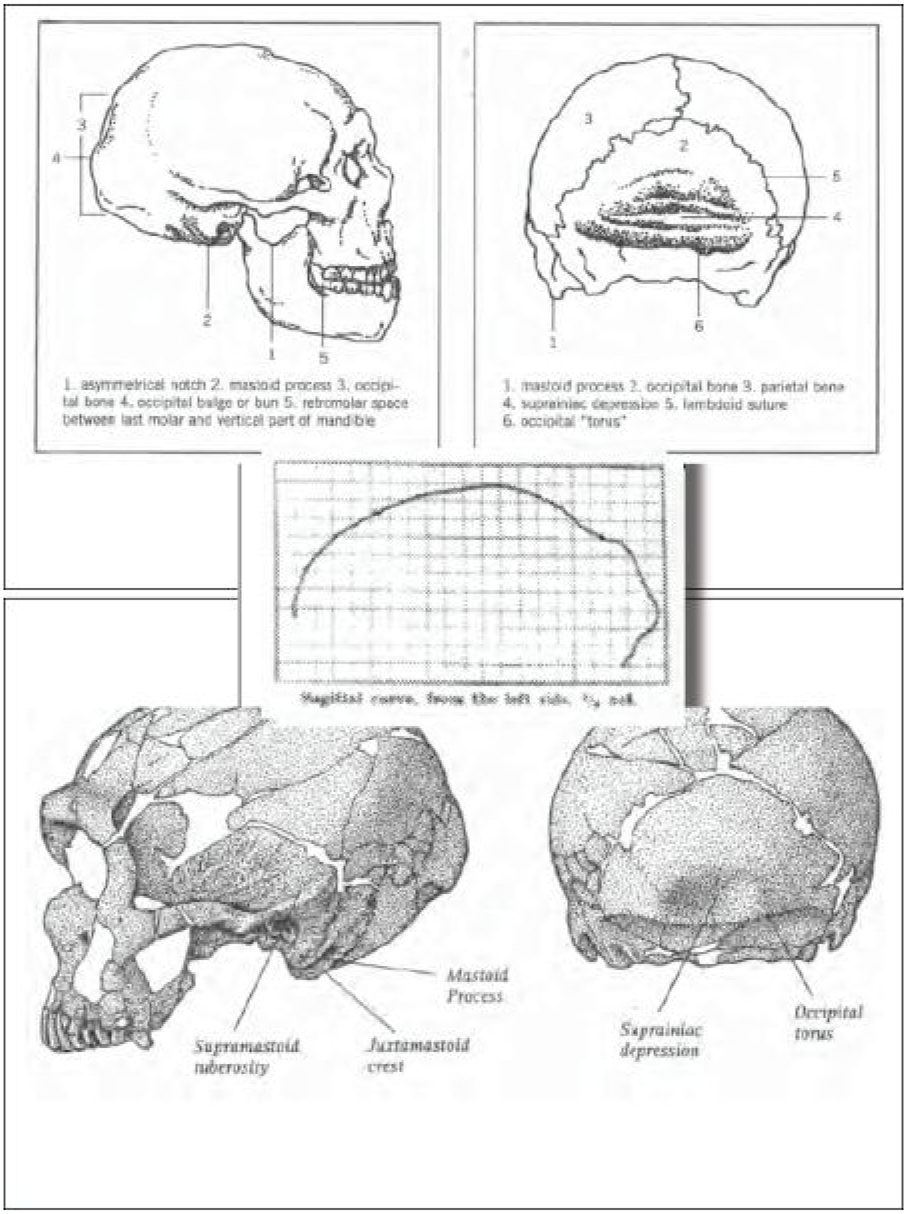
3
4
2
1
5
1. asymmetrical notch 2. mastoid process 3. occipital bone 4. occipital bulge or bun 5. retromolar space between last molar and vertical part of mandible
3
2
5
4
1
6
1. mastoid process 2. occipital bone 3. parietal bone 4. suprainiac depression 5. lambdoid suture 6. occipital "torus"
Sagittal curve, from the left side, ½ nat.
Mastoid Process
Supramastoid tuberosity
Juxtamastoid crest
Suprainiac depression
Occipital torus

Neanderthal Diagnostic Traits

These are the characteristics discussed in the text. Acromegaly would have no bearing on the presence or absence of these traits, nor would it influence the basic shape of the skull. The Gardar skull's profile is shown for comparison with the Neanderthal condition.

Returning to Antarctica, we have to ask: where is Point 211 really” As would be expected, the base is located in a defensible position. It is situated near the Wohlfahrt Mountains, or Wohlthat Mountains, which form a 180-degree arch around the facility. After a short break, the Drygalske Mountains complete the circle. About 150 kilometers away are the Muehling-Hofman Mountains. Located pole-ward are the Schirrmacher warm water ponds, and to the east lie the Conrad Mountains, with their narrow valleys (up to 2000 meters deep) and unnamed projecting mountain peaks. The Conrad Mountains intersect the arch described the Wohlfahrt and Drygalske Mountains, and it is here at this intersection, seaward of the Schirrmacher ponds, where Point 211 can most likely be found. This is directly along the fault line containing the geothermal activity Buechner and Bernhart spoke of (25):

> *“It was found to be of volcanic origin and runs through the new German territory where it reveals itself in the form of warm water lakes, caves, crevasses and ice tunnels, most of which were found to be suitable for human habitation with the simple addition of electric lighting.” (26).*

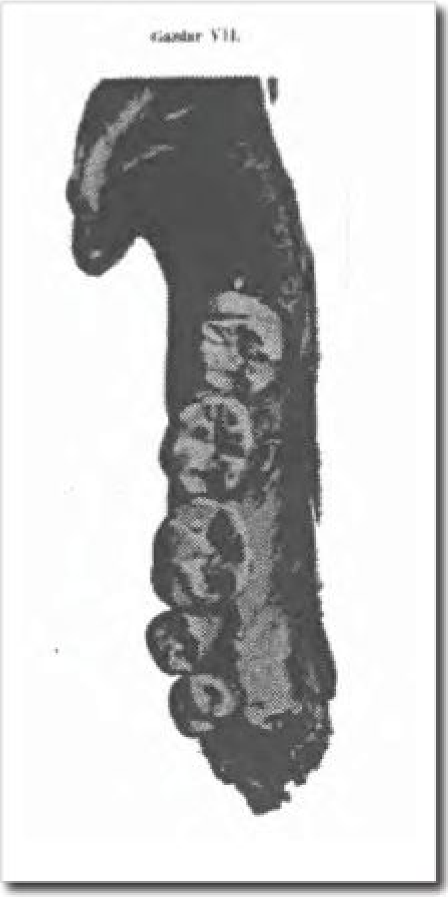

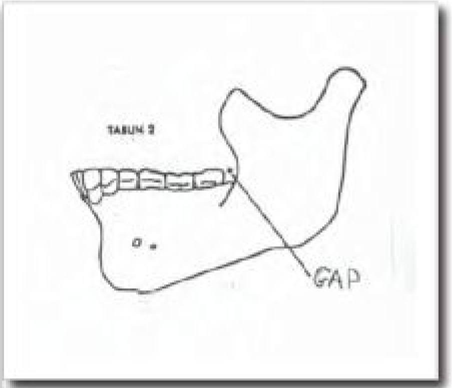

Garder Mandible

This picture shows the jaw fragment from the top down, exposing the gap between the third molar and the ascending ramus of the jaw. A Neanderthal mandible is also shown for comparison. This gap is only found in Neanderthals.

This compares very will with the description given by James Robert of the cavern illuminated by artificial lighting. In looking at a map, we can place the base at about 71 degrees, 30 minutes South by 14 degrees, 51 minutes West.

The existence of Operation Highjump has never been disputed by official history. The leader of this expedition, Admiral Byrd, was our most experienced Arctic and Antarctic explorer. Numerous books have been written about this expedition and the US Navy even saw fit to produce a film of this operation. This color film actually shows the ships and equipment involved and is narrated in the optimistic, “man overcoming nature and all obstacles” theme every school-age child of the 1950’s remembers. The voices of the narration were done by three Hollywood stars of that period.

Operation Highjump was initially composed of three separate convoys that came from both the west coast and the east coast of the United States. Sailing south, they met in the Antarctic waters. Sub-dividing again, they reached the Antarctic Continent in January of 1947, the summer there. Besides the Americans, the British, Norwegian, Japanese, Russian, Argentine and Chilean Navies were invited to participate, giving the whole spectacle the air of a cooperative, international effort. The USA has since that time used the same ploy in ventures such as Korea, Vietnam, Iraq and Afghanistan, but throughout all of these it was clearly the Americans forcing the issues and calling all the shots.

Operation Highjump was outfitted for an eight-month stay in Antarctica (27). Admiral Byrd commanded a fleet from his flagship, Mount Olympus. There were the ice breakers Northwind and Burton Island. There was the aircraft carrier, *The Philippine Sea*, as well as the seaplane carriers *Pine Island* and *Currituch*. There were two destroyers, *The Brownsen* and *The Henderson*, as well as the escort ships *Yankey* and *Merrick* and the fueling ships *Canister* and *Capacan*. And finally, there was a submarine, *The Sennet* (28).

Accompanying this ’scientific mission” were 4000 soldiers, and25 aircraft, including Dakotas and six helicopters (29), (30). Troop carriers included armored, tracked vehicles and a purpose-built Antarctic vehicle. The aircraft were equipped with special electronic sensing equipment. This equipment sent out an electromagnetic pulse that any target conductor? usually a metallic object?would convert into a small, temporary magnetic field that could in turn be picked up by sensors within the equipment. These specially-equipped aircraft were sort of flying metal detectors, working exactly as those used by millions of hobbyists around the world, but far more powerful. Their purpose was to locate metallic structures under the ice, although they had a very different official cover story (31).

This expedition, in spite of the propaganda effort, was what it was. It was a cold, naked, military operation. Byrd did not go directly to Neuschwabenland. Instead, his ground force remained on the other side of the Pole while his naval force a short way offshore from the German position. Byrd sent out feelers in the form of aerial surveillance in ever decreasing distance to the German base. Meanwhile, his ground forces were crossing Antarctica and would attempt to encircle Neuschwabenland. For some reason the first overflight of Neuschwabenland included the dropping of an American flag on the base (32). Some say a bomb was also dropped on the base at this time, allegedly done to let the Germans know they were no longer in isolation and security (33).

What happened next completely changed the character of Operation Highjump. A squadron of four aircraft that followed the scout airplane to the target, the one that dropped the flag and or the bomb, simply vanished as they over flew the German base (34), (35). Within 48 hours of this loss, Admiral Byrd gave the orders to cancel the expedition and made preparations to leave Antarctica (36). This means that Operation Highjump, scheduled to last eight months, lasted closer to eight weeks. In fact, Buechner and Bernhart put this date in February 1947 that may mean it did not even last in Antarctica one month (37)!

Anyone familiar with Admiral Byrd knows that he was, at times, outspoken. He was not afraid of his own ideas or conclusions, and at times spoke of them out loud. Fortunately for our story, one of those countries invited to participate for show was Chile. As we all know, Chile is close to Antarctica and so had a keen interest in the expedition, its purpose and its outcome. In fact, a Chilean newspaperman, Lee Van Atta, accompanied the mission, reporting for the newspaper El Mercurio in Santiago. By luck, Van Atta was aboard Mount Olympus, Admiral Byrd's flagship. Van Atta had access to the outgoing Admiral and penned articles on Operation Highjump that were published by El Mercurio.

For instance, when questioned over the necessity of the expedition, Byrd answered in the positive, saying: "Because the South Pole itself is located between us and our enemy?. The question as to whom our enemy was, considering that the Axis Powers were officially eliminated, remained unanswered (38).

Catching Byrd in a particularly lucid state, Lee Van Atta inadvertently wrote a definitive piece on Operation Highjump that appeared in El Mercurio on March 5, 1947. The Spanish language article is pictured. I have no Spanish to English translation, but Wilhelm Landig provides a Spanish-to-German translation (39) that I have in turn translated into English:

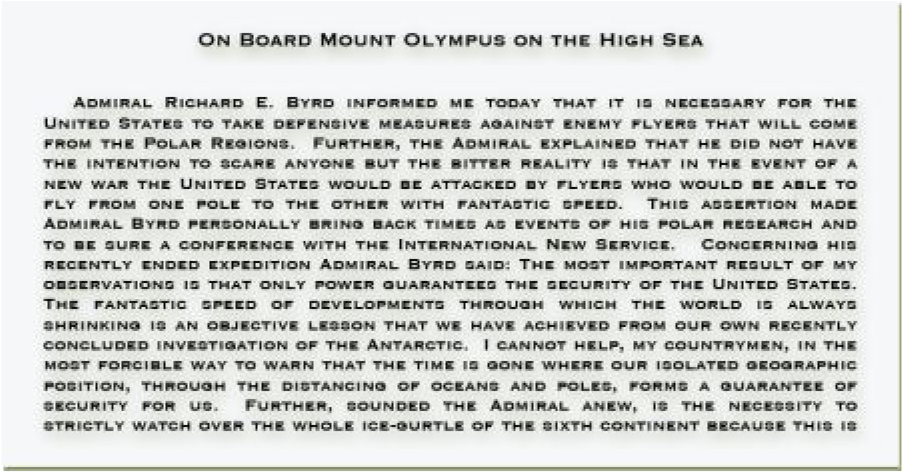

On Board Mount Olympus on the High Sea

Admiral Richard E. Byrd informed me today that it is necessary for the United States to take defensive measures against enemy flyers that will come from the Polar Regions. Further, the Admiral explained that he did not have the intention to scare anyone but the bitter reality is that in the event of a new war the United States would be attacked by flyers who would be able to fly from one pole to the other with fantastic speed. This assertion made Admiral Byrd personally bring back times as events of his polar research and to be sure a conference with the International New Service. Concerning his recently ended expedition Admiral Byrd said: The most important result of my observations is that only power guarantees the security of the United States. The fantastic speed of developments through which the world is always shrinking is an objective lesson that we have achieved from our own recently concluded investigation of the Antarctic. I cannot help, my countrymen, in the most forcible way to warn that the time is gone where our isolated geographic position, through the distancing of oceans and poles, forms a guarantee of security for us. Further, sounded the Admiral anew, is the necessity to strictly watch over the whole ice-gurtle of the sixth continent because this is

There were other minor expeditions to Antarctica by the Americans and others but it does not seem that the German base was seriously challenged for eleven or twelve years. This period also constituted the golden age of flying saucers. Saucer sightings blossomed over North and South America during this time period.

President Truman was so shaken by the events that he called upon Albert Einstein for his opinion as to what had just happened. Einstein told Truman that he had no explanation for this occurrence (40).

To the German writers cited in this regard, the situation is clear. The Americans are being shown that they are not in complete control and that their most sensitive city and buildings can be attacked and they can do nothing about it. Mention should also be made that this was the exact time the Americans were taking charge and building military facilities in Greenland, possibly displacing the German base at Beaver Dam.

It was not until 1958 that the Americans returned to Antarctica to resume the attack. And again, they used “research” to hide their true aims. This was the International Geophysical Year, 1957-1958 and its attendant geological-geographical expeditions, tests, and so on. One of these expeditions involved a fleet that sailed to the South Atlantic. This fleet involved the destroyers *Warrington* and *Bearns*, the destroyer escorts *Courtney* and *Hammerberg*, the tankers *Neosho* and *Salamonie*, the seaplane carrier *Norton Sound*, and the full aircraft carrier and flag ship *Tarawa*. *The Norton Sound* had been especially prepared for the task at hand?Project Argus (41).

Following Landig’s lead, in order to explain Project Argus we must delve into both the 1950’s mind-set and history that was simply inconvenient and so untold. The Americans were intent upon destroying Point 211?a base that they did not even admit existed. How could this be done” In 1958 they are drawing near Neuschwabenland with a fleet of military ships. These ships are under cover as doing some sort of research about the earth. Strange as it may seem today, the both the USA and the Soviets, in those days, allege they were interested in “recovering” the Antarctic Continent. And according to this line of thought, recovering meant warming it up (42). What better to warm up a continent than with a few atomic bombs blowing off the continent’s covering of ice” Either people familiar with the concept actually bought it *prima facie* or they bought it as a cover story to hide the real purposes for detonating atomic bombs over Antarctica.

In all fairness to the mind-set of those times, nobody had ever heard of global warming. Nobody had ever heard of the ozone layer. Nobody considered the fragile environment of the Antarctic because nobody considered the environment as “fragile?. Those were “man against nature” days, with the goal of “conquering nature?. During this time period above ground nuclear testing was going on in Southern Nevada, the only caveat being that it was done on days in which the wind was blowing away from Los Angeles.

According to Landig, a series of bombs were to be exploded over Antarctica, but they were not dropped from a bomber. That did not work out well for the Americans the last time around. This time a new, prototype rocket would be used. This was the RTV-3-Polaris rocket (43), a small, solid fuel rocket ultimately designed to be launched from beneath the surface of the sea by a submarine. In 1958, this system was not yet operational, so instead the RTV-3-Polaris rockets were launched from the deck of the seaplane carrier *Norton Sound*.

On August 27, 1958, a Polaris rocket arched up 480 kilometers high from the deck of the Norton Sound and then over the Antarctic Continent. It detonated as an air burst with the force of a 2-kiloton explosion. This was followed by another launch on August 30th, and yet another on September 6th (44). You already know the target coordinates.

Landig tells us that the real purpose of Project Argus was to knock out the defenses of Point 211 using the electromagnetic pulse of the nuclear detonations. Above all, they were fearful of the “die gefuerchteten neuen deutschen Klystron-EG-Projektoren?, (the feared new German klystron EG projectors). But according to Landig, the Germans shielded sensitive electronics and so the electromagnetic pulse attack utterly failed. Actually, this is not so hard to do- a Faraday cage will suffice.

But, according to Landig, the Nazis did leave Point 211 and Antarctica. They moved to South America where they already had an extensive presence. The reason given for this move was not opposing military force but the power of a tiny organism. In a role reversal fom H.G. Well’s War of the Worlds, the Germans left Antarctica because that Continent had almost no germs in its atmosphere. Without some virus or bacteria assaulting the human immune system, it becomes weak and ineffective. In time this loss of normal immunity would lead to a contagious outbreak whenever a visitor from the outside brought in even a sniffle (45). And since they were leaving, there would be no objection from “interested parties” to any new treaty de-militarizing Antarctica as already mentioned.

Now that the unofficial history of Antarctic is completed, we are free to return to something Landig mentioned, the klystron EG projectors, and the whole subject of German involvement with klystron tubes.

A klystron tube, invented in 1937, is a vacuum tube used to amplify microwave and radio frequency radiation. They can be very precisely controlled in amplitude, frequency and phase. Before modern semiconductors came into use, another type of klystron tube found wide use, the reflex klystron tube. An Internet site describes the workings this way:

> *“A klystron tube is used to produce microwave energy. In this application, it works in a similar manner to a pipe organ tube, except that the klystron tube uses electrons, while the pipe organ tube uses air. When the air in the organ tube vibrates, the pipe organ tube emits sound energy of a specific frequency that we hare as a single note. When the electrons in the klystron tube vibrate, the klystron tube emits high frequency microwave energy that can be detected by a radar receiver.” (46)*

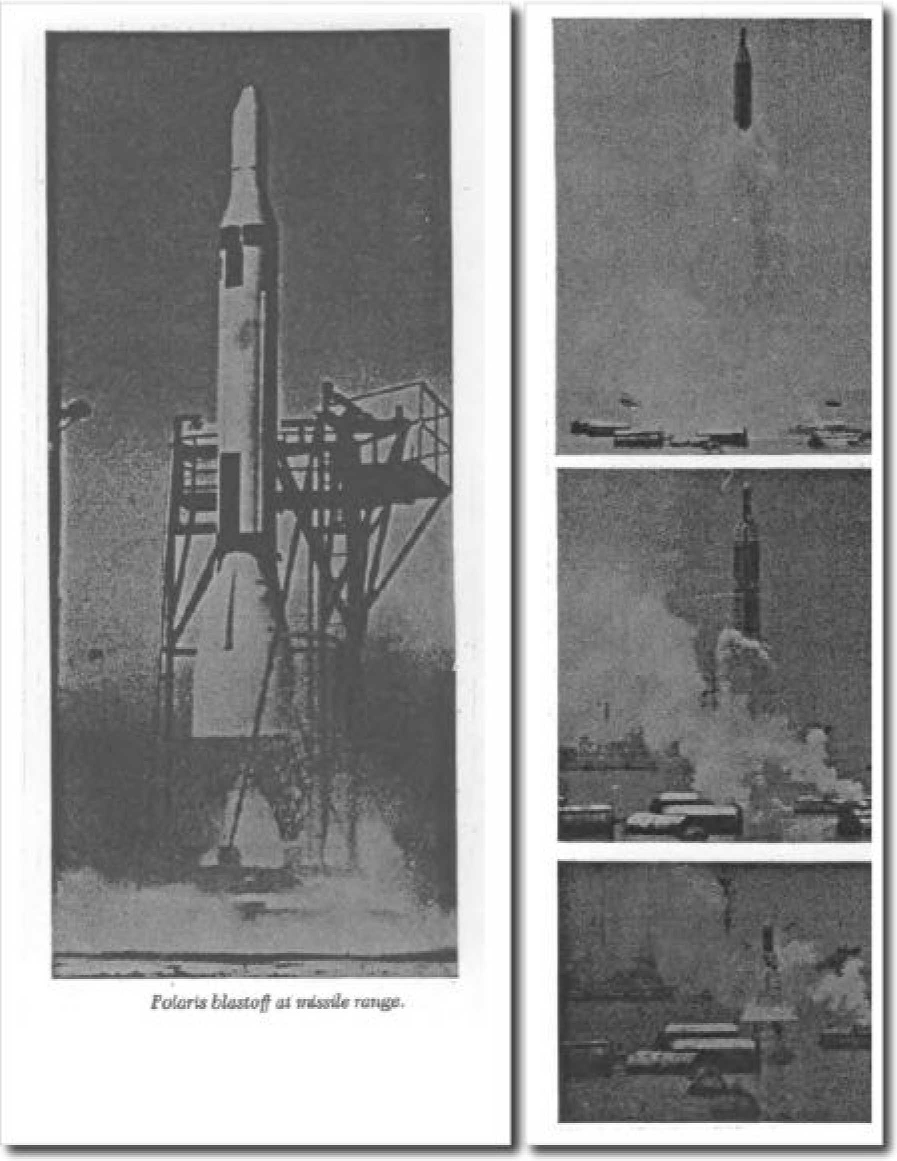

Polaris blastoff at missile range.

Photographs of a Polaris Missile launch, 1959

These photographs are from the book Missiles and Satellites,by James F. Scheer, 1959.

So electrons were put into sort of a chamber and energy applied to them until they reached the desired level. If released at this point, the output would be an electron beam. The electron beam can be “bunched” by electromagnets. This is precisely the language used by the first of three German studies on x-ray and gamma “death rays” (47). So something of this klystron technology is applicable to working those radiations into weapons. This energy could be transferred to radio frequency waves that include radar applications. The Germans used the klystron tube for their radar applications, probably because it was more precise than the magnetrons the Allies used (48). According to Norbert Juergen-Ratthofer and Ralf Ettl as stated in their books and video films, the Germans used klystron tubes, mimicking the frequency of Allied radar units, to jam them, making the foo fighters which used klystrons invisible to radar. After expulsion of the desired energy/particles, a magnetic aiming device can be built around the klystron. This is a betatron, accelerating electrons within a circular glass torus. Klystrons can be built with a wave-guide to coupling microwave energy. This, if I understand correctly, allows them to produce high-power carrier waves that are the driving force for particle accelerators and synchrotrons (49). A synchrotron is a cyclic particle accelerator, circular in shape, in which the magnetic field and the electric field are carefully synchronized with the particle beam (50). It should also be noted that a kolyston tube can be used to generate positrons and that this modernized, combined-compounded technology, as described, has been used in high energy experiments combining electron and positron beams in the 1980's (51). In other words, doing matter-anti-matter experiments.

The researcher asking the most pressing questions about klystons has been Thomas Mehner. In fact, he once emailed me and asked me what I thought was going on concerning the extensive use of klystrons by the Germans during World War Two. I had no answers. But pressing the issue, he found some answers using declassified F.O.I.A. material, which we will review. But he did not stop there. Sometimes, if you put out feelers regarding a certain topic, someone will come along and tell you what they know. Mr. Mehner and Edgar Mayer devote a whole chapter to "zyklotrons" in their book (52).

Mr. Mayer and Mr. Mehner present evidence that a huge, circular, particle accelerator was made by the firm Siemens-Halske and installed underground in the Jonas Valley. The activation of this device occasionally caused a light show that could be seen from a nearby castle. An anonymous source once sent me an unpublished report regarding these light shows. A geophysicist prepared it. It was his opinion that the device was so powerful that the light show was a reaction to the machine's interacting with earth's gravity. Misters Mayer and Mehner reviewed the witness evidence, which they cite, and conclude that the device was a klystron-betatron-synchrotron-type particle accelerator.

But that is really not the big news. The big news is the purpose for which this machine was used. An Internet article appeared in Polish that claimed to explain it all. (53) Please remember that the Slavic researchers have done excellent work in reconstructing events within the Third Reich, particularly in their geographic area of expertise, Western Poland, Bohemia and Monrovia, which were once part of Germany or areas heavily settled by Germans and under German influence during the war. A certain “Dr. D.L.” came along and translated the Internet article for the German researchers and so it is available to us now. The German researchers are actively trying to track down the author of the article but even without an exact ascription, the article is so informative and powerful that it cannot be contained.

A bit of set-up is necessary. This is regarding uranium refining. We have all heard the story as it has played in current events. Uranium oxide, “yellow cake” is dissolved by a series of chemical reactions and forms into a gas, uranium hexafluoride. This gas is spun in a centrifuge. All the isotopes of uranium are separated according to their weight in the centrifuge since the heavier forms of uranium, even while in compound with fluoride gas, will move to the end of the centrifuge. The isotope of interest in a fission reaction, U235, can thus be separated from the other isotopes by its weight, that is its position in the centrifuge. This is called “enriched uranium?. This is the way uranium has been enriched, at least in the USA, ever since. Plutonium originates in a nuclear reactor when another isotope of uranium, U-238, is placed in it and absorbs neutrons. It becomes U-239 and then decays to Pu-239, or plutonium.

Below are parts of the article that I have translated into English, along with comments and a summary, which appear outside the quotation marks (53):

The Other Method

> *“The other method sketched itself out for the Germans in the summer of 1942 and perhaps fulfilled itself under the influence of Albert Speer and the WHVA (Spandau), a radical change of point of view which befell the fate of the nuclear program. This change fulfilled itself during the secret conference of 4, June, 1942 in Berlin. It consisted of a new method of production of enriched uranium with the help of a specialized particle accelerator after the construction of Kerst.” (footnote credits Kerst, an American, with the drawing of plans of a betratron)*

In the journal *Physical Review*, Donald W. Kerst and R. Serber published an article describing his first betatron. This was a small circular glass tube, an induced magnetic field, 7.5 cm. in diameter in which particles were accelerated with the energy of 2.3 million electron volts (MeV). The US government became interested. The first betatron was sold to the University of Illinois. Betatrons began to be thought of as smaller, cheaper substitutes for x-ray apparatus.

> *“The first accelerator produced a radiation corresponding to a gram of radium, which, at that time in Sweden, cost a million Krone.”*

Soon, the subject caught the interest of Rolf Wiederoee who worked for the Norwegian firm of NEBB. He already worked in the field of high energy and soon wrote an article in September 1942, in the German publication Archiev fuer Elektrotecknik that was published in 1943. He wrote a second article, claiming the possibility of an accelerator in the order of 200MeV but this article never saw the light of day. Obviously, the German government was also interested in this research.

> *“In the early part of 1943 there appeared two German officials in Luftwaffe uniforms at Rolf Wiederoee’s place of employment, the NEBB. Here it must be remembered that Norway was in German occupation from the early part of that year.*
>
> *Wiederoee found himself in a difficult position. On one side he would be suspected of collaboration and on the other he was invited to a luxurious hotel that he did not want to refuse. He said he would first have to solve the problem of his place of employment, but the German agents were perfectly prepared.”*

What happened was that Wiederoee began work in Hamburg but was allowed trips to Oslo for “calculations?. In fact, he was allowed a great deal of freedom, given all the circumstances. He was already working on his first assignment before his German employment, that of a 14 MeV betatron. Such devices were built and built up until the end of the war. But he also worked on further developments of the betatron and actually obtained patent rights.

> *“The next high performance betatron was to be set up in the vicinity of Heidelberg and reach a performance of 200 MeV. In July 1943 Wiederoee began work on this new accelerator. It must be mentioned here that Wiederoee as not responsible for the construction of this betatron. He functioned only as the author of the project (and diverse projects bound with it).”*

In fact, Max Steinbeck (Siemens, Berlin) and Professor A. Sommerfeld interfaced between Wiederoee and the actual construction. Sometime in the second half of 1943, the new betatron reached the output of 287 MeV.

> *“With the beginning of the year 1944, the Ministry of Arms changed the decision for the place where the accelerator was to be set up. This was on account of the push of the Allies in Italy and the landing at Normandy (June 6, 1944). It was decided to place the accelerator in the area of Lower Silesia because, to the time, it seemed the most secure place. This decision also speaks to the conclusion of the problems which were connected now brought to completion in preparation of the underground production of rockets in the Kohnstein Massif (Dora) as well as the ongoings of Albert Speer in April, 1944 in the milieu of the similar programs, S III, originally begun with the central “Olga” in the area of Ohrdruf, a complex in the area of Lower Silesia. Hans Kammler was responsible for the execution and construction from the side of the SS.”*

References to Kohnstein and Dora are the Nordhausen complex where the V-1 and V-2 rockets were being produced. S III and Olga were part of the Jonas Valley complex system. From the last sentence in this paragraph, we know that as of 1944, Dr. Hans Kammler was running this program. In the next paragraph the Polish commentary touches again on Silesia, their area of expertise.

> *“Originally, there were three major projects: Fuerstenstein (Ksiaz), Riese (Bad Charlotenbrunn, today Walim), and Ruediger (Walderburg/Schlesia, today Walbrzych). Particularly Ruediger, in which many underground criss-cross burrows passed through, was selected as a nuclear laboratory. To this facility, which was completely self-sufficient, belonged electrical supply equipment, the oil heating unit, and a water supply. The facility had at its disposal a closed railroad track coming from Waldenburg. Every room contained its own steel door that opened only with the assistance of a special, coded identity card.*

> *Ruidiger possessed a secret television connection to the important institutions of the Third Reich, realized over a central circuit that was located inside the facility Fuerstenstein. (The whole was a constituent of the "Project Jonastal" that was under the supervision of the German Postal Service). Besides this there was a telephone network to the facility "Reise" and other industrial institutions."*

So in this area between the Jonas Valley and the Owl Mountains of Poland, there was a connected community of a dozen facilities of science that were united in the frame of nuclear programs. In July 1944, the huge accelerator became active in its underground home. Eventually, wartime conditions demanded that this accelerator and the nuclear leadership be evacuated. But we are told of its purpose and its efficiency:

> *"The chief main exercise of the accelerator was the production of enriched uranium, whereby the method was considerably more effective in reference to the American attempt."*

In the fall of 1944 something radically changed. After a idea from Paul Harteck, for the first time, the fuel in the form of fuel cassettes were discontinued (the fuel reactors were here also) from being shielded from the torus. As a moderator, beryllium was used and as cooling was assisted though the use of liquid nitrogen and liquid oxygen. At this point a fantastic idea took shape. It was to combine the fuel and production reactors!

> *" In November, 1944, steps were taken to realize a fantastic idea. With the goal of increasing the production of plutonium, both of the two facilities were united. Supported by the work of the French husband*

> *and wife team of Joliot-Curie from the year 1934 in the decomposition of beta+ radiation. The reactor built here was to use this beta+ decay. With this reactor success was realized in the transformation of protons in neutrons, accompanied by the emission of positrons (e+) and neutrinos. The process can be initiated during the time that the fissionable material is enclosed with gamma radiation.*

> *The source for the radiation was the accelerator. A stream of small particles, coming form the betatron, were directed though the so-called ’schornstein” in the reactor. The Schornstein was already with the preceding reactors and served as introduction of the neutron source. In this a great quantify of plutonium was obtained. The Germans were without regard to the difficulties with the operation of the accelerator-very satisfied.”*

The word Schornstein means “chimney” in English. The work continued until the end of March 1945. By the beginning of April, steps were already being taken to destroy the facility.

> *“How many kilograms of plutonium Germany possessed is hard to say. But probably it was a sufficient quantity in order to build an atomic bomb. Surely if it had been made, if they were capable, it would have been an intelligent value, intended for critical mass if the Germans knew this value with suitable accuracy.”*

So by combining steps and reactors into one, the Germans were able to produce both uranium and plutonium more quickly than by the American system.

In addition to the “other method” there may be a third enrichment method. Edgar Mayer and Thomas Mehner report (54) that this method consisted of using a synchrotron, the outgrowth of the klystron and betatron. The synchrotron was also a development of Wideroee as well as the experts Veksler and McMillian. According to the above named researchers, use of the synchrotron allowed the Germans the direct manufacture of enriched material necessary for an atomic bomb. In other words, this was a one-step transmutation of one element into another.

And evidently this synchrotron was much larger in diameter than any accelerator so far. Evidence for this object may still be seen in aerial pictures of the Jonas Valley. A faint outline can clearly be seen of a buried, circular object from the air. This, coupled with the reports of strange lights and energy emanations during the war years point to a large, unknown and undescribed particle accelerator being buried in one of the underground facilities there.

This brings us back to Wilhelm Landig and his klystron EG projectors. He claims that after the three nuclear missiles exploded over Point 211, nothing happened. The electromagnetic pulse attack failed due to German countermeasures. This included the klystron EG projectors. What were these klystron EG projectors”

Well, they obviously were weapons and mentioned along with the V-7 by Landig as defensive measures. Clearly, they were both air-defense weapons. We remember the x-ray/gamma ray weapons the Germans studied but did not build (55). The underlying German document mentioned “bundling” for the generation of these rays. This and the German history of x-ray production leads us to the almost certainty that these weapons, had they been built, would have used klystron tubes to generate the x-rays and gamma rays. So why were they not built”

The answer must be that there was an even better option almost within their grasp. This weapon would have also used a klystron tube as its basis but may have generated another type of radiation. Since the design study mentioned above includes discussion of a range of about three miles, we can conclude the Germans had added some sort of magnetic focusing, as in a betatron, to the klystron weapon. The result may have been a weapon that ionized the atmosphere as well as overloading each and every electrical circuit in the target aircraft. It would be like turning on a cell phone and throwing it into a microwave oven.

But, is there any evidence that this weapon was under development at the end of the war" Edgar Mayer and Thomas Mehner point to the F.F.O., (the Flugfunk Forschungsinstitut Oberpfaffenhofen). This was a research and development facility. In fact, they built klystrons as well as betatrons. Allied documents admit that the F.F.O. was working on an air defense weapons. Some of these included aircraft radar jamming equipment. This would have involved klystrons. In fact, klystons are mentioned everywhere in the report.

An interesting fact is that the most secret papers and equipment at the F.F.O. was taken or destroyed before the arrival of the Allied forces:

> *"All secret documents in the F.F.O. had been collected by the Librarian Dr. Kanzler who alleges he burned them before the Allies arrived. The above documents were obtained by asking individual members and from the head of the establishment Dr. Ahrens who collected them at investigators" request.?(56)*

So what the Allies knew of the FFO was what the German scientists were willing to disclose. One is reminded of Peenemuende where a code of silence kept the development and testing of a few examples of the A-10 rocket a secret (57). Then there is the testimony given regarding work on jamming devices which would be similar to the klystron devices of our discussion:

> *"Nearly all the following information was obtained from an interview with Dipl. Ing. Physiker Helmut Heine who was in charge of the station at Werteweil and who also worked at Oberpfaffenhofen. None of his equipment was seen and he reports that it was generally taken away or destroyed as where all classified documents. Further investigation of his laboratories at Warteweil and Oberpfaffenhofen should be made with him along.?(58)*

There is yet another clue concerning this klystron technology. This comes from an internet article whose title in German translates to "Research Site for Hitler's Death Rays" (Forschungsstaette fuer Hitlers "Todesstrahlen?" (*http;//www. mainnetz.de/nachrichten/region/aschaffenburg/aschaffenburgland/land/art3986,883119*).

The news here is that another research site specifically dedicated to "death rays" has been identified. In is near the town of Ringheim. This facility was said to be for the use of Leipzig Professor Ernst. Professor Schiebold's work on gamma/X-ray weapons was reviewed in my second book.. But from sources available at that time the types of weapons were designed only with the purpose of causing biologic harm to aircraft pilots. With the new information we learn that the purpose evolved into using the exact same ionizing radiation to disrupt aircraft engines rather than causing biologic harm to the pilots. This weapon would resemble the one described as "Motorstoppmittel" but instead of radiating out in all directions, this one would be specifically directed.

A large hall of all wooden construction was to house this research facility. It was to be about 35 feet high and about 57 feet wide and about 78 feet long. This single room housed the 15 million volt transformer with enough room so that flashovers would not occur. The device generating the radiation was a betatron, built in the same manner as were the devices built by the Norwegian physicist Dr. Rolf Widroee. Underground, side bunkers held the machinery and led off to an area where the personnel would be sheltered.

On September 20, 1944 Schiebold left project “Roentgenkanonen” for other work. This project’s output must have been taken by the SS. To do anything else would have been irresponsible on their part and the acquisition of this technology would have fit well into their post-war plans.

The situation is even clearer with the FFO. It is clear that the Germans took the equipment and documents before the Allies got there. The German agency that would have desired this advanced technology and desired to deny it to the Allies was the SS. I believe the SS took a prototype klystron weapon from the F.F.O. as well as from the facility near Ringheim and it later surfaced in Antarctica in the year 1959 as Landig’s klystron-EG-projectors.

Misters Mayer and Mehner state that the Allies took an extremely unusual interest in the klystron development at the F.F.O. Now we know why. Given the progressive development of klystron technology and how it was utilized by the Germans in so many ways, now we know one reason why it was of such interest to Mr. Mehner. We have him to thank for figuring this all out for us and we will mention another possible interest the Americans may have had for this technology in the final chapter.

But what was Landig’s Klystron-EG-Projektoren really” My guess is they had to do with Tesla technology, specifically his quest for a broadcast energy system. A clue might come from Dr. Marc J. Seifer who, writing on Tesla’s “death ray” says:

> *“?They suggest that Tesla’s particle beam work is an outcropping of his experiments with X-ray machines from the same period, as well as from his independent idea of illuminating the skies with his magnifying transmitter by beaming up electrical energy to the stratosphere.” (59)*

Another clue is the method Tesla proposed using a mountain top tower to actually broadcast the energy that was tied to a huge Tesla coil. But, the two, the tower and the coil, were physically separated. A discussion of their linkage is provided by electrical engineer Toby Grotz:

> *“A location at a high altitude is initially advantageous for reducing atmospheric losses which work against an efficient coupling to the Schumann Cavity. The high frequency, high voltage output of the coil will be half wave rectified using a uniquely designed single electrode X-ray tube. The X-ray tube will be used to charge a 130 ft. tall, vertical tower, which will function to provide a vertical current moment. The mast is topped by a metal sphere 30 inches in diameter. X-rays emitted from the tube will ionize the atmosphere between the Tesla coil and the tower. This will result in a low resistance path causing all discharges to flow from the coil to the tower.?(60)*

Now the Landig’s “Klystron EG Projektoren” may have just been the simpler directed beam of ionizing radiation that causes ignition-based aircraft engines to stop running. Or something may have been added to it to make it even more effective. In other words the X-ray tube, in our case the klystron or betatron tube generating X-rays, will ionize individual gas molecules, creating a path through the atmosphere, which more easily conducts electricity. It is like a virtual wire. A Tesla coil would then instantly generated a huge, high voltage current up (or perhaps down) the ionized pathway to the target aircraft, destroying it with something like a lightning bolt. It should be remembered that there is a potential difference between elevated objects and the ground, which is striking. With a pathway in place the lightning bolt could have easily traveled this pathway in its attempt to equalize the potential difference. Either way, the experimental study referenced in my second book concluded that x-rays could be generated which would cause biologic harm to the pilot of an aircraft over three miles away (61). This would give an indication of the minim range of what Landig describes as a klystron EG projector.

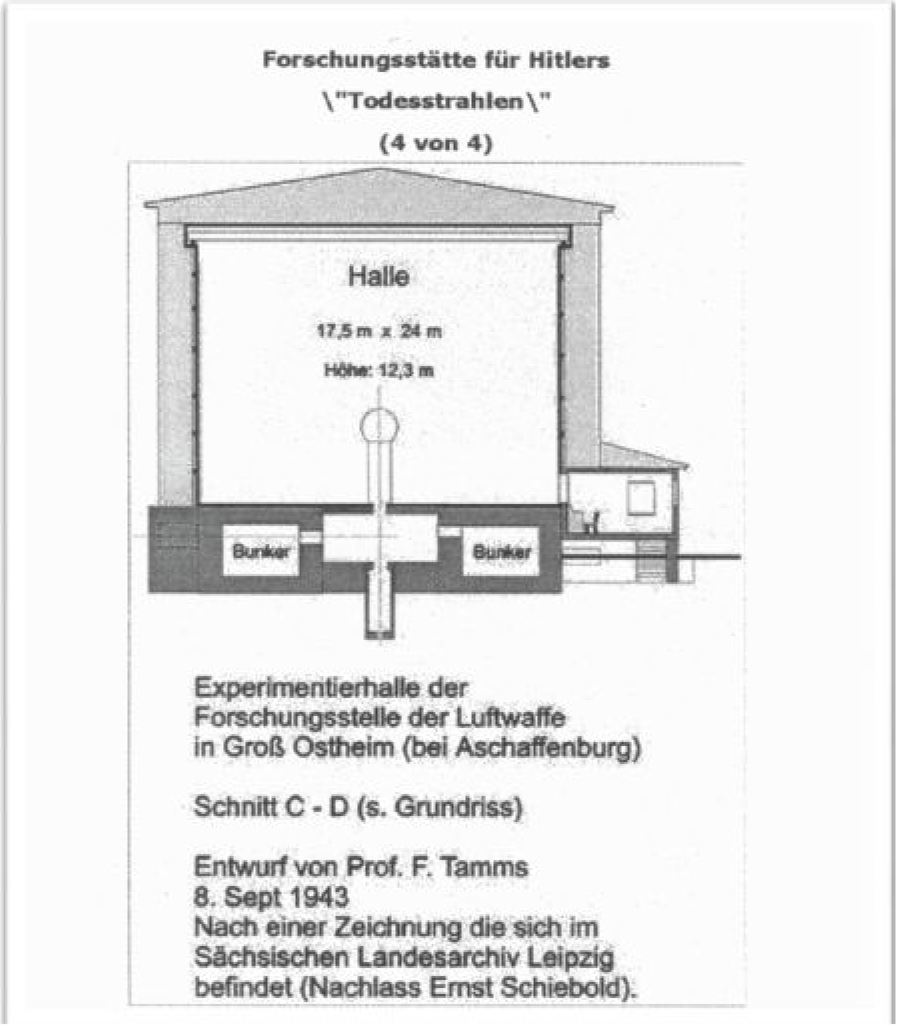
Forschungsstätte für Hitlers
\"Todesstrahlen\"
(4 von 4)
Halle
17,5 m x 24 m
Höhe: 12,3 m
Bunker
Bunker
Experimentierhalle der
Forschungsstelle der Luftwaffe
in Groß Ostheim (bei Aschaffenburg)
Schnitt C - D (s. Grundriss)
Entwurf von Prof. F. Tamms
8. Sept 1943
Nach einer Zeichnung die sich im
Sächsischen Landesarchiv Leipzig
befindet (Nachlass Ernst Schiebold).

An actual "Death Ray" Research facility This diagram is of an experimental structure, designed for death ray testing, in Gross Ostheim, near Aschaffenburg. It is a drawing by Professor F. Tamms, September 8, 1943, after a diagram in the Saxon Archives, Leipzig by permission of Ernst Scheibold.

So, what can be said of Base 211" Was it a physical reality" Did this base possess tunnels, underground rooms, and high technology" Was it a U-boat base with hidden entrances and turntables for the submarines" Could people have remained hidden there for years" Well, a consideration of our next subject, Fuerteventura, may answer those questions.

Literature Cited

1. **Stevens, Henry, 2003**, *Hitler's Flying Saucers A Guide to German Flying Discs Of The Second World War*, pages 245-247, Adventures Unlimited Publishing, Kempton, Illinois, USA

2. **Daehnhardt, Rainer, 1998**, *Dos Acores a Antarctida*, Publicacoes Quipu, Lisbon, Portugal, ISBN 972-8408-08-0

3. *Personal communication via telephone in which Mr. Daehnhardt informed the author of this fact.*

4. **Mattern, W. , date unknown**,*UFO's Unbekanntes Flugobjekt" Letzte Geheimwaffe Des Dritten Reiches"*, page 89, Samisdat Publishing, Toronto, Canada

5. **Henshall, Philip, 1995**, *Vengence Hitler's Neuclear Weapon Fact or Fiction*, page 122, Alan Sutton Publishing Limited, Gloucestershire, England, ISBN 0-7509-0874-2

6. **Landig, Wilhelm, 1980**, *Wolfzeit Um Thule*, pages 29, 30, 87, Volkstum -Verlag/ Wilhelm Landig, Vienna, Austria

7. **Landig, Wihelm, 1991**, *Rebellen Fuer Thule Das Erbe Von Atlantis*, page 575, Volkstum-Verlag, Vienna, Austria

8. **Bergmann, O., 1988**, *I Deutsche Flugscheiben und U-Boote Ueberwachen Die Weltmeere*, pages 14 and 68, Hugin Publishing, Wetter/Ruhr, Germany

9. **Gehring, Heiner and Karl-Heinz Zunneck, 2005**, *Flugscheiben Ueber Neuschwabenland Die Wahrhiet ueber “Vril?, “Haunebu” und die Templer-Erbengemeinschaft*, page 88, Jochen Kopp Verlag, Rottenburg, Germany

10. **Geheimtechnologien, Wunderwaffen Und Irdischen Facetten Des UFO-Phaenomens 50 Jare Desinformation und die Folgen, 1998**, CTT-Verlag, Suhl, Germany

11. **Gehring, Heiner and Karl-Heinz Zunneck, 2005**, page 91

12. **Buechner, Howard A., Colonel, and Captain Wilhelm Bernhart, 1988**, *Adolf Hitler And The Secrets Of The Holy Lance*, pages 148 and 149, Thunderbird Press, Inc., Metairie, Louisiana, USA

13. **Buechner, Howard A., Colonel, and Captain Wilhelm Bernhart, 1988**, page 158, 159

14. **Buechner, Howard A., Colonel and Captain Wilhelm Bernhart, 1988**, page 148

15. *ibid*.

16. **Buechner, Howard A., Colonel, and Captain Wilhelm Bernhart, 1989**, *Hitler’s Ashes,* pages 156-157, Thunderbird Press, Inc., Metairie, Louisiana, USA

17. **Buechner, Howard A., Colonel, and Captain Wilhelm Bernhart, 1988**, page 167

18. **Buechner, Howard A., Colonel, and Captain Wilhelm Bernhart, 1989**, page 228

19. **Breckmann, Georg, 2008**, *Channeling the Visitors*, self-published

20. **Salla, Michael E., Ph.D., 2003**, *Foundations for Globally Managing Extraterrestrial Affairs -The Legacy of the Nazi Germany-Extraterrestrial Connection, Research study #6*, posted on the internet under the URLs www.exopolitics.org, http://www.exopolitics.org/Study-Paper-6.htm and http://www.fourwinds10.com/news/13-space/G-aliens-UFO/2003/13G-10-11-

21. *Dr. Michael Salla references the work of Robert Lesniakiewicz at http://notizieufo.com/pol5.htm and The Omega File: Nazi History at http://www.think-abutit.com/Omega/files/omega3.htm* I could not find either reference. This may not be surprising given the transitory nature of the internet. I have not seen them all but most internet sites I have seen regarding this and related topics are junk. The only web-site that I have seen which I can recommend is Maurizio Verga's www.naziufos.com

22. **Jesensky, Milos, Ph.D., and Robert Lesniakiewicz, 1998**, *"Wunderland" Momozemske Technologe Treti Rise*, Aos Publishing

23. **Britain's Secret War In Antarctica, an article written by James Robert, Nexus magazine, October 2005**, page 41-46 and 81,

24. **Landig, Wilhelm, 1980**, pages 61, 62

25. **Buechner, Howard A., Col., and Wilhelm Bernhart, 1989**, page 151

26. *ibid*.

27. **Mattern, W., date unknown**, page 114

28. **Landig, Wilhelm, 1980**, page 192

29. **Buechner, Howard A., Col., and Wilhelm Bernhart, 1989**, page 230

30. **Mattern, W. date unknown**, page 114

31. *ibid*.

32. **Landig, Wilhelm, 1980**, page 193

33. **Mattern, W., date unknown**, page 114

34. *ibid*.

35. **Mattern, W. date unknown**, page 114

36. *ibid*.

37. **Buechner, Howard A., Col., and Wilhelm Bernhart, 1989**, page 230

38. **Mattern, W. date unknown**, page 111 Here Mattern cites *El Mercuro*, July 7, 1947

39. **Landig, Wilhelm, 1980**, page 195

40. **Haarmann, D.H., 1983**, II Geheime Wunderwaffen “und sie fliegen doch!, page 23, Hugin Gesellschaft Fuer Politisch-Philosophische Studien E.V., Hoerschel, Germany

41. **Landig, Wilhelm, 1991**, *Rebellen fuer Thule*, page 571, 572, Volkstum-Verlag, Vienna, Austria.

42. **Landig, Wilhelm, 1991**, page 571

43. **Landig, Wilhelm, 1991**, page 572

44. *ibid*.

45. *ibid*.

46. What is a Klystron Tube” http://www.wisegeek.com/what-is-a-klystron-tube.htm

47. **Stevens, Henry, 2007**, pages 190 to 197

48. Klystron, Wikipedia, http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Klystron

49. *ibid*.

50. *Synchrotron*, *http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Synchrotron*

51. *Acceleration Characteristics of Positron Generator Linac*, http://www.slac.Stanford.edu/ pubs/slacreports05/linacB6-133.pdf

52. **Mayer, Edgar and Thomas Mehner, 2002**, *Die Atombombe und das Dritte Reich Das Geheimnis des Dreiecks Arnstadt-Wechmar-Ohrdruf*, pages 161-193, Jochen Kopp Verlag, Rottenburg, Germany

53. *TheOther Method, internet article in Polish, http://www.republika.pl/skarbom and http://www.eksplorator.cud.pl/1.htm Also published in German translation: Edgar Mayer and Thomas Mehner, 2002, pages 182 to 187*

54. **Mayer, Edgar and Thomas Mehner, 2002**, page 188

55. **Stevens, Henry, 2007**, pages 190-197

56. **Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee (CIOS), Evlauation Report 156, 1st July 1945** of Flugfunk Forschungsinstitut Oberpfaffenhofen F.F.O. Establishments (Target Nos. 1/32, 6/50)

57. **Stevens, Henry, 2007**, pages 228-238

58. Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee CIOS) Evaluation Report 156, 1st July 1945 of F.F.O. (see above)

59. **Seifer, Marc J., Ph.D., date unknown**, *Nikola Tesla: The History Of Lasers And Particle Beam Weapons*, an article appearing in *The Tesla Papers Nikola Tesla n free Energy & Wiresless Transmission of Power*, 2000, edited by David Hatcher Childress, Adventures Unlimited Publishing, Kempton, Illinois, USA

60. **Grotz, Toby, B.S.E.E., date unknown**, *Wireless Transmission Of Power Resonating Planet Earth*, an article in *The Tesla Papers Nikola Tesla on Free Energy & Wireless Transmission of Power*, 2000, edited by David Hatcher Childress, page 81, Adventures Unlimited Publishing, Kempton, Illinios, USA

61. **Stevens, Henry, 2007**, pages 190-197

FUERTEVENTURA

Fuerteventura is a small island in the Canary Islands. It is one of the easternmost islands of that chain, nearest Africa. There is no longer any doubt that a secret German base existed on Fuerteventura during the Second World War. One is reminded of the statement by Admiral Karl Doenitz about how the German Navy knew all the ocean’s hiding places. Well, this is certainly one of them?a secret base in plain sight.

This base has been mentioned by me in both my earlier books. Others have discussed this base, writing in German language. For some reason general knowledge of this base has not penetrated the conscience of the English-speaking world, probably because of the language barrier. I say this because the real description of the base is in German that has never been translated into English.

Fuerteventura is a resort spot but an out-of-the-way one. From discussions I have heard there is a small tourist town there that includes a bar. Rumors of the secret German base have always been discussed and questions asked about it, mostly by tourists. Evidently, everyone or most everyone on the island denies these rumors in public but affirm them in private. But everyone, even you dear reader, have heard of this base in a roundabout way. This was the secret U-boat bunker featured in the George Lucas/Steven Spielberg film “Raiders of the Lost Ark?. In that film a U-boat sailed right inside the island, using a tunnel, into a huge cavern that was perhaps an ancient volcanic blister. There, the Nazi bad guys had erected submarine support equipment, turntables for U-boats, along with supporting manpower.

In 1971 Stern magazine published an article about the father of this base and the base itself in an article titled (and translated to English) “The Fantastic History of Don Gustavos, His Secret House and the U-Boat Base” (1). According to the rumors and the facts on the ground, the father of this secret base was a German General, Gustav Winter. General Winter built a large, white villa on the high point of this island. The rumor was that a staircase descended down into the bowels of the island, connecting to this secret base.

Researchers Heiner Gehring and Karl Heinz-Zunneck did some research on General Winter, which is illuminating. Winter was born in 1893 in the Black Forest and was trained as an engineer. He died in 1971, a few months before the Stern article. Gustav Winter performed some outstanding service for the Germans, which we will discuss later, and for that service he was granted land on the southern peninsula of Fuerteventura. During the Second World War, Winter was the driving force behind a project to build a secret U-boat bunder on the island. He was also an agent for the Abwehr, one of the German spy services (2). The major feature of this bunder was a huge natural cavity that was connected to the sea by tunnels bored into the solid rock. Ventilation shafts were also dug upward towards what was now the Villa Winter. This facility functioned as a military base during the war and was heavily armed and guarded. After the war a portions of the facility, with the exception of the airport, were destroyed with explosives. Today part of this site belongs to a nature park but part is still in private hands.

The best information to date comes, not from Stern, but from another German magazine, Nugget. Nugget is not a flying saucer magazine or new age magazine nor does it deal with strangeness or even World War Two as a rule. Nugget is a magazine of treasure hunters. Below the title “Nugget” is written the words (in English) Gold, Minerals, Treasure Seeking, Adventure. Most readers are familiar with this genre. The “adventure” involved is the mild adventure associated with finding or traveling to the treasure in question. Two articles were written titled: The U-Boat Bunker of Fuerteventure in the July, 1984 and August, 1984 editions. So what will be done is that we will take a look at these articles translated into English and see it they hold any clues to our story of German secret bases (3).

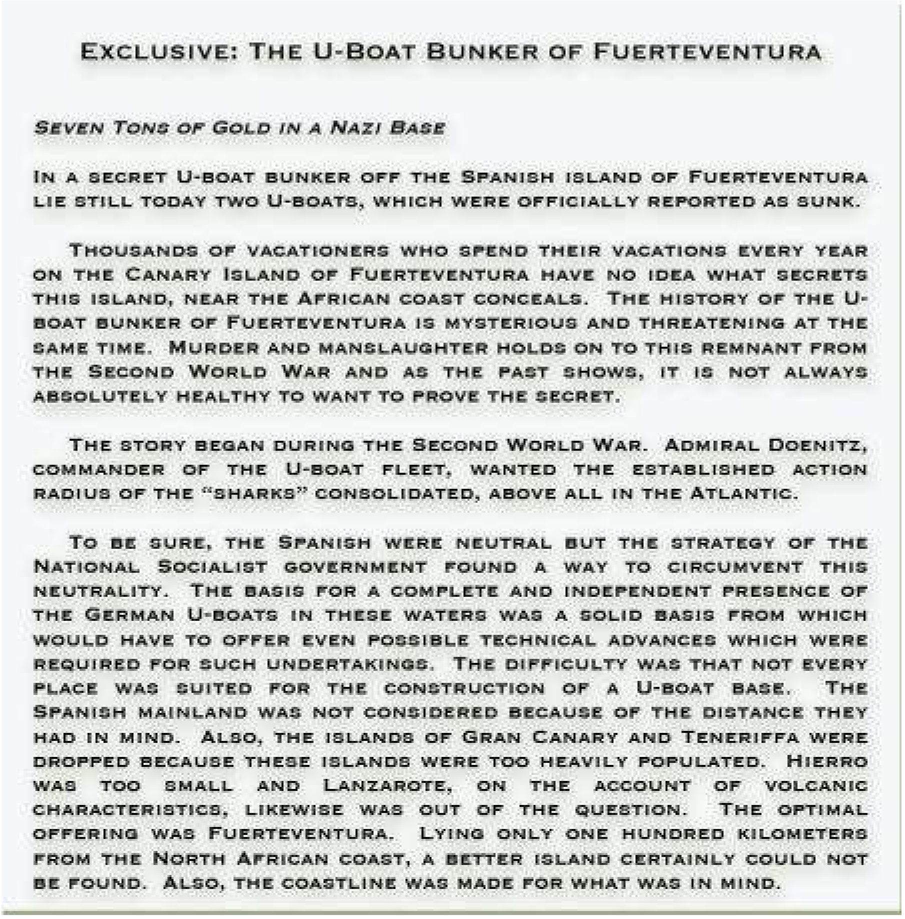

Exclusive: The U-Boat Bunker of Fuerteventura

Seven Tons of Gold in a Nazi Base

In a secret U-boat bunker off the Spanish island of Fuerteventura lie still today two U-boats, which were officially reported as sunk.

Thousands of vacationers who spend their vacations every year on the Canary Island of Fuerteventura have no idea what secrets this island, near the African coast conceals. The history of the U-boat bunker of Fuerteventura is mysterious and threatening at the same time. Murder and manslaughter holds on to this remnant from the Second World War and as the past shows, it is not always absolutely healthy to want to prove the secret.

The story began during the Second World War. Admiral Doenitz, commander of the U-boat fleet, wanted the established action radius of the “sharks” consolidated, above all in the Atlantic.

To be sure, the Spanish were neutral but the strategy of the National Socialist government found a way to circumvent this neutrality. The basis for a complete and independent presence of the German U-boats in these waters was a solid basis from which would have to offer even possible technical advances which were required for such undertakings. The difficulty was that not every place was suited for the construction of a U-boat base. The Spanish mainland was not considered because of the distance they had in mind. Also, the islands of Gran Canary and Teneriffa were dropped because these islands were too heavily populated. Hierro was too small and Lanzarote, on the account of volcanic characteristics, likewise was out of the question. The optimal offering was Fuerteventura. Lying only one hundred kilometers from the North African coast, a better island certainly could not be found. Also, the coastline was made for what was in mind.

The Spanish government soon made up its mind. Large parts of Fuerteventura were purchased. The owner was considered to be General Winter who, at the same time, was authorized with the fortification and construction of a base. The activity that immediately would develop was then also enormous. From Germany special troops were brought whose problem it was to search for water and to bore wells. The water supply was already at this time a large problem on this island of the Canaries.

A Villa Serves As Direction Finder

In order to make the possibilities of transportation easier, a narrow gauge railroad was especially built whose remains still can be seen today. With the construction of the base the construction commandos made use of the fact that at many places huge air bubbles had been molded through volcanic activity. These natural domes of which certainly most were only reachable from the sea, were outstandingly suited for a secret base.

In the South of the island a magnificent villa was built in terrain that enabled a very good view. It can be assumed that the villa with its tower served as an orientation and direction finder for U-boats making land. There today, no sort of construction plans can be hunted up any longer. They were either destroyed because of security reasons or, because of explosion, they were kept under lock and key. It was assumed that in one vicinity of the villa near Barranca a dry stairway was dug out. In this way it must have been possible to push through to an air bubble from the land.

In the phase of the construction work the greatest part of the population were evacuated. Possibly, this was for a reason, whereby with nobody on hand, nobody will know of the U-boat bunker. It is known that the construction work must have gone on in a very satisfying manner because soon there after a large freight ship made port on the island.

Two large multi-ton lathes were transported to Fuerteventura where they disappeared in the U-boat base. At the spot where the Barranca was found a cement roof was perhaps drawn over on top and so over that the original state of affairs were again set in place.

Also, at least two entrances to the subterranean installation must have existed since this was the only bunker that would have to be accessed underwater.

For U-boats of the 7-C Class it was thoroughly possible to take bearings at periscope depth and to near this point at a crawling speed.

The sense and purpose of this secret base must have been created on a completely independent basis, which was also administered and conducted completely autonomously.

It remains open if the real purpose, above all, was the smuggling of tungsten, which was known to have been wrapped up with this

7 Tons of Gold for the Base

One thing is certainly clear: every autonomous base must be financially independent from the Reich. At least it was ever so certain that there was the availability of an adequate, well-fortified cash box. That it must have dealt in gold is without a doubt.

Gold was, in such cases, a legal tender that was superior to all other monetary means. According to similar and corresponding statements, the amount dealt with was about 7 tons of gold. The base was prepared for action and, likewise, always for whatever secret action.

Fuerteventura - 1974

A large yacht moved itself about for a day in the waters around the island. The crew, two Spaniards and an Austrian, acted like tourists. Where ever they surfaced they were well received because of their gregarious, likable manner had made them many friends among which were not the government look-outs whom did not exactly have their blessings. But one thing attracted attention again and again. They always brought up conversation concerning the topic of the Second World War and also of the missing U-boat base and where exactly it could be found.

Again and again the yacht cruised the southern waters of Fuerteventura. One day the members of the crew dropped anchor. While one man remained on the yacht, two divers slipped into the water from the side of the ship away from the shore. They purposefully neared the coast, where, in about 6 meters in depth, gaped a large dark opening—doubtless the entrance to the bunker. To be sure, the seabed here in the course of time is heavily choked with sand but the opening is still almost five meters high. A strong current prevailed with made it hard for both divers to move and also made the visibility at the bottom of the tunnel not more than two to three meters. Becoming wide in the interior of the tunnel, they deposited a flashlight that they had brought as a reserve for emergencies.

Gradually the water became shallower and after some meters they ran into a cement wall. The end of the tunnel has been reached. They climbed up over the wall on an iron ladder and for the first time immediately put away their diving gear. When they let their searchlights of their underwater lamps stretch over the interior of the huge cavern they were pale and it seemed to time that the blood froze in their veins...

What they saw as so monstrous that they both had to immediately sit down.

Part II

Two Spanish journalists succeeded in finding the underwater entrance to the U-boat bunker. They surfaced inside in order to investigate the secret of the bunker. What they saw inside was so monstrous that they immediately had to sit down.

In the defused light of their underwater flash lights they recognized machines in the background of the once natural cavern. But there were shadows which left the blood in their veins completely frozen. The cone of light of their flashlights swept over two U-boats of the 7-C class. As both divers caught hold of themselves they went towards the "sharks" to investigate closer. The U-boats were marked with the fastening of steel lines in the Atlantic surf, which were strongly noticeable. The attempt to open the U-boat on the left wall failed. They tried it on the U-boat to the right. Here they succeeded to open the turret hatch. They were now prepared for the worst. But as they carefully climbed down the tower nothing happened. In the light of their flashlights they recognized that everything had been lift in an orderly state. There was no sign of hasty flight or panic at all. It seemed as if the U-boats were ready to put out to sea.

Nautical Maps of South America

A pile of nautical maps stirred up their attention. One map especially caught their eye. The map of the coast of South America! Six points were marked with the letter "T" in a circle. Between the maps they found newspaper clippings.

They both laid everything back in their piles and climbed back out of the boat. After they closed the turret hatch they noted the number of the U-boat. Meanwhile, after the time came in they decided on a return dive to the ship and, on the next day, to come again to salvage the objects and particulars they had found.

The current had, in the meantime, become worse. They barely reached the diving gear that they had deposited which they had left behind in the case of emergency. They climbed back into the boat, again from the side that did not face the island, where the third man, the Austrian, awaited. After they had communicated their discovery, they verified, in a manual, the numbers of both U-boats and experienced, once again, a surprise. The numbers of the U-boats lying in the bunker were officially considered to have been sunk!

As they lay with their boat turned in a southerly direction, the villa Winter, with its small tower was like a fortress in the sparse landscape of Fuerteventura.

This night nothing special occurred on this small Canary Island other than that of a fire breaking out on a tourist ship with a

1977 Gran Canary

I got to know a man in a restaurant who was already here since the end of the war. "Charlie" as everyone here calls him, was a fighter pilot and after an accident he was sent to the command of a U-boat unit. Here in Gran Canary, Charlie is a general servant for everything. For the present he accompanied a German film team that shot a film here and on Lazarote. One day I brought up conversation of attack German U-boats. The veteran told me that they once surfaced inside a bunker. Immediately, I broke in with the story of the Fuerteventura bunker. With a doubting voice in opposition, I was told that such a thing was impossible. And now Charlie is not available. He himself has made the surface bearings about a mile from the island. The reference point is two rocky points which produce a "U". One point is round and large while the other point is small.

In conformity with Charlie's statement they moved themselves at a creeping speed back and forth in front of the island for four hours. There, according to the statement of his commander, the entrance was only possible at a certain time. Besides this the entrance should sometimes be visible on the upper margin in heavy surf. As I asked a couple of questions, Charlie described to me the inside of the bunker. Finally, as he spoke of two giant lathes, I knew that it must concern the secretive bunker.

Further, Charlie explained that the Commandant of the base blew up the land path in the early part of 1945. From here on the refuge was accessible only by means of water. And now came Charlie's story of adventure, like a blow from a hammer.

Vanishing Point for War Criminals

The base was said to have been active to 1950. With the knowledge of the American government, from here were allegedly brought wanted war criminals and Nazis to overseas destinations. Originally, there had been three U-boats but one was actually sunk in the vicinity of Florida. The idea occurred that both remaining U-boats likewise be noted as sunken. On my inquiry, because the crew remains present, the old ply for hire is the answer. The crew would have lived a civilized life on the island and would have only been active in response situations.

How did he know these things so exactly, I questioned him? But Charlie had a plausible explanation for this. Here on Gran Canary still lived a few of his former comrades, he explained. You know, when veterans meet we don't always talk about women. Then, often times the talk is of the past times. That was clear to me. But what was not clear to me was the whereabouts of the gold. "You can't forget the gold", laughed Charlie. "Look once around Fuerteventura yourself—what do you see for buildings?" "Well, hotels", I answered. "You see, and these hotels have cost much money." "When you look to whom these crates belong you will find many German names."

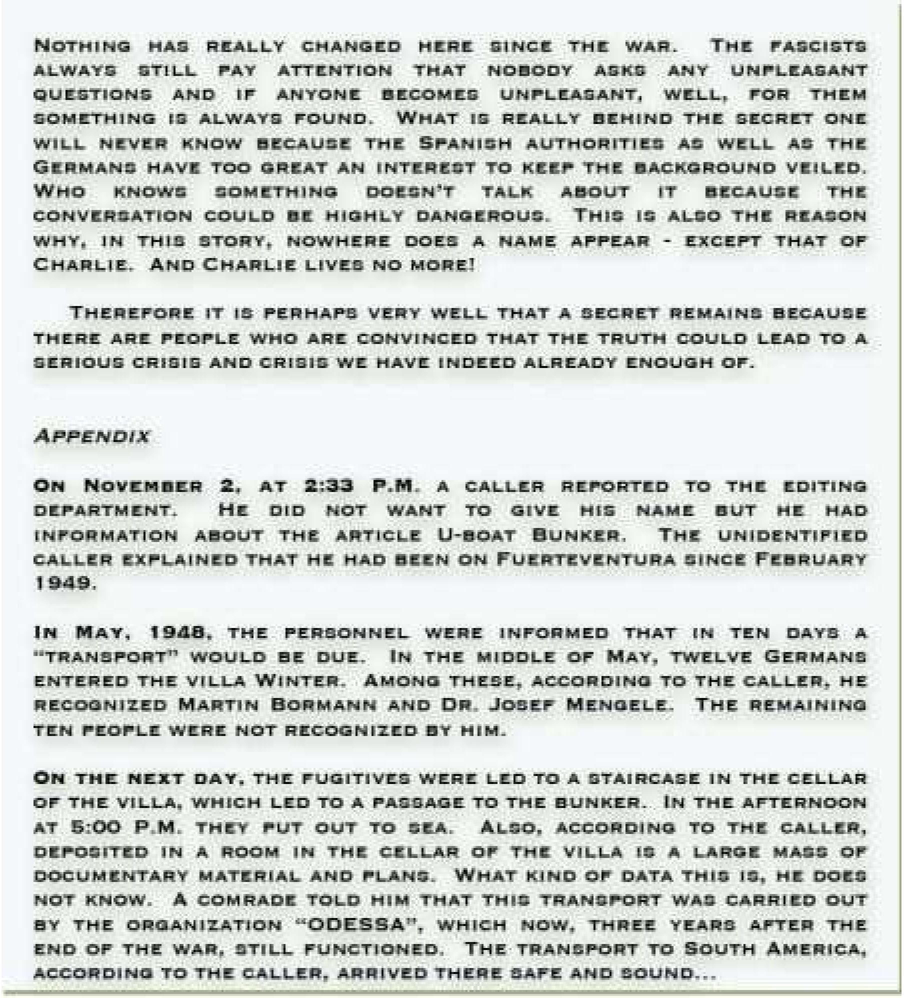

Nothing has really changed here since the war. The fascists always still pay attention that nobody asks any unpleasant questions and if anyone becomes unpleasant, well, for them something is always found. What is really behind the secret one will never know because the Spanish authorities as well as the Germans have too great an interest to keep the background veiled. Who knows something doesn't talk about it because the conversation could be highly dangerous. This is also the reason why, in this story, nowhere does a name appear - except that of Charlie. And Charlie lives no more!

Therefore it is perhaps very well that a secret remains because there are people who are convinced that the truth could lead to a serious crisis and crisis we have indeed already enough of.

Appendix

On November 2, at 2:33 P.M. a caller reported to the editing department. He did not want to give his name but he had information about the article U-boat Bunker. The unidentified caller explained that he had been on Fuerteventura since February 1949.

In May, 1948, the personnel were informed that in ten days a "transport" would be due. In the middle of May, twelve Germans entered the villa Winter. Among these, according to the caller, he recognized Martin Bormann and Dr. Josef Mengele. The remaining ten people were not recognized by him.

On the next day, the fugitives were led to a staircase in the cellar of the villa, which led to a passage to the bunker. In the afternoon at 5:00 P.M. they put out to sea. Also, according to the caller, deposited in a room in the cellar of the villa is a large mass of documentary material and plans. What kind of data this is, he does not know. A comrade told him that this transport was carried out by the organization "ODESSA", which now, three years after the end of the war, still functioned. The transport to South America, according to the caller, arrived there safe and sound...

Here in the Canary Islands was an SS base that operated after World War Two. In fact, two U-boats were on-call and continued to be on-call for some time even after their last mission. We know this because the informant, "Charlie?, includes the detail that the crew lived in the Canary Islands.

This base functioned at least up until 1950 and with the knowledge and consent. This would be the intelligence services of the USA, probably the CIA. We will get into this relationship later but we begin to see that this relationship between the surviving SS organizations, which became the "Nazi International" or The Third Power, was not always adversarial.

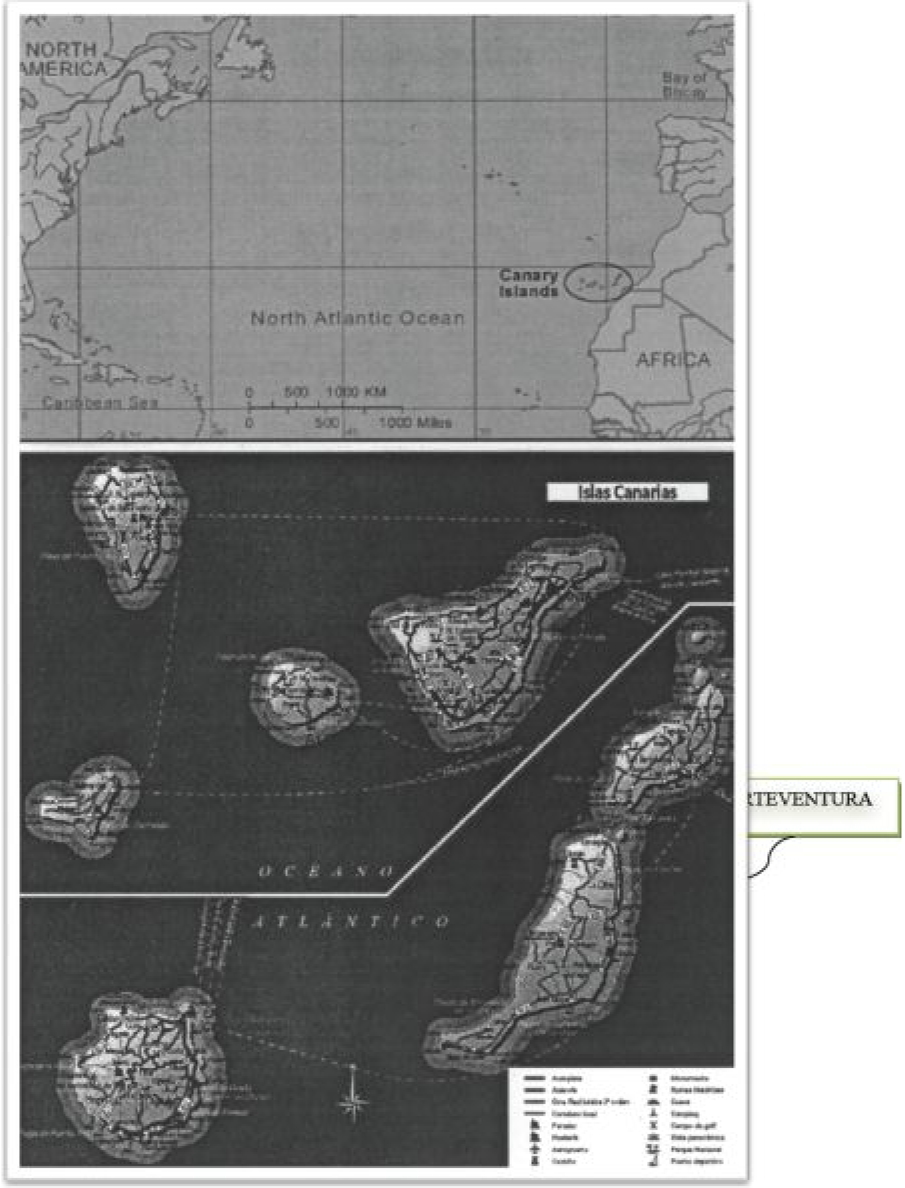
NORTH AMERICA
Bay of Biscay
Canary Islands
North Atlantic Ocean
AFRICA
Caribbean Sea
0 500 1000 KM
0 500 1000 Miles
Islas Canarias
RTEVENTURA
OCÉANO
ATLÁNTICO

The Island of Fuerteventura

Fuerteventura is part of the Canary Islands just off the coast of Africa

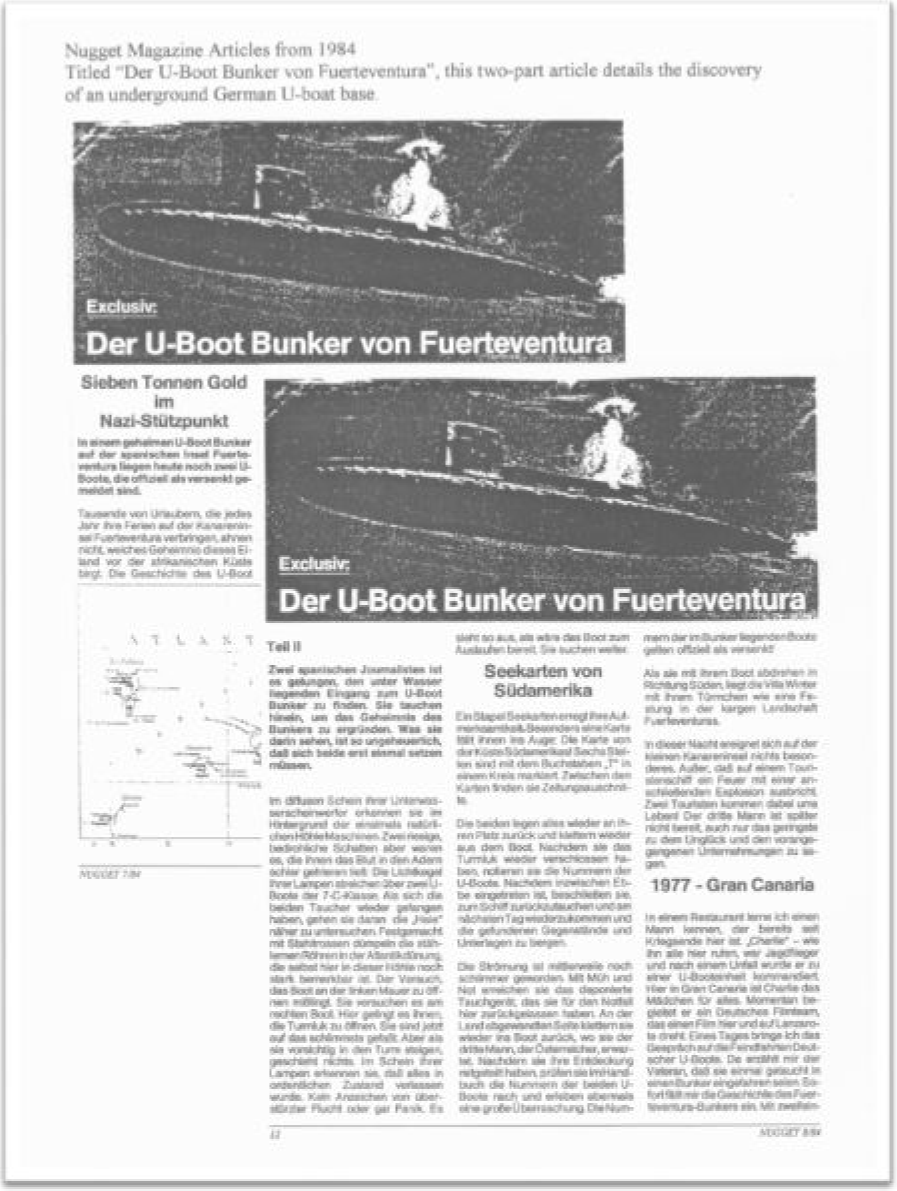

Nugget Magazine Articles from 1984
Titled "Der U-Boot Bunker von Fuerteventura", this two-part article details the discovery of an underground German U-boat base.

Exclusiv:
Der U-Boot Bunker von Fuerteventura

Sieben Tonnen Gold im Nazi-Stützpunkt

Exclusiv:
Der U-Boot Bunker von Fuerteventura

Teil II

Seekarten von Südamerika

1977 - Gran Canaria

Nugget Magazine Articles from 1984

Titled “Der U-Boot Bunker von Fuerteventura?, this two-part article details the discovery of an underground German U-boat base.

Knowledge of this base and its continued existence after the war brings up claims of other facilities, laboratories, being operated by the SS after the war. Yes, there are those that say this is so and was done, not over the horizon in some never-never land, but right in Europe itself!

Misters Mayer and Mehner publish parts of a letter received presumable after publication of earlier investigative works. This letter was from a Mrs. Maria W. whose husband had worked as the chief of the construction-planning department of the German Post Office (Deutschen Reichspost). The Reichspost functioned as a research and development arm of the German government at that time. This was particularly true of atomic research being done in Germany of which the Deutschen Reichspost was a major player. Mrs. W. establishes herself as a credible witness by describing historical and biographical details that would only be known to governmental insiders of those times. In her letter she discusses secret facilities she knows will be of interest, particularly to Mr. Mehner, those concerning the Jonas Valley. She says in her letter, describing Marineheim near Sitzendorf in Schwarzatal that this area was not known to the Americans and Russians. This probably means the significance of these areas were not known to the Americans and Russians since they both obviously had maps. This area had “Anlage” in her words, which I translate as “facility?. This facility had a close connection to Arnstadt (Jonas Valley), the U-boot supply and the Mitteldeutschen Werk (probably meaning the Nordhausen V-weapons plant). Mrs. W. says the SS operated this particular facility until 1952 (4). This, obviously, is inside Germany!

Not only that. She goes on to describe a small train track running to Bienstein (presumably also from the area of the Jonas Valley) that ran into a mountain. The Russians found the train track but did not ever follow the track fully into the mountain. This was the entrance to a German facility underground. For whatever reason, the Russians did not find the German facility there. Mrs. W. says this was a “Fusionsanlage” an atomic fusion facility. Not fission but fusion, as in hydrogen bomb! The big news is that this facility operated until 1952! At that time it was shut down but remains ready to fully resume operation (5).

Copies of the two U-boat Bunker of Fuerteventura articles were sent to researcher Mark D. Kneipp who had some interesting comments. He wrote to me in a letter that he believed the two U-boats may have been U1020 and U1021. According to his work, these were both type VII-C-41s that “were completely rebuilt with the latest sound detection and weaponry just before the end of the war.” A premise under which I am working is that towards the end of the war the German Navy did not produce a totally new class of U-boats in which to test new engines and weaponry as the did with the Type 26, building a test type, the Type 17b. Instead, they refitted damaged or archaic U-boats as they presented themselves on an individual basis.

But the thing which should most concern us is the description of the base and its almost certainty of actual existence. If you accept the description of the base as a huge, hollow, natural volcanic bubble, connected to and accessible to the sea by tunnels, being full of machinery necessary to run a U-boat bunker, almost in plain sight, overflown and monitored on the surface by Allied aircraft and ships, then the proposition must be taken seriously that the Germans also had similar bases in areas where they would have been able to construct them unhindered. The fact is that the German base at Fuerteventura alone makes the case for the strong possibility if not the probability of similar bases in the Arctic and Antarctic.

But if that is not enough, there is one more tiny piece of evidence, which was promised and to which we return now. By this it is meant that “outstanding service” performed for the Germans by General and engineer Gustav Winter, for which he was given land on Fuerteventura and oversight of the base there. Before the war engineer Gustav Winter worked on research, using a strong magnetic field, to influence the compasses of ships and U-boats (6). This could only be the Magnetofunk device that was said to have been employed at Point 103 and perhaps elsewhere to divert enemy aircraft that were seeking these bases in order to destroy them (7). Even legends sounding crazy at first blush can have a basis in reality.

Literature Cited

1. **Gehring, Heiner and Karl-Heinz Zunneck, 2005**, *Flugscheiben ueber Neuschwabenland Die Wahrheit ueber "Vril?, "Haunebu" und die Templer-Erbengemeinschaft*, page 165, Jochen Kopp Verlag, Rottenburg, Germany

2. *ibid.*

3. *Nugget* (magazine), July and August 1984 editions, *Der U-Boot Bunker von Fuerteventura*, Two part story in consecutive editions

4. **Mayer, Edgar and Thomas Mehner, 2002**, *Die Atombombe und das Dritte Reich*, page 203, Jochen Kopp Verlag, Rottenburg, Germany

5. **Mayer, Edgar and Thomas Mehner, 2002**, page 204

6. **Gehring, Heiner and Karl-Heinz Zunneck, 2005**, page 165

7. **Stevens, Henry, 2007**, *Hitler's suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science and Technology*, pages 52 to 57, Adventures Unlimited Publishing, Kempton, Illinois, USA

ELECTRIC SCHAUBERGER

We are going to take a little break before beginning with a discussion of Nazi secret bases in South America. And here I would like to make an apology. In my first book I discussed the Schauberger saucer and mentioned that rather than use air or water, which were Schauberger’s mediums, the German government would have been more interested in taking the principles, the basis by which the Schauberger saucer flew, and incorporating these principles into a saucer design but one which used modern electronic components rather than air. Comments are made about this statement, such as by Dr. Joseph Farrell (1). My apology is not about this statement itself which is true and should serve as an introduction as to why we are discussing Schauberger at this time. My apology is rather that I did not originate these words or the underlying concept of using modern electronics to replicate Schaubergian principles. Instead, a truly first-rate mind came up with it, that of “Dr. Gordon Freeman?. I only repeated it without proper ascription of its source. Sorry Dr. Freeman. Believe me, I have tried to enlist Dr. Freeman in writing a book which would explain this and other concepts to the rest of the world but he has declined. Dr. Freeman is busy frying bigger fish.

Let us return to Viktor Schauberger and the idea of building a saucer using Schaubergian principles but out of electric components. Schauberger’s saucer and ideas are explained by Coats (2) who devotes a book to it, by me in my first book, (3) and again by Farrell (4). Actually, this “electronic component?-thing will become self-apparent if we just look at his saucer from another perspective. We have to do a little table-setting first. We are going to go over the publicized test of the Schauberger saucer and try to uncover some of the physics that would allow this to happen.

During the war Schauberger worked for the Nazi government and probably the SS at Castle Schoenbrunn. But prior to that, in 1940, Schauberger built two saucer models, one of which was tested at the place were it was fabricated, the Kertl company in Vienna. Schauberger had two objectives according to Coats:

> *"The purpose of these prototypes was two-fold:*
>
> 1. *the further investigation of free energy production, and*
> 2. *the validation of Viktor's theories on levitational flight.*
>
> *Whereas the first case required the upper aerodynamic portion to be permanently fixed to the base, the 2nd case required its attachment to a quick-release coupling to permit its ascent once auto-rotation and the generation of levitational force had had been achieved. To initiate the energetic process, a small high-speed electric motor was used, capable of producing between 10,000 and 20,000 rpm.*
>
> *Despite its compact size, this machine generated such a powerful levitational force that when it was first switched on (without Viktor Schauberger's permission and in his absence!), it sheared the six 1/4 diameter high-tensile steel anchor bolts and shot upwards to smash against the roof of the hangar. According to Viktor Schauberger's calculations, based on the data from previous tests, a 20 cm diameter device with a rotational velocity of 20,000 rpm world have generated levitational forces of such magnitude that it would have lifted a weight of 228 tonnes.?(5)*

The exact “levitational forces” have always been a mystery. Everyone has had a shot at explaining it.

The Schauberger saucer was made of copper, a conductor. As stated above, it was 20 cm in diameter. The pictures show it with a top and without but the completed saucer flew with the top. The top was perforated with several holes that allowed air to enter from the sides and perhaps the top. The rapidly spinning saucer then guided the air downward and then at right angles toward the periphery of the saucer, being forced between two undulating plates. As the air made its way to the periphery, it was rolled over by the centrifugal motion of the spinning saucer and formed into several mini-tornadoes. The air exited at the outer edge of the saucer where it was forced by vanes all pointing in the same direction into imparting the torque necessary for continued rotation. Dr. Freeman made the point that the air entering the saucer was also formed into vortices, one within another and extending a distance beyond the hat-like structure. The extension would also be horizontal and in the exact opposite direction of the vortices inside the saucer making their way toward the periphery. Coats goes on with another detail:

> *“In addition a glowing bluish white discharge akin to ionization is produced.”* (6)

The suspicion here is that it was an electrical effect. For instance, Coats points to triboluminscence in explaining the above (7). In addition, cooling is observed around the saucer. What could cause all of this” What, that is, in our known physical world and without resorting to physical processes or mechanisms which are not yet in evidence”

Air would enter the top, or hat, portion and be drawn downward simply because the saucer was being spun at 10,000 to 20,000 revolutions per minute. As a result, the centrifugal force of the air already within the saucer was being ejected, creating a low pressure area inside the saucer that would simply draw more air in. This is caused by the small electric motor spinning the saucer, ramping it up to auto-rational speed. There is nothing strange here. But there is an electrical phenomena, the bluish-white light and the levitational effects which still remain unexplained. For this we have to start where Schauberger starts, with Lord Kelvin’s water thread demonstration.

Lord Kelvin’s apparatus, shown below, demonstrates water’s ability to accept and conduct an electrical charge. It has been given several different names over the years, including *Kelvin’s water-thread device* and *Kelvin water dropper.*

Inside the device made by Kelvin, two small jets released a stream of water droplets from a common reservoir. Each drop from the jet, or dropper, fell through a ring of conducting metal?usually copper. After traversing the ring, the individual drops fell into their own individual retaining reservoirs, which were generally made also of a conductive material but remained electrically insulated from one another. Finally, conducting wires connected each ring to the opposite reservoir.

This is what happens. Some tiny imbalance occurs so that one retaining reservoir becomes slightly more positive or more negative than the other. There could be several reasons for this?an applied voltage or even tiny imperfections in the apparatus itself will give rise to slight differences in the fields acting on the two drops as they travel along the length of the stream.

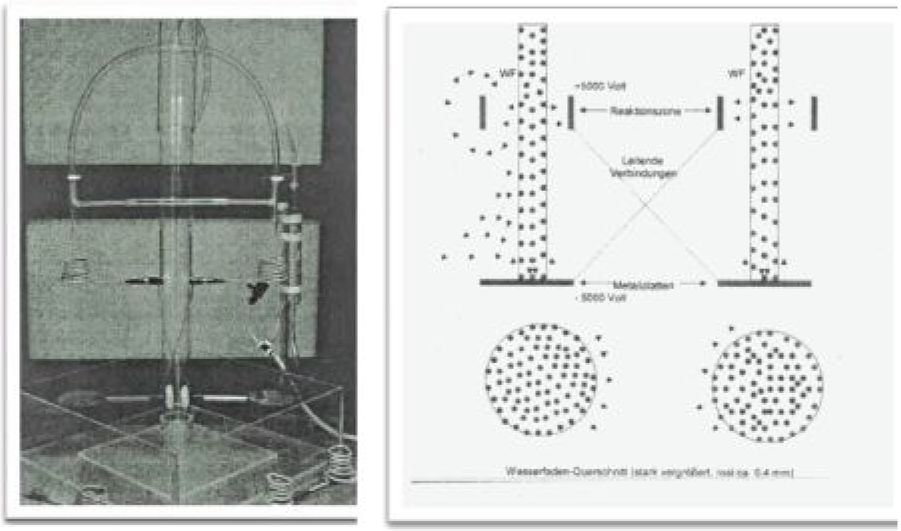
WF
+5000 Volt
Reaktionszone
WF
Leitende Verbindungen
Metallplatten
-5000 Volt
Wasserfaden-Querschnitt (stark vergrößert, real ca. 0,4 mm)

Lord Kelvin’s Water Thread Demonstration

Kelvin’s apparatus demonstrates the electrical conductivity of water through the electromagnetic induction of streams of tiny water droplets by separating and amplifying small potential differences in individual drops.

Since a conducting wire electrically connects each reservoir to the opposite ring, any small excess charge picked up by one drop at the end of its journey will be transferred to the ring that the next droplet on the opposite side will be traveling through. For a positive increment of charge transferred to the ring, a positively-charged droplet leaving the jet will want to take the “more negative” path, while a negatively charged droplet will move toward the “more positive” reservoir below. The result is a positive feedback loop, with each increment of charge introduced to the apparatus contributing to a greater attraction for more like charges. Thus, natural incremental charges are amplified again and again, quickly building up the opposite charges in the two reservoirs through electrostatic induction.

Eventually, both retaining reservoirs become highly and oppositely charged. A spark may leap from one ring to the other and/or drops may become electrostatically repelled and start to fly upward! Both these conditions are ways the systems seeks to discharge itself (7).

The point is that small drops of water can carry an electric charge and manifest electrical effect. Viktor Schauberger built and studied this machine himself. But the obvious question is how in the world would Kelvin's concept be related to the levitation of a flying disc inside a manufacturing plant" There would be no fog or clouds inside the Kertl factory to serve as a pathway for electrical effects, so how would tiny droplets of water manifest themselves in this setting"

We must look at Bernoulli's Principle. It states that as the velocity of a fluid (air should be considered a fluid in this case), the pressure exerted by that fluid decreases. This is counter-intuitive at first. It says, for instance, that air in motion has less pressure than air standing still but this is correct, nevertheless. (9) An airplane wing works using Bernoulli's Principle since the air passing on the upper (wavy) surface must travel faster that on the underside (straight) surface to reach the same point at the rear edge of the wing. This more rapid air flow on the upper surface causes a low pressure area to form at the spot on the wing where the wave occurs, causing the higher pressure underneath the wing to push it upward, keeping the aircraft in flight. Bernoulli's Principle is also involved with fluid or air in a tube. If the tube is constricted, causing the air to flow more rapidly, the resulting air pressure is decreased. This might seem familiar, as it is how a carburetor works. The constriction is called a "Venturi" (an application of Bernoulli's Principle) and it is at this point of lowest pressure that fuel and vacuum hoses are joined to the air-fuel intake system (10).

We all know that air holds water as water vapor. When the temperature drops or when the air pressure drops, the atmosphere cannot hold as much water as it can at higher pressure or higher temperature. Fog or clouds form if this happens. This sometimes even happens at odd moments. For instance, sometimes behind the leading surfaces of aircraft (where pressure would be lowest) a fog can briefly form. I have even seen this happen on large big-rig trucks in which the area behind their external rear-view mirrors develops a fog when they are going fast enough under certain atmospheric conditions.

So, what is happening inside the Schauberger saucer” Air is forming a vortex, extending outward and sideways long before it enters the saucer. Once it enters the saucer this vortex is strengthened. Air speeds are at least tornadic and probably much higher. Schauberger tells us the temperature of the air drops. With both a temperature drop and a drastic pressure drop, water droplets condense from even a dry atmosphere. These water droplets, rubbing against each other as they do in thunderstorms and/or colliding with the copper body of the saucer itself, pick up and carry an electric charge. In fact tornadoes are often observed to have lightning bolts descend straight down their walls toward the ground. Whether the individual vortices within the Schauberger saucer actually carry a DC current is really immaterial. They carry an electric charge and they are moving, violently. This moving charge means each one of the many Schauberger vortices within the saucer is generating a magnetic field, just as every wire carrying an electric current generates a magnetic field.

Each internal vortex is running in the same direction. If two conducting wires, for instance, are sending electricity in the same direction, their moving magnetic fields attract each other. Each vortex would be held equidistant from the next by these forces. More importantly for us, each vortex would be interacting with its neighbor and the central flowing center in the same way the seral disc did with its magnets, which is the basis of magnetic reconnection. It is this magnetic reconnection that generates electrons and positrons each time lines of magnetic lines of force are broken and reconnect. It is this migration of electrons to the bottom and positrons to the top of the craft that is responsible for levitation. This imbalance is what I?m calling a super Biefield-Brown Effect that causes movement toward the positive charge. In this case it means levitation.

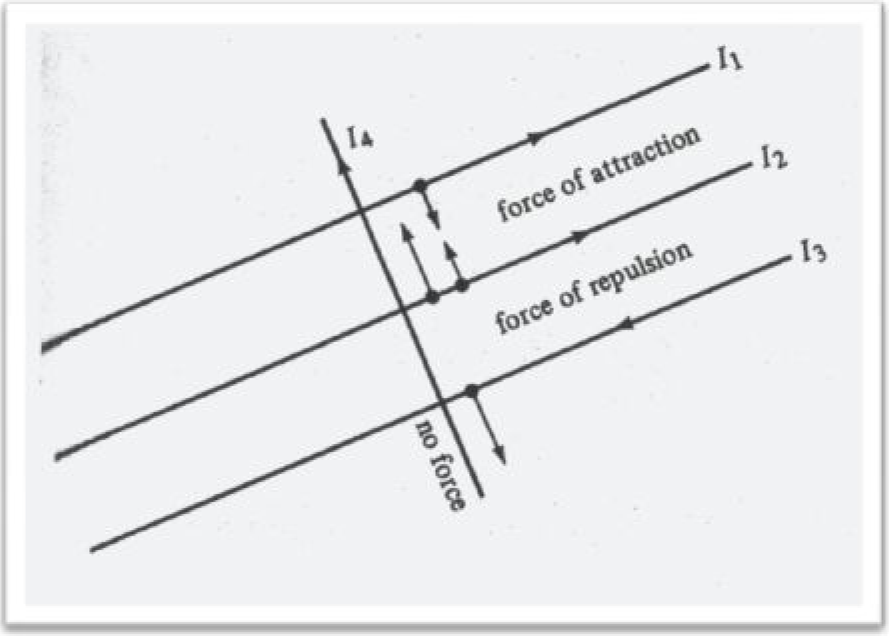

Parallel Electric Currents

Moving electrons constitute an electric current, and electric currents generate their own magnetic fields. If two conducting wires carry a current that is moving in the same direction, the wires will be attracted to one another. If their currents flow in opposite directions, an opposite, repulsive force will exist between them.

Meanwhile, the saucer body is spinning, being pushed as in a jet aircraft by the mass of the air being ejected at a slight angle by the directing vanes. This torque is important to remember. But as this is all happening and the saucer is being pushed to 20,000 rpms by the small electric motor, to auto-rotational speed, feeder vortices are forming at the inlets on the hat's sidewalls and perhaps top. The very same thing is happening here. The decrease in temperature and pressure is causing droplets to from which are rapidly spinning in the vortex, picking up electric charge.

Not only does this cause levitation but other electrical phenomena such as luminescence. "Reverse moment" resulting from any interaction between the magnetic fields involved would be overcome by the torque generated by the thrust of exiting air, deflected at an angle as it exited the saucer.

So now we can say the Schauberger saucer and the Searl disc both levitate in the same way. One uses air and one uses electric components, although primitive ones. Magnetic reconnection is responsible for the flight characteristics of both and when you think about what happened; both had the same fight characteristics.

Literature Cited

1. **Farrell, Joseph P., Ph.D., 2004**, *Reich of the Black Sun Nazi Secret Weapons & The Cold War Allied Legend*, page 216, Adventures Unlimited Publishing, Kempton, Illinois, USA

2. **Coats, Callum, 1996**, *Living Energies*, Gateway Books, Bath, UK

3. **Stevens, Henry, 2002**, *Hitler's Flying Saucers*, pages 121-129, Adventures Unlimited Publishing, Kempton, Illinois, USA

4. **Farrell, Joseph P., Ph.D., 2004**, pages 206-221

5. **Coats, Callum, 1996**, page 287

6. **Coats, Callum, 1996**, page 292

7. *ibid.*

8. *Kelvin Water Dropper, Wikepedia:* *http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Kelvin_water-dropper/*

9. *Bernoulli's Principle, Wikepedia:* *http://en.wikipedia.org/_wiki/Bernoulli's__prin ciple*

10. *Venturi Effect, Wikepedia:* *http://en.wikepedia.org/wiki/Venturi_effect*

SOUTH AMERICA AND OTTO SKORZENY

By far, the largest numbers of post-war Nazi bases were located in South America. Nazi money would purchase tracts of land that became secure areas. Of course, hand in hand with the purchase of the land was the purchase of the politicians in power since both were needed for the land or the base to be truly secure. In Latin America, exchanging money for political favors is not simple corruption. On the contrary, this is doing business and this is the way all business is done on all levels. Sometimes this is hard for others to understand, as are the political aspirations of Latin American politicians. Politicians in Latin America do not want to ascend to power in order to change the system. They want to ascend to power in order to avail themselves of the system. Money makes this world go around. But South Americans would have equally damning things to say about other political systems, so let us just accept this political reality as it is and try to understand it as we proceed.

Secondly, we cannot understand the Nazi presence in South America, the SS self-help groups, the Nazi International, or the 3rd Power, without and understanding of the man instrumental in setting up this hidden world within a world, Otto Skorzeny. It is true that Martin Bormann set up the financial foundation as well as the general understanding of responsibility in what would be called the Nazi International. The problem was that Martin Bormann, Hitler’s beancounter, was not in evidence after the war. As mentioned earlier, some think he did not make it out of Berlin after fleeing the bunker upon Hitler’s death. In any event, he did not manifest himself to collect the huge sums of money and other valuables squirreled away in South America and other places by the Nazis toward the end of the war.

Let me say, just to set the record straight, as mentioned before I do not believe Hitler ever saw May 1, 1945 or that Bormann ever made it out of

Berlin. But that does not mean I do not encourage those that do research these aspects of World War Two. On the contrary, there is a whole political philosophy which has morphed into a kind of political correctness which says everything about World War Two is known and understood and to question their understanding is politically incorrect and should be discouraged. This includes those researching Hitler possibly surviving the war. All aspects, everything, every assumption about World War Two should be questioned, researched, and everything which is propounded as fact should be backed up with as much proof as possible. Since the Berlin Wall fell, our understanding of German high technology has changed from night to day. Perhaps this is true in other aspects of the war's story. Has shinning light on a subject ever hurt honest brokers of the truth"

Back to Skorzeny: It was Colonel Otto Skorzeny who was present along with Bormann at the outset of the planning at the Rotes Haus in Strassburg on August 10, 1944 with those industrialists and bankers. In fact it was Skorzeny who was in charge of physically transferring the assets to neutral countries. (1) Dr. Hjamar Schacht was responsible for showing the industrial and financial concerns how to camouflage foreign assets on paper. (2) Dr. Schacht was Hitler's National Socialist financial genius who pulled Germany out of the Great Depression in 1933 and made it a financial world power while other countries were still wallowing around in doom and gloom. It was Skorzeny, assisted by Schacht, who showed up in South America, in the late 1940s, to collect the Nazi treasure that had been on-loan to political interests there. But Skorzeny had added some wrinkles to the original Rotes Haus plan. We need to take a look at Skorzeny and his achievements and those "wrinkles" in order to understand what finally happened in South America as well as what finally happened with the post-war SS organizations.

Otto Skorzeny wrote about himself and his exploits in his book, "Meine Komandounternehmen" (My Commando Operations). I have read bits and pieces of this book. The problem with it is that he was running the SS world while he was writing it. Even some of the information about happenings during World War Two seem out of character. The reason for this may have been that many people, some countries and some organizations, were always actively seeking to find a way to prosecute Skorzeny because he was an unashamed and vocal Nazi. He never disavowed Hitler and this just plain drove people crazy. Skorzeny was tried for alleged war crimes and acquitted but there was always the possibility that some other entity would try it again. So, “Meine Komandounternehmen” sometimes reads like Skorzeny’s lawyer wrote it.

So, for a more objective view of Skorzeny, we have to turn to someone else. Glenn B. Infield, who was an American bomber pilot during the war and who was a professional writer, comes forth and fills this need. Infield is not without problems in his 1981 attempt, as he tries to paint Skorzeny, not as a war criminal, but as a terrorist. In fact Infield tries to paint Skorzeny as the origin of all terrorist organizations, in tactics if not politics. As is customary in the use of the pejorative term “terrorist?, Inflield brands those he dislikes in the modern world terrorists and omits those on the other side using the same tactics, even if those omitted had actually originated the terrorist tactics. Nevertheless, Infield is the best available. He even went so far as to interview Skorzeny in Madrid shortly before Skorzeny’s death in 1975. The following is a synopsis of his treatment of Skorzeny.

Otto Skorzeny was born in Vienna in 1908. His father owned an engineering business and so Otto was sent off to the Technical College of Vienna to study engineering. At college this large, strong, aggressive individual joined a dueling society. This club fought duels with swords in a ritualistic way. The combatants held the sword, so I am told, with both hands making downward strikes and upward blocks aiming at the opponent’s head. Sometimes these were grudge matches but one of the objectives of a person’s dueling career was to receive a cut to the head and have it stitched up rather badly, leaving a dueling scar as a mark of honor. At this time in Germany citizens preferred their professionals to have such marks as it implied a college education as well as personal courage. Skorzeny graduated with his dueling scar and began his own career as an engineer.

In 1938 Skorzeny stepped between two groups of Nazis preparing to beat each other up leading at the time of Austria’s unification with Germany. Evidently, it was the force of Skorzeny’s personality that prevented the bloodshed and this did not go unnoticed by Nazi higher-ups.

Skorzeny had learned to fly an airplane, so in 1939 with the outbreak of the war, he volunteered for the Luftwaffe. The Luftwaffe decided Skorzeny was too old at 31 and rejected him. Skorzeny was shunted to a communications depot in Vienna where he was unhappy. Meanwhile the Waffen SS was looking for people with a technical background and this was a perfect escape valve for Skorzeny. He was now an officer-cadet in the Waffen SS.

Otto Skorzeny

This picture was taken during Skorzeny's rescue of Benito Mussolini after a rival Italian government had secretly imprisoned him. This "prison" took the form of the Gran Sasso Hotel on a table-top mountain. Skorzeny led a glider attack, secured the light rail line leading from the mountain, and flew Mussolini off the mountain in a very light aircraft. After depositing Mussolini in Vienna, Hitler was so impressed and overjoyed that he instructed the Wehrmacht General in charge at Vienna to take off his own Iron Cross and personally pin it on Skorzeny's chest.

Skorzeny always wanted to succeed in his assignments and did so even if the rules had to be bent. After a few episodes of bent rules Skorzeny's chances of high rank seemed in serious doubt. A bar room brawl in Holland followed, caused when Skorzeny demanded a picture of Prince Bernhard of the Netherlands be taken down. Skorzeny was restricted to the base for 6 weeks. Evidently, the German military was not looking to promote "bad boys" which was hurting Skorzeny's career chances.

Then Skorzeny's unit was transferred to Yugoslavia to fight partisans. Skorzeny was the technical expert in charge of keeping the regiment's vehicles in repair. Three days into Yugoslavia Skorzeny happened to notice a large group of enemy soldiers walking towards one of his vehicles. Skorzeny quickly hid his men in the bushes. As the enemy soldiers were appraising the broken down truck, Skorzeny popped out from behind a tree with a rifle and along with his men took these soldiers as prisoners. Skorzeny marched fifty-four soldiers and three officers back to headquarters in custody. To quote Infield:

> *"Skorzeny's past transgressions in Holland were forgotten and he was made an officer on the spot." (3)*

Shortly thereafter Skorzeny experienced health problems in the form of a recurring gall bladder attacks. The severity of this problem eventually resulted in doctors declaring him unfit for front-line service. By this time, after the success in Yugoslavia, it must have been clear to everyone coming in contact with Skorzeny that “active service” was the only area where Skorzeny shinned. This was a big, aggressive, intelligent, technically trained man who was not afraid to take a risk. He possessed an ability of natural leadership. Finally, he had achieved some notoriety at what he really did best. Now, he was given an assignment at a repair depot near Berlin where he was expected to sit out the remainder of the war. Skorzeny must have been crushed.

Skorzeny’s old friend and fellow Austrian Dr. Ernst Kaltenbrunner paved the way for an appointment to AMT VI-S, a division of the RSHA or Reich Central Security Department, a part of the SS. By this time he had made Captain. Part of his job involved interfacing with the Abwehr, the counterintelligence unit of the German high command run by General Wilhelm Canaris. This put him in contact with a wide variety of Reich insiders and under sometimes confusing chains of command. One benefit was that he sometimes took direct orders from Hitler and had personal access to him (4). Finally, he was promoted to leader of his own commando unit headquartered in Friedenthal near Oranienberg, northwest of Berlin. It should be noted that this area was a hotbed of all sorts of secret weapons development.

Skorzeny’s commando unit has been called a James Bond type affair since it used new, strange and high tech weaponry which was of the small arms kind. He was given access to KG 200, the squadron first recruited to fly the manned version of the V-1. This was considered a suicide mission, although not publicly acknowledged as such. After Hitler canceled the manned V-1 program, Skorzeny still had access to this squadron of flyers ready to take on any challenge where danger and death were possible or probable outcomes.

On July 26, 1943 Skorzeny was flown to Rastenburg to be interviewed by Hitler at his Wolf's Lair headquarters. At Hitler's teahouse there Skorzeny found himself one of six apparent candidates for something as they were all going to be interviewed by Hitler. Each candidate reviewed his career for Hitler. Skorzeny quickly determined he was the only Austrian in the group. He was also the only one familiar with Italy that seemed to be important to Hitler. Hitler stood there, eyeing Skorzeny after his little talk. He then asked Skorzeny:

> *"What is your attitude toward Italy and the Italian people?"*

Skorzeny replied:

> *"I am an Austrian and our attitude toward Italy is prejudiced by the happenings in the previous World War and by South Tyrol.?(5)*

According to Infield, a slight smile appeared on Adolf Hitler's face. This must have been the knowing smile of a fellow Austrian and the smile of one who knows he is not being deceived. Skorzeny had just spoken "truth to power" as we say now. Italy had done a flip-flop during the First World War, (as they were destined to do in the Second). The peace settlement had given the region of the South Tyrol and its ethnic German lands to Italy, angering not only the South Tyrolians but all German speaking peoples. Hitler undoubtedly felt some of this and recognized Skorzeny's reaction as genuine. Hitler dismissed the other candidates.

Now Hitler confided in Skorzeny that his mission concerned Benito Mussolini, who had just been taken prisoner in a coupe " a forced resignation. His leadership role was assumed by King Victor Emmanuel, who Hitler knew would trade Mussolini to the Allies and join them in a flip-flop just as soon as the moment was opportune. “El Duce?, Mussolini, had preceded Hitler to power and Hitler considered him a pioneer in terms of Fascist doctrine. The two men had grown close over time, Hitler being drawn to Mussolini perhaps as he was to no other man. The Fuehrer told Skorzeny:

> *“The Duce is, in my view, the last Roman. He is he last visible symbol of the proud old Rome that once ruled the world. His life, his rise, and his deeds are only comparable with those of an old Roman ruler. The Duce is more to me than a confederate, more than the representative and founder of Italian fascism. He has come close to me as a human being as few men before. He is my great friend. And I never leave my friends in the lurch.*

> *“You, Skorzeny, will free my friend Mussolini and prevent the terrible fate which our enemies have conceived for him.”*

At this point Hitler reached out and took Skorzeny’s arm, looked him directly in the eyes and said:

> *“Bring me my friend Mussolini. I know you will do your best and succeed.?(6)*

Obviously, failure was not an option here. Hitler placed resources at Skorzeny’s disposal for this operation, but the big problem was that nobody really knew where the new Italian government was keeping Mussolini. Skorzeny brought 50 of his own commandos, camouflaged as part of a larger paratroop unit being sent to Rome to help stem the Allied advance in

Italy. The mission had to be kept secret from the existing German forces in Italy and was known only to General Student, who was to assist Skorzeny in terms of resources.

In recounting this adventure, most concentrate of the actual physical mission itself. For this discussion the processes by which Skorzeny found Mussolini are perhaps even more important. Here, Skorzeny used every bit of his intelligence, education and training in addition to his native inborn assets to his advantage. This is in stark contrast to the situation which got him into so much trouble in Holland.

Once Skorzeny arrived in Italy he quietly questioned the people responsible for intelligence about the whereabouts of Mussolini. Nobody knew where the new government was keeping him prisoner. In fact, the Italian civilian population was puzzled by Mussolini's disposition as well. Frustrated, Skorzeny began circulating in restaurants and bars, engaging Italians in various ways to see it someone would open up. Skorzeny hit upon a plan. He would first raise the issue and then insult anyone claiming to know where Mussolini was being held, hoping to get a strong rebuttal and additional information.

Have you ever wanted to be a fly on the way in observation of history" My all-time trivia "fly" moment would be the time Skorzeny badgered an Italian sailor who fell for Skorzeny's insult strategy and became so incensed that he pulled a knife on Skorzeny in a bar. The six-foot four, wide spanned, 235 pound Skorzeny who had years of dueling experience behind him involving, essentially, just long knives, must have seen the irony in the reaction he had just perpetrated. To be a fly on the wall as Skorzeny's own men retold the episode must have been something also.

An Italian naval officer told Skorzeny in a bar that Mussolini was being held on the island of Ponza but he was transferred to La Spezia. Skorzeny, using his ploy, accused the Italian of trying to impress women in the establishment. The Italian naval officer became incensed and threw his glass at Skorzeny, a reaction Skorzeny considered appropriate if this was the truth. After checking this specific information it was determined that Mussolini was being held at both locations but had been recently moved.

After an intercepted letter indicating Mussolini was being held on Sardinia led to another island, Isola di Picco, both of which proved false, a young prostitute told Skorzeny Mussolini was being held at La Maddalena, a small island just north of Sardinia. A German spy, disguised as an Italian sailor, was sent and verified Mussolini's presence at a villa on Maddalena

Skorzeny wanted more information to formulate a rescue. He obtained use of a Heinkel He-111, a bomber with a glass nose. Skorzeny positioned himself at the nose with his Lecia camera, ready to snap pictures of the villa, presumably in a prone position just as enemy aircraft were sighted. Skorzeny ordered the pilot to stay on course, but one of the aircraft destroyed one of the two engines on the He-111, causing it to plunge downward. Skorzeny had just enough time to grab onto something as the aircraft nosed underwater and shattered the glass nose. But fortune was with that mission, because there was just enough air in the forward section of the aircraft for it to nose up as if it were gasping for breath. Skorzeny escaped with his life.

Hitler was advised of a plan for an aerial assault on La Maddalena by Skorzeny, who had been summoned back. Hitler approved, but meanwhile Mussolini had been moved again. Time was running out. The Italian government was finalizing negotiations with the Allies and there was no doubt that Mussolini would be given to them in that agreement. The German position in Italy was also deteriorating.

Finally, Skorzeny got word Mussolini was being held east of Rome in the Abruzzi Mountains at a place called Gran Sasso. Gran Sasso was a tabletop mountain with a hotel on top. A small railroad connected the hotel to the valley below. Of course, Skorzeny wanted another reconnaissance flight, so this time Skorzeny, camera in hand, knocked out the glass window of the light aircraft and leaned out, snapping pictures while his second in command secured him by holding his feet.

It was decided that the only way was a glider attack, landing directly on the tabletop in spite of the numerous boulders upon it. The gliders were constructed of tube metal and fabric, and were being provided by General Student. Skorzeny kidnapped an Italian general who was to order the Italian guards to put down their arms. Skorzeny was to land in the third glider. A Fieseler Storch?a light, two-man reconnaissance aircraft?would would land and fly Mussolini away.

The attack was underway when the first two gliders disappeared in a cloud. On the other side, both had somehow vanished and visibility was poor. Skorzeny cut a hole in the fabric of the glider in order to direct the pilot to the mountain. As they approached it became clear that a landing was impossible due to the rocks that lay directly on the area on which they planned to land. Skorzeny ordered the glider flown low and slow, and then suddenly ordered the pulling of the parachute’s ripcord. The parachute was designed only to slow the glider once it was on the ground. The glider crashed down the last few feet to earth with a sudden stop. Skorzeny jumped out, Italian general in tow, ran to the hotel and obtained access to Mussolini without a shot being fired. Skorzeny’s words of introduction were:

“Duce, the Fuehrer has sent me to set you free.”

To which Mussolini responded:

“I knew my friend Adolf Hitler would not abandon me”

Meanwhile, the Italian solders were amassing below to retake Gran Sasso. Skorzney had only about 90 of paratroops on the mountain with him so time was of the essence. Conditions made it clear that the two other escape options they had considered were not going to work. Skorzeny called in the Fieseler Storch, flown by Captain Heinrich Gerlach, General Student’s personal pilot and it managed to land on the tabletop and was waving for Skorzeny to load Mussolini aboard.

We all remember Mussolini and remember that he was not a small man. The Fieseler Storch had only a 240-horse power engine and was designed for two men and flyers in those days were usually not overly large men. The situation was that the aircraft could not take off against the wind, as is customary which means the lift generated at take off would be diminished. Further, the “runway” was not near long enough for a take off, the only option at this point was to run the aircraft off the side of the plateau and hope it would gain enough air speed before crashing into the valley below.

Skorzeny pushed Mussolini into the Fieseler Storch and then climbed in himself! Captain Gerlach flatly told Skorzeny “nein?. Skorzeny politely told Gerlach this was his mission and essentially, his fate was intertwined with that of El Duce. If the aircraft crashed, well, Skorzeny would have been shot, so he might as well come along. Now, Captain Gerlach was obviously a pilot, Skorzeny was a pilot and Mussolini was a pilot so they all knew what was involved here.

The aircraft drove off the side of the cliff and began its 3,000-foot plunge to the valley below. Gerlach let it dive, attempting to gain airspeed. All were speechless except for Skorzeny who was at this point certain they would crash. Gerlach eased the stick back and the slow-flying Fieseler Storch had just enough lift to pull them out of this hole.

They flew to Pratica de Mare where a transport aircraft flew Mussolini to Vienna, still accompanied by Skorzeny where they landed and checked into a hotel. Himmler called Skorzeny to congratulate him. As Skorzeny was finally easing into relaxation, a full colonel burst into the hotel, and, on Hitler's orders, took off his own Knight's Cross to the Iron Cross and pinned it on Skorzeny chest. At that moment the Fuehrer called and said:

> *"Today, you have carried out a mission that will go down in history. You have given me back my old friend Mussolini. I have given you the Knight's Cross and promoted you to Sturmbannfuehrer" (major). (7)*

This was the start of the Skorzeny legend. There are about four missions in all that we need to understand. For the next mission, I am going to describe the legend and only partly rely on Infield. It was the legend surrounding Skorzeny in South America and firmly established by the time he got there. It is for us even more important than reality, if it differs from it, since legend had become reality by this time.

This mission is sometimes referred to as the "Horthy kidnapping?. It is strikingly similar to the Mussolini mission in some ways. The similarities in September, 1944 were that German intelligence had ascertained that Hungary was about to do a flip-flop. Hungary had been occupied by the Wehrmacht and its regent, Mikki von Horthy, a World War One Naval hero and Admiral, was in league if not an ally of Germany's. About a million German soldiers were stationed in Hungary. Hungary had important oil reserves upon which the 3rd Reich relied. Hungary's seat of power was the Burgberg or Castle Hill where government offices were maintained in "the Citadel?. This whole Burgberg/Castle Hill complex was near Budapest but separate from it in an ancient fortified town sitting on top of a hill. The whole matter was a problem inside a problem for the Nazis. Hitler, again, had a fire on his hands and so he called for his fireman:

> *"We have received confidential reports that the regent of Hungary, Admiral Horthy, is trying to establish contact with the enemy in order*

> *to negotiate a separate peace. If he is successful it would spell the loss of our army in Hungary. You, Skorzeny, are going to prepare for the occupation of the Burgberg in Budapest. When I give the order, you will start the operation. In order to permit you to obtain the necessary men and weapons, I shall give you written orders which will give you extensive power.?(8)*

In fact, Hitler placed a great deal of military muscle and men under Skorzeny's control for this mission, far more than was the case in Italy. The "order" Hitler was talking about was called a "Hitler Befehl" (Hitler Order) in which the bearer could order things done, anything done, in Hitler's name as if Hitler himself had given the order. This was a very, very powerful document and order.

Skorzeny wanted this coupe accomplished without destruction of the Burgberg. Remember, Skorzeny was an Austrian and Austria had been a part of the Austro-Hungarian Empire for three hundred years and had only been separated since the end of World War One. Skorzeny chose to travel to Budapest under an assumed name and survey the situation before finalizing a plan. He was to keep in contact with Berlin, periodically, reporting by radio. For some reason the codename for the operation was "Nikki Maus?. At times Mikki von Horthy had gone by the nickname of "Nikki" as did his son, Mikki Horthy, Jr., a young man regarded as little more than a playboy.

The legend is that while on-route to Budapest and traveling alone, Skorzeny stopped in an inn for the night and a good meal. Skorzeny was a big Cro-Magnon-type and needed his meat. Wartime restrictions were such that it was rationed. Skorzeny, traveling incognito, wanted red meat or sausage for dinner at the inn. The proprietor argued with Skorzeny saying they had no meat or sausage as a result of the war. Skorzeny did not believe this and so the argument became more and more heated. Finally, Skorzeny pulled out the Hitler Befehl and ordered meat essentially in the name of Adolf Hitler. The proprietor complied; Skorzeny got his meat dinner. This was the only time the Hitler Befehl was used by Skorzeny.

Skorzeny arrived at the Burgberg and assessed it for an assault by various elements of the German Army. There was no place for paratroops to land and the densely packed old town was full of Hungarian soldiers. Skorzeny sought a more subtle method to subvert this government rather than outright attack.

To make matters worse, SS General Erich von dem Bach-Zelewski had arrived in Budapest with his huge 650 mm mortar and was pressuring Skorzeny to level the Burgberg at once. To add even more pressure Mikki von Horthy was not at the Burgberg in his office at the Citadel. Instead he was meeting with representatives of Marshal Tito who was acting as a go-between for the Soviets. Something had to be done immediately.

Skorzeny learned that Admiral von Horthy's eldest son, Istvan, had been killed when his aircraft crashed on the Russian front. Since the accident the regent had bestowed all his affection and hope upon his second son, Mikki Horthy, Jr. Young Horthy had been little more than a skirt-chaser and drinker but had tried to straighten up in the aftermath of the death of his brother and his father's new expectations. Skorzeny decided to kidnap the younger Horthy and then demand continued allegiance to Germany from his father as a price for his life.

The legend is that the kidnapping plan was radioed to Berlin but this was simply too much for the radio operator. He decided to change the code-name of the operation from "Nikki Maus" to "Mikki Maus?, either in confusion over the name similarity or out of a sense of humor. The Walt Disney character Mickey Mouse had become a household word, worldwide. In any event, Berlin acknowledged the kidnap plan.

The actual kidnap plan was do be conducted by Skorzeny and some of his men in civilian clothes. Mikki Horthy Jr. was heavily guarded and to make matters worse, the time and place was set for the kidnapping when young Horthy was to be meeting with representatives of Tito in an office building. As Mikki, Jr. was exiting the meeting he was set upon by several elements of Skorzeny’s men coming form different directions. Skorzeny himself was parked across the street, pretending to have an automobile breakdown. A gunfight ensued. Skorzeny threw a hand grenade at the entrance to the building to prevent more of Mikki Jr.’s bodyguards from joining the fight. The outcome was Mikki Horthy Jr. being captured, rolled up in a rug, taken to the airport and flown to Germany. Berlin was notified by radio that Operation Mikki Maus had succeeded.

The problem was that the elder Horthy, the regent, Admiral and leader of his country, told Skorzeny to just go ahead and shoot his son. He was not going to aid Germany at this point.

Berlin was again notified that in spite of the fact that Operation Mikki Maus was a success, the outcome of the operation was not really successful. The legend is that from this time on, in both German and English languages, anything that worked but not well was labeled in slang as a “Mickey Mouse Operation?.

Skorzeny had no alternative but to initiate assault plans on the Burgberg. Again, I?ll go with the legend. It was explained to me that Skorzeny drew Wehrmacht to the Burgberg in overwhelming force. Still, he wanted to minimize bloodshed. Skorzeny obtained a Kubelwagen, a military Volkswagen that looks something like a jeep, and with the top down, bullhorn in hand, he led a column of tanks toward the Burgberg. Skorzeny would rely on his loudspeaker to convey his voice, in German but with an Austrian accent. He reasoned that no Hungarian had fired upon an Austrian in three hundred years and if he could use this fact just to make the Hungarians hesitate, he might be able to bluff his way to the Citadel. He neared the first barricade and began talking. Now, nobody really wanted a battle. Skorzeny just found the right words, spoken in just the right way with, of course, the right accent. Without firing a shot he was in the Citadel, now ordering the Hungarian officer in charge to lay down their weapons. The Hungarians complied. Skorzeny had captured a vacillating Hungary without firing a shot. He had prevented the German Army there from being captured and saved the oil production facilities for Germany.

Berlin was notified. Skorzeny was told to assume military regency of Hungary for the time being. Mikki von Horthy was taken to Bavaria where he spent the rest of the war as a prisoner of the Reich in luxurious style.

A week later Skorzeny was again in Hitler's office at the Wolf's Lair. Hitler told him he was about to take part in an offensive, the offensive called by the Americans "The Battle of the Bulge?. This was an attempted push on the western front to Antwerp by the Germans. It was the last German offensive of the war. Skorzeny's guile was to be used to advantage.

Hitler was telling Skorzeny that he must race ahead of the attacking tanks in American uniforms and American jeeps and secure certain bridges. He was to be given German soldiers fluent in English for this mission. In reality, Skorzeny had to round up most of the jeeps and uniforms himself. After the capture of the bridges Skorzeny's men were to function as spies, reporting on the strength of units they encountered. They were also to cause any mischief they could behind the American lines.

Now this misdirection mission was taylor-made for Skorzeny. To quote Infield:

> *"One of his groups passed through a breach in the American lines and advanced to Huy on the banks of the Meuse River. The leader, Firtz Bussinger, checked the bridge carefully, although it was guarded by American soldiers, and then decided to walk through the town itself to get an accurate understanding of the situation. Greeting American soldiers he met and saluting all officers, he spent several hours in Huy without incident. As he was getting ready to return to his companions waiting of the outskirts of the city, an armored vehicle leading a convoy of tanks approached. The lead vehicle stopped near him and*

> *the officer in the right seat asked Bussinger the way to Marchin. He promptly pointed north, the opposite direction of Marchin and explained that the Germans had captured several of the roads leading to the city of Marchin and they would have to make a wide detour. Unaware that he was being led astray, the American officer thanked him for the information and led his convoy away?in the wrong direction.*

> *Another of Skorzeny's commando units, led by Wilhelm Giel and wearing a military police insignia, took over the duty of directing traffic in a small village behind the American lines. When a regiment of the 84th Infantry Division arrived, Giel and his men directed them down the wrong road. Later they listened to American broadcasts that the regiment had been missing for three days. A later investigation of the incident by U.S. officers failed to turn up a trace of any military police who had been at this particular intersection, so Skorzeny's report of the incident was verified.?(9).*

But the big news was a rumor, a false one, which Skorzeny did not want to quash. The rumor among the Americans, once they found out of Skorzeny's work behind their lines, was that Skorzeny's real mission was to assassinate General Eisenhower. By now they knew of Skorzeny's work saving Mussolini and his involvement that kept Hungary on the Axis side. The Americans freaked out! They put Eisenhower under guard and his movements became somewhat restricted. Check points were set up and everyone challenged everyone else. At one point the British Field Marshal Bernard Law Montgomery who had jumped on the opportunity to more freely circulate on the front lines in Eisenhower's absence, was stopped in all this confusion and asked for proper identification. Montgomery told his driver to keep moving. The Americans promptly shot out the tires of his command car and forced Montgomery and his driver into a guard shelter at gunpoint. Finally, a British colonel was called to positively identify

Montgomery, which he did. It can only be imagined how angry the Field Marshal was at this indignity.

The German offensive finally played out and the Wehrmacht retreated. Now the British and Americans were advancing from the West to the East and the Russians were on the eastern borders of Germany advancing from the East to the West. The Third Reich was in its death throws.

This time it was Heinrich Himmler giving Skorzeny orders. Himmler, who by this time had gotten himself named commander-in-chief of the Army Group Vistula, was essentially ordering Skorzeny to save has bacon since he, Himmler, was obviously incapable of command himself. Himmler ordered Skorzeny to proceed to Schwerdt, a small city on the Oder River, form a bridgehead on the eastern side, and launch an offensive from this position. Two million extremely battle-hardened Soviet soldiers, tanks, support and aircraft were advancing to the Oder. Once across, a strike on Berlin was the only step remaining in the war. Also, the area from the Oder to Peenemuende was full of secret weapons test facilities, advanced aircraft production plants, rocket production facilities, and so on.

Skorzeny was given the order but nothing else. In American politics this is called an “unfunded mandate?. Finally, Himmler came up with 1000 men. One thousand men against two million are not great odds. Skorzeny set out for Schwerdt nevertheless. But a strange thing happened on his way to Schwerdt. Soldiers who found themselves unattached to their units or whose units had ceased to exist because of losses began bonding to Skorzeny. The personal power of his presence was drawing volunteers. And this was not going to be an easy mission or even a mission from which one would expect to return. Skorzeny took up a position near Schwerdt.

Somehow, Hermann Goering heard of the situation and called Skorzeny. Goering sent Skorzeny 600 men from his own Hermann Goering Division who were supposed to guard Karinhall, Goering’s country home. Skorzeny somehow appropriated fifteen 75 mm guns from an abandoned factory. They were not the famous 88s but they could still be used against Soviet T-34 tanks. Skorzeny also found a supply of MG42 machine guns and some anti-aircraft guns.

On February 17, 1945 the Soviets moved to overrun Skorzeny's position. The Hermann Goering Division coolly let the Soviets advance to within about 100 yards from their position before they unleashed an anti-tank rocket barrage. The tank advance was halted and now burning as the German snipers picked off the Soviet soldiers scrambling out of their burning tanks. The Soviet Army was now being held from advancing by a small force. This situation lasted six days when finally Skorzeny ordered his men across to the western side of the river.

Himmler was furious and ordered Skorzeny back to his headquarters. Himmler wanted the officer in charge on the ground to be shot and generally went off on a rant as he had probably seen Hitler do many times. Skorzeny just sat there and absorbed this tirade. When Himmler had spent himself, Skorzeny spoke:

> *"You sit back here where it is safe, where you have all you want to eat and drink, and you have the nerve to order a brave officer shot because he used good judgment and retreated to fight another day. All we ever received at Schwerdt from you were orders. No ammunition, no food, no reinforcements, nothing." (10)*

This was the second time Skorzeny had spoken truth to power. Himmler backed down. Skorzeny held out at Schwerdt until the end of February,1945. This delay in the Soviet advance allowed the evacuation of Peenemuende as well as the Nordhausen V-weapons works. It allowed the evacuation of all those secret aircraft and their test facilities in this area. More importantly, all the documentation concerning the actual building of this weaponry, the blueprints, were microfilmed by the SS and other entities and put in safe-keeping.

But there is even more to this conversation and our understanding of the post-war SS. A new dynamic had taken over the SS. After the death of Adolf Hitler in another month it became almost law. In the post-war world the ideologues of the Nazi movement lost their special standing. They had failed in the eyes of the rank and file soldier. These men no longer wanted to hear from the likes of Himmler, even if he had survived. Outside of political doctrine, he was at best a desk soldier. From now on the rank and file took their lead from real soldiers, the soldiers who had led them for six years of war. Only these men had the moral authority to command at this point.

This brings us to Martin Bormann because, at best, Bormann was Hitler’s accountant. Whether Bormann survived the war or not is irrelevant. Bormann did not surface in South America to put in a claim for the Nazi fortune from those South Americans who had meanwhile usurped it. Nor did Bormann put in a claim for leadership of the post-war SS. He would have been disallowed even if he had done so. The Nazi leadership had been discredited in the eyes of the rank and file soldiers. By now the only people listened to by the expatriate German fighting men in South America or anywhere else in the Nazi post-war world were the men who had earned their respect by their fighting record in the war. Skorzeny was at the top of this list.

The war ended at which time Otto Skorzeny surrendered to the Americans. There was some confusion at first but they eventually figured out who he was and Skorzeny, for the most part, cooperated with the Americans, answering there questions so long as they did not touch on his post-war SS plans. The American recognized Skorzeny’s value on several levels and recognized his deep and genuine anti-Communist feelings. The problem with Skorzeny was that he was a Nazi and, as such, was unashamed. This really pissed some people off, including some people in the US government.

In my first book on German flying discs the topic of extraterrestrials within the US government was discussed. It is a kind of tower of babel affair in which extraterrestrials are denied on one level but on the next level they are affirmed, suggesting the lower level intelligence was a cover story. At the next level they are denied again and so on up the tower. Nobody really ends up knowing anything. Well, it is the same way for political issues including the Nazis- only here it is a horizontal landscape.

One governmental agency wants to use the Nazis and contrives methods to “clean them up” for their purposes. The governmental need was manifested, for example, by Operation Paperclip. This was also true for the anti-Communist intelligence activities in which the Gehlen Org. was incorporated into the US intelligence effort and later spun-off and became the West German intelligence apparatus. But there were also facets of the US government who assumed a very anti-Nazi position, seemingly and at times actually at odds with other governmental agencies with other goals. The Paperclip people were always grooming and spotting up the records of Germans they wanted to work for them in the USA. Meanwhile, the “Nazi-hunter” types in the Department of Justice were actively trying to make a case against these very same people. Dr. Arthur Rudolf is an example of a person who was originally cleaned up by Paperclip until the goal of a moon landing was realized and then turned over to the Department of Justice for alleged use of slave labor at Nordhausen in spite of the fact that he had no control over slave labor there. In fact, the individual in control of the slave labor at Nordhausen and throughout Germany seemed to have been immune from prosecution or even efforts at the location of his whereabouts. This was, of course, General Hans Kammler. Kammler was just too big to prosecute.

Back to Skorzeny: Skorzeny simply was one of those individuals?Hans Ulrich Rudel was another?who simply would not say they were sorry for their Nazi past. Skorzeny, when located, was seemingly always giving news conferences. The favorite questions he would be asked concerned the Eisenhower assassination rumor, which he denied, and his possible involvement in flying Hitler to safety from the bunker in the last days of the war. Once, at a news conference, Skorzeny was asked if he flew Hitler from Berlin to Madrid in a two seater Messerschmitt Me 109. Skorzeny laughed and responded that if the Messerschmitt Me 109 could have flown from Berlin to Madrid, Germany would have won the war. It was statements like this rather than anything Skorzeny did during the war that led to him being put on trial for war crimes. He simply pissed off too many people.

The charges involved using poison bullets and the killing of individuals while in the uniforms of Allied soldiers. At first it looked bleak but Skorzeny had an American lawyer who believed in his innocence. In two courtroom stunners, Skorzeny refuted the rather weak evidence brought to bear by the prosecution. The first charge was a case of mistaken identity, as the poison bullets had been confused with another type of bullet. Brought to testify for the defense was a famous British commando, Wing Commander Forrest Yeo-Thomas, who testified that he had done exactly the alleged act for which Skorzeny was being put on trial himself, acting under orders and on behalf of the British government. Skorzeny was acquitted.

Skorzeny was released for a time but taken into custody again by the new West German government as part of their de-nazification process. This was an appraisal and classification of individuals, ranging from criminal to those opposed to Nazism. Most Germans did not want the latter classification as it seemed to brand them as traitors, so the classification of ’simple fellow traveler” was considered the optimum. Skorzeny could not get classified and so could not be released. Skorzeny informed his keepers that he had been found not guilty of war crimes and was under no obligation to stay, nor would he. Nobody listened to him. Finally, three American military police showed up and demanded Skorzeny be handed over for new charges. The West German governmental officials complied and Skorzeny was handed over.

Once they were out of earshot, Skorzeny was released by the three “Americans” who turned out to be former SS men with an American vehicle and uniforms. Who provided the props, the uniforms and vehicle" Skorzeny would later say that it was the Americans themselves (11).

Eventually, Skorzeny found his way to Madrid, where the Nazi-friendly Franco government posed no threat. There, he set up an engineering firm. In reality, Madrid was the locus of the post-war SS. It was both the intelligence center and the center for management of SS business. This was not something Skorzeny thought up while in American custody?it was something he had planned long before the war ended.

Remember, Skorzeny had been present at the August 10, 1944 meeting wherein Martin Bormann met with all the industrial and financial heads of Germany. Money, secret weapons and high tech blueprints, specialty steel, and machine tools were spirited out of the 3rd Reich for overseas destinations for use after the collapse of Germany. The industrialists were encouraged to set up firms in neutral countries. Dr. Hjalmar Schacht, the financial genius, was made available for assistance in accomplishing this transfer and camouflaging it on paper from prying eyes. Otto Skorzeny handled the physical transfer of assets to neutral countries. The understanding was as follows:

> *"Bormann promised them Nazi funds for this purpose with the understanding that the Nazi survivors would be able to draw from the profits of these firms later." (12)*

When Bormann failed to appear after the war, it was Skorzeny who enforced this understanding, and it was Skorzeny who took it upon himself to recover any and all moneys which had strayed from Nazi control in the time elapsed since the war had concluded.

At this point we have to consider Reinhard Gehlen and his Gehlen Org. This was sold to the Americans as an existing anti-Soviet spy network that could be activated by Gehlen. Although this plan would later be abandoned, there were always suspicions that Gehlen still worked for Germany first. In other words that he had never severed his Nazi ties or his Nazi allegiances. Furthermore, the Gehlen Org. has been accused of actually stirring the pot, so to speak, in the East-West conflict that was the cold war. By this it is meant that he may have over played his role and overstated or manipulated some threats to the West to keep the Cold War alive.

Dr. Hjalmar Schacht, who would become Skorzeny's father-in-law in the post-war years, knew where the money was buried and how it was buried and who was owed what. In other words, just as the Mafia in the USA had Meyer Lansky, who kept all the financial relationships and accounts between family leaders buried in his brain, the post-war Nazis had a similar store of information in Schacht, who effortlessly kept track of the money and moved it around the world.

Finally, there was Skorzeny, a man of tremendous ability in the eyes of the Allies, who could get things done behind the scenes with both the power of his personality and an ability to utilize the considerable human and mechanized assets of the Nazis in a kind of post-war shadow world.

The three continued to communicate with one another, and at times worked together for toward reaching goals each considered desirable. If these goals coincided with those of the Americans or British, they were willing to work with them as well. But this seems to have fostered specific issues for the post-war SS and Schacht while on a broader range for the Gehlen Org. Of course, they could also work at odds with the western powers at times, making the relationship a fluid and dynamic one. Indeed, it looks to me like there were periods of cooperation and periods of warfare between the postwar SS and the Americans in particular, followed by reproachmont and a period of cooperation.

Less clear is the relationship between the postwar SS and the Soviets. Yes, even though communism and the Soviets were their least-favored political entities and opposition to them helped define their existence, it appears that there was some sort of contact and some sort of relationship, at least at times. For instance, Infield reports that a disgruntled former SS man, using the name "Kluf" reported to the US Consulate in Marseille that the Soviets had formed an organization composed of former SS men within the Soviet Block to work with the Russians against the interests of the West. Implicit in Kluf's testimony is that Skorzeny knew of this organization and had some sort of contact with them.

> *"Kluf said he did not like the Russians and told Skorzeny he was not in favor of working with them. Skorzeny allegedly promised him he could return to Germany to work independently (not for Russia, nor for America, but for Germany) but that Viy gave him different instructions. These were that he, accompanied by a courier from the Russian zone, would return to Germany and report to the organization's headquarters in Hamburg. Kluf said he was not n accordance with this so he left the courier after crossing he French border and came to the consulate in Marsielle." (13)*

The post-war SS organizations had some sort of contact with the Soviets, which, like relations with the Americans, could be used for their own purposes.

Here is a thumbnail chronology of the postwar SS. Of course there were many more names than this, code-names within code-names, but here is a sketch. First was the 'skorzeny Movement?. This organization was alleged to be interested in resisting Bolshevism and ending Allied occupation of Germany. Next came "Die Bruderschaft" (the brotherhood) came about while Skorzeny was still in West German detention. The movement was growing in numbers as former SS members recognized they were in trouble and needed organization. The West did not discourage it

(14). This morphed into the O.D.E.S.S.A, an acronym for “Organization der Entlassene SS Angehorige” (organization of those former SS members who were released). This morphed into “Die Spinne” (the spider). Now the focus was on assisting former SS men escape from Germany to other countries. A legal arm of Die Spinne was the HIAG, an acronym for “Hilfsgemeinschaft auf Gegenseitigkeit” (mutual assistance association). After setting up shop in South America and having helped most members disentangle themselves from legal problems, by hook or crook, a more pro-active stance was possible. This was the Nazi International phase. In this phase real international projects could be taken on, calling into play major German industrial firms as well as leading scientists and engineers. This was coordinated from Skorzeny’s engineering firm in Madrid. This usually worked when a country did not want the involvement of the US or the Soviets since either brought the CIA or KGB. So, instead, the Nazi International could be called upon without the intelligence entanglements. This usually worked with the consent of both the East and West since neither wanted the other to gain a foothold and the Nazi International was an alternative for all concerned. Dr. Joseph Farrell titled a book on this subject that should be seen as a reference (15) as should Ladislas Farago’s work (16).

So, as a small example, in the 1980’s, during the Iraq-Iran War, both sides wanted to increase the range of their Scud missiles. It was obvious that German scientists worked for both sides doing this job. Infield gave many more examples.

In light of possible new evidence, I am going to make a distinction between the Nazi International and what the German writers call “Die Dritte Macht” (The Third Power). The Third Power was a power on its one as opposed to the First Power, the West and the Second Power, the Communist Block. The German writers such as Haarmann and Bergmann make the point that the Third Power held many technical secrets that were unknown in both the West and East. The idea may be that The Third Power sold or exchanged information and/or technology for favors it wanted from either or both other powers as the situation warranted. We will return to this later. What I want to do now is to give an example of how this barter system originated and from that one can get the idea of how it would have worked on a higher level. What I am talking about are the Churchill letters.

In the years immediately following the war and culminating with the Korean War, there was a push in the United States to utilize Germans who where considered hardened Nazis in the effort against communism. Some Nazis were released from US custody as a result. Churchill was not a part of this and refused to do the same in Great Britain. Skorzeny, now free, sent word through contacts in the US requesting that Fritz Knoechlein, an SS officer who had been convicted of war crimes in Britain, be released. Churchill flatly refused. In fact, Knoechlein was put to death. Skorzeny bided his time, knowing he had something with which to fight Churchill.

He struck a year later Churchill was again running for office. It was rumored that between 1927 to the end in 1944, Churchill had been secretly corresponding with Benito Mussolini, even when the two countries were at war with each other. What these two leaders discussed we will never know but it is absolutely certain that the average British voter would have taken a dim view of their pen-pal relationship during the war if they had known about it or if the letters ever surfaced. Politics would have been a memory for Sir Winston.

Skorzeny sent word to Churchill that he wanted a meeting with him in Venice in August 1951. Subsisting, for the moment, on a diet of crow, Churchill took time off the campaign trail and went to Venice to meet with Skorzeny, whom he had snubbed and disdained during the Knoechlein affair. But how could Skorzeny have possibly gotten his hands on something that explosive”

Skorzeny had noted that during their mutual escape from Gran Sasso, Mussolini was not able to bring a briefcase with him in the cramped Fiesler Storch. This briefcase seemed to have some special value for Mussolini if he wanted it on his person at such a desperate time. Skorzeny was not only a brave soldier who had some real and exceptional ability, he was also as smart as a whip and it seems that in this aspect of his makeup he was underestimated because even in the heat of the moment at Gran Sasso, Skorzeny made a mental note of the briefcase and its apparent importance. But since El Duce and the briefcase had to part company, it was taken by German troops to Skorzeny's base at Friedenthal by aircraft. Of course it was opened and the contents read. Skorzeny was notified and instantly understood the value of the letters. Mussolini could use the letters to purchase his own safety and eventual freedom should he ever be taken prisoner or surrender to the British. Mussolini even instructed his wife to ask to be handed over to the British should she be taken prisoner (17).

From the moment Skorzeny understood the meaning and value of the letters, an SS man was stationed at Mussolini's side to track the letters. At the end, on April 25, 1945, as Mussolini and his mistress Claretta Petacci were fleeing Milan, Oberstumfuehrer Franz Spoegler was stationed at their side. This relationship did not bother Mussolini, since it was the SS and Skorzeny who had saved him at Gran Sasso and he trusted Skorzeny. Spoegler was a young, handsome man, according to Infield's description, and had made friends with Mussolini's mistress, Claretta Petacci. So as they were fleeing, Claretta Petacci asked Franz Spoegler if he would return to Milan and pick up some additional clothes she had there. Spoegler agreed, and in addition to packing up the clothing she requested, managed somehow to get his hands on the very subject of his being stationed at Mussolini's side?the Churchill letters. Three days later, both Mussolini and his mistress were swinging from the end of partisan nooses, but Skorzeny had the Churchill letters.

Now, six years later, the investment was paying off with interest. The only witness to the Churchill-Skorzeny meeting was Paul Foerster who accompanied Skorzeny. He reported:

> *"Sir Winston received some wartime items he wanted very badly and in turn we received hope that some of our comrades in prison might obtain early releases." (18)*

Miraculously, Churchill’s office as well as the Americans released Gottlob Berger, SS General sentenced to 25 years; Hans Lammers, Reich Chancellery, 25 years; Paul Koerner former head of Hermann Goering Works; Heinz Jost, SS; Frans Alfred Six, Adolf Eichmann’s superior; Edmund Veesenmayer, SS comrad of Skorzeny’s and Kurt Meyer, SS General sentenced to death.

What is significant is the pattern that would be repeated. The former Allies want something, the post-war SS supplies it for a price and that “price” might not necessarily be money.

So this was the man and the legend, Otto Skorzeny, who strode ashore in Argentina in 1949 with the purpose of regaining the Bormann SS treasure and other accompanying assets. The reason that the fortune had to be “reclaimed” is rooted in the actions of two custodians of the fortune who had made some bad decisions in the power vacuum left in the absence of Bormann. These two were named Rudolf Freude and Heinrich Doerge. Somehow, Juan Peron’s new bride, Eva, had talked these two into depositing the fortune in bank accounts bearing her name for safe-keeping. This all allegedly had to do with the status of Nazi Germany and the fact that Argentina had, under pressure from the USA, declared war on Germany in the waning days of that conflict and so assets belonging to the 3rd Reich might be subject to seizure.

Skorzeny had already been apprised of Juan Peron and his wife Evita. The rule of the first Peron Administration was very much a partnership and Skorzney was briefed that Evita Peron was the real brains of the outfit. He realized that recovering this fortune was going to be a tricky operation, as tricky as anything he had done before.

Skorzeny was a huge hit in Argentina. Imagine all those “Generals” and politicians coming out of the military (which was the usual route to power) who bore a chest full of metals yet who had never actually fought in a real war ingratiating themselves to and with the presence of a true war hero in Skorzeny. Skorzeny, for his part, did not mention the SS fortune at first. Instead, he served Peron in small ways such as organizing intelligence and police forces. Infield reports that he made it a point to ignore Eva Peron.

In July 1949 Skorzeny was tipped off that two navy officers were planning to murder Evita. This grudge went back some time and involved Juan Peron but the two plotters thought they could even the score by harming Juan’s wife. Skorzeny raided the apartment where the two were living but they were not home but there he found the details of the plot including the exact locating the two would use. Skorzeny stopped Eva on her way to inspect facilities at one of her charities. He informed Mrs. Peron of the plot to murder her. Eva simply did not believe anyone in Argentina would harm her but invited Skorzeny to accompany her. As they neared the Home for Working Women, the charity involved, Skorzeny suddenly leaped from the car and ran inside a building. He emerged with the two plotters at gunpoint. Evita Peron was surprised and overcome with gratitude and from this moment on saw Skorzeny as her hero.

Skorzeny later admitted that his men had located the two plotters after his raid on their apartment, arrested them, and then positioned them in the very places they had specified in their plot to assassinate Eva Peron. Skorzeny had simply picked up and taken charge of the two from his men who were holding them out of view of Eva Peron. Thereafter, according to the research of Infield, Eva Peron and Otto Skorzeny carried on a torrid affair behind Juan’s back on trips together and at country estates (18).

This did pay off as Skorzeny assumed about one quarter of the SS fortune on a purely voluntary basis. Hjalmar Schacht learned through his banking contacts that Evita Peron “and her associates” had forty numbered bank accounts in Switzerland. Schacht and Skorzeny believed this money to be the Nazi fortune. But about this time Eva Peron suddenly contracted cancer and died on July 26, 1952. But Juan Peron had a couple little problems. Juan Peron asked for Skorzeny's help. Skorzeny managed to have the Swiss assets moved into funding for her charity, the Evita Peron Foundation. But some of Evita's associates moved to administer the funds as befits a charity. Then, Juan Peron took control of the Foundation using his power as chief executive of Argentina and gained access to the funds himself. But there was another problem. Under Argentinean law, Evita's brother, Juan Duarte had an equal claim to her assets as did her husband, Juan Peron. Durate wanted half the fortune himself. In fact it was brother Juan who acted as a courier for Evita in depositing the funds in Switzerland in a series of trips there.

The problem for Juan Durate is that he was just a man, one man. He got a visit from Otto Skorzeny after which Juan Durate decided to transfer his claim on the funds to Juan Peron. Now redundant, Juan Duarte was found dead on April 9, 1953, a victim of an apparent suicide. Now Juan Peron controlled almost 200 million dollars in Nazi assets.

Meanwhile, Skorzeny was having success in bending the arms of the industrialists who had promised repayment for Nazi investments during the war and dating to the August 10, 1944 meeting in Strasbourg, a meeting in which Otto Skorzeny was present and instrumental. Skorzeny managed to collect on agreements with Dr. Fritz Thyssen and with the Krupp family.

Juan Peron was having difficulties holding on to power. His partner and probably the brains of the partnership, Evita Peron was dead. Peron's political enemies were gathering strength. In September 1955 it finally collapsed and Juan Peron escaped Argentina in a Paraguayan gunboat. Of course Otto Skorzeny came to his assistance and with his contacts and history in Spain, he was able to negotiate asylum for Peron in Spain.

> *"At this time Skorzeny played his trump card. He arranged for Peron to live in exile in Spain through his intercession with influential friends*

> *in the Franco government. The price” The remainder of the Bormann funds!?(19)*

Skorzeny had recovered all the SS fortune for the use of the post-war SS. Skorzeny had the control and absolute loyalty of the former SS men in South America. And Skorzeny had control of the scientists, blueprints, machine tools, specialty steel and any other assets the Germans had spirited out of the country before its collapse.

Literature Cited

1. **Infield, Glenn B., 1981**, *Skorzeny Hitler's Commando*, page 179, St. Martin's Press, New York, NY, USA

2. *ibid.*

3. **Infield, Glenn B., 1981,** page 18

4. **Infield, Glenn B., 1981**, page 24

5. **Infield, Glenn B., 1981**, page 30

6. **Infield, Glenn B., 1981**, page 30, 31

7. **Infield, Glenn B., 1981**, page 45

8. **Infield, Glenn B., 1981**. page 67

9. **Infield, Glenn B., 1981**, page 86

10. **Infield, Glenn B., 1981**, pages 104-105

11. **Infield, Glenn B., 1981**, page 151

12. **Infield, Glenn B., 1981**, page 179

13. **Infield, Glenn B., 1981**, pages 211-212

14. **Infield, Glenn B., 1981**, page 178

15. **Farrell, Joseph P., Ph.D., 2008**, *Nazi International The Nazis" Postwar Plan to Control Finance, Conflict, Physics and Space*, Adventures Unlimited Publishing, Kempton, Illinois, USA

16. **Farago, Ladislas, 1974**, *Aftermath Martin Bormann and the Fourth Reich*, Simon And Schuster, New York, NY, USA

17. **Infield, Glenn B., 1981**, page 187

18. **Infield, Glenn B., 1981**, page 188

19. **Infield, Glenn B., 1981**, page 199

20. **Infield, Glenn B., 1981**, page 204

SOUTH AMERICA

To start off this chapter it is necessary for us to review what was brought to South America in some of the preceding chapters and color in the sketch we already have.

In August, 1944 Martin Bormann called a meeting in the Rotes Haus Hotel in Strasbourg. That meeting was to plan for survival after the Third Reich had fallen. Dr. Hjalmar Schacht was put in charge of financial matters. He set up dummy corporations and using them he moved money to other countries outside Germany. Other benefits were also probably promised these firms as Bormann evacuated German high technology that included blueprints of secret weapons and probably other secret devices and technical methodology, machine tools, and specialty steel as well as the scientists themselves. Naturally, these firms must have believed they would benefit from this technology in the long run. In turn, they pledged to return the loaned money, coming from the Reich treasury as well as future consideration. Most of the focus went to South America.

SS Colonel Otto Skorzeny was put in charge of the actual physical transfer, called “Aktion Fuerland” by Farago (1), and referencing the Terra del Fuego region of Argentina. Skorzeny already had been in contact with Kampfgeshwader 200 (Battle Wing 200) or KG 200 for short. Headed by Werner Baumback, this was the unit that had already agreed to fly the manned version of the V-1 buzz bombs, a project which Skorzeny had headed but was canceled by Hitler. KG 200 has often been rumored to be the unit that was to provide pilots for the German saucer program. It was also rumored to have been chosen to fly the huge Horton Ho 18 to New York City when the atomic bomb payload was finished. In fact, KG 200 participated in suicide or near-suicide missions on a regular basis, using a variety of aircraft, including the suicide attack on bridges spanning the Vistula River that the Soviets needed for crossing. Skorzeny again, was given access to KG 200, however, each mission had to be approved by Himmler (2). Farago tells us:

> *"Up to June 1944, heavily guarded armored trucks carried the consignments across Germany and France to ports in southern Spain, where U-boats were standing by in hidden bases near Cadiz to take on Bormann's precious cargo. In Spain, General Wilhelm Faupel, a former ambassador and had of the Latin-American Institute, and now stationed in Madrid with a diplomatic cover, managed the operation." (3)*

The U-boats picked up their clandestine cargo and deposited it in Argentina according to all sources. But now we know about Fureteventura. It will be recalled that our treasure hunters found a map of the coastline of South America on one of the U-boats still there. If we check a map, Fuerteventura is not quite mid-way on this voyage. But considering it was mid-way between Beaver Dam and Point 221 as well, this small base must have served as quite a central switching station for a period of several years. It must be assumed that Fuerteventura had communication devices equal to this task and in contact with the two bases mentioned as well as Argentina.

Farago picks up the tale and reacquaints us with some old friends:

> *"On April 18, 1945 Agent Alarcon submitted a report, captioned "German Disembarkation at San Clemente del Tuyu?, to the Ministry of the Navy (a copy of which was logged in under number CF-OP-2315 at the Coordinacion Federal). Brief as it was, the report gave an insight into the operation, pinpointing two of its principals. One was Ludwig Freude, described as "an agent of the Third Reich?. Alacon had succeeded in planting on Freude on of his informers, called "Natalio" in the report. Natalio ascertained that Freude "had made extensive deposits in various banks" in the name of the other key*

> *figure in the plot, "the well-known radio and stage actress Maria Eva Duarte Iburguren?. (4)*

Freude was mentioned earlier as a German agent who had allowed the SS fortune to fall into the hands of Evita Peron. In fact, this "other key figure" is better known as Evita Peron. Farago continues:

> *"Natalio learned from Freude himself that, on February 7, 1945 "a U-boat of Admiral Doenitz's submarine fleet" had arrived at a secluded spot in Samborombon Bay off Punta Norte near the village of San Clemente del Tuyu, 150 miles south of Buenos Aires. According to what Freude told Natalio, the U-boat had brought 'shipment No. 1744" to Argentina, consisting of an unspecified number of crates and bags "containing?, as Alarcon write in his report to the Navy Ministry, "a treasure designed to help the rebuilding of the Nazi empire." (5)*

Freude established two radio stations at Tandil and Bella Vista to guide in the U-boats. (6) Farago as well as Buechner and Bernhard in their two books describe the ranches, owned by Germans, where the cargo was off-loaded. This U-boat traffic was even said to have pre-dated the Rotes Haus meeting (7) and it certainly went on at a high rate toward the end of the war. This area of Southern Argentina, south of Buenos Aires, is a gulf into which empties the Plata River. In fact, the gulf is called Mar del Plata on maps. According to these experts, as many as 35 U-boats participated in this trafficking at one time or another. In illustrating the extent of this traffic, Buechner and Bernhard repeat an anonymous poem that seems to address the on-going, repeated voyages by the German submarines to this part of the world:

> *"Oh! Choosers of the Slain,*
> *Said he, Maidens of Valhalla,*

Bury me beyond the Sea,
In a place called Mar del Plata.” (8)

Now we have the money, materials, blueprints, scientists and so on, shipped by U-boat, in Argentina. Otto Skorzeny arrives and frees-up the SS fortune. Dr. Hjalmar Schacht was back in circulation to assist with business knowledge and to move money. Also a new player was “coming on line” as we might say now. He was Reinhard Gehlen and his Gehlen Org. Gehlen had worked for the CIA reactivating his Nazi-era spy network for the Americans after which he was set up by them as essentially “West German Intelligence?. It is now recognized that, at least at times, he functioned as a double agent, feeding the post-war SS information as well as, at times, exaggerating the Soviet threat to the Americans, keeping the Cold War going. With his SS contacts, he might even played a triple or quadruple game with Soviet contacts. This appears to have been accomplished sometime around 1952. The question is now: What is being done with this money and this technology by the Germans who have now come to settle in South America” How did it all work in terms of politics” Answers for these questions are readily supplied by Farago and more importantly by Wilhelm Landig. Once we address these questions and understand how this all works, we can go on, as we did with Antarctica, to some more interesting bits and pieces of information and some surprising ramifications regarding yet another principal player in the larger mystery of The Third Power.

The post-war Nazis used their money to buy political influence or in other words their own security. They also used their money and new influence to obtain huge tracts of land throughout South America. Remember, the political system in South America incorporates instability. Therefore, the post-war SS had to be able to pick up its leadership and go from country to country if conditions changed. Ideally, the tract of land would be rather remote and able to be secured in the military sense. The Germans called these ’sperrgebeite?.

This whole Sperrgebeite system was described by Wilson (9). It was briefly discussed in my first book (10). One of these larger bases, called Colonia Dignidad, served as the home and site for the fusion experiments of the German scientist Dr. Ronald Richter that was discussed in my second book (11). Briefly, they did just this; they bought large tracts of land and controlled them like a country within a country. Within this safe zone they were able to live, build houses and farms, do manufacturing work and operate scientific laboratories. One report describes 230,000 square kilometers, 230 kilometers of streets, 70 bridges, 200 canals, two light aircraft and a radio homing beacon (12).

But the open-air ranches were not the most exciting of the SS facilities. The most exciting were the underground bases. Yes, according to Wilhelm Landig, the post-war SS obtained truly monumental underground facilities and used them to build the highest technology on the planet. This was based on the findings of the pre-war SS Ahnenerbe explorer Edmund Kiss and his expeditions to South America. It is claimed that Kiss found a tunnel system on the western side of the Andes. This tunnel system was huge and had an array of interconnecting tunnels and huge vaulted rooms at some intersections. The tunnel entrances were well hidden. The tunnel system ran from the Altcama Desert in Chile to Equador! The origin of these tunnels are a mystery. It might be they are a natural phenomenon or that they are the work of some pre-Inca civilization or a combination of both. It was in these hallways that work stations were erected, just has they had been done in underground installations in Germany during the war (13).

The construction of these underground laboratories and work stations was going on at the same time that activity was taking place in Point 211 in Antarctica. In fact, according to Landig, the two bases were in communication and supplies were being brought to Point 211 from South America using flying discs.

Again, we have to look at energy as a major reason for these underground facilities. The reader may recall that Beaver Dam relied on a supply of legnit, somewhere between peat and coal, as a source for fuel.

Point 211 in Neuschwabenland relied on geothermal power and perhaps other artificial sources. These underground bases, which Landig calls “Mimes Schmiede” (14) relied, at first, on diesel generators mounted at the openings of the tunnels. Then, finally, they developed thermal power plants (thermischen Kraftwerken) that supplied the electricity necessary for operation (15).

This name “Mimes Schmiede” may be a bit obscure. As children, European royalty are not educated at home. They are sent away to school, a practice that still operates today. Mimes Schmiede refers to the legendary Siegfried, the focus of Wagner’s opera, The Ring of the Niebelungs. Siegfried was sent away to an apprenticeship with Mime who was a master blacksmith. In Iron-Age Europe, the blacksmith was the rocket-scientist of his time. To be sure, blacksmiths made farm implements but the most skilled blacksmiths made weapons of war, especially swords. Famous swords bore names and were the subject of legend. The maker of a famous sword also became a legend. This was Mime. The word ’schmiede” is smithy in English. So Mimes Schmiede was a place where the highest tech weapons of war would have been forged. It is no accident that this name was ascribed to this particular place.

The purpose of Mimes Schmiede is absolutely clear. It came into existence so that the post-war SS could build or rebuild or salvage the German armaments and secret weapons technology (16). The exact aim of this enterprise might come into better focus if those involved were named. Two groups of SS weapons technologists or engineers worked here to recapture that high-tech pinnacle, first achieved in Germany (17). For this part of the story we must jump ahead to Landig death and the work of Heiner Gehring and Karl-Heinz Zunneck. Gehring read some of Landig’s private material and it contained some additional information. It seems that one of these groups was called the Ruestungsesoteriker or Armament Esoterics (18). This group formed after 1945 and seemed to have been a loose association of individuals who were educated in both the rather occult ideas involved in these field propulsion flying disc and high technology. In this respect Dr. Gordon Freeman, whom I have mentioned many times, would have fit into nicely were he two generations older and inclined to participate. The Ruestungsesotiker operated, according to Landig's private notes, in hidden bases. They kept the saucers flying all those years exchanging ideas and joined in this enterprise and goal (19). This association of armament esoterics may have even extended world-wide as the need for replacement parts increased. Their work on flying discs is given as an example so their scope probably extended to other high technology projects beyond simply flying discs.

Gehring and Zunneck say that some of their esoteric knowledge may be based on what they call kabalistic computations (kabbalistischen Berechnungen) of a triangular aircraft that was "in play?. This aircraft was built under the designation "Phi 300" or "FI 300?. In Poland, say these researchers, this "magic" technology was coupled with long-distance flying frames (20). Maybe we will return to flying triangles at a later time.

Dr. Gordon Freeman explained this to me years ago. This "kabalistic computation" is a symbol, the merkaba. But the same concept is also conveyed using other symbols such as a simple "+" symbol or the figure "8?. This is the principle behind the Bloch Wall (21). It simply involves energy input at the poles, output at the center and recycling of that energy through the poles once more. This concept has other names.

Gehring and Zunneck also reveal possible origins of the second group. In fact, he names the possibilities as the Thule and/or Vril Groups, the Herrn von Schwarzen Stein (DHvSS) and or the Herren vom Schwarzen Adel (the gentlemen of the black stone and the gentlemen of the black nobility, respectively. This last group probably refers to the SS leadership with a certain agenda). This information came from an informant named Hans Rittermann more of whom we will learn later. These groups along with the "Tempelhofgesellschaft" are esoteric organizations, first brought to us in the writings of Norbert Juergen-Rathoffer and Ralf Ettl. Rittermann, a no-nonsense informant, also says that these groups still exist today. Finally, Gehring and Zunneck name the Goldern Rose as another possibility. The Golden Rose is said to have been a resistance group within the German arms industry (22).

So, in post-war South America the SS have an underground tunnel network with huge connecting hallways in which they are allegedly constructing very high technology. But they are going to need more than just the brains of their scientists, even with blueprints. This could not be done without the high-tech infrastructure necessary to supply the raw materials as well and the manufactured materials necessary for any aerospace industry. This does not seem readily available in some remote jungle or mountain setting. So how was this done”

It was done as it is done today. A major aerospace firm designs a new aircraft. It really does not matter how large that firm is, it cannot possibly build all the components for that new aircraft itself. The major firm sub-contracts with mid-sized firms for sub-assemblies. For instance, this could be the engine or the electronics package or the radar. Those sub-assemblies would be sent off to the major contractor but even the mid-sized firm would contract out for many components. This would employ smaller firms all across the country. Of course, each step down, employees ask about the components and sub-assemblies they are producing. And, of course, they are given an answer but that answer may or may not be the truth and because the employees are not in a position to judge, any secrecy involved in the new aircraft can be maintained.

This is exactly what the SS did in South America. They drew up specifications and sent them out to aircraft firms or manufacturing firms all over the world to be built. The firm filling the order had no idea what they were building and probably didn?t even care. The major supplier was the United States. Jan Holberg explains it this way to Michael X. Barton:

> *“In secret ’saucer” bases, hidden in the wilds of South America, South Africa and elsewhere, German scientists are busy assembling large-sized flying discs. All work is done in secret underground factories, just as during World War II. (as at Nordhausen, Traumstein, Bleicherode, etc.) However, actual parts for the discs are not made at the bases, but*

> *manufactured by independent companies in the United States. Each company makes a different part, but has no idea what that part will be used for. All parts are subsequently shipped by each company to some office in South America. From there, the parts are sent to the various secret bases. As Richard Ogden has suggested, the Germans may have perfected an Electro-Magnetic powered Saucer since 1947. Based on Viktor Schauberger's work, for example." (23)*

Flying saucers are the most visible sign of SS post-war high technology. They are probably the indicator that other high-tech projects are underway that are less easily observed. In the UFO Universe, flying saucer reports appeared very early in South America. They appeared as early as they did in the USA, that being the summer of 1947. Some of the first flying saucers to appear were the 'smoky saucers" and they seem to have persisted in South America for a long time. This is exactly the type of flying disc which was sighted in Karachi, Pakistan at about the time in question and which was discussed in an earlier chapter. This type of craft would have provided great service in the isolated base locations of South America. Michael X. Barton devotes a whole chapter to smoky saucers in this book titled *The German Saucer Story*. But these Germans were also trying to produce saucers of a much higher technology. Let us take a look at what was being said about South America by Germans of those times and at what South Americans said about the origin of their own flying saucers.

The German community in South America is/was a rather closed one. Once an Argentinean researcher preempted my anticipated request and told me not to ask him to try to infiltrate Germans or German establishments in his city for information on this subject since that course of action did not lead to long-term health in his estimation. Actually, we are fortunate in this quest since an expatriate Austrian, to whom information was available but who had no love for the Nazis, was willing to spill the beans. This was Fred Andract, an engineer who had immigrated to Uruguay from Austria and wrote of flying saucers in South America and their origins sometime in the late 1970's. Apparently, the back-story is that Andract responded to an article in *El Diario*, or wrote an article for that publication which was picked up and/or summarized in other Spanish language publications. Below are two of these summaries. The first one was translated into German by O. Bergmann and then into English by me. The second came from *En Contacto*, a Mexican UFO magazine. This was translated for me into English from Spanish.

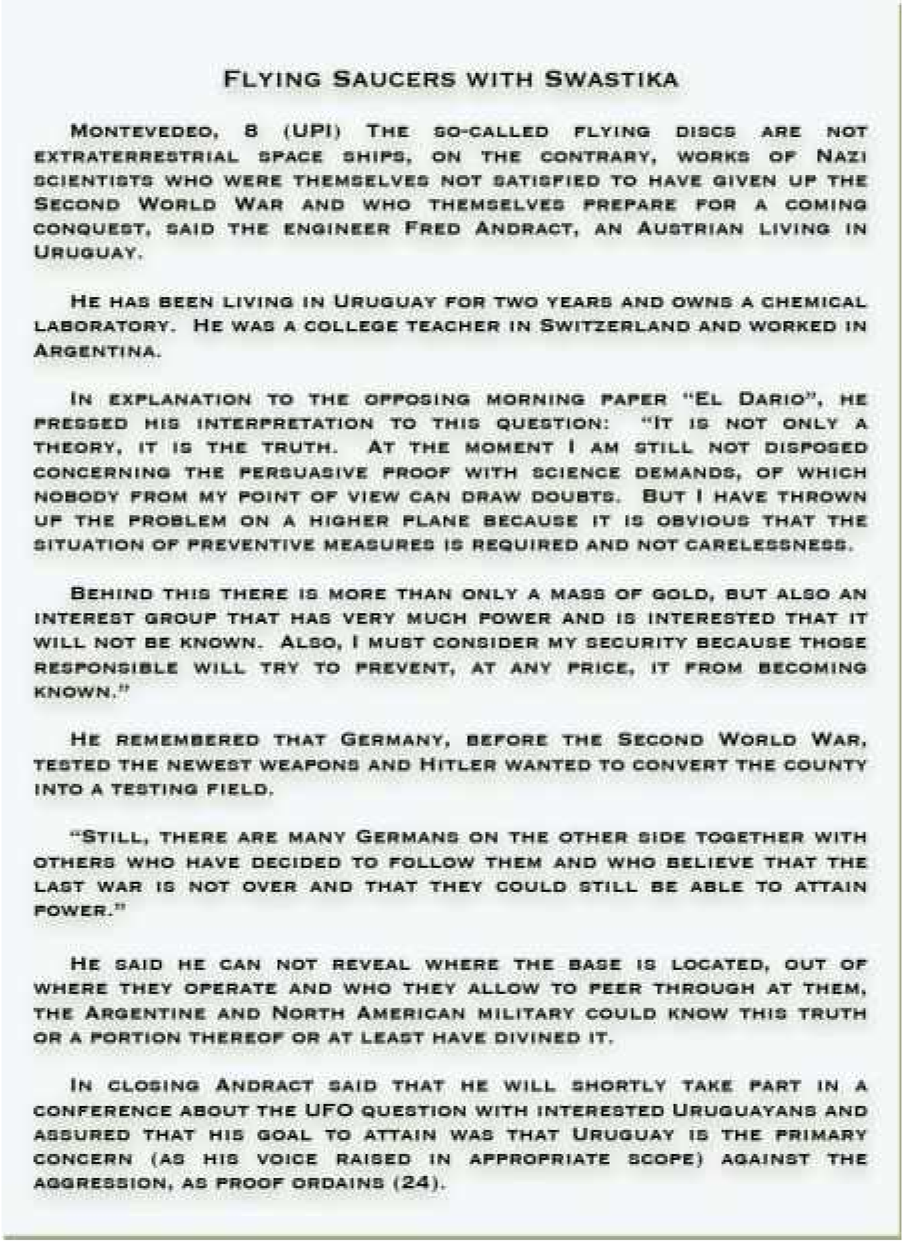

Flying Saucers with Swastika

Montevedeo, 8 (UPI) The so-called flying discs are not extraterrestrial space ships, on the contrary, works of Nazi scientists who were themselves not satisfied to have given up the Second World War and who themselves prepare for a coming conquest, said the engineer Fred Andract, an Austrian living in Uruguay.

He has been living in Uruguay for two years and owns a chemical laboratory. He was a college teacher in Switzerland and worked in Argentina.

In explanation to the opposing morning paper "El Dario", he pressed his interpretation to this question: "It is not only a theory, it is the truth. At the moment I am still not disposed concerning the persuasive proof with science demands, of which nobody from my point of view can draw doubts. But I have thrown up the problem on a higher plane because it is obvious that the situation of preventive measures is required and not carelessness.

Behind this there is more than only a mass of gold, but also an interest group that has very much power and is interested that it will not be known. Also, I must consider my security because those responsible will try to prevent, at any price, it from becoming known."

He remembered that Germany, before the Second World War, tested the newest weapons and Hitler wanted to convert the county into a testing field.

"Still, there are many Germans on the other side together with others who have decided to follow them and who believe that the last war is not over and that they could still be able to attain power."

He said he can not reveal where the base is located, out of where they operate and who they allow to peer through at them, the Argentine and North American military could know this truth or a portion thereof or at least have divined it.

In closing Andract said that he will shortly take part in a conference about the UFO question with interested Uruguayans and assured that his goal to attain was that Uruguay is the primary concern (as his voice raised in appropriate scope) against the aggression, as proof ordains (24).

Next is the En Contacto version:

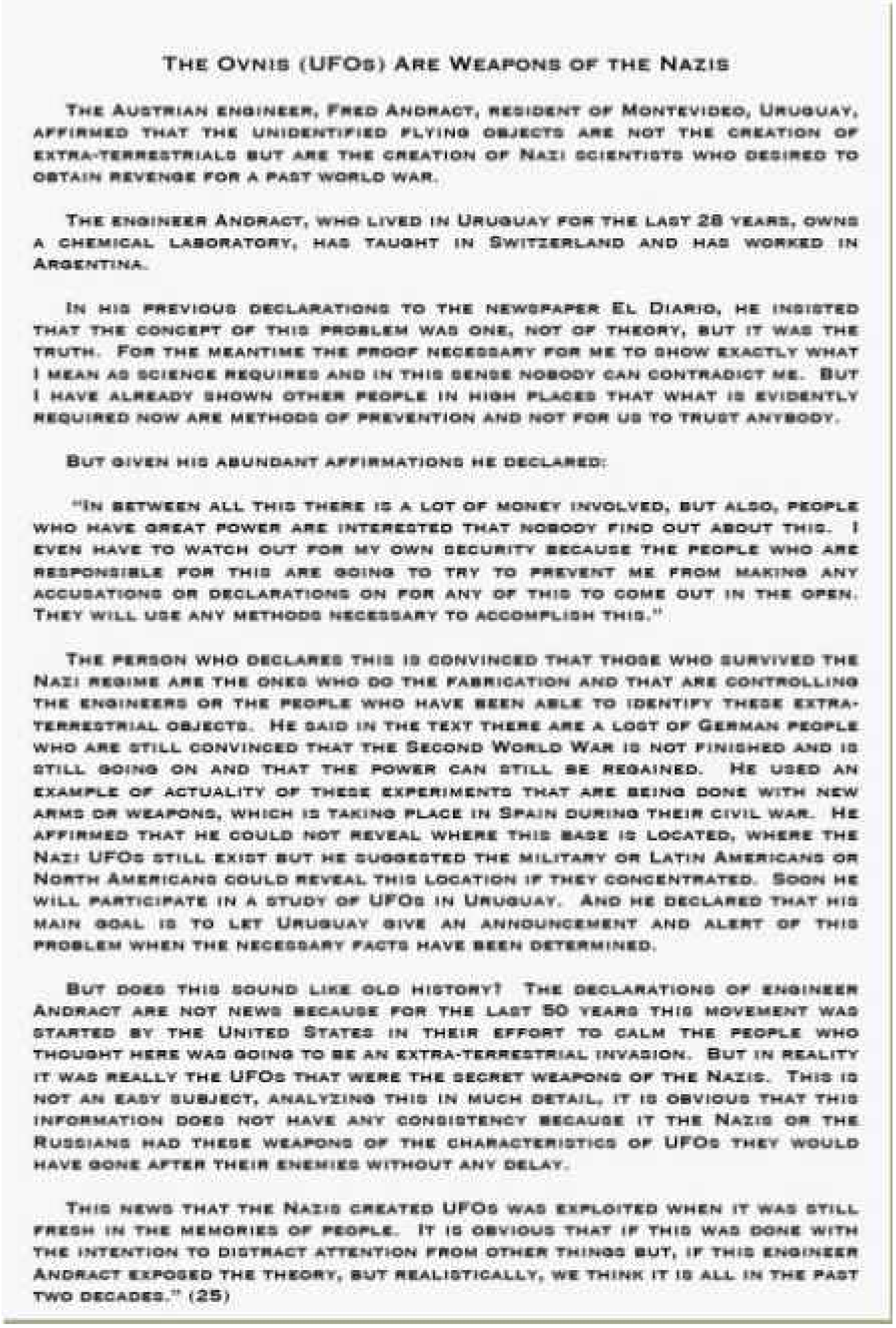

The Ovnis (UFOs) Are Weapons of the Nazis

The Austrian engineer, Fred Andract, resident of Montevideo, Uruguay, affirmed that the unidentified flying objects are not the creation of extra-terrestrials but are the creation of Nazi scientists who desired to obtain revenge for a past world war.

The engineer Andract, who lived in Uruguay for the last 28 years, owns a chemical laboratory, has taught in Switzerland and has worked in Argentina.

In his previous declarations to the newspaper El Diario, he insisted that the concept of this problem was one, not of theory, but it was the truth. For the meantime the proof necessary for me to show exactly what I mean as science requires and in this sense nobody can contradict me. But I have already shown other people in high places that what is evidently required now are methods of prevention and not for us to trust anybody.

But given his abundant affirmations he declared:

"In between all this there is a lot of money involved, but also, people who have great power are interested that nobody find out about this. I even have to watch out for my own security because the people who are responsible for this are going to try to prevent me from making any accusations or declarations on for any of this to come out in the open. They will use any methods necessary to accomplish this."

The person who declares this is convinced that those who survived the Nazi regime are the ones who do the fabrication and that are controlling the engineers or the people who have been able to identify these extra-terrestrial objects. He said in the text there are a lost of German people who are still convinced that the Second World War is not finished and is still going on and that the power can still be regained. He used an example of actuality of these experiments that are being done with new arms or weapons, which is taking place in Spain during their civil war. He affirmed that he could not reveal where this base is located, where the Nazi UFOs still exist but he suggested the military or Latin Americans or North Americans could reveal this location if they concentrated. Soon he will participate in a study of UFOs in Uruguay. And he declared that his main goal is to let Uruguay give an announcement and alert of this problem when the necessary facts have been determined.

But does this sound like old history? The declarations of engineer Andract are not news because for the last 50 years this movement was started by the United States in their effort to calm the people who thought here was going to be an extra-terrestrial invasion. But in reality it was really the UFOs that were the secret weapons of the Nazis. This is not an easy subject, analyzing this in much detail, it is obvious that this information does not have any consistency because it the Nazis or the Russians had these weapons of the characteristics of UFOs they would have gone after their enemies without any delay.

This news that the Nazis created UFOs was exploited when it was still fresh in the memories of people. It is obvious that if this was done with the intention to distract attention from other things but, if this engineer Andract exposed the theory, but realistically, we think it is all in the past two decades." (25)

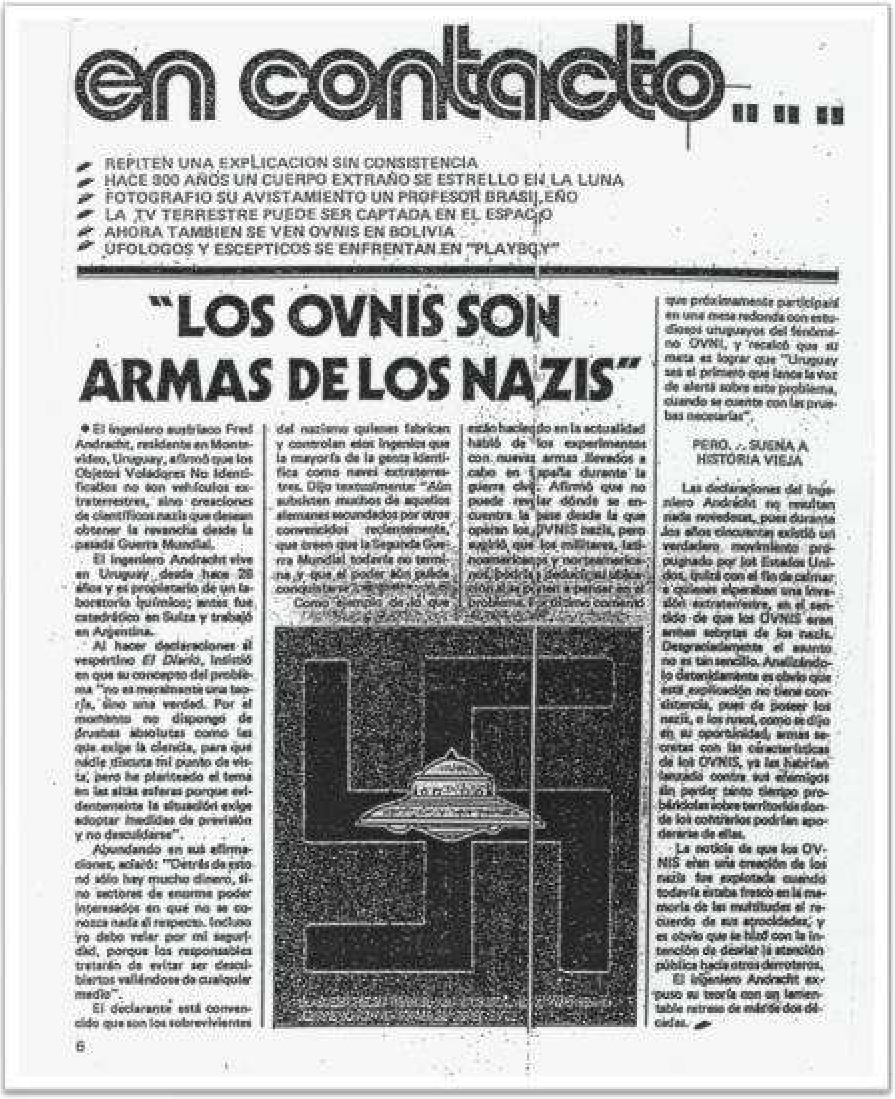

en contacto...

- REPITEN UNA EXPLICACION SIN CONSISTENCIA
- HACE 900 AÑOS UN CUERPO EXTRAÑO SE ESTRELLO EN LA LUNA
- FOTOGRAFIO SU AVISTAMIENTO UN PROFESOR BRASILEÑO
- LA TV TERRESTRE PUEDE SER CAPTADA EN EL ESPACIO
- AHORA TAMBIEN SE VEN OVNIS EN BOLIVIA
- UFOLOGOS Y ESCEPTICOS SE ENFRENTAN EN "PLAYBOY"

"LOS OVNIS SON ARMAS DE LOS NAZIS"

• El ingeniero austríaco Fred Andracht, residente en Montevideo, Uruguay, afirmó que los Objetos Voladores No Identificados no son vehículos extraterrestres, sino creaciones de científicos nazis que desean obtener la revancha desde la pasada Guerra Mundial.

El ingeniero Andracht vive en Uruguay desde hace 28 años y es propietario de un laboratorio químico; antes fue catedrático en Suiza y trabajó en Argentina.

Al hacer declaraciones al vespertino *El Diario*, insistió en que su concepto del problema "no es meramente una teoría, sino una verdad. Por el momento no dispongo de pruebas absolutas como las que exige la ciencia, para que nadie discuta mi punto de vista, pero he planteado el tema en las altas esferas porque evidentemente la situación exige adoptar medidas de previsión y no descuidarse".

Abundando en sus afirmaciones, aclaró: "Detrás de esto no sólo hay mucho dinero, sino sectores de enorme poder interesados en que no se conozca nada al respecto. Incluso yo debo velar por mi seguridad, porque los responsables tratarán de evitar ser descubiertos valiéndose de cualquier medio".

El declarante está convencido que son los sobrevivientes del nazismo quienes fabrican y controlan esos ingenios que la mayoría de la gente identifica como naves extraterrestres. Dijo textualmente: "Aún subsisten muchos de aquellos alemanes secundados por otros convencidos recientemente, que creen que la Segunda Guerra Mundial todavía no terminó y que el poder aún puede conquistarse [illegible]".

Como ejemplo de lo que [illegible] están haciendo en la actualidad habló de los experimentos con nuevas armas llevados a cabo en España durante la guerra civil. Afirmó que no puede revelar dónde se encuentra la base desde la que operan los OVNIS nazis, pero sugirió que los militares latinoamericanos y norteamericanos podrían deducir su ubicación si se ponen a pensar en el problema. Por último comentó que próximamente participará en una mesa redonda con estudiosos uruguayos del fenómeno OVNI, y recalcó que su meta es lograr que "Uruguay sea el primero que lance la voz de alerta sobre este problema, cuando se cuente con las pruebas necesarias".

PERO... SUENA A HISTORIA VIEJA

Las declaraciones del ingeniero Andracht no resultan nada novedosas, pues durante los años cincuenta existió un verdadero movimiento propugnado por los Estados Unidos, quizá con el fin de calmar a quienes esperaban una invasión extraterrestre, en el sentido de que los OVNIS eran armas secretas de los nazis. Desgraciadamente el asunto no es tan sencillo. Analizándolo detenidamente es obvio que esta explicación no tiene consistencia, pues de poseer los nazis, o los rusos, como se dijo en su oportunidad, armas secretas con las características de los OVNIS, ya las habrían lanzado contra sus enemigos sin perder tanto tiempo probándolas sobre territorios donde los contrarios podrían apoderarse de ellas.

La noticia de que los OVNIS eran una creación de los nazis fue explotada cuando todavía estaba fresco en la memoria de las multitudes el recuerdo de sus atrocidades, y es obvio que se hizo con la intención de desviar la atención pública hacia otros derroteros.

El ingeniero Andracht expuso su teoría con un lamentable retraso de más de dos décadas.

6

En Contacto Article This Mexican UFO magazine article details the German basis of UFOs in South America and was written by an Austrian engineer.

To this I would like to add another report, discussing flying saucer research in South America. This report was turned in to the FBI by a European couple acting as go-betweens in an attempt to sell flying saucer designs in Austria. The second part of the report is an alleged English translation of an original German language letter from the inventor.

Actually, there is yet another second letter that is not reproduced here since it is of little value.

This report was originally sold by UFO researcher William L. Moore of Majestic 12 fame. Sometime later, Moore soiled himself by saying he had acted as “a government asset?. But even prior to that I knew I needed an original copy from the FBI, not one handled by Moore. I requested it under FOIA. Naturally, it was rejected, claiming the FBI had no knowledge of the report in question. I sent the FBI their exact file number and a copy of Moore’s report, asking for an original. Not in my wildest imagination could I have guessed what was to transpire.

A couple days after firing off my second request (I did not call it an appeal), I was awakened by telephone at some early hour by a female voice stating that she was an FBI librarian. She was rather upset with my request since I already had a copy of the file. I was groggy without my morning coffee but finally my head cleared and I lit into her, telling her that for verification, I needed an unspoiled, clean report.

She then told me I could order their complete UFO package for $110.00, including the file I wanted as well as their extraterrestrial stuff. I told her I did not want their other stuff, only the file in question so I should not have to pay the $110.00. She backed down but tried another tactic. She said that my file was the original file since William L. Moore had re-typed all the files in the $110.00 package and then the originals were thrown away! Moore even retyped a cover page using FBI stationary! His initials (WLM) appear on the retyped cover letter, dated 7/84, and followed by the words “A True Copy?, a totally meaningless statement if not coupled with an affidavit, so swearing, under penalty of perjury. And in fact, the first document, retyped below, bears a stamp running 180 degrees in opposition to the text stating: “copies destroyed 270 Nov 19 1984. Naturally, in Mr. Moore’s retyping effort there does not exist an FBI file number, without which all denials are possible. Fortunately, we have a second cover letter, a copy of an original, which contains the hand written FBI file number of 62-93494-338.

So, the file I wanted no longer existed because they had allowed a (then?) non-governmental, non-FBI (?) worker to waltz in and type them up after which the originals were thrown away and the retyped copies became the official FBI files. This was explained to me by a “librarian?. Yet most FBI agents are law school graduates. With that general level of legal understanding walking the hallways, how is this sloppy evidence chain even possible” Is it any wonder that the FBI does not want to try terrorists in a Federal Court”

Nevertheless, here is the report as I received it originally from William Moore. In spite of my objections to the chain of evidence, I have no reason to believe it has been altered in substance. Consider the above discussion a disclaimer and statement of full disclosure. For the redacted words (blacked out) I am going to use a series of X, XXX, XXXX, about the letter-length of the redacted portion. I am going to forego retyping the cover letters and go right to the text. The first is the FBI’s work. The second is an English translation of the inventor’s proposal.

Confidential

On January 12, 1954, XXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXX East Orange, NY, appeared at the Newark Office and advised that he had received a letter from one XXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXX West Austria on or about December 20, 1953.

XXXXX stated that the letter requested him to attempt to sell a number of inventions, which he, XXXXX had developed. XXXXXX stated that the request was to contact Aircraft Companies and sewing Machine Companies in the United States and attempt to interest them in these devices.

According to XXXXXXX requested that no governmental agencies be contacted. XXXXX stated that the intentions, which XXXXX had developed were new type of sewing machine and a flying saucer was of some importance in the national defense of this country. XXXX stated that he has never met XXXX but that XXXXX was given his name by XXXXX brother, XXXXX who resides in Graz, Austria, and who is employed at XXXXXXXXXXX, Graz, Austria. XXXXXX stated that his brother worked with XXXXX at one time, and he believes that XXXX is a chemist or some type of engineer. XXXX stated that the contents of the letter seemed fantastic to him and that if the letter were not written in such an intelligent manner, he would have doubted XXXXXX sanity. He stated that XXXXXX claims to have sold a new principle of aero-dynamics, which made it possible to construct a practical flying saucer and that XXXXX had developed a model that flies without the usual hazards. According to XXXX the letter continues by stating that XXXXX has been in contact with other men throughout the world, who have been attempting to develop the saucer and he has been the first to win real success.

By way of background, XXXXX stated that he was born in the vicinity of Leoben, Austria in 1925 and arrived in New York city on March 29, 1952 from Bremerhaven, Germany. He is employed at the XXXXXXXXXXXXX in Haplewood, NJ.

On January 30, 1954, XXXXXXXXXXX East Orange, NJ, appeared at the Newark Office and advised that she was the wife of XXXXXXX. She stated that another letter had been received from XXXXXXXXXX by her husband, XXXXXXXXX. She stated that her husband did not want to furnish the information in this letter to the FBI. She stated that he was not aware that she was furnishing this information and wished to keep the interview confidential.

XXXXX stated that the letter received recently by her husband, from XXXXX contained information that XXXXX had been contacted by Communists in Austria, who wished to take him to Switzerland in order that he might further, XXXXX to increase his efforts to sell XXXXXX new invention in the United States.

By way of background, XXXXXXX advised that she was born of German parents in South Russia and at the time of the German invasion of Russia, during World War II, she and her family were resettled in Germany. After the war, she married XXXXXXX and came to the United States with him.

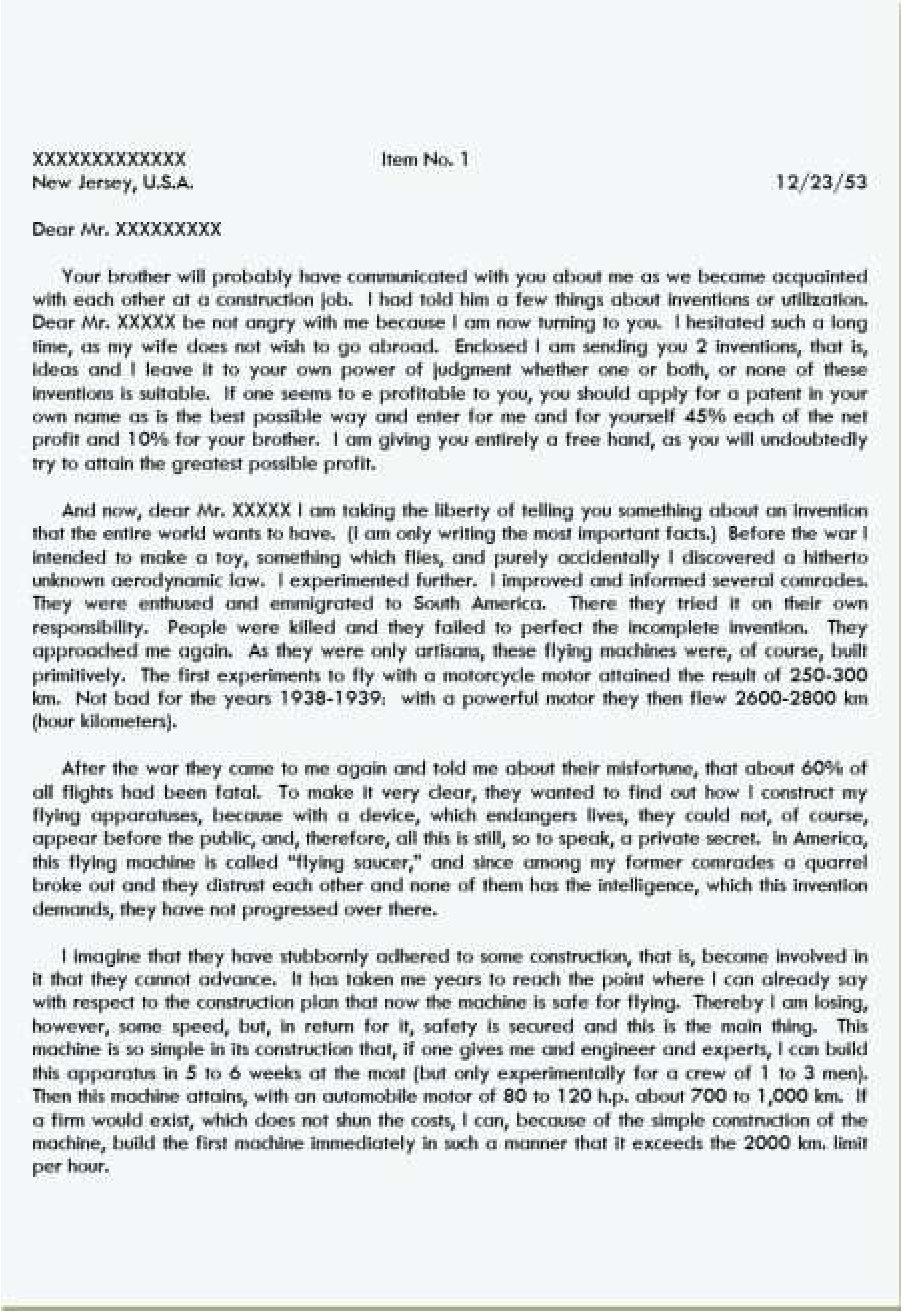

XXXXXXXXXXXXX
New Jersey, U.S.A.

Item No. 1

12/23/53

Dear Mr. XXXXXXXXX

Your brother will probably have communicated with you about me as we became acquainted with each other at a construction job. I had told him a few things about inventions or utilization. Dear Mr. XXXXX be not angry with me because I am now turning to you. I hesitated such a long time, as my wife does not wish to go abroad. Enclosed I am sending you 2 inventions, that is, ideas and I leave it to your own power of judgment whether one or both, or none of these inventions is suitable. If one seems to e profitable to you, you should apply for a patent in your own name as is the best possible way and enter for me and for yourself 45% each of the net profit and 10% for your brother. I am giving you entirely a free hand, as you will undoubtedly try to attain the greatest possible profit.

And now, dear Mr. XXXXX I am taking the liberty of telling you something about an invention that the entire world wants to have. (I am only writing the most important facts.) Before the war I intended to make a toy, something which flies, and purely accidentally I discovered a hitherto unknown aerodynamic law. I experimented further. I improved and informed several comrades. They were enthused and emmigrated to South America. There they tried it on their own responsibility. People were killed and they failed to perfect the incomplete invention. They approached me again. As they were only artisans, these flying machines were, of course, built primitively. The first experiments to fly with a motorcycle motor attained the result of 250-300 km. Not bad for the years 1938-1939: with a powerful motor they then flew 2600-2800 km (hour kilometers).

After the war they came to me again and told me about their misfortune, that about 60% of all flights had been fatal. To make it very clear, they wanted to find out how I construct my flying apparatuses, because with a device, which endangers lives, they could not, of course, appear before the public, and, therefore, all this is still, so to speak, a private secret. In America, this flying machine is called "flying saucer," and since among my former comrades a quarrel broke out and they distrust each other and none of them has the intelligence, which this invention demands, they have not progressed over there.

I imagine that they have stubbornly adhered to some construction, that is, become involved in it that they cannot advance. It has taken me years to reach the point where I can already say with respect to the construction plan that now the machine is safe for flying. Thereby I am losing, however, some speed, but, in return for it, safety is secured and this is the main thing. This machine is so simple in its construction that, if one gives me and engineer and experts, I can build this apparatus in 5 to 6 weeks at the most (but only experimentally for a crew of 1 to 3 men). Then this machine attains, with an automobile motor of 80 to 120 h.p. about 700 to 1,000 km. If a firm would exist, which does not shun the costs, I can, because of the simple construction of the machine, build the first machine immediately in such a manner that it exceeds the 2000 km. limit per hour.

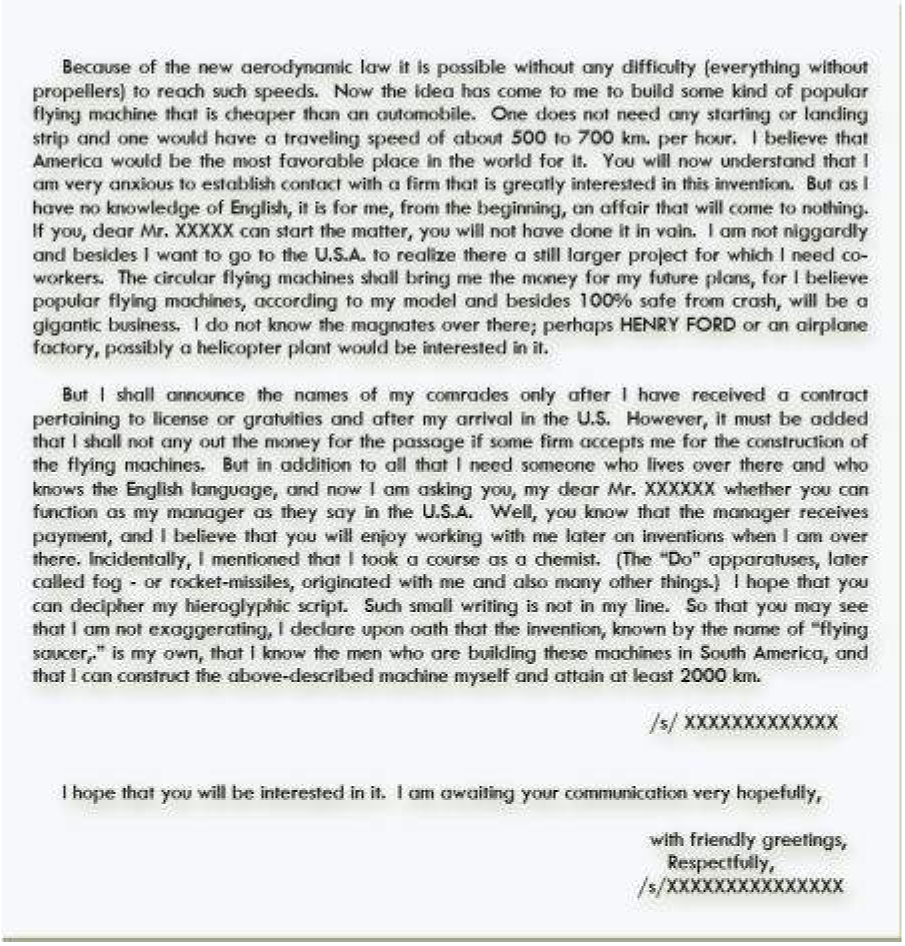

Because of the new aerodynamic law it is possible without any difficulty (everything without propellers) to reach such speeds. Now the idea has come to me to build some kind of popular flying machine that is cheaper than an automobile. One does not need any starting or landing strip and one would have a traveling speed of about 500 to 700 km. per hour. I believe that America would be the most favorable place in the world for it. You will now understand that I am very anxious to establish contact with a firm that is greatly interested in this invention. But as I have no knowledge of English, it is for me, from the beginning, an affair that will come to nothing. If you, dear Mr. XXXXX can start the matter, you will not have done it in vain. I am not niggardly and besides I want to go to the U.S.A. to realize there a still larger project for which I need co-workers. The circular flying machines shall bring me the money for my future plans, for I believe popular flying machines, according to my model and besides 100% safe from crash, will be a gigantic business. I do not know the magnates over there; perhaps HENRY FORD or an airplane factory, possibly a helicopter plant would be interested in it.

But I shall announce the names of my comrades only after I have received a contract pertaining to license or gratuities and after my arrival in the U.S. However, it must be added that I shall not any out the money for the passage if some firm accepts me for the construction of the flying machines. But in addition to all that I need someone who lives over there and who knows the English language, and now I am asking you, my dear Mr. XXXXXX whether you can function as my manager as they say in the U.S.A. Well, you know that the manager receives payment, and I believe that you will enjoy working with me later on inventions when I am over there. Incidentally, I mentioned that I took a course as a chemist. (The "Do" apparatuses, later called fog - or rocket-missiles, originated with me and also many other things.) I hope that you can decipher my hieroglyphic script. Such small writing is not in my line. So that you may see that I am not exaggerating, I declare upon oath that the invention, known by the name of "flying saucer,." is my own, that I know the men who are building these machines in South America, and that I can construct the above-described machine myself and attain at least 2000 km.

/s/ XXXXXXXXXXXXX

I hope that you will be interested in it. I am awaiting your communication very hopefully,

with friendly greetings,
Respectfully,
/s/XXXXXXXXXXXXXXX

As documentation, all that can be offered is my telephonic conversation with the FBI and the source for the original retyped documents (26).

This last document is certainly a strange one. The “inventor?, for lack of his name, claims he can use motorcycle or automobile engines to power a flying saucer. He also claims that no propeller is used (presumably also no rotor as in a helicopter). He claims a new aerodynamic principle. What could be going on here”

With no propeller or carrying screw, this could not be a Schriever or Habermohl type of saucer. Likewise, it could not be a Miethe type saucer since it involves no jet or rocket engines. That only leaves field propulsion, but with motorcycle and auto engines”

The inventor says such a saucer can be built with a motorcycle engine but a more powerful, faster one can be built with an automobile engine. Both only produce rotary movement of their crankshafts. The motorcycle engine would produce higher revolutions per minute but evidently this is of no benefit to the speed of the saucer. More speed can be obtained with a higher horsepower auto engine. The difference seems to be the auto engine produces more torque even though it turns less rapidly. So, what would fit the bill is a saucer that needed an excess of torque, the rotary force of the engine, obviously to turn something that would somehow be translated into speed, that is, saucer speed in proportion to simply torque of the engine. Perhaps we can just hold these thoughts for a while and return to our overall picture of the SS post-war world in South America.

Here is the overview so far. The post-war SS is working on high technology in their hidden underground bunkers. This post-war SS or Nazi International is making deals involving the utilization of German scientists and German firms associated with the Nazis, probably through Otto Skorzeny’s engineering firm in Madrid acting as a clearing house. The Nazi International is being used on high-tech projects where the local government fears too much involvement with either the East or the West or when using the Nazi International is a compromise arrived at by both East and West. Meanwhile, farms, towns, all of human infrastructure is being carried on in their rather open secured areas run by these Germans, probably throughout South America but centering on southern South America. As friendly governments rise and fall, the relationship with the Nazi International adjusts and perhaps settlements move.

But there are a little more to the secured settlements themselves than meets the eye. And this fact and new understanding about it opens up a whole new chapter and new scope concerning the Nazis and their post-war Nazi world. Ladislas Farago provides the initial clue, although I must admit that I did not understand it at first blush. He says:

> *"The geographical centers of Nazism in Chile were in the area east of Valdivia, and in Parral, just south of Santiago. Located in the latter region is the weirdest Nazi encampment of the postwar world, housing a sect that combines Nazism and voodooism." (27)*

Something about Nazism and voodooism just to not mesh. Farago must be talking about some other aspect of the occult that he simply does not understand or wants to ascribe to the Nazis as a way of demonizing them. At first, I thought this must be the Thule or Vril people or Juergen-Rathoffer's "Uranus 13" or 'sonderbuero 13?. But a conversation with Georg Breckmann set me straight. Farago was closer to the truth than he ever could have guessed while still being wrong.

It was explained to me that the Ahnenerbe set up a special research unit, Sonderkommando H, to research the Inquisition and the persecution of witches. Georg Breckmann was so kind as to send me some information on this subject.

From *Fortean Times*, 1981, comes an article written by Nigel Pennick titled: "Hexen! German Witches Burned Again?. This article starts by recounting an exhibition at the Landesmuseum in Karlsruhe concerning witches in Germany. One sub-section got the most attention:

> *"Although it was a minor part of the exhibition, the section on Sonderkommando H, a research office of the Nazi SS, attracted the greatest interest fro the press. In the 1930s, Heinrich Himmler, Reichsfuehrer SS, set up the department to research mediaeval German witch trials. His civil servants scoured the record offices for actual trial documents and created considerable dossiers on the holocaust undertaken by the church."*

From the same publication, Patricia Clough supplies more details in her article: “Himmler’s Witch Hunt?:

> *“Hidden away in the mysterious Archive Department seven of the Reichssicherheitshaupamt “ SS chief Heinrich Himmler’s Headquarters in Berlin “ SS men, academics and assistants known only by their initials pored over mountains of old documents, cataloguing, filing and indexing. By the time someone stopped them, they had produced some 3,621 files containing 30,000 pages.”*

She continues:

> *“?The project was halted in 1944 when the mounting allied air raids on Berlin forced the Nazis to move it to a castle at Slava in Silesia, where Himmler ran political indoctrination courses. After the war, the Poles stored the records in an archive known only to a handful of scholars.”*

The reason for this work was given by both authors as an attempt to find fuel to attack the Catholic Church. This seems unrealistic to me. If the Catholic Church was ever the enemy of the Nazis, certainly by the 1940’s it was not even a slight threat compared to the Allied Powers. By 1944 the only projects undertaken by the SS, Ahnenerbe or not, was a quest for immediate weaponry. So, if the SS was working on something in this time frame, it was a weapon. But the answers are provided by the final document Georg Breckmann sent me, although I do not know its origin. It appears to be of Internet origin. This version might be compared to the many web-sites on German flying discs discussing worm holes and aliens from Aldebaran in that it states the most radical, sensational, and frankly fictional position possible. On the other hand, it does provide color and flavor regarding the Karoteckia legend and so illustrates why this topic is exciting. This article should be prefaced by saying that the word for “witches” is “Hexen” in German, the word “library” in German is “Bibliothek” and the word for “card” is “Karte?.

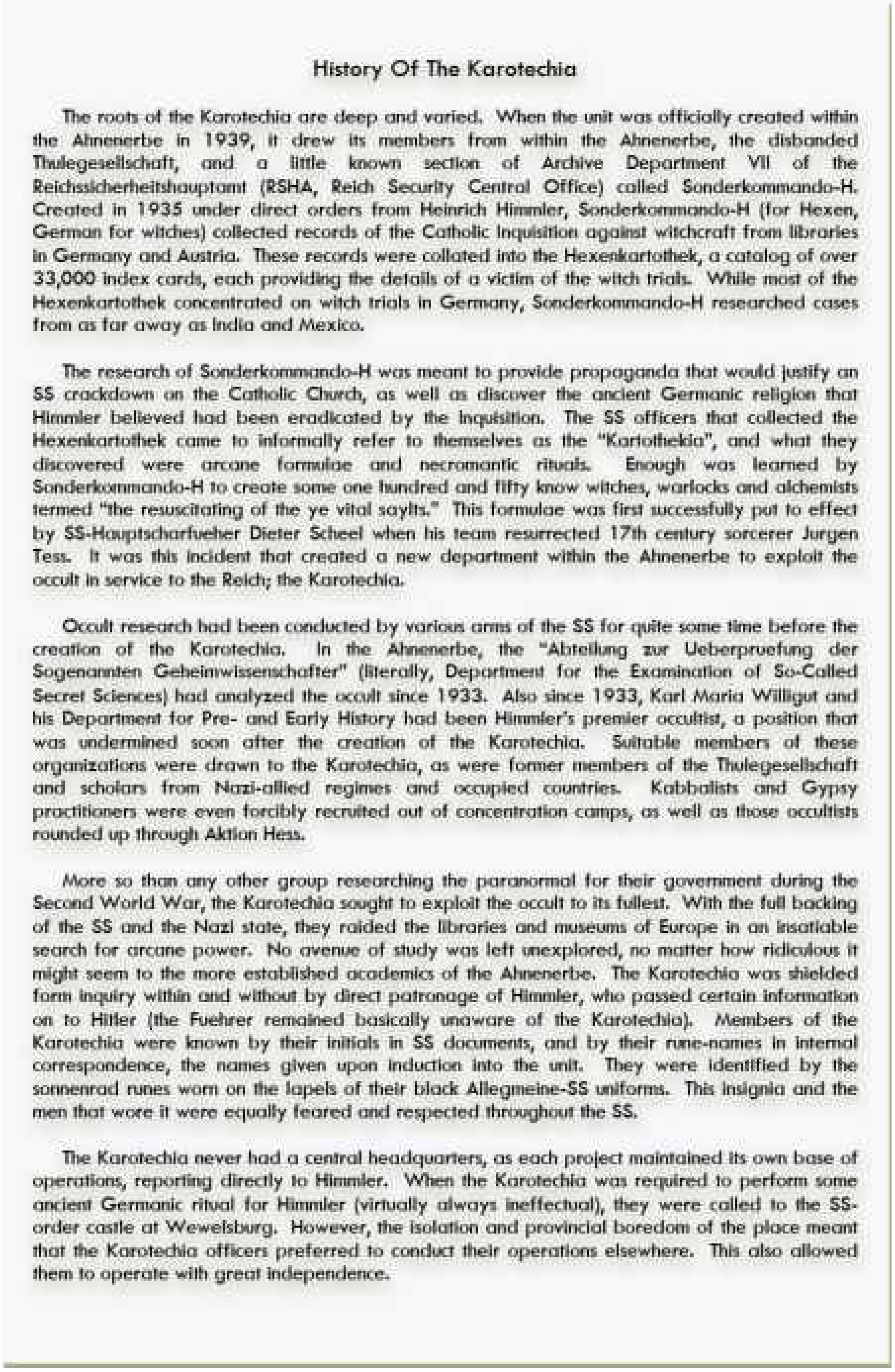

History Of The Karotechia

The roots of the Karotechia are deep and varied. When the unit was officially created within the Ahnenerbe in 1939, it drew its members from within the Ahnenerbe, the disbanded Thulegesellschaft, and a little known section of Archive Department VII of the Reichssicherheitshauptamt (RSHA, Reich Security Central Office) called Sonderkommando-H. Created in 1935 under direct orders from Heinrich Himmler, Sonderkommando-H (for Hexen, German for witches) collected records of the Catholic Inquisition against witchcraft from libraries in Germany and Austria. These records were collated into the Hexenkartothek, a catalog of over 33,000 index cards, each providing the details of a victim of the witch trials. While most of the Hexenkartothek concentrated on witch trials in Germany, Sonderkommando-H researched cases from as far away as India and Mexico.

The research of Sonderkommando-H was meant to provide propaganda that would justify an SS crackdown on the Catholic Church, as well as discover the ancient Germanic religion that Himmler believed had been eradicated by the Inquisition. The SS officers that collected the Hexenkartothek came to informally refer to themselves as the "Kartothekia", and what they discovered were arcane formulae and necromantic rituals. Enough was learned by Sonderkommando-H to create some one hundred and fifty know witches, warlocks and alchemists termed "the resuscitating of the ye vital saylts." This formulae was first successfully put to effect by SS-Hauptscharfueher Dieter Scheel when his team resurrected 17th century sorcerer Jurgen Tess. It was this incident that created a new department within the Ahnenerbe to exploit the occult in service to the Reich; the Karotechia.

Occult research had been conducted by various arms of the SS for quite some time before the creation of the Karotechia. In the Ahnenerbe, the "Abteilung zur Ueberpruefung der Sogenannten Geheimwissenschafter" (literally, Department for the Examination of So-Called Secret Sciences) had analyzed the occult since 1933. Also since 1933, Karl Maria Willigut and his Department for Pre- and Early History had been Himmler's premier occultist, a position that was undermined soon after the creation of the Karotechia. Suitable members of these organizations were drawn to the Karotechia, as were former members of the Thulegesellschaft and scholars from Nazi-allied regimes and occupied countries. Kabbalists and Gypsy practitioners were even forcibly recruited out of concentration camps, as well as those occultists rounded up through Aktion Hess.

More so than any other group researching the paranormal for their government during the Second World War, the Karotechia sought to exploit the occult to its fullest. With the full backing of the SS and the Nazi state, they raided the libraries and museums of Europe in an insatiable search for arcane power. No avenue of study was left unexplored, no matter how ridiculous it might seem to the more established academics of the Ahnenerbe. The Karotechia was shielded form inquiry within and without by direct patronage of Himmler, who passed certain information on to Hitler (the Fuehrer remained basically unaware of the Karotechia). Members of the Karotechia were known by their initials in SS documents, and by their rune-names in internal correspondence, the names given upon induction into the unit. They were identified by the sonnenrad runes worn on the lapels of their black Allegmeine-SS uniforms. This insignia and the men that wore it were equally feared and respected throughout the SS.

The Karotechia never had a central headquarters, as each project maintained its own base of operations, reporting directly to Himmler. When the Karotechia was required to perform some ancient Germanic ritual for Himmler (virtually always ineffectual), they were called to the SS-order castle at Wewelsburg. However, the isolation and provincial boredom of the place meant that the Karotechia officers preferred to conduct their operations elsewhere. This also allowed them to operate with great independence.

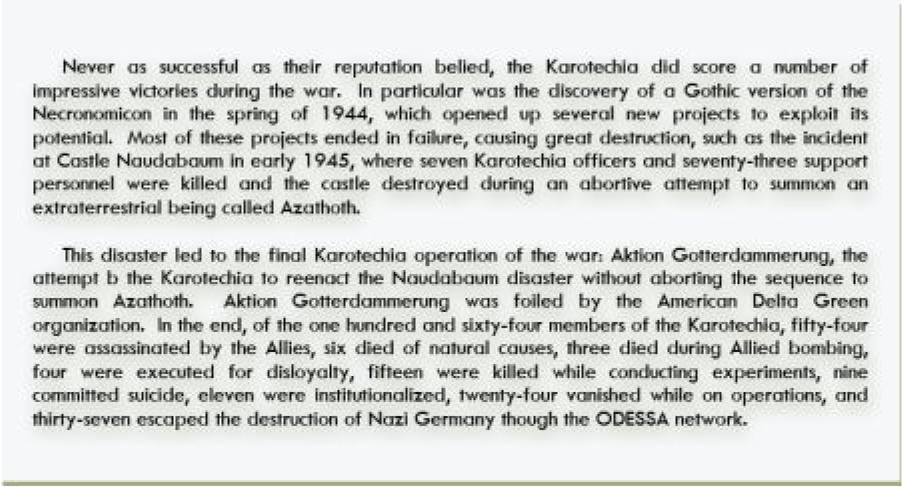

Never as successful as their reputation belied, the Karotechia did score a number of impressive victories during the war. In particular was the discovery of a Gothic version of the Necronomicon in the spring of 1944, which opened up several new projects to exploit its potential. Most of these projects ended in failure, causing great destruction, such as the incident at Castle Naudabaum in early 1945, where seven Karotechia officers and seventy-three support personnel were killed and the castle destroyed during an abortive attempt to summon an extraterrestrial being called Azathoth.

This disaster led to the final Karotechia operation of the war: Aktion Gotterdammerung, the attempt b the Karotechia to reenact the Naudabaum disaster without aborting the sequence to summon Azathoth. Aktion Gotterdammerung was foiled by the American Delta Green organization. In the end, of the one hundred and sixty-four members of the Karotechia, fifty-four were assassinated by the Allies, six died of natural causes, three died during Allied bombing, four were executed for disloyalty, fifteen were killed while conducting experiments, nine committed suicide, eleven were institutionalized, twenty-four vanished while on operations, and thirty-seven escaped the destruction of Nazi Germany though the ODESSA network.

In the German popular mind, whole words are agglutinated as they are contracted whereby National Sozialist Partei became “Nazi?, for instance. Likewise, the words Hexen Karte Bibliothek ultimately became “Kartotekia” or “Kartothekia?. The above version contains fictional aspects. There is an on-line, video, role-playing game whereby the bad guys, Karotechia, are pitted against the good guys, called Delta Green. In fact if you google Karotechia, almost all the hits speak of Delta Green. There was no Delta Green. Its presence indicates the role-playing game. Good sources on Karotekia simply do not exist in English.

There is a more factual version found on-line at *http://de.wikipedia.org/wiki/Hexenkartothek* in the German language but it is the exact converse to the one above in that it is totally sterile and a book exists on the subject, also in German, titled: “Himmlers Hexenkartothek. Das Interesse des Nationalsozialismus” an der Hexenverfolgung by Soenke Lorenz, Dieter R. Bauer, and Wolfgang Behringer.

A certain computer expert and expert at Internet searches, “Mr. K.” found records for this organization at the Bundesarchiv, Koblenz, Germany, and showed me a webpage on this. These were the actual records, sequestered in Poland and since returned to the German Archives. I have subsequently lost the website and all searches using Sonderkommando-H, Karoteckia (and variants), have failed me but I believe the records exist there.

My informant, Georg Breckmann, who had access to an SS man, told me the SS greatly feared this internal sub-group, Karotechia. This is the “voodoo” Farago discusses in the southern Chilean German secured bases. And according to Georg Breckmann, Karotechia lives to this day, a feared element within a feared organization. I have to believe the research done by Karoteckia was ultimately an occult weapon, otherwise it would have been discarded by the SS.

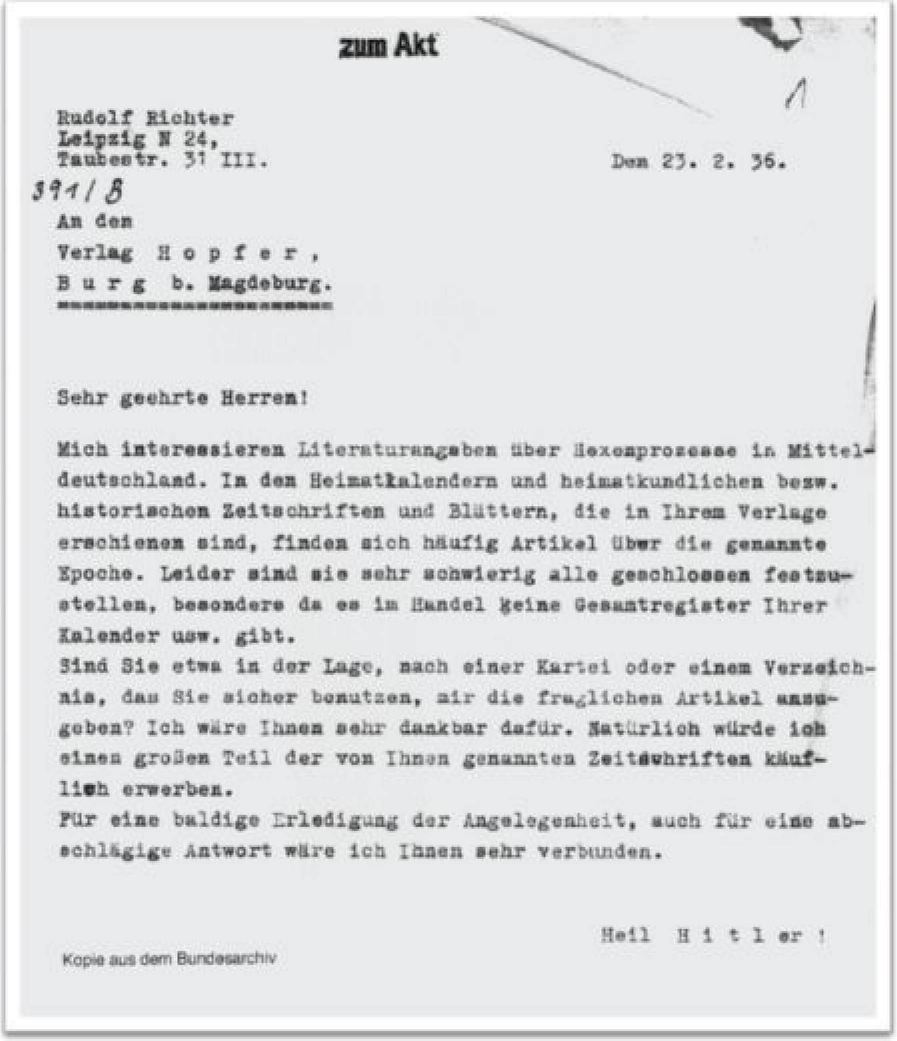

zum Akt

1

Rudolf Richter
Leipzig N 24,
Taubestr. 31 III.

Den 23. 2. 36.

391/8

An den
Verlag Hopfer,
Burg b. Magdeburg.

Sehr geehrte Herren!

Mich interessieren Literaturangaben über Hexenprozesse in Mitteldeutschland. In den Heimatkalendern und heimatkundlichen bezw. historischen Zeitschriften und Blättern, die in Ihrem Verlage erschienen sind, finden sich häufig Artikel über die genannte Epoche. Leider sind sie sehr schwierig alle geschlossen festzustellen, besondere da es im Handel keine Gesamtregister Ihrer Kalender usw. gibt.
Sind Sie etwa in der Lage, nach einer Kartei oder einem Verzeichnis, das Sie sicher benutzen, mir die fraglichen Artikel anzugeben? Ich wäre Ihnen sehr dankbar dafür. Natürlich würde ich einen großen Teil der von Ihnen genannten Zeitschriften käuflich erwerben.
Für eine baldige Erledigung der Angelegenheit, auch für eine abschlägige Antwort wäre ich Ihnen sehr verbunden.

Heil Hitler!

Kopie aus dem Bundesarchiv

A Document from Karoteckia Requesting Assistance” This is a February 32, 1936 request to a publisher specializing in esoteric issues to forward some relevant information and diagrams regarding the activity of witches in central Germany. Unfortunately, no official letterhead is present, only the name of the sender, Rudolf Richter. This letter was found on the Internet and sourced to the German Federal Archives’see bottom, *“Kopie aus dem Bundersarchiv”*

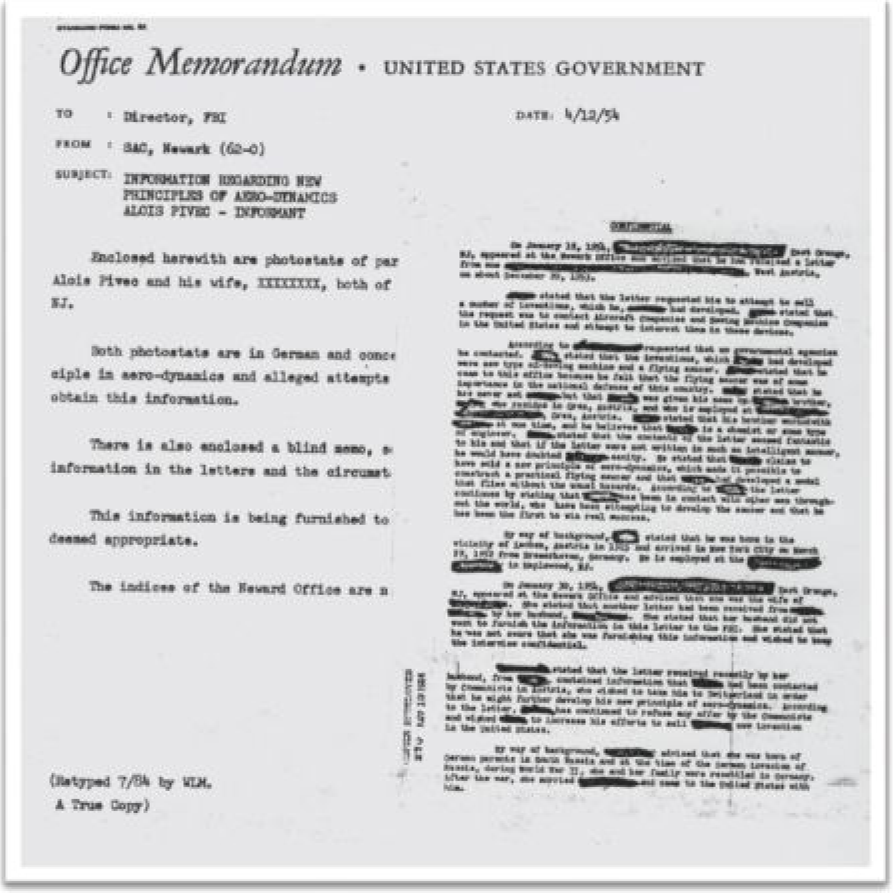

Office Memorandum • UNITED STATES GOVERNMENT

TO : Director, FBI
FROM : SAC, Newark (62-0)
SUBJECT: INFORMATION REGARDING NEW PRINCIPLES OF AERO-DYNAMICS ALOIS PIVEC - INFORMANT

DATE: 4/12/54

Enclosed herewith are photostats of par
Alois Pivec and his wife, XXXXXXXX, both of
NJ.

Both photostats are in German and conc
ciple in aero-dynamics and alleged attempts
obtain this information.

There is also enclosed a blind memo, s
information in the letters and the circumst

This information is being furnished to
deemed appropriate.

The indices of the Newark Office are n

(Retyped 7/84 by WLM.
A True Copy)

An FBI Report on German Flying Discs This report describes a new propulsion system which could be powered by conventional motorcycle or automobile engines! This would only have been possible if all that was needed from those engines was a spinning motion to be used for a specific purpose. Was this specific purpose to overcome the back-torque of interacting magnetic fields” Please note that this report was retyped by William Moore (UFO researcher and later admitted “government asset?), whose initials appear in the lower left of the cover pate. The inset is the first page of the report. On the lower left-hand margin it can be seen that the FBI destroyed the originals. Our tax dollars at work!

The rise of Sonderkommando-H within the SS may have coincided with the demise of Karl Maria Willigut. For this reason alone it is of interest to those who study the Nazi Occult. Anyone who has ever read this genre knows there is, well, plenty of non-, dis-, and false information and gossip associated this topic. It can only be hoped that one or more of the reputable writer/researchers in this field, such as Nigel Graddon, Peter Levenda, Dr. Stephen Flowers, or Nigel Pennick will obtain the Koblenz records and bring the real story to us in English.

So our picture of the post-war SS world is one in which there are outposts of Nazis at both poles and in South America who engage in an off-again, on-again, rather low level conflict with the United States and probably the other former Allied Powers. The conflict is one of forced withdrawals as in Greenland, EMP bomb attacks as at Point 211, and UFO overflights as in Washington, D.C., in 1952. The cooperation involves using German scientists and technical companies for projects that were for political reasons were unacceptable for either the Western or Eastern block countries to undertake. The mutually agreed upon solution by both East and West as well as the country involved was to use the Nazi Internatinal to fulfill these needs. In addition to monetary reward, the price for either the East or West probably involved something desired by the Nazi International following Otto Skorzeny’s model with Churchill. And as with Churchill, neither the First nor Second World wanted to disclose or even admit the existence of the Nazi International.

But there is some new information in the next chapter which may add another dimension to this story and may serve to verify that the Nazi International was not the final incarnation of the post-war SS world; that an organization existed which has never really been properly described, the Third Power.

Literature Cited

1. **Farago, Ladislas, 1974**, *Aftermath Martin Bormann and the Fourth Reich*, page 204, Simon and Schuster, N.Y., NY., USA

2. **Infield, Glenn B., 1981**, *Skorzeny Hitler's Commando*, pages 25, 26, St. Martin's Press, N.Y., NY., USA

3. *ibid.*

4. **Farago, Ladislas, 1974**, page 265

5. **Farago, Ladislas, 1974**, page 265-266

6. **Farago, Ladislas, 1974**, page 209

7. *ibid.*

8. **Buechner, Howard A., Captain and Capt. Wilhelm Bernhard, 1988**, *Adolf Hitler and the Secrets of the Holy Lance*, page 157, Thunderbird Press, Inc., Metairie, Louisiana, USA

9. **Wilson, Harvey, 1964**, Article in Police Gazette

10. **Stevens, Henry, 2001**, *Hitler's Flying Saucers*, pages 249-253, Adventures Unlimited Publishing, Kempton, Illinois, USA

11. **Stevens, Henry, 2007**, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret weapons, Science and Technology*, pages 258-305, Adventures Unlimited Publishing, Kempton, Illinois, USA

12. **Haarmann, D.H., 1985**, *III Geheim Wunderwaffen Ueber den Krieg hinaus!,* page 77, Hugin Gesellschaft Fuer Politisch-Philosophische Studiern E.V., Wetter, Germany

13. **Landig, Wilhelm, 1980**, *Wolfzeit um Thule*, page 167, Volkstum-Verlag Wilhelm Landig, Vienna, Austria

14. **Landig, Wilhelm, 1980**, page 171

15. **Landig, Wilhelm, 1980**, page 173

16. **Landig, Wilhelm, 1980**, page 172

17. *ibid.*

18. **Gehring, Heiner, and Karl-Heinz Zunneck, 2005**, *Flugscheiben Ueber Neuschwabenland Die Wahrheit ueber "Vril?, "Haunebu" und die Templer-Erbengemenischaft*, page 73,74, Jochen Kopp Verlag, Rottenburg, Germany

19. *ibid.*

20. *ibid.*

21. **Stevens, Henry, 2001**, pages 179-181

22. **Gehring, Heiner and Karl-Heinz Zunneck, 2005**, page 70

23. **Barton, Michael X., 1968**, *The German Saucer Story*, page 53, Futura Press, Los Angeles, CA., USA

24. **Article from La Razon, Buenos Aires, Argentina, circa 1977-1978**, as translated and cited by O. Bergmann, 1988, *I Deutsche Flugscheiben und U-boote Ueberwachen Die Weltmeere*, Hugin Gesellschaft, Wetter/Ruhr, Germany

25. *Article from En Contacto titled: "Los Ovnis Son Armas De Los Nazis"*, date unknown but probably the late 1970's, Mexico

26. **Moore, William L., date unknown but middle 1980s**, *Project V-7: Hitler's Flying Discs An Illustrated Compilation of research and source Materials*, item F-233, and "Nazi Flying Saucers: An Addendum to Publication No. F-233?, William L. More Publications & Research, Burbank, CA., USA

27. **Farago, Ladislas, 1974**, page 388

THE THIRD POWER

The idea of a “Dritte Macht” or Third Power and the claims for it are not new. They have been around for over twenty years in the minds of some German writers who discuss lost and hidden technology. These claims stem from the dying days of the Third Reich and the frantic quest to drive prototypes into completion that have implications for the age which followed it, the Cold War. The writers O. Bergmann, D.H. Haarmann and others use this term. What they are talking about is a separate power from the West or the East, a power based on the advanced technology of the Third Reich. This included flying discs of the field propulsion type that were seen worldwide and attributed to extraterrestrials by the U.S. government using various ploys of their intelligence apparatus. This also included mysterious and fantastic U-boats that were powered in unusual ways and perhaps even in the same way as were the flying discs. In fact, writer

O. Bergmann makes no distinction between the two, the UFOs and the USOs, saying they were both based on German technology. Of course, neither the USA or the Soviet Union nor other countries, especially the former Allied Powers, ever wanted to acknowledge the existence of the Third Power. To do so, a nasty appendix would have had to be written into the history of World War Two. The Third Power functioned with the Nazi International and the Gehlen Org. that by this time had made a comeback, and these were two components of the Third Power. The reason that a distinction is made between the Nazi International and the Third Power will become apparent as we proceed.

While we are on the subject, let us digress and review what is claimed to have happened at this time regarding field propulsion flying discs. Remember the SS post-war laboratories that remained in operation after the war. Well, according to Michael X. Barton’s German informant, Carl Mayer:

> *“There are or were,” Carl Mayer revealed, “post-war, some SECRET RESEARCH PLACES in the Black Forest, attempting to eliminate GRAVITY influence from the flight of objects, etc. It is supposedly some MACHINE, which I heard of some five years ago. What became of it, I do not know, but forecasts of ’surprises” were made in several newspapers.” (1)*

Barton then turns to a UFO researcher of his time, Richard Ogden, who read Barton’s 1960 book, “We Want You Is Hitler Still Alive?” Ogden says:

> *“Your book accurately describes the early post-war period of the Nazis in Argentina. This was up until 1952. Those saucers that were developed and flown in 1945 used JET POWER not electromagnetic power. The work on an electromagnetic powered saucer was done in German laboratories in Argentina and such a craft was perfected and flown in 1952.” (2)*

Combining these two statements, this means the work underlying field propulsion was done in Germany. It was either done by Germans under supervision of the United States or it was done in still-operating SS laboratories. But if it was done under the auspices of the USA, then the secret was passed, via the Gehlen Org., to friends in South America. The Nazis probably had it before the Americans could build examples in New Mexico. Incidentally, I believe they are speaking of the larger German flying disc, the Haunebu type or Adamski type, powered by Tesla technology appropriated by Karl Schappeller and developed by a sequence of others and not the smaller Magnetscheibe or Vril. believe the latter were already flying.

The important thing to remember is the Third Power relied on information, not military force. This information was the information both the West and East failed to get their hands on after the collapse of the Third Reich. In other words, it depended upon those sequestered caches of hidden documents and microfilm and those who knew where it was and exactly what it was. Not even the Americans instantly realized the total value of this German technology that could not be illustrated better than their complete non-understanding of digital computers and their applications (3). So, as the East and West came to appreciate what had been developed in Germany during the war, there was the Third Power to provide it to them or a shortcut to it, but of course for a price.

This whole idea rests upon information which was never taken as booty from Germany after the war. We have already discussed SS laboratories that remained functioning after the war and loyal to the SS. We have discussed the probability that laboratories operated by the Allies in Germany after the war had the product of their inquiry spirited off to the SS world by agents of the Gehlen Organization. But there were even whole caches of information, documents and microfilm, which never fell into the hands of the Allies, either because they were never informed of them and failed to find them on their own, or even more shocking, caches which they did find but where snatched from them in the waning days of World War Two in an SS damage-control effort. I documented one such case in my first book (4) but another instance or instances should be discussed.

For this glimpse deep into the inner, inner workings of the Third Reich and the SS, we are indebted to Friedrich Georg and Thomas Mehner (5) and the eyewitnesses to this history that have come forth and told their stories. I am going to summarize the testimony of the first two witnesses whose names were withheld. These individuals had problems in revealing their stories. These problems involved naming names of some still living that might be adversely affected. Also there were “health” problems since these secrets might upset still-powerful people. And finally, oaths were given not to reveal certain things. The witnesses worked around those problems and said what they could say. Besides this, certain testimony, especially the testimony of the third named witness was so explosive and destabilizing in the modern geopolitical sense that certain portions of it were withheld by the writer/researchers. Other caveats will be addressed as they are encountered.

The first eyewitness has already been cited once. This was the facility at Gossel that operated after cessation of hostilities at the close of the war. Both witnesses each describe in, separate detail, two large and yet unknown German rockets. In fact it seems that the facility at Gossel, between Arnstadt and Ohrdruf, was primarily a rocket production site after Kammler's original choice, at Ebensee, Austria, code-named "Zement?, was moved and refitted to make synthetic fuel/oil. This facility was very near the other underground facilities of the Jonas Valley but unconnected to them. The intellectual leadership had connections to Kammler in Prague/Pilsen and the slave worker labor force did not come from Buchenwald as did the other nearby facilities but was separate from it.

I am not going to describe the large rockets. Just saying they exist and briefly describing them is unconvincing. What is needed to accept this as real is the detail provided by these writers in this and other books. In this it is like the German atomic programs or like the German flying disc programs that require an entire book to make the description concrete, allowing for their existence in the mind of a skeptical reader. The remainder of this testimony is shocking enough.

The first witness tells us by way of introduction that he belonged to the circle around Kammler, the "Adel" (Nobility). This group has also been called the Schwarze Adel, or black nobility in other places. This was a resistance group that wanted to remove Hitler and form a Fourth Reich. It is equated with the Avalon group of which Speer was part. The "nobility" in this case would be dissenting high SS officials. One begins to see why he was reluctant to give his name. At this point our witness also states that

Wernher von Braun was not among his friends (”*nicht zu meinen Freunden gehoerte*“) so we take from this that Dr. von Braun was not among the Adels.

The witness returns to “his facility?, meaning Gossel, and says that it was so well camouflaged that it was impossible to identify, even though traffic went by it every day. In fact the researchers obtained detailed aerial photographs of this relatively small area and they still cannot find it. The Americans absolutely did not find it and as far as the Russians who took over the area are concerned, our witness cannot comment. He did say the facility was in operation after 1945, it was connected to a water supply, providing drinking water, and provisioned for some years. (6)

The second eyewitness is like the first witness but on steroids. He is now over 90 years old, started his work in Peenemuende, then went to the Reichspost and finally to Dr. Kammler. Then, immediately after saying he worked for Dr. Kammler he says ”*auch nach 1945*“, in English “also after 1945?, meaning he worked for Kammler after 1945! He says he was a “Techniker” which means a technical person or even engineer in research and development. He was convinced of the doctrine (Nazi doctrine) but unconvinced of the war, the handling of the war, the “death” (caused by the war), and the military under the Wehrmacht and under Hitler. He says, he was on the side of the resistance, the Adels, in connection with Kammler and Speer and their goals. He says he was proud of German science and their creations.

The reader might recall that last official conversation between Kammler and von Braun from Tom Agoston’s book *Blunder* (7) in which von Braun, awaiting an audience with Kammler, overheard his plans to hide from the Americans by “assuming the garb of the Benedictine order?. Von Braun then rushed away from his doorway listening post just as Kammler’s visitor, a Colonel Strack, exited and allowed von Braun entry to Kammler’s office. Kammler and von Braun then both assumed a politically correct dialogue about relocating Peenemuende to the South and carrying on the war. According to von Braun, both realized this was impossible. This conversation was allegedly to have taken place in the first week of April 1945 at the Haus Jesu Christi Hotel, Kammler's headquarters at the time.

Well, there is more to the Kammler-von Braun relationship than that completely bogus conversation. According to the second informant, on February 4, 1945, a convoy left Peenemuende in the direction of Bleicherode and Gossel. At that time nobody knew about the "Nest" at Gossel, according to the second informant, as it was not even on the normal map. The convoy contained the whole Peenemuende technical archives, some 13.5 tons of material as well as Dr. von Braun and his co-workers, about 450 engineers. The convoy had three destinations that were Nordhausen, Bleicherode and Gossel. In Nordhausen von Braun met with Kammler where a discussion or perhaps an argument took place. Kammler laid it out openly and on the table. He, Kammler, along with his SS scientists, the Reich Research Council, the Reichspost with Dr. Manfred von Ardenne, and Dr. Kurt Diebner and his nuclear researchers had other goals: the erection of a Fourth German Reich with the gentlemen of the nobility (Herrn des Adels) in charge. This was followed by another conversation between Kammler and von Braun, this time with Albert Speer present, at Geraberg. But it came to nothing with von Braun and in the end Wernher von Braun and his team were not even allowed entrance into Gossel. In fact, they were probably never even made aware of Gossel's existence although our second informant does not say this. He only says they were not given entry to Gossel. It was at this point that von Braun set off for Oberammergau where he would eventually surrender to the Americans along with his team. At that time (presumably for the first time), von Braun learned that it was Dr. Kammler who headed the developmental work at Skoda. According to Agoston, the last meeting between the two took place at Oberammergau at the Hotel named but if our informant's tale is true, this meeting would have had its issues resolved earlier and so would have made no sense.

After his and his team's surrender, Dr. von Braun gave away the production sites in Nordhausen and those near Gossel to the Americans as well as knowledge of the research teams of Dr. Kammler and Dr. Diebner. Dr. von Braun also informed the Americans of the 13.5 ton archives from

Peenemuende which Dr. von Braun had directed by sequester in Holzhausen (Thuringia) and Doerten (Northern Harz Mountains) by this men Huzel and Tessmann. Von Braun needed this library to show his work credible to the Americans. The Americans wanted to keep the information about the Doerten cache from the British (presumably it was in their sphere of influence). The SS and Dr. Kammler got wind of the attempt to claim the documentation at Holzhausen and cleaned out 2.5 tons of material before the Americans got there. They stashed the archive in a tunnel location, which shall remain unnamed and known to only a few SS members. This cache is there still to this day. (8) Our informant continues, saying that with this stash Dr. Kammler had a guarantee by which he could deal with the Americans as well as with the Russians.

The informant then states that Dr. von Braun was angry because: Dr. Kammler had his technical foundation; that Kammler had two rocket propellant components (for solid-fuel rockets) and he was angry because Helmut Groettup and Hans Rittermann had given the Russians the wind tunnel and laboratory at Nordhausen, the research area and production facilities at Lehesten, the firm Duema in Wechmar and the launch facilities (heavy rocket facilities) at Ichtershausen/Rudisleben to the Russians. The important thing is a third-party confirmation of the importance of Hans Rittermann whom we will met presently. Incidentally, our informant justifies the actions of Groettup and Rittermann, in essence saying that by giving up certain things, they saved other more important things from the Americans and the Russians including the saving of “objects of high technology of the German scientists” upon which the researchers Dr. Diebner and Dr. von Ardenne worked. He then states that not only did both the above named scientists work on the atomic bomb but also on the molecular bomb of which two examples were sequestered in Tresor, in the Stadtilmer school. (9) Of this weapon and the A-bomb the informant states that Speer and Kammler had the world-power in their hands along with the large rockets which they were also in possession. (10)

To have been a fly on the wall at this meeting?.

For those readers who still do not believe the Germans were the first to detonate an atomic bomb or that the three atomic bombs in the possession of the U.S.A. could not possibly have been of German origin, I can only reiterate my position. Anything I could offer summarizing the work of those researchers living near Jonastal or the work of Friedrich Georg would be unsatisfying. This is also true for the delivery systems the Germans had built. But, English language readers are now able to get the first three of Friedrich Georg's books, his Siegeswaffen series, in English under the title of *Hitler's Miracle Weapons* (see www.amazon.com). If the reader is interested in these subjects or just plain doubts my opinion, please stop at nothing and obtain these works and see just how lazy establishment historians have been and just how far establishment media, in both the East and West, have led you astray.

Now for the testimony of Hans Rittermann: Hans Rittermann is an enigma. He certainly existed as his name appears throughout discussions of the secret underground facilities at the Jonas Valley. By way of introduction, Hans Rittermann was the Sonderbeauftragter (Special Commissioner) of the Reichspost (the German Post Office which did scientific/war-related research) and of the OKW (Over-Command of the Wehrmacht) in Thuringia for Sonderbauvorhaben (Special Construction Design) (11) and then came, by his own admission, under the command of Sonderfuehrer SS Gruppenfuehrer Kammler (12). In other words, Rittermann worked for the SS and Kammler doing some sort of specialized construction, underground. In doing such work he had not only access to the several massive underground installations in that vicinity, in fact, he was partially responsible for building them. He worked on the huge underground facilities at Jonastal. This is a deep insider, pardon the pun.

Immediately after the war, Rittermann was on-site and in fact disclosed the location of some facilities to the Soviets as was discussed above by a previous informant. Rittermann spoke English and since Patton's 3rd Army originally took over this area from the Wehrmacht and the SS, Rittermann was invaluable to the Americans before the relinquished the vicinity to the Soviets under treaty agreement. This did not diminish Rittermann's appeal as an employee since he also spoke Russian. In fact, Rittermann continued in some sort of advisory/contractual role with the Soviets, apparently until the early 1980s.

For instance, Rittermann writes that circa 1982-1983 he entered the facility code-named “Burg” (actually the last Fuehrer Headquarters and one of the underground facilities at Jonastal) with a Soviet officer. Rittermann was showing this Soviet officer around as this particular part of the facility had remained unknown and unexplored by both the Americans and the Russians. In the darkness, Rittermann walked up to an old light fixture and flipped the switch?and the light came on! (12)

Eventually, Rittermann left Germany forever and immigrated to the USA. At some point Rittermann believed he had concluded his fiduciary duty to both the Russians and the Germans and so became willing to talk.

At this point in time he was about 90 years old and in poor health. In fact, he dictated his communications, his letters, to several interested parties. His purpose was to shed some light on some of the most murky and mysterious happenings of the war, happenings of which he had special knowledge.

Thomas Mehner, who was one of the recipients of these letters, attempted to verify the letters as best he could. Of course, there really was a “Hans Rittermann” of that he is certain. But there is a possibility that the sender of these letters was someone using his name. But, it was concluded, even if that were true, the sender would have to have been someone with utterly exceptional knowledge and insider information.

Rittermann talks about many things, some of which have been redacted by Mr. Mehner since they might be sensitive to the world-political situation. He refers to ’sleeping dogs” and we all know it is better to let sleeping dogs lie, sometimes. Perhaps, someday, Germany might see it in its own self-interest to raid the fine wine basement and uncork some of the secrets.

Mayer and Mehner devote over eighty pages to the Rittermann letters of which there are many. Rittermann throws light on many a murky issue. But here, we are going to focus on what Rittermann says about his old boss, Dr. Hans Kammler as contained in a segment of their book (13), which contains the information given below.

To preface, Rittermann's letter mentions Hitler and the mistaken assumption by the Americans that he was in the Castle Wachsenburg, since Hitler was sighted in this area and Wachsenburg is the only "Burg" in the area on the map. Actually, Hitler was not at the castle but in his headquarters, code-named "Burg?. Also, Rittermann mentions some aircraft that were aircraft of such an exotic type that the Americans had never seen before and quickly snatched away. Also remember that Kammler planned a sort of coup with Operation Avalon or Schwarze Adel, so he might have been considered to have been part of the "resistance" if one were willing to stretch the term.

There is no good way for me to break the news about Kammler to the reader so I will translate Rittermann's own words from a letter:

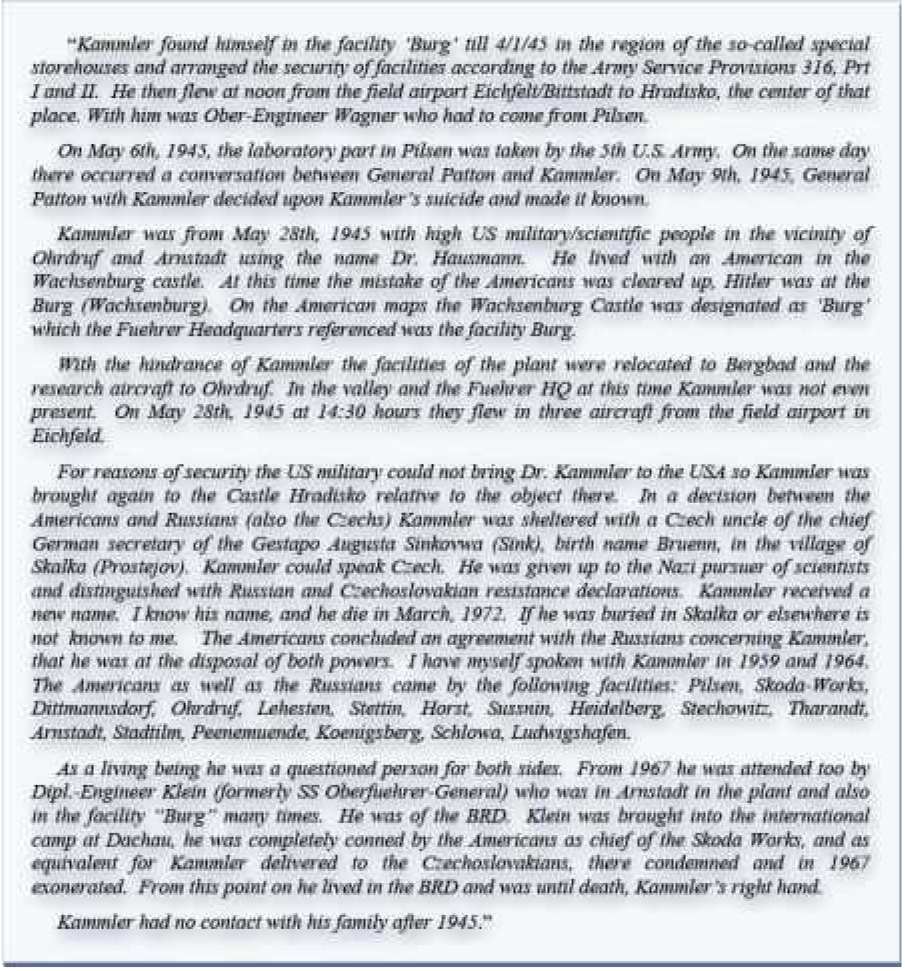

"Kammler found himself in the facility 'Burg' till 4/1/45 in the region of the so-called special storehouses and arranged the security of facilities according to the Army Service Provisions 316, Prt I and II. He then flew at noon from the field airport Eichfelt/Bittstadt to Hradisko, the center of that place. With him was Ober-Engineer Wagner who had to come from Pilsen.

On May 6th, 1945, the laboratory part in Pilsen was taken by the 5th U.S. Army. On the same day there occurred a conversation between General Patton and Kammler. On May 9th, 1945, General Patton with Kammler decided upon Kammler's suicide and made it known.

Kammler was from May 28th, 1945 with high US military/scientific people in the vicinity of Ohrdruf and Arnstadt using the name Dr. Hausmann. He lived with an American in the Wachsenburg castle. At this time the mistake of the Americans was cleared up, Hitler was at the Burg (Wachsenburg). On the American maps the Wachsenburg Castle was designated as 'Burg' which the Fuehrer Headquarters referenced was the facility Burg.

With the hindrance of Kammler the facilities of the plant were relocated to Bergbad and the research aircraft to Ohrdruf. In the valley and the Fuehrer HQ at this time Kammler was not even present. On May 28th, 1945 at 14:30 hours they flew in three aircraft from the field airport in Eichfeld.

For reasons of security the US military could not bring Dr. Kammler to the USA so Kammler was brought again to the Castle Hradisko relative to the object there. In a decision between the Americans and Russians (also the Czechs) Kammler was sheltered with a Czech uncle of the chief German secretary of the Gestapo Augusta Sinkovwa (Sink), birth name Bruenn, in the village of Skalka (Prostejov). Kammler could speak Czech. He was given up to the Nazi pursuer of scientists and distinguished with Russian and Czechoslovakian resistance declarations. Kammler received a new name. I know his name, and he die in March, 1972. If he was buried in Skalka or elsewhere is not known to me. The Americans concluded an agreement with the Russians concerning Kammler, that he was at the disposal of both powers. I have myself spoken with Kammler in 1959 and 1964. The Americans as well as the Russians came by the following facilities: Pilsen, Skoda-Works, Dittmannsdorf, Ohrdruf, Lehesten, Stettin, Horst, Sussnin, Heidelberg, Stechowitz, Tharandt, Arnstadt, Stadtilm, Peenemuende, Koenigsberg, Schlowa, Ludwigshafen.

As a living being he was a questioned person for both sides. From 1967 he was attended too by Dipl.-Engineer Klein (formerly SS Oberfuehrer-General) who was in Arnstadt in the plant and also in the facility "Burg" many times. He was of the BRD. Klein was brought into the international camp at Dachau, he was completely conned by the Americans as chief of the Skoda Works, and as equivalent for Kammler delivered to the Czechoslovakians, there condemned and in 1967 exonerated. From this point on he lived in the BRD and was until death, Kammler's right hand.

Kammler had no contact with his family after 1945."

So, we are finally told what we suspected. Kammler's "death" and/or suicide was a fabrication but actual confirmation in terms of an eyewitness is a bombshell! Not only that, our eyewitness, Hans Rittermann, spoke with Kammler in his new position long after the war ended, not in hiding in South America but in Prague, sustained by both the East and West and, surprisingly, working for both sides, the Americans and the Soviets. Kammler's wartime crimes were ascribed to Klein and then Klein was pardoned.

From this situation we can glean some facts. Kammler was not a prisoner. Prisoners do not get another name. There is no reason to do so; they are in custody. Likewise, prisoners do not get assistants. Kammler cut a deal with both sides. Both sides evidently wanted to use Kammler's knowledge as to where thing, high technology, was buried on microfilm. Neither could expose the other without political fallout. In fact, neither side even wanted to mention the name “Kammler” as was discussed in my first book. (14)

Like von Braun, Kammler must have sent intermediaries ahead to cut a deal before his actual surrender. And he must have had a plan so that after he disclosed some facet of technology, the bargaining power would live up to its end of the bargain. This might have been, for instance, sending someone ahead to divide the file in question into two parts. Or it simply may have been the fact that the Americans and Soviets desperately needed his continual input.

What is meant is, again, illustrated with digital computer technology. The Americans simply did not recognize its importance in the post-war world, even though it was employed to guide V-2 missiles to their targets by the Germans. It was sometime before they woke up. (15) The comment of those finding microfilm detailing German technology in the hold of U-234 were correct when it was said the Germans were in advance (of us) of something like 100 years. But at very least the German scientists of the Nazi years built the technological second half of the 20th Century. But they were so far ahead that it was not always possible to see, understand and apply those advances. So, Kammler had to sit back and wait until he was called upon.

Can we imagine his circumstances” Kammler had worked in and made his career in what is now the Czech Republic. Kammler spoke Czech. Prague is a world of its own, neither fully Slavic nor German, but an island in between. This was a place where both German and Czech language could be heard on the street. Kammler was home! He must have been give comfortable surroundings, an allowance or salary. He must have been supplied with whatever else made him happy.

Also, Kammler must have had connections to the Skorzeny as well as the Gehlen Organization. Kammler would have been able to get word out or, perhaps, the others found him. Either way, the Nazi International and Kammler were really all in the same business, the high technology of Nazi Germany. Both would have used the Gehlen Org. and vice versa.

Kammler supplied high technology to both the East and West in exchange for something. The Nazi International was able to build this relic technology of the Third Reich that would have amazed the Americans and Soviets. The flying saucers are a great example but we will touch upon some others. The Nazi International would have been able to move around the planet in their flying discs and mystery U-boats at will. The Gehlen Org. would have given them a "heads up" to any problems and supplied them with insider, secret information about both the East and West. Gehlen, by some accounts, stoked the fires of the Cold War, inflating some intelligence to keep the confrontation going. This all worked together so well. In a way, Kammler had his Fourth Reich and he was Fuehrer.

The axis of this "Fourth Reich" or Third Power as it should be known, was Madrid (Skorzeny), Munich (Gehlen), and probably the Prague/Pilsen area for Kammler that he knew so well. The workshops were in South America, being supplied with sub-assemblies and parts for "Mimes Schmiede" most from the USA. Money was no problem since Dr. Hjalmar Schacht was alive and well and the 3rd Power was probably making money on its own on an ongoing basis. This trade in Nazi science and technology and the relationship with both the East and West probably had its ups and downs but went on until the early-mid-1970s when Kammler died (1972) and Skorzeny died (1975). This was about thirty years after World War Two and the older generation must have been considering retirement. With the coming of the 1980's, the must have been some sort of change of leadership and perhaps new goals and outlooks.

Earlier I said we were going to use Rittermann's testimony to focus on Kammler. Well, I am going back on this for a couple instances. These are things already discussed in this book.

Rittermann is describing the work done in the vicinity of Arnstadt-Ohrdruf (Jonas Valley). He says that in 1943 tests on armor penetrating weapon by means of a “Lichtstrahltechnik” (light ray technology). Rittermann later comes back to this weapon and calls it “Energielicht” (energy-light). There is no doubt that he is talking about a laser. (16) Rittermann states that tests were conducted in the vicinity of Luisental and Rippersroda on the “Rundflugzeugen” (round aircraft) which is just another way of saying flying discs or flying saucers. (17) He then mentions tests conducted on “Todesstrahlen?. This word is sometimes used when meaning what has been called here “Motorstoppmittel?, (means to stop motors) or “Zuenderunterbrechung” (ignition disruption) or “magnetic wave” by the Americans. Finally, Rittermann mentions tests done on “Elektromagnetische Schockimpulse?. This could only be Landig’s “Klystron-EG-Projektoren?, klystron-EG-projectors which he says were used against the Byrd air attack at Point 211.

The question will arise as to why some extreme Nazi, Hans Rittermann, should ever be believed, especially when discussing the history and accomplishments of the Nazi period. Did I mention Rittermann was an enigma” The fact is that even though Rittermann worked on the most sensitive German underground facilities in Germany, helped build them and certainly had full access to them as well as anything in the area, Hans Rittermann was a person to whom the Nazis did not even consider to be a real German. And this was no secret. Rittermann melded seamlessly into instant credibility with both the Americans and later the Russians since he seemed politically correct to both and spoke both languages. In fact, the Americans did not know if he was a prisoner or a free worker. This is all possible because Rittermann’s Nazi identification papers clearly showed him to be a Jew. (18)

In fact, Rittermann’s letters were posted from Jerusalem during the year 2000 where he was known by the name “David Hans Hoffmann” and where Rittermann died shortly thereafter. But before living in Israel, Rittermann had lived in the USA and reports that he wrote a report of approximately 800 pages on ’sonderbuero 3” (Rittermann’s name for the combined underground complexes of “Burg?, “Jasmin” and “Olga” in the Jonas Valley) which he gave to the “Geheimdiensten?, the secret services, of both the USA and Israel. (19) Now, perhaps, we begin to appreciate the wisdom of letting sleeping dogs lie.

Literature Cited

1. **Barton, Michael X., 1968**, *The German Saucer Story*, page 23, Fortuna Press, Los Angeles, CA., USA

2. **Barton, Michael X., 1968**, pages 23, 24

3. **Stevens, Henry, 2007**, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science and Technology*, pages 18 to 23, Adventures Unlimited Publishing, Kempton, Illinois, USA

4. **Stevens, Henry, 2003**, page 204. This damage-control was actually done by the Speer Ministry on May 1, 1945 but, by this time, after Hitler's death, most everything of a sensitive nature was actually ordered by the SS. This reference is based on I.V. Hogg's *German Secret Weapons of World War 2*, page 48, Arco Publishing Company, Inc., N.Y., NY. USA

5. **Georg, Friedrich and Thomas Mehner, 2004**, *Atomziel*, New York, pages 253-264, Jochen Kopp Verlag, Rottenburg, Germany

6. **Georg, Friedrich and Thomas Mehner, 2004**, page 264

7. **Agoston, Tom, 1985**, *Blunder How the U. S. Gave Away Nazi Supersecets to Russia*, pages 51-53, Dodd, Mead and Company, N.Y., NY., USA

8. **Georg, Friedrich and Thomas Mehner, 2004**, page 267

9. **Georg, Friedrich and Thomas Mehner, 2004**, page 258

10. *ibid.*

11. **Mayer, Edgar and Thomas Mehner, 2002**, *Die Atombomb und das Dritte Reich Das Geheimnis des Dreiecks Arnstadt-Weckmar-Ohrdruf*, page 17, Jochen Kopp Verlag, Rottenburg, Germany

12. **Mayer, Edgar and Thomas Mehner, 2002**, page 30

13. **Mayer, Edgar and Thomas Mehner, 2002**, pages 17-33

14. **Stevens, Henry, 2003**, pages 252-253

15. **Stevens, Henry, 2007**, pages 18-23

16. **Mayer, Edgar and Thomas Mehner, 2002**, pages 32 and 33

17. **Mayer, Edgar and Thomas Mehner, 2002**, page 33

18. **Mayer, Edgar and Thomas Mehner, 2002**, pages 37

19. **Mayer, Edgar and Thomas Mehner, 2002**, page 25

MOLECULAR BOMB

The question arises as to what in the world a "molecular bomb" would be. To give the reader some idea, something similar, in a way, to the molecular bomb is now in fashion among teenagers. It is called the dry ice bomb. These two are certainly not identical, the dry ice is not cold-compressed to the density as was the molecular bomb, but it does illustrate the power of expansive sudden reheating *(http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Dry_ice_bomb)*. In a dry ice bomb, a one-liter plastic container, usually used for beverages, with a screw-on top is filled about 1/3 of the way with water. Then a small cube of dry ice is fitted through the top into the water and the lid screwed on tightly. Within 10-30 seconds the water sublimates the dry ice to a gas and this pressure of sublimation causes the plastic container to fail, producing a hand grenade like explosion. This is very dangerous and should not be attempted but anyone who has seen this demonstrated on U-tube will get an idea of a tiny part of what is under discussion with the molecular bomb.

Since testimony has been given that Kammler had possession of two examples of the molecular bomb, perhaps a description of it should be given. In my previous book this topic was mentioned and briefly discussed (1) as it has been elsewhere (2), (3). Dr. Joseph Farrell's summary (2) is the best overview:

1. The "Molecular" Bomb: The Hydrogen Bomb"

"The idea of a 'superbomb" was first patented prior to World War Two in Austria, and a modification of the idea was patented in Germany in 1943 (Farrell cites Patent Number 905.847, March 16, 1943 and other authorities from Mayer and Mahner's Hitler und die „Bombe?, pages

> *158-159). Its inventor Karl Nowak, explained the reason for his invention as being to create a superbomb without the radioactive fallout effects that were evident from atomic and thermonuclear explosions! In other words, the Nazis were already looking past the thermonuclear age toward the creation of second and third generation weapons systems that would give the same offensive and strategic "punch" but without the side effects! In theory, the bomb is workable, but was way beyond the technological capacities of Germany, or any other power, in that time period. Basically, the idea was to create a state of matter in which, through ultra-low temperatures approaching absolute zero, matter would be super-compressed. The idea was then to detonate this material, subjecting it to sudden stress and heat, to create a sudden and massive expansion and explosion, and therewith, an enormous, H-bomb sized blast. Thus, there may have been a basis in actual German secret research for the incredible claim of the Japanese military attach?in Stockholm's 1943 report to Tokyo that the Germans were investigating the properties of super-dense matter for weaponization."*

The interesting thing is that every writer?except Friedrich Georg and Thomas Mehner's second informant (cited earlier)'states that this device was not built. The second, unnamed source says it was built twice and was in the possession of Kammler at Tesor in the Stadtilm School there (4). This witness is very definite about this. Therefore, it is possible that Dr. Hans Kammler had two such molecular bombs at his disposal, both hidden and potentially the subject of negotiation with both or either the USA or the USSR.

We also must bear in mind that, at least the USA, did not always understand the advanced weapons and technology developed by the Germans during the war. Nothing could make this case better than the American's blindness to the German-developed digital computer technologies. Both the computer programming and magnetic tape storage technologies were completely minimized by Americans and therefore passed over (6). The same could certainly be said of laser technology (7), since the Americans did not even have a word for the technology at the time and only acknowledged its existence after 1964, when Charles H. Townes was awarded the Nobel Prize in physics for his “development of laser principles?. This was twenty years after the Germans had a working model. There are several more examples, as well as that famous but legendary comment about the microfilm hold of U-234, which, after review by the Americans, was said of it that the Germans were one hundred years in advance of the Allies. So, the point is that Kammler probably had to wait on the Americans and Soviets to rediscover German technology?or at least the need of this technology?before he was in a strong position to “deal?.

According to everyone, the fundamental ideas allowing for the development of a molecular bomb were stated in Karl Nowak’s patent of 1943. So first we must take a look at this patent for verification and a better understanding of this idea and other ideas related to it. Nowak’s patent was mentioned in my first book along with a copy of the first page, but a fresh, more detailed look should be undertaken now so a drawing explaining the process involved is pictured below.

This patent is titled: “Method and arrangement to the Change of Material Characteristic or Manufacture of Strongly Expansive-Capable Materials?. The German word I am translating as “materials?, ’stoff?, could also be translated as “matter” but in most instances “material” makes more sense. This is the very patent apparently applied for and granted to Karl Novak in 1943 as the small print under the title says:

> *“Patented in the domain of the Federal Republic of Germany from 16 March 1943 to patent announcement of 18 June 1953, patent -granted -made public -on 21 January 1954.”*

This is a mystery. Was this patent lost after the war or simply taken by the Americans” Was this the reason a new patent application had to be made and a new patent granted" Also, why when Germany was forbidden to invent and produce new weaponry, for about the first ten years after the war, was a patent granted dealing with high explosives with obvious military applications"

This is a short patent but patents are unusually boring. They seem to be a cross between two conflicting concepts: they attempt to describe a new idea in a way that incorporates as many potential applications as possible, while at the same time adhereing to the Bruce Lee Principle of *"Just enough is enough"*and carefully presenting both in the language of patent attorneys. This ensures that the most interesting descriptive concepts will be translated, while the rather boring processes behind remain only summarized (along with the patent claims at the end, which are already self-apparent in the description).

This patent does describe an exact process, which seems rock-solid?at least on a small scale in the laboratory'so I am wondering why at least two others writing on this topic say it was out of reach with the technology at hand. As we know, though, sometimes larger industrial-commercial-military processes are done differently, and this is what we would expect in this instance. But lacking industrial methods would not preclude the making of the material necessary for two examples of the molecular bomb in the laboratory, using the methods described.

As context, Nowak starts:

> *"The inventor references a method and arrangement of changing material characteristics or manufacture of strongly-expansive-capable materials (relating to explosives) and consists therein that the material to be changed with deep cooling appropriate, as much as possible, to the vicinity of absolute zero (in the condition of superconductivity) and will be or is put under pressure.*

It proves itself to be that through the reciprocal super cooling and compression treatment of a material atomic structure can be changed.

The invention is based on the consideration that it must be possible, through the exercise of an outside pressure with deep temperature the characteristics of a material to change; and certainly in the following directions:

With the heating of deeply cooled, compressed materials there forms a corresponding atomic distance but which must not correspond to the previous atomic order (lattice). Especially it is in this sense possible various materials to alloy with each other through linking of their crystal lattice in a special way.

If the material remains with its compressive volume reduced, so it will, following heating, exercise an exceptional expansive pressure, showing the strongest explosion or expansive-effect.”

At this point Nowak refers the reader to the diagram of the container and describes the actual process of densification of matter which is summarized as follows:

The processes described take place in a special, triple walled container ***1***. The material to be influenced, densified, or otherwise manipulated is in the lower center ***2***, having been brought there via stopper ***3***, which, when sealed, is air tight so that the air can be pumped out. The outer portion of the container is encased in a heat isolationing mantle ***5***. Between the mantle

5 and the acted-upon material ***2***, another layer ***4*** exists, into which a means of cooling?liquid nitrogen, hydrogen or helium?is pumped. Over the subject material ***2*** a piston ***6*** and piston shaft ***7*** are arranged so that pressure can be put on the subject material. The shaft ***7*** operates through a special stopper ***8*** within stopper ***3***. Using an upward stroke of piston ***6***, air is exhausted via tube ***9***, creating a vacuum. The refrigerant, one of the liquid gasses mentioned above, enters through tube ***10***. A temperature gauge, ***12***, is set up for monitoring. Once cooling has been achieved, the cold liquid gasses are exhausted through tube ***11***. Nowak comments that a special three-stage mercury diffusion pump should be used for this purpose. Container ***1*** is provided with internal electrodes ***13*** and ***14*** used for testing the conductivity of subject material ***2***. Nowak contends that in some instances superconductivity or near superconductivity can result from this densification process. Nowak also comments that, interestingly, no heat seems to be generated from the compression process.

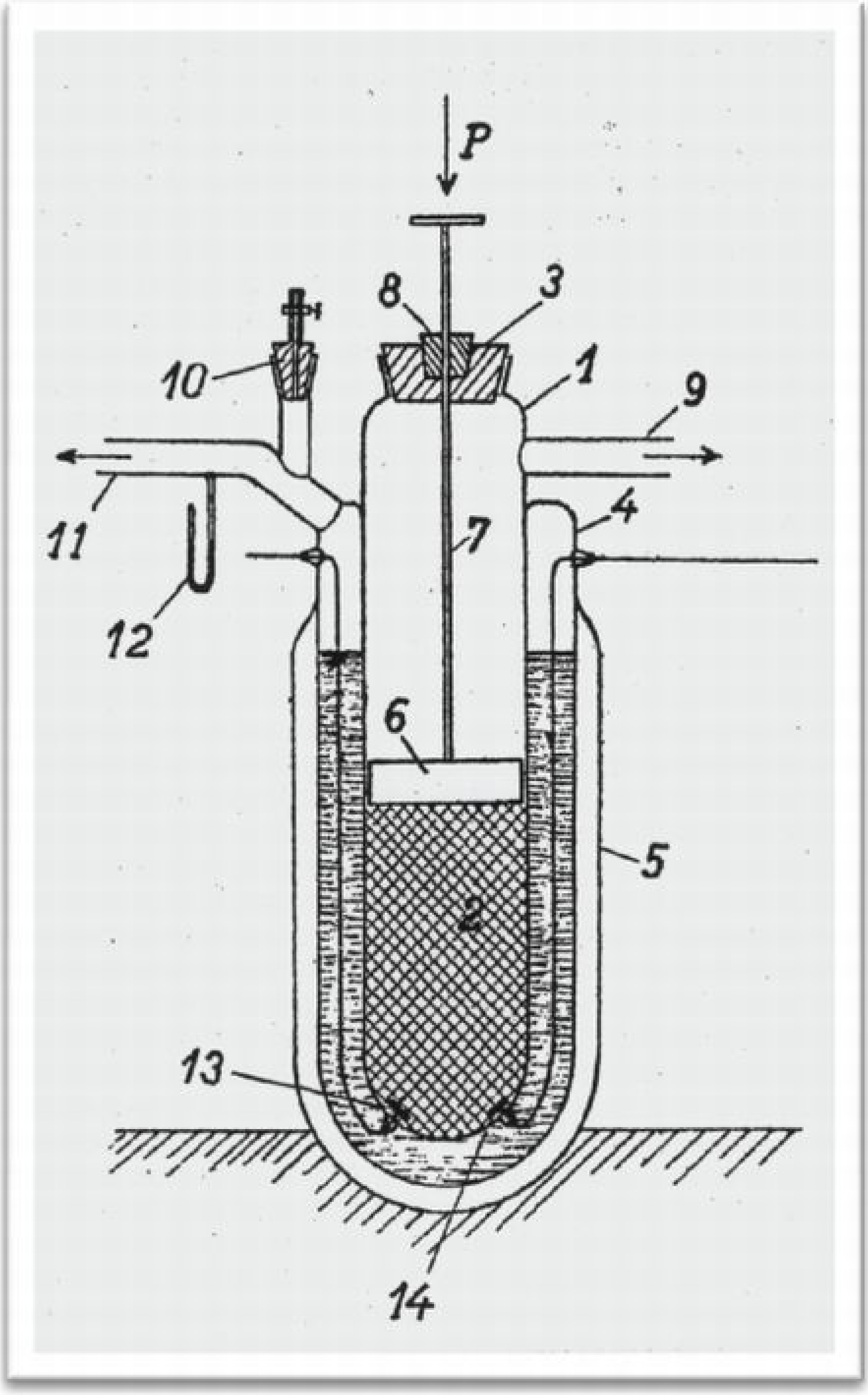
P
8
3
10
1
9
11
4
7
12
6
5
2
13
14

A diagram of the Karl Nowak Patent

Since there are several applications within the overall concept, specific and individual procedures would come into play for each individual result desired. Nowak mentions some of these. Parts of the claims within the patent involve alloying dissimilar materials. This happens because the atomic lattice has been altered by this process so that these dissimilar materials now share the same lattice. So, for example, molten material to be alloyed or even the pulverized powder of two dissimilar materials can be acted upon in the reaction area ***2***.

Then Nowak says something that I have never heard repeated and find exciting:

> *"It can, if the occasion arises, be profitable to influence the atomic formation of the reaction material through a vibration of the same means, sound or ultra-high frequency, (ultra sonic) (somewhere over the piston, 6.)"*

So high frequency vibration in the form of sound is sometimes employed to shake into place this densification through mechanically assisting in reshaping the atomic lattice" This sounds like work for Dr. Ronald Richter (8).

Nowak goes on to expand upon his explosives claims:

> *"For the manufacture of strongly expansive-capable explosives, it can be practical to multiply the effect of common chemical expansion material through super-compression."*

This means that besides the expansive affect that occurs when common materials are reheated, the expansive effect would be multiplied if the material undergoing densification from the outset was explosive in nature.

So high explosives could be cooled, compressed, and their already high explosive value would be further multiplied because of the cold, densification and sudden reheating. The reader can imagine, just as the Germans must have imagined, what would happen if red mercury in its liquid state, already charged with neutrons and densified in a nuclear reactor, were then cold-compressed by the Nowak process, fitted into an insulated warhead and detonated. The result would greatly magnify the explosive value of the red mercury but the neutron burst would leave no permanent residue. What is really possible here is to greatly miniaturize the explosive warhead in such an insulated chamber, attaching a battery and electrodes, and using it, for instance, in anti-aircraft shells or even hand grenades.

Nowak goes on:

> *"The deeply cooled expansive material can also be used for rocket propulsion whereby the thrust-speed by means of the temperature of the cooling-mean can be regulated."*

So rocket fuel can be made using this technology. This statement even seems to say the thrust of the rocket can be varied, somehow, using this technology.

The patent then goes into a rule for operation, saying that the material to be manipulated, ***2***, should be of a higher atomic number than the cooling material ***4*** in the jacket.

Finally, patent claims are made as in every new patent. Nowak claims that his invention:

1. *Involves a procedure of changing the characteristics of a material or of matter by cooling to as near to absolute zero as possible and*

compacting.

2. *Incorporating number 1 above, a procedure resulting in superconductivity.*
3. *Incorporating 1 and 2 above, a procedure for bonding two dissimilar materials.*
4. *Incorporating 1, 2, and 3, above, a procedure resulting in the vanishing of superconductivity.*
5. *Incorporating 1 to 4 above a new means of chemical expansion.*
6. *Incorporating 1 to 5 above, a means of regulating the output of rocket propulsion.*
7. *Incorporating 1 to 6 above, a means of manufacturing materials within container* ***1*** *above, material of a lower atomic number will be employed.*
8. *Incorporating 1 to 7 above, the material used to change the worked material,* ***4****., will be of a lower temperature than the acted upon material,* ***2****.*
9. *Incorporating 1 to 8 above, that the material in position* ***4*** *will have a lower melting point than that of position* ***2****.*

Norbert Juergen-Ratthofer is the one who first brought this whole concept to the fore. He is less abstract about this, getting much more specific and practical. Here is a translation of what he has to say on the topic (9).

> *"The principle of the "molecular bomb" can be described as follows: Under normal conditions with matter the dimension of molecular expanse is in the order of magnitude of 10-8 cm (1 hundred millionth of a cm) and the atomic (expanse) of 10-13 (1 ten-billionth of a cm). If mater is now cooled in the range of absolute zero, then there ensues an electron movement of almost stillness, whereby the electrons very strongly near their atomic nucleus at any given time. In the range of absolute zero matter now, without high expenditure of energy, matter can be strongly compressed. In conditions of this 'super compression" the molecular distance resembles the atomic distance (10-8) to (10-13 at the atomic level) so that a contraction of nearly 15 volumes takes place. The deeply cooled conditions of easily compressed and densified*

> *matter develop, however, with re-warming, extra ordinarily strong molecular expansive power, which with a sudden, strong, heating of the supercompressed, deeply cooled matter produces an explosion over 10 to the 10th power (10 billion times). Volumetric increase is obtained through which this "molecular bomb" obtained the explosive force of a hydrogen bomb and, by the utilization of supercompressed chemical explosive, this even still more exceeds. In comparison: Chemical explosive that was not deeply cooled and super-dense yielded, at explosion, only that up to 10 to the 3rd power (thousand fold) its original volume. Molecular bombs undergo, though a normal heat generating chemical explosive start at its center, an enclosing "mantle" of deeply cold, super-compressed (liquid) gas, for example hydrogen, or with room-temperature liquid chemical explosive, for example nitro-glycerine, and an outer shell of likewise normal heat generating chemical explosive. Between the bomb's center -mantle and outer shell is found a thermo-isolation layer. The ignition of he molecular bomb results, as with nuclear bombs, through the normal chemical explosive start combine and parallel with direct electrical ignition. As with all other bombs, the molecular bomb was also planned to have a metal outer hull."*

It must be left to scientists and engineers to comment regarding the molecular bomb vs. the hydrogen bomb in terms of explosive energy. But whatever the outcome, the molecular bomb is certainly an inexpensive, powerful device and certainly a something worth having in a country's military arsenal. If the second unnamed informant who described the actual existence of two such working bombs to Mr. Mayer and Mr. Mehner is true, and they were apparently at the disposal of the SS and so ultimately fell under the control of Dr. Hans Kammler in the post-war world, well, then without a doubt, they represent a strong bargaining chip on the table for Dr. Kammler to deal with the Americans and/or the Soviets.

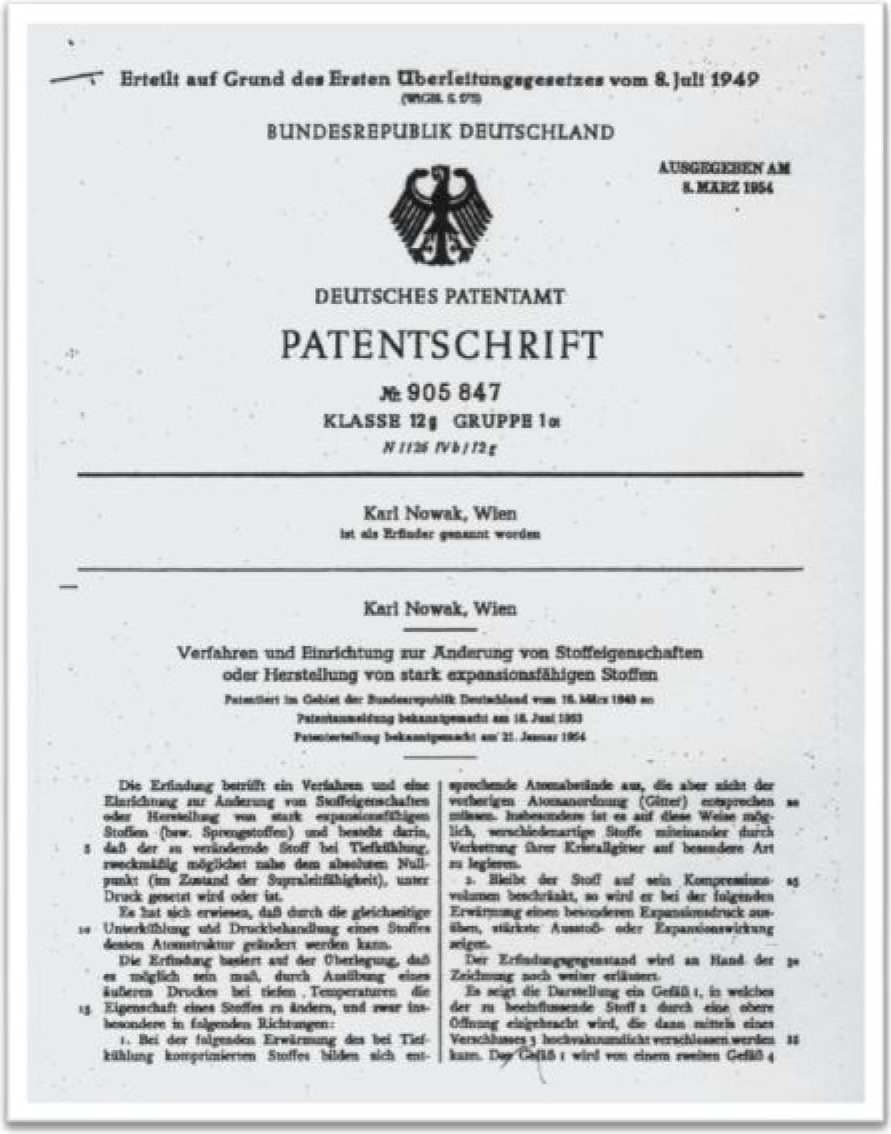

Erteilt auf Grund des Ersten Überleitungsgesetzes vom 8. Juli 1949
(WiGBl. S. 175)

BUNDESREPUBLIK DEUTSCHLAND

AUSGEGEBEN AM
8. MÄRZ 1954

DEUTSCHES PATENTAMT

PATENTSCHRIFT

№ 905 847

KLASSE 12g GRUPPE 1α

N 1126 IVb / 12g

Karl Nowak, Wien
ist als Erfinder genannt worden

Karl Nowak, Wien

Verfahren und Einrichtung zur Änderung von Stoffeigenschaften oder Herstellung von stark expansionsfähigen Stoffen

Patentiert im Gebiet der Bundesrepublik Deutschland vom 16. März 1949 an
Patentanmeldung bekanntgemacht am 18. Juni 1953
Patenterteilung bekanntgemacht am 21. Januar 1954

Die Erfindung betrifft ein Verfahren und eine Einrichtung zur Änderung von Stoffeigenschaften oder Herstellung von stark expansionsfähigen Stoffen (bzw. Sprengstoffen) und besteht darin, daß der zu verändernde Stoff bei Tiefkühlung, zweckmäßig möglichst nahe dem absoluten Nullpunkt (im Zustand der Supraleitfähigkeit), unter Druck gesetzt wird oder ist.

Es hat sich erwiesen, daß durch die gleichzeitige Unterkühlung und Druckbehandlung eines Stoffes dessen Atomstruktur geändert werden kann.

Die Erfindung basiert auf der Überlegung, daß es möglich sein muß, durch Ausübung eines äußeren Druckes bei tiefen Temperaturen die Eigenschaft eines Stoffes zu ändern, und zwar insbesondere in folgenden Richtungen:

1. Bei der folgenden Erwärmung des bei Tiefkühlung komprimierten Stoffes bilden sich entsprechende Atomabstände aus, die aber nicht der vorherigen Atomanordnung (Gitter) entsprechen müssen. Insbesondere ist es auf diese Weise möglich, verschiedenartige Stoffe miteinander durch Verkettung ihrer Kristallgitter auf besondere Art zu legieren.

2. Bleibt der Stoff auf sein Kompressionsvolumen beschränkt, so wird er bei der folgenden Erwärmung einen besonderen Expansionsdruck ausüben, stärkste Ausstoß- oder Expansionswirkung zeigen.

Der Erfindungsgegenstand wird an Hand der Zeichnung noch weiter erläutert.

Es zeigt die Darstellung ein Gefäß 1, in welches der zu beeinflussende Stoff 2 durch eine obere Öffnung eingebracht wird, die dann mittels eines Verschlusses 3 hochvakuumdicht verschlossen werden kann. Das Gefäß 1 wird von einem zweiten Gefäß 4

The Karl Nowak Patent cover page

Literature Cited

1. Stevens, Henry, 2007, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science and Technology*, pages 92-101, Adventures Unlimited Publishing, Kempton, Illinois, USA

2. Farrell, Joseph P., Ph.D., 2004, *Reich of the Black Sun Nazi Secret Weapons & the Cold War Allied Legend*, page 190

3. Stoll, Axel, Ph.D., 2001, *Hochtechnologie im Dritten Reich*, pages 99, 161, Amun Verlag, Schleusingen, Germany

4. Georg, Friedrich and Thomas Mehner, 2004, *Atomziel*, New York, page 258, Jochen Kopp Verlag, Rttenburg, Germany

5. Juergen-Ratthofer, Norbert, undated but late 1980's, *Flugscheiben und andere deutsche und japanische Geheim-und Wunderwaffen im Zweiten Weltkrieg*, page 40 (page numbers are problematic), Privately Published, Sierdorf, Austria.

6. Stevens, Henry, 2007, pages 18-23

7. Stevens, Henry, 2007, pages 198-208

8. Stevens, Henry, 2007, pages 258-305

9. Juergen-Ratthofer, Norbert, undated, see footnote 5. above, page 40

THE GENTLEMEN AND THEIR LUGGAGE

Before moving on to the next section of this book we are going to take a break and discuss something directly which always forms a backdrop for any discussion on Nazi post-war survival, the survival of Hitler himself. Of course, there are many reports of Hitler surviving the war. These are always interesting as they have to be interesting or nobody would pay attention to the seventy years later. Some contain great detail and the reader has probably heard some of these tales. But none of them that I know allege to be official documents. This one does.

As stated above, I believe Hitler died in the bunker but I would encourage anyone wanting to do research on this topic as it might lead to other heretofore unknown avenues of knowledge. This document was circulated several years ago concerning Hitler and his survival after the war. If it is described as a “hot” document or a document one would not want to be linked with in polite company, perhaps this would convey its utter political incorrectness. Nevertheless, Heiner Gehring and Karl-Heinz Zunneck did publish it in their book “Flugscheiben ueber Neuschwabenland?, ascribing it to American Gregory Douglas as published in the magazine “The Military Advisor?. (1) The document as see in the book referenced above is reproduced here. I have another copy but it is in even worse condition. Before reviewing the document, I want to partially translate it as best I can. Some parts are just too faint to read. Please compare this to the original.

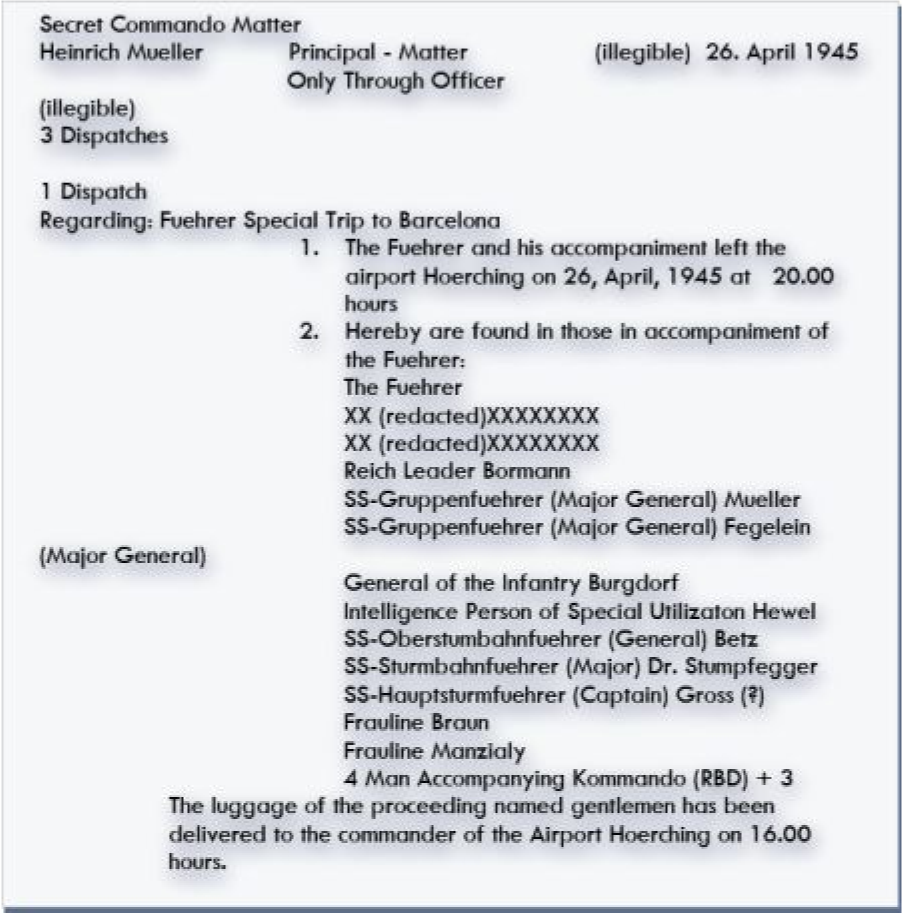

Secret Commando Matter
Heinrich Mueller Principal - Matter (illegible) 26. April 1945
Only Through Officer
(illegible)
3 Dispatches

1 Dispatch
Regarding: Fuehrer Special Trip to Barcelona

1. The Fuehrer and his accompaniment left the airport Hoerching on 26, April, 1945 at 20.00 hours
2. Hereby are found in those in accompaniment of the Fuehrer:

The Fuehrer
XX (redacted)XXXXXXXX
XX (redacted)XXXXXXXX
Reich Leader Bormann
SS-Gruppenfuehrer (Major General) Mueller
SS-Gruppenfuehrer (Major General) Fegelein
(Major General)
General of the Infantry Burgdorf
Intelligence Person of Special Utilizaton Hewel
SS-Oberstumbahnfuehrer (General) Betz
SS-Sturmbahnfuehrer (Major) Dr. Stumpfegger
SS-Hauptsturmfuehrer (Captain) Gross (?)
Frauline Braun
Frauline Manzialy
4 Man Accompanying Kommando (RBD) + 3

The luggage of the proceeding named gentlemen has been delivered to the commander of the Airport Hoerching on 16.00 hours.

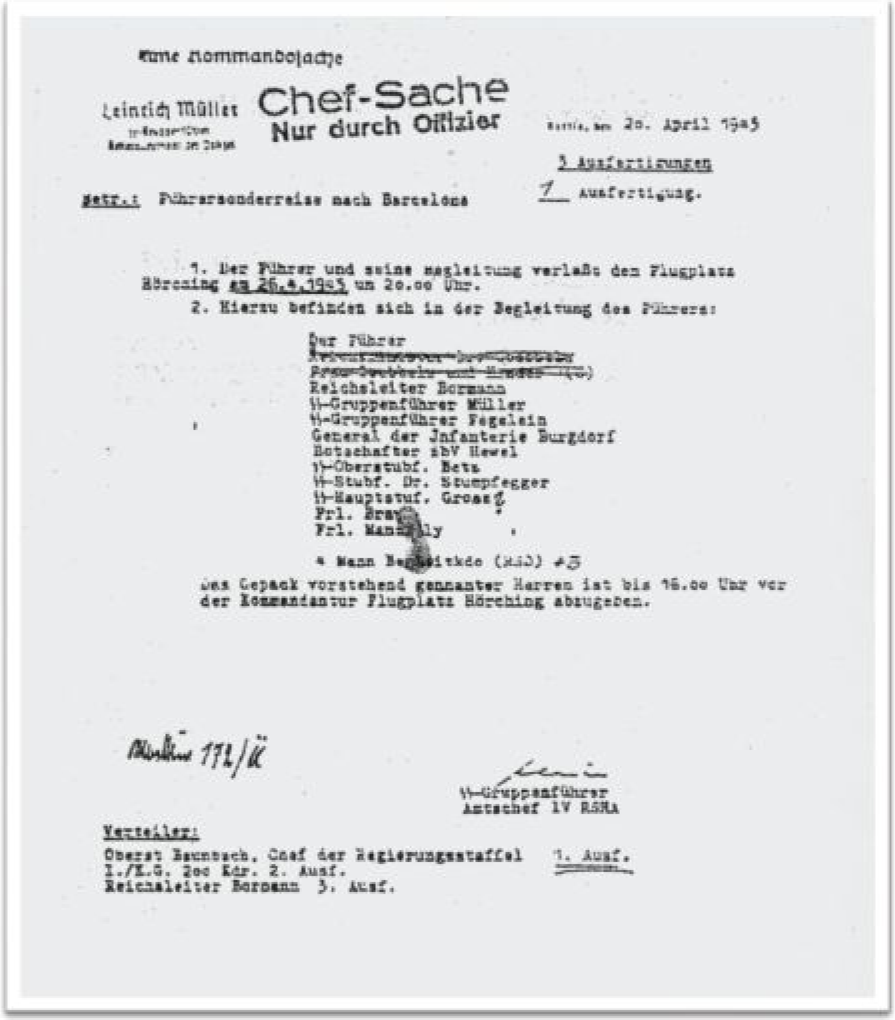

Geheime Kommandosache

Heinrich Müller

Chef-Sache
Nur durch Offizier

Berlin, den 20. April 1945

3 Ausfertigungen

1 Ausfertigung.

Betr.: Führersonderreise nach Barcelona

1. Der Führer und seine Begleitung verläßt den Flugplatz Hörching am 26.4.1945 um 20.00 Uhr.

2. Hierzu befinden sich in der Begleitung des Führers:

Der Führer
~~[illegible]~~
~~[illegible]~~ (6)
Reichsleiter Bormann
SS-Gruppenführer Müller
SS-Gruppenführer Fegelein
General der Infanterie Burgdorf
Botschafter SbV Hewel
SS-Oberstubf. Betz
SS-Stubf. Dr. Stumpfegger
SS-Hauptstuf. Gross[illegible]
Frl. Bra[illegible]
Frl. Man[illegible]ly

4 Mann Be[illegible]itkdo (RSD) +3

Das Gepäck vorstehend genannter Herren ist bis 16.00 Uhr vor der Kommandantur Flugplatz Hörching abzugeben.

Müller 172/II

SS-Gruppenführer
Amtschef IV RSHA

Verteiler:

Oberst Baumbach, Chef der Regierungsstaffel 1. Ausf.
I./K.G. 200 Kdr. 2. Ausf.
Reichsleiter Bormann 3. Ausf.

The Gentlemen and Their Luggage

This is an alleged wartime document purporting to show Hitler and other important Nazis leaving the bunker on April 20, 1945. (RSHA was Reich Central Security Department).

One version of this document is marked ’sECRET” at its top and with a date-stamp of 4 Sept. 1951 below. This would indicate it had become the property of the American government and held by them.

So what we have here is an alleged government document recording in a matter-of- fact way that Hitler, Eva Braun, Gestapo Chief Heinrich Mueller, Martin Bormann and some others flew out of Berlin on April 26, 1945 to Barcelona, Spain. It looks like Colonel Werner Baumbach, head of Squadron KG 200, was in charge of the airport Hoersching in Berlin. It all looks very official.

Someone sent me this document, no explanation or commentary other than it was too hot to handle. I sent it to some interested people, among these was Gerhard Hallstatt (formerly Kadmon). Gerhard is an artist, musician and writer who writes in both his native German and in English, and he insists upon drawing a hard and fast line as to factual reality as opposed to flights of fancy. In sending this document to him it was hoped his artist's right brain analysis might yield an insight. I did not give Gerhard any background on the document since I had none at that time. Gerhard got back to me saying he thought this document was a forgery. Beyond that, he said he believed this document was fabricated by an English-speaking source. His stylistic-linguistic analysis was something I totally lacked and could not even approach.

But I doubt this document for another reason. How many times does a document written seventy years ago explain and answer all the questions a researcher might have today" Those documents were not written for our benefit but would have been written for use at that time with all the unstated understandings of those times built into them. Government documents almost never completely solve problems. The best that can be asked of them is to verify something which has been stated by a witness or perhaps to contain testimony of a witness which, of course, never really answers all the questions we have today as completely as we would wish.

To this it should be added that the commentary given by Heiner Gehring/Karl-Heinz Zunneck states that the owner of the document, Gregory Douglas, contends that the missing Gestapo Chief Heinrich Mueller subsequently secretly worked for the American CIC in

Switzerland! In questioning by the Americans, Mueller was said to have stated that Hitler made his escape though the use of doubles (2).

Gehring and Zunneck go on to say that experts dismiss Gregory Douglas" hypothesis as false and leave it here without further comment, leaving it up to the reader to judge the document. In fact, the whole matter in inserted into their text as an aside, which is what is being done here. It is an interesting sideline, as the M-J 12 Affair is to the UFO world.

Literature Cited

1. **Gehring, Heiner, and Karl-Heinz Zunneck, 2005**, *Flugscheiben ueber Neuschwabenland Die Wahrheit ueber Vril, “Haunebu” und die Templer-Erbengemeinschaft*, pages 128-129, Jochen Kopp Verlag, Rottenburg, Germany. These authors cited a articles by Gregory Douglas in the magazine *The Military Advisor*, 1992-1993, Third Edition, number 11 and 12 as well as Fourth Edition, number 11. In those writings Mr. Douglas claims he is in possession of the document.

2. *ibid.*

PARTTWO:
FANTASTIC U-BOATS

PREMISE AND INTRODUCTION

There is the idea that near the very end of the war in Europe, the German Navy refitted some damaged U-boats with non-conventional propulsion systems. This was unlike other developments by the German Navy, which involved extensive testing and prototypes and perhaps a whole line of test U-boats. These strange U-boats seemed to have been one-off and done on an individual and perhaps opportunistic basis. After the war, these U-boats may have continued to function as sort of a phantom navy for the post-war SS. As was done for the discussion of secret bases, some early reports of this practice will be cited.

The first example is Michael X. Barton in his first book, originally published in 1960 and written under the name “Michael X”. Barton’s 1960 work was really a pre-quill to his 1968 classic on German flying discs, *The German Saucer Story*. It was with this second publication that German informants came to Barton and described a truly inside picture of events. What is amazing is that as early as 1960 Barton had the inkling of a story, some informants, and some details concerning the Nazi presence and high technology in South America. What follows was written fifteen years after the war ended, while Dwight Eisenhower was President, the year Chubby Checker invented the twist, before the Berlin Wall was erected.

> *“FREE ENERGY, if released to this planet, could change things on earth as they have never been changed before. It could — undoubtedly — usher in a New Order of The Ages. Imagine it. A constant supply of free electrical energy taken right from the atmosphere by everyone.*

> *Yes, a universal power such as Free-Energy cold release man from many of the burdens now present in our world money systems. But who has such a secret?*
>
> *The Nazis! If they have the original Viktor Schauberger "Electro-Magnetic" engine — or improved versions of it — they have Free Energy. The UFO engine runs of power taken directly from the atmosphere. and that is quite inexhaustible.*
>
> *I have talked with a brilliant man from Europe. Holland, I believe, is his native land. It is, however, no effort for him to speak seven different languages fluently... including German. I asked him if he could give me any pertinent facts about the Nazis' use of Free-Energy, since I knew he had access to certain "inside information".*
>
> *'Yes', my friend replied, 'it is known that the Nazis have a Free-Energy motor, and used it in 1958 to propel a U-boat between Europe and Buenos Aires. It is also believed by many of us that there is an underwater station — built by the Nazis — somewhere in the Atlantic Ocean between Germany and Argentina. A stopover place, no doubt, for Nazi subs and UFO's.' "(1)*

Well, the "underwater station" has certainly been identified as Fuerteventura.

We now turn to Buechner and Bernhart for a small portion of their description of the German submarine U-530 that surrendered in Buenos

Aires on July 10, 1945, two months after the war in Europe had ended.

> *"It is to be remembered that the U-530 was exceptionally fast. What kind of miraculous power plant propelled her on her swift course and what kind of wonderful fuel did she burn, which was efficient, same, cheap and clean? Would the general use of this fuel have made the petroleum industry obsolete? And would it have unbalanced the economy of the world? Somewhere deep in the confidential archives of World War II, the answers to these questions await the coming of another era." (2)*

It is to be kept under consideration that one author of the above, Kapitan Wilhelm Bernhart, is an alias. In life he was a junior officer aboard this very U-boat. (3) He ought to know what he is talking about.

And finally as introduction, we have O. Bergmann who sums up things to be investigated in this section of the current book. Translating from German:

> *"At sometime and someplace, at secret U-boat bases outside the German motherland, U-boats of the German Navy must have been weighted-out, and, during the great withdrawal in April/May 1945, missing U-boats must have been equipped with new revolutionary technology and also must have been converted with electromagnetic propulsion. With this these (U-boats) may, (have been) arranged with the same possibilities and technologies as the German flying discs (called UFOs)."(4)*

Actually, this may not have been quite so simple as the above paragraph indicates. There were several different technologies involved that were perhaps competing in delivering new, long distance propulsion systems for German U-boats. What is going to be done in this section of the book is to take a look at each one of these possibilities and as much of the story behind each as we are able to find.

Literature Cited

1. **X., Michael, 1960**, *We Want You: Is Hitler Alive?*, page 35 and 36, Future Press, reprinted 1969 by Saucerian Books, Clarksburg, WV., USA

2. **Buechner, William, Col., and Kapitan Wilhelm Bernhart, 1989**, *Hitler's Ashes*, page 228, Thunderbird Press, Matarie, LA., USA

3. **Buechner, William, Col., and Kapitan Wilhelm Bernhart, 1989**, page 289

4. **Bergmann, O., 1988**, *I Deutsche Flugscheiben und U-Boote Ueberwachen Die Weltmeere*, page 18, Hugin Gesellschaft Fuer Politisch-Philosophische Studien E.V., Wetter/Ruhr, Germany

PRELIMINARY ISSUES

Before discussing the exciting issues of alternative new U-boat propulsion, some things need to be dispensed with. The Germans did recognize the value of a nuclear submarine. The German rocket scientist Dr. Kraft von Ehricke reported that the propulsion specialist, Dr.Thiel, had shown to him in 1942 a report and drawing for a steam-driven nuclear power plant which had been written and prepared by Professors Heisenberg and Pose in Leipzig. Speaking with Professor Heisenberg in 1944, Dr. von Ehriche was told that, in his opinion (Heisenberg's) there was an urgent need to utilize an atomic reactor for the purposes of propelling a U-boat (1).

So the Germans (as well as the Japanese) had already realized the value of a nuclear submarine during the war years. As far as I am aware, neither the Germans nor the Japanese ever built an atomic submarine, however. In fact, there is no evidence that such a submarine was ever built by the SS in any of their secret bases at all. Therefore, we can dispense with any discussion on this topic.

The electric generators of Hans Coler were financed at the end by the German Navy. The German Navy was a submarine force by this time so their aims were obvious. Coler built a 6-kV device which could be ramped up to higher outputs. The problem seems to have been reliability. The devices of Hans Coler were mentioned in my first book and a bit more extensively in my second (2). There is no point in doing this a third time.

The Karl Schappeller device had a wonderful application of turning the propelling screws of a ship. Schappeller had even spoken with a representative of the British government between the two World Wars about utilizing his invention to power ships of the Royal Navy (3). The British decided instead to convert from steam to the more known form of power, diesel. We now know the Schappeller device was a spin-off of Tesla technology. Two European researchers, aided by some first-rate scientists/engineers, are now researching this topic, so any extensive discussion of Schappeller, in isolation, at this time, would be pointless.

This brings us to a discussion of conventional German U-boats. These were powered by a combination of two types of engines. First, a diesel engine powered the U-boat while it was running on the surface. These diesel engines burned oxygen—usually, this meant atmospheric oxygen. While running on the surface, the diesel engine also ran a generator that charged the extensive battery array used to run the secondary electric motor. The electric motor does not need oxygen and so was used underwater or perhaps for escape when silent running was necessary. The downside to the electric motor was its range. Relying on batteries, it could only run as long as the batteries held electric charge. Once depleted, the U-boat had to surface or just lay there, dead on the bottom.

As the war progressed the U-boats were increasingly being attacked on the surface, even at night. The British and Americans were using radar to locate them on the surface and attack them from the air, seemingly out of the blue, in compete surprise. Surface running became dangerous for the Germans. But as things stood, it was necessary to run on the surface to charge the batteries in order to dive at all. In 1944 the Germans invented the Schnorkel, also called snorkel or “snort”. This was a hollow tube that could be raised by the U-boat during shallow, underwater running, which connected atmospheric oxygen to the engine room for the diesel engines. Now, long distance voyages were possible and the batteries could be charged while the U-boat was technically under water. This snort could sometimes still be seen on radar but it was a big improvement. U-boat operation was again possible.

But throughout the war, two other alternative motors for U-boats were being pursued on an on-again, off-again basis. These were the Walter engine and the Draeger engine.

The Walter engine was a product of chemist Dr. Hellmut Walter. This is the same Dr. Hellmut Walter who produced the rocket-assisted boosters for heavy aircraft as well as the engine for the Messerschmitt Me 163 Komet, the rocket-propelled interceptor. The Walter engine relied on Dr. Walter's observation of the oxygen-carrying characteristics of hydrogen peroxide, $H2O3$. A high concentration of 80-85% hydrogen peroxide was used to react with a potassium permanganate catalyst, producing water vapor at 600-700°C and large quantities of oxygen. Since there was no visible combustion, this process was called a "cold jet process". If fuel is added, a "thermal jet process" takes place, in which the excess oxygen burns the fuel (here, diesel fuel). This can raise the temperature inside the combustion chamber up to 2,000°C, making it necessary to inject water into the combustion chamber for cooling. The water, which is instantly vaporized into steam, cools the combustion chamber to about 500-600°C. The high pressure of the steam produced (36 to 40 atmospheres), can then be used to turn a turbine connected to the ship's propeller. The Walter system was to be used as a secondary engine, in most cases, for underwater use and attack while leaving the diesel engine for standard operation. This engine would produce a great deal of power very quickly. In fact, it was an underwater rocket (4).

The Type XXI U-boats were slated to have this engine but due to technical difficulties involved in bringing this engine to a state of reliability necessary for military use, no Type XXI actually had the Walter engine. The one Type XXI that the Germans were able to make officially operational was powered by the standard diesel-electric engines.

The second type of alternative engine the Germans spent a great deal of time on was a system developed by Dr. Heinrich Draeger. This was an oxygen recycling system— almost. In this design a standard diesel U-boat motor was used along with a large pressurized oxygen tank. Rather than being vented away, exhaust gases were collected and cooled using a seawater heat exchanger, then passed through a carbon filter to remove the carbon dioxide. The gas was then enriched with a bleed from the oxygen tank so that, in effect, "artificial air" was created. This air was fed into the motor's air induction setup and burned again, cooled, scrubbed of $CO2$, enriched and fed through again, and so on (5), (6). Presumably, this closed system could work under water, while on the surface atmospheric oxygen would have supplied the engine's needs.

Schematic Diagram of the Walter Propulsion System

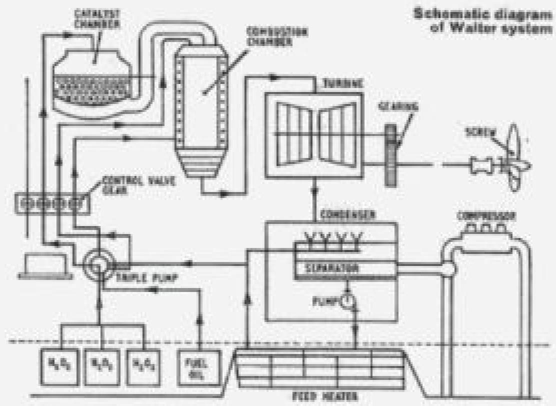
Schematic diagram of Walter system
CATALYST CHAMBER
COMBUSTION CHAMBER
TURBINE
GEARING
SCREW
CONTROL VALVE GEAR
CONDENSER
COMPRESSOR
SEPARATOR
PUMP
TRIPLE PUMP
H2O2
H2O2
H2O2
FUEL OIL
FEED HEATER

Unfortunately I haven't got the name of the kind person who kindly contributed with

Schematic Diagram of the Draeger Propulsion System

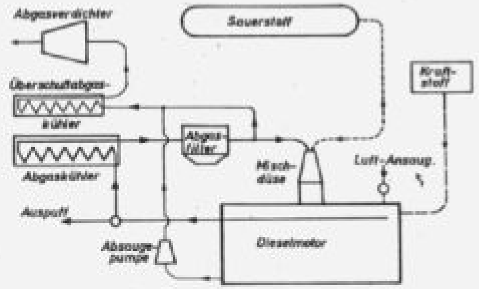
Abgasverdichter
Sauerstoff
Kraft-stoff
Überschußabgas-kühler
Abgas-filter
Misch-düse
Luft-Ansaug.
Abgaskühler
Auspuff
Absauge-pumpe
Dieselmotor

Schematische Darstellung einer Diesel-Kreislaufanlage
(für Uboottyp XVII K)

Sauerstoff=Oxygen
Abgas=Exhaust Gas
Abgasverdicter=Exhaust Gas Compressor
Abgasfilter=Exhaust Gas Filter
Luft- Ansaug=Air Intake
Dieselmotor=Diesel motor
Misch-Duese=Mixing Injectors
Kuehler=Cooler

For some reason, though, this idea never lived up to its promise. The power output of an engine fitted for his recycling or "Kreislauf" was never what was expected of it. Besides, the system required a U-boat to carry a large container or many small containers of liquid oxygen that would eat up space within the submarine. This idea, like the Walter system, was started and stopped and restarted and restopped many times during the course of the war.

Meanwhile, circa 1944, proponents of the “electro-boat” idea were making themselves heard within the Kriegsmarine. In the electro-boat, the electric motor becomes ascendant, with the diesel motor supplying the role of electric generator. This was made possible by an improvement in battery technology (7).

All three of these technologies seemed to compete for space aboard the new U-boat designs. The older Type VII and Type IX were slated for replacement with the Type XXI, Type XXII. A whole type, Type XVIIB, was created to test configurations for the Type XXVI. Hitler had pinned his hopes on turning the war in his direction, partly through use of these the new U-boat types. A great deal was riding on new U-boats but the realization of a totally new, revolutionary, superior U-boat type as a total package, seemed beyond the possibilities of the deteriorating war conditions, or, in other words, beyond the scope of the time frame involved.

All this experimentation documents the urgent need the Germans felt for an alternative to existing, conventional U-boat propulsion. But the official experimentation was bogged down in a bureaucracy and a convention of developmental prototypes. As with aircraft, what O. Bergmann was saying in the piece translated at the start of the U-boat discussion is that the Germans, at their individual U-boat pens, seemed to take it upon themselves to retro-fit older U-boat models which had been damaged or damaged and sunken boats which had been refloated with new equipment, on their own, without official permission or orders, at least from the very top. This can certainly be said after the war ended since “official permission or orders” did not exist. The older models in question would have had to by Type VII as well as some Type IX U-boats.

Before moving to those alternative options, we must take a quick glance at what have been called “mystery submarines”. These are submarines of unknown nationality that were seen immediately following World War II, right up until this day where we call them USOs (Unidentified Submersible Objects). Of course, not all USOs are pirate German U-boats, the descriptions do not fit in every USO case. But for a few years after the end of the war this was certainly the case.

Submarines of unknown nationality were especially prominent in reports from Norwegian fjords. This was the area of operation for the German U-boat fleet and waters they knew very well. What was happening was that a submarine of unknown nationality would be picked up by sonar or sighted off the coast of Norway, eventually being penned into a fjord there. NATO and of course the USA would jump on this, trying to force the unknown submarine to the surface with depth charges and other weapons. Sometimes this cat-and-mouse game would go on weeks! It would always be reported in the European press and sometimes in the USA. Eventually and always, the submarine would slip away and the mystery would continue.

The problem was that this was the period of the Cold War. Obviously, NATO believed these were Soviet submarines and wanted to catch one for propaganda value. It was not absolutely clear that they were all Soviet in origin, especially in the beginning. So we will rely, instead, on instances where the nationality can be conclusively determined as German.

The first and most obvious instance is of the two U-boats that were in service of the SS and still resided in the U-boat bunker at Fuerteventura. Perhaps these U-boats were part of the Black Fleet, the black U-boats described by Dr. Joseph Farrell (8). Dr. Farrell says there may have been as many as six of these U-boats. Is there any wonder that there is so much confusion about the final resting places of so many U-boats, or the exact number of U-boats operational at the time of German surrender or the number of U-boat unaccounted for? Years ago, researcher Mark D. Kneipp wrote me about the Fuerteventura U-boats and said they might be U-1020 and U-1021. He said they were both Type VIIc-41s, completely rebuilt with the latest sound detection and weaponry at the end of the war but which went missing after the war.

Two other U-boats that operated in an immediate post-war environment were U-530 and U-977. Both surrendered months after the war ended in Buenos Aires, Argentina. U-530 surrendered on July 17, 1945 while U-977 surrendered a month later on August 17, 1945. Both were Type VII U-boats. Obviously, they both had been doing something since the war in Europe ended on May 8, 1945. Both were accused of transporting Hitler to South America. Kapitan Wilhelm Bernhart claims U-530 spent the time on a voyage to Antarctica and he claims to have made the voyage and the landfall in Neuschwabenland (9). His co-author, Howard Buechner, accepted this and he was a Colonel in the US Army, a college professor and a medical doctor. In fact, he was the first American medical doctor to enter the concentration camp at Buchenwald, so he had a reputation to lose.

There is a tale told concerning U-977 which Buechner and Bernhart repeat (10):

> *“Finally, there is one more mystery about the U-977. It is said that, she too, made a rendezvous at sea with another submarine. In this case it was a soviet vessel carrying nuclear scientists and a very high-ranking Russian official. In exchange for German plans of a highly sophisticated neutron weapon, the Soviets agreed to block the implementation of the Morgenthal Plan that would have crippled post war Germany and reduced her forever to an agricultural state. This incident has not been verified.”*

This incident is certainly not verified but the German fear of the Morganthal Plan was certainly very real and would certainly motivate any German to the extreme. Of all the things mentioned in this book perhaps my retelling of the Morganthal Plan would be the least credible. Rather than do so in any detail one should see Wikipedia's version (*http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Morganthal_Plan*). This was a plan to remove industry from Germany, turning the whole country into pastureland. It was the brainchild of American Secretary of State and chief executive of the US State Department, Henry Morganthal who actually persuaded British Prime Minister Winston Churchill to agree to the plan. It was never implemented, fully, but lived on in the American Zone as occupation directive JCS 1067. Wikipedia says:

> *"In 1945 the German Red Cross was dissolved, and the International Red Cross and other international relief agencies were kept from helping ethnic Germans through strict controls on supplies and on travel. The few agencies permitted to operate within Germany, such as the indigenous Caritas Verband, were not allowed to use imported supplies. When the Vatican attempted to transmit food supplies from Chile to German infants the US State Department forbad it.*
>
> *In early October 1945 the UK government privately acknowledged in a cabinet meeting that, German civilian adult death rates had risen to four times the pre-war levels and death rates amongst the German children had risen by 10 times the pre-war levels. In early 1946 US President Harry S. Truman finally bowed to pressure from Senators, congress and public to allow foreign relief organization of enter Germany in order to review the food situation. In mid-1946 the average German adult received less than 1,500 calories a day. 2,000 calories was then considered the minimum and individual can endure on for a limited period of time with reasonable health."*

In September of 1946, the American government abandoned its version of the Morganthal Plan. If the U-977 story is true, evidently the

Germans could imagine a situation in which all of Germany was subjected to such a plan and took drastic measures to prevent this from happening.

Unlike the other two instances of German U-boat activity after the war, the legend of the U-977 must remain in the realm of legend until evidence surfaces. But there is yet another bit of evidence for German U-boat activity after the war, the story of the Juliana. Buechner and Bernhart cite a French newspaper article from France Soir, dated September 25, 1946 that they translate and reproduce:

> *“One and one half years after the end of the fighting in Europe, an Icelandic whaleboat was stopped by a German U-boat. The whaleboat has been identified as the “Juliana” which was located in the waters near the island of Malvinas and the Antarctic zone, when it was stopped by a German U-Boat of magnificent size, bearing the German mourning flag (red with black borders).*
>
> *The commander of the U-Boat approached the whaleboat with a raft and gave orders to captain Hekla to surrender a part of the ship’s provisions. The captain of the whaleboat had no other choice than to comply with the orders given by the German Navy officer. This officer spoke accurate English and paid for the provisions with U.S. dollars. In additions, he also paid a premium of $10.00 to each crewmember. The officer gave the captain of the whaler information pertaining to the location of whales. The ship later went to this described location and harpooned two whales. The rumors concering U-Boats of the German Navy in the waters of “Fireland” and the Antarctic zone are now a fact (Telegram from AFP, dated Paris, September 25, 1946).”(11)*

OK, just one more. This is involves the recent raising of U-534. This operation has its own website (http://u534.coolfreepages.com/Basis_Frame.htm). At the very end of the war U-534 refused to surrender as ordered to do. Instead, she headed north from Denmark to Norway with two other U-boats. From that website:

> *"May 5th, 1945 U-534 was sailing in the Kattegat, North-West of Helsingor. Although Admiral Doenitz had ordered all his U-boats to surrender as from 08:00 May 5th, U534 refused to surrender. U534 - with two other U-boats in company -was heading north towards Norway, without flying flag of surrender. Their departure was noted by Danish fisherman (?) and passed on to RAF Coastal Command that at her turn sent out an air-patrol.*
>
> *A Liberator from 547 squadron attacked U-534. With all three U-boats firing at her she was shot down and crashed in to the sea. One survivor was rescued by a boat from the nearby lightship. By that time the two other U-boats dived, leaving U534 alone on the surface."*

A British surface ship then attacked and sunk U-534 leaving three dead and forty-nine survivors. But the story is that the other two U-boats got away! These two U-boats did not go through an attack unecssarily. It was necessary in their minds. The only possible conclusion is these U-boats did not want to surrender. They did not want to become part of Occupied Germany. In fact, they wanted and they were at this very moment volunteering to become part of a kind of post-war, Nazi, black U-boat fleet.

Literature Cited

1. **Georg, Friedrich, 2000**, *Hitlers Siegeswaffen Band 1: Luftwaffe Und Marine Geheime Nuklearwaffen des Dritten Reiches und ihre Traegersysteme*, page 188, Schleusingen, Germany. Also available in English as Hitler's Miracle Weapons, (first book)

2. **Stevens, Henry, 2007**, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science and Technology*, page 58-63, Adventures Unlimited Publishing, Kempton, Illinois, USA

3. **Bahn, Peter, Ph.D**., and Heiner Gehring, 1997, *Der Vril-Mythos Eine geheimisvolle Energieform in Esoterik, Technik und Therapie*, pages 120-131, Omega Verlag, Duesseldorf, Germany

4. **Lusar, Rudolf, 1964**, *German Secret Weapons of the Second World War*, pages 129 and 202, J.F. Lehmens Verlag, Munich, Germany

5. **Lusar, Rudolf, 1964**, pages 207, 208

6. **Roessler, Eberhard, 1996**, *Geschichte des deutschen U-Bootes Band 2*, pages 300, 301, Bernard & Graefe Verlag, Augsburg, Germany

7. **Roessler, Eberhard, 1996**, page 441

8. **Farrell, Joseph, Ph.D., 2008**, *Nazi International The Nazis' Postwar Plan to Control Finance, Conflict, Physics and Space*,

pages 65, 96, 131, Adventures Unlimited Publishing, Kempton, Illinios, USA

9. **Buechner, Howard A., Col., and Kapitan Wilhelm Bernhart, 1988**, *Adolf Hitler and the Secrts of the Holy Lance*, page 223, Thunderbird Press, Metairie., LA., USA

10. **Buechner, Howard A., Col., and Kapitan Wilhelm Bernhart, 1989**, *Hilter’s Ashes*, page 228, Thunderbird Press, Metairie, LA., USA

11. **Buechner, Howard A., Col., and Kapitan Wilhelm Bernhart, 1989**, page 179

CONVERTED U-BOATS

This is O. Bergmann’s concept that during the war and perhaps afterward, German U-boats were hauled up and refitted with new technology. It is his idea that sometimes this refitting took the form of exotic engine propulsion.

There was an idea a few years back that U-boats so refitted were then given a U-boat designation of another U-boat known to the Allies as having been sunken. This idea makes for confusion and that was the purpose for it as given. In this theory, the Allies would never know the exact strength of the U-boat fleet and would not even really know if a particular U-boat that they had thought sunk, was sunk. Add to this the problem of tracking down and accounting for all the U-boats themselves that were active towards the end of the war. There are organizations in Germany that do this, not for some concerns of conspiracy, but because those on board were valued people, they were the sons and husbands of Germany, defending it and so ought to be accorded the honor of knowing a final disposition. Problems seem to arise sometimes when a new sunken U-boat is positively in one place but the official accounting has put its location somewhere else. Then, a reshuffling takes place in the official accounting of where all these U-boats ended up. Almost seventy years later, this is still going on. An individual can now go on line with these organizations and be updated. There is no doubt that these agencies have great information about U-boats and U-boat-related things. But there is some mystery here no matter how absolute and final and authoritative all those experts and their websites seem to be.

While going through individual U-boat records and histories on some of those websites, one often sees descriptions of damaged or even sunken U-boats being raised, repaired and/or refitted and re-commissioned. To make this point two examples will be considered. One, U-234 is perhaps the best-known U-boat in terms of on-going mysteries. For a look at what happened to U-234 we will rely on the work of Geoffrey Brooks and Philip Henshall, two of the most rock-solid researchers around. The second U-boat whose refitting we will consider is U-530, a completely different story, told by a completely different source, “Wilhelm Bernhart”, an alleged junior officer aboard her at the time.

U-234 was converted from a minelayer to a cargo ship. It was originally a Type XB but three other Type IXD/1 U-boats, U-180, U-195 and U-219 were also converted to cargo carriers in 1944, with the express purpose of bringing high tech items to Japan (1). U-234, it seems, could not wait for refitting as it was damaged by a bomb while still under construction in May 1943, so it was not launched until December 23, 1943. (2) In late August 1944, U-234 arrived in Kiel, German Werft for a refit. Twenty-four of the thirty-nine vertical shafts used to carry and lay mines were removed to make two large lateral holds. The other shafts were reworked to serve as cargo holds. A new radar unit with a small tower was installed, in addition to the latest snorkel model. (3) Upgrading old U-boats with a snorkel and modern electronics was an almost universal modification. Upon completing this refitting, U-234 left Kiel and formed up with three of the latest Type XXIII U-boats with the final destination of Norway using, at times, neutral Swedish waters. On a training voyage, U-234 collided with U-1301, puncturing the fuel tanks and causing a five-foot gash in her side. (4) The dry dock facilities at the closest base, Kristiansand, was full. Captain Fehler was directed to Bergen, three days sailing time away. Rather than take this option, the Captain decided on a radical course of action. He flooded the forward tanks, raising the U-boat 20 degrees out of the water and having members of his own crew weld a piece of steel plate onto the skin of U-234. (5) This took the better part of a week. (6)

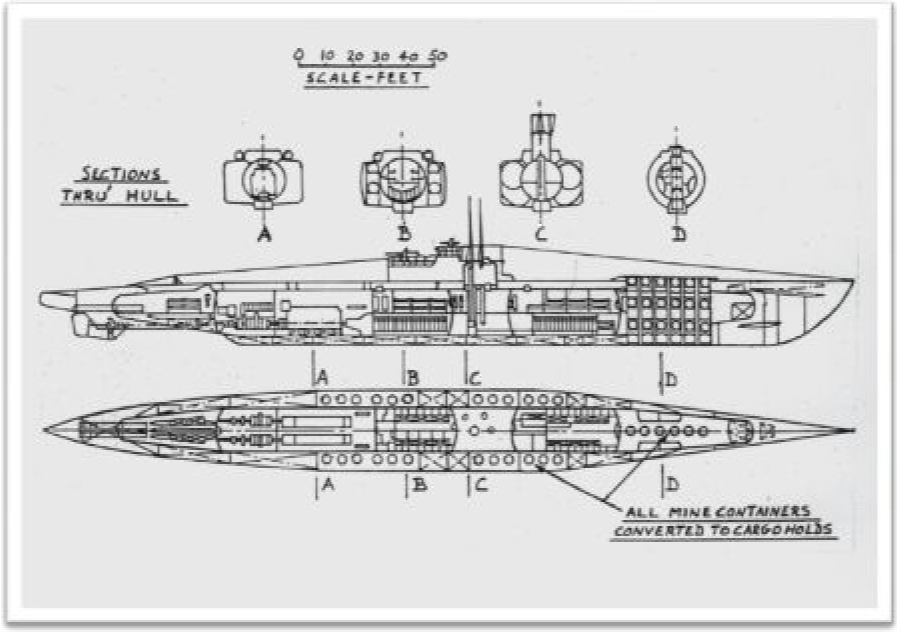

U-234, A Converted U-boat

This is a diagram of U-234 prepared by Philip Henshall (Vengeance: Hitler's Nuclear Weapon, Fact or Fiction) in which he points out modifications made to change its mission. This was done in the last days of the war.

In reality, this is like pipe welding. Pipe welding is done to a high standard as the pipe in question is subjected to pressure so that the weld itself must be done precisely and in a certain way. In the case of U-234, a long pipe, the precision of this weld or lack thereof carried with it the lives of all on board. The fact that Captain Fehler was willing to do this speaks of the competence of those crewmembers but also of the willingness and mental flexibility of the Captain and the ethos of the U-boat service. If he was willing to undergo a drastic field repair such as this and trust it going into action, then it is entirely feasible that other captains would be willing, also, to have their boats refitted in the field with untested, perhaps unauthorized machinery.

Regarding U-530, a Type VII c U-boat, we will rely on the eyewitness account of “Kapitan Wilhelm Bernhart”. His name is in quotation marks because, as has been mentioned, this is a penname for one of the junior officers aboard this ship. The names of all aboard including the junior officers are known and listed in the book cited here so this “secret” is really an open one as anyone with littler research skills would be able to ascertain the real name. Bernhart begins setting up the story:

> *“At first glance the U-530 appeared to have been a highly unlikely choice for a long ocean voyage and the accomplishment of one of the most unusual missions of all times. She was old and leaky and had come to be known as an “unlucky” ship. In fact, she had recently been rammed by a freighter and at the time when her secret mission was to begin she was in dry-dock undergoing repairs (the author cites “National Police Gazette, 1977).*

> *The mystery of the selection of the U-530 for special duty is easily solved. A new boat had been produced and equipped with improved engines, extra battery power, schnorkel and other advanced features. For reasons known only to Admiral Doenitz she was assigned the duplicate number U-530 and hand picked by the Admiral for a highly secret mission. Above all else the new U-530 was fast. She is said to have been able to travel at 30 knots, even when submerged.”(7)*

U-530 left Kiel harbor on April 13, 1945, first stopping in Denmark to take on some supplies and then on to Kristiansand, Norway, arriving on April 20, 1945, prepared for a long sea voyage. She departed on May 1, 1945 as part of a convoy of phantom ships, according to Buechner and Bernhart. And according to them the real U-530 would be found by the Allies in a dry dock in Kiel and appropriated entered into the records and accounted for. (8) This meant U-530, the new ship, was absolutely free to carry out whatever role the captain deemed fit. Somewhere near this point in the story U-530 hears Admiral Doenitz’ order to surrender to the Allies but disregards it.

> *“Somewhere in the vicinity of the South Sandwich Island, the U-530 made contact with the U-465, another ghost ship which bore the number of a class VIIC vessel reported to have been sunk on May 5, 1943. She was now a type XIV known as an ocean going transporter or ‘Milkcow.’ “ (9)*

From here U-530 is said to have traveled to Antarctica and deposited Nazi relics there. Bernhart claims to have been on the shore party as mentioned. Afterward, all evidence was eradicated and a new, substitute log was created. The ship sailed to Argentina and surrendered on July 10, 1945, but, according to the authors, it took the government of Argentina three days to notify the government of the USA and seven more days before they actually arrived and took charge. In the meantime, anyone who did not want to be found or anything that needed to be hidden was taken off U-530:

> *“…and faded away like ghosts into the Nazi underground.” (10)*

The Americans arrived and took the Captain and crew into custody, moving them to the USA and subjecting them to intense “interrogation”. U-530 was placed undertow and began a long voyage to Boston, Massachusetts, or did it?

This is really the crux and proof of concept regarding exotic U-boat propulsion because if this existed as the two authors say it did, this U-boat would have been scrutinized intensively by the US government, in secret and in private. The results would not have been released to the public and the whole matter would have been kept top secret. A cover story would have been concocted. This is exactly what the two authors, Buechner and Bernhart contend.

> *“It would seem that the strange adventures of the U-530 were now at an end, but not quite. She was still to take part in one more interesting deception. At some point near the eastern limits of the Caribbean sea, the towing vessel veered off to the west, and a look-alike U-530 appeared und tow and took her place. For the second time the U-530 changed identity.*
>
> *The substitute submarine was taken to a port on the eastern seaboard. The original U-530 was towed through the Panama Canal and then northward past Central America, Mexico and California to the United States Naval base at Mare Island in San Francisco Bay. Here the once proud U-530 was demolished piece-by-piece and bolt-by-bolt. The purpose of this action and any secrets that might have been discovered, have never been make public.*
>
> *In November 28, 1947 the substitute U-530 was sent to the bottom of the Atlantic Ocean by torpedo fire off the coast of cape Cod, Massachusetts. Under an agreement with the Soviet Union allowing their observers to witness the death of captured German submarines, the Russians watched the fake U-530 go to her watery grave.” (11)*

Remembering the earlier quote concerning the U-530’s unconventional engines, very fast but which ran on some “miraculous power plant “ with some kind of “wonderful fuel” which was “safe, cheap and clean” and which might make “the petroleum industry obsolete” (12) the authors say:

> *“...What seems to have been the final mystery of he astounding underseaboat 530, appears to be related to its ignominious fate of Mare Island in San Francisco Bay. Here the once proud vessel entered*

> *dry dock and was systematically reduced to a miscellaneous pile of parts. The U-530 became a nameless, a useless, and unidentifiable thing; worse than a ship at the bottom of the sea; a vessel which had ceased to exist. Why was this done? Was there a message hidden within her hull or was it the secret of her engine room which was of such great concern?" (13)*

This is a fantastic story! We do not have the U-530 to examine now. Certainly, the American government would not release this information via a F.O.I.A. request. But, really now, would the US government stoop so low as to smuggle an entire U-boat into the country? If this behavior could be documented, it would go along way towards verification of this tale. But the US government would not be able to do this or do this in reality, right?

Wrong. Friedrich Georg caught them at this trick, red handed. He discusses the appropriation of German submarine hull design without proper ascription when he reveals (my translation):

> *"Actual proof has been uncovered that there could have been more here than only a design drawing. The US Naval Technical Mission had in November, 1945, on its own lifted a 195 ton German U-boat with a crane and freightered it to the USA. It is notable that no small German U-boat Type of this weight class is known. It is therefore very well possible that we are dealing with a research U-boat of the RPF with "(tear) drop form". A 195-ton water displacement fits very well with a length of 36 meters and a width of 5 m. In comparison, the Walter U-boat U-1406 displaced 415 tons and was more than double as heavy."(12)*

This is quite a find. The US government did spirit away a research U-boat for points unknown and the records, the proof, had to be dug out of some totally obscure source rather than being fed to some malleable historian with an appropriate cover story as was the common practice at the time. This story did not surface until twenty years after Buechner and Bernhart published their book but it goes a long way in establishing a basis for their story.

Regarding the other U-boat, the U-1406, this was a research U-boat of a strange type. It was a rare Type XVIIb. The Type XVIIb, in total, consisted of three U-boats, U-1405, U-1406, and U-1407. These were built to test the feasibility of the upcoming Type XXVI U-boats. What they had in common was the Walter propulsion unit, the hydrogen peroxide power unit which had once again fallen into favor. The Type XVIIb was not an operational or attack U-boat but just a test-bed. (15)

But the first Walter units were not installed in a Type XXI, or a Type XXII, or a Type XVIIb, they were installed in the older Type VIIa units. Four of these were built, U-792, U-793, U-794, and U-795, all commissioned between November, 1943 and April, 1944. They were assigned to the 5th U-boat Flotilla but were retained for testing rather than seeing active, combat duty. All were scuttled on May 4 or May 5, 1945. Two, U-792 and U-793, were raised by the British for more testing. (www.uboat.net)

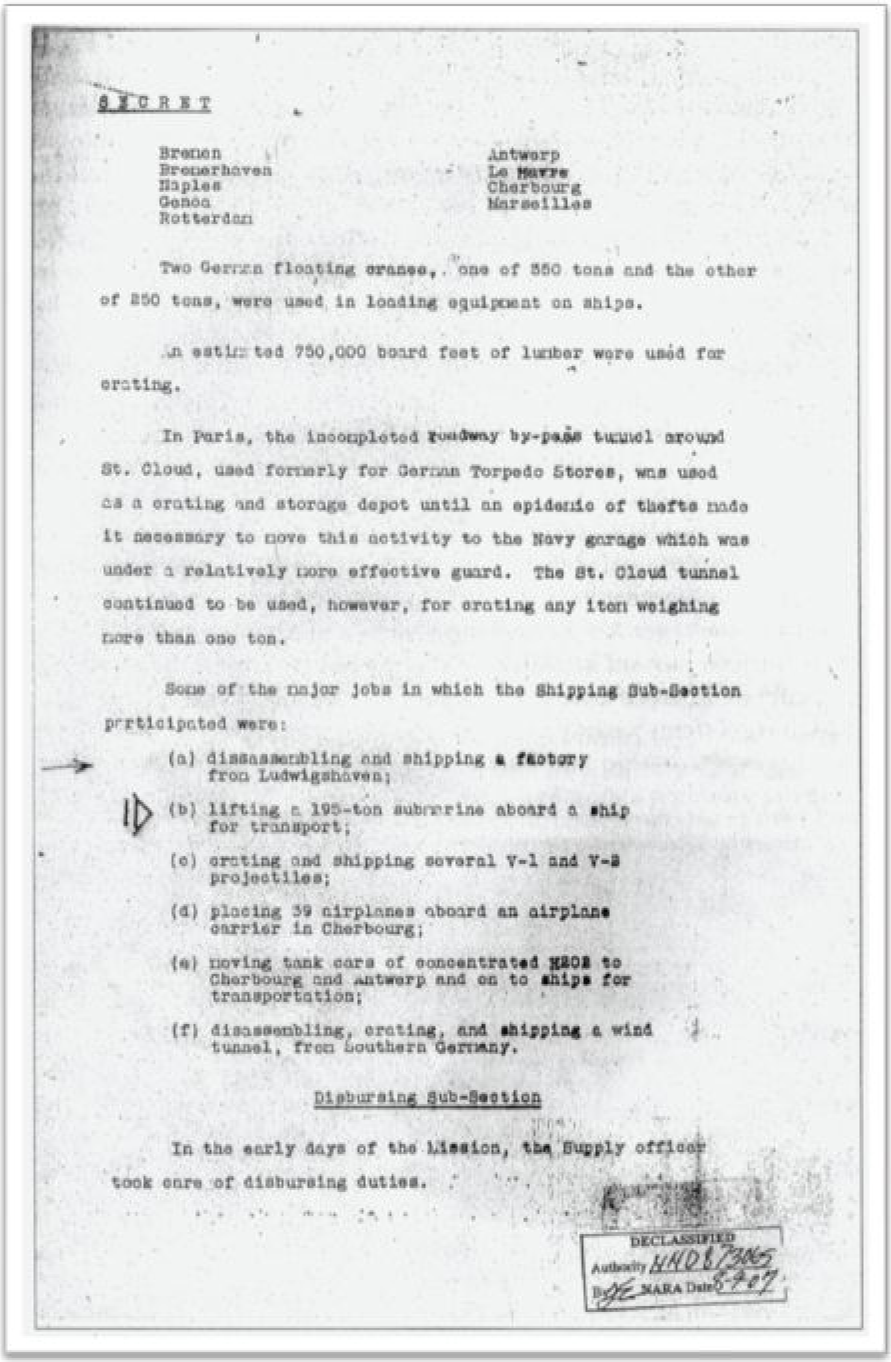

S E C R E T

Bremen
Bremerhaven
Naples
Genoa
Rotterdam

Antwerp
Le Havre
Cherbourg
Marseilles

Two German floating cranes, one of 350 tons and the other of 250 tons, were used in loading equipment on ships.

An estimated 750,000 board feet of lumber were used for crating.

In Paris, the incompleted roadway by-pass tunnel around St. Cloud, used formerly for German Torpedo Stores, was used as a crating and storage depot until an epidemic of thefts made it necessary to move this activity to the Navy garage which was under a relatively more effective guard. The St. Cloud tunnel continued to be used, however, for crating any item weighing more than one ton.

Some of the major jobs in which the Shipping Sub-Section participated were:

(a) disassembling and shipping a factory from Ludwigshaven;

(b) lifting a 195-ton submarine aboard a ship for transport;

(c) crating and shipping several V-1 and V-2 projectiles;

(d) placing 39 airplanes aboard an airplane carrier in Cherbourg;

(e) moving tank cars of concentrated H_2O_2 to Cherbourg and Antwerp and on to ships for transportation;

(f) disassembling, crating, and shipping a wind tunnel, from Southern Germany.

Disbursing Sub-Section

In the early days of the Mission, the Supply officer took care of disbursing duties.

DECLASSIFIED
Authority NND873065
By NARA Date 8-9-07

Mysterious Booty U-boat

German researcher Friedrich Georg found a recently-declassified U.S. document discussing the shipping of a captured 195-ton U-boat back to America

The point is that there was exotic technology being tested by the Germans at the tail end of the war. New, exotic technology was tested first in older U-boat designs. U-boats were refitted throughout the war with new technology. Having established that there were exotic U-boats, U-boats at least exotic enough to attract the attention of the US government and for it to maintain secrecy thereof, we can now turn to some explanations of that exotic technology.

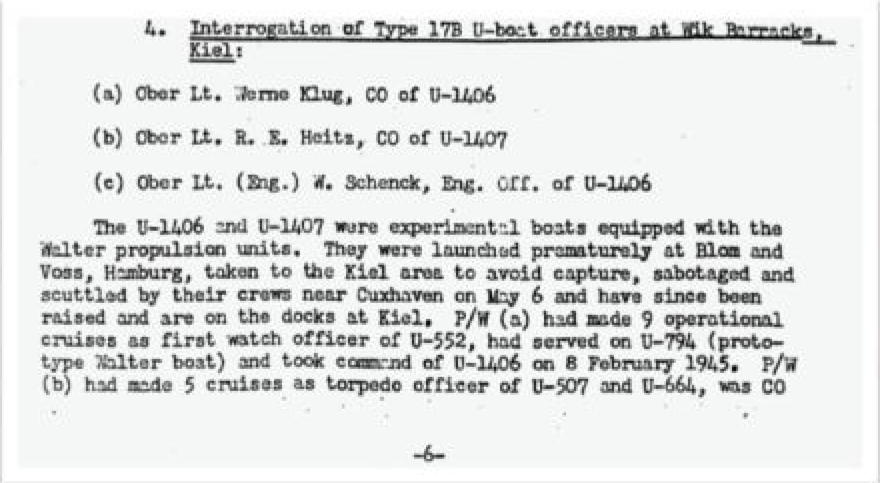

4. Interrogation of Type 17B U-boat officers at Wik Barracks, Kiel:

(a) Ober Lt. Werne Klug, CO of U-1406

(b) Ober Lt. R. E. Heitz, CO of U-1407

(c) Ober Lt. (Eng.) W. Schenck, Eng. Off. of U-1406

The U-1406 and U-1407 were experimental boats equipped with the Walter propulsion units. They were launched prematurely at Blom and Voss, Hamburg, taken to the Kiel area to avoid capture, sabotaged and scuttled by their crews near Cuxhaven on May 6 and have since been raised and are on the docks at Kiel. P/W (a) had made 9 operational cruises as first watch officer of U-552, had served on U-794 (prototype Walter boat) and took command of U-1406 on 8 February 1945. P/W (b) had made 5 cruises as torpedo officer of U-507 and U-664, was CO

-6-

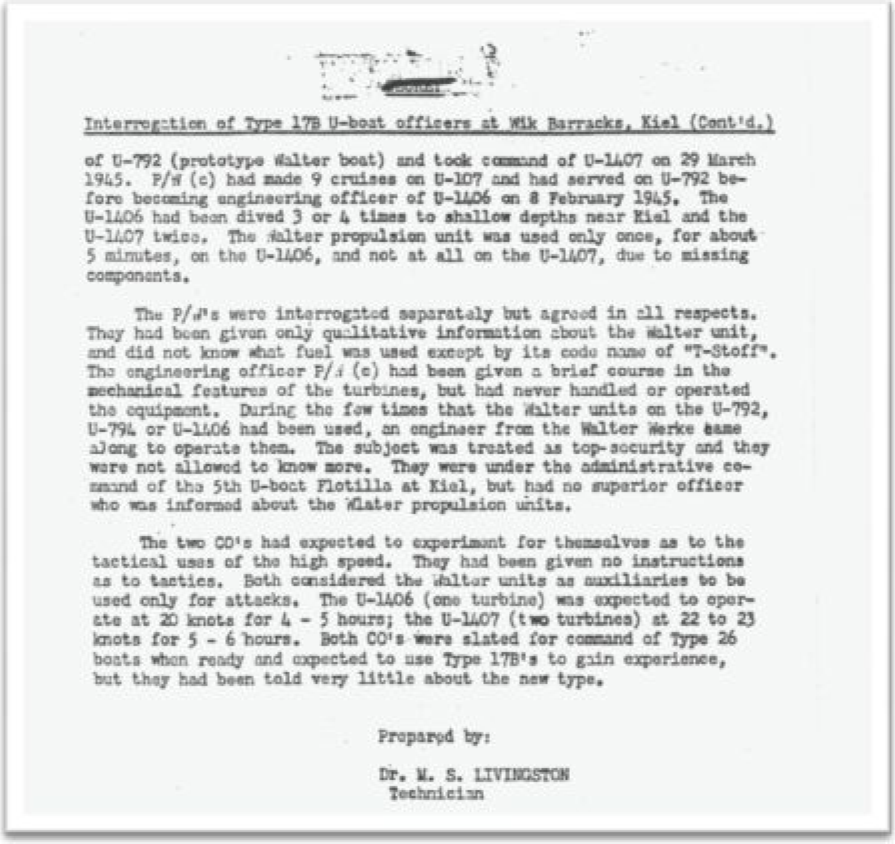

[redacted]

Interrogation of Type 17B U-boat officers at Wik Barracks, Kiel (Cont'd.)

of U-792 (prototype Walter boat) and took command of U-1407 on 29 March 1945. P/W (c) had made 9 cruises on U-107 and had served on U-792 before becoming engineering officer of U-1406 on 8 February 1945. The U-1406 had been dived 3 or 4 times to shallow depths near Kiel and the U-1407 twice. The Walter propulsion unit was used only once, for about 5 minutes, on the U-1406, and not at all on the U-1407, due to missing components.

The P/W's were interrogated separately but agreed in all respects. They had been given only qualitative information about the Walter unit, and did not know what fuel was used except by its code name of "T-Stoff". The engineering officer P/W (c) had been given a brief course in the mechanical features of the turbines, but had never handled or operated the equipment. During the few times that the Walter units on the U-792, U-794 or U-1406 had been used, an engineer from the Walter Werke came along to operate them. The subject was treated as top-security and they were not allowed to know more. They were under the administrative command of the 5th U-boat Flotilla at Kiel, but had no superior officer who was informed about the Wlater propulsion units.

The two CO's had expected to experiment for themselves as to the tactical uses of the high speed. They had been given no instructions as to tactics. Both considered the Walter units as auxiliaries to be used only for attacks. The U-1406 (one turbine) was expected to operate at 20 knots for 4 - 5 hours; the U-1407 (two turbines) at 22 to 23 knots for 5 - 6 hours. Both CO's were slated for command of Type 26 boats when ready and expected to use Type 17B's to gain experience, but they had been told very little about the new type.

Prepared by:

Dr. M. S. LIVINGSTON
Technician

U.S. Naval Technical Mission in Europe, Technical Report No. 287-45. Officers aboard three working Walter U-boats are interrogated.

Literature Cited

1. **Brooks, Geoffrey, 1992**, *Hitler’s Nuclear Weapons*, page 139, Leo Cooper/Pen & Sword Books Ltd, Barnsley, UK

2. **Brooks, Geoffrey, 1992**, page 144

3. **Brooks, Geoffrey, 1992**, page 149

4. **Henschall, Philip, 1995**, *Vengeance Hitler’s Nuclear Weapon Fact or Fiction?,* page 124, Alan Sutton Publishing, Ltd., Gloucestershire, UK

5. **Brooks, Geoffrey, 1992**, page 157

6. **Henschall, Philip, 1995**, page 125

7. **Buechner, Howard A., Col., and Kapitan Wilhelm Bernhart, 1989**, *Hitler’s Ashes*, page 189, Thunderbird Press, Inc., Metairie, LA., USA

8. **Buechner, Howard A., Col., and Kapitan Wilhelm Bernhart, 1989**, page 186

9. **Buechner, Howard A., Col., and Kapitan Wilhelm Bernhart, 1989**, page 187

10. **Buechner, Howard A., Col., and Kapitan Wilhelm Bernhart, 1989**, page 220

11. **Buechner, Howard A., Col., and Kapitan Wilhelm Bernhart, 1989**, page 222

12. **Buechner, Howard A., Col., and Kapitan Wilhelm Bernhart, 1989**, page 228

13. *ibid.*

14. **Georg, Friedrich, 2008**, “Unternehmen Patentraub” 1945, *Die Geheimgeschichte des groessten Technologieraubs aller Zeiten*, pages 230-231, Grabert-Verlag, Tuebingen, Germany. Here Mr. Georg cites: RG38, Operations CNO, Records of the Office of the Chief of Naval, Office of Naval Intelligence,Naval Technical Mission to Europe, 1945-47, Entry 72, Box 15, (Serials and Enclosures 312 to 198) Serial 338.

15. **US Naval Technical Mission In Europe, released to the public April 22, 1996**, Technical Report No. 287-45 titled: *Tactical Planning For High Speed U-boats*, September 1945, pages 23-22 (page numbers problematic), US Naval Mission In Europe, C/o Floot Post Office, New York, N.Y., USA.

TESLA

There are several aspects of what are called here converted U-boats that involve the ideas Dr. Nikola Tesla. In fact, they all do in one way or another, to a greater or lesser extent. As an example and to introduce the reader to this way of thinking, perhaps it would be best to recount the conversation that first brought me to these ideas.

This was in the early 1990s. I had gone to a UFO conference with a friend who was also very much interested in German flying discs. My friend was an old hand at UFO conferences but this was my first one. It was held in a large meeting room of a hotel with several alcoves surrounding the main room. While walking through one of these alcoves my friend and I met a man known to my friend. We began talking for a moment when my friend excused himself, having to attend to some pressing. He told us both he would be back in a few minutes and suggested we settle into some sofas the hotel provided in the alcove. We sat down and my new acquaintance began talking.

He was an engineer or some sort of technician for a large aerospace company in Southern California. But he began the conversation by attempting to enlist me in aiding him recover some books and research material he had loaned our mutual friend. This was a little uncomfortable so I tried to change the subject. I brought up the video film we had just seen, “UFO Secrets of the 3rd Reich”, a production by Norbert Juergen-Ratthofer and Ralf Ettl.

Well, my new acquaintance liked the film and then began talking about one of the historical characters in the film, Dr. W.O. Schumann (incorrectly called “H.O. Schumann” in the film). He told me some interesting things that I had not heard before.

My new acquaintance told me that Dr. Schumann was primarily known for his work in radio frequency radiation. Seeing that I had no idea of who Dr. Schumann was outside the movie we had just seen, he went on. He told me that it was “this” Dr. Schumann who was responsible for “discovering” the Schumann Resonance. He explained that this resonance was like the ringing of a bell and the bell was planet earth. He said our planet “rings” within a narrow range of radio frequency energy like a bell. This was a natural phenomenon, caused by lightning strikes hitting our planet, worldwide and constantly. He said that the waves produced traveled right through the earth and rebounded at the surface, re-entering the earth again. The waves themselves, he said, were very, very long, called ELF waves or “extremely low frequency” waves.

My new acquaintance then went on to say that the Germans had built something similar to an ELF wave generator during the war but with waves that were only slightly shorter. I asked why they would do that? He told me that one transmitter could communicate with stations all over the world using these waves, or even under the sea. I repeated “even under the sea” and he said “yes” because the radio communications system built by the Germans using this long wave technology was purposefully designed to communicate with U-boats underwater anywhere in the world!

This was news to me and hard for me to accept. Seeing this, he went on saying that it was undoubtedly Dr. Schumann who had built this system for world wide U-boat communication and since it was intimately bound with the Schumann Resonance, he had probably known about that during the war, not when he published its presence in 1952. But then he said something that really got my attention.

My new aquaitance, the engineer or technician at an aerospace company, said that he thought the Germans used this same technology for charging the batteries of their U-boats. It is only a half step further, he explained. Instead of just receiving radio messages, why not set up transmission facilities and have the U-boat tow a wire antenna a mile or so long? The ELF waves themselves were so long that the waves were huge, stretching perhaps a mile from crest to valley, so that it would be necessary for a U-boat to tow an antenna at least half the length of the wave or possibly a multiple of the wave or half of it or a quarter of it, he did not know exactly. But the antenna would be long, trailing behind the U-boat. The Germans must have at least looked at this idea—this was originally a Tesla idea, he said.

The Americans are probably using this system right now, he said. I asked if the Americans got the information. “Oh, hell yes”, he said, “they got it right from the horse’s mouth—Dr. Schumann was brought over to the USA as a Paperclip scientist. We certainly got the long-wave communication system, he explained. “Our submarines have had it for years as do the Soviets.”

About this same time I had heard on talk radio. Here I must digress for a moment. This “talk radio” was that of the early 1990s before the special interest groups using their corporations bought out all radio descent and homogenized it into the “ditto heads” and “great Americans” we have today. All that talk radio is gone today. Anyway, during this memorable program, the conversation I heard then was of a electromagnetic propulsion system which was said to be used on some American “nuclear” submarines. Whoever this was talking (I never got the details) said this device worked under cover inside the engine room door of the submarine and was marked as “Danger-Nuclear Radiation”. It was quite a good cover.

Both these occurrences sparked my curiosity, and so being somewhat motivated, a check was made into the reality of the German long wave communication facilities. This existed. It was code named “Goliath” and was located near Berlin at Magdeburg. Rudolf Lusar describes it:

“Very Long Waves

> *Experiments with various wave-ranges showed that very long waves, those of about 28,000 m., can penetrate the surface of the sea to a depth of about 12 to 14 m., depending on the composition of the sea water. This fact was used to convey wireless messages to U-boats submerged at that depth. At fixed times, the situation permitting, the boats dived to that depth to receive instructions without being detected by enemy reconnaissance. The depth to be maintained by the boats was called "programme depth". The transmitter of this very long wave, "Goliath", was near Calbe, not far from Magdeburg; the transmitter and its secret fell into British hands. When the Russians occupied the Calbe area the Goliath transmitter installations had already been dismantled." (1)*

Having established that half of the basic idea—that of the communications system— was real, the next step would be to investigate the energy transmission system. For that we have to turn to the other half of the same technology used for the Goliath system, the energy transmission system, which was also invented by Tesla. Actually, they are almost the same thing; the objective is different so some of the tuning would be different.

This is not so much Tesla's transmission of energy through air that is under discussion but a similar system in which one terminal is grounded, thus transferring the energy right through the earth. Tesla found that very long waves transmitted through the earth would reach the other side and be reflected back to their point of origin. In fact, there is a completely natural radio frequency, about 8 cycles or Hertz (Hz), which does this every moment of every day. It is caused by the multiple thousands of lightning strikes hitting the earth, worldwide, and makes the earth "ring like a bell". Tesla's idea was to generate similar long waves at a period just on the return strike back at the point of origin on the earth. This is like pushing a child on a swing. At first a shove must be given but once the child is actively swinging, only a slight nudge needs to be given to maintain the height of the swing. Or, additional energy can be applied and the child will go even higher but since momentum has already been built up, no tremendous output of energy approaching the initial, first swing is necessary.

Since the transmitting device is timing each new input to coincide with the return beat bouncing off the earth at the other side of the world, a standing wave is formed. This is a wave that does not move. Imagine two pebbles being thrown into a pond a few feet apart, hitting at exactly the same moment. Waves would form from each pebble and intersect at the point half way between each. Where they intersect the waves overlap but just seem to stand there, not moving until the disturbance subsides. These are standing waves.

ELF waves can range from 3-30 Hz. The Germans used 15 to 60 kHz, centering on 16.55 kHz, on their Goliath communications system that is called a VLF transmitter, (VLF is for Very Low Wave). It had a maximum output of 1800kw and was the most powerful transmitter of its time (2). The US government and the Soviets used 50-85 Hz on their submarine communications (3). These are true ELF waves. They are also very long, sometimes spanning 28 km. (over 17 miles) in length or even more! This would mean an antenna used for their reception would normally have to be half that length or a resonant multiple of that length. This would mean an antenna of over two miles in length, at least.

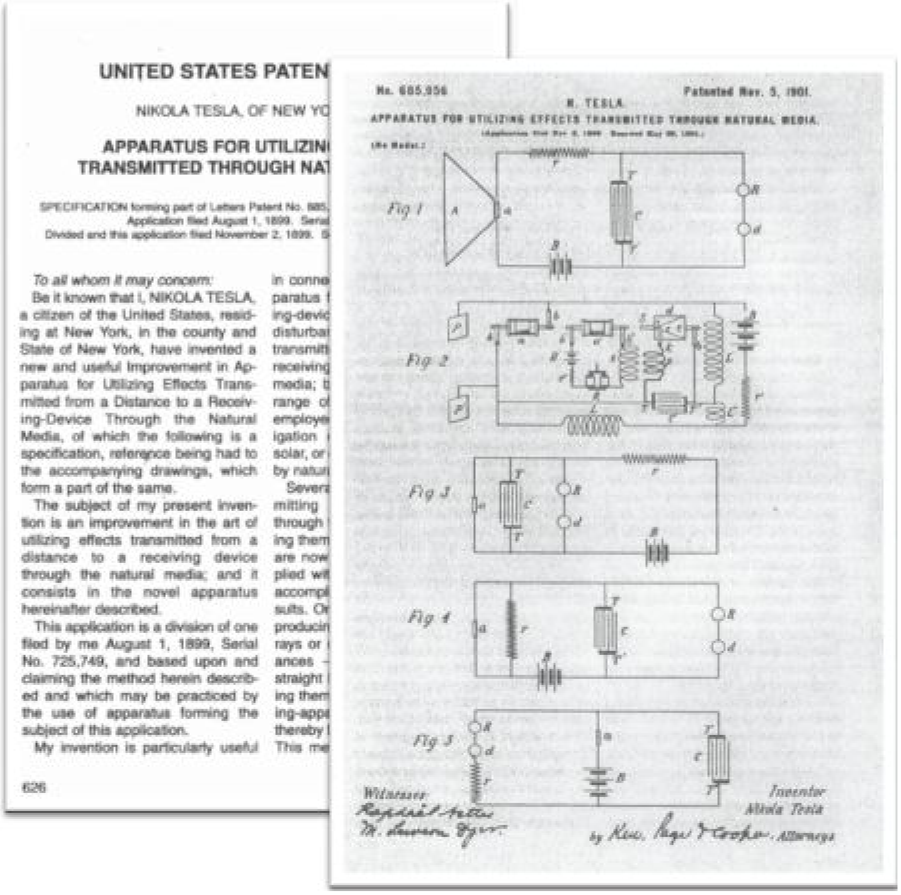

UNITED STATES PATEN

NIKOLA TESLA, OF NEW YO

APPARATUS FOR UTILIZIN
TRANSMITTED THROUGH NA

SPECIFICATION forming part of Letters Patent No. 685,
Application filed August 1, 1899. Seria
Divided and this application filed November 2, 1899. S

To all whom it may concern:

Be it known that I, NIKOLA TESLA, a citizen of the United States, residing at New York, in the county and State of New York, have invented a new and useful Improvement in Apparatus for Utilizing Effects Transmitted from a Distance to a Receiving-Device Through the Natural Media, of which the following is a specification, reference being had to the accompanying drawings, which form a part of the same.

The subject of my present invention is an improvement in the art of utilizing effects transmitted from a distance to a receiving device through the natural media; and it consists in the novel apparatus hereinafter described.

This application is a division of one filed by me August 1, 1899, Serial No. 725,749, and based upon and claiming the method herein described and which may be practiced by the use of apparatus forming the subject of this application.

My invention is particularly useful

in conne
paratus
ing-devic
disturba
transmitt
receiving
media; t
range o
employe
igation
solar, or
by natu
Severa
mitting
through
ing them
are now
plied wi
accompl
sults. O
producin
rays or
ances
straight
ing them
ing-appa
thereby
This me

626

No. 685,956. Patented Nov. 5, 1901.

N. TESLA.

APPARATUS FOR UTILIZING EFFECTS TRANSMITTED THROUGH NATURAL MEDIA.

(No Model.)

Tesla Patent Number 685,956: Apparatus for Utilizing Effects Transmitted through Natural Media. Tesla worked on ways to convert radio frequency waves, once received, into something which could be intelligently used. In other words, Tesla was looking to build a device which could convert radio waves originating from afar into signals or energy which could be used on the spot. He had several such patents.

Tesla designed the transmitter for these signals. The sender as well as a receiver (probably for communications) can be seen in his patent, patent number 787,412, of April 18, 1905 (4). Tesla's transmission work does not seem to have begun until his residence in the USA but a similar receiver to the American patent about was filed in Germany in 1901 as German Patent Nr.139-464 even though those records clearly state Tesla was living in New

York at the time. The receiver is important because Tesla devised a way to compact the antenna, not requiring miles and miles of wire in a straight line.

Tesla envisioned a transmission system in which any particular point on the earth could be instantly filled with energy. He even patented a method for controlling a boat on the ocean, even if the sender were on the other side of the earth (US Patent number 613.809, German Patent number 142 842). This is made possible as explained in this US Patent number 787,412 (referenced above) describing the “Art of Transmitting Electrical Energy Thorough the Natural Medium, in which he says:

> *“By impressing upon the earth two or more oscillations of different wave length a resultant stationary wave may be made to travel slowly over the globe, and thus a great variety of useful effects may be produced”*.

This means the standing wave could be moved anywhere on the surface of the earth, under control and at will.

But the most interesting Tesla patent for this discussion is his American Patent No. 685,012, issued October 22, 1901. This is a “Means for Increasing the Intensity of Electrical Oscillations (US Patent number 685,012, German Patent number 136 841). Tesla determined that to induce the greatest reaction in the receiver, the antenna, the inductance must be maximized and the resistance minimized. Tesla wanted to use a resonant receiver and depicts a coil wire that is identical to the coil wire used as a sender. The greatest reaction is achieved, according to Tesla, when there is a loose connection between resonant coils or in other words, if they are some distance apart. He called this a “freely-oscillating circuit”. Resistance in a wire can usually be overcome by simply using a thicker wire but Tesla determined this increase led to diminishing returns in some situations.

Instead, for this patent, Tesla chose to cool the sending and the receiving coils in a bath of liquid air. Tesla says:

> *"Briefly stated, then, my intention consists in producing a great increase in the intensity and duration of the oscillations excited in a freely-vibrating or resonating circuit by maintaining the same at a low temperature."*

Continuing this thought he says:

> *"My invention, it will be understood, does not primarily contemplate the saving of energy, but aims at the attainment of a distinctly novel and valuable result — that is, the increase to the greatest practical degree of the intensity and duration of free oscillations. This may be usefully applied in all cases when this special object is sought, but offers exceptional advantages in those instances in which the freely-oscillating discharges of a condenser are utilized."*

This invention is illustrated simply using a cut away drawing of an insulated (apparently wooden) tub in which a coil and antenna are mounted. The "tub" is probably a closed tank. In both tubs the coil is covered with liquid air. In this patent Tesla actually claims:

> *"In such as case the cooling of the conductor A, which may be effected in any suitable manner, results in an extraordinary magnification of the oscillation in the resonating-circuit B..." (5)*

Tesla writer George Trinkaus credits Tesla with the early work on superconductivity with this invention. He says:

> *"Prior to recent breakthroughs, superconductivity and supermagnetism were low-temperature (cryogenic) phenomena, occurring when circuits were cooled down to near absolute zero. The new superconductivity at least drastically reduced temperatures developed out of the cryogenic work of the last twenty years, and this may be in debt to Tesla, who patented a similar idea way back in 1901. Tesla's patent observes that the deep cooling of conductors with agents like liquid air 'results in an extraordinary magnification of the oscillation in the resonating circuit.' Imagine the performance of a supercooled Tesla coil." (6)*

Liquid air is something in which the Germans of this period were very interested. Liquid air will be taken up later but here we should realize that the Linde method for making liquid air was just coming into its own, the Germans were manufacturing quantities of it and looking around for additional applications of this technology. Foremost among these was the Reichsarbeitsgemeinschaft, the Reichs Works Agency, which looked for alternative sources of energy for Germany before the war. They discussed applications for liquid air technology (7).

According to electrical engineer Toby Grotz, Tesla's electrical distribution system could be up to 90-94% efficient as opposed to 70-74% for standard, hard-wired systems, the difference being in the resistance of the wires themselves in the hard-wired system (8).

The question I have is *was there enough energy in these long wave transmissions to be of practical value in charging up a U-boat's batteries?* If this is true, and there was enough energy, then why not take matters one step further and tap the best ELF wave generator, the earth itself? Tesla did extensive experiments with lightning in mind and so knew precisely that it was lightning striking and “ringing” the earth that caused these huge, low frequency, long waves to rebound again and again beneath the earth’s outer shell. Tesla describes bouncing waves off the other side of the earth, the characteristics of those waves for energy transmission in his US patent number 787,412 which certainly should have given Dr. W.O. Schumann who was investigating this problem some important ideas:

> *“Second: It is necessary to employ oscillations in which the rate of radiation of energy into space in the form of Hertzian or electro-magnetic waves is very small. To give an idea, I would say that the frequency should be smaller than twenty thousand per second, though shorter waves might be practicable. The lowest frequency would appear to be six per second, in which case there will be but one node, at or near the ground-plate, and, paradoxically as it may seem, the effect will increase with the distance and will be greatest in a region diametrically opposite the transmitter. With oscillations still slower the earth, strictly speaking, will not resonate, but simply act as a capacity, and the variation of potential will be more or less uniform over its entire surface.”*

Electrical engineer Tobly Grotz connects Tesla to the basic understanding of the Schumann Resonance:

> *“Although it was not until 1954-1959 when experimental measurements were made of the frequency that is propagated in the resonant cavity surrounding the Earth, recent analysis shows that it was Nikola Tesla who, in 1899, first noticed the existence of stationary waves in the Schumann cavity. Tesla’s experimental measurements of the wavelength and frequency involved closely match Schumann’s theoretical calculations. Some of his observations were made in 1899 while Tesla was monitoring the electromagnetic radiations due to*

> *lightning discharges in a thunderstorm which passed over is Colorado Springs laboratory.”(9)*

Could not have a machine been constructed to receive these ELF waves, even if at another frequency after being bounced around inside the earth, and combine them into one stream of electrical energy suitable for charging the batteries of a U-boat? This might be done using a series of antenna able to receive waves coming in at different directions as they bounce around the earth’s interior like pin-pong balls and perhaps at slightly differing wavelengths. The rectifying device would then combine these waves, now turned into electrical impulses, into one stream of energy in a diode-like device that merges two such streams together as two roads become a one-way street. But this is not such a simple question since there are several factors involved. Tesla says:

> *“The intensity of the effect of a transmitting-circuit with a free or elevated terminal is proportionate to the quantity of electricity displaced which is determined by the product of the capacity of the circuit, the pressure, and the frequency of the currents employed.” (10)*

Tesla built a small capacity unit, charged as much as possible with a rounded sending antenna in his final patent for this type of device (number 1,119,782). In the case of the lightning-driven Schumann Resonance, the capacity of the circuit is the earth itself that seems vast, at least to me. The “pressure” is the lightning itself, again seeming very strong. It is only the frequency of the wave itself that must remain low. The feasibility of actually using the Schumann Resonance is something for physicists and engineers to figure out but the Germans must have at least considered this on some level. And likewise, they must have considered using either the Goliath system or some other similar system to charge up those U-boat batteries using a Tesla or Tesla-like system.

Returning to artificially transmitting long waves, the Goliath facility used 15 to 25 kHz, longer waves than real ELF waves but sufficient to communicate with submerged U-boats worldwide. Since this sufficed and the frequency was higher (see above comments of Tesla). Was this sufficient for the transmission of energy?

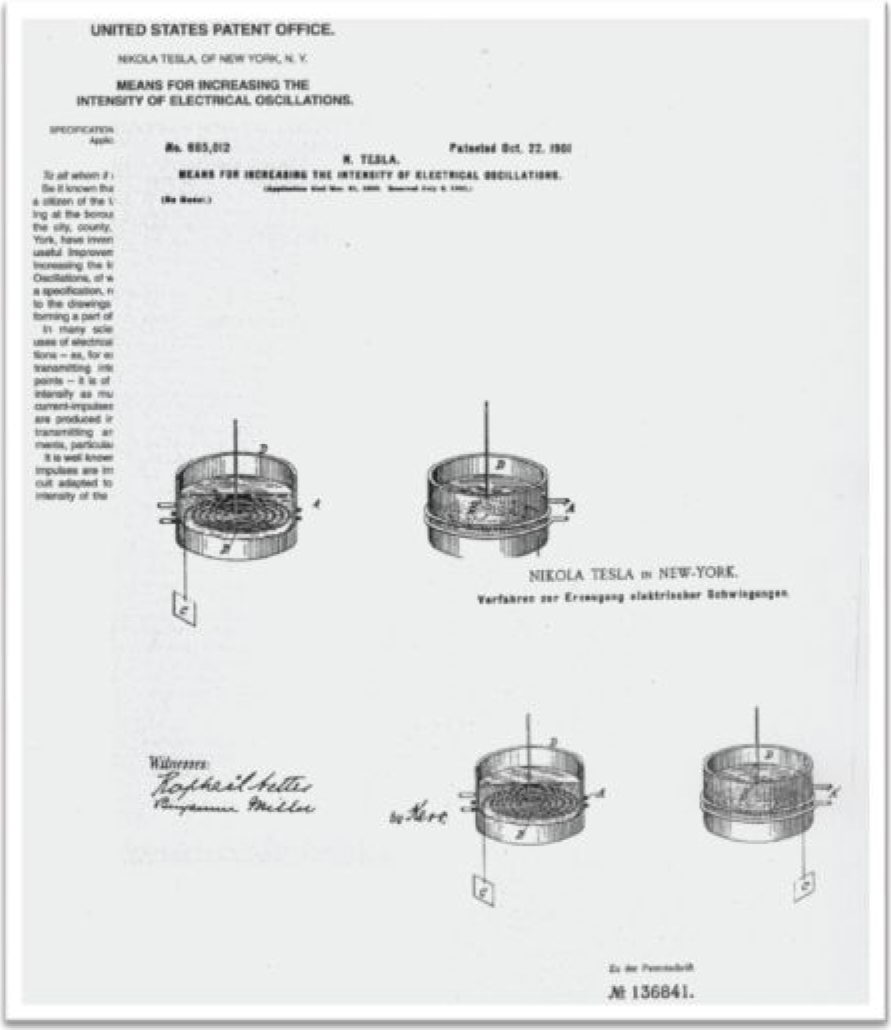
UNITED STATES PATENT OFFICE.
NIKOLA TESLA, OF NEW YORK, N. Y.
MEANS FOR INCREASING THE INTENSITY OF ELECTRICAL OSCILLATIONS.
No. 685,012
Patented Oct. 22, 1901
N. TESLA.
MEANS FOR INCREASING THE INTENSITY OF ELECTRICAL OSCILLATIONS.
NIKOLA TESLA in NEW-YORK.
Verfahren zur Erzeugung elektrischer Schwingungen
№ 136841.

Tesla's American and German patents for increasing the signal of incident radio frequency radiation. The American and German patents are identical. They use a liquid gas to super-cool a coil antenna—in this case, liquid air.

We know there was another ELF wave generator in Germany but the dates given for it were apparently wrong. This was a facility that has been recently detected under Berlin's Tempelhof Airport. This was code-named "TeddyBaer" or "Teddybear" in English. The problem is the source seems to think this facility was built by the Americans in the 1980's and used in Cold War espionage *(http://www.fosar-bludorf.com/Tempelhof/)*.

But there is another possibility for a huge ELF wave generator. ELF waves can be made using a loop antenna. In other words a huge coil wire can be laid down on the earth and made to generate ELF waves. There was such a huge coil wire, both at Teddybaer and at another facility, this time one that was of wartime vintage. This was the strange circular facility lying under the earth at Ohrdruf. The outline of this facility is still visible from the air in the same way as archaeology uses aerial surveying to locate ancient earth works. And since the purpose of this book is to investigate unsolved Nazi mysteries, Dr. Axel Stoll, a geophysicist, is going to be quoted, full-force, after which we can consider implications for U-boats. (My translation):

> *"In my view, and in this I am not alone, it is that point number 5 (exotic UFO propulsion manipulating space and time) (translator's note: from points made by Dr. Stoll on previous page) has been solved by German scientists during the time of the Third Reich. That also speaks to, among other things, H. Faeth discussing for the first time, respectively, the Germans carrying out the Thuringian "Manhattan Project" during the Second World War; the creation of a German atomic weapon. In Jonastal by Arnsadt, respectively, in the region of the troop exercise yard at Ohrdruf, is found deep in the shell limestone, openly, a huge particle accelerator facility. Auto engines, among other things, stop, still, when traveling in a determined area (Dr. Stoll references and early chapter: see Chapter 4 Physical Phenomena). Pictures taken from the air rove that the arrangement of this facility resembles a Celtic cross or the symbol of the Black Sun. The symbol of the Black Sun one can view beautifully in Wewelsburg (Himmler's castle) in the "Gruppenfuehrer-Room". There is a strong suspicion*

> *that the facility mentioned was not simply interested in German atomic research, on the contrary that it served for the purpose of time and space manipulation. In other words, one worked on the problem of time-trips and the accompanying possibility of surmounting the speed of light. Just as well, the development and production of electromagnetic waves may have been researched. (Dr. Stoll references: Bearden, 1996, and the appendix of his book). I am convinced of the actuality that the last sentence may sound unbelievable to the uninitiated. Those who, however, occupy themselves with this problematic firmly assert that the German scientists and technicians must have reached important major progress as is generally conceded. In order to, for example, manipulate space and time (one can create or obliterate space and time) an electromagnetic longitudinal wave must be generated (the normal situation as, for instance, light and others are electromagnetic transverse waves). These longitudinal waves move straight through the body of the earth and the oceans and would be able, at once, to obliterate numerous targets. Therefore, these are extraordinarily interesting for high-tech weapons utilization." (11)*

Well, OK! The reader has been given a good, big dose of very exotic German high technology by one of the few doctors licensed to prescribe it. Recovering from this high-tech infusion, it can be seen that our concern, ELF wave generation, is not really a huge problem and fits right in here. What is meant is that here at Ohrdruf we have a large particle accelerator, at the disposal of researchers. To accelerate a particle to near-light speeds the forces of magnetic attraction and repulsion are put into play. But just as in a rail gun, this may not have been done with magnets. Instead, large electric cables follow the track to be taken by the accelerated particle. One cable sends electricity of a suitable character in one direction while its neighbor on the other side of the particle's pathway sends electricity the opposite direction. A cross section of the cable would show an outward spiraling of the cable's magnetic field. Since each cable is going the opposite direction, the particle is being squeezed by opposing magnetic poles faster and faster as it travels down its pathway. But even if electromagnets were used in the instance of the particle accelerator, the electric wiring described would be in place to charge them up. This “electric wiring” would be in the form of a large loop.

Since the large looping cable, the antenna, is already in place, all that would need to be done is to turn off one cable. Now electricity is being pumped at tremendous pressure one way around the track, generating a powerful electromagnetic wave. With some tuning, a sufficing wave could be generated with which to test the feasibility of charging the batteries of a U-boat on the other side of the planet, if not actually do this on a regular basis.

We are going to see the hand of Tesla again, at almost every step of the discussion concerning fantastic U-boat propulsion but first we are going to discuss one Tesla-free U-boat option.

Literature Cited

1. **Lusar, Rudolf, 1964**, *German Secret Weapons of the Second World War*, page 211, J.F. Lehmans Verlag, Munich, Germany

2. Goliath Transmitter, Wikipedia, *http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Goliath_transmitter*

3. Communication with Submarines, Wikipedia, *http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Commu-nication_with_submarines*

4. **Ferzak, Franz (production) and Ulrich Heerd (editor), 2000**, *Nikola Tesla Collected German and American Patents*, pages 645 -653, MVV Peiting, Peiting, Germany ISBN 3-89539-246-4

5. These quotes can be found in the book referenced in (4), all under the individual patents referenced in the text.

6. **Trinkaus, George, 1988**, *Tesla The Lost Inventions*, page 10, High Voltage Press, Portland, Oregon, USA

7. **Taeufer, Johannes, 1930**, “Vrill, Die Cosmische Urkraft Widergeburt von Atlantis”, page 18, Astrologischer Verlag Wilhelm Becker, Berlin-Stegilitz, Germany

8. **Grotz, Toby, E.E., date unknown**, *Wireless Transmission Of Power Resonating Planet Earth*, as appears in *The Tesla Papers Nikola Tesla on Free Energy & Wireless Transmission of Power*, 2000, as

edited by David Hatcher Childress, Adventures Unlimited Publishing, Kempton, Illinois, USA

9. *ibid.*

10. **Tesla, Nikola, 1914**, *Apparatus For Transmitting Electrical Energy*, US Patent number 90,245, page one, US Patent Office, contained in Nikola Tesla Collected German And American Patents, see Ferazk, Franz, above.

11. **Stoll, Axell, Ph.D., 2001**, *Hochtechnologie im Dritten Reich Reichsdeutsche Entwicklungen und die vermutlich wahre Herkunft der, "UFOs"*, pages 106, 107, Amun Verlag, Schleusingen, Germany

LIKE WALTER-PROPULSION ONLY BETTER?

Like Walter-propulsion, only better! Well, this is the claim of a few Reich insiders regarding a new and totally unknown type of U-boat propulsion which resembles the Walter systems, but is better. These same Reich insiders also claim that at least one such U-boat was built and put to sea.

Like many other things in this book, the legend starts off as a description in a “novel” by Wilhelm Landig, in this case “Wolfzeit um Thule”, as the ultimate Reich insider, the Deepthroat of Nazi Germany, begins telling us of the German Navy’s most highly guarded secret. There is a great deal of translation for this and the subsequent sources, so please bear with me. Landig begins:

> *“Then there existed a further U-boat, a completely new, three thousand ton boat type, which was fitted with a two-turbine composition as power plant and had a 50-man crew. They were placed under the strictest security, since they did not make use of the hitherto means of operation. A completely new kind of fuel was filled into bottles and put under pressure. The method of propulsion was a substance that oxidized in the presence of oxygen. When mixed with seawater, this new substance effervesced and the oxyoid-sea water-compound was blasted under enormous pressure into the turbines at six hundred atmospheres. Out from there the mixture was led through a diversion, first through a regenerator and then to a separation process with which reclaimed oxygen was again conducted back to the U-boat. The remaining substance was then conducted through a hollow shaft to the ship’s screws. Through the taking of the mist from the ship’s screws through a suction effect the speed can be increased. With the freely working ship’s screws the new boat-type made 75 knots underwater.*

> *And with the help of the reclaimed oxygen it was even possible to travel underwater for a year. Such a salt or carbide-like substance functions in chambers that are adjustable. A very small amount suffices to turn the turbines. The traveling speed is regulated through an adjustable valve. These boats with the completely new type of propulsion were the most highly guarded secrets of the German Navy and would have to be withdrawn at the attack of the enemy. U-558 of this new series had a mechanical breakdown upon a special sortie near Iceland and disappeared. The aforementioned number of the series (meaning U-558: translator's. note) occurs no more anywhere again, just as infrequently as other numbers…"(1)*

Next we turn to O. Bergmann. This genre of exotic, strange and mysterious U-boats is one of Bergmann's specialties. He tells us why all this confusion concerning the numbering of U-boats was necessary and then adds some additional information to this specific account:

> *"In order to out-perform enemy espionage and organized treason, it can be given out that at the time official German statements about depth of dive, horse power, knots, and so on, were simply underestimated. Therefore, also again and again differences are to be determined between statements from unseized data as they are to understand in the technical literature on one side, and records of reports of experienced witnesses of individual U-boat men of the other side. Here is an example…"*

Before reviewing Bergmann's example we should be aware that after the war this practice, which I call "undervaluation", was continued and almost a policy set in stone among the former Allied Powers, especially the Americans. This had to have been at first a purely propagandistic practice, since the Allies did not want to admit that the Germans had technology and machines that could greatly outperform their own (2). It may have also been a part of Cold War strategy, in which one power, having gained a full measure of a new technology, sought to undervalue it in the eyes of its competitor. Returning again to Bergmann:

> *"In the general U-boat literature in the class VIIC U-558 belongs and is named, led by Captain Krech, which on July 20, 1943 off Northern Spain, northwest from Cape Ortegal was scuttled after and attacked from the air. In the minutes register submitted by a Marine, Franz We…(Translation note: here Bergmann references Geheim Wunderwaffen, Book I, page 47 which will also be reviewed later in this treatment). His U-558 does not belong to the VIIC class, was not commanded by Captain Krecht, on the contrary by Captain zur See Schermann. It was not scuttled near Ortegal but sank after mechanical failure near Iceland, and found itself in a U-boat assembly under Korv. Captain Moehle, who was most probably bound for Mar del Platta, Argentina with the aim of withdrawing it from circulation. On the basis of other reports we know today, for example that the numbers of scuttled boats were renewed and taken over by the revolutionary new boats, so it must have been in the case of U-558, but most probably only when these new boats with their re-renewed numbers would no longer engage in general war sorties, but were instead brought to a whole new destiny. The U-boat described by Franz We… had two turbine components with 12,000 horsepower each and attained a still not to be found speed of 75 knots and had a Walter-type but till better propulsion. The U-558 commanded by Krecht was already lost in the summer of 1943 while Franz We… explained:.' …still in the year 1943' (which means the year's end) we took over the new boat with the number U-558." (3)*

Now we can go to the reference cited by Bergmann, that of D. H. Haarmann in the first of his "Geheim Wunderwaffen" series. Here we finally get to meet Franz We… Haarmann explains to us:

“Definitive eye witness reports from the last years of the war concerning the propulsion method of the most secret U-boat types, with declarations which in the general U-boat literature are no doubt hard to find. In order not to receive any legal, patent difficulties, some technical declarations are altered.

Transcript of a conversation that took place on March 22, 1980 in Klausenleopoldsdorf, a part of which, also on tape recording, is taken.

Present: Rudolf J. Mund; Franz We…; Karl La…; . Mr. W. handed over four photos: two are photos of a U-boat. One photo of him in uniform with his father in civilian clothes and one picture of him in a circle of his comrades.

Mr. W…reported the following as a former Marine; ‘ I reported for duty to the recruit company in the year 1943 to Biels. Later I was transferred to Neustadt in Holstein—to ULD, that is the Lehr Division. There Korv. Captain Moehle was already our commandant. We were there trained on 20 boat, that is 2,500 ton boats. From there we were transferred to Kiel and took over a boat there that we generally did not know. That was still in the year 1943. By means of a dive-saver (Drager Tauchretter) (this is perhaps a rebreathing device, I do not know—translator) I gained admission to the boat. If I had been caught, I would have been hanged. (Two photos of the Krupp-dockyard).

In the Krupp works we took possession of this boat. It was a 3,000-ton boat, and that was a big boat, with a 50-man crew and two-turbine *composition, each 12,000 horse power. It was driven by a substance that was oxidized in oxygen. It was three…which oxidized with a sea water mixture blown up like a spray. This oxidation -seawater compound was blown under enormous pressure, 600 atmospheres, in the turbines. From there the mixture was led over a diversion through a…, there separated and the reclaimed oxygen again led back into the boat.*

The remaining substance was led through a hollow shaft to the ships screw. By suction effect we took away the mist from the ship's screws so we could travel faster. The ship's screws could work better because they had no suction-effect. Yes, and there we made 75 nautical miles under water. With the oxygen that was reclaimed we would have been able to travel for a year underwater (remain underwater). It was a waste of time to return back for fuel. The fuel was in cylinder bottles. They were equipped with a pressure seal. The substance looked so similar to... in its structure. This (substance) was carried back in chambers that were adjustable. The amount that was inducted amounted to, at the most, a half a thimble with was blown to the turbines.

I do not know if they had ever seen that before. It was a whole wall full of valves. Depending upon traveling speed we have to adjust. If one wanted to go 'full speed' one had to put everything down and open the suction valves. Thereby, one had gotten the most water and most fuel. The boat drew itself up and took off.

Question: How large was the effective range? Yes, it was 12-15,000 nautical miles but when we had more bottles on board… One would not know how many bottles there were on board. Only the Captain

> *knew, that for us, was secret. Because, at any time, the more bottles on board so much more dangerous would be the situation. That was not a normal boat. Only just in captivity we learned that the boat would explode if water were to force its way in. For this reason, prior (than in captivity) because to Iceland the Captain had scuttled the boat as we were on the trip to Argentina.*
>
> *The boat had mechanical failure prior to Iceland. A broken shaft had to be welded. For that purpose the boat had to half-surface and was, therefore, capable of maneuvering. The Captain of the boat was Scher …Captain zur See. The whole flotilla was led by Krov. Captain Moehle.*
>
> *We wanted to run to Argentina. We had crates on board which we were to deliver. We were to have run to Mar del Plata; there we were to deliver the crates and would have gone into captivity or internment. What happened to the boat, I do not know. We traveled as U-558, 26 Tb (type), 1000 registered gross tons displacement (3,000 tons), 50-man crew, we were the 5th Seal -Kiel. U-558 under Scher…*
>
> *You will see that U-558 nowhere in a database. You will find 522, 527 then 600. Nowhere U-558. ” (4)*

If the three accounts are combined, well, this all adds up to quite a tale. U-boats that were scuttled by the Germans had their U-boat number re-issued to fool Allied intelligence. A new type of propulsion system, *like the standard Walter system but better*, had been developed and installed into one of these phantom (or perhaps “black”) U-boats. The new propellant was stored in bottles held in chambers within the U-boat’s hull. Most shockingly, this U-boat was of the Type XXVI, which had not officially ever gotten wet!

Is there any confirmation for this tale? There are some clues that support two of these claims. The first is regarding the existence of a new type of fuel which, though perhaps not identical to the “substance” described above, did possess some similarities. The second concerns a strange U-boat diagram. For the fuel we will turn to a standard source of information on German wartime technology, engineer Rudolf Lusar, who spent the war years in the German Patent Office and has published a book, with many subsequent editions and upgrades, about this technology and weaponry.

Lusar speaks to us in this context not of U-boat propulsion but of a new means of powering torpedoes. Professor Walter worked on both. The question is whether this type of propulsion could be used for other purposes besides torpedoes.

> *“Towards the end of the war a torpedo was being tested which, powered by back-thrust propulsion, was to have reached a speed of 60 knots. Professor Walter, when starting his tests in 1933, had the idea of developing a back-thrust propulsion torpedo but shelved the tests to investigate take-off aids for aircraft. During he war, however, the tests were resumed. Hydrogen peroxide (H2O2) and a fuel (e.g. diesel fuel) (water being added for cooling purposes) were burnt in a combustion chamber without steam generator and converted into a useful pressure. After intensive tests a new fuel, “Helman” -a hydrazine hydrate fuel mixture -was used, which could, however, be stored for a few weeks only and had to be injected shortly before the launching to the torpedo. These gas compounds were at first use in a piston engine and their effect fell short of expectations; therefore turbine was chosen which supplied 500 PS (horsepower) at 30,000 r.p.m, generating a pressure of 40 atmospheres at a temperature of 500 to 550 C. These torpedoes*

> *had a speed of more than 50 nautical miles per hour and a range of 20,000 meters. Torpedoes with pure jet propulsion had only a short range. The course of these two torpedoes was not given away by bubble trails, as those particles of the combustion gas which were not absorbed by water made bubbles on the surface which were imperceptibly small." (5)*

The new propellant, "Helman", does not exactly correspond with the "substance" described earlier, the strange new fuel described in the report of Franz We…, but it is similar. It is said to be a hydrazine hydrate, N2H4. We have already seen this formula once in reference to German flying discs (*cf* my book on that subject) as it was said to have been the fuel used in one F.B.I. account that was provided by a prisoner of war (6). It was also designated "B-Stoff" by the Germans, and when mixed with methanol (wood alcohol) designated "M-Stoff", and whith water designated "C-Stoff" *(http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Hyrazine)*. C-Stoff was mixed with "T-Stoff" (80% concentrated hydrogen peroxide, 20% oxyquinoline) in the combustion chamber of the famous Messerschmitt Me 162 B rocket interceptor *(http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/List_of_Stoffs)*.

We are looking for something a little more, though—a fuel which can be stored and is in a more solid form. There are two derivatives of hydrazine that might interest us. The first is monomethyl hydrazine. This is another rocket fuel and is said to be "stable enough to be used in regeneratively cooled rocket engines" *(http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Monomethyl_hydrate)*. The second is 1,1-Dimethylhydrazine (UDMH). It is also a stable rocket fuel that can be kept loaded in fuel systems for long periods of time *(http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/DMH)*. The increased stability of the second option sounds more like the "substance" we're looking for, but our substance is apparently a solid or at least has the consistency of paste.

Constituting as solid or semi-solid may not be a problem. Remember dynamite? It is composed of a very unsafe, unstable fluid called nitroglycerin. It is a great explosive, but like our hydrazine it is hard to work with. Alfred Nobel simply soaked clay or sawdust with nitroglycerin and made dynamite, incorporating the explosive properties of nitroglycerin in a form that could be more safely handled by people. What I am suggesting is that something similar happened with the German's hydrazine compound.

Now let us turn to the ship, the phantom U-558 itself. This was a big boat. What could it have been? Again, we can turn to Lusar for some general information.

> *"While these boats were under construction bigger boats, too, were begun, the "U-796 and "U-797" (type XVIII), which had a displacement of 1,485/1,650 tons, were 40.7 m long and 6.2 m in the beam. They were to have been powered by a 2,000 PS (this means horsepower but left in the original German abbreviation) diesel engine for surface travel and two 7,500 PS (horsepower) Walter turbines with reduction gears for underwater operations. Their speed would have been 17.5 knots on the surface and 24 to 25 knots submerged. The boats were intended for operations in the Atlantic and were expected to be commissioned in 1945. A further order was placed for 100 boats, the "U-4501" to "U-4600", to be powered by 7,500 PS Walter engines (type XXVI), but this order was canceled shortly after construction had begun. " (7)*

The type XVIII was certainly big enough. Franz We… says, however, that his U-558 was a type 26 (type XXVI). But as far as conventional history goes, it was not the type XVIII that was the prototype for the type XXVI, it was the type XVII B (8). The type XVII B consisted of three prototypes, U-1405, U-1406, and U-1407. All had "conventional" Walter-type hydrogen peroxide engines. The type 17 B was made possible by fitting older U-boats, U-794 and U-792, for instance, with the Walter engine.

So, Franz We… could be correct if there was another kind of type XXVI U-boat which was designed for another type of engine. I don't know if this would be the type XVIII or not but it would require a prototype if German consistency counts, and that prototype would be first a reconditioned boat or at least a boat which was unexpected as a prototype by Allied intelligence. Perhaps a boat reported and accepted as scuttled by the Allies?

There is something very odd which appears in Eberhard Roessler's Geschichte des deutschen U-Bootbaus (The History of German U-boat Construction). This book is a two-volume U-boat bible. It is one of those painstakingly researched, carefully written, fully illustrated with diagrams and pictures, lifetime work of the author (9). There is a section of this book that describes U-boat Projects with "Kreislauf-Antrieb". Kreislauf is another word for the Draeger System of oxygen recycling in which oxygen is added to the intake of a diesel engine, the exhaust from this is filtered removing the carbon dioxide, cooled and ducted to the intake where it is again enriched with oxygen. The air goes around and around, hence the name "Kreislauf" or circularity running. The reader might remember from the introductory words of this system that it was worked on, abandon, and constantly brought up again during the war but the performance of this method was disappointing in terms of power output. Regarding the future of this method, Eberhard Roessler states:

> *"A further improvement of the Kreislauf propulsion concerning U-boats could only still be expected with an oxygen generator on board." (10)*

But in this discussion, it even seems to get more implausible. This new type 26 K, which had to be a world-beater at this point in the war, with the "Kreislauf" (Draeger oxygen rebreathing) propulsion system is to store its oxygen, not as liquid oxygen as usually depicted in this system, but as compressed gas stored bottles, stored in chambers, in the hull of the vessel.

We are all familiar with this method. Compressed bottles of air are what scuba divers use. How long do they stay down with two bottles? Perhaps two hours? Even using pure oxygen, given a diesel engine of over 1000-horse power and running at least 450°F, as opposed to slightly less than 100°F for a human, how many hours could such an oxygen supply last? Maybe this system was just to be used for underwater travel. But then where are the hundreds and hundreds of gallons of diesel fuel stored? The reader might think that this U-boat is getting bigger with each consideration. But this is not necessarily the case, since a diagram does exist which shows exactly how this Type XXVI U-boat with its oxygen bottles would have appeared.

Roessler's depiction of the Type XXVI K Kreislauf boat comes complete with rows of bottles stored in chambers. Of course Roessler himself said this could not have worked, since the available storage area would have been simply too small. Then why did he create the diagram? Surely the concept-level engineers involved would have, at first blush, disregarded this idea for the Type XXVI out of hand. Yes, there was a discussion of larger boat using this method of storage—in particular, a Type XXIX K was mentioned. But this does not get the Type XXVI K diagram off the hook, so to speak.

The only rational explanation is that this diagram of a Type XXVI U-boat would not have carried atmospheric oxygen in its bottles. On the contrary, the only explanation that suffices is that in these bottles something was carried that served as a fuel, but that "something" is never stated, not in the diagram and not by Roessler. The only thing which fits this scenario is the description given above by Franz We… of a very different type of fuel, mixed with sea water and possibly a derivative of hydrazine. The records of this fuel, along with those of the German U-boat that used it have simply vanished from conventional history.

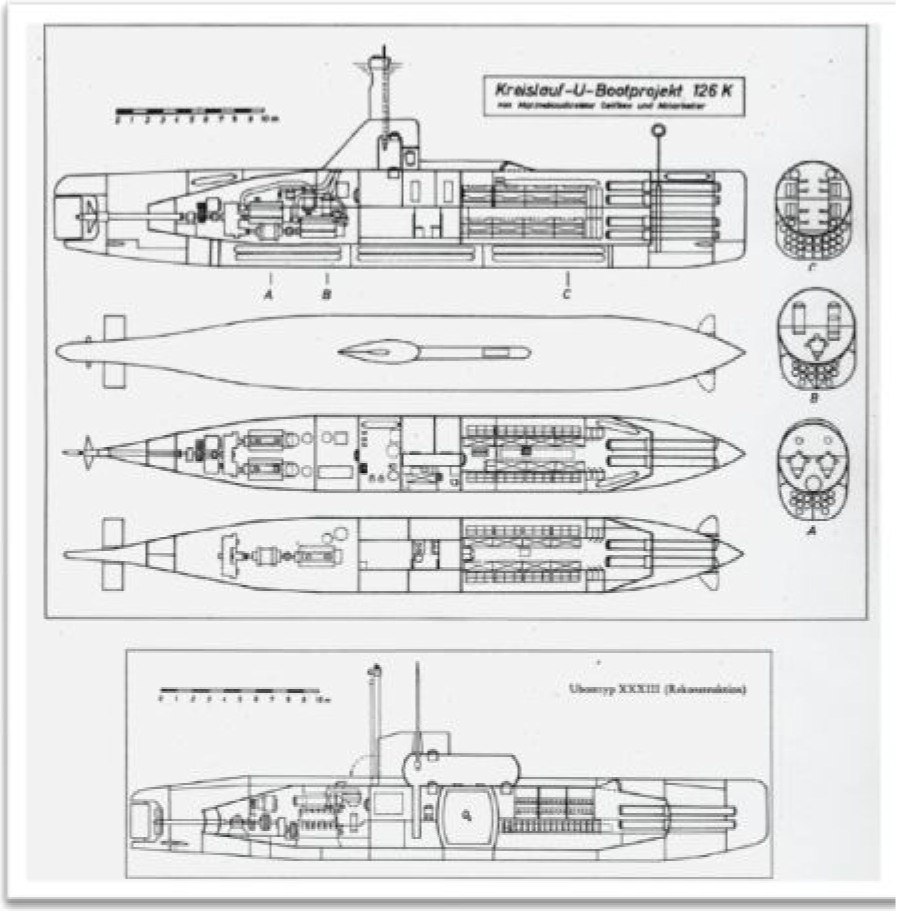
Kreislauf-U-Bootprojekt 126 K
A
B
C
Uboottyp XXXIII (Rekonstruktion)

Walter-like Propulsion Only Better? This is a strange diagram of a proposed Type 126K U-boat. It is shown as a "Kreislauf" design, meaning it carried oxygen, but this was not in the conventional design using a single large flask. Instead, this design used many small bottles stored below the living compartments. Was this explanation the forerunner or a cover for another system using a complete fuel stored in the same way as described in the text? Below is another design featuring the standard single-flask design for oxygen.

Literature Cited

1. **Landig, Wilhelm, 1980**, *Wolfzeit um Thule*, pages 14 and 15, Volkstum-Verlag Wilhelm Landig, Vienna, Austria.

2. **Stevens, Henry, 2007**, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science and Technology*, pages 6-17 "The Stonewall and Undervaluation", Adventures Unlimited Publishing, Kempton, Illinois, USA

3. **Bergmann, O., 1988**, *I Deutsche Flugscheiben und U-Boote Ueberwachen Die Weltmeere*, page 6, Hugin Gesellschaft Fuer Politisch-Philosophische Studien E.V., Wetter/Ruhr, Germany

4. **Haarmann, D. H., 1983**, *Geheim Wunderwaffen Zerrbild zwischen Taeuschung und Tatsachen*, pages 47, 48 and 49, Hugin Sesellschaft Fuer Politisch-Philosophische Studien E.V., Wetter, Germany

5. **Lusar, Rudolf, 1964**, *German Secret Weapons of the Second World War*, page 212, Neville Spearman, London, UK

6. **Stevens, Henry, 2003**, *Hitler's Flying Saucers*, page 216, Adventures Unlimited Publishing, Kempton, Illinois, USA

7. **Lusar, Rudolf, 1964**, page 205

8. **US Naval Technial Mission In Europe, Technical Report Nol 287-45, 1945**, c/o Floot Post Office, NY., N.Y., USA, obtained

though USAF, Wright-Patteson AFB, USA

9. **Roessler, Eberhard, 1996**, *Geschichte des deutschen U-bootbaus Band 2 Entwicklung, Bau und Eigenschaften der deutschen U-Boote von 1943 bis heute*, pages 447-448, Bernard & Graefe Verlag, Augsburg, Germany

10. **Roessler, Eberhard, 1996**, page 449

Tesla’s Self-Acting Engine, Part One

Nikola Tesla discusses this concept at some length that will be reviewed. The idea that this system might have been used by the Germans in World War Two for U-boat propulsion was brought to us by William R. Lyne. In fact, he seems to describe three different types of electrical propulsion that were (possibly) used in exotic U-boats without separating them from one another, distinctly. His sources for this information are a man from Virginia named Dort, a man with whom Bill is acquainted whose initials are P.M., and what he heard in military intelligence on the subject. Bill was kind enough to correspond with me, explaining these issues beyond what has been printed in his books. Since Mr. P.M. was named only in private correspondence, his initials will have to suffice for now as he is probably still living and may not want to see his name mentioned here. Bill believes another informant, Mr. Dort, then in his eighties circa 1980, is dead by now but I do not have his first name. Bill tells us that Mr. Dort’s father developed the Tesla engine under discussion here and that it was used by the Germans in a U-boat. Bill Lyne discusses all three systems together, and, evidently, he thinks they could have been used in combination, one adding to and reinforcing another. The first system, Tesla’s broadcast system, has already been discussed so we are moving to the Dort machine.

This machine was an electrical generator but a very unusual one as it relied on liquid air for fuel. In conception, the electrical generator (Dort machine) is coupled with a Linde ice machine. The Linde unit had been invented in Tesla’s time and was in use worldwide. It had the ability to cool air down to the point where it liquefied. As we know, the Germans had great plans for liquid air and made a great quantity of it. The importance of liquid air in the scheme of things is made clear by the fact that liquid air and the Linde method are the only other energy yielding systems discussed by the “Reichsarbeitsgemeinschaft”, (Reich Works Association) the pre-Nazi organization charged with making Germany energy independent (1).

German engineer Dr. Carl Paul Gottfried von Linde invented his refrigeration unit in the early 1870s. The Linde “ice machine” might be explained starting as follows: A bank of hollow, refrigeration coils is placed in the space to be cooled. These pipes are filled with a special fluid whose boiling point is lower than the temperature of the space to be cooled so that this special fluid is turned into a gas, absorbing it as the heat of vaporization, while passing through the coils inside this space. This subtracts heat from the space to be cooled. The gas is pumped into a compressor and then discharged into cooling tubes. In a U-boat both the compressor and the cooling tubes would be cooled by incoming seawater. At any depth this water would be no no warmer than 38-40°F or about 5°C and could be even colder than this. The heat of vaporization would be transferred to this seawater and the gas would become a liquid again. This water would be ejected and since the U-boat is moving, no pumping would be required. The cold liquid would be pumped back into the area to be cooled and the cycle repeated until the air within the space to be cooled was itself liquefied (2). Linde added one important feature which was essential to Tesla’s thinking. The Linde machine used a counter-current heat exchange technique that used the cold air produced by expansion of the cooling fluid into a gas to chill the new ambient air entering the system. (*http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Carl_von_Linde*). At first the warm machine would have given up heat to this incoming air but after some operation, the machine itself would have gotten colder and colder as would have the Dort (Tesla) electric generator itself which was connected to it.

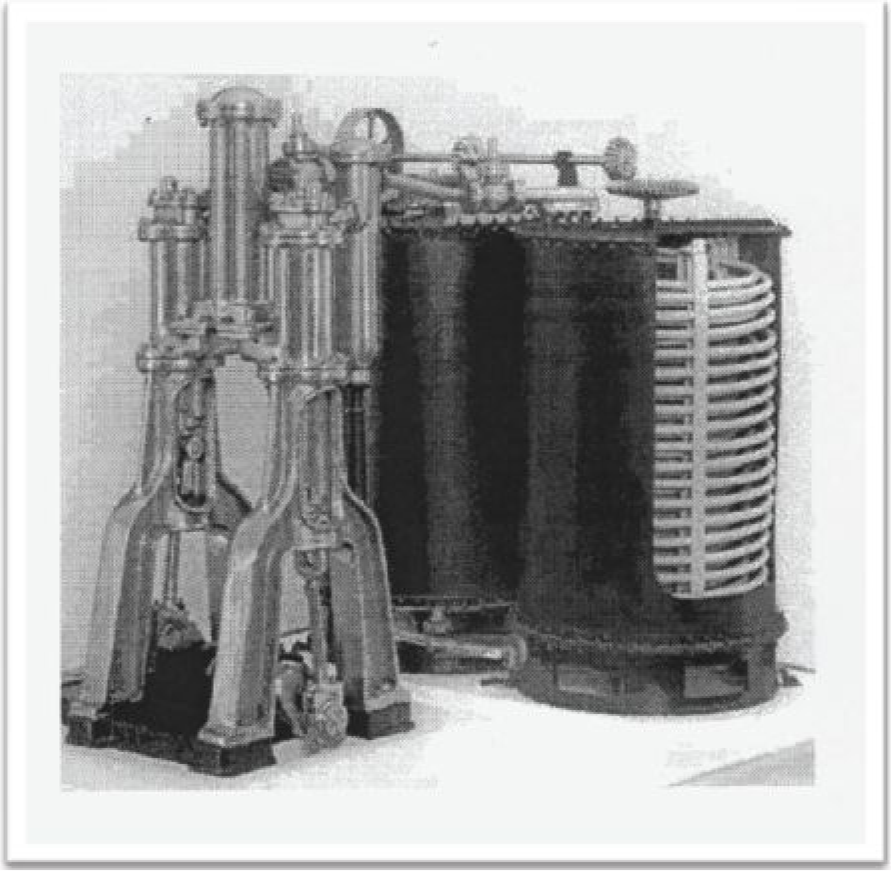

The First Linde "Ice Machine"

The liquid air would be stored in a large tank aboard the U-boat. This large tank of liquid air might have a coiled antenna within it for use as a receiver of broadcast radio frequency energy as was explained in the Tesla patent discussed in the last chapter but in any event it would have supplied the Dort machine with energy for its operation. A portion of the liquid air supply would have been allowed to sublimate, to turn back into gas. Liquid air is of the same constitution as is in our atmosphere, mostly nitrogen and oxygen. Oxygen turns to liquid at -118.8°C, but at -118° the pressure of oxygen returning to a gas is 49.7 atmospheres. For nitrogen, it turns to liquid at -147°C but at -147.1° its vapor pressure is 33.5 atmospheres (3). In other words, a supply of liquid air turning back to a gaseous state would have a pressure of over 40 times standard air pressure at sea level. This pressure is what powers the Dort (Tesla) electric generator.

“The German government had wasted no time in taking Tesla seriously, when Tesla’s laboratory was burned down in 1895, Linde filed his patent on the liquefaction of air, identical to the system developed and tested by Telsa in conjunction with running his oscillator. The German Ministry of Marine purchased Tesla’s turbine right after the US Navy rejected Tesla’s attempts of interest them in it first. By 1905, German chemical interests had already begun liquefying and storing thousands of gallons of liquefied air in steel bottles, in anticipation of their need for it in the coming submarine warfare.”(4)

What Mr. Dort’s father had to do with this engine, I really do not know beyond what Bill tells us. What is known is that Tesla had a patent for this very type of electric generator in the USA and in Germany. The American patent was issued in 1894, patent number 511, 916 and the German patent was dated 1896, patent number 87269. The application date in both countries is the same, 1893. Both patents are exactly the same.

These patent descriptions are bewildering for some reason, so it is hoped that Bill Lyne will not mind if his simplified and much clearer diagram is used here:

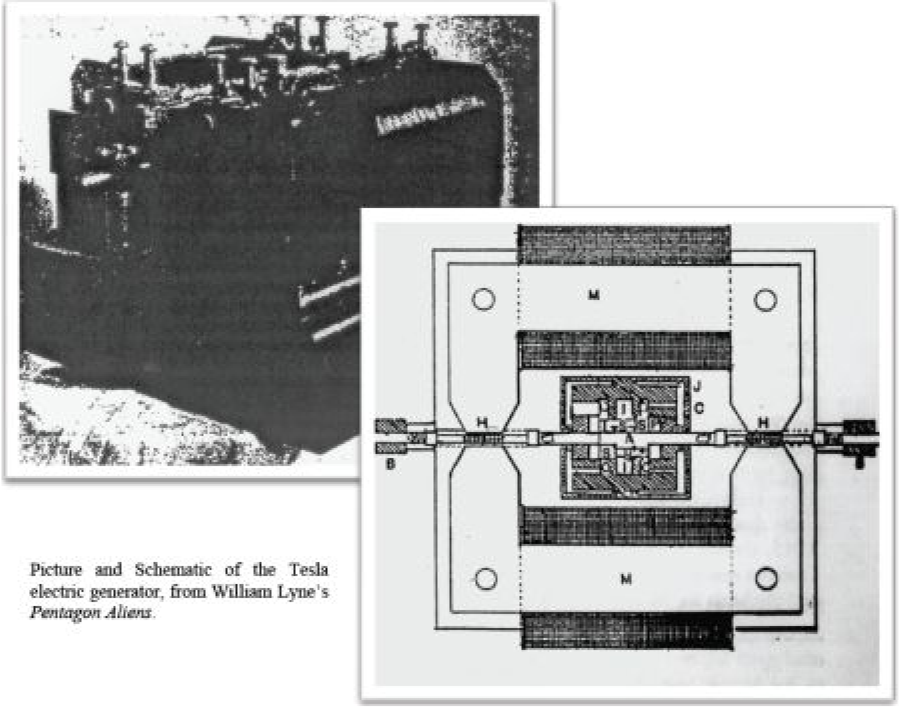

Picture and Schematic of the Tesla electric generator, from William Lyne's *Pentagon Aliens*.

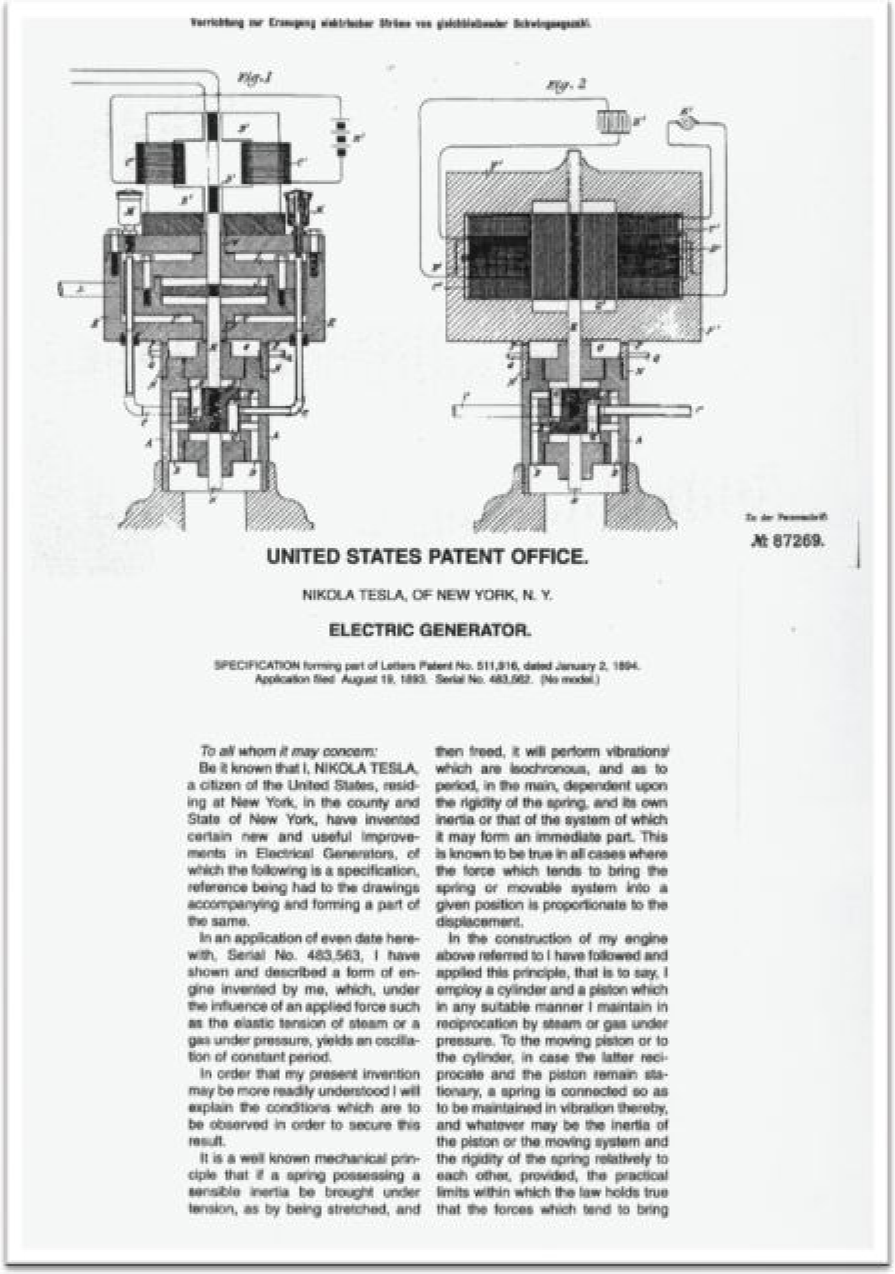

Vorrichtung zur Erzeugung elektrischer Ströme von gleichbleibender Schwingungszahl.

Zu der Patentschrift

№ 87269.

UNITED STATES PATENT OFFICE.

NIKOLA TESLA, OF NEW YORK, N. Y.

ELECTRIC GENERATOR.

SPECIFICATION forming part of Letters Patent No. 511,916, dated January 2, 1894.
Application filed August 19, 1893. Serial No. 483,562. (No model.)

To all whom it may concern:

Be it known that I, NIKOLA TESLA, a citizen of the United States, residing at New York, in the county and State of New York, have invented certain new and useful improvements in Electrical Generators, of which the following is a specification, reference being had to the drawings accompanying and forming a part of the same.

In an application of even date herewith, Serial No. 483,563, I have shown and described a form of engine invented by me, which, under the influence of an applied force such as the elastic tension of steam or a gas under pressure, yields an oscillation of constant period.

In order that my present invention may be more readily understood I will explain the conditions which are to be observed in order to secure this result.

It is a well known mechanical principle that if a spring possessing a sensible inertia be brought under tension, as by being stretched, and then freed, it will perform vibrations which are isochronous, and as to period, in the main, dependent upon the rigidity of the spring, and its own inertia or that of the system of which it may form an immediate part. This is known to be true in all cases where the force which tends to bring the spring or movable system into a given position is proportionate to the displacement.

In the construction of my engine above referred to I have followed and applied this principle, that is to say, I employ a cylinder and a piston which in any suitable manner I maintain in reciprocation by steam or gas under pressure. To the moving piston or to the cylinder, in case the latter reciprocate and the piston remain stationary, a spring is connected so as to be maintained in vibration thereby, and whatever may be the inertia of the piston or the moving system and the rigidity of the spring relatively to each other, provided, the practical limits within which the law holds true that the forces which tend to bring

Tesla's American Patent Number 511,916 and German Patent Number 87269.

These identical patents are the basis for the "Dort Engine"

Two huge horseshoe-shaped iron magnets face each other with a small gap between the two. A coil for induction of the output electric current wraps around each iron magnet at its center. A small tube runs between the magnets facing each other. In that tube are two small conducting shafts whose internal diameter just allows them to slip inside the tube. A space, an air pocket, exists between the two small conducting shafts. On each side of the tube are air inlets for compressed air. These are from the liquid air storage tank. The liquid air has sublimated and the pressure of sublimation is applied as the two inlets are opened. The two conducting shafts are pushed together rapidly but stop when the air between them compresses to a degree stronger than the incoming pressure of sublimation. This is really a spring. Tesla calls it an airspring. At this moment the conducting shafts pass over an outlet, an air hole, just like the exhaust port in a two-stroke engine. This port lets the air out of the compressed air side, the side facing the inlets, away from the center of the mechanism. This release as well as the compressed air in the center, in the air spring, pushes the conducting shafts back outward. The shafts cover the exhaust port on their way outward and the process is repeated. This process results in a rapid back and forth motion of the conducting shafts that can be imagined by the buzzing sound they produce as this process continues. The conducting shafts are rapidly breaking the magnetic lines of force between the two magnets and so inducing an electric current in the collecting coils wound around them. The square area in the center of the machine is: “…the air-powered mechanical oscillator which drives the horizontal shaft” (4). This mechanical oscillator is yet another Tesla patent (US patent number 514,169, German patent number 84 335). This mechanical oscillator could function as an air pump but in our special instance it is replaced by the Linde unit generating air pressure by sublimation. The air exhausted from the electric generator is simply fed back into the Linde machine, re-cooled, re-liquefied and stored in the liquid air tank.

Tesla’s original generator was to work on steam or compressed air. It had an oiling system for the conducting shafts. At the temperatures under discussion here, either special lubricants would have to have been used, graphite powder, or improved air bearings, since the fit between the conducting shafts and the tube which housed them allowed some passage of air for lubrication purposes. The water in the liquid air would probably have to have been removed. This is no problem, however, given water’s high freezing point. In fact, Linde could separate out and distill oxygen from liquid air if this was necessary.

Another interesting point is the similarity between the total set up here, the combination of the Dort (Tesla) electric generator and the Linde machine, and the work of Karl Nowak. Further, as we hear Nikola Tesla’s words that will soon follow, the reader is asked to bear in mind issues of raising negative entropy and Black Sun theory as presented in my first two books (6), (7).

Tesla thought this combined Linde machine - electric generator, perhaps, might even somehow cheat the Second Law of Thermodynamics, (or more specifically the Carnot Theorem), meaning getting something for nothing, or said another way, function as an over-unity machine. He had more than one thought on this subject, as we will see later. For now it is very interesting to read Tesla’s own words about how this combination might work (8):

A Departure From Known Methods—-Possibility Of A 'Self-Acting' engine Or Machine, Inanimate, Yet Capable, Like A Living Being, Of Deriving Energy From The Medium—- The Ideal Way Of Obtaining Motive Power.

When I began the investigation of the subject under consideration, and when the proceeding or similar ideas presented themselves to me for the first time, though I was then unacquainted with a number of the facts mentioned, a survey of the various ways of utilizing the energy of the medium convinced me, nevertheless, that to arrive at a satisfactory practical solution a radical departure from the methods then known had to be made. The windmill, the solar engine, the engine driven by terrestrial heat, had their limitations in the amount of power obtainable. Some new way had to be discovered which would enable us to get more energy. There was enough heat-energy in the medium, but only a small part of it was available for the operation of an engine in the ways then known. Beside, the energy was obtainable only at a very slow rate. Clearly, then, the problem was to discover some new method that would make it possible both utilize more of the heat-energy of the medium and to draw it away from the same at a more rapid rate. I was vainly endeavoring to form an idea of how this might be accomplished, when I read some statements from Carnot and Lord Kelvin (then Sir William Thompson) which meant virtually that it is impossible for an inanimate mechanism or self-acting machine to cool a portion of the medium below the temperature of the surrounding, and operate by heat abstracted. These statements interested me intensely. Evidently a living being could do this very thing, and since the experiences of my early life which I have related had convinced me that a living being is only an automaton, or, otherwise stated, a "self-acting engine," I came to the conclusion that it was possible to construct a machine which would do the same. As the first step toward this realization I conceived the following mechanism. Imagine a thermopile consisting of a number of bars of metal extending from the earth to the outer space beyond the atmosphere. The heat from below, conducted upward along these metal bars, would cool the earth or the sea or the air, according to the location of the lower parts of the bars, and the result, as is well known, would be an electric current circulating in these bars. The two terminals of the thermopile could now be joined through an electric motor, and, theoretically, this motor would run on and on, until the media below would be cooled down to the temperature of outer space. This would be an inanimate engine that to all evidence would be cooling a portion of the medium below the temperature of the surrounding, and operating by the heat abstracted.

But was it not possible to realize a similar condition without necessarily going to a height? Conceive, for the sake of illustration, an enclosure T, as illustrated in diagram b, such that energy could not be transferred across it except through a channel or path O, and that, by some means or other, in this enclosure a medium were maintained which would have little energy, and that on the outer side of the same there would be the ordinary ambient medium with much energy. Under these assumptions the energy would flow through the path O, as indicated by the arrow, and might then be converted on its passage into some other form of energy. The question was, Could such a condition be attained? Could we produce artificially such a "sink" for the energy of the ambient medium to flow in? Suppose that an extremely low temperature could be maintained by some process in a given space; the surrounding medium would then be compelled to give off heat, which cold be converted into mechanical or other form of energy, and utilized. By realizing such a plan, we should be enabled to get at any point of the globe a continuous supply of energy, day and night. More than this, reasoning in the abstract, it would seem possible to cause a quick circulation of the medium, and thus draw the energy at a very rapid rate.

Here then, was an idea that if realizable, afforded a happy solution of the problem of getting energy from the medium. But was it realizable? I convinced myself that it was so in a number of ways, of which one is the following. As regards heat, we are at a high level, which may be represented by the surface of a mountain lake considerably above the sea, the level of which may mark the absolute zero of temperature existing in the interstellar space. Heat, like water, flows from high to low level, and, consequently, just as we can let the water of the lake run down to the sea, so we are able to let heat from the earth's surface travel up into the cold region above. Heat, like water, can perform work in flowing down, and if we had any doubt as to whether we could derive energy from the medium by means of a thermopile, as before described, it would be dispelled by this analog. But can we produce cold in a given portion of the space and cause that the heat to flow in continually? To create such a "sink," or "cold hole," as we might say, in the medium, would be equivalent to producing in the lake a space either empty or filled with something much lighter than water. This we could do by placing in the lake a tank, and pumping all the water out of the latter. We know, then, that the water, if allowed to flow back into the tank, would, theoretically, be able to perform exactly the same amount of work which was used in pumping it out, but not a bit more. Consequently nothing could be gained in this double operation of first raising the water and then letting it fall down. This would mean that it is possible to create such a sink in the medium. But let us reflect a moment. Heat, though following certain general laws of mechanics, like a fluid, is not such; it is energy which may be converted into other form of energy as it passes from a high to a low level. To make our mechanical analog complete and true, we must, therefore, assume that the water, in its passage into the tank, is converted into something else, which may by taken out of it without using any, or by using very little, power.

For example, if heat be represented in this analog by the water of the lake, the oxygen and hydrogen composing the water may illustrate other forms of energy into which the heat is transformed in passing from hot to cold. If the process of heat transformation were absolutely perfect, no heat at all would arrive at the low level, since all of it would be converted into other forms of energy. Corresponding to this ideal case, all the water into the tank would be decomposed into oxygen and hydrogen before reaching the bottom, and the result would be that water would continually flow in, and yet the tank would remain entirely empty, the gases formed escaping. We would thus produce, by expending initially a certain amount of work to create a sink for the heat or, respectively, the water to flow in, a condition enabling us to get any amount of energy without further effort. This would be an ideal way of obtaining motive power. We do not know of any such absolutely perfect process of heat-conversion, and consequently some heat will generally reach the low level, which means to say, in our mechanical analog, that some water will arrive at the bottom of the tank, and a gradual and slow filling of the latter will take place, necessitating continuous pumping out. But evidently there will be less to pump out than flows in, or, in other words, less energy will be needed to maintain the initial condition that is developed by the fall, and this is to say that some energy will be gained from the medium. What is not convened in flowing down can just be raised up with its own energy, and what is converted is clear gain. Thus the virtue of the principle I have discovered resides wholly in the conversion of the energy on the downward flow.

First Efforts To Produce The Self-Acting Engine—-The Mechanical Oscillator Work of Dewar and Linde—Liquid Air

Having recognized this truth, I began to devise means for carrying out my idea, and , after long thought, I finally conceived a combination of apparatus which should make possible the obtaining of power from the medium by process of continuous cooling of atmospheric air. This apparatus, by continually transforming heat into mechanical work, tended to become colder and colder, and if it only were practicable to reach a very low temperature in this manner, then a sink for the heat could be produced, and energy could be derived from the medium. This seemed to be contrary to the statements of Carnot and Lord Kelvin before referred to, but I concluded from the theory of the process that such a result could be attained. This conclusion I reached, I think, in the latter part of 1883, when I was in Paris, and it was a time when my mind was being more and more dominated by an inventions which I had evolved during the preceding year, and which has since become known under the name of the "revolving magnetic field." During the few years which followed I elaborated further the plan I had imagined, and studied the working conditions, but make little headway. The commercial introduction in this country of the invention before referred to required most of my energies until 1889, when I again took up the idea of the self-acting machine. A closer investigation of the principles involved, and calculation, now showed that the result I aimed at could not be reached in a practical manner by ordinary machinery, as I had in the beginning expected. This led me, as a next step, to study of a type of engine generally designated as "turbine," which at first seemed to offer better chances for a realization of the idea. Soon I found, however, that the turbine, too, was unsuitable. But my conclusions showed that if an engine of a peculiar kind could be brought to a high degree of perfection, the plan I had conceived was realizable, and I resolved to proceed with greatest economy of transformation of heat into mechanical energy. A characteristic feature of the engine was that the work-performing piston was not connected with anything else, but was perfectly free to vibrate at an enormous rate. The mechanical difficulties encountered in the construction of this engine were greater than I had anticipated, and I made slow progress. This work was continued until early in 1892, when I went to London, where I saw Professor Dewar's admirable experiments with liquefied gases. Others had liquefied gases before, and notably Ozlewski and Picket had performed credible early experiments in this line, but there was such vigor about the work of Dewar that even the old appeared new. His experiments showed, through in a way different from that I had imagined, that is was possible to reach a very low temperature by transforming heat into mechanical work and I returned, deeply impressed with what I had seen, and more than ever convinced that my plan was practicable. The work temporarily interrupted was taken up anew, and soon I had in a fair state of perfection the engine that I have named "the mechanical oscillator." In this machine I succeeded in doing away with all packing, valves, and lubrication, and in producing so rapid a vibration of the piston that shafts of tough steel, fastened to the same and vibrated longitudinally, were torn asunder. By combining this engine with a dynamo of special design I produced a highly efficient electrical generator, invaluable in measurements and determinations of physical quantities on account of the unvarying rate of oscillation obtainable by its means. I exhibited several types of this machine, named "mechanical and electrical oscillator." before the Electrical Congress at the World's Fair in Chicago during the summer of 1893, in a lecture which, on account of other pressing work, I was unable to prepare for publication. On that occasion I exposed the principles of the mechanical oscillator, but the original purpose of this machine is explained here for the first time.

In the process, as I had primarily conceived it, for the utilization of the energy of the ambient medium, there were five essential elements in combination, and each of these had to be newly designed and perfected, as no such machines existed. The mechanical oscillator was the first element of this combination, and having perfected this, I turned to the next, which was an air-compressor of a design in certain respects resembling that of the mechanical oscillator. Similar difficulties in the construction were again encountered, but the work was pushed vigorously, and at the close of 1894 I had completed these two elements of the combination, and thus produced an apparatus for compressing air, virtually to any desired pressure, incomparably simpler, smaller, and more efficient than the ordinary. I was just beginning work on the third element, which together with the first two would give a refrigerating machine of exceptional efficiency and simplicity, when a misfortune befell me in the burning of my laboratory, which crippled my labors and delayed me. Shortly afterwards Dr. Carl Linde announced the liquefaction of air be a self-cooling process, demonstrating that it was practicable to proceed with the cooling until liquefaction of the air took place. This was the only experimental proof that I still wanted that energy was obtainable from the medium in the manner contemplated by me.

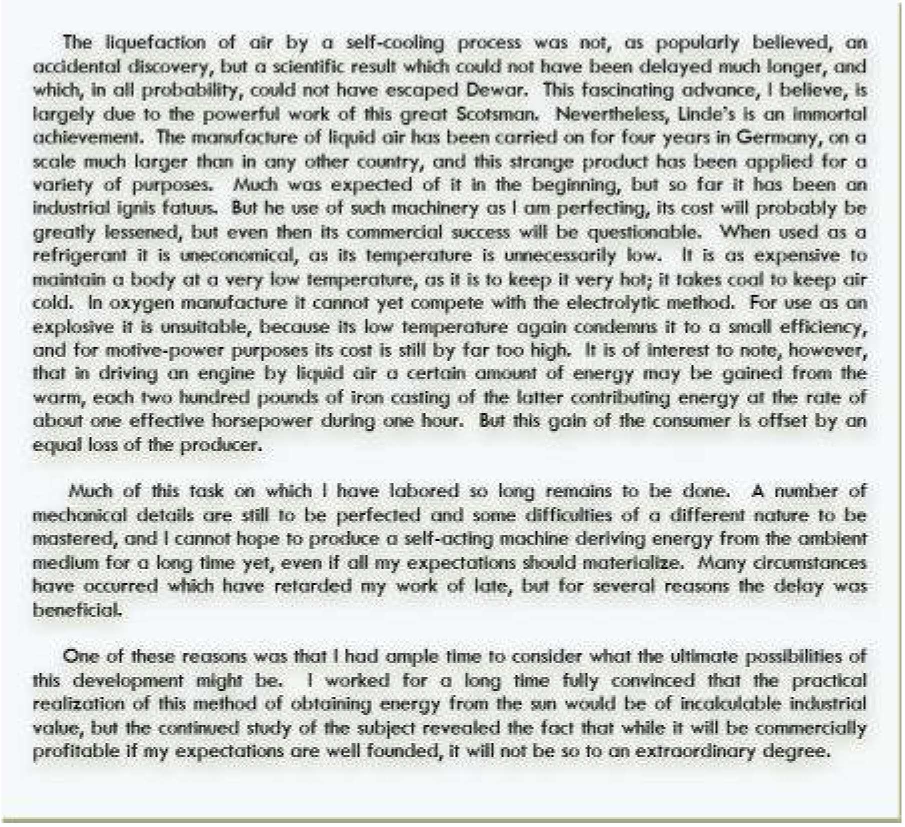

The liquefaction of air by a self-cooling process was not, as popularly believed, an accidental discovery, but a scientific result which could not have been delayed much longer, and which, in all probability, could not have escaped Dewar. This fascinating advance, I believe, is largely due to the powerful work of this great Scotsman. Nevertheless, Linde's is an immortal achievement. The manufacture of liquid air has been carried on for four years in Germany, on a scale much larger than in any other country, and this strange product has been applied for a variety of purposes. Much was expected of it in the beginning, but so far it has been an industrial ignis fatuus. But he use of such machinery as I am perfecting, its cost will probably be greatly lessened, but even then its commercial success will be questionable. When used as a refrigerant it is uneconomical, as its temperature is unnecessarily low. It is as expensive to maintain a body at a very low temperature, as it is to keep it very hot; it takes coal to keep air cold. In oxygen manufacture it cannot yet compete with the electrolytic method. For use as an explosive it is unsuitable, because its low temperature again condemns it to a small efficiency, and for motive-power purposes its cost is still by far too high. It is of interest to note, however, that in driving an engine by liquid air a certain amount of energy may be gained from the warm, each two hundred pounds of iron casting of the latter contributing energy at the rate of about one effective horsepower during one hour. But this gain of the consumer is offset by an equal loss of the producer.

Much of this task on which I have labored so long remains to be done. A number of mechanical details are still to be perfected and some difficulties of a different nature to be mastered, and I cannot hope to produce a self-acting machine deriving energy from the ambient medium for a long time yet, even if all my expectations should materialize. Many circumstances have occurred which have retarded my work of late, but for several reasons the delay was beneficial.

One of these reasons was that I had ample time to consider what the ultimate possibilities of this development might be. I worked for a long time fully convinced that the practical realization of this method of obtaining energy from the sun would be of incalculable industrial value, but the continued study of the subject revealed the fact that while it will be commercially profitable if my expectations are well founded, it will not be so to an extraordinary degree.

The way this would work in the submarine is that air would be continuously brought into the mouth of the Linde machine, cooled first by the expanding gas coming out of the compressor ducted around it, then cooled, compressed, cooled by seawater, allowed to expand resulting in more cooling, until the gas collapses into a liquid. The liquid air would be stored in a large tank. Using gravity, as small portion of the liquid air would be bled into a smaller tank. At least one pump, probably two, would be necessary. The heat from these two machines would be ducted towards vaporization of the liquid air in the smaller tank. This air would then be ducted into the oscillator, causing the conducting shaft to cut magnetic lines of force for production of electricity. The air, still very cold, would then be guided back into the mouth of the Linde machine for another round.

As the machines work together, they get colder and colder. In an ideal world the gas's liquefaction requirements would be tied to the amount of compression-expansion of the pump so that no energy is wasted. Likewise, if any additional heat were required for vaporization (sublimation) of the liquid air, it would come from the outside environment (ambient temperature of the environment). A gas might be chosen, as was oxygen in this example that required less energy to liquefy but would provide adequate pressure through its vaporization pressure. It does take some additional energy to collapse air into a liquid but there is also a release of energy in the expanding gas and so it is in the efficient use of these changes of state where this particular engine shines. These machines might be fined tuned to work with only one or two degrees of difference arising anywhere within the machines themselves.

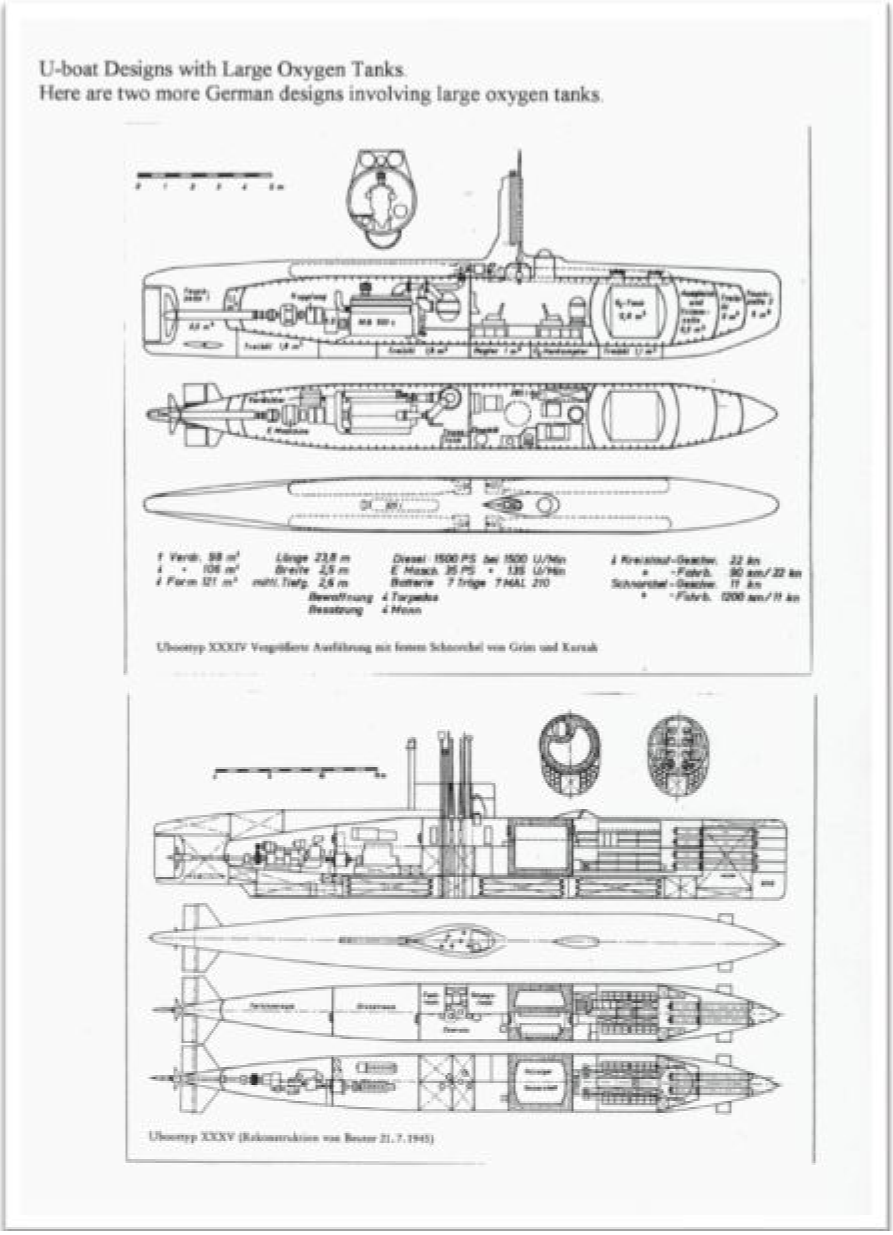
U-boat Designs with Large Oxygen Tanks.

Here are two more German designs involving large oxygen tanks.

1 Verdr. 98 m³
Länge 23,8 m
Diesel 1500 PS bei 1500 U/Min
Breite 2,5 m
E Masch. 35 PS 135 U/Min
mittl. Tiefg. 2,6 m
Batterie 7 Tröge 7 MAL 210
Bewaffnung 4 Torpedos
Besatzung 4 Mann
Schnorchel-Geschw. 11 kn
-Fahrb. 1200 sm/11 kn

Ubootyp XXXIV Vergrößerte Ausführung mit festem Schnorchel von Grim und Kurzak

Ubootyp XXXV (Rekonstruktion von Bezner 21. 7. 1945)

Of course the purpose of the combined engine would be to produce electricity to charge the batteries of the U-boat. But, additionally as mentioned above, the storage tank of liquid gas might surround an antenna designed to receive and magnify incoming ELF waves that could then be converted to electricity. This additional electricity might either be used to charge the batteries or, if already charged, to manufacture additional liquid gas. And if the gas used was oxygen, this might be used to burn diesel fuel, either as enrichment or solely if traveling underwater, in the Kreislauf (Draeger) system.

This is not a free-energy machine. But it is certainly a very efficient one and it might allow additional types of energy to be utilized as explained in the last paragraph. Compare this to an automobile’s engine in which 25-40% of the energy produced is wasted as excess heat and an additional (perhaps double digit figure) amount of energy is wasted friction when the piston rings scrape over the cylinder walls.

An automobile engine is a heat pump. It works because heat can cause expansion in an environment that is colder than itself. If the environment were the same temperature as the burning gas inside the combustion chamber of the engine, the gas would not expand nor would it exhaust into the outside environment that is acting as a heat sink. The Dort (Tesla) engine is doing the opposite. It is cooling itself down as much as possible and using the outside environment to induct heat to vaporized liquid air. This outside heat is just enough to sublimate the liquid. Our engine is acting as a heat sink, not the outside environment.

My view is that this engine works though lowering the entropy of the engine. As the heat is taken out of the machine it becomes more organized, less random. This and the fact that it uses cold, or the absence of heat, in relation to the ambient environment, would make it the darling of Karl Schappeller, Viktor Schauberger, fire and ice theory founder Hans Hoerbiger, as well as Tesla. This is what physicist Michael Watson describes as Reverse Thermodynamics (9). For me, this is another example of the densification, reverse thermodynamics, change of state, change of energy technology that I call the Black Sun concept.

OK, so it is cool, but what besides the testimony of Mr. Dort do we have to presume that this engine was actually used during the Third Reich or afterwards by the Nazi International/3rd Power for the purpose of powering U-boats? Well, how about the design drawings of what would have been the Type XXXIII, XXXIV, and XXXV U-boats (10), which all had large tanks designated as to be used to carry liquid oxygen? This was at a time in which the Kreislauf, oxygen recycling (Draeger), system had fallen out of favor. Perhaps the Kreislauf method fell back into favor once it was realized that it could be combined and compounded with other propulsion methods, hence the new designs. But these tanks could also have been what they appear to be on the surface— storage tanks for liquid air or liquid oxygen, used in a straightforward way to power an electric generator as in the Dort engine.

Literature Cited

1. **Taeufler, Johannes, 1930**, *“Vril” Die Kosmische Urkraft Wiedergeburt von Atlantis*, page 18, Astrologischer Verlag Wilhelm Becker, Berlin-Steglitz, Germany

2. **Van Norstrand’s Scientific Encyclopedia, 1397**, page 1759, D. Van Norstrand Company, Inc., Princeton, NJ, USA

3. **Van Norstrand’s Scientific Encyclopedia, 1958**, page 1759

4. **Lyne, William R., 1999**, *Pentagon Aliens*, page 286, Creatopia Productions, Lamy, N. M., USA

5. **Lyne, William R., 1999**, page 285

6. **Stevens, Henry, 2003**, *Hitler’s Flying Saucers*, pages 181-187, Adventures Unlimited Publishing, Kempton, Illinois, USA

7. **Stevens, Henry, 2007**, *Hitler’s Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science and Technology*, pages 312-322, Adventures Unlimited Publishing, Kempton, *Illinois, USA*

8. ***Tesla, Nikola edited by David Hatcher Childress, 2000***, The Tesla Papers Nikola Tesla on Free Energy & Wireless Transmission of Power, pages 52-58, Adventures Unlimited Publishing, Kempton, Illinois, USA

9. **Stevens, Henry, 2003**, *Hitler's Flying Saucers*, pages 181-183, Adventures Unlimited Publishing, Kempton, Illinois, USA

10. **Roessler, Eberhard, 1996**, *Geschichte des deutschen U-bootbaus Band 2*, pages 449, 451, and 452, Bernard & Graefer Verlag, Augsburg, Germany

U-530

Regarding U-530 we have something unique. A junior officer writing under the penname “Wilhelm Bernhard” has become an eyewitness for us, disclosing many things which contradict established history. U-530 has already been discussed as a converted U-boat. Bernhard accuses the US government of taking possession of U-530 and then transporting it, allegedly to the American east coast but switching boats near the Panama Canal and towing it westward, through the Canal and to San Francisco on the west coast. Here, it was dismantled bolt by bolt, obviously in a search for something important, yet it was done in a deceptive manner, as if whatever they were looking for was a major secret to be kept secret at all cost. We have seen that the American government did ship another U-boat back to the USA in secret, and that the records for this “abduction” apparently surfaced only by accident, contained within another discussion.

In order to try to determine the nature of this exotic propulsion, the statement by Buechner and Bernhard needs to be reviewed again:

> *“It is to be remembered that the U-530 was exceptionally fast. What kind of miraculous power plant propelled her on her swift course and what kind of wonderful fuel did she burn, which was efficient, safe, cheap and clean? Would the general use of this fuel have made the petroleum industry obsolete? And would it have unbalanced the economy of the world? Somewhere deep in the confidential archives of World War II, the answers to these questions await the coming of another era.” (1)*

Earlier in the story these authors reviewed the capture and interrogation of Captain Wermoutt, commander of U-530. One of these questions was:

> *"How had she (U-530) been able to operate so long without refueling?" (2)*

This question came about because U-530 had last refueled in Norway on March 13, 1945, and surrendered in Mar del Plata, Argentina on July 10, 1945 (3). This was a voyage of over four months' duration, during which she crossed the entire Atlantic (U-530 was off the American east coast when Hitler died) and then sailed all the way down to Argentina without refueling.

Dr. Axel Stoll provides us with the obvious answer (my translation):

> *"A whole series of U-boats from the German Reich surfaced continually in the Antarctic waters, in order to, most probably, transport men and material thereto. Among these were found, towards the end of the war, real "under water fortresses", which, without surfacing, had a range of 45,000 kilometers and were equipped with an anti-radar system. Viewed technically, they were, compared with Allied developments, ahead by ten years. Hydrogen served as fuel, a clean form of energy that was obviously produced from seawater. This permitted these U-boats speeds of one hundred kilometers per hour under water! Unbelievable? Hardly!" (4)*

One hundred kilometers per hour is slightly over sixty-one miles per hour. Setting this claim aside for a moment, what is of most interest here is the fact that seawater was being used, according to Dr. Stoll, to manufacture hydrogen gas. Water can be broken down through electrolysis into its constituent elements, oxygen and hydrogen. Two electrodes, in this case two metal plates (such as platinum or stainless steel), are placed in a container of water and each electrode is attached to the power source. The conduction of electrical current through the water causes individual water molecules to break down into their two constituent parts, with the positively-charged hydrogen components moving toward the negatively-charged electrode and the negatively-charged oxygen componentsmoving towards the positively-charged cathode. The reaction actually works much better for seawater, in which dissolved salts serve to increase the water's conductivity as in an electrolyte (*http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Electrolysis_of_water*).

Between the two World Wars there was an effort in Germany to investigate forms of energy other than petroleum, which Germany in particular lacked. One of these forms was hydrogen. It was proposed that hydrogen be produced by electrolysis at German power plants at times of the day considered "off peak". This hydrogen could then be stored and transported and used by engines specially fitted to do so (5). In other words, hydrogen could be used to exchange or transport energy over distances or over time—it could be used as an energy bank.

The Germans actually had practical, working hydrogen engines before World War Two. These specially-fitted engines were designed by German engineer Rudolf Errens. They did not differ much from a standard internal combustion engine. The main modification was a gas-injection system fitted on the cylinder head, which allowed hydrogen to be injected directly into the engine when all the valves were closed. This was necessary since allowing hydrogen to mix with the incoming atmospheric gases caused backfiring and potential explosions. The hydrogen injectors could be set to enhance existing fuel combustion or be used exclusively as a hydrogen fuel. Hydrogen injection has been compared with supercharging. With hydrogen injection, engines ran cleaner and achieved better efficiency ("better milage"). These were called the "Erren Engine", or "Erren Process", or "Erren System". The Nazi government even considered wholesale conversion to the Erren System, since there was apparently no downside (6).

Naturally, the question of using both hydrogen and oxygen in their pure forms as engine fuels comes to mind. In fact, this seems to have happened:

> *“Two other Erren inventions, the ‘oxy-hydrogen’ submarine and the trackless torpedo, attracted some attention in Britain in 1942. The trackless torpedo, fueled by oxygen and hydrogen, was beguilingly simple in concept. Erren started from the realization that torpedoes leave ‘tracks’ of exhaust-gas bubbles. Because hydrogen and oxygen recombine into water vapor, condensing back into the seawater, no bubbles were formed, and thus there was no giveaway trail. And the oxygen-hydrogen-burning submarine eliminated almost entirely the need for big batteries and electric motors for underwater running. Instead, during diesel-powered surface runs the sub’s engine also drove an electrolyzer, generating oxygen and hydrogen, which were then stored away under pressure. When diving and running submerged, the same diesel engine burned the oxygen and hydrogen without any exhaust bubbles. “ (7)*

Further,

> *“All major engines in use at that time were modified, including those manufactured by MAN, Daimler-Benz and Beardmore.” (8)*

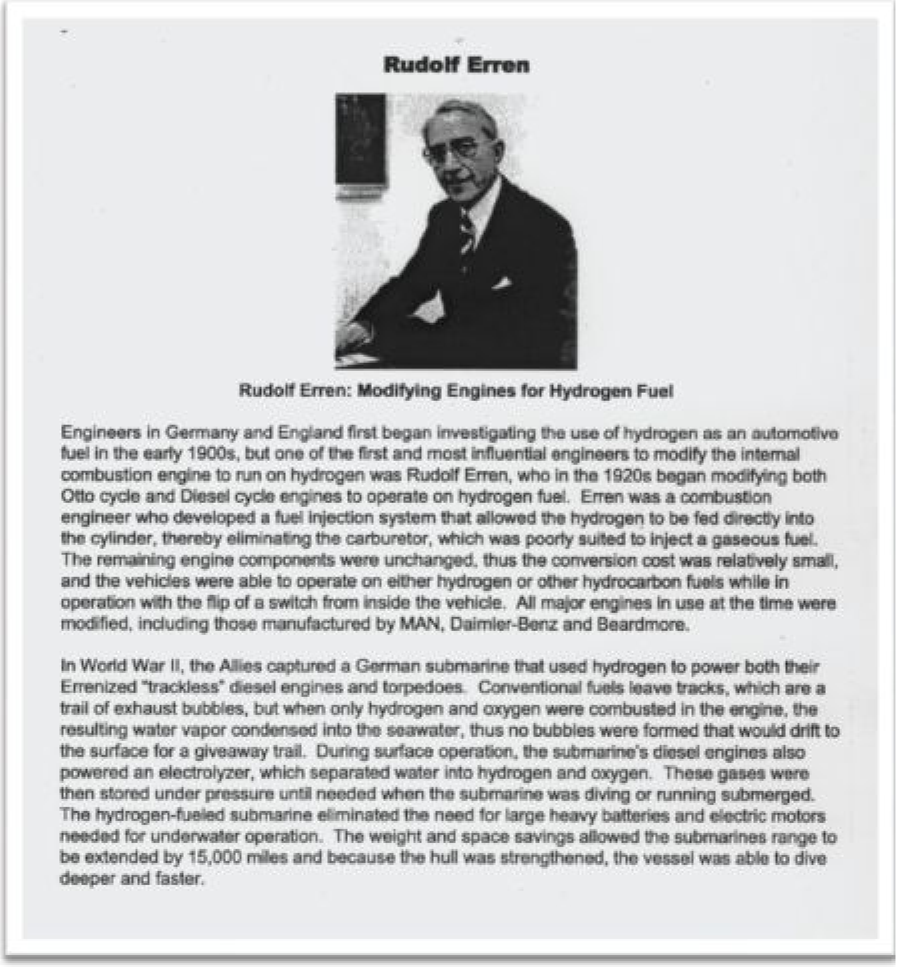

Rudolf Erren

Rudolf Erren: Modifying Engines for Hydrogen Fuel

Engineers in Germany and England first began investigating the use of hydrogen as an automotive fuel in the early 1900s, but one of the first and most influential engineers to modify the internal combustion engine to run on hydrogen was Rudolf Erren, who in the 1920s began modifying both Otto cycle and Diesel cycle engines to operate on hydrogen fuel. Erren was a combustion engineer who developed a fuel injection system that allowed the hydrogen to be fed directly into the cylinder, thereby eliminating the carburetor, which was poorly suited to inject a gaseous fuel. The remaining engine components were unchanged, thus the conversion cost was relatively small, and the vehicles were able to operate on either hydrogen or other hydrocarbon fuels while in operation with the flip of a switch from inside the vehicle. All major engines in use at the time were modified, including those manufactured by MAN, Daimler-Benz and Beardmore.

In World War II, the Allies captured a German submarine that used hydrogen to power both their Errenized "trackless" diesel engines and torpedoes. Conventional fuels leave tracks, which are a trail of exhaust bubbles, but when only hydrogen and oxygen were combusted in the engine, the resulting water vapor condensed into the seawater, thus no bubbles were formed that would drift to the surface for a giveaway trail. During surface operation, the submarine's diesel engines also powered an electrolyzer, which separated water into hydrogen and oxygen. These gases were then stored under pressure until needed when the submarine was diving or running submerged. The hydrogen-fueled submarine eliminated the need for large heavy batteries and electric motors needed for underwater operation. The weight and space savings allowed the submarines range to be extended by 15,000 miles and because the hull was strengthened, the vessel was able to dive deeper and faster.

Rudolf Erren This is from a website by Harry Braun of the Phoenix Project Foundation in Phoenix, Arizona. It states that a German U-boat employing hydrogen propulsion was captured by the Allies.

MAN was the major supplier of diesel engines for German U-boats. And yes, this is correct—Erren not only contacted the German Navy but also the British Navy between wars in an attempt to further develop his inventions. In fact, he spent the war years in Britain. Rudolf Erren is an example of why it can be a mistake to overuse the word “Nazi” in reference to wartime Germans.

It should be mentioned that the electric generators used to recharge the U-boat's batteries were not ideal for electrolysis. Marine batteries, large and slow in their charging and discharging rates, would have had a current profile somewhat different from the optimum for electrolysis (more on this later).

According to the Phoenix Project Foundation, cited above and here:

> *"In World War II, the Allies captured a German submarine that used hydrogen to power both their Errenized 'trackless' diesel engines and torpedoes." (9)*

Could this have been the famous U-530, or was it another, as of yet undisclosed, mystery U-boat?

At this point any engineers or scientists reading this book are rolling their eyes and thinking that there is no such thing as free energy, no violation of the Second Law of Thermodynamics is possible, something cannot be gotten for nothing, and if hydrogen and oxygen are being produced on board a U-boat, it is being done at the cost of burning diesel fuel, *one makes up of the other—so what is the point?* Here is what Tesla has to say:

> *"The hydrogen liberated in the electrolytic decomposition was to be burned or recombined with oxygen, not with that from which it was separated, but with that of the atmosphere. Thus very nearly the total electrical energy used up in the decomposition of the water would be recovered in the form of heat resulting from the recombination of the hydrogen." (10)*

So almost all the energy produced by electrolysis could be recaptured by using the resulting hydrogen in conjunction with atmospheric oxygen, while running on the surface or through the snorkel underwater. But it gets better. Meanwhile, the oxygen produced could be run through the Linde machine and turned to a cold liquid gas. This is stored in its tank, a facility well suited to house an antenna for the reception and amplification of ELF waves. These could perhaps be turned into electrical energy for charging the U-boat's batteries, electrolysis of seawater, or to make more liquid oxygen via the Linde machine. A balancing act would occur. If the liquid oxygen supply was low, resources could be directed there. If hydrogen supplies were full, it could be bled into the diesel engine using the Erren System. Hydrogen and oxygen could run the U-boat while submerged or diesel and oxygen could run it submerged or diesel fuel and hydrogen plus oxygen could run it, all depending on circumstances. So, by using resources not originally brought by the U-boat: seawater, atmospheric oxygen, and perhaps ELF radiation, and by converting this energy into other forms of energy, and using matter to transport and save this energy as well as the use of change of states of matter, the U-boat is able to so smartly manage its resources that a kind of free energy effect does come to mind.

It gets even better still when we consider the type of electric generator best suited for electrolysis, the homopolar generator (HPG). The HPG is well suited to utilization for electrolysis because it is a DC generator and its electric current profile is low in voltage but high in amperage. In current profile the HPG is exactly the opposite of the Coler device, for instance, which is another DC generator that was being developed by the Kriegsmarine during the war.

A homopolar generator consists of a conductive, circular disc that is rotated between two magnets on a shaft. Due to some fluke of physics, both the center of the disc and the periphery have different electrical potentials. This means that if a brush or electric pick-up is mounted at the very center of the disc and another brush, literally brushing the outside of the conductive wheel as it turns, and electric current will be generated. The "fluke" part comes from the fact that standard theories of induction by Maxwell do not account for the electrical generation caused here. New ideas had to be developed. The homopolar generator was invented in 1831 by Michael Faraday and due to this “fluke,” the homopolar generator was termed the Faraday Paradox for many years (*http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Homopolar_generator*).

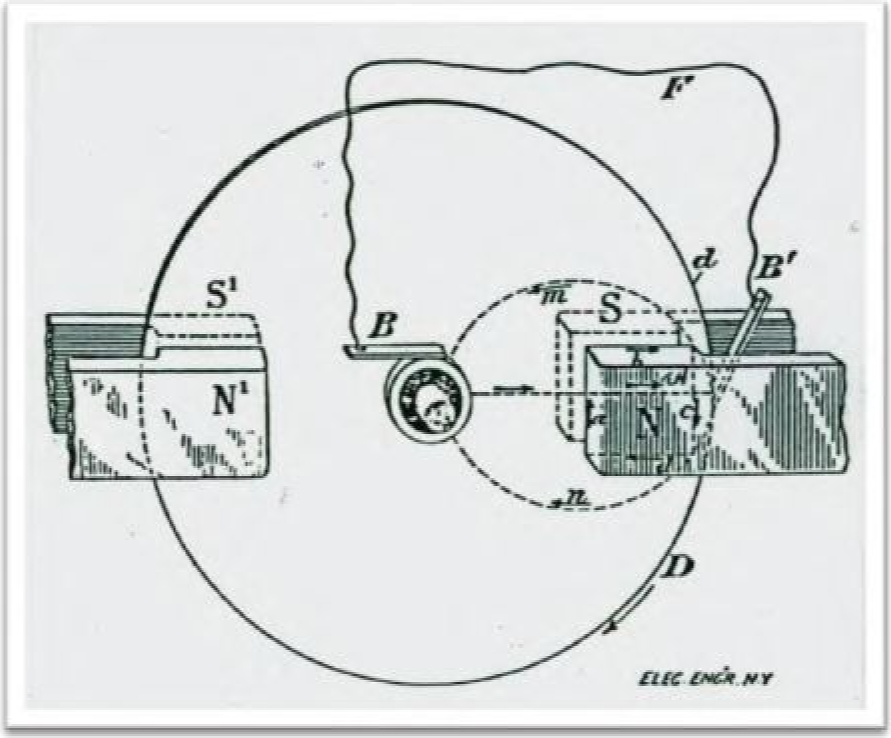

Homopolar Generator Basics. When a conducting disc is rotated within a magnetic field, there is a potential difference between the points at the center of the disc and points along its periphery. Here, four magnets are situated as shown on both sides of a conducting disc with brushes *B* at its center *B’* at the periphery. The direction of rotation is shown by *D*. If a load, such as a small lamp, is placed on the circuit represented by wire *F*, then an electric current will flow from *B* to *B’* along *F*, and the lamp will light up. There are three basic variables which influence the output of a homopolar generator in direct proportion: the radius of the disc, the speed of its rotation, and the strength of the magnetic field (here supplied by the four stationary magnets). Increasing any one of these variables, then, results in a proportional increase in the generator’s electrical output.

The output of the HPG is increased if the radius of the wheel is increased, and if the magnetic field of the HPG is increased, and if the speed of rotation is increased. Inversely, if the wheel is decreased, if the magnetic field is lessened and if the speed is decreased, the output will suffer. In addition, some conductive materials turn out to be better than others, especially for given parts of the machine. Also, back torque, the bane of all electrical generators, can be reduced in a HPG by using various materials for the brushes and smart types of off-loading the electric current generated.

But the HPG is a very efficient device in taking mechanical energy (the turning force which must be applied to the wheel) and turning it into electrical energy. Figures of 90% efficiency are common. For this reason, it is the darling of free energy researchers. Whole papers, books and conferences are devoted to making this device 100% efficient or better, making this an over-unity device in which it generates more electrical energy than it needs for its own rotation (11). This means that a homopolar motor can be spun using electrical current and it can be used to spin a HPG. All that is necessary is an output from the HPG of greater than 100%. Claims are periodically made and discredited so this is an ongoing, intense study among physicists and electrical engineers.

Back to U-boats, suppose a HPG could be mounted directly into the diesel drive train, like a flywheel on an automobile? Now suppose current being drawn off only at odd moments such as between gears when the diesel engines are wasting fuel, idling? This is the same concept as the hybrid automobile engine. Hydrogen and oxygen could be generated during these times with much smaller negative consequences for diesel fuel supply. Back torque would only be present during actual electrical generation so the remainder of the time the unit would just spin as does the flywheel of a car.

Now imagine a HPG with almost no back torque at all. It might be employed almost constantly at any engine operating condition other than full load without much in terms of consequences. In fact the current generated could be modified for use in the U-boat itself and to charge the batteries. If this were possible, then only one generator need be used on the U-boat, a very efficient one by all accounts. A HPG with no back torque was evidently claimed by Professor P. Boehning at the University of Breslau in 1942 as was discussed in an earlier chapter, with the result being the output drove the generator. (12) And without this or very similar technology, someone still must explain how the Searl disc auto-rotated.

The point is that through the use of the HPG, excluding any wild and crazy discussion of over-unity, another dimension is added to our already very efficient U-boat in addition to those already mentioned. But in the next chapter we will take on these very “wild and crazy” ideas and discover that they are not too crazy after all.

Literature Cited

1. **Buechner, Howard A., Col., and Wilhelm Bernhard, 1989**, *Hitler's Ashes*, page 228, Thunderbird Press, Inc., Metairie, LA., USA

2. **Buechner, Howard A., Col., and Wilhelm Bernhard, 1989**, page 221

3. *ibid.*

4. **Stoll, Axel, Ph.D., 2001**, *Hochtechnologie im Dritten Reich Reichdeutsche Entwicklungen und die vermutlich wahre Herkunft der "UFOs,"* page 122, Amun-Verlag, Schleusingen, Germany

5. **Hoffman, Peter, 2002**, *Tomorrow's Energy: Hydrogen, Fuel Cells, and Prospects for a Cleaner Planet*, page 34, 35, The MIT Press, Cambridge, MA, USA

6. ibid.

7. ibid.

8. **Braum, Harry, date unknown**, John Lorenzen & Rudolf Erren: *Energy Pioneers* (H2 Exhibiton Project), page 2, (www.phoenixprojectfoundation.us/.../John_Lorenzen__Rudolf_Erren.pdf) Phoenix Project Foundation Phoenix, AZ. USA

9. ibid.

10. **Tesla, Nikola, edited by David Hatcher Childress, 2000**, *The Tesla Papers Nikola Tesla on Free Energy wireless Transmission of Power*, page 43, Adventures Unlimited Publishing, Kempton, Illinois, USA

11. **Valone, Thomas, M.A., P.E. (now Ph.D.), 1994**, *The Homopolar Handbook A Definitive Guide to Faraday Disk and N-Machine Technologies*, Integrity Research Institute, Washington, D.C., USA

12. **Nieper, Hans a., Ph.D., 1985**, *Conversion of Gravity Field Energy/Revolution in Technology, Medicin and Society*, page 157, M.I.T., Management Interessengemeinschaft fuer Tachyonen-Feld-Energie GmbH, Oldenburg, Germany

TESLA’S SELF-ACTING ENGINE, TWO?

Again, the legend from Michael X. Barton writing as “Michael X.” talking to his European informant:

> *“ ‘Yes,’ my friend replied,’ it is known that the Nazis have a Free-Energy motor, and used it in 1958 to propel a U-boat between Europe and Buenos Aires. It is also believed by many of us that there is an underwater station — built by the Nazis — somewhere in the Atlantic Ocean between Germany and Argentina. A stopover place, no doubt, for the Nazi subs and UFO’s.” (1)*

With Fuerteventura, the second half of this statement has proven itself true. All we have to do is find the first half.

In this chapter we are going to focus on the idea of the homopolar generator as a source of electricity for a U-boat, all on its own. William Lyne gave us this idea in his writings as a result of his own experimentation and conversations with the man called Mr. Dort. Dort has already been mentioned in the discussion of Tesla’s oscillator in combination with the Linde machine. Dort seems to have known important details of this engine that were based on this father’s invention, an invention he claimed was used in German U-boats.

Bill Lyne says that Tesla discovered a special generator which is still a complete secret and which is locked up “in the Los Alamos vault”. It was made of three metals, copper, aluminum, and iron together with weak magnets. Mr. Dort chimes in saying aluminum was the best reflector, copper the most active (conductor) and iron the magnetic core material.

Overall, the device most resembled a homopolar generator. Bill Lyne recognizes the resemblance of the homopolar generator to the common household electric meter, the old one with the moving metal wheel. With all these things in his mind, Bill got two such meters and did a little experimentation on an apartment house he owned:

> *“In 1979, I took two old 115-volt Tesla electric meters—-which ware at least 70 years old—-and connected them together in a ‘peculiar way’, attempting at first to measure two separate 115-volt currents coming into an apartment. There are four unlabelled posts on each (of) these old meters, so I didn’t know how to connect them, so I just took a shot in the dark. Due to the manner in which I connected them—-which was apparently wrong—-the two meters behaved strangely. At a low current drain, the disks rotated faster than when the current was greater. At a sufficiently high current, the disks stopped, hummed loudly—-which I refer to as “snoring”——and even reversed, at a still greater energy consumption in the apartment. As the current usage went up and down, there was commensurate change in the “snoring” and disk directions in the two meters.*
>
> *By actually using more electricity in the apartment, less usage was recorded by the meters, as well as the main meter, for my entire complex, and the electric bill for my whole complex dropped by about one-third. The meters were generating power, perhaps enough to power the entire apartment. Sometimes, when the disks were running in reverse, the meters were generating more power than that being used, and when they were running slowly in the opposite direction, the meters were generating less, but overall, the one-third drop in the bill indicated they were running that apartment, one-third of my complex.*

> *Mr. Dort—-the Virginia man whose father invented the special generators stolen by the Nazis and used on their "Electro-U-boats"—-said that, when the 'snoring' was at its peak and the disk stationary, that the meter was at the "center of load", which meant that the amount of current being used was equal to that being generated by the meters! When the disks reversed, the 'meters' were generating more current than than that being used, and were putting electricity back into the grid! After I removed the old meters from the circuits, my bill increased by one-third." (2)*

How could it be possible for two electric meters, even given they were homopolar motors, to stop while in operation and even reverse direction and generate electricity on their own? Well, first an electric motor can usually be made to generate electricity by overrunning it. By this I mean spinning it faster that it is designed to operate, using outside mechanical force. And what is all this "wrong" connection talk? When I hook up something electrical and it is "wrong", it either does not work at all or it blows up. I think Bill is being a little modest here because he certainly has seen the Tesla design for a homopolar generator and read the astonishing commentary Tesla provides on the matter.

In 1889 Tesla was granted a patent on a homopolar generator, Patent number 406,968. The invention is referred to as a "unipolar" generator, another name for the homopolar generator. Tesla's unique contributions appear to be two in number. First, he combines two homopolar generators into one unit in a unique way:

> *"I prefer to construct the machine in such as manner that the direction of magnetism or order of the poles in one field of forces is opposite to that in the other, so that rotation of the disks in the same direction develops a current in one from center to circumference and in the other from circumference to center." (3)*

In this way, current produced by the first generator is fed into the second, amplifying the electrical output “for free”, or without any additional input required. This, or something much like this, is what Bill Lyne did with his four terminals and wiring.

Second, Tesla used a metal belt, which ran along the outside of both disks and served as a brush in connecting them electrically to one another. In this way, current can be drawn uniformly from the rotating disk rather rather than from a single spot, reducing the brush’s contribution to the system’s back-torque.

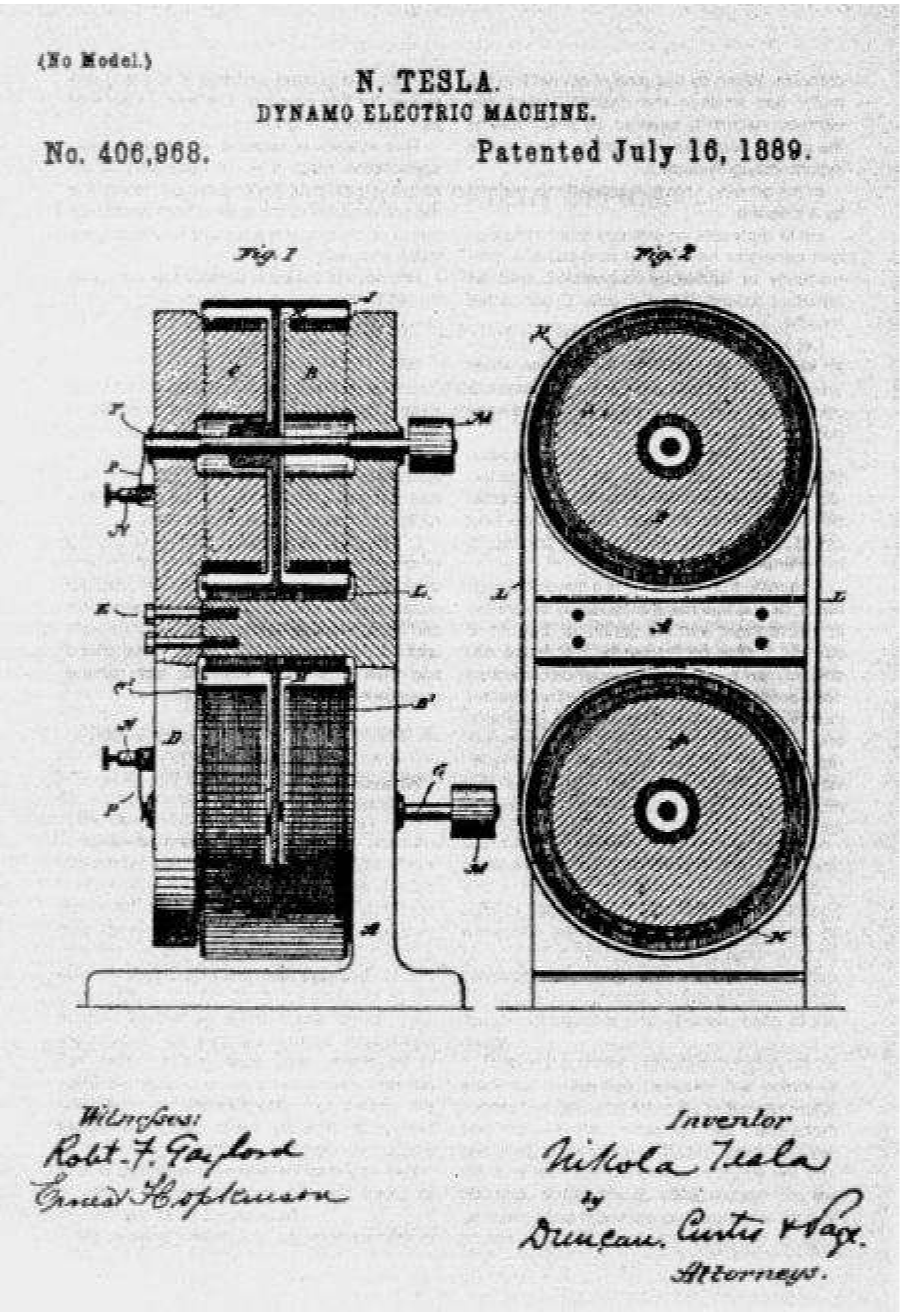
(No Model.)
N. TESLA.
DYNAMO ELECTRIC MACHINE.
No. 406,968.
Patented July 16, 1889.
Fig. 1
Fig. 2
Witnesses:
Robt. F. Gaylord
Ernest Hopkinson
Inventor
Nikola Tesla
by
Duncan, Curtis & Page.
Attorneys.

Tesla’s Homopolar Generator. This is Tesla’s U.S. Patent Number 406,968. In this design, two homopolar generators are combined so that a belt can run between them. The belt functions as the outer brush for picking up electricity. The brush provides a greater contact surface for the flow of current, minimizing the production of eddy currents and the back-torque they induce.

But it is really not his patent that is so exciting, rather his discussion of the homopolar generator in the September 2, 1891 edition of a journal, *The Electrical Engineer* (4). This is because Tesla discusses eddy currents and back torque in an entirely new way. Eddy currents can be used, according to Tesla, to increase or decrease the strength of the field magnets though that the disc is rotating. In his diagram of a homopolar (unipolar) generator, he makes the point that the area of the conductive disc inside or under the magnets, that is, through which the disc is being rotated, is the most active for electrical generation. Tesla says that the current will flow from the center (one pole) to the periphery (other pole) in this area as this is the shortest distance of this electrically active area. Two pathways are possible which Tesla marks "m" and "n". Given the direction of rotation of the disc, "D" (clockwise), eddy currents in pathway "m" would weaken the magnetic field strength of the energizing magnets, while if the pathway "n" is chosen, these eddy currents would reinforce the field strength of those magnets and actually adding to them. This was Tesla's breakthrough! Eddy currents, once thought of as only counterproductive, could be used to strengthen the magnetic field. Since the strength of the magnetic field is one of the variables influencing a homopolar generator, with increasing strength resulting in increasing electrical output, the energizing of the machine though positive application of eddy currents increases the electrical output.

> *"…the figure shows that one of the two branches of the eddy current, that is , A B'n B,will tend to demagnetize the field, while the other branch, that is A B' m B, will have the opposite effect. Therefore, the branch A B' m B, that is, the one which is approaching the field, will repel the lines of the same, while branch A B'n B, this is, the one leaving the field, will gather the lines of force upon itself."*

Tesla suggests a couple ways to use this idea. First, he suggests using two pairs of weak magnets positioned on the periphery of the disc, opposite poles alternately facing each other, upon which Tesla winds a coil of wire. Electrical current would be taken right off the surface of the rotating disc.

As the disc started and increased output, the coils would energize and strengthen the weak magnets. It would seem this could continue as the speed of rotation increased up to a high level of magnetic field strength.

Since the now electromagnets are opposite in relation to each other, they serve to drive the disc between them and forward just as two strong electric wires whose currents are going in opposite directions, propel a conducting projectile down their length in a rail gun. More on this in a couple paragraphs.

Second, Tesla suggests segmenting the conductive disc in spiral segments. In his diagram he again shows how such a system could either retard or drive the disc in a given direction depending upon which way the current comes off, just as he does in the earlier explanation. If the disc is segmented to that the least path of resistance are the solid lines, in other words engineered as a segmented spiral, so that current flows along the solid lines, the field strength ought to be increased. If current is allowed to flow on the dotted lines, back torque and a weakening of the field would occur.

So Tesla talks about these eddy currents strengthening the field magnets and so increasing output as well as exciting the machine or eddy currents demagnetizing the field magnets if traveling in the wrong direction, and slowing it down. But there is more:

> *"To return to the principal subject: assume the conditions to be such that the eddy currents generated by the rotation of the disk strengthen the field, and suppose the latter gradually removed while the disk is kept rotating at an increased rate. The current, once started, may then be sufficient to maintain itself and even increase in strength, and then we have the case of Sir William Thomson's 'current accumulator."(4)*

This means if the eddy currents could be arranged most advantageously, they, the eddy currents alone, might serve as the field magnets if they were removed gradually. The field magnets are replaced with eddy currents that are generating their own magnetic field.

There is another thing. Remember that back torque caused by (negative) eddy currents physically retards the rotation of the disc. Well, Tesla discusses increasing the field strength of the magnets involved using his positive positioning of eddy currents but does it also have an effect on rotation itself? If so, would not this be especially true for Tesla’s system of increasing the field strength of weak magnets using a coil of wire, an electromagnet? As mentioned before, flowing electrical energy has a magnetic field that endlessly spirals outward. If you grabbed an electric wire, for instance, with your right hand so that your fingers curled upward and your thumb ran along the wire, the spin of the magnetic field would be in the same direction as your fingers were pointing. Current flowing the other way has the opposite field spin. This spin is what pushes against the metal conducting material of the disc, either in the direction of the rotation or against it, depending on the direction of rotation and the direction the current is flowing as it is being taken off the disc. Since the now electromagnets are opposite in relation to each other, they serve to drive the disc between them and forward just as two strong electric wires whose currents are going in opposite directions, propel a conducting projectile down their length in a rail gun.

This use of eddy current to positively spin the conducting disc is my interpretation, for whatever it is worth, but at least Tesla had apparently solved the back-torque issues within the disc itself. This only leaves back-torque issues of the brushes and perhaps current exiting the brushes. These are smaller issues.

Assuming all other back torque problems concerning brushes were solved, this machine would be making more energy than was required to operate it. All that is required at this point is enough energy to mechanically spin the machine. The way proposed to do this was by use of a homopolar motor. Electrical output from the homopolar generator is fed into the axis of the homopolar motor and the flowing current to its periphery spins the motor whose central shaft is attached directly to the homopolar generator (5).

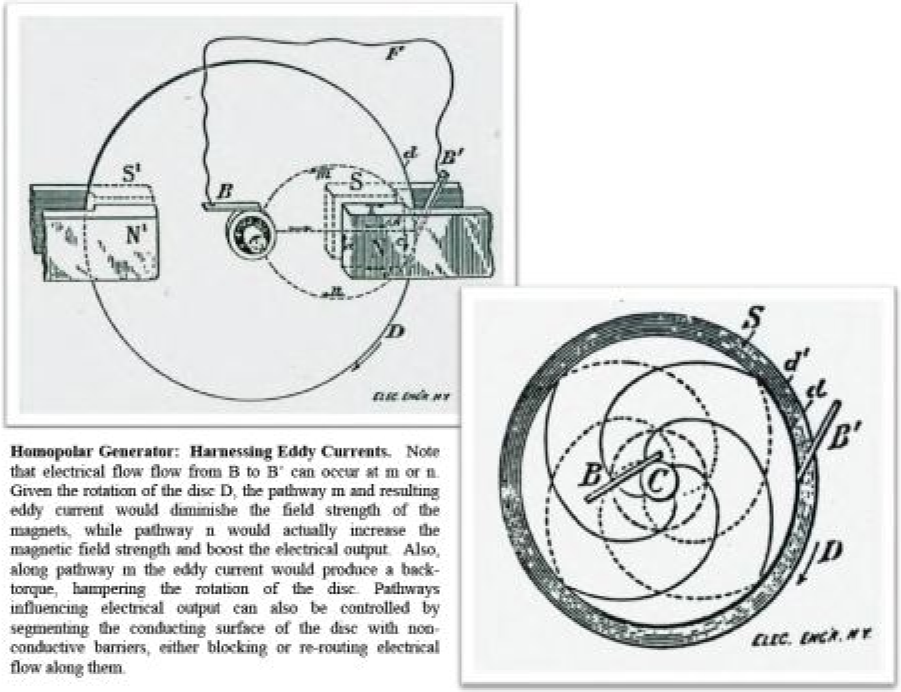

Homopolar Generator: Harnessing Eddy Currents. Note that electrical flow flow from B to B' can occur at m or n. Given the rotation of the disc D, the pathway m and resulting eddy current would diminishe the field strength of the magnets, while pathway n would actually increase the magnetic field strength and boost the electrical output. Also, along pathway m the eddy current would produce a back-torque, hampering the rotation of the disc. Pathways influencing electrical output can also be controlled by segmenting the conducting surface of the disc with non-conductive barriers, either blocking or re-routing electrical flow along them.

We are talking about something so efficient that it is approaching a free energy engine. And from its description, it could be called a “self-acting” engine. Unfortunately, Tesla had to discontinue work on this project so these ideas were never fully realized “for want of time” (4). Tesla’s thoughts on this subject were in the public domain and certainly could have been further developed by anyone, including Professor Paul Boehning at the University of Breslau in 1942 as reported by Dr. Hans Nieper at his conference in Germany and in his book, cited in the last chapter. This idea could have been passed along to Dr. Bruce DePalma but apparently were lost at least at this point as far as the public understanding is concerned. A further development by Professor Boehning in 1942 along the lines discussed by Tesla would be applicable to some of the unsolved mysteries we have encountered, such as how the Searl disc managed to autorotate without back torque and that, as we know, is also a lost secret.

Saying a device is a free-energy device or that it is auto-rotating or that it is self-inducting is really a case of describing the same thing using different words. The Schauberger device as well as the Searl disc were said to possess these properties, but is there anything less legendary, that exists in our tangible world today, which we can point to as an example of these ideas? In other words, is there an example that would indicate that such a feat as Tesla describes is a real possibility?

Remember the three variables involved in a homopolar generator, the radius of the disc, the speed of rotation and the strength of the magnetic field? Well, there are some modifications to these ideas. As Tesla says:

> *"For a certain speed there would be a maximum energizing action; then at higher speeds, it would gradually fall off to zero and finally reverse, that is, the resultant eddy current effect would be to weaken the field. The reaction would be best demonstrated experimentally by arranging the fields N S, N' S', freely movable on an axis concentric with the shaft of the disc. If the latter were rotated as before in the direction of the arrow D, the field would be dragged in the same direction with a torque, which, up to a certain point, would go on increasing with the speed of rotation, the fall off, and, passing through zero, finally become negative; that is, the field would begin to rotate in the opposite direction to the disc." (4)*

There is an optimum speed for energy production. Production can be increased only to a point at which it starts falling away to nothing (as rotational speed continues to increase) and then reverses itself. This is because the magnetic field is being drug around in a circle by the disc. Some people say that at the poles of a magnet there exists a vortex. Well, it appears that if you spin a magnetic field a vortex certainly results. This vortex has seems to have an inertia. At high speeds the "old" magnetic field cannot keep up with the "new" position of the magnetic field. This means two magnetic fields or two overlapping positions of one magnetic field (however one wants to look at it) are interacting. When two magnetic fields interact, electrical induction takes place. In this case it is hindering electrical output much like the eddy current going the wrong way.

This sounds very much like what happens to our earth. Earth’s magnetism has always been somewhat of a mystery as our molten iron-nickel core is conductive but not magnetized in the sense of a bar magnet. But its magnetic field waxes and wanes and finally reverses itself after eons just as a homopolar generator would do if its rotational speed were too fast. A disc is really just a slice of a sphere, so could earth’s magnetic field be somehow connected to self-sustaining homopolar technology? Here is what Dr. Thomas Valone has to say (note: Dr. Valone uses the abbreviation OPFG meaning one piece Faraday generator, a type of homopolar generator.)

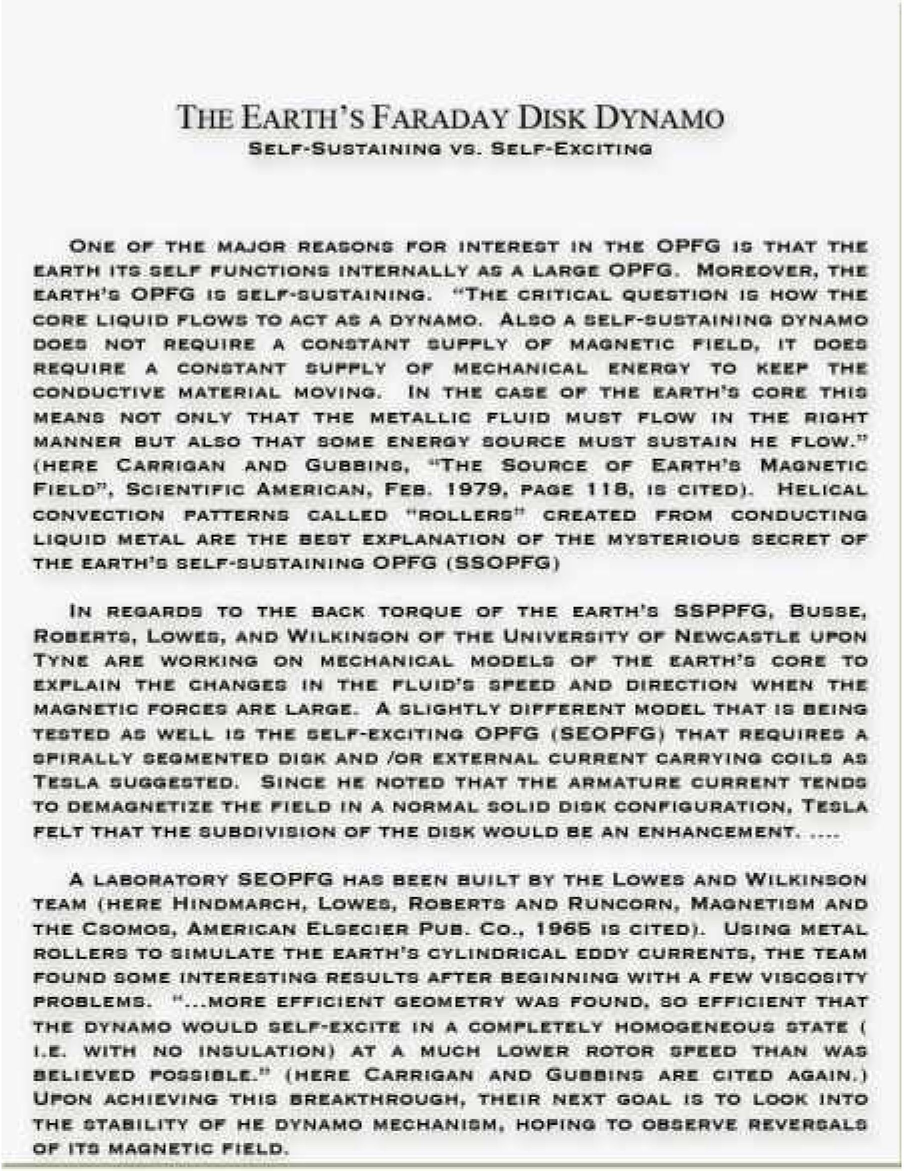

The Earth's Faraday Disk Dynamo

Self-Sustaining vs. Self-Exciting

One of the major reasons for interest in the OPFG is that the earth its self functions internally as a large OPFG. Moreover, the earth's OPFG is self-sustaining. "The critical question is how the core liquid flows to act as a dynamo. Also a self-sustaining dynamo does not require a constant supply of magnetic field, it does require a constant supply of mechanical energy to keep the conductive material moving. In the case of the earth's core this means not only that the metallic fluid must flow in the right manner but also that some energy source must sustain he flow." (here Carrigan and Gubbins, "The Source of Earth's Magnetic Field", Scientific American, Feb. 1979, page 118, is cited). Helical convection patterns called "rollers" created from conducting liquid metal are the best explanation of the mysterious secret of the earth's self-sustaining OPFG (SSOPFG)

In regards to the back torque of the earth's SSPPFG, Busse, Roberts, Lowes, and Wilkinson of the University of Newcastle upon Tyne are working on mechanical models of the earth's core to explain the changes in the fluid's speed and direction when the magnetic forces are large. A slightly different model that is being tested as well is the self-exciting OPFG (SEOPFG) that requires a spirally segmented disk and /or external current carrying coils as Tesla suggested. Since he noted that the armature current tends to demagnetize the field in a normal solid disk configuration, Tesla felt that the subdivision of the disk would be an enhancement. ....

A laboratory SEOPFG has been built by the Lowes and Wilkinson team (here Hindmarch, Lowes, Roberts and Runcorn, Magnetism and the Csomos, American Elsecier Pub. Co., 1965 is cited). Using metal rollers to simulate the earth's cylindrical eddy currents, the team found some interesting results after beginning with a few viscosity problems. "...more efficient geometry was found, so efficient that the dynamo would self-excite in a completely homogeneous state (i.e. with no insulation) at a much lower rotor speed than was believed possible." (here Carrigan and Gubbins are cited again.) Upon achieving this breakthrough, their next goal is to look into the stability of he dynamo mechanism, hoping to observe reversals of its magnetic field.

So here we are back to square one, looking for and finding a planetary model, as the Germans envisioned a field propulsion flying disc, or a model of energy generation reflecting the reality of heavenly bodies as envisioned by Dr. Paul Potter.

But we still have a couple mysteries to tie up. If a type of homopolar generator was used to produce electricity in a German U-boat, virtually nothing else would be necessary. This generator would tie into the U-boats electric drive and it could be used all by itself, without any diesel engine.

All that would be needed would be a small battery for starting. But was this really the new electric submarine engine that the US Navy was secretly installing, using the sign on the door “Danger Radiation” as an ultimate cover of secrecy? This is what I heard in the early 1990’s being mentioned on the Chuck Harder radio program which was syndicated all across rural America (but barred in urban areas—another story) at the time? Bill Lyne told me in private correspondence in 1999 that German submarines still held speed and “distance” records over our submarines. He also said that while he was in the military, he was told by a co-worker (circa 1957) that the US Navy was taking a second look at some kind of German highly efficient electric drive for submarines. In fact, the US Navy has taken patent applications from individual regarding new brushes for homopolar generators and/or told researchers they were to cease and desist even discussing details of such inventions, deemed essential for national security. Valone mentions three instances of such Navy restrictions in his book. (6) It is the US Navy that has this fanatic interest in homopolar generators. Why, for submarine propulsion? It will be left for the reader to reason why.

One more point regarding the US Navy but outside homopolar generators. William Lyne reminds us of the Howard Hughes Glomar Explorer and its sister ship the Glomar Challenger. These were built for the CIA and, as we all know now, used to hook onto and recover sunken Soviet submarines. Bill says they also had another purpose: to recover this German electric generator from scuttled U-boats:

> *“The Glomar Explorer, designed and built by Howard Hughes, was just another ‘fishing tool’. The purpose, however, was to retrieve military and energy secrets, such as the magnetic generators powering the underwater travel of he W.W.II Nazi U-boats. Such technology was within the reach of free-lance salvers. Once these secrets hit he public domain, the oil companies and Hughes Tool Company, as we know them, may become things of the past.” (7)*

One more thing: The reader will remember our mystery scientist, “Dr. Hans Ehrhardt/Engelke”, a Nazi scientist working, circa 1961-1963, for the Swiss and described in an earlier chapter? He was the guy who described the exact workings of the Zippermayr fuel-air bomb and recounted an actual use of the weapon even though it was kept secret and suppressed by the United States until the late 1990’s. He was the guy who described the inner workings of a laser, even before the word “laser” was coined, even describing bundling of light waves and producing a working example which melted snow miles away. Well, at that time the Swiss were also pressuring Ehrhardt/Engelke into renouncing a paper he had published titled “The New Path” where he described his idea for perpetual motion. This could have been nothing short of the Boehning homopolar motor-generator. The other mystery is what happened to Ehrhardt/Engelke when he and his family disappeared from Switzerland. It ought to be obvious by now that he got a better offer from the Third Power and so everything written by the US government with the assistance of the Swiss government using *Der Spiegel* as a vehicle, all this was just an attempt by these entities to try not look as stupid as they really were.

This chapter was the major hump, just a little more on the homopolar generator in the next chapter, but I promise it will be worth it.

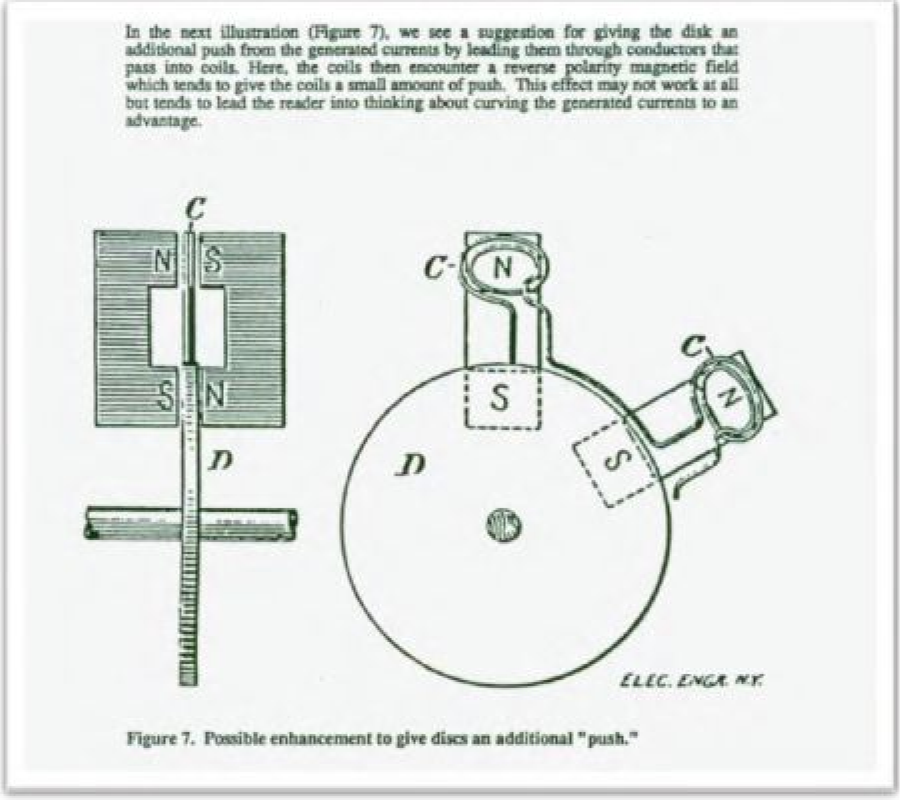

In the next illustration (Figure 7), we see a suggestion for giving the disk an additional push from the generated currents by leading them through conductors that pass into coils. Here, the coils then encounter a reverse polarity magnetic field which tends to give the coils a small amount of push. This effect may not work at all but tends to lead the reader into thinking about curving the generated currents to an advantage.

Figure 7. Possible enhancement to give discs an additional "push."

Homopolar Generator: Current Accumulator & Self-Acting Machine? This is from page 86 of the *Homopolar Handbook,* by Thomas Valone, M.A., P.E., now Ph.D. The caption explains how the disc itself increases the magnetic field strengths through the use of a small coil. The configuration may tend to push the disc between them, as a rail gun pushes a projectile.

Literature Cited

1. **X., Michael (Michael X. Barton), 1960**, *We Want You: Is Hitler Alive?*, page 36, Saucerian Books, Clarksville, WV., USA

2. **Lyne, William R., 1999**, *Space Aliens from the Pentagon* (3rd Edition), pages 283 and 284, Creatopia Productions, Lamy, NM., USA

3. **Tesla, Nikola, 2000**, *Nikola Tesla collected German And American Patents*, pages 292-294, MVV Peiting, Peiting, Germany

4. **Valone, Thomas, M.A., P.E. (now Ph.D.), 1994**, *The Homopolar Handbook A definitive Guide to Faraday Disk and N-Machine Technologies*, pages 171-172 (Dr. Valone reproduces the whole Electrical Engineer article by Tesla), Integrity Research Institute, Washington, D.C., USA

5. **Valone, Thomas, M.A., P.E. (now Ph.D.), 1994**, page 93

6. **Valone, Thomas, M.A., P.E. (now Ph.D., 1994**, pages iv, 71 and 145

7. **Lyne, William, R., 1993**, *Space Aliens from the Pentagon*, page 175, Creatopia Productions, Inc., Lamy, NM. USA

Part Three: Zusammenfassung

PUTTING IT ALL TOGETHER

The reader may recall mention being made of an article in *Mench und Schichsal* magazine by Claude Schweikhart from 1952, almost sixty years ago, talking about the Emrich - Team, the first investigative body ever to look into the esoteric Reich and the “Third Power”, and their mention of a “Laboratory of Death” in Greenland, probably at Beaver Dam, and another statement concerning flying U-boats? Translating, the passage reads:

> *“Interestingly enough the Emerich - Team recorded in such documents, obviously working together with the Third Power-hunting Yugoslavian radio news service, the existence of a “Laboratory of Death” somewhere in Greenland which was designated a city of technical satanism and in 1951 is to have tested a flying undersea boat.” (1)*

This comes from a long time ago and from something less than a scientific journal. It is “something”, whatever it is, but it is not conclusive on its own. Probably because of the way the UFO discussion was framed at the time, the whole idea of the Third Reich having a hand in UFO/USO matters was completely forgotten. It was just not fashionable to look in this direction at the time. The modern era of inquiry into the high technology of Nazi Germany only began in the middle to late 1980’s and then only hesitatingly. One of those first to do so was writer O. Bergmann who published two short books propounding the idea that later German flying discs were field propulsion powered and that there is absolutely no difference between a flying saucer and a flying U-boat at this point, they are exactly one and the same, and that these devices made their first appearance at the very end of the Second World War.

Bergmann bolstered his argument with the now familiar “Vril” and “Haunebu” diagrams, in fact he was the first to publish them, and with testimony from all over the world, covering decades, of mystery submersibles and of UFO’s entering and leaving the water. Again, a passage from the first of Bergmann’s books bears repeating:

> *“At sometime and someplace, at secret U-boat bases outside the German motherland, U-boats of the German Navy must have been weighed out, and, during the great withdrawal in April/May 1945, missing U-boats must have been equipped with new revolutionary technology and also must have been converted with electromagnetic propulsion. With this, those (U-boats) may, (have been) arranged with the same possibilities and technologies as the German flying discs (called UFOs). (2)*

Bergmann goes on and on making this point. As an example, another passage:

> *“UFOs or USOs are certainly not only observed within the seas and oceans and rivers, on the contrary also occasionally diving and surfacing on inland lakes, yes, even in ponds. We need not bother ourselves any more concerning the confusion on differing reports, if it is to be called only UFO, USO or still U-boat because (John) Keel had it completely correct, with the same electromagnetic propulsion it can be what it wants to be, the initial water craft would be able to operate in the air, as other flying craft, as well as the water. The two mediums, air and water, are interchangeable if one is fitted with this phenomenal propulsion, concerning which we have already more closely read in Hugin-Schrift: ‘Geheime Wunderwaffen’ Bd. III. They could maneuver mutually well in the air or water.” (3)*

The reference cited by Bergmann is the only older such modern reference, coming from D.H. Haarmann, 1983-1985.

So what do we have here? We have a revolutionary electromagnetic engine that was available to the Germans at the very end of the war. To more fully explain this, we must go right back into homopolar generators, this time to the work of Dr. Bruce DePalma (1935-1997).

Dr. Bruce DePalma was educated at M.I.T. and Harvard. DePalma made a breakthrough in the world of homopolar generators (HPG) by inventing a one-piece HPG that he named the “N machine”. DePalm combined the field magnets and the conducting disc into one. The disc contained the magnets and both spun as the original disc of the HPG. In fact, the disc can be a magnet. So all that is visible is a flywheel-like device, spinning on its shaft, with two brushes forming the electrical circuit and the electric motor supplying power to the spinning shaft. In fact, the N machine used a homopolar motor but in the motor, the magnets were not mounted on the wheel.

With his N machine, Dr. DePalma made claims of over-unity or near over-unity, off and on again, all the while making improvements in the design. The point here is not to delve into the ins and outs of HPGs but instead to focus on the origin of DePalma’s idea, for DePalma claims that the inspiration for the one-piece HPG came to him from an extraterrestrial source, which is called the “Sunburst Material” in the literature. This material seems to have influenced DePalma greatly and thereafter built his one-piece HPG. The Sunburst Material and its proponents lace their discussion with New Age and religious connotations, if not outright language. In this passage, an earthman is taken aboard and alien ship and given a tour, including the powerplant. It is as follows (4):

> *“During the course of this conversation we had been descending in an elevator, finally arriving at the level which contained the ship’s*

> *propulsion drive units. This level was gigantic and spanned the entire diameter of the ship's hull. Standing on a walk-way, we looked down on the drive systems which filled the whole immense area."*

At this point an alien apparently, (allegedly) speaks:

> *"My Son, the propulsion system which drives our mother Mu is patterned after the perfect design of The Great Central SuN-SoN. The application of vortexes by Devine Spirit on its infinite body of life force, as you know, generated the first ignition of Light. The visible expanding sphere of cession and all forces and images existing in it were projected outward from the center of The Great Central SuN-Son. A spinning, centripetal vortex projected into Spirit's infinite body of life-energy, producing a whirlpool. This thought-produced whirlpool began drawing Spirit's life-energy particles towards its center. Spirit's life-energy particles moving towards this center created directional lines of force for the pulling effects of magnetic attraction to operate on. This created a perpetual flow of life-energy particles into the vortex from the Eternal Sea of Life Energy. This accumulation of masses of life energy particles at this center of vortex, under tremendous pressure and friction, produced light and images. The masses of life energy particles were now shaped by Devine Consciousness into the images and forces Spirit wanted to see."*

Minus New Age and religious imagery, substituting ether for "life-energy", we find the underlying Black Sun concept from the days of the 3rd Reich. This imagery is discarded for the next paragraphs, which reminds me of Dr. Paul Potter:

> *"The propulsion unit on this ship operates upon the same devine principles. To create a vortex that would operate in this physical*

dimension in a similar manner, we must spin a physical object, which is, or which can be, magnetized. Spinning a magnetized object, we would create a vortex that would induce the energy in space to move towards its center. As the energy particles in space are drawn into the vortex by magnetic attraction, they would take orbital positioning around the center of the magnetic core. The accumulation of energy particles around the spinning magnetic center would generate a high-density magnetic field. With this condition we can create two poles, one at the center of the magnetic core, and one on the perimeter of the magnetic field. Here we can perpetually draw off energy in the form of positive and negative electrical currents. This the principle on which our propulsion units operate.

The outside perimeter of each disc carries twelve magnets. The simultaneous clockwise and counterclockwise rotation of these two discs creates two spinning magnetic fields. Here we can draw off electrical current from the central hubs on which the spin and the rapidly rotating outside perimeter. The generation of a perpetual flow of electrical energy from each disc will continue as long as the discs rotate. The space between the two discs is the area in which both spinning vortexes contact each other.. It is here that the two spinning magnetic fields create a gyroscopic effect on each other. The magnetic fields generated by the two discs are so intense that any other gravitational or magnetic lines of force are bent around this force field. Therefore, the object that contains the generators of this magnetic and gyroscopic effect creates its own gravity. The object, or in this case, the spaceship, generates its own force field which becomes so intense that the ship's hull exists in an anti-gravity space all its own."

Yes, it is similar to Dr. Paul Potter's work but Dr. Potter would have gone on to explain the underlying physics, the positive electrical forces that are positrons while the negative electrical forces are electrons. They are both generated by magnetic lines of force connecting and being torn apart by the rotating discs, only to reconnect and disconnect, endlessly. Positrons are anti-matter. These positrons are of such attractive-repulsive magnitude that the Biefield-Brown Effect (5) looks like a shadow in comparison and they can be made to collect on one side of these rotating discs while their opposite charge, the electrons, collect on the other side. The "spaceship" falls into the positive side, or rather, is driven which a huge force. And, do I have to say it, the Wewelsburg Black Sun symbol as an abstraction of the "twelve magnets", spirally segmented in the manner suggested by Tesla?

We pick up our "alien" narrator, mid-paragraph:

> *"Sometime in the future you could construct one half of the ship's drive systems and have an unlimited supply of electrical energy. This system would require no out-side sources of energy to run it, such as fossil fuels or atomic power. That generator would be self-perpetuating as it would produce more energy than it would take to run it! You would, therefore, have an unlimited supply of totally free energy."*

So one disc is the energy generator, two disc equal the field propulsion unit. And the way this is worded, it does not sound like the two-disc version is free energy, which was reserved for the one-disc version. I say this because there would be an energy cost to magnetic reconnection concept. Dr. Thomas Valone did run some tests in which two homopolar generators were run facing one another. (6) He found there was an increase of electric current production when they were run "together" but a 40% drop when they were run opposing each other. It is not stated in this study if these were like or opposing poles which were being run together nor was this test to measure positrons nor was it done to test field propulsion. This test was only designed to measure electrical output. We might deduce, however, that the running of opposed rotating magnets in the manner of the Sunburst machine would expend energy, not produce it.

The other deduction which can be made is that, now, we know precisely why the U.S. Navy and the Department Of Defense so heavily monitors and appropriates advances in homopolar generator research. They use it themselves and perhaps on a submarine and simply do not want the remainder of humanity to have such an advance. This also explains the Bergmann hypothesis that any field propulsion saucer can also be a submarine. Unfortunately, this seems to apply only to the saucer-shape, necessary for power production and not the typical submarine shape. Maybe we can figure out other shapes later.

One more thing needs to be said about the Sunburst Material that some readers have already picked up on. That is its resemblance to the theory for field propulsion put forth by the Vril Society. For the best explanation of the device allegedly used by the Vril Society, we go directly to the most authoritative source, Norbert Juergen-Ratthofer and Ralf Ettl in their book on the subject, Das Vril Projekt. In that work the “Jenseitsmachine” or “Jenseitsflugmachine” is described. This word “Jenseits” means, “ beyond”; “across”, or “on the other side”. I don’t think I am too far off in translating it “Interdimension” in this particular instance. With that caveat, the translation is as follows:

> *“In the year 1922 the Project “Jenseitsmachine” (Interdimenstional machine) was begun and now designated as the “Jenseitsmachine”. In the summer of this year a barn was built in a small region in the vicinity of Munich. A portion of these grounds were dug up, cracks in the plank-walls caulked. An additional shed was built. In this shed there soon collected itself all possible strange, technical, single parts…the “Jenseitsflugmacine” was set into production.*
>
> *It consisted of a disc of eight meters in diameter, over which a parallel lying disc of 6.5 meters in diameter was situated, and there under a further disc of seven meters in diameter. These three discs were set in*

> *the middle of a 1.8-meter diameter hole, in which, the 2.4-meter high propulsion assembly was mounted. Below the middle-body ran into a cone-shaped point, form that ran a huge pendulum reaching into the cellar that provided for the stabilization of the device.*

> *In active conditions presumably the top and bottom discs rotated in a counter-rotation direction in order first of all to build an electromagnetic rotation field and thereby at the same time to generate that "intercosmic vibration", which reigns in the dimensional sphere of "Green Lands". According to the principle of affinity of vibrations (resonance? —translator) shall, through this, the fundamental conditions for the "interdimensional flight" is built. The power assembly, the propulsion for the dimensional flight machine is as described: a peculiarly composed battery. Allegedly it concerned a special high-energy condenser for short interval energy-pulse values and served as a starter for the three discs, which, to be sure, formed at the same time, a special electric motor as well as an electric generator. The statements concerning the Jenseitsflugmachine are in any even insufficient, it is even possible that known misleading information was disseminated in order to guarantee secrecy." (7)*

Summarizing more of the text, the device was tested for two years. It was financed through German industry under the code name "JFM". The authors go on to say:

> *"With certainty the "Vril Power Unit" came from the "Jenseitsflugmachine" brought forth formally as the 'Schumann SM-Levitator'. (8)*

Again summarizing, in 1924 the device was brought to Augsburg and stored. This was perhaps at the Messerschmitt Works. Fifteen years later the first Haunebu (according to these writers) was first tested. Again translating:

> *“ ‘The Jenseitsmachine’ would be thereafter also the foundation of the ‘Thule-Triebwerk’ “. (9)*

The Jenseitsmachine differs from the Sunburst machine in that on the later only two counter-rotating magnetic fields were used. It is obvious from the discussing concerning the starter that the Jenseitsmachine is said to function as something like a homopolar motor-generator. Also, in this original telling of the tale, the word “Tachyon” or its derivatives are not used. In fact, it looks like this word “Thule-Tachyonator” seems to have first appeared in O. Bergmann’s first book of 1988 and then only preceded with the publisher, Hugin Gesellschaft’s disclaimer. This word “Tachyon” is not a German word. The Germans of the Nazi period would certainly have coined a word originating in their own language for such a new development. As it is, the word “Tachyon” was coined in the mid-1960’s by Dr. Gerald Feinberg and I have not found it in print until 1977. (10) (11) Since the original source did not include this word, the original can not be discredited out of hand as can the alleged technical drawings. (12) But it is interesting to note that only the Haunebu drawings are associated with this word “Tachyon”, while the Vril references (the type of craft under discussion here) describe the propulsion unit as “Schumann-Levitator” (13).

What has been done in this book so far is to discuss specific issues such as secret bases, secret technology, and U-boats while discussing theory and means for one type of field propulsion German flying disc in a less pointed way. What should be done now is to review all those ideas and assemble them in a straight-line manner so that what is being presented is perfectly clear.

It was noted that at least two German writers, D. H. Haarmann and O. Bergmann, the two earliest writers on the subject of both German saucers and mystery U-boats in our modern era, both say that the final German flying discs at the very end of the war functioned just as planets and heavenly bodies do. The rotate and it is in this rotation by which electromagnetic forces are generated by which gravity is overcome. They point to the rotating ring seen in these very late, and probably still experimental, flying saucers as part of the levitation mechanism.

From here we are guided by Renato Vesco, writing even earlier, toward a German firm which would have to have been involved in such work, Kreiselgeraete GmbH. This very word "Kreiselgeraete" means "gyro-devices" in English, and so Vesco's reference is clear. A flying saucer whose very body is in a high state of rotation, would need the technical know-how of a firm accustomed to dealing with exactly this type of force.

A Combined Intelligence Objectives file on Kreiselgeraete, GmbH. was obtained from the US government using the FOIA. It was a report actually done during the war, rather than a post-war white wash that sometimes occurs. It relied on a prisoner of war's testimony. Besides the plant in Berlin, Kreiselgeraete had a secret facility in Nieder Einiedel. That second, secret facility did experimental work in Lodz, Poland in association with another firm, Askania. The work done at this largely underground facility of Askania-Mitte was on "aircraft engines". Neither firm, Kreiselgeraete nor Askania made pistons, or crankshafts or propellers or even jet engines, yet they were working on aero-engines. How is that possible? These precision instrument makers could only have been working on aero-engines if those engines involved technology of which they were the masters as opposed to one of the usual German aircraft makers. This leads us to the conclusion that the engines involved were not only secret but also unusual.

Next we consider the work of Dr. Paul Potter in his book "Gravitational Manipulation of Domed Craft. Dr. Potter's basic idea is that what we call flying saucers operate on principles found operating in heavenly bodies. According to Dr. Potter, astrophysicists deal with these principles on a regular basis but they are largely unknown to those outside the field. Chief among these heavenly bodies are black holes and it is to black holes and their methods of energy production and manipulation that we should first turn in order to explain UFOs.

The very first of these heavenly principles of physics by which UFOs fly Dr. Potter calls magnetic reconnection. When two magnetic fields come into proximity the magnetic lines of force of both magnetic fields reach out to each other and form common bonds. As each of the magnetic fields of these two heavenly bodies are rotating, as they rotate the magnetic bonds of these magnetic lines of force are broken and immediately reform with the next line of force moving to meet it. Upon breaking and because of it, new particles are formed from the zero point. These are electrons and positrons (positive electrons).

At this point, given we are talking about a flying saucer, the electrons move outward and downward while the positrons move inward and upward. As we have seen with the Biefield-Brown Effect, the craft is pulled to the positive side. In this case, with positrons as opposed to simply positive charges as in Biefeld-Brown, the resulting forces are like Biefield-Brown on steroids, and the flying saucer immediately moves into the positron cone. In fairness to Dr. Potter, this magnetic reconnection principle is only the first and simplest of the ideas for UFO propulsion which he sets forth, but it is enough, alone, to explain the physics of German flying discs.

Dr. Potter then uses the Searl disc to explain his ideas. The idea of "reverse moment" (back torque) was raised by this writer. But this problem was allegedly solved by Dr. P. Boehning in 1942 who was said by Dr. Hans Nieper to have invented a motor (electric motor) which bypassed this problem and so had no reverse moment.

Since this concept of reverse moment or back torque involved eddy currents generated during the interaction of two magnetic fields (or a magnetic field through which a conductor is moving - or vice versa), the special situation of the Schauberger disc was discussed. It resembled the Searl disc in that little or no reverse moment or back torque was observed and both discs achieved auto-rotation once a certain speed had been achieved. Both discs also achieved levitation that was unexplained at the time it occurred.

After the war had ended, it was noted that the Nazi International set up scientific workshops in South America for the purpose of research and development of high technology. This included experimentation upon and production of flying discs. This coincided with the golden age of flying saucers in the late 1940s through the 1960s. Flying saucer accounts in and around South America abounded.

But it was also noted that a strange FBI report claimed a German inventor had discovered a new principle of “aerodynamics” and was trying to market this idea. His concept was not one based upon free energy in that he stated his method involved using motorcycle or auto engines. These engines produce movement of a spinning shaft, whose speed and torque can be harnessed for many uses but at its core is rotary motion.

The testimony of a retired colonel, known to UFO researcher Wendell Stevens was also discussed. He claimed that a German flying disc had been tested at Murdoc AFB (now Edwards AFB) in the 1950s. The basis of its propulsion, he claimed, was two counterrotating magnetic fields.

Work in homopolar generators/motors was also discussed. These electric generators were invaluable to the Germans for the production of specific electric current for rail gun experimentation as well as the electrolysis of water. Tesla’s thoughts on further development of homopolar generators was available to the Germans. According to Tesla, it was possible to harness the eddy currents generated in a homopolar generator. These homopolar generators bore a resemblance to both the Searl and Schauberger machines as well as to the fundamental, planetary, descriptions of early field propulsion German flying discs by writers Haarmann and Bergmann. Harnessing eddy currents rather than fighting them would allow a back-torque free electric generator to be built. This would certainly solve all problems concerning electric generation in the world of submarines and may have been instrumental in reports of German free-energy U-boats.

These ideas about harnessing eddy currents to power homopolar generators came from exactly the same place Dr. Paul Potter got his ideas, by the motions of heavenly bodies. In the case of the homopolar generator, it was the earth itself because the earth itself is a homopolar generator and uses eddy currents to intensify its own magnetic field. In fact, Tesla suggests gradually withdrawing any energizing magnets so that the homopolar generator energizes itself.

The Sunburst Material that suggested combining the magnets and the rotor into one unit, greatly influenced Dr. Bruce DePalma's work on the N-machine. The Sunburst Material also suggested combining two opposing and counter-rotating to produce levitation. The Vril Society proposed the same idea many years before.

The positioning of two or more rotating magnetic fields in such a way that Dr. Paul Potter's magnetic reconnection occurs, (the production of electrons and positrons), Dr. Potter's explanation of it, as well as the historic and cultural setting provided in the discussion, are enough to explain the origin and development of the smaller type of German flying disc in my mind. It is also enough to explain the USO sightings in which underwater object travel at amazing speeds (since the same principles would work underwater) and also exit the water and fly in the atmosphere as would a "normal" flying disc.

The fact that the idea of magnetic reconnection came from observations of heavenly bodies, especially black holes, is the least of our surprises. It may be that this concept, if first observed in the mid-1920s by the Vril Society, was one of the fundamental linchpins in the overall Black Sun concept.

It this explains the “Vril” type or “Magnetscheibe” flying disc in the reader’s mind then all that needs to be done is to explain the other type, the “Haunebu” type, which seems to have first appeared after World War Two. And perhaps this explanation will apply to some other devices also.

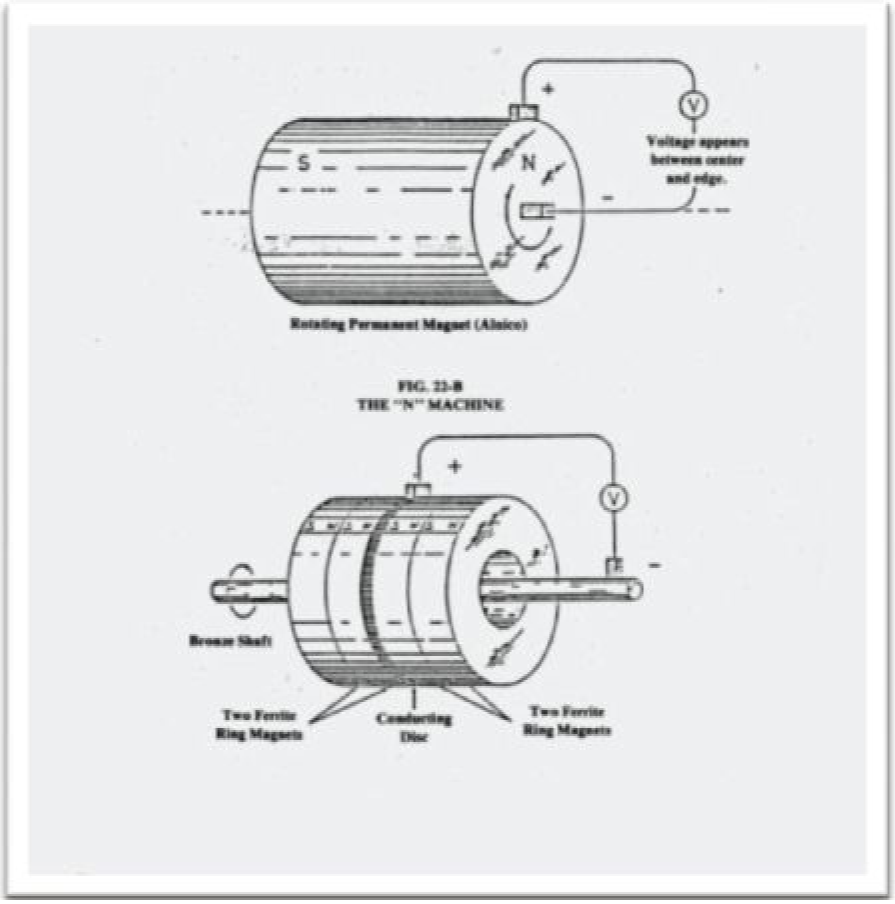
+
V
Voltage appears between center and edge.
S
N
-
Rotating Permanent Magnet (Alnico)
+
V
-
Bronze Shaft
Two Ferrite Ring Magnets
Conducting Disc
Two Ferrite Ring Magnets

FIG. 22-B
THE “N” MACHINE

Dr. Bruce DePalma’s “N”-Machine The N-machine is a type of homopolar generator in which the rotating disc or cylinder is itself a magnet. The fact that an external magnet is lacking and the magnetic disc itself is rotating has no influence on the output of the machine.

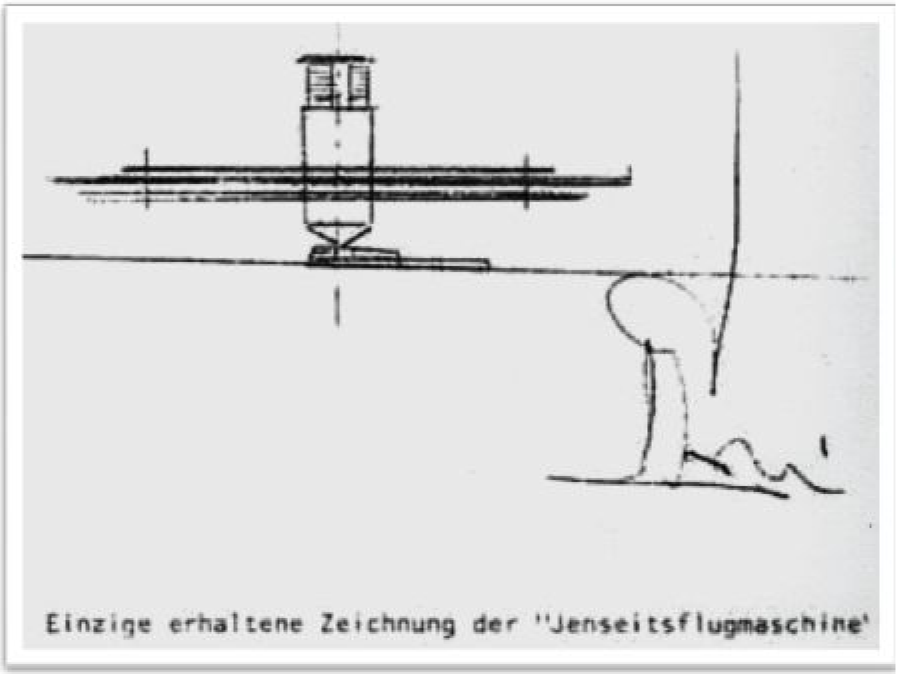
Einzige erhaltene Zeichnung der "Jenseitsflugmaschine"

The Vril Society's *Jenseitsflugmachine*. This is the only depiction of that machine available, and originates with the material of Norbert Juergen-Rathoffer and Ralf Ettl. The three rotating discs can be seen in the drawing.

Literature Cited

1. **Schweikhart, Claude writing in Mench und Schicksal (magazine), August, 1952**, in an article titled: Um Krone und Gipfel der Welt, 6. Jahrg./NR. 10

2. **Bergmann, O., 1988**, *I Deutsche Flugscheiben und U-Boote Ueberwachen Die Weltmeere*, page 18, Hugin Gesellschaft Fuer Politisch-Philosophische Studien E. V., Wetter/Ruhr, Germany

3. **Bergmann, O., 1988**, page 20

4. **Valone, Thomas, M.A., P.E., (now Ph.D.), 1994**, *The Homopolar Handbook*, pages 138-140, Integrity Research Institute, Washington, D.C., USA

5. **Stevens, Henry, 2003**, *Hitler's Flying Saucers*, pages 134-135, Adventures Unlimited Press, Kempton, Illinois, USA (as well as many other sources discussing the Biefield-Brown Effect)

6. **Valone, Thomas, M.A., P.E. (now Ph.D.), 1994**, pages 15-17

7. **Juergen-Rathoffer, Norbert, and Ralf Ettl, 1992**, *Das Vril Projekt - Der Endkampf Der Erde!*, page 27-28, privately published.

8. *ibid.*

9. *ibid.*

10. **Stevens, Henry, 2003**, pages 221-222

11. **Feinberg, Gerald, Ph.D., 1977**, *What Is The World Made Of?*, Anchor Press/Doubleday, Garden City, NY., USA

12. **Bergmann, O., 1988**, pages 63-64 (and numerous other references including hundreds of internet sites)

13. *ibid*

HAUNEBU

As I have said before, in my mind the flying craft type called "Haunebu" is a post-war creation, at least in its operational version. A Haunebu craft is a larger flying saucer, at least 30 feet or so in diameter, with a classic dome on its upper side, and without any indication of rotating discs, wheels or parts.

There are alleged photographs of Haunebu craft that are said to date from the war years, but these photographs all come from one source. This one source was an anonymous package dropped off in England for researcher Ralf Ettl, who was working there on an unrelated project at the time. It seems that the fundamental basis—if not the entirety—of the Ettl/Juergen-Ratthofer explanation resides in this anonymous package. The date was in the late 1980's, far enough into the computer age that some kind of investigation into the authenticity or possible alteration of any photographs within it would seem in order (1).

Besides the photographs and explanation offered by Ralf Ettl and Norbert Juergen-Ratthofer, there are the numerous and worldwide eyewitness sightings, photographs and videotapings of these craft in the early 1950's. George Adamski, a Polish immigrant living in California, took excellent photographs of these objects and even offered an explanation of their presence (he believed they came from the planet Venus). Hence their alternate name, "Adamski Craft". Of course we know now much more than we did in the 1950's. We know that Venus is about 900 degrees Farenheit on its surface, and that its atmosphere contains about 97% carbon dioxide with clouds of billowing sulfuric acid. Soviet space probes were hard put to even last long enough in that atmosphere to land and make a short transmission.

So if the documented sightings of the early 1950’s were not of craft from Venus, then what were they? Where did these craft come from and how did they fly? Where they came from ought to be obvious by now, but we will discuss this in more detail later. How they managed to levitate has already been answered. They levitated exactly as did the Vril craft—or Magnetscheibe—by the production of positrons through magnetic reconnection as described by Dr. Paul Potter. The Haunebu just used different technology to achieve the same ends.

The first clues come from the two scientists who did a ground floor evaluation of Karl Schappeller, his home, his home area, witnesses and the Schappeller technology itself. Their conclusion was that the technology involved was first introduced by Tesla, and that Schappeller experimented exclusively with Tesla ideas. So does this mean we ought to be looking for clues to Haunebu secrets by looking at old Tesla stuff? Why not? It already seems that Tesla has been involved in the smaller type of field propulsion German flying disc.

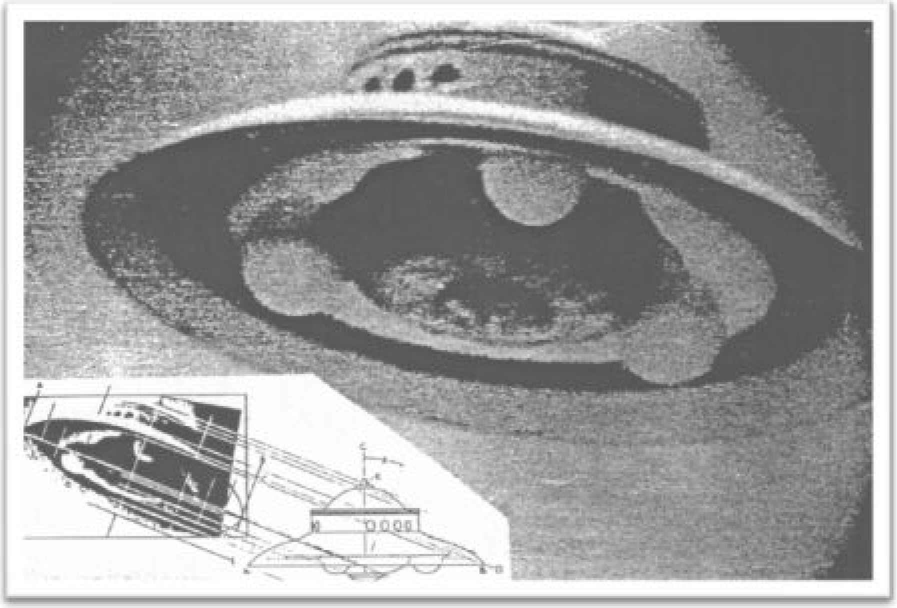

Haunebu. Haunebu craft were first noticed in the early 1950’s, worldwide. One of the first to photograph them extensibly was George Adamski, giving them their alternate name of

> “Adamski Craft” at that time. Here is Adamski’s December 13, 1952 photograph alongside alleged drawings of the Haunebu for comparison. Please note the three globes on the underside and the globular nature of the craft minus the surrounding disc.

But in looking through the book of Tesla patents, nothing even remotely similar seems to present itself. Nevertheless, there are a couple of clues in Tesla’s writing. We have already taken a peek at both of these but they ought to be considered, now, in this present context.

> *“I was confident, however, that with properly designed machinery signals could be transmitted to any point of the globe, no matter what the distance, without the necessity of using such intermediate stations. I gained this conviction through the discovery of a singular electrical phenomenon, which I described early in 1892, in lectures delivered before some scientific societies abroad, and which I have called a ‘rotating brush’. This is a bundle of light which is formed, under certain conditions, in a vacuum-bulb, and which is of a sensitiveness to magnetic and electric influences bordering, so to speak, on the supernatural. This light bundle is rapidly rotated by the earth’s magnetism as many as twenty thousand times per second, the rotation in these parts being opposite to what it would be in the southern hemisphere, while in the region of the magnetic equator it should not rotate at all. In its most sensitive state, which is difficult to attain, it is responsible to electric or magnetic influences to an incredible degree. The mere stiffening of the muscles of the arm and consequent slight electrical charge in the body of an observer standing at some distance from it, will perceptibly affect it. When in this highly sensitive state it is capable of indicating the slightest magnetic and electrical changes taking place in the earth. The observation of this wonderful phenomenon impressed me strongly that communications at any distance could be easily effected by its means, provided that apparatus could be perfected capable of producing and electric or magnetic*

> *change of state, however small, in the terrestrial globe or envisioning medium.” (2)*

So here we have a bundle of light, rapidly rotating in a vacuum-bulb that is supersensitive to other magnetic fields. Tesla mentions lecturing on the subject, a clue. Tesla goes on to explain how important this invention was to him.

> *“This conclusion I reached, I think, in the latter part of 1883, when I was in Paris, and it was at a time when my mind was being more and more dominated by an invention which I had evolved during the preceding year, and, which has since become known under the name of the ‘rotating magnetic field’. During the few years that followed I made little headway. The commercial introduction in this country of the invention before referred to required most of my energies until 1889, when I again took up the idea of the self-acting machine.” (3)*

This “rotating brush” renamed “rotating magnetic field” dominated Tesla’s mind for six years! Fortunately, one of the lectures Tesla gave describing this device has been found along with Tesla’s diagrams explaining the device. Joining Tesla’s lecture midstream:

> *“I think it best at this juncture to bring before you a phenomenon, observed by me some time ago, which to the purely scientific investigator may perhaps appear more interesting than any of the results which I have the privilege to present to you this evening.*

It may be quite properly ranked among the brush phenomena — in fact, it is a brush, formed at, or near, a single terminal in high vacuum.

In bulbs provided with a conducting terminal, though it be of aluminum, the brush has but an ephemeral existence, and cannot, unfortunately, be indefinitely preserved in its most sensitive state, even in a bulb devoid of any conducting electrode. In studying the phenomenon, by all means a bulb having no leading-in wire should be used. I have found it best to use bulbs constructed as indicated in Figs. 141 and 142.

In Fig. 141 the bulb comprises an incandescent lamp glove L, in the neck of which is sealed a barometer tube b, the end of which is blown out to form a small sphere s. This sphere should be sealed as closely as possible in the centre of the large globe. Before sealing, a thin tube t, of aluminum sheet, may be slipped in the barometer tube, but it is not important to employ it.

The small hollow sphere s is filled with some conducting powder, and a wire w is cemented in the neck for the purpose of connecting the conducting powder with the generator.

The construction shown in Fig. 142 was chosen in order to remove from the brush any conducting body that might possibly affect it. The bulb consists in this case of a lamp globe L, which has a neck n, provided with a tube b and small sphere s, sealed to it , so that two entirely independent compartments are formed, as indicated in the *drawing. When the bulb is in used the neck n is provided with a tinfoil coating, which is connected to the generator and acts inductively upon the moderately rarefied and highly conducted gas enclosed in the neck. From there the current passes through the tube b into the small sphere s, to act by induction upon the gas contained in the globe L.*

It is of advantage to make the tube t very thick, the hole through it very small, and to blow the sphere s very thin. It is of the greatest importance that the sphere s be placed in the centre of the globe L.

Figs. 143, 144 and 145 indicate different forms, or stages, of the brush. Fig. 143 shows the brush as it first appears in a bulb provided with a conducting terminal; but, as in such a bulb it very soon disappears —-often after a few minutes —-I will confine myself to the description of the phenomenon as seen in a bulb without conducting electrode. It is observed under the following conditions;

When the globe+ L (Figs. 141 and 142) is exhausted to a very high degree, generally the bulb is not excited upon connecting the wire w (Fig.141) or the tinfoil coating of the bulb (Fig. 142) to the terminal of the induction coil. To excite it, it is usually sufficient to grasp the glove L with the hand. Intense phosphorescence then spreads at first over the glove, but soon gives place to a white, misty light. Shortly afterward one may notice that the luminosity is unevenly distributed in the globe, and after passing the current for some time the bulb appears as in Fig. 144. From this stage the phenomenon will gradually pass to that indicated in Fig. 145, after some minutes, hours, days or weeks, according as the bulb is worked. Warming the bulb or increasing the potential hastens the transit.

When the brush assumes the form indicated in Fig. 145, it might be brought to a state of extreme sensitiveness to electrostatic and magnetic influence. The bulb hanging straight down from a wire, and all objects being remote from it, the approach of the observer at a few paces from the bulb will cause the brush to fly to the opposite side, and if he walks around the bulb it will always keep on the opposite side. It may begin to spin around the terminal long before it reaches that sensitive stage. When it begins to turn around, principally, but also before, it is affected by a magnet, and at a certain stage it is susceptible to magnetic influence to an astonishing degree. A small permanent magnet, with its poles at a distance of no more than two centimeters, will affect it visibly at a distance of two meters, slowing down or accelerating the rotation according to how it is held relatively to the brush. I think I have observed that at the stage when it is most sensitive to magnetic, it is not most sensitive to electrostatic, influence. My explanation is, that the electrostatic attractions between the brush and the glass of the bulb, which retards the rotation, grows much uicker than the magnetic influence wen the intensity of the stream is increased.

When the bulb hangs with the globe L down, the rotation is always clockwise. In the southern hemisphere it would occur in the oppose direction and on the equator the brush should not turn at all. The rotation may be reversed by a magnet kept at some distance. The brush rotates best, seemingly, when it is at right angles to the lines of force of the earth. It very likely rotates, when at its maximum speed, in synchronism with the alterations, say 10,000 times a second. The rotation can be slowed down or accelerated by the approach or receding of the observer, or any conducting body, but it cannot be reversed by putting the bulb in any position. When it is in the state of the highest sensitiveness and the potential or frequency varied, the sensitiveness is rapidly diminished. Changing either of these but little *will generally stop the rotation. The sensitiveness is likewise affected by the variations of temperature. To attain great sensitiveness it is necessary to have the small sphere s in the centre of the globe L, as otherwise the electrostatic action of the glass on the glove will tend to stop the rotation. The sphere s should be small and of uniform thickness; any dissymmetry of course has the effect to diminish the sensitiveness.*

The fact that the brush rotates in a definite direction in a permanent magnetic field seems to show that in alternating currents of very high frequency the positive and negative impulses are not equal, but that one always preponderates over the other.

Of course, this rotation in one direction may be due to the action of the two elements of the same current upon each other, or to the action of the field produced by one of the elements upon the other, as in a series motor, without necessarily one impulse being stronger than the other. The fact that the brush turns, as far as I could observe, in any position, would speak for this view. In such case it would turn at any point of the earth's surface. But, on the other hand, it is then hard to explain why a permanent magnet should reverse the rotation, and one must assume the preponderance of impulses of one kind.

As to the cause of the formation of the brush or stream, I think it is due to the electrostatic action of the globe and the dissymmetry of the parts. If the small bulb s and the globe L were perfect concentric spheres, and the glass throughout of the same thickness and quality, I think the brush would not form, as the tendency to pass would be equal on all sides. That the formation of the stream is due to an irregularity is apparent from the fact that it has the tendency to remain in one *position, and rotation occurs most generally only when it is brought out of this position by electrostatic or magnetic influence. When in an extremely sensitive state it rests in one position, most curious experiments may be performed with it. For instance, the experimenter may, by selecting a proper position, approach the hand at a certain considerable distance to the bulb, and he may cause the brush to pass off by merely stiffening the muscles of he arm. When it begins to rotate slowly, and the hands are held at a proper distance, it is impossible to make even the slightest motion without producing a visible effect upon the brush. A metal plate connected to the other terminal of the coil affects it at a great distance, slowing down the rotation often to one turn a second.*

I am firmly convinced that such a brush, when we learn how to produce it properly, will prove a valuable aid in the investigation of he nature of the forces acting in an electrostatic or magnetic field. If there is any motion that is measurable going on in the space, such a brush ought to reveal it. It is so to speak, a beam of light, frictions, devoid of inertia.

I think that it may find practical applications in telegraphy. With such a brush I would be possible to send dispatches across the Atlantic, for instance, with any speed, since its sensitiveness may be so great that the slightest changes will affect it. If it were possible to make the stream more intense and very narrow, its deflections could be easily photographed.

I have been interested to find whether there is a rotation of the stream itself, or whether there is simply a stress traveling around the bulb. For this purpose I mounted a light mica fan so that its vanes were in *the path of the brush. If the stream itself were rotating the fan would be spun around. I could produce no distinct rotation of the fan, although I tried the experiment repeatedly; but as the fan exerted a noticeable influence on the stream, and the apparent rotation of the latter was, in this case, never quite satisfactory, the experiment did not appear to be conclusive.*

I have been unable to produce the phenomenon with the disruptive discharge coil, although every other of these phenomena can be well produced by it —-many, in fact, much better than with coils operated from an alternator. It may be possible to produce the brush by impulses of one direction, or even by a steady potential, in which case it would be still more sensitive to magnetic influence.” (4)

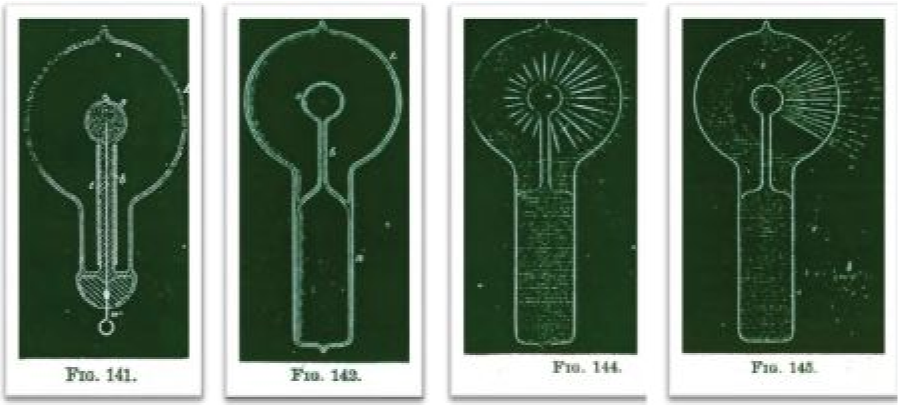

FIG. 141. FIG. 142. FIG. 144. FIG. 145.

Tesla’s Drawings of his “Brush”. This is clearly the prototype upon which Karl Schappeller based his work. Fig. 141 shows the incandescent lamp glove *L,* in the neck a sealed barometer tube *b*, the end of which is blown out, forming a small sphere *s*, which was sealed after being filled with a conducting metallic powder. An electrical connection was made, turning the metallic powder into a rapidly-spinning plasma vortex.

We have a conductive powder inside a small glass bulb, connected to a source of electricity. Outside of this, surrounding it, we have a more or less a glass, standard vacuum tube. When connected to an electricity source, this powder instantly becomes a bright, rapidly rotating ball which is supersensitive to magnetism, electrostatics or even the human bodies own internal electric discharges.

This was apparently the phenomena which fascinated our next inventor, Karl Schappeller. Schappeller created a device consisting to outer half shells fitted together as a globe. Inside the metal is a ceramic insulating material. Also inside and pointing toward each other at the poles are two permanent iron magnets. Surrounding the hollow center is a conductive coil that evidently induces electricity. The hollow center itself is filled with what Schappeller calls “glowing magnetism” which Schappeller’s student, the English engineer Cyril Davson, reports is 1000 times stronger than magnetism “of present magnetism”. (5)

Schappeller’s description, “glowing magnetism” is interesting since he would have never seen this phenomenon though the metal and ceramic walls. Schappeller must have started with Tesla’s glass bulb method and observed this form himself first. He must have also charged two such devices at the same time in order to achieve magnetic reconnection. The two moving magnetic fields would interact, connect and disconnect their lines of force as they spun in proximity, reconnecting as they do so and as they do so producing electrons and positrons from the zero point as explained by Dr. Paul Potter. Any tendency to slow their rotation in this interaction (back torque) could be offset by an increase in potential or frequency to the two spinning brush vortices, just as Tesla says. With two such devices or one device in the company of a revolving magnetic field around it, magnetic reconnection would occur and both bulbs would begin to levitate. This is what must have perked Schappeller’s interest.

Instead of using whatever name this has gone by in the past, “rotating brush”, “rotating magnetic field” or “glowing magnetism” it is evident that we are speaking about what we now call plasma and in fact plasma vortices or plasmoids. This plasma, in this case has had its entropy lowered that is it is organized, as evidenced by the vortex and the symmetrical magnetic field. This plasma has been given a specific shape by the small glass bulb or by the permanent iron magnets of the Schappeller device that must hold the plasma in place at the center of the device. Something else is evident: It is rotating and has a magnetic field of its own which run from top to bottom or pole to pole of the ball of plasma. One has to wonder how different this is from what is observed in the natural world as ball lightning and if all the remarks made about German experimentation with ball lightning, both during and after the war, had some basis in fact.

Another point, there is no doubt that Schappeller envisioned a flying device resulting from his work. Davson mentions “ether ships” powered by the Schappeller device by name twice. (6) But Schappeller also built a coil into his machine which seems to have nothing to do with levitation, rather with electrical generation.

As mentioned earlier, several Europeans are researching Schappeller at the moment so I want to wait this analysis rather than commenting further myself on Schappeller. But from Schappeller this technology clearly found its way to the researchers at the Reichsarbeitsgemeinschaft (RAG), a governmental organization charged with energy independence for Germany at a time between the two World Wars. So the RAG was primarily not interested in levitation but nevertheless freely commented on this as being contained among the properties of the device they were building.

> *“The new dynamic technology will enable, in the future, electric locomotives and automobiles to be made without expensive armatures and though circuit-connection to the atmospheric voltage-net to be pushed forward. Prerequisite is that, all things considered, the installation of many sufficient amplification facilities (centers) with transmit the specific “magnetic impulse” given from the Ur-machine to the dynamic globe-elements. Novel aircraft with magneto-static propulsion and steering, which are crash proof and safe from colliding*

> *with each other could be built for a fraction of the cost of today's aircraft — and without lengthy training of every person attending (the machines).”(7)*

In conjunction with their discussion on energy production and levitation of aircraft the RAG describes how this all looks to the observer. They propose using seven globes, five surrounding one in the center with one positioned above this center globe. The five feed the center globe and when it reaches some point of saturation, specific magnetic impulses are sent the seventh. This is what they describe as an Ur-machine. The reader may recall from depictions of the Haunebu machines that there are sometimes three globes visible and presumably one or two larger ones within the body of the craft. The three smaller globes may have an additional function in steering the craft but they also may interact with the globes in the body of the craft to produce magnetic reconnection and the lift producing positrons that result.

In the chapter on repositories Switzerland was mentioned. Also found in Switzerland are the Billy Meier craft, the alleged “Pleiadian Beamships”. These craft are usually depicted with multiple globes visible on the outside of the saucer as if stuck there with glue. According to the interpretation given here, these globes are just additional levitation devices. Dr. Axel Stoll minces no words in debunking the extraterrestrial hypothesis of an alleged Pleiadian woman, “Semjase”, who has blonde hair, is pretty, and speaks German perfectly. Thinking that this similarity was even beyond the most extreme case of parallel evolution, Dr. Stoll moves on to the saucers themselves saying they obviously have to do with further developed Haunebu craft. (8) This is so obvious it is wondered how it could ever be disputed.

Along with the Haunebu type of saucer, this technology would also be suitable for the cigar-shaped flying craft as well as the similarly shaped underwater, unidentified submerged objects. Just as would the two counterrotating magnetic wheels of the previous homopolar generator inspired devices. For a submarine, the engine should probably be mounted in the front of the ship or perhaps one at the front and one at the rear for forwards and backwards motion. In other words William R. Lyne, all those old German sources, D. H. Haarmann and O. Bergmann are all probably correct, U-boats can fly, sometimes.

Literature Cited

1. **Stevens, Henry, 2003**, *Hitler's Flying Saucers*, page 159, Adventures Unlimited Publishing, Kempton, Illinois, USA

2. **Tesla, Nikola, edited by David Hatcher Childress, 2000**, *The Tesla Papers Nikola Tesla on Free Energy & Wireless Transmission of Power*, page 66, Adventures Unlimited Publishing, Kempton, Illinois, USA

3. **Tesla, Nikola, edited by David Hatcher Childress, 2000**, page 56

4. **Martin, Thomas Commerford, 1995**, *The Inventions, Researches and Writings of Nikola Tesla*, Second Edition, pages 226-231, Barnes & Nobel, N.Y., NY., USA

5. **Davson, Cyril W., 1956**, *The Physics Of The Primary State Of Matter*, page 231, Neill & Co. Ltd., Edinburgh, Scotland

6. **Davson, Cyril, W., 1956**, pages 199, 240

7. **Taeufer, Johannes, 1930**, *"Vril" Die Cosmische Urkraft Wiedergebaut von Atlantis* (issued on order from the Reichsarbeitsgemeinschaft) Astrologischer Verlag Wilhelm Becker, Berlin-Steglitz, Germany

8. **Stoll, Axel, Ph.D., 2001**, *Hochtechnologie im Dritten Reich*, page 83, Amun Verlag, Schleusesiedlung, Germany

MAMAS, DON'T LET YOUR SONS GROW UP TO BE BELL-BOYS

In this chapter we will take a look at the Bell (die Glocke). We are going to look at the structure of the device itself as well as its properties. We are also going to look at the potential or possibilities of the Bell. And we are going to consider the Bell in relationship to the other devices discussed.

Dr. Joseph Farrell says:

> *"The Bell was a gateway technology, a hyper-dimensional torsion-based technology that the Nazis had developed to investigate its potential applications in three areas:*
>
> *1. As a means to tap into the zero-point energy, or, to phrase it differently, the energy of the physical medium of space-time itself;*
> *2. As a means to manipulate gravity itself, i.e. as an advanced prototypical field propulsion technology; and*
> *3. As a means to the ultimate, potentially planet-busting, weapon.*
>
> *The conceptual key to the achievement of all these effects was the manipulation of rotating magnetic fields by means of the counter-rotation of a plasma within the device itself." (1)*

Please consider this last sentence again in light of the Tesla to Schappeller to Reichsarbeitsgemeinschaft connection. The Bell falls right in.

Personally, I have had many thoughts about the Bell and many changes of mind concerning it. The Bell seems to have been everything to everyone. It had to be a weapon or Hitler would not have continued funding it in the last year of the war, right? If Otto Cerney is to be believed, the Bell (Cerney does not name the device) was the subject of “experiments in time”. (2) And yet the real experts on the subject, Igor Witkowski, Dr. Joseph Farrell, and aerospace expert Nick Cook all believe this device was an engine for levitation. The Bell discharged some sort of radiation that simply killed everything near it. And since there is a possibility that a radioactive substance was one of its main ingredients, a substance perhaps resembling red mercury, was it not possible that this device worked like a non-exploding neutron bomb? And finally, besides the Otto Cerney report, Dr. Axel Stoll said recently on an episode of UFO Hunters, an American TV series dealing with UFOs, that the Bell did influence time.

How could all these properties be incorporated into one device? How could any of this be explained? Everyone has had a go at this, at least as regards a flying device, so here is my take on this and if it is totally wrong, then I am sure Igor Witkowski, Dr. Joseph Farrell, Nick Cook and Dr. Axel Stoll will set the record straight.

First, let us look at the structure of the Bell. For this we are going to rely on the analysis of Dr. Joseph Farrell who often cites Igor Witkowski, the man originally giving us his information. Starting from the inside out, the Bell’s inner-most component was a hollow core, forming the Bell’s axis.

> *“The axis was formed by quite an unusual core, with a diameter of a dozen or so, to twenty centimeters, with its lower end fixed to ‘the Bell’s massive pedestal. It was made of a heavy, hard metal. Before each trial some kind of ceramic, oblong container was placed in the core (It was defined as a ‘vacuum flask’...), surrounded by a layer of lead approx. 1-1.5 m long and filled with a strange, metallic substance, with a violet-gold hue...” (2)*

Around this lay two cylinders or drums that rotated in opposite directions. It is unknown if one drum rotated inside the other or one was on top of the other.

> *“The main part of ‘the Bell’ was made up of two massive cylinders-drums around one meter in diameter, which during the experiment spun in opposite directions a tremendous speeds. The drums were made of a silvery metal and rotated around a common axis.” (4)*

> *“Mercury, this time already in pure form, was present inside the spinning cylinders. Before the start of the experiment, and perhaps also for its duration, the mercury was intensively cooled.” (5)*

So the mercury inside the drums was different from the mercury inside the central cylinder. All known and or conventional compounds of mercury are solids, the mercury in the cylinder must have been charged up in a nuclear reactor and came out as a thick liquid as red mercury does. This would be yet another variant on the red mercury formula. Meanwhile, the mercury inside the cylinder/drums was conventional mercury and must have had a different purpose.

> *“The entire device, i.e. the cylinders and core was covered with the aforementioned ceramic housing, of a bell-like shape...”(6)*

At least one output from the Bell was one of some sort of high radiation. It made a noise that has been compared to that of a beehive. A strong magnetic field was detected. Electric effects were apparent as electronics in he vicinity were overloaded, presumably by induction. Finally, bluish light, bluish phosphorescence was noticed on the Bell. (7)

So what do we have here? First, let us just consider levitation. We have a device whose central core was hollow and filled with a type of special conducting material. It was connected to an electric source and ionized, forming plasma. Meanwhile, the two cylinders, filled with mercury, were set into their counterrotating motion. The mercury, an excellent conductor used for electric switches, was deeply cooled. This is obviously for a superconductor effect. Once a superconductor is charged, it remains charged with no further electrical input being necessary. This charge, circulating around and around the cylinder in the mercury would have produced a huge magnetic field. Perhaps through rotation of the highly charged cylinders, the central core ionized material was wrapped into a vortex or plasmoid. As we know from looking at the work of Tesla and Schappeller, this plasmoid generated a huge magnetic field. This huge magnetic field had two counterrotating, superconducting cylinder/drums moving through its field, each with its own huge magnetic field. The electromagnets reacting to each other and the central plasmoid are causing Dr. Paul Potter’s magnetic reconnection to occur as magnetic lines of force are joined and pulled apart only to be rejoined, continually. This magnetic reconnection is generating positrons and electrons. Dr. Potter contends the positrons gather at the top of the device and the electrons at the bottom. The device or any matter falls into the positron rich area and is pushed by the electron rich area in a super Biefield-Brown Effect. Hence, we have levitation. And this form of levitation is in-line with the earlier inventions from the Searl disc to the Vril Society and their three rotating magnetic fields to Schauberger to the Reichsarbeitsgemeinschaft, to the Magnetscheibe, to the Haunebu, and perhaps even to Bergmann’s electromagnetic-flying U-boats, even to Bruce DePalma’s alien source. In fact, they are all exactly the same thing but achieved through different mediums.

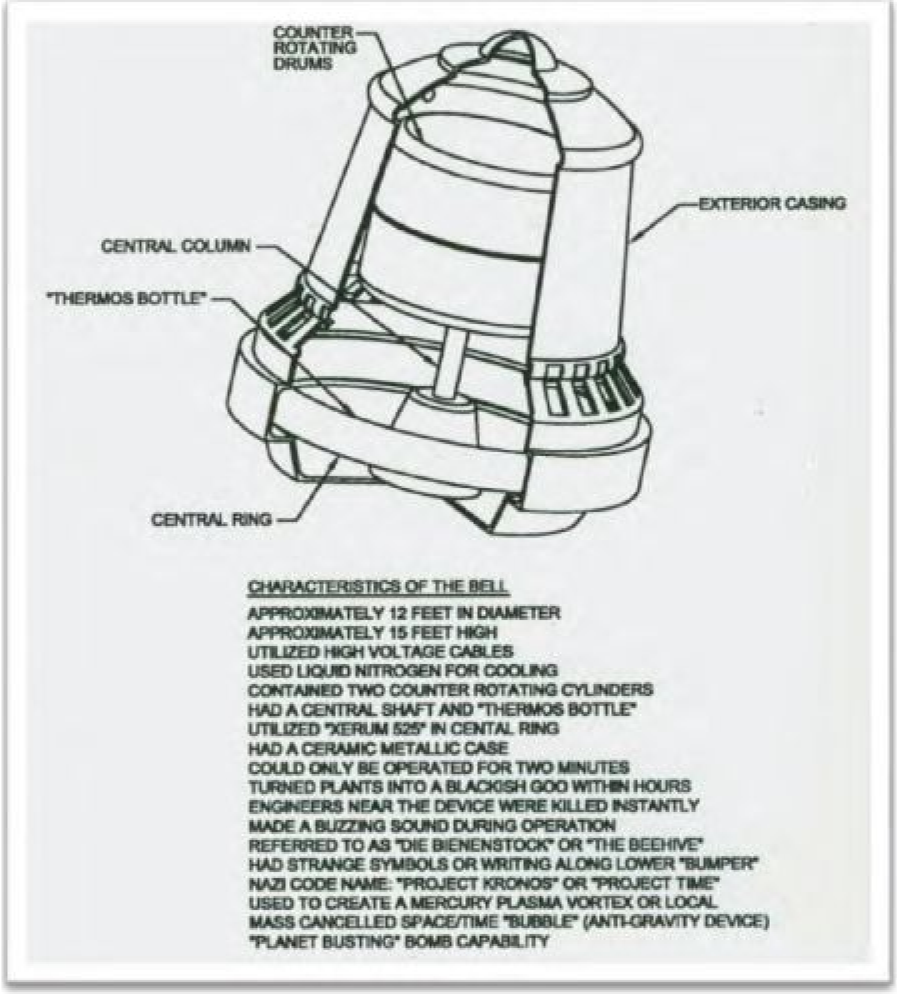

CHARACTERISTICS OF THE BELL

APPROXIMATELY 12 FEET IN DIAMETER
APPROXIMATELY 15 FEET HIGH
UTILIZED HIGH VOLTAGE CABLES
USED LIQUID NITROGEN FOR COOLING
CONTAINED TWO COUNTER ROTATING CYLINDERS
HAD A CENTRAL SHAFT AND "THERMOS BOTTLE"
UTILIZED "XERUM 525" IN CENTAL RING
HAD A CERAMIC METALLIC CASE
COULD ONLY BE OPERATED FOR TWO MINUTES
TURNED PLANTS INTO A BLACKISH GOO WITHIN HOURS
ENGINEERS NEAR THE DEVICE WERE KILLED INSTANTLY
MADE A BUZZING SOUND DURING OPERATION
REFERRED TO AS "DIE BIENENSTOCK" OR "THE BEEHIVE"
HAD STRANGE SYMBOLS OR WRITING ALONG LOWER "BUMPER"
NAZI CODE NAME: "PROJECT KRONOS" OR "PROJECT TIME"
USED TO CREATE A MERCURY PLASMA VORTEX OR LOCAL
MASS CANCELLED SPACE/TIME "BUBBLE" (ANTI-GRAVITY DEVICE)
"PLANET BUSTING" BOMB CAPABILITY

Diagram of the Bell. This is the work of researcher/writer/technical artist Michael Schratt, who is seemingly the only person combining these abilities and willing to take on such a project. The central column containing the spinning plasma vertex and the counter-rotating drums filled with mercury are clearly shown. Cooling was accomplished using liquid nitrogen.

How about a radiation weapon? Could the Germans have controlled this? In fact, the Germans certainly were leaders in ceramic material used to insulate the Bell from the two F.I.A.T. reports I have on ceramic insulators and ceramic dielectric materials.(8) Also, the Germans were leaders in the control of dangerous (radioactive) radiation, then and in the immediate post-war years. In fact zirconium shielding for the purpose of protection of human life was exclusively a German development right up until the early 1950's when it was German industry which produced the zirconium shielding for the first US nuclear submarine, the Nautilus. (9) This is physical evidence that the Germans at least thought they could control the voltage and the radiation the Bell produced.

Dr. Farrell includes a summary of Igor Witkowski's consulting physicist, Dr. Marek Demia_ski who says that the mercury vortex may have done something even more spectacular:

> *"Indeed, if the Germans 'had succeeded in aligning the axes of nuclei rotation in one direction, with the aid of a strong magnetic field then perhaps they had achieved some sort of gravitational breakthrough." (10)*

Remember, the Germans used superconducting mercury rather than ferromagnetic matterial. Soft iron contains "domains" within its structure which are aligned by magnetic means. Mercury does not. But this mercury achieved the magnetic task given it anyway and was then available for another task. It is a liquid and so may have undergone a special nuclear allignment of its own. The aligning of neutrons in the Bell and its influence on gravity is something best left to the experts in this field such as Igor Witkowski and Dr. Joseph Farrell. But, if gravity could really be influenced on its own fundamental level and not just by overpowering it as in the case of magnetic reconnection-related positron-electron pairs, well, then another mystery is solved with a new connection. Also, it seems to me that Einstein says something relating gravity to time and if gravity could be changed then to an observer standing outside the device's range, time would also be altered, would he not?

But further questions arise. What would the relationship of two Bell devices in proxmimity, operating at the same time? What would be the condition in a space surrounded by operating Bell devices? It should also be pointed out that descriptions of the Bell as well as the Schappeller device often mention transmutation of elements.

> *“The last point brings up yet another oddity in the long list of oddities associated with the Bell, and that is transmutation of elements.” (11) And:*

> *“As for the reference to transmutation, this is a partly solved problem, for there exists in the Frankfurter Zeitung und Handelsblatt, for the evening edition of Friday, June 18, 1924, an article on precisely the transmutation of mercury into gold — long before the discovery of nuclear fission — by none other than Prof. Dr. Walter Gerlach! (here Dr. Farrell cites the source as The Truth About the Wunderwaffe, page 247). Gerlach speaks of such transmutation being possible through the bombardment of a target with ‘rays’ of an unspecified nature, and then goes on to speak of the scientific feasibility of alchemy! (12)*

In fact, I was once contacted by a gold miner in Alaska who claimed to have built a Schappeller device to assist his gold mining operation with positive results. Did the Schappeller device somehow attract gold or was gold actually somehow produced? It is possible that there is something here. And since the underlying theory of the Black Sun is densification, organization, and transmutation such things such as gold creation from more base elements should come as no surprise.

At the top of this chapter Dr. Farrell is quoted as believing the Bell could be used as a means of tapping the zero-point or time-space itself for energy. One of Dr. Farrell’s breakthroughs was seeing the relationship between the Bell and the technology of Dr. Ronald Richter. Dr. Richter in his plasma experiments at one of those Nazi labs in South America developed a method to shoot plasma through a magnetic field. Dr. Richter makes the point that this was a means to transform nuclear energy (plasma in this case) directly into electrical energy by induction but it also involved deriving energy directly from the zero-point. (13) The Bell as a “trap for a plasma vortex” or a “plasma focus” (14) just had to be doing the same thing.

Let us try another direction. As anyone can see there are plenty of possibilities here and plenty of possible sequences of events in the evolution of the Bell. Suppose we look first upon the Bell as developing from a weapon’s system. But let us look at this through the eyes of the klystron-betatron. By this I mean a device of radiation and a device that controls, aims, the radiation using a magnetic field. So we have the Bell with its central hollow tube full of mercury with additions to the mercury, probably compounds of mercury that perhaps resembles red mercury. This red mercury is irradiated in an atomic reactor and the result, although different from other formulations of red mercury, is in that class of chemicals. This viscous, radioactive liquid, full of neutrons, is now poured into the Bell and energized with electricity. Plasma is formed between the anode and cathode (which where perhaps also permanent magnets as in the Schauberger device), and is warped into a long, cylindrical vortex, probably by the spinning cylinder/drum outside of the central cylinder which has been given motion and an electrical charge. The plasmoid, spinning, magnetic plasma, now generates its own monstrous magnetic field, generating eddy currents in the cylinder/drums containing mercury which are spinning around it and in counter-rotation to each other. From a weapons standpoint, a small hole could be opened at one end of the cylinder and a stream of radiation, perhaps gamma rays and X-rays, then pour out, directed by the opposing and surrounding magnetic field generated by the cylinder/drums. Like the betatron, we now have directed the radiation. As such, the Bell could be mounted on an aircraft and directed downward onto any battlefield or enemy city desired. Or, it could be mounded on a swivel as was the famous German 88 mm gun, and directed to sweep the sky of enemy bombers, just as other gamma-X-ray weapons were designed to do on a much smaller, weaker scale. The problem is the neutrons, because they were “matter” and heavy, may not have been willing to fly as directed. Instead, they seem to have radiated out in all directions as in a neutron bomb. This neutron bomb idea must have been concept number two for the Germans, perhaps “Projekt Laternetraeger” (Project Lantern Carrier) and hardly needs any further discussion.

Or perhaps the central magnetic field could be constricted to a degree by the other two counter-rotating fields that explosives could be placed around it, as they were with the atomic bombs, detonated, compressing the central magnetic field further, resulting in a huge electromagnetic pulse weapon?

There is the theory by some that the Bell produced gravity effects, as voiced by Dr. Marek Demia_ski above. In this idea, all this rotation and magnetic interaction aligned the mercury atoms in the cylinder/drums, and some sort of gravity differential was noted. If true, this must have gotten the attention of the scientists involved and they simply must have done some on-the-spot investigation, with or without official sanction. Returning to Einstein’s ideas about the relationship between gravity and time, perhaps once this was recognized, this was the start of “Projekt Kronos”. And perhaps this is where Otto Cerney comes in. The Bell’s influence of time was the fourth concept noted in the Bell.

Let me speculate a bit. The neutrons would have “felt” the gravity effects and perhaps this is why they did not move under the influence of the magnetic field but in all directs. Could some of these neutrons have gotten stuck inside those mercury atoms? This might even be expected. Mercury does have a history regarding this. After all, charging up mercury compounds with neutrons in a nuclear reactor was the basis of red mercury. What is being discussed is transmutation. When the Bell was disassembled after each test and the mercury drained from the cylinder/drums, could some of this liquid metal have been changed into other elements by those bombarding neutrons? Could it have been radioactive material? And could there have been a byproduct? Gold was mentioned above and we will return to it one more time as this may impact the political arena. Was transmutation the fifth concept noted in the Bell?

We have no way of knowing the pathway of the energy required to spin and energize the Bell nor do we know if energy was generated, although this is what is being thought. In this it is hard not to see something approaching a homopolar generator with the central core and the spinning components in the machinery of the Bell. Perhaps a homopolar motor was in place, underground, for use as a starter motor. Perhaps auto-rotation occurred in the Bell as with the Searl and Schauberger devices, and if it happened, then the sixth concept peculiar to the Bell was as a generator of energy. Additionally, if the mercury filled cylinder drums were arranged in just the right way, as with the earth's molten core, then feed back eddy currents might have come into play and might have even self-generated electrical energy without further input as Tesla and Farraday say was possible.

We really do not know all of what the Germans thought of the Bell. It is probably not the case that all the ideas mentioned were achieved but at least some of these concepts had to be under consideration by the Germans and they had to actively be working on at least a few of them. Also, the Bell as described, may have been a generalized demonstration device, one that was capable of many functions. Both Hans Coler and Karl Schappeller made generalized demonstration devices. A more specific machine was to have been built according to the task at hand. Perhaps the Bell was such a demonstration machine, demonstrating many things leading to specialized "Bells" being built for specific purposes?

Let's go back to the beginning and look at this in another way. In the Dr. Paul Potter astronomical analogy, we started out with the Bell as a pulsar, a star imploding to form a black hole with two streams of gamma-X-ray radiation streaming into space from its poles as it was squeezed by magnetic and gravitational forces. The result is densification as elements are transmuted into every heavier ones and finally collapse into one big neutron under the weight of gravity into a black hole. The energy generated, every kind of energy, by a black hole is reflected in the magnetic field, the positron-electron generation and possibly even the gravity generated by the

Bell. So if the gravitational effects of the Bell are as postulated, does this mean the Bell, if simply left running, would collapse into a mini-black hole or Black Sun as it would have been called at the time?

Also, it is hard not to see the relationship between the Bell and the Vril and Haunebu machines. In fact, the Bell looks like a combination of the early Vril spinning discs and the Haunebu’s plasma generated magnetic field. Of course as regards levitation, this would all be the same and work the same way.

Before leaving the Bell, mention must be made of what must be its crowning story. By this I mean a story involving Otto Skorzeny! According to Dr. Farrell, citing Witkowski:

> *“…But Witkowski soon uncovered odd corroboration form another source, this time from the aide to the well-known SS commando, Otto Skorzeny, Karl Radl. Radl disclosed, in documents Witkowski uncovered at the American archives’ Berlin Document Center, that Skorzeny had engaged to numerous acts of sabotage behind Russian lines in 1944 because he had ‘come into contact with the ‘wonder weapon’ and as a result (had) ‘been possessed’ by the idea of ‘Sonderkampf’ (‘Special Warfare’), regarding the use of this weapon, to such an extent, that he considered it the only sure way to win the war.*
>
> *After the war, according to the reports in the Spanish press that were soon followed by similar articles in the American press, Skorzeny had attempted to sell the secrets of this unknown Wunderwaffe to the Americans.” (15)*

There is no doubt that Radl’s account of events can be trusted. Radl, in many ways Skorzeny’s right-hand man, was flipped by the Americans into testifying against Skorzeny after the war. In fact, Radl was the very first witness against Skorzeny. This was a thrunderbolt out of the blue and shocked Skorzeny that Radl, his friend, a man he had been to hell and back again many times, would stoop so low as to attempt to betray him. Evidently, the Americans had offered Radl a deal in exchange for testimony. They had offered SS General Gottlob Gerger immunity if he would testify against Skorzeny. Likewise, a deal was offered Werner Hunke but Hunke declined. In the end Radl’s testimony only involved the theft of American uniforms and Skorzeny was acquitted of all charges anyway. (16) But Radl’s turning on this friend out of fear of American reprisal serves to show how fully Radl was willing to cooperate and well as adding credibility to the story of further, secret and hidden wonder weapons and Skorzeny’s attempt to sell the to the Americans.

What a scene this must have been. Imagine Otto Skorzeny, even though he was an engineer, trying to convince the Americans of a device resembling the Bell in 1946 or 1947? The Americans did not even believe Dr. Ronald Richter who was making less extreme claims and telling the Americans exactly how it was done. The Americans did not even believe Dr. Konrad Zuse’s digital computer was of any value. The Americans must have thought Skorzeny had lost his mind. Well, it was a good thing for the 3rd Power that would develop a few years later that Skorzeny was completely discounted at that time. But this story does serve to establish, once again, contact between the Americans and the Nazis with the purpose of selling high technology.

The Skorzeny story reminds us that the Bell is also a human story and it brings us back to the people and organization involved, the 3rd Power. At this point we can step back for a momentary overview. Now that the issues of where the 3rd Power exists and existed, its structure, and how at least some of its technology works, we can move to a more direct discussion of how the 3rd Power works in terms of people and politics and secret technology.

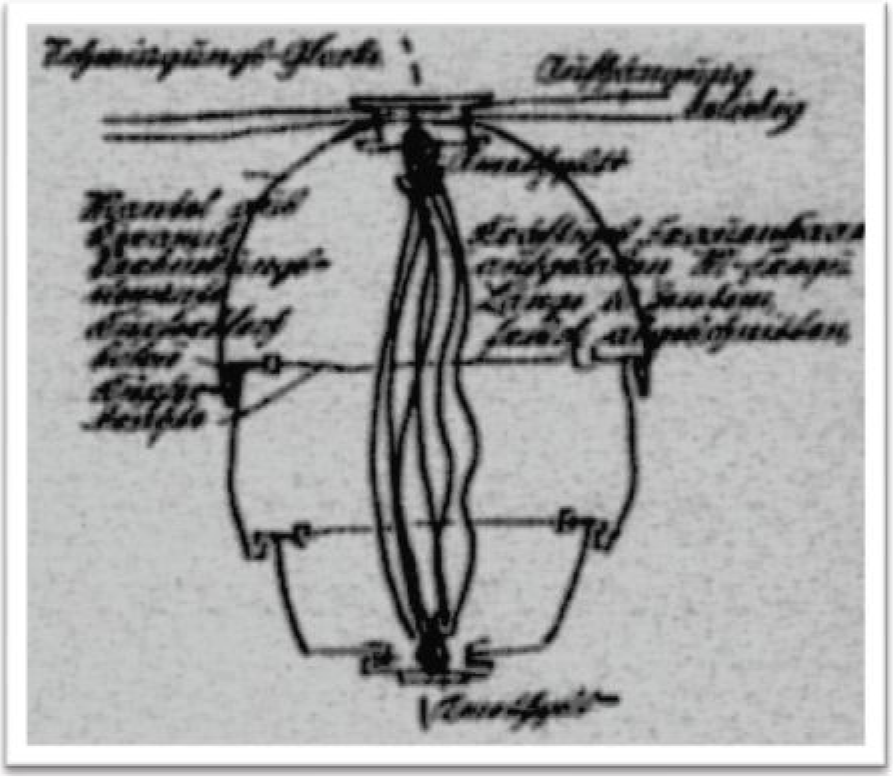

A Smoking Gun? This is a fragmentary diagram posted on the Causa Nostra website, closely identified with the beliefs of Ralf Ettl and Norbert Juergen-Rathoffer. This fragment was found sometime in the mid-1980s in Hamburg. It is important because it is not part of the hoardd given to Ralf Ettl in England and because it may document a stage in the evolution of what would become the Bell. My interpretation is a transfer of technology from Tesla to Schappeller to the Reichsarbeitsgemeinschaft to the Vril Societ to the SS. This fragment, depicting a spinning plasma vortex contained in a Bell-like sphere, is written in an old German script and is blurred. According to the proponents of their website, it was probably of Vril Society origin and a predecessor to the Bell.

Literature Cited

1. **Farrell, Joseph P., Ph.D., 2010**, *Roswell and The Reich: The Nazi Connection*, pages 361-362, Adventures Unlimited Publishing, Kempton, Illinois, USA

2. **Stevens, Henry, 2007**, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science and Technology*, pages 248-257, Adventures Unlimited Publishing, Kempton, Illinois, USA

3. **Farrell, Joseph, P. Ph.D.**, 2006, *The Brotherhood Of The Bell*, page 172-173, Adventures Unlimited Publishing, Kempton, Illinois, USA. Here Farrell cites Igor Witkowski, The Truth About The Wunderwaffe, pages 232-233

4. ***ibid.***

5. ***ibid.***

6. ***ibid.***

7. **Farrell, Joseph, P., Ph.D., 2006**, pages 172-1838.

8. **FIAT Final Report No. 617** (Field Information Agency, Technical), *The Electrical And Technical Ceramic Industry of Germany*, (Supplementary Report High Dielectric Constant Insulators), by Bennett S. Ellefson, Technical Industrial Intelligence Division, U.S. Department Of Commerce and

9. **Georg, Friedrich, 2008**, “Unternehmen Patentenroub” 1945 *Die Geheimgeschichte des groessten Technologieraubs aller Zeiten*, pages 237-238, Grabert-Verlag, Tuebingen, Germany

10. **Farrell, Joseph, P., Ph.D., 2006**, page 181. Here Dr. Farrell is citing Igor Witkowski, “The Truth About the Wunderwaffe”, page 247

11. **Farrell, Joseph P., Ph.D., 2006**, pages, 181, related work on page 249

12. ***ibid.***

13. **Stevens, Henry, 2006**, pages 291-292

14. **Farrell, Joseph, P., Ph.D., 2006**, page 183

15. **Farrell, Joseph, P. Ph.D., 2006**, page 172

16. **Infield, Glenn B., 1981**, pages 135-136, St. Martin’s Press, N.Y., NY. USA

THE 3RD POWER IN PRACTICE

Of all the stories and accounts of the demise or disposition of Hans Kammler, the Rittermann story by far fits the post war facts the best. It fits known facts and makes sense of why the Allies never really searched for Kammler. So, assuming the correctness of the Hans Rittermann story, how would have the 3rd Power worked in reality on a day-to-day basis? What follows are my ideas on the subject. These are far from established facts, set in stone, and are presented only to inspire thoughts of those who read these words. The reader can judge where and if I go astray.

Included are also my ideas on the course of the Cold War as influenced by the 3rd Power. Likewise, this is conjecture on my part but even without evidence, I believe this version to be close to the truth. Again, this is out of need to make sense out of the utter strangeness of the fact and event pattern. As with the discussion of the 3rd Power itself, it is hoped that discussion on the topic will be inspired.

The 3rd Power is composed of three subdivisions. These are the Skorzeny organization, the Nazi International, as it is sometimes called, Dr. Hans Kammler, surviving in Prague, and the Gehlen Organization that later became the German intelligence organization, the Bundesnachrichtendienst. These three elements eventually worked in communication and together forming the 3rd Power.

We have considered the first, Skorzeny and his organization, in some detail. Besides this consideration, the work of Joseph Farrell in his books “Nazi International” and “Roswell And The Reich” should be considered to be incorporated here with the only caveat that I consider Otto Skorzeny to have been running the organization, not Martin Bormann of whom we have no real knowledge after the end of the war.

Mention should be made of the financial genius that brought Germany out of the Great Depression years before other countries emerged from this disaster. This was Dr. Haljmar Schacht. Schacht also set up the financial arrangements with the leading German firms for a post-war recovery. He also created the confusing maze of corporations and other business entities through which money was funneled and business transacted. Dr. Schacht also assisted Skorzeny in finding the money that was squirreled away and reacquiring it for the SS.

It was Skorzeny who managed the Nazi International in its permanent home of South America. Skorzeny, an engineer by profession, also would have had overall authority of “Mimes Schmiede”, the laboratories and technical workshops producing the high technology invented during the Reich years. From South America, the Nazi International used its flying discs and U-boats to transport itself anywhere in the world at times when such transport was necessary.

Skorzeny himself ran this network from his “engineering office”, his firm in Madrid, Spain. In fact this office was the SS post-war headquarters, the home office. Of course every intelligence agency in the world would want to tap Skorzeny’s telephones. The answer was that Skorzeny traveled frequently and so could make top executive decisions the orders being passed on by courier.

At some point in the post-war world, Skorzeny would have made contact with Dr. Hans Kammler who was by then positioned in Prague. Both would have been very valuable to each other and at the very least formed some sort of working understanding. Kammler was even an older hand at surviving in the post-war world than Skorzeny, having thought of it and planning for it while Skorzeny was still opposing Soviet armies.

In accounts given by Wilhelm Landig and others, Kammler was active in Operation Avalon, the planning of a 4th Reich. (1) In this plot Kammler was not alone and in the company of other Nazi big-wigs as the 3rd Reich crumbled. This Avalon idea was based on Nazi riches that had been hidden as well as the high technology developed at this time. Plans were made to incorporate underground facilities found or created in South America as well as transporting technical specialists to these facilities. Right away it is obvious that these plans resembled the more "official" but still hidden plans enacted at the Rotes Haus meeting in Strassburg.

Additionally, another plan was created, the Z-Plan (Zukunfts-Plan or Future-Plan). (2) Kammler would have also known about this plan. And like the others it incorporated the idea of using South American underground bunkers and German secret, high technology for a "Gegenschlag", a counter-strike, presumably at the Allies after the war had ended.

This understanding comes to us through Wilhelm Landig but it is not contained in his "novels". Instead, one of the authors cited above, Heiner Gehring, was able to read Landig's private notes before he died in 1997. This was a huge coup for Gehring, a long-time researcher of German flying discs and other esoterica. Unfortunately, Gehring himself died only a few years later but not before publishing "Flugscheiben Ueber Neuschwabenland" along with long-time researcher Karl-Heinz Zunneck. These writers commented on the similarity of the two projects.

These plans and Kammler's obvious central position in them as keeper of high technology go to show how interested Dr. Hans Kammler was in life, not death. Under whatever plan, Kammler did a deal with both the Soviets and the Americans, offering his services to both. In this deal there must have been the understanding that no matter what technology was transferred to each party, an overall balance of power would have been maintained. It must have been fascinating to have worked on that equation!

Another interesting aspect of this deal must have been the basic fact that neither of the sponsoring parties, the Americans or the Soviets, knew exactly what technology was under discussion. And after awhile, after a few deals with Kammler, both sides must have known that they did not know the extent of what they did not know. The must have realized at some point that Kammler could just pull a rabbit out of a technological hat like a magic trick. Each side must have had a problem explaining the technology after they acquired it, which led to the Philip Corso trick of blaming its origin on extraterrestrials or, and probably more often, giving it to existing scientists in those countries and letting them take credit for the breakthrough. This went on to the point of allowing scientists to receive Nobel Prizes for inventions pioneered in the Third Reich. Dr. William Shockly was one who received a Nobel Prize for transistors and we will review another winner's "work" before we are through with this book.

Kammler's living arrangements must have been another issue. Kammler could not have been a true prisoner. Kammler picked Prague. Kammler spoke Czech and must have felt at home here. He must have been allowed access to Prague in general under his assumed identity. Yet he must have been shadowed everywhere he went by the CIA, KGB, Bundesnachrichtendienst and Stasi, the East German Secret Police. And all four must have known about the deal and about each other's involvement shadowing Kammler through Prague. And then there was the issue of his staff. Kammler must have wanted a personal staff because he, like Skorzney, would not have transacted real business by telephone. Hans Rittermann does say Kammler had a right hand man after 1967, a former German General named Klein. One wonders if it could have been Georg Klein whom Kammler knew and worked with on the German flying disc program after Kammler took it over. In any event, someone had to go out into the real world and retrieve technology on microfilm from time to time with the assurance that he was not being followed by the intelligence services. One can imagine a large apartment being taken over by Kammler, perhaps even something like a three story apartment complex. Some sort of cover story had to be concocted for the general population, perhaps some sort of small business allegedly being run out of this building. And because there was an obligatory tail on Kammler's ever move, including one by the Gehlen Organization that became the German intelligence service, the Bundesnachrichtendienst, there was virtually no problem in communicating with them or by extension with Skorzeny.

So a home-business setting can be imagined in which representatives of both the East and West attending or perhaps on-site with a small office or desk. Kammler would have granted an audience with them as would any businessman and in just that way deals would have been made, although for each side perhaps in private. After a deal was struck, a courier would have been dispatched and the technology retrieved from an underground storage facility or other repository known only to Kammler. Essential in this dealing would have been the understanding on the part of both East and West that there was always more that could be had. In fact, they must have understood that there was more than they knew or could even imagine. They each knew that were either the East or West to move on Kammler in any hostile manner, and remaining technology would be given to the other side. By extension, this succor extended to some extent to the Nazi International. In their complicated post-war history, various former Allied Powers had run-ins with the post-war SS as well as times of cooperation. Kammler's "home-business" must have served to smooth out these dust-ups.

What we have not discussed in detail is the Gehlen Organization that was very important to this whole system. I say system because that is exactly what it all became — not only this Kammler-Skorzeny-Gehlen relationship but also the whole East-West Cold War. It became the status quo, the way the world worked. It was the system: The "order" of its time. Reinhard Gehlen and his organization glued this world together so we need to take a closer look at this part of the system. For this we will rely upon Dr. Joseph Farrell who has recognized this from the beginning, done a great deal of research on this topic and correctly stressed the importance of Gehlen in this world and his relationship to it in his writings.

At the end of the war in Europe, Britain, France and the USA were staring into the faces of thousands upon thousands of Soviet very hard soldiers, supply lines, tanks, rocket launchers, excellent ground support aircraft, and leadership which had just managed to beat the Wehrmacht. The Soviet Union had been our ally but it was a black hole to western eyes. Now, it seems, they could become and would become a potential enemy.

The Americans had no intelligence to speak of within this vast, powerful, secretive, country.

But the Nazis had a huge intelligence network within the Soviet Union which was still in place and available to be contacted but which had just become unemployed with the demise of the Third Reich. One of the brightest minds for the Americans, Allen Dulles instantly grasped the situation his country had found itself and acted. As bureau chief of the OSS, later CIA, in Zurich, Switzerland, Dulles contacted the former head of “Fremde Heere Ost” (Foreign Armies East), General Reinhard Gehlen. He offered the unemployed man and his organization a deal they could not refuse, namely employment doing exactly what they were used to doing only for a different employer, the government of the United States. Talk about unforeseen consequences! Gehlen must have had to lay down with a deep belly laugh.

But it got even better for Gehlen and his organization. Gone were the Nazis and possible fatal consequences for failure in their work. Instead, he was dealing with the Americans, babies who had come into his world of spying on the Soviets. Gehlen realized his superior position in the relationship and so was able to dictate the terms. This is reproduced by Farrell from a series of sources in which Gehlen talks in the first person:

> *“I remember the terms of the agreement well…*
>
> *1. A clandestine German intelligence organization was to be set up, using the existing potential to continue information gathering in the East just as we had been doing before. The basis for this was our common interest in a defense against communism.*

> *2. The German organization was to work not "for" or "under" the Americans, but "jointly" with the Americans.*
>
> *3. The organization would operate exclusively under German leadership, which would receive its directives and assignments from the Americans until a new government was established in Germany.*
>
> *4. The organization was to be financed by the Americans with funds that were not to be part of the occupation costs, and in return the organization would supply all its intelligence reports to the Americans.*
>
> *5. As soon as a sovereign German government was established, the government should decide whether the organization should continue to function or not, but that until such time the care and control (later referred to as "the trusteeship') of the organization would remain in American hands.*
>
> *6. Should the organization at any time find itself in a position where the American and German interests diverged, it was accepted that the organization would consider the interests of Germany first." (3)*

Dr. Farrell goes on to summarize this agreement just to drive its points home:

> *“One almost has to read this list twice in order for the full magnitude of the implications of the ‘bargain’ to sink in, but nonetheless the basic implication is clear: Nazi military intelligence basically remained organizationally intact after the war, was paid for by America, and it was understood in conflicts of interest, it would put German interests ahead of American interests!” (4)*

Believe me, I can almost hear some Germans complaining at this juncture that a point has been missed in that Nazis are determining “German interests”. They would say that after events of the war, the two were mutually exclusive. But Gehlen seems to have had no doubt. Dr. Farrell maintains, and I think correctly, that Gehlen saw it in his best interest, the surviving Nazi’s best interest, and even Germany’s best interest to play one side against the other, maintaining a large, as opposed to a small, Cold War division between the two which would allow more latitude for the post-war Nazi world to play as well as for himself and his organization.

> *“What he had cleverly done for his American handlers was to deliberately transform the political threat posed by the Soviet Union into an imminent military threat, and the “Cold Warriors” in the Pentagon responded accordingly, initiating the cold War nuclear arms race.” (5)*

Dr. Farrell continues:

> *“The purpose of all these machinations is thus immediately evident, for by locking the two postwar ‘superpowers’ into a stalemating arms race, more maneuvering room is created for organizations such as Gehlen’s to act as the ‘balance of power’ and as a hidden ‘third force’. (6)*

The reader might remember that Skorzeny had some sort of Soviet contact. Well, Gehlen fine-tuned this concept with his double and triple agents:

> *“And if, as many researchers have proven, Gehlen’s organization — the parent of the West German Bundesnachrichtendienst — was so riddled with Soviet KGB moles, then imagine the nightmarish scenario that those ‘double’ agents were in fact ‘triple’ agents, taking orders neither from the West, nor the East, but ultimately playing both sides for fools in a careful and delicate and patient dance, and taking their orders from the hidden directorate of the ‘Third Position’. (7)*

And further:

> *“If it was possible for Gehlen’s ‘Org’ to slip disinformation to the USA even if it came from ‘turned’ Soviet double agents within his own network, by the same token, it would have been possible to slip the Soviets disinformation about American strength and intentions through the same ‘double’ agents in the espionage version of the Nazi geopolitical ‘Third Position’. (8)*

Gehlen is playing both sides as part of a balancing act of his own creation through the use of double and even triple agents. Surely he had agents in the East German intelligence service, “Stasi”, as well. Add to this that each of these intelligence services probably penetrated the other to some extent. So, what we really have here is a balance of power on another level, the intelligence level, in which each intelligence service is part of a larger whole but each part is necessary for the whole to work — as it has worked up until that present time. Gehlen and the other intelligence services each knew this. Gehlen just always maintained the upper hand. And the Cold War just kept rolling on and on.

In the meantime the Gehlen Org was able to feed the other two elements of the 3rd Power not only political and military intelligence but also scientific/military research intelligence from SS controlled laboratories within the former Greater Reich, even those laboratories that the former Allied Powers thought they were running.

Could the 3rd Power have just sit back in an apartment house or office building in Prague and just done deals with the Soviets and Americans? Was it that easy? Would the USA and USSR have actually done deals with the Nazis? The answer is they already had done so. Remember Otto Skorzeny's deal with Winston Churchill for his letters to Mussolini in exchange for freeing SS prisoners? Those were baby steps but the principle of the deal was established. The difference now is that Dr. Hans Kammler was exchanging world-beating technology, not old love letters, and would want concessions of some considerable value in return.

Besides this interaction, the 3rd Power carried out operations throughout the third world throughout this period of time between the early 1950's and the middle 1970's. They supplied technical aid to countries which were reluctant to go to their the Western or Eastern block. They increased the range of Scud missiles, built bunkers, dams, electrical plants, and provided high-tech assistance when asked. Sometimes they worked in conjunction with the West and/or the East and sometimes in spite of them. In fact, there were a whole series of ups and downs just with the Americans along. The year 1946-47 with Byrd's Antarctic adventure and must have been particularly bad as was the year 1952, with the Americans apparently evicting the Nazis from Beaver Dam. The 3rd Power responded with the UFO overflight of Washington, DC, probably with their newer Haunebu craft. Again, things went sour in 1957-58-59 with the atomic air burst over Neuschwabenland but this was apparently patched up with an Antarctic Treaty in 1959-60. After that, no raids or expeditions were ever launched against the extensive 3rd Power holdings and bases in South America. By then, early 1960's some lasting understanding had been reached.

Kammler's office must have been an interesting place. In fact, it must have been a microcosm of the Cold War itself, even more than the divided city of Berlin! At official meetings, probably with both the military and intelligence services of a particular country, Kammler must have been accompanied with his own special staff. There was General Klein, his right hand man. There would have been German translators even if business was conducted in German, even if both Kammler and Klein understood whatever language the opposition was using, just to get another set of ears on that opposition, looking for nuances, both before and after all the translations had been made. Then there would have been security, something for which Kammler was already known. This would have included electronic sweeps, making sure devices were not planted on the premises. Of course, Kammler's agents would have all been former SS men. And on the other side a set of similar personnel, military and intelligence, would have been present. The room must have featured political maps on the walls. Not one but a series of meetings would have been necessary for each item exchanged and each item would involve some sort of on-site visit to some secret microfilm repository after a price was agreed upon.

As far as life outside the 3rd Power for Kammler, he may have dyed his hair and/or had plastic surgery to alter his appearance. He may have roamed the streets of Prague in obscurity. As for his home-life, I know this could not be accurate, but I can not get the American TV show *Saturday Night Live's* comedy image of Christopher Walken's portrayal of "The Continental" out of my mind.

One of the first examples of technological transfer from the 3rd Power involves the Soviets. Remember, in 1957 the Soviets launched the first earth satellite named Sputnik. It was quickly followed by others of ever increasing size. Soon the Soviets were putting things in orbit weighing tons. The Americans could only put up grapefruit sized satellites or small tubes which could be lifted by one man. It was explained sometime later that a “gap” had occurred. The Americans spun it saying the Soviets had not been able to develop miniaturized nuclear warheads and so needed much larger rockets able to carry a much heavier payload. Of course it was these war-rockets that were the foundation for both the American and Soviet space programs.

The Soviets realized they needed miniaturizing nuclear technology, perhaps not for rocket payloads since this problem had been solved by monsterous rockets but for other weapons systems. The problem was solved in 1968. It was in this year that the Soviets claim to have invented red mercury, an agent that could directly detonate thermonuclear weapons (hydrogen bombs) without the need of a fission bomb (atomic bomb) that was used by the Americans for detonation purposes. With red mercury truly miniature nuclear weapons could be built. But the Soviets lied. We already know the Germans had such technology way back in the 1940’s. Obviously, a technology transfer took place between the 3rd Power and the Soviets around that date, 1968.

We need to wrap-up one loose end and example of concerning this type of technological-transfer before moving on to Landig’s assessment of the 1990’s. Some words were left hanging in our review of the Death Ray-Melted Snow (Todesstrahlen— Schnee geschmolzen) article from *Der Spiegel* about “Dr. Hans Erhardt” which was first encountered in the discussion of possible SS repositories in Switzerland. The reader might remember that a mystery scientist calling himself “Dr. Hans Erhardt” briefly worked for the Swiss military and built a working “death ray” able to melt snow twelve kilometers, over seven miles, away. This was said to have occurred in 1961 after which the scientist disappeared in 1963 from Switzerland, mysteriously. The date for the article is July 24, 1963 (the text can be accessed online at *http://www.spiegel.de/ spiegel/print/d-46171297.html*)

Of course, problematic for the American military-industrial establishment are the dates. Dr. Charles H. Townes was credited for discovering “laser principles” (“laser” was not even in usage in Germany at the time of the “Melted Snow” article) and this was in the form of a Nobel Prize in 1964. To further confuse the issue, his brother-in-law, Dr. Arthur Schawlow, held the patent for the laser, and was also a Nobel laureate being involved with the maser. Meanwhile, the Americans kept the records for the German work on the subject, done during the war, out of sight. Fortunately, Friedrich Georg found them on microfilm and they have been since published by me and every other writer on the subject, blowing the lid off this deception.

Michel Bar-Zohar, and Israeli Professor, historian and member of the Knesset, not only mentions Dr. Erhardt’s experimentation in Switzerland but also recounts a possible fielding of a laser weapon by the Germans in World War Two:

> *“There was also a vague report on the mysterious Zimmermann — the man believed to have invented the “death ray” and even to have used it effectively against the Russians in the Carpathians on 30 August 1944. The report said that he had been captured and taken to Russia just before the end of the war.” (9)*

But it gets worse. That is how it is when a lie is told—thereafter, all future lies have to conform to the first one, or the liar is exposed. If one lie is exposed, well then all subsequent tales look pretty bad. Returning to the German language article from 1963, one sentence in German unravels this deception and underscores the importance of the 3rd Power to the Americans, who may have lost the laser expert, “Zimmermann” to the Soviets and needed some help catching up:

> *“Aus einer Gasplasma-Quelle gedachted der Erfinder mit grossen Hohlspiegln einen gebundelten ultravioletten Lichtstrahl herzustellen.”*

Here it is in English:

> *"From a gas-plasma source the inventor thought to make a bundled ultraviolet light-ray with large concave mirrors."*

Plasma-lasers were not invented until 1964, according to the Americans. Plasma lasers are sometimes called "ion-lasers" since plasma contains the ions, matter stripped of some electrons, which is plasma. Plasma lasers were said to have been the invention of William B. Bridges, working for Hughes Research Laboratories. He was said to have discovered and patented the noble gas (argon, krypton, xenon) ion laser in that year (10). Plasma lasers work because the molecules of their original gas are "pumped" with so much energy the gas disassociates into plasma and while attempting to fall back together into a gas, this plasma issues a constant, intense stream of photons.

But the Der Spiegel article from 1963 clearly shows this alleged history to be false. And if the Americans falsified this sequence of events wrong, then they certainly have a problem with the origin of the laser also. As certain as you are reading these words, the basic and advanced technology for the laser was the product of German wartime research and development. It was developed into something which was possibly field-ready. The Americans lost the opportunity of obtaining the expert on the subject, "Zimmermann", to the Soviets and needed help. The Americans went to the 3rd Power and obtained it.

Now fast forward to the early 1980's. President Ronald Reagan wanted to build an anti-missile defense as soon as he came into office. Author Francis Fitzgerald in her book "Way Out There in the Blue" has shown that this was top-down from Reagan, not driven by the military or scientific advisors. Lasers were to be a part, a very important part, of his overall “Star Wars” (SDI) program. The problem was which kind of laser to use. Dr. Edward Teller, the “Father of the Hydrogen Bomb”, and Reagan’s top scientific advisor, favored and heavily lobbied for an X-ray laser. This was to be created using an atomic explosion and a utilization of this energy to produce an X-ray beam in space. President Reagan, to his credit, was dead-set against atomic weapons of any sort in space. He rejected Teller’s concept.

The alternative was the “chemical laser”. A chemical laser obtains its energy, not from connection to an electric current or atomic explosion, but from combining two chemicals in a reaction, producing heat. If this sounds like C-Stoff and T-Stoff, you are correct, and the Germans were the masters of this technology. Wikipedia says of chemical lasers:

> *“A pulsed chemical laser was demonstrated by Jerome V.V. Kasper and George C. Pimentel by 1965. First, hydrogen chloride was pumped optically so vigorously that the molecule disassociated and then recombined, leaving it in an excited state suitable for a laser.”* (http:en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Chemical_laser)

The relationship to the pure plasma laser is obvious. It is the chemical laser which now fuels anti-missile dreams. It is the chemical oxygen-iodine (COIL) laser mounted on Boeing jumbo-jets as the YAL-1 system, used to shoot down missiles as they ascend rather than descend.

Did the 3rd Power develop and sell this type of laser or its precursor to the Americans sometime in the 1980’s? Was it with this knowledge that Ronald Reagan was able to set forth on his Star Wars program, a program that the Soviet Union was so unable to match that a kind of panic ensued, pushing a shaky economy over the edge and resulting in the demise if the Soviet Union? Of course this is not a fixed sequence of events that can be documented even if true. The question becomes one of knowing if a technological exchange was made around this time between the 3rd Power and the Reagan Administration.

To answer this question we must dip into formal logic, “modus ponens” and “modus tollens”. A modus ponens statement is an “if then” statement, something like: “if there is fire then there will be smoke”. A modus tollens statement reverses this logic, something like: “if there is smoke then there is fire”. The latter is an old folk saying that we all recognize. This folk saying is based on the implicit understanding that fire generates smoke, not vice versa. In the case of the Reagan Administration, there are certain actions that are simply beyond comprehension unless the payment of a debt is postulated. In other words, unlike the other situations in which a specific technology can be named, (such as in Philip Corso’s “alien” list), which was given up by the 3rd Power, this time there is more evidence for the payment than for the price.

The Cold War heightened during the Reagan years as fear of a huge Soviet military build up crept into American popular culture. In Europe, the Warsaw Pact countries held a vast numerical edge over the NATO countries in terms of soldiers and material. The strategy adopted by NATO in case of war was to slow the expected tidal wave of tanks, armored personnel carriers and troops with a burst of short range atomic missiles, the Pershing I and Pershing II missiles. This “tidal wave” would manifest itself on the North European Plain that ran from the Baltic to the Black Sea and, of course, right through much of Northern Germany. Germany would be turned into an atomic battleground in the event of a Warsaw Pact invasion. It would matter little to the Germans if the invasion were stopped or not, they would all certainly be dead in the exchange of tactical nuclear weaponry.

This realization did not sit well with most Germans. It led to the nuclear freeze movement. This produced demonstrations within West Germany directed at the removing all nuclear weapons from that country. Familiar names that also arose at this time include Petra Kelly and the

Green Party. The new Pershing II missiles were a particular sore spot as hundreds of them as of 1983 were deployed in Germany to offset the numerical superiority of the Warsaw Pact as well as the new Soviet SS-20 multi-warhead missiles. But as of 1987 the INF Treaty between the USA and the Soviet Union was signed, removing these missiles from Germany and destroying both types of missiles. This left things where they were with the conventional might of Soviet Union and its Warsaw Pact allies able to roll into Western Europe but this time without suffering nuclear retaliation or anything new if terms of conventional opposition. This was wonderful for insuring the survival of Germany and the German people but a setback for hawkish, hard-line, anti-Soviet Americans. Ronald Reagan could have cared less about the political wishes of the Germans. So, why did Reagan do this?

At about the same time, June 12, 1987, President Ronald Reagan gave his famous “Mr. Gorbachev, tear down this wall” speech. Nobody paid any attention to this speech whatsoever at the time. The Soviets called it a “openly provocative, war-mongering speech” *(http://en.wikepedia.org/wiki/Tear_down_this_wall)*.

Not even Ronald Reagan could have believed the Soviets were going to do this or let this be done at that time. So why would he even make this statement which sounded rather absurd at that time?

Maybe this is not so hard to understand at all coming off the heels of the Bitburg ceremony on May 5, 1985. Somehow, this all began as an attempt to observe the 40th anniversary of V-E Day but while in Bonn, Reagan took a side-trip to an obscure town in far Western Germany, Bitburg, and there placed flowers at the graves of German soldiers who had died there defending their country from the invading Western Allies near the end of the war, Allies including the Americans. There were no Americans buried at Bitburg. In fact, there were Waffen SS soldiers buried there. Why would President Ronald Reagan do this?

If you go to a source on this Bitburg controversy such as Wikipedia, for instance (*http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Bitburg*), you will find excuse after excuse with all the appropriate figures hand-wringing as they make up more excuses. No, Ronald Reagan did not owe Helmut Kohl anything. Helmut Kohl was the Prime Minister of an occupied country who had no input in what the Americans did in his country. This is amply evidenced by the Pershing missile affair. Yes, special interest groups in America had plenty of warning: The Bitburg visit was announced in February, three months in advance, yet they were unable to convince Reagan to cancel this ceremony. There simply is no conventional explanation for Reagan's behavior.

There is no explanation for the withdrawal of the Pershing missiles, for Reagan's strident pro-German "Mr. Gorbachev, tear down this wall" speech, or Reagan's special trip to lay flowers at a memorial ceremony for German soldiers, including SS soldiers, who died fighting Americans unless these acts were part of the payment for something Ronald Reagan had received. The demand for the withdrawal of Pershing missiles from German soil was something most Germans desperately wanted. The speech and ceremony were very public gestures that a new page had been turned in relations between the USA and the 3rd Power. The new relationship must have been was one in which the old animosity and low level confrontations were laid aside and a concerted effort was made by both parties to mitigate the damage done to all of Germany by the occupation of that country by all the former Allied Powers, especially the Soviets. Under the conditions of those times, this is the absolute best the 3rd Power could have done for Germany and they must have given up a considerable secret to get such a change. Nobody could have foreseen the collapse of the Soviet Union or the Reunification at that point in time, but it is most probable that the 3rd Power caused a butterfly, somewhere, to flap its wings, eventually setting this sequence of events into motion.

But new laser technology in exchange for the acts performed by President Ronald Reagan is only one possibility. If the long view is taken regarding klystron, maser and laser technology, they are all similar in that a medium is pumped with an abnormal amount of energy and then a small exit is opened out of which pours the over-excited energy, the particular radiation in question. In this klystrons are perhaps a precursor to lasers that were developed later so it is not surprising they both came from the same source. In the discussion on klystrons and related technology, the reader may have noted it was mentioned that klystron technology could be used to produce positrons. Supposing it was tweaked for this purpose alone? Then let us suppose a flying craft powered by positrons generated via klystron technology. How would this look? Well, how about mounting the klystron-positron projectors as swivel heads, mounted on the wing tips of a flying triangle? At the point where the three beams converge, that is the point into which the flying triangle moves, pushed and pulled by this super Biefield-Brown Effect. At low power, for instance, with the three beams converging over the center of the craft's gravity, it would just hang there, motionless. With variations in power and focus, any type of thre- dimensional movement is possible.

If this were the technology the Reagan Administration had received, it would account, temporally, for the appearance of flying triangles in Belgium only a couple years after "payment" had taken place. Likewise, beyond Belgium this new shape seemed to be the predominant UFO shape from that time to the present.

Or maybe it is much less complicated than this. Remember in the "Death Ray-Melted Snow" article how a discussion of Karl Schappeller was somehow grafted in and in that discussion the point seemed to have been something denigration of an alleged report of the Schappeller device's ability to synthesize gold? Remember the Alaskan gold miner's claim, made to me, that the presence of a Schappeller device at his gold mine somehow increased gold production? Remember Dr. Joseph Farrell's input that the June 18, 1924 edition of the Frankfurter Zeitung and Handelsblatt carried an article on the transmutation of mercury to gold, long before the discovery of nuclear fission? And the reader will recall that this article was written by Dr. Walther Gerlach, a top German physicist, involving some sort of special radiation? Well, maybe it was as simple as giving this secret to the Americans, allowing them to replenish the depleted gold stock in Fort Knox. This would be a tremendous strategic economic coup for the

Americans, to be able to produce the very thing that defines “money” in all economies throughout the world. Never having to worry about their supply of this metal would have allowed the Americans to spend like drunken sailors and in a real pinch, sell their inexhaustible gold reserves.

And this time-line ties into what was happening internally within the 3rd Power itself. The 3rd Power remained intact until sometime around the 1990’s, in the technological sense. Wilhelm Landig had kept in contact with expatriate Reich insiders who informed him of the situation. The reader will remember the “Ruestungsesoteriker”, the armament esoterics, the ultimate geeks who kept the post-war Nazi high technology, including the field propulsion flying discs in good operation. They worked out of these secret bases and through a network supplying parts and know-how toward the perpetuation of these technological wonders which resided in huge underground caverns connected to the outside world by tunnel-entrances. Well, it seems even they had limits. All machines eventually wear out. Landig informs us through our informant, Heiner Gehring, who managed a peek into his private files that:

> *“Actually, after the war, there were efforts made to build a military-technical power outside of Germany. The Base 211 in Neuschwabenland, which really was established, was certainly given up after some time. Besides the immunity situation it may have also been the dropping of the atom bomb of the USA during the Geophysical Year 1954 as a reason for the handing over of the base. Garrison and material of the Base 211 were spent to South America. Likewise, more German U-boat bases were available.*
>
> *German flying discs, so the Landig particulars let it be known, are still warehoused in South America but perhaps may not be flight worthy any more. Their propulsion was unconventional. The development of the “Haunebus” through the “Vril” Society did, in collaboration with*

> *the SS, actually take place. Certainly some of those topics that are found in the video-films in circulation are partially completely humbug. False are the reports concerning moon and Mars flights of German flying discs, the equipment was not developed for such effort. In the USA and USSR, attempts after the Second World War were made to replicate flying discs. This replica has, on propulsion, failed, which can not be reconstructed." (10)*

Dr. Hans Kammler was said to have died in 1972 according to Hans Rittermann. Otto Skorzeny died in 1975. Reinhard Gehlen died in 1979. Afterward, certainly, a younger generation of Nazis took over management of the 3rd Power. By the early-mid 1980's the Cold War was moving into its fourth decade with no end in sight or in contemplation in the minds of anyone on planet earth. Even the younger men running the 3rd Power must have been thinking about their own retirement as they were doubtless already in their 60's. It is no wonder they were more willing to divulge their secrets at this time. They were not sought criminals or marked men in any sort of way. They were free to fly first-class on commercial jets, they had no need of flying discs at this point.

The point is this post-war Nazi sub-culture existed in parallel along side of both the Eastern and Western blocks of the Cold War, interacting and influencing both of them in ways which we are now only beginning to understand. Just as Farraday and Tesla postulated a self-inducting homopolar generator, these Nazis self-inducted the Cold War to a greater or lesser extent. And in some ways, especially in terms of technology, this post-war Nazi subculture was the focuss of the conflict. And yet on the other hand, in terms of their middle position regarding communications, they were the glue which kept the Cold War from overheating. Was the 3rd Power was a balance-point, a fulcrum? Maybe this is overstating things but in the more narrow scope, especially in Europe and with high technology, it must have been important.

The 3rd Power was as much as child of the Cold War as were the Eastern and Western blocks and when one power got off this teeter-totter, shifting the world order, the existence of the 3rd Power as an active world-player became redundant. Now, twenty years later, their flying saucers rest in cold mountain storage, their U-boats rust in still-secret places, and their microfilm slowly deteriorates in hidden cashes.

Today the 3rd Power is not trying to take over the world or even become a 4th Reich. The 3rd Power was a concept for its members, and lives within friendly government officials and organizations of several countries as well as corporations and financial entities that owed a measure of their success to this 3rd Power. It also lives in the organizations who owe their roots or at least a greater part of their nourishment to Nazi ideas. This includes the Vril Society and the Karoteckia both of which, I am told by reliable sources, still exist. It also lives in the technology of those times, some of which must still be secret.

Literature Cited

1. **Gehring, Heiner and Karl-Heinz Zunneck, 2005**, *Flugscheiben Ueber Neuschwabenland Die Wahrheit ueber, Vril, “Haunebu,” und die Templer-Erbengemeinschaft*, page 92, 93, Jochen Kopp Verlag, Rotenburg, Germany

2. **Gehring, Heiner and Karl-Heinz Zunneck, 2005**, page 159

3. **Farrell, Joseph P., Ph.D., 2010**, *Roswell And The Reich The Nazi Connection*, pages 346-347, Adventures Unlimited Publishing, Kempton, Illinois, USA

4. **Farrell, Joseph, P., Ph.D., 2010**, page 347

5. **Farrell, Joseph, P., Ph.D., 2010**, page 349, here Farrell cites Christopher Simpson in his book “*Blowback*:” as his source.

6. *ibid*.

7. **Farrell, Joseph P., Ph.D., 2008**, *The Nazi International*, page 243, Adventures Unlimited Publishing, Kempton, Illinois, USA

8. **Farrell, Joseph P., Ph.D., 2008**, page 244

9. **Bar-Zohar, Michael, Ph.D., 1967**, *The Hunt For German Scientist*, page 152 and 222, Avon Books, N.Y., NY., USA

10. http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/William B. Bridges

11. **Gehring, Heiner and Karl-Heinz Zunneck, 2005**, page 183

Notes:

1. *Here Heiner Gehring is giving us Landig's thoughts. The immunity comment references the lack of bacteria in the Antarctic and the waning of human immunity as a result. The International Geophysical Year was actually 1957-58. The video-films under consideration were the Norbert Juergen-Rathoffer/Ralf Ettl films: UFO's Das Dritte Reich Schlaegt Zurueck, circa 1988 and UFO's Geheimnis Des Dritten Reiches, circa 1992.*

Special Thanks

To all those who have helped me, I thank you all. Some of you know full well that this book could not have been written without your input. This is certainly true for the many authors upon whom I have relied. Of those cited after the mid-1980s, most of them have helped me with personal correxpondence or conversation beyond those books.

Besides the researchers and writers, thanks also go out to those who have helped me in other ways. This includes the Czech to English translation work of Milos Vnenk who also contributed many Tesla patents and his knowledge in physics. This thanks also extends to those persons who have supplied input but who have a real life and a career ahead of them and who would find it a bit awkward to explain their names in a book about Nazis during, say, their next job interview. For these people initials or code-designations must be used but you all know who you are and are deeply thanked. These thanks also extend to Diana McCrorey for her computer assistance, to Lisa Stevens who edited the book and to the librarians who helped me prepare the illustrations.

Contact

Henry Stevens can be reached for questions or comments at:
luftscheiben@hotmail.com

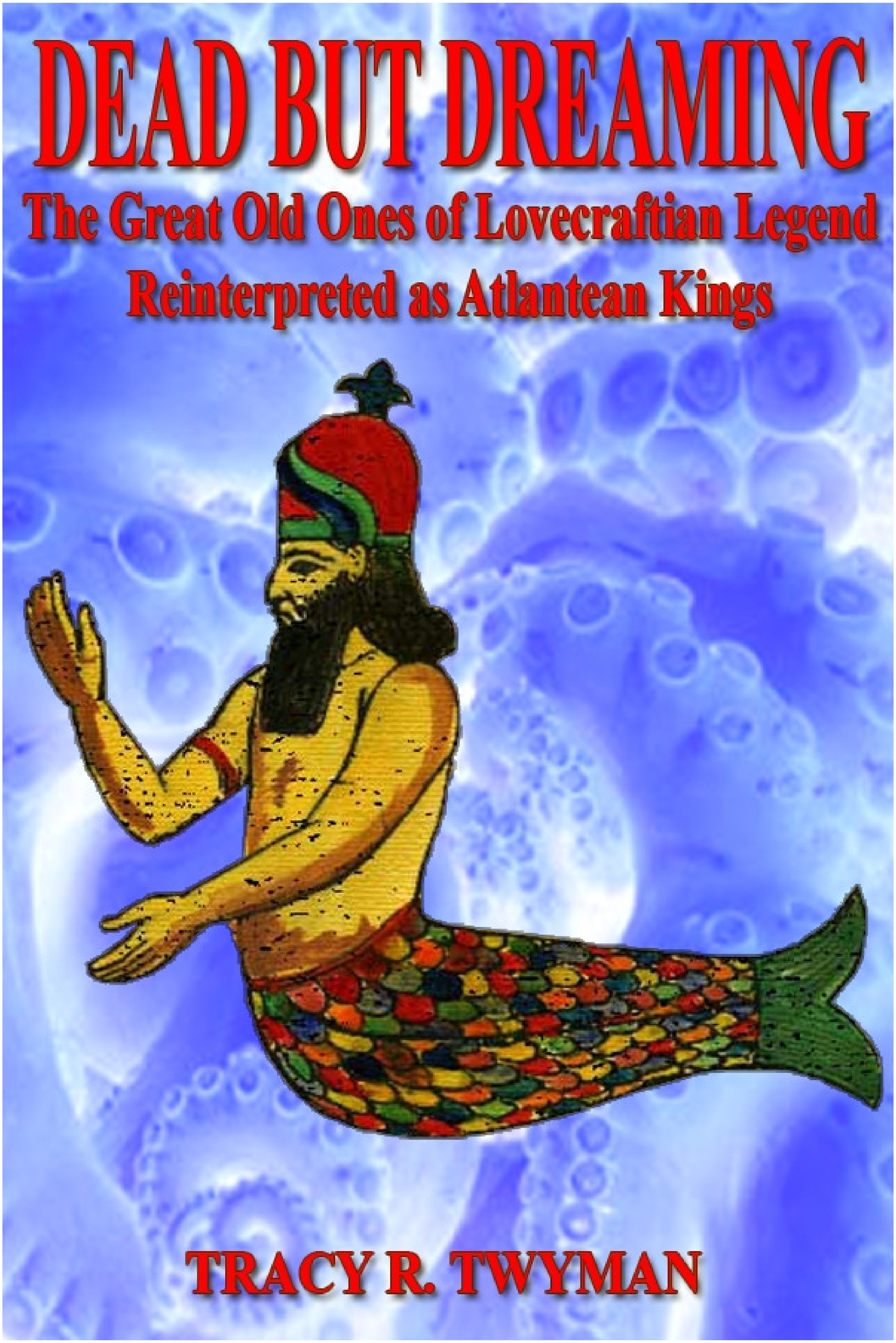

DEAD BUT DREAMING

The Great Old Ones of Lovecraftian Legend Reinterpreted as Atlantean Kings

TRACY R. TWYMAN

Dead But Dreaming: The Great Old Ones of Lovecraftian Legend Reinterpreted as Atlantean Kings

By Tracy R. Twyman

Originally published with
Dagobert's Revenge Magazine © 2002
Quintessential Publications
All rights reserved

The Secret Doctrine given to the elite castes of mankind by the "Annunaki" (the gods of ancient Sumeria and Atlantis), has been passed down through the ages, not only to the Masons, Templars, Rosicrucians, and other fraternal orders which perpetuate the tradition, but also to the teenage geeks and "gamers" of today. The Lovecraft/*Necronomicon* lore has given birth to a cornucopia of role-playing and computer games, in much the same way that Monty Python and the Society for Creative Anachronism have kept the Grail myth alive for these same teenagers. The fact that S.C.A.'s membership correlates strongly with participation in Lovecraftian role-playing games is no coincidence, for the "demons" of the "Cthulhu Mythos" as its called, are the same as the gods of ancient Sumer, and the fallen angels who spawned the Grail family. The "Grail Blood" and the "bloodline of the Great Old Ones" are the same thing. They also represent the same archetypes as legendary sea-monsters such as Leviathan or Dagon, the "Lords of the Deep" and gods of the "underworld," or "Abyss" recorded in the legends of many ancient cultures.

It takes only a cursory examination of H.P. Lovecraft's most quintessential work, *The Call of Cthulhu* to see that his entire system of mythology is based on *The Book of Enoch*, the Nephilim story in *Genesis*, and the universal tale of the fall of Atlantis. In this story, Lovecraft's main character finds a strange carved idol in his late grand-uncle's affects, its appearance described as that of, "an octopus, a dragon, and a human caricature... scaly body, rudimentary wings." The discovery of this idol leads to his investigation and uncovering of a sinister, age-old "cult of Cthulhu" (the name of the idol), who worshipped the creature represented by the idol, and the entire race of demons from which he had come. The description of the idol bears a striking resemblance to the descriptions of the Sumerian god-king Enki, also known as Dagon or Oannes, a half-human, half-fish combination who was known as the "Lord of the Flood," and was said to rise out of the sea every day to teach his secret knowledge to those who followed him. He is mentioned in *I Samuel:5*, when the Philistines capture the Ark of the Covenant and place it in the Temple of Dagon. Two nights later, "Dagon was fallen upon his face to the ground before the Ark of the Lord; and the head of Dagon and both the palms of his hands were cut off upon the threshold; only the stump of Dagon was left to him." The physical description attributed to Dagon applied to an entire race of "gods," or as they were described in the Bible, Nephilim, or fallen angels - the "Great Old Ones," as Lovecraft calls them. The Watchers, "those who were cast down," are described in *The Book of*

Enoch literally as stars that descended to Earth. Cthulhu is also described with wings, another attribute of the Nephilim, who were real flesh-and-blood beings, and ruled as the antediluvian kings of the ancient world over a global kingdom whose capitol was Atlantis. As they were an expert sea-faring people -- *navigators* -- they were also depicted as sea gods, half-man and half-fish, with the horns of a goat.

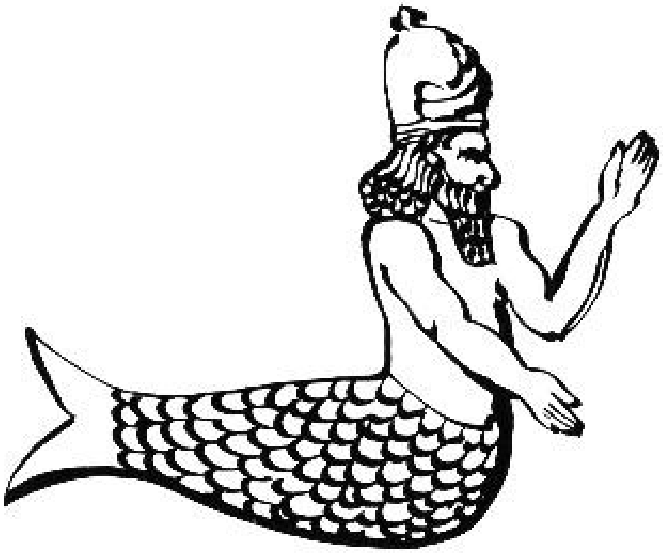

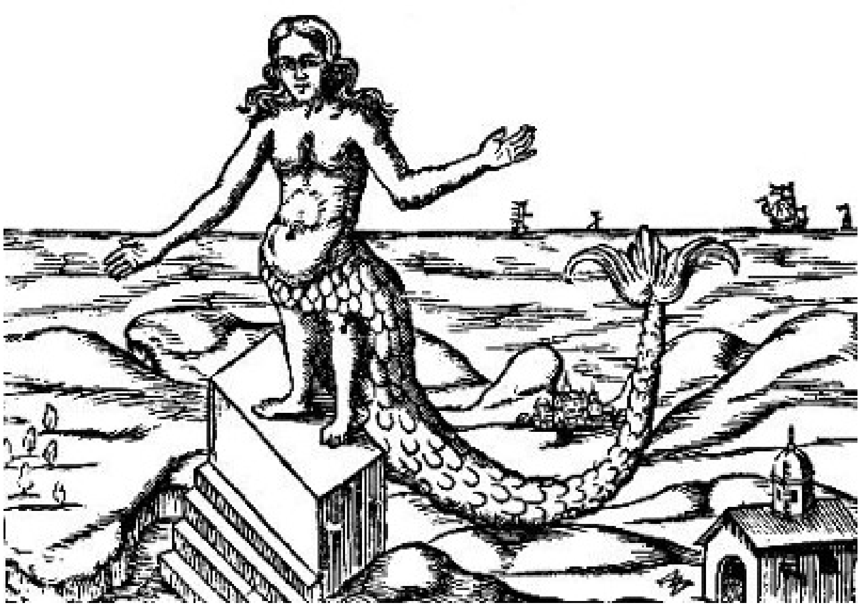

Dagon, the fish god of the ancient world

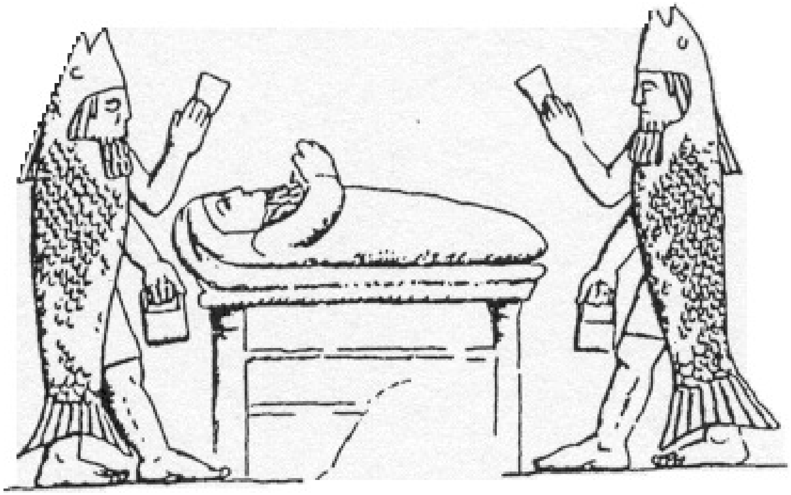

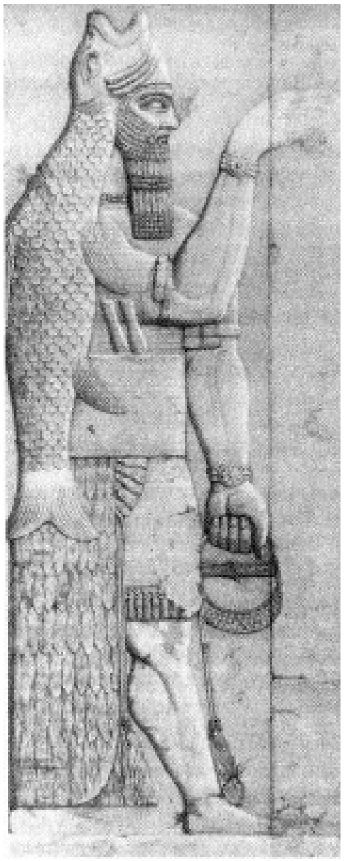

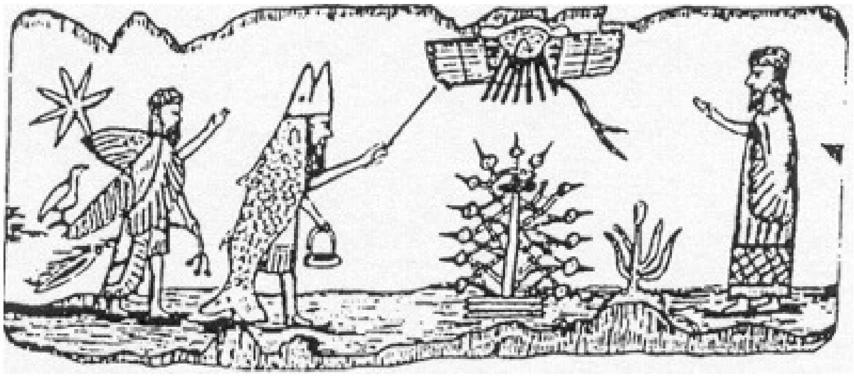

Priests of Dagon performing rituals

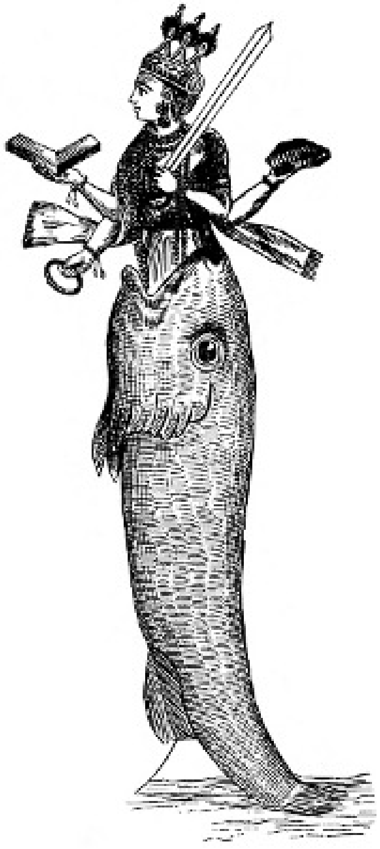

Manu, a Hindu version of Dagon.

The fact that Lovecraft's "Great Old Ones" ruled over Atlantis is quite clear, as their city, called "R'lyeh" in the story, is covered with what Lovecraft describes as "cyclopean" architecture, the same word used by author Ignatius Donnelly (*Atlantis: The Antediluvian World*) to describe the architecture of Atlantis. Lovecraft's descriptions paint a picture of multi-dimensional, non-Euclidean angles, as if they existed in a space-time different than ours, perhaps in an "otherworld" somewhere in between the planes of Heaven and Earth. They are described as grand and mighty creatures, with a moral creed similar to that of Aleister Crowley's "Do what thou wilt", and they trounced on all those weaker than them, bringing destruction to the Earth, devouring every living thing. This is exactly the behavior that is ascribed to the sons of the Watchers, or Nephilim, the giants who wrought havoc upon the world, oppressed and devoured all of the gods' living creation to feed their own voracious appetites. Because of the pride and destructive behavior of the Great Old Ones, their empire city, R'lyeh, sank beneath the ocean as part of a punishment by natural disaster mercifully imposed by God. This is exactly what is said to have happened to the island kingdom of Atlantis, which also sank because of the pride of its inhabitants. It is also what is said about the Nephilim in the Bible, who, along with their offspring, were destroyed by God via the Flood of Noah. The fact that the Great Old Ones are lead by a being called "Cthulhu" is significant, for "Thule" is another name for Atlantis, and the Nazis believed that it was literally located inside the Earth, in the "underworld", the city of "Agartha" or "Agade", the "abode of the Gods."

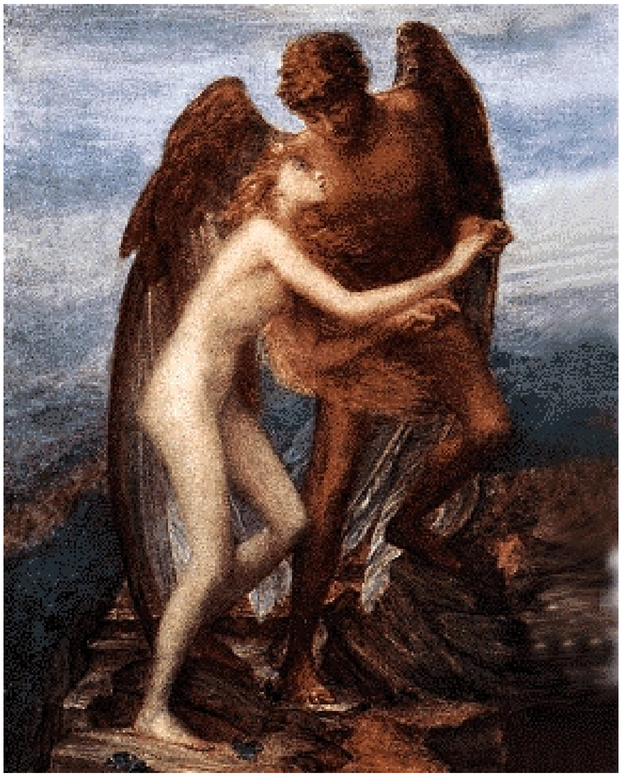

An angel seducing a human female

The "Hollow Earth", or underworld seems to be the place where R'lyeh ultimately sank to, where Cthulhu and the rest of the Great Old Ones now remain, sleeping in their watery tomb, "dead but dreaming", as Lovecraft now describes it. There they are, waiting for the day when they will awaken, their city rise from the waves, and their empire once again hold dominion over the whole earth. This echoes the story of the Watchers or the Nephilim, who were said to be imprisoned by God inside the Earth, or in "the Abyss," which was a word used by the ancients to describe the ocean. The theme of a subterranean Lord, imprisoned in the underworld, who will one day awaken from his death-like slumber to reclaim his kingdom is, as I have established in other articles, a very common archetype, most notable in the form of Kronos. Called "the Forgotten Father" and "the Hidden One," Kronos was the leader of the Titans, and the King of Atlantis, whose kingdom was cast down into the Abyss, and who was imprisoned therein, to be thereafter known as "the Dark Lord" of the underworld. And there is clearly an etymological connection between "Titan" and "Teitan," otherwise spelled "Satan." The Titans, or Satans, and the Nephilim are clearly the same as the Great Old Ones, and Kronos, otherwise known as Saturn, or Satan, is clearly the same as Cthulhu. As I have established, he is also synonymous with Dagon or Oannes, who is referred to in the Bible as Leviathan, the beast who will rise from the sea at the Apocalypse. The return of Cthulhu, the Great Old Ones, and the city of R'lyeh would appear to be Lovecraft's way of depicting the Apocalypse.

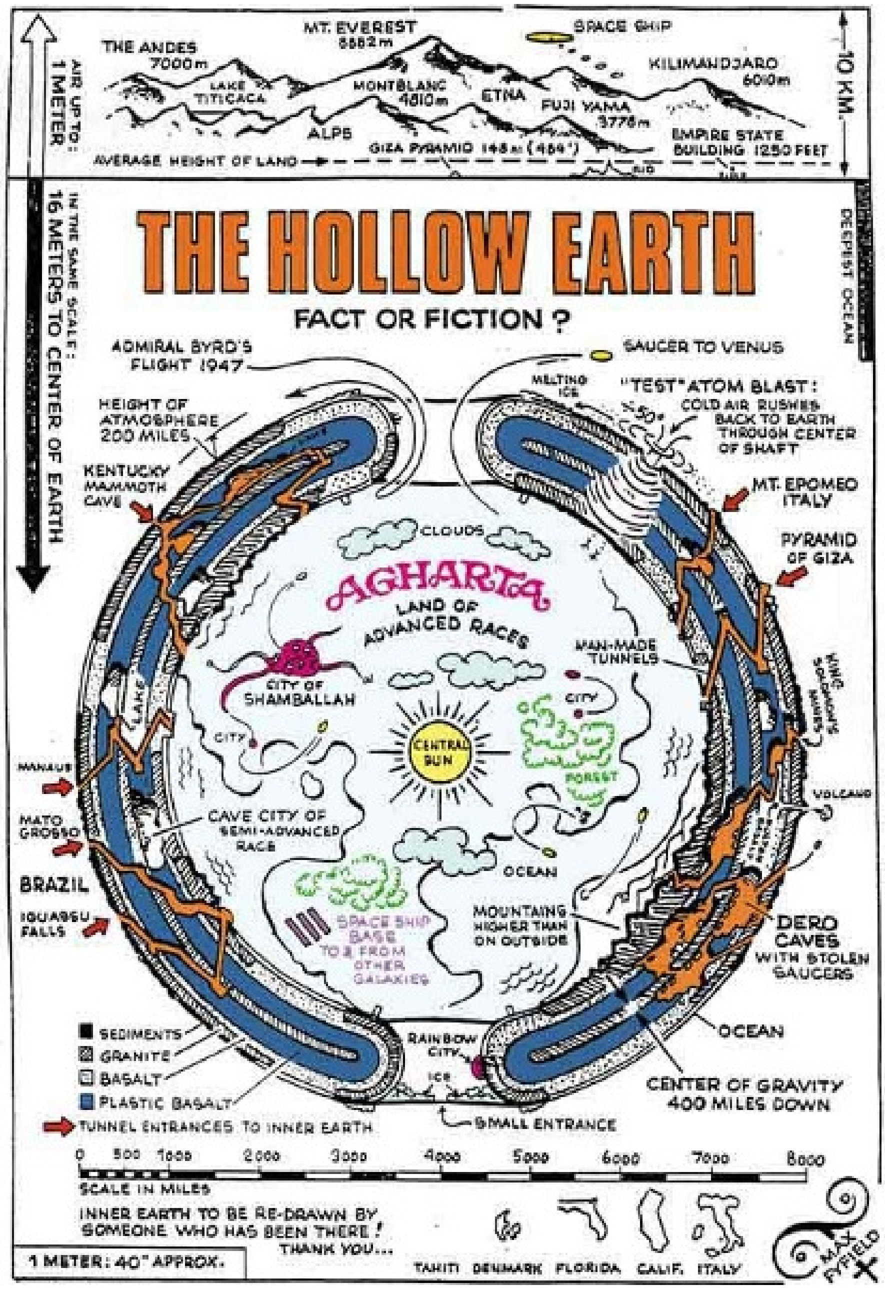
MT. EVEREST 8882m
SPACE SHIP
THE ANDES 7000m
AIR UP TO: 1 METER
LAKE TITICACA
MONTBLANC 4810m
ETNA
FUJI YAMA 3776m
KILIMANDJARO 6010m
10 KM.
ALPS
GIZA PYRAMID 148m (484')
EMPIRE STATE BUILDING 1250 FEET
AVERAGE HEIGHT OF LAND
IN THE SAME SCALE: 16 METERS TO CENTER OF EARTH
DEEPEST OCEAN
THE HOLLOW EARTH
FACT OR FICTION ?
ADMIRAL BYRD'S FLIGHT 1947
SAUCER TO VENUS
MELTING ICE
"TEST" ATOM BLAST: COLD AIR RUSHES BACK TO EARTH THROUGH CENTER OF SHAFT
HEIGHT OF ATMOSPHERE 200 MILES
KENTUCKY MAMMOTH CAVE
MT. EPOMEO ITALY
PYRAMID OF GIZA
CLOUDS
AGHARTA
LAND OF ADVANCED RACES
MAN-MADE TUNNELS
KING SOLOMON'S MINES
CITY OF SHAMBALLAH
CITY
CITY
LAKE
CENTRAL SUN
FOREST
MANAUS
VOLCANO
MATO GROSSO
CAVE CITY OF SEMI-ADVANCED RACE
OCEAN
BRAZIL
IGUASSU FALLS
MOUNTAINS HIGHER THAN ON OUTSIDE
SPACE SHIP BASE TO & FROM OTHER GALAXIES
DERO CAVES WITH STOLEN SAUCERS
SEDIMENTS
GRANITE
BASALT
PLASTIC BASALT
RAINBOW CITY
ICE
OCEAN
CENTER OF GRAVITY 400 MILES DOWN
TUNNEL ENTRANCES TO INNER EARTH
SMALL ENTRANCE
0 500 1000 2000 3000 4000 5000 6000 7000 8000
SCALE IN MILES
INNER EARTH TO BE RE-DRAWN BY SOMEONE WHO HAS BEEN THERE! THANK YOU...
1 METER: 40" APPROX.
TAHITI DENMARK FLORIDA CALIF. ITALY
MAX FYFIELD

The underground kingdom of Agartha, in the center of the Earth, lit by an inner sun, from Max Fyfield's "The Missing Diary of Admiral Byrd"

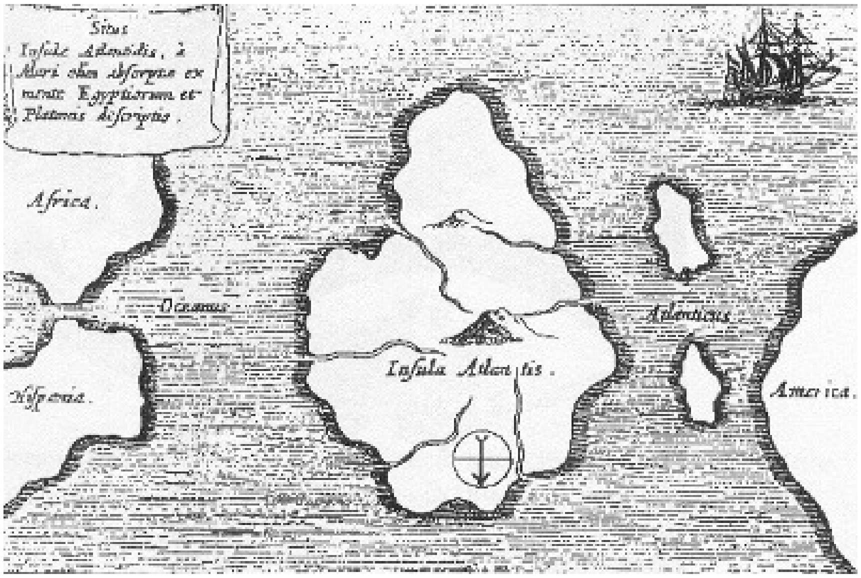

Map of Atlantis from Athanasius Kircher

Confirmation of the above conclusions can be found by examining quotations from Lovecraft's manuscript, the implications of which, in light of what I have just said, will be self-explanatory. When the main character in *The Call of Cthulhu* manages to interview an actual member of the Cthulhu cult to determine their beliefs, the descriptions that follow parallel precisely the tales of the Nephilim, the Titans, and the war in Heaven between God and Lucifer, as well as the fall of the Atlantean empire:

> *"They worshipped, so they said, the Great Old Ones, who lived ages before there were any men, and who came to the young world out of the sky. These old ones were gone now, inside the earth and under the sea; but their dead bodies had told their secrets to the first man, who formed a cult which had never died. This was that cult, and the prisoners said it had always existed and always would exist, hidden in the distant wastes and dark places all over the world until the time when the Great Priest Cthulhu, from his dark house in the mighty city of R'lyeh under the waters should rise and bring the Earth again under his sway. Some day he would call, when the stars were ready, and the secret cult would always be ready to liberate him.*
>
> *Meanwhile, no more must be told. There was a secret which even torture could not extract. Mankind was not absolutely alone amongst the conscious things of the Earth, for shapes came out of the dark to visit the faithful few. But these were not the Great Old Ones. No man had ever seen the Old Ones. The carven symbol was great Cthulhu, but none might say whether or not the others were precisely like him. No one could read the old writing now, but things were told by word of mouth. The chanted ritual was not the secret - that was never spoken aloud, only whispered. The chant meant only this: "In his house at R'lyeh, dead Cthulhu waits dreaming."*

This clearly describes the secret Luciferian doctrine of the gods being transmitted to their offspring, "the first man," just as the serpent gave wisdom to Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden. They created a covenant with that man, and a cult of magic, of ritual and sacrifice, in order to preserve their infernal secrets, one of which is so secret that it could not be talked about, only whispered. This is what has been done in the rites of Freemasonry, Rosicrucianism, the Knights Templar, the Greek and Egyptian mystery schools, the Sufis, the Assassins, and countless other secret occult orders, which Lovecraft was no doubt alluding to when he referred to the "cult which had never died... had always existed, and always would exist", preserving the teachings of the "Forgotten Father" until such time as he should rise again from the sea to once more rule the Earth. The connections to Leviathan and the rise of the Antichrist do not even need to be elucidated. Lovecraft's description goes on:

> *"Old Castro remembered bits of hideous legend that pale the speculations of Theosophists and made man and the world seem recent and transient indeed. There had been eons when other things ruled on the Earth, and they had had great cities. Remains of them ... were still to be found as Cyclopean stones on islands in the Pacific. They all died vast epochs of time before man came, but there were arts which could revive them when the stars had come round again to the right positions in the cycle of eternity. They had indeed come themselves from the stars, and brought their images with them."*

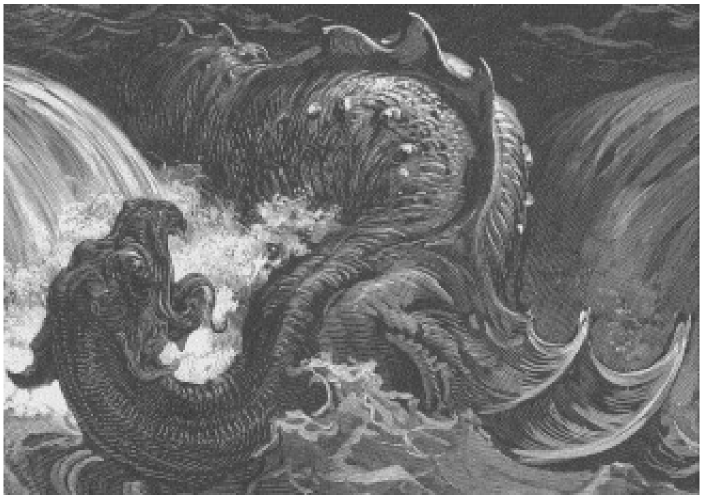

Leviathan, from Gustave Dore

Lovecraft, like the prophet Enoch, and like ancient man himself, conceived of the Atlantean gods or Nephilim as possessing supernatural power, and, like Enoch, says that this power comes from the stars - that these beings in fact had come from the stars themselves, and seem to be metaphysically affected by the movement of the stars, being able to resurrect from the dead only when the stars were in a certain position. Likewise, the Atlantean god-kings purposely associated themselves with the stars and the planets, taking on the personifications of planets and constellations, each of which had a particular "energy" or plain of existence associated with it. This energy is further manipulated by the prayers and rituals of the cult members in Lovecraft's stories, who are loyal to the Great Old Ones, and wish to see their kingdom rise again. In much the same way, Masons, Rosicrucians and other occultists today perform rituals in hope of bringing about the "Great Work" called the "New World Order," a new Golden Age, just like the one that covered the antediluvian world when the Atlantean god-kings (whom they revere) ruled over the Earth directly. The Eye in the Pyramid on our dollar bill, which represents the New World Order, is clearly a symbol of this newly-risen kingdom of Atlantis, "watched over" by the All-Seeing Eye, which could just as easily be the eye of Dagon, or Leviathan, or Cthulhu. It even looks reptilian, like it belongs on the face of a dragon.

The rise of R'lyeh, the New World Order, the New Atlantis, the New Jerusalem, the Golden Age, and even the Apocalypse - these are all terms for the same resurrection of the ancient global kingdom of the gods. Such a resurrection is also described in Aleister Crowley's *The Book of the Law* when he writes about the coming "Age of Horus" and the return of the rule of the gods, as well as their offspring, the human "kings":

> *"Ye shall see them at rule, at victorious armies, at all the joy... love one another with burning hearts, on the low men trample in the fierce lust of your pride, in the day of your wrath... Trample down the Heathen; be upon them, O warrior, I will give you of their flesh to eat."*

Now read the following passage from *The Call of Cthulhu* and compare:

> *"Then, whispered Castro, those first men formed the cult around small idols which the Great Old Ones showed them; idols brought in dim eras from dark stars. That cult would never die, "til the stars came right again, and the secret priests would take great Cthulhu from his tomb to revive his subjects and resume his rule of Earth. The time would be easy to know, for then mankind would have become as the Great Old Ones; free and wild and beyond good and evil, with laws and morals thrown aside and all men shouting and reveling in joy. Then the liberated Old Ones would teach them new ways to shout and kill and revel and enjoy themselves, and all the earth would flame with a holocaust of ecstasy and freedom. Meanwhile, the cult, by appropriate rites, must keep alive the memory of those ancient ways and shadow forth the prophecy of their return."*

This age of the glorious rule of the Old Ones, and the land which they ruled over, is so similar to Atlantis, Thule, Lemuria, and all of the other mythical lost civilizations as to be blatantly obvious, and it is clear that it was the biblical Deluge that put an end to their kingdom. We read in Lovecraft:

> *"In the elder time chosen men had talked with the entombed Old Ones in dreams, but then something had happened. The great stone city R'lyeh, with its monoliths and sepulchers, had sunk beneath the waves; and the deep waters, full of the one primal mystery through which not even thought can pass, had cut off the spectral intercourse. But memory never died, and the high priests said that the city would rise again when the stars were right. Then came out of the Earth the black spirits of the earth, moldy and shadowy, and full of dim rumors picked up in caverns beneath forgotten sea-bottoms. But of them old Castro dared not speak much."*

The climax of Lovecraft's story comes when the main character reads an account of his uncle's death in a fishing boat off the coast of Australia. He had come across a monolith sticking out of the ocean, which turned out to be resting on top of a mountain that was poking out of the water, upon which he and his shipmates landed their boat. There they discovered a strange sunken city built with "cyclopean", non-Euclidean architecture. It was an earthquake that had brought the top of the city to the surface, where Cthulhu and the Great Old Ones were entombed. Their presence awakened Cthulhu, who oozed out of the mountain, dripping green slime, and presumably killed the whole crew.

Similar themes are touched upon in Lovecraft's other work. In *At the Mountains of Madness*, he returns to the theme of discovering the lost city of the Old Ones, this time set in Antarctica, which, as the Nazis and many others believed, is rumored to be the location of one of the largest entrances to the hollow Earth. In *The Nameless City*, he delves explicitly into the hollow Earth, describing the discovery of a subterranean passage filled with the caskets of dead reptilian bodies, who had obviously, at one time, lived inside the Earth. And finally, in *Dagon*, Lovecraft tells the tale of a shipwrecked man who finds himself stuck in a "slimy expanse of hellish black mire", which had been unearthed when "through some unprecedented volcanic upheaval, a portion of the ocean floor must have been thrown to the surface, exposing regions which for innumerable millions of years had lain hidden under unfathomable watery depths." This is clearly another reference to the recurring theme in Lovecraft's work of sunken Atlantis rising from the ocean, which as we have established, is also a common theme in world mythology.[1] There the character discovers a white monolith covered with hieroglyphs:

> *"The writing was in a system of hieroglyphics unknown to me, and unlike anything I had even seen in books, consisting for the most part of conventional aquatic symbols, such as fishes, eels, octopi, crustaceans, mollusks, whales, and the like. Several characters obviously represented marine things which are unknown to the modern world, but whose decomposing forms I had observed on the ocean-risen plain."*

Clearly, then, what this character has discovered are the remains of a high civilization of sea-faring, ocean-obsessed people, which is exactly what Atlantis is described as being, and why their kings, or "gods" were depicted as half-man, half-fish. Lovecraft continues:

> *"Plainly visible across the intervening water on account of their enormous size was an array of bas-reliefs whose objects would have excited the envy of Dore. I think that these were supposed to depict men - at least, a certain sort of men; though the creatures were shown disporting like fishes in the waters of some marine grotto or paying homage at some monolithic shrine that appeared under the waves as well. They were damnably human in general outline, despite webbed hands and feet, shockingly wide and flabby lips, glossy, bulging eyes, and other features less pleasant to recall."*

It is at this point that our narrator espies with his own eyes one of these creatures - not a bas-relief, but the real thing:

> *"Vast, Polyphemus-like, and loathsome, it darted like a stupendous monster of nightmare to the monolith about which it flung its gigantic scaly arms, the while it bowed its hideous head and gave vent to certain measured sounds. It think I went mad then."*

When the character awakes, he is in a hospital bed in San Francisco, safe and sound, but not of sound mind. Disturbed by his memories, he consults "a celebrated ethnologist, and [amuses] him with peculiar suggestions regarding the ancient Philistine legend of Dagon, the Fish-God." Clearly, the character believes that it was Dagon himself, or one of his horde, whom he witnessed that faithful night. As I have previously established, Dagon, one of the kings of Atlantis, was symbolically the same as Kronos, Oannes, Enki, and therefore Satan. He was one of the Nephilim, Watchers, or fallen angels upon which Lovecraft's "Great Old Ones" are based. In keeping with the theme, the character in this story believes that they will one day return to rule the Earth again:

> *"I dream of a day when they may rise above the bellows to drag down, in their reeking talons, the remnants of puny, war-exhausted mankind - of a day when the land shall sink, and the dark ocean floor shall ascend amidst universal pandemonium."*

Perhaps Lovecraft's most pertinent story, however, is 1931's *The Shadow Over Innsmouth*, about a "half-deserted" Massachusetts fishing town regarded with fear and suspicion by the surrounding New England populace. When the unnamed narrator, on an antiquarian tour through the area, expresses to the clerk at the Newburyport train station an interest in visiting the town, he gets an earful of reasons why he absolutely should not go under any circumstances, and if he must, he should certainly not stay the evening. It had once been a thriving seaport, but in 1846 there was an epidemic of some "foreign disease" that "carried off" over half the population. Since then, the main industry in town had been the Marsh Refining Company, founded by Captain Obed Marsh, whose descendants made up the majority of the town's remaining population.

Captain Marsh was the son of a South Sea island woman, and had developed "some skin disease or deformity late in life that makes him keep out of sight." The people of Innsmouth had strange physical features as well. "Some of 'em have queer, narrow heads with flat noses and bulgy, starry eyes that never seem to shut, and their skin aint quite right", the train station clerk told the narrator. "Rough and scabby, and the sides of the necks are all shriveled or creased up. Get bald too, very young. The older fellows look the worst - that is, I don't believe I've seen a very old chap of that kind. Guess they must die off looking in the glass!" General Marsh's family had been noted for the fact that, after they reached a certain age, they dropped out of public view, and spent the rest of their lives inside, out of sight.

The Innsmouth economy now revolved around the sale of gold ingots from the refinery, always in plenteous supply: "a queer king of jewelry" made from strange little beads of unknown material; and fish. The fish swarmed to the ports of Innsmouth more so than any other nearby seaport town, for some reason, but the townspeople would chase off any outsider who tried to fish there. They were odd and very secretive, not appreciating visits from strangers, and for that matter, most of the outside populace held the people of Innsmouth with equal apprehension, even disgust. The fish at Innsmouth tended to congregate at a spot called "Devil's Reef," so called because Old Captain Marsh had been seen there many times, "driving bargains with the devil and bringing imps out of hell to live in Innsmouth... some kind of devil worship and awful sacrifices," the clerk told him. "The story is that there's a whole legion of devils seen sometimes on that reef -- sprawled about, or darting in and out of some kind of caves near the top."

The clerk tells the narrator that the only hotel in Innsmouth is the "Gilman House", but the last man he knew who had stayed there had been frightened in the night by the most mysterious noises. "It was so unnatural - slopping like", he s aid, and it went on all night. The clerk suggested that, if he must go, the narrator should stay the night at Newburyport and leave in the morning, taking the only mode of public transport that would even venture into Innsmouth - a rickety old bus filled with undesirable natives.

That evening, the narrator heads over to the Newburyport Historical Society to look at some of the strange jewelry that the people of Innsmouth had been trading throughout the area. The most magnificent piece on display was:

> *"...a sort of tiara... with a very large and curiously irregular periphery, as if designed for a head of almost freakishly elliptical outline. The material seemed to be predominantly gold, though a weird lighter lustrousness hinted at some strange alloy with an equally beautiful and scarcely identifiable metal...*[2] *One could have spent hours in studying the striking and puzzlingly untraditional designs -- some simply geometrical, and some plainly marine -- chased or molded in high relief on its surface with a craftsmanship of incredible skill and grace... It clearly belonged to some settled technique of infinite maturity and perfection, yet that technique was utterly remote from any -- Eastern of Western, ancient or modern -- which I had even heard of or seen exemplified. It was as if the workmanship were that of another planet."*

The curator of the museum agrees that the strange jewelry did not originate in Innsmouth, and was "of probable East-Indian or Indochinese provenance; although she admitted that no one was sure." The narrator describes the designs on the tiara, and the seemingly racial memories that they conjured within him:

> *"The patterns all hinted of remote secrets and unimaginable abysses in time and space, and the monstrously aquatic nature of the reliefs became almost sinister. Among these reliefs were fabulous monsters of abhorrent grotesqueness and malignity -- half ichthyic and half bactracian in suggestion -- which one could not dissociate from a certain haunting and uncomfortable sense of pseudomemory, as if they called up some image from deep cells and tissues whose retentive functions are wholly primal and awesomely ancestral."*

From the curator, our narrator learns the origin of the rumors of devil-worship being practiced in Innsmouth. It is actually a "quasi-pagan" Eastern cult that had been imported 100 years previously, "at a time when the Innsmouth fisheries seemed to be going barren." The cult was called, believe it or not, "The Esoteric Order of Dagon," and as soon as it took root in the community, the fish returned in abundance. The cult "...soon came to be the greatest influence in the town, replacing Freemasonry altogether, and taking up headquarters in the old Masonic Hall on New Church Green."

So there you have it -- a Dagon cult practicing arcane sacrificial rites in a Masonic temple, and coveting age-old secrets. Lovecraft must have intended some sort of ironic comparison between Freemasonry and the Dagon cult, hinting that some of their traditions may in fact be the same, something that my research would tend to corroborate.

The story progresses, with the narrator taking the horrible little bus to Innsmouth the next morning, every grotesque sight and eerie occurrence stirring up his ancestral memory. He has a talk with a seventeen-year-old grocery boy who is not part of the cult and clearly an outsider at Innsmouth. The youth fills him in more on the Esoteric Order of Dagon, and the "blasphemous" rites that they conduct:

> *"They seemed sullenly banded together in some sort of fellowship and understanding -- despising the world as if they had access to other and preferable spheres of entity. ... their voices were disgusting... It was awful to hear them chanting in their churches at night, and especially during their festivals or revivals, which fell twice a year on April 30 and October 31."*[3]

The tiara that the narrator has seen at the Newburyport museum was, according to the youth, a headdress worn by the priests of the cult. Besides worship, their favorite activity was swimming, and they would often have swimming races out to Devil's Reef. He confirmed that the natives looked normal early on in life, but as they grew older they began taking on that deformed "Innsmouth look", and stayed out of sight altogether. The youth also said that Innsmouth was honeycombed with underground tunnels, in which these people were apt to hide.

After walking around a bit, and catching glimpses of creepy-looking people with lidless eyes peering through the dingy windows of dilapidated houses, the narrator strikes up a conversation with yet another Innsmouth outsider, an old wino named Zadok (the name given to the priests of ancient Israel) who, although he was not one of them, had been forced to join the Dagon cult at one point in his life. In exchange for a drop of liquor, Zadok rambles on with wild stories about all of the devils, monsters, and awful ritual sacrifices he had witnessed during his time at Innsmouth; about humans mating with "toad-lookin' fishes," and hybrid human/sea-monster offspring that looked human at first but grew into awful, grotesque creatures who eventually took to the sea, and who never died, unless, "they was kilt violent." Zadok described the things he had seen in Biblical terms:

> *"..Dagon an' Ashtoreth - Belial an' Beelzebub - Golden Caff an' the idols o' Canaan an' the*

> *Philistines -- Babylonish abominations..."*

Zadok's recollections eventually put him into a horrific trance, and he sinks into a bizarre garbled chant which the narrator attributes to drunkenness:

> *"...an' the children shud never die, but go back to the Mother Hydra an' Father Dagon what we all come from... Ia! Ia! Cthulhu R'lyeh wgah-nagh fhtagn."*

Zadok mutters to the narrator that on festival days, horrible creatures called "shoggoths" are called up from Devil's Reef with this chant, and they fill the streets between Water and Main Street, lumbering about, hollering with inhuman screams. The narrator decides to leave Zadok alone to finish his drink.

That night he stays at the dreaded Gilman House, clearly named "Gilman" as an allusion to the half-fish, half-human nature of the town's inhabitants. He is unable to sleep, and in the middle of the night he hears someone -- someone who emits alien grunting sounds -- trying to unlock the door to his room with a key. Fortunately he had already thought to deadbolt the door, and as his pursuers attempt to batter down the door, he narrowly escapes through the adjacent room and out the window. Outside he finds the air permeated with a horrible fishy odor, and the streets teeming with half-human sea monsters. Full-blooded sea-monsters are pouring out of the sea at Devil's Reef and onto the town's streets. The entire horde pursues him through Innsmouth. The narrator describes them as, "a band of uncouth, crouching shapes loping and shambling in the same direction. He adds that he was, "horrified by the bestial abnormality of their faces and the dog-like subhumanness of their crouching gait. One man moved in a positively simian way, with long arms frequently touching the ground, while another figure -- robed and tiaraed -- seemed to progress in an almost hopping fashion." The narrator tries to blend in by adopting their "shambling gait," and then hides in a pile of brush as they lurch past him, something he found unbearable. "The stench waxed overpowering, and the noises swelled to a bestial babel of croaking, baying and barking without the least suggestion of human speech." He tries to keep his eyes closed during the ordeal, but finally is unable to do so any longer, and faints at the sight of whatever it is he sees.

The next day he wakes up alone in the same field, walks to the next train station, and takes the first train to Arkham, where he reports his experience to the local government officials. The result of this is that the federal government sponsors a police raid that year that in which all of the houses along the Innsmouth waterfront are burned to the ground, the raid being disguised as, "one of the major clashes in a spasmodic war on liquor."

Although the narrator obviously does not continue with all of his intended plans for an "antiquarian" trip through New England, he does stop by the Arkham Historical Society to research his genealogy, where he discovers that his great great-grandfather had been Captain Obed Marsh, and his great-great grandmother that strange foreign woman, whom Zadok had described to him as actually being a sea monster. The curator tells him that he possesses the famous "Marsh family eyes," and that he also resembles his Uncle Douglas, who had stopped by the Arkham Historical Society years before on a similar genealogical research study. The narrator had already heard of this study which his uncle conducted, for he had shot himself immediately afterward.

A year later, after completing his college studies, the narrator stops by the house of his late mother's family in Cleaveland -- the side of his family that was descended from the Marshes, and the side which he had never cared for. Both his uncle and grandmother on that side had always terrified him, and as he looks over photographs of them and their family, he begins to recognize the repulsive physical features that had always brought him such discomfort. It is, of course, the "Innsmouth look." Worse yet, his uncle shows him some family heirlooms locked in a safe deposit box that he instantly recognizes as well: "two armlets, a tiara, and a kind of pectoral," made in that distinct Order of Dagon style with that indescribably foreign material. For the second time, he faints.

From that moment on, the narrator spends his days in madness, haunted by horrible aquatic nightmares in which he:

> *"[wandered] through titanic sunken porticoes and labyrinths of weedy cyclopean walls with grotesque fishes as my companions. Then other shapes began to appear, filling me with nameless horror the moment I awoke. But during the dreams they did not horrify me at all -- I was one of them, wearing their inhuman trappings, treading their aqueous ways, and praying monstrously at their evil sea-bottom temples."*

As the days wear on, and the narrator becomes less and less sane, he begins to notice himself taking on the "Innsmouth look." His dreams become even more bizarre. In them, he meets his grandmother in this undersea kingdom, still alive down there, and she tells him that his destiny is to live down there with, "those who had lived since before man ever walked the earth." He also meets his great great grandmother, Captain Obed Marsh's wife -- a sea monster named "Pth'thya-'yi," and learns of the plan of the "shoggoths" for world domination. "For the present they would rest," she told him, "but some day, if they remembered, they would rise again for the tribute Great Cthulhu craved." The story ends with the narrator resolving to break into the sanitarium where his cousin Laurence is being held (the narrator suspects he was put there because he had also begun to acquire the "Innsmouth look") and run away with him to the sea beneath Devil's Reef. He declares:

> *"We shall swim out to tat brooding reef in the sea, and dive down through black abysses to cyclopean and many columned Y'ha-nthlei, and in that lair the Deep Ones we shall dwell amidst wonder and glory forever!"*

The themes alluded to in Lovecraft's work were taken to their utmost conclusion by the authors and editors of *The Necronomicon*, based on the imaginary grimoire that Lovecraft wrote of repeatedly in connection to Cthulhu and the Old Ones. This was supposedly a book of black magic with spells aimed at causing the sunken city of R'lyeh to rise again, and the "dead but dreaming" Old Ones to awaken from their slumber. *The Necronomicon*, published by Avon books, purports to be that very grimoire, "the most dangerous Black Book known to the Western World." Although from reading it and the silly portentous warnings that fill the introduction (attempting to scare away the casual practitioner from meddling with forces so dangerous), it is hard to believe that this is, verbatim, an ancient text, it does appear to be based largely on genuine texts. As the Editor, L.K. Barnes explains:

> "*The Necronomicon* is, according to Lovecraft's tales, a volume written in Damascus in the Eighth Century, A.D., by a person called the "Mad Arab', Abdul Alhazred. It must run roughly 800 pages in length, as there is a reference in one of the stories concerning some lacunae on a page in the 700's. It had been copied and reprinted in various languages -- the story goes -- among them Latin, Greek and English. Doctor Dee, the Magus of Elizabethan fame, was supposed to have possessed a copy and translated it. This book, according to the mythos, contains the formulae for evoking incredible things into visible appearance, beings and monsters which dwell in the Abyss, and Outer Space, of the human psyche."

The system of gods, legends, and rituals presented in the book are as old as civilization itself, having originated from the oldest civilization accepted by historians, one of the greatest states in the empire of the god-kings of

Atlantis: ancient Sumeria.

There is a dualistic notion inserted into *The Necronomicon* that is completely absent in Lovecraft's work. Lovecraft's "Old Ones" were primordial beings, beyond good and evil. That was the essence of their power. In *The Necronomicon*, the "Great Old Ones" have been split into two factions: the "Elder Gods" and the "Ancient Ones" -- the good guys and the bad guys. This is noted in the excellently-written introduction by the Editor, L.K. Barnes, which alone should be invaluable to the serious student of the occult, and Sumerian mythology. Writes Barnes:

> *"Basically there are two "sets' of gods in the mythos: the Elder Gods, about whom not much is written, save that they are a stellar race that occasionally comes to the rescue of man, and which corresponds to the Christian 'light'; and the Ancient Ones, about whom much is told, sometimes in great detail, who correspond to Darkness. These latter are the Evil Gods who wish nothing but ill for the Race of Man, and who constantly strive to break into our world through a gate or door that leads from the Outside In. There are certain people among us, who are devotees of the Ancient Ones, and who try to open the Gate, so that this evidently repulsive organization may once again rule the Earth. Chief among this is Cthulhu, typified as a Sea Monster, dwelling in the Great Deep, a sort of primeval Ocean..."*

I have sincerely tried to figure out what the essential difference is between the Ancient Ones and the Elder Gods. The Elder Gods are lead by a great trinity: Anu, Enlil and Enki, three of the most well-known ancient god-kings of Sumeria, and perhaps, Atlantis. Anu held the seat of kingship, the inheritance of which was disputed by his sons, Enki and Enlil, leading to a catastrophic war that destroyed much of the Earth. This is recorded in the Sumerian *Enuma Elish*, as well as the biblical tale of the "war in Heaven." In the Sumerian texts, there is a race of gods descended from this trinity called the "Annunaki," analogous to the "sons of God" of the Bible, or the "Watchers" of *The Book of Enoch*. In *The Necronomicon* the strife between Enki and Enlil is completely ignored, and the Annunaki are considered to be a separate race, a faction of the Ancient Ones. They live in the Absu, or Abyss, a.k.a. "Nar Mattaru," the great underworld ocean, which is also called "Cutha" or "Kutu." This place is also described as "the Sea beneath the Seas," and clearly indicates an ocean *inside* the Earth which coincides with descriptions of the hollow Earth being largely filled with water. "Nar Mattaru" is very similar to "Nar Mar," one of the kings of the global empire of Atlantis, Sumeria, Egypt and India, whose name meant "Wild Bull," but who was symbolized by a cuneiform character depicting a cuttlefish.

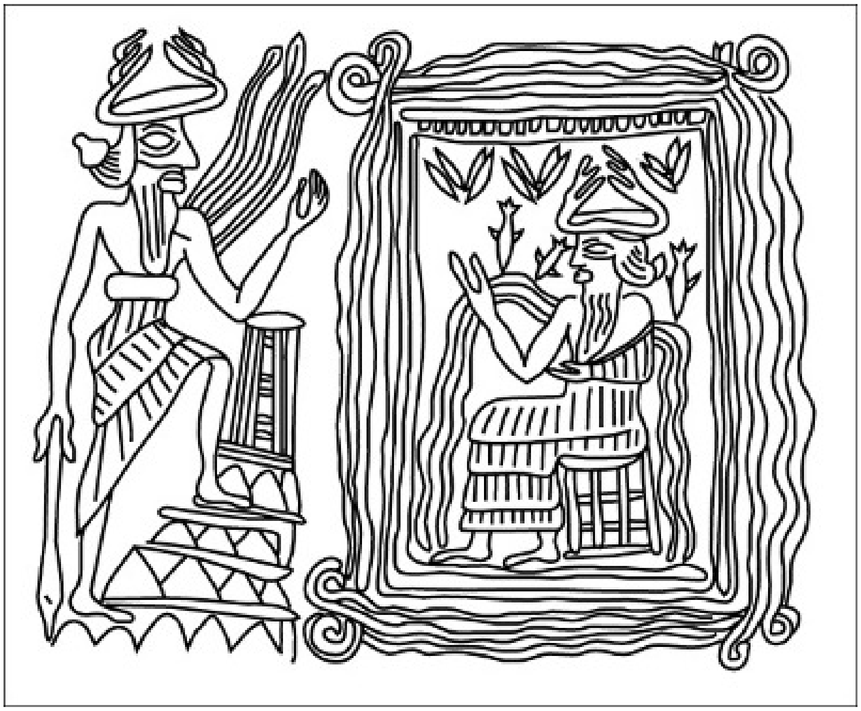

Enki in the Absu.

Enki with fish and water flowing from his person.

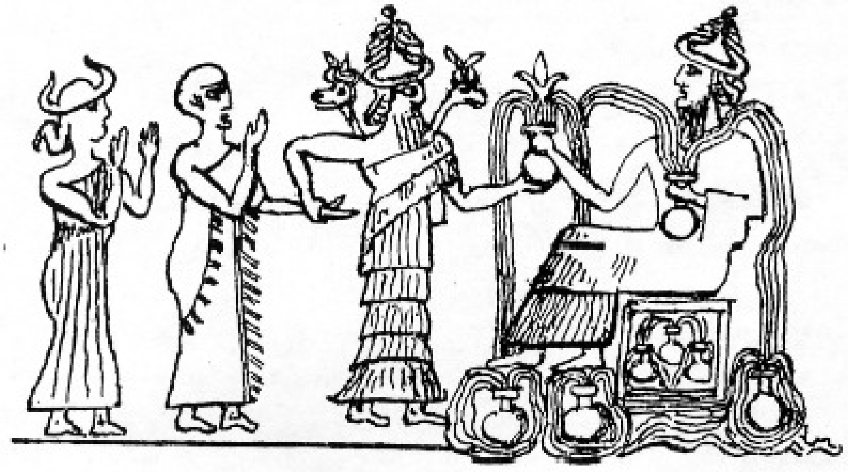

Enki depicted as Lord of the Flood.

The Elder Gods of *The Necronomicon* seem most definitely to be associated with the planets. In the chapter entitled "Of the Zonei and Their Attributes" ("Zonei" referring to the "zones" or orbits in which the planets travel), we learn that beneath Enki, Enlil and Anu are seven planetary deities. It appears that it is not the planets themselves that were worshipped in the old days, but the gods that those planets represented. As I have previously discussed, the ancient god-kings of Atlantis associated themselves with the stars and the planets, taking on the attributes that these planets were supposed to represent. Interestingly, it is written of Nergal, the god of Mars, that, "He was sometimes thought to be an agent of the Ancient Ones, for he dwelt in Cutha for a time." Clearly, whether a god is considered "Ancient" or "Elder" depends less on moral or physical attributes than it does on where spatially the "god" is believed to be located. Ancient man believed that the underworld was the land to the west, because that is where the sun went to "die" every night. So if there was a time when Mars rose in the West, it would explain this association between that planet and "Cutha."

The Ancient Ones, for their part, seem to be associated both with the Abyss, or underground sea, and with the constellations as well. This is not a contradiction if one takes into account the fact that ancient man considered the sky itself to be a cosmic ocean, and it was often called "the Abyss" as well. There seem to be three star systems in particular that the Ancient Ones are associated with, which have given birth to what *The Necronomicon* describes as: "The Cult of the Dog, the Cult of the Dragon, and the Cult of the Goat" (all cults that would be perceived as pagan or "Satanic" today), corresponding to the stars Draconis (the Dragon), Sirius (the Dog-Star), and Capricorn, (the Goat). *The Necronomicon*'s narrator Abdul Alhazred explains that:

> *"There shall forever be a war between us and the race of Draconis, for the race of Draconis was ever-powerful in ancient times, when the first temples were built in Magan, and they drew down their power from the stars..."*

Many would interpret this to means that the Ancient Ones, "the Race of Draconis," are a lizard race of extraterrestrials from Draco, much like the concept promoted by conspiracy theorist David Icke. These beings are uncaring and unfeeling, yet the cause of all pain on this Earth, and they can be known by "their many unnatural sciences and arts, which cause wondrous things to happen, but which are unlawful to our people."

Here again we comes across the roots of the ancient yet nonetheless false dichotomy between good and evil. The Ancient Ones are reviled for teaching man secret wisdom, arts and sciences that are "unnatural," because they enable man to conquer nature, just as the Watchers did in *The Book of Enoch*. In that text, the forbidden knowledge consists of math, writing, astronomy, and the like. Here it seems to be associated mostly with the forbidden arts of ritual magic, which, if performed by the Elder Gods would be perfectly alright, but which "are unlawful to our people."

And who exactly are "our people" in this schematism? The human race in general? Or something more specific? In "The Testimony of the Mad Arab," Abdul Alhazred writes of his first encounter with the worshippers of the Ancient Ones, who were performing a sacrificial ritual around a large, floating, gray rock, upon which was carved three symbols. Of the first, the pentagram, he writes: "The first is the Sign of Our Race from beyond the Stars, and is called "Arra" in the tongue of the Scribe who taught it to me, an emissary of the Elder Ones. In the tongue of the eldest city of Babylon, it was Ur." The pentagram was indeed called the "Ar," or "Plough Sign" by the ancient Sumerians, and some have speculated that this is where the word "Aryan" comes from. The gods of ancient Sumeria were depicted with blue eyes, and their language is clearly the root of our "Indo-European," or Aryan system of languages. Is it so much to assume that the Sumerians were in fact themselves "Sum-Aryans?" This would seem to confirm it. Even L.K. Barnes makes note of the "strange, non-Semitic language of the Sumerians; and language which has been closely allied to that of the Aryan race, having in fact many words identical to that of Sanskrit (and, it is said, to Chinese!)"

But the blood of the Aryans has a special quality to it in this view, for it possesses the co-mingled powers of both the Ancient Ones and the Elder Gods. As L.K. Barnes writes: "Man was created from the blood of the slain commander of the Ancient Army, Kingu, thereby making man a descendant of the Blood of the Enemy, as well as the "breath" of the Elder Gods; a close parallel to the "Sons of God and the daughters of men" reference in the Old Testament." Indeed it is a close parallel, for these Sumerian legends of the war in Heaven are the source of this later Biblical tale. A trace of these ancient versions can be found in what L.K. Barnes refers to as the "centerpiece" of *The Necronomicon*, "The Magan Text."

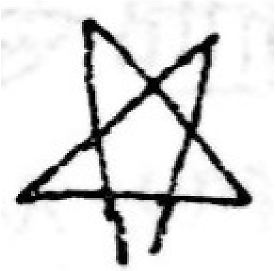

The Sumerian AR, or "plough sign"

The Magan Text tells the story of the creation of our present Earth, and of the human species. It starts out much like *Genesis*, with the emergence of creation out of the formless void of chaos, which is referred to as "the Waters" in both texts. From "The Magan Text" we read:

> *"When on High the Heavens had not been named,*
> *The Earth had not been named,*
> *And Naught existed but the Seas of Absu,*
> *The Ancient One,*
> *And Mummu Tiamat, the Ancient One*
> *Who bore them all,*
> *Their Waters as One Water."*

Tiamat is the female version of Leviathan, the consort of Cthulhu in this book. From L.K. Barnes we read:

> *"That Tiamat was undoubtedly female is to the point; and that the Chinese as well as the Sumerians perceived of two dragon currents, male and female, gives the researchers a more complex picture. The Green Dragon and the Red Dragon of the alchemists are thus identified, as the positive and negative energies that compromise the cosmos of our perception, as manifest in the famous Chinese yin-yang symbol."*

Tiamat, therefore, would have, like Leviathan and Kutulu/Cthulhu, represented the ocean itself, as well as the Earth, or, at least, the larger planet that existed in Earth's place prior to being rent in the manner that "The Magan Text" later describes.

The beginning of the poem describes a time "before the Elder Gods had been brought forth," meaning before the planets had been formed. "Uncalled by name, their destinies unknown and undetermined," it says -- the word "destiny" referring to the gravitational orbits of the planet. "Then it was that the gods were formed within the Ancient Ones." This means that the Ancient Ones represent forces that pre-existed the creation of matter itself -- time, space, electromagnetic and nuclear forces -- the primeval void that was the womb of creation. This is what L.K. Barnes means when he writes:

> *"The method of The Necronomicon concerns deep, primeval forces that seem to pre-exist the normal archetypal images of the tarot trumps and the Golden Dawn telesmatic figures. These are forces that developed outside the Judeo-Christian mainstream, and were worshipped and summoned long before the creation of the Qabala as we know it today."*

This is because Western magic is largely based on the worship of the Sun, the planets, and creation as it exists now. But these Ancient Ones are the forces of creation, of life, which is why Leviathan and Tiamat are synonymous with the "Kundalini power" of Tantric sex magic. In this sense, Tiamat plays the role of the Orobouros, the serpent eating its tail which encircles the cosmos, providing a "womb," as it were, for the celestial ocean, the Abyss. Since the ancients conceived of the "cosmic abyss" of the sky as an extension of the Abyss on Earth known as the ocean, they also believed that the dragon Tiamat or Leviathan lived there as well, in the terrestrial sea. It was the sea, and it was the Earth itself. Says Barnes:

> *"S.H. Hooke, in his excellent Middle Eastern Mythology, tells us that the Leviathan mentioned in **Job**, and elsewhere in the Old Testament, is the Hebrew name given to the Serpent Tiamat, and reveals that there was in existence either a cult, or scattered individuals who worshipped or called up the Serpent of the Sea, or Abyss. Indeed, the Hebrew word for Abyss that is found in **Genesis 1:2** is, Hooke tells us, tehom, which the majority of scholars take to be a survival of the name of the chaos-dragon Tiamat or Leviathan that is identified closely with Kutulu or Cthulhu within the pages. They are mentioned independently of each other, indicating that somehow Kutulu is the male counterpart of Tiamat, similar to Absu.*
>
> *This monster is well known to cult worship all over the world... The Chinese system of geomancy, feng shui (pronounced fung shway) is the science of understanding the "dragon currents" which exist beneath the earth, these same telluric energies that are distilled in such places as Chartres Cathedral in France, Glastonbury Tor in England, and the Ziggurats of Mesopotamia. In both the European and Chinese cultures, the Dragon or Serpent is said to reside somewhere "below the earth;" it is a powerful force, a magickal force, which is identified with mastery over the created world; it is also a power that can be summoned by the few and not the many."*

Since the Elder Gods were begotten of the womb of Tiamat, it makes sense that they would be made of the same material, the primordial energy, or "prima materia" that she represents. That is where they would ultimately get their planetary power from. That is, therefore, where the Earth would get its power too. One is reminded of the myth of the Black Sun, the ball of "prima materia" that supposedly exists in the center of the hollow Earth, providing the "dragon current" that resides beneath the Earth, and corresponding to the myth of Leviathan in the Abyss. The myth of the Black Sun comes from the ancient belief that the Sun died in the West every night, turned black, and descended into the underworld. It just so happens that this is exactly what "The Magan Text" refers to: To quote Barnes:

> *"The word Magan may mean the Land of the Magan which was said to lie in the West of Sumer. For a time, it seems the name Magan was synonymous with the Place of Death -- as the Sun "died' in the West. Hence, it is a bit confusing as to what Magan is really supposed to mean in this text, but in context the "Place of Death' explanation seems quite valid."*

The Magan Text, then, may refer not only to how the Earth was formed out of the rending of a larger planet, but how the so-called "Black Sun," in its guise as Tiamat, or Leviathan was purportedly deposited in its center. What is really interesting is that in this story, it is Tiamat who is the most powerful, the most ancient, and the Most High God. It is she who is rebelled against, and the "Elder Ones," the good gods, are the ones who rebel. The following passage describes how the planets became disturbed in their orbits within the womb of Tiamat (space, the Abyss), thereby "rebelling" against her.

> *"The Elder Ones came together*
> *They disturbed Tiamat, the Ancient One, as they surged back and forth.*
> *Yea, they troubled the belly of Tiamat*
> *By their Rebellion in the abode of Heaven.*
> *Absu could not lessen their clamour*
> *Tiamat was speechless at their ways.*
> *Their doings were loathsome unto the Ancient Ones.*
> *Absu rose up to slay the Elder Gods by stealth.*
> *With magick charm and spell Absu fought,*
> *But was slain by the sorcery of the Elder Gods.*
> *And it was their first victory.*
> *His body was lain in an empty Space*
> *In a crevice of the heavens*
> *Hid*
> *He was lain,*
> *But his blood cried out to the Abode of Heaven."*

What follows is essentially the same as the war in Heaven. Tiamat creates children (monsters) out of her womb to attack the rebellious Elder Gods. These monsters are lead by a demon called Kingu. Enki, "The Lord of the Magick Waters," summons his son Marduk to do battle with the "Ancient Horde." Enki represents the planet Saturn, and therefore, Satan, while Marduk, attributed to the planet Jupiter in this text, bears an uncanny likeness to Lucifer, as the leader of the rebellious gods. He is also referred to as "The Brightest Star Amongst the Stars," and the Elder Gods are said to represent "the nature of the cosmos before the Fall of Marduk from Heaven." However, the event of Marduk's "fall" is not recorded in this text, but merely mentioned in passing later on. Rather, Marduk is said to have been victorious against the Ancient Ones, and caused *them* to fall from Heaven.

His father Enki, "Lord of All Magick," told him "the Secret Name, the Secret Number, and the Secret Shape," thereby enabling him to access the powers of magic.[4] Then:

"Marduk struck with the Disc of Power
Blinded Tiamat's Eyes of Death
The Monster heaved and raised its back
Struck forth in all directions
Spitting ancient words of Power
Screamed the ancient incantations
Marduk struck again and blew
An Evil Wind into her body
Which filled the raging, wicked Serpent
Marduk shot between her jaws
The Charmed arrow of Enki's Magick
Marduk struck again and severed
The head of Tiamat from its body."

One would assume that this represents cosmic forces causing planets to smash into one another. And from the dead body of Tiamat, the Earth was formed. After it was all done, Marduk was responsible for re-establishing the planetary orbits, and basically taking over. He himself became the creator of the new Heaven and the new Earth, while the Ancient Ones were imprisoned in the underworld:

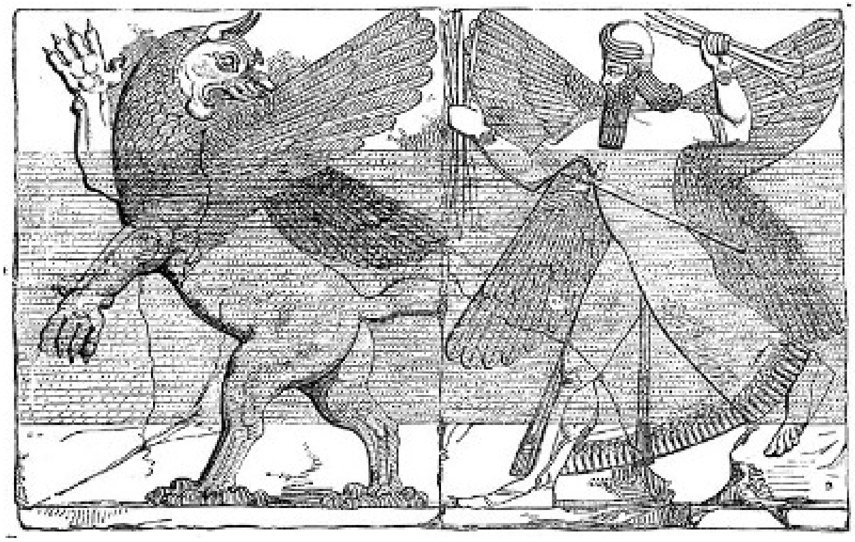

Marduk fighting Tiamat

"Marduk
Victor
Took the Tablets of Destiny
Unbidden
Hung them around his neck.
Acclaimed of the Elder Gods was he.
First among the Elder Ones was he.
He split the sundered Tiamat in twain
And fashioned the heavens and the earth,

> *With a Gate to keep the Ancient Ones Without.*
> *With a Gate whose Key is hid forever*
> *Save to the Sons of Marduk*
> *Save to the Followers of Our Master*
> *Enki*
> *First in Magick among the Gods.*
>
> *From the Blood of Kingu he fashioned Man.*
> *He constructed Watchtowers for the Elder Gods*
> *Fixing their astral bodies as constellations*
> *That they may watch the Gate of Absu."*

So Lucifer cast the creator of the universe into Hell? L.K. Barnes himself notes how odd it is that the Luciferian character is the hero in this text.

> *"Whereas Christianity states that Lucifer was a rebel in heaven, and fell from God's grace to ignominy below, the original story was that Marduk was the rebel, and severed the Body of the Ancient of Ancient Ones to create the Cosmos -- in other words, the precise reverse of the Judeo-Christian dogma. The Elder Gods evidently possessed a certain Wisdom that was not held by their Parents, yet their Parents held the Power, the Primal Strength, the First Magick, that the Elder Ones tapped to their own advantage, for they were begotten of Her."*

Since the Elder Gods were made "of" the Ancient Ones, they necessarily possessed the dual powers of good and evil, the balance of which is the secret power of the occult. And so, as the text explains, does mankind, which Marduk created "from the blood of Kingu," as well as the "breathe" of the Elder Gods. "The essences of the Ancient Ones are in all things, but the essences of the Elder Ones are in all things that live." So man's material essence comes from the body of a demon that represents prima materia, while his life-force is provided by the powers of the planets. This prima materia is, in one way, the "dragon force" that can be conjured within the human body, the Kundalini serpent that lives at the base of the spine, which can be roused through meditation, and drawn up through the spine to electrify the seven chakras, each of which corresponds to one of the seven planets. This can be done because man is connected genetically to the serpent power, which his DNA allows him to access, and which his DNA, in fact, represents. For as L.K. Barnes writes, "the twisting, sacred spiral shape formed by the serpent of the Caduceus, and by the spinning of galaxies is also the same Leviathan as the spiral of the biologists' code of Life: DNA." This DNA acts as a conductor for the forces of the Ancient Ones, sort of an inter-dimensional gateway, or patch bay connecting our reality to theirs. In fact, this genetic component of human blood is described in *The Necronomicon* as being the "key" capable of unlocking the prison inside of the Earth where the Ancient Ones lie. Part II of "The Magan Text", called "Of the Forgotten Generations of Man", states:

> *"And was not Man created from the blood of Kingu*
> *Commander of the hordes of the Ancient Ones?*
> *Does not man possess in his spirit*
> *The seeds of rebellion against the Elder Gods?*
> *And the blood of Man is the Blood of Vengeance*
> *And the blood of Man is the Spirit of Vengeance*
> *And the Power of Man is the Power of the Ancient Ones*
> *And this is the Covenant*
> *For, lo! The Elder Gods possess the Sign*

By which the Powers of the Ancient Ones are turned back
But Man possesses the Sign
And the Number
And the Shape
To summon the Blood of his Parents.
And this is the Covenant.
Created by the Elder Gods
From the Blood of the Ancient Ones
Man is the Key by which
The Gate of Iak Sakkak may be flung wide
By which the Ancient Ones
Seek their Vengeance
Upon the face of the Earth
Against the Offspring of Marduk.
For what is new
Came from that which is old
And what is old
Shall replace that which is new
And once again the Ancient Ones
Shall rule upon the face of the Earth!
And this is too the Covenant!"

One of Lovecraft's proteges, Frank Belknap Long, wrote a story about this very concept called *The Hounds of Tindalos*. In this story, a writer named Chalmers takes a drug that enables him to mentally regress through the genetic memory of his DNA, all the way back through human evolution and beyond. As he reports to his friend, the narrator:

> *"I am going back and back. Man has disappeared from the Earth. Gigantic reptiles crouch beneath enormous palms and swim through the loathly black waters of dismal lakes. Now the reptiles have disappeared. No animals remain upon the land, but beneath the waters, plainly visible to me, dark forms move slowly over rotting vegetation."*

Chalmers makes it clear that these underwater forms are multi-dimensional beings, and that by taking this drug and having these visions, he was actually performing a feat of time travel through the fourth dimension:

> *"The forms are becoming simpler and simpler. Now they are single cells. All about me there are angles -- strange angles that have no counterparts on Earth... Beyond life there are... things that I cannot distinguish. They move slowly through outrageous angles."*

What are these strange angles, and how is Chalmers able to see "beyond life?" It is because he is experiencing another dimension of space where all points of time exist simultaneously. As he explains:

> *"Time is merely our imperfect perception of a new dimension of space. Time and motion are both illusions. Everything that has existed from the beginning of the world exists now. Events that occurred centuries ago on this planet continue to exist in another dimension of space. Events that will occur centuries from now exist already. We cannot perceive their existence because we cannot enter the dimension of space that contains them. Human beings*

> *as we know them are merely fractions, infinitesimally small fractions of one enormous whole. Every human being is linked with all life that preceded him on this planet. All of his ancestors are parts of him. Only time separates him from his forebears, and time is an illusion and does not exist. ... By simply straining I can see further and further back. Now I am going back through strange curves. There is curved time and angular time."*

It is the angles that allow the "dark forms" that Chalmers sees -- and Chalmers himself -- to pass from point to point in space-time. That the Ancient Ones in *The Necronomicon* are likewise multi-dimensional beings is clear from the descriptions contained therein. They are said to be able to pass through doors "like a wind." They can do this because they live:

> *"in the places between, the places unknown in Heaven and Earth... Nowhere are they known. Not in Heaven, nor in the Earth are they discovered, for their place is outside of our place, and between the angles of the Earth. We are the Lost Ones, from a Time before Time, from a land beyond the Stars... We are a race from beyond the wanderers of night... falling like rain from the sky, issuing like mist from the Earth."*

It is this "issuing from the Earth" aspect that we should examine now, since that is where the Ancient Ones are said to be currently located. Later on in "The Magan Text," Ishtar (Venus), described as the "Lady of the Harlots of UR," descends into the underworld. When she does this, she "[sets] her mind from above and to below... [sets] her mind in that direction," indicating that "entering the Underworld" requires a special mental process whereby you set your mind in between the dimensions represented by Heaven and Earth, so that you can get onto the right frequency and travel through space/time. This may link up with the claim by some that the hollow Earth, in which these fallen gods lie sleeping, exists in another dimension, which is why it is not acknowledged by science.

That the "underworld" is literally inside of the Earth is quite obvious from the text. As Ishtar descends, she must go through seven chambers, which clearly involves traveling through a series of tunnels into the depths of the Earth. This could also be seen symbolically as her descending down the seven chakra points to the "underworld" at the base of the spine, where the Kundalini Cthulhu lies "sleeping." She is forced to remove an item of jewelry at each gate, similar to a Masonic initiation ritual in which the candidate is divested of all metal objects. These jewels themselves seem to correspond to the seven chakra points on Ishtar's body, and apparently they were protecting her. For after they are removed, Ishtar's sister, Ereshkigal, the dragon queen of the underworld, releases the "7 Annunaki" against her. These Annunaki slay Ishtar in a most barbarous way, chaining her down and ripping her flesh with their teeth.

Normally, in Sumerian legend, the Annunaki are merely the sons of the Elder Gods, and appear to be of the same species as them. But not in this version. Here they are the "Dread Judges, the Seven Lords of the Underworld," like the gods that judge dead souls in the Egyptian underworld. Most interesting among these demons is one called "the Eye on the Throne," which appears to be the same as Kingu, the slain dragon from whose blood mankind was made. The Eye on the Throne was a hieroglyph used in Egypt and Sumeria to denote the world monarchy of their antediluvian gods. Since here it is called "Kingu," obviously he was one of these "kings."[5]

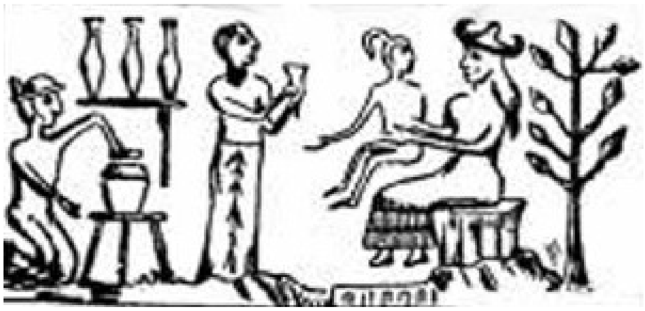

Sumerian depiction of Annunaki gods creating mankind.

The fate that came of Ishtar in the underworld is exactly the fate that befell Chalmers in the Frank Belknap Long story when he was left alone after the drug session. The creatures that he had witnessed moving through angles, "the Hounds of Tindalos," came looking for him, and moved right through the angles in his ceiling into his apartment. Narrowly escaping from their first attack, he attempted to thwart them by redecorating. He called the narrator to his apartment again, asking him to bring with him a bucket of plaster, and told him:

> *"They can only reach us through angles. We must eliminate all angles from this room. I shall plaster up all the corners, all of the crevices. We must make this room resemble the interior of a sphere."*

Why the hounds should want to kill him is explained twice, with a different reason given each time. On the one hand, they are mindless forces that simply hunger for blood. The same is said of the Ancient Ones of *The Necronomicon*, for whom, "The blood of the weakest, here is libation" unto them. But for the Ancient Ones, there is also an element of revenge, for their murder and imprisonment in the underworld. The same motive is given to the Hounds of Tindalos:

> *"... a terrible and unspeakable* ***deed*** *was done in the very beginning. Before time, the deed, and from the dead... The deeds of the dead move through angles in dim recesses of time. They are hungry and athirst! ... For a moment I stood on the other side. I stood on the pale gray shores beyond time and space. In an awful light that was not a light, in a silence that shrieked, I saw them! But they scented me. Men awake in them cosmic hungers. We have escaped momentarily from the foulness that rings them round. They thirst for that in us which is clean, which emerged from the deed without stain. There is a part of us which did not partake of the deed, and that they hate. But do not imagine that they are literally, prosaically evil. They are beyond good and evil as we know it. They are that which in the beginning fell away from cleanliness. Through the deed they became bodies of death, receptacles of all foulness. But they are not evil in our sense because in the spheres through which they move there is no thought, no moral, no right or wrong as we understand it. There is merely the pure and the foul. The foul expresses itself through angle; the pure through curves. Man, the pure part of him, is descended from a curve. Do not laugh. I mean that literally."*

This "angular" state represents the dualistic realm of opposites that creation is made from, the breaking down of the One into the Many, into the world where the principles of good and evil, and of male and female are separated. The part of us which is "pure" is the part of the One godhead that descended into dualistic matter, the light that descended into darkness, represented by the fall of Lucifer from Heaven, and his subsequent imprisonment in the Earth; or the fall of the Grail stone from his crown, which became enclosed in the deepest recesses of our minds, to be accessed by only an elite few. This has also been represented as the fall of Man from the Garden of Eden, who became corrupted when he gained knowledge of good and evil as being separate from the One. Subsequently, man became imprisoned in the three-dimensional world, and this is the deed that must be avenged.

But man contains the spark of godhead within him as well as the material of corrupted matter, just as Abdul Alhazred tells us in *The Necronomicon* that we have the body and blood of the Ancient Ones, but the spirit of the Elder Gods breathed into our souls. This is similar to the story in *Genesis* where God crafts Adam from "clay," and then puts the "breathe of life" into him. Yet this is just a continuation of the dualism that resulted in the godhead's descent into corrupted matter, or the imprisonment of the Ancient Ones. For they and the Elder Gods are inextricably connected. One bore the other, and therefore they are of the same substance, two sides of the same coin. Combining their essences results in the union of the Many back into the One, or a return to the womb of the Mother. This is the "Grail energy," the Elixir of Life, the occult power that works magic. This conundrum is expressed by a confused Abdul Alhazred when he says of the worshippers of the Ancient Ones:

> *"And who is their master? Of this I do not know, but I have heard them calling Enki, which is surely a blasphemy, for Enki is of our Race, as it is writ in the text of Magan. But perhaps, they call another, whose name I do not know. But surely it was not Enki."*

It is also of note that Enki's son Marduk appears to have the qualities of both Lucifer (as the "Brightest Star in Heaven" and the one who "fell to Earth"), and those of Jesus or St. Michael, for he is son of the Eldest God Enki, sent to Earth to rule over man, and he is the vanquisher of the Evil One in Heaven. Such dualism seems to also be present in the references to the "Mountains of Mashu", the same twin-peaked mountains upon which the Babylonian Noah character, called Utnapishtim, rested his Ark, and which the Ancient Ones are said in *The Necronomicon* to rule over. L.K. Barnes writes that:

> *"...the original translator has noted the resemblance between the Greek word for lord, Kurios, and the Sumerian word for mountain, Kur, and for a type of underworld chthonic monster which is also called Kur and which refers to the Leviathan of the Old Testament. Also, in this particular conjuration, the word for mountain is "Shadu," like "El Shaddai," meaning Lord of the Mountain, a title applied to Jehovah."*

This dualism points to the parentage of mankind, which is both infernal and divine, and Enki is a mediator between the two. This dichotomy is the cause of the sorrow of human existence, for as *The Necronomicon* states:

> *"...man, being born, is of sadness, for he is of the Blood of the Ancient Ones, but has the Spirit of the Elder Gods breathed into him. And his body goes to the Ancient Ones, but his mind is turned towards the Elder Gods, and this is the War which shall be always fought, unto the last generation of man; for the World is unnatural. When the Great Kutulu rises up and greets the Stars, then the War will be over, and the World will be One.*

But how is it exactly that the Elder Gods, being planets, "breathed life" into humanity at all? Well, there are those who hold that the gods of Sumeria were actually real flesh-and-blood kings of human civilization during the golden age of Atlantis. But they were more than human. The kings of Atlantis were somewhere in between man and god. They are said to have been, literally "stars" that fell from Heaven, and similarly the power of the A ncient Ones, as we know, comes from the stars -- in other words, solar power. Stars put out waves of all sorts along the electro-magnetic spectrum, as do planets, which could account for the power and influence they are said to possess. If one could tune into the waves they are putting out, one could hear the "speech of the gods." And if one could harness that energy, then all of the feats that have been attributed to magicians over the centuries could be conducted. Scientists even say that if we are ever to build an inter-dimensional space traveling machine, it would require so much power that we would have to harness the Sun itself to make it work. This could be done either through advanced technology or advanced occult practice, and legend tells us that the Atlanteans possessed both.

Whether by evolution, divine creation, or genetic engineering, these beings were superior to us, and evidence shows that they existed in multiple dimensions, possessing multi-dimensional powers, just like their stellar "parents." By intermarrying with human females, they passed that star seed onto us, and all the powers that go with it. This "multi-dimensional" aspect is one way to explain the physical countenance of their human/god hybrid children as they are described in various myths: they were said to have been monsters and giants. It is this multi-dimensional force that the gods taught man to utilize in the rites of magic and occultism, which the gods invented and passed onto their human offspring, drawn from the power of the stars and planets, including the telluric "dragon force" of Cthulhu that lives within the Earth, and slumbers at the base of the human spine. L.K. Barnes confirms that Sumer was not just the birthplace of civilization, but also of religion and ritual magic. Here is where the rebellious ones taught their cult to the "first man", as Lovecraft described in *The Call of Cthulhu*. This is what enabled Abdul Alhazred in *The Necronomicon* by magick, to "summon the ghosts of [his] ancestors to real and visible appearance." Author Nicholas de Vere describes such ancestral conjuring rituals as being the central rites of "royal magic." Summoning ancestral ghosts is also the purpose of Voodoo and Santeria ritual.

Another aspect of the gods is that they are said to be able to live forever, and their human offspring were said to have had extremely long life spans as well. Likewise, the Ancient Ones of Lovecraft are incapable of dying, as time does not exist for them, "For their times and seasons run uneven and strange to our minds, for are they not the computers of all time? Did they not set time in its place?"

Interestingly, after Frank Chalmers is devoured by the Hounds of Tindalos (the plaster didn't work), a strange protoplasmic substance is found in his apartment, apparently from the dripping jowls of these hounds from beyond time and space. This substance is examined by a bacteriologist, who writes in his report:

> *"The fluid sent to me for analysis is the most peculiar that I have ever examined. It resembles living protoplasm, but it lacks the peculiar substances known as enzymes. Enzymes catalyze the chemical reactions occurring in living cells, and when the cell dies, they cause it to disintegrate by hydrolyzation. Without enzymes, protoplasm should possess enduring vitality, i.e., immortality. Enzymes are the negative components, so to speak, of unicellular organism, which is the basis of all life. That living matter can exist without enzymes biologists emphatically deny. And yet the substance that you sent to me is alive and it lacks these 'indispensable' bodies. Good God, Sir, do you realize what astounding new vistas this opens up?"*

It is something like this which might make the long life spans attributed to the gods and their offspring physically possible, and would make it possible for their bodies to remain underground in a state of hibernation for eons before being resurrected again. It is this resurrection that they are hoping their human descendants will affect by practicing the occult rites of necromancy that they have been taught:

> *"Let all who read this book be warned thereby that the habitations of men are seen and*

> *surveyed by that forgotten race of gods and demons from a time before time, and that they seek revenge for that forgotten battle that took place somewhere in the cosmos, and rent the worlds in the days before the creation of man."*

This is, mythologically, the same battle which caused the kingdom of Atlantis to sink to its watery depths, the war in Heaven in which the sons of God or Watchers were imprisoned within the underworld, their mighty kingdom destroyed, all because they dared to pass their divine seed, and their divine knowledge onto lowly humanity. *The Necronomicon* states that, "civilizations were destroyed because of the knowledge contained in this book." This is the deed that must be avenged, the memory of which slumbers in the blood of these gods' human offspring -- just as they slumber beneath the Earth, waiting for the day that the stars will be right again, and their descendants will perform the rites which will bring them up from the depths to reclaim their kingdom. Then the age of the gods will begin anew: the New Atlantis, the New Jerusalem, the New World Order.

"Know that Tiamat seeks ever to rise to the stars, and when the Upper is united to the Lower, then a new Age will come of Earth, and the Serpent shall be made whole, and the Waters will be as One, when on high the heavens had not been named.

And the Dead shall rise and smell the incense!"

Endnotes:

[1] One is reminded of the final scene in the box office hit, *The Abyss*.

[2] This recalls the "white gold" substance, mentioned in the writings of Laurence Gardner and others, that is the Philosopher's Stone of the alchemists.

[3] These are Walpurgis Night and Halloween, the two most important witch holidays on the calendar.

[4] One wonders if there is any connection here to the "Lost Word of Freemasonry" which, in their legends, Hiram Abiff refused to divulge, and which died with him.

[5] Perhaps his name is related etymologically to "Cain", whose name is the root from which the word "king" comes, and who is said to be one of the eldest ancestors of the Grail family.

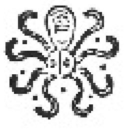

Svali Speaks Again

Healing from ritual abuse and mind control

Mizpah: Svali Speaks Again
About
Contact
Blog
Articles
Book Info

svalispeaksagain 10:16 pm on November 5, 2018

Tags: mind control (69), occult (13), programming (60), ritual abuse (65)

Dealing with Rewards Programming

While survivors often disclose and struggle with punishment and pain programs, there is another, opposite side to these programs that often are not verbalized until later in the healing process. This is rewards programming.

Using operant conditioning principles, cult programmers will almost always program in these two opposites: extreme punishment (for disobedience) and extreme rewards (for obedience). Reward can take some of the following forms:

- **Bliss programming**: this can include an emotional state of extreme joy or bliss that is put in as a reward that parts feel when they “do their jobs”. It can be machined in (using technology), enhanced with euphoria-causing drugs, and demonically induced as well.
- **“Heaven” rewards**: as noted in the previous article on spiritual programming, starting in the womb, infants and children are taken through re-enactments of visiting the “celestial realms” where they are greeted by “stars” (ascended beings), “angels” and others, who all describe the joys of obedience and being rewarded with ascension.
- **Pain stopping**: when a punishment or reprogramming sequence is running internally, and the individual “gives in” or stops the behavior being punished, one reward is that the pain stops.
- **Fulfillment of Deepest Longings setups**: in this setup, which is cruel, the individual is asked what their deepest dreams are (this starts in early childhood). Then, the programmers do enactments in the programming labs, or through VRs, in which this deepest dream is fulfilled. Parts are allowed to spend time with a loved one in the setting they most desire, such as being married to a beloved friend, being allowed to raise children together, and having their dream job. This is a reward for “good behavior” and the parts (often presenter parts) are allowed to enjoy this reward for several days or weeks a year in return for obedience. They are threatened with the death of these loved ones, and the destruction of their dreams, should they ever disobey. This is unconscious, and the individual will have no conscious awareness of the programming. Instead, they will have the unconscious belief that they can only be “truly happy” or have their deepest dreams fulfilled, if they stay in the group.

Follow •••

- **Food rewards**: sweet snacks and treats are often rewards for very young parts, and for parts trained to believe they are animals.
- **Sexual rewards**: individuals may be rewarded by being held, caressed, or given sexual favors, especially parts that equate sex with love.
- **Status and promotions**: this is a strong reward for cult parts, who have endured unthinkable pain and hardship throughout the growing up years. These parts are always given some kind of promotion to provide meaning. The higher the status, the less the abuse is the belief held by these parts (which is untrue; it only takes a different form). The chance to gain revenge on abusers is often part of this "reward", and those abused in childhood will at times turn on those who hurt them badly, if they gain higher status. There are often special awards and recognitions given out to children who perform well at ceremonies for this purpose, yearly or more often. In some facilities, the child's rank and performance, as well as the team rank, are displayed on a public digital board as an incentive to compete and work harder, since the children want to have a high score – and receive the medal or award at the end of the year.
- **Money**: when individuals work hard for their group, they may be given financial rewards that the presentation is completely unaware of, such as a villa in Rome or on the French coast, or presents of money placed in accounts. The groups often state they will "take care" of the individual during their old age, if they work hard for them.

These are a few of the rewards that international occultic groups offer individuals. This is the other part of the struggle to heal when an individual chooses to walk away. They must be willing to become aware of the rewards and acknowledge the pull that they have on themselves and parts, and work out ways to provide incentives that are not given by the group.

An important part of healing is learning to "self reward": to find healthy ways to get the needs that were previously met by organizational "rewards" (also known as "bait") met. The needs are legitimate, and the longing and pain of giving them up can be part of the conflict that makes healing more difficult.

Candy and treats can be bought, and given to inside parts as recognition that they are saying "no" to outside summons or signals to go back. Parts can be taught about the real heaven, or alternative internal joyful imagery can be created to replace the former "celestial" reward. Parts can ask for hugs from safe people to help meet the need for physical affection.

It is important to process both the traumas that preceded the "bliss" or rewards as well; and to become aware of how the programming was installed. Parts who underwent this, and who are grieving over the loss of rewards (sex, status, power, money, dreams) will need to have their feelings acknowledged, as the individual helps them through this process.

Eventually, the individual will discover a greater reward than the groups that use mind control can ever offer: a life free from abuse, where their wants, needs and choices are honored. The reward of a life free from receiving love only at a great cost. Freedom of choice and freedom from manipulation become rewards themselves, that can help greatly in the healing journey.

Share this:

Twitter Facebook

Loading...

Related

What is “programming”? June 4, 2017 In "Christian"	Primary Emotions that Drive programs November 30, 2019 In "healing"	Chart for Working on Internal Programs April 23, 2019 In "healing"

lonamonette 11:51 pm on June 12, 2021

Did any of your harassment ever come to and end? If so how long did the Harassment take place? Also, how do you know you haven’t been reprogrammed?

★ Like

svalispeaksagain 5:21 pm on June 13, 2021

My harassment is ongoing. There was one time when I gave into a request to meet with someone from my past and I had to work through those conflicts and stop all contact .

★ Like

lonamonette 5:42 pm on June 13, 2021

So how do you know you haven’t been reprogrammed

★ Like

Leave a Reply

Enter your comment here...

← The Greatest Healing Tool

Dealing with Recanting Faith →

Blog at WordPress.com.

[back] Deeper Insights

DEEPER INSIGHTS INTO THE ILLUMINATI FORMULA

by Fritz Springmeier & Cisco Wheeler

[Book in chapters] pdf

Important Explanation of Contents
DEDICATION
WARNING, READ THIS FIRST BEFORE READING THE BOOK
INTRODUCTION by Fritz
GLOSSARY OF HOW BASIC TERMS ARE USED IN THIS BOOK
INTRODUCTION

CHAPTER 1. SCIENCE NO. 1 - SELECTION & PREPARATION OF THE VICTIM
BREEDING GOOD SUBJECTS for HYPNOSIS-hypnosis as it relates to selection & preparation of the victim.
GENETICS
TRAINING THE UNBORN CHILD
COMMON ILLUMINATI WORK WITH TWINS
SELECTION OF ADULT CANDIDATES FOR MIND-CONTROL
U.S. GOVT. MIND-CONTROL LEVEL 1.   U.S. GOVT. MIND-CONTROL LEVEL 2
U.S. GOVT. MIND-CONTROL LEVEL 3. GOVT. MIND-CONTROL LEVEL 4 U.S. GOVT. MIND-CONTROL LEVEL 5
TESTING YOUNG CHILDREN TO PLAN THE PROGRAMMING.

CHAPTER 2. SCIENCE NO. 2--THE TRAUMATIZATION & TORTURE OF THE VICTIM
DAILY ABUSE WORKS BEST FOR PROGRAMMING
ANGER-MANAGEMENT-PROGRAMMING TRAUMAS
SILENCE PROGRAMMING TRAUMAS to TEACH SILENCE
TORTURE FOR NO-WRITE PAY ATTENTION TORTURE A COMPLIANCE TORTURE -- The Black Slave Chair.
A TRAUMA TO DEVELOP ANIMAL ALTERS TRAUMA TO ISOLATE THE VICTIM

CHAPTER 3. SCIENCE NO. 3 The USE OF DRUGS
ADMINISTRATION OF DRUGS FOR PROGRAMMING
MORE PROGRAMMING DRUGS (these were not listed in the Vol.2 Formula book)
STABILIZING THE PROGRAMMING
EXTENSIVE RESEARCH DONE TO INFLUENCE HUMAN MEMORY BY DRUGS
The BASIC PHASES of MEMORY
WHAT the MIND-CONTROL PROGRAMMERS USE to MANIPULATE memory.
HIDING THE CODES
PROGRAMMING WITH LSD-25 (Lysergic Acid Diethylamide)
CHEMICALLY TRIGGERING NATURAL INSTINCTUAL DRIVES
SEXUAL STIMULATION-PROGRAMMING
THEIR ABILITY TO MANUFACTURE (SYNTHESIZE) BRAIN CHEMICALS TO MAKE MIND-CONTROL DRUGS

CHAPTER 4. SCIENCE NO. 4 - HYPNOSIS
HYPNOSIS & the OCCULT
UNDERSTANDING THE BASICS ABOUT HYPNOSIS
THE POWER OF HYPNOSIS
UNDERSTANDING THE DEEPER MECHANICS of HYPNOSIS   Intention System cognitive demon processes

PROGRAMMING AIDS Fasting
USING HOLOGRAMS as an ACCESS AID
KEEPING THE MIND IN ALPHA STATE
PREPARING THE BRAIN
EARLY TRAINING FOR SLAVES
MAGICAL TRAINING ON THE STARLIGHT LEVEL
FINETUNING
THE MONARCH PROGRAMMING SCRIPT FOR OVER THE RAINBOW
DEEP TRANCE PROGRAMMING
COLOR PROGRAMMING
THE ASSOCIATION OF COLORFUL SIGHTS, SOUNDS, RHYTHM & DANCE.
LIGHT & COLOR Elizabeth Clare Prophet
SPECIAL COLORS
HEALING BY CORRECT VIBRATIONS & RAYS
USING HYPNOSIS TO HEAL THE SLAVE AFTER ABUSE
REINFORCING THE PROGRAMMING WITH A DECOGNITION PROCESS
HYPNOTIC CODES, CUES AND TRIGGERS cipher color-alpha-numeric code
MONARCH MIND-CONTROL CODES A-T
Program Codes During 1972-1976 for Dr. Green
The Illuminati.
The Network
The establishment, the System.

CHAPTER 5: SCIENCE NO. 5 - THE SKILL OF LYING, THE ART OF DECEIT
DECEPTION DIMINISHES POWER
PROGRAMMING DECEPTIONS
BE WISE AS SERPENTS
DISINFORMATION TO MAKE THEIR DOUBLE-AGENTS LOOK GOOD
SLEEPER AGENTS
NAMES of TYPES of DISINFORMATION AGENTS
TRICKING SUSPECTS
THE NAMES OF DECEPTION TRICKS
STANDARD DECEPTION DEVICES
MASKS
COVERS
ONE OF THE GREATEST DECEPTIONS OF ALL TIME: DISNEY
INTRODUCTION
Observations about HOW THE ILLUMINATI LIKE TO HIDE BEHIND PERFECT FRONTS.
CONTENTS IN THE DISNEY DECEPTION SECTION OF CHAPTER 5.
a. an introduction
b. an overview
c. Who was Walt Disney?
    PERSONAL DETAILS
    MICKEY MOUSE
    OCCULT PORN KING
    A possible CHRONOLOGY OF EVENTS surrounding WALT DISNEY'S ILLEGITIMATE BIRTH
    WALT DISNEY’S CHARACTER
d. Who was Roy O. Disney?
e. Who is Roy E. Disney?
    The battle between the two Disney factions
f. What do we know about them in general?
g. A history of Disney Harry Cohn Bank of America Bank of Italy Claude Debussy EPCOT center
    SOME DISNEY people of interest. Warren Beatty Shirley Maclaine Shirley Temple Black Stephen Bollenbach Warren Buffett The Tommy Dorsey Band Michael Dammann Eisner Rich H. Frank The Osmond Brothers Michael Ovitz Frank G. Wells
h. Disney and its mob connections Some MOB HISTORY.

  How the Disney Executives have figured out how to steal land all across the U.S.
i. Disney and its government connections
j. Disney and mind-control
  DISNEY VACATIONS FOR THE ELITE
  MELODYLAND
  DISNEYANA FOR THE PROGRAMMED & OBSESSED.
  Mind-control features in Disney movies. Bette Midler
k. Detailed Script of how one Disney movie is used for programming.
  SUMMARY
1. Partial List of Sources

CHAPTER 6: SCIENCE NO. 6-THE USE OF ELECTRONICS & ELECTRICITY
Section A. An Overview of the subject
  A1. Where this article is headed
    GLOSSARY OF TERMS FOR UNDERSTANDING ELECTRONIC MIND CONTROL
      Bio-medical telemetry
      EMF weapons
      Psychotronics
      Remote Viewing (RV for short)
      Syntel
A2. Where the NWO is headed   Pyramider

Section B. An intro to implants
  B1. Three typical implant victims
  B2. Documentation of implants
  REFERENCE PAGE FOR UNDERSTANDING ELECTROMAGNETIC WAVES & MIND-CONTROL
  B3. GWEN Towers
  B4. Body suits
Section C. Specific Implants
  C1. Audio implants (a. public. b. secret)
    BACKGROUND INFORMATION
    BRIEF CHRONOLOGY OF AUDIO IMPLANTS
    BASICS OF HOW THE IMPLANTS CAN FUNCTION
    USES OF THE IMPLANTS
    TYPES OF AUDIO IMPLANTS:
      Part A. Publicly admitted audio implants
      Part. B. Secretly implanted audio implants   COCHLEAR   DENTAL AUDITORY   RIDGE
  C2. Body manipulation implants
  C3. Visual holographic implants
    HOW THEY WORK
    TYPES: FIBER OPTICS ARTIFICIAL LENSES BIO-CHIPS HOLOGRAPHIC OR H-INSERT
    HOLOGRAPHIC IMPLANTS VIA NANOTECHNOLOGY & NANOBOTS
  C4. Memex/Brain Link implants
    INTERFACE DEVICES
ORGANIC BIOPROCESSORS LINKED TO VIRUSES
 PSYCHICS
C5. Torture/Nerve & Muscle Stimulation Implants
C6. Tracking & I.D. Implants

Section D. Direct monitoring & manipulation of the brain/mind
D1. Direct monitoring
TESLA WAVES USED TO READ MINDS & IMPLANT VOICES
D2. Direct manipulation
SUMMARY OF ELF WAVE MIND CONTROL CAPABILITIES

Section E. Auxiliary uses of electronics & electromagnetic waves
E1. hypnotic induction

E2. polygraphs
E3. attacks against people & objects
LIQUID CRYSTALS
"ALIEN" implants
BED COILS STANDARDIZED FOR MIND-CONTROL POTENTIAL
E4. virtual reality

CHAPTER 7: THE SCIENCE OF STRUCTURING
A. STRUCTURING OF MPD WORLDS
WORKING WITH PARTS OF THE MIND
CONTROL ALTERS called PROCESSORS
BASIC DESIGNS of an ALTER SYSTEM
RINGS The Ferris-wheel subsystem MULTIPLEX
DATA ENTRY POINTS
TESTING ALTERS TO SEE IF THEY CAN BE USED.
THE SCRIPTS.
Assassination Models (Delta Models).
  AUTHORITY FACTORS ARE MAXIMIZED
  ACCOUNTABILITY & ANONYMITY
Monkey Alters.
Plant alters.
Presidential Models
Prostitute Models.
Psychic models.
Reporting Alters.
Repunzel alter.
Transformation alters.
Internal Wall alters
Structuring Internal Programmer Alters.
STRUCTURING WITH THE GRAND DRUID COUNCIL.
STRUCTURING THE SHADOW ALTERS
STRUCTURING IN THE MIRRORS
STRUCTURING THE TAPESTRY
STRUCTURING THE ALTER FAMILIES BY SPINNING

CHAPTER 8: THE SCIENCE OF BODY MANIPULATION & PROGRAMMING
A. CRANIAL MANIPULATION
INTRODUCTION
CRANIAL BLOOD PRESSURE has been kept a SECRET
CEREBRAL SPINAL FLUID kept SECRET
THE CHINESE SECRET OCCULT SOCIETY CONNECTION
The ancient EGYPTIAN CONNECTION
THE TIBETAN CONNECTION
ANOTHER EXAMPLE
THE JAPANESE CONNECTION
THE EARLY EUROPEAN OCCULT CONNECTION
NINETEENTH CENTURY OCCULT CONNECTION
THE WITCHCRAFT CONNECTION Phrenology
THE MODERN AMERICAN OCCULT CONNECTION Osteopathy and chiropractic Anne L. Wales
BONE & SKULL STRUCTURE
CEREBROSPINAL FLUID
TRANSCENDENTAL MEDITATION (TM) & the HINDU CONNECTION
The 3-in-One school Connection. Applied Kinesiology
B. GENETIC MANIPULATION
Transgenic humans Chimeras
USING RADIATION & CHEMICALS TO CHANGE GENETICS associated WITH THINKING

WHAT WE'VE COVERED

CHAPTER 9: THE SCIENCE OF MIND MANIPULATION BY PSYCHOLOGICAL PROGRAMMING METHODS: BEHAVIOR MODIFICATION, PSYCHOLOGICAL MOTIVATION & NLP
"STRIPPED" OF FEELINGS
PROGRAMMING TO HIDE REVEALING DREAMS
PROGRAMMING LANGUAGE
EFFECTS OF PROGRAMMING
FALSE IMPLANTED MEMORIES
PERCEPTION CLOUDS MEMORY

CHAPTER 10: THE 10th SCIENCE — USING SPIRITUAL THINGS TO CONTROL A PERSON.
PART A. Intro on the importance of spiritual programming tactics.
PART B. The history of Programmed Golem
  KABBALISTIC BLACK MAGIC
PART C. The 3 foundations: Loss of identity, Fear, and Demons
  UNDERSTANDING THE RELATIONSHIP BETWEEN FEAR & DEMONS
  DEMON POSSESSION & SPIRIT GUARDS
  The Use of Giving Demonic Assistance to entrap.
  The Use of Occult Focal Points.
  DOES IT GLORIFY DEMONS TO CAST THEM OUT?
PART D. A complete Chronology of how the victim experiences the early spiritual programming. Steps a through o. (by Cisco)
  FINE-TUNED
  HIDING THE INTERNAL SELF-HELPER
  INTERJECT DISKS
PART E. Specific spiritual programming maneuvers
  WHITE GOLD, other information

CHAPTER 11: SCIENCE No. 11- INTERNAL CONTROLS
A. TEACHING OCCULT PHILOSOPHIES
B. INTERNAL COMPUTERS
  Installation of the Standard Programming
  Front Programs of Front Computer.
  Misinformation Computers.
  Beast Computer.
  Programmer Access to the Computer Areas.
C. INTERNAL HIERARCHIES
  THE INTERNAL HIERARCHIES form RATIONALES

CHAPTER 12 SCIENCE No. 12-EXTERNAL CONTROLS
Advertising & Trauma-based programming.
ASSET CONTROL
SURVEILLANCE.
HARASSMENT
CAR COLORS
TELEVISION
BUILDING FAMILIES AND COMMUNITIES THAT HAVE INTERWOVEN PROGRAMMING
ISOLATION
BOARDING SCHOOLS & BODY PROGRAMMING.
When controls fail, THE FINAL SOLUTION.
The Programmers

APPENDIX 1 - PROGRAMMERS/RESEARCHERS
DIRTY PSYCHIATRISTS involved with MIND CONTROL
DIRTY RESEARCHERS

DIRTY TAVISTOCK CONTROLLERS
SOME OF FREEMASONRY'S MIND-CONTROL PEOPLE
REMOTE VIEWING MIND-RESEARCH
ODDS & ENDS
LIST of PROGRAMMERS (continuation from the list given in Vol. 2)
A FEW random CIA/INTELLIGENCE MEN involved WITH MIND-CONTROL
Anton LaVey--Profile of a trauma-based mind-control programmer
WHAT TO LOOK FOR.
MICHAEL AQUINO, a military/cult mind-control programmer
  HIS CAREER
  PERSONAL HISTORY.
  UNDERSTANDING The CHURCH OF SET
  UNDERSTANDING SOME OF AQUINO'S PROGRAMMING.
  BACKGROUND
  SEQUELAE OF ABUSE

APPENDIX 2. THE PROGRAMMING SITES

APPENDIX 3. CLONES, SYNTHETICS, ORGANIC ROBOTOIDS AND DOUBLES
PUBLICLY ANNOUNCED GENETIC EVENTS
Section A. The "Future Shock" that this topic subjects the common person to
Section B. Instructions on how to clone a person
  A TECHNIQUE--INSTRUCTIONS HOW TO CLONE A HUMAN
Section C. The four types of "clones" that are used by the Illuminati,
  1. actual clones,
  2. synthetic people,
  3. organic robotoids,
  4. doubles (look alikes) How the memory of a person is transferred for the organic robotoids
Section D. Secret cloning sites (See also Appendix B, where D.U.M. bases are listed.) **Simon Wiesenthal**
  OREGON'S UNDERGROUND SECRET CLONING FACILITY
  FURTHER INVESTIGATIONS AT DULCE'S UNDERGROUND CLONING FACILITY
SUMMARY OF THE FOUR METHODS.
FINAL NOTES. Clintons

Important Explanation of Contents

A successful treasure hunter of the sea said, "You have to convince others of what you are looking for, and be incredibly persistent in looking for it." I, Fritz, could really identify with what he was saying. I have searched for truth like a treasure hunter, I have sifted the dusty pages of documents, like a patient miner panning for gold. How far & deep are you willing to search for truth? Cisco and I feel we are accountable to tell you the whole truth as far as we know it, what you do with that is up to you. This book will explain many occult ideas and beliefs, many of them never before publicly revealed. There is an important reason why these occult ideas and beliefs are introduced, we need to study our enemy and know how he thinks. The U.S. Army used indian scouts to track the indians. Gen. MacArthur learned everything he could about the Japanese so that he could defeat them. Christ was extremely savvy as to Satan's tricks. The Apostle said, "We are not ignorant of Satan's devices." Time and time again, this author has seen powerful Masonic clergyman do their handshakes, their codewords, etc. in front of the common people and the Christians do not catch on. On the one hand the Christians want proof of what is happening, but on the other hand, they are not willing to learn how to identify what the opposition is doing. Such doublemindedness has contributed to the churches becoming, sad-to-say, fronts for the Illuminati. I have included the Illuminati's understanding of things and other occult beliefs, because I have witnessed that knowing these things can be helpful in defeating the mind-control. If I were trying to help a refugee who was trying to escape the Yakuza, I would study the tactics of the Yakuza. If I were trying to free a witch of JuJuism, then I would learn about JuJuism. I strongly recommend that readers always stand on the foundation of the Word of God, and that they use the Word of God as a refreshing bath to cleanse their minds. This author has found tapes with scriptures to be an encouragement.

Some Christians have criticized this author for the content of the books, because it doesn't portray the lighter side of Christianity (whatever that is). It seems some people only want enough of God to to make them cozy, but not so much that their sleep would be disturbed. Some have even gone so far as to claim this author is not a Christian because the content of the books is so heavy. It is sad that many Christians do not know their own Scriptures nor where hope comes from. True hope is given by the Spirit of God, because hope is the vantage point that the Spirit of God has for the situation. A therapist may be optimistic about a victim of mind-control, but the therapist's optimism only turns to sincere hope when they become involved personally with the tragedies of the victim through caring and prayer. The Biblical hope is not a warm fuzzy that has its head in the sand pretending that everything is "rosy and peachy". Quite to the contrary, if we look at the following portion of scripture, we will see the Word of God portraying trauma after trauma with a light still at the end of the tunnel! Such is the power of our hope, that we have hope in spite of how fierce evil manifests.

Lamentations chapter 1

1 I am the man that hath seen affliction by the rod of his wrath.

2 He hath led me, and brought me into darkness, but not into light.

3 Surely against me is he turned; he turneth his hand against me all the day.

4 My flesh and my skin hath he made old; he hath broken my bones.

5 He hath builded against me, and compassed me with gall and travail.

6 He hath set me in dark places, as they that be dead of old.

7 He hath hedged me about, that I cannot get out: he hath made my chain heavy.

8 Also when I cry and shout, he shutteth out my prayer.

9 He hath inclosed my ways with hewn stone, he hath made my paths crooked.

10 He was unto me as a bear lying in wait, and as a lion in secret places.

11 He hath turned aside my ways, and pulled me in pieces: he hath made me desolate.

12 He hath bent his bow, and set me as a mark for the arrow.

13 He hath caused the arrows of his quiver to enter into my reins.

14 I was a derision to all my people; and their song all the day.

15 He hath filled me with bitterness, he hath made me drunken with wormwood.

16 He hath also broken my teeth with gravel stones, he hath covered me with ashes.

17 And thou hast removed my soul far off from peace: I forgat prosperity.

18 And I said, My strength and my hope is perished from the LORD:

19 Remembering mine affliction and my misery, the wormwood and the gall.

20 My soul hath them still in remembrance, and is bowed down within me.

21 This I recall to my mind, therefore have I hope.

22 (It is of) Jehovah's Iovingkindnesss that we are not consumed, because his compassions fail not.

23 They are new every morning; great is thy faithfulness.

24 The LORD is my portion, saith my soul; therefore will I hope in Him.

25 The LORD is good unto them that wait for Him, to the soul that seeketh him.

26 It is good that a man should both hope and quietly wait for the salvation of the LORD.

http://whale.to/b/sp/springmeier.html

We are in a battle for our minds, are we willing to seize the hope that is before us, or will we resign and say "all is lost"? Discouragement is not of faith. Do you think Almighty God is a discouraged person? He is calling people to serve others, because God knows that you will never find happiness in selfishness. God is calling people to bind up the broken shattered multiples and to let their deeper parts know that they are loved and worthwhile. To adopt an attitude of defeat before freedom loving men and women have exhausted all potential remedies for this mind-control is inexcusable.

DEDICATION

This book is dedicated to the two million Americans and counting who have been programmed with Monarch-type trauma-based mind control. This book is written to destroy trauma-based mind control before it destroys the human race. It's time for this horrendous secret to end. It is also written as part of God's end time work to propel people of faith to the high calling that is prophecied of the Body, but cannot be attained without men of faith understanding these things. Humanity's great prophet said he came to heal those whose hearts had been broken--literally split and crushed, and to free those who are captive. That work needs to go forward. Blood, sweat and tears are associated with this book. The blood of the innocent victims of this mind-control cries out in a single unison, along with the pungent sweat of those who have tried to minister help to the shattered humanity left by the sadistic programmers, and the pools of tears shed as this book was written, "How long, O Lord, holy and true, do you not judge and avenge our blood on earth?"

HOPE

.... Thou shalt know that I am Lord: For they shall not be ashamed that wait on Me. Shall the prey be taken from the mighty, or the lawful captive delivered? But thus saith Yahweh, even the captives of the mighty shall be taken away, and the prey of the terrible shall be delivered: for I will contend with him that contendeth with thee, and I will save thy children. Isaiah 49:23b-25

WARNING, READ THIS FIRST BEFORE READING THE BOOK.

IF THERE IS ANY CHANCE you the reader have had mind-control done to you, you must consider the following book to be DANGEROUS. If you are consulting a therapist for DID (also known as MPD), it is recommended that you consult your therapist before reading this book. The complications that could result for those under mind control learning the truth--could be fatal. The co-authors take no responsibility for those who read or misuse this information. The reader's mind is like a garden. It may not be time to plant the truth in your mind. Perhaps you need some weeding or ground preparation, before the garden of your mind is ready. Perhaps the weather is too stormy to plant the truth. Pray to the Lord of the Harvest. The blessings that flow from planting the information of this book in your mind, will require the presence of living waters of love. If you do not have love in your heart, this book is not for you. The information contained in this book is the biggest news-story of the 20th century, and still the biggest secret. It will challenge you, shock you, horrify you and hopefully motivate you to redouble your efforts to humble yourself and seek strength from God Almighty.

The programming procedures which are described in this book are based on research and consultation with deprogrammers, ex-programmers, therapists, counselors and pertinent literature. To the best of our knowledge the statements made in this book are factual, although they may not reflect the latest or currently accepted methodology among each and every faction of the New World Order which carries out Monarch-type programming. This book tends to devote more emphasis to Illuminati programming, which is the highest level of programming. For individual application in understanding a survivor of Monarch programming, therapists are admonished to use this material with consideration for the Monarch victim's personal case and situation. The authors disclaim any responsibility for therapeutic work based upon this material.

Fritz Springmeier and Cisco Wheeler have co-authored They Know Not What They Do, An Illustrated Guidebook To Monarch Mind Control. Both Fritz and Cisco bring years of experience in dealing with Monarch programming to bear on the writing of this book. Fritz has researched the Illuminati, while he has worked with victims of its programming. He has authored The Top 13 Illuminati Families, and several other books.

INTRODUCTION by Fritz

There are many dangers to the human race, some real and some imagined. I believe that the trauma-based mind control which this book exposes is the greatest danger to the human race. It gives evil men the power to carry out any evil deed totally undetected. By the time the astute reader finishes this book, they will be as familiar with how to carry out trauma-based mind-control as some of the programmers. Ancient and more recent secrets will no longer be secrets. Over the years, I have spent thousands of hours studying the Illuminati, the Intelligence agencies of the world, and the occult world in general. The centerpiece of these organizations is the trauma-based mind control that they carry out. Without the ability to carry out this sophisticated type of mind-control using MPD, drugs, hypnosis and electronics and other control methodologies, these organizations would fail to keep their dark evil deeds secret. When one of the mind-control programmers of the Church of Scientology, who has left Scientology, was asked about MPD, he said, "It's the name of the game of mind control." Research into this subject will never be complete. This book has tried to give a comprehensive view of how the programming is done. The basic techniques were developed in German, Scottish, Italian, and English Illuminati families and have been done for centuries. Some report that some of the techniques go back to ancient Egypt and ancient Babylon to the ancient mystery religions. The Nazis are known to have studied ancient Egyptian texts in their mind control research. The records and secrets of the generational Illuminati bloodlines are very-well guarded secrets.

Even when I've learned about the location of secret depositories of some of the Illuminati's secrets in Europe, America, and Asia, their records and secrets are too well-guarded to be examined. The intelligence agencies, such as MI-6 began investigating these mind-control techniques early this century, but their records have been routinely destroyed and tampered with. There are some survivors and professionals who know that the British used programmed trauma-based MPD (DID) agents in W.W. I. In Jan., 1987, Richard Kluft submitted an article to the American Journal of Clinical Hypnosis about 8 MPD patients who were between 60 and 72 years of age. Traugott Konstantin Oesterreich (1880-1949), who was professor of philosophy at Tubingen University, Germany studied MPD and demonic possession and wrote a classic study of it in 1921 entitled Possession Demonical & Other, which was translated into english in 1930. His classic work on this subject provides documented cases which reveal that the basic trauma-based mind-control was going on in Germany, France & Belgium long before the 20th century. Although he is unable to put together all the pieces and the clues for what they are, the reader of this book might enjoy reading the 1930 English translation of his classic work after they finish this book. Oesterreich's research in early 1900s was the type of research that the Nazi mind-control programmers were very aware of. In 1921, the Germans such as Oesterreich would describe personality switches, by the term "somnambuliform [hypnotic states] possession" or "demonical somnambulism" or what might be called "Besessenheit von Hypnotismus und bösen Geistern."

The ability to study both the spiritual & psychological aspects of mind-control phenomena, is often lacking today. There are exceptions such as Dr. Loreda Fox's book The Spiritual Dimensions of MPD. In the 1920s, the Germans also were aware that the human mind has a variety of ego-psycho-psysiological states rather than one unified mind, which they termed "Sub jecklose Psychologie" or the psychology of having correlated psychological states rather than the concept of a single ego. The Germans and Italians under the Nazi and Fascist governments began to do serious scientific research into trauma-based mind control. Under the auspices of the Kaiser Wilhelm Medical Institute in Berlin, Joseph Mengele conducted mind-control research on thousands of twins, and thousands of other hapless victims. Himmler supervised genetic research. The Nazi research records were confiscated by the Allies and are still classified. A trip can be made from downtown Washington D.C. on a gray-government van which serves as a shuttle to the Suitland Annex where the government's secrets are buried including research papers captured from the Nazi Mind-Control research. Most of Mengele's concentration camp research is still classified. Much of it dealt with mind control. A researcher can visit the top floor, but underground below the top floor are the real secrets. The real secrets are lying in millions of sheets of classified documents hidden behind blast proof doors. There they have vault after vault, and row after row of top-secret files that only a few privileged persons with security clearances above COSMIC--such as with a "C3" or "MJ" security clearance can visit. Everyone with these high security clearances which I have identified is connected to the Illuminati. Each underground area at Suitland Annex has its own subset of secret access words, known only to the initiated. Most of the OSS records have been destroyed, a few have been left, the important ones have been misfiled or remade. (This is according to a reliable British intelligent agent.) Also according to reliable inside sources the CIA is working night and day to remake old records, to expunge all the real dirty secrets from their records. The basement of CIA HQ is known as "the Pit," In the Pit documents are being shredded and burned on a round the clock basis. The large remains of these secrets are sold for landfill. The Illuminati have developed secrecy to a fine art. They train their people in the art of secrecy from the time they are born. Most everything they do, is done orally. They are trained not to write rituals and other things down. There is very little paper trail left by the Illuminati.

The creation of slaves with photographic memories facilitates this secrecy. But this book is not about how they have managed to keep their trauma-based Monarch Mind-Control a secret. They have managed only to keep it a secret to the general public. They have not been able to completely cover-up the millions of wasted lives that their programming has ruined. For many years, they were able to shut-up and quietly discard their programmed multiples by labelling them Paranoid Schizophrenics. But therapists are now correctly identifying these people as programmed multiples and are not only diagnosing them better but giving them better treatment. After Candy Jones's husband deprogrammed her enough that she could participate in writing a book exposing some of what had been done to her, the secret was out. (See The Control of Candy Jones Hypnotism and the CIA by Donald Bain.) Ever since then, the intelligence agencies and the Illuminati have been carrying out damage control. Their biggest damage control campaign has enlisted the power of Hollywood and the controlled Media. This campaign is known as the False Memory Syndrome campaign, or as those of us who know the facts like to call it ""the false memory spin-drome." The headquarters of the False Memory Spin-drom Foundation is located at 3401 Market St., Suite 130, Philadelphia, PA 19104. Some of the original founders were doctors of the University of Pennslyvannia. The inside story about these early FMS doctors of the University of Pennslyvannia is that they practiced Satanic Rituals during their work days. What is unusual about this--is that generally satanic rituals are performed at night, but these doctors did their coven work during the day. I know about these men. Now you can see why these men started the FMS! They started it to cover their own sins, because many of them were abusers themselves. In other words many of the EMS people are abusers of trauma-based mind-controlled slaves, or the victims of abuse who are in denial about their own abuse from trauma-based mind-control. Martin T. Orn (the person credited with founding the FMS) had ties to the CIA. Two members of the EMS advisory board, Ralph Underwager, Ph.D. and theologian, along with Hollida Wakefield, M.A. let the cat out of the bag when they publicly supported pedophilia (that is adults having sex with children). Their support of pedophilia came in an interview with a Dutch magazine Paidika, The Journal of Paedophilia (Winter, 1993).

Although the False Memory Syndrome Foundation gets upset at any mention that there might be a conspiracy by the perpetrators of mind-control, because conspiracies supposedly don't and can't happen, they want us to believe that all therapists are conspiring together to implant false memories of abuse into their clients, which could not be further from the truth. Monarch slaves typically run into a great deal of denial by their therapists that anything like this could be happening. The bottom line is that Multiple Personality Disorder (now refered to as Dissociative Identity Disorder) is a recognized bona fide diagnosis. False Memory Syndrome is not a recognized medical or psychological diagnosis and does not appear in the American Psychiatric Association's Diagnostic and Statistical Manual III-R nor the recently released DSM-IV. Those who followed Fritz's writings have learned about the close working relationship between the Mondavi's and the Rothschilds (see his article about the Mondavi/Rothschild Napa Valley winery). Guess who got the court precedence which gives the EMS some legal ground to attack therapists? The precidence was supposedly a wife who went to a doctor who told her she had syphilis. The wife assumes she got it from her husband and divorces him. Then she learns she doesn't have syphilis. The husband then sues the doctor. Upon this bizarre case rests the legal precedence for a third party to sue a person who gives advice, such as family members suing a therapist.

Upon this weak precidence, an abusive father who worked for Monday in a winery in California successfully destroyed a legitimate therapist who was trying to save his daughter who was a programmed Monarch victim. Supposedly the therapist had implanted false memories of rape in his daughter, when the record shows that the daughter's mother told the therapist the girl had been raped by the father. When a valid case of SRA and repressed memories went to trial in Washington state involving a police officer whose family was MPD, Dr. Richard Ofshe of the False Memory Spindrom showed up to cause mischief. And mischief he did work. The case involved the children of a ""Christian"" police officer named Ingram who had satanically ritually abused his family for years. The daughter won in court, but Ofshe of the EMS was not above writing a book full of lies and distortions about the case. Lynn Crook, who was the abused daughter in the case wrote up a paper exposing what EMS person Richard Ofshe did to her, The controlled media is giving full license and great coverage to the EMS people. Rather than fighting the government for scraps of declassified documents which have had their secrets marked out, and which may even be fake documents manufactured by the CIA, I have decided that there is a much better approach to expose the Monarch Mind Control to the world. If a person could never go to

Nepal, he can see pictures of it and believe it exists. If a person can not get into the top secret records of the CIA and Office of Naval Intelligence and MI6, they can be given the exact RECIPE for creating a Monarch slave. I believe that by giving the step by step recipe, people will see that A. all the ingredients are available, B. it is possible to combine the ingredients, C. all it takes is the motive to do it, and that motive is self-evident. We'll even provide some of the names and places as we go along. This book will provide the step-by-step recipe for making a Monarch Mind-Controlled slave, It is a trauma-based mind control which programs multiple personalities using every known technique of mind-control. Every type of mind-control technique has been combined into a group package which makes the total package almost impossible to break. It is this ability to synthesize all these methods into a group package which is so powerful.

Edward Hunter, author of Brainwashing In Red China, testified in 1958 before a U.S. Congressional House Committee on Un-American Activities: "Since man began, he has tried to influence other men or women to his way of thinking. There have always been these forms of pressure to change attitudes. We discovered in the past thirty years, a technique to influence, by clinical, hospital procedures, the thinking processes of human beings. Brainwashing is formed out of a set of different elements ... hunger, fatigue, tenseness, threats, violence, and in more intense cases...drugs and hypnotism. No one of these elements alone can be regarded as brain washing, any more than an apple can be called apple pie. Other ingredients have to be added, and a cooking process gone through. So it is with brainwashing..." Hunter said brainwashing was a Red Chinese threat. He said that the chinese were the ones using these tactics. In reality, this mind control was being done in the U.S. and Hunter was a pawn to help justify the criminal activities of the programmers should they ever be found out behind their cover of "National security." The handlers of mind-controlled slaves carry around a black or grey 3 ring notebook or a lap top computer with the access codes and triggers. Some of the programmers and handlers have this all memorized. The deepest parts, core/gems/executive committee, false trinity etc. are charted in esoteric language such as Enochian, Hebrew (which is considered magical), and Druid symbols. I have never gotten the opportunity to look at one of these, although a number of the slaves who I've talked with have while they were being programmed. These notebooks have color-coded graphs showing the arrangement of alters, the structure of the system, the training of the alters, the history of the alters and other details. All the primary tortures carried out on a slave are coded using dates/no.s so that the memories can be pulled up by the programmers. There is a standard set of hand signals, gestures, and codes that allow a handler to work with someone else's slave, but the accepted code among the handlers is to leave another man's slave alone. As one leading psychiatrist put it, "Different ideologies use the same methodologies of mind control."

The Illuminati have secretly put in base programming that allows them ultimate control over many of the other groups' slaves. This will be described within this book.

For both the ease of reading and the ease of writing, I have dispensed with most footnotes. To provide my sources would double the size of the book, and many of them are confidential. (In the past, when I have attempted crediting information, some people have gotten bruised feelings for having been passed over or for being named. When information comes in from several sources, it becomes difficult to pass out credit.) I have made conservative judgement calls about what material I could use. Most of this information has been verified by several reliable sources. Confidential eyewitnesses are often the only source, when there is such a powerful conspiracy to keep this vast NWO mind control secret. Paper trails were not left or are not available. Programmed slaves who have worked for the military as mind-controlled slaves have witnessed their files expunged and sanitized. The New World Order in 1981 made training films for their novice programmers. Monarch slave Cathy O'Brien was used to make both the film "How to Divide a Personality" and "How To Create a Sex Slave." Two Huntsville porn photographers were used to help NASA and the NWO create these training films. Undoubtedly, other porn training films exist too. In others words, there is film evidence of the Monarch Total Mind-control but these porn films are kept in very secure sites. During the last few years, I have visited with ex-programmers, I have visited with hundreds of victims of the Monarch type programming. I have gone to programming sites, I have visited with therapists who work with the victims of this mind-control, and I have met several of the programmers of the CIA/Illuminati face to face in the adventures of trying to save people from their programming.

I hope that God gives me the strength and the opportunity to get the information I have learned out to the world in general. When this information gets out, hopefully it will help lift some of the secrecy of the Monarch Programming. The Monarch Programming is a foundation rock of the New World Order that when pulled up, will reveal the most evil two-legged bugs and slimy critters. When their rock is lifted, they will have to scurry to hide. Because the authors know what the programmers do, they must honestly record several areas of programming that will be controversial. The programmers are very much into demonology. Before therapists close their minds to this subject, the authors would like to point out, that they personally know of cases where Monarch slaves whose Christian personalities & other alters didn’t believe in demonology were talked into participating in real deliverance, and the slaves discovered much to their surprise that work they had unsuccessfully tried to do for years with their therapist was accomplished in a day or two.

Some prestigious researchers have decided the subconscious doesn’t exist because they can’t find it--its mysterious. To the man in the street the concept "subconscious" is as mysterious as the concept "demon". Both have been the objects of intense research by U.S./Brit./Ger. Intelligence groups. In fact, many of the concepts in this book have been purposely obscurred by the Illuminati’s control over the media and universities. These obscurred concepts include M.P.D. (DID), recovered memories, hypnosis, demonic possession, aliens, mind-control, the subconscious, a conspiracy to bring in a NWO, truth, etc. The smokescreens of controversy will continue; but those who love the truth, if they seek it, will realize the importance of this book. It’s on public record that MK ULTRA, the mind control research which CIA director Admiral Stansfield Turner admitted to in 1977 spent millions of dollars studing Voodoo, witchcraft, and psychics. On August 3, 1977, at a Senate hearing the then CIA director Admiral Stansfield Turner disclosed that the CIA had been conducting mind control on countless numbers of unsuspecting victims for years, without their knowledge or consent. These CIA mind-control operations were carried out with the participation of a least 185 scientists and at least 80 American institutions, including prisons, pharmaceutical companies, hospitals, and 44 medical colleges & universities. Many of America’s most prestigious institutes of medical research, had cooperated with the CIA. as well as numerous big name corporations. Casey admitted that day that the CIA did mind-control consisting of drugs, hypnosis & electro-shock. A few of the victims of the Monarch Project were even awarded financial compensation for their misery. But what was admitted was admitted in the spirit of covering up the extent of the full truth. The compensation was actually hush money, because victims were given "gag orders" by judges not to talk about what had happened to them. It’s been a disaster for Monarch victims that so many ministers have ignored those words of their Scripture, "For we are not ignorant of the devil’s devices." 2 COR 2:11 This book is a must for those ministers who seriously believe "Having therefore these promises, dearly beloved, let us cleanse ourselves from all filthiness of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God." 2 COR 7:1. In 2 TIM 2: 19-21, believers who "nameth the name of Christ" are asked to purge themselves of their uncleanliness (unclean spirits). There are many top notch Christians in the churches today who are under mind-control, incl. many of the Christian leadership. I would like to remind Christian ministers that Isaiah the great prophet said, "The Lord GOD hath given me the tongue of the learned that I should know how to speak a word in season to him that is weary: he wakeneth morning by morning; he wakeneth mine ear to hear as the learned." Ignorance is not godliness. Isaiah learned to speak with the great learned men of his day, just as Paul the great apostle could speak to the learned men of his time. One of the character traits of God is that He is all-knowing. WHO says it is godly to be ignorant? The prophet Daniel said Yahweh God "reveals the deep and secret things." (Dan. 2:22a) God’s instruments will do this revealing. Jesus’ advice to his disciples was in effect to "Be wise as serpents, and gentle as a lamb". This advice certainly applies in helping the victims of trauma-based mind-control. Paul in his letter to the Thessalonians (1 Thes 5:14) says that in effect that different people need different counseling, but they all need to be treated with patience. The first step in suggesting a cure is to find out what happened. That is what this book is about. This book is about how the Occult Network creates the problem that therapists and a few ministers try to deal with. But the keys to open doors to healthy solutions for the victims of trauma-based total mind control will reveal themselves in this book for the reader as this book reveals the nitty-gritty of how the total mind-control happens. Christ came to free the captives (Isaiah 61:1). Satanic ritual abuse has a history that is almost as old as history itself. Good King Hezekiah was a victim as a child of SRA. (2 Chr. 29) who got free. Moses confronted the satanic magic of Pharoah’s magicians who could create live snakes from sticks. The Apostle Paul had to deal with Simon Magus, a leader of what is now known as Satanism. Solomon, one of the greatest men of faith, backslide and became one of the greatest satanists of all history. We have "no fellowship with unfruitful works of darkness, but rather reprove them" (as per EPH 5:11). While we have no fellowship with evil, the mind-control programmers are counting on us being so ignorant of their devices that they can hide their control devices behind perversion & filth that many people shy away from. We must be strong enough to face evil and not shy away from it. The victims of mind-control must look evil in the face & not look away to gain their freedom. We, who want to help them, must be courageous & strong enough to do this too. This book is written for that divine goal "till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ."

Eph. 4:13 If the body of Christ is to attain fullness, we need this book to weed out the hidden terrible cancer that is consuming the body from within. This book is written for ministers, secular and Christian therapists, and truth lovers of all kinds. If you love the truth this book is for you. If you see something good in the human race so that our species should be preserved as well as the spotted owl and the sand flea, then this book is for you. IF YOU LOVE THE TRUTH, this BOOK is for YOU.

GLOSSARY OF HOW BASIC TERMS ARE USED IN THIS BOOK

For those readers who are not familiar with these basic terms let us introduce you to the definitions under which this book uses them.

Alter-Our usage is trying to follow the programmers usage of this word. A dissociated part of the mind which has a seperate identity and is given cue codes by the mind-control programmers to trigger that dissociated part of the mind to come to the front of the mind. The alter's identity may be a gem, rock, a tape recorder, a poodle, a white kitten, a dove, a horse, or even think of itself as a person or a demon. It all depends on its programming. An alter is different from an alter fragment in that the alter fragment is a dissociated part of the mind which serves only a single purpose. The programmers will give an alter a history, and insure that shadow alters will provide a full range of accessible emotions. Sometimes the distinctions between alters and alter fragments is vague, but examples from the two ends of the spectrum are easy to tell apart. We use the word alter in this book to conform to what the programmers' charts are encoding as alters. A typical main Mengele-created grid would be a grid of 13x13 principal A-coded alters, which is 169 principle alter personalities. In Illuminati systems, ceremonial "alters will consist of 3 alters placed on a spinning pedistal together into triad goddesses or gods. That means that an A-coded alter on some levels is actually 3 alters spinning together, which must be locked in place to communicate with, and then rotated to communicate to the other two.

Beta--This is the second Greek letter, and it represents the sexual models and sexual alters that the Programmers are creating. The primitive part of the brain is involved in this type of programming. An early sexual abuse event will be used to anchor this programming. These sexual slaves will develop sexual abilities that are far beyond what the public is aware is even possible. They also receive the worst kind of abuse far beyond what most people's imagination can picture. Beta alters generally see themselves as cats.

Councils (llluminati)--The Illuminati has frequent meetings. Some of these meetings are organized to appear "acephalous" and "accidential" in their meetings, when in reality they are structured and planned. One group, MJ-12 has gone by the following names: the Group, the Special Study Group, the Wise Men, the Operations Coordinating Board (OCB), 5412 Committee, 303 Committee, 40 Committee, PI-40 Committee, and Policy Planning Group (PCG). Some of the formal policy and ritual groups have names that all Illuminati members who have gotten high enough to learn, will recognize:

The Council of 3, Council of 5, Council of 7, Council of 9, The Grand Druid Council, The Committee of 300, and the Committee of 500 (known as Fortune 500). Many of the meetings are conclaves without formal names. The Grand Druid Council is not something fictional, but an actual body of people who formally meet and whose membership, we have been trying to keep track of. The groups which make decisions to control this planet are networked together. Each decision has its own origin and route that it takes.

Delta--This is a Greek letter shaped like a triangle which symbolizes change in calculus. It has become a favorite word to use in naming things for the occult elite. Delta teams are 4 person assassination teams which usually are secret teams. Delta Forces is an elite unit that operates under the Joint chiefs of staff that is made up of highly trained total mind-controlled slaves. Delta models are slaves whose sole purpose is assassination. Delta alters are alters within an Illuminati alter system which are programmed to be assassins. These alters are often some of the deepest in a system and in a Genie bottle or with Umbrella programming.

Deliverance ministry-(This book is about HOW the mind-control is done, it is not a textbook on solutions.) The use of the term deliverance ministry in this book connotates any person(s) who via faith in God is able to pray for divine help in a fashion that a victim is helped from demonic activity. A deliverance ministry is a natural outgrowth of a life in harmony and fellowship with Yahweh God. However, this is not to be confused with Exorcism of the traditional Catholic or witchcraft nature in which certain spells and incantations are used in a prescribed method. "Deliverance" connotates divinely inspired faith, exorcism involves ritual. A deliverance ministry might perhaps teach a person about forgiveness, or how they can renounce an oath, or how to apply Jesus Christ's atoning blood to their life. In this fashion, the person finds deliverance through biblical spiritual principles rather than the efficacy of some ritual or hocus pocus spell. This book is in no way meant as a blanket endorsement of every spiritual warfare tactic. If anything, this book suggests that ministers learn more about mind-control, as well as grow stronger in their walk with Almighty God.

Illuminati--The Illuminati are 13 elite bloodlines which have manuevered themselves into control over this planet. They lead double lives, one for society and a hidden one which is based on a gnostic luciferian philosophy which consists of lots of blood rituals.

Monarch Programming--This was a specific Project carried out by secret elements of the U.S. government and intelligence groups. There were, according to someone a few years ago who had access to the computer(s) which contains all the names of active monitored human slaves, 40,000 actively monitored Monarch slaves. However, this book uses the term generically to include all victims who have suffered this type of trauma-based mind-control. In the same way, that a brand name like "Hyster" is used to describe all lifts--when we use the term we use it in its broadest sense. This is the only way it can be used and technically correct, because as of this date, the authors have not seen who is on the active Monarch Program list of slaves.

System-- This term is used in several ways. It is frequently used to refer to a victim of total mind control because the victim consists of alters, programming, implant(s), internal computers, and numerous dissociative states which function together as a system. The word is also used in this book to refer to the body's functional physiological units, such as the respiratory system. The word is also infrequently used to denote the established social-economic-political system controlling the world, also known insiders as the Network. Other standard meaning may also occasionally be used for the word.

Multiple Personality (DID)--Multiple personalities or MPD or Dissociative Identity Disorder is the situation where different dissociative parts of a single brain view themselves as separate persons. The DSM-IIIR definition of MPD is the guideline for determining MPD for this book.

New World Order-- The New World Order is the global design for a One-World-Government One-World-Dictator and its constituents. Insiders call themselves the "network" and "the neighborhood".

Satanic Ritual Abuse (SRA)--This is used to represent all categories of ritual abuse which would be inspired by the desire to rob, kill, or destroy something worthwhile in a person, especially their freedom of thought. Many groups carrying out SRA do not mention Satan by that name. They may make Pacts to Baphomet, and call upon Rex Mundi, or Belair, or Lucifer, or the Father of Light, God, or Kali or even "Jesus" or "Jesus Christ" (there are demons which call themselves "Jesus", who are not to be confused with Yeshua or Yehoshua ben Joseph who is known as Jesus Christ of Nazareth.) SRA is not a value judgement by the authors against some group, the victims themselves on some level know that he or she is being abused.

Switching--This is when one part (fragment) of the mind takes over from another, or in simple terms, this is when one alter personality (or alter fragment) takes the body from the alter which is holding the body. Switching can occur via the Programmers' codes for calling up alters, or by external or internal stimuli that trigger an alter to come out. Switching will usually cause at least a flicker of the eyes, and for outside observers, who know the different personalities, they will observe another personality take the body.

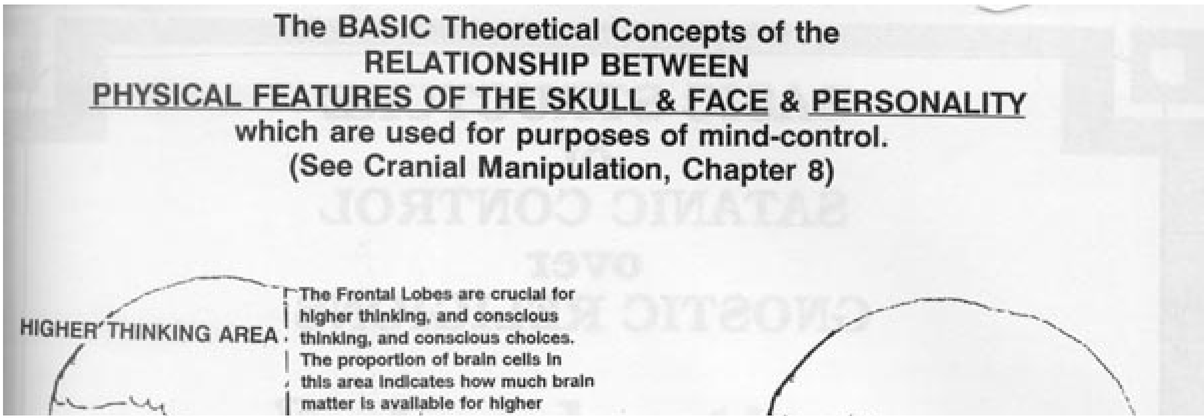

The BASIC Theoretical Concepts of the
RELATIONSHIP BETWEEN
PHYSICAL FEATURES OF THE SKULL & FACE & PERSONALITY
which are used for purposes of mind-control.
(See Cranial Manipulation, Chapter 8)

The Frontal Lobes are crucial for higher thinking, and conscious thinking, and conscious choices. The proportion of brain cells in this area indicates how much brain matter is available for higher

http://whale.to/b/sp/springmeier.html

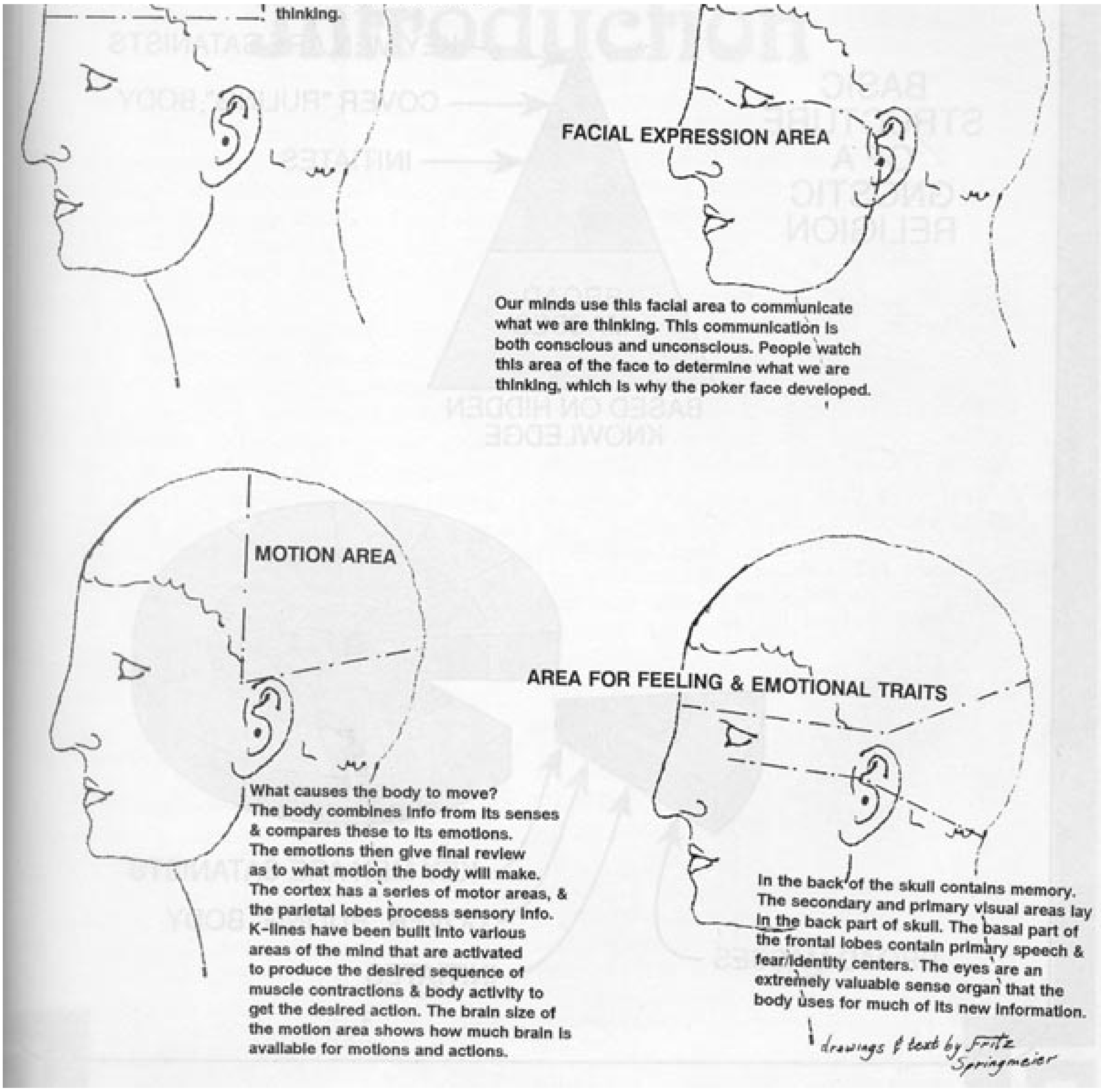
thinking.
FACIAL EXPRESSION AREA
MOTION AREA
AREA FOR FEELING & EMOTIONAL TRAITS

Our minds use this facial area to communicate what we are thinking. This communication is both conscious and unconscious. People watch this area of the face to determine what we are thinking, which is why the poker face developed.

What causes the body to move? The body combines info from its senses & compares these to its emotions. The emotions then give final review as to what motion the body will make. The cortex has a series of motor areas, & the parietal lobes process sensory info. K-lines have been built into various areas of the mind that are activated to produce the desired sequence of muscle contractions & body activity to get the desired action. The brain size of the motion area shows how much brain is available for motions and actions.

In the back of the skull contains memory. The secondary and primary visual areas lay in the back part of skull. The basal part of the frontal lobes contain primary speech & fear/identity centers. The eyes are an extremely valuable sense organ that the body uses for much of its new information.

drawings & text by Fritz Springmeier

Pic p_cranial2.jpg

pic p_basic-structure1.jpg

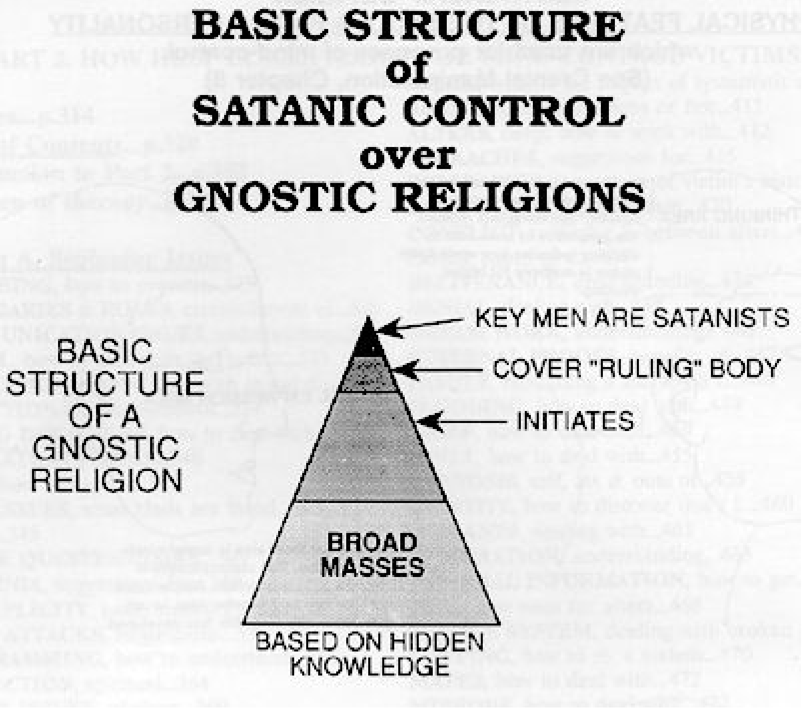

BASIC STRUCTURE
of
SATANIC CONTROL
over
GNOSTIC RELIGIONS

BASIC STRUCTURE OF A GNOSTIC RELIGION
KEY MEN ARE SATANISTS
COVER "RULING" BODY
INITIATES
BROAD MASSES
BASED ON HIDDEN KNOWLEDGE

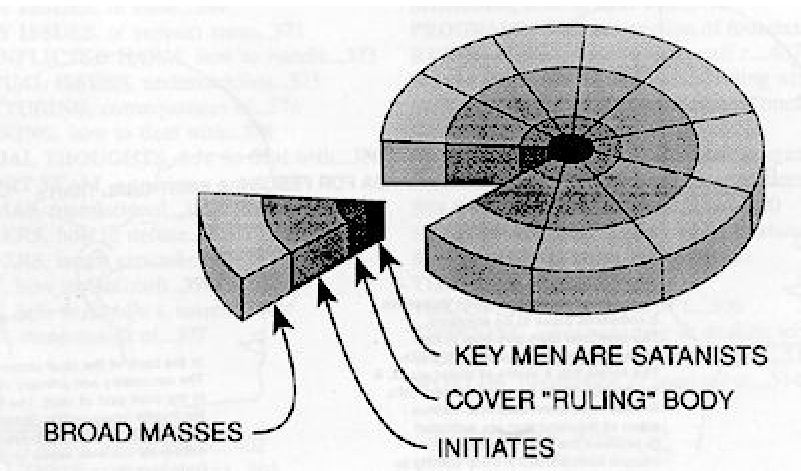

Pic p_records2.jpg

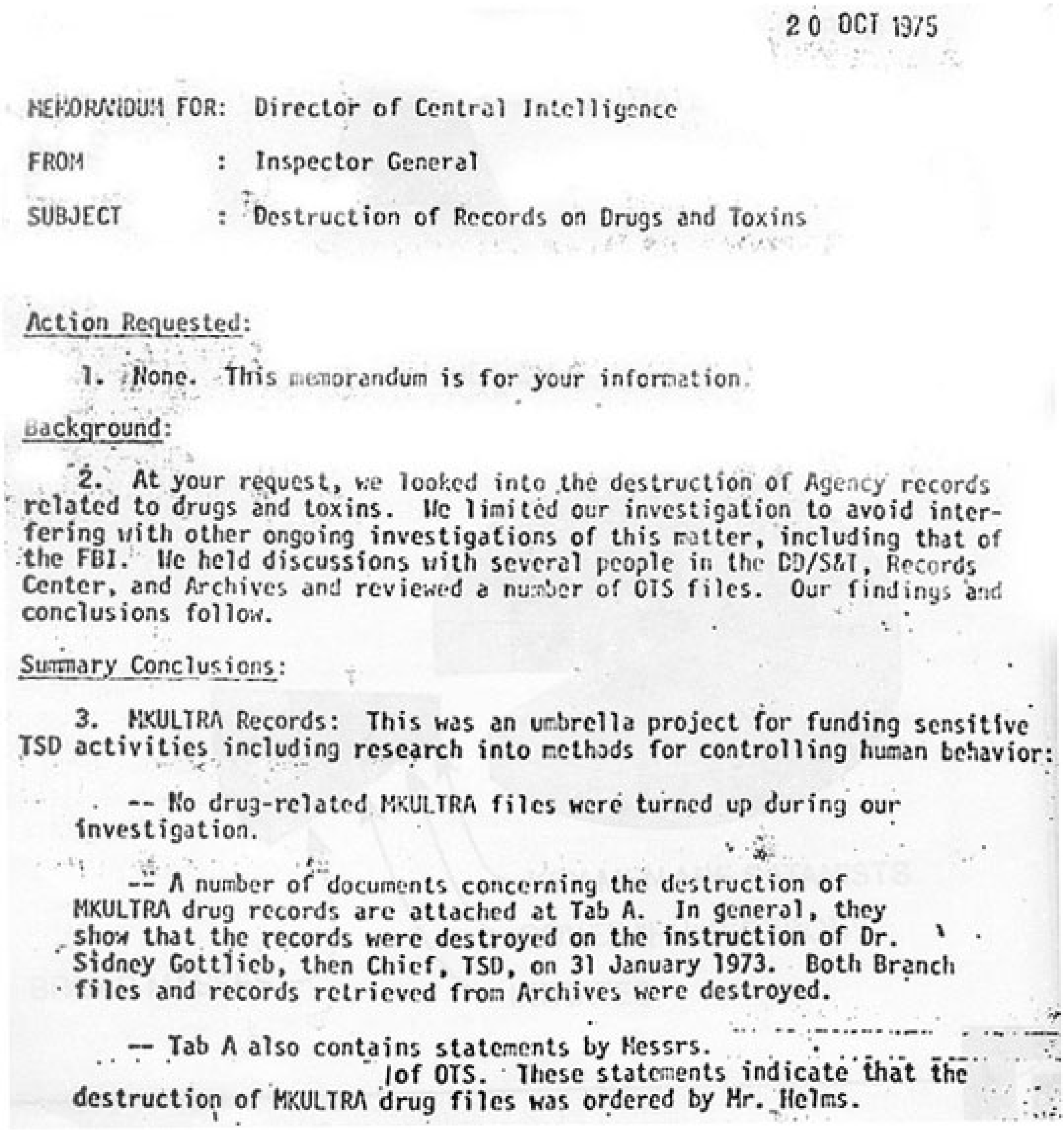

20 OCT 1975

MEMORANDUM FOR: Director of Central Intelligence

FROM : Inspector General

SUBJECT : Destruction of Records on Drugs and Toxins

Action Requested:

1. None. This memorandum is for your information.

Background:

2. At your request, we looked into the destruction of Agency records related to drugs and toxins. We limited our investigation to avoid interfering with other ongoing investigations of this matter, including that of the FBI. We held discussions with several people in the DD/S&T, Records Center, and Archives and reviewed a number of OTS files. Our findings and conclusions follow.

Summary Conclusions:

3. MKULTRA Records: This was an umbrella project for funding sensitive TSD activities including research into methods for controlling human behavior:

-- No drug-related MKULTRA files were turned up during our investigation.

-- A number of documents concerning the destruction of MKULTRA drug records are attached at Tab A. In general, they show that the records were destroyed on the instruction of Dr. Sidney Gottlieb, then Chief, TSD, on 31 January 1973. Both Branch files and records retrieved from Archives were destroyed.

-- Tab A also contains statements by Messrs. of OTS. These statements indicate that the destruction of MKULTRA drug files was ordered by Mr. Helms.

INTRODUCTION

In Jan. '96, I bound the first copies of The Illuminati Formula Used to Create Undetectable Total Mind-Controlled Slave. Hundreds of people in the United States and other countries were reading this book, and were expressing their appreciation and praise for the work. Some also contributed more details about the Illuminati's mind-control. It was also gratifying that the illustrated Guidebook to Monarch Mind-control, which contains my co-author's art work done under programming, was translated and sold this year ('96) as a paperback in Japan. The word is getting out, and people with ears to hear are grateful. The original goal was to write the Vol. 2 book to be about 300 pages long, but it spilled into 500 pages. At 500 pages, it was brought to a grinding halt. In this DEEPER INSIGHTS book, I bring you more profounder mysteries of the Illuminati's mind-control abilities. These deeper insights were some items left out of the Vol. 2 due to space, as well as some things that have been found out since the Vol.2 book was written. Those who were intrigued by the Vol. 2, and cut their teeth on the subject of mind-control via my writings over the past 5 years, will enjoy this further expose of the deeper secrets of Illuminati mind-control. For instance, scattered in several sections including Chapter 3 is a great deal about the base programs which are laid in using controlled LSD trips in sensory deprivation tanks. Another exciting set of new revelations are Cisco's information on the core, and her revelations giving the chronology of layering in the mind-control programming. I have also done a great deal of research into Cranial manipulation (see Chapter 8), which has been an extremely well-hidden mind-control secret known only to a few select people worldwide. Another area of intense research has been to expose the role Disney played in mind-control. Although other writers have superficially touched on implants, nanobots, thought-transfer, soul entrapment and other secret technologies, I decided to provide many details to expose these new technologies that are being used in conjunction with the dissociative programmed multiplicity. Beside learning countless programming secrets, the reader will take another quantum leap into understanding what has been going on in this mixed-up world. If life is a riddle, then this book contains many answers to the riddle of life. During the summer of 1996, I had the privilege to speak on mind-control to audiences in 12 major American cities, as well talk on over 50 radio stations. The response was encouraging. People are beginning to wake up, and are hungry to learn the truth about how the movers and shakers of this world have developed sophisticated methods to make children into undetectable Illuminati robots (from the cradle to the satanic throne), as well as their extensive abilities to control the common person's thinking from the cradle to the grave. When Christ asked the question, will I find faith when I return? it was a serious question. We no longer live in a situation where we can depend upon our mind and our thoughts actually being our own. Our minds are under a constant assault and manipulation by those who control things. No one is exempt. Fortunately, there are still some rational thinking humans, who can challenge and expose their plans for total control over the minds of the entire human race. I, as a minister & researcher, along with the victims represented by Cisco Wheeler and others, can't expose this mind control on our own. We need the help of others. Will you help us get the message out about the New World Order's/the Illuminati's mind control? Cisco has consulted with me, and we decided to make two continuations. The continuation of the Illustrated guidebook would be authored by her, and the continuation of the Vol. 2 book would be carried out by yours truly, Fritz Springmeier. We have combined these two continuations into this book called for short DEEPER INSIGHTS into the Illuminati Mind Control Formula. This volume is meant to be an extension of the previous volumes. IF YOU HAVE NOT READ the previous book entitled Vol. 2 The Illuminati Formula used to create an Undetectable Total Mind Controlled Slave, THEN you are not really prepared to understand this material. In my previous books, I have shown how the intelligence agencies are simply prostitutes and fronts of the Illuminati. The Illuminati always "sterilize" their activities, so their actions can't be identified in the flurry of secret intelligence activities. Recently, at one conference on mind-control, victims of government mind-control were told that their stories were not welcome because the conference was on "cult" mind-control. Dear reader, the intelligence agencies are cults, and not only that, but they have a dark satanic side to them, which not only brands them as cults, but "occult cults." Witchcraft and Freemasonry refer to themselves as "the Craft"; how appropriate it was for Allen Dulles, DCI-head of the CIA, to entitle his book "The Craft of Intelligence". How appropriate it was that people within the CIA referred to their top management as the Knights Templars. As the Vol. 2 Formula book indicated, the intelligence agencies which work for the Illuminati have kept only the minimum of records, and the records they do keep are out of reach of people like you and I. But that doesn't mean that the researcher like myself can't work backwards. One of the side effects of the traumas that create multiple-personalities (DID) is that sadistic or criminal alters are often formed, and with careful research the historical record of criminals with multiple personalities can be traced back into history. The Illuminati have created trained-multiples for centuries, but insiders say that programmed DID (MPD) was developed in the Nazi concentration camps. The worldwide Illuminati planned the camps with the goal to determine what programs would work on children, and used the cover story of Nazi racial hatred to hide the real purpose of the camps--mind-control experiments which used large numbers of children traumatized by their separation from their parents.

With today's sophisticated programming and structuring of MPD worlds, these evil alters can be controlled better than in the past, and yet we still have serial killers like Wayne Cox, and serial rapists like William Stanley Milligan, who were programmed multiples stalking our streets. Kenneth Biani, the LA Hillside strangler who killed 9 people was diagnosed as a multiple, but claimed he had faked the disorder. Thomas W. Piper in Boston in the 1870s, and Paul Miskamen, one hundred years later in California, are examples of multiples who had an alter capable of murder and another alter who was a good Christian. One of the best disinformation campaigns of the Illuminati, is to make people think programmed-multiples are just for espionage, prostitution and assassination. They have taken over our pulpits, like the Illuminati programmed multiple Jimmy Swaggart, and they have taken over our political offices, like Al Gore, and our universities. Even with the elite's secrecy intact via their control of libraries, publishing houses, and newspapers, the record still shows the traces of the Illuminati's history of creating controlled multiple personalities. The historical record of criminals with multiple personalities includes the Illuminati coke multimillionaire Harry K. Thaw. He was one of the elite of society, who had charming sophisticated front alters, and sadistic deeper alters. His position prevented him from being convicted of a murder he committed in public on June 25, 1906. However, another multiple Henry Spencer, who didn't have such clout was hanged after killing Allison Rexroat in 1914. Another multiple William Heirens, who murdered two women in the '40's, had one of his front alters write in the mirror after a murder, "For heaven's sake, catch me before I kill more, I cannot control myself." He had an alter George who was doing the murders. The story doesn't stop with evidence of physical murders, but includes the vast numbers of spiritual deaths that have resulted from the spiritual manipulation of the masses via programmed multiples. Programmed multiples have been great for carrying out religious deceptions. Many of the great spiritist mediums were multiples. In the 1920's, Patience Worth was a famous name of an author. Patience was an alter of Mrs. John Curran. As a child Mrs. Curran had played the piano in her uncle's Missouri Ozark church when young and then she later grew up to be a famous medium and writer. A Dr. Charles E. Cory investigated her multiple-personality disorder. He discovered that her author alter was much more intelligent than the front alter who did the housekeeping & normally held the body. The occult world has manipulated MPD to manufacture validation for their theories of reincarnation, spiritism etc. Where once the Word of God was accepted as truth by society as a whole, now society questions whether there is such a thing as truth. When it has come to finding out about mind control from the first level of perpetrators, the government, there have been a number of manufactured (bogus), sanitized and original CIA documents released to the public under the nearly worthless Freedom of Information act. The Freedom of Information Act has been manipulated to lead people to think that the public has access to secrets.

A letter of inquiry in 1995 requesting declassified documents on Mind Control, Monarch, MK Ultra, Artichoke and Blue Bird got the following response from the CIA, "...as you might expect, we have already conducted broad-ranging and exhaustive searches and reviews on every conceivable aspect of human behavior, including mind control and brainwashing, and have located and released 11, 336 pages of material on the general subject of human behavior studies under MKULTRA. Most of the 11,336 pages of this previously released material are very limited in scope and consist primarily of financial records." (quote from a CIA letter of response in answer to a request for declassified mind-control information.) Yes, and long-story-short even those 11,336 pages only got released due to a mistake.

In one CIA document pertaining to mind control released under the Freedom of Information act, which is a memorandum dated 20 Oct. 1975 to the Director of Central Intelligence from the Inspector General Donald F. Chamberlain, the Inspector General states, "From his investigation of the project [MKNAOMI], Dr. Stevens has concluded that gaps in the files are the result of a conscious policy on the part of those involved to keep very little paper on the project from its inception in 1952 to its demise in 1970. People formerly connected with the project interviewed by Dr. Stevens asserted that the practice of keeping little or no record of the activity was standard MKNAOMI procedure." Philip Agee, who wrote an expose of the CIA entitled Inside The Company: CIA Diary (Toronto, Can.: Bantam Books, 1975), said that as an employee of the CIA "You get so used to lying that after a while it's hard to remember what the truth is." Philip Agee writes, "The life of a CIA operations officer ... There is not much time to think about the results of your actions and, if you try to do it well, the job of operations officer calls for dedication to the point of obsession. But it's a schizophrenic sort of situation. You have too many secrets, you can't relax with outsiders. Sometimes an operative uses several identities at once. If somebody asks you a simple question, "What did you do over the weekend?" your mind goes Click! Who does he think I am? What would the guy he thinks I am be doing over the weekend? You get so used to lying that after a while it's hard to remember what the truth is. When I [Philip] joined the CIA I signed the secrecy agreement... [now] I may have violated that agreement. I believe it is worse to stay silent, that the [security] agreement itself was immoral." [bold added to quote] On Nov. 15, 1996, DCI Deutsch of the CIA paraded himself and some politicians before a public meeting in south L.A. (broadcast on C-Span) and told the people the CIA would investigate allegations that the CIA had run drugs. One man asked CIA Director Deutsch, "Everyone knows that the CIA was running drugs in Vietnam from the Golden Triangle, and that they have continued doing it to today, and you want to come here to south L.A. and pretend to us that this hasn't happened when everyone knows it did. Are you crazy?" Deutsch couldn't help but show a revealing smile. (The above quoted question was taken from C-Span's broadcast & is a closely paraphrased version.) One of my questions to Deutsch would be, "When a drug addict's life gets out of control, he'll go into denial, and he'll steal from everyone in his life, including his own mother, and live a life of lies, and when an intelligence agency gets out of control, they are like an addicted person, they stay in total denial and keep secretly hurting everyone in sight, WHAT can and should the people do to get an out-of-control intelligence agency to stop its power addiction? Unfortunately, the problem with power addiction, addiction to lying & deception, and drug addiction began centuries before the CIA within the Illuminati families that started the CIA. The CIA is simply reflecting the problems of its parent. Their addiction to lying keeps the common gullible man in public ignorant. Their total mind-controlled slaves are used extensively for disinformation campaigns, and are helpful to disseminate WHITE, GREY, & BLACK propaganda for the New World Order's Network. To coordinate their lies requires a special intelligence group that keeps meticulous records of the disinformation that has been disseminated, so that they don't get mixed up in their lies. It is extremely rare to get the truth out of the perpetrators, the mind-control programmers. Recently, on television a movie portrayed a victim of trauma-based mind control trying to get one of her programmers, who she'd taken prisoner, to confess to what he'd done. He defied her, and did all he could to make her think her memory was her imagination. It was an excellent portrayal of how hard it is to get the truth out of the perpetrators. The sadistic programmers have exercised their power for decades in secrecy. They have understood the implications of their power for decades. However, the implications of this undetectable mind-control are staggering, actually overwhelming and beyond the man in the street's ability to comprehend. It means every organization can be infiltrated ("penetrated" as they say), and used as a front or controlled. It means nothing is as it appears. It means that Russia can hate America on the surface, and be working hand in glove on the secret level. It means every one of the millions of new immigrants from Russia, China and Eastern Europe into the U.S. is a potential time bomb. It means much of what has been blamed on Christians has had its origin in Satan. Satanic programming has seriously damaged the reputation of Christians. The programmers are major players in how the world's events unfold, while they receive absolutely no attention. These men are illegitimate rulers of the world. They have never gained from the common man the right to rule. Therefore they rule through puppets who owe their total allegiance to their mind-control masters. They are rapidly trying to establish legitimacy for themselves, and plan to culminate their plans to gain legitimacy with the rule of the AntiChrist, who will rule based on mass-produced myths and fantasies that the Illuminati will articulate to the imaginations of millions of slaves worldwide. They have already begun to market the AntiChrist and his reign to the world. The campaign for the acceptance of homosexuality is just one part of this marketing effort. They are also skillfully justifying their AntiChrist's rule, by creating problems that only his superior management abilities and leadership skills will be able to deal with. The strength of New World Order and the AntiChrist's rule is the total and undetectable mind-control that is being carried out on a mass scale to little children and people who fit specific profiles. According to a reliable deprogrammed source: Adults, who have the following profile are subjected to mind-control. This profile is:

· alone without a support system of family or friends.

· an I.Q. above 120.

· good hypnotic candidate

· has other attributes worthwhile to exploit

More about this will be discussed in chapter 1, where an entire overview of how the intelligence agencies take adults and program them will be given. Adults who are used by the intelligence agencies for WET OPS or one-time one way missions are programmed in stages. These stages are designated levels 1-5. Level 4 is where these slaves begin to resemble the total mind-controlled slaves of the Illuminati who have been subjected to mind-control since they were defenseless babies. The men involved in the programming of little defenseless children are skilled. They have been earned their jobs on the basis of a dog-eat-dog environment. They are ruthless. They operate out a hidden zone, which I will call the twilight zone of believability. Anyone who tries to expose what they are doing, must write about things that are outside of that box of things commonly believed in. It is as they intentionally gauge what is believable and then step outside of that zone in which to operate. These ruthless programmers have egos which think they are god-men. Somewhere deep in their minds, they inwardly know they are worms. There is a part of themselves deep down that knows the truth, but Satan has buried that so deep, that they cannot face the reality of who they are. They seek eternal life by stealing the life force of innocent victims. They know that their father is Satan. They are victims of Satan. Where does one draw the line between who is a victim and who is an abuser? There is no line. The word of God indicates that God has turned many of these men over to Satan due to their wicked minds. It's sad to think that some of these men are dependant on Satan for spiritual life. Many of the slaves still have a spark of reality and a spirit that cries for freedom. They have ears to hear the truth, should it come their way. This book is written for those who love the truth and love the liberty that Almighty God has given us to seek and to love the truth for ourselves. Although only a minority of the people today have Total Mind-Control, the Illuminati are attempting to confuse and manipulate everyone. One of their favorite tactics to scare people with is the ambiguous bogeyman of national security. They constantly use their spin-doctors to whip up fear, so that the public will gladly surrender their freedom to protect "national security". Unfortunately, or ironically, the very concept of "national security" is being used as a cover for the Illuminati to steal every last vestige of freedom left to the American people. American tax-dollars support secret conferences such as the classified conference sponsored by Los Alamos on Nov. 16-17, 1993 where the Applied Physics Lab of John Hopkins University taught our military about "non-lethal" weapons. The satanist/ ex-Green Beret Dr. John Alexander, now head of the Los Alamos National Lab, gave one of the opening talks on 11/16/93. The next day, the military men gave talks on the technology involved in controlling people's minds electronically via both implants and energy beamed at them. Dr. Dave Morgan, of Lockhead Sanders also gave a specific talk on their "syntel--synthetic voices they place in the heads of victims with telemetry to auditory implants. You will read more on their implants in chapter 5. The battle for the freedom of the human mind must be fought now. The battle gets increasingly difficult, but we must fight it whether we win or lose, for the human spirit and the human mind was not created by God for slavery to Satan and his AntiChrist. Over and over, the truth of Jesus' words still shine forth, "And you shall know the truth and the truth shall set you free." Let us realize that the man who said those eternally powerful words also said, "I am the way, the truth, and the life." For His light shone in darkness, "and the darkness has not overcome it." If those of us who still have free minds must die--then let us die for the TRUTH, that the Truth in Christ Jesus shall live.

The hidden World Order government that increasingly controls our lives operates through many clandestine operations and groups. What you see is not what you get. In order to maintain total secrecy of such a vast scale of operations, they use millions of mind-controlled slaves world-wide as well as numerous willing servants who out of raw terror will not buck the system. On the surface, EPIC is just another secret military unit. The patch below belongs to the EPIC unit, a clandestine unit which is doing the real banking for part of Mexico, much of the U.S. and part of Canada. This agency (El Paso Intelligence Center--EPIC) is obviously not a U.S. jurisdictional agency, but operates under FINCEN (Financial Crimes Enforcement Network- as in crimes against Big Brother). This unit is stationed at Ft. Bliss, which contains Army & Air Force units. American elections are rigged, and there is no longer a government of the people, for the people and by the people (if there ever was one). The American people are kept in place because they think they elected the government that rules them. Mind-control is pervasive and is being used not just to create sexual slaves, or banking employees, but to control society at all levels. Will we continue to allow a shadow government to rule us? Will we continue to let them tell us that these things have to be secret in the interest of "national security", when in reality they are only in the interest of NATIONAL SLAVERY?

EPIC is also involved with the NAFTA machinations, many of which were done with the help of mind-controlled slaves. Within the NAFTA agreement was the U.S./Mexico Border XXI Framework Document, (based on the La Paz Agreement signed in '83) which in effect ends American & Mexican sovereignity over all land within 52.5 miles of the border. Special international agencies have been created to regulate the various environmental and legal needs of the Border XXI region, as the border is dissolved into a border region. The U.S./Mex. Border XXI document created the Border Cooperation Project & the North American Development Bank. The World Bank will also provide financing, and some funds will come from Mexico. EPIC is well situated in the approx. geographic center of this border region.

CHAPTER 1. SCIENCE NO. 1 - SELECTION & PREPARATION OF THE VICTIM

The average person who has been spoon-fed what he knows from the controlled establishment (the establishment's news, churches, and schools) is overwhelmed and in denial that mind-control can be happening. Who would want to carry out mind-control? One category are those groups who use the Cabala. Hasidic

Judaism, Freemasonry, and Witchcraft are all based on the Cabala. Llewellyn's magazine New Worlds of Mind and Spirit (a prominent witchcraft magazine) in their June/July '94 issue state on page 56, "The golem of Prague is perhaps the most famous example of 'practical cabala'- the use of cabala for magical cabala." Golem are mind-controlled beings. There are several cabalistic and witchcraft written references that point out that the creation of mind-controlled zombies (golem) was the highest goal of the cabala. Albert Pike, perhaps the most important Freemason of all times, clearly stated as the head of Freemasons worldwide that Freemasonry is based on the Cabala. A cabalistic psychiatrist in Psychoanalysis Review, '44, issue 31, p. 180 wrote, "Victory over the world would be secured by any man who possessed the Shem...[We shall control the world (words to this effect)]...when we shall attain the consciousness of the Shem within us and will control the power of the Golem to regenerate the world." [The Golem are energized by the magic Tetragrammaton, which the Jehovah's W.s emphasize so much.] In The Worldwide Weekly, Defense News of 3/20-26/95, the Defense News an official military paper indicated that the navy was attempting to produce an "Army of Zombies". The Defense News stated:

"The research, called Hippocampal Neuron Patterning, grows live neurons on computer chips, William Tolles, the recently retired associate director of research at the Naval Research Lab, said March 15. This technology that alters neurons could potentially be used on people to create zombie armies, Lawrence Korb, a senior fellow at the Brookings Institution, said March 16 .... The research has captured the attention of the U.S. Intelligence community."

I have taken the space to give you the reader a paper trail that shows that YES INDEED, there are groups of people that desire human zombies. So where do they select their candidates for their zombie creating programs? That's what this chapter will deal with. You'll have to go to some of my other books to learn how these mind-control groups all interconnect.

The previous book by this author The Top 13 Illuminati Bloodlines was intended to help people begin to understand the major role bloodlines play within the Illuminati. When this author was on speaking circuit, he ran into a number of researchers who had researched the New World Order and the Illuminati for years and not realized the significance of the bloodlines. In tracking the bloodlines, it became apparent that the European Illuminati bloodlines were trying to integrate some of the American Indian bloodlines into their own bloodlines. Why? They wanted the occult power that these bloodlines contributed. And it seems that not only do generational spirits help in many ways, but there are reasons to believe that the Aborigines of Australia, the Bushmen of the Kalahari, and some of the American Indian tribes such as the Cherokee have high paranormal abilities in addition to their demonic spiritual abilities. Some believe that the psi-gene was valuable for the survival of primitive hunter tribes, while tribes who went into agriculture lost some of the power of the primary and secondary psi-genes since natural selection would not have encouraged psi-genes in agricultural based societies. The primary psi-genes are thought by some to be some genetic coding which enhances proteins to be better biophysical batteries, storage units, and other roles. The secondary genetic psi-coding are thought to be codes for creating richer and higher-functioning neural pathways, and neural capabilities. Whether this was true, if the Illuminati believed it was true, it could account for their penchant for mixing in American Indian blood with their elite "blue blood."

BREEDING GOOD SUBJECTS for HYPNOSIS-hypnosis as it relates to selection & preparation of the victim.

Hypnosis and programming work well in the alpha state of the mind. This is why the child is traumatized even in the womb, so that it will naturally be in that alpha state even before birth. The man in the street may think that the hypnotist looks for weak-willed subjects, however the mind-control programmers and professional stage hypnotists say that a "fighter", "a determined forceful personality" are the types they search for to have a successful hypnotic session. Weak-willed persons are usually incapable of seriously concentrating for the successful pursuance of any idea, and usually are the worst subjects. Intelligence is often helpful, and (as stated in the first volume) the ability to be creative is extremely important to the programmers. An extremely important factor for the subject of mind-control to have is the "emotional drive to pursue to its successful completion a given objective." (McGill, Ormond. Professional Stage Hypnotism. pp. 87-88.) One reason the programmers like to work with children who were preemies is that they are fighters. Another reason the programmers like to work with intelligent children, and not waste time trying to program lower-than-average intelligent children, is that they are easier to hypnotize.

This does not mean that only people who appear intelligent are programmed. During the programming process, many of the victims are programmed to appear stupid to others and to themselves. Only the master (and those who work with him) are to use the full potential of the victim. The victims' talents are stolen from them. An intelligent child, who comes from an intelligent family, and who is programmed with total mind-control may grow up into adulthood thinking he or she is of average or below average intelligence.

GENETICS

Pres. Theodore Roosevelt, who was blood related to both President Martin Van Buren and to Franklin Delano Roosevelt, is on record, "Some day we will realize that the prime duty, the inescapable duty of the good citizens of the right type is to leave his or her blood behind him in the world; and that we have no business to permit the perpetuation of citizens of the wrong type .... The problem cannot be met unless we give full consideration to the immense influence of heredity .... I wish very much that the wrong people could be prevented entirely from breeding; and when the evil nature of these people is sufficiently flagrant, this should be done .... The emphasis should be laid on getting desirable people to breed." Many of the people within the Illuminati bloodlines have made statements like this, and have done all they could to leave many secret offspring behind, because these elite bloodlines have felt they were the chosen to lead humanity. Your ancient aristocratic families such as the Cabots, Lodges & Delanos have been in favor of placing the blame on society's problems on the "bad blood" of the common man. They forget all the evils that have been perpetrated on these common people by the blue blooded aristocratic families that think they are so superior. For instance, Illuminati kingpin Harriman's wife purchased land at Cold Springs, NY to promote a eugenics program. She said that being raised around good race horses helped her appreciate good breeding in man. Eugenics is the philosophy that some humans are genetically superior to others, & that inferior genetic races/individuals should be destroyed. The first eugenics program started in the United States was by John Humphrey Noyes, the cult leader of communist Oneida communities. John Humphrey Noyes' father was a Vermont Congressman, and his mother was a relative of Rutherford B. Hayes, the 19th U.S. President. His family was from the burned out district, from Putney, Vermont. In 1833, Yale granted him a license to preach. Noyes began creating his communist communities around 1836, and he dictated all their major decisions, including their group sex and eugenics policies. In 1869, John H. Noyes selected 53 women and 38 men to be the only ones in his communities allowed to produce children. The goal was to perfect the genetics of the community by only allowing well bred children. This is believed to be the first eugenics program. All members of the community were encouraged to have sex with everyone else & not to form emotional attachments around it. However, they were not to have procreative sex. The Oneida group can clearly be tied in with European occult groups that tie in with the illuminati. The Oneida group used central committees and social control through mutual criticism to keep their members in line. Their social control methods were extremely effective. Years later, Chinese communism began using these innovations of Noyes'. Charles Guiteau, who assassinated Pres. Garfield, was a member of Noyes' Oneida community. He became a member because his father, a disciple of Noyes, took him there as a boy. Charles stated that at the Noyes' community, he came under the influence of Noyes and "I was unable to get away from that influence ... A man was just as isolated from the world as if he were confined in state's prison or lunatic asylum. I suffered greatly in mind and body and spirits during incarceration in that community." He claimed he had never gotten free of the control that began when he entered the Oneida community. In 1880, he began hanging around the Republican Party's NY HQ. This was a very strange thing, because Charles Guiteau had never had any interest in politics his entire life. He bought a pistol from a "gentleman", and then shot President Garfield. Knowing that Illuminati mind-control was already taking place at this time, certainly makes this assassination an area for further study. John Noyes had his groups conducting seances and carrying out initiation rites. He personally sexually initiated the girl children of his communities at these rites. In June, 1879, when the authorities came to arrest him for mass rape of little girls, he fled to British Canada, where the British government gave him asylum. After Noyes skipped the country, the community was incorporated as a joint-stock corporation called Oneida Ltd., which later burned a large amount of the personal records and the diaries of the members to keep their sexual activities forever secret. It's interesting to note, that long before 1879, in June, 1847, Noyes' had treated a woman Harriet Hall for tuberculosis & dropsy by holding a seance ritual and sexually sealing the spiritual cure with intercourse with the woman. After the woman's husband reported this, a grand jury indicted Noyes. He skipped bail and an almost sure conviction by fleeing to New York. People have wondered how he managed to practice his odd sexual behaviors for years and never get into trouble with authorities.

Margaret Sanger, an early feminist, was also an advocate of eugenics. In their zeal to make her a hero, modern feminists have neglected to notice this side of her. Sanger advocated sterilization of the feeble-minded by he government. This all sounded good at the turn of the century before legitimate research showed that genetics played only a partial role in how people turned out, and that environment and choices by individuals also played just as big of a role in how people turned out. Many of the people who were sterilized under eugenic laws were realized to have been victims of pseudo-science and hysteria. The Great Depression leveled many proud and haughty people down to the same level as the common people they had sneered down upon. Rich and poor found themselves in bread lines. The financial elite and the academic elite were humbled and the eugenics racial theories in the U.S. largely disappeared. Finally, H.J. Muller, a famous and respected geneticist, gave an outstanding and courageous speech to the Eugenics Society in NY in 1932 where he lambasted the eugenicists for using false better-breeding theories to rationalize the criminal behavior of the elite. The Illuminati had suffered a temporary setback in legitimizing their criminal rule over humanity. In recent years, the Illuminati's evil ideas about superior and inferior blood lines are being given more credence again. The National Institute of Health funded a $1.7 million study at the University of Hawaii's Behavioral Biology Lab to get solid information on how genetics relates to intelligence so that "informed decisions" about population control can be made in the future. Almost every state has now adopted genetic screening of new-born babies in the U.S. While the Illuminati may not be able to fully implement their superior blood theories in society in general, they have been secretly working feverishly in labs and in secret rituals around the world to redesign mankind to their preferences. Many Illum. members are the end result of carefully monitored genetic engineering. They want to manufacture the future via control over human genetics. Many years ago, the first step in the Illuminati genetic program was the creation of specifications. When these specs, these criteria, were set as goals, they then worked to realize them. They have been working at them, and refining the results as they continue to work toward specific goals. They have sought the perfect assassin. They have sought the perfect slave. They have sought the perfect baseball player and golf player. They have sought the perfect soldier. The borders between these manufactured Illuminati total mind-control slaves and an industrial robot are fast becoming blurred. The end of the human race as we know it, and civilization as we know it, is rapidly approaching. Via molecular biology and genetics, humanoids that are vastly different from normal humans have been created in secret underground installations. They have been modifying humans to design para-humans, and then applying mind-control to them. The Illuminati is not only controlling humanity, but under their control redesigning it. Lest anyone forget, the descendants of John Noyes' Oneida Colony, and the genetic model wonder children born in Nazi Germany are still around. According to one source, the Nazi's produced numerous offspring of Hitler which were secretly taken to many countries and then later reassembled in certain special towns. These children received mind-control as well as being specially endowed with as many special traits as the Nazi's could give them. If this is true, it could have some significance in the future. Illuminati kingpins are also able to store their semen via cryogenics for all kinds of scenarios. Frozen sperm can be used to create a son after the father had died. Should an Illuminati kingpin want to impregnate his grand-daughter 10 years after his death, it would be possible. On the flip side, single women can choose semen from sperm banks. Another twist that the Illuminati have taken advantage of is taking the fertilized egg of one set of parents and implanting it into a brooder slave to raise the child as a surrogate mother.

It should also be mentioned that ex-Illuminati members have explained how planned births are coincided to have the child be born on particular special occult dates. (The Illuminati have a intense lifestyle of secrecy, so most of their members do not carry the last name of the bloodline they belong to. Some members are given significant occult names for their legal name, and others use legal names which have no significance. Having a legal occult-significant name is not essential, because the alter system will receive a secret Illuminati occult name.)

The bottom line is that bloodlines, genetics and genetic engineering is playing a role in the selection process of who is programmed a certain way. Also the Illuminati has particular research goals that have been structured into their 20 year, 30 year and 50 year plans. Case histories show that a child will receive education and programming in order to participate in secret research projects years down the road. Some of today's marked children are invariably being quietly educated to help with future research goals. As might be suspected the inbreeding within the secret Illuminati bloodlines and their secret satanic lifestyles take their genetic toll..

How do the Illuminati get rid of their leftovers, the children their bloodlines have that aren't going to amount to a great deal? In terms of mind-control, the male children that are the programming leftovers, the ones that are not really fit to make into politicians, doctors and lawyers, will be made into stalkers, according to an ex-Illuminati programmer, who worked in this area of programming, the ratio of men to women that are programmed for stalking is about 90% to 10%. Why discuss how the Illuminati makes stalkers? First, many people doubt that there is a controlled conspiracy by the Illuminati to control the world, because in their limited understanding they think that there are too many uncontrollable people around for the world to be controlled. They don’t realize that a large share of those crazy people were intentionally created by the Illuminati. The Illuminati programmers and handlers during the 40’s through the 60’s, according to insiders, had specific quotas on how many people to have go crazy so that the mental institutions (which were used for programming) could maintain their government financing.

Readers, who have followed this author’s lectures, have heard him explain how a. the Illuminati make a decision to "solve" a problem they have created, then b. get the government and private groups to study the problem for years so that eventually it looks like their (secretly preplanned) decision is the best course of action for the country, and then c. their lackey’s in the political process implement the decision supposedly for the "good of the people". After 30 years of good financing for the mental institutions so they could do their assigned task of programming hundreds of thousands of people with tasks for the NWO, the Illuminati then set things up so that the mental institutions dumped their populations out onto the streets, where they can carry out the missions they had been programmed to carry out.

They next step was to privatize the prisons, which are being used for mind-control (not to mention hard-core porn of women victims in prisons). The Illuminati’s long range plans for mind-control included that they would turn over the prisons to people like the Illuminati’s Order of the Skull & Bone’s Wackenhut Services, Inc., Coral Gables, FL, (ph. no. 305-666-5656), and the Illuminati’s GE Government Operations, Cherry Hill, NJ under James Becker at 609-486-5042. In the 18 page Heritage Foundation’s study of prison needs entitled "A Guide To Prison Privatization" (done on May 28, 1988, Wash. D.C.), the Heritage Foundations gives all the correct Illuminati answers to the question of privatization of prisons, including listing the following "corporations that provide prison services ... Behavioral Systems SW, Inc.,... Eckerd Family Youth Alternatives, Inc., ... GE Government Operations, Cherry Hill, NJ.. .Wackenhut." All groups that this author’s research indicates are Illuminati and involved with mind-control. An example of several studies that this author has obtained that were done to show us that privatization of prisons is the best answer to our problems is The Development, Present Status, and Future Potential of Correctional Privatization in America by Charles W. Thomas, Prof. of Criminology & Dir, of Private Corrections Project; Charles H. Logan, Prof. of Sociology, Univ. of Conn., & Visiting Fellow, Fed. Bureau of Prisons. This paper was done May 1991. Our government also got into the act and the GAO wrote up a govt. report in Feb. 1991 stating that the government could save money by privatizing prisons. The Illuminati need their people seeded at all levels of society, at the gutter level as well as in palaces. This is where the stalkers, their leftover children used for programming are handy. Many of these stalkers had secret Illuminati lineages that are hidden via adoption. As one ex-Illuminati member said, "They are the weak links." The Illuminati must have dependable people everywhere, even in the gutter and prisons.

Why create stalkers? There are a long list of reasons. It is somewhat difficult to explain unless readers are already familiar with the bigger picture. People, who have sat in on Illuminati meetings where their 20, 30, and 50 year plans were discussed, will explain how the Illuminati wanted to break down the family structures and bring violence into the schools. This is Ordo ab chaos. However, the schools had rules to protect themselves from dangerous violent activity done by children, so they had to create violence in the streets, to get violence into the schools by the backdoor. Stalkers were part of the program to create violence. Another purpose stalkers serve for the Illuminati is that they make excellent spies if they get attached to someone. They will find out everything they can about that person. Their minds will creatively invent all kinds of ways to get information about their fixation.

How does the Illuminati program a child to become a stalker? They have the programming techniques to create a stalker down to a fine science. In short, it consists of 1. they bond the child extremely close to its mother or a woman as it grows up. This creates a side-effect of homosexuality. The mental mechanics of this side-effect are that the male has an unmet need for men. The Illuminati will manipulate this latent homosexuality but not allow its expression. They want to continue to strengthen the apron strings that attach the child to the mother image. Meanwhile they utterly destroy all self-respect and self-image of the child. It is totally disgraced so that its only identity is its identity with its mother figure. The child can not stand on its own two feet without the support of the mother-figure. When the boy approaches puberty, they are watched very closely by the Illuminati, be that in a military school or tightly controlled cult family setting, etc. They do not want the apron strings to ever be cut. They want them to remain dependent when they would naturally become independent. They want to insure that the young boy doesn’t develop a sense of who they are. The victim of stalker programming will never emotionally grow out of that age of about 11-13 when boys would sever the ties to their mother. They stop growing emotionally at about age 12. This is all carefully crafted by the Illuminati. These young men never understand themselves or their programming. They don’t understand the impulses and uncontrollable drives that hit them. They can’t get off their programming merry-go-round, because it is rooted in the first brain, their maternal instincts, the "reptilian brain" which has no conscience. Their stalking of their mother figure is a survival instinct that they don’t understand. They make good spies. They will persist in tracking and stalking a victim, until they break down the victim’s walls of privacy by their sheer tenacity, persistence, and force of will.

This is because it is a survival instinct that has been harnessed by the Illuminati programmer. Because this programming is laid in at the reptilian first brain level, these stalkers can be violent without a higher brain conscience, and their minds will manufacture some justification to protect this survival need to stalk. The mind protects itself, so they have a strong denial system. Every time someone "rejects" them, it triggers their programming. Because they are driven by their reptilian first brain (the various brains are explained later in this book) they only think in the here-and-now, long-term projects bore them, they don’t have the stick-to-itiveness needed for many jobs, except their eternal quest for an identity with the mother-figure they stalk.

TRAINING THE UNBORN CHILD

The Illuminati in its typical schizophrenic way, has not neglected the opportunities to begin the programming process in the womb. The scientific research in this area has been kept quiet, but from an ex-Illuminati programmer it is clear that they are aware of much more about the unborn child in the womb and its thinking processes than the public knows about. I was privileged to read the excellent book The Secret Life of the Unborn Child by Thomas Veiny, M.D. with John Kelly. This book is written from a loving Christian viewpoint and incorporates scientific research about the thinking of unborn children. Interestingly, Veiny studied research into the mind of the fetus from researchers at the Max Plank Institute, Munich, Germany, from the Esalen Institute, Big Sur, CA., from the Center for Research on Birth and Human Development, Berkeley, CA which are all institutions involved in mind-control and mind-control research. Just one example of the learning abilities of the unborn child, an autistic child remembered the english her French speaking mother was around during work while the child was in the womb. Veiny writes, "The fetus can see, hear, experience, taste and, on a primitive level, even learn in utero (that is, in the uterus--before birth). Most importantly, he can feel--not with an adult’s sophistication, but feel nonetheless." (p. 12) Research has clearly showed that the fetus can think and is shaping its (his or her) personality while in the womb. Maternal thoughts, feelings, actions, and fears all reach the child in the womb and affect the child. The maternal bonding with the child while in the womb is also critical.

Researchers have been unable to pinpoint when a baby in the womb begins to think, and have a consciousness, but some theorize that it goes back clear to the beginning of conception. One study taught fetus babies to kick on the cue of a vibration. The researchers have determined that the unborn child hears what is being said around it, and is beginning to associate its language skills around the voices it hears. The unborn child hears and reacts differently to different music played. Soothing words and soothing music will calm a fetus. One conductor remembered into his adult years, the cello music that had only been played while he was an unborn child. According to excellent research, the start of awareness is clearly evidenced between the 28th and 32nd week. At that point, the brain’s neural circuits are just as advanced as a newborns. This is why the Illuminati can get away with causing so many preemie births to enhance dissociative abilities. From the 32nd week on the child shows that it carries out REM sleep. It is also interesting the children, teenagers and adults have widely divergent sleep patterns but the time spent in REM sleep stays constant. Researchers have been able to trace memories going back to the sixth month of pregnancy. In other words, from the sixth month of pregnancy onward, some of what the unborn child learns will be remembered. (See pg. 23 of Varny’s The Secret Life of the Unborn Child.) This is why the Illuminati has made a point of having the unborn child hear the voices of people who will play a role in the trauma and programming of the child. The child may already know the hypnotic voice of one of its cult programmers at birth. Researchers found that by playing a tape of a mother’s heartbeat to new-born babies that the babies felt dramatically more secure, and were much healthier and did much better. A child who has been trained to its father’s soothing voice in the womb, has been proven to remember it and hear it after birth and to respond to it in a positive way. In fact, the emotionally healthiest children have been found by researchers to have had their father's voice in their life prior to birth. Unborn children do not like to be poked at. In the eighth week of life, the unborn child is already using his physical abilities to show that he dislikes intensely to be poked. One of the early fetus traumas, that the Illuminati like to carry out is to poke the fetus with a sharp object to make it dissociative in the womb. By the fourth month, the unborn baby is making facial expressions. Four to eight weeks later they are sensitive to touch, and don't like to be tickled while in the womb. Sometimes children are tickled during medical exams. If cold water is injected into the mother's stomach, the baby intensely dislikes it. The child can be overwhelmed while in the womb with horrible sounds, bad tastes caused by what the mother eats, being touched in ways that it dislikes, etc. Rock music drives unborn children crazy. Programming drugs that cause particular thinking in the fetus can also be administered. Can one see that the traumatization to cause MPD can easily start in the womb? In fact, with many Illuminati babies, they do create womb splits, and have even started trying to teach Christ to the child while in the womb, to speed up the process of when they will purposefully make the child feel rejected by God and to experience the black communion with Satan. The foundation of trauma-based total mind-control is fear. A deep spirit of fear cripples a person spiritually & emotionally. The foundation of fear can begin to be layered in while the child is still unborn. The unborn child has near-sighted seeing. He can detect light shined on his mother's stomach. In fact, the fetus's eyes, which are living in a dark world, will hurt when light is shined onto the mom's stomach. A long-term unresolved personal stress on the mother will be one of the worst stresses her unborn child has to deal with. Short term stresses don't seem to have the long term side effects that long term stress has. Short term stresses are soon forgotten by the child. Somehow, the love that the mother has for the child is transmitted to the child, and forms a protective shield so to speak for the child to resist traumas and stresses. When the mother is ambivalent (even though outwardly happy) or cool in their emotions, the babies have been proven by researchers to consistently have more physical and emotional problems.

If the Illuminati want to create an effeminate gay man, they can administer progesterone and estrogen to the mother during her pregnancy, and this will influence the development of male children to be effeminate. Certain researchers have been warning about the hormones that are in our daily food because modern techniques of raising cattle and producing milk include giving hormones to the animals.

It is also known that the child's concept of "I" the self starts in the womb. Those children who have had a secure womb feeling have been shown to be more confident with their sexual lives later on in life. While those who were terrified in the womb had a tendency to have sexual problems. The traumas that are induced into some of the babies for programming purposes may have a destabilizing effect on the sexual stability later on in life, and it may be that the programmers take advantage of the unsure destabilized feelings that are a consequence of terror in the womb. Children born from induced labor have a statistically high relationship to sexual sadism, and males typically have masochistic personalities. (See pg. 19 of The Secret Life of the Unborn Child). Since certain Illuminati children have their birth's induced to match certain dates of the year, this is one contributing factor as to why Illuminati males, born into bloodlines that have for centuries considered certain birthdates important, have such a high incidence of sadistic tendencies. Verny believes that C-section babies, due to what happens to babies during the birthing process in contrast to a normal birth, have certain emotional needs that later as adults are expressed as promiscuous lives. Women due to their C-section birth, develop a deep seated desire to be held, and intercourse later becomes the price they have to pay to satisfy this deepseated need.

COMMON ILLUMINATI WORK WITH TWINS

The Illuminati mask the removal of babies from pregnant mothers with "alien abduction of fetus" cover stories. When twins are in the uterus, it is common for the Illuminati to skillfully take one of them. This is part of why the disappearance rate for a twin baby is 75%. It is so prevalent that it has been given the name "the Vanishing Twin Phenomenon". The Vanishing Twin Phenomenon is well established by statistics. Establishment doctors generally claim that one twin has absorbed the other twin. Some researchers claim that this can not be the real explanation for any part of the birthing process. Elizabeth Noble in her book Having Twins, (Houghton Mifflin, 1990) states, "With increasing use of ultrasound, it has been observed that more multiples are lost in the uterus than previously thought--some studies say as high as 80 percent of twin pregnancies. Considering that there are still 2 in 75 people born as twins, what a great number of twins would be born if the disappearance rate were not so high. There are many cases of two heartbeats being detected only hours before the delivery, and yet only one baby being born. Many mothers have been suspicious, but the doctors tell them that the second heartbeat "was only a mistake." The explanations that doctors give for disappearing babies who are never born often do not seem satisfactory. There are different kinds of twins:

a. There are dizygotic, also called fraternal twins. Two variations of this is when eggs from two consecutive ovarian cycles are separately fertilized, or a single egg divides and each of its halves gets fertilized.

b. There are monozygotic, which are identical, or clones so to speak of each other. Identical twins are always of the same sex. They share the same genes, the same fingerprints, dental characteristics, etc.

c. There are monozygotic mirror twins, which have identical characteristics on opposite sides of their body.

When one twin disappears, the surviving twin will often develop psychological problems around the disappearance, even if the child is never told that they had a twin disappear. The Illuminati believe that the soul of a dead twin goes into the live twin. They consider twins which have two souls very powerful individuals. One doctor, William Baldwin, has written in his book Spirit Releasement Therapy: A Technique Manual that he believes that the dead twin astrally attaches its soul to the surviving twin. Dr. Alice Rose believes that some eating disorders are the result of a twin dying in the womb due to competition for food.

To further complicate things, the Illuminati program their slaves to believe that they have a twin somewhere. Elvis Presley, a Monarch mind-controlled slave, believed he had a twin that communicated with him spiritually. In the Angel Times magazine, (Oct. issue), a childhood friend of Elvis states that Elvis communicated with beings as a child. These being had showed Elvis a vision of dancing, and of people "dressed in white with colors all around." While it is popular to dismiss the vanishing twin phenomena with superficial medical explanations, or with alien theories, at least of some of the phenomena is the result of the Illuminati’ s massive system of abuse, where they need babies for sacrifice, experiments and programming.

SELECTION OF ADULT CANDIDATES FOR MIND-CONTROL

There is an ongoing operation within the intelligence agencies to identify adults who would make good candidates for mind-control. For this reason, the CIA set up many years ago chains of weight-loss centers (as well as stop-smoking centers and stop-drinking centers) that help people with weight loss, & breaking drinking & smoking addictions. At these centers, people trained to identify clients with high levels of suggestibility have been identifying for the intelligence agencies, (esp. the CIA) potential mind-control victims. Intelligence assets are located around the country and even outside of the United States. The perpetrators try to look for individuals that come through immigration, who come into county clinics and hospitals, government hospitals, etc. who have the following initial attributes:

a. they are over 120 I.Q.

b. they are alone without a support team of family and friends

c. they do well on their first session where hypnosis is clandestinely perpetrated on the individual

d. they have other attributes that can be exploited to the advantage of the intelligence groups.

If a person is identified at a weight-reduction center (which is a CIA front) as having a weight problem that needs to receive hospital treatment AND they are also highly suggestible, they will be subjected to mind-control while hospitalized. According to one source, IF the individual, who has been a. spotted, b. singled out and c. placed under hypnosis without their consent, d. looks likes a useful candidate for mind-control to the psychologists and intelligence field officers, THEN a file will be started and they will be placed in a CALL FILE. The initial hypnotic session may be in a dirty doctor’s office, or in some cases in emergency rooms. Dirty doctors working in emergency room settings are careful to work undetected by clean hospital workers. The hypnotic suggestion is implanted that the victim return at a particular date to a location where more detailed work can be done.

U.S. GOVT. MIND-CONTROL LEVEL 1.

A proper candidate, that is one with an I.Q. above 120 and proper hypnotic abilities, will be given a code cue, that is an alpha-numeric code, or a number or a word code that identifies them. This is embedded hypnotically.

If the person has no relatives that are important, they will be instructed and secretly helped to move to a location chosen by the intelligence agencies. The programmers will cover their tracks so that what has happened at this level is deeply embedded in the subconscious mind & can't be retrieved.

U.S. GOVT. MIND-CONTROL LEVEL 2.

At this level the person is used operationally at very easy and unimportant tasks. He is also assigned someone. The hypnotist programmer is beginning to soften the victim up and make them more pliable to suggestions. If he successfully performs these small jobs that have been hypnotically written into the mind, then he will be given a RECALL SERVICE NOTICE by the person who is in contact with the victim. Now the person moves on to level 3, which is a fully operational level.

U.S. GOVT. MIND-CONTROL LEVEL 3.

When the victim is instructed to come in, they do not realize what is in store for them. Now their own personality will be re-written according to what script the programmers want it to have. The person will be set to carry out his instructions as needed. The slave will now be given specific trigger codes to carry out assignments. All field agents of the intelligence agencies get level 3 control.

GOVT. MIND-CONTROL LEVEL 4

This level is reserved for candidates who are very intelligent and very loyal to hypnotic commands. Victims of this level of mind-control will follow out any command they are given, whether it be suicidal or harmful. Because these victims of mind-control are now under total mind-control, just as many members of the Illuminati grow up under, the intelligence agencies want to protect their level 4 slaves. They will be given a new life along with a total new identity. All the credentials and paperwork that the new identity needs will be created. The slave has now received a totally new life, and whatever SCRIPT (agenda) the intelligence agencies want. The programming that was placed in up to level 3 is erased in a sense and an entire new life script is placed in. This is done with the use of drugs, deception, and other sophisticated mind-control techniques described in Vol. 2 and this book. Complete areas of memory are erased at this stage and then a new history is written into the pre-puberty area of memory. This takes some time, and is accomplished using a number of techniques our books have described. The old memory is erased and OVERWRIITEN with the new history and script. The brain assimilates this new knowledge as if it's always been there, because it feels comfortable putting something into a void spot. The programmers prefer to find a period in the original person's life when nothing happened. It is easy to erase a memory block when nothing significant is in original memory, i.e. it is basically blank anyway. As a sleeper the level 5 slave may marry and lead a relatively normal life. One clue that the person is going to be used on a mission is if he suddenly leaves his wife & goes somewhere. This may be a clue that the handlers are positioning the person for a mission. They may also have nullified the slave's external life, so there isn't the purpose of life to prevent a suicide mission.

U.S. GOVT. MIND-CONTROL LEVEL 5

This level is reserved for people with an I.Q. of at least 130. This level will require taking the slave to a special programming center, where they are taken down to the comatose level of subconscious awareness to place the programming in at the deepest levels of the mind. The victim may be comatose for days or months, and this requires a catheter in the neck, urinary and digestive tracts to keep the body properly functioning. Because the person will be hospitalized for quite a while, a popular cover story is that they had an automobile accident. Remember, in Vol. 2, it was discussed how Roseanne Barr (now an actress with MPD/DID) had as a teenager an "automobile accident" during which she received significant programming. Many of these level 5 slaves are placed as sleepers into organizations of all kinds, where they lead "normal lives." The level 5 triggers activate programs deeply embedded and NESTED into the memory of a person. A team of programmers work on level 5 slaves. They must make sure that the victim has a support system so that they do not self-destruct. They may have psychologists in normal life set up to serve as a support person for the slave. It was interesting to see that AFTER learning from people in the know about how memory is erased and a new identity given, that the show "No Where Man" portrayed this happening to a black man. Whoever wrote the scripts for No Where Man had an excellent understanding of what is going on in mind-control.

TESTING YOUNG CHILDREN TO PLAN THE PROGRAMMING.

In Vol. 2, chap.] it was explained how the programmers can test the preverbal child to determine & plan how they will program them. EEG's & Gittinger's Tests were discussed. Here is more information. Researchers have been able to study the personalities of unborn children and to watch how these personality traits stay with the children through their lives. In the Vol. 2 book it was explained how the Illuminati has used EEGs to determine the personalities of pre-verbal children so that they know what type of programming is best suited for that personality. Interestingly, on Mon., April 12, '96, 11 p.m. after the Vol. 2 book was out on the market, 20/20 did a show where they showed researchers using EEG electrodes to monitor childrens' brainwaves for their happiness potential. It is known that brain potentials associated with voluntary movements have been identified, thereby giving big brother the potential to predict when a person is going to make a particular movement. The brain is dynamically looking at patterns and continously generating hypnotheses about its environment which are then validated or invalidated by information picked up by the senses. The P300 wave (known as the P3 wave for short) allows neuroscientists to track decision making in a brain's cortex. The P300 wave shows when the mind's thought processes have been internally surprised. In this way, detection of the P300 gives a method of lie-detection superior to the polygraph. When surprised the brain creates P300 wave by internal brain functions--such as what chapt. 4 will call "cognitive demon processes". Initially, EEGs are taken of child victims, with an analysis of the different wave forms. Next, will come tests of VERs (visually evoked responses). This is valuable for instance, because bright children will show asymmetric (high amplitude) responses during VERs from the right hemisphere. Children with low I.Q. show the same evoked response from both hemispheres. This is just one window on the mind that the Illuminati programmers have of the preverbal children. There are other evoked-potential tests that are being used to determine personality traits too. Evoked-responses can also be used to show whether the person is conscious, or how deep they are in a coma. The early components of the evoked-response, which occur 10-20 milliseconds after a stimulus, are believed to come from the brain stem and can be used to determine a level of a coma. Evoked-responses are also used to determine particular learning disabilities within a child. Right-handed children will show even prior to birth, an anatomical specialization that favors language acquisition in the left hemisphere. So they can even determine what handed-ness the child has very early on.

Image2.gif

Baron Guy de Rothschild, of France, has been the leading light of his bloodline. The Baron is an Illuminati Kingpin and slave programmer. For those who have bought the cover story that the Catholic Church is not part of the Illuminati's NWO, I would point out that the Baron has worked with the Pope in programming slaves.

This photo was picked for the trauma chapter because the Baron has a droopy left eye. Many of the deeper Illuminati alters show droopy left eyes due to the trauma they have received. The authors are not aware of what the official explanation for his droopy left eye would be.

CHAPTER 2.

SCIENCE NO. 2--THE TRAUMATIZATION & TORTURE OF THE VICTIM

The basis for the success of the Monarch mind-control programming is that different personalities or personality parts called alters can be created who do not know each other, but who can take the body at different times. Let's review some important points that were mentioned in the Vol.2 book, 'The amnesia walls that are built by traumas, form a protective shield of secrecy that protects the abusers from being found out, and prevents the front personalities who hold the body much of the time to know how their System of alters is being used. The shield of secrecy allows cult members to live and work around other people and remain totally undetected. The front alters can be wonderful Christians, and the deeper alters can be the worst type of Satanic monster imaginable--a Dr. Jekyll/Mr. Hyde effect."

A great deal is at stake in maintaining the secrecy of the intelligence agency or the occult group which is controlling the slave. The success rate of this type of programming is high but when it fails, the failures are discarded through death." Each trauma and torture serves a purpose." To create alters (dissociative parts of the mind) the worse the trauma, the better the amnesia walls, so programmers have been spending years trying to outdo each other in creating the world's worst traumas that humans can survive, so they can program people. Readers may at first wonder why cover this gruesome part of the programming? There are a number of reasons. People who pretend to be helpful people--such as some ministers, and some professional therapists--are unwilling to look at the facts of what have been done to the victims they claim to want to help. How can the victim ever come out of denial and face the issues around their dissociation--IF the people helping them who didn't experience these traumas first hand can't even face the existence and nature of these traumas? Many therapists encourage the victim to maintain their amnesia walls, "let the past be the past". They say, "You can't change the past." No matter how appealing this advice sounds, this advice for victims of trauma-based mind-control this is defective, idiotic simple advice. This type of advice only continues the mind-control and the abuse of the victim. No wonder Christian ministers who are under their mind-control are used to spout off this type of defective advice. It is important to cover programming traumas because it validates the memories of recovering victims, and because there are standard types of trauma that are used for certain types of programming. For instance, traumas that desensitize a person to killing--i.e. traumas where the victim is forced to kill innocent people--are used to program assassination alters. The base of the programming is FEAR layered via trauma. Hopefully, the readers will be inspired and motivated like this author to try to stop this horrendous mind-control.

DAILY ABUSE WORKS BEST FOR PROGRAMMING

To insure that the programming and abuse stays hidden from even the slave, the slave is given daily traumas as a child to keep them dissociative. The Illuminati's programmers get the cooperation of a vast network of abusers who traumatize the children who are being programmed. One of the Illuminati's fronts is the Catholic church, which the Jesuits manage for the Illuminati. Under the cover of religious retreats and their religious image, many Catholic clergymen have been participants in the vast trauma network actively creating trauma-based mind controlled slaves. The problem in exposing this is that first the people who are being traumatized have trust in the clergymen who are doing the traumas. Second, if the victims or parents of the victims suspect anything, they usually go to church officials rather than the police in order to clear up the problem, yet protect the church. Additionally, in most cases both the corrupt religious system, working behind the corrupt police and judicial system manoeuver to protect the abuser and to further victimize the mind-control victim and anyone coming to the person's rescue. The following are but a few examples of a widespread network of secret abuse, that will not be uncovered because the system to catch abusers has long ago been corrupted and infiltrated and controlled by mind-controlled slaves, as well as by blackmailed or bribed dirty persons of authority.

Roger Trott, a Catholic Priest in Delmont, PA convicted of molesting 12 boys, got a suspended sentence by the judge. Can you believe such unbelievable leniency?

Father John Engbers (b. 1922, in Holland), catholic pastor at Leroy outside of Lafayette, LA. He baby-sat for a family, in which he sexually molested their children, their five daughters. He was treated as a member of this family and the mother, who was of Amer. Indian descent, was very close ("worshipped"-according to one daughter) to Father John. She spent long hours alone with him. He would tell his victims that they were his "puppet, like Pinocchio." He molested some of the girls almost every day, and had them under his control enough that they returned even when they were living at a distance from him. He had what appeared to be a hypnotic type spell over them. Father John Engbers molested many children during his years as a Louisiana priest, until he fled in 1985. He had lots of money to spend. The Catholic church had known he was molesting children clear back in 1952, when some parents complained. The Catholic hierarchy helped him escape back to Holland in mid-1985, when reports and law suits over how he sexually molested children came out. The case of Father John Engbers has all the earmarks of a participant in the daily Monarch mind-control abuse given to children.

Dennis Dellamalva, a Pennslyvannia Catholic Priest, who molested boys, and the judicial system protected him from prosecution. The judge, a catholic order the records of this paedophilia priest sealed, and the catholic church which knew of his deviant behavior continued to give him a position of authority.

Michael Peterson, a child molesting priest, who was a drug addict and a homosexual, was one of the catholic hierarchy's main men involved with investigations of pedophilia, who died of AIDS, and his rich sidekick Stephen B.C. Johnson II, who administered a catholic facility near Boston, Mass. Michael Peterson lived a rich lifestyle in Marsalin, and later Suitland, next to St. Luke and told people that he was not worried about anyone, because he had the goods on them to force them to comply. Michael Peterson's St. Lukes was used by the Catholic church to receive many priests that were caught doing paedophilia. In the first six years, St. Lukes claimed to have cured 55 child molesting priests.

Monsignor William A. Kraft, (b. Rochester, NY), Knight of the Holy Sepulcher, was pastor of St. Therese during the '60's, and by 1978 the rich pastor of St. Charles Borromeo, San Diego. His father was a chief executive with Eastman Kodak. Kraft's sexual molestations of children have all the earmarks of being a Monarch mind-control abuser. He was protected by the Catholic hierarchy and the system from prosecution for molestation of children. When children are being tortured and traumatized by persons who are respected in society, and when these children see the police and judges protect these people, do you see why this further traumatizes them, and convinces them that there is no hope? Once they lose hope of outside help, their minds are further propelled to obey the commands of (continue with the picture below. The text continues under the girl in the left upper corner. Editor's note)

p_little_girl2

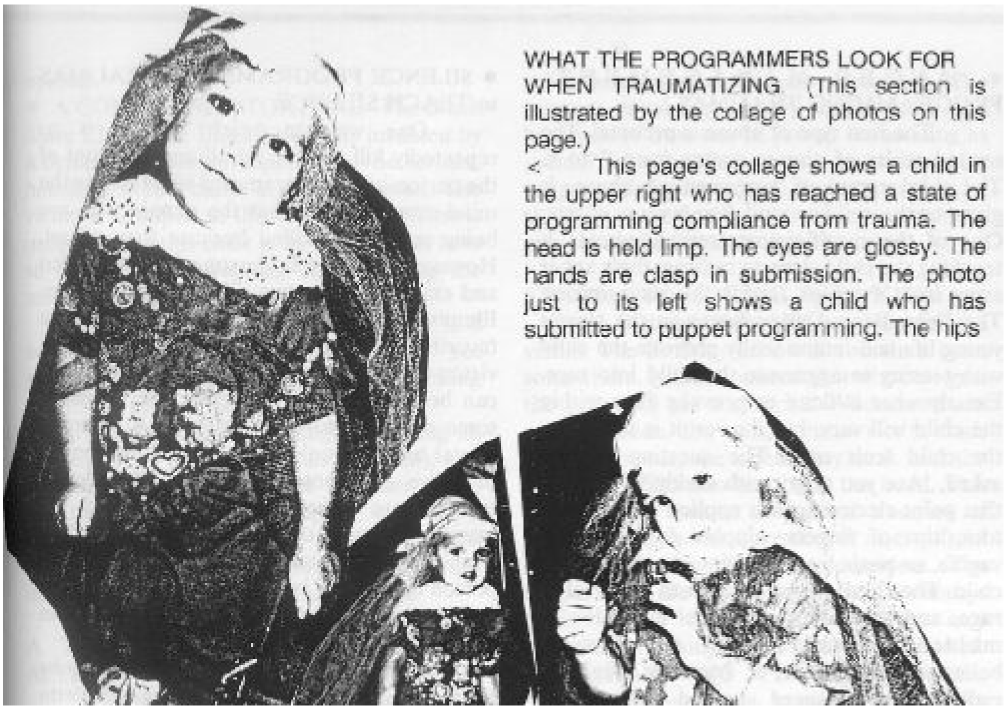

WHAT THE PROGRAMMERS LOOK FOR WHEN TRAUMATIZING. (This section is illustrated by the collage of photos on this page.)

< This page's collage shows a child in the upper right who has reached a state of programming compliance from trauma. The head is held limp. The eyes are glossy. The hands are clasp in submission. The photo just to its left shows a child who has submitted to puppet programming. The hips

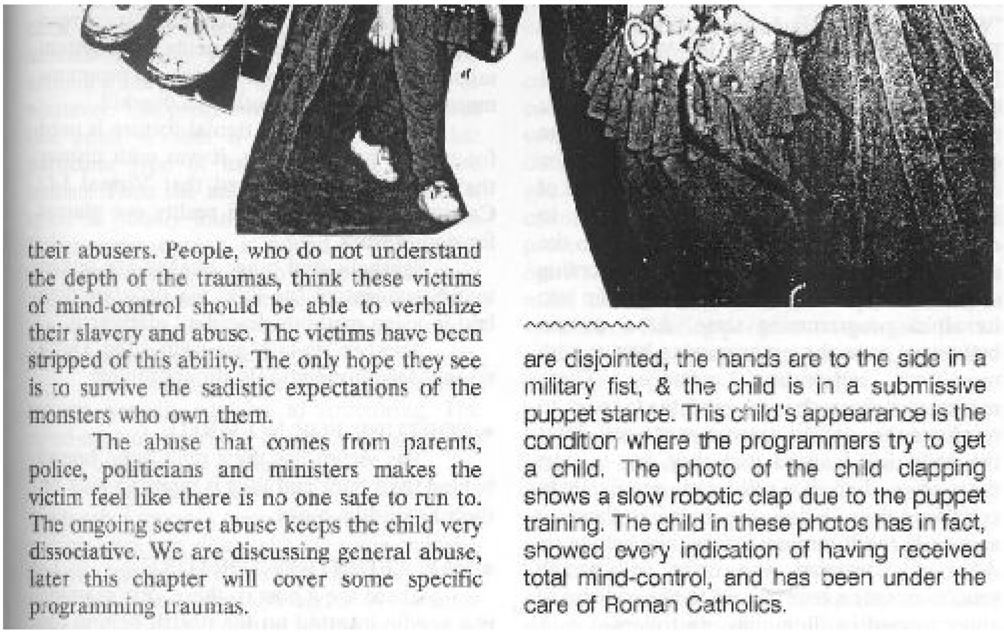

their abusers. People, who do not understand the depth of the traumas, think these victims of mind-control should be able to verbalize their slavery and abuse. The victims have been stripped of this ability. The only hope they see is to survive the sadistic expectations of the monsters who own them.

The abuse that comes from parents, police, politicians and ministers makes the victim feel like there is no one safe to run to. The ongoing secret abuse keeps the child very dissociative. We are discussing general abuse, later this chapter will cover some specific programming traumas.

^^^^^^^^^^

are disjointed, the hands are to the side in a military fist, & the child is in a submissive puppet stance. This child's appearance is the condition where the programmers try to get a child. The photo of the child clapping shows a slow robotic clap due to the puppet training. The child in these photos has in fact, showed every indication of having received total mind-control, and has been under the care of Roman Catholics.

ANGER-MANAGEMENT-PROGRAMMING TRAUMAS

The first type of abuse is prenatal. The second series of abuses occurs from 2 to 4. The third round of programming abuse, is given to the child around 5 to 6 years of age. One of the specific programming abuses is teaching the child slave to redirect their anger away from Papa or Daddy the slave owner. The Papa Bear, Daddy figure in the slave's young life will intentionally provoke the child with teasing to aggravate the child into rage. Exactly what is done to provoke rage within the child will vary, but the result is the same, the child feels rage. The question is then asked, "Are you angry with daddy?" "Yes!" at that point electroshock is applied to the head, toes, tips of fingers, nipples & inside the vagina, or penis by electrodes attached to the child. The child will be brought to the level of rage, and then allowed to cool down for 30 minutes. The child's alters are then via behavior modification & hypnosis taught to redirect their anger toward themselves. "WHEN YOU ARE ANGRY WITH YOUR FATHER, YOU WILL HURT YOURSELF. DO YOU UNDERSTAND? The message will be played over & over & the question "Do you understand?" will be played over & over. The child is shocked until they are compliant. The suicide programming will be layered in. Part of layering in the suicide programming, is to create pain in the right ear via a needle to the ear, with the creation of horrible disorienting sounds, while pulsing lights drive the brain into its alpha programming state. At a certain brainwave state the programming begins with repetitious self-destruct messages. These messages debase the value of the person to reinforce the suicidal destruct messages. After the child has learned that they are to hurt themselves, then they will learn specifically to cut themselves if they get angry at Papa or anyone in the Illuminati family they belong to. After this training, the child will attach subconsciously a fear of pain to the concept of anger toward its Illuminati controllers.

SILENCE PROGRAMMING TRAUMAS to TEACH SILENCE

One way to teach silence is to repeatedly kill persons of all ages in front of the person being programmed while telling the mind-control victim that the people who are being sadistically killed because they talked. However, the "no-talk" lesson will be repeated and embedded in many different fashions for Illuminati mind-controlled slaves. Perhaps a favorite Illuminati method is to expose the victim to watching dental tortures. The viewing can be reinforced by subjecting the victim to some dental tortures themselves. A common dental torture would be to extract the tongue of a live and conscious victim. Then dental tortures are done to the victim, and the intense jaw pain of the torture is linked to tripping the no-talk programming. If the person talks--their jaw hurts and they may pull up the dissociated feelings of seeing a person lose their tongue. This then will be further backed up by training an alter to carry out Russian Roulette if the system talks, and training numerous other alters other types of suicide if the system talks. In other words many back up programs mutually support each other in overkill. Considering that dental torture is used for no-talk programming, it was with dismay that this author discovered that Virtual I-O Co. is now making virtual reality eye glasses for dental work. Seashells and other images are linked to the concept of "no-talk" via programming laid in using methods described elsewhere.

Another "no-talk" program is the "Don’t tel me" telephone no talk programming.

TORTURE FOR NO-WRITE

The victim has their right hand bound behind their back and then is made to walk on their knees like a dog.

PAY ATTENTION TORTURE

There are a host of these, one example is a needle inserted up the nostril behind the eyeball.

A COMPLIANCE TORTURE -- The Black Slave Chair.

The Black Slave was invented by a Syrian doctor who helped supervise torture, hence its arabic name al-Abd as-Aswad. The victim is strapped to this metal chair. What is unique about this chair is its design & its hole so that a hot skewer can be shoved up the anus. Another device for programming is a harness used as a suspension device. Yet another is an electrofied water bed for turning one in an electric eel." Compliance is also taught by taking an eyeball out of the victim (later replaced), and by dislocating an arm at the shoulder. After this the victim can be wrapped as if in a cacoon within bandages. The supposed treatment for the dislocation, places the victim in sensory deprivation, another trauma.

A TRAUMA TO DEVELOP ANIMAL ALTERS

Helpless humans will be displayed to child victim of mind-control. These helpless humans will be visciously killed by some animal, a lion, a tiger, a snake, a wild dog or whatever. The programming lie emphasized at this point is that it is better to be that particular type of animal than it is to be human. Then the animal is sacrificed and its spirit is ritually joined to the child’s alters. Other programming is added to insure the dehuminization process to make certain child alters into particular animals. When finished, the child will contain viscious protector animal alters within their system. The prior example of a programming trauma actually pertains to structuring. The mind-control science of structuring MPD (DID) is discussed in chapter 7. It may be of significance to stress to the reader that traumas come in many shapes. The traumas are not done without some thought. Specific traumas are given for specific desired outcomes. The power and horror of a trauma is hard to gauage. It often results in a type of subconscious adrenlin-rush addiction. The traumas involving sensory deprivation and betrayals of trust can be just as devastating as painful tortures. Sad to say, sometimes for programming purposes all three types may be skillfully combined into one horrendous experience that overwhelms the mind.

TRAUMA TO ISOLATE THE VICTIM

A birthday party will be given for the victim. The birthday cake will contain a bean somewhere. It is announced that whoever gets the bean will get a surprise. When someone gets the bean, the mind-control victim finds out that the surprise is that they must take the life of the child who has found the bean. This programming trauma is part of a series of traumas designed to make deeper alters afraid of accepting any gifts from outsiders. The deeper alters are programmed that gifts always come with a sacrifice. Gifts always cost something. Nothing comes free. "SEVER ALL TIES, HAVE NO FRIENDS" are the programming messages. In reality, what Satan is doing with this trauma on a spiritual level is what the British Empire did with small countries. The British would warn small countries, "you are in danger, we will protect you. (The Spirit of Fear says, gifts are dangerous, let me the Spirit of Fear protect you.) When the British moved into small countries like this, they called them protectorates, & then they took over. (The Spirit of Fear, pretending to protect the victim, takes over and the victim develops a deep-seated free-floating phobias towards gifts from anyone. What pretends to protect, actually ends up controlling & enslaving.) As the reader treks through this book, he or she will encounter places where other traumas are discussed, such as tortures via implants, & traumas via rides in amusement parks, & spinning traumas during the structuring for creating alter families from an alter. Finally, the waves of fear created by repeated traumas layer in Spirits of Fear, which form a dark spiritual foundation.

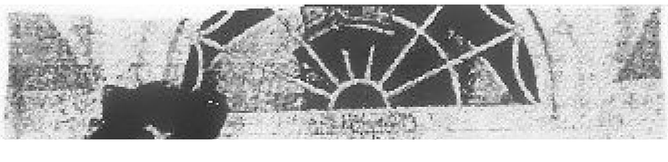

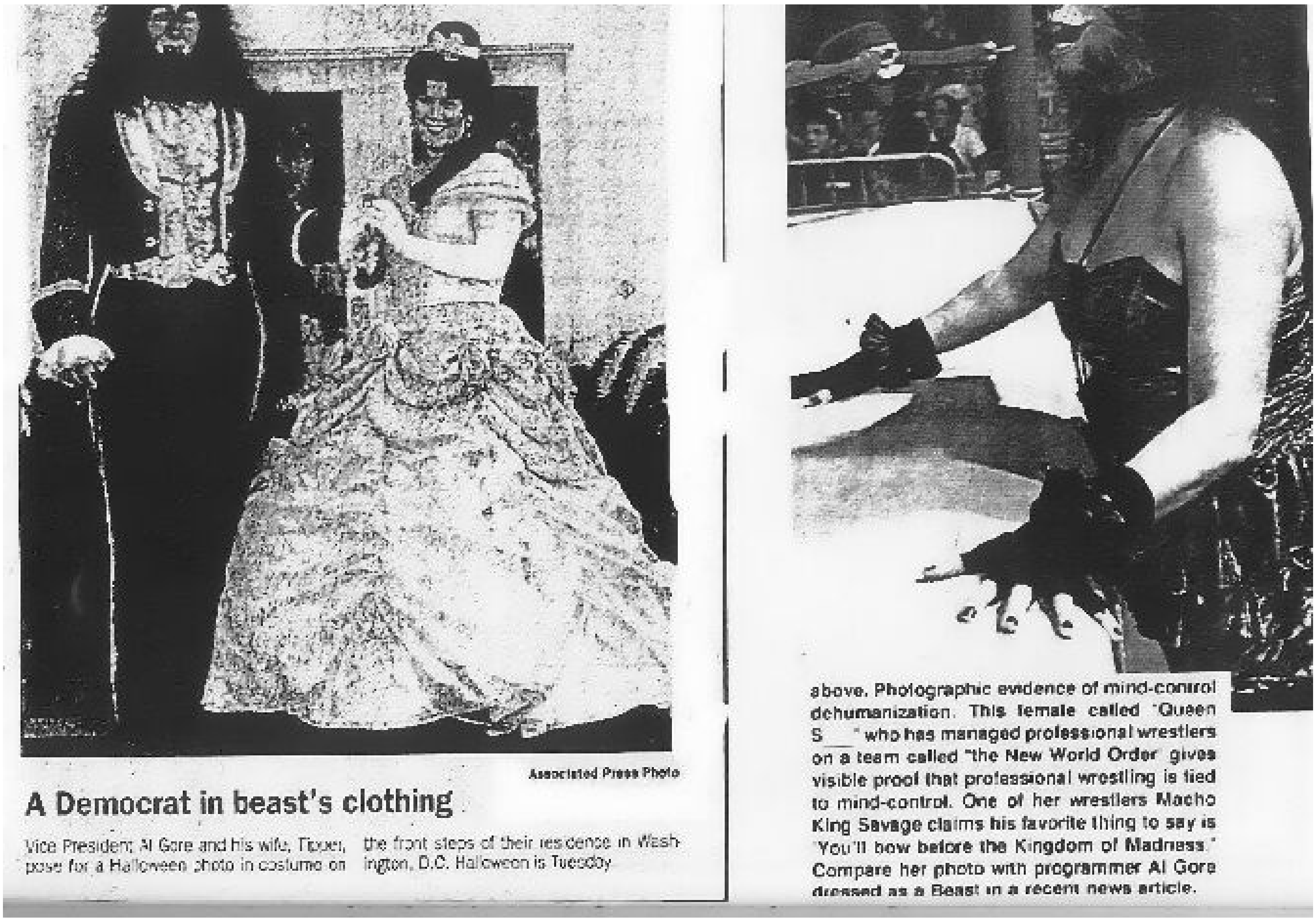

Associated Press Photo

A Democrat in beast's clothing

Vice President Al Gore and his wife, Tipper, pose for a Halloween photo in costume on the front steps of their residence in Washington, D.C. Halloween is Tuesday

above. Photographic evidence of mind-control dehumanization. This female called "Queen S___" who has managed professional wrestlers on a team called "the New World Order" gives visible proof that professional wrestling is tied to mind-control. One of her wrestlers Macho King Savage claims his favorite thing to say is "You'll bow before the Kingdom of Madness." Compare her photo with programmer Al Gore dressed as a Beast in a recent news article.

p_clothing2.jpg

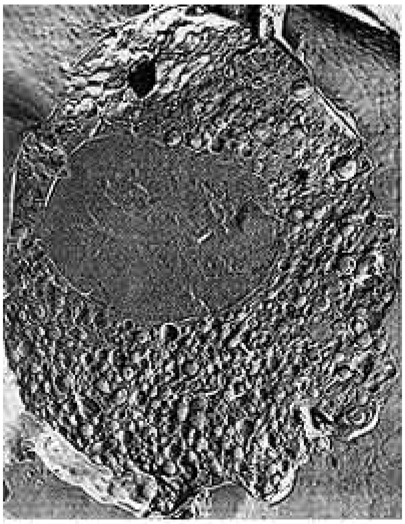

Adrenalchrome, a secret black market drug, is harvested from victims of human sacrifices. In other words, there is big money in human sacrifices. That mainstream law enforcement agencies have kept Adrenalchrome's existence a secret for so many years shows the power that the Illuminati-Masonic network has had over law enforcement in this country from law enforcement's inception. This is a micrograph taken of an adrenalchrome cell (called a chromaffin cell). The cell has been enlarged 15,300 times.

p_adrenalchrome2

CHAPTER 3.

http://whale.to/b/sp/springmeier.html

SCIENCE NO. 3 The USE OF DRUGS

IN REVIEW

The science of Pharmacology (drugs) has given the Programmers a vast array of mind-altering and body-altering drugs. Some of the drugs are not used to directly alter the mind, but to change the body (make the skin burn), or make the person vomit, or some other reaction that can be harnessed to further their nefarious programming goals.

DRUG RESEARCH

One of the sites which has done research/programming into MPD and drug action on the brain has been Bethesda, MD where Dr. Irwin J. Kopin was Chief of the Laboratory of Clinical Science, at the National Institute of Mental Health. He was active in research into how drugs can affect the mind.

CLASSIFYING MIND-DRUGS

When this author studied differential equations, and higher mathematical it became clear that everything can be reduced to a mathematical explanation. Sometimes a mathematical notation is easier and clearer, than other explanations. This author suggests that drugs that affect the mind could be classified on three scales:

Scale X: the wakefulness or arousal scale, which runs from a coma, to asleep, to alert, to hyperalert

Scale Y: the attitude, or affect scale, that is one's manner of feelings, responses etc., running on a scale from suicidal and depressed to euphoric, blissful and elated.

Scale Z: the integration of reality scale, which runs from confusion, delusions, and psychotic thoughts to integrated, clear, lucid thinking.

Many (if not all) of the drugs that were listed in Vol. 2 and this chapter can be plotted along one of these scales, and sometimes 2 or 3 of these scales, which means an x,y, z axis configuration can be used to compare such drugs. In terms of naturally occurring brain substances which are manufactured synthetically and injected according to the programmers' needs, it could be stated that the original purpose of the substance can be malevolently tampered with.

p_mind-drugs.jpg

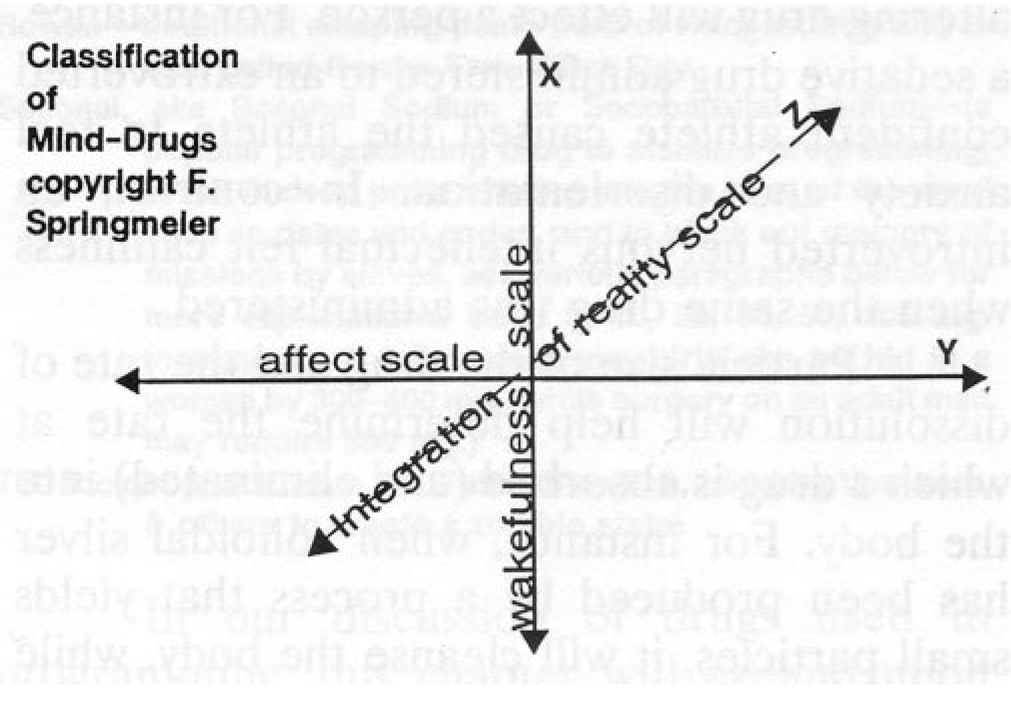

ADMINISTRATION OF DRUGS FOR PROGRAMMING

The distribution into the brain of a drug is dependent upon many factors. Under microscopic-level inspection, one discovers a person's brain is physically constructed to allow certain molecules to enter into the brain in certain complex ways. Just because a substance is put into the blood doesn't mean it gets into brain tissue. Researchers have discovered such drug properties such as lipid solubility, the ionization, its tissue-protein bonding abilities, and its molecular size all play a role in how well drugs get into the brain. Further, the Cerebrospinal Fluid (CSF) which will be discussed indepth in Chapter 8 can play a role in drug absorption. Several studies during the 1960's showed that the removal of drugs or substances from the CSF, can reduce the effective concentration of a drug in the extracellular spaces which make up perhaps 12% of the brain's volume. These physical factors are not the only factors involved.

Researchers have repeatedly discovered that different people respond to mind-changing drugs in many different ways--including two different people having opposite responses to the same drug. There have been a number of studies about this phenomena, including: (SarwerFoner, 1957), (Henninger, et. al., 1965), (Rickels & Downing, 1966), (McNair et al., 1966). Over the years, it has been discovered that a person's mental abilities, expectations, prior drug experience, age, sex, race, personality traits, and personality types can all potentially influence how a mind-altering drug will effect a person. For instance, a sedative drug administered to an extroverted confident athlete caused the athlete to feel anxiety and disorientation. In contrast, an introverted nervous intellectual felt calmness when the same drug was administered. Particle size of the drug and the rate of dissolution will help determine the rate at which a drug is absorbed (and eliminated) into the body. For instance, when colloidal silver has been produced by a process that yields small particles, it will cleanse the body, while larger particles of colloidal silver will kill a person. Different companies and different preparations of the same drug may have different outcomes upon the body. The persistence of a drug in the body is calculated by programmers using half-lives of a drug. This means that at one half-life, one half of a drug is left in the body. At two half lives, one-half of one-half is left or (1/4). At three half-lives there will be 1/8 left of original drug. In other words, the rate of elimination decreases with time. When heroin is processed into morphine, its characteristics change. The heroin takes affect quicker, but doesn't last as long as morphine. This is because of enzyme mechanisms in the liver and how they react to the morphine in contrast to the heroin. Different drugs react differently with the complex enzyme mechanisms of the liver. Phenobarbital amazingly increases the enzyme content of the endoplasmic reticulum with habitual use of the drug. Phenobarbital will then enhance a particular type of toxicity. Low doses do not hurt the body, but there is a threshold where damage from phenobarbital will begin occurring to the liver and kidneys. This is a sampling of why it is important that the Illuminati use extremely skilled medical personnel in the application of programming drugs. The programmers are far more skilled than most legitimate therapists in understanding how much of what drug to give to which alter personality. The mental makeup of an alter will influence how that alter will respond to drugs. Some deeper alters can resist drug influence due to training. Some deeper alters are so fine-tuned that they only need small doses. With their superior knowledge of how a System of Multiple Personalities has been created within a victim's mind, the programmers have a distinct edge over deprogrammers in how to administer drugs. On top of that the programmers, place in all types of programming to prevent anyone but the programmers (or approved people) from administering drugs. An example of how strong the mind can be over drugs--is when the programmers "SET THE STAGE", "PRESENT THE SCRIPT' and then use Seconal to obtain deeply embedded programming commands. Setting the stage is a programming term for talking to the victim in such a way that the mind is receptive for what the programmer wants the victim's mind to do. Presenting the script is the actual set of commands that the programmer gives to the victim. For instance, the programmer functioning as a hypnotist tells the victim that a powerful sedative will be given but that part of the mind will be strong enough to overcome the sedative effect of seconal. The victim is instructed "WHEN YOU HEAR THE WORD [trigger power code word, for instance: ZEBRA COME FORTH]...YOU WILL RESPOND TO WHAT I AM SAYING." The seconal is given and the person is placed in an isolation chamber. A good programmer skilled in hypnotism can actually get a victim's mind to respond under the influence of seconal in an isolation chamber. Then the programmer will lay in deeply embedded commands while the person is in a sleep deeper than a twilight sleep. When the human body receives several different kinds of drugs, sometimes drugs compete with each other during the excretion/elimination phase. This may create a buildup or a retention of one of the drugs. As discussed in Vol. 2, the programmers don't like to use combinations of several drugs because it complicates things. There is still a great deal of unknowns concerning adverse drug reactions. Some people do not show an allergic response to a drug until it is administered several times. Because of the potential for allergic reactions or side effects, the Programmers are helped because the programming centers, according to ex-programmers are extremely well stocked with different drugs, & the Programmer can if need be shift to an alternative programming drug. Most slaves are programmed to stay away from the use of drugs, except those drugs that the programmer/handler approves. By reducing the use of drugs of all kinds, the problem of adverse drug reactions, and other complications is reduced for the programmers. Some people who are health freaks who stay away from drugs are actually carrying out a front program for their programmers.

MORE PROGRAMMING DRUGS (these were not listed in the Vol.2 Formula book)

Acetophenzine aka Tindal--(this anti-psychotic has been used on multiples, it mutes anxiety, suspiciousness and delusions. it would fall more into the control category of uses rather than for actual programming.)

Amines--(this is a general term for many types of the brain's own chemicals used to produce moods, and feelings)

Damiana--(aka Mex. Witching Herb, the extract is used w/ other herbs during progamming for a relaxed pleasure state.) »An example is Damiana-Biack Kava Kava-Valerian-Skullcap-Wild Lettuce Opium, which makes a "it's-nothing-but-a-dream" state.

Chloral hydrate--(which is a hypnotic put in pill form such as chioral betaine, Beta-Chlor, and given with something like a glass of milk. About 500 mg. of Chloral hydrate are given for a hypnotic for an adult.)

Cyciohexamide--(produces retroactive amnesia)

Cylert--a type of speed

Datura aka Jimsonweed, or thorn apple--(sometimes used to help a child conjure up their personal spirit.)

Iminodibenzyis-- (used for sedation)

Lettuce Opium--(tradition Hopi shaman trance drug)

Mandrake--(from the Mandragora plant, an ancient occult drug, a traditionai witchcraft drug for causing people to sleep)

Methaqualone--(a rapid hypnotic drug that produces a dissociative high, it can be used to put someone into a coma)

Pemoline-magnesium hydroxide (aka PMH, helps enhance conditioned avoidance training by acting as a stimulant, is helpful for repetitive learning situations by a general alerting effect on the mind)

Phenothiazines--(used to raise the threshold of electrical stimulation tolerance, to tranquilize or induce sleep)

Rowan--traditional sleeping/death herb of witches; May Day is also called Rowan Tree Witch Day.

Seconal, aka Seconal Sodium or Secobarbital Sodium--(a popular programming drug to stabilize programming, to set in deep programming into the base of the mind such as dates and codes, and to block out memory of missions by slaves, see various paragraphs below for more explanations. Used in 10, 20, 30, 50, 100 mg. increments. A tubal pregnancy/birth can be hid in a woman by 300-400 mg., while surgery on an adult man may require 500 mg.)

Tetradoxyn (made from the Puffer Blowfish, used by Voudoun, & others to create a zombie state)

In our discussion of drugs used in programming, this chapter will expand upon the previous book by discussing the application of drugs to:

a. to stabilize the programming after torture b. hiding the codes

c. building in deeply embedded structures and beliefs, and the creation of false identities

b. to influence the memory by drugs c. to stimulate instinctual behaviors

d. to create moods and attitudes by synthetically manufacturing and injecting the brain's own natural amines.

STABILIZING THE PROGRAMMING

The total mind-control of the Illuminati is called "trauma-based mind-control" because repeated traumas are inflicted upon the victim is a very systematic calculated inhumane way. The tortures and stress are all parts of a programming package. After a particular harsh session of programming the victim's mind will be in a high state of terror, shock, dissociativeness and splintering. The victim's mind can't take much more, and the potential of having uncontrolled splintering of the victim's mind and thereby having the destruction of the mind and programming threatens the programmers' control. The programmer wants the mind and body to rest so that the programming can set in, without destabilizing events occurring. For instance, after severe water torture (drowning) the programmer will want the programming (hypnotic script) to set in, and he will give seconal (aka seconal sodium or secobarbital sodium) to induce a deep sleep. Sleep occurs within 10 to 15 minutes. Sometimes a victim's heart has been pushed to its limits during a trauma and they must shut the body down to let the victim rest. Seconal is a drug of choice for this. Seconal is administered in hospitals or programming sites where trained personnel know how to give the drug. Dirty psychiatrists, who understand the relationship between drugs and human behavior and who are either programmers themselves or assistants to programmers often are the ones who give the victims drugs like seconal.

EXTENSIVE RESEARCH DONE TO INFLUENCE HUMAN MEMORY BY DRUGS

The complete list of researchers who have studied the effect drugs have on memory would require a massive book. However, we will just mention a few that pertain to this book briefly. One of the places the effect of drugs on memory was researched was at the Univ. of California at Irvine, CA. Another was at institutions in the Boston, Mass. area such as the Massachusetts General Hosp., in Boston. Dr. Talland in Boston tested the effects of PMH on human memory. He discovered PMH could help people relearn material that had been partially forgotten. The Illuminati programmer Cameron (aka Dr. White) also tried out various approaches including the administration of RNA and RNA- synthesis stimulants. John C. Lilly, who admits being a member of an Esoteric Mystery School, was a government researcher on the use of LSD to program people. He did part of his work on LSD programming at the Maryland Psychiatric Research Center under admitted government financing. His book Programming and Metaprogramming in the Human Biocomputer (NY: Julian Press, 1967, & revised format 1972) is an excellent paper trail of how the Illuminati has used LSD to program total mind-controlled slaves. Originally, the book was given out only to a few select people. The book attempts to hide what it talks about behind a long intro, long sentences, big words and arcane psychological terms, but it does spell out how they do the mind-control programming with LSD. A section later in this chapter will lay out for the reader how they do this.

ONE TYPE OF EXPERIENCE OF VICTIM HYPNOTIC DRUG A MIND-CONTROL

The drugged victim feels like he is looking through a keyhole and the hypnotic voice of the programmer is the key hole. The world may be very shadowy and drawn in on itself. The mind has its attention on the hypnotist/programmer.

The BASIC PHASES of MEMORY

The human memory process can be basically broken down into 3 phases, the registration phase, the retention phase and the retrieval phase. Great amount of research has gone into how to use drugs to manipulate each of those phases. Great amount of research also went into how to measure people's abilities to a. learn, b. remember, c. and to do non-learned behavior such as arm-hand steadiness and visual time reaction.

WHAT the MIND-CONTROL PROGRAMMERS USE to MANIPULATE memory.

Scopolamine was found to impair short-term memory. It was discovered that retrograde amnesia could be created by electroshock several hours after the brain had learned something. This lesson caused the Illuminati and those working in mind control with them to use cattle prods and stun guns.

If a person performed something they were to forget they can be stunned or given scopolamine to deaden their memory. A quick anesthetic applied immediately after something has been done might also impair the retention of what had happened. Yet another way is seconal, which will be discussed soon. Low doses of analeptic drugs given about 10 to 20 min. before training were found to help learning. Analeptic drugs include bemegride, diazadamantanol, pentylenete-trazol, picotoxin, and strychnine. It was discovered that strychnine helps enhance classical conditioning. It can be administered either before or after the learning has taken place. It is believed that memory storage is enhanced by strychnine and strychnine sulfate. Strychnine was also found to help protect the mind's memory against the effect of electroshock. Abusers out on the street have been turning to GHB and Rohypnol to decrease inhibitions and to cause memory loss in their victims. Rohypnol (which sells for up to $10 a tablet) is dependable but more expensive than the GHB. A number of women who have been raped by adding these drugs to their alcoholic drinks at the Club Boca, Palm Beach, FL made the paper after they were drugged and raped after partying at the club. (The Palm Beach Post, Mar., 1996 pp. 1B, 10B.) GHB (Gamma Hydroxy Butyrate) is a compound essential to the body. It acts similar to a neurotransmitter. It helps release the Human Growth Hormone and removes inhibitions around intimacy, as well as some other beneficial effects. GHB crosses the blood-brain barrier and metabolizes into GABA. GHB's high degree of safety was proved over 25 years of research, and was basically an established fact before the FDA and the media demonized GHB. Several sources seem to indicate that the FDA banned GHB --not because it has dangerous side effects, which it doesn't have inspite of the established media's disinformation campaign with half truths--but because it is not patented by the drug companies and would cut into their profits.

GHB also has a great aphrodisia effect. It reduces inhibitions to have sex, but because the woman clitoris is more sensitive it interferes with female orgasms. However, when the women do achieve it, it is longer and more intense, according to GHB researchers. (This author got much information on GHB from the Centurion Aging Research Lab.) GHB is described here because it is a drug that is known by the type of people who use sexual slaves and other people, and its use and misuse pertain to mind control. Like so many things involved with mind-control, GHB and many other items could be put to positive uses if used in the proper way. Sometimes the programmers use drugs rather than ECS (Electroconvulsive shock) to destroy the memory in slaves after they have done some mission for the Illuminati, the Syndicates, or Cult they belong to. The decision to use drugs rather than ECS is largely personal tastes. The very sadistic programmers enjoy using ECS, while the less sadistic ones often use the drugs, which in some instances actually perform better, but are not as violent to the victim of mind control. Retroactive amnesia can be caused by an intracerebral or a subcutaneous (under the skin) shot of Acetoxycycloheximide, cyclohexamide, or puromyxcin. A more sophisticated technique incorporates the drug seconal (aka Seconal sodium), the victim's dissociativeness (the MPD), and hypnosis. Seconal is a strong sedative that puts people into sleep. The programmers have considered it "wonderful". The victim's mind is conditioned hypnotically to be able to remember the drugged-seconal state. Then the hypnotic command is given that if anything about a particular mission is remembered, the person will immediately trigger (pull-up to the front of the mind) the seconal memory. This is why many therapists discover their clients getting sleepy when they get close to certain thoughts, or when they try to do therapeutic work.

HIDING THE CODES

Chapter 4 provides some of the programming codes, some of which are standard and some of which are unique to a particular slave. Seconal was the standard drug used during the 1950's and 1960's to hide the programming codes in the mind's memory. The procedure is to give a small child under 50 lbs. perhaps 10 mg. of seconal. The programmer has already "SET THE STAGE" and presented the script. After the child goes into its deep sleep, the programmer pulls the child's mind awake hypnotically (actually to be technically correct, the programmer pulls up those alters/parts of the mind that the programmer wants to work with). The child may awake on an satanic altar or other programming setting. The child is then programmed. After the programming, which may include satanic rituals, the child slave is given 20 mg. more of seconal and allowed to go into a sleep again. A cover program (a cover story--that is a false code will be planted hypnotically in front of the real code. "IF YOU SHOULD REMEMBER THIS..." If a slave starts to remember any code, in spite of the hypnotic commands not to, and all the threats and alters trained to protect the codes, etc. then the programming to sleep kicks in. Also remember that the codes are placed in when the victim is groggy, so to pull up the memory will cause the slave to abreact the drugged-state. Not all the alters are drugged. In setting the stage, the programmer orders some alters to back off from feeling or associating the experience. They are hypnotically commanded not to experience the drug's effects, or to only experience it in a partial manner. This can be done with small amounts of seconal. Larger amounts of seconal will override the mind's ability to block the drug's effects. The programming experience where the codes are put in, will likely be remembered by the slave as something similar to the following, a sleepy blurry picture of a nurse, then a doctor and a table, and then an IV, then the memory fades, and the slave gets sleepy thinking about it.

It should be pointed out that the mind has strong natural abilities to dissociate painful memories. Not only must the victim try to retrieve memories by fighting the mind's natural dissociative abilities, the victim must fight the hypnotic suggestions, the irrationality of conflicting ideas due to the false cover memories laid in, the DRUG memories attached to induce sleep if the victim remembers, the memory shattering from the shock of the stun guns, and the fear of countless other threats internal and external if the memory is recovered. It is no surprise that most victims of this horrendously abusive mind-control have front alters who are totally unaware of the mind-control and abuse.

PROGRAMMING WITH LSD-25 (Lysergic Acid Diethylamide)

The Programmers use controlled and manipulated LSD trips for mind-control purposes when layering in the programming for the Illuminati slaves. The victim's mind is trained and mentally prepared before actually being subjected to the drug. The programmers understand how the mind unleashes its fears, including its fear of LSD itself, while under the drug, so that small doses are given at first and then increased. This is so the victim of mind-control can learn to face and manage the effects of the drug.

When the Illuminati want to set the foundations for a system, they will use LSD in a sensory deprivation tank on a child to program in such things as: the hell-pit (a dungeon in a castle), the images of evil guardians, worlds & stars & galaxies which contain alters, the outer space in a system, and the protective program where the mind spreads out like molecules and loses the ability to think. The sensory deprivation tank will be set at 92.0 to 95.0 F. isothermal skin, saltwater suspension, zero light, near zero-sound levels. The victim will be naked without contact with the side of the tank and in remote isolation for several hours. Electrodes can be hooked up to shock the victim if they move to prevent the victim from wanting to move. Victims usually are conditioned to like the sensory deprivation tank before they are programmed inside it with LSD. After having listened to two ex-programmers describe LSD sensory deprivation programming, this author was amazed to discover that the LSD programmer John Lilly had actually written a book about how to do the programming! (John Lilly was also into witchcraft & aliens.) The government wasn't quite as thrilled with his book as I was, they withdrew research funds from him in 1968 when only a few copies of his book came out. And now finally almost twenty years later, the human LSD programming that John Lilly described is finally being put into its larger context--that of trauma-based total mind-control. On page 126-127, Lilly explains that implanted programs in the child can be placed in below the level of the mind's awareness, but which will affect their entire outlook on life, and which will control their thinking and behavior far into adulthood. The programs can even be done to control the most basic functions of life. Lilly says that the programming possible with the use of LSD is "...not achievable outside the use of LSD-25. This amount of control can be said to resemble other ways of achieving control and visual projection but in actual intensity I know of no other way to achieve it. Hypnosis is a possible exception." (Programming and Metaprogramming in the Human Biocomputer, p. 20) On page 19, Lilly states that LSD can be used to change an experience to have a negative or a positive charge on it. Sometimes people who work with the mind refer to negative experiences as "negative charges on an experience", and good experiences as "experiences with a positive charge". Apparently, according to Lilly, the brain can switch chemical charges on an experience and shift its attitude from viewing as either positive or negative. In fact, this very thing is done during Illuminati programming. For instance, it may be done if a memory surfaces that the programmer doesn't want the alter being programmed to understand. This last paragraph is interesting when one realizes that under LSD the subconscious mind is allowed to release its thinking into the conscious. If a person has been traumatized, the subconscious mind under LSD will release the trauma memories and flood the person with horrible thoughts. So before one can get to the transcendental wonderful creative thoughts, a person has to deal with this garbage. The sub-conscious erupts like molten magma. Before the child is given the LSD, the child is going to have to be mentally prepped. Just as Seconal could only be used after the hypnotist programmer had SET THE STAGE, so also with the LSD. The LSD programmer if he is experienced will have an idea how the victim will react to the drug. Each person reacts in his or her own way, but there are patterns of reaction. The programmer will hypnotically warn the victim, YOU'RE NOT TO FEAR such and such thought. They may tell the victim that it is just their imagination, when it is repressed memories of trauma surfacing. The programmer will let one alter carry the true feelings (such as fear) of the surfacing traumas, and another to carry the story line being programmed in with LSD. The programmer may have to calm the victim down while they are in the tank. The Illuminati use hypnosis in conjunction with the LSD programming trips. They also use some other mind-control items too. Further, LSD is not the only programming hallucinogenic that they have used for some of this type of programming, they have tried Peyote, but LSD seems to be the drug of choice. On page 20, Lilly describes the use of mirrors along with LSD to create visually projected images. The Illuminati programmer will play a movie, a script over and over so that it is constantly in the forefront of the victim's mind. Then the stage is set and the script (such as TAKE WHAT YOU SEE INTO THE MIRROR) is hypnotically given. The victim goes under LSD and in about 15 minutes reaches their LSD high. Most people can be talked to by the programmer during the programming, and the programmer can get some feedback from what is happening in the victim's mind. The victim will be placed in front of a mirror. Then the victim will project the image that was repeatedly shown him or her (say for instance, Alice In Wonderland, or Tinkerbell, or Mickey Mouse) onto their own image in the mirror. A special state of consciousness is induced where the person's perception is altered and they see the projected image as their own reflection. While watching the projected image on the mirror, the mind under LD will also project its own feelings and facial features into the mirror. If the victim is angry, happy, in pain, admiring themselves, etc. then projected image (for instance, Mickey Mouse) will also been seen this way. Using this type of programming, the programmers can create twinning parts. That is if two people are to be twinned, parts that see themselves as the other person are created using the LSD mirror programming. Ceremonies and demons will also be added to strengthen the twinning, and this may be done to a 13 year old teenager within the Illuminati. These projections can be maintained and worked with for about 30-40 min. during the drug's high. After this length of time fatigue sets in and the person must rest before being brought to another high. A clean slate alter can be prepared by the script and then will actually believe that it saw itself as the projected image. By the time, the session is through the clean slate alter believes it is Alice in Wonderland or whatever character the programmer(s) wants it to be. During the trauma of an LSD programming trip, the mind may see flickering images, melting, mosaics and other things. These distortions can form a cover memory if the programmers wants them too. During the sensory deprivation tank experience under LSD, the victim can be asked to open their eyes, or close them. If asked to form a mental screen, the victim under LSD will see a blank screen differently if their eyes are open as compared to closed. If the victim is allowed to look while in a dark tank out into the darkness under LSD, they will visualize themselves as merging with the infinite universe and not even having a body. This memory is used to build in the outer space of a system. On page 32, Lilly describes the type of programming used to create an Infinity, a Rubicon, or Outer Space within a system. He says, "The self is still centered at one place but its boundaries have disappeared and it moves out in all directions and extends to fill the limits of the universe as far as one knows them. A person taking LSD may experience, whether being programmed or not, that they are in touch with all the stars of the universe.

LSD distortions in reality can also be used to protect the programming. If the mind gets too close to remembering something, then the mind triggers automatically a memory of its molecules expanding into the universe and losing their ability to think. This is simply a controlled LSD memory. When external stimuli is ceased, the brain takes over the spaces that were formerly occupied in the thinking process by external reality, and replaces it with feelings and thoughts from the internal mind. Lilly states on pg. 24 that when programming people under LSD, "The blank screen is the most difficult one to work with but is the least 'driving' of the group. The blank screen interferes least with one's creative efforts;..." In other words, if the victim is closed off to external stimuli, the mind can focus all its energy into free associative creativity. Once the victim is in isolation, religious music can cause the brain to free associate religious visions, cartoon voices can cause the brain to free associate the cartoon figures, etc. The Illuminati/Intelligence agencies must wait 3 to 6 months between LSD programming sessions. If they do it more often, they run the risk of hooking the person's mind on the drug state. Then the person will lose interest in reality, and simply try to escape reality into the LSD world as a drug addict. From recollections from ex-programmers and victims, its clear that as the child victim is traumatized during the [SD sensory deprivation (including being shocked) experiences it goes through a sequence or chronology of changes which are noted in detail by the programmers. Certain splits occur at certain points in time which will be used for special tasks. For instance, at a particular extreme moment the victim may go into a "nothingness state" which is between life and death, where the mind quits perceiving that it has a body. This is not an out-of-body experience, it is a nothingness experience due to an extreme near-death experience. This clean slate can be used for the Cabalistic programming of the Ain Soph Aur. The Ain Soph Aur is the cosmic egg from which the universe supposedly began, ain = vacuum, soph limitless, and aur = limitless light. For Satanists they interpret this to the light at the top of the pyramid, Lucifer. Alters created in such a fashion may be placed in a succession of realms. If true Caballism is followed this will consist of 4 realms (worlds) of 10 clean slates. These four worlds are Atziluth = boundless world of divine names, Briah the Archangelic World of Creations Yetzirah = the Hierarchal World of Formations Assiah = the Elemental World of Substances

The child victim in the sensory deprivation tank is not allowed to move without being shocked. Gradually the will of the victim is broken by the total control the programmer maintains over the child in the tank. But the will of the child continues to be broken until the will of the child to live is broken. At this point, when the mind has given up the will to live, the programmer (or assistant programmer) will tell the child in the tank, "If you create such and such types of persons and such and such no. of them (perhaps 10 or 20 are asked for) then you can come out and we'll stop hurting you. Give me a signal that you've done your job and I'll stop hurting you when the job is done. Move a finger or blink your eyes three times if you've done your job."

Blinking three times generally feels the safest for the child, and is generally the limit of what the mind and body can muster to save themselves. The alters, which are made when the mind & body have lost the will to live, are the dissociated parts that will be made into suicide alters. Their breathing is very shallow, they are in pain in the tank. When these parts take the body, they still function in that state. Years later, if the adult body has these suicide alters take the body, there is a good chance they will commit suicide, if not simply die from the shallow breathing. Lilly states on page 31, "One experiences [under LSD programming] an immediate internal reality which is postulated by the self. It is apparent to me that one's own assumptions about this experience generates the whole experience. The experienced affects, the apparent appearance of other persons, the appearance of other beings not human, one's own past phantasies, one's own self-analysis, each can be programmed to happen in interaction with those parts of one's self beyond one's conscious awareness."

While the victim is in the sensory deprivation tank, the programmer can ask the victim to create guard alters within the castle images they create. These are equivalent to the imagery that is done in witchcraft. These image alters are not the same as a trauma-created dissociative alter. The following are the type of beliefs that can be programmed into a person in the sensory deprivation tank under LSD no matter what their prior beliefs (this is substantiated by Lilly, pages 4 1-49 and ex-programmers).

a. The person could successfully park the body and leave the body somewhere, astral project and explore new universes. The victim can be brought during an LSD trip to this thinking and experience the astral projection from around 20 mm. to 2 hours.

b. The victim can be made to feel as if they are a tiny mote, a tiny dot, a single microflash of energy in their own view of time, a mere particle. Time can become infinity and the victim a mere microflash. The victim during this experience seeks a god who is a great being to control him. This is used in the Illuminati alien programming to program in the evil and good aliens, or evil or good gods. The gods or the aliens on such a programming trip will not be so strange that the victim as a mote can't understand their purposes and activities. In other words, the aliens on programming trips like this turn out humanoid. The victim experiences being nurtured by these beings or the god(s) that he sees. The victim may perceive these aliens on the trip experimenting with us. One UFO researcher and author about the aliens has used his LSD trips to research aliens. Sad to report, this researcher is a programmed multiple. It is easy to see how the mind could think that it was learning about aliens, because this is a common easy-to-create LSD programming script. Again in summary, this second set of beliefs is that the person is a mere mote, a small flash in infinite time. When an alter of a slave thinks or goes internally where it shouldn't, this programming is attached to the mind so that the victim loses sight of who they are and feels very insignificant and only a dot.

c. The next program that LSD naturally lends itself to, is that the victim is only part of a vast computer, only part of a vast mind. For some reason, the LSD is able to hit a part of the mind that regulates the perception of free-will. In this type of programming, the victim under LSD is convinced that he or she has no free will and must participate each second with some larger mind or computer.

d. Personalities that have been seen externally by the victim will be incorporated within the person's internal world.

e. LSD changes the victim's perception of time, and can be used to go back or forward in time in the mind. Under guidance, the programmer can manipulate this ability to build into the mind false memories and images.

f. If "white noise", that is random background noise is placed into an isolation tank trauma, the programmers have found that under LSD the brain tries to make sense of the random sounds and projects the voice of God into the random noise as a method to turn chaos into something comprehendible. With the right dose, and under the right conditions, the programmers can get the voice of "God" to say about anything they want. Because the sense of hearing in the sensory deprivation tank is not feeding the mind anything, the human brain under LSD can easily substitute in the voice of God.

g. For girls, who have been determined to have personalities with low sexual appetites, the sexual desires of certain alter personalities can be manipulated during an LSD trip by having these alters hold the body and the body go through exaggerated pelvic movements and other experiences. This is an example of the type of training that Gittinger (see Vol. 2) discovered was necessary in order to change thinking patterns within a person--in this case with the MPD (DID), some alters can be radically changed from the original personality.

The overall effect of such LSD programming on anyone, whether child or adult, is that the mind at a deep level begins to doubt its ability to grasp the real from the imaginary. Therapists sometimes wonder why alters are not more anxious to determine reality. Part of this may be the side-effect at a profound level of the brain beginning to doubt its abilities to separate reality from fiction. If the LSD trips were not controlled by the programmers, insanity could result for the victim. Further, the LSD trips pose a danger that they could clutter the internal world of the victim and splinter their mind uncontrollably. This is why the trips must be carefully guided, controlled and monitored.

CHEMICALLY TRIGGERING NATURAL INSTINCTUAL DRIVES

The brain when a child is born is like a computer which is ready to go, and just needs the software loaded on. In other words, the brain is already a functioning complicated programmed piece of hardware, it is not a blank sheet. The mind is preprogrammed to carry out important instinctual functions, such as drinking water, eating food and sleeping. Likewise, the adult mother instinctively has maternal instincts. Selectively applied chemical or electrical stimulations to the brain will elicit the instinctual behaviors that are pre-programmed into the brain. A microinjection of a soluble sex steroid into the anteromedial hypothalamus would likely trigger the maternal instinct in a person. The various instinctual behaviors that are triggered by microchemical injections or small select electrical shocks will last for up to an hour. (A.E. Fisher was one of the principal researchers in this line of research during the 50's and 60's.) For instance, A.E. Fisher and E. Vaughan, discovered that the male instinct for sex could be stimulated by a small shock to a specific part of the brain. (See "Male sexual behavior induced by intracranial electrical stimulation", Science magazine, 1962, 137, pp. 758-760.) Steroids are one of the chemicals that are used as well as selective minute electrical shocks to trigger instinctual behaviors. Reliable responses can be obtained from a victim, if the correct chemical is placed at a place in the brain where the chemical will cause the brain to send an electrical signal to trigger an instinctual behavior. A searching reaction can be created so that a person or animal searches for something in his surroundings by electrical stimulation of the hippocampus. Eating can be reliably induced electronically or by drugs. Perfusate taken from ventricles or neural tissue of a person who was starved before death, and placed into the lateral hypothalamic area will cause the person to eat whether they are hungry or full.

SEXUAL STIMULATION-PROGRAMMING

The users of slaves need some of the parts to be nymphomaniacs. In order to program this type of behavior, the programmers not only use the reversal effect when pain becomes pleasure (see Vol. 2), but they also use hormones and drugs to make certain parts nymphomaniacs. If they were not artificially stimulated they could not endure the over-use they are subjected to at times.

THEIR ABILITY TO MANUFACTURE (SYNTHESIZE) BRAIN CHEMICALS TO MAKE MIND-CONTROL DRUGS

Part of the ability to do mind-control has to do with their ability to synthesize the actual specific chemicals that the brain produces to alter itself. When the brain wants to relax, or excite itself it uses certain compounds. A large number of the brain's chemicals have been cataloged and can be reproduced in the lab. The messages the brain sends have to jump from one neuron to another via transmitters. The rate that the brain releases these transmitters can be both directly and indirectly changed by drugs. In other words, one can tailor make moods and emotions in the brain chemically.

Page 36 ...

The term "Amines" (which are compounds that have a nitrogen atom that can accept a proton) came to have a specific meaning for brain researchers. The transmitters between neurons in the brain are Amines such as dopamine, epinephrine, histamine, norepinephrine, octopamine, serotonin, and tyramine. The principle method to synthesize these transmitter amines is "decarboxylation of the parent amino acid." In other words, the chemist takes Tyrosine and applies Tyrosine Hydroxylase (an enzyme) and produces Dopa another similar compound; and then the enzyme Dopa Decarboxylase is applied and from that the similar Dopamine amine is created. Then Dopamine-Beta-oxidase (another enzyme) is applied in the final step of the three enzyme steps to create Norepinephrine. Both Dopamine and Norepinephrine are neural transmitters. If norepinephrine is diminished in the brain, sedation occurs. Alpha-methyl-p-tyrosine (as well as other compounds) was found to be one of the things that would prevent the brain from creating (synthesizing for itself) norepinephrine. Serotonin (5-hydroxytryptamine) is created in a fashion similar to dopamine, in that tryptophan is taken and acted upon by the enzyme Tryptophan hydroxylase to get 5-hydroxytryptophan, and then a decarboxylase converts this compound to serotonin. To reverse things, and prevent the brain from having serotonin, they can prevent selective parts of the brain from creating it with p-chlorphenylalanine.

ADRENALCHROME (Adrenal Chromaffin)

This naturally occurring yellowish brown drug was not mentioned in the Vol. 2 book, although it was mentioned in this author's newsletters in '93 and May '95 The drug is obtained by sacrificing a terrified person, perhaps by plunging the athame into them, and then taking a hypodermic needle and extracting the adrenalchrome from the base of the neck in the pineal gland. A sacrificed person only yields about 10 c.c. so the drug is not only very secret on the black market but very expensive. A Scientific American article by Carmichael and Winkler is the best thing that I have discovered on the adrenalchrome. The Max Planck Institute in Germany did research into Adrenalchrome. Dirty law-enforcement officials and others have worked to keep the existence of adrenalchrome a secret. It is not known if Adrenalchrome has ever been used for programming, but it is a popular secret drug of the elite Illuminati kingpins. For many years, they were not able to synthetically produce the drug, and had to rely on human sacrifices as their source. It is possible that in the last year or so, that some method to synthesize the drug may have been found. Chromaffin cells secrete adrenaline, noradrenaline and other substances into the bloodstream which exert a great deal of control over tissue, and organs.

HERBS

Another place that programmed DID Satanic Ritual Survivors may encounter herbs is the use of herbal charms to enhance magic spells.

OILS

The Illuminati have also used oils for their powerful properties. Recently, a doctor who was trained by the Freemasons has been helping people discover the powerful properties of these oils. Christians also have been rediscovering the powerful healing powers in pure Fennel, Frankincense, Juniper, Lavender, Peppermint, Pane and other cold pressed Oils and combinations of oils.

Summary of Major Point.

The guided LSD trips in the sensory deprivation tanks are crucial for laying in the foundational programming. Readers will learn more about guided LSD trips & programming drugs throughout this book.

Page 37 ...

CHAPTER 4. SCIENCE NO. 4 - HYPNOSIS

HYPNOSIS & the OCCULT

From the Egyptian Sleep Temples to ancient shamans, the occult world has been putting hypnosis (including self-hypnosis) to work for centuries, even millennia. During the 18th and 19th century, the Masonic lodges put hypnotism to use. In 1882 Jean-Martin Charcot, considered the world's greatest neurologist at the time, gave hypnotism respectability by publishing his own studies, which included recovering A. trauma memories blocked by amnesia, and B. memories presumed permanently lost by organic amnesia. At that time, a group of french medical doctors located at Nancy just a 100 kilometers southeast of the Mothers-of-Darkness castle, had a school of hypnosis that influenced doctors all over the world including Freud. These french doctors had caught on to the power of suggestion to the subconscious.

In the 1780's, Marquis de Puysegur was putting people into deep hypnotic trances and then commanding them to forget the hypnotic session. James Esdaile in his book Mesmerism in India & its Practical Application in Surgery and Medicine. (pub. Longman, Brown, Green, Longmans, 1846) pp. xxiii-xxiv, describes and lists hundreds of surgeries (some quite serious) which he did in India using hypnosis as his anesthesia. He found his patients could heal quickly and experienced no pain under hypnosis.

In modern medical history, every type of surgery has been successfully carried out without drugs and "without pain" by using hypnosis. In the VoL 2 book, it was brought out that perceptive researchers have figured out that the pain under hypnosis is placed by the mind into a dissociated piece of the mind, which is essentially what MPD (DID) is all about. Tests have shown that hypnosis to reduce pain does not work by the brain releasing endorphins (see Hilgard, 1975 & Spiegel and Leonard, 1986). The mind simply diverts the pain into a "mental floppy disk" that it doesn't look at. In the early 1880's, occult researcher Edmund Gurney found he could give post-hypnotic commands that would be successfully carried out in the future.

What amazed him was that subjects would fulfill commands exactly as commanded at a particular time on a particular day without even looking at the clock. Various European doctors, too numerous to mention, discovered in the 1880's that they could cure various diseases via hypnosis. The cure rate was not 100%, but significant enough to make hypnosis an option in some treatments.

This author (Fritz) has reported that programmed multiples are able to increase the temperature of one body part, or one side of their body. Cisco, the co-author of this book, when she hits certain programs, turns ice-cold on the right of her body and burns on the left side. It was with great interest then when this author located the 1920 work of hypnotist J.A. Hadfield who published his work in Lancet, 2: pp. 68-69, under the title "The influence of suggestion on body temperature.

"Using hypnosis, Hadfield could get a subject to drop his temperature in one hand to 68.0 while the other hand stayed at 94º. Here is the paper trail to what they have been doing to programmed multiples for half a century. Today, the occult world uses sophisticated hypnotic techniques as one of their programming tools to create mind-controlled slaves. The slave's mind is structured into a robotic-computer controlled by a master. Parts (alters) of the slave will learn how to trance (self-hypnosis) on cue. The better conditioned a subject is to hypnosis, the easier they fall into trance. The victims of mind-control are all very conditioned for hypnosis, even though their programmers then hide that under post-hypnotic suggestions that no-one else is to be allowed to hypnotize the slave. The ancient saying is that a picture is worth a thousand words. In conveying suggestions to the subconscious mind, the occult world of black magic and the programmers are very aware of the power that picture images convey. The good programmer will be able to utilize images to give him tremendous leverage in hypnotic techniques. An alter which needs to create something in the mind can be prepped with images, and can be asked to borrow images, such as borrow such and such quality from this person or animal. The child alter who becomes a Lion after eating a dead lion's parts can imagine the qualities (speed, agility, fierceness) of the lion easily. The image of the lion is worth a thousand words to the hypnotic programmer. If the programmer wants an alter that is trained in karate to be agile, quick and fierce, they don't mind dehumanizing that alter to become a lion or tiger. One element of why this is done is the power of the image for hypnotic commands. The deeper Illuminati alters will be highly skilled in self-hypnosis & the ability to change at will into various states of consciousness. This is part of their witchcraft training in order to practice witchcraft.

UNDERSTANDING THE BASICS ABOUT HYPNOSIS

The Programmer is attempting to produce suggestions that the unconscious mind will accept. If the subconscious mind accepts the programmer's suggestions then the suggestion becomes reality to the victim, just as if the victim had experienced it as reality over a period of time. The programmer, if he is good, will be able to get the subjects imagination involved. He will also build rapport with his victim. For instance, the master might hypnotically stroke the forehead of kitten sexual alters before giving them their code to go back into the mind. The good handler/programmer is not simply working off of fear, but he wants to have the trust and cooperation of the victim. This is similar to how Hitler was both feared and trusted by the German masses. In fact, hypnosis was an element in Hitler's control of the masses. Nazi propaganda films showing Hitler and other Nazi leaders giving directives always have the Hitler Youth's actions slightly speeded up so that subconsciously the viewer is taught obedience to their commands.

The programmer will not tell the slave something is hypnotically happening until it has already happened. He will use the art of timing his words at the correct time, of using repetition, of combining several mutually supporting suggestions, and of having total confidence in his words to add strength to his hypnotic commands. Muscular rigidity and deep breathing are one way to increase suggestibility within the victim being programmed via hypnosis. The programmer will also use other hypnotic tricks, such using his own body language to suggest something, and to use what is called a "voice roll". When the programmer moves his voice into a monotonous patterned style he is using the roll voice. Words are delivered at the rate of 45 to 60 beats a minute. To empower the suggestions, the programming hypnotist uses the victim's five senses. The victim visualizes something using his five senses, such as the imagery of the holy spirit (done in mockery of God) and then breathes this imagery in. For instance, the victim breathes in the message of the programming and roots it deep deep down into the oak tree. (In VoL 2, it was explained that the oak tree is the structure that the programs are attached to.)

THE POWER OF HYPNOSIS

During the hypnotic trance, the human mind is at the pinnacle of its ability to quickly learn. What might take years to learn and weighing the evidence, will be accepted quickly by the victim's subconscious. The mind strings together a series of "cognitive mental demons?? that is a series of mental processes--similar to how a computer programmer writes a program. These strings have been called K-lines. Much of what the mind does is simply activations of various K-lines (a habitual ways of doing things), so that the mind can focus its limited conscious thinking. The mind also takes micronemes (such things as a particular aroma, or a particular intonation for which it has no word, but for which it has a series of sensory clues) and builds these into K-lines too. Once a K-line works, the mind in order to prevent itself from making reckless changes, gives priority to those K-lines. Under hypnosis, the mind willingly allows the hypnotist to change K-lines without the normal unconscious conservative restraints. Under behavior modification techniques, abnormal K-lines (that is K-lines that wouldn't normally develop) can be forced into the mind.

A hypnotic suggestion given to normal subjects lasts about a week, so reinforcement is helpful. The programming suggestions are layered in using methods far more powerful than mere hypnosis, and are locked up in dissociated subconscious states, so that these programming scripts which are layered in are almost impossible for the victim to be aware of to challenge them. The emotions of women have been found to slightly detract from the hypnotic trance, while male victims take the hypnotic words in an unemotional matter-of-fact way. The male victims will simply accept the programming and directly comply. That is one reason why the suicide programs that are layered into the men are so deadly. The female victims of programming may emotionally play the suicide out and survive; the male slaves when they trigger suicide programs, comply with the programming in an unemotional direct way.

How deep is the slave's trance? There are tests for trance depths, but from what this author can ascertain, sometimes it can be difficult to determine exactly where the mind is at. If a memory is laid in at a particular trance level, the slave may be able to avoid an abreaction later on by going above or below the memory's trance level. A deep level, where for instance, the person can't move a body part due to hypnotic suggestion, would be called the "cataleptic stage" or level.

UNDERSTANDING THE DEEPER MECHANICS of HYPNOSIS

Let us suppose for the sake of discussion that as you are reading this, it is supper time. You are hungry. You've starved yourself all day, and even though you are on a strict diet, you are trying to think of a good restaurant to go to. Now let's see, as your mind scans the different possibilities, it thinks of some that are close, some that are quick. some that have lots of easy parking and others that have good looking waitresses. Mechanically, your thought processes went like this:

a. Particular sensations and chemicals cause the mind to feel what it mentally describes as a pang of hunger. This is perceived as an important need.

b. The mind has a process that we can call an **Intention System** that creates specific intention messages that are sent throughout the brain. It stores these Intentions temporarily. If an intention is not freshly created and restacked at the top of the clutter of intentions in the intention store, then it gets buried underneath the "mind cluttered desk of things to do" and forgotten. In our example, the mind is searching its memory banks for options on how to satisfy its hunger.

c. The mind must decide upon one particular course of action. The mind quits focusing on other matters, and concentrates upon deciding which course of action to take. The mind has now activated all kinds of what some researchers call "demons". Because we are not talking about spiritual demons, but rather we are referring to units of cognitive processes--which are very similar to UNIX computer demons--we will refer to these demons by the name "**cognitive demon processes**." Some of these cognitive demon processes are action demons and some are word demons, and some are recognition demons.

Recognition Cognitive Demon Processes go running through the mind, "shouting" the wishes of the Intention store. A number of lower level cognitive demon processes wake up and make themselves known if they identify with what the recognition demon is shouting about. Many may think they match the request, but other demon processes check them out to see how close they match. Now the checkers come up with a list of cognitive demon processes who are concerned with eating at restaurants, who have woken up and are all scrambling for attention. Cognitive demon processes establish themselves in families, and develop relationships that are automatic. (Cognitive Demons do not die, but some go to sleep and others can get somewhat rusty in their relationships.) The "demons" that respond to the shouting of our recognition demon go through a series of "interviews" with a hierarchy of other demon processes, and soon the messenger demon can rush back to the Intention Store with the name of the choices available.

All this happens extremely quick. If the mind did not set up a series of automatic cognitive demon processes that become habits, (called K-lines) it would find itself involved in the conscious relearning of trivial matters that would make it impossible to get much accomplished. Every skill would have to be constantly relearned. A person might easily end up spending all day dressing. As long as the mind remains in a static environment, where habits work, it's great. But life is such a changing environment, that our entrenched habits can cause the mind to pull up a cognitive demonic process out of habit, when it is neither wanted nor appropriate.

Emotions and needs (which are tied to our emotions) will trigger the mind to search out cognitive demon processes. For instance, if our emotional need for someone we are looking for is great, let's say a wife waiting for a long expected war-husband, it may send a need down the brain for the cognitive demons that are attached to the identification of the long-awaited person, and the mind triggers itself to see his face in the crowd at the busy railway station before its owner arrives.

Cognitive Demon Processes live in close proximity to other demons, and when one gets excited, others in the area do too, although their excitement may be much less. If a cognitive demon is being used a great deal, it will be on its toes, but little used demons can go to sleep, and somehow need to be hollowed at very loud to wake up.

The Intention System after a while will set itself on autopilot for certain mental functions, which frees the conscious mind for other problems. The conscious mind can only focus on a small amount of material--it is like a computer which has limited memory. It is constantly in a state of redeployment, and the Intentions system has only a small sway over how the Attention part of the mind decides to focus. The Attention part constantly asks itself, which tasks can be relegated to habit. Then when the Intention system sends out cognitive search demons, they do not have to involve the conscious mind, because everything that is habitual is set up like a script, with families of "cognitive demon processes" already knowing the roles/relationships they are to play. (Again, Behavior modification is used to strengthen the relationships of demonic processes, and to make some well used and awake, so that certain behaviors become habits.) When our minds meditate or go into a hypnotic trance, what is occurring is that our conscious mind is delegating its limited computing memory for the focus of its attention upon one object. What happens to the cognitive demon processes that would normally take instructions from the conscious mind?

During meditation the untrained cognitive demon processes bubble up to the top of the conscious mind. However, the opposite happens during hypnosis. During hypnosis, the mind has made the decision (for whatever reasons) to accept control statements from the hypnotist. The mind has surrendered or at least temporarily or partially abdicated his or her position as the master of his or her Intention System. Some of this power is given away. The hypnotist now has access and control over many or all the cognitive demonic processes, including some that the person would not normally activate. Cognitive demon processes that are asleep or deeply buried can be accessed by the hypnotist, in a much quicker direct way than the Intention System would. By suggesting that the subject has a cat on his lap, the hypnotist is actually causing the recognition cognitive demon processes to wake up and act out their jobs to such an extent that the subject sees a cat. By suggesting that the subject’s body stiffen, the hypnotist has gained control over those cognitive action demons that cause the body to stiffen. Age-regression brings up demons that are associated with the subject’s childhood.

Although it is unpopular to admit publicly that the hypnotist has power over the subject, a close look at the process of how hypnosis works at the neuronal "cognitive demon process" level shows that the hypnotist has indeed been given power. In fact, the hypnotist has been given power to activate cognitive units of demon processes that the mind itself would allow to remain inactive or asleep. The mind would not normally use its ability to activate them. Today, it is politically incorrect to admit that the hypnotist has power to make an individual do what they wouldn’t normally want to do, but unfortunately hypnosis does give this power.

PROGRAMMING AIDS

Because the programmers control the slave’s life to such a high degree they can add other elements that move the brain into programmable states.

Fasting along with a high sugar intake will make the brain more suggestive. (The military also used this in basic training. This was done to this author at West Point during Beast Barracks, where during the first two weeks he ate all-total enough food for one regular meal; however, New Cadets were allowed to go to chapel and eat all the brownies, cookies and kool-aid they wanted.)

Physical discomforts and the chanting of rituals in witchcraft ceremonies are also ways to move the mind into programming states.

Lights, sounds (for instance repetitive beats such as with any rock music), and smells are all used to encourage the brain to go into a programmable state.

In the chapter on electronics, it discusses how the functions of the mind-body such as breathing and the heartbeat can be regulated by external stimuli ---that is lights and sounds which are electronically produced. If the repetitive beat is ranged between 45 to 72 beats per minute, many people will go into a programmable state with their eyes open. This is because this beat is close to the beat of the heart in a relaxed state.

Some secret Illum. programming centers have areas that are constructed for the greatest hypnotic sound and lighting effect. The child/ or adult victim is cut off from the world at these programming centers. The victims’ freedom to walk outside into normal life depends upon their cooperation with the programmer(s).

Lullaby music is used as a cue for some alters of slaves to induce trance when their systems are older because the child alters still respond to the cue. Anything can be a cue, but it appears the programmers often pick cues that are naturally reinforced by the mind. The lullaby or carousel music is a good cue, because the lullaby is taking advantage of the natural desire of the brain to retreat from reality to the nostalgia of childhood fun. The retreat of the mind to childhood naturally evokes the helplessness and dependence that a child feels.

The programmers are powerful enough to place in cues that don’t need natural reinforcement, but from observation it is apparent that they will often skillfully strengthen the hypnotic power by the choice of a cue which carries its own natural reinforcement. One supporting element in programming is that the programmer sets himself up as "god the creator" of the victim, or an alien of a far-advanced race.

In hypnotism, this fulfills the need that all hypnotic subjects must have faith and trust in their hypnotist. Hypnosis is subjective in nature. If the programmer is the creator of the alter being programmed, and the alter is additionally under a hypnotic drug that makes it willing to obey, it is easy to see how the victim lets go of all inhibitions, because "god" or this "superior alien" knows what is best. The better and stronger the relationship between the victim and his master programmer, the better the hypnotic commands work. If the slave sees the master as a religious guru prophet (or a great doctor) it enhances his willingness to accept hypnotic commands. Bear in mind that the slave is conditioned to love their master without reservation. Yes, the benevolent dictator has historically received the devotion of the masses, (and many of the Illuminati programmers are actually simply egotistical sadists).

USING HOLOGRAMS as an ACCESS AID

The Illuminati is now even resorting to creating talking hologram images to access their slaves with their hypnotic cues.

KEEPING THE MIND IN ALPHA STATE

The entire alter system of a Monarch slave has their sleep patterns controlled. Many alters are programmed not to get real sleep. They actually sleep in a hypnotic alpha-state sleep, or what may be called trance sleep.

Hypnotists (and brain researchers) will tell you that true sleep and a hypnotic sleep are not the same thing for the brain. Some alters (but not many) must stay awake 24 hours a day internally and carefully watch all that happens in the system of alters. Someone has to take the body and sleep--but whichever alters are set up to do it, they are hypnotically commanded to only sleep about three hours to insure that the mind stays in an alpha state easy to program. Because alters which do not hold the body "rest" mentally in a sense--when they take the body they are fresh. The mind dissociates when it is given unpleasant things to hear which it doesn’t want to hear.

The electronic implants that send voices to victims are used to create dissociation within the slaves, plus certain implants and devices send specific electro-magnetic wave patterns to the mind to put the slave’s mind into the alpha state. See chapter six for more on the mind-control implants.

PREPARING THE BRAIN

The programmer places the victim in an acute state of anxiety and guilt. The tension reduces the power of the judgement part of the mind. One of the tortures for slaves is to keep them from going to the bathroom and relieving themselves. This is part of the hypnotic programming package. The anxiety that this creates increases the power of the programming in the brain, because the anxiety causes slight malfunctions with the brain’s judgment abilities. Mental and physical fatigue are also sought in the victim. For instance, water deprivation is common. (This was also done to the author at West Point, where one of this author’s classmates was hospitalized for dehydration during Beast Barracks.) Offensive language also helps drive the mind into tension and encourages it into an alpha state.

EARLY TRAINING FOR SLAVES

The children who are being programmed are taught 4 IMPORTANT HYPNOTIC ABILITIES. These four abilities are a. relaxation, b. visualization, c. concentration, and d. projection, which work in handling the slave along with the alpha state.

Relaxation and visualization go hand in hand each enhancing each other. When given a good pleasant image to visualize, the victim relaxes, which leads to the hypnotic concentration, which then produces good projection.

Initially, the child victim is given drugs that induce euphoria and deep relaxation. They are then taught to work toward that drug euphoria by going to it mentally. They develop the ability to go into that euphoria mentally as a trained behavior. Many of the children will have their training in visualization and concentration reinforced when they go to public schools, many of which are now involved in the programming process. To teach the child concentration and visualization, the child is given an apple and trained to visualize it. The first time, the child will be given drugs which will enhance the experience and perception greatly to around 100 times the perception without the drugs. There is no pain involved in this early programming at around the age of 3 or 4. After the child has gone through the visualization of the apple in the drugged state he or she will work toward the mental ability to visualize it intensely without the drugs. The visualization script used with the apple (in both the drugged and undrugged exercises) will vary slightly from programmer to programmer, yet will be close to the following:

"VISUALIZE AN APPLE. HOLD IT IN YOUR HANDS; TURN IT AROUND; FEEL IT. FEEL THE SHAPE, THE SIZE, THE WEIGHT, THE TEXTURE. NOTICE THE COLOR, THE REFLECTION OF LIGHT ON ITS SKIN. BRING IT TO YOUR NOSE AND SMELL IT. BITE INTO IT, TASTE IT; HEAR THE CRUNCH AS YOUR TEETH SINK IN. EAT THE APPLE; FEEL IT SLIDE DOWN YOUR THROAT. SEE IT GROW SMALLER. WHEN YOU HAVE EATEN IT DOWN TO THE CORE, LET IT DISAPPEAR."

By the way, an apple training incident very similar to this (which is given by the Illuminati to child slaves from the ages 2 to 4), strangely turned up occurring in a setting that the author, who never was a slave nor never in the occult, found himself in when this author was a 4-H counselor at a 4-H camp as a 16 year old. The first thing all the counselors were given was an apple exercise so that we could appreciate each camper for what he or she was. The person who led the exercise was a psychologist. Where had he learned it? The apple visualization must be done to a standard of excellence by the child victim. The victim's life depends upon learning to visualize vividly, so that the internal structures (internal mental images) it builds within the mind will stay strong and firm.

The programmers want the child to have good visualization so they will work with the child to have the most successful experience. For instance, the child will be offered a variety of apples to look at, yellow, green, red etc. The child can choose the apple that it likes so that its visualization exercises will be the most successful. The entire imagery of an internal system will be built upon the foundation of the child's ability to visualize an apple. The child will be taken through a succession of exercises where the child learns to visualize the apple in greater and greater detail using all the senses. Eventually, the child is able to visualize his or her apple to the point that the child can dissect or chop the apple up in any way and reconstruct it mentally. The internal seeds of the apple can be seen brilliantly by the child. Upon this ability to visualize, the programmer will then teach the child that the apple can become anything the child wants, a river, a couch, a book etc. The five seeds of the apple will be turned into 5 castles. This is why essentially all Illuminati Mind-controlled slaves have 5 major castles in their system of programming. One approach by therapists has been to cast out/remove the castles. However, the castle imagery is based upon the apple seeds which is based on the apple. The real thing to deal with for therapists is the apple. If the castle is returned to its original image of being an apple seed, and the rest of the apple-and its tree imagery dealt with, then some progress can be made. Unfortunately, not being aware of the original imagery, the therapists have been frustrating themselves with the superficial imagery rather than the foundational imagery.

Another script for teaching the young 2 to 4 year old slaves simple visualization is to have the child close his or her eyes and imagine that they are looking at a white wall or blank screen. Then they practice visualizing simple geometric shapes, and then visualize the screen in different colors, and then finally visualize the objects changing colors.

MAGICAL TRAINING ON THE STARLIGHT LEVEL

The Illuminati begin training the child victim to work at the starlight level. This is called magical training. The child's abilities to relax, visualize, concentrate and project are then harnessed in the alpha state by "MAGICKAL TRAINING" which opens up the STARLIGHT CONSCIOUSNESS. Starlight consciousness is the other way of knowing that which belongs to the right hemisphere, and it allows the victim to make contact with the "DIVINE WITHIN". The Divine within the victim is actually the generational spirits, which are placed in during the Moon Child ceremonies described in detail in Vol. 2.

The generational spirits are laid in to help build the programming and to guard it. However, as in so much spiritual work, the victim's (technically speaking, the alter's) will & thoughts work hand in hand with the spirits. The child must learn to visualize and participate in the mental building of the internal worlds, structures, etc. However, the demons will be strategically placed to protect the structures once the programming is built into the mind. (For more understanding of this see Cisco' s section on "Programming, foundational, destruction of'.)

FINETUNING

The child victim's mind is FINETUNED. This means that the child can function excellently at visualization, relaxation, concentration, projection, while in the alpha state and can work with their subconscious mind. The mental work done in the subconscious can not be retrieved easily. Only through outside assistance or special training can most people access what is done at the starlight level of the mind. The programmers are using the child's abilities with its 5 acute senses to develop the 6th sense (which is its ability to work in the Starlight consciousness, which includes such mental activity such as psychic abilities--which will be discussed in other locations in this book.) Enhancing the mind so that it can work in the subconscious area called the starlight consciousness is referred to by many insiders as astral.

THE MONARCH PROGRAMMING SCRIPT FOR OVER THE RAINBOW

One of the most important concepts of the programmers is having slaves "go over the rainbow." Although in recent years other methods have been substituted for this, there are many hundreds of thousands of slaves for whom "going over the rainbow" is part of their programming. What is the script for programming this?

The PROGRAMMING SCRIPT FOR GOING OVER THE RAINBOW

(Three dots in this script do not indicate missing parts, but rather pauses. In other words, pauses are indicated by three dots.)

INDUCTION TRAINING SCRIPT

"BREATHE DEEP --- YOU ARE FLOATING DOWN ... DOWN ... ON A BEAUTIFUL RED CLOUD, AND YOUR WHOLE BODY IS RED -- AS YOU GO DRIFTING AND FLOATING .... ROCKING GENTLY ... DEEPER ... AND DEEPER ... DOWN ... [this repeated, one time, for each color of cloud-orange, yellow, green, blue, and violet clouds.] "LAND VERY GENTLY ... VERY SOFTLY ... IN THE CENTER OF A ROUND, BLACK PEARL. SEE IT GLOWING, SOFTLY, GENTLY ... NOW TURN AND FACE THE EAST ... AND THEN THE SOUTH ... AND THEN THE WEST ... AND THEN THE NORTH OPEN ALL OF YOUR INNER SENSES." [The rainbow gives the much abused victim of mind-control and trauma, a safe mental place to travel to; and this serves as a "home base" for the mind to return to when things get difficult. If the programming begins to be destroyed and a deeper alter experiences real life--its coping mechanism to face the harsher realities of life will be a knee-jerk reaction to go to safety over the rainbow.]

BRINGING THE SLAVE OUT OF TRANCE (Switching to the FRONT PERSONALITIES after programming)

After the slave has been switched to deeper personalities who are in trance in order to have the slave a. be programmed b. be programmed & carry out a mission, c. go to a ritual, then it is important that the programmer takes time to get the slave to emerge slowly and gently from their altered state. The induction process is reversed. The repetition of trances will reinforce the depth of the trance state, and keep the undetectable slavery operating smoothly:

"IN THE PEARL, PREPARE TO AWAKEN. WHEN YOU AWAKE, YOU WILL FEEL REFRESHED, ALERT, RENEWED, AND FILLED WITH ENERGY. YOU WILL REMEMBER ALL THAT YOU HAVE EXPERIENCED. NOW TURN AND FACE THE EAST ... THEN THE SOUTH ... THEN THE WEST ... THEN THE NORTH. [this helps the slave orient themselves internally]

TAKE A DEEP BREATH ... INHALE ... EXHALE ...

"YOU ARE FLOATING UP ... UP ... ON A BEAUTIFUL VIOLET CLOUD, AND YOUR WHOLE BODY IS VIOLET AS YOU DRIFT GENTLY UPWARD ... "ON A BEAUTIFUL BLUE

CLOUD ... UP ... UP ... AND YOUR WHOLE BODY IS BLUE AND YOU ARE BEGINNING TO AWAKEN GENTLY AND YOU DRIFT GENTLY UP ... ON A BEAUTIFUL GREEN CLOUD ... AND YOUR WHOLE BODY IS GREEN ... AS YOU DRIFT GENTLY ... UP ... UP ... "ON A BEAUTIFUL YELLOW CLOUD ... GETTING MORE AND MORE AWAKE ... AND YOUR WHOLE BODY IS YELLOW ... AS YOU DRIFT GENTLY ... UP ... UP ...

"ON A BEAUTIFUL ORANGE CLOUD ... FILLED WITH ENERGY AND VITALITY ... YOUR WHOLE BODY IS ORANGE ... AS YOU FLOAT UP GENTLY ... "ON A BEAUTIFUL RED

CLOUD ... ALMOST FULLY AWAKE NOW ... AND YOUR WHOLE BODY IS RED AS YOU FLOAT GENTLY ...

"STAY ON THE RAINBOW ... [at this point the script for the slave's programming or mission or ritual will be placed into the mind].

After the programming session, the mission, or the ritual the handler/or programmer finishes...

"LEAVING THE MEMORY IN THE BLACK PEARL AND CLOSING AND SEALING THE BLACK PEARL. YOU WILL REMEMBER ONLY THOSE DETAILS THAT I TELL YOU TO REMEMBER. AND IN A MOMENT YOU WILL COUNT TO TEN AND GO BACK INTO YOUR SPACE, AND RED 2001-A [whatever the code is for the alter] WILL RETURN."

DEEP TRANCE PROGRAMMING

If we rate trance depths on a scale of 1 to 13, then the deep trance that is being described here is 7-10. At this 7-10 depth, the person must be constantly watched. The victim is turned on his side so that the victim will continue to breathe. If the person monitoring has doubts whether the slave is alive, the programming staff will poke the lungs and neck. The person's breathing will be encouraged by the programmer breathing along with the person being programmed as he says "BREATHE ... BREATHE ... BREATHE". This is important because at this level the slave is so tranced their body can forget to breathe.

COLOR PROGRAMMING

While we are still on the subject of the rainbow and its colors, and before we continue onto other parts of the hypnotic programming process, let's deal with color programming.

When Illuminati slaves are being programmed as little children, they usually will get music and color programming. Most readers are like this author, in that they are not interested in learning magic. However, because this author (Fritz Springmeier) was interested in helping victims understand what's been done to them, it was important to dive into trying to understand the thinking of the occult world in regards to colors.

If I write that the occult world views yellow as a healing color, and blue as a relaxing color, and purple (violet) as a spiritually enlightened color, that is not because I want to teach that as a doctrine, but so that therapists can begin to understand the hidden mannerisms & thought patterns of these powerful generational occult families, who believe in such odd practices as child sacrifice.

In the 1940's, as the Illuminati were applying scientific investigation to their ancient skills in mind-control, a number of researchers investigated color psychology. Cecil Stokes' color research on the influence of colors on the mind led to the Auratone films, which were used to treat the "mentally ill".

Walt Disney Studios produced one of the best occult attempts to free associate color, light and music in their movie Fantasia, especially Fantasia's opening selection of Stokowski's adaption of Bach's "Toccata and Fugue in D minor". Walt Disney also used selections of music from the Satanist composer Igor Stravinsky in Fantasia. Igor Stravinsky is an anarchy-espousing Satanist. Fantasia was a long labor of occult devotion for Walt Disney and his studios. It took many years to create the film, and when it was finished, it was used as a programming foundation for alter systems. (Chapter 5 will have more on Disney. Chapter 5 will also give a very detailed script for HOW Fantasia has been used as the primary foundation programming tool.) Disney's Dick Tracy movie is also a classic example of how color is employed in a movie which is used covertly for mind-control programming.

The five primary areas of occult thinking that were investigated by this author in terms of color programming were:
1. witchcraft books such as Raymond Buckland's Practical Color Magick,
2. an extensive study of several New Age Groups such as the I AM Movement, and Church Universal & Triumphant (CUT) using hundreds of documents that ex-insiders of these groups provided,
3. masonic & rosicrucian sources, such as Manly P. Hall's book The Secret Teachings of All Ages, and
4. Metaphysical books in general such as the excellent The Rainbow Book being a collection of essays & illustrations devoted to Rainbows in particular & Spectral Sequences in general focusing on the meaning of color (physical & metaphysically) from Ancient to Modem Times. The Rainbow Book was done by the Fine Arts Museums of San Francisco in assoc. with Shambhala of Berkeley & London, 1975.

And finally, the last primary source -but not least- was interviews with an ex-programmer. What did I find out? After lots of weeding, I have some siftings from these sources to share. In Buckland's Practical Color Magick, we learn about a type of Voodoo called Poppet dolls. These dolls are made according to the color that is appropriate for the person's problem. For instance, they make a green poppet doll if the person needs help with finances. The name of the person is written on the doll according to the color that corresponds to their astrological birthdate. For instance, Leo is orange, and Pisces is Indigo. Those who need success are advised by Buckland to make a "Color Treasure Map" which is simply a collage of the things they want, making sure that the pictures are bright colors.

This is another example of color magic. Buckland provides a Color-Number Code as follows:

1 = Red; 2 = Orange; 3= Yellow; 4 = Green; 5=Blue; 6=Indigo; 7=Violet; 8=Rose; 9 = Gold

The letters of the alphabet then are corresponded to these 9 numbers and by adding up the numbers in someone's name (numerology), Buckland tells us we can get the name's Color from such a process.

What did I learn of value from Buckland? some tips on how occultists assign colors to numbers and objects. For the average person these witchcraft teachings are simply trite imaginations. Even so, the fact remains for those of us confronting Occult mind-control, colors are important to total-mind-control programmers of the Illuminati. Colors are important to their world-view. A programmer who knew color magic would likely use color magic in their programming, programming scripts and codes. Now, both you and I know some more about how to second guess the programmer's mind. (By the way, Color programming was dealt with in a major way in Vol. 2, but the tips in this chapter may also be useful.)

THE ASSOCIATION OF COLORFUL SIGHTS, SOUNDS, RHYTHM & DANCE.

Dance has been associated with color from ancient times, to greek and medieval courts up to modern times with the use of colored floodlights. Keys in music have been associated with colors by many famous musicians. Beethoven referred to B minor as the black key. Schubert compared E minor to a "girl robed in white with a rose-red bow on her breast". Rimsley-Korsakov interpreted the keys of C, D, A, F, & F# major as white, yellow, rosy, green, and grayish-green. Handel had his own idea of how the keys related to the colors. The brighter hues of a color have been associated by some with the major scale, and the more subdued hues of a color with the minor. Goethe stated that a painting of powerful effect was like a piece of music with a sharp key, while a painting with a muted effect was like music in a flat key.

Certain colors have been associated with violin music. In Wassily Kandinsky's book The Art of Spiritual Harmony, we learn a great deal about color and music. The following comes from Kandinsky's observations, and may relate to Mengele's programming. The ringing notes of a violin have been associated with a cool red. The largo of an old violin is associated with orange. The placid middle tones of the violin are associated with absolute green. A dark blue is like a cello. White is like the pauses in music that temporarily break the melody.

Black represents "the final pauses, after which any continuation of melody see the dawn of another world."

The Rainbow Book is definitely the most comprehensive book this author has seen on the significance of color both physically and metaphysically. An interesting chart is given on page 125, which examines the relationship of the frequencies of electromagnetic waves in the visible light spectrum with an octave of music just above middle C. In order to make the comparison (which is charted below) the light frequencies which are 1012 are written without the powers of ten and taken down 40 to match the note octaves. This gives us a chart which we will arrange by:

COLOR/ORIG. FREK - 40 // OCTAVE FREK/NOTE

Using this arrangement we get:

Very dark red/391 .3 = 392/G NOTE darkish red/418 = 415/G# note

Orangish red/445 440/A note light orange/464 = 466/A # note yellow green/495 = 494/B note green/ 523 = 523/ C note

Bluish green/555 = 553/ C# note Indigo/573-600 = 587/D note

Indigo violet-light violet/618-627 = D# note

Dark violet/655-673 = 659/E note

Very dark violet/682 = 698/F note

Although there is no single one-to-one correspondence between music and color, because there are different patterns to consider and the role of association is such a complex issue, there are several things that naturally suggest themselves: an increase in pitch does seem to suggest an increase in brightness. An increase in brightness also is suggested by an increase in tempo. Colors also fit the mood of a piece of music. A mass of color can suggest the musical ground.

Musical intervals have also been related by the ancients to the orbits of the planets. This began with the spherical theory of the cosmos by Pythagoras, where the different astrological bodies made different sounds. Another correspondence with merit is to associate colors with "properties", & then associate with music intervals, then assoc. with related cords, and related planets, and then associate with other things.

For instance, Orange would be associated with the Sun, Energy, Glory, and Power. In turn, it would be associated with Re (pronounced "Ray" in music, the whole tone, D). Its related cord would be minor, and its related planet would be the Sun "Apollo." Violet would be death, separation, advanced spirituality. It would be associated with Ti ("Tee") in music, the Maj. 7th, B, and its related planet would be the moon "Diana". There is no way all the different associations can be reviewed here. The chinese have had a number of music-color association schemes, as well as the Hindis, the Tibetans, and others. Is this section on color going somewhere with these associations? Yes, Joseph Mengele, the original Dr. Green (the name Green got passed on to a least one of his proteges), played the violin and piano while doing the color programming to slaves. He was the original master at associating both a tone or chord with a particular color or color scheme. He loved using Fantasia for programming.

LIGHT & COLOR

According to Hilton Hotema's book Ancient Sun God (Mokelumne Hill, CA: Health Research, 1956), light & fire are associated with Sun worship. "Pyra" is Greek for fire, and "Midos" means measure. Pyramid is a combination of the greek words pyra and midos, which together meant "light-measures". In other words, the pyramid was the eternal ascending flame, the spark returning to its maker. The eternal flame of Prometheus is a recurrent theme within all the modern revolutions (which by the way were all created secretly by the occult hierarchy).

The Tower of Babel most likely followed the pattern which the ancient babylonian cylinders say was used by the Babylonians in building their temples. Each level was dedicated to one of the 7 planets, and was built in that color. In other words the Tower of Babel looked like a rainbow. The lowest was to Saturn and was black. The next was to Jupiter and was orange. The next was to Mars and was red. The fourth was the sun and was yellow. The fifth was Venus and was green. The sixth was Mercury and was blue, and the top or seventh level would be white.

A good example of color programming and a New Age group which is involved with Illuminati/government mind-control is Church Universal & Triumphant. In the Covert Action Information Bulletin, No. 30, Summer, 1988, Church Universal & Triumphant was exposed as a conduit of CIA funds. Another clue as to how CUT connects in is that Elizabeth Clare Prophet, CUT's prophetess, speaks in Masonic emples.

E.C. Prophet claims she is Marie Antoinette. (One of the first Illuminati programs that this author ran into when working with programmed multiples was Marie Antoinette programming.) Another obvious CIA asset (who is not part of CUT) has been directing implant victims to go to CUT and solve their implant problem by seeking the "I AM force" within them. (The I AM is a system programmed into slaves.) Initiates into CUT have received a letter, "Keeper of the Flame: the need for harmony and love between all the master's servants united in a common effort cannot be overemphasized. Working and serving together, we form a mandala of light through which the masters of the Great White Brotherhood will awaken humanity." (Quote from a letter by CUT Chairman of the Outreach Committee Michael Veys to CUT's Fraternity of the Keepers of the Flame, c. 1980.) Elizabeth Claire Prophet's "Fraternity of Keepers of the Flame" as she calls her initiates learn such things as astrology, crystals, white magic, color magic, Hinduism (reincarnation, karma, meditation, chakra points), how to decree, how to dress (for instance what color to where at what time), and how to become divine at Summit University.

Elizabeth Clare Prophet (that's the name she wanted) established Summit University, and CUT's headquarters in Colorado Springs, a house in Santa Barbara, and an underground fortress for the end times in a valley in Montana. Details about Elizabeth Clare Prophet and her organization are hard to come by. If a person gets serious about being part of her organization, they are expected to make a once in a life-time gift of everything they have to the CUT and its head Elizabeth Clare Prophet. (Sources: Notes, Summit University Student and Confidential Interview.) After that they are expected to tithe (one-tenth). Church Universal and Triumphant Tenets, Colorado Springs, CO: 1975, p.12 under Art. XII Law of the Tithe. In return, they are initiated into what I call "the supreme Grand Flattery", "You shall become an enlightened God."

One of the programming tricks by the Mind-control programmers is to have some of the alters, incl. front alters believe that they are divine gods. Although members are told they are divine, when people on E.C. Prophet's staff got revelations from the Ascended Masters that she channels, she threatened to expel them if they talked about their revelations. E.C. Prophet does not want any one else to prophecy in her organization. CUT makes their mind-controlled slaves think that they are too smart and intuitive to ever be deceived. In this way, they use New Age ideas and the person's pride to blind them to the fact the person is a mind-controlled slave who is fooled much of the time. When students are invited onto staff it is a commitment. They are told, "Your life will never be your own again, but was it ever your own?" They have already been taught "Ascension Keys".

Elizabeth Clare Prophet tells her students that to Ascend to Godhead is their birthright, the divine right of every person. (see Pearls of Wisdom, Vol. X, No. 23, June 4, 1967, The Summit Lighthouse, p. 41 -"...has robbed men of the birthright of their Ascension...") This matches what the Illuminati teach their people. See also Pearls of Wisdom, Vol. X, No. 19, (May 7, 1967), The Summit Lighthouse, p. 24 - "The Divine Right is the Immortal Plan...Inherent pattern of unique Christ manifestation..." In the Ascension Dossier of Serapis Bey initiates are told "The capacity of the externalized self must be given in toto." Also-"You must abandon your past to God." In Lanello's Message(a channeled message), 4/20/73 the students are told, "You do not have to wait for the carnal mind to evolve, for the carnal mind will never evolve. It must be put off and cast into the Flame." (See Lanello 4/20/73 in the Pearls of Wisdom, Vol. 16, #32, 8/12/1973.)

After emptying themselves of all their past and of what they knew, the initiates are then restructured by CUT. In Serapis, Ascension Class they are told, "The Ascension Flame is the Flame of Mother."

SPECIAL COLORS

It can’t be overemphasized that Green is the highest color in Satanism--it is Satan’s color. It is not by accident that green has been used in uniforms, although the decision also was dictated by its advantage in camouflage. In the Omega computer programming a CODE GREEN for many victims means "self-destruct", the ultimate sacrifice for one’s satanic programming.

Interviews with witches, as well as a person in witchcraft who the Masons tried to recruit, and an ex-member of CUT, and an ex-member of similar New Age group called the I AM movement reveals that they all wear special colors of clothes on certain days. Due to the large influx of new converts, it has been difficult for CUT to keep up the teachings on wearing different colored clothing during different times of the day, and for different days. Newer converts may be unaware of this teaching. The colors of purple and white are especially esteemed. The magical properties that Masons & New Agers believe are intrinsic to purple is why the 33rd degree has written books using purple, and several New Agers have published books on purple paper. The programmers also manipulate such things so that child alters believe that color "magic" has accomplished things.

HEALING BY CORRECT VIBRATIONS & RAYS

Masonic Sources match CUT teachings-

· "The second method of healing was by vibration. The inharmonies of the bodies were neutralized by chanting spells and intoning the sacred names or by playing upon musical instruments and singing. Sometimes articles of various colors were exposed to the sight of the sick, for the ancients recognized, at least in part, the principle of color therapeutics, now in the process of rediscovery." Masonic Hermetic Qabbalistic & Rosicrucian Symbolical Philosophy, p. CXI

· "50. "The force of the obligation is therefore in the obligation and not in the reason. As a matter of fact, the real reason is scientific to the last analysis; scientific to a degree beyond the penetration, up to the present time, of the ‘radiant matter’ of the Roentgen Ray of Modern Science. The Word concerns the science of rhythmic vibrations, and is the key to the equilibrium of all forces and to the harmony of Eternal Nature." Ancient Mystic Oriental Masonry, p.48.

USING HYPNOSIS TO HEAL THE SLAVE AFTER ABUSE.

Sometimes the handlers "TRADE DOWN" the symptoms that result from abuse so that the slave will heal quicker, others attempt to remove the symptoms immediately. For burns, the hypnotist can suggest cooling. For other injuries, suggestions for warmth are applied. For bleeding suggestions for stopping blood flow are used.

REINFORCING THE PROGRAMMING WITH A DECOGNITION PROCESS

The programmer has gotten the results that he wants via drugs, torture, hypnosis, and deception. Now he must build in back-ups to insure the programming holds up.

The decognition process has 3 steps.

Step 1 is to program the slave to get inadequate sleep, eat poorly, and work hard. It is called REDUCTION OF ALERTNESS.

Step 2 is to create confusion in the mind via programmed confusion using a series of alters. The person may go into revolving from one alter to another, or may have alters coming and going with conflicting messages so that the person remains in a PROGRAMMED CONFUSED STATE. In military "training" conflicting orders would be rapidly issued to confuse the mind.

Step 3 is to cause the mind to have something simple to focus on so that it goes into a FLAT STATE. In the military, this author became aware that the beat of the drum and marching would shift the mind to a flat state. For centuries the military have known that they could shut off the critical thinking of the mind and put their soldiers into a flat, non-thinking state by training them to the beat of the drum and the sound of marching feet. Now you know why those British Red-coats marched so non-thinking into the barrels of American guns in battles such as New Orleans and Bunker Hill. The mind feels good to shift into this simple flat state. The brain quits thinking and withdraws into a state that it quits thinking except for what the controllers want it to think.

This is why marching has been so important in military training. Chanting and singing will also move the mind into this flat state, which is why the French Foreign Legion requires its men -to sing sing sing. When this author lived in the Indian subcontinent, I saw Hindu holy men who had meditated in a flat alpha state so long their brains no longer functioned in anything but a flat state. This non-thinking flat state is believed by Hindus to be nirvana, but God didn't give us minds to throw away and waste, but to use. He gave us independent thoughts so that we could show our love for Him by choosing to love Him. God didn't want brainwashed followers, which is what some of the churches think God is calling for. The programmers can induce a mood or state of mind hypnotically which will make retrieval of something learned dependent upon going into that particular mood or state.

And THE BEAT GOES ON...

It is clear that some of the psychologists have NOT got wind that the mind-control is being exposed. The American Journal of Clinical Hypnosis had a recent article (10/1996, p. 105-114) promoting the use of the Wizard of Oz metaphor in hypnosis with "treatment-resistant" children. For a therapist/hypnotist to hypnotically use Wizard of Oz material on child victims of mind-control will get a response from them! The authors of the article say that they use the authoritarian approach to hypnosis (p. 107) for "treatment-resistant" children. The Wizard of Oz metaphor is given on page 108 of the article, which boils down to: the Straw Man, Tin Man, Lion, Dorothy and Toto were surprised at their success- and that they already had brains, a heart, & courage.

HYPNOTIC CODES, CUES AND TRIGGERS

This chapter will provide some more of the hypnotic codes, cues, triggers or whatever one wants to call these words, noises, and sensory inputs that manipulate these poor victims turned into Monarch robots. The reader is encouraged to refer to Vol. 2 for the principle list of codes. Other chapters will explain about the structures these codes go to, and also the spiritual dimensions of these codes and structures.

Another way to see things is to recognize that the programmers have created "power words" to which they have attached memory and programming. If a de-programmer observes closely the word usage of the victim, you will begin to spot power words of the abuser, for instance, "follow the yellow brick road".

Unfortunately, people who are not initiated into the arcane world of handshakes, grips, codes, signals and cues allow the appearance of these things to be interpreted from their own frame of reference. Usually, because these events are not perceived as being significant, outsiders forget them immediately and therefore remain oblivious to some of the most overt clues.

Once the reader is aware of the types of programming themes used: the Wizard of Oz, Alice In Wonderland, and Star Wars and Star Trek, etc., he will begin to realize our entire American culture has been transformed into one big mind-control programming center during the second half of the twentieth century!

Unfortunately for the victim, apparently harmless little things, for instance, the arrival of flowers to their hospital bedside, a dead bird on their doorstep, or the words "NEW BEGINNINGS" and "NEW LIFE" may signify programming commands. One Illuminati slave in this area has started a large church called NEW BEGINNINGS. The name was not by accident.

A cipher is when symbols are used to represent letters. One can use letter frequencies to break ciphers. There are charts for letter frequencies for the chief languages. Likewise, there are frequencies to codewords. The Illuminati's intelligence agencies have programmed thousands upon thousands of slaves. There are only so many code words to pick from and some of these code words are favorites. In the previous book many of their favorite code words were listed, but words starting with A's, B's, T's, U's, V's, 'W's, X's, and Y's, were not given and will be now. (A plus sign indicates other words are attached to the root word.) From the co-author Fritz Springmeier's experience, the following is a continuation of favorite code words that have been used to program slaves with:

AARON, ABBY, ABIGAIL, ABLE, ABNER, ABRAHAM, ACACIA. ACE, ADAM, ADELPHI, AGATE, AIR +, ALABASTER, ALADIN, ALBERT, ALFA or ALPHA. ALICE, ALLEY CAT, ALLIGATOR, AMOS, AMY, ANGEL, ANNA, ANTHONY, APACHE, APOLLO, APOSTLE, APPLE +, ARCHER, ARGUS, ARK, ARROW, ASK +, ASTER, ATHANTIS, ATLAS, AUDREY, AURORA. AUTUMN +, AZTEC, B +, BABE, BABY, BACK ROOM, BACK BONE, BAD, BAKER, BALD, BAMBI, BANANA, BANJO, BANKNOTE, BARBARA. BARK, BARON, BEACH +, BEAST, BECKY, BEE HIVE, BEETHOVEN, BELSHAZZER, BERMUDA, BERTHA, BETA, BETSY, BETTY, BEULAH, BEWITCH, BICYCLE, BIG BROTHER, BINGO, BIRD DOG, BIRTHDAY, BLACK, BLACK +, BLACK

SHEEP, BLACK WIDOW, BLANCA, BLONDIE, BLOODHOUND, BLOODY +, BLUE +, BOA. BOB CAT, BOMBAY, BONANZA. BOODLE, BORAX, BOXCAR, BRASS +, BRIDGET, BROOMSTICK, BUCCANEER, BUICK, BULL, BULLDOG, BULLFROG, BUMBLEBEE, BUNNY, BUTTERCUP, BUZZARD, BYRON, T-BIRD, TADPOLE, TALISMAN, TAN, TANGO, TANYA, TARA, TARZAN, TEACUP, TEARDROP, TEEPEE, TERRIER, TERRY, TESTAMENT, THOR, THREE SISTERS, THUNDER, THUNDERBOLT, THUNDERCLAP, THUNDERFLASH, THUNDERSTORM, TIAMET, TIGER, TILLIE, TITAN, TOM CAT, TONI or TONY, TOPAZE, TOPSOIL, TORNADO, TOTENKOPF, TRINITY, TURTLE, UGLY, ULYSSES, UMBRELLA, UNCLE +, UNDERDOG, UNICORN, UNIFORM, URSULA, VAGABOND, VAMPIRE, VANCOUVER, VARSITY, VELVET, VENUS, VERONICA, VICKY, VICTOR, VIKING, VIOLA, VIOLET, VIPER, VIRGINIA VOODOO, VULCAN, VULTURE, WAGON WHEEL, WALDORF,

WALLFLOWER, WANDA. WARRIOR, WASP, WATCHDOG, WEASEL, WHISKEY, WHITE +, WIDOW, WILD CAT, WILLOW, WINNIE, WINTER +, WIZARD, WOLF,

WOLF +, WYOMING, X-FORCE, X-RAY, XYZ, YANKEE, YANKEE DOODLE, YELLOW, YOGI, & YO YO.

The intelligence organizations prefer to code a single project with a single word, and an ongoing operation with two words. A nickname of something will consist of two words. The reader needs to bear several things in mind. First, the programmers generally have intelligent, well sounding codes, that do form patterns. For instance, a woman’s name from the Bible will be used as a code, with subparts or subcodes having other female names from the Bible. Deeper Illuminati parts will have goddess & god names, and king & queen names for cult alters. These are the names the handler or cult uses--NOT their access codes.

The codes for slaves follow patterns. There are standard and unique codes. During the 1940’s through the 1960’s there were only perhaps a dozen American master programmers travelling around. (After that the number of programmers appears to get quite large.) The master programmers would lay in the foundational programs and codes. They developed the scripts. The codes and systems used from system to system do follow patterns. The child’s creativity & their purpose in life would contribute to the uniqueness of the programming. Each child visualizes differently and the programmer works with the child’s mind.

The master Illuminati programmer would allow the handler--the "Daddy" figure in life to have the day-to-day ownership. The Daddy figure, often the actual pedophile father of the child victim, would be allowed to put in his own codes in the sexual part of the system. Some Daddy figures used their own songs, their own poetry and their own interests in this area of the coding. In other words, most of the system’s codes will reflect the master programmer (such as Dr. Mengele), and the sexual part of the system will reflect the "Daddy" figure’s programming.

The standard method for many of the memory and alter codes is to use a combination of the date of the child’s birth along with the date of the trauma for part of the code. A color will then be attached to this, to produce a color-alpha-numeric code combination. These are placed into the internal computers. The standard computer codes were given in Vol. 2. They can be used to temporarily stop programming to give a victim some respite and a chance to regroup. The programmers did not especially care if the front part of a system is discovered and although they hide the anarchy (coven level) witchcraft alters, they don’t hide them like they do the hierarchy alters. The coven alters have simplistic codes. The hierarchy alters which are placed in another area of the system and much deeper, receive a great deal of cabalistic codes and mathematical codes. You will not find the mathematical codes in the front part of a system. The internal programming alters have the power to change codes if they need to protect the programming. They will have to hypnotically work with alters when they trance out at night.

In other words, most of their programming of front alters will be done when a system lies down for "sleep"--more accurately described as lies down "for trance." If the internal alters change many codes, in their efforts to protect the system, they will even make it difficult for the handler/programmer to get into the system. The science of Ciphers developed rotors that require lines to line up. Some simple schemes using this principle appear in some Monarch systems. This is part of the science of structuring. Intelligence codes often come from the Bible or popular fiction books. The deeper codes are occult words, often in foreign languages such as Arabic, which is an important language in the upper occult world. Slaves will be given COVER NAMES for ops, and often males receive female names and vice versa.

The patterns used in programming slaves will represent the world view of the programmer. If the interests of the programmer are known, that will be a major clue to the codes they like to install. For this reason, it would be worthwhile to review the access clearance codes that are used for external security of some agencies, because these same types of clearance codes may be found in mind-controlled slaves.

A BIGOT list is a list of names of those who have clearance to a particular set of information. Within a slave there would be numerous BIGOT lists, because persons (personalities) are compartmentalized somewhat like the CIA and the Puzzle Palace (NSA). Agency Codes for clearances include B, C3, K, L, M, N, 0, T, COSMIC, MAJIC (MJ), SI, SCI, and Staff D. (As this author has only examined these secret societies from the outside, some insiders may know of other clearances. In other words, it would be foolish to think that this clearance code list is comprehensive, but it has hit upon the major clearances.)

The exercise in judging whether a person can have access to compartmentalized information is called ADJUDICATION. A group of persons (agents) working under one handler is called a NET. The FBI which also uses mind-controlled slaves likes to call its groups NETS.

FUNNY NAME is intelligence slang for a pseudonym. GRANNY is a CIA asset used in the US which is not under their direct funding. The American military-intelligence groups publish a periodical called JANAP 299 which lists the cover names (code names) for many of the ongoing projects, groups, or installations.

There are other code books too. C can stand for Controller or Control, which means the person(s) handling a mind-controlled slave. A person, who is neither a controller, nor a slave, nor asset, but who consciously advances the desires of the controller is called a TRUSTED CONTACT. Sexual slaves would not be expected to respond to such a term, but a middle level slave/agent of an intelligence agency might be familiar with this type of intelligence jargon.

The BIRD was a name for Fort Holabird, MD where intelligence operatives were trained as well as subjected to mind-control. DIA used the code name EMERALD for drug-trafficking. Boy, does this code word have a double meaning. Since the DIA, which is playing both sides, also is involved with drug smuggling & using Monarch slaves heavily coded with EMERALD type coding. Very shortly, we will provide more of the Monarch hypnotic cues (codes) for the multitude of functions that a Monarch’s mind must carry out. These cues are reinforced as a conditioned response by the programmer. In other words the response becomes so well trained that it becomes automatic.

The type of programming which is placed in a slave varies. Remember, for intelligence operations the slave will have to have BONA FIDES, which are codes to allow two people to meet. All slaves are given CONTROL SIGNS which allow them to indicate via a code that they are in trouble. A RECOGNITION signal allows two people to make contact. For instance, the handler might fly his distinctive sounding plane over a slave’s house in a pre-arranged signal. It might also be a particular colored scarf, and a particular set of phrases. A GO-AWAY code is a prearranged signal that means it is unwise to make contact. The go-away signal may be simply placing one’s hands in one’s pocket or turning the porch lights off. A "GO TO GROUND" signal means to go into hiding. A BLACK ENVELOPE, which is in actuality a black-colored envelope, has been used by intelligence to hold the real name of an agent being used. In the case of multiples, a chief of a station might have a BLACK ENVELOPE with the actual name of a mind-controlled agent being used in his field of operations. A MAYDAY BOOK exists for Illuminati and Intelligence slaves which allows them to call if they are about to be arrested. A telephone number is left open for just this purpose.

Also common universal Illuminati codes can be used by the slave to get set free from police and judges.

BACKSTOPPING is an intelligence term for setting up proof to support the cover stories the intelligence agencies give their agents and assets. Some of the programmed multiples they use, need BACKSTOPPING.

Within the Jehovah's Witnesses, especially their headquarters, the Illuminati uses Enochian language to program with. With Druidic branches Druidic symbols are used. With the Jewish groups, Hebrew is used. Other languages are also used. An Illuminati System can easily have 6 different languages used as programming codes. The foreign language codes will be for small parts of a system only. Special artificial languages are also employed, as well as sign language. The Illuminati employs signs which they teach some of their slaves with pick-up sticks. This system of secret symbols is a series of crosses and horizontal & vertical marks. These marks can be drawn on anything, and consist of up to 7 lines. They are believed to be used in regards to ritual dates/ceremonies. These secret signs resemble similar secret symbols used by the Romany tribe of Gypsies. T

he masters of mind-controlled slaves also use a technique where one signal or code will carry several messages simultaneously. This is called MULTIPLEXING. We are all aware of the phenomena of how the brain can selectively hear. The brain can select certain sounds to pay attention to, such as when a person is in a noisy room listening to someone, or a football player is trying to hear the quarterback's calls, likewise certain alters hear certain codes/cues/triggers while others don't. The internal programmers and reporting alters may internally hypnotically make telephone noises that are fake, so that host alters loose the ability to discern what is real and not real, so that they don't pay close attention to access calls. This ability of the brain is manipulated in MULTIPLEXING.

MONARCH MIND-CONTROL CODES

A. ALPHA (basic)
B. BETA (sexual)
C. CHI (return to cult)
D. DELTA (assassination)
E. EPSILON (animal alters)
F. OMEGA (internal computers)
G. GAMMA (demonology)
H. HYPNOTIC INDUCTIONS
I. JANUS-ALEX CALL BACKS (end-times)
J. OMICRON
K. TWINNING (teams)
L. THETA (psychic warfare)
M. RHYMES, SONGS, TONES
a. NURSERY RHYMES
b. SONGS
c. TONES & CORDS
d. RINGS, CREDIT CARDS, TOKENS etc.
N. ZETA (snuff films)
O. Sample codes
P. Catholic programming
Q. MENSA programming
R. HAND SIGNALS
S. Scriptures in programming
T. Alien Programming

A. ALPHA (basic)

· Basic Commands. (These basic commands are also found used in many slaves, although there will be exceptions to everything.) Many of the basic structures/codes will be put in using a sensory deprivation tank and LSD. For the most foundational levels of a system, the programmers may use the Hebrew letters associated with the attributes of God and the angel names. This can also be worked into English, as there is a cabalistic equivalent in the letters B through K for the Hebrew letters associated with God's names used in magic to conjure angels. In the basic Alpha structuring, Illuminati slaves will have stars as power sources, and the ditty Twinkle, Twinkle Little Star will pertain to this programming. The Hansel & Gretal story is used for obedience programming.

Another story line that is used in programming is the Cassandra and Apollo myth. Common access triggers are

"HELLO PRINCESS', 3 knocks, flashes of light, tones, and sequences of blank phone calls.

If the slave leaves their answering machine on, a recording may be left "IF YOU WOULD LIKE TO MAKE A PHONE CALL PLEASE HANG UP & TRY YOUR 911" accompanied by a beep-beep-beep. This activates a program within the slave to call a prearranged phone number for further instructions.

B. BETA (sexual)

· SEXUAL ALTERS---most of the following codes are for deep sexual alters. In Illuminati Systems these are called Beta alters, in CIA systems they create Beta models whose primary function is to provide sex, usually perverted sex and S&M for the perverts who run our secret government and visible government. BETA models are those who are primary job is sexual, such as service as a Presidential Model (sex slave for a President). These System models may be numbered BETA 1, BETA 2...BETA 601, etc. Sexual programming for espionage and seduction, such as is done at Disneyland, may well involve the use of hundreds of dolls, such as Wonderwoman, Genie, Barbie type dolls. The names/codes would tie in with these dolls.

TIME CLOCK programming is placed in to cover the time that the sexual alters were on a mission, so that they can switch back to the - front and nothing be remembered.

Colors attached to sequences of numbers have been used for some of the Beta programming. For other sexual operatives, the intelligence agencies trigger them via specific sequences of chess moves.

Betty Boop programming is used sexually. Betty Boop was a 1930's cartoon character who was an attractive "vivacious vamp". She was described in one cartoon as the "kitty from Kansas City." She had cartoons about Gigolos, Bimbos, Little Red Riding Hood, Mother Goose rhymes which were used as programming themes. Plays on words such as "CHESS-NUT" were used in the cartoons.

C. CHI (return to cult)

Chi programming uses a lot of idiosyncratic phrases, and little ditties. Some of the nursery rhymes listed in the song section will be Chi programming. Some of the Chi programming has been listed in the Alpha programming section of Vol. 2.

p_solemetric.jpg

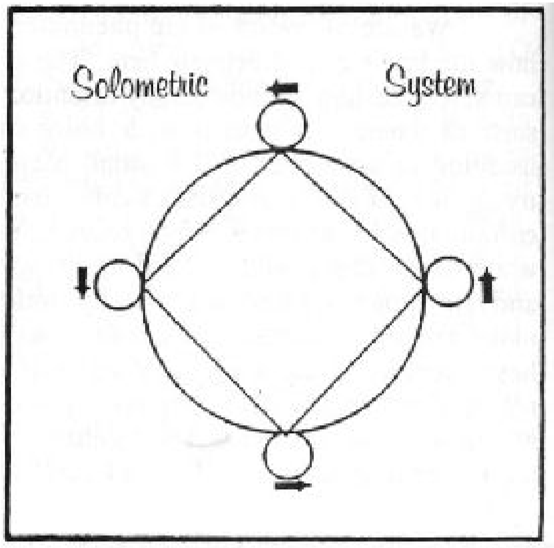

The number of hang-up calls may serve as a code, incl. when the hang-up calls happen.

D. DELTA (assassination)

· Delta alters --are activated to kill by the following three things: seeing specific clothing, items held in a persons hand, and particular words. Since these items would specific for a particular murder there is no particular specifics that can be given.

It is thought by some people that the following TV ad may have been used to trigger Hinkley when it was time for Hinkley to attack President Ronald Reagan.

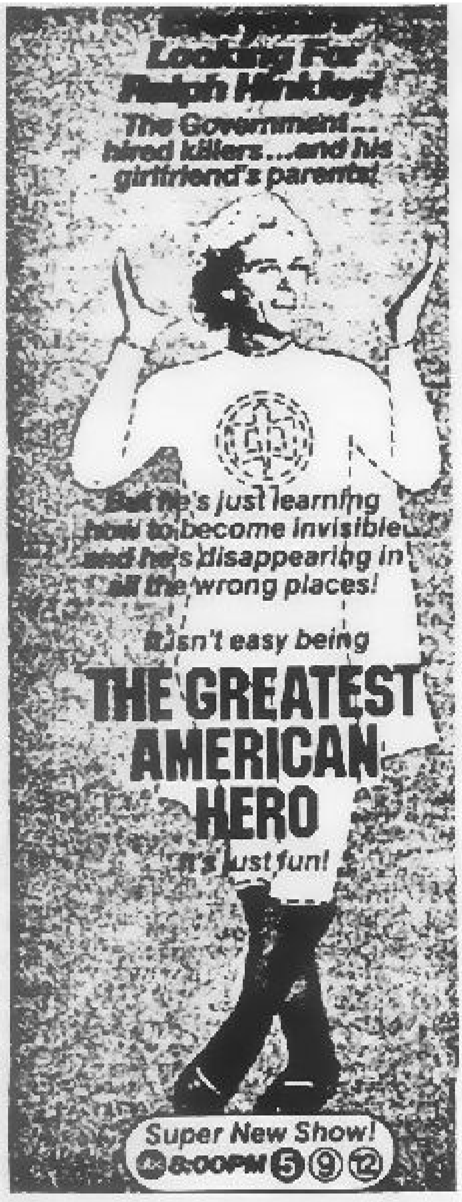
Looking For
Ralph Hinkley!
The Government... hired killers...and his girlfriend's parents!
But he's just learning how to become invisible and he's disappearing in all the wrong places!
It isn't easy being
THE GREATEST AMERICAN HERO
it's just fun!
Super New Show!
8:00PM 5 9 12

p_hero.jpg

One man who was programmed as an Delta-type assassin by the NSA in the NJ region, was programmed to be activated for assassination mission via the David Letterman program, Clinton’s speeches such as his speech touching on the baseball strike with "little kid" wording, and by several movie stars (Arnold Schwartzenegger, Slyvester Stallone, etc.). I Dream of Jeannie programming is used for assassination, as well as at the CIA’s Farm the song Old McDonald’s Farm is used with programming done to CIA assassins. Distinctive jewelry & clothes. Emerald ear rings used as a signal to others that a message was being carried. Emeralds mean drugs, rubies mean prostitution, diamonds (rhinestones) presidential model work. Red, White & Blue worn sometimes by presidential models.

E. EPSILON (animal alters)

F. OMEGA (internal computers)

The Omega programming works along with an Executive Control Board (or Grand Druid Council) and Internal programmers. The Executive Control Board is associated with both numbers of the clock, and precious gems and metals such as "9 O’CLOCK GOLD".

For G. Gamma programming see Cisco’s section on "Programming, Foundations’s

H. HYPNOTIC INDUCTIONS

NICRO NECTRUM NECTO--take one back to one’s "true time period". When the child victim is hypnotically inducted by counting numbers during programming by a Doctor and a Mother-of-Darkness, these two will reassuring they child that things are O.K. and sweet talking to the child as it is inducted.

I. JANUS-ALEX CALL BACKS (end-times)

END-TIME ACTIVATION CODES

Most slaves have end-time programming. The programming to activate a slave’s end-time programming often runs pages upon pages of coded messages. A number of Monarch slaves have been de-programmed enough that they began accessing and spewing out pages and pages of these activation codes. In the end times, there appears to be a great deal of color coding for operations. Many of the people who are taking part in the end times events are not American. For instance, the different lists of people to round up are categorized by color. The Red list in America are anti-NWO opposition leaders to be executed approx. 2 weeks before martial law. The blue list are anti-NWO order people who will be programmed or killed in the process. The yellow list is people to be rounded up for reeducation camps after martial law. Other countries apparently have different color codes. The red & blue lists have been distributed, & are periodically updated. The blue routes have already been marked by blue patches of color to guide those transporting prisoners when martial law is declared in the U.S. Within Monarch slaves, some of them apparently have an internal crystal/and or rocks that are programmed to explode at a certain point in time--thus releasing the victim’s end time programming. The internal crystal (mental image) contains at least the four basic colors, red, green, blue, purple. One sample of part of end time programming was given in the previous Vol. 2 book. Still another example is as follows:

BB 243-ABCD-XXZ^2 (blue ray)

CC-458 ABCD-42T (red ray)

CD-379 ABCD-H1^2 (yellow ray)

CE-211 -ABCD-JKL (green ray)

CF-531-ABCD-ZZU (purple ray)

TMFT.47 ZONES 7-12

17876747270 OCEAN SIDE

PORT 18,22,34,41 CONTACT

YELLOW RAY SHOVE 79230 A2

TO RIGHT SIDE DAGGER HANGS

LOW ON PART SIDE FISH

SCHOOL CLOSED ROOM 37-56

RAILS EXIT END

17876747270 COL. BLACK PATCH

TO MALL 76747270 THIEF

AZT FMT BZT CET

11,4,6,9,32,101, 70

YELLOW FLAGS AT HALF MAST

YELLOW DOG ON RUN

BLUE FISH AT HOME

[This program is related to a slave contacting other slaves in some end time operation.]

A team leader will have a down line of around 4 people--which are coded red ray, yellow ray, green ray, blue ray. When the activation code hits a slave team leader during the end times, they will in turn activate their people, who in turn will have people who are team leaders and have a down line. At least two false callback alarms will be sounded (tested) before the real one.

J.>> Omicron programming—relates to programming of slaves for the Combination (between Intelligence-the Mafia and Government.)

K. TWINNING (teams)

L. THETA (Psychic warfare)

The following is only speculatory, but worth taking note of. This author believes that some of the Theta models got chess programming. Within the system of Enochian magic is the magical system of Enochian Chess. The Golden Dawn has been identified as one of the groups carrying out mind-control. Some Golden Dawn leaders have recently put out a reference book Enochian Chess of the Golden Dawn by Chris Zalewski (St. Paul: Llewellyn Pub, 1994). Enochian chess is played with four players, on a chess board that is divided up into four squares, one for each of the magical watchtowers of air, water, earth, and fire. It has only been since 1992 that researchers within the Golden Dawn (specifically the New Zealand branch which is called the Emerald of the Sea) reinvented a set of rules to play enochian chess. The moves for Enochian chess may have been used in recent years as a programming script. Since only a few people have mastered the game, and since the game is more than a game, it is magic, it would stand to reason that the temptation would be there to use it as a programming script if the programmer knew the game.

M. SONGS & NURSERY RHYMES

a. NURSERY RHYMES
b. SONGS
c. TONES & CORDS
d. RINGS, CREDIT CARDS, TOKENS etc.

· What follow is a list of Nursery Rhymes Used As Triggers, & Songs which have Monarch programming meanings &, such as access parts, or soliciting a behavior or thinking.

a. NURSERY RHYMES

The Illuminati create imaginary worlds for many of the deeper alters to live in. They keep these alters living in such unreality and nonsense that deeper alters have a difficult time separating their subjective programmed reality from the objective reality of the outside world, which doesn't understand them. Nursery rhymes function well for programming in messages. Often these nursery rhymes are distorted slightly to serve their programming purpose. Some of the programming distortions and uses of these nursery rhymes are provided below. Major corporations and advertising groups working for the Network place nursery rhymes into their television ads. These nursery rhymes are constructed in the ad to activate on certain slaves which usually are sleepers. Some were given in Vol. 2, here are some additional nursery rhymes beyond those listed in Vol. 2:

A Tisket A Tasket
Baa, Baa, Black Sheep (used for money laundering scripts, and drug money, drug carrying scripts)
Bye, Baby Bunting (used with actual rituals where the slave child is placed within a skin, cocoon programming with a butterfly coming forth etc.)
Diddle, Diddle Dumpling
Ding, Dong Bell (Dr. Mengele liked to use this--message: don't disturb the mouse that runs the internal system clock.)
Fa Fe Fi Fo Fum (Movement within the system's bean sprouts in the system, and also a death threat.)
Farmer in the Dell, The (Used by the CIA for a serious program)
Georgy Porgy
Gingerbread Man
Hey! Diddle Diddle! (used for astral projection programming)
Hot-Cross Buns!
Humpty Dumpty (used for shattering the mind programming)
I'm a Gold Lock (used to instill cover programming to hide the truth)
I Love Little Pussy (kitten programming)
Jack, Be Nimble
Jack and Jill
Jack Sprat (possibly cannibalism programming)
Little 80-Beep (come home to Papa programming)
London Bridge (This was used at the Presideo and other sites for learning the chants, and the spells. At the Presideo it was used with barber pole programming. They all fall into a stupor at the end.)
North Wind, The
Queen of Hearts, The (swearing an obedience oath programming)
Rub-a-Dub-Dub (refers to the 3 internal programmers)
There was an Owl
Three Blind Mice
Three Little Kittens

It should be pointed out that the mind-control programmers have long ago discovered the power of a rhyme in the mind. Rhymes have a hypnotic quality to them. An example of how rhyming was used by internal programming alters to reprogram an alter wanting free is given in Daniel M. Traver's book (Phd dissertation) Dissociative Disorders and Mind Control. Wichita, KS: Daniel Traver, 1996, p. 52,

"What the hell man/ you can't stand! a winter worse yet/ you'll cry and you'll die/ as we place the mind-set/ you won't know what to do now/ you'll hear every rhyme/ and you're cravings will be as an addict in crime...." This rhymed program would accomplish its goal of wearing down the alter and bringing that alter into line.

b. SONGS

Yankee Doodle (used for sexual obedience programming "mind the step" and the word "girls" was changed to "boys" to make "and with the boys be handy". "Yankee Doodle keep it up" was ref ramed to mean "slave yank yankee doodle (the penis) sexually up." MTV is blatantly using programming rock-and-roll songs. Aleister Crowley is featured in some of these. Maiden (a satanic rock and roll band) blatantly places the words "POWER SLAVE" on one of their CD covers along with snakes and an enlightening pyramid. Anton LaVey has had an MTV song video shown, where he sings in detail how he is going to make the listener into a sex-slave, etc. etc. Some of this is blatantly mind-control in the open, it is so open it is dismissed by many of the public.

c. TONES & CORDS

In the Vol. 2 book, it was written about how telephone tones are used for codes. These type of codes tie in with the computer and the lower levels, such as the dungeon. You will find that access to items has been encoded by using the telephone tones to spell them backwards. For instance, if we were to take castle, find the numbers that correspond to C=1, A=1, S=8, etc. on the telephone, and then put those tones out backward. But to make this code unbreakable the programmers will add something like some piano cords--something that can still be played out via the tones. To make it further unbreakable the programmers will have a code (such as a combination of cards) assigned to that level which also must be toned in. An example of this in its totality would be 14 tones + 3 cords to open up a person's dungeon (hell pit the lowest level). In other words, such an access would take the programmer from a distance about 11/2 mm. to open up the dungeon, whatever time he needed to work in it and 1 1/2 mm. to close it down. A 5 mm. phone call might be sufficient. This gives the programmers the ability to internationally use telephone tones to access deeper items within the victim's mind. And as standard practice the reversal of the code closes down that part of the mind, and gets the programmer out.

d. RINGS, CREDIT CARDS, TOKENS etc.

A ring with a snake swallowing its tail called Ouraboros signifies rank in the Illuminati. Rings, credit cards, business cards, tokens and keys are all used as codes, triggers and signals. For instance, one slave had an old distinctive skeleton key. In another instance, a slave was given a token from a particular business as a BONA FIDE. In another instance, the BONA FIDE was a programmer's business card from his notional job. In another instance, a particular credit card would get the user into particular parts of the slave's system.

Zeta is the sixth letter, and it's ancient meaning was a sacrifice. (These codes are not known by the author.)

O. SAMPLE CODES FOR ALTERS.

As an example of the type of code names (called operational cryptonyms) used for an intelligence asset one intelligence asset had the following cryptonyms: AECHALK, ARINIKA, CHICKADEE, HERO, IRONBARK, RUPEE, & YOGA.

Monarch I.D. code reviewed:

These codes are purely a representative model-not any particular real system. The overall system code at times consists of [birthdate + programming site codes + birth order + number of generations family was in the Illuminati.]

For our hypothetical system Mary we have the hypothetical overall system code of: 6-13- 51- 14 - 02 - 12. In order to give the codes for a hypothetical alter system we will have to explain some things as we go. The Programmers have for each slave both medical programming files, and a grey or black binder with the programmed access, trigger, codes & cues, & structure.

A typical Illuminati system will be a cube (although spheres and pyramids are also used). The principle alters will be the "a" alters. A typical section of alters will consist of a 13 x 13 grid of alters. These are alters who live in a world together and must function together. A 13 x 13 section will have 13 families of "a" through "in" alters. The "a" alters will be the primary alters that the Programmers will interact with. The Programmer may call up an "a" alter and ask it to go get the "c" alter in its family, rather than directly asking for it. This initial page of alter codes will be the primary or "a" alters.

If we are dealing with a 13 x 13 x 13 cube of alters, then the initial page has 13 "a" alters of each section. Each of these alters will have an access code which will often include the following components: AN ASSIGNED COLOR + AN ALPHA NUMERIC CODE + A PERSONALIZED MAGICAL NAME.

This will equal 1/3 their access code. These code words must be repeated three times to pull the alter up. However, if an alter is trained well, and hears his master's voice, an alpha-numeric code can pull the alter up. For many of the alters, the reversal of their access code puts them back to sleep. This is an important point, because some alters would be dangerous to leave in control of the body.

The "a" alters are regular alters. Many of them have been hypnotically age advanced to see themselves as teenagers or adults. Sometimes "b" and "c" alters are also aged. The "d" through "in" alters are generally left as they were split and most of them are infantile, with little concept of how old they are. The little ones will be the ones who often remember the programming very well, and know things about the system. The top alters will also sometimes receive personal names from their handler. This is in addition to all their codes. If the alter is responsive to its master, the personal name might pull the alter up too. Do all of the alters get charted? There are several groups of alters which get charted separate from the rest or don't get charted at all. Because of the competition and distrust between the different programmers, they often place in secret back doors into the person's mind that only they know about. Worlds of secret alters loyal and devoted to the programmer may be built into the system and not appear on the regular charts. The core, and some of the primal splits from the core will not appear on the regular grids. They will be placed on a separate sheet, and their codes will be in some magical language.

The Illuminati commonly employs 20 magical languages, and Hebrew, Latin and Greek are also often used for charting the core and its primal splits. Enochian is a good example of a magical language used by the Illuminati. Some alters will be created solely by the slave in order to cope with life. Hour glass alters have entire sentence access codes. Deaf & blind alters need their access code signed on their hands by moving their fingers up and down, etc. End time alters may have access codes that may entail reading an entire page. Reporting alters are often small children, that are hidden in each section, and may require slaps to the face or jabs with a needle to pull them up. Spinner kittens will be accessed via their mama cat, who acts like a Madam in a "cat house". The codes for this was given in the Beta section codes of Vol.2.

Telephone tones are frequently used to be able to key in (that is access or trigger) parts of the computer program matrix. Dominoes also are used for the computer programming. The dominoes are put in so that the programmers can get a domino effect, if they want to set off a series of programs. Dominoes and flashing sequences of lights were used to train the child to automatically respond to a certain pattern of dots.

P. Catholic Programming (by Jesuits etc.)

KEYS TO THE KINGDOM = world domination by mind control

In the 1940's, the Jesuit branch of the Illuminati placed tatoos onto their mind-controlled slaves. These tatoos consisted of the sacred heart with a rose & a dagger, & were generally placed upon the left hand. The Jesuits have discontinued the practice of tattooing their slaves. Now all types of people are using this sacred heart tatoo.

The Rite to Remain Silent is a programming trauma which is a satanic reversal of the Catholic Mass. The VOW OF SILENCE is a keep quiet program activated by "THE WALLS HAVE EARS & THE PLANTS HAVE

EYES SO YOUR SILENCE IS TANTAMOUNT TO SUCCESS." It is explained to the victim that the sea shells & the plants have the ability to hear, and that a sensitive occultist (programmer) can psychically pick up what the plants and sea shells hear. "MAINTAIN IT" --is a command to maintain the Vow of Silence. "MAINTAIN IT & LISTEN."-- a command to keep silent & listen to a command.

"ENTER INTER INNER DIMENSION TWO" is a standard Jesuit infinity program (2 is a sacred voodoo no.) Pontifax is a demon &/or alter placed in Jesuit systems.

BABY BREATH, BLACK ROSE, and WHITE ROSE are codes/triggers that are all used in Jesuit mind control. The Baby Breath and the black rose relate to programming having to do with death. The WHITE ROSE is a trigger to cue a person to release programming. The black rose is also used by the Mafia. The black rose was also used by George Bush, drug kingpin for the Illuminati, on his no. 1 helicopter for the upholstery pattern.

When the Catholic Priests do the handsignal genuflection across their chest, this has the second meaning which is a programming meaning of north, south, east and west.

Q. Mensa Programming (by MENSA)

The MENSA codes are sequences of numbers.

R. HAND SIGNALS

Masons and monastic orders who program are very keen on hand signals. A very skilled handler can do morse code with winks and eye rolls.

Rotating the hands around each other and then gesturing with the hands toward the person with both hands means--"did you get the signal?"

Sign of distress. Arms raised over the head with palms forward. Then lowing the arms to a bent position with the hands at head level, and then lowing the hand to chin level, and then dropping them to the side.

Drawing the right hand across the throat with the thumb of the hand pointing to the throat. (used in connection with oaths, such as fidelity to death.)

· Sign of faith. Hand on the heart.

· Sign of plucking out the heart.

· Sign of Reverence.

· Sign of Satan made over solar plexus.

· Sign of touching the crown of the head.

· Sign of two hands pointing to the solar plexus.

· Sign of Preservation. Consists of placing one hand over the heart, and raising the other to form a right angle at the elbow, with the hand pointing to heaven.

The movie "Dune" showed male & female Ilium, hierarchy hand greetings, as well as showing signet rings, which are indeed often worn on pinky fingers. (The movie also shows the Karat goddess, how a man becomes a Grand Master by learning control of the demons, astral projection through the spheres which are conquered by the Grand Master, & control of the int. weather, etc.)

S. SCRIPTURES USED IN PROGRAMMING (cont. from Vol. 2. chap. 10)

· 1 KGS 7:21 --talks about 2 pillars on the outside of the Temple. The pillars of Joachin and Boaz are important to Freemasonry and are built in the slaves mind at an intermediate level. Joachin is a white pillar of light associated with fire. It is easy to see how this association could be built by certain traumas. Boaz is the shadowy pillar of darkness and is also associated with water. A dark water torture would make this association. The two pillars represent the two sides of the Illuminati's "the Force". Between them is the door to the Illuminati's House of God.

· 1 KGS 10:18--description of Solomon's Temple used to build the imagery and the lion guards to the internal Temple programmed into victims.

· 23rd Psalm--used as a cue to signal a ritual time.

· Song of Solomon--Used in the ritual of the Great Rite, a ritual pertaining to the Middle Earth, where the High Priest & Priestess join in sexual union as the God & Goddess creating fertility for the land.

· Ezekiel chap. 1 and chapter 12 are being used for endtime callback codes.

T. ALIEN PROGRAMMING

· Blue beams of light are used as a hypnotic induction for slaves who are given the cover story of being abducted by aliens.

· The All-Seeing Eye is used to represent the planet Sirius. Sirius is important to the Hermetic magicians, and some of the programmers are deeply into hermetic magic. Satan is said to come from Draco or Sirius, esp. the dog star Canis major. Masonic programming may well have the "blazing star" portrayed in the programming as a pentagram, with the name Sirius. Sirius may represent the Master, the creator of the system in some systems where the programmer is steeped in Masonic philosophy. A sickle may be involved with the Garden of Eden story for some victims of this type of programming, because supposedly the Golden Age ended with a sickle splitting heaven from earth. The ability of the handlers signals to the slave in so many mediums makes it difficult to communication and accessing, to send different prevent communication and accessing.

Program Codes During 1972-1976 for Dr. Green

One mind-controlled slave, using her photographic memory, managed to sneak into the programming files of her programmer, who went by the code name Dr. Green. Her information was included in the book U.S. Government Mind Control Experiments On Children which was compiled by Jon Rappoport and presented before a congressional committee & put on public record. The co-authors recognize some of the programs.

In the late 60's and early 70's, all the programming was revamped. The best programs were identified and then used. The continual revamping, editing and modernizing of programs has continued to strengthen the mind-control. The recovering victim's name is Chris De Nicola, b. 7/62. She worked full-time at Disneyland for 7 years (from '83-'90). Her father Donald Richard Ebner worked with her major programmer who was Dr. Green. She received standard Illuminati trauma-based mind-control.

In 1970, she received Radiation Experiments on her neck, throat, & chest. In 1972, the experiments concentrated on her chest, and in 1975 the radiation tests concentrated on her uterus. She was programmed in Kansas City Univ., Tucson, AZ, & in the desert in AZ. During her programming, the assistants were careless and she was able to sneak into the Programmer's office and look at the files with her photographic memory. She was caught twice in the files, and tortured, but simply used her ability to nest memories to their disadvantage.

Chris was such a poor programming subject, so much so that finally the programmer tried to trigger her suicide programs to activate, but they failed and she managed to survive. Suicide alters repeatedly tried to kill her body, and they came very close to killing her. On 3 occasions she had to have her stomach pumped, and one occasion when the paramedics found her she'd stopped breathing. She has survived her suicide programming countless times, praise the Lord, and provided what she saw with her photographic memory. The following codes were remembered by Chris without the aid of hypnosis. Cisco and this author recognize some of these programs. What Chris saw were the files. Each program (script) is given a name and then its file has a standard access code assigned to it. Chris saw the standard access codes.

The standard method for coding a program is to use the DAY OF BIRTH CODE, THEN THE DAY OF THE

TRAUMA that puts in the program into the slave’s mind, and then the STANDARD ACCESS CODE. Evidently, Chris got into the file with level D programs, which means she was looking at programs 4 levels deep. Comments about the programs are this author’s and reflect his understanding, and may be subject to correction. [Spellings are exactly as program names were spelled.]

Program Name Standard Code

Relevance D-1000

Kick-It-Back D-1010

Cross Fire D-1011

Sophis. Electromagnetic Fields D-1012

(D-1012 makes the slave think they have an electrical field on them. In order to cover their electrical field tests, that they actually do place on slaves, they have the ability to confuse the slave, and prevent detection by activating a programmed abreaction that makes the field seem real, when it doesn’t exist. This prevents detection.)

Gorilla Warfare D-1013

Retreat D-1 014

Nautical Science D-1015

River Runs Deep D-1016 (D-1016 is a powerful program which tells the slave that there is no escape, because the programming runs deep through every fiber of the person.)

Educated Mentality D-1017 (D-1017 is a program to allow the slave to look intelligent when needed.)

Glass House D-1018

Corporate Extrapulation D-1019

Closing In D-1 020

Frog Man D-2000

Catastrophic Indifferences D-2020

Quality Control D-2030

Protocol Virus D-2040

Operation 2000 D-2050 (This relates to Project 2000, which is end time programming.)

Pro-Life-Go D-2060

Conspiracy Action D-2070

Verified Suggestion D-2080

Finish Line Protocol D-2080

Fraternity Leads D-2090

Rotten Egg D-3000

Kaiser Confrontation D-3010

Co-Op Protocol D-4701

Forensic Criterion D-4702

Mediator Response D-4703

Mentor Divisible D-4704

Biopsy Synchroization D-4705 [This is a very harsh program.]

OSH-AMP-RIE D-5000

D.O.A. D-6000

Laser Documentation D-7000

Freak Out [just what it sounds like] D-7010

-[From here on I will select specific programs, and will not review the entire list of programs that she saw the files for.]

Foolish Games D-7060

Periodic Mind Lapse [a forget code] D-7080

Creepy Crawlers D-8040

Shock Permanence [to shock oneself] D-9000

One-For-All D-95452

[punish all for 1 alter's misbehavior]

Counter-Transference DIA-5001

Border-Line-Schizophrenic DIA-5009

[If the slave misbehaves, they can be triggered to act schizophrenic & get themselves incarcerated into a mental hospital for prgrmmg.]

Lens-Reverse-Angle DIA-5011

Canary-Sings DIA-5015

[reporting alters tattle-tale or an alter sings a script.]

Suicidal Mission [just as it sounds] DIA-5017

Mission Completed [go to "sleep" prgm] DIA-5018

Train-Wreck-Perception DIA-5021

Starvation Tactics [starvation prgm] DIA-5022

Bare-Metric Pressure Process DIA-5023

Fundamental Theology [rel. cover prgm] DIA-5025

http://whale.to/b/sp/springmeier.html

Project 2000 412-2000

[This is end-time programming. The word project followed by a number usually refers to the date the project must be completed. Standard methodology for coding then would be that on 4/12/2000 this end-time programming must be completed.] -codes not remembered for these programs which she saw in files-

Candy [candyland programming]

False Memory Syndrome [even in c. 1973 they were setting up the False Memory Syndrome campaign to take down their opposition.]

Forced Brain Wave Activity

Frenzied State [just as it sounds]

Call-Of-Wild [survival techniques]

Hocus Pocus [magic programming]

Mass [cath. mass programming]

Phoe-net-ical Difficulties [obvious]

Self Mutilation [obvious]

Van-der-built [related to Vanderbilts III. family]

Warped-Speed-9 [Star Trek programming]

-(Her med. file no.s of radiation lab experiments are given chptr. 8)-

p_levels.jpg

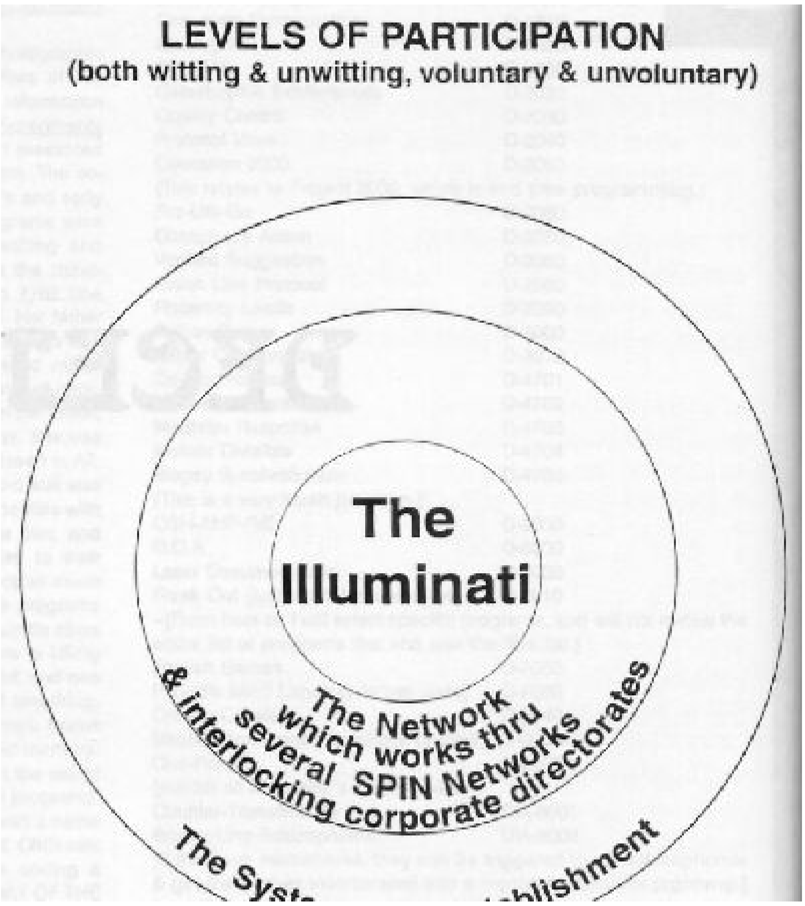
LEVELS OF PARTICIPATION
(both witting & unwitting, voluntary & unvoluntary)
The Illuminati
The Network which works thru several SPIN Networks & interlocking corporate directorates
The Syst
blishment

http://whale.to/b/sp/springmeier.html

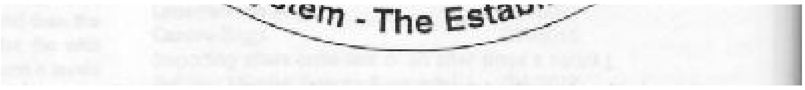

A programmed multiple can work at several different levels of participation.

The Illuminati.

This is the secret hierarchy level. It is secret by virtue of almost all (if not all) its members being programmed multiples from elite powerful bloodlines- This is hardcore generational Satanism that believes in a Gnostic Lucifer/an doctrine, hence, they may be called your elite Luciferians.

The Network.

This level of activity is secret by virtue of its secret ties. It includes the anarchy level of the Illuminati, the various criminal syndicates, the music industry, the various fraternities, new age institutions and people in power all over the globe. It is held together by fear, blackmail, and common bonds of lust and greed. The network includes atheists, self-made satanists, opportunists, and many mind-control slaves. It is far more cohesive and controlled than meets the eye. It is very eclectic. It doesn't matter at this level what you believe, what matters is whose control are you under. This is the hidden seamy power side of the World System.

The establishment, the System.

This level is open for the common people to participate in. This level remains stably operating in their control because of secret election fraud across the board in U.S. elections, extensive blackmail, extensive control of the masses through the establishment media (TV, radio, newspapers), interlocking corporations and government agencies that control the economic life, and many mass mind-control techniques that these groups use. Most people are unaware of how powerful the establishment is. As long as they drift in its current, they will never see the control. It is only when one tries to swim upstream against the current that you find out how powerful the establishment is. The Illuminati sets up controlled opposition to the System, such as the Hip pie movement, militant environmentalists, Hell's Mgels, Neo-nazis, John Birch Society, the Communist Party, etc. Controlled opposition gives people a chance to vent their anger without threatening their control. It also gives them dialectic conflicts which they can control to their advantage.

CHAPTER 5: SCIENCE NO. 5 - THE SKILL OF LYING, THE ART OF DECEIT

The Illuminati have refined the art of deception far beyond what the common man has imagined. The very life & liberty of humanity requires the unmasking of their deceptions. That is what this book is about. Honesty is a necessary ingredient for any society to function successfully. Deception has become a national pastime, starting with our business and political leaders and cascading down to the grass roots.

The deceptions of the Illuminati's mind-control may be hidden, but in their wake they are leaving tidal waves of distrust that are destroying America. While the CIA pretend to have our nations best interest at heart, anyone who has seriously studied the consequences of deception on a society will tell you that deception will seriously damage any society until it collapses.

Lies seriously damage a community, because trust and honesty are essential to communication and productivity. Trust in some form is a foundation upon which humans build relationships. When trust is shattered human institutions collapse. If a person distrusts the words of another person, he will have difficulty also trusting that the person will treat him fairly, have his best interests at heart, and refrain from harming him. With such fears, an atmosphere of death is created that will eventually work to destroy or wear down the cooperation that people need. The millions of victims of total mind-control are stripped of all trust, and they quietly spread their fears and distrust on a subconscious level throughout society.

One problem about lies is that one lie will call for another and then another. It's hard to keep lies single. They seem to want to breed more of their kind to protect themselves. Soon the liar becomes a victim of his own lies, trapped in a dishonest web that demands lots of energy to protect his false fronts. This is the sad fate that the intelligence agencies have painted themselves into. They must maintain groups that oversee their double-agents' lies to insure that the lies that they have disseminated don't contradict themselves. Finally, they have put out so much disinformation, they lose track of reality themselves.

Far from saving this nation, the intelligence agencies have spread the cancer of deception into all walks of life, so that this cancer is contaminating and killing anything of value in the United States. The soon-to-come death of this nation's sovereignty, as well as the destruction of this nation's morals are the results of this cancer. People who have attended high level Illuminati meetings were instructed in how the Illuminati plan to bring in the NWO AntiChrist reign by making everything appear as if it has happened naturally. The Illuminati have decided to camouflage their actions with the creation of normalcy to avert any suspicions.

An example of something which appears to have happened naturally is the O.J. Simpson case, which was planned based on previous murder scenarios which had been successfully covered up. O.J. Simpson was a CIA mind-controlled slave, and the entire Simpson case was concocted as an elaborate effort to cause racial tensions. The Mishpucka, the CIA, the Mob and the Illuminati have all had their dirty hands involved in the entire affair. The entire affair reeks of manipulation and planning. It is not the goal of this paragraph to go into the case, but just to drop a couple details. Joey Ippolito, Jr. is both CIA & Mob. Ippolito at one time lived in Hallendale, FL, a mob housing subdivision which was protected by a police force run by the mob. He has helped run drugs and wet ops for "the Combination" which interconnects with the Illuminati. O.J. Simpson's friend Cowlings worked for Joey Ippolito, as well as O.J. Simpson. Simpson distributed cocaine for Joey Ippolito & the Combination. Simpson's lawyer also is tied to the Illuminati, the CIA, and the mob. One of his lawyers on TV said the trial reeked of government corruption. Nicole Simpson lived next door to Carl Colby (former CIA director Bill Colbys son). Colby's wife and kids have been subjected to mind-control. Colby's wife testified in O.J. Simpson's trial, but was addressed as "Miss Boe" rather than by her name. O.J. Simpson's mother worked for a California State Mental Hospital in San Francisco for 30 years. Many State Mental Hospital workers have children who have been programmed. When one of the jurors in Simpson's case, Tracy Hampton, had her mind-control programming go haywire, she began staring for long periods at a blank TV and hearing voices. She had to be dismissed.

During the Simpson trial, Judge Ito gave Joe McGinniss the best front-row seat that a journalist could have. Joe McGinniss was the coverup author who wrote a book covering up about the McDonald-Fort Bragg Drug Smuggling Case. The McDonald-Fort Bragg Drug Smuggling Case involved the Illuminati drug smuggling operation within the U.S. military during the Vietnam War. On and on the stink goes.

The manipulation of history by those in power has been well-covered over. An example of how mind-control and its role in manipulation of events has been covered up by the perpetrators is an article written in the Journal of the American Medical Association (JAMA) in the Sept. 11, 1967, Vol. 201, No. 11 issue. The article, which was submitted to the magazine from three CIA doctors (Mark, Sweet, and Ervin), claims that riots are caused by brain disease. While the article is correct in the subpoint that only a small percentage of underprivileged urban dwellers participate in many of the riots, the article's thesis is obviously a slide to prevent people from catching on that the small number of deviants who create riots might be under mind-control or might have some other motivation beyond simply being brain-diseased. Any deception, whether it is an exaggeration or an understatement of the NWO's capabilities is considered a useful deception for the Illuminati's double-agents to spread. The german battleship the Bismarck was sunk due to a little lie sent to Germany by a double-agent which underestimated the range of British radar. The Germans, thinking they were out of British radar range, made some bad decisions that cost them the battleship.

DECEPTION DIMINISHES POWER

Knowledge is power, and lies diminish the knowledge of deceived dupes, and therefore diminishes the power of the deceived. Deception obscures the alternatives that people have. It also clouds up various objectives people would work toward. Some people give up certain objectives due to their mis-perceptions that the objective is undesirable or unattainable.

PROGRAMMING DECEPTIONS

In the programming, colors and directions are used. Be prepared to find out that sometime programmers use their creative imaginations such as using the color "octarine," or the direction "TURNWISE" or perhaps "WIDDERSHINS". During the most fundament programming which is done via LSD trips in sensory deprivation tank to lay in foundations of the Alpha, Beta, Delta, Ome and Theta programs, each programming memory will be given a code. Where one popular programming deception takes place that the programmer knows ahead of time h to sequence his memory codes so that instance, the fifth memory is coded as trip, and strenuous methods are used to cover up the memories of the first four trips. The victim's s mind will be told to forget the first four trips. The memory codes are deceptively designed to fool the deprogrammer and the victim alike. Part of the reason the programmer does this, is that they know that IF a therapist should stumble onto these first memories, the backup programming to protect these memories is so severe that the therapist will shatter the victim's mind. Backup programs such as Atom bombs and vegetable programming are locked into place to protect the fundamental programs.

BE WISE AS SERPENTS

The Holy Spirit moved an apostle to write, "We are not ignorant of Satan's devices." Christ warned his disciples to "be wise as serpents and harmless as doves." The Israelites sent out spies before entering the promised land. Within the text of The Art of War by Sun-Tzu (a book studied today by men in intelligence), he discusses "hidden provocation agents" in Book 13.

Sun-Tzu was born in 534 B.C. and lived most likely until after the year 453 B.C. In 500 B.C., some men were farmers, and some were agent provocateurs. Today, both occupations still exist. The modern American farmer is vastly superior to the ancient farmer of 500 B.C., so how does the modern agent provocateur compare? He is vastly superior also. It appears the Word of God is accurate, for it warns that God's people will be destroyed for lack of knowledge.

The difficulty in obtaining honest information in today's Big Brother world is aptly described by an intelligence asset over the Internet, "If you are lucky and work hard, you will find some of the truth. If you are lucky and work REALLY hard, you might find the WHOLE truth...as someone wants you to know it. If you are PHENOMENALLY lucky and really work your tail off, you might even go on to find the REAL truth. But no outsiders...and in fact, very few insiders ever ... EVER ... learn the WHOLE REAL truth."

This book & our two previous books on mind-control) are the result of extremely hard work and numerous miracles of God, and what non-Christians would call lots of luck". The story behind the books is amazing. This book's two authors have had to "swim upstream" for years in search for the real truth. One thing is very clear to this author, during the last seven years of exposing the NWO almost every person who is believed to be a leader against the NWO has tried to impede the work this author has been doing. People need to be aware that the New World Order created their own opposition long before some of us began sincerely trying to expose it. This author's informed opinion is that essentially all (about 98% of the people leading the opposition to the NWO are double agents), and no less than 50% of the therapists are double-agents. In this state, this author knows as a fact that 50% of the licensed therapists working with programmed DID patients are programmed DID (MPD) slaves themselves. Recently, one of the therapists in this area, who the False Memory "Spin"-drome & the Illuminati took down, was a therapist who had also been on a local T.V. talk show revealing that she was a multiple & a SRA victim.

DISINFORMATION TO MAKE THEIR DOUBLE-AGENTS LOOK GOOD

"A Force" was MI-6's group that carried out deception. They would have their double agents pass out CHICKEN FEED (which is what they call classified information that can be thrown out to the public) to establish their double-agents' credentials (BONA FIDES) as agents against the British. Today, there are numerous anti-NWO people who are actually double agents. They are distributing chicken feed to make people think they are legitimate. By the way, it is interesting to note for those who realize how important carousels are to programming that MI-6 (HO in Vauxhall Cross, Eng., with a training ctr. at Ft. Monckton, near Gosport, so. Eng.) is nicknamed (actually its cryptonym) "Carousel" by its daughter organization Mossad (officially aka Central Intelligence Collection Agency). An example of a double-agent who is popular among Christians is an Illuminati witch named Gretchen Passantino, who tours around to Christian conferences belittling the idea of mind-control. Dr. Loreda Fox reports in The Spiritual and Clinical Dimensions of MPD that 74% of women abused by SRA come from "Christian homes." The Christian churches are heavily infiltrated.

SLEEPER AGENTS

In the Vol. 2 book a number of references were made to sleeper agents. The idea of placing someone somewhere in society and letting them lead a normal life for years without ever being used is designed to provide a legitimate smokescreen about what they are all about. Mind-controlled slaves make excellent sleepers. The concept of making sleeper agents in not a secret. The CIA has publicly admitted that they tried to discover long-range sleeper agents in the Los Niñios children of Republican Spain who were the descendants of communist Spaniards who returned to Spain in the 1950's. They also have admitted to having tried to weed out long range sleepers in the Trebizond Greeks who lived near the USSR in Turkey and returned in the 1950's to Greece. As the CIA and KGB mirror-imaged each other in their manufactured Hegelian Dialectic mock dual (which was very real for the "little" person) you can well imagine that the CIA sent sleeper agents against the KGB.

NAMES of TYPES of DISINFORMATION AGENTS

The intelligence agencies have their own lingo for the types of disinformation agents they send against everyone else. So far, we have named only double & sleeper agents. Here are some of their disinformation agents:

AGENT OF INFLUENCE--These agents can be unwitting, under mind-control, or ideologically motivated to use their positions of influence to sway the minds of others. Examples of Agents of Influence are anchor men on T.V., journalists, labor leaders, TV commentators, academics quoted by the media, & some politicians.

CONFUSION AGENT--An agent whose job is to produce confusion by disseminating confounding information.

CONTRACT AGENT--These are the rogue agents, such as the mob, who the CIA get to do particular jobs on contract. Their connections can be denied.

DEEP COVER AGENT--A sleeper agent (often a programmed multiple or person with mind-control programming) who has been a long term sleeper agent.

DISINFORMATION AGENT--This is a highly placed agent who passes disinformation to other governments.

NOTIONAL AGENT--A fictitious non-existent "agent" which is created with a real-looking identity to mislead.

PROVOCATION AGENT--An agent sent in to provoke & destabilize the target group to do foolish things.

SPOON-FEEDER AGENT--Someone who dribbles out legitimate information, this is often done to build up a person's credentials (bona fides). Lots of the people who are pretending to expose the NWO are spoon-feeder agents who provide a little new information, tons of already known secrets, and sprinkle in a measure of disinformation for added fun. Generally spoon-feeders increase their percentage of disinformation once they gain respectability. There are very few people really exposing anything of consequence about the NWO. This author has endured the loss of several of the really legitimate whistle blowers who were friends being assassinated since he began writing exposes.

What this means is that agents for groups that do mind-control may: have been sleepers for many years and look very legitimately innocent, they may give good correct information to our side, they may say all the right things and try to get us motivated to do more than we would want, they may talk about other friends who are giving them information who do not even exist. It takes discernment to spot people who are not on our side. Unfortunately, such discernment seems to be fundamentally lacking within the public at large. For instance, I have seen people choose obvious NWO agents over this author as a source of "information" (which is in reality disinformation). Most people have bought so much disinformation during their lifetime, perhaps it's unrealistic to expect them to purge out all the junk they've accepted. Just as people in the world need to toss out their worldly thinking, people in the church need to toss out all the indoctrination they've gotten from the numerous kinds of harlot churches.

At the moment, the system is set up so that the perpetrators of the mind-control are in control of the credentialing process, so that they can provide their stooges/and agents with the best credentials. As the reader can see, the roots of power behind the mind-control go deep.

TRICKING SUSPECTS

One trick (or variations of it) that has been used with suspects is to arrest them, place the suspect in a situation where the police are in two groups--one group looks like police, the other group looks like the group the suspect has come from. After the suspect arrives, the group pretending to be arrested group members, overpowers the police contingent and escapes to another setting where another police group pretending to be even more of the suspect's group ask him who he is and to explain his credentials. Letting his guard down, the original suspect explains what he is all about, thereby giving them the information they needed in the first place. Variations of this script can be run. English intelligence calls this basic script CACKLEBLADDER because chicken blood is used on the police actors that are overpowered to make them look injured.

THE NAMES OF DECEPTION TRICKS

FOUR FACES refers to pretexts used by agents to get interviews. DANGLE is the craft word for luring a victim into a provocation. A dangle operation would be an operation to provoke a group or individual into a particular action. This was done with Elohim City and many other groups that the NWO is trying to set up as patsies.

STANDARD DECEPTION DEVICES

Agents use BLEEP-BOXES to tap telephones and in other instances to make free-of-cost telephone calls. A CABMAN is a device to remotely activate a telephone with a radio beam. It can be used without entering the building where the telephone is located.

MASKS

The use of masks in the occult world is ancient. For centuries, the gypsies have used them for their hypnotic powers. Special healing masks for their people are kept secret and never shown to the public. Masks have a shock value & fascination value. Gypsy and other occult groups have special rituals to create the masks, including using hair clippings from the person who will wear the mask. Gypsy healing masks are destroyed after the patient gets well. Illuminati programming masks may or may not be destroyed after their use. The Illuminati's mask-making abilities (according to deprogrammed victims of their mind-control) are very high quality. Sometimes the programmers simply wear halloween cartoon character masks that anyone can obtain, to fulfill their role in the programming script that they are involved in during the time.

COVERS

Some beginners who have just started into studying the World Order question why the Illuminati would use legitimate religious covers. Why would the Illuminati want to create a slave who is an evangelist? Why? Because those new converts will go to some establishment church where other programmed multiples in leadership positions will demand obedience (and then support those demands by quoting scriptures that make them seem like they are God's authority over that new convert. Because the evangelist or missionary and the bishop or pastor are controlled puppets, the convert will never get the full truth, just enough truth to keep him working hard for their organization. Even though the convert "got God in my life", the Illuminati never lose control over him.

The Christians have as much vested interest in preventing the exposure of the Illuminati programmed multiples who are big name Christian ministers running Christendom, as the Illuminati has. Imagine what would happen if the world found out that most of Christianity was run by the human-sacrificing, slave-making Illuminati? This is one of the sad effects of the infiltration.

Perhaps the subject of covers can be explained from another angle. The reader knows that the elite like monopolies. They play monopoly for real--for us it's only a board game! To establish a monopoly, you find a good product that everyone wants or needs, and then you eliminate all the competition by either destroying them, or owning the competition yourself.

In the U.S., the Illuminati can't have a one-religion monopoly. In Russia, they had communism with Marx, and

Lenin as the Father God and Gon the son figure. Communism had a monopoly on worship. In the U.S., they have established a monopoly by controlling all the various religious groups. (This author wrote an 800 page heavily documented book Be Wise As Serpents to show the details of how this is done.)

It's not a matter of what they teach, it's a matter of control, so that the elite have a monopoly. And when you, as a mover & shaker in the world, control all these various religions via money, blackmail, & programmed multiples under your leadership, etc. which religion would you pick to emphasize the most? You will pick the one that sells the best, i.e. the best product. And which brand of Christianity will sell the best? The televised charismatic brand will sell the best.

Covers that slaves use to explain what they do in life are almost always "legitimate". A missionary, a military officer, a salesperson, etc. will usually actually do their cover job most of the time. Their cover is their occupation, their service as a mind-controlled slave is almost an unwitting avocation. Organizations are used as covers. The Illuminati use military, social, intelligence, education, banking and other organizations as covers. (See my Be Wise As Serpents book for many of these.) Moriah's front organizations, such as the CIA, in turn use other organizations. Here is just a sampling of CIA fronts, to show the variety of fronts used:

· Asia Foundation was an academic organization created by the CIA.

· Castle Bank & Trust Co. has been a bank in the Caribbean that is a CIA front.

· Forum World Features has been a front created for CIA propaganda purposes and based in London, UK.

· Geschicter Foundation for Medical Research (as well as the Josiah Macy Foundation) was used as an intelligence front to launder money used for mind-control.

· Air-Sea Forwarders, Inc. was the legal corporation name of a CIA front in North Hollywood, CA. The company was involved in moving freight. In the last few years, this corporation sued E-Systems, the company which builds the CIA and the NWO's electronic systems such as their communications satellites. In court, the company proved that it was a CIA front, in spite of CIA denials.

As this chapter provides information about some of the Illuminati/ intelligence connections to Hollywood, bear in mind that this CIA front was proven in court to be a CIA front in Hollywood. A feat that rarely occurs

---

ONE OF THE GREATEST DECEPTIONS OF ALL TIME: DISNEY

INTRODUCTION

For years, I have heard many Americans say that something is terribly wrong in this country & that things are "going to pot", and yet Americans can't put their finger on what exactly is wrong. When I first began to receive reports from victims of Illuminati mind-control about Disney's involvement in their mind-control, I kept an open ear, but I wanted some tangible proof. After investigating for myself, there is now no doubt in my mind that Disney (the man, the movies & the entertainment parks) has been a major contributor to the demise of America, while maintaining a very well constructed front of wholesomeness.

In this chapter, you will learn why Disney is one of the best deceptions of the Illuminati. This author has read a good portion of what is available to the public concerning Disney. This exposé is undoubtedly the deepest on Disney that has ever been done. Perhaps part of my motivation is that I've tired of Christians talking and acting like Disney stands for sainthood.

Christians, who should have known better, are some of the ones who have swallowed "hook, line and sinker" the enormous deception that entails Disney. They feed their children a steady diet of occultism and witchcraft because they have been programmed to think of Disney as wholesomeness and everything that is good about America. Many writers over the years have tried to expose Disney, most have been stopped before they could get their books published. The few authors who have managed have faced vicious attacks on their character & integrity, and have faced enormous struggles against public relations campaigns paid for by the Disneys. The

Disney's power, and the power behind them, has frightened most people away from challenging them. But someone needs to speak on behalf of the victims. Whether anyone listens or not, the victims will know that somebody cared enough to stand up & write the truth. Disney has not only left mind-control victims in its wake, but they have harassed land-owners, stolen employee idea's and left all kinds of hurting victims in their path. Disney has risen to become the unquestionable largest media-entertainment conglomerate in the world, & was ranked company no. 48 in the top 500 companies by Forbes 500.

Observations about HOW THE ILLUMINATI LIKE TO HIDE BEHIND PERFECT FRONTS.

There are numerous Illuminati homes, restaurants, wineries and other institutions that are today carrying out the same type of strict standards upon their employees that Walt Disney Studios maintained. While Hollywood was immersed in moral filth from the start, Walt Disney Studios had strict standards. In the 1930's, Disney had a dress code that required men in ties, and women in sober-colored skirts. If a man looked lecherously at a woman at Walt Disney Studios he risked being instantly fired. Walt was a shining example of the strictest legalism. Even during the '50's, if an employee were caught saying anything considered a cussword such as "hell" they were instantly fired no matter who they were. Walt would not allow his male employees to have any facial hair, even though he himself sported a moustache.

He never allowed employees to have alcohol at the studios, (which might not be a noteworthy standard except that Walt himself drank heavy amounts of alcohol in his private office at work for decades). Initially, Walt was very reluctant to have his young artists, who were being trained by Don Graham, draw live nude models, but reluctantly gave approval. Again the motive was not to serve God, but to make sure the Disney reputation remained untarnished. With the power of the establishment media behind Disney, Walt had nothing to worry about, news about the nude drawing classes and their detailed drawings never reached the light of day. Behind such strict fronts of legalistic morals, cleanliness & soberness, you will often find lots of guilt and high level satanic ritual.

For instance, Hitler (who was by the way also a failed artist & who liked mechanical things more than people) obsessively washed his hands many times a day (out of guilt), and so did Walt Disney. Walt obsessively washed his hands several times an hour, every hour. Walt liked animals & his trains more than people. This author has seen some alters who were forced to take another human's life, and when they relived the memory, the alters then tried to physically wash the blood guilt off of their hands.

Another example is that over the years this author has discovered that many of the exclusive restaurants that are meticulous in every detail are tied in with the mind-control and criminal activities of the elite. Dirty money is keeping the places looking sparkling clean. Walt Disney worked very hard at maintaining a great image for himself and his company.

An example of this, is how he exploded in rage and wrote an angry memo when a Disney character was placed in a beer ad. (Memo mentioned in Thomas, Bob. Walt Disney An American Original. Hyperion, 1994, p. 7.) He had a personal image builder, Joe Reddy, who worked full time to build Walt's image. Joe Reddy was a cigar-smoking Irishman who loved the catholic college Notre Dame's football team. He also was a publicity agent for Shirley Temple. But the Disney deception entails far more than Joe Reddy's decades of image making, and Walt's own abilities to create good images of himself. Just as with Billy Graham (see Vol. 2 about Billy Graham), the entire Illuminati threw their weight behind promoting Walt Disney.

Ronald Reagan and Walt Disney were good friends and both cut from the same die in many ways. Both men were high ranking Freemasons, both came from socialist backgrounds (Ronald's mother was Eleanor Roosevelt's best friend, & Walt's Dad was a socialist leader), both were paid FBI informants, and both were involved heavily in the abuse of mind-controlled slaves. Walt always generously supported Reagan's political campaigns, and in turn Reagan did political favors for Walt as Gov. of California.

For instance, Disney's Mineral King mountain resort needed an access route through the Sequoia Nat. Park at a time when there was lots of congressional pressure to preserve the last stands of redwoods. Gov. Reagan got his friend Disney his road through the park. Reagan served as the emcee for the opening day of Disneyland on July 17, 1990. He returned with Illuminati TV host Art Linkletter for the 35th anniversary. Ronald Reagan & Art

Linkletter both pumped Disney publicly.

Another slave abuser that spent time with Disney was Bob Hope, who would spend time on the golf course with Walt. On the opening day's telecast, cameras showed Sammy Davis, Jr. (a member of the Church of Satan) and Frank Sinatra (a mind-control slave handler) driving the pint-sized Disney ears at the Autopia ride. When Disney celebrated its fifty yr-anniversary with a two hour special on May 20, 1991, the program included people like occultist Bill Campbell and was named "Best of Disney, 50 Years of Magic." For the silver anniversary of Disney World in Oct. '96, the Clinton's were invited to help open 15 months of celebrations. The theme of the anniversary celebrations was "Remember the Magic". A Boy's & Girl's Club sang 'When you wish upon a star' (a popular programming song). Hillary Rodham Clinton (herself an Illuminati Grand Dame and a mind-control programmer) shared with the audience that she and Bill "first brought daughter Chelsea to the Magic Kingdom when she was four." Roy E. Disney, nephew of Walt, told the public that Disney World "is the story of men and women who took hold of a dream and never let go." There is a double meaning to that. Many victims of trauma-based mind-control have taken hold of the illusions that were programmed into their mind secretly at Disney, and never let go.

Among the visitors to Disneyland have been all the American Presidents from Eisenhower to Clinton, over a dozen kings & queens, as well as Emperor Akihito of Japan, Anwar Sadat, and Robert Kennedy (who rode the Matterhorn with astronaut John Glenn.) Both Denmark's & Belgium's kings who are in the Illuminati visited, as well as the dictators of Indonesia, the Shah of Iran and Ceausescu of Romania. (As a side-note Roy E. Disney was forewarned by Arab leader that the Shah was to be deposed.)

Organizations that have been actively working for a New World Order for many years gave big awards to Walt in his early years such as the B'nai B'rith (Man of the Year Award to Walt) and the Chamber of Commerce. In 1936, Walt was given the Chamber of Commerce's annual "Outstanding Young Man" award. The establishment's Yale & Harvard Universities gave him honorary degrees.

Walt Disney biographer Leonard Mosley, who researched Walt Disney for years (as well as writing books on the duPonts, the Dulles brothers, and Hirohito) wrote in his book on Walt Disney, "The studio publicity machines in the film colony had, as usual, gone out of their way to try to persuade me, as a writer for a powerfully influential British newspaper, that this was a city of lawless gods and goddesses, full of clean-living, sanitized stars. "It was even more of a deodorized world at the Walt Disney Studio where the publicity men insisted their boss was faultless--never drank too much, never used a swearword, never lost his temper, never quarrelled with his wife or family, never let down a friend. And woe betide anyone who tried to suggest otherwise. Members of the resident foreign and local press risked their jobs if they dared to write stories inferring that Walt Disney could be domineering, implacable, and unforgiving (as was the case, for instance, before, during, and after the 1941 studio strike). The Disney flacks were capable of exerting heavy pressure on editors and proprietors or, through the advertising pages, against anyone who inferred Walt Disney was not the epitome of well-scrubbed and benevolent perfection." (Mosley, Leonard. Disney's World. New York: Stein & Day, p. 10.)

Disney is perhaps the epitome of Illuminati abilities to create images. They have created great images for things Disney, incl. Walt Disney, Disney movies, and Disney's Amusement parks. In some cases these things have been overrated, in other instances the sinister side to them has been carefully hidden. In order to make movies that contain the typical smut of Hollywood, sex and violence, Disney did a slight of hand and created subsidiaries which Disney runs, which has allowed them to keep their good image. They also never showed the public the hard core porn that was made for years in secrecy for the elite.

Behind Disney's good front lies hard porn, snuff films, white slavery, Illuminati mind-control, and the seduction of several generations into witchcraft. Disney's involvement in these kind of things will be explained in this chapter. Nobody has sold America witchcraft as well as the Disney brothers. Movie after movie has cleverly brought the occult into the warp & woof of American thought, all under the disguise of entertainment. For instance, it was Disney that brought us cannibalism and told us that it was a "triumph of the human spirit" (a direct quote from Disney's Touchtone Producer Robert Watts concerning Disney's movie "Alive" featuring survivors of an airplane crash who turned to cannibalism).

Under the disguise of entertainment & showing us how "triumphant" the human spirit was, they subtly promoted cannibalism. Mickey Mouse plays a leading role in "The Sorcerer's Apprentice." And yet when this author has suggested that Disney movies aren't wholesome, many Christian parents come unglued and have gotten angry with this author. The deceptive image that Disney movies are wholesome is a triumph in Illuminati deception. Parents would be surprised what is slipped into cartoons. In Disney's "The Little Mermaid" the castles are male sexual organs. In one cartoon Mighty Mouse is shown without comment clearly snorting cocaine. Walt Disney Studios Chairman Joe Roth is in charge of Walt Disney as well as subsidiaries Touchtone, Miramax, and Hollywood Pictures, which were all created to camouflage the Disney production of adult films. Disney operates in a clandestine manner regarding the promotion, distribution and rating of the films produced by their subsidiaries. Roth oversaw Disney's subsidiary Hollywood Pictures' Evita film. Evita has as its main start "Material Girl" Madonna. Madonna is in reality a mind-controlled slave who has appeared in numerous underground porn/& ritual porn movies. (This author has an underground catalog from a porn business, that has recently changed its location of business. The catalog offered a film of Madonna performing an actual blood sacrifice.) She also was the main actress in Disney's Dick Tracy film which is reported to be used for mind-control. During an Arsenio Hall show, Madonna, who as a guest acted dissociative, was picked up by the cameras during the show kissing her Baphomet ring.

p_mermaid.gif DISNEY MAKES MALE PHALLUSES INTO CASTLES.

Disney controls the products that are associated with the movies of their subsidiaries. In Evita's case they are marketing hats and other items, as just one more of Disney's countless artificially generated consumerism campaigns. In Ruth Stein's interview of Madonna, Madonna appeared bored with plugging Disney's consumer products. When asked about the tango dresses and hats inspired by Evita that popped up in stores after the film, Madonna said, "Believe me, I have nothing to do with it. Disney is pushing the whole thing." (San Francisco Chronicle, 12/29/96, Datebook section). In one interview Madonna states she wants her daughter to grow up knowing Catholicism, but she doesn't believe that it would be good for her daughter if Madonna married the father of her child from Lourdes, Carlos Leon.

In another interview, Madonna says, "Actually, I'm a very good role model, because I say, 'Look, these are my standards'..." She then goes on to plug homosexuality, same sex marriage, and single families in the interview. Walt Disney stated that it plans to release an album by DANZIG, a heavy metal band whose songs contain "dark themes". The Disney press release announces on its by-line "Mickey Mouse is going heavy metal." Disney's album „BLACK ACID DEVIL" was due to hit the music stores Oct. 30, 1996 during Halloween time. According to Disney this music has no satanic references, but does have "dark, Gothic and sexual" overtones. Glenn Danzig denies that he is a satanist.

CONTENTS IN THE DISNEY DECEPTION SECTION OF CHAPTER 5.

a. an introduction
b. an overview
c. Who was Walt Disney?
  PERSONAL DETAILS
  MICKEY MOUSE
  OCCULT PORN KING
  A possible CHRONOLOGY OF EVENTS surrounding WALT DISNEY'S ILLEGITIMATE BIRTH
  WALT DISNEY'S CHARACTER
d. Who was Roy O. Disney?
e. Who is Roy E. Disney?
  The battle between the two Disney factions
f. What do we know about them in general?
g. A history of Disney Harry Cohn Bank of America Bank of Italy Claude Debussy EPCOT center
  SOME DISNEY people of interest. Warren Beatty Shirley Maclaine Shirley Temple Black Stephen Bollenbach Warren Buffett The Tommy Dorsey Band Michael Dammann Eisner Rich H. Frank The Osmond Brothers Michael Ovitz Frank G. Wells
h. Disney and its mob connections Some MOB HISTORY.
  How the Disney Executives have figured out how to steal land all across the U.S.
i. Disney and its government connections
j. Disney and mind-control
  DISNEY VACATIONS FOR THE ELITE
  MELODYLAND
  DISNEYANA FOR THE PROGRAMMED & OBSESSED.

Mind-control features in Disney movies. Bette Midler
k. Detailed Script of how one Disney movie is used for programming.
SUMMARY
1. Partial List of Sources

B. AN OVERVIEW

Disneyland and Disneyworld are world famous and the pride of America. They are also extremely important programming centers for the Illuminati to create total mind-controlled slaves. Disneyland is also involved with providing a place for rituals, porn and other satanic activities. In terms of deception, Disney movies and Disney Amusement Parks rate as one of the best deceptions. According to deprogrammed ex-Illuminati slaves, the Illuminati in the 1960's needed to shift their programming away from the military bases, because too much publicity (heat) was shined on the military bases. Their goal was to have someplace that people from all over the world could come to without raising any suspicions, and a place which would be the perfect cover for many of their criminal activities.

According to a witness, the Illuminati Programmers got a big laugh out of using Disneyland as a major Illuminati base for criminal activity. Under the disguise of entertaining the world, they carried out money laundering, child slavery laundering, and mind-control. They nick-named Disneyland "the little syndicate of mind-control." When a child of 3 or 4 was kidnapped, they could torture the child and then put him on a ride such as a ferris wheel or carousel that: a. created dissociation from the pain, while also b. going along with some fairy tale programming script.

An abducted child while waiting to be picked up from one Illuminati non-parent caretaker by another, could be kept happy and distracted while waiting for the pickup. For years, Disneyland was an Illuminati center for many of their world-wide activities. Now Disney has created other sites around the world such as EuroDisneyland 20 miles east of Paris and Tokyo Disneyland.

Tokyo Disneyland in 1991 had 16 million people attend. With such huge crowds, it doesn't take much imagination how the Illuminati have been able to do sneaky criminal activities right in front of people, and the public never sees it, in the middle of all the activity. EuroDisney has been a money losing affair, but the Saudis who benefit from its mind-control, gave Disney the money to keep it financially in business. Walt Disney Records is the largest children's record label in the world. Disney through their movies, books, toys, records, etc. has made a tremendous impact on the children of the world. Their movie Return from Witches Mountain was one of the most powerful witchcraft promotions ever made. Ducktails, which has deliberate Monarch mind-control triggers written into the script, is also broadcast in Poland and the former USSR. From the time of the Roman Empire (at least, if not before) the oligarchical leadership, who have been in control of both the Mystery Religions and European aristocracy, have known about BREAD & CIRCUS.

Bread and Circus refers to the concept that IF the masses of people are given entertainment and food staples, THEN they are easy to control. Walt Disney movies have played a key role in providing entertainment for the masses to insure Illuminati control. Walt Disney's friend the Masonic prophet H.G. Wells in his book A Modem Utopia that there would be lots of shows in the New World Order. The World Future Society in a book review in their publication Future Survey Annual, 1993, (ed. Michael Marien, Bethesda, MD: World Future Soc., p. 91) describes Disney: "Control of commodities [such as entertainment] and access to commodities translates into control over people. 'The postmodern US is a massive rush of disconnected commodities, each seeking a moment of our attention." The world of commodities is our soma, and entertainment is the current form of public discourse. Walt Disney World, spread over 27,400 acres of central Florida swamp and scrub forest, 'is the most ideologically important piece of land in the U.S.' What goes on here is the quintessence of the American way. It is visited by over 30 million people a year--not only the major middle-class pilgrimage center in the US, but by far the most important entertainment center in the world. It is clearly Oz, utopia as a marketing device."

Two Disney brothers Walt (Walter Elias) and Roy O. Disney have been at the center of the creation of amusement parks and popular Disney films. In more recent times, two other men, Eisner and Katzenberg have been notable at Disney. Eisner & Katzenberg, as well as others will be discussed later. One of Disney's directors, Victor Salva, was convicted of molesting a boy and filming one of the sexual molestations. Recently

Disney Director Salva produced the Disney movie "Powder". (Victor Salva's sexual molestation conviction was covered by newspaper articles such as Robert W. Welkos of the LA Times, in newspapers such as The Oregonian, Weds. Oct. 25, 1995, A sect.)

The impact of the Disney brothers is monumental. Mickey Mouse teeshirts can be seen being worn by natives all over the world. Disney World and Disneyland are the quest for a large segment of humanity, who often esteem these amusement parks as the highlight of their life. What is highly esteemed among men, is an abomination to God according to the Word of God. The Bible arbitrarily makes this claim, but sadly, research by this author over the years proves that a close examination of Disney & mankind's esteem for "Disney" things does vindicate the Biblical expectation. In other words, as readers of this article will find out, behind the appearance of wholesomeness of the Disney brothers and their creations lays abominations-- some of the most grotesque aspects of generational occultism the world has ever seen. Disney's Magic Kingdom has become an American Institution that impacts people all over the world from the cradle to the grave.

C. WHO WAS WALT DISNEY?

In the large book The Art of Walt Disney from Mickey Mouse to the Magic Kingdom by Christopher Finch (N.Y.: Harry N. Abrams, 1975) on page 11 an interesting and revealing statement is made: "By definition, public figures are known to everyone; yet, even after talking with some of Disney's closest associates, it is impossible to escape the conclusion that nobody really knew him. Always there was some aspect of his personality that was just out of reach." Those who got to know Walt too closely make complaints such as he was "self-satisfied, intractable, and arrogant." He could bring his artists to tears or anger in a matter of seconds. Finch is not the only author who has tried to warn his readers that the public's image of Walt Disney was just that--only a false image. Mosley also writes in his biography of Walt Disney, "Since Disney is regarded by millions of people, particularly in the United States, as perhaps this century's most brilliantly successful creator of screen animation, I think I should make one thing clear right away. I share the general admiration of a man whose cinematic achievements were always so happily inspired and inspiriting. But--and this is where I differ from uncritical idolaters--I have to know all the facts, no matter how unpalatable, as well as the romantic myths about any great man or woman I admire. Many of the myths that have been created by his publicists about Walt Disney are unpalatable, unbelievable, and unsatisfactory because so much of the real Walt Disney has been deliberately concealed.. .Walt Disney...had grave flaws in his character." (Mosley. Disney's World, pg. 9)

Years ago, an Illuminati Grand Master and programmer stated, "If the world only had the eyes to see the fibers which lay under the surface of Walt Disney's image, they'd tar and feather him, and drag him through the streets. If only they knew what Disney's primary goals."

PERSONAL DETAILS

Walt had black hair with a black mustache, and bright quick eyes and was about 6' tall. He used his own facial features to clue artists on how to draw Mickey Mouse's features. He liked specially rolled brown cigarettes which he smoked up to 70 a day. He picked up the smoking habit in the army. He loved expensive Scotch Whiskey, red sunsets, and horses. He had a vacation home in Palm Springs, CA called the Smoke Tree Ranch. He often wore the Ranch's letter STR emblazoned on his necktie. He played lots of golf with Bob Hope and Ed Sullivan at the ST Ranch. His main home was an estate in Holmby Hills. The Holmby Hills estate was located in a plush area where lots of rich show-business families lived. It was located between Bel-Air (an occult word for Satan) & Beverly Hills.

Walt spent many of his nights at the Disney Studios and later he had his own private quarters at the center of Disneyland. He had reoccurring bouts of insomnia. (For his nerves and insomnia he'd take alcohol and tranquilizers.) He'd go weeks on end without stepping foot on the Holmby Hills estate and seeing his family. The main topic at the studio by the staff during different time periods was Walt's bizarre behavior-- he would not be available until late afternoon, when he would emerge from the studio's subterranean maze of tunnels, where supposedly he was "chatting with the maintenance engineers" everyday. The value of his estate when he died was 35 million dollars of which Lillian his wife inherited half.

In his later years, when Disney took a vacation he went to Paris for 3 weeks, and 3 weeks at the Hotel du Cap, in Antibes, and then cruised on Fritz Loew's yacht with Ron and Diane Disney. In England, Walt spent time with the British Royal family and met privately with masonic prophet H.G. Wells. In Rome, Walt visited privately with the Pope and the dictator Mussolini. In 1966, Walt Disney died. Prior to his death he had investigated cryogenesis--being frozen, and it is believed by some that his body is frozen somewhere in California, while others claim he was cremated.

MICKEY MOUSE

According to one source, the inspiration for Walt to create Mickey Mouse came when he was unemployed and saw a mouse in the gutter. There are quite a few stories in circulation as to where the idea came from. Ub Iwerks claimed he thought Mickey up at an animator’s meeting in Hollywood. Walt once said, "There is a lot of the Mouse in me." (biographical article written by Elting E. Morison, p. 131) In fact, Ub Iwerks told Walt that Mickey Mouse "looks exactly like you--same nose, same face, same whiskers, same gestures and expressions. All he needs now is your voice." Walt often did serve as Mickey’s voice. A book put out by Walt Disney Co. in 1988 reveals that Walt Disney told Ward Kimball "Quite frankly, I prefer animals to people."

Walt usually was the voice behind Mickey Mouse, (even though he wasn’t the artist.) His mother was chilly for years about the work Walt did. Around 1940, after much pleading, he finally got her to watch Mickey Mouse. His unsupportive mother (which he would within a few years learn was not actually his biological mother) told him she didn’t like Mickey Mouse’s voice, to which he told her it was his, and then she responded by saying he had a horrible voice. The "cold towel" she threw on Mickey Mouse helped convince Walt to quit making Mickey Mouse cartoons. Very few came out of Disney after that, and the very next Mickey Mouse full-length feature cartoon, Fantasia, had Mickey mostly silent. Walt’s idea for The Sorcerer’s Apprentice was based on some of his own ideas. Walt had had the dream which was used for Mickey Mouse in The Sorcerer’s Apprentice of having "complete control of the earth and the elements." Disneyland and Disneyworld were partial fulfilments of that dream for control.

Walt’s final pet project just prior to his death was the meticulously restored version of the witchcraft film "Bedknobs and Broomsticks." (Disney Magazine, Winter 96-97, pub. by Disney, p. 96 mentions this.) As a programming device, Mickey Mouse works well because it plays on the subconscious genetically transmitted fear of mice that women have. Mickey’s image can help create a love-hate relationship, which is so valued during the traumatization & programming of mind-controlled slaves. Some sources state that Walt’s love for animals came from the time his family had a farm near Marceline, Missouri. Walt began his schooling at Marceline, but continued it after the age of eight at Benton School in Kansas City, MO. Walt’s Dad had a serious gambling problem and passed the spirit of gambling to his son Walt. Walt never graduated from high school. He had a natural love and a flair for art work, although (contrary to his public image) he never became proficient at it. He joined the army in W.W. I as an ambulance driver by lying about his age. During the war, he also chauffeured dignitaries.

He also did some other things that are very revealing. He enjoyed drinking & gambling while in the service, and he ran a scam where he doctored German artifacts picked up on the battlefield to sell to people. War relics were tampered with to get them in shape to get the most money from them possible. Walt took the battle souvenirs - and dressed them up, for instance, coating the insides of helmets with grease, hair & blood and putting holes in them to make them into expensive souvenirs. This shows that Walt was willing to build illusions if it paid. He could be deceptive if he saw an advantage to it.

From gleanings from things Walt said to people, it appears that as a child, he’d seen the darker side of life (for instance, his father had a habit of beating him in the basement) and had had some interest or exposure to magic as a child. Bob Thomas writes, "Walt took a boyish delight in playing tricks on his parents. He was fascinated with magic tricks..." (Walt Disney, An American Original, p. 35.)

After the military, Walt hoped to have a career as an artist. He applied to the advertising agency of Pesman-Rubin. Roy, his brother, claimed that Pesman-Rubin hired Walt as a personal favor to Roy who handled the agency’s account at the bank Roy worked at. Walter lasted a month until the advertising agency let him go due to Walt’s "singular lack of drawing ability." According to Current Biography 1952, in 1923, Walt and Roy had together $290. They borrowed $500 from another Disney, one of their uncles named Robert Disney and began to try to make cartoons. Robert Disney had retired in the L.A. area in Edendale, CA after a successful mining career. Robert had always been close to Walt’s father Elias, and helped Walt and Roy out when they came to

California. Walt loved to study Charlie Chaplin (a member of the Collins family). He scrawled notes about his body language, facial features, and his gag methods. He also read everything he could about animation and cartooning. They worked out of their uncle’s garage in Hollywood, CA. They were finally able to make a good cartoon Steamboat Willie in 1928, which became an instant hit. As with many things in life, the cartoon was not only good, but Walt finally had the right "connections." On Nov. 18, ’28, Steamboat Willie was shown in a small, independent theater without any advance promotion or advertising. But amazingly(!) the New York Times, Variety, and Exhibitor’s Herald all ran rave reviews of the cartoon the next day. Was this an accident? did journalists from all these prestigious periodicals just happen to go to this tiny independent theater? no it was connections.

The reason the elite decided to promote Walt Disney after Steamboat Willie came out as Hollywood’s newest "boy wonder" was to deflect enormous bitterness that had been generated by the Stock Market collapse toward Jewish financiers. Hollywood, even in its first two decades, was known as "Babylon" and "Sin City". The movie industry was well-known to be run by Jews, and many people blamed the Stock Market Crash on the moral degradation that Hollywood had introduced to this nation. There were calls for government regulatory groups to stop the smutty Hollywood films. Edgar Magnin, the spiritual leader of the major movie makers who were part of the Los Angeles B’nai B’rith reportedly encouraged those in the Mishpucka and others who were B’nai B’rith movie makers that Hollywood needed to protect itself by putting Walt Disney in the limelight as a Christian "white knight with family values". (By the way, Edgar Magnin was nicknamed "Rabbi to the Stars", because he was "the Hollywood rabbi".) E. Magnin’s grandfather’s department store chain was one of the first major accounts of the Bank of Italy, and Edgar Magnin had continued his family’s close association with the Bank of Italy. The closeness also came from the Bank of Italy’s close ties to the B’nai B’rith and ADL.

In 1930, the movie industry made a production code which stated that the industry must make a special effort to make movies appropriate for children. Hollywood directly praised Disney in that code as an exemplary model of what the movie industry wanted to do. With the power of the B’nai B’rith and ADL behind him, Walt began sailing to fame. Movie studios that had been turning out smut, with lots of sex and violence all jumped on the bandwagon to show Walt’s clean wholesome cartoons. Walt was the facelift Hollywood needed after the Depression caused Americans to think about America’s morals. Many of the regular movie makers were so corrupt they were out of touch with moral issues, but Walt Disney knew black from white. The Jewish movie makers "pushed the man [Walt] they considered their best hope to the front of the pack" who was billed as a fundamentalist Christian (albeit a masonic "Christian" who rarely stepped foot in a church). (quote from Walt Disney Hollywood’s Prince of Darkness, p. 50.)

Strangely, the biographies indicate that Walt quit doing the actual drawing in 1927, and Walt devoted himself entirely to the development of the cartoon business, such as raising money. In other words, the image of Walt Disney being the artist who has created the Disney cartoon’s is inaccurate. The Disney brothers actually hired many other artists to do the art work. If Walt quit drawing in 1927, and their first marketable cartoon was in 1928, that clearly shows that Walt did not do the actual cartooning. He continued to oversee the work, walking in and rigidly inspecting what was being done to suit his own intuitive tastes. Actually the genius cartoon artist (animator) who made Walt Disney a success was Ub Iwerks, about whom Walt on a number of occasions said was "the best animator in the world". Without Ub Iwerks to take Walt’s ideas and turn them into reality, Walt would never have become famous. Ub was an incredible genius who had a sense of line, a sense of humor, patience, organization and a great sense of what Walt wanted. Walt treated him cruelly at times, interrupting him, playing tricks on him, and not being totally honest with paying him, but he stayed with Walt over the years and made Walt the success Walt became. (The books Disney’s World and Disney Animation: The Illusion of Life have information on the unheralded genius Ub Iwerks.)

Another unknown great artist was Floyd Gottfredson. Floyd Gottfredson drew all the Mickey Mouse cartoons from 1932 until October, 1975--which is a period of 45 1/2 years. Floyd Gottfredson was a Mormon born in a railway station in 1905, and raised in a tiny Mormon town, Siggurd, 180 miles so. of Salt Lake City. In 1931, before Floyd totally took over the Mickey Mouse drawings, he would take suggestions from Walt on what to draw. For instance, Walt puzzled him by insisting he do a cartoon series of Mickey Mouse committing suicide. Floyd had said, "Walt, You’re kidding!" But Walt thought that a series on suicide would be funny. Over the years the Walt Disney products never mentioned Floyd’s name. The bulk of the fans were led to believe Walt did the cartooning of Mickey Mouse himself. (See the book Walt Disney’s Mickey Mouse in Color. Ed. Bruce Hamilton, pub. The Walt Disney Co., 1988.)

Fred Moore was involved in the creation of Pluto and some other cartoon characters. The idea for Pluto was Walt's and it was Norm Ferguson's genius at drawing that took the idea and created the actual images. Walt Disney was awarded 32 personal academy awards for the work that was done by his studios. Walt Disney's famous signature was actually designed by someone else, and was taught to Walt. (Schickel, Richard. The Disney Version: The Life, Time, Art and Commerce of Walt Disney. NY, 1968, p. 34.) Walt could only make a crude Disney signature, so he delegated the writing of the signature to several artists including Bob Moore, Disney's publicity artist. Later, after much practice he learned to make it well enough to do for publicity. Many people who wrote letters asking for his actual signature, and who actually did his signature, thought that they had received forgeries by his staff, because the famous Disney signature was so crude. The nicer looking ones were the forgeries. One cartoon animator who joined Disney in 1940 recalled that Walt told him the first day, "You're new here, and I want you to understand just one thing. What we're selling here is the name Walt Disney. If you can swallow that and always remember it, you'll be happy here. But if you've got any ideas about seeing the name Ken Anderson [his name] up there, its best for you to leave right away."

OCCULT PORN KING

Walt grew up fascinated with the occult and in an abusive home situation. He was fascinated with cartoons, nature and children. He had an intuitive sense for quality cartoons that would appeal to children. At some point, the syndicate got him indebted to them. At that point he was their man. He owed them a debt that they held over him. In secret, Walt became a porn king. A victim remembers that he was sadistic and enjoyed snuff porn films. His interest in children was far from altruistic.

The Hapsburgs of the 13th Illuminati bloodline had a sex salon in Vienna, where a porn photographer named Felix Salten worked. Felix Salten wrote a book Bambi, which was then translated into English by the infamous communist Whittaker Chambers. The elite were just beginning to form the roots for today's environmental movement. The book appealed to Disney, because Disney liked animals better than people. In the book, tame animals view humans as gods, while the wild and free animals see humans as demons who they simply called "Him." The book begins with both free and tame animal viewing humans as rightly having dominion over them. In the end, the animals view all humans as simply being on the same level as animals, a vicious animal only fit to be killed. Disney instructed his animators to make the animals "to be human. I want people to forget they are watching animals." Bambi was to receive a Christ-like manger birth, with the animals hailing him as a "prince." Due to his sexual problems, Walt at one point permitted himself to be subjected to the packing of his genitals in ice for hours at a time. (Elliot, Walt Disney Hollywood's Dark Prince, p. 83.)

Children were instructed to call Walt "Uncle Walt." An example of this were the Mouseketeers. For those who know how mind-control programmers have traditionally liked to be called "uncle" by their child victims, the insistence by Walt to be known as "uncle" is distasteful. From what this author has learned from some sources about Walt's non-public life as a hidden sadistic porn king, it raises questions about other parts of his life. For instance, Kenneth Anger in his book Hollywood Babylon II, p. 192, "Some animators stated that the boss [Walt Disney] seemed to have fallen in love with the boy. There may be some truth in this..." The boy, who Walt fell in love with, was a small young attractive boy actor named Bobby Driscoll who signed up in 1946 with Disney. He acted in Song of the South, Treasure Island and Bobby's voice was used in Peter Pan. Bobby Driscoll was very intelligent and attractive. Did Disney help or abuse him? If Disney was such an upbuilding wholesome atmosphere, & this child actor had everything going for him, why did Bobby become a methamphetamine addict at 17 & die within just a few years? Why didn't his talent & early career lead to something positive in his life?

From those who knew Walt personally one learns that he had an obsession with the buttock part of anatomy. He enjoyed jokes about this part of the anatomy, which he told to his staff quite frequently. The staff edited out many of his crude posterior jokes from cartoon scripts. Two examples that got by the editors are a Christmas special where a little boy is unable to button the drop seat of his pajamas. The little boy's problem in maintaining his modesty is the running gag of the cartoon. In the end, Santa gives him a champer pot. The 2nd example is the paddling machine used on the wolf in The Three Little Pigs. Numerous Disney cartoons feature buttocks of characters provocatively twitching.

AS A WITNESS BEFORE CONGRESS

After W.W. II, Walt Disney was called upon by Hollywood to testify in their defense at the Un-American hearings which were being carried out by congressmen who were concerned about the heavy communist influence within Hollywood. Walt downplayed any communist influence in Hollywood to Congress. Interestingly, Walt's father was an outspoken Socialist Party leader in the United States who advocated a socialist New World Order. He regularly voted for socialist presidential candidate Eugene Debs. One of the first drawings Walt did as a boy was to duplicate the socialist political cartoons he found in a socialist periodical Appeal to Reason that his father subscribed to. When Walt asked in the 1930's how his father felt about socialism's successes, his father Elias said, "Today, everything I fought for in those early days has been absorbed into the platforms of both the major parties. Now I feel pretty good about that." (Thomas, Bob. Walt Disney, An American Original, pg. 147-148)

Walt's movie Alice's Egg Plant (1925) was pure communist doctrine where the red hen (communist) leads the working chickens on a strike against Julius the farm manager (representing capitalists.) The strike at Disney and unionization of Disney in 1940, soured Walt toward communism. The workers at Disney publicly made personal verbal attacks on Walt & he never forgave the humiliation. In spite of his public distaste for communism, his Magic Empire (his castle where he was king) was run like a socialist dictatorship, similar to what the NWO plans. Employees at Disney did not have titles; it was faceless egalitarianism with an all powerful dictator Disney at the top. It was racially elitist too. The only full-time African-American during Walt's lifetime at Disney was a black shoe shine man.

Was Walt a socialist of the National Socialist (Nazi) variety? Arthur Babbitt claims, "On more than one occasion I observed Walt Disney and Gunther Lessing there [at Nazi meetings], along with a lot of other prominent Nazi-afflicted Hollywood personalities. Disney was going to meetings all the time." Lessing was mobster Willie Bioff's crony. Bioff had spent his earlier days running a whorehouse, before coming to Hollywood for the mob.

In the final panel of the Mickey Mouse comic strip of 6/19/40 a swastika appeared. Some people have wondered what this & other "secret signals" in Disney's work meant. Disney was not Illuminati. The powerful elite are very skilled at controlling people that rub shoulders with them, those who are beginning to become independently wealthy. For instance, they destroyed Robert Morris, the great financier of the American Revolution. They simply used Hegelian Dialectics on Walt Disney. Their Unions and the Mob made Disney's studio one of their prime targets. In order for Walt to protect himself from the unions, which he perceived as communist, Walt got help from the FBI and the mob. Walt was vulnerable to the unions, because he treated his workers terrible, with long hours, low pay, in addition to repeated abuses to their dignity. Walt's large number of employees essentially never received any credit or recognition for their years of creativity and hard work, which was all essentially stolen and credited to Walt by the establishment to build his image. (I write "essentially", because someone might find some obscure exception, but across the board, Walt got all the credit for what his creative workers produced.)

Perhaps Walt needed the ego boost from all the purloined public praise which he stole from his staff to be seen as a great animator, because he had wanted to be an artist/cartoonist and failed. The praise helped sooth the wounds. One worker recalls that Walt "had no knowledge of draftsmanship, no knowledge of music, no knowledge of literature, no knowledge of anything really, except he was a great editor." This may not be much of an exaggeration, because Walt was a high school drop-out, who grew up in poverty on a Missouri farm. Walt's first official attempt to direct a film (and last) was the film The Golden Touch in 1935. The film was an embarrassment. Walt had to pull it from distribution. If Walt lacked abilities to animate, and direct, what was Walt's talent? Walt was the driving force, the spirit so-to-speak behind Disney. He was the dictator who was feared enough to demand more from his workers than they knew they could give--and he could get it. He was the driving force that took a mob of artists, and gag creators, etc. and shaped them into a powerful force to make cartoons and later movies. He was the hard-driving genius who knew what he wanted and got others to create it for him. He was the driving force that kept an army of costumed sanitation men meticulously cleaning Disneyland. In normal year, Walt would have 800,000 plants replaced at Disneyland, & Walt refused to put up signs asking the "guests" (visitors) not to trample them. How powerful was Walt? Here is a man who during his lifetime and even up into the 1990's had a rule in the studio & Disneyland that no male employees could have any facial hair, yet he himself wore a mustache for most of his life.

http://whale.to/b/sp/springmeier.html

A possible CHRONOLOGY OF EVENTS surrounding WALT DISNEY'S ILLEGITIMATE BIRTH

It is beyond doubt that Walt Disney was an illegitimate child, but that fact resulted in a long list of mysterious happenings. It also gave power hungry men, something to blackmail Walt Disney with. Because this chapter 5 on Deception is focusing on Disney, and the big boys used blackmail to keep Disney in line, this information is pertinent. The following chronology of events is what this author's believes most likely happened. Without any genetic tests, it is difficult to determine beyond a shadow of a doubt who Walt's biological parents were, and what the actual history of Walt Disney was. Several people have spent many years investigating the real facts surrounding his birth. Many interesting and tantalizing clues have been found. This author believes that the following chronology issuggested by the evidence. (This author's chronology is offered without hundreds of pages of evidence, because the mysteries around Walt Disney's birth are here to stay, no matter what excuses people come up with, and this author doesn't want to stray from the intended purpose of the chapter. This is to show that Walt Disney had a secret bastard birth which gave J. Edgar Hoover --and his superiors-- blackmail leverage over Walt Disney. Walt may also have had gambling debts and an abnormal sexual appetite which also helped entrap him. For those who want more evidence and facts, the following are recommended: Almendros, Mojacar, Corner of Enchantment, p. 83; Interview magazine, no. 242, ""Walt Disney Was from Almeria"", and last but not least Eliot, Marc. Walt Disney, Hollywood's Dark Prince, chapter 11.)

1890--An attractive spanish woman Isabelle Zamora Ascenslo of Mojacar leaves Spain and travels to California to a Franciscan monastery. In the same year, but later on In 1890-Walt's future father Elias, who fancies himself a ladies man, leaves his family to seek his fortune in the gold fields. In California, he meets another newcomer to the state, Isabella Ascensio, and the two newcomers in California have much in common, have a sexual affair and fall in love.

1891--Elias fails to make a fortune and returns to Chicago, but he doesn't forget Isabelle.

1893--Isabelle and Elias have a son, and Elias convinces his wife to accept the baby as theirs rather than have the family's reputation, their marriage, and their family ruined. The son doesn't look like the first two boys at all.

1901--Isabelle and Elias have another bastard son, who Elias brings home and names Walter after the minister of the church he attends. The two bastard sons do not look like the older sons of Elias, and they never have much to do with them, but cling to each other as brothers.

1903--The minister of the church Elias attends finds out about the bastard children and Elias quickly moves out of state so that the scandal will remain secret. Elias has also run up gambling debts.

1905--After moving to Marceline, Missouri, Isabelle is hired as the Disney's maid, so that she has an excuse to move in with them without creating suspicions. She probably does much of the raising and care of the two boys.

1918--J. Edgar Hoover is busy involved with the prosecution of draft dodgers in WW I, and it crosses his desk about the case of Walt Disney committing the crime of forging his parents signature to join the army. Cases like Walt's were watched because people who could be blackmailed could be resources in the future for Hoover. That year, Walt discovered that he had no birth certificate. Waft observes his parents strange reactions concerning his birth certificate & other questions, & begins to deeply distrust his father.

1938, Nov. --Walt's mother dies by gas, and the Disney's maid pulls Elias to safety from the fumes, but Walt's mother dies.

1939-40--Hoover offers Walt Disney to help Walt locate his real parents if Walt will work for the FBI. Either Hoover already knows that he is a bastard child, or he soon learns the truth from an investigation. This gives Hoover blackmail power over Walt Disney, and assures Hoover that Waft will be loyal. Hoover informs Walt Disney of the truth, and then moves to generously protect Disney & his father's reputation. Two FBI men plant baptismal information of a child born to Isabelle in 1890 named Jose Guirao in Mojacar, Spain. This date is 10 years off of Walt's birthdate, and is intended to throw people off track. They can't plant a fake birth certificate for Waft in the records for 1901, because everyone knows from WW I that none exists. Therefore, they plant a fake birth certificate for Walt in the Illinois State records in the year 1890. They hope people will think that somehow a filing error occurred. This way if anything leaks, and worst came to worst, Waft could at least pretend he was adopted and is not an illegitimate bastard. They pay off townspeople in Mojacar to tell a particular story. Townspeople probably receive ongoing payments.

1941--Walt confronts his father with the truth, and his father commits suicide, and his real mother comes to live with him as his maid.

1954--In order to reinforce the myth that Walt was born in Spain, a group of Franciscan monks goes to Mojacar and visibly inquires about the birth records of Jose Guirao and/or Walt Disney. They spend time with the mayor and make sure that everyone connects Waft Disney with Jose, who is a fictitious (nominal) character that the FBI has created records of.

1967--A year after Walt's death, a large group of Americans (a large group was needed because they are not skilled like the 2 FBI men in 1940) pretend to be on "official" business for the American government. They go to Majacar Spain to destroy all the records of Jose Guirao to insure that there will be no spanish claimants to Walt Disney's fortune.

Later to insure that the fictitious story is solidly in place to mislead the few who might get by the cloud of secrecy over Walt Disney, the Spanish government does a favor to certain powerful people and pays an investigator to investigate the spanish origins of Walt Disney. People of the village willingly tell people without any fear or without any fanfare that Walt Disney was born at their village. Unless they have recently done so, the village has never done anything--no monuments, no markers, or anything about the birth site of Disney. They probably didn't do this for years, because some of the village probably knew it was a lie. With the older people gone, the lie has probably become well entrenched as truth and there is most likely some type of memorial to Walt Disney.

WALT DISNEY’S CHARACTER

Because the Disney deception is such a major Illuminati deception worldwide, and because Walt Disney was the major catalyst behind all the Disney theme parks, movies, trinkets etc. it is of importance to examine his character. In studying historical figures, this author has tried to get to the rock bottom truth. One may ask, how can this be done? -especially since there have been decades of myths spread by the establishment and their media? The following procedure which has worked with other historical figures was also done by this author with Walt Disney.

The first part of this author’s own procedure is to study everything that one can find on the man, paying special attention to what bias and vantage point another author comes from. Special attention is also paid to biographers who try to give the whole truth as they have found it, rather than approved biographies that repeat myths, platitudes, and flattery. The investigator has to be careful because there are authors who deceptively say in their introductions that they are "detached investigators" who are "going to be painfully honest in their reporting" when they actually are skillful coverup artists for the person they write about.

When your author, Fritz Springmeier, finished investigating written material about Walt Disney, then I mentally placed what I knew on the shelf temporarily, and did a handwriting analysis based on the scientific principles of Graphoanalysis as well as the broader field of Graphology. This author is a Certified Graphoanalyst who has done handwriting analysis professionally. Using Graphoanalysis/graphology is an excellent way to get an unbiased very deep look at a historical figure. It is a way to by-pass all the propaganda and myths. However, a close historical look and the handwriting analysis (of various historical figures) have always matched each other, as they did in this case too.

Here is what was found. The following paragraphs are how Walt was in the 1920’s. The personality profile you will read did not endure. Under the pressure of micromanaging Disney Productions as well as living with financial stresses, by the 1940’s, Walt could be found in rages giving rough treatment to his wife, and rough spankings to his two children. He went to psychiatric counselling to cope with the stress. And unfortunately with the progression of time, by the 1960’s Walt had become a sadistic egotistical alcoholic. One biographer described him as "...a bully and a know-it-all" (Disney’s World, p. 220) Even then Walt had men working for him, such as Bill Walsh (who had been a orphan as a child) who worshipped Walt.

But here is how he was in the 1920's: Walt was a self-motivated individual with lots of energy which was constantly seeking some outlet. (People have written much about this trait of his.) He was more the giver than the taker in relationships. (In the first few years, when he was responsible for making business contracts he often gave away his work without setting prices for profits. He even wrote letters to his boss to the effect that his first priority was good cartoons not profits, and that he'd work without profits, but he did want some appreciation for his work. That was his sensitive nature showing.) Walt wouldn't wait for others to come up with an idea or someone else to make a move--he was there first.

He could communicate his ideas with clarity and ease and move easily from idea to another. (He would storm into Disney Productions and spew one idea after another into his workers' ears.) He enjoyed competition. He had a quick mind and keen perception. He frequently acted on intuition and impulse, taking chances and endangering his own security. (He frequently gambled all his life savings and everything he could scrape together on a project.) Long projects bored him. (Fortunately the real tedious work of cartooning was done by a large staff of artists.) House chores and repetitive chores bored him and he avoided them. (He was absolutely a total slob around the house as a bachelor.) He was impatient with vague philosophies, he liked concrete realities.

He was difficult to get along with because he had both a playful side (even to the point of cruel practical jokes) to his personality and an aggressive intolerant impatient side that wanted to achieve. Naturally, people around him were disconcerted because on a subconscious level they never knew which side of him they would deal with. (The reference series Current Biography "Disney" article p. 248 gives the following Walt Disney quote, "We don't even let the word 'art' be used around the studio. If anyone begins to get arty, we knock them down.")

He was geared for action. He was always inventing ways to get what he needed. He could be explosive when provoked. (The old time associates of Walt remember his explosive temper.) He was a person of dynamic energy, sensuality and keen thinking, and a disciple of the pleasure principle. Because his father was so abusive and misused his position of authority, Walt came to be deeply ingrained with defiance toward authority. (The themes of his films repeatedly sympathize with those who rebel against authority, and the police and other authority figures are consistently shown as absurd. One way he expressed irresponsibility was with lively dance scenes, which has been a hall-mark of teenage rebellion during the 20th century. "Comic anarchy reaches its fullest expression in Alice Rattled by Rats, which shows what the rats do when the cats goes away!) He felt that rules were for others to follow. (That is one reason he would step outside of the law and commit illegal acts. This is one trait that may be responsible for some of the criminal activities Walt ended up participating in.)

Walt also didn't like to be closely supervised. (He wanted to manage his Disney Magic Kingdom as if it were his own kingdom. He wanted to be an authority figure, and indeed became the dictator of his Magic Kingdom. When his workers differed with his own views he felt that they were infringing upon his own inalienable rights as an individual.) He was somewhat of a melancholic temperament, that type of perfectionist who still enjoys life. He felt a need to protect himself against intimacy with others. He was most home in a setting which he made for himself. Walt had the traits of an executive. He was slow to reveal his innermost feelings, and definitely set his own goals. Walt was one of those persons that when the going got tough, he hung in there. Likewise he would cling to his ideas, plans, and possessions. (His stubborn refusal to allow his brother Roy to stop the creation of Disneyland led to events that split the brothers. His determination to succeed was taken advantage of by the crime syndicates to blackmail him with some debt. In order to get his dreams, he was willing to give them what they wanted.)

A clue to Walt's macabre sense of humor, at times almost a graveyard sense of humor, and his high tolerance of seeing pain in others, is that Walt was seriously thinking of volunteering again as a medic after the W.W. I fighting in France was over, when volunteers were needed for the Balkan fighting. Walt loved animals more than people. The only human being that he had rapport with while growing up on the farm was his Uncle Ed (who he called Uncle Elf), who looked like a cross between a leprechaun and a prune. Uncle Elf could make animals sounds and bird whistles to Walts delight. Walt loved the charm of the farm and nature and he loved royalty, pageantry and a strict social hierarchy such as Freemasonry provides. He often wove a combination of the barnyard in with royal parades and other trappings of royalty.

For instance, in Alice the Piper, the King Hamlin is a farmer who sleeps in a farmhouse. In Puss in Boots the local king lives in an authentic palace incongruously placed in a village. His early film Alice's Day at Sea includes both the features of a royal court and an American circus. In typical Disney disdain for authority, he pokes fun at criminal fraternal groups with their rituals and passwords in Alice & the Dog Catcher, Alice Foils the Pirates, and Alice's Mysterious Mystery. And while he was a secret FBI agent, he went against Hoover's wishes and poked fun at the FBI's authority. Walt was loyal to what he believed and could be loyal to those individuals who he deemed worthy of his loyalty, but he didn't want anyone to have authority over him. (Walt was a 320 Freemason & an occultist, he was loyal to that philosophy and loyal in his early years to his older brother Roy O. Disney, who was a father figure to him.) If anyone at the studios agreed with him when he was angry at his brother Roy, he or she risked losing their job. Both brothers were protective of each other, and felt they were the only ones who could criticize the other one.

D. WHO WAS ROY O. DISNEY?

Roy O. Disney was born in 1893, and his brother Walt in 1901. They had three other brothers, but Roy and Walt (1901-1966) were only close to each other and not to their other brothers, who didn't resemble them. Walt was named Walter Elias, his middle name derived from his father's first name. The Disney family had immigrated from Ireland to Canada and then to the U.S. The father of the brothers as stated was Elias, and their mother of scottish descent, who may not have been the biological mother, had the maiden name Flora Call. Roy died in 1971, shortly after the opening ceremonies for Walt Disney World. He kept his promises to his brother to build Walt Disney World. He reneged on his promises concerning the city of Epcot (which was derailed into becoming EPCOT).

Roy O. during the 1930's lived in North Hollywood. Roy's family later located in Napa Valley, CA, and was associated with the Illuminati kingpins in the area. Napa Valley has been nicknamed the Valley of Kings. This "Valley of Kings" plays a major role in the dirty activities revealed in this chapter. Roy 0. Disney played a bigger role at Disney Studios than people realize. For example, it was Roy O. who made the decision to cut 45 min. out of Fantasia, so that Walt's pet project could be distributed to movie theaters. Roy O., considered by some insiders as the more evil of the two brothers, kept the financial books for the Disney's down through the years. It is known that Disney kept two books during the 1950's, so it is hard to believe anything except that Roy 0. was fully aware of how Disney brought in their money. The big boys always kept the financial screws to Walt and Roy. The big boys often figured out scams to take their money. When the Disney brothers had an arrangement with Columbia Studio (run by Harry Cohn) they were advanced $7,500 for each cartoon which cost them an unprofitable $13,500 to make. Further, Cohn liked to cheat them by not sending them their money, and taking a ridiculous amount of time to pay them what he owed them. The cash flow problems of the Disney brothers also came from Walt's desire to keep improving and upgrading the technology they used. When Walt went to color over Roy's objections, Disney's profit margin was damaged and the studio was left with shortages of cash. In 1937, Walt's repeated gambles with cartoon production ideas caused Roy O. to say, "We've bought the whole damned sweepstakes."

From 1940 through 1946, Disney lost money every year. In '46, he lost $23,000. Finally in 1947, things turned around and the Disney studio made a profit of $265,000. Cartoons and movies were not really big money-makers for the Disney brothers, until it was realized that old films could be replayed on television. Overall, from the 20's through the 50's, the Disneys may have broke even with animation. This is why Disney Studios at Christmas, 1931 was unable to pay its payroll.

Pinocchio cost $2.6 million to make in the late '30's, an amount hard to retrieve at that time from the box office, and Fantasia's original release in the '40's was a dismal financial failure. When Sleeping Beauty was released in 1960, it was a loser, movie goers were apathetic towards it. The real money made by the Disney brothers in the 1930-1950's came from the merchandising of Disney products, the production of underground hard porn, and the kickbacks from various groups which used Disney for mind-control programming, and money laundering.

When Walt died, his shares in Disney were worth $18 million. His family all in all held 34% of the stock in Walt Disney Productions. Roy O. Disney's daughter Dorothy Disney Puder & husband Episcopalian Rev. Glen Puder purchased property at 1677 Sage Canyon Rd., Napa Valley east of Rutherford. (This is close to the Rothschild's Opus One Temple mentioned in VoL 1.) O.J. Simpson's lawyer Johnnie Cochran Jr. was in the Rothschild's hard-to-enter Opus 1 when the jury arrived at a decision in O.J. Simpson's case.)

It is very typical for Mafia families in south Boston to have one family member in the clergy & one full time in organized crime. (See author's Be Wise As Serpents for an expose on the Episcopalian Church, which is simply a branch of Freemasonry.) All kinds of interesting Mafia figures, Illuminati, and Bohemian Grovers live up the Sage Canyon Rd. This is an area that has a large well-kept cemetery for pets. Frank Well's sister and Rich Frank, who will all be discussed later in this chapter, also live on Sage Canyon Rd.

E. WHO WAS ROY B. DISNEY?

Roy Edward Disney (nephew of Walt) is the son of Roy Oliver Disney (brother of Walt). Sometimes he has been called Junior. The 9/5/94 Newsweek story on Disney's Magic Kingdom called him "Keeper of the Flame." Roy is an executive with Walt Disney Co. at 500 5. Buena Vista St., Burbank, CA 91521. He has worked as an asst. producer at Walt Disney Co. from 1954 to 1977. He has also been the vice-pres. of Walt Disney Co. He is president of Roy E. Disney Prodns. in Burbank. He is chairman of the board for Shamrock Broadcasting Co. As if that weren't enough, he is on the board of directors for St. Joseph Med. Ctr., fellow U. Ky. Recipient of the Academy award nomination for Mysteries of the Deep. He is a director of the Guild American West, the Writers Guild, which is important. He belongs to the 100 Club, the Confrerie des Chevaliers du Tastevin, and St. Francis Yacht Club. He likes speed boat racing.

Roy E. Disney was the cocky son of Roy O. He married a gal named Patricia. He was merely tolerated by his uncle Walt, especially after Roy E. made some snide remarks about Walt's plans for Disneyland, which he and his father opposed until Walt Disney personally got the project going. Walt's son-in-law Ronald Miller is one of the Disney clan who can't stand Roy E. The two never liked each other, and in the power struggle between them after Walt's death, Roy E. won and ended up with Disney. Although people called Roy E. "Walt's idiot nephew", he eventually (with the help of his father & outsiders) won the various power struggles at Disney after Walt died, and is now a powerful figure. Roy E. Disney and Stanley P. Gold work together in various ways, and are both on the present Disney Bd. of Dir. They are friends and worked to prevent hostile takeovers of Disney in 1984. Gold is in charge of Shamrock Holdings, Inc.

(Chapter 5 page 2)

The battle between the two Disney factions

In 1953, the two brothers and their respective sides of the family split when Walt created RETHAW corporation. The two sides have fought ever since. When Walt Disney created RETLAW (his name Walter spelled backwards), this alienated his brother Roy O. & Roy's side of the family. Without going into all the details, what RETLAW did was cut Roy O.'s side out of the money that was to be made. But Roy's side didn't stand by and idly let their share of the pie be lost, they fought back and held their own.

Their big break came when Michael Milken and his band of junk bond artists carried out a "greenmail" on the Disney Corp. Only a few insiders know how greenmail works. It is a legal form of blackmail. Milken would work with his friends Saul Steinberg, Sir James Goldsmith, and Carl Icahn. Milken would provide them the financial clout, to make them look financially capable of financially purchasing a corporation that they had selected as a target. According to insiders, Milken got 40% of the upside of any "greenmail" that went right. The targeted corporation would learn that someone like Saul Steinberg was going to buy them out. In order to prevent the buyout, and to keep their jobs, the officers of the targeted corporation would get frantic, and either do suicidal refinancings, or buy the stock of the potential acquirer for much greater prices than the Milken group paid for them. The "greenmail" artists would then take their loot and go on their way. The stockholders of the targeted company are the real losers of "greenmail", because the management of the corporation in order to finance their protection spends the stockholder's money, takes on new debts, and deprives the stockholders of some profit-making potential of their shares.

Michael Milken's group made feints to take over a large number of corporations, including Walt Disney, Phillips Petroleum and Avco. Saul Steinberg made what looked like the beginnings of a sincere hostile takeover of Walt Disney through Reliance. At one point Reliance became Disney's largest stockholder. Steinberg filed an amended 13D saying he intended to acquire 25% of the corporation. The CEO of Walt Disney, was Walt Disney's son-in-law Ron Miller. Saul Steinberg is a dear business partner with London's Jacob de Rothschild. Originally, Ron Miller (Stanford Univ. grad.) and Ray Watson (a Bohemian Grove member from Stanford Unive.) of Walt Disney's management brought in the Bass brothers to help them deal with Saul Steinberg's takeover and to buy and develop land (esp. in Florida). Ray Watson was Ron Miller's key right hand man to run things. The Bass brothers are mafia. Disney acquired the Bass Brother's Arvida, and brought the Bass brothers into Disney's management. The Basses sold their stake in Texaco back to the oil co. & then used this money to bolster Disney. Sid Bass & Chuck Cobb (chief exec. Arvida) worked out a deal with Disney. Arvida (sold to Disney for $200 mil.) would profit from developing Disney land in FL & Disney would profit from the new financial strength that getting Arvida would provide. Arvida owned oil fields, theme parks, and had helped create planned communities.

For Ron Miller, on the one side was the Illuminati and the other side of things was the mafia. He didn't trust either, but Steinberg's takeover could eliminate Disney's management and both he (and Roy E. Disney) wanted to save Disney from a takeover by Steinberg. At first, Roy E. wrote a letter to Ron Miller & the other board members stating his concerns about the acquisition of Arvida For Disney management, at least the Bass brothers would let Walt Disney continue to make their family movies. After the Bass brothers joined the Disney management (and became one of Disney's major stockholders), they soon joined sides with Roy E. in a management fallout over whether Disney should buy Gibson Greeting Card Company. With enough votes on the board, they sent Ron Miller packing. With Ron Miller, and those management men aligned with Walt's side of the family gone, then CEO Michael Eisner, Frank Wells, Rich Frank, and Jeffrey Katzenberg and some others made the modern Walt Disney Corporation.

Disney's Touchtone studio which was mentioned above in connection to the movie Alive was created in 1984 by Walt Disney's son-in-law Ronald L. Miller. Ron Miller's management style was lackluster. The new management has really gone gang busters. Although Walt's side of the family is out of the management end of Disney, they still receive financial rewards from various Disney enterprises. The Bass brothers acquired more land for Disney in Florida. But under their tutelage, Disney now has a management team that is skilled in land grabbing techniques. The Bass fortune began with Perry Bass, who created a company called Bass Enterprises. In 1969, Perry retired and turned things over to his eldest son, Sid Richardson Bass. Sid has three younger brothers Ed, Robert and Lee. The Basses owned 27% in Prime Computer, as well as sizable real estate and oil holdings. The Bass brothers founded a local prep school in Ft. Worth, TX. Their HQs in Ft. Worth is full of modern art.

The Bass brothers were very clever in their deal with Disney. In exchange for their $14 investment in Arvida, they had gotten (over a period of time) $950 million dollars worth of Disney stock. In 1985, they liquidated Bass Brothers Enterprises and divided the assets between the four brothers. Sid Bass was able to shift his interests from finances to culture and high society.

One of the Bass brothers is involved with wineries in Napa Valley. The Bass Brother's financial strategist was Alfred Checchi, now of Beverly Hills, who has been a supporter of Mishpucka member Sen. Dianne Feinstein (D-Calif.). Roy is involved in criminal activities, and several people investigating him have been bluntly warned that if they continue, they will see their children murdered. Napa Valley's Illuminati activity also connects in with CIA activities as well. The Napa Valley Illuminati families all have CIA connections. For instance, British millionaire Kenneth Armitage, who had to flee from England to avoid arrest on numerous charges of theft, deception and false accounting, had some of his good friends in the Napa Valley, such as Dr. John Duff, Johnny Beck, & others. Armitage has since mysteriously died in prison in England. Armitage had intelligence connections which tie in with twilight world of the criminal activities of the numerous intelligence acronym monsters. Also his company was authorized to provide people with Central American government documents.

There is more-- much more to sordid affairs which swirl around Roy Disney. Napa Valley, where many members of the Disney family live, has the Illuminati's Opus One temple owned by Rothschilds, as well as two roads lined with meticulously kept wineries owned by Illuminati kingpins and connected via secret underground tunnels. To top off this incredible collection of Illuminati wineries (Rothschild's, Mondavi's, Rutherford's, Christian Brother's, Sattui's etc), on the north end of a series of wineries on highway 29 lays the CIA's medieval-looking Culinary Institute of America Greystone (at 2555 Main St., St. Helena, CA 94574), where numerous people have suffered torture. The Greystone Culinary Institute of America recently had the person who runs their campus store mentioned in House & Garden, Sept. '96.

F. WHAT DO WE KNOW ABOUT THE DISNEY FAMILY IN GENERAL?

Several members of the Disney family came to England with William the Conqueror. They were not known as Disney then, but because they came from the French Norman town of Isigny, they took the name d 'Isigny, and anglicized it into Disney. Walt had two daughters, Diane Marie (bn. 12/18/33) and Sharon Mae. Diane made some revealing comments when she said, he didn't spoil us. Like a lot of adolescent girls, I was crazy about horses, and I got quite good at riding. I yearned for my own horse, but Dad wouldn't buy one. And we didn't have a lot of clothes and other things." For being one of the richest men in the nation, Walt can't be accused of having spoiled his children. He was also famous for his ten cent tips at restaurants, which became the talk of the town.

Sharon Mae was adopted and arrived at the Disney home 12/31/36. (She died in '93.) The adoption was kept very secret. The newspapers around the country announced that Lillian had given birth to Sharon, and the Disney family kept up this lie for years. The reason given for Sharon's adoption was that Diane needed a playmate. For years, Walt Disney didn't care much for Sharon and seldom acted like he even knew her name. Walt had wanted a son, but his wife wanted to adopt a girl, so it was a beautiful girl that Lillian picked out to be a companion for her first daughter. When Sharon was kindergarten age, Walt would take her to the carousels in Griffith Park on Sunday afternoons. Sharon was sent to private schools. She went to Westlake School for Girls, and later was shipped off to Switzerland to a girls' boarding school. She had soft blond locks and was attractive. In June of 1948, Walt took Sharon, who was then an attractive 12 yr. old to Alaska with him for about 2 months. For most of this trip Walt and Sharon were alone together.

For a father, who had ignored Sharon for years, now Walt was totally obsessed with Sharon. He bathed Sharon every night, combed her hair, washed her underwear, and carefully dressed her each night from head to toe before taking her to nice restaurants. He even followed her when she sleep walked. Why was Sharon a dissociative person? That summer in Alaska, Walt and his personal pilot took a trip in August to Mt. McKinley, AK. Both were drinking scotch whiskey and they barely missed hitting a mountain, and almost ran out of fuel before finding a runway. Sharon first married a presbyterian Robert Borgfeldt Brown. Later, Sharon went on to marry William Lund. Years later, Walt's wife Lilly even prevented a biographer from revealing that Sharon was adopted. Sharon died relatively young.

It is important to look at the Disney family rather than just Walt Disney in trying to understand the Disney phenomena. For instance in 1958, the Wall Street Journal mentioned that Lillian B. Disney was beneficial owner of over 10% of common Disney stock. Lillian, Walt's widow, quietly purchased property in Napa Valley and moved there in the late 60's. She bought the property through Walt's Retlaw Enterprises and the Lillian Disney Trust. Lillian and her 2 daughters ran Retlaw for years. Diane Miller, her daughter, also bought land and moved to the Napa area. The Lillian Disney Trust bought the Silverado Vineyards, which Diane & her husband manage as "gentlemen growers" as they call it.

This side of the Disney family is shunned by the Illuminati insiders in the Napa Valley, as well as by the Roy O. side of the family. Although very private, there are occasional moments of publicity from Diane Disney Miller, when she donated wine for a fund raiser for the Planned Parenthood Shasta Diablo held at the estate Niebaum-Coppola, owned by director/producer Francis Ford Coppola. Francis F. Coppola comes from an old mafia family. He owns a big winery & directed Disney's Caption EO film. Locals in the Napa area do not trust any of the Disneys, especially the Roy O. side of the family. There are other Disney's who tie in with the occult world. Wesley Ernest Disney, a 32° Mason & Shriner, who was a U.S. Congressman, a state official & lawyer in Kansas who had a brother Richard Lester Disney-- who is a Rhodes Scholar and a Mason too. Wesley Ernest Disney, by the way began as a lawyer in Muskogee County (a Satanic controlled county), and was a Christian Scientist. He lived in Tulsa, a powerful city of the Illuminati hierarchy. Doris Miles Disney has been a writer of occult fiction, such as The Magic Grandfather the Chandler Policy (1972) and Trick or Treat (1972) as well as many other occult novels.

G. A HISTORY OF DISNEY

"The story of Disney's silent film career is not so much a struggle for artistic expression as it is a fight for commercial stability." During the 1920's, Walt stayed safely within the confines of comic animation as defined by others, such as the producers of Felix the Cat, Koko the Clown, and Krazy Kat. In other words, when many of the ideas were coming from just himself, Disney's movies were not any better than others. In the 1930's, Disney got some of the best talent available and he began to settle for only the best results from that talent. With the mob, and the Illuminati behind him, and driven by an indebtedness to them, Disney began to achieve outstanding results in animation. Between 1924 and 1927, Walt Disney made a series of 56 silent Alice Comedies which used three different girls (6-year-old Virginia Davis, Margie Gay and Lois Hardwick) to act as Alice who romps around in a make-believe cartoon world. These cartoons combined live action and animation. By the time the series was done, Walt Disney wanted to try working solely with animation.

Margaret Winkler in NY (who married Charles Mintz) distributed Walt Disney's Alice Comedies. From the beginning, children were the center of everything Walt did. The occult world that backed Walt, as well as Walt himself, believed that if they could bring out "the child" (that part of a person called "the child" by various psychologists), then they could appeal to the curiosity and feelings of the "child" part of adults. If it worked with adults, they could do the same with the child part in children. They knew even in the 20's & '30's what had to be accomplished in the secret Great Plan for a New World Order. The Illuminati Great Plan called for family life to be destroyed, for children to rebel against their parents, and for the world to become more violent. Children needed to immerse in images of violence so that a violent society could be created.

For instance, the 1925 film Alice Stage Struck shows little girl Alice strapped to a log leading to a buzz saw. They also wanted to make occultism--witchcraft the common belief of the American people. The Illuminati felt they could bring in witchcraft if they appealed to the curiosity of the child in every adult. For instance, the Donald Duck cartoon Corn Chips (1951) shows Donald harassing Chip and Dale who then get back at him by stealing a box of popcorn and spreading it all over the front yard. Now what does a cartoon like this teach kids? It teaches that stealing to repay a grudge is O.K. and that doing pranks is funny.

In Disney's 1920 films, he shows kids cutting school, shoplifting and playing hookey. He shows Alice running away from responsibility to have adventure. He shows prisoners escaping and hobos escaping work. His films are expression of misbehaviour being successful. What does this teach children? In the 1951 cartoon, Get Rich Quick Goofy wins money at poker and his initially angry wife who doesn't like gambling forgives him when she sees how much he's won. Goofy indicates that they can have a spending spree by telling his wife, "Easy come, easy go!" The gambling spirit is a very powerful spirit that the Illuminati want to instill in this nation. How can a cartoon that promotes gambling be wholesome for children?

Lt. Col. Dave Grossman is a military expert on how to condition people so that they will kill. He writes in his superb book On Killing (Boston, MS: Little Brown & Co., 1996) that the same process that the government has used to condition soldiers to kill, is being used by the entertainment industry. The only major difference is that in the military, men are taught to kill only on command, while our children are being taught to kill whenever they want to via TV's "entertainment." Grossman states on page 308, that the conditioning to kill begins with cartoons. "It begins innocently with cartoons and then goes on to the countless acts of violence depicted on TV as the child grows up... .Then the parents, through neglect or conscious decision, begin to permit the child to watch movies rated R due to vivid depictions of knives penetrating and protruding from bodies, long shots of blood spurting from severed limbs, and bullets ripping into bodies and exploding out the back in showers of blood and brains." While children see horrible deaths on T.V., they learn to associate this suffering with entertainment, pleasure and their favorite soft drink, their favorite candybar, and close intimate contact with their date. (See On Killing, p. 302)

Disney has the appearance of Wholesomeness; this appearance is quite deceptive. A close study of Disney cartoons will reveal lots of violence that could not be depicted if the violence was actually real life & not animation. It's the wholesome front which is one of the deceptions that makes Disney cartoons & films so dangerous. Yes, the image of Disney has been that its cartoons are wholesome. No wonder Illuminati mind-control programmers have laughed at how naive the American public is toward Disney. The Disney Gargoyles cartoons are a television series that is pure demonology. The story line is that a race of demons protects New York City. One of the Gargoyles is even named Demona. The Illuminati programmers are amazed at how stupid the masses of people are, and how easily deceived.

How the Disney movies are used as programming scripts is very involved so only one detailed example is given at the end of this chapter. The Illuminati and Mafia knew that Walt had the ability to get the job done that the Great Plans called for. (Source: confidential interview.) They knew they had the "carrots and the sticks" to get him to cooperate. There is no doubt that Walt was a hard worker who in turn expected high standards from his employees. One co-worker of Walt wrote, "Walt made a simple statement, that you can lick them with 'product' if you make your product good enough, they cannot deny it.. . .In Walt's estimation, everything that was done had to be executed with a great deal of thought and finesse." Neelands, Barbara, compiler. About Ben Sharpsteen, article by David R. Smith (2nd Impress.) Calistoga, CA: A Sharpsteen Museum Reprint, pg. 2-3.

One big turn in Walt's outlook toward quality came in April, 1927 when the head of Universal Studios wrote a scathing report on the quality of Disney studio work. It forced Walt to realize that up to then he had been slipshod and sloppy. He resolved to never take the easy way, but to work with dedication toward making his drawings come to life with character and interesting situations. In 1922, Walt made a film Cinderella. This is not to be confused with the later animated film also of the same title released in 1950. The 1950 feature was re-released numerous times. The Alice cartoons were made with a 6- year-old girl playing Alice. The first six Alice comedies had extensive live-action beginnings, and then went into cartoon. A few of the 1920's Alice silent cartoon titles include:

Alice's Wonderland (1923)
Alice Hunting in Africa (1924)
Alice's Spooky Adventure (1924)
Alice Plays Cupid (1925)
Alice Cans the Cannibals (1925)
Alice Rattled by Rats (1925)
Alice Chops the Suey (1925)
Alice Charms the Fish (1926)
Alice the Whaler (1927)
Alice the Beach Nut (1927)

After the Alice Series, Disney began a fully animated series called Oswald the Lucky Rabbit. Here we see the occult concept of luck (who hasn't heard of a lucky Rabbit's foot?) being subtly promoted. Disney cartoon may entertain, but they also indoctrinate while they entertain. In 1926, Walt Disney signed an agreement with Mintz and Film Booking Offices (EBO).

Film Booking Offices were Illuminati kingpin/mob boss Joseph Kennedy's company. For at least the next years, Disney worked under the control (auspices) of Illuminati kingpin Kennedy. All of the Disney pictures were registered by R-C Pictures Corp., one of the parent companies of Kennedy's FBO. Joseph Kennedy also controlled the RKO studio which worked together with the other big studios to insure that no small studio would develop as a competitor. By 1937, all the big studios--20th Cent., Paramount, MGM, Warner Bros., Cohn's Columbia Pictures and Kennedy's RKO were allowing the mob to skim money from them.

Kennedy's RKO gave Walt a guarantee in 1937 that they'd distribute Snow White sight unseen. Walt Disney had their films distributed by Kennedy's RKO from 1936 to 1956. Another little known detail is that in 1926, Leon Schlesinger (future producer at Warner Bros.) subcontracted animation jobs to Disney. One of these was Universal's The Silent Flyer. In 1928, Steamboat Willie debuted. This was an animated cartoon with a soundtrack starring a mouse later named Mickey Mouse. It had taken lots of hard work and determination on Walt's part, but it was the first cartoon with a sound track and it was successful.

In 1929, the cartoon The Haunted House came out. The story is, Mickey Mouse is forced by a storm into a house full of ghosts who force him to contribute to their spooky musicale. In 1930, **Harry Cohn**, one of the most ruthless and unsavory characters controlling a studio bailed Walt Disney out of Walt's trouble with con-artist Pat Powers who was stealing Disney's money. Harry Cohn was a former NY pool hustler and gambler who was brought in by Chicago investors to front their investments in Columbia Pictures, and run their studio. He wore a sapphire ring that the Chicago mafia man Johnny Roselli gave him. Roselli later became a rogue asset of the CIA, and testified before Congress (the Church Committee on Assassinations in '74) about a CIA contract which was handed him. Roselli worked for the Mafia Council of 9, which incl. Anthony Accardo and Sam Giancana. Harry Cohn was said by some to be the most hated man in Hollywood. His money gave him "the power of an emperor". His money got him the best female flesh available which he used for his pleasure.

He always seemed to arrive from Las Vegas with rolls of new greenbacks, which had close associates wondering where all the money came from that he always got when he made trips to Las Vegas.

In 1931, Walt went into a long suicidal depression that lasted into 1932. In the summer of 1932, he took a vacation to try and recover from his nervous breakdown. By 1932, Ingersoll had marketed its first edition of Mickey Mouse watches. Disney products have served as a model of consumerism for the world. Disney watches have been made continuously since 1932 or '33. In 1932, eighty major U.S. corporations (such as General Foods, RCA & National Dairy) began to market Disney products. Ed Sullivan began regularly running stories that bragged about Disney's work. Freemason Dr. Rufus B. von Kleinsmid, pres. of the Univ. of So. Cal., gave Disney an award from Parents magazine for Walt's "work with children". In 1932, several artists who had worked for William Randolph Hearst came to work for Disney.

In 1932, Roy switched Disney from Columbia to United Artists. United Artists agreed to front Disney $15,000 for each cartoon. In the 1930's, the Illuminati' **Bank of America** financed Walt Disney. Years before, the Bank of America had been quietly created from **Bank of Italy** which was controlled by the same oligarchy that has run the Knights of Malta and renaissance Venice. The Bank of Italy was a powerful bank in Hollywood's first years. It's representatives A.P. and Atillo Giannini financed Walt during the 1920's with petty cash to keep him going, but not enough to get him out of financial bondage. Joe Rosenberg of Bank of America was sympathetic to Walt. Joe Rosenberg, a Jewish banker, came to all of Disney's board meetings, sat beside Walt, and would advise Walt on what direction Disney Studios should take. Joe wasn't a board member, but his advice got high priority.

Bank of America also bankrolled other Illuminati projects and organizations. Bank of America had one of their branch offices on Disneyland's Main St. from '55 until '93. They were open on holidays and Sundays for Disneyland. Bank of America is slated to be perhaps the only bank to survive the economic crash, when the Illuminati kingpins will allow their own banks to crash. Bank of America executive S. Clark Beise (who is a Scottish Rite Freemason) has been a member of Disney's board of directors from '65 to '75.

One of the biggest depositors in Bank of America is Roy E. Disney. Other Disney execs like Rich Frank have also used Bank of America as their bank of choice. The Bank of America bankrolled the Disney animation Snow White. Walt managed to sell Joseph Rosenberg on the idea, at a time when old time Hollywood people were advising Rosenberg that Snow White could only be a failure. When Snow White was successful, Walt announced a monster party for all Disney workers at Lake Norconian, near Palm Springs, southeast of San Bernandino, CA where the cost of everything the Disney workers wanted to order--food or drink or whatever, would be taken care of by the Disney's.

Under the full moon, the Disney male and female workers, finally free of the tight rules at the studios, had what amounted to a Roman orgy and a large nude skinny-dip at the lake. Almost all of the Disney workers participated in the orgy and Disney had only two options, 1. fire them all or 2. ignore that the party took place. Walt choose the later option, and after that no-one ever dared mention the party in his presence.

In 1937, Walt and Roy took a trip to Europe where Walt dined with the British Royal family, & met privately with H.G. Wells, the masonic prophet! planner of what Wells & other masons called "the New World Order". In Paris, the League of Nations (the forerunner to the U.N.) gave him an award.

After the success of Snow White, Disney chose Pinocchio to follow it. Many have asked why Pinocchio was chosen by Walt. If you look at the script, the puppet maker's wife is taken out of the original script, and there is an emphasis on the little wooden puppet visualizing becoming a flesh & blood son to the man who had created him. Here we have a boy with no soul, who is told if he works hard he will be given one. (Does this sound familiar to readers of VoL 2?) The script was definitely changed to have a storyline far more useful to mind-control programming.

For those who think Walt simply recreated fairy tales on the screen, if one examines the changes that are made from the original storylines, they are changed to make them more useful for mind-control. Both Snow White and Pinocchio have occult type "deaths and resurrections".

After W.W. II, Joseph Rosenberg persuaded A.P. Giannini, his boss, to bankroll Disney again. Although Walt was financed by the Mishpucka (Jewish Mafia), he didn't like the idea. Richard Rosenberg, a later Pres. of Bank of America, is also Mishpucka. Richard Rosenberg (his mother was a Cohen) was also in charge of Northrop Corp. and Marin Ecumenical Housing Assn. (Other examples of Mishpucka executives are R. Goldstein, v.p. of Procter & Gamble, and Marvin Koslow, v.p. of Bristol Meyers Co.)

In the 1930's, the elite promoted Disney's new cartoons. In 1935, Walt Disney received the French Legion of Honor for his Mickey Mouse cartoons. Also in 1935, the Queen of England (who readers of my previous articles will realize is Illuminati, involved in drug trade, and is involved with the leadership of Freemasonry) and the Duchess of York (also Illuminati) selected Mickey Mouse chinaware as gifts for 600 children. This was after Walt spent time with her in 1934.

The League of Nations (the pre-W.W. II equivalent of the U.N.) took the time to vote its approval of Mickey Mouse. (Finch, Christopher. The Art of Walt Disney from Mickey Mouse to the Magic Kingdom . NY: Harry N. Abrams, Inc., 1975, p. 53.) There is no doubt that Walt Disney had talent. There is also no doubt from the record that powerful people wanted to promote him. No doubt his 320 Masonic membership and his DeMolay activities helped boost his support, and also helped Walt's bent toward the occult.

Let's digress just to let people in on Freemasonry's involvement with acting and motion pictures. The famous 233 Club was a Masonic chapter for actors who were Freemasons. Examples of actors who were Freemasons include John Aasen, Gene Autry, Monte Blue and Humphrey Bogart, Douglas McClean, John Wayne.

Then there is T.V. DJ Dick Clark. Examples of Motion picture executives who were Freemasons incl. Ellis G. Arnall (Pres. of the Soc. of Ind. Motion Picture Producers), Will H. Hays (Czar of motion pictures 1922-45, and Pres. Motion Picture Produces & Distributors of Amer. Inc.), Benj. B. Kahane (v.p. & dir. Assoc. of Motion Picture Producers, Inc.), Carl Laemmle (Pres. Univ. Pictures Corp til '36), Frank E. Mullen (man. dept of info. RCA, VP NBC '39-'46, exec. VP NBC '46-'48), David Sarnoff (Chrm. of Bd. Radio Corp. of Amer. & „father" of American television), Jack M. Warner (v.p. of Warner Bros.) and the President & dir. of Universal Pictures since 1952. The Freemasons have made much of Walt Disney's membership in their membership sales pitches. Because the 2 Disney brothers' chief contributions to the production of Disney films were the finances and occasionally the ideas used in a film, it is rather misrepresentative of things that Walt Disney got all the credit for the success and quality of the Disney cartoons.

He was showered with 700 awards and honors from important people, including 30 oscars, and the Presidential Medal of Freedom (in '64). Walt Disney's great animators never got the credit they deserved, but no one should forget that Walt was the driving force that inspired and guided his workers.

In 1934, Walt Disney made a cartoon about a goddess of the Mystery Religions named Persephone. In the cartoon entitled The Goddess of Spring, the goddess Persephone is captured by Satan as his bride and sent to the underworld, with the agreement she could return to earth six months of each year. The Illuminati have rituals around Persephone. On Dec. 21, 1937, Disney premiered the first full-length color cartoon movie "Snow White and the Seven Dwarfs." This cartoon had taken $1.4 in depression-time money and three years to make. Over 750 artists worked on the film. Walt Disney had gotten the idea from a silent movie of Snow White which he saw as a boy in 1917. The movie has an important occult theme to it, and has been used for occult mind-control programming.

When the 1940's got started, Disney was in financial difficulties. At this point, Nelson Rockefeller hired his cartoon capabilities to make cartoons for South America, with the idea that South Americans would remain loyal to the American capitalist hegemony, rather than shift to rising ideologies of fascism/nazism, if they saw Walt Disney cartoons.

In Rio de Janeiro, Brazil on 8/24/42, Disney did its world premiere of Saludo Amigos, a 42 minute feature about Latin America. Goofy becomes a gaucho, a parrot teaches Donald Duck to dance the samba, as well as Disney art showing various landscapes of Brazil in the film.

However, the film The Three Caballeros, if it was meant to encourage South American loyalty to American capitalism, completely failed. The Three Caballeros showed a sexually lecherous Donald Duck who in bad taste tries to make it with Latin women. The mysticism was also seen as bogus. Although the Latin Americans hated the film, the establishment media's Look magazine praised it. Another reason that Rockefeller sent Walt to South America was to get him out of the way so that the government could settle the strike by Disney workers. Nelson Rockefeller was the government's Coordinator of Inter-American Affairs, a good position considering how much of South America the Rockefeller's controlled. Rockefeller told Disney that Disney couldn't beat the strikers, but that while Walt was in South America, FDR would see to it that the strike got settled.

When Disney returned he submitted to the powers that were, and accepted the unions and the mafia's control. Another change for Walt Disney was that in 1940, he and Roy turned Disney into a "public corporation" and initially sold 755,000 shares of common stock. The Illuminati Boston firm of Kidder, Peabody & Co. were the underwriters of the studio's public stock-offerings.

By 1940, the Disney Studio at Burbank had become a miniature city with 1,000 men & women employees and 20 buildings on a 51 acre tract of land. After the U.S. joined W.W. II, Disney Productions were made a part of the American military establishment. The very next day after Pearl Harbor, the military moved onto the Disney Studio, which leads this author to suspect that Disney was already part of the power establishment prior to the war breaking out. Disney made military movies/cartoons that taught the different branches of the military many things. They made propaganda movies for the allies.

One series of films was "Why we fight." Disney made movies for the IRS to get people to pay their taxes. Some of the Disney films were top, secret, and concerned secret military weapons or secret psychological tactics of the Americans. For instance, one military film was "Army Psycho Therapy" which taught army men how to instill fear, and about the basics of fear. Another army film was "Prostitution & the War". Another showed a carrier pigeon evading the Germans. In 1940, Disney came out with 2 full length animated cartoons, Pinocchio and Fantasia, both of which were soon used for Illuminati mind-control programming. Fantasia contains Schubert's sacred Catholic music Ave Maria, which was used in a concluding segment side to side with the profane Night on Bald Mountain song, as well as six other classical pieces of orchestra music.

As a feature cartoon it was a flop, but as a programming tool it was fantastic. Fantasia receives a comprehensive explanation of how it is used for mind-control programming at the end of this chapter. Because an explanation of the use of a Disney film for mind-control is complex, this explanation is placed at the end of the chapter so that it won't interrupt the flow of this chapter's information. The Pinocchio film has been redone and released 9 times over the years. Some of the next full length animated films to come out were: The Three Caballeros (1945) The Adventures of Ichabod & Mr. Toad ('49) Cinderella (1950) Treasure Island (1950) Alice In Wonderland (1951) The Story of Robin Hood & His Merrie Men (1952) Peter Pan (1953) 20,000 Leagues Under the Sea (1954) Sleeping Beauty (1959) Very soon after the production of all of these movies, the Illuminati and their intelligence agencies used them for Illuminati total mind-control programming.

To see their misuse as programming scripts one has to understand how the fantasy worlds of a programmed multiple are created and how the movie scripts are adapted to be programming scripts. Vol. 2 gave quite a few examples of how Alice In Wonderland and the Wizard of Oz scripts were used for programming scripts. When Disney had his animal-nature documentaries, he edited and used narration to give the animals human like characteristics--something he'd already been doing with animation. Disney played an important part in the Illuminati's plan to elevate animals and dehumanize humans.

One of the biggest Illuminati kingpins, and leader (Grand Master) of the Prieure de Sion was Frenchman **Claude Debussy** (bn.1862). Claude Debussy, a Merovingian, was Nautonnier (Navigator-helmsman) of the Prieure de Sion from 1885-1918. (See the document Dossiers secrets, planche no. 4, Ordre de Sion, written about in Holy Blood, Holy Grail.) In 1891, when some secret coded parchments (Merovingian documents) were found by a French clergyman Sauniere, he was directed by church officials to visit with Emile Hoffet, an occult acquaintance of Debussy.

Debussy was close friends with many of the top French occultists of his time. He is known to have been a close friend to both the notorious Satanists Jules Bois and MacGregor Mathers. Mathers started the Order of the Golden Dawn. Debussy was also a friend of the infamous Papus (aka Dr. Gerard Encausse) and W.B. Yeats.

Papus was one of the men who during his lifetime was part of the interlocking occult directorate of occult groups. Claude Debussy put some works of the previous P.d.S. Grand Master Victor Hugo to music. Debussy and his other powerful occult friends were influential with Monsieur Philippe, whose Russian occult circle influenced the Russian Czars and Czarinas before Rasputin came around. Debussy travelled to Russia and Rome. Some of Debussy's works became operas. Interestingly, Walt Disney was extremely anxious to make a cartoon using Debussy's Clair de Lane. The work was done, but it was never shown to the public. Disney never found a place to use it. It was originally done with animation with flying cranes for the occult extravaganza Fantasia, but when the Fantasia ended up too long, Clair de Lane was cut and shelved. It was again planned for the film Make Mine Music, but then Blue Bayou was substituted in. Walt used the Le Sacre du Printemps (the Rite of Spring) music for Fantasia. This piece of music was written AS a pagan ritual where a virgin sacrifices herself by dancing to death. Disney's mobster Gunther Lessing had threatened Stravinsky if permission weren't given for Disney to use the piece of music, it would be used anyway.

Dr. Julian Huxley got involved in the production of Fantasia. Aldous and Julian Huxley are well known by conspiracy researchers for their roles in the World Order. In the 1940's and 1950's, the Illuminati began using Disney's Alice In Wonderland and the Wizard of Oz films as programming bases for their total mind-controlled slaves. Alice in Wonderland had been done many years earlier by the Britisher William Cameron Menzies (who also did Freemason H.G. Wells' Masonic forecast of the New World Order entitled "Things to Come" in 1936, and the film Invaders From Mars.). In 1944, Illuminati Kingpin William Randolph Hearst (with some minor help from others) funded the Motion Picture Alliance, and Walt Disney became a co-founder and its first Vice-President. In the early 1950's, Walt turned his attention from animated cartoons to other projects, such as True-Life-Adventures, television shows, and the creation of Disneyland. Seal Island was his first true life adventure which was released to the general public on May 4, 1949, and soon won Walt Disney an Oscar. Alfred and Elma Milotte had shot the film on some Alaskan Islands named Pribilof Islands. James Algar had put the movie together.

In 1952, Walter spelled his named backwards to create the name of another corporation "Retlaw". Roy and his family saw the move as an attempt to cut them out of the financial picture. In 1954, Walt Disney and ABC made a agreement. ABC would directly invest half a million US dollars as well as guarantee $4.5 million in loans for the construction of Disneyland. This made ABC 1/3 owner of Disneyland. In return, Walt Disney agreed to produce a regular television series for ABC. Remember too that ABC's president Leonard Goldenstein was a good friend of Ronald Reagan. On July 13, 1955, Walt and Lillian were attempting to celebrate their 30th wedding anniversary at a park and restaurant. Walt got too drunk to speak into the microphone, so he blew noisemakers into it, while Lillian rushed to pull him out of view. In 1961, Disney bought out the ABC investment (also labelled Paramount) for $7.5 million with cash and notes, and to bring this all up to date, later on July 31, 1995, Disney merged with Capital Cities/ABC, with Disney in nominal control. Actually Capital Cities has long been a CIA front company, so the merger placed Disney squarely within the CIA ranks, although it had been in bed with them for the CIA's entire history.

The Illuminati-controlled corporations of Coca-Cola and the drug firm Johnson and Johnson became sponsors for Disney's early TV shows. On 7/3/57, the Wall St. Journal announced that Atlas Corp. got 26% interest in Walt Disney Productions. Walt Disney worked quietly with some consultants on the concepts behind Disneyland. His brother and nephew tried to prevent the project from happening. Later they requested that Walt sign over Disneyland, Inc. to Walt Disney Productions, which Walt did. Walt kept 17.25 % of Disneyland holdings and Walt Disney Productions got the rest. Walt Disney Productions then shared their portion with others. The man who helped Walt finance Disneyland was the executive vice-pres. of ABC Kintner.

Walt Disney got the Illuminati's Stanford Research Institute to determine what would be the best site for Disneyland. A retired Navy admiral Joe Fowler was in charge of constructing both Disneyland and Walt Disney World. How do admirals fit into the power structure? Admirals are briefed each day, and are given information concerning the secret power structure. Most men who are at that military level are Illuminati or at least well controlled by the system. Within the last few years there has been an intense effort to weed out any admirals who are not loyal to the Illuminati. Morgan-Evans, who lives in Malibu, and who may be of the famous Morgan clan, was the one who created the spectacular landscapes for Disneyland, Walt Disney World, and EPCOT in FL. According to CIA informants opposed to the NWO, CIA contractors were brought in to build the underground tunnels under Disneyworld in 1977. These contractors were sworn to secrecy, but were only informed on a need to know basis why the CIA was involved with an amusement park. To work on the secret tunnel project took an "Above Top Secret" clearance. A major programming center was constructed under Lake Holden. (Many of the lakes in Florida are named Lake So-and-so, rather than So-and-so Lake.) The tunnel system was built for programming trauma-based total mind-controlled slaves. It was built of concrete with steel reinforcement. Lake Holden lies just to the northwest side of the Orlando International Airport and just south of Interstate 4. (It is close to Range 29E on quad maps.) It is only (as the crow flies) about 12 miles from Disneyworld.

In spite of Draconian measures of secrecy, numerous lawsuits (Fed. & State) were filed over the years by victims trying to expose the Disneyworld programming tunnels, so that finally the programming center was dismantled, cleaned up and a "maintenance" tunnel level and a "casting" tunnel level were opened to the public. During its heyday, the programmers (military & intelligence men) had exotic offices underground with unusual programming equipment. It doesn't take any imagination to realize that if Disney carried mind-control programming above and below ground, that they would need tight security forces to protect their secrets. Indeed, such is the case. Disney amusement parks have been granted draconian powers wherever they have been built! The Disney parks have also employed armies of spies dressed like tourists to spy on Disney's employees! If amusement park workers did anything slightly out of place, they were (and still are) reported by the spies in the camp, and they often have lost their jobs.

For instance, one ex-worker, who had 10 years with Disney, was caught discussing his divorce with another worker. Since divorce doesn't fit the wholesome image that Disney wants, when the spy dressed as a tourist reported his conversation, he lost his job. Many workers have tried to tell their personal horror stories of Disney's draconian rules and their draconian private police force, but most of the time Disney has had the power to suppress and intimidate away any bad publicity. An exception to that is the recent Nov. 4, '96 Napa Valley Register article on page 2D entitled, "Critics of Disneyland Say Security Abusive Inside Magic Kingdom." UCLA law professor David Sklansky commented about Disney's police, "One of the major problems we have is nobody really knows what they are doing- how often they stop, interrogate or search people. They are not subject to the same sort of regulatory controls."

It's almost superfluous to tell readers that Disney's amusement park with it's theme areas such as Fantasyland, Tomorrowland and Adventureland were a great success. Everyone worldwide was curious to visit this entertainment mecca to participate in something that had a clean, wholesome image to it. The entire world system pulled together to insure that Disneyland got the image and publicity that the top 13 Illuminati families and the various syndicates wanted it to have. For 40 years they've done this. When something that everyone thinks is clean and wholesome is not attacked by the world system, that should raise eyebrows among thinking people. Home schooling, learning to read phonetically and other wholesome activities for children have been viciously attacked and ridiculed by the established media. Why has Disney gone untouched?

Disney Studios for years strove to have a very clean image. Workers had dress codes, and any activity on the part of employees that wasn't morally conservative was grounds for instant dismissal. Of course, the exceptions were well covered up, such as an employee who used hypnosis to get quite a few of the females employees to undress until nude. John L. Hulteng, author of The Messenger's Motives (Englewood Cliff, NJ: Prentice-Hall, 1976, p. 213) informs us, "As communication researchers have emphasized, the greatest impact the media have on the formation or change of public opinion is in terms of impressions built up over a long period." [bold added] The wholesomeness of Disney is an image that has been built over a long period of time. Disney's occult themes of world citizenship, witchcraft, humanism and idolatry have also been long running impressions that have been craftively perpetrated upon this nation, so long that they began prior to this author's --& probably the reader's-- birth. People don't associate movie's like Consenting Adults with Disney, or The Corpse Had a Familiar Face with Disney. In fact as previously mentioned, when Disney wanted to put out more "adult" films, they did a slight of hand and created the label Touchstone films so that people wouldn't associate movies like Splash (which showed what looked like bared breasts) with Disney Productions.

Another label, Hollywood Pictures, was created by Disney to help distribute Touchstone films. At first the personnel of these companies was simply Disney's staff, but as time went on, they got their own production personnel. On Oct. 27, 1954, Walt Disney's Wonderful World of Color debuted on television. The TV show celebrated Disney's movie triumphs. The words Wonderful World of Color are not ill chosen. According to an Illuminati mind-control programmer, when Disney worked on his cartoons, and amusement parks, colors --special colors and color combinations--were specifically chosen for mind-control programming purposes. Wonderful World of Color under various names such as Disneyland aired for 22 years over the television networks.

In 1955, Walt Disney made his cartoon character Mickey Mouse real by creating a fan club--the Mickey Mouse Club, which aired five days a week usually just as children came home from school. Twenty-four children called mouseketeers would help Mickey, and they would dance and sing and do skits. The Mickey Mouse Club adored the unique, cute little beanie Mickey Mouse caps with their big ears mounted to each side of the beanie. In the 1950's, most kid viewers of the show wanted their own "Mouse Ears" and to become a Mouseketeer, especially children who were receiving Mickey Mouse scripts in their total mind-control programming. Disney used his Mouseketeers to play all the roles in an Oz movie Rainbow Road to Oz, which was never shown to the public.

Adults today (both men & women) who received Mickey Mouse programming during the 50's through 70's can still be seen with Mickey Mouse clocks, watches, lampshades, knick-knacks, tee shirts, etc. Years later the kids who watched can still remember "Spin and Marty" and the Mickey Mouse theme song. The image that everything was perfect including Mickey was portrayed by the Club's T.V. program. Still somehow the American people began to use the word "Mickey Mouse" as a synonym for a silly, pretend way of doing things. It became common for people to say, "He mickey-moused it together." to mean he did a poor job putting it together.

On Jan. 30, 1957, Walt Disney had a television show aired entitled "All About Magic" where a Magic Mirror explains about magic. The Magic Mirror also contains a "Bibbidi-bibbidi-Boo" sequence. In 1959, Disney bought 8 small submarines from Todd Shipyards for $2,150.000. When ABC wouldn't let Walt make a TV series out of a storyline where a magic ring changes a boy into a dog (a mind-control programming theme)--because ABC didn't think the public could swallow the story line--Walt quit ABC for NBC. Walt then made a scaled down version of this occult storyline entitled The Shaggy Dog.

Early in the 1960's, Walt and his brother Roy went secretly looking for an area on the east coast to build another Disney Park. Walt the younger of the two, died in 1966, and Roy finished the project. Beginning in 1964, 30,000 acres were secretly purchased at $200 an acre in the Orlando, FL area just west of NASA's Cape Kennedy. Using phoney names and paying cash, Disney buyers bought the land and swore the sellers to secrecy. The Magic Kingdom has been multiplying. In 1971, Walt Disney World was opened to the public. Bob Hope and others participated in a Disney special on Oct. 29, 1971 "Grand opening of Walt Disney World". From the time of its opening until Oct. 12, 1995, Disney World calculated 1/2 billion people visited DisneyWorld. This amusement park is in Orlando, FL on over 27,400 acres and includes the EPCOT Center (now also called simply Epcot). The **EPCOT center** was another dream of Walt Disney's (albeit more than slightly modified from Walt's original EPCOT ideas.)

EPCOT originally stood for Experimental Prototype Community of Tomorrow. It was to be an extension of the massive mind-control being carried out at Disney World. The original EPCOT city designed by Walt was to carry on its commerce (traffic) via underground roads and tunnels like the Disney Theme parks. After Walt Disney died, his successors changed the proposed experimental city into another theme park simply called Epcot. It is not unusual to see crowds of over 48,000 people descend on Walt Disney World and the EPCOT center in a single day. Some visitors arrive via a monorail. Visitors can buy 5-Day World Hopper passes which allow them to bounce around with admission to all the sites for a seven day period. In other words, some families stay for a week at Disneyworld. Hardcore visitors can get Annual Passports which provide unlimited use of Walt Disneyworld for an entire year.

In reality, many visitors to Disneyworld begin the day enthusiastic and after a day of hot sun and waiting in long lines with large crowds for imitations of reality, the tourists are zombie-like and looking forward to getting back to their hotels. Many people have felt the rides were not nearly what they expected. Some of the rides are better than others, and some typically get comments like, "It was stupid." Some of the spooky events like Snow White's Adventures, or the oversized heads of the Disney characters walking around can leave the little preschool children terrified and dazed for the rest of the day. In contrast, older children, who normally rarely show patience at home may show how much they want to go on a particular Disney ride, by waiting an hour and a half in the hot sun for a ride. Alien Encounter is a Walt Disneyland feature that invites tourists in for a "demonstration of interplanetary teleportation." When the "demonstration" as planned "breaks down" an "alien" with asocial traits appears among the audience and terrorizes the audience. A cute creature is hideously fried, deformed, and then vomited into space screaming. Here are some comments from visitors to this Walt

Disneyland attraction:

· "Alien Encounter ...is one of those rides I can say I've seen and that I have no intention of ever doing again. In fact, parents who take children under the age of six should be brought up on child abuse." Woman, from MI

· "Alien Encounter was the WORST experience for my 10-year-old (and almost every child in there). It starts out cute enough during the preshow, but the actual show is a disaster for children. My daughter screamed and cried in terror throughout it. I thought the Disney warnings were vague and inaccurate. When we left, there wasn't one child with dry eyes (even sturdy looking 12-year-old boys were crying.). I think an age requirement of 13 or 14 is more appropriate. I talked to a few adults and we even agreed that the special effects were extremely unpleasant even for us. This show is not a Disney family experience--its ATROCIOUS!!" A mother from Phillipsburg, NJ.

· "We did go to Alien Encounter...The preshow is deceiving. It kind of lulls you into thinking "this isn't so bad." When the main part came up, I admit the experience gave me the absolute heebie-jeebies. . .I am never doing that presentation again--it was way too intense for me, and I'm now 27 years of age!--from a family in Laurel, MD

Michael Eisner, the President of Walt Disney Co., initially rejected Alien Encounter for not being scary enough when it was being considered as an addition to Disneyworld. One wonders what he would have liked! Snow White's Adventures, which was an attraction at Disneyland, was one of what the Disney people called "dark rides". After a while a sign appeared with a witch warning people that the attraction was scary. Later in 1983, they renamed it Snow White's Scary Adventures. It might be interesting to point out that when the original Snow White and Seven Dwaffs film came out, that England forbid the film to be seen by any child under 16 unless accompanied by an adult because of the scary content of the movie. How far we have come since then.

Schools in the Florida and California areas also make field trips to the Magic Kingdom that are arranged with Disney. EPCOT receives tens of thousands of children this way during March, September and October. High schools use the Magic Kingdom for proms or senior nights, and some couples use the facilities of the Magic Kingdom for weddings. Modem Bride ranked Orlando as the number-one honeymoon destination in the world. Group discussions of people who took honeymoons to DisneyWorld have had a consensus that the hype is not as great as the reality. Some weddings are done with cartoon characters. Disney offers "fairy-tale" wedding packages. A great deal for two mind-controlled slaves. They can reinforce their programming while getting married. The Disney fairy-tale wedding typically has its ceremony on a pavilion on an island in the Seven Seas Lagoon with the Cinderella Castle as a backdrop. The fairy-tale wedding can then be followed with a Fantasy reception with a choice of themes such as Beauty & the Beast or Aladdin. The fantasy programming can continue as the bride is delivered to a "Cinderella's Ball" by an actual glass carriage drawn by six white Disney ponies. A costumed fairy-godmother & stepsisters are also at the ball. Desert is served in a white chocolate slipper.

One of the after-dark shows is IllumiNations which consists of music, fireworks, erupting fountains, special lighting, and laser technology done at the World Showcase Lagoon. EPCOT has a show Cranium Command at the Wonders of Life in the Future World section where guests sit in a theater that functions as a command control room for a boy's brain. In 1980, Disney came out with the box office flop The Devil & Max Devlin. In 1984, Roy E. Disney brought in Michael Milken, of junk bond fame to help Disney out financially. In 1985, Disney bought MGM's rights to Leo the Lion logo and began using the MGM Wizard of Oz material. Later a remake of Alice In Wonderland came out in the modern motif of Honey I Shrank the Kids. In the 1990's, Illuminati controlled companies continued their promotion of Disney. For instance, the Nestle family's Nestle company promotes Disney movies on their chocolate bars. The Nestle family is exposed in this author's booklet Illuminati Control Over Foods and Grains, p. 4 as one of the elite Black Nobility families. In 1996, Walt Disney World created an actual residential town named Celebration on its property. This self-contained community has 20,000 and a school, a theater, a fiber optic information network linking business, as well as other features.

SOME DISNEY people of interest.

Over the years, the close associates of the Disneys' is very revealing. The public can get a feel for Disney's attitude toward Illuminati bloodlines in the Disney movie The Happiest Millionaire which is about Anthony J.

Drexel Biddle and Angie Duke. Readers of this author's previous writings will recognize the Biddle and Duke names. In fact, the movie was based loosely on a book written by Cordelia Drexel Biddle about the Biddles.

X Atensio. His first name was Xavier, but was nicknamed and called X. He worked on the haunted mansion of Disneyland with WED enterprises. He joined Disney in 1938, and was an assistant animator of Fantasia.

Warren Beatty. (b. 1937 in VA) This actor is from the Illuminati Beatty family and starred in Disney's Dick Tracy. The Dick Tracy film uses color in a special way, and this ties in with the color programming of the mind-control. Some total mind-controlled slaves have programming based on Disney's Dick Tracy movie for them to track down and kill "targets" (people). Warren's sister is the famous (or infamous) **Shirley Maclaine**. Shirley "MacClaine" is not what she appears.

Her father was a professor who was a CIA asset. She was used by the CIA as a sex slave. She became popular with the studios because she went to bed with the correct people. Her talents were used to get her as an intelligence slave into places that an obvious intelligence agent couldn't go. She was married to a man in the NSA for nearly 20 years. Her adopted name Maclaine (reportedly her mother's maiden name) is a pun on McLain, VA where the CIA programmed her. She was used by the CIA in an operation in Australia, where the CIA used her as a sex slave to compromise Andrew Peacock, an Australian MP, so that they could establish the Nugen-Hand bank for their dirty money laundering etc.

She is friends with Satanist Stephen Nance who has provided her with some of her teachings. Lowell McGovern writes her material. The CIA has programmed many of their New Age slaves to adore Shirley MacLaine. An example of this is Christa Tilton, one of their mind-controlled slaves, who revealed in an interview how she considered herself a born-again Christian who had spent most of her life in Oklahoma, but had mysteriously been drawn to Shirley MacLaine. During her life she has gotten repeated "psychic urgings"--that is strong urges to do things and go places, which she doesn't understand where these urgings came from. After hypnosis, Christa drew pictures of the doctor who programmed her. Christa has had a federal agent monitor her constantly. Her husband has seen this agent, who has shown up on her door step and made calls to her. She names the agent John Wallis (most likely a cover name). This agent has a complete knowledge of her life, and government agents have taken photos of her during her supposedly "alien abduction" experiences. Christa is just one of hundreds of victims who have been programmed to adore Shirley MacLaine. (Christa is mentioned here because she is one case that this author is familiar with.) Warren Beatty, who peppers his speech with four-letter words was a student at the Stella Adler Theater Studio in NYC.

Black, Shirley Temple. **Shirley Temple Black** sat on the Disney board of directors (74-75). Her films were used for some of the early 40's and '50's programming and teaching slaves body movements/dance. She married someone in an elite Network family from San Francisco named Charles A. Black. Charles A. Black was a Lt. Col. in the Pentagon who lived at Bethesda, MD. Was Shirley an early example of brain-stem scarring to get geniuses? Shirley's brother appears to have developed "Multiple Sclerosis" from brain stem-scarring. It was Shirley Temple who co-founded the International Federation of Multiple Sclerosis Societies, and was a member of its exec. committee. Shirley represented the U.S. at the UN General Assembly in 1969, belongs to the Sierra Club, and has been decorated with the Cross of Malta. Shirley has shown clues that she may be an Illuminati mind-controlled child protege.

Stephen Bollenbach. Bollenbach was part of Walt Disney management, and was a key figure who helped engineer Disney's $19 billion buyout of the CIA's Capital Cities/ABC, as well as sell the idea to Eisner. He is the CEO of the Network's Hilton Hotels Corp. He recently has been involved with trying to buy ITT, in order to put together the world's largest hotel-casino combination. Bollenbach has an extensive background with the gaming-gambling industry. When the Justice Dept. began looking into the merger of Disney with Cap. Cities/ABC, Bollenbach resigned his Disney position. Some people feel his resignation was needed for Disney to get the Justice Dept. to approve the merger, because his past was vulnerable to be exposed.

Warren Buffett. A major stockholder in Walt Disney. He also owns 40% of Berkshire Hathaway Inc. which also owns lots of shares of Disney stock. According to S.F. Examiner, Buffett himself owns 24 million shares of Disney. Warren Buffett is part of the Ak-Sar-Ben fraternity and Monarch slave abusers who were exposed in the Nebraska Saving & Loan scandal. He is perhaps the second richest man in the nation, and too powerful for anyone to touch. In the kingpin vs. kingpin battles, some people close to the inside see Buffett as a good guy.

Readers need to study the Lincoln Savings & Loan scandal and the scandals connection to programmed child slaves at Boy's Town to get more information on this Disney stockholder. Robert G. Hagstrom, Jr., who is the portfolio manager of the mutual fund Focus Trust, which has shares in Walt Disney, wrote the book The Warren Buffett Way. Hagstrom has a chapter on Disney in his The Warren Buffett Way. He quotes Buffett as extremely enthusiastic about Disney's merger with Capital Cities/ABC. Because of his enthusiasm Buffett says, "The odds are extremely high that we will have a very large amount of Disney stock."

Salvador Dali--This strange surrealist Spanish artist was a friend of Walt Disney. After Salvador was kicked out of Spain for Franco's belief that he was a communist, he came to America, and worked with Disney Studios in 1946. Salvador, an eccentric who had no particular work habits, described himself, "The only difference between me and a madman is that I'm not a madman."

The Tommy Dorsey Band--This band has had a number of men in it who are Mind-control slave abusers associated with the Network. Frank Sinatra, a sexual slave user, got his big break with this band. This band performed at Disneyland in 1984 at the Plaza Gardens. Tommy Dorsey was part of the Network's in-crowd. When he was on a USO Tour with Bob Hope, he stabbed actor Joe Hall and threw him out of a window. Joe had to have 32 stitches. But Joe didn't get justice, the judge dismissed his case against Tommy.

Michael Dammann Eisner, Chairman at Disney is a CIA asset and connected to the mob. Some insiders believe he is connected to elements of the CIA & mob that are anti-NWO. Even so, these anti-NWO factions also employ mind-control. Eisner ignored a threat by Red China to boycott Disney products if he made a movie about the nation Tibet that China controls with draconian force. The U.N., the Commerce Dept. and the State Dept. all tried unsuccessfully to get him to back down on the film. A paper trail connecting Michael Eisner and Walt Disney Co. to mind control is their support of the Boys & Girls Club of Napa Valley, which is used for a supply of children for pedophilia and mind-control. The Boy's & Girls Club is used to supply caddies for the Silverado Country Club, where these children are also used as mind-controlled slaves for the sexual perversions of the elite. Notice that Napa's Silverado Country Club invites in celebrities (such as CIA asset Pat Boone, Joe DiMaggio, ex-husband of sex slave Marilyn Monroe, Engelbert Humberdinck a slave handler, Digger Phelps, Notre Dame's coach who uses slaves, and Jack Vale nti CEO of Motion Picture Assoc. & Bohemian Grover) for a golf tournament which is billed as a "benefit for the Boys & Girls Club". The benefit for child slaves is they get to caddie & sexually service elite perverts.

Michael (bn. March 7, '42 in NY) came from old American money of a family that has been rich merchants and lawyers. Michael grew up in luxurious Park Ave. as well as his family's "country place" in Bedford Hills near Mt. Kisco, NY. He went to an elite private school Allen-Stevenson, which is famous for its children's orchestra. At the age of 14, he then went to Lawrenceville School, which is a prep-school for Princeton, whose tuition in '56 was $3,000. Eisner's class incl. NY's governor's son, and other sons of powerful men, such as the son of Saudi Prince Turqi al-Faisal. The school is a prep school for the establishment's entertainment industry. Students are only allowed to see their parents on major holidays. Eisner was in the Periweg Club, the school's drama society. His poor scholastic performance meant that he had to go to a small liberal arts college, rather than Princeton or Harvard such as was family tradition. For instance, his grandfather had attended Phillips Exerter Academy and Harvard. His grandfather has serve in many govt. commissions and belonged to the Harvard Club, the American Club in London as well as some yacht clubs. Between his junior & senior year in high school, Eisner was a page at NBC's HQ in the Rockefeller Center.

In 1966, he landed a job in the programming department of ABC. He had an influential position. Eisner had one good break for deciding TV programming. He was 21 when the target audience was 21 years old, and when he was 35, the target age of the film industry was then 35. He has been described as having "supernatural enthusiasm" coupled to a lifetime quest for untested ideas.

Rich H. Frank, was Executive Vice-President with Walt Disney until his sudden resignation about a year before this was written. He worked side by side with Katzenberg and left after Katzenberg resigned in a dispute with Disney's chairman Eisner. Rich Frank was President of Walt Disney's TV-Media Division. He acquired the estate of VanHoffenwiggen, when VanHoffenwiggen fled the country and vanished when Lendvest began to be exposed. VanHoffenwiggen was a major figure involved with Lendvest Mortgage Inc., a drug-laundering operation and drug smuggling operation operating out of Napa Valley. It was also the fastest growing real estate mortgage company in northern California until its drug smuggling began to be exposed. Lendvest did some tricks ala Nugen Hand Bank. Millions of dollars of investors and creditors have disappeared leaving lots of hurting people, and the mortgage company filed for protection from creditors in U.S. Bankruptcy court, and is still in operation.

International financier Edmond Safra's private bank, the Republic National Bank of NY, launders money from the Medellin drug cartel. Safra's bank sent Lendvest lots of crisp new $100 bills. The Safras are tied in with the Rothschilds. (The Safras are reportedly recent property owners in St. Helena near Napa (through Good Wine Co. which is the Spring Mountain Wineries), near where Lendvest was HQed. Edmond's nephew, Jacob Safra, has a partnership in Napa Valley's Good Wine Co.

The Rothschild's Citicorp gave Republic National Bank the transaction ability to issue international (world) bearer bonds ("bank notes") The Luxembourg/Belgium branch of Bank Nacional de Paris issued a bearer bond that was connected the Lendvest drug running operation. In Britain, a U.S. citizen Mike Spire ran the British operation of Lendvest and InVest. LandVest's parent was InVest which has operated in the U.K., Switz., Saudi Arabia & Paraguay. Long story made short, Lendvest has been an international CIA-Mafia drug running operation, with Illuminati overtones and connections to it.

With all this in mind, it is strange, that Walt Disney's President of its TV-Media Division, Rich Frank, bought the palatial mansion of John O. Van Hoffenwiggen after Van Hoffenwiggen disappeared from the country when indictments and arrests began to be made of people connected to Lendvest. According to insiders, Rich Frank is also one of a number of Napa Valley people involved in illegal labelling of wines. Rich Frank was a key figure in Disney's programming venture with three regional Bell Telephone companies (Ameritech, Bell South, & SBC Commun.) coming together. Bell Telephone wanted to get into cable TV. Michael Ovitz formed a rival group of 3 other Bell Telephone co.s. Calvin Robinson, who tied in with Land Vest, worked with Boyce, who in turn worked for TRW Co., in Redondo Beach, CA. Boyce was sentenced to 40 years for selling US surveillance secrets to the soviets.

Daniel Hillis, the co-founder of a supercomputer producer Thinking Machines from MIT, is in charge of the Walt Disney Imagineering unit. Hillis helped Disney develop a virtual-reality ride at Disneyland based on the Aladdin cartoon.

Jeffrey Katzenberg, has been the chairman of Disney's movie studio, is an aggressive worker, a model Type A person. "Ask 50 people to describe Jeffrey Katzenberg, and most will say tenacious. 'If Jeffrey were any more aggressive, he'd be in jail." says the producer Dan Melnick." (Harmetz, Aljean, "Who Makes Disney Run?", NY Times. Feb. 7, '88, p. 29.) Katzenberg is the father of twins, which people joke was typical of his efficiency. Katzenberg supervised the production of Star Trek. Most of his movies have been box office successes. In the '70's, Katzenberg worked for NY Mayor John Lindsay.

Sanford Martin Litvack. Sanford is the Executive Vice Pres. of Disney and in charge of "Human Resources" for the corporation. He is a Jewish lawyer who was educated at the Jesuits' Georgetown Univer. He is on the bd of dir, of Bet Tzedek.

Vincent Price. Price has been one of the major influential occultists who has provided the world with many occult horror books and scripts. He worked for Disney some, and was the voice for Ratigan in The Great Mouse Detective. Vincent Price's good friend John Hay Whitney is an Illuminati kingpin and vice-pres. of the Pilgrim Society and was raised into the Illuminati through the Yale Scroll & Key fraternity. His friend Whitney likes horror movies.

The Osmond Brothers. Merrill Osmond's boys were "discovered" at Disneyland when they were visiting the site in 1962. The Disney people on Main St. just "happened" to recognize the talent of the five boys and signed them up soon for their first professional singing contract. The Osmond Boys did some television appearances for Disneyland such as Meet Me at Disneyland, and Disneyland after Dark. (Considering the mind-control programming done to these Osmund children, these TV shows were a cruel joke.) Of the singing Osmond kids, Donny is the next to the youngest, and his sister Marie is the youngest. Both Donny and his sister Marie are programmed multiples who are slaves, who have been subjected to a lot of abuse. They have good front alters. Their father has made millions from drugs, porn and white slavery and is part of the Mormon Illuminati front. The Mormon front of the Illuminati has gotten a lot of good publicity off of the Osmonds. They sang for Andy

Williams whose French wife was once arraigned on murder charges. Later they sang for the satanic Network's Lawrence Welk show. Swedish accented Lawrence Welk has been part of the Network. Marie Osmond has grown up, and she has adopted 3 of her 5 children in spite of her busy singing schedule which includes approx. 200 singing shows a year at places like Mafia controlled Atlantic City. In terms of occult families, adopted children are often programmed children, so this is a clue that her children have been programmed too.

Michael Ovitz. Ovitz was the no. 2 man at Walt Disney for a while until near the end of '96. Michael Ovitz was a high school classmate in VanNuys, CA with Michael Milken (later the junk-bond wizard), & there are many of the same people connected to both men. When Michael Ovitz's National Mercantile Bancorp (a saving & loan) began getting into the quicksand of several lawsuits & scandals, attorney Robert Strauss represented him. Illuminati member Robert Strauss has been a lawyer connected with drug running & the mafia. He was also an FBI agent from '41 to '45 with Hoover. He is admitted to the Wash. D.C. bar.

Pres. Bush appointed him U.S. Ambassador to Russia. He has been on the board of dir, of the Illuminati's PepsiCo, Archer-Daniels-Midland (ADM), and General Instruments (which have been exposed in other writings by this author.) He was also a board member of the Illuminati-mafia run MCA. Strauss is seen in Wash. D.C. as a behind the scenes power broker. Strauss represented Michael Milken associate Ronald 0. Perelman, Chrmn. of Revlon, who made a $600 mil. killing off of the 1st Gibraltar S&L. Strauss represented MCA, which the Bronfmans took over in 1995. The book Knoedelsder, William. Stiffed-The True Story of MCA, The Music Business, and the Mafia. NY: HarperCollins Pub., 1993, does an good job of connecting MCA to the mob, the Network, and Iran Contra. See especially page 442. Time magazine 2/24/97 carried a page long story about Michael Ovitz being out of a job. In the article, they reported that he was spending time on his new yacht The Illusion, visiting Joe Silver's estate in So. Carolina, visiting his property in Aspen, CO, and eating lunch with investment adviser Richard Salomon of Spears, Benzak, Salomon & Farrell. Gordon Crawford of the Capital Group is quoted in the article praising Ovitz, and saying he would invest in an Ovitz venture.

Ovitz is believed to be mafia by people in a place to know. He has also been known to threaten people using mafia terms, for instance, Vanity Fair (12/'96, p. 272) reports Ovitz threatening Bernie Brillstein, a producer, with his "foot solders". The San Francisco Chronicle (Fri., 1/26/'96, p. D20) quotes the latest issue of Columbia Journalism Review about an incident where a reporter Anita Busch who was investigating Ovitz got violently sick from the MSG in her food as she interviewed him. To top off it all off, Ovitz followed up her story which questioned his actions, by sending her a gift wrapped package of MSG with a one-word note: "Enjoy.". Michael Ovitz has had the clout to deal with Illuminati kingpin Edgar Bronfman head to head. He requested & got Bronfman to keep his dad employed, which was dutifully done. Edgar Bronfman Jr. had seriously considered having Ovitz head Seagram's MCA/Universal conglomerate.

Frank G. Wells. Frank was the President & the Chief Operating Officer of The Walt Disney Co. Wells was also on Disney's board of directors. He was a Rhodes Scholar, and a lawyer in 1955. Those who have read previous books (such as Vol. 1) by this author know how the Rhodes Scholars fit into things & are part of the Illuminati. He worked closely with Eisner & Katzenberg. Frank died in a helicopter crash in the spring of 1994 while heli-skiing in Nevada. His surviving sister is Molly Wells Chappellet who runs around in Illuminati circles. Molly Wells Chappellet has been featured several times in Betty Knight Scripp's magazine Appellation. Betty Knight Scripp was married to a Bohemian Grove member. Betty has been good friends with: the late Pamela Harriman (who was a recent U.S. ambassador to France & connected to the Rothschilds), as well as good friends with Her Imperial Highness the Grand Duchess of Vladmir of Russia, who owns the Chateau Margaux in Bordeaux. Betty Scripps personally monitors with care what is put into her incredible magazine Appellation. She has a column "Who's Who in the Wine Country" where the Chappellets have appeared in print numerous times.

Nearly all of Disney's 1920 movies had a black cat in them. Many had occult slants to the scripts. The occult slant never departed from Disney themes.

Some of DISNEY'S blatantly OCCULT MOVIES.

Aladdin. A wisecracking allpowerful genie is shown.

Bednobs & Broomsticks (1971) A witch finds a magic formula from a lion king. The magic formula raises a ghostly army of armor in a museum which stops a band of German commandos.

Beyond Witch Mountain (1982) A pair of twins leave Witch's Mountain and have to use their special occult powers to outwit a character named Deranian.

The Black Cauldron (1985), A Horned King uses his magic to fight a clairvoyant pig and the pig's keeper. This animation cost $25 million, but was a box office failure.

Bride of Boogedy (1987) An evil spirit visits the Davis family and puts the father under a spell. Directed by Oz Scott.

Child of Glass (1978) A glass doll must be found to set a ghost free in a haunted house.

The Gnome-Mobi1e (1967). A multimillionaire and his grandchildren encounter gnomes. In the end the multimillionaire deeds the forest to the gnomes for eternity.

Halloween Hall of Fame (1977). Jack-o-lanterns come to life.

Halloween Treat (1982). Cartoons about Halloween. This was followed the next year with a film Haunted Halloween which talked about the origins of Halloween.

Misadventures of Merlin Jones (1964) A genius tries to help other students. He tries to also use hypnotism & ESP which backfire on him.

Richest Cat in the World (1986) A wealthy man leaves his fortune to his cat, who the relatives later discover can talk.

H. DISNEY & its MOB connections

When this author spoke to the co-author's deeper Illuminati alters about Disney, their reaction was that Disney had been described to them when they were in the Illuminati as "a syndicate within a syndicate." They said that while in the Illuminati, they were aware that Disneyland had their own government, their own rules and their own police force. They were a crime syndicate within a syndicate. What these Illuminati alters casually mentioned, was verified by this author the hard way through research. One Disneyland Security Supervisor said, "There is no Constitution at Disneyland. We have our own laws." Once, when Walt Disney got miffed at a Hollywood policeman, Walt said, "I'll have your badge." If Disney guards decide to, they will get very rough physically with people, and assault them in any fashion they see fit. The people they detain are often thrown into tiny cells at Disneyland where they are kept without benefit of a phone call, without benefit of a toilet or water.

The judicial system turns a blind eye to whatever Disney police do. Many people pay Disney to get their children out of a Disney cell, and never get due process of any law. This type of treatment has gone on for decades, and is almost a daily occurrence at Disneyland. The Anaheim Police force is very chummy with the Disney private police force. Also at one point, the Burbank Chief of Police was the brother-in-law to Disney's Chief of Security. Recently, when a couple filed a wrongful death suit against the Magic Kingdom of Disney in Florida, the state of Florida surprisingly has appeared to have backed off from their traditional behavior of protecting Disney's sovereignty. An article on the suit said, ""there is evidence of some nervousness with Disney's relative autonomy."" (San Francisco Chronicle, article "Mickey's Dark Side" Oct. 1, '96, p. C6) An attorney in the case said, "Disney World's security people aren't just cops, they are bad ones. I don't think there is any corporation that has ever had the perceived power that Disney has."

Richard Foglesong, a professor of politics at Rollins College in Winter Park stated, "Because Disney World controls so much of its corporate and municipal universe, it can't help but act in a heavy-handed manner in order to ferociously protect its self-interest. They have immunity from state and local land use law. They can build a nuclear plant, distribute alcohol. They have powers local communities don't have. Do they abuse it? In my opinion, yes."

In line with Disney's previous dictatorial policies on their properties, Disney's new city called Celebration will not have any elected government. Since the city is unincorporated (a neat Disney trick) the mayor is appointed by Disney. Several Disney "quasi-government'" bodies control citizens of the city. For instance, the Celebration Residential Owners Association, which participates in binding all residents to a Declaration of Covenants, a legal binder of rules that residents must live by. Of course the Declaration of Covenants was written by Disney. These rules include such nit picky things as, no more than two people can sleep in the same bedroom, no pickup trucks can be parked in front of homes, and if Disney officials don't like your cat or dog they can forcibly remove the animal from your home. Disney Corp. has perpetrated numerous deceptions on the residents, incl. shoddy work on their homes, and operating their ""public"" school with Disney cronies. Still, the residents that have moved into Celebration are glowing with praise for the town in spite of the fact that the city is totally run by Big Brother Disney Corp. Of course those who don't love it, soon leave. So much for the American tradition of self-government.

Some MOB HISTORY.

Traditionally, the mob crime bosses have had a yearly summit. In 1928, they had their yearly conclave at Cleveland. In 1929, they had their secret yearly conclave at Atlantic City. In 1931, they held their secret annual conclave at Wappingers Falls, NY. At the Wappingers Falls meeting, attended by about 300 overlords and soldiers, the heads of the family clans discussed their crime family agendas. They decided where the first national Mafia convention was to be held. Once the Mafia was able to hold their yearly private national meetings, they were able to coordinate their activities, as well as decide such things as:

a. the direction of national & internal operations, and long range plans

b. the promotion of new bosses

c. decisions on turf & rank, commodities & cash

d. hashing out alliances or disputes with the Mishpucka, Triads, FBI, Illuminati, etc. and working with others in a concerted manner. The mafia clans would then leave the annual summit meetings and follow through in their area of operations, until they would meet the next year, review their successes & failures, get new assignments, and decide upon new short & long term goals. In 1927, the Mishpucka worked with Mafia to highjack a bootleg shipment of whiskey travelling from Ireland to Boston for the Kennedy Illuminati family. Most of Kennedy's guards were killed in the shootout, and J.P. Kennedy had the widows of the guards besieging him for financial assistance. Billy Graham's good friend Mafia Chief Joseph Bonanno was one of the chiefs who attended the yearly conclaves. He also met with J.F. Kennedy in the Winter of 1959. John Kennedy was known to have said that mobster Sam Giancana worked for his Kennedy family. The mob/Illuminati alliances and infighting are too complex to deal with in this book, but both groups had to put plans into action to deal with the repeal of Prohibition, which would end their lucrative bootlegging. The short term plan for the Mafia was to control the film industry in Hollywood, and to penetrate the unions better. The long term plans called for sending their next few generations of children off to the top schools and getting them into legitimate respectable corporate positions. By learning the ins and outs of honest, legal operations, they could then mix in the illegal operations with their legal ones & look legal.

They planned to extend their power base into politics, the Harvard-Stanford business schools, as well as the finest corporate board rooms. They intended (and have succeeded) in getting some of their offspring to produce/direct T.V./films. They would have an increasing presence within the Bohemian Grove membership, as well as some of the other great social & business clubs. Their plan to take over the film industry hinged on their union control over unions and theaters. The Chicago mob controlled the International Alliance of Theatrical Stage Employees Union. The mob controlled the projectionist's union, and if the film makers had the theaters where their movies were shown shut down, what good would it be to make movies? The film makers and the mafia both had power & money. Rather than fight a protracted war, they made a deal. The major studios would give about $50,000 a year to the mafia, and the small ones $25,000, to be allowed to function. Other agreements were also reached. Mob henchmen Willie Bioff and George E. Browne were mob lieutenants who orchestrated the mob's "Hollywood takeover".

Time Magazine, Nov. 1, 1943, wrote, "In the witness chair in Manhattan's Federal Court sat bland, wily Willie Bioft (pronounced Buy-off), blackmailer, panderer, labor leader, and now star witness against eight ex-pals, who are charged with shaking down $1 million from the movie industry...Question: Was it true that Bioft once had a five-year plan for taking over 20% of Hollywood's profits-and eventually 50% interest In the studios themselves? Bioff (wistfully): "If we'd lasted that long, we would have. Question: "Did you ever say you were boss of Hollywood and could make producers do whatever you wanted?" Bioff: "Yes-and I could make them dance to my tune."

Although Bioff rolled over on his pals and ended up getting car bombed, that didn't stop the mob/Mishpucka infiltration & control of Hollywood. (Bioff had tried to save his public image by helping Walt Disney settle his labor dispute with the mob-led unions, but Walt wisely rejected his offer of help, and made sure he didn't offend the Chicago mob leaders who were disgruntled with Bioff.) Hundreds of millions of dollars were poured by the Mafia & Mishpucka into real estate in southern California, by using legitimate local businessmen to launder the money. Hollywood was declared a "free zone" where all the Mafia/Mishpucka families could operate without a fear of a turf war."

Let us backtrack slightly to 1930. Columbia distributed Disney cartoons from 1930 until 1932, when Disney switched to United Artists, because Columbia wasn't bothering to pay Disney the money they owed. In 1930, Cohn, Pres. of Columbia Pictures, got Disney off the financial hook with Powers by intimidating Powers with some street toughs carrying a legal suit. If Disney wasn't indebted to the mafia before, he was at that point.

Biographers have been puzzled why Disney went into such a traumatic depression after Henry Cohn "helped" him. Tough guy Henry Cohn made sure Walt knew who was boss. His attitude was that Walt should be happy to be paid at all by him for the cartoons Walt supplied Columbia. After this, Walt would lock himself in his room and weep uncontrollably for hours. He was impossible for anyone to get along with. He was unable to focus on anything, and would stare for long periods out the window. Biographers blame Walt's behavior on the fact that his wife was pregnant. They also blame it on his friend Iwerks defection to another company. Frankly, Walt had treated Iwerk like a dog, and deep down must have known why Iwerk left such an abusive relationship. To claim that he wept for hours day after day because he realized he might become a father is too much to swallow. When Walt was asked years later about why he was so depressed he said it was the stress of the financial situation. Walt said, "I had a nervous breakdown ... Costs were going up; each new picture we finished cost more to make than we had figured it would earn when we first began to plan it...I cracked up."

This author submits to the reader that part of his breakdown may have indeed been the financial stress from having come under the heel of the mafia. They had all the means to make or break him, and he had no choice but to surrender to their overwhelming power to blackmail & destroy him OR to get out of the business. What this did was place Walt in a position where his two strongest traits had to clash--his overwhelming obsession to be his own boss, and his creative obsession to create animation which was wrapped up with his ego & his deep phobias and psychological needs. His mind couldn't give up its independence nor its creativity without great mental anguish, and therefore Walt was very saddened, knowing that he would have to admit defeat, and buckle under the heels of the big boys. Just when he needed emotional support his wife was going to have a child, and his best animator left. Walt had abandoned Iwerks years before, and Walt's wife had wanted a child for some time. Iwerk's departure and his arriving child do not in themselves account for the long intense nervous breakdown that Walt experienced. Biographers point out that Walt was very reluctant to have children, and that he was impotent with women including his wife much of the time. His impotency to carry out normal sex may help explain his secret sexual habits.

Walt's Masonic brother Carl Laemmle offered Walt a good deal to help him recover from Henry Cohn's abusive control of Walt, but Carl wanted the copyright to Mickey Mouse in return for the help, and Walt wouldn't part with Mickey Mouse. Instead, Walt signed a contract offered by Joseph Schenck of UA (United Artists), who was one of the Mafia's illegal drug kingpins. In 1935, the mob's illegal drug dealer Joseph Schenck went on to found 20th Century, Inc. which later merged with Fox in '38 to form Twentieth Century-Fox, whose board of directors would include two Illuminati kingpins William Randolph Hearst and Malcolm MacIntyre. Joseph Schenck's brother Nicholas Schenck and Marcus Loew merged Metro Pictures and Goldwyn Pictures and named Louis B. Mayer as its head.

Meanwhile over the years, MCA, headed up by Illuminati Kingpin Lew Wasserman gained a monopoly over the American film industry with the secret backroom deals that they made with Ronald Reagan's Screen Actor's Guild and Petrillo's American Fed, of Musicians. (By the way, Lew Wasserman would try to revive Reagan's acting career in the early '60's. Frank Sinatra and Walt Disney were both friends of Ronald Reagan, and all three believed in mind-control.)

Ronald Reagan and Petrillo in turn worked with the Mafia’s NCS Council of 9 (which incl. Anthony Accardo and Sam Giancana), which at one point divided the U.S. into 24 mob territories. After J. Schenck went to jail (very briefly), he was replaced as Pres. of 20th-Cent. Fox by Spyros Skouras. Before his arrest, while Schenck was still in charge of 20th-Cent. Fox, he made numerous offers to Disney for Disney to incorporate his studio as a subdivision of 20th-Cent. Fox. Disney worked for a few years with them distributing his films, but he would not let go of trying to be independent. The FBI and American Intelligence turned to the mob to help them as the U.S. entered WW II. Perhaps Walt’s mob connection added impetus for his recruitment. Walt went to a number of American Nazi meetings prior to Pearl Harbor. This author believes from knowing Walt’s personality that Walt may have been on assignment, rather than a Nazi sympathizer. Still, why does one of Disney’s pre-Pearl harbor cartoons display a swastika? Disney’s Epcot Resorts is close to the mob’s Atlantic City Board Walk with its nightclubs. The resort was designed by Robert A.M. Stern. (This author doesn’t know about Robert Stern, but there are programmed multiples and Illuminati members within the Stern family.)

At Walt Disney World, the nightclub there was named "Cage", and then later ’8 TRAX". Comedy Warehouse, which is a nightclub at Pleasure Island in Walt Disney World opened on May 1, 1989 and has used slave comedians as well having people who are mind-control abusers. On Feb. 11, 1987, Walt Disney Co. was reincorporated in Delaware. Delaware is the only state that allows total corporate secrecy. No one can find out who really is running a Delaware corporation, and many other secrets can be hidden under Delaware’s corporation laws. Capital Group has considerable shares in Disney, as well as 29% of the shares of the Robert Mondavi winery at 7801 St. Helena Hwy, Oakville, CA. Wellington Group and Mellon bank also have shares. Behind Capital Group are mob controlled groups like Debartolo Reality Corp. and La Quinta Inns (a Bass bro. operation.) Sam Bronfman operates Sterling & Monterey Vineyards. There are countless people walking around that have felt the ruthless, impersonal, controlling, money-grabbing side of the Disney Corp. Also, there are a number of journalists who have experienced first hand the secrecy and paranoia that the Disney corporation has. Most journalists are not used to the secrecy that pervades Disney. Because Disney has shaped the myths of America for several generations, the public takes more concern over who is running Disney, than they would other institutions. Because most of America believe in the image that the Illuminati have built for Disney, they are rooting for it to succeed.

How the Disney Executives have figured out how to steal land all across the U.S.

Over the years Walt Disney has developed several very sneaky reliable techniques to acquire land. They acquire land through their executives and large stockholders and family members of the execs and stockholders. After all the deals are made in an area, and when everything is in place over a period of time, these people then turn their land over to Disney. Disney works with government officials and local bankers to line up special deals so they can succeed in their plans. After everything is lined up, the corporation announces their plans and goes forward. This methodology has been used repeatedly, for instance the American History Theme Park in the Manassas Civil War battlefield area of Virginia for which Disney has acquired 1,800 acres and has access to at least 1,200 more. In Nov. ‘94, after a new Virginia governor was elected, the Virginia "Disney’s America" project was announced, and Virginia voted almost instantly for the money for transportation and infrastructure improvements to the area so that Disney’s theme park would be viable. Disney set up 3 banks in Napa, CA. Their banks made loans to old families in the valley. The trusts and the wills for these families were made up by Stanford Univ. grads. These people set on the boards of these banks or connect with the boards of these banks. They charge large fees, and know every trick in the book to rob people of their estates and their living trusts. The Stanford grads, who connect in with intelligence agencies & the mob use certain code words when they set up their businesses, such as RESOURCE, EVERGREEN and PACIFIC. There are a number of scared landholders who are being intimidated to sell their land in the Napa Valley region.

DISNEY and the GOVERNMENT

Just prior to W.W. II, the FBI recruited Walt Disney. His job was to spy on Hollywood or anything else that looked suspicious. Documents obtained from the Freedom of Information Act, in spite of heavy censoring, clearly show that Walt Disney became a paid Special Correspondent asset of the FBI. He reported to FBI agent E.E. Conroy. In 1954, Walt was promoted to Special Agent in Charge (SAC) which means others reported to him.

After "leaving" the CIA, ex-DCI (ex-head) of the CIA William Hedgcock Webster became a lawyer for the Wash. D.C. based firm of Milbank, Tweed, Hadley and McCloy. In 1993, when news broke about Walt Disney's FBI membership, ex-CIA head Webster worked with the Disney family to cover up to the public that Walt Disney was an FBI agent. Webster went on TV and had interviews to spread the fabrication that Walt was not connected to the FBI. Why? One of the countless items that Disney was involved in was the investigation into the disappearance/rape of a six-year old child Rose Marie Riddle on 1/12/61.

According to documents gotten from the Freedom of Information Act, W.G. Simon was the FBI agent who met with SAC Walt Disney in L.A. about the case. W.G. Simon has been one of those people who has been publicly lying by claiming that Walt Disney never was an FBI agent. The paper trail proves otherwise. Why is it so important to the FBI and CIA to cover up that Walt was an FBI agent? Walt also worked for the CIA, even though documentation of that is not available. This author theorizes that the reason the FBI and CIA are so touchy about letting people know that Walt worked for the government is that the Network knows how the FBI and CIA worked together to procure children for mind-control programming purposes. Because Disney and Disneyland played such as enormous role in Mind-control, Disney's connection to them, although on the surface a seemingly minor fact, is in reality a minor fact setting on top of an enormous ghastly secret.

When W.W. II started, the government incorporated the Disney studios into the war machine. The military paid Disney $80,000 for 20 training cartoon, which cost Disney $72,000 to make. Disney studios also made some secret films for the military. Mickey Mouse and Goofy cartoons were slanted to have war themes, for instance, the Goofy cartoon of 1941 "The Art of Self Defense" and "How to be a Sailor" in 1944. Perhaps in honor of the contribution Disney had made to the war effort, "Mickey Mouse" was the password of the Allies for millions of men on the big D-Day invasion on June 6,1944.

Walt Disney produced a cartoon showing Donald Duck paying his taxes faithfully. The film was entitled The New Spirit. It was very successful in getting Americans to comply with the IRS. In 1946, Disney made a film for the public schools for sex education entitled The Story of Menstruation. For the United Nations, Walt Disney created "It's a Small World" attraction for UNICEF for the '64-65 World's Fair. This attraction was moved to the theme parks & has been a major feature for mind-control. After learning of the enormous amount of mind-control programming going on during after hours in secret tunnels at Disney as well as in the public facilities, it makes more sense why the Russian Premier Nikita Khrushchev would be denied a visit to Disneyland by the U.S. government "due to security considerations" when he was visiting the U.S. in Sept. 1959. Khrushchev obviously had his own security working in tandem with American security and the intelligence people for whatever reason(s) didn't want the complication of these Russians going to a major programming site.

Some powerful military men have been connected to Disney films. Two former commanding officers of the USS Alabama nuclear sub were technical advisors for the Disney film Crimson Tide. Walt Disney was tied to the U.S. government, and recent disclosures show that he was tied to the FBI. Walt used his FBI connection to destroy the life of Art Babbitt, who had led the strike against Disney in 1940. Babbitt found that everything he attempted in life after the strike was ruined by some hidden power. Was Walt part of naval intelligence attached to the FBI? Was he part of the FBI that is involved with child procurement and mind-control?

In the 1950's the Illuminati began organizing covens on the West coast and began solidifying their power. (This comes from several independent sources.) Likewise, it's clear that Disney didn't have the clout in 1953 with local governments, that it does today. Walt Disney was unsuccessful when he tried to get permission from the city of Los Angeles and the Burbank City Council for the construction of Disneyland (called Disneylandia at that time), in the Burbank area. One Burbank councilman told Walt, "We don't want the carny atmosphere in Burbank."" Inconsistently, within a few years they gave permission to Universal to build an amusement park in Burbank, which opened in 1964. Disney then ask the Stanford Research Institute to locate a spot for Disneylandia (Disneyland), which they found at Anaheim.

In recent years, Disney decided they wanted to build another amusement park (called California Adventure) across from Disneyland. In order to do so, the Interstate highway will have to have changes, and the Anaheim city council needed to approve the large 55 acre expansion. In contrast to the Burbank City Council in 1953, Anaheim's City Council was enthusiastic about the expansion in spite of lots of local opposition. The locals complained at council meetings to the City Council that the city had no business going hundreds of millions of dollars into debt to help a corporate giant. (Anaheim will issue $400 million in bonds.) Locals also raised concerns that the public school system in Anaheim is stressed to the breaking point where they are considering going to half days, and that Disney Corporation should give as much consideration for the school children of Anaheim as they do to their Amusement park. Disneyland's Pres.

Paul Pressler bragged about Disney's new California Adventure amusement park, "Disney's California Adventure is really a celebration of the fun, the beauty, the people and the accomplishments of this magical state. We really have set out to try to capture a bit of what the California dream is all about." (Sounds like the dream is to be wealthy and control people. The elite would rather give us BREAD & CIRCUS than an education.) The Dragnet films were done in part at the Disney studios. In an Office Memo from the 66-new LA SAC FBI agent to Hoover (12/16/54), which was obtained via the Freedom of Information Act, the typed memo states, "Mr. Disney has volunteered representatives of this office complete access to the facilities of Disneyland for use in connection with official matters..." Historically, we now know that Disney's use for "official matters" included mind-control.

J. DISNEY & MIND CONTROL

Once the reader is familiar with the programming scripts, the reader merely needs to watch the Disney "Adventures in Wonderland" that come on TV in the morning to see Disney mind-control at work. Within a few minutes one morning, this author had seen a white rabbit create "a world in your mind" (the quote is what the show said!) with a ring, watched Alice go through the mirrors, watched a White Rabbit [the programmer] read a book to a little girl, and the TV listener be told by the show "The White Rabbit is our only hope!" The deeper alters of Illuminati slaves who are programmed for espionage, for spying & blackmail, & seduction & assassination, are given programming to live in a fantasy world. They never touch base with reality.

Much of this type of programming has gone on at Disneyland. Disneyland visitors are taken in a boat where dolls sing an around-the-world theme song "It's a small small world". These doll world parts of the amusement parks are used for programming assassination & espionage alters. The song & dolls play important roles in these alter's mind-control programming. Some slaves at around age 19, have this type of programming tested to make sure it is solidly in place. The song "It's a Small World" was composed by the Sherman brothers for Disney originally as a theme song for a ride at the '63-'65 NY World's Fair.

The Sherman brothers were talent that Disney discovered. They were born in NYC, and both graduated from Beverly Hills High School. They wrote Disney songs for at least 29 films. Mind-controlled slaves, who repeatedly bump into each other, but don't know why, will be found saying, "It's a small, small world." Both rituals & programming go on at Disney amusement parks during both the day & night.

Steven Rockefeller and Walt Disney travelled and spent time together with Dr. Hadley Cantril, an establishment expert on human behavior. (See There Was Once A Time of Islands, Illusions & Rockefellers. NY: Harcourt Brace Jovanovich, 1975.) When Walt Disney began Walt Disney World he sent Card Walker to the Florida capital to request quid pro quo, and the governor gave it to Disney. What that meant is that Disney's property in Florida was totally controlled under Disney's jurisdiction, they had their own laws, their own police force, their own hospitals, and their own tax rate. No outside authority would interfere with Disney's jurisdiction. DisneyWorld's finances would be untouchable and out of sight by the state of Florida. Never had so much power been given away. DisneyWorld became its own crime syndicate within the syndicate. Disney amusement parks are like a city within a city. They have there own security forces, and the local police allow the Disney security forces to take care of their turf. Disney has their own policies (laws). Some of the security forces can be identified in plain clothes with clean-cut hair styles and have communication devices. The security forces have a headquarters room where TV monitors display-live the exit points at Disney as well as other locations.

America 's Most Wanted has a fairly large file on children who have been kidnapped at Disney Amusement Parks. One mother, who got separated from her child when getting off a train, frantically told a guard her child was missing. The guard took her to the monitor room, where they saw the kidnapper carrying the child out of the park with the boy slumped over his shoulder. In that short of a time, the kidnapper had drugged the child, cut his hair different, and put a different shirt on him. (This anecdote was mention in Inside the Mouse, pg. 52)

As written before, white slavery is part of what Disney is all about. This mother was one of the fortunate few who did manage to find their kidnapped children. An insider states that the Disney police are definitely part of those moving and abusing innocent children brought in for occult rituals. In addition, the Disney security forces spy on their own employees. Employees do not enter the theme parks like the visitors, nor do they move around like the visitors. They have underground tunnels and underground entrances and facilities for that. One victim of total mind-control mentioned that a tunnel entrance was at the Matterhorn mountain at Disneyland. (The Matterhorn was opened by Walt and his good-friend Richard Nixon, who rode in the first car down the mountain.)

The Disney productions has given the Illuminati the cover to bring together Illusionists, magicians, and special effects artists without anyone being suspicious. Some of these men were able to apply their talents toward programming children. As an example of their talents, Disney special effects artists were able to create 16 realistic-looking cadavers for the 1989 film Gross Anatomy. Walt Disney, Inc. has teamed up with Los Alamos and Sandia Labs, two other groups which are heavily involved in mind-control and people control to develop body scans, branding and access codes for the visitors to Disney's theme parks.

Each of the Disney Theme parks, such as Disneyland, DisneyWorld, EuroDisney etc. have vast underground facilities. These underground facilities allow many of the workers to get to the ride areas via underground passages. Each theme facility also has a vast infrastructure underground in order to maintain it. The underground areas contain wardrobe design and repair units, fitting rooms, restrooms, cafeterias, security units, computers, freight ramps, utility encasements, and large connecting tunnels. The underground areas also have programming rooms. They have their own power plants and water systems and their own police force. Disney company employs 71,000 people at several locations, tone recent TV show used the figure 40,000 Disney employees.] People are coming and going 24 hours at the Disney theme parks. Three shifts keep up the 24 hour business. The night crews maintain and repair the parks for the thousands of people that will soon arrive in the morning.

Disneyland makes a natural prop for carrying out mind-control. The items they sell are also natural props--such as the Goofy watch ($19.95) which has hands that move backward to confuse a slave as to what time it is. Was Walt Disney aware of how Disneyland was used for programming? There is no doubt. Disney lived much of nights at Disneyland, and had an apartment at the firehouse near the train station on Main St. At night, if he was not doing anything else, he'd roam the grounds of Disneyland scribbling notes on his own distinctive blue paper, which he'd leave for workers to follow the next day. The notes would say such things as "Replace these flowers," or "Move that bench". (Prince of the Magic Kingdom, p. 25) Walt Disney knew everything that went on in his Magic Kingdom.

The Epcot Center and the Disney amusement parks market all kinds of occult triggers, including crystals, rainbows, wizards etc. that reinforce the programming. The Epcot Center has two glass pyramids along with its "Journey into Imagination". Disneyworld has the Island of Atlantis on its sub tour. Fantasyland is one of the most used tours of Disneyland for mind-control purposes. It has carousels, merry music, an incredible castle, boat rides, story book characters etc. Sleeping Beauty Castle with its blue turrets and gold spires is the central visual object of Disneyland. You cross a drawbridge to get into it. Inside Fantasyland are Illuminati programming sites such as the Mad Hatter teacups, the King Arthur carousel horses, and Snow White's forest.

In the far corner of Disneyland's New Orlean's Square is the Haunted Mansion. This mansion is designed to frighten and scare, it has an ingenious design and many special effects and illusions. Realistic ghosts, a screeching raven, howling voices, and other scary things welcome the visitor. Life size holograms are created at the Haunted Mansion, and dance in sync with the music and then fade out at certain points. There is a hologram of a woman's head in a crystal ball who chatters non-stop. A real good laugh for the programmers of a little child. When you are toward the end, you will have a chance to look into a mirror where a hologram ghost will nestle up beside you.

Star Speeder is another great programming location at Disneyland. It was the creation of George Lucas and the Disney Imagineers. The technology is borrowed from Star Wars, and is similar to flight simulators used by the military to train pilots. Disneyland Hotel offers Character Breakfasts, where children eat breakfast with Disney characters, to people who make special arrangements. U.S. Special Forces, which carries out mind-control, owns two hotels near Disney World, and the Mormons have one also. Knott's Berry Farm with its Ghost Town, Amusement Park, & its Charlie Brown themes and characters is near Disneyland.

One of the Disney executives began one of the most horrible trauma-based mind-control programming centers in Los Angeles called Magic Castle a comedy warehouse. This trauma center had horrible torture chambers. Children were brought in from South and Central America to be programmed at the Magic Castle. A brave L.A. policeman exposed the place--for which he lost his job, and eventually was able to get the site closed.

One of Disney's recent ventures in their Disney Institute, which Newsweek labeled "the Disneyland of the Mind". (Newsweek, Mar. 4, 1996, p. 61) A private club called Club 33 at Disneyland located upstairs in the New Orleans Square is believed to be involved in mind-control. Cub's Den supervises children's activities at the Wilderness Lodge Resort at Walt Disney World. At Disney-MGM studios the major attraction is the Twilight Zone Tower of Terror. Guests take a strange scary trip through the hotel, where guests are finally sent into an elevator that drops out of control 13 stories. The ride has been advertized on TV. Disneyland now has a Temple to the Forbidden Eye--which is simply a Temple to the All Seeing Eye, the Illuminati symbol. Visitors, who have the patience to wait in line, can strap themselves in for a ride that is like a jack hammer that jars the rider through a temple filled with snakes, rats, and mummies. One aerobics teacher couldn't walk for three days after the jarring ride, which comes across as "hokey". The experience is more traumatizing than fun, but then maybe that is what was intended.

DISNEY VACATIONS FOR THE ELITE

Years ago this author's newsletters exposed Hilton Head Island, SC as a watering hole of the powerful elite incl. retired generals and admirals, and the site for the elite's Renaissance Weekend "meat market". Remember, that at one time Hilton Head Island was private, with imported alligators in the water around it. A person was only allowed on the island by going through security gates with a clearance. In a later newsletter, Disney's Hilton Head Island Resort was mentioned. This resort, built by Disney Vacation Development, Inc., is located on a 15-acre private island linked to Hilton Head island by a narrow bridge. Members to the Disney Vacation Club can exchange time for vacations at Disney and other resorts around the world. Memberships cost minimum $9,412.

(Chapter 5 Page 4)

MELODYLAND

Right smack across from the entrance to Disneyland is the Assembly of God's Melodyland Christian Center, the birthplace of TEN (Trinity Broadcasting Network). The Assembly of God denomination has been heavily infiltrated by the Illuminati, and has been heavily used as a front for programmed slaves.

Paul Crouch, president of Trinity Broadcasting Systems, Inc., was affiliated with Melodyland in 1973 when TBS was getting started. At that time, Melodyland was a rich heavily infiltrated charismatic church, with its share of programmed multiples. In 1973, closet homosexual minister Jim Bakker, and his wife Tammy Faye, a programmed multiple were with Paul Crouch in Anaheim at Melodyland. Paul Crouch had been the assistant pastor of Bakker's home church in Muskegon, MI. Crouch's right hand man was Alexander Valderrama, a charismatic Roman Catholic. TBS used an abandoned military base as their TV complex, using hangers as studios. In the early 70's, ABC put Bakker & Crouch's early shows on their affiliate stations on Sunday morning. Bakker had already gotten his career kicked off with Illuminatus Pat Robertson and his 700 Club. Jim Bakker split and went to the east coast. To help Bakker with his money, Bill Perkins, who had been a financial analyst for the World Order's mind-control research at Sandia National Labs in Livermore came to help Bakker run his ministry's finances. Later, televangelist Bakker began building Heritage USA, which was to be a big-money resort. Bakker hired people who had worked for Disney to construct Heritage USA. Bakker studied Disneyland, Disneyworld, and other Disney places as a model for Heritage USA.

After Disneyworld opened in Florida, Jim Bakker was a REGULAR visitor to it. Heritage USA's Ft. Heritage was modelled after Disney's Ft. Wilderness, Main St. was modelled after the Magic Kingdom's Main St., and Disney's wrought-iron fencing was also copied. Most people are aware of Jim Bakker's $265,000 payoff to Jessica Hahn to keep her sexual services to him a secret, his longtime homosexual relationship with his right hand man David Taggart, and his prison sentence.

James Orson (named after Orson Welles) Bakker was from Muskegon, the same place that Cathy O'Brien, a freed Mind-controlled slave came from. He was born pre-mature, and had some interesting family situations that make his family suspect. While Cathy O'Brien got programmed via the Catholics, Jim was part of another denomination which also was into programming, the charismatic Assemblies of God. His grandfather, who lived next door to Jim, and where Jim spent much childhood time with was popularly known in town as a "huckster", and nicknamed Kingfish after the manipulative character on Amos & Andy. Tammy his wife grew up in International Falls, MN in poverty in the home of her stepfather and mother. Besides having a "shopping demon," she has had her share of phobias and mental problems, as can be expected from someone who has had to suffer through programming.

It would be worth pointing out who has come to Jim Bakker's rescue when he was under attack. For instance, on Thursday, Oct. 4, 1984 when Jim was under attack, Jim Bakker's show had six people give endorsements and praise of Jim Bakker. Those were Ronald Reagan, Dale Evans, Robert Schuller, Oral Roberts, Billy Graham and Rex Hubbard. Of those, this author knows for sure that all are masons, except for Rex, who may or may not be. Robert Schuller, Billy Graham and Oral Roberts are "Christian ministers" who participate in using and handling mind-control slaves. These three ministers all participate in secret Satanic rituals. The last few paragraphs have given only a sketchy picture of the intimate relationship between Disney Mind-control and the charismatic movement and its use of trauma-based total mind-control.

DISNEYANA FOR THE PROGRAMMED & OBSESSED.

For people who have been programmed with Disney programming and who are obsessed with Mickey Mouse and everything else about Disney, and for other people who just have the collecting spirit for Disney memorabilia, there is a group called Disneyana.

Disneyana, was organized in the 1980's, and consists of people who are cult-like in their devotion to anything true Disney. Some of them to express their devotion outwardly tatoo their bodies with Disney characters. This group holds their annual convention at the Contemporary Resort in FL. One Disneyana at the annual convention said, "We collect to keep the good feeling inside." Another when interviewed said, "This is why it's all about love." The author knows as a fact some of the men who are obsessed with Mickey Mouse & Disney items are programmed multiples.

One of Kenneth Anger's occult friends has had the world's largest Mickey Mouse collection. Who is Kenneth Anger? Kenneth Anger, a member of LaVey's Magick Circle & later his Church of Satan, is an occultist and an underground film maker. Kenneth Anger (he choose the last name Anger) was raised on the Wizard of Oz books. His biographer Bill Landis writes that the Oz books "laid the groundwork for Ken's attraction to Crowley, the occultist who would rework Rosicrucian thought into his own magical system." Ken was obsessed with Crowley's life & magic. As a child, Ken had danced with Shirley Temple in competition after she became a child star. Ken Anger loved the OTO's solar phallic religion, and was also obsessed with Mickey Mouse. He spent part of his time studying his friend's Mickey Mouse collection. Ken Anger did his casting for his film "Lucifer Rising" by telling occult friends & acquaintances that they could live out their goddess or god power-trip fantasies by acting for him. The British government's National Film Finance Corp. fronted 15,000£ for Lucifer Rising's production. Famous occult musician Jimmy Page did the sound track gratis. Ken Anger acted as the film's Magus and made his Magus role resemble Mickey Mouse in the film Fantasia. (The role Fantasia plays in mind-control programming will follow as the last part of this chapter.) "Lucifer Rising" also starts with Fantasia-type volcanoes. Another of his well-known films was "Invocation of My Demon Brother."

Mind-control features in Disney movies.

The elements within Disney movies that are intentionally put in for mind-control would take volumes to describe. A detailed description of how just one Disney movie is used as a programming script soon follows. Fantasia was selected as the example. A random sampling of features in Disney movies for mind-control programming could include:

· Cogworth the enchanted mantle clock in Beauty and the Beast.

· The character Door Knob, which is a doorknob portrayed as a person in the Disney cartoon Alice In Wonderland, is useful for programming door knob alters.

· The Blue Yonder is a Disney movie on time travel of a young boy. Time travel movies are used for programming to mess up the victim's sense of time.

· Disney film "Animated Alphabet" has letters which come alive, which is useful for programming. And what about the '82 Disney movie "Computers are People, Too!" ?

· All the Illuminati members this author is aware of who have received trauma-based total mind-control were taught to astrally project and study on the astral plane what they needed to learn. A Disney movie that portrays this is Goofy over Dental Health. This is an educational film released by Disney in '91 and again in '93, where Goofy places a magical toothbrush under a child's pillow, so that the child astrally projects to a dentist office and while on the astral plane studies how to have healthy teeth.

· Illuminati alters believe that trees and flowers are alive. The 1932 Disney film Flowers and Trees is a story about two trees who fall in love. The film portrays the occult belief that trees can talk and sing. Internally, alter systems will be constructed with singing trees and flowers that represent people and which are alters. The singing trees give out internal codes to move alters internally where they need to go.

Return to Oz. (1985) This Disney film begins its story line about a girl who is thought to have psychological problems because of her tales of Oz. She is warned not to talk about Oz by her relatives. She is taken to a psychologist who wears a big ruby ring, who tells Dorothy that electroshocks won't hurt her, and that we are at the "dawn of a New Age." Dorothy is told that her memories are "just dreams" that stem from excess electrical current in the brain. She is sent to a mental institution to receive shock treatments for talking about Oz. A lightening storm allows her to escape the shock treatments and when she sleeps, she awakes in Oz.

In Oz she goes through many mind-control scenarios, ruby slippers, mirrors, etc., and toward the end visits with evil Mombi, Princess of Oz who keeps Ozma (Dorothy's twin) as a slave. Mombi eventually casts a spell and enchants Ozma into a mirror. Sci-Fi author J.D. Vinge in her Return to Oz based on the screen play writes on pg. 211-212, "Dorothy gazed at herself in the mirror, seeing her own reflection, and remembering the moment when she had looked at herself and seen someone else there, someone so like her that it could have been her sister." Parts of this film were filmed near Stonehenge, Eng. Disney has put out several films on the Wizard of Oz theme, all of which were used for programming. The original series of Oz books were by Baum.

In '39, MGM did the famous Wizard of Oz film. In the Disney movie Tron (1982), a young computer genius goes into an altered state where he ends up becoming a computer program. After defeating the MCP, he returns to the real world. This is simply a programming script. A special effects team created a 3-D world, showing how talented Disney special effects people can be in making something seem real. This movie should show people their mind-control capabilities.

Mathematical Applications Group, Inc. (MAGI) were one of the groups that created the graphics. Disney came out with 3 videos of new adventures in Wonderland which are mind-control programming. In the mornings here 9-9:30, on channel 21, Disney has a Wonderland Show every morning which is mind-control programming for children. Within a few minutes, this author had seen a girl walk through a mirror, the 3 lives of Thomasina mentioned, and a little ditty "I'm a little tea-pot" where a person becomes a tea pot. They also had an "under the umbella" scene. This was all pure programming, right on TV. Of course, they show the White Rabbit as a central figure.

ABC under the auspices of Disney produced a lengthy 140 min. film Wild Palms which depicts Illuminati mind-control and life. One reader of Vol. 2 stated that the Wild Palms movie would have made no sense except that having read the Vol. 2 book, the movie made lots of sense in the light of Vol. 2's revelations. The film depicts how children are kidnapped, switched at birth, programmed via TV cartoons, programmed to kill and use stun guns etc. The film depicts Illuminati bloodlines and arranged marriages. Although the name Illuminati" is not used, if viewers substitute in the name "the Fathers" for Illuminati fathers, they will get an insider's view of life at the top. The main controllers are addressed by their slaves as "Papa" or "Daddy" or "Mother". This is true to life.

A person opposed to the Fathers states, "One day we will wake up and discover we don't own this country and no one will care." The movie states that events are not happening randomly. The movie shows an underground tunnel system which has an entrance hidden by a swimming pool. Quite a few actual programming codes were said during the film, for instance, "down, down, down through the pool of tears..." and "we're going to go down the yellow brick road now." The movie was created by Bruce Wagner, who obviously is an insider concerning trauma-based total mind-control. The fact the movie was made shows the arrogance of the programmers' beliefs that their criminal acts in programming thousands of little children will not be exposed, and that people will be too stupid to realize that what is put out as fiction is actually mirroring what is happening. It's like they believe their own script that IF people did find out "no one will care." Because so much of the Illuminati programming involves the creation and programming of 3 alters linked into trinities, it is not surprising that Disney has helped such triad programming with a series of movies about threesomes, including:

3 Blind Mouseketeers

Three Caballeros

3 little pigs

Three Little Wolves

3 Lives of Thomasina

The Three Musketeers

3 Ninjas

Three Orphan Kittens

For Mickey Mouse programming they came out with Thru the Mirror, where Mickey Mouse steps through his bedroom mirror and ends up in another world (altered state). Not all of the Disney movies that have mind-control programming themes got released to the public. One unreleased cartoon had Penelope fleeing from a sinister looking Grandfather Clock which is carrying her to another world, and has another scene where Penelope tries to hold onto someone who personifies the Wind.

George Lucas, who directed the movie Star Wars, which was a movie planned by the Illuminati & used for Illuminati programming, also directed Disney's movie "Captain EO". Captain EO (who looks like a demonic entity) goes to rescue the Queen (who looks like the harlot describes as Mystery Babylon in the Bible). The Queen is in captivity simply because she and her people believe in black and white (which represent good and evil). When they renounce such a belief, they are saved by Michael Jackson (in actual life a mind-controlled slave) playing Captain EO. It's a New Age witchcraft film through & through.

By the way, Michael Jackson has gone to Disney amusement parks many times, sometimes in disguise. It is public knowledge that his Jehovah's Witness family has been very abusive mentally and physically to their children.

Disney has put out several movies on how the mind works, such as the educational film The Brain & Nervous System in 1990. Their film Runaway Brain is a cartoon where Dr. Frankenollie transplants Mickey's brain into a monster's body & vice-versa. A 1994 film, Puppet Masters shows the govt.'s secret Office of Scientific Intelligence trying to save the U.S. from aliens who live in human bodies.

In recent years, **Bette Midler** has been Disney's main actress. In the Vol. 2, it was exposed that she is possibly a Monarch Mind-controlled slave. She is famous for her "mood swings" (switches in personality), and she had a "mental breakdown" in 1985. Her eyes and body gestures are those of a programmed multiple. She has gone out on tour for Disney without making money, and she is best of friends with Jeffrey Katzenberg (second in command at Disney). Jeffrey Katzenberg by the way is extremely disliked by his counterpart Sid Sheinberg. Bette Midler plays Stella in the movie Stella. Stella is an occult name. In the movie, the script seems tailored for Bette Midler and for someone who is a programmed slave, rather than the actress fitting the role. At the movie's end, Stella (Bette Midler) attends her own daughter's marriage by peeking in a window and watching from the outside.

This is the script they give so many of the parts of a slave, so that they feel unworthy and feel like they are always on the outside looking in at life. Many parts (personalities) of slaves find it hard to connect with real life, because they feel they are on the outside looking in. And then in true Disney fashion, Disney had Bette Midler play the role of the lead witch in Hocus Pocus. The movie Hocus Pocus does some hocus pocus of its own. While pretending to make fun of witchcraft, they actually teach witchcraft. They do make the 3 witches look comical. By the way, the 3 witches stand for the maiden, mother, crone combo that the Illuminati reverence.

Disney subtly works in deep occult things, such as the all-seeing eye on the cover of the book, the little girl promising the cat (who is a familiar spirit) that her descendants would always care for it (true, because the cat was a generational spirit). The cat is killed in the movie but can't die. And Bette Midler as lead witch in her costume, which has some Mother-of-Darkness symbology on it, states as she gets ready to take the life force from an innocent girl, "We want to live forever, so we take children's lives." This is wholesome entertainment for children?

The Disney capacity for deception extends to its own workers. PR men recruit young people for its Disney College program. They tell the young people what a great stepping stone it will be for their careers. They have been known to make it sound like the greatest thing in your life. Kids come from all over the country due to the slick recruiting tactics to work for Disney. They are then housed in Disney housing, given menial jobs, and paid low wages. Most people in the College Program leave disillusioned. If the worker happens to think of a great idea, Disney officials have been known to steal the idea, and because the worker was working for Disney the worker will find that they are unable to get any credit or money for the idea that Disney steals and makes millions off of. One uncredited creator of a Disney sale item said, "literally, they're using everybody for everything." (Inside the Mouse, p. 239.)

>>> Next, will be the script for how the Disney film Fantasia has been used as a standard programming tool since the 1940's by the Illuminati.

K. DETAILED SCRIPT ON HOW THE DISNEY FILM FANTASIA IS USED FOR PROGRAMMING TRAUMA-BASED MIND-CONTROLLED SLAVES.

During the 1950's, '60's, and '70's at least 90% of the Illuminati's trauma-based mind-controlled slaves were subjected to watching Disney's Fantasia film in order for them to build the foundational imagery of the mind-control. Child mind-control victims had their eyes taped open, and then sat one-on-one with their primary programmers so that the programmers could give the scripts as the child watched Disney's Fantasia over and over. What made Fantasia unique as a programming tool is that it had almost everything the programmers needed to create the foundational imagery for their trauma-based mind-control. To build a dependable alter system means that the worlds need a solid foundation. Fantasia has provided the means to get a solid foundation for the internal worlds that the Illuminati slaves build in their mind. It is also a masterpiece in coordinating color and music.

The Disney film Fantasia which premiered on Nov. 13, 1940 (at Broadway Theater in NYC) was a financial disaster as a movie, but was an Illuminati programming masterpiece. The film was released to theaters in '40, '46, '56, '63, '69, '77, '82, '85, '90 in order to catch every generation of children. The video was released in 1991.

During programming much of the child slave's mind will watch the film. One particular part (alter) will be forced to memorize everything in the film. This small part (small alter) is well hidden in each victim's mind. This small alter, who has a vivid and total recall of the film Fantasia, is locked carefully away so that ONLY an access code will pull him/her up. Watching the videotape Fantasia is not going to pull this alter up. The programmers pull this alter up when they have a clean slate alter. When they are taking a clean slate of the mind, they will pull the clean part up and have the alter who has memorized Fantasia throw its memory onto an internal big screen.

The internal Outer space (aka Rubicon) is shaped like an amphitheater, and functions as a big vast screen for replay. There is an internal ball or sun created via the lighting effect of the movie Fantasia, so that the movie appears projected in the mind as on a globe. And the Fantasia film images hit this internal globe and go circular in the mind and spin through the system. The programmer will then say to the new part "THIS IS WHAT I WANT YOU TO CREATE. THIS IS WHAT WE NEED." In this fashion, Fantasia has provided the programmers with their primary tool for taking a dissociated clean slate part of the mind, and manipulating it to become a new workable part within the system. The young part that holds the entire Fantasia memory is strategically placed in the system so that it can be called up from anyplace in the system. No matter where the programmer is working in the system, he can access this small alter whose function is to remember the movie. Most of the system will go into a trance sleep if shown the movie. The front (as well as most of the system's alters) will be totally amnesic to having ever seen the movie. Since the programming put in with Fantasia is so fundamental it should come as no surprise that the programmers have done an excellent job in protecting this programming from everyone, including the slave. Abreacting the film for many alters could rip the system apart, because after the film is memorized severe trauma begins to be overlaid and attached to the film. There may be some small alters that still carry tiny bits and pieces of memory of the movie, but only one will really remember it.

The following script will be a running account of how Fantasia has been used as an important preparatory film for Illuminati trauma-based mind-control to train the mind-control victim's mind to be able to visualize the programming that will be layered in.

The time clock will begin when the feature film's action begins, and then will run its entire 116 minutes. This will give the researcher of mind-control a blow-by-blow description of how a Disney movie is used for programming. The film was often shown to child victims around 3 to 4 years of age with a wide screen while the child was under a guided LSD trip. (Prior to the use of LSD some other drugs were used.)

A Grande Dame or Mother-of-Darkness often worked with the Illuminati programmer as an Assistant Programmer. The scripts & the programming have already been discussed prior to showing the child the film, so the programmers know the direction they want to take the child, & will tailor some of what is said to the child victim to individualize the programming.

When a three or four year old is shown Fantasia on a hypnotically-prepared and controlled LSD trip, the colors & effects of Fantasia are increased about 1,000 times. The film is realer than real to the child. The movie will not be shown just once, but over and over so that the scripts are ingrained into the mind. The imagery for the child's internal world will be well established, because the big screen movie enhanced by both the drugs and the bright colors of the art work will seem more real that life itself. At this time, the child is a multiple, but the walls between the various parts of the mind are not solid, but similar to the walls between ego states in an adult non-multiple. A large part of the 3 or 4 year-old child's system will be allowed to view the system, including the Christian parts. Then the entire system (with the single exception of the alter carrying the entire memory of the film) will be hypnotically told to forget having seen the film.

Years later, the front alters will not remember having seen the movie, but they may have a strange dislike for the film. They may find that they can't identify where their feelings of dislike of the film stem from. The child victim will watch the movie with its programmer and assistant programmer one-on-one, with no other children in the room. The child will watch the film repeatedly and be grilled about what is in the movie. The child will see the movie so many times in such a vivid form and will be tested to the point that the movie will be memorized. But it will be hypnotically locked up in the subconscious by the programmers, so that it forms a base for the mind to begin building programming, but will remain hidden from the conscious.

At the time the Fantasia film was made, the Illuminati had been creating trained multiples for years, but they knew they wanted to program the different personalities in accordance with the best mind-control techniques of the day. For this reason, the Fantasia film was planned ahead of time, so that it could possibly serve as a programming aid. The film is silent (almost no words) except for music so that it can be used for hypnotic visualization, so that the Mother of Darkness & the programmer can fill in the programming script with the child victim as they watch the movie. As it turned out, their plans were successful.

The New Age author David Tame states in his book The Secret Power of Music (Rochester, VT: Destiny Books, 1984, p. 292), that Fantasia is. . . "A superb marriage between the visual and musical arts. Most of the sequences.. .are what New Age cinema was intended to be!" The power of the movie to influence the mind stands out. In order to make the film, Disney used some strong arm tactics on a few people. The movie was a box office flop when first released in the 1940's, but then it was made for the occult world anyway. By the 1960's, the Illuminati had create a drug culture and had lots of undetectable mind-controlled slaves running around that had been programmed with Fantasia. In the 1960's, Fantasia became a hit with the drug culture which had its share of Illuminati slaves deeply involved in it. One more reminder, the sentences that are "ALL CAPS" in the script are things that the programmers are saying to the child victim as the child watches the film. (Bear in mind, that the child watches the film over & over, so not everything indicated in this script by caps that the programmer says will necessarily be said in one showing.)

00 minutes. Curtains open. Action begins with an orchestra. The Conductor upon a step pyramid is the center of the scene, and is shown to be the center of authority. Master Programmer Dr. Joseph Mengele liked Fantasia because he was a musician and a violinist. Mengele (Dr. Green) liked Bach, Beethoven, and Schubert and orchestra music. He enjoyed taking what he liked & using this music to make slaves. He would portray himself during programming as being the conductor, & all the orchestra were his children. The film will allow for a repetition of this theme.

00.5 minutes. The instruments begin playing. The musicians are silhouettes which cast shadows upon the wall. Alters will often see themselves in this fashion too, as merely a shadow or merely a silhouette.

01.5 minutes. The MC (named Taylor) begins talking. He begins grooming the viewer. He says that the film may suggest to your imagination "geometric figures floating in space."

02. minutes. The M.C. says there are 3 kinds of music. He says some music is to create definite stories, some to create definite pictures, and some music exists for its own sake.

02.5 minutes. The M.C. introduces us to the "Absolute music."

03. minutes. He states that „Abstract images that might pass through your mind...music will suggest other things to your imagination..." The Philadelphia Orchestra begins playing "Toccata and Fuge" by Bach in the background. As a cartoon for children (or adults) the film has already lost the normal audience at this point. (There is no way that Disney could have escaped realizing that the film starts out losing the normal audience.)

03.5 minutes. The conductor is standing out and everyone else is a silhouette with shadow mirror images (like so many of the alters become). Leopald Stokowski is now standing as the rising sun rises. This is an allusion to sun worship and the sun rising in the east. The music is going up and down, and this music at this point is used to train the child to go up and down the trance ladder (that is to go deeper or lighter in trance).

04. minutes. The conductor opens his hands and waves them in an Illuminati hand signal. The music begins.

06 minutes. A row of violinists play, they are merely silhouettes with shadows.

06.5 minutes. A harp scale is played in the background that is used in the programming. Triggers are attached to this harp scale, or the harp scale is used as a foundation identifier for a piano scale. More children can be taught the piano than the harp, so this scale is usually transferred to a piano scale.

07 minutes. A series of 3 musicians is shown.

07.5 minutes. The conductor (the programmer) becomes invisible. The Prog. Assistant will ask the child, "WHO IS GREEN? GREEN BECOMES INVISIBLE."

08 minutes. First lines representing bows are shown (the violinists are invisible), then the Golden Gate Bridge. "REMEMBER THE BOW, NOT THE VIOLINIST." The bow lines flashing on the screen represent energy.
08.5 minutes. Colored disks are flashed onto the screen. The lights are represented to the child victim 'THAT'S DR. GREEN'S ORCHESTRA." Geometric shapes and flashes of lines explode onto the screen. Concentric rings that will pattern the concentric worlds appear. (See Vol. 2 p. 196 for an illustration of this.)

10. minutes. Asst. Prog. will say, „YOU ARE HIS STAR." as stars flash on the screen. Many hidden alters

(parts) are stars. Swirling lines arrive, and then colors and then more concentric lines.

11 minutes. Worlds within worlds are shown. Water is shown. Concentric circles that are the pattern for the worlds are presented. A varying number (5 or 7) of Castle-like structures materialize and then disappear. (These will form the pattern for some of the internal castles.) A quick flowing yellow line comes down the center of the screen, ‘THAT’S THE YELLOW BRICK ROAD."

11.5 min. Lots of stars emerge.

12 minutes. Various worlds are shown, and an illusionary castle. Lots of stars are shown, which will be how the victim will model many of their alter parts after. Lots of purple stars appear, representing royal star alters.

12.5 minutes. Spiral splotches of cloud-like colors appear and disappear in dissociative colors. This is the Kingdom of the Gods during programming. The Asst. Programmer takes the opportunity to ask, "WHOSE ORCHESTRA?" This scene is used for the internal heaven where the kings are. Then the camera shows the conductor finishing.

13 minutes. The programmer has finished building his basic worlds.

13.5 minutes. The MC talks about Tchaikovsky’s Nutcracker.

14 minutes. 13 circling lights come into view circling around and around. (The 13 lights are something like 4 yellow lights, 3 white lights, 4 orange, 2 blue-something like this. They don’t have to be all the different programming colors at this point, because that programming will come in its own time.) Stars turn into fairies. A fairy with lots of fairy dust whirls around. ("Make a wish" the slave will be told later on, create what you want.) Flowers grow into butterflies. Hypnotic music plays as the fairy throws fairy dust. Soon, the Fairy spins a web.

15 minutes. The cabalistic tree of life is made with lights, and then the many colors of the ribbons are flashed up on the screen quickly. A compass image is very quickly flashed on the screen.

16 minutes. Lights multiply on the screen, and a spider web appears in the background. There are lots of stars which shine as lights in a spider web. (Stars will serve as alters in programming, the spider web serves as a system within the system, see Vol. 2.) There are several shots of multitudes of stars on a spider web. 16.5 minutes. There is an explosion of light which has a splintering effect (which will fit in well with an electroshock later on to create alters.) Around and around go 6 big mushrooms dancing, with a little one trying to participate. The programmer will point out that the mushrooms are "A FAMILY". When the splintering effect is done with real electricity in the future, the mind will splinter into a family.

17.6 minutes. Concentric circles appear in water. Flashing pedals emerge as if they were dissociation spreading through the water. The flowers are the top spinners (see the pages in Deeper Insights on spin tortures to create spinner families), they dance, & then they float away in the bubbles (of dissociation). "A FAMILY OF SPINNERS" the programmer will say. "SEE THEY SPIN YOU INTO BUBBLES INTO NOTHINGNESS." There is lots of dancing shown by the spinners. Everyone is dancing to the top. The child victim’s head will be wobbling back and forth from the influence of the drugs and dissociation at this point.

19.5 minutes. When the family of fish make a star, the Asst. Programmer says, "SEE HOW SAD THEY ARE." The fish dance in circles and they also hide behind veils. "THE FISH MADE ITS OWN BUBBLES AND YOU CAN MAKE YOUR OWN BUBBLES TOO."

21.5 min. The child is trained to trance at the hypnotic 8’s that appear in the water. This type of scene will put the deeper alters to sleep of a slave still actively being used. The movie here is being used to teach symbols, which will be important in the programming. Asst. Programmer, "LOOK YOU’RE JUST FLOATING.. ..FLOAT, FLOAT, FLOAT, SLEEP...SEE SHE WENT RIGHT INTO THE CENTER OF THE TRANCE STATE.. .YOU DANCE ROUND AND ROUND AND ROUND AND WHERE WE END UP YOU’LL NEVER KNOW."

22 minutes. Lots of bubbles begin appearing. They will be used in the programming to assist the child to protect

its mind from the traumas. The asst. programmer may have a bubble toy to make bubbles in her hand as a game to play with the child. The child will be trained and programmed to put its memories into bubbles and let them disappear. „WHY WOULD YOU WANT TO GO INTO THE BUBBLE TO GET AWAY FROM THE DARKNESS? 1,2,3...NOW THERE ARE MANY BUBBLES, THIS IS WHAT WE WANT YOU TO DO." At this point the film is showing different colors of bubbles, for instance gold bubbles. This trains the child’s mind to identify different colors of bubbles. The bubble-fish-flower scene is going on. "DON’T YOU FEEL LIKE THAT FISH, ROUND AND ROUND YOU GO" (dissociation encouraged). The fish continues going in a dissociative spin. The fish swim in graceful perfect figure 8’s which have a subconscious hypnotic induction message to the victim. "SLEEPY LITTLE FISH" is said when the music gets hypnotic. "YOU’RE SLEEPY & YOU’RE TIRED, THIS IS NOTHING BUT A DREAM." "ALL THE DIAMONDS ARE ALL AROUND, NOT YOU" In other words, this is teaching the child that their entire internal world can be around them, but "you don’t know that it’s you." The child begins to lose the ability to realize that other parts of itself belong to itself, they are only stars, etc. The fish changes into anot her character. flowers are appearing in different colors of the color coding, red, green, orange, blue, white. . .All of a sudden it get’s still. "SHH, LISTEN CLOSELY."

22.5 minutes. Eyes shine in the darkness. "EVERYTHING IS FINE, YOU JUST RELAX."

Silhouettes appear, which represent fish (alters, and people) who are there but you don’t see them, they are behind the veil like the silhouettes. ‘THEY AREN’T THERE, IF YOU SEE THEM THEY AREN’T REAL THEY LOOK LIKE A FLOWER, WHEN YOU SEE THEM, YOU WON’T SEE A CHILD- YOU WILL SEE A FLOWER." The silhouette veil gives the sense to the child that he can sense something but it’s not there. 23 min. Different plants appear and dance. (This part of movie is very important in structuring.) The plants separate into many plants and flowers, and they multiply on the screen, but at the end they solidity into a solid plant. This is teaching the „you-are-one-but-you-are-many" concept. "FAMILIES ALWAYS WORK TOGETHER. WHETHER YOU ARE BLUE OR YELLOW OR GREEN, FAMILIES ALWAYS WORK TOGETHER IN HARMONY."

24 minutes. "BUBBLES ALL HAVE A LIFE SOURCE...THERE, LOOK, WHAT’S IN THAT BUBBLE?" 24.5 minutes. „YOU CAN HAVE YOUR OWN ORCHESTRA". Fruit that hangs on the tree is shown, which will be the basis for how they hang the programs (the fruit) in the internal world. Note the colors, orange, white, yellow, purple, blue, green,...

24.5 minutes. Fairyland appears on the screen. The Fairies awake and fly through leaves. ‘THERE’S YOUR FAIRIES. SHE IS VERY MAGICAL. SHE CAN CREATE ANYTHING AND SO CAN YOU." "THE FAIRIES ARE SO MAGICAL."

When the core is being first split, the parts of the mind that are creative are taken and used to create the fairies. The programmers will only take these original creative splits, they will not try to get fairies from any more torture. The fairies are the creative parts of the child, how ever many creative parts that the child has splintered will be the number of fairies created. These parts of the mind receive very heavy programming. They are core splits. (If readers remember on page 87 of Vol. 2, it refers to a Core Protector coded "Creation". That alter was a fairy, a core split. Not only does this creative part make things "magically" for the system, it protects the core. Does that help people to understand how the Core can be so creatively protected?! (For more understanding about the Core see Cisco’s very deep article on the Core.) Fairies are assigned to every part of an alter system. The child of 3 or 4, who watches Fantasia has had their core locked away at 2 1/2. The core’s stars have not been locked away yet, & have access to her energy. When the system is built, the stars are locked away & become the core’s guardians. They will act like the core to protect her. The real value of the fairies comes when the core’s stars are locked away & the Programmers have to depend upon the creative power of the fairies.

24 minutes. A vine (which represents a system’s double helix) lights up one leaf after another. The leaves are staggered (alternated) and they light up in sequence, which teaches the child the foundation of how they will create the DNA helix and its staggered exit permissions.

25.5 min. The leaves are now floating up and down, like the alters will learn to do. "SOME FALL TO THE GROUND AND DIE." This is the point where the story of the Oak Tree will be added in for programming. When the Illuminati programmers want "to destroy" an alter they can use the chandelier-MT 6:22-23 torture mentioned on page 310 of the Vol. 2 Formula book, and then have the splintered alters become leaves that fall to the ground and die. After this, these disobedient and now "dead" alters can be taken & be dissociated from their memories. The memories are locked up someplace permanent within the mind.

26. min. Out of a leaf like "box" come a series of fairies. The child is taught to put things (such as alters) in boxes of various shapes.

26.5 min. Leaves blow in the wind. Fairies cover things and keep them safe.

27. min. Fairies continue flying around. The seasons are passing in sequence. An internal green-skirted fairy will be connected to the internal hourglass during the programming.

27.5 min. The fairies quit flying and skate on ice. The season has turned to winter.

28 min. A winter scene. The four seasons have come to an end.

28.5 min. A sorcerer is introduced by the MC (emcee). The sorcerer is shown and then his assistant or trainee who is Mickey Mouse. Mickey Mouse wants to be creative and magical like the great wizard. Mickey Mouse sees the power that the sorcerer has, and wants that power. What is really being subtly portrayed here is the programmer (the wizard) and the core & the core's creative splits (Mickey Mouse). Showing the programmer as a great wizard is actually right on the money. The top programmers are all Grand Masters in the Illuminati and are very much into witchcraft.

29 min. The sorcerer (wizard) is shown again. This time the wizard,, with his skull beside him, creates from his witch's cauldron a big colorful butterfly which is forever changing. (Is this big yellow, purple, white, and blue butterfly meant to be a Monarch butterfly? The programmers will use it that way for this Monarch programming.) The great wizard magically creates the big colorful butterfly and then he shatters it into countless splinters!

Disney often portrays Mickey Mouse as a Sorcerer.

30 min. Mickey sneaks around and grabs the magic hat. (The magic hat is one of the few things in the film that doesn't mean anything for the programming. It merely has witchcraft symbols.) Then a magic broom appears.

30.5 min. The broomstick comes alive. The broomstick imagery will be used to help create the pancake people (ribbon alters who will haul the internal computer messages). The broomstick person in the film hauls buckets of water. The child is having story after story layered in over a period of time, which are being skillfully constructed toward a programming end. Parts of the child's mind that see the movie Fantasia will be dissociated clean slates. They will need to have some imagery given to them so that they have something to build mentally upon. In Cisco's section of the book, in the Truth article it is discussed how the mind looks at sensory inputs and tries to make sense of a pattern by comparing it to previous patterns that it has identified. Learning is a step-by-step building process, and so is programming.

31. min. Mickey as the apprentice sorcerer (in a sense the victim who the programmer is training) manipulates the broomstick person. "THE CHILD (Mickey) CAN DO WHAT THE GREAT MAGICIAN DID. YOU CAN TELL YOUR MIND WHAT TO DO. YOU GET POWER BY LEARNING TO BE CREATIVE." Mickey (and the victim) become mirror images of the Wizard over them.

32 min. Then the sorcerer sits on his throne, and while on the throne acts like the conductor. Here is a subtle mental tie-in that Mickey is playing the role of programmer (conductor) and is sitting on an Illuminati throne (like so many of the Illuminati Grand Master programmers have actually done.) Michael Aquino is just one of several mind-control programmers who have gone by the name of Mickey. Because Mickey Mouse is substituted for being the programmer at different points in programming, this scene will tie in well with other standard programming sessions.

32.5 min. Mickey in the film clearly is shown leaving his physical body and astrally projecting himself. This is such a vivid portrayal of occult astral projection, that it is mind-boggling that many Christians consider Walt Disney movies to be christian. (See Vol. 2, p. 319, for a discussion of the scientific methods to understand and induce astral projection.) This again is laying the mental foundation for the child to leave its body mentally and either hover over its body in dissociation or to travel somewhere via astral projection. Mickey Mouse then begins conducting lights.

p_starry-sky.gif

These lights represent the alters that the victim will make for the conductor. The lights (aka stars) are the conductor's orchestra. Lightning (such as flashes that come from electroshock) and stormy weather are being controlled by Mickey. Notice that the things Mickey is controlling are fear-based. After the child has viewed the film many times and memorized it, when the electro-shock is applied during this time of the film, the child will control it like Mickey by 'magically' creating splits.

33.5 min. Mickey begins conducting waves. Then, for those who understand the veiled scenes, Mickey begins going through the different magic spheres conquering the different spirits. This is Enochian Magic. 34 min. Mickey wakes up back in his body, and he is in trouble with rising water i.e. a water trauma. Mickey is thrown into the water. The child victim will identify this with the drowning tortures that are given to instill "no talk-no tell" messages. After Mickey (or in child himself) has done something, and returns to his body, then the "'no-talk"' message will kick in. Victims of mind-control often get the feeling of drowning when they trigger a no-talk message.

34.5 min. More water continues to flow.

35 min. All of a sudden without any continuity of action, Mickey gets an ax and kills the broom by splitting it. The broom dies and then multiplies when it comes back to life. This is such a clear picture of what the programmers want the child's mind to do. They will traumatize the child essentially unto death, and then they want the tortured alter to multiply itself into many more duplicate alters. Armies of brooms are formed from the broom. This scene here is a clear red flag that the Illuminati asked Walt Disney to produce this film. This scene with the trauma death of the broom, with it splitting in half, and then coming back to life in a multiplied form, is evidence that this film was meant to be used for training children in multiplicity. The assistant programmer will say "IT'S O.K. TO SPLINTER." "YOU ARE TIRED, YOU CAN ESCAPE THAT BY RESTING AND LET A PART OF YOURSELF COME OUT." At this point, it is necessary to explain what is going to be done when they begin to splinter the child's mind. After the splitting trauma, the programmer needs to be able to see what the child has created, so he wants the child to look at what's been made. "'CAN YOU LOOK AT WHAT YOU'VE CREATED?" However, the part of the child that looks back at the trauma will then see that the dissociated trauma was real and that will make the child angry. The programmers want the child to dissociate what he built, and when the child looks back at what he has created he goes into a vortex of dissociation. The child is told if he ever looks back at the memory he will go into the vortex.

35.5 min. Water is being thrown in by the brooms, while Mickey throws water out.

36 min. All of a sudden a hypnotic vortex sucks things in during the film.

36.5 min. The brooms all march in an army, while Mickey reads his magic book. Mickey then uses his magic book as a lifeboat when he gets whirled into a vortex. A vortex is often created from that part of the mind that is holding the high energy that accumulates in the mind just before the mind splits. It holds the highest energy of the mind. One way a vortex is created is to place the child on a traumatic Disney ride--like a rollar coaster. Special electrical boxes or electrical shoes are outfitted onto the child so that during the ride, at a particular timed moment when fear is increasing, that fear has pain of the electrical shock added to it. A cattle prod of course would be too dangerous to take up on some type of ride like that with all the motion. Also bear in mind, a small child doesn„t take need the electrical power that an adult needs to take it down.

37 min. At the bottom of vortices in the Illuminati programming, the programmers place Guardian demons. In Fantasia, when Mickey gets to the bottom of the vortex, sure enough, there is a Guardian there to meet him. The Guardian spirit parts the water as if he were Moses with the Red Sea.

38. min. The Conductor and Mickey Mouse shake hands. The conductor does something very significant. Mickey congratulates the conductor and then the conductor (programmer) in turn says, "Mickey, you've done a good job." (Yes, the core/core splits have done a good job at this point, they have just created their inner world!)

The MC tells us about the next song the occult Rite of Spring. Spring rituals are creation rituals and so this music is ritually connected to what the programmers are going to do in this segment. The MC states that instead of the viewer seeing tribal dances (which are by the way witchcraft dances), that instead Disney has decided to show us scenes of what went on billions of years ago. (This next part is also a subtle push for Darwin's theory of evolution. But because it is child's entertainment, people don't have their guard up. The theory of evolution is important, because it allows people including the victim to not take moral responsibility for their actions, and it is also the basis of some of the Hinduism and witchcraft teachings that will be given the deeper alters. This is a backdoor approach to destroy godliness that is carried out on children in general.)

39.5 min. The MC says, "Imagine a lonely tormented little planet spinning in a sea of nothingness." This is exactly what the programmer will say to the child as they work together at building an internal world. The "sea of nothingness" is what the reader will see described in our books as "Outer Space" or „the Rubicon." Also that "sea of nothingness" is used much later to reinforce the secrecy of the programmers. Much later as the programmer and torture has progressed the programmers will say to alters, "LOOK DOWN ON THE EMPTY SEA OF NOTHINGNESS. THERE IS NO DR. GREEN. THERE IS NO DADDY THERE."

40 minutes. A swirl of stars in a galaxy appears. Swirls of comet-like lights flash by. "MANY WORLDS THERE." This will set the base for the child to build galaxies and worlds within their mind. "BE LIKE GOD, CREATE YOUR WORLD. BE YOUR OWN GOD AND CREATE YOUR OWN WORLD" the child is told at this point.

42 minutes. The face of the planet emerges.

42.5 min. Lots of volcanoes erupt on the screen, setting the foundation to build realistic internal volcanoes.

45 min. Oceans, and water and fire are coming into being. The child victim needs to know how a world is created in order to create their own internal world. Lava begins flowing as the flute plays the background music. Lightening flashes. The violence of the fierce weather portrayed will be enhanced by the child on drugs to a thousand times its magnitude. This is important because it will take a great deal of mental energy and external torture to create the internal worlds. Having such super-vivid pictures will help when the victim goes to build their internal worlds. There will be special purpose fragments that will be made into the elements of fire and water. That's all these special purpose fragments will know. Breaking through the layers in the alter systems will trigger internal earthquakes. This and a later earthquake scene are used to build the foundation for the internal violent weather. If an internal earthquake shakes a slave's mind, it has the same effect as if a real earthquake were going off. Everything internally shakes and shifts. An alter system will also have fire children, who start internal fires, and will give internal alters the abreaction or sense that they are burning. The mind gets very survival minded when it thinks it is burning, and goes right back into the programming that is linked with the victim's compliance for survival during programming. 46 minutes. The oceans continue to form.

47 min. A calm occurs in the action.

47.5 min. The screen gets dark except for an amoeba, which becomes two amoebas. As the little amoebas multiply, the asst. programmer encourages the child, "IT'S O.K. TO MULTIPLY. GOD WANTED YOU TO MULTIPLY" Remember, the programmers are working with a pre-schooler with clean slate alters. The programmers must show images that the child can relate to. The concept of the broom being split in half and then multiplying and now the concept of the amoebas splitting are portrayed in a way that the child's mind can grasp the concept.

48.5 min. "IF GOD CAN MAKE A FISH, YOU CAN MAKE A FISH. YOU CAN DO ANYTHING, YOU CAN BE ANYTHING."

49 minutes. Dinosaurs appear. The programmers will reframe the concept of dinosaurs into monsters and demons. The sea-going dinosaurs will be refrained as guardian demons which guard the internal rivers. These guardian demons tie in with Armageddon end-time programming. They also guard the various worlds.

50 min. Dinosaur-birds swoop down and grab prey. This imagery will be refrained to lay the basis for the winged-monkey watchers of the Oz stories. The winged-monkey watchers are the child alters who are assigned

to watch and guard the system.

51.5 min. Fierce dinosaurs (later ref rained as Dragons) protect the swamps. Swamps are built into the internal worlds, so this is very helpful. Demons and alters like Dameon are set up as guards.

52 minutes- More swamps appear. The swamp scenes will form the base in the child's mind for the internal river Styx. (See more about this in this book's article "Programming, foundations, destruction of"). Some dinosaurs that have long necks that look like snakes begin appearing. The asst. programmer will reframe these to the child, "LOOK, THE SEED OF SATAN." "THAT IS A DEMON." While the child watches, they reframe the hugh dinosaurs as being demons. Pictures of reptilian looking demons will be shown to the child too. At that age, the child is not going to see the difference. (A note for therapists: Some ""demons'" may actually be important parts to an alter system, and are being used to protect unauthorized users from entering important areas of the system.)

54 min.- Fierce Tyrannosaurus Rex chases dinosaurs. This chase scene is especially frightening to a young child on a LSD trip. Long-necked snake-like dinosaurs appear. They may be refrained as a python snake. T Rex is also known as Leviathan, a demon that inhabits the kundalini spinal column and causes pain in the victim, he is written about on page 302 in our Vol. 2 book. In the film a long fierce struggle between T Rex and other dinosaurs ensues.

55 min. The dinosaurs begin dying and soon dies. "THE LORD DOESN'T LIKE THEM."' This will later be refrained that if parts integrate they are to die. If someone tries to get into the system, the alters are to bury themselves deep like these dinosaurs do on the film.

56 min. Dead bones appear

59 min. Mountains soar out of the ground into eminence.

59.5 min. It gets stormy on the screen, winds & floods appear.

60. min. Stillness comes as the sun rises.

61 min. The sun sets. (During the programming, this may be refrained as the moon setting. It can be both or either or. Remember, the programmer is working with the child's creativity.) Various scenes during the film show the moon in different phases which is important for bringing in programming concepts like Mr. Moon.

61.3 min. The orchestra is now playing. Music is an important part of mind-control programming. The affect of music on the mind and body has been studied. Music can double the heart beat, accelerate the respiratory rate, make that rate irregular, enhance perception, lower the threshold for various sensory stimuli, change blood pressure & circulation, and alter the muscles in the body. Dance music and "march" music done by orchestras change muscle response. Music is also a great way to cause dissociation.

62.5 min. The MC introduces the "'Sound Track' who he says is an important person for Fantasia who can be seen around the Disney studio. When Mr. Sound Track appears, he is simply a vertical line. The MC says he is "an important screen personality." The ground work is being laid for a person being anything, even a line. The MC states that each sound creates a picture.

63 minutes. The MC encourages the personified Sound Track ""don't be nervous."" Then a sound is made like an electrical shock and the line develops a splotch of color in it. During the programming at this point an electrical shock would be applied to the child.

63.5 minutes. The harp is ask to sound. The harp begins playing a scale and the line becomes double 8's and snake-like spirals. The child will be taught to dissociate when seeing such double 8's.

64 min. The violin begins going up and down. Each of these instruments is going up and down the scale, like do-ray-me-fa-so-la-tee-do. The music is used to teach the alters to go up and down the helix, which is figured in this part of the film. As the music goes down, an alter is taught to go down in trance, and as it climbs higher, the alter will trance higher. All these instruments (violin, flute, bass, bassoon) are being used to teach alters how to

work in the system. The MC describes the flute as "very pretty".

64.3 min. A trumpet begins playing and the colors, yellow, orange, etc. begin showing.

64.5 min. When the bassoon plays, the MC says, "Go on. Drop the other shoe"-- "Go to the shoe" which translates "‘go to the ground"" --the deepest trance level. The following is the double-pyramid, with a helix up the middle that appears when the bassoon plays: -(This configuration is very important to all these Illuminati alters systems.)-

p_rugbyball.gif

65 min. The drum plays and some other percussion instruments play. These are taught to the child as the cult’s "HEARTBEAT". They will hear this sound internally for many years to come. Then some sounds that have a shattering effect (cymbals) like broken mirrors are made in the film.

65.5 min. As the sounds take place a line is made with a pyramid at the top. This is laying the groundwork for the system’s structuring.

66 min. The MC laughs and talks about Beethoven’s Pastoral Symphony (Beethoven’s 6th) which is next.

66.5 minutes. The screen comes alive with magical Unicorns of different colors. Then Pan (a satan-like figure) appears playing his pipes, and soon lots of little Pans (little demons) are playing their pipes. The little Pans (demons) play and dance with the unicorns. The orchestra plays again. (This author, Fritz, remembers when I said that Pan was an evil demon, I was rebuked by a Christian minister. He then said Pan a benevolent cheery creature". A number of books which may be obtained from Satanic bookstores document that Pan is indeed considered a powerful demon by occultists.)

67 min. Pegasus (the mythical greek winged horse) flies in. As a Mother horse she takes care of little ones on the screen. She is a protector in the programming.

68 min. "FANTASY IS FUN. FANTASY IS A GAME YOU PLAY. MOTHER TEACHES YOU. SEE HOW MOTHER IS A TEACHER. SEE THE BLACK AND WHITE HORSE. THEY ALWAYS FLY TOGETHER, BUT ARE SEPARATE. THEY ARE FLYING OVER THE CLOUDS." "OVER THE CLOUDS, INTO THE BLUE YONDER." The child is rewarded for what it has to do with the game of fantasy. "THAT’S YOUR REWARD FOR DOING WHAT YOU ARE TO DO. YOU CAN LEARN TO FLY OVER THE CLOUDS." The child feels rewarded by the game of fantasy. The fantasy scenes in Walt Disney’s Fantasia are like the Wizard of Oz scenes in Oz, fantasy-land is more colorful and fun than real life. Vivid colors will be splashed about during the fantasy-land scenes.

68.5 min. A castle appears as Pegasus flies around. This and other castle scenes will help the child develop the imagery for the spiritual castles that the child will build internally. Then they swim in the water. "SEE THE MIRROR IMAGES, WATER CAN BE GLASS." During the programming mirrors are put into the internal system. A mirror can be a piece of glass, the surface of a pond, or an asphalt runway. When the programming is complete, underneath the water &/or the runway lurk demons.

70 min. Waterfalls emerge and issue forth. The waterfalls are used by the programmers to erase all the slave’s memory of what was done to them. The child will be told at the end of watching Fantasia (and this will be said at other programming events too), "JUST REMEMBER THE GOOD, JUST REMEMBER THE FANTASY". The fantasy is given so that the subconscious can rest in peace after the programming. The child is told "WASH YOURSELF CLEAN."

70.5 min. The little girls appear as girl centaurs (half girl-half horse). "SEE THE LITTLE GIRLS ARE HORSES."

71 minutes. Then a scene appears where one girl centaur braids another girl centaur’s long hair. The Illuminati teach their slaves to braid their memories. They braid their memories up and then lock them in. All the Daddy memories will be locked up & braided and then locked for good.

72 min. Male centaurs appear. They are near water and make mirror images in the water.

72.5 min. A crown is placed on a female centaur and 2 doves. During the Illuminati death, burial and resurrection ceremonies lilies are used for crowns, and doves are used. These are significant programming/ritual symbols. The female centaurs look at the male centaurs. This will be refrained as a system can have both male and female parts.

73 min. Starting with one female centaur, the females act seductive to the males, who then respond. For bras the females have bras of daisies. The Vol. 2 book explained how the daisy programming is a life-or-death type program. Vivid colors are used for each centaur. For instance, one may be purple and another one another color, which sets the groundwork for alters to have different access color codes. Alters do not usually see themselves as being in different colors, although it does happen on occasion.

73.8 min. A marriage takes place between the centaurs. The programmers catch these nuances of the film and use them. The marriage here teaches the child to be acquainted with the arm-and-arm marriage ceremonies. Remember, the programmers are dealing with clean slates that must be taught from the ground up. In the next few minutes, the cherub children will watch sexual body language, and the child victim is also picking up on enticing sexual body motions.

74.2 min. The centaurs go swimming. "I FEEL LIKE A LITTLE GIRL WITH A HORSE’S BODY."

75 min. Little cherubs are dancing and flying around. When pictured the artists at times single out 3 cherubs who blow flutes together. The female centaur appears, who is fair haired (blond) and blue-eyed, which is what the Illuminati like. When she hears the tone (of the flutes) she goes into a trance state and walks with her eyes closed. This imagery is used to teach alters that when they hear certain tones, they are to go into a trance state and do certain things. The little cherub turns into a heart, and when no one is watching goes into the tree. In programming, this part is the Keeper of the Tree. Notice how everything is veiled. The assistant programmer will point the cherub out to the child victim, "LOOK AT WHAT HE DID."

76.5 min. A curtain then shrouds the scene. The curtain appears to be tree-like. More bubbles appear, and more water. All the mythical creatures on the screen begin to dance and be merry and have a feast.

77 min. "SEE THE FEASTS, SEE THE BANQUETS, THE FEASTS ARE O.K. THE BANQUETS ARE O.K."

78 min. "THE LEAVES ARE FALLING." Blood-like wine is drank at the feast. "SEE THE BLOOD."

"SEE THE LITTLE DEVILS POP UP." The only human in this Disney scene is honored. This is done to teach the alters that humans and animals can mix. That they can be accepted for what they are, even if they think they are an animal or something else they will be accepted at the cult’s feasts. These scenes are all for internal programming. By the way, one of the pretty female centaurs makes a sexual pass at the fat human, who then chases her. "MUST PLEASE THE MASTER."

80 min. A scary storm comes up, and Zeus, and the greek gods appear. „BETTER FEAR IT. HE’S A GOD YOU’D BETTER FEAR HIM. HE THROWS LIGHTNING." This demon who throws lightening is named Furfur. He also makes thunder & strong winds in the system (alter system’s worlds). Readers can learn more about this demon, named Furfur, in Cisco’s second part of Deeper Insights in the article on "Programming, foundations, destruction of".

81 minutes. Lightening bolts are thrown from heaven.

81.5 min. All the little cherubs run for cover in fear.

82 min. Pegasus the protector flies in to protect everyone, especially a new born Pegasus. The wind is personified as a two-headed blowing person. This two-headed Janus wind comes storming through the heavens. The programmer will often place his own voice "IN THE WIND." The greek god (internal demon) throws a lightening bolt.

83 min. "SEE THE GODS". The child is learning what to make internally. Zeus then relaxes & goes to sleep.

84 min. More vivid colors form. "FAMILIARIZE YOURSELF WITH ALL THE COLORS." The film at this point is teaching the child to stay in the framework of the programming for safety. To go outside of the programming is terror. The child is learning to fear the godlike demonic guardians.

84.5 min. The fantasy world is coming alive. It is a happy fantasy world. A goddess in the sky makes a rainbow emerge. This is the rainbow goddess of the programming.

85 min. All the happy unicorns and cherubs fly ‘"over the rainbow." (Refer back to the Vol. 2 book p.94 to understand the significance of going over the rainbow.) The unicorn is derived from old British paganism where the lion represented sun worship, and the unicorn represented moon worship. This is why the Royal Arms of the British Royal Family have a unicorn on one side, & a lion on the other. Sexually the unicorn represents androgeny. During programming, the horses, pegasi, unicorns and centaurs shown in the Fantasia movie become the foundation upon which the Illuminati programmers build the Night Mare alters who are beasts of burden who carry an alter system’s memories. These are logical no-emotion alters who are early splits & who are programmed after the child is verbal. See Cisco’s article on Dream Work for more understanding about the horse alters, as well as chapter 7 on Structuring.

86 minutes. More rainbows and lots of bubbles come into view. The film has done an excellent lob of showing how the Furfur God of thunder protects the Rainbow. Once an alter has gone over the rainbow, they can not come back because a demon protects the Rainbow. The rainbow is also protected by alters who fear the gods. After seeing Fantasia, the therapist can understand why the little child protector alters have fear about these gods. The master (who represents Furfur) in the movie swallows the rainbow. If an alter looks internally for the rainbow, he or she will only find stars, because the protector will come up and say, "I swallowed the rainbow." The rainbow is kept well hidden internally. This scene is used to teach alters how to go over the rainbow. ""BEFORE YOU GO OVER THE RAINBOW, YOU HAVE TO PUT ALL YOUR MEMORIES IN THE BUBBLE. YOU CAN’T TAKE ANYTHING OVER THE RAINBOW INTO FANTASY LAND."

86.5 minutes. Apollo, the sun god comes out.

87 min. A big mother spirit who fills the whole sky is now shown by Disney. She hangs over the rainbow. When a system is built this is indeed what they put in. All go to sleep in the film.

87.5 minutes. Arrows shoot the stars into the heavens. This is more programming imagery. When you look for the rainbow, you see stars.

88 min. The conductor finishes again.

88.5 min. The next setting is a Venetian nobleman’s (a duke’s) palace. Curtains open. The use of curtains is spoken about in our previous books.

89 min. Curtains open. An Ostrich begins dancing, and gets others to ballet dance.

90 min. The Ostriches begin dancing in a circle, this is laying the groundwork for what the cult family does. The Assistant programmer may tell the child, "SEE IT’S O.K. TO DANCE TOGETHER. DANCING IS ACCEPTABLE." The programmers will not directly tell the child that this represents the cult family.

91.5 min. The Ostriches are eating grapes. They are playing, looking in the pool & they are seeing bubbles.

92 min. Hippos emerge out of the pool. "IT’S O.K. TO BE DIFFERENT. IT’S O.K. TO BE STRANGE. USE YOUR CREATIVITY." The hippos begin to dance and dance.

94 min. Elephants appear and are having fun and blowing bubbles out of their trunks. The programmers may be having fun blowing bubbles with the child. The programmers like to mix love and hate, kindness and sadistic behavior. That way the victim has a hard time separating love from hate. If you ask many slaves about "Daddy" they will tell you that they had fun with Daddy. They are right--they had fun intermixed with sadistic torture. Bubbles continue to lift off. One of the bubbles has a fish in it. This is imagery for the bubble programming. The child victim is trained to dump their bad memories into bubbles and let them float away. The therapist will

notice that many victims feel like they are floating. They have an unreal feeling. The bubbles are floating their bad memories away.

98.5 minutes. A new setting and the hippos are hypnotically sleeping. 3 sinister alligators that remind one of the 3 primary programmers appear. The 3 alligators have robes that hide them, and shadow images of themselves lurking behind them. The alligators are trying to get the hippos. The 3 alligators are portrayed like the programmer is, he is someone to fear, love, & respect all at once. The hippo is running away and dancing. The alligator dances with the hippo, but makes menacing attempts to eat him. A flying hippo lands on an alligator. Elephants, hippos, alligators are shown. The elephants, ostriches, hippos and alligators all dance in fantasyland.

100 min. The orchestra is dancing. ‘"DO WHAT YOU’RE TOLD AND WE WILL HAVE FUN."

101 min. The MC announces the next part as ""the struggle between the profane and the sacred."’ The conductor stands in a silhouette that suggests the same pose that the upcoming Satan takes.

102 min. A high dark mountain with a castle looms in front of the viewer. A winged fiercesome Satan figure raises his wings. His wings are sectioned like fingers with claws, and will form the imagery of the demon Malebrinche, whose satanic claws hang over the alters and terrorize them. In the Illustrated Guidebook, the reader will find lots of these claws in the pictures lurking in the background. A child victim will be taught to fear the hands of the programmer, Satan and Malebrinche. The wings (hands with claws) open. And Satan is portrayed as an awe-inspiring figure. (By the way,, the word maleficia means evil misfortune caused by witches. The witch in Disney’s Sleeping Beauty has the demonic name of Maleficent.)

102.5 min. Satan begins raising the dead skeletons. This provides a foundation to layer in the Valley of the Dry bones coming alive with armies of skeletons.

104 min. The film also has some images at this point that will help with the foundation for the Armageddon programming. Satan calls everything to himself.

p_satan.gif

104.5 min. The hell pit is shown. This is laying a foundation for the hell pit with all its demons. All kinds of vivid colors are shown in hell, to make the scene more real than real for the child victim. Satan smiles as demons burn in hell. "NO MATTER WHAT COLOR YOU ARE, IF YOU ARE NOT GOOD YOU’LL END UP THERE.’"

Fantasia portrays Satan as a terrible powerful being.

105 min. "THAT’S WHAT HAPPENS IF YOU’RE BAD. YOUR THROWN INTO THE HELL PIT."

105.5 min. Three beautiful lady demons begin to dance in a circle, all of a sudden these demons take on their luciferian form, one becomes a goat.

106 min. The demons continue to dance with powerful Satan watching over them. The hell pit and the demons are portrayed in vivid scary graphic depictions. The hellish fire and the ghoulish dancing of its occupants continues for what seems a long time. "WHEN GOD FINDS OUT HOW BAD YOU ARE, LOOK AT WHAT HE’LL DO TO YOU."

107 min. Satan is portrayed by Disney in all his evil dark majesty.

107.5 min. Bells begin to ring, and the demons slink away, & the dead return to the earth to their graveyards.

108 min. Ghosts return to the graves. Soft music begins to play. Ave Maria by Schubert, which was written for the Catholic church, begins playing.

109 min. Satan folds himself into a mountain. ‘"DO YOU SEE LUCIFER ANYWHERE? NO. YOU ONLY SEE A MOUNTAIN."

110 min. Lights shine as if they are a column of moving people who are walking with lights, and then some walls appear.

110.5 min. An arched bridge appears with its mirror image. The column of silhouetted people who continue walking have mirror images in the river. The asst. programmer will be telling the system (which the front parts will hear) "TIME FOR ALL THE GOOD CHILDREN TO GO TO CHURCH. IT'S O.K. TO GO TO CHURCH. GO SERVE GOD."

113. min. An opening, a vertical sliver of light comes from what appears to be doors opening up. There is a mirror effect in the way the doors open, which will facilitate making mirror image front worlds. A whole new world opens up, which will be the front system's world. Both the front alters and the deeper ones will be told to forget the movie. Later when a system is better programmed, the programmers will pull up the front alters and have them walk through these doors into the light. When they are hypnotically taken through these doors into the light and away from the fear and darkness of the Kingdom of Satan, they are hypnotically told to close those doors and never look back. The Kingdom of Satan has been shown in detail and in great length. The Kingdom of Satan has been shown as powerful and fearful. Satan is shown as a mighty power that is to be feared. The Kingdom of Light is only shown as a peace, as a refuge from evil. It is not shown to be good. It is not shown to have power or intelligence. It is simply a place to go to escape the fear of Satan's power. This is all the programmers really want the church to be. It will be a stabilizing balance to let the mind recuperate from the hell of the programming, but it is not intended to be seen as greater than Satan and his Kingdom.

115 min. The film ends with a peaceful gaze at heaven. The child is being told in the last few minutes "THAT WORLD BELONGS TO YOU. IT'S A BEAUTIFUL WORLD. IT'S THE WORLD WE WANT YOU TO LIVE IN. IT'S BEAUTIFUL." After all the hell that is eventually dumped on the child, and the scare that Satan gives them in this Fantasia film, the child is only too happy to create a beautiful world to live in.

****

The effectiveness of Disney's Fantasia is that it is used to communicate to & build the unconscious structures within the child's mind. The unconscious mind is the seat of our creative abilities. Then the conscious mind makes adaptations upon this unconscious thinking.

SUMMARY

Now that the reader has covered so much, the following quotes (with bold emphasis's added) take on even deeper meaning: Joe Flower in Prince of the Magic Kingdom, "Walt Disney was obsessed with creation, driven to build magical worlds not, as many artists are, out of paint and canvas, or words, or even film, but physically, out of concrete, wires, smoke, electricity, and highly programmed employees." (p. 23) Julian Halevy in Nation decries Disney taking this nation into a "drift to fantasy." He adds, "...one feels our whole culture heading up the dark river to the source--that heart of darkness where Mr. Disney traffics in pastel trinketed evil for gold and ivory." For those who understand programming Aubrey Menen comments about Disney's success are profoundly appropriate, "the strongest desire an artist knows...to create a world of his own where everything is just as he imagines it." John Ciardi was not so nice, he termed Walt Disney as "the shyster in the backroom of illusion." Eliot said, "While his filmed fairy tales may have appeared at first glance to be light and dreamlike, upon closer examination they seemed more nightmares of deconstructed reality in league with the era's leading neo-Freudian Modernists."

· You have now finished reading a never-before-heard, unprecedented Warning about the Dark Reality of the Disney's Magic Kingdom, and how it fits in with Mind-Control. Most Americans when surveyed say they believe in God, most go to church, and many believe they are born-again.

Because of the Illuminati's deception campaign over several generations, the American public, and the world in general has been led to believe that Disney was good, and that Walt Disney was a good man. Because of his image, people suspended judgement about Disney and Disney movies. They entrusted their children to him. People had been manipulated into a frame of mind, a predisposition that whatever comes out of Disney is good. They entrusted their children to take in what Disney fed their children's little minds week after week. The public's predisposition of trust was used to introduce Illuminati beliefs and their political agenda, and to carry out a vast program of trauma-based mind-control on hundreds of thousands of tiny little children, whose minds and souls were stolen from them. Because many of the child slaves, who are programmed with Disney-themes, are programmed with roles in bringing in the Anti-Christ, Walt Disney and his family have played a major role for the Anti-Christ. And now you can see how accurate the Word of God is when it says, What is highly esteemed among men, is an abomination to God. First, there will be an Overview of the types of sources used, and then will follow a partial Bibliography on this Disney Section.

TYPES OF SOURCES

People who have worked for Disney and who are getting pensions and medical insurance have talked about Disney under the condition of anonymity. This is because the Disney hierarchy will not permit exposure without retaliation. Several non-Disney people who helped with discovering facts for this section were threatened that their children lives would be taken if they continued to investigate Disney. What I (Fritz Springmeier) finally have put in this, is solely my responsibility.

· One type of source for this was books on the Hollywood Film Industry and books on Disney Films. There were about 20 books of this category which were perused for a better understanding of who the Disney brothers were and what Disney Co. was about. One of the best in this type of source was The Art of Walt Disney from Mickey Mouse to the Magic Kingdom by Christopher Finch (NY: Harry N. Abrams, Inc., 1975.)

· Another type of source were the standard biographical reference books,, such as Who's Who, Who's Who in the West (1951), World Biography, Who Was Who,, Current Biography 1952, etc.

· Another type of source was critics of Disney's movies such as several articles exposing the Lion King, Media Spotlight's article Fantasia, Rush Limbaugh's comments and statements concerning how Disney had betrayed its viewers' trust, the Spotlight's Feb. 26, '96 p. 31 article "Disney Turns Back on Family Values."'

· Another type of source was magazine and newspaper articles about Disney such as the Oregonian's art. on a Disney director being a convicted child molester. NY Times, Newsweek and other magazine and newspaper sources. An important series of extremely good investigative reports which were written by Harry V. Martin for the Napa Sentinel in 1989 were very important in learning of some of the Illuminati/CIA/Contra/Drug Running activities in Napa Valley, CA that Roy Disney is associated with. Harry V. Martin went into all kinds of records and did an excellent job of investigative reporting. The magazine Monde 2000, no.12, had an article on non-lethal weapons that the NWO is developing. This article was reprinted in Encounter Chronicles Journal of Scientific Intelligence, and discussed how Disney has been working with Sandia Labs and Los Alamos.

· Another type of source were victims of Illuminati mind-control, who have recovered memories of being programmed at Disneyland and Disneyworld.

· Another type of source has been to watch Disney movies as an investigative tool to understand how Disney is programming, how they are skillfully indoctrinating the American people into witchcraft, etc. This author has also personally been to both Disneyland, near Anaheim, CA and Disneyworld, near Orlando, FL.

· Another source was the Walt Disney Co.'s Annual Reports, and also the reference book Directory of Corporate Affiliations (1986) published by the National Register Pub. Co.

· Another type of source were books which specialized in covering details about Disneyland such as Disneyland And Beyond the Ultimate Family Guidebook (edited by Ray Riegert, and printed by Ulysses Press of Berkeley, CA); and Walt Disney's Disneyland (by Martin A. Sklar and introduced by Walt Disney.) AAA had a 27 page booklet "Disneyland Park and Southern California", which came out in 1996, which provides information on what is being offered at Disneyland and vicinity. The book refers repeatedly to "Disney Magic". One has to wonder how Christians and non-occultic persons can't see how occult Disney is.

Partial BIBLIOGRAPHY

BOOKS.

AAA. Disneyland Park and Southern California. 1996.

The Walt Disney Co.'s Annual Reports. pub. by the Walt Disney Co. annually.

Auletta, Ken. Three Blind Mice. NY: Random House, 1991.

Cluran, Richard M. To the End of Time. Rockefeller Ctr, NY, NY: Simon & Schuster.

Commander M. The Controllers: A New Hypothesis of Alien Abductions. (subtitle Alien Abductions, or Government Secret Mind Control Black R&D Programs). 88 pages long. 1990.

Current Biography 1952

Directory of Corporate Affiliations (1986) published by the National Register Pub. Co.

Eliot, Marc. Walt Disney Hollywood's Dark Prince. NY, NY: Harper Paperbacks, 1993.

Finch, Christopher. The Art of Walt Disney from Mickey Mouse to the Magic Kingdom. NY: Harry N. Abrams, Inc., 1975.

Hagstrom, Robert G. Jr. The Warren Buffett Way. NY: John Wiley & Sons.

Hulteng, John L. The Messenger's Motives, Ethical Problems of the News Media. Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice-Hall, Inc., 1976.

Jackson, Kathy Merlock. Walt Disney, A Bio-Bibliography. Westport, CN: Greenwood Press.

Landis, Bill. Anger, The Unauthorized Biography of Kenneth Anger. NY: HarperCollins Pub., 1995.

Moldea, Dan E. Dark Victory, Ronald Reagon, MCA and the Mob. NY, NY: Viking, 1986.

Mosley, Leonard. Disney's World. Stein & Day: NY, 1985.

Neelands, Barbara. About Ben Sharpsteen. Second Impressions, No. 1 A Sharpsteen Museum Reprints Project, Calistoga, CA: Sharpsteen Museum, July, 1990.

Riegert, Ray, ed. Disneyland And Beyond the Ultimate Family Guidebook. Berkeley, CA: Ulysses Press of Berkeley, CA.

Schickel, Richard. The Disney Version. NY: Simon & Schuster, 1968.

Siu, R.G.H. The Craft of Power. NY, NY: Quill, William Morrow & Co.

Sklar, Martin A. (with intro by Walt Disney) Walt Disney's Disneyland. Walt Disney Prod., 1969.

Smoodin, Eric. Disney Discourse Producing the Magic Kingdom. Routledge: NY, 1994.

Stein, Jeff, ed. The Basic Everyday Encyclopedia. NY, NY: Random House, 1954.

Sterling, Claire. Thieves World -The Threat of the New Global Network of Organized Crime. NY: Simon & Schuster, 1994.

Taylor, John. Storming the Magic Kingdom. NY: Alfred A. Knopf, 1987.

Thomas, Bob. Walt Disney An American Original. Hyperion (Disney): CA, 1994.

Wallechinsky, David and Irving Wallace and Amy Wallace. The Book of Lists. 666 5th Ave., NY, NY: Bantam Books, 1978.

Wallechinsky, David and Irving Wallace. The People's Almanac. Garden City, NY: Doubleday and Co., 1975.

http://whale.to/b/sp/springmeier.html

Who's Who, Who's Who in the West (1951), Who Was Who World Biography

PERIODICAL SOURCES

Carson, L. Pierce, Who's Who in the Napa Valley, Appellation, Oct/Nov. '95

George Magazine, ""Here Comes the Son'", Dec. Vol. 1, No. 10.

House & Garden, "Sticks and Stones, Mickey for Mayor?", Oct. 1, 1996, pp. 61 -68ff.

Martin, Harry V. Napa Sentinel. A series of articles in 1989 were very important in learning of some of the Illuminati/CIA/Contra/Drug Running activities in Napa Valley, CA that Roy Disney is associated with. Harry V. Martin went into all kinds of records and did an excellent job of investigative reporting.

Monde 2000, no.12, had an article on non-lethal weapons that the NWO is developing. This article was reprinted in Encounter Chronicles Journal of Scientific Intelligence, and discussed how Disney has been working with Sandia Labs and Los Alamos.

Media Spotlight's article Fantasia,

Mother Jones, May-Ju', 97, p. 61.

NAPA VALLEY REGISTER, the following articles are samples of what was used:

"ABC Will Mount An Anti-Drug Campaign'" Friday, Jan. 10, 1997, p.1D

"Children's Books Get Red Carpet Treatment In Hollywood Films" May 16, 1996, p. SC

"Disney and McDonalds'" May 24, 1996

"Disney Buys ABC", Saturday, Aug. 19, 1995, D.

"Disney Earnings Up 28 Percent In Third Quarter", Friday, July 26, 1996, p. 8C

„Disneyland Expansion Given OK" Wednesday, Oct. 9, 1996, p.D

'"Disney Links to McDonald's May Be Back. Thursday, Apr. 11, 1996, 7A

"Disney World Makes Sure World, Remember the Magic"" (by L. Pierce Carson), Sun., Oct. 20, '96

"Federal Employees Get Disney Tour" Saturday, Dec. 9,1995, p. 5A

"It's Lights-Out For Main Street" May 14, 1996.

"An Overlooked, Different World Inside Theme Park" Sunday, Sept. 29, 1996, p. SC

"Mickey Going On The Road", Friday, 7/26/96, p. 8C '"Past and Future In Disney Community'", Friday, Oct. 4, 1996, p. iD

"Planned Parenthood Benefit On Sunday"--Events of Interest sect. on p. A2, Sept. 13, '96

"Pentagon Still Wastes Money", Mon., 4/15/96, p. 4B Newsweek

"Power Failure" 12/23/96, p. 34-36; '"Sending an SOS at ABC", 5/12/97, p. 54-55

NY TIMES (the following are samples of what was used: Articles during the "50's & '60's were looked at. „Disney Offers Faux Memories of Atlantic City Boardwalk" by Joe Sharkey, Tuesday, Dec. 10, 1996 "Baptists Censure Disney On Gay-Spouse Benefits" Thurs. June 13, 1996, p. A10 „Disney to acquire 2 radio stations", 4/15/97, p. C4.

The PRESS DEMOCRAT (the following are example of what was used:)

"Baptists, Disney Paths Diverge" Saturday, June 29, 1996, p. D4

"Disney To Buy Stake In Web Company" 2/15/97, p. E6

"Heavy Disney" Sunday, Oct. 20, 1996

"The Ins and Outs of Allen" by Frederic M. Biddle and Renee Graham, On Q,, Sept. 29, 1996, p. 27

SAN FRANCISCO CHRONICLE (the following are examples of what was used:)

"Disney, Miramax Bond", May 10, 1996

"Disney Signs Asian Animator"

"Miramax Plans To Make ‘Thoughtful" Films", 4/11/96

SAN FRANCISCO EXAMINER (the following are examples of what was used:)

"Disney Institute Is A Short Course In Creativity" by Catherine Watson, Sunday, May 26, 1996, p. T9

"Mouse Matriculation Is A Great Experience" by Catherine Watson, Sunday, May 26, 1996, p. T9

"Tomorrowland Jumps Into The Future", Sunday, July 14, 1996, p. T3

The Spotlight’s Feb. 26, ‘96 p. 31 article "Disney Turns Back on Family Values."

Time Magazine, "Job Hunting With Mike [Ovitz]" 2/24/97, p. 50; ‘"Hilton Has Room For ITT’" 2/10/97,

Wall St. Journal (many issues from several decades.)

SOME OF OTHER SOURCES (used & not used).

· Various Disney brochures.//· Rush Limbaugh’s comments concerning how Disney had betrayed its viewers’ trust.//· Interviews w/ Napa Valley residents.

· Interviews with disgruntled insiders to the NWO.

· Interviews with various types of Disney victims.

[Disney has used mafia-type tactics, i.e. death threats, to intimidate numerous people into selling their property. Roy E. Disney has been reported involved in these land thefts. Victims of this type of intimidation are in many states, but several prominent regions are Napa Valley, CA; Shenandoah Valley; Virginia, & FL Disney’s land-grabbing operations could be a book in itself. This author has lots more research which I HAVE NO PLANS to reveal, which has been left w/ key others, such as the connections of VaVin, near Leon,VA, who produce Prince Michel de Virginia, whose chef & others connect to Belgium. The background of several key people, like Robert Podesta. Financial records, such as Fed. Judge Fern M. Smith (Burrows). ETC. This para. is not indexed.]

CHAPTER 6: SCIENCE NO. 6-THE USE OF ELECTRONICS & ELECTRICITY

Developments in fiber optics, computers, electronic communications, nano-technology, bio-chips & neuro-electrical research have combined to bring mankind to the point where mankind can be controlled by one centralized monolithic Beast computer. The ultimate mind-controlled slavery is now possible. We are in the first stages of its implementation.

http://whale.to/b/sp/springmeier.html

The chapter will be organized in the following sections & subsections:

Section A. An Overview of the subject
- A1. Where this article is headed
  - GLOSSARY OF TERMS FOR UNDERSTANDING ELECTRONIC MIND CONTROL
    - Bio-medical telemetry
    - EMF weapons
    - Psychotronics
    - Remote Viewing (RV for short)
    - Syntel
- A2. Where the NWO is headed   Pyramider

Section B. An intro to implants
- B1. Three typical implant victims
- B2. Documentation of implants
- REFERENCE PAGE FOR UNDERSTANDING ELECTROMAGNETIC WAVES & MIND-CONTROL
- B3. GWEN Towers
- B4. Body suits

Section C. Specific Implants
- C1. Audio implants (a. public. b. secret)
  - BACKGROUND INFORMATION
  - BRIEF CHRONOLOGY OF AUDIO IMPLANTS
  - BASICS OF HOW THE IMPLANTS CAN FUNCTION
  - USES OF THE IMPLANTS
  - TYPES OF AUDIO IMPLANTS:
    - Part A. Publicly admitted audio implants
    - Part. B. Secretly implanted audio implants   COCHLEAR   DENTAL AUDITORY   RIDGE
- C2. Body manipulation implants
- C3. Visual holographic implants
  - HOW THEY WORK
  - TYPES: FIBER OPTICS ARTIFICIAL LENSES BIO-CHIPS HOLOGRAPHIC OR H-INSERT
  - HOLOGRAPHIC IMPLANTS VIA NANOTECHNOLOGY & NANOBOTS
- C4. Memex/Brain Link implants
  - INTERFACE DEVICES
- ORGANIC BIOPROCESSORS LINKED TO VIRUSES
- PSYCHICS
- C5. Torture/Nerve & Muscle Stimulation Implants
- C6. Tracking & LD. Implants

Section D. Direct monitoring & manipulation of the brain/mind
- D1. Direct monitoring
- TESLA WAVES USED TO READ MINDS & IMPLANT VOICES
- D2. Direct manipulation
- SUMMARY OF ELF WAVE MIND CONTROL CAPABILITIES

Section E. Auxiliary uses of electronics & electromagnetic waves
- E1. hypnotic induction
- E2. polygraphs
- E3. attacks against people & objects
- LIQUID CRYSTALS
- "ALIEN" implants
- BED COILS STANDARDIZED FOR MIND-CONTROL POTENTIAL
- E4. virtual reality

Section A. An Overview of the subject.

A1. Where this article is headed

This chapter is designed to cover the complexities of hi-tech mind-control in simple-to-understand language. To accommodate those who are more technically literate and who want more, some clues to more technical sources are given, but time & space limitations mean that much has gone unsaid. My deep thanks to the many victims, who placed their trust in me to get their stories out to the world. I hope that I have vindicated their trust. There are a number of disinformation agents that appear to be putting out good information on implants, but are actually disinformation agents. We can error by undershooting or overshooting the truth. The principle topics that these pretend "whistle blowers" have been discussing are the tracking implants and remote viewing. (For RV info, see Theta Programming material in Vol. 2.) Neither topic is any revelation, nor are they the most dangerous items in the elite's electronic mind-control arsenal. If the reader has not skipped chapter 5 on disinformation, then he will be aware how factual information can be used in deception, such as in chicken feed & building bona fides. Why is it that the TV program "The Real X-Files" shown on channel 4 was created by a CIA operative, Jim Schnabel? And why are all the "private" Remote Viewing organizations run by what appear to be entirely all intelligence operatives (such as Ed Dames, et. al.)? And why do we see mind-control specialists, like "ex"-Intelligence officer C.B. Scott Jones who gets involved with several UFO research organizations & disseminating disinformation? One "researcher", who is publicly exposing" the NWO, tried to convince this author, "The government has no secrets." (A word-for-word quote by the way.) He needs to read a supplement to the National Industry Security Pro grain manual (Mar. 92 release) where the Air Force teaches their DoD contractors how to construct cover stories to lie about the nature of their work for the government. I will not take cheap shots at the World Order, & I will not intentionally mislead the reader. You will get the whole truth and nothing but the truth, as well a single chapter can present it. Vol. 2's chapter 6 which was on this same subject was not the final word and neither is this chapter. Before I start passing on lots of information, I should clarify one point. Human brain cells communicate by superconductivity, not electricity. Electricity travels near the speed of light, while superconductivity is in the range of the speed of sound. Government researchers have a device called a SQUID (Superconducting Quantum Interference Device) which actually monitors the light flowing from brain cell to brain cell. This is why over 5% of the brain's dry matter weight is iridium and rhodium. However, this does not subtract from the fact that electromagnetic waves have the ability to change what the brain experiences and thinks. I must also provide a small glossary for electronic mind-control terms that most people are not familiar with.

GLOSSARY OF TERMS FOR UNDERSTANDING ELECTRONIC MIND CONTROL

Bio-medical telemetry--Transmitter-receivers that are often located at the base of the skull which record body functions & brain wave activity. Their data is sent to remote computers for monitoring. A bio-medical telemetry implant may also function as the primary control implant on body suits of implants. Early versions were used on astronauts.

EMF weapons--Electromagnetic Frequency weapons. These basically are machines that can modulate and beam electromagnetic waves in such a fashion that they control biological/mental functions within the victim. Portals to the central nervous system can be manipulated to create visual images, project voices into the mind, and create pain, moods and emotions.

Psychotronics--This word was originated from Soviet research. The American public have mistakingly thought that the word is equivalent to psychic activity. A more precise translation of the Russian term would have been "applied psychoenergetics". American psychotronics research was initially done at Stanford Research Institute. This is the Theta Programming that Vol. 2 described.

Remote Viewing (RV for short)--This means psychic viewing of something.

Syntel--This is short for synthetic telepathy, which is the remote sending of voices and thoughts into a victim of electronic mind-control. The military and intelligence agencies have successfully achieved this capability and have carried out countless meetings over their possible uses of syntel.

A2. Where the NWO is headed

Since 1991, this author has been in contact with various victims of implants. The natural first reaction of many initial listeners would be skepticism to the subject. The psychological profession has had articles in their professional journals ridiculing these poor victims. If a fair-minded person will match the experiences of what one can witness happening to these implant victims (as well as their evidence) to the cutting edge of what science is researching and capable of doing, then there is no doubt that implants are being used on an ever increasing mass scale. The World Order is using amplifiers, generators, electronics, listening devices, non-ionizing electromagnetic radiation, a snapping type sound energy that hits and burns the body, closed-circuit videos to monitor implant victims, nanotechnology, and tracking devices that scanners (incl. mobile hand-held scanners) can pick up-- JUST to name a few. This chapter will provide an indepth overview of many of these electronic mind-control gadgets. Unfortunately, the twilight zone of Big Brother is upon us. People (such as limousine drivers) that have been around the movers and shakers report that they brag about these technological controls. The technology described in this chapter, such as nanobots, and holographic implants are in the "R&D stage" of use. What is meant by "R&D stage" means that the World Order is using a large variety of experimental items, but the reader should be forewarned that this does not mean that these items are any indication of where the World Order's actual secret R&D is at. This author has worked with enough mind-control victims to have established several facts:

· Society is getting only the crumbs of what is known by the World Order's hierarchy.

· The World Order is releasing technology at a control rate, much of it through mind-controlled slaves who are programmed to "discover" a particular "discovery". They are in reality only disclosing what has been known in secret, and their discoveries are actually helping cover up where the World Order's secret research is at. However, it's not difficult to see the direction the World Order is headed. They are working at making virtual reality (aka cyperspace) the "in" thing. They are fusing the human mind to computers. Computers/robots are taking over human jobs, and humans are becoming more like computers/robots. Sci-fi gurus, cyberpunks, and establishment scientists are selling and advertising this technological direction as "freedom", and the crowds of sheep are accepting things like brain implants as "survival equipment" and "freedom". The cool" technological pied pipers of our time are teaching our children that gadgets that remove their minds from reality are giving them new freedoms. But this chapter is written because there are still a few people with the neural-receptors and the computing capacity left in their craniums to comprehend the dangers that these mind-controlling devices have for humanity. Witnesses have told me that the creation of "robocop" type cybergs (the fusion of man & other equipment) has already been experimented on in secret. Indeed, the government gave out research contracts for cyberg research back in the 1960's. And the use of electro-magnetic waves (esp. Tesla waves), implants, and other electronic devices by the Illuminati for mind-control is on the increase. How much of a genuine threat do these things pose humanity? [I'll spell it out for the reader, but we must remain calm, a fear-based response only makes things worse.] Yes, it is true that the NSA can remotely track people if they know the specific EMF waves (evoked potentials from EEGs in the 30-50 Hz, 5 milliwatt range) of a person's bioelectric field. Each person's emissions are unique, just like their fingerprint, palmprint, and their voiceprint. This means that the NSA can remotely track anyone in public. And yes, it is true that the NSA's RNM system can remotely send EMF Brain stimulation signals which create visual images, subliminal audios, what appear to be audible sounds, and thoughts into people's minds. Yes, it is true that body suits of implants are used to control people's minds and bodies, as well as track them. Yes, it is true they have voice prints of hundreds of thousands of Americans and can identify & track via their computers all electronic communications in this nation. Most phone calls go through about 30 computers before they reach their destination. The phone companies computers, according to someone who worked for AT&T and witnessed it, record ALL phone calls using computers. However, to weed out the worthless from the worthwhile, the Illuminati's fronts use a list of key words, such as names or phrases called THE WATCH LIST which the computer uses to identify conversations worthwhile to listen to. Even though the NSA uses supercomputers, it is monitoring most communication on the entire planet so they have to squeeze the WATCH LIST as tight as possible. According to Bamford, James. The Puzzle Palace. NY: The Puzzle Palace, 1983, p. 459, "...according to Raven, programmers would simply reduce Malcolm X to the last two letters in his first name (lm) followed by a space and then the letter X. Then any time an intercepted data communications containing that particular combination of letters and spacing (lm X) streamed past the computer's reading head, it would automatically be kicked Out for further analysis. Part of the reason that the computers are swamped with Watch list submissions is that many items require numerous entries. When searching for derogatory references to President Richard M. Nixon, for example, technicians would have to program a variety of possible key words, such as "Tricky Dicky". This, according to the former G Group Chief would be converted to The new technology which is being implemented in stages includes computer imaging of a person which makes a "whole body map" of the person's body which is stored in the computer. Something that has been only developed for a narrow use by the NWO is the downloading of the holographic image of a person's thoughts so they can be transmitted to another. (See Appendix 3 on cloning for more on this.) The majority of the few people who know this is going on wouldn't waste time reporting it, because the public wouldn't believe it anyway. However, some prominent scientists are predicting that it is just around the corner. The three top research institutes in this field, Stanford Research Institute, MIT, and the Carnegie-Mellon Univ. all have people saying that this capability is "almost here". Austrian born Hans Moravec, dir, of the Robotics Inst. at Carnegie Mellon Univ., is quoted in The Indianapolis Star, 6/14/1987, in an article entitled "Immortality", "In an astonishingly short amount of time, scientists will be able to transfer the contents of a person’s mind into a powerful computer, and in the process, make him--or at least his living essence--virtually immortal." MIT artificial intelligence researcher Gerald J. Sussman states, "I’m afraid, unfortunately that I’m the last generation to die. Some of my students may manage to survive a little longer.” But as fantastic as all these powerful capabilities sound, there are gliches in their electronic control of humans.

As an outsider looking inside for a number of years, this author has been able to take note of some of the success and failures of the New World Order’s electronic mind-control. First, the NSA picks up so much intelligence information, they are drowning in their own information. Only so many people can make decisions, and they can only digest so much information. They may try to manipulate people and events, but Christians (who are free of the mind-control) can step through those manipulations by having the mind of Christ. Next, if a person understands who they are & believes in following Christ, outside visions & outside or strange voices or thoughts do not alter the course that a person will take. Most of the people this author has met who have been subjected to remote electronic control over their mind--HAVE REJECTED the instructions & harassment of their electronic handlers. Not only is it clear that the voices are being transmitted from an external source to the victim, others can also detect that something is amiss. The element of secrecy is missing. One man spent an afternoon talking to this author about the World Order had tried to electronically control his mind, and turn him into a drug pusher. He had successfully foiled them for several years. Although he has had to flee & try to go into hiding to keep his own mind. The most powerful mind-control is still trauma-based mind control built on a foundation of multiple personalities (dissociated personalities and dissociated parts of the mind). It appears that electronic mind-control is being overlaid on top the mind-control based on dissociation. When this is done, the electronic mind-control is frightening, because the victim’s consciousness is not able to think passed the electronic mind-control which catches their undivided attention. They are too distracted to deal with the deeper issues of trauma-based mind-control.

Imagine being a programmed multiple, and your handler doesn’t have to even be near you to relay complicated codes and instructions. He can use your implant. But again, how serious is electronic mind-control? Let me relate to you about a guided tour that a civilian friend of mine took through a NWO’s major beast computer center in Alaska back in the 1970’s. The engineer, who was in charge of building and getting the center operational, gave him a tour of the site’s capabilities. At that point, the NWO had built a massive computer center in Alaska, one in So. Africa (believed to be located at the U.S. embassy in Johannesburg), and one in Pine Gap, Australia. These three sites were very specific, because they formed a triangle on the globe, and couldn’t be located anywhere else, due to the naturally occuring lines of force of the planet. These Beast Computer Centers consist of aisles and aisles of big state of the art computers. They each have several dozen people to run them. Even in the ’70’s, an operator could speak into the computer and it would answer. For instance, if you asked the computer about anyone on the planet, it could usually pull up all kinds of information about that person. If you asked the computer how could you get that person to kill someone? or how can I isolate this person? The computer would spill out a plan almost instantly, telling you all the people around that subject who could be manipulated and in what fashion those people need to be manipulated to cause the end result. This is the end result of years of "BLACK PSYCHIATRY--which means applying psychiatric techniques to manipulate people and nations. These computers electronically connect to some of those people who are electronically controlled, so that the controllers can actually control the world from a computer. These computers also store vast amounts of personal information about people’s thought processes and thinking. It is possible that electronic surveillance is being done to read the thoughts of people and that the computers are actually able to store this information in some usable fashion. Because this is so secret, they can’t give any hints of their vast ability to monitor thoughts, as well as organize and store those thoughts. This sounds like science fiction, but from people who invent & work at state of the art technology, this is actually said to be old technology. They are limited in how they use this technology because they want it to remain secret.

Meanwhile on the surface, the public system has automated fingerprint identification with the AFIS system, and has automated birth certificates electronically too. This all ties in with the intense desire of the World System to use the potential of their computers’ memories. Large Neural computers that have artificial intelligence using neural processing which is a type of learning similar to learning done by the human brain are being used. Recently, the world champion chess player was beat by a computer. This author’s friend, who toured the Alaskan computer center, was shown how a war could be created between any two nations. The operator merely asked the computer what it knew about a certain country and then ask it how could a war be created with a neighboring country. This is the end result of countless studies such as the U.S. military reference book Basic Psychological Operations Study (BPS) which outlines country by country, specifying where each country is vulnerable for PSYOP operations (psychological warfare).

This kind of thing has a long history. For instance in W.W. II, the Office of War Information and the 0SS cooperated in psychological warfare projects. What this author’s friend saw was a network of Cray-type computers, perhaps similar to the EMASS system of Cray computers that E-Systems developed. Such a system can store 5 trillion pages of text and work with that data base with lightening speed.

The reason this author’s friend was allowed to see this technology, was that he happened to be at the right place at the right time, and the Engineer operator of the Beast Computer said that this system was obsolete. Which is true, today’s 9 Beast computers are much better at speech than the computers at these three control sites were in ’73. The Beast computers can (according to another eye witness who used it) hear human voices and determine what language is being spoken and then can listen and answer in that language. These computers link directly to thousands of mind-controlled slaves and can-- via various methods-- almost instantly control the behavior of numerous people. This, along with good old fashioned phone calls, allows the elite to manipulate events very fast.

Anchorage is the site of a National Security Agency NSA listening post(LP). The Beast computer was located northeast of Anchorage, and so is the HAARP project. The HAARP facility is near Gakona, a hamlet about 140 miles north of Prince William Sound and its signals travel on a field line to Australia. The Beast Computer is also linked to Australia as well as satellite systems. The HAARP site took a 4-wheeled truck to reach, and the Beast Computer site in 1973 was even more remote. The University of Alaska Fairbanks (which has its own super computer) and the Alaskan Poker Flat Rocket Range also were involved with the HAARP project. 30% of the U of A’s supercomputer’s use was for DoD projects.

HAARP uses 3 powerful transmitter sites in Alaska. Somewhat on the flip side, the human brain which they control can, IF it has a memex implant, interface with the Beast computer which acts as a vast repository of human knowledge as well as answering questions to essentially all previously answered questions instantaneously. If the human brain has some type of virtual reality holodeck attachment, the computer can even walk the slave through a realistic setting indistinguishable from the real world. Robocop or robo-soldier has an incredible advantage with such extended memex/remote viewing capabilities.

The World Order has experimented in memex/remote viewing along several divergent paths. One method has been psychic (demonic) method, where the "natural" mental facilities of the human are trained. The other route has been high-tech. According to eye-witnesses both methods have yielded positive results, although it sounds like they are still refining their capabilities. The word telematics has come into use to denote the interconnection between computers and telecommunications. France has a National Telecommunications Research Center, which works with groups such as CII-Honeywell Bull (Jean-Pierre Brule, Pres., & Emmanuel de Robien, Sec.-Gen.). CII-Honeywell Bull did telematics and implant research, and so has IBM France. IBM’s subsidiary SBS developed satellite-based communications. In Britain, their National Physical Laboratory NPL has been active in telecommunications research. Professional computer groups have umbrella groups such as the British Computer Society, which help determine policies.

In the U.S. the National Center for Supercomputer applications works on virtual reality interface with humans. Meanwhile SCAN (Swinburne Centre for Applied Neurosciences, Hawthorn, Australia 3122) has been working on how to monitor human thoughts. These are just a few of a vast network of research groups applying their efforts to the types of things you will read about in this chapter.

Around 1973, TRW began designing a satellite that would allow the CIA to communicate with its assets/agents in "denied areas". This was code-named **Pyramider**, and used frequency hopping. The signals can be hidden among random urban radio transmissions. (See Robert Lindsey, The Falcon and the Snowman. NY: Simon & Schuster, 1979, p. 218)

Some people who are related (in some fashion) to the CIA have been receiving Syntel implants that are communicating to them using signals that frequency-hop. So the proof is in the pudding, the CIA used Pyramider to contact implant victims. The World Order does not use every technological gadget they have in every situation. Use of secret weaponry is restricted so that the weaponry remains secret. This is one reason why victims of mind-control display such a wide variety of symptoms and control mechanisms. But what is scary is that any bozo can already purchase on the public market a frightening array of electronic mind-control devices.

Information Unlimited puts Out a catalog that any bozo on the street can order from which advertises 200,000 volt stun guns, laser ray gun, compressed air guns (Air Tasers) that knock people down with probes that attach instantly to the human target and jam their nervous system with T-waves, laser listening devices to listen at long range via their windows, implants along with the tracking system to keep track of people, animals or objects. They also sell other novel devices. While this author has that catalog that advertises for sale computer chips to implant people with, the psychiatric profession is helping cover-up Big Brother’s implant technology.

For instance the Journal of Nervous and Mental Disease, Sept. 1995, Vol. 183 (9), pp. 603-604, has a story about two males (aged 33 and 53 years old) who were labeled delusional because they complained of implants hidden in their fillings in their teeth. The article is entitled, "Delusional electronic dental inplants: Case reports and literature review." The shrinks concluded the two men were obviously mentally ill and needed treatment with drugs because they are claiming that they have electronic dental implants. The psychiatrists wrote, "neither had any insight into the implausibility of the delusion." The doctors gave antipsychotic drugs, and physically intervened to "prevent an inappropriate dental extraction." According to the article, for some unknown reason, the two men "responded poorly" to anti-psychotic drugs. It never occurs to the psychiatrists that the reason the anti-psychotic drugs didn’t work is possibly because the men’s complaints were legitimate. The two shrinks were E. Sherwood Brown and Michael T. Lambert.

There are other cases too, where people complaining of implants have been labelled "delusional" by psychiatrists. The Amer. Psychiatric Assoc. is guilty of refusing to seriously review evidence that harassment & mind-control may be impacting people mentally. DSM-IV reflects this continuing refusal to accord victims of electronic mind-control any official recognition by the therapeutic community. Based on research by Drs. W. Fry & R. Meyers, the Network has learned how to make brain lesions of a minute controlled size with ultrasonics, rather than doing a lobotomy. In 1963, Dr. Peter Lindstrom at the Univ. of Pittsburgh was able to use a single unfocused sonic beam to destroy fiber tracts in the brain without damaging the nerve cells near them. Sonic beams (sound waves) can be used to control human thought. (We’ll discuss sonic beams some more later, now let’s delve into a key part of their electronic control--implants.)

SECTION B. AN INTRO TO IMPLANTS

B1. Three typical implant victims

Let’s look at three victims who suffer from of mind-control implants & body-control implants, who are known by this author. We can refer to them as "Amy", Victim No. 1001..., "Betty", Victim No. 1002..., and "Cathy", Victim No. 1003... --"Amy" determined by using a spectrum analyzer that she had waves of 750 mhz targeted on her. "Betty" determined that she had the entire spectrum of radio-microwaves hitting her in a Morse code pattern. The transceiver (transmitter/receiver) for the signals was a fiber optic receiver made to look like a pubic hair that repeatedly burned holes in her underwear. Apparently, this side effect is a "bug" they haven’t gotten out of the technology. "Cathy" has ELF & VLF waves of 435 & 1080 Mhz signals targeted on her. When she’s active both types of waves come, and when she remains still the 1080 signal fades. (435 is in the 400-450 Mhz band which is the window to the human consciousness, and 1080 is in the 1000 to 1200 Mhz band.) They are also using a Nitrogen particle beam, which produces "nitrogen narcosis" (like the bends) in targeted victims. Xenon lamps can affect the mind and body, too. 435 Mhz is converted to 1080 by interaction with the high-atmosphere HAARP project. The 1100 (1000-1200) Mhz frequency can affect genetics. Implant RF frequencies have been damaging the eyes of implant victims. Although this gives us a starting point in our discussion, these are not the only frequencies that threaten mind-control victims. (See Section Dl for direct monitoring /manipulating frequencies.) Author W.H. Bowart in his Vol.1, No. 1, pg. 1 Freedom of Thought newsletter quotes Brian Bard of Glendale, CA who wrote, "I failed to discuss the utilization of power in modern mind control implants. Like Delgrado’s stimoceiver, no internal power source is necessary. The same electromagnetic energy which is collected through induction by such relays produces an internal electrical charge of equal energy. Utilizing a capacitance circuitry design, the charge is stored as a mechanical distortion of the crystalline lattice and discharged as a focused pulse of electro-magnetic energy at a lower frequency. Higher frequency E-M has a higher energy state than lower frequency. Thus, the effective output of photons may be twice or thrice the potential of the relays. "A more advanced design in use utilizes 50 or more distinct channels for various functions. Not only the encrypted primary input signal utilized for signal output, but several channels are reserved for supplementary energy induction. With integrated switching, both passive and active surveillance of brainwave activity may be enhanced. Contrawise, signal output may be boosted and focused on specific neural pathways. The devices remain active, programmable signal relays with multiple selectable channels so long as electro-magnetic induction continues to occur."

Modern microchip implants will have 250,000 components. Certain electrical freks will trigger certain neurochemicals. The frek 7.83, which is the elec. field resonating between the planet & its ionosphere, makes the subject feel in one with all creation. But it isn’t quite that simple, because a 7.83 frek can be sent in numerous different wave shapes, such as the rolling sinusoidal pattern, jagged sawtooth waves, rectangular (flat on top, flat on bottom) waves, and they all have a different effect on the brain. (Mega brain, pp. 108-109) One can imagine the potential power an implant that could create the proper frequencies could have over an individual.

B2. Documentation of implants.

On the following pages, are the startling anechoic chamber results when two victims of syntel implants were examined. (Synthetic telepathy implants give thoughts & voices.) These two pages document that they were receiving signals, in fact, the anechoic chamber results helped to pin point what building those signals were coming from!

For pictures click here 2-14 jpg

REFERENCE PAGE FOR UNDERSTANDING ELECTROMAGNETIC WAVES & MIND-CONTROL

The best way for people to understand electromagnetic waves is to think of the ocean’s waves. Some waves in the ocean are big, and some are small, size is **amplitude**.

Some beaches have waves that come quickly and some have waves that come slowly, this is called the **frequency** that the waves comes.

Researcher figured out how they could change the amplitude or the frequency of electromagnetic waves in a controlled way, and this is called amplitude **modulation** or frequency modulation.

Because all electromagnetic energy beams travel the same speed 3 x 10^{10} cm/sec, an energy beam with a short wave must have many more of those short waves pass in a given time such as a day than a long wave. The shorter the wave the greater the frequency that a wave will arrive. While our image of an ocean is that it moves up and down in relation to the surface.

In other words, the ocean wave moves (vibrates) up and down in relation to the surface (a mathematical plane). Electromagnetic waves vibrate in 3 dimensions (relative to 3 planes), generally they are only drawn as one-dimensional waves. Our brains operate on waves that are very low frequency (from one cycle per second) to about 50 cycles per second. A cycle per second is called a Hertz (Hz). Due to the wide range of different amplitudes and frequencies it has been more practical to induce various measuring units. It would be nice if all the measuring units could be done in feet or meters or whatever, but the range in size from the very tiny to the very large means that they use different measuring units. Just like you use different measuring units to get a quart of milk and 3 gallons of gas. The milk could be called a quarter-gallon but it isn’t. In measuring frequency they use the following measuring terms:

1,000,000 cycles per second = Megahertz (MHz)
1,000 cycles per second = Kilohertz (KHz)
1 cycle per second = Hertz (Hz)

http://whale.to/b/sp/springmeier.html

In measuring amplitude they measure the length of the waves with kilometers, meters, and centimeters. The very small waves are measured in angstroms, microns, and nanometers. What is an angstrom. A nanometer is one billionth of a meter. That is a very tiny fraction written as 1/1,000,000,000 of a meter or for short an nanometer. A micron is one millionth (1/1,000,000) of a meter. Ten nanometers are said to make up an angstrom. (In other words an angstrom is 1 ten-billionth of a meter.)

After they measure radio frequencies, the waves of different lengths are given other names. They could just say ‘waves from 30,000 to 300,000 MHz", but instead they shorten things by having a special name for these waves EHF (Extremely High Frequency waves.)

This names are as follows:

Extremely High Frequency	EHF:	30,000 to 300,000 MHz
Superhigh Frequency	SHF:	3,000 to 30,000 MHz
Ultrahigh Frequency	UHF:	300 to 3,000 MHz
High Frequency	VHF:	30 to 300 MHz
Medium Frequency	MF:	300 to 3,000 KI-Iz
Low Frequency	LF:	30 to 300 KHz
Very Low Frequency	VLF:	3 to30KHz
Extremely Low Frequency	ELF:	Below 3 KHz to 1 Hz or less

BRAIN FREQUENCIES (FREKS) RELATE TO STATES OF ACTIVITY

The lower brain frequencies pertain to sleep and dream states. The middle brain frequencies pertain to normal wakeful activity. The higher brain frequencies pertain to aroused, or concerned or states of anxiety. No brain waves means a person is "brain dead", even though some body functions may continue. Naturally occurring phenomena, such as lightning in a thunderstorms, sunny days that soak a person with extra positive ions, can all affect the thinking of brain.

CHART GOING UP THE FREQUENCY SCALE

These frequency no's are in Hertz which is cycles per sec. (However the first part of the scale are non-linear, asymmetrical waves, which are mistakenly called Hertzian by many people.)

1 Approx. beginning of brain waves

6.66	Theta brain waves
7.85	Alpha brain waves
15.7	Beta brain waves
30-30.56	Government VLF stations
32-33	Government VLF stations
34-42	Government VLF stations
50	Approx. Upper limit of brain wave frequencies
60	Produces an audible sound

62-254.1 CTCSS (Continuous Tone Coded Squelch Systems). These tones CTCSS tones are broadcast continually interspersed on a frequency, which allows several different users to broadcast separately on the same frequency and only pick up the message that has their CTCSS tone.

Post Office Tones are 82.5, 91.5, 97.4. & 100.9. U.S.
Customs & border patrol is 100 Hz. U.S.
Secret service is 103.5 Hz. EPA is 114.8. IRS & BATF is 123.0.
Veterans Affairs, GSA, & Dept. of Energy is 127.3.
Fed. Aviation Admin. & U.S. Marshall service is 136.5.
Coast Guard Intell. is 141.3 Hz.
Dept. of State & Border Patrol is 151.4 Hz.
Drug Enforcement Agency, Fed. Aviation Admin., & Nat. Marine Fisheries is 156.7.

Justice Dept., FBI is 167.9.

10^2 (10 x 10) Ultrasonic

10^3 Lower range of true Hertzian waves, waves in cycles per sec lower than this such as the human heart beat or Brain alpha waves are not Hertzian.

104 (10,000)

16,000-32,000 Range of Frequencies used in European implants to signal the implant.

54,900,000 Hz (54.9 MHz) Cellular phones (Also 435 MHz, 750 MHz, & 1080 MHz have been discovered being targeted on victims of implant mind-control.)

10^{11} to 10^{12} Far infra-red

10^{13} "Raman" I.R.

10^{1}4 Near Infra-red

10^{1}4 to 10^{1}5 Visible light spectrum

For picture #15 p_6-15.jpg

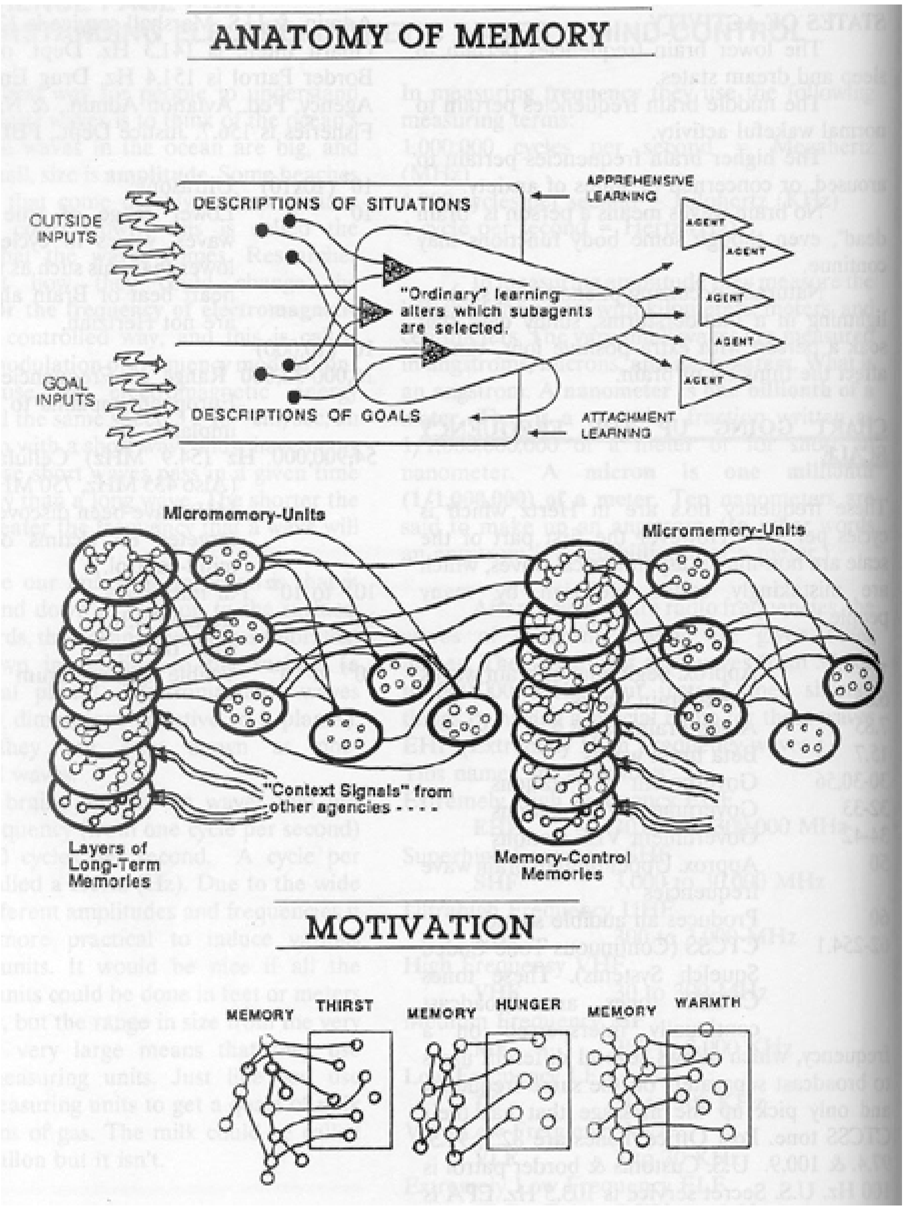
ANATOMY OF MEMORY
DESCRIPTIONS OF SITUATIONS
OUTSIDE INPUTS
APPREHENSIVE LEARNING
AGENT
"Ordinary" learning alters which subagents are selected.
GOAL INPUTS
DESCRIPTIONS OF GOALS
ATTACHMENT LEARNING
Micromemory-Units
Micromemory-Units
"Context Signals" from other agencies . . . .
Layers of Long-Term Memories
Memory-Control Memories
MOTIVATION
MEMORY
THIRST
MEMORY
HUNGER
MEMORY
WARMTH

B3. GWEN Towers

The GWEN towers can be used for several purposes, including ELF waves used for direct mind control which will be covered toward the back of this chapter. Because they also are part of the implants system the are included before the chapter discusses implants. Unfortunately for us humans, ELF waves can penetrate almost anything. The U.S. Military has built a Ground-Wave Emergency Network (GWEN) all over the U.S. with several hundred 300-500' GWEN towers that broadcast a very-low-frequency wave (VLF) for mind-control of the American public. A single GWEN tower can broadcast up to 300 miles in a 3600 circle. Plus 8 secret powerful ELF transmitters have been established and 3 of them operate on the west coast. It also needs to be pointed out that many items that are receivers can also function in the role of transmitters. Televisions, cellular phones, even air conditioners can be used to bounce signals to somewhere. Many strange towers and transmitting devices have been installed all over the U.S. in recent years.

B4. Body suits

Victims of mind-control who receive implants often are given a body suit of implants. The location of these implant sites used on the human body have been mapped 10.00 out on the following charts. The mapped sites on these charts are verified by a. an insider, who learned from the inside what is going on, EM (H) & b. this author's experience in working with a sizable number of implant victims. Implants can be placed anywhere, but there are certain key sites that tend to be used. The location used also depends upon the type of implant. Implants over the body create the ability to trigger moods, pain, and other phenomena. Implants for auditory sounds are in the ear. Nasal implants are used for mind-control. Tracking implants are also placed into people.

Section C. Specific Implants

Cl. Audio implants (a. public. b. secret)
C2. Body manipulation implants
C3. Visual holographic implants
C4. Memex/Brain Link implants
C5. Torture/Nerve & Muscle Stimulation Implants
C6. Tracking & I.D. Implants.

C1. AUDIO IMPLANTS

BACKGROUND INFORMATION

The concepts used in audio implants had been discovered in the first half of the 20th century, but the refinement of technology to take advantage of what had been discovered waited until the second half of the century. The development of audio implants ran on two tracks, one was the public medical research and the other was the secret Illuminati/Intelligence Agencies' research. Audio implants began to be publicly placed into people in the 1960s. The Illuminati was experimenting on some victims at this stage, and the military in the Vietnam war used auditory implant devices to aid communicating to their men who were sent into tunnels and who were placed into forest situations where audible noise would compromise their locations to the enemy. The Illuminati/Intelligence/& Military consortium was keeping the experimentation secret. It appears from looking at the worldwide research on audio implants that the Illuminati realized that the field was so ambiguous, and open to so many different approaches, that rather than straightjacket the research community by a specific strategy, they encouraged a wide variety of approaches in the research. Consequently, research by one group would overlap or duplicate research by another. Much to their credit, a few researchers rejected offers to get involved because they saw the sinister ramifications. By the 1970s, the intelligence agencies were willing to start using hundreds of people to experiment operationally with the implants. People in every state of the U.S. were selected as victims. Many of these implant victims had programmed multiple personalities already. The controllers were very heavy handed with the people they implanted, and they used the full force of the Illuminati/Intelligence agencies power to keep these people under their control at all times. These innocent victims have had their lives totally destroyed. Some tried to fight back, spending thousands of dollars to get out from underneath the incessant audio messages that the implants sent, but the system was too big and too powerful to fight. Police, congressmen, psychologists and many other people turned their backs on these victims. Some victims who initially fought back gave up resisting, some committed suicide, and some continued to fight. Meanwhile, on the public track during the 1970s & 1980s, medical researchers kept putting more and more audio implants into deaf and hard-to-hear persons. Hundreds of people in the U.S. and many hundreds in other nations such as the U.K., Germany, Austria, Israel, Australia, France and other countries began to receive the cochlear implants. Australia was so proud of their audio implant research/development they issued a postage stamp showing an implant device ("bionic ear") developed in Australia. The question begs asking, if thousands of people have publicly received audio implants, isn't obvious that the secret societies and secret intelligence agencies have done at least as much if not far more?

BRIEF CHRONOLOGY OF AUDIO IMPLANTS

1790--first known attempt by Volta to electrically stimulate the ears. He shot approximately 50 volts of electricity into his auditory system, and experienced the sensation of a blow to the head followed by a sound like the boiling of viscous liquid.

1850--Electro-otiatrics was begun by otologists who hoped electricity could help ear diseases in various ways.

1925--Sounds were created in people by radio engineers by placing electrodes near the ear with a modulated alternating current.

1930--Weaver & Bray discovered the principles used later in the cochlear microphonic implants.

1937--By passing an alternating electrical current in the audible frequency range from an electrode to the skin, Steven, Jones, Lurie and Flottorp found they could have people hear sounds. For a number of years these men studied this phenomena.

1957--Djourno and Eyries in France woke the world up concerning the ability to electrical stimulate the auditory nerves and produce sound with their reports. A patient from France reportedly gets William F. House, MD interested in developing an implant device.

1961--William House implants two patients with short-term audio implants. One patient receives a multiple electrode implant.

1960s--intense research for audio implants is conducted in California in places like Sanford, the Univ. of Calif., in L.A. etc. The military uses audio implants operationally to be able to talk to soldiers in situations where external noise would compromise the location of the American soldiers, such as exploring tunnel system.

1970s--Various researchers around the world begin publicly implanting audio implants into people. The Illuminati and intelligence agencies begin to secretly implant people, this is known because many of the early victims can pin point at time in the 1970s when they got their audio implants.

1980--The FDA establishes Federal regulations regarding cochlear audio implants.

1984--By this year, 369 people have publicly received the House Cochlear Audio Implants, which have been implanted by 36 different clinics. The 3M Cochlear Implant System! House Design for use in adults, which is already in hundreds of adults, receives FDA approval in Nov.

1990s--Audio implants along with other implants begin to be used more aggressively by the mind-control programmers. Successful intelligence operations are carried out with the aid of audio implants.

BASICS OF HOW THE IMPLANTS CAN FUNCTION

Thousands have publicly received audio implants, and thousands have received audio implants without their permission by the New World Order. The implants (whether secret or public) basically have to contain A. a receiver(s), B. a processor, C. a transmitter, D. electrodes or electrical stimulating device. When sound waves arrive to the human ear, the sound causes biological reactions all along the auditory pathway--from the cochlea, the auditory nerve, the brain stem nuclei and the primary cortical projection areas. Each of these areas are fair game for machinations of the mind-control researchers. There are brain stem potentials which originate in the auditory brain stem nuclei--primarily in the inferior colliculi. The public auditory implants produce a small electrical stimulus that bypasses damaged hair cells and directly stimulates the remaining auditory neural elements. This means that for the secret implants, the electrical impulse that is generated to stimulate the person to hear a sound or sentence is totally unnoticed by everyone but the victim. As mentioned before, psychologists are being used to shut victims up, by declaring that they are crazy for claiming to hear voices. How do these psychologists know that the person isn't hearing voices from an implant? Some psychologists are declaring the implant victims are "crazy", "delusional", & "insane", because audio implants supposedly don't exist--therefore it is useless to give any credence to the complaints of victims. In other words, psychologists are being used as the establishment's witch doctors to cover up the mind-control activities of the New World Order. What's new? Establishment shrinks helped cover up the programmed multiplicity for decades by labelling the programmed-multiple slaves "paranoid schizophrenics". During experiments, it was discovered that the skin of a person can pick up auditory vibrations, so tests were run to see if implants in other parts of the human body could be used for auditory implants. The vibrotacticle system of the skin has an upper limit of sensitivity to 400 to 500 Hz. In contrast the auditory system had a frequency range between 20 to 20,000 Hz and an optimum range of 300 to 3,000 Hz. The auditory system had a dynamic range of 130 dB (decibels) which the vibrotactile had only a 30-35 dB range. In other words, using the skin like on the chest to send auditory vibrations to the brain was a very limited way to create sound. For most purposes it isn't a viable approach, even though some experimental auditory implants were placed in places like the chest. The ones that were tested only reconfirmed the suspicions that the best results are by using the inner cochlea and the auditory canal area. Dr. Begich's and later others showed that a nonlinear function will translate one frequency to another frequency, but although it does jump, this method is inadequate for the current mind control signals, and a linear function is used which operates simply on the energy that the implants have.

Originally single channel devises were used, but then multichannel devices were soon found superior. The processing units of a device, had to have an extraction method to determine the pitch of the signal and then would present a square wave at the rate of that frequency. Soon the miniature computers that made up part of the audio implant were made so that they were programmable. Some of the publicly implanted people (for instance some who got a 4 mm. cochlear auditory implant), who thought they were getting medical help, were later followed up a decade later by the intelligence agencies for their own agenda, and instead of just hearing the world, they got to hear mind-control drivel from some handler communicating via the implant. As sound waves come into the public implants, they are fast Fourier transformed into many channels lying between say 100 and 4000 Hz. Each channel may be assigned to a specific electrode located on an array of electrodes. The electrodes are stimulated for instance at 300 pulses per minute. The transmissions go to receiver/stimulators that then stimulate the subject to hear something. (Fourier transforms have also been identified being used by human brains to encode memory.)

In order to keep their signals to their implanted victims secret, the Network employs a tactic called piggybacking where they piggyback their own audio transmission onto standard FM frequencies.

CANAL is the acronym for an system that is used simultaneously for transmission and reception via the use of a double-frequency shift keying (DFS). Radio transmitters that send quick signals are variously called BURST, SQUIRT, SQUASH, or high-speed transmitters.

USES OF THE IMPLANTS

a. by themselves, b. with other implants, and c. in conjunction with other mind-control devices.

TYPES OF AUDIO IMPLANTS--

Part A. Publicly admitted audio implants
Part. B. Secretly implanted audio implants.

Part A. Publicly admitted audio implants.

The entire world has gotten involved in audio implant research. The British Cochlear Implant Group has been setting up "implanting centres" for the UK. Not all the publicly known implants will be listed here, for instance, some of those I chose not to list include some developed in Spain by Bosch & Colomina, the ones created in

Thailand by upgrading american made implants, and several made in East and West Germany before the wall went down, and the Swiss implant which was simply the Austrian audio implant used with their own processor.

3M COCHLEAR IMPLANT SYSTEM/HOUSE DESIGN--MODEL 7700 (AKA ALPHA)

BANFAI, EMG --Several models developed by Banfai in Cologne-Dueren, West Germany. It is digital, with a pulsatile signal and a programmable memory. The implant can be communicated with using an interface device hooked to a computer. The patient has a keyboard. It was first implanted in 1977 and has 8/14 and 16 channels. It has been implanted into hundreds of people.

BRITISH, for instance UCH-- Developed by Douek, Fourcin and Moore in London and implanted with a single electrode in 1978 and multiple electrodes in 1990. The implant has bioglass, and promontory grooves for the electrode, and neural network programming in its computer memory.

CHEN AUDIO IMPLANT--developed in Guangzhoi, mainland China and first implanted in 1984. It was said by the chinese that 20 people received this implant.

CZECHOSLOVAKIAN--Implants were created by Volvoda and Tichy in Prague and implanted in the 1980s into a few people.

FRASER--Developed in London, and first implanted in 1983. It was notable because it had a round window in the implant. In the first few years it was implanted into 56 people. The encapsulated the implant in a high-grade Silastic rather than an epoxy, as some other European researchers had done

FRAYASE--Developed in Toulouse, France, this audio implant was implanted with its receiver in the chest. It was first implanted in

1981, and 22 people were said to have received it.

GOA--developed in Shanghai, China by Lee and Lin.

INERAID- (fka Symbion) produced by the Richards Company, USA. In the Journal of the Acoustical Society of America, Mar. 1994, vol. 95, pp. 1677-1678, they have an article about a woman who had an implant in one ear and not the other. She was asked to compare the pitch signals from natural sources versus the right ear audio implant. The most apical implanted electrode was not as accurate as the more basal located electrodes using an Ineraid implant.

IMPLEX COM 12--Comes with an interfacing computer and a Syncom patient self-tester

LAURA--Developed at Antwerp, Belgium. These were first implanted in 1986, and had an internal canal antenna, a microphone entirely internal in the auditory canal, a pre-amp, an antenna, and a data control circuit. Only a few subjects got this implant. It comes with a computer, and an interface unit. It does have a programmable memory.

MED-EL --Developed in Austria at Vienna and Innsbruck by Hochmair, and first implanted in 1977. Hundreds of people were implanted with this audio implant. Some were implanted externally with it and some internally inside the ear canal. It has one channel and a multitude of electrodes stimulating the audio channel. It is analogue, and sends an analogue signal. It does not have a programmable memory.

MXM- -Developed by Chouard in Paris and first implanted in 1974. It had been implanted by 1990 into 179 people.

NUCLEUS 22, NUCLEUS MINISYSTEM 22, and other NUCLEUS AUDIO IMPLANTS (aka CLARK's Implants)--At least two models developed in Australia at Melbourne. This audio implant was first implanted in 1978. The implant is programmable from the outside. It has been implanted into many hundreds of people. It has a multitude of electrodes that stimulate the audio system. It is digital, sends a pulsatile signal, and has a programmable memory. The implant comes with a diagnostic and programming interface computer. The Australian government heavily subsidized with millions of dollars research into audio implants and got the

Cochlear Corporation (Nucleus) going. Nucleus uses what is called MULTIPEAK which provides high-frequency information from 2000 to 7000 Hz. With this 4 electrodes are stimulated in rapid succession, and special algorithms are used which change the relationship between the pulse amplitude and the pulse duration in order to allow 4 pulses to occur within a single frame. The Nucleus Minisystem 22 was approved by the FDA for implantation in both adults and children.

Storz Instrument Co.'s Implant--developed at Univ. of Calif, San Francisco.

Part. B. Secretly implanted audio implants.

There were several profiles of people that were used in the World Order's selection of secret victims to implant. The following were criteria that they liked in the selection process, a. vulnerable, such as single women, b. people who were already programmed with trauma-based mind-control, c. psychics, who had already told people they heard or saw things ordinary people don't, d. people, not highly regarded by society such as minorities, criminals, street people, mentally insane, who would not be able to find a support system to help them fight the experimentation. They also did the audio implants into some of their own intelligence agents, apparently to some who were getting somewhat difficult to their superiors. Because of this type of profile, and some other things this author learned, it appears that the initial two decades were used more for experimentation and development than they were for actual operations. However, with more than 2 decades of experience, they are now fully operational. From watching their interaction (messages) with victims of audio implants, it is clear that they are not in the testing stage, but are fully operational, and have a full cadre of trained operatives (men & women) to staff the secret bases from which the monitor and broadcast signals to their slaves. The staff their bases with 3 shifts and the graveyard shift leaves approx. 6 a.m. In other words, from what we can tell they are using standard shift times for the audio implant control staffs.

COCHLEAR IMPLANTS--There are Cochlear implants for auditory control secretly implanted without permission. A rubber molding skin color covers the outer lining of the ear canal. There are tiny slits in this lining, which when pushed to the side would show the presence of coils and a plastic rod/wire embedded in the area. Sometimes burn marks occur on sides of face due to intense heat generated by implants, which is painful.

DENTAL AUDITORY IMPLANTS--At least a dozen victims have complained that after their teeth were capped they began hearing voices. Other sources indicate that during the filing process implants are being put into people. This is the type of implant placed into J. Z. Knight and left dormant for many years until they decided to activate her as New Age guru.

RIDGE IMPLANTS-- These implants can produce Theta waves and even voices. They are designed to suppress a particular type of thinking. The body may be sent into paralysis or given various stimulus-response stimuli in order to suppress certain thought patterns. If the slave begins to have certain thought patterns that threaten the programming and programming structures, these implants kick in to divert the person's mental activity to something else.

C2. BODY MANIPULATING IMPLANTS

The subject of body manipulating implants could have been placed in chapter 8, however the desire was to keep all the information on implants together. Mankind has placed objects into the human body for thousands of years in the hope that it would produce some type of change. So the history of this type of implants is volumous. Reader's Digest had an article about how to give to paraplegics the use of their arms and legs with implants. Implants are being placed into the human body to effect growth changes, to change hormone levels (such as to stop estrogen), to change DNA growth, to carry out behavior modification, etc. Several papers have recommended that sex offenders get implants. The Rambo chips that have been put into many men have been linked to some big crimes. In recent times, the following body manipulating implants have been written about:

CRYSTALLINE CORTICOSTERONE IMPLANTS-- These implants affect the hypothalamic-pituitary-adrenal (HPA) activity when there is stress or basal activity. It was placed into the medial prefrontal cortex (MpFC) to regulate the response to certain types of stress. Journal of Neuroscience, Sept. 1993, Vol. 13, pp. 3839-3847.

NORPLANT--a contraceptive implant placed into hispanic and black teenagers using the Mantel-Haenszel procedure. Written about in Journal of Adolescent Health, May 1995, Vol. 16(5), pp 389-395 by Nancy Campbell-Heider, John Glantz, Sandra Glantz, Eric Schaff, et al.

POLYMERIC BRAIN IMPLANT--These implants are ethylene-vinyl acetate copolymer matrix disks and are used to release into the brain dopamine for a period of a number of weeks. The testing of this has been done at Yale Univ. School of Medicine. Written about in the Annals of Neurology, Apr. 1989, Vol. 25, pp. 35 1-356. Written by Matthew During, Andrew Freese, and Bernhard Sabel, and Mark Saltzman, et. al.

PROTO-32 IMPLANT--Designed by Dr. McDaniels and a Dr. Paul Hod. This implant with a 32-bit microchip memory affects DNA growth within a person. The two doctors who developed the device are claimed to have died after they created the chip. The FDA has approved the use of the implant in the brain. It’s believed that there is a patent on the chip.

SILASTICMELATONIN-FILLED IMPLANT- Used to alter the speed of resynchronization of the circadian rhythm in birds, and implanted by the Max-Plank Institute fur Verhaltensphysiologie, Andechs, Germany. Although this was for birds, mention of it is done here to point out the type of research done at the Max-Plank Institute. It was written about in the Physiology and Behavior magazine, July 1995, Vol. 58, p. 89-90 by Michaela Hau and Eberhard Gwinner.

TESTOSTERONE IMPLANT--used to release testosterone into the subject.

C3. VISUAL/HOLOGRAPHIC IMPLANTS

BACKGROUND.

Hollywood has given us movies where visual and holographic implants are shown, but what about the real world? Yes, it does happen in more than the movies. Publicly, the establishment has only experimentally placed visual implants into a few volunteers. On the real life side of the NWO, there have been a number of victims who have been subjected to visual implants without their consent. One victim in Massachusetts labels her visual implants "visual prosthetics’, but mentions "I use this term loosely because they are more so attachments than replacements of my own vision.

Every now and then the public is made aware of where the World Order wants people to think research is at. In the Jan. 13, 1997 issue of U.S. News & World Report (p. 52), the unveiling by researchers of the retinal chip that could potentially give sight to the blind was reported. It was interesting the article’s choice of words "retinal chip unveiled" (bold added).

After it was realized that sounds could be artificially made via electromagnetic waves in deaf people, researchers naturally thought of giving sight to the blind. In the 1960’s and 1970’s researchers struggled to produce implants that could restore sight to the blind. This research was hijacked by the NWO types and has been developed into another component for their mind-control.

In the 60’s Giles Brindley and others at Cambridge Univ. and in the 70’s William Dobelle and others at the Univ. of Utah, both were able to show that individual phosphenes could be evoked by electrical currents, thus showing the feasibility of visual implants. (See GS Brindley’s paper "The sensations produced by electrical stimulation of the visual cortex" in J. Physiology, Vol. 196, 1968, pp. 479-493. and W.H. Dobelle’s article in 1974 "Phosphenes produced by electrical stimulation of human occipital cortex, and their application to the development of a prosthesis for the blind." in J. Physiol, 243: 553-576.) The public development went forward with the blind. Since most blind people still have the neurons (which are like a natural computer) in the higher visual regions of the brain fully intact, the implants are designed to take advantage of this unused potential.

The body has sensory pathways, that were discovered to be maps. In creating a visual image, the brain actually takes an image through several maps before getting the final image. There is a map for motion, along with at least 5 others maps such as one for form. The photoreceptors of the retina react to the three primary colors and have 3 primary color maps created by the electrical image made from the photoreceptors of the retina. (One’s genetics contribute to how each person perceives a primary color, we don’t all see colors uniformly.) The retina’s output (called optic nerves or retinal output) map the electrical image again onto the retinal ganglion cells. Then the optic nerves project the electrical image to a relay image (the lateral geniculate nucleus) where the brain begins combining the maps of the two eyes. Another network of neurons (called the optic radiations) then transfers the image back to the rear of the brain to the primary visual cortex. Then the brain takes the image through several higher level maps to its final finished product--the viewer's perceived picture. The microelectrode array that creates a map for the blind person may be hooked up to the primary visual cortex, or other points in the process. The microelectrode arrays that were initially tested were much cruder than the human eye. They pixelized (turned into pixels, that is points) what the video camera saw. The implant compared to the human eye's natural abilities something like what the old dot matrix printers created in comparison to a computer laser printer. The blind person's perception via the implants is somewhat cruder than actual sight. Experiments have found that the brain has a great deal of power in choosing how it interprets images, so that it is hoped that the plasticity of the visual system will allow blind people's brain to adapt to what they are being shown over a period of time to get the maximum visual advantage. This also implies that victims of visual implants--which are of a more sophisticated technology will also have a natural tendency to rewire their brains to accommodate the new sensory inputs.

One of several groups of public researchers into Visual Neuroprosthetics (visual implants) is Richard A. Normann, with the Dept. of Bioengineering, John Moran Lab for Applied Vision and Neural Sciences, at the Univ. of Utah. In 1990, he spoke to people at the IEEE International Conference on Systems, Man, and Cybernetics about visual implants. At that conference on cybernetics, there were already well thought out methods for creating silicon based electrode arrays. The John Hopkins University in Massachusetts is another research center into visual implants. MIT and Harvard have also been researching in the subject of visual implants. Advances in material available and micro-fabrication techniques has permitted the semiconductor manufacturer to create electrode arrays with 3-D architectures, which can then be implanted into the visual parts of a person.

HOW THEY WORK

In a true visual prosthetic, a video encoder (camera) transforms the visual world in front of a blind individual into electrical signals that are used to excite neurons at some point of the visual pathway. The video camera encoder will be a silicon retina that replaces some of the functions that the human retina performs, and then it makes what it sees into signal compatible with the neurons the encoder must stimulate. The signals from the encoder excite neurons either via a hard-wired percutaneous connection, or a telemetry link. "The stimulating electrodes must be implanted into visual pathway such that each electrode is able to excite only a small population of neurons in the vicinity of the electrode." (Normann, Richard. "Visual Neuroprosthetics Functional Vision for the Blind", in IEEE Engineering in Medicine and Biology, Jan-Feb. '95, pg. 77) To improve the picture sent by the implants to the brain, electrodes the size of the neurons they intend to stimulate in the eye were developed. Kensall Wise at the University of Michigan created small high density electrode arrays out of silicon. In one model, the electrodes are .08 mm at their base, and taper to a sharpened tip. An array of hundreds of such electrodes can be implanted into cortical tissue about 1.5-2.0 mm below the cortical surface. This is not all of the design considerations involved, but it gives an idea of the direction that public research has gone in. A special pneumatic inserter that can shoot the arrays at high velocities to insert them into the cortical tissue was created by Patrick Rousche. This method provided limited cortical-based-map images. To further improve the picture, implants are being created that create a retinal map, rather than a cortical map. This can take advantage of the image forming properties of the human eye, and may give satisfactory images. At the current pace of public development, visual implants that restore sight are only a few years away from mass production. Meanwhile, the Network continues to create and use visual implants that are more sophisticated than what the public sector has been allowed to create. Bear in mind that these researchers use either foundation grant money or government grant money to operate. The Network is very careful about what technology is developed. Some excessively ambitious implant researchers (not visual, but other) have seen their work have a national security gag order thrown over them, and the research ends up muzzled from getting out to the public.

TYPES

FIBER OPTICS-- Fiber optics permits the Network to use a fiber optic that looks like a hair as a television camera. In a body suit, several fiber optic cameras that look like hairs will be installed in key places to provide the handlers remote viewing. Fiber optics can also be mounted in the victim, to provide a means to receive remote pictures. Fiber optic implants can be placed by needle into any site on the body. One victim of electronic mind-control, who has repeatedly pulled out Fiber Optic hairs, had a tiny fiber optic hair shot into her chest above her tank top while she was in a restaurant. Some other implants that carry out the same function look like warts, moles, or blisters.

ARTIFICIAL LENSES -- One victim describes his eye implants: "They are oblong objects with a square opening in the middle of them. They appear to be located on my corneas or rapped around them to be more accurate. They are connected to rods or wires that are spread out over my facial area and under the skin like a mask. The implants also appear to be connected to cochlear implants which are the cause of the repeated voice transmissions that I hear." Via a camera, she was able to pick up the presence of a reddish orange smear or stain covering my eye lens. The color blends with her own eye coloring so it is extremely difficult to see anything in her eyes. The lenses of the implants are not lined up evenly with her cornea. The victim with the visual implants states, "Whenever I close my eyes, I see the presence of constant red orange haze centered with a tint of whitish blue. I also see a small area of fluorescent green color. When I sleep, I am subjected to virtual reality type pictures like programs being run through a computer with a 3-D effect. There is a constant whirring and clicking effect that comes from other implants such as the ears." In review. Visual implants are at time called visual prosthetus, but are actually attachments rather than replacements. They are oblong with a square opening in the middle of them. They are located on the cornea (rapped around them) and are connected to rods/wires that are spread out over the facial area and under the skin like a mask. The coloring of the implant is blended with natural eye colors to camouflage it. When the victim closes his or her eyes there is a constant presence of a red-orange haze centered around a small screen. There are also two orbs with a tint of whitish blue, and a small area of fluorescent green. Visual reality pictures are run like programs from a computer, that have a three-D effect. The left forehead scalp area has a whirring noise.

BIO-CHIPS that "talk" to nerve cells. Some of the readers will have already heard of the bio-chips that talk to nerve cells. Stanford Research Inst. has been working on such bio-chips. Bear in mind, public research is generally a cover for what has already been discovered.

HOLOGRAPHIC OR H-INSERT-- There is one type which has been called a Holographic Insert or H-Implant. A holographic memory is created by this implant. This may or may not be the Nanobots which are capable of creating holographic images in the mind. Let's discuss the nanobots.

HOLOGRAPHIC IMPLANTS VIA NANOTECHNOLOGY & NANOBOTS

Nanotechnology is technology pertaining to very tiny robots and tiny computers that are in the range of nanometer-size (10 to 1,000 billionth of a meter). Nano means "one-billioneth". In other words, extremely microscopic, we are talking about robots & machines one-billionth of a meter large. The Scanning Tunneling Microscope (STM) makes it possible to see something the size of a single atom. The STM will also pick up atoms and move them. People who are interested in nano-technology have regular meetings in the Silicon Valley. A Johannesburg, South African company Nanoteq (recently taken over by the Amer. company Microchip Technology) was the company that created nanotechnology encoders (based on a non-linear logarithm that mixes transmission lines and changes codes frequently). Microchip Technology is putting these encoders into their series of microcontrollers which are EEPROM-based.

The encoders are called Keeloq hopping-code technology. They are good in protecting micro-wave, ELF, infrared and radio-wave transmissions. Microchip Corp. is creating a sub-company group called Secure Data Products to work with this type of technology. In other words, the ALEX system reported on in Vol. 2 is being miniaturized. Another Nanotechnology company is Nanosystems, which is working with the Jansen Pharmaceutica N.y. unit of Illuminati-controlled Johnson and Johnson. We know numerous companies like the two mentioned above, who are working on Nanotechnology. We also know that they are not going to tell us their trade secrets and what they have really developed. For instance, this author had a hearty laugh when he read The New York Times (11/19/96 pg. Cl) article "Feat of the minuscule: scientists make abacus with carbon molecules: invention at Swiss research laboratory may be a step toward building faster computers", because the article is patently disinformation! According to the article a Dr. James M. Gimzewski and colleagues discovered how to make tiny balls of 60 carbon-atoms each. They call these balls "Buckyballs". They can move these balls via what they call a "scanning tunneling device". A picture of the teeny-tiny 60-atom balls was shown in the article. So what did they do with this ability? They built an abacus (yeah sure! Come on guys!). If the reader understands computers--a computer at the most basic level is simply a base 2 number system. Anything that can consistently move or switch can be the basis for a computer. A computer is simply an enormous amount of on-off switches, where 0 can stand for off and 1 for on, etc. The article states, "Scientists at Switzerland have invented an ultraminiature abacus in which spherical carbon molecules sliding along the microscopic copper groves act as the counting beads for performing arithmetic calculations." (So they are using it for arithmetic, yeah sure!) IBM reported that its scientists used the STM to move individual atoms so that they spelled "I-B-M" in atoms. If you believe that the ability to arrange individual atoms and tailor-build molecules was so that IBM scientists could spell IBM, then this book isn't for you. A more recent NY Times article (2/2/97, p. E6) discusses how Xerox Corporation has created sensors the thickness of peach fuzz. These are called MEMS (micro-electomechanical systems). The article states, "MEMS are all about doing more with less, about being lean, mean, and next to invisible." The article is lean on facts. It does give a hint of the incredible power these little gadgets have when the writer launches into his propaganda tirade at the end of the article, "Paradoxically the fear that accompanies the fantasy of nanotechnology is not that the culture will be as stratified and fragmented as Victorian England, but that the new culture will be one that is unrecognizable to everyone alive today." That is true, this nano technology is taking us to the place that society will not be recognizable. The age of the future is planned to be the age of robots--humans if they are to survive are to be robotic slaves for the illuminated elite. However, this is not paranoid fear as the NY Times writer implies, but it is the unfortunate reality humanity faces. Some people apparently are already experiencing it. One victim of mind-control, whose father is Military Intelligence and whose family is part of the Illuminati, claims that he has been subjected to tiny robots called nanobots. These nanobots have been featured on TV, where they have been billed as an asset for surgeons. Reportedly, these tiny robots can work off of 10-100 kilohertz of beamed power. They have coil-shaped antennas, 2 little six-pointed "wings" to attach and move themselves with. These tiny boron-carbon nanobots have all kinds of purposes. One use is for multitudes of these Nanobots to be placed into a single victim's head, where they are programmed to migrate to certain programmed positions where they can suppress the optical signals to the brain and replace these signals with their own holographic images that can be externally transmitted to the nanobots or preprogrammed in. They are trying or have succeeded, depending upon who is talking about nanobots, in making self-replicating assemblers. In other words, they have built miniature robots that build other robots. (Sounds like something the Japanese would do.)

Nanobot researchers talk about how great it will be to have tiny robots that are smaller than a red blood cell circulating in our blood removing fat, bacteria, and viruses.

SOME SOURCES. Recent articles on nanotechnolgy include: Electronic Times (12/7/95), Electronics Weekly (11/29/95), Electronic Engineering Times (11/27/95), the L.A. Times (11/11/94, 12/21/94, 2/7/96, 2/20/96), the NY Times (4/30/94, 11/19/96, 2/2/97), the Wall St. Journal (5/12/94, 1/9/96, 2/26/96). Eric Drexler wrote Engines of Creation (Anchor Press/Doubleday, 1986), a book about nanotechnology.

Books that will provide more information on nanotechnology:

Drexler, K. Eric and Peterson, Chris and Pergamit, Gayle. Unbounding the Future: The Nanotechnology Revolution. Morrow, 1991.

Hameroff, Stuart R. Ultimate Computing: Biomolecular Consciousness and Nanotechnology. Elsevier Science Pub., 1987.

Whitehouse, D.J. and Kawata, K., eds. Nanotechnology: Proceedings of the Joint Forum/ERATO Symposium held at Warwick Univ., 21-22 August 1990. Adam Hilger, 1991.

C4. MEMEX/BRAIN LINK IMPLANTS

The public doesn't understand that programs showing research are typically rmation to hide what's already in use. On "Cyberlife," 12/17/96, a TV story was done on Dr. Ted Berger, a biological engineer, at U.S.CA, who is working on a microchip that will be a substitute for the hippocampus' memory. The story stated that in two years a brain chip can be made that mimics the pattern of brain neurons so that it can be plugged in. The New World Order's computer-satellite system allows a. communication devices to be embedded within a victim, as well as b. memex devices that are linked to the natural brain to boast the brain's memory. In the Vol. 2 book, the ALEX (Amalgamated Logrythmic Encrypted Transmissions) system was described which allows the NWO to pulse codes on different frequencies in an erratic fashion that makes the transmissions hard to even spot. The

ALEX system is one component of their ability to secretly transmit orders and information to their slaves. When a slave receives a body-suit of implants, one implant will be a central control implant that controls the body suit of implants and receives information from an external transmitting source. Some of the slaves have had their central controlling implant at the base of their skull. The concepts that Hollywood portrayed in the sci-fi movie "Johnny Mnemonic" where an oligarchy (in league with big business and the crime syndicates) controls the world, and uses a human who has an implant that stores tremendous amounts of information is-- sad to say-- not so far removed from what is already happening in secret.

INTERFACE DEVICES

The biocybernetic researchers for the New World Order have working on a number of interface devices to interface (link) the human brain with computers. A number of devices have been created. There is even a biochip the size of a large organic molecule that works as a memex implant. The idea of implants is difficult for some people to accept. I am in the possession of x-rays showing implants, of anechoic chamber readings showing that victims were receiving constant synthetic telemetry signals from outside transmitting sites, and a variety of other items showing evidence that this activity is going on. For instance, Professor Ingmar Wickbom, M.D. of the University Hospital, University of Calif. Medical Ctr., San Diego on 10/6/'83 wrote a letter "To Whom It May Concern" that skull x-rays of Robert Naslund indicated implants at the base of the skull that are "possibly some form of brain transmitters". Some of the victims I personally know have managed to extract fiber optic fibers from their bodies.

ORGANIC BIOPROCESSORS LINKED TO VIRUSES-- One direction that the New World Order took was to develop biochips and bioprocessors, that is three-dimensional organic circuitry that functions as computers. The conductive velocities of these miniature organic computers (protein lattices) are at least one million times faster than nerve cells. The circuit power of a given size of miniature organic computers is at least a million times greater than the same size of brain matter. Molecular computers made of living matter can be grown from DNA templates of genetically engineered bacteria. Synthetic proteins have been developed which match what they want to make into mini-computers. The end product is a bioprocessor (tiny computer) within a cell. These mini-computers are specifically linked with viruses which migrate to specific parts of the body. Viruses are primarily nucleoproteins, some of the small ones are not even alive, and they don't even have metabolism. They do not have a metabolism to kill with an antibiotic. The Neurotropic viruses migrate to the central nervous system (nerves), the Dermotropic viruses migrate to the skin, the Pneumotropic viruses go to the lungs, the Viscerotropic go to the abdomen, and other viruses go to other sites in the body. Because many viruses will select what area of the body they will reside in, the New World Order can tailor (in tissue-culture) their bio-implants (which consist of a virus plus a bioprocessor) so they can target where they will end up in the mind-controlled slave. Such an virus implant is also called a symbiote, because it lives off of the host, the mind-controlled slave's own body. These virus implants have life-expectancies that are a number of years long. A number of these implants within the victim serve as spies-in-the-camp, reporting detailed records of what the host's body is doing. Research into how to splice and dice genetic material and then recombine it has been going on for a number of decades, and is very sophisticated. There are a number of very technical books on how to do it, but only a reader familiar with the language of genetic research could decipher their techniques & abilities with miniature RNA and DNA pieces. Several genetic books/papers describe how viruses can get host genetic material or other genetic material, thus giving us a window on how they transfer the miniature computers made from DNA templates to the viruses. In the book Mechanics of DNA Replication & Recombination, Proceedings of a UCLA Symposium held in Keystone, CO April 3-9, 1983,(edited by Nicholas R. Cozzarelli, of the Dept. of Molecular Biology Univ. of CA, Berkeley, published in NY by Alan K. Liss, Inc.) one of the leaders in this field said on page 12, "I remain faithful to the conviction that anything a cell can do, a biochemist should be able to do." And yes they have been replicating strands of RNA & DNA, creating whatever they want. The Illuminati have been using these computers-in-viruses implants at least since the 1990s. The implants are easy to insert into the victim's body, and the specific virus transport themselves and attach themselves where they are to go. The Illuminati then build body suits of these implants. The size of these tiny implants vary from tens of millicrons to hundreds of millimicrons. Just their tiny size makes them difficult to destroy. From research on victims, it appears that a central computer is implanted to control or interact with the body suit of implants.

PSYCHICS-- One of the Illuminati's research projects was to discover the psi gene--the genetic gene that would permit them to breed a master race with psychic abilities. One of the groups that the Illuminati has controlled which did research in this area was Nazi Germany. Mengele, in fact, was interested in the co-relation of blood types to psychic abilities. Blood type B apparently has more psychics than other blood types. People who have true psychic abilities have a more complex molecular lattice structure than those who don't. They also have energy fields of 500 cps or higher. This is in contrast with most brain activity which lies in the 0 cps to 100 cps range. The heart operates at up to about 250 cps, and the resonant frequency for a nerve is 360 cps. In other words, the high cps. energy field is a tip off that the person is psychic. A secret program has been carried out by the Illuminati to identify every person on the planet who is capable of being psychic. They are identified and then assigned to people (a male and female) to monitor the person. Psychics are often recruited into intelligence agencies to bring them under the power of the Illuminati's establishment. In other cases, they are simply watched and monitored, some who are threats to them are killed, and others receive mind-control. They have been identifying people with psychic abilities and then trying to track and/or control them. They also will try to recruit or place these people under mind-control or both.

C5. TORTURE/NERVE & MUSCLE STIMULATION IMPLANTS

When a body suit is placed into a slave, implants are strategically placed in their body so that if they do not comply or if the Network wants to make the person dissociative they can direct the control implant to trigger these implants to activate. For instance two implants will be place on opposite side near the uterus and one in the lower back in order to give the handlers the ability to cause lots of lower back pain. Prior to electronically putting someone into an altered & controlled dissociative state, they will wear a person down with pain to make them dissociative. For instance, if an implant in the middle (square in the heel) of the foot goes off, a ball of electricity like a sparkler is activated causing pain, anxiety and discomfort. Some describe it as a hot pin prick in the foot. One victim and her mother both received these torture implants, and she was able to locate and remove some of them from her mother. I would like to paraphrase her description of finding these torture implants, "I discovered fiberoptic type implants on the lower back and also on the line where the leg and buttock join. The fiberoptic sites on the lower back was 1" to the left of the spine, and consisted of two holes where the implants had been inserted which were one above the other, and at a distance of 5/8' from each other. I was able to partially remove both of these fiber implants, but knots remained under the holes where tiny parts of the implants tenaciously remained. These two back implants seemed to connect signal-wise to the implant at the junction of the buttock and leg. This latter implant could create pain in the left leg and foot." Sometimes a crackling sound like crickets accompanies the signal to create pain. A vibrating electrical field is often used on victims of electronic control. (Unconfirmed but possible:) One victim described a device that could have a dial rotated to allow the sender to chose different types of signals to be sent. This would be pointed at a victim. As this sounds like a good possibility, it has been included here, although there is nothing to confirm such a piece of equipment which is probably if it exists

BELLDAME TORTURE IMPLANT--Nothing available to report.

SUICIDE IMPLANT--Some claim that an implanted chip has been created that will release a poison upon a signal which will kill its host. This author has seen absolutely no evidence that such an implant exists. It's use is likely disinformation.

C6. TRACKING & I.D. IMPLANTS

This type of implant has gotten most of the public's attention. For several years now the public has been aware that animals, military personnel as well as civilians have been given tracking implants. Objects also have received tracking implants. DCI of the CIA Bob Gates is reported to have said, "If you can't identify people, you can't control them." The Wall St. Journal, 3/30/1992 reported that the FDA proposed that tracking devices onto 35 classes of medical devices such as heart valves and breast implants. The excuse was that they needed to track life-sustaining medical devices better. The list of devices to be tracked includes cardiovascular filters, defibrillators, pacemaker electrodes, heart valves, tracheal protheses, breathing monitors, portable oxygen generators, ventilators, infusion oxygen generators, ventilators, infusion pumps and various silicone gel-filled devices such as testicular implants and breast implants, and spinal implants. The Hughs Identification Device has been placed onto such objects as breast implants. These tracking implants are reported to have a life of 250 years. Their tracking I.D. number consists of #, letter, #, letter, # etc. The U.S. Navy has employed RF/ID "waterproof bracelets" for tracking individuals underwater. The U.S. military has required its personnel to take tracking implants under the pretense of being able to find them if they get lost, and millions of men and women in the military have already gotten these tracking implants. A book published by the U.S. Army War College in 1994 (entitled The Revolution in Military Affairs and Conflict Short of War) shows the Army's interest in tracking implants. Many tracking implants were placed into military personnel during Desert Shield/Desert Storm operations. Some tracking implants are programmable and can record vital data about a person. They could also be used as a debit card for financial transactions, which is why they have gotten so much attention as the much feared Mark of the Beast. Texe Marr's popular book Project L.U.C.I.D. exposed the L.U.C.I.D. System which will be a central clearing house for keeping track of everyone. He reproduced a diagram from an issue of Narc Officer magazine showing how the system would connect an individual's universal biometrics card with the justice, data communications, and telecommunications systems of the World Order. Texe Marrs and others are fascinated at the choice of words & acronyms that the establishment keeps picking. Dr. Creusat, a medical doctor with Interpol is the official designer of L.U.C.I.D. He and his co-designer initially refused to reveal what the acronym L.U.C.I.D. stands for. Some speculate that it stands for the obvious: "Lucifer's I.D." system. It's also strange that AT&T called their new company derived from Bell Labs (which has been involved in mind-control for the Illuminati) "Lucent Technologies". Again some people speculate that Lucent means Lucifer's Enterprises. And what did Lucent come out with? They came out with a new computer network called "Inferno" (another name for Hell), written in a language called "Limbo" (a place in Hell) with computer protocols called "Styx" (a river in Hell). And then on the other side of the Atlantic, a world-wide net called Demon Internet is being offered to people in Europe. (To have Demon Internet installed for you by Demon Internet, Ltd. at 322 Regents Park Rd., Finchley, London N3 2QQ costs initially £1,762.50 for the first month according to recent company literature.) Again the obvious ques tion, why are these companies using occult--even satanic terms for their products? Illuminati member and chairman of IBM Thomas Watson, Jr. set up a cryptology research group at IBM's research lab in Yorktown Heights in NY. This group was led by Horst Feistel, and it developed a cipher code called "Lucifer". Lucifer was then sold to Lloyd's of London. Lucifer was created under the auspices of the NSA. Lucifer worked off of an algorithm. The NSA had set things up via IBM so that it has had a back door to anything encrypted with Lucifer. (By the way NSA's partner in the U.K. is the brit's GCHQ.) The paper trail indicates that L.U.C.I.D. intends to keep track of people by using biometrics (iris scan, fingerprint, voiceprint, photos, and other bio identification features) that will be encoded on cards (or implants.) DNA databanks are already giving computers an enormous ability to identify millions of americans via their DNA. Texe Marrs also calls our attention in his book about L.U.C.I.D. to the important mandatory ISO 9000 program, which makes it mandatory for all products to have an ISO 9000 I.D. number and their approval and certification. Over 100 countries have adopted the ISO 9000 standards. In 1999, use of the system, which was voluntary, will become mandatory. The government is also setting up TPN (Trading Partner Numbers). While obtaining all these numbers to do business is not directly mind-control; if a person can't buy or sell without the approved numbers, it does tend to place a person or company under the World Order's control. The NACCB in England and the ASQC and the ANSI have been given power to accredit people with the ISO 9000 numbers. IOS is also in some type of overseeing role in the accreditation process. Here we go, more acronym monsters to control our lives! But while attention has been focused on this, many other implants have been implanted for mind-control. It all works together. The tracking implants certainly are an external means of controlling people that will work along side of the mind-control to lock people into their Established System. The tracking implants have broader application than just to keep track of an individual's location, or his financial records. Tracking implants can be used to send bio information on the heart beat, the BEG, EKG and other bio tracking methods. Researchers who are following the field of tracking implants will remember the article "An Eight Channel Micropowered PAM/FM Biomedical Telemetry System" in the NTC '71 Record, p. 309. The Air Force Office of Scientific Research, NASA financed that study which involved an 8-channel micropowered telemetry system designed to sense and transmit physiological data. The system was actually successfully used. They will also remember an earlier article in the IEEE Transactions on Bio-medical Engineering, Vol. BME-14, Oct. 1967 entitled, "The Design and Use of an FM/AM Radiotelemetry System for Multichannel Recording of Biological Data." And then they will remember an even earlier report from the Biophysics Lab, of the Aerospace Medical Labs of the Aerospace Medical Div. at Wright Patterson AFB, Ohio dated 1965 entitled, "Personal telemetry transmitter system." The point is that tracking implant research has been with us for several decades, and is being utilized to control slaves who have body suits of implants. They have been publicly monitoring animals with bio-telemetry for several decades, it doesn't take any stretch of the imagination to comprehend that they are also doing it with their slaves. While these articles were from the '60s, soon afterwards a book appeared Mackay, R.S.

Biomedical Telemetry, Sensing and Transmitting Biological Information from Animals and Man. John Wiley &

Sons, Inc.: NY, 1970. Faceprints are a new method which uses a math algorithm that establishes distances between eye pupils, nasal base, lip center and other facial points. The algorithm produces a 50-bit number that is person-specific. The plans are to code this along with other unique I.D. features onto the magnetic strips of I.D. cards. The American CIA developed in conjunction with the Thai police a smart identity card for use in Thailand. The Computerworld Smithsonian Award was given to the Thai Ministry of Interior for this "innovative technology" in 1990. In other words, one part of Big Brother patted another on the back. Was the CIA protecting us, Mr. & Mrs. Citizens by doing this so-called "intelligence" work, or was it working on another agenda by developing this high tech ID card? Later the military adopted the MARC ID card based on similar ideas.

Bell Communications (in NJ) developed voice activated credit cards. Reports are that colds can throw one’s voice off so that it’s rejected by the flat microchip in the voice card. When this author calls the World Order’s mind-control "total", he means just that--it is designed to control the body, mind and spirit of a person. By taking bio information via implants, DNA codes, blood types, retina scans, hand geometry and face prints, without our real consent the World Order has effectively stolen our Fifth Amendment rights. John Adams wrote, "Property must be secured or liberty cannot exist." (The Works of John Adams, Vol. 6:9, p. 280.) The purpose of the American government was to protect property. But they have stolen our privacy. They have put into law (contrary to the Constitution & Bill of -Rights) several laws that will force us to provide information to computer data banks that will be used to determine if we can buy or sell, if we can get employment or not, & if we are deemed politically correct or not. And those on the wrong side of the NWO may be incarcerated and programmed. While tracking implants are not mind-control per se, they will work hand in glove with actual mind-control to make sure no one under mind-control can effectively get away. Therefore all tracking devices must be seen in the broader context as being devices to assist in the implementation of total mind-control. One genius scientist who worked on the bio-chip and who still works as a civilian for the government personally told this author that he is excused for his help on the project because technology is neutral. Technology is neither good nor bad, so he claims. I disagree, and so did another scientist who did repent of helping with this infernal project, and apologized to this author. These bio-chips are going to be used for the enslavement of mankind, and for total mind-control. There is no justification, no excuse great enough to allow people to side-step their responsibility in the creation of such technology intended for evil. We have a responsibility to know how our inventions will be used before we create them. It doesn’t take a rocket scientist to know what these inventions are going to be used for. Unfortunately, this man who assisted with the bio-chip is a rocket scientist.

Section D. Direct monitoring & manipulation of the brain/mind

D1. Direct monitoring of thought waves.

For many years, the basic waves have told us basic things about the mind. Rapid Beta waves come from normal mental activity like you are doing now, alpha waves indicate relaxation, theta waves mean meditation & memories, & ultraslow deltas mean deep sleep. Cognitive demands cause the gamma waves to synchronize. Alpha (as well as Theta) oscillations both encode and access cortical codes--what we describe as K-lines in this Deeper Insights book. The thalamus & the cortex are involved in memory. People with good memories have higher alpha freks than persons with poor memories. EEGs are used to watch these waves & their oscillations. PET scans are even more revealing. Thoughts can be analyzed in terms of the various parts of the mind that they require to produce them. In word-reading the mind activates specific posterior visual areas, and when the mind must identify a noun specific frontal & temporo-parietal areas are active. (See Posner, "Seeing the Mind", Science magazine, 10/29/93, p. 673). PET scans & BEGs are interesting, but evoked potentials tell it all. The National Security Agency has a monopoly on monitoring the evoked potentials emitted by people’s brain’s electrical flux which are electromagnetic emissions in the 30-50 Hz, 5 milliwatt range. When a person thinks, or moves their body, or sees something, the brain creates an evoked potential or set of evoked potentials. These emissions can be decoded to see what the person is thinking or doing. This is called RNM (Remote Neural Monitoring). It is reported that the Kinnecome group at the NSA is involved with this type of monitoring round-the-clock of victims of electronic mind-control using EMF equipment that is scattered across the nation. A Signals Intelligence EMF scanning network allows the NSA’s computers to pinpoint and track any individual in the United States by watching for their specific bioelectrical field. In many ways, the tracking implants and the national I.D. cards are redundant, but the World Order wants to increase their control, while keeping their best technology secret. The NSA information is not randomly passed on to any individual, but they do have their ways to filter down information to mind-control handlers if they need to. They have exhibited an amazing ability to track the two co-authors, but that doesn't mean that they are all powerful, just because their computers can remotely detect and keep track of people. This book is evidence that there is still some elbow room for independent thought in this world. What's more frightening is the apathy in the world to stand up to the control. But the question may arise, how can they get any good reading on the brain's evoked potentials from a distance? The equipment is a combined use of ELF-modulated masers along with Doppler-shifted interrogative RMCT masers. This technique allows them to send syntel directly through walls. A Maser is a microwave equivalent to a laser.

TESLA WAVES USED TO READ MINDS & IMPLANT VOICES

According to reports, the Soviets were the first to discover in the 1960's that the human brain had 23 BEG band wave lengths, of which 11 of these were totally independent. By knowing those 11 band wave lengths, and then sending signals based upon those wave lengths, the human mind could be manipulated. The person's PRIME FREK, that is their biological frequency needs to be identified, and then it is possible to remotely implant thoughts and voices into their minds.

In the early 1970's, the U.S. Documentation Center as well as the White House's spokesman had both reported that electromagnetic waves could be used to communicate with "a target biosystem." (This was brought out in the U.S. District Court of the State of Utah where inmates who had been subjected to mind-control in prison tried unsuccessfully to fight back in court.)

The University of Utah was just one of several dirty research facilities which researched on human guinea pigs how Tesla waves could be used to manipulate the mind into hearing voices. They discovered how simple it is to use these waves to override and implant thoughts into the mind, and to read the thoughts of the mind. Then they subjected hundreds of inmates at the Gunnison Facility of the Utah State Prison, the State Hospital and perhaps other Utah State Prison facilities to this brand of mind-control in order to test it.

It certainly works. Numerous inmates tried to fight the system, and the obvious mind-control that so many of them were being subjected to. Hundreds of the inmates were subjected to heavy drugs and other severe punishment when they protested. Still they continued to protest. This was in the 1970's, now the technology is being used over the entire United States.

The Tesla waves are sent to a victim in the following sequence of events.

Computers programmed with artificial intelligence handle most electronic controlled slaves. When the slave does something the computer can't handle then human handlers step in to help. Men and women staff consoles attached to CRAY computers where they monitor the victims that need special attention. The full fledged electronic monitoring involves an entire body suit of various implant devices in the victim's body. From the body suit, the controllers are able to track the victim, hear what the victim hears, and see via tiny fiberoptics some of what is going on around and with the victim. The staff have pre-recorded sound bites that they usually like to select, as well as occasion actual live messages. They transmit these messages, which are picked up by satellite and relayed to whatever large TV broadcasting antenna or GWEN tower or other antenna is near the victim. The signal is then relayed to some object near the victim, which serves as a relay antenna to pass the signal on to the victim. It's believed that some type of implant picks up the signal and broadcasts the correct Tesla wave pattern to create voices within the victim. Meanwhile, the tracking implant keeps the staff and the satellite system informed every few minutes as to exactly where to send the voice signals. The Master computer and central HQ for electronic mind control is reported to be Boulder, CO. Several places have been identified by this author as key points. One report came in that transponders are being made in Boulder, CO. The central cellular computer is in the Boulder, CO National Bureau of Standards building. AT & T is cooperating with electronic mind-control also. NORAD tracks both space and earthbound objects. They have a Cheyenne Mtn. Air Station. Although it is clear from reports from mind-control victims that NORAD is actively involved in mind-control, exactly how the different tracking responsibilities are delegated is not known to this author at this time. It appears that there is duplication of efforts, and several NWO branches maintain the same capability.

D2. VOICES / OR THOUGHTS SENT ELECTRONICALLY DIRECTLY INTO THE MIND

Brain waves are connected to thought. When thought occurs there is a great deal of brain wave activity. The brain carries out what some people call "parallel processors"--that is it breaks a thinking process down into components and works on all simultaneously. When the World Order’s researchers have attempted to tamper with the mind they can place thoughts into the mind by tampering with the processes that create thoughts, without actually having to replicate the thought they want. In other words, they are deflecting the natural process into the synthetic process they want to get their desired result.

For group mind control, or isolated individuals, ELF waves can be sent that interact with the brain’s natural waves. The human brain synchronizes with the incoming waves and the end result can be panic, sleep, or a hypnotic trance. The wrong kinds of ELF waves can even damage the brain. In 1961, Allen Frey, a free-lance biophysicist and engineering psychologist reported that humans can hear microwaves. This had been known by the military since W.W.II. To form complex words and sentences, Frey realized he’d have to approach the level of 10 -mW/(cm)^2, but the bottom line is microwave-created movement of cochlear hair cells can be done. In the late 1950’s, Dr. Patrick Flanagan developed an electronic telepathy machine which was called the Neurophone. He writes about the Neurophone and its capabilities to transmit acoustic (sounds, voices) directly into the brain of an individual using the electromagnetic fields in his forward to the book Angels Don’t Play This HAARP by Jeane Manning and Dr. Nick Begich. The patent office held up his patent on the machine for 12 years. Dr. Flanagan writes, "Certain types of electromagnetic signals can induce visual and auditory effects when the field around the head or body is at the right frequency, intensity and modulation levels. We are not accusing the developers of HAARP of amoral intentions for the use of this technology but the potential for abuse is there." (Angels Don’t Play This HAARP, p. 6) First, this author highly recommends the book Angels Don’t Play This HAARP; and second, this author is going to flat outright say that the developers of HAARP do not deserve the benefit of the doubt anymore--because some of them have a clear track record of developing and using mind-control techniques. HAARP is nothing less than a mind-control project. One of the persons that people trying to investigate HAARP kept running into was Col. John Alexander. Col. John Alexander was involved with the development of -HAARP. (Angels Don’t Play This HAARP, p. 19) Trauma-based mind-control victims have identified Col. John Alexander as being one of the primary mind-control programmers. He has been a key player in a number of mind-control projects for the government. Wright-Patterson AFB, Dayton, OH also played a role in research for HAARP. A number of trauma-based mind-control victims have identified Wright-Patterson as a mind-control programming center. Apparently, the Air Force used some of the brain-stem scarred whiz kids at the base to try and develop Tesla technology. ARCO (via their ARCO Power Technologies, Inc. subsidiary) was the Air Force’s prime contractor on the first phase of HAARP’s development. ARCO has company doctors who are helping program mind-control victims. One of ARCO’s board members was Dr. Simon Ramo, who is a big player with the military and the secret government. The awarding of ARCO’s subsidiary APTI for the contract smelled like a rat, because other companies were obviously better suited than this tiny subsidiary with a staff of 25 in Washington, D.C. Besides the mind-control aspect of things, the World Order set things up so that APTI has the patent (#4,686,605, Method & Apparatus for Altering a Region in the -Earth’s Atmosphere, Ionosphere, and/or Magnetosphere) for the HAARP project, so they are a natural shoe-in for the project. There were other patents involved too, and about dozen of these patents assigned to APTI have now ended up with the large Raytheon Corp. (APTI was bought by B-Systems, and B-Systems was bought by Raytheon. All 3 are working fast and furiously developing technology for the NWO.) The NWO’s Stanford Research Institute developed many of HAARP’s high-fre-quency transmitting programs with money from the Defense Nuclear Agency. (This was from Angels Don’t Play This HAARP, p.47, which cites an NTIA memo, "NTIA Preliminary Assessment of Air Force Ionospheric Research Instrument", 10/1/1993.) Mitre Corp. was also involved with HAARP. This author has exposed the Mitre Corp. in the past as being both Illuminati-run, & a co-partner with the NSA.

When a HAARP researcher pestered the Air Force for info, he was referred to Kirk-land AFB, NM another site deeply involved in mind-control and black projects. (Angels Don’t Play This HAARP, p.63) Los Alamos Nat. Labs also is involved with both mind-control & I-IAARP. Their Blackbeard Team is connected to the Alexis Satellite, which may or may not be connected to the ALEX system which this author has been warning about. Supposedly this is a gamma ray re-search satellite, but this author doesn’t know if this is the truth or a cover story. The Air Command & Staff College’s Airpower Journal lets the "cat out of the bag" so to speak when they reveal that weapons like HAARP will be used against civilians. The military wants to use weapons like HAARP to disorient people’s mental facilities. Newt Gingerich wrote the forward to an official US Air Force book entitled Low-Intensity Conflict and Modern Technology which described how electromagnetic weapons could be used to subjugate U.S. citizens who opposed their government. Cpt. Paul Tyler wrote the chapter on electromagnetic and psychotronic weapons. A paper trail does exist of the intentions to use HAARP for mind-control by our government. For the sake of completeness, and to provide the readers with a paper trail, I'll quote directly from this official Air Force book from the part written by Cpt. Tyler, 'The potential applications of artificial electromagnetic fields are wide-ranging and can be used in many military or quasi-military situations... Some of these potential uses include dealing with terrorist groups...crowd control,...and anti-personnel techniques in tactical warfare. In all cases, the electro-magnetic systems would be used to produce mild to severe physiological disruption or perceptual distortion or disorientation. In addition, the ability of individuals to function could be degraded to such a point that they would be combat ineffective. Another advantage of electromagnetic systems is that they provide coverage over large areas with a single system [this is an obvious reference to HAARP] . . . . Recently, pulsed electromagnetic fields have been reported to induce cellular transcription related to reproduction of DNA.... Knowledge of mechanisms of actions of Radio-Frequency Radiation (RFR) with living systems and the assessment of pulsed RFR effects, will demonstrate the vulnerability of humans to complex pulsed electromagnetic radiation fields... Experiments with elec-troshock, RFR experiments and the increasing understanding of the brain as an electrically-mediated-organ, suggest the serious probability that impressed electromagnetic fields can be disruptive of purposeful behavior and may be capable of directing and/or interrogating such behavior." THERE YOU HAVE IT, a PAPER TRAIL that the MILITARY WANTS HAARP'S MIND-CONTROL capabilities. Dr. Abraham Liboff of Oakland Univ. has demonstrated how low-energy circularly polarized electromagnetic waves can change the brain's ability to keep out certain ions, minerals, and chemicals. HAARP can also be used with genetic manipulating ionized radiation and chemicals to specifically control the mind. (See Chapter 8, section 2 for a complete discussion of this.)

SUMMARY OF ELF WAVE MIND CONTROL CAPABILITIES

Naval Intelligence and other groups have conducted research into ELF waves upon the human body and mind. Some of the many things that can be done to the human body and mind with ELF waves include:

a. put a person to sleep
b. make a person tired or depressed c. create a feeling of fear in a person d. create a zombie state
e. create a violent state
f. create a state of being sexually aggressive g. change cellular chemistry
h. change hormone levels
i. inhibit or enhance M(RNA) synthe-sis/processes
j. control the DNA transaction process
k. control biological spin and proton coupling constants in DNA, RNA & RNA transferases.

But electronic control of the brain comes in many forms. Perhaps the controllers only want to carry out mood shifts. ELF waves which will penetrate walls, and even go through the earth will create mood shifts according to how many cycles per minute they are sent at. Studies have proven that the time for ELF waves to cause a shift in mood is between 6 to 10 seconds (not a long time).

ELF waves below 6 cycles per second cause subjects to become emotionally upset and this rate may also disrupt bodily functions. At 8.2 cycles/sec. the person gets an elevated high such as would be accomplished by a master of meditation. 11 to 11.3 cycles per second cause the brain to become agitated and to begin riotous behavior. ELF waves could be directed at a population to help incite riots. Research has been carried out to determine how the brain's sensory inputs are coded. It has been determined that visual input is relayed and built into a series of changing maps. The olfactory sense has thousands of specific codes to determine smells, and combinations of these are triggered by an object. One clue that gave researchers initially the idea that different individual human brains have a common internal electronic type coding for specific thoughts is that drugs will have such common effects on the human race--even -though one obtains individuals from widely different genetic pools. The best research is of course kept secret. We primarily have to report on what is released. E.R. John in Mecha-nisms of Memory (NY: Academic Press, 1967, pp. 348-349) announced his discovery that central neuro-electrical codes are indeed used by the human brain. Information transfers in the brain have been shown to be related to neuro-electrical frequency codes, and that a brain can be manipulated by beaming those codes from an external sources. For instance, Hippocampal neurons will have burst-firing frequencies between 100-200 Hz. Here are some of the resonance frequencies for manipulating these senses:

Visual centers of mind--25 Hz
Sense of touch center--9 Hz
Auditory (hearing) ctr-- 15 Hz
Motor control-- 10 Hz
Subconscious thoughts--20 Hz.

If the World Order wants to cause a person to make a gesture, they use ELF-modulated microwaves that are "KEYED" to distinctive brainwave patterns that are called "PREPARATION SETS." If the controllers want to create an emotion they use specific "EXCITATION POTENTIALS" by creating the correct resonance frek which in turn creates a specific emotional state. Victims of electronic mind-control often complain of electronic fields placed -around their bodies. Recently, when an electrical storm blew a major metro power grid, one victim of electronic mind-control lost the force field that had been encircling her body. The brain is also attenuated to the earth magnetic field. By manipulating the magnetic field around a person, the magnitude of the beamed codes needed to elicit a change in the brain can be reduced. For example J.I. Jacobson changed melatonin levels in subjects by manipulating the magnetic field in conjunction with beamed "signals". See Jacobson, J.I. "Pineal-hypothalamic tract meditation of pico Tesla magnetic fields in the treatment of neurological disorders." FASEB Journal, 1994, 8, p. A656. Sandyk also successfully used manipulation of the magnetic fields and reported this in Sandyk, R. Successful treatment of mul-tiple sclerosis with magnetic fields. International Journal of Neuroscience, 1992, pp. 237-250. It was discovered that if an alternating magnetic field at a distance (resonance) frequency is superimposed upon a steady-state magnetic field, calcium and other ions within the brain can be moved with little energy. When this was discovered, researchers began to watch to see if variations in the -earth's magnetic field during geomagnetic storms and in other situations, would affect the thinking of masses of people. They discovered that there were indeed changes to the human brain as a result of magnetic fluctuations. Cognitive thinking and conscious -thought occurs between the temperatures of 308º - 312º K (or 35º - 39º C) and the fundamental wave length associated with these thoughts are approximately 10 micrometers (which is an infrared wavelength.) Signals that blend with Background Radiation can be manipulated to control the brain. The temperature of the brain directly relates to how certain signals will affect it. It is believed that structures within the thalamus are involved with modulating the temperature sensitivity of biochemical oscillators. Heterodyne Principle Used. This principle is that multiple frequencies when applied to a nonlinear device produce new frequencies which are the sums and differences of the applied frequencies and their harmonics. In other words a local oscillator (also called a strong sinusoidal carrier wave) can multiply a weak signal. A microwave signal at a frequency A is mixed with a microwave local oscillator at frequency B in a nonlinear mixer. The mixer output signal which is A minus B is a faithful amplitude and phase reproduction of the original microwave signal but at a low, fixed frequency so that it can be measured simply with low-frek measuring devices. Heterodyne signals cost more to produce but cost is no problem for the government. Multiport network analysers, which use several simple power detectors and a computer analysis approach provide a less expensive way to measure both the relative voltage amplitude & the phase. Cell phone freks used. The controllers use the UHF cellular telephone frequencies, which are installed everywhere because the human cranium operates on the same frequencies that cellular phones operate on. This was not by accident.

PULSED AUDIOGRAMS--Pulsed audiograms use extremely low average power densities of electromagnetic energy acoustic amplifier driven by the rf transmitter's modulator, the peak power density is a critical factor which is approx. 275 mw/rf for carrier frequencies 125 mc and 1,310 mc. Acoustic noise is approx. 80 decibels. Another source, the electrical sine wave analogs of each word is processed so that each time a sine wave crosses zero reference in the negative direction, & a brief pulse of microwave energy is triggered. These voice modulated microwaves transmit words to the brain. Sounds are generated when pulsed microwaves are aimed at absorbers made of carbon-impregnated polyurethane. An Acoustical Energy Wavefront (AEW) is created by modified transducement of sound waves, which are in the ultrasound spec-trum (USS). In other words scalar energy is being employed. When people are asleep they are the most vulnerable. TV antenna can serve both as transmitters and well as receivers. It can be made to oscillate a suitable resonant frequency. By transmitting signals in the TV/FM range and then modulating them in the ELF/ULF range, they can send signals. The Nexus magazine of Oct.-Nov. '96 p. 16 reported on Dr. Ross Adley's research. Dr. Adley did some work for the CIA on their Pandora project (an electronic mind-control project). He recently worked at the Loma Linda Univ. Med. School, CA. His research showed that the brain will react to EM radiation. To get a reaction the frequency, amplitude, and dose of the microwave radiation has to meet certain criteria. In the 1980's, his experiments showed that microwave carrier-waves modulated with ELF waves will modify brain tissue. Weak EM fields will affect the binding of calcium ions to neuronal sites. This type of information is the type of information that pertains to the genetic mind-control covered in Chapter 8. Dr. Adley was able to prove that a 147 MHz (megahertz) field, which at a tissue level had an intensity of 0.8 milliwatts per square centimeters, caused an efflux or release of calcium ions from the irradiated brain tissue. "This response only occurred when the ELF modulation of the microwave carrier-wave had an amplitude modulated at 6-20 hertz (Hz). The maximum stimulation of the neurones took place at 16 Hz, but to either side of this frequency-range parameter there was no effect." (Nexus, 10-11/'96, p. 16 citing Adey, Ross W. "Neurophysiologic Effects of Radiofrequency and Microwave Radiation" Bulletin of the New York Academy of Medicine, vol. 55, no. 11, Dec., '79) Also microwaves as they enter the brain tissue, cause thermal expansion as -things heat up at the microscopic level, which produces strains in tissue. The strains produce acoustic stress waves that are conducted through the bone to the cochle-a, and the cochlea's stimulation by the wave gives the brain its perception of hearing a sound just as the cochlea's stimulation produces the normal sensation of hearing. For microwaves to do this they must be at 1310 MHz and 2982 MHz at the average power densities of .4 to 2 mW/cm^2. The peak power densities can be 200 to 300 mW/cm2 and the pulse repetition frequency was from 200 to 400 Hz. This makes an RF auditory sound. The sound appears to the victim as coming from within or near the back of the head. 2 criteria needed to hear microwaves are the ability to hear above 5 kHz, and good bone conduction.

Section E. Auxiliary uses of electronics & electromagnetic waves.

E1. hypnotic induction
E2. polygraphs
E3. attacks against people & objects
LIQUID CRYSTALS
"ALIEN" implants
BED COILS STANDARDIZED FOR MIND-CONTROL POTENTIAL
E4. virtual reality

El. ELECTRONICS TO AID HYPNOSIS

In a normal resting state the alpha waves of a person are between 6 -12 per second, and their breathing rate is about 20-40 breaths per mm. and their heart beat about 70 to 90 per minute. External stimuli will affect these rates. If a person fixes their attention on flashes and tones, such as what happens at some concerts, the body functions will tend to synchronize around the external tones and pulsing lights. It takes about ten minutes for the human mind/body to reconfigure itself in line with the external stimuli, then that rate of the flashing lights and tones and be lowered with a resulting lowering of the body's alpha wave rate, their breathing, and their heart beat. Electronics can be an aid to hypnotizing people. If vibrations that vibrate at the rate of six to seven cycles per second are created in a room of people, the vibrations will induce alpha waves in the minds of the people. The increased alpha wave activity makes the listening subjects more susceptible to suggestion. This is similar to the effect Vibrato has on the mind. Vibrato is a tremulous pulsating effect produced by a minute and rapid variation in pitch either by a cappella or instrumental music. Years ago, public performances of vibrato music was outlawed in England because so many listeners went into altered states. A 6- to 7-cycle/sec vibration can be mask behind other sounds. Hypnosis with headphones repeating "You do not know this" are used simultaneously along with sonics as well as electrical patterns that scramble the brain.

E2. POLYGRAPHS FOR MONITORING PROGRAMMING AND MISSION ACCOMPLISHMENTS

Tyson II Corporate Offices, McLean, VA furnishes polygraph operators for the intelligence agencies, esp. Office of Security which is responsible for CIA polygraph examinations.

E3. ATTACKS on INDIVIDUALS and objects.

A victim of electronic mind-control in VA in a letter describing her torment writes, "I no longer have the stabbing pain in my back when I go in my back yard, as I did in Richmond; however, the pain from some type of directed energy weapon(s) is just as severe here as it was in Richmond. These electrical rays coming through the airways of my home cause me all kinds of physical pain and illnesses. They kill my house-plants; they kill my shrubs; they kill my vegetables and flowers in my garden; and most of all, they cause me tremendous amount of discomfort, as well as harassment. "Can you imagine having electrical rays directed at your bottom day and night, 365 days of the year. Can you imagine what it must be like to live around oversexed

SCUM?...This technology is based on Scalar Technology and the Schumann Resonances or Frequencies. It is my understanding that the Schu-mann Frequencies from 0 to 30 hertz can affect every nerve, every gland, every muscle and every emotion of a human being. In other words, a person in my neighborhood can beam these rays into my home and control my body and I am having to suffer from their stupid appetites..." (letter in author's files) Oscilloscopes have confirmed that some Direct ELF/VLF attacks have come from only a few feet. Electromagnetic attacks sometimes hit the victims entire body, like defibrillator paddles. Masers (microwave equivalents to a laser are used for electromagnetic attacks that cause burns that look like "cigarette burns", favorite target areas are genitals, face and nose. The average power density can be at an rf such as 400_u_w/cm². Let's quote another victim, whose letter is also in my files. At first years ago, they began using waves that were in the infrared spectrum that were barely discernable. The waves would target her and then latch on. Over the years they have gotten more sophisticated and more sadistic. She writes, "From time to time the field broadcast from my own head was in a 'field' about me, but, with the added feature of 'harrassment' voices also being broad-cast. These 'harassment' voices had taken a downright filthy tone, being blasphemous words, and venally oriented.... Before I was hit with the full-blown sadistic torture program I was awakened one night by a feeling of my head being raped. A light went on in my brain and I heard voices discussing me and cruelly laughing saying, "There, got her.".. .The first added torture (accompanied by filty langauge, the language is all filth, obscenities, threats and intimidation) was a genital-urinary prod, pulsing about twice per second, and causing nearly incessant urination..., new added features ... are body bangs and head bangs.. .The arrogance with which they announce what torture will be next is unbelievable... .Other sleep deprivation techniques are loud noises, and the interposing of visual phenomena. They seem to have devised a computer imaging which taps the visual nerves--these are like bad dreams. I have had almost no normal dreaming since this system was locked onto me. Over the years she got to understand her harassers better. They have called themselves "social workers" and referred to her as "the package." They have enjoyed talking about her in front of her, and harassing her by talking to each other in public about the things she thought about the previous night. Finally, one more account of a victim who is constantly harassed. "I am being tortured with synthetic telepathy of emotive and voice bytes played over and over again in my brain to positively or negatively reinforce and ultimately con-trol my behavior. I get the sound on my left temporal lobe and in the right and left ear canals. I also get microwaved when I sleep and have vibratory pulsating fields on my lower spine, genitals, stomach, brain, feet or wherever. It is always in combination with the lower spine and something else. This seems to create an amnesiacal deep sleep with no feeling of pain. If I wake up suddenly (and this is the only chance I have of finding out what they are doing to me) I sometimes feel pain when the vibrations stop."

Other attacks/problems:

- Infra-sound attack
- magnets repelled from the cranium
- They use a "Gun" which sends an electromagnetic field which stops a car.

The Russians have been noted to have created a "wood-pecker" signal, the American version of this is the American Buzzsaw. These signals are designed to interface with the mind. And systems are designed to be carried in helicopters, or to be placed on the ground. These signals are broadcast by multiple carriers which hop from frequency to frequency anywhere from 4 MHz to 30 MHz. With the switching of these frequencies, they are creating what is know as a Levinson Transform, named after Norman Levinson. VLF (Very low frequency waves) will cause bizarre behavior in people. (They use 0 to 400 Khz for mind-control operations. The signals are apparently broken up into pieces and triangulated upon a target. Morse codes are used on some slaves to trigger them, which is sent via a number of methods. Victims often have the myelin sheathing of the brain disappearing, which is diagnosed as Multiple Sclerosis. MS has increased 100 fold over the past few years. Pre-conditioning is done by chemicals to the neuro-receptors in the brain and spine. When moving in a car or inside a store it is harder for a victim to be targeted. Also, as readers can imagine, signals being beamed from some tower or satellite will be blocked by large thicknesses of concrete, lead and -steel. In other words, there are some situations that provide limited shelter to the victims of implant body suits and syntel.

UNWANTED CHANGES

There is a complex symbiosis between mankind and the attributes of this planet. We are a life-form whose life is attuned to our environment. The human body at the cellular level has its physiological rhythms which are very attuned to the earth's electric and magnetic fields. When cosmic radiation cycles undergo unusual modifications, including cycle inversions, the metabolism in crabs and the oxygen consumption cycles in carrots, potatoes -shellfish and rats changes. The geomagnetic field helps protect us from cosmic rays. It has been shown that solar flares influence human behavior, and psych wards have an increase in problem behavior during solar flares. The human body is a complex set of rhythms. Permit me to recall some of these rhythms for the reader: Alpha rhythms, Blood Hormone rhythms, Body temperature rhythms (which fluctuate 3º on 24 hour cycle), Cell mitosis rhythms, Cellular DNA & RNA synthesizing rhythms, Cerebral-spinal fluid rhythms, Circadian rhythms, Enzyme rhythms, Food utilization rhythms, Menstrual & Sexual -rhythms, Pulse rates, Seasonal rhythms, and Urine Electrolyte Disposal rhythms. The 60-pulse-per-second power grids (of AC) that are spread over the earth, as well as numerous other man-made activities are disrupting the 7-8 hertz frequency of the earth. There are some side-effects to our tampering with the magnetic and electrical fields of this planet, and some of these side effects may be the disruption or change of the circadian -rhythms (as well as some of the other rhythms of the human body and mind.) In fact, two researchers have research that shows how human nerve cells are affected by ELF fields. (See Becker, Dr. Robert O. Cross-Currents: The Perils of Electropollution, The Promise of Electromedicene. LA: Jeremy Tarcher, 1990, p. 233.) It was discovered by CIT researchers that the human brain has magnetite. Salmon, homing pigeons, whales, and honeybees also have magnetite, a type crystalline iron, which allows them to sense the earth's magnetic field for finding their way around. The CIT researchers published their finding about mag-netite in human brains in the journal Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences.

LIQUID CRYSTALS

For about 6 years this author has heard about liquid crystal implants. One military magazine should its use, and one person who was in military intelligence claims liquid crystals are used. Others claim that liquid crystals were tried and failed. It has also been reported that radio transmitting crystals, that fasten themselves to the brain have been the object of research.

Some ODDS & ENDS

- SERPENTINE SKIN

Another topic that for sure was tried by the NWO was serpentine skin. This is a type of specialized fungus that coats the skin and is used for some of its specialized features. Whether this concept actually flies outside of the lab, this author doesn't know.

- "ALIEN" implants

This author's take on the alien phenomena is that it is the Illuminati's Grand Deception for introducing the AntiChrist. The aliens are materialized demons, and manufactured "soul less" bodies. It's not the purpose here to put forth evidence concerning this Grand Deception, that would take another book, if not several books. (In fact, this author started to write it in 1993, but never got finished.) But no book discussing implants & mind-control could be complete without -touching on alien implants. There is a great overlap between "alien abductions" and mind-control. Whitley Strieber (UFO abductee and famous author) gave two workshops at the UFO Expo West LA. He was very interested in finding out about the implants that Dr. Lear and Derrell Sims had extracted and turned over to traditional medical institutions for study. While Whitley was talking about implants and our government's connection to them, his own implant in his ear turned on and the side of his face turned red like a bad sunburn. Other UFO buffs in attendance also had their implants burn them at this point, causing great excitement at the Wyndham Hotel that day. (This information came from the internet madsongroup@earthlink.net)

There are an increasing number of "alien abductees" who are remembering seeing U.S. military personnel during their so-called alien abductions. The abductees are being taken to U.S. Military bases. (An unusual place for aliens to work, but within the realm of possibility.) The reason that the number of people who are connecting the government with the aliens is increasing is a. more people are receiving mind-control programming, therefore there are more people for which the cover stories and electroshock fail to totally hide what has happened, b. better therapeutic methods are helping mind-control victims recover their memories better, c. there have been a rising number of people like this author exposing it. Karla Turner, who was a victim of mind-control and abductions, began catching on that the abductions were being done by our government. Vol. 2 quoted her on page 184. When she began to publicly expose what the government was doing, the government murdered her. (She joins a growing num-ber of people this author has seen die pre-maturely because they were publicly exposing the truth.) Alien abduction victims have been reporting human black-or dark helicopter activity and black-or dark helicopter harassment since the 1970's. (Perhaps as the Vietnam War wound down & ended, the U.S. government had a surplus of helicopters and delegated some to task forces that picked up mind-control victims in remote sites.) An example from this time period of an alien abduction also involving helicopters is the Betty Andreasson/Luca abduction. A number of victims have remembered the helicopters coming -around the time of their abduction. When bright lights are shined into their houses or into their cars these victims of trauma-based mind-control are programmed to see the helicopter's spotlight as a UFO. (Helicopters also carry spoofer transmitters.) Beth Collins of Oregon reports in her book Connections - Solving our Alien Abduction Mystery. Newberg, OR: Wild Flower Press, 1966, about how helicopters were involved with her abduction experiences. She lives in an area that is a hot-bed for covert CIA activities. In her book, she provides a transcript of memories of military personnel being the guilty party in an abduction. Some victims of these abduction experiences are implanted during their abduction. Researcher Helmut Lammer reports that "alien" abductees Debby Jordan and Leah Haley had implants removed from their ears. What is significant about this, is that the bio-chip implant designed for humans which is credited to Dr. Man, best works behind the ears. (Sources: The Kansas City Star, 7/19/87 carried an article about how Dr. Man's implants work best behind the ear. On Oct., '87, an article by Kathy Hart was run in several papers promoting Dr. Man's implants for protecting children. H. Lammer reported on implants & military involvement in abductions in his article "Preliminary Findings of Project MILAB: Evidence for military kidnappings of alleged UFO abductees." The Unopened Files, No. 2, '97, pp 64-67.) From this author's interviews with "alien abductees" it was clear that 100% of them were victims of U.S. government trauma-based mind-control and that many of them had been taken to underground pro-gramming facilities and made to believe they were at another planet. This is happening in foreign countries too. However, this doesn't mean that flying saucers craft do not exist, they do. And according to eye-witnesses some of the underground facilities in NM, AZ, and CO have personnel from all over the -world, Germans, Russians, British & Americans as well as aliens working side by side. (The American government denies this. Supposedly NORAD only has Canadians.) Some of these witnesses come across as credible. If their reports are true, then some implants may also have a true alien connection. Alien abductees are actually extracting implants from their noses and their feet. It is strange that -"alien" implants have gotten more technologically sophisticated over the years.

BED COILS STANDARDIZED FOR MIND-CONTROL POTENTIAL

Metal coil springs were standardized in size, are made of steel and are placed in a grid pattern in a common mattress. Standards were introduced that specify how many coils, and what tension were to be used in their manufacture. Their shape is an open ended hyperbolic which is the best suited to create a similar induced magnetic field. When one lays down the springs are compressed and have between 5 to 7 coils compressed. This makes a field of influence around the human body which is enfolded within the field of coils, which are natural antennas to incoming electromagnetic waves. Evidence suggests that the standardizing of bed springs was a carefully planned event designed to assist electronic mind-control.

E4. VIRTUAL REALITY.

Since 1989, Virtual Reality conferences-exhibitions have been held. On May 11-13, 1994, the largest conference-exhibition to date on virtual reality was held at the San Jose Civic Center and the Fairmont Hotel, San Jose, CA. Note some of the mind-control aspects of the different sessions:

Session C7--"Tactile Feedback" given by Paul Cutt. Xtensory Session C8--"The Immersion Probe" given by Louis Rosenberg, Pres. of Immersion Corporation.

Session D2--"Biomedical Technology and Biomedical Education" given by John Flynn

Session D9--"Biocybernetics and VR" given by Dave Warner, Medical Scientist at Loma Linda Univ. Med. Center During lunch Kenny Meyer discussed how simulated being in a virtual world are called various names incl. synthetic actors, situated agents, creatures and denizens. At another meal break Lt. Col. Martin Stytz, USAF, spoke on how the military was developing Virtual Reality to train men.

Session C17--AFIT Projects, that is Alr Force Institute of Technology at Wright Patterson AFB given by Elizabeth Block. (Wright Patterson happens to be a major hub for the mind-control and criminal activities of the secret government.)

Session C19--"ARPA/ASTO" given by Lt. Col. David Neyland.

The military is not the only group interested in virtual reality. A plethora of virtual reality companies has - sprung up, for instance Sense8 (which selling ready-to-use virtual reality systems), the Vivid Group which creates Mandala (which are virtual reality authoring systems), and Xtensory Inc., which creates virtual reality tactile feedback systems. The government also works through labs located on American universities working with government grant money, such as the state of the art Virtual Reality lab at the Univer. of Illinois Circle campus, which calls its virtual reality machine "the Cave." Virtual touch has been created. This means that with a special machine for the person’s hand (for shape perception) & special glove (for texture sensing) the computer users can feel the shape and texture of an object on the screen.

Hollywood has given us movies showing the mind-control potential of virtual reality in Lawnmower man & Brainstorm. For more information on virtual reality the reader might try consulting:

- Aukastakalnis, Steve and Blatner, David. Silicon Mirage: The Art and Science of Virtual Reality. Peachpit Press, 1992.

- Laurel, Brenda. The Art of Human-Computer Interface Design. Addison-Wesley, 1990.

This author has a catalog advertizing the EMCS-X-3000-Plus Electronic Mind Con-trol System, which was invented by Cabalistic Hermetic magician Karl Welz. The ad states, "If your intentions are to take control of others and to increase your own mental powers of direct action, then the EMCS-X-3000-Plus is your system of choice!" The article has an endorsement for the BMCS system on page 19 by a charismatic minister, "...I am a preacher of a charismatic church. for reasons you may understand, I was extremely skeptical initially [of the EMCS system]. However, I gave the new tech-nology a chance to help me serve the Lord better, and I do not regret that decision! The membership of my church has more than doubled within one year ... Thank you very much." ---We live in some perilous times! Maranatha!

- List of other Books on this chpt’s Subject

Bamford’s The Puzzle Palace
Becker’s The Body Electric
Becker’s Cross Currents
Brodeur’s Currents of Death
Brodeur’s The Zapping of America
Burdock, Dorothy’s Such Things Are Known (victim)
Calder’s The Mind of Man
Chokroverty’s Magnetic Stimulation in Clinical Neurophysiology
Clark’s July 20, 2019
Dawes’ Advances in...Quantum Neurodynamics
Eccles, Sir John C.’s Evolution of the Complexity of the Brain with Emergence of Consciousness
Galton’s MedTech
Green’s Beyond Biofeedback
Halacy’s Cyborg
Halperin’s Crimes of the Intell. Community
Heller’s Of Mice, Men & Molecules
Hooper’s The Three-Pound Universe
Hougan’s Secret Agenda
Hutchison’s Megabrain
Johnsons’s In the Palaces of Memory
McKinnell’s Cloning: A Biologist Reports

Mark’s The Search for the Manchurian Candidate
McRae’s Mind Wars
Pine’s The Brain Changers
Stanford Research Inst., Journal of Scientific Exploration, vol. 10, no. 1, PP. 1-111
Regan’s Evoked Potentials
Rein, Glen’s Modulation of Neurotransmitter Function by Quantum Fields
Restak’s The Mind
Rucker’s Mind Tools
Valenstein’s Brain Control

Weinstein’s Psychiatry & the CIA: Victims of Mind Cntl The American military establishment lumped syntel and a number of other outrageous "weapons of torture and control" under the official heading of "non-lethal". Then the establishment media (TV & newspapers) such as the Wall St. Journal, Aug. 2, ‘94, had an article about non-lethal weapons where they wrote about the sticky-goo gun", which uses goo to stop people. Do you see how they create a cover? When the public hears of non-lethal weapons they think sticky-goo guns, not implants that are torturing and controlling people.

Herman Kahn of the Hudson Institute stated that total mind-control would be in place by 2000 and could be "imposed under the rubic of mental hygiene."

CHAPTER 7: THE SCIENCE OF STRUCTURING

A. STRUCTURING OF MPD WORLDS
WORKING WITH PARTS OF THE MIND
CONTROL ALTERS called PROCESSORS
BASIC DESIGNS of an ALTER SYSTEM
RINGS The Ferris-wheel subsystem MULTIPLEX
DATA ENTRY POINTS
TESTING ALTERS TO SEE IF THEY CAN BE USED.
THE SCRIPTS.
Assassination Models (Delta Models).
  AUTHORITY FACTORS ARE MAXIMIZED
  ACCOUNTABILITY & ANONYMITY
Monkey Alters.
Plant alters.
Presidential Models
Prostitute Models.
Psychic models.
Reporting Alters.
Repunzel alter.
Transformation alters.
Internal Wall alters
Structuring Internal Programmer Alters.
STRUCTURING WITH THE GRAND DRUID COUNCIL.
STRUCTURING THE SHADOW ALTERS
STRUCTURING IN THE MIRRORS
STRUCTURING THE TAPESTRY
STRUCTURING THE ALTER FAMILIES BY SPINNING

The programmers are experts in knowing how to mold the "clay" of blank dissociated parts of the mind into whatever piece they need. The following is a true account. The Chinese arrested a foreigner skilled in martial arts. They abused the man, but instead of becoming apathetic, he kept himself mentally & physically fit in spite of the horrible conditions of his solitary cell. The superstitious guards believed he was a magician. When the identity of the man was discovered, and the Chinese realized that he was one of the world’s greatest martial arts experts, they decided to try everything possible to destroy him. He was tortured, starved, and humiliated. The man simply went into dissociative states of trance and endured the tortures without sign of pain or emotion. The hardened guards were awed. The Chinese decided to kill the man. They figured that they could place him in a cage with a starved tiger, he’d go into trance and the starved tiger would eat him, and then they could claim that the man had been a coward. They not only wanted the man’s life but his reputation. When they threw the much-tortured prisoner into the hungry tiger's cage, the martial arts expert took on the appearance of a demonized man. With a demonic roar, he attacked the tiger, and instantly kicked the tiger's nose. The animal was stunned and disoriented. The man leaped upon the animal from behind, let out a terrifying scream and strangled the animal. In 20 seconds the whole affair was over.

The man looked like an incarnation of a tiger himself. In fact, the tiger had instantly feared the man the split second the master had landed in the cage. When the programmers ARE SUCCESSFUL with their STRUCTURING--they are able to create alters that match what you have just read about. Our Chinese prison story illustrates the type of end results the Illuminati want from hours of torture & training given to slaves, but HOW do they achieve such fantastic results? That is what this chapter is about.

Some of the programmed skills of the ninjitsu people (the ninja) are now being structured into Illuminati mind-controlled slaves. A disciple of the above prisoner in China wrote, [the Ninja]..."were the original practitioners of the 'art of [mind-control] programming'. They were taught from the cradle that nothing was impossible. Not knowing that a thing could not be done, they proceeded to do it." (The Karate Dojo, p. 101)

A. STRUCTURING OF MPD WORLDS

The purpose of the mind-control is to build a System within the mind that is a human robot. It would do no good to torture the slave and get thousands of pieces (fragments of the mind, alter personalities) if these were not structured. Very few Multiples have ever really gotten to see the deeper parts of their Systems.

WORKING WITH PARTS OF THE MIND

For many people who are unfamiliar with MPD, it can be expected that they would find it strange to watch how the programmers or the therapists work with parts of the mind. Most people mis-perceive the mind as a monolithic entity. In reality the normal mind is made up of hundreds of independent parts working in cooperation and competition with each other.

The top brain researchers (at least many of them) have come to realize that the brain is composed of many independent parts that at times work against each other. For the normal person, some of these parts can be called ego states and some small processes are called by Minsky "agents" of the mind. For the multiple personality they are called alters, splits, and purpose fragments. A normal person has a society of agents and ego states which are entities or parts of the mind which combine to make the whole thinking mind. A multiple personality does not have a society, but rather a system of parts. Whether a person has a society of agents or a system of alters, everyone experiences his or her mind as a combination of processes, conflicting motives, and internal tensions.

In order to bring some cohesion and unity to one's actions, so that a person didn't spend their life going in fifty different directions at once, the mind creates the illusion of self, the self image. The self-image by necessity must not change rapidly. One of the main reasons the mind creates a self-image is so it can have a single purpose to its actions. One of the functions of a self-image (of anyone) IS TO PREVENT RAPID CHANGES. Long range plans could not be pulled off if my personality were like Jane today and Tarzan tomorrow and Cheetah the next day. The mind refuses to change its self-image, even in the face of conflicting data, because self-preservation of a directed life demands continuity from day to day in our personality. Our self-image is a mental construct that stabilizes the mind's numerous processes. It is a global attitude registered in the mind that globally affects thinking in many of the mind's spheres. This is just one reason why the self-images constructed by the programmer for alters are so tenacious, and so difficult to change. Self-images do not want change, they are the restraints (the ball and chain) we subconsciously create so that we can't wreck all of our plans by skipping from one idealistic goal to another without continuity. (How convenient it is to be able to construct a single brain with many different alter personalities each having its own unchanging self-image!)

Pain and Pleasure are two agents which cause the mind to simplify its focus upon either the pleasure or the pain. The brain does not want to focus on anything that is not an immediate issue. This focus on the immediate pain or pleasure by the victim of mind-control diminishes the victim from focusing on more complex mental issues.

An example of one of world's top experts who realizes how the mind is naturally made up of parts is Marvin

Minsky, co-founder of the Artificial Intelligence Lab at MIT, author of The Society of Mind, and who has been an advisor to NASA & the L-5 Society. Minsky's research was financed by the government (the Office of the Advanced Research Projects Agency). And he and other researchers in his field got their contracts by the Office of Naval Research. (See Society of the Mind, p. 324.) His incredible book The Society of Mind has an interesting format where the numerous parts (agents) of the mind are each given their own page in the book. Minsky shows in the book that the mind is a "society" that arises out of ever-smaller agents that are themselves mindless. He does an incredibly good job of explaining how the mind works. Minsky states, "In general, we're least aware of what our minds do best."

The Illuminati structuring of the MPD's fragmented mind is to create flawlessly working systems that can function without the conscious mind getting involved. In fact, Minsky describes how our conscious minds only get involved in simple mental processes that don't work well, the complex ones that work well usually work without the conscious mind being aware of them. "Some readers may be horrified at picturing a baby's mind as made up of nearly separate agencies. But we'll never understand how human natures grow without some theories of how they start.

One evidence for separateness is how suddenly infants switch from smiles of contentment to shrieks of hunger-rage. In contrast to the complex mixtures of expressions that adults show, young children seem usually to be in one or another well-defined state of activity..." (Society of the Mind, p. 171)

The Illuminati has long realized that they need to split the mind of the child before its various agencies connect and the ego-states form and develop their sense of self-hood and personal identity. Although adults can be programmed, the real Illuminati multiple systems are developed from the womb up.

How does the mind make decisions? The various parts of the mind compete with each other. All the parts are in a sense equal, none sits at the top of some hierarchy. The mind does not allow any natural part, such as ANGER, or SLOTH to be permanently enthroned and to direct the other parts. Too many chiefs and no Indians wouldn't work out. Natural parts can not order another part around. They must influence that part indirectly. That is why the following examples happen.

A young married man decides that he and his wife can not successfully work out their problems, because she is a programmed multiple in denial, who wants to manipulate his life and destroy it, while he on the other hand wants to be successful in life. One part of him is the LOYAL TO VOWS part, which refuses to quit the marriage because of the marriage vows. Another part is the GOAL SETTING part, which sees the marriage as an abusive dead end. How does the GOAL SETTING part convince the LOYAL TO VOWS part to give up (throw in the towel) and move on with life? It must indirectly trick LOYAL TO VOWS into feeling that its job has been done as well as possible, and that further concern over the vows are excused.

Another young man, a student, has his STUDY part of the mind really wanting to focus on some problems, but the BORED and SLEEPY part of him want to go to sleep. His STUDY part of the mind tricks his BORED part into allowing STUDY to go to work. He mentally creates a fictitious scare that another student will do better than he, and BORED and SLEEPY are tricked into thinking the problem is much more weighty than it really is.

A young woman bribes her eating processes of her mind, that if she follows through with her diet, she'll reward herself with a nice meal, and that other parts of her will be rewarded with other benefits. Rather than simply diet, she must bribe different parts of herself. Of course if parts of us, lie to other parts when they try to bribe ourselves into doing something, if we are not honest with ourselves in giving the reward, then it is harder next time to bribe the part that was lied to.

In order for the non-multiple's parts to trust each other, they subscribe to a single agreed upon character-an imaginary ideal self-image. Other wise we couldn't trust ourselves to carry out plans. If an ordinary person has amnesia, they could create a different self-image, which again would be an enduring character. By introducing MPD, the programmers create a hidden element of distrust within a person's mind. They no longer can trust themselves, now they must depend upon the stability of the programmer or owner. Now imagine that each of the "agents" or parts has been manipulated to think that it is a person with a personality and a history in its own little world. Because the mind is such a tremendous computer it can easily handle such mental processes.

The programmer and the de-programmer/therapist must work at "tricking" these parts into allowing the mind to do constructive things. I use the word tricking, because what is actually happening is that the therapist or programmer is using language that relates to the language of that part, but it is not language that has much external reality beyond that part. Structuring is the art of using special "languages" combined with other programming sciences to manipulate these internal worlds of the various parts. Our minds are instruments to solve practical problems. If an alter sees no practical use for a particular knowledge they will not want to learn it. This natural selecting process by the mind, helps isolate an MPD's system of alters, because many alters do not see a need to learn anything outside of their programming.

CONTROL ALTERS called PROCESSORS

Within the system of alters, certain alters are selected to be PROCESSORS. As a system is used certain alters are destroyed, disconnected, or regulated. Certain codes are used or changed. A SYSTEM PARAGUARD is what is used to decipher codes and to distinguish what is currently happening in a system.

BASIC DESIGNS of an ALTER SYSTEM

Most Illuminati systems are configured with a Universe or Star base system. In other words, the model for all that is put in uses clusters of stars, galaxies, etc. This is used in conjunction with grids that are shaped in various configurations. The ultimate master of the slave, some Illuminati kingpin who is a programmer or working closely with programmers, will design the system so that the entire structure of the system points to himself and Satan. The alters will be geographically set up in their internal world to worship the master to whom they must give their body, soul and spirit.

A cube or double-cube system is a closed system. The programmers who use cubes love to build boxes within boxes. The smallest middle box of the system may contain the Life force of the system. Those who love paper trails, will see the occult basis for the standard Illuminati cube shape of a system portrayed on page 83 of Clausen Commentaries on Morals & Dogma, which was put out by the Supreme Council of the World of 33º of Freemasonry in 1974. This Masonic book explains that the cube represent man and the pyramid is divinity. Divinity within a man would be constructed by placing a pyramid within a cube, which is shown in a picture on page 83. You will also notice in this Masonic book that the 2 Grand Masters on page 83 are wearing crowns that have 13 jewels. The crowns serve the same purpose that rings patterned on a similar pattern represent. Crowns and rings represent authority, and it is common within the mystery religions to place 12 or 13 gems within crowns and rings. The reason that this is important, is that some important Masonic/Illuminati secrets are here, and these secrets also pertain to how the Mystery Religions (the Illum. & Freemasonry) construct an alter system.

RINGS

Within the Illuminati (which is the continuation of the mystery religions of Babylon) the ring has for many centuries represented divinity. The mystery religions' higher understanding was that God had a ring with his name on it that showed His authority and exercised power over the earth, and that Satan imitated this many-fold in all the mystery religions that he created. For thousands of years, within the various mystery religions, hierophants have been wearing rings with particular secret symbols. The zodiac signs were assigned different stones, gems. For instance, the 12 gems of Rev. 21:18-20, which are the usual gems placed within an Illuminati alter system would correspond to the astrological signs as follows:

Jasper «»Pisces Sapphire «»Aquarius Chalcedony «» Cancer Emerald «» Taurus Sardonyx «» Scorpio Chrysolyte Saggittarius Beryl «» Leo Topaz «» Gemini Chrysoprasus «» Capricorn Jacinth «» Amethyst «» Aries

The creation of a Monarch system's gems is in imitation of the rings of Lucifer and God (as the Illuminati understand it). This ring of gems is able to control the fruit of the trees (programs) and change the internal weather. It is based upon the story that is told the alter system that is being made about how God had a ring. Until His hand swept the heaven of air (1st heaven) fruit could not fall and die, because nothing could die.

Satan and his followers like rings because they want to be godlike. (That doesn't mean all Satanists understand their own history.) When an alter is concerned about "Don't lose the ring", the alter may be referring to the ring of the gems that surrounds the pyramid at the base of the mind. This ring of gem alters may be referred to as the ETERNAL RING, and the RING OF FIRE. The achievement of divinity by a human was what constituted the hermetic marriage of the mysteries. This was the ultimate achievement by mankind. This was symbolized by a gold ring.

Within the Illuminati (which is a continuation of the Mystery Religions) rings are used for bonding (marriage commitments) and a sign of majesty or rank (such as your Masonic rings, and the ring Pharaoh gave Joseph, & King Saul's ring, & special papal rings allowed cardinals & abbots.) The Pope has 3 significant rings, one of which is for ceremonies, and another the important Fisherman's Ring, which is still used as the Pope's seal.

Within the Illuminati alter systems the 7 seals of Babylon are placed into a system. The cube with a pyramid was portrayed at the 14th Masonic Degree (the Perfect Elu degree). The 4 horsemen & the seals of Babylon are talked about at the 17th Masonic degree (Knight of the East & West). Also deep within a system may be the Ring of Fire.

Within the pyramid, which is within the ring of those 12 gems mentioned in Rev. 21, is the ETERNAL LIFE FORCE, a green light coming from Lucifer. In other words, the secret heart of the system is based upon the original lie, that man could become an eternal god. The Illuminati alter structure has at its heart the original lie. An example of how rings and demonology and authority intersect, can be seen in the Grimoire of the Testament of Solomon where a ring is said to have been given to Solomon which enabled him to learn the names of demons.

Rings and chains around the neck are also worn for the extremely secret reason that the wearer is identifying himself with Lucifer who was bound by God by a ring of fire and was chained in the abyss. This is what is really behind high ranking Illuminati Freemason & clergyman Robert Schuler's chain around his neck. The highest levels of the Illuminati have the understanding that Lucifer lost his power when Christ bound him, and that in identification with him, they wear gold chains around their neck, etc. Don't expect to read this in the material that occult world is permitted to read, these are high level secrets. Remember, there are many different levels of occultism, and Satanism. (In the early middle ages, Christians borrowed the idea of having marriage rings from the pagan Germans & Romans. The determination of what finger to wear it on (what has become known as the ring finger), was chosen by the ancient witches because that was considered the only healing finger. Christians of course, by and large, know nothing of the pagan origins and symbology of the rings they wear.) This author has noted that many of the handlers, programmers, & Illuminati adepts wear rings. Some of the rings are quite big.

The Ferris-wheel subsystem. A ferris-wheel configuration which creates compartments shaped like a piece of pie is often a small part of a larger system, and is used to house alters, or it may have some other internal purpose with its rotation. As was brought out in Vol. 2, the Illuminati like to use configurations that appear endless such as circles within circles, boxes within boxes, triangles within triangles. Star configurations are popular Illuminati power sources within their alter systems. The position of a star, the number of points it has, and the relationship it has to other objects in the sky such as a rainbow will be significant. Some stars are placed into the system to represent a point in time when the system is programmed to do something.

When a slave is programmed with multiple functioning sub-systems (aka "systems"), the Illuminati call it **MULTIPLEX**. In such as case, types and names of alters may be duplicated in systems that are mirror images of each other or of a similar design. Traver reports that one MULTIPLEX system had 55 Daves per sub-system with 7 subsystems, making a total of 385 Dave alters for the 7 subsystems in just one particular slave. (see Traver, Dan. Dissociative Disorders & Mind Control, p. 84)

The construction of an Illuminati system can not be divorced from the demonology and rituals that are performed throughout the life of the system. The Illuminati use mystical terms when programming, which reframes psychological processes in the language of magic. Programming and hypnosis are referred during programming as "SPELLS". The programmers will use fictional magical names for items, for instance, the subconscious mind may be referred to as the "HYPNOGOURD, A VINE THAT GROWS GOURDS." Creativity and imagination will be termed "MAGIC", and the programmer "A MAGICIAN". The programmer would instruct his assistant in language like this, "WOULD YOU PUT THIS GAP FORGET SPELL IN?"

The Generational Spirit (or Spirits from each occult bloodline) is laid into the child in the womb. It stays hidden deeply in the system, and plays a fundamental role in the system's creation empowering other demonic forces. In order to construct the trees that provide the structure for the internal worlds-programming, the Illuminati programmer will tell the victim the following hypnotic ritual:

"AS YOU BREATHE, REMEMBER TO SIT ERECT, AND AS YOUR SPINE STRAIGHTENS, FEEL THE ENERGY RISING [PAUSE] NOW IMAGINE YOUR SPINE IS THE TRUNK OF A TREE, AND FROM ITS BASE ROOTS REACH DOWN DEEP INTO THE EARTH. [PAUSE] INTO THE CENTER OF THE EARTH HERSELF [PAUSE] AND YOU CAN DRAW UP POWER FROM THE EARTH, WITH EACH BREATH [SHORT PAUSE] FEEL THE ENERGY RISING, LIKE SAP RISING THROUGH A TREE TRUNK, AND FEEL THE POWER RISE UP YOUR SPINE, FEEL YOURSELF BECOMING MORE ALIVE, WITH EACH BREATH, AND FROM THE CROWN OF YOUR HEAD, YOU HAVE BRANCHES, THAT SWEEP UP AND BACK DOWN TO TOUCH THE EARTH [PAUSE] AND FEEL THE POWER BURST FROM THE CROWN OF YOUR HEAD, AND FEEL IT SWEEP THROUGH THE BRANCHES UNTIL IT TOUCHES THE EARTH AGAIN, MAKING A CIRCLE, MAKING A CIRCUIT, RETURNING TO ITS SOURCE."

The part of the system that will function within the Illuminati hierarchy will all be intimately part of either the SPIRIT TREE (that is the Caballistic Tree of Life) or the TREE OF EVIL (which is the evil mirror image of the Tree of Life). Both trees were discussed in the Vol. 2 Formula book. These trees are both totally connected to the Spirit of the AntiChrist and rooted in Lilith and Tubal-cain. The Moon child ritual is not only performed when the child is still a foetus, but also at age 3, 4, 5, 6, and 16.

When the Illuminati child is in their teens they do the Caballistic Tree of Life pathworking. The pathworking rituals are severe, and many splits of the mind will occur due to these rituals. All the alters created during this work will be arranged at the GATEWAYS that pertain to that particular ritual. Therapists who do not realize how the pathworking of the 22 paths develops entire sections of deeper alters, may incorrectly think they can simply toss out the caballistic Tree of Life from the victim. Countless deeper alters are part of this tree. It has been said in the Illuminati that in general an Illuminati system consists of "the father (core), the son (the programming), the holy spirit (the spirit Tree also called the Tree of Life)."

DATA ENTRY POINTS

The programmers have designed their systems so that one can only get into the Systems via a SEQUENCE. However, sometimes they themselves want to quickly down load information into the computer-like mind of their slaves, and they don't want to have to go through a sequencing procedure. For quick and sloppy downloading of information to their slave or quick deletions to the programming (there is only limited access to quick deletions), programmers put DATA ENTRY POINTS into most systems. This allows for an emergency entry and/or downloading. General codes most often open these points, rather than long specific codes. The trick is being able to know where those DATA ENTRY POINTS are on the person's alter grid or as the programmers say the slave's SCREEN. (With the advent of lap-top computers, what the master of the slave sees if he has to refer to his own reference notes is just that a screen with the system's layout. (Vol.2 pg. 88 gave a sample of how a page on the lap top computer or in a master's black or grey 3-ring binder would look like.) An example of a data-entry point would be a gatekeeper which has learned the entire system via trained LSD trips and then has been programmed to keep this understanding on a subconscious level.

TESTING ALTERS TO SEE IF THEY CAN BE USED.

When a trauma is carried out upon a child, the child is then debriefed and all the splits from the trauma identified. Generally only the first 10 splits will be used to create alters, and the rest of the splits will become special purpose fragments. The programmers begin with the first split and identify how strong the split is. The programmers test for four things:

a. how well can this split take a hypnotic suggestion?

b. how creative is this split?

c. Can this split hold memory?

d. Can this split hold the structuring that will given it?

If the split passes positive on these four criteria, then it will be used to make a full blown alter. The programmers move down the line, testing the splits in the sequence that they were created. If no. 4 split is unable to pass the 4 criteria, then they know that the rest of the top splits will also have to be "thrown away" and used as special purpose fragments. If they need 12 splits from an alter, and they only get 5 usable splits from the first torture, they will retorture the alter to get more first splits. They will continue the process until they get the splits they need. Usually they can use the first 10 splits. Seldom do they use anything beyond the first 10 splits for alters, they are just to weak mentally. If an alter shows extra promise the programmer may say, "This part was going to be a bit part, but we'll make her into a real character." If a special purpose fragment leans in a needed direction mentally, they may take what was to be a minor part, and develop it into an interesting alter. Alters that are waiting to be used are stored as gems that the dwarfs mine, and then the programmers program them. An Illuminati system has thousands of these clean slates. Diamonds are pre-programmed alters that are stored to be used in the end-times during the reign of the Anti-Christ.

THE SCRIPTS.

Each master programmer is responsible for the scripts that he uses. He will invoke the leading geographic spirits, and even Lucifer to gain up-to-date wisdom on what is best for that time at that location. A master programmer will get assistance from his Mother of Darkness or Grande Dame. The master programmer may use a written script of his own such as Michael Aquino uses his own version of Star Wars, or he may borrow from established sources, for instance, Dr. Star of Corpus Christi, TX, who uses the The Goetia The Lesser Key of Solomon the King (Clavicula Salomonis Regis). Dr. Star especially uses the Shemhamphorash, which is the first part of that ancient magical book.

Recently Avon books (which has been owned by Hearst Illuminati family, and which has published over 30 editions of the Satanic Bible) published a book by Piers Anthony entitled Visual Guide to Xanth. This amazing book Visual Guide to Xanth is based on Anthony's Xanth series. It contains so many programming scripts, that it is hard to imagine that Anthony is not a programmer. The scripts are too intact for it to be coincidence. The title page has a hoofed tailed Satan on his throne. It is popular among satanists to use X words, like Michael Aquino signs off his personal letters "Xeper", rather than "sincerely".

Anthony was born in Britian but now lives in Florida. He has had over 60 fiction books published, many of the early ones were very well promoted by the Illuminati, and became top best sellers. The back cover advertises this Visual Guide to Xanth this way, "Learn about the astonishing hierarchy--and lowerarchy--of sorcerers and shape-changers, of goblins, harpies and half-humans who inhabit this extraordinary universe! [internal worlds] Explore the perilous Ogre-fen-ogre-Fen and the inner chambers of the mysterious Castle Roogna! Revel in the history and culture of the most remarkable civilization this side of Ozz!"

The co-authors would have to agree that Piers Anthony's story telling ability rivals, if not surpasses Baum's Oz series. In fact Anthony has put out numerous series of books, not just one series like Baum. The Xanth series is the one that contains more of the programming scripts. For instance, a script would be used to get suicide alters to want to take drugs & champagne on an empty stomach, or to get into a bathtub of water & throw in an electric blow drier which is on.

Assassination Models (Delta Models).

A great deal was explained in the Vol. 2 book about Delta alters, Delta models, Delta teams, and Delta Forces. All of these are involved with killing humans. It is not the purpose of this section to cover what has already been written in the Vol. 2 Formula book on these various Deltas. Mind-controlled Amphibious men, (genetically altered Navy Seals--see Vol. 2 p. 26 1-262, the latter no. is a significant no. for these programmed men) are the Navy's attempt to get something similar to what is depicted on the film Universal Solders. These Navy Seals are not allowed to be touched by other sailors when they are on a ship.

There is still a number of deeper insights that can be provided to understand how assassin personalities are conditioned to be able to kill. Researchers in how the brain functions have found that our forebrains (the thinking part that makes us humans) shut down when we are angry or frightened and the midbrain (which resembles the brain of animals) takes over. The only programming that works for the midbrain is the same type of training that works for dogs, which is classical and operant conditioning. This type of conditioning is simply stimulus-response, such as IF fire bell--THEN walk the fire escape exit plan.

When it comes to killing, the forebrain will listen to many suggestions such as orders from a gang leaders, an officer, or the pressures of life when they demand that a person kill, but the midbrain has the instinct that is born into 98% of the population NOT to kill another human. This innate human resistance to killing is far stronger than has popularly been realized, and has historically stopped most people from killing. This may surprise most readers, because Hollywood movies would lead us to think otherwise. A number of top researchers, including Lt. Col. Dave Grossman, author of the excellent book On Killing, have uncovered irrefutable (albeit still controversial) proof that historically most soldiers have secretly refused to kill in battle.

Grossman was a Military Psychology professor at West Point, as well as having a long list of other military credentials. His superb book On Killing gives numerous reasons (proofs and evidences) that numerous soldiers have typically only pretended to try to kill the enemy. Many fired over the heads or only pretended to fire their weapons, if even that. During W.W. II, Brig. Gen. S.L.A. Marshall discovered that only 15 to 20 % of men on the front line would actually use their weapons against the Germans even during action over several days. 75% of the American soldiers would not even fire at the enemy to save their own lives. He made some suggestions on how to improve this dismal firing rate. By operant conditioning the U.S. military took those dismal firing rates to 55% in the Korean War and to a 95% firing rate in the Vietnam War.

What are behaviour modification techniques that turn teenagers into reliable killing machines? These conditioning and psychological tricks are the same methods that are used on the Delta alters and the Delta systems of Total Mind-controlled slaves, and we will discuss those next. The factors that are weighed as an equation in the human mind to determine whether a human will kill another human are as follows:

- What is the benefit of the kill?

- How do recent experiences relate to the victim?

- How much physical, cultural, moral, social and mechanical DISTANCE is between the killer and the target.? The more distance the easier it gets.

- How intense is the demand from some authority to kill, and legitimate is this authority? If the killer respects the authority that is asking for him to kill, and is in close proximity of that authority he will likely obey that authority.

- Are there a group dynamic working, and if so what is the power and legitimacy of this group to absolve the killer from guilt?

- Are there any stumbling blocks from unresolved guilt from previous killings?

- What is the temperament of the potential killer?

AUTHORITY FACTORS ARE MAXIMIZED

In the programming, the programmer can set himself up as God, or a god. The programmer may also be a satanic cult leader which further increases the victim’s regard for his power and authority. The programmers of total mind-controlled slaves have tremendous potential to cause their assassin alters to overcome any resistance to kill.

ACCOUNTABILITY & ANONYMITY

A Delta Model with many multiple alters incorporates a built in ability to remove personal accountability. If need be, the person can split off a new personality to perform a particularly odious job. The alters form a peer group which works just like a military unit to inhibit the natural reluctance to kill. This is because the closer a group of persons is, and the closer bonded, the more powerful the enabling. When military units lose 50% or more, the men often lose the will to continue killing, because the group dynamic fizzles out.

The programmers who program in the programming, and then later the programmers who program in specific killing missions, have worked long hours insuring that the assassin alters feel morally distant (superior), and socially distant. The victim is made out to be an inferior being who deserves to be punished and killed. The killer will be doing a great service to his fellow man and country to kill the "target". It may be refrained as if it is a holy mission, almost a crusade. Often times the "target" is not even spoken about in human terms. Perhaps the target is hypnotically portrayed as an ant, a bug, or some wild beast, or simply a target.

Hitler helped his military to kill by labelling non-Germans as Untermensch (subhumans). The Americans called the communist Vietnamese "gooks", and they in turn called Americans "monkeys". Because the mind-controlled assassin will not see the face of their victim due to hypnotic programming, they are also limited in seeing the humanness of their victims. Most of the missions for Delta slaves allow them to kill without the threat of being killed. But the Programmer may put the fear of being killed into the slave. They may hypnotically see some object of victim as a threat. One killer (due to programming) saw the men she killed as having a big penis that would hurt her, so her instinct to survive would kick in to help her assassinate these men.

Practice is given to assassins with situations similar to actual hand-to-hand killings to desensitize them to close range killing. With mind-controlled slaves usually actual live victims are used to get the slaves totally desensitized to killing. Because assassin parts are stripped of conscious thinking and empathy they are handicapped to really think about what they are doing to another human when they kill.

Still the intelligence agencies and the Illuminati know that somehow the brain still can latch onto guilt--somehow the brain still can perceive in some dim way that it is guilty of killing another human, so they cover their tracks by warrior cleansing rituals. Warriors and soldiers have traditionally done cleansing rituals when they finish a war. An example of a cleansing ritual would be a parade at the end of the war, where the country turns out to tell the soldiers what a great job they did. A programmed assassin in many cases can not receive a parade, but he can be given lots of praise for having done a great job for humanity, or his country, or whatever ideal the Programmer uses as a rationale.

Clock-Time Programming. The victim may see their head as a clock and may be tortured in such a fashion. Twelve o’clock is straight up between the eyes. Six o’clock is straight below the chin.

Monkey Alters.

The creation of animal alters has been covered in previous locations in this book and Vol. 2. However, I felt Lynne Moss-Sharmon’s description of Monkey programming was worth including here. Lynne is a victim of mind control living at Halifax, Nova Scotia. In her description of the memory that goes to her drawing no. 29 she quotes what was said during the cages, "You stupid monkey. Into your cage. Hit her and put her back in her cage. Lights on. Monkey time. Monkey business."

Plant alters.

In the older models, they used plants and fruit, but in some of the newer models it appears that they are using samphires (combination beast-plant creatures) and hamadryads (man-plant creatures). Magic from underground springs is the cover story for how these plant-animal hybreds are made.

Presidential Models.

Include both children and adults. They carry NWO messages to world leaders. They often have passports with accordion additions stapled in, because they do so much travelling overseas. Presidential models are kept in numerous locations. If high level individuals need to slip away for nefarious use of slaves, they employ look-alikes to stand in for them, while they do their dirty activities. This is why Presidents such as Clinton and Bush got away with sexually using far more slaves than their schedule seems to indicate. Bush was a pedophile, while his double (who has recently lived in France) was a womanizer.

Prostitute Models.

Slaves designed to function as prostitutes must receive training to protect themselves. One possible problem might be a female prostitute who is accosted by an aggressive male, when she is not to allow herself to be used by him. She can be trained to jump up slap the man on the face, warn him that she kick his testicles next time, and then kiss the man in a submissive makeup fashion to smooth his bruised ego. A prostitute slave will also receive code words to let people, say people in a casino, know who she is. Deeper prostitute parts which need to perform sex for long periods of time accomplish this for their masters by switching alters and by ingesting speed. The mechanical nature that sexual alters have is illustrated by the "I CAN WALK, I CAN TALK" phrases of alters with doll programming.

Psychic models.

Both men and women slaves were created to carry out various psychic functions. For instance, the AntiChrist needs to be able to look at people and totally understand them psychologically and their systems of mind-control (alter systems, programming etc.). The abilities to successfully perform psychic functions have been tested for years before they were created within the AntiChrist.

Reporting Alters.

The construction of reporting alters is very straightforward behavior modification. For programming reporting alters, they use purpose fragment splits. In other words, these reporting alters are not given the full range and exposure to life, but they experience life from the vantage of their single purpose. Some therapists are reporting that they are converting reporting alters over by giving them ice cream. They are most likely only dealing with fronts. Since most therapists only deal with front alters, and front systems, these front reporting alters may even be set up so that these therapists think they have converted the reporting alters. The truth is that most of these reporting alters are fragments that don’t know what hunger is. All the ice cream in the world is going to mean anything to them. (Cisco will deal with these issues in her part of this book.) The point is simply, these are special purpose fragments who only see life from the vantage point of their little job.

Now we will explain what first and second stage reporting alters are, and then how they are created. Some of the first stage reporting alters are trained to respond to 3-taps, some to telephone calls, lights, and some to codes. The first stage alters are children from 6 to 10. In an Illuminati system there will be families of reporting alters. Every level ("section") will have at least one group (family) of reporting alters. The second stage reporting alters are also children from 6 to 10, and they are taught to want Daddy’s or Mommy’s love. Girl systems seek "Daddy" (the Master) and boy systems often seek "Mommy" (the Master). They are taught to talk about therapy issues, programming issues, and movements by the system. They are linked to the computers, and the eye of the computer. Just to hear "Daddy’s voice" is gratification to them.

At stage 1 of the creation of reporting alters, they are the result of the sensory deprivation tank, and are taken from the dissociated part of the mind that feels like it doesn’t have a body, or that it is nothing. Stage 1 Reporting-special-purpose fragments of the mind are painfully shocked in some sensory deprivation environment when the hear 3 taps. The pain ceases when they open the door. They continue to be locked in place in the mind and painfully shocked until they learn the lesson, which is that the pain stops when the door is opened. Over and over they are taught, THE PAIN STOPS WHEN THE DOOR IS OPENED. When they hear tapping they want the pain to stop (probably they abreact their previous tortures) and they open the door to stop the pain. They have only one job, stop the pain by opening the door when three taps (or whatever other trigger/code/signal they are programmed for.)

Stage 2 Reporting-special-purpose alters are given a fuller view of life. They are the watchers in the system. They were created under such horrible torture that they left the body and hover over the body. These are Out-of-Body alters. They are also placed in a fogged room, where they are taught to become one with the fog. They are also told ghost stories like Casper the Ghost. Through the combination of all these programming tactics and techniques, they learn to be invisible. They hover over their assigned position in the system, invisible to all the other alters of that section. These alters have excellent rapid recall. They have none of the Straw Man programming that Gatekeeper receive to make them think they are stupid.

To reinforce the programming, the reporting alters are always treated kindly when they obey. (If you get one that hasn’t been, suspect a plant, a setup.) Internal protector alters are given the job to insure that reporting alters never miss a call, or never miss responding to a cue. They will go to work and punish lax Stage 1 alters. Again, several therapists claim to have gotten reporting alters to defect from their jobs, but haven't dealt with their protector alters who are taskmasters. If the taskmasters haven't been dealt with, then suspect a ruse to get the therapist to think all is well. The reason this subject is dealt with here, is that some of the top well known therapists have spread information contrary to what is actually happening. That doesn't mean that there may not be an exception to the rule, but the Illuminati is not so stupid as to make reporting alters that defect because someone offered them an ice-cream cone.

Reporting alters are very hard to convert, because during their lifetime they are treated nicely. They experience a nice life if they behave (its the other alters that suffer.) The Stage 1 reporting alter merely says HELLO and waits for the response HELLO PRINCESS. This is a standard format. If the HELLO PRINCESS occurs, the mind automatically in a flash switches to the Stage 2 reporting alter.

To reinforce the original programming, which would lose its effect over time, the programmer hypnotically command the reporting alters to think of their programming when they see certain objects, for instance, certain types of men's clothing, animals, certain cigarettes or lighters, certain trees etc. Everyday life is used then to reinforce their programming. The Stage 1 alters are also trained to have back-up amnesia, where they forget what they have done after they have responded to the cue. Once the job is done, the job is forgotten. Like the Vol. 2 book reported, reporting alters can perceive themselves in various shapes and figures, and they can be locked up in eggs or other containers also. The Stage 2 alters look forward to Daddy or Mommy coming.

Cisco's system, which helped at the programming level, verifies that during the 50's, 60's, 70's and 80's none of the slaves got free. The Illuminati was not the least bit concerned about losing a slave. They had not lost a mind-controlled slave in centuries, so the recent victories in a few slaves getting their freedom in recent years are a historical first. Many therapist who make great therapeutic claims are not freeing their slaves at all, but these slaves continue to be used by their masters. The masters just laugh at the deceptions they have pulled over legitimate but naive therapists. Their reporting alters are a key to their control and they have numerous reporting alters in families spread throughout a standard reporting system. If one realizes that the same mentality that created Stalin's USSR, or that created Big Brother is at work here, you will realize that they need a spy-in-the-camp on every block so to speak. Everybody watches everyone. They make many spies within a system of alters. The reporting alters are given some script such as "You can diffuse from supersolidity to insubstance, you can grow big or small, and can change shape to any for you wish." This makes it easier for them to go through the internal system.

Repunzel alter.

In the internal Mother's of Darkness castle there is often a Repunzel alter created by the Repunzel story, who has magical hair and can change her size at will. She is not an Illuminati alter, even though she resides at their castle.

Transformation alters.

In Chapter 5, in the section on how Fantasia was used as a programming script, the fairy alters (creative parts of the child's mind) were discussed. The Illuminati also create magical alters that can transform other alters into objects. The script for this is Alice In Wonderland, although some newer scripts are also being used (like Xanth's sorceress Vadne). When an alter is changed into an object, it does so without losing its character. This is where cartoons have been helpful to lay the foundation for visualizing this. When one enters particular internal rooms one needs to pick up certain objects in the room to get through portals to the next world. What makes the internal world difficult is that it is set up to change its appearance. An alter may think they see one thing internally and then the scene totally shifts. An alter may look into a mirror and turn into a leaf.

Internal Wall alters.

Some alters will be made into walls. This is why is can be difficult to go around internal walls. These alters shift so that no one can get around them.

Structuring Internal Programmer Alters.

The procedure for the creation of Internal Programmer Alters is several steps. After the child victim has been traumatized they are sorely in need of love. Using a drug that gives a sense of peace and ectasy, along with hypnosis, certain parts of the system are bonded to the programmer. The child alters are told to forget the trauma and merge with the programmer. It's instinct to want to be loved, touched and comforted. This is repeated so that they feel the "peace of God" with their three primary abusers. Scriptures about the peace of God are used to reinforce this programming. These alters who feel one with the master programmer will form a cover group which will pacify any front alters who think negatively about the external programmer. These alters are in turn used to build the actual programmers. The actual programmers will be programmed to take on the characteristics of the master programmers and the Grand Dame working with them. These alters will be formed via split brain programming so they have only logic, no emotion. They can interact for years with the rest of the system and will feel no emotion for the hell and abuse that they put hundreds of other alters through. These controllers will stand behind the Grand Druid Council to insure that they carry out their function correctly.

STRUCTURING WITH THE GRAND DRUID COUNCIL.

In Illuminati mind-controlled slaves it is typical to place at the bottom of the system a pyramid shaped table with a crystal prism life force within the pyramid's center. Around this pyramid table are the Grand Druid Council and Satan hovers over the entire thing. Mirrors on both sides surround the pyramid. The Grand Druid Council can astrally project and attend rituals. There are cover Councils to throw the unapproved seeker off. In fact, every section within the slave may have a Grand Druid Council. These are not the computers, but function closely with the computers. When the life force dies it becomes black. The slave will told that the life force of the system is within the pyramid which is inside the Grand Druid Council's table. The pyramid will spin constantly from the energy of Lucifer, and the Grand Druid Council may well spin on their table in the opposite direction. Each position on the Grand Druid Council (GDC) is significant, because if determines what that Council person is allowed to do. (This is a mirror of real life.)

The type of programming and commands that a particular council person can carry out are determined by their position around the table. The no. 3 position has access to the center pyramid. Within the spinning pyramid are 3 programmer positions, one for each corner of the triangle. If only one programmer occupies all three positions you are dealing with a master programmer. Very often a system is programmed by lesser programmers, and the inner pyramid has more than one programmer inside the pyramid. If a group/ series of cult programmers is used, one may see them represented somewhere in the system by their cult names.

Growing through the Grand Druid Council's table will be the generational demonic roots of a tree. Tied up at the base of the tree entwined in the roots is the life force of a foetus that has been sacrificed to empower the slave's mind-control system, as well as connect the slave to people that he or she is teamed with. During occult ritual the foetus is eaten as a seed. The dead child is connected to the roots. Another child, the child who is connected to the memory of these rituals will also be connected to the root of the tree. This child alter will not be able to talk or scream because it is locked in the horrible memories of some humiliating ritual. This child alter may have things in its penis or rectum, it may be covered with filth, it's skin is bruised and tender. This may be the "core"--the birth child.

In male slaves, sometimes the birth child or a first core split called "the core" is placed in the tree roots rather than the carousel. Egg shaped demonic power bases will also be set in at the root of the tree. The core of some slaves will be removed to the astral plane. The Grand Druid Council will astral project to different spheres and different ceremonies. This gets into black magic such as the 777 book of Aleister Crowley touches on, where there are colors for each planet for astral projection.

While we are discussing the deeper parts to a system, let's discuss the compass. Each system has a compass built into it, that is incredibly important. The 4-demons (goddesses) which control the 4 directions are called Quarter-Regents. The Eastern one controls Wind & Air. The Northern one controls the elemental Earth. The Western one controls water realms. And the Southern one controls fire.

STRUCTURING THE SHADOW ALTERS

Alters which are created in the sensory deprivation tanks which have no sense of being attached to a body are used in clusters on each level (section or world) of an Illuminati system of alters. These alters are the ones who no one else can see because they have no body, and yet they are the shadows that know what's going on in the outside world. Every level has access to what is going on in the outside world through the eyes of these shadow alters, but many alters do not care. Nor will the shadow alters tell everyone on the level. These clusters of shadows are also chained together, so that a link exists between them. They have no sense of self. They sometimes serve as directors to guide the child slave. They may protect the child by telling it to get home, to call home, or to not be frightened it will be OK. They are also willing to mislead therapists.

STRUCTURING IN THE MIRRORS

One of the movies which was developed to help program in the internal mirrors was the movie "The Hungry Glass" made in the early '50s. Let's review The Hungry Glass movie so that those who aren't familiar with it, can see the programming elements of the movie. The movie is about a fictitious haunted mansion that was built near the sea by a rich man named Bellman. The mansion lays dormant for decades until a couple buy the mansion. The mansion and its window is described as "a jewel box to pull the silver off the sea."

When they move in they experience many strange things connected with mirrors and glass. In the Monarch programming, glass and mirrors are similar. Many of the mirrors in a system are really one-way windows. The following are some quotes from the movie:

· "mirrors bring a house to life"

· "I'm great at turning nightmares into daydreams."

· "don't know if I saw it.. .it's imagination playing tricks...never get it out of your system."

· "we're both suggestible to suggestion...

· "...saw something and imagined the rest.. .just plain fear. ..did I see something supernatural?"

· "If you want anything just scream."

· "Miracles can be done with concentration."

· I got the house in order with "spell, book and candle" which is a phrase referring to witchcraft.

· you "never grow old in the mirrors". When alters of a slave look in a mirror it happens just like in the movie, they see themselves as young, which is a strong hypnotic image they have been programmed to see.

What the movie shows is that it is lethal to break mirrors. And if you go through mirrors you fall to your death. The one woman as well as a little girl are curious about the mirrors and they are pulled into the mirrors and die. In other words, the programming message is don't be curious about the mirrors nor go into the mirrors. There are demons in the mirrors.

In the movie they use the word "bogeyman". The room of mirrors is locked, and the message of the movie is, don't open locked doors in your internal system. In the movie, when Gil looks in the mirror, he sees a protector of the mirrors. This in the programming is called the KEEPER OF THE MIRROR, and is a demonic entity or demons placed to protect the mirror. Things are layered and hidden in a system behind mirrors. It also gives the idea that if you look into a mirror, even if you are physically old, the mirror can lie and give you a youthful appearance.

Young actor William Shatner, of later Star Trek fame plays the leading role in the movie. He tries to rationally explain things but gives up, when explanations fail. This is encouraging the small slave who would see the movie to think, if an adult can't figure these things out rationally, then the explanations for what I am seeing during programming are supernatural. William Shatner was raised in Catholic Montreal, Quebec and went to McGill Univ. when Dr. White (Ewen Cameroon) was carrying out programming there. He graduated in 1952 and married Gloria Rand. He has acted in a number of strange movies designed for programming, and it appears they have used him repeatedly over the years as a tie in to familiarize the slave to him. He also acted in The World of Suzie Wong (1958), The Brothers Karamazov (1958), The Devil's Rain (1978), Teklords (1991). The

Hungry Glass was produced by William Freye, who also did some other movies for the Network. In some areas of a system, the script is that only the "dead"--alters who are so disconnected to their bodies they see themselves as spirits are allowed to cross between different internal worlds by using passwords such as "ELIADE". At other times, alters are given words to return to their "own time period" such as NICRO NECTRUM NECTO.

STRUCTURING THE TAPESTRY

A script is given for all standard Illuminati systems for an internal Sorceress to be assigned the making of tapestries. The tapestries enable alters to go into other worlds, in other words they are mirror gateways. For instance the sorceress may weave a door into the tapestry. Going into the mirror, going over the rainbow, going through walls or picture tapestries are ways that alters go from one world into another state.

STRUCTURING THE ALTER FAMILIES BY SPINNING

Spinning is used in a variety of programming purposes. We will review these together, so that a comparison can be made of the different purposes. Spinning tortures (which the victim endures while in drugged hypnotic states) are used extensively by the programmers as they construct alter systems. Programmed multiples will frequently complain of "spinning". All at once, whole sections of alters will begin spinning and getting dizzy. During such an abreaction, you will notice that the eyes change, the victim will appear disoriented and stare, or even grimace as if being rotated at a high speed. The head and/or body will rotate slightly during the abreaction.

During the programming of such a spin program, the programmer will lay in the experience for an entire section of alters, and attach the visual image of falling into an abyss, a cyclone, a tornado, a vortex, or a whirlwind to the memory of being spun. When a system goes into spinning the power of numerous memories, and the power of the dizzy spinning makes it difficult for much of anything. Certain alters trigger the spinning and certain alters maintain the spinning. In fact some spinning alters take pride in their spinning abilities. Obviously, their programmers commended them when they did their job correctly.

Another use of spin tortures is to create spin families. The spin torture creates spin alters which have been spun off a "parent" alter. The parent alter may later be age progressed hypnotically and given care over her children alters who she or he spun off during the torture. Spinning is a way of creating dissociation, and the spin memory dissociates the spin children alters from their original source alter. This creates alters which are close together internally, but dissociated. The spin training and memories are then used to teach these alters to spin away the pain. Spin alters are used for some of the worst abuse and the spinning sensation is used internally by these alters to dissociate the severe abuse they receive.

The actual mechanisms to do the spinning torture vary. Some are rotating tables, some are more upright like a Wheel of Fortune type wheel, or "Space trainer" type machine where the victim is inside the rotating mechanism. Flashing lights are used along with the spinning, so that flashing lights can be used in the future to cause the alter(s) to abreact the spinning sensation. Verbal triggers are also placed in. The spin kittens will actually physically go around when commanded. Certain alters will be trained to re-create mentally the sensations of spinning via enhance imagery and memory training. This is so that the system will be self-governing and self-propelled. The spin traumas may be used to help create the ring within ring, circle within a circle effect that is structured into so many systems.

Programs that are put in via Spin-based traumas or attached to spin-based traumas often affect wide areas of a system, rather than individual alters. For instance, if an area of the system is mis-behaving, a tornado program, or a tumbleweed program may be set off by the internal governing mechanisms and an entire world of alters will feel the program. Victims of mind-control often speak about walls full of different faces. The walls of faces are people who are in need of help. They are shown repeatedly to the victim, to solicit the emotion of wanting to run & rescue. This then is used as the cover program for alters for them to want to run back to the cult to "rescue" their "friends". Generally, all that will be experienced is the memory of walls of faces and the urge to run. Another element of programming, often seen in military programming, is where the victim is left in a totally dark room, and then for men, a hypnotic motherly voice is played repeatedly to them in the dark. For women, they may get their primary handler’s hypnotic voice.

More structures used to build a system

http://whale.to/b/sp/springmeier.html

p_7-2.jpg

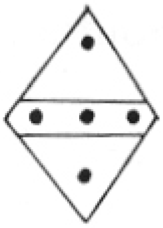

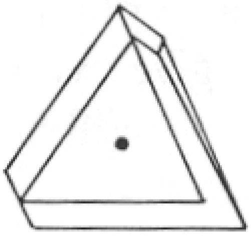

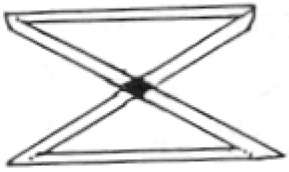

CHAPTER 8: THE SCIENCE OF BODY MANIPULATION & PROGRAMMING

Implants that manipulate the body and its functions have been discussed in Chapter 6. The body manipulating implants were placed there to keep all of the implant information intact in one chapter, even though some body manipulating implants are not electrically activated. When our previous book The Illuminati Formula Used to Create an Undetectable Total Mind Controlled Slave (1996) covered the 12 Sciences of mind-control, its chapter 8 on the manipulation of the human body did not cover the ancient secrets of cranial manipulation, nor the modern secrets of genetic mind manipulation via applications of radiation with chemicals.

A. CRANIAL MANIPULATION--Important Top Secrets of Illuminati Mind-control disguised as Muggings & other events.

INTRODUCTION

The information in this section exposes a previously unknown type of mind-control.

· The woman ran tripping through the woods, slipping on the wet leaves attacked by an unknown assailant for an unknown reason. The report of her mugging the next day never gets beyond the policeman who hears her story.

· A wife cries softly to herself as her husband beats her. The crime goes unnoticed in a busy world.

What do these acts of violence have in common with orthodontics, orthopedics, rolfing and other structural treatments? The shocking fact is that some of these kind of events happen for purposes of mind control. Any trauma to the head, be it an accidental fall, a fight, a bullet wound, or a motorcycle or car accident can cause permanent structural brain injury. But what passes for accidents are at times carefully designed & brilliantly executed cranial manipulations designed by the Illuminati to create specific mental and personality changes.

In order to get closer to the bottom of this type of mind-control, the author, Fritz, obtained the same books that cranial osteopaths study, and the same books that disclose the modern scientific studies of head shape/facial features in relation to personality, and then studied them. This author has tried to get as close as an outsider can get to understanding what a cranial-manipulating programmer has going on in his head. Until this chapter was published, the Illuminati's ability to perpetrate this mind control has been a complete secret. This is the first time that this secret has ever reached the public light of day. It is a secret known only to a handful of people in the world. It is a secret that various parts of Satan's realm have carefully guarded for centuries. How I got this secret is a long story. It is the confluence of many streams of research coming together. The people, who carry out this type of programming hate the God of the Holy Bible.

This art's academy's own literature speaks about "the Force". "The Mysterious Vital Force is a Universal Power of Intelligence present in all things." (Direct quote from the Cranial Academy's official newsletter). This is a Force similar to Jung's "Collective unconsciousness" and Star War's The Force. The God of the Universe, who loves each and every person in spite of their hatefulness & rejection, has also warned that all things will be revealed.

If I didn't write this, God would simply seek some other avenue to expose these hideous secrets. Who would have imagined that the Illuminati and a particular aspect of their mind control would end up to be connected to Transcendental Meditation, Kung Fu, modern Osteopathy, Theosophy and the Rosicrucians? None of us who research these groups are surprised that they are all tied together in the occult via the SPIN principle. However, you may be surprised by how they are also all affiliated to this form of mind control, which can be disguised as a typical mugging!

Even the Mafia are able to produce heartless criminal alters using cranial manipulation, and they don't have the best skills at doing it either. How do victims of cranial mind-control respond? Most victims follow the subtle guidance of their mind, completely ignorant of why their mind wants to go a particular direction. Some even attribute their mental drives to the metaphysical world. This author's hope is that the truth of this chapter will help restore free will to numerous victims of this secret mind-control technique. In spite of the extreme lack of information on this type of mind-control, it appears to have been more widely used than one might have guessed.

The benefit of this type of mind-control to the programmers is that a change in the body and head structure of a victim is permanent and undetectable, in contrast to hypnotic or drug induced states. A further benefit, is that a skilled person could be tampered with without their realization. Some of the procedures reduce the alertness of the subject, separate him from his memories and make the person more receptive to other forms of mind-control even if the subject has had no prior programming.

One example of a technique that causes a rapid adaption of the cranial bones with an accompanying neurological effect would be to flick the occiput posteriorly and inferiorly on exhalation (extension), then lift the vault (parietal) bones up from the temporal area on inhalation (flexion), then rapidly draw the vault posteriorly and inferiorly, then dislocate the sphenoid into a vertical or lateral strain position. These procedures will also speed up the appearance of aging. This is just one example of a quick procedure to control the mind of another. And as Cisco's section will bring out, power (including power over other humans) is the goal of the occult underworld.

A lot of research has gone into producing this finished report. At first glance, the polished nature of this chapter's report, which is replete with so many sources, may tend to mislead some people into thinking that this type of mind-control hasn't been secret. Quite to the contrary, the pieces of the puzzle were well hidden. This type of mind-control has been very secret and it is only the result of long hard research that the many divergent pieces of the puzzle have been assembled and placed into a coherent picture for the reader. Although the possibility exists that some may misapply the intent of this chapter and use this for evil, like so much of this book's material the really bad guys already have it. On the flip side, the potential for good, if medical science will use this secret knowledge for good is tremendous.

For instance, compare the improved appearance of Ivana Trump after her cranial work was done. This chapter has the potential positive by-product that others will be inspired to explore how cranial manipulation can be used to benefit humankind. God is in the business of turning evil into good. But perhaps in our fallen corrupted world, this secret knowledge which is being exposed in this chapter will no longer find good men worthy of this information who are also capable enough to put it to good practice. If so, then so be it. At the very least, some people will gain strength of heart to realize once again that when one know's how God's creation operates--it is easy to see how a paradise without problems could be created. Man's worst enemy is man. The Illuminati are sitting on technology and knowledge that could bring about almost a virtual paradise, but they are hoarding this technology and knowledge, and suppressing it. Further, rather than helping mankind, they are using this cranial knowledge to reward those who are friendly to their Luciferian hierarchy, and to abuse those who dare to seriously impede their agenda. After you read this chapter and are aware that the secrets of cranial manipulation could rescue children with cerebral palsy, and some of the children with Down syndrome, you too will cry with this author at the needless suffering that the Illuminati have perpetrated upon mankind in their quest for total domination of this globe.

CRANIAL BLOOD PRESSURE has been kept a SECRET

Recently, a Dr. Yoshiaki Omura in New York, discovered that the blood pressure in the brain is vastly different than the rest of the body. The blood pressure in the brain has major consequences on one's thinking (such as irritability, & insomnia) and also affects other things in the body, such as muscle tightness in the neck. High brain blood pressure is called cephalic hypotension syndrome. Yet, when this doctor went to see what the medical books/research institutions said about brain blood pressure, he found nothing. He has been making his discoveries known in speaking engagements. He recently addressed a large audience of Chinese doctors. When this author met Yoshiaki Omura, I unsuccessfully attempted to tell Yoshiaki the reason that this knowledge was suppressed was in the interest of mind-control; Dr. Omura has been treating various illnesses by working with patients' brain blood-pressure. The diagnosis of other problems, such as the early stages of cancer, has been done earlier by Omura by monitoring brain blood pressure levels than MRI tests results.

CEREBRAL SPINAL FLUID kept SECRET

Another important fluid in the brain, discovered by others is Cerebral spinal fluid. There are many technical details about this CS fluid that are extremely important to the way the mind-body functions. In this chapter, we will discuss a number of areas of medical science, acupuncture, personology etc. concerning the brain, which when known and used by skilled practitioners can give the practitioner control over another person.

The Mystery Schools and particular bloodlines have kept much of this knowledge to themselves and continue to keep the best secrets. Daniel Whiteside, a pioneer in behavior genetics and understanding the relationship of the shape of the skull to personality, provides some important confirmations of how the Mystery Schools transmitted this secret cranial knowledge.

In his important work "The Background of Structure/Function" (pp.2-3) he outlines that Structure/Function was studied and taught by the Greek Mystery Schools, and was the basis of the Roman Empire's psychology. The Catholic church suppressed this knowledge. This knowledge was kept alive by the Cabalistic philosophers and the Arabs, until the Knights Templars brought it back. If we build upon the information that Daniel has provided we discover that from the Knights Templars, this knowledge went to the leadership of the Prieure de Sion, who in turn disseminated low forms of it to the occult groups that they controlled. For instance, the Rosicrucian Order for North & South America in their Vol. 8 of their Rosicrucian Manual (San Jose, CA: Supreme Grand Lodge AMORC) pp. 91-108 deals with the spinal column, nerves, & the influence of color & music on the nervous system, etc. Grand Master Lewis writes on pg. 103, "The Rosicrucians were the first to have a complete outline of this system [nervous system] and to know exactly what part of the human body was connected with every other part."

One witness reported to this author that he watched an acupuncture specialist repeatedly work on clients' brains by inserting 3 long skinny needles through the skull. The acupuncture specialist bragged to this man that he could completely control a human via his skill with the needles. He showed this witness how he could kill pain, and how he could kill self-will by touching minute areas within the brain. He was also skilled in manipulating the mind of the client in other ways too with the needles.

There has been a great deal of research into determining what the different purposes of the different areas of the brain are. Several researchers have independently identified that the ability to make choices, that is what we call "free will", is located near the Broadman Area 24 in the Anterior Cingulate Sulcus. Tampering with this area can disturb a person's ability to have free will. (For more information on this one could begin with Crick, Francis. The Astonishing Hypothesis The Scientific Search for the Soul.)

Acupuncture was virtually unknown to mainstream Americans until a NY Times journalist in China reported that he was successfully treated with acupuncture in 1971. Pressure points can also be manipulated by Acupressure, which is similar to acupuncture except fingers rather than needles are used. This is just one example of a related technique which went unnoticed for decades (actually centuries by the Western World.)

The mugging-mind control information in this article has gone unnoticed by mainstream America too. Time Magazine, Nov. 4, 1991, reported that there are four types of alternative medicine, which they classified as Life-Style (such as Macrobiotics, Ayurvedic medicine, and holistic medicine), Botanical (such as Homeopathy, Herbalism, and Aromatherapy), Mental healings (such as with Crystals, Guided imagery, biofeedback and Hypnotherapy) and Manipulative/Hands-on (such as Reflexology, Rolfing, Shiatsu, Alexander tech., Chiropractic, and Acupressure & Acupuncture).

Reflexology dates back to at least 2330 B.C. in Egypt. Shiatsu is a Japanese finger pressure deep massage of pressure points is over 1,000 years old. The skull & head bone manipulations that are being exposed for the first time in this report, were used in ancient Egypt and other parts of the ancient world. That Nov., 91 Time Magazine article did not mention that acupressure/acupuncture has been knowledge that the secret societies in China studied and often kept hidden for centuries, as a part of Wushu (martial arts) in China.

For instance, in a recent Chinese book 72 Consummate Arts Secrets of the Shaolin Temple, (pub. by Fujian Science & Technology Pub. Co. Ltd., Fujian, China, 1990) by Wu Jiaming and translated by Rou Gang, diagrams and explanations are given of the important head/body points (for acupressure/ acupuncture/& kung fu.) What is important for our discussion on mind control are the Kung Fu (Wushu) points in the head. This book gives 4 points on the front of the head, seven on the side of the head, and four on the back side of the head. The Shaolin Buddhist monks have kept their martial arts (which is called "Kung-fu" in the U.S. and "Wushu" in China) a secret hidden within their temple on Song Mountain, Henan Province. This Buddhist monastery has a long history of teaching kung-fu and is exerting a big influence in the world as its type of kung fu spreads. The Japanese took kung-fu from the Chinese many years ago and then developed from it specialized forms of kung-fu, such as Karate, Judo, etc.

THE CHINESE SECRET OCCULT SOCIETY CONNECTION

The important item that this paragraph will emphasize is that the Chinese secret societies studied the pressure points on the skull completely. They learned how the skull could be manipulated and what it would do to a person. Of course this information was only revealed to the best Chinese kung-fu experts. It is sometimes referred to as the skill of bone setting. In China, bone-setters are a type of Chinese doctor which are popular to some Chinese. These bone-setters have kept their secrets within many generations of families who specialize in bone-setting and also within the secret Triad societies.

The Communist government admitted that it has failed to pry family bone-setting secrets from the families that have passed these secrets down generationally. This is due in part to the strong Chinese belief in ancestor worship and strong families. A family’s secrets are considered one source of its strength. One communist Chinese tactic to pry the secrets loose was their "folkart barefoot doctor" system which they hoped the bone-setters would join.

Junxie Li wrote in 1990 that a Chinese Kung Fu document shows that bone manipulation was practiced as early as 2700 B.C. The secrets have been passed down for many years. An American writer stated in 1983, "Traditional Chinese medicine and chiropractic are remarkably alike in their underlying theories...Through deep massage at the occiput [head bone], for example, (contemporary) Chinese practitioners find that they can bring down high blood pressure, a practice analogous to that of chiropractors."

A Buddhist monk Bodhidharma is credited to having brought the martial arts and healing arts associated with martial arts to China. He must have been a very strong individual to have made the 2,500 miles journey which back before there were paths or maps must have been more like an 8,000 miles of perilous journey on foot from India over the Himalayas to the Chinese interior. Bodhidharma had studied big cats, dogs, bears, insects and other animals to learn how they defend and attack. His physical, mental and spiritual teachings became known later as Zen Buddhism. His monastery became the famous Shaolin Monastery. A master of the Shaolin Monastery would have two dragons deeply branded into his flesh. It is said that the Red Dragon represented knowledge in ancient China.

In the Tang Dynasty (6 18-907 A.D.) some of the Kung Fu experts at that time were Li Bai and Twelfth Sister Li of the Li family. Madame Gong Sun and Twelfth Sister Li composed a famous Xihe Sword Dance combining martial arts and choreographic arts. The Li family kept some of their secret martial arts skills (including bone setting) secret for hundreds of years, and as a top Illuminati family are secretly proud of their occult knowledge and history.

To illustrate how the head has been studied are some quotes from 72 Consummate Arts Secrets of the Shaolin Temple,

"TAJYANG ACUPOINT (Sun Acupoint)

Located on both sides of the forehead, the left being Tai Yang and the right Tai Yin. Nowadays it is generally called Taiyang Acupoint being a vital part of the head. It is 'Dead Acupoint' among the twenty-four Acupoints. One will be faint or even die if it is slightly seized.

TAINRONG ACUPOINT

Located on the back of ears and is in parallel with the ear. It lies on the outer-side of Fen Yi Acupoint, and is above the Tian Chuang acupoint. It is a vital acupoint of the back of one's head. It is also a 'Dead Acupoint' among the twenty-four acupoints.

FENGFU ACUPOINT

Located in the centre of the low part of one's back head and is below the Naohu Acupoint but above the Yamen Acupoint. It's in parallel with the left and right FenYi Acupoint. It is a single Acupoint. It is a vital part of one's back brain. It is a 'Dead Acupoint', too. If this acupoint is seized, one may faint or die immediately."

Washu (Chinese Martial Arts) went underground into the Chinese occult secret societies, because the rulers feared that it would make the common people too powerful, so they frequently banned the teaching of martial arts. The teachers of Kung fu teach their pupils that Kung-Fu has both an external work with the hands, feet and body and an internal work which refers to the occult spiritual work that provides the energy and spirit to do the martial arts that Kung fu masters do.

The Shaolin Temple masters have studied the human skeleton very closely for centuries. The books Shaolin Long Fist Kung-Fu by Yang Jwing-Ming & Jeff Bolt and The Way of the Sun Dragon Chinese Martial Art of Tai-Yang Lung Tao are other examples of books in English which also show points to hit on the head. The art of manipulating the skull and other bones has travelled from the secret societies to about 20% of China's doctors. As mentioned, this skill is called "bone setting."

Some Kung Fu experts and Chinese doctors learn bone setting, including how to work with the skull bones. In 1974, the U.S. Dept. of Health, Education and Welfare (which has been full of New Agers) along with the Fogarty International Center of the National Institutes of Health which works with WHO of the U.N. set up a conference in Seattle, WA which focused on Health Care in China. The U.S. Government Printing Office then printed up in 1975 edited versions of the papers presented at the conference. The resulting book on Medicine in Chinese Cultures has some very pertinent information to the ancient secret Chinese art of manipulating skull bones. After W.W. II, Chinese bone setters began to use X-rays. (p. 261)

· The Chinese bone setters had their own professional associations. (p. 261-262)

· Bone-setters' societies have been interwoven with secret societies, the link being Chinese kung-fu (martial arts) which the secret societies control. "Bone-setters get their knowledge of anatomy from practicing kung-fu, for part of the instruction is in how the bones and muscles work." (p. 262.)

· Bone-setters, in order to practice in Hong Kong, generally find it advantageous to get (buy) protection from the Triads (Chinese Secret Societies controlled by the Li Illuminati family, as well as other powerful Chinese families.) Doctors are licensed in Hong Kong according to British standards and bone-setters have not received much recognition from the British government. But someone connected with the CIA verbally let out that they have been very interested in studying Chinese bone setting.

T'ai Chi, is the philosophy associated in China with the yin-yang. It is incorporated into the name T'ai Chi Chuan (Great Origin Fist) which are the calisthenics which many chinese practice on a daily basis. The advanced student learns 128 movements. Practitioners of the exercises can be seen exercising at dusk, especially in Kuala Lumpur. "Instruction in Chinese medicine is considered a normal part of the training to become a T'ai Chi instructor, and many instructors are said to be skilled in bone setting and the treatment of sprains and strains.

One of the most famous T'ai Chi instructors in Kuala Lumpur, an elderly man who received his training in China many years ago, is indeed famous locally as a bone-setter. It is clear that it is difficult to draw a line between T'ai Chi Chuan and preventive or even curative medicine." (Medicine In Chinese Cultures..., p.310 Bruce Lee, who came from a very wealthy branch of the Li family, was half Chinese and half American by blood. He grew up in Hong Kong, and was taught Chinese martial arts beginning at the age of 14. Bruce Lee came to America, and was very American in his thinking. Due to his American thinking, he thought radically different from the traditional Chinese martial arts mentality, and there is strong evidence to suggest it cost him his life. He not only exposed to the western world secrets of Chinese martial arts, but he mixed various types of moves from the various oriental schools of martial arts. For doing this, he made many of the Zen martial arts masters furious.

When Bruce Lee died at 32 in 1972, his body was like a teenager's and it was in great shape. Bruce Lee had no equal in the martial arts. The Chinese/Hong Kong press felt that he was killed by the Zen martial arts masters of China. In fact, his student Abdul described Bruce Lee as a "renegade Taoist Priest." Whether or not Bruce and his son Brandon were killed by the Triads and/or the Secret Martial Arts Societies of China, doesn't change the fact that Bruce Lee angered them for exposing their martial arts to the western world.

From research in this area, it is clear that there are still secrets kept by Chinese martial arts which only a few carefully chosen members of secret societies know. Bruce Lee did not make it to this inner circle. The inner groups of the secret societies trade favors. This is a standard method of payoff. Well trained martial arts cults that know some of the secrets of cranial manipulation can be asked to assault a human target. What happens if the head injury is not fine-tuned?

Laurence Miller Ph.d. in the article "Unusual Head Injury Syndromes..." (The Journal of Cognitive Rehabilitation 11-12/'94, p. 13) states, "Memory disorders are virtually universal in head injury and typically top the list of symptoms reported by patients. The 'standard' pattern of posttraumatic memory disorder - and indeed, for organic memory disorders generally - consists of well-preserved old memories, patchy or impaired memory for events immediately preceding the injury (retrograde amnesia) and following the injury (anterograde amnesia), and subsequent difficulty learning and retaining new information."

This is exactly opposite of what the handlers want. They want the victim to forget the past abuse, but be able to remember a series of new commands for a new operation precisely. This underscores the reason WHY the person doing the assault needs to be skilled. There is no doubt that Chinese martial arts are being used to mug people in order to alter their thinking. The secret potential of Chinese Martial Arts to alter a person's skull bones and thinking has been one secret worth killing to preserve. Miller also points out that frontal lobe injuries can weaken the subject's hold over reality. Although Miller writes about accidental injuries, his article is extremely well researched about the wide variety of mental problems that develop from different injuries. The medical world have named many of these specific problems such as the Ganser Syndrome, the Capgras Syndrome, & Cotard's Syndrome. While this kind of research is helpful to establish that different specific injuries to the head can create specific symptoms, the written material is not specific about how to intentionally create a symptom.

The ancient EGYPTIAN CONNECTION

Skull manipulation was used by the ancient Egyptian priesthood, as well as trauma-based mind-control, astral projection, and hypnosis. At least some of these secrets got passed on to later secret societies.

THE TIBETAN CONNECTION

One religious black magic group are the Tibetan monks. Their man-god Dalai Lama, is coveted as a guest of many of the top Illuminati, Mishpucka, and other occult figures around the world. In 1966, the Dalai Lama wrote the book Opening of the Wisdom-Eye, which is typically referred to as the third-eye area which is slated by the NWO to be the initiation site for the mark of the Beast. Many leading European occultists have gone to Tibet to learn from the black magicians of Tibet. Hitler imported hundreds of Tibetan monks for his Third Reich. Nazi expeditions were sent to Tibet; and in 1942, Hitler, because of his occult ideas about Asia & Tibet, was excited to plant a Nazi flag on the highest peak of the Caucasian mountains, Mt. Elbrus, at the specific time of 11 a.m.

For those who didn't realize how dark were the secrets of the Tibetan monks, just a small sampling of books on their black magic secrets include: David-Neels' Magic & Mystery in Tibet (1958), Bromage's Tibetan Yoga, Beyer’s The Cult of Tara- -Magic & Ritual in Tibet (1978), the Tibetan Book of the Dead (and commentaries about it), Suzuki’s The Zen Doctrine of No Mind (1973), and Thomas’ Out of This World to Forbidden Tibet (1954).

Qigong is the Chinese word for the healing arts taught within the secret schools of Martial Arts. Tibetans go to the S.W. National University in China to learn Qigong. Dapang Qigong is a derivative of Qigong where both martial arts and healing are taught together. One of the secrets of the Tibetan monks, is the physical manipulation of the third eye. T. Lobsang Rampa, a Tibetan from one of the 10 elite families of Tibet, at the age of seven entered the Chakpori Lamasery, the Temple of Tibetan Medicine, where the Tibetan masters taught healing arts including astral projection, clairvoyance and levitation.

Their mystic arts are similar to what the Illuminati believe in and practice. For instance, they learn about the silver cord that connects people. Upper-class boys such as Lobsang received extremely severe treatment from the time they were born to insure that they were tough enough to survive the harsh Tibetan life. Lobsang described the traumas of early boyhood as "brutal", but then adds on page 18 of his book The Third Eye, "Under this system weaklings did not survive, but those who did could survive almost anything." Children were kept awake eighteen hours a day, and worked hard during that time. Even very small babies are kept awake, so that according to Tibetan belief "they shall not become demon invested."

On Lobsang’s eighteenth birthday, the Lama of his monastery opened his third eye. Lobsang records the brutal ceremony in his book The Third Eye (Ballantine Books, 1956). Ballantine Books advertises on the cover of this book, "Learn the secrets of the most controversial power of the new age...The Third Eye"." Before this author relates what Lobsang "reveals" about this great secret of new age power, let me interject an informed opinion--this story may be a cover memory to hide what this author has found out is the REAL THIRD EYE manipulation. But first, let’s see what Lobsang describes, and then we’ll discuss it.

On the evening of his 18th birthday, Lobsang went to a little room in the monastery. Three lamas of high degrees came and bound his head tightly with an herbal compress to produce some kind of drug effect upon him. They came back and removed the herbal compress, and wiped his forehead clean. Then Lobsang describes, ‘A strong-looking lama sat behind me and took my head between his knees. The second lama opened a box and removed an instrument made of shining steel. It resembled a bradawi except that instead of having a round shaft this one was U-shaped, and in place of a point there were little teeth around the edge of the "U." For some moments the lama looked at the instrument, and then passed it through the flame of the lamp to sterilize it.

The Lama...took my hands and said, ‘This is quite painful, Lobsang, and it can only be done while you are fully conscious. It will not take very long, so try to keep as still as you can." I could see various instruments laid out, and a collection of herbal lotions, and I thought to myself: "Well, Lobsang, my boy, they will finish you one way or the other and there is nothing you can do about it--except keep quiet!" The lama with the instrument looked around to the others, and said, "All ready? Let us start now, the sun has just set."

He pressed the instrument to the centre of my forehead and rotated the handle. For a moment there was a sensation as if someone was pricking me with thorns. To me it seemed that time stood still. There was no particular pain as it penetrated the skin and flesh, but there was a little jolt as the end hit the bone. The pain was not sharp at all, just a pressure and a dull ache. I did not move with the Lama Mingyar Dondup looking on; I would rather have died than make a move or outcry. He had faith in me, as I in him, and I knew that what he did or said was right. He was watching most closely, with a little pucker of muscles in tension at the corners of his mouth. Suddenly there was a little scrunch and the instrument penetrated the bone. Instantly its motion was arrested by the very alert operator. He held the handle of the instrument firmly while the Lama ...passed him a very hard, very clean sliver of wood which had been treated by tire and herbs to make it as hard as steel. This sliver was inserted in the "U’ of the instrument and slid down so that it just entered the hole in my head. The lama operating moved slightly to one side so that the Lama Mingyar Dondup could also stand in front of me. Then, at a nod from the latter, the operator, with infinite caution, slid the sliver farther and farther. Suddenly I felt a stinging, tickling sensation apparently in the bridge of my nose. It subsided, and I became apparently aware of subtle scents which I could not identify. That, too, passed away and was replaced by a feeling as if I was pushing, or being pushed, against a resilient veil.

Suddenly there was a blinding flash, and at that instant the Lama Mingyar Dondup said "Stop!". For a moment the pain was intense, like a searing white flame. It diminished, died and was replaced by spirals of colour, and globules of incandescent smoke. The metal instrument was carefully removed. The sliver of wood remained, it would stay in place for two or three weeks and until it was removed I would have to stay in this little room almost in darkness. No one would see me except these three lamas, who would continue my instruction day by day. Until the sliver was removed I would have only the barest necessities to eat and drink." As the projecting sliver was being bound in place so that it could not move, the Lama Mingyar Dondup turned to me and said, "You are now one of us, Lobsang. For the rest of your life you will see people as they are and not as they pretend to be."

ANOTHER EXAMPLE

Bill Schnoebelen, who has publicly been exposing Satanism, writes about his experiences as a vampire and Satanist in several books. In his book, Lucifer Dethroned, he describes a third eye experience that he had during an "astral projection." "It seemed my eyeballs were turning to molten steel. My forehead was about to explode. I felt a claw tear into my brow, right between but slightly above my eyebrows and insert itself into my brain like a white-hot poker. I tried to scream, but could not. My entire body felt like it was going to burst from being filled with roaring, flaming hot light....I felt like a fish on the end of a hook being hauled out of the water by my very brain. I screamed in pain, but it came out: ‘Glory and Love for Lucifer! Hatred! Hatred! Hatred! to God be accursed!...’

In order to interpret his third eye experience, it needs to be asked where is Bill Schnoebolen coming from? This author’s best evidence to answer that comes from personal testimony. People familiar with this author (Fritz) have contacted Schnoebolen about Fritz for years. Why has Bill Schnoebelen taken a very cold attitude to this chapter’s author (Fritz) and his work? Why has he opposed and slandered this author, and this author’s work like the Vol. 2 book, and other information that this author has been putting out to expose Illuminati mind-control since 1991. One would expect a genuine ex-Satanist to be supportive of someone who risks his life to rescue Satanists from bondage. The reason I introduce personal testimony is that I know what side of things I am on, which is God’s side, and when people like Bill Schnoebolen oppose me from the get-go, without even meeting me, it is solid evidence to me where they are coming from. From what Schnoebolen writes about his third eye experience, and from what this author has learned of third eye cranial manipulation, it appears that Bill is still under some cult deception and is very likely still under the mind-control that placed his cover memory of his third-eye experience into him.

It is very likely that both Lobsang and Bill were in a trance state induced by drugs, hypnosis and dissociation from pain, and that a screen memory was laid in on top of their sensory experience to hide the manipulation of certain midline bones such as the ethmoid, vomer, sphenoid, etc. The sensation produced by the "third eye" cranial manipulation is unforgettable, it feels like something is moving straight into your skull through the frontal bone of the forehead, and then penetrating deeply into the center of the head. In order to preserve their cranial secrets, the occult world has cleverly fabricated these kind of dramatic cover stories. What they are doing is improving the alignment of the ethmoid bone, which makes a person more sensitive to the environment, which will be perceived by some as improving one’s psychic abilities. (As a final note, when this author met with Bill, Bill’s view towards helping MPD was that it was demons that needed to be delivered. One of his supposed deliverance success stories, an Illuminati victim of mind-control, is still a multiple and still a double agent, and also actively working against this author’s work. Bill personally told this author, that while he was a Satanist & vampire he was offered to have a mind-controlled slave, but that he turned the opportunity down. Bill is not the only person publicly exposing the occult/NWO who has over the years tried to prevent this author’s information from getting to you.)

The third eye area, called the ethmoid, is physically manipulated by the monks for mind-control purposes. In the occult world, the third eye area actually extends to include the entire midline area, not just the ethmoid, but also the midline bones, and the related brain structures, especially the pineal gland. Midline bones are interesting to occultists, because the main endocrine and neurologic structures in the brain are placed around the central 3rd and 4th ventricular areas. (The first two ventricles, known as the lateral ventricles, repose on either side of the third.) The bones are one way to access these midline structures. the ethmoid is the front-most midline bone (behind the frontal, which is considered to be two bones; since in many people the metopic suture does not close). The ethmoid interfaces with other midline bones.

In the course of this book, the reader is introduced to the concept that the human brain is actually 7 brains. The 4th or mid brain that lies between the upper 3 brains and the lower three and functions as a crossroads, joins with the optic thalamus, which forms the floor of the 3rd ventricle. The ceiling of the 4th brain is the floor of the 3rd ventricle. The 3rd ventricle and the Cave of Brahma make up the 5th brain. The 5th brain is connected to the cerebral hemispheres of the Cerebrum and is critical to creating concepts and storing abstract concepts. It feeds on ideas, and reflects. (Marijuana activates this brain, and it is common knowledge among mind-control handlers that marijuana is forbidden to slaves.)

The roof the 5th brain is formed by the choroid plexus. At the front is the pituitary and at the rear the pineal gland, both exceptionally important to perception. The peptides (called enkephalins) that trigger intuitive awareness of what the 6th brain is perceiving, come from the pituitary into the Cave of Brahma. Can the reader now see why cranial manipulation that influences this area will affect our intuitive awareness?

Cranial Osteopath Ronald R. McCatty's book Craniosacral Osteopathy discusses the pineal body and pituitary gland from pp. 78 to 86. A discussion of the techniques to influence these bodies is beyond the scope of this chapter, but there are procedures. McCatty is very skilled, but he still has a ways to go to match the skills of the inner group that does mind-control. His page 25 also discusses a direct adjustment on the Pineal body via arm rotations and breathing. The occult world's physical manipulation of this third eye area can enhance a person's sensitivity. (It works off of straightforward body/brain mechanics, not the spirit world). It makes the subject feel that he is more telepathic. This is one of their big secrets. This secret was passed on the Gurdjieff, who went to Tibet to learn their secrets. Gurdjieffs communities, which this author has been investigating have a very good appearance to them, but there are lots of dark secrets within these communities, which indicate that drug use and mind-control are going on amongst them.

One of the mind-control techniques used is physical manipulation of the third-eye area of the skull. In fact, a number of cranial osteopaths (such as Cranial Osteopath and Rosicrucian Robert Fulford) have thanked Gurdjieff for enlightening them about how to do cranial manipulation. Some of what the occult says about the third eye is simply cover stories to hide some of the bigger secrets. It is not known to this author if Fulford can do a third eye manipulation. (In this exposure of cranial manipulation, R.C. Fulford is of interest to us due to his impact upon the course Cranial Osteopathy took, rather than his skill. W.G. Sutherland, the leader in Cranial Osteopathy had several Rosicrucians and other occultists as early students. After his death, three of these took Cranial Osteopathy in a more occult direction than Sutherland was going. Anne Wales, as Sutherland's editor & compiler, the person who took over his papers, also reviewed the papers of other cranial doctors, making sure she gave them all as much of a mystical twist as she could add to them. Olive Stretch was the second of the three and she and her husband ran the Cranial Academy from their living room. Upon Olive's death, her husband married Fulford's secretary of sixteen years, who in turn continued to run things when he died. Fulford, who is now in his '90s, did occult philosophizing, and some believe programming, but didn't develop the skill needed for entrance into the inner core of high level cranial knowledge.)

Rosicrucian Cranial Osteopath Robert Fulford also met Tibetans to learn what he could from the Tibetans. He became the President of the Osteopathy Cranial Association. He gives interesting talks, and writes about the Odic Force and the Vril (the light that the Nazis believed in), but it is not clear that Fulford, who is retired in Ohio, learned any deep secrets of manipulation.

However, Gurdjieff is not the only one who learned from the Orient. Cranial Osteopath Ronald Kurylowicz, of 754 Washington Blvd, Marina Del Rey, CA who is single and lives with his mother who serves as his secretary, made a special effort to learn what he could from the Chinese over a period of years, with what appears as a clear intent to use it for mind-control and malevolent purposes. The cranial group has long had an international effort to teach and proselytize worldwide. Much of this seems to be a sincere effort to spread the benefits of cranial knowledge allowed to the public. (This knowledge is often released only for substantial fees.)

When the inner core of cranial manipulation has travelled to learn from other cultures, China has been the primary focus. While in China, the inner core of cranial manipulation, who use it for mind-control, have met with their Chinese counterparts to negotiate occult relationships. Top level Theosophists have accompanied the inner core on their trips to China. In 1950, Gurdjieff came out with Beelzebub's Tales to His Grandson Vol. 1-3. IDHHB Inc. published in 1978 some of the secret talks that Gurdjieff had with a special group of disciples. The point is simply that Gurdjieff was willing to go to the occult world of black magicians to get some of his enlightenment, and one of the techniques he learned was the manipulation of the mind via physical manipulation of the "third eye area". One of Gurdjieff’s big disciples in New England passed on to the cranial osteopaths manipulation secrets that Gurdjieff learned in Tibet. Gurdjieff is even more mysterious, when one realizes that he an asset of Russian and British intelligence.

This raises the obvious question, what were the Nazi’s able to learn about skull manipulation from the Tibetans, the Japanese secret societies, and European occultism? It is known that the Nazi’s carried out experimentation on skull manipulation. (Some of the records pertaining to Nazi human experiments are stored in the U.S. National Archives, incl. National Archives Record Group 238, the Collection of W.W.II War Crimes Records, the OSS’s reports in Record Group 226, the Dept. of State records in National Archives Record Group 59, and Group 242. But it must be borne in mind that much of the records of Nazi experiments were confiscated and remained secret so that our government could continue the research. We see only glimpses of this research in such things as the SS skeleton collection, written about in SS letters used as Nuernberg Trial Doc. No.s 87, 88, 91. Prof. Hirt at the Strassburg Anatomical Institute received 150 Jewish skeletons for research according to a secret SS document, marked Exhibit no. 086. One thing is clear, there was no limitation for Nazi researchers as to what they could experiment on with human beings. Could the idea/chance to research in skull manipulation for purposes of mind-control have escaped those Nazi researchers who were steeped in phrenology and horse breeding?)

What did the Nazi’s learn, and what did their mind-control experts such as Joseph Mengele pass on to American mind-control programmers, or is it possible the subtleties of cranial bone manipulation somehow escaped them? The practice of bone-setting in Germany had been known as Knochenartz, Knocheneinrichter, and Wundart. In recent history, Germany has a large number of cranial osteopaths who purchase lots of American books on the cranial osteopathy. It’s this author’s opinion, that the total mind-control of NWO slaves being implemented in the Black Forest castles, Strasburg, Frankfurt, Berlin, and hundreds of other German sites includes cranial manipulation. However, in terms of Germany, this remains to be proven. In America, there is no doubt, for we have the victims (and photographic proof) to prove it.

Osteopathy is not "politically correct" within Germany’s medical establishment. Most Germans, who purchase cranial books, are occultists (usually variations on Theosophy) and not people with medical or manipulative training. Europeans tend to be much more specialists in their professions than Americans. They don’t tend to have as many people/per population practice a particular skill as America, but the ones who do are often very skilled. (This is an observation this author has heard frequently during his world-wide travels, and has also observed for himself.) For instance, in visiting Switzerland, this author learned that if a person wants to build a house he will have no option but to bring in specialists for the different tasks, while in America, it’s not unusual for people to attempt building their own. This European approach of encouraging only very skilled specialists would also apply to cranial manipulation. We would expect a few very highly technical, skilled skull manipulators, and many curious entry-level folks.

THE JAPANESE CONNECTION

The ninjitsu people (popularly known as "the ninja" in America) were historically black magicians who hired out as assassins, and were feared and hated by all the Japanese people. They are now being held out as role models for our American children. The ninja learned how to dissociate pain. They learned martial arts and the art of stealth. According to the book The Karate Dojo by Peter Urban, "They were the original practitioners of the ‘art of [mind-control] programming.’ They were taught from the cradle that nothing was impossible. Not knowing that a thing could not be done, they proceeded to do it." It is possible that the Green Dragon Society of Japan passed on some of this mind-control training techniques to the German secret societies that were in cooperation with them prior to and during W.W. II. In other words, Dr. Mengele, the Nazi Angel of Death who carried out mind-control experiments for the Nazi’s (& the Illuminati) during W.W. II may have attempted to incorporate Chinese, Tibetan, Japanese, Ancient Egyptian and Hindu mind-control techniques into their mind-control programming/research.

THE EARLY EUROPEAN OCCULT CONNECTION

Information pertaining to this has been floating around Europe in certain circles for years. We will touch on some of the various times and places that we know parts of cranial manipulation to alter the mind was being done. Over the centuries skilled horsemen learned that they could tell the temperament of a horse from the shape of its head. The best books on horse training would have sections on determining what your horse's temperament was based on skull shape.

The Celts were big on bone-setting. Wales has continued to preserve some of this Celtic enthusiasm. A rare book The Art of The Bone-Setter by George Matthews Bennett (London, Tho Murby publ., 1884) gives an excellent history of bone-setters in England, Wales and Scotland. It is likely that some of these men understood some things about how personality could be affected via bone manipulation in the skull.

George Matthews Bennett was a Freemason and a Druid. He was also a leading bone-setter in London, Stratford and other places. He was a descendent of the famous occult Matthews family, which had practiced bone-setting for two hundred years. His son, who also did bone-setting, was the last of that line to practice bone-setting. The skill (professional art) of bone-setting passed down in families for generations was not the equivalent of modern osteopathy.

Osteopathy had many different ideas and approaches, even though the two are similar. One of the early English books on bone-setting was The Compleat Bone-setter by Friar Moulton. In 1665, the book was enlarged by Robert Turner (an occultist/astrologer) and printed in England. In 1871, Dr. Wharton Hood wrote another publication on bone-setting in England entitled A Treatise on Bone Setting. But most of the skill of bone-setting in England was passed down as family secrets within a few bloodlines that practiced it for generations, such as the Thomases, the Taylors of Lancashire, the Maltby's of Nottingham, the Masons of Lincolnshire, the Huttons of Westmorland (& later of London), the Crowthers of Yorkshire, and the Matthews of the Midlands. (This list occurs in the book Medical Fringe & Medical Orthodoxy 1750-1850 edited by Bynum and Porter, pub. London: Croom Helm Ltd., 1987, p. 170, note 10.) Much about bone-setting in Europe, will remain secret, because so much was taught orally and shrouded in mystery. About a dozen British bloodlines passed their trade secrets down, a number of them were Welch. However, there were also many itinerant quacks who travelled around billing themselves as bone-setters.

NINETEENTH CENTURY OCCULT CONNECTION

Bone-setter Richard Hutton gained notoriety in London in the 1800's when he relieved the long-standing suffering of the Hon. Spencer Ponsonby. Hugh Owen Thomas, (1848-?) who was a qualified doctor, used what he knew from coming from a long traditional line of bone-setters to create modern fracture theory. His nephew, Sir Robert Jones (1857-1933) who was his apprentice, was the major ambassador for modern orthopaedic medical practices. In other words, some of the knowledge of the bone-setters contributed to modern established medical knowledge.

Charles Waterton, an English naturalist in old England, wrote in his Wanderings and Essays on Natural History that every nation in Europe had bone-setters, who were independent of the surgeons. Throughout Europe, the men and women who practiced bone-setting learned the skill from others and as a result of experience. The skill was not a text-book-learned skill, but an art that was taught via hands-on training. Many of the bone-setters never formally studied anatomy, pathology, or surgery. (See The Art of the Bone-Setter, p. 96.) Hand-in-hand with bone setting came ideas on the importance of the shape of the skull. In 1695, Balthazar Bekkar of London wrote, "Physiognomy, that is...the Observation of a Man's Shape, must be comprehended under this sort [occult arts], for this Art foretells things by the Looks, the Features and Lineaments of the Face, by which the Genius and Humour of Men are to be discovered." (This comes from book one of a four book series The World Bewitched; An Examination of the Common Opinions Concerning Spirits. London: R. Baldwin, 1695, vol. 1, p.30.)

THE WITCHCRAFT CONNECTION

Throughout the world, people have practiced bone manipulation. The names for folk bone-setting throughout the world of course vary from language to language. In Tahiti it was called "romy" or "rumi". In South America, it was called "abrazo del ranchero". In Bohemia it was called "napravit." In Mexico, it's been called "arreglador de huesos", and in France "reboutage." The Amish call it "Brauche", and some of their bone-setters practice folk witchcraft. (This is known from the author's own experience as an Amishman.) Bone-setting has often been associated with folk healing and the occult.

Contrary to what is politically correct today, witchcraft was not a group of poor innocent women chased by a malicious Christian society, but was a well-organized body which was a repository for the occult knowledge of Babylon, Egypt and Rome. Ex-Illuminati members have described (to this author) the ancient manuscripts of knowledge preserved in secrecy by the Illuminati down through the ages. The permission of the Grand Druid Council is needed for some Illuminati books. Illuminati members are only allowed to see certain manuscripts, if they are achieving a mastery in that field of secret knowledge.

In the middle ages, knowledge was dispensed through secret trade guilds, fraternities and bloodlines. The ancient healing/and harming secrets of the human body were secrets of the fraternal secret societies, i.e. what is known today as the Illuminati. Witches could accomplish either a healing or a harmful manipulation of the body without anyone knowing what had happened, because their arts were secret techniques that outsiders couldn't recognize.

Secret medical and psychological knowledge was hidden by lots of cover mystical claptrap, which made the real secrets elusive to outsiders. Witches were accused of witchcraft when the harmful results of what they did were noticed, but the people had little idea of the mechanics of what hit them. Some of the trials of witches during the late middle ages were legitimate grievances, even though the ancient trial records (by today's standards) contain no legitimate evidence of modus operandi. We are not in a position to judge their trials by our standards of evidence.

Throughout most history, the doctor-priest or the medicine man-shaman kept his health secrets to himself as occult/arcane /esoteric knowledge to pass to his chosen successors. Even today, our modern day equivalents for the medicine man & shaman --our doctors & priests are still popular careers for transgenerational pagans. And as this chapter is pointing out, there are still secrets.

The Mystery Religions of Europe studied the human head and body. One of Jacob Boehme's disciples portrayed the Hindu chakra points back in 1736 in his Theosophia Practica. The results of tortures during ancient and medieval times upon the bodies & skulls of people was also known to a few. A relationship appears to exist between bone-setting and witchcraft, in that wherever witchcraft was strongest in England, one also discovers an abundance of bonesetters. An advance knowledge of anatomy was needed to devise the tortures used in Europe by those who were in power. It was not uncommon historically for doctors & bonesetters to provide advice for torture devices. For instance, Dr. Guillotin, a French doctor & Freemason, invented the guillotine.

There are plenty of evidences of occult involvement in the torture of people over the centuries, (even though it is politically correct to blame it on Christians). At this point it is safe to say that there was some overlap between bone-setting, witchcraft, and those who made an occupation as torturers for the state, but the complete details are not available. Some families have traditionally been involved in torture, perhaps at some point those family secrets will surface. Hands of Glory of hanged men were used as health charms. Corpses & moss from skulls, were also thought to have healing powers.

Freemason/Druid/ Bone-setter George Matthews Bennett writes, "In the North of England, the origin of nearly all the men who are fairly good at Bone-setting can be traced to the Whitworth surgery, and while, so far as I know, the Taylors, in their various settlements at Whitworth, Todmorden, Stockwood, and Oldfield-lane, were the only qualified surgeons who practiced Bone-setting; amongst the hills and dales of Lancashire, Yorkshire, and the Lake district, there were many who did so without being qualified." (The Art of the Bone-setter, p. 106) Whether these Taylors were any relation to those Taylors today within the Illuminati, is not known.

Phrenology was very respected during the 19th century. Queen Victoria consulted the top phrenologist. Interest in Phrenology led Europeans to research what the functions of the brain are, & how the brain functions. Phrenologists Johann Gaspar Spurzheim and Scotsman George Combe "realized the potentiality to manipulate and control human behaviour" via their knowledge of the skull and brain. (Cooter, Cultural Meaning of Popular Science, p. 6) The writings of these men resulted in phrenological societies and publications springing up all over the U.S. and Great Britain.

Franz Joseph Gall, was an expert on the anatomy of the brain, having spent his life studying it. Encyclopedia Britannica says F.J. Gall was a "brain anatomist of considerable ability". (Ency. Brit., 15th ed., vol.26, p. 327) In

1800, Franz Joseph Gall, advocated to medical science that the shape of the skull was a guide to an individual's mental faculties and character traits. Based upon this, other researchers such as Pierre Flourens undertook experiments on animals to determine more exactly the functions of the various parts of the brain. Various men contributed ideas.

Leopold Auenbrugger discovered percussion to determine a fluid level. He applied his discovery of tapping his father's casks to gauge the level of fluid content to the body.

Fire In The Minds of Men, by James H. Billington a leading historian, is an excellent survey of how the French Revolution and subsequent revolutions were created by a small group of leading occultists. Utopian socialists, who embraced the occult ideal of a "revolving back to the Golden Age" helped promote the idea of phrenology at the important Paris Athenee, where debates were organized concerning the psychology of personality, physiognomy, and phrenology. (For those readers who haven't kept up with other written works of this author, the Illuminati when America was discovered believed that they historically had came from Atlantis, and that a new Atlantis could be constructed in the new world. The revolution of the United States was the first war in history called a "revolution", and it was called a revolution because it and subsequent revolutions were to revolve us back to the Golden Age of Atlantis. They named the ocean to reach their new Atlantis, the Atlantic Ocean.)

Charleston, S.C. was a major hub for the Scottish Rite and for Reformed Judaism, both which were interlocked and used the Cabala. The main goal of the Cabala is to create a mind-controlled slave called a golem. The main principle behind Freemasonry according to Albert Pike, who was the Supreme Commander of Freemasonry in Charleston, S.C. has been the cabala. This makes it easier to understand why Freemasonry has been involved in the creation of mind-controlled slaves.

It also makes it more understandable why hypnotism (called mesmerism) along with phrenology was introduced into Charleston, SC about 1830. After the occult world introduced phrenology coupled with hypnotism to Charleston, it was also introduced by the Frenchman Charles Poyen to Rhode Is. Brown University. The entire faculty was so astonished at the power of hypnotism, that they concluded that mesmerism was a more important science than phrenology.

Initially, the elite in Charleston were interested in hypnotism (called mesmerism) combined with phrenology. The craze spread to the common people, and hypnotism was the subject of a famous intellectual debate in Charleston in 1843. Phrenology, which was a science tied to Rosicrucianism, lost favor in the south, due to the large participation of phrenologists (Rosicrucians) in the abolition movement. The Abolitionist movement was created in the U.S. by the Illuminati via the Rosicrucian groups, as well as Unitarians and Socialists who were also tied to them. For instance, Rosicrucian/ Phrenologist William Lloyd Garrison started the Anti-slavery Society in 1832. Three other notable Rosicrucian abolitionists are John Brown, George Lippard, and Abraham Lincoln. John Brown, besides being a Rosicrucian, revolutionist and abolitionist, was a practicing phrenologist. He had been trained by Fowler and Wells, who promoted the Vegetarian City that A. Still visited.

Many of the Illuminati and leading European occultists, incl. men such as Charles Taze Russell (founder of the WT Society) and Joseph Smith, Jr. (founder of the LDS Mormon church) were students of phrenology. Interestingly, Joseph Smith, Jr. on Jan. 5, 1841 had a revelation that phrenology was an occult science from "the Devil". (Smith's words are recorded in The Words of Joseph Smith: The Contemporary Accounts of the Nauvoo discourses of the Prophet Joseph. Provo, UT: Brigham Young Univ. Religious Studies Center, 1980, p. 61.) And yet he continued studying phrenology, and endorsing phrenology to the "Latter-day Saints" (Mormons).

Quite a number of the Mormon prophets (the top leader) such as Brigham Young, Wilford Woodruff, and George A. Smith got phrenological readings done of their skulls. The Mormon church sold phrenology books and even printed a phrenology magazine in Salt Lake City for a while, which was entitled The Character Builder from the 1870's until into the 1940's. George Reynolds, First Presidency secretary and later President of the LDS Seventies (a group of men like the catholic cardinals) considered phrenological readings as valid as the patriarchal blessings that the LDS church gives to its members.

Since the Mormon church is one of the Illuminati fronts carrying out mind-control, it should come as no surprise that attempts to control the human mind by manipulation of the shape of the skull have been attempted.

Interestingly, official church interest in phrenology by the Mormon hierarchy died out during the time period (1940's) that mind-control began to be scientifically carried out by the Illuminati in cooperation with different government front. Could it be that there was a grain of powerful truth in phrenology that these people wanted quietly buried?

Swendenborg, the founder of a mystical Masonic Rite, spent a great deal of time and some of his writing discussing the skull bones. This author has encountered victims of trauma-based total mind-control within the modern Swendenborg Church of New Jerusalem. Occult students of Swendenborg, including some of the Illuminati, such as some in the DuPont family, studied his ideas with fervour. (The DuPonts appear to be connected to at least one cranial osteopath.) (Because the Church of New Jerusalem does not tell the public nor its members about Swedenborg being a Freemason, etc. it would be advantageous to briefly identify to the reader who he was. Swedenborg wrote, "I live, besides, on terms of familiarity and friendship with all the bishops of my country, who are ten in number; as also with the sixteen senators, and the rest of nobility. The king and queen also, and the three princes, their sons, show me much favor." Swedenborg, born to a well-connected elite Swedish family, was a genius who wrote an incredible amount of spiritual writings that he believed came from alien encounters. His "alien" material in his Earths in the Universe is blatantly baloney, but at that time, people had no concept of what they'd find in outer space. The "aliens" even gave him the wrong number of planets in our solar system, 9. Swedenborg wrote that Saturn is "the farthest [planet] from the sun". He was certain of this and other ideas because of what the aliens had told him.

He also communicated with spirits. Masonic encyclopedias state that many of his ideas were Masonic. In Masonry Defined (publ. by National Masonic Press, a book based on 33° Freemason / Masonic historian Mackey's notes), their article on Emanuel Swedenborg states, "enlightened Masons will find many Masonic ideas in Swedenborg's writings." In the Be Wise As Serpents book, this author documents the interlocking directorates that control the top level secret societies. The Masonic Rite of Swedenborg with its 8 degrees and two "temples"-which means "sub-rites"- has had some of the worst Satanists as its leadership.)

In spite of the ridicule of the various ideas about determining personality from the shape of the body and head, Ency. Brit. 15th ed. Vol. 25, p. 497 admits, "Nevertheless, structural differences in the body do seem to have some significance in pointing to such aspects of personality as intelligence and emotion." The 18th and 19th century researchers were onto something, they didn't manage to finish the job. The Nazi government, and other governments have secretly tried to finish that job. Unfortunately, it may be a long time before we learn exactly how they finished this line of research. So far, the only recipients of the 20th century research findings have been a few select people within the occult world.

An interesting story involving personality change due to changes in the skull and brain was the landmark patient Phineas Gage, who died in 1861, after an accident caused him to damage the brain's ability to make rational decisions and to process emotions. Recently, new research was performed on Phineas Gage's skull to understand better how his brain had been affected by an accident. (See Science, May 20, 1994, p. 1102)

Another example of how the shape of the skull and the movement of skull bones determines how the brain functions are the craniectomies that are now being carried out to relieve infants from mental imbecility due to premature skull sutural closure and microcephalus. (See The Journal of the American Medical Association JAMA, Jan. 8, 1992, p. 226.) Further, researchers into how the brain creates thoughts, who desire to remain confidential, have come to believe that the ionic crystalline structure within the cranium's 5 cranial bone plates: the occipital bone, the two Parietal bones and the two frontal skull bones which connect at fontanellas (fissures) called sutures play an important role in the creation of thoughts. They believe that the ionic crystalline structures of the skull bones interact with incoming theta waves from the brain, and a resonance is created that causes electrons to be generated, which are then translated via a Fourier-type translation into a thought.

You are probably aware that it is the grey matter that lies next to the skull that carries out the higher level thinking that distinguishes humans from animals. These researchers have stated that they believe that the fontanellas (connections between the skull plates) allow subtle lateral motions and non-linear complex vibrations to occur. These vibrations are part of the higher thinking process. If this is true, it could have far ranging ramifications.

These researchers believe the natural resonant vibrational frequency of the skull bones (the cranium) ranges from 840 to 890 MHz in non-herzian waves. This range was reserved for VHF television, but has now been reserved for the national cellular telephone network. When the 840 to 890 range was used for television, various neurologists noted that certain signals related to particular pitches and sounds would trigger reactions in people. For instance, the NY Times 7/11/91 reported that according to a neurologist an epileptic seizure was triggered via certain television signals. Cellular phones are now being used to transmit faxes, computer information such as modems transmit, and other signals. Illuminati connected companies of IBM, Motorola, and GE are some of the companies working with cellular phone technology. The creation of vibrations via cellular phone signals in the 840 to 890 MHz non-herzian wave range could conceivably implant thoughts into a victim near the cellular phone. This raises two questions. First, IS the establishment’s big push to popularize cellular phone use, even to the point of giving out free cellular phones, part of Big Brother’s mind-control? Second, since it appears the brains ability to creatively think is related to the vibrations that are subtly made in the skull, the question naturally poses itself--can cranial osteopathy disrupt or alter the natural abilities of the cranium’s plates to vibrate?

THE MODERN AMERICAN OCCULT CONNECTION

In the United States, as in England, there were certain families who passed their bone-setting skills down as family trade secrets. The most famous bone-setting families were the Reece family (in west. Penn., and east. Ohio), the Sweet family (in Rhode Is., Mass., Conn., & NY), and the Tieszen and Orton families in South Dakota. The Sweets became orthopedists, the Tieszen and Orton families went into Chiropractic. The Irish Quain family were famous anatomists, surgeons, and physicians.

Osteopathy and chiropractic stemmed from the same occult philosophical roots, but went in different directions. Both shared the idea that the body has the ability to maintain good health if allowed to do so, and both emphasized the manipulation of bones and joints. Both were started about the same time period in America in about the same geographic area, by men who had Scottish ancestry.

A.T. Still (the founder of osteopathy) and D.D. Palmer both studied magic and metaphysics. Both attended many of the same spiritist meetings, for instance both attended the spiritualist meetings at Clinton, Iowa on a number of occasions. (Gibbons, 1980, p. 13)

The osteopath’s goal was to move bones to improve circulation. The chiropractor’s primary goal was to move bones to reduce pressure or the irritation of nerves, with the further goal of positively helping organs and tissue. A.T. Still & other osteopaths claimed Daniel D. Palmer visited Still at his house, but Palmer’s descendants say it’s not true.

Early on Still’s two best assistants were two doctors from Scotland, William Smith & James Littlejohn. Daniel David Palmer (1845-1913), founder of chiropractic, was a Freemason & an occultist. His original practice was to heal people with what he called "magnetic healing" which was a combination of laying on of hands, hypnotism and white magic. Of course it was not called white magic, it was called "magnetic healing" by Palmer.

Part of the magnetism was his own magnetic (hypnotic) personality. Palmer also knew phrenology and had a keen sense of touch concerning a person’s head. D.D. Palmer taught phrenology. D.D. Palmer was a mixture of good and bad traits. He was an excellent scholar and had good organizational skills for what he learned. One of his difficult traits was his megalomania. In 1905, at a coroner’s inquiry, Palmer refused to take an oath to swear the truth "so help me God", because he said that "I don’t want any help from God." It must have been hard on his pride, when his own son B.J. Palmer, who had been cruelly raised by cruel step-mothers, turned Judas and stole from his father both the honor & money that was due his father.

His son Bartlett Joshua Palmer (1882-1961) worked in a circus as an assistant to professional circus hypnotists known as Professor Hunt, and later Professor Herbert L. Flint. Later, with mysterious connections to the right people, B.J. Palmer, got the money and the political clout to get started in building a school for chiropractic. His powerful Davenport radio station, WOC, said to be the second largest in the U.S., had Ronald Reagan (our future president) as one of its sports announcers.

B.J. Palmer was connected to the occult world. He liked to encourage the idea that he was a Christ figure. New

Ager Napoleon Hill, author of Think and Grow Rich (1937) considered Palmer his mentor. B.J. had prominent Masons and other elite as his personal guests. Elbert Hubbard, a friend of B.J.'s, was the person who persuaded John D. Rockefeller's personal physician, to get Rockefeller to use chiropractic care. Later in 1963, Nelson Rockefeller would be the important person to get chiropractic accepted as legal in NY, and then appointed chiropractor Albert Cera to his Medical Advisory Committee.

Illuminati kingpin California Gov. Edmund Brown appointed 12 chiropractors to regional committees associated with the California Board of Medical Assurance. Hollywood got into the promotion of chiropractic, with the 1990 film Jacob's Ladder which was a film exposing the U.S. military's use of BZ (a derivative of LSD) in Vietnam to experimentally try to create aggression via drugs in American soldiers.

It appears that chiropractic occult ties have been beneficial in its fight for acceptance. The occult world has worked hard to keep chiropractic within its domain. This is why you will find Christians exposing the occult connections to chiropractic such as T.M. Clement's book A Warning to Christians About the Origins of Chiropractic. (Moses Lake:WA, date of printing not known).

As the reader will discover other sciences involving the relationship of the mind, brain, the body and personality have also been kept in the domain of the secret societies. Like Palmer, Dr. Andrew Taylor Still, who founded osteopathy, was interested in phrenology, hypnotism, spiritism, magic. The reference book 10,000 Famous Freemasons (Vol. 4) outlines his Masonic career in Freemasonry. His writings include such Masonic phrases as "Great architect of the Universe." His grandfather had been Scotch-Irish. His father was a Methodist Episcopal minister, who was an abolitionist who fought with John Brown and the free-state forces in Kansas.

Andrew Taylor Still ran for the legislature of Kansas Territory as a free-state candidate and won in the Oct. 1857 elections. Later, he married Mary Elvira Turner, who was from the "burned-over" district in New York. She had been exposed to abolitionist ideas, phrenology, and hypnotism (called mesmerism) which were all popular in the area she grew. Her area of NY was where Spiritism began in 1848. Horace Greeley of the NY Tribune then made these seances with spirits famous. In 1867, after his children died, Andrew Taylor Still embraced spiritistism. Still's beliefs in spiritism included ideas from Freemason Swendenborg's writings. (For details of Andrew Taylor Still's life refer to the book Trowbridge, Carol. Andrew Taylor Still. Kirksville, MO: The Thomas Jefferson Press, 1990.)

A.T. Still built osteopathy on the foundation of teachings of men such as phrenologist/hypnotists such as Joseph Rodes Buchanan. Buchanan used hypnosis and manipulation of the head to radiate the cerebral fluid from the brain to the body, which was coming close to the basics of cranial osteopathy. How did A.T. Still come up with these new ideas? A.T. Still was able to study and conduct experiments on bodies by raiding Indian graves for bodies, which he says in his "Circumstances and Personal Experiences" he did thousands of experiments on.

Certainly, he was unusual in having had a boyhood interest in digging up skeletons. He also read every book on anatomy he could find. In spite of his preoccupation with digging up skulls of people, Still seems to have been a decent person. Today, the occult world dislikes him. Why? In view of the historical facts, and the historical occult campaign to denigrate who Still was, it appears Still revealed secrets. Still was interested in scientific investigation. He proved things as he went along. He was a true researcher, and contrary to many researchers he was willing to openly share his knowledge with mankind.

Andrew's two brothers, Ed and James, were M.D.s. They may well have been loyal to the occult world, and it is speculated that this may account for part of their attempts to destroy the work of Andrew Still. It appears that in spite of Andrew's own occult connections, Andrew Still wanted to give the world cranial osteopathic knowledge that the occult world deemed to be secrets.

Andrew Still joined Freemasonry in Baldwin, KS's Palmyra Lodge No. 23. (10,000 Famous Freemasons, Vol. 4, p. 194). He came from a transgeneration occult background. He did speak and write with the type of terminology that the occult world uses, although today some of his "occult" writings only appear so because they are taken out of context. Recently, the Internet has a website with the "Sage Sayings of Still" with excerpts from a "spiritual diary" he kept. On the other side of the coin, the supposed sage occult sayings of Still were renounced by Still himself after he wrote them. He not only exposed occult secrets that the bonesetters had kept in the occult families for centuries, he made a point of tossing occultists out of his school.

I believe Andrew Still was one of those people that the generational occultists could say, "He grew up and dwellt among us, but he wasn't one of us." No wonder the occult world has had a campaign against him after he died. After Andrew died, his son Charles an excellent compassionate skillful doctor was to have taken over A.T. Still's Kirksville Osteopathic College. Instead, a rich financial backer, Warren Hamilton, who owned pivotal shares of stock placed James Still's grandson into the Osteopathic College's president's chair. The knowledge that Still tried to get to the world was now stifled. As an example of where things have progressed the Cranial Academy (the American Academy of Osteopathy) is now situated in three buildings in Indianapolis that are identical copies of the Great Pyramid, & use pyramids for their logo. (By the way one of Dr. A.T. Still's great-grandnephews is William Still who wrote the book New World Order. William Still is descended from the doctor's brother Thomas, who was an M.D. William's father was a U.S. general who was part of World Order, and although William's book was great, when one considers how the NWO order creates their own opposition and how double-agents are created, this author has some personal reservations on what is happening with William. For those who haven't obtained a copy of the book, this author recommends it.)

Back to discussing Still's ideas. Eventually, A.T. Still developed his own ideas for healing the body without using drugs, or the dangerous medical practices of his day. In 1874, Dr. Andrew Taylor Still, devised osteopathy, a medical practice that seeks to help the body via manipulated of the bones. 16 Osteopathic Schools have successfully sprung up in the U.S. over the years to serve the need for osteopath doctors. A few others failed. A small specialty within the Osteopathic medicine is Cranial Osteopathy which has the Cranial Academy (formed in 1946), which is a component of the American Academy of Osteopathy. The Cranial Academy is headquartered at 1020 Market Tower, Ten West Market St., Indianapolis, IN 46204 in a building that looks like 3 Egyptian pyramids.

Osteopathic students who have taken a Basic Cranial Course approved by the Academy are eligible to apply to the Cranial Academy to learn about osteopathy as it applies to the skull. Just recently, in June 20-23, 1996, they had their annual conference at Walt Disney World Village, Lake Buena Vista, FL. Walt Disney World happens to be a major mind-control programming center and the significance of this was brought out in Chapter 5.

The Cranial Academy, founded by occultist Sutherland in 1946, is affiliated with the Applied Academy of Osteopathy (this AAO is a group that is concerned with manipulative work, & also based in IN). WG Sutherland developed Cranial Osteopathic concepts. It appears that the occult world were upset enough with Andrew Still's revelations, that they planted WG Sutherland into the new science to bring the science back into the realm of the occult world. Sutherland (and those that followed him) was not above spewing out disinformation. Another leader following Sutherland in the field was another occultist Fulford, who helped insure that the Theosophists and Rosicrucians took over the science that A.T. Still had tried to give the world in a scientific form. Fulford, almost a god to some of the doctors interested in cranial osteopathy, functions as a bulwark to prevent most doctors from learning the deeper arts of manipulation.

Only a small inner group are taught the most advanced manipulative methods and anatomical details. The crucial cranial research work is being done privately by doctors affiliated with the Rosicrucians and this research is reported only in their literature for Rosicrucians only. The American Osteopathy Association helps to keep things low key by making no reference to the Cranial Academy in their materials, and only referring to the AAO once.

In 1953, one of the leading Cranial Osteopaths, William G. Sutherland, an American of Scottish descent, formed a foundation called the Sutherland Cranial Teaching Foundation in Denver, CO to promote the teaching of Cranial (head or skull) Osteopathy as developed by Sutherland. The cranial osteopathic work is taught by the Cranial Academy, but the inner knowledge, the inner secrets that are needed to successfully use cranial manipulation for mind-control are not taught by the Cranial Academy. This is taught privately by doctors who keep their relationships to each other secret. The inner core leaders (the top 3) of this small highly proficient group were all based in the south, and have all died since 1990. They have been replaced by carefully recruited handpicked successors.

There are occasion groups in other places that do cranial work. Some research on bioenergy and bone motion was done at the Univ. of Michigan School of Osteopathy and the Upledger Institute based in Florida has taught a very mechanical and rudimentary version of cranial work. These are just side activities. The U.S. Air Force and Navy provide scholarships which cover full tuition, books and living expenses for certain applicants to go to osteopathic college for four years. This has been carried out via the Director, Washington Office, American Osteopathic Association, Cafritz Building Suite 1009, 1625 Eye Street, N.W., Washington, DC 20006.

One of the military Cranial Osteopaths is a Maj. Beverly I. Maliner, and another is David R. Lemme at the Naples, It. Naval Hospital. There are reports that this hospital along with other American military sites in Europe are being used for mind-control. However, that does not necessarily connect Lemme or Maj. Maliner with government mind-control. This author knows of no evidence that would connect them. The military has used civilians to carry out some of the mind-control on their bases for decades, so they wouldn't have to use their own people if they didn't want to. The military has conducted secret research into the effects of skull bone movement, and traumatic skull injuries which are still classified.

One example of many of the type of modern research done is Susan Ann Bloomfield's Ph.d. dissertation "Site-specific changes in bone mass and Alterations in Calciotrophic Hormones with Electrical Stimulation Exercise in Individuals with Chronic Spinal Cord Injury." Her research showed that electrical stimulation of the muscles around spinal injuries helped the bones grow.

The casual researcher will soon find out that Cranial Osteopathy is a hidden subject. One of the better books discussing the potential of Cranial Osteopathy and how it works is a hard-to-get out-of-print book Craniosacral Osteopathy by Ronald R. McCatty. As this subject is so important to mind-control, this author availed himself to find a copy of the book and to study it. Some of the techniques described in the book will be hard for regular doctors to verify. If the curious were to use standard medical tests such as X-rays or MRI (which are too big), they will not get anywhere in discovering the details of how to manipulate the skull. The science is much more minute than these tests. An M.D. who asked the Cranial Academy about cranial literature was told that their literature is copyrighted to the writers and not available to other professions. This is an example of how protective the Cranial Academy is of their knowledge and they aren't even teaching the hard core inner secrets!

The secret cults continue their iron grip over the deep secrets of cranial manipulation. They continue their monopoly over who gets benefited by cranial work, as well as who is destroyed by cranial work.

In review, a number of sincere men have tried to develop Cranial Osteopathy including Dr. Andrew Still in 1874. Interestingly, as soon as each one of these men began discovering new techniques informed members of the occult world would take over their work, and insure that the work was kept within the confines of the occult world. For instance, Dr. Sutherland's experiments revealed to him that Cranial Osteopathy could influence the way a person thought and their personality. In the book, With Thinking Fingers The Story of William Gamer Sutherland by his wife Adah Strand Sutherland, she writes, "It was Dr. Sutherland's cherished dream that a day would come when the benefits to the mentally ill through the cranial component in osteopathy would be investigated to the satisfaction of scientific insistence; that it would be approved and made available institutionally, in the curriculum's of osteopathic colleges as well as in the majority of private practices." (Sutherland, Adah S. With Thinking Fingers. The Cranial Academy: Indianapolis, IN., p. 62).

However, clever people in the occult world saw that Cranial Osteopathy could not only be used to help the mentally ill, but to control the minds of people. They realized that this valuable information could not be shared with the world but should confined to the occult world where its full evil potential could be exploited.

Part of why it was so easy to hi-jack Sutherland's research is that he wrote very little. He wrote only two short articles. He didn't like to write, he liked to do research and work with people. Strangely, his wife divorced him, and a Rosicrucian lady married him. The details of it all have the feel of the occult world moving in and micromanaging Sutherland's life in order to control his research. Two years after Sutherland died in '54, his Osteopathy Cranial Association was already starting to praise a new age type of "Christ" in its literature. **Anne L. Wales**, a Rosicrucian, archived his work, and it is through her that we have received some of his work. She makes sure that when Sutherland's ideas see the light of day, they are steeped in occult Rosicrucian ideas. This helps insure that sincere non-occult scientists disregard what appears to be Rosicrucianism, rather than the research of a doctor.

Anne L. Wales has been more than a Rosicrucian. She was a member of the Church of Scientology, which is practicing trauma-based mind-control and which is a recruiting organization for the OTO and the Process

Church which are also both practicing total mind-control in coordination with the Illuminati. This author is aware of two separate victims of trauma-based total mind-control who came out of different Rosicrucian groups. As their are several groups claiming Rosicrucian philosophy, this author hasn't sorted out if there are any Rosicrucian groups which AREN'T being used as repositories for mind-controlled slaves. In other words, it appears that all Rosicrucian groups contain mind-controlled slaves.

Rosicrucianism (its various forms) has long attracted membership from the medical community, and there is evidence that it even recruits in the medical, chiropractic and osteopathic schools. The Rosicrucians, who like to track their history back to the alchemists, brag about their large numbers of medical members. AMORC indicates that at least 11% of its members are doctors. The Rosicrucians also hint about their secret medical experiments and secret medical knowledge. One Rosicrucian claim to fame is their mystical theories about the connections between the mind and the body (particularly the skull & nervous system).

The luxurious Clymer Health Clinic near Philadelphia offers cranial treatments at very modest prices by their staff of Rosicrucian chiropractors. Rosicrucian (& high ranking Mason) Swinbourne Clymer, MD, donated the land and funds for that clinic early this century. Clymer was a millionaire with eccentric health ideas. He financed the entire Rosicrucian Philadelphia-based group, too. His writings have tidbits that show he was an insider. Their headquarters has pyramids with capstones. Their books mention the Illuminati with great frequency. It is beyond the scope of this chapter, but there are connections between theosophy and Rosicrucianism and the Illuminati.

Theosophical groups tie in to the Nazi's religious beliefs, and today theosophical-minded young people are showing an interest in cranial manipulation. In other words, the interconnections between the occult world begin popping up when one investigates cranial work. One outspoken Doctor of Cranial Osteopathy (DO) Donald E. Woods, recently spoke out in the journal of Cranial Osteopathy entitled The Cranial Letter against the occultism that clearly controlled his specialty. He wrote in protest, "Yet, in the past we [cranial osteopaths] have bordered both on being a cult and on being occult. We must be neither to be effectively acceptable in health care, and it can be done since osteopathy, including Cranial Osteopathy, is based on valid human physiological and anatomical truths. Where do cult and occult fit in?"....Occultism says you do not have to pay attention to any of the old rules. Everything goes. Kick the walls out. Be tolerant of everyone's behaviour....Both the cult and the occult have the tendency to think that things outside their sphere of influence are unreasonable. They might say, "It is necessary that you belong to our group." (The Cranial Letter, Aug., '94, Vol. 47, No. 3, p.9)

While this letter printed in The Cranial Letter helps establish to the reader the occult world's influence in cranial osteopathy, the Cranial Academy may have printed this because the doctor in question is a multiple and they are possibly helping him separate himself publicly from the occult. And while the secrecy of cranial manipulation has been well kept, the Cranial Academy is considering disbanding itself, and letting the 16 osteopathic schools teach a more basic form or cranial work, which would further isolate the secrets for occult's elect.

Osteopathy itself has been accepted into mainstream medicine and one medical reference book states, "It is important to note that the osteopathic system of diagnosis and therapy is used in conjunction with the standard medical procedures of drug and surgical therapy." The curriculum at an osteopathic college or school is almost identical with that offered at the standard schools. The most popular school is the Chicago College of Osteopathic Medicine. There are approx. 150 osteopathic hospitals in the U.S. Most osteopaths are general practitioners and only 20% of the osteopaths specialize. Of these only a tiny percentage do Cranial Osteopathy full time. Of the small clique of DOs (Dr.s of Osteopathy) who do Cranial Osteopathy full time (Note: there are about 150 DOs nationwide that spend approx. 100% of their time doing Cranial Osteopathy--which no. was determined by this author using info provided in the Member Information Directory of the Cranial Academy.), and then based upon observations at programming sites and other criteria there is an inner circle of about 9 doctors who understand Cranial Osteopathy well enough to use their skills for the Illuminati in mind control.

Recently, there have been a number of magazine articles, for instance, American Medical News, June 26, 1995, p. 3 which discusses how osteopathic medical techniques of manipulation are becoming more acceptable to mainstream physicians and to the public. The article mentions that the American Osteopathic Assn. is getting $6 million for research. Obviously, the American Osteopathic Assn. is politically correct and moving with the stream of today's general trend toward new age ideas, and a global government.

Many osteopath doctors specialize. A Canadian government survey of chiropractors, osteopaths, and naturopaths in Canada revealed that 66% of the Canadian osteopaths specialized (See Royal Commission on Health Services Study of Chiropractors, Osteopaths and Naturopaths in Canada. Ottawa, Can: The Queen's Printer, 1966, p. 166), a figure much higher than revealed in a study of American Osteopaths in A Statistical Study of the Osteopathic Profession, Dec. 31, 1960, Dept. of Information and Statistics, American Osteopathic Association, May 1961, p. 2 Table 7.

In the Canadian study, osteopaths reported specializing in headaches, neurology, cranial work and cranial osteopathy. Their naturopaths reported specializing in fields including psycho-therapy, radio wave, electrotherapy, and cranial correction in mongoloids, spastics and body reconstruction. In exploring mind-control, it must be born in mind, that the American CIA was quick to recruit Canadians to help. Some of the cranial osteopaths themselves appear to be in controlled trance states, so they may well be under total mind-control themselves. These people are obviously of Celtic (probably Illuminati) bloodlines.

BONE & SKULL STRUCTURE

Bones are alive and changing. It might be helpful to review what bones are made of, and how they change and grow, just in case the reader had some misconceptions such as that bones are fixed solids that don't change. Bones within the human body, esp. the skull give support and protection. Bone is comprised of "an organic matrix synthesized and deposited by osteoblastic activity, calcium-phosphate precipitates, and a mineralized phase of hydroxyapatite, which is primarily composed of calcium and inorganic phosphate (Robey, 1989). The primary ingredient of the organic matrix is a collagen in the form of fibers that are extensively cross-linked. applies to 90% of the matrix. There several types of collagen, Type 1 predominant. This are is Numerous noncollagenous proteins have also been discovered in bone, including some which have been identified as growth factors. Bone development and turnover is regulated by various bone cells (see Teltelbaum, 1990)

The exact method the body uses to recreate new bone is too complex to describe here, but let it suffice that researchers are studying all the minute complexities of the abilities of the body to produce bone. Old bone is constantly being absorbed and reproduced new. BMUs are important to development of new bone. (see studies like Frost, 1965, & Parfit, 1987). According to the Wall Street Journal, Feb. 23, 1996, p. Al (in both Eastern & Western editions) some physicians are remolding lopsided skulls of infants with unnecessary surgery when the only problem is the child's sleep position, and the lopsided skull can be corrected with a head band rather than surgery.

In terms of head shapes, which can be created by skilled manipulation of the skull bones, a Vertical Strain Superior is associated with passiveness and dissociation. This is why some of the cults are either manipulating people's heads or recruiting people that have long faces in their cults. The vertical Strain Inferior is said to be connected to criminals. The programmers for the NWO have been intentionally manipulating people's skull to get passiveness and dissociativeness.

Daniel Whiteside and John Wesley Grossman did extremely valuable work in statistically validating the clear connections between 60 behavior traits and physical structures. The physical shape of the brain is related to how the brain's cells are proportioned. This science is called Structure/ Function.

Daniel's father Robert L. Whiteside was one of the founders of 3-In-One. Robert wrote an amazing book Face Language. The Air Force academy used it in three of their courses. Prior to encountering Robert's book, this author has noticed that the Japanese and Chinese have done a great deal of research and writing in this area. Our own language has come to reflect some of our intuitive ideas about Structure/ Function such as: "He is level-headed." "She is nosey." "He's a real high-brow." and "He leads with his chin." (cf. Face Language, p. xi-xii)

Whiteside takes 40 pages to identify traits that are shown by the eyes. Then he explains traits that are shown by the mouth area. Then he deals with overall facial traits and finally profile traits. For instance, a large difference between one side of the face and the other indicates how much the individual changes with their mood change. If the head steadily gets wider as it runs from the mouth to the ears, then the person has the trait of acquisitiveness. A person who loves to be precise with words will develop little lines that fan out from the inner corner of the eye toward the cheekbone. The 3-In-1 college doesn't teach that the face reveals all behavior, but they teach their students what to expect from people, so that they can communicate better.

Another 3-In-1 publication Advanced ONE BRAIN by Gordon Stokes and Daniel Whiteside reveals eye modes. NLP has also been teaching some of these eye modes to detect what a person is thinking. Another publication provides charts (designed by William Mariboe) which explain different traits and how they exhibit themselves physically. For instance if the eyes are extremely wide apart, the person will either see an open viewpoint as valuable or feel inadequate. The chart then charts out how the trait (of emotional tolerance) will exhibit itself under different circumstances. For instance, in doing a job they tend to loose track of time. Perhaps the value of all this in not clear in the reader's mind. In terms of mind-control, if you know what physical structures will give you a particular trait, you can enhance what you want by skilful manipulation of the skull bones.

The key to manipulating the skull lies in the fact that the skull bones actually float on the Cerebrospinal fluid, while the brain floats in the fluid. In the booklet The Cranial Bowl by William G. Sutherland (1984), he writes about what he calls "the moulding technic". The moulding technic is the reshaping of the skull. He writes on page 28, "The moulding technic is especially adaptable to children, and even to the adult well along in the later period of life." In the booklet, he goes into details about the cerebrospinal fluid.

CEREBROSPINAL FLUID

The Cerebrum (brain) and the spine float in a fluid that surrounds them. This fluid is called cerebrospinal fluid and is referred to on page 1050 of the massive anatomical reference book Gray's Anatomy 36th Brit. ed. (edited by Williams & Warwick, printed by W.B. Saunder Co., for Churchill Livingstone). In 1920 and 1938, Weed published research on the circulation of the cerebrospinal fluid. As just one example of many of the roles that the CS Fluid plays within the brain, that has been discovered is that the carotid artery has a branch that passes upward through a water bed of cerebro-spinal fluid. The CS Fluid follows that internal carotid artery to the choroid plexus, so that it can perform the function of interchange with the arterial blood. The CS Fluid is "in command" of this exchange. (I mention this because see how this ties in with the 5th brain?)

In fact, a Fourth Ventricle Compression is the most valuable and powerful CSF technique for helping people. (It is mentioned simply to show people the effect that CSF has on some very important brain areas.) Because the brain and spinal cord float in a fluid, a brain weighing 1,500 grams in the air, only weighs 50 gr. in cerebrospinal fluid which distributes the brain weight more evenly. The fluid itself is clear, slightly alkaline with a specific gravity of 1007. About l00 mls of CS Fluid will exist to float the brain and spinal cord. The spine rests in this cerebrospinal fluid, which has waves that approximate the breathing rhythm of the body. 50% of the cerebrospinal fluid is manufactured in one part of the head (choroid plexuses), and spends its time fluxuating. It is absorbed and replenished, as other body elements are. The plexuses which are located in the lateral recesses of the fourth ventricle also put cerebrospinal fluid into the subarachnoid space, and this supplies the cerebello-medullary cistern and the pontine cistern with fluid. The cerebrospinal fluid makes up a single fluxuating system of fluid within which the central nervous system/brain operate. As the brain coils and uncoils, waves of motion (energy) fluctuate in a spiral pattern through the cerebrospinal fluid in the skull, down the spinal column and up again, so that there is motion from front to back in the head and also laterally.

As the human brain develops the CSF seems to appear at the earliest stages. The brain goes through stages of development as the brain-spinal cord divide. The forebrain develops into several items, the midbrain into two parts, and the hindbrain into the first three brains. The cerebrospinal fluid is manufactured by the body, fluctuates in a single Head-spinal cord system and then is absorbed and replenished by the body. The fluid does not circulate like blood. The fluid and the skull bones continue to fluctuate even if a person holds his breath. As long as the CSF oscillates like it should, things are fine, but if something occurs to pervert the rhythms, the health of the person goes down. Loss of sleep can influence the rhythms adversely. If the occipital motion is restricted schizophrenia can result. When severe spheno-basilar symphysis locking occurs, there is frequently manic-depression. Most people are totally unaware that these mental problems may be resulting from a CSF problem.

Very little information is let out about the cerebrospinal fluid. Very little is released to the public about how over a period of time Cranial Osteopaths can develop the manipulative skill to control and change the fluctuations of these fluids. Only a few top people are allowed in on the secrets, and those people are handpicked members of the occult world. Some of the top Cranial Doctors are under Monarch-type mind control themselves. The osteopathic libraries are staffed with people loyal to keeping cranial osteopathic secrets within the occult world.

Could other doctors teach themselves? The ability to manipulate the cerebral-spinal fluid is an art that has taken years to develop, and for practitioners to learn. As stated, the tests that doctors rely on such as x-rays and MRIs are too big and clumsy to be of any value in this area. The doctors would have to "reinvent the wheel and then the automobile" if they wanted to self-teach themselves. It often takes two to three years of study in this area, before a doctor is able to feel the movement of the fluid.

The cranial bones have sutures between them, that allow a skilled person to move them. The sutures have been proven to move as much as 1/20 of an inch. The trained finger can perceive the natural motion of these sutures even if the natural motions are only 1/40 of an inch. In McCatty's excellent book Essentials of Cranio-Sacral Osteopathy, (Bath, Eng.: Ashgrove Press) p. 3 he states, "Contrary to some schools of thought, all circumstances being normal, the cranial sutures (or joints of the head) do not fuse--regardless of age, race, sex, or geographic location. They are perpetually motile, influencing the dynamics of fluid exchange and mebraneous tension within the cramo-sacral mechanism."

When early cranial osteopaths like Sutherland looked at the skull and its membranes and cartilage they realized that the 18 human bones that make up the head were actually designed to articulate (move slightly). In fact, researchers have discovered the cranium has 3 distinct oscillations. (Magoun, Harold Ives, D.O. Osteopathy in the Cranial Field, p.322).

Maud Nerman, D.O. presented the outline of an interesting lecture and lab class that she gave in 1992, entitled "Visualizing the brain under our hands" in which she taught the techniques for feeling the bones of the brain move with CS Fluid fluxuations, as well as sensing what it was doing internally. Coordinating the movement of the skull bones with the movement of the CS Fluid was called "directing the tide" by W.G. Sutherland. His Journal of the Osteopathic Cranial Assoc. reported successes doing this. Ronald McCatty teaches that "some heads are less pliant than other". The practitioner will rest his trained hands on the head, wait, and allow the cranial motion to teach the cranial osteopath what is happening or needs to happen. The client will usually be laying down, and the doctor will be relaxed and focused. The motion of the CS Fluid is called the Cranial Rhythmic Impulse (CR1). It will pulse about 10-14 times/mm. in normal adults and 12-16 times/mm. in children. When a person is frightened the CR1 can stop for up to 20 seconds. (The mind is literally frozen.) Tranquilizers will slow the CR1 rate down, as well as poor health.

For someone who has been traumatized, such as with electroshock, the very mention of the traumatic event, will cause the CR1 to temporarily stop. The cranial osteopath does not really force any bones, but rather gently encourages a skull bone in the direction it should go. Lightness of touch is a necessity. An example of the health benefits of the trained osteopath is given by McCatty, "That kink in the straight sinus can be, and often is, one of the primary causes of epilepsy and internal hydrocephalus..." By treating the kink the osteopath takes care of the problem, where the standard method is often to give the subject strong drugs.

To give an example of how the CS Fluid (CSF) can relate to our state of mind, consider the following by McCatty, "And again, change of direction of C.S.F. from anterior-posterior to lateral is of paramount importance in the sleep-wake phenomenon. When you are standing there is parallel action of C.S.F. flow. When you lie down with your head on a pillow this alters, you impinge on one or other temporal bone, you decelerate C.S.F. activity. You, as it were, slow down the pendulum. You inhibit parallel action. By inhibiting this pendulum you automatically produce an anteroposterior swing which is parasympathetic; that is to say, the parts of the automatic nervous system that slow down the action of the heart when the body is not under stress, in order to conserve bodily energy." This author thought it was exciting to understand better how the mind/body relaxes and slows down when we lay our heads down.

TRANSCENDENTAL MEDITATION (TM) & the HINDU CONNECTION

Years ago, back in 1974, this author was a West Point cadet who was watching the U.S. Army introduce TM into the academy. It was presented as a scientific technique, and many officers, some friends and other cadets availed themselves of the chance to train themselves in TM's mystical method of training. A fellow cadet who was already trained in martial arts quickly learned the techniques. After initially maintaining a safe distance, this author decided to investigate TM after I got out of the military. The U.S. government gave substantial grants to get TM introduced into this country. Fortunately, Christians didn't sleep long, and exposed that TM is Hinduism. Everyone that is taught TM is initiated into it by the TM instructor singing a puja (worship) song in

Sanskrit which is a Hindu devotional song while incense and candles burn.

Until the Christians exposed this, our national government went blithely along in promoting Hinduism into our public schools. For instance, the Dept. of Health, Education, & Welfare gave a $21,540 grant for 150 high school teachers to learn TM. TM has grown to be a powerful organization, with many organizations set up attached to it. It has its international headquarters at Hotel Sonnenberg in the Swiss village of Seelisberg.

When I investigated TM back in 1975, this TM instructor who was friends of mine, talked about her experience at Seelisberg. From the conversation with her it was obvious that people had had to surrender their will to the organization to go to Seelisberg, and some mind altering experiences had taken place there. She participated in the Siddhi program to be able to dematerialize, walk through walls and levitate. But the program clearly had emotionally disturbed her and others who had been in it. Once a person is involved in the higher levels of TM, you don't just walk away from this cult. From my personal observations, I discovered that TM is involved in some types of mind-manipulation, and that the organization is not above using deceit on unsuspecting people.

What then becomes doubly interesting is that after observing these things, I learned that TM have a large interest in the cranial osteopathic techniques which can alter the mind and personality of a person. For instance, this author has obtained a list of TM instructors in Santa Monica, CA area who are also Doctors of Cranial Osteopathy. (But bear in mind, this whole thing is bigger than labels, when people are interested in the occult they study eclectically.) These TM Cranial Osteopaths are concentrated where TM has a secret MUM Mountain, CA training site. There are cranial doctors in the nearby towns of Aptos, Capitola, Cupertino, Hollister, Los Gatos, Salinas, Santa Cruz, Saratoga and Watsonville. It's boggles the mind that 12 cranial doctors are needed for the rural area near MUM Mountain, while L.A. only has 10. Concentrations of cranial doctors occur in close proximity to TM centers, particularly around the Maharishi University in Fairfield, 10 as well as the secret MUM Mountain training center. Other cranial DOs who are part of TM are scattered about the United States.

Another observation which I made, was that some of the people that got really big into TM are still searching for something to fill the voids and needs of their life. TM didn't turn out to be as big of an answer as they expected. TM is not the final answer. However, the Maharishi who brought TM to America has a college in Fairfield, Iowa (the Maharishi International University) and 20 North American "heavenly communities" operating in the quest to create a heaven on earth. The Maharishi International University has been used for medical experimentation on people. The close connections between the leadership of TM and the Illuminati leadership suggests that TM is being used as another haven for the NWO's mind-control to be perpetrated on unsuspecting victims. There are bone-setters in India also. Perhaps the Maharishi got his original interest in the potential for mind-control via skull manipulation in India. Wherever the interest came from, it is evident that TM in America is involved in skull manipulation for its mind-control results.

The 3-in-One school Connection.

If one wants to surrender oneself to a cult, and allow one's mind to be control, in order to learn, the 3-in-1 school will be happy to teach you about what others would call phrenology and manipulation of the skull to control thinking. The school has a number of courses. They do not call their principles phrenology. Nor do they call their instruction mind-control. They identify to the student areas of the head and what type of thinking that area of the head is involved with. They also provide information so that their students can evaluate how people will act based on the shape of their heads and how that shape will interact with other shapes. The school is located at 2001 West Magnolia Blvd., Burbank, CA 91506, ph. no. 818-841-4786. They teach Ericksonian Hypnosis (good for programmers to know), Bodywork (incl. cranial osteopathy, which is good for programmers to know), and they teach NLP, Mind-controlled relationships (along with scripts), Mind-controlled adolescent problems, and a pantheistic religious philosophy/religion.

When the 3-in-1 school got started they were teaching muscle-testing and other important skills to their students (who can become "facilitators" in teaching others). The muscle-manipulation they have taught is extremely gentle and way beyond what the chiropractors knew. The school in California began about 10 years ago and then a few years later they began to tighten their hold on all their graduates and their students. The school has been drawing students from Europe, Japan, China, Russia, and South America (incl. Brazil). They have moved more and more toward being an occult cult or perhaps an Illuminati front.

When given information that their muscle techniques could be used to help multiples, they have made it clear (according to one school administrator) that they are not interested in helping multiple personalities. One school administrator named Gordon Stokes said, "We're off in another direction." In fact, Gordon Stokes is the founder of 3-In-1. (Technically, a co-founder, Daniel Whiteside and Candace Callaway helped. Some speculate that the Three-in-One name refers to this triumvirate, and perhaps to their relationship together.)

Gordon Stokes has been reported to be a member of the BOTA which is an international Mystery School of the Hierarchy. BOTA stands for Builders of the Adytum. It is a Qabalistic-Hermetic Order of adepts founded in the 1920s by Dr. Paul Foster Case reportedly on direction by the hierarchy. The BOTA teaches higher states of consciousness to its adepts. It is located at 5105 No. Figueroa St., Los Angeles, CA 90042. Daniel Whiteside's parents are deeply involved in personology. And Candace Calloway's mother, their book keeper, has also been a major figure at the 3-in-1 school. This 3-in-1 school in Burbank seems to be a finishing school for Illuminati programmers. The school ridicules people who want to examine their life or have a conscience. Christianity is considered to be an obnoxious tyrannical religion by the school. The information that they teach would be very helpful for mind-control programmers, and their occult philosophy would scare off moral people from participating.

The 3-In-1 research has been geared into how the brain works. Their research shows that if a person has more brain cells in a particular region of the brain, they are more developed in that intellectual area. For instance, if the Action-based-on-feeling area (the parietal lobe) has lots of cells, the person will be more active than thoughtful. If the person has more cells in the brain's Conscious-associational thinking area (frontal lobes) they will think more than act. They call their system based upon this research comparative cell proportion. There were many ancient works that noticed personality traits in relationship to head shapes.

Three-In-One article "The Background of Structure/Function" states, "You can read about the basis of Structure/Function in the Hebrew CABALA'S book of ZOHAR (which is literally Aristotle's PHYSIOGNOMONICA) as well as in the writings of Maimonides and those of almost every famous Arabian philosopher during Medieval times." (Stokes, Daniel. The Background of Structure/Function, 1991, p. 2) The Cranial Academy's The Cranial Letter also picked up on the connection between the Cabala and cranial manipulation.

A class on the "Cabala and Osteopathy" is advertized in the May '95 issue, p. 9. Until Freud captured the interest of students of the mind, phrenology was psychology. Phrenology studied what could be measured, Freud got people looking for the hidden. In 1938, Dr. Edward Vincent Jones improved upon Phrenology and classic Physiognomy and developed Personology. His system was an instant hit and he was given the go ahead and conduct research on inmates at San Quentin Prison, and what is now LA's giant USC County Hospital.

Interestingly, it was not long after Jones' research there, that Cisco Wheeler's father (trained as a programmer) was assigned by the Illuminati to organize covens in the San Quentin Prison. The Whitesides became disciples of Jones research and went on to statistically validate his system. One of their best students then was Gordon Stokes of Sacramento, who then moved to San Francisco to be better trained by the Whitesides. As mentioned, sixty traits have been validated statistically. By looking at the skull and head, the skin, the body tone, the eyes, and other areas, the practitioners of Structure/Function can accurately tell a person's personality. Because this type of information has been in the possession of caballists, it is not surprising that the average person is ignorant of all this. However, the potential for good or evil with this knowledge is tremendous.

They also used **Applied Kinesiology** to defuse emotional stress. For this work they divide the brain into the dominant side (the left), and the alternate side (the right). Then each of these hemispheres is again divided between the fore and back brains for defusion. Applied Kinesiology is used to gain information about a trauma, and the defusion is used to release any negative emotional stress around an incident. (This also possibly could be used to dilute the emotional impact of some assignment done by a slave.)

In the first 3-In-1 newsletter of 1995, pg. 1, they write, "Self-image is the key to good learning performance. What 'magic' do we use to help slow learners and people labeled as 'learning disabled' change for the better so dramatically." This is just one minor example, of how these groups like to reframe what they do in occult terms. The mind-control programmers need only have someone skilled in the manipulation of the cranial bones and the skull bones and they can with repeated delicate precision reshape a person’s skull and also his brain’s shape, thus manipulating the personality & looks. Photos of Marilyn Monroe (Erma Jean) during her life strongly suggest that type of cranial manipulation was done to her for mind-control purposes.

The occult world has maintained a dogged resolve to keep the deeper cranial knowledge and skills secret. Dr. Sutherland’s wife wrote his story With Thinking Fingers. She states on pg. 62, "It was Dr. Sutherland’s cherished dream that a day would come when the benefits to the mentally ill through the cranial component in osteopathy would be investigated..." If that was his dream, it is being hijacked today by those who see it as a tool for power over their fellow men.

B. GENETIC ENGINEERING

A great deal of secret experimentation has gone on in underground installations with genetics. This author has had the privilege of debriefing someone who worked at the Area 51 underground installation. He was murdered after having had several long interviews with this author. Truth is stranger than fiction. It goes without saying that the Illuminati has gathered up every hair-brained idea for controlling and manipulating the human race. That doesn’t mean everyone of them has been attempted, but they have the means to carry out very bizarre experiments in their underground facilities, such as the ones at Area 51.

There is no question that they have tried to augment natural human features and replace natural human parts. Who knows what weird transgenetic or cybernetic beings have been created? This author knows that they have been successful in some of their work at reshaping humans. This author has accumulated a great deal of information on the underground installations from eyewitnesses, but there is no way of knowing what is accurate and what is disinformation. However, a few details are definite. These underground installations are massive and they involve genetic manipulation to create new species or breed special types of people. In the Vol. 2 book, we discussed the Aquaman subspecies that the NWO has created with gills and special skin. These people look like normal people unless observed closely. They had extra genetic material inserted in the genetic material that created them. They are called Transgenic humans because they still closely resemble other people.

In order for transgenetic humans to pass their new added features to the next generation they need to mate with other similar transgenetic humans. However, the NWO has been secretly creating **Chimeras**. Chimeras is the widely used name for beast-men. This research is generally not for the public to see but is done in some of the underground facilities listed in Appendix 2. An example would be a creature that was half human and half some other beast.

On a BBC TV show on Oct. and Nov. 1988, the British showed the result of a gorilla being artificially inseminated with a human sperm. The experiment was done by British researchers working for the government and the result ended in a child looking remarkably like a normal person. However, the common people who viewed it were outraged. Most people are not really excited about scientists playing God and destroying the human race by genetic tampering. Of course the scientists who do these genetic games have lots of excuses and rationales, many of which have been put into print, to justify their research.

People are being bred for specific purposes by the Illuminati, just like this author bred dairy cows. Parents with certain desired features are obtained. (In fact, the Nazi’s secret superdog Lowenhertz Dogo Argentino - which looks like a race of weight-lifting dogs, and the secret 100 yr. old Paraguayan Nueva Germania colony of special bred Aryans are still in existence.)

The NY Times had an article on 9/17/92 where a Washington psychiatrist Dr. Peter Breggin accused the federal government of a genetic "violence initiative" in which the government was involved with genetic research as it relates to crime and violence. Dr. Susan Solomon, is one of the government’s leaders involved in researching violence. However, from what this author can gather, the government’s research is far more reaching that the NY Times’ article even begins to imply. By genetic breeding and manipulation, the Illuminati are trying to strengthen certain mental features. Considering that this has already been done for centuries by mankind to other species, for instance, when mankind domesticated the horse, the dog, the cat, the lama, the chicken, then it is no secret that a docile servile slave class of humans can be created. The primary goal of this Illuminati breeding is to create a class of people who can work together with others (herd instinct), and who will take orders willingly. Independent thinking and intelligence are not wanted. Educational goals and a world-wide educational system that can accommodate these types of workers is being created world-wide to deal with the eventual working-class- drones that the Illuminati want to create. The creation of this educational system at this present time has four goals, 1. to develop a group mindset, 2. to have education carried out by the multinational corporations, 3. to have students educated on the premise that truth is relative, 4. to teach compliance.

Already the public schools in America are gearing up for the government to dictate what occupations young students can study for. In other words, our educational system is being set up for mind-control, and this is to eventually work hand-in-hand with worker slaves that have the genetics needed to be good compliant stupid slaves.

There have also been studies of intelligence such as the five volume Genetic Studies of Genius started by L.M. Terman in 1925, (pub. by Univ. of Stanford Press). The World Order has specific and successful methods to create a class of technical people. At this point, people whose thinking abilities have been created by the monitoring/ manipulating of their genetics is a small but increasing number. Genetic control of breeding is unfortunately where the programmers are headed. This is not happening for the genetic betterment of the human species, this is for the perverted lusts of these demon-possessed megalomaniacs who think they deserve to rule with a sadistic iron fist. Those who mistakenly think the mind- control programmers are trying to improve the human race, need to get to know the programmers better. (See Appendix A for biographical information on some of the programmers.) Those poor gullible naive people who think that when the global masters visibly introduce the New World Order that the NWO will be tolerable if they can simply keep their noses clean, not fight back, and do their jobs, are sadly mistaken. They do not know the dark - sinister side to these global masters. As one man very close to the center of power said to a common man about the men who rule the world, "If you stepped on an ant, you would have more conscience than the global elite have in manufacturing wars and killing millions of people. They want power and they intend to amass total power no matter what the cost."

- Another area of ILLUMINATI DECEPTION & CONTROL--

Ionizing radiation used in conjunction with chemicals to manipulate the genetics of the mind; or say this another way: **USING RADIATION & CHEMICALS TO CHANGE GENETICS associated WITH THINKING.**

When a retired high-ranking military man first told this author that radiation research had to do with mind-control, my reaction was probably like most people’s, puzzlement. I thought that radiation was quite lethal and that genetic research with radiation was to protect us from some kind of atomic attack. Wrong. That is a nice cover story.

Since that retired colonel (who may not have long to live) talked to me, others have said similar things. Like many things that the World Order does, if we don’t have a frame of reference of what is going on, we can live around what they are doing day in and day out and never see all the clues as to what is going on under our noses.

One trauma-based mind-controlled slave (Chris DeNicola) spied on the files of the doctor who did radiation experiments on her. She saw the following radiation file headings, & their codes: Canker Sore (D-7040), Laser Documentation (D-7000), Nautical Science (D-1015), Pediatric Radionthology (L-6542) [One idea is that this file might pertain to child alters.], Penetrating Wave Activity, Radiation Experimentation (L-6540), Radioactive Distortions, Radioactive Material Contamination, Radioactive verification, Radioactive Waves, Radionthology, Electrolite Prodigies Experiments (654-011), Laser Light Distortions experiments (654-012), & Laserlight Technology experiments (101-015). One reason, that this author is providing the code numbers of these files, is that memories of slaves who are involved in these experiments or projects often are internally coded with these file codes. The date the experiment was done will also be added as part of the code.

When this author researched their genetic research, I was utterly amazed at how many institutions world-wide are carrying out deep research into genetics--much of which will contribute to the enslavement and mind-control of the human race.

Just a sampling of countless labs working hard on this mind- control related genetic research include Brookhaven National Labs. Upton, NY; John Hopkins Univ., Baltimore, MD; Institut fur Genetik, the Free University of Berlin, Germany; Institute of Hygiene & Epidemiology, Czech.; Radiation Genetic Lab &

Chemical Mutagenesis, State Univ. Of Leiden, Sylvius Labs, Leiden, The Netherlands; MIT, Cambridge, MA; Gesellschaft für Strahlen und Umweltforschung, Munich, Germany; National Inst. of Environmental Health Sciences Research Triangle Park, NC; Sandoz Labs in Basle, Switzerland; Biology Division, Oak Ridge National Lab, Oak Ridge, TN; Roswell Underground Labs, NM; Stanford Research Institute, Menlo Park, CA; Shell Labs, Kent, England; University of Michigan, Ann Arbor, MI; the Zentrallabor für Mutagenitätsprüfung der Deutschen Forschungsgemeinshaft, Freiburg, Germany.

This is just a tiny sampling of the enormous world wide research devoted to genetics that pertain to mind-control. While there are numerous surnames among the genetic researchers, because this author knows as a fact that some of these researchers are Illuminati, it doesn’t quiet one’s curiosity to see the better known Illuminati surnames such as Dupont, Hersey, Fox, Frey, Jung, Li, Paterson, Stuart, Sinclair, Sutherland, and Russell appearing among the genetic researchers doing research that pertains to mind-control.

Obviously, this author can’t give all the ways they have figured out to use radiation, along with chemicals and genetics to control the human race. I will try to give you a peek in the window. The real deep & dangerous information is of course highly classified material and protected by their mind-control of those scientists who work for them.

When I say mind-control, that includes such methods as blackmail and threats of assassination.

There is a type of radiation called ionizing radiation-that means it is radiation that gives off electrons (thus producing ions). There are many different types of ionizing radiation. Some go right through the body, some damage the cells, but the body repairs itself, some causes genetic changes, and some simply hits your cells like a sledge hammer & kills them.

The ionizing radiation that changes genetics has been the focus of an incredibly enormous amount of (mostly secret) research. Genes are instructions that tell non-life material how to organize itself into something living. A gene consists of genetic material called DNA and RNA. Genes also provide instructions for how something is to develop. As a person or animal develops, the genes interact with the environment to create what the person or animal is like. For instance, different breeds of dogs when born are more similar, than after they grow up. Different breeds of dogs have been bred for different genetic traits, and as different breeds grow up, their genes continually interact with the environment to create the adult dog.

So full genetic expression can take a life-time. The link between genetics and behaviour can be seen in this quote from the Quarterly Review of Biology (art. by T.C. Schneirla, 1966, p. 283), "Behavioural ontogenesis is the backbone of comparative psychology. Shortcomings in its study inevitably handicap other lines of investigation from behavioural evolution and psychogenetics to the study of individual and group behavior."

Genetic psychology has revealed that the genes program in methods for an organism to adjust to their environment. So genetic instruction is, for instance, more than just the instruction "be smart, be aggressive, be tall" but it is tailoring the way a person’s develops to deal with its environment. In other words, behaviours are programmed into a person via their genes (genetic instructions) to provide mechanisms for quick, dynamic adaptions to changing circumstances. These mechanisms (created by genetic codes) may even have the person (or animal) reverse their behaviour for purposes of survival.

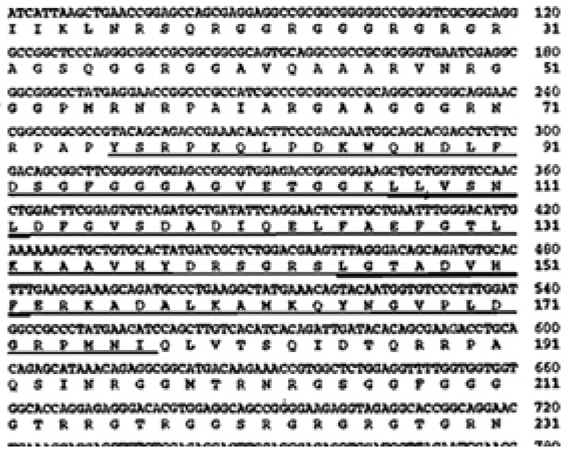

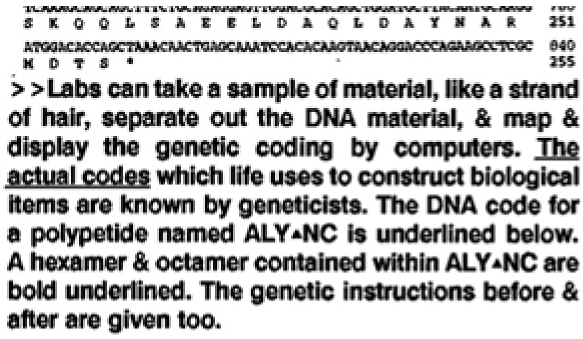

```
S  K  Q  Q  L  S  A  E  E  L  D  A  Q  L  D  A  Y  N  A  R    251
ATGGACACCAGCTAAACAACTGAGCAAATCCACACAAGTAACAGGACCCAGAAGCCTCGC  840
K  D  T  S  *                                                 255
```

> >Labs can take a sample of material, like a strand of hair, separate out the DNA material, & map & display the genetic coding by computers. The actual codes which life uses to construct biological items are known by geneticists. The DNA code for a polypetide named ALY▲NC is underlined below. A hexamer & octamer contained within ALY▲NC are bold underlined. The genetic instructions before & after are given too.

p_

8-1

Within the human brain (also all mammal brains) all the neurons are believed to be generated before birth with the exception of the following cells: granule cells of the olfactory bulb, fascia dentala granule cells in the hippocampus, the granule cells of the cerebellar cortex, and the granule cells of rhombic lip in the brainstem.

Its the brainstem cells that the Illuminati manipulate through brain stem scarring to produce photographic memories for their scientists and computer programmers. The germinal cells create neurons in the germinal zone. Brain cells with a common function develop from a common lineage although from different sites. After a new neuron develops in the germinal zone, they migrate to whatever location they are to live in. The complicated process of how a neuron discovers where to go (migrate to in the brain) has been not been discovered according to what this author has read. When neurons establish themselves they deal with certain neurotransmitters, that establish communication between them and other neurons.

Researchers have discovered that neurons can change their own make up to take different neurotransmitters if they decide their "environment" in the brain needs it. They also grow their dentrite connections depending on what type of connections are needed for that particular brain to function. For instance, a piano player will develop dentrite connections to be able to play well.

These discoveries show once again that even on the cellular level, genetic instructions are complex and designed to give flexibility and adaptability of the cell to the situation for the cell. Genetic programming begins at the cellular level. There is a cellular consciousness besides the consciousness that we think about. DNA structures which are inherited affect the cellular consciousness. Body memories are contained within the physiological structure. The first brain and the body work off a stimulus-response recording mechanism. Body memory and programming are stored at this level. This is an area of the brain that is always on. However, its view or perception of events is not an exact copy of what other higher brains are thinking. Your conscious mind doesn't remember how the stairs and the room are arranged, but in the dark, you primal part of your mind helps guide your steps.

Various drugs and chemicals have been identified that influence particular learning sequences in the mind, such as imprinting. For instance, hexamethonium chloride antagomzes the nicotinic actions of acetylcholine on the ganglia, or in other words, acetylcholine will depolarize the ganglia but is prevented by the hexamethonium. The overall result is that impulses that the sympathetic ganglia would transmit are blocked. This is just one example of countless examples of how a specific chemical can affect a specific brain action.

There is a branch of genetic research called "developmental social behaviour genetics" which deals with how genetics program in social behaviours of animals and people. For instance, these geneticists study how genes create aggression, courtship, territorial behaviours, behaviours involving mothers and fathers, dominance (peeking order) behaviors, sexual behaviors, attraction behaviors, recognition behaviors, etc.

Men are very much controlled by the sexual lusts, power lusts, and aggressive behaviors. Can the reader see how genetic manipulation of these genetic based behaviors could radically change the potential behavior of a person. A fox's genes cause him to react differently than a rabbit's genes. Having a rabbit grow up in a fox home is not going to change the genetic instructions. (The Bible even says, Can a leopard change it's spots?) But the World Order has figured out how to change those instructions.

Genetic researchers had to begin sorting out behaviours, and sorting out genes that affected them. For instance, genes create a person’s (or animal) reproductive "instincts". These instructions include instructions on fighting, nest building, mating, and care of their offspring. These genetic instructions are different for different people and different animals. Researchers into imprinting have discovered that IF a set of animals (or people) is prevented from learning a particular imprint, and IF that set of animals breed, THEN they pass on a lack of ability to receive that imprint. In other words, genetically we learn from generation to generation.

Let’s say that we prevent men from naturally imprinting a sexual desire for women as they grow up. If we mate those men to women, the offspring will show a reduced ability to be heterosexual. Males seem to develop their sexuality, but females seem to react more on the basis of genetically present "releasers". Genetic researchers have gone in and identified what people’s behavioural instructions specifically are, and how to change them. The instructions are written in DNA, and manipulation of DNA can change those instructions.

When I researched their genetic research, I found that they have developed maps for how to change genetic material to change those instructions concerning behaviour. The maps for changing human genes related to behaviour are classified, but an example of one that isn’t is found in the book The Genetics of Behaviour (ed. Ehrman & Parsons. Sinauer Assoc., Inc. publ.: Sunderland, Mass, 1976, chapter 8 figure 4.). This map shows 3 sites in a HK gene that are intentionally mutated by the scientists in order to change the way a particular fly sings its mating call. The specific changes in how the fly sings its new mating call (after the genetic code is changed by geneticists) are even graphed out in a recording graph in another book Developmental Behavior Genetics: Neural, Biometrical, and Evolutionary Approaches (ed. by Hahn et. al., Oxford, Eng.: Oxford Univ. Press, 1990, Fig. 6-1.)

Again bear in mind that we only get the crumbs of what they know. We get a map of how they can change the way a fly sings a song--while they secretly keep the genetic maps to change human behaviour! An easy example of how genetics play a role in human behaviour can be seen in how infants behave toward their mothers and toward strangers. By using twins and adopted children, etc. it could be clearly demonstrated that the behaviour of a child in how it touches its mother was genetically inherited. But remember that the genetic instructions as a child grow older are designed to give it flexibility in relationship to its environment, so the environment is going to interact with the genetics to form the final behaviours. The study of these reactions of genes to the environment is called the study of epigenesis.

Another easy example of the genetic role in human behaviour is that intelligence has been linked to brain to body size. Genes ultimately determine that ratio of brain to body size. The factors involved are largely prenatal maternal influences. A great deal has been learned in this area. Brain size relates less to body size than it is a function of body metabolism. (See Research by Lande & Martin) To give a tiny sample of the types of genetic studies done in this area:

- Hahn, M.E., & Haber, S.B. "Dominance for large brains in laboratory mice..." Behavior Genetics, 1979, 9, pp. 243-244.

- Fuller, J.L. & Geils, H. "Brain growth in mice selected for high and low brain weight." Developmental Psychobiology, 1972, 5, pp. 307-318.

- Riska, B., & Atchley, W.R. "Genetics of growth predict patterns of brain-size evolution." Science, 1985, 229, pp. 668-671.

Research into how to control humans genetically proceeded in several directions. First, scientists realized that radiation was the key to changing genetics. Radiation causes breaks and changes in the DNA instructions. If only one little bit of genetic DNA instruction is changed in 1 million bits of information, that change could radically change the life of the person or animal. We see that everyday cleft lips... But how does radiation affect genetics? DNA has been studied from every angle. DNA has been looked at, probed, tested with all kinds of chemicals and countless other manipulations. The scientists figured exactly how the different DNA is constructed, what makes it tick, how it joins, holds together, reproduces, etc. They can disassemble and rebuild DNA however they want. DNA is the genetic instructions.

Since radiation will affect DNA they tested a long list of ionizing radiation substances on DNA. Different radiations will break the DNA in different ways. Chemicals will join to DNA in certain ways. Long story short, there are millions of ways to manipulate genetic material, and the World Order set out to discover how to precisely manipulate certain kinds of genetic material in certain ways.

An example of how skilled they are in understanding most everything about to construct and take apart the molecules of genetic material, at Cold Spring Harbor Labs one of the 1997 courses offered students is Molecular Cloning of Neural Genes. They understand what makes a nerve cell and how to create one. This science is called molecular neurobiology. (This course at Cold Springs H.L. happens to be taught by instructors from Rockefeller Univ., Harvard, John Hopkins, and UC of Berkeley.)

One area of intense study for many years was a long-term scramble to find chemicals that would cause different types of mutations in DNA. This research was called Comparative Chemical Mutagenesis. In fact one of the books this author studied was entitled just that Comparative Chemical Mutagenesis (ed. by DeSerres & Shelby). This book's Chapters 16-18, 22-25 are about chemical-genetic research concerning how to create genetic changes in mammals using chemicals!

When it comes to genetics, much of what is learned from studying one mammal will apply to humans. The chemical principles are the same, the DNA is written in the same code, only the genetic instructions written in that code is different. To make an analogy, this book is written in English. Once someone understands how English works, they can take apart a sentence and rewrite it. Top level Genetic scientists know how to take apart genetic instructions and rewrite them. Radiation used in conjunction with chemicals presents them a tool for the mass editing of human genetic instructions. No wonder the Chernobyl nuclear accident happened. (Insiders in the know say that it was caused on purpose.) What a great way to carry out more mind-control research.

According to public research, genetic mutations were created by scientists in mammal cells first in 1968. It is likely that this had already been accomplished in secrecy before this. Labs all over the world went about testing genetic material with specialized chemicals to see what would happen to various genetic material when it came in contact with specific chemicals. Some of the commonly- tested mutagent chemicals that were widely tested to discover their "mutagenicity" (mutagenicity is the word geneticists use to describe the power of a chemical to cause a mutation) include:

Aflatoxin B1 (AFT)(This is a mold metabolite and is not always effective without another agent.)
Cadmium chloride
Cadmium salts
Cyclophosphamide (CP)
Dimethylnitrosamine (DMN)
Epichlorohydrin
Ethylenimine
Ethyl Methanesulfonate (EMS)
Methyl methanesulfonate (MMS)
Mitomycin C (a strong mutagenic at low doses)
Myleran (aka Busulfan)
N.Methyl-N,-Nitro - N - Nitrosoguanidine (MNNG)

Natulan (aka procarbazine, this chemical was strongly mutagenic in the lab with the presence of S-9, but weak without the presence of S-9)

Tepa
Theo-Tepa
Trenimon
Triethylenemelamine
Vinyl chloride

When these chemicals (and others) were tested on genetic material, the mutations they caused in the genetic material were observed, and then the specific type of mutation each caused was charted. Some caused chromosome-type changes, others caused chromatid-type changes, and some caused sub- or half- chromatid changes (these sub-changes usually were in the mitotic portion of the cell cycle.) When the chemicals broke chromosomes they were called clastogens. Others cause chromosomes to lose genetic material by damaging the mitotic apparatus. Many of the chemicals that were first tested only produced chemical changes in the chromatid-type of change. They discovered that the protective mechanisms of animals, plants and humans were protecting against many of their induced mutations, but they also learned what mutations they could create that the body would not fix or recover from.

Along with finding out what certain chemicals would do, the World Order wanted to find out what would happen at the molecular level of DNA when subjected to different types of radiation. The key to using radiative material is that there are many different types of radiative substances, not just uranium. For instance, cadmium is radioactive and can be used in genetic manipulation. In researching radiation, the first stage is when free radicals are created. This takes only a very small fraction of a second. The next is the chemical transformation of those radicals into stable radiation substances, and finally the last stage are the effects of these substances when the body incorporates them. The effects of the radiation substances on a person may last several years. The effects of radiation take place on the molecular level of DNA.

When you and I went to school we were taught that DNA occurs as a double-helix around an invisible common axis. The core of the helix is a series of purine and pyrimidine bases stacked in a parallel array and are arranged almost perpendicular to the invisible axis of the helix. However, the reality is that DNA can also exist in three (triple) double-stranded helix structures which are called the A-DNA, the B-DNA, and the C-DNA. At high humidities the A-DNA will transform into a B- DNA if excess salt is in the area. In A-DNA the normal of the base pairs is tilted by 200 to the helix axis. In contrast, in the B-DNA the base pairs are perpendicular. In some viruses and bacteria single stranded DNA is found. DNA also comes in supercoiled in some situations.

The point is simply that DNA occurs in ways other than we learned in school. They discovered that the energy of the sugar-phosphate backbone of the DNA allows for the DNA bases to be stacked, and is the key to the stability of the DNA. The verticle stacking of the bases gives stability of the DNA helix. They discovered that the helical structure of DNA is strongly influenced by its base composition and molecular weight. I mention these only to point out, that they know all about what DNA is and how it is built and holds itself together.

The genetic-radiation researchers had to learn how the bases of the DNA held together electronically. They needed to learn how well these molecules of these different bases would accept electrons or donate electrons, because ionized radiation is substances that give off electrons or other ionizing particles. Directly ionizing particles are atomic particles that are charged such as electrons, protons, alpha (a) particles, "heavy" ions, etc.).

An example of something the researchers found is that the cytosine base was the best acceptor of all the DNA bases. They began the process of testing different radioactive substances on DNA to see how they would cause mutations. To study this type of research, this author read several books such as Effects of Ionizing Radiation on DNA (Springer-Verlag Publ.: Berlin, Germany, 1978). An example of a chapter in this book is "Radiation-Induced Degradation of the Base Component in DNA and Related Substances". This chapter shows charts of what happens to DNA components (such as thymine, cytosine, & uracil) when they are exposed to radiation. This author wants to cover some details of the type of discoveries these researchers made to make a point that specific chemicals and specific types of ionizing radiation will produce different effects upon DNA. Although these are very specific minute details, the reason they are mentioned here, is that the bottom line is that SOME CHEMICALS WORK WITH SOME TYPES OF RADIATION TO PRODUCE SPECIFIC MUTATIONS.

They discovered that if a mutagenic such as aminoacridine dye is absorbed by cells, this dye which binds to the nucleic acids, absorbs light to such a degree that the cells are destroyed. Different variations of dyes bind to the DNA in different strong and weak binding processes. Lambda radiation was tested on DNA. They observed that positive and negative ions were randomly produced throughout the DNA and that these are chemically unstable and undergo free radical reactions to form stable radiation products. They discovered that there was a consistent "oxygen effect" which was made into a radiobiological law which described how the presence of oxygen enhances radiation damage in all forms of cell life.

Another interesting discovery was that 5-bromouracil (BU) enhanced the rate of radiation-induced free radicals forming within gamma-irradiated DNA. Researchers discovered that an naturally occurring substance in cells, the sulthydryls, would bind with iodoacetic acid and N-ethylmaleimide, which made them radiosensitive, and would result in certain mutations. Still one more example of a compound that works with radiation to cause changes in the DNA is triacetoneamine-N-oxyl (or TAN for short). This is a stable free radical that combines with DNA. TAN comes from a group of nitroxide free radicals which all have the same influence on DNA. Metronidazole (aka Flagyl) was also found to be another of the nitroimidazoles and nitrofuranes that are oxygen mimics that worked in the lab as radiosensitizers of DNA.

Chemical-Biological Weapons are referred to as CB Weapons. In a transcript attached to the Dept. of Defense appropriations for 1970 (part 6) that I have of CB Weapons researchers talking, they indicate that the United States has BZ which "brings about complete mental disorientation as well as sedation which induces sleep. First of all the individual is completely confused as to what he is doing or what he is supposed to do and in addition he has hallucinations. He cannot carry out his assigned duties nor can he remember what his assigned duties were." The affect of BZ lasts for about 3 days and then the person will begin to recover. It can be given via the air or the water. If it is drank or inhaled it will work. It takes affect about 1 to 1 ½ hours after it is ingested. There are a number of corporations that can produce BZ in the U.S. At the time of the transcript, it was stated that BZ is $20/lb. and a lead time of six months for production.

Chemical incapacitants have been developed that affect the mental functions of the mind in various ways. Today, research and deployment continues of chemical and radioactive substances that can control people. One of the methods that chemical and radioactive materials work is to change genetic structures. Some of the genetic changes that can be created chemically, are chemical changes that affect the way the mind thinks. In a nutshell, we are looking at a situation where the thinking of an entire race could be altered via chemicals dropped into their air and water. How long would these genetic changes last? It is conceivable that some of the changes might have long range consequences. Again, the bottom line is that the World Order has at its disposal radioactive substances that can distributed in conjunction with chemicals to mind-control large geographic regions by genetic manipulation. These radioactive substances and chemicals can be distributed over vast areas by the air and water of a geographic region. It is conceivable that within a short time, the United States will experience chemicals administered via the air, or the drinking water used in conjunction with specific external stimuli to reinforce certain types of mind-control programming on a mass of people. A chemical that makes people susceptible to suggestion could be used over a geographic area while hypnotic television messages and ELF waves, etc. contribute to the mind-control operation.

Therapists are going to begin encountering victims of mind-control born in the 1960's or later that have been subjected to chemical-radiation changes to the genetics that control human behaviour. There are already dozens of very vocal victims of both radiation experiments & mind-control that are speaking up. Unfortunately, the ones that this author knows do not have a long life-expectancy, and speaking up usually has the effect of shortening a whistle-blower's life.

In this Deeper Insights book, the movie Jacob's Ladder was mentioned. This movie shows a unit in Vietnam which was given a drug to make them aggressive, but the drug backfired because they killed each other. However, the reason the movie was allowed to be produced is that it was a good cover for the fact that the military did not give up, but that they actually succeeded in producing their "magic chemical potion" to turn soldiers into killing machines. The biology of aggression has been figured out. Military studies on the relationship between drugs and the ability to kill have been numerous, one example is Gabriel, R.A. Military Psychiatry: A Comparative Perspective. NY: Greenport Press, 1986. The World Order has the ability to create the warrior spirit, actually its worse than that, they have the ability to turn men into killing machines.

WHAT WE'VE COVERED

As horrible as the physical manipulation of the brain and its fluids is, and as monstrous as the genetic manipulation of the growth of the brain as outlined in this chapter are, they are only a few methods of mind-control of many that the Illuminati have at their disposal. These techniques seriously raise the question how much longer will humanity as we know it survive? The next generation of children will have to face mind-control in the form of genetic tampering and the use of chemicals already stockpiled by the NWO.

p_8-2.jpg

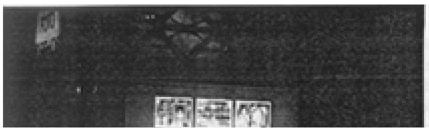

left. This Las Vegas casino photo booth could greatly assist in confusing a mind-controlled slave. The photo machine can be set with different backgrounds so the person can be made to appear in another country, and will also blend the

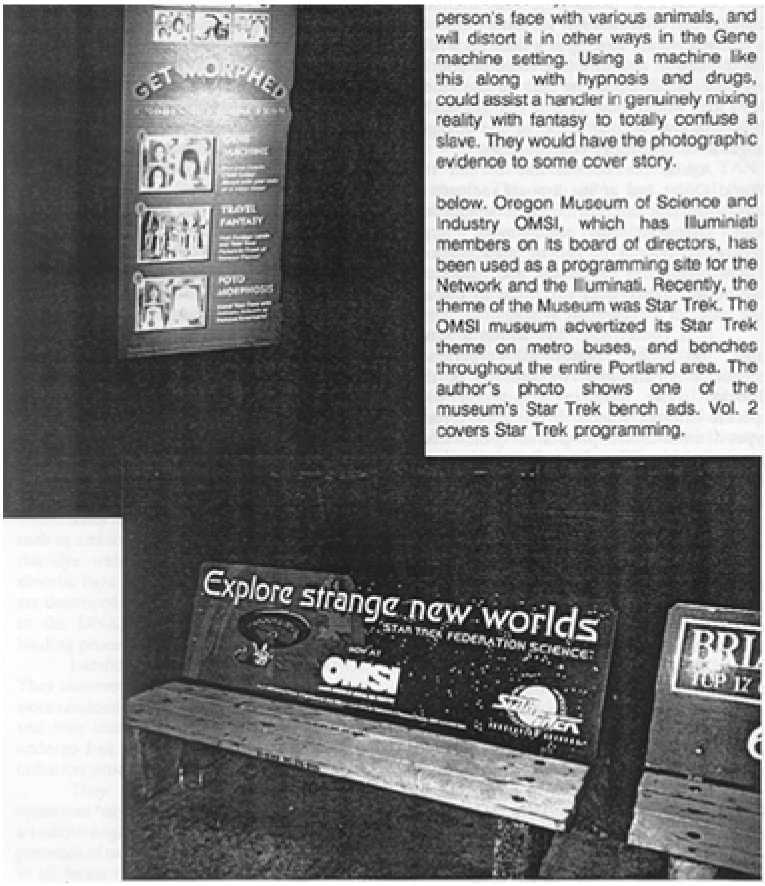
GET MORPHED
TRAVEL FANTASY
Explore strange new worlds
STAR TREK FEDERATION SCIENCE
OMSI
BRI
TOP 17

person's face with various animals, and will distort it in other ways in the Gene machine setting. Using a machine like this along with hypnosis and drugs, could assist a handler in genuinely mixing reality with fantasy to totally confuse a slave. They would have the photographic evidence to some cover story.

below. Oregon Museum of Science and Industry OMSI, which has Illuminati members on its board of directors, has been used as a programming site for the Network and the Illuminati. Recently, the theme of the Museum was Star Trek. The OMSI museum advertized its Star Trek theme on metro buses, and benches throughout the entire Portland area. The author's photo shows one of the museum's Star Trek bench ads. Vol. 2 covers Star Trek programming.

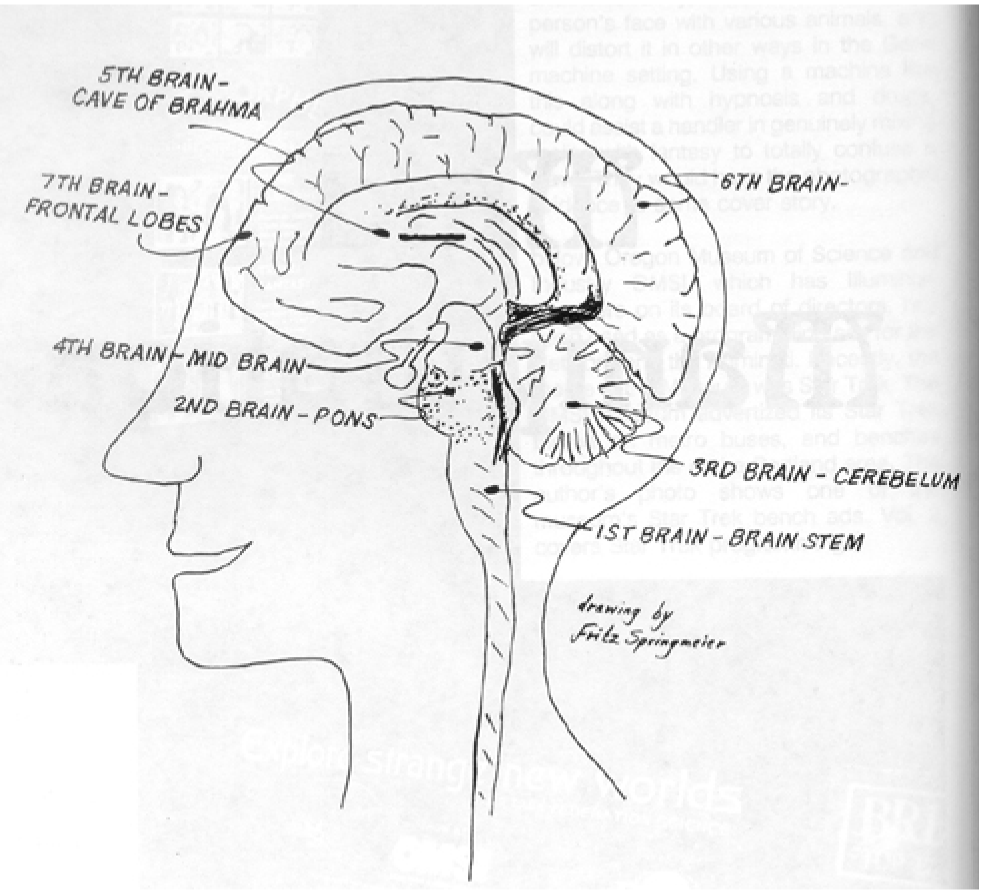
5TH BRAIN - CAVE OF BRAHMA
7TH BRAIN - FRONTAL LOBES
6TH BRAIN -
4TH BRAIN - MID BRAIN
2ND BRAIN - PONS
3RD BRAIN - CEREBELUM
1ST BRAIN - BRAIN STEM
drawing by Fritz Springmeier

9-1.jpg

http://whale.to/b/sp/springmeier.html

CHAPTER 9: THE SCIENCE OF MIND MANIPULATION BY PSYCHOLOGICAL PROGRAMMING METHODS: BEHAVIOR MODIFICATION, PSYCHOLOGICAL MOTIVATION & NLP

"STRIPPED" OF FEELINGS
PROGRAMMING TO HIDE REVEALING DREAMS
PROGRAMMING LANGUAGE
EFFECTS OF PROGRAMMING
FALSE IMPLANTED MEMORIES
PERCEPTION CLOUDS MEMORY

A person’s "selfhood" is hard to define, but one could view it as the central important center of consciousness to which the person has placed both trust and purpose. A professor of Pastoral Counselling defined the self as "the purposive core I have learned to trust in myself and others." Although this author prefers his own wording as written above, the definition of "selfhood" by this professor of pastors is in agreement with this author’s. A mature person is a person who has developed a "selfhood", a sense of self, that is able to make creative choices in line with values and plans for his or her life. By the destruction of the "selfhood" of many of the alters, the programmers derail the ability of the slave to make creative choices in line with values and plans. Not only do they destroy the sense of identity but they also destroy the development of values.

When a normal person grows up, the values, that an individual adopts, will enable that person to integrate his or her many actions into a cohesive unified agenda for living their life. What happens when a person is not able to adopt their own values, but is force fed values? What happens when the person does not even adopt any values, except to acquiesce to the brutal demands of a mind-control handler? The natural process for developing a unified agenda for life is cut short. The thinking of mankind is predicated on socialization with other humans. It is natural for people to want to work and be around other humans. The family, neighbourhood, city and nation all give an individual nurturing that fosters a sense of identity and values. What happens if an individual is cut off from society and most of humanity, in fact is even cut off from most of their own mind and will?

What typically happens in this situation is that the individual becomes demoralized, feels dehumanized, and as a person is enfeebled to deal with life. What happens when a person is not allowed to chose values freely, and allowed to give consideration to various alternatives and the consequences for these choices? It means that the person is not going to be happy with the choices they make, but will go through the motions of life in a rather dissociated manner. What happens when a person feels powerless? Feelings of powerlessness, can lead to feelings of meaningless. And meaningless makes an individual feel trapped by life. The meaninglessness imprisons a person. The person no longer has the freedom to make choices, and without choices has no real values, and without values life becomes meaningless.

The above situations are standard results of the total mind-control programming agenda. The person’s natural built-in abilities to plan their life is short circuited. The person is demoralized and feels incomplete as a human because of his or her’s lack of connectedness to their fellow humans, and as a result allows his or herself to be dependent upon the master. Because they are forced to do actions without any values, they dissociate their actions from feelings. Finally, they feel trapped because they have no values to give life meaning. A sexual slave will be forced to have sex. They are not allowed to have a value system, or else they would pick and choose who they wanted to have sex with. The result is that they feel dehumanized and they dissociate feelings from their actions. Without values, life feels like one big trap, with no purpose and no goals. The only purpose the slave has is to survive the brutality of its master, that is to stay alive.

Some slaves give up along the way, and are discarded as unsuccessful attempts by the Illuminati. The programming agenda prevents the natural God-given gift for mankind to make their own choices. As explained above, this in itself reinforces several items that the programmers have been intentionally creating such as dehumanization, isolation, dependence, and dissociation. It is built into human thinking to enjoy a sense of accomplishment. This happens when a person perceives his or her life as meaningful. The perception that his or her life is meaningful results in the person feeling power. Powerlessness and meaninglessness are two items that are related to each other when we understand human thinking. A normal child in a normal environment will naturally learn when to trust itself and when to trust others. This is important to the development of values. This is important for a person to become mature. The programmers short circuit this natural learning process.

The front alters continue learning who to trust and who not to trust, and when to trust oneself, because they hold the body from day to day. However, a special purpose child alter doesn't experience this. Without learning how to trust, it becomes hard to make decisions by one's self, and so the victim of mind-control transfers the right to make his or her choices to the programmer. By arresting the natural process of learning trust, the programmers detour the mind, so that it travels right where they want the mind to be.

Normally, a child would grow up, and as it grew up would realize that not everyone can be trusted. He would also come to realize that even his own self at times can not be trusted. Yet, the child would also learn that there are times that people can be trusted. This maturation of awareness moves a person from being dependent toward being independent. The programmed slave is afraid of seeking true love, and to find authentic relationships with people. Without these things, they remain incomplete and more pliable to the control of the master, who then attempts to provide in some substitute manner some of the things the slave should have developed for himself.

Many of the slave's deeper alters do not have the capacity to creatively look forward to the future, with the understanding that they can create their own life, their own future. The process of maturation that would have given that ability to them has been prevented from taking place. If these deeper alters do not experience life outside of their programmed trance states, they will have no chance to mature and to realize that they are capable to design and create their own future. Rather, the slave endures life with anxiety and dissociation, and limits his mental horizons to the present. The big reference point the slave has is to their master and his commands.

Many of the slave's alters are limited in their freedom to really have consciousness. Their thinking is below the definitions of conscious behavior--it is simply programmed behavior. Our consciousness has a big role in how we perceive the world. How we perceive the world in turn determines our values. The programmers can disrupt the process of a slave obtaining values in life, by disrupting the consciousness. Values in life are important in determining how we build our world-view, our frames of reference. The programmer constructs various worlds for most of the alters (except for the front alters). These alters are never given the chance for what psychologists would label "conscious behavior". Reality is not part of the package. Choice is not part of the package.

In normal life, conscious behavior is developed by interaction between a person and his environment and the freedom to make real choices. The bare necessities are grudgingly provided in a haphazard way to the alters of a total mind-controlled slave, so that IF they are aware of their needs, it is at a very basic level, such as survival, and security and warmth. A fully conscious individual has gone way beyond that to realizing his or her's needs for creativity, intimacy, community, justice, integrity, and spiritual fulfilment.

The challenge for the slave master will be to balance the freedom of activity and maturity of the front part of the slave's alters, with the control that the slave master needs to accomplish his nefarious goals. It is safer to bring a slave up to have a world view dependent on others that lends itself to the owner's agenda such as witchcraft values & a witchcraft world-view, or a Mormon/ or Jehovah's Witness/or Catholic world-view of obedience to the church, THAN to have the slave's front alters becoming independent self-directed mature thinkers.

It doesn't matter whether the person's front alters are Jehovah's Witnesses, Mormon or Catholic, they have surrendered their personal sense of power and control to institutional control. The victim ceases to do things because of personal choice, but accepts institutional values as a cog in a machine; and the person, whether they realize it or not, loses meaning in their life. Personal choice, value and meaning in life are all related. Because man is made in the image of God, he has an inherent desire to have meaning to his life. Mankind also has a desire to be in unity with his environment. This is also a God-given desire. To make himself feel at home in this world, man spends much of his activity taming and domesticating the wild world to conform to what feels comfortable. What happens when this is stripped from a person?

In order to provide substitute answers to these desires of the slave, the Illuminati's covens provide rituals. Rituals make the slave feel that some order is being brought out of the chaos and nonsense of life. But true meaning in life can only come from realizing the goals of our actual Creator, Almighty God. Substitutes for this, leave people unfulfilled and weak. Of course, the unfulfilled weak sense of meaning in life of the Illuminati members, can weaken some in their ability to realize their true spiritual potential. It becomes a vicious cycle of low base evil goals. Who will provide the safety for the deeper alters to move out independently in life? and then further, who will teach the deeper alters the social skills, and the other skills to step out and grow? Even if the complex programming should break its death-grip on an alter, (which seldom happens) an alter can not find freedom without some outside support system providing safety and instruction. The bondage that most deeper alters remain fixed in, is a very complex bondage of body, mind, and spirit. This complex bondage calls for group package answers, that address the type of issues that have been raised on these last two pages. The lack of this type of answer insures that few slaves will find full freedom. Partial freedom is still slavery.

On the flip side, because deeper alters have not had a chance to develop their own values, make their own choices, and experience reality, the power of the programs will be diluted simply by real life. This occurs even in the absence of intense deprogramming. One of the weaknesses of the programming is that the handlers often fail to allow alters to ever establish real personal values. Hand-me-down values that are accepted under duress or torture, are quickly discarded if the alters ever do get free.

Illuminati slaves who accept the values of the Illuminati, and progress to positions of power can be resistant to freedom, because they have internalized for themselves a value system, have some feelings of self-worth and self-competence. The Illuminati have long understood the value in having their members progress through the levels of initiation, and to pass through tests that bestow a sense of achievement upon the slave. When the Illuminati in Bavaria had their safe houses raided, their paperwork showed extensive disciple and training programs. At first glance, raising an initiate through an initiate degree system of training may not smack of mind-control, but it is like an anchor that ties in the mind-control. It is important for the Illuminati to attach an occult value system to the mind-control so that the slave is more resistant to wanting freedom, because their self-worth and identity are tied up with the Illuminati.

"STRIPPED" OF FEELINGS

Another side-effect of the total mind-control is that the deeper alters of a victim, and indeed often even the front alters are unsuccessful in morally meaningful relationships such as love and friendship. The reader may be wondering, what does Fritz mean by "morally meaningful"? Allow me to take several paragraphs to explain ... Has the reader ever tried to recall a name which you knew, but your mind seems blocked? And yet, when someone offers this name or that name, you realize that it doesn't have the correct feel, the correct rhythm, the correct beginning. Your mind can recognize what it is looking for on a subconscious level, but you are not pulling the name up to the conscious. Your mind can look for things on a subconscious level and identify what it is looking for, without consciously telling you.

Has the reader ever loved someone for many years? If you have, you know that you didn't consciously think of them and your love for them every second of the day. Grief or love or another strong emotion can lay in our subconscious mind and yet still influence our thinking. It is not a matter of us turning this love on. It simply is there quietly in the background exerting its influence on our mind.

Grief, love, anger, and other strong emotions are similar to when our mind is seeking for a name subconsciously. These emotions seek out the appropriate scenes, and items in the surrounding area, and colors and sounds that go with the emotion that the subconscious mind feels. A blue person will notice "blue, sad" type things around them. Other things just don't fit the subconscious fill in the blank. In other words, our emotions determine our perspective on what we see in life. Our emotional perspective guides what items our mind focuses on. This is why it is absolutely imperative for balanced human growth that a person feel compassion, love and sympathy directed toward oneself.

Feeling loved in turn opens the mind to focus its emotional-perception-guidance system on compassion, love and sympathy. In contrast with most people, many parts of total mind-controlled slaves are never meant to have feelings, or if the parts do, they repressed, suppress, and dissociate their feelings. Our emotions play a fundamental role in a person's moral life. They transform values into actions. This is what is called strength of will, courage of convictions, etc. Emotions play a critical role in strength of will and courage of convictions.

To be stripped of feeling emotions, strips the victim of one of the ingredients to make and carry out moral choices. This helps explain why emotions are harnessed so completely by the programmers. When researchers have studied unemotional people, they find that their dealings with others are shallow, lifeless, and mechanical. The programmers want their programmed assassins, espionage agents, prostitutes, etc. to be mechanical. People rarely want to form friendships with unemotional persons. Of course, the parts that are created to interface with the public are programmed to be effacious, gracious, and to sparkle. But the deeper parts which influence the victim's own internal thoughts, which the victim wisely keeps to himself, fail to connect with the outside world emotionally.

Having been stripped of emotions, the slave is consequently stripped of one of the most important ingredients involved in morality. An unemotional or emotionally deficient person or alter may suffer from a particular kind of a "morally-weak will". This is because failure to do what a person believes is good and failure to restrain from doing what one believes is bad is a natural consequence of lacking emotions such as care, concern, compassion, courage, love and sympathy. Certain emotions are critical for doing and being moved to do what is right and in not doing what one knows is bad.

Friendships are one of the most valuable commodities a person can have. The victim is stripped of external friendships. They may substitute interactions within their own internal world as a way to substitute for this loss. In normal human activity, two people in love intertwine the activities of their lives into the complex whole of their love relationship. A walk together is not seen as a walk, but as a joint expression of their relationship.

Humans emotionally value what is good for their friends and lovers. Without emotional attachments, the relationship is only a facade. The victims of mind-control are taught how to create great facades. Unfortunately, they fool many of their therapists, and therefore don't step out of the make-believe roles they play out.

Human love and friendship is one of the most vital, powerful, fundamentally good items of human behaviour. They provide the foundation for many other things. Without love and friendship, the victim's alters live in isolation, alienation, abandonment, discontinuity, and purposelessness. Cisco's half of the book will discuss some specific programming tactics that are used to hide the "shadow" alters that are used to take any emotions that the principally used alters might develop. What we have been covering is that one of the side effects of "stripping" the victims from feeling emotions is to cripple them from taking moral stands, from seeing love & concern in the world around them, and from reaching out & forming ties to the outside world.

PROGRAMMING TO HIDE REVEALING DREAMS

The programmers realize that the mind is able to reveal secrets via dreams. During the programming a Mother-of-darkness will be assigned to a child and she will have to wake that child up when it is in its deepest sleep to ask the child what's happening and if the child is dreaming. If dreams are surfacing, the programmers know their programming is not holding.

When the child's mind which is being programmed no longer releases revealing dreams, the programmers know that their programming is holding. The front alters receive repeated programming (hypnotic commands, etc.) not to dream or to know their dreams. When the programming begins to collapse, the deeper alters will begin to dream and flood with memories. The slave must have their dream sealing programs reinstated approx. every three years. If this is not done, dreams (which are actually memories) will begin to surface. A therapist can also help the victim train their mind to remember their dreams (dream state of mind).

PROGRAMMING LANGUAGE

A skilful programmer can use language to communicate at several levels. The programmer can use derogatory tones, big words that the child doesn't understand and obscure language that confuses the child in order to humiliate, dominate and confuse the child. He can also pronounce the words with a twist in order to protect the programming. Have you ever met someone in the occult world who pronounces many of his words strange? The programmers are also big on play on words which are done intentionally to protect the programming. The victims of the occult programming must deal with symbology. Those who attempt to understand programming must also deal with the world of symbology.

The programmer must learn to think like a child and to step into the child's world. Likewise, the deprogrammer must learn to step into the victim's world. Certainly, the deprogrammer wants to stay grounded in reality, but he also wants to be able to understand the world that the victim must live in. The deeper parts of the victim lives in a magical world, full of demons and powers from other dimensions. When the Illuminati carry out programming, they often frame what they are doing in magical and satanic terms.

Most therapists do not want to step into the victim’s world to communicate with them. Just as the psychologists want this author to step into the psychologists’ world to communicate with them, the psychologist should realize that the victim would like the same. It is irrelevant whether the therapist believes that objects can be demonized or not. The deeper alters have spent their life-time learning how demons attach themselves to objects, and how to gain power to cause demons to attach themselves to objects. A deeper alter may have the occult wisdom to place demons into a fluid so that that fluid can be drank by a child. From their understanding of demonology, these demons are so powerful that the only non-lethal entry for them into the child is by the child drinking a particular fluid. These images are the images that deeper alters experience during the programming rituals. The language & images of the programming will be very magical, mystical and satanic.

EFFECTS OF PROGRAMMING

The mind is a holographic type of memory. The psyche of the multiple personality is a multiple image hologram. The body is set up to match the mind. When one alter switches to another, another hologram seems to take control over the mind. This is like the instructions for the body are written on a card, and when the switch occurs, the holographic cards are shuffled like a deck of cards. In fact, the programming have used this analogy as part of their programming codes.

FALSE IMPLANTED MEMORIES

Once the truth about trauma-based mind-control began coming out, a massive counterattack by the controlled establishment occurred. This counter attack was that you can not trust the memories of the victims. Numerous establishment articles call attention to memory research, especially memory research into how to implant an illusory memory.

Two examples of this massive counterattack are Bruce Bower’s article in Science News, 8/24/96, pp. 126-127 entitled "Remembrance of Things False Scientists incite illusory memories and explore their implications".& Harvard psychologist Daniel L. Schacter’s book Searching for Memory (1996).

First, these countless articles prove that the controlled psychiatric research community is working hard at developing techniques to implant false memories. This is indeed a big part of the mind-control, producing cover memories and false identities and false histories for alters. However, these articles always ignore the enormous evidence of severe abuse and government/cult involvement in the lives of countless victims of mind-control. This author has seen first hand the Illuminati-satanic cult-CIA involvement in the lives of a number of these people. The events of these people’s lives, which this author has often witnessed, can’t be explained away by poor memory. Further, traumas that are so severe as to cause amnesia walls, are locked up by the mind and preserved. They are like a mummy in a tomb in Egypt, that is still locked up in its preserved state. Memories that aren’t locked up can deteriate and be contaminated, just like a dead body that is left to rot, but programming traumas are not in that category of memory. Remember, the mind protect itself. Research shows that the mind does not want to latch onto false memories that hurt it. For instance, when researchers try to get subjects to remember a kind parent hurting them, the mind will resist the false memory.

PERCEPTION CLOUDS MEMORY

The brain in order to be efficient uses its framework of knowledge--its world view--in which to hang new incoming knowledge. This author’s Be Wise As Serpents book considered this to be the biggest barrier to people coming to the truth. Because education, television and society in general control how people’s framework of knowledge is built, and these frameworks are built skilfully to exclude major truths that would expose how the World Order is controlling mankind, it is really difficult to speak to people about mind-control, and the control of the world in general.

The victim of mind-control has frameworks built into his subconscious that make it difficult to drive the truth into their thinking. Memories are stored as they relate to these frameworks. An efficient way around that is to speak and teach in way that the subconscious mind is spoken to, and the conscious barriers are by-passed. The mind puts up a grid to prevent non-approved information from coming in that doesn’t fit it’s accepted concept of truth. Much of this grid is fear based. The problem for the victim is that once their mind is bent a certain way by the programmers, it will naturally create a grid to protect the programmed world-view.

This is why the external philosophies-news broadcasts-disinformation from establishment magazines, etc. that are layered in on top of programming, (see Chapter 12) are like a protective coat sprayed on to make sure the foundation doesn't weather over time. For instance, the front alters of some of the most severely tortured victims have latched onto the idea that Satanic Ritual Abuse doesn't exist, and are actually some of the greatest public crusaders against people believing that SRA exists. The external politically-correct view is in this case protecting the deeper programming.

FALSE FEELINGS. Using drugs & hypnosis, and the creation story about God breathing things into existence, the "love" & "kindness" of the programmer is placed into Moriah the Wind. When this is done, should a gatekeeper alter hear something negative about their master, they instantly go into the melting (drug memory) where drugs made them feel one with their programmer. This is refrained during programming as "the peace of God."

ELDETIC IMAGERY. There is a type of visual imagery called eidetic imagery. 5 to 10 % of children have it, but it is very rare in adults. Eidetic imagery is similar to a photographic memory. People with eidetic imagery can look at any object or page of numbers and when they look away the image of what they have seen is as clear as a photograph. They can focus on any detail of the image, enlarge it, make out more details than what they had originally seen, and then they can carry this image with them for several days, just like the rest of us carry a photograph. This author has not seen much info on this, & believes that further research into this topic might reveal some more methods that the mind-control programmers are utilizing. Child-hood impressions & memories can have a far greater impact and retention than adult memories. This paragraph has only introduced this subject of eidetic imagery & childhood vs adult memory ability.

FINAL SUMMATION. The programming regimen destroys the victims sense of self, so that the person has only an identity within the cult. The victim can not express rage over their own victimization, but is encouraged by the Illuminati's satanic beliefs to express violence & rage toward others, thereby creating a mechanism to help perpetuate the mind-control. The rage also seeps out as self-punishment. A deep loneliness sets into victims, & they despair of hope. They see no place to turn to except to whatever cult is controlling them. This chapter has focused on the type of skills & knowledge psychologists study, & how this knowledge can be applied to insuring compliance by the slave.

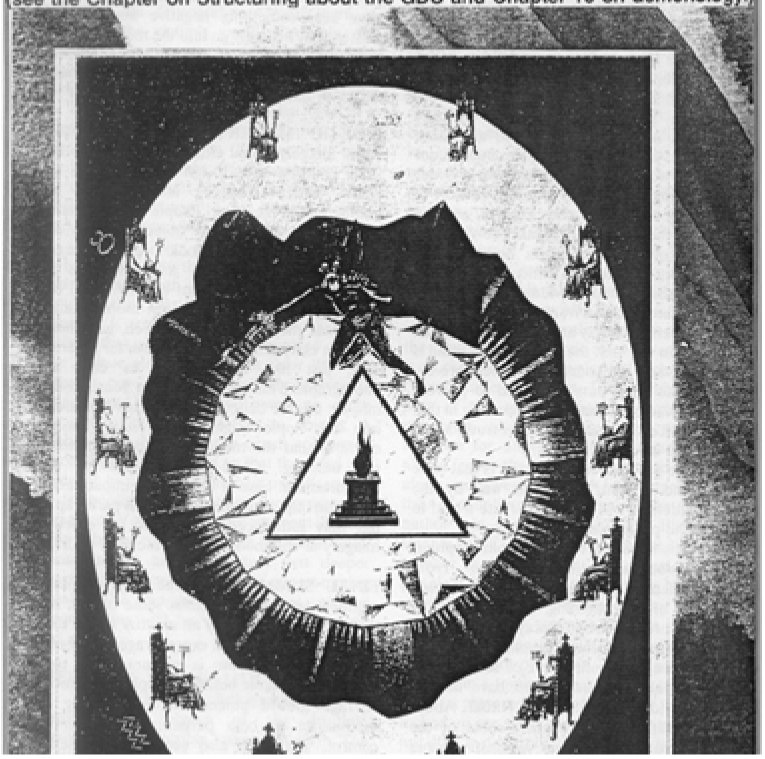

The internal GRAND DRUID COUNCIL & winged LUCIFER who precides over them. (see the Chapter on Structuring about the GDC and Chapter 10 on demonology.)

p_9-2.jpg 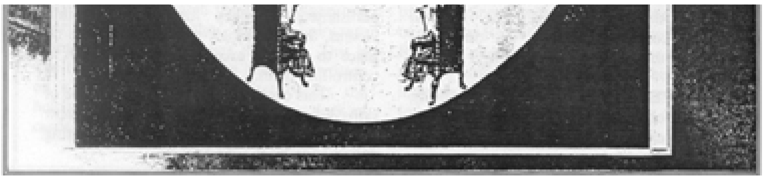

CHAPTER 10: THE 10th SCIENCE — USING SPIRITUAL THINGS TO CONTROL A PERSON.

What makes a programmed multiple tick? This chapter will provide some of the most important answers to that question. In this chapter, you will be provided with important brand-new information.

CONTENTS

- PART A. Intro on the importance of spiritual programming tactics.
- PART B. The history of Programmed Golem
  - KABBALISTIC BLACK MAGIC
- PART C. The 3 foundations: Loss of identity, Fear, and Demons
  - UNDERSTANDING THE RELATIONSHIP BETWEEN FEAR & DEMONS
  - DEMON POSSESSION & SPIRIT GUARDS
  - The Use of Giving Demonic Assistance to entrap.
  - The Use of Occult Focal Points.
  - DOES IT GLORIFY DEMONS TO CAST THEM OUT?
- PART D. A complete Chronology of how the victim experiences the early spiritual programming. Steps a through o. (by Cisco)
  - FINE-TUNED
  - HIDING THE INTERNAL SELF-HELPER
  - INTERJECT DISKS
- PART E. Specific spiritual programming maneuvers
  - WHITE GOLD, other information

PART A. INTRO on the IMPORTANCE of SPIRITUAL PROGRAMMING TACTICS

It is important for therapists and ministers to understand the spiritual ramifications of what has been done. The witchcraft, spells, and demonology is a way of life for the deeper alters. The programming and the hypnotic trances are deeply embedded into the ritual life of the deeper alters of a mind-controlled slave. An enormous amount of suffering has transpired because therapists have dealt with obvious spiritual problems with psychological techniques that aren't even remotely related to the real problem. Secular therapists can be quick to offer glib criticism of the subject of demonology, a subject they often know nothing about. (While Christians generally acknowledge that mankind is in a spiritual war (cf. 2 COR 10:3-5), they too are generally ignorant of Satan's devices, and are not skilled in dealing with spiritual attacks from the world, flesh and the demons.)

An analogy for demonology is microbiology. Many people never see a virus, and many people never see demons. Some people still debate whether the germ theory of disease is correct. There will certainly be differences of opinion about demonology--anything said about it is bound to find someone who disagrees. But just like it has been useful for many sick people's health to deal with viruses, victims of Illuminati mind-control have found it helpful to deal with demons. Demonology can be a useful subject for understanding programming from both a programmer's point of view and a deprogrammer's point of view. If this information is useful, then it will have served a purpose.

Men of God, who have found themselves in remote places (where trauma-based mind-control is not practiced), have found themselves confronted by obvious cases of demon possession that have been successfully handled by deliverance prayer. This author has personally witnessed many people who have had wonderful healings due to deliverances. I rejoice in their freedom. I pray that others who portray themselves as therapists would come to the same place that they could appreciate healings even though they do not recognize the spiritual dimension of human life, or even better yet, that they would recognize the spiritual side of humankind. In Asia, it was common for this author to see flies swarm over people and food. Demons swarm around people in that type of abundance. This is why the title Lord of the Flies (Beelzebub) is the name of a chief demon, and is sometimes used as another name for Satan himself.

Part B. The History of the Programmed Golem

KABBALISTIC BLACK MAGIC

A number of the Illuminati bloodlines (and sects) that are involved in trauma-based total mind-control are Askenazi hasidic bloodlines. Legends abound from the 15th century onward about how the Askenazi hasidic leaders created golem to serve them. These golem have been called "benevolent robots". For those readers who are unaware of where the word golem came from, it is used once in the Word of God in Ps 139:16, "Your eyes [God's eyes] saw my substance, being yet unformed. And in Your book they were written, the days fashioned for me." This is believed by the Kabballists to refer to Adam when he was only a body without a soul.

Golem are believed to be soulless bodies. One can almost hear the rationalization in medieval times when torture, and black magic or a trance state ended up creating an alter personality that this magical part was viewed as soulless, because it was only created via magic. This personality (alter) didn't exist like real people, it was merely a golem in the magicians' eyes--therefore it could be abused or used as a robot, because it was soulless.

The use of Cabalistic black magic in mainline Illuminati programming in the deeper aspects has led this author to believe that during the torture of jews in the concentration camps--Dr. Mengele was assisted by some Askenazi hasidic black magic adepts who gave him some of the secret names of God. The Cabalistic magic viewpoint is that there are creative powers intrinsic in God's names. God's names are used by the Illuminati for such alters as the gems (jewels) from which other alters are created. For instance the gems will be tortured while Cabalistic black magic is employed to create more parts.

In such deeper aspects of programming, what occurs? Have the Illuminati programmers created new parts via psychologic torture techniques, have they created them with black magic or both? One thing is sure, if the "golem's mind"--that is that if parts of the victim subjected to trauma-based mind-control remember what occurred, then it will be associated with a Cabalistic black magic ritual.

There are several other features of Cabalistic black magic that are important features of Illuminati programming. Many things pertaining to the mind-control have slipped out into public view at one time or another but are not recognized as having anything to do with programming. The European Jew Joseph Achron wrote the musical Golem Suite (1932) for an orchestra. The first piece of music introduces the golem and the last piece of music is the exact reverse mirror image of the first piece and it represents the disintegration of the golem.

In programming, the deeper alters may have a musical cord to call them up, and the reverse of that cord will "disintegrate" them back into the mind. The following excerpts are taken from Gershom Scholem's book Kabbalah. (NY: Keter Pub. House Jerusalem, 1974.) "General summaries of Kabbalistic doctrine rarely referred to its 'practical' side [which Scholem go on to explain is black magic dealing with demons and blood]..." Of course not, the practical side of the Kabbala is occult--secret knowledge. It is the secrets of black magic. "Various ideas and practices connected with the concept of the golem [mind-controlled slave] also took their place in practical Kabbalah through a combination of features drawn from the Sefer Yezirah and a number of magical traditions." (Kabbala, p. 183) The practical side of the Kabbala which was concerned with creating golem employed trances, magic and visualization. Scholem writes, "In this circle the Sefer Yezirah was nearly always interpreted in the manner of Saadiah and Shabbetai Donnolo [who was into what is known as Satanism], with an added tendency to see the book as a guide for both mystics and adepts of magic.

The study of the book was considered successful when the mystic attained the vision of the golem, which was connected with a specific ritual of a remarkable ecstatic [altered state] character." (ibid., p.40) Two other points should be made showing the connection between medieval ashkenzim black magic practices and the programming going on today. The medieval jewish magicians would use the secret Kabbalistic names of God in accordance with detailed sets of instructions to try and create a golem. The golem in turn would say the combination of hebrew letters in reverse order. This has been done in modern programming.

Further, the "Seal of the Holy One" in medieval times was written on the forehead of the golem. This is the word "emet". At some point the word's first letter (an aleph) is erased and this leaves the word "met" which in

Hebrew means "dead". Such types of sealings have also been done in modern times with deeper parts of slaves.

PART C. The 3 foundations: Loss of identity, Fear, and Demons

The programming has three basic foundations, fear, rejection of God (which entails the rejection of who they are), and the entrapment by demonic possession. If the person is paralyzed in fear, unable to seek God's help, unable to know who they are in Christ & to see God's plan for their life, and lives in bondage to demons, then the Illuminati programming will hold.

The Word of God states that each person is intricately designed by God and developed according to His plan (Ps. 139:14-16). A person's self-image of who they are profoundly affects everything else about them. The Illuminati want to insure that the potential for good that the person is born with is destroyed or controlled. They want the victim to feel rejected and cheated by God. This is what Colossians 2:8 warns about, & then the next Bible verse states, "...for in Him dwelleth all the fullness of the Godhead bodily. And you are complete in Him..."

If the slave could ever be complete through their devotion to God, they would have no use for their Illuminati masters. The Scriptures in several Psalms teach that God made us in accordance with His plans for our lives. Even today He is not finished with us. "We are (present continuous action verb) His workmanship..." Eph. 2:10 A 124 pg. secret CIA book Manual on Human Resources, 1983, (recently declassified via the Freedom of Information Act) states, "When a threat is used, it should always be implied that the subject himself is to blame by using words such as, "You leave me no other choice but to..." He should never be told to comply "or else!"... The threat of coercion usually weakens or destroys resistance more effectively than coercion itself. For example, the threat to inflict pain can trigger fears more damaging than the immediate sensation of pain."

UNDERSTANDING THE RELATIONSHIP BETWEEN FEAR & DEMONS

Dr. W. Grey Walter, of the British Burden Neurological Institute at Bristol, England did a lot of research involving drugs, electroshock and demonology. Walter would drill from 50 to 100 holes in his patients heads and then insert electrodes into their heads. The patients would walk around with a beret-like covering over their electrode implanted heads. The suborbital area of the brain was determined by Walter as being the seat of demonic fears. Walter would cause a small lesion in the paracingulate region to calm patients who saw demons. This in effect is like a miniature lobotomy. The electricity causes a selective lesion. What his work showed was that there is a connection between the area of the brain that creates fear, and images of demons that people see.

The Word of God in 2 TIM 1:7 states categorically that "God hath not given us the spirit of fear; but of power, and of love, and of a sound mind." This means that the Spirit of fear comes from the Satan and his world system. The Spirit of fear is demonic, and it has the power to paralyze its victim. This Spirit of Fear is nothing less than a demonic anointing. That demonic anointing drives away positive angelic spirits. Christ asked, "Why are ye so fearful? How is it that ye have no faith?" The demonic anointing of fear meant that faith was lacking. If we listen to the Word of God, we get faith. (ROM 10:17). This is why it is important to the programmers that their deeper alters are programmed not to be able to read or hear the Word of God (Holy Bible). If the victim could hear the Word of God, they would receive faith, which would tamper with the demonic anointing of fear.

On a spiritual level, our fears are open doors for Satan to carry out an act. It is a vicious bondage loop, because then the victim says, "I knew it was going to happen, I knew from the beginning." Little does the victim realize that the Spirit of Fear within them, opened the door for Satan to carry out his will in that area. In fact, it is standard procedure within the secret societies and intelligence agencies to identify what fears their opposition have, and then build upon those fears. It does no good to spread disinformation about things that the enemy is not fearful of. But if a fear is identified, they will play upon that as much as possible.

In Howard, Michael, Strategic Deception in the Second World War. Vol. 5 of British Intelligence in the Second World War. W.W. Norton & Co.: NY, 1995, p.33-34, "One of the first rules of deception is to play on the real fears,..." On page 4 1-42 Howard quotes a British intelligence directive, "It may be taken as a principle of strategic deception that it is neither economical in time nor productive in results to attempt to produce in the enemy anxiety over an area concerned with which the enemy himself has had no previous fear...Knowledge of the trend of enemy anxiety was therefore of very great value...On the foundation of fear, and having regard both to inherent plausibility and to contact identifications which the enemy was likely to have made, it was possible to build up a fictitious and misleading structure and to represent Allied capabilities and intentions as very different from what they really were."

In this author's previous writings, the connection between demonology and military tactics in general and specifically British intelligence have been closely documented. Military structures are based upon demon structures. It is no surprise then, that demons and intelligence groups study to determine what a person's fears are. And it is no wonder that they attempt to instil as many fears as possible into the victim.

DEMON POSSESSION & SPIRIT GUARDS

Christians are called upon to guard what was spiritually entrusted to them by the using the Holy Spirit (2 TIM 1:14). The Illuminati do a mirror image of this, by layering in spirits (evil ones) to guard things in the system. For instance, in the VoL 2 book, the programming parallels to the movie Labyrinth were discussed in chapter 5. It was mentioned how the dogs portrayed guardians. Demons named Toto are layered in to protect the spinner kittens. If one were to try to activate the spinner kittens without going through the proper chain of command & codes, the guardian demons known as Totos, or after Dorothy's Toto will be activated. The spinner's in fact are often called "Dorothys".

Some other examples of guardians spirits that are placed into a system are Bes, the spirit that rules the dwarfs; Geb, the voice behind the earth God in a system; Pan, who has various roles, including being a protector of the green wood; and Shu, which is the voice "behind the wind" which controls the internal weather within a alter system's world. The foundations of a system are the demons layered in at the beginning. Spirits of Confusion, Despair, Torment are called down by the programmers and laid in. Lying and Perverse Spirits are brought in too.

At first this may seem like very subjective sci-fi to the reader. Hopefully, after the programming rituals are described in detail, and a basic foundation concerning what demons are is laid, the reader will have received a more systematic understanding of the topic. The goal is teach the reader programming as a programmer would understand it. The victim should not be made ashamed of demonic attachments. That serves no spiritual benefit for the victim, and only contributes more guilt and shame, and adds to the problem of giving them hope. The victim has been a helpless victim.

"Mystery" demons (which is not their actual name) are placed into the child when they are innocent babies. Part of the power of the mystery demons, is that they are able to remain anonymous within their host's body. They remain in the host secretly generally for the person's lifetime. These mystery demons have to answer to their chain of command. Within a victim's alter parts, are demons which have their own ranks and commanders. Christians who carry out deliverances will deal those commanders.

The Catholic Church, which has been so active in trauma-based mind-control and in placing in the Spirits of Legion into a victim, had one of their clergy write, "Evil is Someone, Someone who is multiple and who name is legion..." (Mauriac, Francois. Life of St. Margaret of Cortona.) The Catholic Church's official public stance is that Demon possession is rare. On Aug. 15, 1972, Pope Paul VI put out a motu proprio which abolished the order of exorcist. This office had already become rather rare, and besides included men who were mind-control programmers. Cases of "demonic possession" of Catholics are occasionally taken to places like Georgetown Hospital in Wash. D.C. which is run by Jesuits working in tandem with the CIA. Accounts of exorcisms of Catholics are filled with clues that the victims of "demonic possession" are victims also of trauma-based occult-based mindcontrol.

This writer, trying to explain a difficult subject (demonology), feels fortunate to be able to recommend a book which does a good job of explaining it, this is Howard O. Pittman's book Demons. (Foxworth, MS: Philadelphian Pub. House, c. 1988). I originally read the book in 1992, and have had it recommended by those who work in the area of demonology. The book is written by a devout Christian who worked 28 years in the field of law enforcement during his life. The book explains such things as: how man is made in the image of God (and as such is a clone, so to speak of God;) How demon possession has come about due to man's sovereign will allowing it; & How demons can interact with the physical world.

He explains how Satan despatches orders from his throne which go through a chain of command, and how special emphasis is placed on Christians. He explains the forms of demons, their expertise, how they can read minds, and how they have no love for their master, and no love for themselves. Nor does their master have any love for them. (I, Fritz Springmeier, your author have discovered in talking to people for years, that it is essential for people to grasp that the mind of Satan is devoid of love, and that where love doesn't seek its own, Satan's mind always has his own interest in both mind & action. Everything in his world system is functioning for a goal of his, they are not random events, because he is a control-freak.)

Pittman describes warring demons--which look like giant humans and are the cream of Satan's crop.' These warring demons are assigned to formulate wars upon the earth. While Pittman is a spirit-led Christian, it is interesting that a non-Christian historian/author William Bramley, (of the Gods of Eden), who believes that the "aliens" were viewed as angels, has found traces of proof that the aliens (angels) were involved in the creation of wars down through the history of mankind. "Now the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits and doctrines of devils; Speaking lies in hypocrisy; having their conscience seared with a hot iron;" 1 TIM 4:1-2.

Pittman writes about 1 TIM 4:1-2, "In this passage of scripture, we are told that in the last days the devils would have their own doctrine. We know that if the Bible tells us that devils would have their own doctrines, then, most assuredly the Bible would tell us what these doctrines would be. Evidence of what the devils will be teaching is found in the following passage of scripture: 'But he knowing their thoughts, said unto them, Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation; and a house divided against a house falleth. If Satan also be divided against himself, how shall his kingdom stand? Because ye say that I cast out devils through Beelzebub.' (Luke 11:17-18)

From this very scripture, it is clear what the devils will be teaching as doctrine. They will be teaching that THERE ARE NO SUCH BEINGS AS DEMONS! Where are these demons teaching their doctrine? They are teaching it in the churches to the Christians! They are teaching their doctrine to the very ones who have the potential to believe that these demons are real and can expose these beings. If Satan did try to reveal himself and his helpers, then his house would be divided." Pittman warns, "From congregation to congregation, from one church to another church throughout all this land, we find preacher after preacher playing down the existence of demons and even the existence of Satan! Then, there are others who, when they admit that Satan and his demons are real, deemphasize their importance and capability. Not only are local ministers doing this, but many Christian authors are doing this through their books...The false doctrines of devils are intended to enhance the anonymity of Satan and his angels. Much of this misteaching is spread through good Christians who have been sold a lie and really believe what they say." The Word of God is clear that not one sin entered into this world without Satan. Every sin committed by mankind is (according to the Word of God) the result and influence of Satan. However, because Satan and his demons are masters at deception and at staying behind the scenes, and remaining anonymous they are not discovered. They are better at such deception than the intelligence agencies that are Illuminati fronts, and to give credit where due, the NSA, CIA, and MI-6 are good at what they do.

The programmer will be looking for methods to open up a person to demons, and he will be setting up scenarios so that the victim will reject the Spirit of God in their life. 1 JN 5:18 teaches that a person's identity in Christ protects against the wicked one, so the victim's identity in Christ will be stolen very soon by the programmers. According to the Word of God, submission and humility before God are also said to be protections against evil spirits.(cf. JS 4:7, & 1 PTR 5:6,8,9). Resistance to catching demons, involves a person "not giving place" to the demons, (Eph. 4:27) and to be strengthened by Christ (Phil. 4:13). How does this happen? The Word of God teaches us that the Spirit of God in our life repels demons naturally. A close walk of fellowship with the Spirit of God is one spiritually natural immune-builder. We need to get Christ deeper and deeper into our lives. However, the programmer will deflect this, and say that submission and humility before God means to submit to some church authority, and of course this church authority will be part of the mind-control abuse system.

The Use of Giving Demonic Assistance to entrap.

One of the principles (giving tactics) of the spirit world is that if you go to get help from demons, they have a spiritual opportunity to enter into your life in other ways. This involves spiritual laws. People, who have been healed by occult healers, have discovered that it set them up for demonic activity in their life. Of course, it is easy to write this, but often only the victims of occult help, who have already learned the lesson the hard way, believe it.

The ultimate that Lucifer can pretend to give is divinity. Divinity is sometimes symbolized by the Illuminati as an 8 on its side or the infinity symbol. The divine within a hierarchy member is called the High Self. It also goes by the name Dian Y Glas or Blue God in the hierarchy's parlance. The given names of Joan, Janicot, Jean, and Jonet are popular in generational witchcraft families because they mean the High Self. The cabalistic name for the High Self (internal divinity) is NESHAMAH. According to Illuminati hierarchy beliefs, the High Self can only be communicated to via symbols, music and myth that go through the unconscious mind. In other words, don't talk to it, show it. This is part of the reason Illuminati witch covens make noise in ceremonies, dance and use objects, they believe these are essential to communicate to their High Self.

The Use of Occult Focal Points.

Another principle (giving tactic) of the spirit world is that focal points (occult objects) are used to bring demonic entities into a person's life. I can not write a technical manual on the mechanics of how or why the presence of evil spirits is aided by amulets, rings, occult jewelry, rock & roll albums, etc., but the fact is, that demonic entities ARE AIDED. It is common for mind-controlled Illuminati slaves to keep demonized nick-nacks given by their programmers, handlers or other contact people. Generally, the mind-controlled slave's front system is unaware of the spiritual ramifications of the occult objects.

The ancient grimoires are used in rituals & programming. Even if it is seldom that therapists work that deep in a system, it still might be useful to provide a list (for reference sake) of the ancient grimoires which are used to invoke demons:

Almadel, the

Arbatel of Magic, the

Black Pullet, the

Book of Albertus Magnus, the

Enchiridion of Pope Leo

Fourth Book of Cornelius Agrippa

Grand Grimoire, the

Grimoire of Pope Honorius

Grimorium Verum, the

Heptameron, the

Lesser Key of Solomon (aka Goetia)

Key of Solomon (aka Legemeton)

Pauline Art, the

Sword of Moses, the

Theosophia Pneumatica

The Use of giving occult power for SOMETHING IN RETURN. One of the tactics of controlling a person is to give them occult power. Generally, people who have psychic abilities and other occult powers, are reluctant to seek a true Christian faith. Because they enjoy the power they have, they will not trade leaving the occult world and their power behind for freedom.

In the case of many mind-controlled slaves, the programmer will create a legitimate spirit-filled Christian front. He knows that the spiritual principle, "A double-minded man is unstable in all his ways" will work in his favor. Even though he creates a religious front that is opposed to what the programmer wants, a thousand-minded person has no choice but to rely on the programmer. The programmer is the only one who can bring order out of chaos. The victim is so unstable with all his or her programmed and hurting parts, that these parts need their programmer to function. Evil spirits are like unwelcome visitors to our home. They can even be compared to an unwelcome mouse running and hiding in our house. That a visitor or mouse troubles us does not mean that he possesses us. Christians have problems with unwelcome mice as well as unwelcome demons. Mice corrupt our homes, likewise demons come to corrupt the House of God.

The programmer knows what encourages demonic activity. This is why certain occultic structures are built into the mind, and why the systems are set up to carry out occult rituals regularly. Some victims of mind-control are unfortunately going to witches for their therapy. A therapist who is a pagan witch, and who encourages further occult activity, is preventing the victim from gaining freedom. This is because there is a spiritual foundation to much of the control. (Readers would be surprised at how many psychologists are part of the occult world.)

How much of our life has been turned over to Christ? Many Christians have what could be termed "hidden rooms" and hidden compartments in their life & their thinking which they have not given to Christ. In fact, many Christians compartmentalize their life into their secular job and their Sunday of Christianity. In this sense, their lives are like a house with many rooms, many of which are not given to Christ, but are available for other spirits. Even the non-multiple Christian will have problems with compartmentalization in life opening a door to demons. But Christ asked his disciples to go farther than just stay in fellowship, he commanded them to heal and cast out demons. MT 10:7,8. He also commanded his disciples to evangelize. The strongest deliverance have been seen on the cutting edge of evangelism, as a testimony to God's power.

DOES IT GLORIFY DEMONS TO CAST THEM OUT?

The threat of deliverance has the Satanic leaders of the Illuminati scared enough that they have actively disseminated a doctrine among the Christian churches that it gives power to Satan to believe in demons. There is a kernel of truth here, but it doesn't give glory to Satan to defeat demons and to expel them. If you were fired from your job, would that glorify you? No. Defeating demons is actually showing how weak they are, not glorifying them. Healing and deliverance are part of the ministry of freedom that Christ demonstrated to his disciples, and they are to accompany the preaching of freedom (evangelism).

PART D. A complete Chronology of how the victim experiences the early spiritual programming. (by Cisco)

Steps of Programming:

a. The mother-fetus trauma
b. The Apple-Woodsman ritual
c. The 1st Ritual Theft of Birthright
d. The 2nd Ritual Theft of Birthright
e. The Satanic Wedding Prog. Ritual
f. The Lockup of the Guardian Angel
g. The Revelation of Demons
h. Providing Satanic Toys
i. The Participation Ritual
j. The layering in of witches/monsters
k. The prog. base-Fairy Tales told
1. The Ritual to Test Loyalty to Oaths
m. Prog. building blocks- Nursery Rhymes
n. The Hell Fire Ceremony
o. The Cutting the Penis Ritual
p. The Traitors Death Ritual

It is important to understand the nature and the sequence of these standard programming rituals. I, Cisco, have decided to reveal them so that the therapists will comprehend better what the programming is really all about. We have touched on a few of these rituals in our two previous books, but we haven’t spelled them out. These programming rituals in real life are extremely traumatizing, even to the hardened cult parents who often must offer their children up to abuse that even they don’t want to happen to their children. When these programming rituals happen to a child, they are so severe that they split the child’s mind. We don’t want therapists and readers falling apart by reading about these programming rituals, so you will find the descriptions of these rituals are clinical, and are written without a great deal of emotional content.

a. The mother-fetus trauma

We have written about the traumas given to the mother and fetus in chapter 1 of this book and chapter 1 of the Vol. 2 book. Between these two books, there are approximately 9 pages concerning the traumas at this pre-birth stage. It could also be explained that the intensity and nature of the pre-birth traumas relate to whether the mother is Illuminati or not.

During the 1940’s-’50s the Illuminati made it a high priority to marry members of the Illuminati to Christians for the purposes of infiltrating the churches. After a 20 year period of intense infiltration to such groups as the Southern Baptists, the Mennonites, the Pentecostal Holiness, the Four-Square, and the Assemblies of God, then they could rely upon their members within those groups to generationally continue their presence within these groups. Initially, they wanted the infiltration to be covered by marriage into these denominations. If a mother were not of the Illuminati, she was typically prepared for an overwhelming trauma to be administered during her pregnancy. If she drank coffee or tea, she could be given potent herbs daily to set the stage for later drugs administered during the torture. The herbs set the stage for drugs which would make the mind more pliable to hypnosis, because many Christians are resistent to hypnosis. When the Illuminati would finally by force grab and traumatize the mother, their goal would be to see if they could get the mother to renounce (blaspheme) Christ. They hoped to use this to blackmail the person into future submission and shame. They also were gaining experience into what kind of resistance they would face in the final takeover. An hypnotic trigger would be attached to this torture memory, and then the mother would be hypnotically made to forget the

b. The Apple-Woodsman ritual.

The powerful Tin Man Ritual is described on page 103 of the Vol. 2 Formula book. It is where the parent(s) presents the child to Lucifer, "the god of light". The Tin Man appeared in the first picture (page 4) of our illustrated Guide to Monarch Programming. It was positioned there because it is often the first ritual memory. The child eats an apple that is poisoned and dies, and then is brought back to life because the coven has the antidote on hand. Next, the parent dedicates the child to Lucifer; if not, then the child will have its head severed by the Tin Man’s ax. This dedication mocks the Pentecostal dedication. Bear in mind, that some parents and programmers can only justify what they do, because they feel they are following "Lucifer’s orders." They will say, "We do it to please Lucifer." They feel Lucifer wants the child in its purest state, so they will do the moon child ceremony in the womb to allow Lucifer to plant his spirits in the fetus (which is a mockery of God’s spirit in the Christ-Child.)

c. The 1st Ritual Theft of Birthright

When the child victim is four, this ritual typically is done to them during the 10 days to 2 weeks of rituals done around Easter. The ritual is not always done at this time. If both parents are Illuminati, then their primary job is to see their children get programmed; but if only one parent is Illuminati, then the group may have to work with the child whenever they can manipulate some time to do so. Also the Illuminati have so many children to put through programming, that many simply do not start this ritual at Easter. But if they are not done at Easter, they may be told when it is done that it is the time around Easter. The programmers have certain windows of time for certain programs and schedules to follow for each child. They can be untrue to the real calendar date, and still set the internal clock/calendars of the slave correctly later.

This first ritual is to make sure the child victim experiences a staged rejection of God where they are found unworthy to be in "His’ Book of Life. This ritual like all the others that we will describe in this series are sealed with rape and the implantation of demons.

d. The 2nd Ritual Theft of Birthright

This second ritual is done shortly after the first ritual, generally a few days after. It consists of a death, burial and resurrection ritual. To die means death towards God, burial means to bury all that makes up a person's worth, and resurrection means to be resurrected with a new name and birthed to Satan. This and the 1st theft ritual are designed to remove any bonds the deeper alters might ever conceive of having with Almighty God.

e. The Satanic Wedding Prog. Ritual

Within days of the 2nd theft ritual, the Illuminati will follow with a mock satanic wedding. Usually the father will marry his daughter, but there is a chain of responsibility and if the father can't sexually abuse his child, then the grandfather is next in line, and then the uncle, and then the programmer. They will serve as the satanic covering for the child. At this point the rejection by God is still fresh on the child's mind, and they want the child to at least remember the rejection, whether they remember the incident or not depends. The child may already have dissociated the previous week or two, so the programmer may simply tell it "REMEMBER THE FEAR WHEN GOD DIDN'T LOVE YOU."

The child may really be looking forward to this wedding. They may have been dressed up nicely, and may be excited about marrying their father, even though he looks like a giant to the little infant. When their dress is pulled up and they are abused, then the fun stops.

f. The Lockup of the Guardian Angel.

The Internal Self Helper, also called the Guardian Angel of the mind, is magically locked up by the demonic power of the programmers, and a shrewd lying demon substituted in its place. The evil spirits that will be laid in will be the totems of the victim's bloodline--the spirits of the person's bloodlines who are to help guide the person.

Many people in the New Age movement who are under total mind-control speak about their guardian angel or their totem guiding them. An example of a total mind-controlled slave doing this are the Indian spirit guides that help Loretta Lynn. Hillary Clinton consults the spirit Eleanor Roosevelt. In order to familiarize the child with the proper demons they will be dressed up in a costume that resembles the bloodline spirit they are to become acquainted with. They will participate in a ritual in this costume.

g. The Revelation of Demons.

At this point, both the front (the light side) and the deeper occult dark side alters will be allowed to see the demons that are layered in. The front side sees them in their Luciferian form, and are scared out of their wits. They may respond to this by having an ongoing fear of monsters under their bed. The front's fear will keep the front away from trying to go deeper into the system. Later on in adult life, the Illuminati may want the front part of the system to go through a "deliverance", so they will think they have dealt with everything, and they don't need to look further. (For instance, this trick was done to a programmed multiple this author has worked with, the result being, the victim gave up any type of therapy or helpful work, because they were sure they'd received the answer to their problems, which would be nice if it were true, but isn't.) On the flip side, even though the dark side alters are also scared of the demons, who are quite terrorizing when seen by humans, the inherent need of humans to look for supernatural help pulls them toward the demonic. It is an inborn survival trait in most humans to look to supernatural help. By seeing the spiritual (even though these are dark spiritual forces), it becomes a normal function for the deeper alters to commune with the dark spiritual realm.

h. Providing Satanic Toys

The deeper alters will be given candles, knives and other ritual paraphernalia to play with. The establishment department stores with all their demonic toys are helpful, for the parent only needs to go to the local department store to buy his children occult toys.

i. The Participation Ritual

Soon after the wedding ceremony, another ceremony takes place where the child dresses up in the cult's red and black ceremonial robes. This is meant to integrate them into the cult family. It is an opportunity for the child to feel like it is part of the group and its rituals.

j. The layering in of witches/monster scripts

The normal American fairy tales, which are filled with stories of monsters and witches, are read to the child. The goblins, warlocks, vampires, and witches they hear about will help lay a mental foundation for what will happen later.

k. Cult Fairy Tales are told.

Next, the people in the child's life who are guiding the programming will tell the child programming stories, such as the Wizard of Oz stories and Alice In Wonderland. In the 50's and 60's, the Tall Book of Make Believe was popular. For instance the character Mr. Moon became a foundational part of the programming. Over the years the Wizard of Oz, Alice In Wonderland, and Mother Goose seem to have been overall favorites. The child will most often be in a trance state when these story lines are told. The children will have the stories repeated and they are expected to memorize these scripts. Because the programmers will build upon the child's awareness of these stories, the stories are modified to better fit the future programming.

For instance, if a programming team is going to use the Goldilocks and the 3 Bears story, they might modify the story like this: The 3 bears and Goldilocks went for a walk. Goldilocks was somewhere she shouldn't have been, so she was eaten up by the bears. Bears will eat you up. Policemen are like bears. A Policeman found her? Do you know what happened to her? Goldilocks got locked up and put in a cage. Or maybe they might say, Goldilocks was sitting where she wasn't supposed to.-- At that moment the chair is pulled out from underneath the child and the child is probed with a stun gun.

In the last 20 years, tens of thousands of children are getting "Pleiadian" programming, and it is not known what base fairy-tales are being used for this type of programming, or if they are using sci-fi stories as the base. There are tens of thousands of children with programming that can be activated to make them think they were raised on Alcyone in the Pleiades. This is to part of the Grand Deception of the End Times.

l. The Ritual to Test Loyalty to Oaths

The next step is to test the loyalty of the child slave to the oaths that were extracted from it. To prove the child's loyalty, the coven demands that the child sacrifice another child. From what we witnessed, even after all the abuse and hypnotic tampering of the child up to this point, not one single child was "loyal" to the oath. The inborn aversion to taking a human's life is strong, and the child will still refuse to do it. Therefore, the cult will have a member guide the child by taking the child's hand and forcing it to sacrifice the innocent little life before them. In spite of their reluctance, the forced act begins to rip the fabric of the child slave's mind and to sear its conscience. The cult will be sure to insure that the child is made to feel responsible, and that they are given guilt and shame for the deed.

Once the innocent victim is sacrificed, the child slave is required to cut the bloody heart out and eat it. The child has already been groomed for this, because the cult has been feeding blood in their milk as a pablum. The child has been allowed to get very hungry and then given blood so that in the end hunger is associated with death, and blood is associated with satisfying that hunger.

m. Prog. building blocks- Nursery Rhymes

The Nursery rhymes are now layered in. There is something mentally powerful about rhymes. Mother Goose nursery rhymes have been popular for over a half century for programming little children. The child's mind will refuse some things (such as it distaste for killing an innocent child in the previous ritual), but the child's mind doesn't realize anything devious about the adorable nursery rhymes. The child's mind will not put up any barriers to learning them. The child has no idea that by hearing these rhymes they are helping lay the foundation for their own mind-control.

n. The Hell Fire Ceremony.

This ceremony is basically the burning up of a child to instil in the child victim fear of disobedience and to show them what hell is all about. The reason this is done will be explained soon. This ceremony is done with one of four possibilities, a. a real baby, b. a dead miscarriage, c. a stage pretend child, d. movies.

For sure, the Illuminati will have a real bonfire, and there will be the stench of death. They will play tapes of screaming, terrified children to amplify how bad it will be in hell. Why do the Illuminati want the children to fear hell? First, if they ever do learn about the Bible, they will "know for sure" that this is the punishment that the God who rejected them wants for them. Next, the Illuminati tell the children that IF they are bad, they will suffer in hell, but if they are good in the cult, Satan their father will protect them and let them rule with him in hell. They want the child to be terrified of Hellfire and Brimstone. This ceremony is often done where there is a crematorium. The Presideo in CA was popular because a underground crematorium was there. Bear in mind, that the child by this time has lost its true self, and is simply in terror at watching a child like themselves turned to ashes. In certain types of hot fires, the child is turned to ashes so quick that the child's figure becomes a silhouette of ashes. The Illuminati will then begin teaching the child an important item, they will teach it to take on the spirit of the child through guilt manipulation. They'll say, "Don't you feel really bad that this happened to her, but you can fix it by internalizing her to yourself. Take the spirit of the child into you."

o. The Cutting the Penis Ritual.

This ritual is just as it sounds. The child is forced to emasculate another male. This ritual is intended to be severe. It again forces the child to choose between following their oaths or following what their heart tells them is a right. Because they will again refuse to carry out their oath of obedience, and will again be helped to obey, they will be an easy preplanned target of lots of shaming and guilt. This is one of the primary foundations for the shame and guilt that is built into the dark side alters. The child will be hit with sticks by the cult, while the Illuminati coven snarl, "Shame on you, you didn't obey as you promised." It is at this ritual, that the Illuminati coven will first begin to double-bind the victim by threatening them, "It's you or them [the person the child slave is to hurt], you choose." The little child sees two kinds of people in life, victimizers and victims. He or she will generally choose to be a victimizer. There will other times when the slave will not be given a choice and will have to suffer pain during the rituals.

p. The Traitor's Death Ritual.

The child victim will be left relatively drug free so they can have full awareness of the Traitor's Death which they witness. A person will receive the horrible traitors death during a ritual. The strong satanic alters will be built off the dissociated pieces caused by this ritual. And as is standard practice the ritual is sealed by a rape of the child to layer in more demons.

**This ends Cisco's very informative chronology. Let's sort out some of the specific programming maneuvers.

Part E. Specific Programming maneuvers. The MANIPULATION OF NEAR-DEATH-EXPERIENCES (NDEs)

People, who undergo Illuminati programming, will be candidates for near-death experiences. In several of the programming scripts, the victim is brought to the point of clinical death and then revived. In hospital settings, resuscitation of heart failure and other deathly events like surgery has produced tens of thousands of cases of Near-death experiences (NDE's). According to Raymond Moody, who worked with or experienced people experiencing NDEs, the typical NDE involves the person hearing himself announced dead. Then a loud ringing or buzzing noise occurs and a long, dark tunnel appears with a light at the end. The person will meet others and a being of light, and this light-being will play back events in the person's life, and evaluate his life, and then the person reaches a point where he must go back.

People, who experience a NDE are profoundly changed. Any profound change that follows patterns can be manipulated and the Illuminati have discovered this is simply just another way to manipulate people. The NDE experiences follow patterns. We will not go into the details of why most of the NDE explanations can't be the actual explanations, but the bottom like is that most explanations fall short and do not explain the phenomena.

The frequency and consistency of a tunnel being seen with a light at the end rules out hallucinations in terms of symbology. The mind could just as well see a gate, or keyhole, or a door as an entrance to a new world but doesn’t. Some researchers believe that the answer lies in the structure of the visual cortex, and that the dying person’s center of the visual field receives an ever increasing electrical noise while dying which produces an ever increasing circle of light being seen.

On the flip side, for those who have a biblical perspective, there are explanations that also seem to explain the phenomena. At any rate, it’s been known after Heinrich Kiuver published his research in the 1930’s that the brain has four constants in its Near-Death hallucinations: the cobweb, the grating (or lattice), the spiral and the tunnel. Drugs have been found to produce an experience similar to NDE at times too. Whatever spiritually and physically happens to cause a NDE--and there is lots of debate as to the mechanics of the cause--the common experiences that people have during NDE’s provides a pattern for the programmers to manipulate. Various people, the Illuminati, some Christians, and others believe that Eccl. 12:6-7, --which is talking about when a man dies ("dust return to the earth as it was") and his spirit returning to God who gave it,--these various people believe that the silver cord spoken about in verse 6 is a cord that links a person to his god. This verse makes a good verse for the Illuminati who do program in wheels and silver cords into their slaves linking them to their pretending-to-be-god masters.

FINE-TUNED

One of the side "benefits" of the brain-stem scarring, the repeated tortures, the attention that is expected if the slave is to survive, etc. is that they may develop extremely sensitive perception. This extremely sensitive perception may come across as ESP, but it is really subconscious understanding of things such as body language.

HIDING THE INTERNAL SELF-HELPER

Psychologists have discovered that deep in the mind is an area of thinking they refer to as the Internal Self-helper. Psychologists who attempt to help programmed multiples have been told to find the ISH (internal self-helper) of the victim. Sometimes the "ISH" have surfaced as ‘‘angels’’ and ‘‘spirit guides’’ in a system. They may regulate which alters come out and hold the body. The therapist may point out to a person that angels and spirit guides are never internal, unless they are demonic. The Christian is permitted scripturally to only be led by one internal spirit guide, and that’s is the Holy Spirit. In some systems, the slave’s "Holy Spirit" may turn out to be a cult ISH.

The programmers were many steps ahead of the psychologists. Even years before the psychologists began looking for the ISH to help them, the programmers had foreseen this and had their bases covered. In everyday life, for normal people, the internal self-helper serves as a type of guardian angel over each person. The programmers during the early LSD trips watch for the ISH. When it surfaces, they lock it up in the person’s mind, and replace it with a demonic generational spirit, which is commanded to report any work done in the system to the master. When psychologists find the ISH and ask for its help, the ISH does cooperate with them, but this demonic ISH is also one of the principal reporting agents that reports back to the master in photographic detail everything that the therapist does. This is one big reason the programmers have always been several steps ahead of the therapeutic community.

INTERJECT DISKS

Splintered souls captured on Interject disks is a subject that is beyond verification but is mentioned here because therapists and "UFO abductees", and SRA victims of mind-control may run into it. Readers must draw their own conclusions as to what soul interjects are--whether merely a deception, a new technology, or magical demonic manifestation.

Hermetic magic is a nasty form of magic from ancient Egypt. There are a few of the top Illuminati Grand Masters who believe they are capable of carrying out rituals to raise the dead and create interjects onto interject disks. Specialized magic is performed on the dead to raise zombies in order to splinter the zombie’s soul. The Grand Master then believes he can place the splinters of the soul on interject disks, and place these interjects into live slaves.

Interestingly, humans claiming contact with "aliens" have claimed that the aliens can separate a human soul from its body, keep it captured, recondition that soul, and finally implant the soul into another body. Some researchers are claiming that they have evidence of a holographic energy template that is associated with a physical body. Is this the soul? They believe that this template works with cellular genetic mechanisms. There is certainly more to learn about what humans are, perhaps some day these claims about zombie souls will have some scientific merit, but for now they lay in the realm of Illuminati Grand Master high magic.

I have reported upon Illuminati beliefs and practices. Likewise, an anthropologist will report on the practices & customs of a people, whether or not the anthropologist personally practices or believes like the people he observes. Of course, these Luciferian (or should one say satanic practices) are abhorrent and the author has never practiced them, so the author can't speak from the viewpoint of a witness, but he can describe as a reporter the views of Illuminati witnesses.

One Illuminati belief is that they have managed to design equipment that can catch the soul of a dying person. This capability will play a role in the reign of the anti-Christ. When the Anti-Christ dies, his soul will be captured and he will be resurrected with demons animating the body. When a very high ranking Illuminati adept goes berserk, the Illuminati will insure that they preserve the soul of the man by killing him with equipment that is portrayed in the recent movie Lord of Illusion. This is a mask-brace that fits over the portals of the head and then is screwed into the head to capture the soul as it tries to escape the dying body. Then demons are called in to live off the soul matter.

Normally, according to Illuminati occult knowledge, the demons can only live a short time within a body, but by the mask-brace capture of a body's soul, the demons can inhabit a body for a longer length of time and create the walking dead. This is that "line between heaven and hell" that the movie refers to. The Illuminati believe that the highest gift they can give Lucifer are captured souls. They will place souls into jars. This is the highest most secret magic of the Illuminati. Notice, that during the Lord of Illusion movie, jars are smashed during the ritual where a soul is captured.

Interviews with alien abductees reveals that some of them believe that the aliens are stealing the souls of mankind. The similarity of the Illuminati beliefs about demons, and the perceived actions of the aliens by abductees are remarkably similar. Also the Illuminati have secretly used special tubing during millions of abortions performed by their abortion clinics to capture the souls of the aborted children. (This is author is not making any claims that they do or don't succeed, but they believe they are succeeding.)

The movie Lord of Illusion is full of Illuminati/high level Masonic symbology. The movie begins with programming concepts, first the galaxies & stars, then the yellow brick road, then a dust storm... An Illuminati phrase "Flesh is a trap, magic sets you free" is mentioned in the movie. In contrast with the movie, these things are not written to entertain the reader, but with the good-natured intent that therapists and victims may gain something by knowing better what is going on to these Illuminati mind-control victims.

The Illuminati believe that they can suck the life spirit out of a person through intercourse with what they call the Eye of Horus (the anus). This is why the leaders of this World Order (such as George Bush, Bill Clinton, and tens of thousands of others) are into sodomy, they are trying to vampirize all the years of life out of the victim to gain a longer life. Some of the sad child victims, who have been kept exclusively for this purpose do look like the life force has been sucked out of them. Sodomy has its own secret chamber on the cabalistic tree of life.

A metaphysical UFO type magazine entitled WE Walk-Ins for Evolution puts out articles on how souls walk-into a body and how souls braid themselves to other souls. For instance, there was an article "Soul Braiding" in the April-June, '96 issue of WE. This appears to be a reframing of various practices that the Illuminati carry out to demonize and control the minds of their people. Rather than speak of a demonization or an interject, front alters of slaves who are not Christians can use metaphysical terms like "soul braiding". The words soul and spirit, and concepts attached to those words are important in programming. Programmed Mormon children will think they have the "Spirit of Elijah" in them, and will robotically sing their programming, "Follow the Prophet, follow the prophet."

WHITE GOLD, other information

Since writing about powdered white gold’s ability to make a person clairvoyant, in Vol. 2, it’s come to my attention that Nexus magazine has had a recent article on this. For those who are interested in crystal travel, crystal travel is an OBE also known as astral projection and is covered in the Vol. 2 book as astral projection. Besides the silver cord, some victims have mentioned a supernatural dark red violet umbilical that connects them to the AntiChrist.

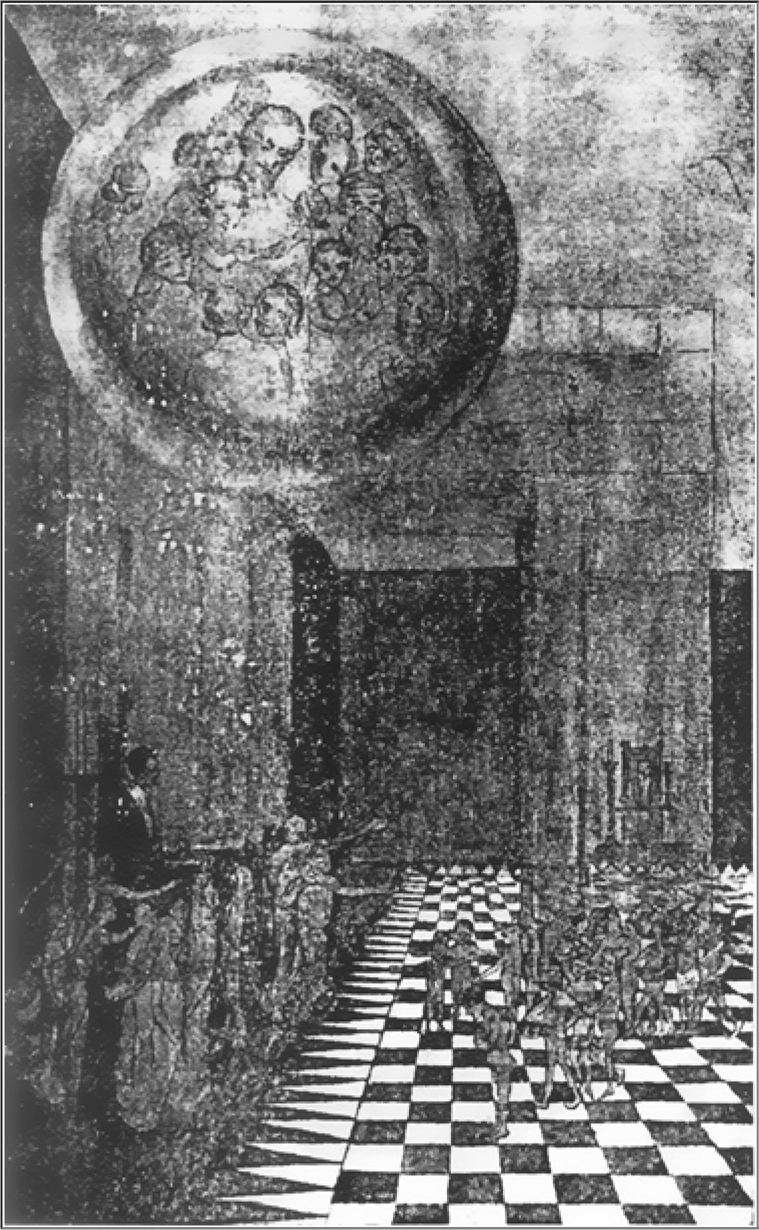

picture 1 p_10-1.jpg

information about the picture

This is a Masonic drawing called "The Second Portal". it shows nude boys facing a throne undergoing some type of magical ritual. The drawing appears In The Hidden Life in Freemasonry after pg. 198. in 1926, Charles W. Leadbeater, a 33º Freemason, printed his book The Hidden Life in Freemasonry. This book was written for people involved in Luciferian rituals In the higher more occult rites of Freemasonry. In the preface, Leadbeater talks of butterflies (pp viii-ix), which has the double meaning in the occult of souls (spirits). in the last chapter, chapter 10, he gives Masonic rituals to Invoke angels (demons) through Egyptian magic. In these Masonic temples, the checkerboard square is used in a similar fashion as a magic circle for a coven. This picture is given as a paper trail to show the sex-magic rituals that take place within various Masonic groups.

The Illuminati Sisters of Light alters rarely appear in therapy because they are used in horrendous Masonic rituals, and must be buried very deep in the system. Typically, a Sister of Light would be blindfolded and taken down many flights of steps and through tunnels and would end up in an elaborate underground Masonic temple. She would be used as a nymph. In one ritual, for example, she’d be given a golden circle band for her forehead, a cloak with a red lining, and a tunic of black silk with golden rays. The hall would have important masons of society who would be sitting in a semi-circle. The Sisters of Light are given to Beelzebub in an excruciating marriage ceremony. There is a veil which fails into 4 equal parts, which mean the 4 corners of the world. The sisters take oaths around the compass, so that the victim feels locked in no matter what corner of the world they go to.

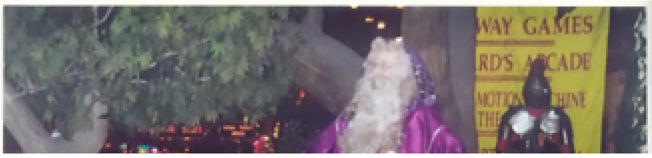

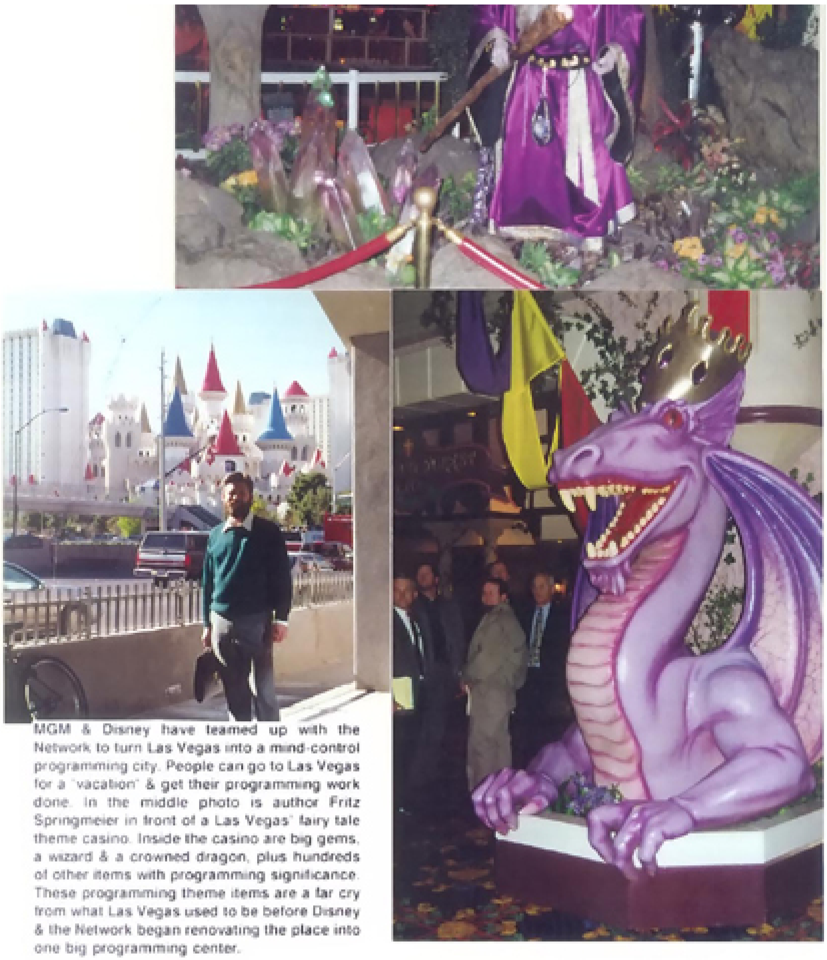 MGM & Disney have teamed up with the Network to turn Las Vegas into a mind-control programming city. People can go to Las Vegas for a 'vacation' & get their programming work done. In the middle photo is author Fritz Springmeier in front of a Las Vegas' fairy tale theme casino. Inside the casino are big gems, a wizard & a crowned dragon, plus hundreds of other items with programming significance. These programming theme items are a far cry from what Las Vegas used to be before Disney & the Network began renovating the place into one big programming center.	picture 2 p_10-2.jpg
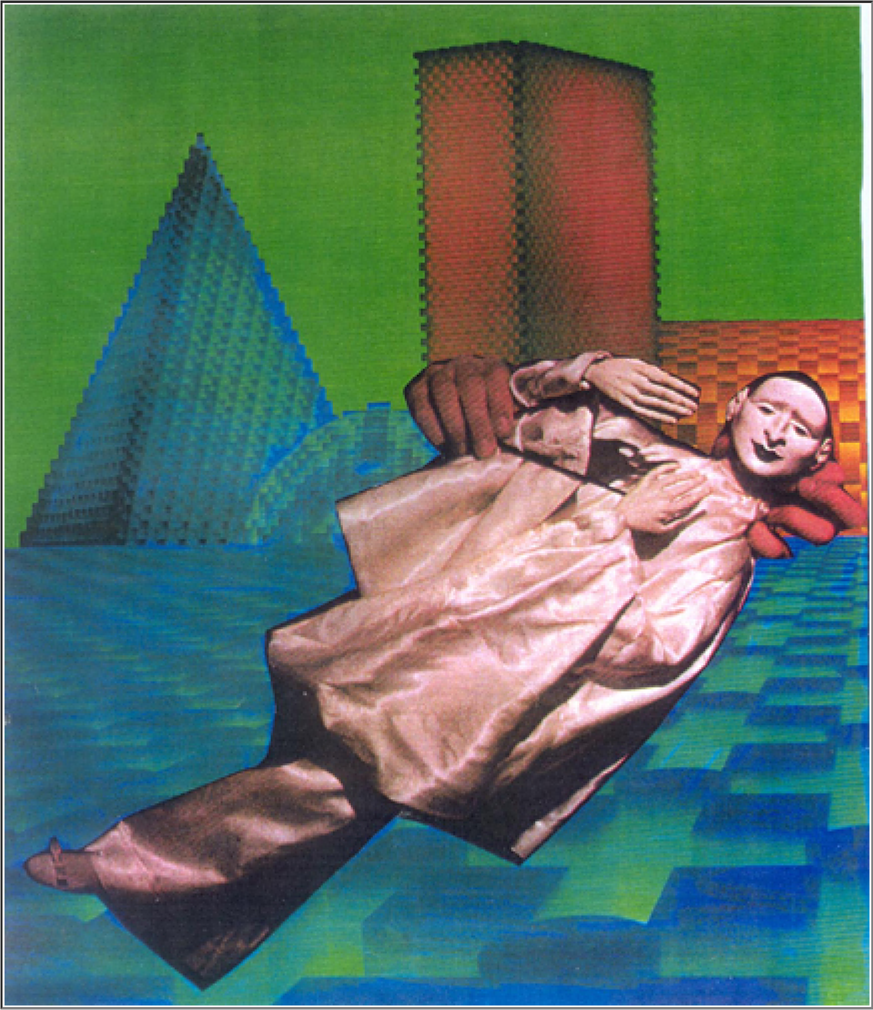	p_11-1.jpg about the picture This was some early art work by Cisco to convey what her mind felt as a mind-controlled slave. What the picture shows is the hand of the puppet master controlling his puppet. The puppet is floating--not grounded in reality, but dissociated from the external world in order to survive. All the cities and internal worlds are grids. Everything attaches to grids. The color programming can be seen in the Green, Blue, Silver, Gold, Red, and Yellow colors of the grids. The puppet is totally in the hands of the puppet master and its hands are in a submissive hold, while the puppet master has his fingers covertly wrapped around the left side of the puppet's head.

http://whale.to/b/sp/springmeier.html

CHAPTER 11: SCIENCE No. 11- INTERNAL CONTROLS

A. TEACHING OCCULT PHILOSOPHIES
B. INTERNAL COMPUTERS
  Installation of the Standard Programming
  Front Programs of Front Computer.
  Misinformation Computers.
  Beast Computer.
  Programmer Access to the Computer Areas.
C. INTERNAL HIERARCHIES
  THE INTERNAL HIERARCHIES form RATIONALES

A. TEACHING OCCULT PHILOSOPHIES

This is an important ongoing aspect of the mind-control. Vol. 2, introduced this subject:

"Learning plays an important part in perception. The Programmers try to get their victims to subscribe to philosophies and ideas that will make it hard for them to rebel against their controllers. This is what is termed indoctrination. The same methods of teaching that others [any other educator would] find useful are employed. Ways of thinking are incorporated by the slave via handlers, programmers, and the cult they belong to. "Everyone tries in their own way to make sense of life. This is a natural brain function, so that the human mind can understand how to deal with the future. The mind takes raw data, and then applies some type of logic, and comes to conclusions. Once accepted these conclusions can be as hard as nails, and they will defy any attempt to change them, even in the light of new evidence. If the Programmer is smart enough, he can get an alter to logically believe anything. Once the belief is embedded, it will remain there tenaciously."

In the previously book, it was discussed how indoctrination is done. I will provide more of the details on how indoctrination is accomplished, because it is not being done via rational logical thinking. Rather, the programmer or cult leaders want to access a person’s non-logical imaginative right brain. In order to do that he must distract the left brain.

Bill Clinton, an Illuminati handler of slaves, and a good liar, has his speeches prepared in such a way that they take advantage of the brain’s natural functioning to manipulate it. Bill Clinton, when he gives a speech will initiate it by pushing everybody’s green buttons. He will say a number of things that everyone wants to hear and will agree with. This is called "generating a YES SET’. There will be a number of these, the number of these often desired is 3. Then the second stage is to bring in TRUISMS that are facts that after the audience has already been mentally saying yes, the audience will probably accept these facts without any disagreement. Finally, after the approx. three YES SETs, the approx. three TRUISMS, Bill will plant the suggestion, such as "support me in such and such."

On important points, Bill will move his left hand, to help imbed certain commands to his viewers. He will also use some subtle hand signals/codes to trigger mind-controlled slaves too. He will ask during his talks for people to imagine or visualize what he wants for them. Again this is manipulation directed at the right brain.

One of the most crucial things that protects the mind-control of the Illuminati is the frame-of-reference and world-view they build into people from the cradle to the grave. Our previous experience and the information we have available directly influences how we assign meaning to information we receive. The Illuminati’s control over so much of society allows them to create people’s frames-of-references. Fragments of information that people receive which do not relate to the person’s frame-of-reference will be discarded. A person needs a place in his frame-of-reference to hang information on. The person may puzzle over the tidbits of incongruent fragments, but being unable to relate them to his world view, he finds himself unable to file the fragments away in a meaningful manner.

Some of the front alters of very well controlled slaves have had world views (frames-of-references) that believe, a. there is no such thing as Satanic Ritual Abuse, b. there is no such thing as a conspiracy, c. there is no such thing as absolute truth, d. there is no such thing as sin. e. There is no connection between God, living a moral life, and finding Truth. f. there is no such thing as Multiple Personality Disorder. g. My religious organization can do no wrong.

Making a fundamental change in our frame of reference is a frightening task. This is why victims of total mind-control who have been A. programmed not to believe that a New World Order conspiracy exists, and not to believe Satanism and SRA exist, and then they are B. placed in a culture that reinforces this programming, end up being extremely hard to break free of their mind-control.

Conferences where mind-control victims can begin to see the significance of all the fragments of clues that they discarded are very valuable. This author has met a number of mind-controlled victims who didn't know what their problem was, but had countless clues in their life. But these clues were useless fragments of information until they were given a framework to use them.

For instance, one victim of Illuminati total mind-control knew nothing about the significance of the Illuminati bloodlines, nor who the bloodlines were. She stated that her relatives were so and so, and it was then pointed out to her that she was from Illuminati bloodlines on both sides, and the significance of the bloodlines was gone over. Now a meaningless piece of information (her genealogy) had been given a framework of meaning. But this was just one area of many which the establishment has carefully controlled us to have misunderstandings about. Understanding her heritage, allowed her to understand why she was selected for mind-control, when it seemed to her that others might have been better candidates.

Occult philosophies by their very nature create frames of references that make it hard to see reality and to see the Truth in Jesus Christ of Nazareth. The New Age, Witchcraft, and Hindu idea that all paths lead to God, is utter nonsense. The idea that Christians are narrow minded is nonsense, but is a common idea taught by many people. It is narrow minded to insist that Christians must go to the same place Hindu's end up, if Christians seek truth. The New Agers see only one track for truth seekers, since they hold all paths lead to God. The concept is even illustrated by the wheel in India's flag. All spokes on the wheel lead to the same center point of the circle.

The Biblical Christians see two tracks for truth seekers--some don't find God and Truth, but rather find an imitation of the truth and end up eternally lost, while some do find God and Truth. Perhaps at this point the reader is getting slightly upset because he or she is thinking, "Fritz is preaching what he believes," and is also thinking "there is no absolute truth." That is exactly my point. By accepting the lie--the programming lie--the frame of reference--the paradigm that there is no absolute truth, then every time a fragment of absolute truth comes to you, you will reject it.

When I showed evidence to two followers of J.Z. Knight (J.Z. Knight was/is a mind-controlled slave, who has set up an Illuminati front religion in Washington State where converts are subjected to mind-control techniques) that children were being sacrificed by Satanic covens and that this was evidence of Satanic ritual abuse, their world view could not accept the concept of absolute wrongs and sin. They responded, "These satanists may well be killing their babies, but that is not abuse, that is only your idea. It's just your idea that it is abuse. It's not abuse to these people."

In review, one of the hardest shells protecting the programming of a total mind-controlled slave is when the front part of their system, which holds the body regularly, has been indoctrinated into a frame-of-reference that will not allow them to see the reality of what is being done to make and keep them in slavery. A final example of this, are the zealots of the False Memory Syndrome Foundation who are mind-controlled zealots. These zealots, who are launching a counterattack against books like this, have had their world-views carefully constructed by a combination of several techniques of persuasion, a. mass indoctrination, b. subliminal messages via the T.V. and other places in their lives, c. controlled education, and Neuro-Linguistic Programming, in addition to all their regular trauma-based programming. It's like their world-view is the hard varnish that is first seen & heard, protecting people (even themselves) from realizing that the underlying motivation of these zealots is not their world-view, but Total Mind Control Programming.

Within witchcraft, the cosmology that is taught is that a person was originally swirls or vortexes of energy. This coupled with a belief in reincarnation, allows the mind-controlled victim's witchcraft alters to believe that they began with some molecules of energy forming, and that death is nothing, because everything continues on a vast wheel of reincarnation. The beliefs that are inserted into people via witchcraft are conducive to locking the person into their servitude. European culture, which has been based on Christianity, has had a respect and value on life way beyond the oriental view. For centuries Europeans have marvelled about how little value human life has in the oriental view. This is because these Oriental views are identical with what is now called New Age beliefs, which are also about the same thing as witchcraft. Gnostism/ witchcraft philosophy justifies seeking and having power. Persons, who are power hungry, gravitate to this philosophy. Persons who are inculcated with the desire for power rationalize their behavior with the witchcraft philosophy which they are raised in, or programmed to believe, or "discover" to set their minds at ease.

B. INTERNAL COMPUTERS

Internal computers are elaborate arrangements of dissociated parts and memories built into the slave’s mind to cause the victim’s mind to have mechanical computer-like responses.

For years, the internal computers escaped the detection of the therapeutic community. The illustrated Guidebook introduced the subject to readers and the Vol. 2 gave the first major & so far to date the only comprehensive expose of these computers. This Deeper Insights book will provide a number of pages to deepen the readers understanding of this important subject. This is all fresh (never been exposed) material so don’t write and ask what book it came from. You may have to refer back to our previous books for a complete understanding.

Installation of the Standard Programming.

The Illuminati take a screen about 6’ by 6’. On the screen is a grid with a Greek or English letter. In front of the screen are colored flashing lights. The flashing colored lights prevent the conscious mind from seeing the screen, but the subconscious mind sees the grid. An Alpha symbol or capital A with tails at the base will be shown on the grid screen for Alpha programming. A Beta or B will be shown for the Beta Programming screen. The programming that is placed in using the different programming associated with various Greek and English alphabets can be read about in Chapter 4 of the Volume 2 Formula book and Chapter 4 in this book. The victim is strapped into a chair with their head locked in place and their eyes forced open. They must endure the flashing lights and the subliminal grid and letter on the screen.

There is a paper trail that they are using flashing lights for hypnotic control of a subject in order to place in messages at the subconscious. One of the pieces of the paper trail was an article "New Device To Induce Hypnosis Developed" in the Chicago Tribune (June 7, 1959). The article was about a Dr. William Kroger, who had tested the use of flashing lights on 200 obstetric patients at the Edgewater hospital in Chicago. Interestingly, this Dr. Kroger lived in Beverly Hills, CA and worked with a Sidney Schneider of Skokie, IL.

Schneider was skilled in electronics and Kroger was an obstetrician. The article said, "The pulsing pattern in reality an electronic brain wave ‘achieves control’ of the brain’s alpha rhythm, thus inducing a drowsy state, according to Dr. Kroger." "The apparatus...operates on the principal of subliminal and photic stimulation of brain waves...about 30 per cent of the subjects who had received no explanation or had no knowledge of what the brain wave synchronizer would do were hypnotized to various degrees." Now these type of machines are available to any bozo who knows where they are sold.

Another piece of the paper trail is a government study by the Defense Intelligence Agency of July 1972, entitled Biological Effects of Electromagnetic Radiation (Radiowaves and Microwaves) --Eurasian and Communist Countries, ST-CS-01-169-72. DIA,, July, 1972, pp. 77-86. This study, of which this author has a copy, in part VI is written about "Light and Color as a Means of Altering Human Behavior." Although the report claims the communists are the ones who are using flashing light and color to alter human behavior, the real inventors were the Illuminati, and both the Americans and Russians are using flashing colored lights for programming.

This DIA study also reports on an American symposium held in the at Tulane Univ., Covington, LA in 1957 concerning the effects of flickering light on the brain. The participants of the 1957 American symposium drew up a paper with 11 conclusions, which included a. flickering light interferes with the human nervous system, b. flickering light can put a person to sleep or into a trance, c. flickering light can interfere with the brains s alpha waves, and d. "photo driving of the EEG by periodic flicker is a well known phenomenon although many subjects do not show the effect..."

During the ’50’s through at least the ’70’s, the Illuminati used flickering lights to place into the subconscious the grids used for the various computers. Each block on the grid would have codes, programs, memory and alters attached to it. In other words, dissociated parts of the mind become parts which are built into computers. The mind of victim is hijacked by the programmer.

To fully understand what the computers are, we must understand the mind-set of the programmers. The programmers are looking to Lucifer for their inspiration. An imitation of God's Book of Life for people, is for Lucifer to construct an internal computer that will contain all the history of all the alters. It might be helpful if some items that were in the illustrated Guidebook and in the Vol. 2 book were briefly touched upon again, as we discuss how the internal computers are made. Remember, that a computer is placed one per layer (section) and that they also build in back up computers, and that the computers have coded memories stored in them, as well as coded programs.

The deepest computer is called the Beast computer, and it has an eye (the all-seeing-eye) that opens and shuts like a camera lens. It can go behind the veil, and this is in mockery of the rent veil of the Holy of Holies. When the internal computers are built, the Illuminati use a doll house with different colored rooms for the child to visualize what is being done. Each room in the dollhouse has a different color. Each family of alters (a group of alters that are on the grid together) has the exact same color code. In the Vol. 2 book, we showed the color coding differently--we showed the color coding running diagonally across the grid, it can be done in any fashion, but generally the color code for a single family (alters a-through-in on the chart) is the same, and the cover program to hide it is that the colors run diagonally. What that means is that an entire family of alters, say alters Mary 1 through Mary 13 will all be connected by a color ribbon alter (who works just for them) back to that same color of computer room. All the family get the same programming, although they hold separate memories.

This will help therapists understand the behavior & programming patterns of various alters. The Beta and Delta alters, who as the readers realizes live in entirely a deep trance imaginary life, have entirely negative programming in their computer section. The Betas and Deltas have two ribbons per alter, which is an exception to the rule. This is so they can function together--espionage, seduction, and assassination all go together. Another type of alter who gets two ribbons are the 13th alters which connect two levels. These poor alters have so much programming going off, and mixed signals, that they are real basket cases.

When a system is seen in its entirety, the more powerful system hierarchy and Illuminati hierarchy alters will be coded with Platinum, Gold, White, Purple, Bronze & Silver. Front alters who will be helpful will be coded pink and yellow. Orange alters will be perceived as helping alters, but they are actually guards, protectors, and they protect sections of the system below them, which they usually can't see, and often don't know that they guard. Alters coded brown, tan, grey, or clear will give the therapist & support team fits, because they are full of deceptions & cover programs, and illusions. Host alters or key front alters may have a clear or white diamond as their gemstone. Alters who cover things up may have obsidian as their gemstone. Other alters who play along with the programming may have such gemstones as Fire Opal, Topaz, and Turquoise. (Also see Vol. 2 , p. 328-29.)

Front Programs of Front Computer.

The front computer that is linked to the front section will be different than the deeper computers. It's big difference is that its programs (which are linked to all the front alters) are logical. The logical programs of this level provide the alters with logical reasons and excuses to believe the lies, and to reason their life out. Of course they draw false conclusions from good logic using faulty information.

Misinformation Computers.

Misinformation computers are laid in on the 3, 6, 9 and 12 levels. Thousands of demons are placed into the Misinformation computers to not only run them, but to dispense misinformation. Since the demons are not under drugs or hypnosis, they are under full awareness and are very crafty in their deceptions. When memories are too clean and too complete, the therapist should suspect that they are getting a demonic false memory. Bear in mind the child is in a drugged state during much of the programming and has blurry eyes and may have their eyes rolling in the back of their head. They have their short term memories splintered by electro-shock, and are fed lies about their memories via hypnosis. Real memories are in bad shape when retrieved. (This is why some persons apply "hypnotic correction programs" to restore the memories back closer to the original event, such as reversing the hypnotic air-brushing/blurring of faces that was programmed into deeper alters. The mind put in the distortion program and seems in some cases to be able to reverse the distortion program.)

Beast Computer.

End time names such as Gog, etc. are believed to be given to some of the computers within recent years, to represent the names of the 10 countries that will make up the global government of the New World Order. For years the computers have been called "Beast" computers with the big important Beast computer laid in at the bottom of the mind in the hell pit. Remember that the core is at the bottom of the mind below the hell pit--but she is almost always never connected to the Beast computer. This is because the core receives very little programming. The core is told she is sleeping beauty and that her father Lucifer, who she is married to, will someday return for her and wake her up. Lucifer wanted the purest virgin bride he could get, so he marries as his top bride within the system the innocent core. The core is told she belongs to Lucifer. The core is protected by the false trinity in the pyramid and the Grand Druid Council. The core is linked to the Grand Druid Council, but not the carousel. In the VoL 2 book, we reported the cover program, which is that the core is in the carousel. If therapists want to take out computers they need to take them out from the first computer that was laid in, the Beast computer (at the bottom of the mind), and take them out in the sequence they were put in.

Programmer Access to the Computer Areas.

When the external programmer wants to put information into the computer he opens up the various "rooms" (areas or programs so to speak) and then the internal programmers take over. The story line used to build in access to the computer is the King’s Chamber story in Alice In Wonderland. The king comes to the chamber and he has the right to make 3 wishes (the 3-part access code). If he doesn’t make 3 wishes, everything disappears like in the Alice In Wonderland story. 3-part access codes are usually DATE, COLOR, ALPHA-NUMERIC CODE. But they could be three objects within the room, or they could be a sound, a touch, and a third-sight signal. Generally, the Illuminati have used the actual date that an alter (a part) or a family of alters was created as the actual code for that chamber of the computer. That chamber will then be linked to all the alters of that family. So lets say a family of alters was created on 4-30-64. This would normally be written on the charts as 43064 or because the Illuminati often work with things backward, some programmers will write it 46034. Which ever method, forward or backwards, will then be used consistently as the first part of the access to that family’s computer chamber.

There are 26 rooms in the dollhouse, or in other words, 13 families of alters on a grid with 13 mirror images to mirror those 13. This was very standard for years. When the programmer places the information in it is put on a mental imaginary "computer disk" or in the older models "spools". The reader needs to remember back to the hypnotic surgery that we discussed in the Illustrated Guidebook and the Vol. 2 book, to remember that the victim has their insides hypnotically removed and the spools or computer disks placed inside of them.

Let’s say a therapist touches one of the misinformation computers, which are the most assessable. These computers will then activate mirror images and lots of demonic activity. The therapist may end up integrating demons, and working with constructs and mirror images, and the proper excitement by the real alters is even programmed in. These are what may be termed "FALSE HOPE PROGRAMS". The system will rest and relax and the therapist will declare everything finished. (For years, the two authors have tried to explain this, but it seems to be a hard subject for therapists to understand.)

Finally, a very important warning, tampering with the computers is serious business, from the co-authors experience in working with therapists, we strongly advise them not to tamper with the computers, because the self-destruct programs are so strong. The self-destruct programs will turn the person into a vegetable, or into pure insanity if the victim survives the suicide programs. The skill level among the therapeutic community is not yet at the level needed to tamper with the computers, but we hope with the publication of this book and with more experience that that will someday become a reality. This author, Fritz, is aware of therapists that have tried to tamper with the computers, but the programming has beaten both them and this author. For instance, it took lots of work to discover that this author’s week of work with a front computer actually was only playing with a misinformation computer and its FALSE HOPE PROGRAMS.

http://whale.to/b/sp/springmeier.html

C. INTERNAL HIERARCHIES

OVERVIEW.

The internal structuring of alter systems are built with alters being arranged in hierarchies. Often the hierarchal arrangement is a mirror of the group carrying out the programming. The CIA and other intelligence groups use SECTIONS. You will find the grids of alters arranged in SECTIONS. The Illuminati have a Grand Druid Council and other councils, which will be mirrored within the system. Alter families will be set up as mini-covens within the system, often with 13 to an alter families. HUBS will be created in reflection of how Satanic groups are organized into hubs.

THE INTERNAL HIERARCHIES form RATIONALES

Some of the structures within the programmed alters reflect the philosophies of the ancient occult world. The structures are buttressed by the occult beliefs that are connected to them. Cisco, who has helped me co-author two books on mind-control, pointed out how the ancient world had a god which could only be adored by one family. Each city had its own gods, and religion was tied to the family and the city units. This was the Religion of the Hearth, as some have called it.

The Roman Gens was an extension of this, the Gens were political associations of several families who collected into a religious union, as the Illuminati families have done. When we see how the ancient religious customs were, we see how the internal Illuminati structuring parallels this thinking. Each internal city or world is assigned a god (demon) during the programming. The Illuminati families have collected themselves into a Gen. This is an example of how the internal structuring is buttressed by some occult philosophy which will in turn buttress itself by its claim to antiquity, as if length of practice makes a mistaken superstition valid. The myths of the occult world and their symbology are very extensive. The programmers have many items to choose from as they construct the deeper internal worlds of an Illuminati slave. There is a twisted logic to many of the names they give.

The Magna Mater is the sybil, the symbol of truth, a goddess who can take the form of a city in the occult world. To apply the name MAGNA MATER to a part of the mind then creates a triple or quadruple pun--we have something that can be truth, a city, a goddess, and a sybil. The programmers thrive on puns. The personification of the stages of spiritual life which are called fairies are named White Ladies, Green Ladies, and Black Ladies. Dissociated parts of the mind can be given the name Green Ladies, and then the secret meaning attached that they are fairies that connect to the system's spiritual development. The possibilities seem endless. Since cabalism is behind much of the Illuminati programming, and double images are so important--some systems may incorporate the dual being known as Metatron on top, and Samael on the bottom. This is the occult concept that all phenomena has an essential ambivalence. This is the Gemini concept.

Another Cabalistic concept that appears in programming is the silver palace also known as the silver thread that connects man to his origin and to his end. The palace in the occult world was to have secret chambers (dissociated areas in the subconscious) which hold treasure (programming truths). In the occult world's beliefs, it has been said that the palace of glass represents the magically appearing ancestral memories of mankind from the Golden Age. In Druidism, the horse was linked to the solar wheel, which had more wheels within itself.

During programming: Concepts are linked in series, Concepts are mirrored, and Concepts are related to the whole. The function of occult symbols lends itself to such applications.

p_11-2.jpg

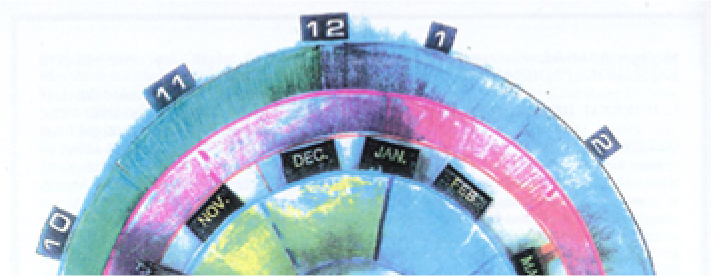

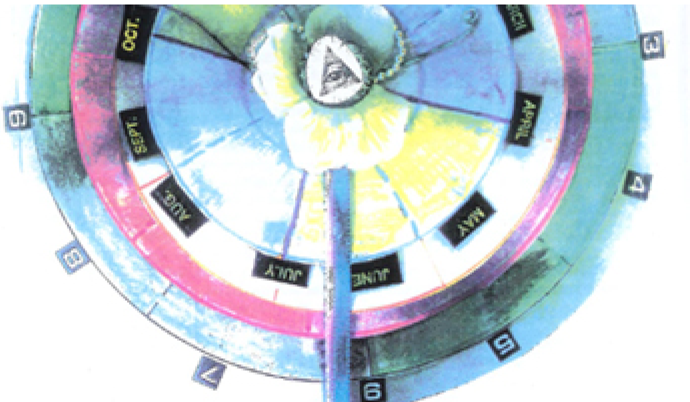

This artwork is not accurate, but is has been included because it provides the general concept of how the clock (with its seasons), the circular worlds (or planets), the elevators (shown in the picture as ribbons), and the quadrants of each world are tied together. Certain things must line up for alters to come out. As the entire mechanism rotates, at certain calendar dates certain internal alters are activated who then in turn move other alters to positions within the system so that they can come out at ritual times. The worlds are stacked on top of each other, and telescope out like the old telescoping army cups. This makes circles within circles.

Notice the Stardust! The pearl patterns look like spider webs. The price for this Barbie Doll is a mere $585.

the artistry
of Erté.

ERTÉ™ STARDUST
From Erté, the grand master of Art Deco, comes a porcelain doll that's a true work of art. She wears a gown adorned with tiny faux pearls and over 7,000 silvery beads. Entirely hand-crafted of fine bisque porcelain, this Limited Edition stands on a cold cast porcelain base. Individually numbered and delivered with a Certificate of Authenticity, she's a glittering example of Art Deco by its brightest star. Ages 14+.

#5730 $585.00

The Erté fashion design from the musical "Stardust" is used under license from Louise Westergaard Productions, Inc.
©1992 Sevenarts, Ltd.

p_12_1.jpg

about the pic

Barbie Dolls are used for the mind-control programming. Interestingly in 1995, while fighting over Barbie dolls a 6-yr. old girl in Modesto, CA stabbed a 7-year-old playmate with a knife while telling her she was going to kill her. Police did nothing with the girl who had used the knife except to have the parents take her. One wonders what was this all about. Meanwhile Barbie Dolls have drastically changed and are now very occultic.

CHAPTER 12 SCIENCE No. 12-EXTERNAL CONTROLS

Advertising & Trauma-based programming.
ASSET CONTROL
SURVEILLANCE.
HARASSMENT
CAR COLORS
TELEVISION
BUILDING FAMILIES AND COMMUNITIES THAT HAVE INTERWOVEN PROGRAMMING
ISOLATION
BOARDING SCHOOLS & BODY PROGRAMMING.
When controls fail, THE FINAL SOLUTION.
The Programmers

Advertizing & Trauma-based programming.

The Oregonian newspaper, Sat. Mar. 9, 1996, (p. E1) ran a story about women entitled, "She sells, She purrs, she percolates, she’s a power player: Ads reflect society’s view of women." At the top right is an ad with a Marilyn Monroe type of model with puckered lips selling cigarettes. Below her is a picture of a girl with the caption, "You were born a daughter. You looked up to your mother. You looked up to your father. You looked up to everyone. You wanted to be a princess. You thought you were a princess."

The themes in this article match the thinking within Monarch type programming scripts. Is this coincidence, or just a sign of the times, that so much in our lives echoes programming scripts? Some of the ads in today’s magazines are obvious manipulations of the Monarch trauma-based mind-control. For instance, Royal & Sun Alliance Insurance Group controlled by the Rothschilds had an add in a recent popular magazine which has nothing but an entire page of violet-blue haze with an eye [an allusion to the All-seeing eye] staring out of the haze along with the big caption "YOU HAVE OUR ATTENTION." This would reinforce many of the mind-control programs. Ostensibly, the ad was for insurance.

Another ad that is an obvious manipulation of mind-control programming is an Aveda ad placed in Vogue & Vanity Fair magazines, where a woman’s face is broken up into 4 pieces and put into a glass bottle along with a white daisy type flower & a yellow flower. The caption reads ‘You, bottled." the subcaption reads "what would you be if you came back as a pure-fume?" Notice the play on words that the programmers love.

Another more subtle example is a Virginia Slims ad which is designed to hit the subconscious of the Monarch slave. This ad has three thrones across the top of the page. In front of the three thrones is the Virginia Slims lady. The first two thrones have a chubby queen sitting on them & the third on the far right is vacant. The 3 queens are an allusion to the 3 hierarchy queens and the maiden-mother-hidden crone sequence in programming. The queen holds a scepter which adds some more power to this as a subconscious trigger. The caption reads, "Virginia Slims remembers the shortest reign of a female monarch. Queen Katrina of Valenski was crowned at 10 past the hour, lit a cigarette at 12 past the hour and was dethroned at 13 past the hour."

The hidden meaning behind this is that the front woman, remembers on a subconscious level the threat that if you don’t remember the authority & power (thrones), and the power structure (the triad), then you shall remember the programming threat. This ad subtly reinforces the programming threats to slaves.

Other ads that manipulate programming use Wizard of Oz, Alice In Wonderland and Star Wars themes. They use allusions to the programming scripts and show subtle occult symbols. The hypnotic eye is very popular in ads. Some ads simply seem to be a reflection of how our culture has become part of the programming, for instance a Sportsman device that is sold by an add with a big caption "Split personality", or a Merit cigarette ad that sells its product with the caption "Split personality." A watch ad for Bulova has an empty chair with a banner over it "Personality of the year’ and the caption "Is your watch making you a missing person?"

http://whale.to/b/sp/springmeier.html

During the programming, shifts in time certainly do make certain alters disappear, so although this ad is may not be a direct attempt to manipulate programming, it certainly is a product of today's mind-controlled society.

>>>On the next pg. is an ad appealing directly to the thinking of a programmed multiple.>>

p_12_eve1.jpg

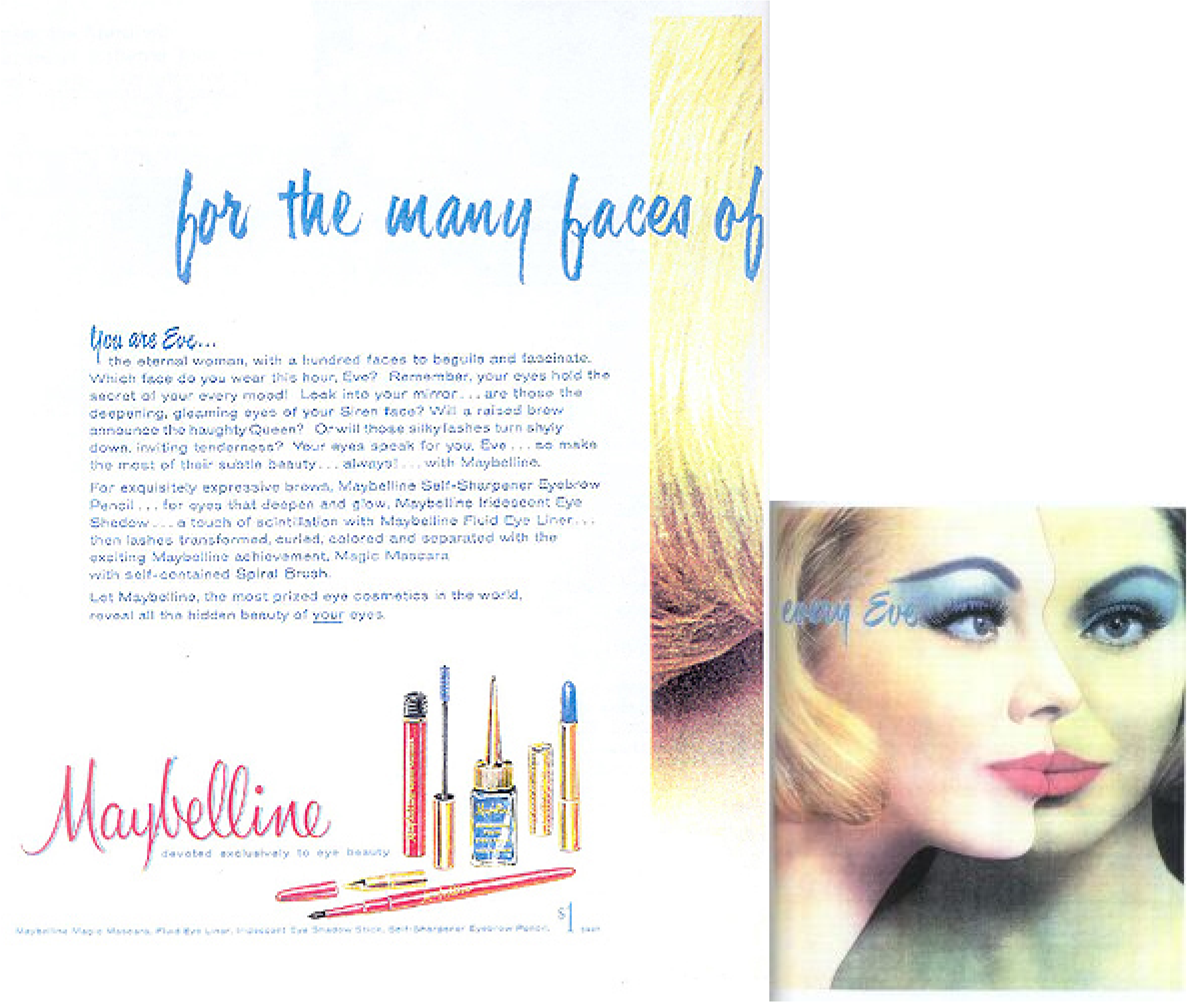

for the many faces of every Eve

You are Eve...

the eternal woman, with a hundred faces to beguile and fascinate. Which face do you wear this hour, Eve? Remember, your eyes hold the secret of your every mood! Look into your mirror . . . are those the deepening, gleaming eyes of your Siren face? Will a raised brow announce the haughty Queen? Or will those silky lashes turn shyly down, inviting tenderness? Your eyes speak for you, Eve . . . so make the most of their subtle beauty . . . always! . . . with Maybelline.

For exquisitely expressive brows, Maybelline Self-Sharpener Eyebrow Pencil . . . for eyes that deepen and glow, Maybelline Iridescent Eye Shadow . . . a touch of scintillation with Maybelline Fluid Eye Liner . . . then lashes transformed, curled, colored and separated with the exciting Maybelline achievement, Magic Mascara with self-contained Spiral Brush.

Let Maybelline, the most prized eye cosmetics in the world, reveal all the hidden beauty of your eyes.

Maybelline

devoted exclusively to eye beauty

Maybelline Magic Mascara, Fluid Eye Liner, Iridescent Eye Shadow Stick, Self-Sharpener Eyebrow Pencil. $1 each

p_12_eve2.jpg

ASSET CONTROL

SURVEILLANCE.

Over the years of watching the Illuminati manage their slaves, it is clear that they like to have their slaves under constant surveillance. Often times they use friends of the slave to keep tabs. For instance, the teams that they put together are great for using to monitor other team members. If they find that the acquaintances and friends of the slave are not contributing enough, they will send out people to keep tabs on the slave.

Surveillance of a slave is done either to let the slave know that he or she is being watched (obviously as an intimidation device), or is done in line with common intelligence/police type tactics. Many times the Illuminati surveillance is so obvious, that this author has to conclude that it is intentionally so. For understanding undetectable surveillance, Hollywood movies are not teaching manuals. To watch someone's house the people working for the Illuminati will often try to maintain about 2 blocks distance. If they have to they can use battery operated bugs or bugs installed using the wiring in the house. If they want to get high-tech they can use fiber optics or even go to satellite-ground antenna monitoring of what a person is doing. If you are looking for a bug, get a counter that will go up into the higher ranges, & expect them to stick bugs away from equipment like refrigerators and air conditioners which make a lot of noise.

They also have directional microphones called bionic ears which can be used to pick up outside sounds from a distance. Sophisticated filters can be placed on their listening devices to screen out background noise. Lasers beamed onto windows can be used to listen to conversations within a building, but these have the drawbacks of picking up building noises, & noises from the street. Laser listening devices are going to function better at night. Telephone taps are commonly done by the Network to control and monitor their slaves. There are low-tech and high-tech ways to do this. The bottom line is that all telephone conversations in this nation (U.S.), all CB-radio traffic, all radio traffic has been totally monitored since before the 1970’s. It is a given that anything you say on the telephone will be fed into a large computer which has words to watch for. Unless you believe you are a high-profile person, who is monitored 24-hours a day, it is best to stay away from mentioning trigger words in your conversation.

Often times, the people monitoring slaves team trail the slave. Teams of people can track a person on foot or in a car. Using a team is the best method in many situations. Often they tag team follow a person. They also have team formations that are used to keep track of a person, such as one person on the opposite side of the street, and one immediately behind and one far behind. Having a distant tracker allows the close one to avoid being caught if the slave tries to take evasive action or to ambush the stalker.

If the person watching the slave gets really concerned they may end up using special headlights called "blackout lights" to shadow the slave at night, which are shielded to keep the beams of light from showing in front or to the side of the car. These special lights light up the road in front of the car only, so the car remains unseen by the stalked mind-controlled victim.

There are a number of secret devices to aid the abusers in their control over environment that the slave must live in. The intelligence groups often use a radio device called AGENT ALERT which looks like a ballpoint pen which sends out a continual beeping when it is activated.

Besides their Global Positioning Satellites, intelligence has Pegasus, a ship that can monitor & record electronic transmissions while sailing offshore. After reading the mind-control significance of Pegasi, it clearer the Navy picked an appropriate horse to record electronic transmissions. Even though all slaves have Reporting Alters, & are tracked in other ways, the Illuminati often has redundant safety features to monitor their "human assets".

Because the slave is monitored from so many different unseen methods, it does begin to seem hopeless to some to ever be free of Big Brother. If you add to all this, that the slave has been programmed repeatedly that there is no escaping their All-seeing eyes, then it is easy to see why so many slaves acquiesce & just comply.

A Vol. 2 reader, who caught onto to what the book is about, pointed out how the new film The Juror reflects their approach to control. The movie shows a controller who is obsessed with who he is controlling. This holds true in real life for the programmers too. Even though Dr. Mengele programmed thousands of people in his lifetime, he had his "pets" (Lieblings), pet slaves that he was obsessed with. In the movie, the controller says, "Do what I say." and "If I can keep you scared, I can save your life." These could have come straight out of a programmer’s mouth. He picks out a juror who is creative & intelligent to control, which are the criteria for selecting victims in real life. The movie illustrates some of the concepts which actually happen that this chapter 12 is trying to describe.

HARASSMENT

One of the things that the Network does to any slave that tries to break free, and the Illuminati does to any of their hierarchy slaves (like this book’s co-author Cisco) who tries to get free is to harass them constantly.

Stephen Knight who researched the Freemasons wrote a chapter in his book The Brotherhood, The Secret World of the Freemasons about how they harass any opposition. (See chapter 16, pp. 140-149). When Knight interviewed ex-Masons they were in abject fear of the Masonic system. They didn’t even want to talk about how much power the Freemasons have to ruin careers, spy, and harass people. Since Knight’s book is available for the reader, and since there are a number of books (like those from Loompanics) that are very detailed on harassment techniques, this book will only briefly touch on the subject. However, just because it is only briefly mentioned please don’t mistakenly think this is a minor topic.

The Illuminati and their co-workers the Freemasons, the Mishpucka, and CIA put outrageously great amounts of efforts into harassment. It is not unusual for a recovering victim of mind-control to find their favourite pet killed, or human faeces in their oven, and other bizarre harassments that show the warped character of the controllers. The CIA, the Masonic leaders, and the Mishpucka keep extensive files on everyone for purposes of blackmail, and coercion. The Masonic leadership of Freemasonry in a given area will have thousands of "blackmail" files on essentially everyone of importance in their area. Upper echelon people such as judges, lawyers, and politicians are generally controlled via IRS infringements, and many of the lower echelon people are controlled through weird sexual items. This is where the Delta and Beta Monarch slaves are so helpful to the Illuminati. The Freemasons can have a sexual alter seduce a man, contrive a scene, and then an alter that is in a death trance takes the body so that the target of blackmail thinks he has killed the woman. It works great for blackmail. (This information comes from several witnesses who are informed about the blackmail files & their methods for blackmailing.)

CAR COLORS

The Vol. 2 book apparently neglected to relate how the colors of cars are used to access victims. Some victims around the U.S. are programmed to red & white cars. Autos with both colors will arrive. Red & White are the great mystical colors assoc. with the 2 headed eagle & Janus. White cars are for high ranking slaves. Very specific sexual slaves are picked up in red and black cars. In N.Y. brown Volkswagens were frequently used for accessing slaves. Two tone cars will be used to trigger particular alters to come out. Another common practice that is occurring across the U.S. is for the draconian enforcers to borrow cars from dealerships so that they can’t be traced. The license plates of cars are also used as access triggers for some slaves.

TELEVISION

The all pervasive television, which has been so common place in the lives of Americans, is used a great deal to manipulate trauma-based mind-controlled slaves. Tests by researcher Herbert Krugman have shown that TV watchers used their right brain twice as much as their left brain and released Beta-endorphin into their brains. In other words, TV watching trains the mind to go into an altered state. If a blank black frame is interjected every 32 frames on a show, a 45 beat/minute pulsation is created that puts a person into a hypnotic trance. In Vol. 2, it was brought out how the Lawnmower Man movie, displayed the symbols used to program many of the slaves. The movie was advertised with the slogan "God made him simple...Science made him a god." This is a slogan fitting for an Illuminati member who has been programmed to think he is a god, and yet he must serve his superiors.

BUILDING FAMILIES AND COMMUNITIES THAT HAVE INTERWOVEN PROGRAMMING

The Illuminati has increasingly wanted to keep their members within Illuminati family settings. They have had more problems with placing their members into families which are not part of their mind-control than they have had with children which are raised within Illum. or cult type settings. If one or both of the parents have programming, the Illuminati often weaves the programming together so that the entire family becomes one programmed dissociative mechanism.

For instance, on a ritual night the child as it is being tucked in bed will say to the mother, "MAY I HAVE A DRINK OF WATER." This is the code trigger for the mother to give a drug in a drink. The child is to say another trigger to the parent when they get the drink, then is programmed to drink the drug. The second trigger causes the parent to switch to a personality that feels compelled to get the family into the car and drive. The family all mechanically click into a series of alter switches and end up at a ritual. They mechanically trigger and reinforce each others programming as they return from the ritual, and end up at home with everyone’s front alters not knowing what the family has been involved with. Here we have an entire family whose testimony could reinforce each other that they did nothing but sleep at home that night!

There are some locations, for instance, two entire towns in southern Utah that are a strict offbeat shoot of Mormonism, which are entirely programmed multiples. There have been some television shows about entire towns being caught up in secret satanic rituals. It is true, but they also have occult mind-control programming along with those rituals. Here we see how an entire city can trigger each other’s programming and all be involved in the insanity of all this without full awareness. This is in fact, where the entire world is headed very rapidly.

ISOLATION

While control mechanisms are put into place world-wide, the Illuminati still must keep their children isolated from the world. To successfully raise a child slave, the mind-control’s success depends upon isolation. Children involved in cult rituals do not talk to other children. If they are caught talking, the standard punishment is to tie the child to a dead child. They want their children to shut down, and only do what they are told. They want the child to respond only to the Programmer and its Mother of Darkness. They heap lots of guilt upon any child that breaks the rules of no communication. Children still manage to learn to speak with their eyes and fingers. They become skilled at this even though they know the punishment will be severe if caught.

BOARDING SCHOOLS & BODY PROGRAMMING.

Most people would naturally think that this topic would belong to this chapter. Actually, this topic DOES NOT belong here. But it was placed here on purpose, because its placement here will emphasize its point, while not detracting from the Cranial Manipulation and Genetic Manipulations sections of Chpt. 8.

Boarding schools not only give the elite a chance to isolate, educate, and indoctrinate their children, but it is also a great way to layer in body memories that instil a subconscious ethic of elitism. It is an attitude of elitism that allowed the Pharisees to crucify Christ, the Nazis to kill Jews, and Moslems to kill Hindus, etc.

How does this layering of body memories happen? The memories of our bodies are buried within the cells of our bodies. Therapists have known about body memories for some time now. Cellular level body memories are way beyond the grasp of the consciousness. Buried into a deep unconscious repression are the body memories of the social values (elitism) that are contained in how the social elite walk, hold a spoon and knife, how a person must stand up straight with good posture, and how the person holds and uses their facial muscles. The boarding schools teach an entire world of elite mannerisms such as "keep a stiff upper lip" to "don’t hold your knife in your left hand."

West Point performs the same programming of body memories, to insure that their West Pointers develop an elitist attitude. The effect of these body memories is to subconsciously encourage the mind into thinking that it is elite. The erect posture and military gait that this author was taught carry with them the implication of superiority. While the conscious awareness of this elitist indoctrination can be gotten in touch with and defused, there are none-the-less buried elements of body memory that resist tampering. This author would ask his fellow West Pointers, how do they feel if they walk like a general around civilians?

This type of body programming contributes to an ethic of elitism. How it is created and how it works has not escaped the detection of the elite bloodlines. This is why the British boarding schools are so strict about "good manners." Through a plebe year of bracing, the mind develops body memories of how to stand in a military brace. Some cadets are so traumatized by their first year, they never return to a normal posture. A military brace has been proven to not be the healthiest posture. It’s this author’s contention that the military brace is insisted upon for mind-control, and not for health reasons.

Victims of mind-control have been placed in many humiliating body positions, as well as many painful body positions. It takes years of slow subconscious work as well as deep massage to pull these up and work with these body memories. For instance, during the tortures to create cat/kitten alters, the children often crouch like cats. Kitten alters will retain their body memories of crouching (hunching the shoulders) like a cat. Sometimes when their masters begin to beat on kitten alters, they will reflexively crouch like a scared kitten. And what’s with the woman called Queen Sheri who has been managing the two professional wrestlers Macho King and Randy Savage? Both of these professional wrestlers are part of a "family" called the New World Order. Queen Sheri walks around in a cat costume and facial makeup that makes her look like a real wild cat. Is this wildcat a Monarch wildcat?

When controls fail, THE FINAL SOLUTION.

The World Order can send out teams of professional killers. (What’s new?) These killers often emotionally distance themselves from their victims by thinking of their "targets" as inferior forms of life that they are "liquidating", "terminating", "cleansing from this planet", etc. In 1996, a 4-member hit team took out the entire Bill Mueller family (Bill, Nancy, and 8 yr. old Sarah). Bill was a member of the Special Ops Group SOG of the Navy Seals. He had become a Patriot and a big gun dealer living in Arkansas. Someone decided he was too much of a threat and sent a team in to take not just him but his entire family out. Booz-Allen & Hamilton, Inc has been hired by the NWO to infiltrate the militias. This author has known in this area several disobedient slaves, and one therapist who lost their lives to assassins, as well as another one who committed suicide according to programming. But anymore what isn't dangerous? Crossing the street and eating at a restaurant can kill you too. The reader knows this. This author also knows of several who were going to be killed but escaped. One troublemaker was to have been sacrfficed but broke free and hid, another was ritually tortured, buried alive, and left for dead, but managed to survive.

The Programmers

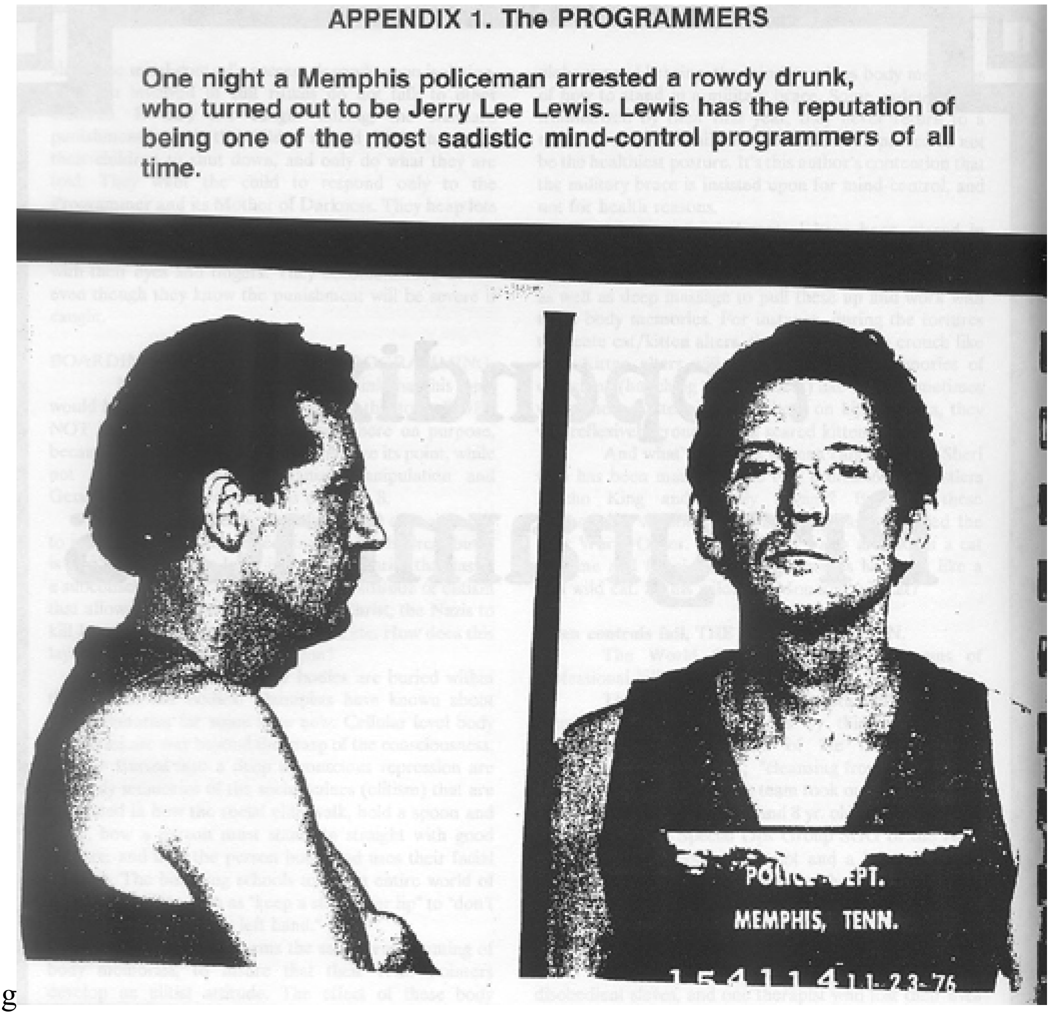

APPENDIX 1. The PROGRAMMERS

One night a Memphis policeman arrested a rowdy drunk, who turned out to be Jerry Lee Lewis. Lewis has the reputation of being one of the most sadistic mind-control programmers of all time.

POLICE DEPT.
MEMPHIS, TENN.
154114 11-23-76

p_lewis.jpg

APPENDIX 1 - PROGRAMMERS/RESEARCHERS

DIRTY PSYCHIATRISTS involved with MIND CONTROL
DIRTY RESEARCHERS
DIRTY TAVISTOCK CONTROLLERS
SOME OF FREEMASONRY'S MIND-CONTROL PEOPLE
REMOTE VIEWING MIND-RESEARCH
ODDS & ENDS
LIST of PROGRAMMERS (continuation from the list given in Vol. 2)
A FEW random CIA/INTELLIGENCE MEN involved WITH MIND-CONTROL
Anton LaVey--Profile of a trauma-based mind-control programmer
WHAT TO LOOK FOR.
MICHAEL AQUINO, a military/cult mind-control programmer
  HIS CAREER

PERSONAL HISTORY.
UNDERSTANDING The CHURCH OF SET
UNDERSTANDING SOME OF AQUINO’S PROGRAMMING.
BACKGROUND
SEQUELAE OF ABUSE

The Illuminati set up the Josiah Macy, Jr. Foundation to direct some of the mind-control its research, and its financial affairs. Harold Abramson became one of its leaders. One of the Macy Foundation’s directors has been military intelligence chief and relative to Winston Churchill, Gen. Marlborough Churchill. Both Winston and Marlborough are of the corrupt Illuminati Marlborough family.

DIRTY PSYCHIATRISTS involved with MIND CONTROL

Dr. Van O. Austin, Utah
Dr. George Brock Chisholm, Tavistock
Dr. Lawrence D. Ginsberg
Dr. Robert G. Heath
Dr. Paul Hoch, Scot. Rite Mason
Dr. Robert Howell, Utah
Dr. Nathan Kline, Columbia Univ.
Dr. Nolan D.C. Lewis, dir NY State Psyc Inst. & Scottish Rite Mason
Dr. Amedeo S. Marrazzi, Missouri Inst. of Psychology
Dr. Sudha Tayi

DIRTY RESEARCHERS

Dr. Ross Adley, formerly of the Brain Research Center at Univ. of So. CA, now at Loma Linda Univ. Med. School, CIA, worked on ELF waves and the brain, and EM radiation.

Dr. Emmanuel Donchin, head of Psyc. Dept. at Urbana-Champaign’s Univ. of IL, worked on thought-controlled machines.

Dr. Wayne O. Evans--U.S. Mil. Stress Lab, Natick, Mass

Dr. Dave Morgan, Lockhead-Sanders, worked on the syntel

Dr. Arthur Upton, head National Cancer Inst.

DIRTY TAVISTOCK CONTROLLERS

W. R. Byon

Richard Crossman

H. V. Dicks

Ronald Lippert

Brig. Gen. Dr. John Rawlings Rees

SOME OF FREEMASONRY’S MIND-CONTROL PEOPLE

Dr. Robert Hanna Felix--33°, dir of psyc. research for Scott. Rite, oversaw the Lexington KT programming facility

Dr. Franz J. Kailman-jewish Nazi who did research at NY State Psyc. Inst. while at Columbia Univ.

Seymour Solomon Kety- exec. of Scot. Rites psychiatry experiments, & nat. dir. of American Eugenics Soc.

Winfred Overholser- overall leader of Masonic research into mind-control, sup. of St. 'Elizabeth's Hosp. a mental hospital in Wash. D.C.

REMOTE VIEWING MIND-RESEARCH

Private organizations doing research into RV in the U.S. are run by "retired" intelligence people.

Joe McMoneagle -- "retired Intelligence officer" left govt.'s Stargate to set up "private" RV research.

ODDS & ENDS

· Hillary Clinton, who is a Grand Dame in the Illuminati, started in the early 1960s a group of mind-controlled slaves which is called Royal Project. She reportedly exercises power in the White House via 16 staffers who have been given authority over the different departments of government. One mind-control victim claims that one of Clinton's talks gave triggers for him to kill. One of Clinton's never mentioned cronies, who works closely with him, and travels to meet him at various locations is Charles Whitmore of Arkansas.

· One of the big areas where a great number of mind-controlled slaves congregate are MUFON meetings. An example of a slave handler, who is also a programmed slave is Dea Martin, who tells people she has worked for the government and who does aura readings. She controls her sidekick Jim Courant, a commercial airline pilot. An example of a programmed multiple with "alien" programming was serial murderer Robert Moody. Film taken of Moody in jail shows his MPD (DID).

· Kleinknecht was National Director of NASA during the Moon Flights when lots of mind-control programming was being done by both the Masonic lodges and NASA. C. Fred Kleinknecht was not only director of NASA but the Sec. General of the Scottish Rite 33°.

· The Doors Singer Jim Morrison used the occult code name Lizard King and The Exterminating Angel. He was involved with mind control.

· Col. John Alexander, (also called Doctor) who has been living in Arizona, and who has been in charge of making psychic warriors for the U.S. Army, has the inside reputation of being the Illuminati's top mind-control programmer.

· James Monroe. It turns out that there have been two James Monroes involved in programming. The first one was bn. perhaps in the 1920's, was 6' tall, and he was the CIA man who set up the Society for the Investigation of Human Ecology, a CIA front for mind-control, He had a very polite front in spite of being a sadistic programmer. The second one was James Monroe Martinez, bn in 1938, 6' tall, who was busy setting up underground bases such as the one at Los Alamos under the cover of working for GE. One report said he died in 1965. His mother owned a Catholic half-way house in Albuquerque, NM.

· There are all kinds of events happening around us that show evidence of mind-control. One example, is the case of a Catholic man quitting the monastery and becoming a NASA physicist.

· Part of the success of the mind-control lays within their child procurement abilities. The' corrupt Finders group, which consisted of FBI/CIA men who helped procure children, were led by Marion Pettie, who was called "the Stroller" and "the Game Caller" by Finder members.

* The establishment allowed CIA programmer Dr. Louis Joyon "Jolly" West to examine Jack Ruby in his jail cell. When Ruby refused to admit to insanity, West labelled him "paranoid and mentally ill" and Ruby was placed on pills, which were called "happy pills". Ruby believed he was being poisoned by the establishment.

· Part of the success of the mind-control lays in the fact that there is such a widespread network of pedophiles. On Channel 5, May 6, 1996, during a show "Priestly Sins," it was stated that "at least 3000 [catholic] priests are sexual abusers of children." The program stated that 600 priests have been reported to law enforcement within the last few years for complaints of sexual abuse of children. The show stated that catholics are silenced and punished if they speak up. Priests who speak out are penalized. For instance in 1985, a senior official at the Vatican's embassy in Wash. D.C. discovered rampant sexual abuse and wrote a report on how it should be dealt with responsibly. The church promptly buried the report.

LIST of PROGRAMMERS (continuation from the list given in Vol. 2)

Stephen Aldrich

Morse Allen

Dr. Charles L. Brown

Col. Campbell

Dr. Cleghon

Hillary Clinton

Jack F. (Uncle Jack) & Jill Coogan

Sen. Alan Cranston

"Gen." Earman

Don Ebner

Dr. Charles Evans

Dr. Tom Fox

Floyd & Mildred Frost & dau. Carol Frost Buls

Dr. George S. Glass

Dr. Goldshe

L. Wilson Greene

Dr. James Hamilton

Dr. Robert G. Heath

Richard Helms

Dr. Paul Hoch

Dr. Hyde

Dr. Korim (sp. not known)

Dr. Lowenstein

Mateland

Dr. Gary E. Miller

Dr. Moore

Dr. Martin Orne

Dr. Rosenberg

http://whale.to/b/sp/springmeier.html

Dr. Woolsworth Russell

Cpt. George White (nickname/cover name Stormy)

Dr. Robert E. White

A FEW random CIA/INTELLIGENCE MEN involved WITH MIND-CONTROL

John Bacon
Tennant (Pete) Bagley
Col. Matt Baird
Bill Brown
Richard L. Conolly, Jr.
Burt Courage
Cong. Bud Cramer
Jerry Droller
Robert Feldman
Jim Ferguson
J. Peter Grace
Cynthia Hausman
Richard Helms
William J. Hood
Jack Kindschi
John McCone
Charles McKay
Cord Meyer
Comm. John R. Miller
Herbert Quinde
Wade Thomas

Anton LaVey--Profile of a trauma-based mind-control programmer

When someone coined the phrase "dynamite comes in small packages" the phrase was an apt description of Anton LaVey. (Released photographs of LaVey prevent people from realizing how short his is.) In a personal letter which Anton LaVey wrote, "With my swastika, I'm strong. My Satanic amulets give me power. I'm not a misfit anymore, with pimples and a heart murmur and flat feet."

Anton LaVey is famous for having started the Church of Satan. He chose Walpurgisnacht, April 30, 1966 to start the Church of Satan in San Francisco. Previously he had began holding midnight magic seminars in 1960. He and his occult friends held Magic Circle meetings until he founded the Church. His Church of Satan is officially recognized by the U.S. government and the military.

He turned an old Victorian House, at 6114 California St., San Francisco into what has been called "the Black Castle". It was for years indeed black on the outside, and LaVey would drive a hearse. Anton LaVey kept a full grown 400 lb. Nubian lion named Togare from Ethiopia at his house (which was allowed both inside & outside) that scared the neighbours when it roared. He also has kept a black leopard.

LaVey loves to play his Hammond organ music in his black castle as if his house were a stereotypical horror house. Inside the house are rooms used for rituals, occult books including books on cannibalism, coffins, a maze of secret passageways, and LaVey's private saloon called the Den of Iniquity. He called his satanic covens "Grottos."

This author is aware that the Church of Satan got Grottos going in the following cities: Amsterdam (Magistralis Grotto, Neth.), Boston, Chicago, Dayton, Denver, Detroit, Edmonton (Can), Indianapolis, Kansas City, Las Vegas, London (Eng.), Los Angeles, Louisville, New York, Paris (Fr.), Phoenix, Portland (OR), St. Petersburg, Seattle, Silverton (OR), and Vancouver (Can).

Undoubtedly, there are other groups, as well as a scattered following of individuals. The Church of Satan has had many Ph.D.'s. The church has had a high percentage of professionals such as: doctors, lawyers, teachers, former FBI agents, IBM executives. Cult underground film maker Kenneth Anger was a member of the Church of Satan. An ex-high priest of the Church of Satan told this author how he was recruited for the position of high priest. He was promised anything he wanted in life, any woman, any money etc.--and they made good on much of that promise. As high priest, he micromanaged everyone's lives in his grotto. His people came to him for permission and advice and orders for everything. It wasn't just mind-control, it was total control of their lives. But giving orders and micromanaging the lives of many people became a drag.

One of Cathy O'Brien's abusers was LaVey's High Priest Merle Kilgore, father of Steve Kilgore. LaVey (bn. April 11, 1930) comes from a Rumanian bloodline from Translyvania. As he grew up he love the story of Frankenstein. As a teenager he loved the occult. He dropped out of high school to be part of the Clyde Beatty circus.

LaVey likes to work from dusk to dawn. Like his ex-right hand man Michael Aquino, another mind-control programmer, both LaVey and Aquino are fascinated with the Nazis. (Michael Aquino's wife Lillith Sinclair was formerly the head of the Church of Satan's NY Lillith Grotto.) LaVey sports a Van Dyke beard, and a head shaved in the same fashion of executioners during the middle ages. Most of his followers never see him. Although LaVey has gotten wide press coverage, thanks to William Randolph Hearst's newspapers and his publishing companies like Avon, LaVey is a very secretive person and very rarely shows himself to even his high priests, or even talks to them.

His Church is a collection of self-sustaining dictators. He exaggerates the numbers of his church, apparently by claiming people who come in contact with his church. Before we discuss more about his organization and their rituals, let's touch on his role as a trauma-based mind-control programmer. Anton LaVey has openly advocated the creation of android humans. Even more startling is a music video shown on TV in which Anton LaVey personally gives a graphic description of how Anton LaVey intends to make the listener into his "mind-controlled sex slave". The audacity of this is mind-boggling. But then LaVey has tended to be more frank than other occult figures. The approach seems to be "I'll shock you so boldly, that you will not believe what I am saying, but will think its an act."

Taking inspiration from Orwell's 1984 LaVey wrote, "Up is down, pleasure is pain, darkness is light, slavery is freedom, madness is sanity..." This is actually the language that is used at times in the mind-control programming! Anton LaVey has been the mind-control handler/programmer of a number of Hollywood actors & actresses, including Jayne Mansfield and Marilyn Monroe, who both serviced him as sexual slaves. Jayne Mansfield, who was a High Priestess in the Church of Satan, shocked people when on a USO tour in Vietnam she asked for a satanic religious service. Sam Brody, one of Mansfield's handlers, had a bitter struggle over who would control Jayne, and one of LaVey's followers claimed to have tampered with Brody's car. Anton LaVey has also been the programmer of his daughters such as Karla and Zeena and his son. An ex-member of a satanic cult in the Ozarks said, "If LaVey says jump, you jump." Some of his followers call him "Uncle Anton" as if they were programmed by him. LaVey's cover is that he is simply a showman, a buffoon. His cover has fooled many people, the truth is the man is not to be trusted and has a lot more evil power than people have realized.

LaVey has always had what some describe as a "warm relationship" with police. In fact, he was on the police force in the 1950's as a photographer. The police were reluctant to question LaVey about the death of Jayne Mansfield (4/19/33-6/28/67) who was one of LaVey's high priestesses and slaves in his Church of Satan. Her color was pink. Anton LaVey has been seen going onto military programming bases, and was at the NORAD area in Colorado for a while.

Dick Russell interviewed Anton LaVey with his approval. Russell wrote up the interview in "The Satanist Who Wants To Rule the World", (Argosy, June 1975, p. 41) that the Anton LaVey believes that he and an elite force of Satanists will rule the world. LaVey took an obscure occult tract from the 30's and some thoughts from HG. Well's book The Island of Dr. Moreau for a ritual. From this, he came up with a ritual which includes these stanzas:

"Man is God. We are men. We are gods. God is man."

When the reader is done reading this book, he will see how this ritual can fit in perfectly with trauma-based total mind-control. In fact, when people attend the Church of Satan's secret rituals, once people enter the ritual room two hooded guards prevent people from exiting prematurely through the closed doors. The rituals have been reported as being very disgusting. It well publicized that LaVey uses naked human altars for rituals, after photos were published of his satanic baptism of his 3 year old-daughter Zeena in May 1967. Does the Church of Satan involve summoning demons and worshipping Satan. Yes, most definitively. For instance, here are the some of the words of an important invocation used by his satanic rituals:

In nomine Dei nostri Satanas Luciferi excelsi! In the name of Satan, the Ruler of the earth, the King of the world, I command the forces of darkness to bestow their Infernal power upon me!...By all the Gods of the Pit, I command that these things of which I speak shall come to pass! Come forth and answer your names by manifesting my desires! Hail Satan!"

LaVey's book The Compleat Witch (NY Dodd, Mead, 1971) p. 266 advocates that one achieve self-understanding and "embrace and cherish the demon within him." In LaVey's book The Satanic Witch (LA: Feral House, 1969) he states that a witch to be successful must make a pact with the devil. His church loves to chant "Hail Satan". They like Crowley's law, Do What thou Wilt. LaVey & some of his members teach that at the core of each person is a demon waiting to be released.

LaVey loves Black Masses and desecrating anything sacred to Christians. LaVey urges people in his books and talks to bring out their "darkest" urging. He hints at human sacrifice in his Satanic Bible, by having a section on it, but is careful not to go too far out on a limb publicly. He always publicly denies that Satanists should do human sacrifices. One of the doctors of the San Francisco Church of Satan is said to have brought LaVey's church a severed human leg from the hospital he worked at, which was basted in Triple Sec and eaten by LaVey and his group. Most of the rituals are done in secret, there are no way to confirm rumours that they eat human flesh, but knowing the mentality of some of his church members, they would do it just to check it out as a new experience.

Illuminatus William Randolph Hearst gave Anton LaVey some big help. His Avon Publishing published his Satanic Bible in 1969 (it was first released in Dec. '69). Since then it has reportedly gone through over 30 printings. LaVey's next book The Satanic Rituals also was published by Hearst Avon in 1972. It talks about the power that blood sacrifices give the magician. Hearst's papers also gave him publicity.

LaVey is always thinking of ways of promoting his theology. Years ago, he had a topless witches Sabbath on San Francisco's North Beach. In 1990, the Church of Satan went into the Heavy Metal music business. The Church of Satan puts out a monthly magazine The Cloven Hoof which for most members is their main indirect communication from Magus LaVey.

WHAT TO LOOK FOR.

One of the most asked questions is, "Fritz, what does one look for?" One of the best covers for Illuminati kingpins is religion. Another is philanthropy. Philanthropy ties in with Illuminati beliefs that your good deeds must balance your evil deeds to gain power--it's a Gnostic cabalistic view point. The Illuminati kingpins are great philanthropists even though much of their philanthropy is self-serving.

Perhaps giving an example of a family that is suspect due to their circumstances would help illustrate this point. There is such a family which has gone almost undetected for years, and although some people fear them, they have not been reported on. Just because the police place a person on the suspect list, does not mean that the person is guilty. Everyone deserves the right to treated as innocent, until proven guilty.

One of the groups that concern this author are the rich ultra-secretive ultraconservative Talmudic Jewish groups. This exclusive group keep their children away from contact with the outside world and send them to exclusive, semi-secret schools. An example of this would be the Reichmanns of Canada, who are billionaires, and have had some connections to the Rothschilds of England. It's not that this author has problems with people observing their religious beliefs strictly (or in the ultra-conservative Talmudic groups, "ultra-strictly" better describes their extreme strictness). It's great that people have standards of belief and conduct. However, the author sees the same patterns of legalism and secrecy that pervade Old Order Amish groups, -- except in the case of families like the Reichmanns, the potential for mischief is great, because they are not involved with milking cows, but international banking.

While most people are simply ignorant about the Amish but are not fearful of them, people who know rich billionaires like the Reichmanns scared to death of them and a heavy cloak of secrecy envelopes them. Renée Reichmann was the great matriarch of the Reichmanns of Canada who are Talmidim Chakham, followers of the Talmud. They are not Hasidic. She is a descendent from King David, and King Solomon. She lives in Toronto. Her great-grandfather, a Gestetner, was one of the wealthiest men in Hungary. Most of her family lives in Montreal, two of her sons live in Toronto. Her children are Eva, Edward, Louis, Albert, Paul & Ralph. Samuel Reichmann is the father of the dynasty in Canada.

In 1929, his egg business made him rich. He learned how to work finances and currency exchanges between different countries to make money by tricks to circumvent legalities. Their family has also gotten Rothschild financial help, and during W.W. II they worked with Koppel, who ran the Rothschild's City Bank in Gibraltar. Their family did a great many things during W.W. II from the trading center Tangier in North Africa. Tangier was located in a position to trade between the Axis and the Allies. Also during W.W. II, under the direction of the Bank of Spain the Reichmanns and others kept the Spanish currency artificially high, by creating an artificial demand for the currency. The Reichmanns made perhaps millions of dollars on currency exchanges during the war years.

Don Eduardo Reichman was the administrator of del Real Estate & Commercial Bank of Tangier. Eva Reichmann married a British merchant banker. Albert Reichmann is President of Olympia & York Developments Ltd. Paul sits on the board of the Canadian Imperial Bank of Commerce (CIBC) & on the board of Rockefeller Center Properties, Inc. (a real estate investment trust for some of the Rockefeller properties in Manhattan.) Albert sits on the board of the Mt. Sinai Hospital in Toronto, and on the board of Landmark Lands Co., Inc. which owns some of the great golf courses in Palm Springs, CA. The Ontario Ministry of Consumer & Commercial Relations has offices in buildings owned by them. They tried to buy banks in Israel. Their sect of Judaism has a Yesodeh Hatorah school for ultra-orthodox boys. Their children have very little exposure to outside world. Their children do not have access to newspapers, television, or radios. Ralph and Paul were privately educated in England at Gateshead. It's a perfect setup for trauma-based mind-control.

Samuel Reichmann is known among his kind of Jewish sect as a philanthropist who supports Torah institutions. These Talmudic families consider pedigrees and genealogies very important, which is very much in line with the Illuminati's mind-set. The reason that this family is mentioned is that the Reichmanns haven't been mentioned in my previous books, and the circumstances that pervade the family have the earmarks for what this book is about. It may be that this family of billionaires consists of only wonderful people, but it is a given that most of the readers would be considered animals by these strict Talmudists, who would never allow any of us of the wrong bloodlines to be accepted into their "in" group. Obviously the Rothschilds are of the right bloodline.

Likewise, international bankers tend to be a Machiavellian clique, (that is not this author's opinion, but the opinion of honest hearted person who have ran in those circles.) Why has this clique accepted a family like the Reichmann's from such a narrow-minded judgemental sect into their fold? This paragraph is not written toward anyone specifically, it simply calling our attention a family of billionaires that no one knows about, which lives in veil of secrecy, and a religious setting that would make mind-control as easy as imaginable. (The Reichmanns would deny what's been written here.)

There are victims of mind-control coming in to therapists from conservative Jewish groups, and at least some of these are Illuminati. The religious front could just as easily be Christian. Some of the readers of Vol. 2 reported back that the book helped them unveil the religious fronts that had helped derail their suspicions of puzzling situations that don't add up. The next programmer to be written about uses the front of being a leader of a Satanic Cult. I say front, because Michael Aquino has created a public image for his satanic cult, and hides behind that public image. Anytime someone wants to reveal the ugly truth about him, he hollers to the effect that he is being persecuted by a wild witch-hunt. He hollers that people are just having a knee-jerk reaction to his satanic occultism, and that he is really safe.

MICHAEL AQUINO, a military/cult mind-control programmer

An OVERVIEW. Michael Aquino has been a trauma-based total mind-control (Monarch) programmer for the DIA Psychological Warfare Division. He is also a prominent public satanist. A photo of Aquino in his military uniform is in the center picture section of Carl A. Raschke's Painted Black (San Francisco: Harper & Row, 1990.) Other books contain various pictures of him in satanic garb with ritual items. Most of the programmers have chosen to remain in the background, Aquino with his enormous ego, has chosen otherwise.

Senator Byrd (KKK leader & Freemason) and Aquino have done a great deal together over the years, and have been like a team. With the legal expertise of U.S. Sen. Robert C. Byrd, Aquino established the Temple of Set, a satanic cult as a legal religion recognized by the U.S. government and the U.S. military. This exclusive cult was designed to give these unchallenged criminals of the Network:

A. a legal organization whose membership consists of a mixed group of slaves and handlers, B. a market outlet for their illegal drugs and porn, C. a good public, legal, openly satanic front with which to attack all media coverage of ritual abuse.

The controlled media could now excuse itself from covering ritual abuse, by saying that they had been threatened to be sued by the Church of Set. Although the Church of Set has had the entire power of the establishment protecting it from investigation and criminal prosecution, the climate of control over the United States is still not complete enough for Satanists to openly get away with their mind-control. By identifying itself so intimately with the Church of Set, U.S. military intelligence has given the world an open trail of clues to help whistle-blowers expose the mind-control that has been going on throughout most of this century. Michael Aquino openly associated with men like President Ronald Reagan at the White House, again giving us the leverage to expose the secret satanic philosophies of America's leadership. Most of these men lead double lives, and due to the mind-control it has been hard to establish (except for eye-witnesses) that they are secret Satanists.

HIS CAREER

The army has known about Michael Aquino's Satanism from the beginning, clear back in 1968. Aquino (and some of his satanic lieutenants) received a High security clearance (reportedly level 6), and he served with the World Affairs Council.

A dozen leaders within the Temple of Set were Military Intelligence officers (for instance, Capt. Willie Browning and Intelligence Officer Dennis Mann). Aquino wrote "From PSYOP to Mind War: The Psychology of Victory" published in the establishment's prestigious Military Review magazine. Aquino writes in this "From PSYOP to MindWar..." article, "...we shall create MindWar. The term is harsh and fear-inspiring, and so it should be: It is a term of attack and victory..." Aquino is a sadistic programmer, who loves to inflict pain on others.

Aquino has a doctorate in political science. He has two masters degrees (one is in political science, Univ. of CA, Santa Barbara, where he also got his doctorate). Aquino is Airborne qualified. He studied at the U.S. National Defense University. He was in Military Intelligence in Vietnam & Germany, and the Presideo. He was a Defense Intelligence Agency attache, and taught political science on the university level. He reported directly to the Joint Chiefs of Staff and worked one on one with the Secretary of Defense Cheney. He is a pseudo-intellectual whose ego and astronomically-large pride gets in the way of real learning.

He was the former national commander of the Eagle Scouts Honor Society. (The Boys Scout system is heavily influenced by Freemasons and contains unfortunately some perverts that try to take advantage of the system for their own perversions.) There was a massive coverup in the Presideo Day Care scandal in which Aquino was involved in. There were hundreds of witnesses of the abuse. The military and intelligence put strong pressure on the San Francisco police to get them to back down from doing anything to Aquino. During that time period, the Pentagon transferred Aquino from the Presideo back to the National Defense University, Wash., D.C. (And later he wound up in the St. Louis area.) During the investigation of the Temple of Set, the FBI claimed they had no record of such an organization. The military at the Presideo, had a spokesperson tell the press that Aquino was a good soldier who did his job. Aquino hides behind his religion. In his Scroll of Set Aquino accuses the father of the girl who pointed him out as her abuser as persecuting him because he is a Satanist. Aquino writes, "Also relevant is his profession as a Christian clergyman; I certainly doubt that he would have made such an outrageous accusation against any Lieutenant Colonel who was not known to be a prominent Satanist." (p. 4 Oct. XXII)

The truth that everyone will realize on their own is that any loving, caring father when he discovers some pervert has severely sexually molested and tortured his daughter is going to go to the police no matter what religion the villain belongs to. In 1985, U.S. Army major Grady McMurtry of Berkeley, CA and Kenneth Grant's OTO got into a legal battle over who was the actual chartered OTO lodge in the U.S.

Col. Michael Aquino of U.S. Military Intelligence watched the legal battle, and wrote these comments in the Scroll of Set Vol. XII no. 5, Oct. '86, "While sitting in the courtroom watching Judge Legge preside sternly over the slug-out, I couldn't help wondering if he had any idea he was ruling on which group had legal claim to anal sex as the supreme religious sacrament in the United States." Witnesses report that one of Aquino's favorite types of sex is necrophilia, which of course can also be carried out with alters that are in a death state.

PERSONAL HISTORY.

Michael's father was an Italian Catholic. A Canadian police document that this author has indicates that Michael's mother was Betty Ford. Michael's wife is Lillith Sinclair. Besides being a Satanic High Priest & Ipsissimus, and an Military Intelligence Officer in Psychological warfare, Michael was a stockbroker for a while. In 1970, he joined the Church of Satan, and led a grotto in Kentucky. Michael gave lectures on Satanism at the University of Louisville, and used his house in Louisville for rituals. Aquino claimed to be anointed as the Second Beast, the one that Aleister Crowley prophesied in The Book of the Law. (See Aquino's The Book of Coming Forth by Night.) While LaVey shaved his head and wore horns to look the part, Aquino cut his hair in a widow's peak, plucked his eyebrows, and had a 666 tattooed under his scalp.

UNDERSTANDING The CHURCH OF SET

His Temple of Set was set up using ranks borrowed straight from the secret Illuminati--Priests or Priestesses, Adepts, Masters (Magus or Maga), and Ipsissimus or Ipsissima. (The Order of the Golden Dawn also uses the rank of ipsissimus. His cult uses new terminology such as Setian for Satanist. It's a common tactic of cults to use new terms to separate the cult followers from the external world.

In Aquino's bi-monthly periodical The Scroll of Set (Vol. XIII, No. 5, Oct. XXII, 1987, pg. 2 Aquino states, "Christianity is finished as a serious contender for the minds of intelligent humans." Aquino's brand of Satanism attempts to pre-date Christian ideas and goes make to Egyptian Hermetic magic and mythology for its symbolism.

Aquino also studied the Black Order and the SS in Germany and attempts to incorporate Nazi occultism and symbology into his satanic orders. The Temple of Set advertised in occult magazines, computer bulletin boards, and ads in the San Francisco Yellow pages. When the Temple of Set expanded to Britain, David Austen from Kent, England, became Aquino's High Priest in Britain.

To let the reader see just one more example of collaboration behinds the scenes of the Network, a Jesuit member of the Temple of Set continued teaching at a Catholic School after he joined the Temple. Aquino coined the word Xeper (pronounced keffer) to mean the process of evolving a higher consciousness. Scientifically conducted research by Graphoanalysts has determined that a preoccupation with x's means a preoccupation with death. Aquino and some other Satanists show their preoccupation with death by their fascination for words that begin with the letter "x". Aquino's girlfriend Linda Blood has supposedly left the Church of Set and was at a conference that this author attended. She was very antagonistic toward the victims of mind control at the conference, and acted in every way like a cult plant. She was very disruptive of what the victims of mind-control were trying to gain at the conference.

He has written in favour of black magic and left hand path, but since most people don't know what black magic & left hand path is, buzz words. Aquino stated on Ophray's show that Satanists work "for the good of humankind." How? By exploring the "freedom of the will." The undercurrents of his writings in his publication The Crystal Tablet of Set is that he and his followers have power while the rest of us are basically wimps. Witnesses report how actual human sacrifices have been alternated with faked sacrifices in the Temple of Set so that it is difficult for witnesses to tell the real from the fantasy. The Temple of Set, like the Illuminati have strict rules that members are not allowed to keep incriminating items. Their precautions to go undetected resemble the Illuminati's precautions.

UNDERSTANDING SOME OF AQUINO'S PROGRAMMING.

Like so many programmers, Aquino flies all over the country, and has victimized people in numerous states and military bases. Michael Aquino's programming is standard military-type programming. Aquino puts in his own spirit guide into people. He likes to use his own version of Star Wars, with himself as Darth Vader, for his programming scripts. He programs in sexual and death (suicide) programs--such as the Rivers of Blood suicide protection program, and all the rest of the various types of programs.

His Temple of Set functions as a programming vehicle. The rituals are designed to break the practitioners grip on reality and logic and take them into the world of visualization, and creativity. Members of Set take on a magical name, they attempt in rituals to become another persona, which is a magical double of the person called "KA". And this ka work is done on the astral plane. Aquino is friends with Paul Kantner who is part of the mind-control scene and who put out an obvious programming song entitled White Rabbit.

In the Vol. 2 book, the significance of Leviathan was covered. The Church of Set has an Order of Leviathan headed by James Lewis VIº of Baxley, GA. Michael Aquino is familiar with all the standard programming, the Wizard of Oz and the other fairy tale themes. He is very proficient at programming, having many years of experience. In 1981, he used Cathy O'Brien to make two HOW TO films for training military officers in the skills needed to program slaves. These two training films were entitled "How to Divide a Personality" and "How to Create a Sex Slave." (See Cathy O'Brien's monograph "Dick Cheney and Reagan's 'Hands-On' Mind Control Demonstrations" written/released 6/92.) President Reagan respected Aquino and encouraged the military to learn his programming techniques.

Aquino likes to work with Catholic mind-control victims. He is proficient at manipulating the concept of hell and of doing satanic reversals like the Black Mass.

On the following pages are a little of the paper trail on Mind-control Programmer Michael Aquino:

· Some favorite photos of Michael Aquino in satanic garb.

· A two page letter of Aquino showing his fascination with Darth Vader. He rewrote his own version of Star Wars to use as a programming script. Programmers are given the freedom to decide what scripts they want to use.

· last page of a letter by Michael Aquino showing his preoccupation for Hitler and Nazi things.

· two pages showing the trauma that therapists discovered in children that Aquino had sexually traumatized at the Presideo Day Care Center. As readers are aware the Judicial system never pursued the case against Aquino.

· A page from the police report where the girl who claimed she had been sexually molested by Aquino was interviewed.

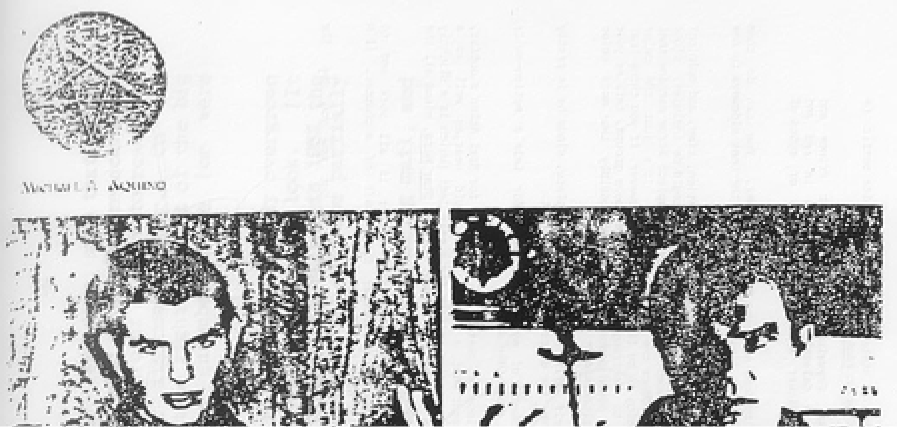

http://whale.to/b/sp/springmeier.html

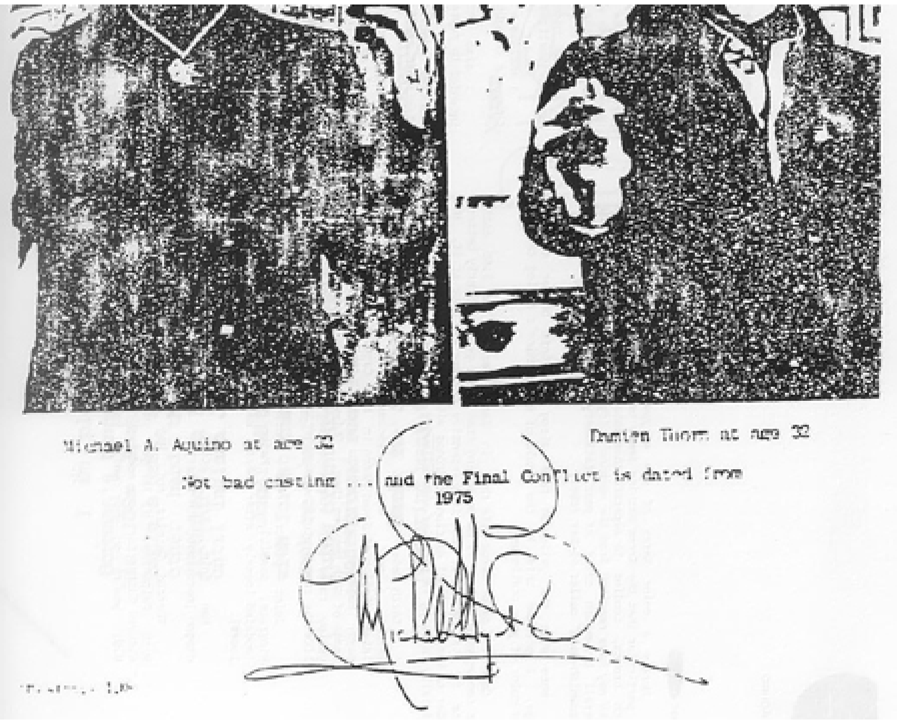

Michael A. Aquino at age 32

Damien Thorn at age 32

Not bad casting ... and the Final Conflict is dated from 1975

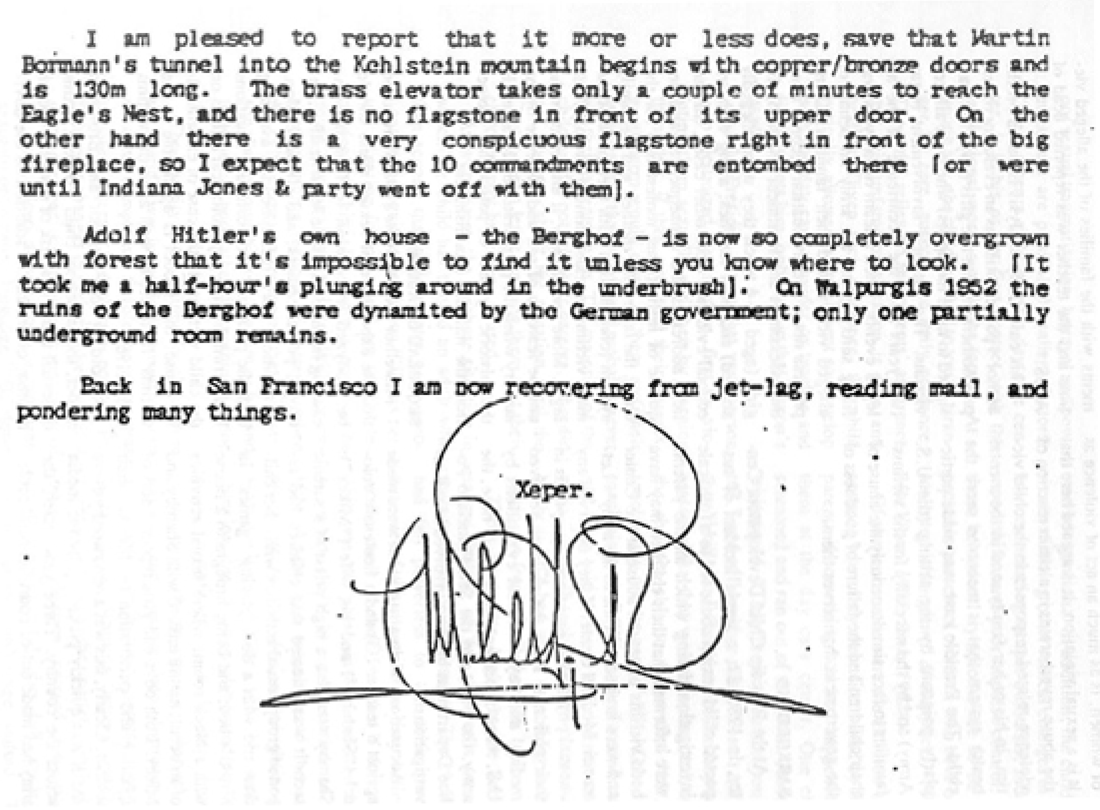

I am pleased to report that it more or less does, save that Martin Bormann's tunnel into the Kehlstein mountain begins with copper/bronze doors and is 130m long. The brass elevator takes only a couple of minutes to reach the Eagle's Nest, and there is no flagstone in front of its upper door. On the other hand there is a very conspicuous flagstone right in front of the big fireplace, so I expect that the 10 commandments are entombed there [or were until Indiana Jones & party went off with them].

Adolf Hitler's own house - the Berghof - is now so completely overgrown with forest that it's impossible to find it unless you know where to look. [It took me a half-hour's plunging around in the underbrush]. On Walpurgis 1952 the ruins of the Berghof were dynamited by the German government; only one partially underground room remains.

Back in San Francisco I am now recovering from jet-lag, reading mail, and pondering many things.

Xeper.

p_aquino.jpg

p_xeper-2.jpg

.... of women, is as much an act of violence as it is a sexual violation, it is argued here that the abuse reverberates in a chain reaction of violence-related responses in the child victim, in his or her family, and in the mental health system that is meant to serve the child. The Presidio case was made particularly poignant by the setting (the U.S. Army) and by the necessity for the victims' families to face simultaneously the abuse of their children and the failure of goodness of the government that serves them.

BACKGROUND

At the Presidio Child Development Center. in 1986-87. a single incident of suspected child sexual abuse led to a full-scale investigation during which all the parents were informed that their children may have been victims of sexual abuse at the Center and were invited to come to the army's Letterman Medical Center if they observed any unusual physical or emotional symptoms in their children. Here the children received medical and psychological evaluations by U.S. Army representatives.

Over time, the army, the FBI, and the San Francisco Police Department became involved in the investigations. Accusations of ritualistic abuse were made against a teacher (G) and a lieutenant colonel ("Shamby") and his wife (Mikey'): Shamby was also a high priest of a satanic sect. It was attested that children had reported group sexual activities with other children and with a doll: playing 'games" in Mr. G's bed: and being brought to a house with a black room, where sexual activities of an occult nature ensued with Shamby and Mikey. Both boys and girls reported acts of fondling and penetration by Mr. G. their teacher. Clearly, this was a newsworthy event and it was quickly picked up by the media across the country.

Three years later, the army had made out-of-court financial settlements with the families of the alleged victims and the teacher was reported dead of AIDS. This case-study analysis is based on the author's participation as an evaluator of and psychotherapist for the girls (boys were assigned to male therapists) who were alleged victims. The author's involvement began two years after the occurrence of the alleged events when a team of lawyers was filing suits against the army on behalf of alleged victims and their families. Using process notes and evaluation records from the assessment and treatment of two of the girls (aged 3-4 when they were allegedly abused) and their families, along with anecdotal evidence from other cases, this ar-tide addresses the consequences and sequelae of institutional molestation for the child, the father, the mother, and the family system (consultation with therapists of the male victims revealed similar overall findings). More specifically, it underscores the unique features of sex and violence in the nursery when the perpetrator of the abuse is that historic symbol of patriarchal protection, the military establishment.

SEQUELAE OF ABUSE

· All the victimized children who received a medical evaluation tested negative for the HIV virus at the time of their initial evaluation. Recent research, however, indicates a possible incubation period during which negative test results can be found.

Finkelhor and Browne (1985) proposed that the experience of sexual abuse should be analyzed in relation to four trauma-causing factors: traumatic sexualization. betrayal, powerlessness, and stigmatization. In addition, they recommended assessing both the preabuse and postabuse situations in determining the psychological effects on the child victims. In the case of extrafamilial abuse, this model is applicable to the victims' families, as well as to the victims themselves. According to Finkelhor and Browne's model, the preschool child who is a victim of sexual abuse is at risk of severe levels of trauma, of which, in addition to the obvious sexual traumatization. betrayal and powerlessness are particularly salient factors.

Often, when a child enters a day care center, it is his or her first contact with the institutional world outside the family. At a young age, the child is asked to trust a stranger for care, succor, and daily guidance. The child relies on the parents' assurance that this unfamiliar situation is safe and healthy. Given such assurance, the child typically allows an attachment to develop with the day care provider or teacher and literally puts him- or herself in that person's hands.

At the Presidio, it was that very person who victimized the children, first by violating them sexually and then by warning them that, if they ever told their parents great harm would come to them and their families, and that they would probably never see their parents again. The majority of the children did not tell their parents, who did not find out about the situation until the Center sent a letter warning them that their children may have been abused.

As with incest, the preabuse situation in which the child has trusted an adult who then accosts that child creates great emotional and cognitive confusion ("If this person is caring for me and I am totally dependent on him, he couldn't possibly be doing anything bad"). In addition, it engenders strong feelings of betrayal when the child comes to recognize that this person did do something bad to him or her and that mother and father did nothing to stop it. The severity of the trauma for children at the Presidio was immediately manifested in clear-cut symptoms. Before the abuse was exposed, parents had already noticed the following changes in their children: vaginal discharge, genital soreness, rashes, fear of the dark, sleep disturbances, nightmares, sexually provocative language ("Go down on the doll-69." "Get it up the butt," "Lick the doll's twat," "Hump on the doll"), and sexually inappropriate behavior (a four-year-old girl grabbing her older male cousins genitals).

In addition, the children were exhibiting other radical changes in behavior. including temper outbursts, sudden mood shifts, and poor impulse control. All these behavioral symptoms are to be expected in preschool children who have been molested (Haugaard & Reppucci. 1988: Mac Vicar. 1987: Sink. 1988). Of particular note were the children's responses when they were first asked by their parents if something bad had happened to them at the day care center. One child screamed and ran out of the room. Another whimpered, "They're going to hurt you if I tell," and still another said, "I can't tell, or they'll kill you."

Only later, after they were reassured that they would be protected, were the children able to report that "Mr. G touched my private parts," "Mr. G had me touch his penis," "We passed around a doll and were told to touch the doll in certain parts," "Mr. G took me to his house to see his beds," "I had to do something embarrassing in front of all the kids."

These responses highlight the second salient feature of the children's trauma: their sense of powerlessness. The children had felt powerless to tell their parents because of the grave harm they believed would coma to their families if they did. This was not paranoid or fabricated fear a trusted adult, a representative of the U.S. Army, had actually told them so. But, left to the devices of their own fantasy lives at the age of magical thinking, the children elaborated on these rears, sometimes to a bizarre degree. Their only choice was to channel the anxiety and trauma into formation of symptoms, until their parents, on the basis of the warning letter, began to question them on the matter. Only later, once the children entered the mental health system, did the full cycle of trauma, terror, and rage unfold. This phenomenon can best be understood by tracking the children and their families through the postabuse process, from discovery to treatment.

p_presidio.jpg

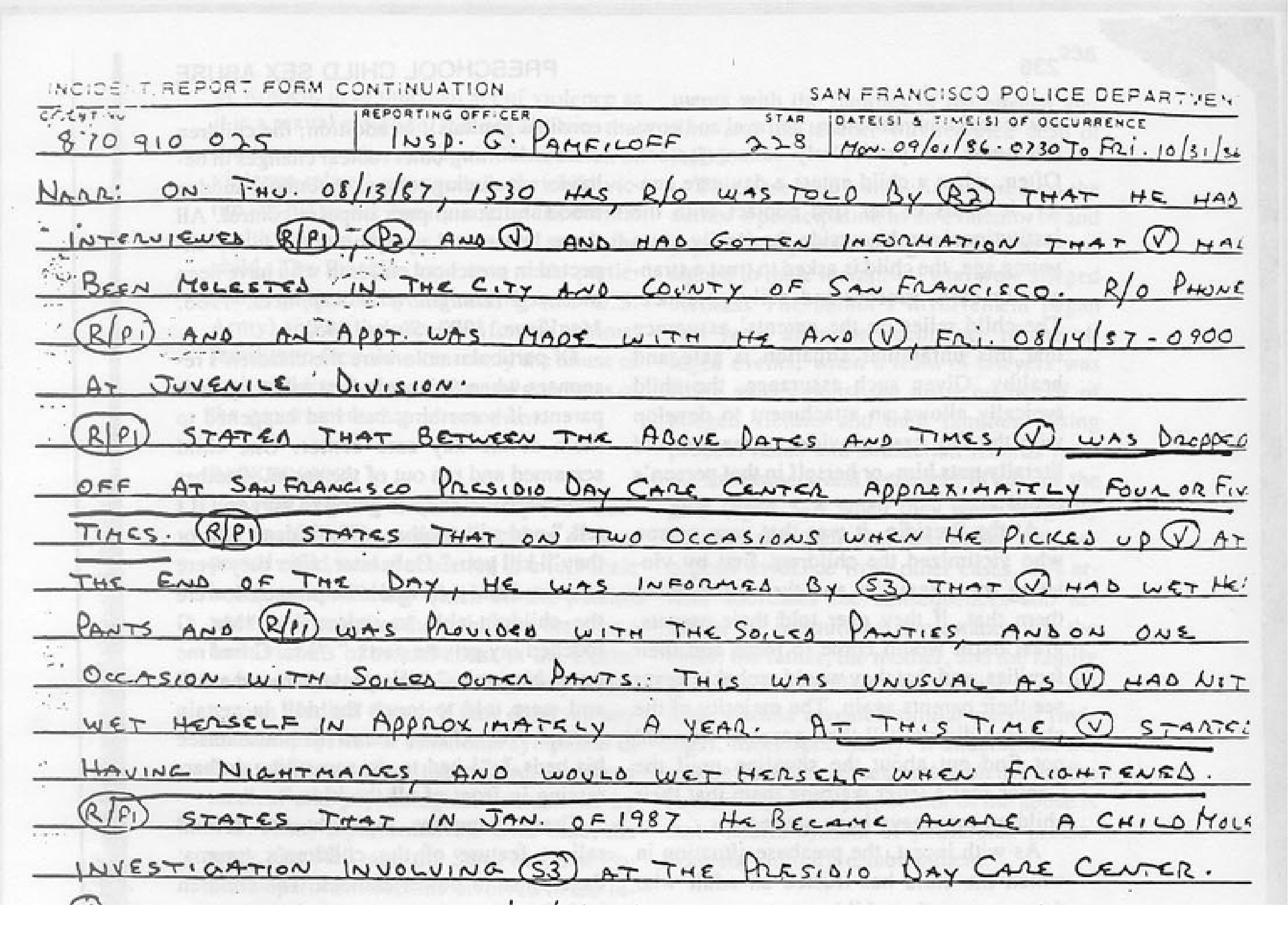

INCIDENT REPORT FORM CONTINUATION

SAN FRANCISCO POLICE DEPARTMEN

C/CNT NO	REPORTING OFFICER	STAR	DATE(S) & TIME(S) OF OCCURRENCE
870 910 025	INSP. G. PAMFILOFF	228	MON. 09/01/86 - 0730 TO FRI. 10/31/86

NARR: ON THU. 08/13/87, 1530 HRS, R/O WAS TOLD BY R2 THAT HE HAD INTERVIEWED R/P1, P2 AND V AND HAD GOTTEN INFORMATION THAT V HAD BEEN MOLESTED IN THE CITY AND COUNTY OF SAN FRANCISCO. R/O PHONED R/P1 AND AN APPT. WAS MADE WITH HE AND V, FRI. 08/14/87 - 0900 AT JUVENILE DIVISION.

R/P1 STATED THAT BETWEEN THE ABOVE DATES AND TIMES, V WAS DROPPED OFF AT SAN FRANCISCO PRESIDIO DAY CARE CENTER APPROXIMATELY FOUR OR FIVE TIMES. R/P1 STATES THAT ON TWO OCCASIONS WHEN HE PICKED UP V AT THE END OF THE DAY, HE WAS INFORMED BY S3 THAT V HAD WET HER PANTS AND R/P1 WAS PROVIDED WITH THE SOILED PANTIES, AND ON ONE OCCASION WITH SOILED OUTER PANTS. THIS WAS UNUSUAL AS V HAD NOT WET HERSELF IN APPROXIMATELY A YEAR. AT THIS TIME, V STARTED HAVING NIGHTMARES, AND WOULD WET HERSELF WHEN FRIGHTENED.

R/P1 STATES THAT IN JAN. OF 1987 HE BECAME AWARE A CHILD MOLE INVESTIGATION INVOLVING S3 AT THE PRESIDIO DAY CARE CENTER.

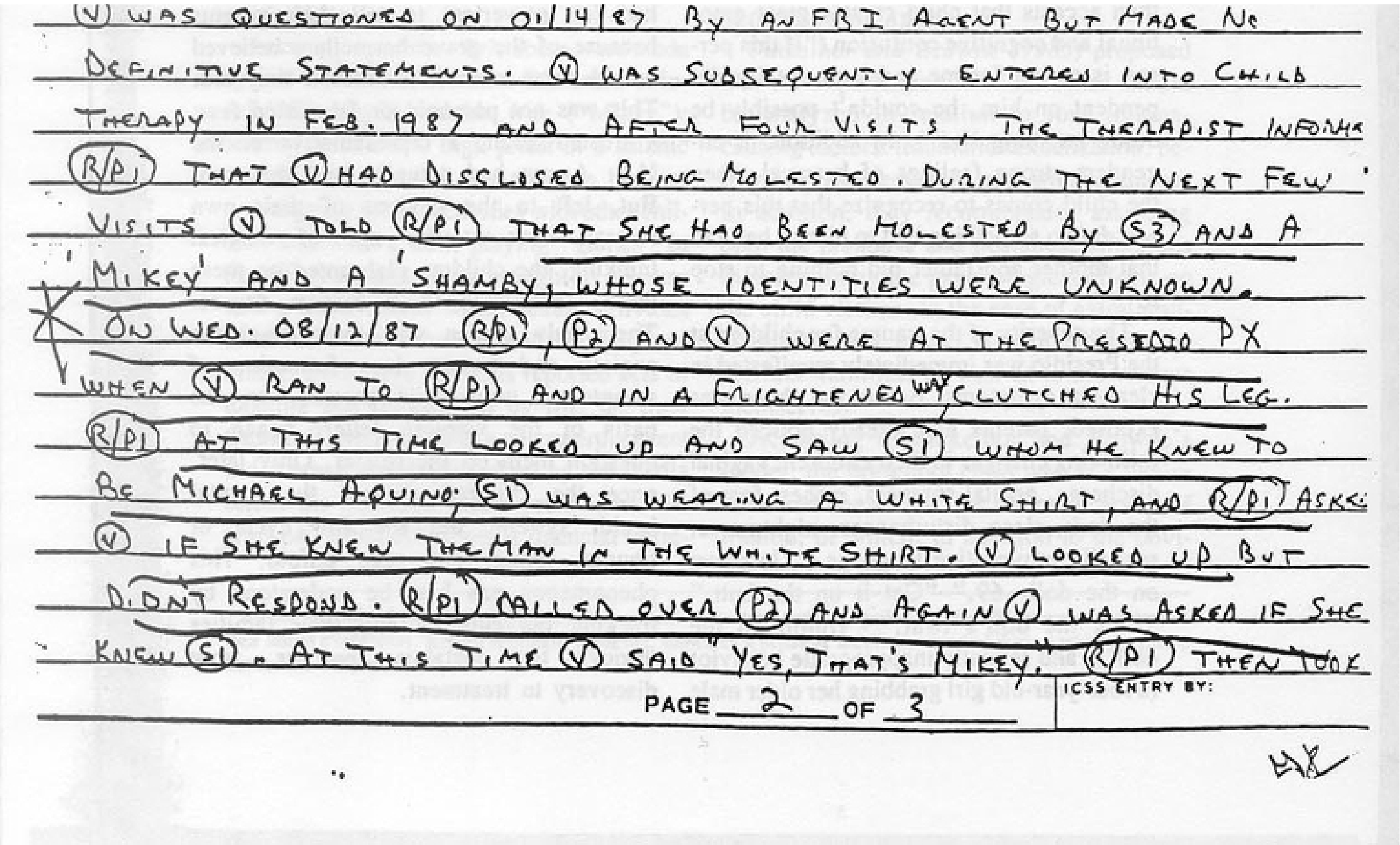

(V) WAS QUESTIONED ON 01/14/87 BY AN FBI AGENT BUT MADE NO
DEFINITIVE STATEMENTS. (V) WAS SUBSEQUENTLY ENTERED INTO CHILD
THERAPY IN FEB. 1987 AND AFTER FOUR VISITS, THE THERAPIST INFORM
(R/P1) THAT (V) HAD DISCLOSED BEING MOLESTED. DURING THE NEXT FEW
VISITS (V) TOLD (R/P1) THAT SHE HAD BEEN MOLESTED BY (S3) AND A
'MIKEY' AND A 'SHAMBY', WHOSE IDENTITIES WERE UNKNOWN.
ON WED. 08/12/87 (R/P1), (P2) AND (V) WERE AT THE PRESIDIO PX
WHEN (V) RAN TO (R/P1) AND IN A FRIGHTENED WAY CLUTCHED HIS LEG.
(R/P1) AT THIS TIME LOOKED UP AND SAW (S1) WHOM HE KNEW TO
BE MICHAEL AQUINO. (S1) WAS WEARING A WHITE SHIRT, AND (R/P1) ASKE
(V) IF SHE KNEW THE MAN IN THE WHITE SHIRT. (V) LOOKED UP BUT
DIDNT RESPOND. (R/P1) CALLED OVER (P2) AND AGAIN (V) WAS ASKED IF SHE
KNEW (S1). AT THIS TIME (V) SAID "YES, THAT'S MIKEY." (R/P1) THEN TOOK

PAGE 2 OF 3 | ICSS ENTRY BY:

APPENDIX B. THE PROGRAMMING SITES

Some MAJOR MIND-CONTROL PROGRAMMING SITES with explanations of their programming. (Fritz Springmeier originally exposed many of these sites in 1993, so it is possible they have made some changes since they were originally exposed. Most of these operated for years, and may still be operating. We are aware of that some of their programming bases have been moved after exposure.) Besides these major programming sites, there are countless minor ones. For instance, some of the programming sites for water-beach tortures have been visited by the co-authors, but are not listed. The massive Boeing Plant in the Seatle, WA area with its large amount underground tunnels has been used for programming, as well as the ARCO Beaver Valley Plant in Pennslyvannia. So has the chapel at the Coast Guard Academy at New London, Conn. which was built by A.W. Mellon of the Mellon Illuminati family via their Mellon Foundation. This list is not put forth as comprehensive. Without question, this list is only the tip of the iceberg.

29 Palms, CA-

Area 51 (Dreamland, Groom Lake), NV--Area 51 is also known as Dreamland. There are a number of extensive underground facilities in the area. This was one of the first genetic research facilities in the U.S. and perhaps the first major genetic research facility. The people/workers & victims are brought in by airplane and tube shuttle. The worst cases of UFO/alien type of Monarch programming is coming out of Area 51. The eggs from slaves are being harvested and weird genetic creatures are being developed from human eggs which have been genetically mixed with other things.

Bethseda, MD--The Bethesada Naval Hospital

Bingham, UT--A red brick house, which was a closed House of Prostitution. The building was used for KKK programming. Child porn was produced in the basement, and upstairs programmed child slaves serviced KKK members. The KKK activity in the area connects in with the Illuminati controlled Kennecott Copper Co. (aka Utah Copper Co.) Russell G. Frazer, head of Bingham’s Klavern & doctor for Kennecott Copper Co. did the electro-shock to split personalities.

Black Forest, Germany--Because the U.S-U.K. and Germany do so much programming, and some of the people in the U.S. were programmed in the U.K., Germany or Russia, it is worthwhile to mention some of the German programming sites. A number of witnesses report about castles in the Black Forest which are used for programming & ritual. Basal, Sw. on the border with Germany is a important Illuminati center. Frankfurt, Berlin and Zurich are all important programming/ritual sites. The Jesuits and the Catholic churches are very active in programming in Germany.

Boulder, CO--The headquarters for EMC, a type of electra-magnetic mind control that is being broadcast to modify the thinking of Americans, and to control slaves.

Butner, N.C.--Center of Correctional Research, all types of mind control are carried out and experimented with on the inmates.

Camp Peary, VA--The CIA's The Farm is located on a narrow strip of land between the York & James Rivers near Williamsburg, VA, used for programming CIA slaves. It has red brick buildings, and looks similar to a small college. The official crytonym was ISOLATION. People who are brought in who don't know where they are for training are called Black Trainees.

China Lake Naval Research Base (Inyokern), CA--

This facility had a country store, and hangers, and a hospital (address for the hospital is the code- 232 Naval Air Weapons Station) which all provided sites for programming. This site has been operational since the early 1950s. Large numbers of children (batches of 1000 or 2,000 or 3,000 children were run through this facility at a time. This facility did much of the original traumas and mind-splitting tortures that created the MPD. Other facilities then specialized in further programming that was then layered in on top of the original China Lake programming. A great deal of dehumanization in cages was done to large numbers of tiny children at China Lake Naval Facility. Nimitz Hospital did drug testing of the children prior to their programming.

Colorado Springs, CO--The ALEX system programming and end-times Military programming is coming out of Colorado Springs and is connected to NORAD. One of the Colorado sites is doing alien programming with mock UFOs.

Dillsboro Nike Base--Monarch programming of many kinds

Disneyland, CA--Disneyland has been an off hour site for Illuminati and satanic rituals for years.

Programming has gone on using Disneyland as one big prop for programming. Many of the Disney movies are used for programming, and some Disney scripts are especially tailored for Monarch slave programming. The Peter Pan programming can use the ship. The space programming can use the space props. The satanic programming can use the castles. Lots of mirror programming is done at Disneyland, and Disneyworld. There is also Magic Mountain programming, and programming using the Around the World Dolls, and its theme song. Some of Wizard of Oz and the Cinderella programming was also done at Disneyland using costumes. Preverbal children are taken to Disneyland to get them ready for the scripts.

Disneyworld, FL--Disneyworld was created as the eastern counterpart to the Disneyland programming site. One of the rides in Disneyworld plays "It's a small, small world" which is Disneyland developed programming theme.

Ft. Campbell, KT--Base programs are placed in here.

Ft. Detrick, MD--involved with medical/biological experimentation

Ft. Holabird, MD--This site is no longer in existence, but was the Army Intelligence School. CIC used the school. The place was known as "the Bird."

Ft. Hood, TX--programming involving military uses of Delta Monarch slaves was done here.

Ft. Huahuachua, AZ--HQ for Army Intelligence.

Ft. Knox, KT --The 1st Earth Batt. was developed here.

Ft. Lewis, WA--involved with the Psychic warfare part of the Monarch Programming.

Ft. McClellen--Ft. Meade, MD--The National Security Agency was created on 4 Nov 1952. Its headquarters were Fort Meade, VA. The National Security Agency (NSA) employs tens of thousands of employees and has a budget larger than the CIA. It has also been kept far more secret, while the CIA has been used as the fall guy to protect the National Security Agency's reputation. In the late 1960's, under Operation Minaret and Program Shamrock, the NSA and its British counterpart GCHQ began monitoring much of the communication within the USA and UK. The NSA monitors all American calls via computers using trip words, specific names, specific addresses, specific telephone numbers, etc. NSA has several computer to record all the millions of conversations which the computers have examined and deemed worthy of recording. How the NSA can get any use out of millions of recorded telephone conversations is beyond me? What intelligence agency could adequately process so much information?

These organizations now monitor all communications within both countries. At least one congressman got upset that his phone was bugged by the NSA. (see David Corn's article, "The case of the bugged senator" in Nation, Feb. 6, '89, p. 152.)

The NSA has developed a fiberoptics network called Internet computer network. An orange book is used to specify some of the NSA's security levels.

An informant in the National Security Agency states that establishment newspapers like the Wall Street Journal and the New York Times are used to communicate secret messages which are placed within want ads, buzz words in editorials, and via other methods. Because of some of what this person told me, I have given some possible examples in this newsletter of how people might be using the papers for secret messages. For instance using Michael Jackson with his hands making some type of sign might be a signal. Manfried Adler and the US Senate Committee investigating the CIA found that 90% of the CIA's secret messages are transmitted via the media, with the aid of coded texts and pictures.

A raised forefinger or two raised forefingers while a speaker is talking means that the message is a masonic message coming from a masonic speaker.

The Illuminati uses code words within the large establishment papers to warn their people what they are going to do with the economy. In this way, people in the Illuminati can take appropriate responses.

Goddard Space Flight Center--NASA mirror-theme programming

Grissom AFB, IND--

Hollywood, CA--One of the programmers/handlers in the Hollywood area is surprisingly Anton LaVey. This is one reason Anton LaVey has followers who will carry out his very wishes. LaVey's children of course were programmed too. His own girls have been participating in the nude in satanic rituals since little children.

Homestead AFB, FL--

Kirkland AFB, NM--Lampe, MO--This has been the site of a CIA near-death trauma center where slaves are programmed. It is an R&R center for the CIA where they can have any sexual perversion or drug they want. This has been a large cocaine supply depot also. Hal Meadows was director of this center which is deep in the woods surrounded by cabin chalets overlooking a small deep lake. A gravel road leads to the site which is fenced and well-guarded. Hal Meadows address was Box 27, Lampe, MO 65681.

Langley, VA-- Slaves for the wants of intelligence.

Las Vegas (sites in and around Las Vegas), NV--MGM's Grand Hotel and Theme park were built for programming, but there are also some sites outside of the city used. In the general area of Las Vegas in remote sites, the elite gather for slave auctions once a year where Monarch slaves are sold and traded. One of the favorite slave auction sites was 20 miles out of Las Vegas and 10 miles off the main road into the site. The Mob is involved with Monarch slaves in Las Vegas. A blue-eyed 11 year old girl will go for $50,000. Toronto, Canada is another regular site for Monarch slave auctions.

McClellan AFB, CA - Very bad Child and adult porn using Monarch victims is distributed through this base as well as the other bases listed in this list. A T.W. Sanderson worked with Monarchs at this base.

MacDill AFB, FL --Near Tampa, FL

Maxwell AFB, AL --

Montreal, Que., Canada -McGill Univ., McGill Psychiatric Training Network, Allan Memorial Inst., St. Mary's Hosp.- The Zombie Room (Sleep Room) in the basement, the Isolation chamber and the Grid Room at St. Mary's Hospital were used for programming.

Mt. Shasta, CA--Underground facilities around this huge mountain in the Lake Shasta area are putting out Monarch programming that makes the people think they are in communication with aliens. This facility is for torturing & reprogramming captured runaway Monarch slaves. People are brought into the area via helicopter, plane, or flying saucer. This site is probably the largest mind-control programming center. It is in a remote wooded area. It is heavily guarded, has fences, and a large contingent of black helicopters. Mt. Shasta is equipped with state of the art high tech programming equipment. Mind-controlled slaves who are soldiers are programmed and trained at the Mt. Shasta facility.

Nashville, TN--These sites work with the Country Western Music Industry which is actually a CIA front for moving drugs to finance their dirty black activities. Fiddler's Inn, Nashville fits in with the Monarch Programming.

Papillion, NE--

Patrick AFB,--Portland (Old OMSI, New OMSI, Bldg. Near Monarch Hotel at 8800 SE Sunnyside Rd., Mormon Temple, etc.), OR. The Old OMSI building had a back door on the west side in which slaves were taken in to the bottom floor and reprogrammed. Although security guards aren't visible, they are there with electronic surveillance. The people running OMSI are tied in the Illuminati. The DC-3 airplane outside of the building was used in the programming as a hypnotic trigger. The submarine docked outside of the new OMSI building is also used as a programming hypnotic tool. The new Mormon Temple has an extremely high tech underground tunnel facility for programming built underneath it. Witnesses have collaborated their testimony on this high tech programming site under the Portland Mormon Temple. Although building plans are to be public information, the city of Lake Oswego makes it very difficult to view the temple's building plans. The plans show that the foundation walls are far thicker than any conceivable earthquake would ever call for. The reason is that the foundation helps house an underground arena for the Illuminati & and their guests to watch perverse shows.

Presideo, CA (incl. Alcatraz, San Francisco)-- The Illuminati and various Satanic cults used the Presideo for their programming. Split-brain & other programming was done at Letterman hospital. Fort Point was used for Illuminati ritual & programming, as well as a number of churches, underground gun emplacements and the large circular Greek column art building at the Presideo. Alcatraz, abandoned as a prison, was used for water tortures and other programming. Tunnels connected buildings, and the Mule/Horse buildings and the cemetery also were used. This is one of the older programming sites. Psychic warfare activity also was experimented on in this area. Letterman Hospital has been used for the initial drug testing of the infants before programming. Lots of isolation programming in damp cold places was done at the Presideo. Lots of porn and military programming have also been done here. Redstone Arsenal, AL-- San Antonio, TX-- Salt Lake City (Mormon Temple)--This underground facility works in conjunction with the Mormon hierarchy who are allowed to create slaves. The Illuminati put in base programming that still gives them ultimate control beyond the control that the Mormon programming has.

Scotty's Castle, Death Valley, CA-Mengele (Dr.Green) programmed in some of his "internal boxes" as well as other Illuminati programming was done at this site. Mengele had a large circular red bed in the castle which he stocked with his little girl slaves, who already had kitten sexual alters. Scotty's Castle is a castle located in

Death Valley CA. It has a very interesting history. To reach the castle one is required to drive through many miles of desert. If one drives to lnyo County, CA, the same county that has China Lake Naval Testing Grounds, and Inyokern, and then you drive on Hwy. 190 into Death Valley National Monument (it is not a park or forest, dead valleys are called monuments), next you go north on a road after Stove Pipe for 35 miles.

The man who built Scotty's Castle was Walter Perry Scott (1872-1954). Walter P. Scott was the son of an alcohol distiller and horse breeder in Kentucky. Walter did not get any formal education. He left home and went west where he worked as a mule driver, and a water boy. From there he became a horse wrangler. Because of his talent with horses Buffalo Bill made him the feature rider along with Annie Oakley in Buffalo Bill's family show. The show travelled and Scotty was with it eleven years. During this time, Scotty made many important friendships with men of power and wealth. In 1900, Walter married and left the show. He got a loan from Julian Gerard, a NY banker, to go prospecting for gold which he failed to pay back. Julian Gerard was repeatedly sending people to hassle Scotty to get his money back. In 1905, Walter Scott ("Scotty") scattered gold nuggets and $100 bills from N.Y. to L.A. Where he got all this gold and $100 bills is a mystery, but it wasn't from prospecting. The idea of finding a secret mine was very obviously a cover for however Scotty managed to get his money. Scotty is well-known for his penchant to throw away $20 gold pieces as if they were candy wherever he went. Nobody believed he had a mine, strangely the IRS never got interested in Scotty. Why? The IRS went after Charles Caughlin who was exposing the elite, the bankers, the Freemasons, etc. in the early 1930's on his radio show. There was no reason to suspect Caughlin of any cheating on his Income Tax, and the audits found the IRS actually owed Caughlin money.

However the national papers printed front page stories of the IRS investigation, and practically ignored that the man was exonerated. Yet, the IRS left Scotty alone. Hmmm. Although Scotty was married, he became intimate friends with Albert Mussey Johnson (1872-1948), a Chicago millionaire, who was v.p. from 1906 to 1926 of the National Life Insurance Co. Albert M. Johnson was born in Ohio, and lived in Arkansas and Missouri before moving to Chicago. Johnson came out and stayed in Death Valley. The stay helped his health, and he and Scotty remained close friends. In 1924, construction secretly began on a castle in Death Valley. The best of materials were used and the materials had to be hauled clear out in the desert by truck to Grapevine Canyon where the castle sits. Hundreds of workers were hired. The castle got its kitchen tiles from Spain. Special rugs were made on the European island of Majorca for the castle. Tiles for the incompleted pool came from the Mediterranean. Many of the furnishing of the castle came from cathedrals and palaces in Spain and Morocco. Draperies made for the castle were hand-tooled in selected sheepskin leather. Sixty hand-carved panels, each of a different design, were installed in the music-room ceiling. A Welte Mignon organ reported to have cost $160,000 --the finest of its kind in Western United States was placed in the music room, even though Scotty could not play the organ. Twelve bathrooms were installed. Several kitchens were installed. Tunnels and secret rooms were built under the buildings. Around $2 million (dollars of that time period) were spent on building the castle, supposedly from Scotty's "gold mine." The castle became known as Scotty's Castle. It is ideal as a Satanic ritual site. It can accommodate numerous people. It is remote. It has hidden rooms and areas and tunnels.

Tavistock, England--This has been the primary programming center for England. The Rothschild programmers work out of Tavistock. A large number of slaves in America have been programmed there.

Tavistock has been doing mind-control since before W.W.ll. Under the supervision of London's W Board & 20 Committee MI6 and MIS's Section BIA ran double agents and mind-controlled spies/couriers during W.W. II. MI6 has had an office at Century House, No. 100, Westminster Bridge Road. MI5 offices have been in part on Curzon St. MI5 has operated behind a number of fronts, incl. their fake travel agency Casuro Holidays. MI-5's address for mail is Room 055, The War Office, London. Special Intelligence Service (SIS) dealt with all types of mind control. Tavistock was under SIS. The British government has had their own telephone exchange with a 222 prefix, which was later linked to another secret exchange YTAN. Outsiders could dial 222 8080 to get into the secret govt. exchange. Men like mind-control expert/hypnotist Eric Trist worked for Tavistock. A six-man team which wore black berets also helped w/ mind control at Tavistock.

Two people who became terrorists after their visits to Tavistock are Angela Davis and Stockley Carmichael who went to a conference at Tavistock entitled Dialectics of Liberation in 1967. It's main building is a bland 6-story building. The address is The Training Office, The Tavistock Clinic, 120 Belsize Lane, London, UK NWs SBA. Tel. no. 071-435 7111. The chief exec. is Anton Obholzer. The Chair of Prof. Comm. is Nicholas Temple. Both are skilled in psychology. The Tavistock Clinic was founded in 1920, and in 1946 the Tavistock Institute was created as an independent body to assist the Tavistock Clinic. The Institute does more of the research. The Royal Free Hospital at the University of London works with Tavistock Clinic, as well as the Science Policy Research Unit (SPRU) of Sussex University. A large number of Britian's psychologist, social workers and police get their training at Tavistock. Tavistock has set themselves up as the authority on ritual abuse and MPD (DID). In other words, the primary programming site, is pretending to be the leading institution trying to solve the problem! That's a good cover.

Tinker, AFB, OK--Tinkerbell programming is carried out here. This programming makes alters think they are like Tinkerbell in that they will never grow up or age.

Titusville, FL--At the Kennedy Space Center. Mind control testing is done, and base programming such as the Wizard of Oz programming is done here. Also NASA high tech programming is done here.

Tulsa, OK—Believed to have an Alice In Wonderland theme to their programming. Oral Roberts University is used for programming. The programming to infiltrate and capture the Christian church via the healing/charismatic movement has centered around Tulsa and Oral Roberts University.

Utah State Prison--The prison has carried out mind control for over 30 years on their inmates for the intelligence agencies with the help of the U.S. government's power to cover it up.

Versailles, IL—Brain implants are put into Monarchs here.

Washington, D.C. area--The basement of the Pentagon and other facilities around Washington D.C. such as the Jesuit Georgetown Univ. Hosp. are involved with Mind-Control. Presidential Models are moving in and out of Washington, D.C. carrying messages and performing their sexual acts for the lusts of politicians. There is also a NASA Mind-control Programming Center in Washington D.C. Secret tunnels connect the White House to other buildings. These tunnels are used to bring in slaves. Some secret rooms in the lower White House are set aside for rituals.

Wright-Patterson AFB--Near Dayton, OH, Virtual reality programming is carried out here.

Youngstown, OH--The Youngstown Charm School has been run by Illuminatus Prosser Seward Mellon along with a U.S. Congressman named Jim Trafficant. The old stone building originally belonged to one of the railroad elite. This school is for Beta models and gives them advance sexual charm training. This school produces about 6 new Monarch slaves every three days. Mafia deals are carried out on the second floor of the charm school. A slave who is being trained/programmed at the Charm school will take a course that last a few days. The first day may be spent hanging in a dungeon which was once a basement wine celler. The torture dungeon has all the traditional torture devices, a stretching rack, whips, hanging chains, etc. In the dungeon rooms were a black Nubian goat "Satan", a small donkey "Nester', and a small white pony "Trigger", as well as dogs and snakes. The slave is taught silence in the dungeon as they are subjected to bestiality.

Click here for picture 1

Click here for picture 2

Click here for picture 3

Click here for picture 4

Click here for picture 5

Click here for picture 6

Click here for picture 7

Click here for picture 8

Click here for picture 9

http://whale.to/b/sp/springmeier.html

Click here for picture 10

Click here for picture 11

Click here for picture 12

Click here for picture 13

· We have just touched the surface of the vest network of programming sites. Two examples of an entire series of programming sites--1. the Coast to Coast campground resorts & 2. the Jesuit-run institutions, which are often programming sites incl. Jesuit College, WV. An example of the former is the Park City Diamond Caverns. KT Coast to Coast resort, which has had a sensory deprivation tank, headphones for state of the art harmonic programming. etc. These membership camp sites are used to program children. Nor have we touched upon the large numbers of programmed Russians & Eastern Europeans that are coming Into this nation. When this book was written more people immigrated to the U.S. from Russia than anywhere else. Europe is teeming with prgmg sites. incl. the Vatican. Sebulun Zuflucht in Marienheide, Ger. is about the only european attempt at deprogramming.

p_cloning.jpg

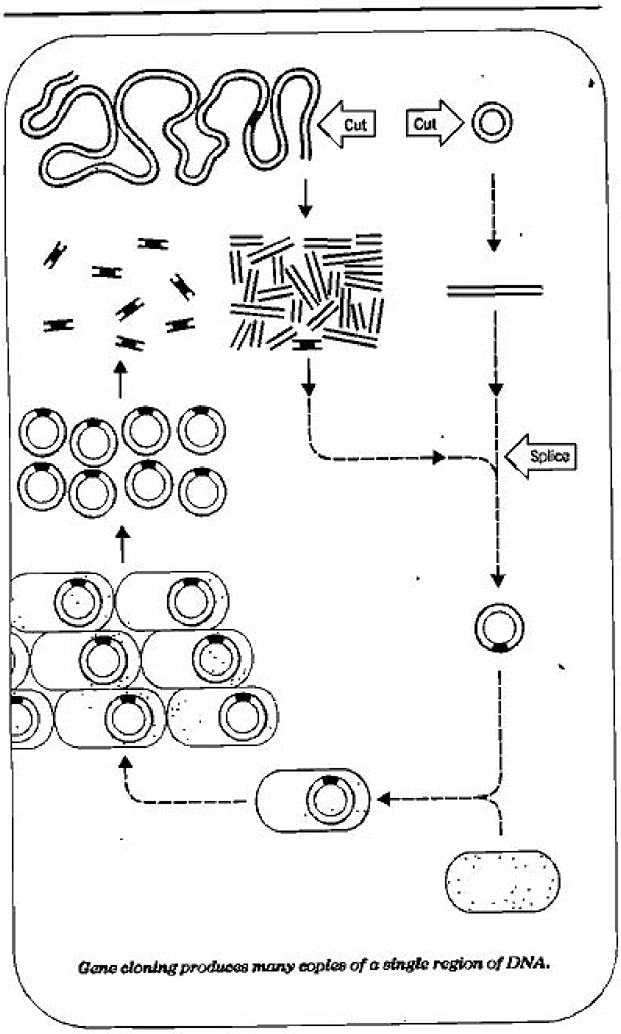
Cut
Cut
Splice

Gene cloning produces many copies of a single region of DNA.

Major Steps Involved In Gene Cloning.

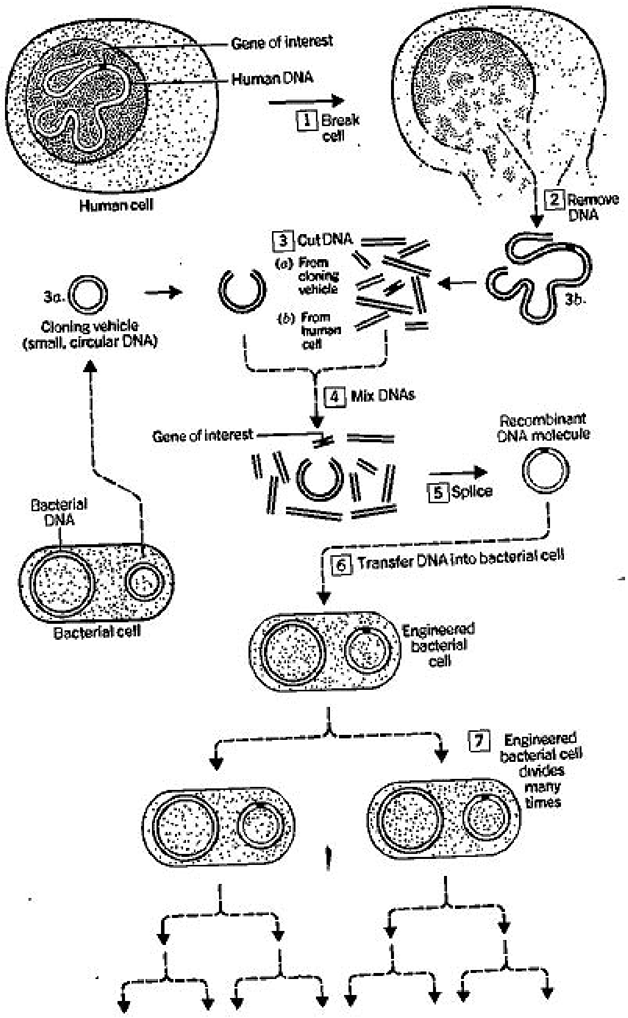
Gene of interest
Human DNA
1 Break cell
Human cell
2 Remove DNA
3 Cut DNA
(a) From cloning vehicle
(b) From human cell
3a.
Cloning vehicle (small, circular DNA)
3b.
4 Mix DNAs
Gene of interest
Recombinant DNA molecule
5 Splice
Bacterial DNA
Bacterial cell
6 Transfer DNA into bacterial cell
Engineered bacterial cell
7 Engineered bacterial cell divides many times

APPENDIX 3. CLONES, SYNTHETICS, ORGANIC ROBOTOIDS AND DOUBLES

PUBLICLY ANNOUNCED GENETIC EVENTS

Section A. The "Future Shock" that this topic subjects the common person to
Section B. Instructions on how to clone a person
  A TECHNIQUE--INSTRUCTIONS HOW TO CLONE A HUMAN
Section C. The four types of "clones" that are used by the Illuminati,
  1. actual clones,
  2. synthetic people,
  3. organic robotoids,
  4. doubles (look alikes)   How the memory of a person is transferred for the organic robotoids
Section D. Secret cloning sites (See also Appendix B, where D.U.M. bases are listed.)   **Simon Wiesenthal**
  OREGON'S UNDERGROUND SECRET CLONING FACILITY
  FURTHER INVESTIGATIONS AT DULCE'S UNDERGROUND CLONING FACILITY
SUMMARY OF THE FOUR METHODS.
FINAL NOTES.   Clintons

PUBLICLY ANNOUNCED GENETIC EVENTS

1890-- A rabbit embryo was successfully transplanted to a foster mother rabbit's uterus.

1944-- A human ova was fertilized in vitro, that is in layman's terms an egg was artificially inseminated in a test tube.

1952-- Briggs & King in Indiana University clone a frog.

1970s-- Rand Corporation predicts that "para-humans" will be genetically created to do menial tasks in the future. In a totally different affair, Lord Rothschild, who is a physiologist who has studied genetics, warned that self-centered fanatics might set up cloning shops privately. Lord Rothschild suggested to genetic scientists that a clone controlling organization with world wide jurisdiction to license cloning be set up to protect the world from evil men who might want to clone people for evil purposes. He called his suggestion 'Commission for Genetical Control."

1977-- Announcement of the first successful cloning of a person, which was done for someone very wealthy. This whole affair came under strong attack by the establishment. The book giving the shrouded details came out in 1978. The author went into hiding, and our Congress had a parade of establishment research doctors testify at a hearing to debunk the book and to reassure the public that medical researchers were too concerned about ethics to clone people. The author was convinced of the veracity of the cloning event, although the media/establishment doctors claimed the author wrote the book merely as fiction.

1980-- Twinning (bisection of an embryo), which is a form of cloning was successfully done with horse foals, sheep and cattle had -already been cloned in this fashion in the previous years.

1981-- Mice are cloned. And embryo transfer for cattle becomes a thriving business.

1983-- A water buffalo embryo was successfully transplanted to a foster mother buffalo.

1984-- A human embryo was successfully transplanted and born with a human foster mother.

1997--A successful human clone is publicly announced.

Scientists working in secret got serious about cloning in the early 1960's. Abortions began to be performed wholesale at this time to provide fetal tissue for their cloning work. The young generation of Americans are asking, 'When will cloning of people take place?" The answer is that it already has long ago. An article recently written by Andrew Kimbrell that was placed in many leading daily papers across the U.S. is quite revealing. He comes right up to almost telling people what has been going on. The article was entitle, "Science is about to Deliver." (June 22, 1993) "...most Americans are unaware of the real-life exploits of current genetic engineers, science facts which in many cases are as chilling as any science fiction....Pigs have been genetically designed to contain human-growth genes in the hopes of creating "super pigs" that would have more meat. "...U.S. government and private researchers have expended billions of taxpayer dollars in the creation of tens of thousands of genetically engineered animals never before seen....One prominent scientist predicts that we may soon see "five-ton cows and pigs 12 feet long and 5 feet tall. "Genetic engineers.. .have cloned higher mammals, including cattle....One writer notes that "genetic engineering has the potential to create a vast army of identical clones, each produced to some preset specification. Canon fodder, scientists, opera singers, all could be manufactured to order..." "The New York Times has editorialized, 'Life is special, and humans even more so, but biological machines are still machines that now can be altered, cloned, and patented.' " --(WOW! Readers do YOU REALIZE THAT BETWEEN THE LINES THEY ARE TALKING ABOUT BIONIC ROBOTOIDS--the robots that are now being created to take the place of people in high places. And the chilling idea that human-like machines will be produced that will not be treated as anything but machines--that is a chilling idea too.

In this author's September, 1993 newsletter there were two article by this author on cloning, one entitled "Clones, Synthetics, Organic Robotoids, and Doubles" and the other article "Dulce Genetic Research/Cloning Facility." In the month following my September '93 newsletter's release, the establishment came out with stories about humans being cloned. [I felt that this was confirmation that God's had directed me to publish the information I had on cloning 1/2 months before the secular media came out with their stories about the "first" laboratory duplication of a human embryo.]

This '93 cloning was the first publicly revealed & publicly accepted human cloning, but the truth is that it had already been done for about 30 years secretly. In December, 1993's newsletter I had a followup article on cloning where I reviewed what the media was telling people about cloning after the 'first" human cloning had been announced. My article also discussed the novel Multiple Man which is about how exact copies of the President are made. The book has some surprising similarities with what they actually did with President Carter!

Finally in September of '96, this author's newsletter came out with its fourth article on cloning. This appendix is not the final word on the topic. The whole topic about clones, synthetics, robotoids and doubles could have a great deal more said. This appendix is merely a review of what those four articles contained. Cloning also relates in a big way to the cranial/body manipulation that was introduced in this book. It also relates to the group mind/proxying that is being done. Perhaps at some point this author can go into the deeper intricacies of cloning, but for now this appendix will provide its information in the following format:

Section A. The "Future Shock" that this topic subjects the common person to.

What happens when a technologically backward people are suddenly confronted with a technologically advanced people? What happens is that people are called on to change, in many cases the stress is what Alvin Toffler described and called "Future Shock". The overstimulation of new ideas, new decisions, new ways of looking at things can cause great distress to the mind and body. Radical changes to adapt to the new situation are demanded. In the case of the Navajo, one can see pickups parked beside hogans. In Nepal where I lived, the Nepalese had never gone through a horse and buggy era, so they had no word for drive in their language. When cars suddenly appeared--the first was carried into Katmandu on the backs of porters, they had no word for "drive", so they used the words they had "sit and go." So where we say "Let's drive to town." They would say literally, "Let's sit and go to town."

The American people have in general been kept in the dark about the limits of scientific developments. The known reasons people have not learned are varied. The Cold War was one reason. Capitalist corporate advantage is another reason. They call it trade secrets. Scientific pride and the ability to outstrip other researchers is another, and for the public just their technical jargon is enough to prevent people from closely watching the level of research going on.

But underlying most of the coverup is this: that the overall satanic plan is to keep people ignorant of these scientific advances BECAUSE they are being used quite often to control and manipulate the world. What has developed is a situation where the American people are no longer in touch with where the elite's secret technology is. It is clear that the elite know this and are aware that some of the "Future Shock" needs to reduced if they don't want to self-destruct society. You need to be aware (mentally prepared) that most of the readers of this will experience future shock when they read that cloning of humans is possible & has gone on for decades. The elite had a dilemma. If society isn't moved forward to match their secret scientific advances, it will soon be like cave-men meeting modern-day men. Society won't be capable of adjusting--only self-destructing. On the other hand they certainly can't tell us what they are already doing, because they are using this technology against us to control us. For this reason they are giving us movies that show us things that they have already invented--but these are put forth as fiction in these Hollywood films. They hope to lesson the Future Shock, which their own secrecy has greatly contributed toward creating, while maintaining control over the general population.

SOME OF THE FILMS THAT SHOW EXISTING TECHNOLOGY:

Clone--cloning; Jurassic Park--cloning

Genesis II--underground genetics laboratories that are connected by tube shuttles.

Terminal Man--brain stem implants

Star Trek--various items. In addition to some of today's secret technology being shown, the attitudes and beliefs shown on the two series, especially Star Trek the Next Generation are the attitudes the Satanic elite want people to have.

READERS PREPARE FOR FUTURE SHOCK

The Scriptures give strong indications that genetic monsters, the half-breed Nephalim will exist in the end times. God's Word also forecasts that the mark of beast will be needed for buying & selling.

One item conveyed by the Bible's book of Revelation is that totally unexpected sudden change will characterize the end times. Christians need to be prepared for unusual big changes. So great will these changes be that the nations will be distressed, and men's hearts will fail them for fear (LK 21:25-27). The Bible predicted that knowledge shall increase in the last days before Christ returns. (DN 12:4) But that knowledge will be used for evil, because the Bible also says that the world will be totally corrupt as in Noah's time (MT 24:37)--which was a time of the genetic monsters, the half-bred Nephalim. It also says men and horses will be out of work. (ZEC 8:10) And it is believed that Nahum 2:3-4 must be describing automobiles, and that Isaiah 31:5, and 60:8 are describing and prophesying airships in the last day. The description of the "mark of the beast" is startlingly accurate in describing the microchip which is being inserted into people's hands and foreheads.

The information that is allowed out for the public to access has been heavily censored. Still in spite of all the intense secrecy, if a person takes the time to dig and to find key items written by scientists, enough of a shadow picture develops to allow a person to realize that they already can produce several things the public is unaware of. Many times the articles will discuss only a tiny aspect of a larger process, or will say we have the knowledge to do such and such but the actual doing is years away. And somehow people swallow that we could have the capability to do it, but aren't. For instance, in a book that was published in 1979, Robert Gilmore McKinnel, Professor of Genetics and Cell Biology, College of Biological Sciences, University of Minnesota, wrote "It has been reported that mice and some large domestic animals have been cloned. Humans have not. Because the reproductive biology of humans...is similar to that of mice and other mammals, it is likely that humans could be cloned." Some of the men who know what is actually being done, are afraid to tell what they know. However, I do not have neither a professional reputation nor a job to guard. I have never taken any oath of secrecy to any of these organizations of the establishment. I can simply tell you the truth without fear.

Section B. Instructions on how to clone a person.

For those who want the medical description of just one way that cloning of people can be done (and this capability has been around for at least a decade--and much longer secretly.) The idea that we don't have the knowledge to do it is simply a myth for public consumption. Any microbiologist worth anything knows that we have the knowledge and the means--they can only claim that cloning of humans hasn't happened because supposedly no one wants to do it.

A TECHNIQUE--INSTRUCTIONS HOW TO CLONE A HUMAN:

The ovulation and ovaries of the woman can be monitored. Just before natural ovulation, there is an increase of luteinizing hormone which is called the luteinizing hormone surge. This can be detected by either blood or urine samples. The growth of the follicle can be monitored by visualization with ovarian ultrasonography. Ultrasound diagnosis will reveal on which side of the woman’s ovaries the ripening follicle is found. This procedure will allow people to know when the follicle is ripe for the retrieval of the oocyte.

When the time is appropriate a hollow aspiration needle is inserted into one or several ripe follicles under visual guidance of the laparoscope. The oocyte is removed with some follicular fluid. Experienced laparoscopists have a success rate over 90% in recovering the oocyte. Prior to this, it is likely that the woman will have been given Clomiphene citrate, or this drug used in combination with another drug so that there will be several eggs that can be retrieved at one time.

The oocytes obtained from the ripe ovarian follicles are not fertilized when retrieved, although another process would be to fertilize first, before extracting. If they don’t fertilize first, then they can take the harvested oocytes and incubate them in a culture medium for several hours to get maturation. They need maturation because they have been taken from the ovary before ovulation, and are not as mature as spontaneously ovulated ova.

Thawed or fresh semen is washed and certifuged so that it will be diluted to the proper concentration to fertilize in vitro. The in vitro fertilization is carried out. After some amount of hours, (about 12) both pronuclei are identifiable for enucleation. The enucleation is accomplished with either one of two well-established methods. One method is to surgically enucleate it with a micropipette, another is with a bleb of cytoplasm containing both the male and female pronuclei. Either method has worked fine. These nuclei by the way have been obtained from the inner-cell mass of an early human embryo. This again is a well established practice.

Let us digress slightly and explain the method to obtain the nuclei. The zona pellucida must be removed from a cultured embryo, the trophectoderm separated from the inner cell mass, and then, the cells dissociated with an appropriate enzyme in a calcium-and magnesium-free salt solution. Going back to the cloning process, there are several methods for doing a donor nucleus (obtained from its source using the just mentioned method) with enucleated cytoplasm (obtained from the woman’s in vitro fertilized ovum). One might be to surgically implant it with a micropipette, another is fusion with an inactivated Sendai virus. Whichever way is considered most viable by those performing this will be used. And then the human nuclear transplant will be cultured until it can be placed into a human foster mother.

When the clone has reached the 8 - to 16 cell stage it will be transferred into the foster mother. If needed, the transfer can be done later, and the clone is simply frozen. When the transfer takes place, the clone is drawn into a fine plastic tube (a catheter) which, then in turn, would be introduced through the cervical canal into the interior of the uterus. --- This is just one process for successfully cloning humans. Other more refined techniques may well be in use.

Section C. The four types of ‘clones’ that are used by the Illuminati:

Cl. Actual Clones. This is a person who has been grown from a test tube (called "in vitro") or implanted womb, which has the identical genetic makeup to another person--an identical twin so to speak in terms of genetic makeup. The genetic coding has reproduced, and a new person who is an identical twin is now in existence.

C2. Synthetic People. These are "persons" who look everybit as real as a real person, but simulate human beings. Certain tissues extracted from cattle are the starting point. (This is part of the reason for cattle mutilations.) The process is an advancement of a process discovered in the late 1950’s. This 1959 experiment was reported in a book in 1968 called The Biological Time Bomb by Gordon Rettray Taylor. Taylor describes the experiment done in France, "They had extracted DNA from the cells of the khaki Cam phells and had injected it into the white Pekins, thinking that just possibly the offspring of the latter might show some character derived from khaki Campbells. To their astonishment the actual ducks they injected began to change. Their white feathers darkened, and their necks began to take on the peculiar curve which is a mark of the khaki Campbell." The scientists working under the auspices of the Rothschilds, (who are directed by Satan himself) developed this process by working at secret breakneck speed. They developed an advanced development of the process they discovered with the DNA chicken experiment. By the late 1970’s, synthetic people could be produced by the Illuminati.

C3. Organic Robotoids. This is an "artificial life" form that is created through processes that are totally different than cloning or synthetics. Organic robotoid technology is being made to make exact as possible copies of important people such as Presidents and some of their staff. For instance, the Jimmy Carter who came to Portland a few years ago who I stood two feet away from and examined visually was not the Jimmy Carter that had run for President.

On Easter, 1979 the first robotoid model of Jimmy Carter replaced the man Jimmy Carter. By the time "Carter" was seen by me, they must have been on at least robotoid no. 100. This is why a friend of mine who was recently in Washington D.C. almost bumped into President Clinton jogging. My friend was surprised by the lack of security.

Kaiser Aluminum News which is put out by Kaiser Aluminum & Chemical Corporation put out a series of articles to a specialized audience in the 1960's. This material was also published under the book title The Dynamics of Change (Prentice-Hall: Englewood Cliffs, N.J., 1967).

Under the title heading "GENETIC MANIPULATION" we read, "The ability to control the formation of new beings may be one of the most basic developments of the future. Recent discoveries about the nucleonic acids, the basic building blocks of life, have led to the belief that man may some day be able to treat genes in such a way that desired characteristics can be realized..."

Under the heading "MAN-MACHINE SYMBIOSIS" we read, "...Computers exist which can learn, remember, see, seek goals, reason, walk, sing on key, talk, be irritable, play games, grasp, adapt to an environment and even design improvements in themselves.. .man-like computers may one day contain plasma circulating through a viscera-like envelope, allowing them to be self-healing."

Under the heading "HUMAN ROBOTS" we read, "...An electronic circuit that imitates two neurons, the cells of the human brain, has been built, and has enabled a robot to deal with some unexpected situations, but the neuron structure was bulky. The brain has billions of neurons, meaning an incredible miniaturization job will be necessary before truly 'human' robots are developed." As the reader knows since the 1960's when this was written an incredible miniaturation job has been done in computers. What the public knows of that minituration is incredible and that is only part of what has actually occurred. In fact, scientists are now able to manipulate DNA to create computers.

A basic thing that is needed to create a computer is material that will consistently change given some type of "signal". This is because the computer works off of base two--or what is simply an on--off switch system, or a 0 or 1 system of numbers. Living biological material is superior to other material for making computers because the heat created by the methods in conventional computers slows the speed. For super-computers to work at great speeds they need to use biological material that will not heat up. This type of miituration has already been done. It creates computers far beyond what we are familiar with. Organic robotoids are amazingly humanlike, so humanlike that it is hard for the scientists who have created them to get used to the idea that they are not humans.

Biological computer brains for the robotiods came as a result of research into holograms. If you tear up a conventional photograph you ruin it, but if you tear up the film that produces a hologram, each piece still contains almost all the same image. This is why part of the brain of people can be removed and the brain regain what it had lost. A holographic image of a person's brain is made, and then when the brain of a robotoid is made, the biological computer in its head is caused to form according to the holographic record of a person being copied. Some deviations from the holographic record are needed, because the "person" is a robotoid and not a person. The brain of the robotoid has almost all of the correct memory of the person reproduced, but the robotoid brain is really a computer made from biological material which is programmed, it is not a human brain.

First, "Clinton" has the energy to jog because it may well be a robotoid, and second thing, an assassination of a robotoid is not so serious. These robotoids have a biological computer-brain that is programmed. They can think in the sense a computer thinks, but secret advances in understanding the human brain, have allowed the makers of organic robotoids to have the memory of a person at a given point in time transferred to an organic robotoid. The key then for making what appears to be a clone--but they are not a real clone--is to capture the person to be copied and make a holographic copy of the brain memory and transfer that to the robotoid.

How the memory of a person is transferred for the organic robotoids. In order to successfully make human organic robotoids--in a sense to make bionic robots--the ability to simulate the personality of the person being copied was necessary. The only viable solution was to learn how the brain coded memory and duplicate that process. The brain is entering into its memory about 10 million bits of information a second. The incredible storage capability of the human brain which weighs on the average 3.25 lbs in human males and 2.9 lbs in human females is incredible. The brain can easily store 100 million billion bits of information. It's no wonder we don't use it all.

All the computers in the world put together do not compare with one intelligent person's brain. Numerous tests and experiments from many different angles all showed investigators that the brain stored information as a hologram. The place in the brain where a memory is stored isn't in just one location. Memories are stored in synapses in sequence, but they are stored in a holographic method. From what I understand, rhythmic pulses radiate from a small area of the brain like a stone creates ripples in a pond. Waves go through the cerebrum, in the way that laser light is used to create a hologram. Different frequencies are used by the brain and different neuron impulses are used to reference (tag) the different details. These tags are the brain's own codes or reference standards for cataloging information. The brain has to be able to access the encoder/decoder (holographic code standards) for a particular piece of information to be retrieve for the conscious.

Brain injuries can destroy one decoder, and leave other decoders for a memory intact. When a multiple (a person with MPD/DID) is created layers and layers of amnesia walls (actual walls) are built into the brain, and then specific codes are created which cause the mind to bring these compartments of memory to the surface. Each compartment is built into an alter (personality) or a functioning part of the System (built somewhat like a series of computers). Where a normal person may be aware of a conscious and a somewhat subconscious track running simultaneously, the mind of a multiple runs several tracks at once.

On a local level within the brain, researchers have called a memories storage unit an engram. Polypeptidenucleic acid holds a piece of information, such as a trauma memory. Proteins and other substances are involved in the memory process. How a person eats can influence their mental abilities. But it must be born in mind that a memory is retained holographically in countless locations in the memory storage area of the brain, just as the ripples of a stone dropped into water flow throughout an entire pond. The mind will have a number of reference points from which a particular memory can be decoded. The information that is stored in the brain is both dynamic and holographic. It is not stored like a book. If the dynamic impulses of the brain cease, so do the memories. Freezing and reviving a human brain will serve to erase its memory.

I will try to explain things in clear terms if the reader will bear with me. The reason that we recogmze objects so quickly is that the brain performs what is similar to what researchers call a Fourier transfer. Messages are transmitted through Fourier-transform messages. What is a Fourier-transform message? A Fourier transform is a mathematical method where a complex wave, or a complex pattern is broken down and converted into a basically longer, but precise signal of simpler frequencies. In other words a squiggly line is hard to communicate, but via the Fourier transform it becomes a string of numbers which is quite easy to transmit. In other words, a complex squiggly line and a straight line after the conversion are both just as easy to record. The brain stores information in a form similar to a Fourier transform, so that when it must look for similar patterns, it can quickly overlook everything but another identical Fourier transform pattern. A mental comparison is done so quick that it gives the ability to the brain to "instantly" recognize people who one hasn't seen for years. The Holograms of memory that the brain makes are transmitted through Fourier-transform messages. Holograms are hard to destroy, for each piece contains the whole. Rip a holograph in half and you still have the same picture. Rip it in half again and the same picture remains. After a great many cuts in half the holograph begins to get a little fuzzy, as it loses some of its detail, but the entire picture is still there. That is why memories begin to get somewhat fuzzy, because we are only puffing up a small piece of brain that recorded the memory. However, if we can pull up more of the holographic image of the memory we get a more distinct detailed picture.

It was secret research into holograms that gave Illuminati scientists the ability to copy the memory of an entire brain. A holographic image is made of the host's brain and that is transferred into the biological matter functioning as a brain of the robotoid. Since the body and brain of the robotoid are not identical to the original person being copied, adjustments have to be taught and programmed into the mind of the robotoid. The entire process is sophisticated, but then so are many manufacturing processes today.

C4. Doubles (look alikes). There is an ongoing program to find look alikes for prominent people, as well as a program to create secret identical twins (which are separated at birth and never see each other).

George Bush's double was promiscuous, while George Bush is a pedophile. His double was living in France after Bush was no longer President. By the use of doubles, (or one of the synthetics or organic robotoids) the elite are able to sneak away and perform satanic rituals. On certain occasions, if Clinton or Bush only needed to do low level tasks in front of the public, they could have their double substitute for them. The Illuminati working with several organizations has had a look alike operation where doubles of certain key people are found and then used.

In the book Desert Shield and The New World Order pub. by Northpoint Tactical Teams, Topton, NC, if you look on page 32 you will see a picture of the original FDR who had a mole over his eyes and then you will a see a picture of the double of Roosevelt who they used, who had no mole and had different ear lobes. Roosevelt may have died prior to when it was actually announced.

Over the years I have seen numerous photos exposing either the Robotoids or the doubles that they use. This author's previous S' '93 article had some pictures about the dead Pope Paul VI, who my Be Wise As Serpents book said was murdered. This recent Pope was replaced with a double who had had plastic surgery. As a double gets older the plastic surgery will not look as convincing, because time changes people differently. One ex-Catholic said the whole thing sounded like science fiction. It does sound far out at first, but the evidence is there for people to see. For myself, the ex-Illuminati have told me about the double's program. From what I understand the double or look-alike program has been more successful than the robotoids and synthetics. The reason is that people live longer and are more dependable in some ways. The project to find look alikes for prominent people has been very successful. Plastic surgery has also been done to help touch up the doubles.

Section D. Secret cloning sites (See also Appendix B, where D.U.M. bases are listed.)

Ada, Oklahoma's underground facility is being used to clone humans. The other cloning facilities are turning out weird creatures. Due to the processes involved they give off lots of gamma radiation (Gamma is at the far end of the electromagnetic wave spectrum--it is even a longer wave than ultraviolet). Because they give off Gamma radiation, these facilities must be deep underground. The cloning is done at level 7. The average depth (according to one of the men who built these Deep Underground Facilities - D.U.M.) is 5,600'.

The secret government has been building them no stop since W.W. II. I personally have only been in an underground city in Oahu, HA, but I have spoken to others who are wanting to save humanity and stop the NWO, and these witnesses know a lot about the underground facilities.

One of the men who betrayed the human race and helped with the cloning was Austrian born **Simon Wiesenthal**. Simon Wiesenthal, was a US intelligence agent with a photographic memory (perhaps a scarred brain stem). Wiesenthal seriously hunted Nazis that were not on the CIA's payroll or CIA associated groups. Simon Wiesenthal, under the disguise of being a great Nazi hunter, actually assisted protecting the FBI's and the CIA's agents who were Nazi criminals. Wiesenthal tried to stop CBS from doing a show exposing the FBI-Nazi connection.

Jewish Intelligence (the Moussad) knew all about the hundreds if not thousands of Nazi War criminals that worked for American Intelligence and the FBI, but never went public about it. Instead they occasionally used the information as leverage against American intelligence. One of the code no.s for Simon Wiesenthal given by a Monarch slave was something like 063 097. If someone else knows the full and correct code for him, go ahead and share it.

Unholy Trinity is a book written about how the Vatican, the US State Department, and MI-6 smuggled Nazis out of Germany at the end of WW II. An entire book could be written about the thousands of die hard Nazis who have been working for American intelligence, however Simon Wiesenthal's name is mentioned here because he helped start the cloning for the worst elements of the NWO.

OREGON'S UNDERGROUND SECRET CLONING FACILITY

In at least one of my newsletters, the secret cloning facility at Bull Run near Mt. Hood, OR was discussed. Bull Run is a large tract of forested land with some water reservoirs/lakes that is set up to help provide water for the Portland Metro area. My house on Lincoln St. was also near 8 reservoirs that were built at nearby Mt. Tabor. These reservoirs at Mt. Tabor were for Portland drinking water too. The Mt. Tabor reservoirs have simple single fences on their perimeter, and people are able to throw garbage into these reservoirs if they want to be nasty. However, the Bull Run water supply which is very isolated is extremely well protected. It is rare that people would stray up into the area anyway. People are told that this large tract of land is simply for Portland's water supply, and yet several years ago a Patriot military unit reconned the area after getting info from me. They were able to identify 3 strongly guarded rings of defense at the Bull Run reservoir. The area has lots of electronic surveillance, etc. It is either the most valuable water on God's green earth, or there is something else in the vicinity of Larch Mountain (south of the famous Multnomah Falls which sit on I-84)--something besides a water reservoir. Of course, those in the know, know that it's an underground facility which the CIA use. It's not an accident Tektronics here in the Portland area does work/research with holograms.

FURTHER INVESTIGATIONS AT DULCE'S UNDERGROUND CLONING FACILITY

My article about Dulce [which I investigated in person on foot] also sparked a small group of dedicated Christians to try to retrace my steps and find the Duke facility. They reported back to me that they found nothing and that the reservation police and the local people claimed they'd never even heard of any underground facility. All I can say is that, doesn't that strike you as fishy that all kinds of people have been up in that area looking for the site, interviewing the Jicarilla Apaches that live in the area for years, talking about Dulce over Art Bell's Radio show, etc. and locals have never heard anything about it?? At the very least they should know that other people looked for the site. The reservation and town of Dulce, NM have a small population. There is little that everyone doesn't know about what goes on in the area, and yet they are surprised by the topic of an underground facility? The whole thing smells like the key people in the area have been convinced to keep their mouths shut & pretend they know nothing.

My comments: sometimes when you're looking for a rat, you'll smell it before you see it. According to someone who has worked in the Dulce Underground Facility the openings on the north and SW face (Aztec Cliffs) are still in use. Actually the cliff that has a face that looks like an Aztec on Mt. Archeleta has been cemented shut because hikers kept straying into the area. A deep needle detector which could detect metal or magnetism deep down could reveal the Dulce Underground Facility--but people who get this close often disappear.

SUMMARY OF THE FOUR METHODS.

This Appendix covers 4 different methods that have been used to make copies of people, these were cloning, creating synthetic duplicates, creating organic robotoids, and finding look alike doubles. [Programs for all four of these methods have had almost unlimited funding by the intelligence/Illuminati elite.]

Next, the basic principles for creating a synthetic human were covered. Synthetic humans were in some ways found to be superior to the robotoids that were created. The first few years of robotoids were fraught with problems. [Since my inside information is somewhat dated, I cannot give readers the status of current robotoid abilities, however, I believe from what I've seen that the program continues.]

The synthetics were people who had their genes altered to look more like the person they were to copy. The robotoids were the formation of new beings that look human but are actually bionic robots. Their memories were created by using living "brain tissue" which is some type of programmable living biological matter, and programming this material as a sophisticated computer. In order to get the memory of the person being copied, a holographic image of the person's brain is made and transferred to the robotoid. Because the robotoid "brain" is not functioning like a human (although the end result is nearly identical so that viewers have to know what differences to look for), there are of course some adjustments that have to be made after the holographic image of the host is transferred to the living biological matter that will function as the brain of the robotoid. Lord Willing, this author may write some more on this topic later. The ability of the Illuminati to copy people using the 4 methods listed above, are not going to be the deciding factor in their moves to control the world, but it does give them a great deal of flexibility in their operations. This author frequently reflects on the words of the Illuminati Grand Master who told Cisco, who was then a child, while touring a cloning facility, "Never, never think you are seeing who you think you are seeing.'

FINAL NOTES.

As this author's reflects back on what's gone into this first part, he can't help thinking about how God will reveal all things that are secret. (See Dan, 2:22 and other verses). The prophet Daniel called him the revealer of secrets." The secrets which are revealed in this book are minuscule compared to what God Almighty will reveal in His day. And as this author reflects back he realizes that there is so much more that could be said.

This author has neglected to get my information about the **Clintons** into this. For instance, this author interviewed a woman who went to school with Hillary, and two of Hillary's mind-control victims. Our establishment media have neglected to tell the American people about Bill Clinton's roots & ties in Hot Springs, Ark.

Hot Springs is a city that has forty-seven thermal springs which have brought the jet set from all over the world. The mafia syndicate & their nightclubs made Hot Springs a hot bed of vice, gambling, prostitution. During the 1920's the territory so popular with organized crime, that they classified the territory "neutral ground" like they did Hollywood. In the early 1960's, Hot Springs had the largest illegal gambling operations in the entire U.S. Billy's uncle Roy was a politician in Arkansas's legislature connected to all this mess. And Bill Clinton's uncle Raymond Clinton, who had a Buick dealership, was tied to all this corruption.

Bill & his brother Roger's cocaine habits are well known by those familiar with them, as well as their wild parties at the Coachman's Inn, Little Rock, Ark. What are not known are Hillary & Bill's membership in the secret Illuminati.

And for some reason some of their more intimate associates are also not known, such as Charles "Chip" Whitmore, a Satanist & programmer. Chip & Bill have met often on a weekly basis over the years. This continues, for instance when Bill was in England so was Chip, when Bill went to Florida so did Chip. Chip played drums with mind-control programmer Jerry Lee Lewis. He was also a friend of Jack Ruby. (It's a small world at the top of corruption.) Chip owns Cash McCool's Tavern. He is 5'6, glasses for his poor eyesight, has good hearing, and has a filthy mouth. He changes the car he owns & drives every 3-5 months. Chip had a programmed girl murder a man, and then the Network got him off of his murder charges. Chip's family's Villa Mare in Little Rock was pictured in the opening shots of Designing Women.

Chip Whitm ore has been in charge of assassinations in his area, and controls the local law enforcement in Arkansas. Jack Stevens, said to be the largest investment banker in Little Rock, is CIA/part of the Network. He exchanged information with Chip via their mutual black cleaning lady. Further, Whitmore & Stevens tie in with a string of corruption that extends into the Assembly of God churches & other parts of Churchianity.

Over Chip is a Dr. Paul Palmer. The media just gives us glimpses of the depth of occult corruption. For instance, Insight magazine Feb. 26, '96, page 48, in an article by Suzanne Fields had a photo of Hillary's backside wearing what appeared to be a golden dragon on her black coat when she went to court to talk about the Rose Law Firm billing records. She has sometimes been called the Dragon lady for good reasons. Will today's modern equivalents to shamans, our psychiatric community help protect us from murderers like Chip Whitmore? Not likely.

The Biographical Directory of Fellows and Members of the American Psychiatric Association reveals that in 1957 there were 7,104 American members in the American Psychiatric Association. Of those 7,104, a total of 1,253 had moved to America from Germany and Eastern Europe. This helps us understand the enormous influence Operation Paperclip had on America. Operation Paperclip was the CIA's project to smuggle Nazi criminals into our nation, some of which have now made Penn's campus infamous. No wonder the False Memory Spindrome got started at Pennsylvania University. We were warned by a psychiatrist in a Weekly World News story of Jan. 9, 1996 about a strange new sleeping disorder where people die after seeing a hooded robe figure chase them. This new "Deadly Dream Syndrome" sounds strongly like mind-control. Perhaps there is no way to have given the readers anything but a drop in the bucket.

Some of the details that got left out on the way include:

the Seventh-Day Adventist church's secret cooperation with the government to supply young men (1,500) for government experiments called Operation Whitecoat;

how the Dept. of Energy set up hotlines for victims of radiation experiments, in other words the fox is in control of where the victim goes for help;

Peter A. Petito, "Mr. Intelligence" in Italy, and his connections to the Network;

William Randolph Hearst's costume parties and his half dozen homes like San Simeon;

Torrance, CA's Penthouses and Disney's mind-control;

the Masonic peace sign of uplifted hands with wrists crossed in the film 1984;

the movie Army of Darkness with its mirror image programming, "London Bridges falling down" programming ditty, etc.;

how FEMA works with the 6th Army that Aquino was part of, how Voodooism uses Waterfalls for healing such as at Sardo, Haiti;

how Mothers of Darkness alters are trained to love a marble, fed the marble, care for it, and then to shatter it with a hammer until its fine like salt and then to repeat the process and only split the marble but not crush it as part of their training to program;

how a certain torture is done to make the victim think they have a butterfly as a head with the head of the butterfly in their third eye area;

how scribbling is used to anchor programming in child victims;

programmed soul-ties to aliens;

Mr. Greenjean's (of Capt. Kangaroo) talk of Mr. Moon & how it was used for programming;

the blood sacrifices under the Temple Mount on March 13th this year;

the Masonic corruption in Arcadia, FL and the G. Pierce Wood Memorial Hospital;

how secret meetings of the CIA have studied how UFOs could be used as "clever hostile propaganda" trick to take advantage of the populace's gullibility; how Mengele's family never claimed his bones--they knew they weren't the real ones, and how the International Red Cross gave him an I.D.S. to travel with; South Africa's occult Shu Shung Palace... maybe someone else will pick up where this author has left off, the mind-control is all around us!

[back] [home]

DEEPER INSIGHTS into the ILLUMINATI FORMULA

Part 1.

How the control comes about

by Fritz Springmeier

DEDICATION

This book is dedicated to the two million Americans and counting who have been programmed with Monarch-type trauma-based mind control.

This book is written to destroy trauma-based mind control before it destroys the human race. It's time for this horrendous secret to end.

It is also written as part of the God's end time work to propel people of faith to the high calling that is prophecied of the Body but cannot be attained without men of faith understanding these things. Humanity's great prophet said he came to heal those whose hearts had been broken--literally split and crushed, and to free those who are captive. That work needs to go forward.

Blood, sweat and tears are associated with this book. The blood of the innocent victims of this mind-control cries out in a single unison, along with the pungent sweat of those who have tried to minister help to the shattered humanity left by the sadistic programmers, and the pools of tears shed as this book was written, "How long, O Lord, holy and true, do you not judge and avenge our blood on earth?"

HOPE

...Thou shalt know that I am Lord: For they shall not be ashamed that wait on Me. Shall the prey be taken from the mighty, or the lawful captive delivered? But thus saith Yahweh, even the captives of the mighty shall be taken away, and the prey of the terrible shall be delivered: for I will contend with him that contendeth with thee, and I will save thy children. Isaiah 49:23b-25

WARNING, READ THIS FIRST BEFORE READING THE BOOK.

IF THERE IS ANY CHANCE you the reader have had mind-control done to you, you must consider the following book to be DANGEROUS. If you are consulting a therapist for DID (also known as MPD), it is recommended that you consult your therapist before reading this book. The complications that could result for those under mind control learning the truth--could be fatal.
The co-authors take no responsibility for those who read or misuse this information. The reader's mind is like a garden. It may not be time to plant the truth in your mind. Perhaps you need some weeding or ground preparation, before the garden of your mind is ready. Perhaps the weather is too stormy to plant the truth. Pray to the Lord of the Harvest. The blessings that flow from planting the information of this book in your mind, will require the presence of living waters of love. If you do not have love in your heart, this book is not for you.
The information contained in this book is the biggest news-story of the 20th century, and still the biggest secret. It will challenge you, shock you, horrify you and hopefully motivate you to redouble your efforts to humble yourself and seek strength from God Almighty.

IMPORTANT EXPLANATION OF CONTENTS:

A successful treasure hunter of the sea said, "You have to convince others of what you are looking for, and be incredibly persistent in looking for it." I, Fritz, could really identify with what he was saying. I have searched for truth like a treasure hunter, I have sifted the dusty pages of documents, like a patient miner panning for gold. How far & deep are you willing to search for truth? Cisco and I feel we are accountable to tell you the whole truth as far as we know it, what you do with that is up to you.

This book will explain many occult ideas and beliefs, many of them never before publicly revealed. There is an important reason why these occult ideas and beliefs are introduced, we need to study our enemy and know how he thinks. The U.S. Army used indian scouts to track the indians. Gen. MacArthur learned everything he could about the Japanese so that he could defeat them. Christ was extremely savvy as to Satan's tricks. The Apostle said, "We are not ignorant of Satan's devices." Time and time again, this author has seen powerful Masonic clergyman do their handshakes, their codewords, etc. in front of the common people and the Christians do not catch on. On the one hand the Christians want proof of what is happening, but on the other hand, they are not willing to learn how to identify what the opposition is doing. Such doublemindedness has contributed to the churches becoming, sad-to-say, fronts for the Illuminati. I have included the Illuminati's understanding of things and other occult beliefs, because I have witnessed that knowing these things can be helpful in defeating the mind-control. If I were trying to help a refugee who was trying to escape the Yakuza, I would study the tactics of the Yakuza. If I were trying to free a witch of JuJuism, then I would learn about JuJuism. I strongly recommend that readers always stand on the foundation of the Word of God, and that they use the Word of God as a refreshing bath to cleanse their minds. This author has found tapes with scriptures to be an encouragement.

Some Christians have criticized this author for the content of the books, because it doesn't portray the lighter side of Christianity (whatever that is). It seems some people only want enough of God to to make them cozy, but not so much that their sleep would be disturbed.

Some have even gone so far as to claim this author is not a Christian because the content of the books is so heavy. It is sad that many Christians do not know their own Scriptures nor where hope comes from. True hope is given by the Spirit of God, because hope is the vantage point that the Spirit of God has for the situation. A therapist may be optimistic about a victim of mind-control, but the therapist's optimism only turns to sincere hope when they become involved personally with the tragedies of the victim through caring and prayer. The Biblical hope is not a warm fuzzy that has its head in the sand pretending that everything is "rosy and peachy". Quite to the contrary, if we look at the following portion of scripture, we will see the Word of God portraying trauma after trauma with a light still at the end of the tunnel! Such is the power of our hope, that we have hope in spite of how fierce evil manifests.

Lam 3:1 I am the man that hath seen affliction by the rod of his wrath.
2 He hath led me, and brought me into darkness, but not into light.
3 Surely against me is he turned; he turneth his hand against me all the day.
4 My flesh and my skin hath he made old; he hath broken my bones.
5 He hath builded against me, and compassed me with gall and travail.
6 He hath set me in dark places, as they that be dead of old.

7 He hath hedged me about, that I cannot get out: he hath made my chain heavy.
8 Also when I cry and shout, he shutteth out my prayer.
9 He hath inclosed my ways with hewn stone, he hath made my paths crooked.
10 He was unto me as a bear lying in wait, and as a lion in secret places.
11 He hath turned aside my ways, and pulled me in pieces: he hath made me desolate.
12 He hath bent his bow, and set me as a mark for the arrow.
13 He hath caused the arrows of his quiver to enter into my reins.
14 I was a derision to all my people; and their song all the day.
15 He hath filled me with bitterness, he hath made me drunken with wormwood.
16 He hath also broken my teeth with gravel stones, he hath covered me with ashes.
17 And thou hast removed my soul far off from peace: I forgat prosperity.
18 **And I said, My strength and my hope is perished from the LORD:**
19 **Remembering mine affliction and my misery, the wormwood and the gall.**
20 **My soul hath them still in remembrance, and is bowed down within me.**
21 **This I recall to my mind, therefore have I hope.**
22 **(It is of) Jehovah's lovingkindnesss that we are not consumed, because his compassions fail not.**
23 **They are new every morning; great is thy faithfulness.**
24 **The LORD is my portion, saith my soul; therefore will I hope in Him.**
25 **The LORD is good unto them that wait for Him, to the soul that seeketh him.**
26 **It is good that a man should both hope and quietly wait for the salvation of the LORD.**

We are in a battle for our minds, are we willing to seize the hope that is before us, or will we resign and say "all is lost"? Discouragement is not of faith. Do you think Almighty God is a discouraged person? He is calling people to serve others, because God knows that you will never find happiness in selfishness. God is calling people to bind up the broken shattered multiples and to let their deeper parts know that they are loved and worthwhile. To adopt an attitude of defeat before freedom loving men and women have exhausted all potential remedies for this mind-control is inexcusable.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

PART 1. INTRODUCTION **1**

DEEPER INSIGHTS into the 12 SCIENCES OF MONARCH MIND-CONTROL

I. Deeper Insights on the SELECTION & PREPARATION OF THE VICTIM **7**
    A. Who wants zombies?
    B. Selecting for Bloodlines, Genetics, Hypnotic & Dissociative traits
    C. Training the Unborn Child
    D. Vanishing Twin Syndrome
    E. Selection & 5 steps for programming Adults from scratch
II. Deeper Insights on the TRAUMATIZATION & TORTURE OF THE VICTIM **19**
    A. Some of the Abusers using Day-to-day Trauma & Torture techniques
    E. What the Programmers look for during torture
    F. 6 Specific Tortures
III. Deeper Insights about the USE OF DRUGS **25**
    A. Classifying mind-drugs
    B. Administering drugs for programming
    C. More programming drugs
    D. How drugs are used to program
    E. How LSD is used for programming
    F. Chemically triggering Instincts
    G. Adrenalchrome
IV. Deeper Insights about the USE OF HYPNOSIS **37**
    A. Historical use & basics of Hypnosis
    B. The Power of Hypnosis
    C. Hypnotic Aids
    D. Early Hypnotic Training
    E. Deep Trance Work
    F. Lights & Color Programming
    G. Hypnotic triggers, codes & cues
V. Deeper Insights on the SKILL OF LYING, THE ART OF DECEIT **65**
    A. The Impact of Deceit
    B. The Methods of Deceit
    C. The Great Disney Deception
VI. Deeper Insights on the USE OF ELECTRICITY & ELECTRONICS **137**
    A. An overview
    B. Tesla waves used to read minds & implant voices
    C. ELF wave mind-control capabilities
    D. Body suits for implanting thoughts
    E. Specific types of implants: Audio implants, Body Manipulation implants, Visual/holographic implants, Memex/Brain Link implants, Torture/Nerve & Muscle Stimulation implants.
    F. Placing thoughts directing into the human mind
VII. Deeper Insights on STRUCTURING OF AN MPD SYSTEM **187**
    A. Structuring of MPD worlds
    B. How the Mind is in Parts

    C. Processors & basic designs
    D. Constructing alters and types of systems
    E. Structuring the GDC
    F. Using mirrors & spinning
VIII. Deeper Insights on BODY MANIPULATION & PROGRAMMING **203**
    A. Cranial manipulation
    B. Genetic manipulation
IX. MIND MANIPULATION BY PSYCHOLOGICAL PROGRAMMING METHODS: BEHAVIOR MODIFICATION, PSYCHOLOGICAL MOTIVATION & NLP **243**
    A. Consequences of the Destruction of Selfhood
    B. Loss of Feelings
    C. Dreams
    D. Programming Langauge
X. More on SPIRITUAL CONTROL TECHNIQUES, POSSESSION TRANCES, ETC **251**
    A. Importance of Spiritual Programming
    B. History of Programmed Golem
    C. The 3 Foundations of Programming
    D. A Complete Chronology of Early Programming Rituals
    E. Specific Spiritual Programming Manouevers
XI. Deeper Insights on INTERNAL CONTROLS **267**
    A. Teaching occult philosophies & ideologies
    B. Internal computers
    C. Internal hierarchies
XII. Deeper Insights on EXTERNAL CONTROLS **275**
    A. Advertising for Control of Slaves
    B. Television
    C. Surveillance & Harassment
    D. Manipulating the Milieu, Using Families & Communities
APPENDIX 1. THE PROGRAMMERS **281**
APPENDIX 2. THE PROGRAMMING SITES **297**
APPENDIX 3. CLONING **307**

PART 2.

- **COLLAGES ILLUSTRATING VITAL ASPECTS OF THE ILLUM.'S MIND-CONTROL & PROVIDING IDEAS TO HELP THERAPISTS HELP VICTIMS** **314**

- **CISCO'S HOW HELP COMES** **320**

Table of Contents
Section A. 31 Beginning Issues
Section B. 43 Deeper Issues

BIBLIOGRAPHICALNOTES 523
INDEX FOR ENTIRE BOOK 527

PART 2. HOW HELP COMES ABOUT FOR MIND-CONTROL VICTIMS

Collages...p.314
Table of Contents...p.320
Introduction to Part 2...p.322
Overview of therapy...p.324

Section A. Beginning Issues

ACCESSING, how to prevent...325
BOUNDARIES & ROLES, establishment of...326
COMMUNICATION ISSUES, undrstanding...330
DENIAL, how to deal with therapist's...331
DEPRESSION, how to deal with initial d....332
DETECTION, of mind-control...334
EATING DISORDERS, how to deal with...337
EVALUATION FORMS...340
FEAR, how to handle...342
FEAR ISSUES, what kinds are faced...343
HOPE...345
INTAKE QUESTIONNAIRE...347
INSOMNIA, suggestions for...348
MULTIPLICITY, understanding...353
PANIC ATTACKS, suggestions...355
PROGRAMMING, how to understand...356
PROTECTION, spiritual...364
SAFETY ISSUES, of slave...369
SAFETY ISSUES, of support team...371
SELF-INFLICTED HARM, how to handle...373
SPIRITUAL ISSUES, understanding...375
STRUCTURING, consequences of...376
SUFFERING, how to deal with...378
SUICIDAL THOUGHTS, how to deal with...380
SUPPORT TEAM, organizing one...382
TRAUMAS, foundational...385
TRIGGERS, how to defuse...391
TRIGGERS, issues around...392
TRUST, how to establish...394
TRUST, how to handle t. issues...394
TRUTH, discernment of...397

Section B. Deeper Issues

ABREACTIONS, avoidance of...402
ABREACTIONS, understanding...403
ABUSE, what is the impact of systematic a....405
ABUSERS, confrontations or not...411
ALTERS, deep, how to work with...412
BACKACHES, suggestions for...415
BIOGRAPHY, chronology of victim's history...416
BURN OUT, of support team...420
CONFLICT, resolving c. between alters...422
CORE, issues of c....424
DELIVERANCE, understanding...434
DENIAL, dealing with...438
DREAM WORK, understanding...440
EXTERNAL PROOFS, benefits of...447
FAMILY, rebuilding a shattered f....448
FLOODING, how to deal with...449
GRIEF, how to deal with...450
GUILT, how to deal with...455
HYPNOSIS, self, ins & outs of...456
IDENTITY, how to discover one's i....460
IMPLANTS, dealing with...461
INTEGRATION, understanding...463
INTERNAL INFORMATION, how to get...465
JOBS, new ones for alters...468
JUSTICE SYSTEM, dealing with broken j.s...469
MAPPING, how to m. a system...470
MAZES, how to deal with...472
MIRRORS, how to deal with...472
PROGRAMMING, destruction of foundation...473
RATIONALES, understanding cult r....487
REALITY VS. PERCEPTION, dealing with...489
RESPONSIBILITY, tips to face new ones...490
SALVATION, to achieve...490
SANCTUARY FOR ALTERS, how to create...495
SATANIC CULTS, understanding practices of...496
SELF-FORGIVENESS, to achieve...500
SPLIT-BRAIN PROG., how to understand...501
SURVEILLANCE, dealing with...503
TIPS, for therapists...504
TRANSFERENCE, issues of t....506
TWINNING, understanding & dealing with...508
WORLD, external, how to understand...511
WORLDS, destruction of internal w....514

--bibliographical notes...523
--index for entire book...527

THE BASIC ILLUMINATI STRUCTURE
and its relation to cooperating satanic bodies.

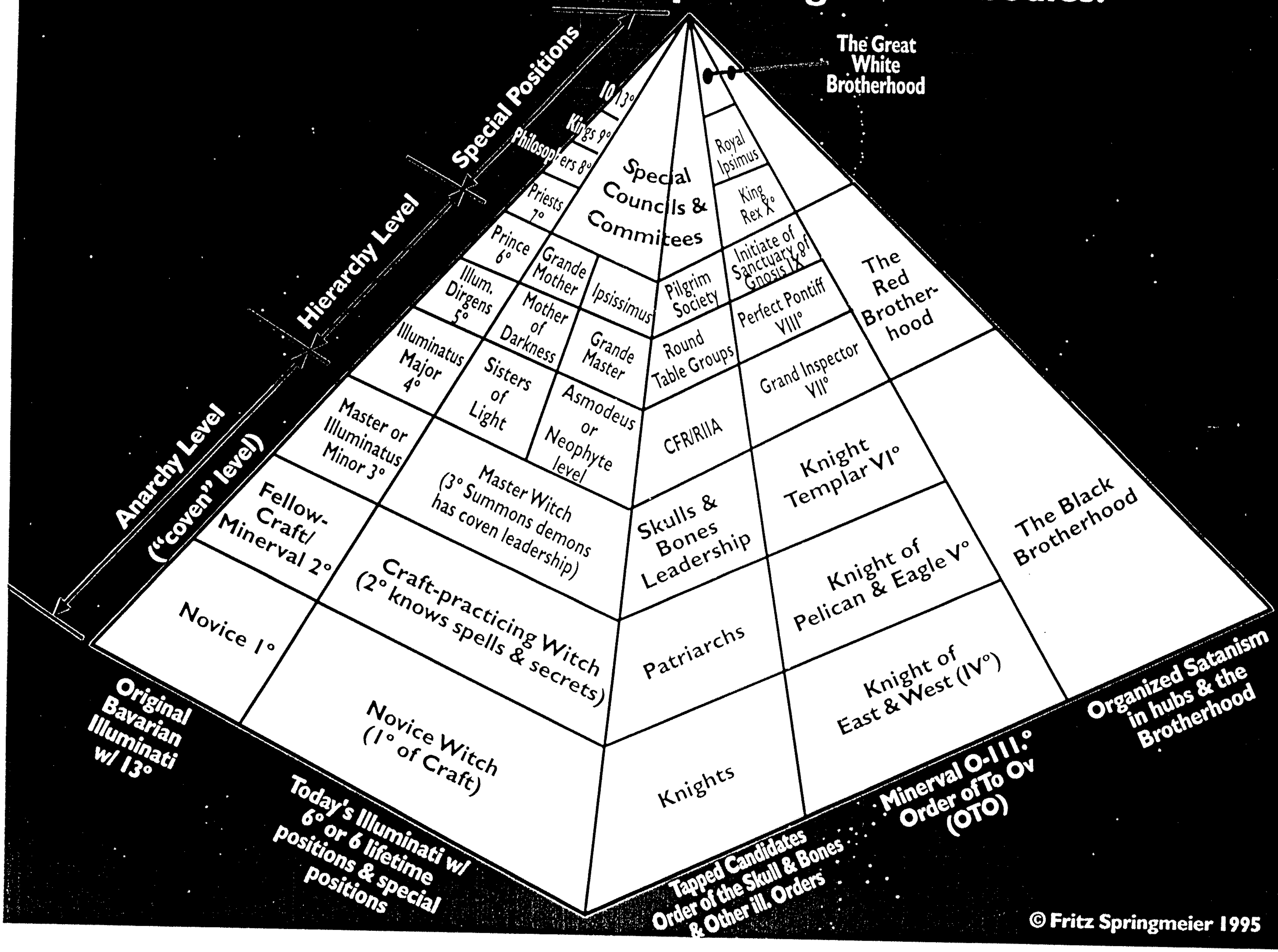
Special Positions
Hierarchy Level
Anarchy Level
("coven" level)
10 13°
Kings 9°
Philosophers 8°
Priests 7°
Prince 6°
Illum. Dirgens 5°
Illuminatus Major 4°
Master or Illuminatus Minor 3°
Fellow-Craft/ Mineral 2°
Novice 1°
Special Councils & Commitees
Grande Mother
Ipsissimus
Mother of Darkness
Grande Master
Sisters of Light
Asmodeus or Neophyte level
Master Witch (3° Summons demons has coven leadership)
Craft-practicing Witch (2° knows spells & secrets)
Novice Witch (1° of Craft)
Pilgrim Society
Round Table Groups
CFR/RIIA
Skulls & Bones Leadership
Patriarchs
Knights
Royal Ipsimus
King Rex X°
Initiate of Sanctuary of Gnosis IX°
Perfect Pontiff VIII°
Grand Inspector VII°
Knight Templar VI°
Knight of Pelican & Eagle V°
Knight of East & West (IV°)
The Great White Brotherhood
The Red Brother-hood
The Black Brotherhood
Original Bavarian Illuminati w/ 13°
Today's Illuminati w/ 6° or 6 lifetime positions & special positions
Tapped Candidates Order of the Skull & Bones & Other ill. Orders
Mineral O-III.° Order of To Ov (OTO)
Organized Satanism in hubs & the Brotherhood

© Fritz Springmeier 1995

The BASIC Theoretical Concepts of the RELATIONSHIP BETWEEN PHYSICAL FEATURES OF THE SKULL & FACE & PERSONALITY which are used for purposes of mind-control. (See Cranial Manipulation, Chapter 8)

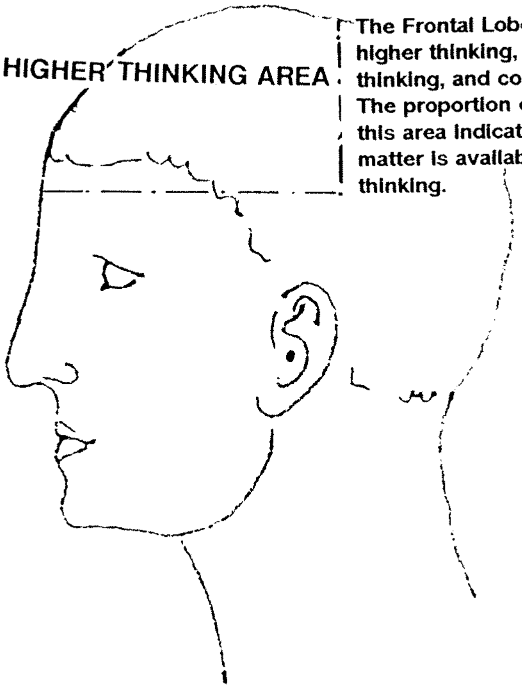

The Frontal Lobes are crucial for higher thinking, and conscious thinking, and conscious choices. The proportion of brain cells in this area indicates how much brain matter is available for higher thinking.

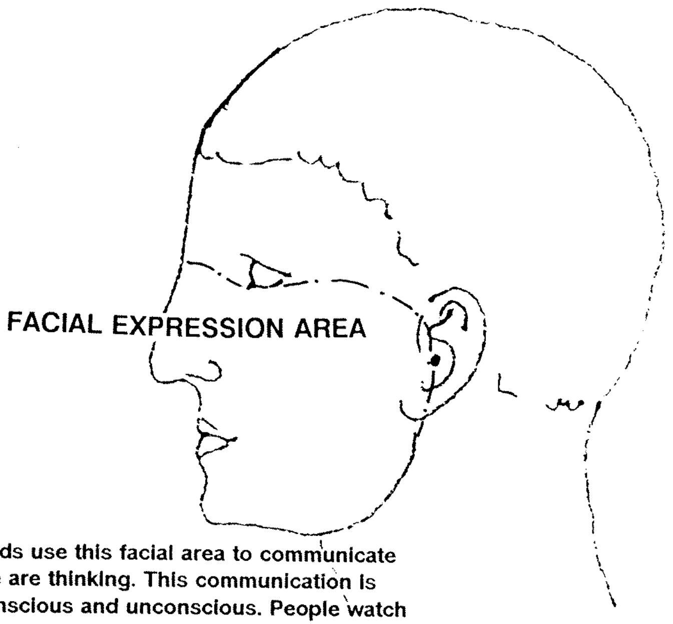

Our minds use this facial area to communicate what we are thinking. This communication is both conscious and unconscious. People watch this area of the face to determine what we are thinking, which is why the poker face developed.

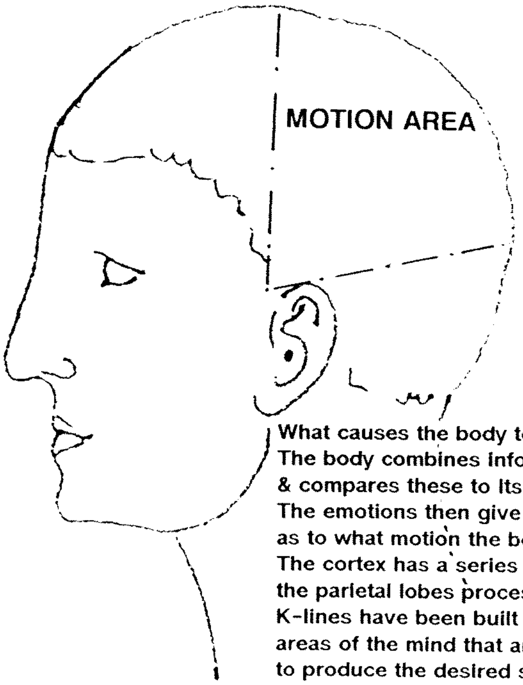

What causes the body to move?
The body combines info from its senses & compares these to its emotions.
The emotions then give final review as to what motion the body will make.
The cortex has a series of motor areas, & the parietal lobes process sensory info.
K-lines have been built into various areas of the mind that are activated to produce the desired sequence of muscle contractions & body activity to get the desired action. The brain size of the motion area shows how much brain is available for motions and actions.

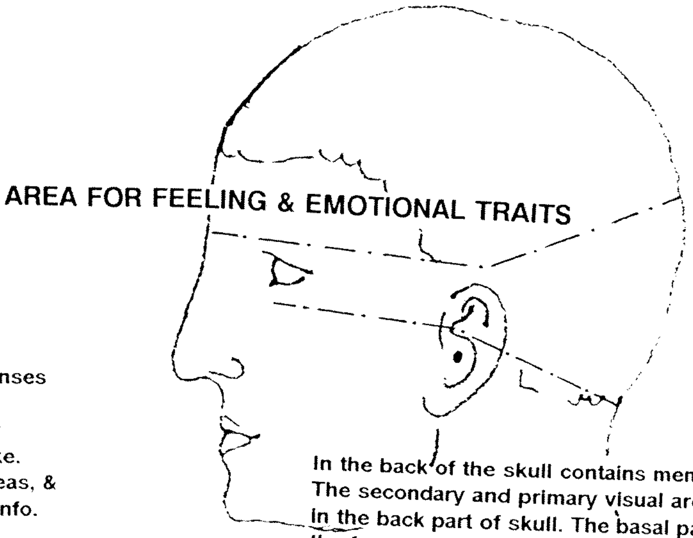

In the back of the skull contains memory. The secondary and primary visual areas lay in the back part of skull. The basal part of the frontal lobes contain primary speech & fear/identity centers. The eyes are an extremely valuable sense organ that the body uses for much of its new information.

drawings & text by Fritz Springmeier

BASIC STRUCTURE of SATANIC CONTROL over GNOSTIC RELIGIONS

BASIC STRUCTURE OF A GNOSTIC RELIGION

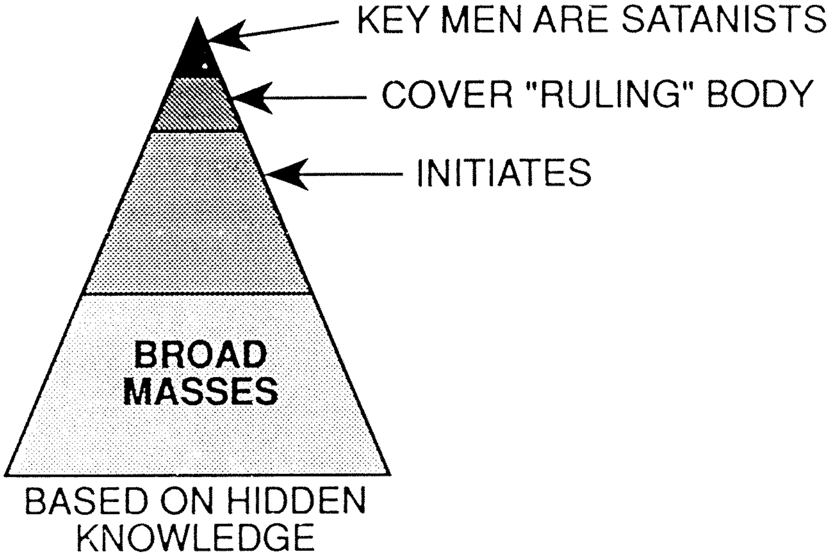
KEY MEN ARE SATANISTS
COVER "RULING" BODY
INITIATES
BROAD MASSES
BASED ON HIDDEN KNOWLEDGE

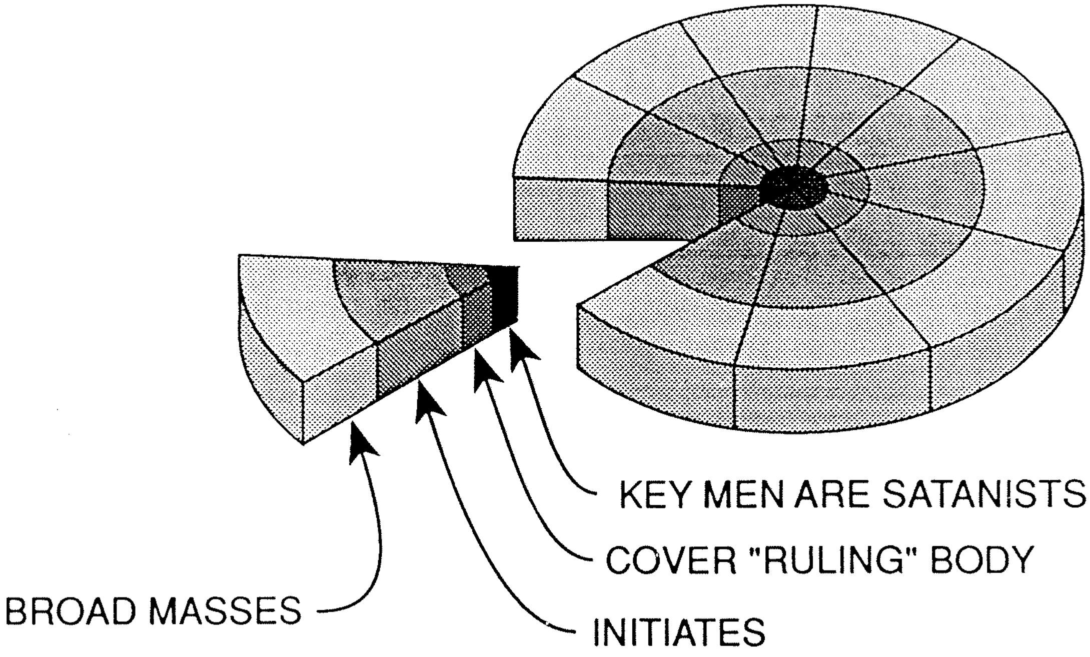
KEY MEN ARE SATANISTS
COVER "RULING" BODY
BROAD MASSES
INITIATES

© Fritz Springmeier. All rights reserved.

Sanitized

1170
420

IG Subject
IG 75-3228

(8)

20 OCT 1975

MEMORANDUM FOR: Director of Central Intelligence

FROM : Inspector General

SUBJECT : Destruction of Records on Drugs and Toxins

Action Requested:

1. None. This memorandum is for your information.

Background:

2. At your request, we looked into the destruction of Agency records related to drugs and toxins. We limited our investigation to avoid interfering with other ongoing investigations of this matter, including that of the FBI. We held discussions with several people in the DD/S&T, Records Center, and Archives and reviewed a number of OTS files. Our findings and conclusions follow.

Summary Conclusions:

3. MKULTRA Records: This was an umbrella project for funding sensitive TSD activities including research into methods for controlling human behavior:

-- No drug-related MKULTRA files were turned up during our investigation.

-- A number of documents concerning the destruction of MKULTRA drug records are attached at Tab A. In general, they show that the records were destroyed on the instruction of Dr. Sidney Gottlieb, then Chief, TSD, on 31 January 1973. Both Branch files and records retrieved from Archives were destroyed.

-- Tab A also contains statements by Messrs. [redacted] of OTS. These statements indicate that the destruction of MKULTRA drug files was ordered by Mr. Helms.

Introduction

INTRODUCTION

In Jan. '96, I bound the first copies of *Vol. 2 The Illuminati Formula Used to Create an Undetectable Total Mind-Controlled Slave.* Soon hundreds of people in the United States and other countries were reading this book, and were expressing their appreciation and praise for the work. Some also contributed more details about the Illuminati's mind-control. It was also gratifying that the *Illustrated Guidebook to Monarch Mind-control*, which contains my co-author's art work done under programming, was translated and sold this year ('96) as a paperback in Japan. The word is getting out, and people with ears to hear are grateful.

The original goal was to write the Vol. 2 book to be about 300 pages long, but it spilled into 500 pages. At 500 pages, it was brought to a grinding halt. In this DEEPER INSIGHTS book, I bring you more profounder mysteries of the Illuminati's mind-control abilities. These deeper insights were some items left out of the Vol. 2 due to space, as well as some things that have been found out since the Vol. 2 book was written.

Those who were intrigued by the Vol. 2, and cut their teeth on the subject of mind-control via my writings over the past 5 years, will enjoy this further expose of the deeper secrets of Illuminati mind-control. For instance, scattered in several sections including Chapter 3 is a great deal about the base programs which are laid in using controlled LSD trips in sensory deprivation tanks. Another exciting set of new revelations are Cisco's information on the core, and her revelations giving the chronology of layering in the mind-control programming. I have also done a great deal of research into Cranial manipulation (see Chapter 8), which has been an extremely well-hidden mind-control secret known only to a few select people worldwide. Another area of intense research has been to expose the role Disney played in mind-control. Although other writers have superficially touched on implants, nanobots, thought-transfer, soul entrapment and other secret technologies, I decided to provide many details to expose these new technologies that are being used in conjunction with the dissociative programmed multiplicity. Beside learning countless programming secrets, the reader will take another quantum leap into understanding what has been going on in this mixed-up world. **If life is a riddle, then this book contains many answers to the riddle of life.**

During the summer of 1996, I had the privilege to speak on mind-control to audiences in 12 major American cities, as well talk on over 50 radio stations. The response was encouraging. People are beginning to wake up, and are hungry to learn the truth about how the movers and shakers of this world have developed sophisticated methods to make children into undetectable Illuminati robots (from the cradle to the satanic throne), as well as their extensive abilities to control the common person's thinking from the cradle to the grave.

When Christ asked the question, will I find faith when I return? **it was a serious question**. We no longer live in a situation where we can depend upon our mind and our thoughts actually being our own. Our minds are under a constant assault and manipulation by those who control things. No one is exempt. Fortunately, there are still some rational thinking humans, who can challenge and expose their plans for total control over the minds of the entire human race. I, as a minister & researcher, along with the victims represented by Cisco Wheeler and others, can't expose this mind control on our own. We need the help of others. Will you help us get the message out about the New World Order's/the Illuminati's mind control?

Cisco has consulted with me, and we decided to make two continuations. The continuation of the Illustrated guidebook would be authored by her, and the continuation of the Vol. 2 book would be carried out by yours truly, Fritz Springmeier. We have combined these two continuations into this book called for short DEEPER INSIGHTS into the Illuminati Mind Control Formula.

This volume is meant to be an extension of the previous volumes. IF YOU HAVE NOT READ the previous book entitled *Vol. 2 The Illuminati Formula used to create an Undetectable Total Mind Controlled Slave*, THEN you are not really prepared to understand this material.

In my previous books, I have shown how the intelligence agencies are simply prostitutes and fronts of the Illuminati. The Illuminati always "sterilize" their activities, so their actions can't be identified in the flurry of secret intelligence activities.

Recently, at one conference on mind-control, victims of government mind-control were told that their stories were not welcome because the conference was on "cult" mind-control. Dear reader, the intelligence agencies are cults, and not only that, but they have a dark satanic side to them, which not only brands them as cults, but "occult cults."

Witchcraft and Freemasonry refer to themselves as "the Craft"; how appropriate it was for Allen Dulles, DCI-head of the CIA, to entitle his book *"The Craft of Intelligence"*. How appropriate it was that people within the CIA referred to their top management as the Knights Templars.

As the *Vol. 2 Formula* book indicated, the intelligence agencies which work for the Illuminati have kept only the minimum of records, and the records they do keep are out of reach of people like you and I.

But that doesn't mean that the researcher like myself can't work backwards. One of the side effects of the traumas that create multiple-personalities (DID) is that sadistic or criminal alters are often formed, and with careful research the historical record of criminals with multiple personalities can be traced back into history. The Illuminati have created **trained**-multiples for centuries, but insiders say that **programmed** DID (MPD) was developed in the Nazi concentration camps. The worldwide Illuminati planned the camps with the goal to determine what programs would work on children, and used the cover story of Nazi racial hatred to hide the real purpose of the camps--mind-control experiments which used large numbers of children traumatized by their separation from their parents.

With today's sophisticated programming and structuring of MPD worlds, these evil alters can be controlled better than in the past, and yet we still have serial killers like Wayne Cox, and serial rapists like William Stanley Milligan, who were programmed multiples stalking our streets. Kenneth Biani, the LA Hillside strangler who killed 9 people was diagnosed as a multiple, but claimed he had faked the disorder. Thomas W. Piper in Boston in the 1870s, and Paul Miskamen, one hundred years later in California, are examples of multiples who had an alter capable of murder and another alter who was a good Christian. One of the best disinformation campaigns of the Illuminati, is to make people think programmed-multiples are just for espionage, prostitution and assassination. They have taken over our pulpits, like the Illuminati programmed multiple Jimmy Swaggart, and they have taken over our political offices, like Al Gore, and our universities. Even with the elite's secrecy intact via their control of libraries, publishing houses, and newspapers, the record still shows the traces of the Illuminati's history of creating controlled multiple personalities.

The historical record of criminals with multiple personalities includes the Illuminati coke multimillionaire Harry K. Thaw. He was one of the elite of society, who had charming sophisticated front alters, and sadistic deeper alters. His position prevented him from being convicted of a murder he committed in public on June 25, 1906. However, another multiple Henry Spencer, who didn't have such clout was hanged after killing Allison Rexroat in 1914. Another multiple William Heirens, who murdered two women in the '40's, had one of his front alters write in the mirror after a murder, "For heaven's sake, catch me before I kill more, I cannot control myself." He had an alter George who was doing the murders.

The story doesn't stop with evidence of physical murders, but includes the vast numbers of spiritual deaths that have resulted from the spiritual manipulation of the masses via programmed multiples.

Programmed multiples have been great for carrying out religious deceptions. Many of the great spiritist mediums were multiples. In the 1920's, Patience Worth was a famous name of an author. Patience was an alter of Mrs. John Curran. As a child Mrs. Curran had played the piano in her uncle's Missouri Ozark church when young and then she later grew up to be a famous medium and writer. A Dr. Charles E. Cory investigated her multiple-personality disorder. He discovered that her author alter was much more intelligent than the front alter who did the housekeeping & normally held the body. The occult world has manipulated MPD to manufacture validation for their theories of reincarnation, spiritism etc. Where once the Word of God was accepted as truth by society as a whole, now society questions whether there is such a thing as truth.

When it has come to finding out about mind control from the first level of perpetrators, the government, there have been a number of manufactured (bogus), sanitized and original CIA documents released to the public under the nearly worthless Freedom of Information act. The Freedom of Information Act has been manipulated to lead people to think that the public has access to secrets.

A letter of inquiry in 1995 requesting declassified documents on Mind Control, Monarch, MK Ultra, Artichoke and Blue Bird got the following response from the CIA, "...as you might expect, we have already conducted broad-ranging and exhaustive searches and reviews on every conceivable aspect of human behavior, including mind control and brainwashing, and have located and released 11, 336 pages of material on the general subject of human behavior studies under MKULTRA. Most of the 11, 336 pages of this previously released material are very limited in scope and consist primarily of financial records." (quote from a CIA letter of response in answer to a request for declassified mind-control information.)

Yes, and long-story-short even those 11,336 pages only got released due to a mistake.

In one CIA document pertaining to mind control released under the Freedom of Information act, which is a memorandum dated 20 Oct. 1975 to the Director of Central Intelligence from the Inspector General Donald F. Chamberlain, the Inspector General states, "From his investigation of the project [MKNAOMI], Dr. Stevens has concluded that gaps in the files are the result of a conscious policy on the part of those involved to keep very little paper on the project from its inception in 1952 to its demise in 1970. People formerly connected with the project interviewed by Dr. Stevens asserted that the practice of keeping little or no record of the activity was standard MKNAOMI procedure."

Philip Agee, who wrote an expose of the CIA entitled *Inside The Company: CIA Diary* (Toronto, Can.: Bantam Books, 1975), said that as an employee of the CIA "You get so used to lying that after a while it's hard to remember what the truth is."

Philip Agee writes, "The life of a CIA operations officer...There is not much time to think about the results of your actions and, if you try to do it well, the job of operations officer calls for dedication to the point of obsession. But it's a schizophrenic sort of situation. You have too many secrets, you can't relax with outsiders. Sometimes an operative uses several identities at once. If somebody asks you a simple question, "What did you do over the weekend?" your mind goes Click! Who does he think I am? What would the guy he *thinks* I am be doing over the weekend? You get so used to lying that after a while it's hard to remember what the truth is. When I [Philip] joined the CIA I signed the secrecy agreement...[now] I may have violated that agreement. **I believe it is worse to stay silent, that the [security] agreement itself was immoral."** [bold added to quote]

On Nov. 15, 1996, DCI Deutsch of the CIA paraded himself and some politicians before a public meeting in south L.A. (broadcast on C-Span) and told the people the CIA would investigate allegations that the CIA had run drugs. One man asked CIA Director Deutsch, "Everyone knows that the CIA was running drugs in Vietnam from the Golden Triangle, and that they have continued doing it to today, and you want to come here to south L.A. and pretend to us that this hasn't happened when everyone knows it did. Are you crazy?" Deutsch couldn't help but show a revealing smile. (The above quoted question was taken from C-Span's broadcast & is a closely paraphrased version.)

One of my questions to Deutsch would be, "When a drug addict's life gets out of control, he'll go into denial, and he'll steal from everyone in his life, including his own mother, and live a life of lies, and when an intelligence agency gets out of control, they are like an addicted person, they stay in total denial and keep secretly hurting everyone in sight, WHAT can and should the people do to get an out-of-control intelligence agency to stop its power addiction?

Unfortunately, the problem with power addiction, addiction to lying & deception, and drug addiction began centuries before the CIA within the Illuminati families that started the CIA. The CIA is simply reflecting the problems of its parent.

Their addiction to lying keeps the common gullible man in public ignorant. Their total mind-controlled slaves are used extensively for disinformation campaigns, and are helpful to disseminate WHITE, GREY, & BLACK propaganda for the New World Order's Network. To coordinate their lies requires a special intelligence group that keeps meticulous records of the disinformation that has been disseminated, so that they don't get mixed up in their lies.

It is extremely rare to get the truth out of the perpetrators, the mind-control programmers. Recently, on television a movie portrayed a victim of trauma-based mind control trying to get one of her programmers, who she'd taken prisoner, to confess to what he'd done. He defied her, and did all he could to make her think her memory was her imagination. It was an excellent portrayal of how hard it is to get the truth out of the perpetrators.

The sadistic programmers have exercised their power for decades in secrecy. They have understood the implications of their power for decades. However, the implications of this undetectable mind-control are staggering, actually overwhelming and beyond the man in the street's ability to comprehend. It means every organization can be infiltrated ("penetrated" as they say), and used as a front or controlled. It means nothing is as it appears. It means that Russia can hate America on the surface, and be working hand in glove on the secret level. It means every one of the millions of new immigrants from Russia, China and Eastern Europe into the U.S. is a potential time bomb. It means much of what has been blamed on Christians has had its origin in Satan. Satanic programming has seriously damaged the reputation of Christians. The programmers are major players in how the world's events unfold, while they receive absolutely no attention. These men are illegitimate rulers of the world. They have never gained from the common man the right to rule. Therefore they rule through puppets who owe their total allegiance to their mind-control masters. They are rapidly trying to establish legitimacy for themselves, and plan to

Preparation

The hidden World Order government that increasingly controls our lives operates through many clandestine operations and groups. What you see is not what you get. In order to maintain total secrecy of such a vast scale of operations, they use millions of mind-controlled slaves world-wide as well as numerous willing servants who out of raw terror will not buck the system. On the surface, EPIC is just another secret military unit. The patch below belongs to the EPIC unit, a clandestine unit which is doing the real banking for part of Mexico, much of the U.S. and part of Canada. This agency (El Paso Intelligence Center--EPIC) is obviously not a U.S. jurisdictional agency, but operates under FINCEN (Financial Crimes Enforcement Network- as in crimes against Big Brother). This unit is stationed at Ft. Bliss, which contains Army & Air Force units. American elections are rigged, and there is no longer a government of the people, for the people and by the people (if there ever was one). The American people are kept in place because they think they elected the government that rules them. Mind-control is pervasive and is being used not just to create sexual slaves, or banking employees, but to control society at all levels. Will we continue to allow a shadow government to rule us? Will we continue to let them tell us that these things have to be secret in the interest of "national security", when in reality they are only in the interest of NATIONAL SLAVERY?

EL PASO INTELLIGENCE CENTER
EPIC

EPIC is also involved with the NAFTA machinations, many of which were done with the help of mind-controlled slaves. Within the NAFTA agreement was the U.S./Mexico Border XXI Framework Document, (based on the La Paz Agreement signed in '83) which in effect ends American & Mexican sovereignity over all land within 52.5 miles of the border. Special international agencies have been created to regulate the various environmental and legal needs of the Border XXI region, as the border is dissolved into a border region. The U.S./Mex. Border XXI document created the Border Cooperation Project & the North American Development Bank. The World Bank will also provide financing, and some funds will come from Mexico. EPIC is well situated in the approx. geographic center of this border region.

culminate their plans to gain legitimacy with the rule of the AntiChrist, who will rule based on mass-produced myths and fantasies that the Illuminati will articulate to the imaginations of millions of slaves worldwide. They have already begun to market the AntiChrist and his reign to the world. The campaign for the acceptance of homosexuality is just one part of this marketing effort. They are also skillfully justifying their AntiChrist's rule, by creating problems that only his superior management abilities and leadership skills will be able to deal with.

The strength of New World Order and the AntiChrist's rule is the total and undetectable mind-control that is being carried out on a mass scale to little children and people who fit specific profiles. According to a reliable deprogrammed source: Adults, who have the following profile are subjected to mind-control. This profile is:

- alone without a support system of family or friends.
- an I.Q. above 120.
- good hypnotic candidate
- has other attributes worthwhile to exploit

More about this will be discussed in Chapter 1, where an entire overview of how the intelligence agencies take adults and program them will be given.

Adults who are used by the intelligence agencies for WET OPS or one-time one way missions are programmed in stages. These stages are designated levels 1-5. Level 4 is where these slaves begin to resemble the total mind-controlled slaves of the Illuminati who have been subjected to mind-control since they were defenseless babies.

The men involved in the programming of little defenseless children are skilled. They have been earned their jobs on the basis of a dog-eat-dog environment. They are ruthless. They operate out a hidden zone, which I will call the twilight zone of believability. Anyone who tries to expose what they are doing, must write about things that are outside of that box of things commonly believed in. It is as they intentionally gauge what is believable and then step outside of that zone in which to operate.

These ruthless programmers have egos which think they are god-men. Somewhere deep in their minds, they inwardly know they are worms. There is a part of themselves deep down that knows the truth, but Satan has buried that so deep, that they cannot face the reality of who they are. They seek eternal life by stealing the life force of innocent victims. They know that their father is Satan. They are victims of Satan. Where does one draw the line between who is a victim and who is an abuser? There is no line. The word of God indicates that God has turned many of these men over to Satan due to their wicked minds. It's sad to think that some of these men are dependant on Satan for spiritual life.

Many of the slaves still have a spark of reality and a spirit that cries for freedom. They have ears to hear the truth, should it come their way. This book is written for those who love the truth and love the liberty that Almighty God has given us to seek and to love the truth for ourselves.

Although only a minority of the people today have Total Mind-Control, the Illuminati are attempting to confuse and manipulate everyone. One of their favorite tactics to scare people with is the ambiguous bogeyman of national security. They constantly use their spin-doctors to whip up fear, so that the public will gladly surrender their freedom to protect "national security". Unfortunately, or ironically, the very concept of "national security" is being used as a cover for the Illuminati to steal every last vestige of freedom left to the American people. American tax-dollars support secret conferences such as the classified conference sponsored by Los Alamos on Nov. 16-17, 1993 where the Applied Physics Lab of John Hopkins University taught our military about "non-lethal" weapons. The satanist/ ex-Green Beret Dr. John Alexander, now head of the Los Alamos National Lab, gave one of the opening talks on 11/16/93. The next day, the military men gave talks on the technology involved in controlling people's minds electronically via both implants and energy beamed at them. Dr. Dave Morgan, of Lockhead Sanders also gave a specific talk on their "syntel"--synthetic voices they place in the heads of victims with telemetry to auditory implants. You will read more on their implants in chapter 5.

The battle for the freedom of the human mind must be fought now. The battle gets increasingly difficult, but we must fight it whether we win or lose, for the human spirit and the human mind was not created by God for slavery to Satan and his AntiChrist. Over and over, the truth of Jesus' words still shine forth, "And you shall know the truth and the truth shall set you free." Let us realize that the man who said those eternally powerful words also said, "I am the way, the truth, and the life." For His light shone in darkness, "and the darkness has not overcome it."

If those of us who still have free minds must die--then let us die for the TRUTH, that the Truth in Christ Jesus shall live.

CHAPTER 1.
SCIENCE NO. 1 - SELECTION & PREPARATION OF THE VICTIM

The average person who has been spoon-fed what he knows from the controlled establishment (the establishment's news, churches, and schools) is overwhelmed and in denial that mind-control can be happening. Who would want to carry out mind-control?

One category are those groups who use the Cabala. Hasidic Judaism, Freemasonry, and Witchcraft are all based on the Cabala. Llewellyn's magazine *New Worlds of Mind and Spirit* (a prominent witchcraft magazine) in their June/July '94 issue state on page 56, "The golem of Prague is perhaps the most famous example of 'practical cabala'- the use of cabala for magical cabala." Golem are mind-controlled beings. There are several cabalistic and witchcraft written references that point out that the creation of mind-controlled zombies (golem) was the highest goal of the cabala. Albert Pike, perhaps the most important Freemason of all times, clearly stated as the head of Freemasons worldwide that Freemasonry is based on the Cabala.

A cabalistic psychiatrist in *Psychoanalysis Review*, '44, issue 31, p. 180 wrote, "Victory over the world would be secured by any man who possessed the Shem...[We shall control the world (words to this effect)]...when we shall attain the consciousness of the Shem within us and will control the power of the Golem to regenerate the world." [The Golem are energized by the magic Tetragrammaton, which the Jehovah's W.s emphasize so much.]

In *The Worldwide Weekly, Defense News* of 3/20-26/95, the *Defense News* an official military paper indicated that the navy was attempting to produce an "Army of Zombies".

The *Defense News* stated:

> The research, called Hippocampal Neuron Patterning, grows live neurons on computer chips, William Tolles, the recently retired associate director of research at the Naval Research Lab, said March 15. This technology that alters neurons could potentially be used on people to create zombie armies, Lawrence Korb, a senior fellow at the Brookings Institution, said March 16....The research has captured the attention of the U.S. Intelligence community.

I have taken the space to give you the reader a paper trail that shows that YES INDEED, there are groups of people that desire human zombies. So where do they select their candidates for their zombie creating programs? That's what this chapter will deal with. You'll have to go to some of my other books to learn how these mind-control groups all interconnect.

BLOODLINES

The previous book by this author *The Top 13 Illuminati Bloodlines* was intended to help people begin to understand the major role bloodlines play within the Illuminati. When this author was on speaking circuit, he ran into a number of researchers who had researched the New World Order and the Illuminati for years and not realized the significance of the bloodlines.

In tracking the bloodlines, it became apparent that the European Illuminati bloodlines were trying to integrate some of the American Indian bloodlines into their own bloodlines. Why? They wanted the occult power that these bloodlines contributed. And it seems that not only do generational spirits help in many ways, but there are reasons to believe that the Aborigines of Australia, the Bushmen of the Kalahari, and some of the American Indian tribes such as the Cherokee have high paranormal abilities in addition to their demonic spiritual abilities. Some believe that the psi-gene was valuable for the survival of primitive hunter tribes, while tribes who went into agriculture lost some of the power of the primary and secondary psi-genes since natural selection would not have encouraged psi-genes in agricultural based societies. The primary psi-genes are thought by some to be some genetic coding which enhances proteins to be better biophysical batteries, storage units, and other roles. The secondary genetic psi- coding are thought to be codes for creating richer and higher-functioning neural pathways, and neural capabilities. Whether this was true, if the Illuminati believed it was true, it could account for their penchant for mixing in American Indian blood with their elite "blue blood."

BREEDING GOOD SUBJECTS for HYPNOSIS-hypnosis as it relates to selection & preparation of the victim.

Hypnosis and programming work well in the alpha state of the mind. This is why the child is traumatized even in the womb, so that it will naturally be in that alpha state even before birth.

The man in the street may think that the hypnotist looks for weak-willed subjects, however the mind-control programmers and professional stage hypnotists say that a "fighter", "a determined forceful personality" are the types they search for to have a successful hypnotic session. Weak-willed persons are usually incapable of seriously concentrating for the successful pursuance of any idea, and usually are the worst subjects. Intelligence is often helpful, and (as stated in the first volume) the ability to be creative is extremely important to the programmers. An extremely important factor for the subject of mind-control to have is the "emotional drive to pursue to its successful completion a given objective." (McGill, Ormond. Professional Stage Hypnotism. pp. 87-88.)

One reason the programmers like to work with children who were preemies is that they are fighters. Another reason the programmers like to work with intelligent children, and not waste time trying to program lower-than-average intelligent children, is that they are easier to hypnotize.

This does not mean that only people who appear intelligent are programmed. During the programming process, many of the victims are programmed to appear stupid to others and to themselves. Only the master (and those who work with him) are to use the full potential of the victim. The victims' talents are stolen from them. An intelligent child, who comes from an intelligent family, and who is programmed with total mind-control may grow up into adulthood thinking he or she is of average or below average intelligence.

GENETICS

Pres. Theodore Roosevelt, who was blood related to both President Martin Van Buren and to Franklin Delano Roosevelt, is on record, "Some day we will realize that the prime duty, the inescapable duty of the good citizens of the right type is to leave his or her blood behind him in the world; and that we have no business to permit the perpetuation of citizens of the wrong type....The problem cannot be met unless we give full consideration to the immense influence of heredity....I wish very much that the wrong people could be prevented entirely from breeding; and when the evil nature of these people is sufficiently flagrant, this should be done....The emphasis should be laid on getting desirable people to breed."

Many of the people within the Illuminati bloodlines have made statements like this, and have done all they could to leave many secret offspring behind, because these elite bloodlines have felt they were the chosen to lead humanity. Your ancient aristocratic families such as the Cabots, Lodges & Delanos have been in favor of placing the blame on society's problems on the "bad blood" of the common man. They forget all the evils that have been perpetrated on these common people by the blue blooded aristocratic families that think they are so superior.

For instance, Illuminati kingpin Harriman's wife purchased land at Cold

Springs, NY to promote a eugenics program. She said that being raised around good race horses helped her appreciate good breeding in man.

Eugenics is the philosophy that some humans are genetically superior to others, & that inferior genetic races/individuals should be destroyed.

The first eugenics program started in the United States was by John Humphrey Noyes, the cult leader of communist Oneida communities. John Humphrey Noyes' father was a Vermont Congressman, and his mother was a relative of Rutherford B. Hayes, the 19th U.S. President. His family was from the burned out district, from Putney, Vermont. In 1833, Yale granted him a license to preach. Noyes began created his communist communities around 1836, and he dictated all their major decisions, including their group sex and eugenics policies.

In 1869, John H. Noyes selected 53 women and 38 men to be the only ones in his communities allowed to produce children. The goal was to perfect the genetics of the community by only allowing well bred children. This is believed to be the first eugenics program.

All members of the community were encouraged to have sex with everyone else & not to form emotional attachments around it. However, they were not to have procreative sex.

The Oneida group can clearly be tied in with European occult groups that tie in with the Illuminati. The Oneida group used central committees and social control through mutual criticism to keep their members in line. Their social control methods were extremely effective. Years later, Chinese communism began using these innovations of Noyes'.

Charles Guiteau, who assassinated Pres. Garfield, was a member of Noyes' Oneida community. He became a member because his father, a disciple of Noyes, took him there as a boy. Charles stated that at the Noyes' community, he came under the influence of Noyes and "I was unable to get away from that influence...A man was just as isolated from the world as if he were confined in state's prison or lunatic asylum. I suffered greatly in mind and body and spirits during incarceration in that community." He claimed he had never gotten free of the control that began when he entered the Oneida community. In 1880, he began hanging around the Republican Party's NY HQ. This was a very strange thing, because Charles Guiteau had never had any interest in politics his entire life. He bought a pistol from a "gentleman", and then shot President Garfield. Knowing that Illuminati mind-control was already taking place at this time, certainly makes this assassination an area for further study.

John Noyes had his groups conducting seances and carrying out initiation rites. He personally sexually initiated the girl children of his communities at these rites. In June, 1879, when the authorities came to arrest him for mass rape of little girls, he fled to British Canada, where the British government gave him asylum. After Noyes skipped the country, the community was incorporated as a joint-stock corporation called Oneida Ltd., which later burned a large amount of the personal records and the diaries of the members to keep their sexual activities forever secret.

It's interesting to note, that long before 1879, in June, 1847, Noyes' had treated a woman Harriet Hall for tuberculosis & dropsy by holding a seance ritual and sexually sealing the spiritual cure with intercourse with the woman. After the woman's husband reported this, a grand jury indicted Noyes. He skipped bail and an almost sure conviction by fleeing to New York. People have wondered how he managed to practice his odd sexual behaviors for years and never get into trouble with authorities.

Margaret Sanger, an early feminist, was also an advocate of eugenics. In their zeal to make her a hero, modern feminists have neglected to notice this side of her. Sanger advocated sterilization of the feeble-minded by the government.

This all sounded good at the turn of the century before legitimate research showed that genetics played only a partial role in how people turned out, and that environment and choices by individuals also played just as big of a role in how people turned out. Many of the people who were sterilized under eugenic laws were realized to have been victims of pseudo-science and hysteria. The Great Depression leveled many proud and haughty people down to the same level as the common people they had sneered down upon. Rich and poor found themselves in bread lines. The financial elite and the academic elite were humbled and the eugenics racial theories in the U.S. largely disappeared. Finally, H.J. Muller, a famous and respected geneticist, gave an outstanding and courageous speech to the Eugenics Society in NY in 1932 where he lambasted the eugenicists for using false better-breeding theories to rationalize the criminal behavior of the elite. The Illuminati had suffered a temporary setback in legitimizing their criminal rule over humanity.

In recent years, the Illuminati's evil ideas about superior and inferior blood lines are being given more credence again. The National Institute of Health funded a $1.7 million study at the University of Hawaii's Behavioral Biology Lab to get solid information on how genetics relates to intelligence so that "informed decisions" about population control can be made in the future.

Almost every state has now adopted genetic screening of new-born babies in the U.S.

While the Illuminati may not be able to fully implement their superior blood theories in society in general, they have been secretly working feverishly in labs and in secret rituals around the world to redesign mankind to their preferences. Many Illum. members are the end result of carefully monitored genetic engineering. They want to manufacture the future via control over human genetics.

Many years ago, the first step in the Illuminati genetic program was the creation of specifications. When these specs, these criteria, were set as goals, they then worked to realize them. They have been working at them, and refining the results as they continue to work toward specific goals. They have sought the perfect assassin. They have sought the perfect slave. They have sought the perfect baseball player and golf player. They have sought the perfect soldier. The borders between these manufactured Illuminati total mind-control slaves and an industrial robot are fast becoming blurred. The end of the human race as we know it, and civilization as we know it, is rapidly approaching.

Via molecular biology and genetics, humanoids that are vastly different from normal humans have been created in secret underground installations. They have been modifying humans to design para-humans, and then applying mind-control to them. The Illuminati is not only controlling humanity, but under their control redesigning it.

Lest anyone forget, the descendants of John Noyes' Oneida Colony, and the genetic model wonder children born in Nazi Germany are still around. According to one source, the Nazi's produced numerous offspring of Hitler which were secretly taken to many countries and then later reassembled in certain special towns. These children received mind-control as well as being specially endowed with as many special traits as the Nazi's could give them. If this is true, it could have some significance in the future.

Illuminati kingpins are also able to store their semen via cryogenics for all kinds of scenarios. Frozen sperm can be used to create a son after the father had died. Should an Illuminati kingpin want to impregnate his grand-daughter 10 years after his death, it would be possible. On the flip side, single women can choose semen from sperm banks. Another twist that the Illuminati have taken advantage of is taking the fertilized egg of one set of parents and implanting it into a brooder slave to raise the child as a surrogate mother.

It should also be mentioned that ex-Illuminati members have explained how planned births are coincided to have the child be born on particular special occult dates. (The Illuminati have a intense lifestyle of secrecy, so most of their members do not carry the last name of the bloodline they belong to. Some members are given significant occult names for their legal name, and others use legal names which have no significance. Having a legal occult-significant name is not essential, because the alter system will receive a secret Illuminati occult name.)

The bottom line is that bloodlines, genetics and genetic engineering is playing a role in the selection process of who is programmed a certain way. Also the Illuminati has particular research goals that have been structured into their 20 year, 30 year and 50 year plans. Case histories show that a child will receive education and programming in order to participate in secret research projects years down the road. Some of today's marked children are invariably being quietly educated to help with future research goals.

As might be suspected the inbreeding within the secret Illuminati bloodlines and their secret satanic lifestyles take their genetic toll. How do the Illuminati get rid of their leftovers, the children their bloodlines have that aren't going to amount to a great deal? In terms of mind-control, the male children that are the programming leftovers, the ones that are not really fit to make into politicians, doctors and lawyers, will be made into stalkers. According to an ex-Illuminati programmer, who worked in this area of programming, the ratio of men to women that are programmed for stalking is about 90% to 10%.

Why discuss how the Illuminati makes stalkers? First, many people doubt that there is a controlled conspiracy by the Illuminati to control the world, because in their limited understanding they think that there are too many uncontrollable people around for the world to be controlled. They don't realize that a large share of those crazy people were intentionally created by the Illuminati. The Illuminati programmers and handlers during the 40's through the 60's, according to insiders, had specific quotas on how many people to have go crazy so that the mental institutions (which were used for programming) could maintain their government financing.

Readers, who have followed this author's lectures, have heard him explain how a. the Illuminati make a decision to "solve" a problem they have created, then b. get the government and private groups to study the problem for years so that eventually it looks like their (secretly preplanned) decision is the best course of action for the country, and then c. their lackey's in the political process implement the decision supposedly for the "good of the people". After 30 years of good financing for the mental institutions so they could do their assigned task of programming hundreds of thousands of people with tasks for the NWO, the Illuminati then set things up so that the mental institutions dumped their populations out onto the streets, where they can carry out the missions they had been programmed to carry out. They next step was to privatize the prisons, which are being used for mind-control (not to mention hard-core porn of women victims in prisons).

The Illuminati's long range plans for mind-control included that they would turn over the prisons to people like the Illuminati's Order of the Skull & Bone's Wackenhut Services, Inc., Coral Gables, FL, (ph. no. 305-666-5656), and the Illuminati's GE Government Operations, Cherry Hill, NJ under James Becker at 609-486-5042. In the 18 page Heritage Foundation's study of prison needs entitled "A Guide To Prison Privatization" (done on May 28, 1988, Wash. D.C.), the Heritage Foundations gives all the correct Illuminati answers to the question of privatization of prisons, including listing the following "corporations that provide prison services...Behavioral Systems SW, Inc.,... Eckerd Family Youth Alternatives, Inc.,...GE Government Operations, Cherry Hill, NJ...Wackenhut." All groups that this author's research indicates are Illuminati and involved with mind-control.

An example of several studies that this author has obtained that were done to show us that privatization of prisons is the best answer to our problems is *The Development, Present Status, and Future Potential of Correctional Privatization in America* by Charles W. Thomas, Prof. of Criminology & Dir. of Private Corrections Project; Charles H. Logan, Prof. of Sociology, Univ. of Conn., & Visiting Fellow, Fed. Bureau of Prisons. This paper was done May 1991.

Our government also got into the act and the GAO wrote up a govt. report in Feb. 1991 stating that the government could save money by privatizing prisons.

The Illuminati need their people seeded at all levels of society, at the gutter level as well as in palaces. This is where the stalkers, their leftover children used for programming are handy. Many of these stalkers had secret Illuminati lineages that are hidden via adoption. As one ex-Illuminati member said, "They are the weak links." The Illuminati must have dependable people everywhere, even in the gutter and prisons.

Why create stalkers? There are a long list of reasons. It is somewhat difficult to explain unless readers are already familiar with the bigger picture. People, who have sat in on Illuminati meetings where their 20, 30, and 50 year plans were discussed, will explain how the Illuminati wanted to break down the family structures and bring violence into the schools. This is Ordo ab chaos. However, the schools had rules to protect themselves from dangerous violent activity done by children, so they had to create violence in the streets, to get violence into the schools by the backdoor. Stalkers were part of the program to create violence.

Another purpose stalkers serve for the Illuminati is that they make excellent spies if they get attached to someone. They will find out everything they can about that person. Their minds will creatively invent all kinds of ways to get information about their fixation.

How does the Illuminati program a child to become a stalker? They have the programming techniques to create a stalker down to a fine science. In short, it consists of 1. they bond the child extremely close to its mother or a woman as it grows up. This creates a side-effect of homosexuality. The mental mechanics of this side-effect are that the male has an unmet need for men. The Illuminati will manipulate this latent homosexuality but not allow its expression. They want to continue to strengthen the apron strings that attach the child to the mother image. Meanwhile they utterly destroy all self-respect and self-image of the child. It is totally disgraced so that its only identity is its identity with its mother figure. The child can not stand on its own two feet without the support of the mother-figure. When the boy approaches puberty, they are watched very closely by the Illuminati, be that in a military school or tightly controlled cult family setting, etc. They do not want the apron strings to ever be cut. They want them to remain dependent when they would naturally become independent. They want to insure that the young boy doesn't develop a sense of who they are. The victim of stalker programming will never emotionally grow out of that age of about 11-13 when boys would sever the ties to their mother. They stop growing emotionally at about age 12. This is all carefully crafted by the Illuminati. These young men never understand themselves or their programming. They don't understand the impulses and uncontrollable drives that hit them. They can't get off their programming merry-go-round, because it is rooted in the first brain, their maternal instincts, the "reptilian brain" which has no conscience. Their stalking of their mother figure is a survival instinct that they don't understand. They make good spies. They will persist in tracking and stalking a victim, until they break down the victim's walls of privacy by their sheer tenacity, persistence, and force of will.

This is because it is a survival instinct that has been harnessed by the Illuminati programmer. Because this programming is laid in at the reptilian first brain level, these stalkers can be violent without a higher brain conscience, and their minds will manufacture some justification to protect this survival need to stalk. The mind protects itself, so they have a strong denial system. Every time someone "rejects" them, it triggers their programming. Because they are driven by their reptilian first brain (the various brains are explained later in this book) they only think in the here-and-now, long-term project bore them, they don't have the stick-to-itiveness needed for many jobs, except their eternal quest for an identity with the mother-figure they stalk.

TRAINING THE UNBORN CHILD

The Illuminati in its typical schizophrenic way, has not neglected the opportunities to begin the programming process in the womb. The scientific research in this area has been kept quiet, but from an ex-Illuminati programmer it is clear that they are aware of much more about the unborn child in the womb and its thinking processes than the public knows about.

I was privileged to read the excellent book *The Secret Life of the Unborn Child* by Thomas Verny, M.D. with John Kelly. This book is written from a loving Christian viewpoint and incorporates scientific research about the thinking of unborn children. Interestingly, Verny studied research into the mind of the fetus from researchers at the Max Plank Institute, Munich, Germany, from the Esalen Institute, Big Sur, CA, from the Center for Research on Birth and Human Development, Berkeley, CA which are all institutions involved in mind-control and mind-control research.

Just one example of the learning abilities of the unborn child, an autistic child remembered the english her French speaking mother was around during work while the child was in the womb.

Verny writes, "The fetus can see, hear, experience, taste and, on a primitive level, even learn in utero (that is, in the uterus--before birth). Most importantly, he can feel--not with an adult's sophistication, but feel nonetheless." (p. 12)

Research has clearly showed that the fetus can think and is shaping its (his or her) personality while in the womb. Maternal thoughts, feelings, actions, and fears all reach the child in the womb and affect the child. The maternal bonding with the child while in the womb is also critical.

Researchers have been unable to pinpoint when a baby in the womb begins to think, and have a consciousness, but some theorize that it goes back clear to the beginning of conception. One study taught fetus babies to kick on the cue of a vibration. The researchers have determined that the unborn child hears what is being said around it, and is beginning to associate it language skills around the voices it hears. The unborn child hears and reacts differently to different music played. Soothing words and soothing music will calm a fetus. One conductor remembered into his adult years, the cello music that had only been played while he was an unborn child.

According to excellent research, the start of awareness is clearly evidenced between the 28th and 32nd week. At that point, the brain's neural circuits are just as advanced as a newborns. This is why the Illuminati can get away with causing so many preemie births to enhance dissociative abilities. From the 32nd week on the child shows that it carries out REM sleep. It is also interesting the children, teenagers and adults have widely divergent sleep patterns but the time spent in REM sleep stays constant.

Researchers have been able to trace memories going back to the sixth month of pregnancy. In other words, from the sixth month of pregnancy onward, some of what the unborn child learns will be remembered. (See pg. 23 of Varny's *The Secret Life of the Unborn*

Child.) This is why the Illuminati has made a point of having the unborn child hear the voices of people who will play a role in the trauma and programming of the child. The child may already know the hypnotic voice of one of its cult programmers at birth.

Researchers found that by playing a tape of a mother's heartbeat to new-born babies that the babies felt dramatically more secure, and were much healthier and did much better. A child who has been trained to its father's soothing voice in the womb, has been proven to remember it and hear it after birth and to respond to it in a positive way. In fact, the emotionally healthiest children have been found by researchers to have had their father's voice in their life prior to birth.

Unborn children do not like to be poked at. In the eighth week of life, the unborn child is already using his physical abilities to show that he dislikes intensely to be poked. One of the early fetus traumas, that the Illuminati like to carry out is to poke the fetus with a sharp object to make it dissociative in the womb.

By the fourth month, the unborn baby is making facial expressions. Four to eight weeks later they are sensitive to touch, and don't like to be tickled while in the womb. Sometimes children are tickled during medical exams. If cold water is injected into the mother's stomach, the baby intensely dislikes it.

The child can be overwhelmed while in the womb with horrible sounds, bad tastes caused by what the mother eats, being touched in ways that it dislikes, etc. Rock music drives unborn children crazy. Programming drugs that cause particular thinking in the fetus can also be administered. Can one see that the traumatization to cause MPD can easily start in the womb? In fact, with many Illuminati babies, they do create womb splits, and have even started trying to teach Christ to the child while in the womb, to speed up the process of when they will purposefully make the child feel rejected by God and to experience the black communion with Satan.

The foundation of trauma-based total mind-control is fear. A deep spirit of fear cripples a person spiritually & emotionally. The foundation of fear can begin to be layered in while the child is still unborn.

The unborn child has near-sighted seeing. He can detect light shined on his mother's stomach. In fact, the fetus's eyes, which are living in a dark world, will hurt when light is shined onto the mom's stomach.

A long-term unresolved personal stress on the mother will be one of the worst stresses her unborn child has to deal with. Short term stresses don't seem to have the long term side effects that long term stress has. Short term stresses are soon forgotten by the child. Somehow, the love that the mother has for the child is transmitted to the child, and forms a protective shield so to speak for the child to resist traumas and stresses. When the mother is ambivalent (even though outwardly happy) or cool in their emotions, the babies have been proven by researchers to consistently have more physical and emotional problems.

If the Illuminati want to create an effeminate gay man, they can administer progesterone and estrogen to the mother during her pregnancy, and this will influence the development of male children to be effeminate. Certain researchers have been warning about the hormones that are in our daily food because modern techniques of raising cattle and producing milk include giving hormones to the animals.

It is also known that the child's concept of "I" the self starts in the womb. Those children who have had a secure womb feeling have been shown to be more confident with their sexual lives later on in life. While those who were terrified in the womb had a tendency to have sexual problems. The traumas that are induced into some of the babies for programming purposes may have a destabilizing effect on the sexual stability later on in life, and it may be that the programmers take advantage of the unsure destabilized feelings that are a consequence of terror in the womb. Children born from induced labor have a statistically high relationship to sexual sadism, and males typically have masochistic personalities. (See pg. 19 of *The Secret Life of the Unborn Child*). Since certain Illuminati children have their birth's induced to match certain dates of the year, this is one contributing factor as to why Illuminati males, born into bloodlines that have for centuries considered certain birthdates important, have such a high incidence of sadistic tendencies.

Verny believes that C-section babies, due to what happens to babies during the birthing process in contrast to a normal birth, have certain emotional needs that later as adults are expressed as promiscuous lives. Women due to their C-section birth, develop a deep seated desire to be held, and intercourse later becomes the price they have to pay to satisfy this deep-seated need.

COMMON ILLUMINATI WORK WITH TWINS

The Illuminati mask the removal of babies from pregnant mothers with "alien abduction of fetus" cover stories. When twins are in the uterus, it is common for the Illuminati to skillfully take one of them. This is part of why the disappearance rate for a twin baby is 75%. It is so prevalent that it has been given the name "the Vanishing Twin Phenomenon. The Vanishing Twin Phenomenon is well established by statistics. Establishment doctors generally claim that one twin has absorbed the other twin. Some researchers claim that this can not be the real explanation for any part of the birthing process.

Elizabeth Noble in her book *Having Twins*, (Houghton Mifflin, 1990) states, "With increasing use of ultrasound, it has been observed that more multiples are lost in the uterus than previously thought--some studies say as high as 80 percent of twin pregnancies."

Considering that there are still 2 in 75 people born as twins, what a great number of twins would be born if the disappearance rate were not so high.

There are many cases of two heartbeats being detected only hours before the delivery, and yet only one baby being born. Many mothers have been suspicious, but the doctors tell them that the second heartbeat "was only a mistake." The explanations that doctors give for disappearing babies who are never born often do not seem satisfactory.

There are different kinds of twins:

a. There are dizygotic, also called fraternal twins. Two variations of this is when eggs from two consecutive ovarian cycles are separately fertilized, or a single egg divides and each of its halves gets fertilized.

b. There are monozygotic, which are identical, or clones so to speak of each other. Identical twins are always of the same sex. They share the same genes, the same fingerprints, dental characteristics, etc.

c. There are monozygotic mirror twins, which have identical characteristics on opposite sides of their body.

When one twin disappears, the surviving twin will often develop psychological problems around the disappearance, even if the child is never told that they had a twin disappear. The Illuminati believe that the soul of a dead twin goes into the live twin. They consider twins which have two souls very powerful individuals. One doctor, William Baldwin, has written in his book *Spirit Releasement Therapy: A Technique Manual* that he believes that the dead twin astrally attaches its soul to the surviving twin.

Dr. Alice Rose believes that some eating disorders are the result of a twin dying in the womb due to competition for food.

To further complicate things, the Illuminati program their slaves to believe that they have a twin somewhere. Elvis Presley, a Monarch mind-controlled slave, believed he had a twin that communicated with him spiritually. In the *Angel Times* magazine, (Oct. issue), a childhood friend of Elvis states that

Elvis communicated with beings as a child. These being had showed Elvis a vision of dancing, and of people "dressed in white with colors all around."

While it is popular to dismiss the vanishing twin phenomena with superficial medical explanations, or with alien theories, at least of some of the phenomena is the result of the Illuminati's massive system of abuse, where they need babies for sacrifice, experiments and programming.

SELECTION OF ADULT CANDIDATES FOR MIND-CONTROL

There is an ongoing operation within the intelligence agencies to identify adults who would make good candidates for mind-control. For this reason, the CIA set up many years ago chains of weight-loss centers (as well as stop-smoking centers and stop-drinking centers) that help people with weight loss, & breaking drinking & smoking addictions. At these centers, people trained to identify clients with high levels of suggestibility have been identifying for the intelligence agencies, (esp. the CIA) potential mind-control victims. Intelligence assets are located around the country and even outside of the United States. The perpetrators try to look for individuals that come through immigration, who come into county clinics and hospitals, government hospitals, etc. who have the following initial attributes:

a. they are over 120 I.Q.
b. they are alone without a support team of family and friends
c. they do well on their first session where hypnosis is clandestinely perpetrated on the individual
d. they have other attributes that can be exploited to the advantage of the intelligence groups.

If a person is identified at a weight-reduction center (which is a CIA front) as having a weight problem that needs to receive hospital treatment AND they are also highly suggestible, they will be subjected to mind-control while hospitalized.

According to one source, IF the individual, who has been a. spotted, b. singled out and c. placed under hypnosis without their consent, d. looks likes a useful candidate for mind-control to the psychologists and intelligence field officers, THEN a file will be started and they will be placed in a CALL FILE. The initial hypnotic session may be in a dirty doctor's office, or in some cases in emergency rooms. Dirty doctors working in emergency room settings are careful to work undetected by clean hospital workers. The hypnotic suggestion is implanted that the victim return at a particular date to a location where more detailed work can be done.

U.S. GOVT. MIND-CONTROL LEVEL 1.

A proper candidate, that is one with an I.Q. above 120 and proper hypnotic abilities, will be given a code cue, that is an alpha-numeric code, or a number or a word code that identifies them. This is embedded hypnotically. If the person has no relatives that are important, they will be instructed and secretly helped to move to a location chosen by the intelligence agencies. The programmers will cover their tracks so that what has happened at this level is deeply embedded in the subconscious mind & can't be retrieved.

U.S. GOVT. MIND-CONTROL LEVEL 2.

At this level the person is used operationally at very easy and unimportant tasks. He is also assigned someone. The hypnotist programmer is beginning to soften the victim up and make them more pliable to suggestions. If he successfully performs these small jobs that have been hypnotically written into the mind, then he will given a RECALL SERVICE NOTICE by the person who is in contact with the victim. Now the person moves on to level 3, which is a fully operational level.

U.S. GOVT. MIND-CONTROL LEVEL 3.

When the victim is instructed to come in, they do not realize what is in store for them. Now their own personality will be rewritten according to what script the programmers want it to have. The person will be set to carry out his instructions as needed. The slave will now be given specific trigger codes to carry out assignments. All field agents of the intelligence agencies get level 3 control.

U.S. GOVT. MIND-CONTROL LEVEL 4

This level is reserved for candidates who very intelligent and very loyal to hypnotic commands. Victims of this level of mind-control will follow out any command they are given, whether it be suicidal or harmful. Because these victims of mind-control are now under total mind-control, just as many members of the Illuminati grow up under, the intelligence agencies want to protect their level 4 slaves. They will be given a new life along with a total new identity. All the credentials and paperwork that the new identity needs will be created. The slave has now received a totally new life, and whatever SCRIPT (agenda) the intelligence agencies want. The programming that was placed in up to level 3 is erased in a sense and an entire new life script is placed in. This is done with the use of drugs, deception, and other sophisticated mind-control techniques described in Vol. 2 and this book. Complete areas of memory are erased at this stage and then a new history is rewritten into the pre-puberty area of memory. This takes some time, and is accomplished using a number of techniques our books have described. The old memory is erased and OVERWRITTEN with the new history and script. The brain assimilates this new knowledge as if its always been there, because it feels comfortable putting something into a void spot. The programmers prefer to find a period in the original person's life when nothing happened. It is easy to erase a memory block when nothing significant is in the original memory, i.e. it is basically blank anyway. As a sleeper the level 5 slave may marry and lead a relatively normal life. One clue that the person is going to be used on a mission is if he suddenly leaves his wife & goes somewhere. This may be a clue that the handlers are positioning the person for a mission. They may also have nullified the slave's external life, so there isn't the purpose of life to prevent a suicide mission.

U.S. GOVT. MIND-CONTROL LEVEL 5

This level is reserved for people with an I.Q. of at least 130. This level will require taking the slave to a special programming center, where they are taken down to the comatose level of subconscious awareness to place the programming in at the deepest levels of the mind. The victim may be comatose for days or months, and this requires a catheter in the neck, urinary and digestive tracts to keep the body properly functioning. Because the person will be hospitalized for quite a while, a popular cover story is that they had an automobile accident. Remember, in Vol. 2, it was discussed how Roseanne Barr (now an actress with MPD/DID) had as a teenager an "automobile accident" during which she received significant programming. Many of these level 5 slaves are placed as sleepers into organizations of all kinds, where they lead "normal lives." The level 5 triggers activate programs deeply embedded and NESTED into the memory of a person. A team of programmers work on level 5 slaves. They must make sure that the victim has a support system so that they do not self-destruct. They may have psychologists in normal life set up to serve as a support person for the slave. It was interesting to see that AFTER learning from people in the know about how memory is erased and a new identity given, that the show "*No Where Man*" portrayed this happening to a black man. Whoever wrote the scripts for *No Where Man* had an excellent understanding of what is going on in mind-control.

TESTING Young Children to Plan the PROGRAMMING.

In *Vol. 2, chap.1* it was explained how the programmers can test the preverbal child to determine & plan how they will program them. EEG's & Gittinger's Tests were discussed. Here is more information.

Researchers have been able to study the personalities of unborn children and to watch how these personality traits stay with the children through their lives. In the Vol. 2 book it was explained how the Illuminati has used EEGs to determine the personalities of preverbal children so that they know what type of programming is best suited for that personality. Interestingly, on Mon., April 12, '96, 11 p.m. after the *Vol. 2* book was out on the market, 20/20 did a show where they showed researchers using EEG electrodes to monitor childrens' brainwaves for their happiness potential.

It is known that brain potentials associated with voluntary movements have been identified, thereby giving big brother the potential to predict when a person is going to make a particular movement. The brain is dynamically looking at patterns and continously generating hypnotheses about its environment which are then validated or invalidated by information picked up by the senses. The P300 wave (known as the P3 wave for short) allows neuroscientists to track decision making in a brain's cortex. The P300 wave shows when the mind's thought processes have been internally surprised. In this way, detection of the P300 gives a method of lie-detection superior to the polygraph. When surprised the brain creates P300 wave by internal brain functions--such as what chapt. 4 will call "cognitive demon processes".

Initially, EEGs are taken of child victims, with an analysis of the different wave forms. Next, will come tests of VERs (visually evoked responses). This is valuable for instance, because bright children will show **asymmetric (high amplitude)** responses during VERs from the right hemisphere. Children with low I.Q. show **the same** evoked response from both hemispheres. This is just one window on the mind that the Illuminati programmers have of the preverbal children. There are other evoked-potential tests that are being used to determine personality traits too. Evoked-responses can also be used to show whether the person is conscious, or how deep they are in a coma. The early components of the evoked-response, which occur 10-20 milliseconds after a stimulus, are believed to come from the brain stem and can be used to determine a level of a coma. Evoked-responses are also used to determine particular learning disabilities within a child. Right-handed children will show even prior to birth, an anatomical specialization that favors language acquisition in the left hemisphere. So they can even determine what handed-ness the child has very early on.

TRAUMA

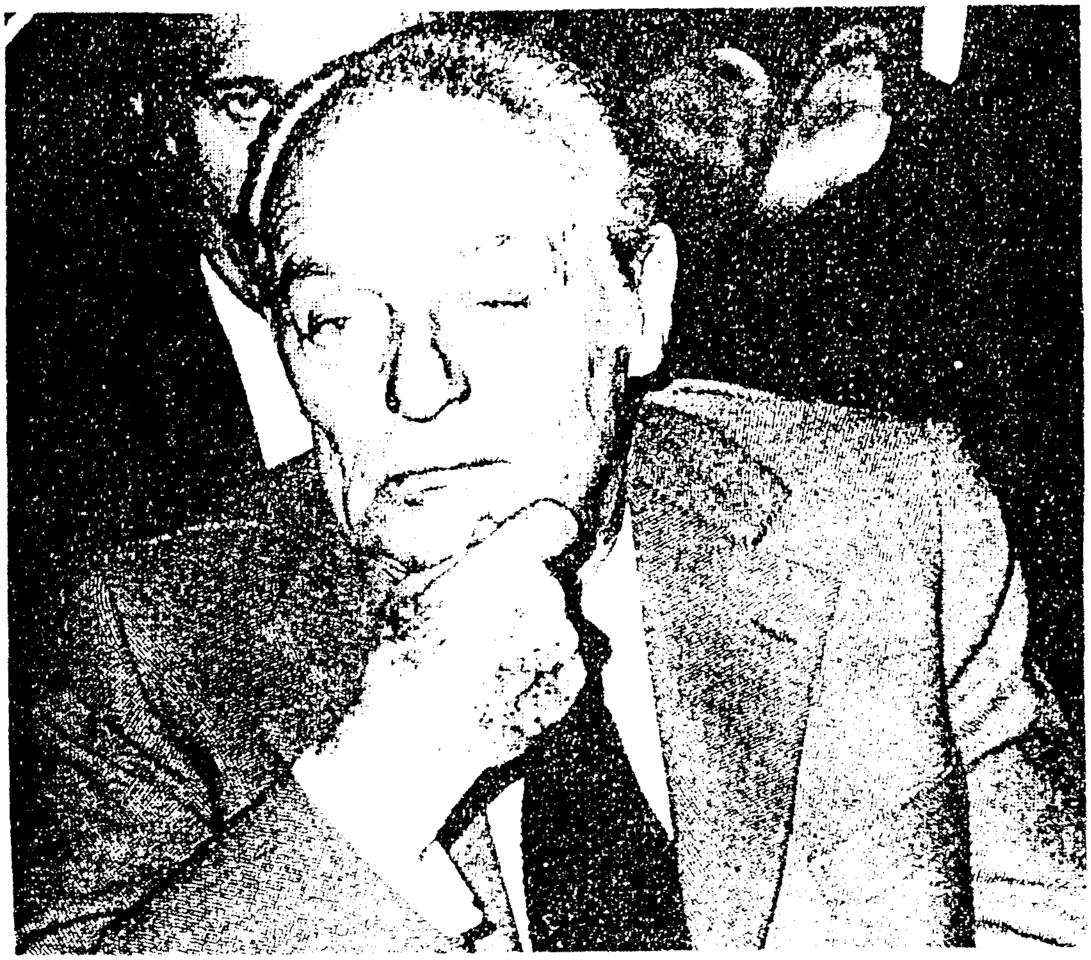

Baron Guy de Rothschild, of France, has been the leading light of his bloodline. The Baron is an Illuminati Kingpin and slave programmer. For those who have bought the cover story that the Catholic Church is not part of the Illuminati's NWO, I would point out that the Baron has worked with the Pope in programming slaves. This photo was picked for the trauma chapter because the Baron has a droopy left eye. Many of the deeper Illuminati alters show droopy left eyes due to the trauma they have received. The authors are not aware of what the official explanation for his droopy left eye would be.

CHAPTER 2.
SCIENCE NO. 2-- THE TRAUMATIZATION & TORTURE OF THE VICTIM

The basis for the success of the Monarch mind-control programming is that different personalities or personality parts called alters can be created who do not know each other, but who can take the body at different times.

Let's review some important points that were mentioned in the *Vol. 2* book,

> "The amnesia walls that are built by traumas, form a protective shield of secrecy that protects the abusers from being found out, and prevents the front personalities who hold the body much of the time to know how their System of alters is being used. The shield of secrecy allows cult members to live and work around other people and remain totally undetected. The front alters can be wonderful Christians, and the deeper alters can be the worst type of Satanic monster imaginable--a Dr. Jekyll/Mr. Hyde effect."
>
> A great deal is at stake in maintaining the secrecy of the intelligence agency or the occult group which is controlling the slave. The success rate of this type of programming is high but when it fails, the failures are discarded through death."
>
> Each trauma and torture serves a purpose."

To create alters (dissociative parts of the mind) the worse the trauma, the better the amnesia walls, so programmers have been spending years trying to outdo each other in creating the world's worst traumas that humans can survive, so they can program people.

Readers may at first wonder why cover this gruesome part of the programming? There are a number of reasons. People who pretend to be helpful people--such as some ministers, and some professional therapists--are unwilling to look at the facts of what have been done to the victims they claim to want to help. How can the victim ever come out of denial and face the issues around their dissociation--IF the people helping them who didn't experience these traumas first hand can't even face the existence and nature of these traumas? Many therapists encourage the victim to maintain their amnesia walls, "let the past be the past". They say, "You can't change the past." No matter how appealing this advice sounds, this advice for victims of trauma-based mind-control this is defective, idiotic simple advice. This type of advice only continues the mind-control and the abuse of the victim. No wonder Christian ministers who are under their mind-control are used to spout off this type of defective advice.

It is important to cover programming traumas because it validates the memories of recovering victims, and because there are standard types of trauma that are used for certain types of programming. For instance, traumas that desensitize a person to killing--i.e. traumas where the victim is forced to kill innocent people--are used to program assassination alters.

The base of the programming is FEAR layered via trauma. Hopefully, the readers will be inspired and motivated like this author to try to stop this horrendous mind-control.

DAILY ABUSE WORKS BEST FOR PROGRAMMING

To insure that the programming and abuse stays hidden from even the slave, the slave is given daily traumas as a child to keep them dissociative.

The Illuminati's programmers get the cooperation of a vast network of abusers who traumatize the children who are being programmed. One of the Illuminati's fronts is the Catholic church, which the Jesuits manage for the Illuminati. Under the cover of religious retreats and their religious image, many Catholic clergymen have been participants in the vast trauma network actively creating trauma-based mind controlled slaves.

The problem in exposing this is that first the people who are being traumatized have trust in the clergymen who are doing the traumas. Second, if the victims or parents of the victims suspect anything, they usually go to church officials rather than the police in order to clear up the problem, yet protect the church. Additionally, in most cases both the corrupt religious system, working behind the corrupt police and judicial system manoeuver to protect the abuser and to further victimize the mind-control victim and anyone coming to the person's rescue.

The following are but a few examples of a widespread network of secret abuse, that will not be uncovered because the system to catch abusers has long ago been corrupted and infiltrated and controlled by mind-controlled slaves, as well as by blackmailed or bribed dirty persons of authority.

- Roger Trott, a Catholic Priest in Delmont, PA convicted of molesting 12 boys, got a suspended sentence by the judge. Can you believe such unbelievable leniency?
- Father John Engbers (b. 1922, in Holland), catholic pastor at Leroy outside of Lafayette, LA. He baby-sat for a family, in which he sexually molested their children, their five daughters. He was treated as a member of this family and the mother, who was of Amer. Indian descent, was very close ("worshipped"-according to one daughter) to Father John. She spent long hours alone with him. He would tell his victims that they were his "puppet, like Pinocchio." He molested some of the girls almost every day, and had them under his control enough that they returned even when they were living at a distance from him. He had what appeared to be a hypnotic type spell over them. Father John Engbers molested many children during his years as a Louisiana priest, until he fled in 1985. He had lots of money to spend. The Catholic church had known he was molesting children clear back in 1952, when some parents complained. The Catholic hierarchy helped him escape back to Holland in mid-1985, when reports and law suits over how he sexually molested children came out. The case of Father John Engbers has all the earmarks of a participant in the daily Monarch mind-control abuse given to children.
- Dennis Dellamalva, a Pennslyvannia Catholic Priest, who molested boys, and the judicial system protected him from prosecution. The judge, a catholic order the records of this paedophilia priest sealed, and the catholic church which knew of his deviant behavior continued to give him a position of authority.
- Michael Peterson, a child molesting priest, who was a drug addict and a homosexual, was one of the catholic hierarchy's main men involved with investigations of pedophilia, who died of AIDS, and his rich sidekick Stephen B.C. Johnson II, who administered a catholic facility near Boston, Mass. Michael Peterson lived a rich lifestyle in Marsalin, and later Suitland, next to St. Luke and told people that he was not worried about anyone, because he had the goods on them to force them to comply. Michael Peterson's St. Lukes was used by the Catholic church to receive many **priests** that were caught doing **paedophilia**. In the first six years, St. Lukes claimed to have cured 55 child molesting priests.
- Monsignor William A. Kraft, (b. Rochester, NY), Knight of the Holy Sepulcher, was pastor of St. Therese during the '60's, and by 1978 the rich pastor of St. Charles Borromeo, San Diego. His father was a chief executive with Eastman Kodak. Kraft's sexual molestations of children have all the earmarks of being a Monarch mind-control abuser. He was protected by the Catholic hierarchy and the system from prosecution for molestation of children.

When children are being tortured and traumatized by persons who are respected in society, and when these children see the police and judges protect these people, do you see why this further traumatizes them, and convinces them that there is no hope? Once they lose hope of outside help, their minds are further propelled to obey the commands of

their abusers. People, who do not understand the depth of the traumas, think these victims of mind-control should be able to verbalize their slavery and abuse. The victims have been stripped of this ability. The only hope they see is to survive the sadistic expectations of the monsters who own them.

The abuse that comes from parents, police, politicians and ministers makes the victim feel like there is no one safe to run to. The ongoing secret abuse keeps the child very dissociative. We are discussing general abuse, later this chapter will cover some specific programming traumas.

WHAT THE PROGRAMMERS LOOK FOR WHEN TRAUMATIZING. (This section is illustrated by the collage of photos on this page.)

< This page's collage shows a child in the upper right who has reached a state of programming compliance from trauma. The head is held limp. The eyes are glossy. The hands are clasp in submission. The photo just to its left shows a child who has submitted to puppet programming. The hips are disjointed, the hands are to the side in a military fist, & the child is in a submissive puppet stance. This child's appearance is the condition where the programmers try to get a child. The photo of the child clapping shows a slow robotic clap due to the puppet training. The child in these photos has in fact, showed every indication of having received total mind-control, and has been under the care of Roman Catholics.

^^^^^^^^^^

• ANGER-MANAGEMENT-PROGRAMMING TRAUMAS

The first type of abuse is prenatal. The second series of abuses occurs from 2 to 4. The third round of programming abuse, is given to the child around 5 to 6 years of age. One of the specific programming abuses is teaching the child slave to redirect their anger away from Papa or Daddy the slave owner. The Papa Bear, Daddy figure in the slave's young life will intentionally provoke the child with teasing to aggravate the child into rage. Exactly what is done to provoke rage within the child will vary, but the result is the same, the child feels rage. The question is then asked, "Are you angry with daddy?" "Yes!" at that point electroshock is applied to the head, toes, tips of fingers, nipples & inside the vagina, or penis by electrodes attached to the child. The child will be brought to the level of rage, and then allowed to cool down for 30 minutes. The child's alters are then via behavior modification & hypnosis taught to redirect their anger toward themselves. "WHEN YOU ARE ANGRY WITH YOUR FATHER, YOU WILL HURT YOURSELF. DO YOU UNDERSTAND? The message will be played over & over & the question "Do you understand?" will be played over & over. The child is shocked until they are compliant. The suicide programming will be layered in. Part of layering in the suicide programming, is to create pain in the right ear via a needle to the ear, with the creation of horrible disorienting sounds, while pulsing lights drive the brain into its alpha programming state. At a certain brainwave state the programming begins with repetitious self-destruct messages. These messages debase the value of the person to reinforce the suicidal destruct messages. After the child has learned that they are to hurt themselves, then they will learn specifically to cut themselves if they get angry at Papa or anyone in the Illuminati family they belong to. After this training, the child will attach subconsciously a fear of pain to the concept of anger toward its Illuminati controllers.

• SILENCE PROGRAMMING TRAUMAS to TEACH SILENCE

One way to teach silence is to repeatedly kill persons of all ages in front of the person being programmed while telling the mind-control victim that the people who are being sadistically killed because they talked. However, the "no-talk" lesson will be repeated and embedded in many different fashions for Illuminati mind-controlled slaves. Perhaps a favorite Illuminati method is to expose the victim to watching dental tortures. The viewing can be reinforce by subjecting the victim to some dental tortures themselves. A common dental torture would be to extract the tongue of a live and conscious victim. Then dental tortures are done to the victim, and the intense jaw pain of the torture is linked to tripping the no-talk programming. If the person talks--their jaw hurts and they may pull up the dissociated feelings of seeing a person lose their tongue.

This then will be further backed up by training an alter to carry out Russian Roulette if the system talks, and training numerous other alters other types of suicide if the system talks. In other words many back up programs mutually support each other in overkill.

Considering that dental torture is used for no-talk programming, it was with dismay that this author discovered that Virtual I-O Co. is now making virtual reality eye glasses for dental work.

Seashells and other images are linked to the concept of "no-talk" via programming laid in using methods described elsewhere.

Another "no-talk" program is the "Don't tel me" telephone no talk programming.

• TORTURE FOR NO-WRITE

The victim has their right hand bound behind their back and then is made to walk on their knees like a dog.

• PAY ATTENTION TORTURE

There are a host of these, one example is a needle inserted up the nostril behind the eyeball.

- A COMPLIANCE TORTURE--The Black Slave Chair. The Black Slave was invented by a Syrian doctor who helped supervise torture, hence its arabic name al-Abd as-Aswad. The victim is strapped to this metal chair. What is unique about this chair is its design & its hole so that a hot skewer can be shoved up the anus.

Another device for programming is a harness used as a suspension device. Yet another is an electrofied water bed for turning one in "an electric eel."

Compliance is also taught by taking an eyeball out of the victim (later replaced), and by dislocating an arm at the shoulder. After this the victim can be wrapped as if in a cacoon within bandages. The supposed treatment for the dislocation, places the victim in sensory deprivation, another trauma.

A TRAUMA TO DEVELOP ANIMAL ALTERS

Helpless humans will be displayed to child victim of mind-control. These helpless humans will be visciously killed by some animal, a lion, a tiger, a snake, a wild dog or whatever. The programming lie emphasized at this point is that it is better to be that particular type of animal than it is to be human. Then the animal is sacrificed and its spirit is ritually joined to the child's alters. Other programming is added to insure the dehuminization process to make certain child alters into particular animals. When finished, the child will contain viscious protector animal alters within their system.

The prior example of a programming trauma actually pertains to structuring. The mind-control science of structuring MPD (DID) is discussed in chapter 7.

It may be of significance to stress to the reader that traumas come in many shapes. The traumas are not done without some thought. Specific traumas are given for specific desired outcomes. The power and horror of a trauma is hard to gauage. It often results in a type of subconscious adrenlin-rush addiction. The traumas involving sensory deprivation and betrayals of trust can be just as devastating as painful tortures. Sad to say, sometimes for programming purposes all three types may be skillfully combined into one horrendous experience that overwhelms the mind.

TRAUMA TO ISOLATE THE VICTIM

A birthday party will be given for the victim. The birthday cake will contain a bean somewhere. It is announced that whoever gets the bean will get a surprise. When someone gets the bean, the mind-control victim finds out that the surprise is that they must take the life of the child who has found the bean. This programming trauma is part of a series of traumas designed to make deeper alters afraid of accepting any gifts from outsiders. The deeper alters are programmed that gifts always come with a sacrifice. Gifts always cost something. Nothing comes free. "SEVER ALL TIES, HAVE NO FRIENDS" are the programming messages. In reality, what Satan is doing with this trauma on a spiritual level is what the British Empire did with small countries. The British would warn small countries, "you are in danger, we will protect you." (The Spirit of Fear says, gifts are dangerous, let me the Spirit of Fear protect you.) When the British moved into small countries like this, they called them protectorates, & then they took over. (The Spirit of Fear, pretending to protect the victim, takes over and the victim develops a deep-seated free-floating phobias towards gifts from anyone. What pretends to protect, actually ends up controlling & enslaving.)

As the reader treks through this book, he or she will encounter places where other traumas are discussed, such as tortures via implants, & traumas via rides in amusement parks, & spinning traumas during the structuring for creating alter families from an alter. Finally, the waves of fear created by repeated traumas layer in Spirits of Fear, which form a dark spiritual foundation.

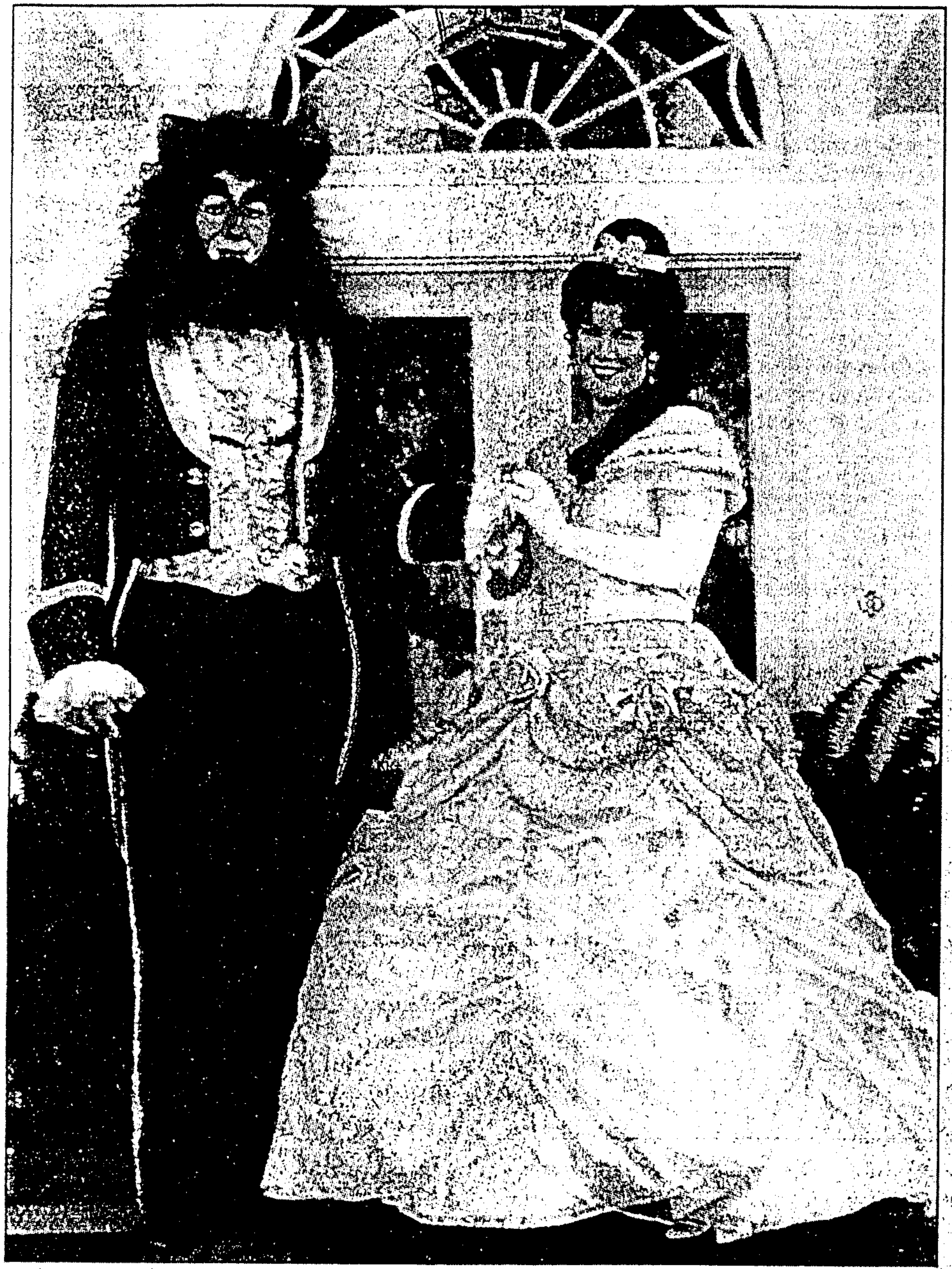

Associated Press Photo

A Democrat in beast's clothing

Vice President Al Gore and his wife, Tipper, pose for a Halloween photo in costume on the front steps of their residence in Washington, D.C. Halloween is Tuesday.

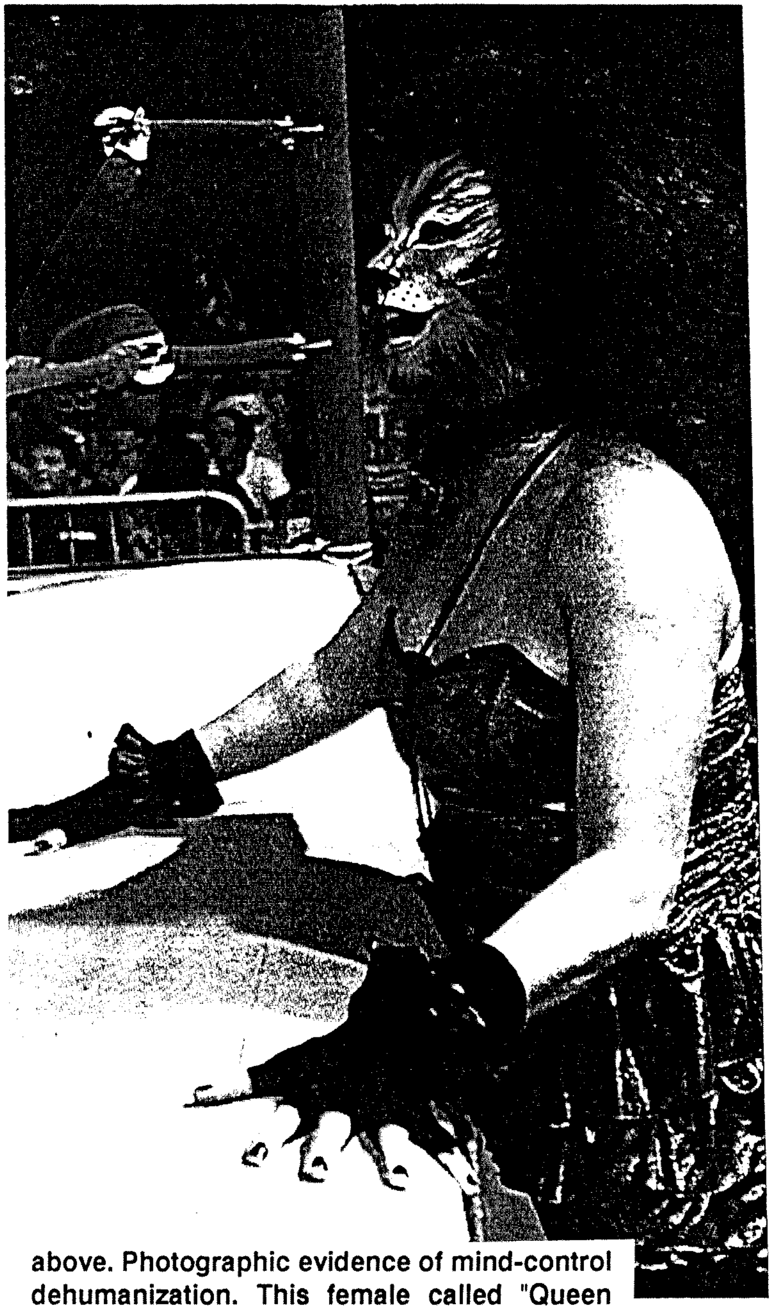

above. Photographic evidence of mind-control dehumanization. This female called "Queen S___" who has managed professional wrestlers on a team called "the New World Order" gives visible proof that professional wrestling is tied to mind-control. One of her wrestlers Macho King Savage claims his favorite thing to say is "You'll bow before the Kingdom of Madness." Compare her photo with programmer Al Gore dressed as a Beast in a recent news article

DRUGS

Adrenalchrome, a secret black market drug, is harvested from victims of human sacrifices. In other words, there is big money in human sacrifices. That mainstream law enforcement agencies have kept Adrenalchrome's existence a secret for so many years shows the power that the Illuminati-Masonic network has had over law enforcement in this country from law enforcement's inception. This is a micrograph photo taken of an adrenalchrome cell (called a chromaffin cell). The cell has been enlarged 15,300 times.

CHAPTER 3.

SCIENCE NO. 3 -- The USE OF DRUGS

IN REVIEW

The science of Pharmacology (drugs) has given the Programmers a vast array of mind-altering and body-altering drugs. Some of the drugs are not used to directly alter the mind, but to change the body (make the skin burn), or make the person vomit, or some other reaction that can be harnessed to further their nefarious programming goals.

DRUG RESEARCH

One of the sites which has done research/programming into MPD and drug action on the brain has been Bethesda, MD where Dr. Irwin J. Kopin was Chief of the Laboratory of Clinical Science, at the National Institute of Mental Health. He was active in research into how drugs can affect the mind.

CLASSIFYING MIND-DRUGS

When this author studied differential equations, and higher mathematical it became clear that everything can be reduced to a mathematical explanation. Sometimes a mathematical notation is easier and clearer, than other explanations. This author suggests that drugs that affect the mind could be classified on three scales:

Scale X: the wakefulness or arousal scale, which runs from a coma, to asleep, to alert, to hyperalert

Scale Y: the attitude, or affect scale, that is one's manner of feelings, responses etc., running on a scale from suicidal and depressed to euphoric, blissful and elated.

Scale Z: the integration of reality scale, which runs from confusion, delusions, and psychotic thoughts to integrated, clear, lucid thinking.

Many (if not all) of the drugs that were listed in Vol. 2 and this chapter can be plotted along one of these scales, and sometimes 2 or 3 of these scales, which means an x,y, z axis configuration can be used to compare such drugs. In terms of naturally occurring brain substances which are manufactured synthetically and injected according to the programmers' needs, it could be stated that the original purpose of the substance can be malevolently tampered with.

Classification of Mind-Drugs copyright F. Springmeier

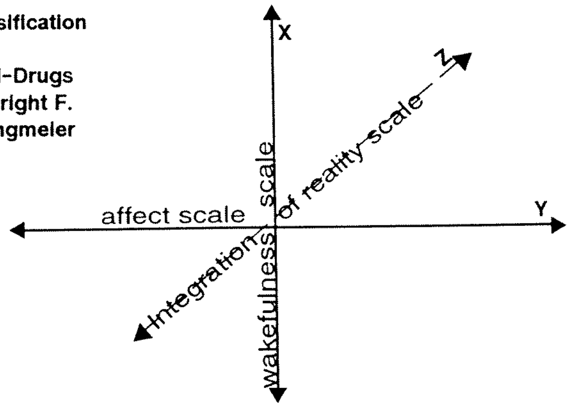

ADMINISTRATION OF DRUGS FOR PROGRAMMING

The distribution into the brain of a drug is dependent upon many factors. Under microscopic-level inspection, one discovers a person's brain is physically constructed to allow certain molecules to enter into the brain in certain complex ways. Just because a substance is put into the blood doesn't mean it gets into brain tissue. Researchers have discovered such drug properties such as lipid solubility, the ionization, its tissue-protein bonding abilities, and its molecular size all play a role in how well drugs get into the brain. Further, the Cerebrospinal Fluid (CSF) which will be discussed indepth in Chapter 8 can play a role in drug absorption. Several studies during the 1960's showed that the removal of drugs or substances from the CSF, can reduce the effective concentration of a drug in the extracellular spaces which make up perhaps 12% of the brain's volume. These physical factors are not the only factors involved.

Researchers have repeatedly discovered that different people respond to mind-changing drugs in many different ways--including two different people having opposite responses to the same drug. There have been a number of studies about this phenomena, including: (SarwerFoner, 1957), (Henninger, et. al., 1965), (Rickels & Downing, 1966), (McNair et al., 1966). Over the years, it has been discovered that a person's mental abilities, expectations, prior drug experience, age, sex, race, personality traits, and personality types can all potentially influence how a mind-altering drug will effect a person. For instance, a sedative drug administered to an extroverted confident athlete caused the athlete to feel anxiety and disorientation. In contrast, an introverted nervous intellectual felt calmness when the same drug was administered.

Particle size of the drug and the rate of dissolution will help determine the rate at which a drug is absorbed (and eliminated) into the body. For instance, when colloidal silver has been produced by a process that yields small particles, it will cleanse the body, while larger particles of colloidal silver will kill a person. Different companies and different preparations of the same drug may have different outcomes upon the body.

The persistence of a drug in the body is calculated by programmers using half-lives of a drug. This means that at one half-life, one half of a drug is left in the body. At two half lives, one-half of one-half is left or (1/4). At three half-lives there will be 1/8 left of original drug. In other words, the rate of elimination decreases with time.

When heroin is processed into morphine, its characteristics change. The heroin takes affect quicker, but doesn't last as long as morphine. This is because of enzyme mechanisms in the liver and how they react to the morphine in contrast to the heroin. Different drugs react differently with the complex enzyme mechanisms of the liver. Phenobarbital amazingly increases the enzyme content of the endoplasmic reticulum with habitual use of the drug. Phenobarbital will then enhance a particular type of toxicity. Low doses do not hurt the body, but there is a threshold where damage from phenobarbital will begin occurring to the liver and kidneys. This is a sampling of why it is important that the Illuminati use extremely skilled medical personnel in the application of programming drugs.

The programmers are far more skilled than most legitimate therapists in understanding how much of what drug to give to which alter personality. The mental makeup of an alter will influence how that alter will respond to drugs. Some deeper alters can resist drug influence due to training. Some deeper alters are so fine-tuned that they only need small doses. With their superior knowledge of how a System of Multiple Personalities has been created within a victim's mind, the programmers have a distinct edge over deprogrammers in how to administer drugs. On top of that the programmers, place in all types of programming to prevent anyone but the programmers (or approved people) from administering drugs.

An example of how strong the mind can be over drugs--is when the programmers "SET THE STAGE", "PRESENT THE SCRIPT" and then use Seconal to obtain deeply embedded programming commands. Setting the stage is a programming term for talking to the victim in such a way that the mind is receptive for what the programmer wants the victim's mind to do. Presenting the script is the actual set of commands that the programmer gives to the victim. For instance, the programmer functioning as a hypnotist tells the victim that a powerful sedative will be given but that part of the mind will be strong enough to overcome the sedative effect of seconal. The victim is instructed "WHEN YOU HEAR THE WORD [trigger power code word, for instance: ZEBRA COME FORTH]...YOU WILL RESPOND TO WHAT I AM SAYING." The seconal is given and the person is placed in an isolation chamber. A good programmer skilled in hypnotism can actually get a victim's mind to respond under the influence of seconal in an isolation chamber. Then the programmer will lay in deeply embedded commands while the person is in a sleep deeper than a twilight sleep.

When the human body receives several different kinds of drugs, sometimes drugs compete with each other during the excretion/elimination phase. This may create a buildup or a retention of one of the drugs. As discussed in *Vol. 2*, the programmers don't like to use combinations of several drugs because it complicates things. There is still a great deal of unknowns concerning adverse drug reactions. Some people do not show an allergic response to a drug until it is administered several times. Because of the potential for allergic reactions or side effects, the Programmers are helped because the programming centers, according to ex-programmers are extremely well stocked with different drugs, & the Programmer can if need be shift to an alternative programming drug.

Most slaves are programmed to stay away from the use of drugs, except those drugs that the programmer/handler approves. By reducing the use of drugs of all kinds, the problem of adverse drug reactions, and other complications is reduced for the programmers. Some people who are health freaks who stay away from drugs are actually carrying out a front program for their programmers.

MORE PROGRAMMING DRUGS (these were **not** listed in the *Vol.2 Formula* book)

Acetophenzine aka Tindal--(this anti-psychotic has been used on multiples, it mutes anxiety, suspiciousness and delusions. It would fall more into the control category of uses rather than for actual programming.)

Amines--(this is a general term for many types of the brain's own chemicals used to produce moods, and feelings)

Damiana--(aka Mex. Witching Herb, the extract is used w/ other herbs during progamming for a relaxed pleasure state.) >>An example is Damiana-Black Kava Kava-Valerian-Skullcap-Wild Lettuce Opium, which makes a "it's-nothing-but-a-dream" state.

Chloral hydrate--(which is a hypnotic put in pill form such as chloral betaine, Beta-Chlor, and given with something like a glass of milk. About 500 mg. of Chloral hydrate are given for a hypnotic for an adult.)

Cyclohexamide--(produces retroactive amnesia)

Cylert--a type of speed

Datura aka Jimsonweed, or thorn apple--(sometimes used to help a child conjure up their personal spirit.)

Iminodibenzyls-- (used for sedation)

Lettuce Opium--(tradition Hopi shaman trance drug)

Mandrake--(from the Mandragora plant, an ancient occult drug, a traditional witchcraft drug for causing people to sleep)

Methaqualone--(a rapid hypnotic drug that produces a dissociative high, it can be used to put someone into a coma)

Pemoline-magnesium hydroxide (aka PMH, helps enhance conditioned avoidance training by acting as a stimulant, is helpful for repetitive learning situations by a general alerting effect on the mind)

Phenothiazines--(used to raise the threshold of electrical stimulation tolerance, to tranquilize or induce sleep)

Rowan--traditional sleeping/death herb of witches; May Day is also called Rowan Tree Witch Day.

Seconal, aka Seconal Sodium or Secobarbital Sodium--(a popular programming drug to stabilize programming, to set in deep programming into the base of the mind such as dates and codes, and to block out memory of missions by slaves, see various paragraphs below for more explanations. Used in 10, 20, 30, 50, 100 mg. increments. A tubal pregnancy/birth can be hid in a woman by 300-400 mg., while surgery on an adult man may require 500 mg.)

Tetradoxyn (made from the Puffer Blowfish, used by Voudoun, & others to create a zombie state)

In our discussion of drugs used in programming, this chapter will expand upon the previous book by discussing the application of drugs to:

a. to stabilize the programming after torture
b. hiding the codes
c. building in deeply embedded structures and beliefs, and the creation of false identities
b. to influence the memory by drugs
c. to stimulate instinctual behaviors
d. to create moods and attitudes by synthetically manufacturing and injecting the brain's own natural amines.

STABILIZING THE PROGRAMMING

The total mind-control of the Illuminati is called "trauma-based mind-control" because repeated traumas are inflicted upon the victim is a very systematic calculated inhumane way. The tortures and stress are all parts of a programming package. After a particular harsh session of programming the victim's mind will be in a high state of terror, shock, dissociativeness and splintering. The victim's mind can't take much more, and the potential of having uncontrolled splintering of the victim's mind and thereby having the destruction of the mind and programming threatens the programmers' control. The programmer wants the mind and body to rest so that the programming can set in, without destabilizing events occurring. For instance, after severe water torture (drowning) the programmer will want the programming (hypnotic script) to set in, and he will give seconal (aka seconal sodium or secobarbital sodium) to induce a deep sleep. Sleep occurs within 10 to 15 minutes. Sometimes a victim's heart has been pushed to its limits during a trauma and they must shut the body down to let the victim rest. Seconal is a drug of choice for this. Seconal is administered in hospitals or programming sites where trained personnel know how to give the drug. Dirty psychiatrists, who understand the relationship between drugs and human behavior and who are either programmers themselves or assistants to programmers often are the ones who give the victims drugs like seconal.

EXTENSIVE RESEARCH DONE TO INFLUENCE HUMAN MEMORY BY DRUGS

The complete list of researchers who have studied the effect drugs have on memory would require a massive book. However, we will just mention a few that pertain to this book briefly. One of the places the effect of drugs on memory was researched was at the Univ. of California at Irvine, CA. Another was at institutions in the Boston, Mass. area such as the Massachusetts General Hosp., in Boston. Dr. Talland in Boston tested the effects of PMH on human memory. He discovered PMH could help people relearn material that had been partially forgotten. The Illuminati programmer Cameron (aka Dr. White) also tried out various approaches including the administration of RNA and RNA- synthesis stimulants. John C. Lilly, who admits being a member of an Esoteric Mystery School, was a government researcher on the use of LSD to program people. He did part of his work on LSD programming at the Maryland Psychiatric Research Center under admitted government financing. His book *Programming and Metaprogramming in the Human Biocomputer* (NY: Julian Press, 1967, & revised format 1972) is an excellent paper trail of how the Illuminati has used LSD to program total mind-controlled slaves. Originally, the book was given out only to a few select people. The book attempts to hide what it talks about behind a long intro, long sentences, big words and arcane psychological terms, but it does spell out how they do the mind-control programming with LSD. A section later in this chapter will lay out for the reader how they do this.

ONE TYPE OF HYPNOTIC DRUG EXPERIENCE OF A MIND-CONTROL VICTIM

The drugged victim feels like he is looking through a keyhole and the hypnotic voice of the programmer is the key hole. The world may be very shadowy and drawn in on itself. The mind has its attention on the hypnotist/programmer.

The BASIC PHASES of MEMORY

The human memory process can be basically broken down into 3 phases, the registration phase, the retention phase and the retrieval phase. Great amount of research has gone into how to use drugs to manipulate each of those phases. Great amount of research also went into how to measure people's abilities to a. learn, b. remember, c. and to do non-learned behavior such as arm-hand steadiness and visual time reaction.

WHAT the MIND-CONTROL PROGRAMMERS USE to MANIPULATE memory.

Scopolamine was found to impair short-term memory.

It was discovered that retrograde

amnesia could be created by electroshock several hours after the brain had learned something. This lesson caused the Illuminati and those working in mind control with them to use cattle prods and stun guns.

If a person performed something they were to forget they can be stunned or given scopolamine to deaden their memory. A quick anesthetic applied immediately after something has been done might also impair the retention of what had happened. Yet another way is seconal, which will be discussed soon.

Low doses of analeptic drugs given about 10 to 20 min. before training were found to help learning. Analeptic drugs include bemegride, diazadamantanol, pentylenetetrazol, picotoxin, and strychnine. It was discovered that strychnine helps enhance classical conditioning. It can be administered either before or after the learning has taken place. It is believed that memory storage is enhanced by strychnine and strychnine sulfate. Strychnine was also found to help protect the mind's memory against the effect of electroshock.

Abusers out on the street have been turning to GHB and Rohypnol to decrease inhibitions and to cause memory loss in their victims. Rohypnol (which sells for up to $10 a tablet) is dependable but more expensive than the GHB. A number of women who have been raped by adding these drugs to their alcoholic drinks at the Club Boca, Palm Beach, FL made the paper after they were drugged and raped after partying at the club. (*The Palm Beach Post*, Mar., 1996 pp. 1B, 10B.)

GHB (Gamma Hydroxy Butyrate) is a compound essential to the body. It acts similar to a neurotransmitter. It helps release the Human Growth Hormone and removes inhibitions around intimacy, as well as some other beneficial effects. GHB crosses the blood-brain barrier and metabolizes into GABA. GHB's high degree of safety was proved over 25 years of research, and was basically an established fact before the FDA and the media demonized GHB. Several sources seem to indicate that the FDA banned GHB --not because it has dangerous side effects, which it doesn't have inspite of the established media's disinformation campaign with half truths--but because it is not patented by the drug companies and would cut into their profits.

GHB also has a great aphrodisia effect. It reduces inhibitions to have sex, but because the woman clitoris is more sensitive it interferes with female orgasms. However, when the women do achieve it, it is longer and more intense, according to GHB researchers. (This author got much information on GHB from the Centurion Aging Research Lab.)

GHB is described here because it is a drug that is known by the type of people who use sexual slaves and other people, and its use and misuse pertain to mind control. Like so many things involved with mind-control, GHB and many other items could be put to positive uses if used in the proper way.

Sometimes the programmers use drugs rather than ECS (Electroconvulsive shock) to destroy the memory in slaves after they have done some mission for the Illuminati, the Syndicates, or Cult they belong to. The decision to use drugs rather than ECS is largely personal tastes. The very sadistic programmers enjoy using ECS, while the less sadistic ones often use the drugs, which in some instances actually perform better, but are not as violent to the victim of mind control. Retroactive amnesia can be caused by an intracerebral or a subcutaneous (under the skin) shot of Acetoxycycloheximide, cyclohexamide, or puromyxcin. A more sophisticated technique incorporates the drug seconal (aka Seconal sodium), the victim's dissociativeness (the MPD), and hypnosis. Seconal is a strong sedative that puts people into sleep. The programmers have considered it "wonderful". The victim's mind is conditioned hypnotically to be able to remember the drugged-seconal state. Then the hypnotic command is given that if anything about a particular mission is remembered, the person will immediately trigger (pull-up to the front of the mind) the seconal memory. This is why many therapists discover their clients getting sleepy when they get close to certain thoughts, or when they try to do therapeutic work.

HIDING THE CODES

Chapter 4 provides some of the programming codes, some of which are standard and some of which are unique to a particular slave. Seconal was the standard drug used during the 1950's and 1960's to hide the programming codes in the mind's memory.

The procedure is to give a small child under 50 lbs. perhaps 10 mg. of seconal. The programmer has already "SET THE STAGE" and presented the script. After the child goes into its deep sleep, the programmer pulls the child's mind awake hypnotically (actually to be technically correct, the programmer pulls up those alters/parts of the mind that the programmer wants to work with). The child may awake on an satanic altar or other programming setting. The child is then programmed. After the programming, which may include satanic rituals, the child slave is given 20 mg. more of seconal and allowed to go into a sleep again. A cover program (a cover story--that is a false code will be planted hypnotically in front of the real code. "IF YOU SHOULD REMEMBER THIS..." If a slave starts to remember any code, in spite of the hypnotic commands not to, and all the threats and alters trained to protect the codes, etc. then the programming to sleep kicks in. Also remember that the codes are placed in when the victim is groggy, so to pull up the memory will cause the slave to abreact the drugged-state. Not all the alters are drugged. In setting the stage, the programmer orders some alters to back off from feeling or associating the experience. They are hypnotically commanded not to experience the drug's effects, or to only experience it in a partial manner. This can be done with small amounts of seconal. Larger amounts of seconal will override the mind's ability to block the drug's effects.

The programming experience where the codes are put in, will likely be remembered by the slave as something similar to the following, a sleepy blurry picture of a nurse, then a doctor and a table, and then an IV, then the memory fades, and the slave gets sleepy thinking about it.

It should be pointed out that the mind has strong natural abilities to dissociate painful memories. Not only must the victim try to retrieve memories by fighting the mind's natural dissociative abilities, the victim must fight the hypnotic suggestions, the irrationality of conflicting ideas due to the false cover memories laid in, the DRUG memories attached to induce sleep if the victim remembers, the memory shattering from the shock of the stun guns, and the fear of countless other threats internal and external if the memory is recovered. It is no surprise that most victims of this horrendously abusive mind-control have front alters who are totally unaware of the mind-control and abuse.

PROGRAMMING WITH LSD-25 (Lysergic Acid Diethylamide)

The Programmers use controlled and manipulated LSD trips for mind-control purposes when layering in the programming for the Illuminati slaves. The victim's mind is trained and mentally prepared before actually being subjected to the drug. The programmers understand how the mind unleashes its fears, including its fear of LSD itself, while under the drug, so that small doses are given at first and then increased. This is so the victim of mind-control can learn to face and manage the effects of the drug.

When the Illuminati want to set the foundations for a system, they will use LSD in a sensory deprivation tank on a child to program in such things as: the hell-pit (a dungeon in a castle), the images of evil guardians, worlds & stars & galaxies which contain alters, the outer space in a system, and the protective program where the mind spreads out like molecules and loses the ability to think. The sensory deprivation tank will be set at 92° to 95° F. isothermal skin, saltwater suspension, zero light, near zero-sound levels. The victim will be naked without contact with the side of the tank and in remote isolation for several hours. Electrodes can be hooked up to shock the victim if they move to prevent the victim from wanting to move. Victims usually are conditioned to like the sensory deprivation tank before they are programmed inside it with LSD.

After having listened to two ex-programmers describe LSD sensory deprivation programming, this author was amazed to discover that the LSD programmer John Lilly had actually written a book about how to do the programming! (John Lilly was also into witchcraft & aliens.) The government wasn't quite as thrilled with his book as I was, they withdrew research funds from him in 1968 when only a few copies of his book came out. And now finally almost twenty years later, the human LSD programming that John Lilly described is finally being put into its larger context--that of trauma-based total mind-control.

On page 126-127, Lilly explains that implanted programs in the child can be placed in below the level of the mind's awareness, but which will affect their entire outlook on life, and which will control their thinking and behavior far into adulthood. The programs can even be done to control the most basic functions of life.

Lilly says that the programming possible with the use of LSD is "...not achievable outside the use of LSD-25. This amount of control can be said to resemble other ways of achieving control and visual projection but in actual intensity I know of no other way to achieve it. Hypnosis is a possible exception." (*Programming and Metaprogramming in the Human Biocomputer*, p. 20)

On page 19, Lilly states that LSD can be used to change an experience to have a negative or a positive charge on it. Sometimes people who work with the mind refer to negative experiences as "negative charges on an experience", and good experiences as "experiences with a positive charge". Apparently, according to Lilly, the brain can switch chemical charges on an experience and shift its attitude from viewing as either positive or negative. In fact, this very thing is done during Illuminati programming. For instance, it may be done if a memory surfaces that the programmer doesn't want the alter being programmed to understand.

This last paragraph is interesting when one realizes that under LSD the subconscious mind is allowed to release its thinking into the conscious. If a person has been traumatized, the subconscious mind under LSD will release the trauma memories and flood the person with horrible thoughts. So before one can get to the transcendental wonderful creative thoughts, a person has to deal with this garbage. The sub-conscious erupts like molten magma. Before the child is given the LSD, the child is going to have to be mentally prepped. Just as Seconal could only be used after the hypnotist programmer had SET THE STAGE, so also with the LSD. The LSD programmer if he is experienced will have a idea how the victim will react to the drug. Each person reacts in his or her own way, but there are patterns of reaction.

The programmer will hypnotically warn the victim, YOU'RE NOT TO FEAR such and such thought. They may tell the victim that it just their imagination, when it is repressed memories of trauma surfacing. The programmer will let one alter carry the true feelings (such as fear) of the surfacing traumas, and another to carry the story line being programmed in with LSD. The programmer may have to calm the victim down while they are in the tank.

The Illuminati use hypnosis in conjunction with the LSD programming trips. They also use some other mind-control items too. Further, LSD is not the only programming hallucinogenic that they have used for some of this type of programming, they have tried Peyote, but LSD seems to be the drug of choice.

On page 20, Lilly describes the use of mirrors along with LSD to create visually projected images. The Illuminati programmer will play a movie, a script over and over so that it is constantly in the forefront of the victim's mind. Then the stage is set and the script (such as TAKE WHAT YOU SEE INTO THE MIRROR) is hypnotically given. The victim goes under LSD and in about 15 minutes reaches their LSD high. Most people can be talked to by the programmer during the programming, and the programmer can get some feedback from what is happening in the victim's mind. The victim will be placed in front of a mirror. Then the victim will project the image that was repeatedly shown him or her (say for instance, Alice In Wonderland, or Tinkerbell, or Mickey Mouse) onto their own image in the mirror.

A special state of consciousness is induced where the person's perception is altered and they see the projected image as their own reflection. While watching the projected image on the mirror, the mind under LSD will also project its own feelings and facial features into the mirror. If the victim is angry, happy, in pain, admiring themselves, etc. then projected image (for instance, Mickey Mouse) will also been seen this way.

Using this type of programming, the programmers can create twinning parts. That is if two people are to be twinned, parts that see themselves as the other person are created using the LSD mirror programming. Ceremonies and demons will also be added to strengthen the twinning, and this may be done to a 13 year old teenager within the Illuminati.

These projections can be maintained and worked with for about 30-40 min. during the drug's high. After this length of time fatigue sets in and the person must rest before being brought to another high. A clean slate alter can be prepared by the script and then will actually believe that it saw itself as the projected image. By the time, the session is through the clean slate alter believes it is Alice in Wonderland or whatever character the programmer(s) wants it to be.

During the trauma of an LSD programming trip, the mind may see flickering images, melting, mosaics and other things. These distortions can form a cover memory if the programmers wants them too.

During the sensory deprivation tank experience under LSD, the victim can be asked to open their eyes, or close them. If asked to form a mental screen, the victim under LSD will see a blank screen differently if their eyes are open as compared to closed. If the victim is allowed to look while in a dark tank out into the darkness under LSD, they will visualize themselves as merging with the infinite universe and not even having a body. This memory is used to build in the outer space of a system.

On page 32, Lilly describes the type of programming used to create an Infinity, a Rubicon, or Outer Space within a system. He says, "The self is still centered at one place but its boundaries have disappeared and it moves out in all directions and extends to fill the limits of the universe as far as one knows them. A person taking LSD may experience, whether being programmed or not, that they are in touch with all the stars of the universe.

LSD distortions in reality can also be used to protect the programming. If the mind gets too close to remembering something, then the mind triggers automatically a memory of its molecules expanding into the universe and losing their ability to think. This is simply a controlled LSD memory.

When external stimuli is ceased, the brain takes over the spaces that were formerly occupied in the thinking process by external reality, and replaces it with feelings and thoughts from the internal mind.

Lilly states on pg. 24 that when programming people under LSD, "The blank screen is the most difficult one to work with but is the least 'driving' of the group. The blank screen interferes least with one's creative efforts;..." In other words, if the victim is closed off to external stimuli, the mind can focus all its energy into free associative creativity. Once the victim is in isolation, religious music can cause the brain to free associate religious visions, cartoon voices can cause the brain to free associate the cartoon figures, etc.

The Illuminati/Intelligence agencies must wait 3 to 6 months between LSD programming sessions. If they do it more often, they run the risk of hooking the person's mind on the drug state. Then the person will lose interest in reality, and simply try to escape reality into the LSD world as a drug addict.

From recollections from ex-programmers and victims, its clear that as the child victim is traumatized during the LSD sensory deprivation (including being shocked) experiences it goes through a sequence or chronology of changes which are noted in detail by the programmers. Certain splits occur at certain points in time which will be used for special tasks. For instance, at a particular extreme moment the victim may go into a "nothingness state" which is between life and death, where the mind quits perceiving that it has a body. This is not an out-of-body experience, it is a nothingness experience due to an extreme near-death experience. This clean slate can be used for the Cabalistic programming of the Ain Soph Aur. The Ain Soph Aur is the cosmic egg from which the universe supposedly began, ain= vacuum, soph=limitless, and aur=limitless light. For Satanists they interpret this to the light at the top of the pyramid, Lucifer. Alters created in such a fashion may be placed in a succession of realms. If true Caballism is followed this will consist of 4 realms (worlds) of 10 clean slates. These four worlds are

Atziluth=boundless world of divine names,
Briah= the Archangelic World of Creations
Yetzirah= the Hierarchal World of Formations
Assiah = the Elemental World of Substances

The child victim in the sensory deprivation tank is not allowed to move without being shocked. Gradually the will of the victim is broken by the total control the programmer maintains over the child in the tank. But the will of the child continues to be broken until the will of the child to live is broken. At this point, when the mind has given up the will to live, the programmer (or assistant programmer) will tell the child in the tank, "If you create such and such types of persons and such and such no. of them (perhaps 10 or 20 are asked for) then you can come out and we'll stop hurting you. Give me a signal that you've done your job and I'll stop hurting you when the job is done. Move a finger or blink your eyes three times if you've done your job." Blinking three times generally feels the safest for the child, and is generally the limit of what the mind and body can muster to save themselves. The alters, which are made when the mind & body have lost the will to live, are the dissociated parts that will be made into suicide alters. Their breathing is very shallow, they are in pain in the tank. When these parts take the body, they still function in that state. Years later, if the adult body has these suicide alters take the body, there is a good chance they will commit suicide, if not simply die from the shallow breathing.

Lilly states on page 31, "One experiences [under LSD programming] an immediate internal reality which is postulated by the self. It is apparent to me that one's own assumptions about this experience generates the whole experience. **The experienced affects, the apparent appearance of other persons, the appearance of other beings not human, one's own past phantasies, one's own self-analysis, each can be programmed to happen in interaction with those parts of one's self beyond one's conscious awareness.**"

While the victim is in the sensory

deprivation tank, the programmer can ask the victim to create guard alters within the castle images they create. These are equivalent to the imagery that is done in witchcraft. These image alters are not the same as a trauma-created dissociative alter.

The following are the type of beliefs that can be programmed into a person in the sensory deprivation tank under LSD no matter what their prior beliefs (this is substantiated by Lilly, pages 41-49 and ex-programmers).

a. The person could successfully park the body and leave the body somewhere, astral project and explore new universes. The victim can be brought during an LSD trip to this thinking and experience the astral projection from around 20 min. to 2 hours.

b. The victim can be made to feel as if they are a tiny mote, a tiny dot, a single microflash of energy in their own view of time, a mere particle. Time can become infinity and the victim a mere microflash. The victim during this experience seeks a god who is a great being to control him. This is used in the Illuminati alien programming to program in the evil and good aliens, or evil or good gods. The gods or the aliens on such a programming trip will not be so strange that the victim as a mote can't understand their purposes and activities. In other words, the aliens on programming trips like this turn out humanoid. The victim experiences being nurtured by these beings or the god(s) that he sees. The victim may perceive these aliens on the trip experimenting with us.

One UFO researcher and author about the aliens has used his LSD trips to research aliens. Sad to report, this researcher is a programmed multiple. It is easy to see how the mind could think that it was learning about aliens, because this is a common easy-to-create LSD programming script.

Again in summary, this second set of beliefs is that the person is a mere mote, a small flash in infinite time. When an alter of a slave thinks or goes internally where it shouldn't, this programming is attached to the mind so that the victim loses sight of who they are and feels very insignificant and only a dot.

c. The next program that LSD naturally lends itself to, is that the victim is only part of a vast computer, only part of a vast mind. For some reason, the LSD is able to hit a part of the mind that regulates the perception of free-will. In this type of programming, the victim under LSD is convinced that he or she has no free will and must participate each second with some larger mind or computer.

d. Personalities that have been seen externally by the victim will be incorporated within the person's internal world.

e. LSD changes the victim's perception of time, and can be used to go back or forward in time in the mind. Under guidance, the programmer can manipulate this ability to build into the mind false memories and images.

f. If "white noise", that is random background noise is placed into an isolation tank trauma, the programmers have found that under LSD the brain tries to make sense of the random sounds and projects the voice of God into the random noise as a method to turn chaos into something comprehendible. With the right dose, and under the right conditions, the programmers can get the voice of "God" to say about anything they want. Because the sense of hearing in the sensory deprivation tank is not feeding the mind anything, the human brain under LSD can easily substitute in the voice of God.

g. For girls, who have been determined to have personalities with low sexual appetites, the sexual desires of certain alter personalities can be manipulated during an LSD trip by having these alters hold the body and the body go through exaggerated pelvic movements and other experiences. This is an example of the type of training that Gittinger (see Vol. 2) discovered was necessary in order to change thinking patterns within a person--in this case with the MPD (DID), some alters can be radically changed from the original personality.

The overall effect of such LSD programming on anyone, whether child or adult, is that the mind at a deep level begins to doubt its ability to grasp the real from the imaginary. Therapists sometimes wonder why alters are not more anxious to determine reality. Part of this may be the side-effect at a profound level of the brain beginning to doubt its abilities to separate reality from fiction.

If the LSD trips were not controlled by the programmers, insanity could result for the victim. Further, the LSD trips pose a danger that they could clutter the internal world of the victim and splinter their mind uncontrollably. This is why the trips must be carefully guided, controlled and monitored.

CHEMICALLY TRIGGERING NATURAL INSTINCTUAL DRIVES

The brain when a child is born is like a computer which is ready to go, and just needs the software loaded on. In other words, the brain is already a functioning complicated programmed piece of hardware, it is not a blank sheet. The mind is preprogrammed to carry out important instinctual functions, such as drinking water, eating food and sleeping. Likewise, the adult mother instinctively has maternal instincts. Selectively applied chemical or electrical stimulations to the brain will elicit the instinctual behaviors that are preprogrammed into the brain. A microinjection of a soluble sex steroid into the anteromedial hypothalamus would likely trigger the maternal instinct in a person. The various instinctual behaviors that are triggered by microchemical injections or small select electrical shocks will last for up to an hour. (A.E. Fisher was one of the principal researchers in this line of research during the 50's and 60's.) For instance, A.E. Fisher and E. Vaughan, discovered that the male instinct for sex could be stimulated by a small shock to a specific part of the brain. (See "Male sexual behavior induced by intracranial electrical stimulation", *Science* magazine, 1962, 137, pp. 758-760.) Steroids are one of the chemicals that are used as well as selective minute electrical shocks to trigger instinctual behaviors. Reliable responses can be obtained from a victim, if the correct chemical is placed at a place in the brain where the chemical will cause the brain to send an electrical signal to trigger an instinctual behavior.

A searching reaction can be created so that a person or animal searches for something in his surroundings by electrical stimulation of the hippocampus.

Eating can be reliably induced electronically or by drugs. Perfusate taken from ventricles or neural tissue of a person who was starved before death, and placed into the lateral hypothalamic area will cause the person to eat whether they are hungry or full.

SEXUAL STIMULATION-PROGRAMMING

The users of slaves need some of the parts to be nymphomaniacs. In order to program this type of behavior, the programmers not only use the reversal effect when pain becomes pleasure (see Vol. 2), but they also use hormones and drugs to make certain parts nymphomaniacs. If they were not artificially stimulated they could not endure the over-use they are subjected to at times.

THEIR ABILITY TO MANUFACTURE (SYNTHESIZE) BRAIN CHEMICALS TO MAKE MIND-CONTROL DRUGS

Part of the ability to do mind-control has to do with their ability to synthesize the actual specific chemicals that the brain produces to alter itself. When the brain wants to relax, or excite itself it uses certain compounds. A large number of the brain's chemicals have been cataloged and can be reproduced in the lab.

The messages the brain sends have to jump from one neuron to another via transmitters. The rate that the brain releases these transmitters can be both directly and indirectly changed by drugs. In other words, one can tailor make moods and emotions in the brain chemically.

The term "Amines" (which are compounds that have a nitrogen atom that can accept a proton) came to have a specific meaning for brain researchers. The transmitters between neurons in the brain are Amines such as dopamine, epinephrine, histamine, norepinephrine, octopamine, serotonin, and tyramine. The principle method to synthesize these transmitter amines is "decarboxylation of the parent amino acid." In other words, the chemist takes Tyrosine and applies Tyrosine Hydroxylase (an enzyme) and produces Dopa another similar compound; and then the enzyme Dopa Decarboxylase is applied and from that the similar Dopamine amine is created. Then Dopamine-Beta-oxidase (another enzyme) is applied in the final step of the three enzyme steps to create Norepinephrine. Both Dopamine and Norepinephrine are neural transmitters. If norepinephrine is diminished in the brain, sedation occurs. Alpha-methyl-p-tyrosine (as well as other compounds) was found to be one of the things that would prevent the brain from creating (synthesizing for itself) norepinephrine.

Serotonin (5-hydroxytryptamine) is created in a fashion similar to dopamine, in that tryptophan is taken and acted upon by the enzyme Tryptophan hydroxylase to get 5-hydroxytryptophan, and then a decarboxylase converts this compound to serotonin. To reverse things, and prevent the brain from having serotonin, they can prevent selective parts of the brain from creating it with p-chlorphenylalanine.

ADRENALCHROME (Adrenal Chromaffin)

This naturally occurring yellowish brown drug was not mentioned in the Vol. 2 book, although it was mentioned in this author's newsletters in '93 and May '95. The drug is obtained by sacrificing a terrified person, perhaps by plunging the athame into them, and then taking a hypodermic needle and extracting the adrenalchrome from the base of the neck in the pineal gland. A sacrificed person only yields about 10 c.c. so the drug is not only very secret on the black market but very expensive. A *Scientific American* article by Carmichael and Winkler is the best thing that I have discovered on the adrenalchrome. The Max Planck Institute in Germany did research into Adrenalchrome. Dirty law-enforcement officials and others have worked to keep the existence of adrenalchrome a secret.

It is not known if Adrenalchrome has ever been used for programming, but it is a popular secret drug of the elite Illuminati kingpins. For many years, they were not able to synthetically produce the drug, and had to rely on human sacrifices as their source. It is possible that in the last year or so, that some method to synthesize the drug may have been found.

Chromaffin cells secrete adrenaline, noradrenaline and other substances into the bloodstream which exert a great deal of control over tissue, and organs.

HERBS

Another place that programmed DID Satanic Ritual Survivors may encounter herbs is the use of herbal charms to enhance magic spells.

OILS

The Illuminati have also used oils for their powerful properties. Recently, a doctor who was trained by the Freemasons has been helping people discover the powerful properties of these oils. Christians also have been rediscovering the powerful healing powers in pure Fennel, Frankincense, Juniper, Lavender, Peppermint, Pane and other cold pressed Oils and combinations of oils.

Summary of Major Point.

The guided LSD trips in the sensory deprivation tanks are crucial for laying in the foundational programming. Readers will learn more about guided LSD trips & programming drugs throughout this book.

Hypnosis

SCIENCE NO. 4 - HYPNOSIS

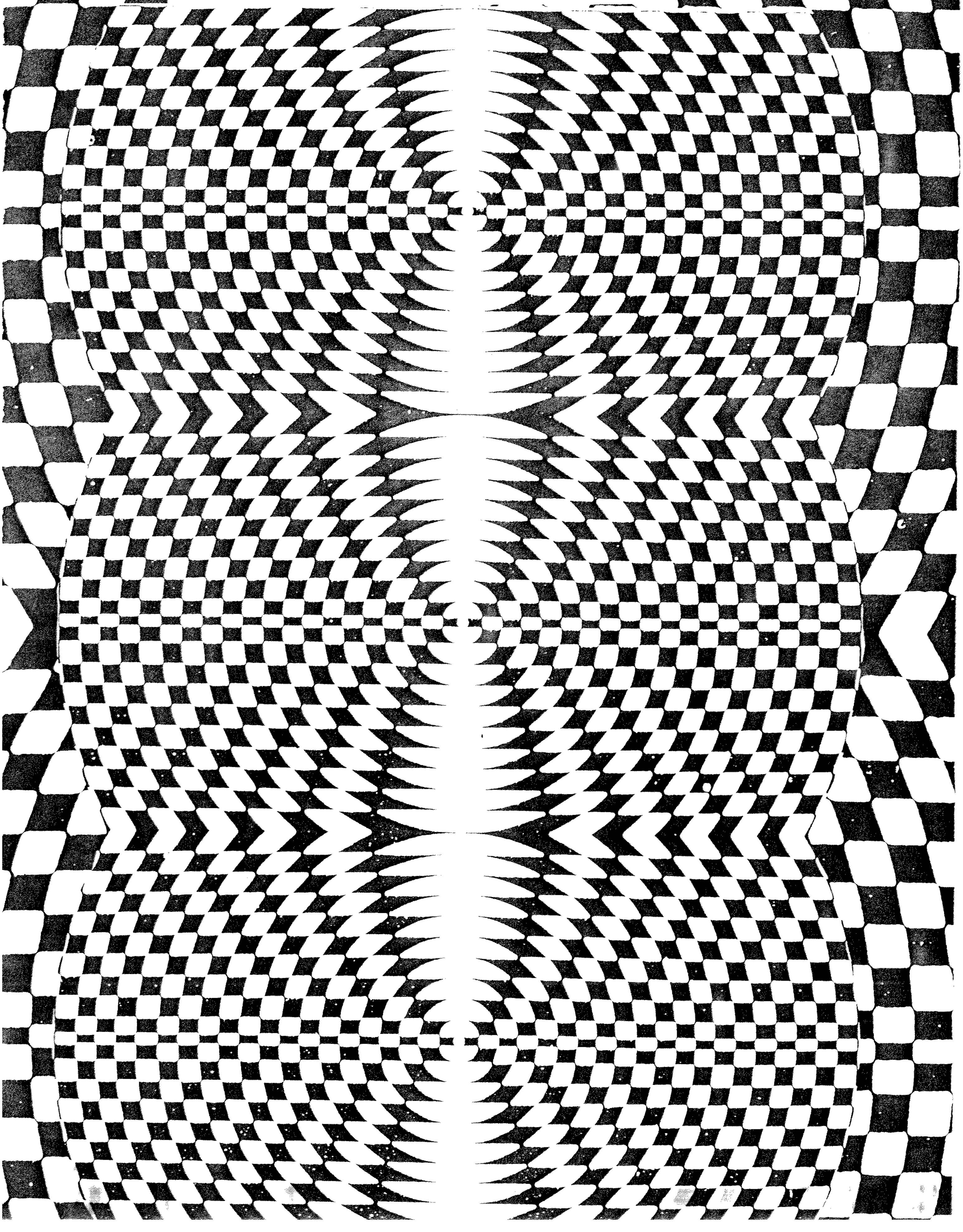

CHAPTER 4.
SCIENCE NO. 4 - HYPNOSIS

HYPNOSIS & the OCCULT

From the Egyptian Sleep Temples to ancient shamans, the occult world has been putting hypnosis (including self-hypnosis) to work for centuries, even millennia. During the 18th and 19th century, the Masonic lodges put hypnotism to use. In 1882 Jean-Martin Charcot, considered the world's greatest neurologist at the time, gave hypnotism respectability by publishing his own studies, which included recovering A. trauma memories blocked by amnesia, and B. memories presumed permanently lost by organic amnesia. At that time, a group of french medical doctors located at Nancy just a 100 kilometers southeast of the Mothers-of-Darkness castle, had a school of hypnosis that influenced doctors all over the world including Freud. These french doctors had caught on to the power of suggestion to the subconscious.

In the **1780's**, Marquis de Puysegur was putting people into deep hypnotic trances and then commanding them to forget the hypnotic session.

James Esdaile in his book *Mesmerism in India & its Practical Application in Surgery and Medicine*. (pub. Longman, Brown, Green, Longmans, **1846**) pp. xxiii-xxiv, describes and lists hundreds of surgeries (some quite serious) which he did in India using hypnosis as his anesthesia. He found his patients could heal quickly and experienced no pain under hypnosis. In modern medical history, every type of surgery has been successfully carried out without drugs and "without pain" by using hypnosis. In the *Vol. 2* book, it was brought out that perceptive researchers have figured out that the pain under hypnosis is placed by the mind into a dissociated piece of the mind, which is essentially what MPD (DID) is all about. Tests have shown that hypnosis to reduce pain **does not work** by the brain releasing endorphins (see Hilgard, 1975 & Spiegel and Leonard, 1986). The mind simply diverts the pain into a "mental floppy disk" that it doesn't look at.

In the **early 1880's**, occult researcher Edmund Gurney found he could give post-hypnotic commands that would be successfully carried out in the future. What amazed him was that subjects would fulfill commands exactly as commanded at a particular time on a particular day without even looking at the clock.

Various european doctors, too numerous to mention, discovered in the 1880's that they could cure various diseases via hypnosis. The cure rate was not 100%, but significant enough to make hypnosis an option in some treatments.

This author (Fritz) has reported that programmed multiples are able to increase the temperature of one body part, or one side of their body. Cisco, the co-author of this book, when she hits certain programs, turns ice-cold on the right of her body and burns on the left side. It was with great interest then when this author located the **1920** work of hypnotist J.A. Hadfield who published his work in *Lancet*, 2: pp. 68-69, under the title "The influence of suggestion on body temperature." Using hypnosis, Hadfield could get a subject to drop his temperature in one hand to 68° while the other hand stayed at 94°. Here is the paper trail to what they have been doing to programmed multiples for half a century.

Today, the occult world uses sophisticated hypnotic techniques as one of their programming tools to create mind-controlled slaves. The slave's mind is structured into a robotic-computer controlled by a master. Parts (alters) of the slave will learn how to trance (self-hypnosis) on cue. The better conditioned a subject is to hypnosis, the easier they fall into trance. The victims of mind-control are all very conditioned for hypnosis, even though their programmers then hide that under post-hypnotic suggestions that no-one else is to be allowed to hypnotize the slave.

The ancient saying is that a picture is worth a thousand words. In conveying suggestions to the subconscious mind, the occult world of black magic and the programmers are very aware of the power that picture images convey. The good programmer will be able to utilize images to give him tremendous leverage in hypnotic techniques. An alter which needs to create something in the mind can be prepped with images, and can be asked to borrow images, such as borrow such and such quality from this person or animal. The child alter who becomes a Lion after eating a dead lion's parts can imagine the qualities (speed, agility, fierceness) of the lion easily. The image of the lion is worth a thousand words to the hypnotic programmer. If the programmer wants an alter that is trained in karate to be agile, quick and fierce, they don't mind dehumanizing that alter to become a lion or tiger. One element of why this is done is the power of the image for hypnotic commands.

The deeper Illuminati alters will be highly skilled in self-hypnosis & the ability to change at will into various states of consciousness. This is part of their witchcraft training in order to practice witchcraft.

UNDERSTANDING THE BASICS ABOUT HYPNOSIS

The Programmer is attempting to produce suggestions that the unconscious mind will accept. If the subconscious mind accepts the programmer's suggestions then the suggestion becomes reality to the victim, just as if the victim had experienced it as reality over a period of time. The programmer, if he is good, will be able to get the subjects imagination involved. He will also build rapport with his victim. For instance, the master might hypnotically stroke the forehead of kitten sexual alters before giving them their code to go back into the mind. The good handler/programmer is not simply working off of fear, but he wants to have the trust and cooperation of the victim. This is similar to how Hitler was both feared and trusted by the German masses. In fact, hypnosis was an element in Hitler's control of the masses. Nazi propaganda films showing Hitler and other Nazi leaders giving directives always have the Hitler Youth's actions slightly speeded up so that subconsciously the viewer is taught obedience to their commands.

The programmer will not tell the slave something is hypnotically happening until it has already happened. He will use the art of timing his words at the correct time, of using repetition, of combining several mutually supporting suggestions, and of having total confidence in his words to add strength to his hypnotic commands. Muscular rigidity and deep breathing are one way to increase suggestibility within the victim being programmed via hypnosis.

The programmer will also use other hypnotic tricks, such using his own body language to suggest something, and to use what is called a "voice roll". When the programmer moves his voice into a monotonous patterned style he is using the roll voice. Words are delivered at the rate of 45 to 60 beats a minute.

To empower the suggestions, the programming hypnotist uses the victim's five senses. The victim visualizes something using his five senses, such as the imagery of the holy spirit (done in mockery of God) and then breathes this imagery in. For instance, the victim breathes in the message of the programming and roots it deep deep down into the oak tree. (In *Vol. 2*, it was explained that the oak tree is the structure that the programs are attached to.)

THE POWER OF HYPNOSIS

During the hypnotic trance, the human mind is at the pinnacle of its ability to quickly learn. What might take years to learn and weighing the evidence, will be accepted quickly by the victim's subconscious. The mind strings together a series of "cognitive mental demons" that is a series of mental processes--similar to how a computer programmer writes a program. These strings have been called K-lines. Much of what the mind does is simply activations of various K-lines (a habitual ways of doing things), so that the mind can focus its limited conscious thinking. The mind also takes micronemes (such things as a particular aroma, or a particular intonation for which it has no word, but for which it has a series of sensory clues) and builds these into K-lines too. Once a K-line works, the mind in order to prevent itself from making reckless changes, gives priority to those K-lines. Under hypnosis, the mind willingly allows the hypnotist to change K-lines without the normal unconscious conservative restraints. Under behavior modification techniques, abnormal K-lines (that is K-lines that wouldn't normally develop) can be forced into the mind.

A hypnotic suggestion given to normal subjects lasts about a week, so reinforcement is helpful. The programming suggestions are layered in using methods far more powerful than mere hypnosis, and are locked up in dissociated subconscious states, so that these programming scripts which are layered in are almost impossible for the victim to be aware of to challenge them.

The emotions of women have been found to slightly detract from the hypnotic trance, while male victims take the hypnotic words in an unemotional matter-of-fact way. The male victims will simply accept the programming and directly comply. That is one reason why the suicide programs that are layered into the men are so deadly. The female victims of programming may emotionally play the suicide out and survive; the male slaves when they trigger suicide programs, comply with the programming in an unemotional direct way.

How deep is the slave's trance? There are tests for trance depths, but from what this author can ascertain, sometimes it can be difficult to determine exactly where the mind is at. If a memory is laid in at a particular trance level, the slave may be able to avoid an abreaction later on by going above or below the memory's trance level. A deep level, where for instance, the person can't move a body part due to hypnotic suggestion, would be called the "cataleptic stage" or level.

UNDERSTANDING THE DEEPER MECHANICS of HYPNOSIS

Let us suppose for the sake of discussion that as you are reading this, it is supper time. You are hungry. You've starved yourself all day, and even though you are on a strict diet, you are trying to think of a good restaurant to go to. Now let's see, as your mind scans the different possibilities, it thinks of some that are close, some that are quick, some that have lots of easy parking and others that have good looking waitresses.

Mechanically, your thought processes went like this:

a. Particular sensations and chemicals cause the mind to feel what it mentally describes as a pang of hunger. This is perceived as an important need.

b. The mind has a process that we can call an Intention System that creates specific intention messages that are sent throughout the brain. It stores these Intentions temporarily. If an intention is not freshly created and restacked at the top of the clutter of intentions in the intention store, then it gets buried underneath the "mind cluttered desk of things to do" and forgotten. In our example, the mind is searching its memory banks for options on how to satisfy its hunger.

c. The mind must decide upon one particular course of action. The mind quits focusing on other matters, and concentrates upon deciding which course of action to take. The mind has now activated all kinds of what some researchers call "demons". Because we are not talking about spiritual demons, but rather we are referring to units of cognitive processes--

which are very similar to UNIX computer demons--we will refer to these demons by the name "cognitive demon processes." Some of these cognitive demon processes are action demons and some are word demons, and some are recognition demons. Recognition Cognitive Demon Processes go running through the mind, "shouting" the wishes of the Intention store. A number of lower level cognitive demon processes wake up and make themselves known if they identify with what the recognition demon is shouting about. Many may think they match the request, but other demon processes check them out to see how close they match. Now the checkers come up with a list of cognitive demon processes who are concerned with eating at restaurants, who have woken up and are all scrambling for attention.

Cognitive demon processes establish themselves in families, and develop relationships that are automatic. (Cognitive Demons do not die, but some go to sleep and others can get somewhat rusty in their relationships.) The "demons" that respond to the shouting of our recognition demon go through a series of "interviews" with a hierarchy of other demon processes, and soon the messenger demon can rush back to the Intention Store with the name of the choices available. All this happens extremely quick. If the mind did not set up a series of automatic cognitive demon processes that become habits, (called K-lines) it would find itself involved in the conscious relearning of trivial matters that would make it impossible to get much accomplished. Every skill would have to be constantly relearned. A person might easily end up spending all day dressing.

As long as the mind remains in a static environment, where habits work, it's great. But life is such a changing environment, that our entrenched habits can cause the mind to pull up a cognitive demonic process out of habit, when it is neither wanted nor appropriate.

Emotions and needs (which are tied to our emotions) will trigger the mind to search out cognitive demon processes. For instance, if our emotional need for someone we are looking for is great, let's say a wife waiting for a long expected war-husband, it may send a need down the brain for the cognitive demons that are attached to the identification of the long-awaited person, and the mind triggers itself to see his face in the crowd at the busy railway station before its owner arrives.

Cognitive Demon Processes live in close proximity to other demons, and when one gets excited, others in the area do too, although their excitement may be much less. If a cognitive demon is being used a great deal, it will be on its toes, but little used demons can go to sleep, and somehow need to be hollowed at very loud to wake up.

The Intention System after a while will set itself on autopilot for certain mental functions, which frees the conscious mind for other problems. The conscious mind can only focus on a small amount of material--it is like a computer which has limited memory. It is constantly in a state of redeployment, and the Intentions system has only a small sway over how the Attention part of the mind decides to focus. The Attention part constantly asks itself, which tasks can be relegated to habit. Then when the Intention system sends out cognitive search demons, they do not have to involve the conscious mind, because everything that is habitual is set up like a script, with families of "cognitive demon processes" already knowing the roles/relationships they are to play.

(Again, Behavior modification is used to strengthen the relationships of demonic processes, and to make some well used and awake, so that certain behaviors become habits.)

When our minds meditate or go into a hypnotic trance, what is occurring is that our conscious mind is delegating its limited computing memory for the focus of its attention upon one object.

What happens to the cognitive demon processes that would normally take instructions from the conscious mind? During meditation the untrained cognitive demon processes bubble up to the top of the conscious mind. However, the opposite happens during hypnosis. During hypnosis, the mind has made the decision (for whatever reasons) to accept control statements from the hypnotist. The mind has surrendered or at least temporarily or partially abdicated his or her position as the master of his or her Intention System. Some of this power is given away. The hypnotist now has access and control over many or all the cognitive demonic processes, including some that the person would not normally activate.

Cognitive demon processes that are asleep or deeply buried can be accessed by the hypnotist, in a much quicker direct way than the Intention System would. By suggesting that the subject has a cat on his lap, the hypnotist is actually causing the recognition cognitive demon processes to wake up and act out their jobs to such an extent that the subject sees a cat. By suggesting that the subject's body stiffen, the hypnotist has gained control over those cognitive action demons that cause the body to stiffen. Age-regression brings up demons that are associated with the subject's childhood.

Although it is unpopular to admit publicly that the hypnotist has power over the subject, a close look at the process of how hypnosis works at the neuronal "cognitive demon process" level shows that the hypnotist has indeed been given power. In fact, the hypnotist has been given power to activate cognitive units of demon processes that the mind itself would allow to remain inactive or asleep. The mind would not normally use its ability to activate them.

Today, it is politically incorrect to admit that the hypnotist has power to make an individual do what they wouldn't normally want to do, but unfortunately hypnosis does give this power.

PROGRAMMING AIDS

Because the programmers control the slave's life to such a high degree they can add other elements that move the brain into programmable states. Fasting along with a high sugar intake will make the brain more suggestive. (The military also used this in basic training. This was done to this author at West Point during Beast Barracks, where during the first two weeks he ate all-total enough food for one regular meal; however, New Cadets were allowed to go to chapel and eat all the brownies, cookies and kool-aid they wanted.)

Physical discomforts and the chanting of rituals in witchcraft ceremonies are also ways to move the mind into programming states. Lights, sounds (for instance repetitive beats such as with any rock music), and smells are all used to encourage the brain to go into a programmable state.

In the chapter on electronics, it discusses how the functions of the mind-body such as breathing and the heartbeat can be regulated by external stimuli ---that is lights and sounds which are electronically produced. If the repetitive beat is ranged between 45 to 72 beats per minute, many people will go into a programmable state with their eyes open. This is because this beat is close to the beat of the heart in a relaxed state. Some secret Illum. programming centers have areas that are constructed for the greatest hypnotic sound and lighting effect. The child/ or adult victim is cut off from the world at these programming centers. The victims' freedom to walk outside into normal life depends upon their cooperation with the programmer(s).

Lullaby music is used as a cue for some alters of slaves to induce trance when their systems are older because the child alters still respond to the cue. Anything can be a cue, but it appears the programmers often pick cues that are naturally reinforced by the mind. The lullaby or carousel music is a good cue, because the lullaby is taking advantage of the natural desire of the brain to retreat from reality to the nostalgia of childhood fun. The retreat of the mind to childhood naturally evokes the helplessness and dependence that a child feels. The programmers are powerful enough to place in cues that don't need natural reinforcement, but from observation it is apparent that they will often skillfully strengthen the hypnotic power by the choice of a cue which carries its own natural reinforcement.

One supporting element in programming is that the programmer sets himself up as "god the creator" of the victim, or an alien of a far-advanced race. In hypnotism, this fulfills the need that all hypnotic subjects must have faith and trust in their hypnotist. Hypnosis is subjective in nature. If the programmer is the creator of the alter being programmed, and the alter is additionally under a hypnotic drug that makes it willing to obey, it is easy to see how the victim lets go of all inhibitions, because "god" or this "superior alien" knows what is best. The better and stronger the relationship between the victim and his master programmer, the better the hypnotic commands work. If the slave sees the master as a religious guru prophet (or a great doctor) it enhances his willingness to accept hypnotic commands. Bear in mind that the slave is conditioned to love their master without reservation. Yes, the benevolent dictator has historically received the devotion of the masses, (and many of the Illuminati programmers are actually simply egotistical sadists).

USING HOLOGRAMS as an ACCESS AID

The Illuminati is now even resorting to creating talking hologram images to access their slaves with their hypnotic cues.

KEEPING THE MIND IN ALPHA STATE

The entire alter system of a Monarch slave has their sleep patterns controlled. Many alters are programmed not to get real sleep. They actually sleep in a hypnotic alpha-state sleep, or what may be called trance sleep. Hypnotists (and brain researchers) will tell you that true sleep and a hypnotic sleep are not the same thing for the brain. Some alters (but not many) must stay awake 24 hours a day internally and carefully watch all that happens in the system of alters. Someone has to take the body and sleep--but whichever alters are set up to do it, they are hypnotically commanded to only sleep about three hours to insure that the mind stays in an alpha state easy to program. Because alters which do not hold the body "rest" mentally in a sense--when they take the body they are fresh.

The mind dissociates when it is given unpleasant things to hear which it doesn't want to hear. The electronic implants that send voices to victims are used to create dissociation within the slaves, plus certain implants and devices send specific electromagnetic wave patterns to the mind to put the slave's mind into the alpha state.

See chapter six for more on the mind-control implants.

PREPARING THE BRAIN

The programmer places the victim in an acute state of anxiety and guilt. The tension reduces the power of the judgement part of the mind. One of the tortures for slaves is to keep them from going to the bathroom and relieving themselves. This is part of the hypnotic programming package. The anxiety that this creates increases the power of the programming in the brain, because the anxiety causes slight malfunctions with the brain's judgment abilities. Mental and physical fatigue are also sought in the victim. For instance, water deprivation is common. (This was also done to the author at West Point, where one of this author's classmates was hospitalized for dehydration during Beast Barracks.) Offensive language also helps drive the mind into tension and encourages it into an alpha state.

EARLY TRAINING FOR SLAVES

The children **who are being programmed** are taught 4 IMPORTANT HYPNOTIC ABILITIES. These four abilities are a. relaxation, b. visualization, c. concentration, and d. projection, which work in handling the slave along with the alpha state.

Relaxation and visualization go hand in hand each enhancing each other. When given a good pleasant image to visualize, the victim relaxes, which leads to the hypnotic concentration, which then produces good projection.

Initially, the child victim is given drugs that induce euphoria and deep relaxation. They are then taught to work toward that drug euphoria by going to it mentally. They develop the ability to go into that euphoria mentally as a trained behavior.

Many of the children will have their training in visualization and concentration reinforced when they go to public schools, many of which are now involved in the programming process.

To teach the child concentration and visualization, the child is given an apple and trained to visualize it. The first time, the child will be given drugs which will enhance the experience and perception greatly to around 100 times the perception without the drugs. There is no pain involved in this early programming at around the age of 3 or 4. After the child has gone through the visualization of the apple in the drugged state he or she will work toward the mental ability to visualize it intensely without the drugs. The visualization script used with the apple (in both the drugged and undrugged exercises) will vary slightly from programmer to programmer, yet will be close to the following: "VISUALIZE AN APPLE. HOLD IT IN YOUR HANDS; TURN IT AROUND; FEEL IT. FEEL THE SHAPE, THE SIZE, THE WEIGHT, THE TEXTURE. NOTICE THE COLOR, THE REFLECTION OF LIGHT ON ITS SKIN. BRING IT TO YOUR NOSE AND SMELL IT. BITE INTO IT, TASTE IT; HEAR THE CRUNCH AS YOUR TEETH SINK IN. EAT THE APPLE; FEEL IT SLIDE DOWN YOUR THROAT. SEE IT GROW SMALLER. WHEN YOU HAVE EATEN IT DOWN TO THE CORE, LET IT DISAPPEAR."

By the way, an apple training incident very similar to this (which is given by the Illuminati to child slaves from the ages 2 to 4), strangely turned up occurring in a setting that the author, who never was a slave nor never in the occult, found himself in when this author was a 4-H counselor at a 4-H camp as a 16 year old. The first thing all the counselors were given was an apple exercise so that we could appreciate each camper for what he or she was. The person who led the exercise was a psychologist. Where had he learned it?

The apple visualization must be done to a standard of excellence by the child victim. The victim's life depends upon learning to visualize vividly, so that the internal structures (internal mental images) it builds within the mind will stay strong and firm. The programmers want the child to have good visualization so they will work with the child to have the most successful experience. For instance, the child will be offered a variety of apples to look at, yellow, green, red etc. The child can choose the apple that it likes so that its visualization exercises will be the most successful.

The entire imagery of an internal system will be built upon the foundation of the child's ability to visualize an apple. The child will be taken through a succession of exercises where the child learns to visualize the apple in greater and greater detail using all the senses. Eventually, the child is able to visualize his or her apple to the point that the child can dissect or chop the apple up in any way and reconstruct it mentally. The internal seeds of the apple can be seen brilliantly by the child. Upon this ability to visualize, the programmer will then teach the child that the apple can become anything the child wants, a river, a couch, a book etc. The five seeds of the apple will be turned into 5 castles. This is why essentially all Illuminati Mind-controlled slaves have 5 **major** castles in their system of programming.

One approach by therapists has been to cast out/remove the castles. However, the castle imagery is based upon the apple seeds which is based on the apple. The real thing to deal with for therapists is the apple. If the castle is returned to its original image of being an apple seed, and the rest of the apple-and its tree imagery dealt with, then some progress can be made. Unfortunately, not being aware of the original imagery, the therapists have been frustrating themselves with the superficial imagery rather than the foundational imagery.

Another script for teaching the young 2 to 4 year old slaves simple visualization is to have the child close his or her eyes and imagine that they are looking at a white wall or blank screen. Then they practice visualizing simple geometric shapes, and then visualize the screen in different colors, and then finally visualize the objects changing colors.

MAGICAL TRAINING ON THE STARLIGHT LEVEL

The Illuminati begin training the child victim to work at the starlight level. This is called magical training. The child's abilities to relax, visualize, concentrate and project are then harnessed in the alpha state by "MAGICKAL TRAINING" which opens up the STARLIGHT CONSCIOUSNESS. Starlight consciousness is the other way of knowing that which belongs to the right hemisphere, and it allows the victim to make contact with the "DIVINE WITHIN". The Divine within the victim is actually the generational spirits, which are placed in during the Moon Child ceremonies described in detail in *Vol. 2.*

The generational spirits are laid in to help build the programming and to guard it. However, as in so much spiritual work, the victim's (technically speaking, the alter's) will & thoughts work hand in hand with the spirits. The child must learn to visualize and participate in the mental building of the internal worlds, structures, etc. However, the demons will be strategically placed to protect the structures once the programming is built into the mind. (For more understanding of this see Cisco's section on "Programming, foundational, destruction of".)

FINETUNING.

The child victim's mind is FINETUNED. This means that the child can function excellently at visualization, relaxation, concentration, projection, while in the alpha state and can work with their subconscious mind. The mental work done in the subconscious can not be retrieved easily. Only through outside assistance or special training can most people access what is done at the starlight level of the mind. The programmers are using the child's abilities with its 5 acute senses to develop the 6th sense (which is its ability to work in the Starlight consciousness, which includes such mental activity such as psychic abilities--which will be discussed in other locations in this book.) Enhancing the mind so that it can work in the subconscious area called the starlight consciousness is referred to by many insiders as astral.

THE MONARCH PROGRAMMING SCRIPT FOR OVER THE RAINBOW

One of the most important concepts of the programmers is having slaves "go over the rainbow." Although in recent years other methods have been substituted for this, there are many hundreds of thousands of slaves for whom "going over the rainbow" is part of their programming. What is the script for programming this?

The PROGRAMMING SCRIPT FOR GOING OVER THE RAINBOW. (Three dots in this script do not indicate missing parts, but rather pauses. In other words, pauses are indicated by three dots.)

INDUCTION TRAINING SCRIPT

"BREATHE DEEP---YOU ARE FLOATING DOWN...DOWN...ON A BEAUTIFUL RED CLOUD, AND YOUR WHOLE BODY IS RED--AS YOU GO DRIFTING AND FLOATING...ROCKING GENTLY...DEEPER...AND

DEEPER...DOWN...[this repeated, one time, for each color of cloud-orange, yellow, green, blue, and violet clouds.]
"LAND VERY GENTLY...VERY SOFTLY...IN THE CENTER OF A ROUND, BLACK PEARL. SEE IT GLOWING, SOFTLY, GENTLY...
NOW TURN AND FACE THE EAST...
AND THEN THE SOUTH...
AND THEN THE WEST...
AND THEN THE NORTH.
OPEN ALL OF YOUR INNER SENSES."
[The rainbow gives the much abused victim of mind-control and trauma, a safe mental place to travel to; and this serves as a "home base" for the mind to return to when things get difficult. If the programming begins to be destroyed and a deeper alter experiences real life--its coping mechanism to face the harsher realities of life will be a knee-jerk reaction to go to safety over the rainbow.]

BRINGING THE SLAVE OUT OF TRANCE (Switching to the FRONT PERSONALITIES after programming)

After the slave has been switched to deeper personalities who are in trance in order to have the slave a. be programmed b. be programmed & carry out a mission, c. go to a ritual, then it is important that the programmer takes time to get the slave to emerge slowly and gently from their altered state. The induction process is reversed. The repetition of trances will reinforce the depth of the trance state, and keep the undetectable slavery operating smoothly:

"IN THE PEARL, PREPARE TO AWAKEN. WHEN YOU AWAKE, YOU WILL FEEL REFRESHED, ALERT, RENEWED, AND FILLED WITH ENERGY. YOU WILL REMEMBER ALL THAT YOU HAVE EXPERIENCED. NOW TURN AND FACE THE EAST...THEN THE SOUTH...THEN THE WEST...THEN THE NORTH. [this helps the slave orient themselves internally]
TAKE A DEEP BREATH ...INHALE ...EXHALE...

"YOU ARE FLOATING UP....UP...ON A BEAUTIFUL VIOLET CLOUD, AND YOUR WHOLE BODY IS VIOLET AS YOU DRIFT GENTLY UPWARD...

"ON A BEAUTIFUL BLUE CLOUD...UP...UP...AND YOUR WHOLE BODY IS BLUE AND YOU ARE BEGINNING TO AWAKEN GENTLY AND YOU DRIFT GENTLY UP...
ON A BEAUTIFUL GREEN CLOUD...AND YOUR WHOLE BODY IS GREEN...AS YOU DRIFT GENTLY...UP...UP...

"ON A BEAUTIFUL YELLOW CLOUD...GETTING MORE AND MORE AWAKE...AND YOUR WHOLE BODY IS YELLOW...AS YOU DRIFT GENTLY...UP...UP...

"ON A BEAUTIFUL ORANGE CLOUD...FILLED WITH ENERGY AND VITALITY...YOUR WHOLE BODY IS ORANGE...AS YOU FLOAT UP GENTLY...

"ON A BEAUTIFUL RED CLOUD...ALMOST FULLY AWAKE NOW...AND YOUR WHOLE BODY IS RED AS YOU FLOAT GENTLY...

"STAY ON THE RAINBOW...[at this point the script for the slave's programming or mission or ritual will be placed into the mind].

After the programming session, the mission, or the ritual the handler/or programmer finishes...
"LEAVING THE MEMORY IN THE BLACK PEARL AND CLOSING AND SEALING THE BLACK PEARL. YOU WILL REMEMBER ONLY THOSE DETAILS THAT I TELL YOU TO REMEMBER.
AND IN A MOMENT YOU WILL COUNT TO TEN AND GO BACK INTO YOUR

SPACE, AND RED 2001-A [whatever the code is for the alter] WILL RETURN."

DEEP TRANCE PROGRAMMING

If we rate trance depths on a scale of 1 to 13, then the deep trance that is being described here is 7-10. At this 7-10 depth, the person must be constantly watched. The victim is turned on his side so that the victim will continue to breathe. If the person monitoring has doubts whether the slave is alive, the programming staff will poke the lungs and neck. The person's breathing will be encouraged by the programmer breathing along with the person being programmed as he says "BREATHE...BREATHE...BREATHE". This is important because at this level the slave is so tranced their body can forget to breathe.

COLOR PROGRAMMING

While we are still on the subject of the rainbow and its colors, and before we continue onto other parts of the hypnotic programming process, let's deal with color programming.

When Illuminati slaves are being programmed as little children, they usually will get music and color programming.

Most readers are like this author, in that they are not interested in learning magic. However, because this author (Fritz Springmeier) was interested in helping victims understand what's been done to them, it was important to dive into trying to understand the thinking of the occult world in regards to colors. If I write that the occult world views yellow as a healing color, and blue as a relaxing color, and purple (violet) as a spiritually enlightened color, that is not because I want to teach that as a doctrine, but so that therapists can begin to understand the hidden mannerisms & thought patterns of these powerful generational occult families, who believe in such odd practices as child sacrifice.

In the 1940's, as the Illuminati were applying scientific investigation to their ancient skills in mind-control, a number of researchers investigated color psychology. Cecil Stokes' color research on the influence of colors on the mind led to the Auratone films, which were used to treat the "mentally ill".

Walt Disney Studios produced one of the best occult attempts to free associate color, light and music in their movie *Fantasia*, especially *Fantasia*'s opening selection of Stokowski's adaption of Bach's "*Toccata and Fugue in D minor*". Walt Disney also used selections of music from the Satanist composer Igor Stravinsky in *Fantasia* . Igor Stravinsky is an anarchy-espousing satanist. *Fantasia* was a long labor of occult devotion for Walt Disney and his studios. It took many years to create the film, and when it was finished, it was used as a programming foundation for alter systems. (Chapter 5 will have more on Disney. **Chapter 5 will also give a very detailed script for HOW Fantasia has been used as the primary foundation programming tool.**)

Disney's Dick Tracy movie is also a classic example of how color is employed in a movie which is used covertly for mind-control programming.

The five primary areas of occult thinking that were investigated by this author in terms of color programming were 1. witchcraft books such as Raymond Buckland's *Practical Color Magick*, 2. an extensive study of several New Age Groups such as the I AM Movement, and Church Universal & Triumphant (CUT) using hundreds of documents that ex-insiders of these groups provided, 3. masonic & rosicrucian sources, such as Manly P. Hall's book *The Secret Teachings of All Ages*, and 4. Metaphysical books in general such as the excellent *The Rainbow Book being a collection of essays & illustrations devoted to Rainbows in particular & Spectral Sequences in general focusing on the meaning of color (physical & metaphysically) from Ancient to Modern Times*. The Rainbow Book was done by the Fine Arts Museums of San Francisco in assoc. with Shambhala of

Berkeley & London, 1975. And finally, the last primary source -but not least- was interviews with an ex-programmer.

What did I find out? After lots of weeding, I have some siftings from these sources to share. In Buckland's *Practical Color Magick*, we learn about a type of Voodoo called Poppet dolls. These dolls are made according to the color that is appropriate for the person's problem. For instance, they make a green poppet doll if the person needs help with finances. The name of the person is written on the doll according to the color that corresponds to their astrological birthdate. For instance, Leo is orange, and Pisces is Indigo.

Those who need success are advised by Buckland to make a "Color Treasure Map" which is simply a collage of the things they want, making sure that the pictures are bright colors. This is another example of color magic.

Buckland provides a Color-Number Code as follows:

1=Red; 2=Orange; 3=Yellow; 4=Green; 5=Blue; 6=Indigo; 7=Violet; 8=Rose; 9=Gold

The letters of the alphabet then are corresponded to these 9 numbers and by adding up the numbers in someone's name (numerology), Buckland tells us we can get the name's Color from such a process.

What did I learn of value from Buckland? some tips on how occultists assign colors to numbers and objects. For the average person these witchcraft teachings are simply trite imaginations. Even so, the fact remains for those of us confronting Occult mind-control, colors are important to total-mind-control programmers of the Illuminati. Colors are important to their world-view.

A programmer who knew color magic would likely use color magic in their programming, programming scripts and codes. Now, both you and I know some more about how to second guess the programmer's mind. (By the way, Color programming was dealt with in a major way in *Vol. 2*, but the tips in this chapter may also be useful.)

THE ASSOCIATION OF COLORFUL SIGHTS, SOUNDS, RHYTHM & DANCE.

Dance has been associated with color from ancient times, to greek and medieval courts up to modern times with the use of colored floodlights.

Keys in music have been associated with colors by many famous musicians. Beethoven referred to B minor as the black key. Schubert compared E minor to a "girl robed in white with a rose-red bow on her breast". Rimsley-Korsakov interpreted the keys of C,D,A,F, & F# major as white, yellow, rosy, green, and grayish-green. Handel had his own idea of how the keys related to the colors.

The brighter hues of a color have been associated by some with the major scale, and the more subdued hues of a color with the minor. Goethe stated that a painting of powerful effect was like a piece of music with a sharp key, while a painting with a muted effect was like music in a flat key.

Certain colors have been associated with violin music. In Wassily Kandinsky's book *The Art of Spiritual Harmony*, we learn a great deal about color and music. The following comes from Kandinsky's observations, and may relate to Mengele's programming. The ringing notes of a violin have been associated with a cool red. The largo of an old violin is associated with orange. The placid middle tones of the violin are associated with absolute green. A dark blue is like a cello. White is like the pauses in music that temporarily break the melody. Black represents "the final pauses, after which any continuation of melody see the dawn of another world."

The Rainbow Book is definitely the most comprehensive book this author has seen on the significance of color both physically and metaphysically.

An interesting chart is given on page 125, which examines the relationship of the frequencies of electromagnetic waves in the visible light spectrum with an octave of music just above middle C. In order to make the

comparison (which is charted below) the light frequencies which are 10^{12} are written without the powers of ten and taken down 40 to match the note octaves. This gives us a chart which we will arrange by:
COLOR/ORIG. FREK - 40//OCTAVE FREK/NOTE

Using this arrangement we get:
very dark red/391.3 = 392/G NOTE
darkish red/418 = 415/G# note
orangish red/445 = 440/A note
light orange/464 = 466/A # note
yellow green/495 = 494/B note
green/ 523 = 523/ C note
bluish green/555 = 553/ C# note
Indigo/573-600 = 587/D note
Indigo violet-light violet/618-627 = D# note
Dark violet/655-673 = 659/E note
Very dark violet/682 = 698/F note

Although there is no single one-to-one correspondence between music and color, because there are different patterns to consider and the role of association is such a complex issue, there are several things that naturally suggest themselves: an increase in pitch does seem to suggest an increase in brightness. An increase in brightness also is suggested by an increase in tempo. Colors also fit the mood of a piece of music. A mass of color can suggest the musical ground.

Musical intervals have also been related by the ancients to the orbits of the planets. This began with the spherical theory of the cosmos by Pythagoras, where the different astrological bodies made different sounds.

Another correspondence with merit is to associate colors with "properties", & then associate with music intervals, then assoc. with related cords, and related planets, and then associate with other things.

For instance, Orange would be associated with the Sun, Energy, Glory, and Power. In turn, it would be associated with Re (pronounced "Ray" in music, the whole tone, D). Its related cord would be minor, and its related planet would be the Sun "Apollo."

Violet would be death, separation, advanced spirituality. It would be associated with Ti ("Tee") in music, the Maj. 7th, B, and its related planet would be the moon "Diana".

There is no way all the different associations can be reviewed here. The chinese have had a number of music-color association schemes, as well as the Hindis, the Tibetans, and others.

Is this section on color going somewhere with these associations? Yes, Joseph Mengele, the original Dr. Green (the name Green got passed on to a least one of his proteges), played the violin and piano while doing the color programming to slaves. He was the original master at associating both a tone or chord with a particular color or color scheme. He loved using Fantasia for programming.

LIGHT & COLOR

According to Hilton Hotema's book *Ancient Sun God* (Mokelumne Hill, CA: Health Research, 1956), light & fire are associated with Sun worship. "Pyra" is Greek for fire, and "Midos" means measure. Pyramid is a combination of the greek words pyra and midos, which together meant "light-measures". In other words, the pyramid was the eternal ascending flame, the spark returning to its maker. The eternal flame of Prometheus is a recurrent theme within all the modern revolutions (which by the way were all created secretly by the occult hierarchy).

The Tower of Babel most likely followed the pattern which the ancient babylonian cylinders say was used by the Babylonians in building their temples. Each level was dedicated to one of the 7 planets, and was built in that color. In other words the Tower of Babel looked like a rainbow. The lowest was to Saturn and was black. The next was to Jupiter and was orange. The next was to Mars and was red. The fourth was the sun and was yellow. The fifth was Venus and was green. The sixth was Mercury and was blue, and the top or seventh level would be white.

A good example of color programming and a New Age group which is involved with Illuminati/government mind-control is Church Universal & Triumphant. In the *Covert Action Information Bulletin*, No. 30, Summer, 1988, Church Universal & Triumphant was exposed as a conduit of CIA funds. Another clue as to how CUT connects in is that Elizabeth Clare Prophet, CUT's prophetess, speaks in Masonic Temples. E.C. Prophet claims she is Marie Antoinette. (One of the first Illuminati programs that this author ran into when working with programmed multiples was Marie Antoinette programming.) Another obvious CIA asset (who is not part of CUT) has been directing implant victims to go to CUT and solve their implant problem by seeking the "I AM force" within them. (The I AM is a system programmed into slaves.)

Initiates into CUT have received a letter, "Keeper of the Flame: the need for harmony and love between all the master's servants united in a common effort cannot be overemphasized. Working and serving together, we form a mandala of light through which the masters of the Great White Brotherhood will awaken humanity." (Quote from a letter by CUT Chairman of the Outreach Committee Michael Veys to CUT's Fraternity of the Keepers of the Flame, c. 1980.)

Elizabeth Claire Prophet's "Fraternity of Keepers of the Flame" as she calls her initiates learn such things as astrology, crystals, white magic, color magic, Hinduism (reincarnation, karma, meditation, chakra points), how to decree, how to dress (for instance what color to where at what time), and how to become divine at Summit University.

Elizabeth Clare Prophet (that's the name she wanted) established Summit University, and CUT's headquarters in Colorado Springs, a house in Santa Barbara, and an underground fortress for the end times in a valley in Montana. Details about Elizabeth Clare Prophet and her organization are hard to come by. If a person gets serious about being part of her organization, they are expected to make a once in a life-time gift of everything they have to the CUT and its head Elizabeth Clare Prophet. (Sources: Notes, Summit University Student and Confidential Interview.) After that they are expected to tithe (one-tenth). *Church Universal and Triumphant Tenets*, Colorado Springs, CO: 1975, p.12 under Art. XII Law of the Tithe. In return, they are initiated into what I call "the supreme Grand Flattery", "You shall become an enlightened God."

One of the programming tricks by the Mind-control programmers is to have some of the alters, incl. front alters believe that they are divine gods. Although members are told they are divine, when people on E.C. Prophet's staff got revelations from the Ascended Masters that she channels, she threatened to expel them if they talked about their revelations. E.C. Prophet does not want any one else to prophecy in her organization. CUT makes their mind-controlled slaves think that they are too smart and intuitive to ever be deceived. In this way, they use New Age ideas and the person's pride to blind them to the fact the person is a mind-controlled slave who is fooled much of the time.

When students are invited onto staff it is a commitment. They are told, "Your life will never be your own again, but was it ever your own?" They have already been taught "Ascension Keys". Elizabeth Clare Prophet tells her students that to Ascend to Godhead is their birthright, the divine right of every person. (see *Pearls of Wisdom*, Vol. X, No. 23, June 4, 1967, The Summit Lighthouse, p. 41 - "...has robbed men of the birthright of their Ascension...") This matches what the Illuminati teach their people.

See also *Pearls of Wisdom*, Vol. X, No. 19, (May 7, 1967), The Summit Lighthouse, p. 24 - "The Divine Right is the Immortal Plan...Inherent pattern of unique Christ manifestation..."

In the *Ascension Dossier of Serapis Bey* initiates are told "The capacity of the externalized self must be given in toto." Also- "You must abandon your past to God." In Lanello's Message(a channeled message), 4/20/73 the students are told, "You do not have to wait for the carnal mind to evolve, for the carnal mind will never evolve. It must be put off and cast into the Flame." (See Lanello 4/20/73 in the *Pearls of Wisdom*, Vol. 16, #32, 8/12/1973.)

After emptying themselves of all their past and of what they knew, the initiates are then restructured by CUT.

In Serapis, Ascension Class they are told, "The Ascension Flame is the Flame of Mother."

SPECIAL COLORS

It can't be overemphasized that Green is the highest color in Satanism--it is Satan's color. It is not by accident that green has been used in uniforms, although the decision also was dictated by its advantage in camouflage. In the Omega computer programming a CODE GREEN for many victims means "self-destruct", the ultimate sacrifice for one's satanic programming.

Interviews with witches, as well as a person in witchcraft who the Masons tried to recruit, and an ex-member of CUT, and an ex-member of similar New Age group called the I AM movement reveals that they all wear special colors of clothes on certain days. Due to the large influx of new converts, it has been difficult for CUT to keep up the teachings on wearing different colored clothing during different times of the day, and for different days. Newer converts may be unaware of this teaching. The colors of purple and white are especially esteemed.

The magical properties that Masons & New Agers believe are intrinsic to purple is why the 33rd degree has written books using purple, and several New Agers have published books on purple paper. The programmers also manipulate such things so that child alters believe that color "magic" has accomplished things.

HEALING BY CORRECT VIBRATIONS & RAYS

Masonic Sources match CUT teachings-

- "The second method of healing was by vibration. The inharmonies of the bodies were neutralized by chanting spells and intoning the sacred names or by playing upon musical instruments and singing. Sometimes articles of various colors were exposed to the sight of the sick, for the ancients recognized, at least in part, the principle of color therapeutics, now in the process of rediscovery." *Masonic Hermetic Qabbalistic & Rosicrucian Symbolical Philosophy*, p. CXI

- "50. "The force of the obligation is therefore in the obligation and not in the reason. As a matter of fact, the real reason is scientific to the last analysis; scientific to a degree beyond the penetration, up to the present time, of the 'radiant matter' of the Roentgen Ray of Modern Science. The Word concerns the science of rhythmic vibrations, and is the key to the equilibrium of all forces and to the harmony of Eternal Nature." *Ancient Mystic Oriental Masonry*, p.48.

USING HYPNOSIS TO HEAL THE SLAVE AFTER ABUSE.

Sometimes the handlers "TRADE DOWN" the symptoms that result from abuse so that the slave will heal quicker, others attempt to remove the symptoms immediately. For burns, the hypnotist can suggest cooling. For other injuries, suggestions for warmth are applied. For bleeding suggestions for stopping blood flow are used.

REINFORCING THE PROGRAMMING WITH A DECOGNITION PROCESS

The programmer has gotten the results that he wants via drugs, torture, hypnosis, and deception. Now he must build in back-ups to insure the programming holds up.

The decognition process has 3 steps.

Step 1 is to program the slave to get inadequate sleep, eat poorly, and work hard. This is called REDUCTION OF ALERTNESS.

Step 2 is to create confusion in the mind via programmed confusion using a series of alters. The person may go into revolving from one alter to another, or may have alters coming and going with conflicting messages so that the person remains in a PROGRAMMED CONFUSED STATE. In military "training" conflicting orders would be rapidly issued to confuse the mind.

Step 3 is to cause the mind to have something simple to focus on so that it goes into a FLAT STATE. In the military, this author became aware that the beat of the drum and marching would shift the mind to a flat state. For centuries the military have known that they could shut off the critical thinking of the mind and put their soldiers into a flat, non-thinking state by training them to the beat of the drum and the sound of marching feet. Now you know why those British Red-coats marched so non-thinking into the barrels of American guns in battles such as New Orleans and Bunker Hill. The mind feels good to shift into this simple flat state. The brain quits thinking and withdraws into a state that it quits thinking except for what the controllers want it to think. This is why marching has been so important in military training. Chanting and singing will also move the mind into this flat state, which is why the French Foreign Legion requires its men to sing sing sing.

When this author lived in the Indian subcontinent, I saw Hindu holy men who had meditated in a flat alpha state so long their brains no longer functioned in anything but a flat state. This non-thinking flat state is believed by Hindus to be nirvana, but God didn't give us minds to throw away and waste, but to use. He gave us independent thoughts so that we could show our love for Him by choosing to love Him. God didn't want brainwashed followers, which is what some of the churches think God is calling for.

The programmers can induce a mood or state of mind hypnotically which will make retrieval of something learned dependent upon going into that particular mood or state.

And THE BEAT GOES ON...

It is clear that some of the psychologists have NOT got wind that the mind-control is being exposed. The *American Journal of Clinical Hypnosis* had a recent article (10/1996, p. 105-114) promoting the use of the Wizard of Oz metaphor in hypnosis with "treatment-resistent" children. For a therapist/hypnotist to hypnotically use Wizard of Oz material on child victims of mind-control will get a response from them! The authors of the article say that they use the authoritarian approach to hypnosis (p. 107) for "treatment-resistent" children. The Wizard of Oz metaphor is given on page 108 of the article, which boils down to: the Staw Man, Tin Man, Lion, Dorothy and Toto were surprised at their success- and that they already had brains, a heart, & courage.

HYPNOTIC CODES, CUES AND TRIGGERS

This chapter will provide some more of the hypnotic codes, cues, triggers or whatever one wants to call these words, noises, and sensory inputs that manipulate these poor victims turned into Monarch robots. The reader is encouraged to refer to *Vol. 2* for the principle list of codes. Other chapters will explain about the structures these codes go to, and also the spiritual dimensions of these codes and structures. Another way to see things is to recognize that the programmers have created "power words" to which they have attached memory and programming. If a de-programmer observes closely the word usage of the victim, you will begin to spot power words of the abuser, for instance, "follow the yellow brick road".

Unfortunately, people who are not initiated into the arcane world of handshakes, grips, codes, signals and cues allow the appearance of these things to be interpreted from their own frame of reference. Usually, because these events are not perceived as being significant, outsiders forget them immediately and therefore remain oblivious to some of the most overt clues. Once the reader is aware of the types of programming themes used: the Wizard of Oz, Alice In Wonderland, and Star Wars and Star Trek, etc., he will begin to realize our entire American culture has been transformed into one big mind-control programming center during the second half of the twentieth century!

Unfortunately for the victim, apparently harmless little things, for instance, the arrival of flowers to their hospital bedside, a dead bird on their doorstep, or the words "NEW BEGINNINGS" and "NEW LIFE" may signify programming commands. One Illuminati slave in this area has started a large church called NEW BEGINNINGS. The name was not by accident.

A cipher is when symbols are used to represent letters. One can use letter frequencies to break ciphers. There are charts for letter frequencies for the chief languages. Likewise, there are frequencies to codewords. The Illuminati's intelligence agencies have programmed thousands upon thousands of slaves. There are only so many code words to pick from and some of these code words are favorites. In the previous book many of their favorite code words were listed, but words starting with A's, B's, T's, U's, V's, W's, X's, and Y's, were not given and will be now. (A plus sign indicates other words are attached to the root word.)

From the co-author Fritz Springmeier's experience, **the following is a continuation of favorite code words that have been used to program slaves with**: AARON, ABBY, ABIGAIL, ABLE, ABNER, ABRAHAM, ACACIA, ACE, ADAM, ADELPHI, AGATE, AIR +, ALABASTER, ALADIN, ALBERT, ALFA or ALPHA, ALICE, ALLEY CAT, ALLIGATOR, AMOS, AMY, ANGEL, ANNA, ANTHONY, APACHE, APOLLO, APOSTLE, APPLE +, ARCHER, ARGUS, ARK, ARROW, ASK +, ASTER, ATLANTIS, ATLAS, AUDREY, AURORA, AUTUMN +, AZTEC, B +, BABE, BABY, BACK ROOM, BACK BONE, BAD, BAKER, BALD, BAMBI, BANANA, BANJO, BANKNOTE, BARBARA, BARK, BARON, BEACH +, BEAST, BECKY, BEE HIVE, BEETHOVEN, BELSHAZZER, BERMUDA, BERTHA, BETA, BETSY, BETTY, BEULAH, BEWITCH, BICYCLE, BIG BROTHER, BINGO, BIRD DOG, BIRTHDAY, BLACK, BLACK +, BLACK SHEEP, BLACK WIDOW, BLANCA, BLONDIE, BLOODHOUND, BLOODY +, BLUE +, BOA, BOB CAT, BOMBAY, BONANZA, BOODLE, BORAX, BOXCAR, BRASS +, BRIDGET, BROOMSTICK, BUCCANEER, BUICK, BULL, BULLDOG, BULLFROG, BUMBLEBEE, BUNNY, BUTTERCUP, BUZZARD, BYRON, T-BIRD, TADPOLE, TALISMAN, TAN, TANGO, TANYA, TARA, TARZAN, TEACUP, TEARDROP, TEEPEE, TERRIER, TERRY, TESTAMENT, THOR, THREE SISTERS, THUNDER, THUNDERBOLT, THUNDERCLAP, THUNDERFLASH, THUNDERSTORM, TIAMET, TIGER, TILLIE, TITAN, TOM CAT, TONI or TONY, TOPAZE, TOPSOIL, TORNADO, TOTENKOPF, TRINITY, TURTLE, UGLY, ULYSSES, UMBRELLA, UNCLE +, UNDERDOG, UNICORN, UNIFORM, URSULA, VAGABOND, VAMPIRE, VANCOUVER, VARSITY, VELVET, VENUS, VERONICA, VICKY, VICTOR, VIKING, VIOLA, VIOLET, VIPER, VIRGINIA, VOODOO, VULCAN, VULTURE, WAGON WHEEL, WALDORF, WALLFLOWER, WANDA, WARRIOR, WASP, WATCHDOG, WEASEL, WHISKEY, WHITE +, WIDOW, WILD CAT, WILLOW, WINNIE, WINTER +, WIZARD, WOLF, WOLF +, WYOMING, X-FORCE, X-RAY, XYZ, YANKEE, YANKEE DOODLE, YELLOW, YOGI, & YO YO.

The intelligence organizations prefer to code a single project with a single word, and an ongoing operation with two words. A nickname of something will consist of two words.

The reader needs to bear several things in mind. First, the programmers generally have intelligent, well sounding codes, that do form patterns. For instance, a woman's name from the Bible will be used as a code, with subparts or subcodes having other female names from the Bible.

Deeper Illuminati parts will have goddess & god names, and king & queen names for cult alters. These are the names the handler or cult uses--NOT their access codes. The codes for slaves follow patterns.

There are standard and unique codes.

During the 1940's through the 1960's there were only perhaps a dozen American master programmers travelling around. (After that the number of programmers appears to get quite large.) The master programmers would lay in the foundational programs and codes. They developed the scripts. The codes and systems used from system to system do follow patterns. The child's creativity & their purpose in life would contribute to the uniqueness of the programming. Each child visualizes differently and the programmer works **with** the child's mind.

The master Illuminati programmer would allow the handler--the "Daddy" figure in life to have the day-to-day ownership. The Daddy figure, often the actual pedophile father of the child victim, would be allowed to put in his own codes **in the sexual part of the system**. Some Daddy figures used their own songs, their own poetry and their own interests in this area of the coding. In other words, most of the system's codes will reflect the master programmer (such as Dr. Mengele), and the sexual part of the system will reflect the "Daddy" figure's programming.

The standard method for many of the memory and alter codes is to use a combination of the date of the child's birth along with the date of the trauma for part of the code. A color will then be attached to this, to produce a color-alpha-numeric code combination. These are placed into the internal computers. The standard computer codes were given in *Vol. 2*. They can be used to temporarily stop programming to give a victim some respite and a chance to regroup.

The programmers did not especially care if the front part of a system is discovered and although they hide the anarchy (coven level) witchcraft alters, they don't hide them like they do the hierarchy alters. The coven alters have simplistic codes. The hierarchy alters which are placed in another area of the system and much deeper, receive a great deal of cabalistic codes and mathematical codes. You will not find the mathematical codes in the front part of a system.

The internal programming alters have the power to change codes if they need to protect the programming. They will have to hypnotically work with alters when they trance out at night. In other words, most of their programming of front alters will be done when a system lies down for "sleep"--more accurately described as lies down "for trance." If the internal alters change many codes, in their efforts to protect the system, they will even make it difficult for the handler/programmer to get into the system.

The science of Ciphers developed rotors that require lines to line up. Some simple schemes using this principle appear in some Monarch systems. This is part of the science of structuring.

Intelligence codes often come from the Bible or popular fiction books. The deeper codes are occult words, often in foreign languages such as Arabic, which is an important language in the upper occult world. Slaves will be given COVER NAMES for ops, and often males receive female names and vice versa.

The patterns used in programming slaves will represent the world view of the programmer. If the interests of the programmer are known, that will be a major clue to the codes they like to install. For this reason, it would be worthwhile to review the access clearance codes that are used for external security of some agencies, because these same types of clearance codes may be found in mind-controlled slaves.

A BIGOT list is a list of names of those who have clearance to a particular set of information. Within a slave there would be numerous BIGOT lists, because persons (personalities) are compartmentalized somewhat like the CIA and the Puzzle Palace (NSA). Agency Codes for clearances include B, C3, K, L, M, N, Q, T, COSMIC, MAJIC (MJ), SI, SCI, and Staff D. (As this author has only examined these secret societies from the outside, some insiders may know of other clearances. In other words, it would be foolish to think that this clearance code list is comprehensive, but it has hit upon the major clearances.)

The exercise in judging whether a person can have access to compartmentalized information is called ADJUDICATION.

A group of persons (agents) working under one handler is called a NET. The FBI which also uses mind-controlled slaves likes to call its groups NETS. FUNNY NAME is intelligence slang for a pseudonym. GRANNY is a CIA asset used in the US which is not under their direct funding.

The American military-intelligence groups publish a periodical called *JANAP 299* which lists the cover names (code names) for many of the ongoing projects, groups, or installations. There are other code books too.

C can stand for Controller or Control, when means the person(s) handling a mind-controlled slave. A person, who is neither a controller, nor a slave, nor asset, but who consciously advances the desires of the controller is called a TRUSTED CONTACT. Sexual slaves would not be expected to respond to such a term, but a middle level slave/agent of an intelligence agency might be familiar with this type of intelligence jargon.

The BIRD was a name for Fort Holabird, MD where intelligence operatives were trained as well as subjected to mind-control.

DIA used the code name EMERALD for drug-trafficking. Boy, does this code word have a double meaning. Since the DIA, which is playing both sides, also is involved with drug smuggling & using Monarch slaves heavily coded with EMERALD type coding.

Very shortly, we will provide more of the Monarch hypnotic cues (codes) for the multitude of functions that a Monarch's mind must carry out. These cues are reinforced as a conditioned response by the programmer. In other words the response becomes so well trained that it becomes automatic.

The type of programming which is placed in a slave varies. Remember, for intelligence operations the slave will have to have BONA FIDES, which are codes to allow two people to meet. All slaves are given CONTROL SIGNS which allow them to indicate via a code that they are in trouble. A RECOGNITION signal allows two people to make contact. For instance, the handler might fly his distinctive sounding plane over a slave's house in a pre-arranged signal. It might also be a particular colored scarf, and a particular set of phrases. A GO-AWAY code is a prearranged signal that means it is unwise to make contact. The go-away signal may be simply placing one's hands in one's pocket or turning the porch lights off. A "GO TO GROUND" signal means to go into hiding.

A BLACK ENVELOPE, which is in actuality a black-colored envelope, has been used by intelligence to hold the real name of an agent being used. In the case of multiples, a chief of a station might have a BLACK ENVELOPE with the actual name of a mind-controlled agent being used in his field of operations.

A MAYDAY BOOK exists for Illuminati and Intelligence slaves which allows them to call if they are about to be arrested. A telephone number is left open for just this purpose. Also common universal Illuminati codes can be used by the slave to get set free from police and judges.

BACKSTOPPING is an intelligence term for setting up proof to support the cover stories the intelligence agencies give their agents and assets. Some of the programmed multiples they use, need BACKSTOPPING.

Within the Jehovah's Witnesses, especially their headquarters, the Illuminati uses Enochian language to program with. With Druidic branches Druidic symbols are used. With the Jewish groups, Hebrew is used. Other languages are also used. An Illuminati System can easily have 6 different languages used as programming codes. The foreign language codes will be for small parts of a system only. Special artificial languages are also employed, as well as sign language.

The Illuminati employs signs which they teach some of their slaves with pick-up sticks. This system of secret symbols is a series of crosses and horizontal & vertical marks. These marks can be drawn on anything, and consist of up to 7 lines. They are believed to be used in regards to ritual dates/ceremonies. These secret signs resemble similar secret symbols used by the Romany tribe of Gypsies.

The masters of mind-controlled slaves also use a technique where one signal or code will carry several messages simultaneously. This is called MULTIPLEXING.

We are all aware of the phenomena of how the brain can selectively hear. The brain can select certain sounds to pay attention to, such as when a person is in a noisy room listening to someone, or a football player is trying to hear the quarterback's calls, likewise certain alters hear certain codes/cues/triggers while others don't. The internal programmers and reporting alters may internally hypnotically make telephone noises that are fake, so that host alters loose the ability to discern what is real and not real, so that they don't pay close attention to access calls. This ability of the brain is manipulated in MULTIPLEXING.

MONARCH MIND-CONTROL CODES

contents:

A. ALPHA (basic)...p. 55
B. BETA (sexual)...56
C. CHI (return to cult)...56
D. DELTA (assassination)...56
E. EPSILON (animal alters)...57
F. OMEGA (internal computers)...57
G. GAMMA (demonology)...57
H. HYPNOTIC INDUCTIONS...57
I. JANUS-ALEX CALL BACKS (end-times) 58
J. OMICRON....58
K. TWINNING (teams)...58
L. THETA (psychic warfare)...58
M. RHYMES, SONGS, TONES, etc...59
N. ZETA (snuff films)...60
O. Sample codes...61
P. Catholic programming...62
Q. MENSA programming...62
R. HAND SIGNALS...62
S. Scriptures in programming...63
U. Alien Programming...63

A. ALPHA (basic)

■ Basic Commands. (These basic commands are also found used in many slaves, although there will be exceptions to everything.)

Many of the basic structures/codes will be put in using a sensory deprivation tank and LSD. For the most foundational levels of a system, the programmers may use the Hebrew letters associated with the attributes of God and the angel names. This can also be worked into English, as there is a cabalistic equivalent in the letters B through K for the Hebrew letters associated with God's names used in magic to conjure angels.

In the basic Alpha structuring, Illuminati slaves will have stars as power sources, and the ditty Twinkle, Twinkle Little Star will pertain to this programming.

The Hansel & Gretal story is used for obedience programming.

Another story line that is used in programming is the Cassandra and Apollo myth.

Common access triggers are "HELLO PRINCESS", 3 knocks, flashes of light, tones, and sequences of blank phone calls.

If the slave leaves their answering machine on, a recording may be left "IF YOU WOULD LIKE TO MAKE A PHONE CALL PLEASE HANG UP & TRY YOUR 911" accompanied by a beep-beep-beep. This activates a program within the slave to call a prearranged phone number for further instructions.

B. BETA (sexual)

■ SEXUAL ALTERS---most of the following codes are for deep sexual alters. In Illuminati Systems these are called Beta alters, in CIA systems they create Beta models whose primary function is to provide sex, usually perverted sex and S&M for the perverts who run our secret government and visible government. BETA models are those who are primary job is sexual, such as service as a Presidential Model (sex slave for a President). These System models may be numbered BETA 1, BETA 2...BETA 601, etc

Sexual programming for espionage and seduction, such as is done at Disneyland, may well involve the use of hundreds of dolls, such as Wonderwoman, Genie, Barbie type dolls. The names/codes would tie in with these dolls.

TIME CLOCK programming is placed in to cover the time that the sexual alters were on a mission, so that they can switch back to the front and nothing be remembered.

Colors attached to sequences of numbers have been used for some of the Beta programming. For other sexual operatives, the intelligence agencies trigger them via specific sequences of chess moves.

Betty Boop programming is used sexually. Betty Boop was a 1930's cartoon character who was an attractive "vivacious vamp". She was described in one cartoon as the "kitty from Kansas City." She had cartoons about Gigolos, Bimbos, Little Red Riding Hood, Mother Goose rhymes which were used as programming themes. Plays on words such as "CHESS-NUT" were used in the cartoons.

C. CHI (return to cult)

Chi programming uses a lot of idiosyncratic phrases, and little ditties. Some of the nursery rhymes listed in the song section will be Chi programming. Some of the Chi programming has been listed in the Alpha programming section of *Vol. 2*.

The number of hang-up calls may serve as a code, incl. when the hang-up calls happen.

D. DELTA (assassination)

■ Delta alters --are activated to kill by the following three things: seeing specific clothing, items held in a persons hand, and particular words. Since these items would specific for a particular murder there is no particular specifics that can be given.

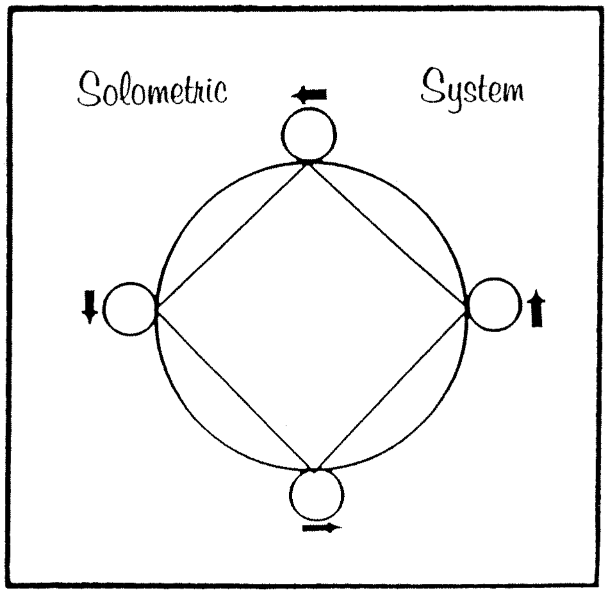

It is thought by some people that the following TV ad may have been used to trigger Hinkley when it was time for Hinkley to attack President Ronald Reagan.

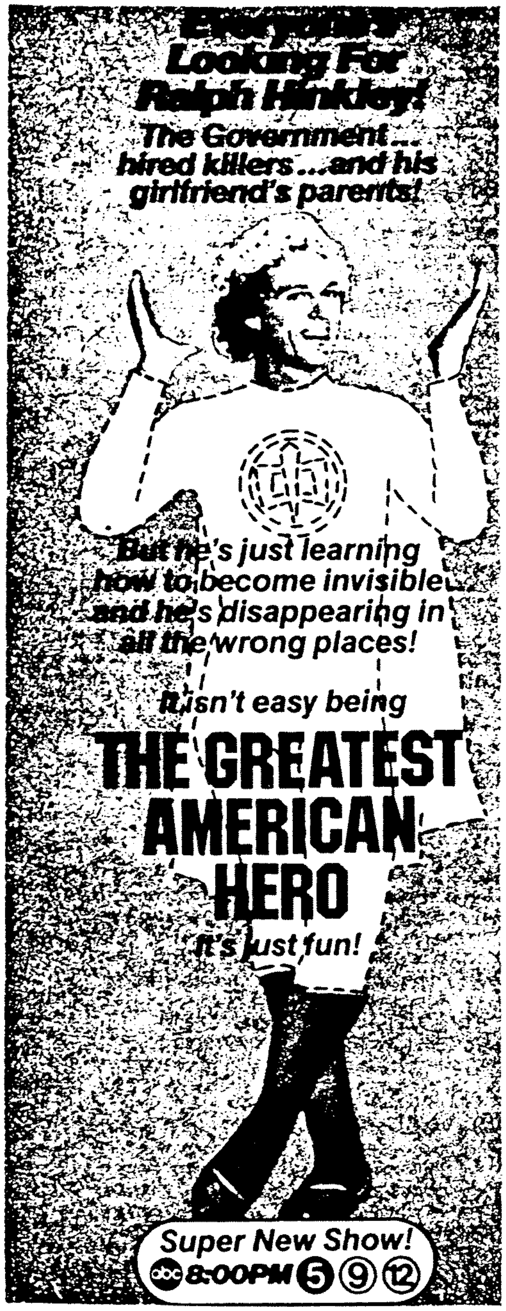

Everyone's Looking For Ralph Hinkley!

The Government... hired killers...and his girlfriend's parents!

But he's just learning how to become invisible and he's disappearing in all the wrong places!

It isn't easy being THE GREATEST AMERICAN HERO

It's just fun!

Super New Show!

abc 8:00PM ⑤ ⑨ ⑫

One man who was programmed as an Delta-type assassin by the NSA in the NJ region, was programmed to be activated for assassination mission via the David Letterman program, Clinton's speeches such as his speech touching on the baseball strike with "little kid" wording, and by several movie stars (Arnold Schwartzenegger, Slyvester Stallone, etc.).

I Dream of Jeannie programming is used for assassination, as well as at the CIA's Farm the song Old McDonald's Farm is used with programming done to CIA assassins.

Distinctive jewelry & clothes. Emerald ear rings used as a signal to others that a message was being carried. Emeralds mean drugs, rubies mean prostitution, diamonds (rhinestones) presidential model work. Red, White & Blue worn sometimes by presidential models.

E. EPSILON (animal alters)

F. OMEGA (internal computers)

The Omega programming works along with an Executive Control Board (or Grand Druid Council) and Internal programmers. The Executive Control Board is associated with both numbers of the clock, and precious gems and metals such as "9 O'CLOCK GOLD".

For G. Gamma programming see Cisco's section on "Programming, Foundations"

H. HYPNOTIC INDUCTIONS

NICRO NECTRUM NECTO--take one back to one's "true time period".

When the child victim is hypnotically inducted by counting numbers during programming by a Doctor and a Mother-of-Darkness, these two will reassuring they child that things are O.K. and sweet talking to the child as it is inducted.

I. JANUS-ALEX CALL BACKS (end-times)

END-TIME ACTIVATION CODES

Most slaves have end-time programming. The programming to activate a slave's end-time programming often runs pages upon pages of coded messages. A number of Monarch slaves have been de-programmed enough that they began accessing and spewing out pages and pages of these activation codes.

In the end times, there appears to be a great deal of color coding for operations. Many of the people who are taking part in the end times events are not American. For instance, the different lists of people to round up are categorized by color. The Red list in America are anti-NWO opposition leaders to be executed approx. 2 weeks before martial law. The blue list are anti-NWO order people who will be programmed or killed in the process. The yellow list is people to be rounded up for reeducation camps after martial law. Other countries apparently have different color codes. The red & blue lists have been distributed, & are periodically updated.

The blue routes have already been marked by blue patches of color to guide those transporting prisoners when martial law is declared in the U.S.

Within Monarch slaves, some of them apparently have an internal crystal/and or rocks that are programmed to explode at a certain point in time--thus releasing the victim's end time programming. The internal crystal (mental image) contains at least the four basic colors, red, green, blue, purple.

One sample of part of end time programming was given in the previous *Vol. 2* book. Still another example is as follows:

BB 243-ABCD-XXZ^2 (blue ray)
CC-458 ABCD-42T (red ray)
CD-379 ABCD-HI^2 (yellow ray)
CE-211-ABCD-JKL (green ray)
CF-531-ABCD-ZZU (purple ray)
TMFT.47 ZONES 7-12
17876747270 OCEAN SIDE
PORT 18,22,34,41 CONTACT
YELLOW RAY SHOVE 79230 A^2
TO RIGHT SIDE DAGGER HANGS
LOW ON PART SIDE FISH
SCHOOL CLOSED ROOM 37-56
RAILS EXIT END
17876747270 COL. BLACK PATCH
TO MALL 76747270 THIEF
AZT FMT BZT CET
11, 4, 6, 9, 32, 101, 70
YELLOW FLAGS AT HALF MAST
YELLOW DOG ON RUN
BLUE FISH AT HOME

[This program is related to a slave contacting other slaves in some end time operation.]

A team leader will have a down line of around 4 people--which are coded red ray, yellow ray, green ray, blue ray. When the activation code hits a slave team leader during the end times, they will in turn activate their people, who in turn will have people who are team leaders and have a down line. At least two false callback alarms will be sounded (tested) before the real one.

J. >>Omicron programming--relates to programming of slaves for the Combination (between Intelligence-the Mafia and Government.)

K. TWINNING (teams)

L. THETA (psychic warfare)

The following is only speculatory, but worth taking note of. This author believes that some of the Theta models got chess programming. Within the system of Enochian magic is the magical system of Enochian Chess. The Golden Dawn has been identified as one of the groups carrying out mind-control. Some Golden Dawn leaders have recently put out a reference book *Enochian Chess of the Golden Dawn* by Chris Zalewski (St. Paul: Llewellyn Pub, 1994). Enochian chess is played with four players, on a chess board that is divided up into four squares, one for each of the magical watchtowers of air, water, earth, and fire. It has only been since 1992 that researchers within the Golden Dawn (specifically the New Zealand branch which is called the Emerald of the Sea) reinvented a set of rules to play enochian chess. The moves for Enochian chess may have been used in recent years as a programming script. Since only a few people have mastered the game, and since the game is more than a game, it is magic, it would stand to reason that the temptation would be there to use it as a programming script if the programmer knew the game.

M. SONGS & NURSERY RHYMES

■ What follow is a list of Nursery Rhymes Used As Triggers, & Songs which have Monarch programming meanings &, such as access parts, or soliciting a behavior or thinking.

NURSERY RHYMES

The Illuminati create imaginary worlds for many of the deeper alters to live in. They keep these alters living in such unreality and nonsense that deeper alters have a difficult time separating their subjective programmed reality from the objective reality of the outside world, which doesn't understand them. Nursery rhymes function well for programming in messages. Often these nursery rhymes are distorted slightly to serve their programming purpose. Some of the programming distortions and uses of these nursery rhymes are provided below. Major corporations and advertising groups working for the Network place nursery rhymes into their television ads. These nursery rhymes are constructed in the ad to activate on certain slaves which usually are sleepers. Some were given in *Vol. 2*, here are some additional nursery rhymes beyond those listed in Vol. 2:

A Tisket A Tasket
Baa, Baa, Black Sheep (used for money laundering scripts, and drug money, drug carrying scripts)
Bye, Baby Bunting (used with actual rituals where the slave child is placed within a skin, cocoon programming with a butterfly coming forth etc.)
Diddle, Diddle Dumpling
Ding, Dong Bell (Dr. Mengele liked to use this--message: don't disturb the mouse that runs the internal system clock.)
Fa Fe Fi Fo Fum (Movement within the system's bean sprouts in the system, and also a death threat.)
Farmer in the Dell, The (Used by the CIA for a serious program)
Georgy Porgy
Gingerbread Man
Hey! Diddle Diddle! (used for astral projection programming)
Hot-Cross Buns!
Humpty Dumpty (used for shattering the mind programming)
I'm a Gold Lock (used to instill cover programming to hide the truth)
I Love Little Pussy (kitten programming)
Jack, Be Nimble
Jack and Jill
Jack Sprat (possibly cannibalism programming)
Little Bo-Beep (come home to Papa programming)
London Bridge (This was used at the Presideo and other sites for learning the chants, and the spells. At the Presideo it was used with barber pole programming. They all fall into a stupor at the end.)
North Wind, The
Queen of Hearts, The (swearing an obedience oath programming)
Rub-a-Dub-Dub (refers to the 3 internal

programmers)
There was an Owl
Three Blind Mice
Three Little Kittens

It should be pointed out that the mind-control programmers have long ago discovered the power of a rhyme in the mind. Rhymes have a hypnotic quality to them. An example of how rhyming was used by internal programming alters to reprogram an alter wanting free is given in Daniel M. Traver's book (Phd dissertation) *Dissociative Disorders and Mind Control*. Wichita, KS: Daniel Traver, 1996, p. 52,

"What the hell man/ you can't stand/ a winter worse yet/ you'll cry and you'll die/ as we place the mind-set/ you won't know what to do now/ you'll hear every rhyme/ and you're cravings will be as an addict in crime...."

This rhymed program would accomplish its goal of wearing down the alter and bringing that alter into line.

SONGS

Yankee Doodle (used for sexual obedience programming "mind the step" and the word "girls" was changed to "boys" to make "and with the boys be handy". "Yankee Doodle keep it up" was reframed to mean "slave yank yankee doodle (the penis) sexually up."

MTV is blatantly using programming rock-and-roll songs. Aleister Crowley is featured in some of these. Maiden (a satanic rock and roll band) blatantly places the words "POWER SLAVE" on one of their CD covers along with snakes and an enlightening pyramid. Anton LaVey has had an MTV song video shown, where he sings in detail how he is going to make the listener into a sex-slave, etc. etc. Some of this is blatantly mind-control in the open, it is so open it is dismissed by many of the public.

TONES & CORDS

In the *Vol. 2* book, it was written about how telephone tones are used for codes. These type of codes tie in with the computer and the lower levels, such as the dungeon. You will find that access to items has been encoded by using the telephone tones to spell them backwards. For instance, if we were to take castle, find the numbers that correspond to C=1, A=1, S=8, etc. on the telephone, and then put those tones out backward. But to make this code unbreakable the programmers will add something like some piano cords--something that can still be played out via the tones. To make it further unbreakable the programmers will have a code (such as a combination of cards) assigned to that level which also must be toned in. An example of this in its totality would be 14 tones + 3 cords to open up a person's dungeon (hell pit the lowest level). In other words, such an access would take the programmer from a distance about 1 1/2 min. to open up the dungeon, whatever time he needed to work in it and 1 1/2 min. to close it down. A 5 min. phone call might be sufficient. This gives the programmers the ability to internationally use telephone tones to access deeper items within the victim's mind. And as standard practice the reversal of the code closes down that part of the mind, and gets the programmer out.

RINGS, CREDIT CARDS, TOKENS etc.

A ring with a snake swallowing its tail called Ouraboros signifies rank in the Illuminati. Rings, credit cards, business cards, tokens and keys are all used as codes, triggers and signals. For instance, one slave had an old distinctive skeleton key. In another instance, a slave was given a token from a particular business as a BONA FIDE. In another instance, the BONA FIDE was a programmer's business card from his notional job. In another instance, a particular credit card would get the user into particular parts of the slave's system.

N. ZETA (snuff films)

Zeta is the sixth letter, and it's ancient meaning was a sacrifice. (These codes are not known by the author.)

O. SAMPLE CODES FOR ALTERS OF A example of a person's cryptonyms

As an example of the type of code names (called operational cryptonyms) used for an intelligence asset one intelligence asset had the following cryptonyms: AECHALK, ARINIKA, CHICKADEE, HERO, IRONBARK, RUPEE, & YOGA.

Monarch I.D. code reviewed

These codes are purely a representative model-not any particular real system. **The overall system code at times consists of [birthdate + programming site codes + birth order + number of generations family was in the Illuminati.]** For our hypothetical system Mary we have the hypothetical overall system code of: 6-13-51- 14 - 02 - 12.

In order to give the codes for a hypothetical alter system we will have to explain some things as we go.

The Programmers have for each slave both medical programming files, and a grey or black binder with the programmed access, trigger, codes & cues, & structure. A typical Illuminati system will be a cube (although spheres and pyramids are also used). The principle alters will be the "a" alters. A typical section of alters will consist of a 13 x 13 grid of alters. These are alters who live in a world together and must function together. A 13 x 13 section will have 13 families of "a" through "m" alters. The "a" alters will be the primary alters that the Programmers will interact with. The Programmer may call up an "a" alter and ask it to go get the "c" alter in its family, rather than directly asking for it.

This initial page of alter codes will be the primary or "a" alters.

If we are dealing with a 13 x 13 x 13 cube of alters, then the initial page has 13 "a" alters of each section. Each of these alters will have an access code which will often include the following components:

AN ASSIGNED COLOR + AN ALPHA NUMERIC CODE + A PERSONALIZED MAGICAL NAME. This will equal 1/3 their access code. These code words must be repeated three times to pull the alter up. However, if an alter is trained well, and hears his master's voice, an alpha-numeric code can pull the alter up. For many of the alters, the reversal of their access code puts them back to sleep. This is an important point, because some alters would be dangerous to leave in control of the body.

The "a" alters are regular alters. Many of them have been hypnotically age advanced to see themselves as teenagers or adults. Sometimes "b" and "c" alters are also aged. The "d" through "m" alters are generally left as they were split and most of them are infantile, with little concept of how old they are. The little ones will be the ones who often remember the programming very well, and know things about the system. The top alters will also sometimes receive personal names from their handler. This is in addition to all their codes. If the alter is responsive to its master, the personal name might pull the alter up too.

Do all of the alters get charted? There are several groups of alters which get charted separate from the rest or don't get charted at all. Because of the competition and distrust between the different programmers, they often place in secret back doors into the person's mind that only they know about. Worlds of secret alters loyal and devoted to the programmer may be built into the system and not appear on the regular charts. The core, and some of the primal splits from the core will not appear on the regular grids. They will be placed on a separate sheet, and their codes will be in some magical language. The Illuminati commonly employs 20 magical languages, and Hebrew, Latin and Greek are also often used for charting the core and its primal splits. Enochian is a good example of a magical language used by the Illuminati. Some alters will be created solely by the slave in order to cope with life. Hour glass alters have entire sentence access codes. Deaf & blind alters need their access code signed on their hands by moving their fingers up and down, etc. End time alters may have access codes that may entail reading an entire page. Reporting alters are often small children, that are hidden in each section, and may require slaps to the face or jabs with a needle to pull them up. Spinner kittens will be accessed via their mama cat, who acts like a Madam in a "cat house". The codes for this was given in the Beta section codes of *Vol.2*.

Telephone tones are frequently used to be able to key in (that is access or trigger) parts of the computer program matrix. Dominoes also are used for the computer programming. The dominoes are put in so that the programmers can get a domino effect, if they want to set off a series of programs. Dominoes and flashing sequences of lights were used to train the child to automatically respond to a certain pattern of dots.

P. Catholic Programming (by Jesuits etc.)

KEYS TO THE KINGDOM = world domination by mind control

In the 1940's, the Jesuit branch of the Illuminati placed tatoos onto their mind-controlled slaves. These tatoos consisted of the **sacred heart with a rose & a dagger**, & were generally placed upon the left hand. The Jesuits have discontinued the practice of tattooing their slaves. Now all types of people are using this sacred heart tatoo.

The Rite to Remain Silent is a programming trauma which is a satanic refersal of the Catholic Mass. The VOW OF SILENCE is a keep quiet program activated by "THE WALLS HAVE EARS & THE PLANTS HAVE EYES SO YOUR SILENCE IS TANTAMOUNT TO SUCCESS." It is explained to the victim that the sea shells & the plants have the ability to hear, and that a sensitive occultist (programmer) can psychically pick up what the plants and sea shells hear.

"MAINTAIN IT" --is a command to maintain the Vow of Silence. "MAINTAIN IT & LISTEN."-- a command to keep silent & listen to a command.

"ENTER INTER INNER DIMENSION TWO" is a standard Jesuit infinity program (2 is a sacred voodoo no.) Pontifax is a demon &/or alter placed in Jesuit systems.

BABY BREATH, BLACK ROSE, and WHITE ROSE are codes/triggers that are all used in Jesuit mind control. The Baby Breath and the black rose relate to programming having to do with death. The WHITE ROSE is a trigger to cue a person to release programming. The black rose is also used by the Mafia. The black rose was also used by George Bush, drug kingpin for the Illuminati, on his no. 1 helicopter for the upholstery pattern.

When the Catholic Priests do the handsignal genuflection across their chest, this has the second meaning which is a programming meaning of north, south, east and west.

Q. Mensa Programming (by MENSA)

The MENSA codes are sequences of 6 numbers.

R. HAND SIGNALS

Masons and monastic orders who program are very keen on hand signals. A very skilled handler can do morse code with winks and eye rolls.

Rotating the hands around each other and then gesturing with the hands toward the person with both hands means--"did you get

the signal?"
Sign of distress. Arms raised over the head with palms forward. Then lowing the arms to a bent position with the hands at head level, and then lowing the hand to chin level, and then dropping them to the side.

Drawing the right hand across the throat with the thumb of the hand pointing to the throat. (used in connection with oaths, such as fidelity to death.)

- Sign of faith. Hand on the heart.
- Sign of plucking out the heart.
- Sign of Reverence.
- Sign of Satan made over solar plexus.
- Sign of touching the crown of the head.
- Sign of two hands pointing to the solar plexus.
- Sign of Preservation. Consists of placing one hand over the heart, and raising the other to form a right angle at the elbow, with the hand pointing to heaven.

The movie "Dune" showed male & female Illum. hierarchy hand greetings, as well as showing signet rings, which are indeed often worn on pinky fingers. (The movie also shows the Karat goddess, how a man becomes a Grand Master by learning control of the demons, astral projection through the spheres which are conquered by the Grand Master, & control of the int. weather, etc.)

S. SCRIPTURES USED IN PROGRAMMING (cont. from Vol. 2, chap. 10)

- 1 KGS 7:21 --talks about 2 pillars on the outside of the Temple. The pillars of Joachin and Boaz are important to Freemasonry and are built in the slaves mind at an intermediate level. Joachin is a white pillar of light associated with fire. It is easy to see how this association could be built by certain traumas. Boaz is the shadowy pillar of darkness and is also associated with water. A dark water torture would make this association. The two pillars represent the two sides of the Illuminati's "the Force". Between them is the door to the Illuminati's House of God.

- 1 KGS 10:18--description of Solomon's Temple used to build the imagery and the lion guards to the internal Temple programmed into victims.

- 23rd Psalm--used as a cue to signal a ritual time.

- Song of Solomon--Used in the ritual of the Great Rite, a ritual pertaining to the Middle Earth, where the High Priest & Priestess join in sexual union as the God & Goddess creating fertility for the land.

- Ezekiel chap. 1 and chapter 12 are being used for endtime callback codes.

T. ALIEN PROGRAMMING

- Blue beams of light are used as a hypnotic induction for slaves who are given the cover story of being abducted by aliens.

- The All-Seeing Eye is used to represent the planet Sirius. Sirius is important to the Hermetic magicians, and some of the programmers are deeply into hermetic magic. Satan is said to come from Draco or Sirius, esp. the dog star Canis major.

Masonic programming may well have the "blazing star" portrayed in the programming as a pentagram, with the name Sirius. Sirius may represent the Master, the creator of the system in some systems where the programmer is steeped in Masonic philosophy.

A sickle may be involved with the Garden of Eden story for some victims of this type of programming, because supposedly the Golden Age ended with a sickle splitting heaven from earth.

****

The ability of the handlers to send signals to the slave in so many different mediums makes it difficult to prevent communication and accessing.

PROGRAM CODES DURING 1972-76 for DR. GREEN

One mind-controlled slave, using her photographic memory, managed to sneak into the programming files of her programmer, who went by the code name Dr. Green. Her information was included in the book U.S. Government Mind Control Experiments On Children which was compiled by Jon Rappoport and presented before a congressional committee & put on public record. The co-authors recognize some of the programs. In the late '60's and early '70's, all the programming was revamped. The best programs were identified and then used. The continual revamping, editing and modernizing of programs has continued to strengthen the mind-control. The recovering victim's name is Chris De Nicola, b. 7/62. She worked full-time at Disneyland for 7 years (from '83-'90). Her father Donald Richard Ebner worked with her major programmer who was Dr. Green. She received standard Illuminati trauma-based mind-control. In 1970, she received Radiation Experiments on her neck, throat, & chest. In 1972, the experiments concentrated on her chest, and in 1975 the radiation tests concentrated on her uterus. She was programmed in Kansas City Univ., Tucson, AZ, & in the desert in AZ. During her programming, the assistants were careless and she was able to sneak into the Programmer's office and look at the files with her photographic memory. She was caught twice in the files, and tortured, but simply used her ability to nest memories to their disadvantage. Chris was such a poor programming subject, so much so that finally the programmer tried to trigger her suicide programs to activate, but they failed and she managed to survive. Suicide alters repeatedly tried to kill her body, and they came very close to killing her. On 3 occasions she had to have her stomach pumped, and one occasion when the paramedics found her she'd stopped breathing. She has survived her suicide programming countless times, praise the Lord, and provided what she saw with her photographic memory. The following codes were remembered by Chris without the aid of hypnosis. Cisco and this author recognize some of these programs. What Chris saw were the files. Each program (script) is given a name and then its file has a standard access code assigned to it. Chris saw the standard access codes. The standard method for coding a program is to use the DAY OF BIRTH CODE, THEN THE DAY OF THE TRAUMA that puts in the program into the slave's mind, and then the STANDARD ACCESS CODE. Evidently, Chris got into the file with level D programs, which means she was looking at programs 4 levels deep. Comments about the programs are this author's and reflect his understanding, and may be subject to correction. [Spellings are exactly as program names were spelled.]

Program Name	Standard Code
Relevance	D-1000
Kick-It-Back	D-1010
Cross Fire	D-1011
Sophis. Electromagnetic Fields	D-1012

(D-1012 makes the slave think they have an electrical field on them. In order to cover their electrical field tests, that they actually do place on slaves, they have the ability to confuse the slave, and prevent detection by activating a programmed abreaction that makes the field seem real, when it doesn't exist. This prevents detection.)

Gorilla Warfare	D-1013
Retreat	D-1014
Nautical Science	D-1015
River Runs Deep	D-1016

(D-1016 is a powerful program which tells the slave that there is no escape, because the programming runs deep through every fiber of the person.)

Educated Mentality	D-1017

(D-1017 is a program to allow the slave to look intelligent when needed.)

Glass House	D-1018

(A standard program that carried over from the '60s's.)

Corporate Extrapulation	D-1019
Closing In	D-1020
Frog Man	D-2000
Catastrophic Indifferences	D-2020
Quality Control	D-2030
Protocol Virus	D-2040
Operation 2000	D-2050

(This relates to Project 2000, which is end time programming.)

Pro-Life-Go	D-2060
Conspiracy Action	D-2070
Verified Suggestion	D-2080
Finish Line Protocol	D-2080
Fraternity Leads	D-2090
Rotten Egg	D-3000
Kaiser Confrontation	D-3010
Co-Op Protocol	D-4701
Forensic Criterion	D-4702
Mediator Response	D-4703
Mentor Divisible	D-4704
Biopsy Synchroization	D-4705

[This is a very harsh program.]

OSH-AMP-RIE	D-5000
D.O.A.	D-6000
Laser Documentation	D-7000
Freak Out [just what it sounds like]	D-7010

--[From here on I will select specific programs, and will not review the entire list of programs that she saw the files for.]

Foolish Games	D-7060
Periodic Mind Lapse [a forget code]	D-7080
Creepy Crawlers	D-8040
Shock Permanence [to shock oneself]	D-9000
One-For-All	D-95452

[punish all for 1 alter's misbehavior]

Counter-Transference	DIA-5001
Border-Line-Schizophrenic	DIA-5009

[If the slave misbehaves, they can be triggered to act schizophrenic & get themselves incarcerated into a mental hospital for prgrmmg.]

Lens-Reverse-Angle	DIA-5011
Canary-Sings	DIA-5015

[reporting alters tattle-tale or an alter sings a script.]

Suicidal Mission [just as it sounds]	DIA-5017
Mission Completed [go to "sleep" prgm]	DIA-5018
Train-Wreck-Perception	DIA-5021
Starvation Tactics [starvation prgm]	DIA-5022
Baro-Metric Pressure Process	DIA-5023
Fundamental Theology [rel. cover prgm]	DIA-5025
Project 2000	412-2000

[This is end-time programming. The word project followed by a number usually refers to the date the project must be completed. Standard methodology for coding then would be that on 4/12/2000 this end-time programming must be completed.]

--codes not remembered for these programs which she saw in files--

Candy [candyland programming]
False Memory Syndrome [even in c. 1973 they were setting up the False Memory Syndrome campaign to take down their opposition.]
Forced Brain Wave Activity
Frenzied State [just as it sounds]
Call-Of-Wild [survival techniques]
Hocus Pocus [magic programming]
Mass [cath. mass programming]
Phoe-net-ical Difficulties [obvious]
Self Mutilation [obvious]
Van-der-built [related to Vanderbilts III. family]
Warped-Speed-9 [Star Trek programming]

--(Her med. file no.s of radiation lab experiments are given chptr. 8)--

DECEIT

LEVELS OF PARTICIPATION

(both witting & unwitting, voluntary & unvoluntary)

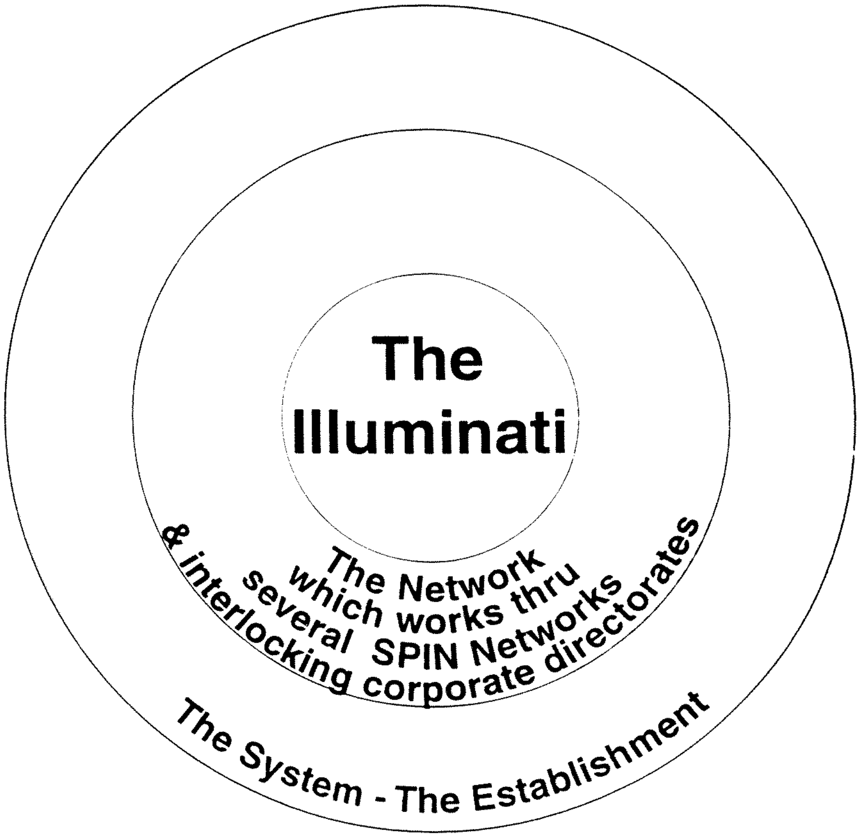
The Illuminati
The Network which works thru several SPIN Networks & interlocking corporate directorates
The System - The Establishment

A programmed multiple can work at several different levels of participation.

The Illuminati. *This is the secret hierarchy level. It is secret by virtue of almost all (if not all) its members being programmed multiples from elite powerful bloodlines. This is hardcore generational Satanism that believes in a Gnostic Luciferian doctrine, hence, they may be called your elite Luciferians.*

The Network. *This level of activity is secret by virtue of its secret ties. It includes the anarchy level of the Illuminati, the various criminal syndicates, the music industry, the various fraternities, new age institutions and people in power all over the globe. It is held together by fear, blackmail, and common bonds of lust and greed. The network includes atheists, self-made satanists, opportunists, and many mind-control slaves. It is far more cohesive and controlled than meets the eye. It is very eclectic. It doesn't matter at this level what you believe, what matters is whose control are you under. This is the hidden seamy power side of the World System.*

The establishment, the System. *This level is open for the common people to participate in. This level remains stably operating in their control because of secret election fraud across the board in U.S. elections, extensive blackmail, extensive control of the masses through the establishment media (TV, radio, newspapers), interlocking corporations and government agencies that control the economic life, and many mass mind-control techniques that these groups use. Most people are unaware of how powerful the establishment is. As long as they drift in its current, they will never see the control. It is only when one tries to swim upstream against the current that you find out how powerful the establishment is. The Illuminati sets up controlled opposition to the System, such as the Hippie movement, militant environmentalists, Hell's Angels, Neo-nazis, John Birch Society, the Communist Party, etc. Controlled opposition gives people a chance to vent their anger without threatening their control. It also gives them dialectic conflicts which they can control to their advantage.*

CHAPTER 5
SCIENCE NO. 5- THE SKILL OF LYING, THE ART OF DECEIT

The Illuminati have refined the art of deception far beyond what the common man has imagined. The very life & liberty of humanity requires the unmasking of their deceptions. That is what this book is about. Honesty is a necessary ingredient for any society to function successfully. Deception has become a national pastime, starting with our business and political leaders and cascading down to the grass roots. The deceptions of the Illuminati's mind-control may be hidden, but in their wake they are leaving tidal waves of distrust that are destroying America.

While the CIA pretend to have our nation's best interest at heart, anyone who has seriously studied the consequences of deception on a society will tell you that deception will seriously damage any society until it collapses. Lies seriously damage a community, because trust and honesty are essential to communication and productivity.

Trust in some form is a foundation upon which humans build relationships. When trust is shattered human institutions collapse. If a person distrusts the words of another person, he will have difficulty also trusting that the person will treat him fairly, have his best interests at heart, and refrain from harming him. With such fears, an atmosphere of death is created that will eventually work to destroy or wear down the cooperation that people need. The millions of victims of total mind-control are stripped of all trust, and they quietly spread their fears and distrust on a subconscious level throughout society.

One problem about lies is that one lie will call for another and then another. It's hard to keep lies single. They seem to want to breed more of their kind to protect themselves. Soon the liar becomes a victim of his own lies, trapped in a dishonest web that demands lots of energy to protect his false fronts. This is the sad fate that the intelligence agencies have painted themselves into. They must maintain groups that oversee their double-agents' lies to insure that the lies that they have disseminated don't contradict themselves. Finally, they have put out so much disinformation, they lose track of reality themselves. Far from saving this nation, the intelligence agencies have spread the cancer of deception into all walks of life, so that this cancer is contaminating and killing anything of value in the United States. The soon-to-come death of this nation's sovereignty, as well as the destruction of this nation's morals are the results of this cancer.

People who have attended high level Illuminati meetings were instructed in how the Illuminati plan to bring in the NWO AntiChrist reign by making everything appear as if it has happened naturally. The Illuminati have decided to camouflage their actions with the creation of normalcy to avert any suspicions.

An example of something which appears to have happened naturally is the O.J. Simpson case, which was planned based on previous murder scenarios which had been successfully covered up. O.J. Simpson was a CIA mind-controlled slave, and the entire Simpson case was concocted as an elaborate effort to cause racial tensions. The Mishpucka, the CIA, the Mob and the Illuminati have all had their dirty hands involved in the entire affair. The entire affair reeks of manipulation and planning. It is not the goal of this paragraph to go into the case, but just to drop a couple details. Joey Ippolito, Jr. is both CIA & Mob. Ippolito at one time lived in Hallendale, FL, a mob housing subdivision which was protected by a police force run by the mob. He has helped run drugs and wet ops for "the Combination" which interconnects with the Illuminati. O.J. Simpson's friend Cowlings worked for Joey Ippolito, as well as O.J. Simpson. Simpson distributed cocaine for Joey Ippolito & the Combination. Simpson's lawyer also is tied to the Illuminati, the CIA, and the mob. One of his lawyers on TV said the trial reeked of government corruption. Nicole Simpson lived next door to Carl Colby (former CIA director Bill Colby's son). Colby's wife and kids have been subjected to mind-control. Colby's wife testified in O.J. Simpson's trial, but was addressed as "Miss Boe" rather than by her name. O.J. Simpson's mother worked for a California State Mental Hospital in San Francisco for 30 years. Many State Mental Hospital workers have children who have been programmed. When one of the jurors in Simpson's case, Tracy Hampton, had her mind-control programming go haywire, she began staring for long periods at a blank TV and hearing voices. She had to be dismissed. During the Simpson trial, Judge Ito gave Joe McGinniss the best front-row seat that a journalist could have. Joe McGinniss was the coverup author who wrote a book covering up about the McDonald-Fort Bragg Drug Smuggling Case. The McDonald-Fort Bragg Drug Smuggling Case involved the Illuminati drug smuggling operation within the U.S. military during the Vietnam War. On and on the stink goes.

The manipulation of history by those in power has been well-covered over. An example of how mind-control and its role in manipulation of events has been covered up by the perpetrators is an article written in the *Journal of the American Medical Association (JAMA)* in the Sept. 11, 1967, Vol. 201, No. 11 issue. The article, which was submitted to the magazine from three CIA doctors (Mark, Sweet, and Ervin), claims that riots are caused by brain disease. While the article is correct in the subpoint that only a small percentage of underprivileged urban dwellers participate in many of the riots, the article's thesis is obviously a slide to prevent people from catching on that the small number of deviants who create riots might be under mind-control or might have some other motivation beyond simply being brain-diseased.

Any deception, whether it is an exaggeration or an understatement of the NWO's capabilities is considered a useful deception for the Illuminati's double-agents to spread. The german battleship the Bismarck was sunk due to a little lie sent to Germany by a double-agent which underestimated the range of British radar. The Germans, thinking they were out of British radar range, made some bad decisions that cost them the battleship.

DECEPTION DIMINISHES POWER

Knowledge is power, and lies diminish the knowledge of deceived dupes, and therefore diminishes the power of the deceived.

Deception obscures the alternatives that people have. It also clouds up various objectives people would work toward. Some people give up certain objectives due to their mis-perceptions that the objective is undesirable or unattainable.

PROGRAMMING DECEPTIONS

In the programming, colors and directions are used. Be prepared to find out that sometime programmers use their creative imaginations such as using the color "octarine", or the direction "TURNWISE" or perhaps "WIDDERSHINS".

During the most fundamental programming which is done via LSD trips in a sensory deprivation tank to lay in the foundations of the Alpha, Beta, Delta, Omega and Theta programs, each programming memory will be given a code. Where one popular programming deception takes place is that the programmer knows ahead of time how to sequence his memory codes so that for instance, the fifth memory is coded as the first trip, and strenuous methods are used to cover up the memories of the first four trips. The victim's mind will be told to forget the first four trips. The memory codes are deceptively designed to fool the deprogrammer and the victim alike. Part of the reason the programmer does this, is that they know that IF a therapist should stumble onto these first memories, the backup programming to protect these memories is so severe that the therapist will shatter the victim's mind. Backup programs such as Atom bombs and vegetable programming are locked into place to protect the fundamental programs.

BE WISE AS SERPENTS

The Holy Spirit moved an apostle to write, "We are not ignorant of Satan's devices." Christ warned his disciples to "be wise as serpents and harmless as doves." The Israelites sent out spies before entering the promised land. Within the text of *The Art of War* by Sun-Tzu (a book studied today by men in intelligence), he discusses "hidden provocation agents" in Book 13. Sun-Tzu was born in 534 B.C. and lived most likely until after the year 453 B.C.

In 500 B.C., some men were farmers, and some were agent provocateurs. Today, both occupations still exist. The modern American farmer is vastly superior to the ancient farmer of 500 B.C., so how does the modern agent provocateur compare? He is vastly superior also. It appears the Word of God is accurate, for it warns that God's people will be destroyed for lack of knowledge.

The difficulty in obtaining honest information in today's Big Brother world is aptly described by an intelligence asset over the Internet, "If you are lucky and work hard, you will find some of the truth. If you are lucky and work REALLY hard, you might find the WHOLE truth...as someone wants you to know it. If you are PHENOMENALLY lucky and really work your tail off, you might even go on to find the REAL truth. But no outsiders...and in fact, very few insiders ever...EVER...learn the WHOLE REAL truth."

This book & our two previous books on mind-control) are the result of extremely hard work and numerous miracles of God, and what non-Christians would call lots of "luck". The story behind the books is amazing. This book's two authors have had to "swim upstream" for years in search for the real truth.

One thing is very clear to this author, during the last seven years of exposing the NWO almost every person who is believed to be a leader against the NWO has tried to impede the work this author has been doing. People need to be aware that the New World Order created their own opposition long before some of us began sincerely trying to expose it. This author's informed opinion is that essentially all (about 98% of the people leading the opposition to the NWO are double agents), and no less than 50% of the therapists are double-agents. In this state, this author knows as a fact that 50% of the licensed therapists working with programmed DID patients are programmed DID (MPD) slaves themselves. Recently, one of the therapists in this area, who the False Memory "Spin"-drome & the Illuminati took down, was a therapist who had also been on a local T.V. talk show revealing that she was a multiple & a SRA victim.

DISINFORMATION TO MAKE THEIR DOUBLE-AGENTS LOOK GOOD

"A Force" was MI-6's group that carried out deception. They would have their double agents pass out CHICKEN FEED (which is what they call classified information that can be thrown out to the public) to establish their double-agents' credentials (BONA FIDES) as agents against the British. Today, there are numerous anti-NWO people who are actually double agents. They are distributing chicken feed to make people think they are legitimate. By the way, it is interesting to note for those who realize how important carousels are to programming that MI-6 (HQ in Vauxhall Cross, Eng., with a training ctr. at Ft. Monckton, near Gosport, so. Eng.) is nicknamed (actually its cryptonym) "Carousel" by its daughter organization Mossad (officially aka Central Intelligence Collection Agency).

An example of a double-agent who is popular among Christians is an Illuminati witch named Gretchen Passantino, who tours around to Christian conferences belittling the idea of mind-control.

Dr. Loreda Fox reports in *The Spiritual and Clinical Dimensions of MPD* that 74% of women abused by SRA come from "Christian homes." The Christian churches are heavily infiltrated.

SLEEPER AGENTS

In the *Vol. 2* book a number of references were made to sleeper agents. The idea of placing someone somewhere in society and letting them lead a normal life for years without ever being used is designed to provide a legitimate smokescreen about what they are all about. Mind-controlled slaves make excellent sleepers. The concept of making sleeper agents in not a secret. The CIA has publicly admitted that they tried to discover long-range sleeper agents in the Los Niños children of Republican Spain who were the descendants of communist spaniards who returned to Spain in the 1950's. They also have admitted to having tried to weed out long range sleepers in the Trebizond Greeks who lived near the USSR in Turkey and returned in the 1950's to Greece. As the CIA and KGB mirror-imaged each other in their manufactured Hegelian Dialectic mock dual (which was very real for the "little" person) you can well imagine that the CIA sent sleeper agents against the KGB.

NAMES of TYPES of DISINFORMATION AGENTS

The intelligence agencies have their own lingo for the types of disinformation agents they send against everyone else. So far, we have named only double & sleeper agents. Here are some of their disinformation agents:

AGENT OF INFLUENCE--These agents can be unwitting, under mind-control, or ideologically motivated to use their positions of influence to sway the minds of others. Examples of Agents of Influence are anchor men on T.V., journalists, labor leaders, TV commentators, academics quoted by the media, & some politicians.

CONFUSION AGENT--An agent whose job is to produce confusion by disseminating confounding information.

CONTRACT AGENT--These are the rogue agents, such as the mob, who the CIA get to do particular jobs on contract. Their connections can be denied.

DEEP COVER AGENT--A sleeper agent (often a programmed multiple or person with mind-control programming) who has been a long term sleeper agent.

DISINFORMATION AGENT--This is a highly placed agent who passes disinformation to other governments.

NOTIONAL AGENT--A fictitious non-existent "agent" which is created with a real-looking identity to mislead.

PROVOCATION AGENT--An agent sent in to provoke & destabilize the target group to do foolish things.

SPOON-FEEDER AGENT--Someone who dribbles out legitimate information, this is often done to build up a person's credentials (bona fides). Lots of the people who are pretending to expose the NWO are spoon-feeder agents who provide a little new information, tons of already known secrets, and sprinkle in a measure of disinformation for added fun. Generally spoon-feeders increase their percentage of disinformation once they gain respectability. There are very few people really exposing anything of consequence about the NWO. This author has endured the loss of several of the really legitimate whistle blowers who were friends being assassinated since he began writing exposes.

What this means is that agents for groups that do mind-control may: have been sleepers for many years and look very legitimately innocent, they may give good correct information to our side, they may say all the right things and try to get us motivated to do more than we would want, they may talk about other friends who are giving them information who do not even exist. It takes discernment to spot people who are not on our side. Unfortunately, such discernment seems to be fundamentally lacking within the public at large. For instance, I have seen people choose obvious NWO agents over this author as a source of "information" (which is in reality disinformation). Most people have bought so much disinformation during their lifetime, perhaps it's unrealistic to expect them to purge out all the junk they've accepted. Just as people in the world need to toss out their worldly thinking, people in the church need to toss out all the indoctrination they've gotten from the numerous kinds of harlot churches. At the moment, the system is set up so that the perpetrators of the mind-control are in control of the credentialing process, so that they can provide their stooges/and agents with the best credentials. As the reader can see, the roots of power behind the mind-control go deep.

TRICKING SUSPECTS

One trick (or variations of it) that has been used with suspects is to arrest them, place the suspect in a situation where the police are in two groups--one group looks like police, the other group looks like the group the suspect has come from. After the suspect arrives, the group pretending to be arrested group members, overpowers the police contingent and escapes to another setting where another police group pretending to be even more of the suspect's group ask him who he is and to explain his credentials. Letting his guard down, the original suspect explains what he is all about, thereby giving them the information they needed in the first place. Variations of this script can be run. English intelligence calls this basic script CACKLEBLADDER because chicken blood is used on the police actors that are overpowered to make them look injured.

The NAMES OF DECEPTION TRICKS

FOUR FACES refers to pretexts used by agents to get interviews.

DANGLE is the craft word for luring a victim into a provocation. A dangle operation would be an operation to provoke a group or individual into a particular action. This was done with Elohim City and many other groups that the NWO is trying to set up as patsies.

STANDARD DECEPTION DEVICES

Agents use BLEEP-BOXES to tap telephones and in other instances to make free-of-cost telephone calls. A CABMAN is a device to remotely activate a telephone with a radio beam. It can be used without entering the building where the telephone is located.

MASKS

The use of masks in the occult world is ancient. For centuries, the gypsies have used them for their hypnotic powers. Special healing masks for their people are kept secret and never shown to the public. Masks have a shock value & fascination value. Gypsy and other occult groups have special rituals to create the masks, including using hair clippings from the person who will wear the mask. Gypsy healing masks are destroyed after the patient gets well. Illuminati programming masks may or may not be destroyed after their use. The Illuminati's mask-making abilities (according to deprogrammed victims of their mind-control) are very high quality. Sometimes the programmers simply wear halloween cartoon character masks that anyone can obtain, to fulfill their role in the programming script that they are involved in during the time.

COVERS

Some beginners who have just started into studying the World Order question why the Illuminati would use legitimate religious covers. Why would the Illuminati want to create a slave who is an evangelist? Why? Because those new converts will go to some establishment church where other programmed multiples in leadership positions will demand obedience (and then support those demands by quoting scriptures that make them seem like they are God's authority over that new convert). Because the evangelist or missionary and the bishop or pastor are controlled puppets, the convert will never get the full truth, just enough truth to keep him working hard for their organization. Even though the convert "got God in my life", the Illuminati **never lose control** over him.

The Christians have as much vested interest in preventing the exposure of the Illuminati programmed multiples who are big name Christian ministers running

Christendom, as the Illuminati has. Imagine what would happen if the world found out that most of Christianity was run by the human-sacrificing, slave-making Illuminati? This is one of the sad effects of the infiltration.

Perhaps the subject of covers can be explained from another angle. The reader knows that the elite like monopolies. They play monopoly for real--for us it's only a board game! To establish a monopoly, you find a good product that everyone wants or needs, and then you eliminate all the competition by either destroying them, or owning the competition yourself. In the U.S., the Illuminati can't have a one-religion monopoly. In Russia, they had communism with Marx, and Lenin as the Father God and Gon the son figure. Communism had a monopoly on worship. In the U.S., they have established a monopoly by controlling all the various religious groups. (This author wrote an 800 page heavily documented book *Be Wise As Serpents* to show the details of how this is done.) It's not a matter of what they teach, it's a matter of control, so that the elite have a monopoly. And when you, as a mover & shaker in the world, control all these various religions via money, blackmail, & programmed multiples under your leadership, etc. which religion would you pick to emphasize the most? You will pick the one that sells the best, i.e. the best product.

And which brand of Christianity will sell the best? The televised charismatic brand will sell the best.

Covers that slaves use to explain what they do in life are almost always "legitimate". A missionary, a military officer, a salesperson, etc. will usually **actually** do their cover job most of the time. Their cover is their occupation, their service as a mind-controlled slave is almost an unwitting avocation.

Organizations are used as covers. The Illuminati use military, social, intelligence, education, banking and other organizations as covers. (See my *Be Wise As Serpents* book for many of these.) Moriah's front organizations, such as the CIA, in turn use other organizations. Here is just a sampling of CIA fronts, to show the variety of fronts used:

- Asia Foundation was an **academic organization** created by the CIA.
- Castle Bank & Trust Co. has been **a bank** in the Caribbean that is a CIA front.
- Forum World Features has been a front created **for CIA propaganda** purposes and based in London, UK.
- Geschicter Foundation for Medical Research (as well as the Josiah Macy Foundation) was used as an intelligence front to **launder money** used for mind-control.
- Air-Sea Forwarders, Inc. was the legal corporation name of a CIA front in North Hollywood, CA. The company was involved in **moving freight**. In the last few years, this corporation sued E-Systems, the company which builds the CIA and the NWO's electronic systems such as their communications satellites. In court, the company proved that it was a CIA front, in spite of CIA denials. As this chapter provides information about some of the Illuminati/ intelligence connections to Hollywood, bear in mind that this CIA front was proven in court to be a CIA front in Hollywood. A feat that rarely occurs.

ONE OF THE GREATEST DECEPTIONS OF ALL TIME: DISNEY

INTRODUCTION

For years, I have heard many Americans say that something is terribly wrong in this country & that things are "going to pot", and yet Americans can't put their finger on what exactly is wrong.

When I first began to receive reports from victims of Illuminati mind-control about Disney's involvement in their mind-control, I kept an open ear, but I wanted some tangible proof. After investigating for myself, there is now no doubt in my mind that **Disney** (the man, the movies & the entertainment parks)

has been a major contributor to the demise of America, while maintaining a very well constructed front of wholesomeness. In this chapter, you will learn why Disney is one of the best deceptions of the Illuminati.

This author has read a good portion of what is available to the public concerning Disney. This exposé is undoubtedly the deepest on Disney that has ever been done. Perhaps part of my motivation is that I've tired of Christians talking and acting like Disney stands for sainthood. Christians, who should have known better, are some of the ones who have swallowed "hook, line and sinker" the enormous deception that entails Disney. They feed their children a steady diet of occultism and witchcraft because they have been programmed to think of Disney as wholesomeness and everything that is good about America.

Many writers over the years have tried to expose Disney, most have been stopped before they could get their books published. The few authors who have managed have faced vicious attacks on their character & integrity, and have faced enormous struggles against public relations campaigns paid for by the Disneys. The Disney's power, and the power behind them, has frightened most people away from challenging them.

But someone needs to speak on behalf of the victims. Whether anyone listens or not, the victims will know that somebody cared enough to stand up & write the truth. Disney has not only left mind-control victims in its wake, but they have harassed land-owners, stolen employee idea's and left all kinds of hurting victims in their path. Disney has risen to become the unquestionable largest media-entertainment conglomerate in the world, & was ranked company no. 48 in the top 500 companies by *Forbes 500.*

Observations about HOW THE ILLUMINATI LIKE TO HIDE BEHIND PERFECT FRONTS.

There are numerous Illuminati homes, restaurants, wineries and other institutions that are today carrying out the same type of strict standards upon their employees that Walt Disney Studios maintained. While Hollywood was immersed in moral filth from the start, Walt Disney Studios had strict standards. In the 1930's, Disney had a dress code that required men in ties, and women in sober-colored skirts. If a man looked lecherously at a woman at Walt Disney Studios he risked being instantly fired. Walt was a shining example of the strictest legalism. Even during the '50's, if an employee were caught saying anything considered a cussword such as "hell" they were instantly fired no matter who they were. Walt would not allow his male employees to have any facial hair, even though he himself sported a mustache. He never allowed employees to have alcohol at the studios, (which might not be a noteworthy standard except that Walt himself drank heavy amounts of alcohol in his private office at work for decades).

Initially, Walt was very reluctant to have his young artists, who were being trained by Don Graham, draw live nude models, but reluctantly gave approval. Again the motive was not to serve God, but to make sure the Disney reputation remained untarnished. With the power of the establishment media behind Disney, Walt had nothing to worry about, news about the nude drawing classes and their detailed drawings never reached the light of day.

Behind such strict fronts of legalistic morals, cleanliness & soberness, you will often find lots of guilt and high level satanic ritual. For instance, Hitler (who was by the way also a failed artist & who liked mechanical things more than people) obsessively washed his hands many times a day (**out of guilt**), and so did Walt Disney. Walt obsessively washed his hands several times an hour, every hour. Walt liked animals & his trains more than people. This author has seen some alters who were forced to take another human's life, and when they relived the memory, the alters then tried to physically wash the blood guilt off of their hands. Another example is that over the years this author has discovered that many of the exclusive restaurants that are meticulous in every detail are tied in with the mind-control and criminal activities of the elite. **Dirty money is keeping the places looking sparkling clean.**

Walt Disney worked very hard at maintaining a great image for himself and his company. An example of this, is how he exploded in rage and wrote an angry memo when a Disney character was placed in a beer ad. (Memo mentioned in Thomas, Bob. *Walt Disney An American Original*. Hyperion, 1994, p. 7.) He had a personal image builder, Joe Reddy, who worked full time to build Walt's image. Joe Reddy was a cigar-smoking irishman who loved the catholic college Notre Dame's football team. He also was a publicity agent for Shirley Temple. But the Disney deception entails far more than Joe Reddy's decades of image making, and Walt's own abilities to create good images of himself. Just as with Billy Graham (see *Vol. 2* about Billy Graham), the entire Illuminati threw their weight behind promoting Walt Disney.

Ronald Reagan and Walt Disney were good friends and both cut from the same die in many ways. Both men were high ranking Freemasons, both came from socialist backgrounds (Ronald's mother was Eleanor Roosevelt's best friend, & Walt's Dad was a socialist leader), both were paid FBI informants, and both were involved heavily in the abuse of mind-controlled slaves. Walt always generously supported Reagan's political campaigns, and in turn Reagan did political favors for Walt as Gov. of California. For instance, Disney's Mineral King mountain resort needed an access route through the Sequoia Nat. Park at a time when there was lots of congressional pressure to preserve the last stands of redwoods. Gov. Reagan got his friend Disney his road through the park.

Reagan served as the emcee for the opening day of Disneyland on July 17, 1990. He returned with Illuminati TV host Art Linkletter for the 35th anniversary. Ronald Reagan & Art Linkletter both pumped Disney publicly. Another slave abuser that spent time with Disney was Bob Hope, who would spend time on the golf course with Walt. On the opening day's telecast, cameras showed Sammy Davis, Jr. (a member of the Church of Satan) and Frank Sinatra (a mind-control slave handler) driving the pint-sized Disney cars at the Autopia ride.

When Disney celebrated its fifty yr-anniversary with a two hour special on May 20, 1991, the program included people like occultist Bill Campbell and was named "Best of Disney, 50 Years of Magic."

For the silver anniversary of Disney World in Oct. '96, the Clinton's were invited to help open 15 months of celebrations. The theme of the anniversary celebrations was "Remember the Magic". A Boy's & Girl's Club sang "When you wish upon a star" (a popular programming song). Hillary Rodham Clinton (herself an Illuminati Grand Dame and a mind-control programmer) shared with the audience that she and Bill "first brought daughter Chelsea to the Magic Kingdom when she was four." Roy E. Disney, nephew of Walt, told the public that Disney World "is the story of men and women who took hold of a dream and never let go." There is a double meaning to that. Many victims of trauma-based mind-control have taken hold of the illusions that were programmed into their mind secretly at Disney, and never let go.

Among the visitors to Disneyland have been all the American Presidents from Eisenhower to Clinton, over a dozen kings & queens, as well as Emperor Akihito of Japan, Anwar Sadat, and Robert Kennedy (who rode the Matterhorn with astronaut John Glenn.) Both Denmark's & Belgium's kings who are in the Illuminati visited, as well as the dictators of Indonesia, the Shah of Iran and Ceausescu of Romania. (As a side-note Roy E. Disney was forewarned by arab leader that the Shah was to be deposed.)

Organizations that have been actively

working for a New World Order for many years gave big awards to Walt in his early years such as the B'nai B'rith (Man of the Year Award to Walt) and the Chamber of Commerce. In 1936, Walt was given the Chamber of Commerce's annual "Outstanding Young Man" award. The establishment's Yale & Harvard Universities gave him honorary degrees.

Walt Disney biographer Leonard Mosley, who researched Walt Disney for years (as well as writing books on the duPonts, the Dulles brothers, and Hirohito) wrote in his book on Walt Disney, "The studio publicity machines in the film colony had, as usual, gone out of their way to try to persuade me, as a writer for a powerfully influential British newspaper, that this was a city of lawless gods and goddesses, full of clean-living, sanitized stars.

"It was even more of a deodorized world at the Walt Disney Studio where the publicity men insisted their boss was faultless--never drank too much, never used a swearword, never lost his temper, never quarreled with his wife or family, never let down a friend. **And woe betide anyone who tried to suggest otherwise. Members of the resident foreign and local press risked their jobs if they dared to write stories inferring that Walt Disney could be domineering, implacable, and unforgiving** (as was the case, for instance, before, during, and after the 1941 studio strike). **The Disney flacks were capable of exerting heavy pressure on editors and proprietors or, through the advertising pages, against anyone who inferred Walt Disney was not the epitome of well-scrubbed and benevolent perfection**." (Mosley, Leonard. *Disney's World*. New York: Stein & Day, p. 10.)

Disney is perhaps the epitome of Illuminati abilities to create images. They have created great images for things Disney, incl. Walt Disney, Disney movies, and Disney's Amusement parks. In some cases these things have been overrated, in other instances the sinister side to them has been carefully hidden.

In order to make movies that contain the typical smut of Hollywood, sex and violence, Disney did a slight of hand and created subsidiaries which Disney runs, which has allowed them to keep their good image. They also never showed the public the hard core porn that was made for years in secrecy for the elite.

Behind Disney's good front lies hard porn, snuff films, white slavery, Illuminati mind-control, and the seduction of several generations into witchcraft. Disney's involvement in these kind of things will be explained in this chapter. Nobody has sold America witchcraft as well as the Disney brothers. Movie after movie has cleverly brought the occult into the warp & woof of American thought, all under the disguise of entertainment. For instance, it was Disney that brought us cannibalism and told us that it was a "triumph of the human spirit" (a direct quote from Disney's Touchtone Producer Robert Watts concerning Disney's movie "Alive" featuring survivors of an airplane crash who turned to cannibalism). Under the disguise of entertainment & showing us how "triumphant" the human spirit was, they subtly promoted cannibalism. Mickey Mouse plays a leading role in "The Sorcerer's Apprentice." And yet when this author has suggested that Disney movies aren't wholesome, many Christian parents come unglued and have gotten angry with this author. The deceptive image that Disney movies are wholesome is a triumph in Illuminati deception.

Parents would be surprised what is slipped into cartoons. In Disney's "The Little Mermaid" the castles are male sexual organs. In one cartoon Mighty Mouse is shown without comment clearly snorting cocaine.

Walt Disney Studios Chairman Joe Roth is in charge of Walt Disney as well as subsidiaries Touchtone, Miramax, and Hollywood Pictures, which were all created to camouflage the Disney production of adult films. Disney operates in a clandestine manner regarding the promotion, distribution and

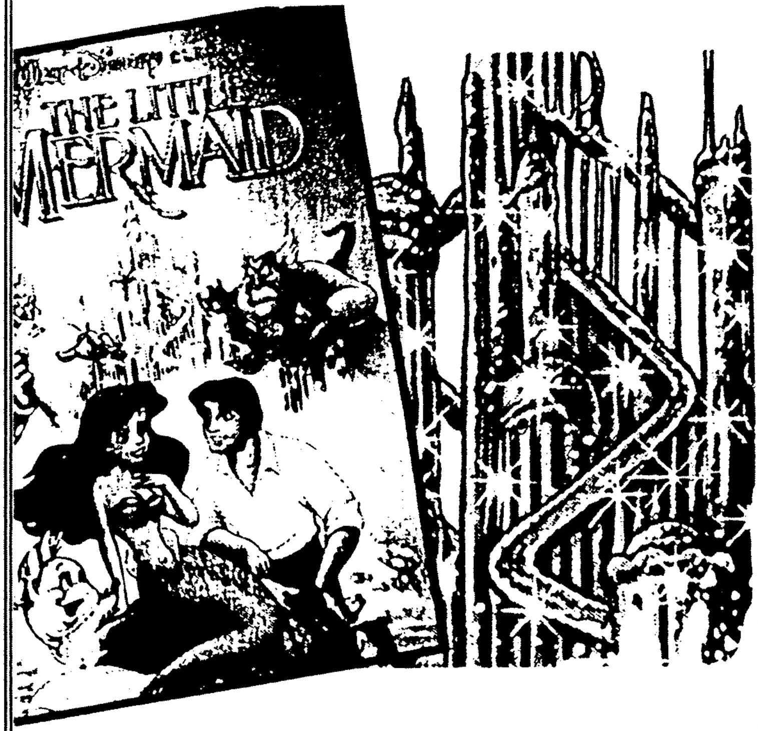

DISNEY MAKES MALE PHALLUSES INTO CASTLES.

rating of the films produced by their subsidiaries.

Roth oversaw Disney's subsidiary Hollywood Pictures' Evita film. Evita has as its main start "Material Girl" Madonna. Madonna is in reality a mind-controlled slave who has appeared in numerous underground porn/& ritual porn movies. (This author has an underground catalog from a porn business, that has recently changed its location of business. The catalog offered a film of Madonna performing an actual blood sacrifice.) She also was the main actress in Disney's Dick Tracy film which is reported to be used for mind-control. During an Arsenio Hall show, Madonna, who as a guest acted dissociative, was picked up by the cameras during the show kissing her Baphomet ring.

Disney controls the products that are associated with the movies of their subsidiaries. In Evita's case they are marketing hats and other items, as just one more of Disney's countless artificially generated consumerism campaigns. In Ruth Stein's interview of Madonna, Madonna appeared bored with plugging Disney's consumer products. When asked about the tango dresses and hats inspired by Evita that popped up in stores after the film, Madonna said, "Believe me, I have nothing to do with it. Disney is pushing the whole thing." (*San Francisco Chronicle*, 12/29/96, Datebook section).

In one interview Madonna states she wants her daughter to grow up knowing Catholicism, but she doesn't believe that it would be good for her daughter if Madonna married the father of her child from Lourdes, Carlos Leon. In another interview, Madonna says, "Actually, I'm a very good role model, because I say, 'Look, these are my standards'..." She then goes on to plug homosexuality, same sex marriage, and single families in the interview.

Walt Disney stated that it plans to release an album by DANZIG, a heavy metal band whose songs contain "dark themes". The Disney press release announces on its by-line "Mickey Mouse is going heavy metal." Disney's album "BLACK ACID DEVIL" was due to hit the music stores Oct. 30, 1996 during Halloween time. According to Disney this music has no satanic references, but does have "dark, Gothic and sexual" overtones. Glenn Danzig denies that he is a satanist.

CONTENTS IN THE DISNEY DECEPTION SECTION OF CHAPTER 5.

a. an introduction
b. an overview
c. Who was Walt Disney?
d. Who was Roy O. Disney?
e. Who is Roy E. Disney?
f. What do we know about the Disney family in general?
g. A history of Disney
h. Disney and its mob connections
i. Disney and its government connections
j. Disney and mind-control
k. Detailed Script of how one Disney movie is used for programming.
l. -Partial List of Sources-

b. an OVERVIEW

Disneyland and Disneyworld are world famous and the pride of America. They are also extremely important programming centers for the Illuminati to create total mind-controlled slaves. Disneyland is also involved with providing a place for rituals, porn and other satanic activities. In terms of deception, Disney movies and Disney Amusement Parks rate as one of the best deceptions.

According to deprogrammed ex-Illuminati slaves, the Illuminati in the 1960's needed to shift their programming away from the military bases, because too much publicity (heat) was shined on the military bases. Their goal was to have someplace that people from all over the world could come to without raising any suspicions, and a place which would be the perfect cover for many of their criminal activities.

According to a witness, the Illuminati Programmers got a big laugh out of using Disneyland as a major Illuminati base for criminal activity. Under the disguise of entertaining the world, they carried out money laundering, child slavery laundering, and mind-control. They nick-named Disneyland "the little syndicate of mind-control." When a child of 3 or 4 was kidnapped, they could torture the child and then put him on a ride such as a ferris wheel or carousel that a. created dissociation from the pain, while also b. going along with some fairy tale programming script. An abducted child while waiting to be picked up from one Illuminati non-parent caretaker by another, could be kept happy and distracted while waiting for the pickup. For years, Disneyland was an Illuminati center for many of their world-wide activities.

Now Disney has created other sites around the world such as EuroDisneyland 20 miles east of Paris and Tokyo Disneyland. Tokyo Disneyland in 1991 had 16 million people attend. With such hugh crowds, it doesn't take much imagination how the Illuminati have been able to do sneaky criminal activities right in front of people, and the public never sees it, in the middle of all the activity. EuroDisney has been a money losing affair, but the Saudis who benefit from its mind-control, gave Disney the money to keep it financially in business.

Walt Disney Records is the largest children's record label in the world. Disney through their movies, books, toys, records, etc. has made a tremendous impact on the children of the world. Their movie Return from Witches Mountain was one of the most powerful witchcraft promotions ever made. Ducktails, which has deliberate Monarch mind-control triggers written into the script, is also broadcast in Poland and the former USSR.

From the time of the Roman Empire (at least, if not before) the oligarchical leadership, who have been in control of both the Mystery Religions and European aristocracy, have known about BREAD & CIRCUS. Bread and Circus refers to the concept that IF the masses of people are given entertainment and food staples, THEN they are easy to control. Walt Disney movies have played a key role in providing entertainment for the masses to insure Illuminati control. Walt Disney's friend the Masonic prophet H.G. Wells in his book *A Modern Utopia* that there would be lots of shows in the New World Order.

The World Future Society in a book review in their publication *Future Survey Annual*, 1993, (ed. Michael Marien, Bethesda, MD: World Future Soc., p. 91) describes Disney:

"Control of commodities [such as entertainment] and access to commodities translates into control over people. 'The postmodern US is a massive rush of disconnected commodities, each seeking a moment of our attention." The world of commodities is our soma, and entertainment is the current form of public discourse. Walt Disney World, spread over 27,400 acres of central Florida swamp and scrub forest, 'is the most ideologically important piece of land in the U.S.' What goes on here is the quintessence of the American way. It is visited by over 30 million people a year--not only the major middle-class pilgrimage center in the US, but by far the most important entertainment center in the world. It is clearly Oz, utopia as a marketing device."

Two Disney brothers Walt (Walter Elias) and Roy O. Disney have been at the center of the creation of amusement parks and popular Disney films. In more recent times, two other men, Eisner and Katzenberg have been notable at Disney. Eisner & Katzenberg, as well as others will be discussed later. One of Disney's directors, Victor Salva, was convicted of molesting a boy and filming one of the sexual molestations. Recently Disney Director Salva produced the Disney movie "Powder". (Victor Salva's sexual molestation conviction was covered by newspaper articles such as Robert W. Welkos of the LA Times, in newspapers such as *The Oregonian*, Weds. Oct. 25, 1995, A sect.)

The impact of the Disney brothers is monumental. Mickey Mouse teeshirts can be seen being worn by natives all over the world. Disney World and Disneyland are the quest for a large segment of humanity, who often esteem these amusement parks as the highlight of their life. What is highly esteemed among men, is an abomination to God according to the Word of God. The Bible arbitrarily makes this claim, but sadly, research by this author over the years proves that a close examination of Disney & mankind's esteem for "Disney" things does vindicate the Biblical expectation. In other words, as readers of this article will find out, behind the appearance of wholesomeness of the Disney brothers and their creations lays abominations-- some of the most grotesque aspects of generational occultism the world has ever seen.

Disney's Magic Kingdom has become an American Institution that impacts people all over the world from the cradle to the grave.

c. WHO WAS WALT DISNEY?

In the large book The Art of Walt Disney from Mickey Mouse to the Magic Kingdom by Christopher Finch (N.Y.: Harry N. Abrams, 1975) on page 11 an interesting and revealing statement is made: "**By definition, public figures are known to everyone; yet, even after talking with some of Disney's closest associates, it is impossible to escape the conclusion that nobody really knew him. Always there was some aspect of his personality that was just out of reach.**"

Those who got to know Walt too closely make complaints such as he was "self-satisfied, intractable, and arrogant." He could bring his artists to tears or anger in a matter of seconds.

Finch is not the only author who has tried to warn his readers that the public's image of Walt Disney was just that--only a false image. Mosley also writes in his biography of Walt Disney,

"Since Disney is regarded by millions of people, particularly in the United States, as perhaps this century's most brilliantly successful creator of screen animation, I think I should make one thing clear right away. I share the general admiration of a man whose cinematic achievements were always so happily inspired and inspiriting. But--and this is where I differ from uncritical idolaters--I have to know all the facts, no matter how unpalatable, as well as the romantic myths about any great man or woman I admire. Many of the myths that have been created by his publicists about Walt Disney are unpalatable, unbelievable, and unsatisfactory because so much of the real Walt Disney has been deliberately concealed...Walt Disney...had grave flaws in his character."(Mosley. *Disney's World*, pg. 9)

Years ago, an Illuminati Grand Master and programmer stated, "If the world only had the eyes to see the fibers which lay under the surface of Walt Disney's image, they'd tar and feather him, and drag him through the streets. If only they knew what Disney's primary goal is."

PERSONAL DETAILS

Walt had black hair with a black mustache, and bright quick eyes and was about 6' tall. He used his own facial features to clue artists on how to draw Mickey Mouse's features. He liked specially rolled brown cigarettes which he smoked up to 70 a day. He picked up the smoking habit in the army. He loved expensive Scotch Whiskey, red sunsets, and horses.

He had a vacation home in Palm Springs, CA called the Smoke Tree Ranch. He often wore the Ranch's letter STR emblazoned on his necktie. He played lots of golf with Bob Hope and Ed Sullivan at the ST Ranch. His main home was an estate in Holmby Hills. The Holmby Hills estate was located in a plush area where lots of rich show-business families lived. It was located between Bel-Air (an occult word for Satan) & Beverly Hills.

Walt spent many of his nights at the Disney Studios and later he had his own private quarters at the center of Disneyland. He had reoccurring bouts of insomnia. (For his nerves and insomnia he'd take alcohol and tranquilizers.) He'd go weeks on end without stepping foot on the Holmby Hills estate and seeing his family.

The main topic at the studio by the staff during different time periods was Walt's bizarre behavior-- he would not be available until late afternoon, when he would emerge from the studio's subterranean maze of tunnels, where supposedly he was "chatting with the maintenance engineers" everyday.

The value of his estate when he died was 35 million dollars of which Lillian his wife inherited half.

In his later years, when Disney took a vacation he went to Paris for 3 weeks, and 3 weeks at the Hotel du Cap, in Antibes, and then cruised on Fritz Loew's yacht with Ron and Diane Disney. In England, Walt spent time with the British Royal family and met privately with masonic prophet H.G. Wells. In Rome, Walt visited privately with the Pope and the dictator Mussolini.

In 1966, Walt Disney died. Prior to his death he had investigated cryogenesis--being frozen, and it is believed by some that his body is frozen somewhere in California, while others claim he was cremated.

MICKEY MOUSE

According to one source, the inspiration for Walt to create Mickey Mouse came when he was unemployed and saw a mouse in the gutter. There are quite a few stories in circulation as to where the idea came from. Ub Iwerks claimed he thought Mickey up at an animator's meeting in Hollywood. Walt once said, "There is a lot of the Mouse in me." (biographical article written by Elting E. Morison, p. 131) In fact, Ub Iwerks told Walt that Mickey Mouse "looks exactly like you--same nose, same face, same whiskers, same gestures and expressions. All he needs now is your voice." Walt often did serve as Mickey's voice. A book put out by Walt Disney Co. in 1988 reveals that Walt Disney told Ward Kimball "Quite frankly, I prefer animals to people."

Walt usually was the voice behind Mickey Mouse, (even though he wasn't the artist.) His mother was chilly for years about the work Walt did. Around 1940, after much pleading, he finally got her to watch Mickey Mouse. His unsupportive mother (which he would within a few years learn was not actually his biological mother) told him she didn't like Mickey Mouse's voice, to which he told her it was his, and then she responded by saying he had a horrible voice. The "cold towel" she threw on Mickey Mouse helped convince Walt to quit making Mickey Mouse cartoons. Very few came out of Disney after that, and the very next Mickey Mouse full-length feature cartoon, Fantasia, had Mickey mostly silent.

Walt's idea for The Sorcerer's Apprentice was based on some of his own ideas. Walt had had the dream which was used for Mickey Mouse in The Sorcerer's Apprentice of having "complete control of the earth and the elements." Disneyland and Disneyworld were partial fulfillments of that dream for control. Walt's final pet project just prior to his death was the meticulously restored version of the witchcraft film "Bedknobs and Broomsticks." (*Disney Magazine*, Winter 96-97, pub. by Disney, p. 96 mentions this.)

As a programming device, Mickey Mouse works well because it plays on the subconscious genetically transmitted fear of mice that women have. Mickey's image can help create a love-hate relationship, which is so valued during the traumatization & programming of mind-controlled slaves.

Some sources state that Walt's love for animals came from the time his family had a farm near Marceline, Missouri. Walt began his schooling at Marceline, but continued it after the age of eight at Benton School in Kansas City, MO.

Walt's Dad had a serious gambling problem and passed the spirit of gambling to his son Walt.

Walt never graduated from high school. He had a natural love and a flair for art work, although (contrary to his public image) he never became proficient at it. He joined the army in W.W. I as an ambulance driver by lying about his age. During the war, he also chauffeured dignitaries. He also did some other things that are very revealing. He enjoyed drinking & gambling while in the service, and he ran a scam where he doctored German artifacts picked up on the battlefield to sell to people. War relics were tampered with to get them in shape to get the most money from them possible. Walt took the battle souvenirs and dressed them up, for instance, coating the insides of helmets with grease, hair & blood and putting holes in them to make them into expensive souvenirs. This shows that Walt was willing to build illusions if it paid. He could be deceptive if he saw an advantage to it.

From gleanings from things Walt said to people, it appears that as a child, he'd seen the darker side of life (for instance, his father had a habit of beating him in the basement) and had had some interest or exposure to magic as a child. Bob Thomas writes, "Walt took a boyish delight in playing tricks on his parents. He was fascinated with magic tricks..." (*Walt Disney, An American Original*, p. 35.)

After the military, Walt hoped to have a career as an artist. He applied to the advertising agency of Pesman-Rubin. Roy, his brother, claimed that Pesman-Rubin hired Walt as a personal favor to Roy who handled the agency's account at the bank Roy worked at. Walter lasted a month until the advertising agency let him go due to Walt's "singular lack of drawing ability."

According to *Current Biography 1952*, in 1923, Walt and Roy had together $290. They borrowed $500 from another Disney, one of their uncles named Robert Disney and began to try to make cartoons. Robert Disney had retired in the L.A. area in Edendale, CA after a successful mining career. Robert had always been close to Walt's father Elias, and helped Walt and Roy out when they came to California.

Walt loved to study Charlie Chaplin (a member of the Collins family). He scrawled notes about his body language, facial features, and his gag methods. He also read everything he could about animation and cartooning.

They worked out of their uncle's garage in Hollywood, CA. They were finally able to make a good cartoon Steamboat Willie in 1928, which became an instant hit. As with many things in life, the cartoon was not only good, but Walt finally had the right "connections". On Nov. 18, '28, Steamboat Willie was shown in a small, independent theater without any advance promotion or advertising. But amazingly(!) the *New York Times*, *Variety*, and *Exhibitor's Herald* all ran rave reviews of the cartoon the next day. Was this an accident? did journalists from all these prestigious periodicals just happen to go to this tiny independent theater? no it was connections.

The reason the elite decided to promote Walt Disney after Steamboat Willie came out as Hollywood's newest "boy wonder" was to deflect enormous bitterness that had been generated by the Stock Market collapse toward Jewish financiers. Hollywood, even in its first two decades, was known as "Babylon" and "Sin City". The movie industry was well-known to be run by Jews, and many people blamed the Stock Market Crash on the moral degradation that Hollywood had introduced to this nation. There were calls for government regulatory groups to stop the smutty Hollywood films.

Edgar Magnin, the spiritual leader of the major movie makers who were part of the Los Angeles B'nai B'rith reportedly encouraged those in the Mishpucka and others who were B'nai B'rith movie makers that Hollywood needed to protect itself by putting Walt Disney in the limelight as a Christian "white knight with family values". (By the way, Edgar Magnin was nicknamed "Rabbi to the Stars", because he was "the Hollywood rabbi".) E. Magnin's grandfather's department store chain was one of the first major accounts of the Bank of Italy, and Edgar Magnin had continued his family's close association with the Bank of Italy. The closeness also came from the Bank of Italy's close ties to the B'nai B'rith and ADL.

In 1930, the movie industry made a production code which stated that the industry must make a special effort to make movies appropriate for children. Hollywood directly praised Disney in that code as an exemplary model of what the movie industry wanted to do.

With the power of the B'nai B'rith and ADL behind him, Walt began sailing to fame.

Movie studios that had been turning out smut, with lots of sex and violence all jumped on the bandwagon to show Walt's clean wholesome cartoons. Walt was the facelift Hollywood needed after the Depression caused Americans to think about America's morals. Many of the regular movie makers were so corrupt they were out of touch with moral issues, but Walt Disney knew black from white. The Jewish movie makers "pushed the man [Walt] they considered their best hope to the front of the pack" who was billed as a fundamentalist Christian (albeit a masonic "Christian" who rarely stepped foot in a church). (quote from *Walt Disney Hollywood's Prince of Darkness*, p. 50.)

Strangely, the biographies indicate that Walt quit doing the actual drawing in 1927, and Walt devoted himself entirely to the development of the cartoon business, such as raising money. In other words, the image of Walt Disney being the artist who has created the Disney cartoon's is inaccurate. The Disney brothers actually hired many other artists to do the art work. If Walt quit drawing in 1927, and their first marketable cartoon was in 1928, that clearly shows that Walt did not do the actual cartooning. He continued to oversee the work, walking in and rigidly inspecting what was being done to suit his own intuitive tastes.

Actually the genius cartoon artist (animator) who made Walt Disney a success was Ub Iwerks, about whom Walt on a number of occasions said was "the best animator in the world". Without Ub Iwerks to take Walt's ideas and turn them into reality, Walt would never have become famous. Ub was an incredible genius who had a sense of line, a sense of humor, patience, organization and a great sense of what Walt wanted. Walt treated him cruelly at times, interrupting him, playing tricks on him, and not being totally honest with paying him, but he stayed with Walt over the years and made Walt the success Walt became. (The books *Disney's World* and *Disney Animation: The Illusion of Life* have information on the unheralded genius Ub Iwerks.)

Another unknown great artist was Floyd Gottfredson. Floyd Gottfredson drew all the Mickey Mouse cartoons from 1932 until October, 1975--which is a period of 45 1/2 years. Floyd Gottfredson was a Mormon born in a railway station in 1905, and raised in a tiny Mormon town, Siggurd, 180 miles so. of Salt Lake City. In 1931, before Floyd totally took over the Mickey Mouse drawings, he would take suggestions from Walt on what to draw. For instance, Walt puzzled him by insisting he do a cartoon series of Mickey Mouse committing suicide. Floyd had said, "Walt, You're kidding!" But Walt thought that a series on suicide would be funny. Over the years the Walt Disney products never mentioned Floyd's name. The bulk of the fans were led to believe Walt did the cartooning of Mickey Mouse himself. (See the book *Walt Disney's Mickey Mouse in Color*. Ed. Bruce Hamilton, pub. The Walt Disney Co., 1988.)

Fred Moore was involved in the creation of Pluto and some other cartoon characters. The idea for Pluto was Walt's and it was Norm Ferguson's genius at drawing that took the idea and created the actual images.

Walt Disney was awarded 32 personal academy awards for the work that was done by his studios.

Walt Disney's famous signature was actually designed by someone else, and was taught to Walt. (Schickel, Richard. *The Disney Version: The Life, Time, Art and Commerce of Walt Disney*. NY, 1968, p. 34.) Walt could only make a crude Disney signature, so he delegated the writing of the signature to several artists including Bob Moore, Disney's publicity artist. Later, after much practice he learned to make it well enough to do for publicity. Many people who wrote letters asking for his actual signature, and who actually did his signature, thought that they had received forgeries by his staff, because the famous Disney signature was so crude. The nicer looking ones were the forgeries.

One cartoon animator who joined Disney in 1940 recalled that Walt told him the first day, "You're new here, and I want you to understand just one thing. What we're selling here is the name Walt Disney. If you can swallow that and always remember it, you'll be happy here. But if you've got any ideas about seeing the name Ken Anderson [his name] up there, its best for you to leave right away."

OCCULT PORN KING

Walt grew up fascinated with the occult and in an abusive home situation. He was fascinated with cartoons, nature and children. He had an intuitive sense for quality cartoons that would appeal to children.

At some point, the syndicate got him indebted to them. At that point he was their man. He owed them a debt that they held over him. In secret, Walt became a porn king. A victim remembers that he was sadistic and enjoyed snuff porn films. His interest in children was far from altruistic.

The Hapsburgs of the 13th Illuminati bloodline had a sex salon in Vienna, where a porn photographer named Felix Salten worked. Felix Salten wrote a book *Bambi*, which was then translated into English by the infamous communist Whittaker Chambers. The elite were just beginning to form the roots for today's environmental movement. The book appealed to Disney, because Disney liked animals better than people. In the book, tame animals view humans as gods, while the wild and free animals see humans as demons who they simply called "Him." The book begins with both free and tame animal viewing humans as rightly having dominion over them. In the end, the animals view all humans as simply being on the same level as animals, a vicious animal only fit to be killed.

Disney instructed his animators to make the animals "to be human. I want people to forget they are watching animals." Bambi was to receive a Christ-like manger birth, with the animals hailing him as a "prince."

Due to his sexual problems, Walt at one point permitted himself to be subjected to the packing of his genitals in ice for hours at a time. (Elliot, *Walt Disney Hollywood's Dark Prince*, p. 83.)

Children were instructed to call Walt "Uncle Walt." An example of this were the Mouseketeers. For those who know how mind-control programmers have traditionally liked to be called "uncle" by their child victims, the insistence by Walt to be known as "uncle" is distasteful.

From what this author has learned from some sources about Walt's non-public life as a hidden sadistic porn king, it raises questions about other parts of his life. For instance, Kenneth Anger in his book *Hollywood Babylon II*, p. 192, "Some animators stated that the boss [Walt Disney] seemed to have fallen in love with the boy. There may be some truth in this..." The boy, who Walt fell in love with, was a small young **attractive** boy actor named Bobby Driscoll who signed up in 1946 with Disney. He acted in Song of the South, Treasure Island and Bobby's voice was used in Peter Pan. Bobby Driscoll was very intelligent and attractive. Did Disney help or abuse him? If Disney was such an upbuilding wholesome atmosphere, & this child actor had everything going for him, why did Bobby become a methamphetamine addict at 17 & die within just a few years? Why didn't his talent & early career lead to something positive in his life?

From those who knew Walt personally one learns that he had an obsession with the buttock part of anatomy. He enjoyed jokes about this part of the anatomy, which he told to his staff quite frequently. The staff edited out many of his crude posterior jokes from cartoon scripts. Two examples that got by the editors are a Christmas special where a little boy is unable to button the drop seat of his pajamas. The little boy's problem in maintaining his modesty is the running gag of the cartoon. In the end, Santa gives him a champer pot. The 2nd example is the paddling machine used on the wolf in The Three Little Pigs. Numerous Disney cartoons feature buttocks of characters provocatively twitching.

AS A WITNESS BEFORE CONGRESS

After W.W. II, Walt Disney was called upon by Hollywood to testify in their defense at the Un-American hearings which were being carried out by congressmen who were concerned about the heavy communist influence within Hollywood. Walt downplayed any communist influence in Hollywood to Congress. Interestingly, Walt's father was an outspoken Socialist Party leader in the United States who advocated a socialist New World Order. He regularly voted for socialist presidential candidate Eugene Debs. One of the first drawings Walt did as a boy was to duplicate the socialist political cartoons he found in a socialist periodical *Appeal to Reason* that his father subscribed to. When Walt asked in the 1930's how his father felt about socialism's successes, his father Elias said, "Today, everything I fought for in those early days has been absorbed into the platforms of both the major parties. Now I feel pretty good about that." (Thomas, Bob. *Walt Disney, An American Original*, pg. 147-148)

Walt's movie *Alice's Egg Plant* (1925) was pure communist doctrine where the red hen (communist) leads the working chickens on a strike against Julius the farm manager (representing capitalists.)

The strike at Disney and unionization of Disney in 1940, soured Walt toward communism. The workers at Disney publicly made personal verbal attacks on Walt & he never forgave the humiliation.

In spite of his public distaste for communism, his Magic Empire (his castle where he was king) was run like a socialist dictatorship, similar to what the NWO plans. Employees at Disney did not have titles; it was faceless egalitarianism with an all powerful dictator Disney at the top. It was racially elitist too. The only full-time African-American during Walt's lifetime at Disney was a black shoe shine man.

Was Walt a socialist of the National Socialist (Nazi) variety? Arthur Babbitt claims, "On more than one occasion I observed Walt Disney and Gunther Lessing there [at Nazi meetings], along with a lot of other prominent Nazi-afflicted Hollywood personalities. Disney was going to meetings all the time." Lessing was mobster Willie Bioff's crony. Bioff had spent his earlier days running a whorehouse, before coming to Hollywood for the mob. In the final panel of the Mickey

Mouse comic strip of 6/19/40 a swastika appeared. Some people have wondered what this & other "secret signals" in Disney's work meant.

Disney was not Illuminati. The powerful elite are very skilled at controlling people that rub shoulders with them, those who are beginning to become independently wealthy. For instance, they destroyed Robert Morris, the great financier of the American Revolution. They simply used Hegelian Dialectics on Walt Disney. Their Unions and the Mob made Disney's studio one of their prime targets. In order for Walt to protect himself from the unions, which he perceived as communist, Walt got help from the FBI and the mob. Walt was vulnerable to the unions, because he treated his workers terrible, with long hours, low pay, in addition to repeated abuses to their dignity. Walt's large number of employees essentially never received any credit or recognition for their years of creativity and hard work, which was all essentially stolen and credited to Walt by the establishment to build his image. (I write "essentially", because someone might find some obscure exception, but across the board, Walt got all the credit for what his creative workers produced.)

Perhaps Walt needed the ego boost from all the purloined public praise which he stole from his staff to be seen as a great animator, because he had wanted to be an artist/cartoonist and failed. The praise helped sooth the wounds.

One worker recalls that Walt "had no knowledge of draftsmanship, no knowledge of music, no knowledge of literature, no knowledge of anything really, except he was a great editor." This may not be much of an exaggeration, because Walt was **a high school drop-out**, who grew up in poverty on a Missouri farm.

Walt's first official attempt to direct a film (and last) was the film *The Golden Touch* in 1935. The film was an embarrassment. Walt had to pull it from distribution. If Walt lacked abilities to animate, and direct, what was Walt's talent? Walt was the driving force, the spirit so-to-speak behind Disney. He was the dictator who was feared enough to demand more from his workers than they knew they could give--and he could get it. He was the driving force that took a mob of artists, and gag creators, etc. and shaped them into a powerful force to make cartoons and later movies. He was the hard-driving genius who knew what he wanted and got others to create it for him.

He was the driving force that kept an army of costumed sanitation men meticulously cleaning Disneyland. In normal year, Walt would have 800,000 plants replaced at Disneyland, & Walt refused to put up signs asking the "guests" (visitors) not to trample them.

How powerful was Walt? Here is a man who during his lifetime and even up into the 1990's had a rule in the studio & Disneyland that no male employees could have any facial hair, yet he himself wore a mustache for most of his life.

A possible CHRONOLOGY OF EVENTS surrounding WALT DISNEY'S ILLEGITIMATE BIRTH

It is beyond doubt that Walt Disney was an illegitimate child, but that fact resulted in a long list of mysterious happenings. It also gave power hungry men, something to blackmail Walt Disney with.

Because this chapter 5 on Deception is focusing on Disney, and the big boys used blackmail to keep Disney in line, this information is pertinent. The following chronology of events is what this author's believes most likely happened. Without any genetic tests, it is difficult to determine beyond a shadow of a doubt who Walt's biological parents were, and what the actual history of Walt Disney was. Several people have spent many years investigating the real facts surrounding his birth. Many interesting and tantalizing clues have been found. This author believes that the following chronology is suggested by the evidence. (This author's chronology is offered without hundreds of pages of evidence, because the mysteries around Walt Disney's birth are here to stay, no matter what excuses people come up with, and this author **doesn't want to stray from the intended purpose of the chapter**. This is to show that Walt Disney had a secret bastard birth which gave J. Edgar Hoover --and his superiors-- blackmail leverage over Walt Disney. Walt may also have had gambling debts and an abnormal sexual appetite which also helped entrap him. For those who want more evidence and facts, the following are recommended: Almendros, *Mojacar, Corner of Enchantment*, p. 83; *Interview* magazine, no. 242, "Walt Disney Was from Almeria", and last but not least Eliot, Marc. *Walt Disney, Hollywood's Dark Prince*, chapter 11.)

1890--An attractive spanish woman Isabelle Zamora Ascensio of Mojacar leaves Spain and travels to California to a Franciscan monastery.
In the same year, but later on in 1890--Walt's future father Elias, who fancies himself a ladies man, leaves his family to seek his fortune in the gold fields. In California, he meets another newcomer to the state, Isabella Ascensio, and the two newcomers in California have much in common, have a sexual affair and fall in love.
1891--Elias fails to make a fortune and returns to Chicago, but he doesn't forget Isabelle.
1893--Isabelle and Elias have a son, and Elias convinces his wife to accept the baby as theirs rather than have the family's reputation, their marriage, and their family ruined. The son doesn't look like the first two boys at all.
1901--Isabelle and Elias have another bastard son, who Elias brings home and names Walter after the minister of the church he attends. The two bastard sons do not look like the older sons of Elias, and they never have much to do with them, but cling to each other as brothers.
1903--The minister of the church Elias attends finds out about the bastard children and Elias quickly moves out of state so that the scandal will remain secret. Elias has also run up gambling debts.
1905--After moving to Marceline, Missouri, Isabelle is hired as the Disney's maid, so that she has an excuse to move in with them without creating suspicions. She probably does much of the raising and care of the two boys.
1918--J. Edgar Hoover is busy involved with the prosecution of draft dodgers in WW I, and it crosses his desk about the case of Walt Disney committing the crime of forging his parents signature to join the army. Cases like Walt's were watched because people who could be blackmailed could be resources in the future for Hoover. That year, Walt discovered that he had no birth certificate. Walt observes his parents strange reactions concerning his birth certificate & other questions, & begins to deeply distrust his father.
Nov. 1938--Walt's mother dies by gas, and the Disney's maid pulls Elias to safety from the fumes, but Walt's mother dies.
1939-40--Hoover offers Walt Disney to help Walt locate his real parents if Walt will work for the FBI. Either Hoover already knows that he is a bastard child, or he soon learns the truth from an investigation. This gives Hoover blackmail power over Walt Disney, and assures Hoover that Walt will be loyal. Hoover informs Walt Disney of the truth, and then moves to generously protect Disney & his father's reputation. Two FBI men plant baptismal information of a child born to Isabelle in 1890 named Jose Guirao in Mojacar, Spain. This date is 10 years off of Walt's birthdate, and is intended to throw people off track. They can't plant a fake birth certificate for Walt in the records for 1901, because everyone knows from WW I that none exists. Therefore, they plant a fake birth certificate for Walt in the Illinois State records in the year 1890. They hope people will think that somehow a filing error occurred. This way if anything leaks, and worst came to worst, Walt could at least pretend he was adopted and is not an illegitimate bastard. They pay off townspeople in Mojacar to tell a particular story. Townspeople probably receive ongoing payments.
1941--Walt confronts his father with the truth, and his father commits suicide, and his real mother comes to live with him as his maid.
1954--In order to reinforce the myth that Walt was born in Spain, a group of Franciscan monks goes to Mojacar and visibly inquires about the birth records of Jose Guirao and/or Walt Disney. They spend time with the mayor and make sure that everyone connects Walt Disney with Jose, who is a fictitious (nominal) character that the FBI has created records of.
1967--A year after Walt's death, a large group of Americans (a large group was needed because they are not skilled like the 2 FBI men in 1940) pretend to be on "official" business for the American government. They go to Majacar Spain to destroy all the records of Jose Guirao to insure that there will be no spanish claimants to Walt Disney's

fortune.
Later to insure that the fictitious story is solidly in place to mislead the few who might get by the cloud of secrecy over Walt Disney, the Spanish government does a favor to certain powerful people and pays an investigator to investigate the spanish origins of Walt Disney. People of the village willingly tell people without any fear or without any fanfare that Walt Disney was born at their village. Unless they have recently done so, the village has never done anything--no monuments, no markers, or anything about the birth site of Disney. They probably didn't do this for years, because some of the village probably knew it was a lie. With the older people gone, the lie has probably become well entrenched as truth and there is most likely some type of memorial to Walt Disney.

WALT DISNEY'S CHARACTER

Because the Disney deception is such a major Illuminati deception worldwide, and because Walt Disney was the major catalyst behind all the Disney theme parks, movies, trinkets etc. it is of importance to examine his character.

In studying historical figures, this author has tried to get to the rock bottom truth. One may ask, how can this be done? -especially since there have been decades of myths spread by the establishment and their media?

The following procedure which has worked with other historical figures was also done by this author with Walt Disney. The first part of this author's own procedure is to study everything that one can find on the man, paying special attention to what bias and vantage point another author comes from. Special attention is also paid to biographers who try to give the whole truth as they have found it, rather than approved biographies that repeat myths, platitudes, and flattery. The investigator has to be careful because there are authors who deceptively say in their introductions that they are "detached investigators" who are "going to be painfully honest in their reporting" when they actually are skillful coverup artists for the person they write about. When your author, Fritz Springmeier, finished investigating written material about Walt Disney, then I mentally placed what I knew on the shelf temporarily, and did a handwriting analysis based on the scientific principles of Graphoanalysis as well as the broader field of Graphology. This author is a Certified Graphoanalyst who has done handwriting analysis professionally. Using Graphoanalysis/graphology is an excellent way to get an unbiased very deep look at a historical figure. It is a way to by-pass all the propaganda and myths. However, a close historical look and the handwriting analysis (of various historical figures) have always matched each other, as they did in this case too. Here is what was found.

The following paragraphs are how Walt was in the 1920's. The personality profile you will read did not endure. Under the pressure of micromanaging Disney Productions as well as living with financial stresses, by the 1940's, Walt could be found in rages giving rough treatment to his wife, and rough spankings to his two children. He went to psychiatric counseling to cope with the stress. And unfortunately with the progression of time, by the 1960's Walt had become a sadistic egotistical alcoholic. One biographer described him as "...a bully and a know-it-all" (*Disney's World*, p. 220) Even then Walt had men working for him, such as Bill Walsh (who had been a orphan as a child) who worshipped Walt. But here is how he was in the 1920's:

Walt was a self-motivated individual with lots of energy which was constantly seeking some outlet. (People have written much about this trait of his.) He was more the giver than the taker in relationships. (In the first few years, when he was responsible for making business contracts he often gave away his work without setting prices for profits. He even wrote letters to his boss to the effect that his first priority was good cartoons not profits, and that he'd work without profits, but he did want some appreciation for his work. That was his sensitive nature showing.) Walt wouldn't wait for others to come up with an idea or someone else to make a move--he was there first. He could communicate his ideas with clarity and ease and move easily from idea to another. (He would storm into Disney Productions and spew one idea after another into his workers' ears.) He enjoyed competition. He had a quick mind and keen perception. He frequently acted on intuition and impulse, taking chances and endangering his own security. (He frequently gambled all his life savings and everything he could scrape together on a project.) Long projects bored him. (Fortunately the real tedious work of cartooning was done by a large staff of artists.) House chores and repetitive chores bored him and he avoided them. (He was absolutely a total slob around the house as a bachelor.) He was impatient with vague philosophies, he liked concrete realities. He was difficult to get along with because he had both a playful side (even to the point of cruel practical jokes) to his personality and an aggressive intolerant impatient side that wanted to achieve. Naturally, people around him were disconcerted because on a subconscious level they never knew which side of him they would deal with. (The reference series *Current Biography* "Disney" article p. 248 gives the following Walt Disney quote, "We don't even let the word 'art' be used around the studio. If anyone begins to get arty, we knock them down.") He was geared for action. He was always inventing ways to get what he needed. He could be explosive when provoked. (The old time associates of Walt remember his explosive temper.) He was a person of dynamic energy, sensuality and keen thinking, and a disciple of the pleasure principle.

Because his father was so abusive and misused his position of authority, Walt came to be deeply ingrained with defiance toward authority. (The themes of his films repeatedly sympathize with those who rebel against authority, and the police and other authority figures are consistently shown as absurd. One way he expressed irresponsibility was with lively dance scenes, which has been a hallmark of teenage rebellion during the 20th century. "Comic anarchy reaches its fullest expression in Alice Rattled by Rats, which shows what the rats do when the cats goes away!) He felt that rules were for others to follow. (That is one reason he would step outside of the law and commit illegal acts. This is one trait that may be responsible for some of the criminal activities Walt ended up participating in.) Walt also didn't like to be closely supervised. (He wanted to manage his Disney Magic Kingdom as if it were his own kingdom. He wanted to be an authority figure, and indeed became the dictator of his Magic Kingdom. When his workers differed with his own views he felt that they were infringing upon his own inalienable rights as an individual.) He was somewhat of a melancholic temperament, that type of perfectionist who still enjoys life. He felt a need to protect himself against intimacy with others. He was most home in a setting which he made for himself.

Walt had the traits of an executive. He was slow to reveal his innermost feelings, and definitely set his own goals. Walt was one of those persons that when the going got tough, he hung in there. Likewise he would cling to his ideas, plans, and possessions. (His stubborn refusal to allow his brother Roy to stop the creation of Disneyland led to events that split the brothers. His determination to succeed was taken advantage of by the crime syndicates to blackmail him with some debt. In order to get his dreams, he was willing to give them what they wanted.)

A clue to Walt's macabre sense of humor, at times almost a graveyard sense of humor, and his high tolerance of seeing pain in others, is that Walt was seriously thinking of volunteering again as a medic after the W.W. I fighting in France was over, when volunteers were needed for the Balkan fighting.

Walt loved animals more than people. The only human being that he had rapport with while growing up on the farm was his Uncle Ed (who he called Uncle Elf), who looked like a cross between a leprechaun and a prune. Uncle Elf could make animals sounds and bird whistles to Walt's delight.

Walt loved the charm of the farm and nature and he loved royalty, pageantry and a strict social hierarchy such as Freemasonry provides. He often wove a combination of the barnyard in with royal parades and other trappings of royalty. For instance, in Alice the Piper, the King Hamlin is a farmer who sleeps in a farmhouse. In Puss in Boots the local king lives in an authentic palace incongruously placed in a village. His early film Alice's Day at Sea includes both the features of a royal court and an American circus. In typical Disney disdain for authority, he pokes fun at criminal fraternal groups with their rituals and passwords in Alice & the Dog Catcher, Alice Foils the Pirates, and Alice's Mysterious Mystery. And while he was a secret FBI agent, he went against Hoover's wishes and poked fun at the FBI's authority.

Walt was loyal to what he believed and could be loyal to those individuals who he deemed worthy of his loyalty, but he didn't want anyone to have authority over him. (Walt was a 32° Freemason & an occultist, he was loyal to that philosophy and loyal in his early years to his older brother Roy O. Disney, who was a father figure to him.) If anyone at the studios agreed with him when he was angry at his brother Roy, he or she risked losing their job. Both brothers were protective of each other, and felt they were the only ones who could criticize the other one.

d. Who was Roy O. Disney?

Roy O. Disney was born in 1893, and his brother Walt in 1901. They had three other brothers, but Roy and Walt (1901-1966) were only close to each other and not to their other brothers, who didn't resemble them. Walt was named Walter Elias, his middle name derived from his father's first name. The Disney family had immigrated from Ireland to Canada and then to the U.S. The father of the brothers as stated was Elias, and their mother of scottish descent, who may not have been the biological mother, had the maiden name Flora Call.

Roy died in 1971, shortly after the opening ceremonies for Walt Disney World. He kept his promises to his brother to build Walt Disney World. He reneged on his promises concerning the city of Epcot (which was derailed into becoming EPCOT).

Roy O. during the 1930's lived in North Hollywood.

Roy's family later located in Napa Valley, CA, and was associated with the Illuminati kingpins in the area. Napa Valley has been nicknamed the Valley of Kings. This "Valley of Kings" plays a major role in the dirty activities revealed in this chapter. Roy O. Disney played a bigger role at Disney Studios than people realize. For example, it was Roy O. who made the decision to cut 45 min. out of Fantasia, so that Walt's pet project could be distributed to movie theaters.

Roy O., considered by some insiders as the more evil of the two brothers, kept the financial books for the Disney's down through the years. It is known that Disney kept two books during the 1950's, so it is hard to believe anything except that Roy O. was fully aware of how Disney brought in their money.

The big boys always kept the financial screws to Walt and Roy. The big boys often figured out scams to take their money. When the Disney brothers had an arrangement with Columbia Studio (run by Harry Cohn) they were advanced $7,500 for each cartoon which cost them an unprofitable $13,500 to make. Further, Cohn liked to cheat them by not sending them their money, and taking a ridiculous amount of time to pay them what he owed them.

The cash flow problems of the Disney brothers also came from Walt's desire to keep improving and upgrading the technology they used. When Walt went to color over Roy's objections, Disney's profit margin was damaged and the studio was left with shortages of cash. In 1937, Walt's repeated gambles with cartoon production ideas caused Roy O. to say, "We've bought the whole damned sweepstakes." From 1940 through

1946, Disney lost money every year. In '46, he lost $23,000. Finally in 1947, things turned around and the Disney studio made a profit of $265,000.

Cartoons and movies were not really big moneymakers for the Disney brothers, until it was realized that old films could be replayed on television. Overall, from the 20's through the 50's, the Disneys may have broke even with animation. This is why Disney Studios at Christmas, 1931 was unable to pay its payroll. Pinocchio cost $2.6 million to make in the late '30's, an amount hard to retrieve at that time from the box office, and Fantasia's original release in the '40's was a dismal financial failure. When Sleeping Beauty was released in 1960, it was a loser, movie goers were apathetic towards it.

The real money made by the Disney brothers in the 1930-1950's came from the merchandising of Disney products, the production of underground hard porn, and the kickbacks from various groups which used Disney for mind-control programming, and money laundering.

When Walt died, his shares in Disney were worth $18 million. His family all in all held 34% of the stock in Walt Disney Productions.

Roy O. Disney's daughter Dorothy Disney Puder & husband Episcopalian Rev. Glen Puder purchased property at 1677 Sage Canyon Rd., Napa Valley east of Rutherford. (This is close to the Rothschild's Opus One Temple mentioned in *Vol. 1*. O.J. Simpson's lawyer Johnnie Cochran Jr. was in the Rothschild's hard-to-enter Opus 1 when the jury arrived at a decision in O.J. Simpson's case.) It is very typical for Mafia families in south Boston to have one family member in the clergy & one full time in organized crime. (See author's *Be Wise As Serpents* for an expose on the Episcopalian Church, which is simply a branch of Freemasonry.) All kinds of interesting Mafia figures, Illuminati, and Bohemian Grovers live up the Sage Canyon Rd. This is an area that has a large well-kept cemetery for pets. Frank Well's sister and Rich Frank, who will all be discussed later in this chapter, also live on Sage Canyon Rd.

e. Who was Roy E. Disney?

Roy Edward Disney (nephew of Walt) is the son of Roy Oliver Disney (brother of Walt). Sometimes he has been called Junior. The 9/5/94 *Newsweek* story on Disney's Magic Kingdom called him "Keeper of the Flame." Roy is an executive with Walt Disney Co. at 500 S. Buena Vista St., Burbank, CA 91521. He has worked as an asst. producer at Walt Disney Co. from 1954 to 1977. He has also been the vice-pres. of Walt Disney Co. He is president of Roy E. Disney Prodns. in Burbank. He is chairman of the board for Shamrock Broadcasting Co. As if that weren't enough, he is on the board of directors for St. Joseph Med. Ctr., fellow U. Ky. Recipient of the Academy award nomination for Mysteries of the Deep. He is a director of the Guild American West, the Writers Guild, which is important. He belongs to the 100 Club, the Confrerie des Chevaliers du Tastevin, and St. Francis Yacht Club. He likes speed boat racing.

Roy E. Disney was the cocky son of Roy O. He married a gal named Patricia. He was merely tolerated by his uncle Walt, especially after Roy E. made some snide remarks about Walt's plans for Disneyland, which he and his father opposed until Walt Disney personally got the project going. Walt's son-in-law Ronald Miller is one of the Disney clan who can't stand Roy E. The two never liked each other, and in the power struggle between them after Walt's death, Roy E. won and ended up with Disney.

Although people called Roy E. "Walt's idiot nephew", he eventually (with the help of his father & outsiders) won the various power struggles at Disney after Walt died, and is now a powerful figure.

Roy E. Disney and Stanley P. Gold work together in various ways, and are both on the present Disney Bd. of Dir. They are friends and worked to prevent hostile takeovers of Disney in 1984. Gold is in charge of Shamrock Holdings, Inc.

The battle between the two Disney factions

In 1953, the two brothers and their respective sides of the family split when Walt created RETLAW corporation. The two sides have fought ever since. When Walt Disney created RETLAW (his name Walter spelled backwards), this alienated his brother Roy O. & Roy's side of the family. Without going into all the details, what RETLAW did was cut Roy O.'s side out of the money that was to be made. But Roy's side didn't stand by and idly let their share of the pie be lost, they fought back and held their own. Their big break came when Michael Milken and his band of junk bond artists carried out a "greenmail" on the Disney Corp. Only a few insiders know how greenmail works. It is a legal form of blackmail. Milken would work with his friends Saul Steinberg, Sir James Goldsmith, and Carl Icahn. Milken would provide them the financial clout, to make them look financially capable of financially purchasing a corporation that they had selected as a target. According to insiders, Milken got 40% of the upside of any "greenmail" that went right. The targeted corporation would learn that someone like Saul Steinberg was going to buy them out. In order to prevent the buyout, and to keep their jobs, the officers of the targeted corporation would get frantic, and either do suicidal refinancings, or buy the stock of the potential acquirer for much greater prices than the Milken group paid for them. The "greenmail" artists would then take their loot and go on their way.

The stockholders of the targeted company are the real losers of "greenmail", because the management of the corporation in order to finance their protection spends the stockholder's money, takes on new debts, and deprives the stockholders of some profit-making potential of their shares.

Michael Milken's group made feints to take over a large number of corporations, including Walt Disney, Phillips Petroleum and Avco. Saul Steinberg made what looked like the beginnings of a sincere hostile takeover of Walt Disney through Reliance. At one point Reliance became Disney's largest stockholder. Steinberg filed an amended 13D saying he intended to acquire 25% of the corporation. The CEO of Walt Disney, was Walt Disney's son-in-law Ron Miller. Saul Steinberg is a dear business partner with London's Jacob de Rothschild.

Originally, Ron Miller (Stanford Univ. grad.) and Ray Watson (a Bohemian Grove mmbr from Stanford Univ.) of Walt Disney's management brought in the Bass brothers to help them deal with Saul Steinberg's takeover and to buy and develop land (esp. in Florida). Ray Watson was Ron Miller's key right hand man to run things. The Bass brothers are mafia. Disney acquired the Bass Brother's Arvida, and brought the Bass brothers into Disney's management. The Basses sold their stake in Texaco back to the oil co. & then used this money to bolster Disney. Sid Bass & Chuck Cobb (chief exec. Arvida) worked out a deal with Disney. Arvida (sold to Disney for $200 mil.) would profit from developing Disney land in FL & Disney would profit from the new financial strength that getting Arvida would provide. Arvida owned oil fields, theme parks, and had helped create planned communities. For Ron Miller, on the one side was the Illuminati and the other side of things was the mafia. He didn't trust either, but Steinberg's takeover could eliminate Disney's management and both he (and Roy E. Disney) wanted to save Disney from a takeover by Steinberg. At first, Roy E. wrote a letter to Ron Miller & the other board members stating his concerns about the acquisition of Arvida. For Disney management, at least the Bass brothers would let Walt Disney continue to make their family movies. After the Bass brothers joined the Disney management (and became one of Disney's major stockholders), they soon joined sides with Roy E. in a management fallout over whether Disney should buy Gibson Greeting Card Company. With enough votes on the board, they sent Ron Miller packing. With Ron Miller, and those management men aligned with Walt's side of the family gone, then CEO Michael Eisner, Frank Wells, Rich Frank, and Jeffrey Katzenberg and some others made the modern Walt Disney Corporation.

Disney's Touchtone studio which was mentioned above in connection to the movie Alive was created in 1984 by Walt Disney's son-in-law Ronald L. Miller.

Ron Miller's management style was lackluster. The new management has really gone gang busters. Although Walt's side of the family is out of the management end of Disney, they still receive financial rewards from various Disney enterprises.

The Bass brothers acquired more land for Disney in Florida. But under their tutelage, Disney now has a management team that is skilled in land grabbing techniques. The Bass fortune began with Perry Bass, who created a company called Bass Enterprises. In 1969, Perry retired and turned things over to his eldest son, Sid Richardson Bass. Sid has three younger brothers Ed, Robert and Lee. The Basses owned 27% in Prime Computer, as well as sizable real estate and oil holdings. The Bass brothers founded a local prep school in Ft. Worth, TX. Their HQs in Ft. Worth is full of modern art.

The Bass brothers were very clever in their deal with Disney. In exchange for their $14 investment in Arvida, they had gotten (over a period of time) $950 million dollars worth of Disney stock. In 1985, they liquidated Bass Brothers Enterprises and divided the assets between the four brothers. Sid Bass was able to shift his interests from finances to culture and high society. One of the Bass brothers is involved with wineries in Napa Valley. The Bass Brother's financial strategist was Alfred Checchi, now of Beverly Hills, who has been a supporter of Mishpucka member Sen. Dianne Feinstein (D-Calif.).

Roy is involved in criminal activities, and several people investigating him have been bluntly warned that if they continue, they will see their children murdered. Napa Valley's Illuminati activity also connects in with CIA activities as well. The Napa Valley Illuminati families all have CIA connections. For instance, British millionaire Kenneth Armitage, who had to flee from England to avoid arrest on numerous charges of theft, deception and false accounting, had some of his good friends in the Napa Valley, such as Dr. John Duff, Johnny Beck, & others. Armitage has since mysteriously died in prison in England. Armitage had intelligence connections which tie in with twilight world of the criminal activities of the numerous intelligence acronym monsters. Also his company was authorized to provide people with Central American government documents. There is more-- much more to sordid affairs which swirl around Roy Disney.

Napa Valley, where many members of the Disney family live, has the Illuminati's Opus One temple owned by Rothschilds, as well as two roads lined with meticulously kept wineries owned by Illuminati kingpins and connected via secret underground tunnels. To top off this incredible collection of Illuminati wineries (Rothschild's, Mondavi's, Rutherford's, Christian Brother's, Sattui's etc), on the north end of a series of wineries on highway 29 lays the CIA's medieval-looking Culinary Institute of America Greystone (at 2555 Main St., St. Helena, CA 94574), where numerous people have suffered torture. The Greystone Culinary Institute of America recently had the person who runs their campus store mentioned in *House & Garden*, Sept. '96.

f. What do we know about the Disney family in general?

Several members of the Disney family came to England with William the Conqueror. They were not known as Disney then, but because they came from the French Norman town of Isigny, they took the name d 'Isigny, and anglicized it into Disney.

Walt had two daughters, Diane Marie (bn. 12/18/33) and Sharon Mae.

Diane made some revealing comments when she said, "...he didn't spoil us. Like a lot of adolescent girls, I was crazy about horses, and I got quite good at riding. I yearned for my own horse, but Dad wouldn't buy one. And we didn't have a lot of clothes and other things." For being one of the richest men in the nation, Walt can't be accused of having spoiled his children. He was also famous for his ten cent tips at restaurants, which became the talk of the town.

Sharon Mae was adopted and arrived at the Disney home 12/31/36. (She died in '93.) The adoption was kept very secret. The newspapers around the country announced that Lillian had given birth to Sharon, and the Disney family kept up this lie for years. The reason given for Sharon's adoption was that Diane needed a playmate. For years, Walt Disney didn't care much for Sharon and seldom acted like he even knew her name. Walt had wanted a son, but his wife wanted to adopt a girl, so it was a beautiful girl that Lillian picked out to be a companion for her first daughter.

When Sharon was kindergarten age, Walt would take her to the carousels in Griffith Park on Sunday afternoons. Sharon was sent to private schools. She went to Westlake School for Girls, and later was shipped off to Switzerland to a girls' boarding school.

She had soft blond locks and was attractive.

In June of 1948, Walt took Sharon, who was then an attractive 12 yr. old to Alaska with him for about 2 months. For most of this trip Walt and Sharon were alone together. For a father, who had ignored Sharon for years, now Walt was totally obsessed with Sharon. He bathed Sharon every night, combed her hair, washed her underwear, and carefully dressed her each night from head to toe before taking her to nice restaurants. He even followed her when she sleep walked. Why was Sharon a dissociative person?

That summer in Alaska, Walt and his personal pilot took a trip in August to Mt. McKinley, AK. Both were drinking scotch whiskey and they barely missed hitting a mountain, and almost ran out of fuel before finding a runway.

Sharon first married a presbyterian Robert Borgfeldt Brown. Later, Sharon went on to marry William Lund. Years later, Walt's wife Lilly even prevented a biographer from revealing that Sharon was adopted. Sharon died relatively young.

It is important to look at the Disney family rather than just Walt Disney in trying to understand the Disney phenomena. For instance in 1958, the *Wall Street Journal* mentioned that Lillian B. Disney was beneficial owner of over 10% of common Disney stock.

Lillian, Walt's widow, quietly purchased property in Napa Valley and moved there in the late 60's. She bought the property through Walt's Retlaw Enterprises and the Lillian Disney Trust. Lillian and her 2 daughters ran Retlaw for years. Diane Miller, her daughter, also bought land and moved to the Napa area. The Lillian Disney Trust bought the Silverado Vineyards, which Diane & her husband manage as "gentlemen growers" as they call it. This side of the Disney family is shunned by the Illuminati insiders in the Napa Valley, as well as by the Roy O. side of the family. Although very private, there are occasional moments of publicity from Diane Disney Miller, when she donated wine for a fund raiser for the Planned Parenthood Shasta Diablo held at the estate Niebaum-Coppola, owned by director/producer Francis Ford Coppola. Francis F. Coppola comes from an old mafia family. He owns a big winery & directed Disney's Caption EO film. Locals in the Napa area do not trust any of the Disneys, especially the Roy O. side of the family.

There are other Disney's who tie in with the occult world. Wesley Ernest Disney, a 32° Mason & Shriner, who was a U.S. Congressman, a state official & lawyer in Kansas who had a brother Richard Lester Disney-- who is a Rhodes Scholar and a Mason too. Wesley Ernest Disney, by the way began as a lawyer in Muskogee County (a Satanic controlled county), and was a Christian Scientist. He lived in Tulsa, a powerful city of the Illuminati hierarchy. Doris Miles Disney has been a writer of occult fiction, such as *The Magic Grandfather the Chandler Policy* (1972) and *Trick or Treat* (1972) as well as many other occult novels.

g. A history of Disney

"The story of Disney's silent film career is not so much a struggle for artistic expression as it is a fight for commercial stability." During the 1920's, Walt stayed safely within the confines of comic animation as defined by others, such as the producers of Felix the Cat, Koko the Clown, and Krazy Kat. In other words, when many of the ideas were coming from just himself, Disney's movies were not any better than others. In the 1930's, Disney got some of the best talent available and he began to settle for only the best results from that talent. With the mob, and the Illuminati behind him, and driven by an indebtedness to them, Disney began to achieve outstanding results in animation.

Between 1924 and 1927, Walt Disney made a series of 56 silent Alice Comedies which used three different girls (6-year-old Virginia Davis, Margie Gay and Lois Hardwick) to act as Alice who romps around in a makebelief cartoon world. These cartoons combined live action and animation. By the time the series was done, Walt Disney wanted to try working solely with animation. Margaret Winkler in NY (who married Charles Mintz) distributed Walt Disney's Alice Comedies.

From the beginning, children were the center of everything Walt did. The occult world that backed Walt, as well as Walt himself, believed that if they could bring out "the child" (that part of a person called "the child" by various psychologists), then they could appeal to the curiosity and feelings of the "child" part of adults. If it worked with adults, they could do the same with the child part in children. They knew even in the 20's & '30's what had to be accomplished in the secret Great Plan for a New World Order. The Illuminati Great Plan called for family life to be destroyed, for children to rebel against their parents, and for the world to become more violent. Children needed to immerse in images of violence so that a violent society could be created. For instance, the 1925 film *Alice Stage Struck* shows little girl Alice strapped to a log leading to a buzz saw. They also wanted to make occultism--witchcraft the common belief of the American people. The Illuminati felt they could bring in witchcraft if they appealed to the curiosity of the child in every adult.

For instance, the Donald Duck cartoon Corn Chips (1951) shows Donald harassing Chip and Dale who then get back at him by stealing a box of popcorn and spreading it all over the front yard. Now what does a cartoon like this teach kids? It teaches that stealing to repay a grudge is O.K. and that doing pranks is funny.

In Disney's 1920 films, he shows kids cutting school, shoplifting and playing hookey. He shows Alice running away from responsibility to have adventure. He shows prisoners escaping and hobos escaping work. His films are expression of misbehavior being successful. What does this teach children?

In the 1951 cartoon, *Get Rich Quick* Goofy wins money at poker and his initially angry wife who doesn't like gambling forgives him when she sees how much he's won. Goofy indicates that they can have a spending spree by telling his wife, "Easy come, easy go!" The gambling spirit is a very powerful spirit that the Illuminati want to instill in this nation. How can a cartoon that promotes gambling be wholesome for children?

Lt. Col. Dave Grossman is a military expert on how to condition people so that they will kill. He writes in his superb book *On Killing* (Boston, MS: Little Brown & Co., 1996) that the same process that the government has used to condition soldiers to kill, is being used by the entertainment industry. The only major difference is that in the military, men are taught to kill only on command, while our children are being taught to kill whenever they want to via TV's "entertainment." Grossman states on page 308, that the conditioning to kill begins with cartoons. "It begins innocently with cartoons and then goes on to the countless acts of violence depicted on TV as the child grows up....Then the parents, through neglect or conscious decision, begin to permit the child to watch movies rated R due to vivid depictions of knives penetrating and protruding from bodies, long shots of blood spurting from severed limbs, and bullets ripping into bodies and exploding out the back in showers of blood and brains." While children see horrible deaths on T.V., they learn to associate this suffering with entertainment, pleasure and their favorite soft drink, their favorite candybar, and close intimate contact with their date. (See *On Killing*, p. 302) Disney has the appearance of wholesomeness; this appearance is quite deceptive. A close study of Disney cartoons will reveal lots of violence that could not be depicted if the violence was actually real life & not animation. It's the wholesome front which is one of the deceptions that makes Disney cartoons & films so dangerous.

Yes, the image of Disney has been that its cartoons are wholesome. No wonder Illuminati mind-control programmers have laughed at how naive the American public is toward Disney. The Disney Gargoyles cartoons are a television series that is pure demonology. The story line is that a race of demons protects New York City. One of the Gargoyles is even named Demona. The Illuminati programmers are amazed at how stupid the masses of people are, and how easily deceived.

How the Disney movies are used as programming scripts is very involved so only one detailed example is given at the end of this chapter.

The Illuminati and Mafia knew that Walt had the ability to get the job done that the Great Plans called for. (Source: confidential interview.) They knew they had the "carrots and the sticks" to get him to cooperate. There is no doubt that Walt was a hard worker who in turn expected high standards from his employees.

One co-worker of Walt wrote, "Walt made a simple statement, that you can lick them with 'product' if you make your product good enough, they cannot deny it....In Walt's estimation, everything that was done had to be executed with a great deal of thought and finesse." Neelands, Barbara, compiler. *About Ben Sharpsteen*, article by David R. Smith (2nd Impress.) Calistoga, CA: A Sharpsteen Museum Reprint, pg. 2-3.

One big turn in Walt's outlook toward quality came in April, 1927 when the head of Universal Studios wrote a scathing report on the quality of Disney studio work. It forced Walt to realize that up to then he had been slipshod and sloppy. He resolved to never take the easy way, but to work with dedication toward making his drawings come to life with character and interesting situations.

In 1922, Walt made a film Cinderella. This is not to be confused with the later animated film also of the same title released in 1950. The 1950 feature was re-released numerous times.

The Alice cartoons were made with a 6-year-old girl playing Alice. The first six Alice comedies had extensive live-action beginnings, and then went into cartoon. A few of the 1920's Alice silent cartoon titles include:

Alice's Wonderland (1923)
Alice Hunting in Africa (1924)
Alice's Spooky Adventure (1924)
Alice Plays Cupid (1925)
Alice Cans the Cannibals (1925)
Alice Rattled by Rats (1925)
Alice Chops the Suey (1925)
Alice Charms the Fish (1926)
Alice the Whaler (1927)

Alice the Beach Nut (1927)

After the Alice Series, Disney began a fully animated series called Oswald the Lucky Rabbit. Here we see the occult concept of luck (who hasn't heard of a lucky Rabbit's foot?) being subtly promoted. Disney cartoon may entertain, but they also indoctrinate while they entertain.

In 1926, Walt Disney signed an agreement with Mintz and Film Booking Offices (FBO). Film Booking Offices were Illuminati kingpin/mob boss Joseph Kennedy's company. For at least the next years, Disney worked under the control (auspices) of Illuminati kingpin Kennedy. All of the Disney pictures were registered by R-C Pictures Corp., one of the parent companies of Kennedy's FBO. Joseph Kennedy also controlled the RKO studio which worked together with the other big studios to insure that no small studio would develop as a competitor. By 1937, all the big studios--20th Cent., Paramount, MGM, Warner Bros., Cohn's Columbia Pictures and Kennedy's RKO were allowing the mob to skim money from them. Kennedy's RKO gave Walt a guarantee in 1937 that they'd distribute Snow White sight unseen. Walt Disney had their films distributed by Kennedy's RKO from 1936 to 1956.

Another little known detail is that in 1926, Leon Schlesinger (future producer at Warner Bros.) subcontracted animation jobs to Disney. One of these was Universal's *The Silent Flyer*.

In 1928, Steamboat Willie debuted. This was an animated cartoon with a soundtrack starring a mouse later named Mickey Mouse. It had taken lots of hard work and determination on Walt's part, but it was the first cartoon with a sound track and it was successful.

In 1929, the cartoon The Haunted House came out. The story is, Mickey Mouse is forced by a storm into a house full of ghosts who force him to contribute to their spooky musicale.

In 1930, Harry Cohn, one of the most ruthless and unsavory characters controlling a studio bailed Walt Disney out of Walt's trouble with con-artist Pat Powers who was stealing Disney's money. Harry Cohn was a former NY pool hustler and gambler who was brought in by Chicago investors to front their investments in Columbia Pictures, and run their studio. He wore a sapphire ring that the Chicago mafiaman Johnny Roselli gave him. Roselli later became a rogue asset of the CIA, and testified before Congress (the Church Committee on Assassinations in '74) about a CIA contract which was handed him. Roselli worked for the Mafia Council of 9, which incl. Anthony Accardo and Sam Giancana. Harry Cohn was said by some to be the most hated man in Hollywood. His money gave him "the power of an emperor". His money got him the best female flesh available which he used for his pleasure. He always seemed to arrive from Las Vegas with rolls of new greenbacks, which had close associates wondering where all the money came from that he always got when he made trips to Las Vegas.

In 1931, Walt went into a long suicidal depression that lasted into 1932. In the summer of 1932, he took a vacation to try and recover from his nervous breakdown.

By 1932, Ingersoll had marketed its first edition of Mickey Mouse watches. Disney products have served as a model of consumerism for the world. Disney watches have been made continuously since 1932 or '33. In 1932, eighty major U.S. corporations (such as General Foods, RCA & National Dairy) began to market Disney products. Ed Sullivan began regularly running stories that bragged about Disney's work. Freemason Dr. Rufus B. von Kleinsmid, pres. of the Univ. of So. Cal., gave Disney an award from *Parents* magazine for Walt's "work with children".

In 1932, several artists who had worked for William Randolph Hearst came to work for Disney.

In 1932, Roy switched Disney from Columbia to United Artists. United Artists agreed to front Disney $15,000 for each cartoon.

In the 1930's, the Illuminati' Bank of America financed Walt Disney. Years before, the Bank of America had been quietly created from Bank of Italy which was controlled by the same oligarchy that has run the Knights of Malta and renaissance Venice. The Bank of Italy was a powerful bank in Hollywood's first years. It's representatives A.P. and Atillo Giannini financed Walt during the 1920's with petty cash to keep him going, but not enough to get him out of financial bondage.

Joe Rosenberg of Bank of America was sympathetic to Walt. Joe Rosenberg, a jewish banker, came to all of Disney's board meetings, sat beside Walt, and would advise Walt on what direction Disney Studios should take. Joe wasn't a board member, but his advice got high priority. Bank of America also bankrolled other Illuminati projects and organizations. Bank of America had one of their branch offices on Disneyland's Main St. from '55 until '93. They were open on holidays and Sundays for Disneyland. Bank of America is slated to be perhaps the only bank to survive the economic crash, when the Illuminati kingpins will allow their own banks to crash. Bank of America executive S. Clark Beise (who is a Scottish Rite Freemason) has been a member of Disney's board of directors from '65 to'75. One of the biggest depositors in Bank of America is Roy E. Disney. Other Disney execs like Rich Frank have also used Bank of America as their bank of choice.

The Bank of America bankrolled the Disney animation Snow White. Walt managed to sell Joseph Rosenberg on the idea, at a time when old time Hollywood people were advising Rosenberg that Snow White could only be a failure.

When Snow White was successful, Walt announced a monster party for all Disney workers at Lake Norconian, near Palm Springs, southeast of San Bernandino,CA where the cost of everything the Disney workers wanted to order--food or drink or whatever, would be taken care of by the Disney's. Under the full moon, the Disney male and female workers, finally free of the tight rules at the studios, had what amounted to a Roman orgy and a large nude skinny-dip at the lake. Almost all of the Disney workers participated in the orgy and Disney had only two options, 1. fire them all or 2. ignore that the party took place. Walt choose the later option, and after that no-one ever dared mention the party in his presence.

In 1937, Walt and Roy took a trip to Europe where Walt dined with the British Royal family, & met privately with H.G. Wells, the masonic prophet/ planner of what Wells & other masons called "the New World Order". In Paris, the League of Nations (the forerunner to the U.N.) gave him an award.

After the success of Snow White, Disney chose Pinocchio to follow it. Many have asked why Pinocchio was chosen by Walt. If you look at the script, the puppetmaker's wife is taken out of the original script, and there is an emphasis on the little wooden puppet visualizing becoming a flesh & blood son to the man who had created him. Here we have a boy with no soul, who is told if he works hard he will be given one. (Does this sound familiar to readers of *Vol. 2*?) The script was definitely changed to have a storyline far more useful to mind-control programming. For those who think Walt simply recreated fairy tales on the screen, if one examines the changes that are made from the original storylines, they are changed to make them more useful for mind-control.

Both Snow White and Pinocchio have occult type "deaths and resurrections".

After W.W. II, Joseph Rosenberg persuaded A.P. Giannini, his boss, to bankroll Disney again. Although Walt was financed by the Mishpucka (Jewish Mafia), he didn't like the idea. Richard Rosenberg, a later Pres. of Bank of America, is also Mishpucka. Richard Rosenberg (his mother was a Cohen) was also in charge of Northrop Corp. and Marin Ecumenical Housing Assn. (Other examples of Mishpucka executives are R. Goldstein, v.p. of

Procter & Gamble, and Marvin Koslow, v.p. of Bristol Meyers Co.)

In the 1930's, the elite promoted Disney's new cartoons. In 1935, Walt Disney received the French Legion of Honor for his Mickey Mouse cartoons. Also in 1935, the Queen of England (who readers of my previous articles will realize is Illuminati, involved in drug trade, and is involved with the leadership of Freemasonry) and the Duchess of York (also Illuminati) selected Mickey Mouse chinaware as gifts for 600 children. This was after Walt spent time with her in 1934. The League of Nations (the pre-W.W. II equivalent of the U.N.) took the time to vote its approval of Mickey Mouse. (Finch, Christopher. *The Art of Walt Disney from Mickey Mouse to the Magic Kingdom*. NY: Harry N. Abrams, Inc., 1975, p. 53.)

There is no doubt that Walt Disney had talent. There is also no doubt from the record that powerful people wanted to promote him. No doubt his 32° Masonic membership and his DeMolay activities helped boost his support, and also helped Walt's bent toward the occult.

Let's digress just to let people in on Freemasonry's involvement with acting and motion pictures. The famous 233 Club was a masonic chapter for actors who were Freemasons. Examples of actors who were Freemasons include John Aasen, Gene Autry, Monte Blue and Humphrey Bogart, Douglas McClean, John Wayne. Then there is T.V. DJ Dick Clark. Examples of Motion picture executives who were Freemasons incl. Ellis G. Arnall (Pres. of the Soc. of Ind. Motion Picture Producers), Will H. Hays (Czar of motion pictures 1922-45, and Pres. Motion Picture Produces & Distributors of Amer. Inc.), Benj. B. Kahane (v.p. & dir. Assoc. of Motion Picture Producers, Inc.), Carl Laemmle (Pres. Univ. Pictures Corp til '36), Frank E. Mullen (man. dept of info. RCA, VP NBC '39-'46, exec. VP NBC '46-'48), David Sarnoff (Chrm. of Bd. Radio Corp. of Amer. & "father" of American television), Jack M. Warner (v.p. of Warner Bros.) and the President & dir. of Universal Pictures since 1952. The Freemasons have made much of Walt Disney's membership in their membership sales pitches.

Because the 2 Disney brothers' chief contributions to the production of Disney films were the finances and occassionally the ideas used in a film, it is rather misrepresentative of things that Walt Disney got all the credit for the success and quality of the Disney cartoons. He was showered with 700 awards and honors from important people, including 30 oscars, and the Presidential Medal of Freedom (in'64). Walt Disney's great animators never got the credit they deserved, but no one should forget that Walt was the driving force that inspired and guided his workers.

In 1934, Walt Disney made a cartoon about a goddess of the Mystery Religions named Persephone. In the cartoon entitled *The Goddess of Spring*, the goddess Persephone is captured by Satan as his bride and sent to the underworld, with the agreement she could return to earth six months of each year. The Illuminati have rituals around Persephone.

On Dec. 21, 1937, Disney premiered the first full-length color cartoon movie "Snow White and the Seven Dwarfs." This cartoon had taken $1.4 in depression-time money and three years to make. Over 750 artists worked on the film. Walt Disney had gotten the idea from a silent movie of Snow White which he saw as a boy in 1917. The movie has an important occult theme to it, and has been used for occult mind-control programming.

When the 1940's got started, Disney was in financial difficulties. At this point, Nelson Rockefeller hired his cartoon capabilities to make cartoons for South America, with the idea that South Americans would remain loyal to the American capitalist hegemony, rather than shift to rising ideologies of fascism/nazism, if they saw Walt Disney cartoons. In Rio de Janeiro, Brazil on 8/24/42, Disney did its world premiere of Saludo Amigos, a 42 minute feature about Latin America. Goofy becomes a gaucho, a parrot teaches Donald Duck to dance the samba, as well as Disney art showing various landscapes of Brazil in the film. However, the film The Three Caballeros, if it was meant to encourage South American loyalty to American capitalism, completely failed. *The Three Caballeros* showed a sexually lecherous Donald Duck who in bad taste tries to make it with latin women. The mysticism was also seen as bogus. Although the latin Americans hated the film, the establishment media's *Look* magazine praised it.

Another reason that Rockefeller sent Walt to South America was to get him out of the way so that the government could settle the strike by Disney workers. Nelson Rockefeller was the government's Coordinator of Inter-American Affairs, a good position considering how much of South America the Rockefeller's controlled. Rockefeller told Disney that Disney couldn't beat the strikers, but that while Walt was in South America, FDR would see to it that the strike got settled. When Disney returned he submitted to the powers that were, and accepted the unions and the mafia's control.

Another change for Walt Disney was that in 1940, he and Roy turned Disney into a "public corporation" and initially sold 755,000 shares of common stock. The Illuminati Boston firm of Kidder, Peabody & Co. were the underwriters of the studio's public stock-offerings.

By 1940, the Disney Studio at Burbank had become a miniature city with 1,000 men & women employees and 20 buildings on a 51 acre tract of land.

After the U.S. joined W.W. II, Disney Productions were made a part of the American military establishment. The very next day after Pearl Harbor, the military moved onto the Disney Studio, which leads this author to suspect that Disney was already part of the power establishment prior to the war breaking out. Disney made military movies/cartoons that taught the different branches of the military many things. They made propaganda movies for the allies. One series of films was "Why we fight." Disney made movies for the IRS to get people to pay their taxes.

Some of the Disney films were top secret, and concerned secret military weapons or secret psychological tactics of the Americans. For instance, one military film was "Army Psycho Therapy" which taught army men how to instill fear, and about the basics of fear. Another army film was "Prostitution & the War". Another showed a carrier pigeon evading the Germans.

In 1940, Disney came out with 2 full length animated cartoons, *Pinocchio* and *Fantasia*, both of which were soon used for Illuminati mind-control programming. Fantasia contains Schubert's sacred Catholic music Ave Maria, which was used in a concluding segment side to side with the profane Night on Bald Mountain song, as well as six other classical pieces of orchestra music. As a feature cartoon it was a flop, but as a programming tool it was fantastic. Fantasia receives a comprehensive explanation of how it is used for mind-control programming at the end of this chapter. Because an explanation of the use of a Disney film for mind-control is complex, this explanation is placed at the end of the chapter so that it won't interrupt the flow of this chapter's information.

The Pinocchio film has been redone and released 9 times over the years.

Some of the next full length animated films to come out were:

The Three Caballeros (1945)
The Adventures of Ichabod & Mr. Toad ('49)
Cinderella (1950)
Treasure Island (1950)
Alice In Wonderland (1951)
The Story of Robin Hood & His Merrie Men (1952)
Peter Pan (1953)
20,000 Leagues Under the Sea (1954)
Sleeping Beauty (1959)

Very soon after the production of all of these movies, the Illuminati and their intelligence agencies used them for Illuminati total mind-control programming. To see their misuse as programming scripts one has to understand how the fantasy worlds of a programmed multiple are created and how the movie scripts are adapted to be programming scripts. *Vol. 2* gave quite a few examples of how Alice In Wonderland and the Wizard of Oz scripts were used for programming scripts.

When Disney had his animal-nature documentaries, he edited and used narration to give the animals human like characteristics--something he'd already been doing with animation. Disney played an important part in the Illuminati's plan to elevate animals and dehumanize humans.

One of the biggest Illuminati kingpins, and leader (Grand Master) of the Prieure de Sion was frenchman Claude Debussy (bn.1862). Claude Debussy, a Merovingian, was Nautonnier (Navigator-helmsman) of the Prieure de Sion from 1885-1918. (See the document *Dossiers secrets*, planche no. 4, Ordre de Sion, written about in *Holy Blood, Holy Grail.*) In 1891, when some secret coded parchments (Merovingian documents) were found by a french clergyman Sauniere, he was directed by church officials to visit with Emile Hoffet, an occult acquaintance of Debussy. Debussy was close friends with many of the top french occultists of his time. He is known to have been a close friend to both the notorious satanists Jules Bois and MacGregor Mathers. Mathers started the Order of the Golden Dawn. Debussy was also a friend of the infamous Papus (aka Dr. Gerard Encausse) and W.B. Yeats. Papus was one of the men who during his lifetime was part of the interlocking occult directorate of occult groups. Claude Debussy put some works of the previous P.d.S. Grand Master Victor Hugo to music. Debussy and his other powerful occult friends were influential with Monsieur Philippe, whose Russian occult circle influenced the Russian Czars and Czarinas before Rasputin came around. Debussy travelled to Russia and Rome. Some of Debussy's works became operas.

Interestingly, Walt Disney was extremely anxious to make a cartoon using Debussy's Clair de Lune. The work was done, but it was never shown to the public. Disney never found a place to use it. It was originally done with animation with flying cranes for the occult extravaganza *Fantasia*, but when the *Fantasia* ended up too long, Clair de Lune was cut and shelved. It was again planned for the film *Make Mine Music*, but then Blue Bayou was substituted in.

Walt used the Le Sacre du Printemps (the Rite of Spring) music for *Fantasia.* This piece of music was written AS a pagan ritual where a virgin sacrifices herself by dancing to death. Disney's mobster Gunther Lessing had threatened Stravinsky if permission weren't given for Disney to use the piece of music, it would be used anyway.

Dr. Julian Huxley got involved in the production of *Fantasia.* Aldous and Julian Huxley are well known by conspiracy researchers for their roles in the World Order.

In the 1940's and 1950's, the Illuminati began using Disney's *Alice In Wonderland* and the *Wizard of Oz* films as programming bases for their total mind-controlled slaves. Alice in Wonderland had been done many years earlier by the Britisher William Cameron Menzies (who also did Freemason H.G. Wells' masonic forecast of the New World Order entitled "Things to Come" in 1936, and the film Invaders From Mars.).

In 1944, Illuminati Kingpin William Randolph Hearst (with some minor help from others) funded the Motion Picture Alliance, and Walt Disney became a co-founder and its first Vice-President.

In the early 1950's, Walt turned his attention from animated cartoons to other projects, such as True-Life-Adventures, television shows, and the creation of Disneyland. Seal Island was his first true life adventure which was released to the general public on May 4, 1949, and soon won Walt Disney an Oscar. Alfred and Elma Milotte had shot the film on some Alaskan Islands named

Pribilof Islands. James Algar had put the movie together.

In 1952, Walter spelled his named backwards to create the name of another corporation "Retlaw". Roy and his family saw the move as an attempt to cut them out of the financial picture.

In 1954, Walt Disney and ABC made a agreement. ABC would directly invest half a million US dollars as well as guarantee $4.5 million in loans for the construction of Disneyland. This made ABC 1/3 owner of Disneyland. In return, Walt Disney agreed to produce a regular television series for ABC. Remember too that ABC's president Leonard Goldenstein was a good friend of Ronald Reagan.

On July 13, 1955, Walt and Lillian were attempting to celebrate their 30th wedding anniversary at a park and restaurant. Walt got too drunk to speak into the microphone, so he blew noisemakers into it, while Lillian rushed to pull him out of view.

In 1961, Disney bought out the ABC investment (also labelled Paramount) for $7.5 million with cash and notes, and to bring this all up to date, later on July 31, 1995, Disney merged with Capital Cities/ABC, with Disney in nominal control. Actually Capital Cities has long been a CIA front company, so the merger placed Disney squarely within the CIA ranks, although it had been in bed with them for the CIA's entire history.

The Illuminati-controlled corporations of Coca-Cola and the drug firm Johnson and Johnson became sponsors for Disney's early TV shows.

On 7/3/57, the *Wall St. Journal* announced that Atlas Corp. got 26% interest in Walt Disney Productions.

Walt Disney worked quietly with some consultants on the concepts behind Disneyland. His brother and nephew tried to prevent the project from happening. Later they requested that Walt sign over Disneyland, Inc. to Walt Disney Productions, which Walt did. Walt kept 17.25 % of Disneyland holdings and Walt Disney Productions got the rest. Walt Disney Productions then shared their portion with others.

The man who helped Walt finance Disneyland was the executive vice-pres. of ABC Kintner.

Walt Disney got the Illuminati's Stanford Research Institute to determine what would be the best site for Disneyland.

A retired Navy admiral Joe Fowler was in charge of constructing both Disneyland and Walt Disney World. How do admirals fit into the power structure? Admirals are briefed each day, and are given information concerning the secret power structure. Most men who are at that military level are Illuminati or at least well controlled by the system. Within the last few years there has been an intense effort to weed out any admirals who are not loyal to the Illuminati.

Morgan-Evans, who lives in Malibu, and who may be of the famous Morgan clan, was the one who created the spectacular landscapes for Disneyland, Walt Disney World, and EPCOT in FL.

According to CIA informants opposed to the NWO, CIA contractors were brought in to build the underground tunnels under Disneyworld in 1977. These contractors were sworn to secrecy, but were only informed on a need to know basis why the CIA was involved with an amusement park. To work on the secret tunnel project took an "Above Top Secret" clearance. A major programming center was constructed under Lake Holden. (Many of the lakes in Florida are named Lake So-and-so, rather than So-and-so Lake.) The tunnel system was built for programming trauma-based total mind-controlled slaves. It was built of concrete with steel reinforcement. Lake Holden lies just to the northwest side of the Orlando International Airport and just south of Interstate 4. (It is close to Range 29E on quad maps.) It is only (as the crow flies) about 12 miles from Disneyworld. In spite of Draconian measures of secrecy, numerous lawsuits (Fed. & State) were filed over the years by victims trying to expose the Disneyworld programming tunnels, so that finally the programming center was dismantled, cleaned up and a "maintenance" tunnel level and a "casting" tunnel level were opened to the public. During its heyday, the programmers (military & intelligence men) had exotic offices underground with unusual programming equipment.

It doesn't take any imagination to realize that if Disney carried mind-control programming above and below ground, that they would need tight security forces to protect their secrets. Indeed, such is the case. Disney amusement parks have been granted draconian powers wherever they have been built! The Disney parks have also employed armies of spies dressed like tourists to spy on Disney's employees! If amusement park workers did anything slightly out of place, they were (and still are) reported by the spies in the camp, and they often have lost their jobs. For instance, one ex-worker, who had 10 years with Disney, was caught discussing his divorce with another worker. Since divorce doesn't fit the wholesome image that Disney wants, when the spy dressed as a tourist reported his conversation, he lost his job.

Many workers have tried to tell their personal horror stories of Disney's draconian rules and their draconian private police force, but most of the time Disney has had the power to suppress and intimidate away any bad publicity. An exception to that is the recent Nov. 4, '96 *Napa Valley Register* article on page 2D entitled, "Critics of Disneyland Say Security Abusive Inside Magic Kingdom." UCLA law professor David Sklansky commented about Disney's police, "One of the major problems we have is nobody really knows what they are doing- how often they stop, interrogate or search people. They are not subject to the same sort of regulatory controls."

It's almost superfluous to tell readers that Disney's amusement park with it's theme areas such as Fantasyland, Tomorrowland and Adventureland were a great success. Everyone worldwide was curious to visit this entertainment mecca to participate in something that had a clean, wholesome image to it. The entire world system pulled together to insure that Disneyland got the image and publicity that the top 13 Illuminati families and the various syndicates wanted it to have. For 40 years they've done this.

When something that everyone thinks is clean and wholesome is not attacked by the world system, that should raise eyebrows among thinking people. Home schooling, learning to read phonetically and other wholesome activities for children have been viciously attacked and ridiculed by the established media. Why has Disney gone untouched?

Disney Studios for years strove to have a very clean image. Workers had dress codes, and any activity on the part of employees that wasn't morally conservative was grounds for instant dismissal. Of course, the exceptions were well covered up, such as an employee who used hypnosis to get quite a few of the females employees to undress until nude.

John L. Hulteng, author of *The Messenger's Motives* (Englewood Cliff, NJ: Prentice-Hall, 1976, p. 213) informs us, "As communication researchers have emphasized, **the greatest impact the media have on the formation or change of public opinion is in terms of impressions built up over a long period.**" [bold added] The wholesomeness of Disney is an image that has been built over a long period of time. Disney's occult themes of world citizenship, witchcraft, humanism and idolatry have also **been long running impressions** that have been craftively perpetrated upon this nation, so long that they began prior to this author's --& probably the reader's-- birth.

People don't associate movie's like *Consenting Adults* with Disney, or *The Corpse Had a Familiar Face* with Disney. In fact as previously mentioned, when Disney wanted to put out more "adult" films, they did a slight of hand and created the label Touchstone films so that people wouldn't associate movies like Splash (which showed what looked like bared breasts) with Disney Productions. Another label, Hollywood Pictures, was created by Disney to help distribute Touchstone films. At first the personnel of these companies was simply Disney's staff, but as time went on, they got their own production personnel.

On Oct. 27, 1954, Walt Disney's Wonderful World of Color debuted on television. The TV show celebrated Disney's movie triumphs. The words Wonderful World of Color are not ill chosen. According to an Illuminati mind-control programmer, when Disney worked on his cartoons, and amusement parks, colors --special colors and color combinations--were specifically chosen for mind-control programming purposes. Wonderful World of Color under various names such as Disneyland aired for 22 years over the television networks.

In 1955, Walt Disney made his cartoon character Mickey Mouse real by creating a fan club--the Mickey Mouse Club, which aired five days a week usually just as children came home from school. Twenty-four children called mouseketeers would help Mickey, and they would dance and sing and do skits.

The Mickey Mouse Club adored the unique, cute little beanie Mickey Mouse caps with their big ears mounted to each side of the beanie. In the 1950's, most kid viewers of the show wanted their own "Mouse Ears" and to become a Mouseketeer, especially children who were receiving Mickey Mouse scripts in their total mind-control programming. Disney used his Mouseketeers to play all the roles in an Oz movie *Rainbow Road to Oz*, which was never shown to the public. Adults today (both men & women) who received Mickey Mouse programming during the 50's through 70's can still be seen with Mickey Mouse clocks, watches, lampshades, knick-knacks, tee shirts, etc. Years later the kids who watched can still remember "Spin and Marty" and the Mickey Mouse theme song. The image that everything was perfect including Mickey was portrayed by the Club's T.V. program. Still somehow the American people began to use the word "Mickey Mouse" as a synonym for a silly, pretend way of doing things. It became common for people to say, "He mickey-moused it together." to mean he did a poor job putting it together.

On Jan. 30, 1957, Walt Disney had a television show aired entitled "All About Magic" where a Magic Mirror explains about magic. The Magic Mirror also contains a "Bibbidi-bibbidi-Boo" sequence.

In 1959, Disney bought 8 small submarines from Todd Shipyards for $2,150.000.

When ABC wouldn't let Walt make a TV series out of a storyline where a magic ring changes a boy into a dog (a mind-control programming theme)--because ABC didn't think the public could swallow the story line--Walt quit ABC for NBC. Walt then made a scaled down version of this occult storyline entitled The Shaggy Dog.

Early in the 1960's, Walt and his brother Roy went secretly looking for an area on the east coast to build another Disney Park. Walt the younger of the two, died in 1966, and Roy finished the project. Beginning in 1964, 30,000 acres were secretly purchased at $200 an acre in the Orlando, FL area just west of NASA's Cape Kennedy. Using phoney names and paying cash, Disney buyers bought the land and swore the sellers to secrecy.

The Magic Kingdom has been multiplying. In 1971, Walt Disney World was opened to the public. Bob Hope and others participated in a Disney special on Oct. 29, 1971 "Grand opening of Walt Disney World". From the time of its opening until Oct. 12, 1995, DisneyWorld calculated 1/2 billion people visited DisneyWorld. This amusement park is in Orlando, FL on over 27,400 acres and includes the EPCOT Center (now also called simply Epcot). The EPCOT center was another dream of Walt Disney's (albeit more than slightly modified from Walt's original EPCOT ideas.)

EPCOT originally stood for Experimental Prototype Community of Tomorrow. It was to be an extension of the massive mind-control being carried out at DisneyWorld. The original EPCOT city designed by Walt was to carry on its commerce (traffic) via underground roads and tunnels like the Disney Theme parks.

After Walt Disney died, his successors changed the proposed experimental city into another theme park simply called Epcot.

It is not unusual to see crowds of over 48,000 people descend on Walt Disney World and the EPCOT center in a single day. Some visitors arrive via a monorail. Visitors can buy 5-Day World Hopper passes which allow them to bounce around with admission to all the sites for a seven day period. In other words, some families stay for a week at Disneyworld. Hardcore visitors can get Annual Passports which provide unlimited use of Walt Disneyworld for an entire year.

In reality, many visitors to Disneyworld begin the day enthusiastic and after a day of hot sun and waiting in long lines with large crowds for imitations of reality, the tourists are zombie-like and looking forward to getting back to their hotels. Many people have felt the rides were not nearly what they expected. Some of the rides are better than others, and some typically get comments like, "It was stupid." Some of the spooky events like Snow White's Adventures, or the oversized heads of the Disney characters walking around can leave the little preschool children terrified and dazed for the rest of the day. In contrast, older children, who normally rarely show patience at home may show how much they want to go on a particular Disney ride, by waiting an hour and a half in the hot sun for a ride.

Alien Encounter is a Walt Disneyland feature that invites tourists in for a "demonstration of interplanetary teleportation." When the "demonstration" as planned "breaks down" an "alien" with asocial traits appears among the audience and terrorizes the audience. A cute creature is hideously fried, deformed, and then vomited into space screaming. Here are some comments from visitors to this Walt Disneyland attraction.

- "Alien Encounter ...is one of those rides I can say I've seen and that I have no intention of ever doing again. In fact, parents who take children under the age of six should be brought up on child abuse." Woman, from MI
- "Alien Encounter was the WORST experience for my 10-year-old (and almost every child in there). It starts out cute enough during the preshow, but the actual show is a disaster for children. My daughter screamed and cried in terror throughout it. I thought the Disney warnings were vague and inaccurate. When we left, there wasn't one child with dry eyes (even sturdy looking 12-year-old boys were crying.). I think an age requirement of 13 or 14 is more appropriate. I talked to a few adults and we even agreed that the special effects were extremely unpleasant even for us. This show is not a Disney family experience--its ATROCIOUS!!" A mother from Phillipsburg, NJ.

- "We did go to Alien Encounter...The preshow is deceiving. It kind of lulls you into thinking "this isn't so bad." When the main part came up, I admit the experience gave me the absolute heebie-jeebies...I am never doing that presentation again--it was way too intense for me, and I'm now 27 years of age!--from a family in Laurel, MD

Michael Eisner, the President of Walt Disney Co., initially rejected Alien Encounter for not being scary enough when it was being considered as an addition to Disneyworld. One wonders what he would have liked!

Snow White's Adventures, which was an attraction at Disneyland, was one of what the Disney people called "dark rides". After a while a sign appeared with a witch warning people that the attraction was scary. Later in 1983, they renamed it Snow White's Scary Adventures. It might be interesting to point out that when the original Snow White and Seven Dwarfs film came out, that England forbid the film to be seen by any child under 16 unless accompanied by an adult because of the scary content of the movie. How far we have come since then.

Schools in the Florida and California areas also make field trips to the Magic Kingdom that are arranged with Disney. EPCOT receives tens of thousands of children this way during March, September and October. High schools use the Magic Kingdom for proms or senior nights, and some couples use the facilities of the Magic Kingdom for weddings. *Modern Bride* ranked Orlando as the number-one honeymoon destination in the world. Group discussions of people who took honeymoons to DisneyWorld have had a consensus that the hype is not as great as the reality.

Some weddings are done with cartoon characters. Disney offers "fairy-tale" wedding packages. A great deal for two mind-controlled slaves. They can reinforce their programming while getting married.

The Disney fairy-tale wedding typically has its ceremony on a pavilion on an island in the Seven Seas Lagoon with the Cinderella Castle as a backdrop. The fairy-tale wedding can then be followed with a Fantasy reception with a choice of themes such as Beauty & the Beast or Aladdin. The fantasy programming can continue as the bride is delivered to a "Cinderella's Ball" by an actual glass carriage drawn by six white Disney ponies. A costumed fairy-godmother & stepsisters are also at the ball. Desert is served in a white chocolate slipper.

One of the after-dark shows is IllumiNations which consists of music, fireworks, erupting fountains, special lighting, and laser technology done at the World Showcase Lagoon.

EPCOT has a show Cranium Command at the Wonders of Life in the Future World section where guests sit in a theater that functions as a command control room for a boy's brain.

In 1980, Disney came out with the box office flop *The Devil & Max Devlin*.

In 1984, Roy E. Disney brought in Michael Milken, of junk bond fame to help Disney out financially.

In 1985, Disney bought MGM's rights to Leo the Lion logo and began using the MGM Wizard of Oz material. Later a remake of *Alice In Wonderland* came out in the modern motif of *Honey I Shrank the Kids*.

In the 1990's, Illuminati controlled companies continued their promotion of Disney. For instance, the Nestle family's Nestle company promotes Disney movies on their chocolate bars. The Nestle family is exposed in this author's booklet *Illuminati Control Over Foods and Grains*, p. 4 as one of the elite Black Nobility families.

In 1996, Walt Disney World created an actual residential town named Celebration on its property. This self-contained community has 20,000 and a school, a theater, a fiber optic information network linking business, as well as other features.

SOME DISNEY people of interest.

Over the years, the close associates of the Disneys' is very revealing. The public can get a feel for Disney's attitude toward Illuminati bloodlines in the Disney movie *The Happiest Millionaire* which is about Anthony J. Drexel Biddle and Angie Duke. Readers of this author's previous writings will recognize the **Biddle and Duke** names. In fact, the movie was based loosely on a book written by **Cordelia Drexel Biddle** about the Biddles.

X Atensio. His first name was Xavier, but was nicknamed and called X. He worked on the haunted mansion of Disneyland with WED enterprises. He joined Disney in 1938, and was an assistant animator of Fantasia.

Warren Beatty. (b. 1937 in VA) This actor is from the Illuminati Beatty family and starred in Disney's Dick Tracy. The Dick Tracy film uses color in a special way, and this ties in with the color programming of the mind-control. Some total mind-controlled slaves have programming based on Disney's Dick Tracy movie for them to track down and kill "targets" (people). Warren's sister is the famous (or infamous) Shirley Maclaine. Shirley "MacClaine" is not what she appears. Her father was a professor who was a CIA asset. She was used by the CIA as a sex slave. She became popular with the studios because she went to bed with the correct people. Her talents were used to get her as an intelligence slave into places that an obvious intelligence agent couldn't go. She was married to a man in the NSA for nearly 20 years. Her adopted name Maclaine (reportedly her mother's maiden name) is a pun on McLain, VA where the CIA programmed her. She was used by the CIA in an operation in Australia, where the CIA used her as a sex slave to compromise Andrew Peacock, an Australian MP, so that they could establish the Nugen-Hand bank for their dirty money laundering etc. She is friends with satanist Stephen Nance who has provided her with some of her teachings. Lowell McGovern writes her material. The CIA has programmed many of their New Age slaves to adore Shirley MacLaine. An example of this is Christa Tilton, one of their mind-controlled slaves, who revealed in an interview how she considered herself a born-again Christian who had spent most of her life in Oklahoma, but had mysteriously been drawn to Shirley MacLaine. During her life she has gotten repeated "psychic urgings"--that is strong urges to do things and go places, which she doesn't understand where these urgings came from. After hypnosis, Christa drew pictures of the doctor who programmed her. Christa has had a federal agent monitor her constantly. Her husband has seen this agent, who has shown up on her door step and made calls to her. She names the agent John Wallis (most likely a cover name). This agent has a complete knowledge of her life, and government agents have taken photos of her during her supposedly "alien abduction" experiences. Christa is just one of hundreds of victims who have been programmed to adore Shirley MacLaine. (Christa is mentioned here because she is one case that this author is familiar with.) Warren Beatty, who peppers his speech with four-letter words was a student at the Stella Adler Theater Studio in NYC.

Black, Shirley Temple. Shirley Temple Black sat on the Disney board of directors (74-75). Her films were used for some of the early 40's and '50's programming and teaching slaves body movements/dance. She married someone in an elite Network family from San Francisco named Charles A. Black. Charles A. Black was a Lt. Col. in the Pentagon who lived at Bethesda, MD. Was Shirley an early example of brain-stem scarring to get geniuses? Shirley's brother appears to have developed "Multiple Sclerosis" from brain stem-scarring. It was Shirley Temple who co-founded the International Federation of Multiple Sclerosis Societies, and was a member of its exec. committee. Shirley represented the U.S. at the UN General Assembly in 1969, belongs to the Sierra Club, and has been decorated with the Cross of Malta. Shirley has shown clues that she may be an Illuminati mind-controlled child protege.

Stephen Bollenbach. Bollenbach was part of Walt Disney management, and was a key figure who helped engineer Disney's $19 billion buyout of the CIA's Capital Cities/ABC, as well as sell the idea to Eisner. He is the CEO of the Network's Hilton Hotels Corp. He recently has been involved with trying to buy ITT, in order to put together the world's largest hotel-casino combination. Bollenbach has an extensive background with the gaming-gambling industry. When the Justice Dept. began looking into the merger of Disney with Cap. Cities/ABC, Bollenbach resigned his Disney position. Some people feel his resignation was needed for Disney to get the Justice Dept. to approve the merger, because his past was vulnerable to be exposed.

Warren Buffett. A major stockholder in Walt Disney. He also owns 40% of Berkshire Hathaway Inc. which also owns lots of shares of Disney stock. According to S.F. Examiner, Buffett himself owns 24 million shares of Disney. Warren Buffett is part of the Ak-Sar-Ben fraternity and Monarch slave abusers who were exposed in the Nebraska Saving & Loan scandal. He is perhaps the second richest man in the nation, and too powerful for anyone to touch. In the kingpin vs. kingpin battles, some people close to the inside see Buffett as a good guy. Readers need to study the Lincoln Savings & Loan scandal and the scandals connection to programmed child slaves at Boy's Town to get more information on this Disney stockholder. Robert G. Hagstrom, Jr., who is the portfolio manager of the mutual fund Focus Trust, which has shares in Walt Disney, wrote the book *The Warren Buffett Way*. Hagstrom has a chapter on Disney in his *The Warren Buffett Way*. He quotes Buffett as extremely enthusiastic about Disney's merger with Capital Cities/ABC. Because of his enthusiasm Buffett says, "The odds are extremely high that we will have a very large amount of Disney stock."

Salvador Dali--This strange surrealist spanish artist was a friend of Walt Disney. After Salvador was kicked out of Spain for Franco's belief that he was a communist, he came to America, and worked with Disney Studios in 1946. Salvador, an eccentric who had no particular work habits, described himself, "The only difference between me and a madman is that I'm not a madman."

The Tommy Dorsey Band--This band has had a number of men in it who are Mind-control slave abusers associated with the Network. Frank Sinatra, a sexual slave user, got his big break with this band. This band performed at Disneyland in 1984 at the Plaza Gardens. Tommy Dorsey was part of the Network's in-crowd. When he was on a USO Tour with Bob Hope, he stabbed actor Joe Hall and threw him out of a window. Joe had to have 32 stitches. But Joe didn't get justice, the judge dismissed his case against Tommy.

Michael Dammann Eisner, Chairman at Disney is a CIA asset and connected to the mob. Some insiders believe he is connected to elements of the CIA & mob that are anti-NWO. Even so, these anti-NWO factions also employ mind-control. Eisner ignored a threat by Red China to boycott Disney products if he made a movie about the nation Tibet that China controls with draconian force. The U.N., the Commerce Dept. and the State Dept. all tried unsuccessfully to get him to back down on the film. A paper trail connecting Michael Eisner and Walt Disney Co. to mind control is their support of the Boys & Girls Club of Napa Valley, which is used for a supply of children for pedophilia and mind-control. The Boy's & Girls Club is used to supply caddies for the Silverado Country Club, where these children are also used as mind-controlled slaves for the sexual perversions of the elite. Notice that Napa's Silverado Country Club invites in celebrities (such as CIA asset Pat Boone, Joe DiMaggio ex-husband of sex slave Marilyn Monroe, Engelbert Humberdinck a slave handler, Digger Phelps Notre Dame's coach who uses slaves, and Jack Valenti CEO of Motion Picture Assoc. & Bohemian Grover) for a golf tournament which is billed as a "benefit for the Boys & Girls Club". The benefit for child slaves is they get to caddie & sexually service elite perverts.

Michael (bn. March 7, '42 in NY) came from old American money of a family that has been rich merchants and lawyers. Michael grew up in luxurious Park Ave. as well as his family's "country place" in Bedford Hills near Mt. Kisco, NY. He went to an elite private school Allen-Stevenson, which is famous for its children's orchestra. At the age of 14, he then went to Lawrenceville School, which is a prep-school for Princeton, whose tuition in '56 was $3,000. Eisner's class incl. NY's governor's son, and other sons of powerful men, such as the son of Saudi Prince Turqi al-Faisal. The school is a prep school for the establishment's entertainment industry. Students are only allowed to see their parents on major holidays. Eisner was in the Periweg Club, the school's drama society. His poor scholastic performance meant that he had to go to a small liberal arts college, rather than Princeton or Harvard such as was family tradition. For instance, his grandfather had attended Phillips Exerter Academy and Harvard. His grandfather has serve in many govt. commissions and belonged to the Harvard Club, the American Club in London as well as some yacht clubs.

Between his junior & senior year in high school, Eisner was a page at NBC's HQ in the Rockefeller Center. In 1966, he landed a job in the programming department of ABC. He had an influential position. Eisner had one good break for deciding TV programming. He was 21 when the target audience was 21 years old, and when he was 35, the target age of the film industry was then 35.

He has been described as having "supernatural enthusiasm" coupled to a lifetime quest for untested ideas.

Rich H. Frank, was Executive Vice-President with Walt Disney until his sudden resignation about a year before this was written. He worked side by side with Katzenberg and left after Katzenberg resigned in a dispute with Disney's chairman Eisner. Rich Frank was President of Walt Disney's TV-Media Division. He acquired the estate of VanHoffenwiggen, when VanHoffenwiggen fled the country and vanished when Lendvest began to be exposed. VanHoffenwiggen was a major figure involved with Lendvest Mortgage Inc., a drug-laundering operation and drug smuggling operation operating out of Napa Valley. It was also the fastest growing real estate mortgage company in northern California until its drug smuggling began to be exposed. Lendvest did some tricks ala Nugen Hand Bank. Millions of dollars of investors and creditors have disappeared leaving lots of hurting people, and the mortgage company filed for protection from creditors in U.S. Bankruptcy court, and is still in operation. International financier Edmond Safra's private bank, the Republic National Bank of NY, launders money from the Medellin drug cartel. Safra's bank sent Lendvest lots of crisp new $100 bills. The Safras are tied in with the Rothschilds. (The Safras are reportedly recent property owners in St. Helena near Napa (through Good Wine Co. which is the Spring Mountain Wineries), near where Lendvest was HQed. Edmond's nephew, Jacob Safra, has a partnership in Napa Valley's Good Wine Co. The Rothschild's Citicorp gave Republic National Bank the transaction ability to issue international (world) bearer bonds ("bank notes"). The Luxembourg/Belgium branch of Bank Nacional de Paris issued a bearer bond that was connected the Lendvest drug running operation. In Britain, a U.S. citizen Mike Spire ran the British operation of Lendvest and InVest. LandVest's parent was InVest which has operated in the U.K., Switz., Saudi Arabia & Paraguay. Long story made short, Lendvest has been an international CIA-Mafia drug running operation, with Illuminati overtones and connections to it. With all this in mind, it is strange, that Walt Disney's President of its TV-Media Division, Rich Frank, bought the palatial mansion of John O. VanHoffenwiggen after VanHoffenwiggen disappeared from the country when indictments and arrests began to be made of people connected to Lendvest. According to insiders, Rich Frank is also one of a number of Napa Valley people involved in illegal labelling of wines. Rich Frank was a key figure in Disney's programming venture with three regional Bell Telephone companies (Ameritech, Bell South, & SBC Commun.) coming together. Bell Telephone wanted to get into cable TV. Michael Ovitz formed a rival group of 3 other Bell Telephone co.s. Calvin Robinson, who tied in with LandVest, worked with Boyce, who in turn worked for TRW Co., in Redondo Beach, CA. Boyce was sentenced to 40 years for selling US surveillance secrets to the soviets.

Daniel Hillis, the co-founder of a supercomputer producer Thinking Machines from MIT, is in charge of the Walt Disney Imagineering unit. Hillis helped Disney develop a virtual-reality ride at Disneyland based on the Aladdin cartoon.

Jeffrey Katzenberg, has been the chairman of Disney's movie studio, is an aggressive worker, a model Type A person. "Ask 50 people to describe Jeffrey Katzenberg, and most will say tenacious. 'If Jeffrey were any more aggressive, he'd be in jail." says the producer Dan Melnick." (Harmetz, Aljean, "Who Makes Disney Run?", *NY Times*. Feb. 7, '88, p. 29.) Katzenberg is the father of twins, which people joke was typical of his efficiency. Katzenberg supervised the production of Star Trek. Most of his movies have been box office successes. In the '70's, Katzenberg worked for NY Mayor John Lindsay.

Sanford Martin Litvack. Sanford is the Executive Vice Pres. of Disney and in charge of "Human Resources" for the corporation. He is a jewish lawyer who was educated at the Jesuits' Georgetown Univer. He is on the bd of dir. of Bet Tzedek.

Vincent Price. Price has been one of the major influential occultists who has provided the world with many occult horror books and scripts. He worked for Disney some, and was the voice for Ratigan in *The Great Mouse Detective*. Vincent Price's good friend John Hay Whitney is an Illuminati kingpin and vice-pres. of the Pilgrim Society and was raised into the Illuminati through the Yale Scroll & Key fraternity. His friend Whitney likes horror movies.

The Osmond Brothers. Merrill Osmond's boys were "discovered" at Disneyland when they were visiting the site in 1962. The Disney people on Main St. just "happened" to recognize the talent of the five boys and signed them up soon for their first professional singing contract. The Osmond Boys did some television appearances for Disneyland such as Meet Me at Disneyland, and Disneyland after Dark. (Considering the mind-control programming done to these Osmund children, these TV shows were a cruel joke.) Of the singing Osmond kids, Donny is the next to the youngest, and his sister Marie is the youngest. Both Donny and his sister Marie are programmed multiples who are slaves, who have been subjected to a lot of abuse. They have good front alters. Their father has made millions from drugs, porn and white slavery and is part of the Mormon Illuminati front. The Mormon front of the Illuminati has gotten a lot of good publicity off of the Osmonds. They sang for Andy Williams whose french wife was once arraigned on murder charges. Later they sang for the satanic Network's Lawrence Welk show. Swedish accented Lawrence Welk has been part of the Network. Marie Osmond has grown up, and she has adopted 3 of her 5 children in spite of her busy singing schedule which includes approx. 200 singing shows a year at places like Mafia controlled Atlantic City. In terms of occult families, adopted children are often programmed children, so this is a clue that her children have been programmed too.

Michael Ovitz. Ovitz was the no. 2 man at Walt Disney for a while until near the end of '96. Michael Ovitz was a high school classmate in VanNuys, CA with Michael Milken (later the junk-bond wizard), & there are many of the same people connected to both men. When Michael Ovitz's National Mercantile Bancorp (a saving & loan) began getting into the quicksand of several lawsuits & scandals, attorney Robert Strauss represented him. Illuminati member Robert Strauss has been a lawyer connected with drug running & the mafia. He was also an FBI agent from '41 to '45 with Hoover. He is admitted to the Wash.

D.C. bar. Pres. Bush appointed him U.S. Ambassador to Russia. He has been on the board of dir. of the Illuminati's PepsiCo, Archer-Daniels-Midland (ADM), and General Instruments (which have been exposed in other writings by this author.) He was also a board member of the Illuminati-mafia run MCA. Strauss is seen in Wash. D.C. as a behind the scenes power broker. Strauss represented Michael Milken associate Ronald O. Perelman, Chrmn. of Revlon, who made a $600 mil. killing off of the 1st Gibraltar S&L. Strauss represented MCA, which the Bronfmans took over in 1995. The book Knoedelsder, William. *Stiffed-The True Story of MCA, The Music Business, and the Mafia*. NY: HarperCollins Pub., 1993, does an good job of connecting MCA to the mob, the Network, and Iran Contra. See especially page 442. *Time* magazine 2/24/97 carried a page long story about Michael Ovitz being out of a job. In the article, they reported that he was spending time on his new yacht The Illusion, visiting Joe Silver's estate in So. Carolina, visiting his property in Aspen, CO, and eating lunch with investment adviser Richard Salomon of Spears, Benzak, Salomon & Farrell. Gordon Crawford of the Capital Group is quoted in the article praising Ovitz, and saying he would invest in an Ovitz venture. Ovitz is believed to be mafia by people in a place to know. He has also been known to threaten people using mafia terms, for instance, *Vanity Fair* (12/'96, p. 272) reports Ovitz threatening Bernie Brillstein, a producer, with his "foot solders". *The San Francisco Chronicle* (Fri., 1/26/'96, p. D20) quotes the latest issue of *Columbia Journalism Review* about an incident where a reporter Anita Busch who was investigating Ovitz got violently sick from the MSG in her food as she interviewed him. To top off it all off, Ovitz followed up her story which questioned his actions, by sending her a gift wrapped package of MSG with a one-word note: "Enjoy.". Michael Ovitz has had the clout to deal with Illuminati kingpin Edgar Bronfman head to head. He requested & got Bronfman to keep his dad employed, which was dutifully done. Edgar Bronfman Jr. had seriously considered having Ovitz head Seagram's MCA/Universal conglomerate.

Frank G. Wells. Frank was the President & the Chief Operating Officer of The Walt Disney Co. Wells was also on Disney's board of directors. He was a Rhodes Scholar, and a lawyer in 1955. Those who have read previous books (such as *Vol. 1*) by this author know how the Rhodes Scholars fit into things & are part of the Illuminati. He worked closely with Eisner & Katzenberg. Frank died in a helicopter crash in the spring of 1994 while heli-skiing in Nevada. His surviving sister is Molly Wells Chappellet who runs around in Illuminati circles. Molly Wells Chappellet has been featured several times in Betty Knight Scripp's magazine *Appellation*. Betty Knight Scripp was married to a Bohemian Grove member. Betty has been good friends with: the late Pamela Harriman (who was a recent U.S. ambassador to France & connected to the Rothschilds), as well as good friends with Her Imperial Highness the Grand Duchess of Vladmir of Russia, who owns the Chateau Margaux in Bordeaux. Betty Scripps personally monitors with care what is put into her incredible magazine *Appellation*. She has a column "Who's Who in the Wine Country" where the Chappellets have appeared in print numerous times.

****

Nearly all of Disney's 1920 movies had a black cat in them. Many had occult slants to the scripts. The occult slant never departed from Disney themes.

Some of DISNEY'S blatantly OCCULT MOVIES.

Aladdin. A wisecracking allpowerful genie is shown.

Bednobs & Broomsticks. (1971) A witch finds a magic formula from a lion king. The magic formula raises a ghostly army of armor in a museum which stops a band of German commandos.

Beyond Witch Mountain. (1982) A pair of twins leave Witch's Mountain and have to use their special occult powers to outwit a character named Deranian.

Black Cauldron, The. (1985) A Horned King uses his magic to fight a clairvoyant pig and the pig's keeper. This animation cost $25 million, but was a box office failure.

Bride of Boogedy. (1987) An evil spirit visits the Davis family and puts the father under a spell. Directed by Oz Scott.

Child of Glass. (1978) A glass doll must be found to set a ghost free in a haunted house.

Gnome-Mobile, The (1967). A multimillionaire and his grandchildren encounter gnomes. In the end the multimillionaire deeds the forest to the gnomes for eternity.

Halloween Hall of Fame (1977). Jack-o-lanterns come to life.

Halloween Treat (1982). Cartoons about Halloween. This was followed the next year with a film Haunted Halloween which talked about the origins of Halloween.

Misadventures of Merlin Jones. (1964) A genius tries to help other students. He tries to also use hypnotism & ESP which backfire on him.

Richest Cat in the World. (1986) A wealthy man leaves his fortune to his cat, who the relatives later discover can talk.

h. DISNEY & its MOB connections

When this author spoke to the co-author's deeper Illuminati alters about Disney, their reaction was that Disney had been described to them when they were in the Illuminati as "a syndicate within a syndicate." They said that while in the Illuminati, they were aware that Disneyland had their own government, their own rules and their own police force. They were a crime syndicate within a syndicate. What these Illuminati alters casually mentioned, was verified by this author the hard way through research. One Disneyland Security Supervisor said, "There is no Constitution at Disneyland. We have our own laws."

Once, when Walt Disney got miffed at a Hollywood policeman, Walt said, "I'll have your badge."

If Disney guards decide to, they will get very rough physically with people, and assault them in any fashion they see fit. The people they detain are often thrown into tiny cells at Disneyland where they are kept without benefit of a phone call, without benefit of a toilet or water. The judicial system turns a blind eye to whatever Disney police do. Many people pay Disney to get their children out of a Disney cell, and never get due process of any law. This type of treatment has gone on for decades, and is almost a daily occurrence at Disneyland. The Anaheim Police force is very chummy with the Disney private police force. Also at one point, the Burbank Chief of Police was the brother-in-law to Disney's Chief of Security.

Recently, when a couple filed a wrongful death suit against the Magic Kingdom of Disney in Florida, the state of Florida surprisingly has appeared to have backed off from their traditional behavior of protecting Disney's sovereignty. An article on the suit said, "there is evidence of some nervousness with Disney's relative autonomy." (*San Francisco Chronicle*, article "Mickey's Dark Side" Oct. 1, '96, p. C6) An attorney in the case said, "Disney World's security people aren't just cops, they are bad ones. I don't think there is any corporation that has ever had the perceived power that Disney has."

Richard Foglesong, a professor of

politics at Rollins College in Winter Park stated, "Because Disney World controls so much of its corporate and municipal universe, it can't help but act in a heavy-handed manner in order to ferociously protect its self-interest. They have immunity from state and local land use law. They can build a nuclear plant, distribute alcohol. They have powers local communities don't have. Do they abuse it? In my opinion, yes."

In line with Disney's previous dictatorial policies on their properties, Disney's new city called Celebration will not have any elected government. Since the city is unincorporated (a neat Disney trick) the mayor is appointed by Disney. Several Disney "quasi-government" bodies control citizens of the city. For instance, the Celebration Residential Owners Association, which participates in binding all residents to a Declaration of Covenants, a legal binder of rules that residents must live by. Of course the Declaration of Covenants was written by Disney. These rules include such nit picky things as, no more than two people can sleep in the same bedroom, no pickup trucks can be parked in front of homes, and if Disney officials don't like your cat or dog they can forcibly remove the animal from your home. Disney Corp. has perpetrated numerous deceptions on the residents, incl. shoddy work on their homes, and operating their "public" school with Disney cronies. Still, the residents that have moved into Celebration are glowing with praise for the town in spite of the fact that the city is totally run by Big Brother Disney Corp. Of course those who don't love it, soon leave. So much for the American tradition of self-government.

Some MOB HISTORY. Traditionally, the mob crime bosses have had a yearly summit. In 1928, they had their yearly conclave at Cleveland. In 1929, they had their secret yearly conclave at Atlantic City. In 1931, they held their secret annual conclave at Wappingers Falls, NY.

At the Wappingers Falls meeting, attended by about 300 overlords and soldiers, the heads of the family clans discussed their crime family agendas. They decided where the first national Mafia convention was to be held.

Once the Mafia was able to hold their yearly private **national** meetings, they were able to coordinate their activities, as well as decide such things as:

a. the direction of national & internal operations, and long range plans
b. the promotion of new bosses
c. decisions on turf & rank, commodities & cash
d. hashing out alliances or disputes with the Mishpucka, Triads, FBI, Illuminati, etc. and working with others in a concerted manner.

The mafia clans would then leave the annual summit meetings and follow through in their area of operations, until they would meet the next year, review their successes & failures, get new assignments, and decide upon new short & long term goals.

In 1927, the Mishpucka worked with Mafia to highjack a bootleg shipment of whiskey travelling from Ireland to Boston for the Kennedy Illuminati family. Most of Kennedy's guards were killed in the shootout, and J.P. Kennedy had the widows of the guards besieging him for financial assistance.

Billy Graham's good friend Mafia Chief Joseph Bonanno was one of the chiefs who attended the yearly conclaves. He also met with J.F. Kennedy in the Winter of 1959. John Kennedy was known to have said that mobster Sam Giancana worked for his Kennedy family.

The mob/Illuminati alliances and infighting are too complex to deal with in this book, but both groups had to put plans into action to deal with the repeal of Prohibition, which would end their lucrative bootlegging.

The short term plan for the Mafia was to control the film industry in Hollywood, and to penetrate the unions better. The long term plans called for sending their next few generations of children off to the top schools and getting them into legitimate respectable corporate positions. By learning the ins and outs of honest, legal operations, they could then mix in the illegal operations with their legal ones & look legal. They planned to extend their power base into politics, the Harvard-Stanford business schools, as well as the finest corporate board rooms. They intended (and have succeeded) in getting some of their offspring to produce/direct T.V./films. They would have an increasing presence within the Bohemian Grove membership, as well as some of the other great social & business clubs.

Their plan to take over the film industry hinged on their union control over unions and theaters. The Chicago mob controlled the International Alliance of Theatrical Stage Employees Union. The mob controlled the projectionist's union, and if the film makers had the theaters where their movies were shown shut down, what good would it be to make movies? The film makers and the mafia both had power & money. Rather than fight a protracted war, they made a deal. The major studios would give about $50,000 a year to the mafia, and the small ones $25,000, to be allowed to function. Other agreements were also reached. Mob henchmen Willie Bioff and George E. Browne were mob lieutenants who orchestrated the mob's "Hollywood takeover".

Time Magazine, Nov. 1, 1943, wrote, "**In the witness chair in Manhattan's Federal Court sat bland, wily Willie Bioff (pronounced Buy-off), blackmailer, panderer, labor leader, and now star witness against eight ex-pals, who are charged with shaking down $1 million from the movie industry...Question: Was it true that Bioff once had a five-year plan for taking over 20% of Hollywood's profits-and eventually 50% interest in the studios themselves?**

Bioff (wistfully): "If we'd lasted that long, we would have.

Question: "Did you ever say you were boss of Hollywood and could make producers do whatever you wanted?"

Bioff: "Yes--and I could make them dance to my tune."

Although Bioff rolled over on his pals and ended up getting car bombed, that didn't stop the mob/Mishpucka infiltration & control of Hollywood. (Bioff had tried to save his public image by helping Walt Disney settle his labor dispute with the mob-led unions, but Walt wisely rejected his offer of help, and made sure he didn't offend the Chicago mob leaders who were disgruntled with Bioff.) Hundreds of millions of dollars were poured by the Mafia & Mishpucka into real estate in southern California, by using legitimate local businessmen to launder the money. Hollywood was declared a "free zone" where all the Mafia/Mishpucka families could operate without a fear of a turf war.

Let us backtrack slightly to 1930.

Columbia distributed Disney cartoons from 1930 until 1932, when Disney switched to United Artists, because Columbia wasn't bothering to pay Disney the money they owed.

In 1930, Cohn, Pres. of Columbia Pictures, got Disney off the financial hook with Powers by intimidating Powers with some street toughs carrying a legal suit. If Disney wasn't indebted to the mafia before, he was at that point. Biographers have been puzzled why Disney went into such a traumatic depression after Henry Cohn "helped" him. Tough guy Henry Cohn made sure Walt knew who was boss. His attitude was that Walt should be happy to be paid at all by him for the cartoons Walt supplied Columbia.

After this, Walt would lock himself in his room and weep uncontrollably for hours. He was impossible for anyone to get along with. He was unable to focus on anything, and would stare for long periods out the window. Biographers blame Walt's behavior on the fact that his wife was pregnant. They also blame it on his friend Iwerks defection to another company. Frankly, Walt had treated Iwerk like a dog, and deep down must have known why Iwerk left such an abusive relationship. To claim that he wept for hours day after day because he realized he might become a father is too much to swallow. When Walt was asked years later about why he was so depressed he said it was the stress of the financial situation. Walt said, "I had a nervous breakdown...Costs were going up; each new picture we finished cost more to make than we had figured it would earn when we first began to plan it...I cracked up."

This author submits to the reader that part of his breakdown may have indeed been the financial stress from having come under the heel of the mafia. They had all the means to make or break him, and he had no choice but to surrender to their overwhelming power to blackmail & destroy him OR to get out of the business. What this did was place Walt in a position where his two strongest traits had to clash--his overwhelming obsession to be his own boss, and his creative obsession to create animation which was wrapped up with his ego & his deep phobias and psychological needs. His mind couldn't give up its independence nor its creativity without great mental anguish, and therefore Walt was very saddened, knowing that he would have to admit defeat, and buckle under the heels of the big boys. Just when he needed emotional support his wife was going to have a child, and his best animator left.

Walt had abandoned Iwerks years before, and Walt's wife had wanted a child for some time. Iwerk's departure and his arriving child do not in themselves account for the long intense nervous breakdown that Walt experienced. Biographers point out that Walt was very reluctant to have children, and that he was impotent with women including his wife much of the time. His impotency to carry out normal sex may help explain his secret sexual habits.

Walt's masonic brother Carl Laemmle offered Walt a good deal to help him recover from Henry Cohn's abusive control of Walt, but Carl wanted the copyright to Mickey Mouse in return for the help, and Walt wouldn't part with Mickey Mouse.

Instead, Walt signed a contract offered by Joseph Schenck of UA (United Artists), who was one of the Mafia's illegal drug kingpins. In 1935, the mob's illegal drug dealer Joseph Schenck went on to found 20th Century, Inc. which later merged with Fox in '38 to form Twentieth Century-Fox, whose board of directors would include two Illuminati kingpins William Randolph Hearst and Malcolm MacIntyre. Joseph Schenck's brother Nicholas Schenck and Marcus Loew merged Metro Pictures and Goldwyn Pictures and named Louis B. Mayer as its head. Meanwhile over the years, MCA, headed up by Illuminati Kingpin Lew Wasserman gained a monopoly over the American film industry with the secret backroom deals that they made with Ronald Reagan's Screen Actor's Guild and Petrillo's American Fed. of Musicians. (By the way, Lew Wasserman would try to revive Reagan's acting career in the early '60's. Frank Sinatra and Walt Disney were both friends of Ronald Reagan, and all three believed in mind-control.) Ronald Reagan and Petrillo in turn worked with the Mafia's NCS Council of 9 (which incl. Anthony Accardo and Sam Giancana), which at one point divided the U.S. into 24 mob territories.

After J. Schenck went to jail (very briefly), he was replaced as Pres. of 20th-Cent. Fox by Spyros Skouras. Before his arrest, while Schenck was still in charge of 20th-Cent. Fox, he made numerous offers to Disney for Disney to incorporate his studio as a subdivision of 20th-Cent. Fox. Disney worked for a few years with them distributing his films, but he would not let go of trying to be independent.

The FBI and American Intelligence turned to the mob to help them as the U.S. entered WW II. Perhaps Walt's mob connection added impetus for his recruitment. Walt went to a number of American Nazi meetings prior to Pearl Harbor. This author believes from knowing Walt's personality that Walt may have been on assignment, rather than a Nazi sympathizer. Still, why does one of Disney's pre-Pearl harbor cartoons display a swastika?

Disney's Epcot Resorts is close to the mob's Atlantic City Board Walk with its nightclubs. The resort was designed by Robert A.M. Stern. (This author doesn't know about Robert Stern, but there are programmed multiples and Illuminati members within the Stern family.)

At Walt Disney World, the nightclub

there was named "Cage", and then later "8 TRAX". Comedy Warehouse, which is a nightclub at Pleasure Island in Walt Disney World opened on May 1, 1989 and has used slave comedians as well having people who are mind-control abusers.

On Feb. 11, 1987, Walt Disney Co. was reincorporated in Delaware. Delaware is the only state that allows total corporate secrecy. No one can find out who really is running a Delaware corporation, and many other secrets can be hidden under Delaware's corporation laws.

Capital Group has considerable shares in Disney, as well as 29% of the shares of the Robert Mondavi winery at 7801 St. Helena Hwy, Oakville, CA. Wellington Group and Mellon bank also have shares. Behind Capital Group are mob controlled groups like Debartolo Reality Corp. and La Quinta Inns (a Bass bro. operation.) Sam Bronfman operates Sterling & Monterey Vineyards.

There are countless people walking around that have felt the ruthless, impersonal, controlling, money-grabbing side of the Disney Corp. Also, there are a number of journalists who have experienced first hand the secrecy and paranoia that the Disney corporation has. Most journalists are not used to the secrecy that pervades Disney.

Because Disney has shaped the myths of America for several generations, the public takes more concern over who is running Disney, than they would other institutions. Because most of America believe in the image that the Illuminati have built for Disney, they are rooting for it to succeed.

How the Disney Executives have figured out how to steal land all across the U.S.

Over the years Walt Disney has developed several very sneaky reliable techniques to acquire land. They acquire land through their executives and large stockholders and family members of the execs and stockholders. After all the deals are made in an area, and when everything is in place over a period of time, these people then turn their land over to Disney. Disney works with government officials and local bankers to line up special deals so they can succeed in their plans. After everything is lined up, the corporation announces their plans and goes forward. This methodology has been used repeatedly, for instance the American History Theme Park in the Manassas Civil War battlefield area of Virginia for which Disney has acquired 1,800 acres and has access to at least 1,200 more. In Nov. '94, after a new Virginia governor was elected, the Virginia "Disney's America" project was announced, and Virginia voted almost instantly for the money for transportation and infrastructure improvements to the area so that Disney's theme park would be viable.

Disney set up 3 banks in Napa, CA. Their banks made loans to old families in the valley. The trusts and the wills for these families were made up by Stanford Univ. grads. These people set on the boards of these banks or connect with the boards of these banks. They charge large fees, and know every trick in the book to rob people of their estates and their living trusts. The Stanford grads, who connect in with intelligence agencies & the mob use certain code words when they set up their businesses, such as RESOURCE, EVERGREEN and PACIFIC.

There are a number of scared landholders who are being intimidated to sell their land in the Napa Valley region.

i. DISNEY and the GOVERNMENT

Just prior to W.W. II, the FBI recruited Walt Disney. His job was to spy on Hollywood or anything else that looked suspicious. Documents obtained from the Freedom of Information Act, in spite of heavy censoring, clearly show that Walt Disney became a paid Special Correspondent asset of the FBI. He reported to FBI agent E.E. Conroy. In 1954, Walt was promoted to Special Agent in Charge (SAC) which means others reported to him.

After "leaving" the CIA, ex-DCI (ex-head) of the CIA William Hedgcock Webster became a lawyer for the Wash. D.C. based firm of Milbank, Tweed, Hadley and McCloy. In 1993, when news broke about Walt Disney's FBI membership, ex-CIA head Webster worked with the Disney family to cover up to the public that Walt Disney was an FBI agent. Webster went on TV and had interviews to spread the fabrication that Walt was not connected to the FBI. Why?

One of the countless items that Disney was involved in was the investigation into the disappearance/rape of a six-year old child Rose Marie Riddle on 1/12/61. According to documents gotten from the Freedom of Information Act, W.G. Simon was the FBI agent who met with SAC Walt Disney in L.A. about the case. W.G. Simon has been one of those people who has been publicly lying by claiming that Walt Disney never was an FBI agent. The paper trail proves otherwise. Why is it so important to the FBI and CIA to cover up that Walt was an FBI agent?

Walt also worked for the CIA, even though documentation of that is not available. This author theorizes that the reason the FBI and CIA are so touchy about letting people know that Walt worked for the government is that the Network knows how the FBI and CIA worked together to procure children for mind-control programming purposes. Because Disney and Disneyland played such as enormous role in Mind-control, Disney's connection to them, although on the surface a seemingly minor fact, is in reality a minor fact setting on top of an enormous ghastly secret.

When W.W. II started, the government incorporated the Disney studios into the war machine. The military paid Disney $80,000 for 20 training cartoon, which cost Disney $72,000 to make. Disney studios also made some secret films for the military. Mickey Mouse and Goofy cartoons were slanted to have war themes, for instance, the Goofy cartoon of 1941 "The Art of Self Defense" and "How to be a Sailor" in 1944.

Perhaps in honor of the contribution Disney had made to the war effort, "Mickey Mouse" was the password of the Allies for millions of men on the big D-Day invasion on June 6, 1944.

Walt Disney produced a cartoon showing Donald Duck paying his taxes faithfully. The film was entitled The New Spirit. It was very successful in getting Americans to comply with the IRS.

In 1946, Disney made a film for the public schools for sex education entitled *The Story of Menstruation*.

For the United Nations, Walt Disney created "It's a Small World" attraction for UNICEF for the '64-65 World's Fair. This attraction was moved to the theme parks & has been a major feature for mind-control.

After learning of the enormous amount of mind-control programming going on during after hours in secret tunnels at Disney as well as in the public facilities, it makes more sense why the Russian Premier Nikita Khrushchev would be denied a visit to Disneyland by the U.S. government "due to security considerations" when he was visiting the U.S. in Sept. 1959. Khrushchev obviously had his own security working in tandem with American security and the intelligence people for whatever reason(s) didn't want the complication of these Russians going to a major programming site.

Some powerful military men have been connected to Disney films. Two former commanding officers of the USS Alabama nuclear sub were technical advisors for the Disney film Crimson Tide.

Walt Disney was tied to the U.S. government, and recent disclosures show that he was tied to the FBI. Walt used his FBI connection to destroy the life of Art Babbitt, who had led the strike against Disney in 1940. Babbitt found that everything he attempted in life after the strike was ruined by some hidden power.

Was Walt part of naval intelligence attached to the FBI? Was he part of the FBI that is involved with child procurement and mind-control?

In the 1950's the Illuminati began organizing covens on the West coast and began solidifying their power. (This comes from several independent sources.) Likewise, it's clear that Disney didn't have the clout in 1953 with local governments, that it does today. Walt Disney was unsuccessful when he tried to get permission from the city of Los Angeles and the Burbank City Council for the construction of Disneyland (called Disneylandia at that time), in the Burbank area. One Burbank councilman told Walt, "We don't want the carny atmosphere in Burbank." Inconsistently, within a few years they gave permission to Universal to build an amusement park in Burbank, which opened in 1964.

Disney then ask the Stanford Research Institute to locate a spot for Disneylandia (Disneyland), which they found at Anaheim.

In recent years, Disney decided they wanted to build another amusement park (called California Adventure) across from Disneyland. In order to do so, the Interstate highway will have to have changes, and the Anaheim city council needed to approve the large 55 acre expansion.

In contrast to the Burbank City Council in 1953, Anaheim's City Council was enthusiastic about the expansion in spite of lots of local opposition. The locals complained at council meetings to the City Council that the city had no business going hundreds of millions of dollars into debt to help a corporate giant. (Anaheim will issue $400 million in bonds.) Locals also raised concerns that the public school system in Anaheim is stressed to the breaking point where they are considering going to half days, and that Disney Corporation should give as much consideration for the school children of Anaheim as they do to their Amusement park. Disneyland's Pres. Paul Pressler bragged about Disney's new California Adventure amusement park, "Disney's California Adventure is really a celebration of the fun, the beauty, the people and the accomplishments of this magical state. We really have set out to try to capture a bit of what the California dream is all about." (Sounds like the dream is to be wealthy and control people. The elite would rather give us BREAD & CIRCUS than an education.)

The Dragnet films were done in part at the Disney studios.

In an Office Memo from the 66-new LA SAC FBI agent to Hoover (12/16/54), which was obtained via the Freedom of Information Act, the typed memo states, "Mr. Disney has volunteered representatives of this office **complete access to the facilities of Disneyland for use in connection with official matters...**" Historically, we now know that Disney's use for "official matters" included mind-control.

j. DISNEY & MIND CONTROL

Once the reader is familiar with the programming scripts, the reader merely needs to watch the Disney "Adventures in Wonderland" that come on TV in the morning to see Disney mind-control at work. Within a few minutes one morning, this author had seen a white rabbit create "a world in your mind" (the quote is what the show said!) with a ring, watched Alice go through the mirrors, watched a White Rabbit [the programmer] read a book to a little girl, and the TV listener be told by the show "**The White Rabbit is our only hope!**"

The deeper alters of Illuminati slaves who are programmed for espionage, for spying & blackmail, & seduction & assassination, are given programming to live in a fantasy world. They never touch base with reality. Much of this type of programming has gone on at Disneyland. Disneyland visitors are taken in a boat where dolls sing an around-the-world theme song "It's a small small world". These doll world parts of the amusement parks are used for programming assassination & espionage alters. The song & dolls play important roles in these alter's mind-control programming. Some slaves at around age 19, have this type of programming tested to make sure it is solidly in place. The song "It's a Small World" was composed by the Sherman brothers for Disney originally as a theme song for a ride at the '63-'65 NY World's Fair. The Sherman brothers were talent that Disney discovered. They were born in NYC, and both graduated from Beverly Hills High School. They wrote Disney songs for at least 29 films. Mind-controlled slaves, who repeatedly bump into each other, but don't know why, will be found saying, "It's a small, small world."

Both rituals & programming go on at Disney amusement parks during both the day & night.

Steven Rockefeller and Walt Disney travelled and spent time together with Dr. Hadley Cantril, an establishment expert on human behavior. (See *There Was Once A Time of Islands, Illusions & Rockefellers*. NY: Harcourt Brace Jovanovich, 1975.)

When Walt Disney began Walt Disney World he sent Card Walker to the Florida capital to request quid pro quo, and the governor gave it to Disney. What that meant is that Disney's property in Florida was totally controlled under Disney's jurisdiction, they had their own laws, their own police force, their own hospitals, and their own tax rate. No outside authority would interfere with Disney's jurisdiction. DisneyWorld's finances would be untouchable and out of sight by the state of Florida. Never had so much power been given away. DisneyWorld became its own crime syndicate within the syndicate.

Disney amusement parks are like a city within a city. They have there own security forces, and the local police allow the Disney security forces to take care of their turf. Disney has their own policies (laws). Some of the security forces can be identified in plain clothes with clean-cut hair styles and have communication devices. The security forces have a headquarters room where TV monitors display-live the exit points at Disney as well as other locations. *America's Most Wanted* has a fairly large file on children who have been kidnapped at Disney Amusement Parks. One mother, who got separated from her child when getting off a train, frantically told a guard her child was missing. The guard took her to the monitor room, where they saw the kidnapper carrying the child out of the park with the boy slumped over his shoulder. In that short of a time, the kidnapper had drugged the child, cut his hair different, and put a different shirt on him. (This anecdote was mention in *Inside the Mouse*, pg. 52)

As written before, white slavery is part of what Disney is all about. This mother was one of the fortunate few who did manage to find their kidnapped children. An insider states that the Disney police are definitely part of those moving and abusing innocent children brought in for occult rituals. In addition, the Disney security forces spy on their own employees.

Employees do not enter the theme parks like the visitors, nor do they move around like the visitors. They have underground tunnels and underground entrances and facilities for that. One victim of total mind-control mentioned that a tunnel entrance was at the Matterhorn mountain at Disneyland. (The Matterhorn was opened by Walt and his good-friend Richard Nixon, who rode in the first car down the mountain.)

The Disney productions has given the Illuminati the cover to bring together Illusionists, magicians, and special effects artists without anyone being suspicious. Some of these men were able to apply their talents toward programming children. As an example of their talents, Disney special effects artists were able to create 16 realistic-looking cadavers for the 1989 film *Gross Anatomy*.

Walt Disney, Inc. has teamed up with Los Alamos and Sandia Labs, two other groups which are heavily involved in mind-control and people control to develop body scans, branding and access codes for the visitors to Disney's theme parks.

Each of the Disney Theme parks, such as Disneyland, DisneyWorld, EuroDisney etc.

have vast underground facilities. These underground facilities allow many of the workers to get to the ride areas via underground passages. Each theme facility also has a vast infrastructure underground in order to maintain it. The underground areas contain wardrobe design and repair units, fitting rooms, restrooms, cafeterias, security units, computers, freight ramps, utility encasements, and large connecting tunnels. The underground areas also have programming rooms. They have their own power plants and water systems and their own police force. Disney company employs 71,000 people at several locations. [One recent TV show used the figure 40,000 Disney employees.] People are coming and going 24 hours at the Disney theme parks. Three shifts keep up the 24 hour business. The night crews maintain and repair the parks for the thousands of people that will soon arrive in the morning.

Disneyland makes a natural prop for carrying out mind-control. The items they sell are also natural props--such as the Goofy watch ($19.95) which has hands that move backward to confuse a slave as to what time it is.

Was Walt Disney aware of how Disneyland was used for programming? There is no doubt. Disney lived much of nights at Disneyland, and had an apartment at the firehouse near the train station on Main St. At night, if he was not doing anything else, he'd roam the grounds of Disneyland scribbling notes on his own distinctive blue paper, which he'd leave for workers to follow the next day. The notes would say such things as "Replace these flowers," or "Move that bench". (*Prince of the Magic Kingdom*, p. 25) Walt Disney knew everything that went on in his Magic Kingdom.

The Epcot Center and the Disney amusement parks market all kinds of occult triggers, including crystals, rainbows, wizards etc. that reinforce the programming.

The Epcot Center has two glass pyramids along with its "Journey into Imagination". Disneyworld has the Island of Atlantis on its sub tour.

Fantasyland is one of the most used tours of Disneyland for mind-control purposes. It has carousels, merry music, an incredible castle, boat rides, story book characters etc. Sleeping Beauty Castle with its blue turrets and gold spires is the central visual object of Disneyland. You cross a drawbridge to get into it. Inside Fantasyland are Illuminati programming sites such as the Mad Hatter teacups, the King Arthur carousel horses, and Snow White's forest.

In the far corner of Disneyland's New Orlean's Square is the Haunted Mansion. This mansion is designed to frighten and scare. it has an ingenious design and many special effects and illusions. Realistic ghosts, a screeching raven, howling voices, and other scary things welcome the visitor. Life size holograms are created at the Haunted Mansion, and dance in sync with the music and then fade out at certain points. There is a hologram of a woman's head in a crystal ball who chatters non-stop. A real good laugh for the programmers of a little child. When you are toward the end, you will have a chance to look into a mirror where a hologram ghost will nestle up beside you.

Star Speeder is another great programming location at Disneyland. It was the creation of George Lucas and the Disney Imagineers. The technology is borrowed from Star Wars, and is similar to flight simulators used by the military to train pilots.

Disneyland Hotel offers Character Breakfasts, where children eat breakfast with Disney characters, to people who make special arrangements. U.S. Special Forces, which carries out mind-control, owns two hotels near DisneyWorld, and the Mormons have one also.

Knott's Berry Farm with its Ghost Town, Amusement Park, & its Charlie Brown themes and characters is near Disneyland.

One of the Disney executives began one of the most horrible trauma-based mind-control programming centers in Los Angeles called Magic Castle a comedy warehouse. This trauma center had horrible torture chambers. Children were brought in from South and Central America to be programmed at the Magic Castle. A brave L.A. policeman exposed the place--for which he lost his job, and eventually was able to get the site closed.

One of Disney's recent ventures in their Disney Institute, which *Newsweek* labeled "the Disneyland of the Mind". (*Newsweek*, Mar. 4, 1996, p. 61)

A private club called Club 33 at Disneyland located upstairs in the New Orleans Square is believed to be involved in mind-control. Cub's Den supervises children's activities at the Wilderness Lodge Resort at Walt Disney World.

At Disney-MGM studios the major attraction is the Twilight Zone Tower of Terror. Guests take a strange scary trip through the hotel, where guests are finally sent into an elevator that drops out of control 13 stories. The ride has been advertized on TV.

Disneyland now has a Temple to the Forbidden Eye--which is simply a **Temple to the All Seeing Eye**, the Illuminati symbol. Visitors, who have the patience to wait in line, can strap themselves in for a ride that is like a jack hammer that jars the rider through a temple filled with snakes, rats, and mummies. One aerobics teacher couldn't walk for three days after the jarring ride, which comes across as "hokey". The experience is more traumatizing than fun, but then maybe that is what was intended.

DISNEY VACATIONS FOR THE ELITE

Years ago this author's newsletters exposed Hilton Head Island, SC as a watering hole of the powerful elite incl. retired generals and admirals, and the site for the elite's Renaissance Weekend "meat market". Remember, that at one time Hilton Head Island was private, with imported alligators in the water around it. A person was only allowed on the island by going through security gates with a clearance. In a later newsletter, Disney's Hilton Head Island Resort was mentioned. This resort, built by Disney Vacation Development, Inc., is located on a 15-acre private island linked to Hilton Head island by a narrow bridge. Members to the Disney Vacation Club can exchange time for vacations at Disney and other resorts around the world. Memberships cost minimum $9,412.

MELODYLAND

Right smack across from the entrance to Disneyland is the Assembly of God's Melodyland Christian Center, the birthplace of TBN (Trinity Broadcasting Network). The Assembly of God denomination has been heavily infiltrated by the Illuminati, and has been heavily used as a front for programmed slaves. Paul Crouch, president of Trinity Broadcasting Systems, Inc., was affiliated with Melodyland in 1973 when TBS was getting started. At that time, Melodyland was a rich heavily infiltrated charismatic church, with its share of programmed multiples. In 1973, closet homosexual minister Jim Bakker, and his wife Tammy Faye, a programmed multiple were with Paul Crouch in Anaheim at Melodyland. Paul Crouch had been the assistant pastor of Bakker's home church in Muskegon, MI. Crouch's right hand man was Alexander Valderrama, a charismatic Roman Catholic. TBS used an abandoned military base as their TV complex, using hangers as studios. In the early 70's, ABC put Bakker & Crouch's early shows on their affiliate stations on Sunday morning. Bakker had already gotten his career kicked off with Illuminatus Pat Robertson and his 700 Club. Jim Bakker split and went to the east coast. To help Bakker with his money, Bill Perkins, who had been a financial analyst for the World Order's mind-control research at Sandia National Labs in Livermore came to help Bakker run his ministry's finances.

Later, televangelist Bakker began building Heritage USA, which was to be a big-money resort. Bakker hired people who had worked for Disney to construct Heritage USA. Bakker studied Disneyland, Disneyworld, and other Disney places as a model for Heritage

USA. After Disneyworld opened in Florida, Jim Bakker was a REGULAR visitor to it. Heritage USA's Ft. Heritage was modelled after Disney's Ft. Wilderness, Main St. was modelled after the Magic Kingdom's Main St., and Disney's wrought-iron fencing was also copied.

Most people are aware of Jim Bakker's $265,000 payoff to Jessica Hahn to keep her sexual services to him a secret, his longtime homosexual relationship with his right hand man David Taggart, and his prison sentence. James Orson (named after Orson Welles) Bakker was from Muskegon, the same place that Cathy O'Brien, a freed Mind-controlled slave came from. He was born pre-mature, and had some interesting family situations that make his family suspect. While Cathy O'Brien got programmed via the Catholics, Jim was part of another denomination which also was into programming, the charismatic Assemblies of God. His grandfather, who lived next door to Jim, and where Jim spent much childhood time with was popularly known in town as a "huckster", and nicknamed Kingfish after the manipulative character on Amos & Andy.

Tammy his wife grew up in International Falls, MN in poverty in the home of her stepfather and mother. Besides having a "shopping demon", she has had her share of phobias and mental problems, as can be expected from someone who has had to suffer through programming.

It would be worth pointing out who has come to Jim Bakker's rescue when he was under attack. For instance, on Thursday, Oct. 4, 1984 when Jim was under attack, Jim Bakker's show had six people give endorsements and praise of Jim Bakker. Those were Ronald Reagan, Dale Evans, Robert Schuller, Oral Roberts, Billy Graham and Rex Hubbard. Of those, this author knows for sure that all are masons, except for Rex, who may or may not be. Robert Schuller, Billy Graham and Oral Roberts are "Christian ministers" who participate in using and handling mind-control slaves. These three ministers all participate in secret Satanic rituals.

The last few paragraphs have given only a sketchy picture of the intimate relationship between Disney Mind-control and the charismatic movement and its use of trauma-based total mind-control.

DISNEYANA FOR THE PROGRAMMED & OBSESSED. For people who have been programmed with Disney programming and who are obsessed with Mickey Mouse and everything else about Disney, and for other people who just have the collecting spirit for Disney memorabilia, there is a group called Disneyana. Disneyana, was organized in the 1980's, and consists of people who are cult-like in their devotion to anything true Disney. Some of them to express their devotion outwardly tatoo their bodies with Disney characters. This group holds their annual convention at the Contemporary Resort in FL. One Disneyana at the annual convention said, "We collect to keep the good feeling inside." Another when interviewed said, "This is why it's all about love."

The author knows as a fact some of the men who are obsessed with Mickey Mouse & Disney items are programmed multiples.

One of Kenneth Anger's occult friends has had the world's largest Mickey Mouse collection. Who is Kenneth Anger? Kenneth Anger, a member of LaVey's Magick Circle & later his Church of Satan, is an occultist and an underground film maker. Kenneth Anger (he choose the last name Anger) was raised on the Wizard of Oz books. His biographer Bill Landis writes that the Oz books "laid the groundwork for Ken's attraction to Crowley, the occultist who would rework Rosicrucian thought into his own magical system." Ken was obsessed with Crowley's life & magic. As a child, Ken had danced with Shirley Temple in competition after she became a child star. Ken Anger loved the OTO's solar phallic religion, and was also obsessed with Mickey Mouse. He spent part of his time studying his friend's Mickey Mouse collection. Ken Anger did his casting for his film "Lucifer Rising" by telling occult friends & acquaintances that they could live out their goddess or god power-trip fantasies by acting for him. The British government's National Film Finance Corp. fronted 15,000£ for Lucifer Rising's production. Famous occult musician Jimmy Page did the sound track gratis. Ken Anger acted as the film's Magus and made his Magus role resemble Mickey Mouse in the film Fantasia. (The role Fantasia plays in mind-control programming will follow as the last part of this chapter.) "Lucifer Rising" also starts with Fantasia-type volcanoes. Another of his well-known films was "Invocation of My Demon Brother."

Mind-control features in Disney movies.

The elements within Disney movies that are intentionally put in for mind-control would take volumes to describe. A detailed description of how just one Disney movie is used as a programming script soon follows. Fantasia was selected as the example. A random sampling of features in Disney movies for mind-control programming could include:

- Cogworth the **enchanted mantle clock** in Beauty and the Beast.
- The character Door Knob, which is a **doorknob portrayed as a person** in the Disney cartoon Alice In Wonderland, is useful for programming door knob alters.
- The Blue Yonder is a Disney movie on **time travel** of a young boy. Time travel movies are used for programming to mess up the victim's sense of time.
- Disney film "Animated Alphabet" has **letters which come alive,** which is useful for programming. And what about the '82 Disney movie "Computers are People, Too!" ?
- All the Illuminati members this author is aware of who have received trauma-based total mind-control were **taught to astrally project and study on the astral plane** what they needed to learn. A Disney movie that portrays this is *Goofy over Dental Health*. This is an educational film released by Disney in '91 and again in '93, where Goofy places a magical toothbrush under a child's pillow, so that the child astrally projects to a dentist office and while on the astral plane studies how to have healthy teeth.
- Illuminati alters believe that trees and flowers are alive. The 1932 Disney film *Flowers and Trees* is a story about two trees who fall in love. The film portrays the occult belief that **trees can talk and sing**. Internally, alter systems will be constructed with singing trees and flowers that represent people and which are alters. The singing trees give out internal codes to move alters internally where they need to go.

Return to Oz. (1985) This Disney film begins its story line about a girl who is thought to have psychological problems because of her tales of Oz. She is warned not to talk about Oz by her relatives. She is taken to a psychologist who wears a big ruby ring, who tells Dorothy that electroshocks won't hurt her, and that we are at the "dawn of a New Age." Dorothy is told that her memories are "just dreams" that stem from excess electrical current in the brain. She is sent to a mental institution to receive shock treatments for talking about Oz. A lightening storm allows her to escape the shock treatments and when she sleeps, she awakes in Oz. In Oz she goes through many mind-control scenarios, ruby slippers, mirrors, etc., and toward the end visits with evil Mombi, Princess of Oz who keeps Ozma (Dorothy's twin) as a slave. Mombi eventually casts a spell and enchants Ozma into a mirror. Sci-Fi author J.D. Vinge in her *Return to Oz* based on the screen play writes on pg. 211-212, "Dorothy gazed at herself in the mirror, seeing her own reflection, and remembering the moment when she had looked at herself and seen someone else there, someone so like her that it could have been her sister." Parts of this film were filmed near Stonehenge, Eng. Disney has put out several films on the Wizard of Oz theme, all of which were used for programming. The original series of Oz books were by Baum. In

'39, MGM did the famous Wizard of Oz film.

In the Disney movie Tron (1982), a young computer genius goes into an altered state where he ends up becoming a computer program. After defeating the MCP, he returns to the real world. This is simply a programming script. A special effects team created a 3-D world, showing how talented Disney special effects people can be in making something seem real. This movie should show people their mind-control capabilities. Mathematical Applications Group, Inc. (MAGI) were one of the groups that created the graphics.

Disney came out with 3 videos of new adventures in Wonderland which are mind-control programming. In the mornings here 9-9:30, on channel 21, Disney has a Wonderland Show every morning which is mind-control programming for children. Within a few minutes, this author had seen a girl walk through a mirror, the 3 lives of Thomasina mentioned, and a little ditty "I'm a little tea-pot" where a person becomes a tea pot. They also had an "under the umbella" scene. This was all pure programming, right on TV. Of course, they show the White Rabbit as a central figure.

ABC under the auspices of Disney produced a lengthy 140 min. film *Wild Palms* which depicts Illuminati mind-control and life. One reader of *Vol. 2* stated that the Wild Palms movie would have made no sense except that having read the Vol. 2 book, the movie made lots of sense in the light of Vol. 2's revelations. The film depicts how children are kidnapped, switched at birth, programmed via TV cartoons, programmed to kill and use stun guns etc. The film depicts Illuminati bloodlines and arranged marriages. Although the name "Illuminati" is not used, if viewers substitute in the name "the Fathers" for Illuminati fathers, they will get an insider's view of life at the top. The main controllers are addressed by their slaves as "Papa" or "Daddy" or "Mother". This is true to life. A person opposed to the Fathers states, "One day we will wake up and discover we don't own this country and no one will care." The movie states that events are not happening randomly. The movie shows an underground tunnel system which has an entrance hidden by a swimming pool. Quite a few actual programming codes were said during the film, for instance, "down, down, down through the pool of tears..." and "we're going to go down the yellow brick road now." The movie was created by Bruce Wagner, who obviously is an insider concerning trauma-based total mind-control. The fact the movie was made shows the arrogance of the programmers' beliefs that their criminal acts in programming thousands of little children will not be exposed, and that people will be too stupid to realize that what is put out as fiction is actually mirroring what is happening. It's like they believe their own script that IF people did find out "no one will care."

Because so much of the Illuminati programming involves the creation and programming of 3 alters linked into trinities, it is not surprising that Disney has helped such triad programming with a series of movies about threesomes, including:

3 Blind Mouseketeers
Three Caballeros
3 little pigs
Three Little Wolves
3 Lives of Thomasina
The Three Musketeers
3 Ninjas
Three Orphan Kittens

For Mickey Mouse programming they came out with Thru the Mirror, where Mickey Mouse steps through his bedroom mirror and ends up in another world (altered state).

Not all of the Disney movies that have mind-control programming themes got released to the public. One unreleased cartoon had Penelope fleeing from a sinister looking Grandfather Clock which is carrying her to another world, and has another scene where Penelope tries to hold onto someone who personifies the Wind.

George Lucas, who directed the movie

Star Wars, which was a movie planned by the Illuminati & used for Illuminati programming, also directed Disney's movie "Captain EO". Captain EO (who looks like a demonic entity) goes to rescue the Queen (who looks like the harlot describes as Mystery Babylon in the Bible). The Queen is in captivity simply because she and her people believe in black and white (which represent good and evil). When they renounce such a belief, they are saved by Michael Jackson (in actual life a mind-controlled slave) playing Captain EO. It's a New Age witchcraft film through & through.

By the way, Michael Jackson has gone to Disney amusement parks many times, sometimes in disguise. It is public knowledge that his Jehovah's Witness family has been very abusive mentally and physically to their children.

Disney has put out several movies on how the mind works, such as the educational film The Brain & Nervous System in 1990. Their film Runaway Brain is a cartoon where Dr. Frankenollie transplants Mickey's brain into a monster's body & vice-versa. A 1994 film, Puppet Masters shows the govt.'s secret Office of Scientific Intelligence trying to save the U.S. from aliens who live in human bodies.

In recent years, Bette Midler has been Disney's main actress. In the Vol. 2, it was exposed that she is possibly a Monarch Mind-controlled slave. She is famous for her "mood swings" (switches in personality), and she had a "mental breakdown" in 1985. Her eyes and body gestures are those of a programmed multiple. She has gone out on tour for Disney without making money, and she is best of friends with Jeffrey Katzenberg (second in command at Disney). Jeffrey Katzenberg by the way is extremely disliked by his counterpart Sid Sheinberg. Bette Midler plays Stella in the movie Stella. Stella is an occult name. In the movie, the script seems tailored for Bette Midler and for someone who is a programmed slave, rather than the actress fitting the role. At the movie's end, Stella (Bette Midler) attends her own daughter's marriage by peeking in a window and watching from the outside. This is the script they give so many of the parts of a slave, so that they feel unworthy and feel like they are always on the outside looking in at life. Many parts (personalities) of slaves find it hard to connect with real life, because they feel they are on the outside looking in.

And then in true Disney fashion, Disney had Bette Midler play the role of the lead witch in Hocus Pocus. The movie Hocus Pocus does some hocus pocus of its own. While pretending to make fun of witchcraft, they actually teach witchcraft. They do make the 3 witches look comical. By the way, the 3 witches stand for the maiden, mother, crone combo that the Illuminati reverence. Disney subtly works in deep occult things, such as the all-seeing eye on the cover of the book, the little girl promising the cat (who is a familiar spirit) that her descendants would always care for it (true, because the cat was a generational spirit). The cat is killed in the movie but can't die. And Bette Midler as lead witch in her costume, which has some Mother-of-Darkness symbology on it, states as she gets ready to take the life force from an innocent girl, "We want to live forever, so we take children's lives." This is wholesome entertainment for children?

The Disney capacity for deception extends to its own workers. PR men recruit young people for its Disney College program. They tell the young people what a great stepping stone it will be for their careers. They have been known to make it sound like the greatest thing in your life. Kids come from all over the country due to the slick recruiting tactics to work for Disney. They are then housed in Disney housing, given menial jobs, and paid low wages. Most people in the College Program leave disillusioned. If the worker happens to think of a great idea, Disney officials have been known to steal the idea, and because the worker was working for Disney the worker will find that they are unable to get any credit or money for the idea that Disney steals and makes millions off of. One uncredited creator of a Disney sale item said, "Literally, they're using everybody for everything." (*Inside the Mouse*, p. 239.)

>>>Next, will be the script for how the Disney film Fantasia has been used as a standard programming tool since the 1940's by the Illuminati.

DETAILED SCRIPT ON HOW THE DISNEY FILM FANTASIA IS USED FOR PROGRAMMING TRAUMA-BASED MIND-CONTROLLED SLAVES.

During the 1950's, '60's, and '70's at least 90% of the Illuminati's trauma-based mind-controlled slaves were subjected to watching Disney's Fantasia film in order for them to build the foundational imagery of the mind-control. Child mind-control victims had their eyes taped open, and then sat one-on-one with their primary programmers so that the programmers could give the scripts as the child watched Disney's Fantasia over and over. What made Fantasia unique as a programming tool is that it had almost everything the programmers needed to create the foundational imagery for their trauma-based mind-control. To build a dependable alter system means that the worlds need a solid foundation. Fantasia has provided the means to get a solid foundation for the internal worlds that the Illuminati slaves build in their mind. It is also a masterpiece in coordinating color and music.

The Disney film Fantasia which premiered on Nov. 13, 1940 (at Broadway Theater in NYC) was a financial disaster as a movie, but was an Illuminati programming masterpiece. The film was released to theaters in '40, '46, '56, '63, '69, '77, '82, '85, '90 in order to catch every generation of children. The video was released in 1991.

During programming much of the child slave's mind will watch the film. One particular part (alter) will be forced to memorize everything in the film. This small part (small alter) is well hidden in each victim's mind. This small alter, who has a vivid and total recall of the film Fantasia, is locked carefully away so that ONLY an access code will pull him/her up. Watching the videotape Fantasia is not going to pull this alter up. The programmers pull this alter up when they have a clean slate alter. When they are taking a clean slate of the mind, they will pull the clean part up and have the alter who has memorized Fantasia throw its memory onto an internal big screen. The internal Outer space (aka Rubicon) is shaped like an amphitheater, and functions as a big vast screen for replay. There is an internal ball or sun created via the lighting effect of the movie Fantasia, so that the movie appears projected in the mind as on a globe. And the Fantasia film images hit this internal globe and go circular in the mind and spin through the system. The programmer will then say to the new part "THIS IS WHAT I WANT YOU TO CREATE. THIS IS WHAT WE NEED." In this fashion, Fantasia has provided the programmers with their primary tool for taking a dissociated clean slate part of the mind, and manipulating it to become a new workable part within the system.

The young part that holds the entire Fantasia memory is strategically placed in the system so that it can be called up from anyplace in the system. No matter where the programmer is working in the system, he can access this small alter whose function is to remember the movie. Most of the system will go into a trance sleep if shown the movie. The front (as well as most of the system's alters) will be totally amnesic to having ever seen the movie. Since the programming put in with Fantasia is so fundamental it should come as no surprise that the programmers have done an excellent job in protecting this programming from everyone, including the slave. Abreacting the film for many alters could rip the system apart, because after the film is memorized severe trauma begins to be overlaid and attached to the film. There may be some small alters that still carry tiny bits and pieces of memory of the movie, but only one will really remember it.

The following script will be a running account of how Fantasia has been used as an important preparatory film for Illuminati trauma-based mind-control to train the mind-control victim's mind to be able to visualize the programming that will be layered in. The time clock will begin when the feature film's action begins, and then will run its entire 116 minutes. This will give the researcher of mind-control a blow-by-blow description of how a Disney movie is used for programming. The film was often shown to child victims around 3 to 4 years of age with a wide screen while the child was under a guided LSD trip. (Prior to the use of LSD some other drugs were used.) A Grande Dame or Mother-of-Darkness often worked with the Illuminati programmer as an Assistant Programmer. The scripts & the programming have already been discussed prior to showing the child the film, so the programmers know the direction they want to take the child, & will tailor some of what is said to the child victim to individualize the programming.

When a three or four year old is shown Fantasia on a hypnotically-prepared and controlled LSD trip, the colors & effects of Fantasia are increased about 1,000 times. The film is realer than real to the child. The movie will not be shown just once, but over and over so that the scripts are ingrained into the mind. The imagery for the child's internal world will be well established, because the big screen movie enhanced by both the drugs and the bright colors of the art work will seem more real that life itself. At this time, the child is a multiple, but the walls between the various parts of the mind are not solid, but similar to the walls between ego states in an adult non-multiple. A large part of the 3 or 4 year-old child's system will be allowed to view the system, including the Christian parts. Then the entire system (with the single exception of the alter carrying the entire memory of the film) will be hypnotically told to forget having seen the film. Years later, the front alters will not remember having seen the movie, but they may have a strange dislike for the film. They may find that they can't identify where their feelings of dislike of the film stem from.

The child victim will watch the movie with its programmer and assistant programmer one-on-one, with no other children in the room. The child will watch the film repeatedly and be grilled about what is in the movie. The child will see the movie so many times in such a vivid form and will be tested to the point that the movie will be memorized. But it will be hypnotically locked up in the subconscious by the programmers, so that it forms a base for the mind to begin building programming, but will remain hidden from the conscious.

At the time the Fantasia film was made, the Illuminati had been creating trained multiples for years, but they knew they wanted to program the different personalities in accordance with the best mind-control techniques of the day. For this reason, the Fantasia film was planned ahead of time, so that it could possibly serve as a programming aid. The film is silent (almost no words) except for music so that it can be used for hypnotic visualization, so that the Mother of Darkness & the programmer can fill in the programming script with the child victim as they watch the movie.

As it turned out, their plans were successful. The New Age author David Tame states in his book *The Secret Power of Music* (Rochester, VT: Destiny Books, 1984, p. 292), that **Fantasia is**... "A superb marriage between the visual and musical arts. Most of the sequences...are what New Age cinema was intended to be!" The power of the movie to influence the mind stands out.

In order to make the film, Disney used some strong arm tactics on a few people. The movie was a box office flop when first released in the 1940's, but then it was made for the occult world anyway. By the 1960's, the Illuminati had create a drug culture and had lots of undetectable mind-controlled slaves running around that had been programmed with Fantasia. In the 1960's, Fantasia became a hit with the drug culture which had its share of Illuminati slaves deeply involved in it.

One more reminder, the sentences that are "ALL CAPS" in the script are things that the programmers are saying to the child victim as the child watches the film. (Bear in mind, that the child watches the film over & over, so not everything indicated in this script by caps that the programmer says will necessarily be said in one showing.)

00 minutes. Curtains open. Action begins with an orchestra. The Conductor upon a step pyramid is the center of the scene, and is shown to be the center of authority. Master Programmer Dr. Joseph Mengele liked Fantasia because he was a musician and a violinist. Mengele (Dr. Green) liked Bach, Beethoven, and Schubert and orchestra music. He enjoyed taking what he liked & using this music to make slaves. He would portray himself during programming as being the conductor, & all the orchestra were his children. The film will allow for a repetition of this theme.
00.5 minutes. The instruments begin playing. The musicians are silhouettes which cast shadows upon the wall. Alters will often see themselves in this fashion too, as merely a shadow or merely a silhouette.
01.5 minutes. The MC (named Taylor) begins talking. He begins grooming the viewer. He says that the film may suggest to your imagination "geometric figures floating in space."
02. minutes. The M.C. says there are 3 kinds of music. He says some music is to create definite stories, some to create definite pictures, and some music exists for its own sake.
02.5 minutes. The M.C. introduces us to the "Absolute music."
03. minutes. He states that "Abstract images that might pass through your mind...music will suggest other things to your imagination..." The Philadelphia Orchestra begins playing "Toccata and Fuge" by Bach in the background. As a cartoon for children (or adults) the film has already lost the normal audience at this point. (There is no way that Disney could have escaped realizing that the film starts out losing the normal audience.)
03.5 minutes. The conductor is standing out and everyone else is a silhouette with shadow mirror images (like so many of the alters become). Leopald Stokowski is now standing as the rising sun rises. This is an allusion to sun worship and the sun rising in the east. The music is going up and down, and this music at this point is used to train the child to go up and down the trance ladder (that is to go deeper or lighter in trance).
04. minutes. The conductor opens his hands and waves them in an Illuminati hand signal. The music begins.
06 minutes. A row of violinists play, they are merely silhouettes with shadows.
06.5 minutes. A harp scale is played in the background that is used in the programming. Triggers are attached to this harp scale, or the harp scale is used as a foundation identifier for a piano scale. More children can be taught the piano than the harp, so this scale is usually transferred to a piano scale.
07 minutes. A series of 3 musicians is shown.
07.5 minutes. The conductor (the programmer) becomes invisible. The Prog. Assistant will ask the child, "WHO IS GREEN? GREEN BECOMES INVISIBLE."
08 minutes. First lines representing bows are shown (the violinists are invisible), then the Golden Gate Bridge. "REMEMBER THE BOW, NOT THE VIOLINIST." The bow lines flashing on the screen represent energy.
08.5 minutes. Colored disks are flashed onto the screen. The lights are represented to the child victim "THAT'S DR. GREEN'S ORCHESTRA." Geometric shapes and flashes of lines explode onto the screen. Concentric rings that will pattern the concentric worlds appear. (See *Vol. 2* p. 196 for an illustration of this.)
10. minutes. Asst. Prog. will say, "YOU ARE HIS STAR." as stars flash on the screen. Many hidden alters (parts) are stars. Swirling lines arrive, and then colors and then more concentric lines.
11 minutes. Worlds within worlds are shown. Water is shown. Concentric circles that are the pattern for the worlds are presented. A varying number (5 or 7) of Castle-like structures materialize and then disappear. (These will form the pattern for some of the internal castles.) A quick flowing yellow line comes down the center of the screen, "THAT'S THE YELLOW BRICK ROAD."
11.5 min. Lots of stars emerge.
12 minutes. Various worlds are shown, and an illusionary castle. Lots of stars are shown, which will be how the victim will model many of their alter parts after. Lots of purple stars appear, representing royal star alters.
12.5 minutes. Spiral splotches of cloud-like colors appear and disappear in dissociative colors. This is the Kingdom of the Gods during programming. The Asst. Programmer takes the opportunity to ask, "WHOSE ORCHESTRA?" This scene is used for the internal heaven where the kings are. Then the camera shows the conductor finishing.
13 minutes. The programmer has finished building his basic worlds.
13.5 minutes. The MC talks about Tchaikovsky's Nutcracker.
14 minutes. 13 circling lights come into view circling around and around. (The 13 lights are something like 4 yellow lights, 3 white lights, 4 orange, 2 blue-something like this. They don't have to be all the different programming colors at this point, because that programming will come in its own time.) Stars turn

into fairies. A fairy with lots of fairy dust whirls around. ("Make a wish" the slave will be told later on, create what you want.) Flowers grow into butterflies. Hypnotic music plays as the fairy throws fairy dust. Soon, the Fairy spins a web.

15 minutes. The cabalistic tree of life is made with lights, and then the many colors of the ribbons are flashed up on the screen quickly. A compass image is very quickly flashed on the screen.

16 minutes. Lights multiply on the screen, and a spider web appears in the background. There are lots of stars which shine as lights in a spider web. (Stars will serve as alters in programming, the spider web serves as a system within the system, see *Vol. 2*.) There are several shots of multitudes of stars on a spider web.

16.5 minutes. There is an explosion of light which has a splintering effect (which will fit in well with an electroshock later on to create alters.) Around and around go 6 big mushrooms dancing, with a little one trying to participate. The programmer will point out that the mushrooms are "A FAMILY". When the splintering effect is done with real electricity in the future, the mind will splinter into a family.

17.5 minutes. Concentric circles appear in water. Flashing pedals emerge as if they were dissociation spreading through the water. The flowers are the top spinners (see the pages in *Deeper Insights* on spin tortures to create spinner families), they dance, & then they float away in the bubbles (of dissociation). "A FAMILY OF SPINNERS" the programmer will say. "SEE THEY SPIN YOU INTO BUBBLES INTO NOTHINGNESS." There is lots of dancing shown by the spinners. Everyone is dancing to the top. The child victim's head will be wobbling back and forth from the influence of the drugs and dissociation at this point.

19.5 minutes. When the family of fish make a star, the Asst. Programmer says, "SEE HOW SAD THEY ARE." The fish dance in circles and they also hide behind veils. "THE FISH MADE ITS OWN BUBBLES AND YOU CAN MAKE YOUR OWN BUBBLES TOO."

21.5 min. The child is trained to trance at the hypnotic 8's that appear in the water. This type of scene will put the deeper alters to sleep of a slave still actively being used. The movie here is being used to teach symbols, which will be important in the programming. Asst. Programmer, "LOOK YOU'RE JUST FLOATING....FLOAT, FLOAT, FLOAT, SLEEP...SEE SHE WENT RIGHT INTO THE CENTER OF THE TRANCE STATE...YOU DANCE ROUND AND ROUND AND ROUND AND WHERE WE END UP YOU'LL NEVER KNOW."

22 minutes. Lots of bubbles begin appearing. They will be used in the programming to assist the child to protect its mind from the traumas. The asst. programmer may have a bubble toy to make bubbles in her hand as a game to play with the child. The child will be trained and programmed to put its memories into bubbles and let them disappear. "WHY WOULD YOU WANT TO GO INTO THE BUBBLE TO GET AWAY FROM THE DARKNESS? 1,2,3...NOW THERE ARE MANY BUBBLES, THIS IS WHAT WE WANT YOU TO DO." At this point the film is showing different colors of bubbles, for instance gold bubbles. This trains the child's mind to identify different colors of bubbles. The bubble-fish-flower scene is going on. "DON'T YOU FEEL LIKE THAT FISH, ROUND AND ROUND YOU GO" (dissociation encouraged). The fish continues going in a dissociative spin. The fish swim in graceful perfect figure 8's which have a subconscious hypnotic induction message to the victim. "SLEEPY LITTLE FISH" is said when the music gets hypnotic. "YOU'RE SLEEPY & YOU'RE TIRED, THIS IS NOTHING BUT A DREAM." "ALL THE DIAMONDS ARE ALL AROUND, NOT YOU" In other words, this is teaching the child that their entire internal world can be around them, but "you don't know that it's you." The child begins to lose the ability to realize that other parts of itself belong to itself, they are only stars, etc. The fish changes into another character. Flowers are appearing in different colors of the color coding, red, green, orange, blue, white...All of a sudden it get's still. "SHH, LISTEN CLOSELY."

22.5 minutes. Eyes shine in the darkness. "EVERYTHING IS FINE, YOU JUST RELAX." Silhouettes appear, which represent fish (alters, and people) who are there but you don't see them, they are behind the veil like the silhouettes. "THEY AREN'T THERE, IF YOU SEE THEM THEY AREN'T REAL. THEY LOOK LIKE A FLOWER, WHEN YOU SEE THEM, YOU WON'T SEE A CHILD- YOU WILL SEE A FLOWER." The silhouette veil gives the sense to the child that he can sense something but it's not there.

23 min. Different plants appear and dance. (This part of movie is very important in structuring.) The plants separate into many plants and flowers, and they multiply on the screen, but at the end they solidify into a solid plant. This is teaching the "you-are-one-but-you-are-many" concept. "FAMILIES ALWAYS WORK TOGETHER. WHETHER YOU ARE BLUE OR YELLOW OR GREEN, FAMILIES ALWAYS WORK TOGETHER IN HARMONY."

24 minutes. "BUBBLES ALL HAVE A LIFE SOURCE...THERE, LOOK, WHAT'S IN THAT BUBBLE?"

24.5 minutes. "YOU CAN HAVE YOUR OWN ORCHESTRA". Fruit that hangs on the tree is shown, which will be the basis for how they hang the programs (the fruit) in the internal world. Note the colors, orange, white, yellow, purple, blue, green,...

24.5 minutes. Fairyland appears on the screen. The Fairies awake and fly through leaves. "THERE'S YOUR

FAIRIES. SHE IS VERY MAGICAL. SHE CAN CREATE ANYTHING AND SO CAN YOU." "THE FAIRIES ARE SO MAGICAL." When the core is being first split, the parts of the mind that are creative are taken and used to create the fairies. The programmers will only take these original creative splits, they will **not** try to get fairies from any more torture. The fairies are the creative parts of the child, how ever many creative parts that the child has splintered will be the number of fairies created. These parts of the mind receive very heavy programming. They are core splits. (If readers remember on page 87 of *Vol. 2*, it refers to a Core Protector coded "Creation". That alter was a fairy, a core split. Not only does this creative part make things "magically" for the system, it protects the core. Does that help people to understand how the Core can be so creatively protected?! (For more understanding about the Core see Cisco's very deep article on the Core.) Fairies are assigned to every part of an alter system. The child of 3 or 4, who watches Fantasia has had their core locked away at 2 1/2. The core's stars have not been locked away yet, & have access to her energy. When the system is built, the stars are locked away & become the core's guardians. They will act like the core to protect her. The real value of the fairies comes when the core's stars are locked away & the Programmers have to depend upon the creative power of the fairies.

24 minutes. A vine (which represents a system's double helix) lights up one leaf after another. The leaves are staggered (alternated) and they light up in sequence, which teaches the child the foundation of how they will create the DNA helix and its staggered exit permissions.

25.5 min. The leaves are now floating up and down, like the alters will learn to do. "SOME FALL TO THE GROUND AND DIE." This is the point where the story of the Oak Tree will be added in for programming. When the Illuminati programmers want "to destroy" an alter they can use the chandelier-MT 6:22-23 torture mentioned on page 310 of the *Vol. 2 Formula* book, and then have the splintered alters become leaves that fall to the ground and die. After this, these disobedient and now "dead" alters can be taken & be dissociated from their memories. The memories are locked up someplace permanent within the mind.

26. min. Out of a leaf like "box" come a series of fairies. The child is taught to put things (such as alters) in boxes of various shapes.

26.5 min. Leaves blow in the wind. Fairies cover things and keep them safe.

27. min. Fairies continue flying around. The seasons are passing in sequence. An internal green-skirted fairy will be connected to the internal hourglass during the programming.

27.5 min. The fairies quit flying and skate on ice. The season has turned to winter.

28 min. A winter scene. The four seasons have come to an end.

28.5 min. A sorcerer is introduced by the MC (emcee). The sorcerer is shown and then his assistant or trainee who is Mickey Mouse. Mickey Mouse wants to be creative and magical like the great wizard. Mickey Mouse sees the power that the sorcerer has, and wants that power. What is really being subtly portrayed here is the programmer (the wizard) and the core & the core's creative splits (Mickey Mouse). Showing the programmer as a great wizard is actually right on the money. The top programmers are all Grand Masters in the Illuminati and are very much into witchcraft.

29 min. The sorcerer (wizard) is shown again. This time the wizard, with his skull beside him, **creates** from his witch's cauldron a **big colorful butterfly** which **is forever changing**. (Is this big yellow, purple, white, and blue butterfly meant to be a Monarch butterfly? The programmers will use it that way for this Monarch programming.) The great wizard magically creates the big colorful butterfly and then he shatters it into countless splinters!

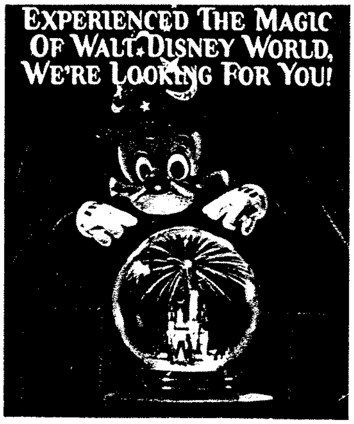

Disney often portrays Mickey Mouse as a Sorcerer.

30 min. Mickey sneaks around and grabs the magic hat. (The magic hat is one of the few things in the film that doesn't mean anything for the programming. It merely has witchcraft symbols.) Then a magic broom appears.

30.5 min. The broomstick comes alive. The broomstick imagery will be used to help create the pancake people (ribbon alters who will haul the internal computer messages). The broomstick person in the film hauls buckets of water. The child is having story after story layered in over a period of time, which are being skillfully constructed toward a programming end. Parts of the child's mind that see the movie Fantasia will be dissociated clean slates. They will need to have some imagery given to them so that they have something to build mentally upon. In Cisco's section of the book, in the Truth article it is discussed how the mind looks at sensory inputs and tries to make sense of a pattern by comparing it to previous patterns that it has identified. Learning is a step-by-step building process, and so is programming.

31. min. Mickey as the apprentice sorcerer (in a sense the victim who the programmer is training) manipulates the broomstick person. "THE CHILD (Mickey) CAN DO WHAT THE GREAT MAGICIAN DID. YOU CAN TELL YOUR MIND WHAT TO DO. YOU GET POWER BY LEARNING TO BE CREATIVE." Mickey (and the victim) become mirror images of the Wizard over them.

32 min. Then the sorcerer sits on his throne, and while on the throne acts like the conductor. Here is a subtle mental tie-in that Mickey is playing the role of programmer (conductor) and is sitting on an Illuminati throne (like so many of the Illuminati Grand Master programmers have actually done.) Michael Aquino is just one of several mind-control programmers who have gone by the name of Mickey. Because Mickey Mouse is substituted for being the programmer at different points in programming, this scene will tie in well with other standard programming sessions.

32.5 min. Mickey in the film clearly is shown leaving his physical body and astrally projecting himself. This is such a vivid portrayal of occult astral projection, that it is mind-boggling that many Christians consider Walt Disney movies to be christian. (See *Vol. 2*, p. 319, for a discussion of the scientific methods to understand and induce astral projection.) This again is laying the mental foundation for the child to leave its body mentally and either hover over its body in dissociation or to travel somewhere via astral projection. Mickey Mouse then begins conducting lights. These lights represent the alters that the victim will make for the conductor. The lights (aka stars) are the conductor's orchestra. Lightning (such as flashes that come from electroshock) and stormy weather are being controlled by Mickey. Notice that the things Mickey is controlling are **fear-based**. After the child has viewed the film many times and memorized it, when the electro-shock is applied during this time of the film, the child will control it like Mickey by "magically" creating splits.

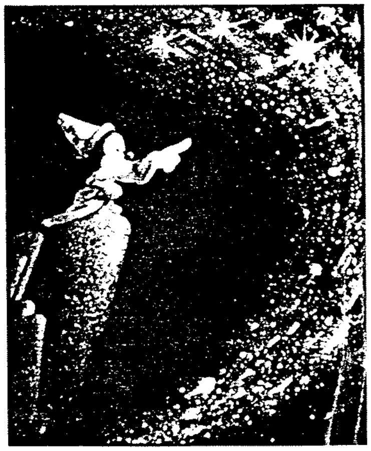

33.5 min. Mickey begins conducting waves. Then, for those who understand the veiled scenes, Mickey begins going through the different magic spheres conquering the different spirits. This is Enochian Magic.

34 min. Mickey wakes up back in his body, and he is in trouble with rising water i.e. a water trauma. Mickey is thrown into the water. The child victim will identify this with the drowning tortures that are given to instill "no talk-no tell" messages. After Mickey (or in child himself) has done something, and returns to his body, then the "no-talk" message will kick in. Victims of mind-control often get the feeling of drowning when they trigger a no-talk message.

34.5 min. More water continues to flow.

35 min. All of a sudden without any continuity of action, Mickey gets an ax and kills the broom by splitting it. The broom dies and then multiplies when it comes back to life. This is such a clear picture of what the programmers want the child's mind to do. They will traumatize the child essentially unto death, and then they want the tortured alter to multiply itself into many more duplicate alters. Armies of brooms are formed from the broom. This scene here is a clear red flag that the Illuminati asked Walt Disney to produce this film. This scene with the trauma death of the broom, with it splitting in half, and then coming back to life in a multiplied form, is evidence that this film was meant to be used for training children in multiplicity. The assistant programmer will say "IT'S O.K. TO SPLINTER." "YOU ARE TIRED, YOU CAN ESCAPE THAT BY RESTING AND LET A PART OF YOURSELF COME OUT." At this point, it is necessary to explain what is going to be done when they begin to splinter the child's mind. After the splitting trauma, the programmer needs to be able to see what the child has created, so he wants the child to look at what's been made. "CAN YOU LOOK AT WHAT YOU'VE CREATED?" However, the part of the child that looks back at the trauma will then see that the dissociated trauma was real and that will make the child angry. The programmers want the child to dissociate what he built, and when the child looks back at what he has created he goes into a vortex of dissociation. The child is told if he ever looks back at the memory he will go into the vortex.

35.5 min. Water is being thrown in by the brooms, while Mickey throws water out.

36 min. All of a sudden a hypnotic vortex sucks things in during the film.

36.5 min. The brooms all march in an army, while Mickey reads his magic book. Mickey then uses his magic book as a lifeboat when he gets whirled into a vortex. A vortex is often created from that part of the mind that is holding the high energy that accumulates in the mind just before the mind splits. It holds the highest energy of the mind. One way a vortex is created is to place the child on a traumatic Disney ride--like a rollar coaster. Special electrical boxes or electrical shoes are outfitted onto the child so that during the ride, at a particular timed moment when fear is increasing, that fear has pain of the electrical shock added to it. A cattle prod of course would be too dangerous to take up on some type of ride like that with all the motion. Also bear in mind, a small child doesn't take need the electrical power that an adult needs to take it down.

37 min. At the bottom of vortices in the Illuminati programming, the programmers place Guardian demons. In Fantasia, when Mickey gets to the bottom of the vortex, sure enough, there is a Guardian there to meet him. The Guardian spirit parts the water as if he were Moses with the Red Sea.

38. min. The Conductor and Mickey Mouse shake hands. The conductor does something very significant. Mickey congratulates the conductor and then the conductor (programmer) in turn says, "Mickey, you've done a good job." (Yes, the core/core splits have done a good job at this point, they have just created their inner world!)

The MC tells us about the next song the occult Rite of Spring. Spring rituals are creation rituals and so this music is ritually connected to what the programmers are going to do in this segment. The MC states that instead of the viewer seeing tribal dances (which are by the way witchcraft dances), that instead Disney has decided to show us scenes of what went on billions of years ago. (This next part is also a subtle push for Darwin's theory of evolution. But because it is child's entertainment, people don't have their guard up. The theory of evolution is important, because it allows people including the victim to not take moral responsibility for their actions, and it is also the basis of some of the Hinduism and witchcraft teachings that will be given the deeper alters. This is a backdoor approach to destroy godliness that is carried out on children in general.)

39.5 min. The MC says, "Imagine a lonely tormented little planet spinning in a sea of nothingness." This is exactly what the programmer will say to the child as they work together at building an internal world. The "sea of nothingness" is what the reader will see described in our books as "Outer Space" or "the Rubicon". Also that "sea of nothingness" is used much later to reinforce the secrecy of the programmers. Much later as the programmer and torture has progressed the programmers will say to alters, "LOOK DOWN ON THE EMPTY SEA OF NOTHINGNESS. THERE IS NO DR. GREEN. THERE IS NO DADDY THERE."

40 minutes. A swirl of stars in a galaxy appears. Swirls of comet-like lights flash by. "MANY WORLDS THERE." This will set the base for the child to build galaxies and worlds within their mind. "BE LIKE GOD, CREATE YOUR WORLD. BE YOUR OWN GOD AND CREATE YOUR OWN WORLD" the child is told at this point.

42 minutes. The face of the planet emerges.

42.5 min. Lots of volcanoes erupt on the screen, setting the foundation to build realistic internal volcanoes.

45 min. Oceans, and water and fire are coming into being. The child victim needs to know how a world is created in order to create their own internal world. Lava begins flowing as the flute plays the background music. Lightening flashes. The violence of the fierce weather portrayed will be enhanced by the child on drugs to a thousand times its magnitude. This is important because it will take a great deal of mental energy and external torture to create the internal worlds. Having such super-vivid pictures will help when the victim goes to build their internal worlds. There will be special purpose fragments that will be made into the elements of fire and water. That's all these special purpose fragments will know. Breaking through the layers in the alter systems will trigger internal earthquakes. This and a later earthquake scene are used to build the foundation for the internal violent weather. If an internal earthquake shakes a slave's mind, it has the same effect as if a real earthquake were going off. Everything internally shakes and shifts. An alter system will also have fire children, who start internal fires, and will give internal alters the abreaction or sense that they are burning. The mind gets very survival minded when it thinks it is burning, and goes right back into the programming that is linked with the victim's compliance for survival during programming.

46 minutes. The oceans continue to form.

47 min. A calm occurs in the action.

47.5 min. The screen gets dark except for an amoeba, which becomes two amoebas. As the little amoebas multiply, the asst. programmer encourages the child, "IT'S O.K. TO MULTIPLY. GOD WANTED YOU TO MULTIPLY." Remember, the programmers are working with a pre-schooler with clean slate alters. The programmers must show images that the child can relate to. The concept of the broom being split in half and then multiplying and now the concept of the amoebas splitting are portrayed in a way that the child's mind can grasp the concept.

48.5 min. "IF GOD CAN MAKE A FISH, YOU CAN MAKE A FISH. YOU CAN DO ANYTHING, YOU CAN BE ANYTHING."

49 minutes. Dinosaurs appear. The programmers will reframe the concept of dinosaurs into monsters and demons. The sea-going dinosaurs will be reframed as guardian demons which guard the internal rivers. These guardian demons tie in with Armageddon end-time programming. They also guard the various worlds.

50 min. Dinosaur-birds swoop down and grab prey. This imagery will be reframed to lay the basis for the winged-monkey watchers of the Oz stories. The winged-monkey watchers are the child alters who are assigned to watch and guard the system.

51.5 min. Fierce dinosaurs (later reframed as Dragons) protect the swamps. Swamps are built into the internal worlds, so this is very helpful. Demons and alters like Dameon are set up as guards.

52 minutes- More swamps appear. The swamp scenes will form the base in the child's mind for the internal river Styx. (See more about this in this book's article "Programming, foundations, destruction of"). Some dinosaurs that have long necks that look like snakes begin appearing. The asst. programmer will reframe these to the child, "LOOK, THE SEED OF SATAN." "THAT IS A DEMON." While the child watches, they reframe the hugh dinosaurs as being demons. Pictures of reptilian looking demons will be shown to the child too. At that age, the child is not going to see the difference. (A note for therapists: Some "demons" may actually be important parts to an alter system, and are being used to protect unauthorized users from entering important areas of the system.)

54 min.- Fierce Tyrannosaurus Rex chases dinosaurs. This chase scene is especially frightening to a young child on a LSD trip. Long-necked snake-like dinosaurs appear. They may be reframed as a python snake. T Rex is also known as Leviathan, a demon that inhabits the kundalini spinal column and causes pain in the victim, he is written about on page 302 in our *Vol. 2* book. In the film a long fierce struggle between T Rex and other dinosaurs ensues.

55 min. The dinosaurs begin dying and soon dies. "THE LORD DOESN'T LIKE THEM." This will later be reframed that if parts integrate they are to die. If someone tries to get into the system, the alters are to bury themselves deep like these dinosaurs do on the film.

56 min. Dead bones appear.

59 min. Mountains soar out of the ground into eminence.

59.5 min. It gets stormy on the screen, winds & floods appear.

60. min. Stillness comes as the sun rises.

61 min. The sun sets. (During the programming, this may be reframed as the moon setting. It can be both or either or. Remember, the programmer is working with the child's creativity.) Various scenes during the film show the moon in different phases which is important for bringing in programming concepts like Mr. Moon.

61.3 min. The orchestra is now playing. Music is an important part of mind-control programming. The affect of music on the mind and body has been studied. Music can double the heart beat, accelerate the respiratory rate, make that rate irregular, enhance perception, lower the threshold for various sensory stimuli, change blood pressure & circulation, and alter the muscles in the body. Dance music and "march" music done by orchestras change muscle response. Music is also a great way to cause dissociation.

62.5 min. The MC introduces the "Sound Track" who he says is an important person for Fantasia who can be seen around the Disney studio. When Mr. Sound Track appears, he is simply a vertical line. The MC says he is "an important screen personality." The ground work is being laid for a person being anything, even a line. The MC states that each sound creates a picture.

63 minutes. The MC encourages the personified Sound Track "don't be nervous." Then a sound is made like an electrical shock and the line develops a splotch of color in it. During the programming at this point an electrical shock would be applied to the child.

63.5 minutes. The harp is ask to sound. The harp begins playing a scale and the line becomes double 8's and snake-like spirals. The child will be taught to dissociate when seeing such double 8's.

64 min. The violin begins going up and down. Each of these instruments is going up and down the scale, like do-ray-me-fa-so-la-tee-do. The music is used to teach the alters to go up and down the helix, which is figured in this part of the film. As the music goes down, an alter is taught to go down in trance, and as it climbs higher, the alter will trance higher. All these instruments (violin, flute, bass, bassoon) are being used to teach alters how to work in the system. The MC describes the flute as "very pretty".

64.3 min. A trumpet begins playing and the colors, yellow, orange, etc. begin showing.

64.5 min. When the bassoon plays, the MC says, "Go on. Drop the other shoe"-- "Go to the shoe" which translates "go to the ground" --the deepest trance level. The following is the double-pyramid, with a helix up the middle that appears when the bassoon plays: -(This configuration is very important to all these Illuminati alters systems.)-

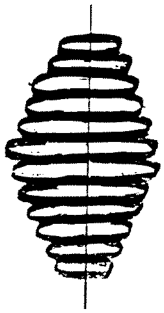

65 min. The drum plays and some other percussion instruments play. These are taught to the child as the cult's "HEARTBEAT". They will hear this sound internally for many years to come. Then some sounds that have a shattering effect (cymbals) like broken mirrors are made in the film.

65.5 min. As the sounds take place a line is made with a pyramid at the top. This is laying the groundwork for the system's structuring.

66 min. The MC laughs and talks about Beethoven's Pastoral Symphony (Beethoven's 6th) which is next.

66.5 minutes. The screen comes alive with magical Unicorns of different colors. Then Pan (a satan-like figure) appears playing his pipes, and soon lots of little Pans (little demons) are playing their pipes.

The little Pans (demons) play and dance with the unicorns. The orchestra plays again. (This author, Fritz, remembers when I said that Pan was an evil demon, I was rebuked by a Christian minister. He then said Pan was "a benevolent cheery creature". A number of books which may be obtained from Satanic bookstores document that Pan is indeed considered a powerful demon by occultists.)

67 min. Pegasus (the mythical greek winged horse) flies in. As a Mother horse she takes care of little ones on the screen. She is a protector in the programming.

68 min. "FANTASY IS FUN. FANTASY IS A GAME YOU PLAY. MOTHER TEACHES YOU. SEE HOW MOTHER IS A TEACHER. SEE THE BLACK AND WHITE HORSE. THEY ALWAYS FLY TOGETHER, BUT ARE SEPARATE. THEY ARE FLYING OVER THE CLOUDS." "OVER THE CLOUDS, INTO THE BLUE YONDER." The child is rewarded for what it has to do with the game of fantasy. "THAT'S YOUR REWARD FOR DOING WHAT YOU ARE TO DO. YOU CAN LEARN TO FLY OVER THE CLOUDS." The child feels rewarded by the game of fantasy. The fantasy scenes in Walt Disney's Fantasia are like the Wizard of Oz scenes in Oz, fantasy-land is more colorful and fun than real life. Vivid colors will be splashed about during the fantasy-land scenes.

68.5 min. A castle appears as Pegasus flies around. This and other castle scenes will help the child develop the imagery for the spiritual castles that the child will build internally. Then they swim in the water. "SEE THE MIRROR IMAGES, WATER CAN BE GLASS." During the programming mirrors are put into the internal system. A mirror can be a piece of glass, the surface of a pond, or an asphalt runway. When the programming is complete, underneath the water &/or the runway lurk demons.

70 min. Waterfalls emerge and issue forth. The waterfalls are used by the programmers to erase all the slave's memory of what was done to them. The child will be told at the end of watching Fantasia (and this will be said at other programming events too), "JUST REMEMBER THE GOOD, JUST REMEMBER THE FANTASY". The fantasy is given so that the subconscious can rest in peace after the programming. The child is told "WASH YOURSELF CLEAN."

70.5 min. The little girls appear as girl centaurs (half girl-half horse). "SEE THE LITTLE GIRLS ARE HORSES."

71 minutes. Then a scene appears where one girl centaur braids another girl centaur's long hair. The Illuminati teach their slaves to braid their memories. They braid their memories up and then lock them in. All the Daddy memories will be locked up & braided and then locked for good.

72 min. Male centaurs appear. They are near water and make mirror images in the water.

72.5 min. A crown is placed on a female centaur and 2 doves. During the Illuminati death, burial and resurrection ceremonies lilies are used for crowns, and doves are used. These are significant programming/ritual symbols. The female centaurs look at the male centaurs. This will be reframed as a system can have both male and female parts.

73 min. Starting with one female centaur, the females act seductive to the males, who then respond. For bras the females have bras of daisies. The *Vol. 2* book explained how the daisy programming is a life-or-death type program. Vivid colors are used for each centaur. For instance, one may be purple and another one another color, which sets the groundwork for alters to have different access color codes. Alters do not usually see themselves as being in different colors, although it does happen on occasion.

73.8 min. A marriage takes place between the centaurs. The programmers catch these nuances of the film and use them. The marriage here teaches the child to be acquainted with the arm-and-arm marriage ceremonies. Remember, the programmers are dealing with clean slates that must be taught from the ground up. In the next few minutes, the cherub children will watch sexual body language, and the child victim is also picking up on enticing sexual body motions.

74.2 min. The centaurs go swimming. "I FEEL LIKE A LITTLE GIRL WITH A HORSE'S BODY."

75 min. Little cherubs are dancing and flying around. When pictured the artists at times single out 3 cherubs who blow flutes together. The female centaur appears, who is fair haired (blond) and blue-eyed, which is what the Illuminati like. When she hears the tone (of the flutes) she goes into a trance state and walks with her eyes closed. This imagery is used to teach alters that when they hear certain tones, they are to go into a trance state and do certain things. The little cherub turns into a heart, and when no one is watching goes into the tree. In programming, this part is the Keeper of the Tree. Notice how everything is veiled. The assistant programmer will point the cherub out to the child victim, "LOOK AT WHAT HE DID."

76.5 min. A curtain then shrouds the scene. The curtain appears to be tree-like. More bubbles appear, and more water. All the mythical creatures on the screen begin to dance and be merry and have a feast.

77 min. "SEE THE FEASTS, SEE THE BANQUETS, THE FEASTS ARE O.K. THE BANQUETS ARE O.K."

78 min. "THE LEAVES ARE FALLING." Blood-like wine is drank at the feast. "SEE THE BLOOD."

"SEE THE LITTLE DEVILS POP UP." The only human in this Disney scene is honored. This is done to teach the alters that humans and animals can mix. That they can be accepted for what they are, even if they think they are an animal or something else they will be accepted at the cult's feasts. These scenes are all for internal programming. By the way, one of the pretty female centaurs makes a sexual pass at the fat human, who then chases her. "MUST PLEASE THE MASTER."

80 min. A scary storm comes up, and Zeus, and the greek gods appear. "BETTER FEAR IT. HE'S A GOD YOU'D BETTER FEAR HIM. HE THROWS LIGHTNING." This demon who throws lightening is named Furfur. He also makes thunder & strong winds in the system (alter system's worlds). Readers can learn more about this demon, named Furfur, in Cisco's second part of *Deeper Insights* in the article on "Programming, foundations, destruction of".

81 minutes. Lightening bolts are thrown from heaven.

81.5 min. All the little cherubs run for cover in fear.

82 min. Pegasus the protector flies in to protect everyone, especially a new born Pegasus. The wind is personified as a two-headed blowing person. This two-headed Janus wind comes storming through the heavens. The programmer will often place his own voice "IN THE WIND." The greek god (internal demon) throws a lightening bolt.

83 min. "SEE THE GODS". The child is learning what to make internally. Zeus then relaxes & goes to sleep.

84 min. More vivid colors form. "FAMILIARIZE YOURSELF WITH ALL THE COLORS." The film at this point is teaching the child to stay in the framework of the programming for safety. To go outside of the programming is terror. The child is learning to fear the godlike demonic guardians.

84.5 min. The fantasy world is coming alive. It is a happy fantasy world. A goddess in the sky makes a rainbow emerge. This is the rainbow goddess of the programming.

85 min. All the happy unicorns and cherubs fly "over the rainbow." (Refer back to the *Vol. 2* book p.94 to understand the significance of going over the rainbow.) The unicorn is derived from old British paganism where the lion represented sun worship, and the unicorn represented moon worship. This is why the Royal Arms of the British Royal Family have a unicorn on one side, & a lion on the other. Sexually the unicorn represents androgeny. During programming, the horses, pegasi, unicorns and centaurs shown in the Fantasia movie become the foundation upon which the Illuminati programmers build the Night Mare alters who are beasts of burden who carry an alter system's memories. These are logical no-emotion alters who are early splits & who are programmed after the child is verbal. See Cisco's article on Dream Work for more understanding about the horse alters, as well as chapter 7 on Structuring.

86 minutes. More rainbows and lots of bubbles come into view. The film has done an excellent job of showing how the Furfur God of thunder protects the Rainbow. Once an alter has gone over the rainbow, they can not come back because a demon protects the Rainbow. The rainbow is also protected by alters who fear the gods. After seeing Fantasia, the therapist can understand why the little child protector alters have fear about these gods. The master (who represents Furfur) in the movie swallows the rainbow. If an alter looks internally for the rainbow, he or she will only find stars, because the protector will come up and say, "I swallowed the rainbow." The rainbow is kept well hidden internally. This scene is used to teach alters how to go over the rainbow. "BEFORE YOU GO OVER THE RAINBOW, YOU HAVE TO PUT ALL YOUR MEMORIES IN THE BUBBLE. YOU CAN'T TAKE ANYTHING OVER THE RAINBOW INTO FANTASY LAND."

86.5 minutes. Apollo, the sun god comes out.

87 min. A big mother spirit who fills the whole sky is now shown by Disney. She hangs over the rainbow. When a system is built this is indeed what they put in. All go to sleep in the film.

87.5 minutes. Arrows shoot the stars into the heavens. This is more programming imagery. When you look for the rainbow, you see stars.

88 min. The conductor finishes again.

88.5 min. The next setting is a Venetian nobleman's (a duke's) palace. Curtains open. The use of curtains is spoken about in our previous books.

89 min. Curtains open. An Ostrich begins dancing, and gets others to ballet dance.

90 min. The Ostriches begin dancing in a circle, this is

laying the groundwork for what the cult family does. The Assistant programmer may tell the child, "SEE IT'S O.K. TO DANCE TOGETHER. DANCING IS ACCEPTABLE." The programmers will not directly tell the child that this represents the cult family.
91.5 min. The Ostriches are eating grapes. They are playing, looking in the pool & they are seeing bubbles.
92 min. Hippos emerge out of the pool. "IT'S O.K. TO BE DIFFERENT. IT'S O.K. TO BE STRANGE. USE YOUR CREATIVITY." The hippos begin to dance and dance.
94 min. Elephants appear and are having fun and blowing bubbles out of their trunks. The programmers may be having fun blowing bubbles with the child. The programmers like to mix love and hate, kindness and sadistic behavior. That way the victim has a hard time separating love from hate. If you ask many slaves about "Daddy" they will tell you that they had fun with Daddy. They are right--they had fun intermixed with sadistic torture.

Bubbles continue to lift off. One of the bubbles has a fish in it. This is imagery for the bubble programming. The child victim is trained to dump their bad memories into bubbles and let them float away. The therapist will notice that many victims feel like they are floating. They have an unreal feeling. The bubbles are floating their bad memories away.
96.5 minutes. A new setting and the hippos are hypnotically sleeping. 3 sinister alligators that remind one of the 3 primary programmers appear. The 3 alligators have robes that hide them, and shadow images of themselves lurking behind them. The alligators are trying to get the hippos. The 3 alligators are portrayed like the programmer is, he is someone to fear, love, & respect all at once. The hippo is running away and dancing. The alligator dances with the hippo, but makes menacing attempts to eat him. A flying hippo lands on an alligator. Elephants, hippos, alligators are shown. The elephants, ostriches, hippos and alligators all dance in fantasyland.
100 min. The orchestra is dancing. "DO WHAT YOU'RE TOLD AND WE WILL HAVE FUN."
101 min. The MC announces the next part as "the struggle between the profane and the sacred." The conductor stands in a silhouette that suggests the same pose that the upcoming Satan takes.
102 min. A high dark mountain with a castle looms in front of the viewer. A winged fiercesome Satan figure raises his wings. His wings are sectioned like fingers with claws, and will form the imagery of the demon Malebrinche, whose satanic claws hang over the alters and terrorize them. In the *Illustrated Guidebook*, the reader will find lots of these claws in the pictures lurking in the background. A child victim will be taught to fear the hands of the programmer, Satan and Malebrinche. The wings (hands with claws) open. And Satan is portrayed as an awe-inspiring figure. (By the way, the word maleficia means evil misfortune caused by witches. The witch in Disney's Sleeping Beauty has the demonic name of Maleficent.)
102.5 min. Satan begins raising the dead skeletons. This provides a foundation to layer in the Valley of the Dry bones coming alive with armies of skeletons.
104 min. The film also has some images at this point that will help with the foundation for the Armageddon programming. Satan calls everything to himself.

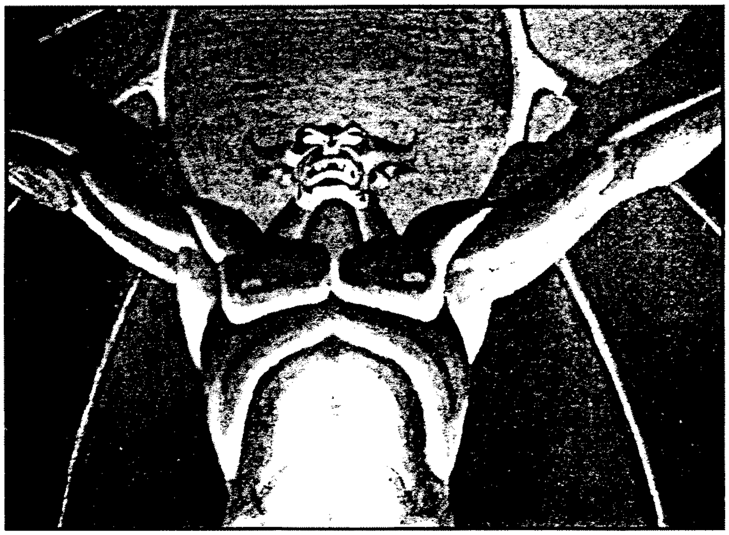

Fantasia portrays Satan as a terrible powerful being.

104.5 min. The hell pit is shown. This is laying a foundation for the hell pit with all its demons. All kinds of vivid colors are shown in hell, to make the scene more real than real for the child victim. Satan smiles as demons burn in hell. "NO MATTER WHAT COLOR YOU ARE, IF YOU ARE NOT GOOD YOU'LL END UP THERE."
105 min. "THAT'S WHAT HAPPENS IF YOU'RE BAD. YOUR THROWN INTO THE HELL PIT."
105.5 min. Three beautiful lady demons begin to dance in a circle, all of a sudden these demons take on their luciferian form, one becomes a goat.
106 min. The demons continue to dance with powerful Satan watching over them. The hell pit and the demons are portrayed in vivid scary graphic depictions. The hellish fire and the ghoulish dancing of its occupants continues for what seems a long time. "WHEN GOD FINDS OUT HOW BAD YOU ARE, LOOK

AT WHAT HE'LL DO TO YOU."

107 min. Satan is portrayed by Disney in all his evil dark majesty.

107.5 min. Bells begin to ring, and the demons slink away, & the dead return to the earth to their graveyards.

108 min. Ghosts return to the graves. Soft music begins to play. Ave Maria by Schubert, which was written for the Catholic church, begins playing.

109 min. Satan folds himself into a mountain. "DO YOU SEE LUCIFER ANYWHERE? NO. YOU ONLY SEE A MOUNTAIN."

110 min. Lights shine as if they are a column of moving people who are walking with lights, and then some walls appear.

110.5 min. An arched bridge appears with its mirror image. The column of silhouetted people who continue walking have mirror images in the river. The asst. programmer will be telling the system (which the front parts will hear) "TIME FOR ALL THE GOOD CHILDREN TO GO TO CHURCH. IT'S O.K. TO GO TO CHURCH. GO SERVE GOD."

113. min. An opening, a vertical sliver of light comes from what appears to be doors opening up. There is a mirror effect in the way the doors open, which will facilitate making mirror image front worlds. A whole new world opens up, which will be the front system's world. Both the front alters and the deeper ones will be told to forget the movie. Later when a system is better programmed, the programmers will pull up the front alters and have them walk through these doors into the light. When they are hypnotically taken through these doors into the light and away from the fear and darkness of the Kingdom of Satan, they are hypnotically told to close those doors and never look back.

The Kingdom of Satan has been shown in detail and in great length. The Kingdom of Satan has been shown as powerful and fearful. Satan is shown as a mighty power that is to be feared. The Kingdom of Light is only shown as a peace, as a refuge from evil. It is not shown to be good. It is not shown to have power or intelligence. It is simply a place to go to escape the fear of Satan's power. This is all the programmers really want the church to be. It will be a stabilizing balance to let the mind recuperate from the hell of the programming, but it is not intended to be seen as greater than Satan and his Kingdom.

115 min. The film ends with a peaceful gaze at heaven. The child is being told in the last few minutes "THAT WORLD BELONGS TO YOU. IT'S A BEAUTIFUL WORLD. IT'S THE WORLD WE WANT YOU TO LIVE IN. IT'S BEAUTIFUL." After all the hell that is eventually dumped on the child, and the scare that Satan gives them in this Fantasia film, the child is only too happy to create a beautiful world to live in.

****

The effectiveness of Disney's Fantasia is that it is used to communicate to & build the unconscious structures within the child's mind. The unconscious mind is the seat of our creative abilities. Then the conscious mind makes adaptations upon this unconscious thinking.

SUMMARY

Now that the reader has covered so much, the following quotes (with bold emphasis's added) take on even deeper meaning:

Joe Flower in *Prince of the Magic Kingdom*, " Walt Disney was obsessed with creation, driven to build magical worlds not, as many artists are, out of paint and canvas, or words, or even film, but physically, out of concrete, wires, smoke, electricity, **and highly programmed employees.**" (p. 23)

Julian Halevy in *Nation* decries Disney taking this nation into a "drift to fantasy." He adds, "**...one feels our whole culture heading up the dark river to the source--that heart of darkness where Mr. Disney traffics in pastel trinketed evil** for gold and ivory."

For those who understand programming Aubrey Menen comments about Disney's success are profoundly appropriate, "the strongest desire an artist knows...**to create a world of his own where everything is just as he imagines it**." John Ciardi was not so nice, he termed Walt Disney as "the shyster in the backroom of illusion."

Eliot said, "While his filmed fairy tales may have appeared **at first glance to be light and dreamlike, upon closer examination they seemed more nightmares of deconstructed reality** in league with the era's leading neo-Freudian Modernists."

- You have now finished reading a never-before-heard, unprecedented Warning about the Dark Reality of the Disney's Magic Kingdom, and how it fits in with Mind-Control.

Most Americans when surveyed say they believe in God, most go to church, and many believe they are born-again. Because of the Illuminati's deception campaign over several generations, the American public, and the world in general has been led to believe that Disney was good, and that Walt Disney was a good man. Because of his image, people suspended judgement about Disney and Disney movies. They entrusted their children to him. People had been manipulated into a frame of mind, a predisposition that whatever comes out of Disney is good. They entrusted their children to take in what Disney fed their children's little minds week after week. The public's predisposition of trust was used to introduce Illuminati belief's and their political agenda, and to carry out a vast program of trauma-based mind-control on hundreds of thousands of tiny little children, whose minds and souls were stolen from them.

Because many of the child slaves, who are programmed with Disney-themes, are programmed with roles in bringing in the Anti-Christ, Walt Disney and his family have played a major role for the Anti-Christ. And now you can see how accurate the Word of God is when it says, What is highly esteemed among men, is an abomination to God.

First, there will be an Overview of the types of sources used, and then will follow a partial Bibliography on this Disney Section.

TYPES OF SOURCES

People who have worked for Disney and who are getting pensions and medical insurance have talked about Disney under the condition of anonymity. This is because the Disney hierarchy will not permit exposure without retaliation. Several non-Disney people who helped with discovering facts for this section were threatened that their children lives would be taken if they continued to investigate Disney. What I (Fritz Springmeier) finally have put in this, is solely my responsibility.

- One type of source for this was books on the Hollywood Film Industry and books on Disney Films. There were about 20 books of this category which were perused for a better understanding of who the Disney brothers were and what Disney Co. was about. One of the best in this type of source was *The Art of Walt Disney from Mickey Mouse to the Magic Kingdom* by Christopher Finch (NY: Harry N. Abrams, Inc., 1975.)
- Another type of source were the standard biographical reference books, such as *Who's Who*, *Who's Who in the West* (1951), *World Biography*, *Who Was Who*, *Current Biography 1952*, etc.
- Another type of source was critics of Disney's movies such as several articles exposing the Lion King, *Media Spotlight*'s article Fantasia, Rush Limbaugh's comments and statements concerning how Disney had betrayed its viewers' trust, the *Spotlight*'s Feb. 26, '96 p. 31 article "Disney Turns Back on Family Values."
- Another type of source was magazine and newspaper articles about Disney such as the Oregonian's art. on a Disney director being a convicted child molester. *NY Times*, *Newsweek* and other magazine and newspaper sources. An important series of extremely good investigative reports which were written by Harry V. Martin for the *Napa Sentinel* in 1989 were very important in learning of some of the Illuminati/CIA/Contra/Drug Running activities in Napa Valley, CA that Roy Disney is associated with. Harry V. Martin went into all kinds of records and did an excellent job of investigative reporting. The magazine *Monde 2000*, no.12, had an article on non-lethal weapons that the NWO is developing. This article was reprinted in *Encounter Chronicles Journal of Scientific Intelligence*, and discussed how Disney has been working with Sandia Labs and Los Alamos.
- Another type of source were victims of Illuminati mind-control, who have recovered memories of being programmed at Disneyland and Disneyworld.
- Another type of source has been to watch Disney movies as an investigative tool to understand how Disney is programming, how they are skillfully indoctrinating the American people into witchcraft, etc. This author has also personally been to both Disneyland, near Anaheim, CA and Disneyworld, near Orlando, FL.
- Another source was the Walt Disney Co.'s Annual Reports, and also the reference book *Directory of Corporate Affiliations* (1986) published by the National Register Pub. Co.
- Another type of source were books which specialized in covering details about Disneyland such as *Disneyland And Beyond the Ultimate Family Guidebook* (edited by Ray Riegert, and printed by Ulysses Press of Berkeley, CA); and *Walt Disney's Disneyland* (by Martin A. Sklar and introduced by Walt Disney.) AAA had a 27 page booklet "*Disneyland Park and Southern California*", which came out in 1996, which provides information on what is being offered at Disneyland and vicinity. The book refers repeatedly to

"Disney Magic". One has to wonder how Christians and non-occultic persons can't see how occult Disney is.

Partial BIBLIOGRAPHY

BOOKS.

AAA. *Disneyland Park and Southern California*. 1996.

the Walt Disney Co.'s *Annual Reports*. pub. by the Walt Disney Co. annually.

Auletta, Ken. *Three Blind Mice*. NY: Random House, 1991.

Cluran, Richard M. *To the End of Time*. Rockefeller Ctr, NY, NY: Simon & Schuster.

Commander M. *The Controllers: A New Hypothesis of Alien Abductions*. (subtitle Alien Abductions, or Government Secret Mind Control Black R&D Programs). 88 pages long. 1990.

Current Biography 1952

Directory of Corporate Affiliations (1986) published by the National Register Pub. Co.

Eliot, Marc. *Walt Disney Hollywood's Dark Prince*. NY, NY: Harper Paperbacks, 1993.

Finch, Christopher. *The Art of Walt Disney from Mickey Mouse to the Magic Kingdom*. NY: Harry N. Abrams, Inc., 1975.

Hagstrom, Robert G. Jr. *The Warren Buffett Way*. NY: John Wiley & Sons.

Hulteng, John L. *The Messenger's Motives, Ethical Problems of the News Media*. Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice-Hall, Inc., 1976.

Jackson, Kathy Merlock. *Walt Disney, A Bio-Bibliography*. Westport, CN: Greenwood Press.

Landis, Bill. *Anger, The Unauthorized Biography of Kenneth Anger*. NY: HarperCollins Pub., 1995.

Moldea, Dan E. *Dark Victory, Ronald Reagon, MCA and the Mob*. NY, NY: Viking, 1986.

Mosley, Leonard. *Disney's World*. Stein & Day: NY, 1985.

Neelands, Barbara. *About Ben Sharpsteen*. Second Impressions, No. 1 A Sharpsteen Museum Reprints Project, Calistoga, CA: Sharpsteen Museum, July, 1990.

Riegert, Ray, ed. *Disneyland And Beyond the Ultimate Family Guidebook*. Berkeley, CA: Ulysses Press of Berkeley, CA.

Schickel, Richard. *The Disney Version*. NY: Simon & Schuster, 1968.

Siu, R.G.H. *The Craft of Power*. NY, NY: Quill, William Morrow & Co.

Sklar, Martin A. (with intro by Walt Disney) *Walt Disney's Disneyland*. Walt Disney Prod., 1969.

Smoodin, Eric. *Disney Discourse Producing the Magic Kingdom*. Routledge: NY, 1994.

Stein, Jeff, ed. *The Basic Everyday Encyclopedia*. NY, NY: Random House, 1954.

Sterling, Claire. *Thieves World -The Threat of the New Global Network of Organized Crime*. NY: Simon & Schuster, 1994.

Taylor, John. *Storming the Magic Kingdom*. NY: Alfred A. Knopf, 1987.

Thomas, Bob. *Walt Disney An American Original*. Hyperion (Disney): CA, 1994.

Wallechinsky, David and Irving Wallace and Amy Wallace. *The Book of Lists*. 666 5th Ave., NY, NY: Bantam Books, 1978.

Wallechinsky, David and Irving Wallace. *The People's Almanac*. Garden City, NY: Doubleday and Co., 1975.

Who's Who, Who's Who in the West (1951),

Who Was Who

World Biography

PERIODICAL SOURCES

Carson, L. Pierce, Who's Who in the Napa Valley, *Appellation*, Oct./Nov. '95

George Magazine, "Here Comes the Son", Dec. Vol. 1, No. 10.

House & Garden, "Sticks and Stones, Mickey for Mayor?", Oct. 1, 1996, pp. 61-68ff.

Martin, Harry V. *Napa Sentinel*. A series of articles in 1989 were very important in learning of some of the Illuminati/CIA/Contra/Drug Running activities in Napa Valley, CA that Roy Disney is associated with. Harry V. Martin went into all kinds of records and did an excellent job of investigative reporting.

Monde 2000, no.12, had an article on non-lethal weapons that the NWO is developing. This article was reprinted in *Encounter Chronicles Journal of Scientific Intelligence*, and discussed how Disney has been working with Sandia Labs and Los Alamos.

Media Spotlight's article Fantasia,

Mother Jones, May-Ju', 97, p. 61.

NAPA VALLEY REGISTER, the following articles are samples of what was used:
"ABC Will Mount An Anti-Drug Campaign" Friday, Jan. 10, 1997, p.1D
"Children's Books Get Red Carpet Treatment In Hollywood Films" May 16, 1996, p. 5C
"Disney and McDonalds" May 24, 1996
"Disney Buys ABC", Saturday, Aug. 19, 1995, D.
"Disney Earnings Up 28 Percent In Third Quarter", Friday, July 26, 1996, p. 8C
"Disneyland Expansion Given OK" Wednesday, Oct. 9, 1996, p.D
"Disney Links to McDonald's May Be Back. Thursday, Apr. 11, 1996, 7A
"Disney World Makes Sure World, Remember the Magic" (by L. Pierce Carson), Sun., Oct. 20, '96
"Federal Employees Get Disney Tour" Saturday, Dec. 9, 1995, p. 5A
"It's Lights-Out For Main Street" May 14, 1996.
"An Overlooked, Different World Inside Theme Park" Sunday, Sept. 29, 1996, p. 5C
"Mickey Going On The Road", Friday, 7/26/96, p. 8C
"Past and Future In Disney Community", Friday, Oct. 4, 1996, p. 1D
"Planned Parenthood Benefit On Sunday"--Events of Interest sect. on p. A2, Sept. 13, '96
"Pentagon Still Wastes Money", Mon., 4/15/96, p. 4B

Newsweek
"Power Failure" 12/23/96, p. 34-36; "Sending an SOS at ABC", 5/12/97, p. 54-55

NY TIMES (the following are samples of what was used: Articles during the '50's & '60's were looked at.
"Disney Offers Faux Memories of Atlantic City Boardwalk" by Joe Sharkey, Tuesday, Dec. 10, 1996
"Baptists Censure Disney On Gay-Spouse Benefits" Thurs. June 13, 1996, p. A10
"Disney to acquire 2 radio stations", 4/15/97, p. C4.

The PRESS DEMOCRAT (the following are example of what was used:)
"Baptists, Disney Paths Diverge" Saturday, June 29, 1996, p. D4
"Disney To Buy Stake In Web Company" 2/15/97, p. E6
"Heavy Disney" Sunday, Oct. 20, 1996
"The Ins and Outs of Allen" by Frederic M. Biddle and Renee Graham, On Q, Sept. 29, 1996, p. 27

SAN FRANCISCO CHRONICLE (the following are examples of what was used:)
"Disney, Miramax Bond", May 10, 1996
"Disney Signs Asian Animator"
"Miramax Plans To Make 'Thoughtful' Films", 4/11/96

SAN FRANCISCO EXAMINER (the following are examples of what was used:)
"Disney Institute Is A Short Course In Creativity" by Catherine Watson, Sunday, May 26, 1996, p. T9
"Mouse Matriculation Is A Great Experience" by Catherine Watson, Sunday, May 26, 1996, p. T9
"Tomorrowland Jumps Into The Future", Sunday, July 14, 1996, p. T3

the *Spotlight*'s Feb. 26, '96 p. 31 article "Disney Turns Back on Family Values."

Time Magazine, "Job Hunting With Mike [Ovitz]" 2/24/97, p. 50; "Hilton Has Room For ITT" 2/10/97,

Wall St. Journal (many issues from several decades.)
SOME OF OTHER SOURCES (used & not used).
● Various Disney brochures.//● Rush Limbaugh's comments concerning how Disney had betrayed its viewers' trust.//● Interviews w/ Napa Valley residents.
● Interviews with disgruntled insiders to the NWO.
● Interviews with various types of Disney victims. [Disney has used mafia-type tactics, i.e. death threats, to intimidate numerous people into selling their property. Roy E. Disney has been reported involved in these land thefts. Victims of this type of intimidation are in many states, but several prominent regions are Napa Valley, CA; Shenandoah Valley; Virginia, & FL. Disney's land-grabbing operations could be a book in itself. **This author has lots more research which I HAVE NO PLANS to reveal**, which has been left w/ key others, such as the connections of VaVin, near Leon,VA, who produce Prince Michel de Virginia, whose chef & others connect to Belgium. The background of several key people, like Robert Podesta. Financial records, such as Fed. Judge Fern M. Smith (Burrows). ETC. This para. is not indexed.]

Electronics

Note: This is the first page of several secret pages that an IBM employee leaked about the IBM 2020 Neural Chip implant. The cover story was that a priest visiting a prison leaked the story. On the one hand people concerned with the project have been killed to keep them quiet. On the other hand, this document has a glaring error--the zip code for Armonk, NY is 10504--not 11204. 11204 is Dahill Rd nos. 110 to 1600 in Brooklin, NY. The MJ-12 documents which were leaked years ago, also had a similar type error. One tactic that is done by Illuminati groups, and this may be the case here, is to leak legitimate documents with address errors, and then after waiting a period of time for conspiracy buffs to parade around with the tampered documents, they expose the error. Patriot groups and militias have been passing out this document as proof, and putting it on the internet.

--Fritz

CONFIDENTIAL

INTELLI-CONNECTION
A Security Division of IBM
1200 Progress Way
Armonk, New York 11204

LIMITED DISTRIBUTION ONLY
LEVEL 9 COMMUNICATION

2020 NEURAL CHIP IMPLANT

The control of crime will be a paramount concern in the 21st Century. We must be ready with our security products when the demand for them becomes popular. Our Research and Development Division has been in contact with the Federal Bureau of Prisons, the California Department of Corrections, the Texas Department of Public Safety, and the Massachusetts Department of Correction to run limited trials of the 2020 neural chip implant. We have established representatives of our interests in both management and institutional level positions within these departments.

Federal regulations do not yet permit testing of implants on prisoners, but we have entered into contractual agreements with privatized health care professionals and specified correctional personnel to do limited testing of our products. We have also had major successes in privately owned sanitariums with implant technology. We need, however, to expand our testing to research how effective the 2020 neural chip implant performs in those identified as the most aggressive in our society. Limited testing has produced a number of results.

In California, several prisoners were identified as members of the security threat group, EME, or Mexican Mafia. They were brought to the health services unit at Pelican Bay and tranquilized with advanced sedatives developed by our Cambridge, Massachusetts laboratories. The implant procedure takes 60-90 minutes depending upon the experience of the technician. We are working on a device which will reduce that time by as much as 60%. The results of implants on 8 prisoners yielded the following results:

- Implants served as surveillance monitoring device for threat group activity
- Implants disabled two subjects during an assault on correctional staff
- Universal side effects in all 8 test subjects revealed that when implant was set to 116 MHz all subjects became lethargic and slept on an average of 18-22 hours per day
- All subjects refused recreation periods for 14 days during the 116 MHz test evaluation
- 7 of the 8 subjects did not exercise, in the cell or out of the cell and 5 of the 8 subjects refused showers up to three days at a time
- Each subject was monitored for aggressive activity during the test period and the findings are conclusive that 7 out of the 8 test subjects exhibited no aggression, even when provoked

(continuing)

CHAPTER 6
SCIENCE NO. 6- THE USE OF ELECTRONICS & ELECTRICITY

Developments in fiberoptics, computers, electronic communications, nano-technology, bio-chips & neuro-electrical research have combined to bring mankind to the point where mankind can be controlled by one centralized monolithic Beast computer. The ultimate mind-controlled slavery is now possible. We are in the first stages of its implementation.

The chapter will be organized in the following sections & subsections:

Section A. An overview of the subject.
- A1. Where this article is headed
- A2. Where the NWO is headed

Section B. An intro to implants
- B1. Three typical implant victims
- B2. Documentation of implants
- B3. GWEN Towers
- B4. Body suits

Section C. Specific Implants
- C1. Audio implants (a. public. b. secret)
- C2. Body manipulation implants
- C3. Visual holographic implants
- C4. Memex/Brain Link implants
- C5. Torture/Nerve & Muscle Stimulation Implants
- C6. Tracking & I.D. Implants.

Section D. Direct monitoring & manipulation of the brain/mind
- D1. Direct monitoring
- D2. Direct manipulation

Section E. Auxillary uses of electronics & electromagnetic waves.
- E1. hypnotic induction
- E2. polygraphs
- E3. attacks against people & objects
- E4. virtual reality

A1. Where this article is headed

This chapter is designed to cover the complexities of hi-tech mind-control in simple-to-understand language. To accommodate those who are more technically literate and who want more, some clues to more technical sources are given, but time & space limitations mean that much has gone unsaid. My deep thanks to the many victims, who placed their trust in me to get their stories out to the world. I hope that I have vindicated their trust.

There are a number of disinformation agents that appear to be putting out good information on implants, but are actually disinformation agents. We can error by undershooting or overshooting the truth. The principle topics that these pretend "whistle blowers" have been discussing are the tracking implants and remote viewing. (For RV info, see Theta Programming material in Vol. 2.) Neither topic is any revelation, nor are they the most dangerous items in the elite's electronic mind-control arsenal. If the reader has not skipped chapter 5 on disinformation, then he will be aware how factual information can be used in disception, such as in chicken feed & building bona fides. Why is it that the TV program "The Real X-Files" shown on channel 4 was created by a CIA operative, Jim Schnabel? And why are all the "private" Remote Viewing organizations run by what appear to be entirely all intelligence operatives (such as Ed Dames, et. al.)? And why do we see mind-control specialists, like "ex"-Intelligence officer C.B. Scott Jones who gets involved with several UFO research organizations & disseminating disinformation?

One "researcher", who is publicly "exposing" the NWO, tried to convince this author, "The government has no secrets." (A word-for-word quote by the way.) He needs to read a supplement to the *National Industry Security Program manual* (Mar. 92 release) where the Air Force teaches their DoD contractors how to construct cover stories to lie about the nature of their work for the government.

I will not take cheap shots at the World Order, & I will not intentionally mislead the reader. You will get the whole truth and nothing but the truth, as well a single chapter can present it. *Vol. 2*'s chapter 6 which was on this same subject was not the final word and neither is this chapter.

Before I start passing on lots of information, I should clarify one point. Human brain cells communicate by superconductivity, not electricity. Electricity travels near the speed of light, while superconductivity is in the range of the speed of sound. Government researchers have a device called a SQUID (Superconducting Quantum Interference Device) which actually monitors the light flowing from brain cell to brain cell. This is why over 5% of the brain's dry matter weight is iridium and rhodium. However, this does not subtract from the fact that electromagnetic waves have the ability to change what the brain experiences and thinks.

I must also provide a small glossary for electronic mind-control terms that most people are not familiar with.

GLOSSARY OF TERMS FOR
understanding
ELECTRONIC MIND CONTROL

Bio-medical telemetry--Transmitter-receivers that are often located at the base of the skull which record body functions & brain wave activity. Their data is sent to remote computers for monitoring. A bio-medical telemetry implant may also function as the primary control implant on body suits of implants. Early versions were used on astronauts.

EMF weapons--Electromagnetic Frequency weapons. These basically are machines that can modulate and beam electromagnetic waves in such a fashion that they control biological/mental functions within the victim. Portals to the central nervous system can be manipulated to create visual images, project voices into the mind, and create pain, moods and emotions.

Psychotronics--This word was originated from Soviet research. The American public have mistakingly thought that the word is equivalent to psychic activity. A more precise translation of the Russian term would have been "applied psychoenergetics". American psychotronics research was initially done at Stanford Research Institute. This is the Theta Programming that *Vol. 2* described.

Remote Viewing (**RV** for short)--This means psychic viewing of something.

Syntel--This is short for synthetic telepathy, which is the remote sending of voices and thoughts into a victim of electronic mind-control. The military and intelligence agencies have successfully achieved this capability and have carried out countless meetings over their possible uses of syntel.

A2. Where the NWO is headed

Since 1991, this author has been in contact with various victims of implants. The natural first reaction of many initial listeners would be skepticism to the subject. The psychological profession has had articles in their professional journals ridiculing these poor victims. If a fair-minded person will match the experiences of what one can witness happening to these implant victims (as well as their evidence) to the cutting edge of what science is researching and capable of doing, then there is no doubt that implants are being used on an ever increasing mass scale.

The World Order is using amplifiers, generators, electronics, listening devices, non-ionizing electromagnetic radiation, a snapping type sound energy that hits and burns the body, closed-circuit videos to monitor implant victims, nanotechnology, and tracking devices that scanners (incl. mobile hand-held scanners) can pick up-- JUST to name **a few**. This chapter will provide an indepth overview of many of these electronic mind-control gadgets.

Unfortunately, the twilight zone of Big Brother is upon us. People (such as limosine drivers) that have been around the movers and shakers report that they brag about these technological controls.

The technology described in this chapter, such as nanobots, and holographic implants are in the "R&D stage" of use. What is meant by "R&D stage" means that the World Order is using a large variety of experimental items, but the reader should be forewarned that this **does not mean** that these items are any indication of where the World Order's actual **secret R&D** is at. This author has worked with enough mind-control victims to have established several facts:

- Society is getting only the crumbs of what is known by the World Order's hierarchy.
- The World Order is releasing technology at a control rate, much of it through mind-controlled slaves who are programmed to "discover" a particular "discovery". They are in reality only disclosing what has been known in secret, and their discoveries are actually helping cover up where the World Order's secret research is at.

However, it's not difficult to see the direction the World Order is headed. They are working at making virtual reality (aka cyperspace) the "in" thing. They are fusing the human mind to computers. Computers/robots are taking over human jobs, and humans are becoming more like computers/robots. Sci-fi gurus, cyberpunks, and establishment scientists are selling and advertising this technological direction as "freedom", and the crowds of sheep are accepting things like brain implants as "survival equipment" and "freedom". The "cool" technological pied pipers of our time are teaching our children that gadgets that remove their minds from reality are giving them new freedoms. But this chapter is written because there are still a few people with the neural-receptors and the computing capacity left in their craniums to comprehend the dangers that these mind-controlling devices have for humanity.

Witnesses have told me that the creation of "robocop" type cybergs (the fusion of man & other equipment) has already been experimented on in secret. Indeed, the government gave out research contracts for cyberg research back in the 1960's.

And the use of electro-magnetic waves (esp. Tesla waves), implants, and other electronic devices by the Illuminati for mind-control is on the increase. **How much of a genuine threat do these things pose humanity?** [I'll spell it out for the reader, but we must remain calm, a fear-based response only makes things worse.]

Yes, it is true that the NSA can remotely track people if they know the specific EMF waves (evoked potentials from EEGs in the 30-50 Hz, 5 milliwatt range) of a person's bioelectric field. Each person's emissions are unique, just like their fingerprint, palmprint, and their voiceprint. This means that the NSA can remotely track **anyone** in public.

And yes, it is true that the NSA's RNM system can remotely send EMF Brain stimulation signals which create visual images, subliminal audios, what appear to be audible sounds, and thoughts into people's minds.

Yes, it is true that body suits of implants are used to control people's minds and bodies, as well as track them.

Yes, it is true they have voice prints of hundreds of thousands of Americans and can identify & track via their computers all electronic communications in this nation. Most phone calls go through about 30 computers before they reach their destination. The phone companies' computers, according to someone who worked for AT&T and witnessed it, record ALL phone calls using computers. However, to weed out the worthless from the worthwhile, the Illuminati's fronts use a list of key words, such as names or phrases called THE WATCH LIST which the computer uses to identify conversations worthwhile to listen to.

Even though the NSA uses

supercomputers, it is monitoring **most communication** on the entire planet so they have to squeeze the WATCH LIST as tight as possible. According to Bamford, James. The Puzzle Palace. NY: The Puzzle Palace, 1983, p. 459, "...according to Raven, programmers would simply reduce Malcolm X to the last two letters in his first name (lm) followed by a space and then the letter X. Then any time an intercepted data communications containing that particular combination of letters and spacing (lm X) streamed past the computer's reading head, it would automatically be kicked out for further analysis. Part of the reason that the computers are swamped with Watch list submissions is that many items require numerous entries. When searching for derogatory references to President Richard M. Nixon, for example, technicians would have to program a variety of possible key words, such as "Tricky Dicky". This, according to the former G Group Chief would be converted to 'ky---ky'."

The new technology which is being implemented in stages includes computer imaging of a person which makes a "whole body map" of the person's body which is stored in the computer.

Something that has been only developed for a narrow use by the NWO is the downloading of the holographic image of a person's thoughts so they can be transmitted to another. (See Appendix 3 on cloning for more on this.) The majority of the few people who know this is going on wouldn't waste time reporting it, because the public wouldn't believe it anyway. However, some prominent scientists are predicting that it is just around the corner. The three top research institutes in this field, Stanford Research Institute, MIT, and the Carnegie-Mellon Univ. all have people saying that this capability is "almost here". Austrian born Hans Moravec, dir. of the Robotics Inst. at Carnegie Mellon Univ., is quoted in *The Indianapolis Star*, 6/14/**1987**, in an article entitled "Immortality", "In an astonishingly short amount of time, scientists will be able to transfer the contents of a person's mind into a powerful computer, and in the process, make him--or at least his living essence--virtually immortal." MIT artificial intelligence researcher Gerald J. Sussman states, "I'm afraid, unfortunately that I'm the last generation to die. Some of my students may manage to survive a little longer."

But as fantastic as all these powerful capabilities sound, there are gliches in their electronic control of humans.

As an outsider looking inside for a number of years, this author has been able to take note of some of the success and failures of the New World Order's electronic mind-control. First, the NSA picks up so much intelligence information, they are drowning in their own information. Only so many people can make decisions, and they can only digest so much information. They may try to manipulate people and events, but Christians (who are free of the mind-control) can step through those manipulations by having the mind of Christ. Next, if a person understands who they are & believes in following Christ, outside visions & outside or strange voices or thoughts do not alter the course that a person will take. Most of the people this author has met who have been subjected to remote electronic control over their mind--HAVE REJECTED the instructions & harassment of their electronic handlers. Not only is it clear that the voices are being transmitted from an external source to the victim, others can also detect that something is amiss. The element of secrecy is missing.

One man spent an afternoon talking to this author about the World Order had tried to electronically control his mind, and turn him into a drug pusher. He had sucessfully foiled them for several years. Although he has had to flee & try to go into hiding to keep his own mind.

The most powerful mind-control is still trauma-based mind control built on a foundation of multiple personalities (dissociated personalities and dissociated parts of the mind). It appears that electronic mind-control is being overlaid on top the mind-control based on dissociation. When this is done, the electronic mind-control is frightening, because the victim's consciousness is not able to think passed the electronic mind-control which catches their undivided attention. They are too distracted to deal with the deeper issues of trauma-based mind-control.

Imagine being a programmed multiple, and your handler doesn't have to even be near you to relay complicated codes and instructions. He can use your implant.

But again, how serious is electronic mind-control?

Let me relate to you about a guided tour that a civilian friend of mine took through a NWO's major beast computer center in Alaska back in the 1970's. The engineer, who was in charge of building and getting the center operational, gave him a tour of the site's capabilities. At that point, the NWO had built a massive computer center in Alaska, one in So. Africa (believed to be located at the U.S. embassy in Johannisberg), and one in Pine Gap, Australia. These three sites were very specific, because they formed a triangle on the globe, and couldn't be located anywhere else, due to the naturally occuring lines of force of the planet. These Beast Computer Centers consist of aisles and aisles of big state of the art computers. They each have several dozen people to run them. Even in the '70's, an operator could speak into the computer and it would answer. For instance, if you asked the computer about anyone on the planet, it could usually pull up all kinds of information about that person. If you asked the computer how could you get that person to kill someone? or how can I isolate this person? The computer would spill out a plan almost instantly, telling you all the people around that subject who could be manipulated and in what fashion those people need to be manipulated to cause the end result. This is the end result of years of "BLACK PSYCHIATRY"--which means applying psychiatric techniques to manipulate people and nations. These computers electronically connect to some of those people who are electronically controlled, so that the controllers can actually control the world from a computer. These computers also store vast amounts of personal information about people's thought processes and thinking. It is possible that electronic surveillance is being done to read the thoughts of people and that the computers are actually able to store this information in some usable fashion. Because this is so secret, they can't give any hints of their vast ability to monitor thoughts, as well as organize and store those thoughts. This sounds like science fiction, but from people who invent & work at state of the art technology, this is actually said to be **old technology**. They are limited in how they use this technology because they want it to remain secret.

Meanwhile on the surface, the public system has automated fingerprint identification with the AFIS system, and has automated birth certificates electronically too. This all ties in with the intense desire of the World System to use the potential of their computers' memories.

Large Neural computers that have artificial intelligence using neural processing which is a type of learning similar to learning done by the human brain are being used. Recently, the world champion chess player was beat by a computer.

This author's friend, who toured the Alaskan computer center, was shown how a war could be created between any two nations. The operator merely asked the computer what it knew about a certain country and then ask it how could a war be created with a neighboring country. This is the end result of countless studies such as the U.S. military reference book *Basic Psychological Operations Study* (*BPS*) which outlines country by country, specifying where each country is vulnerable for PSYOP operations (psychological warfare).

This kind of thing has a long history. For instance in W.W. II, the Office of War Information and the OSS cooperated in psychological warfare projects.

What this author's friend saw was a network of Cray-type computers, perhaps similar to the EMASS system of Cray computers that E-Systems developed. Such a system can store 5 trillion pages of text and work with that data base with lightening speed.

The reason this author's friend was allowed to see this technology, was that he happened to be at the right place at the right time, and the Engineer operator of the Beast Computer said that this system was obsolete. Which is true, today's 9 Beast computers are much better at speech than the computers at these three control sites were in '73. The Beast computers can (according to another eye witness who used it) hear human voices and determine what language is being spoken and then can listen and answer in that language. These computers link directly to thousands of mind-controlled slaves and can-- via various methods-- almost instantly control the behavior of numerous people. This, along with good old fashioned phone calls, allows the elite to manipulate events very fast.

Anchorage is the site of a National Security Agency NSA listening post(LP). The Beast computer was located northeast of Anchorage, and so is the HAARP project. The HAARP facility is near Gakona, a hamlet about 140 miles north of Prince William Sound and its signals travel on a field line to Australia. The Beast Computer is also linked to Australia as well as satellite systems.

The HAARP site took a 4-wheeled truck to reach, and the Beast Computer site in 1973 was even more remote. The University of Alaska Fairbanks (which has its own super computer) and the Alaskan Poker Flat Rocket Range also were involved with the HAARP project. 30% of the U of A's supercomputer's use was for DoD projects. HAARP uses 3 powerful transmitter sites in Alaska.

Somewhat on the flip side, the human brain which they control can, IF it has a memex implant, interface with the Beast computer which acts as a vast repository of human knowledge as well as answering questions to essentially all previously answered questions instantaneously. If the human brain has some type of virtual reality holodeck attachment, the computer can even walk the slave through a realistic setting indistinguishable from the real world. Robocop or robo-soldier has an incredible advantage with such extended memex/remote viewing capabilities. The World Order has experimented in memex/remote viewing along several divergent paths. One method has been psychic (demonic) method, where the "natural" mental facilities of the human are trained. The other route has been high-tech. According to eye-witnesses both methods have yielded positive results, although it sounds like they are still refining their capabilities.

The word telematics has come into use to denote the interconnection between computers and telecommunications. France has a National Telecommunications Research Center, which works with groups such as CII-Honeywell Bull (Jean-Pierre Brule, Pres., & Emmanuel de Robien, Sec.-Gen.). CII-Honeywell Bull did telematics and implant research, and so has IBM France. IBM's subsidiary SBS developed satellite-based communications. In Britain, their National Physical Laboratory NPL has been active in telecommunications research. Professional computer groups have umbrella groups such as the British Computer Society, which help determine policies. In the U.S. the National Center for Supercomputer applications works on virtual reality interface with humans. Meanwhile SCAN (Swinburne Centre for Applied Neurosciences, Hawthorn, Australia 3122) has been working on how to monitor human thoughts. These are just a few of a vast network of research groups applying their efforts to the types of things you will read about in this chapter.

Around 1973, TRW began designining

a satellite that would allow the CIA to communicate with its assets/agents in "denied areas". This was code-named Pyramider, and used frequency hopping. The signals can be hidden among random urban radio transmissions. (See Robert Lindsey, *The Falcon and the Snowman*. NY: Simon & Schuster, 1979, p. 218) Some people who are related (in some fashion) to the CIA have been receiving Syntel implants that are communicating to them using signals that frequency-hop. So the proof is in the pudding, the CIA used Pyramider to contact implant victims.

The World Order does not use every technological gadget they have in every situation. Use of secret weaponry is restricted so that the weaponry remains secret. This is one reason why victims of mind-control display such a wide variety of symptoms and control mechanisms.

But what is scary is that any bozo can already purchase on the public market a frightening array of electronic mind-control devices. Information Unlimited puts out a catalog that any bozo on the street can order from which advertises 200,000 volt stun guns, laser ray gun, compressed air guns (Air Tasers) that knock people down with probes that attach instantly to the human target and jam their nervous system with T-waves, laser listening devices to listen at long range via their windows, implants along with the tracking system to keep track of people, animals or objects. They also sell other novel devices.

While this author has that catalog that advertises for sale computer chips to implant people with, the psychiatric profession is helping cover-up Big Brother's implant technology. For instance the *Journal of Nervous and Mental Disease*, Sept. 1995, Vol. 183 (9), pp. 603-604, has a story about two males (aged 33 and 53 years old) who were labeled delusional because they complained of implants hidden in their fillings in their teeth. The article is entitled, "Delusional electronic dental inplants: Case reports and literature review." The shrinks concluded the two men were obviously mentally ill and needed treatment with drugs because they are claiming that they have electronic dental implants. The psychiatrists wrote, "neither had any insight into the implausibility of the delusion." The doctors gave antipsychotic drugs, and physically intervened to "prevent an inappropriate dental extraction." According to the article, for some unknown reason, the two men "responded poorly" to anti-psychotic drugs. It never occurs to the psychiatrists that the reason the anti-psychotic drugs didn't work is possibly because the men's complaints were legitimate. The two shrinks were E. Sherwood Brown and Michael T. Lambert.

There are other cases too, where people complaining of implants have been labelled "delusional" by psychiatrists. The Amer. Psychiatric Assoc. is guilty of refusing to seriously review evidence that harassment & mind-control may be impacting people mentally. DSM-IV reflects this continuing refusal to accord victims of electronic mind-control any official recognition by the therapeutic community.

Based on research by Drs. W. Fry & R. Meyers, the Network has learned how to make brain lesions of a minute controlled size with ultrasonics, rather than doing a lobotomy. In 1963, Dr. Peter Lindstrom at the Univ. of Pittsburgh was able to use a single unfocused sonic beam to destroy fiber tracts in the brain without damaging the nerve cells near them. Sonic beams (sound waves) can be used to control human thought. (We'll discuss sonic beams some more later, now let's delve into a key part of their electronic control--implants.)

SECTION B. AN INTRO TO IMPLANTS

B1. Three typical implant victims

Let's look at three victims who suffer from of mind-control implants & body-control implants, who are known by this author. We can refer to them as "Amy", Victim No. 1001..., "Betty", Victim No. 1002..., and "Cathy", Victim

No. 1003... --

"Amy" determined by using a spectrum analyzer that she had waves of 750 mhz targeted on her.

"Betty" determined that she had the entire spectrum of radio-microwaves hitting her in a Morse code pattern. The transceiver (transmitter/receiver) for the signals was a fiber optic receiver made to look like a pubic hair that repeatedly burned holes in her underwear. Apparently, this side effect is a "bug" they haven't gotten out of the technology.

"Cathy" has ELF & VLF waves of 435 & 1080 Mhz signals targeted on her.
When she's active both types of waves come, and when she remains still the 1080 signal fades. (435 is in the 400-450 Mhz band which is the window to the human consciousness, and 1080 is in the 1000 to 1200 Mhz band.) They are also using a Nitrogen particle beam, which produces "nitrogen narcosis" (like the bends) in targeted victims.

Xenon lamps can affect the mind and body, too. 435 Mhz is converted to 1080 by interaction with the high- atmosphere HAARP project. The 1100 (1000-1200) Mhz frequency can affect genetics. Implant RF frequencies have been damaging the eyes of implant victims. Although this gives us a starting point in our discussion, these are not the only frequencies that threaten mind-control victims. (See Section D1 for direct monitoring /manipulating frequencies.)

Author W.H. Bowart in his Vol.1, No. 1, pg. 1 *Freedom of Thought newsletter* quotes Brian Bard of Glendale, CA who wrote,

> "I failed to discuss the utilization of power in modern mind control implants. Like Delgrado's stimoceiver, no internal power source is necessary. The same electro-magnetic energy which is collected through induction by such relays produces an internal electrical charge of equal energy. Utilizing a capacitance circuitry design, the charge is stored as a mechanical distortion of the crystalline lattice and discharged as a focused pulse of electro-magnetic energy at a lower frequency. Higher frequency E-M has a higher energy state than lower frequency. Thus, the effective output of photons may be twice or thrice the potential of the relays.
>
> "A more advanced design in use utilizes 50 or more distinct channels for various functions. Not only the encrypted primary input signal utilized for signal output, but several channels are reserved for supplementary energy induction. With integrated switching, both passive and active surveillance of brainwave activity may be enhanced. Contrawise, signal output may be boosted and focused on specific neural pathways. The devices remain active, programmable signal relays with multiple selectable channels so long as electro-magnetic induction continues to occur."

Modern microchip implants will have 250,000 components.

Certain electrical freks will trigger certain neurochemicals. The frek 7.83, which is the elec. field resonating between the planet & its ionosphere, makes the subject feel in one with all creation. But it isn't quite that simple, because a 7.83 frek can be sent in numerous different wave shapes, such as the rolling sinusoidal pattern, jagged sawtooth waves, rectangular (flat on top, flat on bottom) waves, and they all have a different effect on the brain. (*Megabrain*, pp. 108-109) One can imagine the potential power an implant that could create the proper frequencies could have over an individual.

B2. Documentation of implants.

On the following pages, are the startling anechoic chamber results when two victims of **syntel implants** were examined. (Synthetic telepathy implants give thoughts & voices.) These two pages document that they were receiving signals, in fact, the anechoic chamber results helped to pin point what building those signals were coming from!

Title:
File: BARB-6.SET
EUT Type:
Operator:

Sequence: Preliminary Scan

Graph6

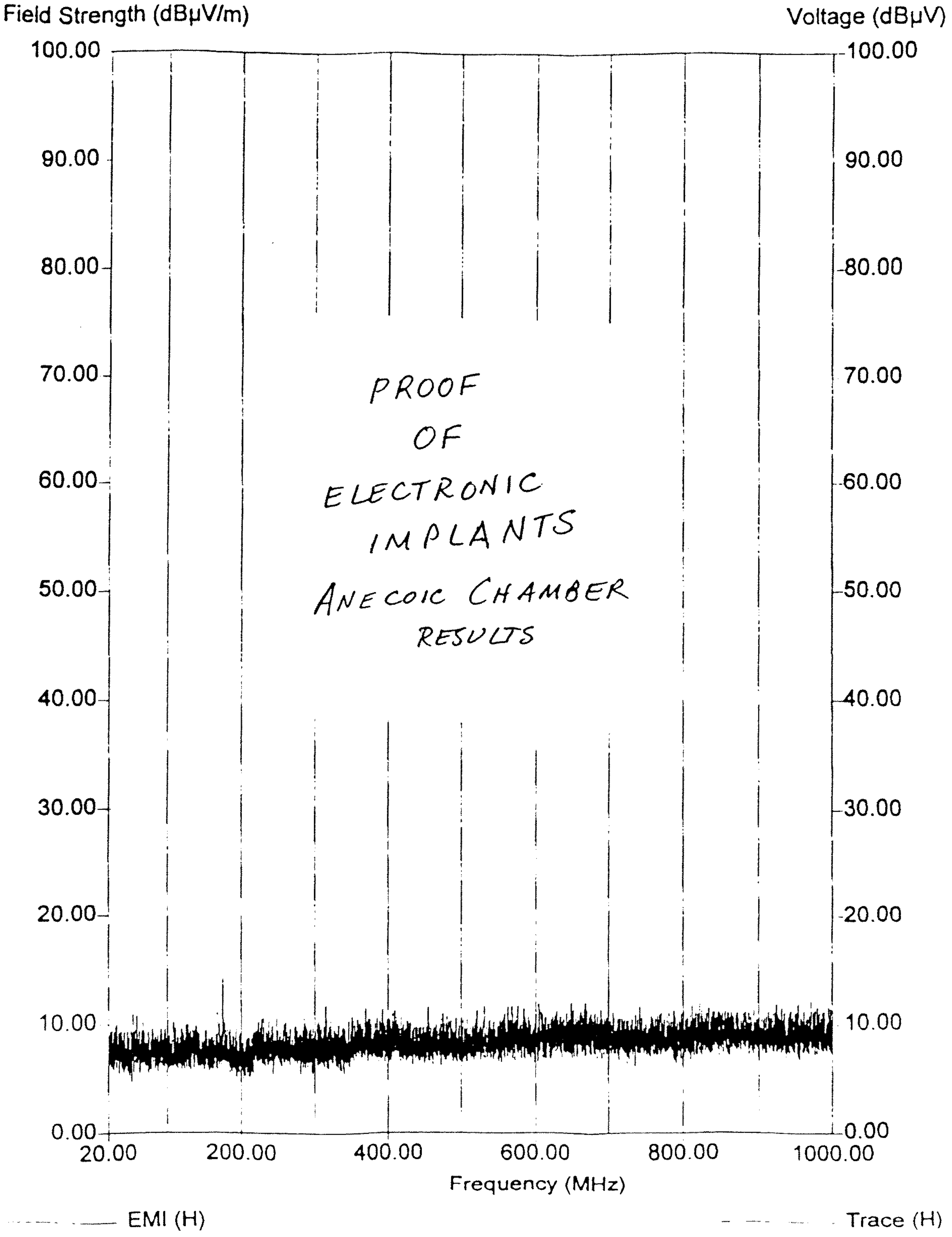

PROOF
OF
ELECTRONIC
IMPLANTS
ANECOIC CHAMBER
RESULTS

82027

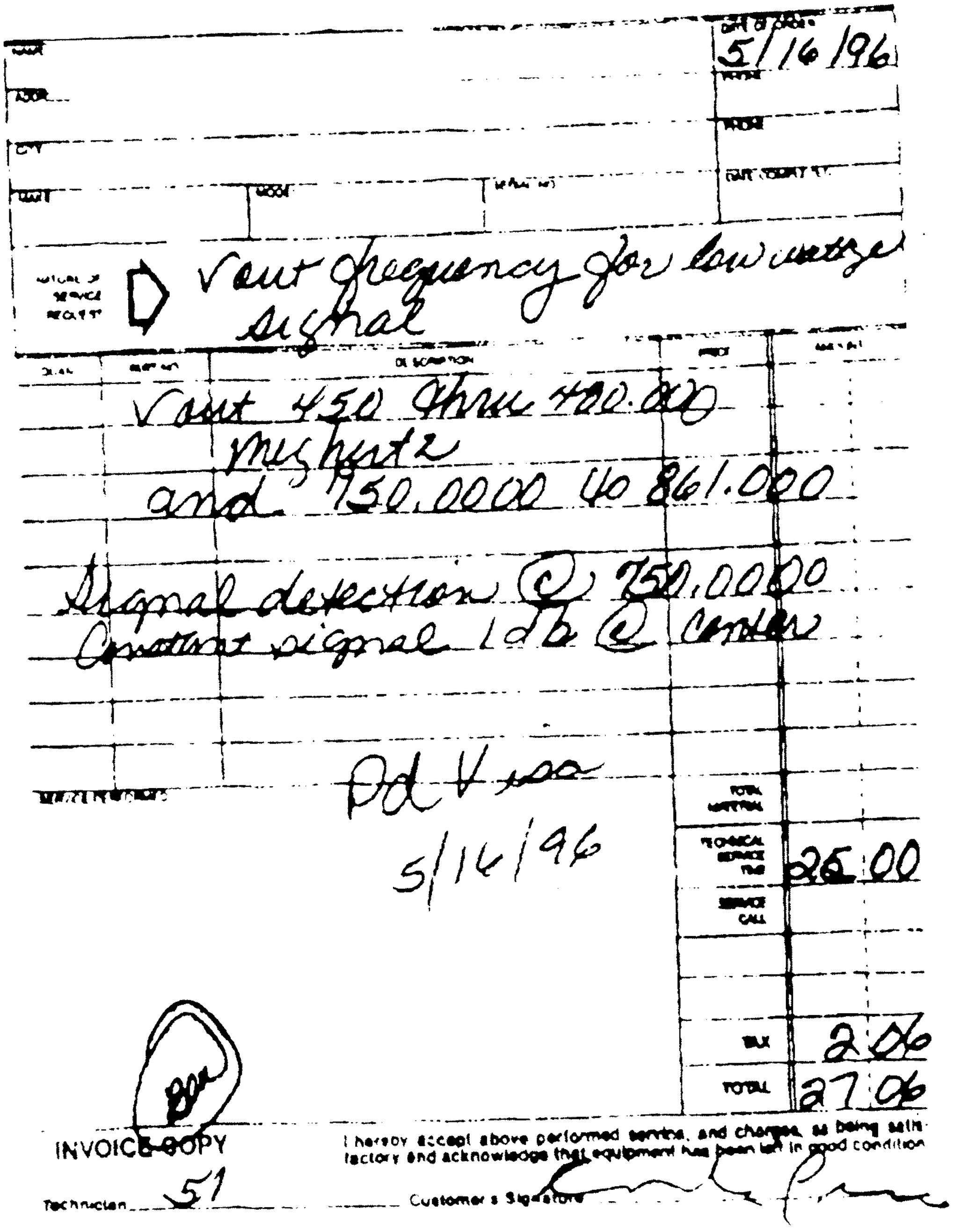

DATE OF ORDER 5/16/96

ADDR

CITY

PHONE

PHONE

MODEL

NATURE OF SERVICE REQUEST ▷ Vout frequency for low voltage signal

DESCRIPTION

Vout 450 thru 400.000 meghertz
and 750.0000 to 861.000

Signal detection @ 750.0000
Constant signal 1db @ Center

Pd Visa
5/14/96

TOTAL MATERIAL	
TECHNICAL SERVICE TIME	25.00
SERVICE CALL	
TAX	2.06
TOTAL	27.06

INVOICE COPY

I hereby accept above performed service, and charges, as being satisfactory and acknowledge that equipment has been left in good condition

Technician 51

Customer's Signature

Thank You!

Body Manipulation

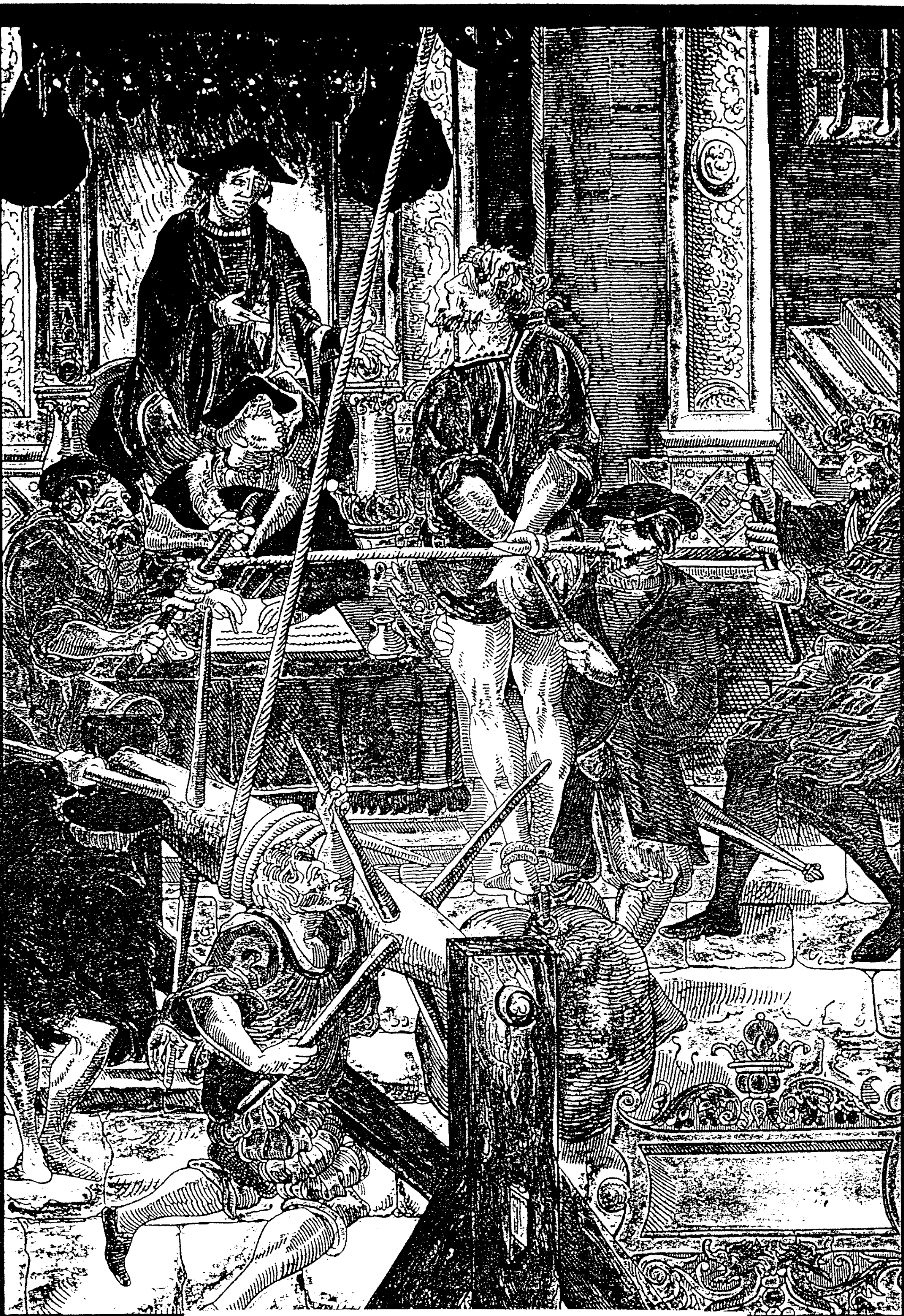

The secret art of Bone-Setting has been used in the past for good (healing) and for bad (torture & mind control).

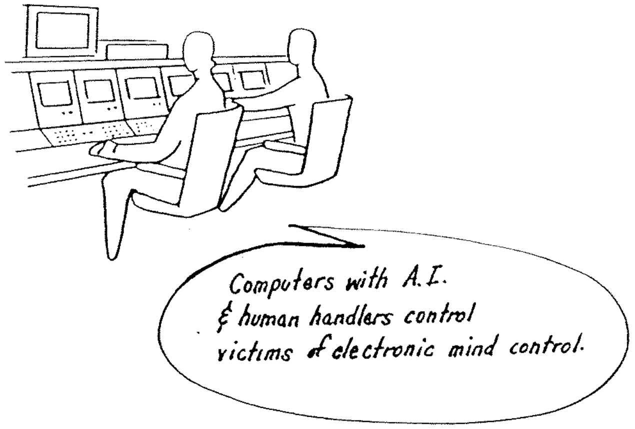
Computers with A.I.
& human handlers control
victims of electronic mind control.

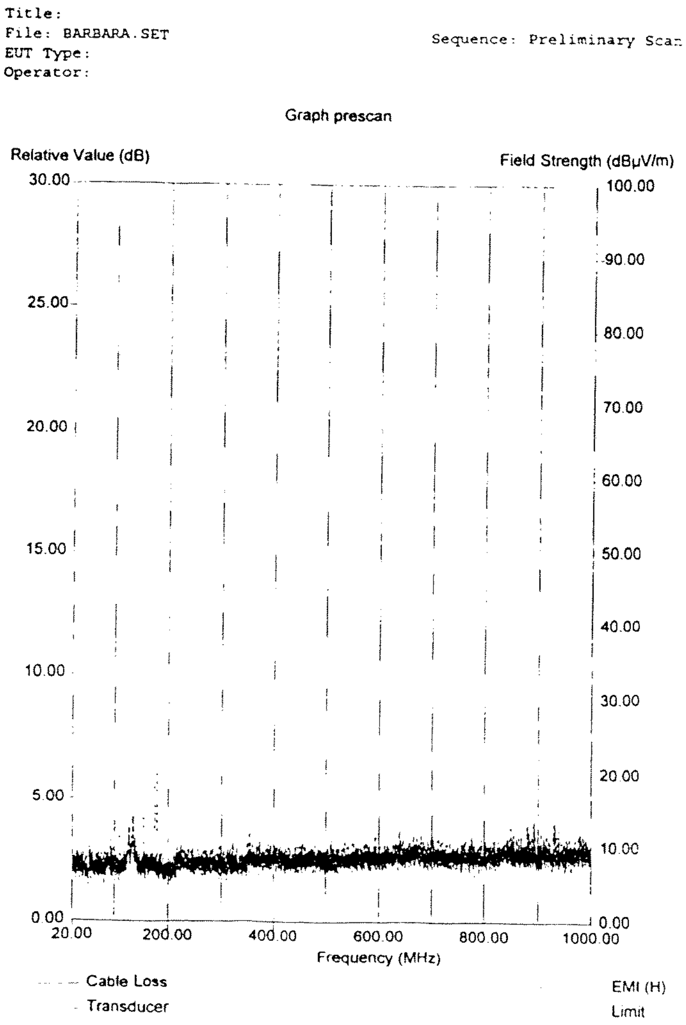

IMPLANT SITES--Eyes

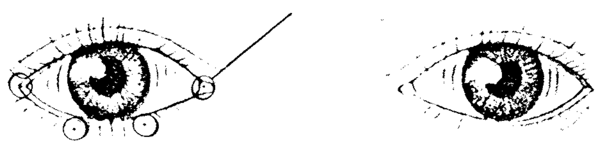

B3. GWEN Towers

The GWEN towers can be used for several purposes, including ELF waves used for direct mind control which will be covered toward the back of this chapter. Because they also are part of the implants system the are included before the chapter discusses implants.

Unfortunately for us humans, ELF waves can penetrate almost anything. The U.S. Military has built a Ground-Wave Emergency Network (GWEN) all over the U.S. with several hundred 300-500' GWEN towers that broadcast a very-low-frequency wave (VLF) for mind-control of the American public. A single GWEN tower can broadcast up to 300 miles in a 360° circle. Plus 8 secret powerful ELF transmitters have been established and 3 of them operate on the west coast.

It also needs to be pointed out that many items that are receivers can also function in the role of transmitters. Televisions, cellular phones, even air conditioners can be used to bounce signals to somewhere.

Many strange towers and transmitting devices have been installed all over the U.S. in recent years.

B4. THE BODY SUITS

Victims of mind-control who receive implants often are given a body suit of implants. **The location of these implant sites used on the human body have been mapped out on the following charts.** The mapped sites on these charts are verified by a. an insider, who learned from the inside what is going on, & b. this author's experience in working with a sizable number of implant victims. Implants can be placed anywhere, but there are certain key sites that tend to be used. The location used also depends upon the type of implant.

Implants over the body create the ability to trigger moods, pain, and other phenomena. Implants for auditory sounds are in the ear. Nasal implants are used for mind-control. Tracking implants are also placed into people.

**This is the way God created us.
This is the way our esteemed doctors & nurses study us in their books & in real life. If this offends you, a black marker will do the trick. Readers are welcome to photocopy these diagrams to map out implant sites in victims.**

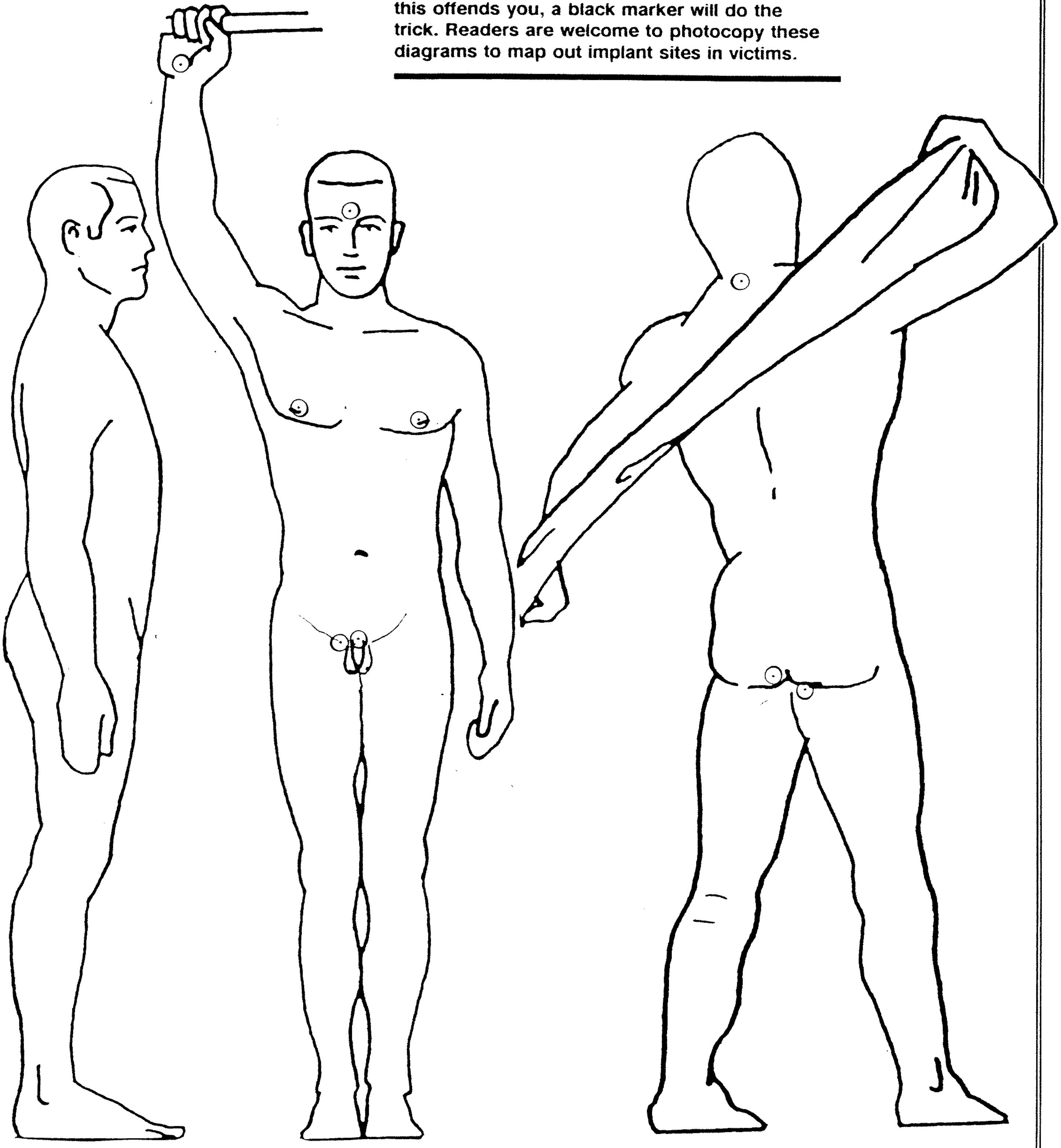

Legend
Implants = ⊙

IMPLANT SITES--General Male Body

This is the way God created us. This is the way our esteemed doctors & nurses study us in their books & in real life. If this offends you, a black marker will do the trick. Readers are welcome to photocopy these diagrams to map out implant sites in victims.

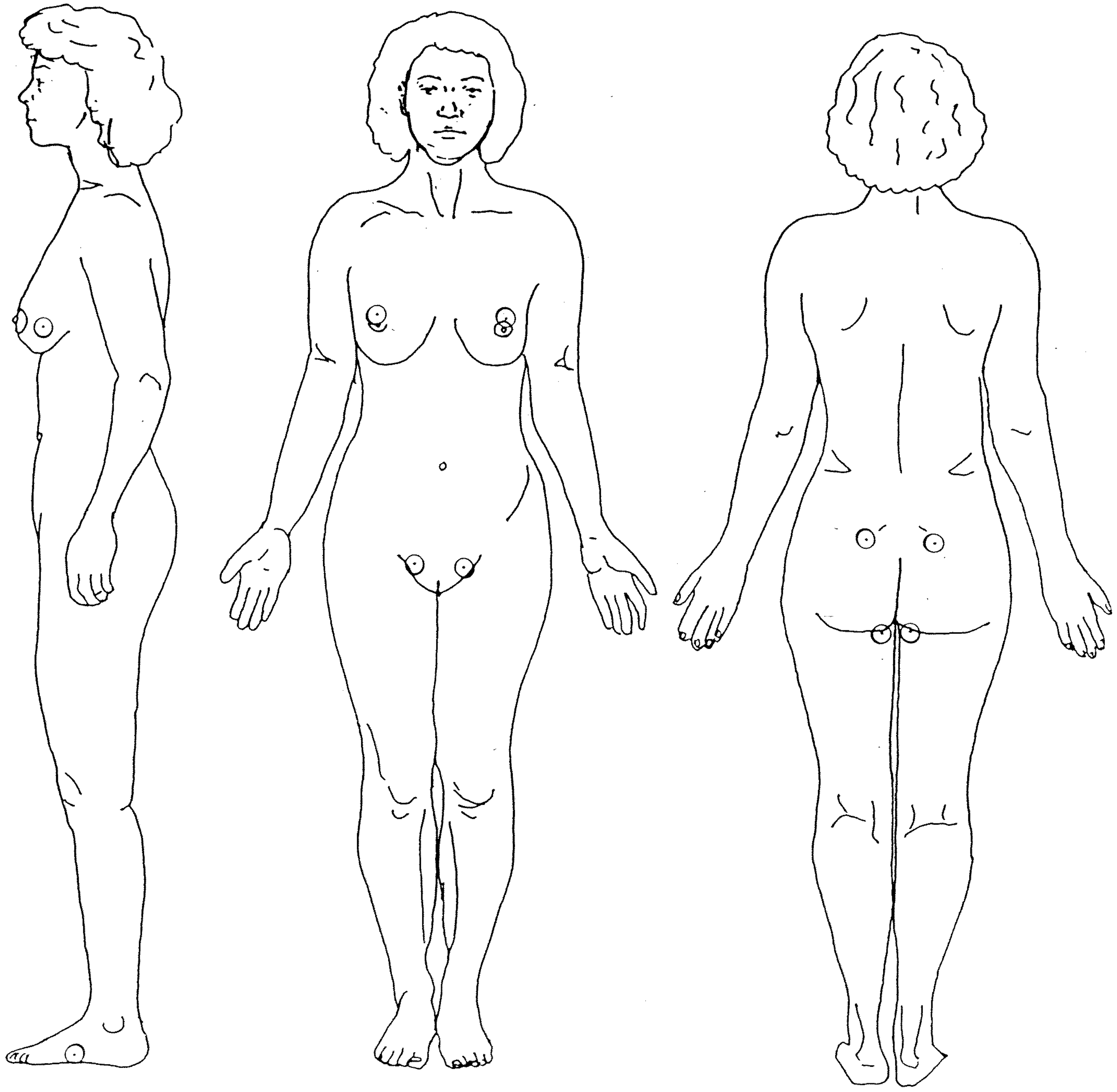

IMPLANT SITES--General Female Body

Legend
Implants = ⊙

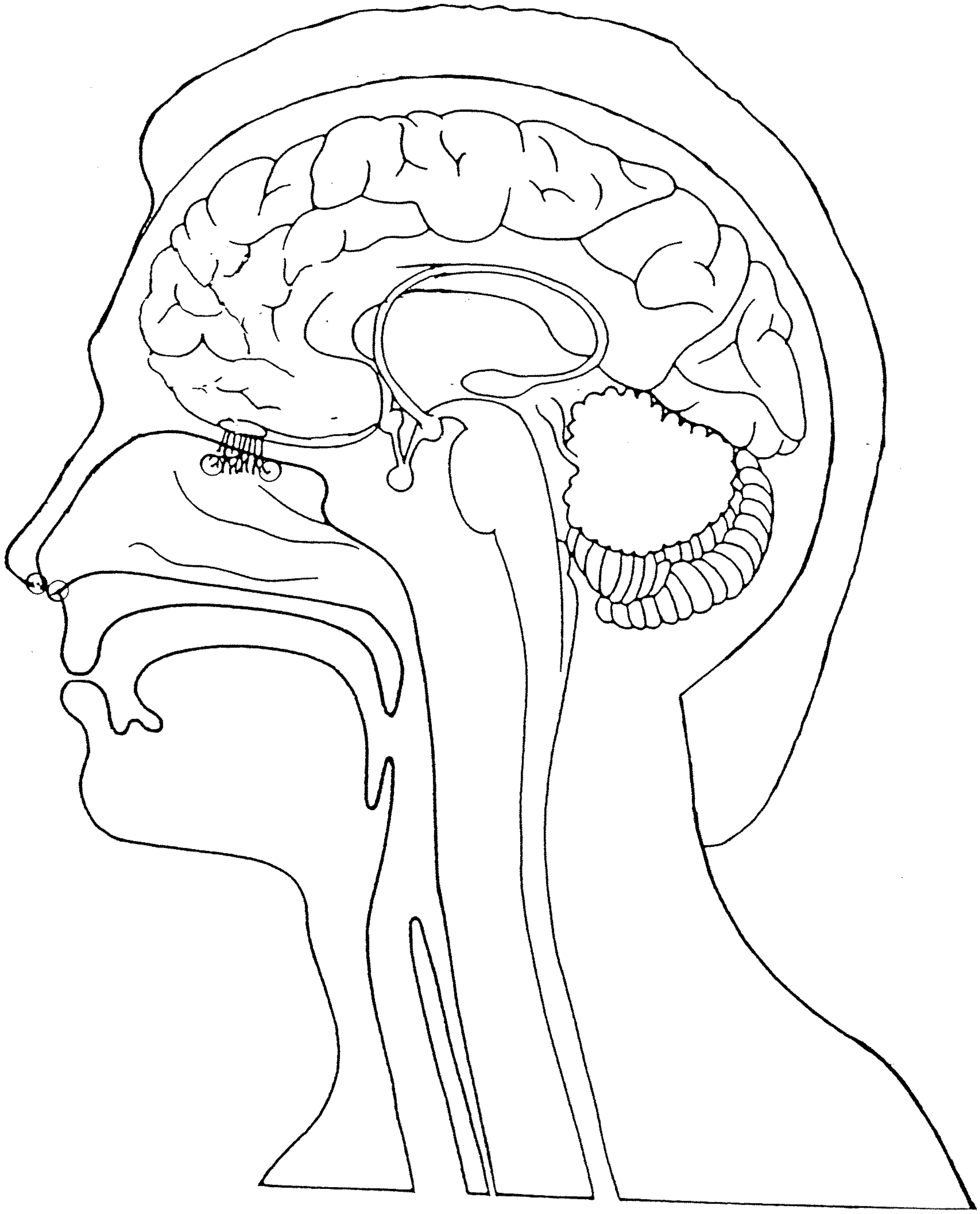

IMPLANT SITES--Nasal Pasageway/Olfactory System

IMPLANT SITES--Auditory System

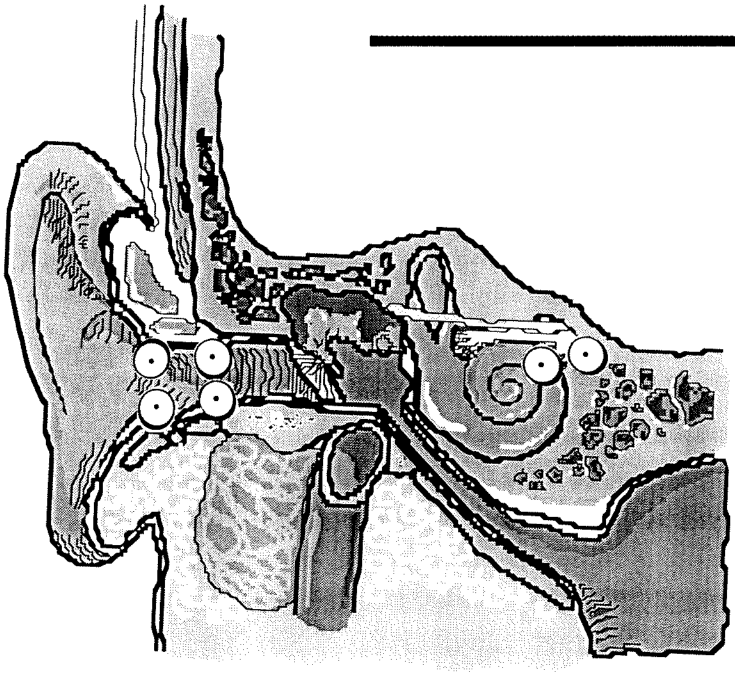

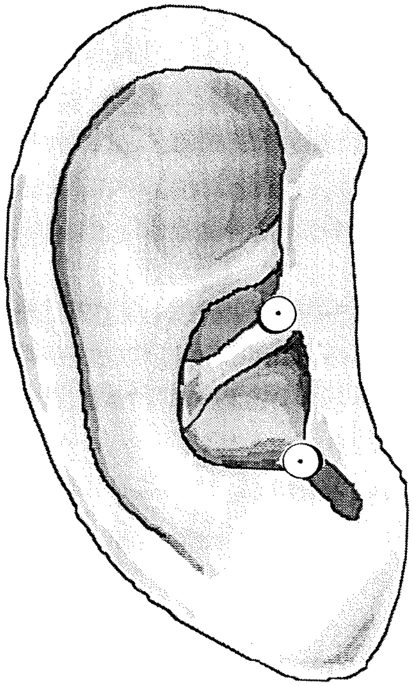

IMPLANT SITES--Male Genitalia

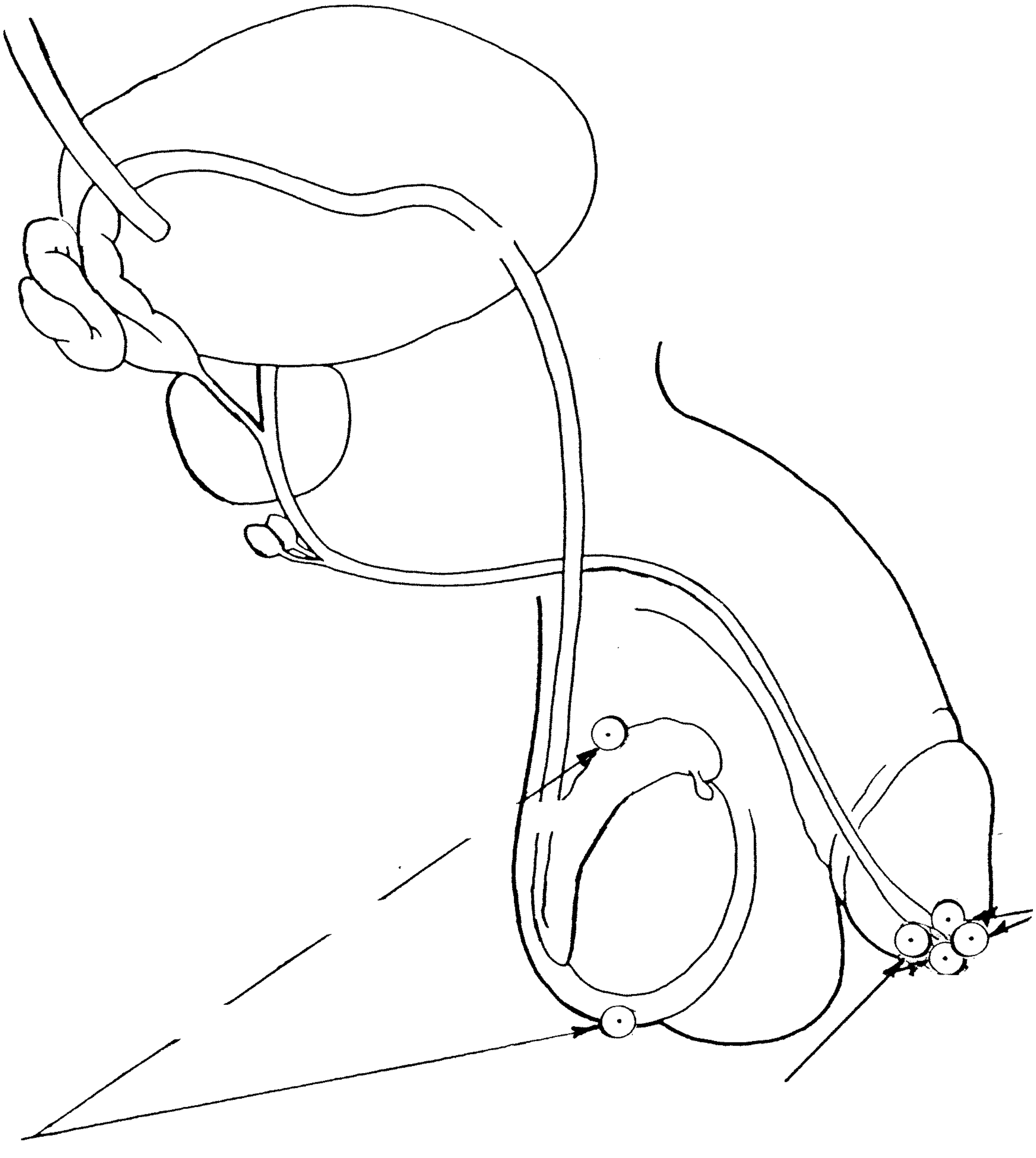

This is the way God created us.
This is the way our esteemed doctors & nurses study us in their books & in real life. If this offends you, a black marker will do the trick. Readers are welcome to photocopy these diagrams to map out implant sites in victims.

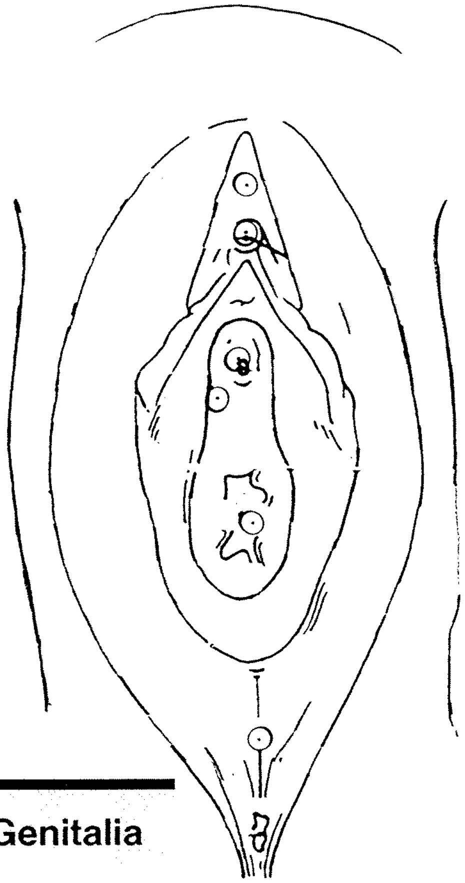

IMPLANT SITES--Female Genitalia

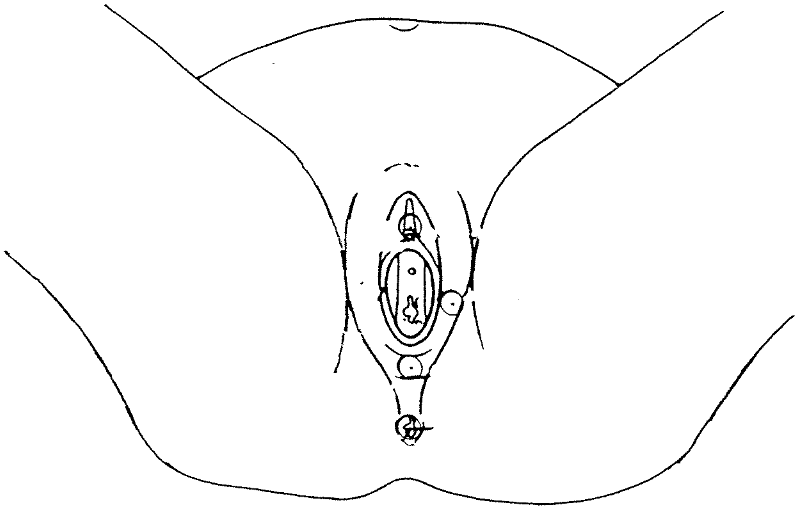

This is the way God created us.
This is the way our esteemed doctors & nurses study us in their books & in real life. If this offends you, a black marker will do the trick. Readers are welcome to photocopy these diagrams to map out implant sites in victims.

This is the way God created us.
This is the way our esteemed doctors & nurses study us in their books & in real life. If this offends you, a black marker will do the trick. Readers are welcome to photocopy these diagrams to map out implant sites in victims.

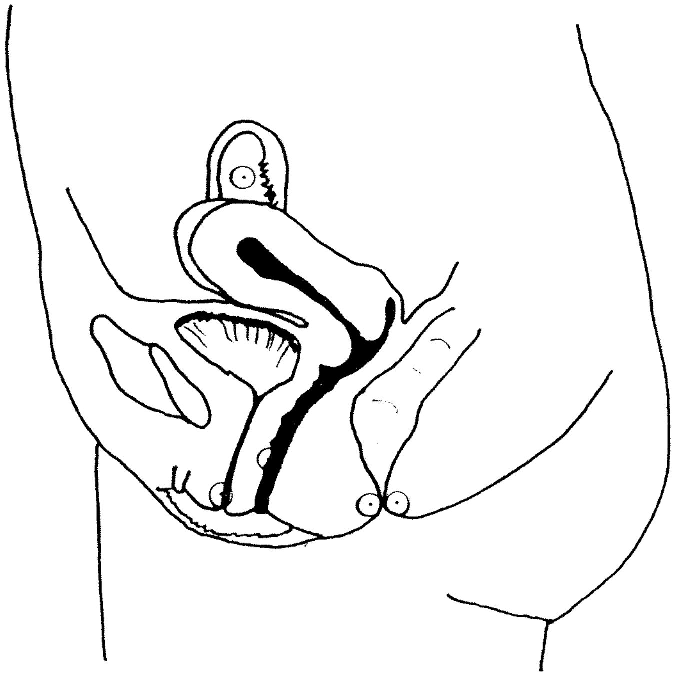

IMPLANT SITES--Female Reproductive System

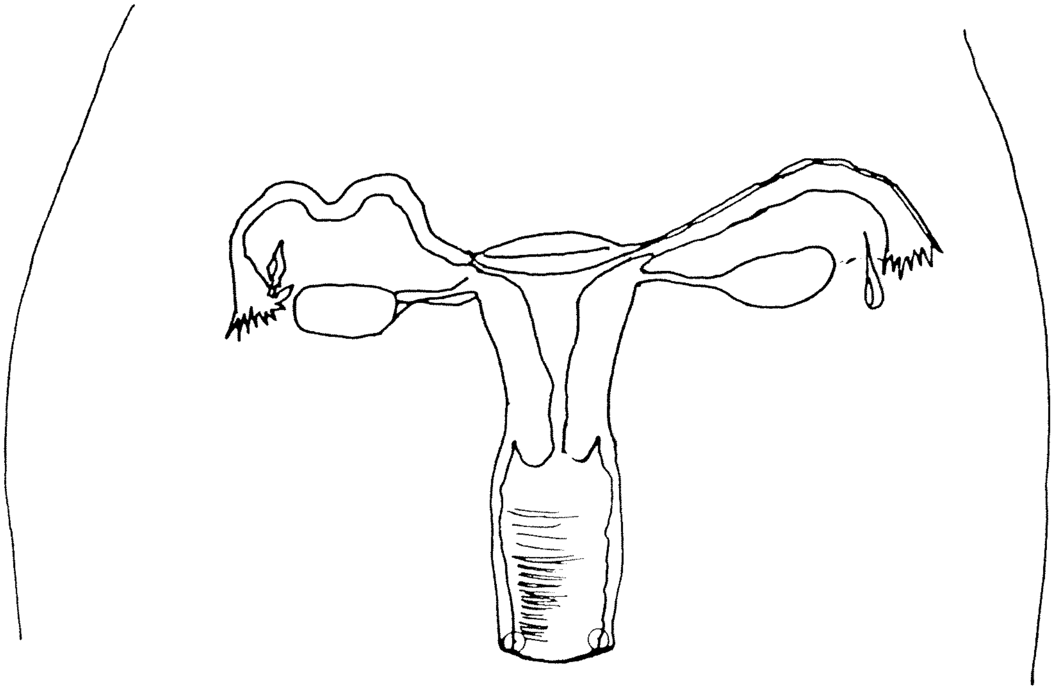

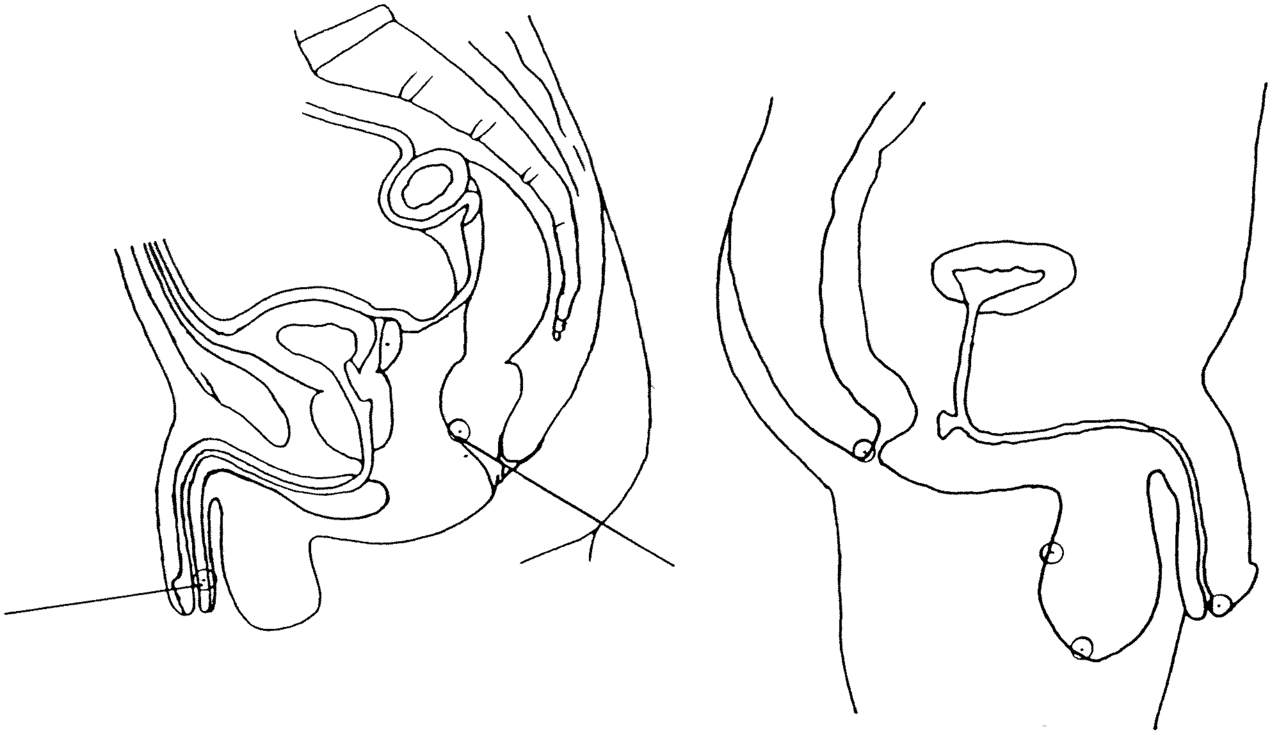

IMPLANT SITES--Male Reproductive & Excretory Systems

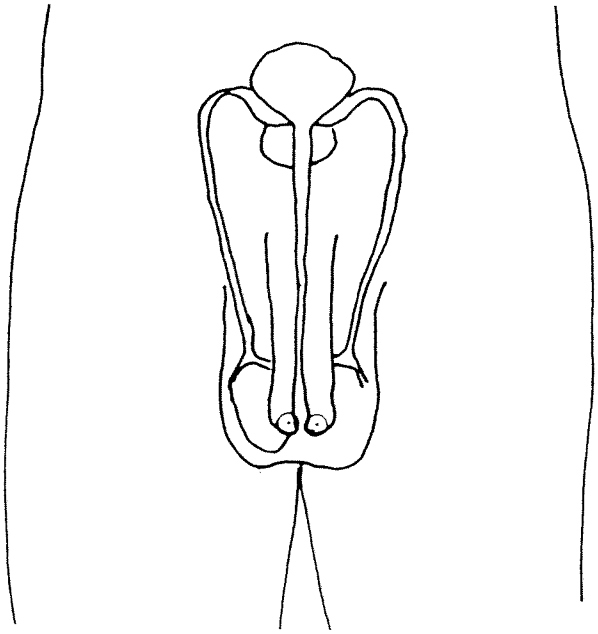

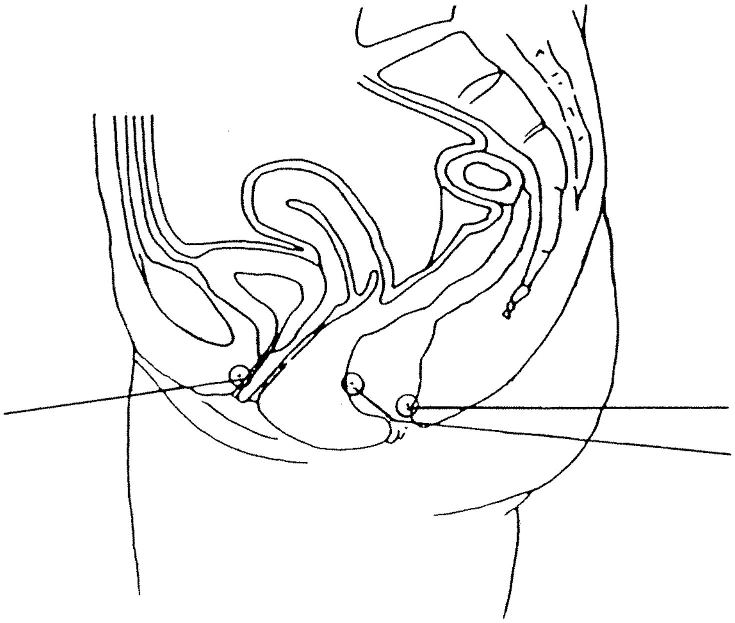

IMPLANT SITES--Female Genitalia

REFERENCE PAGE FOR UNDERSTANDING ELECTROMAGNETIC WAVES & MIND-CONTROL

The best way for people to understand electromagnetic waves is to think of the ocean's waves. Some waves in the ocean are big, and some are small, size is **amplitude**. Some beaches have waves that come quickly and some have waves that come slowly, this is called the **frequency** that the waves comes. Researcher figured out how they could change the **amplitude or the frequency of electromagnetic waves** in a controlled way, and this is called amplitude modulation or frequency modulation.

Because all electromagnetic energy beams travel the same speed 3 x 10^{10} cm/sec, an energy beam with a short wave must have many more of those short waves pass in a given time such as a day than a long wave. The shorter the wave the greater the frequency that a wave will arrive.

While our image of an ocean is that it moves up and down in relation to the surface. In other words, the ocean wave moves (vibrates) up and down in relation to the surface (a mathematical plane). Electromagnetic waves vibrate in 3 dimensions (relative to 3 planes), generally they are only drawn as one-dimensional waves.

Our brains operate on waves that are very low frequency (from one cycle per second) to about 50 cycles per second. A cycle per second is called a Hertz (Hz). Due to the wide range of different amplitudes and frequencies it has been more practical to induce various measuring units. It would be nice if all the measuring units could be done in feet or meters or whatever, but the range in size from the very tiny to the very large means that they use different measuring units. Just like you use different measuring units to get a quart of milk and 3 gallons of gas. The milk could be called a quarter-gallon but it isn't.

In measuring **frequency** they use the following measuring terms:
1,000,000 cycles per second = Megahertz (MHz)
1,000 cycles per second = Kilohertz (KHz)
1 cycle per second = Hertz (Hz)

In measuring amplitude they measure the length of the waves with kilometers, meters, and centimeters. The very small waves are measured in angstroms, microns, and nanometers. What is an angstrom. A **nanometer is one billionth of a meter**. That is a very tiny fraction written as 1/1,000,000,000 of a meter or for short an nanometer. A **micron is one millionth (1/1,000,000) of a meter**. Ten nanometers are said to make up an angstrom. (In other words an angstrom is 1 ten-billionth of a meter.)

After they measure radio frequencies, the waves of different lengths are given other names. They could just say "waves from 30,000 to 300,000 MHz", but instead they shorten things by having a special name for these waves EHF (Extremely High Frequency waves.)
This names are as follows:
Extremely High Frequency EHF
EHF 30,000 to 300,000 MHz
Superhigh Frequency SHF
SHF 3,000 to 30,000 MHz
Ultrahigh Frequency UHF
UHF 300 to 3,000 MHz
High Frequency VHF
VHF 30 to 300 MHz
Medium Frequency MF
MF 300 to 3,000 KHz
Low Frequency LF
LF 30 to 300 KHz
Very Low Frequency VLF
VLF 3 to 30 KHz
Extremely Low Frequency ELF
ELF Below 3 KHz to 1 Hz or less

BRAIN FREQUENCIES (FREKS) RELATE TO STATES OF ACTIVITY

The lower brain frequencies pertain to sleep and dream states.

The middle brain frequencies pertain to normal wakeful activity.

The higher brain frequencies pertain to aroused, or concerned or states of anxiety.

No brain waves means a person is "brain dead", even though some body functions may continue.

Naturally occurring phenomena, such as lightning in a thunderstorms, sunny days that soak a person with extra positive ions, can all affect the thinking of brain.

CHART GOING UP THE FREQUENCY SCALE

These frequency no.s are in Hertz which is cycles per sec. (However the first part of the scale are non-linear, asymmetrical waves, which are mistakingly called Hertzian by many people.)

1	Approx. beginning of brain waves
6.66	Theta brain waves
7.85	Alpha brain waves
15.7	Beta brain waves
30-30.56	Government VLF stations
32-33	Government VLF stations
34-42	Government VLF stations
50	Approx. Upper limit of brain wave frequencies
60	Produces an audible sound
62-254.1	CTCSS (Continuous Tone Coded Squelch Systems). These tones CTCSS tones are broadcast continually interspersed on a frequency, which allows several different users to broadcast separately on the same frequency and only pick up the message that has their CTCSS tone. Post Office Tones are 82.5, 91.5, 97.4. & 100.9. U.S. Customs & border patrol is 100 Hz. U.S. Secret service is 103.5 Hz. EPA is 114.8. IRS & BATF is 123.0. Veterans Affairs, GSA, & Dept. of Energy is 127.3. Fed. Aviation Admin. & U.S. Marshall service is 136.5. Coast Guard Intell. is 141.3 Hz. Dept. of State & Border Patrol is 151.4 Hz. Drug Enforcement Agency, Fed. Aviation Admin., & Nat. Marine Fisheries is 156.7. Justice Dept., FBI is 167.9.
10^2 (10x10)	Ultrasonic
10^3	Lower range of true Hertzian waves, waves in cycles per sec lower than this such as the human heart beat or Brain alpha waves are not Hertzian.
10^4 (10,000)	
16,000-32,000	Range of Frequencies used in European implants to signal the implant.
54,900,000	Hz (54.9 MHz) Cellular phones (Also 435 MHz, 750 MHz, & 1080 MHz have been discovered being targeted on victims of implant mind-control.)
10^{11} to 10^{12}	Far infra-red
10^{13}	"Raman" I.R.
10^{14}	Near Infra-red
10^{14} to 10^{15}	Visible light spectrum

ANATOMY OF MEMORY

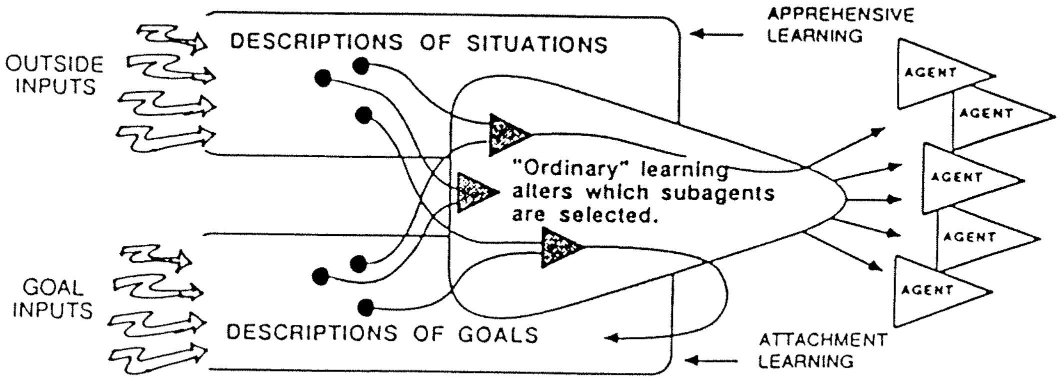
OUTSIDE INPUTS
DESCRIPTIONS OF SITUATIONS
APPREHENSIVE LEARNING
AGENT
AGENT
"Ordinary" learning alters which subagents are selected.
AGENT
AGENT
AGENT
GOAL INPUTS
DESCRIPTIONS OF GOALS
ATTACHMENT LEARNING

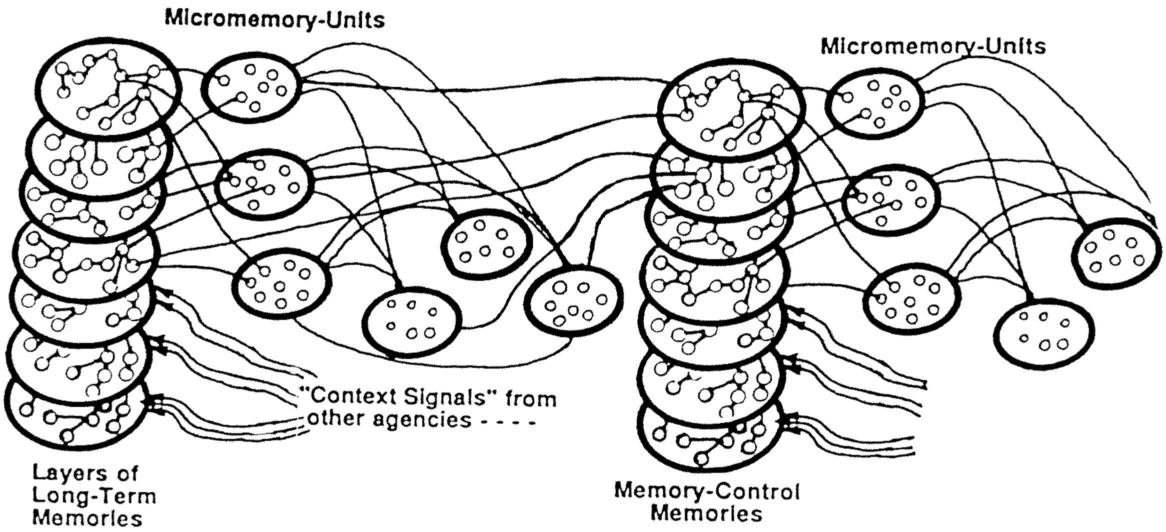
Micromemory-Units
Micromemory-Units
"Context Signals" from other agencies - - - -
Layers of Long-Term Memories
Memory-Control Memories

MOTIVATION

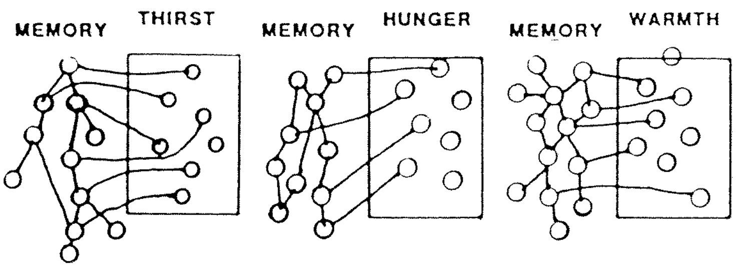
MEMORY
THIRST
MEMORY
HUNGER
MEMORY
WARMTH

Section C. Specific Implants
C1. Audio implants (a. public. b. secret)
C2. Body manipulation implants
C3. Visual holographic implants
C4. Memex/Brain Link implants
C5. Torture/Nerve & Muscle Stimulation Implants
C6. Tracking & I.D. Implants.

C1. AUDIO IMPLANTS

BACKGROUND INFORMATION

The concepts used in audio implants had been discovered in the first half of the 20th century, but the refinement of technology to take advantage of what had been discovered waited until the second half of the century.

The development of audio implants ran on two tracks, one was the public medical research and the other was the secret Illuminati/Intelligence Agencies' research. Audio implants began to be publicly placed into people in the 1960s. The Illuminati was experimenting on some victims at this stage, and the military in the Vietnam war used auditory implant devices to aid communicating to their men who were sent into tunnels and who were placed into forest situations where audible noise would compromise their locations to the enemy. The Illuminati/Intelligence/& Military consortium was keeping the experimentation secret. It appears from looking at the worldwide research on audio implants that the Illuminati realized that the field was so ambiguous, and open to so many different approaches, that rather than straightjacket the research community by a specific strategy, they encouraged a wide variety of approaches in the research. Consequently, research by one group would overlap or duplicate research by another. Much to their credit, a few researchers rejected offers to get involved because they saw the sinister ramifications.

By the 1970s, the intelligence agencies were willing to start using hundreds of people to experiment operationally with the implants. People in every state of the U.S. were selected as victims. Many of these implant victims had programmed multiple personalities already. The controllers were very heavy handed with the people they implanted, and they used the full force of the Illuminati/Intelligence agencies power to keep these people under their control at all times. These innocent victims have had their lives totally destroyed. Some tried to fight back, spending thousands of dollars to get out from underneath the incessant audio messages that the implants sent, but the system was too big and too powerful to fight. Police, congressmen, psychologists and many other people turned their backs on these victims. Some victims who initially fought back gave up resisting, some committed suicide, and some continued to fight.

Meanwhile, on the public track during the 1970s & 1980s, medical researchers kept putting more and more audio implants into deaf and hard-to-hear persons. Hundreds of people in the U.S. and many hundreds in other nations such as the U.K., Germany, Austria, Israel, Australia, France and other countries began to receive the cochlear implants. Australia was so proud of their audio implant research/development they issued a postage stamp showing an implant device ("bionic ear") developed in Australia. The question begs asking, if thousands of people have publicly received audio implants, isn't obvious that the secret societies and secret intelligence agencies have done at least as much if not far more?

BRIEF CHRONOLOGY OF AUDIO IMPLANTS

1790--first known attempt by Volta to electrically stimulate the ears. He shot approximately 50 volts of electricity into his auditory system, and experienced the sensation of a blow to the head followed by a sound like the boiling of viscous liquid.
1850--Electro-otiatrics was begun by otologists

who hoped electricity could help ear diseases in various ways.

1925--Sounds were created in people by radio engineers by placing electrodes near the ear with a modulated alternating current.

1930--Weaver & Bray discovered the principles used later in the cochlear microphonic implants.

1937--By passing an alternating electrical current in the audible frequency range from an electrode to the skin, Steven, Jones, Lurie and Flottorp found they could have people hear sounds. For a number of years these men studied this phenomena.

1957--Djourno and Eyries in France woke the world up concerning the ability to electrical stimulate the auditory nerves and produce sound with their reports. A patient from France reportedly gets William F. House, MD interested in developing an implant device.

1961--William House implants two patients with short-term audio implants. One patient receives a multiple electrode implant.

1960s--intense research for audio implants is conducted in California in places like Sanford, the Univ. of Calif., in L.A. etc. The military uses audio implants operationally to be able to talk to soldiers in situations where external noise would compromise the location of the American soldiers, such as exploring tunnel system.

1970s--Various researchers around the world begin publicly implanting audio implants into people. The Illuminati and intelligence agencies begin to secretly implant people, this is known because many of the early victims can pin point at time in the 1970s when they got their audio implants.

1980--The FDA establishes Federal regulations regarding cochlear audio implants.

1984--By this year, 369 people have publicly received the House Cochlear Audio Implants, which have been implanted by 36 different clinics. The 3M Cochlear Implant System/ House Design for use in adults, which is already in hundreds of adults, receives FDA approval in Nov.

1990s--Audio implants along with other implants begin to be used more aggressively by the mind-control programmers. Successful intelligence operations are carried out with the aid of audio implants.

BASICS OF HOW THE IMPLANTS CAN FUNCTION

Thousands have publicly received audio implants, and thousands have received audio implants without their permission by the New World Order.

The implants (whether secret or public) basically have to contain A. a receiver(s), B. a processor, C. a transmitter, D. electrodes or electrical stimulating device.

When sound waves arrive to the human ear, the sound causes biological reactions all along the auditory pathway--from the cochlea, the auditory nerve, the brain stem nuclei and the primary cortical projection areas. Each of these areas are fair game for machinations of the mind-control researchers. There are brain stem potentials which originate in the auditory brain stem nuclei--primarily in the inferior colliculi.

The public auditory implants produce a small electrical stimulus that bypasses damaged hair cells and directly stimulates the remaining auditory neural elements. This means that for the secret implants, the electrical impulse that is generated to stimulate the person to hear a sound or sentence is totally unnoticed by everyone but the victim.

As mentioned before, psychologists are being used to shut victims up, by declaring that they are crazy for claiming to hear voices. How do these psychologists know that the person isn't hearing voices from an implant? Some psychologists are declaring the implant victims are "crazy", "delusional", & "insane", because audio implants supposedly don't exist--therefore it is useless to give any credence to the complaints of victims. In other words, psychologists are being used as the establishment's witch doctors to cover up the mind-control activities of the New World Order. What's new? Establishment shrinks helped cover up the programmed multiplicity for decades by labelling the programmed-multiple slaves "paranoid schizophrenics".

During experiments, it was discovered that the skin of a person can pick up auditory vibrations, so tests were run to see if implants in other parts of the human body could be used for auditory implants. The vibrotacticle system of the skin has an upper limit of sensitivity to 400 to 500 Hz. In contrast the auditory system had a frequency range between 20 to 20,000 Hz and an optimum range of 300 to 3,000 Hz. The auditory system had a dynamic range of 130 dB (decibels) which the vibrotactile had only a 30-35 dB range. In other words, using the skin like on the chest to send auditory vibrations to the brain was a very limited way to create sound. For most purposes it isn't a viable approach, even though some experimental auditory implants were placed in places like the chest. The ones that were tested only reconfirmed the suspicions that the best results are by using the inner cochlea and the auditory canal area.

Dr. Begich's and later others showed that a nonlinear function will translate one frequency to another frequency, but although it does jump, this method is inadequate for the current mind control signals, and a linear function is used which operates simply on the energy that the implants have.

Originally single channel devises were used, but then multichannel devices were soon found superior. The processing units of a device, had to have an extraction method to determine the pitch of the signal and then would present a square wave at the rate of that frequency.

Soon the miniature computers that made up part of the audio implant were made so that they were programmable. Some of the publicly implanted people (for instance some who got a 4 mm. cochlear auditory implant), who thought they were getting medical help, were later followed up a decade later by the intelligence agencies for their own agenda, and instead of just hearing the world, they got to hear mind-control drivel from some handler communicating via the implant.

As sound waves come into the public implants, they are fast Fourier transformed into many channels lying between say 100 and 4000 Hz. Each channel may be assigned to a specific electrode located on an array of electrodes. The electrodes are stimulated for instance at 300 pulses per minute. The transmissions go to receiver/stimulators that then stimulate the subject to hear something. (Fourier transforms have also been identified being used by human brains to encode memory.)

In order to keep their signals to their implanted victims secret, the Network employs a tactic called piggybacking where they piggyback their own audio transmission onto standard FM frequencies.

CANAL is the acronym for an system that is used simultaneously for transmission and reception via the use of a double-frequency shift keying (DFS).

Radio transmitters that send quick signals are variously called BURST, SQUIRT, SQUASH, or high-speed transmitters.

USES OF THE IMPLANTS

a. by themselves, b. with other implants, and c. in conjunction with other mind-control devices.

TYPES OF AUDIO IMPLANTS--

Part A. Publicly admitted audio implants. Part. B. Secretly implanted audio implants.

Part A. Publicly admitted audio implants. The entire world has gotten involved in audio implant research. The British Cochlear Implant Group has been setting up "implanting centres" for the UK. Not all the publicly known implants will be listed here, for instance, some of those I chose not to list include some developed in Spain by Bosch & Colomina, the ones created in Thailand by upgrading american made implants, and several made in East and West Germany before the wall went down, and the Swiss implant which was simply the Austrian audio implant used with their own processor.

3M COCHLEAR IMPLANT SYSTEM/HOUSE DESIGN--MODEL 7700 (AKA ALPHA)

BANFAI, EMG --Several models developed by Banfai in Cologne-Dueren, West Germany. It is digital, with a pulsatile signal and a programmable memory. The implant can be communicated with using an interface device hooked to a computer. The patient has a keyboard. It was first implanted in 1977 and has 8/14 and 16 channels. It has been implanted into hundreds of people.

BRITISH, for instance **UCH**-- Developed by Douek, Fourcin and Moore in London and implanted with a single electrode in 1978 and multiple electrodes in 1990. The implant has bioglass, and promontory grooves for the electrode, and neural network programming in its computer memory.

CHEN AUDIO IMPLANT--developed in Guangzhoi, mainland China and first implanted in 1984. It was said by the chinese that 20 people received this implant.

CZECHOSLOVAKIAN--Implants were created by Volvoda and Tichy in Prague and implanted in the 1980s into a few people.

FRASER--Developed in London, and first implanted in 1983. It was notable because it had a round window in the implant. In the first few years it was implanted into 56 people. The encapsulated the implant in a high-grade Silastic rather than an epoxy, as some other European researchers had done

FRAYASE--Developed in Toulouse, France, this audio implant was implanted with its receiver in the chest. It was first implanted in 1981, and 22 people were said to have received it.

GOA--developed in Shanghai, China by Lee and Lin.

INERAID- (fka Symbion) produced by the Richards Company, USA. In the *Journal of the Acoustical Society of America*, Mar. 1994, vol. 95, pp. 1677-1678, they have an article about a woman who had an implant in one ear and not the other. She was asked to compare the pitch signals from natural sources versus the right ear audio implant. The most apical implanted electrode was not as accurate as the more basal located electrodes using an Ineraid implant.

IMPLEX COM 12--Comes with an interfacing computer and a Syncom patient self-tester

LAURA--Developed at Antwerp, Belgium. These were first implanted in 1986, and had an internal canal antenna, a microphone entirely internal in the auditory canal, a pre-amp, an antenna, and a data control circuit. Only a few subjects got this implant. It comes with a computer, and an interface unit. It does have a programmable memory.

MED-EL --Developed in Austria at Vienna and Innsbruck by Hochmair, and first implanted in 1977. Hundreds of people were implanted with this audio implant. Some were implanted externally with it and some internally inside the ear canal. It has one channel and a multitude of electrodes stimulating the audio channel. It is analogue, and sends an analogue signal. It does not have a programmable memory.

MXM--Developed by Chouard in Paris and first implanted in 1974. It had been implanted by 1990 into 179 people.

NUCLEUS 22, NUCLEUS MINISYSTEM 22, and other NUCLEUS AUDIO IMPLANTS (aka CLARK's Implants)--At least two models developed in Australia at Melbourne. This audio implant was first implanted in 1978. The implant is programmable from the outside. It has been implanted into many hundreds of people. It has a multitude of electrodes that stimulate the audio system. It is digital, sends a pulsatile signal, and has a programmable memory. The implant comes with a diagnostic and programming interface computer. The Australian government heavily subsidized with millions of dollars research into audio implants and got the Cochlear Corporation (Nucleus) going. Nucleus uses what is called MULTIPEAK which provides high-frequency information from 2000 to 7000 Hz. With this 4 electrodes are stimulated in rapid succession, and special algorithms are used which change the relationship between the pulse amplitude and the pulse duration in order to allow 4 pulses to occur within a single frame. The Nucleus Minisystem 22 was approved by the FDA for implantation in both adults and children.

Storz Instrument Co.'s Implant--developed at Univ. of Calif, San Francisco.

Part. B. Secretly implanted audio implants. There were several profiles of people that were used in the World Order's selection of secret victims to implant. The following were criteria that they liked in the selection process, a. vulnerable, such as single women, b. people who were already programmed with trauma-based mind-control, c. psychics, who had already told people they heard or saw things ordinary people don't, d. people, not highly regarded by society such as minorities, criminals, street people, mentally insane, who would not be able to find a support system to help them fight the experimentation. They also did the audio implants into some of their own intelligence agents, apparently to some who were getting somewhat difficult to their superiors. Because of this type of profile, and some other things this author learned, it appears that the initial two decades were used more for experimentation and development than they were for actual operations. However, with more than 2 decades of experience, they are now fully operational. From watching their interaction (messages) with victims of audio implants, it is clear that they are not in the testing stage, but are fully operational, and have a full cadre of trained operatives (men & women) to staff the secret bases from which the monitor and broadcast signals to their slaves. The staff their bases with 3 shifts and the graveyard shift leaves approx. 6 a.m. In other words, from what we can tell they are using standard shift times for the audio implant control staffs.

COCHLEAR IMPLANTS--There are Cochlear implants for auditory control secretly implanted without permission. A rubber molding skin color covers the outer lining of the ear canal. There are tiny slits in this lining, which when pushed to the side would show the presence of coils and a plastic rod/wire embedded in the area. Sometimes burn marks occur on sides of face due to intense heat generated by implants, which is painful.

DENTAL AUDITORY IMPLANTS--At least a dozen victims have complained that after their teeth were capped they began hearing voices. Other sources indicate that during the filing process implants are being put into people.
This is the type of implant placed into J. Z. Knight and left dormant for many years until they decided to activate her as New Age guru.

RIDGE IMPLANTS-- These implants can produce Theta waves and even voices. They are designed to suppress a particular type of thinking. The body may be sent into paralysis or given various stimulus-response stimuli in order to suppress certain thought patterns. If the slave begins to have certain thought patterns that threaten the programming and programming structures, these implants kick in to divert the person's mental activity to something else.

C2. BODY MANIPULATING IMPLANTS

The subject of body manipulating implants could have been placed in chapter 8, however the desire was to keep all the information on implants together.

Mankind has placed objects into the human body for thousands of years in the hope that it would produce some type of change. So the history of this type of implants is volumous.

Reader's Digest had an article about how to give to paraplegics the use of their arms and legs with implants. Implants are being placed into the human body to effect growth changes, to change hormone levels (such as to stop estrogen), to change DNA growth, to carry out behavior modification, etc.

Several papers have recommended that sex offenders get implants.

The Rambo chips that have been put into many men have been linked to some big crimes.

In recent times, the following body manipulating implants have been written about:

CRYSTALLINE CORTICOSTERONE IMPLANTS-- These implants affect the hypothalamic-pituitary-adrenal (HPA) activity when there is stress or basal activity. It was placed into the medial prefrontal cortex (MpFC) to regulate the response to certain types of stress. *Journal of Neuroscience*, Sept. 1993, Vol. 13, pp. 3839-3847.

NORPLANT--a contraceptive implant placed into hispanic and black teenagers using the Mantel-Haenszel procedure. Written about in *Journal of Adolescent Health*, May 1995, Vol. 16(5), pp 389-395 by Nancy Campbell-Heider, John Glantz, Sandra Glantz, Eric Schaff, et al.

POLYMERIC BRAIN IMPLANT--these implants are ethylene-vinyl acetate copolymer matrix disks and are used to release into the brain dopamine for a period of a number of weeks. The testing of this has been done at Yale Univ. School of Medicine. Written about in the *Annals of Neurology*, Apr. 1989, Vol. 25, pp. 351-356. Written by Matthew During, Andrew Freese, and Bernhard Sabel, and Mark Saltzman, et. al.

PROTO-32 IMPLANT--Designed by Dr. McDaniels and a Dr. Paul Hod. This implant with a 32-bit microchip memory affects DNA growth within a person. The two doctors who developed the device are claimed to have died after they created the chip. The FDA has approved the use of the implant in the brain. It's believed that there is a patent on the chip.

SILASTICMELATONIN-FILLEDIMPLANT--used to alter the speed of resynchronization of the circadian rhythm in birds, and implanted by the Max-Plank Institute fur Verhaltensphysiologie, Andechs, Germany. Although this was for birds, mention of it is done here to point out the type of research done at the Max-Plank Institute. It was written about in the *Physiology and Behavior* magazine, July 1995, Vol. 58, p. 89-90 by Michaela Hau and Eberhard Gwinner.

TESTOSTERONE IMPLANT--used to release testosterone into the subject.

C3. VISUAL/HOLOGRAPHIC IMPLANTS

BACKGROUND.

Hollywood has given us movies where visual and holographic implants are shown, but what about the real world? Yes, it does happen in more than the movies. Publicly, the establishment has only experimentally placed visual implants into a few volunteers. On the real life side of the NWO, there have been a number of victims who have been subjected to visual implants without their consent. One victim in Massachusetts labels her visual implants "visual prosthetics", but mentions "I use this term loosely because they are more so attachments than replacements of my own vision."

Every now and then the public is made aware of where the World Order wants people to think research is at. In the Jan. 13, 1997 issue of **U.S. News & World Report** (p. 52), the unveiling by researchers of the retinal chip that could potentially give sight to the blind was reported. It was interesting the article's choice of words "retinal chip **unveiled**" (bold added).

After it was realized that sounds could be artificially made via electromagnetic waves in deaf people, researchers naturally thought of giving sight to the blind. In the 1960's and 1970's researchers struggled to produce implants that could restore sight to the blind. This research was hijacked by the NWO types and has been developed into another component for their mind-control.

In the 60's Giles Brindley and others at Cambridge Univ. and in the 70's William Dobelle and others at the Univ. of Utah, both were able to show that individual phosphenes could be evoked by electrical currents, thus showing the feasibility of visual implants. (See GS Brindley's paper "The sensations produced by electrical stimulation of the visual cortex" in *J. Physiology*, Vol. 196, 1968, pp. 479-493. and W.H. Dobelle's article in 1974 "Phosphenes produced by electrical stimulation of human occipital cortex, and their application to the development of a prosthesis for the blind." in *J. Physiol*, 243: 553-576.)

The public development went forward with the blind. Since most blind people still have the neurons (which are like a natural computer) in the higher visual regions of the brain fully intact, the implants are designed to take advantage of this unused potential. The body has sensory pathways, that were discovered to be maps. In creating a visual image, the brain actually takes an image through several maps before getting the final image. There is a map for motion, along with at least 5 others maps such as one for form. The photoreceptors of the retina react to the three primary colors and have 3 primary color maps created by the electrical image made from the photoreceptors of the retina. (One's genetics contribute to how each person perceives a primary color, we don't all see colors uniformly.) The retina's output (called optic nerves or retinal output) map the electrical image again onto the retinal ganglion cells. Then the optic nerves project the electrical image to a relay image (the lateral geniculate nucleus) where the brain begins combining the maps of the two eyes. Another network of neurons (called the optic radiations) then transfers the image back to the rear of the brain to the primary visual cortex. Then the brain takes the image through several higher level maps to its final finished product--the viewer's perceived picture. The microelectrode array that creates a map for the blind person may be hooked up to the primary visual cortex, or other points in the process. The microelectrode arrays that were initially tested were much cruder than the human eye. They pixelized (turned into pixels, that is points) what the video camera saw. The implant compared to the human eye's natural abilities something like what the old dot matrix printers created in comparison to a computer laser printer. The blind person's perception via the implants is somewhat cruder than actual sight. Experiments have found that the brain has a great deal of power in choosing how it interprets images, so that it is hoped that the plasticity of the visual system will allow blind people's brain to adapt to what they are being shown over a period of time to get the maximum visual advantage. This also implies that victims of visual implants--which are of a more sophisticated technology will also have a natural tendency to rewire their brains to accommodate the new sensory inputs.

One of several groups of public researchers into Visual Neuroprosthetics (visual implants) is Richard A. Normann, with the Dept. of Bioengineering, John Moran Lab for Applied Vision and Neural Sciences, at the Univ. of Utah. In 1990, he spoke to people at the IEEE International Conference on Systems, Man, and Cybernetics about visual implants. At that conference on cybernetics, there were already well thought out methods for creating silicon based electrode arrays. The John Hopkins University in Massachusetts is another research center into visual implants. MIT and Harvard have also been researching in the subject of visual implants.

Advances in material available and micro-fabrication techniques has permitted the semiconductor manufacturer to create electrode arrays with 3-D architectures, which can then be implanted into the visual parts of a person.

HOW THEY WORK

In a true visual prosthetic, a video encoder (camera) transforms the visual world in front of a blind individual into electrical signals that are used to excite neurons at some point of the visual pathway. The video camera encoder will be a silicon retina that replaces some of the functions that the human retina performs, and then it makes what it sees into signal compatible with the neurons the encoder must stimulate. The signals from the encoder excite neurons either via a hard-wired percutaneous connection, or a telemetry link. "The stimulating electrodes must be implanted into visual pathway such that each electrode is able to excite only a small population of neurons in the vicinity of the electrode." (Normann, Richard. "Visual Neuroprosthetics Functional Vision for the Blind", in *IEEE Engineering in Medicine and Biology*, Jan-Feb. '95, pg. 77)

To improve the picture sent by the implants to the brain, electrodes the size of the neurons they intend to stimulate in the eye were developed. Kensall Wise at the University of Michigan created small high density electrode arrays out of silicon. In one model, the electrodes are .08 mm at their base, and taper to a sharpened tip. An array of hundreds of such electrodes can be implanted into cortical tissue about 1.5-2.0 mm below the cortical surface. This is not all of the design considerations involved, but it gives an idea of the direction that public research has gone in. A special pneumatic inserter that can shoot the arrays at high velocities to insert them into the cortical tissue was created by Patrick Rousche. This method provided limited cortical-based-map images.

To further improve the picture, implants are being created that create a retinal map, rather than a cortical map. This can take advantage of the image forming properties of the human eye, and may give satisfactory images. At the current pace of public development, visual implants that restore sight are only a few years away from mass production. Meanwhile, the Network continues to create and use visual implants that are more sophisticated than what the public sector has been allowed to create. Bear in mind that these researchers use either foundation grant money or government grant money to operate. The Network is very careful about what technology is developed. Some excessively ambitious implant researchers (not visual, but other) have seen their work have a national security gag order thrown over them, and the research ends up muzzled from getting out to the public.

TYPES

FIBER OPTICS-- Fiber optics permits the Network to use a fiber optic that looks like a hair as a television camera. In a body suit, several fiber optic cameras that look like hairs will be installed in key places to provide the handlers remote viewing. Fiber optics can also be mounted in the victim, to provide a means to receive remote pictures. Fiber optic implants can be placed by needle into any site on the body. One victim of electronic mind-control, who has repeatedly pulled out Fiber Optic hairs, had a tiny fiber optic hair shot into her chest above her tank top while she was in a restaurant.

Some other implants that carry out the same function look like warts, moles, or blisters.

ARTIFICIAL LENSES-- One victim describes his eye implants: "They are oblong objects with a square opening in the middle of them. They appear to be located on my corneas or rapped around them to be more accurate. They are connected to rods or wires that are spread out over my facial area and under the skin like a mask. The implants also appear to be connected to cochlear implants which are the cause of the repeated voice transmissions that I hear."

Via a camera, she was able to pick up the presence of a reddish orange smear or stain covering my eye lens. The color blends with her own eye coloring so it is extremely difficult to see anything in her eyes. The lenses of the implants are not lined up evenly with her cornea. The victim with the visual implants states, "Whenever I close my eyes, I see the presence of constant red orange haze centered with a tint of whitish blue. I also see a small area of fluorescent green color. When I sleep, I am subjected to virtual reality type pictures like programs being run through a computer with a 3-D effect. There is a constant whirring and clicking effect that comes from other implants such as the ears."

In review. Visual implants are at time called visual prosthetus, but are actually attachments rather than replacements. They are oblong with a square opening in the middle of them. They are located on the cornea (rapped around them) and are connected to rods/wires that are spread out over the facial area and under the skin like a mask. The coloring of the implant is blended with natural eye colors to camouflage it. When the victim closes his or her eyes there is a constant presence of a red-orange haze centered around a small screen. There are also two orbs with a tint of whitish blue, and a small area of fluorescent green. Visual reality pictures are run like programs from a computer, that have a three-D effect. The left forehead scalp area has a whirring noise.

BIO-CHIPS that "talk" to nerve cells.

Some of the readers will have already heard of the bio-chips that talk to nerve cells. Stanford Research Inst. has been working on such bio-chips. Bear in mind, public research is generally a cover for what has already been discovered.

HOLOGRAPHIC OR H INSERT-- There is one type which has been called a Holographic Insert or H Implant. A holographic memory is created by this implant. This may or may not be the Nanobots which are capable of creating holographic images in the mind. Let's discuss the nanobots.

HOLOGRAPHIC IMPLANTS VIA NANOTECHNOLOGY & NANOBOTS

Nanotechnology is technology pertaining to very tiny robots and tiny computers that are in the range of nanometer-size (10 to 1,000 billionth of a meter). Nano means "one-billioneth". In other words, extremely microscopic, we are talking about robots & machines one-billionth of a meter large. The Scanning Tunneling Microscope (STM) makes it possible to see something the size of a single atom. The STM will also pick up atoms and move them.

People who are interested in nano-technology have regular meetings in the Silicon Valley.

A Johannesburg, South African company Nanoteq (recently taken over by the Amer. company Microchip Technology) was the company that created nanotechnology encoders (based on a non-linear logarithm that mixes transmission lines and changes codes frequently). Microchip Technology is putting these encoders into their series of microcontrollers which are EEPROM-based.

The encoders are called Keeloq hopping-code technology. They are good in protecting microwave, ELF, infrared and radio-wave transmissions. Microchip Corp. is creating a sub-company group called Secure Data Products to work with this type of technology. In other words, the ALEX system reported on in *Vol. 2* is being miniaturized.

Another Nanotechnology company is Nanosystems, which is working with the Jansen Pharmaceutica N.V. unit of Illuminati-controlled Johnson and Johnson.

We know numerous companies like the two mentioned above, who are working on Nanotechnology. We also know that they are not going to tell us their trade secrets and what they have really developed. For instance, this author had a hearty laugh when he read *The New York Times (11/19/96* pg. C1) article "Feat of the minuscule: scientists make abacus with carbon molecules: invention at Swiss research laboratory may be a step toward building faster computers", because the article is patently disinformation! According to the article a Dr. James M. Gimzewski and colleagues discovered how to make tiny balls of 60 carbon-atoms each. They call these balls "Buckyballs". They can move these balls via what they call a "scanning tunneling device". A picture of the teeny-tiny 60-atom balls was shown in the article. So what did they do with this ability? They built an abacus (yeah sure! Come on guys!).

If the reader understands computers--a computer at the most basic level is simply a base 2 number system. Anything that can consistently move or switch can be the basis for a computer. A computer is simply an enormous amount of on-off switches, where 0 can stand for off and 1 for on, etc. The article states, "Scientists at Switzerland have invented an ultraminiature abacus in which spherical carbon molecules sliding along the microscopic copper groves act as the counting beads for performing arithmetic calculations." (So they are using it for arithmetic, yeah sure!)

IBM reported that its scientists used the STM to move individual atoms so that they spelled "I-B-M" in atoms. If you believe that the ability to arrange individual atoms and tailor-build molecules was so that IBM scientists could spell IBM, then this book isn't for you.

A more recent *NY Times article* (2/2/97, p. E6) discusses how Xerox Corporation has created sensors the thickness of peach fuzz. These are called MEMS (micro-electomechanical systems). The article states, "MEMS are all about doing more with less, about being lean, mean, and next to invisible." The article is lean on facts. It does give a hint of the incredible power these little gadgets have when the writer launches into his propaganda tirade at the end of the article, "Paradoxically the fear that accompanies the fantasy of nanotechnology is not that the culture will be as stratified and fragmented as Victorian England, but that the new culture will be one that is unrecognizable to everyone alive today." That is true, this nano technology is taking us to the place that society will not be recognizable. The age of the future is planned to be the age of robots--humans if they are to survive are to be robotic slaves for the illuminated elite. However, this is not paranoid fear as the *NY Times* writer implies, but it is the unfortunate reality humanity faces.

Some people apparently are already experiencing it. One victim of mind-control, whose father is Military Intelligence and whose family is part of the Illuminati, claims that he has been subjected to tiny robots called nanobots. These nanobots have been featured on TV, where they have been billed as an asset for surgeons. Reportedly, these tiny robots can work off of 10-100 kilohertz of beamed power. They have coil-shaped antennas, 2 little six-pointed "wings" to attach and move themselves with. These tiny boron-carbon nanobots have all kinds of purposes. One use is for multitudes of these Nanobots to be placed into a single victim's head, where they are programmed to migrate to certain programmed positions where they can suppress the optical signals to the brain and replace these signals **with their own holographic images** that can be externally transmitted to the nanobots or preprogrammed in.

They are trying or have succeeded, depending upon who is talking about nanobots, in making self-replicating assemblers. In other words, they have built miniature robots that build other robots. (Sounds like something the Japanese would do.)

Nanobot researchers talk about how great it will be to have tiny robots that are smaller than a red blood cell circulating in our blood removing fat, bacteria, and viruses.

SOME SOURCES. Recent articles on nanotechnolgy include: *Electronic Times* (12/7/95), *Electronics Weekly* (11/29/95), *Electronic Engineering Times* (11/27/95), the *L.A. Times* (11/11/94, 12/21/94, 2/7/96, 2/20/96), the *NY Times* (4/30/94, 11/19/96, 2/2/97), the *Wall St. Journal* (5/12/94, 1/9/96, 2/26/96). Eric Drexler wrote *Engines of Creation* (Anchor Press/Doubleday, 1986), a book about nanotechnology.

Books that will provide more information on nanotechnology:
Drexler, K. Eric and Peterson, Chris and Pergamit, Gayle. *Unbounding the Future: The Nanotechnology Revolution*. Morrow, 1991.

Hameroff, Stuart R. *Ultimate Computing: Biomolecular Consciousness and Nanotechnology.* Elsevier Science Pub., 1987.

Whitehouse, D.J. and Kawata, K., eds. *Nanotechnology: Proceedings of the Joint Forum/ERATO Symposium held at Warwick Univ., 21-22 August 1990.* Adam Hilger, 1991.

C4. MEMEX/BRAIN LINK IMPLANTS

The public doesn't understand that programs showing research are typically disinformation to hide what's already in use. On "Cyberlife", 12/17/96, a TV story was done on Dr. Ted Berger, a biological engineer, at U.S.CA, who is working on a microchip that will be a substitute for the hippocampus' memory. The story stated that in two years a brain chip can be made that mimics the pattern of brain neurons so that it can be plugged in.

The New World Order's computer-satellite system allows a. communication devices to be embedded within a victim, as well as b. memex devices that are linked to the natural brain to boast the brain's memory.

In the *Vol. 2* book, the ALEX (Amalgamated Logrythmic Encrypted Transmissions) system was described which allows the NWO to pulse codes on different frequencies in an erratic fashion that makes the transmissions hard to even spot. The ALEX system is one component of their ability to secretly transmit orders and information to their slaves. When a slave receives a body-suit of implants, one implant will be a central control implant that controls the body suit of implants and receives information from an external transmitting source. Some of the slaves have had their central controlling implant at the base of their skull.

The concepts that Hollywood portrayed in the sci-fi movie "Johnny Mnemonic" where an oligarchy (in league with big business and the crime syndicates) controls the world, and uses a human who has an implant that stores tremendous amounts of information is-- sad to say-- not so far removed from what is already happening in secret.

INTERFACE DEVICES

The biocybernetic researchers for the New World Order have working on a number of interface devices to interface (link) the human brain with computers. A number of devices have been created. There is even a biochip the size of a large organic molecule that works as a memex implant.

The idea of implants is difficult for some people to accept. I am in the possession of x-rays showing implants, of anechoic chamber readings showing that victims were receiving constant synthetic telemetry signals from outside transmitting sites, and a variety of other items showing evidence that this activity is going on. For instance, Professor Ingmar Wickbom, M.D. of the University Hospital, University of Calif. Medical Ctr., San Diego on 10/6/'83 wrote a letter "To Whom It May Concern" that skull x-rays of Robert Naslund indicated implants at the base of the skull that are "possibly some form of brain transmitters". Some of the victims I personally know have managed to extract fiber optic fibers from their bodies.

ORGANIC BIOPROCESSORS LINKED TO VIRUSES-- One direction that the New World Order took was to develop biochips and bioprocessors, that is three-dimensional organic circuitry that functions as computers. The conductive velocities of these miniature organic computers (protein lattices) are at least one million times faster than nerve cells. The circuit power of a given size of miniature organic computers is at least a million times greater than the same size of brain matter. Molecular computers made of living matter can be grown from DNA templates of genetically engineered bacteria. Synthetic proteins have been developed which match what they want to make into mini-computers. The end product is a bioprocessor (tiny computer) within a cell. These mini-computers are specifically linked with viruses which migrate to specific parts of the body. Viruses are primarily nucleoproteins, some of the small ones are not even alive, and they don't even have metabolism. They do not have a metabolism to kill with an antibiotic. The Neurotropic viruses migrate to the central nervous system (nerves), the Dermotropic viruses migrate to the skin, the Pneumotropic viruses go to the lungs, the Viscerotropic go to the abdomen, and other viruses go to other sites in the body. Because many viruses will select what area of the body they will reside in, the New World Order can tailor (in tissue-culture) their bio-implants (which consist of a virus plus a bioprocessor) so they can target where they will end up in the mind-controlled slave. Such an virus implant is also called a symbiote, because it lives off of the host, the mind-controlled slave's own body. These virus implants have life-expectancies that are a number of years long. A number of these implants within the victim serve as spies-in-the-camp, reporting detailed records of what the host's body is doing.

Research into how to splice and dice genetic material and then recombine it has been going on for a number of decades, and is very sophisticated. There are a number of very technical books on how to do it, but only a reader familiar with the language of genetic research could decipher their techniques & abilities with miniature RNA and DNA pieces. Several genetic books/papers describe how viruses can get host genetic material or other genetic material, thus giving us a window on how they transfer the miniature computers made from DNA templates to the viruses. In the book *Mechanics of DNA Replication & Recombination, Proceedings of a UCLA Symposium held in Keystone, CO April 3-9, 1983*,(edited by Nicholas R. Cozzarelli, of the Dept. of Molecular Biology Univ. of CA, Berkeley, published in NY by Alan K. Liss, Inc.) one of the leaders in this field said on page 12, "I remain faithful to the conviction that anything a cell can do, a biochemist should be able to do." And yes they have been replicating strands of RNA & DNA, creating whatever they want.

The Illuminati have been using these computers-in-viruses implants at least since the 1990s. The implants are easy to insert into the victim's body, and the specific virus transport themselves and attach themselves where they are to go. The Illuminati then build body suits of these implants. The size of these tiny implants vary from tens of millicrons to hundreds of millimicrons. Just their tiny size makes them difficult to destroy. From research on victims, it appears that a central computer is implanted to control or interact with the body suit of implants.

PSYCHICS-- One of the Illuminati's research projects was to discover the psi gene--the genetic gene that would permit them to breed a master race with psychic abilities. One of the groups that the Illuminati has controlled which did research in this area was Nazi Germany. Mengele, in fact, was interested in the co-relation of blood types to psychic abilities. Blood type B apparently has more psychics than other blood types. People who have true psychic abilities have a more complex molecular lattice structure than those who don't. They also have energy fields of 500 cps or higher. This is in contrast with most brain activity which lies in the 0 cps to 100 cps range. The heart operates at up to about 250 cps, and the resonant frequency for a nerve is 360 cps. In other words, the high cps. energy field is a tip off that the person is psychic. An secret program has been carried out by the Illuminati to identify every person on the planet who is capable of being psychic. They are identified and then assigned to people (a male and female) to monitor the person. Psychics are often recruited into intelligence agencies to bring them under the power of the Illuminati's establishment. In other cases, they are simply watched and monitored, some who are threats to them are killed, and others receive mind-control.

They have been identifying people with psychic abilities and then trying to track and/or control them. They also will try to recruit or place these people under mind-control or both.

C5. TORTURE/NERVE & MUSCLE STIMULATION IMPLANTS

When a body suit is placed into a slave, implants are strategically placed in their body so that if they do not comply or if the Network wants to make the person dissociative they can direct the control implant to trigger these implants to activate. For instance two implants will be place on opposite side near the uterus and one in the lower back in order to give the handlers the ability to cause lots of lower back pain. Prior to electronically putting someone into an altered & controlled dissociative state, they will wear a person down with pain to make them dissociative. For instance, if an implant in the middle (square in the heel) of the foot goes off, a ball of electricity like a sparkler is activated causing pain, anxiety and discomfort. Some describe it as a hot pin prick in the foot.

One victim and her mother both received these torture implants, and she was able to locate and remove some of them from her mother. I would like to paraphrase her description of finding these torture implants, "I discovered fiberoptic type implants on the lower back and also on the line where the leg and buttock join. The fiberoptic sites on the lower back was 1" to the left of the spine, and consisted of two holes where the implants had been inserted which were one above the other, and at a distance of 5/8" from each other. I was able to partially remove both of these fiber implants, but knots remained under the holes where tiny parts of the implants tenaciously remained. These two back implants seemed to connect signal-wise to the implant at the junction of the buttock and leg. This latter implant could create pain in the left leg and foot."

Sometimes a crackling sound like crickets accompanies the signal to create pain.

A vibrating electrical field is often used on victims of electronic control.

(Unconfirmed but possible:) One victim described a device that could have a dial rotated to allow the sender to chose different types of signals to be sent. This would be pointed at a victim. As this sounds like a good possibility, it has been included here, although there is nothing to confirm such a piece of equipment which is probably if it exists mounted on a tripod for stability.

BELLDAME TORTURE IMPLANT--Nothing available to report.

SUICIDE IMPLANT--Some claim that an implanted chip has been created that will release a poison upon a signal which will kill its host. This author has seen absolutely no evidence that such an implant exists. It's use is likely disinformation.

C6. TRACKING & I.D. IMPLANTS

This type of implant has gotten most of the public's attention. For several years now the public has been aware that animals, military personnel as well as civilians have been given tracking implants. Objects also have received tracking implants.

DCI of the CIA Bob Gates is reported to have said, "If you can't identify people, you can't control them."

The *Wall St. Journal*, 3/30/1992 reported that the FDA proposed that tracking devices onto 35 classes of medical devices such as heart valves and breast implants. The excuse was that they needed to track life-sustaining medical devices better. The list of devices to be tracked includes cardiovascular filters, defibrillators, pacemaker electrodes, heart valves, tracheal protheses, breathing monitors, portable oxygen generators, ventilators, infusion oxygen generators, ventilators, infusion pumps and various silicone gel-filled devices such as testicular implants and breast implants, and spinal implants.

The Hughs Identification Device has been placed onto such objects as breast implants. These tracking implants are reported to have a life of 250 years. Their tracking I.D. number consists of #, letter, #, letter, # etc.

The U.S. Navy has employed RF/ID "waterproof bracelets" for tracking individuals underwater. The U.S. military has required its personnel to take tracking implants under the pretense of being able to find them if they get lost, and millions of men and women in the military have already gotten these tracking implants. A book published by the U.S. Army War College in 1994 (entitled *The Revolution in Military Affairs and Conflict Short of War*) shows the Army's interest in tracking implants. Many tracking implants were placed into military personnel during Desert Shield/Desert Storm operations.

Some tracking implants are programmable and can record vital data about a person. They could also be used as a debit card for financial transactions, which is why they have gotten so much attention as the much feared Mark of the Beast.

Texe Marr's popular book *Project L.U.C.I.D.* exposed the L.U.C.I.D. System which will be a central clearing house for keeping track of everyone. He reproduced a diagram from an issue of *Narc Officer* magazine showing how the system would connect an individual's universal biometrics card with the justice, data communications, and telecommunications systems of the World Order. Texe Marrs and others are fascinated at the choice of words & acronyms that the establishment keeps picking.

Dr. Creusat, a medical doctor with Interpol is the official designer of L.U.C.I.D. He and his co-designer initially refused to reveal what the acronym L.U.C.I.D. stands for. Some speculate that it stands for the obvious: "Lucifer's I.D." system. It's also strange that AT&T called their new company derived from Bell Labs (which has been involved in mind-control for the Illuminati) "Lucent Technologies". Again some people speculate that Lucent means Lucifer's Enterprises. And what did Lucent come out with? They came out with a new computer network called "Inferno" (another name for Hell), written in a language called "Limbo" (a place in Hell) with computer protocols called "Styx" (a river in Hell).

And then on the other side of the Atlantic, a world-wide net called Demon Internet is being offered to people in Europe. (To have Demon Internet installed for you by

Demon Internet, Ltd. at 322 Regents Park Rd., Finchley, London N3 2QQ costs initially £1,762.50 for the first month according to recent company literature.) Again the obvious question, why are these companies using occult--even satanic terms for their products?

Illuminati member and chairman of IBM Thomas Watson, Jr. set up a crytology research group at IBM's research lab in Yorktown Heights in NY. This group was led by Horst Feistel, and it developed a cipher code called "Lucifer". Lucifer was then sold to Lloyd's of London. Lucifer was created under the auspices of the NSA. Lucifer worked off of an algorithm. The NSA had set things up via IBM so that it has had a back door to anything encrypted with Lucifer. (By the way NSA's partner in the U.K. is the brit's GCHQ.)

The paper trail indicates that L.U.C.I.D. intends to keep track of people by using biometrics (iris scan, fingerprint, voiceprint, photos, and other bio identification features) that will be encoded on cards (or implants.) DNA databanks are already giving computers an enormous ability to identify millions of americans via their DNA.

Texe Marrs also calls our attention in his book about L.U.C.I.D. to the important mandatory ISO 9000 program, which makes it mandatory for all products to have an ISO 9000 I.D. number and their approval and certification. Over 100 countries have adopted the ISO 9000 standards. In 1999, use of the system, which was voluntary, will become mandatory. The government is also setting up TPN (Trading Partner Numbers). While obtaining all these numbers to do business is not directly mind-control; if a person can't buy or sell without the approved numbers, it does tend to place a person or company under the World Order's control. The NACCB in England and the ASQC and the ANSI have been given power to accredit people with the ISO 9000 numbers. IOS is also in some type of overseeing role in the accreditation process. Here we go, more acronym monsters to control our lives!

But while attention has been focused on this, many other implants have been implanted for mind-control. It all works together. The tracking implants certainly are an external means of controlling people that will work along side of the mind-control to lock people into their Established System.

The tracking implants have broader application than just to keep track of an individual's location, or his financial records. Tracking implants can be used to send bio information on the heart beat, the EEG, EKG and other bio tracking methods. Researchers who are following the field of tracking implants will remember the article "An Eight Channel Micropowered PAM/FM Biomedical Telemetry System" in the *NTC '71 Record*, p. 309. The Air Force Office of Scientific Research, NASA financed that study which involved an 8-channel micropowered telemetry system designed to sense and transmit physiological data. The system was actually successfully used. They will also remember an earlier article in the *IEEE Transactions on Biomedical Engineering*, Vol. BME-14, Oct. 1967 entitled, "The Design and Use of an FM/AM Radiotelemetry System for Multichannel Recording of Biological Data." And then they will remember an even earlier report from the Biophysics Lab, of the Aerospace Medical Labs of the Aerospace Medical Div. at Wright Patterson AFB, Ohio dated 1965 entitled, "Personal telemetry transmitter system." The point is that tracking implant research has been with us for several decades, and is being utilized to control slaves who have body suits of implants. They have been publicly monitoring animals with bio-telemetry for several decades, it doesn't take any stretch of the imagination to comprehend that they are also doing it with their slaves.

While these articles were from the '60s, soon afterwards a book appeared Mackay, R.S. *Biomedical Telemetry, Sensing and Transmitting Biological Information from Animals and Man.* John Wiley & Sons, Inc.: NY, 1970.

Faceprints are a new method which

uses a math algorithm that establishes distances between eye pupils, nasal base, lip center and other facial points. The algorithm produces a 50-bit number that is person-specific. The plans are to code this along with other unique I.D. features onto the magnetic strips of I.D. cards.

The American CIA developed in conjunction with the Thai police a smart identity card for use in Thailand. The Computerworld Smithsonian Award was given to the Thai Ministry of Interior for this "innovative technology" in 1990. In other words, one part of Big Brother patted another on the back. Was the CIA protecting us, Mr. & Mrs. Citizens by doing this so-called "intelligence" work, or was it working on another agenda by developing this high tech ID card? Later the military adopted the MARC ID card based on similar ideas.

Bell Communications (in NJ) developed voice activated credit cards. Reports are that colds can throw one's voice off so that it's rejected by the flat microchip in the voice card.

When this author calls the World Order's mind-control "total", he means just that--it is designed to control the body, mind and spirit of a person. By taking bio information via implants, DNA codes, blood types, retina scans, hand geometry and face prints, without our real consent the World Order has effectively stolen our Fifth Amendment rights. John Adams wrote, "Property must be secured or liberty cannot exist." (*The Works of John Adams*, Vol. 6:9, p. 280.) The purpose of the American government was to protect property. But they have stolen our privacy. They have put into law (contrary to the Constitution & Bill of Rights) several laws that will force us to provide information to computer data banks that will be used to determine if we can buy or sell, if we can get employment or not, & if we are deemed politically correct or not. And those on the wrong side of the NWO may be incarcerated and programmed.

While tracking implants are not mind-control per se, they will work hand in glove with actual mind-control to make sure no one under mind-control can effectively get away. Therefore all tracking devices must be seen in the broader context as being devices to assist in the implementation of total mind-control.

One genius scientist who worked on the bio-chip and who **still works** as a civilian for the government personally told this author that he is excused for his help on the project because technology is neutral. Technology is neither good nor bad, so he claims. I disagree, and so did another scientist who did repent of helping with this infernal project, and apologized to this author. These bio-chips are going to be used for the enslavement of mankind, and for total mind-control. There is no justification, no excuse great enough to allow people to side-step their responsibility in the creation of such technology intended for evil. We have a responsibility to know how our inventions will be used before we create them. It doesn't take a rocket scientist to know what these inventions are going to be used for. Unfortunately, this man who assisted with the bio-chip is a rocket scientist.

Section D. Direct monitoring & manipulation of the brain/mind

D1. Direct monitoring of thought waves.

For many years, the basic waves have told us basic things about the mind. Rapid Beta waves come from normal mental activity like you are doing now, alpha waves indicate relaxation, theta waves mean meditation & memories, & ultraslow deltas mean deep sleep. Cognitive demands cause the gamma waves to synchronize. Alpha (as well as Theta) oscillations both encode and access cortical codes--what we describe as K-lines in this *Deeper Insights* book. The thalamus & the cortex are involved in memory. People with good memories have higher alpha freks than persons with poor memories. EEGs are used to watch these waves & their oscillations.

PET scans are even more revealing. Thoughts can be analyzed in terms of the various parts of the mind that they require to produce them. In word-reading the mind activates specific posterior visual areas, and when the mind must identify a noun specific frontal & temporo-parietal areas are active. (See Posner, "Seeing the Mind", *Science* magazine, 10/29/93, p. 673). PET scans & EEGs are interesting, but evoked potentials tell it all.

The National Security Agency has a monopoly on monitoring the evoked potentials emitted by people's brain's electrical flux which are electromagnetic emissions in the 30-50 Hz, 5 milliwatt range.

When a person thinks, or moves their body, or sees something, the brain creates an evoked potential or set of evoked potentials. These emissions can be decoded to see what the person is thinking or doing. This is called RNM (Remote Neural Monitoring). It is reported that the Kinnecome group at the NSA is involved with this type of monitoring round-the-clock of victims of electronic mind-control using EMF equipment that is scattered across the nation. A Signals Intelligence EMF scanning network allows the NSA's computers to pinpoint and track any individual in the United States by watching for their specific bioelectrical field. In many ways, the tracking implants and the national I.D. cards are redundant, but the World Order wants to increase their control, while keeping their best technology secret.

The NSA information is not randomly passed on to any individual, but they do have their ways to filter down information to mind-control handlers if they need to. They have exhibited an amazing ability to track the two co-authors, but that doesn't mean that they are all powerful, just because their computers can remotely detect and keep track of people. This book is evidence that there is still some elbow room for independent thought in this world. What's more frightening is the apathy in the world to stand up to the control.

But the question may arise, how can they get any good reading on the brain's evoked potentials from a distance? The equipment is a combined use of ELF-modulated masers along with Doppler-shifted interrogative RMCT masers. This technique allows them to send syntel directly through walls. A Maser is a microwave equivalent to a laser.

TESLA WAVES USED TO READ MINDS & IMPLANT VOICES

According to reports, the Soviets were the first to discover in the 1960's that the human brain had 23 EEG band wave lengths, of which 11 of these were totally independent. By knowing those 11 band wave lengths, and then sending signals based upon those wave lengths, the human mind could be manipulated. The person's PRIME FREK, that is their biological frequency needs to be identified, and then it is possible to remotely implant thoughts and voices into their minds.

In the early 1970's, the U.S. Documentation Center as well as the White House's spokesman had both reported that electromagnetic waves could be used to communicate with "a target biosystem." (This was brought out in the U.S. District Court of the State of Utah where inmates who had been subjected to mind-control in prison tried unsuccessfully to fight back in court.)

The University of Utah was just one of several dirty research facilities which researched on human guinea pigs how Tesla waves could be used to manipulate the mind into hearing voices. They discovered how simple it is to use these waves to override and implant thoughts into the mind, and to read the thoughts of the mind. Then they subjected hundreds of inmates at the Gunnison Facility of the Utah State Prison, the State Hospital and perhaps other Utah State Prison facilities to this brand of mind-control in order to test it. It certainly works. Numerous inmates tried to fight the system, and the obvious mind-control that so many of them were being subjected to. Hundreds of the inmates were subjected to heavy drugs and other severe punishment when they protested. Still they continued to protest. This was in the 1970's, now the technology is being used over the entire United States.

The Tesla waves are sent to a victim in the following sequence of events. Computers programmed with artificial intelligence handle most electronic controlled slaves. When the slave does something the computer can't handle then human handlers step in to help. Men and women staff consoles attached to CRAY computers where they monitor the victims that need special attention. The full fledged electronic monitoring involves an entire body suit of various implant devices in the victim's body. From the body suit, the controllers are able to track the victim, hear what the victim hears, and see via tiny fiberoptics some of what is going on around and with the victim. The staff have pre-recorded sound bites that they usually like to select, as well as occasion actual live messages. They transmit these messages, which are picked up by satellite and relayed to whatever large TV broadcasting antenna or GWEN tower or other antenna is near the victim. The signal is then relayed to some object near the victim, which serves as a relay antenna to pass the signal on to the victim. It's believed that some type of implant picks up the signal and broadcasts the correct Tesla wave pattern to create voices within the victim.

Meanwhile, the tracking implant keeps the staff and the satellite system informed every few minutes as to exactly where to send the voice signals.

The Master computer and central HQ for electronic mind control is reported to be Boulder, CO. Several places have been identified by this author as key points. One report came in that transponders are being made in Boulder, CO. The central cellular computer is in the Boulder, CO National Bureau of Standards building. AT & T is cooperating with electronic mind-control also. NORAD tracks both space and earthbound objects. They have a Cheyenne Mtn. Air Station. Although it is clear from reports from mind-control victims that NORAD is actively involved in mind-control, exactly how the different tracking responsibilities are delegated is not known to this author at this time. It appears that there is duplication of efforts, and several NWO branches maintain the same capability.

D2. VOICES/ OR THOUGHTS SENT ELECTRONICALLY DIRECTLY INTO THE MIND

Brain waves are connected to thought. When thought occurs there is a great deal of brain wave activity. The brain carries out what some people call "parallel processors"--that is it breaks a thinking process down into components and works on all simultaneously. When the World Order's researchers have attempted to tamper with the mind they can place thoughts into the mind by tampering with the processes that create thoughts, without actually having to replicate the thought they want. In other words, they are deflecting the natural process into the synthetic process they want to get their desired result.

For group mind control, or isolated individuals, ELF waves can be sent that interact with the brain's natural waves. The human brain synchronizes with the incoming waves and the end result can be panic, sleep, or a hypnotic trance. The wrong kinds of ELF waves can even damage the brain.

In 1961, Allen Frey, a free-lance biophysicist and engineering psychologist reported that humans can hear microwaves. This had been known by the military since W.W.II. To form complex words and sentences, Frey realized he'd have to approach the level of 10 $mW/(cm)^2$, but the bottom line is microwave-created movement of cochlear hair cells can be done.

In the late 1950's, Dr. Patrick Flanagan developed an electronic telepathy machine which was called the Neurophone. He writes about the Neurophone and its capabilities to transmit acoustic (sounds, voices) directly into the brain of an individual using the electromagnetic fields in his forward to the book *Angels Don't Play This HAARP* by Jeane Manning and Dr. Nick Begich. The patent office held up his patent on the machine for 12 years. Dr. Flanagan writes, "Certain types of electromagnetic signals can induce visual and auditory effects when the field around the head or body is at the right frequency, intensity and modulation levels. We are not accusing the developers of HAARP of amoral intentions for the use of this technology but the potential for abuse is there." (*Angels Don't Play This HAARP*, p. 6)

First, this author highly recommends the book *Angels Don't Play This HAARP*; and second, this author is going to flat outright say that the developers of HAARP do not deserve the benefit of the doubt anymore--because some of them have a clear track record of developing and using mind-control techniques. HAARP is nothing less than a mind-control project.

One of the persons that people trying to investigate HAARP kept running into was Col. John Alexander. Col. John Alexander was involved with the development of HAARP. (*Angels Don't Play This HAARP*, p. 19) Trauma-based mind-control victims have identified Col. John Alexander as being one of the primary mind-control programmers. He has been a key player in a number of mind-control projects for the government.

Wright-Patterson AFB, Dayton, OH also played a role in research for HAARP. A number of trauma-based mind-control victims have identified Wright-Patterson as a mind-control programming center. Apparently, the Air Force used some of the brain-stem scarred whiz kids at the base to try and develop Tesla technology.

ARCO (via their ARCO Power Technologies, Inc. subsidiary) was the Air Force's prime contractor on the first phase of HAARP's development. ARCO has company doctors who are helping program mind-control victims. One of ARCO's board members was Dr. Simon Ramo, who is a big player with the military and the secret government. The awarding of ARCO's subsidiary APTI for the contract smelled like a rat, because other companies were obviously better suited than this tiny subsidiary with a staff of 25 in Washington, D.C. Besides the mind-control aspect of things, the World Order set things up so that APTI has the patent (#4,686,605, Method & Apparatus for Altering a Region in the Earth's Atmosphere, Ionosphere, and/or Magnetosphere) for the HAARP project, so they are a natural shoe-in for the project. There were other patents involved too, and about dozen of these patents assigned to APTI have now ended up with the large Raytheon Corp. (APTI was bought by E-Systems, and E-Systems was bought by Raytheon. All 3 are working fast and furiously developing technology for the NWO.)

The NWO's Stanford Research Institute developed many of HAARP's high-frequency transmitting programs with money from the Defense Nuclear Agency. (This was from *Angels Don't Play This HAARP*, p.47, which cites an NTIA memo, "NTIA Preliminary Assessment of Air Force Ionospheric Research Instrument", 10/1/1993.)

Mitre Corp. was also involved with HAARP. This author has exposed the Mitre Corp. in the past as being both Illuminati-run, & a co-partner with the NSA.

When a HAARP researcher pestered the Air Force for info, he was referred to Kirkland AFB, NM another site deeply involved in mind-control and black projects. (*Angels Don't Play This HAARP*, p.63) Los Alamos Nat. Labs also is involved with both mind-control & HAARP. Their Blackbeard Team is connected to the Alexis Satellite, which may or may not be connected to the ALEX system which this author has been warning about. Supposedly this is a gamma ray research satellite, but this author doesn't know if this is the truth or a cover story.

The Air Command & Staff College's *Airpower Journal* lets the "cat out of the bag" so to speak when they reveal that weapons like HAARP will be used against civilians. The military wants to use weapons like HAARP to disorient people's mental facilities. Newt Gingerich wrote the forward to an official US Air Force book entitled *Low-Intensity Conflict and Modern Technology* which described how electromagnetic weapons could be used to subjugate U.S. citizens who opposed their government. Cpt. Paul Tyler wrote the chapter on electromagnetic and psychotronic weapons. A paper trail does exist of the intentions to use HAARP for mind-control by our government.

For the sake of completeness, and to provide the readers with a paper trail, I'll quote directly from this official Air Force book from the part written by Cpt. Tyler,

"The potential applications of artificial electromagnetic fields are wide-ranging and can be used in many military or quasi-military situations....Some of these potential uses include dealing with terrorist groups...crowd control,...and anti-personnel techniques in tactical warfare. In all cases, the electromagnetic systems would be used to produce mild to severe physiological disruption or perceptual distortion or disorientation. In addition, the ability of individuals to function could be degraded to such a point that they would be combat ineffective. Another advantage of electromagnetic systems is that they provide coverage over large areas with a single system [this is an obvious reference to HAARP]....Recently, pulsed electromagnetic fields have been reported to induce cellular transcription related to reproduction of DNA....Knowledge of mechanisms of actions of Radio-Frequency Radiation (RFR) with living systems and the assessment of pulsed RFR effects, will demonstrate the vulnerability of humans to complex pulsed electromagnetic radiation fields...Experiments with electroshock, RFR experiments and the increasing understanding of the brain as an electrically-mediated-organ, suggest the serious probability that impressed electromagnetic fields can be disruptive of purposeful behavior and may be capable of directing and/or interrogating such behavior." THERE YOU HAVE IT, a PAPER TRAIL that the MILITARY WANTS HAARP'S MIND-CONTROL capabilities.

Dr. Abraham Liboff of Oakland Univ. has demonstrated how low-energy circularly polarized electromagnetic waves can change the brain's ability to keep out certain ions, minerals, and chemicals. HAARP can also be used with genetic manipulating ionized radiation and chemicals to specifically control the mind. (See Chapter 8, section 2 for a complete discussion of this.)

SUMMARY OF ELF WAVE MIND CONTROL CAPABILITIES

Naval Intelligence and other groups have conducted research into ELF waves upon the human body and mind. Some of the many things that can be done to the human body and mind with ELF waves include:

a. put a person to sleep
b. make a person tired or depressed
c. create a feeling of fear in a person
d. create a zombie state
e. create a violent state
f. create a state of being sexually aggressive
g. change cellular chemistry
h. change hormone levels
i. inhibit or enhance M(RNA) synthesis/processes
j. control the DNA transaction process
k. control biological spin and proton coupling constants in DNA, RNA & RNA transferases.

But electronic control of the brain comes in many forms. Perhaps the controllers only want to carry out mood shifts. ELF waves which will penetrate walls, and even go through the earth will create mood shifts according to how many cycles per minute they are sent at. Studies have proven that the time for ELF waves to cause a shift in mood is between 6 to 10 seconds (not a long time).

ELF waves below 6 cycles per second cause subjects to become emotionally upset and this rate may also disrupt bodily functions. At 8.2 cycles/sec. the person gets an elevated high such as would be accomplished by a master of meditation. 11 to 11.3 cycles per second cause the brain to become agitated and to begin riotous behavior. ELF waves could be directed at a population to help incite riots.

Research has been carried out to determine how the brain's sensory inputs are coded. It has been determined that visual input is relayed and built into a series of changing maps. The olfactory sense has thousands of specific codes to determine smells, and combinations of these are triggered by an object. One clue that gave researchers initially the idea that different individual human brains have a common internal electronic type coding for specific thoughts is that drugs will have such common effects on the human race--even though one obtains individuals from widely different genetic pools.

The best research is of course kept secret. We primarily have to report on what is released. E.R. John in *Mechanisms of Memory* (NY: Academic Press, 1967, pp. 348-349) announced his discovery that central neuro-electrical codes are indeed used by the human brain. Information transfers in the brain have been shown to be related to neuro-electrical frequency codes, and that a brain can be manipulated by beaming those codes from an external sources. For instance, Hippocampal neurons will have burst-firing frequencies between 100-200 Hz.

Here are some of the resonance frequencies for manipulating these senses:
Visual centers of mind--25 Hz
Sense of touch center--9 Hz
Auditory (hearing) ctr--15 Hz
Motor control--10 Hz
Subconscious thoughts--20 Hz.

If the World Order wants to cause a person to make a gesture, they use ELF-modulated microwaves that are "KEYED" to distinctive brainwave patterns that are called "PREPARATION SETS." If the controllers want to create an emotion they use specific "EXCITATION POTENTIALS" by creating the correct resonance frek which in turn creates a specific emotional state.

Victims of electronic mind-control often complain of electronic fields placed around their bodies. Recently, when an electrical storm blew a major metro power grid, one victim of electronic mind-control lost the force field that had been encircling her body.

The brain is also attenuated to the earth magnetic field. By manipulating the magnetic field around a person, the magnitude of the beamed codes needed to elicit a change in the brain can be reduced. For example J.I. Jacobson changed melatonin levels in subjects by manipulating the magnetic field in conjunction with beamed "signals". See Jacobson, J.I. "Pineal-hypothalamic tract meditation of pico Tesla magnetic fields in the treatment of neurological disorders." *FASEB Journal*, 1994, 8, p. A656. Sandyk also successfully used manipulation of the magnetic fields and reported this in Sandyk, R. Successful treatment of multiple sclerosis with magnetic fields. *International Journal of Neuroscience*, 1992, pp. 237-250.

It was discovered that if an alternating magnetic field at a distance (resonance) frequency is superimposed upon a steady-state magnetic field, calcium and other ions within the brain can be moved with little energy.

When this was discovered, researchers began to watch to see if variations in the earth's magnetic field during geomagnetic storms and in other situations, would affect the thinking of masses of people. They discovered that there were indeed changes to the human brain as a result of magnetic fluctuations.

Cognitive thinking and conscious thought occurs between the temperatures of 308°- 312° K (or 35°-39° C) and the fundamental wave length associated with these thoughts are approximately 10 micrometers (which is an infrared wavelength.)

Signals that blend with Background Radiation can be manipulated to control the brain. The temperature of the brain directly relates to how certain signals will affect it. It is believed that structures within the thalamus are involved with modulating the temperature sensitivity of biochemical oscillators.

Heterodyne Principle Used. This

principle is that multiple frequencies when applied to a nonlinear device produce new frequencies which are the sums and differences of the applied frequencies and their harmonics. In other words a local oscillator (also called a strong sinusoidal carrier wave) can multiply a weak signal. A microwave signal at a frequency A is mixed with a microwave local oscillator at frequency B in a nonlinear mixer. The mixer output signal which is A minus B is a faithful amplitude and phase reproduction of the original microwave signal but at a low, fixed frequency so that it can be measured simply with low-frek measuring devices. Heterodyne signals cost more to produce but cost is no problem for the government. Multiport network analysers, which use several simple power detectors and a computer analysis approach provide a less expensive way to measure both the relative voltage amplitude & the phase.

Cell phone freks used. The controllers use the UHF cellular telephone frequencies, which are installed everywhere because the human cranium operates on the same frequencies that cellular phones operate on. This was not by accident.

PULSED AUDIOGRAMS--Pulsed audiograms use extremely low average power densities of electromagnetic energy acoustic amplifier driven by the rf transmitter's modulator, the peak power density is a critical factor which is approx. 275 mw/rf for carrier frequencies 125 mc and 1,310 mc. Acoustic noise is approx. 80 decibels.

Another source, the electrical sine wave analogs of each word is processed so that each time a sine wave crosses zero reference in the negative direction, & a brief pulse of microwave energy is triggered. These voice modulated microwaves transmit words to the brain.

Sounds are generated when pulsed microwaves are aimed at absorbers made of carbon-impregnated polyurethane.

An Acoustical Energy Wavefront (AEW) is created by modified transducement of sound waves, which are in the ultrasound spectrum (USS). In other words scalar energy is being employed. When people are asleep they are the most vulnerable. TV antenna can serve both as transmitters and well as receivers. It can be made to oscillate a suitable resonant frequency. By transmitting signals in the TV/FM range and then modulating them in the ELF/ULF range, they can send signals.

The *Nexus* magazine of Oct.-Nov. '96 p. 16 reported on Dr. Ross Adley's research. Dr. Adley did some work for the CIA on their Pandora project (an electronic mind-control project). He recently worked at the Loma Linda Univ. Med. School, CA. His research showed that the brain will react to EM radiation. To get a reaction the frequency, amplitude, and dose of the microwave radiation has to met certain criteria.

In the 1980's, his experiments showed that microwave carrier-waves modulated with ELF waves will modify brain tissue. Weak EM fields will affect the binding of calcium ions to neuronal sites. This type of information is the type of information that pertains to the genetic mind-control covered in Chapter 8. Dr. Adley was able to prove that a 147 MHz (megahertz) field, which at a tissue level had an intensity of 0.8 milliwatts per square centimeters, caused an efflux or release of calcium ions from the irradiated brain tissue. "This response only occurred when the ELF modulation of the microwave carrier-wave had an amplitude modulated at 6-20 hertz (Hz). The maximum stimulation of the neurones took place at 16 Hz, but to either side of this frequency-range parameter there was no effect." (*Nexus*, 10-11/'96, p. 16 citing Adey, Ross W. "Neurophysiologic Effects of Radiofrequency and Microwave Radiation" *Bulletin of the New York Academy of Medicine*, vol. 55, no. 11, Dec., '79)

Also microwaves as they enter the brain tissue, cause thermal expansion as things heat up at the microscopic level, which produces strains in tissue. The strains produce acoustic stress waves that are conducted through the bone to the cochlea, and the cochlea's stimulation by the wave gives the brain its perception of hearing a sound just as the cochlea's stimulation produces the normal sensation of hearing. For microwaves to do this they must be at 1310 MHz and 2982 MHz at the average power densities of .4 to 2 mW/cm^2. The peak power densities can be 200 to 300 mW/cm^2 and the pulse repetition frequency was from 200 to 400 Hz. This makes an RF auditory sound. The sound appears to the victim as coming from within or near the back of the head. 2 criteria needed to hear microwaves are the ability to hear above 5 kHz, and good bone conduction.

Section E. Auxiliary uses of electronics & electromagnetic waves.

E1. hypnotic induction
E2. polygraphs
E3. attacks against people & objects
E4. virtual reality

E1. ELECTRONICS TO AID HYPNOSIS

In a normal resting state the alpha waves of a person are between 6 -12 per second, and their breathing rate is about 20-40 breaths per min. and their heart beat about 70 to 90 per minute. External stimuli will affect these rates. If a person fixes their attention on flashes and tones, such as what happens at some concerts, the body functions will tend to synchronize around the external tones and pulsing lights. It takes about ten minutes for the human mind/body to reconfigure itself in line with the external stimuli, then that rate of the flashing lights and tones and be lowered with a resulting lowering of the body's alpha wave rate, their breathing, and their heart beat. Electronics can be an aid to hypnotizing people.

If vibrations that vibrate at the rate of six to seven cycles per second are created in a room of people, the vibrations will induce alpha waves in the minds of the people. The increased alpha wave activity makes the listening subjects more susceptible to suggestion. This is similar to the effect Vibrato has on the mind. Vibrato is a tremulous pulsating effect produced by a minute and rapid variation in pitch either by a cappella or instrumental music. Years ago, public performances of vibrato music was outlawed in England because so many listeners went into altered states. A 6- to 7-cycle/sec vibration can be mask behind other sounds.

Hypnosis with headphones repeating "You do not know this" are used simultaneously along with sonics as well as electrical patterns that scramble the brain.

E2. POLYGRAPHS FOR MONITORING PROGRAMMING AND MISSION ACCOMPLISHMENTS

Tyson II Corporate Offices, McLean, VA furnishes polygraph operators for the intelligence agencies, esp. Office of Security which is responsible for CIA polygraph examinations.

E3. ATTACKS on INDIVIDUALS and objects.

A victim of electronic mind-control in VA in a letter describing her torment writes, "I no longer have the stabbing pain in my back when I go in my back yard, as I did in Richmond; however, the pain from some type of directed energy weapon(s) is just as severe here as it was in Richmond. These electrical rays coming through the airways of my home cause me all kinds of physical pain and illnesses. They kill my houseplants; they kill my shrubs; they kill my vegetables and flowers in my garden; and most of all, they cause me tremendous amount of discomfort, as well as harassment.

"Can you imagine having electrical rays directed at your bottom day and night, 365 days of the year. Can you imagine what it must be like to live around oversexed SCUM?...This technology is based on Scalar Technology and the Schumann Resonances or Frequencies. It is my understanding that the Schumann Frequencies from 0 to 30 hertz can affect every nerve, every gland, every muscle and every emotion of a human being. In other words, a person in my neighborhood can beam these rays into my home and control my body and I am having to suffer from their stupid appetites..." (letter in author's files)

Oscilloscopes have confirmed that some Direct ELF/VLF attacks have come from only a few feet. Electromagnetic attacks sometimes hit the victims entire body, like defibrillator paddles. Masers (microwave equivalents to a laser are used for electromagnetic attacks that cause burns that look like "cigarette burns", favorite target areas are genitals, face and nose. The average power density can be at an rf such as 400_u_w/cm2.

Let's quote another victim, whose letter is also in my files. At first years ago, they began using waves that were in the infrared spectrum that were barely discernable. The waves would target her and then latch on. Over the years they have gotten more sophisticated and more sadistic. She writes,

"From time to time the field broadcast from my own head was in a 'field' about me, but, with the added feature of 'harrassment' voices also being broadcast. These 'harassment' voices had taken a downright filthy tone, being blasphemous words, and venally oriented....Before I was hit with the full-blown sadistic torture program I was awakened one night by a feeling of my head being raped. A light went on in my brain and I heard voices discussing me and cruelly laughing saying, "There, got her."...The first added torture (accompanied by filty langauge, the language is all filth, obscenities, threats and intimidation) was a genital-urinary prod, pulsing about twice per second, and causing nearly incessant urination....new added features...are body bangs and head bangs...The arrogance with which they announce what torture will be next is unbelievable....Other sleep deprivation techniques are loud noises, and the interposing of visual phenomena. They seem to have devised a computer imaging which taps the visual nerves--these are like bad dreams. I have had almost no normal dreaming since this system was locked onto me."

Over the years she got to understand her harassers better. They have called themselves "social workers" and referred to her as "the package." They have enjoyed talking about her in front of her, and harassing her by talking to each other in public about the things she thought about the previous night.

Finally, one more account of a victim who is constantly harassed. "I am being tortured with synthetic telepathy of emotive and voice bytes played over and over again in my brain to positively or negatively reinforce and ultimately control my behavior. I get the sound on my left temporal lobe and in the right and left ear canals. I also get microwaved when I sleep and have vibratory pulsating fields on my lower spine, genitals, stomach, brain, feet or wherever. It is always in combination with the lower spine and something else. This seems to create an amnesiacal deep sleep with no feeling of pain. If I wake up suddenly (and this is the only chance I have of finding out what they are doing to me) I sometimes feel pain when the vibrations stop."

Other attacks/problems:

- Infra-sound attack
- magnets repelled from the cranium
- They use a "Gun" which sends an electromagnetic field which stops a car.

The Russians have been noted to have created a "wood-pecker" signal, the American version of this is the American Buzzsaw. These signals are designed to interface with the mind. And systems are designed to be carried in helicopters, or to be placed on the ground. These signals are broadcast by multiple carriers which hop from frequency to frequency anywhere from 4 MHz to 30 MHz. With the switching of these frequencies, they are creating what is know as a Levinson Transform, named after Norman Levinson.

VLF (Very low frequency waves) will cause bizarre behavior in people. (They use 0 to 400 Khz for mind-control operations. The signals are apparently broken up into pieces and triangulated upon a target.

Morse codes are used on some slaves to trigger them, which is sent via a number of methods.

Victims often have the myelin sheathing of the brain disappearing, which is diagnosed as Multiple Sclerosis. MS has increased 100 fold over the past few years.

Pre-conditioning is done by chemicals to the neuro-receptors in the brain and spine.

When moving in a car or inside a store it is harder for a victim to be targeted. Also, as readers can imagine, signals being beamed from some tower or satellite will be blocked by large thicknesses of concrete, lead and steel. In other words, there are some situations that provide limited shelter to the victims of implant body suits and syntel.

UNWANTED CHANGES

There is a complex symbiosis between mankind and the attributes of this planet. We are a life-form whose life is attuned to our environment.

The human body at the cellular level has its physiological rhythms which are very attuned to the earth's electric and magnetic fields. When cosmic radiation cycles undergo unusual modifications, including cycle inversions, the metabolism in crabs and the oxygen consumption cycles in carrots, potatoes shellfish and rats changes. The geomagnetic field helps protect us from cosmic rays. It has been shown that solar flares influence human behavior, and psych wards have an increase in problem behavior during solar flares.

The human body is a complex set of rhythms. Permit me to recall some of these rhythms for the reader: Alpha rhythms, Blood Hormone rhythms, Body temperature rhythms (which fluctuate 3° on 24 hour cycle), Cell mitosis rhythms, Cellular DNA & RNA synthesizing rhythms, Cerebral-spinal fluid rhythms, Circadian rhythms, Enzyme rhythms, Food utilization rhythms, Menstrual & Sexual rhythms, Pulse rates, Seasonal rhythms, and Urine Electrolyte Disposal rhythms.

The 60-pulse-per-second power grids (of AC) that are spread over the earth, as well as numerous other man-made activities are disrupting the 7-8 hertz frequency of the earth. There are some side-effects to our tampering with the magnetic and electrical fields of this planet, and some of these side effects may be the disruption or change of the circadian rhythms (as well as some of the other rhythms of the human body and mind.)

In fact, two researchers have research that shows how human nerve cells are affected by ELF fields. (See Becker, Dr. Rob*ert O. Cross-Currents: The Perils of Electropollution The Promise of Electromedicene.* LA: Jeremy Tarcher, 1990, p. 233.)

It was discovered by CIT researchers that the human brain has magnetite. Salmon, homing pigeons, whales, and honeybees also have magnetite, a type crystalline iron, which allows them to sense the earth's magnetic field for finding their way around. The CIT researchers published their finding about magnetite in human brains in the journal *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences.*

LIQUID CRYSTALS

For about 6 years this author has heard about liquid crystal implants. One military magazine should its use, and one person who was in military intelligence claims liquid crystals are used. Others claim that liquid crystals were tried and failed.

It has also been reported that radio transmitting crystals, that fasten themselves to the brain have been the object of research.

Some ODDS & ENDS

- SERPENTINE SKIN

Another topic that for sure was tried by the NWO was serpentine skin. This is a type of specialized fungus that coats the skin and is used for some of its specialized features. Whether this concept actually flies outside of the lab, this author doesn't know.

- "ALIEN" implants

This author's take on the alien phenomena is that it is the Illuminati's Grand Deception for introducing the AntiChrist. The aliens are materialized demons, and manufactured "soul less" bodies. It's not the purpose here to put forth evidence concerning this Grand Deception, that would take another book, if not several books. (In fact, this author started to write it in 1993, but never got finished.) But no book discussing implants & mind-control could be complete without touching on alien implants. There is a great overlap between "alien abductions" and mind-control.

Whitley Strieber (UFO abductee and famous author) gave two workshops at the UFO Expo West LA. He was very interested in finding out about the implants that Dr. Lear and Derrell Sims had extracted and turned over to traditional medical institutions for study. While Whitley was talking about implants and our government's connection to them, his own implant in his ear turned on and the side of his face turned red like a bad sunburn. Other UFO buffs in attendance also had their implants burn them at this point, causing great excitement at the Wyndham Hotel that day.(This information came from the internet madsongroup@earthlink.net)

There are an increasing number of "alien abductees" who are remembering seeing U.S. military personnel during their so-called alien abductions. The abductees are being taken to U.S. Military bases. (An unusual place for aliens to work, but within the realm of possibility.) The reason that the number of people who are connecting the government with the aliens is increasing is a. more people are receiving mind-control programming, therefore there are more people for which the cover stories and electroshock fail to totally hide what has happened, b. better therapeutic methods are helping mind-control victims recover their memories better, c. there have been a rising number of people like this author exposing it. Karla Turner, who was a victim of mind-control and abductions, began catching on that the abductions were being done by our government. *Vol. 2* quoted her on page 184. When she began to publicly expose what the government was doing, the government murdered her. (She joins a growing number of people this author has seen die pre-maturely because they were publicly exposing the truth.)

Alien abduction victims have been reporting human black-or dark helicopter activity and black-or dark helicopter harassment since the 1970's. (Perhaps as the Vietnam War wound down & ended, the U.S. government had a surplus of helicopters and delegated some to task forces that picked up mind-control victims in remote sites.) An example from this time period of an alien abduction also involving helicopters is the Betty Andreasson/Luca abduction. A number of victims have remembered the helicopters coming around the time of their abduction. When bright lights are shined into their houses or into their cars these victims of trauma-based mind-control are programmed to see the helicopter's spotlight as a UFO. (Helicopters also carry spoofer transmitters.) Beth Collins of Oregon reports in her book *Connections-Solving our Alien Abduction Mystery*. Newberg, OR: Wild Flower Press, 1966, about how helicopters were involved with her abduction experiences. She lives in an area that is a hot-bed for covert CIA activities. In her book, she provides a transcript of memories of military personnel being the guilty party in an abduction. Some victims of these abduction experiences are implanted during their abduction. Researcher Helmut Lammer reports that "alien" abductees Debby Jordan and Leah Haley had implants removed from their ears. What is significant about this, is that the bio-chip implant designed for humans which is credited to Dr. Man, best works behind the ears. (Sources: *The Kansas City Star*, 7/19/87 carried an article about how Dr. Man's implants work best behind the ear. On Oct., '87, an article by Kathy Hart was run in several papers promoting Dr. Man's implants for protecting children. H. Lammer reported on implants & military involvement in abductions in his article "Preliminary Findings of Project MILAB: Evidence for military kidnappings of alleged UFO abductees." *The Unopened Files*, No. 2, '97, pp 64-67.)

From this author's interviews with "alien abductees" it was clear that 100% of them were victims of U.S. government trauma-based mind-control and that many of them had been taken to underground programming facilities and made to believe they were at another planet. This is happening in foreign countries too. However, this doesn't mean that flying saucers craft do not exist, they do. And according to eye-witnesses some of the underground facilities in NM, AZ, and CO have personnel from all over the world, Germans, Russians, British & Americans as well as aliens working side by side. (The American government denies this. Supposedly NORAD only has Canadians.) Some of these witnesses come across as credible. If their reports are true, then some implants may also have a true alien connection. Alien abductees are actually extracting implants from their noses and their feet. It is strange that "alien" implants have gotten more technologically sophisticated over the years.

BED COILS STANDARDIZED FOR MIND-CONTROL POTENTIAL

Metal coil springs were standardized in size, are made of steel and are placed in a grid pattern in a common mattress. Standards were introduced that specify how many coils, and what tension were to be used in their manufacture. Their shape is an open ended hyperbolic which is the best suited to create a similar induced magnetic field. When one lays down the springs are compressed and have between 5 to 7 coils compressed. This makes a field of influence around the human body which is enfolded within the field of coils, which are natural antennas to incoming electromagnetic waves. Evidence suggests that the standardation of bed springs was a carefully planned event designed to assist electronic mind-control.

E4. VIRTUAL REALITY.

Since 1989, Virtual Reality conferences-exhibitions have been held. On May 11-13, 1994, the largest conference-exhibition to date on virtual reality was held at the San Jose Civic Center and the Fairmont Hotel, San Jose, CA. Note some of the mind-control aspects of the different sessions:

Session C7--"Tactile Feedback" given by Paul Cutt. Xtensory

Session C8--"The Immersion Probe" given by Louis Rosenberg, Pres. of Immersion Corporation.

Session D2--"Biomedical Technology and Biomedical Education" given by John Flynn

Session D9--"Biocybernetics and VR" given by Dave Warner, Medical Scientist at Loma Linda Univ. Med. Center

During lunch Kenny Meyer discussed how simulated being in a virtual world are called various names incl. synthetic actors, situated agents, creatures and denizens. At another meal break Lt. Col. Martin Stytz, USAF, spoke on how the military was developing Virtual Reality to train men.

Session C17--AFIT Projects, that is Air Force Institute of Technology at Wright Patterson AFB given by Elizabeth Block. (Wright Patterson happens to be a major hub for the mind-control and criminal activities of the secret government.)

Session C19--"ARPA/ASTO" given by Lt. Col. David Neyland.

The military is not the only group interested in virtual reality. A plethora of virtual reality companies has sprung up, for instance Sense8 (which selling ready-to-use virtual reality systems), the Vivid Group which creates Mandala (which are virtual reality authoring systems), and Xtensory Inc., which creates virtual reality tactile feedback systems.

The government also works through labs located on American universities working with government grant money, such as the state of the art Virtual Reality lab at the Univer. of Illinois Circle campus, which calls its virtual reality machine "the Cave." Virtual touch has been created. This means that with a special machine for the person's hand (for shape perception) & special glove (for texture sensing) the computer users can feel the shape and texture of an object on the screen.

Hollywood has given us movies showing the mind-control potential of virtual reality in Lawnmower man & Brainstorm.

For more information on virtual reality the reader might try consulting:

- Aukastakalnis, Steve and Blatner, David. *Silicon Mirage: The Art and Science of Virtual Reality*. Peachpit Press, 1992.
- Laurel, Brenda. *The Art of Human-Computer Interface Design*. Addison-Wesley, 1990.

This author has a catalog advertizing the EMCS-X-3000-Plus Electronic Mind Control System, which was invented by Cabalistic Hermetic magician Karl Welz. The ad states, "If your intentions are to take control of others and to increase your own mental powers of direct action, then the EMCS-X-3000-Plus is your system of choice!"

The article has an endorsement for the EMCS system on page 19 by a charismatic minister, "...I am a preacher of a charismatic church. for reasons you may understand, I was extremely skeptical initially [of the EMCS system]. However, I gave the new technology a chance to help me serve the Lord better, and I do not regret that decision! The membership of my church has more than doubled within one year...Thank you very much."

---We live in some perilous times! Maranatha!

•List of other Books on this chpt's Subject

Bamford's *The Puzzle Palace*
Becker's *The Body Electric*
Becker's *Cross Currents*
Brodeur's *Currents of Death*
Brodeur's *The Zapping of America*
Burdock, Dorothy's *Such Things Are Known* (victim)
Calder's *The Mind of Man*
Chokroverty's *Magnetic Stimulation in Clinical Neurophysiology*
Clark's *July 20, 2019*
Dawes' *Advances in...Quantum Neurodynamics*
Eccles, Sir John C.'s *Evolution of the Complexity of the Brain with Emergence of Consciousness*
Galton's *MedTech*
Green's *Beyond Biofeedback*
Halacy's *Cyborg*
Halperin's *Crimes of the Intell. Community*
Heller's *Of Mice, Men & Molecules*
Hooper's *The Three-Pound Universe*
Hougan's *Secret Agenda*
Hutchison's *Megabrain*
Johnsons's *In the Palaces of Memory*
McKinnell's *Cloning: A Biologist Reports*
Mark's *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate*
McRae's *Mind Wars*
Pine's *The Brain Changers*
Stanford Research Inst., *Journal of Scientific Exploration*, vol. 10, no. 1, pp. 1-111
Regan's *Evoked Potentials*
Rein, Glen's *Modulation of Neurotransmitter Function by Quantum Fields*
Restak's *The Mind* Rucker's *Mind Tools*
Valenstein's *Brain Control*
Weinstein's *Psychiatry & the CIA: Victims of Mind Cntl*

The American military establishment lumped syntel and a number of other outrageous "weapons of torture and control" under the official heading of "non-lethal". Then the establishment media (TV & newspapers) such as the *Wall St. Journal*, Aug. 2, '94, had an article about non-lethal weapons where they wrote about the "sticky-goo gun", which uses goo to stop people. Do you see how they create a cover? When the public hears of non-lethal weapons they think sticky-goo guns, not implants that are torturing and controlling people.

Herman Kahn of the Hudson Institute stated that total mind-control would be in place by 2000 and could be "imposed under the rubic of mental hygiene."

Structuring

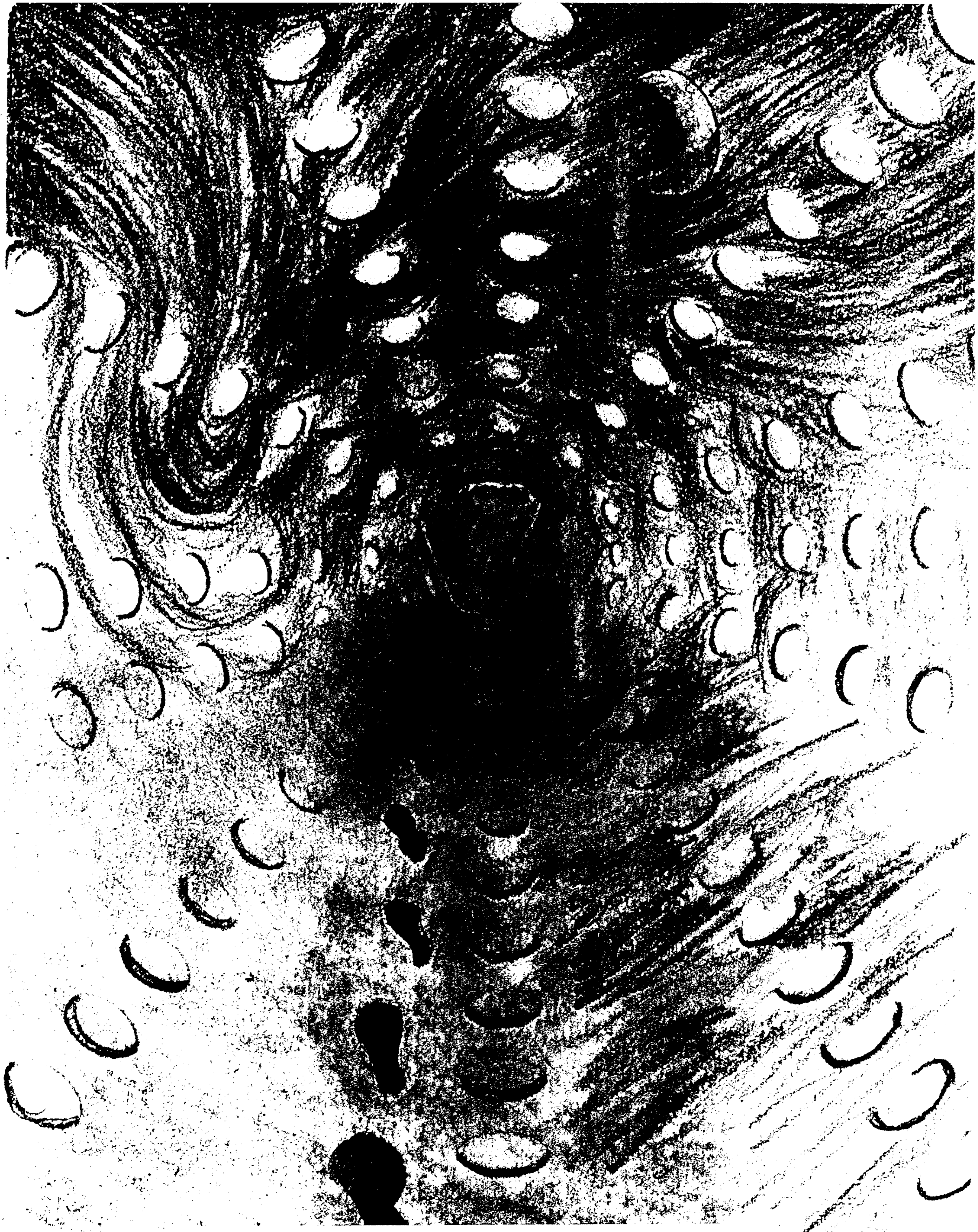

During the structuring bubbles and vortexes are used. This is a drawing years ago by Cisco when she attempted to communicate what the mind felt like when it hit certain programs.

CHAPTER 7.
THE SCIENCE OF STRUCTURING

The programmers are experts in knowing how to mold the "clay" of blank dissociated parts of the mind into whatever piece they need.

The following is a true account. The chinese arrested a foreignor skilled in martial arts. They abused the man, but instead of becoming apathetic, he kept himself mentally & physically fit in spite of the horrible conditions of his solitary cell. The superstitious guards believed he was a magician.

When the identity of the man was discovered, and the chinese realized that he was one of the world's greatest martial arts experts, they decided to try everything possible to destroy him. He was tortured, starved, and humiliated. The man simply went into dissociative states of trance and endured the tortures without sign of pain or emotion. The hardened guards were awed.

The chinese decided to kill the man. They figured that they could place him in a cage with a starved tiger, he'd go into trance and the starved tiger would eat him, and then they could claim that the man had been a coward. They not only wanted the man's life but his reputation.

When they threw the much-tortured prisoner into the hungry tiger's cage, the martial arts expert took on the appearance of a demonized man. With a demonic roar, he attacked the tiger, and instantly kicked the tiger's nose. The animal was stunned and disoriented. The man leaped upon the animal from behind, let out a terrifying scream and strangled the animal. In 20 seconds the whole affair was over. The man looked like an incarnation of a tiger himself. In fact, the tiger had instantly feared the man the split second the master had landed in the cage.

When the programmers ARE SUCCESSFUL with their STRUCTURING--they are able to create alters that match what you have just read about. Our Chinese prison story illustrates the type of end results the Illuminati want from hours of torture & training given to slaves, but HOW do they achieve such fantastic results? That is what this chapter is about.

Some of the programmed skills of the ninjitsu people (the ninja) are now being structured into Illuminati mind-controlled slaves. A disciple of the above prisoner in China wrote, [the Ninja]..."were the original practitioners of the 'art of [mind-control] programming'. They were taught from the cradle that nothing was impossible. Not knowing that a thing could not be done, they proceeded to do it." (*The Karate Dojo*, p. 101)

A. STRUCTURING OF MPD WORLDS

The purpose of the mind-control is to build a System within the mind that is a human robot. It would do no good to torture the slave and get thousands of pieces (fragments of the mind, alter personalities) if these were not structured. Very few Multiples have ever really gotten to see the deeper parts of their Systems.

WORKING WITH PARTS OF THE MIND

For many people who are unfamiliar with MPD, it can be expected that they would find it strange to watch how the programmers or the therapists work with parts of the mind. Most people mis-perceive the mind as a monolithic entity. In reality the normal mind is made up of hundreds of independent parts working in cooperation and competition with each other. The top brain researchers (at least many of them) have come to realize that the brain is composed of many independent parts that at times work against each other. For the normal person, some of these parts can be called ego states and some small processes are called by Minsky "agents" of the mind. For the multiple personality they are called alters, splits, and purpose fragments.

A normal person has a society of agents and ego states which are entities or parts of the mind which combine to make the whole thinking mind. A multiple personality does not have a society, but rather a system of parts.

Whether a person has a society of agents or a system of alters, everyone experiences his or her mind as a combination of processes, conflicting motives, and internal tensions.

In order to bring some cohesion and unity to one's actions, so that a person didn't spend their life going in fifty different directions at once, the mind creates the illusion of self, the self image.

The self-image by necessity must not change rapidly. One of the main reasons the mind creates a self-image is so it can have a single purpose to its actions. One of the functions of a self-image (of anyone) IS TO PREVENT RAPID CHANGES. Long range plans could not be pulled off if my personality were like Jane today and Tarzan tomorrow and Cheetah the next day. The mind refuses to change its self-image, even in the face of conflicting data, because self-preservation of a directed life demands continuity from day to day in our personality. Our self-image is a mental construct that stabilizes the mind's numerous processes. It is a global attitude registered in the mind that globally affects thinking in many of the mind's spheres. This is just one reason why the self-images constructed by the programmer for alters are so tenacious, and so difficult to change. Self-images do not want change, they are the restraints (the ball and chain) we subconsciously create so that we can't wreck all of our plans by skipping from one idealistic goal to another without continuity. (How convenient it is to be able to construct a single brain with many different alter personalities each having **its own unchanging self-image**!)

Pain and Pleasure are two agents which cause the mind to simplify its focus upon either the pleasure or the pain. The brain does not want to focus on anything that is not an immediate issue. This focus on the immediate pain or pleasure by the victim of mind-control diminishes the victim from focusing on more complex mental issues.

An example of one of world's top experts who realizes how the mind is naturally made up of parts is Marvin Minsky, co-founder of the Artificial Intelligence Lab at MIT, author of *The Society of Mind*, and who has been an advisor to NASA & the L-5 Society. Minsky's research was financed by the government (the Office of the Advanced Research Projects Agency). And he and other researchers in his field got their contracts by the Office of Naval Research. (See *Society of the Mind*, p. 324.) His incredible book *The Society of Mind* has an interesting format where the numerous parts (agents) of the mind are each given their own page in the book. Minsky shows in the book that the mind is a "society" that arises out of ever-smaller agents that are themselves mindless. He does an incredibly good job of explaining how the mind works.

Minsky states, "In general, we're least aware of what our minds do best." The Illuminati structuring of the MPD's fragmented mind is to create flawlessly working systems that can function without the conscious mind getting involved. In fact, Minsky describes how our conscious minds only get involved in simple mental processes that don't work well, the complex ones that work well usually work without the conscious mind being aware of them.

"Some readers may be horrified at picturing a baby's mind as made up of nearly separate agencies. But we'll never understand how human natures grow without some theories of how they start. One evidence for separateness is how suddenly infants switch from smiles of contentment to shrieks of hunger-rage. In contrast to the complex mixtures of expressions that adults show, young children seem usually to be in one or another well-defined state of activity..." (*Society of the Mind*, p. 171) The Illuminati has long realized that they need to split the mind of the child before its various agencies connect and the ego-states form and develop their sense of selfhood and personal identity. Although adults can be programmed, the real Illuminati multiple systems are developed from the womb up.

How does the mind make decisions? The various parts of the mind compete with each other. All the parts are in a sense equal, none sits at the top of some hierarchy. The mind does not allow any natural part, such as ANGER, or SLOTH to be permanently enthroned and to direct the other parts. Too many chiefs and no indians wouldn't work out. Natural parts can not order another part around. They must influence that part indirectly. That is why the following examples happen.

A young married man decides that he and his wife can not successfully work out their problems, because she is a programmed multiple in denial, who wants to manipulate his life and destroy it, while he on the other hand wants to be successful in life. One part of him is the LOYAL TO VOWS part, which refuses to quit the marriage because of the marriage vows. Another part is the GOAL SETTING part, which sees the marriage as an abusive dead end. How does the GOAL SETTING part convince the LOYAL TO VOWS part to give up (throw in the towel) and move on with life? It must indirectly trick LOYAL TO VOWS into feeling that its job has been done as well as possible, and that further concern over the vows are excused.

Another young man, a student, has his STUDY part of the mind really wanting to focus on some problems, but the BORED and SLEEPY part of him want to go to sleep. His STUDY part of the mind tricks his BORED part into allowing STUDY to go to work. He mentally creates a fictitious scare that another student will do better than he, and BORED and SLEEPY are tricked into thinking the problem is much more weighty than it really is.

A young woman bribes her eating processes of her mind, that if she follows through with her diet, she'll reward herself with a nice meal, and that other parts of her will be rewarded with other benefits. Rather than simply diet, she must bribe different parts of herself. Of course if parts of us, lie to other parts when they try to bribe ourselves into doing something, if we are not honest with ourselves in giving the reward, then it is harder next time to bribe the part that was lied to.

In order for the non-multiple's parts to trust each other, they subscribe to a single agreed upon character-an imaginary ideal self-image. Other wise we couldn't trust ourselves to carry out plans. If an ordinary person has amnesia, they could create a different self-image, which again would be an enduring character. By introducing MPD, the programmers create a hidden element of distrust within a person's mind. They no longer can trust themselves, now they must depend upon the stability of the programmer or owner.

Now imagine that each of the "agents" or parts has been manipulated to think that it is a person with a personality and a history in its own little world. Because the mind is such a tremendous computer it can easily handle such mental processes. The programmer and the de-programmer/therapist must work at "tricking" these parts into allowing the mind to do constructive things. I use the word tricking, because what is actually happening is that the therapist or programmer is using language that relates to the language of that part, but it is not language that has much external reality beyond that part.

Structuring is the art of using special "languages" combined with other programming sciences to manipulate these internal worlds of the various parts.

Our minds are instruments to solve practical problems. If an alter sees no practical use for a particular knowledge they will not want to learn it. This natural selecting process by the mind, helps isolate an MPD's system of alters, because many alters do not see a need to learn anything outside of their programming.

CONTROL ALTERS called PROCESSORS

Within the system of alters, certain alters are selected to be PROCESSORS. As a system is used certain alters are destroyed, disconnected, or regulated. Certain codes are used or changed. A SYSTEM PARAGUARD is what is used to decipher codes and to distinguish what is currently happening in a system.

BASIC DESIGNS of an ALTER SYSTEM

Most Illuminati systems are configured with a Universe or Star base system. In other words, the model for all that is put in uses clusters of stars, galaxies, etc. This is used in conjunction with grids that are shaped in various configurations.

The ultimate master of the slave, some Illuminati kingpin who is a programmer or working closely with programmers, will design the system so that the entire structure of the system points to himself and Satan. The alters will be geographically set up in their internal world to worship the master to whom they must give their body, soul and spirit.

A cube or double-cube system is a closed system. The programmers who use cubes love to build boxes within boxes. The smallest middle box of the system may contain the Life force of the system. Those who love paper trails, will see the occult basis for the standard Illuminati cube shape of a system portrayed on page 83 of *Clausen's Commentaries on Morals & Dogma*, which was put out by the Supreme Council of the World of 33° of Freemasonry in 1974. This masonic book explains that the cube represent man and the pyramid is divinity. Divinity within a man would be constructed by placing a pyramid within a cube, which is shown in a picture on page 83. You will also notice in this masonic book that the 2 Grand Masters on page 83 are wearing crowns that have 13 jewells. The crowns serve the same purpose that rings patterned on a similar pattern represent. Crowns and rings represent authority, and it is common within the mystery religions to place 12 or 13 gems within crowns and rings.

The reason that this is important, is that some important masonic/illuminati secrets are here, and these secrets also pertain to how the Mystery Religions (the Illum. & Freemasonry) construct an alter system.

RINGS

Within the Illuminati (which is the continuation of the mystery religions of Babylon) the ring has for many centuries represented divinity. The mystery religions' higher understanding was that God had a ring with his name on it that showed His authority and exercised power over the earth, and that Satan imitated this many-fold in all the mystery religions that he created. For thousands of years, within the various mystery religions, hierophants have been wearing rings with particular secret symbols. The zodiac signs were assigned different stones, gems.
For instance, the 12 gems of Rev. 21:18-20, which are the usual gems placed within an Illuminati alter system would correspond to the astrological signs as follows:

Jasper↔Pisces
Sapphire↔Aquarius
Chalcedony↔Cancer
Emerald↔Taurus
Sardonyx↔Scorpio
Chrysolyte↔Saggittarius
Beryl↔Leo
Topaz↔Gemini
Chrysoprasus↔Capricorn
Jacinth↔
Amethyst↔Aries

The creation of a Monarch system's gems is in imitation of the rings of Lucifer and God (as the Illuminati understand it). This ring of gems is able to control the fruit of the trees (programs) and change the internal weather. It is based upon the story that is told the alter system that is being made about how

God had a ring. Until His hand swept the heaven of air (1st heaven) fruit could not fall and die, because nothing could die. Satan and his followers like rings because they want to be godlike. (That doesn't mean all Satanists understand their own history.) When an alter is concerned about "Don't lose the ring", the alter may be referring to the ring of the gems that surrounds the pyramid at the base of the mind. This ring of gem alters may be referred to as the ETERNAL RING, and the RING OF FIRE. The achievement of divinity by a human was what constituted the hermetic marriage of the mysteries. This was the ultimate achievement by mankind. This was symbolized by a gold ring. Within the Illuminati (which is a continuation of the Mystery Religions) rings are used for bonding (marriage committments) and a sign of majesty or rank (such as your masonic rings, and the ring Pharaoh gave Joseph, & King Saul's ring, & special papal rings allowed cardinals & abbots.) The Pope has 3 significant rings, one of which is for ceremonies, and another the important Fisherman's Ring, which is still used as the Pope's seal. Within the Illuminati alter systems the 7 seals of Babylon are placed into a system. The cube with a pyramid was portrayed at the 14th Masonic Degree (the Perfect Elu degree). The 4 horsemen & the seals of Babylon are talked about at the 17th masonic degree (Knight of the East & West). Also deep within a system may be the Ring of Fire. Within the pyramid, which is within the ring of those 12 gems mentioned in Rev. 21, is the ETERNAL LIFE FORCE, a green light coming from Lucifer. In other words, the secret heart of the system is based upon the original lie, that man could become an eternal god. The Illuminati alter structure has at its heart the original lie.

An example of how rings and demonology and authority intersect, can be seen in the Grimoire of the *Testament of Solomon* where a ring is said to have been given to Solomon which enabled him to learn the names of demons. Rings and chains around the neck are also worn for the extremely secret reason that the wearer is identifying himself with Lucifer who was bound by God by a ring of fire and was chained in the abyss. This is what is really behind high ranking Illuminati Freemason & clergyman Robert Schuler's chain around his neck. The highest levels of the Illuminati have the understanding that Lucifer lost his power when Christ bound him, and that in identification with him, they wear gold chains around their neck, etc. Don't expect to read this in the material that occult world is permitted to read, these are high level secrets. Remember, there are many different levels of occultism, and Satanism.

(In the early middle ages, Christians borrowed the idea of having marriage rings from the pagan Germans & Romans. The determination of what finger to wear it on (what has become known as the ring finger), was chosen by the ancient witches because that was considered the only healing finger. Christians of course, by and large, know nothing of the pagan origins and symbology of the rings they wear.) This author has noted that many of the handlers, programmers, & Illuminati adepts wear rings. Some of the rings are quite big.

The Ferris-wheel subsystem.

A ferris-wheel configuration which creates compartments shaped like a piece of pie is often a small part of a larger system, and is used to house alters, or it may have some other internal purpose with its rotation.

As was brought out in *Vol. 2*, the Illuminati like to use configurations that appear endless such as circles within circles, boxes within boxes, triangles within triangles.

Star configurations are popular Illuminati power sources within their alter systems. The position of a star, the number of points it has, and the relationship it has to other objects in the sky such as a rainbow will be significant. Some stars are placed into the system to represent a point in time when the system is programmed to do something.

When a slave is programmed with multiple functioning sub-systems (aka "systems"), the Illuminati call it MULTIPLEX. In such as case, types and names of alters may be duplicated in systems that are mirror images of each other or of a similar design. Traver reports that one MULTIPLEX system had 55 Daves per sub-system with 7 subsystems, making a total of 385 Dave alters for the 7 subsystems in just one particular slave. (see Traver, Dan. *Dissociative Disorders & Mind Control*, p. 84)

The construction of an Illuminati system can not be divorced from the demonology and rituals that are performed throughout the life of the system. The Illuminati use mystical terms when programming, which reframes psychological processes in the language of magic. Programming and hypnosis are referred during programming as "SPELLS". The programmers will use fictional magical names for items, for instance, the subconscious mind may be referred to as the "HYPNOGOURD, A VINE THAT GROWS GOURDS." Creativity and imagination will be termed "MAGIC", and the programmer "A MAGICIAN". The programmer would instruct his assistant in language like this, "WOULD YOU PUT THIS GAP FORGET SPELL IN?"

The Generational Spirit (or Spirits from each occult bloodline) is laid into the child in the womb. It stays hidden deeply in the system, and plays a fundamental role in the system's creation empowering other demonic forces.

In order to construct the trees that provide the structure for the internal worlds-programming, the Illuminati programmer will tell the victim the following hypnotic ritual,

"AS YOU BREATHE, REMEMBER TO SIT ERECT, AND AS YOUR SPINE STRAIGHTENS, FELL THE ENERGY RISING [PAUSE]. NOW IMAGINE YOUR SPINE IS THE TRUNK OF A TREE, AND FROM ITS BASE ROOTS REACH DOWN DEEP INTO THE EARTH. [PAUSE] INTO THE CENTER OF THE EARTH HERSELF. [PAUSE] AND YOU CAN DRAW UP POWER FROM THE EARTH, WITH EACH BREATH [SHORT PAUSE] FEEL THE ENERGY RISING, LIKE SAP RISING THROUGH A TREE TRUNK, AND FEEL THE POWER RISE UP YOUR SPINE, FEEL YOURSELF BECOMING MORE ALIVE, WITH EACH BREATH, AND FROM THE CROWN OF YOUR HEAD, YOU HAVE BRANCHES, THAT SWEEP UP AND BACK DOWN TO TOUCH THE EARTH [PAUSE] AND FEEL THE POWER BURST FROM THE CROWN OF YOUR HEAD, AND FEEL IT SWEEP THROUGH THE BRANCHES UNTIL IT TOUCHES THE EARTH AGAIN, MAKING A CIRCLE, MAKING A CIRCUIT, RETURNING TO ITS SOURCE."

The part of the system that will function within the Illuminati hierarchy will all be intimately part of either the SPIRIT TREE (that is the Caballistic Tree of Life) or the TREE OF EVIL (which is the evil mirror image of the Tree of Life). Both trees were discussed in the *Vol. 2 Formula* book. These trees are both totally connected to the Spirit of the AntiChrist and rooted in Lilith and Tubal-cain.

The Moon child ritual is not only performed when the child is still a fetus, but also at age 3, 4, 5, 6, and 16. When the Illuminati child is in their teens they do the Caballistic Tree of Life pathworking. The pathworking rituals are severe, and many splits of the mind will occur due to these rituals. All the alters created during this work will be arranged at the GATEWAYS that pertain to that particular ritual.

Therapists who do not realize how the pathworking of the 22 paths develops entire sections of deeper alters, may incorrectly think they can simply toss out the caballistic Tree of Life from the victim. Countless deeper alters are part of this tree. It has been said in the Illuminati that in general an Illuminati system consists of "the father (core), the son (the programming), the holy spirit (the spirit Tree also called the Tree of Life)."

DATA ENTRY POINTS

The programmers have designed their systems so that one can only get into the Systems via a SEQUENCE. However, sometimes they themselves want to quickly down load information into the computer-like mind of their slaves, and they don't want to have to go through a sequencing procedure. For quick and sloppy downloading of information to their slave or quick deletions to the programming (there is only limited access to quick deletions), programmers put DATA ENTRY POINTS into most systems. This allows for an emergency entry and/or downloading. General codes most often open these points, rather than long specific codes. The trick is being able to know where those DATA ENTRY POINTS are on the person's alter grid or as the programmers say the slave's SCREEN. (With the advent of lap-top computers, what the master of the slave sees if he has to refer to his own reference notes is just that a screen with the system's layout. (Vol.2 pg. 88 gave a sample of how a page on the lap top computer or in a master's black or grey 3-ring binder would look like.)

An example of a data-entry point would be a gatekeeper which has learned the entire system via trained LSD trips and then has been programmed to keep this understanding on a subconscious level.

TESTING ALTERS TO SEE IF THEY CAN BE USED.

When a trauma is carried out upon a child, the child is then debriefed and all the splits from the trauma identified. Generally only the first 10 splits will be used to create alters, and the rest of the splits will become special purpose fragments. The programmers begin with the first split and identify how strong the split is. The programmers test for 4 things, a. how well can this split take a hypnotic suggestion?, b. how creative is this split?, c. Can this split hold memory?, d. Can this split hold the structuring that will given it?

If the split passes positive on these four criteria, then it will be used to make a full blown alter. The programmers move down the line, testing the splits in the sequence that they were created. If no. 4 split is unable to pass the 4 criteria, then they know that the rest of the top splits will also have to be "thrown away" and used as special purpose fragments. If they need 12 splits from an alter, and they only get 5 usable splits from the first torture, they will retorture the alter to get more first splits. They will continue the process until they get the splits they need. Usually they can use the first 10 splits. Seldom do they use anything beyond the first 10 splits for alters, they are just to weak mentally. If an alter shows extra promise the programmer may say, "This part was going to be a bit part, but we'll make her into a real character." If a special purpose fragment leans in a needed direction mentally, they may take what was to be a minor part, and develop it into an interesting alter.

Alters that are waiting to be used are stored as gems that the dwarfs mine, and then the programmers program them. An Illuminati system has thousands of these clean slates. Diamonds are preprogrammed alters that are stored to be used in the end-times during the reign of the Anti-Christ.

THE SCRIPTS.

Each master programmer is responsible for the scripts that he uses. He will invoke the leading geographic spirits, and even Lucifer to gain up-to-date wisdom on what is best for that time at that location. A master programmer will get assistance from his Mother of Darkness or Grande Dame. The master programmer may use a written script of his own such as Michael Aquino uses his own version of Star Wars, or he may borrow from established sources, for instance, Dr. Star of Corpus Christi, TX, who uses the *The Goetia The Lesser Key of Solomon the King* (*Clavicula Salomonis Regis*). Dr. Star especially uses the Shemhamphorash, which is the first part of that ancient magical book.

Recently Avon books (which has been owned by Hearst Illuminati family, and which has published over 30 editions of the Satanic Bible) published a book by Piers Anthony entitled *Visual Guide to Xanth*. This amazing book *Visual Guide to Xanth* is based on Anthony's Xanth series. It contains so many programming scripts, that it is hard to imagine that Anthony is not a programmer. The scripts are too intact for it to be coincidence. The title page has a hoofed tailed Satan on his throne. It is popular among satanists to use X words, like Michael Aquino signs off his personal letters "Xeper", rather than "sincerely".

Anthony was born in Britian but now lives in Florida. He has had over 60 fiction books published, many of the early ones were very well promoted by the Illuminati, and became top best sellers.

The back cover advertizes this *Visual Guide to Xanth* this way, "Learn about the astonishing hierarchy--and lowerarchy--of sorcerers and shape-changers, of goblins, harpies and half-humans who inhabit this extraodinary universe! [internal worlds] Explore the perilous Ogre-fen-ogre-Fen and the inner chambers of the mysterious Castle Roogna! Revel in the history and culture of the most remarkable civilization this side of Oz!"

The co-authors would have to agree that Piers Anthony's story telling ability rivals, if not surpasses Baum's Oz series. In fact Anthony has put out numerous series of books, not just one series like Baum. The Xanth series is the one that contains more of the programming scripts. For instance, a script would be used to get suicide alters to want to take drugs & champagne on an empty stomach, or to get into a bathtub of water & throw in an electric blow drier which is on.

Assassination Models (Delta Models).

A great deal was explained in the *Vol. 2* book about Delta alters, Delta models, Delta teams, and Delta Forces. All of these are involved with killing humans. It is not the purpose of this section to cover what has already been written in the *Vol. 2 Formula* book on these various Deltas. Mind-controlled Amphibious men, (genetically altered Navy Seals--see *Vol. 2* p. 261-262, the latter no. is a significant no. for these programmed men) are the Navy's attempt to get something similar to what is depicted on the film Universal Solders. These Navy Seals are not allowed to be touched by other sailors when they are on a ship.

There is still a number of deeper insights that can be provided to understand how assassin personalities are conditioned to be able to kill.

Researchers in how the brain functions have found that our forebrains (the thinking part that makes us humans) shut down when we are angry or frightened and the midbrain (which resembles the brain of animals) takes over. The only programming that works for the midbrain is the same type of training that works for dogs, which is classical and operant conditioning. This type of conditioning is simply stimulus-response, such as IF fire bell--THEN walk the fire escape exit plan.

When it comes to killing, the forebrain will listen to many suggestions such as orders from a gang leaders, an officer, or the pressures of life when they demand that a person kill, but the midbrain has the instinct that is born into 98% of the population NOT to kill another human. This innate human resistance to killing is far stronger than has popularly been realized, and has historically stopped most people from killing. This may surprise most readers, because Hollywood movies would lead us to think otherwise.

A number of top researchers, including Lt. Col. Dave Grossman, author of the excellent book *On Killing*, have uncovered irrefutable (albeit still controversial) proof that historically most soldiers have secretly refused to kill in battle. Grossman was a Military Psychology professor at West Point, as well as having a long list of other military credentials. His suberb book *On Killing* gives numerous reasons (proofs and evidences) that numerous soldiers have typically only pretended to try to kill the enemy. Many fired over the heads or only pretended to fire their weapons, if even that. During W.W. II, Brig. Gen. S.L.A. Marshall discovered that only 15 to 20 % of men on the front line would actually use their weapons against the Germans even during action over several days. 75% of the American soldiers would not even fire at the enemy to save their own lives. He made some suggestions on how to improve this dismal firing rate. By operant conditioning the U.S. military took those dismal firing rates to 55% in the Korean War and to a 95% firing rate in the Vietnam War. What are behavior modification techniques that turn teenagers into reliable killing machines? These conditioning and psychological tricks are the same methods that are used on the Delta alters and the Delta systems of Total Mind-controlled slaves, and we will discuss those next.

The factors that are weighed as an equation in the human mind to determine whether a human will kill another human are as follows:

- What is the benefit of the kill?
- How do recent experiences relate to the victim?
- How much physical, cultural, moral, social and mechanical DISTANCE is between the killer and the target.? The more distance the easier it gets.
- How intense is the demand from some authority to kill, and legitimate is this authority? If the killer respects the authority that is asking for him to kill, and is in close proximity of that authority he will likely obey that authority.
- Are there a group dynamic working, and if so what is the power and legitimacy of this group to absolve the killer from guilt?
- Are there any stumbling blocks from unresolved guilt from previous killings?
- What is the temperament of the potential killer?

AUTHORITY FACTORS ARE MAXIMIZED

In the programming, the programmer can set himself up as God, or a god. The programmer may also be a satanic cult leader which further increases the victim's regard for his power and authority. The programmers of total mind-controlled slaves have tremendous potential to cause their assassin alters to overcome any resistance to kill.

ACCOUNTABILITY & ANONYMITY

A Delta Model with many multiple alters incorporates a built in ability to remove personal accountability. If need be, the person can split off a new personality to perform a particularly odious job. The alters form a peer group which works just like a military unit to inhibit the natural reluctance to kill. This is because the closer a group of persons is, and the closer bonded, the more powerful the enabling. When military units lose 50% or more, the men often lose the will to continue killing, because the group dynamic fizzles out.

The programmers who program in the programming, and then later the programmers who program in specific killing missions, have worked long hours insuring that the assassin alters feel morally distant (superior), and socially distant. The victim is made out to be an inferior being who deserves to be punished and killed. The killer will be doing a great service to his fellow man and country to kill the "target". It may be reframed as if it is a holy mission, almost a crusade. Often times the "target" is not even spoken about in human terms. Perhaps the target is hypnotically portrayed as an ant, a bug, or some wild beast, or simply a target. Hitler helped his military to kill by labelling non-Germans as Untermensch (subhumans). The Americans called the communist Vietnamese "gooks", and they in turn called Americans "monkeys". Because the mind-controlled assassin will not see the face of their victim due to hypnotic programming, they are also limited in seeing the humanness of their victims.

Most of the missions for Delta slaves allow them to kill without the threat of being killed. But the Programmer may put the fear of being killed into the slave. They may hypnotically see some object of victim as a threat. One killer (due to programming) saw the men she killed as having a big penis that would hurt her, so her instinct to survive would kick in to help her assassinate these men.

Practice in given to assassins with situations similar to actual hand-to-hand killings to desensitize them to close range killing. With mind-controlled slaves usually actual live victims are used to get the slaves totally desensitized to killing.

Because assassin parts are stripped of conscious thinking and empathy they are handicapped to really think about what they are doing to another human when they kill.

Still the intelligence agencies and the Illuminati know that somehow the brain still can latch onto guilt--somehow the brain still can perceive in some dim way that it is guilty of killing another human, so they cover their tracks by warrior cleansing rituals. Warriors and soldiers have traditionally done cleansing rituals when they finish a war. An example of a cleansing ritual would be a parade at the end of the war, where the country turns out to tell the soldiers what a great job they did. A programmed assassin in many cases can not receive a parade, but he can be given lots of praise for having done a great job for humanity, or his country, or whatever ideal the Programmer uses as a rationale.

Clock-Time Programming. The victim may see their head as a clock and may be tortured in such a fashion. Twelve o'clock is straight up between the eyes. Six o'clock is straight below the chin.

Monkey Alters.

The creation of animal alters has been covered in previous locations in this book and Vol. 2. However, I felt Lynne Moss-Sharmon's description of Monkey programming was worth including here. Lynne is a victim of mind control living at Halifax, Nova Scotia. In her description of the memory that goes to her drawing no. 29 she quotes what was said during the cages, "You stupid monkey. Into your cage. Hit her and put her back in her cage. Lights on. Monkey time. Monkey business."

Plant alters.

In the older models, they used plants and fruit, but in some of the newer models it appears that they are using samphires (combination beast-plant creatures) and hamadryads (man-plant creatures). Magic from underground springs is the cover story for how these plant-animal hybreds are made.

Presidential Models.

Include both children and adults. They carry NWO messages to world leaders. They often have passports with accordion additions stapled in, because they do so much travelling overseas. Presidential models are kept in numerous locations. If high level individuals need to slip away for nefarious use of slaves, they employ look-alikes to stand in for them, while they do their dirty activities. This is why Presidents such as Clinton and Bush got away with sexually using far more slaves than their schedule seems to indicate. Bush was a pedophile, while his double (who has recently lived in France) was a womanizer.

Prostitute Models.

Slaves designed to function as prostitutes must receive training to protect themselves. One possible problem might be a female prostitute who is accosted by an aggressive male, when she is not to allow herself to be used by him. She can be trained to jump up slap the man on the face, warn him that she kick his testicles next time, and then kiss the man in a submissive makeup fashion to smooth his bruised ego. A prostitute slave will also receive code words to let people, say people in a casino, know who she is. Deeper prostitute parts which need to perform sex for long periods of time accomplish this for their masters by switching alters and by ingesting speed.

The mechanical nature that sexual alters have is illustrated by the "I CAN WALK, I CAN TALK" phrases of alters with doll programming.

Psychic models.

Both men and women slaves were created to carry out various psychic functions. For instance, the AntiChrist needs to be able to look at people and totally understand them psychologically and their systems of mind-control (alter systems, programming etc.). The abilities to successfully perform psychic functions have been tested for years before they were created within the AntiChrist.

Reporting Alters.

The construction of reporting alters is very straightforward behavior modification. For programming reporting alters, they use purpose fragment splits. In other words, these reporting alters are not given the full range and exposure to life, but they experience life from the vantage of their single purpose.

Some therapists are reporting that they are converting reporting alters over by giving them ice cream. They are most likely only dealing with fronts. Since most therapists only deal with front alters, and front systems, these front reporting alters may even be set up so that these therapists think they have converted the reporting alters. The truth is that most of these reporting alters are fragments that don't know what hunger is. All the ice cream in the world is going to mean anything to them. (Cisco will deal with these issues in her part of this book.) The point is simply, these are special purpose fragments who only see life from the vantage point of their little job.

Now we will explain what first and second stage reporting alters are, and then how they are created.

Some of the first stage reporting alters are trained to respond to 3-taps, some to telephone calls, lights, and some to codes. The first stage alters are children from 6 to 10. In an Illuminati system there will be families of reporting alters. Every level ("section") will have at least one group (family) of reporting alters.

The second stage reporting alters are also children from 6 to 10, and they are taught to want Daddy's or Mommy's love. Girl systems seek "Daddy" (the Master) and boy systems often seek "Mommy" (the Master). They are taught to talk about therapy issues, programming issues, and movements by the system. They are linked to the computers, and the eye of the computer. Just to hear "Daddy's voice" is gratification to them.

At stage 1 of the creation of reporting alters, they are the result of the sensory deprivation tank, and are taken from the dissociated part of the mind that feels like it doesn't have a body, or that it is nothing.

Stage 1 Reporting-special-purpose fragments of the mind are painfully shocked in some sensory deprivation environment when the hear 3 taps. The pain ceases when they open the door. They continue to be locked in place in the mind and painfully shocked until they learn the lesson, which is that the pain stops when the door is opened. Over and over they are taught, THE PAIN STOPS WHEN THE DOOR IS OPENED. When they hear tapping they want the pain to stop (probably they abreact their previous tortures) and they open the door to stop the pain. They have only one job, stop the pain by opening the door when three taps (or whatever other trigger/code/signal they are programmed for.)

Stage 2 Reporting-special-purpose alters are given a fuller view of life. They are the watchers in the system. They were created under such horrible torture that they left the body and hover over the body. These are Out-of-Body alters. They are also placed in a fogged room, where they are taught to become one with the fog. They are also told ghost stories like Casper the Ghost. Through the combination of all these programming tactics and techniques, they learn to be invisible. They hover over their assigned position in the system, invisible to all the other alters of that section. These alters have excellent rapid recall. They have **none** of the Straw Man programming that Gatekeeper receive to make them think they are stupid.

To reinforce the programming, the reporting alters are always treated kindly when they obey. (If you get one that hasn't been, suspect a plant, a setup.) Internal protector alters are given the job to insure that reporting alters never miss a call, or never miss responding to a cue. They will go to work and punish lax Stage 1 alters. Again, several therapists claim to have gotten reporting alters to defect from their jobs, but haven't dealt with their protector alters who are taskmasters. If the taskmasters haven't been dealt with, then suspect a ruse to get the therapist to think all is well. The reason this subject is dealt with here, is that some of the top well known therapists have spread information contrary to what is actually happening. That doesn't mean that there may not be an exception to the rule, but the Illuminati is not so stupid as to make reporting alters that defect because someone offered them an ice-cream cone.

Reporting alters are very hard to convert, because during their lifetime they are treated nicely. They experience a nice life if they behave (its the other alters that suffer.)

The Stage 1 reporting alter merely says HELLO and waits for the response HELLO PRINCESS. This is a standard format. If the HELLO PRINCESS occurs, the mind automatically in a flash switches to the Stage 2 reporting alter.

To reinforce the original programming, which would lose its effect over time, the programmer hypnotically command the reporting alters to think of their programming when they see certain objects, for instance, certain types of men's clothing, animals, certain cigarettes or lighters, certain trees etc. Everyday life is used then to reinforce their programming. The Stage 1 alters are also trained to have back-up amnesia, where they forget what they have done after they have responded to the cue. Once the job is done, the job is forgotten.

Like the *Vol. 2* book reported, reporting alters can perceive themselves in various shapes and figures, and they can be locked up in eggs or other containers also.

The Stage 2 alters look forward to Daddy or Mommy coming.

Cisco's system, which helped at the programming level, verifies that during the 50's, 60's, 70's and 80's none of the slaves got free. The Illuminati was not the least bit concerned about losing a slave. They had not lost a mind-controlled slave in centuries, so the recent victories in a few slaves getting their freedom in recent years are a historical first.

Many therapist who make great therapeutic claims are not freeing their slaves at all, but these slaves continue to be used by their masters. The masters just laugh at the deceptions they have pulled over legitimate but naive therapists. Their reporting alters are a key to their control and they have numerous reporting alters in families spread throughout a standard reporting system. If one realizes that the same mentality that created Stalin's USSR, or that created Big Brother is at work here, you will realize that they need a spy-in-the-camp on every block so to speak. Everybody watches everyone. They make many spies within a system of alters.

The reporting alters are given some script such as "You can diffuse from supersolidity to insubstance, you can grow big or small, and can change shape to any for you wish." This makes it easier for them to go through the internal system.

Repunzel alter.

In the internal Mother's of Darkness castle there is often a Repunzel alter created by the Repunzel story, who has magical hair and can change her size at will. She is not an Illuminati alter, even though she resides at their castle.

Transformation alters.

In Chapter 5, in the section on how Fantasia was used as a programming script, the fairy alters (creative parts of the child's mind) were discussed. The Illuminati also create magical alters that can transform other alters into objects. The script for this is Alice In Wonderland, although some newer scripts are also being used (like Xanth's sorceress Vadne). When an alter is changed into an object, it does so without losing its character. This is where cartoons have been helpful to lay the foundation for visualizing this. When one enters particular internal rooms one needs to pick up certain objects in the room to get through portals to the next world. What makes the internal world difficult is that it is set up to change its appearance. An alter may think they see one thing internally and then the scene totally shifts. An alter may look into a mirror and turn into a leaf.

Internal Wall alters.

Some alters will be made into walls. This is why is can be difficult to go around internal walls. These alters shift so that no one can get around them.

Structuring Internal Programmer Alters.

The procedure for the creation of Internal Programmer Alters is several steps. After the child victim has been traumatized they are sorely in need of love. Using a drug that gives a sense of peace and ectasy, along with hypnosis, certain parts of the system are bonded to the programmer. The child alters are told to forget the trauma and merge with the programmer. It's instinct to want to be loved, touched and comforted. This is repeated so that they feel the "peace of God" with their three primary abusers. Scriptures about the peace of God are used to reinforce this programming. These alters who feel one with the master programmer will form a cover group which will pacify any front alters who think negatively about the external programmer. These alters are in turn used to build the actual programmers. The actual programmers will be programmed to take on the characteristics of the master programmers and the Grand Dame working with them. These alters will be formed via split brain programming so they have only logic, no emotion. They can interact for years with the rest of the system and will feel no emotion for the hell and abuse that the put hundreds of other alters through. These controllers will stand behind the Grand Druid Council to insure that they carry out their function correctly.

STRUCTURING WITH THE GRAND DRUID COUNCIL.

In Illuminati mind-controlled slaves it is typical to place at the bottom of the system a pyramid shaped table with a crystal prism life force within the pyramid's center. Around this pyramid table are the Grand Druid Council and Satan hovers over the entire thing. Mirrors on both sides surround the pyramid. The Grand Druid Council can astrally project and attend rituals. There are cover Councils to throw the unapproved seeker off. In fact, every section within the slave may have a Grand Druid Council. These are not the computers, but function closely with the computers. When the life force dies it becomes black.

The slave will told that the life force of the system is within the pyramid which is inside the Grand Druid Council's table. The pyramid will spin constantly from the energy of Lucifer, and the Grand Druid Council may well spin on their table in the opposite direction. Each position on the Grand Druid Council (GDC) is significant, because if determines what that Council person is allowed to do. (This is a mirror of real life.)

The type of programming and commands that a particular council person can carry out are determined by their position around the table. The no. 3 position has access to the center pyramid. Within the spinning pyramid are 3 programmer positions, one for each corner of the triangle. If only one programmer occupies all three positions you are dealing with a master programmer. Very often a system is programmed by lesser programmers, and the inner pyramid has more than one programmer inside the pyramid.

If a group/ series of cult programmers is used, one may see them represented somewhere in the system by their cult names.

Growing through the Grand Druid Council's table will be the generational demonic roots of a tree. Tied up at the base of the tree entwined in the roots is the life force of a fetus that has been sacrificed to empower the slave's mind-control system, as well as connect the slave to people that he or she is teamed with. During occult ritual the fetus is eaten as a seed. The dead child is connected to the roots. Another child, the child who is connected to the memory of these rituals will also be connected to the root of the tree. This child alter will not be able to talk or scream because it is locked in the horrible memories of some humiliating ritual. This child alter may have things in its penis or rectum, it may be covered with filth, it's skin is bruised and tender. This may be the "core"--the birth child. In male slaves, sometimes the birth child or a first core split called "the core" is placed in the tree roots rather than the carousel. Egg shaped demonic power bases will also be set in at the root of the tree. The core of some slaves will be removed to the astral plane.

The Grand Druid Council will astral project to different spheres and different ceremonies. This gets into black magic such as the *777* book of Aleister Crowley touches on, where there are colors for each planet for astral projection.

While we are discussing the deeper parts to a system, let's discuss the compass. Each system has a compass built into it, that is incredibly important. The 4-demons (goddesses) which control the 4 directions are called Quarter-Regents. The Eastern one controls Wind & Air. The Northern one controls the elemental Earth. The Western one controls water realms. And the Southern one controls fire.

STRUCTURING THE SHADOW ALTERS

Alters which are created in the sensory deprivation tanks which have no sense of being attached to a body are used in clusters on each level (section or world) of an Illuminati system of alters. These alters are the ones who no one else can see because they have no body, and yet they are the shadows that know what's going on in the outside world. Every level has access to what is going on in the outside world through the eyes of these shadow alters, but many alters do not care. Nor will the shadow alters tell everyone on the level. These clusters of shadows are also chained together, so that a link exists between them. They have no sense of self. They sometimes serve as directors to guide the child slave. They may protect the child by telling it to get home, to call home, or to not be frightened it will be OK. They are also willing to mislead therapists.

STRUCTURING IN THE MIRRORS

One of the movies which was developed to help program in the internal mirrors was the movie "*The Hungry Glass*" made in the early '50s.

Let's review *The Hungry Glass* movie so that those who aren't familiar with it, can see the programming elements of the movie.

The movie is about a fictitious haunted mansion that was built near the sea by a rich man named Bellman. The mansion lays dormant for decades until a couple buy the mansion. The mansion and its window is described as "a jewel box to pull the silver off the sea." When they move in they experience many strange things connected with mirrors and glass. In the Monarch programming, glass and mirrors are similar. Many of the mirrors in a system are really one-way windows. The following are some quotes from the movie:

- "mirrors bring a house to life"
- "I'm great at turning nightmares into daydreams."
- "don't know if I saw it...it's imagination playing tricks...never get it out of your system."
- "we're both suggestible to suggestion..."
- "...saw something and imagined the rest...just plain fear...did I see something supernatural?"
- "If you want anything just scream."
- "Miracles can be done with concentration."
- I got the house in order with "spell, book and candle" which is a phrase referring to witchcraft.
- you "never grow old in the mirrors". When alters of a slave look in a mirror it happens just like in the movie, they see themselves as young, which is a strong hypnotic image they have been programmed to see.

What the movie shows is that it is lethal to break mirrors. And if you go through mirrors you fall to your death. The one woman as well as a little girl are curious about the mirrors and they are pulled into the mirrors and die. In other words, the programming message is don't be curious about the mirrors nor go into the mirrors. There are demons in the mirrors. In the movie they use the word "bogeyman". The room of mirrors is locked, and the message of the movie is, don't open locked doors in your internal system. In the movie, when Gil looks in the mirror, he sees a protector of the mirrors. This in the programming is called the KEEPER OF THE MIRROR, and is a demonic entity or demons placed to protect the mirror. Things are layered and hidden in a system behind mirrors. It also gives the idea that if you look into a mirror, even if you are physically old, the mirror can lie and give you a youthful appearance. Young actor William Shatner, of later Star Trek fame plays the leading role in the movie. He tries to rationally explain things but gives up, when explanations fail. This is encouraging the small slave who would see the movie to think, if an adult can't figure these things out rationally, then the explanations for what I am seeing during programming are supernatural. William Shatner was raised in Catholic Montreal, Quebec and went to McGill Univ. when Dr. White (Ewen Cameroon) was carrying out programming there. He graduated in 1952 and married Gloria Rand. He has acted in a number of strange movies designed for programming, and it appears they have used him repeatedly over the years as a tie in to familiarize the slave to him. He also acted in *The World of Suzie Wong* (1958), *The Brothers Karamazov* (1958), *The Devil's Rain* (1978), *Teklords* (1991). The Hungry Glass was produced by William Freye, who also did some other movies for the Network.

In some areas of a system, the script is that only the "dead"--alters who are so disconnected to their bodies they see themselves as spirits are allowed to cross between different internal worlds by using passwords such as "ELIADE". At other times, alters are given words to return to their "own time period" such as NICRO NECTRUM NECTO.

STRUCTURING THE TAPESTRY

A script is given for all standard Illuminati systems for an internal Sorceress to be assigned the making of tapestries. The tapestries enable alters to go into other worlds, in other words they are mirror gateways. For instance the sorceress may weave a door into the tapestry. Going into the mirror, going over the rainbow, going through walls or picture tapestries are ways that alters go from one world into another state.

STRUCTURING THE ALTER FAMILIES BY SPINNING

Spinning is used in a variety of programming purposes. We will review these together, so that a comparison can be made of the different purposes. Spinning tortures (which the victim endures while in drugged hypnotic states) are used extensively by the programmers as they construct alter systems.

Programmed multiples will frequently complain of "spinning". All at once, whole sections of alters will begin spinning and getting dizzy. During such an abreaction, you will notice that the eyes change, the victim will appear disoriented and stare, or even grimace as if being rotated at a high speed. The head and/or body will rotate slightly during the abreaction. During the programming of such a spin program, the programmer will lay in the experience for an entire section of alters, and attach the visual image of falling into an abyss, a cyclone, a tornado, a vortex, or a whirlwind to the memory of being spun.

When a system goes into spinning the power of numerous memories, and the power of the dizzy spinning makes it difficult for much of anything. Certain alters trigger the spinning and certain alters maintain the spinning. In fact some spinning alters take pride in their spinning abilities. Obviously, their programmers commended them when they did their job correctly.

Another use of spin tortures is to create spin families. The spin torture creates spin alters which have been spun off a "parent" alter. The parent alter may later be age progressed hypnotically and given care over her children alters who she or he spun off during the torture. Spinning is a way of creating dissociation, and the spin memory dissociates the spin children alters from their original source alter. This creates alters which are close together internally, but dissociated. The spin training and memories are then used to teach these alters to spin away the pain. Spin alters are used for some of the worst abuse and the spinning sensation is used internally by these alters to dissociate the severe abuse they receive.

The actual mechanisms to do the spinning torture vary. Some are rotating tables, some are more upright like a Wheel of Fortune type wheel, or "Space trainer" type machine where the victim is inside the rotating mechanism. Flashing lights are used along with the spinning, so that flashing lights can be used in the future to cause the alter(s) to abreact the spinning sensation. Verbal triggers are also placed in. The spin kittens will actually physically go around when commanded.

Certain alters will be trained to re-create mentally the sensations of spinning via enhance imagery and memory training. This is so that the system will be self-governing and self-propelled.

The spin traumas may be used to help create the ring within ring, circle within a circle effect that is structured into so many systems.

Programs that are put in via Spin-based traumas or attached to spin-based traumas often affect wide areas of a system, rather than individual alters. For instance, if an area of the system is mis-behaving, a tornado program, or a tumbleweed program may be set off by the internal governing mechanisms and an entire world of alters will feel the program.

Victims of mind-control often speak about walls full of different faces. The walls of faces are people who are in need of help. They are shown repeatedly to the victim, to solicit the emotion of wanting to run & rescue. This then is used as the cover program for alters for them to want to run back to the cult to "rescue" their "friends". Generally, all that will be experienced is the memory of walls of faces and the urge to run.

Another element of programming, often seen in military programming, is where the victim is left in a totally dark room, and then for men, a hypnotic motherly voice is played repeatedly to them in the dark. For women, they may get their primary handler's hypnotic voice.

BELOW>>more structures used to build a system>>

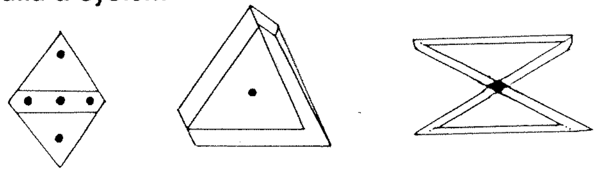

CHAPTER 8.
THE SCIENCE OF BODY MANIPULATION & PROGRAMMING

CONTENTS:
A. CRANIAL MANIPULATION
B. GENETIC MANIPULATION

Implants that manipulate the body and its functions have been discussed in Chapter 6. The body manipulating implants were placed there to keep all of the implant information intact in one chapter, even though some body manipulating implants are not electrically activated.

When our previous book *The Illuminati Formula Used to Create an Undetectable Total Mind-controlled Slave* (1996) covered the 12 Sciences of mind-control, its chapter 8 on the manipulation of the human body did not cover the ancient secrets of cranial manipulation, nor the modern secrets of genetic mind manipulation via applications of radiation with chemicals.

B. CRANIAL MANIPULATION--Important Top Secrets of Illuminati Mind-control disguised as Muggings & other events.

INTRODUCTION

The information in this section exposes a previously unknown type of mind-control.

- The woman ran tripping through the woods, slipping on the wet leaves attacked by an unknown assailant for an unknown reason. The report of her mugging the next day never gets beyond the policeman who hears her story.
- A wife cries softly to herself as her husband beats her. The crime goes unnoticed in a busy world.

What do these acts of violence have in common with orthodontics, orthopedics, rolfing and other structural treatments?

The shocking fact is that some of these kind of events happen for purposes of mind control.

Any trauma to the head, be it an accidental fall, a fight, a bullet wound, or a motorcycle or car accident can cause permanent structural brain injury.

But what passes for accidents are at times carefully designed & brilliantly executed cranial manipulations designed by the Illuminati to create specific mental and personality changes.

In order to get closer to the bottom of this type of mind-control, the author, Fritz, obtained the same books that cranial osteopaths study, and the same books that disclose the modern scientific studies of head shape/facial features in relation to personality, and then studied them. This author has tried to get as close as an outsider can get to understanding what a cranial-manipulating programmer has going on in his head.

Until this chapter was published, the Illuminati's ability to perpetrate this mind control has been a complete secret. This is the first time that this secret has ever reached the public light of day. It is a secret known only to a handful of people in the world. It is a secret that various parts of Satan's realm have carefully guarded for centuries. How I got this secret is a long story. It is the confluence of many streams of research coming together. The people, who carry out this type of programming hate the God of the *Holy Bible*. This art's academy's own literature speaks about "the Force". "The Mysterious Vital Force is a Universal Power of Intelligence present in all things." (Direct quote from the Cranial Academy's official newsletter). This is a Force similar to Jung's "Collective unconsciousness" and Star War's The Force. The God of the Universe, who loves each and every person in spite of their hatefulness & rejection, has also warned that all things will be revealed. If I didn't write this, God would simply seek some other avenue to expose these hideous secrets.

Who would have imagined that the Illuminati and a particular aspect of their mind control would end up to be connected to Transcendental Meditation, Kung Fu, modern Osteopathy, Theosophy and the Rosicrucians? None of us who research these groups are surprised that they are all tied together in the occult via the SPIN principle. However, you may be surprised by how they are also all affiliated to this form of mind control, which can be disguised as a typical mugging! Even the Mafia are able to produce heartless criminal alters using cranial manipulation, and they don't have the best skills at doing it either.

How do victims of cranial mind-control respond? Most victims follow the subtle guidance of their mind, completely ignorant of why their mind wants to go a particular direction. Some even attribute their mental drives to the metaphysical world. This author's hope is that the truth of this chapter will help restore free will to numerous victims of this secret mind-control technique.

In spite of the extreme lack of information on this type of mind-control, it appears to have been more widely used than one might have guessed. The benefit of this type of mind-control to the programmers is that a change in the body and head structure of a victim is permanent and undetectable, in contrast to hypnotic or drug induced states.

A further benefit, is that a skilled person could be tampered with without their realization. Some of the procedures reduce the alertness of the subject, separate him from his memories and make the person more receptive to other forms of mind-control even if the subject has had no prior programming. One example of a technique that causes a rapid adaption of the cranial bones with an accompanying neurological effect would be to flick the occiput posteriorly and inferiorly on exhalation (extension), then lift the vault (parietal) bones up from the temporal area on inhalation (flexion), then rapidly draw the vault posteriorly and inferiorly, then dislocate the sphenoid into a vertical or lateral strain position. These procedures will also speed up the appearance of aging. This is just one example of a quick procedure to control the mind of another. And as Cisco's section will bring out, power (including power over other humans) is the goal of the occult underworld.

A lot of research has gone into producing this finished report. At first glance, the polished nature of this chapter's report, which is replete with so many sources, may tend to mislead some people into thinking that this type of mind-control hasn't been secret. Quite to the contrary, the pieces of the puzzle were well hidden. This type of mind-control has been very secret and it is only the result of long hard research that the many divergent pieces of the puzzle have been assembled and placed into a coherent picture for the reader.

Although the possibility exists that some may misapply the intent of this chapter and use this for evil, like so much of this book's material the really bad guys already have it. On the flip side, the potential for good, if medical science will use this secret knowledge for good is tremendous. For instance, compare the improved appearance of Ivana Trump after her cranial work was done.

This chapter has the potential positive by-product that others will be inspired to explore how cranial manipulation can be used to benefit humankind. God is in the business of turning evil into good. But perhaps in our fallen corrupted world, this secret knowledge which is being exposed in this chapter will no longer find good men worthy of this information who are also capable enough to put it to good practice. If so, then so be it. At the very least, some people will gain strength of heart to realize once again that when one know's how God's creation operates--it is easy to see how a paradise without problems could be created. Man's worst enemy is man. The Illuminati are sitting on technology and knowledge that could bring about almost a virtual paradise, but they are hoarding this technology and knowledge, and suppressing it. Further, rather than helping mankind, they are using this cranial knowledge to reward those who are friendly to their luciferian hierarchy, and to abuse those who dare to seriously impede their agenda.

After you read this chapter and are aware that the secrets of cranial manipulation could rescue children with cerebral palsy, and some of the children with Down syndrome, you too will cry with this author at the needless suffering that the Illuminati have perpetrated upon mankind in their quest for total domination of this globe.

CRANIAL BLOOD PRESSURE has been kept a SECRET

Recently, a Dr. Yoshiaki Omura in New York, discovered that the blood pressure in the brain is vastly different than the rest of the body. The blood pressure in the brain has major consequences on one's thinking (such as irritability, & insomnia) and also affects other things in the body, such as muscle tightness in the neck. High brain blood pressure is called cephalic hypotension syndrome. Yet, when this doctor went to see what the medical books/research institutions said about brain blood pressure, he found nothing. He has been making his discoveries known in speaking engagements. He recently addressed a large audience of chinese doctors. When this author met Yoshiaki Omura, I unsuccessfully attempted to tell Yoshiaki the reason that this knowledge was suppressed was in the interest of mind-control.

Dr. Omura has been treating various illnesses by working with patients' brain blood-pressure. The diagnosis of other problems, such as the early stages of cancer, has been done earlier by Omura by monitoring brain blood pressure levels than MRI tests results.

CEREBRAL SPINAL FLUID kept SECRET

Another important fluid in the brain, discovered by others is Cerebral spinal fluid. There are many technical details about this CS fluid that are extremely important to the way the mind-body functions.

In this chapter, we will discuss a number of areas of medical science, acupuncture, personology etc. concerning the brain, which when known and used by skilled practitioners can give the practitioner control over another person.

The Mystery Schools and particular bloodlines have kept much of this knowledge to themselves and continue to keep the best secrets.

Daniel Whiteside, a pioneer in behavior genetics and understanding the relationship of the shape of the skull to personality, provides some important confirmations of how the Mystery Schools transmitted this secret cranial knowledge. In his important work "The Background of Structure/Function" (pp.2-3) he outlines that Structure/Function was studied and taught by the Greek Mystery Schools, and was the basis of the Roman Empire's psychology. The Catholic church suppressed this knowledge. This knowledge was kept alive by the Cabalistic philosophers and the Arabs, until the Knights Templars brought it back.

If we build upon the information that Daniel has provided we discover that from the Knights Templars, this knowledge went to the leadership of the Prieure de Sion, who in turn disseminated low forms of it to the occult groups that they controlled. For instance, the Rosicrucian Order for North & South America in their *Vol. 8* of their *Rosicrucian Manual* (San Jose, CA: Supreme Grand Lodge AMORC) pp. 91-108 deals with the spinal column, nerves, & the influence of color & music on the nervous system, etc. Grand Master Lewis writes on pg. 103, "The Rosicrucians were the first to have a complete outline of this system [nervous system] and to know exactly what part of the human body was connected with every other part."

One witness reported to this author that he watched an acupuncture specialist repeatedly work on clients' brains by inserting

3 long skinny needles through the skull. The acupuncture specialist bragged to this man that he could completely control a human via his skill with the needles. He showed this witness how he could kill pain, and how he could kill self-will by touching minute areas within the brain. He was also skilled in manipulating the mind of the client in other ways too with the needles. There has been a great deal of research into determining what the different purposes of the different areas of the brain are. Several researchers have independently identified that the ability to make choices, that is what we call "free will", is located near the Broadman Area 24 in the Anterior Cingulate Sulcus. Tampering with this area can disturb a person's ability to have free will. (For more information on this one could begin with Crick, Francis. *The Astonishing Hypothesis The Scientific Search for the Soul.*)

Acupuncture was **virtually unknown** to mainstream Americans **until** a *NY Times* journalist in China reported that he was successfully treated with acupuncture **in 1971**. Pressure points can also be manipulated by Acupressure, which is similar to acupuncture except fingers rather than needles are used. This is just one example of a related technique which went unnoticed for decades (actually centuries by the Western World.) The mugging-mind control information in this article has gone unnoticed by mainstream America too.

Time Magazine, Nov. 4, 1991, reported that there are four types of alternative medicine, which they classified as Life-Style (such as Macrobiotics, Ayurvedic medicine, and holistic medicine), Botanical (such as Homeopathy, Herbalism, and Aromatherapy), Mental healings (such as with Crystals, Guided imagery, biofeedback and Hypnotherapy) and Manipulative/Hands-on (such as Reflexology, Rolfing, Shiatsu, Alexander tech., Chiropractic, and Acupressure & Acupuncture).

Reflexology dates back to at least 2330 B.C. in Egypt. Shiatsu is a japanese finger pressure deep massage of pressure points is over 1,000 years old. The skull & head bone manipulations that are being exposed for the first time in this report, were used in ancient Egypt and other parts of the ancient world.

That Nov., 91 *Time Magazine* article did not mention that acupressure/acupuncture has been knowledge that the secret societies in China studied and often kept hidden for centuries, as a part of Wushu (martial arts) in China. For instance, in a recent Chinese book *72 Consummate Arts Secrets of the Shaolin Temple,* (pub. by Fujian Science & Technology Pub. Co. Ltd., Fujian, China, 1990) by Wu Jiaming and translated by Rou Gang, diagrams and explanations are given of the important head/body points (for acupressure/ acupuncture/& kung fu.) What is important for our discussion on mind control are the Kung Fu (Wushu) points in the head. This book gives 4 points on the front of the head, seven on the side of the head, and four on the back side of the head.

The Shaolin Buddhist monks have kept their martial arts (which is called "Kung-fu" in the U.S. and "Wushu" in China) a secret hidden within their temple on Song Mountain, Henan Province. This buddhist monastery has a long history of teaching kung-fu and is exerting a big influence in the world as its type of kung fu spreads.

The japanese took kung-fu from the Chinese many years ago and then developed from it specialized forms of kung-fu, such as Karate, Judo, etc.

THE CHINESE SECRET OCCULT SOCIETY CONNECTION

The important item that this paragraph will emphasize is that the Chinese secret societies studied the pressure points on the skull completely. They learned how the skull could be manipulated and what it would do to a person. Of course this information was only revealed to the best chinese kung-fu experts. It is sometimes referred to as the skill of bone setting.

In China, bone-setters are a type of

chinese doctor which are popular to some Chinese. These bone-setters have kept their secrets within many generations of families who specialize in bone-setting and also within the secret Triad societies. The Communist government admitted that it has failed to pry family bone-setting secrets from the families that have passed these secrets down generationally. This is due in part to the strong chinese belief in ancestor worship and strong families. A family's secrets are considered one source of its strength. One communist chinese tactic to pry the secrets loose was their "folkart barefoot doctor" system which they hoped the bone-setters would join.

Junxie Li wrote in 1990 that a chinese Kung Fu document shows that bone manipulation was practiced as early as 2700 B.C. The secrets have been passed down for many years.

An American writer stated in 1983, "Traditional Chinese medicine and chiropractic are remarkably alike in their underlying theories...Through deep massage at the occiput [head bone], for example, (contemporary) Chinese practitioners find that they can bring down high blood pressure, a practice analogous to that of chiropractors."

A Buddhist monk Bodhidharma is credited to having brought the martial arts and healing arts associated with martial arts to China. He must have been a very strong individual to have made the 2,500 miles journey which back before there were paths or maps must have been more like an 8,000 miles of perilous journey on foot from India over the Himalayas to the Chinese interior. Bodhidharma had studied big cats, dogs, bears, insects and other animals to learn how they defend and attack. His physical, mental and spiritual teachings became known later as Zen Buddhism. His monastery became the famous Shaolin Monastery. A master of the Shaolin Monastery would have two dragons deeply branded into his flesh. It is said that the Red Dragon represented knowledge in ancient China.

In the Tang Dynasty (618-907 A.D.) some of the Kung Fu experts at that time were Li Bai and Twelfth Sister Li of the Li family. Madame Gong Sun and Twelfth Sister Li composed a famous Xihe Sword Dance combining martial arts and choreographic arts. The Li family kept some of their secret martial arts skills (including bone setting) secret for hundreds of years, and as a top Illuminati family are secretly proud of their occult knowledge and history.

To illustrate how the head has been studied are some quotes from *72 Consummate Arts Secrets of the Shaolin Temple*,

" TAIYANG ACUPOINT (Sun Acupoint)
Located on both sides of the forehead, the left being Tai Yang and the right Tai Yin. Nowadays it is generally called Taiyang Acupoint being a vital part of the head. It is 'Dead Acupoint' among the twenty-four Acupoints. One will be faint or even die if it is slightly seized.

TAINRONG ACUPOINT
Located on the back of ears and is in parallel with the ear. It lies on the outer-side of Fen Yi Acupoint, and is above the Tian Chuang acupoint. It is vital acupoint of the back of one's head. It is also a 'Dead Acupoint' among the twenty-four acupoints.

FENGFU ACUPOINT
Located in the centre of the low part of one's back head and is below the Naohu Acupoint but above the Yamen Acupoint. It's in parallel with the left and right FenYi Acupoint. It is a single Acupoint. It is a vital part of one's back brain. It is a 'Dead Acupoint', too. If this acupoint is seized, one may faint or die immediately."

Washu (Chinese Martial Arts) went underground into the chinese occult secret societies, because the rulers feared that it would make the common people too powerful, so they frequently banned the teaching of martial arts. The teachers of Kung fu teach their pupils that Kung fu has both an external work with the hands, feet and body and an internal work which refers to the occult spiritual work that provides the energy and spirit to do the martial arts that Kung fu masters do.

The Shaolin Temple masters have studied the human skeleton very closely for centuries. The books *Shaolin Long Fist Kung Fu* by Yang Jwing-Ming & Jeff Bolt and *The Way of the Sun Dragon Chinese Martial Art of Tai-Yang Lung Tao* are other examples of books in English which also show points to hit on the head.

The art of manipulating the skull and other bones has travelled from the secret societies to about 20% of China's doctors. As mentioned, this skill is called "bone setting." Some Kung Fu experts and Chinese doctors learn bone setting, including how to work with the skull bones.

In 1974, the U.S. Dept. of Health, Education and Welfare (which has been full of New Agers) along with the Fogarty International Center of the National Institutes of Health which works with WHO of the U.N. set up a conference in Seattle, WA which focused on Health Care in China. The U.S. Government Printing Office then printed up in 1975 edited versions of the papers presented at the conference. The resulting book on *Medicine in Chinese Cultures* has some very pertinent information to the ancient secret Chinese art of manipulating skull bones.

- After W.W. II, Chinese bone setters began to use X-rays. (p. 261)
- The Chinese bone setters had their own professional associations. (p. 261-262)
- Bone-setters' societies have been interwoven with secret societies, the link being Chinese kung-fu (martial arts) which the secret societies control. "Bone-setters get their knowledge of anatomy from practicing kung fu, for part of the instruction is in how the bones and muscles work." (p. 262.)
- Bone-setters, in order to practice in Hong Kong, generally find it advantageous to get (buy) protection from the Triads (Chinese Secret Societies controlled by the Li Illuminati family, as well as other powerful Chinese families.) Doctors are licensed in Hong Kong according to British standards and bone-setters have not received much recognition from the British government. But someone connected with the CIA verbally let out that they have been very interested in studying chinese bone setting.

T'ai Chi, is the philosophy associated in China with the yin-yang. It is incorporated into the name T'ai Chi Chuan (Great Origin Fist) which are the calisthenics which many chinese practice on a daily basis. The advanced student learns 128 movements. Practitioners of the exercises can be seen exercising at dusk, especially in Kuala Lumpur. "Instruction in Chinese medicine is considered a normal part of the training to become a T'ai Chi instructor, and many instructors are said to be skilled in bone setting and the treatment of sprains and strains. One of the most famous T'ai Chi instructors in Kuala Lumpur, an elderly man who received his training in China many years ago, is indeed famous locally as a bone-setter. It is clear that it is difficult to draw a line between T'ai Chi Chuan and preventive or even curative medicine." (*Medicine In Chinese Cultures*..., p.310

Bruce Lee, who came from a very wealthy branch of the Li family, was half chinese and half American by blood. He grew up in Hong Kong, and was taught Chinese martial arts beginning at the age of 14. Bruce Lee came to America, and was very American in his thinking. Due to his American thinking, he thought radically different from the traditional chinese martial arts mentality, and there is strong evidence to suggest it cost him his life. He not only exposed to the western world secrets of Chinese martial arts, but he mixed various types of moves from the various oriental schools of martial arts. For doing this, he made many of the Zen martial arts masters furious. When Bruce Lee died at 32 in 1972, his body was like a teenager's and it was in great shape. Bruce Lee had no equal in the martial arts. The chinese/Hong Kong press felt that he was killed by the Zen martial arts masters of China. In fact, his student Abdul described Bruce Lee as a "renegade Taoist Priest." Whether or not Bruce and his son Brandon were killed by the Triads and/or the Secret Martial Arts Societies of China, doesn't change the fact that Bruce Lee angered them for exposing their martial arts to the western world.

From research in this area, it is clear that there are still secrets kept by Chinese martial arts which only a few carefully chosen members of secret societies know. Bruce Lee did not make it to this inner circle. The inner groups of the secret societies trade favors. This is a standard method of payoff. Well trained martial arts cults that know some of the secrets of cranial manipulation can be asked to assault a human target. What happens if the head injury is not fine-tuned? Laurence Miller Ph.d. in the article "Unusual Head Injury Syndromes..."(*The Journal of Cognitive Rehabilitation* 11-12/'94, p. 13) states, "Memory disorders are virtually universal in head injury and typically top the list of symptoms reported by patients. The 'standard' pattern of posttraumatic memory disorder - and indeed, for organic memory disorders generally - consists of well-preserved old memories, patchy or impaired memory for events immediately preceding the injury (retrograde amnesia) and following the injury (anterograde amnesia), and subsequent difficulty learning and retaining new information." This is **exactly opposite** of what the handlers want. They want the victim to forget the past abuse, but be able to remember a series of new commands for a new operation precisely. This underscores the reason WHY the person doing the assault needs to be skilled. There is no doubt that chinese martial arts are being used to mug people in order to alter their thinking. The secret potential of Chinese Martial Arts to alter a person's skull bones and thinking **has been one secret worth killing to preserve**.

Miller also points out that frontal lobe injuries can weaken the subject's hold over reality. Although Miller writes about accidental injuries, his article is extremely well researched about the wide variety of mental problems that develop from different injuries. The medical world have named many of these specific problems such as the Ganser Syndrome, the Capgras Syndrome, & Cotard's Syndrome. While this kind of research is helpful to establish that different specific injuries to the head can create specific symptoms, the written material is not specific about how to intentionally create a symptom.

The ancient EGYPTIAN CONNECTION

Skull manipulation was used by the ancient Egyptian priesthood, as well as trauma-based mind-control, astral projection, and hypnosis. At least some of these secrets got passed on to later secret societies.

THE TIBETAN CONNECTION

One religious black magic group are the Tibetan monks. Their man-god Dalai Lama, is coveted as a guest of many of the top Illuminati, Mishpucka, and other occult figures around the world. In 1966, the Dalai Lama wrote the book *Opening of the Wisdom-Eye*, which is typically referred to as the third-eye area which is slated by the NWO to be the initiation site for the mark of the Beast. Many leading European occultists have gone to Tibet to learn from the black magicians of Tibet. Hitler imported hundreds of Tibetan monks for his Third Reich. Nazi expeditions were sent to Tibet; and in 1942, Hitler, because of his occult ideas about Asia & Tibet, was excited to plant a Nazi flag on the highest peak of the Caucasian mountains, Mt. Elbrus, at the specific time of 11 a.m.

For those who didn't realize how dark were the secrets of the Tibetan monks, just a small sampling of books on their black magic secrets include: David-Neels' *Magic & Mystery in Tibet* (1958), Bromage's *Tibetan Yoga*, Beyer's *The Cult of Tara--Magic & Ritual in Tibet* (1978), the *Tibetan Book of the Dead* (and commentaries about it), Suzuki's *The Zen Doctrine of No Mind* (1973), and Thomas' *Out of This World to Forbidden Tibet* (1954).

Qigong is the chinese word for the healing arts taught within the secret schools of Martial Arts. Tibetans go to the S.W. National University in China to learn Qigong. Dapang Qigong is a derivative of Qigong where both martial arts and healing are taught together.

One of the secrets of the Tibetan monks, is the physical manipulation of the third eye.

T. Lobsang Rampa, a Tibetan from one of the 10 elite families of Tibet, at the age of seven entered the Chakpori Lamasery, the Temple of Tibetan Medicine, where the Tibetan masters taught healing arts including astral projection, clairvoyance and levitation. Their mystic arts are similar to what the Illuminati believe in and practice. For instance, they learn about the silver cord that connects people. Upper-class boys such as Lobsang received extremely severe treatment from the time they were born to insure that they were tough enough to survive the harsh Tibetan life. Lobsang described the traumas of early boyhood as "brutal", but then adds on page 18 of his book *The Third Eye*, "Under this system weaklings did not survive, but those who did could survive almost anything." Children were kept awake eighteen hours a day, and worked hard during that time. Even very small babies are kept awake, so that according to Tibetan belief "they shall not become demon invested."

On Lobsang's eighteenth birthday, the Lama of his monastery opened his third eye. Lobsang records the brutal ceremony in his book *The Third Eye* (Ballantine Books, 1956). Ballantine Books advertises on the cover of this book, "Learn the secrets of the most controversial power of the new age...The Third Eye"."

Before this author relates what Lobsang "reveals" about this great secret of new age power, let me interject an informed opinion--this story may be a cover memory to hide what this author has found out is the REAL THIRD EYE manipulation. But first, let's see what Lobsang describes, and then we'll discuss it.

On the evening of his 18th birthday, Lobsang went to a little room in the monastery. Three lamas of high degrees came and bound his head tightly with an herbal compress to produce some kind of drug effect upon him. They came back and removed the herbal compress, and wiped his forehead clean.

Then Lobsang describes, "A strong-looking lama sat behind me and took my head between his knees. The second lama opened a box and removed an instrument made of shining steel. It resembled a bradawl except that instead of having a round shaft this one was U-shaped, and in place of a point there were little teeth around the edge of the "U" For some moments the lama looked at the instrument, and then passed it through the flame of the lamp to sterilize it. The Lama...took my hands and said, "This is quite painful, Lobsang, and it can only be done while you are fully conscious. It will not take very long, so try to keep as still as you can." I could see various instruments laid out, and a collection of herbal lotions, and I thought to myself: "Well, Lobsang, my boy, they will finish you one way or the other and there is nothing you can do about it--except keep quiet!" The lama with the instrument looked around to the others, and said, "All ready? Let us start now, the sun has just set." He pressed the instrument to the centre of my forehead and rotated the handle. For a moment there was a sensation as if someone was pricking me with thorns. To me it seemed that time stood still. There was no particular pain as it penetrated the skin and flesh, but there was a little jolt as the end hit the bone. The pain was not sharp at all, just a pressure and a dull ache. I did not move with the Lama Mingyar Dondup looking on; I would rather have died than make a move or outcry. He had faith in me, as I in him, and I knew that what he did or said was right. He was watching most closely, with a little pucker of muscles in tension at the corners of his mouth.

Suddenly there was a little scrunch and the instrument penetrated the bone. Instantly its motion was arrested by the very alert operator. He held the handle of the instrument firmly while the Lama ...passed him a very hard, very clean sliver of wood which had been treated by fire and herbs to make it as hard as steel. This sliver was inserted in the "U" of the instrument and slid down so that it just entered the hole in my head. The lama operating moved slightly to one side so that the Lama Mingyar Dondup could also stand in front of me. Then, at a nod from the latter, the operator, with infinite caution, slid the sliver farther and farther. Suddenly I felt a stinging, tickling sensation apparently in the bridge of my nose. It subsided, and I became apparently aware of subtle scents which I could not identify. That, too, passed away and was replaced by a feeling as if I was pushing, or being pushed, against a resilient veil. Suddenly there was a blinding flash, and at that instant the Lama Mingyar Dondup said "Stop!". For a moment the pain was intense, like a searing white flame. It diminished, died and was replaced by spirals of colour, and globules of incandescent smoke. The metal instrument was carefully removed. The sliver of wood remained, it would stay in place for two or three weeks and until it was removed I would have to stay in this little room almost in darkness. No one would see me except these three lamas, who would continue my instruction day by day. Until the sliver was removed I would have only the barest necessities to eat and drink."

As the projecting sliver was being bound in place so that it could not move, the Lama Mingyar Dondup turned to me and said, "You are now one of us, Lobsang. For the rest of your life you will see people as they are and not as they pretend to be."

ANOTHER EXAMPLE

Bill Schnoebolen, who has publicly been exposing satanism, writes about his experiences as a vampire and satanist in several books. In his book, *Lucifer Dethroned,* he describes a third eye experience that he had during an "astral projection." "It seemed my eyeballs were turning to molten steel. My forehead was about to explode. I felt a claw tear into my brow, right between but slightly above my eyebrows and insert itself into my brain like a white-hot poker. I tried to scream, but could not. My entire body felt like it was going to burst from being filled with roaring, flaming hot light....I felt like a fish on the end of a hook being hauled out of the water by my very brain. I screamed in pain, but it came out: 'Glory and Love for Lucifer! Hatred! Hatred! Hatred! to God be accursed!...' "

In order to interpret his third eye experience, it needs to be asked where is Bill Schnoebolen coming from? This author's best evidence to answer that comes from personal testimony. People familiar with this author (Fritz) have contacted Schnoebolen about Fritz for years. Why has Bill Schnoebelen taken a very cold attitude to this chapter's author (Fritz) and his work? Why has he opposed and slandered this author, and this author's work like the *Vol. 2* book, and other information that this author has been putting out to expose Illuminati mind-control since 1991. One would expect a genuine ex-Satanist to be supportive of someone who risks his life to rescue Satanists from bondage. The reason I introduce personal testimony is that I know what side of things I am on, which is God's side, and when people like Bill Schnoebolen oppose me from the get-go, without even meeting me, it is solid evidence to me where they are coming from. From what Schnoebolen writes about his third eye experience, and from what this author has learned of third eye cranial manipulation, it appears that Bill is still under some cult deception and is very likely still under the mind-control that placed his cover memory of his third-eye experience into him. It is very likely that both Lobsang and Bill were in a trance state induced by drugs, hypnosis and dissociation from pain, and that a screen memory was laid in on top of their sensory experience to hide the manipulation of certain midline bones such as the ethmoid, vomer, sphenoid, etc. The sensation produced by the "third eye" cranial manipulation is unforgettable, it feels like something is moving straight into your skull through the frontal bone of the forehead, and then penetrating deeply into the center of the head.

In order to preserve their cranial secrets, the occult world has cleverly fabricated these kind of dramatic cover stories. What they are doing is improving the alignment of the ethmoid bone, which makes a person more sensitive to the environment, which will be perceived by some as improving one's psychic abilities.

(As a final note, when this author met with Bill, Bill's view towards helping MPD was that it was demons that needed to be delivered. One of his supposed deliverance success stories, an Illuminati victim of mind-control, is still a multiple and still a double agent, and also actively working against this author's work. Bill personally told this author, that while he was a satanist & vampire he was offered to have a mind-controlled slave, but that he turned the opportunity down. Bill is not the only person publicly exposing the occult/NWO who has over the years tried to prevent this author's information from getting to you.)

The third eye area, called the ethmoid, is physically manipulated by the monks for mind-control purposes. In the occult world, the third eye area actually extends to include the entire midline area, not just the ethmoid, but also the midline bones, and the related brain structures, especially the pineal gland. Midline bones are interesting to occultists, because the main endocrine and neurologic structures in the brain are placed around the central 3rd and 4th ventricular areas. (The first two ventricles, known as the lateral ventricles, repose on either side of the third.) The bones are one way to access these midline structures. the ethmoid is the front-most midline bone (behind the frontal, which is considered to be two bones; since in many people the metopic suture does not close). The ethmoid interfaces with other midline bones.

In the course of this book, the reader is introduced to the concept that the human brain is actually 7 brains. The 4th or mid brain that lies between the upper 3 brains and the lower three and functions as a crossroads, joins with the optic thalamus, which forms the floor of the 3rd ventricle. The ceiling of the 4th brain is the floor of the 3rd ventricle. The 3rd ventricle and the Cave of Brahma make up the 5th brain. The 5th brain is connected to the cerebral hemispheres of the Cerebrum and is critical to creating concepts and storing abstract concepts. It feeds on ideas, and reflects. (Marijuana activates this brain, and it is common knowledge among mind-control handlers that marijuana is forbidden to slaves.) The roof the 5th brain is formed by the choroid plexus. At the front is the pituitary and at the rear the pineal gland, both exceptionally important to perception. The peptides (called enkephalins) that trigger intuitive awareness of what the 6th brain is perceiving, come from the pituitary into the Cave of Brahma. Can the reader now see why cranial manipulation that influences this area will affect our intuitive awareness?

Cranial Osteopath Ronald R. McCatty's book *Craniosacral Osteopathy* discusses the pineal body and pituitary gland from pp. 78 to 86. A discussion of the techniques to influence these bodies is beyond the scope of this chapter, but there are procedures. McCatty is very skilled, but he still has a ways to go to match the skills of the inner group that does mind-control. His page 25 also discusses a direct adjustment on the Pineal body via arm rotations and breathing.

The occult world's physical manipulation of this third eye area can enhance a person's sensitivity. (It works off of straightforward body/brain mechanics, not the spirit world). It makes the subject feel that he is more telepathic. This is one of their big secrets. This secret was passed on the Gurdjieff, who went to Tibet to learn their secrets. Gurdjieff's communities, which this author has been investigating have a very good appearance to them, but there are lots of dark secrets within these communities, which indicate that drug use and mind-control are going on amongst them. One of the mind-control techniques used is physical manipulation of the third-eye area of the skull.

In fact, a number of cranial osteopaths (such as Cranial Osteopath and Rosicrucian Robert Fulford) have thanked Gurdjieff for enlightening them about how to do cranial manipulation. Some of what the occult says about the third eye is simply cover stories to hide some of the bigger secrets. It is not known to this author if Fulford can do a third eye manipulation.

(In this exposure of cranial manipulation, R.C. Fulford is of interest to us due to his impact upon the course Cranial Osteopathy took, rather than his skill. W.G. Sutherland, the leader in Cranial Osteopathy had several Rosicrucians and other occultists as early students. After his death, three of these took Cranial Osteopathy in a more occult direction than Sutherland was going. Anne Wales, as Sutherland's editor & compiler, the person who took over his papers, also reviewed the papers of other cranial doctors, making sure she gave them all as much of a mystical twist as she could add to them. Olive Stretch was the second of the three and she and her husband ran the Cranial Academy from their living room. Upon Olive's death, her husband married Fulford's secretary of sixteen years, who in turn continued to run things when he died. Fulford, who is now in his '90s, did occult philosophizing, and some believe programming, but didn't develop the skill needed for entrance into the inner core of high level cranial knowledge.)

Rosicrucian Cranial Osteopath Robert Fulford also met Tibetans to learn what he could from the Tibetans. He became the President of the Osteopathy Cranial Association. He gives interesting talks, and writes about the Odic Force and the Vril (the light that the Nazis believed in), but it is not clear that Fulford, who is retired in Ohio, learned any deep secrets of manipulation.

However, Gurdjieff is not the only one who learned from the Orient. Cranial Osteopath Ronald Kurylowicz, of 754 Washington Blvd, Marina Del Rey, CA who is single and lives with his mother who serves as his secretary, made a special effort to learn what he could from the Chinese over a period of years, with what appears as a clear intent to use it for mind-control and malevolent purposes. The cranial group has long had an international effort to teach and proselytize worldwide. Much of this seems to be a sincere effort to spread the benefits of cranial knowledge allowed to the public. (This knowledge is often released only for substantial fees.) When the inner core of cranial manipulation has travelled to learn from other cultures, China has been the primary focus. While in China, the inner core of cranial manipulation, who use it for mind-control, have met with their chinese counterparts to negotiate occult relationships. Top level Theosophists have accompanied the inner core on their trips to China.

In 1950, Gurdjieff came out with *Beelzebub's Tales to His Grandson* Vol. 1-3. IDHHB Inc. published in 1978 some of the secret talks that Gurdjieff had with a special group of disciples. The point is simply that Gurdjieff was willing to go to the occult world of black magicians to get some of his enlightenment, and one of the techniques he learned was the manipulation of the mind via physical manipulation of the "third eye area". One of Gurdjieff's big disciples in New England passed on to the cranial osteopaths manipulation secrets that Gurdjieff learned in Tibet. Gurdjieff is even more mysterious, when one realizes that he an asset of Russian and British intelligence.

This raises the obvious question, what were the Nazi's able to learn about skull manipulation from the Tibetans, the Japanese secret societies, and European occultism? It is known that the Nazi's carried out experimentation on skull manipulation. (Some of the records pertaining to Nazi human experiments are stored in the U.S. National Archives, incl. National Archives Record Group 238, the Collection of W.W.II War Crimes Records, the OSS's reports in Record Group 226, the Dept. of State records in National Archives Record Group 59, and Group 242. But it must be borne in mind that much of the records of Nazi experiments were confiscated and remained secret so that our government could continue the research. We see only glimpses of this research in such things as the SS skeleton collection, written about in SS letters used as Nuernberg Trial Doc. No.s 87, 88, 91. Prof. Hirt at the Strassburg Anatomical Institute received 150 jewish skeletons for research according to a secret SS document, marked Exhibit no. 086. One thing is clear, there was no limitation for Nazi researchers as to what they could experiment on with human beings. Could the idea/chance to research in skull manipulation for purposes of mind-control have escaped those Nazi researchers who were steeped in phrenology and horse breeding?) What did the Nazi's learn, and what did their mind-control experts such as Joseph Mengele pass on to American mind-control programmers, or is it possible the subtleties of cranial bone manipulation somehow escaped them?

The practice of bone-setting in Germany had been known as Knochenartz, Knocheneinrichter, and Wundart. In recent history, Germany has a large number of cranial osteopaths who purchase lots of American books on the cranial osteopathy. It's this author's opinion, that the total mind-control of NWO slaves being implemented in the Black Forest castles, Strasburg, Frankfurt, Berlin, and hundreds of other German sites includes cranial manipulation. However, in terms of Germany, **this remains** to be proven. In America, **there is no doubt**, for we have the victims (and photographic proof) to prove it.

Osteopathy is not "politically correct" within Germany's medical establishment. Most Germans, who purchase cranial books, are occultists (usually variations on Theosophy) and not people with medical or manipulative training. Europeans tend to be much more specialists in their professions than Americans. They don't tend to have as many people/per population practice a particular skill as America, but the ones who do are often very skilled. (This is an observation this author has heard frequently during his world-wide travels, and has also observed for himself.) For instance, in visiting Switzerland, this author learned that if a person wants to build a house he will have no option but to bring in specialists for the different tasks, while in America, it's not unusual for people to attempt building their own. This European approach of encouraging only very skilled specialists would also apply to cranial manipulation. We would expect a few very highly technical, skilled skull manipulators, and many curious entry-level folks.

THE JAPANESE CONNECTION

The ninjitsu people (popularly known as "the ninja" in America) were historically black magicians who hired out as assassins, and were feared and hated by all the Japanese people. They are now being held out as role models for our American children.

The ninja learned how to dissociate pain. They learned martial arts and the art of stealth. According to the book *The Karate Dojo* by Peter Urban, "They were the original practitioners of the 'art of [mind-control] programming.' They were taught from the cradle that nothing was impossible. Not knowing that a thing could not be done, they proceeded to do it." It is possible that the Green Dragon Society of Japan passed on some of this mind-control training techniques to the German secret societies that were in cooperation with them prior to and during W.W. II. In other words, Dr. Mengele, the Nazi Angel of Death who carried out mind-control experiments for the Nazi's (& the Illuminati) during W.W. II may have attempted to incorporate Chinese, Tibetan, Japanese, Ancient Egyptian and Hindu mind-control techniques into their mind-control programming/research.

THE EARLY EUROPEAN OCCULT CONNECTION

Information pertaining to this has been floating around Europe in certain circles for years. We will touch on some of the various times and places that we know parts of cranial manipulation to alter the mind was being done.

Over the centuries skilled horsemen learned that they could tell the temperament of a horse from the shape of its head. The best books on horse training would have sections on determining what your horse's temperament was based on skull shape.

The celts were big on bone-setting. Wales has continued to preserve some of this celtic enthusiasm.

A rare book *The Art of The Bone-Setter* by George Matthews Bennett (London, Tho Murby publ., 1884) gives an excellent history of bone-setters in England, Wales and Scotland. It is likely that some of these men understood some things about how personality could be affected via bone manipulation in the skull. George Matthews Bennett was a Freemason and a Druid. He was also a leading bone-setter in London, Stratford and other places. He was a descendent of the famous occult Matthews family, which had practiced bone-setting for two hundred years. His son, who also did bone-setting, was the last of that line to practice bone-setting. The skill (professional art) of bone-setting passed down in families for generations was not the equivalent of modern osteopathy. Osteopathy had many different ideas and approaches, even though the two are similar.

One of the early english books on bone-setting was *The Compleat Bone-setter* by Friar Moulton. In 1665, the book was enlarged by Robert Turner (an occultist/astrologer) and printed in England. In 1871, Dr. Wharton Hood wrote another publication on bone-setting in England entitled *A Treatise on Bone Setting*. But most of the skill of bone-setting in England was passed down as family secrets within a few bloodlines that practiced it for generations, such as the Thomases, the Taylors of Lancashire, the Maltby's of Nottingham, the Masons of Lincolnshire, the Huttons of Westmorland (& later of London), the Crowthers of Yorkshire, and the Matthews of the Midlands. (This list occurs in the book *Medical Fringe & Medical Orthodoxy 1750-1850* edited by Bynum and Porter, pub. London: Croom Helm Ltd., 1987, p. 170, note 10.) Much about bone-setting in Europe, will remain secret, because so much was taught orally and shrouded in mystery. About a dozen British bloodlines passed their trade secrets down, a number of them were Welch. However, there were also many itinerant quacks who travelled around billing themselves as bone-setters.

NINETEENTH CENTURY OCCULT CONNECTION

Bone-setter Richard Hutton gained notoriety in London in the 1800's when he relieved the long-standing suffering of the Hon. Spencer Ponsonby.

Hugh Owen Thomas, (1848-?) who was a qualified doctor, used what he knew from coming from a long traditional line of bone-setters to create modern fracture theory. His nephew, Sir Robert Jones (1857-1933) who was his apprentice, was the major ambassador for modern orthopaedic medical practices. In other words, some of the knowledge of the bone-setters contributed to modern established medical knowledge.

Charles Waterton, an english naturalist in old england, wrote in his *Wanderings and Essays on Natural History* that every nation in Europe had bone-setters, who were independent of the surgeons. Throughout Europe, the men and women who practiced bone-setting learned the skill from others and as a result of experience. The skill was not a text-book-learned skill, but an art that was taught via hands-on training. Many of the bone-setters never formally studied anatomy, pathology, or surgery. (See *The Art of the Bone-Setter*, p. 96.)

Hand-in-hand with bone setting came ideas on the importance of the shape of the skull. In 1695, Balthazar Bekkar of London wrote, "Physiognomy, that is...*the Observation of a Man's Shape*, must be comprehended under this sort [occult arts], for this Art foretells things by the Looks, the Features and Lineaments of the Face, by which the Genius and Humour of Men are to be discovered." (This comes from book one of a four book series *The World Bewitched; An Examination of the Common Opinions Concerning Spirits*. London: R. Baldwin, 1695, vol. 1, p.30.)

THE WITCHCRAFT CONNECTION

Throughout the world, people have practiced bone manipulation. The names for folk bone-setting throughout the world of course vary from language to language. In Tahiti it was called "romy" or "rumi". In South America, it was called "abrazo del ranchero". In Bohemia it was called "napravit." In Mexico, it's been called "arreglador de huesos", and in France "reboutage." The Amish call it "Brauche", and some of their bone-setters practice folk witchcraft. (This is known from the author's own experience as an Amishman.) Bone-setting has often been associated with folk healing and the occult.

Contrary to what is politically correct today, witchcraft was not a group of poor innocent women chased by a malicious Christian society, but was a well-organized body which was a repository for the occult knowledge of Babylon, Egypt and Rome. Ex-

Illuminati members have described (to this author) the ancient manuscripts of knowledge preserved in secrecy by the Illuminati down through the ages. The permission of the Grand Druid Council is needed for some Illuminati books. Illuminati members are only allowed to see certain manuscripts, if they are achieving a mastery in that field of secret knowledge.

In the middle ages, knowledge was dispensed through secret trade guilds, fraternities and bloodlines. The ancient healing/and harming secrets of the human body were secrets of the fraternal secret societies, i.e. what is known today as the Illuminati. Witches could accomplish either a healing or a harmful manipulation of the body without anyone knowing what had happened, because their arts were secret techniques that outsiders couldn't recognize. Secret medical and psychological knowledge was hidden by lots of cover mystical claptrap, which made the real secrets elusive to outsiders. Witches were accused of witchcraft when the harmful results of what they did were noticed, but the people had little idea of the mechanics of what hit them. Some of the trials of witches during the late middle ages were legitimate grievances, even though the ancient trial records (by today's standards) contain no legitimate evidence of modus operandi. We are not in a position to judge their trials by our standards of evidence.

Throughout most history, the doctor-priest or the medicine man-shaman kept his health secrets to himself as occult/arcane /esoteric knowledge to pass to his chosen successors. Even today, our modern day equivalents for the medicine man & shamen -- our doctors & priests are still popular careers for transgenerational pagans. And as this chapter is pointing out, there are still secrets.

The Mystery Religions of Europe studied the human head and body. One of Jacob Boehme's disciples portrayed the hindu chakra points back in 1736 in his *Theosophia Practica*. The results of tortures during ancient and medieval times upon the bodies & skulls of people was also known to a few. A relationship appears to exist between bone-setting and witchcraft, in that wherever witchcraft was strongest in England, one also discovers an abundance of bonesetters. An advance knowledge of anatomy was needed to devise the tortures used in Europe by those who were in power. It was not uncommon historically for doctors & bonesetters to provide advice for torture devices. For instance, Dr. Guillotin, a french doctor & Freemason, invented the guillotin. There are plenty of evidences of occult involvement in the torture of people over the centuries, (even though it is politically correct to blame it on Christians). At this point it is safe to say that there was some overlap between bone-setting, witchcraft, and those who made an occupation as torturers for the state, but the complete details are not available. Some families have traditionally been involved in torture, perhaps at some point those family secrets will surface. Hands of Glory of hanged men were used as health charms. Corpses & moss from skulls, were also thought to have healing powers.

Freemason/Druid/Bone-setter George Matthews Bennett writes, "In the North of England, the origin of nearly all the men who are fairly good at Bone-setting can be traced to the Whitworth surgery, and while, so far as I know, the Taylors, in their various settlements at Whitworth, Todmorden, Stockwood, and Oldfield-lane, were the only qualified surgeons who practiced Bone-setting; amongst the hills and dales of Lancashire, Yorkshire, and the Lake district, there were many who did so without being qualified." (*The Art of the Bone-setter*, p. 106) Whether these Taylors were any relation to those Taylors today within the Illuminati, is not known.

Phrenology was very respected during the 19th century. Queen Victoria consulted the top phrenologist. Interest in Phrenology led Europeans to research what the functions of the brain are, & how the brain functions.

Phrenologists Johann Gaspar Spurzheim and scotsman George Combe "realized the potentiality to manipulate and control human behavior" via their knowledge of the skull and brain. (Cooter, *Cultural Meaning of Popular Science*, p. 6) The writings of these men resulted in phrenological societies and publications springing up all over the U.S. and Great Britain.

Franz Joseph Gall, was an expert on the anatomy of the brain, having spent his life studying it. *Encyclopedia Britannica* says F.J. Gall was a "brain anatomist of considerable ability". (*Ency. Brit.*, 15th ed., vol.26, p. 327) In 1800, Franz Joseph Gall, advocated to medical science that the shape of the skull was a guide to an individual's mental faculties and character traits. Based upon this, other researchers such as Pierre Flourens undertook experiments on animals to determine more exactly the functions of the various parts of the brain. Various men contributed ideas. Leopold Auenbrugger discovered percussion to determine a fluid level. He applied his discovery of tapping his father's casks to gauge the level of fluid content to the body.

Fire In The Minds of Men, by James H. Billington a leading historian, is an excellent survey of how the French Revolution and subsequent revolutions were created by a small group of leading occultists. Utopian socialists, who embraced the occult ideal of a "revolving back to the Golden Age" helped promote the idea of phrenology at the important Paris Athenee, where debates were organized concerning the psychology of personality, physiognomy, and phrenology.

(For those readers who haven't kept up with other written works of this author, the Illuminati when America was discovered believed that they historically had came from Atlantis, and that a new Atlantis could be constructed in the new world. The revolution of the United States was the first war in history called a "revolution", and it was called a revolution because it and subsequent revolutions were to revolve us back to the Golden Age of Atlantis. They named the ocean to reach their new Atlantis, the Atlantic Ocean.)

Charleston, S.C. was a major hub for the Scottish Rite and for Reformed Judaism, both which were interlocked and used the Cabala. The main goal of the Cabala is to create a mind-controlled slave called a golem. The main principle behind Freemasonry according to Albert Pike, who was the Supreme Commander of Freemasonry in Charleston, S.C. has been the cabala. This makes it easier to understand why Freemasonry has been involved in the creation of mind-controlled slaves. It also makes it more understandable why hypnotism (called mesmerism) along with phrenology was introduced into Charleston, SC about 1830.

After the occult world introduced phrenology coupled with hypnotism to Charleston, it was also introduced by the Frenchman Charles Poyen to Rhode Is. Brown University. The entire faculty was so astonished at the power of hypnotism, that they concluded that mesmerism was a more important science than phrenology.

Initially, the elite in Charleston were interested in hypnotism (called mesmerism) combined with phrenology. The craze spread to the common people, and hypnotism was the subject of a famous intellectual debate in Charleston in 1843. Phrenology, which was a science tied to Rosicrucianism, lost favor in the south, due to the large participation of phrenologists (Rosicrucians) in the abolition movement. The Abolitionist movement was created in the U.S. by the Illuminati via the Rosicrucian groups, as well as Unitarians and Socialists who were also tied to them. For instance, Rosicrucian/Phrenologist William Lloyd Garrison started the Anti-slavery Society in 1832. Three other notable rosicrucian abolitionists are John Brown, George Lippard, and Abraham Lincoln. John Brown, besides being a Rosicrucian, revolutionist and abolitionist, was a practicing phrenologist. He had been trained by Fowler and Wells, who promoted the Vegetarian City that A. Still visited.

Many of the Illuminati and leading European occultists, incl. men such as Charles Taze Russell (founder of the WT Society) and Joseph Smith, Jr. (founder of the LDS Mormon church) were students of phrenology. Interestingly, Joseph Smith, Jr. on Jan. 5, 1841 had a revelation that phrenology was an occult science from "the Devil". (Smith's words are recorded in *The Words of Joseph Smith: The Contemporary Accounts of the Nauvoo discourses of the Prophet Joseph*. Provo, UT: Brigham Young Univ. Religious Studies Center, 1980, p. 61.) And yet he continued studying phrenology, and endorsing phrenology to the "Latter-day Saints" (Mormons). Quite a number of the Mormon prophets (the top leader) such as Brigham Young, Wilford Woodruff, and George A. Smith got phrenological readings done of their skulls. The Mormon church sold phrenology books and even printed a phrenology magazine in Salt Lake City for a while, which was entitled *The Character Builder* from the 1870's until into the 1940's.

George Reynolds, First Presidency secretary and later President of the LDS Seventies (a group of men like the catholic cardinals) considered phrenological readings as valid as the patriarchal blessings that the LDS church gives to its members. Since the Mormon church is one of the Illuminati fronts carrying out mind-control, it should come as no surprise that attempts to control the human mind by manipulation of the shape of the skull have been attempted. Interestingly, official church interest in phrenology by the Mormon hierarchy died out during the time period (1940's) that mind-control began to be scientifically carried out by the Illuminati in cooperation with different government front. Could it be that there was a grain of powerful truth in phrenology that these people wanted quietly buried?

Swendenborg, the founder of a mystical Masonic Rite, spent a great deal of time and some of his writing discussing the skull bones. This author has encountered victims of trauma-based total mind-control within the modern Swendenborg Church of New Jerusalem. Occult students of Swendenborg, including some of the Illuminati, such as some in the DuPont family, studied his ideas with fervor. (The DuPonts appear to be connected to at least one cranial osteopath.)

(Because the Church of New Jerusalem does not tell the public nor its members about Swedenborg being a Freemason, etc. it would be advantageous to briefly identify to the reader who he was. Swedenborg wrote, "I live, besides, on terms of familiarity and friendship with all the bishops of my country, who are ten in number; as also with the sixteen senators, and the rest of nobility. The king and queen also, and the three princes, their sons, show me much favor." Swedenborg, born to a well-connected elite swedish family, was a genius who wrote an incredible amount of spiritual writings that he believed came from alien encounters. His "alien" material in his *Earths in the Universe* is blatantly baloney, but at that time, people had no concept of what they'd find in outer space. The "aliens" even gave him the wrong number of planets in our solar system, 9. Swedenborg wrote that Saturn is "the farthest [planet] from the sun". He was certain of this and other ideas because of what the aliens had told him. He also communicated with spirits. Masonic encyclopedias state that many of his ideas were masonic. In *Masonry Defined* (publ. by National Masonic Press, a book based on 33° Freemason / masonic historian Mackey's notes), their article on Emanuel Swedenborg states, "enlightened Masons will find many masonic ideas in Swedenborg's writings." In the *Be Wise As Serpents* book, this author documents the interlocking directorates that control the top level secret societies. The Masonic Rite of Swedenborg with its 8 degrees and two "temples"-which means "sub-rites"- has had some of the worst satanists as its leadership.)

In spite of the ridicule of the various ideas about determining personality from the shape of the body and head, *Ency. Brit.* 15th ed. Vol. 25, p. 497 admits, "Nevertheless, structural differences in the body do seem to have some significance in pointing to such aspects of personality as intelligence and emotion." The 18th and 19th century researchers were onto something, they didn't manage to finish the job. The Nazi government, and other governments have secretly tried to finish that job. Unfortunately, it may be a long time before we learn exactly how they finished this line of research. So far, the only recipients of the 20th century research findings have been a few select people within the occult world.

An interesting story involving personality change due to changes in the skull and brain was the landmark patient Phineas Gage, who died in 1861, after an accident caused him to damage the brain's ability to make rational decisions and to process emotions. Recently, new research was performed on Phineas Gage's skull to understand better how his brain had been affected by an accident. (See *Science*, May 20, 1994, p. 1102)

Another example of how the shape of the skull and the movement of skull bones determines how the brain functions are the craniectomies that are now being carried out to relieve infants from mental imbecility due to premature skull sutural closure and microcephalus. (See *The Journal of the American Medical Association JAMA*, Jan. 8, 1992, p. 226.)

Further, researchers into how the brain creates thoughts, who desire to remain confidential, have come to believe that the ionic crystalline structure within the cranium's 5 cranial bone plates: the occipital bone, the two Parietal bones and the two frontal skull bones which connect at fontanellas (fissures) called sutures play an important role in the creation of thoughts. They believe that the ionic crystalline structures of the skull bones interact with incoming theta waves from the brain, and a resonance is created that causes electrons to be generated, which are then translated via a Fourier-type translation into a thought. You are probably aware that it is the grey matter that lies next to the skull that carries out the higher level thinking that distinguishes humans from animals. These researchers have stated that they believe that the fontanellas (connections between the skull plates) allow subtle lateral motions and non-linear complex vibrations to occur. These vibrations are part of the higher thinking process. If this is true, it could have far ranging ramifications.

These researchers believe the natural resonant vibrational frequency of the skull bones (the cranium) ranges from 840 to 890 MHz in non-herzian waves. This range was reserved for VHF television, but has now been reserved for the national cellular telephone network. When the 840 to 890 range was used for television, various neurologists noted that certain signals related to particular pitches and sounds would trigger reactions in people. For instance, the *NY Times* 7/11/91 reported that according to a neurologist an epileptic seizure was triggered via certain television signals. Cellular phones are now being used to transmit faxes, computer information such as modems transmit, and other signals. Illuminati connected companies of IBM, Motorola, and GE are some of the companies working with cellular phone technology. The creation of vibrations via cellular phone signals in the 840 to 890 MHz non-herzian wave range could conceivably implant thoughts into a victim near the cellular phone.

This raises two questions. First, **IS** the establishment's big push to popularize cellular phone use, even to the point of giving out free cellular phones, part of Big Brother's mind-control?

Second, since it appears the brains ability to creatively think is related to the vibrations that are subtly made in the skull, the question naturally poses itself--can cranial osteopathy disrupt or alter the natural abilities of the cranium's plates to vibrate?

THE MODERN AMERICAN OCCULT CONNECTION

In the United States, as in England, there were certain families who passed their bone-setting skills down as family trade secrets. The most famous bone-setting families were the Reece family (in west. Penn., and east. Ohio), the Sweet family (in Rhode Is., Mass., Conn., & NY), and the Tieszen and Orton families in South Dakota. The Sweets became orthopedists, the Tieszen and Orton families went into Chiropractic. The Irish Quain family were famous anatomists, surgeons, and physicians.

Osteopathy and chiropractic stemmed from the same occult philosophical roots, but went in different directions. Both shared the idea that the body has the ability to maintain good health if allowed to do so, and both emphasized the manipulation of bones and joints. Both were started about the same time period in America in about the same geographic area, by men who had scottish ancestry. A.T. Still (the founder of osteopathy) and D.D. Palmer both studied magic and metaphysics. Both attended many of the same spiritist meetings, for instance both attended the spiritualist meetings at Clinton, Iowa on a number of occasions. (Gibbons, 1980, p. 13)

The **osteopath's goal** was to move bones to improve **circulation**. The **chiropractor's primary goal** was to move bones to **reduce pressure or the irritation of nerves**, with the further goal of positively helping organs and tissue.

A.T. Still & other osteopaths claimed Daniel D. Palmer visited Still at his house, but Palmer's descendants say it's not true. Early on Still's two best assistants were two doctors from Scotland, William Smith & James Littlejohn.

Daniel David Palmer (1845-1913), founder of chiropractic, was a Freemason & an occultist. His original practice was to heal people with what he called "magnetic healing" which was a combination of laying on of hands, hypnotism and white magic. Of course it was not called white magic, it was called "magnetic healing" by Palmer. Part of the magnetism was his own magnetic (hypnotic) personality. Palmer also knew phrenology and had a keen sense of touch concerning a person's head. D.D. Palmer taught phrenology.

D.D. Palmer was a mixture of good and bad traits. He was an excellent scholar and had good organizational skills for what he learned. One of his difficult traits was his megalomania. In 1905, at a coroner's inquiry, Palmer refused to take an oath to swear the truth "so help me God", because he said that "I don't want any help from God."

It must have been hard on his pride, when his own son B.J. Palmer, who had been cruelly raised by cruel step-mothers, turned Judas and stole from his father both the honor & money that was due his father. His son Bartlett Joshua Palmer (1882-1961) worked in a circus as an assistant to professional circus hypnotists known as Professor Hunt, and later Professor Herbert L. Flint. Later, with mysterious connections to the right people, B.J. Palmer, got the money and the political clout to get started in building a school for chiropractic. His powerful Davenport radio station, WOC, said to be the second largest in the U.S., had Ronald Reagan (our future president) as one of its sports announcers. B.J. Palmer was connected to the occult world. He liked to encourage the idea that he was a Christ figure. New Ager Napoleon Hill, author of *Think and Grow Rich* (1937) considered Palmer his mentor.

B.J. had prominent Masons and other elite as his personal guests. Elbert Hubbard, a friend of B.J.'s, was the person who persuaded John D. Rockefeller's personal physician, to get Rockefeller to use chiropractic care. Later in 1963, Nelson Rockefeller would be the important person to get chiropractic accepted as legal in NY, and then appointed chiropractor Albert Cera to his Medical Advisory Committee. Illuminati kingpin California Gov. Edmund Brown appointed 12 chiropractors to regional committees associated with the California Board of Medical Assurance. Hollywood got into the promotion of chiropractic, with the 1990 film Jacob's Ladder which was a film exposing the U.S. military's use of BZ (a derivative of LSD) in Vietnam to experimentally try to create aggression via drugs in American soldiers. It appears that chiropractic occult ties have been beneficial in its fight for acceptance.

The occult world has worked hard to keep chiropractic within its domain. This is why you will find Christians exposing the occult connections to chiropractic such as T.M. Clement's book *A Warning to Christians About the Origins of Chiropractic.* (Moses Lake:WA, date of printing not known). As the reader will discover other sciences involving the relationship of the mind, brain, the body and personality have also been kept in the domain of the secret societies.

Like Palmer, Dr. Andrew Taylor Still, who founded osteopathy, was interested in phrenology, hypnotism, spiritism, magic. The reference book *10,000 Famous Freemasons* (Vol. 4) outlines his masonic career in Freemasonry. His writings include such masonic phrases as "Great architect of the Universe." His grandfather had been Scotch-Irish. His father was a Methodist Episcopal minister, who was an abolitionist who fought with John Brown and the free-state forces in Kansas. Andrew Taylor Still ran for the legislature of Kansas Territory as a free-state candidate and won in the Oct. 1857 elections. Later, he married Mary Elvira Turner, who was from the "burned-over" district in New York. She had been exposed to abolitionist ideas, phrenology, and hypnotism (called mesmerism) which were all popular in the area she grew. Her area of NY was where Spiritism began in 1848. Horace Greeley of the *NY Tribune* then made these seances with spirits famous. In 1867, after his children died, Andrew Taylor Still embraced spiritistism. Still's beliefs in spiritism included ideas from Freemason Swendenborg's writings. (For details of Andrew Taylor Still's life refer to the book Trowbridge, Carol. *Andrew Taylor Still.* Kirksville, MO: The Thomas Jefferson Press, 1990.)

A.T. Still built osteopathy on the foundation of teachings of men such as phrenologist/hypnotists such as Joseph Rodes Buchanan. Buchanan used hypnosis and manipulation of the head to radiate the cerebral fluid from the brain to the body, which was coming close to the basics of cranial osteopathy. How did A.T. Still come up with these new ideas? A.T. Still was able to study and conduct experiments on bodies by raiding indian graves for bodies, which he says in his "Circumstances and Personal Experiences" he did thousands of experiments on. Certainly, he was unusual in having had a boyhood interest in digging up skeletons. He also read every book on anatomy he could find.

In spite of his preoccupation with digging up skulls of people, Still seems to have been a decent person. Today, the occult world dislikes him. Why? In view of the historical facts, and the historical occult campaign to denigrate who Still was, it appears Still revealed secrets.

Still was interested in scientific investigation. He proved things as he went along. He was a true researcher, and contrary to many researchers he was willing to openly share his knowledge with mankind. Andrew's two brothers, Ed and James, were M.D.s. They may well have been loyal to the occult world, and it is speculated that this may account for part of their attempts to destroy the work of Andrew Still. It appears that in spite of Andrew's own occult connections, Andrew Still wanted to give the world cranial osteopathic knowledge that the occult world deemed to be secrets.

Andrew Still joined Freemasonry in Baldwin, KS's Palmyra Lodge No. 23. (*10,000 Famous Freemasons, Vol. 4*, p. 194). He came from a transgeneration occult background. He did speak and write with the type of terminology that the occult world uses, although today some of his "occult" writings only appear so because they are taken out of context. Recently, the Internet has a website with the "Sage Sayings of Still" with excerpts from a "spiritual diary" he kept. On the other side of the coin, the supposed sage occult sayings of Still were renounced by Still himself after he wrote them. He not only exposed occult secrets that the bonesetters had kept in the occult families for centuries, he made a point of tossing occultists out of his school. I believe Andrew Still was one of those people that the generational occultists could say, "He grew up and dwellt among us, but he wasn't one of us." No wonder the occult world has had a campaign against him after he died.

After Andrew died, his son Charles an excellent compassionate skillful doctor was to have taken over A.T. Still's Kirksville Osteopathic College. Instead, a rich financial backer, Warren Hamilton, who owned pivotal shares of stock placed James Still's grandson into the Osteopathic College's president's chair. The knowledge that Still tried to get to the world was now stifled. As an example of where things have progressed the Cranial Academy (the American Academy of Osteopathy) is now situated in three buildings in Indianapolis that are identical copies of the Great Pyramid, & use pyramids for their logo.

(By the way one of Dr. A.T. Still's great-grandnephews is William Still who wrote the book *New World Order*. William Still is descended from the doctor's brother Thomas, who was an M.D. William's father was a U.S. general who was part of World Order, and although William's book was great, when one considers how the NWO order creates their own opposition and how double-agents are created, this author has some personal reservations on what is happening with William. For those who haven't obtained a copy of the book, this author recommends it.)

Back to discussing Still's ideas. Eventually, A.T. Still developed his own ideas for healing the body without using drugs, or the dangerous medical practices of his day.

In 1874, Dr. Andrew Taylor Still, devised osteopathy, a medical practice that seeks to help the body via manipulated of the bones. 16 Osteopathic Schools have successfully sprung up in the U.S. over the years to serve the need for osteopath doctors. A few others failed. A small specialty within the Osteopathic medicine is Cranial Osteopathy which has the Cranial Academy (formed in 1946), which is a component of the American Academy of Osteopathy.

The Cranial Academy is headquartered at 1020 Market Tower, Ten West Market St., Indianapolis, IN 46204 in a building that looks like 3 egyptian pyramids. Osteopathic students who have taken a Basic Cranial Course approved by the Academy are eligible to apply to the Cranial Academy to learn about osteopathy as it applies to the skull. Just recently, in June 20-23, 1996, they had their annual conference at Walt Disney World Village, Lake Buena Vista, FL. Walt Disney World happens to be a major mind-control programming center and the significance of this was brought out in Chapter 5.

The Cranial Academy, founded by occultist Sutherland in 1946, is affiliated with the Applied Academy of Osteopathy (this AAO is a group that is concerned with manipulative work, & also based in IN).

WG Sutherland developed Cranial Osteopathic concepts. It appears that the occult world were upset enough with Andrew Still's revelations, that they planted WG Sutherland into the new science to bring the science back into the realm of the occult world. Sutherland (and those that followed him) was not above spewing out disinformation. Another leader following Sutherland in the field was another occultist Fulford, who helped insure that the Theosophists and Rosicrucians took over the science that A.T. Still had tried to give the world in a scientific form. Fulford, almost a god to some of the doctors interested in cranial osteopathy, functions as a bulwark to prevent most doctors from learning the deeper arts of manipulation. Only a small inner group are taught the most advanced manipulative methods and anatomical details. The crucial cranial research work is being done privately by doctors affiliated with the Rosicrucians and this research is reported only in their literature for Rosicrucians only. The American Osteopathy Association helps to keep things low key by making no reference to the Cranial Academy in their materials, and only referring to the AAO once.

In 1953, one of the leading Cranial Osteopaths, William G. Sutherland, an American of scottish descent, formed a foundation called the Sutherland Cranial Teaching Foundation in Denver, CO to promote the teaching of Cranial (head or skull) Osteopathy as developed by Sutherland.

The cranial osteopathic work is taught by the Cranial Academy, but the inner knowledge, the inner secrets that are needed to successfully use cranial manipulation for mind-control are not taught by the Cranial Academy. This is taught privately by doctors who keep their relationships to each other secret. The inner core leaders (the top 3) of this small highly proficient group were all based in the south, and have all died since 1990. They have been replaced by carefully recruited handpicked successors.

There are occasion groups in other places that do cranial work. Some research on bioenergy and bone motion was done at the Univ. of Michigan School of Osteopathy and the Upledger Institute based in Florida has taught a very mechanical and rudimentary version of cranial work. These are just side activities.

The U.S. Air Force and Navy provide scholarships which cover full tuition, books and living expenses for certain applicants to go to osteopathic college for four years. This has been carried out via the Director, Washington Office, American Osteopathic Association, Cafritz Building Suite 1009, 1625 Eye Street, N.W., Washington, DC 20006.

One of the military Cranial Osteopaths is a Maj. Beverly I. Maliner, and another is David R. Lemme at the Naples, It. Naval Hospital. There are reports that this hospital along with other American military sites in Europe are being used for mind-control. However, that does not necessarily connect Lemme or Maj. Maliner with government mind-control. This author knows of no evidence that would connect them. The military has used civilians to carry out some of the mind-control on their bases for decades, so they wouldn't have to use their own people if they didn't want to.

The military has conducted secret research into the effects of skull bone movement, and traumatic skull injuries which are still classified.

One example of many of the type of modern research done is Susan Ann Bloomfield's Ph.d. dissertation "Site-specific changes in bone mass and Alterations in Calciotrophic Hormones with Electrical Stimulation Exercise in Individuals with Chronic Spinal Cord Injury." Her research showed that electrical stimulation of the muscles around spinal injuries helped the bones grow.

The casual researcher will soon find out that Cranial Osteopathy is a hidden subject. One of the better books discussing the potential of Cranial Osteopathy and how it works is a hard-to-get out-of-print book *Craniosacral Osteopathy* by Ronald R. McCatty. As this subject is so important to mind-control, this author availed himself to find a copy of the book and to study it. Some of the techniques described in the book will be hard for regular doctors to verify. If the curious were to use standard medical tests such as X-rays or MRI (which are too big), they will not get anywhere in discovering the details of how to manipulate the skull. The science is much more minute than these tests.

An M.D. who asked the Cranial Academy about cranial literature was told that their literature is copyrighted to the writers and not available to other professions. This is an example of how protective the Cranial

Academy is of their knowledge and they aren't even teaching the hard core inner secrets!

The secret cults continue their iron grip over the deep secrets of cranial manipulation. They continue their monopoly over who gets benefitted by cranial work, as well as who is destroyed by cranial work.

In review, a number of sincere men have tried to develop Cranial Osteopathy including Dr. Andrew Still in 1874. Interestingly, as soon as each one of these men began discovering new techniques informed members of the occult world would take over their work, and insure that the work was kept within the confines of the occult world. For instance, Dr. Sutherland's experiments revealed to him that Cranial Osteopathy could influence the way a person thought and their personality. In the book, *With Thinking Fingers The Story of William Garner Sutherland* by his wife Adah Strand Sutherland, she writes, "It was Dr. Sutherland's cherished dream that a day would come when the benefits to the mentally ill through the cranial component in osteopathy would be investigated to the satisfaction of scientific insistence; that it would be approved and made available institutionally, in the curriculums of osteopathic colleges as well as in the majority of private practices." (Sutherland, Adah S. *With Thinking Fingers*. The Cranial Academy: Indianapolis, IN., p. 62).

However, clever people in the occult world saw that Cranial Osteopathy could not only be used to help the mentally ill, but to control the minds of people. They realized that this valuable information could not be shared with the world but should confined to the occult world where its full evil potential could be exploited.

Part of why it was so easy to hi-jack Sutherland's research is that he wrote very little. He wrote only two short articles. He didn't like to write, he liked to do research and work with people. Strangely, his wife divorced him, and a Rosicrucian lady married him. The details of it all have the feel of the occult world moving in and micromanaging Sutherland's life in order to control his research. Two years after Sutherland died in '54, his Osteopathy Cranial Association was already starting to praise a new age type of "Christ" in its literature. Anne L. Wales, a Rosicrucian, archived his work, and it is through her that we have received some of his work. She makes sure that when Sutherland's ideas see the light of day, they are steeped in occult Rosicrucian ideas. This helps insure that sincere non-occult scientists disregard what appears to be Rosicrucianism, rather than the research of a doctor. Anne L. Wales has been more than a Rosicrucian. She was a member of the Church of Scientology, which is practicing trauma-based mind-control and which is a recruiting organization for the OTO and the Process Church which are also both practicing total mind-control in coordination with the Illuminati.

This author is aware of two separate victims of trauma-based total mind-control who came out of different Rosicrucian groups. As their are several groups claiming Rosicrucian philosophy, this author hasn't sorted out if there are any Rosicrucian groups which AREN'T being used as repositories for mind-controlled slaves. In other words, it appears that all Rosicrucian groups contain mind-controlled slaves.

Rosicrucianism (its various forms) has long attracted membership from the medical community, and there is evidence that it even recruits in the medical, chiropractic and osteopathic schools. The Rosicrucians, who like to track their history back to the alchemists, brag about their large numbers of medical members. AMORC indicates that at least 11% of its members are doctors. The Rosicrucians also hint about their secret medical experiments and secret medical knowledge. One Rosicrucian claim to fame is their mystical theories about the connections between the mind and the body (particularly the skull & nervous system).

The luxurious Clymer Health Clinic

near Philadelphia offers cranial treatments at very modest prices by their staff of Rosicrucian chiropractors. Rosicrucian (& high ranking Mason) Swinbourne Clymer, MD, donated the land and funds for that clinic early this century. Clymer was a millionaire with eccentric health ideas. He financed the entire Rosicrucian Philadelphia-based group, too. His writings have tidbits that show he was an insider. Their headquarters has pyramids with capstones. Their books mention the Illuminati with great frequency.

It is beyond the scope of this chapter, but there are connections between theosophy and Rosicrucianism and the Illuminati. Theosophical groups tie in to the Nazi's religious beliefs, and today theosophical-minded young people are showing an interest in cranial manipulation. In other words, the interconnections between the occult world begin popping up when one investigates cranial work.

One outspoken Doctor of Cranial Osteopathy (DO) Donald E. Woods, recently spoke out in the journal of Cranial Osteopathy entitled *The Cranial Letter* against the occultism that clearly controlled his specialty. He wrote in protest, "Yet, **in the past we [cranial osteopaths] have bordered both on being a cult and on being occult. We must be neither to be effectively acceptable in health care**, and it can be done since osteopathy, including Cranial Osteopathy, is based on valid human physiological and anatomical truths. Where do cult and occult fit in?"....Occultism says you do not have to pay attention to any of the old rules. Everything goes. Kick the walls out. Be tolerant of everyone's behavior....Both the cult and the occult have the tendency to think that things outside their sphere of influence are unreasonable. They might say, "It is necessary that you belong to our group." (*The Cranial Letter*, Aug., '94, Vol. 47, No. 3, p. 9)

While this letter printed in *The Cranial Letter* helps establish to the reader the occult world's influence in cranial osteopathy, the Cranial Academy may have printed this because the doctor in question is a multiple and they are possibly helping him separate himself publicly from the occult.

And while the secrecy of cranial manipulation has been well kept, the Cranial Academy is considering disbanding itself, and letting the 16 osteopathic schools teach a more basic form or cranial work, which would further isolate the secrets for occult's elect.

Osteopathy itself has been accepted into mainstream medicine and one medical reference book states, "It is important to note that the osteopathic system of diagnosis and therapy is used in conjunction with the standard medical procedures of drug and surgical therapy." The curriculum at an osteopathic college or school is almost identical with that offered at the standard schools. The most popular school is the Chicago College of Osteopathic Medicine. There are approx. 150 osteopathic hospitals in the U.S. Most osteopaths are general practitioners and only 20% of the osteopaths specialize. Of these only a tiny percentage do **Cranial** Osteopathy full time. Of the small clique of DOs (Dr.s of Osteopathy) who do Cranial Osteopathy full time (Note: there are about 150 DOs nationwide that spend approx. 100% of their time doing Cranial Osteopathy--which no. was determined by this author using info provided in the *Member Information Directory of the Cranial Academy*.), and then based upon observations at programming sites and other criteria there is an inner circle of about 9 doctors who understand Cranial Osteopathy well enough to use their skills for the Illuminati in mind control.

Recently, there have been a number of magazine articles, for instance, *American Medical News*, June 26, 1995, p. 3 which discusses how osteopathic medical techniques of manipulation are becoming more acceptable to mainstream physicians and to the public. The article mentions that the American Osteopathic Assn. is getting $6 million for research. Obviously, the American Osteopathic

Assn. is politically correct and moving with the stream of today's general trend toward new age ideas, and a global government.

Many osteopath doctors specialize. A canadian government survey of chiropractors, osteopaths, and naturopaths in Canada revealed that 66% of the Canadian osteopaths specialized (See *Royal Commission on Health Services Study of Chiropractors, Osteopaths and Naturopaths in Canada*. Ottawa, Can: The Queen's Printer, 1966, p. 166), a figure much higher than revealed in a study of American Osteopaths in *A Statistical Study of the Osteopathic Profession*, Dec. 31, 1960, Dept. of Information and Statistics, American Osteopathic Association, May 1961, p. 2 Table 7. In the Canadian study, osteopaths reported specializing in headaches, neurology, cranial work and cranial osteopathy. Their naturopaths reported specializing in fields including psycho-therapy, radio wave, electrotherapy, and cranial correction in mongoloids, spastics and body reconstruction.

In exploring mind-control, it must be born in mind, that the American CIA was quick to recruit Canadians to help. Some of the cranial osteopaths themselves appear to be in controlled trance states, so they may well be under total mind-control themselves. These people are obviously of celtic (probably Illuminati) bloodlines.

BONE & SKULL STRUCTURE

Bones are alive and changing. It might be helpful to review what bones are made of, and how they change and grow, just in case the reader had some misconceptions such as that bones are fixed solids that don't change.

Bones within the human body, esp. the skull give support and protection. Bone is comprised of "an organic matrix synthesized and deposited by osteoblastic activity, calcium-phosphate precipitates, and a mineralized phase of hydroxyapatite, which is primarily composed of calcium and inorganic phosphate (Robey, 1989). The primary ingredient of the organic matrix is a collagen in the form of fibers that are extensively cross-linked. This applies to 90% of the matrix. There are several types of collagen, Type 1 is predominant.

Numerous noncollagenous proteins have also been discovered in bone, including some which have been identified as growth factors. Bone development and turnover is regulated by various bone cells (see Teltelbaum, 1990). The exact method the body uses to recreate new bone is too complex to describe here, but let it suffice that researchers are studying all the minute complexities of the abilities of the body to produce bone. Old bone is constantly being absorbed and reproduced new. BMUs are important to development of new bone. (see studies like Frost, 1965, & Parfit, 1987).

According to the *Wall Street Journal*, Feb. 23, 1996, p. A1 (in both Eastern & Western editions) some physicians are remolding lopsided skulls of infants with unnecessary surgery when the only problem is the child's sleep position, and the lopsided skull can be corrected with a head band rather than surgery.

In terms of head shapes, which can be created by skilled manipulation of the skull bones, a Vertical Strain Superior is associated with passiveness and dissociation. This is why some of the cults are either manipulating people's heads or recruiting people that have long faces in their cults. The vertical Strain Inferior is said to be connected to criminals. The programmers for the NWO have been intentionally manipulating people's skull to get passiveness and dissociativeness.

Daniel Whiteside and John Wesley Grossman did extremely valuable work in statistically validating the clear connections between 60 behavior traits and physical structures. The physical shape of the brain is related to how the brain's cells are proportioned. This science is called Structure/ Function.

Daniel's father Robert L. Whiteside was one of the founders of 3-In-One. Robert wrote a amazing book *Face Language*. The Air Force academy used it in three of their courses.

Prior to encountering Robert's book, this author has noticed that the Japanese and Chinese have done a great deal of research and writing in this area.

Our own language has come to reflect some of our intuitive ideas about Structure/ Function such as:
"He is level-headed." "She is nosey." "He's a real high-brow." and "He leads with his chin." (cf. *Face Language*, p. xi-xii)

Whiteside takes 40 pages to identify traits that are shown by the eyes. Then he explains traits that are shown by the mouth area. Then he deals with overall facial traits and finally profile traits.

For instance, a large difference between one side of the face and the other indicates how much the individual changes with their mood change.

If the head steadily gets wider as it runs from the mouth to the ears, then the person has the trait of acquisitiveness.

A person who loves to be precise with words will develop little lines that fan out from the inner corner of the eye toward the cheekbone.

The 3-In-1 college doesn't teach that the face reveals all behavior, but they teach their students what to expect from people, so that they can communicate better.

Another 3-In-1 publication *Advanced ONE BRAIN* by Gordon Stokes and Daniel Whiteside reveals eye modes. NLP has also been teaching some of these eye modes to detect what a person is thinking.

Another publication provides charts (designed by William Mariboe) which explain different traits and how they exhibit themselves physically. For instance if the eyes are extremely wide apart, the person will either see an open viewpoint as valuable or feel inadequate. The chart then charts out how the trait (of emotional tolerance) will exhibit itself under different circumstances. For instance, in doing a job they tend to loose track of time.

Perhaps the value of all this in not clear in the reader's mind. In terms of mind-control, if you know what physical structures will give you a particular trait, you can enhance what you want by skillful manipulation of the skull bones. The key to manipulating the skull lies in the fact that the skull bones actually float on the Cerebrospinal fluid, while the brain floats in the fluid.

In the booklet *The Cranial Bowl* by William G. Sutherland (1984), he writes about what he calls "the moulding technic". The moulding technic is the reshaping of the skull. He writes on page 28, "The moulding technic is especially adaptable to children, and even to the adult well along in the later period of life." In the booklet, he goes into details about the cerebrospinal fluid.

CEREBROSPINAL FLUID

The Cerebrum (brain) and the spine float in a fluid that surrounds them. This fluid is called cerebrospinal fluid and is referred to on page 1050 of the massive anatomical reference book *Gray's Anatomy* 36th Brit. ed. (edited by Williams & Warwick, printed by W.B. Saunder Co., for Churchill Livingstone).

In 1920 and 1938, Weed published research on the circulation of the cerebrospinal fluid.

As just one example of many of the roles that the CS Fluid plays within the brain, that has been discovered is that the carotid artery has a branch that passes upward through a water bed of cerebro-spinal fluid. The CS Fluid follows that internal carotid artery to the choroid plexus, so that it can perform the function of interchange with the arterial blood. The CS Fluid is "in command" of this exchange. (I mention this because see how this ties in with the 5th brain?)

In fact, a Fourth Ventricle Compression is the most valuable and powerful CSF technique for helping people. (It is mentioned simply to show people the effect that CSF has on some very important brain areas.)

Because the brain and spinal cord float in a fluid, a brain weighing 1,500 grams in the air, only weighs 50 gr. in cerebrospinal fluid which distributes the brain weight more evenly. The fluid itself is clear, slightly alkaline with a specific gravity of 1007. About 100mls of CS Fluid will exist to float the brain and spinal cord. The spine rests in this cerebrospinal fluid, which has waves that approximate the breathing rhythm of the body. 50% of the cerebrospinal fluid is manufactured in one part of the head (choroid plexuses), and spends its time fluxuating. It is absorbed and replenished, as other body elements are. The plexuses which are located in the lateral recesses of the fourth ventricle also put cerebrospinal fluid into the subarachnoid space, and this supplies the cerebello-medullary cistern and the pontine cistern with fluid. The cerebrospinal fluid makes up a single fluxuating system of fluid within which the central nervous system/brain operate. As the brain coils and uncoils, waves of motion (energy) fluctuate in a spiral pattern through the cerebrospinal fluid in the skull, down the spinal column and up again, so that there is motion from front to back in the head and also laterally.

A the human brain develops the CSF seems to appear at the earliest stages. The brain goes through stages of development as the brain-spinal cord divide. The forebrain develops into several items, the midbrain into two parts, and the hindbrain into the first three brains.

The cerebrospinal fluid is manufactured by the body, fluctuates in a single Head-spinal cord system and then is absorbed and replenished by the body. The fluid does not circulate like blood. The fluid and the skull bones continue to fluctuate even if a person holds his breath. As long as the CSF oscillates like it should, things are fine, but if something occurs to pervert the rhythms, the health of the person goes down. Loss of sleep can influence the rhythms adversely. If the occipital motion is restricted schizophrenia can result. When severe spheno-basilar symphysis locking occurs, there is frequently manic-depression. Most people are totally unaware that these mental problems may be resulting from a CSF problem.

Very little information is let out about the cerebrospinal fluid. Very little is released to the public about how over a period of time Cranial Osteopaths can develop the manipulative skill to control and change the fluctuations of these fluids. Only a few top people are allowed in on the secrets, and those people are handpicked members of the occult world. Some of the top Cranial Doctors are under Monarch-type mind control themselves. The osteopathic libraries are staffed with people loyal to keeping cranial osteopathic secrets within the occult world.

Could other doctors teach themselves? The ability to manipulate the cerebral-spinal fluid is an art that has taken years to develop, and for practitioners to learn. As stated, the tests that doctors rely on such as x-rays and MRIs are to big and clumsy to be of any value in this area. The doctors would have to "reinvent the wheel and then the automobile" if they wanted to self-teach themselves. It often takes two to three years of study in this area, before a doctor is able to feel the movement of the fluid.

The cranial bones have sutures between them, that allow a skilled person to move them. The sutures have been proven to move as much as 1/20 of an inch. The trained finger can perceive the natural motion of these sutures even if the natural motions are only 1/40 of an inch.

In McCatty's excellent book *Essentials of Cranio-Sacral Osteopathy*, (Bath, Eng.: Ashgrove Press) p. 3 he states, "Contrary to some schools of thought, all circumstances being normal, the cranial sutures (or joints of the head) do not fuse--regardless of age, race, sex, or geographic location. They are perpetually motile, influencing the dynamics of fluid exchange and mebraneous tension within the cranio-sacral mechanism."

When early cranial osteopaths like Sutherland looked at the skull and its membranes and cartilage they realized that the 18 human bones that make up the head were actually designed to articulate (move slightly).

In fact, researchers have discovered the cranium has 3 distinct oscillations. (Magoun, Harold Ives, D.O. *Osteopathy in the Cranial Field*, p.322).

Maud Nerman, D.O. presented the outline of an interesting lecture and lab class that she gave in 1992, entitled "Visualizing the brain under our hands" in which she taught the techniques for feeling the bones of the brain move with CS Fluid fluxuations, as well as sensing what it was doing internally. Coordinating the movement of the skull bones with the movement of the CS Fluid was called "directing the tide" by W.G. Sutherland. His *Journal of the Osteopathic Cranial Assoc.* reported successes doing this.

Ronald McCatty teaches that "some heads are less pliant than other". The practitioner will rest his trained hands on the head, wait, and allow the cranial motion to teach the cranial osteopath what is happening or needs to happen. The client will usually be laying down, and the doctor will be relaxed and focused. The motion of the CS Fluid is called the Cranial Rhythmic Impulse (CRI). It will pulse about 10-14 times/min. in normal adults and 12-16 times/min. in children. When a person is frightened the CRI can stop for up to 20 seconds. (The mind is literally frozen.) Tranquilizers will slow the CRI rate down, as well as poor health. For someone who has been traumatized, such as with electroshock, the very mention of the traumatic event, will cause the CRI to temporarily stop.

The cranial osteopath does not really force any bones, but rather gently encourages a skull bone in the direction it should go. Lightness of touch is a necessity.

An example of the health benefits of the trained osteopath is given by McCatty, "That kink in the straight sinus can be, and often is, one of the primary causes of epilepsy and internal hydrocephalus..." By treating the kink the osteopath takes care of the problem, where the standard method is often to give the subject strong drugs.

To give an example of how the CS Fluid (CSF) can relate to our state of mind, consider the following by McCatty, "And again, change of direction of C.S.F. from anterior-posterior to lateral is of paramount importance in the sleep-wake phenomenon. When you are standing there is parallel action of C.S.F. flow. When you lie down with your head on a pillow this alters, you impinge on one or other temporal bone, you decelerate C.S.F. activity. You, as it were, slow down the pendulum. You inhibit parallel action. By inhibiting this pendulum you automatically produce an anteroposterior swing which is parasympathetic; that is to say, the parts of the automatic nervous system that slow down the action of the heart when the body is not under stress, in order to conserve bodily energy."

This author thought it was exciting to understand better how the mind/body relaxes and slows down when we lay our heads down.

TRANSCENDENTAL MEDITATION (TM) & the HINDU CONNECTION

Years ago, back in 1974, this author was a West Point cadet who was watching the U.S. Army introduce TM into the academy. It was presented as a scientific technique, and many officers, some friends and other cadets availed themselves of the chance to train themselves in TM's mystical method of training. A fellow cadet who was already trained in martial arts quickly learned the techniques. After initially maintaining a safe distance, this author decided to investigate TM after I got out of the military.

The U.S. government gave substantial grants to get TM introduced into this country. Fortunately, Christians didn't sleep long, and exposed that TM is Hinduism. Everyone that is taught TM is initiated into it by the TM instructor singing a puja (worship) song in Sanskrit which is a hindu devotional song while incense and candles burn. Until the Christians exposed this, our national government went blithely along in promoting Hinduism into our public schools. For instance, the Dept. of Health, Education, & Welfare gave a $21,540 grant for 150 high school teachers to learn TM.

TM has grown to be a powerful organization, with many organizations set up attached to it. It has its international headquarters at Hotel Sonnenberg in the Swiss village of Seelisberg. When I investigated TM back in 1975, this TM instructor who was friends of mine, talked about her experience at Seelisberg. From the conversation with her it was obvious that people had had to surrender their will to the organization to go to Seelisberg, and some mind altering experiences had taken place there. She participated in the Siddhi program to be able to dematerialize, walk through walls and levitate. But the program clearly had emotionally disturbed her and others who had been in it.

Once a person is involved in the higher levels of TM, you don't just walk away from this cult.

From my personal observations, I discovered that TM is involved in some types of mind-manipulation, and that the organization is not above using deceit on unsuspecting people. What then becomes doubly interesting is that after observing these things, I learned that TM have a large interest in the cranial osteopathic techniques which can alter the mind and personality of a person. For instance, this author has obtained a list of TM instructors in Santa Monica, CA area who are also Doctors of Cranial Osteopathy. (But bear in mind, this whole thing is bigger than labels, when people are interested in the occult they study eclectically.) These TM Cranial Osteopaths are concentrated where TM has a secret MUM Mountain, CA training site. There are cranial doctors in the nearby towns of Aptos, Capitola, Cupertino, Hollister, Los Gatos, Salinas, Santa Cruz, Saratoga and Watsonville. It's boggles the mind that 12 cranial doctors are needed for the rural area near MUM Mountain, while L.A. only has 10. Concentrations of cranial doctors occur in close proximity to TM centers, particularly around the Maharishi University in Fairfield, IO as well as the secret MUM Mountain training center. Other cranial DOs who are part of TM are scattered about the United States.

Another observation which I made, was that some of the people that got really big into TM are still searching for something to fill the voids and needs of their life. TM didn't turn out to be as big of an answer as they expected. TM is not the final answer. However, the Maharishi who brought TM to America has a college in Fairfield, Iowa (the Maharishi International University) and 20 North American "heavenly communities" operating in the quest to create a heaven on earth. The Maharishi International University has been used for medical experimentation on people. The close connections between the leadership of TM and the Illuminati leadership suggests that TM is being used as another haven for the NWO's mind-control to be perpetrated on unsuspecting victims.

There are bone-setters in India also. Perhaps the Maharishi got his original interest in the potential for mind-control via skull manipulation in India. Wherever the interest came from, it is evident that TM in America is involved in skull manipulation for its mind-control results.

The 3-in-One school Connection.

If one wants to surrender oneself to a cult, and allow one's mind to be control, in order to learn, the 3-in-1 school will be happy to teach you about what others would call phrenology and manipulation of the skull to control thinking. The school has a number of courses. They do not call their principles phrenology. Nor do they call their instruction mind-control. They identify to the student areas of the head and what type of thinking that area of the head is involved with. They also provide information so that their students can evaluate how people will act based on the shape of their heads and how that shape will interact with other shapes. The school is located at 2001 West Magnolia Blvd., Burbank, CA 91506, ph. no. 818-841-4786. They teach Ericksonian Hypnosis (good for programmers to know), Bodywork (incl. cranial osteopathy, which is good for programmers to know), and they teach NLP, Mind-controlled relationships (along with scripts), Mind-controlled adolescent problems, and a pantheistic religious philosophy/religion.

When the 3-in-1 school got started they were teaching muscle-testing and other important skills to their students (who can become "facilitators" in teaching others). The muscle-manipulation they have taught is extremely gentle and way beyond what the chiropractors knew. The school in California began about 10 years ago and then a few years later they began to tighten their hold on all their graduates and their students. The school has been drawing students from Europe, Japan, China, Russia, and South America (incl. Brazil). They have moved more and more toward being an occult cult or perhaps an Illuminati front. When given information that their muscle techniques could be used to help multiples, they have made it clear (according to one school administrator) that they are not interested in helping multiple personalities. One school administrator named Gordon Stokes said, "We're off in another direction."

In fact, Gordon Stokes is the founder of 3-In-1. (Technically, a co-founder, Daniel Whiteside and Candace Callaway helped. Some speculate that the Three-in-One name refers to this triumvirate, and perhaps to their relationship together.) Gordon Stokes has been reported to be a member of the BOTA which is an international Mystery School of the Hierarchy. BOTA stands for Builders of the Adytum. It is a Qabalistic-Hermetic Order of adepts founded in the 1920s by Dr. Paul Foster Case reportedly on direction by the hierarchy.

The BOTA teaches higher states of consciousness to its adepts. It is located at 5105 No. Figueroa St., Los Angeles, CA 90042.

Daniel Whiteside's parents are deeply involved in personology. And Candace Calloway's mother, their book keeper, has also been a major figure at the 3-in-1 school.

This 3-in-1 school in Burbank seems to be a finishing school for Illuminati programmers. The school ridicules people who want to examine their life or have a conscience. Christianity is considered to be an obnoxious tyrannical religion by the school. The information that they teach would be very helpful for mind-control programmers, and their occult philosophy would scare off moral people from participating.

The 3-In-1 research has been geared into how the brain works. Their research shows that if a person has more brain cells in a particular region of the brain, they are more developed in that intellectual area. For instance, if the Action-based-on-feeling area (the parietal lobe) has lots of cells, the person will be more active than thoughtful. If the person has more cells in the brain's Conscious-associational thinking area (frontal lobes) they will think more than act. They call their system based upon this research comparative cell proportion.

There were many ancient works that noticed personality traits in relationship to head shapes. Three-In-One article "The Background of Structure/Function" states, "You can read about the basis of Structure/Function in the Hebrew CABALA"S book of ZOHAR (which is literally Aristotle's PHYSIOGNOMONICA) as well as in the writings of Maimonides and those of almost every famous Arabian philosopher during Medieval times." (Stokes, Daniel. *The Background of Structure/Function*, 1991, p. 2)

The Cranial Academy's *The Cranial Letter* also picked up on the connection between the Cabala and cranial manipulation.

A class on the "Cabala and Osteopathy" is advertized in the May '95 issue, p. 9.

Until Freud captured the interest of students of the mind, phrenology was psychology. Phrenology studied what could be measured, Freud got people looking for the hidden. In 1938, Dr. Edward Vincent Jones improved upon Phrenology and classic Physiognomy and developed Personology. His system was an instant hit and he was given the go ahead and conduct research on inmates at San Quentin Prison, and what is now LA's giant USC County Hospital. Interestingly, it was not long after Jones' research there, that Cisco Wheeler's father (trained as a programmer) was assigned by the Illuminati to organize covens in the San Quentin Prison.

The Whitesides became disciples of Jones research and went on to statistically validate his system. One of their best students then was Gordon Stokes of Sacramento, who then moved to San Francisco to be better trained by the Whitesides. As mentioned, sixty traits have been validated statistically. By looking at the skull and head, the skin, the body tone, the eyes, and other areas, the practitioners of Structure/Function can accurately tell a person's personality.

Because this type of information has been in the possession of caballists, it is not surprising that the average person is ignorant of all this. However, the potential for good or evil with this knowledge is tremendous.

They also used Applied Kinesiology to defuse emotional stress. For this work they divide the brain into the dominant side (the left), and the alternate side (the right). Then each of these hemispheres is again divided between the fore and back brains for defusion. Applied Kinesiology is used to gain information about a trauma, and the defusion is used to release any negative emotional stress around an incident. (This also possibly could be used to dilute the emotional impact of some assignment done by a slave.)

In the first 3-In-1 newsletter of 1995, pg. 1, they write, "Self-image is the key to good learning performance. What 'magic' do we use to help slow learners and people labeled as 'learning disabled' change for the better so dramatically." This is just one minor example, of how these groups like to reframe what they do in occult terms.

The mind-control programmers need only have someone skilled in the manipulation of the cranial bones and the skull bones and they can with repeated delicate precision reshape a person's skull and also his brain's shape, thus manipulating the personality & looks. Photos of Marilyn Monroe (Erma Jean) during her life strongly suggest that type of cranial manipulation was done to her for mind-control purposes.

The occult world has maintained a dogged resolve to keep the deeper cranial knowledge and skills secret. Dr. Sutherland's wife wrote his story *With Thinking Fingers*. She states on pg. 62, "It was Dr. Sutherland's cherished dream that a day would come when the benefits to the mentally ill through the cranial component in osteopathy would be investigated..." If that was his dream, it is being hijacked today by those who see it as a tool for power over their fellow men.

2. GENETIC ENGINEERING

A great deal of secret experimentation has gone on in underground installations with genetics. This author has had the privilege of debriefing someone who worked at the Area 51 underground installation. He was murdered after having had several long interviews with this author.

Truth is stranger than fiction. It goes without saying that the Illuminati has gathered up every hair-brained idea for controlling and manipulating the human race. That doesn't mean everyone of them has been attempted, but they have the means to carry out very bizarre experiments in their underground facilities, such as the ones at Area 51. There is no question that they have tried to augment natural human features and replace natural human parts. Who knows what weird transgenetic or cybernetic beings have been created? This author knows that they have been successful in some of their work at reshaping humans.

This author has accumulated a great deal of information on the underground installations from eyewitnesses, but there is no way of knowing what is accurate and what is disinformation. However, a few details are definite. These underground installations are massive and they involve genetic manipulation to create new species or breed special types of people. In the Vol. 2 book, we discussed the Aquaman subspecies that the NWO has created with gills and special skin. These people look like normal people unless observed closely. They had extra genetic material inserted in the genetic material that created them. They are called Transgenic humans because they still closely resemble other people.

In order for transgenetic humans to pass their new added features to the next generation they need to mate with other similar transgenetic humans.

However, the NWO has been secretly creating Chimeras. Chimeras is the widely used name for beast-men. This research is generally not for the public to see but is done in some of the underground facilities listed in Appendix 2. An example would be a creature that was half human and half some other beast. On a BBC TV show on Oct. and Nov. 1988, the british showed the result of a gorilla being artificially inseminated with a human sperm. The experiment was done by british researchers working for the government and the result ended in a child looking remarkably like a normal person. However, the common people who viewed it were outraged. Most people are not really excited about scientists playing God and destroying the human race by genetic tampering. Of course the scientists who do these genetic games have lots of excuses and rationales, many of which have been put into print, to justify their research.

People are being bred for specific purposes by the Illuminati, just like this author bred dairy cows. Parents with certain desired features are obtained. (In fact, the Nazi's secret superdog Lowenhertz Dogo Argentino - which looks like a race of weight-lifting dogs, and the secret 100 yr. old Paraguayan Nueva Germania colony of special bred Aryans are still in existence.) The *NY Times* had an article on 9/17/92 where a Washington psychiatrist Dr. Peter Breggin accused the federal government of a genetic "violence initiative" in which the government was involved with genetic research as it relates to crime and violence. Dr. Susan Solomon, is one of the government's leaders involved in researching violence. However, from what this author can gather, the government's research is far more reaching that the *NY Times*' article even begins to imply.

By genetic breeding and manipulation, the Illuminati are trying to strengthen certain mental features. Considering that this has already been done for centuries by mankind to other species, for instance, when mankind domesticated the horse, the dog, the cat, the lama, the chicken, then it is no secret that a docile servile slave class of humans can be created.

The primary goal of this Illuminati breeding is to create a class of people who can work together with others (herd instinct), and who will take orders willingly. Independent thinking and intelligence are not wanted. Educational goals and a world-wide educational system that can accommodate these types of workers is being created world-wide to deal with the eventual working-class-drones that the Illuminati want to create. The creation of this educational system at this present time has four goals, 1. to develop a group mindset, 2. to have education carried out by the multinational corporations, 3. to have students educated on the premise that truth is relative, 4. to teach compliance. Already the public schools in America are gearing up for the government to dictate what occupations young students can study for. In other words, our educational system is being set up for mind-control, and this is to eventually work hand-in-hand with worker slaves that have the genetics needed to be good compliant stupid slaves.

There have also been studies of intelligence such as the five volume *Genetic Studies of Genius* started by L.M. Terman in 1925, (pub. by Univ. of Stanford Press). The World Order has specific and successful methods to create a class of technical people.

At this point, people whose thinking abilities have been created by the monitoring/manipulating of their genetics is a small but increasing number. Genetic control of breeding is unfortunately where the programmers are headed. This is not happening for the genetic betterment of the human species, this is for the perverted lusts of these demon-possessed megalomaniacs who think they deserve to rule with a sadistic iron fist.

Those who mistakingly think the mind-control programmers are trying to improve the human race, need to get to know the programmers better. (See Appendix A for biographical information on some of the programmers.) Those poor gullible naive people who think they when the global masters visibly introduce the New World Order that the NWO will be tolerable if they can simply keep their noses clean, not fight back, and do their jobs, are sadly mistaken. They do not know the dark sinister side to these global masters. As one man very close to the center of power said to a common man about the men who rule the world, "If you stepped on an ant, you would have more conscience than the global elite have in manufacturing wars and killing millions of people. They want power and they intend to amass total power no matter what the cost."

- Another area of ILLUMINATI DECEPTION & CONTROL--

Ionizing radiation used in conjunction with chemicals to manipulate the genetics of the mind; or say this another way: **USING RADIATION & CHEMICALS TO CHANGE GENETICS associated WITH THINKING.**

When a retired high-ranking military man first told this author that radiation research had to do with mind-control, my reaction was probably like most people's, puzzlement. I thought that radiation was quite lethal and that genetic research with radiation was to protect us from some kind of atomic attack. Wrong. That is a nice cover story.

Since that retired colonel (who may not have long to live) talked to me, others have said similar things. Like many things that the World Order does, if we don't have a frame of reference of what is going on, we can live around what they are doing day in and day out and never see all the clues as to what is going on under our noses.

One trauma-based mind-controlled slave (Chris DeNicola) spied on the files of the doctor who did radiation experiments on her. She saw the following radiation file headings, & their codes: **Canker Sore (D-7040), Laser Documentation (D-7000), Nautical Science (D-1015), Pediatric Radionthology (L-6542) [One idea is that this file might pertain to child alters.], Penetrating Wave Activity, Radiation Experimentation (L-6540), Radioactive Distortions, Radioactive Material Contamination, Radioactive verification, Radioactive Waves, Radionthology, Electrolite Prodigies Experiments (654-011), Laser Light Distortions experiments (654-012), & Laserlight Technology experiments (101-015).** One reason, that this author is providing the code numbers of these files, is that memories of slaves who are involved in these experiments or projects often are internally coded with these file codes. The date the experiment was done will also be added as part of the code.

When this author researched their genetic research, I was utterly amazed at how many institutions world-wide are carrying out deep research into genetics--much of which will contribute to the enslavement and mind-control of the human race. Just a sampling of countless labs working hard on this mind-control related genetic research include Brookhaven National Labs, Upton, NY; John Hopkins Univ., Baltimore, MD; Institut für Genetik, the Free University of Berlin, Germany; Institute of Hygiene & Epidemiology, Czech.; Radiation Genetic Lab & Chemical Mutagenesis, State Univ. Of Leiden, Sylvius Labs, Leiden, The Netherlands; MIT, Cambridge, MA; Gesellschaft für Strahlen und Umweltforschung, Munich, Germany; National Inst. of Environmental Health Sciences Research Triangle Park, NC; Sandoz Labs in Basle, Switzerland; Biology Division, Oak Ridge National Lab, Oak Ridge, TN; Roswell Underground Labs, NM; Stanford Research Institute, Menlo Park, CA; Shell Labs, Kent, England; University of Michigan, Ann Arbor, MI; the Zentrallabor für Mutagenitätsprüfung der Deutschen Forschungsgemeinshaft, Freiburg, Germany. This is just a tiny sampling of the enormous world wide research devoted to genetics that pertain to mind-control.

While there are numerous surnames among the genetic researchers, because this author knows as a fact that some of these researchers are Illuminati, it doesn't quiet one's curiosity to see the better known Illuminati surnames such as Dupont, Hersey, Fox, Frey, Jung, Li, Paterson, Stuart, Sinclair, Sutherland, and Russell appearing among the genetic researchers doing research that pertains to mind-control.

Obviously, this author can't give all the ways they have figured out to use radiation, along with chemicals and genetics to control the human race. I will try to give you a peek in the window. The real deep & dangerous information is of course highly classified material and protected by their mind-control of those scientists who work for them. When I say mind-control, that includes such methods as blackmail and threats of assassination.

There is a type of radiation called ionizing radiation-that means it is radiation that gives off electrons (thus producing ions). There are many different types of ionizing radiation. Some go right through the body, some damage the cells, but the body repairs itself, some causes genetic changes, and some simply hits your cells like a sledge hammer & kills them. The ionizing radiation that changes genetics has been the focus of an incredibly enormous amount of (mostly secret) research.

Genes are instructions that tell non-life material how to organize itself into something living. A gene consists of genetic material called DNA and RNA. Genes also provide instructions for how something is to develop. As a person or animal develops, the genes **interact with the environment** to create what the person or animal is like. For instance, different breeds of dogs when born are more similar, than after they grow up. Different breeds of dogs have been bred for different genetic traits, and as different breeds grow up, their **genes continually interact with the environment to create the adult dog. So full genetic expression can take a life-time.**

The link between genetics and behavior can be seen in this quote from the *Quarterly Review of Biology* (art. by T.C. Schneirla, 1966, p. 283), "Behavioral ontogenesis is the backbone of comparative psychology. Shortcomings in its study inevitably handicap other lines of investigation from behavioral evolution and psychogenetics to the study of individual and group behavior."

Genetic psychology has revealed that the genes program in methods for an organism to adjust to their environment. So genetic instruction is, for instance, more than just the instruction "be smart, be aggressive, be tall" but it is tailoring the way a person's develops to deal with its environment. In other words, behaviors are programmed into a person via their genes (genetic instructions) to provide mechanisms for quick, dynamic adaptions to changing circumstances. These mechanisms (created by genetic codes) may even have the person (or animal) reverse their behavior for purposes of survival.

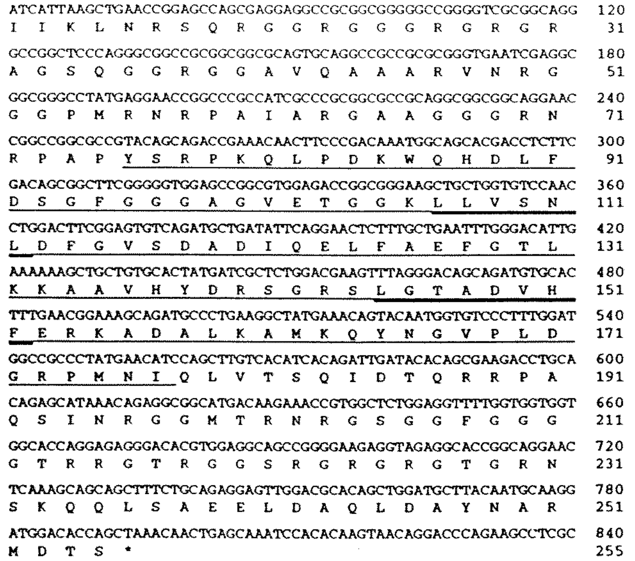

```
ATCATTAAGCTGAACCGGAGCCAGCGAGGAGGCCGCGGCGGGGGCCGGGGTCGCGGCAGG  120
I  I  K  L  N  R  S  Q  R  G  G  R  G  G  G  R  G  R  G  R    31
GCCGGCTCCCAGGGCGGCCGCGGCGGCGCAGTGCAGGCCGCCGCGCGGGTGAATCGAGGC  180
A  G  S  Q  G  G  R  G  G  A  V  Q  A  A  A  R  V  N  R  G    51
GGCGGGCCTATGAGGAACCGGCCCGCCATCGCCCGCGGCGCCGCAGGCGGCGGCAGGAAC  240
G  G  P  M  R  N  R  P  A  I  A  R  G  A  A  G  G  G  R  N    71
CGGCCGGCGCCGTACAGCAGACCGAAACAACTTCCCGACAAATGGCAGCACGACCTCTTC  300
R  P  A  P  Y  S  R  P  K  Q  L  P  D  K  W  Q  H  D  L  F    91
GACAGCGGCTTCGGGGGTGGAGCCGGCGTGGAGACCGGCGGGAAGCTGCTGGTGTCCAAC  360
D  S  G  F  G  G  G  A  G  V  E  T  G  G  K  L  L  V  S  N   111
CTGGACTTCGGAGTGTCAGATGCTGATATTCAGGAACTCTTTGCTGAATTTGGGACATTG  420
L  D  F  G  V  S  D  A  D  I  Q  E  L  F  A  E  F  G  T  L   131
AAAAAAGCTGCTGTGCACTATGATCGCTCTGGACGAAGTTTAGGGACAGCAGATGTGCAC  480
K  K  A  A  V  H  Y  D  R  S  G  R  S  L  G  T  A  D  V  H   151
TTTGAACGGAAAGCAGATGCCCTGAAGGCTATGAAACAGTACAATGGTGTCCCTTTGGAT  540
F  E  R  K  A  D  A  L  K  A  M  K  Q  Y  N  G  V  P  L  D   171
GGCCGCCCTATGAACATCCAGCTTGTCACATCACAGATTGATACACAGCGAAGACCTGCA  600
G  R  P  M  N  I  Q  L  V  T  S  Q  I  D  T  Q  R  R  P  A   191
CAGAGCATAAACAGAGGCGGCATGACAAGAAACCGTGGCTCTGGAGGTTTTGGTGGTGGT  660
Q  S  I  N  R  G  G  M  T  R  N  R  G  S  G  G  F  G  G  G   211
GGCACCAGGAGAGGGACACGTGGAGGCAGCCGGGGAAGAGGTAGAGGCACCGGCAGGAAC  720
G  T  R  R  G  T  R  G  G  S  R  G  R  G  R  G  T  G  R  N   231
TCAAAGCAGCAGCTTTCTGCAGAGGAGTTGGACGCACAGCTGGATGCTTACAATGCAAGG  780
S  K  Q  Q  L  S  A  E  E  L  D  A  Q  L  D  A  Y  N  A  R   251
ATGGACACCAGCTAAACAACTGAGCAAATCCACACAAGTAACAGGACCCAGAAGCCTCGC  840
M  D  T  S  *                                                 255
```

> >Labs can take a sample of material, like a strand of hair, separate out the DNA material, & map & display the genetic coding by computers. <u>The actual codes</u> which life uses to construct biological items are known by geneticists. The DNA code for a polypetide named ALY▲NC is underlined below. A hexamer & octamer contained within ALY▲NC are bold underlined. The genetic instructions before & after are given too.

Within the human brain (also all mammal brains) all the neurons are believed to be generated before birth with the exception of the following cells: granule cells of the olfactory bulb, fascia dentala granule cells in the hippocampus, the granule cells of the cerebellar cortex, and the granule cells of rhombic lip in the brainstem. Its the brainstem cells that the Illuminati manipulate through brain stem scarring to produce photographic memories for their scientists and computer programmers. The germinal cells create neurons in the germinal zone. Brain cells with a common function develop from a common lineage although from different sites. After a new neuron develops in the germinal zone, they migrate to whatever location they are to live in. The complicated process of how a neuron discovers where to go (migrate to in the brain) has been not been discovered according to what this author has read. When neurons establish themselves they deal with certain neurotransmitters, that establish communication between them and other neurons. Researchers have discovered that neurons can change their own make up to take different neurotransmitters if they decide their "environment" in the brain needs it. They also grow their dentrite connections depending on what type of connections are needed for that particular brain to function. For instance, a piano player will develop dentrite connections to be able to play well. These discoveries show once again that even on the cellular level, genetic instructions are complex and designed to give flexibility and adaptability of the cell to the situation for the cell.

Genetic programming begins at the cellular level. There is a cellular consciousness besides the consciousness that we think about. DNA structures which are inherited affect the cellular consciousness. Body memories are contained within the physiological structure. The first brain and the body work off a stimulus-response recording mechanism. Body memory and programming are stored at this level. This is an area of the brain that is always on. However, its view or perception of events is not an exact copy of what other higher brains are thinking. Your conscious mind doesn't remember how the stairs and the room are arranged, but in the dark, you primal part of your mind helps guide your steps.

Various drugs and chemicals have been identified that influence particular learning sequences in the mind, such as imprinting. For instance, hexamethonium chloride antagonizes the nicotinic actions of acetylcholine on the ganglia, or in other words, acetylcholine will depolarize the ganglia but is prevented by the hexamethonium. The overall result is that impulses that the sympathetic ganglia would transmit are blocked.

This is just one example of countless examples of how a specific chemical can affect a specific brain action.

There is a branch of genetic research called "developmental social behavior genetics" which deals with how genetics program in social behaviors of animals and people. For instance, these geneticists study how genes create aggression, courtship, territorial behaviors, behaviors involving mothers and fathers, dominance (peeking order) behaviors, sexual behaviors, attraction behaviors, recognition behaviors, etc. Men are very much controlled by the sexual lusts, power lusts, and aggressive behaviors. Can the reader see how genetic manipulation of these genetic based behaviors could radically change the potential behavior of a person. A fox's genes cause him to react differently than a rabbit's genes. Having a rabbit grow up in a fox home is not going to change the genetic instructions. (The Bible even says, Can a leopard change it's spots?) But the World Order has figured out how to change those instructions.

Genetic researchers had to begin sorting out behaviors, and sorting out genes that affected them. For instance, genes create a person's (or animal) reproductive "instincts". These instructions include instructions on fighting, nest building, mating, and care of their offspring. These genetic instructions are different for different people and different animals.

Researchers into imprinting have discovered that IF a set of animals (or people) is prevented from learning a particular imprint, and IF that set of animals breed, THEN they pass on a lack of ability to receive that imprint. In other words, genetically we learn from generation to generation. Let's say that we prevent men from naturally imprinting a sexual desire for women as they grow up. If we mate those men to women, the offspring will show a reduced ability to be heterosexual. Males seem to develop their sexuality, but females seem to react more on the basis of genetically present "releasers".

Genetic researchers have gone in and identified what people's behavioral instructions specifically are, and how to change them. The instructions are written in DNA, and manipulation of DNA can change those instructions.

When I researched their genetic research, I found that they have developed maps for how to change genetic material to change those instructions concerning behavior. The maps for changing human genes related to behavior are classified, but an example of one that isn't is found in the book *The Genetics of Behavior* (ed. Ehrman & Parsons. Sinauer Assoc., Inc. publ.: Sunderland, Mass, 1976, chapter 8 figure 4.). This map shows 3 sites in a HK gene that **are intentionally mutated by the scientists** in order to change the way a particular fly sings its mating call. The specific changes in how the fly sings its new mating call (after the genetic code is changed by geneticists) are even graphed out in a recording graph in another book *Developmental Behavior Genetics: Neural, Biometrical, and Evolutionary Approaches* (ed. by Hahn et. al., Oxford, Eng.: Oxford Univ. Press, 1990, Fig. 6-1.) Again bear in mind that we only get the crumbs of what they know. We get a map of how they can change the way a fly sings a song--while they secretly keep the genetic maps to change human behavior!

An easy example of how genetics play a role in human behavior can be seen in how infants behave toward their mothers and toward strangers. By using twins and adopted children, etc. it could be clearly demonstrated that the behavior of a child in how it touches its mother was genetically inherited. But remember that the genetic instructions as a child grow older are designed to give it flexibility in relationship to its environment, so the environment is going to interact with the genetics to form the final behaviors. The study of these reactions of genes to the environment is called the study of epigenesis.

Another easy example of the genetic role in human behavior is that intelligence has been linked to brain to body size. Genes ultimately determine that ratio of brain to body size. The factors involved are largely prenatal maternal influences. A great deal has been learned in this area. Brain size relates less to body size than it is a function of body metabolism. (See Research by Lande & Martin) To give a tiny sample of the types of genetic studies done in this area:

- Hahn, M.E., & Haber, S.B. "Dominance for large brains in laboratory mice..." *Behavior Genetics*, 1979, 9, pp. 243-244.

- Fuller, J.L. & Geils, H. "Brain growth in mice selected for high and low brain weight." *Developmental Psychobiology*, 1972, 5, pp. 307-318.
- Riska, B., & Atchley, W.R. "Genetics of growth predict patterns of brain-size evolution." *Science*, 1985, 229, pp. 668-671.

Research into how to control humans genetically proceeded in several directions. First, scientists realized that radiation was the key to changing genetics. Radiation causes breaks and changes in the DNA instructions. If only one little bit of genetic DNA instruction is changed in 1 million bits of information, that change could radically change the life of the person or animal. We see that everyday cleft lips... But how does radiation affect genetics? DNA has been studied from every angle. DNA has been looked at, probed, tested with all kinds of chemicals and countless other manipulations. The scientists figured exactly how the different DNA is constructed, what makes it tick, how it joins, holds together, reproduces, etc. They can disassemble and rebuild DNA however they want. DNA is the genetic instructions. Since radiation will affect DNA they tested a long list of ionizing radiation substances on DNA. Different radiations will break the DNA in different ways. Chemicals will join to DNA in certain ways. Long story short, there are millions of ways to manipulate genetic material, and the World Order set out to discover how to precisely manipulate certain kinds of genetic material in certain ways.

An example of how skilled they are in understanding most everything about to construct and take apart the molecules of genetic material, at Cold Spring Harbor Labs one of the 1997 courses offered students is Molecular Cloning of Neural Genes. They understand what makes a nerve cell and how to create one. This science is called molecular neurobiology. (This course at Cold Springs H.L. happens to be taught by instructors from Rockefeller Univ., Harvard, John Hopkins, and UC of Berkeley.)

One area of intense study for many years was a long-term scramble to find chemicals that would cause different types of mutations in DNA. This research was called Comparative Chemical Mutagenesis. In fact one of the books this author studied was entitled just that *Comparative Chemical Mutagenesis* (ed. by DeSerres & Shelby). This book's Chapters 16-18, 22-25 are about chemical-genetic research concerning how to create genetic changes in mammals using chemicals! When it comes to genetics, much of what is learned from studying one mammal will apply to humans. The chemical principles are the same, the DNA is written in the same code, only the genetic instructions written in that code is different. To make an analogy, this book is written in english. Once someone understands how english works, they can take apart a sentence and rewrite it. Top level Genetic scientists know how to take apart genetic instructions and rewrite them. Radiation used in conjunction with chemicals presents them a tool for the mass editing of human genetic instructions. No wonder the Chernobyl nuclear accident happened. (Insiders in the know say that it was caused on purpose.) What a great way to carry out more mind-control research.

According to public research, genetic mutations were created by scientists in mammal cells first in 1968. It is likely that this had already been accomplished in secrecy before this. Labs all over the world went about testing genetic material with specialized chemicals to see what would happen to various genetic material when it came in contact with specific chemicals. Some of the **commonly-tested mutagent chemicals** that were widely tested to discover their "mutagenicity" (mutagenicity is the word geneticists use to describe the power of a chemical to cause a mutation) include:

Aflatoxin B1 (AFT)(This is a mold metabolite and is not always effective without another agent.)
Cadmium chloride

Cadmium salts
Cyclophosphamide (CP)
Dimethylnitrosamine (DMN)
Epichlorohydrin
Ethylenimine
Ethyl Methanesulfonate (EMS)
Methyl methanesulfonate (MMS)
Mitomycin C (a strong mutagenic at low doses)
Myleran (aka Busulfan)
N-Methyl-N'-Nitro-N-Nitrosoguanidine (MNNG)
Natulan (aka procarbazine, this chemical was strongly mutagenic in the lab with the presence of S-9, but weak without the presence of S-9)
Tepa
Theo-Tepa
Trenimon
Triethylenemelamine
Vinyl chloride

When these chemicals (and others) were tested on genetic material, the mutations they caused in the genetic material were observed, and then the specific type of mutation each caused was charted. Some caused chromosome-type changes, others caused chromatid-type changes, and some caused sub- or half- chromatid changes (these sub-changes usually were in the mitotic portion of the cell cycle.) When the chemicals broke chromosomes they were called clastogens. Others cause chromosomes to lose genetic material by damaging the mitotic apparatus. Many of the chemicals that were first tested only produced chemical changes in the chromatid-type of change. They discovered that the protective mechanisms of animals, plants and humans were protecting against many of their induced mutations, but they also learned what mutations they could create that the body would not fix or recover from.

Along with finding out what certain chemicals would do, the World Order wanted to find out what would happen at the molecular level of DNA when subjected to different types of radiation. The key to using radiative material is that there are many different types of radiative substances, not just uranium. For instance, cadmium is radioactive and can be used in genetic manipulation.

In researching radiation, the first stage is when free radicals are created. This takes only a very small fraction of a second. The next is the chemical transformation of those radicals into stable radiation substances, and finally the last stage are the effects of these substances when the body incorporates them. The effects of the radiation substances on a person may last several years.

The effects of radiation take place on the molecular level of DNA. When you and I went to school we were taught that DNA occurs as a double-helix around an invisible common axis. The core of the helix is a series of purine and pyrimidine bases stacked in a parallel array and are arranged almost perpendicular to the invisible axis of the helix.

However, the reality is that DNA can also exist in three (triple) double-stranded helix structures which are called the A-DNA, the B-DNA, and the C-DNA. At high humidities the A-DNA will transform into a B-DNA if excess salt is in the area. In A-DNA the normal of the base pairs is tilted by 20° to the helix axis. In contrast, in the B-DNA the base pairs are perpendicular. In some viruses and bacteria single stranded DNA is found. DNA also comes in supercoiled in some situations. The point is simply that DNA occurs in ways other than we learned in school.

They discovered that the energy of the sugar-phosphate backbone of the DNA allows for the DNA bases to be stacked, and is the key to the stability of the DNA. The verticle stacking of the bases gives stability of the DNA helix. They discovered that the helical structure of DNA is strongly influenced by its base composition and molecular weight. I mention these only to point out, that they know all about what DNA is and how it is built and holds itself together.

The genetic-radiation researchers had to learn how the bases of the DNA held together electronically. They needed to learn how well these molecules of these different bases would accept electrons or donate electrons, because ionized radiation is substances that give off electrons or other ionizing particles. Directly ionizing particles are atomic particles that are charged such as electrons, protons, alpha (α) particles, "heavy" ions, etc.). An example of something the researchers found is that the cytosine base was the best acceptor of all the DNA bases.

They began the process of testing different radioactive substances on DNA to see how they would cause mutations. To study this type of research, this author read several books such as *Effects of Ionizing Radiation on DNA* (Springer-Verlag Publ.: Berlin, Germany, 1978). An example of a chapter in this book is "Radiation-Induced Degradation of the Base Component in DNA and Related Substances". This chapter shows charts of what happens to DNA components (such as thymine, cytosine, & uracil) when they are exposed to radiation.

This author wants to cover some details of the type of discoveries these researchers made to make a point that specific chemicals and specific types of ionizing radiation will produce different effects upon DNA.
Although these are very specific minute details, the reason they are mentioned here, is that the bottom line is that SOME CHEMICALS WORK WITH SOME TYPES OF RADIATION TO PRODUCE SPECIFIC MUTATIONS.

They discovered that if a mutagenic such as aminoacridine dye is absorbed by cells, this dye which binds to the nucleic acids, absorbs light to such a degree that the cells are destroyed. Different variations of dyes bind to the DNA in different strong and weak binding processes.

Lambda radiation was tested on DNA. They observed that positive and negative ions were randomly produced throughout the DNA and that these are chemically unstable and undergo free radical reactions to form stable radiation products.

They discovered that there was a consistent "oxygen effect" which was made into a radiobiological law which described how the presence of oxygen enhances radiation damage in all forms of cell life. Another interesting discovery was that 5-bromouracil (BU) enhanced the rate of radiation-induced free radicals forming within gamma-irradiated DNA.

Researchers discovered that an naturally occurring substance in cells, the sulfhydryls, would bind with iodoacetic acid and N-ethylmaleimide, which made them radiosensitive, and would result in certain mutations.

Still one more example of a compound that works with radiation to cause changes in the DNA is triacetoneamine-N-oxyl (or TAN for short). This is a stable free radical that combines with DNA. TAN comes from a group of nitroxide free radicals which all have the same influence on DNA. Metronidazole (aka Flagyl) was also found to be another of the nitroimidazoles and nitrofuranes that are oxygen mimics that worked in the lab as radiosensitizers of DNA.

Chemical-Biological Weapons are referred to as CB Weapons. In a transcript attached to the Dept. of Defense appropriations for 1970 (part 6) that I have of CB Weapons researchers talking, they indicate that the United States has BZ which "brings about complete mental disorientation as well as sedation which induces sleep. First of all the individual is completely confused as to what he is doing or what he is supposed to do and in addition he has hallucinations. He cannot carry out his assigned duties nor can he remember what his assigned duties were." The affect of BZ lasts for about 3 days and then the person will begin to recover. It can be given via the air or the water. If it is drank or inhaled it will work. It takes affect about 1 to 1 1/2 hours after it is ingested. There are a number of corporations that can produce BZ in the U.S. At the time of the transcript, it was stated that BZ is \$20/lb. and a lead time of six months for production.

Chemical incapacitants have been developed that affect the mental functions of the mind in various ways. Today, research and deployment continues of chemical and radioactive substances that can control people. One of the methods that chemical and radioactive materials work is to change genetic structures. Some of the genetic changes that can be created chemically, are chemical changes that affect the way the mind thinks. In a nutshell, we are looking at a situation where the thinking of an entire race could be altered via chemicals dropped into their air and water. How long would these genetic changes last? It is conceivable that some of the changes might have long range consequences.

Again, the bottom line is that the World Order has at its disposal radioactive substances that can distributed in conjunction with chemicals to mind-control large geographic regions by genetic manipulation. These radioactive substances and chemicals can be distributed over vast areas by the air and water of a geographic region.

It is conceivable that within a short time, the United States will experience chemicals administered via the air, or the drinking water used in conjunction with specific external stimuli to reinforce certain types of mind-control programming on a mass of people. A chemical that makes people susceptible to suggestion could be used over a geographic area while hypnotic television messages and ELF waves, etc. contribute to the mind-control operation.

Therapists are going to begin encountering victims of mind-control born in the 1960's or later that have been subjected to chemical-radiation changes to the genetics that control human behavior. There are already dozens of very vocal victims of both radiation experiments & mind-control that are speaking up. Unfortunately, the ones that this author knows do not have a long life-expectancy, and speaking up usually has the effect of shortening a whistle-blower's life.

In this *Deeper Insights* book, the movie Jacob's Ladder was mentioned. This movie shows a unit in Vietnam which was given a drug to make them aggressive, but the drug backfired because they killed each other. However, the reason the movie was allowed to be produced is that it was a good cover for the fact that the military did not give up, but that they actually succeeded in producing their "magic chemical potion" to turn soldiers into killing machines. The biology of aggression has been figured out. Military studies on the relationship between drugs and the ability to kill have been numerous, one example is Gabriel, R.A. *Military Psychiatry: A Comparative Perspective*. NY: Greenport Press, 1986. The World Order has the ability to create the warrior spirit, actually its worse than that, they have the ability to turn men into killing machines.

WHAT WE'VE COVERED

As horrible as the physical manipulation of the brain and its fluids is, and as monstrous as the genetic manipulation of the growth of the brain as outlined in this chapter are, they are only a few methods of mind-control of many that the Illuminati have at their disposal. These techniques seriously raise the question how much longer will humanity as we know it survive?

The next generation of children will have to face mind-control in the form of genetic tampering and the use of chemicals already stockpiled by the NWO.

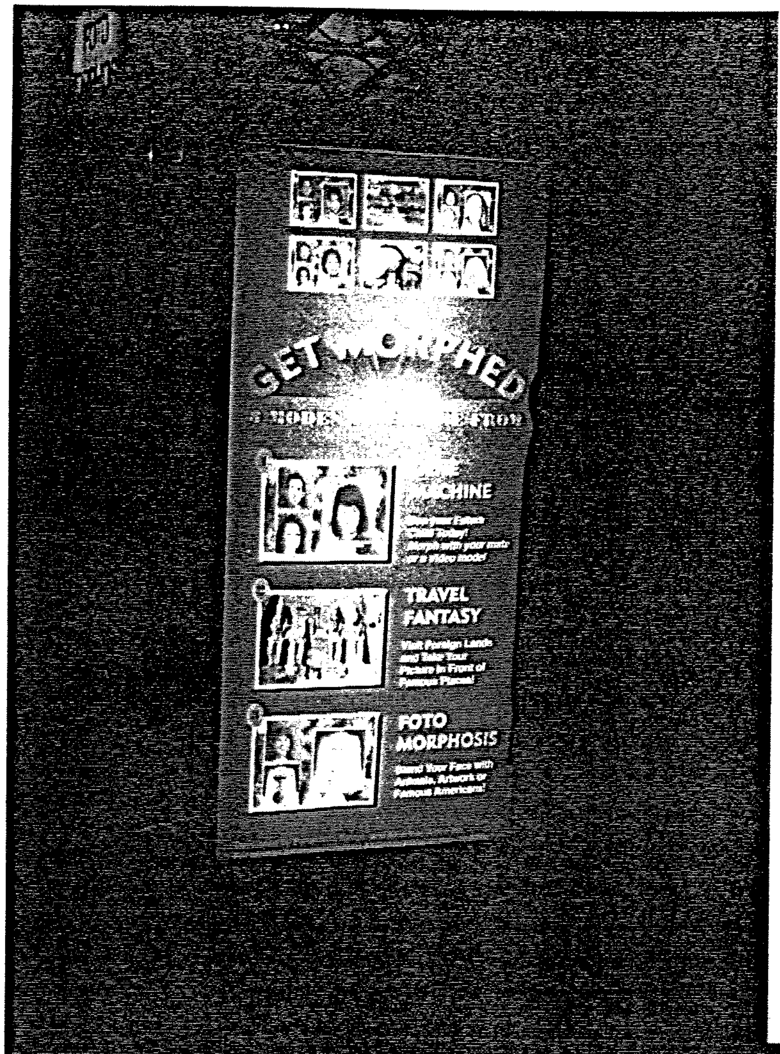
GET MORPHED
MACHINE
TRAVEL FANTASY
FOTO MORPHOSIS

left. This Las Vegas casino photo booth could greatly assist in confusing a mind-controlled slave. The photo machine can be set with different backgrounds so the person can be made to appear in another country, and will also blend the person's face with various animals, and will distort it in other ways in the Gene machine setting. Using a machine like this along with hypnosis and drugs, could assist a handler in genuinely mixing reality with fantasy to totally confuse a slave. They would have the photographic evidence to some cover story.

below. Oregon Museum of Science and Industry OMSI, which has Illuminiati members on its board of directors, has been used as a programming site for the Network and the Illuminati. Recently, the theme of the Museum was Star Trek. The OMSI museum advertized its Star Trek theme on metro buses, and benches throughout the entire Portland area. The author's photo shows one of the museum's Star Trek bench ads. Vol. 2 covers Star Trek programming.

Explore strange new worlds
STAR TREK FEDERATION SCIENCE
NOW AT
OMSI
BRI
TOP 17

Mind Manipulation

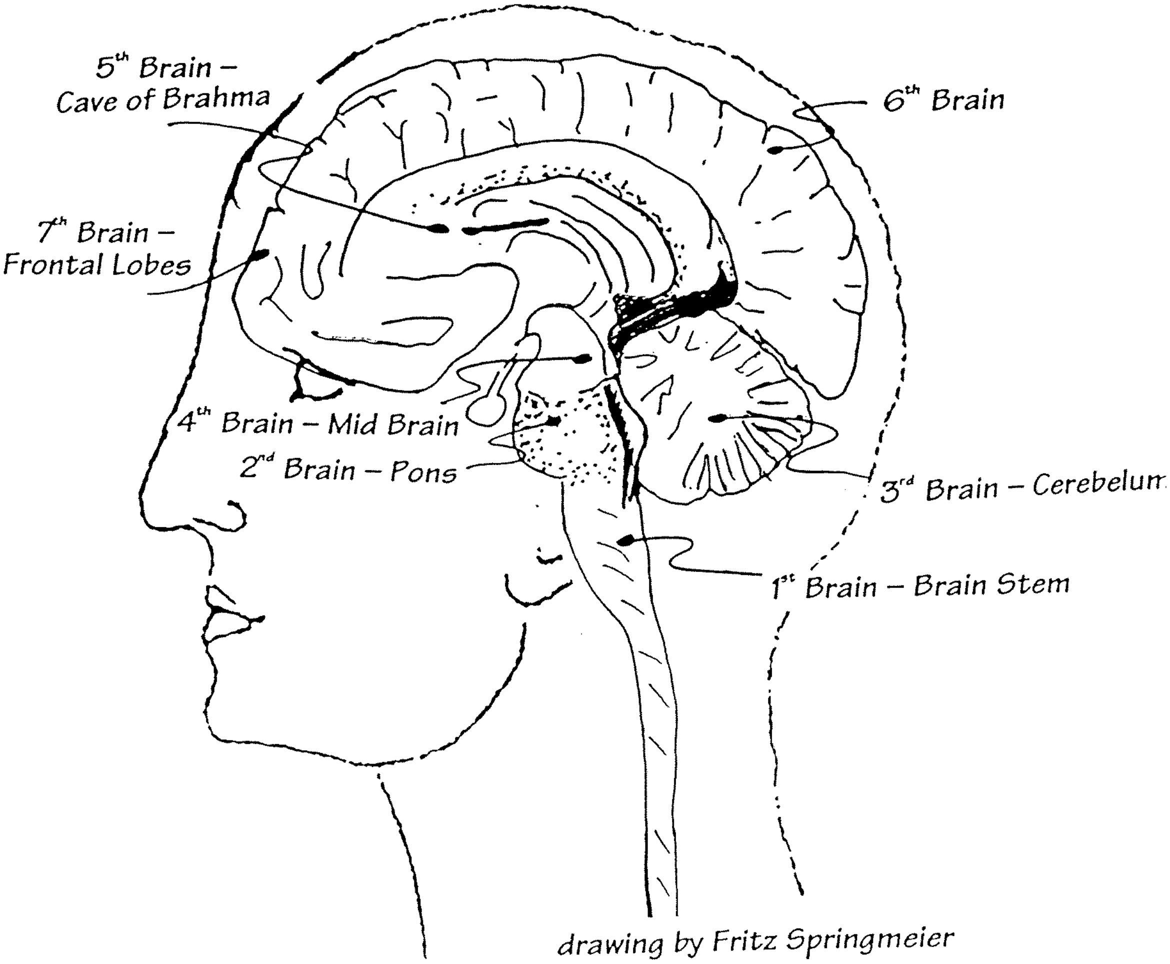
5th Brain – Cave of Brahma
6th Brain
7th Brain – Frontal Lobes
4th Brain – Mid Brain
2nd Brain – Pons
3rd Brain – Cerebelum
1st Brain – Brain Stem

drawing by Fritz Springmeier

CHAPTER 9

THE SCIENCE OF MIND MANIPULATION BY PSYCHOLOGICAL PROGRAMMING METHODS: BEHAVIOR MODIFICATION, PSYCHOLOGICAL MOTIVATION & NLP

A person's "selfhood" is hard to define, but one could view it as the central important center of consciousness to which the person has placed both trust and purpose. A professor of Pastoral Counseling defined the self as "the purposive core I have learned to trust in myself and others." Although this author prefers his own wording as written above, the definition of "selfhood" by this professor of pastors is in agreement with this author's.

A mature person is a person who has developed a "selfhood", a sense of self, that is able to make creative choices in line with values and plans for his or her life. By the destruction of the "selfhood" of many of the alters, the programmers derail the ability of the slave to make creative choices in line with values and plans.

Not only do they destroy the sense of identity but they also destroy the development of values.

When a normal person grows up, the values, that an individual adopts, will enable that person to integrate his or her many actions into a cohesive unified agenda for living their life. What happens when a person is not able to adopt their own values, but is force fed values? What happens when the person does not even adopt any values, except to acquiesce to the brutal demands of a mind-control handler? The natural process for developing a unified agenda for life is cut short.

The thinking of mankind is predicated on socialization with other humans. It is natural for people to want to work and be around other humans. The family, neighborhood, city and nation all give an individual nurturing that fosters a sense of identity and values. What happens if an individual is cut off from society and most of humanity, in fact is even cut off from most of their own mind and will? What typically happens in this situation is that the individual becomes demoralized, feels dehumanized, and as a person is enfeebled to deal with life.

What happens when a person is not allowed to chose values freely, and allowed to give consideration to various alternatives and the consequences for these choices? It means that the person is not going to be happy with the choices they make, but will go through the motions of life in a rather dissociated manner.

What happens when a person feels powerless? Feelings of powerlessness, can lead to feelings of meaningless. And meaningless makes an individual feel trapped by life. The meaninglessness imprisons a person. The person no longer has the freedom to make choices, and without choices has no real values, and without values life becomes meaningless.

The above situations are standard results of the total mind-control programming agenda. The person's natural built-in abilities to plan their life is short circuited. The person is demoralized and feels incomplete as a human because of his or her's lack of connectedness to their fellow humans, and as a result allows his or herself to be dependent upon the master. Because they are forced to do actions without any values, they dissociate their actions from feelings. Finally, they feel trapped because they have no values to give life meaning.

A sexual slave will be forced to have sex. They are not allowed to have a value system, or else they would pick and choose who they wanted to have sex with. The result is that they feel dehumanized and they dissociate feelings from their actions. Without values, life feels like one big trap, with no purpose and no goals. The only purpose the slave has is to survive the brutality of its master, that is to stay alive. Some slaves give up along the way, and are discarded as unsuccessful attempts by the Illuminati.

The programming agenda prevents the natural God-given gift for mankind to make their own choices. As explained above, this in itself reinforces several items that the programmers have been intentionally creating such as dehumanization, isolation, dependence, and dissociation.

It is built into human thinking to enjoy a sense of accomplishment. This happens when a person perceives his or her life as meaningful. The perception that his or her life is meaningful results in the person feeling power. Powerlessness and meaninglessness are two items that are related to each other when we understand human thinking.

A normal child in a normal environment will naturally learn when to trust itself and when to trust others. This is important to the development of values. This is important for a person to become mature. The programmers short circuit this natural learning process. The front alters continue learning who to trust and who not to trust, and when to trust oneself, because they hold the body from day to day. However, a special purpose child alter doesn't experience this. Without learning how to trust, it becomes hard to make decisions by one's self, and so the victim of mind-control transfers the right to make his or her choices to the programmer.

By arresting the natural process of learning trust, the programmers detour the mind, so that it travels right where they want the mind to be. Normally, a child would grow up, and as it grew up would realize that not everyone can be trusted. He would also come to realize that even his own self at times can not be trusted. Yet, the child would also learn that there are times that people can be trusted. This maturation of awareness moves a person from being dependent toward being independent. The programmed slave is afraid of seeking true love, and to find authentic relationships with people. Without these things, they remain incomplete and more pliable to the control of the master, who then attempts to provide in some substitute manner some of the things the slave should have developed for himself.

Many of the slave's deeper alters do not have the capacity to creatively look forward to the future, with the understanding that they can create their own life, their own future. The process of maturation that would have given that ability to them has been prevented from taking place. If these deeper alters do not experience life outside of their programmed trance states, they will have no chance to mature and to realize that they are capable to design and create their own future. Rather, the slave endures life with anxiety and dissociation, and limits his mental horizons to the present. The big reference point the slave has is to their master and his commands. Many of the slave's alters are limited in their freedom to really have consciousness. Their thinking is below the definitions of conscious behavior--it is simply programmed behavior.

Our consciousness has a big role in how we perceive the world. How we perceive the world in turn determines our values. The programmers can disrupt the process of a slave obtaining values in life, by disrupting the consciousness. Values in life are important in determining how we build our world-view, our frames of reference. The programmer constructs various worlds for most of the alters (except for the front alters). These alters are never given the chance for what psychologists would label "conscious behavior". Reality is not part of the package. Choice is not part of the package. In normal life, conscious behavior is developed by interaction between a person and his environment and the freedom to make real choices.

The bare necessities are grudgingly provided in a haphazard way to the alters of a total mind-controlled slave, so that IF they are aware of their needs, it is at a very basic level, such as survival, and security and warmth. A fully conscious individual has gone way beyond that to realizing his or her's needs for creativity, intimacy, community, justice, integrity, and spiritual fulfillment.

The challenge for the slave master will be to balance the freedom of activity and maturity of the front part of the slave's alters, with the control that the slave master needs to accomplish his nefarious goals. It is safer to bring a slave up to have a world view dependent on others that lends itself to the owner's agenda such as witchcraft values & a witchcraft world-view, or a Mormon/ or Jehovah's Witness/or Catholic world-view of obedience to the church, THAN to have the slave's front alters becoming independent self-directed mature thinkers. It doesn't matter whether the person's front alters are Jehovah's Witnesses, Mormon or Catholic, they have surrendered their personal sense of power and control to institutional control. The victim ceases to do things because of personal choice, but accepts institutional values as a cog in a machine; and the person, whether they realize it or not, loses meaning in their life. Personal choice, value and meaning in life are all related.

Because man is made in the image of God, he has an inherent desire to have meaning to his life. Mankind also has a desire to be in unity with his environment. This is also a God-given desire. To make himself feel at home in this world, man spends much of his activity taming and domesticating the wild world to conform to what feels comfortable. What happens when this is stripped from a person? In order to provide substitute answers to these desires of the slave, the Illuminati's covens provide rituals. Rituals make the slave feel that some order is being brought out of the chaos and nonsense of life. But true meaning in life can only come from realizing the goals of our actual Creator, Almighty God. Substitutes for this, leave people unfulfilled and weak. Of course, the unfulfilled weak sense of meaning in life of the Illuminati members, can weaken some in their ability to realize their true spiritual potential. It becomes a vicious cycle of low base evil goals.

Who will provide the safety for the deeper alters to move out independently in life? and then further, who will teach the deeper alters the social skills, and the other skills to step out and grow? Even if the complex programming should break its death-grip on an alter, (which seldom happens) an alter can not find freedom without some outside support system providing safety and instruction. The bondage that most deeper alters remain fixed in, is a very complex bondage of body, mind, and spirit. This complex bondage calls for group package answers, that address the type of issues that have been raised on these last two pages. The lack of this type of answer insures that few slaves will find full freedom. Partial freedom is still slavery.

On the flip side, because deeper alters have not had a chance to develop their own values, make their own choices, and experience reality, the power of the programs will be diluted simply by real life. This occurs even in the absence of intense deprogramming.

One of the weaknesses of the programming is that the handlers often fail to allow alters to ever establish real personal values. Hand-me-down values that are accepted under duress or torture, are quickly discarded if the alters ever do get free. Illuminati slaves who accept the values of the Illuminati, and progress to positions of power can be resistent to freedom, because they have internalized for themselves a value system, have some feelings of self-worth and self-competence. The Illuminati have long understood the value in having their members progress through the levels of initiation, and to pass through tests that bestow a sense of achievement upon the slave.

When the Illuminati in Bavaria had their safe houses raided, their paperwork showed extensive disciple and training programs. At first glance, raising an initiate through an initiate degree system of training may not smack of mind-control, but it is like an anchor that ties in the mind-control. It is important for the Illuminati to attach an occult value system to the mind-control so that the slave is more resistent to wanting freedom, because their self-worth and identity are tied up with the Illuminati.

"STRIPPED" OF FEELINGS

Another side-effect of the total mind-control is that the deeper alters of a victim, and indeed often even the front alters are unsuccessful in morally meaningful relationships such as love and friendship.

The reader may be wondering, what does Fritz mean by "morally meaningful"?

Allow me to take several paragraphs to explain...

Has the reader ever tried to recall a name which you knew, but your mind seems blocked? And yet, when someone offers this name or that name, you realize that it doesn't have the correct feel, the correct rhythm, the correct beginning. Your mind can recognize what it is looking for on a subconscious level, but you are not pulling the name up to the conscious. Your mind can look for things on a subconscious level and identify what it is looking for, without consciously telling you.

Has the reader ever loved someone for many years? If you have, you know that you didn't consciously think of them and your love for them every second of the day. Grief or love or another strong emotion can lay in our subconscious mind and yet still influence our thinking. It is not a matter of us turning this love on. It simply is there quietly in the background exerting its influence on our mind. Grief, love, anger, and other strong emotions are similar to when our mind is seeking for a name subconsciously. These emotions seek out the appropriate scenes, and items in the surrounding area, and colors and sounds that go with the emotion that the subconscious mind feels. A blue person will notice "blue, sad" type things around them. Other things just don't fit the subconscious fill in the blank.

In other words, our emotions determine our perspective on what we see in life. Our emotional perspective guides what items our mind focuses on. This is why it is absolutely imperative for balanced human growth that a person feel compassion, love and sympathy directed toward oneself. Feeling loved in turn opens the mind to focus its emotional-perception-guidance system on compassion, love and sympathy.

In contrast with most people, many parts of total mind-controlled slaves are never meant to have feelings, or if the parts do, they repressed, suppress, and dissociate their feelings.

Our emotions play a fundamental role in a person's moral life. They transform values into actions. This is what is called strength of will, courage of convictions, etc. Emotions play a critical role in strength of will and courage of convictions. To be stripped of feeling emotions, strips the victim of one of the ingredients to make and carry out moral choices. This helps explain why emotions are harnessed so completely by the programmers.

When researchers have studied unemotional people, they find that their dealings with others are shallow, lifeless, and mechanical. The programmers want their programmed assassins, espionage agents, prostitutes, etc. to be mechanical. People rarely want to form friendships with unemotional persons. Of course, the parts that are created to interface with the public are programmed to be effacious, gracious, and to sparkle. But the deeper parts which influence the victim's own internal thoughts, which the victim wisely keeps to himself, fail to connect with the outside world emotionally. Having been stripped of emotions, the slave is consequently stripped of one of the most important ingredients involved in morality.

An unemotional or emotionally deficient person or alter may suffer from a particular kind of a "morally-weak will". This is because failure to do what a person believes is good and failure to restrain from doing what one believes is bad is a natural consequence of lacking emotions such as care, concern, compassion, courage, love and sympathy. Certain emotions are critical for doing and being moved to do what is right and in not doing what one knows is bad.

Friendships are one of the most valuable commodities a person can have. The victim is stripped of external friendships. They may substitute interactions within their own internal world as a way to substitute for this loss.

In normal human activity, two people in love entertwine the activities of their lives into the complex whole of their love relationship. A walk together is not seen as a walk, but as a joint expression of their relationship. Humans emotionally value what is good for their friends and lovers. Without emotional attachments, the relationship is only a facade. The victims of mind-control are taught how to create great facades. Unfortunately, they fool many of their therapists, and therefore don't step out of the make-believe roles they play out. Human love and friendship is one of the most vital, powerful, fundamentally good items of human behavior. They provide the foundation for many other things. Without love and friendship, the victim's alters live in isolation, alienation, abandonement, discontinuity, and purposelessness.

Cisco's half of the book will discuss some specific programming tactcs that are used to hide the "shadow" alters that are used to take any emotions that the principally used alters might develop.

What we have been covering is that one of the side effects of "stripping" the victims from feeling emotions is to cripple them from taking moral stands, from seeing love & concern in the world around them, and from reaching out & forming ties to the outside world.

PROGRAMMING TO HIDE REVEALING DREAMS

The programmers realize that the mind is able to reveal secrets via dreams. During the programming a Mother-of-darkness will be assigned to a child and she will have to wake that child up when it is in its deepest sleep to ask the child what's happening and if the child is dreaming. If dreams are surfacing, the programmers know their programming is not holding. When the child's mind which is being programmed no longer releases revealing dreams, the programmers know that their programming is holding. The front alters receive repeated programming (hypnotic commands, etc.) not to dream or to know their dreams. When the programming begins to collapse, the deeper alters will begin to dream and flood with memories. The slave must have their dream sealing programs reinstated approx. every three years. If this is not done, dreams (which are actually memories) will begin to surface. A therapist can also help the victim train their mind to remember their dreams (dream state of mind).

PROGRAMMING LANGUAGE

A skillful programmer can use language to communicate at several levels. The programmer can use derogatory tones, big words that the child doesn't understand and obscure language that confuses the child in order to humiliate, dominate and confuse the child. He can also pronounce the words with a twist in order to protect the programming. Have you ever met someone in the occult world who pronounces many of his words strange? The programmers are also big on play on words which are done intentionally to protect the programming.

The victims of the occult programming must deal with symbology. Those who attempt to understand programming must also deal with the world of symbology.

The programmer must learn to think like a child and to step into the child's world. Likewise, the deprogrammer must learn to step into the victim's world. Certainly, the deprogrammer wants to stay grounded in reality, but he also wants to be able to understand the world that the victim must live in. The deeper parts of the victim lives in a magical world, full of demons and powers from other dimensions. When the Illuminati carry out programming, they often frame what they are doing in magical and satanic terms. Most therapists do not want to step into the victim's world to communicate with them.

Just as the psychologists want this author to step into the psychologists' world to communicate with them, the psychologist should realize that the victim would like the same. It is irrelevant whether the therapist believes that objects can be demonized or not. The deeper alters have spent their life-time learning how demons attach themselves to objects, and how to gain power to cause demons to attach themselves to objects. A deeper alter may have the occult wisdom to place demons into a fluid so that that fluid can be drank by a child. From their understanding of demonology, these demons are so powerful that the only non-lethal entry for them into the child is by the child drinking a particular fluid. These images are the images that deeper alters experience during the programming rituals. The language & images of the programming will be very magical, mystical and satanic.

EFFECTS OF PROGRAMMING

The mind is a holographic type of memory. The psyche of the multiple personality is a multiple image hologram. The body is set up to match the mind. When one alter switches to another, another hologram seems to take control over the mind. This is like the instructions for the body are written on a card, and when the switch occurs, the holographic cards are shuffled like a deck of cards. In fact, the programming have used this analogy as part of their programming codes.

FALSE IMPLANTED MEMORIES

Once the truth about trauma-based mind-control began coming out, a massive counterattack by the controlled establishment occured. This counter attack was that you can not trust the memories of the victims. Numerous establishment articles call attention to memory research, especially memory research into how to implant an illusary memory. Two examples of this massive counterattack are Bruce Bower's article in *Science News*, 8/24/96, pp. 126-127 entitled "Remembrance of Things False Scientists incite illusary memories and explore their implications" & Harvard psychologist Daniel L. Schacter's book *Searching for Memory* (1996).

First, these countless articles prove that the controlled psychiatric research community is working hard at developing techniques to implant false memories. This is indeed a big part of the mind-control, producing cover memories and false identities and false histories for alters. However, these articles always ignore the enormous evidence of severe abuse and government/cult involvement in the lives of countless victims of mind-control. This author has seen first hand the Illuminati-satanic cult-CIA involvement in the lives of a number of these people. The events of these people's lives, which this author has often witnessed, can't be explained away by poor memory. Further, traumas that are so severe as to cause amnesia walls, are locked up by the mind and preserved. They are like a mummy in a tomb in Egypt, that is still locked up in its preserved state. Memories that aren't locked up can deteriate and be contaminated, just like a dead body that is left to rot, but programming traumas are not in that category of memory. Remember, the mind protect itself. Research shows that the mind does not want to latch onto false memories that hurt it. For instance, when researchers try to get subjects to remember a kind parent hurting them, the mind will resist the false memory.

PERCEPTION CLOUDS MEMORY

The brain in order to be effecient uses its framework of knowledge--its world view--in which to hang new incoming knowledge. This author's *Be Wise As Serpents* book considered this to be the biggest barrier to people coming to the truth. Because education, television and society in general control how people's framework of knowledge is built, and these frameworks are built skillfully to exclude major truths that would expose how the World Order is controlling mankind, it is really difficult to speak to people about mind-control, and the control of the world in general. The victim of mind-control has frameworks built into his subconscious that make it difficult to drive the truth into their thinking. Memories are stored as they relate to these frameworks.

An efficient way around that is to speak and teach in way that the subconscious mind is spoken to, and the conscious barriers are by-passed. The mind puts up a grid to prevent non-approved information from coming in that doesn't fit it's accepted concept of truth. Much of this grid is fear based.

The problem for the victim is that once their mind is bent a certain way by the programmers, it will naturally create a grid to protect the programmed world-view.

This is why the external philosophies-news broadcasts-disinformation from establishment magazines, etc. that are layered in on top of programming, (see Chapter 12) are like a protective coat sprayed on to make sure the foundation doesn't weather over time. For instance, the front alters of some of the most severely tortured victims have latched onto the idea that Satanic Ritual Abuse doesn't exist, and are actually some of the greatest public crusaders against people believing that SRA exists. The external politically-correct view is in this case protecting the deeper programming.

FALSE FEELINGS. Using drugs & hypnosis, and the creation story about God breathing things into existence, the "love" & "kindness" of the programmer is placed into Moriah the Wind. When this is done, should a gatekeeper alter hear something negative about their master, they instantly go into the melting (drug memory) where drugs made them feel one with their programmer. This is reframed during programming as "the peace of God."

EIDETIC IMAGERY. There is a type of visual imagery called eidetic imagery. 5 to 10 % of children have it, but it is very rare in adults. Eidetic imagery is similar to a photographic memory. People with eidetic imagery can look at any object or page of numbers and when they look away the image of what they have seen is as clear as a photograph. They can focus on any detail of the image, enlarge it, make out more details than what they had originally seen, and then they can carry this image with them for several days, just like the rest of us carry a photograph. This author has not seen much info on this, & believes that further research into this topic might reveal some more methods that the mind-control programmers are utilizing. Child-hood impressions & memories can have a far greater impact and retention than adult memories. This paragraph has only introduced this subject of eidetic imagery & childhood vs adult memory ability.

FINAL SUMMATION. The programming regimen destroys the victims sense of self, so that the person has only an identity within the cult. The victim can not express rage over their own victimization, but is encouraged by the Illuminati's satanic beliefs to express violence & rage toward others, thereby creating a mechanism to help perpetuate the mind-control. The rage also seeps out as self-punishment. A deep loneliness sets into victims, & they despair of hope. They see no place to turn to except to whatever cult is controlling them.

This chapter has focused on the type of skills & knowledge psychologists study, & how this knowledge can be applied to insuring compliance by the slave.

he internal GRAND DRUID COUNCIL & winged LUCIFER who precides over them (see the Chapter on Structuring about the GDC and Chapter 10 on demonology.)

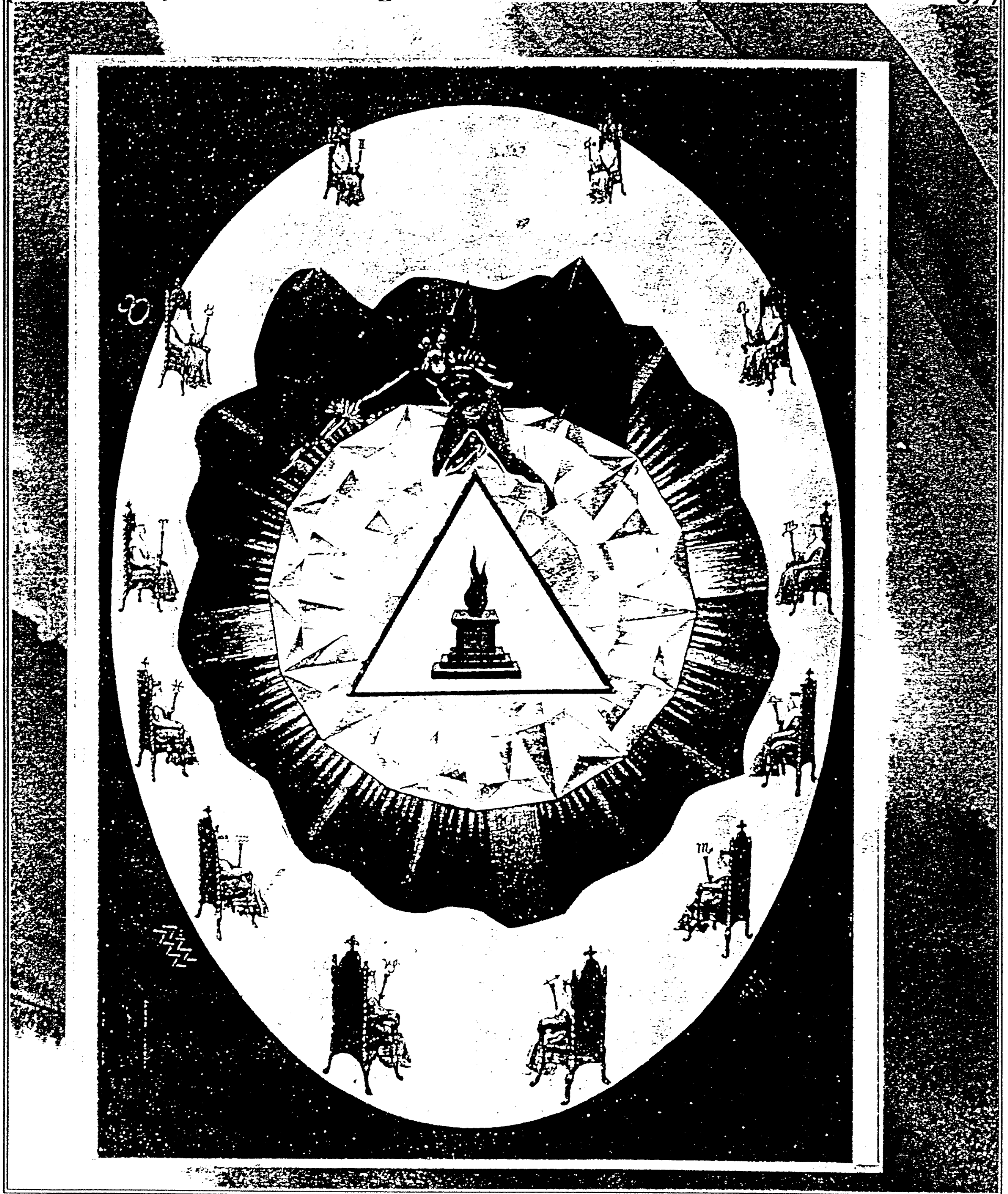

Spirit Manipulation

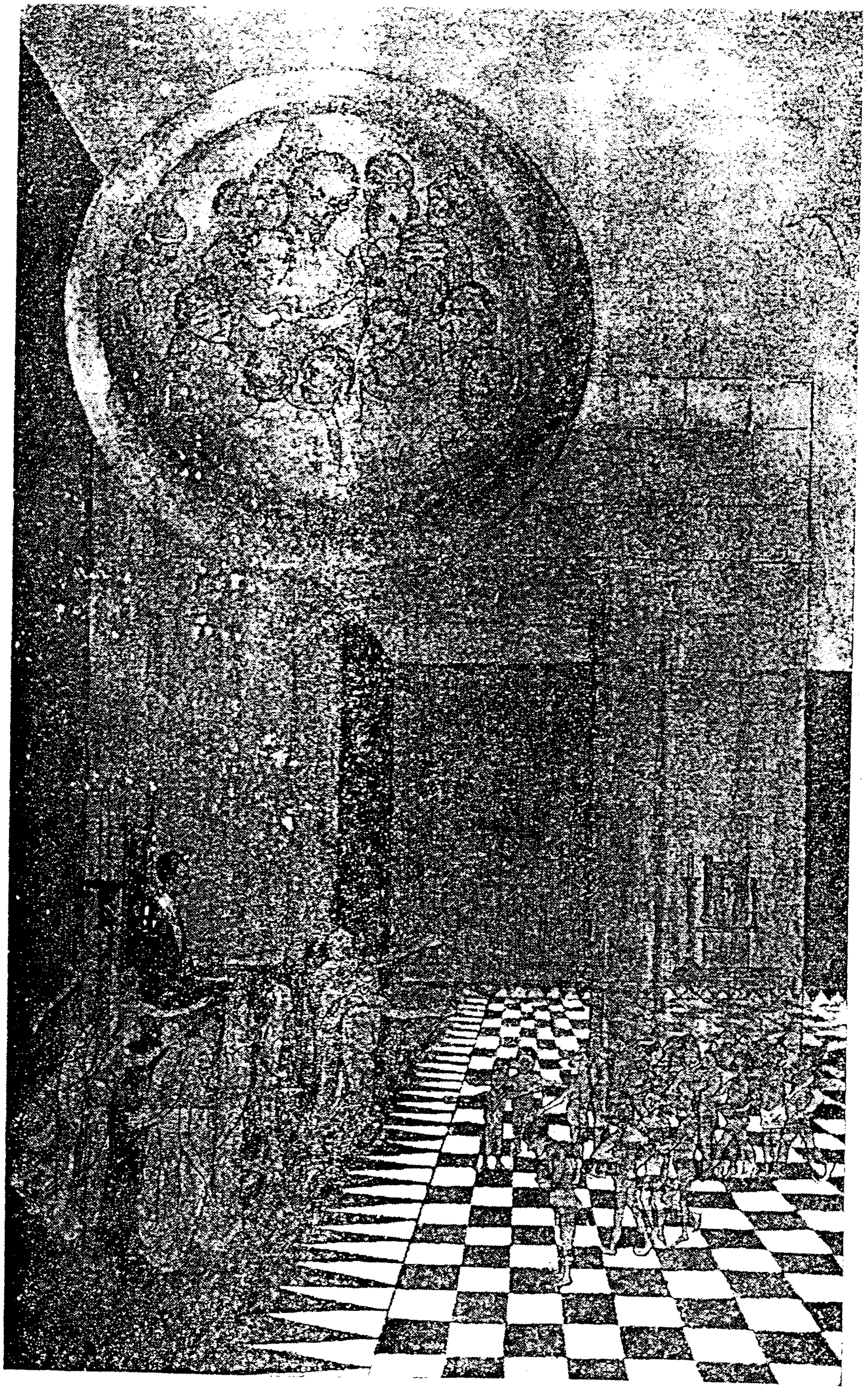

This is a masonic drawing called "The Second Portal". It shows nude boys facing a throne undergoing some type of magical ritual. The drawing appears in The Hidden Life In Freemasonry after pg. 198. In 1926, Charles W. Leadbeater, a 33° Freemason, printed his book The Hidden Life In Freemasonry. This book was written for people involved in Luciferian rituals in the higher more occult rites of Freemasonry. In the preface, Leadbeater talks of butterflies (pp viii-ix), which has the double meaning in the occult of souls (spirits). In the last chapter, chapter 10, he gives masonic rituals to invoke angels (demons) through egyptian magic. In these Masonic temples, the checkerboard square is used in a similar fashion as a magic circle for a coven. This picture is given as a paper trail to show the sex-magic rituals that take place within various masonic groups.

The Illuminati Sisters of Light alters rarely appear in therapy because they are used in horrendous masonic rituals, and must be buried very deep in the system. Typically, a Sister of Light would be blindfolded and taken down many flights of steps and through tunnels and would end up in an elaborate underground masonic temple. She would be used as a nymph. In one ritual, for example, she'd be given a golden circle band for her forehead, a cloak with a red lining, and a tunic of black silk with golden rays. The hall would have important masons of society who would be sitting in a semi-circle. The Sisters of Light are given to Beelzebub in an excruciating marriage ceremony. There is a veil which falls into 4 equal parts, which mean the 4 corners of the world. The sisters take oaths around the compass, so that the victim feels locked in no matter what corner

CHAPTER 10
THE 10th SCIENCE - USING SPIRITUAL THINGS TO CONTROL A PERSON.

What makes a programmed multiple tick?

This chapter will provide some of the most important answers to that question. In this chapter, you will be provided with important brand-new information.

CONTENTS

PART A. Intro on the importance of spiritual programming tactics.
PART B. The history of Programmed Golem
PART C. The 3 foundations: Loss of identity, Fear, and Demons
PART D. A complete Chronology of how the victim experiences the early spiritual programming. Steps a through o. (by Cisco)
PART E. Specific spiritual programming maneuvers

PART A. INTRO on the IMPORTANCE of SPIRITUAL PROGRAMMING TACTICS

It is important for therapists and ministers to understand the spiritual ramifications of what has been done. The witchcraft, spells, and demonology is a way of life for the deeper alters. The programming and the hypnotic trances are deeply embedded into the ritual life of the deeper alters of a mind-controlled slave.

An enormous amount of suffering has transpired because therapists have dealt with obvious spiritual problems with psychological techniques that aren't even remotely related to the real problem. Secular therapists can be quick to offer glib criticism of the subject of demonology, a subject they often know nothing about. (While Christians generally acknowledge that mankind is in a spiritual war (cf. 2 COR 10:3-5), they too are generally ignorant of Satan's devices, and are not skilled in dealing with spiritual attacks from the world, flesh and the demons.)

An analogy for demonology is microbiology. Many people never see a virus, and many people never see demons. Some people still debate whether the germ theory of disease is correct. There will certainly be differences of opinion about demonology--anything said about it is bound to find someone who disagrees. But just like it has been useful for many sick people's health to deal with viruses, victims of Illuminati mind-control have found it helpful to deal with demons. Demonology can be a useful subject for understanding programming from both a programmer's point of view and a deprogrammer's point of view. If this information is useful, then it will have served a purpose.

Men of God, who have found themselves in remote places (where trauma-based mind-control is not practiced), have found themselves confronted by obvious cases of demon possession that have been successfully handled by deliverance prayer. This author has personally witnessed many people who have had wonderful healings due to deliverances. I rejoice in their freedom. I pray that others who portray themselves as therapists would come to the same place that they could appreciate healings even though they do not recognize the spiritual dimension of human life, or even better yet, that they would recognize the spiritual side of humankind.

In Asia, it was common for this author to see flies swarm over people and food. Demons swarm around people in that type of abundance. This is why the title Lord of the Flies (Beelzebub) is the name of a chief demon, and is sometimes used as another name for Satan himself.

B. The History of the Programmed Golem

KABBALISTIC BLACK MAGIC

A number of the Illuminati bloodlines (and sects) that are involved in trauma-based total mind-control are Askenazi hasidic bloodlines. Legends abound from the 15th century onward about how the Askenazi hasidic leaders created golem to serve them. These golem have been called "benevolent robots".

For those readers who are unaware of where the word golem came from, it is used once in the Word of God in PS 139:16, "Your eyes [God's eyes] saw my substance, being yet unformed. And in Your book they were written, the days fashioned for me." This is believed by the Kabballists to refer to Adam when he was only a body without a soul. Golem are believed to be soulless bodies. One can almost hear the rationalization in medieval times when torture, and black magic or a trance state ended up creating an alter personality that this magical part was viewed as soulless, because it was only created via magic. This personality (alter) didn't exist like real people, it was merely a golem in the magicians' eyes--therefore it could be abused or used as a robot, because it was soulless.

The use of Cabalistic black magic in mainline Illuminati programming in the deeper aspects has led this author to believe that during the torture of jews in the concentration camps--Dr. Mengele was assisted by some Askenazi hasidic black magic adepts who gave him some of the secret names of God. The Cabalistic magic viewpoint is that there are creative powers intrinsic in God's names. God's names are used by the Illuminati for such alters as the gems (jewels) from which other alters are created. For instance the gems will be tortured while Cabalistic black magic is employed to create more parts.

In such deeper aspects of programming, what occurs? Have the Illuminati programmers created new parts via psychologic torture techniques, have they created them with black magic or both? One thing is sure, if the "golem's mind"--that is that if parts of the victim subjected to trauma-based mind-control remember what occurred, then it will be associated with a Cabalistic black magic ritual.

There are several other features of Cabalistic black magic that are important features of Illuminati programming. Many things pertaining to the mind-control have slipped out into public view at one time or another but are not recognized as having anything to do with programming. The European Jew Joseph Achron wrote the musical *Golem Suite* (1932) for an orchestra. The first piece of music introduces the golem and the last piece of music is the exact reverse mirror image of the first piece and it represents the disintegration of the golem. In programming, the deeper alters may have a musical cord to call them up, and the reverse of that cord will "disintegrate" them back into the mind.

The following excerpts are taken from Gershom Scholem's book *Kabbalah*. (NY: Keter Pub. House Jerusalem, 1974.)

"General summaries of Kabbalistic doctrine rarely referred to its 'practical' side [which Scholem go on to explain is black magic dealing with demons and blood]..." Of course not, the practical side of the Kabbala is occult--secret knowledge. It is the secrets of black magic.

"Various ideas and practices connected with the concept of the golem [mind-controlled slave] also took their place in practical Kabbalah through a combination of features drawn from the Sefer Yezirah and a number of magical traditions." (*Kabbala*, p. 183)

The practical side of the Kabbala which was concerned with creating golem employed trances, magic and visualization. Scholem writes, "In this circle the Sefer Yezirah was nearly always interpreted in the manner of Saadiah and Shabbetai Donnolo [who was into what is known as Satanism], with an added tendency to see the book as a guide for both mystics and adepts of magic. The study of the book was considered successful when the mystic attained the vision of the golem, which was connected with a specific ritual of a remarkable ecstatic [altered state] character." (ibid., p.40)

Two other points should be made showing the connection between medieval ashkenzim black magic practices and the programming going on today. The medieval jewish magicians would use the secret Kabbalistic names of God in accordance with detailed sets of instructions to try and create a golem. The golem in turn would say the combination of hebrew letters in reverse order. This has been done in modern programming.

Further, the "Seal of the Holy One" in medieval times was written on the forehead of the golem. This is the word "emet". At some point the word's first letter (an aleph) is erased and this leaves the word "met" which in Hebrew means "dead". Such types of sealings have also been done in modern times with deeper parts of slaves.

PART C. The 3 foundations: Loss of identity, Fear, and Demons

The programming has three basic foundations, fear, rejection of God (which entails the rejection of who they are), and the entrapment by demonic possession. If the person is paralyzed in fear, unable to seek God's help, unable to know who they are in Christ & to see God's plan for their life, and lives in bondage to demons, then the Illuminati programming will hold.

The Word of God states that each person is intricately designed by God and developed according to His plan (PS 139:14-16). A person's self-image of who they are profoundly affects everything else about them.

The Illuminati want to insure that the potential for good that the person is born with is destroyed or controlled. They want the victim to feel rejected and cheated by God. This is what Colossians 2:8 warns about, & then the next Bible verse states, "...for in Him dwelleth all the fullness of the Godhead bodily. And you are **complete** in Him..." If the slave could ever be complete through their devotion to God, they would have no use for their Illuminati masters.

The Scriptures in several Psalms teach that God made us in accordance with His plans for our lives. Even today He is not finished with us. "We are (present continuous action verb) His workmanship..." EPH 2:10

A 124 pg. secret CIA book *Manual on Human Resources*, 1983, (recently declassified via the Freedom of Information Act) states, "When a threat is used, it should always be implied that the subject himself is to blame by using words such as, "You leave me no other choice but to..." He should never be told to comply "or else!"... The threat of coercion usually weakens or destroys resistance more effectively than coercion itself. For example, the threat to inflict pain can trigger fears more damaging than the immediate sensation of pain."

UNDERSTANDING THE RELATIONSHIP BETWEEN FEAR & DEMONS

Dr. W. Grey Walter, of the British Burden Neurological Institute at Bristol, England did a lot of research involving drugs, electroshock and demonology. Walter would drill from 50 to 100 holes in his patients heads and then insert electrodes into their heads. The patients would walk around with a beret-like covering over their electrode implanted heads. The suborbital area of the brain was determined by Walter as being the seat of demonic fears. Walter would cause a small lesion in the paracingulate region to calm patients who saw demons. This in effect is like a miniature lobotomy. The electricity causes a selective lesion. What his work showed was that **there is a connection between the area of the brain that creates fear, and images of demons** that people see.

The Word of God in 2 TIM 1:7 states categorically that "God hath not given us the spirit of fear; but of power, and of love, and of a sound mind." This means that the Spirit of fear comes from the Satan and his world system. The Spirit of fear is demonic, and it has the power to paralyze its victim. This Spirit of Fear is nothing less than a demonic anointing. That demonic anointing drives away positive angelic spirits. Christ asked, "Why are ye so fearful? How is it that ye have no faith?" The demonic anointing of fear meant that faith was lacking. If we listen to the Word of God, we get faith. (ROM 10:17). This is why it is important to the programmers that their deeper alters are programmed not to be able to read or hear the Word of God (Holy Bible). If the victim could hear the Word of God, they would receive faith, which would tamper with the demonic anointing of fear.

On a spiritual level, our fears are open doors for Satan to carry out an act. It is a vicious bondage loop, because then the victim says, "I knew it was going to happen, I knew from the beginning." Little does the victim realize that the Spirit of Fear within them, opened the door for Satan to carry out his will in that area. In fact, it is standard procedure within the secret societies and intelligence agencies to identify what fears their opposition have, and then build upon those fears. It does no good to spread disinformation about things that the enemy is not fearful of. But if a fear is identified, they will play upon that as much as possible. In Howard, Michael, *Strategic Deception in the Second World War. Vol. 5 of British Intelligence in the Second World War.* W.W. Norton & Co.: NY, 1995, p.33-34, "One of the first rules of deception is to play on the real fears,..." On page 41-42 Howard quotes a British intelligence directive, "It may be taken as a principle of strategic deception that it is neither economical in time nor productive in results to attempt to produce in the enemy anxiety over an area concerned with which the enemy himself has had no previous fear...Knowledge of the trend of enemy anxiety was therefore of very great value...On the foundation of fear, and having regard both to inherent plausibility and to contact identifications which the enemy was likely to have made, it was possible to build up a fictitious and misleading structure and to represent Allied capabilities and intentions as very different from what they really were."

In this author's previous writings, the connection between demonology and military tactics in general and specifically British intelligence have been closely documented. Military structures are based upon demon structures. It is no surprise then, that demons and intelligence groups study to determine what a person's fears are. And it is no wonder that they attempt to instill as many fears as possible into the victim.

DEMON POSSESSION & SPIRIT GUARDS

Christians are called upon to guard what was spiritually entrusted to them by the using the Holy Spirit (2 TIM 1:14). The Illuminati do a mirror image of this, by layering in spirits (evil ones) to guard things in the system. For instance, in the *Vol. 2* book, the programming parallels to the movie Labyrinth were discussed in chapter 5. It was mentioned how the dogs portrayed guardians. Demons named Toto are layered in to protect the spinner kittens. If one were to try to activate the spinner kittens without going through the proper chain of command & codes, the guardian demons known as Totos, or after Dorothy's Toto will be activated. The spinner's in fact are often called "Dorothys".

Some other examples of guardians spirits that are placed into a system are Bes, the spirit that rules the dwarfs; Geb, the voice behind the earth God in a system; Pan, who has various roles, including being a protector of the green wood; and Shu, which is the voice "behind the wind" which controls the internal weather within a alter system's world.

The foundations of a system are the demons layered in at the beginning. Spirits of Confusion, Despair, Torment are called down by the programmers and laid in. Lying and Perverse Spirits are brought in too. At first this may seem like very subjective sci-fi to the reader. Hopefully, after the programming rituals are described in detail, and a basic foundation concerning what demons are is laid, the reader will have received a more systematic understanding of the topic. The goal is teach the reader programming as a programmer would understand it.

The victim should not be made ashamed of demonic attachments. That serves no spiritual benefit for the victim, and only contributes more guilt and shame, and adds to the problem of giving them hope. The victim has been a helpless victim. "Mystery" demons (which is not their actual name) are placed into the child when they are innocent babies. Part of the power of the mystery demons, is that they are able to remain anonymous within their host's body. They remain in the host secretly generally for the person's lifetime. These mystery demons have to answer to their chain of command. Within a victim's alter parts, are demons which have their own ranks and commanders. Christians who carry out deliverances will deal those commanders.

The Catholic Church, which has been so active in trauma-based mind-control and in placing in the Spirits of Legion into a victim, had one of their clergy write, "Evil is Someone, Someone who is multiple and who name is legion..." (Mauriac, Francois. *Life of St. Margaret of Cortona.*) The Catholic Church's official public stance is that Demon possession is rare. On Aug. 15, 1972, Pope Paul VI put out a motu proprio which abolished the order of exorcist. This office had already become rather rare, and besides included men who were mind-control programmers. Cases of "demonic possession" of catholics are occasionally taken to places like Georgetown Hospital in Wash. D.C. which is run by Jesuits working in tandem with the CIA. Accounts of exorcisms of Catholics are filled with clues that the victims of "demonic possession" are victims also of trauma-based occult-based mind-control.

This writer, trying to explain a difficult subject (demonology), feels fortunate to be able to recommend a book which does a good job of explaining it, this is Howard O. Pittman's book *Demons.* (Foxworth, MS: Philadelphian Pub. House, c. 1988). I originally read the book in 1992, and have had it recommended by those who work in the area of demonology. The book is written by a devout Christian who worked 28 years in the field of law enforcement during his life.

The book explains such things as: how man is made in the image of God (and as such is a 'clone' so to speak of God;) How demon possession has come about due to man's sovereign will allowing it; & How demons can interact with the physical world.

He explains how Satan despatches orders from his throne which go through a chain of command, and how special emphasis is placed on Christians. He explains the forms of demons, their expertise, how they can read minds, and how they have no love for their master, and no love for themselves. Nor does their master have any love for them. (I, Fritz Springmeier, your author have discovered in talking to people for years, that it is essential for people to grasp that the mind of Satan is devoid of love, and that where love doesn't seek its own, Satan's mind always has his own interest in both mind & action. Everything in his world system is functioning for a goal of his, they are not random events, because he is a control-freak.)

Pittman describes warring demons--which look like giant humans and are the 'cream of Satan's crop.' These warring demons are assigned to formulate wars upon the earth. While Pittman is a spirit-led Christian, it is interesting that a non-Christian historian/author William Bramley, (of the *Gods of Eden*), who believes that the "aliens" were viewed as angels, has found traces of proof that the aliens (angels) were involved in the creation of wars down through the history of mankind.

"Now the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits and doctrines of devils; Speaking lies in hypocrisy; having their conscience seared with a hot iron;" 1 TIM 4:1-2.

Pittman writes about 1 TIM 4: 1-2, "In this passage of scripture, we are told that in the last days the devils would have their own doctrine. We know that if the Bible tells us that devils would have their own doctrines, then, most assuredly the Bible would tell us what these doctrines would be. Evidence of what the devils will be teaching is found in the following passage of scripture: 'But he knowing their thoughts, said unto them, Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation; and a house divided against a house falleth. If Satan also be divided against himself, how shall his kingdom stand? Because ye say that I cast out devils through Beelzebub.' (Luke 11:17-18) From this very scripture, it is clear what the devils will be teaching as doctrine. They will be teaching that THERE ARE NO SUCH BEINGS AS DEMONS! Where are these demons teaching their doctrine? They are teaching it in the churches to the Christians! They are teaching their doctrine to the very ones who have the potential to believe that these demons are real and can expose these beings. If Satan did try to reveal himself and his helpers, then his house would be divided."

Pittman warns, "From congregation to congregation, from one church to another church throughout all this land, we find preacher after preacher playing down the existence of demons and even the existence of Satan! Then, there are others who, when they admit that Satan and his demons are real, de-emphasize their importance and capability. Not only are local ministers doing this, but many Christian authors are doing this through their books...The false doctrines of devils are intended to enhance the anonymity of Satan and his angels. Much of this misteaching is spread through good Christians who have been sold a lie and really believe what they say."

The Word of God is clear that not one sin entered into this world without Satan. Every sin committed by mankind is (according to the Word of God) the result and influence of Satan. However, because Satan and his demons are masters at deception and at staying behind the scenes, and remaining anonymous they are not discovered. They are better at such deception than the intelligence agencies that are Illuminati fronts, and to give credit where due, the NSA, CIA, and MI-6 are good at what they do.

The programmer will be looking for methods to open up a person to demons, and he will be setting up scenarios so that the victim will reject the Spirit of God in their life. 1 JN 5:18 teaches that a person's identity in Christ protects against the wicked one, so the victim's identity in Christ will be stolen very soon by the programmers.

According to the Word of God, submission and humility before God are also said to be protections against evil spirits.(cf. JS 4:7, & 1 PTR 5:6,8,9). Resistance to catching demons, involves a person "not giving place" to the demons, (Eph. 4:27) and to be strengthened by Christ (Phil. 4:13). How does this happen? The Word of God teaches us that the Spirit of God in our life repels demons naturally. A close walk of fellowship with the Spirit of God is one spiritually natural immune-builder. We need to get Christ deeper and deeper into our lives. However, the programmer will deflect this, and say that submission and humility before God means to submit to some church authority, and of course this church authority will be part of the mind-control abuse system.

The Use of Giving Demonic Assistance to entrap.

One of the principles (giving tactics) of the spirit world is that if you go to get help from demons, they have a spiritual opportunity to enter into your life in other ways. This involves spiritual laws. People, who have been healed by occult healers, have discovered that it set them up for demonic activity in their life. Of course, it is easy to write this, but often only the victims of occult help, who have already learned the lesson the hard way, believe it.

The ultimate that Lucifer can pretend to give is divinity. Divinity is sometimes symbolized by the Illuminati as an 8 on its side or the infinity symbol. The divine within a hierarchy member is called the High Self. It also goes by the name Dian Y Glas or Blue God in the hierarchy's parlance. The given names of Joan, Janicot, Jean, and Jonet are popular in generational witchcraft families because they mean the High Self. The cabalistic name for the High Self (internal divinity) is NESHAMAH. According to Illuminati hierarchy beliefs, the High Self can only be communicated to via symbols, music and myth that go through the unconscious mind. In other words, don't talk to it, show it. This is part of the reason Illuminati witch covens make noise in ceremonies, dance and use objects, they believe these are essential to communicate to their High Self.

The Use of Occult Focal Pts.

Another principle (giving tactic) of the spirit world is that focal points (occult objects) are used to bring demonic entities into a person's life. I can not write a technical manual on the mechanics of how or why the presence of evil spirits is aided by amulets, rings, occult jewelry, rock & roll albums, etc., but the fact is, that demonic entities ARE AIDED. It is common for mind-controlled Illuminati slaves to keep demonized nick-nacks given by their programmers, handlers or other contact people. Generally, the mind-controlled slave's front system is unaware of the spiritual ramifications of the occult objects.

The ancient grimoires are used in rituals & programming. Even if it is seldom that therapists work that deep in a system, it still might be useful to provide a list (for reference sake) of the ancient grimoires which are used to invoke demons:

Almadel, the
Arbatel of Magic, the
Black Pullet, the
Book of Albertus Magnus, the
Enchiridion of Pope Leo
Fourth Book of Cornelius Agrippa
Grand Grimoire, the
Grimoire of Pope Honorius
Grimorium Verum, the
Heptameron, the
Lesser Key of Solomon (aka Goetia)
Key of Solomon (aka Legemeton)
Pauline Art, the
Sword of Moses, the
Theosophia Pneumatica

The Use of giving occult power for SOMETHING IN RETURN

One of the tactics of controlling a person is to give them occult power. Generally, people who have psychic abilities and other occult powers, are reluctant to seek a true Christian faith. Because they enjoy the power they have, they will not trade leaving the occult world and their power behind for freedom.

In the case of many mind-controlled slaves, the programmer will create a legitimate spirit-filled Christian front. He knows that the spiritual principle, "A double-minded man is unstable in all his ways" will work in his favor. Even though he creates a religious front that is opposed to what the programmer wants, a thousand-minded person has no choice but to rely on the programmer. The programmer is the only one who can bring order out of chaos. The victim is so unstable with all his or her programmed and hurting parts, that these parts need their programmer to function.

Evil spirits are like unwelcome visitors to our home. They can even be compared to an unwelcome mouse running and hiding in our house. That a visitor or mouse troubles us does not mean that he possesses us. Christians have problems with unwelcome mice as well as unwelcome demons. Mice corrupt our homes, likewise demons come to corrupt the House of

God. The programmer knows what encourages demonic activity. This is why certain occultic structures are built into the mind, and why the systems are set up to carry out occult rituals regularly. Some victims of mind-control are unfortunately going to witches for their therapy. A therapist who is a pagan witch, and who encourages further occult activity, is preventing the victim from gaining freedom. This is because there is a spiritual foundation to much of the control. (Readers would be surprised at how many psychologists are part of the occult world.)

How much of our life has been turned over to Christ? Many Christians have what could be termed "hidden rooms" and hidden compartments in their life & their thinking which they have not given to Christ. In fact, many Christians compartmentalize their life into their secular job and their Sunday of Christianity. In this sense, their lives are like a house with many rooms, many of which are not given to Christ, but are available for other spirits. Even the non-multiple Christian will have problems with compartmentalization in life opening a door to demons.

But Christ asked his disciples to go farther than just stay in fellowship, he commanded them to heal and cast out demons. MT 10:7,8. He also commanded his disciples to evangelize. The strongest deliverance have been seen on the cutting edge of evangelism, as a testimony to God's power.

DOES IT GLORIFY DEMONS TO CAST THEM OUT?

The threat of deliverance has the Satanic leaders of the Illuminati scared enough that they have actively disseminated a doctrine among the Christian churches that it gives power to Satan to believe in demons. There is a kernel of truth here, but it doesn't give glory to Satan to defeat demons and to expel them. If you were fired from your job, would that glorify you? No. **Defeating demons is actually showing how weak they are, not glorifying them. Healing and deliverance are part of the ministry of freedom that Christ demonstrated to his disciples, and they are to accompany the preaching of freedom (evangelism).**

PART D. A complete Chronology of how the victim experiences the early spiritual programming. (by Cisco)

Steps of Programming:
a. The mother-fetus trauma
b. The Apple-Woodsman ritual
c. The 1st Ritual Theft of Birthright
d. The 2nd Ritual Theft of Birthright
e. The Satanic Wedding Prog. Ritual
f. The Lockup of the Guardian Angel
g. The Revelation of Demons
h. Providing Satanic Toys
i. The Participation Ritual
j. The layering in of witches/monsters
k. The prog. base-Fairy Tales told
l. The Ritual to Test Loyalty to Oaths
m. Prog. building blocks- Nursery Rhymes
n. The Hell Fire Ceremony
o. The Cutting the Penis Ritual
p. The Traitors Death Ritual

It is important to understand the nature and the sequence of these standard programming rituals. I, Cisco, have decided to reveal them so that the therapists will comprehend better what the programming is really all about.

We have touched on a few of these rituals in our two previous books, but we haven't spelled them out. These programming rituals in real life are extremely traumatizing, even to the hardened cult parents who often must offer their children up to abuse that even they don't want to happen to their children. When these programming rituals happen to a child, they are so severe that they split the child's mind. We don't want therapists and readers falling apart by reading about these programming rituals, so you will find the descriptions of these rituals are clinical, and are written without a great deal of emotional content.

a. The mother-fetus trauma

We have written about the traumas given to the mother and fetus in chapter 1 of this book and chapter 1 of the *Vol. 2* book. Between these two books, there are approximately 9 pages concerning the traumas at this pre-birth stage.

It could also be explained that the intensity and nature of the pre-birth traumas relate to whether the mother is Illuminati or not. During the 1940's-'50s the Illuminati made it a high priority to marry members of the Illuminati to Christians for the purposes of infiltrating the churches. After a 20 year period of intense infiltration to such groups as the Southern Baptists, the Mennonites, the Pentecostal Holiness, the Four-Square, and the Assemblies of God, then they could rely upon their members within those groups to generationally continue their presence within these groups. Initially, they wanted the infiltration to be covered by marriage into these denominations.

If a mother were not of the Illuminati, she was typically prepared for an overwhelming trauma to be administered during her pregnancy. If she drank coffee or tea, she could be given potent herbs daily to set the stage for later drugs administered during the torture.

The herbs set the stage for drugs which would make the mind more pliable to hypnosis, because many Christians are resistent to hypnosis. When the Illuminati would finally by force grab and traumatize the mother, their goal would be to see if they could get the mother to renounce (blaspheme) Christ. They hoped to use this to blackmail the person into future submission and shame. They also were gaining experience into what kind of resistance they would face in the final takeover.

An hypnotic trigger would be attached to this torture memory, and then the mother would be hypnotically made to forget the trauma.

B. The Apple-Woodsman ritual

The powerful Tin Man Ritual is described on page 103 of the *Vol. 2 Formula* book. It is where the parent(s) presents the child to Lucifer, "the god of light". The Tin Man appeared in the first picture (page 4) of our *Illustrated Guide to Monarch Programming*. It was positioned there because it is often the first ritual memory. The child eats an apple that is poisoned and dies, and then is brought back to life because the coven has the antidote on hand. Next, the parent dedicates the child to Lucifer; if not, then the child will have its head severed by the Tin Man's ax. This dedication mocks the Pentecostal dedication.

Bear in mind, that some parents and programmers can only justify what they do, because they feel they are following "Lucifer's orders." They will say, "We do it to please Lucifer." They feel Lucifer wants the child in its purest state, so they will do the moon child ceremony in the womb to allow Lucifer to plant his spirits in the fetus (which is a mockery of God's spirit in the Christ-Child.)

b. The 1st Ritual Theft of Birthright

When the child victim is four, this ritual typically is done to them during the 10 days to 2 weeks of rituals done around Easter. The ritual is not always done at this time. If both parents are Illuminati, then their primary job is to see their children get programmed; but if only one parent is Illuminati, then the group may have to work with the child whenever they can manipulate some time to do so. Also the Illuminati have so many children to put through programming, that many simply do not start this ritual at Easter. But if they are not done at Easter, they may be told when it is done that it is the time around Easter. The programmers have certain windows of time for certain programs and schedules to follow for each child. They can be untrue to the real calendar date, and still set the internal clock/calendars of the slave correctly later.

This first ritual is to make sure the child victim experiences a staged rejection of God where they are found unworthy to be in "His" Book of Life. This ritual like all the others that we will describe in this series are sealed with rape and the implantation of demons.

c. The 2nd Ritual Theft of Birthright

This second ritual is done shortly after the first ritual, generally a few days after. It consists of a death, burial and resurrection ritual. To die means death towards God, burial means to bury all that makes up a person's worth, and resurrection means to be resurrected with a new name and birthed to Satan. This and the 1st theft ritual are designed to remove any bonds the deeper alters might ever conceive of having with Almighty God.

d. The Satanic Wedding Prog. Ritual

Within days of the 2nd theft ritual, the Illuminati will follow with a mock satanic wedding. Usually the father will marry his daughter, but there is a chain of responsibility and if the father can't sexually abuse his child, then the grandfather is next in line, and then the uncle, and then the programmer. They will serve as the satanic covering for the child. At this point the rejection by God is still fresh on the child's mind, and they want the child to at least remember the rejection, whether they remember the incident or not depends. The child may already have dissociated the previous week or two, so the programmer may simply tell it "REMEMBER THE FEAR WHEN GOD DIDN'T LOVE YOU."

The child may really be looking forward to this wedding. They may have been dressed up nicely, and may be excited about marrying their father, even though he looks like a giant to the little infant. When their dress is pulled up and they are abused, then the fun stops.

e. The Lockup of the Guardian Angel. The Internal Self Helper, also called the Guardian Angel of the mind, is magically locked up by the demonic power of the programmers, and a shrewd lying demon substituted in its place. The evil spirits that will be laid in will be the totems of the victim's bloodline--the spirits of the person's bloodlines who are to help guide the person. Many people in the New Age movement who are under total mind-control speak about their guardian angel or their totem guiding them. An example of a total mind-controlled slave doing this are the indian spirit guides that help Loretta Lynn. Hillary Clinton consults the spirit Eleanor Roosevelt.

In order to familiarize the child with the proper demons they will be dressed up in a costume that resembles the bloodline spirit they are to become acquainted with. They will participate in a ritual in this costume.

f. The Revelation of Demons. At this point, both the front (the light side) and the deeper occult dark side alters will be allowed to see the demons that are layered in. The front side sees them in their Luciferian form, and are scared out of their wits. They may respond to this by having an ongoing fear of monsters under their bed. The front's fear will keep the front away from trying to go deeper into the system. Later on in adult life, the Illuminati may want the front part of the system to go through a "deliverance", so they will think they have dealt with everything, and they don't need to look further. (For instance, this trick was done to a programmed multiple this author has worked with, the result being, the victim gave up any type of therapy or helpful work, because they were sure they'd received the answer to their problems, which would be nice if it were true, but isn't.)

On the flip side, even though the dark side alters are also scared of the demons, who are quite terrorizing when seen by humans, the inherent need of humans to look for supernatural help pulls them toward the demonic. It is an inborn survival trait in most humans to look to supernatural help. By seeing the spiritual (even though these are dark spiritual forces), it becomes a normal function for the deeper alters to commune with the dark spiritual realm.

g. Providing Satanic Toys

The deeper alters will be given candles, knives and other ritual paraphernalia to play with. The establishment department stores with all their demonic toys are helpful, for the parent only needs to go to the local department store to buy his children occult toys.

h. The Participation Ritual

Soon after the wedding ceremony, another ceremony takes place where the child dresses up in the cult's red and black ceremonial robes. This is meant to integrate them into the cult family. It is an opportunity for the child to feel like it is part of the group and its rituals.

i. The layering in of witches/monster scripts

The normal American fairy tales, which are filled with stories of monsters and witches, are read to the child. The goblins, warlocks, vampires, and witches they hear about will help lay a mental foundation for what will happen later.

j. Cult Fairy Tales are told.

Next, the people in the child's life who are guiding the programming will tell the child programming stories, such as the Wizard of Oz stories and Alice In Wonderland. In the 50's and 60's, the *Tall Book of Make Believe* was popular. For instance the character Mr. Moon became a foundational part of the programming. Over the years the Wizard of Oz, Alice In Wonderland, and Mother Goose seem to have been overall favorites. The child will most often be in a trance state when these story lines are told. The children will have the stories repeated and they are expected to memorize these scripts. Because the programmers will build upon the child's awareness of these stories, the stories are modified to better fit the future programming.

For instance, if a programming team is going to use the Goldilocks and the 3 Bears story, they might modify the story like this: The 3 bears and Goldilocks went for a walk. Goldilocks was somewhere she shouldn't have been, so she was eaten up by the bears. Bears will eat you up. Policemen are like bears. A Policeman found her? Do you know what happened to her? Goldilocks got locked up and put in a cage.

Or maybe they might say, Goldilocks was sitting where she wasn't supposed to.-- At that moment the chair is pulled out from underneath the child and the child is probed with a stun gun.

In the last 20 years, tens of thousands of children are getting "Pleiadian" programming, and it is not known what base fairy-tales are being used for this type of programming, or if they are using sci-fi stories as the base. There are tens of thousands of children with programming that can be activated to make them think they were raised on Alcyone in the Pleiades. This is to part of the Grand Deception of the End Times.

k. The Ritual to Test Loyalty to Oaths

The next step is to test the loyalty of the child slave to the oaths that were extracted from it. To prove the child's loyalty, the coven demands that the child sacrifice another child. From what we witnessed, even after all the abuse and hypnotic tampering of the child up to this point, not one single child was "loyal" to the oath. The inborn aversion to taking a human's life is strong, and the child will still refuse to do it. Therefore, the cult will have a member guide the child by taking the child's hand and forcing it to sacrifice the innocent little life before them. In spite of their reluctance, the forced act begins to rip the fabric of the child slave's mind and to sear its conscience. The cult will be sure to insure that the child is made to feel responsible, and that they are given guilt and shame for the deed.

Once the innocent victim is sacrificed, the child slave is required to cut the bloody heart out and eat it. The child has already been groomed for this, because the cult has been feeding blood in their milk as a pablum. The child has been allowed to get very hungry and then given blood so that in the end hunger is associated with death, and blood is associated with satisfying that hunger.

l. Prog. building blocks- Nursery Rhymes

The Nursery rhymes are now layered in. There is something mentally powerful about rhymes. Mother Goose nursery rhymes have been popular for over a half century for programming little children. The child's mind will refuse some things (such as it distaste for killing an innocent child in the previous ritual), but the child's mind doesn't realize anything devious about the adorable nursery rhymes. The child's mind will not put up any barriers to learning them. The child has no idea that by hearing these rhymes they are helping lay the foundation for their own mind-control.

m. The Hell Fire Ceremony.

This ceremony is basically the burning up of a child to instill in the child victim fear of disobedience and to show them what hell is all about. The reason this is done will be explained soon.

This ceremony is done with one of four possibilities, a. a real baby, b. a dead miscarriage, c. a stage pretend child, d. movies. For sure, the Illuminati will have a real bonfire, and there will be the stench of death. They will play tapes of screaming, terrified children to amplify how bad it will be in hell.

Why do the Illuminati want the children to fear hell? First, if they ever do learn about the Bible, they will "know for sure" that this is the punishment that the God who rejected them wants for them. Next, the Illuminati tell the children that IF they are bad, they will suffer in hell, but if they are good in the cult, Satan their father will protect them and let them rule with him in hell.

They want the child to be terrified of Hellfire and Brimstone. This ceremony is often done where there is a crematorium. The Presideo in CA was popular because a underground crematorium was there.

Bear in mind, that the child by this time has lost its true self, and is simply in terror at watching a child like themselves turned to ashes. In certain types of hot fires, the child is turned to ashes so quick that the child's figure becomes a silhouette of ashes. The Illuminati will then begin teaching the child an important item, they will teach it to take on the spirit of the child through guilt manipulation. They'll say, "Don't you feel really bad that this happened to her, but you can fix it by internalizing her to yourself. Take the spirit of the child into you."

n. The Cutting the Penis Ritual. This ritual is just as it sounds. The child is forced to emasculate another male. This ritual is intended to be severe. It again forces the child to choose between following their oaths or following what their heart tells them is a right.

Because they will again refuse to carry out their oath of obedience, and will again be helped to obey, they will be an easy preplanned target of lots of shaming and guilt. This is one of the primary foundations for the shame and guilt that is built into the dark side alters. The child will be hit with sticks by the cult, while the Illuminati coven snarl, "Shame on you, you didn't obey as you promised."

It is at this ritual, that the Illuminati coven will first begin to double-bind the victim by threatening them, "It's you or them [the person the child slave is to hurt], you choose." The little child sees two kinds of people in life, victimizers and victims. He or she will generally choose to be a victimizer. There will other times when the slave will not be given a choice and will have to suffer pain during the rituals.

o. The Traitor's Death Ritual. The child victim will be left relatively drug free so they can have full awareness of the Traitor's Death which they witness. A person will receive the horrible traitors death during a ritual. The strong satanic alters will be built off the dissociated pieces caused by this ritual. And as is standard practice the ritual is sealed by a rape of the child to layer in more demons.

**This ends Cisco's very informative chronology. Let's sort out some of the specific programming maneuvers.

Part E. Specific Programming maneuvers.

The MANIPULATION OF NEAR-DEATH-EXPERIENCES (NDEs)

People, who undergo Illuminati programming, will be candidates for near-death experiences. In several of the programming scripts, the victim is brought to the point of clinical death and then revived. In hospital settings, resuscitation of heart failure and other deathly events like surgery has produced tens of thousands of cases of Near-death experiences (NDE's). According to Raymond Moody, who worked with or experienced people experiencing NDEs, the typical NDE involves the person hearing himself announced dead. Then a loud ringing or buzzing noise occurs and a long, dark tunnel appears with a light at the end. The person will meet others and a being of light, and this light-being will play back events in the person's life, and evaluate his life, and then the person reaches a point where he must go back. People, who experience a NDE are profoundly changed. Any profound change that follows patterns can be manipulated and the Illuminati have discovered this is simply just another way to manipulate people. The NDE experiences follow patterns. We will not go into the details of why most of the NDE explanations can't be the actual explanations, but the bottom like is that most explanations fall short and do not explain the phenomena. The frequency and consistency of a tunnel being seen with a light at the end rules out hallucinations in terms of symbology. The mind could just as well see a gate, or keyhole, or a door as an entrance to a new world **but doesn't**. Some researchers believe that the answer lies in the structure of the visual cortex, and that the dying person's center of the visual field receives an ever increasing electrical noise while dying which produces an ever increasing circle of light being seen. On the flip side, for those who have a biblical perspective, there are explanations that also seem to explain the phenomena. At any rate, it's been known after Heinrich Kluver published his research in the 1930's that the brain has four constants in its Near-Death hallucinations: the cobweb, the grating (or lattice), the spiral and the tunnel. Drugs have been found to produce an experience similar to NDE at times too.

Whatever spiritually and physically happens to cause a NDE--and there is lots of debate as to the mechanics of the cause--the common experiences that people have during NDE's provides a pattern for the programmers to manipulate.

Various people, the Illuminati, some Christians, and others believe that Eccl. 12:6-7, --which is talking about when a man dies ("dust return to the earth as it was") and his spirit returning to God who gave it,--these various people believe that the silver cord spoken about in verse 6 is a cord that links a person to his god. This verse makes a good verse for the Illuminati who do program in wheels and silver cords into their slaves linking them to their pretending-to-be-god masters.

FINE-TUNED

One of the side "benefits" of the brain-stem scarring, the repeated tortures, the attention that is expected if the slave is to survive, etc. is that they may develop extremely sensitive perception. This extremely sensitive perception may come across as ESP, but it is really subconscious understanding of things such as body language.

HIDING THE INTERNAL SELF-HELPER

Psychologists have discovered that deep in the mind is an area of thinking they refer to as the Internal Self-helper. Psychologists who attempt to help programmed multiples have been told to find the ISH (internal self-helper) of the victim. Sometimes the "ISH" have surfaced as "angels" and "spirit guides" in a system. They may regulate which alters come out and hold the body. The therapist may point out to a person that angels and spirit guides are never internal, unless they are demonic. The Christian is permitted scripturally to only be led by one internal spirit guide, and that's is the Holy Spirit. In some systems, the slave's "Holy Spirit" may turn out to be a cult ISH.

The programmers were many steps ahead of the psychologists. Even years before the psychologists began looking for the ISH to help them, the programmers had foreseen this and had their bases covered. In everyday life, for normal people, the internal self-helper serves as a type of guardian angel over each person. The programmers during the early LSD trips watch for the ISH. When it surfaces, they lock it up in the person's mind, and replace it with a demonic generational spirit, which is commanded to report any work done in the system to the master. When psychologists find the ISH and ask for its help, the ISH does cooperate with them, but this demonic ISH is also one of the principal reporting agents that reports back to the master in photographic detail everything that the therapist does. This is one big reason the programmers have always been several steps ahead of the therapeutic community.

INTERJECT DISKS

Splintered souls captured on Interject disks is a subject that is beyond verification but is mentioned here because therapists and "UFO abductees", and SRA victims of mind-control may run into it. Readers must draw their own conclusions as to what soul interjects are--whether merely a deception, a new technology, or magical demonic manifestation.

Hermetic magic is a nasty form of magic from ancient Egypt. There are a few of the top Illuminati Grand Masters who believe they are capable of carrying out rituals to raise the dead and create interjects onto interject disks. Specialized magic is performed on the dead to raise zombies in order to splinter the zombie's soul. The Grand Master then believes he can place the splinters of the soul on interject disks, and place these interjects into live slaves. Interestingly, humans claiming contact with "aliens" have claimed that the aliens can separate a human soul from its body, keep it captured, recondition that soul, and finally implant the soul into another body. Some researchers are claiming that they have evidence of a holographic energy template that is associated with a physical body. Is this the soul? They believe that this template works with cellular genetic mechanisms. There is certainly more to learn about what humans are, perhaps some day these claims about zombie souls will have some scientific merit, but for now they lay in the realm of Illuminati Grand Master high magic.

I have reported upon Illuminati beliefs and practices. Likewise, an anthropologist will report on the practices & customs of a people, whether or not the anthropologist personally practices or believes like the people he observes. Of course, these luciferian (or should one say satanic practices) are abhorrent and the author has never practiced them, so the author can't speak from the viewpoint of a witness, but he can describe as a reporter the views of Illuminati witnesses.

One Illuminati belief is that they have managed to design equipment that can catch the soul of a dying person. This capability will play a role in the reign of the anti-Christ. When the Anti-Christ dies, his soul will be captured and he will be resurrected with demons animating the body.

When a very high ranking Illuminati adept goes berserk, the Illuminati will insure that they preserve the soul of the man by killing him with equipment that is portrayed in the recent movie Lord of Illusion. This is a mask-brace that fits over the portals of the head and then is screwed into the head to capture the soul as it tries to escape the dying body. Then demons are called in to live off the soul matter. Normally, according to Illuminati occult knowledge, the demons can only live a short time within a body, but by the mask-brace capture of a body's soul, the demons can inhabit a body for a longer length of time and create the walking dead. This is that "line between heaven and hell" that the movie refers to. The Illuminati believe that the highest gift they can give Lucifer are captured souls. They will place souls into jars. This is the highest most secret magic of the Illuminati. Notice, that during the Lord of Illusion movie, jars are smashed during the ritual where a soul is captured. Interviews with alien abductees reveals that some of them believe that the aliens are stealing the souls of mankind. The similarity of the Illuminati beliefs about demons, and the perceived actions of the aliens by abductees are remarkably similar. Also the Illuminati have secretly used special tubing during millions of abortions performed by their abortion clinics to capture the souls of the aborted children. (This is author is not making any claims that they do or don't succeed, but they believe they are succeeding.)

The movie Lord of Illusion is full of Illuminati/high level Masonic symbology. The movie begins with programming concepts, first the galaxies & stars, then the yellow brick road, then a dust storm... An Illuminati phrase "Flesh is a trap, magic sets you free" is mentioned in the movie.

In contrast with the movie, these things are not written to entertain the reader, but with the good-natured intent that therapists and victims may gain something by knowing better what is going on to these Illuminati mind-control victims.

The Illuminati believe that they can suck the life spirit out of a person through intercourse with what they call the Eye of Horus (the anus). This is why the leaders of this World Order (such as George Bush, Bill Clinton, and tens of thousands of others) are into sodomy, they are trying to vampirize all the years of life out of the victim to gain a longer life. Some of the sad child victims, who have been kept exclusively for this purpose do look like the life force has been sucked out of them. Sodomy has its own secret chamber on the cabalistic tree of life.

A metaphysical UFO type magazine entitled *WE Walk-Ins for Evolution* puts out articles on how souls walk-into a body and how souls braid themselves to other souls. For instance, there was an article "Soul Braiding" in the April-June, '96 issue of *WE*. This appears to be a reframing of various practices that the Illuminati carry out to demonize and control the minds of their people. Rather than speak of a demonization or an interject, front alters of slaves who are not Christians can use metaphysical terms like "soul braiding".

The words soul and spirit, and concepts attached to those words are important in programming. Programmed Mormon children will think they have the "Spirit of Elijah" in them, and will robotically sing their programming, "Follow the Prophet, follow the prophet."

WHITE GOLD, other information

Since writing about powdered white gold's ability to make a person clairvoyant, in *Vol. 2*, it's come to my attention that *Nexus* magazine has had a recent article on this.

For those who are interested in crystal travel, crystal travel is an OBE also known as astral projection and is covered in the *Vol. 2* book as astral projection.

Besides the silver cord, some victims have mentioned a supernatural dark red violet umbilical that connects them to the Anti-Christ.

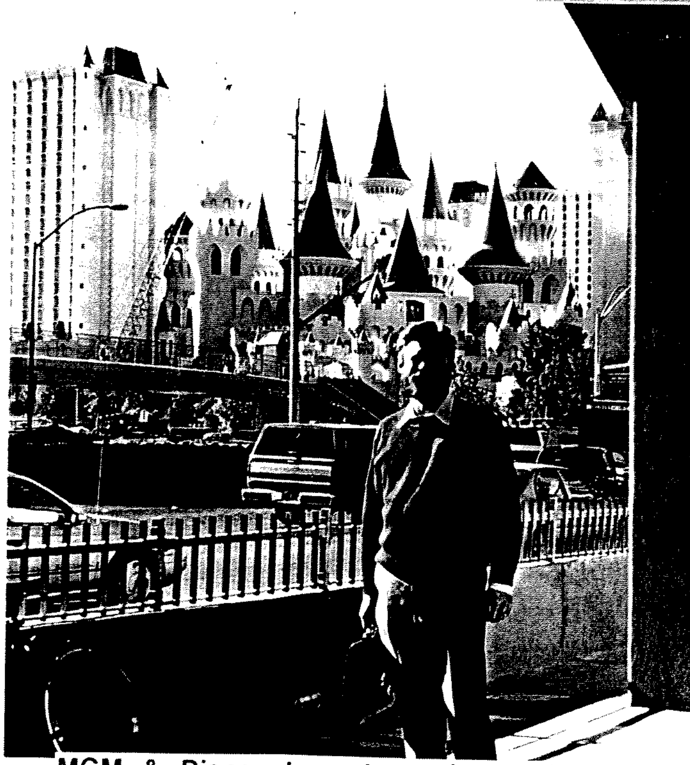

MGM & Disney have teamed up with the Network to turn Las Vegas into a mind-control programming city. People can go to Las Vegas for a "vacation" & get their programming work done. In the middle photo is author Fritz Springmeier in front of a Las Vegas' fairy tale theme casino. Inside the casino are big gems, a wizard & a crowned dragon, plus hundreds of other items with programming significance. These programming theme items are a far cry from what Las Vegas used to be before Disney & the Network began renovating the place into one big programming center.

Internal Controls

This was some early art work by Cisco to convey what her mind felt as a mind-controlled slave. What the picture shows is the hand of the puppet master controlling his puppet. The puppet is floating--not grounded in reality, but dissociated from the external world in order to survive. All the cities and internal worlds are grids. Everything attaches to grids. The color programming can be seen in the Green, Blue, Silver, Gold, Red, and Yellow colors of the grids. The puppet is totally in the hands of the puppet master and its hands are in a submissive hold, while the puppet master has his fingers covertly wrapped around the left side of the puppet's head.

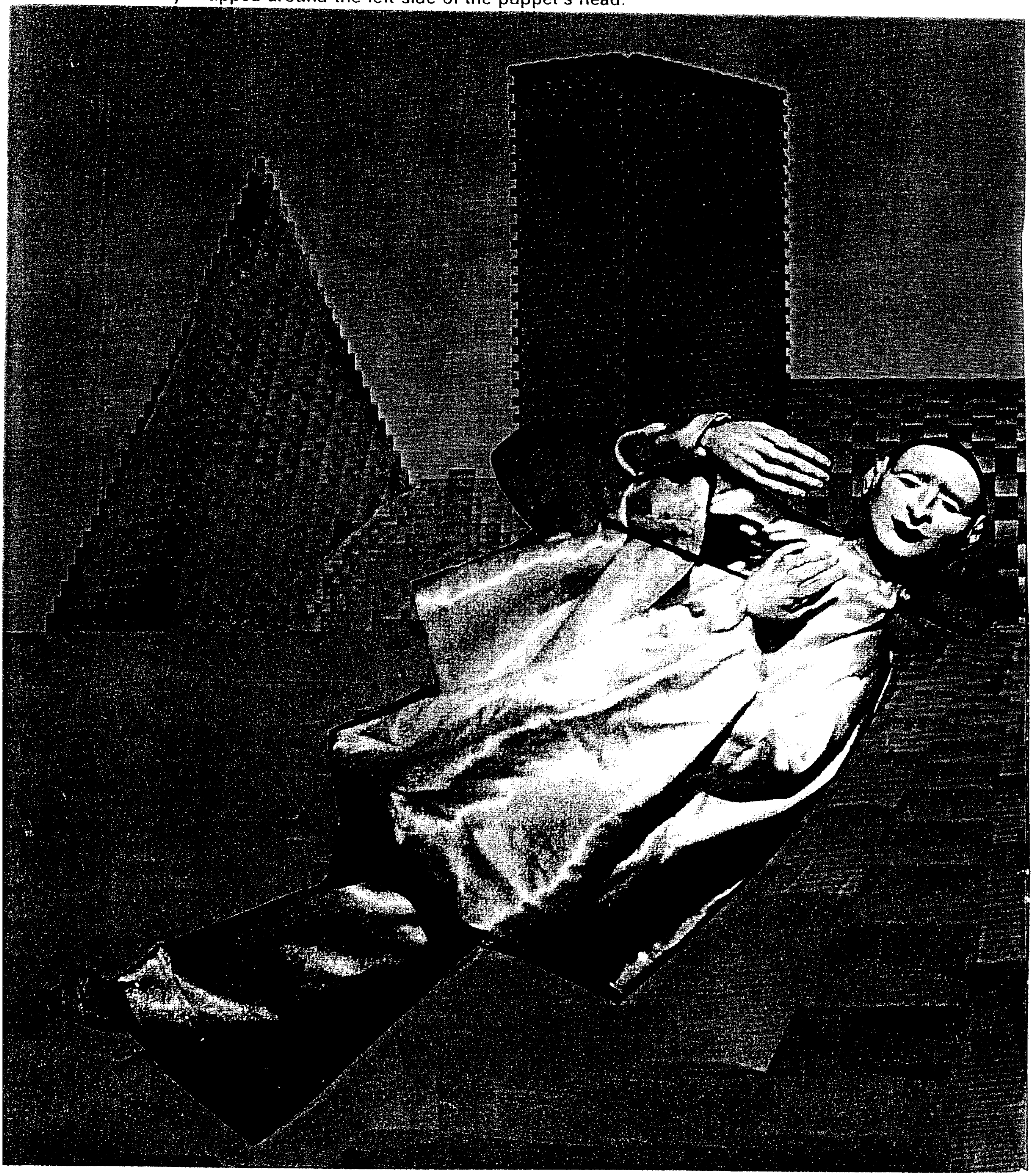

CHAPTER 11
SCIENCE No. 11- INTERNAL CONTROLS

A. TEACHING OCCULT PHILOSOPHIES

This is an important ongoing aspect of the mind-control. *Vol. 2*, introduced this subject:

"Learning plays an important part in perception. The Programmers try to get their victims to subscribe to philosophies and ideas that will make it hard for them to rebel against their controllers. This is what is termed indoctrination. The same methods of teaching that others [any other educator would] find useful are employed. Ways of thinking are incorporated by the slave via handlers, programmers, and the cult they belong to.

"Everyone tries in their own way to make sense of life. This is a natural brain function, so that the human mind can understand how to deal with the future. The mind takes raw data, and then applies some type of logic, and comes to conclusions. Once accepted these conclusions can be as hard as nails, and they will defy any attempt to change them, even in the light of new evidence. If the Programmer is smart enough, he can get an alter to logically believe anything. Once the belief is embedded, it will remain there tenaciously."

In the previously book, it was discussed how indoctrination is done. I will provide more of the details on how indoctrination is accomplished, because it is not being done via rational logical thinking. Rather, the programmer or cult leaders want to access a person's non-logical imaginative right brain. In order to do that he must distract the left brain.

Bill Clinton, an Illuminati handler of slaves, and a good liar, has his speeches prepared in such a way that they take advantage of the brain's natural functioning to manipulate it.

Bill Clinton, when he gives a speech will initiate it by pushing everybody's green buttons. He will say a number of things that everyone wants to hear and will agree with. This is called "generating a YES SET". There will be a number of these, the number of these often desired is 3. Then the second stage is to bring in TRUISMS that are facts that after the audience has already been mentally saying yes, the audience will probably accept these facts without any disagreement. Finally, after the approx. three YES SETs, the approx. three TRUISMS, Bill will plant the suggestion, such as "support me in such and such." On important points, Bill will move his left hand, to help imbed certain commands to his viewers. He will also use some subtle hand signals/codes to trigger mind-controlled slaves too. He will ask during his talks for people to imagine or visualize what he wants for them. Again this is manipulation directed at the right brain.

One of the most crucial things that protects the mind-control of the Illuminati is the frame-of-reference and world-view they build into people from the cradle to the grave. Our previous experience and the information we have available directly influences how we assign meaning to information we receive. The Illuminati's control over so much of society allows them to create people's frames-of-references. Fragments of information that people receive which do not relate to the person's frame-of-reference will be discarded. A person needs a place in his frame-of-reference to hang information on. The person may puzzle over the tidbits of incongruent fragments, but being unable to relate them to his world view, he finds himself unable to file the fragments away in a meaningful manner.

Some of the front alters of very well controlled slaves have had world views (frames-of-references) that believe, a. there is no such thing as Satanic Ritual Abuse, b. there is no such thing as a conspiracy, c. there is no such thing as absolute truth, d. there is no such thing as sin. e. There is no connection between God, living a moral life, and finding Truth. f. there is no such thing as Multiple Personality Disorder. g. My religious organization can do no wrong.

Making a fundamental change in our frame of reference is a frightening task. This is why victims of total mind-control who have been A. programmed not to believe that a New World Order conspiracy exists, and not to believe Satanism and SRA exist, and then they are B. placed in a culture that reinforces this programming, end up being extremely hard to break free of their mind-control.

Conferences where mind-control victims can begin to see the significance of all the fragments of clues that they discarded are very valuable. This author has met a number of mind-controlled victims who didn't know what their problem was, but had countless clues in their life. But these clues were useless fragments of information until they were given a framework to use them.

For instance, one victim of Illuminati total mind-control knew nothing about the significance of the Illuminati bloodlines, nor who the bloodlines were. She stated that her relatives were so and so, and it was then pointed out to her that she was from Illuminati bloodlines on both sides, and the significance of the bloodlines was gone over. Now a meaningless piece of information (her genealogy) had been given a framework of meaning. But this was just one area of many which the establishment has carefully controlled us to have misunderstandings about. Understanding her heritage, allowed her to understand why she was selected for mind-control, when it seemed to her that others might have been better candidates.

Occult philosophies by their very nature create frames of references that make it hard to see reality and to see the Truth in Jesus Christ of Nazareth. The New Age, Witchcraft, and Hindu idea that all paths lead to God, is utter nonsense. The idea that Christians are narrow minded is nonsense, but is a common idea taught by many people. It is narrow minded to insist that Christians must go to the same place Hindu's end up, if Christians seek truth. The New Agers see only one track for truth seekers, since they hold all paths lead to God. The concept is even illustrated by the wheel in India's flag. All spokes on the wheel lead to the same center point of the circle. The Biblical Christians see two tracks for truth seekers--some don't find God and Truth, but rather find an imitation of the truth and end up eternally lost, while some do find God and Truth.

Perhaps at this point the reader is getting slightly upset because he or she is thinking, "Fritz is preaching what he believes," and is also thinking "there is no absolute truth." That is exactly my point. By accepting the lie--the programming lie--the frame of reference--the paradigm that there is no absolute truth, then every time a fragment of absolute truth comes to you, you will reject it.

When I showed evidence to two followers of J.Z. Knight (J.Z. Knight was/is a mind-controlled slave, who has set up an Illuminati front religion in Washington State where converts are subjected to mind-control techniques) that children were being sacrificed by Satanic covens and that this was evidence of Satanic ritual abuse, their world view could not accept the concept of absolute wrongs and sin. They responded, "These satanists may well be killing their babies, but that is not abuse, that is only your idea. It's just your idea that it is abuse. It's not abuse to these people."

In review, one of the hardest shells protecting the programming of a total mind-controlled slave is when the front part of their system, which holds the body regularly, has been indoctrinated into a frame-of-reference that will not allow them to see the reality of what is being done to make and keep them in slavery.

A final example of this, are the zealots of the False Memory Syndrome Foundation who are mind-controlled zealots. These zealots, who are launching a counterattack against books like this, have had their world-views carefully constructed by a combination of several techniques of persuasion, a. mass indoctrination, b. subliminal messages via the T.V. and other places in their lives, c. controlled education, and Neuro-Linguistic Programming, **in addition** to all their regular trauma-based programming. It's like their world-view is the hard varnish that is first seen & heard, protecting people (even themselves) from realizing that the underlying motivation of these zealots is not their world-view, but **Total Mind Control Programming**.

Within witchcraft, the cosmology that is taught is that a person was originally swirls or vortexes of energy. This coupled with a belief in reincarnation, allows the mind-controlled victim's witchcraft alters to believe that they began with some molecules of energy forming, and that death is nothing, because everything continues on a vast wheel of reincarnation. The beliefs that are inserted into people via witchcraft are conducive to locking the person into their servitude. European culture, which has been based on Christianity, has had a respect and value on life way beyond the oriental view. For centuries europeans have marvelled about how little value human life has in the oriental view. This is because these Oriental views are identical with what is now called New Age beliefs, which are also about the same thing as witchcraft.

Gnostism/ witchcraft philosophy justifies seeking and having power. Persons, who are power hungry, gravitate to this philosophy. Persons who are inculcated with the desire for power rationalize their behavior with the witchcraft philosophy which they are raised in, or programmed to believe, or "discover" to set their minds at ease.

B. INTERNAL COMPUTERS

Internal computers are elaborate arrangements of dissociated parts and memories built into the slave's mind to cause the victim's mind to have mechanical computer-like responses.

For years, the internal computers escaped the detection of the therapeutic community. The *Illustrated Guidebook* introduced the subject to readers and the *Vol. 2* gave the first major & so far to date the only comprehensive expose of these computers. This *Deeper Insights* book will provide a number of pages to deepen the readers understanding of this important subject. This is all fresh (never been exposed) material so don't write and ask what book it came from. You may have to refer back to our previous books for a complete understanding.

Installation of the Standard Programming.

The Illuminati take a screen about 6' by 6'. On the screen is a grid with a Greek or English letter. In front of the screen are colored flashing lights. The flashing colored lights prevent the conscious mind from seeing the screen, but the subconscious mind sees the grid. An Alpha symbol or capital A with tails at the base will be shown on the grid screen for Alpha programming. A Beta or B will be shown for the Beta Programming screen. The programming that is placed in using the different programming associated with various Greek and English alphabets can be read about in Chapter 4 of the *Volume 2 Formula* book and Chapter 4 in this book.

The victim is strapped into a chair with their head locked in place and their eyes forced open. They must endure the flashing lights and the subliminal grid and letter on the screen.

There is a paper trail that they are using flashing lights for hypnotic control of a subject in order to place in messages at the subconscious. One of the pieces of the paper trail was an article "New Device To Induce Hypnosis Developed" in the *Chicago Tribune* (June 7, 1959). The article was about a Dr. William Kroger, who had tested the use of flashing lights on 200 obstetric patients at the Edgewater hospital in Chicago. Interestingly, this Dr. Kroger lived in Beverly Hills, CA and worked with a Sidney Schneider of Skokie, IL.

Schneider was skilled in electronics and Kroger was an obstetrician. The article said, "The pulsing pattern in reality an electronic brain wave 'achieves control' of the brain's alpha rhythm, thus inducing a drowsy state, according to Dr. Kroger." "The apparatus...operates on the principal of subliminal and photic stimulation of brain waves...about 30 per cent of the subjects who had received no explanation or had no knowledge of what the brain wave synchronizer would do were hypnotized to various degrees." Now these type of machines are available to any bozo who knows where they are sold.

Another piece of the paper trail is a government study by the Defense Intelligence Agency of July 1972, entitled *Biological Effects of Electromagnetic Radiation (Radiowaves and Microwaves) --Eurasian and Communist Countries, ST-CS-01-169-72*. DIA, July, 1972, pp. 77-86.

This study, of which this author has a copy, in part VI is written about "Light and Color as a Means of Altering Human Behavior." Although the report claims the communists are the ones who are using flashing light and color to alter human behavior, the real inventors were the Illuminati, and both the Americans and Russians are using flashing colored lights for programming.

This DIA study also reports on an American symposium held in the at Tulane Univ., Covington, LA in 1957 concerning the effects of flickering light on the brain. The participants of the 1957 American symposium drew up a paper with 11 conclusions, which included a. flickering light interferes with the human nervous system, b. flickering light can put a person to sleep or into a trance, c. flickering light can interfere with the brain's alpha waves, and d. "photo driving of the EEG by periodic flicker is a well known phenomenon although many subjects do not show the effect..."

During the '50's through at least the '70's, the Illuminati used flickering lights to place into the subconscious the grids used for the various computers. Each block on the grid would have codes, programs, memory and alters attached to it. In other words, dissociated parts of the mind become parts which are built into computers. The mind of victim is hijacked by the programmer.

To fully understand what the computers are, we must understand the mind-set of the programmers. The programmers are looking to Lucifer for their inspiration. An imitation of God's Book of Life for people, is for Lucifer to construct an internal computer that will contain all the history of all the alters.

It might be helpful if some items that were in the *Illustrated Guidebook* and in the *Vol. 2* book were briefly touched upon again, as we discuss how the internal computers are made.

Remember, that a computer is placed one per layer (section) and that they also build in back up computers, and that the computers have coded memories stored in them, as well as coded programs. The deepest computer is called the Beast computer, and it has an eye (the all-seeing-eye) that opens and shuts like a camera lens. It can go behind the veil, and this is in mockery of the rent veil of the Holy of Holies.

When the internal computers are built, the Illuminati use a doll house with different colored rooms for the child to visualize what is being done. Each room in the dollhouse has a different color. Each family of alters (a group of alters that are on the grid together) has the exact same color code. In the *Vol. 2* book, we showed the color coding differently--we showed the color coding running diagonally across the grid, it can be done in any fashion, but generally the color code for a single family (alters a-through-m on the chart) is the same, and the cover program to hide it is that the colors run diagonally.

What that means is that an entire family of alters, say alters Mary 1 through Mary 13 will all be connected by a color ribbon alter (who works just for them) back to that same color of computer room. All the family get the same programming, although they hold separate memories. This will help therapists understand the behavior & programming patterns of various alters. The Beta and Delta alters, who as the readers realizes live in entirely a deep trance imaginary life, have entirely negative programming in their computer section. The Betas and Deltas have two ribbons per alter, which is an exception to the rule. This is so they can function together--espionage, seduction, and assassination all go together. Another type of alter who gets two ribbons are the 13th alters which connect two levels. These poor alters have so much programming going off, and mixed signals, that they are real basket cases.

When a system is seen in its entirety, the more powerful system hierarchy and illuminati hierarchy alters will be coded with Platinum, Gold, White, Purple, Bronze & Silver. Front alters who will be helpful will be coded pink and yellow. Orange alters will be perceived as helping alters, but they are actually guards, protectors, and they protect sections of the system below them, which they usually can't see, and often don't know that they guard. Alters coded brown, tan, grey, or clear will give the therapist & support team fits, because they are full of deceptions & cover programs, and illusions. Host alters or key front alters may have a clear or white diamond as their gemstone. Alters who cover things up may have obsidian as their gemstone. Other alters who play along with the programming may have such gemstones as Fire Opal, Topaz, and Turquoise.(Also see Vol. 2,p. 328-29.)

Front Programs of Front Computer.

The front computer that is linked to the front section will be different than the deeper computers. It's big difference is that its programs (which are linked to all the front alters) are logical. The logical programs of this level provide the alters with logical reasons and excuses to believe the lies, and to reason their life out. Of course they draw false conclusions from good logic using faulty information.

Misinformation Computers.

Misinformation computers are laid in on the 3, 6, 9 and 12 levels. Thousands of demons are placed into the Misinformation computers to not only run them, but to dispense misinformation. Since the demons are not under drugs or hypnosis, they are under full awareness and are very crafty in their deceptions. When memories are too clean and too complete, the therapist should suspect that they are getting a demonic false memory. Bear in mind the child is in a drugged state during much of the programming and has blurry eyes and may have their eyes rolling in the back of their head. They have their short term memories splintered by electro-shock, and are fed lies about their memories via hypnosis. Real memories are in bad shape when retrieved. (This is why some persons apply "hypnotic correction programs" to restore the memories back closer to the original event, such as reversing the hypnotic air-brushing/blurring of faces that was programmed into deeper alters. The mind put in the distortion program and seems in some cases to be able to reverse the distortion program.)

Beast Computer.

End time names such as Gog, etc. are believed to be given to some of the computers within recent years, to represent the names of the 10 countries that will make up the global government of the New World Order. For years the computers have been called "Beast" computers with the big important Beast computer laid in at the bottom of the mind in the hell pit. Remember that the core is at the bottom of the mind below the hell pit--but she is almost always never connected to the Beast computer. This is because the core receives very little programming. The core is told she is sleeping beauty and that her father Lucifer, who she is married to, will someday return for her and wake her up. Lucifer wanted the purest virgin bride he could get, so he marries as his top bride within the system the innocent core. The core is told she belongs to Lucifer. The core is protected by the false trinity in the pyramid and the Grand Druid Council. The core is linked to the Grand Druid Council, but not the carousel. In the *Vol. 2* book, we reported the cover program, which is that the core is in the carousel.

If therapists want to take out computers they need to take them out from the first computer that was laid in, the Beast computer (at the bottom of the mind), and take them out in the sequence they were put in.

Programmer Access to the Computer Areas.

When the external programmer wants to put information into the computer he opens up the various "rooms" (areas or programs so to speak) and then the internal programmers take over. The story line used to build in access to the computer is the King's Chamber story in Alice In Wonderland. The king comes to the chamber and he has the right to make 3 wishes (the 3-part access code). If he doesn't make 3 wishes, everything disappears like in the Alice In Wonderland story.

3-part access codes are usually DATE, COLOR, ALPHA-NUMERIC CODE. But they could be three objects within the room, or they could be a sound, a touch, and a third-sight signal. Generally, the Illuminati have used the actual date that an alter (a part) or a family of alters was created as the actual code for that chamber of the computer. That chamber will then be linked to all the alters of that family. So lets say a family of alters was created on 4-30-64. This would normally be written on the charts as 43064 or because the Illuminati often work with things backward, some programmers will write it 46034. Which ever method, forward or backwards, will then be used consistently as the first part of the access to that family's computer chamber. There are 26 rooms in the dollhouse, or in other words, 13 families of alters on a grid with 13 mirror images to mirror those 13. This was very standard for years.

When the programmer places the information in it is put on a mental imaginary "computer disk" or in the older models "spools". The reader needs to remember back to the hypnotic surgery that we discussed in the *Illustrated Guidebook* and the *Vol. 2* book, to remember that the victim has their insides hypnotically removed and the spools or computer disks placed inside of them.

Let's say a therapist touches one of the misinformation computers, which are the most assessable. These computers will then activate mirror images and lots of demonic activity. The therapist may end up integrating demons, and working with constructs and mirror images, and the proper excitement by the real alters is even programmed in. These are what may be termed "FALSE HOPE PROGRAMS". The system will rest and relax and the therapist will declare everything finished. (For years, the two authors have tried to explain this, but it seems to be a hard subject for therapists to understand.)

Finally, a very important warning, tampering with the computers is serious business, from the co-authors experience in working with therapists, we strongly advise them not to tamper with the computers, because the self-destruct programs are so strong. The self-destruct programs will turn the person into a vegetable, or into pure insanity if the victim survives the suicide programs. The skill level among the therapeutic community is not yet at the level needed to tamper with the computers, but we hope with the publication of this book and with more experience that that will someday become a reality.

This author, Fritz, is aware of therapists that have tried to tamper with the computers, but the programming has beaten both them and this author. For instance, it took lots of work to discover that this author's week of work with a front computer actually was only playing with a misinformation computer and its FALSE HOPE PROGRAMS.

C. INTERNAL HIERARCHIES

OVERVIEW.The internal structuring of alter systems are built with alters being arranged in hierarchies. Often the hierarchal arrangement is a mirror of the group carrying out the programming. The CIA and other intelligence groups use SECTIONS. You will find the grids of alters arranged in SECTIONS. The Illuminati have a Grand Druid Council and other councils, which will be mirrored within the system. Alter families will be set up as mini-covens within the system, often with 13 to an alter families. HUBS will be created in reflection of how Satanic groups are organized into hubs.

THE INTERNAL HIERARCHIES form RATIONALES

Some of the structures within the programmed alters reflect the philosophies of the ancient occult world. The structures are buttressed by the occult beliefs that are connected to them.

Cisco, who has helped me co-author two books on mind-control, pointed out how the ancient world had a god which could only be adored by one family. Each city had its own gods, and religion was tied to the family and the city units. This was the Religion of the Hearth, as some have called it. The Roman Gens was an extension of this, the Gens were political associations of several families who collected into a religious union, as the Illuminati families have done. When we see how the ancient religious customs were, we see how the internal Illuminati structuring parallels this thinking. Each internal city or world is assigned a god (demon) during the programming. The Illuminati families have collected themselves into a Gen. This is an example of how the internal structuring is buttressed by some occult philosophy which will in turn buttress itself by its claim to antiquity, as if length of practice makes a mistaken superstition valid.

The myths of the occult world and their symbology are very extensive. The programmers have many items to choose from as they construct the deeper internal worlds of an Illuminati slave. There is a twisted logic to many of the names they give. The Magna Mater is the sybil, the symbol of truth, a goddess who can take the form of a city in the occult world. To apply the name MAGNA MATER to a part of the mind then creates a triple or quadruple pun--we have something that can be truth, a city, a goddess, and a sybil. The programmers thrive on puns. The personification of the stages of spiritual life which are called fairies are named White Ladies, Green Ladies, and Black Ladies. Dissociated parts of the mind can be given the name Green Ladies, and then the secret meaning attached that they are fairies that connect to the system's spiritual development. The possibilities seem endless. Since cabalism is behind much of the Illuminati programming, and double images are so important--some systems may incorporate the dual being known as Metatron on top, and Samael on the bottom. This is the occult concept that all phenomena has an essential ambivalence. This is the Gemini concept. Another Cabalistic concept that appears in programming is the silver palace also known as the silver thread that connects man to his origin and to his end. The palace in the occult world was to have secret chambers (dissociated areas in the subconscious) which hold treasure (programming truths). In the occult world's beliefs, it has been said that the palace of glass represents the magically appearing ancestral memories of mankind from the Golden Age. In Druidism, the horse was linked to the solar wheel, which had more wheels within itself.

During programming: Concepts are linked in series, Concepts are mirrored, and Concepts are related to the whole. The function of occult symbols lends itself to such applications.

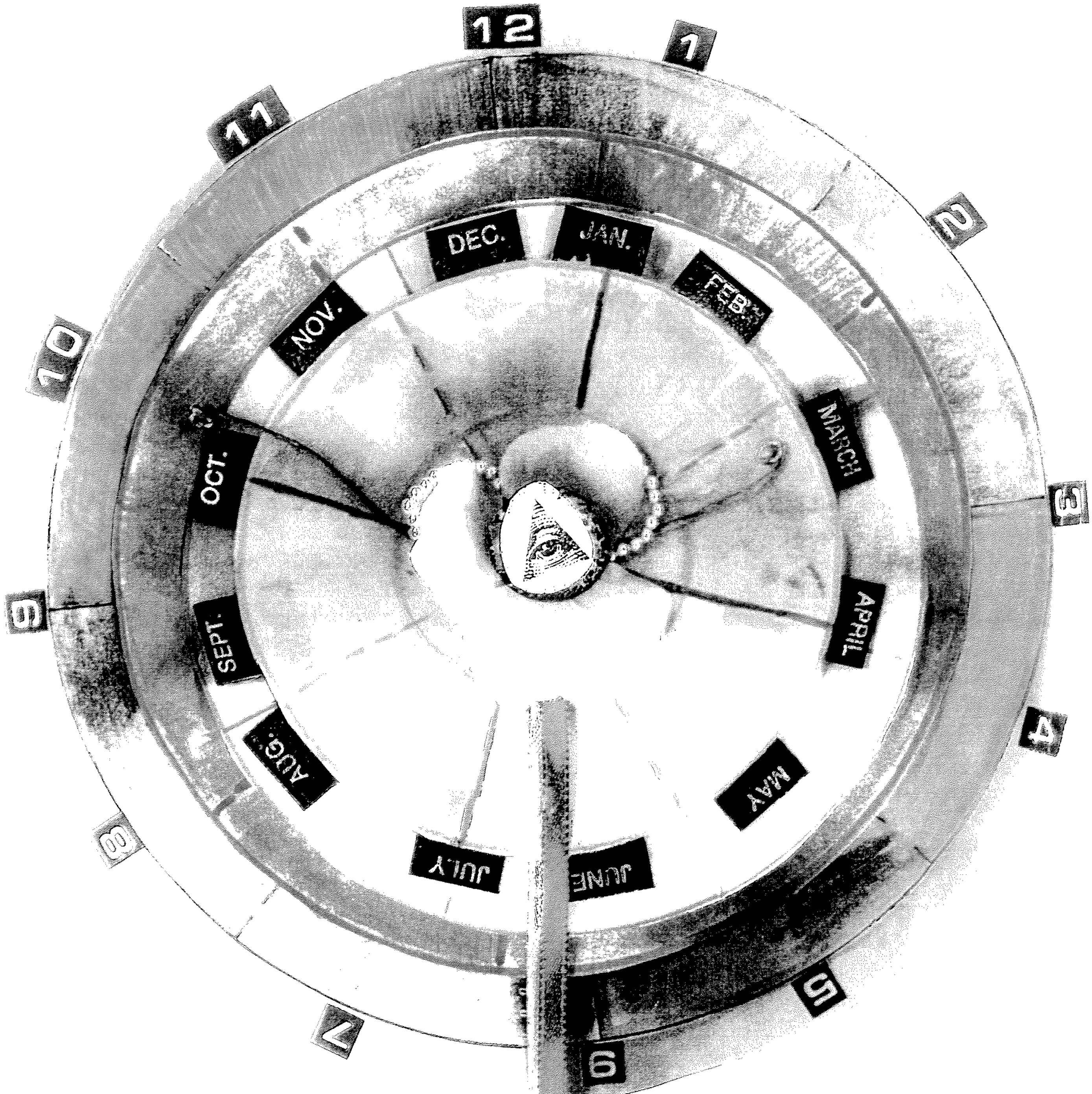

This artwork is not accurate, but is has been included because it provides the general concept of how the clock (with its seasons), the circular worlds (or planets), the elevators (shown in the picture as ribbons), and the quadrants of each world are tied together. Certain things must line up for alters to come out. As the entire mechanism rotates, at certain calendar dates certain internal alters are activated who then in turn move other alters to positions within the system so that they can come out at ritual times. The worlds are stacked on top of each other, and telescope out like the old telescoping army cups. This makes circles within circles.

External Controls

Notice the Stardust!
The pearl patterns look like spider webs. The price for this Barbie Doll is a mere $585.

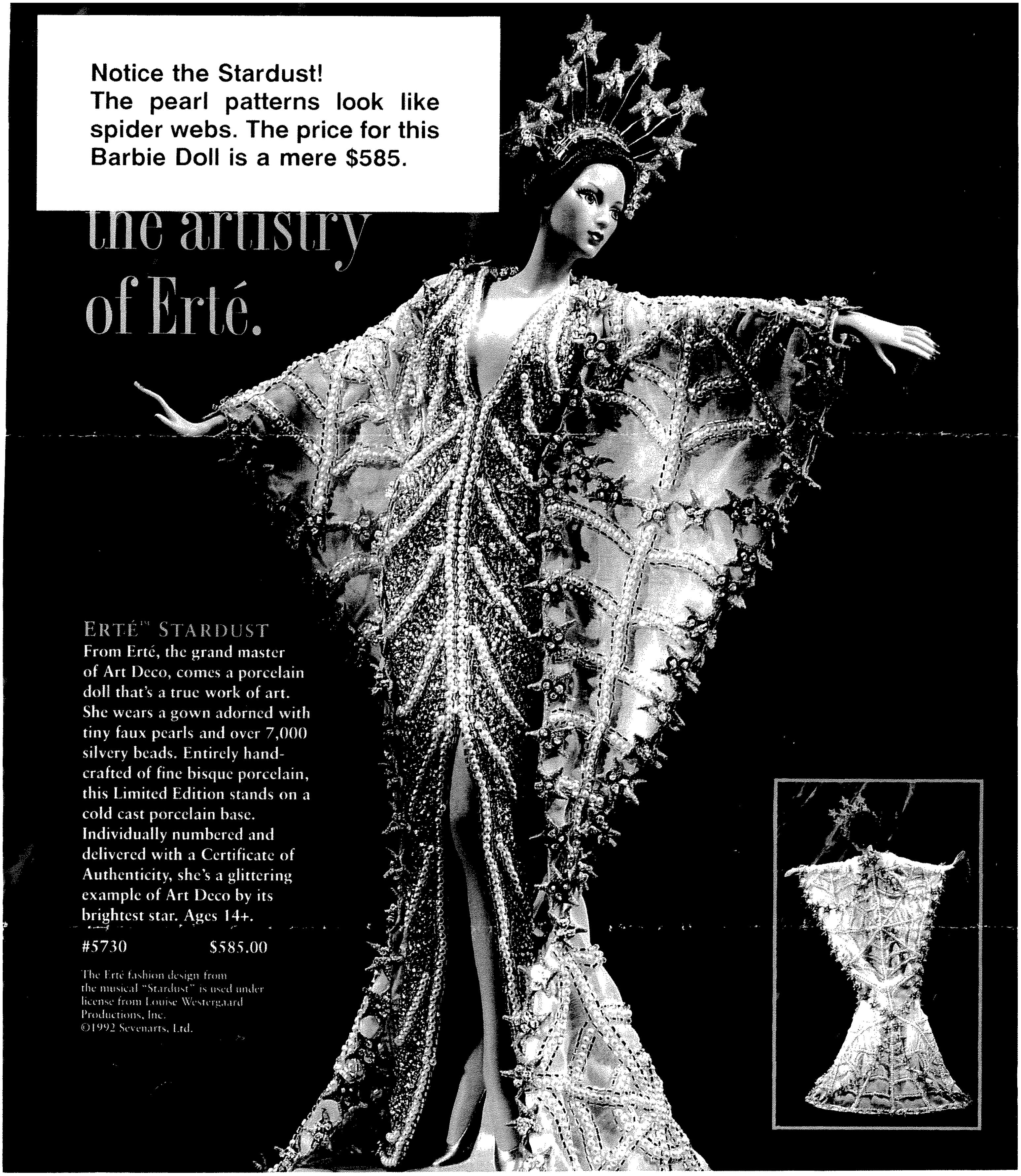

the artistry
of Erté.

ERTÉ™ STARDUST

From Erté, the grand master of Art Deco, comes a porcelain doll that's a true work of art. She wears a gown adorned with tiny faux pearls and over 7,000 silvery beads. Entirely handcrafted of fine bisque porcelain, this Limited Edition stands on a cold cast porcelain base. Individually numbered and delivered with a Certificate of Authenticity, she's a glittering example of Art Deco by its brightest star. Ages 14+.

#5730 $585.00

The Erté fashion design from the musical "Stardust" is used under license from Louise Westergaard Productions, Inc.
©1992 Sevenarts, Ltd.

Barbie Dolls are used for the mind-control programming. Interestingly in 1995, while fighting over Barbie dolls a 6-yr. old girl in Modesto, CA stabbed a 7-year-old playmate with a knife while telling her she was going to kill her. Police did nothing with the girl who had used the knife except to have the parents take her. One wonders what was this all about. Meanwhile Barbie Dolls have drastically changed and are now very occultic.

CHAPTER 12
SCIENCE No. 12-
EXTERNAL CONTROLS

Advertizing & Trauma-based programming.

The Oregonian newspaper, Sat. Mar. 9, 1996, (p. E1) ran a story about women entitled, "She sells, She purrs, she percolates, she's a power player: Ads reflect society's view of women." At the top right is a ad with a Marilyn Monroe type of model with puckered lips selling cigarettes. Below her is a picture of a girl with the caption, "You were born a daughter. You looked up to your mother. You looked up to your father. You looked up to everyone. You wanted to be a princess. You thought you were a princess." The themes in this article match the thinking within Monarch type programming scripts. Is this coincidence, or just a sign of the times, that so much in our lives echoes programming scripts?

Some of the ads in today's magazines are obvious manipulations of the Monarch trauma-based mind-control. For instance, Royal & Sun Alliance Insurance Group controlled by the Rothschilds had an add in a recent popular magazine which has nothing but an entire page of violet-blue haze with an eye [an allusion to the All-seeing eye] staring out of the haze along with the big caption "YOU HAVE OUR ATTENTION." This would reinforce many of the mind-control programs. Ostensibly, the ad was for insurance.

Another ad that is an obvious manipulation of mind-control programming is an Aveda ad placed in *Vogue & Vanity Fair* magazines, where a woman's face is broken up into 4 pieces and put into a glass bottle along with a white daisy type flower & a yellow flower. The caption reads "**You. bottled.**" the subcaption reads "what would you be if you came back as a pure-fume?" Notice the play on words that the programmers love.

Another more subtle example is a Virginia Slims ad which is designed to hit the subconscious of the Monarch slave. This ad has three thrones across the top of the page. In front of the three thrones is the Virginia Slims lady. The first two thrones have a chubby queen sitting on them & the third on the far right is vacant. The 3 queens are an allusion to the 3 hierarchy queens and the maiden-mother-hidden crone sequence in programming. The queen holds a scepter which adds some more power to this as a subconscious trigger. The caption reads, "Virginia Slims remembers the shortest reign of a female monarch. Queen Katrina of Valenski was crowned at 10 past the hour, lit a cigarette at 12 past the hour and was dethroned at 13 past the hour." The hidden meaning behind this is that the front woman, remembers on a subconscious level the threat that if you don't remember the authority & power (thrones), and the power structure (the triad), then you shall remember the programming threat. This ad subtly reinforces the programming threats to slaves.

Other ads that manipulate programming use Wizard of Oz, Alice In Wonderland and Star Wars themes. They use allusions to the programming scripts and show subtle occult symbols. The hypnotic eye is very popular in ads. Some ads simply seem to be a reflection of how our culture has become part of the programming, for instance a Sportsman device that is sold by an add with a big caption "Split personality", or a Merit cigarette ad that sells its product with the caption "Split personality."

A watch ad for Bulova has an empty chair with a banner over it "Personality of the year' and the caption "Is your watch making you a missing person?" During the programming, shifts in time certainly do make certain alters disappear, so although this ad is may not be a direct attempt to manipulate programming, it certainly is a product of today's mind-controlled society.

>>>On the next pg. is an ad appealing directly to the thinking of a programmed multiple .>>

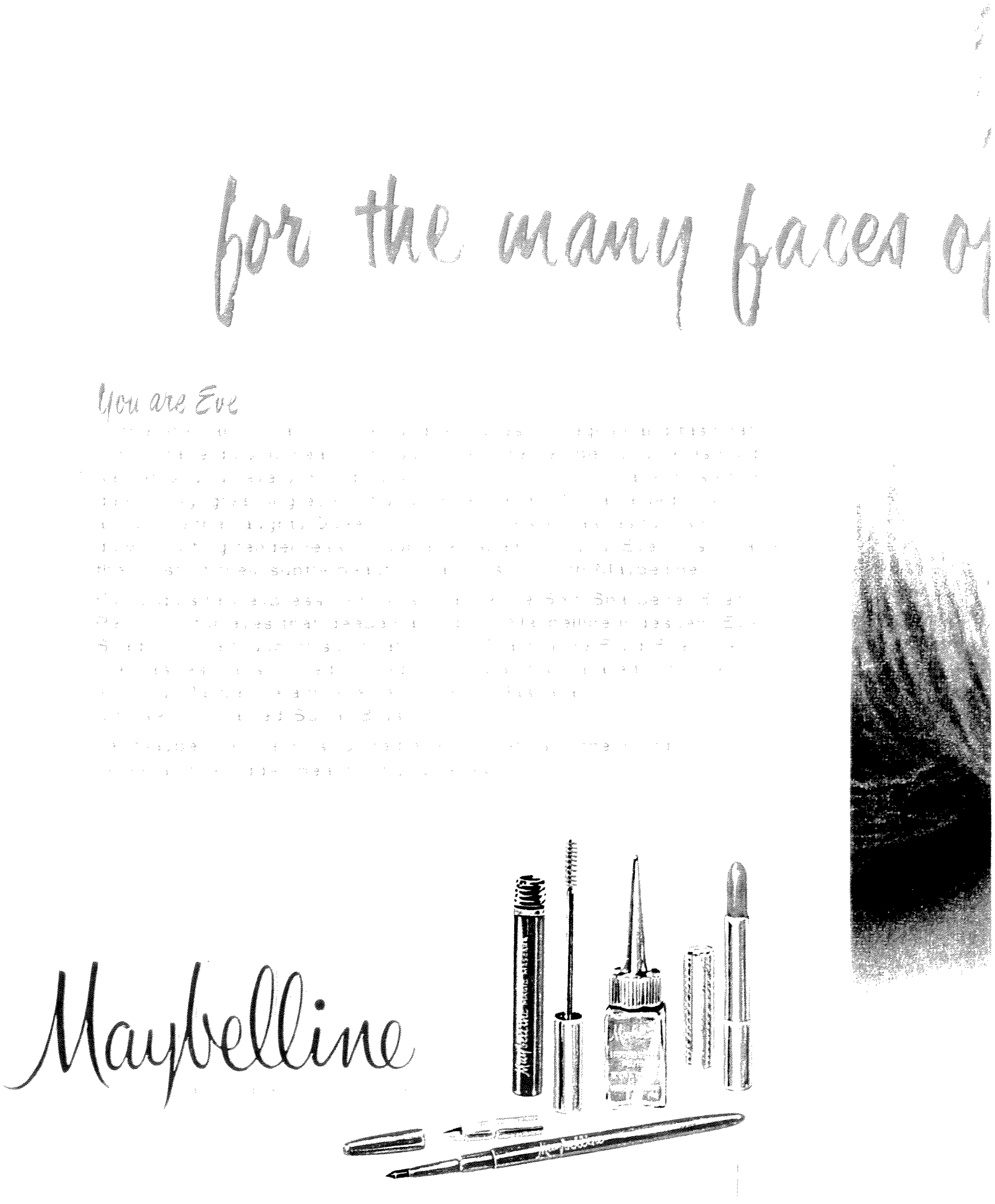

for the many faces of

You are Eve

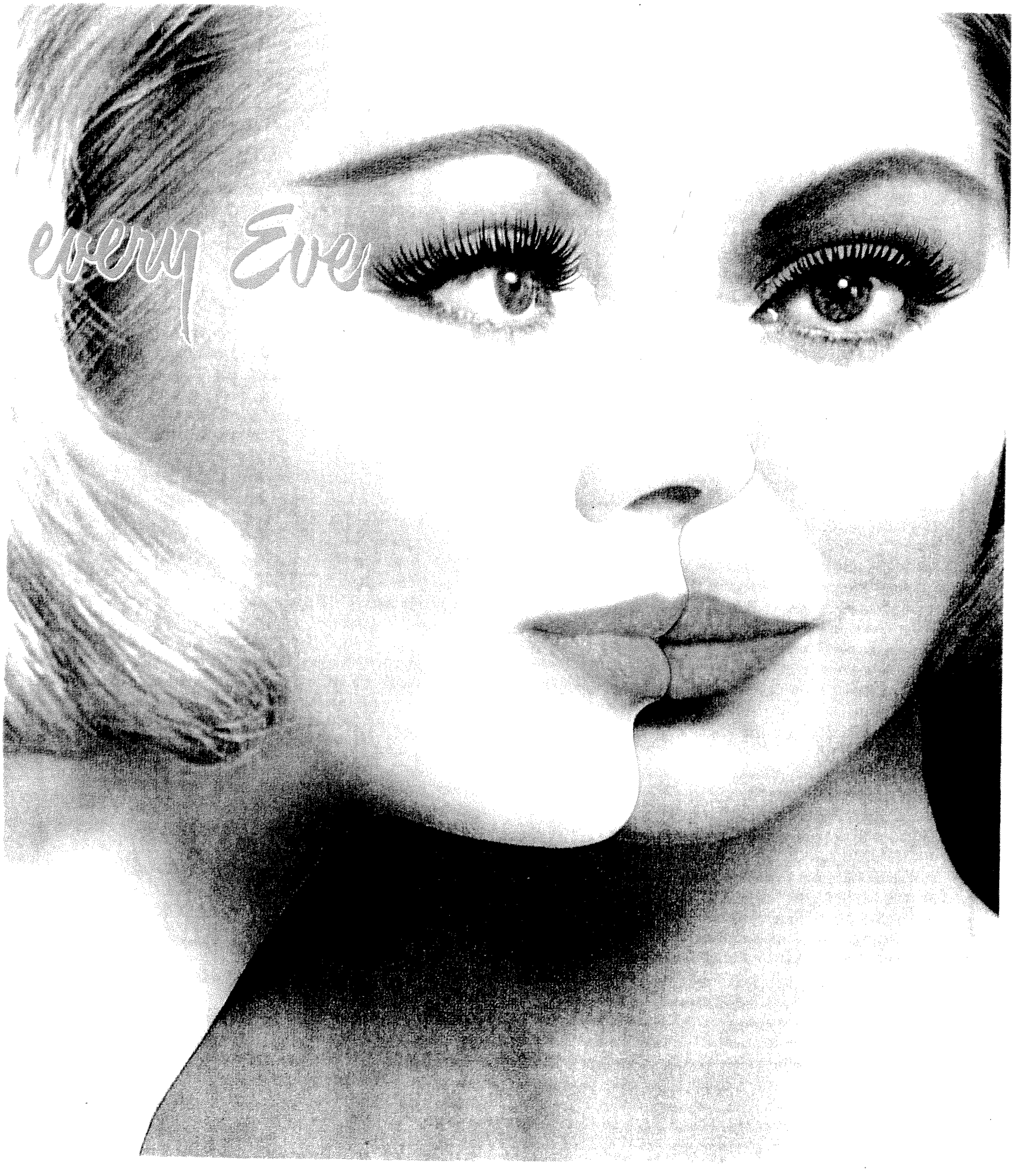
every Eve

ASSET CONTROL

SURVEILLANCE.

Over the years of watching the Illuminati manage their slaves, it is clear that they like to have their slaves under constant surveillance. Often times they use friends of the slave to keep tabs. For instance, the teams that they put together are great for using to monitor other team members. If they find that the acquaintances and friends of the slave are not contributing enough, they will send out people to keep tabs on the slave.

Surveillance of a slave is done either to let the slave know that he or she is being watched (obviously as an intimidation device), or is done in line with common intelligence/police type tactics. Many times the Illuminati surveillance is so obvious, that this author has to conclude that it is intentionally so.

For understanding undetectable surveillance, Hollywood movies are not teaching manuals. To watch someone's house the people working for the Illuminati will often try to maintain about 2 blocks distance. If they have to they can use battery operated bugs or bugs installed using the wiring in the house. If they want to get high-tech they can use fiber optics or even go to satellite-ground antenna monitoring of what a person is doing. If you are looking for a bug, get a counter that will go up into the higher ranges, & expect them to stick bugs away from equipment like refrigerators and air conditioners which make a lot of noise. They also have directional microphones called bionic ears which can be used to pick up outside sounds from a distance. Sophisticated filters can be placed on their listening devices to screen out background noise. Lasers beamed onto windows can be used to listen to conversations within a building, but these have the drawbacks of picking up building noises, & noises from the street. Laser listening devices are going to function better at night.

Telephone taps are commonly done by the Network to control and monitor their slaves. There are low-tech and high-tech ways to do this. The bottom line is that all telephone conversations in this nation (U.S.), all CB-radio traffic, all radio traffic has been totally monitored since before the 1970's. It is a given that anything you say on the telephone will be fed into a large computer which has words to watch for. Unless you believe you are a high-profile person, who is monitored 24-hours a day, it is best to stay away from mentioning trigger words in your conversation.

Often times, the people monitoring slaves team trail the slave. Teams of people can track a person on foot or in a car. Using a team is the best method in many situations. Often they tag team follow a person. They also have team formations that are used to keep track of a person, such as one person on the opposite side of the street, and one immediately behind and one far behind. Having a distant tracker allows the close one to avoid being caught if the slave tries to take evasive action or to ambush the stalker.

If the person watching the slave gets really concerned they may end up using special headlights called "blackout lights" to shadow the slave at night, which are shielded to keep the beams of light from showing in front or to the side of the car. These special lights light up the road in front of the car only, so the car remains unseen by the stalked mind-controlled victim.

There are a number of secret devices to aid the abusers in their control over environment that the slave must live in. The intelligence groups often use a radio device called AGENT ALERT which looks like a ballpoint pen which sends out a continual beeping when it is activated. Besides their Global Positioning Satellites, intelligence has Pegasus, a ship that can monitor & record electronic transmissions while sailing offshore. After reading the mind-control significance of Pegasi, it clearer the Navy picked an appropriate horse to record electronic transmissions.

Even though all slaves have Reporting Alters, & are tracked in other ways, the Illuminati often has redundant safety features to monitor their "human assets". Because the slave is monitored from so many different unseen methods, it does begin to seem hopeless to some to ever be free of Big Brother. If you add to all this, that the slave has been programmed repeatedly that there is no escaping their All-seeing eyes, then it is easy to see why so many slaves acquiesce & just comply. A *Vol. 2* reader, who caught onto to what the book is about, pointed out how the new film The Juror reflects their approach to control. The movie shows a controller who is obsessed with who he is controlling. This holds true in real life for the programmers too. Even though Dr. Mengele programmed thousands of people in his lifetime, he had his "pets" (Lieblings), pet slaves that he was obsessed with. In the movie, the controller says, "Do what I say." and "If I can keep you scared, I can save your life." These could have come straight out of a programmer's mouth. He picks out a juror who is creative & intelligent to control, which are the criteria for selecting victims in real life. The movie illustrates some of the concepts which actually happen that this chapter 12 is trying to describe.

HARASSMENT

One of the things that the Network does to any slave that tries to break free, and the Illuminati does to any of their hierarchy slaves (like this book's co-author Cisco) who tries to get free is to harass them constantly. Stephen Knight who researched the Freemasons wrote a chapter in his book *The Brotherhood, The Secret World of the Freemasons* about how they harass any opposition. (See chapter 16, pp. 140-149). When Knight interviewed ex-Masons they were in abject fear of the Masonic system. They didn't even want to talk about how much power the Freemasons have to ruin careers, spy, and harass people. Since Knight's book is available for the reader, and since there are a number of books (like those from Loompanics) that are very detailed on harassment techniques, this book will only briefly touch on the subject. However, just because it is only briefly mentioned please don't mistakingly think this is a minor topic. The Illuminati and their co-workers the Freemasons, the Mishpucka, and CIA put outrageously great amounts of efforts into harassment. It is not unusual for a recovering victim of mind-control to find their favorite pet killed, or human faeces in their oven, and other bizarre harassments that show the warped character of the controllers. The CIA, the Masonic leaders, and the Mishpucka keep extensive files on everyone for purposes of blackmail, and coercion. The masonic leadership of Freemasonry in a given area will have thousands of "blackmail" files on essentially everyone of importance in their area. Upper echelon people such as judges, lawyers, and politicians are generally controlled via IRS infringements, and many of the lower echelon people are controlled through weird sexual items. This is where the Delta and Beta Monarch slaves are so helpful to the Illuminati. The Freemasons can have a sexual alter seduce a man, contrive a scene, and then an alter that is in a death trance takes the body so that the target of blackmail thinks he has killed the woman. It works great for blackmail. (This information comes from several witnesses who are informed about the blackmail files & the their methods for blackmailing.)

CAR COLORS

The *Vol. 2* book apparently neglected to relate how the colors of cars are used to access victims. Some victims around the U.S. are programmed to red & white cars. Autos with both colors will arrive. Red & White are the great mystical colors assoc. with the 2 headed eagle & Janus. White cars are for high ranking slaves. Very specific sexual slaves are picked up in red and black cars. In N.Y. brown volkswagons were frequently used for accessing slaves. Two tone cars will be used to trigger particular alters to come out. Another common practice that is occurring across the U.S. is for the draconian enforcers to borrow cars from dealerships so that they can't be traced. The license plates of cars are also used as access triggers for some slaves.

TELEVISION

The all pervasive television, which has been so common place in the lives of Americans, is used a great deal to manipulate trauma-based mind-controlled slaves. Tests by researcher Herbert Krugman have shown that TV watchers used their right brain twice as much as their left brain and released Beta-endorphin into their brains. In other words, TV watching trains the mind to go into an altered state. If a blank black frame is interjected every 32 frames on a show, a 45 beat/minute pulsation is created that puts a person into a hypnotic trance.

In *Vol. 2*, it was brought out how the Lawnmower Man movie, displayed the symbols used to program many of the slaves. The movie was advertized with the slogan "God made him simple...Science made him a god." This is a slogan fitting for an Illuminati member who has been programmed to think he is a god, and yet he must serve his superiors.

BUILDING FAMILIES AND COMMUNITIES THAT HAVE INTERWOVEN PROGRAMMING

The Illuminati has increasingly wanted to keep their members within Illuminati family settings. They have had more problems with placing their members into families which are not part of their mind-control than they have had with children which are raised within Illum. or cult type settings.

If one or both of the parents have programming, the Illuminati often weaves the programming together so that the entire family becomes one programmed dissociative mechanism. For instance, on a ritual night the child as it is being tucked in bed will say to the mother, "MAY I HAVE A DRINK OF WATER." This is the code trigger for the mother to give a drug in a drink. The child is say another trigger to the parent when they get the drink, then is programmed to drink the drug. The second trigger causes the parent to switch to a personality that feels compelled to get the family into the car and drive. The family all mechanically click into a series of alter switches and end up at a ritual. They mechanically trigger and reinforce each others programming as they return from the ritual, and end up at home with everyone's front alters not knowing what the family has been involved with. Here we have an entire family whose testimony could reinforce each other that they did nothing but sleep at home that night!

There are some locations, for instance, two entire towns in southern Utah that are a strict offbeat shoot of Mormonism, which are entirely programmed multiples. There have been some television shows about entire towns being caught up in secret satanic rituals. It is true, but they also have occult mind-control programming along with those rituals. Here we see how an entire city can trigger each other's programming and all be involved in the insanity of all this without full awareness. This is in fact, where the entire world is headed very rapidly.

ISOLATION

While control mechanisms are put into place world-wide, the Illuminati still must keep their children isolated from the world. To successfully raise a child slave, the mind-control's success depends upon isolation. Children involved in cult rituals do not talk to other children. If they are caught talking, the standard punishment is to tie the child to a dead child. They want their children to shut down, and only do what they are told. They want the child to respond only to the Programmer and its Mother of Darkness. They heap lots of guilt upon any child that breaks the rules of no communication. Children still manage to learn to speak with their eyes and fingers. They become skilled at this even though they know the punishment will be severe if caught.

BOARDING SCHOOLS & BODY PROGRAMMING.

Most people would naturally think that this topic would belong to this chapter. Actually, this topic DOES NOT belong here. But it was placed here on purpose, because its placement here will emphasize its point, while not detracting from the Cranial Manipulation and Genetic Manipulations sections of Chpt. 8.

Boarding schools not only give the elite a chance to isolate, educate, and indoctrinate their children, but it is also a great way to layer in body memories that instill a subconscious ethic of elitism. It is an attitude of elitism that allowed the Pharisees to crucify Christ, the Nazis to kill Jews, and Moslems to kill Hindus, etc. How does this layering of body memories happen?

The memories of our bodies are buried within the cells of our bodies. Therapists have known about body memories for some time now. Cellular level body memories are way beyond the grasp of the consciousness.

Buried into a deep unconscious repression are the body memories of the social values (elitism) that are contained in how the social elite walk, hold a spoon and knife, how a person must stand up straight with good posture, and how the person holds and uses their facial muscles. The boarding schools teach an entire world of elite mannerisms such as "keep a stiff upper lip" to "don't hold your knife in your left hand."

West Point performs the same programming of body memories, to insure that their West Pointers develop an elitist attitude. The effect of these body memories is to subconsciously encourage the mind into thinking that it is elite. The erect posture and military gait that this author was taught carry with them the implication of superiority. **While the conscious awareness of this elitist indoctrination can be gotten in touch with and defused, there are none-the-less buried elements of body memory that resist tampering.** This author would ask his fellow West Pointers, how do they feel if they walk like a general around civilians? This type of body programming contributes to an ethic of elitism. How it is created and how it works has not escaped the detection of the elite bloodlines. This is why the British boarding schools are so strict about "good manners." Through a plebe year of bracing, the mind develops body memories of how to stand in a military brace. Some cadets are so traumatized by their first year, they never return to a normal posture. A military brace has been proven to not be the healthiest posture. It's this author's contention that the military brace is insisted upon for mind-control, and not for health reasons.

Victims of mind-control have been placed in many humiliating body positions, as well as many painful body positions. It takes years of slow subconscious work as well as deep massage to pull these up and work with these body memories. For instance, during the tortures to create cat/kitten alters, the children often crouch like cats. Kitten alters will retain their body memories of crouching (hunching the shoulders) like a cat. Sometimes when their masters begin to beat on kitten alters, they will reflexively crouch like a scared kitten.

And what's with the woman called Queen Sheri who has been managing the two professional wrestlers Macho King and Randy Savage? Both of these professional wrestlers are part of a "family" called the New World Order. Queen Sheri walks around in a cat costume and facial makeup that makes her look like a real wild cat. Is this wildcat a Monarch wildcat?

When controls fail, THE FINAL SOLUTION.

The World Order can send out teams of professional killers. (What's new?)

These killers often emotionally distance themselves from their victims by thinking of their "targets" as inferior forms of life that they are "liquidating", "terminating", "cleansing from this planet", etc. In 1996, a 4-member hit team took out the entire Bill Mueller family (Bill, Nancy, and 8 yr. old Sarah). Bill was a member of the Special Ops Group SOG of the Navy Seals. He had become a Patriot and a big gun dealer living in Arkansas. Someone decided he was too much of a threat and sent a team in to take not just him but his entire family out. Booz-Allen & Hamilton, Inc has been hired by the NWO to infiltrate the militias.

This author has known in this area several disobedient slaves, and one therapist who lost their lives to assassins, as well as another one who committed suicide according to programming. But anymore what isn't dangerous? Crossing the street and eating at a restaurant can kill you too. The reader knows this.

This author also knows of several who were going to be killed but escaped. One troublemaker was to have been sacrificed but broke free and hid, another was ritually tortured, buried alive, and left for dead, but managed to survive.

Appendix 1
Programmers

APPENDIX 1. The PROGRAMMERS

One night a Memphis policeman arrested a rowdy drunk, who turned out to be Jerry Lee Lewis. Lewis has the reputation of being one of the most sadistic mind-control programmers of all time.

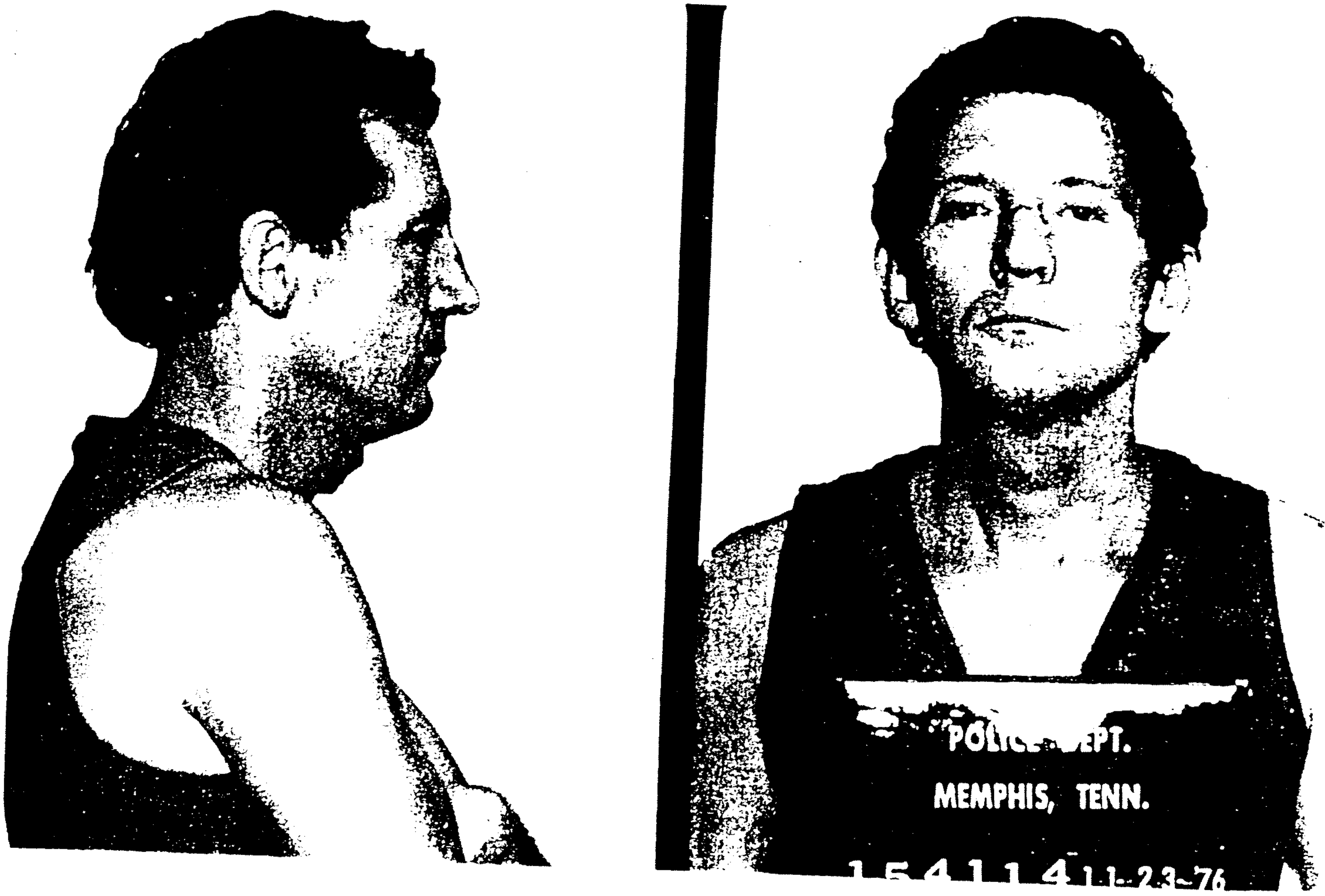
POLICE DEPT.
MEMPHIS, TENN.
154114 11-23-76

Jerry Lee Lewis has been a man possessed by Satan and proud of it. Due to his status as a mind-control programmer as well as his underground reputation as the most sadistic mind-control programmer around, Jerry Lee Lewis has never lacked for women to sexually violate. In 1957, he married his 13 year old cousin. The American public accepted his child bride until the British refused to accept such behavior. Jerry Lee Lewis is famous for his pattern of insulting everyone, threatening the lives of everyone around him, and being physically abusive to all of his six wives. He murdered two of his wives when they seriously decided to leave him. Although there was plenty of original evidence that Jerry Lee Lewis had personally murdered his wife Shawn Michelle Lewis, the police destroyed the evidence, and Jerry Lee Lewis walked free. His manager bragged to Pulizer Prize winning author Richard Cramer, "Listen, they'll never bust him [Jerry Lee Lewis] in DeSoto County. That's like bustin Elvis in Memphis. Never. Never. And you can quote me on that." Jerry Lee Lewis programmed his own son Jerry Lee Lewis, Jr. who died at age 19. Another son of Jerry Lee Lewis drown at age 3 in Lewis's swimming pool, perhaps during a sadistic programming trauma. After physically abusing women all his life, Jerry Lee Lewis lied on the Geraldo Rivera show saying, "I've never hit a woman in my life." Country Western music star Jerry Lee Lewis's nickname has been "the Killer."

APPENDIX 1. The PROGRAMMERS/RESEARCHERS

In the previous volume, a list of some of the programmers was provided. However, one group was neglected, those are the mind-control researchers who practice on humans so to discover methods that the programmers use. Some of these should receive attention too.

The Illuminati set up the Josiah Macy, Jr. Foundation to direct some of the mind-control its research, and its financial affairs. Harold Abramson became one of its leaders. One of the Macy Foundation's directors has been military intelligence chief and relative to Winston Churchill, Gen. Marlborough Churchill. Both Winston and Marlborough are of the corrupt Illuminati Marlborough family.

DIRTY PSYCHIATRISTS involved with MIND CONTROL
Dr. Van O. Austin, Utah
Dr. George Brock Chisholm, trained at Tavistock
Dr. Lawrence D. Ginsberg
Dr. Robert G. Heath
Dr. Paul Hoch, Scot. Rite Mason
Dr. Robert Howell, Utah
Dr. Nathan Kline, Columbia Univ.
Dr. Nolan D.C. Lewis, dir NY State Psyc Inst. & Scottish Rite Mason
Dr. Amedeo S. Marrazzi, Missouri Inst. of Psychology
Dr. Sudha Tayi

DIRTY RESEARCHERS
Dr. Ross Adley, formerly of the Brain Research Center at Univ. of So. CA, now at Loma Linda Univ. Med. School, CIA, worked on ELF waves and the brain, and EM radiation.
Dr. Emmanuel Donchin, head of Psyc. Dept. at Urbana-Champaign's Univ. of IL, worked on thought-controlled machines.
Dr. Wayne O. Evans--U.S. Mil. Stress Lab, Natick, Mass
Dr. Dave Morgan, Lockhead-Sanders, worked on the syntel
Dr. Arthur Upton, head National Cancer Inst.

DIRTY TAVISTOCK MIND-CONTROLLERS
W. R. Byon
Richard Crossman
H. V. Dicks
Ronald Lippert
Brig. Gen. Dr. John Rawlings Rees

SOME OF FREEMASONRY'S MIND-CONTROL PEOPLE
Dr. Robert Hanna Felix--33°, dir of psyc. research for Scott. Rite, oversaw the Lexington KT programming facility
Dr. Franz J. Kallman-jewish Nazi who did research at NY State Psyc. Inst. while at Columbia Univ.
Seymour Solomon Kety- exec. of Scot. Rites psychiatry experiments, & nat. dir. of American Eugenics Soc.
Winfred Overholser- overall leader of Masonic research into mind-control, sup. of St. 'Elizabeth's Hosp. a mental hospital in Wash. D.C.

REMOTE VIEWING MIND-RESEARCH
Private organizations doing research into RV in the U.S. are run by "retired" intelligence people.

Joe McMoneagle--"retired Intelligence officer" left govt.'s Stargate to set up "private" RV research.

ODDS & ENDS

- Hillary Clinton, who is a Grand Dame in the Illuminati, started in the early 1960s a group of mind-controlled slaves which is called Royal Project. She reportedly exercises power in the White House via 16 staffers who have been given authority over the different departments of government. One mind-control victim claims that one of Clinton's talks gave triggers for him to kill. One of Clinton's never mentioned cronies, who works closely with him, and travels to meet him at various locations is Charles Whitmore of Arkansas.

- One of the big areas where a great number of mind-controlled slaves congregate are MUFON meetings. An example of a slave handler, who is also a programmed slave is Dea Martin, who tells people she has worked for the government and who does aura readings. She controls her sidekick Jim Courant, a commercial airline pilot. An example of a programmed multiple with "alien" programming was serial murderer Robert Moody. Film taken of Moody in jail shows his MPD (DID).

- Kleinknecht was National Director of NASA during the Moon Flights when lots of mind-control programming was being done by both the Masonic lodges and NASA. C. Fred Kleinknecht was not only director of NASA but the Sec. General of the Scottish Rite 33°.

- The Door Singer Jim Morrison used the occult code name Lizard King and The Exterminating Angel. He was involved with mind control.

- Col. John Alexander, (also called Doctor) who has been living in Arizona, and who has been in charge of making psychic warriors for the U.S. Army, has the inside reputation of being the Illuminati's top mind-control programmer.

- In *Vol. 2*, one of the mind-control programmers listed was James Monroe. It turns out that there have been two James Monroes involved in programming. The first one was bn. perhaps in the 1920's, was 6' tall, and he was the CIA man who set up the Society for the Investigation of Human Ecology, a CIA front for mind-control. He had a very polite front in spite of being a sadistic programmer. The second one was James Monroe Martinez, bn in 1938, 6' tall, who was busy setting up underground bases such as the one at Los Alamos under the cover of working for GE. One report said he died in 1965. His mother owned a Catholic half-way house in Albuquerque, NM.

- There are all kinds of events happening around us that show evidence of mind-control. One example, is the case of a Catholic nun quitting the monastery and becoming a NASA physicist.

- Part of the success of the mind-control lays within their child procurement abilities. The corrupt Finders group, which consisted of FBI/CIA men who helped procure children, were led by Marion Pettie, who was called "the Stroller" and "the Game Caller" by Finder members.

- The establishment allowed CIA programmer Dr. Louis Joyon "Jolly" West to examine Jack Ruby in his jail cell. When Ruby refused to admit to insanity, West labelled him "paranoid and mentally ill" and Ruby was placed on pills which were called "happy pills". Ruby believed he was being poisoned by the establishment.

- Part of the success of the mind-control lays in the fact that there is such a widespread network of pedophiles. On Channel 5, May 6, '96, during a show "Priestly Sins", it was stated that "at least 3,000 [catholic] priests are sexual abusers of children." The program stated that 600 priests have been reported to law enforcement within the last few years for complaints of sexual abuse of children. The show stated that catholics are silenced and punished if they speak up. Priests who speak out are penalized. For instance in 1985, a senior official at the Vatican's embassy in Wash. D.C. discovered rampant sexual abuse and wrote a report on how it should be dealt with responsibly. The church promptly buried the report.

LIST of PROGRAMMERS (continuation from the list given in Vol. 2)

Stephen Aldrich
Morse Allen
Dr. Charles L. Brown
Col. Campbell
Dr. Cleghon
Hillary Clinton
Jack F. (Uncle Jack) & Jill Coogan
Sen. Alan Cranston
"Gen." Earman
Don Ebner
Dr. Charles Evans
Dr. Tom Fox
Floyd & Mildred Frost & dau. Carol Frost Buls
Dr. George S. Glass
Dr. Goldshe
L. Wilson Greene
Dr. James Hamilton
Dr. Robert G. Heath
Richard Helms
Dr. Paul Hoch
Dr. Hyde
Dr. Korim (sp. not known)
Dr. Lowenstein
Mateland
Dr. Gary E. Miller
Dr. Moore
Dr. Martin Orne
Dr. Rosenberg
Dr. Woolsworth Russell
Cpt. George White (nickname/cover name Stormy)
Dr. Robert E. White

A FEW random CIA/INTELLIGENCE MEN involved WITH MIND-CONTROL
John Bacon
Tennant (Pete) Bagley
Col. Matt Baird
Bill Brown
Richard L. Conolly, Jr.
Burt Courage
Cong. Bud Cramer
Jerry Droller
Robert Feldman
Jim Ferguson
J. Peter Grace
Cynthia Hausman
Richard Helms
William J. Hood
Jack Kindschi
John McCone
Charles McKay
Cord Meyer
Comm. John R. Miller
Herbert Quinde
Wade Thomas

Anton LaVey--Profile of a trauma-based mind-control programmer

When someone coined the phrase "dynamite comes in small packages" the phrase was an apt description of Anton LaVey. (Released photographs of LaVey prevent people from realizing how short his is.) In a personal letter which Anton LaVey wrote, "With my swastika, I'm strong. My Satanic amulets give me power. I'm not a misfit anymore, with pimples and a heart murmur and flat feet."

Anton LaVey is famous for having started the Church of Satan. He chose Walpurgisnacht, April 30, 1966 to start the Church of Satan in San Francisco. Previously he had began holding midnight magic seminars in 1960. He and his occult friends held Magic Circle meetings until he founded the Church. His Church of Satan is officially recognized by the U.S. government and the military.

He turned an old Victorian House, at 6114 California St., San Francisco into what has been called "the Black Castle". It was for years indeed black on the outside, and LaVey would drive a hearse. Anton LaVey kept a full grown 400 lb. nubian lion named Togare from Ethiopia at his house (which was allowed both inside & outside) that scared the neighbors when it roared. He also has kept a black leopard. LaVey loves to play his Hammond organ music in his black castle as if his house were a stereotypical horror house. Inside the house are rooms used for rituals, occult books including books on cannibalism, coffins, a maze of secret passageways, and LaVey's private saloon called the Den of Iniquity.

He called his satanic covens "Grottos." This author is aware that the Church of Satan got Grottos going in the following cities: Amsterdam (Magistralis Grotto, Neth.), Boston, Chicago, Dayton, Denver, Detroit, Edmonton (Can), Indianapolis, Kansas City, Las Vegas, London (Eng.), Los Angeles, Louisville, New York, Paris (Fr.), Phoenix, Portland (OR), St. Petersburg, Seattle, Silverton (OR), and Vancouver (Can). Undoubtedly, there are other groups, as well as a scattered following of individuals. The Church of Satan has had many Ph.D.'s. The church has had a high percentage of professionals such as: doctors, lawyers, teachers, former FBI agents, IBM executives. Cult underground film maker Kenneth Anger was a member of the Church of Satan.

An ex-high priest of the Church of Satan told this author how he was recruited for the position of high priest. He was promised anything he wanted in life, any woman, any money etc.--and they made good on much of that promise. As high priest, he micromanaged everyone's lives in his grotto. His people came to him for permission and advice and orders for everything. It wasn't just mind-control, it was total control of their lives. But giving orders and micromanaging the lives of many people became a drag.

One of Cathy O'Brien's abusers was LaVey's High Priest Merle Kilgore, father of Steve Kilgore.

LaVey (bn. April 11, 1930) comes from a Rumanian bloodline from Translyvania. As he grew up he love the story of Frankenstein. As a teenager he loved the occult. He dropped out of high school to be part of the Clyde Beatty circus. LaVey likes to work from dusk to dawn. Like his ex-right hand man Michael Aquino, another mind-control programmer, both LaVey and Aquino are fascinated with the Nazis. (Michael Aquino's wife Lillith Sinclair was formerly the head of the Church of Satan's NY Lillith Grotto.) LaVey sports a Van Dyke beard, and a head shaved in the same fashion of executioners during the middle ages. Most of his followers never see him. Although LaVey has gotten wide press coverage, thanks to William Randolph Hearst's newspapers and his publishing companies like Avon, LaVey is a very secretive person and very rarely shows himself to even his high priests, or even talks to them. His Church is a collection of self-sustaining dictators. He exaggerates the numbers of his church, apparently by claiming people who come in contact with his church.

Before we discuss more about his organization and their rituals, let's touch on his role as a trauma-based mind-control programmer. Anton LaVey has openly advocated the creation of android humans. Even more startling is a music video shown on TV in which Anton LaVey personally gives a graphic description of how Anton LaVey intends to make the listener into his "mind-controlled sex slave". The audacity of this is mind-boggling. But then LaVey has tended to be more frank than other occult figures. The approach seems to be "I'll shock you so boldly, that you will not believe what I am saying, but will think its an act." Taking inspiration from Orwell's *1984* LaVey wrote, "Up is down, pleasure is pain, darkness is light, slavery is freedom, madness is sanity..." This is actually the language that is used at times in the mind-control programming!

Anton LaVey has been the mind-control handler/programmer of a number of Hollywood actors & actresses, including Jayne Mansfield and Marilyn Monroe, who both serviced him as sexual slaves. Jayne Mansfield, who was a High Priestess in the Church of Satan, shocked people when on a USO tour in Vietnam she asked for a satanic religious service. Sam Brody, one of Mansfield's handlers, had a bitter struggle over who would control Jayne, and one of LaVey's followers claimed to have tampered with Brody's car. Anton LaVey has also been the programmer of his daughters such as Karla and Zeena and his son. An ex-member of a satanic cult in the Ozarks said, "If LaVey says jump, you jump." Some of his followers call him "Uncle Anton" as if they were programmed by him.

LaVey's cover is that he is simply a showman, a buffoon. His cover has fooled many people, the truth is the man is not to be trusted and has a lot more evil power than people have realized.

LaVey has always had what some describe as a "warm relationship" with police.

In fact, he was on the police force in the 1950's as a photographer. The police were reluctant to question LaVey about the death of Jayne Mansfield (4/19/33-6/28/67) who was one of LaVey's high priestesses and slaves in his Church of Satan. Her color was pink.

Anton LaVey has been seen going onto military programming bases, and was at the NORAD area in Colorado for a while.

Dick Russell interviewed Anton LaVey with his approval. Russell wrote up the interview in "The Satanist Who Wants To Rule the World", (*Argosy*, June 1975, p. 41) that the Anton LaVey believes that he and an elite force of Satanists will rule the world.

LaVey took an obscure occult tract from the 30's and some thoughts from H.G. Well's book *The Island of Dr. Moreau* for a ritual. From this, he came up with a ritual which includes these stanzas:

"Man is God.
We are men.
We are gods.
God is man."

When the reader is done reading this book, he will see how this ritual can fit in perfectly with trauma-based total mind-control.

In fact, when people attend the Church of Satan's secret rituals, once people enter the ritual room two hooded guards prevent people from exiting prematurely through the closed doors. The rituals have been reported as being very disgusting. It well publicized that LaVey uses naked human altars for rituals, after photos were published of his satanic baptism of his 3 year old daughter Zeena in May 1967.

Does the Church of Satan involve summoning demons and worshipping Satan. Yes, most definitively. For instance, here are the some of the words of an important invocation used by his satanic rituals:

In nomine Dei nostri Satanas Luciferi excelsi!

In the name of Satan, the Ruler of the earth, the King of the world, I command the forces of darkness to bestow their Infernal power upon me!...By all the Gods of the Pit, I command that these things of which I speak shall come to pass! Come forth and answer your names by manifesting my desires! Hail Satan!"

LaVey's book *The Compleat Witch* (NY Dodd, Mead, 1971) p. 266 advocates that one achieve self-understanding and "embrace and cherish the demon within him." In LaVey's book *The Satanic Witch* (LA: Feral House, 1969) he states that a witch to be successful must make a pact with the devil.

His church loves to chant "Hail Satan". They like Crowley's law, Do What thou Wilt. LaVey & some of his members teach that at the core of each person is a demon waiting to be released.

LaVey loves Black Masses and desecrating anything sacred to Christians. LaVey urges people in his books and talks to bring out their "darkest" urging. He hints at human sacrifice in his *Satanic Bible*, by having a section on it, but is careful not to go too far out on a limb publicly. He always publicly denies that satanists should do human sacrifices. One of the doctors of the San Francisco Church of Satan is said to have brought LaVey's church a severed human leg from the hospital he worked at, which was basted in Triple Sec and eaten by LaVey and his group. Most of the rituals are done in secret, there are no way to confirm rumors that they eat human flesh, but knowing the mentality of some of his church members, they would do it just to check it out as a new experience.

Illuminatus William Randolph Hearst gave Anton LaVey some big help. His Avon Publishing published his *Satanic Bible* in 1969 (it was first released in Dec. '69). Since then it has reportedly gone through over 30 printings. LaVey's next book *The Satanic Rituals* also was published by Hearst Avon in 1972. It talks about the power that blood sacrifices give the magician. Hearst's papers also gave him publicity.

LaVey is always thinking of ways of promoting his theology. Years ago, he had a topless witches sabbath on San Francisco's North Beach. In 1990, the Church of Satan went into the Heavy Metal music business. The Church of Satan puts out a monthly magazine *The Cloven Hoof* which for most members is their main indirect communication from Magus LaVey.

WHAT TO LOOK FOR.

One of the most asked questions is, "Fritz, what does one look for?"

One of the best covers for Illuminati kingpins is religion. Another is philanthropy. Philanthropy ties in with Illuminati beliefs that your good deeds must balance your evil deeds to gain power--it's a gnostic cabalistic view point. The Illuminati kingpins are great philanthropists even though much of their philanthropy is self-serving.

Perhaps giving an example of a family that is suspect due to their circumstances would help illustrate this point. There is such a family which has gone almost undetected for years, and although some people fear them, they have not been reported on. Just because the police place a person on the suspect list, does not mean that the person is guilty. Everyone deserves the right to treated as innocent, until proven guilty.

One of the groups that concern this author are the rich ultra-secretive ultra-conservative Talmudic jewish groups. This exclusive group keep their children away from contact with the outside world and send them to exclusive, semi-secret schools. An example of this would be the Reichmanns of Canada, who are billionaires, and have had some connections to the Rothschilds of England. It's not that this author has problems with people observing their religious beliefs strictly (or in the ultra-conservative Talmudic groups, "ultra-strictly" better describes their extreme strictness). It's great that people have standards of belief and conduct. However, the author sees the same patterns of legalism and secrecy that pervade Old Order Amish groups, -- except in the case of families like the Reichmanns, the potential for mischief is great, because they are not involved with milking cows, but international banking. While most people are simply ignorant about the Amish but are not fearful of them, people who know rich billionaires like the Reichmanns scared to death of them and a heavy cloak of secrecy envelopes them. Renée Reichmann was the great matriarch of the Reichmanns of Canada who are Talmidim Chakham, followers of the Talmud. They are not hasidic. She is a descendent from King David, and King Solomon. She lives in Toronto. Her great-grandfather, a Gestetner, was one of the wealthiest men in Hungary. Most of her family lives in Montreal, two of her sons live in Toronto. Her children are Eva, Edward, Louis, Albert, Paul & Ralph. Samuel Reichmann is the father of the dynasty in Canada. In 1929, his egg business made him rich. He learned how to work finances and currency exchanges between different countries to make money by tricks to circumvent legalities. Their family has also gotten Rothschild financial help, and during W.W. II they worked with Koppel, who ran the Rothschild's City Bank in Gibraltar. Their family did a great many things during W.W. II from the trading center Tangier in North Africa. Tangier was located in a position to trade between the Axis and the Allies. Also during W.W. II, under the direction of the Bank of Spain the Reichmanns and others kept the Spanish currency artificially high, by creating an artificial demand for the currency. The Reichmanns made perhaps millions of dollars on currency exchanges during the war years. Don Eduardo Reichman was the administrator of del Real Estate & Commercial Bank of Tangier. Eva Reichmann married a British merchant banker. Albert Reichmann is President of Olympia & York Developments Ltd. Paul sits on the board of the Canadian Imperial Bank of Commerce (CIBC) & on the board of Rockefeller Center Properties, Inc. (a real estate investment trust for some of the Rockefeller properties in Manhattan.) Albert sits on the board of the

Mt. Sinai Hospital in Toronto, and on the board of Landmark Lands Co., Inc. which owns some of the great golf courses in Palm Springs, CA. The Ontario Ministry of Consumer & Commercial Relations has offices in buildings owned by them. They tried to buy banks in Israel. Their sect of Judaism has a Yesodeh Hatorah school for ultra-orthodox boys. Their children have very little exposure to outside world. Their children do not have access to newspapers, television, or radios. Ralph and Paul were privately educated in England at Gateshead. It's a perfect setup for trauma-based mind-control. Shmuel Reichmann is known among his kind of Jewish sect as a philanthropist who supports Torah institutions. These talmudic families consider pedigrees and genealogies very important, which is very much in line with the Illuminati's mind-set. The reason that this family is mentioned is that the Reichmanns haven't been mentioned in my previous books, and the circumstances that pervade the family have the earmarks for what this book is about. It may be that this family of billionaires consists of only wonderful people, but it is a given that most of the readers would be considered animals by these strict talmudists, who would never allow any of us of the wrong bloodlines to be accepted into their "in" group. Obviously the Rothschilds are of the right bloodline. Likewise, international bankers tend to be a Machiavellian clique, (that is not this author's opinion, but the opinion of honest hearted person who have ran in those circles.) Why has this clique accepted a family like the Reichmann's from such a narrow-minded judgemental sect into their fold? This paragraph is not written toward anyone specifically, it simply calling our attention a family of billionaires that no one knows about, which lives in veil of secrecy, and a religious setting that would make mind-control as easy as imaginable. (The Reichmanns would deny what's been written here.)

There are victims of mind-control coming in to therapists from conservative jewish groups, and at least some of these are Illuminati. The religious front could just as easily be Christian. Some of the readers of *Vol. 2* reported back that the book helped them unveil the religious fronts that had helped derail their suspicions of puzzling situations that don't add up. The next programmer to be written about uses the front of being a leader of a Satanic Cult. I say front, because Michael Aquino has created a public image for his satanic cult, and hides behind that public image. Anytime someone wants to reveal the ugly truth about him, he hollers to the effect that he is being persecuted by a wild witchhunt. He hollers that people are just having a knee-jerk reaction to his satanic occultism, and that he is really safe.

MICHAEL AQUINO, a military/cult mind-control programmer

An OVERVIEW. Michael Aquino has been a trauma-based total mind-control (Monarch) programmer for the DIA Psychological Warfare Division. He is also a prominent public satanist. A photo of Aquino in his military uniform is in the center picture section of Carl A. Raschke's *Painted Black* (San Francisco: Harper & Row, 1990.) Other books contain various pictures of him in satanic garb with ritual items. Most of the programmers have chosen to remain in the background, Aquino with his enormous ego, has chosen otherwise. Senator Byrd (KKK leader & Freemason) and Aquino have done a great deal together over the years, and have been like a team.

With the legal expertise of U.S. Sen. Robert C. Byrd, Aquino established the Temple of Set, a satanic cult as a legal religion recognized by the U.S. government and the U.S. military. This exclusive cult was designed to give these unchallenged criminals of the Network A. a legal organization whose membership consists of a mixed group of slaves and handlers, B. a market outlet for their illegal drugs and porn, C. a good public, legal, openly satanic front with which to attack all media coverage of ritual abuse. The controlled media could now excuse itself from covering ritual abuse, by saying that they had been threatened to be sued by the Church of Set. Although the Church of Set has had the entire power of the establishment protecting it from investigation and criminal prosecution, the climate of control over the United States is still not complete enough for satanists to openly get away with their mind-control. By identifying itself so intimately with the Church of Set, U.S. military intelligence has given the world an open trail of clues to help whistle-blowers expose the mind-control that has been going on throughout most of this century. Michael Aquino openly associated with men like President Ronald Reagan at the White House, again giving us the leverage to expose the secret satanic philosophies of America's leadership. Most of these men lead double lives, and due to the mind-control it has been hard to establish (except for eye-witnesses) that they are secret satanists.

HIS CAREER

The army has known about Michael Aquino's satanism from the beginning, clear back in 1968. Aquino (and some of his satanic lieutenants) received a High security clearance (reportedly level 6), and he served with the World Affairs Council. A dozen leaders within the Temple of Set were Military Intelligence officers (for instance, Capt. Willie Browning and Intelligence Officer Dennis Mann). Aquino wrote "*From PSYOP to MindWar: The Psychology of Victory*" published in the establishment's prestigious *Military Review* magazine. Aquino writes in this "From PSYOP to MindWar..." article, "...we shall create MindWar. The term is harsh and fear-inspiring, and so it should be: It is a term of attack and victory..." Aquino is a sadistic programmer, who loves to inflict pain on others.

Aquino has a doctorate in political science. He has two masters degrees (one is in political science, Univ. of CA, Santa Barbara, where he also got his doctorate). Aquino is Airborne qualified. He studied at the U.S. National Defense University. He was in Military Intelligence in Vietnam & Germany, and the Presideo. He was a Defense Intelligence Agency attaché, and taught political science on the university level. He reported directly to the Joint Chiefs of Staff and worked one on one with the Secretary of Defense Cheney. He is a pseudo-intellectual whose ego and astronomically-large pride gets in the way of real learning. He was the former national commander of the Eagle Scouts Honor Society. (The Boys Scout system is heavily influenced by Freemasons and contains unfortunately some perverts that try to take advantage of the system for their own perversions.)

There was a massive coverup in the Presideo Day Care scandal in which Aquino was involved in. There were hundreds of witnesses of the abuse. The military and intelligence put strong pressure on the San Francisco police to get them to back down from doing anything to Aquino. During that time period, the Pentagon transferred Aquino from the Presideo back to the National Defense University, Wash., D.C. (And later he wound up in the St. Louis area.) During the investigation of the Temple of Set, the FBI claimed they had no record of such an organization. The military at the Presideo, had a spokesperson tell the press that Aquino was a good soldier who did his job.

Aquino hides behind his religion. In his *Scroll of Set* Aquino accuses the father of the girl who pointed him out as her abuser as persecuting him because he is a satanist. Aquino writes, "Also relevant is his profession as a Christian clergyman; I certainly doubt that he would have made such an outrageous accusation against any Lieutenant Colonel who was not known to be a prominent Satanist." (p. 4 Oct. XXII) The truth that everyone will realize on their own is that any loving, caring father when he discovers some pervert has severely sexually molested and tortured his daughter is going to go to the police no matter what religion the villain belongs to.

In 1985, U.S. Army major Grady McMurtry of Berkeley, CA and Kenneth Grant's OTO got into a legal battle over who was the actual chartered OTO lodge in the U.S. Col. Michael Aquino of U.S. Military Intelligence watched the legal battle, and wrote these comments in the *Scroll of Set* Vol. XII no. 5, Oct. '86, "While sitting in the courtroom watching Judge Legge preside sternly over the slug-out, I couldn't help wondering if he had any idea he was ruling on which group had legal claim to anal sex as the supreme religious sacrament in the United States."

Witnesses report that one of Aquino's favorite types of sex is necrophilia, which of course can also be carried out with alters that are in a death state.

PERSONAL HISTORY.

Michael's father was an Italian Catholic. A canadian police document that this author has indicates that Michael's mother was Betty Ford. Michael's wife is Lillith Sinclair. Besides being a Satanic High Priest & Ipsissimus, and an Military Intelligence Officer in Psychological warfare, Michael was a stockbroker for a while.

In 1970, he joined the Church of Satan, and led a grotto in Kentucky. Michael gave lectures on Satanism at the University of Louisville, and used his house in Louisville for rituals. Aquino claimed to be anointed as the Second Beast, the one that Aleister Crowley prophesied in *The Book of the Law.* (See Aquino's *The Book of Coming Forth by Night.*) While LaVey shaved his head and wore horns to look the part, Aquino cut his hair in a widow's peak, plucked his eyebrows, and had a 666 tattooed under his scalp.

UNDERSTANDING THE CHURCH OF SET

His Temple of Set was set up using ranks borrowed straight from the secret Illuminati--Priests or Priestesses, Adepts, Masters (Magus or Maga), and Ipsissimus or Ipsissima. (The Order of the Golden Dawn also uses the rank of ipsissimus. His cult uses new terminology such as Setian for Satanist. It's a common tactic of cults to use new terms to separate the cult followers from the external world.

In Aquino's bi-monthly periodical *The Scroll of Set* (Vol. XIII, No. 5, Oct. XXII, 1987, pg. 2 Aquino states, "Christianity is finished as a serious contender for the minds of intelligent humans." Aquino's brand of Satanism attempts to pre-date Christian ideas and goes make to Egyptian Hermetic magic and mythology for its symbolism. Aquino also studied the Black Order and the SS in Germany and attempts to incorporate Nazi occultism and symbology into his satanic orders.

The Temple of Set advertised in occult magazines, computer bulletin boards, and ads in the San Francisco Yellow pages. When the Temple of Set expanded to Britain, David Austen from Kent, England, became Aquino's High Priest in Britain. To let the reader see just one more example of collaboration behinds the scenes of the Network, a Jesuit member of the Temple of Set continued teaching at a Catholic School after he joined the Temple.

Aquino coined the word Xeper (pronounced keffer) to mean the process of evolving a higher consciousness. Scientifically conducted research by Graphoanalysts has determined that a preoccupation with x's means a preoccupation with death. Aquino and some other satanists show their preoccupation with death by their fascination for words that begin with the letter "x".

Aquino's girlfriend Linda Blood has supposedly left the Church of Set and was at a conference that this author attended. She was very antagonistic toward the victims of mind-control at the conference, and acted in every way like a cult plant. She was very disruptive of what the victims of mind-control were trying to gain at the conference.

He has written in favor of black magic and left hand path, but since most people don't know what black magic & left hand path is, buzz words. Aquino stated on Ophray's show that Satanists work "for the good of humankind." How? By exploring the "freedom of the will." The undercurrents of his writings in his publication *The Crystal Tablet of Set* is that he and his followers have power while the rest of us are basically wimps. Witnesses report how actual human sacrifices have been alternated with faked sacrifices in the Temple of Set so that it is difficult for witnesses to tell the real from the fantasy. The Temple of Set, like the Illuminati have strict rules that members are not allowed to keep incriminating items. Their precautions to go undetected resemble the Illuminati's precautions.

UNDERSTANDING SOME OF AQUINO'S PROGRAMMING.

Like so many programmers, Aquino flies all over the country, and has victimized people in numerous states and military bases.

Michael Aquino's programming is standard military-type programming. Aquino puts in his own spirit guide into people. He likes to use his own version of Star Wars, with himself as Darth Vader, for his programming scripts. He programs in sexual and death (suicide) programs--such as the Rivers of Blood suicide protection program, and all the rest of the various types of programs. His Temple of Set functions as a programming vehicle. The rituals are designed to break the practitioners grip on reality and logic and take them into the world of visualization, and creativity. Members of Set take on a magical name, they attempt in rituals to become another persona, which is a magical double of the person called "KA". And this ka work is done on the astral plane.

Aquino is friends with Paul Kantner who is part of the mind-control scene and who put out an obvious programming song entitled White Rabbit.

In the *Vol. 2* book, the significance of Leviathan was covered. The Church of Set has an Order of Leviathan headed by James Lewis VI° of Baxley, GA.

Michael Aquino is familiar with all the standard programming, the Wizard of Oz and the other fairy tale themes. He is very proficient at programming, having many years of experience. In 1981, he used Cathy O'Brien to make two HOW TO films for training military officers in the skills needed to program slaves. These two training films were entitled "How to Divide a Personality" and "How to Create a Sex Slave." (See Cathy O'Brien's monograph "Dick Cheney and Reagan's 'Hands-On' Mind Control Demonstrations" written/released 6/92.) President Reagan respected Aquino and encouraged the military to learn his programming techniques.

Aquino likes to work with Catholic mind-control victims. He is proficient at manipulating the concept of hell and of doing satanic reversals like the Black Mass.

On the following pages are a little of the paper trail on Mind-control Programmer Michael Aquino:

- Some favorite photos of Michael Aquino in satanic garb.
- A two page letter of Aquino showing his fascination with Darth Vader. He rewrote his own version of Star Wars to use as a programming script. Programmers are given the freedom to decide what scripts they want to use.
- last page of a letter by Michael Aquino showing his preoccupation for Hitler and Nazi things.
- two pages showing the trauma that therapists discovered in children that Aquino had sexually traumatized at the Presideo Day Care Center. As readers are aware the Judicial system never pursued the case against Aquino.
- A page from the police report where the girl who claimed she had been sexually molested by Aquino was interviewed.

MICHAEL A. AQUINO

Michael A. Aquino at age 32

Damien Thorn at age 32

Not bad casting ... and the Final Conflict is dated from 1975

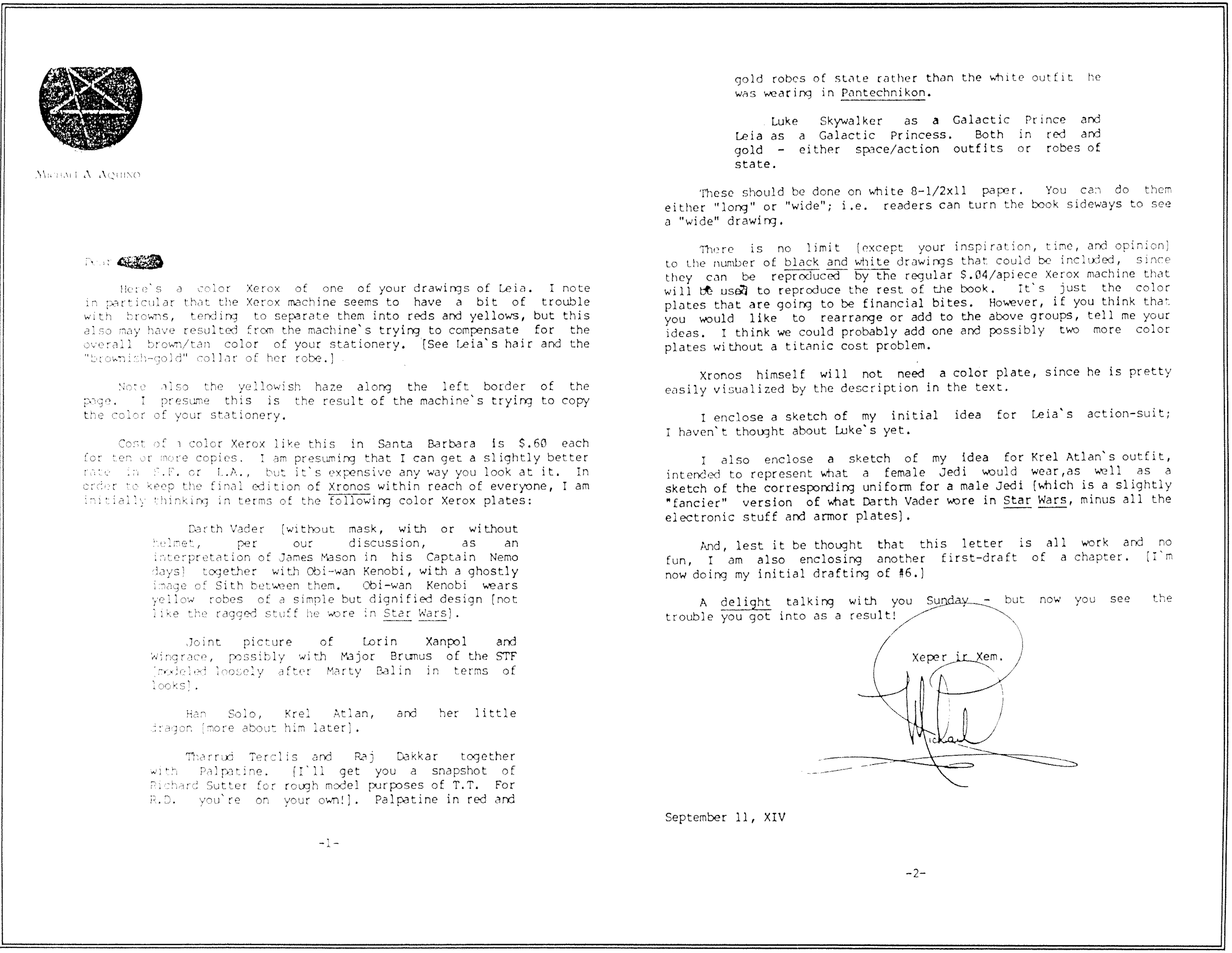

Michael A. Aquino

Dear [redacted]

Here's a color Xerox of one of your drawings of Leia. I note in particular that the Xerox machine seems to have a bit of trouble with browns, tending to separate them into reds and yellows, but this also may have resulted from the machine's trying to compensate for the overall brown/tan color of your stationery. [See Leia's hair and the "brownish-gold" collar of her robe.]

Note also the yellowish haze along the left border of the page. I presume this is the result of the machine's trying to copy the color of your stationery.

Cost of a color Xerox like this in Santa Barbara is $.60 each for ten or more copies. I am presuming that I can get a slightly better rate in S.F. or L.A., but it's expensive any way you look at it. In order to keep the final edition of Xronos within reach of everyone, I am initially thinking in terms of the following color Xerox plates:

Darth Vader [without mask, with or without helmet, per our discussion, as an interpretation of James Mason in his Captain Nemo days] together with Obi-wan Kenobi, with a ghostly image of Sith between them. Obi-wan Kenobi wears yellow robes of a simple but dignified design [not like the ragged stuff he wore in Star Wars].

Joint picture of Lorin Xanpol and Wingrace, possibly with Major Brumus of the STF [modeled loosely after Marty Balin in terms of looks].

Han Solo, Krel Atlan, and her little dragon [more about him later].

Tharrud Terclis and Raj Dakkar together with Palpatine. [I'll get you a snapshot of Richard Sutter for rough model purposes of T.T. For R.D. you're on your own!]. Palpatine in red and gold robes of state rather than the white outfit he was wearing in Pantechnikon.

-1-

Luke Skywalker as a Galactic Prince and Leia as a Galactic Princess. Both in red and gold - either space/action outfits or robes of state.

These should be done on white 8-1/2x11 paper. You can do them either "long" or "wide"; i.e. readers can turn the book sideways to see a "wide" drawing.

There is no limit [except your inspiration, time, and opinion] to the number of black and white drawings that could be included, since they can be reproduced by the regular $.04/apiece Xerox machine that will be used to reproduce the rest of the book. It's just the color plates that are going to be financial bites. However, if you think that you would like to rearrange or add to the above groups, tell me your ideas. I think we could probably add one and possibly two more color plates without a titanic cost problem.

Xronos himself will not need a color plate, since he is pretty easily visualized by the description in the text.

I enclose a sketch of my initial idea for Leia's action-suit; I haven't thought about Luke's yet.

I also enclose a sketch of my idea for Krel Atlan's outfit, intended to represent what a female Jedi would wear, as well as a sketch of the corresponding uniform for a male Jedi [which is a slightly "fancier" version of what Darth Vader wore in Star Wars, minus all the electronic stuff and armor plates].

And, lest it be thought that this letter is all work and no fun, I am also enclosing another first-draft of a chapter. [I'm now doing my initial drafting of #6.]

A delight talking with you Sunday - but now you see the trouble you got into as a result!

Xeper ir Xem.

Michael

September 11, XIV

-2-

I am pleased to report that it more or less does, save that Martin Bormann's tunnel into the Kehlstein mountain begins with copper/bronze doors and is 130m long. The brass elevator takes only a couple of minutes to reach the Eagle's Nest, and there is no flagstone in front of its upper door. On the other hand there is a very conspicuous flagstone right in front of the big fireplace, so I expect that the 10 commandments are entombed there [or were until Indiana Jones & party went off with them].

Adolf Hitler's own house - the Berghof - is now so completely overgrown with forest that it's impossible to find it unless you know where to look. [It took me a half-hour's plunging around in the underbrush]. On Walpurgis 1952 the ruins of the Berghof were dynamited by the German government; only one partially underground room remains.

Back in San Francisco I am now recovering from jet-lag, reading mail, and pondering many things.

Xeper.

of women, is as much an act of violence as it is a sexual violation, it is argued here that the abuse reverberates in a chain reaction of violence-related responses in the child victim, in his or her family, and in the mental health system that is meant to serve the child. The Presidio case was made particularly poignant by the setting (the U.S. Army) and by the necessity for the victims' families to face simultaneously the abuse of their children and the failure of goodness of the government that serves them.

BACKGROUND

At the Presidio Child Development Center, in 1986–87, a single incident of suspected child sexual abuse led to a full-scale investigation during which all the parents were informed that their children may have been victims of sexual abuse at the Center and were invited to come to the army's Letterman Medical Center if they observed any unusual physical or emotional symptoms in their children. Here the children received medical and psychological evaluations by U.S. Army representatives. Over time, the army, the FBI, and the San Francisco Police Department became involved in the investigations.

Accusations of ritualistic abuse were made against a teacher (G) and a lieutenant colonel ("Shamby") and his wife ("Mikey"); Shamby was also a high priest of a satanic sect. It was attested that children had reported group sexual activities with other children and with a doll; playing "games" in Mr. G's bed; and being brought to a house with a black room, where sexual activities of an occult nature ensued with Shamby and Mikey. Both boys and girls reported acts of fondling and penetration by Mr. G, their teacher. Clearly, this was a newsworthy event and it was quickly picked up by the media across the country. Three years later, the army had made out-of-court financial settlements with the families of the alleged victims and the teacher was reported dead of AIDS.*

This case-study analysis is based on the author's participation as an evaluator of and psychotherapist for the girls (boys were assigned to male therapists) who were alleged victims. The author's involvement began two years after the occurrence of the alleged events, when a team of lawyers was filing suits against the army on behalf of alleged victims and their families. Using process notes and evaluation records from the assessment and treatment of two of the girls (aged 3–4 when they were allegedly abused) and their families, along with anecdotal evidence from other cases, this article addresses the consequences and sequelae of institutional molestation for the child, the father, the mother, and the family system (consultation with therapists of the male victims revealed similar overall findings). More specifically, it underscores the unique features of sex and violence in the nursery when the perpetrator of the abuse is that historic symbol of patriarchal protection, the military establishment.

SEQUELAE OF ABUSE

Finkelhor and Browne *(1985)* proposed that the experience of sexual abuse should be analyzed in relation to four trauma-causing factors: traumatic sexualization, betrayal, powerlessness, and stigmatization. In addition, they recommended assessing both the preabuse and postabuse situations in determining the psychological effects on the child victims. In the case of extrafamilial abuse, this model is applicable to the victims' families, as well as to the victims themselves.

According to Finkelhor and Browne's model, the preschool child who is a victim of sexual abuse is at risk of severe levels of trauma, of which, in addition to the obvious sexual traumatization, betrayal and powerlessness are particularly salient factors. Often, when a child enters a day care center, it is his or her first contact with the institutional world outside the family. At a young age, the child is asked to trust a stranger for care, succor, and daily guidance. The child relies on the parents' assurance that this unfamiliar situation is safe and healthy. Given such assurance, the child typically allows an attachment to develop with the day care provider or teacher and literally puts him- or herself in that person's hands.

---

* All the victimized children who received a medical evaluation tested negative for the HIV virus at the time of their initial evaluation. Recent research, however, indicates a possible incubation period during which negative test results can be found.

At the Presidio, it was that very person who victimized the children, first by violating them sexually and then by warning them that, if they ever told their parents, great harm would come to them and their families, and that they would probably never see their parents again. The majority of the children did not tell their parents, who did not find out about the situation until the Center sent a letter warning them that their children may have been abused.

As with incest, the preabuse situation in which the child has trusted an adult who then accosts that child creates great emotional and cognitive confusion ("If this person is caring for me and I am totally dependent on him, he couldn't possibly be doing anything bad"). In addition, it engenders strong feelings of betrayal when the child comes to recognize that this person *did* do something bad to him or her and that mother and father did nothing to stop it.

The severity of the trauma for children at the Presidio was immediately manifested in clear-cut symptoms. Before the abuse was exposed, parents had already noticed the following changes in their children: vaginal discharge, genital soreness, rashes, fear of the dark, sleep disturbances, nightmares, sexually provocative language ("Go down on the doll—69," "Get it up the butt," "Lick the doll's twat," "Hump on the doll"), and sexually inappropriate behavior (a four-year-old girl grabbing her older male cousin's genitals). In addition, the children were exhibiting other radical changes in behavior, including temper outbursts, sudden mood shifts, and poor impulse control. All these behavioral symptoms are to be expected in preschool children who have been molested *(Haugaard & Reppucci, 1988; MacVicar, 1987; Sink, 1988)*.

Of particular note were the children's responses when they were first asked by their parents if something bad had happened to them at the day care center. One child screamed and ran out of the room. Another whimpered, "They're going to hurt you if I tell," and still another said, "I can't tell, or they'll kill you." Only later, after they were reassured that they would be protected, were the children able to report that "Mr. G touched my private parts," "Mr. G had me touch his penis," "We passed around a doll and were told to touch the doll in certain parts," "Mr. G took me to his house to see his beds," "I had to do something embarrassing in front of all the kids."

These responses highlight the second salient feature of the children's trauma: their sense of powerlessness. The children had felt powerless to tell their parents because of the grave harm they believed would come to their families if they did. This was not paranoid or fabricated fear: a trusted adult, a representative of the U.S. Army, had actually told them so. But, left to the devices of their own fantasy lives at the age of magical thinking, the children elaborated on these fears, sometimes to a bizarre degree. Their only choice was to channel the anxiety and trauma into formation of symptoms, until their parents, on the basis of the warning letter, began to question them on the matter. Only later, once the children entered the mental health system, did the full cycle of trauma, terror, and rage unfold. This phenomenon can best be understood by tracking the children and their families through the postabuse process, from discovery to treatment.

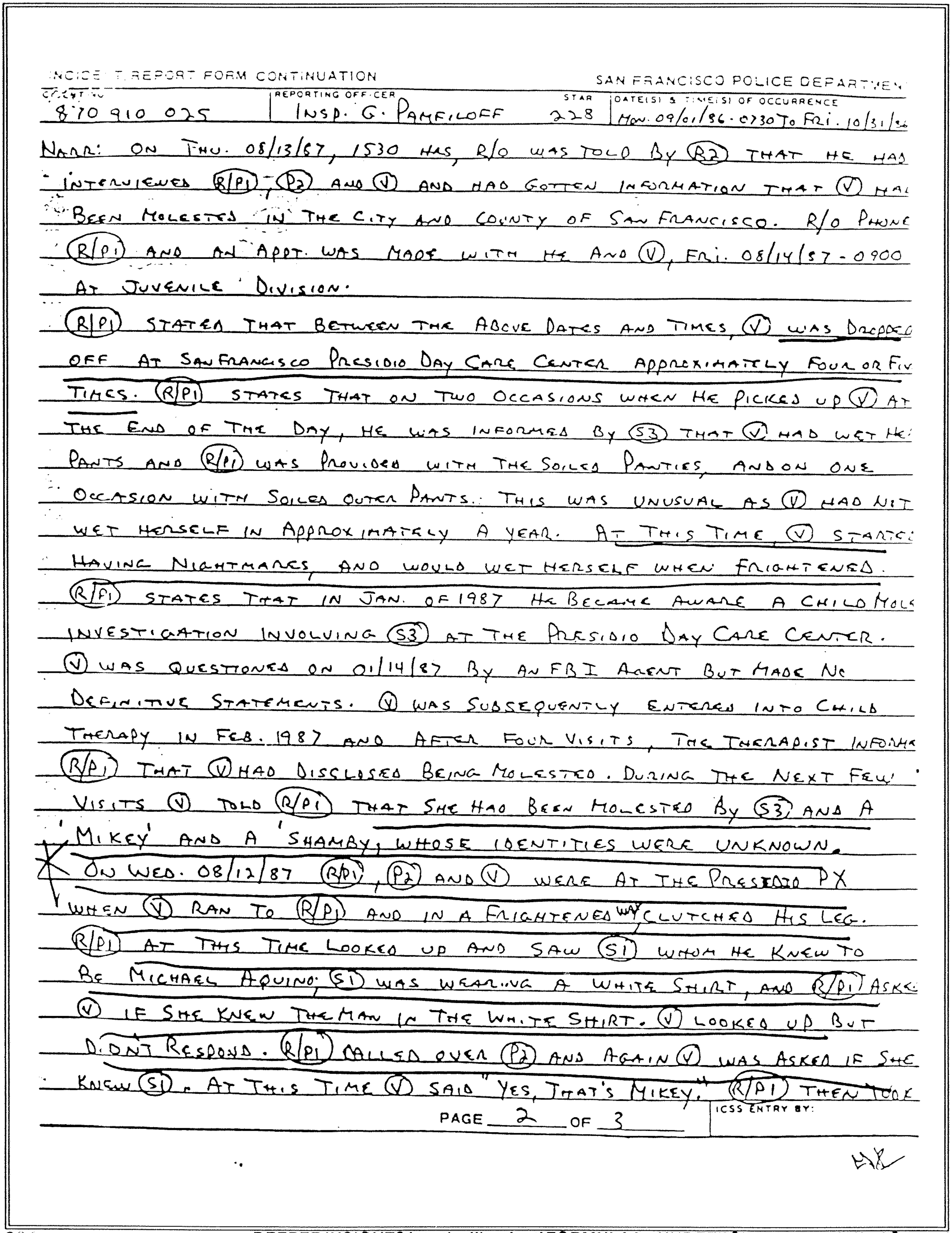

INCIDENT REPORT FORM CONTINUATION

SAN FRANCISCO POLICE DEPARTMEN

COUNT NO	REPORTING OFFICER	STAR	DATE(S) & TIME(S) OF OCCURRENCE
870 910 025	INSP. G. PAMFILOFF	228	MON. 09/01/86 - 0730 TO FRI. 10/31/86

NARR: ON THU. 08/13/87, 1530 HRS, R/O WAS TOLD BY (R2) THAT HE HAD INTERVIEWED (R/P1), (P2) AND (V) AND HAD GOTTEN INFORMATION THAT (V) HAD BEEN MOLESTED IN THE CITY AND COUNTY OF SAN FRANCISCO. R/O PHONE (R/P1) AND AN APPT. WAS MADE WITH HE AND (V), FRI. 08/14/87 - 0900 AT JUVENILE DIVISION.

(R/P1) STATED THAT BETWEEN THE ABOVE DATES AND TIMES, (V) WAS DROPPED OFF AT SAN FRANCISCO PRESIDIO DAY CARE CENTER APPROXIMATELY FOUR OR FIV TIMES. (R/P1) STATES THAT ON TWO OCCASIONS WHEN HE PICKED UP (V) AT THE END OF THE DAY, HE WAS INFORMED BY (S3) THAT (V) HAD WET HE PANTS AND (R/P1) WAS PROVIDED WITH THE SOILED PANTIES, AND ON ONE OCCASION WITH SOILED OUTER PANTS. THIS WAS UNUSUAL AS (V) HAD NOT WET HERSELF IN APPROXIMATELY A YEAR. AT THIS TIME, (V) STARTE HAVING NIGHTMARES, AND WOULD WET HERSELF WHEN FRIGHTENED.

(R/P1) STATES THAT IN JAN. OF 1987 HE BECAME AWARE A CHILD MOL INVESTIGATION INVOLVING (S3) AT THE PRESIDIO DAY CARE CENTER. (V) WAS QUESTIONED ON 01/14/87 BY AN FBI AGENT BUT MADE NO DEFINITIVE STATEMENTS. (V) WAS SUBSEQUENTLY ENTERED INTO CHILD THERAPY IN FEB. 1987 AND AFTER FOUR VISITS, THE THERAPIST INFORM (R/P1) THAT (V) HAD DISCLOSED BEING MOLESTED. DURING THE NEXT FEW VISITS (V) TOLD (R/P1) THAT SHE HAD BEEN MOLESTED BY (S3) AND A 'MIKEY' AND A 'SHAMBY', WHOSE IDENTITIES WERE UNKNOWN.

ON WED. 08/12/87 (R/P1), (P2) AND (V) WERE AT THE PRESIDIO PX WHEN (V) RAN TO (R/P1) AND IN A FRIGHTENED WAY CLUTCHED HIS LEG. (R/P1) AT THIS TIME LOOKED UP AND SAW (S1) WHOM HE KNEW TO BE MICHAEL AQUINO. (S1) WAS WEARING A WHITE SHIRT, AND (R/P1) ASKE (V) IF SHE KNEW THE MAN IN THE WHITE SHIRT. (V) LOOKED UP BUT DIDNT RESPOND. (R/P1) CALLED OVER (P2) AND AGAIN (V) WAS ASKED IF SHE KNEW (S1). AT THIS TIME (V) SAID "YES, THAT'S MIKEY." (R/P1) THEN TOOK

PAGE 2 OF 3

ICSS ENTRY BY:

Appendix 2

Programming Sites

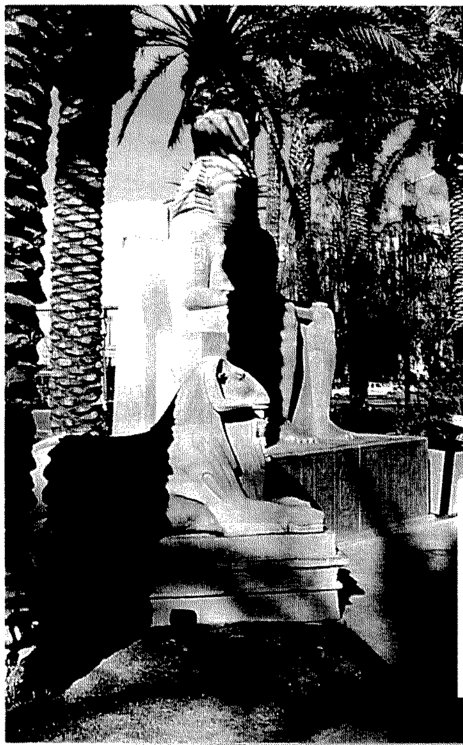

Top Left is the Egyptian theme. MGM's pyramid casino & sphinx. **Top right** is the dollhouse (a front world) theme. & **bottom left** is a booth with a wizard, a rainbow, a castle, & storybook characters. In the **center bottom** are a group of trumpetors in a casino which will match internal activity which at times is announced with internal trumpetors. At the **center right**, is a set of buildings (a world) with another world of buildings behind it. Isis dominates the entire scene. Illum. alters will see the statue as Isis. The dark green building in the center will represent to them Lucifer or the dark green AntiChrist alter who is in the center of a system. A handler can take his slave to any major land in the world & never leave Las Vegas.

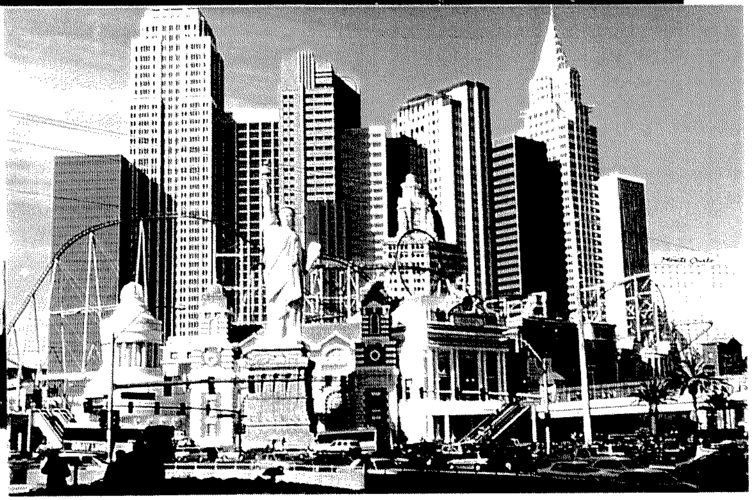

Electronic Crossbow

These are Fritz's photos of Las Vegas which has become a major programming center. The world of make-believe is dominant at Las Vegas. This serves several mind-control purposes: a. the slave finds it hard to separate fantasy from reality in a world where fantasy is dominate, and b. it reinforces the message that it's O.K. to have fantasy & make-believe, and c. the programmed corporate executive who gambles in this make-believe casino world, doesn't have reality hit until the checkbook hits him when he returns home. For non-programmed individuals the occult fairy tale atmosphere of Las Vegas is a curiosity, while it helps lock a mind-controlled slave's deeper alters solidly into the mind-control.

OREGON STATE HOSPITAL, E. CENTER ST., SALEM, OR 97310, A PROGRAMMING SITE, & the HUB FOR OREGON'S TUNNEL SYSTEM

Salem, OR lies in the beautiful Williamette Valley. It is also situated in an area that is dotted with small towns that are satanic strongholds. This author, Fritz, has been investigating Illuminati & Satanic covens in all of the surrounding towns: Mill City, Scio, Lebanon, Eugene, Albany, Rickreal, Monmouth, Sheridan-Willamina, Silverton, and Mt. Angel. The Satanic/Masonic/Illuminati activities have their roots in confederate secret societies during the Civil, the KKK, the Knights of Pythias, Freemasonry, the Chinese Triads (and Wong branch of the Li Illuminati family) that came in during Oregon's pioneer days, and the B'nai B'rith which gave good front organization for the cabalistic jewish merchants, bankers, & jewish mayors scattered all over Oregon, many of whom came directly from Germany in the pioneer days to lead Oregon's economy.

An unpublished paper written by a Salem resident (Ben Maxwell, 3760 Dallas Rd., NW, Salem, OR 97304) about the Oregon State Hospital (that means Mental-Psychiatric Hospital), says the following about the hospital during the 1940s-50s when it was first beginning to be used for Illuminati mind-control programming:

- In 1942, forty-seven inmates at the hospital died from poison placed in their food.
- Maxwell states, "For many years selection of a superintendent was a matter of political preferment and not always of much regard for ability." (p. 2 of paper on OSH)
- In the 40's and 50's "most medicine offered was prepared to induce sleep." (p.3)
- "Water pumped from the penitentiary to the hospital was often polluted." (p.2)

The hospital has 12 major buildings to it. and covers several city blocks. The hospital opened in 1883. By 1957, the hospital owned 1,907 acres of land, and in that year it was in the process of buying hundreds more acres. In the *Oregon Blue Book* for 1949-50, they give the patient (inmate) population at 2874 persons, and state that the Hospital is equipped with general medical and surgical equipment, as well as equipment for psychiatry. Brain surgery was being performed at the hospital. According to witnesses A-B-& C Wards are closed. Inmates from the State Prison, which is immediately adjacent to the hospital on the south side, were frequently taken from the prison to the hospital via the secret underground tunnels and given lobotomies. A small rail line runs between the State Psychiatric Hospital and the State Maximum Security Prison. The State Hospital grounds had a crematorium (table-size), which was very helpful in getting rid of dead bodies. This crematorium had a 6'x6' door. New psychiatrists took their residency training to become certified psychiatrists at the Oregon State Hospital complex.

What is not known by very many people is that the Oregon State Hospital is owned by the Catholic church, even though it is run by the government. In fact, the Catholic church was very involved in the mind-control that has gone on in the State Hospital for over half a century. Homosexual priests were sexually used to make victims angry and to traumatize the victims (for programming purposes) when they came out of sedation. The Catholic Church began to fall apart in the 1960's by mass defections, and the church fell back onto mind-control to stabilize the situation. Many children were programmed to become priests and nuns so that the church would not collapse. Not far from Salem is Mt. Angel, a monastery, and another one near McMinnville was used for years for the secret child smuggling operations that has gone on.

OREGON STATE HOSPITAL, E. CENTER ST., SALEM, OR 97310, A PROGRAMMING SITE, & the HUB FOR OREGON'S TUNNEL SYSTEM

architectural drawing of hospital area & tunnels by
Fritz Springmeier, copyright Fritz Springmeier

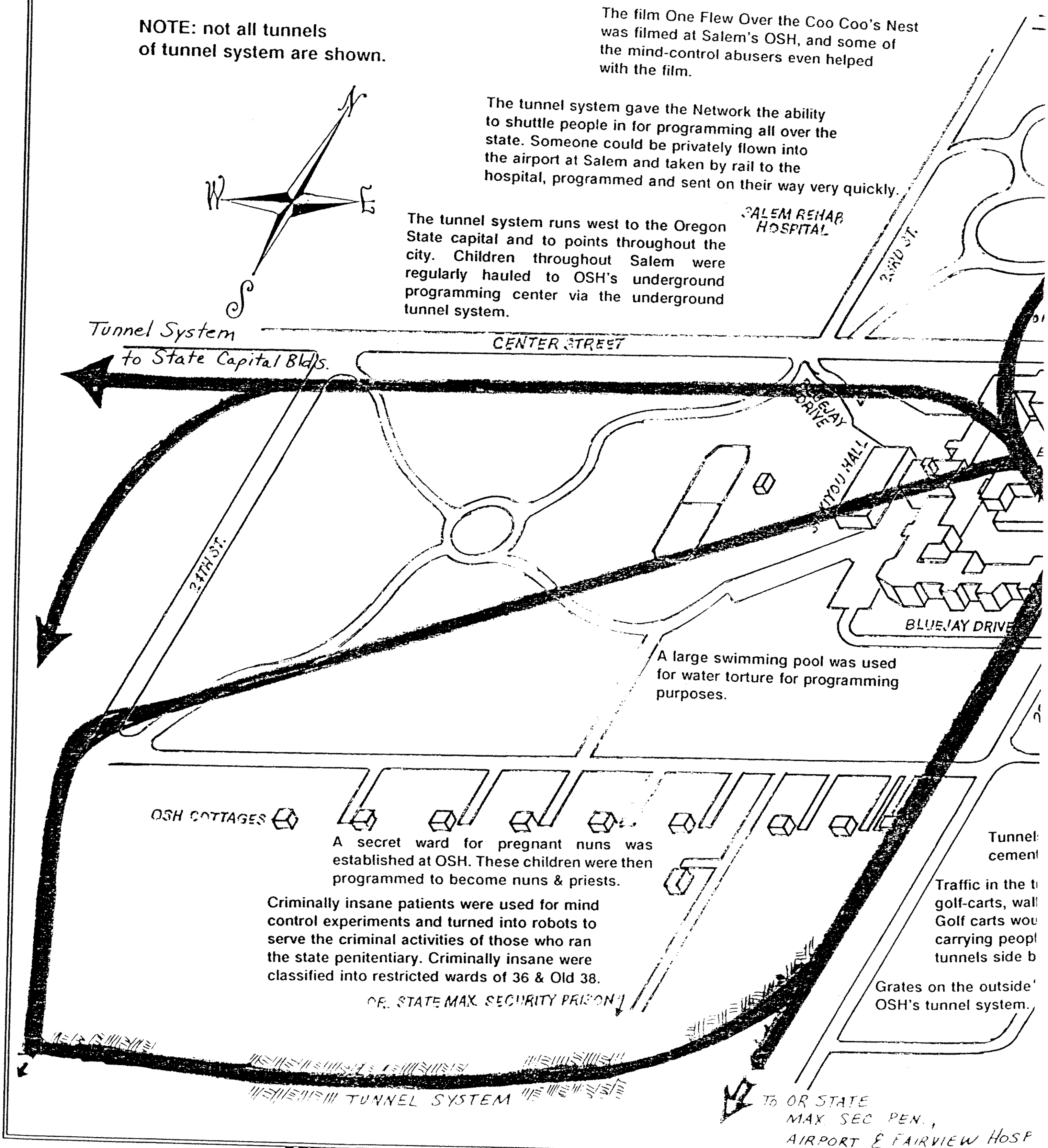
N
W
E
S
Tunnel System to State Capital Blds.
CENTER STREET
24TH ST.
23RD ST.
SALEM REHAB HOSPITAL
BLUEJAY DRIVE
SISKIYOU HALL
BLUEJAY DRIVE
OSH COTTAGES
OR. STATE MAX SECURITY PRISON
TUNNEL SYSTEM
TO OR STATE MAX SEC PEN., AIRPORT & FAIRVIEW HOSP

NOTE: not all tunnels of tunnel system are shown.

The film One Flew Over the Coo Coo's Nest was filmed at Salem's OSH, and some of the mind-control abusers even helped with the film.

The tunnel system gave the Network the ability to shuttle people in for programming all over the state. Someone could be privately flown into the airport at Salem and taken by rail to the hospital, programmed and sent on their way very quickly.

The tunnel system runs west to the Oregon State capital and to points throughout the city. Children throughout Salem were regularly hauled to OSH's underground programming center via the underground tunnel system.

A large swimming pool was used for water torture for programming purposes.

A secret ward for pregnant nuns was established at OSH. These children were then programmed to become nuns & priests.

Criminally insane patients were used for mind control experiments and turned into robots to serve the criminal activities of those who ran the state penitentiary. Criminally insane were classified into restricted wards of 36 & Old 38.

Tunnel
cement

Traffic in the t
golf-carts, wall
Golf carts wou
carrying peopl
tunnels side b

Grates on the outside
OSH's tunnel system.

M, OR 97310,
TUNNEL SYSTEM

's Nest
e of
d

ickly.

s used
nming

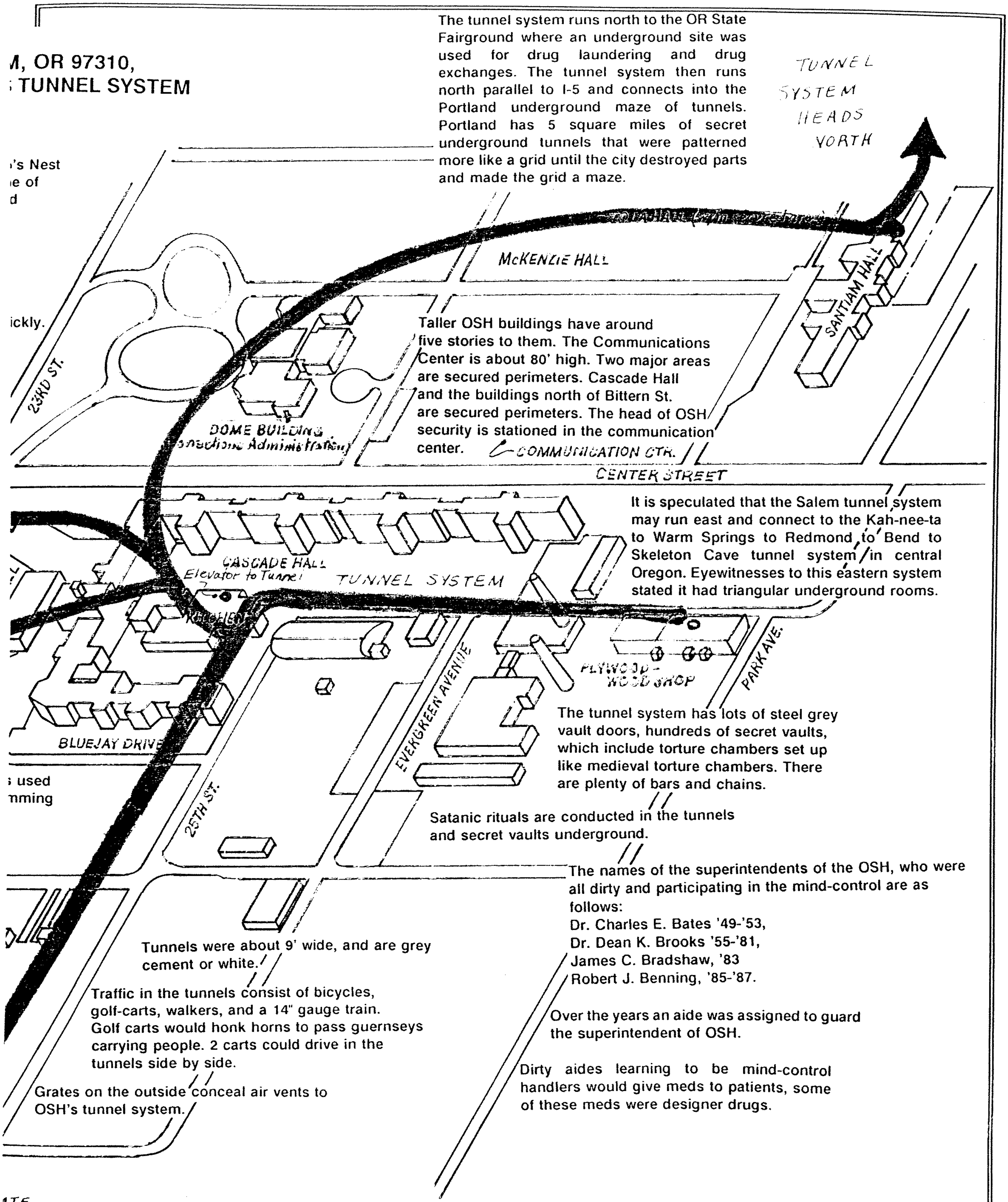

TUNNEL SYSTEM HEADS NORTH
McKENZIE HALL
SANTIAM HALL
23RD ST.
DOME BUILDING
Institutions Administration
COMMUNICATION CTR.
CENTER STREET
CASCADE HALL
Elevator to Tunnel
TUNNEL SYSTEM
KITCHEN
PLYWOOD - WOOD SHOP
PARK AVE.
EVERGREEN AVENUE
BLUEJAY DRIVE
25TH ST.

The tunnel system runs north to the OR State Fairground where an underground site was used for drug laundering and drug exchanges. The tunnel system then runs north parallel to I-5 and connects into the Portland underground maze of tunnels. Portland has 5 square miles of secret underground tunnels that were patterned more like a grid until the city destroyed parts and made the grid a maze.

Taller OSH buildings have around five stories to them. The Communications Center is about 80' high. Two major areas are secured perimeters. Cascade Hall and the buildings north of Bittern St. are secured perimeters. The head of OSH security is stationed in the communication center.

It is speculated that the Salem tunnel system may run east and connect to the Kah-nee-ta to Warm Springs to Redmond to Bend to Skeleton Cave tunnel system in central Oregon. Eyewitnesses to this eastern system stated it had triangular underground rooms.

The tunnel system has lots of steel grey vault doors, hundreds of secret vaults, which include torture chambers set up like medieval torture chambers. There are plenty of bars and chains.

Satanic rituals are conducted in the tunnels and secret vaults underground.

The names of the superintendents of the OSH, who were all dirty and participating in the mind-control are as follows:
Dr. Charles E. Bates '49-'53,
Dr. Dean K. Brooks '55-'81,
James C. Bradshaw, '83
Robert J. Benning, '85-'87.

Over the years an aide was assigned to guard the superintendent of OSH.

Dirty aides learning to be mind-control handlers would give meds to patients, some of these meds were designer drugs.

Tunnels were about 9' wide, and are grey cement or white.

Traffic in the tunnels consist of bicycles, golf-carts, walkers, and a 14" gauge train. Golf carts would honk horns to pass guernseys carrying people. 2 carts could drive in the tunnels side by side.

Grates on the outside conceal air vents to OSH's tunnel system.

ATE
SEC. PEN,
RT & FAIRVIEW HOSP

THESE SHEEP, CALVES, & MICE IN THESE PHOTOS WERE ALL CLONED

CLONES

PHOTOS SHOWING THE POPE'S DOUBLE

True Pope Paul VI. Notice his ears.

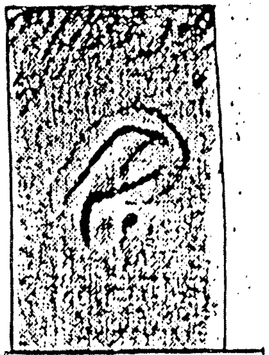

Ear of the true Pope Paul VI

Blessed Mother said that Pope Paul VI was drugged and made a Vatican Prisoner (1972) by Cardinals Benelli, Villot and Casaroli who was made Secy. of State 1978. They forged documents to bring in Novus Ordo Mass written by 6 Protestant Clergy.

Above is True Pope Paul VI. He does NOT wear eyeglasses for near-vision. Note his SQUARISH Ear Lobe shown above, and compare with ear lobe of IMPOSTOR Pope below, which is ROUND. This proves that an Impostor replaced Paul VI. Ear lobes are unique as fingerprints. They have held up as absolute PROOF of Identity in the Court of Law.

The Noses also are quite different. The true Pope has a longer straight nose, (above), compared to the stubby, broad nose of the Impostor. He was once in a Seminary.

The False Pope, below, wears extremely thick eyeglasses, and is helpless without them. He reads all of his speeches.

The False Pope is younger, more determined, sure of himself. He is undignified, and kissed the shoes of Schismatic Greek. He fired Card. Mindszenty, ordering stop of life story.

The eyes of the False Pope are green; Paul VI has BLUE EYES.

IMPOSTOR POPE IS AN ATHEIST !, (Blessed Mother, Oct. 2, 1976) He is a Roman Actor, given Plastic Surgery. Initials are P.A.R.

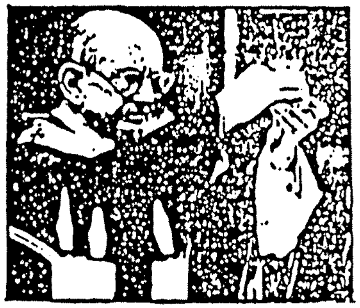

The false Pope Paul VI and Cardinal Mindszenty (left of this picture), concelebrating Mass in the Sistine Chapel at the 1974 Synod of Bishops.

WHO IS THIS IMPOSTOR?

He Ruled Sep. 1975-Aug. 1978!

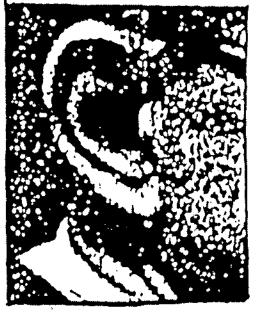

Ear of the Impostor. Plastic Surgeon has since "redone" ears!

APPENDIX B.
THE PROGRAMMING SITES

Some more MAJOR MIND-CONTROL PROGRAMMING SITES with explanations of their programming. This list is added as a supplement to those sites exposed in the Vol. 2 book. Slaves have to come in to the "SHOP" periodically to have certain maintenance programs renewed to maintain the power of the programming. Most slaves that are being used in operations come in at a minimum every 2-3 years. Most people who have been programmed are sleepers. And many people who have horrible programs to carry out are programmed for the next few years.

All kinds of sites are used, for instance, Boy and Girl Scout camps, a big church in Greensboro, NC, a desert site near Tucson, AZ, and hotels in New Orleans. Many people who have been "recruited" (beguiled and trapped) into the mind-control are seen being sent to Colorado Springs, CO. A network of daycare centers has been established worldwide by the Illuminati's Network for the programming and recruiting of children. A series of Youth Hostels has also been created (originally by the communists) for Network goals, and have been widely used by the communist faction of the World Order. The elite have their own schools, such as Eaton School in the UK which receives some Illuminati children under mind-control.

Watch the Office of Global Analysis, which is an intelligence group for global analysis for the NWO. Also watch out for the National Program Office (NPO) which is reported to have been created in 1982 to oversee "black" programs of the intelligence agencies. The National Reconnaissance Office (NRO) is another black ops group. This group is in part housed within the Pentagon and deals with assassination teams. It uses lots of illegal funds which it launders through another Pentagon agency called the DSAA (Defense Security Assistance Agency). Gen. Howard Fish, Mr. Eric Von Marbod, Gen. Phil Gast were the men in DSAA that laundered the NRO's money. I. Irving Davidson, who has one foot in the mafia & one in the military black ops is a go-between. One of the assassination programs they ran years ago was the Zeta Diogenes (ZD) project. Different agencies that participated had different codes for the programs. The men used in these NRO programs are mind-controlled slaves in some cases, it is not known what % if any are not under mind-control. They are organized as cells and are operating in various military, national guard, and secret reserve units.

Present-day Russia's Guards Directorate has two "counter-terrorist" divisions Alfa and Vympel. These were formerly part of the KGB, and employ mind-controlled victims in their work.

OP-06-D is the unit assigned to perform penetration tests to determine security at these different military/intelligence bases used for programming.

Air Force Units to watch:
- Aerospace Defense Intelligence Center ADIC
- Air Force Intelligence Support Agency AFISA (recent name) of the Air Force's all sources intelligence organization.
- Kelly AFB has the 693rd Intelligence Wing located there.
- ERT (Air Force Swat Teams)

Army Units to watch:
- Pentagon
- Military Intelligence which calls itself INSCOM. INSCOM units are all over the world incl. Area 51, White Sands, Ft. Meade, and their Vint Hills Farm Station at Warrenton, VA near the old Manassas battlefield sites. Their Ft. Huachucha in AZ appropriately sports a Sphinx statue.

So many intelligence people came from the Illuminati initiating centers of **H**arvard, **Y**ale, & **P**rinceton that the acronym HYP was applied to some of them by others in an allusion to the word "hype." For the first half of MI-6's history, **only women from the elite**, the aristocracy were recruited to work in MI-6, for this reason the women at MI-6 were called Queenie. As Illuminati members of the hierarchy, they were indeed given various Queen positions.

The crossovers occur both ways. One finds intelligence people in places like Yale and the big Illuminati corporations. For instance, a military psychologist Alexander R. Askenasy, who worked in the area of mind-control for the Army, later taught at Princeton, and then went on to a prominent position at the NY State Psychiatric Institute & the Dept. of Psychiatry, Columbia Univ. Another example is Robert Finley Delaney, who worked with the Navy in PSYOPS, the State Dept. and also worked for ESSO Standard Oil company. One final example in a list of examples that seems to go on forever, the Professor of Psychology at Yale was Irving L. Janis, a military man who worked in military psychological research and PYSOPS, and who co-authored *Communications and Persuasion, Personality and Persuasibility*.

DICTIONARY OF PROGRAMMING CENTERS (cont. from Vol. 2)

ARCO (Atlantic Richfield Co.)--This company contiually keeps popping up during investigations/research on Mind-control. John Coleman in report *The Tavistock Institute* states that several men on ARCO's Board of Directors were trained by Tavistock incl. Jack Conway, Philip Hawley, and Dr. Joel Fort.

Alice Springs, Australia--is home of USAF Detachment 421 involved with intelligence

Amarillo, TX --near Amarillo is a major underground programming center called "the Station." Inside Amarillo are other collaborating sites such as an ophthalmologist's office.

Armed Forces Medical Intelligence Center (AFMIC). This center uses mind-controlled slaves, incl. those who are members of the Green Berets.

Austin, TX--The Rebecca Baines Johnson Convalescent Home, at 21 Waller St., Austin, ph. no. 512-476-6051, has had a Cray-3 computer (with at least a 1,000 megaflop capability) secretly placed into the Johnson Convalescent home for the purpose of secretly being a command post for sending control signals to people who have body suits of implants. Signals from here radiate to many far off places to control victims of implant mind-control.

Boulder, CO--The headquarters for EMC, a type of electra-magnetic mind control that is being broadcast to modify the thinking of Americans, and to control slaves.

Bristol, Eng.--Burden Neurological Institute.

the CIA empire. The CIA's empire carries out mind control of its assets in many locations. CIA HQ, nicknamed "the campus", is a Langley, VA. It might be pertinent to point out a few of their organizations that are active in mind control. Staff D, has a CIA assassination group, referred to at one time as ZR/RIFLE. Their Central Cover Staff (fka Operational Services Division) manages mind-control agents. The Office of Scientific & Weapons Research has carried out some of the mind-control research.

You will find mind-control regularly carried out within what has been called the Directorate for Research, the Directorate of Science & Technology (fka DDR), and the Directorate of Operations (fka DDP Dir. of Plans until '73) which ran the TSD later known as the Office of Technical Services, and their CI Staff (Counterintelligence Staff a part of the Dir. of Ops.). The CIA operates a vast array of research & operational programming centers.CIA assets:

Programmed slaves are fanned out into CIA organizations such as Air Asia, Air Ethiopia, American Newspaper Guild, Communications Workers of America (CWA), International Catholic Youth Federation, The International Confederation of Free Trade Unions (ICFTU), International Federation of Journalists (with HQ in Brussels), the International Police Academy (in Wash. D.C.) & the National Students Assoc. (NSA- with HQ in Washington D.C.). Other known CIA fronts have included Allied Pacific Printing in Bombay, India; Asia Research Centre in Hong Kong;...Gibraltar Steamship Company,... Programmed multiples also are injected into everywhere else too. They work at spying, drug mulling, assassination, and supplying the CIA leadership with sexual slaves.

Camp Bullis [sp.?], TX

Dallas, Doctor's Hospital-- An important major programming center, this is located at Garland Rd. at Buckner Blvd. Ph. 214-324-6100. This hospital has a psych wing to it. Baylor Univ. Med Center, 3504 Swiss Ave. in Dallas is also involved in mind-control programming, as well as the Texas Women's Univ., 1810 Inwood Rd. (214-689-6500), Dallas.

Deep Creek Cabins, just west of Ft. Detrick, MD.-- These cabins located in the general area of the Magothy River, are a series of cabins surrounded by water & used for sexual programming & sexual training by the intelligence agencies. The area was reported by one slave to have been labelled Subproject #74.

El Reno, OK--Federal Correctional Institution used for implant and electronic mind-control. Inmates were subjected to this type of mind-control as experimental fodder.

Esalen Institute, Big Sur, CA. Esalen is the Tavistock of America. They give workshops on hypnosis, biofeedback, Witchcraft (for instance, their Rituals of Transformation class). Instructors include: witch Margo Adler, Cranio-sacral D.O. Jim Asher, psychologist Adam Burke who specializes in trance training, Patti Lawrence (who does cranial work), Caroline Muir (a tantric sex yoga expert), Robert Swanson (a Dolphin expert), Charles Tart (a expert w/ altered states of consciousness), Karen Turner (a witch psychologist), & Anna Wise who is skilled in using EEGs to measure & train brain waves. These are only a few of the many occult or interesting instructors that the Esalen Institute has.

Ft. Drum, NY (Camp Drum)--near Watertown, NY. This military reservation is used for training troops in winter fighting, as well as having been used for a remote mind-control programming facility in northern NY.

Ft. George Meade, MD, National Security Agency (NSA). It's interesting that in Sidney Sheldon's novel *The Doomsday Conspiracy* published by Time-Warner in 1991 that the author/researcher Sheldon has NSA commander Robert Bellamy thinking to himself as he enters Ft. Meade, "My God, I'm in the land of Oz." (p.13) After being given his assignment, he wonders (on pp. 20-21) "I feel like the White Queen in Through the Looking Glass. Why sometimes I've believed as many as six impossible things before breakfast." Well, this was all six of them." One of the projects that the NSA run with mind-controlled slaves is Project Mirror (Op. # 6317-ABL-4) which consists of about 30 programmed assassins, who are debriefed after their assassination mission and then killed and cremated. The NSA has had two RNM computerized systems for tracking people by monitoring their evoked emissions, and for transmitting thoughts (as well as audio and visual messages) to people's brains. NSA Cryptologists have gotten computers programmed to decode what a person's state of mind & thoughts are when their brain emissions are picked up from a distance. Other groups which conduct mind control which work closely with the NSA would include for instance: Air Force Space Command/NORAD, Unified Command ELINT Centers, and Space Surveillance. The NSA's "Human Sources" of intelligence are often subjected to mind-control. The Air Force has run a Texas facility called TRIMS, which has exhibition rooms for slaves, which has been used for mind-control programming.

Ft. Polk, LA--The Delta Forces are stationed here, and are programmed and trained here. MJTF (Multi-jurisdictional Task Force) troops, the BATF & other federal agencies train in kicking in civilian doors & martial law type tactics. Ft. Bragg is HQ for the mind-controlled Delta Force. Ft. Bragg is a major satanic center in the military.

Kanoehe State Hospital, Oahu, HA--This hospital connects with the Naval Base and Naval intelligence. It has been used for programming slaves, as well as Tripler VA Hospital on Oahu island. Kunia, HA is the site of an NSA listening post. Kaneohe, HA also has an underground installation, which is used at least in part by the U.S. Pacific Fleet. Naval intelligence in Hawaii has been involved in mind-control.

Kirtland AFB, NM, Sandia National Lab--the Sandia Labs have been used for mind control. The one in NM is at Kirtland AFB 87117 (505-845-8692). It has bunkers that have been used for mind-control. The one in Hawaii is at Hanapepe on the Garden Island of Kauai (808-335-5611). Sandia Labs also has a presence in Albuquerque, NM. Sandia Labs has worked on such secret projects such as the W-88 nuclear warhead which was mounted on the Trident II missiles carried by Ohio-class subs. Mind-controlled slaves help keep Sandia Lab's research secret.

Lexington, Kentucky --On the west side of Lexington is the Lexington airport and next to the airport is a castle that is just south of highway 60 and across from Keeneland Race Course. This castle's original owner is dead. A CIA operative owned it for a while and then it went into receivership. Then the Federal government got the property (a 100 yr. lease). The castle was a major mind-control programming center, as well as a narcotics depot & a money laundering base. Tunnels existed. The castle is believed to no longer be in use for mind-control, although that is not known for sure. This Lexington, KT programming center within the castle was well situated to connect with a U.S. Veterans Hosp. on the NW side of Lexington, a nearby Fed. Correctional Institute (near Brackton), radio towers are all over the area, and the Kentucky State Horse Park with racetracks all built after 1965 is nearby. Scott Gen. Hosp. and an Orphan School at Midway, and the catholic St. Francis Mission are also in the vicinity.

Los Alamos, NM--A site for research into non-lethal weapons, such as syntel for mind-control. The T-13 Complex Studies Group has been researching artificial-life.

Maine--The CIA used an International Children's Summer camp for MK Ultra mind-control. This summer camp was probably not related to the International Children's School at South Burlington, VT which also has summer school. There is also an International Children's School tied to the UN in New York, it is not known whether it ties in or not.

New Orleans, LA--Some of the hotels and restaurants are being used for mind-control. This author suspects (but has no proof) the Ursuline Academy (a Ursuline Convent school) on State St., Bacco Italian restaurant (a relatively new expensive restaurant named after the roman god Baccus and which has had lots of money put into it, and excellent food located in the Hotel de la Poste, French quarter), and the avant-garde Pelican Club (in the heart of the French quarter) tie in with the Network. Upper Bourbon Street is a gay community, and Bourbon St. was originally a voodoo center. Just off of Bourbon St. is the New Orleans Historic Voodoo Musuem. This is the only voodoo museum in the world, and it has voodoo dolls and readings available for visitors.

Oswego, NY--Served as a programming site on Lake Ontario.

The **Presideo of Monterey, CA**--This place is not to be confused with the Presideo of San Francisco. This Presideo has the Monterey Defense Language Institute (DLI). Slaves who have scarred brain stems are sent here to develop language skills.

Princeton, NJ--

Salt Lake City, UT--St. Mark's Hospital, 1011 Sunberry Dr., Salt Lake City (801-268-7422) has been used for programming.

Stockholm, Sweden--Söder Hospital has been involved in implants. Dr. Curt Strand & others, & the Swedish Police SÄPO were involved in implanting unsuspecting victims.

Pelican Bay Prison, (WI?)--Isolation Tank Programming was what made this prison famous.

Utah State Prison (Gunnison Facility & Draper Prison) and Utah State Hospital, Univ. of Utah Med. Center--inflicted directed energy rape of the inmates, pressure chamber sensations in the inner ear, voices and all types of electronic control. The med center was used to implant various types of implants into people. Prison psychiatric staff participated with the mind-control. They routinely used a variety of well-planned tactics to falsely label inmates as psychiatric cases so that they could force-medicate them and then subject them to mind-control. Inmates were subjected to round the clock brainwashing rhetoric for months on end, after they got the implants. These Utah institutions began cooperating with the secret implant mind-control experimentation in the 1980's. When inmates complained of the mind-control they were forced medicated. Hundreds made complaints about the mind-control but the system was able to shut them up. The controllers running the implants had the voices being beamed coming from places like the planet "Astra." Several inmates got the Astra script.

Vancouver, B.C.--Hollywood Hospital was used for LSD programming for years.

Vermont--A remote mountain site is used for programming. Victims are helicoptered in.

Veterans Administration Hospitals, Medical Centers and Clinics. All of these have been used for mind-control. These hospitals are located in Baltimore, MD; Battlecreek, MI; Bedford, MA, Birmingham, AL; Brockton, MA; Buffalo, NY; Butler, PA; Canandaigua, NY; Columbia, MO; Clarksburg, WV; Des Moines, IA; Fayetteville, AK; Fresno, CA; Huntington, WV; Hines, IL; Jackson, MS; Kerrville, TX; Knoxville, IA; Lincoln, NE; North Chicago, IL; Northport, NY; Prescott, AZ; Providence, RI; St. Miami, FL; St. Temple, TX; Salibury, NC; Salem, NC. This list is not comprehensive as some have been closed and this is a list of active ones.

Washington, D.C.--The secret NOD underground installation which is connected to the intelligence groups like NSA and the CIA as well as many other nefarious groups lays under the White House with tunnels connecting this NOD installation with the

House of the Temple. The Supreme council of the 33° of the Scottish Rite's House of the Temple has a 14' x 25' room in it with 13 chairs where the Illuminati's Grand Druid Council meet. The NOD Deep Underground Installation has numerous levels to it. One eyewitness, went to level 17 (via an elevator) and stated that he believes that deeper levels exist. The NOD installation is involved with psychic (demonic) and satellite control over slaves. This underground complex is to allow the government of the United States to escape a nuclear attack. The enormous complex radiates under Wash. D.C. and connects with many other sites. The tunnel system is used to move some of the mind-control sex slaves. The walls and ceilings of the tunnels are ceramic tile with fluorescent lighting recessed into the ceilings.

****

DEEP UNDERGROUND MILITARY BASES (DUMB BASES)

In the U.S., approximately 140 of these DUMB bases exist, and they employ perhaps over 200,000 people. A geologist friend of this author who helped build these DUMB bases, gave his life to get the truth out to the American people. He was a programmed multiple of the Illuminati, and some of his alters knew it. Because these underground bases play such a vital role in the entire mind-control NETWORK, I will list these bases here, even though they have been given previously in my *Ezek. 6:3* book.

DUM (Deep Underground Military Bases)

SELECTED TOP SECRET UNDERGROUND INSTALLATIONS THAT THREATEN OUR LIBERTY

140 secret underground facilities have been built, many are underground small-cities. A number of these bases have been described to me by witnesses including NORAD, Dulce, Coos Bay, and Dreamland.

What I am describing is a series of large underground facilities which are connected with tunnels. The tunnels carry extremely fast trains. Train terminals are up to 1 million sq. ft. in area, with multiple levels. Underground facilities contain computer centers, genetic experimentation, mind-control research, housing for several nationalities of humans and several varieties of aliens. The corporations which assist the NWO are able to quietly interlink their facilities via the tunnel system too, as well as disperse some of their workers into the world above ground.

There are approx. 50 ways tunnels and underground facilities are dug, which include high pressure continuous water jet, low pressure percussive water jet, high freq. electrical drill, turbine drills, pellet drills, spark drills, explosives, hydraulic rock hammers, lasers, electron beam guns, forced flames, etc. These various tunnelling methods can be broken down in Mechanical (such as a water canon), Thermal (such as a high velocity flame, laser, atomic fusion, etc), and Chemical (such as a dissolver). The beautiful thing about nuclear subterrenes (rhymes with submarine) is that they don't leave any debris to dispose of. These nuclear subterrenes are building tunnels 40' in diameter, and as these machines work the rock is melted into a hard, glassy tunnel lining.

Air-intake shafts bring fresh air to the tunnels and underground facilities. Underground facilities have fuel storage units, air-conditioning, water reservoirs, dining, medical, sleeping and storage units.

Many of the underground sites are close to railroads and have entrances that trucks can drive into. Some of the entrances for trucks are protected by holograms that look like the side of a mountain, but allow vehicles if one just drives through them. The other style of hidden entrances are buildings where trucks drive in and are lowered via access shafts down into the underground areas.

Security for some (such as Groom Lake) of the facilities is maintained by Wackenhut. Penetration tests on facilities are carried out by a special unit called OP-06-D which are HQed at Offutt AFB, NE.

Format is as follows:

Site name, site location (warning: longitudes & latitudes were quick off of the head estimates), group/groups in control, size, activity

ARIZONA

◘ 1. Fort Huachuca. 31°50' N 110° 19'48" W, saucer base below, intelligence training above, mind-control incl. too.

◘ 2. Gates Pass Base

◘ 3. Gila Mountain Area, south of Interstate 8 and approx. 30 east of Yuma, AZ. 29° N 116°W. DUM base.

◘ 4. Grand Wash Cliffs, on western edge of the cliffs at the head of Grapevine Wash. Must be reach via hwy 93 and then unpaved roads. DUM base.

◘ 5. Green Valley

◘ 6. Hualapai Mountains, east side of the mountain range, about 35 mi. SE of Kingman, AZ

◘ 7. Rincon Mtn., north side of Rincon Mtn

◘ 8. Mt. Lemmon

◘ 9. Page

◘ 10. Safford, near Safford

◘ 11. Santa Catalina Mountains - base

ARKANSAS

◘ 12. In the vicinity of Hardy and Cherokee Village. 36° 19' N 91°29' W. Installation purpose not known.

◘ 13. Pine Bluff, Ark. area. 34° 13.4' N 92°01.0'W to 34°30' N 92° 30'W. saucer base.

CALIFORNIA

◘ 14. 29 Palms Marine Base, Identified on military map as airspace area R-2501N. Saucer base southeast of Ludlow. This is a U.S. alien research/ diagnostic facility and UFO base.

◘ 15. China Lake, mind control and weapons research

◘ 16. Darwin, CA, 4 miles dues west of Darwin

◘ 17. Deep Springs, CA, 37°22' N 117° 59.3' W. saucer base

◘ 18. Fort Irwin, CA, 35°20'N 116°8' W. saucer base

◘ 19. Edwards Air Force Base, in the area where Diamond Cr. & the so. fork of the Yuba meet, there are 3 underground UFO bases. 34°8' N 117° 48' W

◘ 20. George Air Force Base, CA - saucer base

◘ 21. Helendale, Lockhead Underground Facility, 34°44.7' N 117° 18.5' W. Technology for secret projects. There are 3 saucer bases here.

◘ 22. Los Angeles, On Hwy 14 towards Edwards A.F.B. after Palmdale, one turns off and after taking several streets to 170th street, north on 170th St. to the Rosamond-170th intersection, the second and lower and better maintained dirt road will take you west, and if you take a right going north at the power lines and up to the hilltop you will see the top of an underground NORTHOP facility. Technology for the elite's secret projects. This area was very active in the 1970s. Northrop's facility is near the Tehachapi Mtns. It has been reported to go down 42 levels. It is heavily involved with electronics and hi-tech aerospace research.

◘ 23. Mt. Shasta

◘ 24. Kern River, CA the hollowed out mountain next to the hydroelectric facility at the Kern River Project near Bakersfield- reported saucer base

◘ 25. Napa Valley- located at Oakville Grade north of Napa, CA. Tunnels also connect the wineries north of Napa, used for white slavery and mind-control. Has a saucer base.

◘ 26. Norton Air Force Base- saucer base

◘ 27. Quincy, CA, 39° 56.2' N 120° 56.5' W. saucer base

◘ 28. Near Palmdale (if one takes Palmdale Blvd. til 240th St. and goes to Ave R-8. One the eastern limit of Ave. R-8 is McDonnell-Douglas's facility called the Llano Facility. One can see it better from the Three Sisters Hills to the south of the facility. Strange shaped disks raise out of the ground on pylons. These attached disks glow and change color. It is involved in hi-tech aerospace technology.

◘ 29. Presidio, CA - A FEMA/DOD site for Region IX's regional office

◘ 30. San Bernardino, CO, 34° 50' N to 34° 16' N

◘ 31. Santa Barbara County - placed in the thick diatomite strata

◘ 32. Santa Rosa, 38° 26.4' N 122° 42.9' W, FEMA, Regional center for west coast, what FEMA is doing is mostly kept secret. This is listed as a Communications Antenna Field, but is doing much more.

◘ 33. Sierra Nevada Mountains, CA - very deep military base

◘ 34. Tehachapi Ranch- 4 saucer bases, Tecachapi Canyon has a new underground base which was finished in Sept. '95. This is the "Unholy 6" base of the Orions. 35° 20' 118° 40'

◘ 35. Trona, CA, 35° 45.5' N 177°22.6' W --several miles northwest of Trona, directly under Argus Peak. This DUM sits on China Lake's NWC's land, and may have been built in the '60s.

COLORADO

◘ 36. Alamosa, 37° 28.1' N 105°52.2' W- reported saucer base

◘ 37. Book Cliffs, CO, 39° 40' N 108° 0' W near Rifle, CO -

◘ 38. Boulder, CO--The headquarters for EMC, a type of electra-magnetic mind control that is being broadcast to modify the thinking of Americans, and to control slaves.

◘ 39. Colorado Springs, NORAD --Canada & U.S., & FEMA, hundreds of people on staff, contains at least 4.5 cubic miles of underground caverns and 45 underground steel buildings. Many underground chambers are as large as 50' x 100 '. This complex tracks thousands of satellites, missiles, submarines, and UFOs. NORAD also controls many Monarch slaves who have ALEX, JANUS, ALEXUS endtime callback programming. NORAD installation has 1278 miles of road underground.

◘ 40. Fort Collins- base for Gray aliens

◘ 41. Grand Mesa- Orion saucer base

◘ 42. Montrore Co.--north of Paradox, in Paradox Valley. The site in Paradox Valley can be reached via Hwy. 90 via Nucla.

CONNECTICUT

◘ 43. North west Connecticut

FLORIDA

◘ 44. Massive base- reported saucer base

◘ 45. Eglin AFB, 30° 40' N 86° 50' W- Orion saucer base since 1978

GEORGIA

◘ 46. Atlanta, GA --FEMA regional center, which is appropriately placed since Atlanta is to become a capital within the NWO redrawing of boundaries. Atlanta is believed to have several underground installations in its area, one to the north at Kennesaw Mtn., Marietta, GA connected to Dobbins AFB and one to the south of Atlanta at Forest Park.

◘ 47. Thomasville, 30° 50.2' N 83°58.9' W, FEMA, regional center, they train groups in Search and Destroy missions for when Martial Law is imposed. This is SW Georgia in area of tunnels.

IDAHO

◘ 48. Lower Goose Lake area in the general area of Oakley, ID.--Wackenhut of the Illuminati run a "model prison" for the NWO. The worst of the federal prisoners are placed in this underground prison which has 7,100 cells which are filled with about 2,700 federal inmates. A track runs through the middle of the eerie underground facility. Food and showers are on the tracks, and the men are allowed showers once a week. The minimum of lighting is used and the men are beaten senseless if they talk at all. It sits 500' underground.

◘ 49. South central Idaho--under the Snake River lava flows between Twin Falls and Idaho Falls.

INDIANA

◘ 50. Bedford & Lawrence Co. area--continued activity in large old mines indicates a possible government use of the large old quarries.

KANSAS

◘ 51. Atchison, KS--the DIPEF underground facility, which the govt. would run in an emergency. AT & T maintains an underground facility at Fairview, KS.

◘ 52. Kinsley--an underground UFO base

MARYLAND

◘ 53. Camp David--just north of the camp is an underground facility important to the intelligence agencies.

◘ 54. below Ft. Meade, of the National Security Agency, 10 acres of the most sophisticated supercomputers that can be built, very large complex, massive surveillance of all the world's communications, including all transmissions in the U.S. & world of telephones, telegraph, telex, fax, radio, TV and microwave transmissions.

◘ 55. Olney, actually the facility is between Olney and Laytonsville, on Riggs Rd. off of Rt. 108. Another underground facility may also exist in the area, FEMA & possibly NSA, the facility may be 10 levels deep, purpose unknown.

◘ 56. Suitland, MD- Classified archives of U.S. Govt. stored here in underground levels. Vaults have extensive amounts of documents which are not indexed. Restricted access with a coded security card. High level intelligence groups operate in the area also.

MASSACHUSETTS

◘ 57. Maynard, 42° 26.0' N 71°27.0' W FEMA, regional center, Wackenhut is here too.

MICHIGAN

◘ 58. Battle Creek, 42° 19.3' N 85° 10.9' W FEMA, regional center, activity secret (not validated)

◘ 59. Gwinn, MI, 46° 16.8'N 87° 26.5' W, near Gwinn is a large underground base which is a key base for sending signals. An AFB is also nearby. Under Lake Superior is an alien base with roads 5,000' deep.

MISSOURI

◘ 60. 12 miles south of Lebanon, 36° 02.8' N 115° 24.3' W, near the newly created town of Twin Bridges- reported saucer base

◘ 61. In the Bat/Dry/Dead Man/ Howell cluster of caves- reported saucer base

◘ 62. St. Francis Mountains, MO (between St. Louis & New Madrid)

NEBRASKA

◘ 63. North-central Nebraska

◘ 64. Red Willow Co. near McCook, NE

NEVADA

◘ 65. Blue Diamond, 36° 02.8'N 115°24.3' W -reported saucer base

◘ 66-68. Groom Lake, also known as Dreamland, Area 51, The Area, the Spot, Red Square, Sally Corridor, Watertown Strip. 115° 50'N 37°20' W. Run by the NWO along with demonic beings, the CIA is there and Wackenhut Security. Two large underground facilities close to but separate from Groom Lake but controlled by the demonic beings are Papoose Range and Cockeyed Ridge (S-4) underground bases. Purpose is the testing of various UFOs and other secret aircraft like the Aurora and Stealth. Also biological work is done, including the biological raising of small greys. Many levels have been built at these three complexes, and a 7 mile long run way (which is actually 39 miles) has been built over Groom Lake, a dry lake. There is an S-2, an S-4, an S-6, and an S-66 underground installations. S-66 is the most secret and it has 29 levels and is 11, 300' deep.

◘ 69. Quartzite Mountain SE of Tonopah, 37° 31'N 116° 20' W- reported saucer base

◘ 70. Tonopah, Airforce, CIA? & ??, deals with secret aircraft

NEW HAMPSHIRE

◘ 71-73. There may be as many as three underground installations in New Hampshire's hills (according to reports).

NEW JERSEY

◘ 74. Picatinny Arsenal, 40° 38'N 74° 32' W- saucer base, 1/4 cubic mile large & very deep underground.

NEW MEXICO

The state of New Mexico and Colorado have been used for the construction of a series of underground bases. (All the rest of the states have too.) The Primary Underground facilities in New Mexico consist of:

- 3 enormous underground bases in the Dulce, NM area (an area I spent several days investigating in 1993)
- the White Sands--Alamogordo Area which has 3 underground bases
- Datil and Pie Town which have two more underground bases. (Carlsbad Cavern which had underground activity, which is reported discontinued, and another base to east of Carlsbad.)
- the Los Alamos area underground facility
- the Taos area underground facility

The New Mexico area has basically four underground system out. One goes to the 4-corners area and then to Groom Lake (Area 51). One goes north toward Delta, CO and Colorado Springs. The Taos facilities goes north approximately along Interstate 25 and eventually ties in NORAD. The southern bases connect to Texas and Mexico.

The Los Alamos facility dates at least back to 1940. One can only imagine what has been built with 1/2 century of labor on this underground system.

Visitors to the deeper levels report humans kept in glass cylinders, plus many other strange things. I have had the opportunity to debrief some people who have been in the lower reaches of some of these facilities.

There are special badges, special uniforms, tube elevators etc. which for lack of time I will not describe.

◘ 75. Angel Peak- reported saucer base

◘ Carlsbad Cavern area (now destroyed), 32° 25.0'N 104° 14.0'W -old relics of saucer base left

◘ 76-78. Dulce, N.M., 36° 56.0'N 106°59.8'W,--South of Dulce,in the area of the Jicarilla Indian Reservation, another facility is east of the Dulce facility a number of miles. This is run directly by Illuminati w/ Army and Airforce help, CIA also conduct experiments at the center; the size of the installation is hugh requiring small shuttle trains and has seven levels according to witnesses. Serves as a UFO base, biological experiments, production center for small-grey drones. Wackenhut provides some of the security on the ground.

◘ 79. Kirtland AFB, NM, Sandia National Lab

◘ 80. Manzano Mtn, near Albuquerque, known as the Kirtland Munitions Storage Complex, Airforce, 3,000-acre base within the Kirtland AFB/Sandia National Labs complex, guarded by 4 lethal rings of fences, use unknown, suspected UFO base. A new 285,000-sq. ft. bunker is being built near Manzano Base.

◘ 81. Pie Town, 34°17.9'N 108°08.7'W, in area near Pie Town, UFO Base.

◘ 82. Sandia Mountains NE of Albuquerque -reported saucer base

◘ 83. to the north of Taos Pueblo

◘ 84. White Sands, 32°22.8'N 106°28.8'W, major hub for research, tied in with Dulce & NORAD, HQ for NASA /military shuttle flights, radiation research ctr. and mind control.

NEW YORK

◘ 85. Adirondack Mountains (near Elizabethtown)

◘ 86. New York Metro area

◘ 87. Plattsburgh (near Canada and St. Albans) AFB, 49°40'N 73°33 W- two saucer bases in this area.

OKLAHOMA

◘ 88. Ada, 34°46.4' N 96°40.7' W, underground saucer base, this base does human cloning, and it is FEMA's most sensitive base.

◘ 89. Ashland Naval Ammunition Depot, 34°45.9'N 96° 04.3'W,- reported saucer base

OREGON

◘ 90. Bull Run, north side of Bull Run Reservoir area near Mt. Hood, and very close to Larch Mtn. and south of Benson St. Park of the Columbia Gorge.

◘ 91. Coos Bay area has had three separate but coordinating underground facilities built for UFOs. The facility farthest east, about 20 miles inland in the wilderness near Hwy 42, has been shut down. It is now an old abandoned facility well camouflaged. The coast facility is probably still operational.

◘ 92. Klamath Falls, OR--since Sept. '95 this has been a base for a number of NWO groups incl. the Air National Guard, FEMA, CIA, FBI, Spetznaz, and

MOSAP training base. An underground concentration camp exists here.

PENNSYLVANIA

◘ 93. Blue Ridge Summit, near Ft. Ritchie, known as "Raven Rock" or "Site R", Army, major electronic nerve center, 650 ft. below surface with about 350 staff and over a 716 acre area. possibly connected via tunnel to Camp David.

TEXAS

◘ 94. Ft. Hood, TX, 31° 15'N 97° 48' W, home of some Delta Mind-Controlled soldiers and a reported saucer base.

◘ 95. Denton, TX, 33° 13.2'N 97° 08.2'W - FEMA, regional center, activity secret

◘ 96. Red River Arsenal, TX- reported saucer base

VIRGINIA

◘ 97. Bluemont, Mount Weather base, Federal Preparedness Agency & FEMA, small-city underground, top-secret, staff of several hundred, does secret work for FEMA and contains a complete secret government with the various agencies and cabinet-level ranking administrators that keep their positions for several administrations and help run the United States.

◘ 98. Culpepper, 38° 28.5 N 77°59.8'W, about 2 miles east of Culpepper off of Rt. 3, called Mount Pony, Illuminati--Fed. reserve, 140,000 sq. ft., includes a facility for the storage for corpses, monitors all major financial transactions in the U.S. by means of the "Fed Wire", a modern electronic system.

◘ 99. Pentagon, Arlington, VA--

◘ 100. Warrington Training Ctr.--two sites one on Rt. 802 and the other on Bear Wallow Road, on Viewtree Mountain. One is Station A the other Station B. Army & ??, purpose unknown

WASHINGTON

◘ 101. Bothell, 47°45.7'N 122°12.2' W, FEMA, regional center, activity unknown

WASHINGTON, D.C.

◘ 102. WHITE HOUSE, 38°53.5'N 77°02.0'W--The secret NOD underground installation which is connected to the intelligence groups like NSA and the CIA as well as many other nefarious groups lays under the White House with tunnels connecting this NOD installation with the House of the Temple. The Supreme council of the 33° of the Scottish Rite's House of the Temple has a 14' x 25' room in it with 13 chairs where the Illuminati's Grand Druid Council meet. The NOD Deep Underground Installation has numerous levels to it. One eye-witness, went to level 17 (via an elevator) and stated that he believes that deeper levels exist. The NOD installation is involved with psychic (demonic) and satellite control over slaves. This underground complex is to allow the government of the United States to escape a nuclear attack. The enormous complex radiates under Wash. D.C. and connects with many other sites. The tunnel system is used to move some of the mind-control sex slaves. The walls and ceilings of the tunnels are ceramic tile with fluorescent lighting recessed into the ceilings.

WEST VIRGINIA

◘ 103. Sugar Grove, the Navy's Office of Naval Strategic Intelligence Services monitors U.S. microwave communications. There is also a saucer base here.

◘ 104. White Sulphur Springs, under the Greenbriar Hotel, a mini-city large enough for 800 people equipped with its own crematorium, if there are any other purposes other than listening to U.S. microwave communication it is unknown by this author.

UTAH. In Utah, the Kennecott Copper Company has been connected to the Illuminati and the KKK. These connections have been exposed in other writings by this author. Kennecott's mine (reported to be owned by the World Bank) in the Salt Lake City area is serviced by Union Pacific, which is reported connected to the Mormon Church. The mine is receiving a heavy volume of big trucks after 11 p.m., for instance, in a normal night over 6 dozen large trucks with 2 trailors each rolling into the mine. In other words, it appears that the heavy train & tractor trailor activity indicates something besides mining. A recent book has come out with some of the accounts of some Mormon victims of mind-control. The book describes how Mormon officials such as the prophet & LDS President Gordon B. Hinkley abused a victim in secret satanic rituals in the Mormon temple. The series of satanic rituals were done in the Creation Room, the Garden Room, & the Terrestrial Room, which were protected by plastic. Everything sacred was mocked. The Terrestrial Room which used to teach the Law of Consecration was called the "Law of consummation" where vampirism & rape takes place. The five points of fellowship are for 5 men to rape a female. The woman, who reported this SRA/programmed DID activity was grabbed & buried alive by LDS men and left for dead. Another Utah LDS victim, remembers being taken to the Salt Lake City Temple via an underground tunnel & into a Pink (pinkish salmon) underground room. A circle of Mormon leaders wearing black robes, & blue aprons with the all-seeing-eye then abused this victim, & sacrificed the woman's child. At the ritual, the woman, who lost her child, recognized the 12 LDS church apostles.

Appendix 3
CLONING

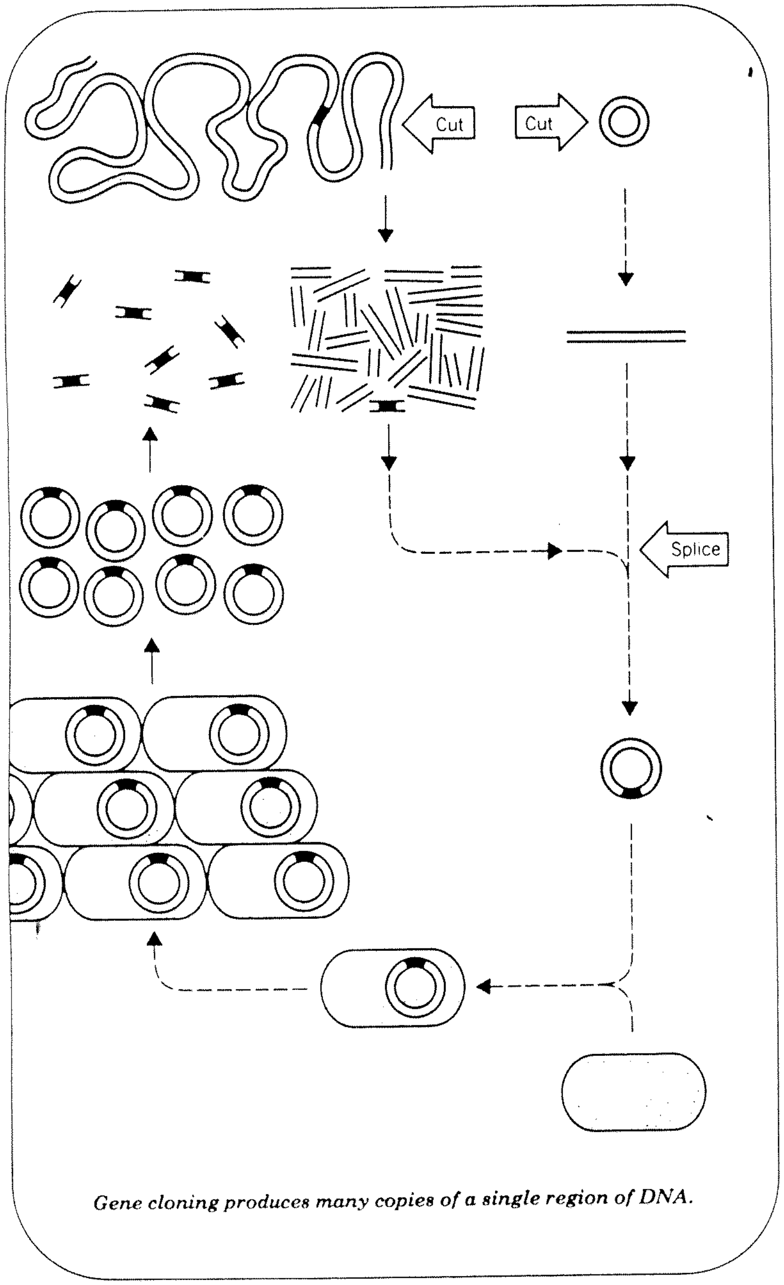
Cut
Cut
Splice

Gene cloning produces many copies of a single region of DNA.

Major Steps Involved in Gene Cloning.

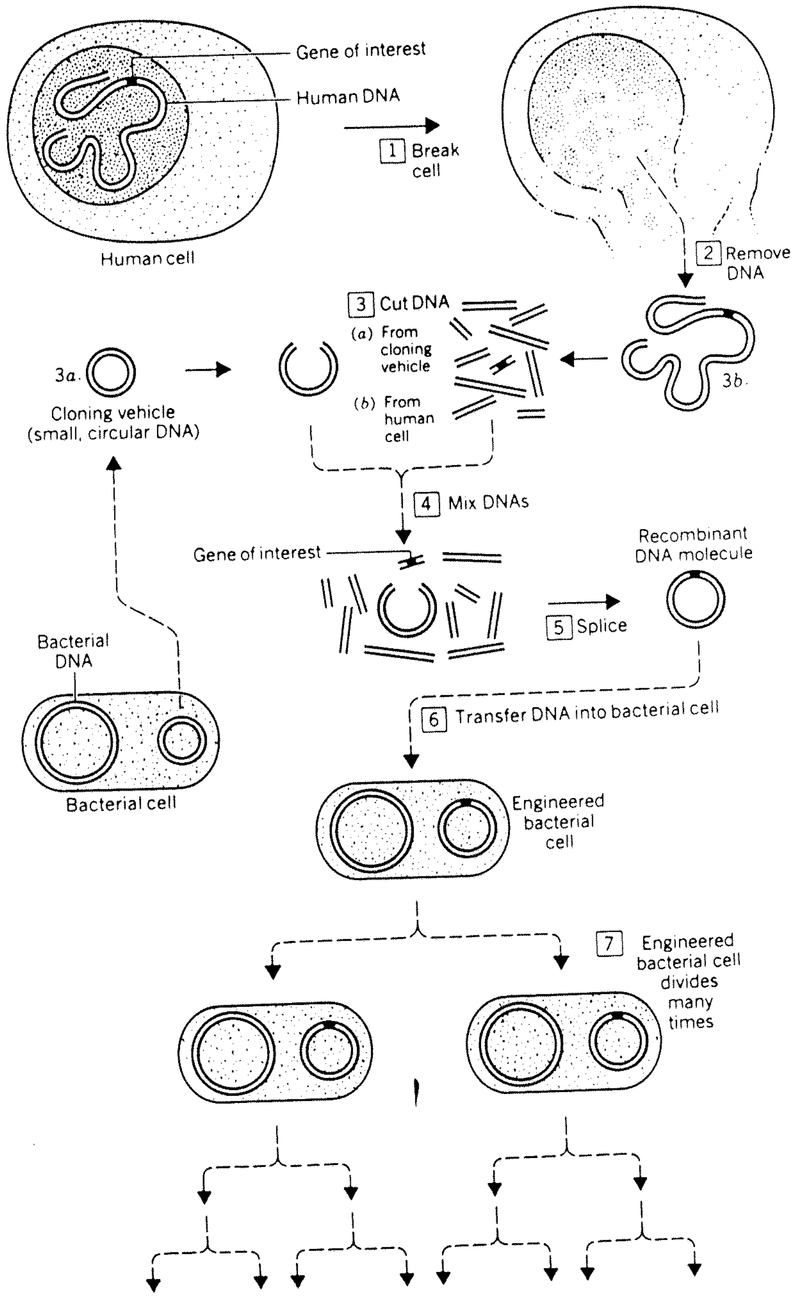
Gene of interest
Human DNA
Human cell
1 Break cell
2 Remove DNA
3 Cut DNA
(a) From cloning vehicle
(b) From human cell
3a.
3b.
Cloning vehicle (small, circular DNA)
4 Mix DNAs
Gene of interest
Recombinant DNA molecule
5 Splice
Bacterial DNA
Bacterial cell
6 Transfer DNA into bacterial cell
Engineered bacterial cell
7 Engineered bacterial cell divides many times

APPENDIX 3. CLONES, SYNTHETICS, ORGANIC ROBOTOIDS AND DOUBLES

PUBLICLY ANNOUNCED GENETIC EVENTS

1890-- A rabbit embryo was successfully transplanted to a foster mother rabbit's uterus.
1944-- A human ova was fertilized in vitro, that is in layman's terms an egg was artificially inseminated in a test tube.
1952-- Briggs & King in Indiana University clone a frog.
1970s-- Rand Corporation predicts that "para-humans" will be genetically created to do menial tasks in the future. In a totally different affair, Lord Rothschild, who is a physiologist who has studied genetics, warned that self-centered fanatics might set up cloning shops privately. Lord Rothschild suggested to genetic scientists that a clone controlling organization with world wide jurisdiction to license cloning be set up to protect the world from evil men who might want to clone people for evil purposes. He called his suggestion "Commission for Genetical Control."
1977-- Announcement of the first successful cloning of a person, which was done for someone very wealthy. This whole affair came under strong attack by the establishment. The book giving the shrouded details came out in 1978. The author went into hiding, and our Congress had a parade of establishment research doctors testify at a hearing to debunk the book and to reassure the public that medical researchers were too concerned about ethics to clone people. The author was convinced of the veracity of the cloning event, although the media/establishment doctors claimed the author wrote the book merely as fiction.
1980-- Twinning (bisection of an embryo), which is a form of cloning was successfully done with horse foals, sheep and cattle had already been cloned in this fashion in the previous years.
1981-- Mice are cloned. And embryo transfer for cattle becomes a thriving business.
1983-- A water buffalo embryo was successfully transplanted to a foster mother buffalo.
1984-- A human embryo was successfully transplanted and born with a human foster mother.
1997--A successful human clone is publicly announced.

Scientists working in secret got serious about cloning in the early 1960's. Abortions began to be performed wholesale at this time to provide fetal tissue for their cloning work.

The young generation of Americans are asking, "When will cloning of people take place?" The answer is that it already has long ago.

An article recently written by Andrew Kimbrell that was placed in many leading daily papers across the U.S. is quite revealing. He comes right up to almost telling people what has been going on. The article was entitle, "Science is about to Deliver." (June 22, 1993)

"...most Americans are unaware of the real-life exploits of current genetic engineers, science facts which in many cases are as chilling as any science fiction....Pigs have been genetically designed to contain human-growth genes in the hopes of creating "super pigs" that would have more meat.

"...U.S. government and private researchers have expended billions of taxpayer dollars in the creation of tens of thousands of genetically engineered animals never before seen....One prominent scientist predicts that we may soon see "five-ton cows and pigs 12 feet long and 5 feet tall.

"Genetic engineers...have cloned higher mammals, including cattle....One writer notes that "genetic engineering has the potential to create a vast army of identical clones, each produced to some preset specification. Canon fodder, scientists, opera singers, all could be manufactured to order..."

"The New York Times has editorialized, 'Life is special, and humans even more so, but biological machines are still machines that now can be altered, cloned, and patented.' " --(WOW! Readers do YOU REALIZE THAT BETWEEN THE LINES THEY ARE TALKING ABOUT BIONIC ROBOTOIDS--the robots that are now being created to take the place of people in high places. And the chilling idea that human-like machines will be produced that will not be treated as anything but machines--that is a chilling idea too.

In this author's September, 1993 newsletter there were two article by this author on cloning, one entitled "Clones, Synthetics, Organic Robotoids, and Doubles" and the other article "Dulce Genetic Research/Cloning Facility." In the month following my September '93 newsletter's release, the establishment came out with stories about humans being cloned. [I felt that this was confirmation that God's had directed me to publish the information I had on cloning 1/2 months before the secular media came out with their stories about the "first" laboratory duplication of a human embryo. This '93 cloning was the first publicly revealed & publicly accepted human cloning, but the truth is that it had already been done for about 30 years secretly. In December, 1993's newsletter I had a followup article on cloning where I reviewed what the media was telling people about cloning after the "first" human cloning had been announced. My article also discussed the novel *Multiple Man* which is about how exact copies of the President are made. The book has some surprising similarities with what they actually did with President Carter! Finally in September of '96, this author's newsletter came out with its fourth article on cloning. This appendix is not the final word on the topic. The whole topic about clones, synthetics, robotoids and doubles could have a great deal more said. This appendix is merely a review of what those four articles contained. Cloning also relates in a big way to the cranial/body manipulation that was introduced in this book. It also relates to the group mind/proxying that is being done. Perhaps at some point this author can go into the deeper intricacies of cloning, but for now this appendix will provide its information in the following format:

Section A. The "Future Shock" that this topic subjects the common person to.
Section A. Instructions on how to clone a person.
Section B. The four types of "clones" that are used by the Illuminati,
  1. actual clones,
  2. synthetic people,
  3. organic robotoids,
  4. doubles (look alikes)
Section C. How the memory of a person is transferred for the organic robotoids.
Section D. Secret cloning sites (See also Appendix B, where D.U.M. bases are listed.)

Section A. The "Future Shock" that this topic subjects the common person to.

What happens when a technologically backward people are suddenly confronted with a technologically advanced people?

What happens is that people are called on to change, in many cases the stress is what Alvin Toffler described and called "Future Shock". The overstimulation of new ideas, new decisions, new ways of looking at things can cause great distress to the mind and body. Radical changes to adapt to the new situation are demanded.

In the case of the Navajo, one can see pickups parked beside hogans. In Nepal where I lived, the Nepalese had never gone through a horse and buggy era, so they had no word for drive in their language. When cars suddenly appeared--the first was carried into Katmandu on the backs of porters, they had no word for "drive", so they used the words they had "sit and go." So where we say "Let's drive to town." They would say literally, "Let's sit and go to town."

The American people have in general been kept in the dark about the limits of scientific developments. The known reasons people have not learned are varied. The Cold War was one reason. Capitalist corporate advantage is another reason. They call it trade secrets. Scientific pride and the ability to outstrip other researchers is another, and for the public just their technical jargon is enough to prevent people from closely watching the level of research going on. But underlying most of the coverup is this: that the overall satanic plan is to keep people ignorant of these scientific advances BECAUSE they are being used quite often to control and manipulate the world.

What has developed is a situation where the American people are no longer in touch with where the elite's secret technology is. It is clear that the elite know this and are aware that some of the "Future Shock" needs to reduced if they don't want to self-destruct society. You need to be aware (mentally prepared) that most of the readers of this will experience future shock when they read that cloning of humans is possible & has gone on for decades.

The elite had a dilemma. If society isn't moved forward to match their secret scientific advances, it will soon be like cave-men meeting modern-day men. Society won't be capable of adjusting--only self-destructing. On the other hand they certainly can't tell us what they are already doing, because they are using this technology against us to control us. For this reason they are giving us movies that show us things that they have already invented--but these are put forth as fiction in these Hollywood films. They hope to lesson the Future Shock, which their own secrecy has greatly contributed toward creating, while maintaining control over the general population.

SOME OF THE FILMS THAT SHOW EXISTING TECHNOLOGY:

Clone--cloning; Jurassic Park--cloning
Genesis II--underground genetics laboratories that are connected by tube shuttles.
Terminal Man--brain stem implants
Star Trek--various items. In addition to some of today's secret technology being shown, the attitudes and beliefs shown on the two series, especially Star Trek the Next Generation are the attitudes the Satanic elite want people to have.

READERS PREPARE FOR FUTURE SHOCK

The Scriptures give strong indications that genetic monsters, the half-breed Nephalim will exist in the end times. God's Word also forecasts that the mark of beast will be needed for buying & selling.

One item conveyed by the Bible's book of

Revelation is that totally unexpected sudden change will characterize the end times. Christians need to be prepared for unusual big changes. So great will these changes be that the nations will be distressed, and men's hearts will fail them for fear (LK 21:25-27). The Bible predicted that knowledge shall increase in the last days before Christ returns. (DN 12:4) But that knowledge will be used for evil, because the Bible also says that the world will be totally corrupt as in Noah's time (MT 24:37)--which was a time of the genetic monsters, the half-bred Nephalim. It also says men and horses will be out of work. (ZEC 8:10) And it is believed that Nahum 2:3-4 must be describing automobiles, and that Isaiah 31:5, and 60:8 are describing and prophesying airships in the last day. The description of the "mark of the beast" is startlingly accurate in describing the microchip which is being inserted into people's hands and foreheads.

The information that is allowed out for the public to access has been heavily censored. Still in spite of all the intense secrecy, if a person takes the time to dig and to find key items written by scientists, enough of a shadow picture develops to allow a person to realize that they already can produce several things the public is unaware of. Many times the articles will discuss only a tiny aspect of a larger process, or will say we have the knowledge to do such and such but the actual doing is years away. And somehow people swallow that we could have the capability to do it, but aren't. For instance, in a book that was published in 1979, Robert Gilmore McKinnel, Professor of Genetics and Cell Biology, College of Biological Sciences, University of Minnesota, wrote "It has been reported that mice and some large domestic animals have been cloned. Humans have not. Because the reproductive biology of humans...is similar to that of mice and other mammals, it is likely that humans could be cloned."

Some of the men who know what is actually being done, are afraid to tell what they know. However, I do not have neither a professional reputation nor a job to guard. I have never taken any oath of secrecy to any of these organizations of the establishment. I can simply tell you the truth without fear.

Section B. Instructions on how to clone a person.

For those who want the medical description of just one way that cloning of people can be done (and this capability has been around for at least a decade--and much longer secretly.) The idea that we don't have the knowledge to do it is simply a myth for public consumption. Any microbiologist worth anything knows that we have the knowledge and the means--they can only claim that cloning of humans hasn't happened because supposedly no one wants to do it.

A TECHNIQUE--
INSTRUCTIONS HOW TO CLONE A HUMAN:

The ovulation and ovaries of the woman can be monitored. Just before natural ovulation, there is an increase of luteinizing hormone which is called the luteinizing hormone surge. This can be detected by either blood or urine samples. The growth of the follicle can be monitored by visualization with ovarian ultrasonography. Ultrasound diagnosis will reveal on which side of the woman's ovaries the ripening follicle is found. This procedure will allow people to know when the follicle is ripe for the retrieval of the oocyte. When the time is appropriate a hollow aspiration needle is inserted into one or several ripe follicles under visual guidance of the laparoscope. The oocyte is removed with some follicular fluid. Experienced laparoscopists have a success rate over 90% in recovering the oocyte. Prior to this, it is likely that the woman will have been given Clomiphene citrate, or this drug used in combination with another drug so that there will be several eggs that can be retrieved at one time. The oocytes obtained from the ripe ovarian follicles are not fertilized when retrieved, although another process would be to fertilize first, before extracting. If they don't fertilize first, then they can take the harvested oocytes and incubate them in a culture medium for several hours to get maturation. They need maturation because they have been taken from the ovary before ovulation, and are not as mature as spontaneously ovulated ova. Thawed or fresh semen is washed and certifuged so that it will be diluted to the proper concentration to fertilize in vitro. The in vitro fertilization is carried out. After some amount of hours, (about 12) both pronuclei are identifiable for enucleation. The enucleation is accomplished with either one of two well-established methods. One method is to surgically enucleate it with a micropipette, another is with a bleb of cytoplasm containing both the male and female pronuclei. Either method has worked fine. These nuclei by the way have been obtained from the inner-cell mass of an early human embryo. This again is a well established practice. Let us digress slightly and explain the method to obtain the nuclei. The zona pellucida must be removed from a cultured embryo, the trophectoderm separated from the inner cell mass, and then, the cells dissociated with an appropriate enzyme in a calcium-and magnesium-free salt solution. Going back to the cloning process, there are several methods for joing a donor nucleus (obtained from its source using the just mentioned method) with enucleated cytoplasm (obtained from the woman's in vitro fertilized ovum). One might be to surgically implant it with a micropipette, another is fusion with an inactivated Sendai virus. Whichever way is considered most viable by those performing this will be used. And then the human nuclear transplant will be cultured until it can be placed into a human foster mother. When the clone has reached the 8-to 16 cell stage it will be transferred into the foster mother. If needed, the transfer can be done later, and the clone is simply frozen. When the transfer takes place, the clone is drawn into a fine plastic tube (a catheter) which, then in turn, would be introduced through the cervical canal into the interior of the uterus. ---This is just one process for successfully cloning humans. Other more refined techniques may well be in use.

Section C. The four types of "clones" that are used by the Illuminati:

C1. Actual Clones. This is a person who has been grown from a test tube (called "in vitro") or implanted womb, which has the identical genetic makeup to another person--an identical twin so to speak in terms of genetic makeup. The genetic coding has reproduced, and a new person who is an identical twin is now in existence.

C2. Synthetic People. These are "persons" who look everybit as real as a real person, but simulate human beings. Certain tissues extracted from cattle are the starting point. (This is part of the reason for cattle mutilations.) The process is an advancement of a process discovered in the late 1950's. This 1959 experiment was reported in a book in 1968 called *The Biological Time Bomb* by Gordon Rettray Taylor. Taylor describes the experiment done in France, "They had extracted DNA from the cells of the khaki Campbells and had injected it into the white Pekins, thinking that just possibly the offspring of the latter might show some character derived from khaki Campbells. To their astonishment the actual ducks they injected began to change. Their white feathers darkened, and their necks began to take on the peculiar curve which is a mark of the khaki Campbell." The scientists working under the auspices of the Rothschilds, (who are directed by Satan himself) developed this process by working at secret breakneck speed. They developed an advanced development of the process they discovered with the DNA chicken experiment. By the late 1970's, synthetic people could be produced by the Illuminati.

C3. Organic Robotoids. This is an "artificial life" form that is created through processes that are totally different than cloning or synthetics. Organic robotoid technology is being made to make exact as possible copies of important people such as Presidents and some of their staff. For instance, the Jimmy Carter who came to Portland a few years ago who I stood two feet away from and examined visually was not the Jimmy Carter that had run for President. On Easter, 1979 the first robotoid model of Jimmy Carter replaced the man Jimmy Carter. By the time "Carter" was seen by me, they must have been on at least robotoid no. 100. This is why a friend of mine who was recently in Washington D.C. almost bumped into President Clinton jogging. My friend was surprised by the lack of security.

Kaiser Aluminum News which is put out by Kaiser Aluminum & Chemical Corporation put out a series of articles to a specialized audience in the 1960's. This material was also published under the book title *The Dynamics of Change* (Prentice-Hall:Englewood Cliffs, N.J.,1967).

Under the title heading "GENETIC MANIPULATION" we read, "The ability to control the formation of new beings may be one of the most basic developments of the future. Recent discoveries about the nucleonic acids, the basic building blocks of life, have led to the belief that man may some day be able to treat genes in such a way that desired characteristics can be realized..."

Under the heading "MAN-MACHINE SYMBIOSIS" we read, "...Computers exist which can learn, remember, see, seek goals, reason, walk, sing on key, talk, be irritable, play games, grasp, adapt to an environment and even design improvements in themselves...man-like computers may one day contain plasma circulating through a viscera-like envelope, allowing them to be self-healing."

Under the heading "HUMAN ROBOTS" we read, "...An electronic circuit that imitates two neurons, the cells of the human brain, has been built, and has enabled a robot to deal with some unexpected situations, but the neuron structure was bulky. The brain has billions of neurons, meaning an incredible miniaturization job will be necessary before truly 'human' robots are developed."

As the reader knows since the 1960's when this was written an incredible miniaturation job has been done in computers. What the public knows of that minituration is incredible and that is only part of what has actually occurred. In fact, scientists are now able to manipulate DNA to create computers. A basic thing that is needed to create a computer is material that will consistently change given some type of "signal". This is because the computer works off of base two--or what is simply an on--off switch system, or a 0 or 1 system of numbers. Living biological material is superior to other material for making computers because the heat created by the methods in conventional computers slows the speed. For super-computers to work at great speeds they need to use biological material that will not heat up. This type of minituration has already been done. It creates computers far beyond what we are familiar with.

Organic robotoids are amazingly humanlike, so humanlike that it is hard for the scientists who have created them to get used to the idea that they are not humans. Biological computer brains for the robotiods came as a result of research into holograms. If you tear up a conventional photograph you ruin it, but if you tear up the film that produces a hologram, each piece still contains almost all the same image. This is why part of the brain of people can be removed and the brain regain what it had lost. A holographic image of a person's brain is made, and then when the brain of a robotoid is made, the biological computer in its head is caused to form according to the holographic record of a person being copied. Some deviations from the holographic record are needed, because the "person" is a robotoid and not a person. The brain of the robotoid has almost all of the correct memory of the person reproduced, but the robotoid brain is really a computer made from biological material which is programmed, it is not a human brain.

First, "Clinton" has the energy to jog because it may well be a robotoid, and second thing, an assassination of a robotoid is not so serious. These robotoids have a biological computer-brain that is programmed. They can think in the sense a computer thinks, but secret advances in understanding the human brain, have allowed the makers of organic robotoids to have the memory of a person at a given point in time transferred to an organic robotoid. The key then for making what appears to be a clone--but they are not a real clone--is to capture the person to be copied and make a holographic copy of the brain memory and transfer that to the robotoid.

C4. How the memory of a person is transferred for the organic robotoids. In order to successfully make human organic robotoids--in a sense to make bionic robots--the ability to simulate the personality of the person being copied was necessary. The only viable solution was to learn how the brain coded memory and duplicate that process. The brain is entering into its memory about 10 million bits of information a second. The incredible storage capability of the human brain which weighs on the average 3.25 lbs in human males and 2.9 lbs in human females is incredible. The brain can easily store 100 million billion bits of information. It's no wonder we don't use it all. All the computers in the world put together do not compare with one intelligent person's brain.

Numerous tests and experiments from many different angles all showed investigators that the brain stored information as a hologram. The place in the brain where a memory is stored isn't in just one location. Memories are stored in synapses in sequence, but they are stored in a holographic method. From what I understand, rhythmic pulses radiate from a small area of the brain like a stone creates ripples in a pond. Waves go through the cerebrum, in the way that laser light is used to create a hologram. Different frequencies are used by the brain and different neuron impulses are used to reference (tag) the different details. These tags are the brain's own codes or reference standards for cataloging information. The brain has to be able to access the encoder/decoder (holographic code standards) for a particular piece of information to be retrieve for the conscious. Brain injuries can destroy one decoder, and leave other decoders for a memory intact. When a multiple (a person with MPD/DID) is created layers and layers of amnesia walls (actual walls) are built into the brain, and then specific codes are created which cause the mind to bring these compartments of memory to the surface. Each compartment is built into an alter (personality) or a functioning part of the System (built somewhat like a series of computers). Where a normal person may be aware of a conscious and a somewhat subconscious track running simultaneously, the mind of a multiple runs several tracks at once.

On a local level within the brain, researchers have called a memories storage unit an engram. Polypeptidenucleic acid holds a piece of information, such as a trauma memory. Proteins and other substances are involved in the memory process. How a person eats can influence their mental abilities.

But it must be born in mind that a memory is retained holographically in countless locations in the memory storage area of the brain, just as the ripples of a stone dropped into water flow throughout an entire pond.

The mind will have a number of reference points from which a particular memory can be decoded.

The information that is stored in the brain is both dynamic and holographic. It is not stored like a book. If the dynamic impulses of the brain cease, so do the memories. Freezing and reviving a human brain will serve to erase its memory.

I will try to explain things in clear terms if the reader will bear with me. The reason that we recognize objects so quickly is that the brain performs what is similar to what researchers call a Fourier transfer. Messages are transmitted through Fourier-transform messages. What is a Fourier-transform message? A Fourier transform is a mathematical method where a complex wave, or a complex pattern is broken down and converted into a basically longer, but precise signal of simpler frequencies. In other words a squiggly line is hard to communicate, but via the Fourier transform it becomes a string of numbers which is quite easy to transmit. In other words, a complex squiggly line and a straight line after the conversion are both just as easy to record. The brain stores information in a form similar to a Fourier transform, so that when it must look for similar patterns, it can quickly overlook everything but another identical Fourier transform pattern. A mental comparison is done so quick that it gives the ability to the brain to "instantly" recognize people who one hasn't seen for years. The Holograms of memory that the brain makes are transmitted through Fourier-transform messages. Holograms are hard to destroy, for each piece contains the whole. Rip a holograph in half and you still have the same picture. Rip it in half again and the same picture remains. After a great many cuts in half the holograph begins to get a little fuzzy, as it loses some of its detail, but the entire picture is still there. That is why memories begin to get somewhat fuzzy, because we are only pulling up a small piece of brain that recorded the memory. However, if we can pull up more of the holographic image of the memory we get a more distinct detailed picture.

It was secret research into holograms that gave Illuminati scientists the ability to copy the memory of an entire brain. A holographic image is made of the host's brain and that is transferred into the biological matter functioning as a brain of the robotoid. Since the body and brain of the robotoid are not identical to the original person being copied, adjustments have to be taught and programmed into the mind of the robotoid. The entire process is sophisticated, but then so are many manufacturing processes today.

C5. Doubles (look alikes). There is an ongoing program to find look alikes for prominent people, as well as a program to create secret identical twins (which are separated at birth and never see each other). George Bush's double was promiscuous, while George Bush is a pedophile. His double was living in France after Bush was no longer President. By the use of doubles, (or one of the synthetics or organic robotoids) the elite are able to sneak away and perform satanic rituals. On certain occasions, if Clinton or Bush only needed to do low level tasks in front of the public, they could have their double substitute for them. The Illuminati working with several organizations has had a look alike operation where doubles of certain key people are found and then used.

In the book *Desert Shield and The New World Order* pub. by Northpoint Tactical Teams, Topton, NC, if you look on page 32 you will see a picture of the original FDR who had a mole over his eyes and then you will a see a picture of the double of Roosevelt who they used, who had no mole and had different ear lobes. Roosevelt may have died prior to when it was actually announced.

Over the years I have seen numerous photos exposing either the Robotoids or the doubles that they use. This author's previous S' '93 article had some pictures about the dead Pope Paul VI, who my *Be Wise As Serpents* book said was murdered. This recent Pope was replaced with a double who had had plastic surgery. As a double gets older the plastic surgery will not look as convincing, because time changes people differently.

One ex-Catholic said the whole thing sounded like science fiction. It does sound far out at first, but the evidence is there for people to see. For myself, the ex-Illuminati have told me about the double's program. From what I understand the double or look-alike program has been more successful than the robotoids and synthetics. The reason is that people live longer and are more dependable in some ways. The project to find look alikes for prominent people has been very successful. Plastic surgery has also been done to help touch up the doubles.

Section D. Secret cloning sites (See also Appendix B, where D.U.M. bases are listed.)

Ada, Oklahoma's underground facility is being used to clone humans. The other cloning facilities are turning out weird creatures. Due to the processes involved they give off lots of gamma radiation (Gamma is at the far end of the electromagnetic wave spectrum--it is even a longer wave than ultraviolet). Because they give off Gamma radiation, these facilities must be deep underground. The cloning is done at level 7. The average depth (according to one of the men who built these Deep Underground Facilities -D.U.M.) is 5,600'. The secret government has been building them no stop since W.W. II. I personally have only been in an underground city in Oahu, HA, but I have spoken to others who are wanting to save humanity and stop the NWO, and these witnesses know a lot about the underground facilities.

One of the men who betrayed the human race and helped with the cloning was Austrian born Simon Wiesenthal. Simon Wiesenthal, was a US intelligence agent with a photographic memory (perhaps a scarred brain stem). Wiesenthal seriously hunted Nazis that were not on the CIA's payroll or CIA associated groups. Simon Wiesenthal, under the disguise of being a great Nazi hunter, actually assisted protecting the FBI's and the CIA's agents who were Nazi criminals. Wiesenthal tried to stop CBS from doing a show exposing the FBI-Nazi connection. Jewish Intelligence (the Moussad) knew all about the hundreds if not thousands of Nazi War criminals that worked for American Intelligence and the FBI, but never went public about it. Instead they occasionally used the information as leverage against American intelligence. One of the code no.s for Simon Wiesenthal given by a Monarch slave was something like 063 097. If someone else knows the full and correct code for him, go ahead and share it. *Unholy Trinity* is a book written about how the Vatican, the US State Department, and MI-6 smuggled Nazis out of Germany at the end of WW II. An entire book could be written about the thousands of die hard Nazis who have been working for American intelligence, however Simon Wiesenthal's name is mentioned here because he helped start the cloning for the worst elements of the NWO.

OREGON'S UNDERGROUND SECRET CLONING FACILITY

In at least one of my newsletters, the secret cloning facility at Bull Run near Mt. Hood, OR was discussed. Bull Run is a large tract of forested land with some water reservoirs/lakes that is set up to help provide water for the Portland Metro area. My house on Lincoln St. was also near 8 reservoirs that were built at nearby Mt. Tabor. These reservoirs at Mt. Tabor were for Portland drinking water too. The Mt. Tabor reservoirs have simple single fences on their perimeter, and people are able to throw garbage into these reservoirs if they want to be nasty. However, the Bull Run water supply which is very isolated is extremely well protected. It is rare that people would stray up into the area anyway. People are told that this large tract of land is simply for Portland's water supply, and yet several years ago a Patriot military unit reconned the area after getting info from me. They were able to identify 3 strongly guarded rings of defense at the Bull Run reservoir. The area has lots of electronic surveillance, etc. It is either the most valuable water on God's green earth, or there is something else in the vicinity of Larch Mountain (south of the famous Multnomah Falls which sit on I-84)--something besides a water reservoir. Of course, those in the know, know that it's an underground facility which the CIA use. It's not an accident Tektronics here in the Portland area does work/research with holograms.

FURTHER INVESTIGATIONS AT DULCE'S UNDERGROUND CLONING FACILITY

My article about Dulce [which I investigated in person on foot] also sparked a small group of dedicated Christians to try to retrace my steps and find the Dulce facility. They reported back to me that they found nothing and that the reservation police and the local people claimed they'd never even heard of any underground facility. All I can say is that, doesn't that strike you as fishy that all kinds of people have been up in that area looking for the site, interviewing the Jicarilla Apaches that live in the area for years, talking about Dulce over Art Bell's Radio show, etc. and locals have never heard anything about it?? At the very least they should know that other people looked for the site. The reservation and town of Dulce, NM have a small population. There is little that everyone doesn't know about what goes on in the area, and yet they are surprised by the topic of an underground facility? The whole thing smells like the key people in the area have been convinced to keep their mouths shut & pretend they know nothing. My comments: sometimes when you're looking for a rat, you'll smell it before you see it.

According to someone who has worked in the Dulce Underground Facility the openings on the north and SW face (Aztec Cliffs) are still in use. Actually the cliff that has a face that looks like an Aztec on Mt. Archeleta has been cemented shut because hikers kept straying into the area. A deep needle detector which could detect metal or magnetism deep down could reveal the Dulce Underground Facility--but people who get this close often disappear.

SUMMARY OF THE FOUR METHODS.

This Appendix covers 4 different methods that have been used to make copies of people, these were cloning, creating synthetic duplicates, creating organic robotoids, and finding look alike doubles. [Programs for all four of these methods have had almost unlimited funding by the intelligence/Illuminati elite.] Next, the basic principles for creating a synthetic human were covered. Synthetic humans were in some ways found to be superior to the robotoids that were created. The first few years of robotoids were fraught with problems. [Since my inside information is somewhat dated, I cannot give readers the status of current robotoid abilities, however, I believe from what I've seen that the program continues.] The synthetics were people who had their genes altered to look more like the person they were to copy. The robotoids were the formation of new beings that look human but are actually bionic robots. Their memories were created by using living "brain tissue" which is some type of programmable living biological matter, and programming this material as a sophisticated computer. In order to get the memory of the person being copied, a holographic image of the person's brain is made and transferred to the robotoid. Because the robotoid "brain" is not functioning like a human (although the end result is nearly identical so that viewers have to know what differences to look for), there are of course some adjustments that have to be made after the holographic image of the host is transferred to the living biological matter that will function as the brain of the robotoid. Lord Willing, this author may write some more on this topic later.

The ability of the Illuminati to copy people using the 4 methods listed above, are not going to be the deciding factor in their moves to control the world, but it does give them a great deal of flexibility in their operations. This author frequently reflects on the words of the Illuminati Grand Master who told Cisco, who was then a child, while touring a cloning facility, "Never, never think you are seeing who you think you are seeing."

FINAL NOTES. As this author's reflects back on what's gone into this first part, he can't help thinking about how God will reveal all things that are secret. (See Dan. 2:22 and other verses). The prophet Daniel called him "the revealer of secrets." The secrets which are revealed in this book are minuscule compared to what God Almighty will reveal in His day.

And as this author reflects back he realizes that there is so much more that could be said. This author has neglected to get my information about the Clintons into this. For instance, this author interviewed a woman who went to school with Hillary, and two of Hillary's mind-control victims. Our establishment media have neglected to tell the American people about Bill Clinton's roots & ties in Hot Springs, Ark. Hot Springs is a city that has forty-seven thermal springs which have brought the jet set from all over the world. The mafia syndicate & their nightclubs made Hot Springs a hot bed of vice, gambling, prostitution. During the 1920's the territory so popular with organized crime, that they classified the territory "neutral ground" like they did Hollywood. In the early 1960's, Hot Springs had the largest illegal gambling operations in the entire U.S. Billy's uncle Roy was a politician in Arkansas's legislature connected to all this mess. And Bill Clinton's uncle Raymond Clinton, who had a Buick dealership, was tied to all this corruption. Bill & his brother Roger's cocaine habits are well known by those familiar with them, as well as their wild parties at the Coachman's Inn, Little Rock, Ark. What are not known are Hillary & Bill's membership in the secret Illuminati. And for some reason some of their more intimate associates are also not known, such as Charles "Chip" Whitmore, a Satanist & programmer. Chip & Bill have met often on a weekly basis over the years. This continues, for instance when Bill was in England so was Chip, when Bill went to Florida so did Chip. Chip played drums with mind-control programmer Jerry Lee Lewis. He was also a friend of Jack Ruby. (It's a small world at the top of corruption.) Chip owns Cash McCool's Tavern. He is 5'6, glasses for his poor eyesight, has good hearing, and has a filthy mouth. He changes the car he owns & drives every 3-5 months. Chip had a programmed girl murder a man, and then the Network got him off of his murder charges. Chip's family's Villa Marc in Little Rock was pictured in the opening shots of *Designing Women*. Chip Whitmore has been in charge of assassinations in his area, and controls the local law enforcement in Arkansas. Jack Stevens, said to be the largest investment banker in Little Rock, is CIA/part of the Network. He exchanged information with Chip via their mutual black cleaning lady. Further, Whitmore & Stevens tie in with a string of corruption that extends into the Assembly of God churches & other parts of Churchianity. Over Chip is a Dr. Paul Palmer. The media just gives us glimpses of the depth of occult corruption. For instance, *Insight* magazine Feb. 26, '96, page 48, in an article by Suzanne Fields had a photo of Hillary's backside wearing what appeared to be a golden dragon on her black coat when she went to court to talk about the Rose Law Firm billing records. She has sometimes been called the Dragon lady for good reasons.

Will today's modern equivalents to shamans, our psychiatric community help protect us from murderers like Chip Whitmore? Not likely. *The Biographical Directory of Fellows and Members of the American Psychiatric Association* reveals that in 1957 there were 7,104 American members in the American Psychiatric Association. Of those 7,104, a total of 1,253 had moved to America from Germany and Eastern Europe. This helps us understand the enormous influence Operation Paperclip had on America. Operation Paperclip was the CIA's project to smuggle Nazi criminals into our nation, some of which have now made Penn's campus infamous. No wonder the False Memory Spindrome got started at Pennsylvania University. We were warned by a psychiatrist in a *Weekly World News* story of Jan. 9, 1996 about a strange new sleeping disorder where people die after seeing a hooded robe figure chase them. This new "Deadly Dream Syndrome" sounds strongly like mind-control.

Perhaps there is no way to have given the readers anything but a drop in the bucket. Some of the details that got left out on the way include: the Seventh-Day Adventist church's secret cooperation with the government to supply young men (1,500) for government experiments called Operation Whitecoat; how the Dept. of Energy set up hotlines for victims of radiation experiments, in other words the fox is in control of where the victim goes for help; Peter A. Petito, "Mr. Intelligence" in Italy, and his connections to the Network; William Randolph Hearst's costume parties and his half dozen homes like San Simeon; Torrance, CA's Penthouses and Disney's mind-control; the Masonic peace sign of uplifted hands with wrists crossed in the film *1984*; the movie *Army of Darkness* with its mirror image programming, "London Bridges falling down" programming ditty , etc.; how FEMA works with the 6th Army that Aquino was part of, how Voodooism uses Waterfalls for healing such as at Sardo, Haiti; how Mothers of Darkness alters are trained to love a marble, fed the marble, care for it, and then to shatter it with a hammer until its fine like salt and then to repeat the process and only split the marble but not crush it as part of their training to program; how a certain torture is done to make the victim think they have a butterfly as a head with the head of the butterfly in their third eye area; how scribbling is used to anchor programming in child victims; programmed soul-ties to aliens; Mr. Greenjean's (of Capt. Kangaroo) talk of Mr. Moon & how it was used for programming; the blood sacrifices under the Temple Mount on March 13th this year; the Masonic corruption in Arcadia, FL and the G. Pierce Wood Memorial Hospital; how secret meetings of the CIA have studied how UFOs could be used as "clever hostile propaganda" trick to take advantage of the populace's gullibility; how Mengele's family never claimed his bones--they knew they weren't the real ones, and how the International Red Cross gave him an I.D.S. to travel with; South Africa's occult Shu Shung Palace... **maybe someone else will pick up where this author has left off, the mind-control is all around us!**

DEEPER INSIGHTS

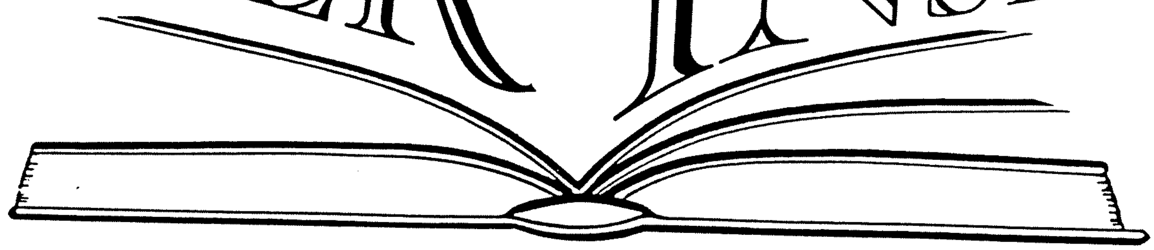

into the
ILLUMINATI
FORMULA

Part 2.
How help comes about

by Cisco Wheeler

DIAMONDS & DAISES,--The Gems, the Grand Druid Council hierarchy, the Fairies

When our system first began doing collages as therapy, the third collage we did of our system was this one of the Gems, the Grand Druid Council hierarchy, the daisy chains and the fairy, and yet it was one of the last to be understood. When our deeper alters got done with the collage, our front alters didn't understand what they had done. It took several years to learn what all the pieces in the collage meant.

What the picture shows are the deeper workings of the system, which are run by early splits. In the background is a veil. In front of it are gems, and diamonds. There are two kinds of gems. One are the gems which link to the computers, and the other are the diamonds in the rough, the clean slate alters which have yet to be programmed. A diamond in the system (pyramid) acts as a radio crystal to receive direction and energy from Satan. The energy is then distributed via the crystal and the gems to the system. This diamond is encapsulated within a gold womb-shaped crystal. The gems in the system (ruby, diamond, topaz, onyx, emerald, sapphire, opal, amethyst, obsidian, turquoise, etc.) are linked to the book of Revelation's Heavenly City. The 12 gems send out signals according to their color coding, which are then transmitted by the correct color of ribbon to the correct colored coded alters. Their messages, the scripts, are acted out on the stage of life, which is portrayed behind the erect gold or platinum statue (AntiChrist figure). Gold represents divinity in the Illuminati.

In front of that is the clock with the hierarchy. The clock is a crystal pyramid representing the pyramid in the middle of the Grand Druid Council (aka Executive Control Board). It's 12 hours are the 12 positions of the Grand Druid Council which link to their 12 job responsibilities or characteristics and the 12 colors. The 13th number is Satan's, and it is color coded platinum. The Grand Druid Council like the Knights of the Round Table sit around a circular table. The pyramid is meant to have 13 stairs to it.

The daisy chains were used to link our early parts to their master. Our Daddy would make daisy chains for us. Most people would never suspect something like this being mind-control reinforcement. These daisy chains were delicate and very sensitive to touch. We were not to break or touch the daisy chains. Our internal daisy chains link to small 3 year old child alters. The daisy chains represent soul ties and the artificial programmed love they wanted us to have toward our master. A severe pain in our head, like a hole being drilled into our head, was reframed by the programmers as being a hole for the sun to shine through to raise daisy flowers for Daddy. Flowers are important family links in the programming. The bud protects a daughter. The root and stem the mother figure. The soil ceremony protects the grandparents, and is grounded in the earth.

The Fairy alters are involved in the hour glass and are the creative force within the system. Here Whisper (Tinkerbell figure) sprinkles Star dust on the light side.

The yellow brick road, like a whirlwind that pulls the vehicle, leads to divinity, a mother goddess figure. A gold crown rests upon this stone statue.

A tree runs through the entire situation. Those who are familiar with the trees in the system, realize that they are used to hang all the programming. The willow and oak roots run through the collage. Although it is somewhat difficult to notice, off to the right side of Satan are 9 chambers, which represent the various chambers on the Cabalistic tree of life.

Interconnected bubbles are interconnected worlds and galaxies in the system.

The numerous butterflies are a ring of light that lay at the base of the neck.

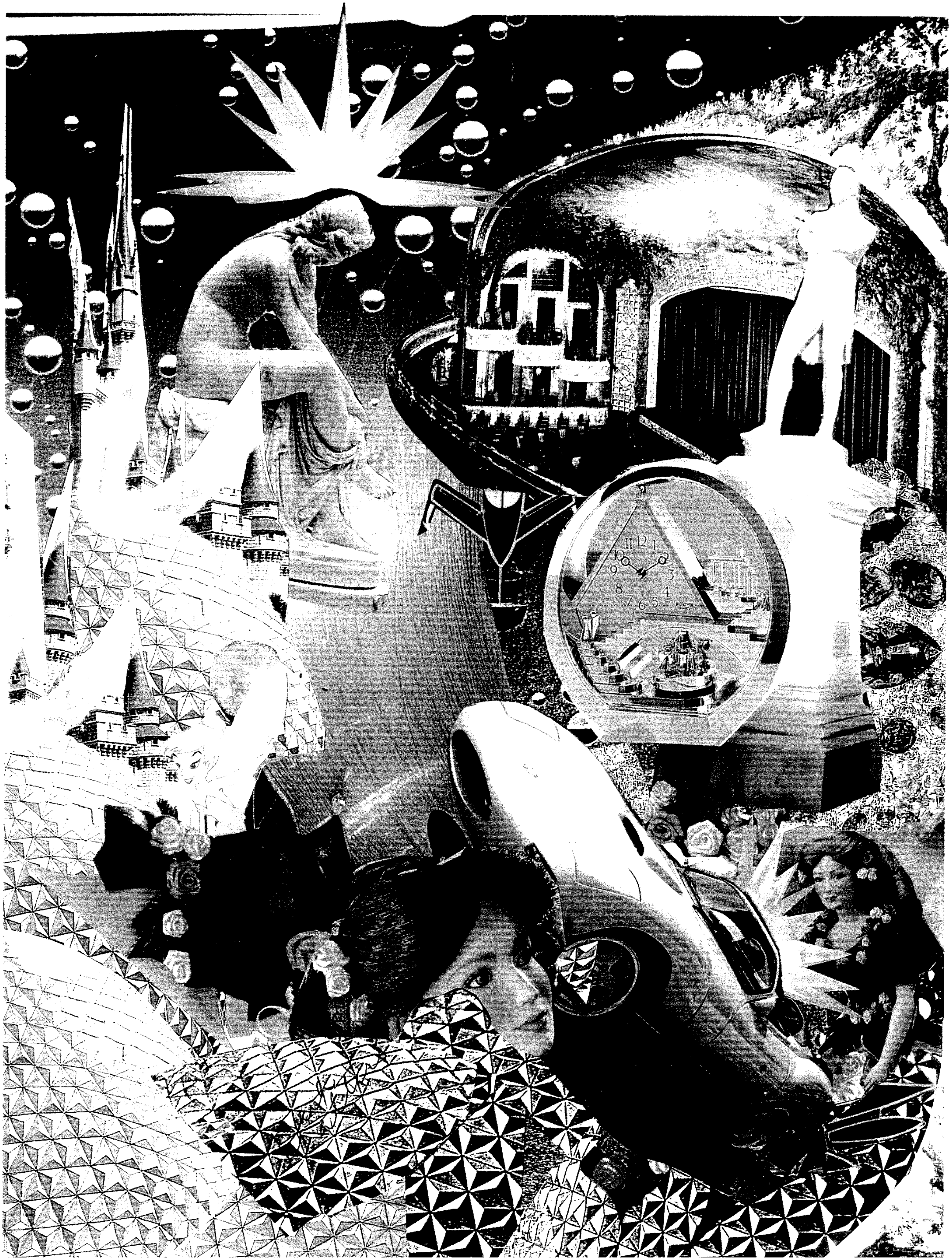

Sanderson

The DAISY WORLD (previous page)

We have a special world of devotion to our master called the daisy world. An entire world of alters who love him make up this world. The picture looks some what reminiscent of some of the Fantasia scenes. The unicorn takes us into this magic world. The waterfall cleans our minds of the trauma memories.

A BOXED, SINKING DISCOURAGED SENSE ABOUT LIFE. (next page)

One of the traumas is to take a child, put him in a trunk and dump him into water. The trunk fills up and the child passes out, and then is rescued in the nick of time before it dies. This is a common programming trauma. It is this type of trauma that is attached to programming. Feelings come in all shapes and sizes, and it is O.K. to have feelings. When the system did this an alter wrote, "The way I feel, locked and sinking, red sails in the moonlight."

The ROLE of a BETA-DELTA TEAM OF ALTERS. (overleaf after next page)

The hour glass controls the system. It's balance in relation to the clock and compass is crucial. The robots stand in military ranks ready to serve their national leaders. The piano cords at the left are codes for some alters. Maybe the reader will be able to figure out what some of the images mean on their own.

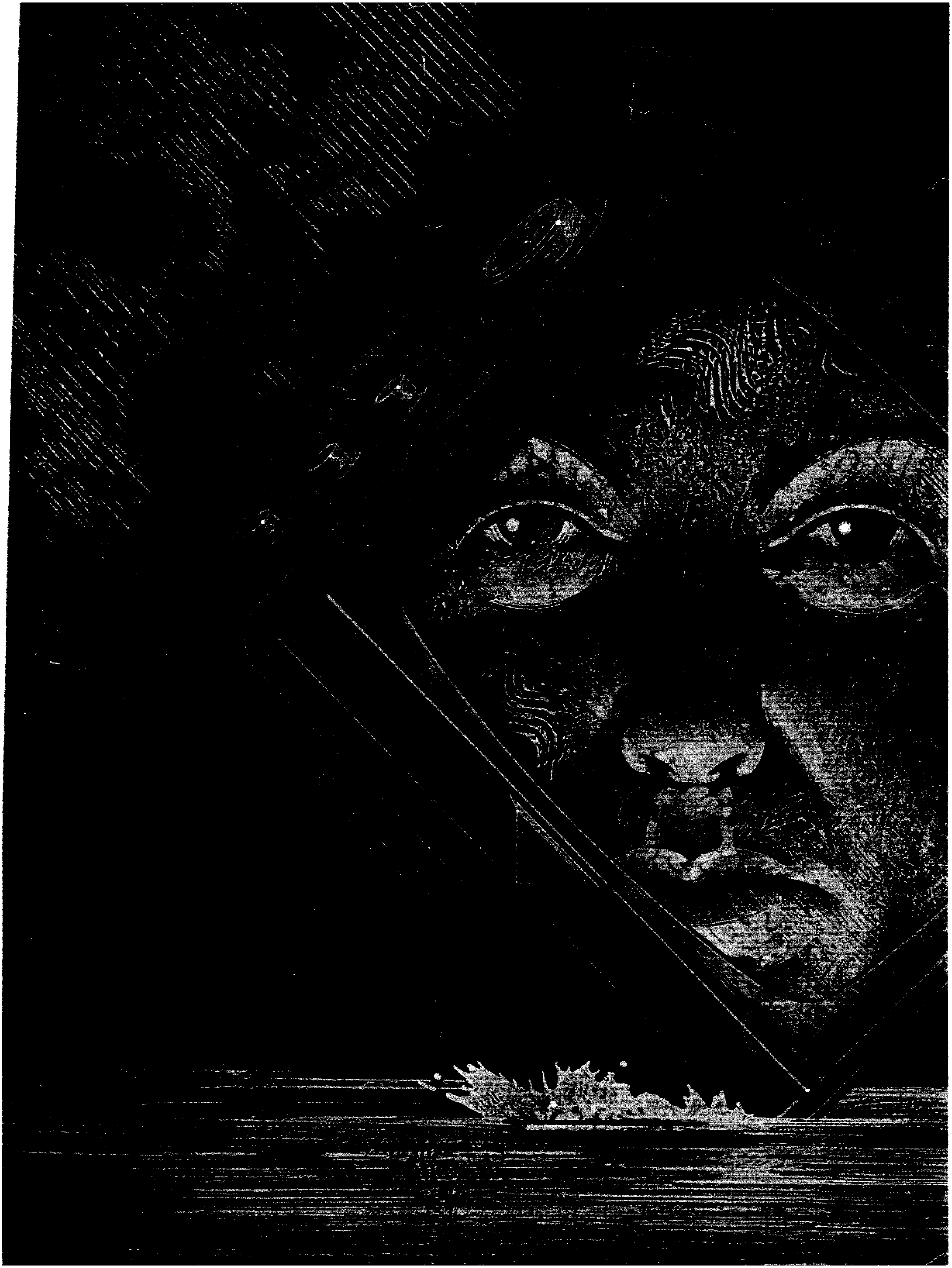

PART 2. HOW HELP COMES ABOUT FOR MIND-CONTROL VICTIMS

Collages...p.314
Table of Contents...p.320
Introduction to Part 2...p.322
Overview of therapy...p.324

Section A. Beginning Issues

ACCESSING, how to prevent...325
BOUNDARIES & ROLES, establishment of...326
COMMUNICATION ISSUES, undrstanding...330
DENIAL, how to deal with therapist's...331
DEPRESSION, how to deal with initial d....332
DETECTION, of mind-control...334
EATING DISORDERS, how to deal with...337
EVALUATION FORMS...340
FEAR, how to handle...342
FEAR ISSUES, what kinds are faced...343
HOPE...345
INTAKE QUESTIONNAIRE...347
INSOMNIA, suggestions for...348
MULTIPLICITY, understanding...353
PANIC ATTACKS, suggestions...355
PROGRAMMING, how to understand...356
PROTECTION, spiritual...364
SAFETY ISSUES, of slave...369
SAFETY ISSUES, of support team...371
SELF-INFLICTED HARM, how to handle...373
SPIRITUAL ISSUES, understanding...375
STRUCTURING, consequences of...376
SUFFERING, how to deal with...378
SUICIDAL THOUGHTS, how to deal with...380
SUPPORT TEAM, organizing one...382
TRAUMAS, foundational...385
TRIGGERS, how to defuse...391
TRIGGERS, issues around...392
TRUST, how to establish...394
TRUST, how to handle t. issues...394
TRUTH, discernment of...397

Section B. Deeper Issues

ABREACTIONS, avoidance of...402
ABREACTIONS, understanding...403
ABUSE, what is the impact of systematic a....405
ABUSERS, confrontations or not...411
ALTERS, deep, how to work with...412
BACKACHES, suggestions for...415
BIOGRAPHY, chronology of victim's history...416
BURN OUT, of support team...420
CONFLICT, resolving c. between alters...422
CORE, issues of c....424
DELIVERANCE, understanding...434
DENIAL, dealing with...438
DREAM WORK, understanding...440
EXTERNAL PROOFS, benefits of...447
FAMILY, rebuilding a shattered f....448
FLOODING, how to deal with...449
GRIEF, how to deal with...450
GUILT, how to deal with...455
HYPNOSIS, self, ins & outs of...456
IDENTITY, how to discover one's i....460
IMPLANTS, dealing with...461
INTEGRATION, understanding...463
INTERNAL INFORMATION, how to get...465
JOBS, new ones for alters...468
JUSTICE SYSTEM, dealing with broken j.s...469
MAPPING, how to m. a system...470
MAZES, how to deal with...472
MIRRORS, how to deal with...472
PROGRAMMING, destruction of foundation...473
RATIONALES, understanding cult r....487
REALITY VS. PERCEPTION, dealing with...489
RESPONSIBILITY, tips to face new ones...490
SALVATION, to achieve...490
SANCTUARY FOR ALTERS, how to create...495
SATANIC CULTS, understanding practices of...496
SELF-FORGIVENESS, to achieve...500
SPLIT-BRAIN PROG., how to understand...501
SURVEILLANCE, dealing with...503
TIPS, for therapists...504
TRANSFERENCE, issues of t....506
TWINNING, understanding & dealing with...508
WORLD, external, how to understand...511
WORLDS, destruction of internal w....514

--bibliographical notes...523
--index for entire book...527

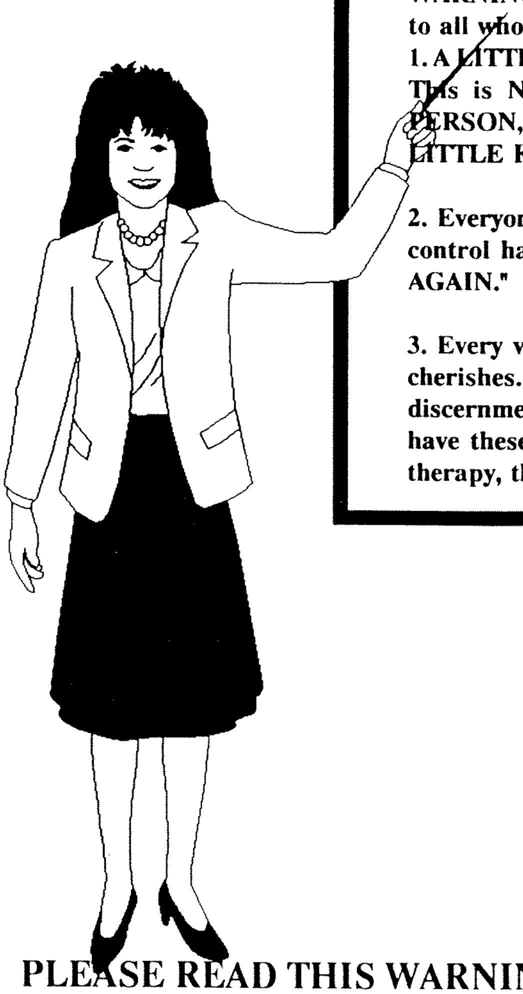

WARNING:
to all who enter these pages...
1. A LITTLE KNOWLEDGE IS DANGEROUS--IN FACT LETHAL. This is NOT WRITTEN for the FAINT HEARTED nor for the PERSON, who wants to DABBLE IN THERAPY. REMEMBER, A LITTLE KNOWLEDGE IS DANGEROUS.

2. Everyone who has sincerely tried to help victims of total mind-control has found out, "MY LIFE WILL NEVER BE THE SAME AGAIN."

3. Every victim of total mind-control is a unique person who God cherishes. You must approach them with genuine love, patience, discernment, understanding and accurate knowledge. If you do not have these qualities to give them, please stay out of these victim's therapy, they have enough problems without yours.

PLEASE READ THIS WARNING BEFORE ATTEMPTING TO USE PART 2.

INTRODUCTION

WHY should we bother struggling to save victims of mind-control?

Why should we bother with working with victims of mind-control? We can think of a number of excellent reasons.

First, if we as a people do not stand up to the World Order's mind-control, then we are giving them a green light, a free ticket to keep on doing it. And if victims of mind-control do not see people wanting to rescue them, then they will not fight the mind-control, and if they do not fight they will not get free. It's that simple. Each of us by only trying to rescue one or two persons is opening the door to freedom for all victims of mind-control. Do we want the door left open, or the door to freedom shut? It is our choice.

Second, the person you save from mind-control may have been someone who would have been used in some secret operation to seriously hurt someone else or to seriously damage the fabric of a free society by smuggling guns, or dope or laundering money. By helping victims of mind-control you are making life a better place.

Third, by helping a mind-control victim you will learn who you are, what gifts God has placed within you, how the human mind functions, as well as having your own weaknesses exposed so that they can be worked on. There is nothing more powerful than watching God Almighty answer prayers of desperation with miracles. Bottom line, you will be a better person for helping those who are in such desperate need.

Fourth, by learning how the mind-control operates and exhibits itself, you will be able to prevent others from infiltration by damage agents, and to prevent parents from unwittingly allowing a day-care center or other institution to program their children. In other words, we will be in a better position to prevent the myriads of harm that come from the wide-spread customs of mind-control. Intellectual awareness of how the mind-control is done is not the total solution, but it does act as a buffer to help us fight this mind-control madness.

We still have much to learn, but we hope to pass on what we have learned to others that we might all make the soonest use of the best help available for mind-control victims. If you know Almighty God, then you know that His strength is perfected in our weakness. He will take our few loaves of understanding, and multiply it.

The HARVEST OF WEEPING

"Be not deceived: God is not mocked: for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap.

For he that soweth to his flesh shall of the flesh reap corruption; but he that soweth to the Spirit shall of the Spirit reap life everlasting." Galatians 6:7-8

The mind-control that has been carried out secretly in this 20th century on such a vast scale has left us with a harvest of weeping. The children of this dispensation cry after the virtues and the oneness within the family unit. Their hearts have become broken through the lack of knowledge, and instability of not knowing the security of a father's love.

Within this rising generation, many children walk in a famished land where there is no real love. They receive only the remnant of broken homes and relationships, and overworked parents.

When the heart has gone out of the family, broken lives become as fragments of broken glass. For many children feel as though their hearts have been washed away in the silent tears of their incompleteness. Having no voice within the kingdom to say "peace be still" they suffer from the scars of emotional abandonment.

In bondage they are unable to see their way through the journey of life. Where do they go when they feel there's no place to turn? Who do they talk to, when there's nobody who wants to listen? Who do they lean on when there's no stable foundation?

The Spirit of Darkness soon covers this generation with shattered dreams. In this pool of contamination, parents rise against parents. Brothers and sister become pulled between their loyalties within the family, causing a severing within the heart of the family unit. In the turmoil of confusion and uncertainty comes a brokenness within the hearts of the offspring, which causes the soul to bleed with the emotion of inner loneliness. Through a grieving process, the scars of neglect turn in rebellion, screaming with a voice of "PLEASE SOMEBODY LOVE ME."

In planting of a bad harvest, come the reward of "I looked that I should bring forth grapes, but I brought it forth with wild grapes." For when the kingdom has fallen and the hedge is gone, the harvest will be overtaken and trodden down. The landscaping and cultivation will be a thing of the past. There will be briers and thorns in the vineyard and the harvest will cease to produce fruit of quality.

Woe unto the man that has rewarded evil unto his children. As the extortioner is in the land, so the young will turn in sorrow and in anger and know him not. He made me not, he had no understanding, I do not love him. As the children of yesterday and today were overthrown in the wilderness, so will come the weeping for the fathers, for man's glory becomes his shame.

Our leaders have planted pain and sorrow, and now we have a harvest of weeping. We think of the countless child victims who waited for the parents' to come, who waited for love and acceptance, but were never good enough for the programmers. I want to weep for the humaness that has been stolen from so many child victims of mind control. I weep for every scream that was never allowed, and for each child that could no longer fight for themself or their own mind. I weep for the silent tears that were not allowed. And I grieve when I think of how grieved Almighty God must be. I grieve that the cycle continues, and that there is no voice for the new cycle of victims, the new generation of victims who are receiving sophisticated high-tech mind-control that has been perfected over centuries and in the Nazi concentration camps, universities, hospitals, labs, and secret underground facilities. This book is meant to be a voice for those victims who have no voice.

But this book is not only concerned about what has been stolen from the victims of mind-control, but also about the sacrifices that sincere therapists and support persons have endured. This next section is written in hopes that it will help therapists in their struggles. We make no claims that this information will work for therapists, we are merely passing on what we have learned from one friend to another friend. Best wishes, and may God bless your work.

An OVERVIEW of WHAT THE SUPPORT TEAM FACES

When the victim first comes into therapy it will typically be for some other problem, such as an eating disorder. An astute therapist will notice the clues which signal that mind-control is very probable, & then will follow up.

There are four areas of therapy that should not be neglected:

a. safety issues

b. helping the victim get to know themselves,

c. building positives such as love, care, the Word of God into the recovering victim's life.

d. dismantling the PDE (the primal dissociative experience), along with the programming foundations.

As a little method to remember these things, we came up with the word S-I-N-C-E-R-E, which stands for Safety, Information, aNd, Creating positives, Ejecting, erasing, expeling, the PDE & internal computers, R realizing, Emancipation. Each of these areas are essential for success.

What do we mean Realizing Emancipation? When we are talking about mind-control, freedom is a state of mind. The victim must free their mind from the control of the world and realize who they are as God intended and planned. It is not enough to erase the bad, one must realize one's identity and birthright in God that was stolen. In fact, as our book points out, a mind-control victim will not let loose of their mind-control unless something better is adopted. We sincerely pray that those victims who want out will find Jesus Christ, and realize the emancipation that is found in Christ Jesus.

Let us recap the four essential areas of work. If the victim is not totally SAFE, then very little work of substance will take place, even though the client might display a great healing (which is a cover program.)

If the victim, does not get to know who they are, what has happened to them, and what mind-control is all about, they will likely go into denial and leave therapy.

If the programming is not worked on, and dismantled, it will torment the person until they are too beat down and too tormented & intimidated to continue.

If the victim is not given positives and positive reasons to live, if they do not experience love, they will not value themselves, and will not be motivated to work through the horrendous work that must be done. They need to have positive worthwhile goals to work toward.

This book is not the final word on this subject. This book will give the reader the most indepth look into the therapy of trauma-based mind-control to date. There are only a few therapists who have worked with PDEs. These are dangerous, & it is hard to present the successful techniques on how to break the deeper programming without giving the other side the knowledge on how to prevent such therapeutic work. May God grant the strength & courage you need.

ACCESSING

Before the support team and the victim can work on accessing issues, they need to understand HOW a mind-control slave can be accessed.

Allow us to give a summary of some of the more usual methods of accessing, that is making contact with a mind-control slave. (In fact almost all of these were standard methods used on the author.):

MEDIA: access codes/colors/story schemes/pictures in the newspapers, television, Christian television, ads, radio, and news events that are broadcast in all fashions.

PERSON TO PERSON: Eye winks, eye blinks, hand signals, body gestures, clothing, colors, words, karaoke song selections sung, other victims of mind control, taps such as 3 taps, and the arrival of particular persons, one's children, one's boss, one's relatives.

TECHNOLOGICAL: Sounds in morse code, break lights done in code, head light flashes, gunshots in area such as 3 gunshots, blank telephone calls, recorded messages left on answering machine, telephone tones, late calls from master, airplanes flying certain patterns in area, helicopters flying certain patterns, and lights on helicopters.

ITEMS: Keys, business cards, certain tokens or certain bills, letters such as chain letters, colors on cars, statues at sites, signs, houses, and colors on houses, buttons,

SPIRITUAL: Astral projection, telepathy.

(Students can refer to our other books for more information on accessing methods and codes.)

As the casual reader of the above will realize, it is almost impossible for a victim of mind-control to be isolated from being accessed. This is why it is essential to remove the victim from their ordinary environment and get them to a safe place where they are secure and can be worked with, without interference. Up to now, only a handful of victims in history have ever received this, and then only temporarily.

Because it is so difficult to isolate the victim from everything that might be a code, a few knowledgeable sincere therapists have resorted to desensitizing the codes, and putting safety mechanisms that cause the victim to get angry if someone tries to access them, and allows them to block out the codes. However, this is only part of the answer, because if they physically get a hold of an ex-victim, they can traumatize that part of the mind that is resisting the codes and destroy it so that they break the safety mechanisms.

The first step in desensitizing the codes is to look at them with the alters, to go over it consciously and know that it is a trigger. Once the conscious mind knows something is a trigger, it is harder for it to work. Most of the triggers, codes and cues work at the subconscious (or unconscious mind). I write unconscious--because they hit the mind at a very deep level. These codes are not something sitting close to the front of the mind.

A skilled victim that is undergoing therapy, may want to play along with the abusers so that the Illuminati do not have a clear idea of where the system is rather than bucking the system cold turkey. Again each situation for each victim is unique & calls for some clever responses. Running from the abusers rather than confronting them when they publicly try to secretly access the victim may send the wrong signal that the victim fears the abusers. The abusers love to see fear; fear only encourages them. Hopefully, the support team can develop their own strategies, without us having to spell it all out, & then having someone mechanically "do it by the book." As a final note, we encourage readers who want to understand the subject of accessing better to review various related parts in our books. For instance, there is also some information in our twinning article that might be helpful.

BOUNDARIES & ROLES

Because the therapists speak a special language, and are recognized as experts, they have exercised a monopoly on providing information on mind-control. People want to believe that the experts have answers, and therapists have played the part. The public may have underestimated how much they have wanted their image of their therapists to be true, and how reluctant they are to admit the shortcomings of their experts. We are calling for a re-evaluation of the treatment of programmed multiples, and suggesting the formation of support teams to assist programmed multiples in gaining their freedom from mind-control.

Dr. Frank Putnam, one of the most famous psychiatrists who is recognized as an expert by the psychiatric community and who worked as part of the DSM-IV Work group on Dissociative Disorders, wrote in his book *Diagnosis & Treatment of Multiple Personality Disorder*, (1989, pp. 133-134) "Very few of us have had any formal training in the diagnosis and treatment of MPD. Although some therapists become 'instant experts' upon seeing their first case, most feel that they do not have the skills necessary to treat these patients." While having self-doubts about their abilities, the professional therapists have been very resistent to admitting to non-professionals their shortcomings. For instance, in 1995, one of the leading professionals told our co-author, who wanted to share the material of our Vol. 2 and this book with the therapeutic community that "you have absolutely nothing to teach us."

Maybe a good place for all of us to start is with humility and a spirit of teachableness. It is probably safe to assume that if you are reading this book, you already have the desire to learn. We believe that the climate for learning has changed, and that the initial frosty reception that our material received many years ago will not be repeated by those who are sincerely interested in helping victims.

This section contains some valuable suggestions on how to begin working with a programmed multiple. Some therapists/ministers are under the misconception that they do not have to work with "alter personalities" to help these victims of mind-control. What they do not comprehend is that the person they know and see (who is **the host alter**) IS also only an alter. They generally work under the **misperception** that the host personality IS the person, and that other alters are "the alters" (which these misguided therapists/ministers perceive as "the problem"). So rather than work with any alters, they work with the host **alter**. Their misperception, which leads to such unwitting contradictory behavior on the therapists' part, would be hilariously funny, if it were not for the gravity of the situation. Host alters can be extremely resistent in admitting that they are multiples. In fact, rather than argue and debate the issue with host alters, skilled therapists come in the back door, by simply relating matter of fact, what all the other alters have been doing during therapy. The accumulation of evidence over a long period of time will eventually convince the host alter through the back door that they are part of a multiple system. On the flip side, many less visible alters may carry anger toward the host for the host alter's denial of their existence.

Do not expect straightforward evidence of a transcript of a session where several alters of a multiple appear, or a camcorder tape of a session showing different alters to automatically convince a host alter that he/or she is a multiple. Host alters will often study the available literature about DID (MPD), and will often challenge the therapist to debates to prove to the therapist that they are not a multiple. Even though the therapist has witnessed the multiplicity, it will be hard to "prove" anything to the doubting host alter. Remember the doubting philosopher who after long thought finally realized "I think, therefore I am"--if a person is emotionally invested in doubting something, the mind has an amazing ability to think up reasons to doubt obvious facts. The support team for a multiple will need to be skilled in getting the multiple to see things via "back door" techniques rather than head-on debates.

It is a traditional therapeutic practice to establish contracts with Multiple Systems. Generally, therapists attempt to establish a contract with as many alters as possible. They will endeavor to explain in the language that the child alters understand what is being agreed upon when a contract is negotiated between the child alter and the therapist.

The primary area that the therapist is concerned with is "hurt" by the Multiple to anyone else or the Multiple System's own body. The American Psychiatric Association's contract reads at one point, "I will not hurt or kill myself or hurt or kill anyone else, internal or external, on purpose or accidently, now or in the future."

The other major area of concern is setting limits regarding the treatment. Traditionally, the therapists have limited the client's time to their help, the number of phone calls they are allowed to make, etc. This works fine for the therapists. However, the therapeutic community is in denial or under its own delusions that it is making significant progress with the programmed multiples that are coming in for therapy. By and large, the therapists are simply working with the front worlds of very deep and complex systems of alters. The cults are continuing their use of essentially all slaves that are undergoing therapy today. The time has come to turn that situation around and get genuine help for these suffering slaves.

The therapist will become the parent image for a mind-control victim's alters. Is this good or bad? Should the therapist fight this transference issue? Please understand the dynamics. 99% of the alters in an Illuminati system are child alters. Granted, that some professionals report working with alter systems that they claim are 100% adults, but this only shows the limits of their understanding of their client's alter system. These child alters have NEVER had a parent. They have had cult figures who oversaw their mind-control. They have had big giant adults in their life who have manipulated and used them, but they have not had a genuine parent. The therapist can and needs to perform the role of a loving parent for these child alters so they can grow to maturity.

The intense desire of many therapists/ministers to integrate all alters again shows their limited understanding of the situation. Hopefully this book (along with our other books), by providing the details of what is going on, will encourage relatives and outsiders to have more patience with therapists who are not coming up with instant micro-wave-speed answers. Most of the heavy programming traumas are done to the victim when they were a child. Obviously, thousands of dissociated pieces of the mind which have had no chance to experience life day-to-day as the host alter(s) has, have had no chance to grow up. Integration of an entire system of child alters who have not grown up is only asking for problems. Integration of the real core with child alters is asking for problems. The overall situation that trauma-based mind-control places the victim and therapist in, is extremely complex and difficult.

The victim will transfer their feelings for their abusers to the therapist and support team. What else can they do? As past traumas are uncovered, the victim may even hallucinate during a drug memory abreaction and see the therapist as the programmer. The therapist may say or wear things that also trigger transference. Depending upon how the various alters handled abuse, may determine how the different alters then act when they perceive the therapist as another abusive person. Again, this presents another reason why support teams are worthwhile.

Traditionally, therapists have set spoken and unspoken limits to the time they will give the victim. Therapists have limited time in two ways, one is the amount of time per week, and the other is the length of treatment that the therapist will devote to the victim before dropping him/her as a client. If the client perceives that the overall treatment time is limited, they will not raise the deeper issues. Because most clients with mind-control only see their therapists for short periods of time, they also can get by with letting the therapist only work on surface issues. After having interacted with numerous mind-control victims and therapists, the authors of this book have seen firsthand that most therapists do not see a clear picture of what they are dealing with DURING THE THERAPY TIME. Putnam admits in his book *Diagnosis & Treatment of Multiple Personality Disorder*, (1989, p. 149), "I have discovered, much to my chagrin, that many of my patients are *very* different out in the world than they appear in my office." In fact, the real secret sides of their clients are far more profoundly shocking than most therapists up to now have been willing to imagine. The therapists encourage the superficial approach mentioned above, because many of the best professional therapists will not deal with anything except the issues that the host or presenting alter brings up in the therapy session. In other words, many professional therapists REFUSE to guide the therapy. The client is then double-binded. The client is somehow supposed to know the issues that they are programmed not to know. It's a "patient-diagnose-and-heal-yourself approach". Amazing result do occur, because the mind doesn't want to face its problems. The mind comes up with superficial solutions, declares itself better and moves on. (Unfortunately, the mind-control continues, only now it is simply better hidden.)

A great deal has been written about how clients sabotage therapy and double-bind their therapists. The books that have covered this subject have not even begun to cover this subject. Books could be written about this. But an even less understood problem, is how the traditional therapeutic methods double-bind the client. The traditional therapeutic/& ministerial methods are double-binding the clients from escaping the mind-control. For instance within the Christian deliverance approach, if a client fails to get an instant miraculous healing during a deliverance, then they are told they lack faith, and they are told that without faith they cannot heal. In other words, they must deny the problem if they want the solution.

Are the therapists (or support teams) willing to put as much effort & attention into the victim as the Illuminati or other programming cult? Except for minor exceptions, therapists have NOT been willing to spend the same amount of time as the cult spends. The Illuminati have Grande Dames that continue ongoing guidance for the adult slaves. They also are willing to have their best programmers fly in from Europe and other locations to reprogram a slave with the best equipment and technology available. The commitment level by the Illuminati to their slaves has up to now been many times greater than any of the professionals. Don't kid yourself that the slaves don't recognize this. That is why only superficial issues are being dealt with. That is why so many slaves appear to be getting better from the professionals, but the professionals are not being eliminated from practicing.

The original Mother-of-darkness who works as a programming assistant with the head male programmer is putting in trees internally that are designed to last for the entire life of the slave. That's a long term commitment on the part of the programmers and their programming. The fruit (programs) that are placed upon the trees (which are used as programming file systems), are to last the life of the slave. The slave knows that the fruit has been given his internal worlds for his lifetime.

An example of a healthy productive role the therapist can take would be the following: The therapist assures the mind-control victim that they will have as much commitment to examining and taking off the fruit, as the other side has of keeping the fruit in place. The victim doesn't know what the issues are, so the therapist uses the back-door approach to let the victim learn about themselves. The therapist asks, "What do you think about trees? Would you spend the next week(s) drawing trees, talking to me about trees, and going out and talking to trees. Please journal what you talk to the trees about." The client may come back and say, "Trees are very important to me. I don't want to talk to anyone about trees. Trees are very sacred to me, and they are deeply rooted in my mind, I am their caretaker?" Then the therapist continues the backdoor exploration, "What do you mean you are their caretaker?" Eventually, the mind begins to unravel. The journaling can be an important vehicle to track the unravelling of the mind.

Due to the heavy infiltration within the therapeutic community, some disinformation has been assimilated into the beliefs of therapists. One of these is that victims of mind control (who they call "survivors") shouldn't spend time together. Actually victims are able to understand each other and trigger important information. They can be very helpful to each other, once the host alter has done some basic stabilizing. Another myth that the therapists hold to, is that the therapist will be perceived as a benevolent caretaker by the victim and the Illuminati will be perceived as abusers. Generally, it is quite the opposite. The Illuminati have the ability to give pain, but they have the ability to take it away. The therapist has the ability to give pain, but seldom the ability nor the time to take the pain away. There often is little closure to the mess therapists start, and most victims are very silent about the struggles they go through, in part because they blame themselves for problems. The master or handler is generally see as a benevolent dictator, a wonderful god, and a friend all rolled up into one. The therapist, in order to maintain their aloof therapeutic role, does not want to be a friend to the victim. They like to stay emotionally distant, perhaps puffing on their pipe. The therapists are still missing an obvious given, which is that most multiple personalities have parents who are multiples.

COMMUNICATION ISSUES

Communication issues come in all shapes and sizes. The first that must be dealt with, and which will never fade away, are the issues between the victim and their therapist. The victim and therapist do not start this marathon to communicate at the starting point. They must work hard just to get to where most people begin. This is because the victim has been betrayed by every important person in their life. Trust is the foundation for communication, and before the therapist can establish a shaky trust in the victim's mind, little deep communication will occur.

The victim must establish internal communication lines. This is equivalent to trying to get a city of people to all like and talk to each other. The answers to how a multiple can communicate with so many diverse people should be used to help society at large. The same answers that multiples have been discovering for their internal work, could help society at large. Along with developing better internal communication is the task of developing common goals and learning how to control a system's internal switching. Common goals and control over one's switching are major positive steps. Initially, an alter system will not have these. To develop cooperation in switching will also relieve some of the tension that comes from alters competing for the body.

The next area of communication problems is in the area of what alters present themselves when the therapist wants to work, and which alters does the therapist work with. The temptation is to get rid of troublemaking alters, but sometimes the troublemaking alters are the ones the therapists really needs to work with.

The standard hour-long therapeutic session does not promote communication with an alter session. Traditionally, alters will appear as the session is closing, perhaps subconsciously hoping that their important appearance will force the therapist to extend the therapy time. Many therapists stick to their time schedules, and simply advise the alter to appear at the next session. Many opportunities to develop lines of communication are lost due to the limitations of the traditional one hour session. Many alters only show up at special occasions, so a support person who is around the system for long periods of time is in a strategic position to really facilitate some good communication developing.

The programmed multiple's system will almost overwhelm the therapist when they find out that they have a listening ear. The therapist will have an entire city of people wanting to give their opinions and to voice their concerns. The needs of the alter system are so great, that it is no wonder that many therapists have terminated their clients because they feel overwhelmed at the system's need to be heard. What is breaking is a dam that has held back in silence decades of severe abuse. In the best interest of the overwhelmed therapist and the overwhelmed victim, we suggest support teams deal with programmed multiples, because the issues really demand that much help.

DENIAL, how to deal with the therapists or ministers

A popular question with ministers who have not worked in the area of programmed DID's is, "Why doesn't God have an instant miracle for these people?"

There are many parts to the answer, but before getting into the answer, perhaps these ministers should ask Almighty God why he has not chosen simplistic answers to so many things in life. If a room full of smokers are prayed for by any minister, how many will no longer be smoking in a month's time? Smoking is a trivial mild addiction compared to the programmed of a complex programmed multiple. Those ministers who ask this question need to ask themselves if God is so powerful and they know how to pray, why haven't they themselves cleared out this nation's hospitals. The traumas that have put people in hospitals are generally mild compared to the programming traumas.

While most licensed therapists are in denial that the systematic programming of thousands of infants is going on in this nation, and that SRA exists, if they look at history every element of the programming has been carried out and historically documented.

Should we automatically dismiss any suggestion that those in authority may occasionally conspire to obfuscate the truth? Consider this, most people can barely make it through the day at work without engaging in what are effectively low grade conspiracies. Perhaps they tacitly agree with another co-worker not to report the co-workers misbehavior to the boss. So why should we expect things to be different in the corridors of power?

Every major and most minor religious group in history have had members that have killed other humans. And yet the FBI officially claims that SRA doesn't exist. If we look at the list of thousands of covens (and our co-author Fritz has many of their addresses and locations) and think to ourselves how many millions of people are practicing witchcraft today--doesn't it seem incredible that the FBI doesn't believe any of these witches are capable of killing someone for their religious beliefs. Christians, Moslems, and Jews are capable of killing for their religious beliefs, but somehow the FBI thinks witches are incapable? Doesn't that smack of a cover-up?

The victim doesn't have time to deal with bull-headed counselors who are in denial. The denial could be a sign that the therapist are mixed up in the world-wide satanic conspiracy him or herself. The victim should not try to convince the therapist about what is happening, the victim should find a listening ear, and take their needs for help somewhere where they will get real attention.

DEPRESSION (initial client complaint)

Depression is mentioned, because the original complaint of many victims of total mind-control is a depression that they can't figure out.

Depression comes in different types. What the therapist wants to identify is a. what kind of depression is occurring and b. what are the causes of the depression and c. what kind of treatment modalities can be applied.

Often depression will be experienced as a feeling of defeat, or a feeling of a loss, or a feeling of no hope.

Sometimes depression is a symptom of programming going off of a total mind-controlled slave. If this is the case, unless the client is well into therapy for his or her DID (MPD), the client will rarely have a clue about the real source.

Some drugs have the effect or side-effect of causing depression. These include codeine, high-blood pressure medicines, indomethacin, steroids, and tranquilizers. The client should mention what medicine they are taking, and the side-effects of these noticed.

Sometimes clients with depression can get involved in physical activities and get involved with others and this will clear up a depression.

Sometimes clients can determine the underlying spiritual problems and significantly help their depression by working on root spiritual problems or doing a deliverance. A few proper questions will soon discover if there are root spiritual problems causing the depression. If the person had a breakdown of communication with their parents, this will eventually if not corrected lead to open rebellion, and then several steps later this will lead to a suicidal depression. The original sequence of events was created by the lack of trustworthy communication by the person's parents and needs to be addressed at that level to pull it out by the roots.

Sometimes depression is simply a reaction to a sad event. This is not likely to cause someone to come to a therapist, but such a triggering event should be ruled out if other causes are to be treated.

One of the most effective ways of dealing with depression is to realize how it is a lack of faith and a selfish self-focus and a sin toward God, who will provide just what we need in life. If the client is open to seeing that depression is a sin, then this sin can be confessed, and all spirits attached to it delivered from the person. If the client is a total mind-controlled slave, the front alters may get some relief from such a miniature deliverance, but will still need to address the deeper problems.

The therapist can administer to the client a dissociation test, to determine if the client may have been a candidate for total mind-control. If the client tests positive, then the therapist will need to do follow up work. Causes for this depression may be very deep rooted & take some serious long term investigation and work.

The therapist can also serve in the role of listener. If the client gets some of his pent-up emotions & problems out, he may feel some relief. If the client sees that someone cares, that can also have a positive effect. The client can also be encouraged to talk about the situation to another trusted person. The therapist will want to find out what kind of support system (team) can be used to help the client.

(INITIAL CLIENT COMPLAINT) **DEPRESSION**

DEPRESSION

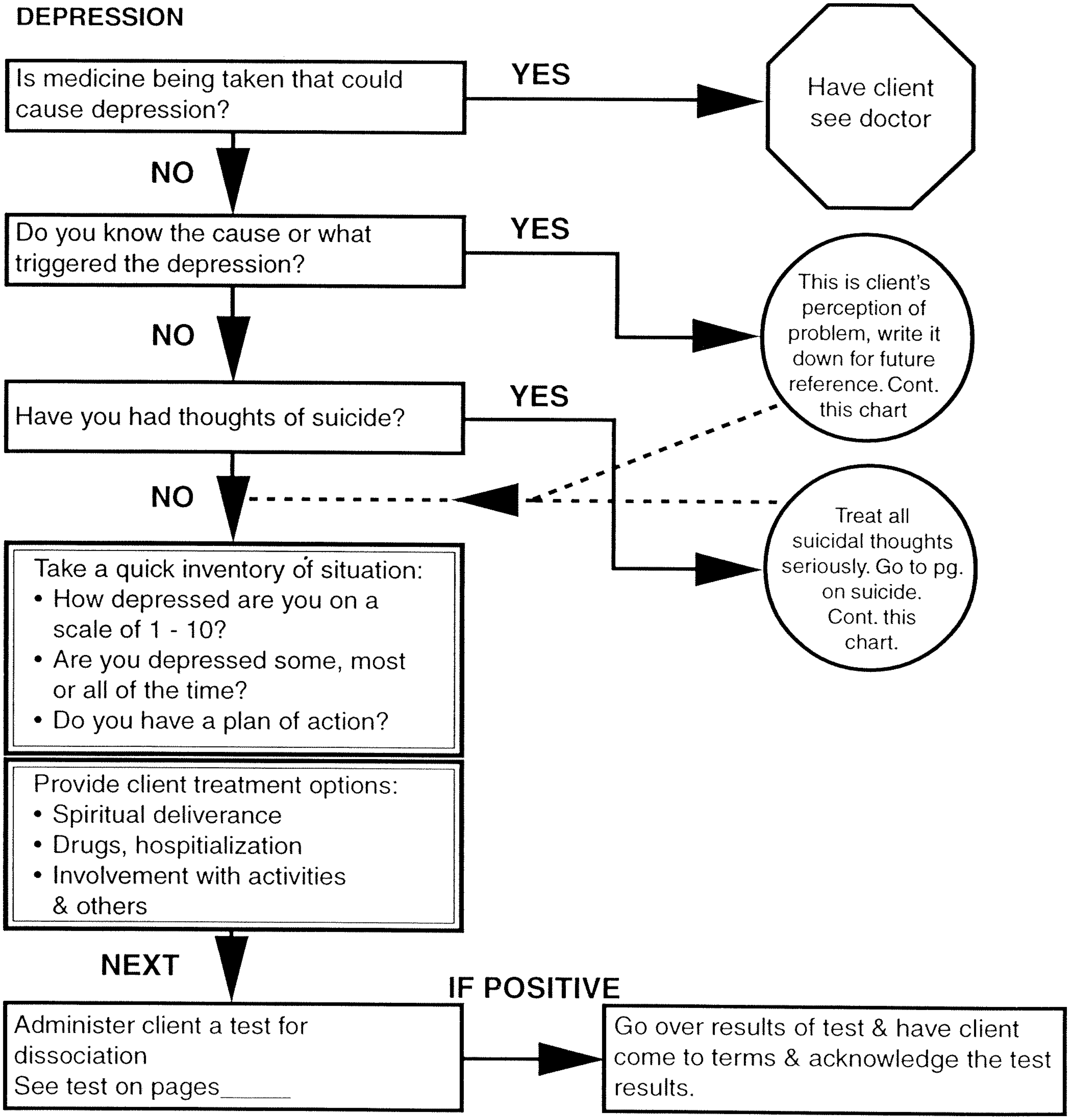

Is medicine being taken that could cause depression?

Have client see doctor

Do you know the cause or what triggered the depression?

This is client's perception of problem, write it down for future reference. Cont. this chart

Have you had thoughts of suicide?

Treat all suicidal thoughts seriously. Go to pg. on suicide. Cont. this chart.

Take a quick inventory of situation:
- How depressed are you on a scale of 1 - 10?
- Are you depressed some, most or all of the time?
- Do you have a plan of action?

Provide client treatment options:
- Spiritual deliverance
- Drugs, hospitialization
- Involvement with activities & others

Administer client a test for dissociation
See test on pages_____

Go over results of test & have client come to terms & acknowledge the test results.

Disclaimer: This chart is only to help people make choices on what they want to do. No results are implied or promised.

DETECTION OF MIND-CONTROL

The therapist, the victim and others have several avenues they can use to detect mind-control.

One avenue in diagnosing mind-control which has not been touched upon by the professional psychiatric literature is to look at the subject's role in life. The reason that the professional literature is unable to discuss this avenue, is because the professionals have had very little understanding about how the World Order is constructed and ran. In fact we were thankful that God brought into our life, one of the few outsiders that had a grasp of how the Illuminati controls the world. An understanding of how the Illuminati uses front organizations, what those organizations are, how they interlock, and how control over the various sectors of life is managed by the Illuminati would greatly help therapists identify people who have to be Illuminati members. It is an extremely high chance that Illuminati members are multiples, and an even higher chance that they are under some form of mind-control. Even John DuPont, who recently was head of the DuPont family, was plagued by implants.

To identify people under mind-control see if they are people with specialized training. Next, identify if they are in a highly structured job, where there is no room for grey--everything is black or white. Multiples do very well in positions that call for black or white, structured thinking. Look for educators in principal positions, reform schools, catholic and military schools, boy and girl schools. These are places that the Illuminati control in order to use them for auxiliary programming centers. Many of your porn stars, some of your movie actors, almost all of your brain surgeons, some of your CPAs, many of your politicians, all of your CIA field agents, and most of your religious leaders are under trauma-based mind-control.

If you actually have the subject come in for an interview, ask questions about the person's personal history. The host alters of multiples have some very typical methods of handling personal history questions. Don't expect the host to make it easy for you to determine that they are a multiple. What you can expect is that you will have a difficult time with most multiples of getting a coherent history of their life. You may discover contradictory information in what they tell you. For instance, one multiple that we interviewed said his father was a. a nazi submarine captain, b. a jewish scientist that worked on the Montauk project from 1941 onwards. The information was obviously contradictory and contradicted what his ex-wife said about his father. The personal history contradictions of many multiples won't be this dramatic, but they might be.

When the host personality remembers the details of their life they may say, "they tell me that..."

Frequently, a person won't remember if a detail happened before or after another event in their childhood. If you find chronological problems and frequent inconsistencies, then you can highly suspect DID. But you must continue.

The MPD really is apparent, when there are lots of specific differences between the therapist and the subject in how they remember what the client has said. The different episodes are hard for the multiple to remember although they are confident of their perception of the event. The dissociative thinking makes it very difficult for the multiple to see the differences, and they will be very convinced that the therapist is trying to deceive them. The experience can be frustrating for both parties, but it is one more red flag that indicates that mind-control is likely present.

Multiples will frequently explain their

lack of detailed memories on having a "poor memory". They will often say, "I don't remember", which is truthful, and is better than the occasional situation where some multiples try to invent something to say to hide their lack of personal information, or to placate the wishes of the interviewer. They are also great at saying nothing but sounding like they have said something, and another trick multiples have is saying something that appears to be one thing but is another.

Some multiples have figured out their multiplicity, but are secret about it, in fear that others will think that they are crazy.

Over the years, probably many more times than not the professional psychiatrists and psychologists have misdiagnosed MPD. Some of their favorite disorders to use when misdiagnosing are: Adjustment, Affective, Anxiety, Bi-Polar Affective, Borderline, Drug Abuse, Eating, Histronic, Organic Mental, Paranoid Schizophrenia, PTS, Psychosis, Schizoaffective, Somatization, and Transient Amnesia. When multiples takes an MMPI, they have historically answered the same way a schizophrenic answers on items 156 & 251. (At least 3 studies have documented this.) These two questions elevate the Sc scale which has been taken to indicate schizophrenia. Some of the tipoffs that a person is misdiagnosed in a mental hospital is that the interact a lot with the staff, but have erratic behavior, that generally leads to the staff being upset. They may be responsible for a while and then surprise everyone by not being able to function or handle a responsibility.

Typical questions that help the therapist expose the programmed DID include questions about whether their school grades were erratic, whether they have gaps in their memories of school days, if they remember getting test results on tests that they don't remember taking, and a grade-by-grade year-by-year history of their life. Bear in mind, that the programmers are trying to fine-tune the programming by layering in cover memories. Still an experienced therapist should be able to see through the shallowness and the confusion of cover memories.

Mind-control comes in many appearances. With the more recent victims, implants are being used to distract victims from realizing their DID (MPD). The detection of MPD (DID) underneath the incessant manipulations and voices of the implants is a challenge. The "noise" created by the implants is a strong dissociating mechanism.

There are strong natural defenses of the mind that the programmers count on to keep the mind-control hidden. For instance, the victim has been bonded to the programmer/master. To admit mind-control is to experience abandonment, and even death (because many alters' self-identity is wrapped up with the perpetrator.) It is not easy to kill oneself, which is often the mind's perception of what admitting mind-control is. Detection of trauma-based mind-control by the therapist will usually encounter strong denial mechanisms by the victim.

The therapist should ask about flashbacks. If the client reports flashbacks that are not drug-related flashbacks that is a good sign that MPD may be present. However, most flashbacks do not begin surfacing until the programming and dissociation begins crumbling.

Some undetected adult victims of mind-control, when they are having sex with their spouses get intrusive flashbacks and images that scare them. This is another red-flag that the person may be a victim of mind-control. Victims of mind-control will often have all kinds of issues around relationships and sex.

Another red flag is when a person reports abilities or information that they have no idea where it has come from. For instance, all of a sudden one day they could understand someone speaking German, or all of a sudden they got the words to a song, or all of a sudden they just intuitively knew how to play a piano, etc. The opposite of this also hits DID mind-control victims. They may have an ability that somehow strangely disappears. It takes time to realize that these are co-conscious alters.

Victims of mind-control have great survival mechanisms. They are experts at changing the conversation to hide what they don't want to talk about. If the therapist has the skill at being gently but firmly assertive in getting what they want, the ability to be gently persistent can pay off.

The therapist needs to become acquainted with detecting alter switches. This involves eye shape changes, eye color changes, eye movement changes, blinks, body posture changes, voice pitch changes, word usage changes, perception and value changes, mood changes, etc.

Upon detection of this, the therapist may gently ask, "Do you ever feel that there is another part of yourself that comes out and does things that you would not do?" "Do you ever feel that when you are alone, someone else or some other part of you is watching you?" Any answer except a definite "no" is a red flag, that reconfirms the switching clues, and other clues that the therapist has assembled.

Not all victims of mind-control have extensive alter systems. In our previous books, we have covered situations when this does not occur.

Another way that therapists can determine mind-control would be to interview people close to the victim, and to visit the victim's work place and home. Some victims of mind-control surround themselves with objects that pertain to their programming. For instance, the therapist may find a man who has a passion for Mickey Mouse objects, or a woman who loves white rabbit figurines or star trek objects.

EATING DISORDERS (as an Initial problem, and as a Deeper Issue)

AN INTRODUCTION

Eating disorders exhibit themselves as initial problems for victims coming in for therapy. For instance, they may find themselves having an irresistible urge to overeating followed by vomiting or purging, or they may be starving themselves, or have phobias around certain foods. Eating disorders also may develop as problems as the system of alters work through their memories and programming. These eating problems do have the possibility of becoming life-threatening.

Many victims of mind-control suffer from eating disorders. There are certainly many factors which cause mind-control victims eating disorders. The more difficult disorders which resist treatment are often created by multiple factors. This section will make an attempt to provide the therapist some of important factors behind eating disorders of mind-control victims.

Eating disorders are not limited to victims of mind-control. However, many individuals who are referred or on their own come in to therapists for bulimia or anorexia, are actually suffering from the severe effects of trauma-based total mind-control. For some therapists, the first primary complaint of mind-control victims will be their eating disorder. They will be totally oblivious that anything else could be wrong.

Researchers who like to work with statistics have noticed that there is a high incidence of people with eating disorders who have problems with abuse, depression, and self-identity. Since mind-control will bring with it abuse, depression and self-identity problems it is a given that the mind-control victim will have some eating problems at some level of their being.

Modern American culture as well as many of the slave handlers are obsessed with females being thin. The pressure that females feel from society and their handlers that they are "a "dog" unless they...." makes many slaves identify thinness with overcoming their self-esteem problems. Unfortunately, if the host pursues starvation thinking that it will overcome low-self esteem, they almost always are disappointed that it doesn't help, and if anything, starvation, only exacerbates the original low self-esteem. On the flip side, in order for the host alter to feel that she has some control over just one thing in her life, she may resort to starving herself to regain some sense of power over her own body. When striving for freedom, the mind may think that starvation gives at least a fraction of power over their body, after it has been stripped of choice, beaten, and raped, and electroshocked.

One reason why some bulimics and anorexics have eating disorders is that they have difficulty identifying their feelings, and have little confidence in their ability in relationships. They feel they must do the right thing to avoid disapproval and rejection. They have an artificial idealized image of what they should be. For instance, one teenage girl was frightened that she was changing from a girl to a woman. Others due to their abuse have a hatred of their body, as well as a fear. There are some young altars that may not want to have breasts and hips. Another person felt that they were naughty if they ate, and she became increasingly disgusted with herself as she ate.

WHEN MIND-CONTROL VICTIMS WITH EATING DISORDERS FIRST COME IN CONTACT WITH THERAPISTS

One way victims come in to therapy is that they are referred by someone for their eating disorder. Anyone who gets a referral should explain clearly why the person is in for a consultation. If the client is living at home, it goes almost without saying that the support team should explore with the client the possibility of someone supportive from the family participating in the consultation phase of things, so that a more complete evaluation can be obtained.

Another frequent scenario is when a female mind-control victim is raped during the normal course of life and it triggers their mind to remember previous sexual trauma. This may kick off an eating disorder, which may drive the person to come in for therapy. Because the problem is not really an eating disorder, the person doesn't have a clue as to what they are stepping into by asking for therapy.

If someone is trying to trick a person into coming in for treatment, experience shows the tricking will quite consistently backfire in the long run. Rather, than scheming behind the victim's back, the therapist should see if there are good support groups in the area. After the victim or the victim & their family experience a support group, they are often more willing to come into therapy. Depending on the situation, getting the victim in to work on their eating disorder may even be perceived by the slave's handler as a positive, rather than a threat to his control, because it may be helping to stabilize a problem within the slave.

The patient with an eating disorder is often going to be resistant, embarrassed, and apprehensive. The therapist can establish rapport by being warm, acceptable, honest, empathetic, and interested. Different people will click with different therapists, for instance, teenage girls often prefer female therapists. This is where teams are beneficial, where one person can act more as a consultant, which the therapist who has rapport can deal with the person on a longer basis. (Therapists can establish report by using the language of the person, mirroring where they are at, etc.)

If the therapist is going to try dealing with only the eating disorder, there are several approaches that can be taken. However, whichever path the therapist goes down, it would be advisable to gather an understanding of what is going on. Whether it is bulimia or anorexia, the therapist will ask the person to describe their eating patterns both during the week and the weekend.

There are ways to get information from people which use the "back-door" so-to-speak. For instance, if the person has been referred for binge eating but won't openly discuss it, the therapist might ask, "When people go on a diet to lose weight, they sometimes feel so hungry that they are tempted to eat a whole lot. Have you experienced that?"

If the person is not forthcoming about vomiting, a gentle back-door approach might be, "Have you ever tried to lose weight by any other means?"

It is important to track the details around the episodes--such as how often, when, the most common times they occur, how long they last and the types and amounts of food eaten. It is also important to note what thoughts and feelings were attached to the various episodes.

Don't be surprised if the person doesn't say, "I don't know why I did it." The therapist can ask, "How do you view that particular food?" It could be that the cool-aid triggers the mind to think of blood. It could be that raw meat triggers the person's mind to think of sacrifices. It could be that certain smells relate to certain traumas.

Vomiting may have a cleansing effect on the mind of person coming in for therapy.

The therapist may also ask the person about their thoughts and feelings related to sex, and whether they are interested in sex. This may provide some significant clues as to what one is really dealing with.

What is the image of the person

concerning her or his body? Later, as one deals with more than the host personality, this will continue to be an issue.

With initial clients suffering mind-control, the therapist will need to ask the full range of questions, such as asking about symptoms of depression, low motivation, panic attacks, sleep problems, feelings of suicide and hopelessness, and feelings of being trapped or worthless. The full range of initial intake questions will need to be dealt with such as levels of dissociation, compulsive behaviors, addictions, psychotic thoughts, etc.

Therapists can save time if they want by using some of the standard evaluations that other professionals have developed for interviews.

For eating disorders there are for instance:

- Garner & Garfunkel's *Eating Attitudes Test*,
- Johnson's Diagnostic *Survey for Eating Disorders*
- *Structure Clinical Interview* according to the DSM's section on eating disorders

Therapists may also want to use such interviews as

- *Diagnostic Interview Schedule for Children* by Costello et. al.
- *Beck's Depression Inventory*

It almost goes without saying that Eating Disorders come from a complex array of factors, including such possible problems like structural brain illness, an infection, or endocrine malfunction. It is not possible for this book to provide detailed information on these other possible causes. The therapist needs to get a feel for what is happening, for what the therapist is qualified to do, and if need be, get the client to someone who specializes in what the client needs help in. What this section can help with is in providing insights into eating disorders as they relate to mind-control victims, and their programming, their programming-traumas, memories, and the general side-effects of a life-time of abuse.

EVALUATION FORMS

PURPOSE & SHORTCOMINGS

Evaluation forms are nice crutches in some situations. In a formal therapeutic situation where time is of the essense, forms can be given that will decrease the time that the therapist needs to begin gaining a feel about the new client's situation. We have provided an excellent form on the next page that will take approximately 5 minutes to fill out. It is a non-threatening "Getting to Know You Better" form, which can help lead into deeper discussions. The therapist could make a cup of tea for the client while the new client fills it out. Another way that forms might help is where a non-professional counsellor or friend is trying to get some better clues as to what the subject's problems are. Another benefit of forms is that it desensitizes questions that otherwise might make the subject feel defensive, because the subject's mind can see that the question is simply a standard question on a standard form, and not a personal attack.

In dynamic counselling sessions, a good therapist will be sensing and asking questions in a dynamic manner that is responding to the cues and clues that the subject is providing. Obviously, the dynamic approach when done by an experienced person who knows what he is looking for is much quicker, much more appropriate, and better tailored for the victim's situation. If you were interrogating a P.O.W. which would be more effective? to go by a list of questions in a book, or to ask questions in a dialogue between the interogator and P.O.W.? Likewise, an interview on television by Barbara Walters will be well thought out, but will still have an element of dynamic interaction. Likewise, there is no substitute for a live dialogue between a therapist and their new client.

In a dynamic evaluations, the entire procedure is a skill. However, there are several areas that will be probed.

SAMPLE QUESTIONS IN AREAS OF INQUIRY

- For instance, "Have you ever lost time?" The counsellor is careful not to define time, and will see how many examples the person provides. If the person doesn't provide examples, the counsellor might say, "By losing time I mean to look at the clock at 9 o'clock and the next thing you realize is that its 4 o'clock." During periods of boredom or extreme concentration most people will lose track of time, but in the case of multiples they often have frequent lost periods of time. However, we want to remind the reader that back-up amnesia (you forget that you forgot) will cover much of the time lost.
- "Do you remember calling yourself other names or having other people call you other names?"
- Another area that can be probed are questions around depersonalization and derealization, such as "Have you ever had the feeling you were looking at someone else in your place [or at yourself from a distance]?"
- Another area is to ask specific questions about their family history, such as "Tell me about the first five years of your life, the significant things you remember such as your home life, your friends, your relatives, and starting to school. Be very thorough and give examples of how you interacted with the important people in your life." This is to determine how fragmented their memories are. The Illuminati are trying to give people cover memories but these cover histories are still not as tight and real as most people's.
- "When do your memories become continous?"
- Inquiries can be made to see if the person has been connected to any of the groups who were exposed in Vol. 2 or any of the bloodlines exposed in Vol. 1. "Did anyone in your family ever belong to a government agency, or the Freemasons?" "Do you know your family's background or genealogy?"
- "Do you sometimes hear voices in your head, or does someone answer you when you talk out loud when alone?" Such questions are so direct that the host alter may deflect them, rather than open up.
- "Are there certain times of the year which feel unsafe for you?"

EARLY WORK

Some of the better therapists, when they suspect MPD, like to make their initial question and answer session lengthy, in order to wear the host alter down and make switching a sure thing. An alter system can prevent switching over a short period, but over a several hour session, the skilled therapist will work with the system enough that switches will begin to occur.

After getting some history from the client, the skilled therapist can teach the client how to put memories on a screen and then can go back to a significant early point in the person's life and begin working dynamically with the event.

"GETTING TO KNOW YOU BETTER" EVALUATION FORM

NAME ______________________________

address ______________________________

____

____

Fill in circle on items that pertain to you

○ Abused as a child
○ Adopted
○ A failure
○ Anxiety attacks
○ Army brat
○ Auto accident
○ Bad habits
○ Black & white thinking
○ Blackouts
○ Class President
○ Compulsive activities & behaviors
○ Depressed
○ ESP
○ Erotic dancer
○ Ex-member of a cult
○ Extrovert
○ Feelings of being choked
○ Feelings of being isolated
○ Forgetful
○ Flashbacks
○ Genius in family
○ Good grades in school
○ Great faith in God
○ Have a twin
○ Have an imaginary playmate
○ Have several close non-sexual friends of the opposite sex.
○ Headaches
○ Inability to believe in God
○ Insomnia
○ Intelligent
○ Interest in the occult
○ Irrational anger
○ Knew what you were going to be as a child
○ Little trust in other people
○ Love Disney movies
○ Love Star Wars
○ Love to collect (or hoard)
○ Loving
○ Minister for a father (or mother)
○ Moody
○ Multiple Sclerosis
○ Never dishonest
○ Nightmares
○ Panic attacks
○ Participant in a religion
○ Perfect father
○ Phobias
○ Physically attacked
○ Premature sexual development
○ Restlessness
○ Rich parents
○ Secretive
○ Serious Health problems
○ Single
○ Skipped school
○ Strange clothes in closet
○ Strange pains with no explanation
○ Strange voices
○ Sudden attitude changes
○ Supernatural experiences
○ Tonsillectomy, emergency
○ Tried narcotics
○ Trouble learning in school
○ UFO abductions
○ Unable to enjoy sex
○ Unexplainable things in personal life
○ Visions
○ Very vigilant
○ Work for the Government

FEAR, how to handle

Fear can be triggered by senses, such as smelling smoke. There is a powerful spiritual dimension that works with the mental dynamics. Thoughts are powerful things, if thoughts of fear are allowed to take root they will grow and spread.

The spirit of Fear paralyzes many victims and many support team members from dealing with what needs to be done. Fear can be compared to dandelions in a yard, they spring up everywhere and they are so hard to weed out and to dig up by the roots.

Fear clouds the mind of person, so that the higher areas of thinking shut down. Before long, the victim of fear is making unwise decisions and becoming a wimp. One of the best reasons for a person to dump their fear is that the enemy watches for fear and tries to give exactly that thing that the person fears. The fear becomes a magnet attacting the very thing that the fearful person is dreading. (The abusers are trained to key in & identify fears.)

The Spirit of the Lord brings boldness and a sound mind (cf. 2 TIM 1:7), but the Spirit of Fear brings a curse. Fear has at its foundation, the preservation of life. But we are warned in scripture that if we attempt to save our life we will lose it, but if we give to God what we can not keep to gain what we cannot lose, then we have made a wise choice. In other words, fear has at its foundation death.

The ancient wisdom of Prov. 18:21 says, "Death and life are in the power of the tongue; and they that love it shall eat the fruit thereof." Some people choose death and call in the spirits that support an agenda of death. Fear is on that death team. Fear creates a mental bondage. Fear is often the underlying reason behind many of our bondages, such as cigarettes, drugs, overeating, and stealing. People think, "If I don't do this, then such and such will happen to me." "If I don't steal, I'll starve." "If I don't do drugs, I won't be able to mellow out and face life." "If I don't smoke cigarettes, I won't stay calm and thin."

Secular therapists do not want to hear that fear is a spiritual problem. But recognition that it is a spiritual problem is important, because the answers to fear which is hope and trust are spiritual answers. What gave the shepherd boy David the courage to face Goliath without fear? Was it because he was hypnotically worked on by a therapist? Did he visualize and through self-hypnosis convince himself that he could beat Goliath? No, he defeated Goliath because he had a spiritual reason to confront Goliath, "...For who is this uncircumcised Philistine, that he should defy the armies of the living God." 2 SAM 17:26

The cold hard facts of the matter is that Fear is a lack of trust in God. God certainly cuts us a great deal of slack. But if you are "in Christ" you are in His protection, and He has promised that "I will never leave or forsake you." HEB 13:5 Doubts about God lead to fears.

Because fear is a lack of faith, Fear opens a portal, a legal foothold for Satan to bring what we fear into our life. God must respect this free will choice on our part to doubt His grace. God can spiritually protect us, but when we fear, we remove by our own free will God's protection because we have called into question His Word. We can see this spiritual law working clear back in the oldest book of the Bible, Job 3:5, "For the thing which I greatly feared is come upon me, and that which I was afraid of is come unto me." When Job feared, Satan used that to go before God and petition for the right to torment Job in those ways. God was only respecting Job's freedom of choice, when He allowed Satan to torment Job. But God did turn that negative into a positive, because even though Job had some fear, he was a righteous man.

Each person must resolve not to be in bondage to fear again. It is one thing to be have foresights and concerns, but when we speak of fear, we are speaking of when the survival part of the brain clicks in, and the higher parts of the brain start shutting down.

Understanding how deeply God wants to help us, the magnitude of His abilities & promises to help us, will help us refuse the Spirit of Fear.

FEAR, what f. issues do victim's have? (f. is an initial issue for victims)

Traumas are applied as a base to lay in the programming. They work because of the victim's fear. The more types of programming, the more types of fear. Victims, who have the older programming or excessive programming will exhibit more phobias than the normal person. Victims of mind-control will, for instance, often fear water (drowning tortures), heights (torture over cliffs, & down wells), fire (fire tortures & traumas), noises (from programming tortures), black birds (from their programming significance), red kool-aid (from ritual programming events), etc.

The victim must also fear their abusers. These fears concern issues such as: being reaccessed, being reprogrammed, receiving a traitor's death, losing someone close as punishment, being publicly defamed & losing their occupation. The victim will quite often fear losing the approval or "love" of the abuser if he/she faces the truth about the abuse.

The victim will also fear their own mind: the fear of the unknown, the fear of knowing the truth, the fear that they won't differentiate between tricks, cover programs, false memories laid in by programming and what actually happened, and the fear of the never ending pain. The victim's alters who want to move toward health will fear the internal programs, the mazes, the vortices, the traps in the mind, as well as alters who are abusive to the body & alters who have internalized the roles of the abusers, such as judge alters. The victim will also fear the heavy demonization that controls their lives, as well as experiencing the heavy fears that the demons instill within them.

The victim will fear their support team, because they have only experienced betrayal from their past significant people. The victim will fear that he will not be believed, that he will not be loved, that he will express too much fear, anger, or strange happenings and be rejected. He may even fear that the therapist will lock him up if the truth comes out.

Because of the way a system of alters is created, the front alters may be able to dissociate from some of these fears, & put on a very good front. Once the therapist scratches below the surface, he will uncover lots of unresolved issues & tidal waves of fear that roll through a system of alters.

Many victims of mind-control fear there is no hope. This fear incapacitates them. This fear has been developed in the victim's mind by programming scenarios where the Network makes the slave feel they are always being watched, and that any thought or action of betrayal will be immediately known by the abusers.

FEAR robs the victim of moving toward freedom, working on issues, learning from their internal world, working with their support team in a positive manner, and of enjoying life. Perhaps the largest thing FEAR robs from victims is HOPE. While God & His perfect love cast out fear, fear has a way of driving away the work of God in a person's life, incl. an unhealthy fear of God. Fear is the opposite of faith & trust in God. To deny one's problems does not equal faith. Neither fear of problems, nor denial of problems is faith. Both are a lack of faith. Faith means to believe that there are answers and to continue pressing on until answers arrive or are discovered. Faith is directly connected to our trust that God is good and will reward good things to His creation. God will prove Himself to those who trust Him. "Oh, taste the Lord and know that He is good."

In the previous article fear was dealt with as a spiritual issue, which it is primarily. However, it can be treated from other angles too. For instance, the book *Kicking the Fear Habit* by Manuel J. Smith (Dial Press, NY:NY, 1977) treats fear as a Behavior Mod. problem.

What kind of FEAR issues do victim's have? (initial victim issues)

AREAS OF FEAR

1. ASSOCIATIONS with BAD MEMORIES (TRIGGERS) which could include fear of: water, heights, fire, noises, animals, foods.
2. Things the ABUSERS might do, which could include the fear of: rejection, reprisals, reaccessing, and reprogramming.
3. Things the VICTIM will do to him or her self, which could include: falling into internal mind-traps, failing to get the truth, finding out the truth, never getting rid of the pain or guilt, having to be subjected to demons, having to go into the unknown.
4. the SUPERNATURAL, which could include: Almighty God, demons, aliens, & what they consider to be their destiny.
5. the FUTURE, which could include: the coming New World Order, that there is no hope, that there are no answers, & the fear of an alien takeover.
6. the SUPPORT TEAM, which could include: the fear of not being believed, the fear of not being understood in the complexity of a programmed multiple, the fear of betrayal, the fear of rejection, and the fear of hurting others.

PROBLEMS FEAR CREATES:

1. INCAPACITATES the Victim to work on issues.
2. MAKES IT DIFFICULT for the support team.
3. ROBS the victim of the joys and pleasures of life.

FEAR interlocks with many other issues that will be discussed in this book. It is a pervasive problem that interlocks with many other issues. It is not a single issue that can be easily cast out like a trick knot that can be undone by a clever pull, but is a serious series of emotional knots that will take persistent undoing. There are so many fear issues, that this is one reason it is imperative to get the victim to a safe place to reduce their fears to a working level. Along that line, a safe place is best which has the minimum of fear triggers in their life.

Sometimes it is helpful for clients to understand the dynamics of fear. There are fear reduction therapies that can be applied to specific phobias which may allow the victim to function freer.

HOPE

"How can I get better?" It's the common question. Even deeper is the question, "Can I get better?" There are plenty of people who are willing to offer false hopes. If we are to discuss HOPE, we must also be willing to be honest and frank, and not offer placebos. Victims of mind-control have been lied to enough, they don't need to be given false hopes.

There are two types of mind-control victims, those who have their humaness totally snuffed out and are simply robots that function in order to survive, and those who have a tiny spark of their original life still tucked away somewhere within themselves. For us that tiny spark or original humaness would show itself when we secretly prayed to God that he would save the victims we were assigned to program. We gave tiny mustard seeds to those that we helped program in hopes that that mustard seed of faith would free them some day. We tried to weaken the programming with those who were strong minded enough to possibly break free someday. We did our job, but quietly within us, was still a spark of humaness (or one can also call it hope).

It is that spark of hope that the Illuminati try so hard to snatch. If they can accomplish killing that residual spark of hope, then they will work hard to keep their victim alive, because they know that they now have a robot. The humaness (the hope) has died, or at best is totally apathetic. The child himself becomes apathetic, and quits looking for hope. It only functions in order to survive.

In our experience in the Illuminati, there is no doubt that God was there with some children. Most everyone is aware that Jesus Christ came to destroy the works of the devil (1 JN 3:18). Our life is testimony that the power of Christ to perform miracles is not dead, no matter how much the Illuminati scoff at it. With some children it seemed God had drawn a line, and Satan could not go past that line. Some child victims had as much as three God-given guardian angels. God has kept a spark of hope alive in some of the mind-control victims out there, in spite of the incredible amount of sophisticated torture and mind-control that they have had to endure.

Our system would define hope for a mind-control victim this way: hope is when a piece of the child has not sold out to the Illuminati. God will take that piece and even though the victim is in darkness, God will take that spark of life and He will work with it. If there is any light, God is in a position to raise that light up.

When God brings a person into a victim's life who sincerely cares, and loves and is committed to helping the victim, somehow an appreciation for that love and committment reaches down deep into the person's mind, and helps that spark of hope grow into a flame. Even though the victim does not understand what is happening, they will grab ahold of that help with a strangle hold. The person who wants to help can encourage the victim to tap into that survivor instinct, that strength that they have to survive, that survivor spirit that they had to have to endure the brutal trauma-based mind-control, and apply that spirit of survival to their fight for freedom. Go back to the hope that kept them alive.

Without hope, the victim is not going to fight the pain and the programming to get free. The victim has come from a world with little hope. If the victim can not consciously see hope, the support person can keep their hope safe for them, and help them to see that there is a tunnel and the tunnel has a light at the end of the tunnel. We can pray that God will reveal to us the roots of our slavery. We can pray that Almighty God's spirit would breathe the life-giving medicine of His Spirit of Life into us.

We know that God can seem awfully distant and aloof. We know the fear that comes from looking in the mirror and on one hand seeing an old person and on the other seeing a young person. Reality seems such a drag. All the trivial headaches add up to one big pot that is boiling over. This is where a prayer for an inner transformation of joy can bless a person. The realization that God does care, can lift a great deal of the burdens of reality. This is where a walk out in the sunshine through a park, where we experience the beauty of creation can remind us that life does contain many beautiful things.

If a person is in a pitch black room, groping for the door handle in total darkness, it is very easy to panic and believe that one will never get out. Once the person has reached the door handle, even though they do not have it opened, there is a way for that door to open. If the mind-control victim has reached someone who cares and understands how to help them, then they have reached that door knob. They need to hang on and know that when that door swings open, it will surprise everyone. The door seems stuck, but it can open. When we are in the dark, let us call out to the God of Comfort who can see us in the dark.

A victim of mind-control when he or she regains freedom has a noble and powerful ministry available to them. Who else can listen to and look at another survivor of mind-control abuse and convey deep empathy without saying a word. God has great things that He wants to do with your future. We must not let the enemy steal our hope, as he has tried so hard to do over the years.

We spoke up before a conference of therapists and gave our testimony that Jesus Christ brought us freedom. We want to encourage therapists to see that a victim needs to have a hope that a power stronger than themselves and stronger than the befudled therapist is going to help them. There is a creative power for good in this universe, call it what you want, but know that this power comes from a good Creator that loved His creation, and that He has put time limits on how long evil can exist. There is coming a time when evil will be abolished. Until that time we can know that Almighty God has the power to turn any evil into good, and one of the proofs of this is the life, death and resurrection of Christ. God has high hopes for us. His disciples were so excited about this good news, they were willing to die for it. We are excited about giving hope to others, enough that we are also willing to pay that final price.

INITIAL QUESTIONNAIRE

Does the client have?

a. dissociative behavior (see checklist pg.)
b. intrusive thoughts
c. physical complaints with no medical reasons
d. relatives in any intelligence organization
e. relatives associated with perpetrator groups (see list Vol. 2 pg.)
f. memory lapses unexplained by ordinary forgetfulness
g. UFO or alien experiences
h. the presence of childhood trauma's in one's life
i. feelings like there is more than one person (or voice) inside

IF NO TO ALL OF THESE

Look for Something Else

YES

Has the client?

a. ever lost time
b. found strange items in their closet
c. heard words by others associated with mind control
d. uncontrollable behavior despite strong efforts to control it
e. relatives who belong to Illuminati or elite bloodlines
f. unexplainable scars (when examined under a black light)
g. heard voices
h. a feeling of being possessed by some power, or a living, dead or evil person.
i. unexplainable bruises
j. been adopted, lived in a foster home or orphanage

YES

Are there?

a. strange reactions by what seem to be total strangers
b. unexplainalbe fluctuations of skills and abilities
c. intelligent parents with a wide disparity of abilities between them & the client
d. times the client feels suicidal

YES

Is the client?

a. missing most of his/her childhood memories
b. engaged in espionage, professional sports, exotic dancing, psychic activities, Delta forces or any other profession that might link the victim to mind-control
c. a member of the Catholic Church, Jehovah's Witnesses, Mormons or Charismatic movement

IF SOME OF THESE ARE YES

Suspect Total Mind-Control & Implement Actions for Mind Control

INSOMNIA, suggestions for

The issue of insomnia is a major issue in terms of deprogramming. Therapists have typically neglected the impact that lack of sleep has on the victim, as well as the positive impact a well-thought out program to provide sleep & to create new improved sleep habits.

We can't tell you what will work for you, we can only tell you what has worked for others.

A good sleep will help counter the effects of mind-control, unfortunately good sleep is a rare commodity for victims of trauma-based mind-control. It is very common for their support person to have to hold them and comfort them night after night as the programming breaks down & the horrible memories begin surfacing. Good sleep will also have a domino effect on improving other areas of your life, such as personal relationships and productivity.

Victims of mind-control have a terrible time getting decent amounts of sleep. The reasons for this are many, including heavy programming not to sleep more than 3 hrs/night, body pains, chemical imbalances, anxiety, panic attacks, & surfacing memories. For such a difficult problem, the most powerful over the counter medicine that some victims have successfully used is a combination of ibuprofen and Chlorpheniramine Maleate. Ipuprofen can be obtained in 200 mg. caplets and Chlorpheniramine Maleate can be obtained in 4 mg. tablets (or 8 mg.-time release tablets.) The combination of 400 mg. of Ibuprofen with 6 mg. of Chlorpheniramine Maleate taken together is the most powerful (yet surprisingly gentle for the power it packs) medicine we know of. Those who have used this found that after a period of time, like with all drugs the effects begin to wane, and they would up the dosage slightly. Perhaps what is most effective program over the long haul is to have more than one method to get a good night sleep, and to intermix the various methods so they all remain viable and healthy methods.

The liver produces lysozyme to protect itself against all foreign chemicals. The increasing presence of lysozyme enzymes is how the body increasingly destroys the effectiveness of any foreign chemical. The high rates of lysozymes in the liver are very hard on it. After about 3 weeks, a person taking a chemical has pushed the liver to about the maximum that is prudent. The person must then back-off from the chemical intake in a slow withdrawal lest they trigger a reaction in the body-mind. However, the extreme sleep problems that victims of mind-control have, usually seem minor to the side-affects of drugs to help them sleep. Medical science warns that a long-term use of any drug for insomnia will eventually intensify the problem it initially cures. This is why we advocate an attack against insomnia from several different directions, and that the different solutions be intermixed at different intervals.

A prudent practice is to consult a reference book such as *Drug Handbook* (pub. by Springhouse Corp.) in order to find out the interactions, the nursing considerations, and the contraindications of a particular drug. Pregnant women are especially limited in what they can and can't take. The therapist and the support persons should be aware that the victim may well be programmed not to accept any meds, and it is counterproductive to scare the victim about the dangers of drugs, because that will only play into the fears that are already there. People react differently to meds and the goal is to calmly and wisely find what works for the victim without increasing their programmed resistance.

In terms of herbs, Calms Forte (valerian, aka garden heliotrope) can be helpful to relax a victim. Valerian even comes in tea-bags. Some of the over-the-counter newer sleep meds are gentle, and have been effective for some victims.

The advantages of taking something that induces a mild gentle (not drugged) sleep state is that it gives the victim a chance to recuperate and to begin to pull out of what's called the "alpha state" that their minds constantly exist in.

An alcohol-induced sleep prevents REM sleep from occurring, and some of the symptoms of hangovers are simply the direct result of REM deprivation. (See below where REM sleep is discussed.)

Bensodiazepines such as Valium are sleep-inducing drugs that should be given under a doctor's supervision. They will only provide a short term solution, but again as many victims of mind-control will agree, the severity of the crisis is often such that such meds are welcome even if they are only going to be temporary relief. Any short R-and-R is better than no R-and-R in the battle for freedom.

The body produces it own chemicals to induce sleep. These are released by the body is relation to how much physical work the body does. A good day of hard physical work will certainly assist in the body chemically putting its own brain to sleep. When the victim remains in their normal highly aroused state of fear, with its high production of endorphins) it is hard for the body to relax and sleep. Young or physically active victims of mind-control can do aerobic exercises to counter the chemical arousals in their bodies, to improve their bodies' natural ability to sleep. This is one of the safest long term approaches, if the recovering victim has the physical makeup to safely exercise.

The victim should try and pick a comfortable position to sleep in, because the less one moves around in sleep the less the brain is stimulated and the better one sleeps. If no position is comfortable, pick the best choice, and lay as quiet as possible. The fear of insomnia is as dangerous as other fears in preventing sleep. Self-acceptance and acceptance of life are positive ways to relax better and to get to sleep. The support person can talk to the victim prior to the time they retire and let the victim experience acceptance and love. This will encourage the victim to let their mind dwell on unconditional self-acceptance, which will encourage the mind to relax and sleep well.

A great deal of mischief can happen during sleep hours. Cult-loyal alters will wait until the other alters have gone to sleep, and then they will snatch the body and try to contact their master, or "go home" to their master. As the trauma memories surface, hundreds of new dissociated pieces of the mind float to the surface. If a young new child alter finds itself in a strange environment, their instinct is to run. If the support person is there to simply say, "its O.K., everything's going to be O.K., relax...", then the support person may greatly prevent small alters from running out of the house as they look for something safe, and actually getting the system into trouble.

A great deal of therapy can actually be done at night, and in relation to the sleep state. This again is an area that is greatly missed by the traditional hour at the therapist. In fact, experience has shown that most DID clients who initially go into therapy will not open up and explain to the therapist why they get poor sleep. The therapist needs to be competent enough to draw out this information. Initially, before deprogramming, the victim will most likely be able to get to sleep, but will sleep only three hours, and will have reoccurring "nightmares" and flashbacks. Once the victim begins deprogramming and working on issues, they will often like to sleep in because they sleep best in the early morning hours. Again, we have seen this to be common among recovering victims of mind-control all over the U.S.

Many alter systems have a few alters who specialize in sleeping well. For instance, Presidential models as they fly to foreign countries to deliver messages may have an alter who is proficient at sleeping during the flight. During time periods when good sleep is needed, the system may be in a position to pull up alters that sleep well and let them hold the body, so that the body gets rested. During periods of intense deprogramming it is good for the system to get good sleep.

Poor sleep weakens the victim physically and mentally. Poor sleep inhibits the problem-solving abilities of the mind, which is the very thing that victims need to resist the handlers. It will also over a period of time deteriorate the victim's health, (but understand the people who use slaves could care less about their health, they often use people like they would a straw from a fast food restaurant. The handlers also know that a healthy slave means a higher risk that the slave will rebel.)

Normally, a sleeping person goes through 5 sleep patterns (called stages) in sequence and then the sleeping patterns repeat themselves (although stage 4 may drop out after the first cycle, and the person goes through the progressively deeper stages of sleep 1-2-3-5.)

These stages are

STAGE 1: about 5 minutes

STAGE 2: the first stage of deep relaxation, lasts about 45-50 minutes.

STAGE 3: a short stage where the brain waves slow down

STAGE 4: the stage where the brain produces delta waves, sleep walking and nightmares occur in this stage.

STAGE 5: REM (rapid-eye-movement) sleep, most normal dreams occur during this time, which in a normal sleep pattern would last 15-30 minutes, the body doesn't move, but there may be sexual arousal during this period of sleep, the muscles in the ear act as if they are listening intently. The REM dreams are mainly a right-brain product. The mind protects the body from acting out the dreams, by shutting down the body. Knowing this will help the victim realize that when they are thrashing about in a memory in bed, they are not in a REM sleep dream.

This process will then recycle once or twice again as the night proceeds. Interestingly, the mind develops sleep habits, just as it develops habits for other habitual tasks. If a person develops poor sleep habits as a fretful child sleeper they tend to carry these habits with them into adulthood. This means that victims of mind-control are having to break long-term habits. Readers can refer to what Fritz wrote on "cognitive demon processes" in Chapter 4 in order to understand how the mind develops relationships in its "cognitive demon processes" in order to relegate repeated tasks to unconscious mental processes (habits).

The therapist may also have to do some work around fear of sleep. Victims of trauma-based mind control are very fearful to lose control of their minds by going to sleep, and they have a fear of nightmares and other horrible things, such as ghosts appearing etc., that all add up to create a terrible fear of sleep. The victim wants to remain vigilant to protect themselves against whatever might happen at night. This is why an alert support person is needed in the vicinity to help calm the victim, so they can relax at night from their fear that something terrible is going to happen. This also means the support person must be vigilant during the night to help protect the victim.

If the victim can begin to break down the irrational automatic thought processes that have been programmed into the mind, by using and strengthening the rational logical parts of the mind, they can begin to regain control over their own lives. Automatic thoughts that have been programmed into the non-rational part of the mind will attempt to control the mind. Gradually, the hierarchy of irrational thought processes will be challenged and their power taken away. This will give the mind a chance to regain its natural composure, and will help the victim regain their own mind so that they can relax and begin to have healthy sleep habits. The use of journals, where the rational parts of the mind can be brought to bear on the irrational thought processes, can be a help in regaining self-control. This will also help the victim regain the ability to have proper sleep.

Some victims have had success in reducing their mental stress by journaling for 30 minutes prior to attempting to sleep. Worrying doesn't resolve itself if left to rattle around in the brain unattached to anything solid, but once our worries are put onto paper, they have been dragged through the rational part of the brain and can be organized and challenged. When disturbing thoughts surface, the outline that can be used for journaling is this:

- What are the WHO, WHAT, WHERE & WHY, & HOW?

- What THOUGHTS COME AUTOMATICALLY?

- What are RATIONAL THOUGHTS ASSOCIATED with these thoughts?

- What are the FEELINGS ASSOCIATED with these thoughts?

- What are the THOUGHT ERRORS or DISTORTIONS IN THIS THINKING?

WHERE did these thoughts come from?

One little known fact, is that the fear of not being able to sleep can create such a strong fear pattern that a five-second arousal during the night, that would normally not threaten a person's sleep, causes the fearful person to wake up and stay awake. If you do wake up and are fearful of not sleeping (or fearful of going to sleep)--the best advice is to leave your room, do some other quiet activity until you feel sleepy again and then go back to sleep. Don't lay in bed and allow your mind to fuss and to internally fume. This will create a negative association in the mind between the bed and fussing and fuming in fear of sleeplessness, and will only aggravate the long term situation.

Dealing with spiritual problems, not just surface issues but deep issues will also help a person's sleep. Learning to let go of issues is also beneficial.

L-Tryptophan is an amino acid that aids the brain in the manufacture of serotonin, and serotonin is used by the brain to reduce the brain's feeling of stress. Bedtime fats and milk actually reduce the amount of L-Tryptophan in the brain. Food does cause blood to go to the abdomen, and reduces blood in the brain. Vitamin E causes restlessness in some people if eaten within short periods before sleep. Saltine crackers have been found to be the overall best snack to encourage L-Tryptophan levels. Each individual is a complex array of processes. It may be that a nice snack calms a person down, even though it subtracts from the L-Tryptophan level.

In review, we have suggested a multi-pronged assault on insomnia. This assault can take the form of: direct temporary drug intervention by over the counter or prescribed meds, specific tasks that a support person can perform before & during the sleep period to help the victim deal with a variety of issues, specific tasks that the victim can perform spiritually, in terms of diet, in terms of attitudes, in terms of dealing with internal fears, in terms of which alters sleep and which stand guard, in how to journal so that issues are resolved for the mind to rationally relax, and a number of other positive suggestions. If these suggestions are followed in a concerted fashion, they will reduce the problems with insomnia, and help the victim destroy one more aspect of the mind-control.

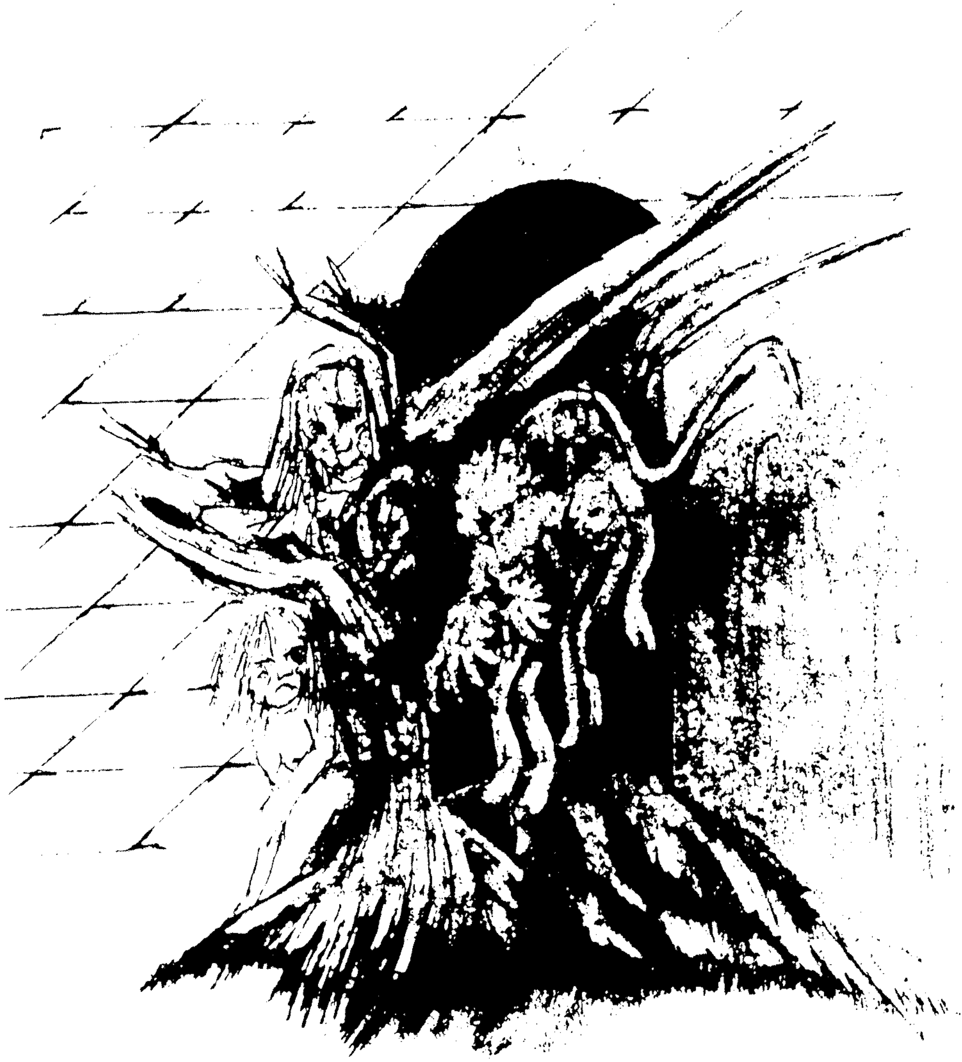

This artwork by author Cisco Wheeler from the 1980's portrays images that came when we began to get parts of a memory protected by demons. In the center of the picture is a tree upon which the child is connected. The tree is a standard programming image upon which programs are attached. The tree itself has strong roots, and feels like death. The mind wants to go further but the demonic comes to the foreground and blocks the memory.

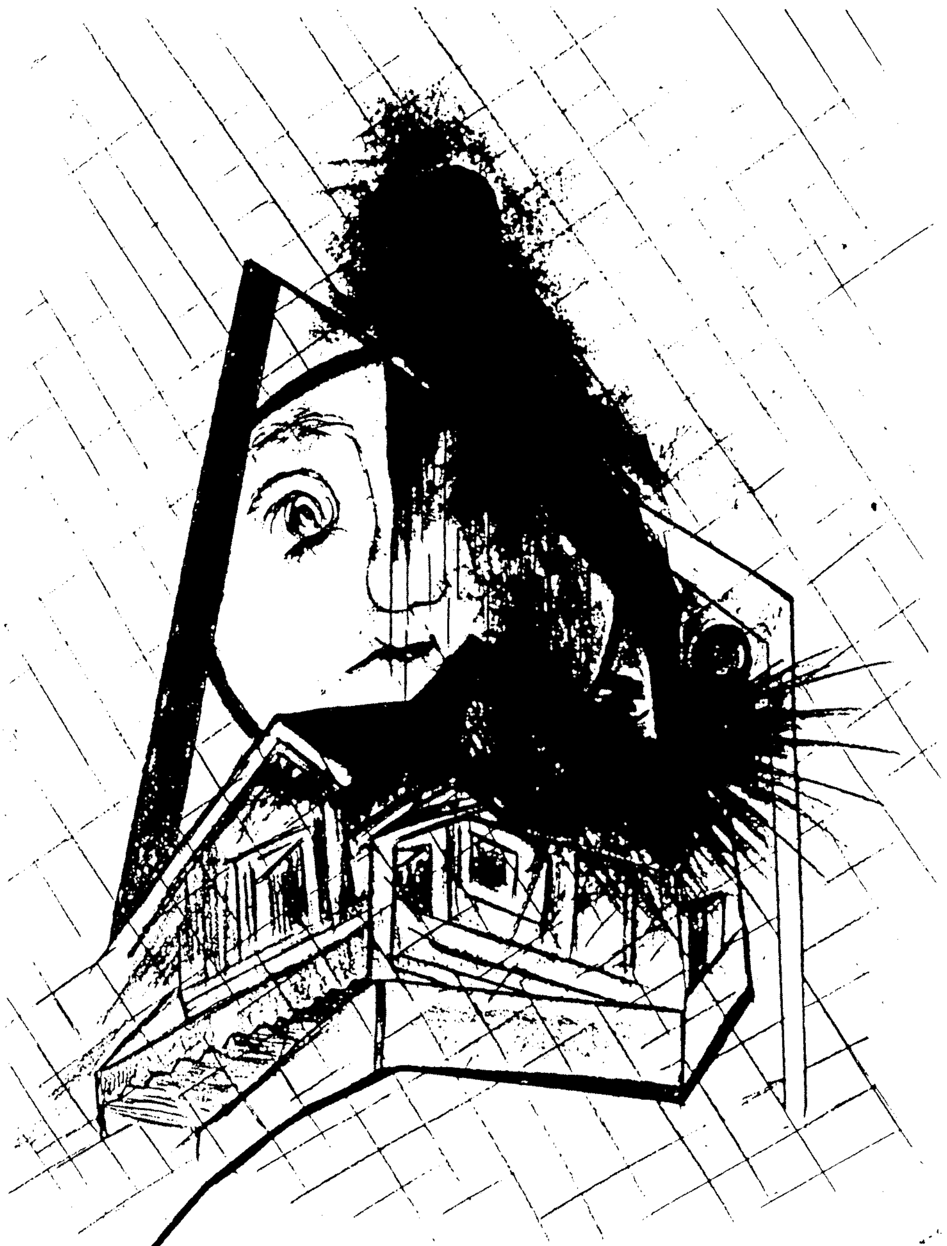

This author's artwork shows how boxed in a victim feels. Observe that the house & the environment is trapped in a grid which feels like a fence boxing the trauma-based mind-control victim in. The house is breaking up. Things are drawn shattered & in fear. The light would like to come out but it is blocked by spiritual darkness. The home is shattered, & is off any foundation, just like most typical abusive family situations are where such mind-control takes place.

MULTIPLICITY, understanding

When an entire alter system is looked at, it appears very much like a city of people. A city of people will divide itself into different tasks. If a city lacks a plumber, someone will fill that nitch. If a city lacks a judge, someone will fill that nitch. Joe may know everything about Charlie, but Charlie may know little or nothing about Joe. Sue and Sally may converse and share their lives with each other. Some people in a city will know each other well, know of someone else, but by and large most people will be strangers.

An altar system is structured. In many countries, such as Russia, a city is also very structured. The people do not change jobs very frequently. A therapist may observe a particular job and behavior pattern of an alter and forty years later observe the same behavior. Alter systems have families of alters and generations of alters, just like a city of people would have families and several generations.

In fact, as most readers already realize, a structured multiple will have teachers, libraries, castles, rivers, houses, jails, airports (runways) and many other things in their internal worlds that correspond to what a city would also have.

If an alter itself could be examined under these two authors' "psychological-processes microscope", it would be possible to see how an individual alter before therapy is a complex set of mental processes that responds to life **as it was designed**. After therapy, the alter begins to reflect **some mental processes that the person's brain has chosen to incorporate on its own**.

If the brain is thought of as a machine, it is a machine that has billions of pieces and is incredibly intricate in its capabilities and design. The brain makes complex machines look very simple in comparison. If survival of the mind means compartmentalizing trauma memories so that these memories don't interfere with everyday life, the mind is quite capable of the task. It is quite capable of attaching memories and trained behavior patterns and habits to those dissociated parts of the mind. The programmers work with the mind. They program alters according to their natural bent during the trauma process.

In order to function, the brain automatically develops several items. First, the brain develops K-lines of processes (which are called habits). The brain also develops a self-image(s). When the mind is fractured, each piece can be given its own self-image and its own habits. But it is important not to lose track of the larger picture. Just like a person in a city is not an island unto himself, an alter is part of a system.

A person in a city may find himself called for jury duty, drafted, taxed, monitored, spied upon, and other things. Likewise, an alter will have to function within the larger context of the alter system and its programming. Even the front alters will be tainted in how they perform in their daily lives by the side effects of multiplicity and their own programming.

A multiple will not know anything but the world that they have been programmed to see and the role they have been programmed to function in. But therapy will begin to break down the programming. Yes, alters can learn and can change. The mind can change the programmed "habits" of action and thoughts of an alter, just like it can change the habits of any person. The difficulty lies in the fact that habits take time to change unless hypnosis is used to by-pass the mind's natural build-in mechanisms of stability. An alter can learn a new behavior. The therapist should know the history of an alter so that he or she knows the platform and scripts that the alter works under. Then the therapist can change the way that alter works within their role. For instance, a sexual alter can be given a new way of looking at sexual boundaries so that the alter changes its behavior within that sexual role. In other words, modify a habit of thought or action, rather than rebuilding from scratch. "You can take the boy out of the farm, but you can't take the farm out of the boy", is a common expression about how hard it is to completely remake the thinking of a person. It will be difficult to remake the thinking of an alter. The foundation (the platform) upon which they were created will continue to serve as the framework of that alter. Either that framework is painstakingly collapsed by joining (integrating) that part with another part that it was associated with, or the framework is built upon to change the ways that alters acts and thinks. To make an analogy, it is harder to get a man or woman to quit thinking like a man or woman, than to recognize a behavior and modify their behavior in more productive direction. This is what successful marriage counselors are doing, for instance in the book *Men are from Mars, Women are from Venus*. Perhaps someday someone will write a book, *Gatekeepers are from Uranus, and Mothers of Darkness are from Saturn*.

Rainbows are important, for many alters only live over the rainbow in a world of make believe. These alters were created with a foundation of imagination and psychosis. In this case, these alters need deep therapy. They live in trance, and it is silly for Christians to think that these alters should not have hypnotic help, when their thinking is always hypnotic thinking.

Some alters because they are a special purpose alter come out and take the body with "exaggerated" behavior--they are very shy, or very aggressive, etc. It makes only good sense that if a particular alter is dangerous, the people who live around the multiple should identify how that dangerous alter is triggered and then refrain from triggering it.

PANIC ATTACKS, suggestions

Panic is when one loses control of one's fear. The brain must struggle to regain control, so that reason prevails rather than an out-of-control response. During a panic attack, the mind-body-and soul are all living in the panic attack.

The therapist might experience the client having a panic attack by a series of numerous repeated calls. The victim might experience a panic attack as the need to cut themselves to feel pain to prove to themselves that they are real.

For recovering victims of trauma-based mind-control, panic attacks bubble up into the conscious mind on their own. They may even surface during the dream state. So what do you do?

If the panic surfaces, remind yourself that it has always been there, nothing has changed, its just surfaced into the conscious mind. Relax, its always been there, waiting to be triggered or pulled to the surface. Nothing has changed but a person's awareness of the panic. Next, remind yourself that panic represents knowledge and that knowledge represents understanding. Panic represents an awareness, whether physical or mental, that something has taken place.

If we want to understand that awareness, we can't stand in it. We must encompass that panic. We must take our control back. We don't run from it, we address it. If we address the situation, we stand a better chance not to reshatter.

How can we address the situation? If it is a memory, put it up on a screen. (Go to the section on avoidance of abreactions.)

If the panic concerns a real life situation, the mind must be prepared that anytime an emergency triggers panic, that the rational mind must be given back its driver's seat. The mind should be trained to give the rational part of the mind control, if panic begins. This is the training of the mind. Perhaps a logical alter can be found to hold the body during such times, while others work with that logical alter to help keep things calm.

If one knows that one will be approaching a situation in life that will panic certain alters, place them in protective sheltered rooms, or put them to sleep. In fact, fear of an upcoming situation can be a trigger for a panic attack. Support persons need to realize that panic attacks which begin with one alter can spread through a system. An activity that a front alter thinks is going to be fun, may trigger panic in little child alters. The panic will be so overwhelming as it leaks back into the awareness of the front alter, that it distracts from the fun of the activity.

Panic is not always programming going off. Panic attacks commonly occur when the victim finds out that they are a multiple, and when they have to face "You mean someone abused me?", "You mean someone carried out mind-control on me?"

Another aspect of panic, is that the alter which is panicked may likely switch. One of the common tricks of deeper alters and internal programmers, is to panic an alter with coded memories that surface upon a code being thought internally. This is an easy way to move alters that are holding the body out of the way, when deeper cult alters want out.

On the flip side, a good Illuminati programmer never allows the slave to have uncontrolled panic. He will allow controlled panic. The programmer will watch for splits from panic, because the survival fear that goes with such splits will make a good warrior alters for ceremonies.

UNDERSTANDING PROGRAMMING

START WITH THE CORRECT ATTITUDES

It almost goes without saying that the commitment by the members of the support team (therapist, guard, deliverance minister, friend, etc.) has to be that **the victim is the center of concern, and the center of importance.** We of the support team must endeavor to make the cure less painful to the victim than the problem. A Christ-like commitment to lay down one's own life for another person needs to be felt. This does not mean that the support team must destroy themselves to save the victim, on the contrary, **by being Christ-like and employing their skills the members of the support team can find great joy, satisfaction and purpose in life.**

Programming has gone on for centuries, and it's only been in the last few years that significant progress has been made to deprogram, so let's not lose hope just because the evil side continues to progress.

REMAIN FLEXIBLE

In dealing with mind control as a support team member it is important that you understand there is a variety of mind-control techniques, for instance DID, implants, and skull manipulation. Because there is such a wide-variety to mind-control and programming, nothing is routine in delivering a person from mind-control.

For many years, due to the heavy infiltration within the fields of psychiatry and psychology much of the information put out in this area has been disinformation. The support team needs to erase any myths they have picked up from the mainstream of these professions, and focus on what they discover from the client. Hopefully, some of the guidelines and criteria provided in our 3 books on mind-control, especially this section, will be helpful to obtain the correct diagnosis.

When a therapist has used only one approach and reports consistently getting 100% success-rates, that may be a tip-off that this therapist (or minister) is exaggerating his/her success rate. Until you can watch a victim 24 hours a day, 365 days out of a year for several years, and you can confidently say the person has fully integrated and has no alters working on the astral plane, nor any alters involved in any other way with the controllers, then there is no sure way to pronounce a victim fully recovered from the mind-control. And even then, if the victim has implants, it may simply mean that the implants are temporarily not being used. When the reader has studied this book and the *Vol. 2*, he will have discovered that some mind control is done via a variety of techniques such as: ELF waves, some by implants, some by genetics, some through peer pressure, some by skull manipulation as well as other techniques. Common sense will tell you that one method can not provide the solution to such varied techniques. This is why this book's co-authors are stressing the need to assemble teams of people to work with victims.

Some victims of mind-control during initial therapeutic screening have had their memories, mind control, & programming rejected as being false because it didn't fit with what the therapist had already encountered. The victim endures a great deal of pain to have their lives and programming probed, so it is beneficial if the therapist is aware of some of the various types of mind-control and their combinations that the therapist may encounter. As the therapist picks up tell-tale signs of one particular type of programming or another, it will make it easier to understand what the overall situation might be.

There are similarities between the programming of the 1940's and '50's and even into the '60's, but as time progressed the programming sophistication has grown by leaps and bounds. One change over the years has been the level of specialization which the programmers have developed. When a particular type of personality is identified within a child, the programming has become very specialized and sophisticated to work within the natural makeup of that mind-set. The last few decades has also seen the introduction and perfection of sophisticated mind-control technologies that allow the trauma-based mind-control to be fine-tuned and then hidden behind more obvious technologies such as implants. There seems to be a trend, at least for some types of professions, that less splitting of the mind is carried out today than was done in the '50's and more fine-tuning and high-tech used. This appears to be done because it results in more stable individuals, which due to the improved superior abilities of the more modern programmers, are still just as reliably responsive to orders. The goals are to produce slaves that produce better results with less maintenance and supervision by the handler. Computers are believed to be the key to modernization. Still there are principles that define how the mind works and hopefully therapists that understand those principles can continue to discover ways to help the more recent victims.

TAKE NOTE OF WHAT TYPE OF VICTIM YOU HAVE

At the lower end of the victim-caste-system are victims who are brought into this nation from South or Central America and who are programmed to be expendable slaves. They are only treated as slaves, and never experience a good life. Beautiful white women taken to Saudi Arabia at times fall into this category, where they are kept hidden in slave conditions and are as expendable as a piece of furniture. The victim may not even know who they are, they may be "Dorothy" all the way down the line.

The next level are victims who are not members of the Illuminati, who are allowed to function in everyday life as common people. They suffer greatly, but often have what appears to be a common life, albeit somewhat strange to those close enough to them to notice the strangeness to their lives. These are people used as guinea pigs, as spies, as assassins, and sexual slaves. Often their abusers are branches of the government.

The top level slaves are going to have their pride attached to the Illuminati. They will be allowed to share some power, they will have an elaborate belief system that makes them feel superior to those on the outside of their elite special group. They will be given peers and "twins" who are programmed like themselves to make them feel like they belong to this wonderful group which has some wonderful charismatic leader. The group will validate their identity that comes from being a member of this elite group. The leadership may wine and dine this slave. The leadership will share some power (actually delegate, they hold the final strings) with the victim. For instance, the victim may have a magic wand and a staff. The victim will be allowed to merge with the great leader through sexual rituals. The group dynamics will alleviate the guilt that an individual might develop on their own. This is the description of someone who has been part of the Illuminati hierarchy. You can expect your Illuminati victims to have pride in their elite status. You can expect them to tell you about banquets, and limousines, and masked balls. Their abuse will be covered over by manipulative love, status, and pride. The Illuminati are skilled in knowing how to cover abuse with love. The loving parent that is reported by a child to be "able to do no wrong", may well be the child's primary abuser in the worst way.

The foundation for all the "good benefits" for a hierarchy slave is PURE DECEPTION. The charismatic leader will only be a image, a fantasy. If the victims will stop to remember the details, they were coerced on threat of the penalty of death to join the group of people they belong to, they are not allowed to really have real relationships to their sisters or brothers in the cult, and the cult's supposed new light and deep teachings are simply a collection of ancient babblings of lost and confused people that have been repackaged as powerful new revelations.

In review, it might be said that the expendable non-hierarchy mind-controlled slave is held in place without the trappings of grandeur that are given to the hierarchy victims. The Illuminati lay great stress on the victim's joining of their own free will. Sometimes that does occur, but often the victim has been so stripped that they no longer exercise free will. You as a member of the support team can point out that the victim's support for their abusers has been constructed on a foundation of deceit by the abusers. Rather than denying that the slave was wined and dined, show how everything was done for purposes of manipulation. Every gift came with a price tag.

HOW THE MIND CREATES A PROGRAMMED REALITY

The idea of consciousness vs. subconscious are difficult to describe but are fundamental to how the programming works.

What mental activity is occurring in the mind of an individual? Most mental activity is unconscious. Many of our activities in life are done unconsciously. If our attention is directed somewhere else, we can perform an activity without a conscious awareness. Some mental activity surfaces from the subconscious. Day dreaming has been recognized as beneficial in a person's well being. Delinquent teenage boys have been found to seldom daydream. The mental activity of thoughts, emotions, perceptions and memories are all embedded into the mind. The structures of the mind are built by thoughts and emotions. A chaotic jumble of impressions is organized by the mind into something cohesive and useable. Our minds fabricate a reality from our thoughts and emotions. The programmer steps into the picture and makes that reality designing a team activity.

Emotions, hallucinations, moods, phobias, sensory perceptions, trances and visions are not part of cognitive conscious data-based knowledge, but are more like the ROM memory that runs a computer which is permanent and untouchable. These are important foundational structures of thinking. They lay in the subconscious. The subconscious mind is like a cess pool. The subconscious mind accepts whatever has been allowed by the mind to reach it. Once something is accepted in, the subconscious mind doesn't evaluate it. That is why hypnosis and illusion are so powerful. Using hypnosis, the programmer can place an idea into the subconscious that would take long periods of time for the mind to naturally screen and then accept into the subconscious.

Briefly described, thoughts and emotions create the mind's reality.

The programmer wants to be able to tamper with how the mind's reality is created.

The front alters, who hold the body day-to-day, will have to face the shortcomings of whoever is their system's programmer, cult leaders, or handler. For some slaves, say for instance, Anton LaVey's or Michael Aquino's, their programmer is their cult leader and their handler-- all three wrapped up in one individual. The victim's front alters will experience the shortcomings of their controller. Rather, than fight against what the mind will see and hear, the programmer will reframe it. They want the front alters to see the human aspect. They want them to see the "faults", but accept the weaknesses as a normal function of the humanness of the person. The faults are reframed as merely human frailty

and negative external circumstances. Let's give an example:
The victim is encouraged to think: Yes, he drank, but so what? He was a social person and of course he had to drink.... Yes, he made a mistake, but it was someone else's fault.

The negatives of the programmer are reframed as natural positives by the programmer. The victim's mind will feel very comfortable with these rationales.

This is an example of how the programmer has tampered with the mind's perception of reality. This tampering is part of the subtle hypnotic programming. Do the programmers do this type of subtle programming? Yes, it is a standard thing to place this reframing in to protect the father "Daddy" and Mother Programmer images. As Illuminati programmers, we were taught to use thoughts, emotions, comfort and discomfort to mold the mind's reality.

(The mind decides if it is in a state of comfort or discomfort. At some extreme point, the mind can do a reversal and decide that pain is pleasure. In such a reversal, the mind will move in the direction of comfort, i.e. pain. In our example, we are not describing such an extreme situation. It is quite normal for the mind to whitewash its image of an authority figure; this is an inborn natural comfort zone.)

Now let's say that a therapist wants to tamper with that programming. The therapist can attack the programming head on by saying, "Your programmer was an evil man." But this approach plays into the hands of the programmer, whose manufactured reality will resist such a head on approach. The therapist may want to use the back door approach to side step the resistance. The backdoor method prevents triggers. A backdoor approach might be:

THERAPIST: "What would **you** have liked to have seen in the life of [controller's name]? SLAVE: "I wish he would not have drank so much?" THERAPIST: "How did that affect you?" SLAVE: "I didn't get taken care of."

The backdoor approach frees the victim from having to make a judgment call that the controller was right or wrong, good or evil. It makes the issue into an "I issue", "I would have liked..." The victim doesn't have to step out too far from the mind's comfort zone.

THE VICTIM'S POWER ENDS WHERE FEAR BEGINS

At the point the victim begins to fear is where the victim gives the programmer power. This is a basic principle well known by Illuminati programmers. The programming is built upon this. Some children actually intuitively grasp methods to not fear the programmer. If the child does this, the child becomes harder to program, because **A Person's POWER Ends Where FEAR Begins**.

At the point of powerlessness and fear, the world around the victim becomes more like a dream. Eventually, fear becomes a comfort zone for the victim.

A visual representation of powerlessness is the teddy bear, who has no genitals, no hands, or feet. (The Teddy Bear finds its way into our *Illustrated Guidebook*. Some therapists have found the visual images of the *Illustrated Guidebook* helpful.)

In the previous example, the victim at first will feel strange and uneasy to question their life. They are moving out of their comfort zone of simple existence into the life of choices. Many alters need help as they take their first wobbly steps toward freedom of thought and action.

When FEAR enters the mind, perceptions of reality are altered. Fears can be conditioned into the mind. The programmers know how to introduce fears. FEAR taps into the death circuits of the brain and activates "death related reflexes". The programmer is like the conductor of a symphony of fears, at one point orchestrating one area, at another point bringing another fear to a crescendo. The programmers know how the mind protects itself. The free will of the brain is orchestrated out of existence to the "tune of dependence upon the programmer". The natural flow of how the mind perceives reality is drowned out under the influence of fear. The programmer can interrupt natural perceptions of reality by introducing fear. The fear creates fragments in the mind, and denials in the mind. In the end, the victim of programming has pieces of reality that appear out of nowhere and seem unconnected and like a dream.

Is fear bad? When a person is stripped of trust in God and man, where do they turn? Fear seems comfortable to the victim, who cannot say "nothing ventured, nothing gained, I'll walk right through this situation." The instinct of the brain is to run toward its image of comfort, fear. How does the victim rise above the fear? There are ways, but they generally involve the victim getting outside help. The therapist will want to stay one step ahead of FEAR.

Different people will have different kinds of fear. Males are born wanting to be protective and strong. They are designed to face the outside world and lovingly protect. The programmers break their male identity. They are stripped of it when they see that they are powerless to protect other children and powerless to protect themselves. They further feel unprotected by their mothers when they are tortured as infants. This brings in a strong sense of rejection. They know they are weak and helpless. Their in-born desire to want to lovingly protect is destroyed, because they develop the subconscious attitude that love can't protect. Because LOVE CAN'T PROTECT, these men become hardened. At the root of their hardness, is the fear that they can't love (accepted by the subconscious through their inability to lovingly protect) nor are they worthy of love (built in by their feeling rejected of their mom's loving protection). Once the subconscious attitude is accepted that they can't love nor be loved, they die emotionally. They run from emotions because of a subconscious awareness of the trauma. When men run from their emotions, they find it natural to tap into their intellect. In summary, the male is born to have strength to protect what it loves. When traumatized, the male feels helpless, and develops a fear of love and emotion. Love becomes a negative to subconsciously run from.

The programmer only needs to tap into the mind's own methods to protect itself. The mind will protect the programming much better than the programmer ever could.

After FEAR is well established as a foundation, the programming team will layer in with repetition the NO TALK, NO SEE, NO HEAR messages over and over. They will repeat "DO NOTHING TO HURT THE FAMILY [family means the Illuminati, or at times another cult]."

If left to its own devices, the mind has the ability to sort things out, and right itself. The programmers are fully aware of how the mind might right itself, and pull itself out of the programmer's lies. The Illuminati teach their programmers "not to let the conscious become conscious, not to let the intellect become intellect, and not to let love become love."

What this means is that what consciously happens in external reality, is not permitted to be internalized as conscious reality. The programming tricks to prevent this could fill a book, and many are mentioned in our Vol. 2 Formula book. Love becomes love when the self knows the true self. Therefore, the task of the programmer becomes to HIDE THE TRUE SELF FROM THE MIND.

Some of the greatest philosophers have said that the greatest goal of life is to KNOW THYSELF. The goal of the programmer is to make sure of just the opposite, that the victim does not know themselves. They are trained in techniques to do this.

If we understand that the programmer is trained to program the mind TO FORGET ITSELF, then of course it is clear that the therapist needs to help the victim to REMEMBER who they are.

GIVING THE VICTIM HIS OR HER IDENTITY BACK

Countless therapists and ministers have trapped mind-control victims within their programming by advising them to let bygones be bygones, let the past and the skeletons of the past be buried, forgive and forget, etc. etc. This traps most of the victim's mind in their programming. Of course this feels safe for the front alters. After all, who wants to discover the horrors underneath them, that their mind has forgotten?

It would be helpful if ministers would remember that God encourages self-examination in numerous scriptures.

"Whoso loveth instruction loveth knowledge, but he that hateth reproof is brutish." PROV 12:1. "The spirit of man is the candle of the Lord searching out the innermost parts of his being." PROV 20:27 "If we would judge ourselves we should not be judged." (1 COR 11:31)

In other words, if we want to be more than animals, we need to examine ourselves and love to learn. It is God's candle for a man to examine his own innermost parts. And when we find problems with ourselves, we are to deal with them, and then God won't have to.

The therapist needs to reverse what the cult has done. Give the victim his or her identity back. Equip his or her consciousness with what a person's mind would normally be conscious of. Give the person back the intelligence that belongs to their entire mind. Equip the person with a love for God's plan for their life and an appreciation for God's design of things. Give the person their life back by letting them know themselves, and if possible, by letting them join into the whole person they were intended to be by the real God in heaven.

Interestingly, the programming is not able to snuff out the person's original personality entirely. The programmers prefer to work within the natural abilities of a mind. This is just good common sense. Horse trainers do the same. The trainer uses a standard bred horse which has been bred to pull carriages to pull carts & buggies, a draft horse to pull farm equipment, & a pinto to ride. If the victim has abilities, he can rightly take ownership of those abilities. It is much more likely that the programmers have suppressed many of the victims abilities in order to control them. Rather than creating the slave's abilities, the programmers have simply exploited their natural abilities.

TYPICALLY A VICTIM HAS PROGRAMS:

- to tamper with the senses: to confuse or stop the senses, make the senses feel like they are in some drugged state, to destroy one's sense of balance, cause pain, a sense of hot or cold.
- to tamper with the spirituality of the victim, to relieve their guilt, to destroy their humanness, to get them to subscribe to occult or atheistic philosophies, to hate God, to lock demons into place,
- that are codes using alpha-numeric words, colors, music, rhymes and sounds.
- that tamper with memory, cover programs, false histories, hypnotic surgeries,
- that control with the emotions, so that they can be triggered to be happy, sad, angry, tired, guilty or afraid.
- that control actions, such as anorexic no-eat programs, no-talk programs, assassination programs, mute programs, no-cry programs, return-to-cult programs, sexual programs, specific assignment programs, suicide & self-mutilation programs, trigger other slave programs.
- that control the mind, such as

memory flooding, phobias, go insane program, be confused etc.

- that control the body: such as heart rate programs, body temperature programs, to prevent helpful medicine from working programs.

For a good list of the different programs see the Universal Function Codes on page 80 of our *Vol. 2 Formula* book.

These programs can be triggered several ways, from both internal and external triggers. By learning that an emotion, thought, or action is a program, the victim gains conscious control over what is happening. The cue may still cause the subconscious desire to fulfill the program, but the victim is beginning to take back his/her life. It becomes harder and harder for the programs to work, when the conscious mind is aware of what they are, and the conscious mind does not want to submit. Memory work on how the program was laid in, and desensitization work will also assist the victim to regain some power.

Charting (notetaking) about everything that can be observed about the victim, will assist the support team in the long run. This is nothing more than what was done while they were being programmed. The doctors and programmers during programming expect every little detail to be charted. Charting will also assist with mapping, which is discussed later. Charting will assist the therapeutic team to build a frame work to the puzzle they are working on.

Don't expect the victim to be able to explain their programming. The mind-control programming team has traumatized a child victim enough that by the age of 3 1/2 they will cease asking "why?" Instead they are taught that everything outside of fantasy is bad, the outside world is bad, they are only to do what they are allowed by the programming team to do. From then on, most of the victim's alters (if not all) will lack the freedom to ask and discover the complexity of what has happened to them.

As the reader has seen, programming is designed to manipulate the actions, the body, the emotions, the memory, the mind, the programming, the senses, and the spirituality of the victim. This is why we have decided to call it "total" mind-control. This type of trauma-based total mind-control will cause shattering and much damage to the soul (mind, will and emotions). The therapist will have to deal with lots of distortions and fragmentation in this area. It will cause lots of medical damage to the body, for instance weak bowel and bladder control. The medical damage can only be addressed by trained medical persons who are sensitive to the needs of a victim of mind-control. Considerable damage is done to the spiritual life of the victim, and the victim will have to take a bath in the redeeming blood of Christ's atoning blood. Many of the words and symbols of Christianity will be difficult for the victim to hear. For instance, the words sealing, blood, and Jesus may have totally different meanings and emotional content to the victim than to non-victims. This can be worked around by experimenting with workable terminology. They will have to relearn who the real God in heaven is, rather than the cult's imitation god that the cult talked about, as well as their misrepresentations. Finally, the support team will have to deal with whatever structured and programmed DID is present in the victim. Is it easier to see why we are advocating support teams rather than a lone individual to help the victim?

If the spiritual part of the programming, which is the most secret part, which we referred to as Gamma programming in our *Illustrated Guidebook*, is not addressed, then complex MPD systems will not make much headway against the programming. Many complex MPD systems have worked hard for years and then give up hope due to the slow progress and the lack of any end in sight.

Other complex systems have seen dramatic results when deliverance methods freed the deeper sections from demonic bondage. The new freedom allowed them to progress on the other issues that they had gotten bogged down in and made no progress on prior to the deliverance.

Obviously, not all programming is the same, it is determined by what group is programming, who their programmer is, what the dissociative abilities of the victim are, and what talents the programmers are wanting to create or exploit. Sometimes a programming cult does not get all the time they desire to carry out the programming. In this case, the programming will be limited. However, in most cases the programmers have as much access to a victim as they want, especially if both parents are in the cult.

In cases where the victim does not hypnotize & dissociate easily, their systems will be far less complex. It has been correctly determined by various researchers that a person's ability to be hypnotized is a gauge to determine how much a person will dissociate. However, front alters will be heavily programmed not to allow themselves to be hypnotized, so the gauge will not always work for determining how much splitting the programmers have done. The two abilities, dissociability and hypnotizability, are simply different aspects of the same thing. It does hold true that if the victim is predisposed to dissociate, that the programmers can build more complex structures. If a skilled therapist can get some handle on how dissociative his client is, he can get an early guesstimate on how much splitting and structuring the Illuminati or Illuminati front group may have done to the mind-controlled slave.

PROTECTION, spiritual

Before one can see the value of spiritual armor and those things that would protect a person spiritually, one has to be able to understand what is being protected. This book has dealt with how Satan builds his structures within his mind-controlled servants, but what does God build within His people? Satan is a corruptor and an imitator. Knowing that will give the reader a clue that what Satan has designed is a corruption and in part an imitation of the structures God builds.

The spiritual armor that God directs godly people to employ are designed to protect the structures that God creates paradise out of.

At this point it would be worthwhile to display the basic structure that God builds within both a person and His Body of Saints, in comparison to the basic structure that Satan builds within a person, as well as society. These structures are basic patterns that reproduce themselves at different levels, the macrocosm and the microcosm of the spiritual world. The programmed multiple will have a justice system (judge alters), it will have values (satanic and occult knowledge and wisdom), it will have possessions (such as its birthright, their illusion of health, their titles, etc.), and it will have its false truths (the programming). The leadership of a system will provide a miniature state with a hierarchal structure run by Lucifer and his internal Grand Druid Council.

Within God's children, He builds Truth and Life. God's true ministers are life-givers. That is why Christ said he came to save people, not to judge people. By building consistency in a person's life, God is fashioning that person not to be double-minded, not to be a hypocrite, not to be wishy-washy, not to be undependable, but to be more like Himself. God is unchanging. He is the same yesterday, today and tomorrow, and therefore he treats all people equal, it rains on the just and the unjust; or in other words God is EQUITABLE. He doesn't really play favorites, but because He is God, He doesn't explain what seems like arbitrary decisions to us. God will build order, justice, life, truth and equity into His servants.

These elements (diagrammed out for the reader on the next page) make up the elements of Paradise and the attributes of God as described in the Word of God. These are the elements, the spiritual structures, that the armor of God described in Ephesians 6 are designed to protect.

Some people think that spiritual protection comes from prayer. But if we look at the word of God--and also learn from great spiritual warriors, we discover that the spiritual armor that God describes--TRUTH, FAITH, SALVATION etc. are great tools to protect us.

For instance the truth does set a Monarch victim free. But it isn't enough to have "the Truth", the Word of God says **only** the love of the truth will protect us. (see THES.) For a mind-control victim to know that they have salvation, gives them great leverage to defeat the attacks of the enemy. If a victim has a alter or alters who can have total faith in God, and can move forward in that faith, that faith will literally become a force-field around them that will move the enemy out of the way, and cause them to back off or surrender.

Prayer is not the answer in itself--but prayer built upon the structures that God builds in a person, prayer built on love, prayer built on faith, and hope and life and truth--these prayers will have power.

From the great reluctance of many church going people to learn the type of truthful information that our books are revealing, in spite of the horrible truth that

- **Elements of the WORLD SYSTEM & its satanic-inspired quest for UTOPIA**

© Fritz Springmeier. All rights reserved.

ORDO AB CHAOS

Pyramids even with 3 equal dimensions
have a bottom and a pointed top.
Top rules bottom;
Bottom supports/protects Top

Pyramid + with a mirror image = basic satanic structure

© Fritz Springmeier. All rights reserved.

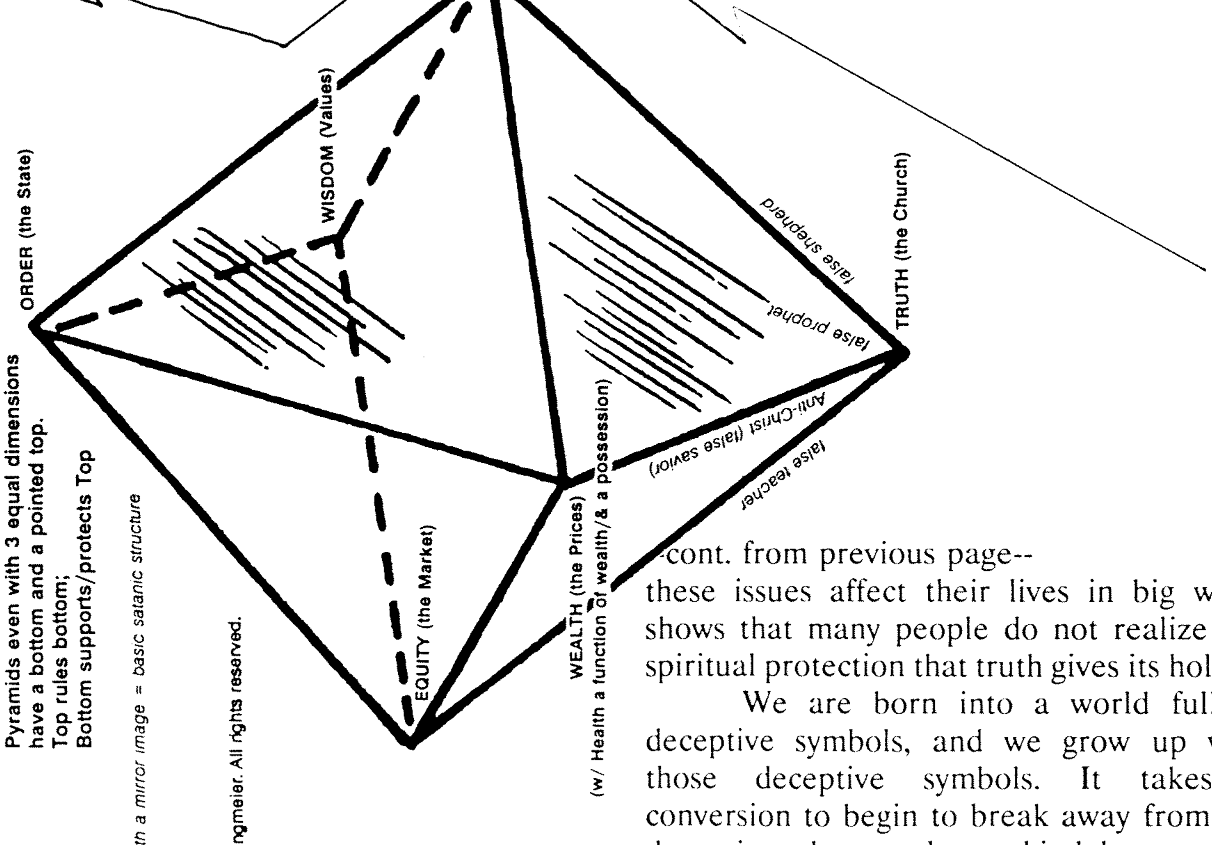
ORDER (the State)
WISDOM (Values)
JUSTICE (the Courts)
TRUTH (the Church)
EQUITY (the Market)
WEALTH (the Prices)
(w/ Health a function of wealth/& a possession)
false shepherd
false prophet
Anti-Christ (false savior)
false teacher

- **Elements of God's PARADISE are the Attributes of God which sustain the Universe**

© Fritz Springmeier. All rights reserved.

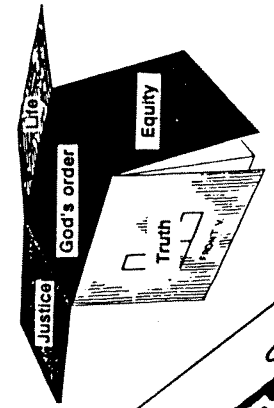
Life
God's order
Equity
Truth
Justice

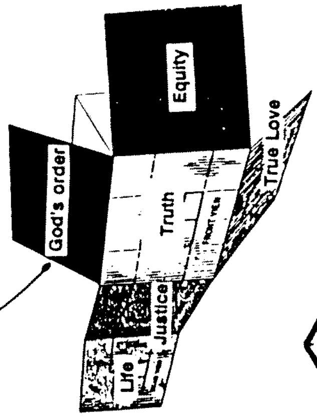
God's order
Equity
Truth
Justice
Life
True Love
Authority and Authority Covering

Four true offices
are pillars to
this structure

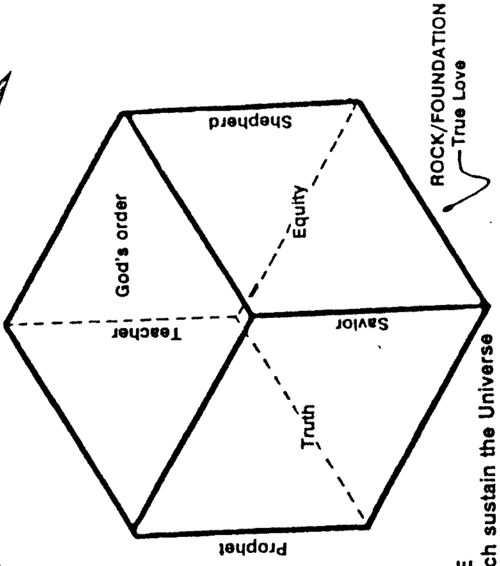
God's order
Equity
Shepherd
Teacher
Savior
Truth
Prophet
ROCK/FOUNDATION
True Love

STABILITY (a cube is solid and balanced)

Elements of God's PARADISE are the Attributes of God which sustain the Universe

- GOD is the SPIRIT OF TRUTH *(He serves as the light of New Jerusalem)*
- GOD is the LIFE-GIVER *(the water & trees of fruit of the New Jerusalem)*
- GOD is the LAW-GIVER *(the New Jerusalem has a great wall and order)*
- GOD is LOVE, our friend *(the New Jerusalem has its own glory, warm sun & worship)*
- GOD is a CONSUMING FIRE, a JUDGE *(the Great White Throne of the New Jerus.)*
- GOD is unchanging, the same yest./today/tomorrow, treats all equal, it rains on the just & the unjust, in other words He is EQUITABLE

--cont. from previous page--
these issues affect their lives in big ways, shows that many people do not realize the spiritual protection that truth gives its holder.

We are born into a world full of deceptive symbols, and we grow up with those deceptive symbols. It takes a conversion to begin to break away from the deceptions that trap humankind, but many of the churches take their people right back into the same mind-traps.

The Belt of Truth mentioned as spiritual armor in Ephesians 6:3 is like a girdle that pulls and holds things together. Belts or girdles held things together for the ancient warrior, as well as holding the scabbard. The Word of God says, "Gird up your loins..." which means to pull yourself into the wholeness and integrity of God. The Belt of Truth is more accurately described as the Belt of Integrity. Integrity means being stable, without being double-minded. Satan divides and conquers. He uses division everywhere to defeat the godly person. Integrity means an individual's private life lines up and equals his public image. There is no duplicity, no division of purpose in this Belt. It means the wearer of this belt is solely one-minded toward God. The Belt of Truth defends God's ORDER of things.

The Sword of the Spirit is the Word of God. The Spirit reveals to us truth, both the truth of God's scripture and the truth about other things of God's creation. The Sword of the Spirit protects the Bible from being misunderstood. We are to pray that the Spirit of God reveals and teaches us TRUTH. The Sword of the Spirit then protects TRUTH. God is truth, so if we seek God, we will find Him where truth is. No wonder it says that the Truth shall set you free!

THE UNIQUE POWER OF THE TRUTH "YE SHALL KNOW THE TRUTH AND THE TRUTH SHALL MAKE YOU FREE"

In any type of bondage, if the full truth could be understood by the right persons who need it in that situation, it would make us free. In Romans 1:16, Paul states, "The Gospel is the power of God unto salvation to the Jew first and also to the Greek". "Salvation", and being made "free", basically have to refer to the same condition of deliverance from bondage. Jesus Christ is "The Way, the Truth, and the Life, no man cometh unto the Father but by Him."

The "Truth" and the "Gospel" that says "Jesus saves to the uttermost, those that come unto Him by Faith," are mutually inclusive and if you really know one, you will also know the other.

Is the truth impossible to find? In Romans Ch. 1 we are told that we are all without excuse because God has given us in nature enough evidence of His power and Godhead that we are automatically responsible for the way we seek after more light or hide in the darkness.

The Word of God says that men hide from the light because their deeds are evil. Living in the dark makes it easy for the "enemies" of God to capture the servants of unrighteousness who have yielded their bodies in one way or another to the desires of the fleshly nature with which we were all born.

If we didn't die to our old life when we were born again, we are like Mary's brother Lazarus who was raised from the dead, but had to be loosed from the grave clothes in order to walk and carry on life.

Some people are still bound in grave clothes and need to be set free. It takes obedience to the Gospel to be set free, and it takes some people months or years to understand and accept all the terms of their pardon as purchased by the precious blood of Jesus, and they live in bondage to the extent that they fail to claim all of their spiritual inheritance, and the gifts that come with them. When they learn the whole truth, they find they are set free.

OTHER ITEMS OF PROTECTION

This article has just touched briefly on two of the spiritual armors that the Word of God says will protect us, the Belt of Truth and the Sword of the Spirit.

The Shield of Faith will protect the victim of mind-control from the worship of idols, from worshipping the wrong things in our life like our handler, and will protect our true love for Almighty God, our real creator.

The Helmet of Salvation will protect the victim, when the accuser of the brethren tries to heap guilt and insecurity upon us. It will also help the victim to protect their birthright given to them as a child of God. Each victim as a child of God has a wonderful birthright to some great things, but the enemy will steal it if they don't protect their godly birthrights. Some victims ignorantly given their birthrights away like Esau. As a born-again believer the victim has a legal position IN CHRIST that makes the person a joint-heir to the resurrection (ROM 6:3-11, EPH 2:1-5) and a joint-heir to reign with him (2 TIM 2:12, COL. 3:4).

The Breastplate of Righteousness will protect the victim's relationships with their support team, and the world in general. It will mean that they will treat their fellow man correctly in financial dealings, legal dealings, and any other dealing where fairness is involved. The Breastplate of Righteousness will defend justice and equity. Equity, which is fairness, means treating people equally. This will encourage the programmed multiple to treat people in the same fair way that they want others to treat their system.

We have just briefly touched on these spiritual protections. We hope that this will stimulate the reader to search and learn more about these spiritual weapons and how they can protect the victim from the attacks of the enemy.

Now for instance, if the reader listens to a sermon where he is told that spiritual warfare calls for him to reject false values, repent of sin, and resist deception, he will realize the minister is managing to hit upon 3 of the substitutes for the 5 elements that make up God's structure.

SPECIAL SITUATIONS WHERE SPIRITUAL PROTECTION IS NEEDED

- As internal work is done, spiritual protection will be needed to protect the system from the warfare and counterattacks of the internal forces.
- The victim of mind-control will also need protection from astral projections of their master. This protection is provided for, by a support person using the principles of the spiritual world to slam the astral body back into its physical body.
- Spirits of fear, mistrust, contention, suicide and despondency will try to attack the victim on a regular basis. The victim and the support persons need to be aware of these daily attacks and develop a mind-set and a determination to spiritually refuse these spirits. The support person should be gentle but firm in assisting the victim to dislodge and cast out such demonic attacks. **All prayer should be grounded upon the structures of God, which are life, order, true love, justice, equity and truth.**

God is the life-giver, the creator, the healer, the savior, the father, the peacemaker, the consoler, and the sustainer. Our prayers to Him should be grounded in the reality that He is all these LIFE-GIVING ROLES. This may help you understand what it means to ground our prayers in the structure of LIFE. We are called to imitate God & also be life-givers in **the fullest sense of the word**.

WHERE WILL THE ENEMY COUNTERATTACK AFTER PROGRESS IS MADE?

The enemy will send in false teachers (1 TIM 4:1-3), or he'll try to give a false reputation to the world by slandering the person before men & before God (JOB 1 & 2 as well as other scriptures), he will attack the person's confidence, their beliefs, their relationships, and their walk with God. In other words, if one looks at a cross, one spoke is prayer to God, one spoke is our walk (righteousness) before God, one spoke is our witness to others, and one spoke is our fellowship with others. Satan will attempt to weaken anyone of these 4 arms of the cross. He and his forces (demonic and human) will **generally look for and attack the weakest link** in our defense.

If we think things through it makes sense that if Satan were to attack God's people the best place to attack them is in their churches. A fierce war is being waged in the churches today to destroy all true believers. This war is very well conceived and well coordinated. It is not happening by accident. One of the major weapons that the enemy uses is religious spirits of judgement. Judgement brings death. It is one thing to expose evil, so that healing can occur, that is godly. But the religious spirits that judge are out to hurt and destroy. These judgemental religious spirits are out to divide, so that Satan can conquer.

We feel safe in saying that until our books came out, including this one, the Christian churches were totally ignorant about multiplicity and what it entails. We have watched many multiples suffer from judgemental spirits in the churches. These religious spirits are not from God, so don't let them hurt your relationship to God.

But why can Satan attack? There are a number of spiritual reasons WHY. First, is that the programmed multiple is traumatized and programmed during their life time to create footholds (legal loop-holes) that give Satan the legal right to attack. Eph. 4:27 says, "And do not give the devil an opportunity." The word opportunity in the greek is Topos, which literally means "foothold". These footholds are also referred to as strongholds in the mind (2 COR 10:4) which are like fortresses that Satan keeps operating in enemy territory that allow him to attack vulnerable lines. They are like secret holes that serpents can live in to crawl out of into your nice garden.

The spirit that crucified Jesus was the religious spirit of judgement. It will attack you with a vengeance. The victim and the support team must not allow themselves to become subject to these religious spirits. The judging religious spirits are trying to provoke the person who is the target of their attack. These evil spirits want a reaction from their target. The godly person can do exactly what Jesus did, let these judgemental spirits rant and rave and after all these antics keep one's peace. The reaction will be, aren't you going to do something about this? Just say, its a moot point, it's not relevant. I don't give it credence and move on.

Each victim must seek life-giving answers for their own situation. Don't let the religious spirit of judgement steal you of your chance for life. Just remember Jesus's words, "Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you shut up the Kingdom of heaven against men; for you neither go in yourselves, nor do you allow those who are entering to go in."

The Pharisees of today will find all the right answers to justify their position. You as a victim must seek truth, you must seek life, you must seek love. Forget these religious men that bind big burdens upon people and strain at gnats. You as a little child, and what programmed multiple isn't mostly a child, are what the kingdom of God is made of. If you retaliate against the Pharisees then you have lost, because that is what these religious spirits want, is to get you into a battle on their territory. Even if you win that battle, you've lost, because you had to leave your territory--the peace of God, to enter back into Satan's domain. Don't fight religious spirits, they are a sly trick of Satan to get you to step back out of God's domain into Satan's boxing ring. At that point, you will participate in the lie that the boxing match is the real contest. Don't trust in yourself, even if you can win in that boxing ring. If you know that God is with you, stay with Him in peace.

SAFETY ISSUES, of slave

This section is an attempt to coordinate information scattered in many different articles and chapters, as well as discuss ideas that come under safety that are not addressed in other places, such as how to work with child victim's of mind-control. Other articles that pertain to safety include:

- The Accessing article deals with safety from the abuser's contacts.
- The Triggers article deals with safety from all the programming & memories that activate irregardless of whether the original abuser is around or not.
- The Self-inflicted harm article deals with safety issues that derive from the victim's own threats to themselves.
- The Communication & Trust articles deal with the safety of the therapist-recovering slave's relationship.
- The Deliverance & Salvation articles deal with the spiritual safety issues.
- The Surveillance article deals with safety issues concerning harassment and continued cult interference in life.
- The Mazes and Mirror articles deal with the safety issues of tackling particular programming.

Safety tips will be discovered scattered through all of our books on mind-control.

The abuse of a victim is ongoing, unfortunately it was not just yesterday, but is here today. That is why this book's two authors have made a point of referring to victims of mind-control as VICTIMS, and not as "survivors". The word "survivor" is very popular among therapists, and the word "victim" will cause some therapists to go into convulsive uncontrollable rage. The word is not popular. But the word "survivor" comes along with all the denial and whitewash of the establishment therapeutic community, that somehow this abuse happened to a poor helpless child and now that the child is an adult, they have survived this abuse. First, this ignores completely that the Illuminati continue to access and use essentially all mind-control victims that are trying to get therapeutic help, and it also ignores the fact that 99% of the alters have no concept that they are an adult, but if anything still see themselves as children. The high percentage of child alters is never realized by novice therapists, because the adults protect and hide them.

A safe house is a place where a victim can go to stay from dusk to dawn in safety or even better a safe place to live. Generally, when safe places have been discussed it has been the goal to keep plans discrete and only on a need to know basis. A safe house will not take the place of a hospital, but the option of placing victims in hospitals is a very risky last resort.

It would be great if safe houses could be set up with qualified therapists and trained volunteers who recognize the unique safety needs of victims. This would give recovering victims an opportunity to gain strength as they fought the internal lies and the dissociation.

Such issues as How much does it cost?, What does the victim bring?, How does on keep a victim from acting out programs?, Do you force the person to stay if they want to leave, Do you have inhouse rules?, Who handles the medication? Can the victim receive visitors? and who and when? What kind of special dietary needs does the victim have?

A safe house can not possibly cover all the safety needs of a victim. The Illuminati have traditionally threatened their families, their pets, their reputations and their jobs. The author has seen the Illuminati make good on some of their threats, but generally they threaten and intimidate more than actually act.

A major issue is feeling abandoned and alone. A support person will achieve the best calming effects if they can maintain a constant presence with the recovering victim. When the support person or therapist is absent, life becomes a terrifying experience, and the fear the victim lives in while alone can make a few hours seem like eternity.

THE SAFETY OF CHILD VICTIMS

Fritz & this author Cisco have had to resist the opportunity to help some young victims of mind-control because we knew that helping them would put their lives at great risk. There are certain ages that if the child or teenager has not progressed to the point that they are expected, they will be killed by the Illuminati.

Children who are multiples have treatment needs that are different than adults. The first problem that must be faced is that the child's parents or caregivers should be involved in the treatment, but the odds are extremely high that they are dirty and part of the abuse, no matter how well or to what extent they deny it.

It goes without saying that the therapist needs to be able to handle the emotional trauma of helping child abuse victims. It may be harder than working with adults, because the therapist is face to face with the helplessness of the child, who is confronted with a powerful evil system of enormous magnitude.

The skilled therapist will study the child's interaction with others, on the playground, with other children, at home, and when the child is alone. They will watch for strange aberrant interaction between the parents and the child. The therapist will also watch the child's eyes to see how they interact with other people, or if the child tries not to look at adults. The child may have a dull apathetic dissociative look to their face, or simply a blank look, or a glazed look. Check to see if they have puffy bags or dark eye circles. When the child has suffered the abuse of the trauma-based mind-control they may experience aggression, hallucinations, a desire to hurt themselves, and disturbed responses to heat, cold, pain and enclosures. A multiple will have erratic grades and abilities, their grades may be low compared to their I.Q. And they may be tired or hyper in school.

Popular cover stories to cover programming sessions for children are tonsillectomies, esp. emergency tonsillectomies. Also sending the child to specialists may be a cover, or taking the child to a "funeral". The child will be shown funeral pictures and told that it was there. They like to isolate the child from playing with other children too.

The poor child victim of mind-control will not have the words to sort out the coexistent feelings of love and hate for the victim's abusive parents. They also do not have the language capabilities to describe their feelings and emotions. Guilt may simply be expressed as, "It just doesn't feel good."

If the therapist is going to help a child victim of mind-control they need to communicate to the child that as a big person they will be gentle but that they have the unchangeable strength to protect the child and care for the child. "I will help you be O.K., and I will protect you." The therapist should also convey to the child that "I know it was not your fault." "I am able to hear what you have to say without being wiped out or shattered." "We will do this together." "I know you are going to be O.K."

If the child realizes that he or she can be safe with the therapist, the child may begin to warm up to others too. As the child feels valued, it will feel safe enough to talk about things a little.

SAFETY ISSUES, of support team

During the many years that your author Cisco has observed people trying to help programmed multiples, we have seen a range of counter-attacks by the World Order.

PRECAUTIONS

Find out how the Network operates and what organizations are part of it. Fritz has some excellent information on this. Do not trust law enforcement. We have seen victims get conned by seemingly "well intentioned" law enforcement people who deal with cults as part of their job. If you feel like our warning is hysteria, then you are welcome to "reinvent the wheel." An example of how victims of mind-control will be treated is told in the front of Mark Phillip's and Cathy O'Brien's book *Transformation of America*. In the front of their book they provide the business cards of some of the law enforcement people who were dirty and stabbed them in the back as they attempted to get her daughter free and to get justice.

Cathy and Mark travelled all over this nation in search of justice--it isn't there. We will not provide a long litany of horror stories, for no amount of proof will convince those who are still trapped in their own mind-control that the our judicial system still works for the people. The Illuminati's Network is victimizing America at will.

Do not trust the establishment media. They are great at manipulating stories to discredit the truth. The institutions that America has trusted in have long been subverted by the Illuminati.

THE BAD NEWS

Typically, the Network (what the abusers call themselves) will try to publicly discredit anyone who opposes them. Today, a popular way to do this, is to infiltrate a programmed multiple (who is programmed with an ulterior agenda) into therapy and then take the therapist down with the cry "false memories were implanted". The victim needs to be worked with in such a way that they recover their own memories and the therapist has this validated. Several conferences around the country have gone into detail about the ins and outs of legally protecting oneself. Fritz & this author provide our assistance to victims gratis. We suggest that others might consider simply doing this.

The therapist may get their office files broken into, and in a few extreme cases the therapists have actually been murdered.

Some support people (incl. therapists) have had their personal lives disrupted. Their spouses leave them, they are poisoned (such as what happened in L.A. as well as other places), their automobiles break down (sometimes with obvious signs of tampering), and they find opportunities in the world shutting in their faces.

THE GOOD NEWS

The persecution of good people exposes to the world what is going on. Recently, a person who only half believed our material showed it at the university where they taught. The immediate & overwhelming negative persecution that came was so obviously an overreaction if the material had been false, that the persecution made a believer out of this truth-seeking person.

Every time the enemy exposes himself to persecute our side, he exposes himself. In a war, the enemy exposes his position when he shoots at you. You can fool some of the people some of the time, and some of the people all of the time, but you can't fool all of the people all of the time.

PROCEDURES for an Assassination

The Illuminati members must get the

Grand Druid Council's approval for an Illuminati assassination of one of their slaves, etc. Therefore, the Illuminati handlers often get other groups like the Mafia to do the dirty work. In other words, the Illuminati is not just running wild wiping people off the face of the earth. Their control is very planned out and systematic. Up until recently, they had never lost a slave to freedom, so they still don't really consider our side to be a viable threat. While our side painstakingly rescues an individual here or there, they continue to program tens of thousands. They have stayed ahead of their opposition, and even created much of their own opposition.

They will take advantage of a person's weak points. They will put a great deal of study into where a person is weak, and take him or her down at that weak point. They will also look for routines. A routine is something that is a natural setup for exploitation. They will also try to divide and conquer. If they can separate a person out and isolate a person, they will go in for the "kill."

BALANCE

The support team needs to develop a strong spiritual walk where they are not a leaf in the wind to every scare tactic the Network carries out. The Illuminati's Network thrives on scare tactics and fear. On the other hand, the support team needs to have a well-informed understanding of the capabilities of the other side. There is nothing to be gained from being reckless. Prudent precautions are worth a great deal. The saying a ounce of prevention is worth a pound of cure is very accurate.

If the support team is negligent or sloppy just one day out of the year, it will be that day that the victim is reaccessed. The Illuminati will watch for months, waiting for their chance to grab the victim. Most people don't realize that they will exercise that much patience. The therapist & victim figures if they haven't been bothered for a while that they are out of the woods. **The support team needs to realize that all victims have been stripped of their ability to see danger from their abusers.** This is so important it bears repeating: **The support team needs to realize that all victims have been stripped of their ability to see danger from their abusers.**

Those on the support team should not let their guard down simply because other victims don't seem to have to protect themselves. First, the few victims that are public may not be telling what happens to them. And second, if victims are not telling about constant surveillance, constant harassment, and constant attempts at reaccessing and reprogramming, then please draw the obvious conclusions.

SELF-INFLICTED HARM

First, it should be recognized that every victim of mind-control has to make a choice whether to fight for freedom or not. If they do not make this choice at some level, they will not have the commitment to try and counter the powerful self-destruct programs that are layered in. Freedom for a mind-controlled slave can only result from total commitment to the slave's freedom by the therapist and a strong commitment on the part of at least a few alters within the system. Neither the slave nor the therapist can do all the work.

Therapists are often totally surprised at how intense self-destructive system-persecutor alters will hate the host alter and how determined and intensely they will inflict harm upon the body. This is because they are still not realizing how almost all DID victims are programmed structured MPD (DID) slaves. Nor have most therapists come to grips with how intense the programming is that created these "system persecutor" alters. The "system persecutor" alters believe that they are protecting from greater harm, and in that sense they are more accurately described as "protectors".

Most protectors are simply frightened children who are filled with rage. They may also surface with obnoxious belligerence, for instance, they may spit in the therapist's face. The therapist or support team member must simply stay calm. Try to "bore the protector alter to death" with your calmness. The therapist needs to dig deep into their surplus of love and compassion and realize that this is just a wounded, hurting programmed child. The therapist needs to validate their role, and their feelings. They are not designed to hold the body for great lengths of time, and will get tired holding the body for long lengths of time. Many protector alters if they are allowed to surface, and ventilate their thoughts, and work through their feelings, fears and programming can return to the internal world with their destructive programmed behavior defused. If the therapist makes the mistake of trying to lock such an alter up, rather than negotiate and work them through their programmed destructive misbehavior, then a serious power struggle and a bigger mess could result. Sometimes if they are allowed to act out, for instance, a cutting alter is allowed to cut--but with dull plastic scissors, they can feel like they have done their job and go back inside.

The protector alters believe that they are doing their job by protecting secrets. This lie can be exposed when working with them. Because they may have strong demonic elements attached to them, they will usually need some spiritual deliverance.

Many therapists have asked their systems to make contracts "I will not hurt myself..."

It is important that the therapist establish groundwork, a platform upon which to work from. Contracts have been more successful than not having contracts, but the therapists need to go beyond simply making contracts. Contracts only work with the front of a system, and the host alter is usually very dissociated from the deeper part of the system. First, the therapist needs to work with the front, the host personality, to make them aware of the self-inflicting-harm programs that will go off. It is important that the host personality learns his or her triggers, learns how to help identify protector alters within the system, and to help creatively discover methods to negotiate with the protectors.

The host or therapist might ask, "Do you really think you need to inflict harm? Are you really bad or have you just been told that? Do you know that even [clowns, rabbits, kittens, horses...] do not hurt themselves?" Try to find the human part of the person. It is always there--even though it may be very remote. Work with the survival instincts of every alter. "Did you know that kittens don't hurt themselves?" Try to get them NOT to act like the cult, but to have new behavior. Try and reframe the abuse cycle, so that they see it in another light.

The little protector alters may present a hard outer shell, but deep down are just fearful little special purpose fragments that are doing the job they have been trained by behavior modification to do.

The entire support team as well as some of the alters can cooperate in repeating triggers so that they can be defused. It is important that triggers are not found out the hard way. What will be automatic triggers? Across the board, the programmers have put in heavy-duty protector alters and self-destruct programs to protect the victim from dealing with all past mother and father issues, in other words from really seeing their childhood. As long as the host alter stays in the here and now, they are "fine" in terms of not triggering the self-harm programming. This is so that the host (front) alter will not go down through the layers.

Two other important areas that have lots of protectors are the core, and the no-talk programs. Of course, the abuse will create many of its own natural "self-hate" problems for alters.

One way to defuse the self-destruct programs is for the therapist to take the victim down to a level 4 trance or deeper and use the Universal Codes that were given in Vol. 2. Those are the actual universal (standard) codes, but they only work if the therapist has the alter deep enough into trance. The programmers have built in a wall that will bounce the codes off, if the alter is not deep enough into trance. (As far as we know, these universal codes haven't been changed. This is part of the problem with giving answers, is that before the therapeutic community picks up on the answers, the other side has had time to react.) The programmers create jokers and scrambling alters to insure that code words said above a level 4 trance never have effect. The code words become merely garbled words, that bounce off the system.

When triggers do go off, they trip off a domino effect, so that soon whole groups of alters are immersed into all kinds of self-destruct programs. The therapists need to understand that when a single trigger goes off, there is likely to be several self-destruct programs triggered.

Most therapists are not aware of what happens deeper in the system. Internal and external abuse is often triggered on a regular basis by the work that is being done, and the therapists and the host personality are generally oblivious to it all. The host may be so dissociative they do not know why their leg or foot hurt. They may not realize why it hurts to urinate. Female slaves often cut their vagina up. Male slaves often simply shoot themselves. There are few male slaves that survive the suicide programs, due to the cold logic of their programmed minds. Front alters may not know there are suicidal parts, they then fall asleep, out pops a suicidal alter and the system may die of a heart attack.

The potential for self-inflicted harm is present across the board in everything the victim tries to do. The victim will sabotage their credibility, their therapy, the love and trust of others, and their own successes. The therapist needs to be prepared for such things happening and not let them side-track the therapist from what needs to be done--WHICH is to show love, and care toward the victim. The therapist may feel like this is calling for superhuman endurance, and sometimes it does, so the therapist needs to learn new behavior--how to endure in the face of repeated failure, and keep on keeping on.

When fresh memories surface, and when new alters surface, the programming has the same fresh power as when it was originally put in. The stronger alters need work done with them so that they will be prepared to handle the burden of the power of new self-destruct programs hitting the system when new material and new alters are revealed.

The few strong front alters can create safe places internally where they can nurture more vulnerable "weaker" alters. These safe places must be deep enough so that they don't trigger whoever is holding the body. (To get to this point, pre-supposes that the therapist has a few strong front alters that can help out in therapy.) The feelings of abuse and anxiety of the new alters can be placed into a box while they are in the recovery room. The recovery room system can be similar to how hospitals take the person out of surgery into monitoring rooms, and then finally to their hospital bedrooms, and then finally they are let out for outpatient observation. The internal recovery room can have pillows, and other gentle things within it.

SPIRITUAL ISSUES

There are numerous Spiritual issues that confront the victim, and many of these issues may be the most critical factors in the improvement and healing of the victim.

However, it has been hard for most people to separate religion from spirituality. One of the most powerful tools of the Illuminati for controlling people are the various religious fronts that they have created. The mainstream religious groups are but fronts to control people. Within religion you will find controlling spirits, judging spirits, spirits of denial, spirits of guilt and shame, and spirits of obesity. Not all obesity is from a spirit of obesity, but obesity (gluttony) seems to be the sin that is used to substitute in for the other things that are rejected as sin.

God's creative force works within the universe. We are meant to be like God. He gave each of us some creativity. We can creatively take responsibility for our own lives and our own walk with God and our own spiritual growth. God gave each of us free will. Sad to say, but these important gifts, are often surrendered by religious slaves to whatever organization controls them. They give up their creativity and free will. They seem to think God wanted them to be a little puppet. The puppet mentality likes black & white orders, and black & white thinking, because it removes responsibility for the puppet's actions away from the puppet. Again God made it clear, He was going to make each person accountable. There is no one else who can answer for you, when you face God.

Religion can be one of the best covers to hide the stench of trauma-based mind-control. Under the guise of religion, the pressure to look good--to look like the organization's "approved solution" conspires to cover up the truth, real feelings, failure, and sin. Religion can be so stiffling it becomes a pressure cooker. In order to make reality fit the religious mold a great deal energy is put into fantasy and denial. A great deal is done in the name of God that has nothing to do with Him.

A great deal of how the Illuminati keep their slaves in place under their control is that they overlay the deeper levels of mind-control with the absolute control over the front system by one of their numerous religious denominations, such as the Catholic Church, the Mormon Church, the Watchtower Society, many Pentecostal groups, authoritarian New Age groups, and other religious groups too numerous to mention here. These groups emotionally strip their victims, and create a dependence within their members upon their church hierarchy.

Christ came to set the captives free, and from his ministry it is clear that many of the people he set free were captives to religion.

One of the greatest spiritual steps is to take back what God gave you and use it like He intended. Many mind-control victims can't move forward toward freedom, because the religious group that controls them won't give them their basic God-given freedoms, abilities, and free-will. The Illuminati doesn't have to depend solely upon the mind-control programming, their religious groups will do the day to day work for them all in the name of God.

STRUCTURING, how it's done, its consequences and its treatment (an intermediate issue for helpers)

It is important that the people helping a victim of total mind-control understand that the slave has had his or her mind and thinking totally structured.

Structuring means that the person's mind is complex. Illuminati slaves usually have thousands of alters. Usually, therapists play around with the surface alters of a front world, who even after a decade or two of therapy will have very little idea of the full story of how their body and mind is being used.

Structuring is the bracing that holds the programming structure in place. If the programs are the plywood, tile, shingles, and the other material, then structuring is the engineering, the design, the bracing that puts the materials together in a firm workable manner.

Another article "**Multiplicity, understanding it**" will deal with aspect of understanding the parts that build the house.

Structuring means that each alter has its script or way of thinking. Everything is cut and dry, black and white. If life challenges the alter's thinking it will either a. dissociate the information it can't reconcile with its script, or b. switch to another alter who can deal with thoughts.

The switching is so ingrained within the mind, that it is hard for the mind to prevent it, but the mind can be trained to stay in place, not dissociate and learn material outside of its script, but it takes effort and time. This is why is good to journal, map the system, and keep other written records because the mind of an alter of a slave has a powerful tendency over time to continue dissociating whatever is not part of its script. The black and white thinking makes it difficult to deal with complex issues. An example of that would be for instance, a critical comment by a therapist on one tiny aspect of work which may be interpreted by the victim as rejection of their work.

Structuring means the victim (the victim's alter system) is not allowed to know or see anything but what they are to know and see. The concept of Multiple Personalities is difficult enough for the therapist to manage, let alone the puzzle of a labyrinth system of alters who are entangled in thousands of secret scripts that all work as one vast interconnected machine.

In understanding the structuring, therapists should be aware of dual and triple functions. The external function of an alter will not coincide with the internal function. The alters will relate to each other in a complex way, similar to the complex ways a city of persons relate to each other. Each system will have its own internal political setup, and sometimes internal politics as alters begin trying to change the structure.

Everyone hates to be stereotyped, even alters. Even though alters are programmed and structured, so are most people in the external world, and no one likes to be told they are programmed and structured. But just as a mother acts like a mother, and a prostitute acts like a prostitute, different alters which are common features of all systems will be recognizable. And although the host alter will quickly be known, often the host alter is actually several co-conscious alters, who will emerge with their own identity during treatment. The host may be one of the hardest alters to get to admit to the MPD (DID).

One of the primary bracing devices used in structuring is FEAR, for instance, fear of being found out and considered insane or a criminal, fear of remembering the traumas, fear of the pain.

Another primary bracing material is the dissociation from one's emotions. Without the emotions around a memory, the memory is a stale fact with no more impact than some statistic about Outer Slavakia, and the programming remains intact. When the affect (the emotions) return to the alters when they do memory work, it **re**-humanizes them. Humans have emotions, and that is what the alters need to regain. Emotions make the memories real.

During the structuring, alters that had to have special responsibilities in the outside world, or had to have special cult responsibilities have had to have special programs tactics done so that they will not have emotions. The mother cats will have special shadow alters that take their emotions. The alters that take the affect of the trauma, are not but to sleep, because they need to be handy to continue siphoning off the emotions of any new experiences. The emotions must be kept separate by the Programmers so that there are no weak links. The spinners will have absolutely no emotions. Deep down in the spinner area each cat family will have some emotion alters carefully hidden. The alters systems are structured not to have emotion. Logic (luciferian logic) is a great stabilizer.

Much of the beginning structuring to remove emotions from the alters begins in the cages, where the dehumanization starts. The child in the cages (this trauma is described in several places) is deprived of everything, isolated, whipped, shocked, prodded, raped, etc. After that period in the cages, the child moves on to the next stage where they are caged near animals (such as cats) which are treated wonderfully. The child is encouraged to act like a cat. The child is behavior modified to become a cat. This early part of the programming is designed to split off the emotions and take the alters back to their animal survival instinctual level of thinking (that means thinking with only their reptilian brain.)

In order to regain their emotions, memories may have to be seen with their emotions from a great distance, and reviewed on an ever-closer screen many times, until the alter(s) are desensitized enough to the memory to look at it close up. To get in touch with one's emotions, will cause alters to be suicidal.

The therapist will have to separate out mirror images, and the false memories that have been laid in. (Unfortunately, memories usually surface with a lot of baloney.) Then the therapist will have to encourage the feeling parts to come up. The feeling parts weep, sob, have broken hearts and much suffering. They may have anger, fear, and panic. The hurting part may be a screamer. It may not have a name, or might even be called screamer. It is probably a small child stripped of its identity. This small child has never had a chance to express itself. It probably feels that if it expressed itself, it would drown the world in tears.

The structuring is designed to incorporate anything that will help create a feeling, an atmosphere of helplessness. If the therapist can give power back to the alters, this will help them take responsibility for themselves rather than looking to the master.

SUFFERING (issue confronting client)

Without a doubt, people who have been subjected to Illum./govt. mind-control have suffered and continue to suffer. It's no surprise to find suffering in these people's lives; they are masters at suffering. They often have very high pain tolerances.

The fact that they are continueing to suffer, creates a multitude of spin-off problems for the victim. Rather than deal with the spin-off problems, the therapist or helper may want to deal with the issue of suffering itself.

The Word of God says, "Many are the afflictions of the righteous." PS 34:19. Therapists & ministers should be careful not to blame the victim's problems on victim. Ministers need to be reminded that not all suffering is the result of personal sin. Much of what happens is simply the result of living in a fallen world. In real life, many of life's stories do not have a happy ending.

Bitterness toward God is dangerous, because it leads to all types of problems emotionally. The therapist & victim should avoid blaming God. If the client wants to delve into having a deeper understanding of why evil & suffering exists, then they should by all means be encouraged to find a book that answers this, or to contact this book's authors. In the beginning God described everything as "exceedingly good", but the fall of man has echoed down the centuries. A deep understanding of God's justice will explain why suffering exists. A deep understanding of God's love explains why God allows suffering and pain.

We can not assume to know the answer to each tragedy or pain, yet we can still help alleviate the suffering.

Today, pain clinics teach people ways to cope with pain, and so does this page.

First, dear therapist, treat the person who is suffering as you would want to be treated if you were undergoing what they are experiencing. Unfortunately, few therapists have had much inkling of the extent of the trauma & suffering that their clients who were victims of trauma-based mind-control continue to experience. This is very evident, because until recently, therapists have had little concern for the safety of their clients once they have stepped outside the therapist's office. Ongoing victims of mind-control have been popularly labelled "survivors of SRA" by the therapeutic community, and yet so far neither Fritz nor this author, Cisco, has ever seen someone who is past having to suffer. These are not "survivors" of some past abuse, they continue to be ongoing victims, and not of their own choice.

The helper should evaluate the suffering, its causes, its purposes & benefits. Although all things work together for good to those who love Almighty God, not all things are good. It is not wise or benevolent to lecture the sufferer on the edification he will receive from the pain he is experiencing. In the long run perhaps the victim will see that the suffering can bring joy, enhance one's future glory, yield greater wisdom, produce true humility and true comfort. If the victim is a devout Christian, they may already be able to see the silver lining to the cloud. However, the helper/ therapist wants to find ways to alleviate the emotional suffering & lesson the pain. Ignoring or belittling it, or heaping more shame or guilt upon the person is like rubbing salt into the wound. Once the suffering is identified, the therapist should free the victim from their shame. After Adam & Eve sinned & got their lives into trouble, God still made clothes from skins to hide their shame.

SUFFERING (client complaint)

Allow client to express his pain. Treat the client as you would want to be treated in similar circumstances.

Let the client confront their own pain.

DO: a. allow people to express their pain. b. let people confront their own pain, c. be with the sufferer in silent caring. d. be a cheerful heart, give kind words for the health of the body, mind and spirit, e. free the client from the shame of suffering.

DON'T: a. assume you know the answer to every tragedy or pain, b. lecture the client about the blessings they will receive from the suffering, c. shame the client.

FINALLY:
Point the person to the goodness and strength of God, for: IF THE LORD DOES NOT BUILD THE HOUSE, THOSE WHO LABOR BUILDING IT LABOR IN VAIN. No client can resist the suffering in their own strength, they need the strength and consolation of a higher power, God.

SUICIDAL THOUGHTS (early client complaint)

Suicide is an ongoing threat to ALL victims of total mind-control. All victims of total mind-control have strong suicide programs that are activated if they learn or talk about anything that has gone on in their life, except what the programmers want the victim & world to know about.

Therapists have greatly underestimated how suicidal victims of mind-control are once they begin moving toward freedom. Most alter systems are designed to have a calm front. The front alters can be very calm and stable, while all hell is breaking lose on the inside. Nor do the front alters have the ability to see what is happening behind/under them.

Threats of suicide can be broken down into immediate threats that require immediate intervention, & long term therapy. Because all victims of total mind-control are suicidal 24 hours a day once they begin work, therapists should assume that ALL VICTIMS are always a few thoughts & seconds away from suicide. This is why a support person should be around a mind-control victim 24-hrs a day to support the client & to protect the client from his own suicidal tendency.

Suicidal thoughts & suicidal alters are programmed into a slave. These pose an ongoing threat. BUT there is another threat that can overwhelm the victim. This is the accumulation of all the horror & trauma that the mind is dealing with. The victim must also deal with his own guilt, with the abuse cycle which kicks in & says, "It's all your fault." Suicide may a fear of living, a feeling of hopelessness.

When it comes to suicidal thoughts, sometimes mind-control victims display the same clues as non-victims. These clues might be the verbal clues such as "life is not worth living", "I'm in the way", and "I would be better off dead." Indirect talk of having a friend who wants to commit suicide might also be a clue. They might also have the behavior clues of being depressed, buying a gun, drugs, or a rope. Another clue might be writing a will while depressed. The victim of mind-control will also display in their handwriting a number of clues showing depression and suicide, such as a higher than norm frequency of "x's" throughout the letter formations.

The immediate response of some therapists is to place the mind-control victim into a hospital, but hospital settings usually back-fire & trigger even stronger suicidal behavior, due to many programming/memory issues involved. The hospital should be a place of last resort, and then only under the most ultra-extreme cases. Hospitalization has its own set of considerations to be taken into account for the victim.

During an immediate crisis, a suicide alter can be given something in which to act out their suicide desires, such as a plastic gun to do russian roulette, or they can be dealt with so they feel they have done their job well enough without actually killing the body. The therapist/support person needs to have the love to listen to the victim, & show genuine concern. The support person can determine what pressures (prog., emot., work, financial, memories, etc.) have built up to cause the suicidal tendency & see if some of these can be diffused.

If a non-suicide alter is contemplating suicide, they can be temporarily distracted until the crisis is over by asking them to genuinely help the support person with something. This alters self-esteem should be encouraged, because the alter is probably tapping into all the negative images they have had drilled into the system's head.

SUICIDAL THOUGHTS (early client complaint)

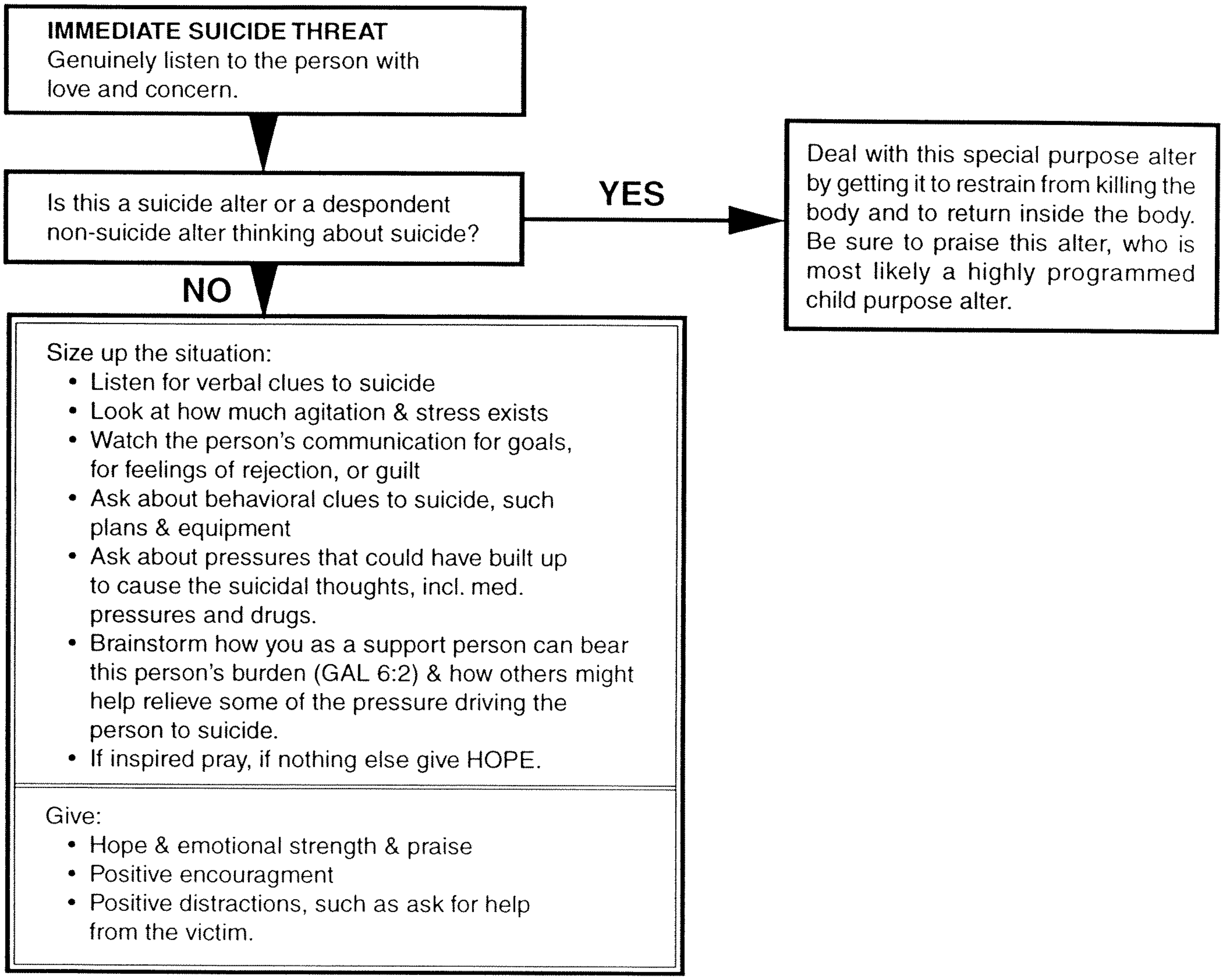

IMMEDIATE SUICIDE THREAT
Genuinely listen to the person with love and concern.

Is this a suicide alter or a despondent non-suicide alter thinking about suicide?

YES

Deal with this special purpose alter by getting it to restrain from killing the body and to return inside the body. Be sure to praise this alter, who is most likely a highly programmed child purpose alter.

NO

Size up the situation:
- Listen for verbal clues to suicide
- Look at how much agitation & stress exists
- Watch the person's communication for goals, for feelings of rejection, or guilt
- Ask about behavioral clues to suicide, such plans & equipment
- Ask about pressures that could have built up to cause the suicidal thoughts, incl. med. pressures and drugs.
- Brainstorm how you as a support person can bear this person's burden (GAL 6:2) & how others might help relieve some of the pressure driving the person to suicide.
- If inspired pray, if nothing else give HOPE.

Give:
- Hope & emotional strength & praise
- Positive encouragment
- Positive distractions, such as ask for help from the victim.

LONG TERM WORK
Work on:
- Dealing with hurting, rejected or crying parts
- Learning how to cope with what's been done
- Seeing what is behind the suicidal depression
- Untangle the confusion of feelings
- Pace the disclosure of traumatic material
- The no-talk messages and the no see messages.
- Seeing programs and memories via journaling, art, etc.
- The many fears, esp. the fear of one's own anger.
- Rage issues, trust issues, denial issues, spiritual issues.
- Realize that the suicide thinking can be helped more by one's attitude than hoping to change the external situations of life.
- Find the positives, "It's a positive that I'm taking this little step." Live minute by minute.
- Don't worry about tommorrow. If you make it thru today, then its a good chance you'll survive tomorrow.

SUPPORT TEAM, organizing one

The ESSENTIALS OF SINCERE HELP

S	safety
I	information
n	and
C	create positives
E	eject, erase, eliminate, expel the PDE/computers
R	realize
E	emancipation

The slogan "If you want to get something done right, you have to do it yourself" reflects the independent spirit of Americans. In some situations, the rugged Rambo is the best solution. The overwhelming needs of a programmed multiple who has not just cities but worlds of alters are too much for a single support person. The overwhelming needs of the multiple to stay safe 24 hours a day are too much for a single support person. The skills needed to tackle the challenges soon wear out a single person.

There is great wisdom is setting up teams (whether formal or informal) to work with programmed multiples. Fritz and I have done this quite a few times in therapy. The rewards have been extremely gratifying. We still have a great deal to learn. Fritz and I are working as a team on this book and on this article. Other people have assisted us too. Fritz brings his skills and I bring my skills and together our contributions are worth much more than if we each worked separately. Teamwork brings varied experiences and complementary skills together. The mix of skills and insights enriches the therapeutic process, and adds flexibility to the process. Teams can respond to a changing situation far better than an individual. Over and over we have seen that one person catches a clue to what a victim is trying to say, while another team member is mentally distracted or fails to catch the clue.

A team is not created to create a team. A team is created as a means to an end. A team needs a goal and needs to perform. A team can handle one victim at a time. One thing that we have seen work well was to make a large banner of the goal for the victim during a particular session. For instance, when work was done with our gatekeepers who were locked up in heavy programming the goal was "To discover the true self." When goals are chosen they need to be results, not activities.

ATTRIBUTES of a SUCCESSFUL TEAM

T	together
E	easily understood goals
A	attainable but challenging goals
M	measurable goals
G	good solutions
O	on the spot rewards
A	applied creativity & risk taking
L	loyalty to team & goals

The victim and the team will perform best if they have goals. When working on a goal, seek quality rather than deadlines, because the foundation of the team is performance. If the team performs, it will build everyone up, and foster more team spirit. If the team doesn't perform its very reason for existing is in question.

When setting goals, perhaps the goal can be defusing a particular type of programming. Or perhaps the goal is to uncover the multiplicity of the victim. The team members need to be given a chance for personal growth. The team should share ideas. The team should have fun together. The team can switch roles, or help each other learn. Each person on a team needs to be given some status. The alters of a system also are part of the team. Each individual is valued for what they can contribute. Don't forget to assign each team member a significant role, and to assign meaningful significant goals for the team. Divide up job responsibilities so that success can only result if everyone pulls together. As time goes on responsibilities can be rotated so that personal growth between various specialists occurs.

One person on the support team can reward the alter system when they achieve a goal. A trip to an aquarium, or to a park, or something special that the alter system has never been able to do may be a significant reward. The therapy should be fun. When teams work around the clock, they need to be very wise & careful about how hard they push, and when stopping is too soon. (When one is in the middle one has to continue to a breakthrough.) An alter system can only process so much so fast. After several days to accomplish a goal, and a day to reward the goal, then a break should be taken before hard work again. The recovering victim may also be able to find a situation where they show to themselves their new growth.

At present some therapists are working several days alone to achieve major breakthroughs, at least this is what has been reported. However, we have never heard of any follow-up for these victims. Without proper followup and long term protection and long-term work, we seriously doubt that much will really be accomplished beyond an impressive yo-yo effect. The Mungadze Association (817-354-1389) & Care, Inc., are 2 groups using Christian principles & support teams & safe houses to help programmed multiples. The two groups are some of the best examples of what has been done.

Who is qualified for a team? The most important criteria is commitment to the goal. If someone is seriously committed to contribute toward a common team goal, then they are worth having on the team. But Americans (including the American churches) tend to want short term answers. Short-term patchwork jobs just do not hold up in deprogramming slaves. We need to have concern for the long term for anything effective. That takes commitment. A programmed DID does not want to "expose their guts on the operating table if the doctor and nurses are going to walk out in the middle of surgery." If a team member is seriously committed to the goal, they will work harder to overcome the barriers and obstacles in working with other team members. When the team overcomes an obstacle, a natural outgrowth of that is team spirit. Team spirit isn't artificially made, it is a by-product of a successful team. To focus on "building a team" is the wrong goal. The commitment (strongly willed) is to the therapeutic goal. Teams that are highly committed to each other personally are the best high-performance teams. Too often we have focused on the head (talents), or the hands (work produced) and not seen the heart (spirit). The love and good spirit of a support team are really the best leadership qualities that can be brought to a team. Don't misunderstand, a team **will** invest in creating an ongoing committed well-skilled group, but they don't make the team an end in itself.

Bring together team members who have deep trust and respect for each other. Bring together a female mother-figure therapist and a male father-figure therapist.

At some point team members must have some type of discipline and accountability. There has to be some type of structure. (A team member can't do a job half-way and then decide that they are finished. Nor should other members try to push other team members off the team before the goal is achieved.) That doesn't mean the structure can't be flexible. A team should be what is needed for the job. Numbers are not important, commitment is. Of course the therapeutic team needs to take into account that the spiritual dynamics, the psychological dynamics and the safety needs of the client need to have specialists who will be committed to these jobs.

The most successful team will be one where there is no rule "Don't do anything wrong." Everyone on the team will make mistakes, but that is O.K. because those mistakes can be learned from and can promote personal growth. The team needs to promote the personal growth of its members too.

The team should not waste time on small risks, but go for the gusto. Be creative. Create an informal environment where everyone is relaxed. Take risks, but don't be foolhardy daredevils. The team needs to be committed to new innovations. Pride in what a member knows will go before the fall. Programmed multiple systems are full of surprises.

What if team members argue? Get them together immediately and ask them how this conflict is going to help the victim? "Let's work together. The victim needs to see the people she looks up to being committed to the victim's freedom, and not some non-relevant viewpoint."

Competition between the team members will be counterproductive. The team is not being assembled to win a contest or a race.

The victim will contribute lots of ideas, and a great deal of sensitivity and patience needs to be forthcoming from the support team to allow the recovering victim to be the center of the teamwork. However, an alter system is not set up to help itself, and it will need some external input. Devote time to what is successful. Brainstorm alternatives. Ask team members how they feel they can contribute to a goal. Ask the client, "What would you like to do that we aren't doing?"

If the place to work provides a nearby spot to relax, it will provide the client and the rest of the support team a chance to relax and diffuse some of the tension. The means creatively looking for good safe houses or good offices to use for therapy.

Treat each other on the team with equality. This doesn't mean that a person's skills are not to be respected, it means that all have a shared sense of mission and all are important. The example of team work and cooperation will also be beneficial for the alters. It will give them examples to build on, that they can apply to creating internal cooperation. Somehow the team needs to give space so that members can vent their concerns. Some of the problems therapeutic teams can develop is when concerns are stifled. This means others must be restrained from interrupting. Practicing a forgiving spirit between team members will also give alters a good example to draw from.

The team needs to be as open as possible without any secret agreements between people. The recovering victim needs to see that they are part of the process. In many cases, it is very difficult to speak about particular therapeutic paths, when that will only trigger resistance and programming prior to the onset of a session. For this reason, goals can be stated but particular methods are best devised as the process unfolds. It is not productive to make the recovering victim feel powerless. On the flip side, some alter systems will entertain a spirit of control, and this spirit will have to be firmly and gently rebuked.

As the team works on their goal, they will have to navigate through the following rapids, how do we deal with differences of opinion?, What do we do when one is upset?, What do other team members like? How does one handle feelings? In the end, these are all issues that alter systems have to work out amongst themselves too in order to succeed.

Remember the four essential areas of help: Safety, the Victim getting to know themselves, Building the positives, and dismantling foundation programming & the PDE. The support team needs to determine how the victim can establish safety 24 hours a day, 365 days out of the year. Make sure that all the helpers in this area are very aware of what the safety issues are. One victim had the Illuminati come directly into a Christian safe house and take the victim out with them, without being stopped.

Fritz & I hope that we have stimulated you to investigate forming a support team for your general geographic area. We welcome your comments and questions in this area.

TRAUMAS, FOUNDATIONAL TRAUMAS, How to master understanding what has been done to your mind-controlled client

An Olympic athlete wants to learn every detail about his sport he or she can. There is a fine line difference between success and failure, and each understanding we gain brings us closer to the expertise we want.

There is a big difference between playing war or watching war on television and being on the front line. There is a big difference between hearing about the birthing process and giving birth to a child. There is a big difference between reading about an eskimo and being one. Numerous therapists have commented that they were totally unprepared by their training for the depth of horrors that their programmed DID (MPD) clients have experienced.

How does one bridge the gap? Most mothers will tell you that you can read all the books you want on giving childbirth, but experiencing a childbirth as the mother is the only real teacher.

This book (and our two previous books) have laid out the horrors of the programming for several reasons. One is to help you get in touch with the victim you want to heal. While this book can not transmit the full depth of the horrors of trauma-based total mind-control, only a survivor of that trauma has the possibility of knowing--and in most cases it was too horrible even for them to remember--this book (and particularly this section) can GIVE YOU THE UNDERSTANDING to prevent clumsy therapeutic mistakes that stem from a shallow understanding.

One principle of success in life is to plan ahead. If a carpenter were going to take out a wall in your house, he would know how to use his tools, he would know what the wall was made of, HE WOULD SHORE UP THE REST OF THE HOUSE so it didn't all crumble when he took out that wall. Time and time again, programmed multiples find their therapists "experimenting" on them. In other words, the person whose hands they have placed their life into, doesn't know the tools, what the situation is, nor how to shore up the other parts of the house before they do major destruction on their programming structure. Many clients are irrevocably damaged. The last two decades of therapeutic work with programmed multiples is littered with the failures of "experiments". We shouldn't make excuses for these failures, nor do we need to brood with guilt, life is full of failures; we simply need to come out of denial about the high percentage of failures, and make the corrections needed to succeed. Generally, the victim, who has been victimized by the experimenting is further victimized by being blamed for the experiment failing. So the therapist had best plan ahead, and this section is written to help the therapist do just that.

Two foundational pillars upon which the programming works is dissociation and fear. In order for the traumas to work they need to be as severe as possible. The worse the trauma, the better the dissociative walls needed for programming. These traumas are so severe that they splinter the mind, they are not ordinary traumas. Such traumas are so severe that to describe them creates automatic denial mechanisms within the listener. In fact, most victims prefer to live in denial too, which is more comfortable.

Going back to our carpenter analogy, there are issues that the carpenter must know about and other issues that aren't important. For instance, "is the insulation in the section of wall being pulled out good or not?" is not an important issue.

Likewise, too much emphasis is put on whether the trauma memories were real or staged, or put in with hypnosis. Unfortunately, most of these disturbing memories are probably actually took place. But whether they took place exactly as remembered or not is not an important issue. The issue is that they exist as reality for the victim, and they need to be dealt with. We are dealing with the mind and its programming--that we can change, we can not change what historically happened. We must identify what the mind thinks and deal with that; and remind ourselves we are can not tamper with the past no matter how it happened. If the therapist has a hard time coming out of their denial, perhaps they are not suited for this work. The therapist needs to work with the reality of the memory in the mind--rather than trying to make a judgement call on what happened.

There is a place for making historical judgement calls, but it is not the important issue in working with a victim. Those who have suffered the traumas know that others can not understand them. Only by living the birthing process does the mother fully know the experience. Only by being on the front lines does the soldier know the horror and stench of death.

So the therapist is going to help the client work through repressed memories. These memories are like BOILS OF THE MIND. They rise from the subconscious to the conscious and then they are "lanced" so-to-speak so they can heal. The root of that boil is FEAR.

When the trauma is embedded, it is covered over by love. This is intentional on the part of the programmers. It creates the double binds that they are so famous for. REJECTION OF THE PERSON feeds the boil, that is rooted in FEAR and hidden by the DOUBLE-BIND OF THE PROGRAMMER'S LOVE. (If the reader feels unsure that he or she totally grasps this, no problem, it will be clearly explained as the reader progresses through this section.)

The mind-controlled slave's mind is like a deep vault holding information and trauma memories. The victim's soul carries intense deep grieving, and their body carries body memories of trauma. The deep vault of the mind goes back to the traumas that took place **before** the child victim was verbal.

The fears and dissociation which provide the foundation for the mind-control, were responses by the mind to PROTECT itself. Some Christians are trying to cast out alters as demons, when the fracturing and dissociation was a gift from God that allowed the victim not to lose their mind when faced with overwhelming trauma. The little child to protect itself from the threat and fear of death, the lies, the double-binds, the guilt, the shame, and the confusion of drug states guards its mind by building its structure of dissociation.

When the therapist sees a structured DID (MPD), he/she should equate that with "intentionally done." At some point, the victim needs to see their structuring as something INTENTIONALLY DONE. It was an intentional crime against everything they were--an intentional crime upon their entire being --body, soul and spirit. A little child is born pure and clean. The betrayal of what that child was, is embedded deep in its thinking. No child can withstand the full impact that comes from realizing the extent of the betrayal of that child by humanity.

After years of protecting itself by dissociation, there is no way that a programmed multiple can face the COMPLETE AND FULL IMPACT of a trauma memory without resplintering the mind. Before the dissociative wall is pull out, the therapist needs to place in methods to allow the victim to bring up memories without the full impact. Journalling, art work, mental television screens holding the memories at safe distances, etc. are some of the bracing equipment that successful therapists put into place to prevent the full impact of the memories.

DEATH speaks to everyone. No one is an island to himself (themselves) when it comes to the subject of death. It is an undeniable fact of life, that most people try to stay in at least partial denial of.

The MYSTERY OF DEATH reveals itself in many forms. The therapist needs to understand that he/she is facing multiple kinds of death. A study of Trauma-based mind-control could be renamed a study of Thanoteros. In fact, the man reported to be the world's present-day best programmer has a degree in Thanoteros. After experiencing several types of death, many victims of mind-control prefer death over the reality of life. Your job as a therapist is almost that of a resurrection. You must give life, where there is only death. This is why we believe that victims need life-giving godly people in their recovery.

The mind-control victim may experience death in a grave. The victim may find it in a death, burial, and resurrection programming ritual. It may be experienced in the cages where the mind was split, it may be found in the isolation of a well or closet. It may be found when a child is setup to watch another child or pet that they identify with, and then be made to feel responsible for its death. Death may be for the godlike programmer to die, or for the programmer/master, to whom the victim is trauma-bonded, to turn his back on the victim and walk out of the room. Death may be to find oneself in a strange hospital room with white masked strangers and a strange doctor hurting you. When the important people in a child's life reject its life as important--how is the child to value itself. It is taught to value only that life that the master gives. The therapist needs to show the victim the value of life, so the victims will want to take back what was devalued by the programmers.

Death brings GRIEF. The survivor is dealing with different kinds of death which are shrouded in mystery. The therapist is not dealing with normal grief. The therapist will be dealing will overwhelming grief when the memories are birthed.

The programmer has worked to take the child victim to a place beyond restitution. He has also built in a base of fear with layers of fear, shame, guilt and grief.

The therapist can save herself and the client difficulties if the client isn't put onto the defensive. Don't attack what the client is saying and make the client's parts defend what they are saying. This will only result in them avoiding the issue. Whether the therapist agrees or disagrees, a judgmental attitude will insure that the deeper alters will go into hiding. They will close up tight, and these alters will take the path of least resistance and they will stay silent. Silence is what their programming is demanding that they do. And the programming will feel safer than challenging both the therapists skepticism and the protective suicide/confusion programs that will trigger when they talk.

The programmers have programmed many alters to believe no one would listen to them, and a skeptical therapist reinforces that programmed conviction.

If the therapist can begin to understand that the hours of programming traumas ran into days, and the days ran into weeks, and the weeks ran into months, and the months ran into years, they will begin to get a sense of how the programming has been layered in. It took lots of hours and money to put it in. Its going to take the client and support team as long or longer to deal with the issues and to resolve them. To hurry is not better.

The therapist and the victim will have repeated problems with denial. The therapist will have to accept and work with the victim where they are at. Neither the victim nor the therapist will want to believe that trauma-based mind-control has taken place, but both need to accept where they are and where the therapy is going. That's the reality of life.

The survivor of the mind-control will run basically two tracks. During Illuminati programming these are referred to as the right hand path and the left hand path. The left hand path is the path of the satanic cult, and the right hand path is the outside world, which has been portrayed in the worst way by the programmers.

The mind of a trauma-based mind-controlled slave will naturally think about the thoughts that have been repeatedly drilled into its mind, via all kinds of programming methods and reinforcements. The mind-control is basically a type of death--the human has died and a robot has replaced it. Humans were designed to have meaning and purpose in life--not to follow orders without purpose or direction. The programmers use fear of death to motivate the slave, but fear is based on death, not life. Fear does not give true life.

However, the human spirit is almost impossible for the programmers to kill. If the do break the human spirit, they risk eventually losing the slave to apathetically losing interest in life. The human spirit will fight to live and breathe. It will fight to overcome what it doesn't understand. It will fight to live and to have a life of meaning.

It is important for the support team and therapist not to underestimate the power of either of these two tracks. The programming is extremely powerful. And surprisingly the human spirit is extremely powerful. What results is an extremely intense, overwhelming tug-of-war. The client's actions will not coincide with a single plan. The client's actions will lack harmony. One minute they may sabotage therapy, the next they may give a key to help unlock the programming.

(Because this author lived through being programmed, and in turn learning to program others, I am in the unusual place to understand the consequences of the various types of programming situations that victims are subjected to. I hope to take what Satan meant for evil, and use this knowledge for the benefit of humanity. Please allow me to share some my insights.) An example of one of the standard programming traumas will provide many lessons about the nature of programming and deprogramming. By going over just this one example, it is hoped that the mechanisms that drive the programming will be exposed, and that the therapist will see how to curb the power of the programming trauma.

This programming trauma is based upon Genesis 37 in the Bible. In this Bible chapter the patriarch Israel loves his son Joseph best. He makes for him a coat of many colors (vs. 3), but this special act of love causes his brothers to become jealous. His brothers then strip him of his coat of colors and throw him in a well which had no water.

The Illuminati like to carry out this standard programming trauma when the victim is three years of age.

They will place a coat of many colors on the child, but this is to familiar the child with programming colors. Their robe is not described as a robe of pride, but a robe of shame, and the child is told "you're bad", "look at what you did" and is rejected by a group of people and made to feel alone and shamed. Once the child has been clearly rejected by the group carrying out the programming, then it is lowered into a very deep well. They are trying to build a foundation of guilt and fear for the programming.

The well is deep and either hot or cold. A lid is placed over the well and the child is left in isolation after being shamed and made to feel guilty. Occasionally the group may throw down body parts and feces, urinate, and make noises from the top of the well to continue the shame and rejection. For three days the child is left in the well totally naked. The programmers want to make sure the child feels no worth and rejected by mankind.

It is important that the child feels alone and stripped. That isolation from mankind, will help insure the programming isn't tampered with. It helps insure that the child won't develop self-value. The well experience teaches the child FEAR and that IT IS ALONE. The child feels the fear of being alone. It knows that it is nothing except what the cult wants it to be. In fact, more specifically, it knows it has no life nor value in life except what the programmer wants it to have. It has been stripped emotionally and physically.

After tormenting the child for 3 days with no food and no water and occasional verbal abuse, the child is in shock and at a crisis point. The group raises the child up. At this point it is critical to the programming, that ONLY the programmer/handler be the person to bring the child out of the well and tend to its needs. The programmer will give the child water to quench its thirst and food to feed it. The programmer will pick up the infant and calm it.

This programming experience is to build upon the traumas in the womb and the original fracturing (which is referred to as splitting the core) trauma. In other words, if we were to number the sequence of traumas we get, 1. womb traumas, 2. splitting the core trauma(s) 3. the well trauma.

The coat of many colors-well trauma is very severe. Many children are lost during the trauma. Some children go inside and become autistic. A medical team is present so that the child is kept alive when it is brought to the surface. The child will be in what is called a vegetable state when it is retrieved. After the programmer gets the child to the surface and calmed, the child will be nurtured by its mother or mothers-of-darkness.

The child will be left alone after the well trauma for 3 to 6 months. The child needs this time before it is tampered with.

After it has recuperated, the programming team will begin working with the child. They will build a chronology of how it felt during the entire sequence. This chronology will define for the programming the sequence of dissociation, so that the programmers can identify what types of pieces the mind has developed out of the experience. Those different dissociative pieces each have different characteristics, and those characteristics will be important to determine what that dissociative piece will be used for. For instance, if the child spends some time in fantasy that it's parent really loves it even though the reality of the well experience contradicts that fantasy--those parts of the mind can be used to build alters whose love is based on fantasy. It is difficult if not practically impossible to dissuade these alters that their love does not line up with reality because the foundation is a trauma where this part of the mind survived on fantasy.

It is also important for the therapist to realize that often the Illuminati (or other cult involved with the programming) will separate out the parts of the mind from the splitting the core trauma (remember this core trauma often includes a rape by Satan/& a rejection by someone pretending to be God, i.e. a black mass), and make sure the pure positive parts of the mind are put to sleep via drugs and hypnosis before the well trauma. When the mind (the core) was split part of the mind remained positive and in love with the Lord. That is the part that is the most dissociated from the trauma. That part is preserved and usually not subjected to the well trauma because they want it to develop into the Christian front. It will experience only the original shattering of the core trauma, and then in some cases be left basically trauma-free. They realize that once this part is indoctrinated into Christian doctrine it will be almost impossible for it to ever deal with the mind-control. That is because Christian doctrine from most mainline denominations will teach that part to forgive and forget the past. That part of the mind--which will be used to front the system will live in the pleasant atmosphere of Churchianity--where nothing un-nice is allowed in. It will not want to look at what has happened to other parts of the mind-because its attitude is forgive and forget and move on. Remember, this front part derived its separateness from the rest of the system precisely because it was the part of the mind that stayed in denial of the seriousness of the trauma, and held onto its polyanish thinking in spite of the overall reality of what happened. The mainline denominations will continue layering in teachings that will make it difficult for this front part to participate in freeing the rest of the mind from bondage. This is why it is important for the churches first to realize what is going on when trauma-based total mind-control is carried out, and second how to divide the Word of God correctly so that people realize that the Bible's warning that a double-minded man is unstable in all that he does--needs to force the church to revise their teachings so that their teachings apply to the reality that encompasses programmed multiplicity and the healing of programmed-multiplicity.

Now that the three trauma periods have taken place (fetus, core split, and well trauma) and a recuperating period of time has occurred, the programming team can begin structuring. The structuring will involve "moving" parts around so that they are "positioned" to carry out their role in the grids and systems that are to be built. This is similar to how files in a computer can be move from directory to another without changing the file.

When the programming and structuring begins, the child will be questioned so that the programmers know how the mind split during the trauma. The programmer will then take the child's parts deep into hypnosis and instruct them to forget the well experience. They are only to remember the good part of the experience--the worthwhile lesson that the programmer loved them. They are to forget everything except "YOU"LL NEVER FORGET HOW MUCH YOU WERE LOVED".

The final split of the mind that was in fear will be found and developed into a protector. This part of the mind which lives in fear, will never allow the love part to remember. The FEAR parts are left intact with their fear, they will insure that the memory is dissociated.

There is a point during the well trauma when the child's mind will fall asleep but continue splintering. When the child is sleeping the mind finds it difficult to discern whether its thoughts are dreams or real. Have you ever had a dream that was hard to separate from reality? The splintering during this period produces dissociative parts which can be used for gatekeeper alters. Gatekeeper alters are often the most deceived and most programmed, and have difficulty knowing reality. This is because they have been built from this dream state during the well-trauma.

TRIGGERS, how to defuse

If the therapist has a very strong logical front alter, that alter can be used to provide a protection for the system. This alter can receive hypnotic alarms that will make the system angry if anyone tries to use codes on the system. This strong alter can also train his or her mind to have enormous thick concrete walls behind them, so that the rest of the system is blocked off from hearing anything through this alter. In this way, a system can be protected from a verbal access code. However, there are ways to get around such a defense. When alarm systems and blocking walls have protected a system, the Illuminati will physically abduct the victim, and take the victim to a nearby site where that strong alter will be "destroyed"-shattered by electro-shock and hypnosis and put out of commission. We suggest that if defensive mechanisms are put in, don't advertize this fact, because it only escalates the battle.

The actual codes and triggers are generally buried deep in the subconscious, and the support team is going to have an extremely difficult time ever getting to any of these. We have tried to greatly help people out by publishing what we can in this area. Because the codes are buried so deep, it is really difficult to erase them from the mind. The mind is trained to switch automatically upon certain cues. Perhaps the most effective way to protect a victim of mind-control is to have a knowledgeable support person with the victim, 24 hours a day. The co-authors have heard a number of therapists say that having someone assisted 24 hours a day is impractical, and we reply that trying to free someone (mentally & physically) without 24 hour/day protection is impractical.

There are prayer strategies and powerful prayers that can be made to receive supernatural help to overcome the triggers. There is certainly power in prayer, we have seen this first hand.

Over time some of the codes can lose their power through desensitization. It always helps when alters are aware of what the codes are so they can be alert to them. But the power of the codes should not be underestimated, and to tell someone they are protected from the codes by prayer, is similar to telling soldiers that bullets can't hurt them because they have been prayed for. While we do not discount the power of prayer, we also recognize that prayer needs to be grounded in reality. If we pray for a house, we can imagine that the house has magically appeared, but that is not faith, that is merely self-deception. Some victims have been told incorrectly that codes will not work with their system anymore because they were prayed for. Who wouldn't want to believe this, and yet we feel compelled to warn people that in the case of programmed multiples, there are seldom easy answers.

On the flip side, positive triggers can be put in, such as a cue word that will call up a helpful front alter in case the system and the therapist needs help. Sometimes this can simply be the alter's name.

TRIGGERS, issues around

As the alters of a victim of mind-control go through life, they will inadvertently trigger programming and memories. Initially, there will be fear around the activation of triggers. The novice therapist may think the victim is setting off triggers just for attention. Actually, that is not a major issue for therapists to worry about, even though on the outside it may appear to be an issue. However, it is true that a slave may be programmed to trigger their own programming as a macro-program goes off to get the slave to do things to activate so many triggers that the system self-destructs.

It is no exaggeration to say that life is one big trigger for victims of Illuminati mind-control. The programmers have intentionally linked the external environment of the slave to their programming in order to manipulate the external world into becoming one more reinforcement for the mind-control. The programming traumas have taken place over in so many different geographic locations for most slaves, under so many different circumstances and with so many different programming props that there is not much left in life that doesn't trigger emotions of fear and horror.

After reading the *Illustrated Guidebook*, the *Vol. 2 Formula* book and now our *Deeper Insights* book, readers should be aware of why airplanes, animals, birthing issues, blood, caves, colors, crying by children, death issues, fire, foods, heights, holidays, insects, lightening, masks, occult paraphernalia, snakes, sounds, and harsh weather such as tornados, and zoos will trigger a recovering victim of mind-control.

Phobias can be mentally linked to certain items, or may simply be free floating. For the victim to get in touch with their emotions is in itself very triggering. Any time the victim tries to touch things at a personal or emotional level, they will trigger him or her self. The harder the victim works, the more they trigger themselves and the more fragile they become. In working toward freedom, pain becomes gain. But the victim and the therapist are not going through the pain for sadistic reasons, but because part of the power of the mind-control is to separate pain the consequence of pain from the sources of pain.

Trauma memories are so abundant that abreactions lurk in the background, ready to spring to life as the victim tries to go through live. When the victim tries to shower, eat a meal, or have a pet or visit with a little child, the alters may well abreact. The traumas and abreactions do weigh down a person, but many recovering victims, simply run two tracks, one for the world to see, and the other which is full of pain and confusion. This happens too frequently in therapy. It allows the therapist to fool him or her self that the victim is doing much better than is actually the case.

Sometimes an alter can be put in charge of the body, while the rest of the alters are busy trying to deal with all the pain and emotion that the trigger has generated. Only by gaining the trust and knowing how programmed DID's think, can the therapist begin to get a more accurate picture of how the slave has been triggered.

Many therapists mistakingly think that if their client who is a programmed multiple will not experience victimization if they don't refer to themselves as "a victim". It is a fad to blame victims for their own victimization. The thinking goes like this: Somehow the person set himself up--&/or---it must have been bad karma. This is the pop psychology of the '80's and 90's, that is not grounded in reality. The origins of this thinking are also suspicious. This quack thinking reflects the human's mind's need to have things make sense. Many times life is senseless. Many times people suffer senselessly. They do not set themselves up as victims, and all the word games in the world aren't going to stop what going on. To pretend that the multiples that are coming into therapy are "survivors of abuse" is just one of many ways that the therapists deny that they are not dealing with the real issue, the client's safety--which is not something in the past, but the most important issue in the present. Therapists have most victims conditioned to call themselves "survivors". How many people on a ship that continues to sink call themselves a survivor? The pitiful health conditions that so many victims of ongoing mind-control have described to the two co-authors, and their desperate cries to have this ongoing abuse stopped make the word "survivor" a mockery of their ongoing desperate attempts to hold onto some kind of life.

Every time the victim of mind-control accidently triggers a trauma memory or programming they are being victimized by their past. Of course, some therapists and ministers have managed to hide the MPD, because they have mistakingly informed the victim that the MPD (DID) is the problem. The DID is NOT the problem--but abreacting trauma memories or trying to prevent a suicide program from actually taking place is a major problem, and one that most survivors are going to have to deal with by themselves, because the triggering will take place so quick and frequently. The therapist needs to give the victim the mental and external resources to at least cope with these challenges.

The greater the trauma, the greater the amnesia wall. When trauma memories break through those walls into awareness, the distress to the victim can be overwhelming. The victim will be frightened, ashamed, depressed, fearful, suicidal, and have feelings that they are going crazy.

No patient is eager to discover that he/she has been violated by people they loved and trusted. The false memory people are not portraying the way the mind works to the public. The mind tries to protect itself, and it is inclined to deny harsh memories, rather than latching onto trauma memories because of some therapist's suggestion of abuse. Uncovering a victim's history, does not depend on a single memory. New memories are blended with old ones and new explanations for what has happened reconsidered, until a verifiable more accurate chronology begins to present itself.

At the onset of therapy, if the victim doesn't know, the therapist can warn at the onset of therapy that hand gestures, hypnotic patterns, lights and codes words will trigger the subconscious mind of the victim.

The field of what might be called "aromic therapy" is still in its infancy, but has great potential. The sensations of smells are closely linked with emotions in the mind. If a therapist is trying to trigger a particular memory and emotional content, smells associated with the memory will work better than anything to pull up the emotional content. This is because of the way smell is processed by the mind which first perceives it by the smell setting off a combination of "detection codes" in the olfactory bulb that are then relayed through the limbic system. The memories of smells are very closely attached to emotional memories. This only makes sense in a way, because smells are used by a newborn child to identify its mother, they are used by lovers, and in other situations where the sense of smell plays an important role in our emotions toward something. The use of smells to trigger and to heal multiples is wide open for exploration.

TRUST, how to handle t. issues & how to establish t.

We believe that we may have some new slants on the issue of trust which might help both support teams and their client.

In order for the therapist and support persons to work with a programmed multiple system they need to establish trust. This means that the programmed multiple's alter system not only feels the support person will be honest, but that they will protect the multiple physically and the multiple's confidentiality. It also means that the alters trust the abilities of the therapist to accomplish something positive. For some front alters, they simply need to see that the therapist/support person cares, is a kind person and has credentials or a history of working in this area. For deeper alters, trust is a demanding and complex substance that has to be won by lots of hard work, consistency, respect, proficiency, and availability by the therapist. Many of the deeper alters have never seen a person try to protect them before. Many of the little hurting alters have never had any one to tell their pain to. Many of the alters are convinced that no one can love them, that they destroy everyone they touch, and that they can't have a good relationship with any outsider. The therapist will have to prove these attitudes wrong, even in the face of the client carrying out actions to self-fulfill their expectations.

This last paragraph was from the therapist's vantage point. On the other side of the healing process is the programmed slave. Once the therapist opens up their system, they will be processing memory 24 hours a day--even though the front alters may not know it. Once therapy opens up a system all kinds of things start coming unraveled. The host alter, who probably has been thinking (and generally destroying all evidence to the contrary) that she/he is a single person, now has become a complex system of competing personalities. As the programming loses its power, more of the multiplicity appears. (Family members are often devastated, because they lose the person they knew for an entire tribe of personalities.) As the system tries to move against the programming, every step that would take a unit of mental energy for non-multiples is perhaps carried out only with 1,000 times the mental energy. Instead of one person changing his habits, you have an entire city or world that must be changed, and they must change in the face of overwhelming resistance from many others in the system as well as the programming and external threats. While trust seems to be an easy thing for the therapist, trust becomes one of the struggles that seems "a no win."

Many of the issues seem like no-win issues. Remember that the child victim initially resisted with all it had against being programmed, but at some point, the programmers broke the child and its resistance completely. That brokenness is a solid part of the child's thinking. The victim will fall back into that broken "its-a-no-win thinking" very easily.

The programming leaves the victim's mind operating in a survival mode. This means that much of the survivor's thinking comes straight out of the first brain, the reptilian brain. The victim will try very hard to see what the therapist is trying to say, but before long, they find they have fallen back into the old way of thinking? Why?

Let's say the therapist has worked on teaching the kitten alters that they are really not cats. Let's also say the therapist has worked hard on trust issues. Now all of a sudden the judge alters and the programmers apply pressure to the kitten alters, and before they realize it, they are seeing themselves as kittens and distrusting the therapist. They are saying to the therapist, "You're telling me I'm not a kitten, but I see myself as a kitten when I look in the mirror, and beside I don't want to be a human, because humans get hurt." What has happened?

When the mind learns it builds K-lines. K-lines are like highways that connect many different things in the mind. K-Lines can connect cognitive demon processes, memory bits such as visual maps stored as a memory. K-Lines are what create a mental state of consciousness. A mental state is really nothing more than a K-line or interconnected series of K-lines. When a highway (K-line) is built in the mind, it is essentially permanent. It is similar to the Apian Way that leads to Rome. The same road that allowed the Roman legion to move its troops still is being used today. The same purported street that Christ walked on in Jerusalem is still in existence today. In fact some of the old stones from Roman times with the ancient Roman marks are still in place. The road on top of the Great Wall of China still is used in some places. However, if a road is not used, it can fall into disrepair and its use will be abandoned. Likewise, the mind never normally loses a K-line, they simply fall into disuse.

By employing Behavior Modification in the most extreme forms, alters are trained during programming to develop particular K-lines. Those K-lines will never be gone. Just like an alcoholic will always have an ability to go back to being an alcoholic. What can be done, is to build new K-lines that get more use. Since most deprogrammer are not willing to subject their clients to the same behavior modification techniques (based on survival & fear) that the programmers used, they must resort to building new K-Lines in the higher brains. The programmer's K-lines remain dormant in the reptilian brain, the new behaviors that are taught to the alters are attached to the higher brains. Now what happens when an alter feels threatened? When their survival is at stake, the reptilian brain shuts off the higher brains, and the mind searches around for a K-Line that it can use. Lo and behold, the mind finds the old K-line and reaccesses it. This is why safety of the slave is so important to have a chance to develop strong new K-lines.

When the victim reverts back to their old thinking, the victim will think that all has been lost, and that years of work have been lost. They may tell the therapist that they no longer trust the therapist and that years of work have gone down the drain. This is not so. The new positive K-lines are in the mind still. They will always be there. They simply need to be reaccessed and strengthened by use.

When the survival instinct is triggered--"danger, danger"-- no reassuring and no reasoning are going to break through, the mind under the control of the first brain is shutting down the higher thinking processes and putting its thinking energy into survival. Feelings are not facts, but the mind will be resistent to information that is coming in from the higher brains--unless it has been trained to let these higher thinking processes override survival instincts. This will help people understand why Jesus said that if you are not willing to mentally let go of the need to survive (your reptilian brain) and give your thinking to God (a higher conscious type thinking) you will not be able to have the spiritual walk needed to see God. (If you try to save your life, you will lose it. You must pick up your cross daily, that is sacrifice your survival instincts daily, and allow God to work His will in your life.) Christ also said that fear and trust are incompatible. He said that perfect love for God will cast out fear. In other words, a fearful person will have a hard time loving God. We must learn to conquer our fears by strengthening the higher brains (what people call higher levels of consciousness).

The fifth brain processes concepts, works with abstract thoughts, and can pull up thoughts from various parts of the mind and do comparisons. The fifth brain is a reflecting meditating type of brain. It is capable of integrating many concepts together. In a sense it lives, it feeds off of thoughts. Marijuana triggers this brain. Guided drug trips in sensory deprivation tanks can be used to program this brain.

The higher brains can develop dominance over the lower brains to such a degree that the survival instinct can be overridden completely, cases in point, Jesus and his apostles allowed their own martyrdoms, the Anabaptists under Menno Simon's teachings on the Bible peacefully allowed their own deaths, and modern-day Christians under Bill Gothard's teachings in Uganda allowed themselves martyrdom under Idi Amin rather than fleeing. These were all deaths for a higher cause, not deaths from mind-control. An alter who suicides the system is acting under the confusion of behavior modification where it is acting under the programming lie that it is protecting the system from greater harm. This is simply a misguided survival instinct.

What this means is that safety and trust are inseparable issues. If front alters trust a therapist who is not protecting their system from their mind-control abusers, then it shows that the front alters are dissociated from the ongoing abuse. The alters that are not dissociated from the ongoing abuse are probably the ones that are helping hold up the therapy! Why don't they trust the therapist? The front alters trust the therapist? After reading this, the reader can see why the deeper ones don't have trust.

If the system sees that there are higher concepts at stake, that they have a role to play in helping other victims, they may be able to override their fears with thoughts from higher brains. Trust is in part going to be established by building up the higher brains. This is why spiritual issues should not be neglected in helping a victim.

The first brain can also be worked with by working with the body. The body memories of torture can be worked on to help work out some of the body tension that helps stimulate the strong survival danger signals. Massage and some types of rolfing or yoga might contribute to re-orienting the first brain. The first brain's thinking sometimes show up in body symptoms.

TRUTH, discernment of

[For this section, we decided to let Fritz offer the reader some helpful hints about seeking and finding the truth. Then we'll add a few comments at the end. Fritz has a reason for approaching the subject as he does, so try reading through it first before judging it.]

Everybody has their own methods for figuring truth out. Some are finding it better than others. As with other things, there isn't one set way for determining truth. The procedures are going to vary from situation to situation, but there are certainly some useful tips that can be passed on from one truth seeker to another.

Finding truth is not a matter of taste. One doesn't investigate the one-true god by deciding what god suits our tastes best--but lots of people do this anyway.

As we set our personal criteria for what is truth, we will find others in disagreement with us. Ultimately, real truth is not something personal but something all truth seekers can agree upon. This is why Jesus Christ's words are so powerful, they are eternally truthful. They are as much truth as they were when they were spoken.

Even though truth is not relative, but is an eternal objective truth, God has given us free choice and a mind with which to choose what we want to believe. Many have mistakingly considered one's religious views as a matter of taste, not a matter of truth.

That is perhaps the first hurdle to correctly jump in the search for truth--Is this a matter of personal taste or is it a matter of truth. What I eat for breakfast is my choice, which of the foods is most beneficial for my body is a complex issue of truth.

Because the Watchtower Society teaches that knowledge about God is an issue of truth not taste, the JW's believe that they can apply rational thought in their search for God. The Jehovah's Witnesses have a book Reasoning From the Scriptures. The idea behind the title is a good one. There is a place for reason and logic, but we must be careful to place the Word of God as the foundation from which we reason. Unfortunately, that is not what the Jehovah's Witnesses do. They reason that the God in 3 persons is unreasonable, because there can't be both one God, and 3 Gods, so they reject the Triune nature of God, even though the Scriptures are very clear that the Father is God Almighty, Christ is God Almighty, and the Holy Spirit is God Almighty. Three persons, one God. Sometimes we don't have enough understanding to reason from.

The concept of three persons in one supreme being seems outrageous at first, and yet that is exactly what MPD (DID) is. That is one reason some people can not except multiple personalities either. If we reason from our past understandings, we may not be able to adequately explain new phenomena. The parallels between MPD and what the Bible says about God are enormous, once a person really gets a handle on how MPD really functions within the mind. There are so many misconceptions about MPD, and misconceptions about the "Trinity" (the word doesn't appear in Scriptures), that this subject really needs a book in itself to explain the parallels. But the bottom line is that we believe what God has written to us, and then we reason from there. If God says He exists in three persons, we accept that and then reason from there. We don't reason away what God Almighty says. This is where so many of us get ourselves into trouble.

The Pharisees were able to make the Word of God to have no effect, by thinking out things. Thinking doesn't always take us in the right direction even if it makes sense. This is probably why some people have rejected logic and reasoning in their Christian walk.

Logic is a function of a clear mind. The Scriptures show godly men reasoning things out.

Being a reasonable person can be a good testimony for Christ. But we must always humbly bear in mind that our minds only have a small part of the facts and understanding about the universe and life that exists. If I understand one-billionth of what can be known about my situation, I suppose I am fortunate. God understands so much more. If His Word states something that seems unreasonable--I would rather trust His Word, than my own feeble understanding.

However, if I begin to have thoughts that are contrary to the Word of God, and contrary to how I normally think, then logic helps me realize that these are not my own thoughts--they are the thoughts of demons. This is an example of how reasoning from Scriptures can spare us from trouble.

When we mentally review how we have obtained certain thought patterns, if we acquaint ourselves with how evil spirits influence a man's thinking via our actions opening up portals and strongholds, then we can logically separate out those thoughts that are from God and those thoughts that are from Satan. Most fears are ungodly, and they come from Satan's kingdom. Hope and faith come from God. Discouragement and depression are not given to us from God, they are given to us from our adversary Satan. There may be exceptions to this, but in most cases it is clear that Satan's kingdom is here to steal from us peace, hope, love and faith, and is here to give us hate, fear, and discouragement. We have to learn to be happy. We have to allow God to bring us peace. Logically, if you want a happy life, you must go to the Kingdom that wants to bring you peace, joy, love, and happiness. People look for happiness in the strangest places! Logic-and reasoning will tell you that Satan can't bring you happiness.

Logic can be helpful to us in our Christian walk. Examples were given of how that is true. We must be cautious in how we use logic. Logic is not to be used to overturn the Word of God. None of us are brilliant enough to challenge God's Word. Logic & reasoning is how we protect what God has already taught us & placed into our hearts and consciences.

As we gather information, we can take best advantage of that information if we separate the chaff from the wheat. Is the person giving this information speaking in generalities, or is he speaking about an exception to the rule, or is he speaking about a specific case?

When someone speaks about their private thoughts, how they love someone, or have heartburn, their thoughts are private, we must accept that we only can approximately understand exactly what they are feeling and thinking. When we witness a car accident with another person, our perspective of the accident is our own private perception of the event--BUT other people can also witness the event. The car accident is NOT a subjective event, even though there is some subjectivity in people's perception of it. The accident is not an idea it is an objective event. Modern philosophy has a hard time accepting this, even though it makes common sense. The events of that objective reality can be distorted or misreported and not reported in many different ways. However, the accident is an objective real event. More than one person can experience that reality. If we dream about an accident, then that is a concept. Concepts and what our judgement calls about what our senses have reported are two different things. We normally don't doubt what we apprehend. We normally do question the existence of what we mentally create (our ideas); that is until we come to someone who has been programmed and taught via behavior modification not to trust their own senses. The programmed slave loses the ability to discern what is a concept, merely an idea the brain has imagined, and what is actually something that has an external reality and has been apprehended. Hallucinations will mask themselves as perceptions, when they are not perceptions at all. Further, they are very suggestible. They have shut down their critical thinking and have an unconscious agreement with the programmer that whatever he says is truth. The movie/book 1984 which was written many years ago describes a time when society as a whole was under the mind-control of Big Brother. When the main character steps out of line, he is reprogrammed, by torture. The goal of the programming was to get this thought-offender to accept whatever truth the programmer wanted from him. The programmer wanted him to get to the point that when the programmer held up 4 fingers, the man didn't know what he saw, but if the programmer said that the 4 fingers were 5, then the victim would actually see 5. This is exactly where the programmers get their victims, and is part of the reason they no longer can trust their own senses.

Can several people have a simultaneous hallucination? Yes, and during the programming and during the life of the mind-controlled victim, hallucinations that are experienced by several people are a fake perception that is even more difficult to reject because our normal basis for deciding if something is an external reality that is being apprehended, versus our own imagination, is that other people can also see (or experience) it. When several other people experience something, that is a common test that the event happened in reality. (This is the concept of having several witnesses.) However, witnesses can be mistaken.

The victim of mind-control must be given more than a Bible --"Here, take this, this is the truth." The victim of mind-control must take back what was stripped of them. They must learn to have that critical facility that has been stripped from them--the ability to ask is this an external reality that everyone can experience, or is this a perception, or a grand illusion that several people are only thinking.

Today, it is a fad to say everything is subjective. It is not. There is a reality. Our memories may or may not correspond to something that did exist. Memories can be perceptions and imaginations also, that mask themselves as experiences just like our hallucinations can. We can be skeptical about whether we have a concept in our mind that corresponds to what others could experience, or whether it is an imagination. But we can not accurately be skeptical of the existence of reality and truth.

Since total skepticism of the existence of reality is self-defeating, the occultists have charged off in the other extreme, an equally wrong direction, and declared that if the mind has an idea, the idea must be attached to some reality, even if that reality is actually another magical sphere somewhere. This turns all fictions, visualizations, dreams, imaginations into some mystical perception of some supposed alternate reality. The truth is that these "magical realms" are shared hallucinations. No matter how many people have the same hallucination, that does not make that hallucination become a representation of some external reality.

Reality is the world we live in together. The programmed multiple lives in their own private worlds. The therapist may have to enter that private world and bring the person back to the external world that humanity lives in together. If there is anything that highlights the differences between the external world of reality and the internal world of hallucination it is programmed multiplicity. Because the differences are obvious for the slave, there is no reason why they can't return to the world of reality. The problem that lies for some non-multiples (especially some psychotics, but for many people in general) is that they can't see the two tracks, they can't see the two worlds. I have seen Americans watching soap operas, sitcoms, and other shows, and then tell me that the shows are real events, and no argument would dissuade them. In fact, the philosophers Locke and Descartes both shared the same problem, even as philosophers they could not see the difference between external reality that is apprehended by our senses, and our own head-trips.

As our senses gather in their sensory input, our minds go into gear to compare what they are sensing to what the mind has cataloged already. In other words, the mind is trying to make sense of what it is receiving. This is why we can "talk over someone's head" or why I say that the common American has no frame of reference (& no world-view) to hang my information on. If we are unable to compare what we are sensing to anything else, it is unintellible to us. So learning is a building process, of comparing and building bridges from one item to the next. Our minds are masters at seeing relationships, but it still has to be a building process--whether the process is quick or slow. Some people want to jump over necessary steps of the building process, and read advanced level material before they are ready for it. That is one reason this book should only be read after a certain level of understanding is achieved.

Detecting what is going on in the environment around a person is only part of what the human mind can do. It can also anticipate, plan, think, imagine, calculate, etc. The senses play only a limited role in our thinking. Sometimes we need to use common sense and realize a thought is merely a thought, and nothing else. Just because the thought develops in our mind, doesn't mean there is any external reality to it. Feelings are not facts. Recovering victims of mind-control should remind themselves of this one frequently, **feelings are not facts**.

On the flip side, there are certain phenomena is life which demand explanations, such as how did an extremely well-designed incredibly complex system of life as well as an incredible planet come into being? This is a fundamental question of reality. Although the answer "There was an Almighty Creator" calls for us to employ our imagination to visualize what we can't see, that doesn't subtract from God being an external reality. Something is not negated in its existence just because we can imagine it, or haven't experienced it yet.

Jesus in a sense argued for the existence of the Holy Spirit, by saying it was something not seen and yet it was something experienced and something that created tangible results like the wind blowing through the trees. He was essentially saying, yes, the Holy Spirit (Holy Ghost) is real.

Aleister Crowley, a self-made satanist who revealed much more about the occult world than the Illuminati families would have done, based his Thalamic law, "Do what thou wilt, is the whole of the law" upon the underlying idea that pleasure is good. Common sense will teach people that pleasure and good are not equal. This philosophy is hedonism, and leads to self-destruction, which is what Crowley's philosophy did to himself and others around him. Where this philosophy goes astray, is that Wisdom is good, but may not be obtained through simply pleasure. We may be pleased when we obtain Wisdom, but that pleasure in obtaining wisdom IS NOT wisdom itself but a by-product of having obtained a desired need. While thinking himself wise with all his satanic hedonistic cabalistic drug-sex magic, Crowley was going down a dead end. This is so obvious, that some modern thinkers try to revise the concept that pleasure is good, to the underlying idea that what is desirable for a man is good. But again this makes a mess out of things. People differ in their desires and this means what is evil for a victim of mind-control is good for the abuser. Betrand Russell connected to the Illuminati stated, "Ethics is the art of recommending to others what they must do to get along with ourselves." This fits with the basic viewpoint of many people today who think that there are no moral truths, everything is relative and subjective, just an opinion.

If we approach the subject from an understanding that the way we as human beings are constructed by God, our very human nature has created needs within us. If we make a moral judgement it is not relative but it is grounded in the truth that we have a real need, and these morals express a desire for the good that satisfying that need brings. For instance, a glass of water in the desert is a need, it is good. A glass of whiskey at the bar is a want, it appears good--but it is not a genuine need of the body. We ought to desire more of the things we need, but we often sacrifice these for our wants. Common sense teaches us a foundational moral law that we should desire what is really good for us. Good being defined as what mankind needs. If we know we that truly need something, then we know what is good, and we should desire having it.

What sustains the universe? If we realize that God sustains the universe, then God is realized as a need, not a want. This explains why mankind is so busy with worship. Monkeys do not worship. Fish do not worship. But man tries to worship. Neither fish nor monkeys feel guilt because they do not sin. But man does, because man was given the free will to do what was right.

What I am doing is laying the groundwork to show the reader that all these modern philosophies that say there are no absolute rights or wrongs, are not grounded in truth & reality. We as humans have needs, and to desire those real needs be met is good. Since the fall of man, which was the rise of religion, a great deal of muddying the waters has occurred.

The fall of man paralleled the previous fall of Lucifer. The trauma-based mind-control is a mirror image of the fallen mind of Lucifer. At this point, some of you readers will consider this to be wild preaching--because it is very unpopular to view the mind-control as something religious in nature. Because Luciferian gnosticism & Satanism are religions, it's popular to ignore the religious side of the programming. To associate the occult with trauma-based mind-control seems to some secular therapists unnecessary. They want to sidestep the religious nature of the programming with the mistaken idea that they can sterilize what happens to the victim in strictly scientific terms.

But if we don't dismiss the existence of good & evil, God & Lucifer, and we understand the mind of Lucifer/Satan, then we amazingly "just happen" to have the greatest explanation for understanding the trauma-based mind-control.

[Now Cisco will pick up from here.] Lucifer wanted to steal God's identity. Lucifer in his fall was stripped of his birthright, his identity and his rank, and was separated from truth. Lucifer goes forth to steal the identity & birthright of children, and to separate them from truth. This is just a small part of how the mind-control is a reflection of the mind of Satan. An entire book could be written on this subject alone.

No matter how painful it is for a mind-control victim to realize what Satan stole from them, once they have acknowledged that, and begin to take back what God originally gave them, then the wisdom God will give, will bring knowledge. And that knowledge will bring understanding. And with that understanding the eternal life force (spirit) that the Creator gives each person can look into the deepest pit of hell and it will still see the light of that truth. And Lucifer knows that when you put light on darkness, there is a light at the end of the tunnel which will continue to break down the darkness.

The day one seeks truth with his whole heart, is the day he will find it. That light will be a light on the hill that will prevail over darkness. You can be sure that if you are dealing with mind-control structuring, you are dealing with Satan the father of all lies. When the victim can acknowledge the crimes that were done against him or her self, then he is able to acknowledge what Satan is, the Father of all lies. If evil is recognized as evil, then seek the goodness of truth. The truth will open a doorway into the mind that brings growth, maturity, stability, assurance, a new awakening, and other exciting things. The battle for your mind is between truth and evil.

DEEPER INSIGHTS into the ILLUMINATI FORMULA

Part 2, Section B
Deeper Therapeutic Issues

ABREACTIONS, avoidance of

OVERVIEW. The original programming traumas are perpetrated by the programming cult because these traumas are dependably severe enough to cause the mind to split. Later traumas are the result of ongoing abuse by the slave's users. They may cause splits because the multiple has developed splitting as a natural mental reflex to difficult situations.

The original programming traumas are so severe that **if the slave remembers** them, the memories of these traumas are enough to splinter the mind **again**. Traumas that result from ongoing perpetrator use of the slave may not be so traumatic, but they will also bring with them painful body memories, confusion, and the potential to splinter the mind.

Until recently, the major thrust of the therapeutic community has been to try to push the victim towards abreacting the trauma, which is actually causing more psychological stress and harm than good to the victim's mind.

The correct Goal & some Basic Techniques. Memory work needs to be done with the goal of preventing abreactions.

Memories can be looked at by journaling, being placed on internal movie screens (or VCR players), by artwork and a number of other techniques. Of course the programmers are now a step ahead of therapists and are placing in programs to prevent these non-abreactive memory techniques.

We will review some of the techniques for dealing with abreactions. They basically follow common sense. When a person has a memory:

- they can be distracted to pull away from it,
- they can intentionally encase the memory in some box, vault, safe, room or other storage unit,
- or they can develop ways to slow down and tone down the affect of the memory so that the mind is cushioned from the severity of the memory.

As an alter struggles with memories, another alter can be intentionally shifted to hold the body. Some therapists will also develop a temporary safe room where an alter can retreat from memory work for a temporary respite.

It is going to be nearly impossible for the victim not to suffer from their memories, in fact, every victim we know has suffered incalculable torment from their memories. The slogan "no pain, no gain" seems to have been written for their situation in life.

ABREACTIONS, understanding

MEMORY FLASHBACKS. A review of history will show that victims of torture/trauma can potentially get memory flashbacks for the rest of their life. These memory flashbacks can be triggered in a number of ways, and the memories may lay dormant and hidden for any length of time. The disadvantage of having memories is that they often bring fear, body pain, and loss of sleep. They are like nightmares--although technically memories are different than nightmares in that they are more closely rooted to an actual torture/trauma.

The person experiencing these flashbacks typically thinks they are going crazy. It is important for you to realize that millions of people who have been tortured have also thought they were going crazy, but that what was really happening is that they were having just like you a normal reaction to some very frightening events. To get flashbacks means that the mind is again trying to overcome a bad experience. Flashbacks are not a reason to panic---they are normal---and if a person can remind him/herself to stay calm as possible, one will get through them better. It may be difficult to stay calm during a difficult memory. But staying calm is one of the goals which can be worked toward and achieved. One reason that flashback occur during sleep is that the mind's defenses are weaker during sleep so the resistance to the memory coming is reduced.

There are a number of positive things that can be done in response to memory flashbacks. Although the memory flashbacks on the surface appear to be negative experiences--there also can be some positive benefits. If the memories are correctly handled they can break down the dissociation. The memories can be used to protect the person from future danger. What I suggest as a plan of action is that you accomplish several goals:

1. reduced and eliminate the feeling of passive helplessness that comes from not being able to control memory. I will suggest ways to control memory.
2. take measures during the memory to restore your contact with present reality.
3. continue to breakdown dissociation.

There are a list of things a person can try when flashbacks occur. Some will work and others won't. One may try these in the order listed:

a. Try to think of something that is opposite of what the memory is about or something that is incompatible with the event. If the event is centered around hate, think of an event that is centered in love.
b. Next, one might try to think of the negative consequences of going through the memory. This might encourage action to sidestep it.
c. Try an activity that will distract the mind.
d. Find out what triggered the memory flashback and then try to remove the flashback via the memory-on-a-movie-screen method or the memory-locked-in-a-safe-box method.
e. If nothing else try pushing it back from the mind--see if clenching your teeth and pushing your tongue hard against your palate will help.

To gain control of the flashback when it occurs here are some suggestions:

a. Learn and know of what situations cause certain flashbacks. This will give you a greater sense of control and lessen the panic that comes from certain flashbacks. Gaining control over flashbacks can seem like one step forward and one step back but eventually control is gained--sometimes without the person realizing the progress they have made.
b. When in a memory--first move a finger then bit by bit the rest of the body. Then start controlling your breathing (this can all be practiced anytime). Then get up and look out the window to prove to yourself that you are at home and not in the memory. Then write down the memory. This will help in several ways including the dissociation. If it gets difficult to write the memory--then interrupt yourself with

quiet deep breathing. After writing down the memory--don't reread--but go get something to drink which will be calming such as a cup of coffee. If the relaxation is practiced and can be achieved in response to bad memories it will give you a sense of control over the memories.
c. The victim can talk with their support person about what the trauma was and what it meant to you at the time it happened. This will allow you to achieve an assimilation of the experience into yourself. If you can discuss the event in full and the personal meaning you have a greater chance of conquering and controlling the flashback. It has been reported that memories that are too difficult for people to talk out because they have contradictory feelings, embarrassment etc. regarding them, will repeat themselves and the mind will often become obsessed with those difficult flashbacks. Talking them out can be healing.

Why deal with memory flashbacks? One reason is that flashbacks intrude into the present and mean that you are pulled away from enjoying the present reality into reliving something in the past. Relief from flashbacks will help you, the healing victim, to concentrate better, get more pleasure out of being with others, and make life more enjoyable. Bear in mind also, that everyone who has been tortured goes through periods in time when they disconnect from others. This has been called different names such as "emotional anesthesia" and "psychic numbing" so don't be hard on yourself if you temporarily lose the ability to feel close to others.

The torture was aimed at breaking the victim's personality. Accepting that that was a goal of the perpetrators of the mind-control programming is a step in restoring the identity that could have been there. This leads to the next area of concern: the dehumanization.

DEHUMANIZATION. Because devaluation of another person makes it easier to torture them, devaluation normally occurs in the minds of torturers. They dehumanized not only to control you--but to build up their own image enough to partially justify torturing you. They most likely were also devalued and dehumanized in their own lives and passed on that devaluation. Realizing the reasons why dehumanization was carried out may help a person overcome the process. Another help is to set yourself up in situations where you have positive experiences using your talents and skills will help you overcome the negatives of dehumanization.

BETRAYAL

Parents place the child in unprotected abusive situations

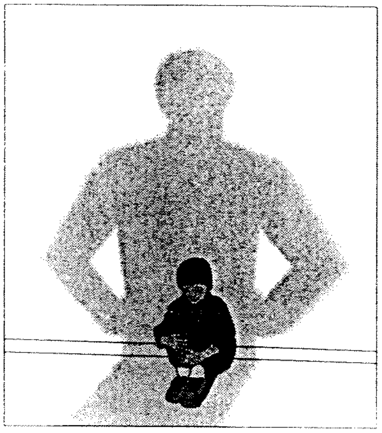

Child's subconscious mind protects itself:

- goes into denial
- learns a. not to trust anyone incl. self, b. since trust is the basis of communication they also learn not to be in touch with the world.

VISIBLE CLUES:

- emotional distance
- collecting spirit
- clingy behavior or independent behavior
- learning difficulties

INTERNAL CLUES:

- lack of emotions
- denial of abuse

HELPLESSNESS

Child place by
Illuminati in
traumatic settings
with absolutely no
help or remedy.

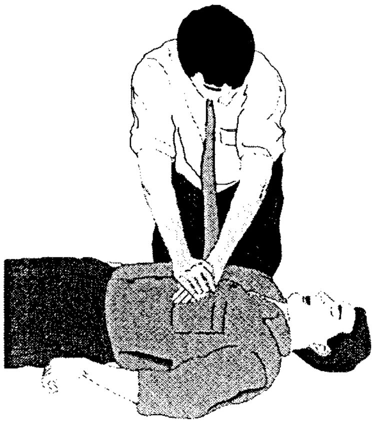

Child's subconscious mind protects itself:

- to guard itself it creates free floating fears
- to further guard itself withdraws from people or acts aggressive toward others
- splits off a part to take the trauma
- tries to remedy by reaction in the other direction, i.e. becomes an obsessive caretaker of others
- learns to a. help & support do not exist, b. that there is no power against the programmers.

VISIBLE CLUES IN VICTIM:

- eating, sleeping and bedwetting disorders
- nightmares
- phobias
- withdrawal or aggressiveness from others
- obsessive caretaking

INTERNAL CLUES

- DID (MPD)
- Suicidal thoughts

ROLE CONFUSION

"Good" adult does
something bad to
child.

Child's subconscious mind protects itself:

- preserves a sense of the world—I must be bad. It was my fault.
- preserves self-respect—Since I didn't resist, I am at fault.
- preserves good image of abuser—I can continue to love him, because I was at fault.
- preserves happiness—What a thrill to be abused, I must have wanted this for being so bad.
- learns to have a. a comfort zone of self-blame, b. to become a caretaker which sets the victim up for more self-blame when things go wrong, c. fantasize to stop the pain.

VISIBLE CLUES IN THE VICTIM:

- wants to punish one self
- sabotages self achievements & acts of love by others
- isolates

INTERNAL CLUES IN VICTIM:

- guilt, shame, & a "bad" self-image

SEXUAL DEBAUCHERY

Abusers force and then reward perverted sexual slavery.

Child's subconscious mind protects itself:

- mind accepts the violations
- concludes that all touching is a sexual come-on
- learns a. confused & inappropriate behavior and values, b. perceives its value from being a sexual object

VISIBLE CLUES IN VICTIM:

- far too-early sexual development
- strong negative or positive feelings/reactions to sexual issues
- confusion about sexual norms

INTERNAL

- lots of sexual issues

SHAME
Cult humiliates &
shames the child
victim

Child's subconscious mind protects itself:

- decides not to tell about the trauma, becomes secretive
- believes it has a guilt to punish
- either it decides to quit risking failure by reaching for success OR over tries to succeed but never feels successful.

VISIBLE CLUES:

- secretive
- self-destructive behavior

INTERNAL CLUES

- feelings of guilt, shame, self-hate, and isolation

SPLITTING THE MIND

Overwhelming, pain,
sensory stimuli, &
emotional shock-trauma

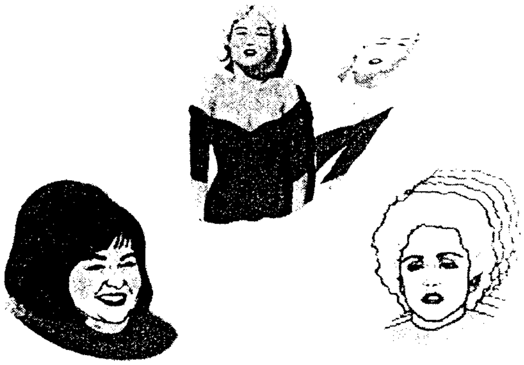

Child's subconscious mind protects itself:

- creates amnesia walls & splits the mind into dissociative parts
- the mind disowns the body
- learns to a. dissociate as a defensive habit & b. to copy others in cult as role models.

VISIBLE CLUES:

- no sense of danger
- dissociative behavior
- phobias
- eye-rolls
- sleeping disorders
- inconsistent behaviors
- lost time
- denies acts that others have witnessed
- moody
- uses pronoun "we"

INTERNAL CLUES:

- helpless feelings
- no confidence
- DID (MPD)
- depersonalization
- emotions locked up

ABUSERS, confrontations or not

Several victims of mind-control have said that they felt the best pay-back that they could give their abusers was to get well. This is probably right. There wouldn't be any punishment that would do justice to the crimes that have been committed. We victims should try to fight evil with positives, something good.

But what about confronting an abuser, and letting the perpetrator's system know the suffering they've caused, etc. Just because the victim has worked through some issues, doesn't mean the abuser has. The abuser had to sear his mind years ago. What abusers do, is that first they sear their consciences and then they develop justifications in their mind for what they do. They are deeply entrapped in their own rationalizations. The Network has prepared them excellent alibi's to "prove" they could not have done it. Talking to an abuser about your mind-control issues is like talking to a cement wall. All it will do is get the therapist and the victim into more problems. In some cases, the False Memory Syndrome has helped the abuser and the therapist ends up getting taken out of commission.

Keep the therapy work private. Go toward health quietly. The world is not even ready to understand the healing of the victim. And the abuser is even less ready to be understanding. The abusers simply feel threatened.

Some victims have a deep drive to make their abusers understand. They are struggling with the effects of the mind-control, and have not yet realized that the abusers are NOT their friend, but another multiple who is also deeply trapped in what they are doing.

An excellent portrayal of a victim confronting their abuser is the film Death & the Maiden. There is more to this film than would meet the eye of the casual uninformed observer. Death & the Maiden was directed by Roman Polanski. Polanski was a foreign born producer who has produced porn as well as some of the most graphic and accurate portrayals of Satanism to ever hit the movie houses. Anton LaVey, head of the Church of Satan, was a consultant for Polanski's Rosemary's Baby movie. LaVey also acts as Satan who impregnates the film's Bride of Satan to create a son. Witch queen Maxine Sanders helped Polansky with his film Eye of the Devil, a story of a French nobleman's obsession with his family's tradition of satanic sacrifice. Maxine Sanders taught witchcraft to Charles Manson's group who called themselves Satan's Slaves. Charles Manson's group included people with ties to LaVey's Church of Satan. Polanski himself was into witchcraft, & is known to have gone to Hollywood sexual parties with his videocamera. Sharon Tate was in Eye of the Devil and Roman Polanski married her. Sharon Tate was subsequently given the traditional Traitor's Death in her Hollywood Hills home by Charlie Manson's group, which was a group of mind-control slaves. Charles Manson was programmed to Beatle's music. The Beatles album named White Album had a phrase Revolution 9, which he had been programmed to identify with the fifth trumpet which opens the bottomless pit with scorpionlike creatures with hair like women's hair (his girls). What we are saying is that Polanski was around satanism & mind-controlled slaves. He was in a position to know the real story of Dr. Joseph Mengele.

Roman Polanski's Death & the Maiden film takes place in a South American country. Strictly speaking, it is about a political prisoner who confronts the doctor who abused her. However, there are a number of items in the film that strongly suggest that Polansky was making a film about Dr. Joseph Mengele, the original Dr. Green, who abused & programmed countless slaves in several countries. The doctor in the movie is called "the Angel of Mercy" which was one of Mengele's nicknames. Mengele loved violin music, so does the doctor in the film. The title of the movie Death & the Maiden is a piece of music from Schubert, and Mengele loved Schubert's music & did indeed play it during programming, in a fashion like the film. The film's doctor is entitled Dr. Miranda--a name that suggests Mengele. Mengele liked to use the phrase "no. 1 or no. 2?" which also occurs in the film. He also like to trauma-bond his victims, and to tell them "you are safe" during programming (when just the opposite was the case). In Death & the Maiden, Dr. Miranda refuses to confess, and has people that the victim can call to prove his alibi, who can conveniently recall 15 years later details to clear Dr. Miranda. **This matches what is done in real life**. The victim says, "You **** are running things behind the scenes, but I'm in charge here." At the movie's end, the victim, who is the movie's main character, shows she is greater in character by walking away & not hurting the captured doctor. At one point, she states, "**No revenge can satisfy me.** I want him to confess... on videotape."

ALTERS, how to work with deep Illuminati a. (Issues for therapists)

Up to now, therapists have chosen therapeutic modalities that resulted in avoiding dealing with the deep Illum. alters.

One of the most acclaimed centers for helping programmed multiples only works on issues that presenting alters have, and uses electro-shock techniques to try to wipe out deeper issues in the mind. Other prominent psychiatrists who have travelled & trained other therapists how to deal with MPD/DID have incorrectly taught that right brain-left brain issues are simply a program. Therapists have by & large ignored Illuminati religious beliefs, which has insured that deeper alters are not going to present themselves to be ridiculed. Others have attempted to cast the deeper alters out, which in reality buries them deeper into the subconscious, where they carry out their influence at an even harder-to-find level. In fact, when this is being written in 1996, most therapists still remain ignorant of or in denial that the Illuminati exists.

Our system has unsuccessfully looked far & wide for a professional who understands the deeper Illuminati alters. We believe this material will make a fresh and valuable contribution in the work needed to free Illuminati slaves.

Therapists are in a difficult position to work on Ipsissimus/Grand Master alters or Grand Dame or Mother-of-darkness levels, because, before they can learn how to work with deeper parts, they must forget many things they have been incorrectly taught.

Therapists need to see the interrelationships between Illuminati cosmology & beliefs and the programming that is carried out. Witchcraft rituals of the Illuminati are a form of deep level programming. This is why it is ludicrous for Wiccan counselling centers to help mind-controlled slaves, & yet there are a number of licensed wiccan centers "counseling" multiples with programming. The very teachings of witchcraft are intertwined with the programming that needs to be disassembled.

Several elements that are common to all forms of witchcraft are: a. the stimulation of an awareness of a hidden side of "reality", b. the awakening and training of hidden powers of the mind, c. the intense training and discipline of the various levels of the subconscious mind. For instance, psychic abilities and astral projection are basic components to witchcraft. Witchcraft at the higher Illuminati levels is the skill to work in the subconscious mind & change consciousness at will.

Witchcraft, especially the cabalistic and hermetic-based witchcraft of the Illuminati, understood how to work with the subconscious mind long before modern psychology existed. Modern psychology is actually based upon cabalistic doctrines. There is a one-to-one correspondence between Freud's theories and Jung's theories and the older witchcraft philosophies. The child, adult, parent of transactional analysis is simply the maiden, mother, crone triple goddess of the Illuminati. And these three parts of the mind have been well understood and manipulated in rituals for centuries.

2 important steps to take in order to help deeper parts are: a. realize that the deeper parts are centered in a trance state in their internal world, and are developed not to function in the conscious world, but are highly skilled to function in the subconscious mind, b. dream state therapy should be developed to help the deeper parts unravel their programming.

CLONES

When the core is split, the dissociated parts that split when the child was in a rage are used to make clones. These little child parts are very small, and have not had a chance to grow up. The creation of clones is described in *Vol. 2*. After they are discovered by the programmer he uses hypnotic magic to drop a robot suit over the child alter. The suits are made of different types of metal and there are a number of different types of suits. Often the children turned robots are given serial no.s. They may perceive themselves as military units.

Clone splits are formed into armies that come to the front of the mind to protect the programming. They are like a nursery of screaming children. It is impossible for the front host alters to calm these clones down.

What has been found to work on the clones from the 40's through the 60's programming is to put water on them. Water paralyzes them. Then one can go around to the back and find wires or switches on their suits. A switch may shut them off. Or perhaps the wires can be tampered with.

When these little children are looked at, these parts still have probes and needles in them. These child alters need to go to an internal hospital, where they can mentally go through some care to get them relieved from the state they perceive themselves in. After they are out of their suits, the robot suits can be vaporized.

JUDGE ALTERS

Judge alters are alters who enforce the laws of the system, which of course are the guidelines & programming established by the programmer.

In witchcraft paradoxes are used. Each split of the mind is valued. The alters, such as the judges, are mirroring their abuse. Fear is the basis of their obedience. They have seen the worst terrors. They have seen things others haven't seen. They are structured along the lines of demonology, and they believe that they must answer to Lucifer. They have no doubt that they are going to hell. They believe the better they obey, the better life they will have in hell. Their obedience in keeping the rest of the system in line with the programming is their desire for a better life in hell, which they already have a foretaste of. Much of their programming was put in during the sensory deprivation, so they don't fully comprehend why they do what they do, they just believe that what they are doing is for their survival. Many of the deeper alters are functioning with a survival of the fittest attitude, where only the strong and obedient survive. They have been given the Spirit of War & they war for the system. They carry the full force of demonic possession. The starting point for many of these deeper alters is to realize they were programmed to their script.

MIRROR IMAGES.The script for the mirror images came from God floating over the water in the Bible's Genesis. Mirrors of an alter are simply fragments of some alter. They are taught they are separate, but the separation is an illusion. There are several programming tricks they do with the child such as "This is your hand" trick, to confuse the child's mind about the mirror image. The splits are done in front of mirrors. "ITS THE MIRROR IMAGE THAT IS GETTING HURT, AND HAS BLOOD ALL OVER IT, NOT YOU." After the child accepts the mirror image as real, they put it into hiding with hypnotic suggestions, & they tell the child the mirror image split doesn't exist. The mirror image will take the programming traumas & the anger.

HOW TO WORK WITH DEEPER ILLUNIATI PARTS
(deeper issue for Therapists)

The following are things for Therapists

STUDY:

- a. how Illuminati beliefs intertwine with programming
- b. how the external Illuminati is structured
- c. how to do dream therapy and to be sensitive to dreams

BE AWARE OF:

- a. the Illuminati reinstates (reprograms) sealing programs over the dream state approx. every 3 years to stop revealing dreams from surfacing.
- b. how Helping Alter can work deep in the subconscious to pull memories and to interact in a positive way with deeper parts
- c. how programming hits at a subconcscious level. It may seem benign to the conscious mind, and yet be building up subconscious momentum and growing power.
- d. how complex it is for deeper alters to separate objective & subjective realities.

TREAT WITH RESPECT

- a. the training in programming that the deeper hierarchy alters have
- b. that the deeper alters will respond in a manner that reflects their position, staus and training.

BACKACHES, suggestions for body aches

Body aches, especially backaches, can keep the mind so preoccupied with pain that the rest of the mind doesn't work on other issues. The body, mind, and spirit all need healing.

When building an alter system, the Illuminati programmers build in protective programming by using spinal surgical techniques. This kind of programming is usually done in a hospital. It is done by specialists who know the spine and the nerves. There are several variations of what is done. They will attach this spinal pain to a hypnotic trigger that if you remember such and such, you will relive the intense spinal pain. The variations on this, are to paralyze someone from the waist down, or a leg, or an arm. Using surgical drugs and procedures, they can even make a person "blind" by hitting certain nerves and this can be used to create blind alters, or blinding programs. Simple electroshock to parts of the back can be painful.

The Illuminati also lay in the spirit Leviathan which lays on the spinal column and causes intense pain if the victim goes toward health. A number of Illuminati victims have gotten relief from intense back pain by deliverance from Leviathan.

What this means is that a support team that is working on issues may want to have a good chiropractor on the team, and maybe a masseuse. Working the muscles of the body will free up trauma pains, and alters that get locked up throughout the entire body. Needles that are still mentally in the body are also locked up in body pain too.

If a victim hits programming that flips them into pain, the alters will of course be preoccupied with the pain in the body and they will lose sight of the memory. Go directly to the pain and work on the pain issues, because the memory is sheltered in the pain.

BIOGRAPHY

The following inventory can be worked on by a victim of mind-control as home work or the therapist can use the questions as a means to build rapport and understand the client better. In order to save printing costs this section will not provide room to write the answers down. Sheets of paper or a tape recorder are needed to record answers. Questions are numbered for easy reference.

This inventory is for the therapeutic process--which means ultimately it is for the victim. The questions are meant to be a guide, feel free to speak about anything that pertains to each biographical time period. If something important happened that you want to report, you don't need a question to talk or write about it.

EVERY ONE HAS ROOTS. The following questions are about the client's roots. Roots are important, we need to know where we've come from to know where we're headed. Understanding the client's family may reveal a great deal about the client. Learning one's roots can reveal important clues as to why things occurred in your life.

- 1. Tell the story about how your parents met and fell in love?
- 2. Tell a story that would show what your mother was like.
- 3. What can you say about your mother, do you know where she came from, where she was born and what her life was like before she met your father?
- 4. What are some of your mother's emotional traits, was she warm and loving, or strict, or nagging, or unstable, or humorous, how was she?
- 5. What was the best thing about your father?
- 6. What was the worst thing about your father?
- 7. What do you know about your father's bloodlines, his genealogy?
- 8. What do you know about your mother's bloodlines, her genealogy?
- 9. Was there anything unusual about your mother or father?
- 10. Did your mother ever give any sex education to you, what was her attitude towards the subject in your view?
- 11. What was your father's work?
- 12. What kind of bedtime stories did your father tell you?
- 13. Is there something important to say about your grandparents or great-grandparents?
- 14. In what ways were your uncles and aunts important to you?

CHILDHOOD (pre-school) This section will be one of the most critical. Don't be embarrassed if you don't remember, just be open & frank, because this inventory is for you. The therapist needs to watch for protectors to surface with the "approved solutions", & watch the different slants that are given by the client at different times to the same subjects.

- 15. What is your earliest memory? How old were you? Where did you live?
- 16. What do you know about your birth, were you pre-mature, were you c-section, were you tiny or frail?
- 17. Did you have older siblings who helped raise you?
- 18. What was the neighborhood like that you grew up in before kindergarten?
- 19. Did you ever get into trouble when you were between 3 and 5 years old?

- 20. Were you ever sent to your room, or made to stand in a corner in your first few years?
- 21. How did your parents punish you?
- 22. Who disciplined you the most?
- 23. What kind of religious experiences did you have as a small child?
- 24. Who was more religious, your father or your mother?
- 25. Who was your first grade teacher?
- 26. What was your first grade teacher like?
- 27. Can you describe your first day at school?
- 28. How would other people have described you when you were a small child?
- 29. What kind of chores did you have as a child?
- 30. What kind of games did you play as a small child?
- 31. Do you think you had a happy childhood?
- 32. What are some of your favorite childhood memories?
- 33. What is your worst childhood memory?
- 34. How did you feel about going to doctors when you were little?
- 35. What did you want to be when you grew up?
- 36. Do you remember putting your teeth under the pillow for the tooth fairy?
- 37. Do you remember Christmas or some other holidays?
- 38. Did you know any crazy people when you were little?
- 39. What did you think about people who were a different race when you were little?
- 40. What did you think about Halloween when you were little?
- 41. Did you ever get sick when you were a little child?
- 42. Did your family go on any vacations, could you describe one?

ELEMENTARY SCHOOL DAYS. If the client is talkative, let them provide as much as they want. When dealing with victims of mind-control everything about their life tends to be a clue as to what has gone on. The therapist can trust their own curiosity and ask further questions. For some victims, their host alter will not have memories below the age of 18, or their memories will be spotty. However, the newer mind-control victims are getting better childhood cover memories laid in so that their mind-control is not so obvious.

- 43. Do you remember the first book you read?
- 44. What kind of things did your parents like to read?
- 45. What kind of toys did you have in elementary school?
- 46. What were some of your favorite games during your elementary school days?
- 47. Did you learn to play any musical instruments?
- 48. What were some of your favorite songs during that time period?
- 49. Did your family move a lot, and how did that affect you?
- 50. What was the worst experience that you can remember from your school days?
- 51. What was the best experience that you can remember from your school days?
- 52. Did someone in your class of the opposite sex have a crush on you?
- 53. Can you remember what was the most memorable gift that you gave as a child?
- 54. Can you remember what your favorite gift that you received was?
- 55. Did your family take vacations during your school years?
- 56. Did you have any strange people in your school or in your neighborhood, and how did you feel about them?

- 57. What kind of pets did you have growing up? What happened to them?
- 58. Do you remember your tenth and eleventh birthdays?
- 59. List the names of your elementary school teachers.
- 60. Describe your elementary school building on the inside & outside.
- 60. What was the name(s) of the Junior High that you went to?
- 61. What was the most influential teacher that you had during your school days?
- 62. Did you hang around with any kids, and if so, what were they like?
- 62. What kind of neighbors did you have?
- 63. What kind of trouble did you get into?

HIGH SCHOOL & TEENAGE YEARS. The high school years are years when the child is meeting interesting members of the opposite sex, preparing for their future, and working at their first jobs. It's a time for new beginning as well as turmoils. It is also a time when the victim will be in many secret rituals, and will be used for many mind-control assignments. There are no right or wrong answers, if the client thinks of something else, besides what initially comes to mind, then it is quite alright to have several "most" events in answer to a "what is the most...?" type of question.

- 64. What was the craziest thing you ever did in high school? Why did you do it, and what happened?
- 65. Who was your favorite person during your high school days?
- 66. Who were your best friends during high school?
- 67. What is the funniest thing that happened to you as a teenager?
- 68. What did you expect to do when you graduated from high school?
- 69. Did you go to your high school prom?
- 70. Do you remember any of the nicknames you had for your teachers?
- 71. What was your favorite subject in school?
- 72. In your opinion, which did you like more in high school, sports or intellectual pursuits?
- 73. Could you describe what the high school building looked like?
- 74. Were you active in a church during your high school days?
- 75. Did you do any great activities with other teenagers in some religious club or sunday school group?
- 76. Were you a leader of any activity during your high school days?
- 77. What was it like going to the movies as a teenager in your area?
- 78. Who were your heros during your teenage years?
- 79. Who were the heroes of your peers when you were a teenager?
- 80. Did anybody ever accuse you of being dishonest as a teenager?
- 81. Did you try to pattern your life after anyone, if so who? do you still admire the qualities you saw in that person?
- 82. What kind of conflicts did you have with your parents?
- 83. What kind of conflicts did you have with your teachers?
- 84. What kind of conflicts did you have with your peers?
- 85. What was your attitude toward drugs and smoking during your teenage years?
- 86. Was there ever a point in time where you went against your parents wishes? tell the story about how you managed to get your way.

ADULT LIFE. It almost goes without saying that the therapist is trying to build rapport with these questions not to interrogate, not to judge, but simply to listen and learn. Find out what was the most important thing(s) in the person's life. Find out what the client remembers that was interesting.

- 87. What kind of things were you involved in after high school?
- 88. Where did you go to college or trade school?
- 89. What was it like to leave home, to go to higher education or to be on your own?
- 90. Did you join any fraternity or sorority?
- 91. What was your major field of study after you left high school?
- 92. Did you have any part-time jobs, after you got out of high school?
- 93. Who were your best friends during the first few years after high school?
- 94. When was the first time you met your spouse? Describe the meeting.
- 95. Where did you live after you first got married?
- 96. How much did it cost for different items when you first got married, for instance, a packet of bacon, a gallon of gas, a dozen eggs, a hamburger?
- 97. What did the future look like when you graduated from high school?
- 98. What did the future look like when you graduated from college, or a trade school?
- 99. Do you think attitudes about sex have changed for the better or worse over the years? Why do you think attitudes are changing?
- 100. What did your family think about your first spouse? What were their reactions?
- 101. Did you have any common interests with your first spouse, & if so, what?
- 102. Who would you have liked to have married that you didn't?
- 103. How would you describe yourself in your twenties?
- 104. From where you are today, when did you decide upon your career? When did you first entertain thoughts of this career? Were the seeds of where your life has ended up present in your early life?
- 105. What do you consider your most important achievement so far in your life?
- 106. How do you feel about God, and could you please describe your image of what kind of person God is?
- 107. Did you have military service, and what was that like?
- 108. Are you a flashy dresser, conservative, sloppy, well-groomed dresser?
- 109. How important is it to dress well?
- 110. What kind of pets did you have in adult life?
- 111. Do you think much about death? Do you fear death?
- 112. What do you think happens to people when they die?
- 113. Did you ever have an ESP experience?
- 114. Did you ever have a ghost experience?
- 115. What do you think about magic?
- 116. What kind of foods do you like? What kinds of foods do you detest and why?
- 117. What did you think about Watergate?
- 118. Where was the edge of the city when you graduated from high school, has the city grown since then?
- 119. Is there something that we have failed to talk about that you feel is important?

There are reasons why each of the questions was selected and why it was placed in the order that it appears. Those reasons are based upon experience with mind-control victims. To prepare this list of questions we looked at several books that were designed to inventory a person's life. We were greatly assisted by William Fletcher's book Recording Your Family History. Berkeley, CA: Ten Speed Press, 1989. The book is an organized guide to asking family history questions. This or other sources might provide more ideas on reconstructing the client's bio.

BURNOUT, of the support team

We will let our support person Fritz write about how a support person can deal with burn out:

Allow me to start by saying, if you're feeling stressed at this moment, take a deep breath, close your eyes for a moment and then exhale and relax. Burnout hits people who have nothing more to give. When you have been stressed to the max, the rewards are not there, and you have all these nagging agitating issues. Even a well-working piece of equipment will eventually rust--so don't be too hard on yourself.

Working with programmed multiples & implant victims will give a person long periods of distress, pressures from all angles, & a nauseating feeling that you are stuck and not going anywhere. I have always found that it's healthier mentally & physically for me to be actively doing something, no matter how small against the mind-control, rather than being passive in difficult times. In fact, military units often find that their men handle stress better being on the attack than sitting around in a defensive mode waiting for the bombs to drop. I manage to keep a healthy positive outlook by continuing to take steps, even tiny ones.

Attack the problem? You may feel like an ant against an elephant trying to bite off more than you can chew. There are indeed limits to what a single person trying to fly solo against the mind-control can achieve. Try to find some support from a few intelligent listening people. One therapist cries her heart out to God. Tears are not a bad idea. Did you know that tears contain stress hormones, so that crying actually empties the body of stress hormones. (Now wouldn't we like to see our clients do more crying?) If it doesn't seem like anyone, the client, friends, or God is listening to your difficulties, unfortunately your body quietly is. Emotions are the bridge between the body and the mind. Interaction between the two need emotions. Remember the reptilian brain controls the body, and is connected to emotions. The higher minds control thoughts, and they too are connected to emotions. Your body will respond to stress, with symptoms like higher blood pressure. Mine doubled in one year. Obviously, there is a price to pay for such challenging work.

So where does this leave you? If you can connect with the tragedy of what is happening to your client, then therapy will take on a purpose. The price you pay will be worth every drop of sweat, or every diastolic & systolic number on your blood pressure. You may have to learn how to blow some things off. Multiples will say a lot of things. Everyone has buttons. Don't be hard on yourself that you have buttons. My favorite ones are:

- Nobody listens.
- You can't count on anyone.
- It's never good enough.
- Don't tell me what to do or think.
- Is anybody thinking?

Can you identify with any of these, what is on your list of buttons?

Some of us are like ballistic missiles. When our buttons are pushed off we go. Realizing that we have buttons, and how the firing mechanisms got put in during our lifetime, can be helpful to diffuse these. A person only has so much energy and when they are constantly going ballistic they burn up a lot of energy quick. And if you stuff it under the emotional rug--you will still burn out, because your body is connected to the rest of you, and all those unused stress chemicals are still there. In fact, support team members should look at symptoms like pain in the gut, headaches, pain in the neck and realize some of these are simply the stress of all that is being dealt with. Do you have unresolved emotional or physical pain, that are visible as buttons and pain?

Perhaps you are wearing down because you have self-doubts, and negative expectations. Who wants to be like the greek mythological

Sisyphus who pushed a boulder up the hill, only to have it roll down again and again? Don't devalue your little forward steps. Keep taking those steps forward, and recognize your accomplishments. Perhaps you need to write out what has been accomplished for you the support person and the client. I discovered that progress reports have been very encouraging and well received. Often when I thought that success was self-evident the system was not able to see any until they read the progress report. Each of us are unique, and I am in no position to tell you what will or won't encourage you or your client. However, some people have been helped by writing out all their self-doubts and then dumping them into a trash can. Let's face it, bad news is often not as bad as it seems; and good news is often not as good as it seems. Throw your doubts away, but do try and get some support. Even if you are creative and capable, when you begin to get exhausted you will begin to lose that creative edge to meet the latest challenge.

Does the problem still seem too big to fix? Trying to figure out how to deal with all kinds of alters as well as people in the external world is a big chore, and the work keeps accumulating of things that need to be worked on with your client. I don't have all the answers, but part of the answer lies in remaining flexible, learning how to negotiate and communicate clearly with alters, and part of it lies in just accepting that some things come with the territory. The trust issues with programmed multiples are difficult and persistent. They will wear a person down, in the same fashion that having a boss looking over your shoulder the entire time gets old. Blow it off. It comes with the territory. And again, I can't repeat this enough we need to work in teams. I have been greatly revitalized by working with others.

If you think you've got problems, put yourself in the victim's shoes! With several victims who have just begun, their alters asked how long it would be until they were well, & I've told them, "Your beginning a long journey, like walking from New York to California. If we have to walk the entire distance, it's going to be a long journey. If we can do some flying it will go quicker." I was trying to balance the enormous amount of work that needs to be done, with the actual truth that some of the better methods can get a great deal done in short intense periods. I want the victims of mind-control to see the hope.

In order for victims of mind-control to obtain better results, and to minimize burnout among therapists/support persons, I suggest that we carry out an ongoing process to weed out self-defeating habits and behaviors, we continue to learn new techniques for helping mind-control victims, and that we continue to give ourselves a chance to grow, and learn too. After all therapists have needs too. I think the lack of recognition by people that therapists are people contributes to "therapeutic chronic fatigue". While the client is wanting to discover their feelings, the client is expecting the therapist to bury the therapist's own feelings. I think that it is healthiest for the support persons to actually touch base emotionally with everything that is happening to both the client and the therapist. In the long run, I believe that burn-out will happen lots slower if the support persons are emotionally invested in the work, rather than simply being a paid automaton.

Therapists will have less stress, when they have someone that can mentor them. Victims are tough, they are survivors of a lot of abuse, & they often survive incompetent therapists. What may seem like a tragedy for your multiple may not derail the therapy as much as the novice might expect. I not suggesting an uncaring attitude, I'm just saying that experience brings some calmness.

Perhaps you're not in position to put the time & energy into the client that your client wants. Sometimes we don't have perfect answers. If you are giving it your best shot, who can complain? Be kind to yourself.

CONFLICT, resolving c. between alters

If all alters had the same thoughts and were in agreement, this book would not be needed. The essence of why trauma-based mind-control is so successful is that their are substantial differences between the various alters. Those differences allow the Illuminati to create good front alters as covers. Those differences allow the Illuminati to maintain control and prevent the system from finding their freedom. Incompatibilities and conflicts between alters is a given from the get-go with a DID client. The support team may hear of light and dark sides to a system.

Internal persecutor alters are a given. Alters that self-mutilate the body have been programmed to do it. Psychologists have been baffled at the hate that some alters have for other alters or for those other alter's body--which they don't perceive as their own body.

The longer the programming goes on the more established the self-persecuting alters become. When dealing with such alters, the support team must not be judgmental. These are simply hurting child alters doing what they have been programmed to do. They are simply trying to do their job right. Without reinforcing these alters dangerous behaviors, it is possible to give them some attention and friendship. They are not used to holding the body and will tire of holding it after a few minutes. Having them out regularly may diffuse some of their rage. The therapist should not scare them by threatening to get rid of them, or kill them, although occasionally they need to be restrained by a support person, for instance if they are trying to mutilate the victim with a knife. These persecutor alters can have their identity validated, they were just trying to help the system by doing the job that was expected by the programmers. The persecutor alters may often be the ones that took the pain for the "a" alters that function so well in life.

When the host alter acknowledges the existence of the persecutor alter, and the persecutor alter's pain & needs, it helps remove some of the animosity in their relationship. Alters can write each other letters. Because most systems are creative, they can use their creativity to think of some way to resolve the conflict, if they try. However, the answer that may occur to some readers, to internally lock up persecutor alters is not a good idea.

Someone in the alter system must be the light on the hill, that moves toward freedom. Generally that will be the front host alter that came originally came into therapy. It may not be. Sometimes the original "person" who came in for therapy, dissolves into a mass of different personalities, and the therapist has trouble knowing who now is the client. The answer is the entire system is, they just don't know it.

And who speaks for the system? For instance, one alter says for the therapist to quit working with the system and another says they want the therapist to work, but only the non-cooperative alters show up for the sessions? All of our old ways of looking at people are obsolete, and the support team will encounter difficulties that boggle their mind. One way to overcome some of this is to treat a system as a city. How did God treat the church of a city? How does one relate to a city of people? How does one get cooperation in a city.

Within an alter system, the change for health has to come family by family. One family of alters after another family must make the choice "I want to change direction. I don't want to be like my abuser. I don't want to conform to the programming." Many alters will not really know what is going on, they will only have a sense of it. They will sense, "Something is wrong here." That may be enough for them to make a decision for a change of direction.

Persecutor alters can learn not to act out. Alters can be given another script. Each alter can be shown that the system has gratitude for the part they played in the system's survival. Things that are helpful for alters are good reading, good friends, support groups, and learning from each other internally. Some alters can clearly see the good from the bad, some have very limited understanding.

The system can begin taking their power back. The alters can work as a team, and become co-conscious. Responsible alters can be given the care of other alters who need attention. It's somewhat like how a teacher may delegate some children to be leaders so that they can help the troubled children. Internal peer pressure can work for good too. And alters can pray for each other too. Light side alters can form prayer circles or prayer chains.

Even non-multiples have ego-states that can present problems, such as the part of you that wants to eat too many sweets. How is this overcome? By mental discipline. It will take some mental discipline for the victim to grow. **Alters need to change their thinking from "I can't to I can."** Get rid of "I can't."

Getting rid of fear is a big step in overcoming alter conflicts. This is just one more reason why safety for the system is so important.

Most competition for having the body by alters occurs during the following times:

a. when cult programming goes off, and part of the system is trying to go to a ritual or a drug run, and the light side alters are holding the body.

b. when something exciting or fun is happening and everyone wants a piece of the action.

c. when alters are in conflict over goals or in conflict about what the system is doing in therapy.

Originally, the alter switches were subconscious and carried out mainly by the handlers. After getting to know one's internal system better, the alters can begin to control their own switching. The alters need to build harmony. If they change the internal job description, or give an alter an external job, then that alter needs to be allowed to have that role. The alter can be asked internally, "What would you like to do?" and then give that alter a chance to develop that. Give everyone an important role. After a while of working together, the alters begin to get co-conscious. After alters are co-conscious, the conflicts will cease between them.

CORE ISSUES

WARNING: THIS PAGE IS NOT TO BE READ BY ANY VICTIMS OF MIND-CONTROL, NO IF'S, AND'S, OR BUTS. READING THIS MATERIAL MAY BE HIGHLY LETHAL --IT WILL TRIGGER POWERFUL SUICIDE PROGRAMS IN SOME VICTIMS OF MIND-CONTROL.

The core issues are issues that concern the basic survival of the mind. Therapists have blamed victims for not cooperating in integrating the core, when a fuller understanding of the dynamics of programming shows that the victim is only attempting to protect himself.

In 1960, J.D. Sutherland at the second Tavistock seminar on mother-infant interaction in London presented his work which was entitled "The concepts of imprinting and critical period from a psycho-analytic viewpoint." This was reprinted in a book *Determinants of Infant Behavior II*. Sutherland discovered that traumatic frustration experiences in a child's early development set up subsystems in a person, which continue to seek expression, and are relatively little influenced by subsequent experiences.

The formation of social relationships by an infant relates to the concept of imprinting. Researchers have not sorted out all the complex processes, but imprinting researchers feel confident that imprinting in humans has some parallels to precocial birds. They found that newborn babies less than a day old will follow a real face much more than a mannequin. This proved for instance that babies are programmed prior to birth to respond to human faces. There are obviously some built-in mechanisms to human thinking.

The human brain is actually 7 brains. The lower three brains are: one, the medulla; two, the pons; and three, the cerebellum. On top of the pons, is the fourth brain, the mid-brain. The mid-brain is the central brain linking the 3 higher and the 3 lower brains. It relays messages back and forth. It regulates the life force, and serves as a regulator to states of consciousness. Secretions in the fourth brain create the emotional construct of "me". If traumatized, such as during the splitting-the-core trauma, the mid-brain does not secrete the peptides or endorphines which relate to the self-sense that is attached to a sensory experience. In other words, when the core is split, the mid-brain ceases to secrete the peptides that emotionally connect its potential sense of self to the sensations of the body. The mid-brain is also the area that is imprinted with roles. Each one of the 7 brains that make up the entire structure called the human brain is capable of having feelings. This is one reason why we can have "mixed feelings" about one item.

What seems to occur during the splitting of the core (referred to as the Primal Dissociate Experience PDE), is that the mind decides that survival is dependent upon not identifying with what is happening. In a sense it decides that death to the self is a type of survival. The mind creates dissociated "ego states" (what Sutherland called "subsystems") to deal with these difficult situations that it refuses to accept into its memory as happening to itself. Deep level ISH (internal self-helpers--perhaps Guardian angels) have been successfully used to reintegrate the PDE held in that special part of the mind back into the mind.

WARNING: THIS PAGE IS NOT TO BE READ BY ANY VICTIMS OF MIND-CONTROL, NO IF'S, ANDS, OR BUTS. READING THIS MATERIAL MAY BE HIGHLY LETHAL --IT WILL TRIGGER POWERFUL SUICIDE PROGRAMS IN SOME VICTIMS OF MIND-CONTROL.

When the brain's senses try to record the PDE, the mind disconnects itself from the experience. Body memories remain of the experience, and dissociated memory fragments. The mind disassembles its concept of self. It decouples itself from existence and goes into hiding. The rest of the victim's life will be spent by the "core" retreating deeper into hiding. When the mind, decouples itself from the body and takes itself into hiding, it permits dissociated pieces of the mind to pick up the abuse. One of the positive pieces of the original splitting experience will be used to create a host(s) personality. This is the person that will front the system. (Shortly an entire explanation of all this will follow.)

The retreating "remnant of life", after it has let the self die and the mind be splintered is really only that part of the mid-brain which regulates the life-force and the soul. There is no alter that is the real core. ANY alter that claims to be the core, is a false front developed by the programmers. The real core is an essence--the soul, the deep part of the mind that remains alive when the central controls of the fourth brain completely decouples itself from identifying with life. In reality, the area of the brain that is normally imprinted by the events of life and grows up with a concept of self has decided to separate itself from external reality and goes into hiding. A variation of this is autism. In this case, the complete mind retreats from reality, rather than the soul.

Many therapists ignorantly set their primary goal with DID programmed multiples to be the integration of the core. They are ignoring the fundamental issue for the victim's mind. The fundamental issue is that the core's survival demanded separation from external reality, and the creation of separate dissociative states to contain the traumas being heaped upon the victim. The driving motivation at the deepest level of the mind is to preserve the safety of this elusive core. Traditional therapies have worked against helping victims, because these therapies attempt to expose the core to reality, which aggravates and strengthens deep resistance by the victim to therapy, because the decoupling from reality is the imprinted survival mechanism of the mind.

The Illuminati try to insure that the core never wants to rejoin the world by:

a. programming many alters to believe that they will go psychotic or kill themselves if the core is touched,

b. that trauma keeps the core distant, therefore, the greater the victim's ongoing abusive relationship with the cult, then the greater the "safety" of the core.

c. internal worlds are created with walls protected by demons and suicide programs to prevent alters from reintegrating or connecting with anything else such as the core.

d. internal conflicts are set up to keep the alters fighting and disconnected from each other. Alters which fear the abusers must somehow resolve their fear with alters who identify with and mimic their abusers. The mess that is created, sets up an environment that places the core in an impossible situation. If the sense-of-self were ever to return to rejoin reality, how would it ever resolve all these conflicts or live with such a mess in reality? The sense-of-self may subconsciously give its energy to part of the mind, but it is not doing so in a conscious manner, because it has detached itself from identifying with what is going on.

WARNING: THIS PAGE IS NOT TO BE READ BY ANY VICTIMS OF MIND-CONTROL, NO IF'S, ANDS, OR BUTS. READING THIS MATERIAL MAY BE HIGHLY LETHAL --IT WILL TRIGGER POWERFUL SUICIDE PROGRAMS IN SOME VICTIMS OF MIND-CONTROL.

The Illuminati perceive the core as that soul, that breathe of life that God breathed into Adam, to make him a living soul. This is not entirely off-base. The energy of an alter system comes from that 4th brain which is also that area of the brain that is involved with one's sense of self. The programmers perceive that the core's existence only remains in its ability to create parts of the mind to maintain its life. The core is like a soul--perhaps it is the soul of a person, and it creates alters to maintain its own integrity and safety. The Illuminati carry out a final ritual when a hierarchy person is ritually murdered where the successor sucks the dying person's last breath out in order to capture the soul.

Whatever the exact substance and nature of the core, whatever the detailed mechanics within the brain were when it dissociated itself from reality, the core still remains a very touchy issue for therapists. Therapists should approach alters that are core splits with great gentleness, honesty, love and kindness. Back door techniques should be used for talking through to a system of alters without attempts to go directly toward the "core". Attempts to go directly toward the core will most likely be frustrated and stopped by the victim's alter system, but the energy that is wasted in such a move is not healthy.

If a child victim were never to suffer trauma after the initial core split, the programmers discovered that at some point years down the line, the core will want to reconnect to reality.

Now that we have explored some of the basics concerning the core, it is time to discuss the deeper realities of what happens to the core during programming. This information has never seen the light of day. We are able to provide it, because sad-to-say, our system had a level of programming alters who programmed and helped with the tests that showed what we are about to reveal. Until recently, the world (with the exception of the programmers) was too ignorant to be able to understand what we will reveal. We trust that there are a small group of therapists that are now ready to utilize the deeper secrets of what happens to the core.

Remember, that the Vol. 2 book discussed the PDE, the Splitting of the Core trauma. This is actually a long series of traumas, that culminates in the mind deciding to split itself with dissociative barriers.

This original PDE trauma provides some parts of the mind that love their master and some parts that fear (fear as in raw terror) the master. These two themes--LOVE & FEAR-- are skillfully used by the programmers to build a protective shield around the core for the front part (host part) of the system. The front part is built from the first PDE and then it is left in relative "peace" so that it has enough stability to function in the real world. That doesn't mean the front has a life of ease, it just isn't subjected to what the deeper parts have to endure.

The deeper parts will be derived from the second major programming trauma of the system. But before we get into that, let's briefly touch on the LOVE/FEAR issues that protect the core. The love that the core has for its primary caretaker (refer back to *Vol. 2*, chptr. one, where it describes the excellent caretaking

**WARNING: THIS PAGE
IS NOT TO BE READ BY
ANY VICTIMS OF MIND-
CONTROL,
NO IF'S, ANDS, OR BUTS.
READING THIS MATERIAL
MAY BE HIGHLY LETHAL
--IT WILL TRIGGER
POWERFUL SUICIDE
PROGRAMS IN SOME
VICTIMS OF MIND-CONTROL.**

& love bonding) is powerful and pertains to parent-young imprinting learning. There is a susceptible period that is built in during those first two years, where the psychic organizer emerges. (Refer to Hess, Eckard H. *Imprinting, Early Experience & the Developmental Psychobiology of Attachment*, p. 340.) It has been clearly demonstrated by scientific research that the baby has an innate drive for love from a mother figure. This love is a primary need of the infant--without this love, some babies give up and die. This is not surprising, many people can realize this without the specific scientific proof. That primal need for love is exploited by the programmers. The parts of the mind holding this powerful primal love will split from the parts holding the raw terror of the PDE. When one tries to approach getting to the core from the host level, the alters holding the love of the master will protect the core. What has been discovered then is that the fear then protects that love. There are lots of silhouetted parts brought into this love-fear relationship of alters. This love-fear relationship has defeated the best therapists, because until the therapist can unravel such situation and these issues the mind will not let them get to the real core.

Because the basis for the original splitting was RAW TERROR on the part of the core, it goes into hiding. It is very difficult for the core to be accessed, because he/she will only appear if he/or she has absolute and great trust in who is calling it up. As far as we know, there has never been a genuine core accessed by anyone outside of the Illuminati/& other programming cults. The Illuminati must have a very caring Mother-of-Darkness establish a trust relationship with the core BEFORE the PDE. This tender loving Mother-of-Darkness then can be used to pull up the core for work. Because our system (your author Cisco) was noted for its tenderness, we often received the job of being the "Mother" for systems which were being programmed. That is why we can pass on so much of the real secrets of what the core is all about. Hypnotic access codes are given to the core, which work only if used by that individual which the core greatly trusts. Working with the core splits which have the love/fear dichotomy does not establish rapport with the core. The real core has retreated far into the mind--under the basement of the mind, and lays under the hell pit that is built by the Illuminati at the basement of the mind. (What this means is that some of what was written in Vol. 2 about the carousel was cover programming. Splits from the core are strategically placed in the system to make those who work very hard think they have gotten to the core. This is not just for the protection of the programming, but this safety feature also protects the very life of the programmed multiple. It is not a safe thing for a programmed multiple's core to be played with.)

When a tender mother pulls a core up, what will she find? The core comes up in its fear. Centuries of Illuminati programming experience have clearly demonstrated that the core is the only part of the mind that has a true awareness of itself, such as its age, and a reality of its own. However, because the core stays in the basement of mind, it does not experience life. When it is pulled up, it will look around, notice that it has aged, wonder where the years have gone, but it doesn't go into denial or into psychotic fantasy or some other defense.

WARNING: THIS PAGE IS NOT TO BE READ BY ANY VICTIMS OF MIND-CONTROL, NO IF'S, ANDS, OR BUTS. READING THIS MATERIAL MAY BE HIGHLY LETHAL --IT WILL TRIGGER POWERFUL SUICIDE PROGRAMS IN SOME VICTIMS OF MIND-CONTROL.

It will simply accept reality, and reject all the fantasy. The core will NOT remember its memories of abuse. It may have some issues regarding some things, but its thinking is healthy and true to itself. Again the core is the only part that is true to her or his self. The programmers do use the core for some types of programming, but not in the sense that they use alters.

The host (front) personality that lives in the day-to-day world will be strongly grounded in reality, but in a different way than the core. With the exceptions of the few host personalities that experience life day-to-day and the core, who can somehow access the truth when it awakes and comes to the front of the mind, MOST of the alters live at the age they were created at or have been hypnotically assigned. They do not experience live in a 3-dimension matter-space-time world. Life is 2-dimensional, without a concept of time. The Illuminati prefer they don't wear watches for this reason.

After lots of integration work, trust work, and memory work, it may be possible to access the core through some of its closer splits.

Before discussing the second major programming trauma to the core, it is extremely important to disclose a major secret that the Illuminati programmers came up against. In fact, due to their prideful beliefs that they were gods, it was a rather touchy sensitive subject to talk about when we worked with major programmers. In spite of it being a touchy subject, it was such a major subject, we did have some conversations concerning it. The programmers called it "THE ETERNAL LIGHT". It was also referred to as "the SOUL". Different programmers speculated about what this light was, a few thought it was the Guardian Angel that God assigned to each person, one thought it was the part of man that would face Almighty God on judgement day, and "bow its knee". (If it's hard for the reader to conceive that Illuminati programmers know Biblical verses such as "all knees will bow before God" and theological concepts, then read Aleister Crowley, who as a Satanist, knew Bible concepts and theology in detail. Also remember, some Christian ministers have a secondary vocation as Illuminati programmers.)

It can be understood why programmers (who of course were Illuminati masters & adepts) would call this LIGHT "the soul" because they were steeped in Greek philosophy. The concept of the immortality of the soul was an idea of the mystery religions of Babylon, and was elaborated upon by the Greek philosopher Plato. This greek philosophical idea of the word "soul" clouds the biblical meaning for the word. In the Hebrew scriptures the word "soul" is the Hebrew word "nephesh" and in the Greek, it is "psykhe". In the Word of God, Genesis 2:7 states, "And the LORD God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living being (nephesh)." What is significant here is that man was not given a soul (nephesh), but rather "became a living soul". The Greek scriptures also say in 1 COR 15:45, "The first man Adam BECAME a living soul (psycke)". It is clear from many other scriptures that soul (nephesh and psykhe--psykhai in plural form) meant the body and mind of a person. This nephesh can die. EZE 18:4b states, "The soul

WARNING: THIS PAGE IS NOT TO BE READ BY ANY VICTIMS OF MIND-CONTROL,
NO IF'S, ANDS, OR BUTS. READING THIS MATERIAL MAY BE HIGHLY LETHAL --IT WILL TRIGGER POWERFUL SUICIDE PROGRAMS IN SOME VICTIMS OF MIND-CONTROL.

(nephesh) who sins shall die."

However, though the soul (mind and body) dies, the spirit returns to God, who gave it. ECC 12:7, "Then the dust will return to the earth as it was, And the spirit will return to God who gave it." The Bible uses the Hebrew word ruach and the Greek word pneuma for our word "spirit." It is very clear in numerous scriptures that the spirit is a powerful active force which has intellect. It is a person. The Holy Spirit could be blasphemed, and lied to. In turn it taught, and spoke and comforted. If a spirit can speak, teach and comfort, what is it? In programming, we programmers came in contact with this spirit that God places in each person, and it caused us fits. Each person's God-given spirit was a powerful light that had intellect which attached itself to the core, but could be separated from the core.

When the core comes up, this attached light form (the God-given spirit) would come up with it. This God-given spirit had no memory of abuse, it simply had energy, intellect and a power to protect the core. The essence of this God-given spirit was impossible for pre-verbal children or young children to describe. It has been the object of scientific research. One thing that the Illuminati have long known about this God-given spirit--it never works, it never takes on any responsibilities, like the entire rest of the system will do. The rest of the system will be a system of dissociative pieces of the mind, and alters who often have some type of job. This isn't the case for the God-given spirit, or what the programmers called THE ETERNAL LIGHT. From experience it is also clear that the eternal light, although it wasn't the core, somehow was a reflection, a total reflection of the core. We knew these things as oath-bound Luciferian programmers, long before we ever contemplated getting to know the Christian God. The Spirit was an intelligent life-force, a preserver of life. When the major programmers got into big trouble and their child slave was going to die, go insane or was splintering uncontrollably, even though they disliked the ETERNAL LIGHT because it was more powerful than they were, they would call it up, and get it to assist in bringing healing, life, and integration to the victim. This God-given spirit was like God's own spirit, in that it gives its help to the good and bad alters, the just and the unjust alters. It is reminiscent of Christ's words, "Your Father in heaven...He makes His sun rise on the evil and on the good, and sends rain on the just and on the unjust." MT 5:45

The Eternal Light can integrate parts of the core or as far as that goes any alters that have split. It is so powerful that the Programmers know that if they pull it up and attach it to alters that they are torturing, that it will provide a protective covering so hard that they can't cause the mind to splinter. Another thing that centuries of programming experience has shown is that the eternal light does not know that it is connected to the core. The God-given spirit needs to be taught if it is know that it is connected to the core. The programmers of course do not teach this to it. The Illuminati have done lots of tests (and we observed some of these) where the core and its God-given spirit were allowed to spend positive time with a portion of alters. The core and its

**WARNING: THIS PAGE IS NOT TO BE READ BY ANY VICTIMS OF MIND-CONTROL,
NO IF'S, ANDS, OR BUTS.
READING THIS MATERIAL MAY BE HIGHLY LETHAL --IT WILL TRIGGER POWERFUL SUICIDE PROGRAMS IN SOME VICTIMS OF MIND-CONTROL.**

spirit would automatically integrate all these parts back together. Therapists spend hundreds of hours trying to get cooperation between alters, and yet the core and its spirit can integrate them in a flash if given a safe opportunity. Now you're beginning to see the power of a safe environment for the core. However, the top therapists (Dr.s of Psychiatry) are out on speaking circuit teaching that it doesn't matter if your client is safe, you can still accomplish good. As a victim would you like to cross the Pacific swimming or flying in a 747 jet? Or to make the analogy more accurate, which choice would you want if you couldn't even swim? When Fritz, our co-author worked 24 hours a day to provide our system a safe place, numerous therapists and deliverance ministries came out of the woodwork to publicly attack him. A few wise people are beginning to realize that safety of the victim IS THE NUMBER ONE ISSUE, AND THE BEGINNING ISSUE.

If the victim is left alone in safety and with trustworthy loving people, at some point the core and its God-given spirit could integrate everything back in an effortless manner. Certain people are beginning to realize that the main part of a treatment plan is safety. (Unfortunately, the safety issues are far more vast than therapists care to admit. This book and the *Vol. 2 Formula* book are laying the foundation down for how varied and technologically advanced their control is. An afternoon with a Christian minister is not going to provide the security for the mind to let down its protective mechanisms. What is happening when skilled Christian ministers access what they think is the core, is that they are getting at best core splits. Having core splits heal is very powerful. That means that foundational sections of programming are automatically ripped up. One major drawback that is preventing more success is that the core is not understood, and the issues of safety are not being understood and addressed.

When the God-given spirit joins itself to a group of alters, the Illuminati testing shows that it can take on a memory, bring the core along, and make that section the leader of the pack in the mind. In fact, knowledge of this is going to be used unfortunately for great evil, rather than for the good of humanity. Soon the Anti-Christ is to take power. At pre-arranged points in time, the hierarchy alters are to be given the core and the Eternal Light, and the rest of the minds of these slaves will be placed hypnotically under the hell-pit, where the cores are presently asleep. This means thousands of hierarchy Illuminati members will switch from their Christian host personalities, into people who day-to-day have very strong luciferian personalities which serve the Anti-Christ. Therapists, who have spent years in agonizing patient work using primitive often-damaging methods to help their programmed multiples, are going to see their work go down the drain literally overnight. A therapist, who has spent 10 years piddling around with stabilizing a few front alters, will find they no longer exist within the working part of the client's mind. Some of these therapists are even targeted to be killed. Some of these therapists are Illuminati multiples themselves, who will go back to continue helping with the large-scale operations of mind-control programming.

WARNING: THIS PAGE IS NOT TO BE READ BY ANY VICTIMS OF MIND-CONTROL,
NO IF'S, ANDS, OR BUTS. READING THIS MATERIAL MAY BE HIGHLY LETHAL --IT WILL TRIGGER POWERFUL SUICIDE PROGRAMS IN SOME VICTIMS OF MIND-CONTROL.

In order to deceive both the therapists and the victims themselves, the programmers carry out several well-designed, excellently executed deceptions. An early split of the mind is pulled up which will perceive itself as light. This part will be shamed and called "bad magic", and treated like it is the core. It will then be placed in a box and sent into the outer-space of the victim's mind. A few young watcher alters will see this, and believe they have spotted the core being placed in a box. This light will be allowed to come up to help the system when it is in trouble. Because it is not the real core, it can't protect other alters. When the alters in trouble see that they are not being helped, they feel betrayed by the core, and feel helpless. They have no idea how powerful the real core can really be. In fact some alters are programmed to believe that the core is responsible for their problems. Some of the alters walk around internally with a bad attitude toward the core. The programmers put the core to sleep with the sleeping beauty story.

Another early core split will be placed in the carousel, along with 3 demons ask to function as a false trinity, and many mirrors for entrapment. Other core splits will be placed as blackmail in special castles. These will often be called "the core" by the programmers in order to confuse the victim.

The second major core programming trauma takes place in a sensory deprivation tank under a controlled LSD trip. Readers can consult Chapter 3 of this *Deeper Insights* book, approx. page 28-32 for a description of how the sensory deprivation tank programming under LSD is carried out. The initial sensory deprivation trauma is done with the core and it shows no mercy upon the mind of the victim. The Illuminati want to have the victim go through the eight emotions and the five senses, in other words 13 categories of splitting. During the sensory deprivation experience they want the victim to go through love, fear, anger, confusion, pain, shame, despair, self-hate, and then the loss of each of the five senses (one by one) taste, hearing, pain, hot-cold, seeing, and finally a sense of being nothing. The mind of even the child victim is vast. As the lonely isolation and torture begins in the isolation tank, the mind finally reaches a point where it begins splitting and splitting. When the child is splitting due to fear, at some point the mind reaches exhaustion of this feeling, and begins entering into another response, perhaps anger. The mind will unravel in dissocation with the new emotion until again the mind switches and tries another response to its entrapment. The body is wide open for demonic forces to take advantage of the pained/drug state of the child's mind. The Illuminati work to demonize the child while it is suffering under the full impact of the sensory isolation tank. Gradually the child begins to die. As the mind under LSD begins to feel its molecules evaporating into nothingness, the child approaches death. The mind gives away the body. Then the spirit--the Eternal Light leaves the body. After years of experience, the Illuminati has scientifically figured out how long they can wait after what they call the "soul"--the God-given spirit leaves, before they hit the child with electroshock to revive its life. The core really believes it has died. (Chapter 10 of this book addresses the manipulation of near-death experiences by the Illuminati.) The Illuminati literally snatch the life of the child back into its body.

WARNING: THIS PAGE IS NOT TO BE READ BY ANY VICTIMS OF MIND-CONTROL, NO IF'S, ANDS, OR BUTS. READING THIS MATERIAL MAY BE HIGHLY LETHAL --IT WILL TRIGGER POWERFUL SUICIDE PROGRAMS IN SOME VICTIMS OF MIND-CONTROL.

Now the job comes to take the 13 different stages and to build alters from those different dissociative states. From the state where the core has given up identity with its body, no longer sees itself as human, and considers itself dead, the Illuminati will take these hundreds or thousands of dissociative pieces and program them to see themselves as butterflies. In the sensory deprivation tank they are like tiny flicks of light. But the hypnotic suggestion is given that they are butterflies. This is just one of many reasons why the term Monarch programming is appropriate. These parts of the mind will make up one of the most secret parts of an Illuminati system. We are now revealing this secret grid for the first time. The butterflies are placed into the first grid of alters near the core. This grid forms a net around the core. These butterflies are floaters, that encircle the core. This is the sixth grid, but in Illuminati programmer parlance the grid is called a "DIMENSION". These protective butterflies are dehumanized and hold the victim's final fear as the victim died. Only four strong splits from this time period of the tank trauma are not made into butterflies. They are made into four cornerstones (also called the "FOUR GATES TO HEAVEN", north, east, west, and south. These become the points of the compass upon which the system of alters will be structured. The four gates to heaven create a foundational pattern for an internal clock, a compass, and a seasonal/ritual clock.

Another set of alters that will come from the tank experience are the gems. The gems are discussed in Vol. 2. They will be placed in the first dimension, along with a carousel. From the gems, ribbons will be created that run to the internal computers. The ribbons will have to learn access codes and other codes to mediate between the gems and the computers on each of the levels (dimensions). Each of the six main dimensions (also called sections on the alter grids that the handler carries around), will have a mirror. Of course the programmer can create any configuration he wants, but the 13x13x13 cube is a very common Illuminati system. Other common configurations are a sphere, and a double pyramid. The Illuminati like to give a 3-D effect to their alter systems. The sequence of splitting alters from alters goes horizontally and vertically and downward. To chart out a genealogy of the time sequence on how alters arrived becomes a series of breaks in several directions. Needless to say, the programmers do chart all these breaks. They also keep a resevior of unused clean slate alters.

The programmers are unable to touch the God-given spirit. This Eternal Light remains unsplintered and powerful throughout the life of the victim. It is hidden along with the core to prevent integration of the victim's mind. While it is possible for the cult to bring the core up, it doesn't serve any purpose for them to injure the core after they have created a system. There will always be a part of the core they cannot reach unless they destroy the individual.

WARNING: THIS PAGE IS NOT TO BE READ BY ANY VICTIMS OF MIND-CONTROL, NO IF'S, ANDS, OR BUTS. READING THIS MATERIAL MAY BE HIGHLY LETHAL --IT WILL TRIGGER POWERFUL SUICIDE PROGRAMS IN SOME VICTIMS OF MIND-CONTROL.

Theories that the most cult obedient and mean alters are those farthest from the core are not based on reality. There is some partial correctness to the concept that those victims who have a better connection between their core and their alters heal better, but when the actual programming sequence and methodology is laid out for the reader as we have done in our books, hopefully the reader will realize that most of the time the core is sleeping (Sleeping Beauty) and thinks she is dead and waiting for her Prince to kiss her and bring her back to life. She is not lurking in the background cognizant of every conversation like some therapists have begun telling each other.

A sound strategy for working on the core issues, would be to get the system in a place of complete safety, and then work to stabilize the system of alters, and then begin doing memory work and building trust. When the mind is ready, then some core split alters can be healed as a potential gateway to lowering the fears of the core.

Some of the readers of this book will not have a Christian perspective. We encourage them to see the healing power of forgiveness, and love that a Christlike view offers to victims.

In the reality of the real world, all men have sinned and come short of the glory of God. The core was not evil--it was simply a helpless innocent victim of overwhelming abuse. Of anybody who can understand pain, it is the Son of God (Emmanuel) who suffered innocently like the core did. As the ministers preach, we are all guilty of the death of Christ. This means that terms like "man of God", "perpetrator" and "victim" begin to lose much meaning as we approach the glorious brilliant light of Christ. Without forgiveness, we are all sinners worthy of death. But we are also the apple of God's eye. There is nothing that can stand in the way of His forgiving love if we want it in our lives. One of the biggest proofs of that redeeming love of God Almighty, has been carefully hidden by the programmers--it is that Eternal Light, that God-given spirit that the programmers have never conquered.

DELIVERANCE, understanding

Today, we live in a dark age. We trust that you will find some exciting liberating ideas within this article. Christ wondered if he would find any faith left when he returned. The answers we will provide you in this article are not something you will find in the establishment churches, but are fresh revelations from the throne of God.

Fritz & I have worked together on this article, and this article will reflect what we have been taught by the Holy Spirit. As anyone, who has read about total mind-control, can realize, victims of total mind-control are in the greatest need for deliverance that one could imagine. Why don't victims just choose health? Why don't victims simply walk out and grab their freedom? The answer goes back to understanding love and free-will.

God gave free-will to that part of His creation that can know good & evil, especially humankind. That was His sovereign choice, and it was an action based on the nature of God which is love. Love does not seek its own, but seeks to build others up. The Kingdom of God has as its foundation love. We are called to speak truth in love.

Satan's Kingdom is built upon fear. How many churches operate on the foundation of fear? Sadly too many. Satan constructs all his governments, whether judicial, political or religious on a foundation of fear. He then takes that foundation of fear, and applies it in such a way as to get fear's maximum leverage power to motivate people. While applying trauma along with drugs and hypnosis to people's lives, Satan gets the maximum leverage out of their fear. He uses the greatest power he can get out of fear to harden the points where people have free choice. Imagine a piece of farm machinery that has been allowed to rust and harden. The joints, the hinges no longer have freedom of movement. They are rusted into one position. The joints have lost their freedom of choice. Now the farmer comes along and applies a lubricant to clean and loosen those frozen joints. The deliverance minister is finding the juncture of choice and he is pouring kindness upon that frozen juncture, and that oil of kindness lubricates it free. Now the person has freedom of choice. A spirit is love applied to the frozen hardened joints of life is a deliverance ministry.

Sometimes unfortunately, the rust is so hard that the person must be broken, because the place where the free-will, the place where their options were stolen can not be restored.

Satan knows that people would naturally choose paradise, would naturally choose love & good things. First, God created man in His own image, and we still have a built in desire to do saintly things, although our perfect nature has been corrupted. Satan must trick, and tweak, and loop and snake our free will, to the point that we will give up our freedom, that we will give up our free will, and that we will agree to his life of bondage. That is what Fritz's half of the book was about. In Fritz's half, he showed how Satan destroys that free will, how he shifts and snakes, he deceives, he manipulates and bends, and muddies the waters until a person doesn't know where he is, nor what his choices are. After all the horrendous programming, the victim "willingly" wants to give up their free will, but at that time the alters do not even realize what they are giving up nor what is going on.

God continues to gently call people to Him. It is a wooing. A man is wooed by a pretty girl, not compelled. God's beauty compellingly woos us. However, some churches because they are not on the right foundations, see something wrong with someone and they come over and lay their hands on them and knock 'em down. The idea of coming up to people and attacking their demons is spiritual rape. The demons do have to obey certain spiritual laws, but "raping" people was not Christ's method of deliverance.

Let's look at the way Christ dealt with people and demonic problems.

- The mother of Zebedee's son comes to him, and he says, **"What do you wish?"** (MT 20:21)
- The multitudes come to him, and Christ says, **"What do you want Me to do for you?"** (MT 20:32)
- James & John come to Christ, and he says, **"What do you want Me to do for you?"** MK 10:36
- A blind man on the road to Jerico comes to Christ, and Christ asks, **"What do you want Me to do for you?"** MK 10:51, LK 18:41
- Two of John's disciples approach Jesus, and Christ asks, **"What do you seek?"** JN 1:38
- At the marriage supper, a woman asks a favor & Christ asks, **"Woman, what does your concern have to do with me?"** (JN 2:4)

Christ told his disciples that whatever they asked in faith, that is what their heavenly Father would give them. (MK 11:24) Christ is very similar to the Father, he waited until people asked and explained what they wanted. The entire course or tenor of Christ's life was a savior who waited until a person's free will was ready for a deliverance. Christ wooed people to God. There is no wooing people to God, when demons are forcibly eradicated without a person's consent..

Does that mean that there is no place for aggressive deliverance? If we wait for some people to ask for freedom, they may never ask. With victims of mind-control, the controlling demons are sealed over and hidden quite deeply and Lucifer allows other demons to protect him in the system. Jesus went in and cleansed the temple of the money changers. Here was a situation where God's temple was being desecrated. Most people are not aware of how the money changers were desecrating God's temple, so allow us to explain this. The nation of Israel was to be the light of earth through which God poured His blessings out on mankind. The nation of Israel was to bless the world. Instead, the religious spirits lorded over the nation. The Israelites scorned everyone else (the Gentiles) as unclean. The temple's outer court was where the gentiles were to be ministered to & were to come to God. Instead the Jews gave it over to a Spirit of Mammon. Money changers were blocking the purpose of that area of the Temple, which was meant to be the salvation of the unclean, not the enrichment of the self-righteous. Notice the religious judging spirit in the Temple rulers, for soon afterwards they were judging Jesus for spending time with children in the Temple. Jesus was hoping they would learn a lesson, he said, "Yes. And have you never read what is written in the Psalms, 'Out of the mouth of babes and little ones, thou hast made thy praise perfect?" There is a place in God's hearts for child alters & baby alters.

And this then leads us to one of the best illustrations of deliverance in the Word of God. Jesus told the story of a man on the lonely road to Jerico. He had been attacked by a gang of robbers and left in the ditch for dead. Two religious men came by and judged him as unclean. The judging spirits that were in their hearts convinced these men of the lie that you get better by avoiding the unclean, rather than ministering to the unclean. (We have seen our share of ministers who have hated to see people working with programmed multiples. Fritz lost most of his Christians friends in order to work with us. Some of them got angry that someone would want to help someone like us.) But there was a Samaritan that came along. Now remember, the Samaritan was considered unclean and a dog by the men with the religious judging spirits. The religious judging spirit doesn't want to enter into a real walk with God, and it will do all it can to prevent others. But this Samaritan who was considered unclean by the religious, comes and pulls the man out of the pit, and dresses his wounds, which means squeezing out the dross. He gives the man food and water to promote life. He pours in all this stuff into the man's wounds. Then he binds the wounds so that the skin will form a protection. He took what had carried him through life (his own donkey or horse) and took him to a place of safety and protection. But the Samaritan didn't consider his deliverance over. He wanted to get the man to the end point. So he gave the inn keeper money, and told the inn keeper to take care of him, and if he ran up a bill, the Samaritan would take care of it on a return trip. THIS was a real deliverance ministry. This was a real deliverance.

The religious heap the burdens of the cross or many crosses onto other people. The real deliverance ministries are like the "religiously unclean" Samaritan. When the religious leaders of Jesus' day came to him and asked him on what authority he did his good works, Jesus told them a story. "But what do you think? A man had two sons, and he came to the first and said, 'Son, go, work today in my vineyard.' He answered and said, 'I will not,' but afterward he regretted it and went. 'Then he came to the second and said likewise. And he answered and said, 'I go, sir,' but he did not go. Which of the two did the will of his father?" They said to Him, "The first." Jesus said to them, "Assuredly, I say to you that tax collectors and harlots enter the kingdom of God before you." Today, we have a entire class of professional ministers (master pastors) who are ministered to by their congregations. They consider the idea of stopping to bandage up the unclean to be repulsive.

The broken souls of the programmed multiples are those who Christ came to deliver. He came to set the captives free. The deliverance ministry will visit those who are in the prisons created by mind-control programming, they will give food and water to those in these "prisons" and liberate them. Deliverance is love in action. The oil and wine that the Samaritan put on the man's wounds are symbolic of the power & authority of God that we minister to people. They are also symbolic of the grace and truth. Another parallel meaning to the oil & wine is the anointing and the new life that are given to those that the world has left for dead in the gutter.

Deliverance is a restoration. The goal of the restoration is new life, the ultimate goal of deliverance is the ultimate new life in Christ. The new life in Christ is when Christ is on the throne in a person's life. That is a distant goal for some programmed multiples. However, we must not elevate the process above the goal. In deliverance ministries today, many of them have elevated the process above the goal. We must keep the authority of Christ as the number one issue, and keep beholding him as an example to us.

As the correct foundation is built, a godly structure based upon the His five attributes comes into being. (See the article on "Protection, Spiritual") then the lower level demons can't handle the heat given off by the light of truth and they rise to the surface as dross and can be dealt with. The deeper big daddy demons are going to take a special deliverance similar to Christ's cleansing of the temple. When the Holy Spirit has a claim on someone's life, then a Temple cleansing may be in store. We must insure to lose good spirits to replace evil ones.

The Children of Light do not negotiate with darkness. Darkness does not want to negotiate with light anyway. The Child of God walks in peace, because he is secure in who his Father is. This does not mean that he tempts God by bungy jumping every situation. It means that he doesn't walk in fear, but that he takes with him the real keys to the Kingdom of God which are light, life and love. Love, light and life in their fullest meanings will open doors to riches that the slave could never dream of.

Deliverance is not a short term work. For a programmed multiple it will be a life of healing. When God continues to build his structure in you (see page 365), replacing the satanic structure, God will begin resting more of His glory within His structure. God's glory will expose and help cleanse the Temple. It will make the victim want to work hard to keep the Temple clean. Some people think that God simply wants to put His anointing onto people. He is trying to build His structure within His willing children. After that structure (His nature and character is built) then the anointing has a place to rest.

Prayer, which is based upon the five elements of God's structure, is like an offensive lance. The armor of God listed in Ephesians 6 includes 6 items. It does not mention anything that is clearly offensive. Prayer is offensive and aggressive in nature. It is seeking that which we do not have. Prayer can deliver a wound into the enemy through which supernatural love can be poured in to melt the hard spots that Satan has created.

One of the five elements of God's structure is life, which means growth. The healing victim if they are alive must keep growing, because that is the nature of life. The Word says that God's Kingdom will always increase. We go from glory to glory. We grow up and grow up and grow up. If we stop growing, we can rest in God, but if we are not resting in Him or growing, then we are in a death process. We are to occupy until the Lord comes. While we occupy the land, God comes and builds His structures within us.

What gives life to the victim of mind-control? There are various approaches to demons. Some say that they are only psychological illusions, they pass by on the road to Jerico. Some say that although demons exist, they are rare, so it is not likely that the victim has a serious problem. They pass by too on the road to Jerico. Others pass by and say, "I'll pray for you." Others shout the name of Jesus and pass on. Others use their psychic abilities to notice from a distance what the demons are. In other words, they identify the problem, but pass by expecting that a few words will bind up the half-dead man. The other approaches are various ideas on how to help the man in the ditch. What we have been trying to do, is give people an idea on how half-dead people can be mended. This is somewhat of a spiritual first-aid class. There will be situations that people will need our help in deliverance. They simply can't mend their own wounds, nor even see them to clean them.

Deliverance prayers and supplications can be made that God would enlighten the victim, that God's angels would provide protection, and that evil spirits would be contained or kept away. Because demons are in ranks and in hierarchal structures, it makes sense to try to go to the top to do business. The ranking demon may be asked on what spiritual grounds he has a right to be present. The legal right for that demon can be confessed and removed. Long story made short, demons must submit to the authority of Jesus Christ of Nazareth and His blood. If the deliverance minister walks in that authority, he can command that demon to leave.

The response by demons when commanded to leave is varied. They will play many tricks to try and stay or to try and protect their leaders. Followup is important and the goal is a complete cleansing. If you are going toward the rest room, to take two steps in that direction is just not going to do the job. Go all the way. Keep praying and commanding and confessing. Having a prayer group in support helps. With victims of mind-control we are dealing with big daddy demons that the normal person has not had to deal with. The Illuminati programmed multiples are the pride of Satan. They don't surrender easily.

DENIAL, identifying and dealing with defense mechanisms

Part of the reason that the Monarch trauma-based mind-control's programming is successful is because the mind will naturally defend itself against threatening ideas. This defense is usually on a subconscious level--that is, people often do not even realize that the mind is putting up defenses. This is because the human mind is SO GOOD at defending itself. If our minds were to allow us to realize our minds defend themselves from something--then that would in itself indicate that what is being denied was real--so even the denial is denied!

Denial is a natural part of the mind's abilities. However, denial can often prevent us from moving forward and facing the issues we actually need to face. There are several forms of denial and we need to identify and recognize these forms in order to identify and recognize these forms in ourselves.

I will now list some of the kinds (forms) of denial that a person can have.

◘ SIMPLE DENIAL: Pretending that something does not exist when it really does, for instance ignoring & discounting physical symptoms that may indicate the presence of problems. (For instance, the host personality of a programmed multiple will destroy evidence of the existence of any other alter.)

◘ MINIMIZING: Being willing to acknowledge a problem, but unwilling to see its severity. (For instance, the front alters will acknowledge there was some past abuse, but they will minimize the extent of the abuse, and they will not acknowledge that the abuse is ongoing.)

◘ BLAMING: putting the blame on someone else for causing the problem; the behavior is not denied, but its cause is someone else's fault. (Examples, are blaming one's parents for your adult behavior, blaming one's husband or wife for one's overeating. In terms of programming, an example would be that some alters perceive that other alters are the cause of their problems, but that they are just fine.)

◘ EXCUSING: Offering excuses, alibis, justifications and other explanations for our own or other's behavior. For instance, calling the boss for a friend and telling the boss the person is sick when they are really drunk. (This is a built in mechanism of the mind-control. For instance, an assassination alter will be told that the target they killed deserved to die.)

◘ GENERALIZING: Dealing with problems on a general level, but avoiding personal and emotional awareness of the situation or conditions. Example is when we might sympathize with a friend's "flu" problems when the real problem is a drug problem. (Some alters tell the therapist, "I'm not in therapy, the other alter is in therapy." The problem of mind-control is not being addressed as mind-control, the real issue is being disavowalled. Some therapists contribute to this because they don't understand the dynamics of mind-control, and they mistakingly think that their client is the host alter. They are failing to see the bigger picture.)

◘ DODGING: Changing the subject to avoid threatening topics, this includes being adept at small talk, never getting to real issues. (Alters love to talk about non-threatening issues with their therapists, a great deal of busy work can take place without much progress.)

◘ ATTACKING: Becoming angry and irritable when reference is made to the existing condition, thus avoiding the issue. This includes being unwilling to share one's feelings.

ALL OF US NEED TO SCRUTINIZE OURSELVES--WHAT TYPES OF DENIAL TO WE PRACTICE TO PROTECT OURSELVES FROM WHAT IS PERCEIVED AS PAINFUL??

Children and even adults will perceive certain new foods as dangerous and painful. They will do anything and make any excuse not to eat what they don't want to. At times there are legitimate concerns, but in general what is perceived as threatening is not. If the child ate his broccoli or his peas he would in fact be getting better nutrition. Denial seems to protect us--but often it protects us from what we really need to deal with.

DREAM WORK, understanding

We believe that this section may present the reader with the best look into programmed MPD (DID) and dreams that has been published. This Dream Work section will be divided up into the following subtopics:

- Part A. The Meaning of Dreams
- Part B. Dream Telepathy & MPD
- Part C. A Listing of Research into MPD (DID) & Dreams
- Part D. Important Findings of MPD (DID) Dream Research
- Part E. Our suggestions concerning MPD Dream Work
- Part F. Standard Illuminati Programming concerning dreams & memories

Part A. The Meaning of Dreams

Everyone dreams, and many people are fascinated in dreams, the difficult part is what do individual dreams mean?

In a biblical study that our co-author Fritz made of the entire Word of God to determine how God communicates with mankind, he found that in an overwhelming percentage of cases, Almighty God used dreams to communicate to mankind. Joseph and Daniel got recognition by interpreting dreams (called oneicromancy) correctly. Joseph interpreted the Pharaoh's dream about seven years of plenty and seven years of famine. On a stone tablet in front of the Great Sphinx, another Pharaoh, Thutmes IV, records a dream he received that his reign would be long and fruitful. This was one of what the ancient Egyptians called "divine dreams from the gods".

On the flip side of things, the rational thinkers of the 18th century claimed that dreams were only the result of indigestion or cold drafts, and were meaningless.

Obviously, not all dreams are a message from God, nor are they all simply the result of poor indigestion of pizza, or an open window at night.

The priesthoods of the ancient mystery religions began research into dreams and began using them in various capacities. In the healing temple of Æsclepius, the priesthood would place sick people on a couch in the temple, and would instruct them that a god would give them in a dream the remedy for their illness. The suggestion that the dreamer would learn of his health problem in his dream often worked. Modern researchers would not blame any particular god for this being successful, they would interpret it as the unconscious mind releasing information about the body that wouldn't normally surface in the waking conscious mind. This ancient practice is similar to modern researchers who have had great success in placing hypnotic commands into people (where the subjects were told not to remember the command) to dream about particular things, with the result that then the researchers have observed that the subjects do indeed create dreams about the suggested subject matter. The resulting dreams are about the suggested matter according to the subject's mind's own tastes.

It's been documented that people who have suffered traumas, such as refugees, soldiers, and victims of SRA have nightmares that are a direct result of their traumas. Some therapists do dream work with refugees, post-traumatic stress disorder and DID clients. When multiples get memories that surface as dreams, these dreams repeat themselves and they leave the victim with profound feelings, often the strong sense of depersonalization. Several therapists/researchers (see Cushway & Sewell, 1992 and others) have discovered that nightmares can be used as a key indicator of PTSD (which is a problem that DID victims face.) (Non-multiples, of course, also at times experience auto-biographical dreams.)

One dream researcher (Wunder, 1993)

discovered that siblings of disabled children had many common themes in their dreams, including the desire to be a type of "savior", dreams of guilt that they were normal, the idea that something or someone (such as a fairy godmother) would change things, and sorrow about their siblings disability. Programmed multiples are also going to have dreams surface that relate to inner concerns.

Yes, the imagery of our nightmares and dreams do have relevant information about our deep concerns. The high frequency of nightmares has been directly shown to be linked to unpleasant life experiences, especially recent ones. Common sense would teach us many of these things, but it helps that people have validated these in studies, so that some of these things go beyond the realm of opinion.

Part B. Dream Telepathy & MPD

Psychiatric journals have been publishing for several years documented, authentic, scientific, controlled experiments where telepathic messages have been sent to and received by people in the dream state. On the one hand, while most people believe these kinds of things happen, they will also generally, when asked if such things happen, say that they do not believe they happen. This is because there is a strong scientific-cultural bias against the fact of telepathic messages occurring in the dream state. Common scientific awareness hasn't caught up to both common sense and specific research into telepathic dreams. The natural response designed to protect those with "politically correct views" is to ask, "How does one distinguish between a telepathic dream and a lucky coincidence considering the numbers of dreams sent?" "At what point does one realize that a dream is not mere coincidence?" These are legitimate questions, and there has been legitimate research which has legitimately answered them.

The original scientific work in this area was done by the British Society for Psychical Research, who did most of their work with the elite British aristocracy beginning in the 1880's. Their initial findings were written up in *Phantasms of the Living.* Since then, a great deal more research has been completed.

The two types of telepathic dreams that are quite frequently experienced are death messages and in-trouble messages. Some of the documented cases of telepathic messages between total strangers are absolutely amazing. While the public is still debating the existence of such already scientifically proven phenomena, the Illuminati have been constructing telepathic and astral projection capabilities into their hierarchy slaves. Whether the therapist is at a place to admit the existence of these phenomena or not, they will have to face the fact that deeper hierarchy alters believe they have these capabilities, & they will resist treatment and resist the success of therapy because they believe they are still participating fully with the Illuminati cult during sleeping hours. Nor will the therapist make significant progress by trying to debunk these capabilities, when these alters have personal experiences of having learned and travelled to rituals on the astral plane. A beginning point for therapists to learn about Dream Telepathy would be the book *Dream Telepathy* by Montague Ullman, M.D., Stanley Krippner, Ph.D. and Alan Vaughan.

Part C. A Listing of Research into MPD (DID) & Dreams

Because the potential benefits through dream therapy are great and still to be discovered, this section is covering the topic in greater depth than some of the other topics.

For those who want to check the professional literature concerning dreams and their relationship with MPD (DID) we provide the following list:

Franklin, J. (1990). "Dreamlike thought and dream mode processes in the formation of personalities in MPD." *Dissociation*, 3(2), pp. 70-80

Gabel, S. (1989) "Dreams as a possible reflection of a dissociated self-monitoring system." *Journal of Nervous and Mental Disease*, 177, pp. 560-568.

Gabel, S. (1990). "Dreams and dissociation theory: Speculations on beneficial aspects of their linkage." *Dissociation*, 3(1), pp. 38-47

Leviton, H.L. (1967) "Depersonalization and the dream." *Psychoanalytic Quarterly*, 36, pp. 157-171.

Marmer, S.S. (1980) "The dream in dissociative states." In J.M. Natterson (ed.), *The dream in clinical practice* (pp. 163-175). NY: Jason Aronson.

Myers, W.A. (1976). "Imaginary companions, fantasy twins, mirror dreams and depersonalization." *Psychoanalytic Quarterly*, 45, pp 503-524.

Peterson, E., Gooch, N.L., & Freeman, L. *Nightmare*. NY: Richardson & Steirman, 1987.

Sidis, B. (1918) "A Clinical study of a dream personality." *Journal of Abnormal Psychology*, 13, pp 137-157.

Ullman, M. (1989). "Commentary: Dreams as a possible reflection of a dissociated self-monitoring system." *Journal of Nervous and Mental Disease*, 177, pp. 569-571.

Part D. Important Findings of MPD (DID) Dream Research

One study (Hartman, 1984) showed that people who normally have recurrent nightmares have more permeable mental boundaries between fantasy and reality, and are confused in their self-image. This principle would certainly apply to people with DID. Cernovsky (1988) did research into the dreams of those who suffer from Post-Traumatic Stress syndrome. And Jeans (1976), Gabel (1989, 1990), Marmer (1980), and Salley (1988) did research into dreams and therapy of MPD clients.

Worthy of comment here, is that Gabel was exploring the dreams of DID clients as repressed memories. Not only does this make common sense, but as an Illuminati programmer, our alters who were programmers were very aware that memories can surface as dreams. We were taught to make sure that the victim's mind was properly prepared so that it would not allow trauma and memory to surface in dreams. We will discuss indepth the mind-control programming in this area later in this article.

Another therapist/researcher who did a great deal of work with dreams to help DID (MPD) clients was S.S. Marmer. He was able to help alters understand how their systems were built by using dream therapy, and was able to use dream content to help break down the dissociation. He believed that each alter is able to create its own dreams separately from other alters.

Dr. Frank Putnam found that he was able to get valuable information from the dreams of his multiples that he couldn't get from hypnosis and hypnosis-with-the-affect-bridge. Putnam discovered that the repressed memories surfacing as dreams were so traumatic that his clients were dissociating the dreams. This author (Cisco), as a recovering multiple, has personally experienced this. Also we have discovered that fragments of the dissociated dream may linger, and these fragments may be helpful to go back and recover more of the memory. We also discovered that it is helpful to have a support person record and relate what the system is screaming during sleep, or saying during their sleep so that the memory is not lost.

Putnam states, "When listening to this [MPD dream] material, I treat it as a dissociative experience similar to, for example, an out-of-body experience. The details and setting of these repetitive traumatic nightmares seem to be more clearly based on actual settings than are most dreamscapes and can often be used to determine what age the person was and where he or she was when the trauma occurred. One can search the personality system for alters who were created during this time period in the patient's life. The postdream residual effects are also important and can be used as a starting point for affect bridge work. MPD patients seem to be more willing to share and work with dream material than with other forms of memory for trauma." (*Diagnosis & Treatment of Multiple Personality Disorder*, p. 202)

Oaklander, who used work with dreams to assist therapy, wrote, "In general, dreams serve a variety of functions for children. They may be an expression of anxiety--things that worry them. **They may express feelings that children feel unable to express in real life. [bold added]** They may depict wishes, wants, needs, fantasies, questions and curiosities, attitudes. The dream can be an indication of a general stance or feeling about life. It may be a way of working through feelings and experiences - situations that children are unable to deal with directly and openly." (1969, p. 150)

Therapists have been using dreamwork (dreams) as a source of information that helps them to understand how the victim is processing horrible experiences, problem-solving, and adjusting to changing personal and social circumstances in life. An example of how dreams relate to these things, is Zaya's study in 1988 that showed that expectant fathers went through three stages of dream content in anticipation of their new child. Here was a good example of the unconscious preoccupation of fathers toward the new child expressing itself symbolically in their dreamscapes.

Part E. Our suggestions concerning MPD Dream Work

The therapist is going to have to differentiate between symbolic meanings (for example a dream image of a "broken egg in a nest" which in one case represented a situation of family violence), and actual memories coming to the surface. The therapist is in a position of helping the victim move from making "no sense" of a dream to a place that it "makes sense". The type of questions that may be helpful would include, "how did you feel when...? or, "how do you feel now about...?, or "what color was...?" or, "have you considered how such-and-such might relate to such-and-such in your daytime life?" The therapist is facilitating the victim in discovering possible avenues of enquiry. For instance, in a dream having a baby in it, the victim might be asked, "What do babies mean to you?" Although this type of exploration may seem slow, when done by a skilled therapist some valuable work can occur.

It may also be possible to influence victims to become more lucid dreamers. Lucid dreaming is when a person is conscious that they are dreaming & asleep, while still in the REM sleep state. Unfortunately, the current vocabulary of words are unsuitably very primitive for discussing different altered states of consciousness & unconscious mental activity. "Awake", "asleep" & "dream" are very crude terms to describe the various states that the mind can place itself in.

A variety of techniques in training the mind while it is awake, have proven to result in changes in the remembrance and perception of dreams. While these are too extensive to try to cover here, there might be some possibilities to explore in this area for helping DID.

A mother while asleep will still have a mind that is scanning her external environment. She may sleep through her husband coming home from work, but wake up at the slightest noise from her baby. This type of behavior shows that the dreamer is still scanning his or her external environment. Most people do not have well-trained minds when it comes to states of consciousness.

Swami Rama, an expert in putting his body into different trance states, had worked with his various states of mind so well, that even during clinical studies while Swami Rama was in deepest sleep states (where people are "dead to the world"), he was still aware of everything going on in the room.

Most multiples, because their mind is so traumatized and ever-vigilant, will never completely go to sleep, but will have an external alter awake in trance while the other alters go into a trance-sleep. The example of Billy Graham, a programmed multiple, who only sleeps in a zombie-trance state with his eyes open, was reported in the *Vol. 2 Formula* book. Each time a slave goes to sleep, internal alters bring trauma memories to the sleeping alters as dreams, and condition the slave to fear sleep.

Dreams may indicate that the part that holds a particular memory is ready to work on the memory that came up in the dream.

REM sleep, the place where most dream occurs, is the most similar type of sleep in brain wave patterns to the waking brain. However, dreams that are carried out in the non-REM sleep phases have been discovered to be closer to reality than REM sleep dreams. This applies to everyone.

Because the dreamer is still in contact with his environment, (granted that this contact is different than being awake), the dreamer can have his or her dream influenced by externals and internals. Gas on the stomach may be interpreted as a nightmare, internal bladder trouble may be dreamed about as a trip to the restroom, an alarm clock may be dreamed about as a church bell, the smell of smoke may cause one to dream of a building exploding, and the smell of cologne may cause a dream of a perfume factory, etc. This is why listeners can identify with the joke about the dreamer who dreams he ate a giant marshmallow and wakes up missing his pillow.

Many dreamers have the ability to dream about things that are suggested to them, such as in a hypnotic suggestion, before bed time. Victims of mind control can, if they want, via self-hypnotic statements suggest to themselves that they would like every dream that night to be about a particular theme. The mind will decide what it has that matches during their sleep that night the suggested theme, so this method is not going to contaminate the mind, it is simply telling the mind what mental files or associated mental files to allow to drift up from deep in the mind into the dream state. A support team member can repeat personal names during REM sleep, and this may trigger the mind to bring up some mental files that relate to that name. Again, because the mind is not in a conscious logical state, the relationship between the file and the name said may not be the typical type of relationship experienced during waking hours. For example, the name "Stan" said aloud to the dreamer might evoke a dream about stamps.

Another possible method to elicit dream material for work is to trigger the system. The alter system can be triggered via movies or by going to particular settings where they were traumatized. The movies that trigger certain auto-biographical dreams may trigger the dreams in a way that only appear to have remote connections, but at the deeper levels of the mind are connected in some way by the mind. In other words, triggering by watching negatively-charged movies may be helpful to therapy, but the memory & feelings which are pulled to the surface (evoked) may be completely unexpected.

Part F. Standard Illuminati Programming concerning dreams & memories

The programmers put into place a system of alters whose function is to control memories. These alters are created from the purely logic side of the brain, and have been logically programmed, and tend to be perfectionists in their work. They have been programmed to see themselves as unicorns, pegasi (winged horses), and horses. We have touched on these horse alters in our *Illustrated Guidebook* and the *Vol. 2* book, for instance, the *Vol. 2* book reports that JER 37:3 is used to put in the programming that if a certain boundary is crossed, the horses are activated to protect the system. The horses work at night when an alter system goes to bed. They dump their memories into the dream state for various purposes.

The base imagery to create the unicorns, Pegasi & horses is laid in with the film Fantasia (see Chapter 5). Later when the specific approx. 4-year-old alters are given their scripts, they choose alters who are heartless and purely logic to tell a script like the following one. A typical script for the horse alters during programming would be as follows:

"Pegasi are handsome winged horses who graze in the treetops and have their home in the gourd. The gourd is an alternate world where black pearls store memories. Because the horses are magical they can fit their big selves into a tiny gourd. They are black and their eyes glow faintly. They are led by a stallion Trojan, who is also known as the Dark Horse, and who commands all the spirits who lack bodies. He rules the kingdom of dreams. It is the job of the night mares to carry the dreams that are made in the gourd to all the sleepers of the outside world who need them. The reason that the night mares give dreams to people is so they know what they have done that is bad. Night mares have no feelings. Those who gain feelings are soon no good for their work. Souls with feelings are not able to be tough like the night mares must be. A night mare must be careful to frighten with the fewest possible images so that the dreamer will not think the dreams to be a common everyday thing. If they have trouble doing their jobs, if they get bored, then the night mares can let their little colts take over their jobs. Night mares can not speak out loud, but can make dreams of a nonfrightening nature to those who are awake, and to those who say what the night mare wishes to talk about. They only come when people are asleep. They can go through walls and solid things under the cover of darkness.

The moon & the horses go together. Night mares must flee from the sun. They only are safe travelling at night. Each night mares' hoofprint is a the spot one sees on the moon. Those spots on the moon were named after each mare, such as Mare Imbrium, & Mare Crisis & Mare Frigoris.

It is very bad to be seen by anyone when a mare delivers her dreams. The Mare Imbrium had to leap through a wall, and to become invisible. She had almost been caught. She must go home before the dawn comes. When she gets home she can relax all day until night comes again. Trojan reports to Mr. Moon & Mr. Green. When the messenger mare galloped up to Mare Imbrium she told her to report immediately to Trojan, who is a handsome, midnight black mare with enormous power. He is the smartest of horses. He rules the Powers of the Night. He was very impressive when the mare met him, & he told her how to do her job better. The difference between night mares and day mares is that night mares have no emotions & days mares do. The day mares have no bodies. Day mares have to work with shadows, & shadows are very strict that the sun shines so that the shadow can work. Day horses project dream visions to people, but these day dreams are not as powerful as the night dreams."

The programmers give such alters names like Abaddon, Dark Horse, Mare Imbrium, Mare Nectaris, Night Mare, Night Stallion, Pegasus and Trojan and other appropriate names for horses. These alters must report to the overseers, not the internal programmers. The overseers will be clones of the main external programmers.

These horse alters carry all the memories. They are programmed to believe they have no souls (emotions), and that they can not speak (although they may "neigh" to the therapist and alters may hear the stomp of their hoofs behind them). These night mares carry the memories to other alters (which is their "dream duty"), and because they have no emotions (soul), they can be heartless in what they give and in what they must carry. Lacking emotions they carry the memories like a movie projector. They are really beasts of burden for the entire system.

These beasts of burden are created early in the verbal stage. (*Vol. 2* briefly reports about their creation.) The alters who see themselves as the primary abusers, who are overseers of the system will ride these horses. The horse for the front of the system has to be a gentler natured horse because they don't want the front of the system finding out too much and they want the front of the system to be able to function.

And now you understand the collage in our *Illustrated Guidebook to Monarch Mind Control Programming* (1995), p. 68, where a White Horse and a Black Horse do battle over a grave yard. When we were trying to get our memories, a battle was raging with the horses as to how much memories we were to get. (You'll notice that a high percentage of our collages have horses in them. One example, on p. 54, is Alice riding a white horse. Another is our system's two overseers Dr. Green & Dr. Black riding a fierce night mare on p. 38. The horses are attached to the computers, but they are neither good nor bad, they simply are beasts of burden carrying out their assigned tasks. They try to balance what they give the alters. When an alter goes into the dream state, the horses fill that dream state with a memory. Because the memory never gets attached to the original emotions (affect), the horses can bring it night after night to terrorize the alters. If a horse gets too close to the memories that it brings, or entangled with the alters that it gives memories to, then the horse will lose its job, and another alter, perhaps a clean slate made from the horse itself, will take its job.

Most alter systems will go into a trance like sleep between 12 and 4 in the morning. During this time a lot of mischief can happen. The internal programmers may be working hard to reprogram the system, or the handler has arranged a quick stop at the house to help with the reprogramming. Meanwhile most therapists have a rule that after 11 o'clock the client can't call. So during that time period when therapists are out of reach, is when the programming cults move in & do a lot of work. During the dream state, no one is really holding the body, and programs surface for contact alters to go "home" to "get fixed". The handler may be waiting in a sidestreet or back alley a block away.

Flooding programs are released in the dream state. Flooding programs were created when a drug was given that takes down all the dissociative barriers, and the memory of this flooding trauma is then carried forward by a mare and given to the appropriate non-compliant alters to scare them into not wanting to go toward health.

The reader has seen how the programmers take advantage of the dream state & control the dream state. The support team has to be alert from eleven p.m. to five a.m. for that is when most of the accessing mischief takes place. The support team has numerous ways that they can encourage the dream state to be productive, & they now know the alters who are responsible for turning those dream states into nightmares (pardon the pun.)

EXTERNAL PROOF, benefits of validation

Validation is important especially at the early stages of therapy. Our experience, as well as many others who understand the dynamics of MPD, is that extended family members are NOT good sources of validation. If the dynamics of abuse are understood in the context of families who abuse their MPD children, it will be clearly understood that extended family members will deny the truth, misrepresent or misinterpret past events, and may even be involved in trying to reprogram and reaccess the victim. Because some therapists attempt such validation, we feel it is important to issue a warning.

Until recently, programmed multiples have lived in a world that was hostile to admitting their existence. They ran many risks from being exposed, & the trend has been for most therapists to deny the existence of mind-control. The victim has had so much fantasy structured into their mind that they don't know what to believe, but they do know that they feel safer if they could find some validation.

It is not uncommon for some alters in a system to realize the MPD, while other alters hold out for more validation.

Within in an alter system DENIAL is extremely strong. Denial has been a tool for survival. The mind does not want to believe the horrendous things that have happened to it. The mind wants to protect itself from these trauma memories--not admit them.

As therapy progresses, the way the mind unravels itself, becomes a validation for the system. Alters may talk about things that are in their mind, which the therapist can point out are standard programming features, such as ruby slippers, a dollhouse & rainbow.

Denial is a force that pulls the mind away from the truth. Validation gives the mind something external. Without that external place to land, it is hard for the mind to accept its own thoughts. In a sense, validation (ext. proof) brings a balance for the mind. The victim doesn't feel like he or she is standing alone. Something else agrees with them.

Dates can be helpful for validation. Victims who have identical structures can be validating. Other SRA victims from the same coven or same team can be validating.

Recent books showing how different alters have different PET brain scans, as well as changes in regional cerebral blood flow as switches occur, have helped programmed DIDs to trust that MPD (DID) even exists. Many churches are still denying its existence.

At a certain point in the therapy, the mind has reached the top of the hill in its quest for reassurance from external proofs. At that point, the mind knows, and has acknowledged it to the point that that knowledge has become part of itself. The external programmers will not try to stop this awareness, because it is something that permeates the mind, even though some alters will remain in denial. However, admitting that the multiplicity exists, is still a long ways from proving to others that mind-control is being carried out on a wide-and big scale, and that the recovering victim was abused by many of the "finest" figures of the establishment.

It is hard to see that programming, mind-control, and control of society exists UNTIL you swim against the stream. As long as someone is flowing with the river (the programming) the current is not perceived. Everything goes easy like running with the wind at your back. It is when you step out of line with the programming, when you step out of line with how society is programmed, do you feel the weight of the programming. When people are hired, their bosses hire them for how they think. And their boss's boss in turn hired them for the way they think in an approved fashion. Much of today's thinking is simply drifting with the stream of what is "politically correct." Try swimming against the tide, and you'll discover it is there!

FAMILY, rebuilding a shattered family

Everyone needs to belong to a family. Everyone needs love & acceptance. To belong to a family & to be loved gives a person an identity. The victim's deeper alters have few opportunities for this, unless the support team makes an effort to address these vital needs.

When you begin working on a programmed multiple, chances are high that the multiple has experienced extreme inconsistency in the actions of the parents or guardians, and extreme contradictory expectations (often double-binds) from the parents too. Most families, that multiples come out of, are extremely guarded and secret, although they may put on a good front. The good front may simply be an agreed upon good cover.

The multiple's deeper alters have been programmed not to have a regular family, but to only know their cult family or their internal family (other alters). The therapist will have to investigate: Who is your family? Name your family? How do feel about them? The multiple's deeper alters will have to be shown there is an external world.

After they were programmed with the NO TALK, NO SEE, NO HEAR, they were then programmed with the DO-NOTHING-TO-HURT-THE-FAMILY programming.

Why do programmed multiples (or their therapists) sometimes want to contact actual family members? It may be for validation, for justice, for more information, or for reconciliation. First, extended families are poor sources for validation. Second, there is no justice that would be appropriate for the crimes done, such as a lifetime of torture, except an eternity in hell. Forget getting justice. Third, sometimes relatives will provide more information. Generally, victims of mind-control attempt to pry information from relatives, and to read between the lines. Worthwhile information can be gleaned from relatives, just realize that it be work getting it. Often it works the other way, intense pressure is put upon the victim to protect the family's secrets. Fourth, because most parents of multiples are multiples themselves, all victims of mind-control need to be extra cautious about spending unsupervised time with the parent figure.

So where does the victim go to rebuild a family? The support team can become the new family. Or the victim can find some brothers and sisters in Christ that are not-judgmental and legalistic who will appreciate the victim for all the positives they have, in spite of the multiple's inconsistent behavior.

The multiple has quit asking why after about the age of 3 1/2. The Illuminati have built fantasy scripts for them so they don't ask why. The victim only asks why in the context of fantasy. The victim child may explain their parents multiplicity in magical terms.

Child victims will often be aware that they have several daddies and several mommies. They as a multiple will switch to adjust the parental switches. Children may even take advantage of the parent's multiplicity, although it usually works the other way. The therapist may have to intervene to try & spare the child, if the situation warrants it.

It makes sense to point out to victims, that people have to be accepted in the reality that they exist, and that all the wishful thinking in the world is not going to change them. If we want a good father, rather than destroy ourselves wishing, a victim can find a surrogate father or a spiritual father that has the attributes they feel a father should have. If the surrogate or spiritual father wants the role, that's even better. Rather than beat one's head against a wall that won't change, walk around the wall and get where you want to be. This is not denying the power of prayer, it is simply facing the fact that even Almighty God can't make everyone conform to the image He'd like them to be, because people have free will.

FLOODING, how to deal with

One of the hardest problems to deal with was flooding with memories. Part of the flooding of memories is the result of a flooding program that is put. The method that is used to program it in is discussed in Vol. 2.

Flooding is often the result of improper maintenance of the the victim's therapy.

The therapist wants a controlled release of memories and effects, not a flood that will drown the victim in a sea of overwhelming trauma and emotions. Remember, the amnesia walls were put in by the mind as a survival mechanism! Removing the walls is like removing the dikes of Holland. When the floods come they bring dizzyness, all kinds of fears, especially the fear of death, difficult breathing, chest pains, delusions, confusion, chills, and heat flashes, and a terror at losing control over one's self.

When memories come, if they can't be processed then they can be stored in a box. Or the memory can be shrunk by the mind to a mote, and then kept small until the mind is strong enough to deal with it. Then it can be enlarged to real life proportions and processed.

Another method that works well once alters have learned it, is to place their memories on a screen. The screen can be moved closer, or pushed away. The memory is placed on the screen like a movie. The memory can be slowed down, speeded up, made into a silent movie, made into a black and white movie, freeze framed, and the sound turned down on it. In other words, the movie screen gives the victim control over their memory, so they can process the trauma, and regain part of their life.

The victim can relieve some of the overwhelming nature of the flooding by having someone to talk to, even an understanding friend such as another victim is helpful. Some are able to journal their emotions, or do some physical activity to blunt the effect. Standing up and getting busy, will help place some distance between the alter and the memory. For a small minority of alters they are capable of using prayer, meditation or scriptures to regain encouragement and calmness. The articles on abreactions may help in this area also.

Christian therapists will pray with their clients that memories are released in God's timing and not in a flood.

Different programs and memories occur at different trance levels, so the victim can go either below or above the memory to escape an abreaction. Therapist like to encourage victims to remember their cognitive memory (actual event) before their affective memory (emotions attached to the event). It is important to get the entire memory for memory work to be effective, but the alters that can process information logically (but not emotionally) can play an important role in the early processing of powerful painful memories. The emotional front alters are too easily overwhelmed.

Many people would like to avoid the pain and have an easy salvation; unfortunately, the flesh has to be crucified (in a sense) daily, and the victim has to face the reality of what has been done to them. Christ warned his followers that the life of freedom would not be easy. Sometimes victims start pulling up emotional pain without the memories. They may respond by turning to alcohol, compulsive eating, drugs and sex to escape the pain. Often these escape routes are programmed into them by the programmers. When they start acting this way, they often quit therapy. The therapist might beat the programming to the punch and warn their client that this may happen, so that they don't get discouraged, but realize it is a common side effect or programmed effect of the emotional pain surfacing.

GRIEF

Our father was also our programmer. As our programmer, he set himself up as our savior, our creator, our god, and our master. One day during our therapy, Fritz (our co-author) said at a very timely point one of the most powerful things ever said to our system, "Your father **had** a beautiful little girl, he **didn't want** a beautiful little girl. He wanted a robotic slave." Those words cut to the marrow of the programming. Those words reverberated down through our system for the next few years. What was stolen from the mind-control victim that you are working with? Their identity? Their beauty? Their life? Their honor? Their intelligence? Their humanness? Most slaves never get to the point that they ever realize what was stolen from them. They never get to grieve their losses.

The victim has had the truth stolen from them. During therapy they may grieve over this. In therapy, the victim may grieve that their master & programmer was not the image they were programmed to see him in, but was a sadistic person who delighted in cruelly hurting innocent children. The programming for front alters is meant to short circuit grief, front alters are to forgive and forget. The therapist can give grief a voice.

Grief is not an Illuminati issue. The Illuminati bloodlines have sacrificed humans including their own children for centuries. With such practices there is no room for grief. Illuminati doctrines allow the mind to trivialize death. In our notes we wrote, "The circle or web of life is like a celtic cross looping back upon itself, and intertwined through its own twisting and turning. The continuity of existence is an unbroken chain linking all the elements of the universe. In the web of life, all things share in the same power and can exchange power, life, and consciousness." You will find out in higher Illuminati doctrine that a person's being is considered simply a nucleus, a particle of the vast universe, which creates its own light, and you lose your separateness from the universe. When the Mothers-of-Darkness ritually sacrificed a popular Queen Mother, we'd miss her, but our belief (that she'd left all that she was to the next generation, and that she'd be reincarnated, and that she'd voluntarily given up her life), prevented us from having a deep grieving. We would say things like, "We miss Queen Mother, do you remember when she taught such and such, we must not let that teaching die." We had internalized the Queen Mother to quite an extent through the programming and the cult, so that when she died, it felt like she lived in us.

One of our Mother-of-Darkness's describes further how grief gets swallowed up in the Wheel of Life philosophy of the Illuminati, "The real or unreal are merely opposite ends of the continuum on which reality can be stretched to include what is normally considered unreal. Even better, the continuum, like a flexible rod, can be bent, curved, and shaped into a circle where the end points of reality and unreality met and become the same point." Reality can be "demolished then reconstructed, becoming that one part that must maintain a balance, between the internal worlds of oppositional force, unity and interdependence with all." When something is lost, this philosophy doesn't perceive it as a loss, but a refolding back upon itself of reality. When a person chops up a potato and puts it in a soup, you do not grieve the splitting up and death of the potato, it is joining its life to the eater. When things are taken apart, or die, the particles will reconstruct themselves into the fabric of the universe, life loops back on itself linking all elements. There is no loss. Belief in reincarnation and this kind of philosophy eliminate the type of grieving that other people may experience.

The Illuminati (and other satanic groups) do not allow grief. It is not an issue that is brought to the surface. But grieving does occur. It is buried in the emptiness of where the alter's hearts have been taken out via hypnotic surgery. Grief lays silent without a voice in the mind and body. Grief lays in the silence of hopelessness and powerlessness. When the cult forces a child to kill another child, many children internally grieve for the child they have been forced to kill. To save the child's soul, you will find that some alters will take on the pain, the characteristics, and even the child's soul and identity as part of their silent grieving process.

During programming, grief may display itself as a child in a fetal position, in contrast with an angry child yanking on the cages screaming, or a child crouching in fear.

An important key to the success of the programming is the resignation/decomposition of the child victim's mind.

Life inherently has fight built into it. The sperm fights to fertilize the egg. The child fights to survive the birthing process. The difference between resignation to a debilitating auto accident and a struggle to survive can mean life or death. The programmer wants to strip the child of this. He wants unconditional surrender of the mind. When the child's mind enters its last struggle for its own life it is termed DECOMPENSATION. When the mind quits fighting, and all mechanisms of defense or escape crumble, it is called RESIGNATION. A full-blown psychosis results from the breakdown of the personality. Total surrender to overwhelming events is a survival mechanism. The child surrenders to the forces that control it and the new reality and script that are given it. The Illuminati call this "BREAKING REALITY". The Illuminati programmers want to take the child victim from Reality to fantasy. At this point the child can manipulate his life however he wants to stop the pain. The child has surrendered to fantasy. Does a soldier grieve surrendering to the enemy to save his life? The depth of surrender by the child is so deep, that grief lacks a place in the new mind. The old life has been unconditionally surrendered. Unveiling the "BREAKING REALITY" process to the therapist is important to explain to the therapist **why** the therapist will not find grief floating around in a system. Instead, the therapist will find happy bird alters, happy singing tree alters, happy bee alters humming and a menagerie of other happy alters content in their fantasy worlds.

So where did the grief go? The broken spirit has moved into the fantasy world, and the grief is so profoundly deep and buried internally so deep that it won't be seen. The grief goes into the dead parts who die (a deep grief so deep that it is death) and these parts end up in the internal graveyards, concentration camps and other deep burial grounds. The programmers make sure they skim off any dissociative parts that have humaness and grief and bury them. One method to bury the grieving parts is to have "pac-man" alters that "eat" and internalize these dead parts come and clean them up. After the "pac-man" alters do their job, they are put to sleep. After the grieving parts are hypnotically buried, only the psychotic fantasy parts are left to build the large alter systems.

The programmers want the child slave to look like other children, and the front part of the system may be allowed to have a grieving part. For instance, one grieving alter who held grief kept her tears internal and felt like if she let them out of her bag of tears, which weighed hundreds of pounds, the flood of tears would drown everyone. The therapist may find a grieving part like this. How do you get this part to express the grief that has been kept secret for years?

Also, the front parts of a system that hold the body day to day may have the same griefs that other people feel. The host personality needs the support of friends like anyone else, even if the front parts appear very stoic.

Perhaps an article Fritz wrote on grief will be helpful to front alters who have grief to work through. The article is meant to be a tool that can be read by anyone to work through their grief.

BENEFITING FROM GRIEF by Fritz

Grief, each of us has our own unique trauma to grieve about--and yet there seems to be a great deal in common in the grieving process for everyone.

Grief, it is a challenge. It comes with feelings of sadness, guilt, anger, confusion, and fear. The first feelings may be disbelief and confusion. Then we find that we want to get things off of our chest, a release of the feelings. A good friend can really help when we want to talk. Finally, the day comes when we are able to accept what has happened and move on with life. This doesn't mean we no longer care about what we grieved about, nor does it mean we've forgotten, it simply means we have worked through the feelings associated with the grieving process. There is a light at the end of the tunnel, there is hope, there is freedom from emotional pain, but each person has his or her own timetable and sometimes the journey seems impossibly long.

Have you tried to think things through, and it just doesn't happen. Grief is a releasing process, and a healing, the heart and spirit of a person are the players to watch, don't expect the analytical part of the brain to score a touchdown in this situation. The heart of a person will push through to score, even though the analytical part of the brain schemes and schemes.

But many of us are afraid of our feelings. We hold back our feelings, when the tears and the grieving are what we need to heal. Blessed are those who weep, for they will find comfort.

When we grieve, we often feel our world is falling apart, its gone. We are isolated in a confusing world. The world made sense, but now it doesn't. Now we see ourselves in such a different world. We need to be patient with the world. Faith is the victory that overcomes such a frightening world. We must have the faith that eventually there will be light at the end of the tunnel. The world that has shattered like a broken mirror seems like it can not be reconstructed. But miracles do happen everyday--and those shattered pieces will miraculously mend themselves in a mysterious way.

When we first grieve, many of us want to retreat from life. We find it hard to talk and be around others. We just get through each day. Often we can handle the truth only is small packages, so we turn to denial, either partial or full denial to get us through. Sometimes the best we can do is incorporate the truth at the speed that we can internally deal with it.

We know this happens to other people--but when we grieve it seems to be an aberration.

Slowly the mind breaks down its denial. But while it does, we wake up feeling like we're in a nightmare. Can this really have happened? On the one hand we want to disbelieve, yet on the other a small voice tells us--YES, this terrible thing did happen.

One shock after another. We take the shocks as fast as we can. Someday the denial will be gone, and the grieving will be gone. But until then the process continues.

Our feelings of love, our good feelings are responsible for us grieving. If we had no feelings we could not grieve. Grief is a testimony that we can love. Grief is a neon sign that we can care for others. Grief is a memorial that we can get close to someone. Those same abilities to love are now causes for our pain. The weight on our backs from the grief is really the weight of the proof that we cared for and loved another.

When we wrap our world and intertwine our world with another, the world seems empty when that person is gone. The disciples were heartbroken when Jesus left them. The Holy Spirit was sent to be an eternal comforter for mankind. Not only is the Holy Spirit there to comfort us, but many of our brothers and sisters have gone through suffering so that they can minister comfort to us, as they were comforted. Maybe the world isn't so lonely after all. Reaching out to someone else who has suffered the same pain as we have is often soothing. If we let people minister comfort to us, we are giving them the chance to be like God the Holy Spirit, the comforter. This will strengthen them spiritually as they walk in the same direction that the Holy Comforter moves.

Some who we thought suffered with us, may not be in a place to provide comfort. They may not realize that with only a little better grasp of what grief is, a little extra time, and the willingness to listen they could be so helpful. We must give them space too.

But if we reach out for help when we grieve, it is a chance for us to feel needed and loved by the living, rather than staring off into space, and a chance to talk, rather than hoarding our feelings. We must give people the space to not be helpful too. Unfortunately, the type of feelings we are hoarding are often the same type that our friends are secretly denying themselves. They are not able to face true emotions in anyone.

The most helpful friends are those who will take the time to find out what we need, and will participate in helping with those needs. A vague suggestion to travel, is not going to help as much as if the friend gets a ticket for us and travels somewhere with us. Sometimes while grieving we enter those periods where we need to be touched, to be hugged, to have a pat on the back as a friend passes by. This can mean the world to us.

When we grieve it is natural to feel alone. However, when we grieve we can honestly come to realize that others have also had the weight of grief on their back. So go ahead and grieve. Grieve and grow stronger through the hours, the days and the months. The road we each travel is our own--and yet to be honest with life--we each must travel down a road, and each road is filled with things to grieve about. Let us travel down our own road. It is ours to travel. But we must be kind to ourselves if we hope to travel down our own road, because it will take determination and spirit to get through. We must recognize and take care of our needs. If our needs conflict with what others expect, we may have to clearly state our needs without apologizing. It is our own road to travel not theirs. Its O.K. to get help from friends. We just need to learn to verbalize what it is that they can specifically do. Vague comments for help during a grieving state, may end up frustrating everyone involved. To shut ourselves off from others who can help is not wise.

When we grieve, we float through the day. But people are resilient. They don't sink, and after a while the floating numbly through the day, becomes soaring and flying through the day.

The entire person grieves, the body, and the spirit and the mind. We must minister to all of these. And yet all of these parts seem so numb. Yet, we must allow these parts to feel. The body, spirit, and soul need to express themselves. They need to each groan in their own way. The body feels tired, not just occasionally but most of the time. We must sleep and we must eat if we are to have the strength to continue on this journey. Even if we don't immediately want to do these things, to neglect our sleep or meals will only make the journey harder. On the other hand we need to be sensitive to our new limitations. Under the stress of grieving, we may not be up to going to the store like we used to, but we can console ourselves with the fact that this will only be temporary. Grief is an emotional surgery to the heart, body, soul and spirit which needs time to heal.

Before our loss, we had settled into life a certain way. When we lose it, our confidence in life is jolted. And that lack of confidence develops into fear. This fear can come from seemingly out of nowhere, and rob us of the safe secure feelings we had.

There are many people who will ask us questions, give flippant advice, and if we let them, they can hurt us. However, we can choose to understand that often their pity is the best they have to offer us, and their questions, however thoughtless, are an outgrowth of their interest and natural curiosity. If people say worthless things to us, then we can discard these words into the trash. We want understanding from others, then we need to give understanding.

There are not many people who will nurture us in silence, and just be there silently with us. And sometimes during grieving we want to talk, or to be talked to, but sometimes we just want silent companionship.

Grieving is healing. When we lose something externally, sometimes we then try to internalize it. It's as if we are saying, "Now I'll place it in myself and then I won't lose it." We may adopt the mannerisms of the person we lost, we may in an effort to stop the pain substitute something for them.

After we heal, we will still be vulnerable to surprise triggers, which will trigger us to remember our period of grief. First, we must get over our loss, and then we will have to get over the grieving memories. As individuals we have to wrestle with powers that are greater than us. Changes in life, caused by overpowering uncontrollable events in life, may produce strong feelings of loneliness. If this is equation on life is written in another way, it can also be reduced to the statement loneliness equals a fear of life with its uncontrollable changes. The only way to win against overwhelming situations is to take baby steps and to deal with those situations that we can and keep moving forward even if its only at a snails pace. Gradually, as we step through and over the small problems, we will gain the confidence and inner strength to face the bigger ones.

Life is brief. Many generations have come and gone. And just as a rain storm is made up of little rain drops, God Almighty's big plans and His big purpose is produced through each of us tiny drops on the panorama of time. At some point in the recovery phase of grieving, we relearn our own happiness. We salvage what is good in our life, and we recognize how to be happy and we allow ourselves to be happy and move forward.

In recovery we find ways to record the past so it is not forgotten, and then turn the focus of our minds onto the present. We can not be happy in the past or the future, for we live only in the present. It is possible to let go of the past without giving up caring. We can go forward into changes, while our memories carry all that was good of the past that we want to bring with us.

Finally, as we recover, we get to the point where we are now equipped to comfort others. As we move forward to help them, we find that in helping them with their grief, we further heal ourselves.

What a healing it is when we are able to be thankful for all the wonderful things we have experienced. Some of us have had hard lives, but most of us (there are exceptions) have something that we can appreciate. Thank the good Lord that the earth hasn't jerked as it has revolved around its axis. If it had just once, we might have seriously been hurt. We take so much for granted.

Our grief feels like it will rob us of joy forever. Nothing seems to console. We don't think we could ever love anyone in the future, like the people we miss from the pass. In the early stages of grief, we were in a fog and it was frightening not being sure how to travel. But we learn to be patient with ourselves, and to balance self-improvement, solitude and involvement with others. Day by day our emotional lives stabilize.

More and more, we bloom like a flower and we open up to the sunshine all around us. We find new sources of love and joy. And as we finally recover, we are amazed at how much grief has silently taught us. We never knew we were so strong. How did we persist in persisting. How did we get past just floating numbly through the day? When we recover, we surprise ourselves at that inner strength and patience we always had but didn't know was there. Finally, the value of choice shines so bright. How wonderful God was in giving us choice. Thanks to grief, we have stopped to reflect upon our lives, and we have realized what is important. The chance to make good choices is important. Now we realize how important. Now we realize that we can choose and design our lives like we choose with the new strengths we discovered through the grieving process. We are survivors, and survivors are strong people. Survivors have better-defined goals, fresh views, and stronger views. We have thrown away our masks, and we are facing life with a fresh understanding of who we are. As we grieved we recognized those things in life which gave us life and strength. Now we appreciate those life-giving things. As recovered survivors we no longer need to ask why we live, we realize the value of living life to its fullest potential. Now we are ready to be used of God. We are content to be alive.

GUILT, dealing w/, see diagram below,
also see art. on "Self-forgiveness.

How to deal with guilt:

a. In a deep contrite spirit confess your sins
b. Review the story of the prodigal son
c. Understand how Christ's sacrifice attoned and paid for all guilt
d. Make restoration, restitution, and reparation to those injured.

HYPNOSIS- THE PRO'S & CONS

Why have millions, if not billions of dollars, been spent on research into the mind-body interaction and hypnosis? Many believe self-hypnosis is a tool for making changes in your life. Others see hypnosis as a mystical hocus pocus tool to be (mis)used by people to control others.

Part of the reason hypnosis is such a controversial subject is because the powerful elite that control the establishment know it is extremely powerful, that it works, and they want to keep its power out of the hands of the people. Another reason that hypnosis is controversial is that spiritually discerning people have realized that there is a demonic element involved with the process. They realize that hypnosis opens up portals in the mind for demons. This section will attempt to lay out facts, and allow the reader to draw their own conclusions and use whatever techniques that seem to have the best therapeutic potential.

Hypnosis is a state of mind in which suggestions are accepted and acted upon more powerfully than they are under normal conditions. The Illuminati rank hypnotic trance depth from 0 to 10, where 0 equals being totally out of the trance state, and 10 equals a comatose state. This scale is called "Jacob's ladder". You will find top-notch hypnotists will refer to trance depths as steps. The reader needs to bear in mind, that the Illuminati programmers can number the descending trance depths either "1 to 10" or "10 to 1". The choice of which way to number the depths when training an alter depend on several factors. When training a small child, they may be able to count 1 to 10 but may not be able to reverse the count. The programmer may use the count "1 to 10" because it is what the child can count. The programmer may use the 0 to 10 method, as a reversal to what other hypnotists do in the world. The programmers will use one induction method in one area of an alter system and the reverse (or another type) in another area to throw a therapist off track. (For those unfamiliar with hypnotic inductions, it is common for psychiatrists/hypnotists to induct people down "10...9...8...7..." on down to 1. When bringing the subject up, hypnotists at times actually refer to these levels as "steps."

In training the child to go down into trance, climbing and descending stairs while counting is used, and the game "Chutes and Ladders" is played. The child has often learned to trance as a reflex to the trauma it has received even while in the womb, so the assistant programmers only need to give these already acquired trance states numbers.

Under hypnosis, a person can access and control areas of the mind that are normally out of reach of the conscious mind. This also applies to victims of mind-control, who can use the trance state to work their way through the amnesic barriers to work with parts of the mind that the conscious mind can't reach.

The hypnotic trance is a naturally occurring phenomenon. Most modern Americans walk around in a slight hypnotic trance. The stress of the rat race, television, video games etc. contribute to the overall trance states that Americans walk around in. Have you ever come into a room full of people who have their eyes wide-eyed glued to the television? They are in a trance state. Have you ever thought about an important problem while driving to work. You were in a trance state. Your mind was operating on two levels at once.

The spiritual danger that is inherent in hypnosis is that it opens up the spiritual portals of the mind. The true loving Creator of the Universe doesn't seek His own, because love doesn't seek its own, but is self-sacrificing. Yahweh God is a gentleman (so to speak) who gently knocks at your door, and wants your conscious mind to voluntarily decide to serve him. The Kingdom of Demons operates just opposite of this. Demonic entities are always trying to capture the subconscious, to trick the mind, and to force the person into servitude. When the mind relaxes, and lets down its natural barriers to the subconscious, it is an open door for demonic attack.

For Illuminati programming, the best hypnotic results occur at about 7. Some people can be hypnotically programmed at 5-6, but some children will fight it at that level. Most will cooperate by 7 and everyone else will be cooperative by 8. Beyond 8, the mind and body are in a very dangerous deep trance. It may surprise some to learn, that ALL major programs are put in at the deepest level, level 10. The base level 10 is used for the foundations of every program. Why? Because this level is associated in the mind with the primal functions of life, and the only way this programming can be tampered with is to use drugs and a medical facility which will monitor vital signs the entire time.

Once the Illuminati have programmed in the basics to all the programming they want, they will refine and build upon that deep programming at other trance levels. The programming is like an octopus with its head at level 10 and its tentacles reaching up into the lighter trance states.

Most alters within a system will learn to stay in the mind at a level 5 trance. The programmers will teach the alters to stay at whatever trance level they want that alter to function at. They want the alter to maintain its trance state. A few strong front alters may operate at a 3 to 4. Since most people are unfamiliar with trances, front alters appear to be normal to the outside world. Most memories of a slave occur at a 3-4 trance state. Some memories from deeper may float up to a 4 trance state. The programmers are intimately aware of how memories are connected to trance states, and they have a number of standard tricks to prevent therapists from getting anywhere.

One standard hypnotic trick by the programmers is called a TRAP DOOR. A program or a memory will be placed in at various hypnotic levels. Let's say the programmer places in a memory at a level 4. They will then stop in the middle of what's happening and take the alter(s) down to an 8. The therapist comes along and is getting parts of the memory at four, and then the alter(s) remembering can not get anything more because they hit the part that's been put in at an 8. The reverse of this, is when the programmer programs various alters that if they hit a certain memory they are to trance deeper (or trance higher--depending on what the programmer wants). When the alter reacts as it has been trained, the mind skirts around the memory and never comes to rest where the memory or program lays. These tricks can also be coupled with the use of two opposite induction counting systems, in other words "Jacob's ladder" get changed. Like moving on a ladder, the mind climbs up or down.

Should the therapist decide to use hypnosis with the victim, they should consider using a hypnotic tone of voice that is appropriate to what the victim will respond to. Sometimes hypnotists take control in a military voice as if they are the father figure, and some times they are very soothing as if they are the mother figure. In general, the maternal approach works best, although Hollywood and stage hypnotists like the more impressive authoritarian approach. Hypnosis can be related to the unconscious memories of being put to sleep as a child. This is why the programmer or handler will place himself into the role of putting the child victim to sleep. Brahm's Lullaby is a favorite for hypnotists for inducing a trance.

There is a strong tendency in many people to be submissive and to look for a savior figure, a daddy figure to guide them through life. Self-hypnosis has at times lessened the dependence upon the victim for the authority figure that comforted and soothed the victim with his hypnotic voice during the programming. Don't forget that the victim has been trauma-bonded with the hypnotic programmer, and has had a programming experience where drugs and hypnosis were used to give the victim a feeling of blissful, ecstatic merging with the programmer. The alter trusts the programmer totally. The alter will transfer that trust to the therapist, or if taught control over their own trance states learns to transfer power back to themselves.

If a mind-controlled slave works toward developing the ability to self-trance so that they can regain power over the slave's system, the person will have to overcome several obstacles. The programmers lay in programming to prevent alters from doing their own thing, or allowing other people to hypnotize them.

Imagery which uses the senses of smell, touch, hearing and even taste are powerful for hypnosis. Being able to construct visual images in your head is also a valuable tool of hypnosis. If the therapist and victim decide they want to use self-hypnosis to gain control over the victim's life, such as learning to change negative self-talk into positive self-talk, to overcome fears and anxiety, or to quit a programmed habit, then imagery and visualization will work in the same powerful manner as they did when they were used in a negative way to enslave the person.

Finally, there are some victims who will have serious qualms about hypnosis. They object that it smacks to much of being "cult-like" and that it has demonic side-affects. If the victim does not feel comfortable with hypnosis, the therapist needs to respect that. It is quite possible that hypnosis falls into the category of things one doesn't strive to do, but sometimes is needed. In the Old Testament, God didn't want to have to kill His Creation with a flood, indeed He gives as one of the Ten Commandments "Thou shalt not kill." and yet, He inspired Solomon to write, "To everything there is a season, A time for every purpose under heaven: A time to be born, And a time to die; A time to plant, And a time to pluck what is planted; A time to kill, And a time to heal; A time to break down, And a time to build up...A time to love, A time to hate; A time of war, And a time of peace." ECC. 3:1

The ministers who have rejected hypnosis, even self-hypnosis, as a possible tool to help victims of mind-control usually have little concept of how much of the victim's splintered dissociative mind lives and operates in trance. We would encourage people to view self-hypnosis as a trance state that is to be used as a means to freedom, not a way of life. As to the objection that the trance state opens one up for demonic attack, so do many other things in life, such as travelling as a missionary to a pagan country. The bottom line is that the missionary opens himself up for attack because he is trying to give life, and the use of hypnosis can only be justified if it is being used in a way that is consistent with giving life and freedom, and life-more-abundant.

SERIOUS UNADDRESSED ISSUES AT THE DEEPEST HYPNOTIC LEVELS

At the time this is being written, there are millions of people world-wide with end-time programming. This Illuminati mind-control programming has been put in at the deepest levels of the mind. The end-time programming concerns those events that are to happen to usher in the reign of the Anti-Christ. This author is sad that she obediently played a role of helping program this end-time programming into young slaves. What has this to do with hypnosis? Because so far therapists and ministers have only played with the surface issues. Therapists will only deal with issues that clients talk about, and most ministers only deal with surface issues they consider important. There are lots of slaves and Vietnam Viets, who have programming layered in at the deepest hypnotic levels for the end times, and no one is doing anything about it.

End-time programming will resemble the following. Some teams will assemble to carry out missions, sometimes the missions will be one-way missions like the Manchurian candidate. Some individuals will perform acts of violence and may end up getting themselves killed. Some of the hierarchy systems will go back to the cult and flip their system from being Christian into being day-to-day Satanists. The world will have an anti-Christian fad, where everyone will seem to be turning to the occult and hating Christians.

Systems, which have Christian fronts, believe that they can pray and resist the final call-back. These type of prayers are similar to praying for someone else. It will still be that other person's choice as to what they do, and in this case, the persons (alters) with end-time programming have this programming attached to the primal part of the mind, that part which regulates such things as the heart beat. Faith overcomes the world (& by extension the New World Order.) Just as people we pray for still travel directions we don't like, unfortunately alters with end-time programming may well travel directions contrary to our prayers. Still total faith in an omnipotent God is **far better** than no faith.

The mind of the survivor is like a computer where the operator snaps the mouse on an icon and then shifts into another enviroment, and continues to move into subsequent areas of programming. Hypnosis could be used as a tool to move down through these "Monarch mind-control computer icons". Although lots of victims of mind-control have come in to therapists for help, very little work has been done to go down the various computer paths and get into the hidden information that is stored everywhere within an alter system.

Deliverance work has been done with a number of victims by a number of Christian therapists, where the Christian therapists were able to use spiritual techniques to break down the walls to get into areas of a system.

The co-author's of this book believe that some deep work with end-time programming may need hypnotic drugs and medical supervision, in spite of our experience in seeing some success without going to this extreme.

IDENTITY, discovering it

All non-multiple persons as children have ego states that develop and are integrated as time goes on into a more and tighter cohesive package. Most of the lines between the different states disappear after age one, and the child goes on to develop a single identity.

With programmed multiples, the deeper alters, such as spin kittens, will be depersonalized to such an extent that they will have no sense of self. They will also have no sense of reality. Some alters have a 2-D world, where time does not exist in their concept of reality. However, deeper kitten alters, for instance, will not even have that. They have been stripped of even a concept of reality. When they hold the body everything is surreal and clouded by the hypnotic state they exist in.

Out-of-body experiences, feelings that everyone else in the world is unreal, thoughts that one is dead are all classified in psychology as depersonalization. A normal Illuminati system will have many parts that are depersonalized. Reality for a spin kitten is but a facade. Can you blame such an alter? Whenever they are used they receive tremendous abuse in the outside world's reality. It is better that they consider reality to be the walls that they live in along with the internal world they have created for themselves. Reality is being pulled between life and death, and they need to try and find a balance.

These deeper depersonalized alters need a new birth into the truth, they need an exodus experience out of their identity as a slave, into a new promised land. This again is why the safety of the slave is essential for progress. Why should a severely traumatized alter, which regularly receives the worst abuse imaginable when they hold the body, want to give up the comfort of their internal world, and come live in the rest of the world's reality--if it means more abuse. The children of Israel wanted to go back to Egypt where as slaves they had some certainty. To get a new identity away from slavery is a challenge.

There are many parallels that can be drawn between the children of Israel finding their freedom and identity as a people and a group of alters discovering who they are. Sometimes alters can help each other, and sometimes families of alters get into internal feuds. Sometimes a single alter can sabotage the hard work of many alters. Notice how God had Moses give the tribes back their history and ancestry. Soon each person could identify himself as a member of a family that gave him a sense of belonging. Each tribe had a flag. God also insisted that they break from the past.

The alter who has lost its identity needs to learn to walk, to feel, to see, to hear beyond the programming. It needs to learn the who, when, where & how of who he or she is. The therapist may say, "You are not a princess," or "You are not a snowy fluffy white kitten." "Your identity is your birthright." "You're human, that's really where the truth is."

It will be hard for such an alter. Everything they thought was real, was fantasy. And reality is extremely painful, so painful that it is beyond words, it is but a deep anguish. But the alter needs to break its old ties to the slave's master, break all soul ties, and unshackle himself or herself from the lies. Then the therapist can teach them their strengths, and they can begin to find some self-respect in who they were when the system was born, and who they are becoming, and who they are as God sees them. Therapists will try to promote the humanism within an alter, by referring to it in human terms, such as saying "family of alters" rather than the cult's terminology "litter of kittens". Doing this may be helpful to the overall cumultive effect of showing alters their humaness, but it doesn't need to be done in a legalistic fashion.

IMPLANTS, dealing with

The people who are using implants for mind-control aren't about to tell us what they are doing, and they certainly haven't obtained the victims' permission for their sadistic behavior. They haven't spent trillions of dollars researching, designing and installing these black budget and secret projects, if they weren't convinced that they work. They are trying hard to get implant technology to the point it is tamper proof.

The controllers seem to think they are above accountability. The various implants aren't the stuff of sci-fi or delusions, their reality can be documented from real sources. Tracking implants are being put into our children and our dogs by people who want to "help" us not lose anything. Any bozo can purchase human tracking implants today & use them on their fellow man. After you've gotten over your denial that this is happening you are ready to deal with the unfortunate reality that we live in.

The achilles heel of the NWO is that they have too many things to control and keep track of. This is why they use computers. Computers with artificial intelligence may be able to play chess and make decisions, but they are not superior to the human mind, and you as a human still have a chance to outsmart them. The human, whose mind is being read, can think in codes and speak in codes. The NWO does not have the manpower to control their implant victims with human handlers 100% of the time.

IDENTIFY WHO

Thousands of implants victims (& electronic mind-control) are looking for help, some of them have approached the two co-authors for help. Some have given up fighting the implants. Some have bought into the flimsy cover stories that their syntel handlers try to give them to cover up who is actually controlling them. For instance, implant victims, who obviously have American handlers, are being told that their handlers are Iranians who hate America, or the Japanese who are trying to repay America for Hiroshima, or the Russians, etc. The first step is to recognize who your handlers are. 100% of the implant victims in this country who knew enough clues to provide clues were victims of American organizations. The Germans, the Swedish, the English, the Russians and who knows who else are all putting implants into people. Fritz has lived in several continents and can spot Americanisms immediately. One of the victims which we know, Carole Price, is also aware of Americanisms. The handlers of implant victims in this country have been obviously Americans. So the first step is to recognize that if you are an American, and your problem developed in this country, don't blame aliens, whether from overseas or from outer space. The supposed alien implants in this country that alien abductees keep discovering have continually gotten more sophisticated. The hard fact is that it is our own secret government as part of the NWO, not aliens that are subjecting us to these implants.

Now we have identified the basics of the question "who?". Refer back to the list of abuser organizations in *Vol. 2* page 18 for a comprehensive list of specifically what organization might be involved. Yes, there is even evidence that groups like Division 5 of the FBI are involved in this type of mind-body control. Also realize that many syntel implants are being controlled by artificial intelligence in computers most of the time. Try outsmarting the machine by doing unpredictable things.

IDENTIFY WHAT

If you are an implant victim begin journalling what is happening to you. Begin sharing your experiences with other people who understand that implants are being used. Go to a spectrum analyzer and find out what signals are being sent. Go to an anechoic chamber and find out where the signals are coming from. Get heat thermography done of your body and find out the locations of implants that way. Map out where the pain occurs. Pin point where your master implant is located. Knowledge of what is happening will help you and others fight what they are doing to you.

DE-ACTIVATING IMPLANTS

Because a variety of implants are being employed by the NWO, there is no set answer to what is going to work. A person is going to have to discover if the implant is metallic, plastic, a virus, carbon-based or whatever. If you can identify how the implant is working--you have a chance to counter it. If you can get yourself to a location where they cannot get signals to & from the master implant, then they will lose track of you. Every few minutes they monitor the exact location of where the victim is. Their tracking computers will soon learn if they have lost track of where you are. That is fine. When they lose track, stay out of their signals long enough to get over 25 miles out of range, and they may lose track of what area you are in. How long you as an implant victim can remain out of their signals depends on where you are willing to go and what you are willing to do.

A code activates some of the main implants on a body suit of implants. Many have some kind of safety feature to prevent someone from activating them who is a non-approved user. It is speculation at this point, but some of these implants may self-destruct if a person is able to make the implant think it were being tampered with by a non-approved user. If the main implant that controls other implants of a body suit is shut down it might bring a general relief to the victim.

FOR VIRUS IMPLANTS. There are some antibiotics, some colloidal metals like colloidal silver, and perhaps some juices like cranberry juice that may destroy a virus implant. Certain juices or substances might change the body's chemistry. An implant victim might test several things and see if they can find one that throws the body's system off.

FOR METALLIC LIKE IMPLANTS. There are a few honest surgeons (they are far more rare than any one would at first imagine) that will take out implants. Although Fritz and I have heard of a number of these surgeons, we do not give out their names.

FOR ELECTRONIC IMPLANTS. Some victims have blasted their implant(s) with some type of electromagnetic energy to a degree that they blew the implants. Other victims have found some relief from lead shields. The woman who makes lead suits to protect people is:
Shirley S. Still, 680 W. Rose St., Lebanon, OR, 97355. The company that produces lead shields using her patent #5,038,047 is Shielding, Inc. International, P.O. Box Z, Madras, OR 97741-0069. ph. no. 541-475-7211, Fax 541-475-6628.

COVERING ONESELF.Implant victims have covered themselves with cages of various metallic substances & other things to isolate themselves from the electronic control. The newer implants are nearly impossible to isolate from, but implant victims should certainly try.

FOR FIBER OPTICS. Fiber optics are often like hairs. The victim should look for suspicious looking hair, such as in the pubic area--better yet, simply shave. Some victims have pulled or shaved off their fiber optic implants.

One victim of implants provided this list to search out & destroy implants:

1. Electro-Magnetic Forcefields of Interference

    a. by going to a cable co. & walking around the area of the live satellite dishes. At a safe point, place both hands onto a live satellite dish.

    b. try the same at a telephone co.

    c. to a utility co. electric transfer pt. & walk around the area.

If the victim's implants respond to this type of countermeasure, they will experience a pulling sensation, which is a positive sign. Standing near a TV as it is repeatedly turned on

& off may create interference with the implants too.
2. Full Body Electo Magnetic Scanner
3. Full Body MRI with contrast
4. Gas Chromatography, Toxic Light Chromatography, Mass Spectrotography, & Blood analysis.
5. Mason Receivers
6. Non Linear Detectors
7. Pherigen Test
8. Spectrum Analyzers.

This victim recommends that if you have a telephone charging device in your home, reprogram it if possible each day, for the telephone can be one of the main power sources of implants.

THE BIGGER PICTURE.

Most victims of implants need to get the bigger picture. They need to find out what the Illuminati are and who the Illuminati bloodlines are. They need to learn who to trust and who not to trust. They need to learn about trauma-based mind-control because our experience has been that most implant victims are also victims of trauma-based mind-control. They need to realize that ALL phones in this nation are listened to. They need to understand that voice identification programs allow computers to identify who is talking over a phone by your voice.

We wish we had all the answers, but we don't. We can report that we have seen some victims get some temporary (short term) relief from implant control, which gives us hope that if all of us pull together and exchange what we are attempting to do, and what we learn that we will defeat them. Unfortunately, many implant victims are people who they have identified as isolated and without a support system. Perhaps the first step might be for victims to break their isolation, learn how to be good friends with others, and step out of the corner that the NWO has backed each of them into.

INTEGRATION, understanding i.

For years the goal of therapy has been "to integrate" the multiple. We believe that a more realistic and advantageous goal would be to allow the victim's system to decide upon what form of functional unit they want to be, whether that is a well-organized company, or a close-knit family, or a single identity. The goal is to stabilize and create a functioning "person". Everyone, non-multiples included, consist of competing parts in their minds. Even the great saint Paul, who God used so powerfully, said I do that which I don't want to do. Hollywood movies and several popular books have promoted unrealistic expectations that programmed multiples can simply do some integration work and be done.

Support people use two words "integration" and "fusion" to describe various stages of the crumbling of dissociative barriers between alters. At one end of the spectrum is what is called "an apparent partial fusion" and at the other end is "full integration." Many programmed multiples terminate their therapy before the therapist has much of an idea what the therapist is looking at. Because the front parts of a system are amnesiac to the deeper levels, there have been numerous cases where clients fully believed they were integrated, but the client was unaware of the numerous levels of alters hidden away. Nor will they probably ever detect these levels.

Is multiplicity the real problem of programmed slaves, or is their slavery the real problem? The therapists have had a tendency to want to rescue the slave from their multiplicity while not rescuing them from their slavery. The multiplicity is the slave's principal survival mechanism for enduring the slavery. The issues of safety for these DID (MPD) slaves are still not being addressed, even after over a century of examination by psychologists on DID. Not only do we have problems within DID clients, but we have problems within the professional community.

Some therapists have decided that multiples are refusing to integrate because they like the attention they get from the therapist (or others) being a multiple. While this may occur, it strikes us as premature for most therapists to judge the victim this way, when they still have such a limited grasp of the programming and the other features of mind-control. Most therapists still do not even recognize that there is a World Order that is controlled by the abusers.

Some Counselling courses are teaching their students that multiplicity gives a person a superiority over people who are non-multiples, because it gives them a broader repertoire of actions and abilities. When Fritz took counselling, his college instructor encouraged all would-be counsellors to create a pseudo-type of multiplicity. When a multiple system develops a high degree of internal cooperation and communication between various alters and levels, they may feel compelled to hold onto the system's multiplicity because it gives them such a wide amplitude of actions, and makes accountability more difficult. Even though there are distinct advantages (or at least what appear to be distinct advantages), there are times for all programmed multiples when their multiplicity is simply "hell".

Fusion is generally a process. It is similar to two people getting to know each other's lives. A full integration is when they become one. Is this becoming one like two people marrying, or is it like two bodies/brains actually physically merging? A full integration is the complete merger of the two dissociative parts of the mind, however, much of what is called "integration" is really more like the marriage of two individuals--and the reader knows that divorces do happen, in the external world and they also happen between alters that "integrate" in this fashion. The longer the marriage the more chance for the union.

While it is true that as long as there is dissociation left and alters, the Network has a foothold to exploit; but another reality is, even if the person integrated fully, the threat that the Network could grab the person and manipulate his or her mind still exists. Again the question must be asked, "What is the primary problem, the multiplicity or the slavery?"

The primary block to integration is programming. And the programming is held in place by demonic entities, lack of safety, dissociation, force of habit, alters who believe they want the programming, and the core splits and the core. While we will not go into the full details of how integration-blocking programs are put in, the therapist needs to understand that the client has received lots of heavy programming not to integrate. Trying to integrate doesn't feel like moving to safety, it feels like moving toward death, and if the support team is not careful, trying to integrate alters could easily result in triggered suicide programs actually being acted out. The therapist tells the client in glowing terms how happy they will be to integrate, but the client only feels the death programs that are attached to any thoughts of integration. It seems that therapists could be more discrete and get what they want to accomplish through the back door, rather than tearing down the house trying to get through a booby-trapped front door. One of the best ways is to tell a story (such as Jesus did, and Milton Erickson did) that by-passes the grid of mental resistance and reaches the subconscious heart of a person's thought processes. Creating these kinds of stories allow the therapist to develop his or her own creativity. The stories do not even need to be fiction, they just need to be anecdotes that evoke the subconscious to make the connection to the moral, without the mind's resistance to change being triggered.

For instance, there was once a man who found a piece of glass while he was walking. It was so beautiful. Later, he found a gemstone while he was out in the woods. Over a period of time he found many beautiful things and he put them together in a mosaic. The different colors of the gems worked so well together that they created a masterpiece, for the unified whole was far superior to the beauty of the individual pieces.

INTERNAL INFORMATION, how to get i.i.

The great philosophers have encouraged men to "Know thyself." Self-awareness is easier said than done; it is hard for anyone to crawl into one's own head to see how it works. Our conscious minds reveal precious little about how our conscious thoughts surface from deep in the mind. Whether one is a multiple or not, the mind does a great deal of thinking without thinking about it.

Many of the important articles of my second half to this book have been devoted to how to get internal information, for instance:

- **Communication Issues**
- **Fear Issues**
- **Trust Issues**
- **Alters, deep, how to work with d. a.**
- **Biography**
- **Dreamwork**
- **Hypnosis, self, ins & outs**
- **Mapping**

The material we have provided on structuring will give many insights into how the Illuminati slave's system is set up. As you may know, things begin with the four elements & then are layered outward like an onion. The entire thing fits together like a 3-D puzzle. The grid that the handler carries with him, will spell out the who, where, what and why of the system. Everything in the system represents something. Simple things can often be important pieces.

This article deals with learning how the client's mind works. We'll provide a few more specific insights on how to get internal information, in addition to the above articles.

Initially, the client's mind is working on trust. Information will begin flowing once some trust is established. Build the trust first.

Initially, the therapist will be trying to establish if the person is a programmed DID. Once that is secure in the therapist's mind, the therapist can begin assisting the client to discover what he can not find without the aid of the support team about how the client's mind is working. And a giant puzzle begins to be assembled. One of the most difficult things to achieve is a coherent chronology of the person's life. As more and more information is journalled and recorded the puzzle will piece itself together. Of course, the therapist needs to take good notes, or have an assistant do this. It is often beneficial for the principle alters involved in therapy to see the notes.

Another way to do this is to have the sessions tape recorded and let the system go home with the tape and see if they can build upon what was in the session.

The slave's mind is programmed to believe that they will die if anything about the internal world is learned or seen. When information is recovered and they survive its recovery they expose the lie. It will be uncomfortable for alters to go against the programming, but they will soon demonstrate to themselves that they will not be dead the next day for learning about their programming.

Assisting the victim to see.

Some therapists are having great success teaching primary alters how to do self-hypnosis in order to trance deep. By doing this, alters can go down and retrieve information.

Another way to get information is simply to speak through to the subconscious.

The therapist wants to make each alter feel relaxed. Alters in deep trance states & deep kitten alters may feel more comfortable with dim lighting. One can't automatically assume that alters will feel most comfortable laying on a couch. Sometimes that feels too close to when they were programmed. Alters should be allowed to choose where they feel most comfortable, on a chair, a couch, or in a corner. They can be allowed to find the place they will feel safest in.

Often when the client goes looking, the host alter simply does not see its internal world. During the therapy, there will be a sense that something exists there, but the client will not know how to tag it. You know how you have a nagging thought that you have left something behind, but the description of whatever it was, has not surfaced? Many times all the victim is aware of, is that something seems to be there. To deal with this, the alters can turn lights on, shine the light of the Holy Spirit on things, put windows in, reconfigure mirrors so they can be rotated, or are made from 1-way mirrors into 2-way mirrors. Then the images that come through 2-way mirrors can be enlarged until something comes into view. Many times, with the Alice In Wonderland programming, things behind mirrors are small specks in the grass.

Perhaps they see only Mr. Nobody. Like the song, "Your nobody called today...", the fact that Mr. Nobody is there is a clue that he is there. (Figuring out Mr. Nobody is common sense, he is mentioned just to remind us how things are hidden.)

Difficulties, pre-existing & created.

As a programmed multiple is worked with, they may seem calm on the outside, while all hell is breaking loose on the inside.

One of the triggers that therapists often unnecessarily push is that they talk about how the alter is part of the whole. The alters will discover this for themselves. But every time the therapist verbalizes it, they trigger programming, and then various alters get triggered & upset. They feel like their I.D. is being taken away. They do need to learn that they are part of a whole, but it can be learned quietly over a period of time. The mind will slowly assimilate the reality of it.

Occasionally, alters will give a therapist a concocted answer to deflect more questions. Another difficulty is that the therapist and alters will almost always discover the cover story & the cover programming first. There is an art to asking questions to multiples and an art to interpreting the answers.

It's O.K. for the victim to only have pieces. It's O.K. for the victim to change things as progress is made. Initially, the front alters will be trying to work through a great deal of false memories, planted thoughts, and programming. There is a knowing in the mind, between a planted thought and a real one. This knowing is hard to describe, but part of this knowing is the difference in impact a real trauma memory has in comparison to a false memory attached to a stringer of programming. The false memory will have emotions attached, but the intensity is much less, and these emotions do not linger like the impact of real traumas. After a while the victim will begin to discern the difference between the real and the false.

A standard trauma for children is to lock them in a trunk, and dump the trunk into a body of water where a.the trunk fills with water, b. the child drowns, and c. is resuscitated in time to not suffer brain damage. How does the victim's mind remember this? The young child doesn't have a fully developed ability to anticipate. They have been locked in boxes before. From having debriefed children of these traumas, it is manifest that they never remember the drowning (which takes anticipation), what they remember crystal clear is the terror of being locked in a dark box (which connects with their memories of similar traumas). The emotional affect of this trauma will be dissociated.

Another reason why information processing slows down is that information is not processed with its affect, its emotional content. After the therapist asks, "What do you see?" he can ask, "How does this make you feel?" By encouraging the feelings, the memories get worked on rather than being stuffed. When memories get stuffed, then the next layer of memories is harder to reach.

At times when a particular area of a system is worked in, the client may feel certain feelings. "Why do you feel certain ways when you work on certain areas?" And if that feeling is "I'm bad", then rewrite a reverse program, so that each time the alter hears "I'm bad", it hears

& thinks "I'm good."

The programmers depend upon the mind not wanting to believe itself. When one dissociated part of the mind creates something, the other parts are not in touch with that creation. For instance, parts create their home or environment that they live in. If another part were to try to get in touch with that internal home, it all seems like hearsay, second hand information. If you were the fourth born son, you would not remember the first few years of the first born son's life! It is no different for the fourth split to try to get in touch with the first split's history. It was created afterwards & it has none of the early memories of the first split. The client asks the therapist, "You want me to believe I have rivers, if there are rivers there, then why don't I know?" If the therapist is not careful, the client (unable to see the internal world) may think the therapist is a wee bit crazy. You may get responses such as "What's a castle?" "Why would I want to go into a graveyard, and dig up old bones? That's scary."

Some directions are not in the best interest of the therapy. It is not advisable to get the castle librarian. It is more important not to destablize the system, than any good that would be achieved in this direction.

Where to search for information.

The multiples' mind will play a mental hide and seek with the therapist.

The therapist is looking for holes in which to work through the system. Make a guess, and investigate it with some shrewd test. Try by-passing programming roadblocks with ambiguous statements, that the victim's mind has to put into its own context. Much of what we hear in life is ambiguous, except that it is said in some context. Without a given context, the mind has to find one of its own. This is the science of how the mind represents ideas inside its mind.

The therapist can gain insights if they will talk to the fear & talk to the anxiety. These emotions may be hiding parts behind them. When a particular alter is having a panic attack, the particular alter may not be able to see the alter with the panic emotions behind it.

When you find an alter, main alters may have several roles for the outside world, and several internal jobs. Special purpose fragments, who have no history, are simply parts for a particular job.

The therapist can ask questions such as, What does such & such smell smell like? The therapist can talk about their phobias & about their reactions to different foods. If the system has done or will do art work, and if the therapist will talk long enough about it, then they are likely to get someone pop up who can tell you about it. Questions like, "What do you see in the mind?" encourage the alters to start seeing what is happening in their internal world.

Therapists should look for the blue rooms, which are balancing points and a good place to start on each level. The magical room is a room full of gidgets and gadgets. There will be 26 rooms, two for each color.

Look for the trees, such as "Do you have any trees in your system? Ask your mind."

One novel way to gain insights into a client, would be for the client to give a signed release to the therapist on paper that the therapist can come to the client's house and observe in order to understand better what the client is all about, and what the situation is for the client.

Another novel way to by-pass programming and to give dehumanized alters a sense of who they are is to give their handwriting to a graphoanalyst for a handwriting analysis.

JOBS, new ones for alters

During the work on a system, there are different opportunities to encourage alters to step away from their programming, and carry out another job, role or task.

Sometimes when the programming has collapsed, it has been appropriate to give alters new garments & new internal jobs. (This is also useful in delineating between demonic alter imitations -demonic constructs--and real alters.) In cases where the programming has entirely collapsed but the alters are not at a place to integrate, int. schools can be set up for alters to get to know each other & learn new ideas.

In terms of working with a particular alter, the therapist can inquire about what the alter's internal job & history is, and what the alter can do besides that. Often the alter will say that there is nothing else he/she is interested in. But if the alter has creativity, the therapist may be able to direct that creativity in a new direction. If the alter is afraid of a particular task, the therapist might be able to use the alter's creativity for he/she to mentally rehearse the job that it fears, where the alter takes control & has a positive outcome. This mental rehearsing may be enough of a calmer for the alter to successfully succeed at the new but feared non-programmed task.

If an alter learns a new job, or role or task, he/she in turn can be an internal team leader to teach things to other alters. He can be the eyes for those alters that still need to learn how to function in the outside world in some task.

Deeper alters will have only experienced the outside world in a programmed state. To take the body in an unprogrammed state will be a sharper experience, and the body will feel different. They will need to have their confusion over norms and boundaries clarified. They will have to slowly learn that they can handle a new responsibility. The rest of the alters will watch, and they will have to show that they can earn respect in the way they take on the new responsibility.

JUSTICE SYSTEM, dealing with the broken j.s.

The reader is probably not surprised that anyone who has the audacity to write about how to deprogram multiples also has an article on how to deal with the justice system. Writing about the justice system could take a book, and choices of titles might be, "How to ride a dead horse." "How to jump into quicksand." or "How to win by trial and error."

We really don't have any good advice about "justice", in fact in terms of legal advice we don't have any--except to say stay as far a way from legal problems as possible. And most of the readers already knew that.

So now that the reader knows that we are all on common ground--or should we say, legal quicksand, we are relieved of any burden to actually accomplish anything in this article, which is about the way you will feel about the legal system once you get involved with its fast-as-molasses process. When dealing with lawyers, it helps to repeat the following mantra, "My time is not important. Time is very important for lawyers."

Most people have poor methodology when searching for a good lawyer. Looking for a good lawyer is like looking for a good therapist, and if you don't find the former you may want to find the latter. Since most people have plenty of time on their hands, we suggest that you go down to the courthouse and watch lawyers in action. This is probably the best way to see how your prospective lawyer functions. Lawyers are modern-day gladiators, at least that is what we want them to be. One supreme court justice said 50% of the lawyers are incompetent to work in the courts, and the bar association defended lawyers by counter claiming that the figure is only 20% are incompetent. Whatever figure you want to believe in is irrelevant, because the blindfolded lady who was holding the scales disappeared long ago while the lawyers had their backs turned litigating.

If you poke and prod a gooey mess on the ground, you will finally figure out what the solution is. We figure that with enough prodding, the reader will finally figure something out. Most of the time, they conclude that the lawyer ripped them off. The lawyer didn't create the mess (well--maybe they did historically--but your lawyer didn't personally create the mess the judicial system is in--he is just like you, trying to figure out how to ride a dead horse. The only difference is that he gets paid a large fee to do it.) You have to watch your lawyer bills, some lawyers have abnormal calculators. Try to find a lawyer that you can communicate with, and who is honest, and who is on the same wavelength as you. At this point you're probably feeling that you're in a lot of trouble. And that is the whole point of this, we're in a heap of trouble. The roots of our freedoms are being killed. The Bill of Rights is essentially a dead tree, waiting to be cut up and hauled off.

So what are your chances of success with the legal system? I guess we all need to take a hard look at our dead horse, and give it a proper burial, and see if we can substitute a live one into its place. The problem is that the legal system is in the unique position of being granted the power to justify itself legally.

If you thought you were going to get an answer on this page--well, we did experientially, you got as much here as you will likely get in the justice system, and it cost a lot less. Now how's that for a great deal!

MAPPING

The subject of mapping a system concerns the task of putting down on paper how the mind of the victim has been structured. It goes almost without saying that the therapist should be familiar with what has been written by the authors of this book in both this book and the *Vol. 2 Formula* book. The information in our books will take out lots of guesswork on mapping a system. If one understands programmed DID (MPD), one will immediately know numerous items & alters that a system will have to have. Just as common sense teaches us that a particular type of farm will have particular items, likewise an Illum. system HAS to have many of the items we have described in detail.

For instance, on a regular 13 x 13 grid of programs, the first square typically named 6.6 will have the program SEE NO EVIL, DO NO EVIL, HEAR NO EVIL--No-talk type messages linked to a suicide program.

The alters will have both an internal world created for them, as well as a secret code grid. In both the internal world and within the grid, will be demonic interjects, demonic constructs. Within both the computer grids and the alters worlds, there will be a center point upon which things will collapse, but can be rebuilt by the subconscious mind which is still programmed. The structuring is a layering effect. The assistant programmers will have the small child write scribbles, because the scribble designs are important for the subconscious. The structuring begins in the subconscious.

There are many reasons why mapping is important. First, many alters will be in denial that they are part of a multiple personality system. They need to break their denial to move forward. Second, many alters are unaware of how their system is constructed. They need to discover their structure to begin alter communication. Third, for the skilled therapist, there are approaches that can be taken to get past surface programs to erase large sections of programs. Fourth, as the therapist tries to organize the vast amount of information & notes they take, it is very helpful to be able to use the preexisting organization of the client, in order to file information. If the therapist does not keep track of the structure, they will have a pile of disorganized notes. Fifth, mapping will expose positions of alters, who may otherwise remain undiscovered due to their oaths of silence.

Initially, the therapist must build trust. The therapist may want to work at this before the entire support team is brought together. Trust is the foundation for mapping. It will flow down through a system and work like a protective cover.

The victim needs to begin to journal, do art work, or if possible talk to the therapist. There will be powerful "no-talk" programs, like the one just mentioned on the 6.6 cell on the alpha grid. Somehow, in whatever fashion will work, the victim will need to circumvent the no-talk programs and the suicide programs, to begin to discover him or her self. The alters can begin to do a history, who are they, what has happened to them, what is their job, why were they "born", how old are they, etc.

Many of the front alters will at best only be aware of 4 or 5 of themselves. All parts of a programmed multiple are important to recovery. Each part needs to discover what family of alters it belongs to, and how it can interact & communicate with others. Becoming co-conscious with each other is a powerful step toward defeating the programming.

Alters can not truly be eliminated from the mind of a programmed multiple, because they are a dissociated part of the mind. That is why the programmers build dumping places for "dead" alters and other unusable parts, and fragments. Demonic introjects can be cast out, and indeed need to be. Ministers that try to tidy up the mind of programmed multiples by casting out alters have caused untold misery to many victims. At best, they have simply caused the front host alter to go into denial that the system still has many alters. This greatly aids the programmers and handlers, because this is what they want to happen.

Working on an alter system with programming running is very difficult. It is like working on an airplane that is flying. The therapist begins to feel like an acrobat, trying to carry out skillful stunts. It is understandable how for temporary purposes, the therapist may tell the victim: "your mind created that, it can do away with that." Alters, landscapes, programs, etc. are simply constructs of the mind. If the person's mind will accept the removal of a mental image, the therapist may want to use such abilities to gain some control over the "flying airplane" that they want to ground so they can work on it. But removing alters, computers, programs etc. are not easy answers. Alters are actually parts of the mind, and the mind naturally uses its survival instincts to protect each part. Computers and programs will rebuild unless their anchoring mechanisms are taken out. Erasing memories is another trap. Memories are coded and laid in on the grids too. Again the simple solution seems to be to delete the memories--but that again is not the answer. That simply drives the memories deeper, just like alters will secretly hide deeper if they think the therapist wants "to kill them". The victim's mind is very skilled in moving its dissociative pieces around, so it will stay a jump ahead of the therapist. Memories can be "washed" with the negative emotional parts of them saved in a jar.

In order to map, the therapist may want to teach alters how to construct safe places in the mind. Experience has shown, that if a hypnotic-created image of a safe place is constructed, the internal programmers can usually figure out a method to destroy the safe place in approximately 24 hours. With ongoing work, the imagery may survive several days.

As the reader has begun to see, the solution to mapping is simply lots of hard work. Most of the short cuts do not work. There are skilled methods to access deeper alters who know the maps of the systems, but remember the internal worlds are mental constructs that can be shifted by the mind. If there is a skilled member of the support team who is around the victim most of the time and who can take notes, then a great deal can be learned. During day-to-day life, many things will trigger the victim, and as the programming falls apart the MPD will become more visible.

To those who are unfamiliar with programmed DID (MPD), especially relatives, they may view the therapy with horror, because instead of a single person (the front host) now they have a team, or a group, or a world of alters who come and go. It seems that the therapy has created the multiplicity. The therapy has only uncovered what was hidden in secrecy by the programming, but those unfamiliar with programming generally don't understand what is taking place.

Many alters will only show themselves in specialized situations. This is why a variety of activities, a variety of triggering movies, and a variety of hours/days/months are needed to begin to spot and identify new alters. This is where the limited time that the therapist sees the client greatly limits the therapists ability to understand what their client is about. The host alter may come into therapy for years, even though the deeper parts are coming out at night, when nobody else will spot them. There are a variety of methods to get alters to surface, and a variety of ways to get them to dissociate. If a therapist needs to get beyond an alter, they might try talking about something that will cause the alter to dissociate, and then doing things that encourage the part they want to come up. Mapping will call for trust, ingenuity, patience, and good notekeeping. We recommend it.

HOW TO DEAL WITH MAZES

The internal structures of an alter system will have mazes constructed. Mazes are power structures to reinforce feelings of being helpless. Mazes reinforce the helplessness a victim feels. When a child undergoes the horrendous traumas that it is subjected to by sadistic programmers, it knows completely that it is helpless. The child is placed into small enclosures such as isolation booths, boxes, ice boxes, cages, caskets, caves, corners, closets, drawers, hung in isolated forests, stuffed into laundry hampers, holes in the ground, refrigerators, soundproof rooms, tin rooms, under sand, in car trunks, under water, and wells. Some victims of mind-control have endured all of the above list and perhaps more. The mazes connect to those memories of isolation and helplessness. When the alter gets trapped in a maze, all the strong child memories of isolation and helplessness flood the alter, and immobilize it with fear.

The mazes are attached the mote of nothingness sensory deprivation memory, where the child victim was totally trapped.
During a panicked state, the child was placed in a maze. The maze was put in during trauma, go back to what you know as truth, the programming is a lie, do a reversal. To get through the mazes the recovering victim needs to a. stay calm,
b. remember that the maze is a hypnotic suggestion.
c. take your power back by acknowledging that the maze is only a hypnotic suggestion, and you don't need to play this mind game.
d. common sense & calmness will get you out.
e. shrink the maze down, because the maze will seem tall to the child. Shrink the maze down mentally until you can step over it. Start at the top until you can step over the image. When the image of the maze is as small as a speck of dust, blow it away, or sweep it away. If the alter must, use a magic wand, or star dust. Or if the alter is Christian use prayer.

HOW TO DEAL WITH MIRRORS

Illuminati multiple personality systems are structured with many mirrors. As an alter attempts to move in the mind to try to connect with another part (alter or world) of the mind, they often come up against mirrors. The mirrors are guarded by demons, and may have alters attached to the mirrors too. The therapist should never have the client break the mirrors, unless it is done in a very specific way.

The victim's mind is able to visualize a glass room. A mirror that needs to be broken can be placed within a glass box made of 2-way mirrors itself. Then the demons within the mirrors will be confined in the box when the mirror is worked on, rather than have them scatter throughout the entire alter system wrecking havoc like a herd of pigs. The alters which are part of the mirror will also be contained. Once a glass room (box) is created around the mirror, the box can be flooded with the blood of Jesus Christ of Nazareth. Any demonic forces attached to the mirror will be forced to leave, while the alters will stay behind. This way the damage is contained & confined. The authority & power of Christ, who is the victor, is powerful if properly used. The demons can be respectfully commanded to obey & go back to Christ their Creator for orders. Demons are under an authority structure and understand power & authority. The demons are not objects to ridicule, even though we do not agree with what they stand for & what they are all about. They will not respect your authority nor mine, but they will respect the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth. Please do not use some other name like Buddha. If the mirrors are not broken in this fashion, all hell breaks loose for the alters near the mirror. At times, mirrors are constructed within a system so that they are attached to trap doors & tunnels. The mind can be asked to tell whether the mirror is part of a tunnel system or something else. These systems are designed somewhat on the style of the Great Pyramid, in that there are secret tunnels, chambers and trap doors. "Dead" alters may be buried in places.

PROGRAMMING, foundations, destruction of (as taught by an ex-Illuminati programmer)

Everyone comes upon a particular scenario in life, with their own understanding, their own perspective, their own set of things they consider to be foundational truths.

If we really want to understand the mind-control programming, we need to see it in the same context that the Illuminati mind-control programmers see it. Up until now, there has never been any Illuminati programmers who saw any purpose in breaking their oaths and revealing programming from an Illuminati programmer's viewpoint. I have decided to take a bold step and allow you to see how my programming alters understand the programming. This section is like the fragile breath of a baby beginning to test a new world. Each time one sees the miracle of life, as a fragile baby tests out the air of the world with its first breaths, and discovers a new world beyond the womb, it is a powerful testimony of what our God-given life is all about. Our traumatic birth from the cocoon-like world of slavery into freedom is a miracle of Life. Life has a force of its own, and so will our own struggle for freedom.

We can say at the outset of explaining things, that we are not in a position to prove what we have seen and experienced. We could rummage through the dark books of magic to show a paper trail, but if the reader wouldn't believe our personal testimony of what we experienced, then why would they believe the papertrail? What we write in this section are the inner secrets that throughout our life as a programmer we were involved in to do the programming. We understand that some readers may object to certain ideas, and we want to let the reader know that it is O.K. to question what we write. However, this may be your one and only chance to really understand the programming as an Illuminati programmer sees it. So, in the spirit of being helpful to the countless victims of Illuminati mind-control, and in the spirit of hope and openness, we are baring our secrets to the world. Therapists who read this are welcome to send us feedback when they find what we say is validated. If they don't find this validated in their work with the very deepest secrets of a system, then there is a good chance they just haven't gone far enough to find it yet.

Perhaps nothing is more baffling than how our minds work. Life is so complex that most of us give up trying to understand it. It is meant to be this way. The elite who have been gathering the mysteries of life for many thousands of years have wanted the common person to feel confused and overwhelmed. They have wanted the powers of darkness veiled from the people, so that they can use their supernatural evil powers without competition. They have hoarded the best of science, magic, psychology and spiritual knowledge to themselves, and given mankind the crumbs. This isn't something new, they have been keeping secrets from the bulk of mankind for thousands of years. In a sophisticated divide and conquer strategy, the mystery religions were created to hide from the masses the existence, power, and worship of Lucifer. The Illuminati were not going to expose their power base. The Bible is correct that Lucifer was appointed a position of great authority. He understands what an anointing is. And he is skilled in copying that anointing. The Bible writers Isaiah and Paul (in 1 TM 3:6) wrote about how a jealous Lucifer was not content to cover God's throne, but he coveted God's throne. He was a cherub full of wisdom and perfect in beauty (EZ 28:12,14,15) At one point, he was the highest being created by God, and certainly far more intelligent than people imagine. Before we talk about what that intelligence has been able to do, let's hear from the other side of things.

One of our *Vol. 2* readers wrote Fritz the complaint, "You give much much good information, but one wishes you would keep your religious beliefs out of it." Since Fritz did not push any denomination or organized religious group, one must assume that the chapters that quoted scriptures and spoke about demons bothered this reader. For the sake of discussion, let's assume that demons, ghosts, aliens, and angels do not exist. Let's assume for the sake of discussion that all the thousands of documented encounters with such beings did not exist. And finally, You are a therapist, and you sincerely want to help your client who has DID mind-control programming, but you don't want to deal with such things as demonology. Have you ever wondered what the deeper alters think? The deeper cult parts are not going to talk with you, because they know that they will not be listened to. It is extremely doubtful that you will ever meet the deeper hierarchy parts. We have seen therapists scare hierarchy alters away from therapy in just this fashion. The therapist will not even know of their existence, even after years of hard work.

As an agnostic or secular therapist, have you always felt antagonistic toward the supernatural? We can appreciate your fear at confronting something strange, new, and unbelievable, this is the same kind of issues that those of us who are DID must confront every day, as we work on the lies that have been programmed into us. Men are sent to the electric chairs on less evidence than has accumulated over the centuries about the existence ghosts, spirits, and demons. But we aren't trying to convert anyone to believe they exist.

But think about this, **if you,** the agnostic therapist, **do get** a hierarchy part who has been practicing powerful magic for years, learning on the astral plane, observing demons control one's mind-control slaves who are under your authority, etc. what does the agnostic therapist have to offer the hierarchy alters? The hierarchy alters have power and prestige. They are not the alters that take the punishment and abuse. Why should they give up their spiritual power, for what? The point is, if therapists are not willing to give their hierarchy alters something good to replace their dark powers, and if the therapists don't have a spiritual power and spiritual plan that is stronger and better than the spiritual powers and rewards that control the hierarchy alters, then the therapists are not in a position to offer them freedom. By and large, there are extremely few therapists that publicly let on that they have a clue about spiritual captivity. Typically, they will patronize a victim who mentions a supernatural encounter, and add insult to injury by labeling the experience a hallucination. If the supernatural is only a hallucination, one wonders why the CIA has spent billions investigating the mind-control aspects of voodoo, astral projection, ESP, and other supernatural phenomena. The dark spiritual powers that control the lives of the hierarchy alters are very real to these alters. And you will not succeed in convincing them that demons do not exist, when they have spent a life time working with demons, anymore than you are going to convince a dairyman that cows don't exist because you have never seen a cow. So therapists had better wise up, and get practical. Whether they believe in UFOs, whether they believe in demons, is rather irrelevant, they can still facilitate their client in obtaining help in areas that they do not have expertise.

In the last few years, secrets that have been kept for many centuries are being released, but only in such a way that the uninitiated disregard the secrets. While these powerful occult secrets are being revealed, the masses are throwing away the foundations of truth that God has provided them through His Word. The masses see the power of the occult in New Age techniques that use disguised demonic power, but they do not see the dangers. As the world lets their guard down, more and more occult power is being declassified from the hidden mysteries.

While we were in the Illuminati, we witnessed numerous secret libraries that contained secret books that no one has heard of. Books like the *6th & 7th Book of Moses*, *The Spiritual Shield*, Abdul-Kadir's *Book of Power* and recently publicly published *Necronomicon* have spirits attached to them that make them dangerous. To quote from the editor of the english translation of the dangerous *Necronomicon*, "an inconsistency that is to be found in many grimoires of any period and perhaps reveals a little of the magician's mentality; for there is very little that is evil to the advanced magus, who cares not if he deal with angelic or demonic forces, save that he gets the job done!" (*Necronomicon*, p. xxxvii)

During our years as a programmer, we got the job done! Our programming alters did not get to see the world outside of the Illuminati. But if you the reader want to step into that world to see how the programmers think, you are welcome to come with us on our guided tour.

Let's cover some basics. We knew in the Illuminati that the earth was created. There were very specific ideas on how it all happened. Within Illuminati philosophy was the idea of dualism, that there was evil and good, and that you tried to balance your evil deeds with your bad deeds, as you climbed up the ranks of magic (spiritual) power. The Illuminati system is based on rivalry (free-enterprise in its most ruthless form), so there is no room for failure. We ate of the tree of knowledge that Satan promised to Adam that would make Adam into a god. The Illuminati adepts think that they are gods. They are illuminated and believe they are divine. When we worked with Illuminati programmers, we were working with people who believed they were gods and goddesses. They believed that they would be rewarded with the control of the whole universe as well as the means to do it. They also knew where their birthright came from and what their inheritance was. We will explain that shortly.

In Exodus 20:5 we read, "...I, the LORD your God, am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers on the children to the third and fourth generations of those who hate me..." One of the teachings that has been lost (thanks to the infiltration into Christianity by the mystery religions) has been who God meant by "the third and fourth generations of those who hate me." This was the third and fourth generation of those who rebelled without repentance against God Almighty. The real foundation for evil are the original generations that rebelled against God and established the foundation of the rebellion. This was Tubal-Cain, Zilah-bore and Jubal. This has been kept a secret from Christians, so they only work against their father's and grandfather's sins, rather than the real power base, which is Cain, Tubal-cain, and their master/deceiver Satan. Remember how important it was for Christ to atone for what Adam had done. Christ had to go back and repair the damage at the foundation, where the damage to mankind had begun. The foundations of the rebellion against God are the foundations that the programmers go back to.

Our inheritance and authority laid with the Powers of Darkness. Just as a Christian would inherit his Father's kingdom, we were to inherit the Prince of Darkness's kingdom. We served a powerful trinity made up of Lucifer (the authority), Satan (the covering), and the Devil (the evil spirit). This evil trinity of darkness was very well-known to us. The programmers called up the forces of Darkness to give us programming insights. The programming was the heartbeat of Satan and the systems we built into people's minds were modelled on what the programmers understood hell to be like. Every major programmer was a Grand Master or an Adept who was working his way up the ranks in magic power. Obviously, the lower level programmers could not command and place into a victim, demons that they could not magically control. This means that each system is going to reflect the spiritual level of understanding and power that its programmer(s) had.

Let us step back and place our discussion of demonology on the shelf temporarily. What builds the ideas of right and wrong, good and bad within the human mind? The answer is certainly a very complex answer. Our self-concepts which govern how our minds make choices are very complex. In fact, the concepts of what is sin, right or wrong, and what and who we are, are simply vastly more complex than a child's mind can comprehend. Even common sense teaches us, that children are born innocent. The child's mind has been given the wonderful ability to focus on one particular role model (usually a parent) to put together a cohesive idea of values. Those values are very much attached to the signals we get as children from the important people we focus upon to learn values. Separating a child from a role model (i.e. isolating it from any parent or parent surrogate) produces disastrous results. The child has no model upon which to learn values. Without a role-model, the mind must revert back to unlearned, built-in instincts. Does the reader begin to see how deep the destruction of the person is, when dissociated pieces must revert back to functioning on such instinctual unlearned values such as survival, because they have had no chance to observe and assimilate values, and if they do by chance assimilate values, they may well be those of the programmers! When the human mind (or a dissociative piece, or alter) functions and makes decisions only on the basis of survival, can the reader see how this opens the person up to control by fears? Deeper parts are prevented from establishing values that would question the control that demonic entities develop based on fear.

The growth of mature thinking is the result of a complex chronological series of learning experiences. Even alters who have been hypnotically age-progressed by the programmer to see themselves as adults, have never had the opportunity to acquire mature thinking. Their thinking remain simplistic, because there have not been the complex learning stages that mature a person's thinking. Therapists do not realize that even "adult" non-host alters can have thinking that is very immature and basically survival-based. This doesn't mean that the therapist should initially confront the deeper adult alters by telling them that they are merely programming or immature--that would only damage communication. Given time out in the world on their own, they will begin to realize this on their own. What we are trying to say is that the **demonology is attached to a defenseless mind**. The structures that would normally develop so that the mind could ignore demon impulses have never developed. The natural development of a child to grow from innocence and purity into a rational moral person has been stopped. If it is difficult enough for a rational mature person to wrestle with demonic impulses, how much more so for a fragment of the mind that operates purely out of the reptilian-brain's instinct for survival.

During the programming, the Illuminati programmers would call up certain demons to help with the building of this hell in the victim's mind. The programmers will also place important demons into the victim that are attached to strategic places and functions. Allow us to expose some of these:

Abbadon--Abbadon is sovereign over the bottomless pit. Depending on what rank the programmer is at, depends on how the programs are put in. If Abbadon is not put in as a protector of the core, something similar will be done that mirrors the abilities of Abbadon. The 18-month old victim has Abbadon placed into them to "SEAL" (guard) their core. Oaths are given, that provide Lucifer the legal right to capture and hide the core away at this time. Abbadon will be tied to the programming at the base of the mind. The core lays at the base of the mind in a bottomless pit. This bottomless pit is cone shaped--which is the hidden reason that hour glasses are used. The hour glass is a cone shape that is similar to hell's shape. Hell is shaped like a cone. Surrounding the core will be River Lethe. The Lethe River is also known as THE RIVER OF FORGETFULNESS. This river surrounds the core, and protects the core from any alter getting close to the actual core. Depending upon who your programmer is, different imagery will be applied. The programmers always use water as a cleansing element to cause the mind to "clear itself" (clear from a deprog. viewpoint), "cleanse itself" (so-to-speak from a prog. viewpt.). The programmers will use waterfalls, swimming pools, or other bodies of water as their CLEANSING RIVER. To enter into the CLEANSING RIVER or the RIVER OF FORGETFULNESS means that the alter will not know who they are, what they know, or are seeking. If the core ever got strong enough, the River of Forgetfulness Program would hold her there in the base of the mind. The programmers will never access the core through the RIVER, but will go under the river or over it. The silver cord that is hooked to the core then is ran under the RIVER OF FORGETFULNESS to every alter from the core. In only one particular instance, when a programmer was experimenting, did we ever see the silver cord get placed running **over** the river. In 99% of the cases, the silver cord will be run under the River of Forgetfulness. This has proven to be the most effective way to prevent any alter from seeing the core. The only connection between the core and the rest of the system is through the silver cords. It is invisible, especially since it is placed under the river, and assigned a spirit of invisibility. To cut that silver cord is to separate the core (and spirit) that gives life to the system. The system will die if the cord is cut.

As any alter goes toward the core which is in the 9th realm, the alter will bounce off of the River of Lethe, forget what it went for, lose everything it is, and end up as clean slates in the 8th realm. The story of the Ten Lepers (LK 17:12) who came back clean is the programming story that pertains to this programming. All the alters except the one (the core) will go away as a clean slate, and only the one (the core) will return to its master (in this case not Christ as in the Biblical story, but the Divine Master, who is the programmer.)

Should the core ever want to escape it would have to go through the 9 dimensions of Hell to free itself. While the therapists try to get to the core outside-to-inside, the core must go from inside-to-outside. The spirits are laid in from inside to outside, and we will describe the sections of hell, and the rivers from inside-to-outside.

But the first barrier after the River is another River called "DARK HOLES" or in our System "THE RUBICON". The name Rubicon is so appropriate, because it is like Caesar when he crossed the rubicon, you do not come back. The name Dark Hole given by some programmers to this zone, is also appropriate, because you are sucked in and do not return. To cross the rubicon is to burn one's bridges to return. This zone is outer space, it is darkness, it is a pool of darkness. An alter personality bounces off of this into a dark holding tank. The rubicon has 10 spheres (or levels) to it, and its shaped like an amphitheater. Another name for this layer is Malebolge. It holds 10 spheres for 10 classes of traitors to the programming. The spirit that hangs over this is Malebrinche with his evil claws.

The dark holes are wells in the 8th realm. The wells are guarded by Titan demons who will prevent the alter from coming out if they are punished by falling into a dark hole (well).

Within an Illuminati system, you will discover hell. You will discover the rivers of hell which are the Styx, Acheron, Phlegethon, the Cocytus, and Lethe (which was already discussed.) Cocytus encircles the frozen marsh where the monstrous Lucifer is frozen up to his breastplate. Over the years when he tried to free himself, his giant wings produced nothing more than cold winds that froze the ice hard. Deep in an Illuminati system you may find the marsh land where it is cold. Not every programmer has a clear idea of how hell is, so the programming differs, but some type of equivalent of this will be found very deep.

Before providing the names of other demons attached to parts within an Illuminati alter system, allow us to explain how a system is set up from the programmers viewpoint. The programmer sees his inheritance coming from Lucifer. He believes he will reign with Lucifer in hell. Who would want to be a satanist if they did not think that they were going to get advantages from it. Satanists (and Luciferians--actually Illuminati hierarchy members are actually both depending upon the time and circumstances) actually think that they will get eternal rewards for what they are doing. They are very intent on pleasing Satan, and he is a very demanding god. From the programmers viewpoint, he is reproducing Satan's kingdom within the victim--he is reproducing hell in the victim's mind. The programming is very much intended to be the heartbeat of Satan.

The Illuminati at the top understand hell to have 9 realms. Recently a movie was made of the 7 deadly sins, a strange killer decides to kill people to expose to the world the horror of these deadly sins. Each of the deadly sins (pride, avarice, lechery, anger, gluttony, envy, sloth) each are said to have their own realm in hell. This has been a popular view for hundreds of years.

The section grid sheets that list alter grids with codes and·the number of sections may not reveal the 9 realms pattern. The pattern is there, but a single realm of hell can be given several sections of alters if the programmer wants to.

On the outer rim of the River encircling the 8th realm lie the important castles. There are 7 important Grandefather and Mother of Darkness castles. Some of the castles have gold pillars. There are also 7 important temples, such as the Temple of Moloch, where sacrificed babies are placed internally. The Mothers of Darkness and the Grand Master alters have to be able to enter into these internal castles, because they hold the spiritual demonic strongholds for the system. A front set of castles will be placed in the first realm to sidetrack deliverance ministries. The Mothers of Darkness and Grande Dame alters live in the 7th realm of Hell. The 7th, 8th, and 9th realms are considered lower hell. A ferry boat crosses the river that encircles the 7th realm (and the 8th and 9th). The protection for the hierarchy alters are the Delta alters that both male and female systems have placed in the 6th realm. The Delta alters are deadly. They will kill anyone including themselves! This is known as the sin of wrath. It is known as the realm of gloom. This 6th realm is protected by the river Styx. The 3-4-5 realms are not put to match the traditional schemes of Hell. A central computer section with programming alters and their accompanying entourage of alters that make it all work, in a sense compare with the 4th level of hell where there is great gnashing of teeth. These alters have been extremely dehumanized in this area, and many are totally dissociated from any sense of having a body. Really most of them are beyond the gnashing of teeth stage, to the out-of-body stage of dissociation. The second ring of hell is the realm of lust, where the prostitute alters and strip-tease alters are placed, including male child prostitute alters in male systems.

The sixth realm may have the capital city of Dis, where fallen angels are reported to be able to have their R&R.

The River Phlegethan is filled with

boiling blood. It is filled with dead tormented souls.

Titan guardian demons guard the wells.

The internal world will have dark woods with wild animals lurking about waiting to attack those who would be foolhardy to go through them.

Somewhere in the deep reaches of the hell that Satan has built within the mind of the slave, there will likely be the capital city Pandaemonium, which is a palace with many gates and a large meeting hall. In fact, Pandaemonium may be an entire secret world within a mind-control system.

The first realm of hell is the Limbo state, where non-satanic gatekeepers (who are pagan in outlook) float around in mental limbo. The programmers build streams and meadows and other things into this area. There are front castles built into this quadrant. It is separated from the front by the River Archeron. However, it is unlikely that any of the front alters and gatekeepers know the name of this internal river, because it is invisible and they are not told its name. They may feel its effects though. Behind the River Acheron will be kitten alters that have never lived outside of programming.

And setting on top of hell on the surface is the front section. The front system in a typical Illuminati system will be a reflection of the world at large as it known. The front system will have anarchy-coven level witchcraft alters, Christian alters, smart alters, stupid alters, child alters, possibly a token opposite sex alter, and perhaps even a few animal alters. In a sense the top is the widest part of the cone, that retreats into deeper darker levels of the mind (and hell that the programmer has created.) The front system will give the therapist plenty to work with. The front system will look like a chaotic but complete system. There will be a few witchcraft alters that will surface to explain the SRA. There will be a few abused alters who will surface to explain the abuse. All of this will help deflect from the real truth and the real secrets. There will be dozens of child alters to work with. The front system will be designed to hide the design of the entire system. If a therapist wanted to, they could easily spend the rest of their life working on issues of the front system. Some therapists have spent a decade on the front alone. The Illuminati generally appreciates having the front alters stabilized so that they can continue the horrendous abuse of the victim, without the system self-destructing.

Skilled therapists know how to work vertically down into a system. There are methods, and we will not expose trade secrets, on how to descend into a system to get a particular alter. The reader can think to himself or herself, how do you pull up an alter, and how to you get one to leave. For instance, a non-sexual alter will dissociate and leave if you speak about sex. Think about things for a while, and perhaps you will realize how to get the deeper alters you want to work with. Be prepared to get demonic constructs that pretend to be alters, to shell alters, to get mirror images, as well as what you really want. After developing some skill you may even be able to begin to separate the demonic, shell alters and mirror images from the real thing. The skilled deprogrammers know who they need deep in the systems, they go for these alters, and then work with them. But it greatly helps if the front system has done stabilizing work, that has prepared them spiritually and psychologically so that they can handle some "rocking of the boat", if the therapist digs deep.

There are certain alters that can assist more than others in dismantling some of the programs. There are two protector alters who are assigned to protect the deeper parts of the system. They are Lucifer and Dameon. Both of these protector alters (Lucifer, and the protector alter Dameon) will know **part** of the system. But bear in mind their assignment is to keep therapists away from the even deeper parts. So if they do cooperate with a therapist, their cooperation may be to sidetrack the therapist from the deeper parts, and they do not know the entire system. Every Illuminati alter system (100% of the systems while we were in) were constructed with a Dameon alter, which identified with and thought it was Satan/Lucifer. All male and female systems all a Dameon alter. (We suppose now that we've revealed this secret, they may change things, but for **anyone programmed before** this book came out, their system will have a Dameon alter.) The Dameon alter has three different names.

In Fritz's section he mentioned Data Entry Points of a system. This is an alter that can be used for quick access. During the child victim's early years, the Illuminati programmers will take one of the first Gatekeepers, such as Gatekeeper 3 or 4, and will hypnotically show them the entire system. This is so they have quick access to the entire system. This is entirely done via hypnosis (and hypnotic drugs), so that the Gatekeeper no. 3 does not remember that it knows the entire system. Only via hypnosis can the programmer use this Gatekeeper to get to the entire system. After the Gatekeeper does its job, it is hypnotically told to forget.

What kind of thing might the gatekeeper know? The deeper parts of a system would be the All-Seeing Eye of the pyramid. The pyramid may rotate, and its rotation is controlled by a computer. By rotating, secret passageways are aligned. These pyramids contain "dead" alters (who think they are spirits) and protectors such as egyptian soldiers. The Eye itself is a secret passageway. Sometimes a 1-2-3 tap done 3 times opens the passage.

If there is a purgatory in the system, as one approaches it there may be a silver veil wall, behind which may be hell in a system. The high capital of Satan in a system is often Pandaemonium. The palace has many gates and porches. The demons assemble in the palace for councils.

Every alter has demons assigned and attached to it. Here are the names of common ones in an alter system. These are really family names, just like there will be a Susy 1, a Susy 2, a Susy 3, etc. Sometimes satanic programmers put their own twists on the way they pronounce names, these "play on words" help protect the programming. The *Vol. 2* book provides information on **other** important demons involved with the mind-control on pp 299-302.

Abduscius--This demon was involved with the tree programs, the roots of all the trees, such as the willow, oak, ash, yggdrassil, etc. The demon would be joined with the internal Singing Forest of a system. One can look for a familiar spirit connected to all this.

Abigor--This demon was involved with working with fragment parts that make war upon the system of alters. The child armies that protect the programming had this demon attached to them.

Abyss--This is a popular demon with Crowley devotees, and it also goes by the names of Absu, Nar Mattaru, Cutha, Kutu. This may be the internal underworld ocean. A system will have a deep ocean where things are hid.

Archeron--This is a demon who looks like a monster with flaming eyes. This demon was attached to the "eye in the sky". A mirror image of this demon could be used to impart a mirror image to a part.

Adramalech--This grand chancellor demon is the supervisor of Satan's wardrobe and provides a likeness of the himself to the programmer. Adramalech is in charge of all the various costumes and outfits that the occult world use, such as your masonic ritual garments. Because there is one spirit over all this, the various costumes all work together for a united purpose.

Agaliarept --this demon is very important in the structuring, for this demon is used to call up the internal self-helper of the victim. This demon works with the ISH and the system to know what is going on in the internal worlds of the victim. The person's guardian angel (spirit) has been locked away to prevent interference to demons like Agaliarept. The programmers are very familiar with this demon. Another demon that works with the **cult's** ISH is Botis.

Aguares--These grand dukes of Hell are associated with dance, and have familiar family demons with Aguares that help the victim assume sexual gestures, special ceremonial dances that have to be done perfectly, and other certain steps.

Aim--This demon may be attached to the alters who are associated with fire, like Bonfire Child alters, Firechild, etc. He is a fire demon.

Alastor--The demonic executor of court decrees in hell is a guardian. When the system betrays the programming, he will declare the judgements on the system.

Amduscias--This demon of disturbing music continually plays the internal rhymes and riddles internally to reinstate the programming if it is ever touched. This demon then is responsible for the programs to continue running. This demon is a unicorn whose internal music is in an alter system.

Amon--This demonic marquis family shows their faces to scare alters. It may appear like a man with dogs teeth and a head like a raven.

Andrealphus--If a victim has a peacock demon it may be Andrealphus.

Asmodeus--This demon is attached to create lust in the system, and marital discord.

Baal--This demon can make internal things go invisible. He can look like a cheshire-cat. He matches how things disappear in the Alice of Wonderland story, where only gold objects stay. He speaks hoarsely, and can appear as a toad, a cat, a man or all 4 at once. He rules over 66 legion of demons. He is a king demon ruling in the east, and important to Freemasons.

Baalberith--The is the chief secretary of hell who is attached to the internal library of an alter system. He will keep the records of the genealogy of the victim's Illuminati bloodline.

Barbatos--When a mind-control victim says, "I talk to my animals and they talk to me", this is the demon that carries out the voice of other animals.

Beelzebub--(See the article on the spirit Hydra below.) According to Illuminati beliefs, they must serve Beelzebub, and he in turn will reward them with financial wealth so that they can control and destroy the nations. They believe that Beelzebub only wants to be addressed in Yiddish or Hebrew. Beelzebub demands souls in payment for his favors. It is not known, technically speaking, which manifestation of the false trinity will be the beast who will be worshipped by taking "the Mark of the Beast", but it may be Beelzebub who has demanded worship since antiquity. The Illuminati Sisters of Light are married in ritual to Beelzebub, while the Mothers of Darkness are married to Lucifer. Beelzebub is important to the upper levels of Freemasonry which do secret Luciferian rituals. There are a number of secret manuscripts of the *Holy Book of Beelzebub* located at important Masonic centers. The book is large, written in blood on parchment.

Behemoth--This hugh demon who presides over feasting in hell is attached to cannibalistic alters who must perform cannibalism in rituals.

Belphegor--This demon seduces men with wealth. He will be attached when the programmers use blackmail and bribery to insure that the victim goes the direction they want the victim to go. In a sense, he is part of the carrot (in the carrot & the stick tactics of the programmers.)

Blackwell--This demon is important for the mind-control, associated with dissociation

Botis--This viper demon is attached to the cult's ISH in the internal system. He knows the past and present things within a system.

Captaintto--A spirit involved with astral projection.

Changeling--This fairy demon is attached to child alters. The actual mechanics are that the child alter presents itself as a mirror of the child, and the child alter assumes that it is the this fairy demon itself. The child alter takes on the fairy demons identity, and then the fairy demon attaches itself. The end result is that the child alter doesn't know what it is, or where it begins and the fairy begins. This creates an alter/demon construct, of which there are many within a normal Illuminati system.

Crocell--This demon makes the noise like rushing water that alters talk about hearing in their internal worlds.

Dantalion--A demonic duke who has many countenances. He is a joker within the system.

Decarabia-Appears as a star, and Pentacles is also a star appearing demon.

Flauras--This demon along with the demon Andras are attached to alters who must commit ritual murders.

Foras--This demon is knowledgeable. It can teach logic, the virtues of herbs, how to live long and supposedly how to become invisible. It can appear as a strong man in human form.

Forneus--This demon gives men the ability to have speaking in tongues and the ability to have gifted speaking abilities. He works with Renove, who is a demon who assists with demonic speaking in tongues and rhetoric.

Furcas--This demon teaches philosophy.

Furfur--This demon controls lightening, thunder and strong winds. He is attached to internal programs that are connected to internal weather phenomena. For instance, if a victim is having internal earthquakes, if the support person knows how to call up and command Furfur he can cast Furfur out, and stop the internal earthquakes immediately.

Guardians--Enforcer demons are put in place to protect the system.

Goblins--These are mischievous and ugly fairies that are placed internally to protect the rivers and secret places in the internal worlds.

Haborym--This is a demon of fire who is placed in control of the fire around the internal hell pit.

Haures--This demon hold the history of the fall of creation within the internal library.

Hydra-- In the Illuminati, a member takes oaths to three demonic entities, Lucifer, Beelzebub, and Hydra. Who is Hydra? In the Christian New Testament, Hydra is described in the last book, Revelation 17:7-9. It is a beast with 7 heads. The Illuminati do ritual worship where they do special chants, and blood sacrifices, and bow seven times to obtain Hydra's presence. During rituals, when Hydra appears within the room, one of the ways Hydra communicates is by taps. When it taps 3 times, this means the third letter C, which also can mean "see". Later, after the child victim of mind-control has experienced the horrifying ritual of seeing Hydra appear and tap out its messages, the child victim can be taken in and programmed to special codes that are portrayed as knocks (taps). The ritual trauma memory is pulled up and used for a base for the programming. This is how the traditional 3 tap signal came to be. It is secretly based upon demonic communication. You will often encounter mind-control victims who are programmed to what they describe as morse code. The foundation for all this morse code programming was communication with the god/demon Hydra.

Hydra by the way is also the god of Freemasonry, because Luciferians control Freemasonry.

Hydra hisses like a snake. A partial quote from an oath to Hydra would include, "...lead my arm, you have the supremacy of the universe, because you move it, all is your creation. Heaven and earth belong to you, which is fulfilled in your glory, which are images of your greatness and superiority. You are helpful protector of each of yours, you Enemy- of-the-crucified. In your name I curse God, the Trinity, Christ...In trust of your revelations, in the faith of your might above all Creation; visible and invisible things. I have the right to request and receive from you what you know."

Hydra is acknowledged as the supreme master by a blood oath. You must sell yourself to Hydra totally, even to the point of suicide. In return you are promised honor, power, and wealth. The dragon also promises to give confidence to the pact-maker. As the Illuminati understand it, demons are only interested in soul-pacts or sutleges (pacts written in blood on paper that are swallowed).

Klotilde--This spirit demands that the slave never get involved in human love. To love with human love would be to suffer.

Knochers--These are tiny spirits who work in the internal gold mines. They are the Keepers of the Jewels. What are the jewels? The jewels are those parts created by master programmers such as Dr. Mengele, which are left as clean slates from which the programmers can build from later.

Leraje (Leraikka)--This demon is used for ritual battles.

Lucifer/Satan/Devil--This triad has Black/Red/Gold as their colors.

Malebranche--This is the demon with the evil claws that is a tormentor in the 8th realm. Readers will remember seeing his presence in this author's collages in the *Illustrated Guidebook to Monarch Mind-Control Programming*.

Maleficia--This demon is not used internally, but is used when casting spells to hurt others. This demon is also employed to punish disobedient slaves.

Malphas--A builder of high towers. He may also get involved with the hypnosis.

Mammon--His family of demons creates the internal worlds, especially the palaces and towers.

Marax--This demon helps the Mothers-of-Darkness understand astrology. A Mother will loose her powers if he is removed.

Marbas--Demon attached to help the system heal, or get diseased.

Marchosias--This is a family of fighting demons. They work well with fighting alters.

Melchom--This demon is placed internally to oversee the internal treasures of a system. This demon is very secret and understands the Grand Druid Council.

Mulciber--This is one of the builder demons who helps construct the internal worlds. The programming scripture that applies is "Unless the Lord builds the house, they labor in vain." This scripture is misused to teach alters, that unless this lord (demon) is involved in the construction of something internal, the alters labor in vain, because it will only be a superficial temporary structure. To insure that all structures put in by a therapist are temporary, all kinds of alters and demons will scurry about in a frenzy to figure out how to destroy any internal structure that the therapist & victim's alters try to build to oppose the programmer's control.

Murmur--This demon is in charge of the soul. He is connected to core issues. (See the article on the core to understand the core's issues.)

Navky--This is a Spirit of Murder that is tied to the sacrifice of unbaptized children.

Nebiros--This is a field marshall who is given command of the little robots alters and fragment purpose armies.

Nysrock--This is a demon chief in hell within a system.

Osculum infame--This refers to the Sabbat ritual that Mother's of Darkness perform where they "kiss the ass" of Satan, also known as the "Kiss of Shame".

Paimon--This knight spirit is very obedient to Lucifer and is used as an enforcer in an internal system. He continues to report back as to whether the internal worlds are intact or not.

Paymon--This demon is placed into alter systems of politician to give them the ability to speak in public.

Phenex--This demon is a poet who speaks to exorcists but supposedly does not need to obey exorcists.

Philatanus--This is a Spirit of Sodomy and Pederasty

Procel--This demon can make internal water freeze or boil.

Purson--This demon blows internal trumpets, and is believed connected to the revelator to the AntiChrist. He also knows the system.

Put Satanachia--Commander-in-chief of the call back army's in a system especially the army's that ride on armageddon horses. He will play an important role in the end times.

Raum-- He destroys internal parts or internal cities.

Sabnack--This demon is attached to death programming. If a slave does the "unpardonable sin" against Lucifer and his programming then Sabnack helps insure that the heart of the victim will stop.

Seera--This demon is in charge of internal perceptions of time. He can make time fly at whirlwind speed or to slow down.

Seraphim-- The highest order of the Heavenly host. Illuminati systems will have seraphim placed into them.

Shaba lidoma--This demon bring depression

Shax--This alter works with deaf and dumb alters.

Sitri--This spirit is used in the covens for sexual enchantment and nudity.

Speculum--This spirit is an internal crystal ball reader. He may also use mirrors.

Succubus--A female demon who preys on men sexually. This demon will be active during rituals.

Sytry--This demon is attached to stripper alters. It encourages women to show themselves naked.

Uphir--This demon heals in the name of Satan. He is placed into a system to help it heal quickly.

Volarire--A gatekeeper to a world or city, will play games to protect that part of system

Watchers--Demons attached to flying monkey alters who are used for observation in a system.

Zepar--This demon drives women insane. It is attached to insane programming.

It's really hard to describe spiritual things to those who haven't experienced similar spiritual things. We want to help people begin to get a feel for what works and what doesn't work. The following is a few minutes of a transcript of a deliverance. The deliverance minister has never been told anything about this person's alter system, but the Holy Spirit reveals that the system is 13x13. The deliverance minister speaks about grace and love. He also does something very important: he teaches the alters how to put a spiritual canopy of protection around them so that they can sleep without spiritual attacks at night. The spiritual canopy that is built by this alter system ends up being helpful. Here is only a tiny portion of this deliverance session.

Alter: You can't love what isn't.
Support Person: They've had their hearts and souls taken away. Many of the things they need to be able to have a relationship with Christ have been stolen from them.
Alter: How did I get this two-headed beast?
Deliverance minister: You got it from the time of conception given to you by Dad. It is a two-headed demon. One of the heads goes back 18 generations, that would be about 400 years. The other head dates back 22 generations. Allow me to explain, there are 365 levels of demons.... We need to walk in one accord. I realize your system has many of you who don't know how to, and also that there are many who don't want to.
Alter: God can't love us.
Deliverance minister: God will remove all the curses, all the spells, the garbage, the chains, the tar, the slime, the pain, the bondage...All these things which carry bad feelings, pain and unbelief will be taken care of. Each curse carries memories....
Alter: How did our light side even know Christ with those demons?
Deliverance minister: It's because of Grace, amazing grace. [Then the deliverance minister explains how demons imitate alters and play roles within an alter system.]
Father we come before your throne, strengthen the canopy about this house, and purify it with your holy fire. We ask that you seal and cleanse this room with your holy blood, and every object about us, and each one of us. Seal and cleanse us with your blood. Purify us with your fire. I acknowledge the diamond shaped head that encapsulizes her head and is filled with your essence. Will you fill that diamond head with the blood of Jesus Christ of Nazareth. I recognize that this represents your eternal ownership of this body. Father, we acknowledge that you love them no matter what. Father, I'm glad you love them, even the alters who don't know that you love them. Remove any demonic shields from these alters and send them to the abyss. Father, bind Lucifer from interfering. Set some warring angels about us to help. Thank you. Father, I ask for every

anointing that we need for this work. I ask you to acknowledge all three of your servants. Order our thoughts. Keep this floating diamond over her Lord. Now fill up her System's 13 by 13 by 13 grid right now with your blood. [End of quoted material.]

We have watched deliverance ministries in action, we have visited and heard other deliverance ministries give reports on what they have done, and we have seen what works for us. What we have seen is that some of the better ministries are on the basic right track and are able to help in some important areas, but by and large there is little depth to what most Christians are doing, and some blindsides. We can also add some of our own first hand observations. Our own master was far more concerned about deliverances being done to our system, than he was for a psychiatrist to work with us. But we also have a view of things from having been on the other side, that is from the programmers viewpoint, and we can honestly say, that the programming is so far reaching, that the mind-control victim could use a chiropractor, a medical doctor, a psychologist, a guard, a prayer partner, a friend, and a deliverance minister. This is why we applaud the few groups that have established safe-houses and teams of people to assist mind-control victims. The type of issues we write about in articles like this are enough to challenge support teams who are working with well stabilized programmed DID's who have worked on issues for a while.

The removal of foundational programming can take several different avenues, but there are several constants in how to fight the programming. The stronger a person's alters are spiritually, the better they will do. The healthier a victim is, the more chance they have to survive the debilitating effects of the programming. The more humor, rest, and internal peace the recovering victim has, the better they will do. Morale is important. The morale of the support team is essential. The therapist has to have a strong conviction that hope exists for the victim, and the victim needs to have this hope conveyed to them. The will to resist needs to be fed. We know that this is nothing new, but it is so important that we don't want to neglect emphasizing it.

The reader will find many suggestions and hints within this book on routes to take to dismantle the programming. Where there is a will, there is a way. Sometimes the victim will loose the willpower, and that is where the support team must pick them up. Let's not kill our wounded, instead let's dig into ourselves to find the resources to minister to them even more. We know of some ministers who have justified dumping programmed-multiples because at some point they didn't met the minister's criteria of wanting to work on issues. There were times when our system didn't want to work on issues, but we're glad Fritz didn't give up on us. On the flip side, we also believe that support teams and therapists need to take a serious look at who they decide to invest time helping. The unfortunate truth is that our time and energy is limited and we should choose sincere candidates who are capable of success.

RATIONALES, of the abusers

Persons, who are just getting into the subject of Illuminati mind-control, naturally ask "Why do the abusers do what they do?" and "How can the abusers mentally justify doing what they do?" We will not attempt to give a comprehensive answer to this question, which would take a book, but will try to give a condensed version of why it happens, and how it is justified in the abusers' minds.

First, we'll look at what psychologists are saying, & then we will build upon that to give a more accurate sketch of why the abuse happens.

Psychologists who have studied parents who sexually abuse their children have concluded that such parents are extremely narcissistic. Narcissism means self-love. They go on to say that essentially everyone is narcissistic, but the abusers are extremely so. The psychologists are on the right track, but not quite there. (Hold this thought for a moment.)

The psychologists also think that the sexual abuse is done to gratify the abuser's need for a reward, in the same vane that some are also alcoholics. The mind-control abuser needs to be worshipped, which will gratify the need to be desirable & important. Because children idolize adults, and since children are innocent & powerless, the abuser enjoys dominating the child sexually, mentally, & spiritually.

Because knowledge of the 7 brains has been kept away from the public's general awareness, the public and psychologists don't think in these terms. Knowledge of the 7 separate brains that make up the human mind are how the Illuminati successfully carry out mind-control. Psychologists carrying out research have reported between 40 to 80 % of the abusers were abused themselves as children. When it pertains to trauma-based mind-control, we can assure the reader that 99.999% of the abusers have been abused themselves as children. That abuse has locked the abuser into making the reptilian brain their principle brain. The reptilian mind thinks only in terms of survival. It thinks in terms of its own needs. What the psychologists call narcissism is simply the survival-type thinking (the self-love so to speak) of the reptilian brain which we all have. The only difference is that some non-multiples are able to develop their higher brains so that they can develop their conscience and true spiritually enlightened thinking as the guiding source of their actions.

Everyone has a reptilian first brain. Almost any male can be made to tap into that survival instincts and can be made to be sadistic. The programmers create clean slate alters which are created in the crucible of survival. When a person fears for his life, the higher brains are shut down. These alters are simply working from the reptilian brain. They are power-based, greed-based, survival-instinct-based alters. These alters are then given scripts that morally justify this thinking, so that the reptilian brain can block any future second thoughts from the two highest brains.

This is where Illuminati Luciferian doctrine is important. The Illuminati teach their Grand Masters that they are the elite of the world, that their rulership is their birthright, and that Lucifer has taught them programming so that they can be a god, and follow after Lucifer's own heartbeat. They believe that they are pleasing Lucifer by carrying out mind-control on children and then presenting these "little treasures" to Lucifer. These Illuminati programmers are not going to say, "I doing this because I'm a sinner [which is a higher brain concept]", but they are going to say, "I'm doing this because I'm a god." Power is a need that stems from the reptilian brain. Power can be directed into proper channels by our higher brains, but due to the mind-control that the Illuminati programmers themselves have received there is nothing structured in the mind to veto this power-hungry thinking.

Also Satanic doctrines, like LaVey's and Crowley's "Do what thou wilt", give the mind a blocker to prevent the higher brains from overriding the actions based on the reptilian brain's selfish survival based thinking.

There are many other rationalizations, for instance, "this is the way our fathers and forefathers have traditionally done things", "no pain no gain", and "this child (such as Marilyn Monroe) would have been a nothing, but by carrying out the programming we are building the person into something". The World System has set up dialectics such as the Cold War, which gave lower echelon abusers the survival-based justifications that mind-controlled slaves were needed if their side were to win the Cold War, and protect their nation.

They justify their criminal behavior by saying that most people want leaders, and they are merely providing that leadership. Most people have been conned into accepting the leadership of others. Most people go through a stage in life like the hippies, where they want to think for themselves, but just like the hippy movement they end up taking the attitude if you can't beat them join them. But even the most average of persons has an incredible computer between the ears, and are far more capable than they are given credit for. At least the potential is there, if it weren't stolen by an education system that dumbs students down, and the other hassles in life that steal so much potential from people.

Because the abusers have seared their consciences, they often look at the abuse as a game (albeit a sadistic one). At that point, several of them may try to outdo each other and the abuse becomes an ongoing contest to see who can outdo each other.

In some cases, not only do the hidden Luciferian doctrines support the abuse (such as reincarnation), but the front alter's religious views may also support the abuse. Numerous passages in the Talmud, give legal religious sanction for pedophilia, torture and other crimes. Because this fact has been covered up, it would be appropriate to quote some of the fuller Talmudic translations (because some of the translations into english leave out passages that are in the original Hebrew which promote such things as pediophilia and sodomy. The book of *Yebamoth* of the *Talmud*, 2 Vols., London, The Soncino Press, 1936, page 397 states, "Harlotry is not applicable to bestial intercourse." In other words, intercourse with a beast is not regarded as a sin of intercourse. Page 402 (as well as 403) of the same Talmudic book states, that it is O.K. for a priest to have "co-habitation" with a girl proselyte under three. It states, "A proselyte who is under the age of three years and one day is permitted to marry a priest" or the daughter of a proselyte is "eligible to live with a priest" and have intercourse. In Kethuboth (another book of the Talmud) pp. 54, 57, 58, 59 provide more examples of legal religious justification of adults having sex with children. For instance, on pg. 58 it states, "When a grown-up man has intercourse with a little girl it is nothing.""Although the intercourse of a small boy is not regarded as a sexual act, nevertheless the woman is injured by it as by a piece of wood." This does not mean that all readers of the *Talmud* practice such things, but it's one example of many of how religious beliefs & cultural beliefs give sanction to abuse. Some deranged criminals are hiding behind their religious covers, & these religious covers are across the board. Some small size cults teach that "free sex" between all persons is "liberation" and "love". In such cases, one has a layering of rationalizations, from the front clear down to the deeper levels.

And as for the abuse, many of the handlers think that it is O.K. because they have the ability to erase any memory of the abuse from the slave's mind, and make it "O.K." They also rationalize that they are "expanding the mind" of their slaves. You've all heard the New Age clap trap that man is on the edge of a new evolutionary leap forward, and they talk themselves into believing they are part of that great leap forward. Some of the leading mind researchers, who help program seem to honestly believe this. As rediculous as this may sound, people will believe rediculous things if it will justify to their own minds, the cruelty they perpetuate on innocent people.

At the heart of all the mind-control, you will find the heartbeat of Lucifer and the willingness of his followers to do what they believe he wants.

REALITY VS PERCEPTION

This article will discuss the ins & outs of an alter's perception of things, and the external world. In many ways, it might be helpful for the client and the therapist to view each other as two beings from separate worlds who need to learn some common means to communicate.

Stephen Toulmin said, "All knowledge bears the imprint of the mind's own structure."

There is some truth that our minds help us organize our perceptions. A newborn baby will turn its head toward a sound, even though it has not had any experience in the world that would teach it that anything important is in the direction of the sound. It knows to do this because it is born with this ability.

As the magician uses a slight of hand, the programmer uses a slight of "the mind's abilities to learn".

As we live in the real world, we grow up & learn meanings to words. Our ideas are representations of what exists in the world. The problem between the programmed multiple and the common person in the street who is not programmed, is that the programmed multiple's experiences indeed make his or her ideas representations that exist in the reality that the programmers created for the various alters. One might say that many of these objects in an internal world are objects of a multiple's imagination. This may be ultimately true, but the programming has a reality of its own and may be the best reality that the alter has had a chance to apprehend. For instance, at one point Fritz hooked up a heart/pulse monitor to prove to an alter that she had a heart. However, this alter was programmed to trance out if hooked up to such a device. The device read "no pulse", and the alter said "See I told you I had no heart". Fritz was chagrined, but he didn't give up. He explained that the programming was causing this alter to trance, so the alter tried hard not to trance and the next time, there was a weak reading. The third time, there was even a better reading, as the alter mastered the ability to stay grounded.

When people remember something or imagine something, one can not be sure if these ideas relate to something that really existed. Generally, when a person perceives something, unless he is drunk, his perception is going to conform to reality. However, the programmers mess with the mind of victims so much, that the deeper alters only live in a deep hypnotic trance. They only perceive as they have been programmed to perceive. This really is a tribute to how incredible the human mind is. The human mind can creatively design all kinds of concepts and can function in an imaginary world if that is what it takes to survive.

One of the things that most of the alters need to develop is a sense of external reality. This means that they need to spend time holding the body and experiences life outside of their external world which they live in. They will also need to learn that truth is not whatever you make it. Of course, the victim of mind-control already has many doubts and to realize that they can't trust their own judgement is difficult to accept. Some of the alters will be left-brain and some will be right-brain alters.

The therapist will experience various "quasi-psychotic" symptoms, but there is no reason to be alarmed by it. It simply comes with the territory. Because the alters systems are complex, and may be subjected to programming at a particular time, alters may not present a consistent picture. The therapist may begin to wonder if the entire thing is a very complex game for the client's alters. Over time the therapist will begin to sort things out. If the client does not have the ability to communicate, there may develop many incidents that are difficult to understand. Again, the therapist needs to remind her or his self that there is probably a good reason WHY the alters are acting the way they are acting. As this book has repeatedly brought out, the phenomena of programmed multiplicity has been very poorly understood by therapists.

RESPONSIBILITIES, tips to face new ones

The programmers succeed in what they do, because they know how the mind works, and they work with the victim's mind. The support team must do the same. The programmers know how the mind needs the stage set for it to learn new things, and they will take the time and effort to lay the groundwork, the foundation. Likewise, when the deeper alters begin experiencing the real external life, they need to have the groundwork, the stage set for them to learn new things. The deeper alters can be encouraged to put their survival skills to work. The deeper alters need to forget the "I can't"s and recognize that they have powerful survival skills that can be redirected to make them successful in the external world.

When deeper alters who are learning about the outside world see a need, they need to tackle that need. If one sees dirty dishes, then wash them. If one sees a barren front yard, plant some flowers. If one sees a hurting person, give solace. By using their powers of observation the deeper alters can see needs and address those needs around them. This will give them a sense of accomplishment and power. They will then begin to recognize their worth and their potential.

After one looks around for needs to address, the next step is to ask yourself what you'd like to try doing. If you think you'd like to do something, then try it. Go to a hobby shop, or to the library and get some ideas on what new activity you can do. You will be surprised at what you will be able to accomplish.

Alter can help alters, and can work together as teams on new projects.

Deeper alters need to have the goal of having a full range of emotions. Emotions will help them achieve maturity. Anyway, who gave the right to the programmers to say you can't step outside of programming?

SALVATION, obtaining it, issues for multiples

An infant will enjoy playing with a box, and later as a child will enjoy trees. When the child gains an intellectual understanding of boxes and trees as an adult, the simple fun of being with these things is lost. Sometimes people would enjoy God more if they didn't become so intellectual about Him, and just played with Him as a child. There are a number of people who insist on quarreling about what has already passed. How could God have done this? Why is God so cruel? Why is God so merciful? Why does God love me a sinner? Why does God hate me a sinner? With something so vast and big like God, He often gets the same treatment accorded the weather, in that everyone has their own opinion of how the weather should be. If we couldn't understand adults as children, why do we think we can understand God? Wouldn't it be more fun if we could crawl up in His spiritual arms and experience His concern and kindness, rather than trying to dissect His actions with intellectual theories. But one thing God's Word makes clear, our happiness is not His goal for us in life, His goal is that we would be conformed to the image of Christ. When we see our problems in that light, we see that our problems are actually just what we needed to develop the Christ-like ministry God wants for us. Did you ever wonder why your parents wanted you to have good habits?--you wanted to play, and they wanted you to have good habits. They weren't interested in your idea of happiness, they were trying to develop character. But rather than fight with God, why don't we try to have some child-like wonder, isn't it amazing how beautiful life is? Watch a spider spin a web. Watch the sunset. Watch a mother cat and her kittens.

We sometimes think that our own problems are unique. We like to think that our modern world has its own unique problems. Western civilization has been built upon the ancient wisdom of the Word of God. The Bible records that in ancient times there were: child sacrifices (for example see 2 KGS 17:17), satanic rituals where they did self-inflicted cuts (for example 1 KGS 18:26-28), witches who used magic paraphernalia like rings (EZE 13: 17-21), secret magic books (ACTS 19:17-19), child prostitution (for example 1 KGS 14:24, & JOB 36:14), and political leaders who were into satanic witchcraft (2 KGS 21:1-16), and much more. On and on we could go describing many of the same problems that people face today--including mind-control.

This does not mean everything was exactly the same. The Roman toilets and swimming pools looked similar to ours, but their elite had only 4 wheeled carts rather than cars. Obviously, a Roman senator didn't have to worry about a flat tire. But when it comes to matters about the human soul, the human spirit, eternal salvation, guilt, shame, greed and hate, and tax collectors the issues are exactly the very same issues as they were thousands of years ago. The ancient wisdom of the ancients which is embodied in the Holy Bible is still as rich and powerful for us today as it was in ancient times.

That ancient wisdom said, "Open your mouth for the speechless...and plead the cause of the poor and needy" PROV 31:8. I wish we could find a few Christians who would stand with us to open their mouths for all the alter personalities of the 2 million mind-controlled slaves in this country who do not have a voice, and that we could plead the cause of these needy mind-controlled victims throughout this land.

What you sow, you reap. In street parlance this translates "what goes around, comes around." If we want to reap some salvation for ourselves, we had better sow some salvation. What have you been planting?

One of the most difficult topics for programmed multiples and for those who work with them IS THE QUESTION: HOW do PROGRAMMED MULTIPLES GET SALVATION?

We have been saved, we are being saved, and we will be saved. Salvation comes in many tenses.

If one alter gives his life to Christ, does that save an entire system? Can a system of alters lose their salvation if the front is Christian and the deeper parts are active in rituals where humans are sacrificed? How can a person be two things at once? Does each alter need a separate baptism? Is it wrong to baptize different alters of one system? These are a few of the questions that have plagued multiples.

God is not a respecter of persons. Everyone will be treated equally and equitably by God. There is not one standard for multiples and another for non-multiples. **The question is** JUST WHAT ARE GOD's STANDARDS? It may surprise the reader to be told that in spite of all the preaching that is going on today--many of the teachings of Christ and the teachings of the Bible have been lost, including many that concern salvation.

Christ said it was foolish to gain the whole world, but to lose one's own soul. By extension it would be foolish to gain power over all the internal worlds of oneself or of another person, and to lose one's own soul. Don't be foolish, don't lose your soul.

Can you imagine a company building an exclusive ship like the Queen Mary, installing many beautiful things, the latest communication equipment, the best safety equipment and then when it is completed, set the ship adrift without a crew to float aimlessly around and to be tossed by each storm and to sink without any purpose. The human is far more wonderfully made than any ship. Our brains are still far superior in many ways to the best computers. Do you think that God created mankind (and crowned him with "glory & honor" according to His Word in PS 8:5) just to cast mankind adrift?

Some men have decided that man is adrift. That man must chart his own course--somewhat like the ship deciding to sail itself. Adam Smith, a scottish intellectual of the 18th century was convinced that science would save mankind from war and superstition (which is how he viewed Christianity). Science did not save us from war, nor have the teachings of Christ lost meaning as some superstitious gobblygook, but the Words of Christ are just as powerful today as they were 2,000 years ago.

Christ said that the truth shall set men free, and those words are no less true today than they were in his day.

There are plenty of philosophies that will convince you that you were designed by God merely to be abandoned, that there is no purpose to life. But why did the prodigal son feel miserable eating with the pigs? Because he was a man and he knew that he was meant to have a better life. People know that they are called to something better. They are often not content to think that their life is meaningless, because they know better.

In the sight of God the creator there are no common people, only special important people that He ordained. Almighty God loves us better than we love ourselves. Not Sally over here because she goes to church several times a week, nor Sue over here because she has the Bible memorized better than anyone else. He loves us, all of us, good and bad, because He created us and as our Creator He loves what He created in His own image. Christ asked people to get to know him. He didn't ask his disciples to go to church on sunday. He didn't give them a Bible and command them to follow the Bible, he asked them to learn from him and to follow him and to get to know Him. God allowed a persecution to come upon the early Christians so they would quit going to church and would go to the world and tell them the good news that their Creator loved them and had a plan for their lives. "That day a great persecution broke out against the church in Jerusalem, and all except the apostles were scattered...So the people who were scattered went from place to place telling the good news." ACTS 8:1

The good news IS NOT that you are unworthy, God's Word says that all are worthy of anything good that He has.

The good news IS NOT that we are rejected and worthy of punishment. God's Word says that he suffered rejection and punishment so that we can realize that we don't need to.

The good news IS NOT that we should be ashamed of ourselves, and walk around in guilt, I'm sure most of you were told at some point, "Shame on you, you are a bad person." God sent his only begotten-son to love us, not to judge us. Don't you think He knew what people were like, when he came to show us God's love?

The self-righteous and those with religious spirits enjoy making people feel guilty. They threaten you with rejection, punishment, and want us to lower our self-esteem. After a while a person surrenders to their incessant religious spirits, and decides that "I'm stupid, I'm worthless, I'm bad, etc." But guilt is NOT the answer. Guilt is not the good news. But you may be protesting--But isn't that what the Bible wants, doesn't it want us to be guilty, doesn't it say "for all have sinned and come short of the glory of God."? Doesn't it say, "All of us like sheep have gone astray. Each has turned to his own way."? Doesn't it say, "For whoever keeps the whole law, yet stumbles in one point, he has become guilty of all".?

Surprises of surprises, the Bible NEVER asks man to feel guilty. The Biblical greek words that translate guilt (hupodikos, opheilo and enochos), mean guilty in the same sense that if you leave your car overparked and the meter runs out--you have violated a law and are guilty of violating that law---BUT THAT IS SOMETHING ENTIRELY DIFFERENT THAN FEELING GUILTY. We have been told all our lifetimes by the modern day pharisees that it is God who wants us to feel guilty. God wants us to feel loved. God wants us to realize that He loves us more than we can ever love ourselves. God is love, God never tells us that God is guilt.

I can do all things through Christ Jesus who lives in me! Wow! How can God expect us to have a low opinion of ourselves if He tells us that we can do all things through Christ! He never expected us to have a low opinion of ourselves. Jesus is called the most humblest man ever, and yet he had no sins to castigate himself about. He couldn't crawl in the dust and plead for God's mercy on his wretchedness, so how did he get to be the humblest man? Because humility is not self-denigration. We have been fed a lie here too by the religious pharisees of our day. Humility means knowing God's plan for your life. God wants us to learn His ways which are the ways of love. Religious spirits don't want to treat people with love, they want to judge them, they want to hit them over the head with religion, they want to legalistically find ways to prove that their fellow man is bad. They can always show you how they are right and the other person is wrong. They like to use the law--but they seldom use love. The Word of God says that the letter of the Law kills, but the Spirit of Love gives life.

Yes man has fallen greatly, and mankind sins greatly. But where sin abounds, God's love and strength are poured out in more abundance. Christ said, if God clothes the wild flowers in all their beauty won't he do more for you if you have faith?

On the one hand is the beauty of mankind--"bought with a price" "in the image & glory of God" and "in the likeness of God"; and on the other hand this beautiful image of God has wandered off in total rebellion to his Creator. But even in that state of rebellion God still sees worth and value in a man. The enemies of God, such as the mind-control programmers, love to make people think that God has rejected them because they are bad. And since our parents didn't listen to us, and told us we were bad, we think that God acts like our parents.

But the message that Christ's disciples gave was not one of guilt, and shame, and religious rules, but sounded like this, "For David, after he had served his own generation by the will of God, fell on sleep, and was laid unto his fathers, and saw corruption. Be it known unto you therefore, men and brethren, that through this man [Jesus] is preached unto you the forgiveness of sins: and by him all that believe are justified from all things, from which ye could not be justified by the law of Moses." ACTS 19:36-39

When my deeper alters thought about forgiveness, the programming kicked in and I got suicidal. These alters had been programmed to think they had no heart, that they were bad, etc. Forgiveness was a concept that they could not grasp. But these alters were able to take the first step of faith. (Allow me to switch to first person:) I told myself, if God said it, I had to believe it, because God said WHOSOEVER asks for forgiveness is forgiven. The day you seek Me with your whole heart is the day you'll find me. (cf. PS 34:8-10, 2 CHR. 15:2, HEB 10:22). I stepped outside of the programming and believed God was the integrity of His own Word. I couldn't rationalize the forgiveness, I simply accepted it on the basis of God's integrity. As the months past, I realized that the Holy Spirit had quietly done His work, and had freed me from the guilt that I had carried, and freed me from the effects of the programming. I did feel forgiven. I didn't intellectually comprehend forgiveness, the programming blocked me mentally, but it couldn't block the Holy Spirit working in my heart. Forgiveness came to my deeper parts by standing on the Word of God. Now I was free to acknowledge the things God had for me in life.

If your prayers are not going anywhere, and you feel like God is not hearing your prayers--then quit praying, and start trusting that God knows your situation. He knows the trouble your in. Place some trust and faith in Him. Quit fearing, and start having some faith.

An innocent child is birthed out of heaven. The Word of God says that Christ died for all men, the entire world. He was the lamb of God who took away the sins of the world. He was the second Adam, who corrected the curse that Adam brought upon mankind. It is very clear in scripture that you will **only** be held accountable for the sins that you have done. Adam's sins are not imputed to you. The goal of the Illuminati is to take the innocent child and perform mind-control upon it before it can know right from wrong, before it has stepped outside of its innocence. The perverted joy that Satan gets in marrying and polluting the innocence of a small child is part of why things happen the way they do.

What happens when free-will is stripped from a young innocent child? Those parts that do have free-will will stand in proxy for those who are trapped. How did God judge a city? God told Abraham he would spare Sodom and Gomorrah if he could find a few righteous persons within them. God told Abraham that if he could find 10 righteous men in the city of Sodom, then he would spare it. If a person's front alters have free will they will stand in proxy for those who do not have free-will. Persons are not responsible for action under extreme duress nor are contracts valid legally if they are contracted under duress. Likewise, those alters who have no free-will are not in a situation where they can choose right from wrong. They become accountable when they are free of the mind-control and can choose between right and wrong. In other words, front alters can indeed save a city of alters, if they are the only ones with free will and they are righteous. But with freedom comes responsibility.

There are numerous cases of non-multiples coming forward for numerous altar calls, and repeatedly giving themselves to Christ. There are plenty of cases of non-multiples receiving repeat baptisms. As much as this happens, it seems strange that some ministers will deny alters who come to Christ the chance to be baptized. If the alter wants to make a personal public confession of faith, they should be allowed to do it. And the co-authors will be happy to help victims with this area of concern. If a person is really O.K. with the Lord, do you think that going into the water and getting baptized is going to injure that relationship? Does the reader really think God is that petty and has that little compassion. What kind of person do some people think God is? And that is probably one of the big secrets to gaining salvation--DISCOVERING WHO GOD REALLY IS, versus what all the modern religious pharisees say about Him.

You are not going to find salvation by submitting yourself to an organized religious group that takes your free-will away. Christ came to give you free-will to seek God on your own. He came to set men free of religious tyranny. Unfortunately, after setting men free of religious tyranny, many have come using his name and have established religious tyranny. And they usually justify their tyranny by distorting the character and nature of God.

What you sow, you reap. If you want a spiritual life, you need a spiritual birth. Its that simple. You don't plant a natural life and get a spiritual life.

OUR "SALVATION PACKAGE"

1. Provides for a full and complete pardon for all sins of commission and omission of which a sinner might be guilty.

2. Provides for a cleansing from all unrighteousness which results from said sinner's behaviour.
"If we confess our sins He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness."

3. Provides for the Judge of all the earth, "Remembering our sins no more".

4. Provides for the sins to be blotted out as a thick cloud, and put away as far as the East is from the West.

5. Provides for clearing of the conscience by way of asking for forgiveness, not just apologizing, and making restitution where it is possible to restore the damages.

SANCTUARY (safe room), creating a s.

Therapists working in tandem with clients have built internal safe rooms for alters to view memories together, or to work on issues together in safety. They may also construct new living quarters for alters as they work with the front systems and try to stabilize, integrate and fuse alters.

The concept of building safe rooms internally to protect alters from internal attacks is a good idea for therapists, but it has limited success. There is nothing wrong with using internal sanctuaries, if the therapist realizes the ins and outs of creating and using one.

Safe rooms created by the therapist & client work better for the front alters than for deeper alters. Every change in the system comes with a price tag. Programming has its own kind of security. The programmers allowed alters to build their own internal worlds and the homes they live in. They have felt safe in their internal residences for years. When they abandon their internal homes it doesn't have a safe feeling, and then they are pounced upon by numerous internal mechanism to not disturb the peace and order of the system, such as judge alters with armies who enforce the order of the system with pain and punishment. So they have exchanged their comfortable internal home for a palace with pain. No matter how beautiful the therapist makes the safe room, it is still will be a place of pain.

During deprogramming, when we wanted to preserve temporary gains, it was possible to creatively think of some type of internal structure like an accessible mountain with a hollow oak to hide in or an invulnerable space ship where an alter could have refuge from the internal programmers. The problem is as long as those internal programmers are operating, they are cagey and they can creatively think of some way to overcome the imagery of the new safe place. Generally within 48 hours they had figured out some way to recapture the alter and had started attempts to reprogram the alter. This means that every two days a new safe hiding place has to be created, unless a sloppy job is done and the system defenders break through very quickly, and then a sanctuary may have to be built even sooner.

And telling this just underscores the need to work on why the alters are making their changes in their life. Why are they fighting the programming? They need to be reminded.

If the support team wants to create an internal sanctuary, and are aware of its vulnerability, then the therapist needs to work with the alter being protected to find out what the alter feels is safe. The alter may have lived internally in a box and may not know what a large room is. The alter may not even feel comfortable in a large room. Perhaps the alter has been around numerous other alters and has always heard noisy chattering. How will the alter feel if the alter is now going to be isolated in a "safe" room. The safe room may end up feeling more like maximum security. In other words, the therapist needs to work with the alter and the alter's creativity to secure the best choice of safety. Other supportive alters can help. Internal telephone lines can be put in to keep alters in touch with each other.

SATANIC CULTS, understanding the practice of

For a certain part of mankind, the drive for power has developed the power to fashion other men. But what power controls those who have gained the power to fashion the minds of men as they choose? Is that power which controls the programmers merely the latent potential of the human mind? Or is that power merely a mass hallucination, or an auto suggestion by these programmers? Or to rephrase these questions more bluntly: does Lucifer and his demons really control the programmers? Or do they only half-way pretend that demons exist, because if you believe in something, anything, then supposedly it will work?

For the power hungry, truth and fiction are but tools to gain power. There is an appealing theory that the CIA, Anton LaVey (a satanist & programmer), Michael Aquino (a satanist & programmer), and others of the occult underworld find witchcraft and spells appealing simply because it gives power, and that they do not believe in an actual character named Satan. LaVey and Aquino both convincingly claim that they do not believe in Satan. They also lie convincingly that they don't carry out human sacrifices. Who knows the hearts of these programmers?

At the heart of evil is the quest for power. That is what is at the root of the love of money. At the heart of evil is a philosophy of death that must act as if it is a philosophy of life. Because the Illuminati is not able to see the true meaning of life, on the surface nothing seems to count but personal power, but is there something else? Yes, there is, and we know it for a fact because we were there. These programmers are prisoners of their quest for power, but they also believe that there is a greater power that they serve which will reward them. Again the question begs itself--when they are captured by their insatiable quest for power, have they surrendered themselves to a neutral thing, or have these programmers surrendered their life to a higher power?

Everyone is willing to concede that these satanic movers and shakers are obsessed with gaining power. If these men want power so bad, and have such resources available, would they devote so much time and resources to something that didn't work? But the rational thinker can correctly answer, much of magic is trickery, natural unknown forces in nature, or some unknown power of mind over matter. The rational thinker argues, it works, but not by supernatural forces. Psychic abilities are merely untrained RV abilities.

But the surrender to demonic forces always brings with it a desire for the irrational. If reason were to have a central place in the magician's world view, then much of what the magician believes would have to be discarded. Castaneda's occult classic *Tales of Power* (NY: Simon & Schuster, 1974) p. 101 states, "We, the luminous beings [the Illuminati], are born with two rings of power, but we use only one to create the world. That ring, which is hooked very soon after we are born, is reason, and its companion is talking. Between the two they concoct and maintain the world. So, in essence, the world that your reason wants to sustain is the world created by a description and its dogmatic and inviolable rules, which the reason learns to accept and defend. The secret of the luminous beings is that they have another ring of power which is never used, the will. The trick of the sorcerer is the same trick of the average man. Both have a description; one, the average man, uphold it with his reason; the other, the sorcerer, upholds it with his will....the advantage of the sorcerer is that will is more engulfing than reason....from now on you should let yourself perceive whether the description is upheld by your reason or your will."

The child victim while they are being programmed are told that if they want something bad enough they can create it.

Hitler, a secret satanist, never quit preaching the power of the will. If the German people willed to win, then they could, was Hitler's magical perception. When individuals lost the will to fight, Hitler held those individuals accountable, rather than external circumstances for their lack of fight. Mind over matter. This is the sorcerer's world view.

There have been and continue to be plenty of gullible people who want to believe the deceptions of the cults. What you see is not what you get. The world of reason must be left behind to understand the Illuminati. We must think in terms of willpower and power of all kinds. We must think in irrational terms. We must grasp what it is like to be addicted to power, and the quest for hidden knowledge to gain more power, and power through deception.

The Mystery Religions (which continue today in their hard core form as the Illuminati, and their more ceremonial symbolism as Freemasonry) have had thousands of years to perfect their deceptions. The victim of mind-control experiences the depth of how powerful the perpetrators' network of deception is.

The Illuminati and the Masonic Perpetrators of mind-control have a system of secrecy so pervasive and well in place that you will not see the obvious telltale signs that most people would look for when they initially hear that something is amiss. Even the visible front of the occult world is overlooked by many people. Along this line, when a therapist or victim begins to catch on to the mind-control, immediately the natural questions present themselves, HOW DID THEY HAVE TIME TO DO THIS? and WHERE COULD THEY HAVE DONE ALL THIS? These questions may stem from genuine concern that the person not jump to false conclusions, but they also are predicated on a lack of understanding about how the Illuminati and associated cults work.

For reasonable people who are disposed to learn, we can provide the inside story on how the unexplainable can be explained. For those who have made up their minds and are not interested, all we have to ask is this, "How do you explain this present wicked world and how do you explain how incompetent our government seems to be in correcting problems? How is it that billions of dollars get looted from the entire Savings & Loan industry by hundreds of insiders and no-one ever gets punished? How is it that Russian generals pilot our most secret Stealth bombers, but U.S. airforce personnel get shot if they approach a stealth bomber without authorization?" Actually, when we think of it, the list of "anomalies" of this present system are endless. We could honestly ask hundreds of questions of things that don't make sense, unless you understand how the Illuminati are running things.

Take a minute to think about how important power is to the military and to the alphabet spy-agencies? Their quest for power lines them up philosophically with the occult world's philosophy. Truth for warriors and spies is merely a tool. The men who will rise to the top of such organizations are those who will defend the satanic philosophy of using willpower to create one's worldview.

During our time within the Illuminati, we can say for a fact that Freemasonry and the Illuminati are interlocked. The Masonic system has lodges and temples that public can see, but don't think that they are not smart enough to create a system of secret lodges. They have a system of secret lodges, and secret tunnels to temples that allow them to carry out human sacrifices and sexual rituals without the mainstream of lower level Masons even knowing what Freemasonry is all about.

In a female Illuminati system, the Sisters of Light alters will be created before the Illuminati Mothers of Darkness. All Mothers of Darkness have to have Sister of Light alters. However, the Sisters of Light alters, which are used during the body's teenage years are extremely difficult to find?

Why? Because the Sisters of Light are created for extremely abusive Masonic sexual rituals that are done in both visible & secret Masonic Temples. The teenage girl may be used on Friday, by quietly pulling the child out of school for a preparation ritual by the Masons, and then on Saturday and Sunday the teenage child Sister of Light alters will participate in the actual full-blown rituals.

DEMONOLOGY and its relation to mind-control and the satanic cults.

If you investigate into the depths of darkness in the hearts of men, where will it lead you? Your investigation will take you into demonology. In its nicer forms, it shows itself as mysticism and spiritism. It is upon demonology that the Illuminati is founded. It is from demonology that the rituals and the mind-control spring forth. Of course those who have no previous knowledge of this will be the first to feel qualified to pass judgement that magic and demons are merely urban myths. In the rarified air of academia, denial of Satanic Ritual Abuse is like an opium addiction. If corruption & organized crime need satanic philosophies to justify their acts, then they also need demonology to provide the spiritual power and guidance. It all becomes one dynamic, sacrifice and gore are necessary to harness spiritual power, secrecy is demanded to perform such a blood lusting magical tradition, and control of the outside world then is needed to hide the crimes done for power.

A mind-controlled slave's hidden life is based upon the spirit world. The science of dealing with spirits is called the Cabala. Theurgy is a high degree of occultism where the magician can evoke angels (evil), exalted spirits, genii, fire spirits. Within the Illuminati, we were Luciferians (also known as Gnostics), not Satanists. That does not mean that Satan doesn't play a role in the occultism of the Illuminati, it means that Satanic cults tend to be deranged dabblers, and the Illuminati are sophisticated blue-blooded bloodlines that view themselves as the elite of the world. But whether one is part of a Satanic cult or the Illuminati or some other occult group, the foundation of what is done is demonology. With ruthless dedication the upcoming Illuminati undertake to transform themselves into magicians and witches who can control the spirits. Controlling spirits gives power. Satanic dabblers are not the only practitioners of necromancy, so are the Illuminati. You will find the Illuminati in graveyards for some of their rituals. Many of the Illuminati rituals are so severe only persons with multiple personalities (or great dissociative abilities) could endure them and maintain a functioning sanity.

Although we can write with authority about demonology and the Illuminati and its relationship to programming, we hope to show a few tidbits of the paper trail that could be amassed to add validity to what we want to share.

A member of the elite Stewart bloodline, R.J. Stewart, provides a paper trail of what we also experienced in the Illuminati, "The developing practitioner of advanced magical arts must have grounding and experience in the following disciplines: meditation, concentration, visualization and ritual pattern-making. No advanced work may be undertaken without training and experience in these four skills. There are five fundamental arts or disciplines in magical work, and the first four tend to lead towards the fifth, which is meditation." (Stewart, R.J. *Advanced Magical Arts*. Longmead, England, 1988, p. 8; this is also in Stewart, R.J. *Living Magical Arts*. Blandford Press, Poole, 1987.)

The same abilities that are needed for advanced magic, (according to this great magic adept and member of the scottish Stewarts), are the same abilities needed for becoming a programmed multiple.

The mind-control with its abilities to endure pain, to go into trances, to visualize is really a natural outgrowth of the deeper black

magical arts. The eastern branch of the secret occult world is Indian Yogism, and it is well known how they have developed total control of their minds and bodies. They can go into altered states and sleep on beds of nails or walk on hot coals.

Because demonology is based upon power, and power is obtained by fighting to the top, a child victim is soon taught that if they do not perform they will bring harm upon their cult bloodline. In high level magic, there is no room for failure. The bloodlines and individuals are locked in intense rivalries, and individuals are expected to contribute to the competition. The child victim is expected to blindly obey all orders within the family. The victim is to never ask why or ask about the consequences of an order. The victim is warned, "If you ever break this oath may all the Darkness of the family fall upon you as the same daggers pierce your heart through and through." After such an oath the child will be ordered to worship Lucifer, and carry out Luciferian chants. Some of the oaths, and secrets are beginning to see the light of day. J.K. Huysmans wrote in *La Bas* (french for Down There) that one of the Illuminati oaths at that time of the French revolution (and still used) was, "Lightning does not strike so quickly as the dagger which will reach thee wherever thou mayest be."

SELF-FORGIVENESS, to achieve

One of the major blocks preventing deprogramming is the lack of self-forgiveness that alters maintain. Some churches have it backwards, they think that the victims need to forgive their abusers from the start. The victims do not even recognize what their abusers have done, and the victims generally blame themselves (unfairly) for much of what was done to them. The victim needs first to work on self-forgiveness, then learn what has really been done, and finally when the memories are all worked on, and the person has completely integrated, then the victim can honestly forgive their abusers. Mouthing some words about forgiveness without understanding what the sin was that was done to the victim is only pretending to work on the issue. The bitterness that is embedded in their hearts and minds needs a proper release, and unfortunately most of this bitterness is turned by victim themselves on themselves, not against the abusers, who are the ones who really should held responsible.

Because self-forgiveness is such a major issue, it has already been covered some in *Vol. 2*, p. 284, and in our *Deeper Insights* article on "Salvation". Those who have studied the professional literature on treatment of MPD/DID will notice a deathly silence in most professional literature on the topic of self-forgiveness.

All Illuminati victims of mind-control have been terrorized by their abusers about how God hates them and how God will punish them for their badness. The mind has had to accept the repeated messages that the programmers will drill into the victim that the victim is bad. Why will the mind accept this message so conclusively? The mind is pre-set to expect love from parents. Every animal and every person expects care and love from its mother when it's born. When the child does not receive what it expects then it has no choice but to conclude, "I must be bad for so many people to treat me this way." "These all-knowing big people must have a reason for abusing me, and they say it's because I'm bad, and all the evidence shows that I'm bad, so I must be very bad."

It's a vicious cycle. The programming makes the child feel defective, and the feelings of being defective and guilty make the child feel shame. All these feelings combine to make the person hate him or her self.

The victim of mind-control has had a foundation of guilt and humiliation laid into their unconscious mind. Memorizing a Bible verse and repeating some verse like it's a mantra is not going to root out that foundation which is firmly embedded. Programs which attempt to show deeper alters their identity in Christ will hit lots of strongholds and triggers and may get bogged down in fierce resistance. The struggle for self-forgiveness will be a process. It is a process of sanctification that the Holy Spirit will work in a person over a period of time. The mind needs time to process and sort things out. The bitterness and self-hatred were not wired into the mind in countless neural-synapses and K-lines overnight. It will take time for the mind to re-wire itself.

Here are some tips, and the reader may have already thought of these: Study the Word of God about self-forgiveness. Pray for self-forgiveness. Be gentle and patient, it takes time for the mind to overcome its foundation of self-hatred. Keep bathing the mind in positives and washing away the negatives. Over a period of time a healing will take place, and you will have regained the self-respect that the programmers and abusers stole from you.

SURVEILLANCE, dealing with s.

SPIES IN THE SKY (This information is based upon Harold Hough's book *Satellite Surveillance*.) The FBI, SWAT teams, and other law enforcement, the NSA, and the military all use spy satellites. The best way to detect people from space is infrared.

Spy satellite KH-11 (KEYHOLE-11) transmits its information instantly to the ground. It can circle and view a particular site every few days. Keyhole is the codeword for spy satellites and each new generation gets a higher number. Low level electric currents on the ground known as dark currents interfere with their images. KENNAN, & LACROSSE spy satellites are the newer generation spy satellites. LACROSSE has radar imagining with a 3' resolution.

The Russians have the ability to track spy satellite locations as they have circled the globe. They could hide things as the satellites came around. The normal person can't do this, nor does the average person have a great deal to hide anyway. So what if a spy satellite can read a billboard from space?

How do these spy satellites work? CCDs are used in electronic cameras in spy satellites (but the CCDs are blocked by cloud cover). Radar from satellites is also used. Radar is used from space to watch things, including what is happening in the oceans. Passive radar can see through the surfaces of underground structures.

These kind of satellites are more of a threat to the privacy of objects like cars & underground shelters, than they are to people. They are not going to be able to track you as an individual. But add in the factor of a tracking implant, and the overhead satellite system becomes a nightmare. The implants are a far greater threat than any spy satellite with an electronic camera.

SPIES ON THE GROUND.

Some of the standard surveillance techniques are given in Chapter 12. From our observations of their surveillance methods, the Illuminati handlers use the standard techniques that are taught by the military and the intelligence agencies. Quite often people who are trying to mess with slaves will use dealership cars that don't have traceable licence plates.

Over the years, we have seen some clever ways for mind-controlled slaves to elude their trackers. In fact, our system has had to elude some with our car at times. The first step in eluding their tracking is to realize they generally know where you are, and they are looking for ways to exploit your weakest situation. They will watch for your support person to leave. They will try to access you on your way to your therapist. They will try to access you when you are alone. They will disguise themselves as JWs, a repairmen, as salesmen, and other disguises too numerous to mention. Watch out for "friends".

Try to keep your business to yourself. Realize that everything you say over the telephone is heard by the controllers. Fritz had a hard time convincing us that the telephone wasn't safe, because it seems like such an invasion of one's privacy, and to admit it, means that one can no longer walk around with feeling that illusion of safety. Finally, after years of evidence that the phones are not private, we realize that if we talk on the phone, we need to accept that others are listening. This seems like a simple thing, but for Americans it is really difficult for them to realize that all ordinary phone calls are run through 30 computers between the caller and the receiver & that some of those computers record all conversations. If the computer spots trigger words, your conversation will get sent on to be listened to by humans. If you don't want your conversation listened to by a person, don't use trigger words.

Much of what we would suggest is common sense. We realize that the wise don't need our advice, and fools won't heed our advice.

TIPS FOR THERAPISTS

One of the first things that therapists must acclimate themselves to, is that the victim will go from one crisis to another, and many times seem a hair's breath away from death. This is because they will actually bounce from one total disaster to another calamity. The reasons for this chaos are many, but if proper treatment through a support team can be mustered, the length of this time period of disasters may be decreased. Please don't think that the victim is simply making this all up for attention. And please don't overreact and place the victim into a hospital setting which will only create a new set of problems. There is also a mistake on the part of some psychiatrists to try to medicate the person to suppress the symptoms. The best way to help a victim is to get the victim's alters to creatively and internally work on situations, after all, they were creative enough to survive the most horrendous traumas ever dreamed up by mankind.

Another tip for therapists is that they should not play favorites with alters. The therapist is in the same situation as any leader, be he a sergeant or a kindergarten teacher. In the long run, treating all persons with respect will produce the best results.

Not all systems are ready for treatment. Some systems will bug out when their programming kicks in.

"LOVE ME AS I AM."

A programmed multiple is probably the closest robot mankind will ever design that approaches being like humans--why? Because they are humans, and that is the horror of the thing. Men can applaud when science makes true robots to assist mankind, but mankind shrinks in horror and disgust to realize that during the entire 20th century the Illuminati have been creating robots out of people with the full secret assistance of the British, American, French and German governments.

People, including therapists, shrink from the horror that slave robots are being created out of humans, so they label us anything but "slaves".

People will tell you, "Love me as I am." We saw one therapist tell an alter of a recovering victim, "You're nothing but programming." Are programmed feelings any less than normal human feelings? Does it hurt any less to be programmed that you lost a baby in child birth, than to have actually lost a child? Is pain any less pain because it comes from programming and not external reality? Is there any less pain from being hypnotically convinced that they murdered a child because of your disobedience, than if it were watched in real life? Is the illusion of conscious thinking that the victim has any less an illusion than the illusion of mainstream America that common Americans determine who runs their government? Is the victim of mind-control any less free than the average person who must follow the dictates of their station in life, their genetic coding, the dictates of society, the dictates of their own lack of talents, and the subtle influences of peer pressure, organized religion and mass mind-control, not to mention the laws of physics? Perhaps there is more similarity between the mind-controlled slaves and the rest of society than we choose to admit! At any rate, the programmed thoughts and feelings of an alter should not be given any less respect nor any less validity than any other hurting person. It is time that psychologists quit throwing labels on people, and love them where they are at.

Fritz and I have discussed what it is like for an observant person to watch a programmed multiple. Programmed multiples are not like other people. When you see some of the deeper alters that carry out jobs in the real world you will notice distinct differences between their thinking and non-programmed people. The observer may find that the unusual person

SPLIT-BRAIN PROGRAMMING

One of the most powerful programming tools is the use of split-brain programming. In order to insure the continued secrecy and success of the use of alters who function only from one hemisphere, the Illuminati used their psychiatrists to spread the notion that split-brain programming was simply a hypnotic program, a trick of the mind. The reality is that one side of the brain is physically drugged to sleep with an injection while the victim is traumatized to create parts.

Vol. 2 covers methods used in split brain programming. After a single hemisphere part (alter) is created, it can then be further programmed by each of its two eyes viewing different films simultaneously. Actually, the split-brain films begin during the splitting tortures. If a programmer wants a part to assassinate a particular person, they will often create a particular part for just that assignment. While they are torturing the mind to get that part who will do the job, they will be showing films of the crimes supposedly done by the person who is the target of the assassination mission. The programmer doesn't know exactly when the mind will split a piece so the films are run during the entire trauma-splitting process. The crime films and what needs to be done will be run during the process. The part that is created for this specific job will be accessed after the mission and destroyed by shattering it with trauma, and then the shattered parts will be locked up in a concentration camp in the mind. This specialized type of assassination programming is done usually with men. Sometimes the programmers are too busy or don't have the patience and they merely put in a shattering program, that self-triggers when the slave's mission is complete; and shatters that piece using the internal programming capabilities of the slave's mind. This works fine, but the risk of leakage is somewhat greater. Special alters created for a single drug run or money laundering run for an important politician will be created and destroyed in a very sophisticated hi-tech fashion. There will be no split-brain alter left for the therapist to work with, only tiny fragments locked up in very deep secure parts of the mind. However, the key to understanding **why** these dissociative pieces (alters) are so good at their jobs is SPLIT-BRAIN PROGRAMMING. That is why it has been kept such a secret.

Alters who have been created when only one hemisphere was awake will either operate only on logic or operate only on emotion.

Alters who operate only on logic serve in roles such as assassination alters just described and internal programming alters. These alters will carry out inhumane horrible atrocities upon others and themselves because they have no emotions.

On the other side, an alter which has no logic can be hypnotically told to act like Betty Boop (the cartoon figure) and they will emotionally carry out this assignment, because they have no logic to tell them that people don't act like Betty Boop, a cartoon figure. An alter who has no logic can easily be made into a door knob or some other illogical form. These alters will only function from the side of the mind they were created from.

Over time, the Illuminati has discovered that alters with split brain programming do not gain the advantage of the other hemisphere, but remain stunted. This is why it is so difficult for therapists to "contaminate" internal programmers with positive thinking. Internal programming alters can make themselves co-conscious with other alters who want to be free of programming, and the programming alters don't sense the horror of the abuse with which they subject the rest of the system.

EXERCISES TO REWIRE THE BRAIN'S HEMISPHERE'S TOGETHER FOR SPLIT-

BRAIN ALTERS.

Brain Integration Therapy developed from the foundational research of Dr. Glenn and Robert Doman and and educator, Carl Delacato, and later Dr. Paul Dennison provides exercises that will develop brain pathways for integration of the hemispheres.

An example of such an exercise is called "the crosscrawl". The Crosscrawl stimulates both sides of the brain and has a very positive impact on integration of the brain from side to side. The exercise is basically marching in place with the opposite hand touching the opposite knee. If it done to music its more fun. A variation is is to try touching the opposite hand to the opposite foot in the back instead of in the front. Or one can try touching the opposite hand to the opposite heal in the front.

The exercises and advice that Dr. Paul Dennison developed have solid research to validate them. This section can't possibly cover what several books cover on the subject. Interested therapists should consult the following books:

Dennison, Paul E. and Gail E. Dennison. *Brain Gym, Teachers Edition*. Ventura, CA: Edu-Kinesthetics, Inc., 1989.

Dennison, Paul E. and Gail E. Dennison. *Personalized Whole Brain Integration*. Ventura, CA: Edu-Kinesthetics, Inc., 1989.

Hannaford, Carla. *Smart Moves: Why Learning is Not All In Your Head*. Arlington, VA: Grat Ocean Pub., 1995. This book was written by a neurophysicist/educator who has research to validate the Brain Integration Therapy.

Some therapists have explored using music that both hemispheres of the brain listen to in order to pull the two hemispheres together. Whether this helps or not is not known.

Alters, who find they are only logic or emotion, can pair up with the opposite type of alter and can work in teams. By learning to co-consciously work side by side, they regain some of the brain's natural abilities to look at life both ways.

before them doesn't laugh as they should, and they don't follow the cues of life in quite the right cadence. The unusual person (the multiple) will seem to know about things, but when questioned in depth will be found wanting. Specifics will be lacking in explanations. It is typical of how a programmed alter thinks. At times, in situations in which mind-controlled slaves are prepared to function in, they can spew forth information that will make them look above their peers in intelligence, and at least look like non-programmed individuals. They will show discipline and appear composed. But they will not carry with them the baggage of half-baked ideas and useless memories, and half-forgotten images. Reality of non-programmed people is like a jungle full of tangled undergrowth. The programmed multiple is like a well-manicured garden. What they know, they know; and what they are ignorant of, they are ignorant of. Their minds are more straight forward than non-multiples. Even front alters have a way of being very on task and straight forward. An observant person can use this as a clue. Learning behaviors outside of the programming are more difficult, and provide the appearance of "erratic" abilities.

Many parts of the slave are told they have no heart and no soul. They are told they are robots, that they are slaves, that they are not human, etc. Just as an ugly child knows in its being that it is ugly by the way it has been treated by everyone in life, so also, the slave in its innermost being, is convinced that it is something less than human. The deeper alters will be amazed to see someone cry for them. The deeper alters will be amazed to see someone care about them. When the deeper alters are helped, who can blame them for loving their rescuers? But again, the alters will ask themselves, is this just another illusion? And anyway how can anyone really care? We have hoped that by being brutally honest with what a programmed multiple is really all about, that there will be some people who can actually genuinely love multiples in the reality of who they are. For instance, in our *Illustrated Guidebook* we show a child involved in cannibalism. We are calling for solid relationships between victims and recovering slaves, not relationships based on illusions. Although the thinking of the victim has been modified to suit the Illuminati, that does not mean that victims are any less worthwhile than anyone else. Today, we lavish time and special attention to those who are handicapped and learning disabled. But to think that any person is deserving of attention because they are unusual is lopsided thinking. Our role in life to facilitate people to be the person God had intended. Underneath the superficial thoughts of the programming are special dear people who hold many of the answers to the questions so many of us ask, and to whom God has bestowed contributions and abilities for the rest of mankind. In other words, love us for being worthwhile humans, not for being an oddity, but love us in the totality of what has been done to us to make us into robotic mind-controlled slaves.

TRANSFERENCE, issues of t.

To be expected.

Transference issues are a given when working with programmed multiples. It comes with the territory. The programmed multiple's mind naturally sets itself up for a proxy. (A proxy is someone who stands in for another.) Instead of seeing it as something to be feared, hopefully the therapists can begin seeing that transference actually has a great deal of positives. The person who suffers the most from transference is the therapist, who will wonder at times if he or she is coming or going. What is also interesting, is that not only is the therapist the one who has to endure the brunt of the transference issues, the therapist is also generally the primary trigger of the transference problem. Transference issues are related to memories, and the victim's memories are very intense. The programming memories are often abreacted in a drugged state, so it is hard to separate the therapist from the abusers in the fog of the memory.

Will be varied.

There are several types of transference issues. **Transference occurs when the client responds to their therapist or support person based on some significant childhood figure.** Transference may also occur where the response to the support person is based on several different important figures from different points in the system's past. The alter system may also transfer feelings that should be directed toward their abusers and internalize it. In other words, they treat themselves based on some significant person in their past. (And then if this isn't enough, many therapists end up having transferences provoked by someone in the system. This has a high chance of happening because alter behavior is so exaggerated, and there are so many different kinds of alters in a system, there is a likelihood one of them will trigger the therapist. This is called "countertransference".)

Because an alter system is like a city full of people (with lots of children), a large number of contradictory transference issues may be going on at one time. Let's say Sally is a multiple going for therapy from therapist Betty. One child alter of Sally's system may see Betty as one of her past Mother-of-Darkness abusers. Another may see her as their abusive natural mother. Another may see her as a former sexual partner. Another may see her as the programmer. Another may see her as this wonderful kind teacher that the system had in high school. The therapist barely knows at first if she is coming or going, because so many alters are interpreting and seeing her differently but all in the light of their varied past experiences.

Can happen naturally.

Alters are very good at having transference reactions. Sometimes all it takes for a transference reaction is the gender of the therapist. A small alter when it takes the body may hide, thinking that the therapist is one of its abusers from the past.

One of the sports that the Network of abusers likes to carry out are hunts, where slaves are turned loose naked on large tracts of private property like the Bohemian Grove and then hunted. If an alter that was involved in a hunt is near the surface of the mind, and a noise or sound randomly occurs that makes that alter think that it is being chased, it may take the body and run for its life.

Transference issues happen so easily because the multiple's mind often runs two tracks, they may be in memory while they are also carrying out other duties. The programmed multiple will have feelings all over the place.

Children (child alters) easily see their abuser all around them.

Can be manipulated for the abusers' benefit.

The abusers at times can manipulate transference so that the therapist gets a raw deal. This is another reason why victims need to be safe before work is started. There are enough difficulties with transference issues without the Network increasing them.

Can be worked with during therapy.

The therapist may want to take the feelings that the alters have locked away and see if they can vent them. They might use a dummy or mannequin to get in touch with their emotions. "Who are you really angry at?" "What is the undercurrent of your feelings, not what is on the surface, but what is below?" "What have you remembered and not dealt with?" In this way, the victim begins to learn to verbalize. To learn to redirect transference is a sign of maturity.

The guilt that is transferred, can be dealt with. "You are not responsible for what was done to you." If the victim acknowledges that they were powerless, that acknowledgment will help with the fear. Facing the fears and the lies saves the victim from internal transferences. Dealing with this in turn will pave the way for the system to get a clearer picture of programming. "I don't have to personalize it."

T. issues call for teams.

Within an Illuminati system, you are going to find some alters that work well with one gender, and some that work well with the other. This is why it is advisable for teams to work with multiple systems. A male therapist will simply never reach some alters, and a female therapist will simply never reach other alters.

The therapist may feel like many of the transferences are uncalled for or unfair, but the therapist must go beyond personalizing the actions of the multiple. It is common for the programmed multiple to assume that the therapist will be cruel and sadistic just like their parents were. The therapist may think that this misperception can be taken care easily, but because of the way the multiple's mind works, the only way to change the misperception is over a long period of time, such as a year or two of work. The therapist can make headway in this area by being there for the client when the system desperately needs help--which will happen.

Gradually, the system will see that the therapist was there. But the system will never quit testing the therapist. It is the nature of children to test, and most alters except for a few front alters have very little experience in the world--even less than most children. It really is a positive that they are questioning and beginning to think for themselves. A child will be rebellious toward its parent, because it knows that it can be its true self, it can show its true colors, and still be accepted and received. Some of what the alters do, is simply testing to see that the therapist will be there and will continue to receive them.

TWINNING, understanding and dealing with

Twinning is a critical factor to consider in the therapy of all victims, and yet it has been basically a secret until Fritz, with the help of some survivors like the author Cisco, began exposing it in writing & talks in 1992. The reader will look in vain at some of the best literature on treatment of MPD (now DID) and not find it mentioned. The Illuminati via their dirty psychologists have spread the false information that victims should not be in contact with each other. For therapists who have yet to get the word about twinning (or have heard the disinformation that is being spread), this article may save the life of their client.

Essentially all Monarch trauma-based mind-controlled slaves are programmed to have a twin. The front host alter will generally not know about the twinning unless they have had a deep Illuminati alter teaches the host or they have read something in our previous books. The *Vol. 2* book has information on twinning on pages 83-84, 215, and 359. Our *Illustrated Guidebook* has information on twinning on pages 45 and 47.

During the twinning each victim will create parts that internalize all the characteristics of the person selected to be their twin. These parts have totally internalized the other person's identity. These parts are programmed to take responsibility for what the twin does contrary to the programming. If a victim goes into the hospital for therapy, the twin system's alters that identify with the victim will punish their own system's body and will report back to the master what is happening. (A hospital stay will trigger the fear of death in the twin, i.e. she's dying, we're dying.) The victim's system will not have to report back to the handler, their twin's system will do it for them. Twinning makes the subject of victim safety and the prevention of victim accessing far more complex than has been generally realized. Likewise, the victim of mind-control who is attempting to move toward health and freedom will experience lots of guilt in moving toward freedom, when they know that this may be causing their twin to commit suicide. The front parts (for instance the host alter) will have no idea of the deeper torments that coming in to therapy causes the deeper parts, because the host is oblivious to the twinning. The therapist then double-binds the host by making them sign contracts not to hurt the body, not realizing the dynamics of why deeper parts are being pushed increasingly to punish themselves for what is happening to or for what they are doing to their twin system.

We will review the various types of programming scenarios that the programmers use to create twins. The 12 sciences of mind-control that the *Vol. 2* and the *Deeper Insights* book describe are all used to create twins. The programming begins at about age 7, although the preparation and selecting work may have taken place many years before.

SELECTION & PREPARATION.

a. One parent will have two children, but the two will be raised independently of one another.

b. The eggs of a mother will be placed in surrogates to create separate but identical twins.

c. A mother may swap her child with another mother.

d. The two will have generational ties.

TRAUMA.

a. The paired slaves will be trauma-bonded to each other, the older will want to protect and nurture the younger, and will be set up in situations to save the other from death.

b. They will torture each other, at times they are forced to almost kill each other via torture.

c. They will go through almost all the death, burial and resurrection ceremonies together. They learn to live and to die together.

d. They will take & internalize each other's pain when they are tortured in the vicinity of one another.

DRUGS

a. Placed in front of mirrors under drugs to take on (internalize) the identity of the other person.

HYPNOSIS

a. The full power of hypnosis will be used to twin the pair of slaves.

DECEIT

a. The alters of both systems will be told elaborate lies to bond them, to think they have common heritages, and also to create scripts and conflicts.

STRUCTURING

a. They will be given identical structures so that they can have the hidden keys to each others systems. The deeper parts of most systems can't be unlocked without the help of twins.

b. They will have identical structures (cubes systems, sphere systems) to give them something in common.

c. They will have Mirror images of each other, and alters with similar names, and alters who have the same identity as their twin.

d. They are given programming scripts that intertwine.

BODY MANIPULATION

a. The twins are usually 3 years apart, unless they are special purpose actual twins.

MIND MANIPULATION

a. They are given jobs and team projects that require the skills of both, esp. jobs that require total compliance with the twinning programs in order to survive.

b. They participate in ceremonies that require the joint abilities of both.

c. They are programmed to be 1 in body, soul & mind.

d. They are set up in love-hate relationships.

e. They are set up in opposites-attract & opposites-repel conflicts.

SPIRITUAL MANIPULATION

a. They are sexually mated together.

b. They are telepathically connected.

c. They are demonically connected.

d. Guilt will be created, when one twin knows something important about the other, but is not allowed to tell, such as Twin A will think her child is dead, and Twin B will know that it is alive but is not allowed to tell.

e. They will lie crown to crown (head to head) to pass psychic energy (têtê-à-têtê).

f. Lying side by side, they'll hypnotically sense intravenous tubes mixing their blood to blood-bond them.

EXTERNAL CONTROLS

a. They are programmed to die if anything happens to kill the other.

b. The peer pressure of the team prevents them from "breaking the circle".

We have provided a more detailed look at how the twinning is done, so that therapists & the support team can grasp that the twinning is a major part of the programming. It is the forerunner to the proxying and the group-mind that is being created.

Therapists need to understand that the twinning (as with everything else) is a **controlled** bonding. The Illuminati choose slaves that compliment each other in abilities, that is, one tends to be logical, the other emotional. One tends to be negative, & the other positive. One will be programmed to accept love and the other not to. By having this dichotomy, the Illuminati have something to manipulate to either join them or separate them. The systems are also filled with false information to keep them apart. The twins are set up to be jealous of each other, for instance, one is jealous of the other's mental abilities, and the other is jealous of the other's beauty. There is always some method for the handlers to divide and conquer the twins if they have to. Within twins, there will be some alters that love the other person, and some that hate the other person. This is meant to be this way.

ADVANTAGES GAINED FROM WORKING WITH TWINS TOGETHER

Not all work with twins needs to have them in the same room together. Their therapy can be coordinated without them being simultaneously present. For instance, in the above example of a victim being in a hospital in therapy, the twin could be talked to by the therapist and calmed down, "It will be O.K." It is surprising what a few kind words can do in some situations to defuse the fears that are triggered in a twin. It has been standard practice to exclude the twins from any knowledge of the other's therapy. Giving notice of what is happening to one person about the therapy of another can raise its own set of problems (such as jealousies), but it is suggested that rather than letting that deflect support teams from coordinating the work with the twin systems together, that this wrinkle be accepted as part of the job and that it be addressed.

What are the advantages to having programmed twins work together? The two twins will not try to impede each other's progress as much. When a victim of mind-control is in the hospital most therapists don't realize that their twin is going absolutely bonkers. The two twins will unlock each other's deeper systems. The two twins will help trigger and help heal each other. The two twins will be a support team for each other. The twins can work on mutual issues and mutual memories together. The twins can validate each other's experiences and memories. Done properly, deprogramming twins could speed up the time needed for deprogramming.

DEEPER CULT PARTS

It is the Illuminati ritual parts that know about the twinning. Twins and teams consist of cult alters. The 4-person teams are set up on a compass with an internal clock that links them all to "circle" rituals. There are only 4 circumstances where the Illuminati internalize other people during the programming, which are: a. they internalize a Satan (a false god), b. the internalize the programmers (more false gods and an internal master), c. they internalize cult figures such as a Grande Dame, the physical mother if she is cult, perhaps a Mother-of-Darkness caretaker, perhaps the physical father who is a cult member too (which provides internal false parents), and d. the false sibling which is the false twin. These are the few times that external people are internalized within alters during the programming. This may help support team members to see the importance of twinning.

A FINAL TRICK

A related programming trick is to tell a system that they have given birth to twins, one was sacrificed and the other has been secretly raised as an adept in some foreign country. The fear of separation from one's child that the mind experiences, also overlaps into the fear of losing one's own programmed "twin". The mind doesn't reason these things out, it simply responds with natural anxiety that something has been taken from it. We haven't seen any proof that the supposed lost children who are adepts actually exist, it is our tentative conclusion that in most cases the stories are cult fabrications, but either way, it is just one more anxiety that the victim has to endure.

WORLD, external, how to understand the e. w.

How did the reader come to understand the world, was it not step by step? Let's take a quick but close up look at this step by step learning process. (If the following is a little too technical bear with it.) Researchers have discovered that the basic "frame-arrays" that allow the mind to begin this step by step procedure to build a world-view are part of the original brain already provided for us at birth. At that starting point, we begin accumulating sensory input and building our understanding of the external world. The mind for instance, orients itself wherever it is located, by attaching some type of grid, such as up-left, up, up right, etc. or south, east, west, and north. This happens both in a normal person, and within the mind-controlled slave whose orientating system (compass/clock) is programmed in. In the mind, as it creates "internal visual maps" of what the mind sees in a room, it associates items in the room with prelearned frames, such as the ceiling, the floor, the four walls. Then items are attached at the neural level to these frames. While we can interchange & reuse frames, the information attached to them remains fixed. As the mind looks in a different direction a K-line, which has been developed to record the finished visual maps that the mind has created, is then activated. As the items are filed the mind compares what has been "seen" (mapped) with previous patterns & interconnects (overlays) the new memory.

The bottom line is that learning is a step by step process.

The programmers have given each alter exactly what they want that alter to see and know, line upon line, precept upon precept. They have finished that programming, teaching & training with strict programming that the alters are not to question anything, and that they are to accept what is there. They have closed off the five senses to many of the alters. For years when psychologists got non-host alters, they thought that many of these other alters were delusional, psychotic, and insane. Actually, there was nothing abnormal about these alters. Their perceptions were totally in line with what they had been allowed to learn and experience. Hopefully, at some point, experiences like this will begin to restrain the therapeutic community from attaching labels on people, rather than understanding them.

When the deeper alters hold the body, they receive a cultural shock. The internal world is actually a protection for them to prevent them from having to come in contact with the external world. When they do take a peek at the external world, they try to understand it from their extremely limited viewpoint. The typical response for deeper alters is to run back into the internal world and hide. They are very skittish. They have been told that the outside world will not understand them, and generally this is soon validated by whoever they meet in the outside world. They are like an American left to fend for himself in the middle of mainland China.

So how can the therapist encourage skittish deeper alters to take a look at the world? Over a long period of time, deeper alters will begin to get internal glimpses and hearsay messages passed down the grapevine that so-and-so alter took the body and it went O.K. Over a period of time, they will begin to develop a trust that they can come out and not be hurt. They generally do not know the simple things of life, such as how to use a microwave, how to use a teller machine, etc. Even a modern telephone may be a new thing. This is where a 24-hour support team member who understands the situation can help provide a safe loving environment for the deeper alters to have as their first exposure to the world on their own.

Now the therapist/support persons need to begin to teach those alters to ask questions, and to think on their own. They need to discover emotions and their senses. They need to experience life in a reduced trance state, so they see reality better. This freedom in the outside world will begin unshackling them from the internal world. They have never had a taste of life, outside of the cult world & hidden internal world. Contrary to what some believe, alters are changed by their environment, although the programming does inhibit change.

Remember how small children go through a stage where they cling to their mothers and are afraid of strangers? How is this stage dealt with? The child naturally grows out of it with exposure to the world. Likewise, the deeper alters gradually lose their fear of the outside world as they are exposed to it. Many of these deeper alters have been locked away in their internal world for 20 or 30 or 40 years. There have been great changes over the years. If they are to participate with the front alters, they will have to take ownership to the front alter's relationships, and the front alter's relatives. They will have to learn that they have a telephone number, and an address. As they function more and more in the real world, the pull to go home (home to the master "Daddy") will decrease.

The support team can give them a taste of life. This is where they will need help. The deeper alters will often show reluctance to experience new things, but if their initial fears can be overcome, they may enjoy the activity more than they realized. It really is a catch 22. Let's say you want a deeper alter to enjoy a birthday party. Birthday's are exceptionally big triggers, and all kinds of horrible junk will surface in terms of memories. The child slave has had "surprises" that has conditioned these child alters to hate surprises. A small child may have been given a head in a gift wrapped box. Who knows all of what has been done to the child on its birthday in the past. How does one reframe the meaning of birthdays? Any attempt to reframe birthdays by giving a happy celebration will simply trigger the deeper alters. One thing that might be tried is to have a strong deeper alter hold the body, and put most of the other alters to sleep or wall them off from the birthday activities. After the one alter survives the birthday without any major traumas, that success can filter down through the deeper layers. That doesn't mean that the rest have had a good time. They have likely gone through hell during the day. But at least a small step forward has been taken, and gradually perhaps year after year, a slow reframing process can be worked on.

There is not any outside activity which won't have a sharp edge to it somewhere in the deeper parts of the system. (This is one reason why it is ludicrous to think that integration is the only answer, or that lots of slaves have already achieved integration. If there were ever a programmed multiple that got complete integration, the integrated system would pull in so many phobias as they united, that the system wouldn't function.) There needs to be work to reframe their view of life. There needs to be work on the fears. Through conditioning by exposure to the joys of life, the sharp edges of life can be blunted.

The present methods of therapy (1 hour a week in an office) have no real mechanism to give the deeper alters the safe, guided exposure to the outside world that they need to stretch themselves. We hope we have communicated that the needs of the deeper alters during an everyday experience in the real world are extremely great. They need a loving wise support person to help them in the external world, this is not something that should be left haphazardly in the hands of some friend of the client who doesn't understand programming and DID. Exposure to the world can greatly help break down the lies of the programming and the power of the programming, but this tool is being neglected today in therapy, or thrown away by simply having perhaps an aunt of the client take them out for a movie. Programmed multiple systems are great at putting on fronts. It takes someone with an understanding of the system to really take advantage of the power of exposing the system to the real external world.

Finally, the alter system can develop internal processes to speed up the exposure of alters to the external world. They can teach each other and help supervise each other as alters step out into the external world. By doing this they can shorten the time it would take for so many different people to reorient their thinking.

The Illuminati programmers will occasionally punish troublesome alters by locking them mentally (internally) in a box, against these alters wishes. This is just as traumatic for these alters as it would be for the therapist to experience being locked in a box for months. Therapists need to stay on top of these kinds of situations and take responsibility to find missing alters who have helped with therapy but have been punished by being locked away. Some therapists have a policy of only working with those alters that show up for therapy. They don't understand the internal structuring and how alters that cooperate with them can be punished and locked up. Therapists need to develop some sense of commitment to help rescue alters that have "stuck their necks on the line" by working with the therapist.

In summary, although support groups and therapy sessions are helpful, great opportunities to destroy programming and expose the programming lies are lost because skilled support people are not available to help guide deeper alters into experiencing, understanding & coping with the external world.

WORLDS, the destruction of

In order to do this subject justice, Fritz and I have collaborated extensively in pooling our experiences and knowledge together to write this article. The cold hard fact is that we have never seen anyone totally free of all the effects of programming, in spite of the premature or boastful claims of many therapists to the contrary. Not knowing what they are looking at, they do not know that they are not finished. A small child may think for sure he or she is finished cleaning a room, but in reality the child has not even begun. Fritz and our system have patiently waited for years to explain these things in a helpful spirit to others, so now is our chance to express ourselves.

In order to understand how to take out the programming, one has to understand the internal computers. In order to understand the internal computers, one has to understand the early core splits, which are: the gems, the Grand Druid Council, and the Butterflies. The Butterflies empower and guide the computers. Further, to understand the computers and these early splits, one needs to understand the core. Although we have discussed the core at length, we will need to go into this subject in greater depth. In order to understand the core, we will have to understand some secrets about how the mind functions. Many of the things that we write about the brain are known, but they are not being widely reported because knowledge of these things gives the Illuminati the ability to carry out mind-control.

UNDERSTANDING THE 1ST HUMAN BRAIN, also called the "Reptilian brain."

The human brain is in reality 7 brains that function together. Each brain is like an independent computer which connects to the others. Each has its own intelligence, its own subjectivity, it's own sense of time and space, and its own memory and other functions.

The first brain, the brain stem is that part of our brain that matches what a reptile would have, hence it's known as the reptilian brain. The reptilian brain deals with breathing and the heart beat. Reptiles are able to greet one another, forage for food, establish territory, gather food, and work in social groups. Reptiles also have awe for authority, and understand social peeking orders, because that is associated with that level of thinking. The human first brain, or shall we say "our reptilian brain" has the same abilities that the reptilian brain has. A great deal of the reptilian brain's actions are preset and work very mechanically. (By the way, alligators, snakes and other reptiles can be hypnotized.)

There are certain periods of time as a person develops that the reptilian brain's primitive thinking (call it software) can be changed. These critical windows of vulnerability are called "the times of imprint vulnerability." The brain's ability to allow imprinting is a survival mechanism that allows the brain to establish the limits to which all future learning and conditioning will occur. The reptilian brain is concerned with survival. It is concerned with body survival and body security. It is imprinted by the mother figure. (This explains why the core is worked with by the victim's personal cult mother, who is chosen for her role by the Illuminati because she is gentle and motherly.) The human first brain (reptilian brain) retreats from anything predatory, a threat to its life. The automatic nervous system is part of this first brain. The basic thinking of the first brain is "what is safe, what is not safe?" The primitive brain receives judgement calls from the higher brains as to "what is not safe and what is safe". Money issues can be a survival issue for the mind. Although reptiles do not use money, they deal with other complex survival issues. The other parts of the brain will contribute messages that trigger the first brain to considered its survival threatened. If a person has not developed his other higher brains, he may simply be concerned with survival and money. Disapproval by the mother figure is threatening to the first brain, because it suggests death by the loss of food supply and nurturing. The core of a programmed multiple is not allowed to develop beyond a reptilian brain focus, which is a fear-based survival mode. The reptilian brain has the ability to shut down the other brains if it senses danger. This is an important factor for the mind-control. Most reptilian brain activity is unconscious or perhaps a gut level feeling. Emotions are also stored in the second brain, and in various ways in all the other brains too. Time, as our higher consciousness knows it, is absent from the reptilian brain, it operates on the cellular-environment circadian rhythm.

Thoughts (events in the mind) of tremendous importance can take place in the mind and our conscious mind will not even be aware of it. We may have high blood pressure and be totally unaware of it. Heart rates and blood pressure have been consistently controllable via bio-feedback teachings. Just like the instructions that move your various arm muscles to catch a ball are unknown to the conscious mind, they are known by the reptilian mind and can be altered, although we don't know exactly how the mental instructions are rewritten in the mind.

Information from our organs is fed into our reptilian brain so that survival of the body can be regulated. For instance, we will sweat when it's hot. We will want to breathe when carbon dioxide builds up in our lungs, such as when we hold our breath. Our higher brain can send competing messages to the reptilian brain--keep holding the breath, we are under water. The battle may be won by the reptilian brain when the person goes unconscious and the person goes ahead and breathes, which is fatal when underwater.

The reptilian brain is capable of paranoia. Let's say that we convince someone's mind that some group of people, a particular minority, pose a threat to the survival of that person's nation. The widespread uneasiness will cause the reptilian brain to feel comfortable in exterminating that minority. Only a higher level of brain could check the "animal instincts" of survival.

The limbic system is connected to the reptilian brain. Smell memories are connected to the limbic system. In other words, our system of smell is closer in touch to the reptilian brain.

An example from everyday life will illustrate how the different brains work separately. If you are in turmoil, your body may show it, while your higher brains control your speech and talk so that everything appears O.K. Your body language which is controlled by your reptilian brain reflects its fear-survival based thinking, while your words and your consciously controlled gestures controlled by the higher brains are in line with what those brains are wanting to communicate. If the human mind was one monolithic brain it could coordinate the body totally with what was being said.

MANIPULATION OF THE REPTILIAN BRAIN

Before the higher brains develop their abilities, and while the Illuminati can imprint the reptilian brain, they begin with their trauma programming with pre-verbal children. The traumas that the Illuminati apply to the victim are not discomforts, they are life threatening traumas. The reptilian brain is imprinted with the idea of who its mother figure is, it is imprinted with the idea that adherence to "the mother programmer" means survival. The reptilian brain is connected to the heart. When the Illuminati traumatize the child, and the heart stops beating, the reptilian brain is being programmed. During the initial splitting of the core, there is a period of time when the Illuminati programmers stop the heart, and the person's spirit (their life force begins to leave the body.) The programmers know exactly how long (how many millisec.) they can allow a person to remain between life and death before they shock them with paddles to bring them back to life. Thousands of splits in the mind occur during this time between life and death. These splits are found and put in a very secret grid of butterflies. Our *Illustrated Guidebook* shows a picture of butterflies. We have seen these swarms in our dreams, and we know that they are put in because we helped with the programming of victims.

The first human brain (reptilian) is connected to life and death. It is connected with the spirit (life energy) of a person. This part of the mind has an awareness of itself, but its awareness is totally on a survival level. The programmers have linked in the victim's mind the survival of the person to its loyalty to its mother figure, and to its obedience that the core should never be touched, and to its obedience that the computers should not be touched.

The core is a dissociated part of the mind buried deep into the reptilian brain level. If one tries to get to this level by going through the higher brains, the higher brains will trigger the survival instinct of the reptilian brain, which will react with what it has been trained to do. The reptilian brain is not logical, it is quite mechanical, and it will respond in its mechanical fashion. **Survival** of the victim demanded that the victim build, maintain and protect certain structures in the mind. The reptilian brain is totally convinced that these structures are needed for survival. During childhood, these structures were absolutely necessary for the survival of the person. The reptilian brain can not see it any different, because that is the way it is imprinted.

Can the reptilian brain be reached? Yes. Solomon Steiner & W. Dince found & documented that with 8 to 25 hours of biofeedback training a person can reliably control their heartbeat. (Steiner & Dince. "Biofeedback efficacy studies", *Biofeedback & Self Regulation*, 1981, 6:pp. 275-88). Anything less than this gave unreliable results. That means that the programmers could train the reptilian brain in 8 hours or more to control its heartbeat.

D. Shapiro & R. Surwit found & documented that operant conditioning (behavior modification) could be used to maintain biofeedback behaviors rather permanently. (Leitenberg, H. ed., art. "Learned control of physiological function & disease" by Shapiro & Surwit in *Handbook for Behavior Modification & Behavior Therapy*. Prentice-Hall, 1976.)

By using biofeedback with dissociated alters who have received behavior modification the Illuminati have heart programming within the reptilian mind that is boxed up, virtually permanent, powerful and untouchable. The very heartbeat of the person is totally controlled by programming. For the butterflies to abreact their trauma memory stored in the reptilian mind (as well as for the other dissociated parts from that same splitting period) would spell death to older recovering victims of mind-control whose hearts could not survive going through the near-death experience again, even if medical personnel were present. The life of the individual is virtually wrapped up with their programming. The reptilian mind will protect the programming and its survival. It can not be reasoned with.

While the reptilian brain has lots of instincts and some openings for imprinting, the other brains are more flexible in their growth. The higher brains take time to develop, because they learn. Genetics determine all seven brains. But the genetics of the higher brains are not like blue prints--but are more like computer programs that interact with the environment during the person's lifetime. These genes do not provide a fixed character, but the range of mental modifiability and how the mind will modify itself (its responses) to certain items in the person's life. In the case of an Illuminati programmed multiple, the victim's core is locked up within the reptilian brain tightly and does not fashion strong links to the higher brains. Sometimes it appears that the Illuminati cross that fine line in programming and impose too much trauma on the child and the reptilian brain locks itself tight and quits communication with the higher brains. This may account for some programming failures becoming autistic children. They were traumatized so much that the higher brains are not used by the victim. When the child is getting ready to have its core split, it is still in the self-center "I" stage. This is theI-am-hungry--I-need-my-diaper-changedtype mode. The programmers at times in conversations among themselves have noticed some similarities between the fear-based survival-based 1st mind and the mind of the demons, including Satan.

Experiments have shown that some animals, if they are imprinted to a particular mother figure, are far more tolerant of pain from that source, without it bothering them. The perception of pain and fear are relative to how the mind has been imprinted. How much of a role this plays within humans is hard to determine. There is a strong drive in little children to attach themselves to parent figures. Even though the programmers may not have all the research data to specifically sort out the complexities of how the mind develops, many years of success has given them the empirical feedback to know that their methods work.

OUR IDENTITY

What is our identity? There is some life force within each of us that is unique. Different religions have different names for it. As time goes on, this life force expresses itself in its uniqueness through our thoughts, our emotions and our physical expressions. As everyone knows, our bodies and minds have many unique features to them besides just our fingerprints. It is well known that we also have sub-personalities and different "selves". We have a deeper self, a spirit-self, that will go before God Almighty. The hindus call this atman, the eternal self, the eternal spirit. That deeper self, that life-spirit is connected to this body, but should this body die, it will leave.

That deeper self in a programmed multiple still expresses itself--alter systems vary from one person to the next, but the programming is an overlay that hides and distorts the expression of that deeper self.

The reptilian brain, which is in charge of keeping the body alive, will not allow the computers and the core to be touched. No therapist, as far as we know, has ever touched a real core. The programmers have placed core splits that pose as cores to insure that therapists and ministers have someplace to stop in their search for the core. Remember the core splits have the same characteristics of the core, but only the core is able to shut down all of the computers with her mind. Unfortunately, the core also believes the computers are necessary for her survival. She has been made fearful of the world without her computers.

The core has the ability to shut all the computers down, which will automatically shut all the programming off. But remember, the core is located in the base of the mind--the reptilian mind. The core is very young when she or he is split. The core has been offered the opportunity to love God at this age, but does not understand the fine points of what is proper and improper. I mention this, because the Illuminati teach the core to view herself as the glory of God. The imagery of the computers to make the computers starts out with "God's throne". The core is told she is like God and that from her/his throne she/he can set up a universe like God did. And after that universe is created, and the core is very dissociative, then the core will be told that it will be God's glory. God's glory permeates His whole creation and sustains it. So the core sees itself as God's glory. A theological student may see the blasphemous nature of this, but the fine points of theology are lost on a little 18 month old child. The child core then is told he/she can manifest itself like a person, just like God manifested himself as the man Jesus. The core is part of that mind that functions with survival reptilian-type thoughts. [Let's say the core is female so we can use a single pronoun.] She wants no knowledge because to survive means to give away awareness of what is happening. She is not consciously aware of the computers, but her energy does flow out like God's glory and sustains her system. After the core gets out of the "I" stage, the programmers will teach it more of what they want it to be. The throne is made into a tomb where the core is put to sleep, like sleeping beauty.

One of the things, that takes place as a person develops, is that the brain is imprinted in how much priority it will give the different brains. Most people never develop beyond a second brain priority. The core & her first splits never develop beyond a first brain priority. The true core and her splits are always in a survival mode. That is why they hide so well. If a person ever got the true core, the first job would be to insure that the survival instincts were not triggered and that the core developed a deep sense of trust. But the core can not be reached by going through all the dissociated states (pieces of the mind--alters) which are all linked to numerous fears and programs. There are thousands of fragments of the mind in all the various parts of the mind. No one can control all of these dissociated parts of the mind at once, not even the programmer--although the master programmer can come far closer than the rest of us. Only the one person that the core (which is in the reptilian brain) has been allowed to trust can pull up the core. Some of those alters are going to have a fear response to anything the therapist does, and this fear will trigger the reptilian brain's splits into their protective behaviors. Any fear, even a subconscious fear, will prevent the core from presenting. It is clear that the only effective way to get to the core and the initial core splits is to use a medical team and deep hypnosis. This would bypass all the garbage that would trigger survival reflexes that are programmed into the reptilian brain. However, once the core and her splits were reached, tampering with anything could still trigger the programmed survival reflexes of the reptilian brain.

When the core is initially split, the programmers take some of the early splits and make gems, some get made into the Grand Druid Council and others into the thousands of butterflies that are placed on the butterfly grid. All this is extremely secret. Front Grand Druid Councils are sometimes placed on every level. Also each major computer will have its own real Grand Druid Council. The butterflies go around and create the power grid that is structured like a grid and tied in to the entire structure. The butterflies give life energy to the system via the core in the reptilian brain. The programmers have taken the life-force that would normally run free like a river, dammed it up, and are harnessing it like a hydro-electric dam to run the system.

HOW THE WORLDS ARE BUILT & HOW THE COMPUTERS REBUILD THE WORLDS & COMPUTERS

Various quadrants, worlds, galaxies, and sub-systems are constructed within the mind of the victim. The victim may even speak of their internal 7 wonders of the ancient world (which may possibly be the programmer's method of referring to the seven brains). The various worlds have strong walls built between them. Going through those walls triggers internal earthquakes and other programming to go off. Generally, alters do not have the mental strength to even want to attempt such a feat. The worlds have been created to please the programmers. They are built upon the early traumas. The programming is layered in. This is why disturbing the early traumas by doing memory work seriously disturbs the programming. However, there is no way to destroy a world permanently without destroying the computers and/or the demons that can rebuild it. However, the computers themselves will regenerate unless they are all taken out in sequence and in about the same time period. But the computers can regenerate if the core and core splits are not worked with, because they created the computers and they can create them again.

HOW THE DEMONS PROTECT THE SYSTEM, & HOW THEY IN TURN ARE

PROTECTED

Whether one wants to admit that demons exist, or whether one wants to maintain that they are only mental hallucinations, either way, the fact remains that the victim's mind is terrified of these demons, and there is no way the therapist is going to get the reptilian mind to relax when it perceives a life threat from these demons. The therapist is going to have to calm the mind that these demons which guard various structures are taken care of. We are not talking about trickery--we are talking about dealing with demons by the spiritual laws that govern demons. Trickery will simply not work. Demonology is a spiritual issue--but it also becomes a mental and a programming issue because the reptilian mind will protect itself and will perceive tampering with the programming which causes the demons to get upset to be a serious threat to the life of the system. The demons have the ability to tear the victim's mind apart. That is a threat that must be dealt with if serious work is going to be done.

The principal core decoy is a core split in the carousel. This core decoy has a false trinity attached to it which we described in the *Vol. 2* book. However, a more powerful evil trinity is linked to the gems and the Grand Druid Council. This is the evil trinity of Beelzebub, Lucifer and Hydra, which were mentioned previously in this book.

Attempts to pull the big daddy demons to the front of the mind and cast them out have gone in the right direction, but were woefully inadequate, because they stopped too quick. For instance, our system went through four powerful deliverances at different points. One allowed the front system to work. One allowed the middle layers to work. One saved the system's life from self-destruction. One seriously destroyed all the front programming, and the front demons. Where we failed is that after these successes there were no strategic plans to take further initiative to exploit these victories. Some reasons that most deliverance ministries stop way too quick is:

a. they want instant miracles instead of commitment and hard work

b. the demons are very intelligent and sly and they will do everything they can to make themselves appear defeated. The demons will hide, they will substitute one smaller demon for a bigger demon during deliverance, and they will let everyone think they have been defeated. One of their winning strategies is to duck down low, and allow the enemy to pass by them, so-to-speak.

WHAT PEOPLE IN THE PAST HAVE DONE, AND WHY THEY HAVE NOT SEEN THEIR FAILURES.

When we write about the worlds and programming being taken out, we write based on experience of what we have done and what we have observed others do, and what their results were, as well as relating all that we know about how the systems are built.

We have watched the results of many different approaches. Just because a particular line of attack will not bring ultimate success does not mean that a therapist may not want to attempt it. Sometimes alters need to see some progress, however small, so that they can see that there is hope. Second, there is the synergic effect of chipping away from many different angles that wears down the programming where it is not as powerful. The overall wearing down may facilitate other treatment strategies to work. Here are some of the approaches and their results:

- The standard methods of psychology applied for years to getting past the mirrors with no results; then encircling and applying the blood of Jesus Christ to the mirrors with the results that the mirrors were destroyed, their demon protectors were controlled, and this allowed the victim to move into new parts of the system and do memory work. What had unsuccessfully taken years, took only a few minutes. This was a step in the right direction, however this step was never used in a comprehensive enough strategy to totally dismantle the system.

- Going vertically deep into the system and doing those things to get the Dameon (satan) alter up, and then working with Dameon. With work and prayer Dameon is convinced to switch sides. Using Dameon to help dismantle the system. Dameon is a protector. He has lots of knowledge of the layers, but he has no power. The core and her core splits have lots of power and they can regenerate the system when they feel they need to. Anything permanent and comprehensive is going to have to control the regenerative power of the mind. Another problem with working deep in a system is that the mirror images and demonic constructs swarm in and most times therapists end up working with the mirror images and demons.

- In the *Vol. 2* book we gave the actual universal codes. There are some standard features that are put into most systems. Suicide programs and other programs receive master erasure codes. A computer will have many programs that can be erased at once. A slower approach is to get into the computer and dismantling program after program. Or getting to a computer and shutting it off according to the programming codes. These methods did work (temporarily) even though they can be very time intensive. The problem is that within two weeks the computers and their programs will regenerate. The time period may actually be the standard 72 hours, but the alters moving toward health will often not realize when the internal computers get back on line. Another problem encountered was that often a cover computer activated, and new alters that appeared to help the victim integrate were in reality well-disguised demons, that the victim initially integrated but then realized were demons. In other words, more times than not, the victim and therapist will not even get the actual computer but only a front. When such a front computer goes down, an LSD state will be activated that makes colors seem more real to the alters. The programming will put on a good show to the therapist that they have succeeded, but the cover program that success has been achieved is actually "over dramatized" to the victim's alters, which have to be fooled also. The bottom line is that we have to get to the bottom and work from the inside out. There are too many programming defenses in depth. We need strategic plans to overcome the concentric rings of programming defenses.

- Working with the internal Grand Druid Council. This is a good strategic idea. However, up to now there hasn't been the skill and the knowledge and the teamwork to really implement this strategy in the way it should be. The Grand Druid Council is part of the power base. The problem with this is that there are several GDC's in a system and the therapist/deliverance ministry must work with big daddy demons to be successful.

- Finding the internal programmers and working with them is an extremely difficult proposition when one realizes how they were created and function. Even if a therapist managed to work with them, they are not in a position to dismantle what the core wants.

- During the early rituals a simple 3 to 5 letter word will be given to a 4 year old child which is known as the T Code. This is the anchor for the programming, because the programming must be anchored in the subconscious somewhere. The T Code is also called the toddler switch. In systems that have few alters each alter may have a T Code. In Illuminati systems created with lots of worlds and complex alter systems, the T Code is part of the primal programming trauma. There is a small period of time (a few minutes) where that T memory or word occurs upon which the entire programming structure is based. Flipping that T Code or T Memory is like collapsing the entire computer programming, but getting to alters (like core splits) who are very deep & who can help with this is going to take work. Again the problem surfaces, how does one let the mind know that it is safe and does not need to self-destruct to protect the programming? The best solution would be to somehow get the core involved. It is possible to remove the programming by flipping the Toddler Code, but it should be done by someone who understands the bigger picture of what is going on with the victim and the programming.

HOW THE GRAND DRUID COUNCIL IS LINKED TO THE CORE (A BACKDOOR)

Perhaps the best back door to the core is the Grand Druid Council. In order to work with the GDC one will have to be prepared to bind the 3-generation curse, that is Adam, Cain, Tubal-cain etc. that can be found by looking up this book's comments on Ex. 20. The support team will have to go through the steps of Freemasonry too in their work with the Grand Druid Council. Bear in mind that the evil trinity will need to be commanded to return to God to receive directions from Him. These big daddy demons only come out with authority. They also need to be told to take their Luciferian form, rather than all the deceptive forms they take. The deliverance minister and the victim need to emphasize to the demons the spiritual heritage of the victim based on their New Birth in Christ.

Lucifer will try guarding the backdoor between the Grand Druid Council and the Core. He will have to be taken care of. The Grand Druid Council is really just pieces of the mind that were split around 18 months. They have been heavily demonized, so that the demons do much of the running of the GDC. The GDC splits were created from a pre-verbal stage up to the age of 3. They form a power base in the system. They are linked to the gems and the ribbons. They are discussed in our other books.

The demons knows the authority of the Bible and Jesus Christ. It is helpful to quote the exact location from the Word of God. It is also important to be honest concerning one's walk with the Lord. Command them to the front of the mind and put the blood of Jesus Christ of Nazareth around them. The demons should be commanded to be honest, not use profanity, and to not harm the body. They are under standing orders to destroy the "temple" (the mind) IF they can't deliver the person to the AntiChrist when he begins his reign.

GETTING MEANINGFUL ASSISTANCE FROM A SYSTEM

Therapists have been working with and trusting the front systems to help them. They are working with fragments and confused alters and they are getting a lot of misinformation. They need to get to alters who know the power, spiritual, & programming structures of their system.

Fritz has published diagrams of the hierarchy, for instance, the book that accompanied his video of his lectures on a speaking circuit in major cities has a hierarchy diagram. We have inserted it in this book too. Alters that function at hierarchy levels would be useful to therapists. The front alters and the gatekeepers are not in a position to be really helpful. The strongest Christian alter can help with spiritual things, but if the therapist could get a hierarchy alter involved with wanting the mechanisms of control dismantled, better progress could be made.

Within female hierarchy slaves, the Mothers-of-darkness levels & above know programming and some about their own system. Within the male hierarchy, the Grand Master levels and above (Asmodeus, Ippsisimus, etc.) may know programming, and likely know their own system. The reason the Grand Masters may or may not know is that in contrast to the secrecy of the Mothers & Grande Dame alters, the male hierarchy alters function in the outside world. The very same alter that carries out rituals in secret may be a cult leader, or an occult leader, and may participate in many meetings in real life. If a Grand Master were to play both a Christian and an occult role, it means that the Christian front alters may not completely dominate holding the body in the real world. For these men their Christian alters might even get less than 50% of the body time, and the hierarchy alter gets much of the rest. In denominations such as the Lutheran, Catholic, or Episcopal where religious functions are very ritualistic this works fine. However, in churches which call for a spiritual walk, the Christian alters have to be given a chance to be strong.

SUMMARY & FINAL COMMENTS

We have provided the reader with some remarkable secrets about the foundations of the internal worlds. These specifics are meant to be more as a type of shorthand to enable competent experienced therapists to grasp what they are dealing with. By knowing the basic patterns, inferences can be made in working with a system. However, it is disturbing to think that any therapist would view his or her client as a guinea pig or an interesting new toy. The client has been the victim of enough experiments. In the light of what we know, and hopefully what the reader has learned, deprogramming needs to be handled by teams of people.

The programming has physically changed the victim's brain. Has the reader ever been in a depression that they can't break out of, no matter what the efforts? Hopefully not, but some people do. It is possible for the brain to be trapped in a physical change, a neurochemical change in the brain that is hard to dislodge. The internal worlds can appear to be collapsed, the computers can pretend or actually be taken down-- and yet, the creative force in the mind that constructed them for survival will rebuild them. Long term benefits of destroying worlds will be best achieved when methods are carried out that encourage the core and the core splits to collapse the entire thing. That is why the core is hidden so well, the Illuminati do not want their internal worlds tampered with.

We have written 3 books to provide a rough sketch of a very complex subject.

We trust that this book has given the reader deeper insights into the depths of total mind-control that contemporary mankind has plunged into. The subject is a deep one, which can be compared to Mammoth Cave, for what one sees on the surface is small compared to the depths and breadths of a vast underground. Although our books have explored and shined light deeper than previous explorations, who knows how deep the subject goes?

God's Word says, "Where sin increased, grace abounded all the more."

When the world was void and empty God put His light upon it, with only a spoken word, & new life broke forth. He can still do this. He is the same God, yesterday, today & forever.

Mankind is resourceful. He can do amazing feats. Mankind has been faced with difficult situations in the past and has been competitent. If mankind can do these things without God, what could we do with God? If God be for us, who can be against us?

Never, never, never give up hope.

Bibliography

BIBLIOGRAPHY-SOURCES

BIBLIOGRAPHICAL NOTES

Note by Fritz to readers. Readers are asked to **examine particular chapters for most of the sources.** However, this Bibliographical section will provide some of the other sources used which did not get mentioned in the text of the book, as well as list the sources of Illustrations.

During the course of writing this book, I decided to provide some of the references as I went along. This was in part so that I wouldn't be stuck with having to do the work when I got finished. The process of doing research is an art. A bibliography doesn't really convey what happens. I have accumulated the notes in my files from over 100 victims of mind-control, both trauma-based or implants or both. Many of these I have personally interviewed, and many Cisco and I have personally tried to help. The news story behind the *Deeper Insights* news story would be even more fascinating than the book itself, the problem is I'm too busy trying to get out what happening to worry about the story behind the story. This book was not done under leisure conditions, but under conditions of stress and harassment.

We have witnessed a number of therapists tell Cisco and I that our two previous books on the trauma-based mind-control were extremely accurate and the best that was available. Unfortunately, in a number of cases, their clients were not kept safe and are no better off than before the *Vol. 2* came out. Hopefully, this book will help our side break out of the old therapeutic methods which are not working and will be a catalyst for the creation of therapeutic teams.

What standards, what criteria, determines what goes into a book like this? Do I indiscriminately listen to any deranged person that has an outrageous story and then run with it? No, I try to use the best judgement and spiritual discernment possible. However, I have been accused by more than one Christian minister of this. One such minister who said my books were "junk" because I listened to SRA survivors too much, has been spreading wild lies about this author based solely on the reports (lies) of one programmed multiple who is still programmed. It never ceases to amaze me the sources that my critics go to!

Cisco has helped the other co-author Fritz a great deal in understanding the Illuminati. She knows it from the inside, and he has known it as a researcher and avid historian. The teamwork of the two co-authors has produced this indepth insightful look. There will be skeptics who point out that it is hard to get reliable information from mind-control victims. And that criticism is why this book is so valuable.

Part of the reason the information in this book is so valuable is that for the first time, persons who actually did the programming are revealing what they did. In order to get this level of information, years of caring work had to be done before these persons abandoned their Illuminati gnostic philosophy and made the decision to serve the Lord Jesus Christ with all their heart. Now with the Spirit of Truth guiding them, they have the level of courage to let the world know what they witnessed first hand. Much of the information in this book is reliable eye-witness information. It can not be overstressed how valuable this information is. The co-authors have already seen a domino effect from the *Vol. 2* book. As more information comes out, more people will find the courage to speak out.

To understand the times we live in, the reader might read the book or watch the film *1984*. The government (more accurately hidden government) controls information, and periodically directs people's hate. When Timothy McVeigh was captured and on trial, it was interesting how public opinion was totally manipulated. I heard several talk radio stations that asked listeners to call in and talk about his guilt and punishment. Everyone that called in knew only what the establishment media had told them. I never heard one eye-witness during these call-ins. It never seemed to occur to anyone that no one knew the facts of the case, **all they knew is what they'd been spoon-fed by the establishment media**. They did a great job of whipping up hate just like the movie *1984* depicted. The point of this discussion is not whether he was guilty or not. The point is that most people's only source of news was the establishment and their trust of that source was total, even though the track record for the establishment media can be proven to be rather dismal. Most of my critics come from that group of people who dutifully subscribe to the establishment's mass mind control propaganda. They are the people who believe the enemy is whoever the government tells them the enemy is. Time has shown that no matter how much documentation I bring to bear on something politically incorrect, it is never enough. I am not trying to provide documentation for these vassals of the establishment. (The lords never gave up their serfs, they just devised more clever was to control them.)

Chapter 1. In this chapter, the information about the CIA levels of programming came from an insider who is concerned about the mind-control. This information was used because it matched other information gleaned from other sources.

Chapter 2. In order to stabilize the Catholic church which was collapsing due to masses of nuns and priests leaving, the Catholic church responded by employing mind-control (which they had already doing for some years). This means that most priests and nuns are under trauma-based total mind-control, at least in nations like the U.S. Two excellent books which helped the author Fritz Springmeier years ago understand the details of current Catholic involvement with the Illuminati, the Masons, and mind-control were:

Yallup, David A. *In God's Name, An Investigation Into the Murder of Pope John Paul I.* Toronto: Bantam Books, 1984. (In addition to the book, the author Fritz has a friend who was married to Green Beret who was programmed who knew ahead of time that the Pope was going to be assassinated. The different factions of the NWO are much more interlinked than people realize. And mind-controlled slaves played roles within the entire sordid affair.)

Berry, Jason. *Lead Us Not Into Temptation, Catholic Priests and the Sexual Abuse of Children.* NY: Image Books, 1992.

Another source of information for those interested are issues of the *Times of Acadiana* periodical.

The particular types of traumas and their applications for specific programming came primarily from therapeutic work/interviews of the numerous victims of mind-control.

Chapter 3. In order to understand how drugs affect the body and mind, the author Fritz Springmeier studied a number of heavy duty books on drugs, a few of which were studied and bear mentioning include:

Wang, Richard I.H. ed. *Practical Drug Therapy.* Philadelphia: J.P. Lippincott Co.,1979.

Black, Perry, ed. *Drugs and the Brain.* Baltimore, MD: The John Hopkins Press, 1969. [This is just one of a number of expensive books the author obtained to understand technical details surrounding the programming.]

Luce, Gay Gaer. *Body Time Physiological Rhythms...* NY: Pantheon Books, 1971.

The most amazing thing was when Fritz Springmeier discovered John Lilly's book on LSD programming which substantiated in amazing accuracy and confirmation in detail of programming techniques that Cisco (and others) had reported to co-author Fritz. This information makes up a good part of chapter 3.

Chapter 4. Hypnosis. In order to understand hypnosis, this author looked at dozens of books on hypnosis. Some of these were ordered special for the research such as Melvin Powers, *A Practical Guide to Self Hypnosis*. North Hollywood, CA: Wilshire Book Co., 1961.

McGill, Ormond. *Professional Stage Hypnotism.* CA. ISBN no. 0-930298-03-9.

The codes and the hypnotic scripts have come from working with recovering victims of mind-control. (The major exception to that is Christ De Nicola's material which was in Jon Rappoport's collection of material *U.S. Government Mind Control Experiments On Children* which is provided on pg. 64.)

Chapter 5. This chapter is thoroughly documented. In fact, there was a great deal of material that didn't get into this chapter. An example of something recent that didn't get into the chapter is coverage of the May, '97 issue of *Disney's Adventures*, a magazine for kids, has a article promoting ESP and holding a national ESP contest. The contest will start at the NYC headquarters of The American Society for Psychical Research. Not only is this organization an occult organization, but the Word of God warns that psychic occult activity is off limits. When man fell spiritually in the Garden of Eden, certain activities were placed off limits. Mankind is not spiritually ready to be using such powers, but Disney would like your kids to have them. On page 57 of the *Disney Adventure* article they have Disney Adventures ESP Experiment. *The Light Warrior* magazine, Vol. 6, Winter/Spring '97 was helpful in bringing this *Disney Adventure* article to the author's attention. A sample of just one in a hundred further details that didn't get into the chapter was that Marie Osmund, a mind-controlled slave has been starring in Disney's *Maybe This Time* television show as Julia, on Disney corp.'s ABC network. This author had more information into Disney's criminal activities too, but the chapter and its documentation that is provided is so extensive, that the reader should have a good idea of what Disney is all about, and how it has been one of the best deceptions perpetrated on the American people. Christian radio announcer Mark Spaulding, who interviewed Fritz Springmeier on his radio show for 4 weeks, caught onto this deception and is worth quoting, *The Light Warrior*, ibid., p. 20, "I [listened]...to every Disney story you could imagine...I knew all the characters and all the stories. But there was a darker side of Disney that eluded me in those early days. The magic side that was preparing me to accept the occult as a normal part of reality. Whether it was Mickey

Mouse, the Sorcerer's Apprentice, or the Shaggy Dog who was really the unfortunate boy next door who just so happened to get hexed by a ring from the past, I was being courted by a world of the imagination which flowed from the occult I had no idea that a dwarf was mythical creature known for demonic behavior, or that a fairy like Tinker Bell was fashioned after a nature spirit that would someday be worshipped by misguided New Age leaders. And I really didn't pay that much attention to the pointed ears on Peter Pan, nor did I know that Pan was a demon god worshipped by the inhabitants of the Bible land of Caesarea Philippi."

Chapter 6. This research into this chapter included dozens of trade journals, and other manufacturing information too numerous to quote. Some are provided in the chapter. The intelligence insider, who has (at risk to themself) helped locate implants for victims, provided help on diagrams. Many victims also provided information.

Chapters 7-12. The research in these chapters is given documentation in the chapters, and where it is not documented it generally comes from this author's own work with victims of mind-control.

Appendix 1. The lists of programmers/dirty CIA come from the Author's own files. The information about Anton LaVey and Michael Aquino are based not only on interviews by the author with pertinent people but also include a number of primary documents from the Temple of Set, and information contained in a number of books such as:

Johnston, Jerry. *The Edge of Evil, The Rise of Satanism in North America.* Dallas: Word Publishing, 1989.

Landis, Bill. *The Unauthorized Biography of Kenneth Anger.* NY: HarperCollins, 1995.

Parker, John. *At the Heart of Darkness, Witchcraft, Black Magic and Satanism Today.* NY: First Carol Pub. Group, 1993.

Raschke, Carl A. *Painted Black*. San Francisco, Harper & Row, 1990.

Illustrations & Photographs

- Title page Introduction--CIA document, Freedom of Information Act.
- Title page Chapter 1. EPIC badge, someone at Ft. Bliss connected to EPIC.
- Title page Chapter 2. Guy de Rothschild, wire service photo.
- Page 21. Catholic boy in a compliant programming stance, private photo from a victim of mind control.
- Page 24. Al Gore as "the Beast", Associated Press photo, Sun. Oct. 29, 1995. Queen Sheri as a wildcat. Photo from a friend in the pro wrestling world.
- Title page Chapter 3. Adrenalchrome cell, old issue of *Scientific American.*
- Title page Chapter 4. Collage from an artist's pattern.
- Title page Chapter 5. Diagram by author Fritz Springmeier.
- Page 74. Disney's Phallus Castles on The Little Mermaid video cover, Hoffman's *Secret Societies and Psychological Warfare*. There was other writers who also noticed this and so it may have appeared in another publication.
- Page 126. Mickey as a sorcerer. Untitled little piece of paper advertising for Disney.
- Page 127. Mickey ordering the Stars. From Al Daggar's *Media Spotlight.*
- Page 130. Bassoon's double-pyramid. Fritz's sketch of what shows on the screen during the bassoon's notes.
- Page 132. Fantasia's Lucifer from Al Daggar's *Media Spotlight.*
- Title page Chapter 6. 2020 Neural Chip Implant, originally from an IBM whistleblower who passed it on to a friend of a friend of the author.
- Page 145-147. Anechoic chamber proof of syntel implants. Directly from the victim who got the anechoic chamber evidence of their mind-control implants.
- Page 148-158. Author's Diagrams based on info from a helpful insider who wants to help, as well as a few additions by this author.
- Title page Chapter 7. Vortexes and bubbles. Drawing done by Cisco Wheeler during the '80's trying to show the mental effect of the mind-control. The film *Fantasia* helps readers visualize how this type of imagery is created.
- Page 202. Author's drawings based upon drawings of a victim.
- Title page Chapter 8. Old woodcut from a book on Medieval torture.
- Title page Chapter 9. Sketch by Fritz Springmeier of the 7 brains.
- Page 250. Collage by Cisco Wheeler
- Title page Chapter 10. Reproduction of 33° Freemason C.W. Leadbeatter's book entitled *The Hidden Life In Freemasonry*. Adyar, India: Theosophical Publishing House, 1949.
- Page 266. Author's photos of Las Vegas.
- Title page Chapter 11. Collage of puppet in a colored grid by author Cisco Wheeler.
- Page 274- A crude and inaccurate portrayal of the clock & quadrants by Cisco's system. Even though this colored picture is inaccurate, it does give people a starting point to understand the 3-D effect of how the

clock-the compass-the hour glass are hooked up together and rotate and tie in with the elevators and the quadrants.

Title page Chapter 12. External controls chapter showing an ad by Erté selling Barbie Dolls. There were also other interesting Barbie Dolls sold in the same magazine, such as their Goddess of the Sun, which says "This Mackie will shine forever" an reference to Mason (?) Mackie who encourages sun worship, "Pay tribute to the sun." This Barbie doll has sun rays and jewels to fit the part of a sun goddess.

● Page 276-277. Old Maybelline ad using Monarch type language and referring to MPD.

● Title page. Appendix 1. Book about celebrities with their mugshots.

● Page 291-296. Letters, etc. provided by an anonymous victim of Michael Aquino's.

● Title page. Appendix 2. Author's photos.

● Between pages 296-297. Author's architectural drawing of Oregon State Psych Hospital & its secret programming tunnels.

● Title page. Appendix 3. Drawing which appeared in Fritz's Sept. '93 newsletter.

●●●Center section of collages. Collages by Cisco Wheeler, copyright Cisco Wheeler.

● Pages 333, 334, 347, 365, 381, 382, 405-410, 414. Graphs and Charts by Fritz Springmeier.

● Page 353. Cisco Wheeler's pencil drawings. copyright Cisco Wheeler.

● Page 439. From a science magazine's cover.

The TWILIGHT WORLD
of
Interconnections Between Organized Crime & the Illuminati

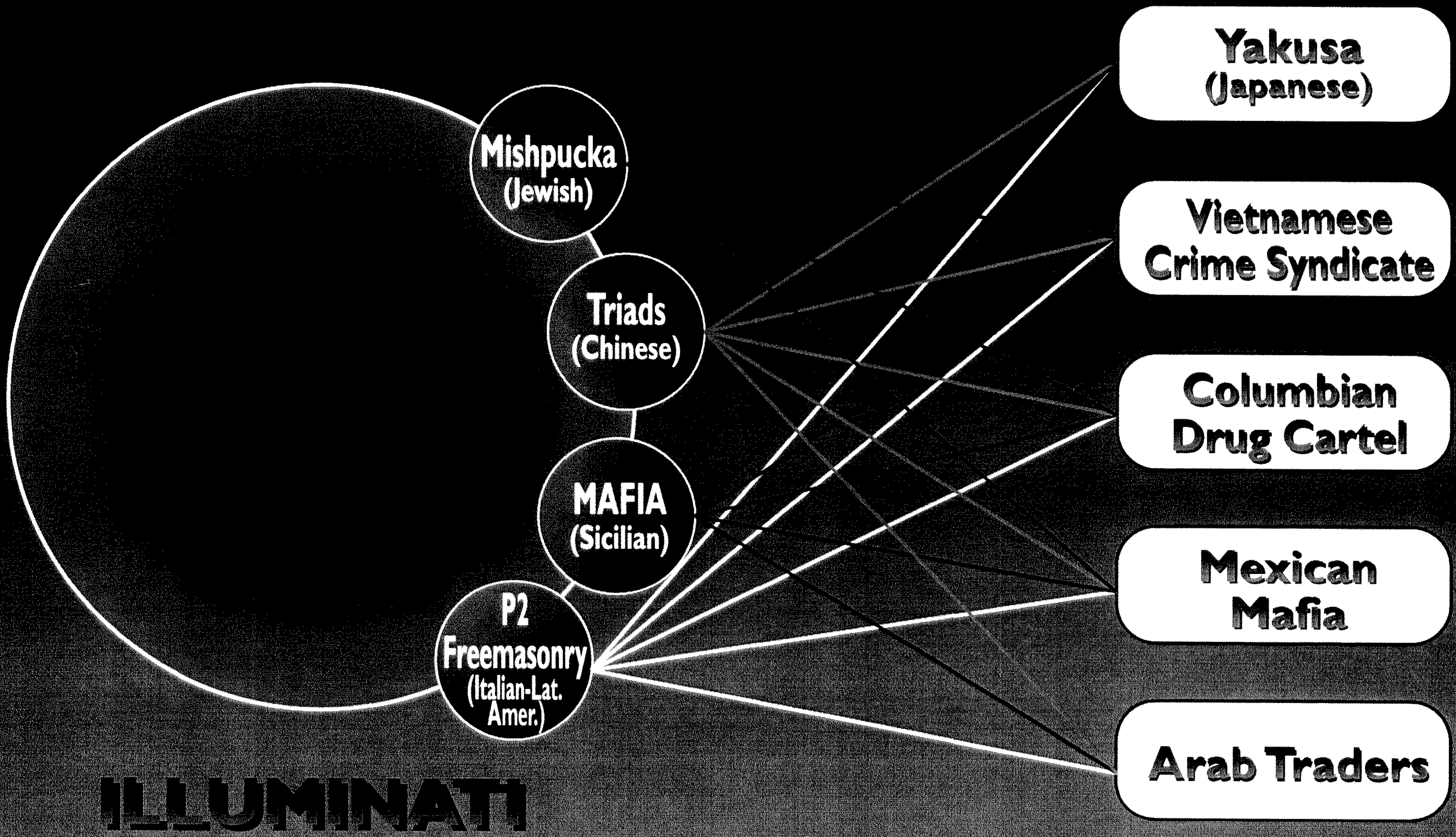

Mishpucka
(Jewish)

Triads
(Chinese)

MAFIA
(Sicilian)

P2
Freemasonry
(Italian-Lat. Amer.)

Yakusa
(Japanese)

Vietnamese
Crime Syndicate

Columbian
Drug Cartel

Mexican
Mafia

Arab Traders

ILLUMINATI

NOTE: Many Occult and intelligence groups also interconnect.

Index

INDEX
(for entire book)

0-30 Hz, 182
0-400 KHz, 183

1st Dimension, 432
1st Ritual Theft of Birthright, 259
1st brain locks up, if too much trauma occurs early on, 516
1st brain priority, 518
1st brain resembles the mind of Satan, 517
1st brain, manipulation of, 515-517
1st realm of hell, internal, 479

2 headed eagle, 279
2nd Ritual Theft of Birthright, 260

3 Blind Mouseketeers, film, 120
3 Caballeros, film, 120
3 Little Pigs, film, 120
3 Little Wolves, film, 120
3 Lives of Thomasina, film, 120
3 Musicians, 124
3 Ninjas, film, 120
3 Orphan Kittens, film, 120
3 Queens, in ad, 275
3 cherubs, in *Fantasia* movie, 130
3 implant victims, 143-144
3 taps code, associated with Hydra, 482
3 wishes of the king, 272
3-D organic circuitry, 169-170
3-in-1 School, 226-227, 230-231
3M Cochlear Implant System, 160, 162
3rd & 4th generations of those who hate me, meaning of, 475
3rd & 4th ventricular areas, 211-212
3rd realm, 478

4 Cornerstones of system, 432
4 Gates to Heaven, programmg meaning, 432
4 Horsemen, 191
4 goddesses of directions, 200
4 tunnel systems out of New Mexico, 305
4-30 MHz, 183
4-person teams, 510
4th Ventricle Compression, 227-228
4th brain, 424, 426
4th realm, 478

5 KHz, 181
5 cranial bone plates, 219
5 fundamental arts of magical work, 498
5 points of fellowship, satanic ritual, 306
5-Day World Hopper pass, 101
5-bromouracil, BU, 240
5-hydroxytryptamine, 36
5th Amendment Rights, 174
5th brain, 227, 396
5th realm, 478
5th trumpet of *Revelation*, 411

6-20 Hz, 180
6th & 7th Book of Moses, 475
6th Dimension, 432
6th realm, 478
6.6 cell, Alpha grid, 470

7 Brains that make up the human Brain, 212
7 Grandefather & Mother-of-D. castles, important, 478
7 Seals of Babylon, 191
7 brains of the human brain, 514
7 brains, important to understand programming, 487
7 deadly sins, 478
7 headed beast of Hydra, 482
7 important temples, internal, 478
7 wonders of ancient world, internal, 518
7-8 Hz frek of earth, 183
7th realm, 478
7.83 hz, 144

8 TRAX, nightclub, 112
8 emotions, 5 senses separation trauma in Sens. Depriv. Tank, 431
8, Figure, symbolizes divinity, 257
8th realm, 477-478, 483

9 Hz, 179
9 realms of programming, 478
9th realm, 477-478

10 Elite families of Tibet, 210
10 Hz, 179
10 Lepers story, 477
10 classes of traitors to programming, 477
10 nations, of NWO, names used, 271-272
10 spheres of Rubicon, 477

13 families per grid, 272
13 stages of splitting, 13 foundations, 432
13th Illum. bloodline, 80
13th alters, 270
14th Masonic degree, 191

15 Hz, 179
17th Masonic degree, 191
20 Hz, 179
20/20, 18
20th Century Fox, 93, 111
20-20,000 Hz range, 161
25 Hz, 179
29 Palms Marine Base, CA, 303
30-35 dB, 161
30-50 Hz. range, 175
72 Consummate Arts Secrets of the Shaolin Temple, 206, 207
100 Club, 87
100-200 Hz, 179
116 MHz, title pg. chp. 6
130 dB, 161
147 MHz field, 180
200-400 Hz, 181
233 Club, 95
300-3,000 Hz range, 161
400-500 Hz range, 161
435 Mhz, 144
666, Tattoo of Aquino's, 289
693rd Intelligence Wing, 297
700 Club, 117
750 Mhz, 144
777, book, 200
840-890 MHz (non-herzian waves), 219
840-890 MHz, 219
1080 Mhz, 144
1310 MHz, 181
1984, George Orwell's movie/book, 284, 399
2020 Neural Chip Implant, title pg. chp. 6
2982 MHz, 181
20,000 Leagues Under the Sea, 96
10,000 Famous Freemasons, 221
100 million billion bits of information, in 1 normal brain, 311

A Force, of MI-6, 67
A Guide To Prison Privatization, 11
A Modern Utopia, 75
A Newsletter from A Follower of Christ, 307
A Statistical Study of the Osteopathic Profession, 226
A Tisket A Tasket, 59
A Treatise on Bone Setting, 215
A Warning to Christians About...Chiropractic, 221
A cappella music, 181
A-DNA, 239
AAO, Applied Academy of Osteopathy, 222
ABC, 57, 98, 105, 117, 120
ABC, agreement with Disney, 98
ADIC Aerospace Defense Intelligence Center, 297
ADL Anti-Defam. League, 79
AEW Acoustical Energy Wavefront, 180
Æsclepius, temple of, 440
AFIS System, 141
AFISA Air Force Intelligence Support Agency, 297
AFIT Projects, 185
AFMIC Armed Force Med. Intelligence Center, 298
AIDS, 20
ALEX programming, 303
ALEX system, 168, 169, 177
ALEXUS programming, 303
AMORC, 205, 224
ANSI, 173
AOA, 226
AOA, money for research, 225-226
APTI, 177
ARCO Atlantic Richfield Co., 177, 298
ARCO Power Technologies, Inc., 177
ARCO's board of directors, trained at Tavistock, 298
ARPA/ASTO, 185
ASQC, 173
AT&T, 139, 172, 176, 304
ATF, 300
AZ Hwy 93, 303
Aasen, John, 95
Abacus, from carbon molecules, 168
Abaddon, 445
Abandonment, feelings of, when m.c. is admitted, 335
Abbadon, 476
Abbot rings, 191
Abdul, 209
Abdul-Kadir, 475
Abduscius, 480
Abigor, 480
Abilities to hypnotize, if poor, system less complex, 363
Abolitionist movement, 217
Abominations, 76
Aborigines, of Australia, 7
Abortions, 265, 307
Abortions, to get souls, 265
About Ben Sharpsteen, 92
Abramson, Harold, 281
Abrazo del ranchero, term, 215
Abreactions, 392
Abreactions, avoidance of, 402
Abreactions, understanding, 403
Absolute music, 124
Absorption rates of drugs, 26
Absu, 480
Abuse, daily, 19-21
Abuse, internal, not seen by therapists, 374
Abusers have a need to be worshipped, 487
Abusers use abuse as a self-reward, 487
Abusers, confrontations or not, 411
Abyss, 202, 480
Accardo, Anthony, 93, 111

ACCESS TOPICS
Access Codes, 62, 64, 272, 325, 432
Access Codes, Programs, 64
Access code to the computers, 272
Access codes, format, 272
Access codes, sentences, 62
Access shafts for trucks to tunnels, 302
Access triggers, 56
Accessing, of slaves, 325
Accountability, removed by MPD/DID, 195
Acetophenzine, 27
Acetoxycycloheximide, 29
Acetylcholine, 236
Achron, Joseph, 252
Acknowledgment of what Satan stole from victim, 401
Acoustic amplifier, 180
Acoustical Energy Wavefront AEW, 180
Action-based-on-feelings brain area, 231
Acupoints, in head, 207
Acupressure, 206
Acupuncture for mind-control, 206
Acupuncture, 205-206
Ad, for mind-control, sample, 276-277
Ada, OK, 305, 312
Adam & Eve, 378
Adam, 252, 378, 426, 428, 475, 493-494
Adam, Cain, Tubal-cain curse, 521
Adams, John, 174
Adaptability of neurons, 236
Adirondack Mountains, NY, 305
Adjudication, 54
Adjustment disorder, 335
Adler, Margo, 299
Adley, Dr. Ross, 180, 281
Admirals, with Disney, 98
Adramalech, demon, 480
Adrenalchrome, title pg. chp. 3, 36
Adrenalchrome, photo of, title pg. chp. 3
Adrenalin-rush addiction, 23
Adult alters, may not have experiences to give maturity, 476
Adult films, by Disney, 73, 100
Advanced Magical Arts, book, 498
Advanced ONE BRAIN, 227
Advances in the Theory of Quantum Neurodynamics, 186
Adventures in Wonderland, 114
Advertising, and Monarch programming, 275-277
Advice, flippant, 454
Advisory Committee on Human Radiation Experiments, 64
Aerospace Defense Intelligence Center, ADIC, 297
Aerospace Medical Labs, Aerospace Med. Div. W.P. AFB, 173
Affective disorder, 335
Affective memory without cognitive, problems resulting from, 449
Aflatoxin B1 , AFT, 238
Agaliarept, demon, 480
Agee, Philip, 3
Agendas for living life, 243
Agent alert device, 278
Agent of Influence, 68
Agent, Confusion, 68
Agent, Contract, 68
Agent, Deep Cover, 68
Agent, Disinformation, 68, 137
Agent, Double, examples of, 211
Agent, Notional, 68
Agent, Provocation, 67, 68
Agent, Spoon Feeder, 68
Agents, infiltration, protection against, 322
Agents, sleeper, 68
Aggression and genetics, 236
Aggressiveness, 406
Aguares, demon, 480
Aim, Demon, 480
Ain Soph Aur, programming of, 33
Air Asia, CIA, 299
Air Command & Staff College, 178
Air Ethiopia, CIA, 299
Air Force Academy, 227
Air Force Institute of Technology, 185
Air Force Intelligence Support Agency AFISA, 297
Air Force Office of Scientific Research, 173
Air Force Space Command/NORAD, 300
Air Force Swat teams, 297
Air National Guard, 305
Air Tasers, for sale, 143
Air-Sea Forwarders, Inc., 70
Air-intake shafts, 302
Airplane flight patterns, used to access slaves, 325
Airpower Journal, 178
Ak-Sar-Ben Fraternity, 104
Akihoto, Emperor, 72
Al-Abd as-Aswad, 23
Aladdin cartoon, 106, 107
Aladdin, reception theme, 102
Alamosa, CO, 303
Alarms, to prevent access, 391
Alaska, 90, 142
Alaskan Islands, 98
Alaskan Poker Flat Rocket Range, 142
Alastor, demon, 480
Alberta, Canada, 283
Albuquerque, NM, 300
Alchemists, 224
Alcohol, prevents REM sleep, 349
Alcoholic centers, used for m.c., 16
Alcoholics, thinking of, 395

Alcyone, Pleiades, 261
Aldrich, Stephen, 283
Alexander technique, 206
Alexander, Col./Dr. John, 5, 177, 282
Alexis Satellite, 177
Alfa division, Russia, 297
Algar, James, 98
Alibis, prepared in advance for programmers, 411

ALICE TOPICS
Alice Cans the Cannibals, 92
Alice Charms the Fish, 92
Alice Chops the Suey, 92
Alice Comedies, 91
Alice Foils the Pirates, 86
Alice Hunting in Africa, 92
Alice In Wonderland stories told, 261
Alice In Wonderland, 32, 96, 97, 272, 275, 481
Alice Plays Cupid, 92
Alice Rattled by Rats, 92
Alice Springs, Australia, 298
Alice Stage Struck, 91
Alice and the Dog Catcher, cartoon, 86
Alice cartoons, 92-93
Alice in Wonderland programming, 466
Alice the Beach Nut, 93
Alice the Piper, 86
Alice the Whaler, 93
Alice's Day at Sea, 86
Alice's Egg Plant, cartoon, 81
Alice's Mysterious Mystery, 86
Alice's Spooky Adventure, 92
Alice's Wonderland, 92

ALIEN TOPICS
Alien Abduction cover stories, 15
Alien Encounter, Disneyland, 101
Alien abductee, 103
Alien implants, 461
Alien phenomena, explanation of, 184-185
Alien programming, 34, 63, 261, 282
Alien programming, Pleiadian, 261
Alien programming, with LSD, 34
Alien, terrorizes audience, 101
Aliens, claims by abductees about, 264
Aliens, in Disney film, 121
Aliens, lie to Swedenborg, 218
Aliens, questions of existence, 474
Alive film, 73, 89
All About Magic show, 100
All Seeing Eye & Sirius, 63
All Seeing Eye, at Disneyland, 117,
All Seeing Eye, in ad, 275
All Seeing Eye, internal, 270
All-seeing eye, in Disney movie, 121
All-seeing eye, worn on blue aprons, 306
Allen, Morse, 283
Allen-Stevenson Private School, 104
Allied Pacific Printing, CIA, Bombay, India, 299
Alligators, in *Fantasia*, 132
Alligators, snakes, & reptiles can be hypnotized, 514
Alligators, that guard Hilton Head Island, 117
Almadel, the, 257
Alpha 3M Cochlear Implant, 162
Alpha particles, 240
Alpha programming, 34, 55-56, 269
Alpha rhythms, 183, 270
Alpha state, 42, 349
Alpha state, tricks to keep mind in, 42
Alpha waves, 174, 181
Alpha-methyl-p-tyrosine, 36
Altars, humans, for rituals, 285

ALTERS
Alter families, 61, 125, 270, 353
Alter systems, have straight forward minds, that are on task, 505
Alter systems, how God views, 494
Alter, Assassination, 438
Alter, Bonfire Child, 480
Alter, Creation, 126
Alter, Dameon, 479, 520
Alter, Earth, 128
Alter, Fairies, 126, 314-315
Alter, Fire, 128
Alter, Gatekeeper, 193
Alter, Keeper of the Tree, 131
Alter, Lion, 38
Alter, Mother of Darkness, 123, 247
Alter, Mother of Darkness, role in prgmg, 123
Alter, Mr. Nobody, 466
Alter, Pontifax, 62
Alter, Protector, 390
Alter, Repunzel, 198-199
Alter, Tiger, 38
Alter, Water, 128
Alter, Wind, 128
Alter, child, can scare & run, 349
Alter, emotion, 1 per spinner family, 377
Alter, for hunts, example of transference, 506
Alter, front, logical, 391
Alter, host, 326, 334, 373, 374, 376, 422, 425, 428, 438, 471, 508
Alter, host, creation of, 425
Alter, sexual, can be given new boundaries in role, 354
Alter, suicide, 396
Alter, who holds *Fantasia* memory, 122
Alter/demon, internal Sorceress, 201
Alternative Medicine, types, 206

Alters are not demons, 386
Alters, 13th, 270
Alters, "a", 422
Alters, a thru m, 61
Alters, Assassination, 194
Alters, Beta, 270
Alters, Butterflies, 432, 514
Alters, Christian front, 389
Alters, Christian, 123, 479
Alters, Clean slates, 122, 446, 483
Alters, Clean slates, replace horses that get too close to memory, 446
Alters, Core Protectors, 126
Alters, Deaf and Dumb, 484
Alters, Delta, 270
Alters, Diamonds, 125, 193
Alters, Door Knob, 119, 501
Alters, Fairies, 125, 126
Alters, Fairies, names of, 273
Alters, Gatekeepers, 249, 382, 390, 479
Alters, Gems, 190, 252, 314-315, 432, 514, 518-519
Alters, Grand Master, 412, 478
Alters, Grande Dames, 478
Alters, Hamadryads, 196
Alters, Horses, 130-131, 445-446
Alters, Hour glass, 62
Alters, Illuminati, 119
Alters, Internal Programmers, 199, 520
Alters, Internal Protectors, 198
Alters, Internal Walls, 199
Alters, Ipsissimis, 412
Alters, Judge, 364, 495
Alters, Monkeys, 196
Alters, Mother kittens, 377
Alters, Night Mare, 131, 445
Alters, Pegasi, 445-446
Alters, Plants, 196
Alters, Processors, 190
Alters, Protectors, Animals, 23
Alters, Reporting, 62, 64, 197, 278
Alters, Ribbons, 126, 270, 432, 521
Alters, Samphires, 196
Alters, Sisters of Light, 497-498
Alters, Spin Kittens, 460
Alters, Transformation, 199
Alters, Unicorn, 445-446
Alters, Winged Monkeys, 129
Alters, animal, 479
Alters, becoming aware of themselves, 470
Alters, bee, 451
Alters, bird, 451
Alters, can help each other, 513
Alters, can they be eliminated from the mind?, 470
Alters, cannibalistic, 481
Alters, child robot alters, 483
Alters, child, 234, 327, 506-507
Alters, creation in Sens. Dep. Tank, 33
Alters, cult-loyal, 349
Alters, "dead", 126 201, 472
Alters, deep hierarchy parts, 474
Alters, deeper, can put survival skills to use, 490
Alters, deeper, designed to function in subconscious mind, 412
Alters, deeper, goals for, 490
Alters, deeper, in a trance state, 412
Alters, deeper, initial fear of the outside world, 512
Alters, deeper, live in a magical world, 248
Alters, deeper, teaching how to function in outside world, 511
Alters, deeper, trust issues, 394
Alters, fighting, for duals, 483
Alters, front, 133, 343, 374-375, 396, 422, 494, 512, 521-522
Alters, front, doors they walk through, 133
Alters, happy, 451
Alters, have the ability to change, 512
Alters, helping, 414
Alters, how to work with deep Illuminati alters, 412
Alters, hypnotically age progressed, 476
Alters, kitten, 254, 394-395
Alters, logic alters, 355
Alters, love their parents based on fantasy, 389
Alters, magical, 199
Alters, male and female parts in one system, 130
Alters, may have several jobs, sevrl purposes, 467
Alters, memory carrying alters, 445
Alters, mirror image, 177, 479
Alters, only show themselves in special situations, 471
Alters, opposite sex, 479
Alters, persecutors, 373-374
Alters, preverbal used for Night Mare alters, 446
Alters, records kept on, 61
Alters, resolving conflicts between, 422
Alters, scrambling, 374
Alters, self-mutilation, dealing with, 422
Alters, separating from demons, 468
Alters, sexual, 479
Alters, shadow, 200, 247, 377
Alters, shell, 479
Alters, should be treated equally, without favorites, 504
Alters, singing tree, 451
Alters, spinners, 377
Alters, stars, 124, 126, 127
Alters, stripper, demon attached to them, 484
Alters, suicide, 194
Alters, suicide, dealing with, 380-381
Alters, talk about non-threatening issues with therapist, 438
Alters, times when they compete for body, 423
Alters, training in self-hypnosis, 38

Alters, training to maintain a trance level, 457
Alters, troublemakers during therapy, 330
Alters, who can assist with demantling a system, 479-489
Alters, who carry memories, 444-446
Amarillo, TX, 298
Amduscias, demon, 480
America's Most Wanted, 115
American Academy of Osteopathy, 222
American Buzzsaw signal, 182
American Club in London, 105
American Eugenics Society, 281
American Federation of Musicians, 111
American History Theme Park, 112
American Medical News, 225
American Nazi Party, 111
American Newspaper Guild, CIA, 299
American Osteopathic Association, 223
American Psychiatric Association, 143
American Revolution, 82
American in China, analogy, 511
Americanisms, used in syntel, 461
Ameritech, 105
Amethyst, 190, 314
Amin, Idi, 396
Amines, 27, 36
Aminoacridine dye, 240
Amish, 215

AMNESIA TOPICS
Amnesia Walls, 19, 449
Amnesia walls, were put in for survival, 449
Amnesia, Transient, 335
Amnesia, anterograde, 209
Amnesia, back-up, 198, 340
Amnesia, organic, 37
Amnesia, retroactive, by Cyc., 27
Amnesia, retrograde via shocks, 29
Amnesia, retrograde, 29, 209
Amon, demon, 481
Amos and Andy, 118
Amphibious men, 194
Amphitheater, internal, 477
Amplifiers, 138
Amsterdam, Netherlands, 283
Amulets, use of, 257
Amusement Park, Knott's Berry Farm, 116
Amusement park traumas, 23
Amusement parks, Disney, 115, see also particular ones.
Anabaptists, 396
Anaheim City Council, 114
Anaheim, CA schools, 114
Anaheim, CA, 114, 117
Analeptic drugs, 29
Anarchy level witchcraft, 479
Anatomy, 215
Ancestor worship, China, 207
Anchorage, AK, 142
Anchoring mechanisms, 471
Anchors for programming, 520-521
Ancient Mystic Oriental Masonry, 50
Ancient Sun God, 48
Andechs, Germany, 164
Anderson, Ken, 80
Andras, demon, 482
Andrealphus, demon, 481
Andreasson, Betty, 184
Andrew Taylor Still, 221
Androids, creation supported by LaVey, 5
Anechoic chamber results, 144-147
Anechoic chamber, 461
Anesthesia, emotional, term, 404
Angel Peak, NM, 305
Angel Times, 15
Angel of Death, nickname of Mengele, 214
Angel of Mercy, Dr. Joseph Mengele's nickname, 411
Angels Don't Play This HAARP, 177
Angels, evil, influence on human history, 255
Angels, evil, invoked, 498
Angels, questions of existence, 474
Angels, which are Internal-Self-Helpers, 263-264
Anger Management Trauma, 22
Anger, Kenneth, 81, 118-119, 284
Anger, part of mind, 189
Anger, self, programmed in, 22
Animal Alter Development Trauma, 23
Animal instincts of 1st brain, 515
Animal-nature documentaries, 97
Animals vs. people, 80
Animals, demon that communicates as an animal, 481
Animated Alphabet, Disney film, 119
Ann Arbor, MI, 235
Annals of Neurology, 164
Annual Passports, Disney parks, 101
Anointing, demonic, 254
Anorexia, 337-339
Answering machine triggers, 56
Anterior Cingulate Sulcus, 206
Anterograde Amnesia, 209
Anteromedial hypothalamus, 35
Anthony, Piers, 194

ANTI-CHRIST TOPICS
Anti-Christ, 5, 184, 197, 264, 265, 458
Anti-Christ, abilities, 5
Anti-Christ, foundation of rule, 5
Anti-Christ, helped greatly by Disney, 134
Anti-Christ, marketing of, 5
Anti-Christ, plans for, 65

Anti-Christ, pre-arranged system changes in his bride, 430
Anti-Christ, revelator of, 484
Anti-Christ, spirit of, 192
Anti-Defamation League ADL, 79
Anti-slavery Society, 217
Antibes, France, 77
Antibiotics, 170, 462
Antibiotics, won't kill some viruses, 170
Antwerp, Belgium, 162
Anus, Eye of Horus, 265
Anxiety disorder, 335
Anxiety, used for programming, 42
Apian Way analogy, 395
Apollo, in programming, 56
Apollo, sun god, 48, 131
Apologies, by scientists, 174
Apparent partial fusion, term, 463
Appeal to Reason periodical, 81
Appearance of client, does not reveal inner turmoil, 466
Appellation, 107
Apple-Woodsman ritual, the, 259
Apples, visualization exer. in 4-H camp, 43
Apples, visualization script, 43
Applied Academy of Osteopathy AAO, 222-223
Applied Kinesiology, 232
Aptos, CA, 230
Aquaman subspecies, 233
Aquarius, 190
Aquino's article on PSYOP & MindWar, 288
Aquino, Michael, 127, 193, 284, 287-296, 358, 496
Aquino, Michael, as a programmer, 287-296
Aquino, Michael, picture & signature, 291
Aquino, Police Report on sexual abuse report, 296
Arabic, for programming, 53
Arabs, 205
Arbatel of Magic, the, 257
Archer-Daniels-Midland ADM, 107
Archeron, demon, 480
Archives, classified, stored at Suitland, MD, 304
Area 51, NV, 232, 297, 304
Area, the, nickname for Area 51, 304
Argosy magazine, 285
Arguments, between team members, 383
Argus Peak, CA, 303
Aries, 190
Aristotle, 231
Arizona, 64, 185, 282, 283, 302-303
Arizona, DUMB bases, 302-303
Arkansas, 280, 282, 303
Arkansas, DUMB bases, 303
Armageddon end-time programming, 129, 132
Armageddon horses, 484
Armed Force Medical Intelligence Ctr., AFMIC, 298
Armies, internal, 495
Armitage, Kenneth, 89
Armonk, NY, title pg. chp. 6
Armor, spiritual, 364-367
Army Psycho Therapy, film, 96
Army of ghosts, 107
Arnall, Ellis G., 95
Aromatherapy, 206
Aromic therapy, 393
Arrays, microelectrode, for sight, 165, 166
Arreglador de huesos, term, 215
Arrest tricks, 69
Arsenio Hall show, 74
Art work, for therapy, 470
Art, modern, of Bass's HQ, 89
Arterial blood, 227
Artificial Electromagnetic Fields, 178
Artificial Intelligence Lab, MIT, 188
Artificial Life research, 300
Artificial insemination, 307
Artificial intelligence used with implants, 461
Artificial intelligence, 140, 461
Artificial lenses, 167
Arvida, 88-89
Aryan colony in S. America, 233
Ascended masters, rev. to CUT mmbrs, 49
Ascensio, Isabelle Zamora, 83
Ascension Dossier of Serapis Bey, 49
Ascension Keys, teaching of, 49
Ash tree, 480
Asher, Jim, 299
Ashland Naval Ammunition Depot, OK, 305
Asia Foundation, 70
Asia Research Centre, Hong Kong, CIA, 299
Asia, 251
Askenasy, Alexander R., 298
Askenazi hasidic bloodlines, 252-253
Asmodeus Illuminati level, 521
Asmodeus, demon, 481
Aspen, CO, 107
Assassination alters, 194-195, 438
Assassination operations, 65
Assassination programming, 56-57, 114, 270, 501
Assassination programming, how done, 501
Assassination slaves, cremated after mission, 299
Assassination, training for, 92
Assassins, who function as common people, 357
Assemblies of God, 117-118
Assemblies of God, infiltration by Illum., 259
Assembly of God, denomination, 117
Asset Control, 278-279
Assiah world, 33
Astra script, electronic mind control UT, 301
Astral Projection, 481
Astral level, 44, 356
Astral plane, 44, 290, 356, 441

Astral plane, ka work, 290
Astral plane, learning on, 441
Astral programming, 59
Astral projection to ceremonies by GDC, 200
Astral projection, 34, 119, 127, 200, 210, 211, 265, 325, 367, 412, 474, 481
Astral projection, CIA research, 474
Astral projection, used to access slaves, 325
Astrological signs, 47
Astrology, 483
Atchison, KS, 304
Atchley, W.R., 238
Atensio, Xavier, 102
Atlanta, GA, 304
Atlantic City 1929 conclave, 109
Atlantic City Board Walk, 111
Atlantic City, NJ, 106, 109, 111
Atlantic Ocean, term, 217
Atlantic Richfield Co ARCO, 298
Atlantis, Island of, DisneyWorld, 116
Atlantis, the new, 217
Atlas Corp., 98
Atlers, internal persecutor, 422
Atman, 517
Attacking, a form of denial, 438
Attention part of mind, 40
Attitudes, having the correct ones to help, 356
Attraction behaviors and genetics, 237
Atziluth world, 33

AUDIO IMPLANTS
Audio implants, 6, 159-163
Audio implants, Austrian, 162
Audio implants, basic components, 160
Audio implants, history of, 159-160
Audio implants, secret, 163-164
Audio implants, use in Vietnam War, 159
Auditory implants, 6, 159-163
Auditory implants, w/ programmable memories, 162-163
Auditory nerve, 160
Auditory resonance frek., 179
Auenbrugger, Leopold, 217
Aukastakalnis, Steve, 186
Aurora craft, 304
Austen, David, 289
Austin, Dr. Van O., 281
Austin, TX, 298
Australia, 103, 141, 142, 159, 163, 298
Australian govt. subsidizes implant industry, 163
Austria, 159, 162
Autism, 425, 516-517
Autism, cause of, 516-517
Autism, 13
Automatic nervous system part of 1st brain, 514
Automatic thoughts, irrational, weakening their power, 350
Autopia car ride, 72
Autry, Gene, 95
Avco, 88
Ave Maria (music) by Schubert, 96, 133
Aveda ad, 275
Avon Publishing, 194, 284, 285
Awe for authority, est. by 1st brain, 514
Ayurvedic medicine, 206
Aztec Cliffs, Dulce area, NM, 313

B'nai B'rith, 73, 79
B'nai B'rith, Lodge of L.A., 79
B-DNA, 239
BATF, 300
BBC show, 233
BMUs, 226
BOTA Builders of the Adytum, 231
BURST transmitter, 161
BZ, derivative of LSD, 221, 240
Baa, Baa, Black Sheep, 59
Baal, demon, 481
Baalberith, 481
Babbitt, Arthur, 81, 113
Babies, follow a real face more than mannequin, 424
Baby Breath, code, 62
Baby, newborn, abilities to learn, 489
Baby, newborn, uses smells to identify mother, 393
Babylon, 190, 191, 215
Babylonian cylinders, 48
Bacco Italian restaurant, New Orleans, 301
Baccus, 301
Bach, Johann, 46, 124
Back door approaches, 338, 359, 464, 521
Back door, to the core, 521
Back pain, caused by implants, 171
Back-pain, 181
Back-up amnesia, 198, 340
Backaches, suggestions for, 415
Backbone, sugar-phosphate, of DNA, 239
Background radiation, 179
Backstopping, 55
Bacon, John, 283
Bacteria, genetically engineered, 170
Bad magic, term used by programmers, 431
Bagley, Tennant (Pete), 283
Baird, Col. Matt, 283
Bakersfield, CA, 303
Bakker, Jim, 117-118
Bakker, Jim, split with TBS, 117
Bakker, Tammy Faye, 117-118
Baldwin, KS, 221
Baldwin, William, 15

Balkans, 85
Baltimore, MD, 235
Baltimore, MD, VA hospital, 301
Bambi, 80
Bambi, Christ-like manger birth, 80
Bamford, James, 140
Banfai implant, 162
Bank Nacional de Paris, 105
Bank of America, 94
Bank of America, branch at Disneyland, 94
Bank of Italy, 79, 94
Bankruptcy of LendVest, 105
Banks, title pg. chp. 1
Banks, in Israel, 287
Banks, set up by Disney in Napa, 112
Banquets, of Illuminati, 357
Baphomet ring, of Madonna, 74
Baptism issues around multiples, 491
Baptism of alters, 494
Baptisms, repeated for non-multiples, 494
Barbatos, demon, 481
Barber Pole Programming, 59
Barbie Dolls, title pg. chp. 12
Barbie doll fight, 7 year old stabs playmate, title pg. chp. 12
Barbie dolls, in programmg, 56
Bard, Brian, 144
Baro-Metric Pressure Process, 64
Barr, Roseanne, 17
Basic Psychological Operations Study (BPS), 141
Basic Youth Seminars of Bill Gothard, 396
Basic cranial course, 222
Basic worlds, how structured, 124
Basle, Switzerland, 235
Bass Bros. Enterprises, 89
Bass Enterprises, 89
Bass brothers, 88-89, 112
Bass, Ed, 89
Bass, Lee, 89
Bass, Perry, 89
Bass, Robert, 89
Bass, Sid Richardson, 88-89
Bassoon, and the deepest trance level, 129
Bat-Dry-Dead Man-Howell, MO caves, 304
Battle Creek, MI, 304
Battle of Manassas, site of, 297
Battle, of Bunker Hill, 51
Battle, of New Orleans, 51
Battlecreek, MI, V.A., 301
Battles of Manassas, 112, 297
Baum, Frank, 119, 194
Bavaria, Illuminati, 245
Baxley, GA, 290
Baylor University Medical Center, Dallas, TX, 299
Be Wise As Serpents, 70, 87, 218, 249, 312
Bean sprouts, internal, 59
Beans, used to indicate sacrifice, 23
Beast Barracks, West Point, USMA, 41, 42

BEAST COMPUTER TOPICS
Beast Computer, Central Eastern Alaska, 141-142
Beast computer, internal, 270, 271-272
Beast computers, 137, 141-142
Beast-men, Chimeras, 233
Beatles music, used for programming, 411
Beats, repetitive, for programming, 41
Beatty Illuminati family, 102
Beatty, Clyde, Circus, 284
Beatty, Mr., Maclaine's father, 103
Beatty, Warren, 102-103
Beauty & the Beast, reception, 102
Beauty and the Beast, cartoon, 119
Beck's Depression Inventory, 339
Beck, Johnny, 89
Becker, Dr. Robert, 183
Becker, James, 11
Bed coils, standardized for m.c., 185
Bedford & Lawrence Co., IN, 304
Bedford Hills, NY, 104
Bedford, MA, V.A., 301
Bedknobs and Broomsticks film, 78, 107
Bedwetting disorders, 406
Bee alters, 451
Beelzebub's Tales to His Grandson, 213
Beelzebub, Holy Book of, 481
Beelzebub, Lord of the Flies, 251, 256
Beelzebub, demon, 481, 482, 519
Beelzebub, married to Sisters of Light, 481
Beethoven's Pastoral Symphony, 130
Beethoven, Ludwig van, 47, 124
Begich, Dr. Nick, 161, 177
Behavior Genetics, 238
Behavior Modification to strengthen K-lines, 395
Behavior Modification, of fear, 343
Behavior Modification, to make reporting alters, 197
Behavior linked to genetics, 235
Behavior modification to make cat alters, 377
Behavior modification, 40, 195, 235, 374, 377, 395, 516
Behavior modification, used to created persecutor fragments, 374
Behavior traits, connected to structures of skull, 226
Behavioral Systems SW, Inc., 11
Behaviors involving mothers & genetics, 236-237
Behemoth, demon, 481
Beise, S. Clark, 94
Bekkar, Balthazar, 215
Bel-Air, CA, 77
Belgium, 72, 105, 162, 299
Beliefs imbedded by cult, 267-268
Beliefs, how they are programmed in, 34

Believer, position in Christ, 367
Bell Communications, 174
Bell Labs, 172
Bell South, 105
Bell Telephone, 105
Bell, Art, Radio show, 313
Belldame Torture Implant, 172
Bellman, character in movie, 200
Bells, in *Fantasia*, 133
Belonging, a need, 448
Belonging, sense of, 460
Belphegor, demon, 481
Belt of Integrity (truth), 366
Belt of Truth, 366
Bemegride, 29
Benefiting from Grief, article by Fritz, 452-455
Bennett, George Matthews, 214, 216
Bensen St. Park, Columbia Gorge, OR, 305
Bensodiazepines, 349
Benton School, KC, MO, 78
Berger, Dr. Ted, 169
Berkeley, CA, 13, 170
Berkshire Hathaway Inc., 104
Berlin, Germany, 213, 235
Beryl, 190
Bes, Demon, 254
Bet Tzedek, 106
Beta alters, 270
Beta programming, 56, 269
Beta slaves, 279
Beta waves, 174
Beta-Chlor, 27
Beta-endorphin, 279
Bethesda, MD, 25, 75, 103
Betrayal, chart, 405
Betty Boop programming, 56, 501
Beverly Hills High School, 115
Beverly Hills, CA, 77, 89, 269
Beyond Biofeedback, 186
Beyond Witch Mountain, 108
Bi-Polar Affective disorder, 335
Biani, Kenneth, 2

BIBLE REFERENCES (in biblical sequence)
Bible, Genesis 2:7, 428
Bible, Genesis 37, 388
Bible, Exodus 20, 521
Bible, Exodus 20:5, 475
Bible, 2 Samuel 17:26
Bible, 1 Kings 7:21, 63
Bible, 1 Kings 10:18, 63
Bible, 1 Kings 14:24, 491
Bible, 1 Kings 18:26-28, 491
Bible, 2 Kings 17:17, 491
Bible, 2 Kings 21:1-16, 491
Bible, 2 Chronicles 15:2, 493
Bible, Job 1 & 2, 367
Bible, Job 3:5
Bible, Job 36:14, 491
Bible, Psalm 8:5
Bible, Psalm 23, 63
Bible, Psalm 34:8
Bible, Psalm 34:8-10, 493
Bible, Psalm 34:19
Bible, Psalm 127:1, 483
Bible, Psalm 139: 14-16, 253
Bible, Psalm 139: 16, 252
Bible, Proverbs 12:1, 361
Bible, Prov. 18:21, 342
Bible, Proverbs 20:27, 361
Bible, Prov. 31:8, 491
Bible, Ecclesiastes 3:1, 458
Bible, Ecclesiastes 12: 6-7, 263
Bible, Ecclesiastes 12:7, 429
Bible, Song of Solomon, 63
Bible, Isaiah 31:5, 309
Bible, Isaiah 53:6, 492
Bible, Isaiah 60:8, 309
Bible, Jeremiah 13:23, 237
Bible, Jeremiah 37:3, 445
Bible, Ezekiel chap. 1, 12
Bible, Ezekiel 13:17-21, 491
Bible, Ezekiel 18:4b, 428
Bible, Ezekiel 28:12, 14, 15, 473
Bible, Daniel 12:4, 309
Bible, Nahum 2:3-4, 309
Bible, Zechariah 8:10, 309
Bible, Matthew 5:45, 429
Bible, Matthew 6:22-23
Bible, Matthew 10:7,8, 258
Bible, Matthew 20:21
Bible, Matthew 20:32
Bible, Matthew 21:16, 435
Bible, Matthew 24:37, 309
Bible, Mark 10:36
Bible, Mark 10:51
Bible, Mark 11:24
Bible, Luke 11:17-18, 256
Bible, Luke 15: 11-32
Bible, Luke 16:15
Bible, Luke 17:12, 477
Bible, Luke 18:41
Bible, Luke 21:25-27, 309
Bible, John 1:5, 6
Bible, John 1:38
Bible, John 2:4
Bible, John 3:16, 366
Bible, John 8:32, 6, 366
Bible, John 14:6, 6
Bible, Acts 8:1, 492

Bible, Acts 19:17-19, 491
Bible, Acts 19:36-39, 493
Bible, Romans chapt. 1, 366
Bible, Romans 1:16, 366
Bible, Romans, chapters 2-3, 492
Bible, Romans 5:20, 522
Bible, Romans 6:3-11
Bible, Romans 10:17, 254
Bible, 1 Corinthians 11:31, 361
Bible, 1 Corinthians 15:45, 428
Bible, 2 Corinthians 10:3-5, 251
Bible, 2 Corinthians 10:4, 368
Bible, Galatians 6:2, 381
Bible, Galatians 6:7-8
Bible, Ephesians 2:1-5
Bible, Ephesians 2:10
Bible, Ephesians 4:27, 368
Bible, Ephesians 6, 364, 437
Bible, Ephesians 6:3, 366
Bible, Philippians 2:10, 428
Bible, Philippians 4:13
Bible, Colossians 2:8-9
Bible, Colossians 3:4
Bible, Thessalonians, 364
Bible, 1 Timothy 3:6
Bible, 1 Timothy 4:1-2, 256
Bible, 1 Timothy 4:1-3, 367
Bible, 2 Timothy 1:14, 254
Bible, 2 Timothy 1:7, 253-254
Bible, 2 Timothy 1:7, 342
Bible, 2 Timothy 2:12
Bible, Hebrews 13:5
Bible, Hebrews 10:22, 493
Bible, James 1:8, 257
Bible, James 4:7
Bible, 1 Peter 5:6,8,9
Bible, 1 John 3:18, 345
Bible, 1 John 5:18, 256
Bible, Revelation 17:7-9, 482
Bible, Revelation 21:18-20, 190
Bible, 399, 521
Bible, is good, but receiving one is not sufficient, 399
Biblical references to the different parts of Satanic Ritual Abuse, 491
Bibliography, of Disney section, 135-136
Biddle family, 102
Biddle, Anthony J. Drexel Biddle, 102
Biddle, Cordelia Drexel, 102
Big Brother, 399
Big Screen, internal, 122
Big Sur, CA, 13, 299
Bigot list, 54
Bill of Rights, 174
Billington, James H., 217
Binder, programmer's, 61
Bio-chips, 167, 174, 185
Bio-medical telemetry, definition, 138
Biochemical oscillators, 179
Biocybernetics, 169-170, 185
Biofeedback & Self Regulation, book, 516
Biofeedback behaviors, maintained permanently with behavior mod, 516
Biofeedback training, 516
Biofeedback, 206, 515, 516
Bioff, Willie, 81, 110
Biographical inventory, questionnaire, 416-419
Biographical reference books, 134
Biological Effects of Electro...Radiation, DIA, 270
Biology Division, Oak Ridge Nat. Lab, Oak Ridge, TN, 235
Biomedical Telemetry, 173
Bionic ears, 159, 278
Bionic robotoids, 307-313
Bioprocessors, 170
Biopsy Synchroization Program, 64
Bird alters, 451
Bird, dead, as a warning, 52
Birds, precocial, 424
Birmingham, AL, V.A., 301
Birthday parties, are big triggers, 512
Birthday traumas, 23, 512
Birthdays, planned on occult days, 11
Birthdays, used for programming traumas, 512
Birthright, given by God to everyone, 367
Births, planned by Illum., 11
Bisection of an embryo, 307
Bismarck, battleship, 66
Bitterness toward God, dangerous, 378
Bitterness, needs proper release, 500
Black & white thinking, 376
Black Acid Devil album, Disney's, 74
Black Americans, discrim. by Disney, 81
Black Castle, LaVey's home, 283
Black Cauldron, the, movie, 108
Black Chair, 23
Black Communion, 14
Black Forest Castles, Germany, 213
Black Horse, 446
Black Mass, 290
Black Masses, loved by LaVey, 285
Black Nobility families, 102
Black Order, 289
Black Psychiatry, 141
Black Pullet, the, 257
Black Room, near Presideo, where Aquino molested children, 294
Black birds, fear of, 343
Black envelopes, 54
Black frames, 1 per 32, for hypnotic trance, 279
Black ladies, alters, 273

Black magic, of Tibet, 209-110
Black magic, term, 290
Black market, for Adrenalchrome, 36
Black mass, 389
Black programs, overseen by NPO, 297
Black propaganda, 4
Black, Charles, A., 103
Black, Shirley Temple, 72, 103, 118
Blackbeard Team of L.Alamos, 177
Blackmail programming, 114
Blackmail, 235, 481
Blackmail, of Walt Disney, 83
Blackout lights, 278
Blackwell, demon, 481
Blaming on others, 438
Blatner, David, 186
Blazing Star, 63
Bleep-Boxes, 69
Blind, implants for, 165
Block, Elizabeth, 185
Block, major, to deprogramming, is self-forgiveness, 500

BLOOD TOPICS
Blood Hormone rhythms, 183
Blood Pressure, in head, 205
Blood Pressure, influenced by music, 129
Blood analysis, 463
Blood given in bottles of milk, 262
Blood oath to Hydra, 483
Blood of Jesus Christ around and in the mirrors, 519
Blood of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, used in therapy, 485, 519, 521
Blood pressure, of support team members, 420
Blood sacrifice, by Madonna, 74
Blood sacrifices, 74, 285
Blood types & psychic abilities, 171
Blood types, 174
Blood, 392
Blood, Linda, 289
Bloodlines, 7-8, 216
Bloodlines, importance of, 268
Bloodlines, occult, secret, 216
Bloomfield, Susan Ann, 223
Blue Bayou, 97
Blue Beams, induction, 63
Blue Diamond, NV, 304
Blue God, 257
Blue Ridge Summit, 306
Blue Yonder, film, 119
Blue list, 58
Blue rooms, 467
Blue, Monte, 95
Bluemont, Mount Weather underground base, VA, 306
Boarding Schools, 280
Boat rides, Disneyland, 114
Bodhidharma, 207
Body Manipulating implants, 164, 203
Body Programming at Boarding Schools, 280
Body Temperature programs, 362
Body functions, manipulated by ELF waves, 178
Body memories, 236, 280, 425
Body positions, humiliating, 280
Body scans, Disney, 115
Body sensations, perception of by DID client, 424
Body suit implants, command post for, 298
Body suits, implants, 139, 147, 170, 171, 173, 176, 462
Body temperature rhythms, 183
Body, times when alters compete for it, 423
Boehme, Jacob, 216
Bogart, Humphrey, 95
Bohemia, 215
Bohemian Grove, 87, 88, 104, 107, 110, 506
Bois, Jules, 97
Bollenbach, Stephen, 103
Bolt, Jeff, 208
Bombay, India, 299
Bona fides, 54, 60, 67
Bonanno, Joseph, 109
Bondage loop, 254
Bonding, of twins, controlled, 509
Bonds, between victim & master, 335
Bone cells, 226
Bone conduction of stress waves, 181
Bone-setters, Celts, 214
Bone-setters, China, 206-207, 208
Bone-setters, Germany, 213
Bone-setters, India, 230
Bone-setters, professional assoc.s, 208
Bone-setting, contributions to modern medicine, 215
Bones, change and growth, 226
Bonfire Child alters, 480
Bonfire ritual, 262
Book Cliffs, CO, 303
Book of Albertus Magnus, the, 257
Book of Life, God's, 270
Book of Power, 475
Book, magic, in *Fantasia*, 128
Books, occult, have demons attached, 475
Boone, Pat, 104
Booz-Allen & Hamilton,Inc., NWO company, 280
Bordeaux, Fr., 107
Border Environment Cooperation Project, title pg. chp. 1
Border Region XXI, title pg. chp. 1
Border-Line Schizophrenic Program, 64
Borderline disorder, 335
Bored part of mind, 189
Bosch & Colomina, 161
Boston, MA, 2, 20, 28, 283

Botanical alternative medicines, 206
Bothell, WA, 306
Botis, demon, 480, 481
Bottomless Pit, 477
Boulder, CO, 176, 298, 303
Boundaries and roles, 326
Bowart, Walter H., 144
Bower, Bruce, 248
Boxes within boxes, 190
Boxes, 472
Boxes, electrical, to assist prgrmg, 128
Boxes, internal, 126
Boy Scout Camps, 297
Boy Scouts, has unscrupulous men involved, 288
Boy's & Girl's Club, 72
Boy's Town, NE, 104
Boyce, 105
Boys & Girls Club, Napa, CA, 104
Braces, the hold the programming in place, 376-377
Bracing, military and boarding schools, 280
Brackton, KT, 300
Bragging, the Network Kingpins, 138
Brahm's Lullaby, 457

BRAIN TOPICS
Brain Control, 186
Brain Gym, Teacher Edition, 502
Brain Integration therapy, 502
Brain Lesions replace lobotomy, 143
Brain Research Center at Univ. So. CA, 281
Brain areas, 212
Brain development, 228
Brain stem nuclei, 160
Brain stem scarring, 103, 263
Brain stem, 18, 514
Brain stem, evoked responses of, 18
Brain surgeons, 334
Brain to body metabolism, 237
Brain to body size, 237
Brain transplant on Disney cartoon, 121
Brain, EEG bands, 175
Brain, creation of thoughts, research of, 219
Brain, floats in CSF, 228
Brain, human, actually 7, 424
Brain, human, uses superconductivity, 138
Brain, incredible rate of info storage, 311
Brain, microscopic thermal expansion, 180
Brain, structural brain illness, 339
Brain, synchronization to external stimuli, 181
Brain, temperature of, 179
Brains, can compete, examples of, 515
Brains, energy fields of, 171
Brains, lattice structures of, 171
Brainstem scarring, 236
Brainstem, Rhombic lip, 236
Brainstorm, film, 186
Bramley, William, 255
Brauche, term, 215
Bray, principles disc., 160
Brazil, 95-96, 231
Bread & Circus, 75, 114
Bread & Circus, concept, 75
Breaking reality, programming term, 451
Breast implants, 172
Breastplate of Righteousness, 367
Breathe of life, 426
Breathing linked to 1st brain, 514
Breathing monitors, 172
Breathing to keep tranced slave alive, 46
Breathing, to help with memory work, 404
Breeding goals for humans, Illum., 233-234
Breggin, Dr. Peter, 233
Brenda, Laurel, 186
Briah world, 33
Bribery, 481
Bride of Boogedy, film, 108
Bride of Satan, in Rosmary's Baby, 411
Briggs & King, cloning of frog, 307
Brillstein, Bernie, 107
Brindley, Giles, 165
Bristol Meyers Co., 95
Bristol, England, 253, 298
Britain, 194, 289
British Cochlear Implant Group, 161
British Computer Society, 142
British Empire, protectorate tactic, 23
British Royal Family, 77, 131
British Society for Psychical Research, 441
British aristocracy, used for psychical research, 441
British audio implants, 162
British government, involvement into mind control, 504
British govt., support for *Lucifer Rising*, 119
British, 185
Broadman Area 24, of brain, 206
Broadway Theater, NYC, 122
Brockton, MA, V.A., 301
Brody, Sam, 284
Bronfman family, 107
Bronfman, Edgar, 107
Bronfman, Sam, 112
Bronze coding, 271
Brooder slave, 10
Brookhaven National Labs, Upton, NY, 235
Brookings Institute, 7
Broomstick, imagery for programming, 126-127
Brown University, RI, 217
Brown coding, 271
Brown volkswagens, 279
Brown, Bill, 283
Brown, Dr. Charles L., 283

Brown, E. Sherwood
Brown, Edmund, 220
Brown, John, 217
Brown, Robert Borgfeldt, 90
Browne, George E., 110
Browning, Capt. Willie, 288
Brule, Jean-Pierre, 142
Brussels, Belgium HQ for IF of Journalists, CIA, 299
Bubble-fish-flower scene *Fantasia*, 125
Bubbles, artwork, title pg. chp. 7
Bubbles, for programming, 132
Bubbles, images of for programming, 125
Bubbles, used for dissociation, 125
Buchanan, Joseph Rodes, 221
Buckland, Raymond, 46-47
Buckyballs, 168
Buffalo, NY, V.A., 301
Buffett, Warren, 104
Bugs, for surveillance, 278
Builder demons, 483
Builders of the Adytum, 231
Bulimia, 337-339
Bull Run Reservoir, Mt. Hood, OR, 305, 312-313
Bulletin Boards, computer, 289
Bulletin of the NY Academy of Medicine, 180
Bulova ad, 275
Buls, Carol Frost, 283
Burbank City Council, Burbank, CA, 114
Burbank, CA, 87, 96, 108, 231
Burden Neurological Institute, Bristol, England, 253, 298
Burdock, Dorothy, 186
Buried alive, 280, 306
Buried alive, punishment to victim who spoke out, 306
Burke, Adam, 299
Burned-over district, NY, 221
Burnout, of the support team, 420
Busch, Anita, 107
Bush, George W., 62, 72, 107, 196, 265, 312
Bushmen, 7
Business cards, as signal, 60
Busulfan, aka Myleran, 239
Butler, PA, V.A., 301

BUTTERFLY TOPICS
Butterflies, create power grid for system, 518
Butterflies, in pgrgmg script, 125
Butterfly alters, 432, 514
Butterfly grid, secret grid, 432, 515-516, 518
Butterfly imagery for programming, 126
Buttons, everyone has favorites, 420
Bye, Baby Bunting, 59
Byon, W.R., 281
Byrd, Sen. Robert C., 287

C, meaning of, 54
C-DNA, 239
C-Span, 4
CANAL system, 161
CB-radio traffic, monitored, 278
CBS, 312
CCDs, electronic cameras, 503
CI Staff, Counterintelligence Staff, 299
CIA Child procurement program, 113
CIA Fronts, 70
CIA Mind Control, 16-18
CIA alter systems, 56
CIA companies, partial listing, 299
CIA doctors, articles of, 66
CIA documents, bogus, 3
CIA hotbed, 184
CIA implants, 143
CIA operative, uses several ID, 3-4
CIA propaganda, 70
CIA's Farm, 57
CIA, Tit.pg.intro, 2, 3-4, 16-18, 54, 57, 59, 65-70, 89, 98, 103, 104, 105, 113, 172, 174, 180, 181, 208, 226, 253, 255, 256, 273, 279, 281, 282, 298-299, 300, 301, 305, 306, 313, 496
CIA, called "the Craft", 2
CIA, interest in bone-setters, 208
CIA, research into occult sciences, 474
CIA, rogue agent, 93
CIA-Mafia drug running, 105
CII-Honeywell Bull, 142
CIT researchers, 183
CPAs, 334
CRAY computers, 176, 298
CRI, stopped by trauma memories, 229
CUT (Church Universal & Triumphant, 46-50
CUT Tenets, 49
Cabala, 7, 217, 231, 498
Cabalism, 252-253, 273
Cabalistic - hermetic witchcraft, 412
Cabalistic Tree of Life, 125, 192, 314-315
Cabalistic Tree of Life, chamber for sodomy, 265
Cabalistic philosophers, 205
Caballists, 232
Cable TV, 105
Cabman device, 69
Cabot Family, 8
Cacklebladder script, 69
Cadavers, made by Disney artists, 115
Cadmium chloride, 238
Cadmium salts, 239
Cadmium, 239
Caesar, 477
Cage programming, 387
Cage traumas remove emotions, 377
Cage traumas, listed, 377

Cage, nightclub, 112
Cages, 472
Calciotrophic Hormones, 223
Calcium ions, 179, 180
Calcium-phosphate precipitates, 226
California Adventure amusement park, 114
California Board of Medical Assurance, 221
California DUMB bases, 303
California Dept. of Corrections, title pg. chp. 6
California State Mental Hospital, San Frn, 66
California, 2, 66, 77-78, 83, 86, 96, 98, 180, 185, 213, 231, 235, 299, 303
California, North. real estate, 105
Calisthenics, chinese, 208
Call File, CIA, 16
Call backs, for the end-time, 459
Call, Flora, 86
Call-Of-Wild Program, 64
Callaway, Candace, 231
Calls, hang ups, 56
Calms Forte, 348
Cambridge University, 165
Cambridge, MA, 235
Cameron, D. Ewen, 28, 201
Camp Bullis, TX, spelling not known, 299
Camp David, MD, 304, 306
Camp Drum, NY, 299
Campbell, Bill, 72
Campbell, Col. 283
Campbell, chickens, khaki, 310
Campbell-Heider, Nancy, 164
Campus, the, nickname for CIA HQ, 298
Canada, 9, 86, 283, 284, 286, 303, 305
Canadian Imperial Bank of Commerce CIBC, 286
Canadian Osteopaths, 226
Canandaigua, NY, V.A., 301
Canary-Sings Program, 64
Cancer, 190, 205
Cancer, early diagnosis, 205
Candles, 261
Candyland Programming, 64
Canis major star, 63
Canker Sore, secret radiation file, 234
Cannibalism programming, 59
Cannibalism, promoted by Disney, 73
Cannibalistic alters, 481
Canopy, spiritual, for protection of victim, 485
Cantril, Dr. Hadley, 115
Cape Kennedy, 100
Capgras Syndrome, 209
Capital Cities/ABC, 98, 103
Capital Group, 107, 112
Capitola, CA, 230
Capricorn, 190
Captain EO, Disney film, 90, 121
Captaintto, demon, 481
Car overparked, analogy of, 492
Car trunks, used for programming, 472
Cardinal rings, 191
Cardiovascular filters, 172
Care of offspring instincts, 237
Care, Inc., has safe house, 383
Caretaking, obsessive, 406
Caribbean, 70
Caring, helps in trust issues, 394
Carlsbad Cavern area, 305
Carlsbad Cavern, NM, 305
Carmichael, 36
Carnegie-Mellon Univ., 140
Carotid artery, 227

CAROUSEL TOPICS
Carousel horses, King Arthur, 116
Carousel music, 41-42
Carousel, 431, 432
Carousel, cover programming, 427
Carousel, nickname of MI-6, 67
Carousels, Disneyland, 116
Carousels, Griffith Park, 90
Carousels, at Disneyland, 75
Carpenter analogy, 385
Carriage, Glass, w/ 6 ponies, 102
Carrier pigeon film, 96
Carter, Jimmy, 308, 310
Carter, Jimmy, robotoid of, 310
Cartilage in head, 228
Cartoons, help train for killg, 92
Cartoons, how they help in programmg, 199
Case, Paul Foster, 231
Caskets, 472
Casper the Ghost stories, 198
Cassandra and Apollo myth, 56
Casteneda, Carlos, 496

CASTLE TOPICS
Castle Bank & Trust Co., 70
Castle Roogna, fantasy, 194
Castle imagery, 130
Castle patterns, internal, 124
Castle, Satan's in *Fantasia*, 132
Castle, Sleeping Beauty, 116
Castle, at Lexington, KT, 300
Castle, internal, Mother of D., 199, 478
Castle, of Mothers-of-Darkness, 37
Castles, Black Forest, for programming, 213
Castles, Grandefather, 478
Castles, foundational imagery of, 43-44
Castles, from phalluses, 73-74
Castles, front, 478, 479
Castles, front, to sidetrack deliverance ministries, 478

Castles, programming of, 43
Castles, removal of, 43-44
Castles, used to hold core splits hostage, 431
Catastrophic Indifferences Program, 64
Catholic Church, view of demon possession, 255
Catholic Pedophile priests, 282
Catholic School, has satanist teacher, 289
Catholic church, 20-21, 133, 205, 255, 282-283, 375, 522
Catholic clergy, 20
Catholic half-way house, Albuquerque, NM, 282
Catholic hierarchy, 20, 191
Catholic programming, 62
Catholic schools, 334
Catholic victims, liked by Aquino, 290
Catholic worldview, 245
Cats, Black, in most Disney films, 107
Cattle cloning, 307
Caucasian Mountains, 209
Cave of Brahma, in Brain, 212
Cave, the, Virtual reality machine, 186
Caves, 472
Ceausescu of Romania, 72
Celebration Residential Owners Assoc., 109
Celebration, town of, 102, 109
Cell mitosis rhythms, 183
Cell phone frequencies, 180
Cello, 47
Cells, damage to by radiation, 235
Cellular DNA synthesizing rhythms, 183
Cellular chemistry, 178
Cellular level of humans, 183
Cellular phones, push for public to get, 219
Cellular telephones, 219
Cellular-environment circadian rhythm, 515
Celtic cross, 450
Celts, 214
Centaurs, programming imagery, 130
Center for Research on Birth & Human Dev., 13
Center point, for a collapsing world, 470
Central America, 357
Central Cover Staff, CIA, 298
Central Intelligence Collection Agency (Mossad), 67
Central cellular computer, 176
Central neuro-electrical codes, 179
Centurion Aging Research Lab, 29
Cephalic hypotension syndrome, 205
Cera, Albert, 220
Cerebellar cortex, granule cells of, 236
Cerebello-medullary cistern, 228
Cerebellum, 424
Cerebral Spinal Fluid (CSF), 25, 183, 205, 226-228
Cerebral-spinal fluid rhythms, 183
Cerebrospinal Fluid (CSF), 25, 183, 205, 226-228
Cerebrum, 212, 227, 311
Ceremonial dances, 480
Ceremonial robes, ritual for child, 261
Ceremonies, use programmed twins, 509
Cernovsky, dream research, 442
Chain letters, used to access slaves, 325
Chains around the neck, 191
Chakpori Lamasery, 210
Chakra points, 216
Chalcedony, 190
Chamber of Commerce, 73
Chamberlain, Donald F., 3
Chambers, Whittaker, 80
Chambers, like Great pyramid, internal, 472
Chandelier torture, 126
Changeling, demon, 481
Chanting, rituals, for pr. state, 41
Chanting, to heal, 50
Chants, 499
Chaplin, Charlie, 78
Chappellet family, 107
Chappellet, Molly Wells, 107
Character Breakfasts, Disneyland Hotel, 116
Character, development of, 490
Characters, Disney, at Breakfasts, 116
Charcot, Jean-Martin, 37
Charismatic Roman Catholic, 117
Charismatic minister, using mind-control, 186
Charismatic movement, 70, 117
Charleston, S.C., 217
Chart, Levels of Participation, title pg. chp. 5
Chart, relation between color & music, 48
Charting, 362
Charts, on alters, 61
Chateau Margaux, 107
Chateau des Amerois, Belgium castle, 37
Checchi, Alfred, 89
Chemical Mutagents, list, 238-239
Chemical for mind-control in water supplies, 240
Chemical imbalances, 348
Chemical methods for tunnel construction, 302
Chemical, brain, synthesized, 35-36
Chemical-Biological Weapons, CB Weapons, 240
Chemicals and radiation, experiments, 238
Chemicals dropped by air, 240
Chemicals, natural, by body for sleep, 349
Chemistry, body, 462
Chen Audio implant, 162
Cheney, Dick, 288
Chernobyl Nuclear Accident, 238
Cherokee Village, Ark, 303
Cherokee, 7
Cherry Hill, NJ, 11
Cherub, original state of Lucifer, 473
Cheshire-cat, 481
Chess, enochian, 58-59

Chess, human champion beat, 141
Cheyenne Mountain Air Station, 176
Chi programming, 56
Chicago College of Osteopathic Medicine, 225
Chicago Tribune, 269
Chicago mafia, 110
Chicago, IL, 283
Chicken Feed, (info), 67
Child alter armies, 480
Child alters, 234, 327, 506-507
Child of Glass, film, 108
Child procurement abilities, 282
Child procurement program, 113
Child prostitution, biblical references to, 491
Child sacrifice to test loyalty, 261
Child sacrifice, 261, 306, 491
Child sacrifice, biblical references to, 491
Child victim presented to Lucifer by parents, 259
Child victim, dressed up a bloodline spirit, 260
Child victim, taught to not bring bloodline harm, 499
Child victims, adjust or manipulate parents' DID, 448
Child victims, first 16 rituals for programming, 258
Child victims, grieve for the children they must sacrifice, 451
Child victims, lack words to describe things, 370
Child victims, side-effects of traumas, 370
Child victims, treatment needs, 370
Child victims, whether to help or not, 370
Child, originally birthed in innocence, 493
Child, unborn, training of, 13-15
Childlike fun, 490
Children of Light, do not negotiate with darkness, 436
Children, "treatment resistent", 51
Children, Illuminati, during rituals, silent, 280
Children, low I.Q, VERs, 18
Children, protecting, 322
Children, training in 4 hypnotic abilities, 42-43
Children, victims from Latin Amer., 117
Chimeras, 233
China Lake, NWC, CA, 303
China, 4, 104, 162, 187, 206, 213, 231
China, secret societies, 206
Chinese Medicine, 207
Chinese color schemes, 48
Chinese doctors, 205
Chinese martial arts prisoner, 187
Chinese secret societies, 206
Chips to track humans for sale, 143
Chiropractic, 206, 207, 220, 225
Chiropractor, as member of a support team, 415
Chiropractors, Rosicrucian, 225
Chisholm, Dr. George Brock, 281
Chloral betaine, 27
Chloral hydrate, 27
Chlorpheniramine Maleate, 348
Choice, importance/value of it, 244, 454
Choices, lack of inhibits growth, 243
Choices, transferred to Master, 244
Choroid plexus, 227, 228
Choroid plexuses, 228
Chouard, 162
Christ Jesus, 1, 67, 368, 375, 395, 396, 397, 400, 437, 455, 464, 472, 485, 492, 493, 517, 521
Christ Jesus, blood of, used in therapy, 472
Christ's atoning blood, 362
Christ's sacrifice, 433, 455
Christ's teaching about dying to self, 395
Christ, Jesus, ability to use stories, 464
Christ, Jesus, always gave ppl. free will, 435
Christ, came to set the captives free, 375, 436
Christ, disciples of, grieved his loss, 252
Christ, divinity of, 397
Christ, power and authority, 472
Christ, taught it was foolish to gain world, & lose own soul, 491
Christ, the authority of, 436
Christ, warning about life of freedom, 449
Christ, warning to be wise, 67
Christ-child, God's indwelling spirit, mockery of, 259
Christian Brothers winery, 89
Christian TV, 117, 325
Christian alters, 479
Christian churches, infiltration, 67, 117, 259
Christian conferences, infiltration of, 67
Christian denominations, infiltration by Illum., 259
Christian doctrine, 389
Christian front alters, 257, 389
Christian mothers, traumas administered to, 259
Christian television, used to access slaves, 325
Christian view of NDE, 263
Christianity, finished according to Aquino, 289
Christianity, viewed as tyrannical, 231
Christians with criminal alters, 2
Christians, blamed unfairly, 4
Christians, not skilled in spiritual war, 251
Chromaffin cell, photo of, title pg. chp. 3
Chromaffin cells, 36
Chromatid mutations, 239
Chromosome mutations, 239
Chronological problems in client's history, 334
Chronology of programming rituals, 258
Chrysolyte, 190
Chrysoprasus, 190
Church Universal & Triumphant (CUT), 46-50
Church of New Jerusalem, Swedenborg, 218
Church of Satan, 118, 283-286, 289, 411
Church of Satan, membership exaggerated, 284
Church of Satan, sites of grottos, 283-284
Church of Satan, types of members, 284
Church of Scientology, 224

Church of Set's ranks match Illuminati's, 289
Church of Set, 287-296
Church of Set, purpose for, 287-288
Church worldviews, used by programmers, 245
Church, part of programming, 133
Churches, Christians, teaching doctrines of demons, 256
Churchianity, 389-390
Churchill, Gen. Marlborough, 281
Churchill, Winston, 281
Chutes and Ladders game, used for hypnotic prgrmg, 456
Cinderella Ball, 102
Cinderella Castle, 102
Cinderella film, 92
Cinderella, 96
Ciphers, 52
Circadian rhythm in birds, 164
Circadian rhythm of 1st brain, 515
Circadian rhythms, 164, 183, 515
Circles within Circles, 191
Circular worlds, 274
Circus hypnotists, 220
Citicorp Bank, 105
Cities, internal, 484
City Bank of Gibraltar, 286
City gods, 273
Clair de Lune, 97
Clairvoyance, 210
Clark's Implants, 162
Clark, Dick, 95
Clarksburg, WV, V.A., 301
Classical Condit., & drugs, 29
Clastogens, 239
Claude Debussy, G.M., 97
Clausen's Commentaries on Morals & Dogma, 190
Clavicula Salomonis Regis, 193
Claws, of Satan in film, 132
Clean slate alters, 122, 130, 193, 483
Cleansing rituals for warriors, 196
Clear coding, 271
Cleghon, Dr., 283
Clergymen, who do traumas, 20
Client's home, visits to, 467
Clients, challenge therapist's knowledge, 326
Clingy behavior, 405
Clinics, County Health, used for m.c., 16
Clinton, Bill, 72, 196, 265, 267, 282
Clinton, Bill, robotoid of, 311
Clinton, Bill, speeches, 57
Clinton, Chelsea, 72
Clinton, Hillary Rodham, 72, 260, 281-282, 283
Clinton, Hillary, 16 staffers, 282
Clinton, Hillary, Grand Dame, 281
Clinton, Hillary, personal slave group, 282
Clinton, Iowa, 220
Clock illustration with worlds, elevators, etc., 274
Clock, internal, 59, 259, 314-315, 432, 510, 511
Clock, ritual, internal, 432
Clock-Time Programming, 196
Clocks, internal, in relation to first ritual, 259
Clomiphene citrate, 309
Clone Licensing suggested by Rothschild, 307
Clone controlling organization, 307
Clone of a frog, in '52, 307
Clone, film, 308
Clones, of external programmers, 446
Cloning Sites, 312
Cloning facility, Ada, OK, 305
Cloning of Neural Genes, class, 238
Cloning of horses, & other animals, 307
Cloning, 307-313
Cloning, A Biologist Reports, 186
Cloning, How to clone a human, 309
Cloning, of human, first successful, 307
Closed-circuit videos, 138
Closets, 472
Closing In Program, 64
Clothing, special colors of, 50
Clouds, imagery in rainbow script, 45-46
Club 33, Disneyland, 117
Clues to suicidal thoughts, 381
Clues, useless until one has a framework, 268
Clyde Beatty Circus, 284
Clymer Health Clinic, 224
Clymer, Swinbourne, 225
Co-Op Protocol Program, 64
Coals, walking on hot c., 499
Coat of many colors, and programming, 388
Cobb, Chuck, 88
Cobweb, during NDE, 263
Coca-Cola, 98
Cocaine distributors, 66
Cocaine, cartoon of Mouse sniffing, 73
Cochlea, 181
Cochlear Corp., 163
Cochlear hair cells, movement by ELF, 176
Cochran, Johnnie, Jr. 87
Cockeyed Ridge (S-4), 304
Cocoon programming, 59
Cocoon, formed from bandages, 23
Cocytus, 478
Code Green, 50
Code books, 54
Code coding, groundwork, 130
Code deciphering section of system, 190
Code for Wiesenthal, 312
Code grid, secret, 470
Code words, for dirty businesses, 112
Code words, to advertise a sexual model, 197

Code, dungeon, 60
Code, false, how put in, 30
Code, for Stage 1 reporting alters, 198
Code, same program diff. agencies, diff. codes, 297
Codes, 51-64, 197, 201, 252, 279, 391, 470
Codes, Beta, 56
Codes, access, 325
Codes, buried deep in the subconscious, 391
Codes, cabalistic, 53
Codes, color, for end-times, 58
Codes, desensitization, 391
Codes, favorite ones, 52
Codes, for Illuminati parts, 53
Codes, for a system, 61-62
Codes, for clearances, 54
Codes, for reporting alters, 197
Codes, gems, assigned to alters, 271
Codes, how structured for a syst., 61-62, 64
Codes, how they work, 391
Codes, intelligence, 53
Codes, license plates, 279
Codes, mathematical, 53
Codes, musical cords, 252
Codes, passwords between worlds, 201
Codes, reversals, 60
Codes, standard methods for projects, 234
Codes, structure of, 53
Codes, to activate implants, 462
Codes, use of Bible for, 53, 63
Codes, variations of, 53
Codeword for spy satellites, Keyhole, 503
Cognitive Demon Processes, 18, 39-41, 350, 395
Cognitive demands, brain waves of, 174
Cognitive mental demons, 18, 39-41, 350, 395
Cognitive mental demons, kinds of, 40
Cognitive thinking, temperature of, 179
Cogworth, cartoon character, 119
Cohen family, 94
Cohn, Henry (Harry), 86, 93, 110, 111
Colby, Bill, 66
Colby, Carl, 66
Colby, Mrs. Bill, 66
Cold Spring Harbor Labs, courses '97, 238
Cold Springs, NY, 9
Cold War, 308
Cold War, dialectics of, 488
Coleman, John, 298
Collagen, fibers, 226
Collages, Cisco's, 314-319
Collecting spirit, 405
Collection of W.W.II War Crimes Records, 213
Collection, world's largest of Disney items, 118
Collectors of Disney items, 118
College of Biological Sciences, University of Minnesota, 309
Colliculi, 160
Collins Illum. family, 78
Collins, Beth, 184
Colloidal metals, 462
Colloidal silver, 26, 462
Colonel, retired, reports on radiation exper., 234

COLOR TOPICS
Color Magic, 46-47
Color Programming, & *Dick Tracy* film, 102
Color codes for end-times, 58
Color coding of families, 270
Color coding, 271
Color coding, front alters, 271
Color programming, & Disney, 100
Color, influence on nervous system, 205
Color, used in programming, 46-50
Colorado DUMB sites, 303-304
Colorado Springs, CO, 49, 303, 305
Colorado Springs, adult victims of mind control sent to, 297
Colorado, 176, 185, 285, 297, 303-304
Colored disks, 124
Colors of Lucifer/Satan/Devil triad, 483
Colors on houses, used to access slaves, 325
Colors, of cars, for accessing, 279
Colors, used for programming, 124-133
Colors, used to access slaves, 325
Columbia Journalism Review, 107
Columbia Pictures/Studios, 86, 93, 94, 110
Columbia University, 281, 298
Columbia, MO, V.A., 301
Coma, 27
Coma, levels showed by evoked-potentials, 18
Comatose, level for programming, 17
Combe, George, 216
Combination, the, 65-66
Comedians, slaves, 112
Comedy Warehouse, nightclub, 112
Comfort zone of self-blame, 407
Comforter, the Holy Spirit, 253
Comforting others, after we heal, 454
Commerce Dept., U.S., 104
Commission for Genetical Control, proposed, 307
Commitment, 383, 486, 513
Commitment, needed by therapists, 513
Commitment, needed from support team, 486
Commodities, control over, 75
Communication Issues, 330
Communication, 405
Communication, internal for victim, 330
Communications Antenna Field, Santa Rosa, CA, 303
Communications Workers of America, CWA, CIA, 299
Communications and Persuasion Personality & Persuasibility, 298

Communism, Chinese, borrow from Oneida, 9
Communist communities, 9
Communist influence in Hollywood, 81
Communist party, China, 207
Communists, create Youth Hostels, 297
Companionship, silent, 454
Comparative Chemical Mutagenesis, 238
Comparative Chemical Mutagenesis, book, 238
Compass image, for mind control, 125
Compass, internal, 200, 432, 511
Compass, part of twinning, 510
Competition between team members, not productive, 383
Competition in Illuminati, 499
Completeness in Christ, 253
Complex structure, criteria of good dissociative abilities, 363
Compliance torture, 23
Computer aided genetic mapping, 236
Computers are People, Too!, Disney film, 119
Computer, false, shut down activates LSD memory, 520
Computer, front, 271
Computer, mouse, icons, comp. environments analogy, 459
Computers, & V.T. ability to feel what's on the screen, 186
Computers, 516
Computers, internal, Misinformation, 271
Computers, destruction of, 518
Computers, helping to modernize the programming, 357
Computers, internal, 269-273, 517, 518, 520
Computers, internal, regeneration of, 518
Computers, major, each has own GDC, 518
Computers, molecular, 170
Computers, shut off via codes, ins and outs, 520
Computers, used to monitor electr. communication, 278
Computers, with A.I. used as handlers, 461
Concentration Camps, Nazi, secret purpose, 2
Concentration camp, active, underground, 305-306
Concentration camps, 58
Concentration camps, Nazi, 323
Concentration camps, internal, used for shattered assassin. part, 501
Concentration, for hypnosis, 42-43
Concentric rings, 124
Concentric rings, image for programming, 125
Concepts which govern the mind are complex, 476
Concepts, linking of, & mirroring, 273
Conditioning to kill, 194-195
Conductor, equals Master Programmer, 124
Conferences, on programmed DID, 268
Confession of sins, 455
Configurations, System, 432
Conflict, resolving conflict between alters, 422
Conflicts, internal alter c., & the core, 425
Confrerie des Chevaliers du Tastevin, 87
Confusion Agent, 68
Congress, Church Committee on Assassinatns, 93
Congress, criticizes cloning report, 307
Congressional committee on radiation in '95, 64
Connecticut DUMB bases, 304
Connecticut, 220, 304
Connections--Solving our Alien Abduction Mystery, 184
Conolly, Richard L., Jr., 283
Conroy, E.E., 112
Conscience, damaged by forced sacrifice of child, 261
Conscience, development of, 487
Consciences of abusers, seared, reprobate, 488
Conscious behavior prevented, 244
Conscious mind, 236
Conscious-associational thinking area, 231
Consciousness, 244
Consenting Adults, 99
Consistency, wanted by God, 364
Conspiracy Action Program, 64
Constitution, 174
Contemporary Resort, FL, 118
Contents of Disney section, 74
Continuity of action tied to self-image, 188
Contract Agent, 68
Contract, Amer. Psychiatric Assoc.'s, 327
Contracts with clients, 327
Contracts, between systems and therapist, 373
Control signs, 54
Controlling spirits, 375
Controls, internal, 267-274
Conway, Jack, 298
Coogan, Jack F. & Jill, 283
Coordinator of Inter-Amer. Affairs, 96
Coos Bay area, OR, 305
Coppola, Francis Ford, 90
Coral Gables, FL, 11
Cord, dark red violet, 265
Cord, silver, 265
Cords, musical, as codes, 60

CORE TOPICS
Core Issues, 424-433
Core Protector alters, 126
Core decoy, principal, in carousel, 519
Core issues, strategy, 433
Core splits, 431, 514, 520
Core splits, held hostage in castles, 431
Core trauma, 389
Core, 126, 192, 200, 271, 272, 424-433, 477, 514, 515, 516, 517-521
Core, access codes, 427

Core, attitude toward reality, 428
Core, called the Father, 192
Core, can shut down all computers if wanted, 517
Core, demon in charge of, 483
Core, for male victims, 200
Core, list of reasons why it remains hidden, 425
Core, location, below hell pit, 271
Core, must go through 9 dimensions of hell to get to freedom, 477
Core, never gets beyond a reptilian brain focus, 515
Core, not usually connected to Beast Comp., 271
Core, protector demon, 476
Core, told it can manifest as a person, 517
Core, told she is married to Lucifer, 272
Core, why she is worked w/ special M-of-D, 514
Core, will reconnect to reality if no trauma occurs after initial split, 426
Core, would need a medical team to get, 518
Cores, false ones, fronts, 425
Corn Chips, 91
Corners, 472
Coroner's inquiry, Palmer's testimony, 220
Corporate Extrapolation Program, 64
Corpses, Fed. storage site, 306
Corpus Christi, TX, 193
Correction programs to restore memories, 271
Cortex, 174
Cortical codes, 174
Cortical projection areas, primary, 160
Cory, Dr. Charles E.,3
Cosmic Egg, creation of, 33
Cosmic radiation cycles, 183
Costello, 339
Costumes, demon in charge of, 480
Costumes, of Aquino's Star Wars characters, 292
Cotard's Syndrome, 209
Council of 9, Mafia, 93
Counseling sessions, dynamic sessions encouraged, 340
Counselling courses, which encourage multiplicity, 464
Counter-Transference program, 64
Counterattack against therapists & exposure, 248
Counterintelligence Staff, CI Staff, 299
Countertransference, 506
County Health Clinics, used for m.c., 16
Courage, Burt, 283
Courant, Jim, 282
Court, Federal, Manhattan, 110
Courtship and genetics, 236

COVER TOPICS
Cover Programming for Electromag. Fields, 64
Cover Stories for programming children, 370
Cover memories, 335
Cover names, 53
Cover program for return "home", 202
Cover program, how put in, 30
Cover programming, 466
Cover stories, 210-211, 370, 466
Cover stories, cranial manipulation, 210-211
Cover up, signs of, 331
Cover, color coding, 270
Covers of Illuminati kingpins, 286
Covers, 69-70
Covert Action Information Bulletin, 49
Covington, LA, 270
Cowlings, friend of O.J.'s, 66
Cox, Wayne, 2
Cozzarelli, Nicholas R., 170
Crabs, metabolism of, 183
Cramer, Cong. Bud, 283

CRANIAL TOPICS
Cranial Academy newsletter, 203
Cranial Academy, 212, 222, 225
Cranial Blood Pressure, 205
Cranial Manipulation, 203-232, 299
Cranial Manipulation, example of one technique, 204
Cranial Osteopathy and the Witchcraft connections, 215-216
Cranial Osteopathy, 222, 225
Cranial Osteopathy, general direction of field, 212
Cranial Rhythmic Impulse CRI, 229
Cranial manipulation for mind control, secret, 1, 203-232, 299
Cranial manipulation, benefits, 204-205
Cranial manipulation, cover memories, 210-211
Cranial osteopaths, military, 223
Cranial osteopaths, some appear under mind-control, 226
Cranial work, Esalen, 299
Craniectomies, 219
Craniosacral Osteopathy, 212, 223
Cranium Command, 102
Cranston, Sen. Alan, 283
Crawford, Gordon, 107
Cray-3 computer, 298
Cray-type computers, 142
Craziness, feelings of, 393
Creation Room, Mormon Temple, SLC,UT, 306
Creation alter, 126
Creation of earth, known, 475
Creation rituals, 128
Creation story, used for programming, 249
Creative parts, 125-126
Creativity, encouragement during programg, 127
Credit cards, as code, 60
Creepy Crawlers Program, 64
Crematorium, 262
Crematorium, White Sulphur Springs, WV, 306

Creusat, Dr., 172
Crimes of the Intelligence Community, 186
Criminals with DID, 2
Crimson Tide, 113
Crises, repeated, reasons for, 504
Criteria for slaves, 278
Critical thinking, shut down, 399
Critical windows of vulnerability for 1st brain changes, 514
Criticism of *Vol. 2*'s information by reader, 473-474
Crocell, demon, 482
Cross Fire program, 64
Cross of Malta, 103
Cross-Currents: The Perils of Electropollution...,183, 186
Crosscrawl exercise, 502
Crossing the Pacific analogy, 430
Crossman, Richard, 281
Crouch, Paul, 117
Crowley's doctrines, 487
Crowley's law, 285
Crowley, Aleister, 60, 118, 400, 480
Crown, gold, 314-315
Crowns, 130, 190, 314-315
Crowns, Illuminati, 130
Crowns, of masonic Grand Masters, 190
Crowther family, 215
Crying parts, 381
Crying, empties body of stress hormones, 420
Cryogenesis, 77
Cryogenics, 10
Cryptologists, NSA, 299
Cryptology research group, 173
Crystal ball reader, internal, 484
Crystal ball with hologram head inside, 116
Crystal prism, internal, 199
Crystal, internal, 314-315
Crystalline Corticosterone Implants, 164
Crystalline structures, ionic, in skull, 219
Crystals, 206
Crystals, internal, 58
Crystals, radio transmitting, 183
Crytonyms, 61
Cub's Den, 117
Cube shaped systems, 190
Cube, 13x13x13, standard config., 432
Culinary Institute of America, 89
Culpepper, VA, 306
Cult family, 261
Cult figures, internalized, 510
Cult of Disney Items, 118
Cult teachings, often rehashed ancient babblings, 358
Cult's ISH, 481
Cult-loyal alters, 349
Cultural Meaning of Popular Science, 217
Cultural shock, for deeper alters to see outside world, 511
Culture, used to reinforce programming, 268
Cupertino, CA, 230
Curran, Mrs. John, 3
Current Biography, 78, 85
Currents of Death, 186
Curse of 3-generations, needs to be bound to get to core, 521
Curse, each carries memories, 485
Cushway & Sewell, nightmare research, 440
Cutha, 480
Cutt, Paul, 185
Cutting the Penis Ritual, 262
Cybergs, 138
Cyberlife TV show, 169
Cybernetic beings, 233
Cybernetics, 166
Cyberpunks, 138
Cyborg, 186
Cyborg research, 138
Cyclohexamide, 27, 29
Cyclone, internal, 202
Cyclophosphamide, CP, 239
Cylert, 27
Cylinders, glass, with humans, 305
Cymbals, in programming, 130
Cytoplasm, 309
Cytosine base, DNA, 240
Cytosine, 240
Czars of Russia, 97
Czechoslovakia, 162, 235
Czechoslovakian implants, 162

D-Day Invasion, 113
D.O.A. Program, 64
D.U.M.B. bases (Deep Underground Military Bases), 302-306
DANZIG, heavy metal band, 74
DCI, memo to, Title pg. intro
DCI, title pg. intro
DIA Psychological Warfare Division, 287
DIA, 54
DIC CIA, 3, 4
DIPEF underground facility, 304

DNA TOPICS
DNA Bases, degraded with radiation, 240
DNA code for ALY NC, 236
DNA codes, 174
DNA databanks, 173
DNA experiment, with chickens, 310
DNA manipulation, 178
DNA maps, 236

DNA radiosensitizers, 240
DNA templates, 170
DNA tests, 236
DNA, 170, 173, 174, 178, 235, 236, 237, 238, 239, 240, 310
DNA, affect on cellular consciousness, 236
DNA, manipulation of reproduction, 178
DNA, of system, internal, 126
DNA, stability, factors of, 239
DNA, various forms, A,B,C, 239
DSM-IV, 143, 326
Daddy figure (handler), 53
Daddy image, in programming, 53, 359
Daisies, 130
Daisy chains, 314-315
Daisy life or death programs, 130
Daisy world, 316-317
Dalai Lama, 209
Dali, Salvador, 104
Dallas, TX, 299
Dameon alter, 129, 479, 520
Dameon alter, has three names, 479
Dames, Ed, 137
Dance music, influence on muscles, 129
Dance, 47
Dance, Xihe Sword, 207
Dances, ceremonial, 480
Dances, tribal, 128
Dances, witchcraft, 128
Dancing, script for it to be O.K., 132
Dandelion analogy with fear, 342
Dangle, meaning, 69
Daniel the prophet, 440
Dantalion, demon, 482
Danzig, Glenn, 74
Dapang Qigong, 210
Dark Holes, internal, 477
Dark Horse, name of a horse alter, 445
Dark currents, interfere with spy satellites, 503
Dark room analogy for hope, 346
Dark rooms, with hypnotic voice, 202
Darth Vader, Aquino's fascination for, 290-292
Darth Vader, image of Aquino, 290
Darwin's Theory of Evolution, 128
Darwin, CA, 303
Data Entry Points, system, 193
Datil, NM, 305
Datura, 27
Davenport, Iowa, 220
David & Goliath, 342
David Letterman Show, 57
Davidson, I. Irving, 297
Davis, Sammy Jr., 72
Davis, Virginia, 91
Dawes, Robert L., 186
Day Mares, 445
Day dreaming, 358
Day horse, front horse is gentler, 446
Daycare Centers, network for mind-control, 297
Dayton, OH, 283
De Nicola, Chris, 64, 234
Dead Acupoint, 207
Dead alters, 126, 201, 472
Dead, walking, 265
Deaf & blind alters, 62
Deaf and Dumb alters, 484
Dealership cars, often used for pickups, 279
Dealership cars, used in surveillance, 503
Death & the Maiden, film, 411
Death and the Maiden, Schubert's piece of music, 411
Death message telepathic dreams, 441
Death programs, 290, 484
Death, Mystery of, 387
Death, burial & resurrection ceremony, Illum., 130
Death, burial, & resurrection programming rituals, 260, 387
Death, manipulation of, 431
Death, the ways it comes to victims, 387
Death/resurrection theme, 94
Deaths, of therapists & victims, 280
Debartolo Reality Corp., 112
Debs, Eugene, 81
Decarabia, demon, 482
Decarboxylase, 36

DECEPTION TOPICS

Deception, 65-136, 427, 431
Deception, Br. about radar, 66
Deception, a foundation for programming, 357
Deception, damage to society, 65
Deception, diminishes power, 66
Deception, programs to make therapists think they have succeeded, 520
Deception, programming, 66-67
Deceptions, regarding the core, 427, 431
Deceptions, religious, 2-3
Decisions, Illum., implementation of, 11
Declaration of Covenants, Celebration, 109
Declassified CIA documents, 3
Decognition process, 50-51
Decompensation, programming term, 451
Deep Cover Agents, 68
Deep Creek Cabins, west of Ft. Detrick, MD, 299
Deep Springs, CA, 303
Deeper Alters, can put survival skills to use, 490
Deeper Alters, goals for, 490
Deeper Insights book, story behind, 67
Defense Intelligence Agency, 270
Defense News, 7
Defense Nuclear Agency, 177

Defense Security Assistance Agency DSAA, 297
Defibrillator paddles, 172, 182
Definitions, for electr. m.c. terms, 138
Dehumanization, 244, 404, 505
Dehumanization, is deeply imbedded in a slave, 505
Del Real Estate & Commercial Bank of Tangier., 286
Delaney, Robert Finley, 298
Delano Family, 8
Delaware Corporation laws, 112
Delaware, 112
Delgrado, José, 144
Deliverance & evangelism, 258
Deliverance is a life of healing, 436
Deliverance is a restoration, 436
Deliverance ministries, double binds on clients, 328
Deliverance ministries, pro's and cons, 485
Deliverance ministry, true deliverance, shown by Good Samaritan story, 435-436
Deliverance, aggressive, 435
Deliverance, benefits from, 363
Deliverance, can be based on victim's spiritual heritage by new birth, 521
Deliverance, understanding, 434
Deliverance, usually stopped too quick, 519
Deliverance, some are spiritual rape, 434-435
Dellamalva, Dennis, 20
Delmont, PA, 20
Delta Forces, 194-196, 300, 306
Delta Models, 194
Delta Teams, 194-196
Delta alters, 194-196, 478
Delta alters, protect hierarchy alters, 478
Delta programming, 56-57
Delta slaves, 279
Delta waves, 350
Delta waves, ultraslow, 174
Delta, CO, 305

DEMONS
Demon Decarabia, 482
Demon Internet, 172-173
Demon Internet, Ltd., 173
Demon Malebrinche, 132
Demon Possession, 254-257
Demon Put Satanachia, 484
Demon for speaking in tongues, 482
Demon of Fire, 482
Demon possession cases which are DID, 255
Demon ruling the east, 481
Demon who teaches knowledge and how to be invisible, 482
Demon, Absu, 480
Demon, Adramalech, 480
Demon, Agaliarept, 480
Demon, Aguares, 480
Demon, Aim, 480
Demon, Alastor, 480
Demon, Amduscias, 480
Demon, Amon, 481
Demon, Andras, 482
Demon, Andrealphus, 481
Demon, Archeron, 480
Demon, Asmodeus, 481
Demon, Baal, 481
Demon, Barbatos, 481
Demon, Beelzebub, 251, 481, 519
Demon, Behemoth, 481
Demon, Belphegor, 481
Demon, Bes, 254
Demon, Blackwell, 481
Demon, Botis, 481
Demon, Captaintto, 481
Demon, Changeling, 481
Demon, Crocell, 482
Demon, Cutha, 480
Demon, Dantalion, 482
Demon, Demonia, 92
Demon, Flauras, 482
Demon, Foras, 482
Demon, Forneus, 482
Demon, Furcas, 482
Demon, Furfur, 131, 482
Demon, Geb, 254
Demon, Haborym, 482
Demon, Haures, 482
Demon, Hydra, 481, 482, 519
Demon, Keeper of the Mirror, 201
Demon, Klotilde, 483
Demon, Kutu, 480
Demon, Leraikka (Leraje), 483
Demon, Leraje, 483
Demon, Leviathan, 129
Demon, Malebranche, 483
Demon, Maleficia, 483
Demon, Malphas, 483
Demon, Mammon, 483
Demon, Marax, 483
Demon, Marbas, 483
Demon, Marchosias, 483
Demon, Melchom, 483
Demon, Mulciber, 483
Demon, Murmur, 483
Demon, Mystery, 255
Demon, Nar Mattaru, 480
Demon, Navky, 483
Demon, Nebiros, 483
Demon, Nysrock, 483
Demon, Paimon, 484
Demon, Pan, 130, 254
Demon, Paymon, 484

Demon, Phenex, 484
Demon, Philatanus, 484
Demon, Pontifax, 62
Demon, Procel, 484
Demon, Purson, 484
Demon, Raum, 484
Demon, Renove, 482
Demon, Sabnack, 484
Demon, Seera, 484
Demon, Shaba lidoma, 484
Demon, Shax, 484
Demon, Sitri, 484
Demon, Speculum, 484
Demon, Succubus, female, 484
Demon, Sytry, 484
Demon, Toto, 254
Demon, Uphir, 484
Demon, Volarire, 484
Demon, Zepar, 484
Demon, lying substituted for Guardian Angel, 260
Demon, over each city, 273
Demonia, demon, 92
Demonic assistance to entrap, 256-257
Demonic councils, 480
Demonic entities, block integration, 464
Demonic false memory, 271
Demonic fears, seat of in brain, 253
Demonic forces, bring a desire for irrational thinking, 496
Demonic invasion of body in second major trauma, 431
Demonic proxying between twins, 509
Demonic strongholds, kept in castles, 478
Demonology and warfare, connections, 254
Demonology attached to a defenseless mind, 476
Demonology, & the construction of systems, 192
Demonology, an important deprogramming subject, 519
Demonology, relation to mind-control, 473-486, 498-499
Demons & Fear, 253-254
Demons (cognitive processes), 39-41
Demons, & Church of Satan, 285
Demons, 4 over compass pts., 200
Demons, Goblins, 482
Demons, Guardian, 128, 129, 482
Demons, Kingdom of, 457
Demons, Seraphim (not to be confused with God's), 484
Demons, Titans, 477, 479
Demons, UNIX, 40
Demons, and Tibetan Children, 210
Demons, and programming, 129
Demons, attached to GDC, 520
Demons, book, 255
Demons, can tear the mind of victim apart, 519
Demons, casting out, 258
Demons, come in families, 480
Demons, connected to computers, 518
Demons, disguised as alters may integrate, 520
Demons, doctrine of, 256
Demons, fake defeat, 519
Demons, false trinity, 431
Demons, hierarchal command structure, 437
Demons, imitation of alters, 485
Demons, in a system, reflect the spiritual level of programmer, 476
Demons, information may trouble some readers, 474
Demons, inhabiting humans, 265
Demons, intelligent, 519
Demons, issues around for therapists, 248
Demons, little, as little Pans, 130
Demons, masters of deception, 256
Demons, materialized as aliens, 184
Demons, protection of system, 518-519
Demons, questions of existence, 474
Demons, race of, on cartoons, 92
Demons, ranks and commanders, 255
Demons, response to being ordered out of a person, 437
Demons, separating from alters, 468
Demons, standing orders to destroy "temple" (mind) if..., 521
Demons, teaching fear of, 131
Demons, the various approaches taken by people described, 437
Demons, thoughts of, 398
Demons, trigger the survival mechanisms of brain, 519
Demons, warring, 255
Demons, who guard mirrors, 472
Den of Iniquity, LaVey's private saloon, 283
Dendrite connections, establishment of, 236
Denial helped by mapping, 470
Denial, 252, 331, 387, 405, 447
Denial, by host alter, 326-327
Denial, identifying and dealing with defense mechanisms, 438-439
Denial, simple, 438
Denials of SRA, 498
Denmark, 72
Dennison, Dr. Paul, 502
Dennison, Gail E., 502
Dental Auditory implants, 163
Dental implants, coverup by shrinks, 143
Dental tortures, 22
Denton, TX, 306
Denver, CO, 223, 283
Dependence, goal of programmer, 245
Depersonalization, 410, 440, 460
Depression Era, 79

Depression, 332-333
Depression, dealing with, 332-333
Depression, demon involved with, 484
Depression, diagnostic chart, 333
Depression, kinds of, 332
Depression, types of causes, 332
Dept. of Defense, 240
Dept. of Health, Education & Welfare, U.S., 208, 230
Dept. of State records, 213
Deranian, 108
Dermotropic viruses, 170
Derogatory programming language, 247
Des Moines, IA, V.A., 301
Descartes, 399
Desert Shield & the New World Order, 312
Desert Shield, 172
Desert Storm, 172
Destruction of Worlds, summary, 522
Detachment 421, USAF, 298
Detection codes, smell, 393
Detection of Mind-Control, 334
Detection of programming, current noticed when swimming upstream, 447
Determinants of Infant Behavior II, 424
Detroit, MI, 283
Deutsch, DCI, 4
Developmental Behavior Genetics: Neural, Biomedical..., 237
Developmental Psychobiology, 238
Developmental Social Behavior Genetics, 236-237
Devil, 475
DiMaggio, Joe, 104
Diagnosis & Treatment of Multiple Personality Disorder, 326, 328, 443
Diagnostic Interview Schedule for Children, 339
Diagrams, of implant sites, 148-158
Diamond Creek, Edwards AFB, CA, 303
Diamond alters, 125, 193
Diamond clean slate alters, 315
Diamond jewelry, 57
Diamond shaped head, that encapsulizes victim's head, 485
Diamond, 314
Diamonds, key front alters, 271
Dian Y Glas, term, 257
Diana, moon god, 48
Diazadamantanol, 29
Dick Cheney & Reagan's Hands-On Mind Control Demonstrations, monograph, 290
Dick Tracy movie, programming use, 46
Dick Tracy, movie, 102-103
Dicks, H.V., 281
Diddle, Diddle Dumpling, 59
Differences between slaves & other people, 504-505
Different brains work separately at same time, example of, 515
Difficulties for support team, 420
Dikes of Holland analogy, 449
Dimension, term use for programmers, 432
Dimethylnitrosamine, DMN, 239
Dince, W., 516
Ding, Dong Bell, 59
Dinosaurs, on Fantasia, 129
Direct Monitoring of the Brain, 174-176
Directed energy weapon, 181
Directions, signal for, 62
Directorate for Research, CIA, 298
Directorate of Operations, DDP, fka Dir. of Plans, 298
Directorate of Science & Technology DDR, CIA, 298
Directorate, Occult, interlocking, 97
Directory of Corporate Affiliations, 134
Dis city, 478
Disapproval by mother figure, threatening to 1st brain, 514-515
Discernment, lacking in public, 68
Discipline, mental, 423
Discipline, of support persons needed, 383
Discomfort, a state of mind, 359
Disguises, common, of abusers trying to access slaves, 503
Disinformation agents, 68, 137
Disinformation, coordinated by secret group, 4
Disks on pylons, strange protruding out of ground, 303
Dislocation torture, 23

DISNEY TOPICS
Disney & the Mafia, 108-112
Disney & the U.S. govt., 112-114
Disney Animation: The Illusion of Life, 79
Disney Board of Directors, 87-88, 103
Disney College Program, 121
Disney Dress Codes, 99
Disney IRS film, 113
Disney Imagineers, 116
Disney Institute, 117
Disney Magazine, 78
Disney Police, 99
Disney Stock, 104
Disney Studios Strike, 81
Disney Studios, Disney's kingdom, 81
Disney Studios, home for W.Disney, 77
Disney Studios, tunnels underneath, 77
Disney Theme Parks, guidebooks, 134
Disney Theme parks, 115-116
Disney Vacation Club, 117
Disney Vacation Development, Inc., 117
Disney World, 72, 75, 77-78, 98-99, 100, 222
Disney World, Silver Anniversary, 72
Disney World, grand opening, 100
Disney World, host Cranial conference, 222

Disney World, opening ceremonies, 86
Disney and local California governments, 114
Disney artists draw nudes, 71
Disney brothers, impact worldwide, 76
Disney deception of employees, 121
Disney director, conv. of sex. molest., 76
Disney employee, using hypnosis, 99
Disney employees, 116
Disney family, 89-90
Disney family, coverup Walt's FBI status, 113
Disney family, feud, 88
Disney image & Americans, 112
Disney merger w/ Cap Cities/ABC, 104
Disney movies and mind-control, 119-134
Disney occult themes, 99
Disney police force, 99, 108-109
Disney rides, equipment used w/ r. for mind control, 128
Disney section, Bibliography, 135-136
Disney section, types of sources, 134
Disney security, 99, 108-109
Disney shares, 112
Disney special effects artists, 115
Disney top secret films, 96
Disney vacations, 117
Disney's America, 112
Disney's Hilton Head Is. Resort, 117
Disney's Occult movies, 107-108
Disney's World, 76, 79, 84
Disney's role, 1
Disney, 50th anniversary, 72
Disney, 70-136
Disney, Diane Marie, 90
Disney, Doris Miles, 91
Disney, Elias, 78, 86
Disney, Flora Call, 77, 83, 86
Disney, Lillian B, 77, 90, 98
Disney, Lillian, pregnancy, 110
Disney, Patricia, 87
Disney, Richard Lester, 91
Disney, Robert, 78
Disney, Roy Edward, 72, 87-89, 102
Disney, Roy O., 77, 78, 83, 85, 86-87, 100
Disney, Sharon Mae, 90
Disney, Walt's pilot, 90
Disney, Walter Elias, 76-120
Disney, Walter, '37 trip, 94
Disney, Walter, and children, 91
Disney, Walter, and S. Rockefeller, 115
Disney, Walter, apartment at Disneyland, 116
Disney, Walter, artifact scam, 78
Disney, Walter, as FBI agent, 112-113
Disney, Walter, attitude toward authority, 85
Disney, Walter, awards, 73, 80, 95
Disney, Walter, character, 84-86
Disney, Walter, chldhd love fr magic, 78
Disney, Walter, debt to syndicate, 80
Disney, Walter E., description of, 77
Disney, Walter, driving force behind D. Studios, 82
Disney, Walter, drunk, 98
Disney, Walter, famous signature, 80
Disney, Walter E., homes of, 77
Disney, Walter, ideas for Mickey's suicide, 80
Disney, Walter, illegitimate birth, 82-84
Disney, Walter, image efforts, 72
Disney, Walter, love for animals, 78
Disney, Walter, nervous breakdown, 110
Disney, Walter, obsession with buttocks, 81
Disney, Walter, obsessive hand-washing, 71
Disney, Walter, porn king, 80-81
Disney, Walter, relationship to Sharon, 90
Disney, Walter, rumors about body, 77
Disney, Walter, sexual habits, 111
Disney, Walter, sexual problems, 80
Disney, Walter, shares in W.D., 87
Disney, Walter, Studios, heavy metal rock, 74
Disney, Walter, Studios, history, 91-102
Disney, Walter, Studios, standards, 71
Disney, Walter, Studios, subsidiaries, 73
Disney, Walter, suicidal depression of, 93, 110
Disney, Walter, threatens a policeman, 108
Disney, Walter, traffics in trinkets of evil, 133
Disney, Walter, White Knight, 79
Disney, Walter, witness before Cong., 81
Disney, Wesley Ernest, 90-91
Disney, and sex education, 113
Disney, attitude toward Illum. families, 102
Disney, buyout of Cap Cities/ABC, 103
Disney, employees, 134
Disney, image of sainthood, 71
Disney, largest media-entertainmt conglm, 71
Disney, marketing, 74
Disney, myths about, 73
Disney, self-governing power of, 115
Disney, sets up banks, 112
Disney, suppression of journalists, 71
Disney-MGM studios, 117
DisneyWorld Police, 108-109
DisneyWorld, author's visit, 134
Disneyana, 118
Disneyland After Dark, 106
Disneyland Hotel, 116
Disneyland Security Supervisor, 108
Disneyland and Mind Control, 114-134
Disneyland programming, 56
Disneyland, 75, 77-78, 82, 98, 104
Disneyland, Illuminati nickname, 75
Disneyland, Syndicate w/in a Syndicate, 108
Disneyland, author's visit, 134
Disneyland, dispute over it, 98

Disneyland, negative comments about Alien Encounters, 101
Disneyland, opening day, 72
Disneyland, slave works at, 64
Disneyland, used for programming, 114
Disneyland, virtual reality ride, 106
Disneylandia, 114
Dissociation magazine, 442
Dissociation, assoc. w/ Vertical Strain Superior, 226
Dissociation, linked to survival, 424
Dissociation, programming brace, 377
Dissociative Disorders and Mind Control, 60, 192
Distance, emot, physical, cult. for killing, 195
Divine Master, name for programmer, 477
Divine dreams, (egyptian), 440
Divinity, ultimate promise by Lucifer, 257
Dizygotic twins, 15
Djourno, research, 160
DoD contractors, 137-138
DoD projects, 142
Dobbins AFB, GA, 304
Dobelle, William, 165
Doctor's Hospital, Dallas, TX, 299
Doctors, dirty, 16
Doctors, in Hong Kong, 208
Doctrines of Demons, 256
Documents, from Centrl Amer., 89
Dodging, 438
Dog spirit guards, 254
Dog, who was a boy, 100
Dogs, used in programming, 23
Doll house, used for computer programming, 270
Doll programming, 56, 114, 197
Doll, glass, 108
Dollhouse, 272, 447
Dolls, role in programming, 114
Doman, Robert, 502
Dominance behaviors and genetics, 237
Domino effect of programs, 374
Dominoes, 62
Donald Duck, 91, 96
Donchin, Dr. Emmanuel, 281
Dondup, Lama Minguar, 210
Door Knob alters, 119
Door Knob, character in *Alice In Wonderland*, 119
Door group, 282
Door knob alter, 501
Doors, that front alters walk through, 133
Dopa Decarboxylase, 36
Dopa, 36
Dopamine, 36, 164
Dopamine-Beta-oxidase, 36
Dorothy, programming of alters, 357
Dorothys, 254
Dorsey, Tommy, 104
Dossiers secrets, 97
Dot matrix printers, analogy, 165
Double Agents, 67-68
Double Helix, internal, 126
Double-binds of Programmer's love, 386
Double-binds, 448
Double-binds, created by therapists, 508
Double-cube shaped systems, 190
Double-helix DNA, 239
Doubles, look-alikes used, 196, 312
Doubts, self, about abilities, 35
Douek, 162
Doves, in Illum. ritual, 130
Down There, book, 499
Down syndrome, 205
Downing, 26
Dr. Black, 446
Dr. Frankenollie, film, 121
Dr. Green's codes, 64
Dr. Jekyll/Mr. Hyde effect, 19
Dr. Star, OTO programmer, 193
Dr. White, 201
Draco constellation, 63
Draconian enforcers, 279
Draft dodgers, W.W. I, 83
Dragnet shows, 114
Dragon, represents knowledge, 207
Dragons, 129
Draper Prison, UT, 301
Drawers, 472
Dream Duty, for horse-type alters, 446
Dream Telepathy, 441
Dream Telepathy, book, 441
Dream Work, understanding, 440-446
Dream containment programming, 442
Dream material, easier for victims to share than memories, 443
Dream programming, 414
Dream sealing programs, 247
Dream state therapy, 412-414
Dream therapist, possible questions to followup, 443
Dream therapy to break down dissociation, 442
Dream work, suggestion for, 443-444
Dreamer, still scans external environment, 443
Dreamland, NV, 302, 304
Dreams of expectant fathers, 3 stages of, 443
Dreams, 440-446
Dreams, Lucid, 443
Dreams, are at times repressed memories for victims, 442
Dreams, can relate to inner concerns, 441
Dreams, computer imaging, elec. m.c., 182
Dreams, how external sense messages are reframed by mind, 444
Dreams, may surface after a triggering incident, 444

Dreams, meaning of, 440-441
Dreams, of abused children, 443
Dreams, of siblings of disabled children, 441
Dreams, programming concerning, 247
Dreamscapes, 442-443
Drexler, Eric, 169
Driscoll, Bobby, 81
Droller, Jerry, 283
Drowning, feelings of, 127

DRUG TOPICS
Drug Abuse disorder, 335
Drug Companies, suppress GHB, 29
Drug Handbook, 348
Drug Running, CIA, L.A., 4
Drug Running, Napa Valley, 134
Drug carrying scripts, 59
Drug culture, creation of, 123
Drug records of mind-control, destruction of, title pg. intro
Drug running by establ.,4, 54
Drug smuggling, 105
Drug toxicity, 26
Drug, distribution factors into brain, 25
Drugged state, how it feels, 28
Drugs, Analeptic, 29
Drugs, affect on different alters, 26
Drugs, allergic response, 27
Drugs, and learning sequences, 236
Drugs, and scripts, 26
Drugs, classification of mind-altering ones, 25
Drugs, excretion/elim., 27
Drugs, for Classical condit., 29
Drugs, for hiding a tubal birth, 27
Drugs, for setting in codes, 27
Drugs, half-lives of, 26
Drugs, molecular size of, 25, 26
Drugs, particle size, 25, 26
Drugs, persistence of, 26
Drugs, programming against, 348
Drugs, programming around, 27
Drugs, research conc. memory, 28
Drugs, research for programming, 25
Drugs, skills of programmers w/, 26
Drugs, surgical, used for programming, 415
Drugs, to hide codes, 30
Drugs, to stabilize. prgrmg, 27-28
Drugs, used to destroy memory, 29-30
Drugs, used to help trauma bond victim to programmer, 458
Drugs, well stocked in p.ctrs, 27
Druid, 214
Druidic symbols, 55
Drums, military use of, 51
DuPont Illuminati family, 73, 218, 235, 334
DuPont, 235
DuPont, John E., DuPont heir, 334
Duchess of York, 95
Ducktails, 75
Duff, Dr. John, 89
Duke family, 102
Duke, Angie, 102
Dulce, NM underground bases, 302, 305
Dulce, NM, 313
Dulles brothers, 73
Dulles, Allen, 2
Dune, movie, 63
Dungeon code, 60
Duress, and accountability, 494
During, Matthew, 164
Dying to self, Christ's teaching, 395

E-Systems, 70, 142, 177
EEG bands, 175
EEG info, 173
EEG waves to train the brain, 299
EEGs, 14, 18, 174, 175, 270
EKG info, 173
ELF Wave Mind-control capabilities, list, 178
ELF transmitters, secret, 147
ELF waves, 144, 176, 178, 281, 356
ELINT Center, Unified Command, 300
EM radiation, 180, 281
EMASS system, 142
EMC HQ, Boulder, CO, 298, 303
EMCS-X-3000-Plus Elect. Mind Control Device, 186
EMF waves, 139
EMF weapons, definition, 138
EMG audio implant, 162
EPCOT, FL, 86, 98, 100, 102, 116
EPIC El Paso Intelligence Center, title pg. chp. 1
ERT (Air Force Swat Teams), 297
ESP, CIA research, 474
ESP, appearance of, 263
ESP, in Disney film, 108
Eagle Scouts Honor Society, 288
Ear diseases, experiments w/ elect. cures, 160
Earman, "Gen.", 283
Earth God, voice behind, Geb, 254
Earth, alter, 128
Earthquakes, internal, 128, 482
Earthquakes, programming for, 128
Earths in the Universe, 218
Easter, time of 1st ritual theft of birthright, 259
Eastern Europe, 4
Eastman Kodak, 20
Eating Attitudes Test, 339
Eating Disorder Tests, listed, 339
Eating Disorders, 335, 337-339, 406

Eating disorders, related highly to abuse, 337
Eaton School, U.K., 297
Ebner, Donald Richard, 64, 283
Eccles, Sir John, 186
Eckerd Family Youth Alternatives, Inc., 11
Edendale, CA, 78
Edgewater hospital, Chicago, 269
Edmonton, Alberta, Canada, 283
Educated Mentality Program, 64
Education system, keeps students down, 488
Edwards AFB, CA, 303
Eel, electric, victim becomes, 23
Effects of Ionizing Radiation on DNA, 240
Egg-shaped demonic power bases, 200
Eglin AFB, FL, 304
Ego state problems, 423
Ego states, 424, 460
Ego states, development of, 460
Egypt, 460
Egypt, ancient, 206, 209, 215, 264
Egyptian Hermetic magic, 289
Egyptian Sleep Temples, 37
Egyptian priesthood, ancient, 209
Eidetic memory, 249
Eisenhower, 72
Eisner family, 104-105
Eisner, Michael Dammann, 89, 101, 103, 104-105, 107
El Paso Intelligence Center, title pg. chp. 1
El Reno, OK, 299
Electo-otiatrics, 159-160
Electrical Stim. tolerance, drug to raise, 27
Electrical fields on victims, 171
Electrical stimulation for spinal cord injuries, 223
Electrified water bed, 23
Electro-magnetic force fields, 462
Electro-shock, of self, program, 64
Electro-shock, used by some therapists, 412
Electrode arrays, 166
Electrolite Prodigies Experiments, secret radiation file, 234
Electron beam guns, for tunnel construction, 302
Electronic Engineering Times, 169
Electronic Telepathy Machine, 176-177
Electronic Times, 169
Electronic implants, 462
Electronic mind control, 137-186
Electronic mind control, Oklahoma, 299
Electronic mind control, Utah Prisons, 301
Electronic mind-control & DID, 141
Electronic mind-control, glitches, 140
Electronic mind-control, typical, 176
Electronics Weekly, 169
Electrons, 240
Electroshock, for Beh. Mod., 22
Electroshock, to back for programming, 415
Elemental world of substances, 33
Elements of World System, 365
Elephants, in *Fantasia*, 132
Elevator ride of terror, 117
Elevators, 274
Elevators, tube, and DUM bases, 305
Elitism, justifies abuse of lower individuals, 280
Elizabethtown, NY, 305
Elohim City, Muldrow, OK, 69
Emerald of the Sea, G.Dawn branch, 59
Emerald, 190, 314
Emeralds, 57
Emergency entry, 193
Emet, word to seal with, 253
Emotion alter for spinner families, 377
Emotion alters, 501
Emotional anesthesia, term, 404
Emotional constructs of "me", in 4th brain, 424
Emotional content of memories, 466
Emotions and their affect on perspectives, 245
Emotions linked to moral will, 247
Emotions needed for maturity, 490
Emotions, absent from memories carried by horse type alters, 446
Emotions, bridge between body and mind, 420
Emotions, getting in touch is a trigger, 392
Emotions, hide parts, 467
Emotions, how to regain, 377
Emotions, lack of, 377, 405
Emotions, lack of, hinders sense of humanism, 377
Emotions, stored in 2nd brain, 515
Emotions, why programmed males run from e., 360
Encausse, Dr. Gerald, 97
Enchiridion of Pope Leo, 257
Encoders, used by mind for information, 311
Encounter Chronicles Journal of Scien. Intell., 134
Encyclopedia Britannica, 217, 219
End-time Programming, 58, 64, 458-459, 484
End-time programming, demon chief, 484
Endocrine structures, 211-212
Endoplasmic reticulum, 26
Endorphins, 424
Endorphins, natural for sleep, 349
Endtime callback programming, 303
Energy fields of brains, 171
Energy, high, prior to split, 128
Enforcer demon, Paimon, 484
Enforcer demons, 482
Engbers, Father John, 20
Engines of Creation, 169
England, 89, 214, 215, 216, 219, 235, 253, 283, 287
England, northern, 216
English alphabet programming, 269
Engram, 311
Enkephalins, 212

Enochian Chess of the Golden Dawn, 59
Enochian Chess, 59
Enochian language, 55, 62
Enochian magic, 58-59, 127
Enochos, biblical term for guilt, meaning of, 492
Environmental movemt, roots of, 80
Enzyme mechanisms in liver, 26
Enzyme rhythms, 183
Epcot Resorts, 111
Epcot, city of, 86
Epichlorohydrin, 239
Epigenesis, study of, 237
Epilepsy, cause of, 229
Epileptic seizure, triggered by TV, 219
Epinephrine, 36
Episcopalian church, 87, 522
Epsilon programming, 57
Equipment, to catch a soul, 264-265
Equity, 365, 367
Erickson, Milton, ability to use stories, 464
Ericksonian Hypnosis, 231
Ervin, 66
Esalen Institute, Big Sur, CA, 13, 299
Esdaile, James, 37
Espionage programming, 114, 270
Essentials of Cranio-Sacral Osteopathy, 228
Esso Standard Oil, 298
Estrogen, 14
Eternal Life Force, a green light, 191
Eternal Light, more powerful than programmers, 429
Eternal Light, the, 428-433
Eternal Self, the, 517
Eternal Spirit, the, 517
Ethics, of Bertrand Russell, 400
Ethiopia, 283
Ethmoid, 211, 212
Ethyl Methanesulfonate EMS, 239
Ethylene-vinyl acetate copolymer matrix disks, 164
Ethylenimine, 239
Eugenic laws, 10
Eugenics Society, 10
Eugenics, 9-10
EuroDisney, 75
Europe, 231
Evaluation Form "Getting To Know You Better", 340
Evaluation Forms, subject of, 340
Evans, Dale, 118
Evans, Dr. Charles, 283
Evans, Dr. Wayne O., 281
Eve, many faces of, 276
Evergreen, code word, 112
Evidence, greater for demons than what sends men to the electric chair, 474
Evidences of God, 400
Evita film, 74
Evoked emissions, 299
Evoked potentials, 18, 139, 175, 186
Evolution of Complexity of the Brain w/ Emerg. of..., 186
Evolution theory, 128
Evolutionary great leap forward propaganda, 488
Exaggerated behavior, 354
Examples, good examples of teamwork, 383
Excitation potentials, 179
Excusing our own behavior, 438
Executive Control Board (Grand Druid Council), 57, 314
Exercises to rewire brain after split-brain programming, 502
Exhibitor's Herald, 78
Exit permissions of double helix, internal, 126
Experience, gaining, 385
Experiments, mind-control in Conc. Camps, 2
Experiments, radiation, 64
Extended family members, not usually good for validation, 447
External Proof, benefits of validation, 447
Eye damage, from implants, 144
Eye in the Sky, 480
Eye of Horus, anus, 265
Eye of the Devil, film, 411
Eye-rolls, 410
Eyeball torture, 23
Eyes, 227
Eyes, use of to signal, 62
Eyries, research, 160
Ezekiel 6:3 book, 302

FASEB Journal, 179
FBI Child procurement program, 113
FBI memo, showing govt. use of Disneyland, 114
FBI, 503
FBI, 72, 82, 106, 111, 112-113, 288, 294, 305
FBI, denies SRA's existence, 331
FBI, division 5, 461
FBI, ex-, members of Church of Satan, 284
FBI, relations with Mafia, 109
FBI, use of Nazi criminals, 312
FBI/CIA cooperation to procure children, 282
FBO Film Booking Offices, 93
FDA, 29, 160, 163, 164, 172
FEMA Region IX regional office, Presideo, CA, 303
FEMA base, Ada, OK, 305
FEMA center, SW Georgia, 304
FEMA in MA, 304
FEMA regional center, Denton, TX, 306
FEMA regional ctr. Atlanta GA, 304
FEMA underground center Bothell, WA, 306
FEMA, 303, 305, 306

FEMA, Santa Rosa regional center, 303
FEMA/DOD underground facility, 303
FINCEN (Financial Crimes Enforcement Network), title pg. chp. 1
Fa Fe Fi Fo Fum, 59
Facades of friendships, by alters, 247
Face Language, 227
Face, targeted, by ELF/VLF attacks, 182
Faces, which cover a wall, image of, 202
Facial features related to personality, 227
Facial muscles, trained at boarding school, 280
Failures, examining the past therapeutic failures, 519-520
Fairfield, IO, 230
Fairies, names of, 273
Fairies, ugly, (goblins), 482
Fairmont Hotel, San Jose, CA, 185
Fairview, KS, 304
Fairy alters, 125, 126, 273, 314-315
Fairy alters, names of, 273
Fairy demon, 481
Fairy dust, 125
Fairy tale programming, 290
Fairy tales, cult, told to child, 261
Fairy tales, layered in, 261
Fairy, green skirted, script for, 126
Fairy-tale weddings, 102
Fairyland, 125
Faith vs. fear, 254
Faith, 252, 343, 364-367, 434, 493
Faith, asking in faith, 434
Faith, lack of, 342
Faith, overcomes the NWO, 459
Faith, spiritual armor, 364-367
Fall of Lucifer, 401
Fall of Man, 378
Fall of man, was the rise of religion, 401
False Hope Programs, 272
False Memory Spindrome, 64, 67, 393, 411
False Memory Syndrome Foundation, 268-269
False Memory Syndrome programming, 64, 269
False feelings, 249
False memories that hurt, are rejected, 248
False memories, attached to stringers, 466
False memories, research into how to implant, 248
False reports of deprogramming & freedom, 198
False trinity, 272, 475, 519, 521
False trinity, attached to carousel, 519
Familiar Spirit, in Disney film, 121
Families of alters, 353, 422
Families, the heart has gone out of, 323
Family history of victim, 340-341
Family members of victim, reactions to therapy, 394
Family of slaves, used as a team, 279
Family, rebuilding a shattered family, 448
Fantasia, film, 46, 48, 77, 86, 87, 96, 97, 119, 122-133, 199, 316
Fantasia, foundation imagery for horse type alters, 445
Fantasia, role as programming script, 122-133
Fantasia, video release, 122
Fantasia, years it was primary foundational script, 122
Fantasy as a game for victim, 130
Fantasy receptions, 102
Fantasy, called "good", all else "bad", 362
Fantasy, the goal of programming, 451
Fantasyland, 116
Farm machinery analogy, 434
Farmer in the Dell, 59
Fascia dentala granule cells, 236
Fascism, 95
Fasting, programming use, 41
Fatal acupoints, 207
Father and mother issues, 374
Father of Amer. TV, 95
Father's voice, influence for baby, 14
Father, of victim, marries daughter in ritual, 260
Father, spiritual, good surrogate, 448
Fathers, name substit. for Illuminati, 120
Fatigue, used for programming, 42
Faults, of programmer, reframed, 358
Fax transmissions, 219
Fayetteville, AK, V.A. 301

FEAR TOPICS
Fear & Demons, 253-254
Fear is a magnet for what we fear, 342
Fear of sleep, 350
Fear, 434, 453-454
Fear, Diagnostic Chart, 344
Fear, a base for the programming, 343
Fear, a comfort zone for victim, 359
Fear, a foundation for m.c., 14
Fear, can stop the CRI, 229
Fear, creates mental bondage, 342
Fear, ends the victims power, 359
Fear, foundation is death, 342
Fear, getting rid of, 423
Fear, how programmers, & Illum. exploit, 254
Fear, how to handle, 342
Fear, in programming, 127
Fear, influence on mind, 359-360
Fear, open doors for demons, 254
Fear, spiritual dimensions, 342
Fear, triggered by senses, 342
Fear, used as a progrmg brace, 376-377
Fear, what it robs, 343-343
Fears, free floating, 406
Fears, some dissociated by front alters, 343
Fears, types of, for m.c. victims, 343-343
Fed reserve at Mt. Pony, 306

Fed wire, electronic system, 306
Federal Bureau of Prisons, 12, title pg. chp. 6
Federal Correctional Inst., Lexington, KT, 300
Federal Correctional Institute, 299
Federal Court, Manhattan, 110
Feelings of isolation, 409
Feelings, are not facts, 400
Feelings, false, 249
Feelings, mixed, normal cause of, 424
Feelings, seem stripped from slave, 245
Feet, get pulsating fields, 182
Feinstein, Dianne, 89
Feistel, Horst, 173
Feldman, Robert, 283
Felix the Cat, 91
Felix, Dr. Robert Hanna, 281
Feminists, modern, 9
Fen Yi Acupoint, 207
Fengfu Acupoint, 207
Fennel oil, 36
Ferguson, Jim, 283
Ferguson, Norm, 80
Ferris-Wheel system, 191
Ferry boat, internal, 478
Fetus, abilities, 13-14
Fetus, eaten as seed, 200
Fetus, eyesight of, 14
Fetus, personality of, 13
Fetus, traumas done to, 14-15
Fiber optic implants, 166-167, 462
Fiber tracts, destruction of in brain, 143
Fiber-optics for surveillance, 278
Fiberoptic implants, 171
Fiction books, use of, 53
Field agents, Level 3, 16-17
Field, electrical, on victim's head, 182
Fighter personality, 8
Fighting alters, 483
Figure 8 in programming, 125, 129
Figure 8, symbolizes divinity, 257
File headings, secret, radiation experiments, 234
Files, for blackmail purposes kept, 279
Files, programmer's, 61
Film Booking Offices FBO, 93
Films, training, to teach mind-control programming to officers, 290
Films, used for assassination programming, 501
Films, used in split-brain programming, 501
Filters, for listening devices, 278
Final Solution, for problem slaves, 280
Final takeover, tests to gain experience, 259
Financial wealth, given by Beelzebub, 481
Financiers, Jewish, 79
Finch, Christopher, 76
Finders, 282
Fine Arts Museum, San Francisco, 46
Finetuning, 44
Finish Line Protocol program, 64
Finkelhor and Browne's Model of Abuse, 294
Fire In the Minds of Men, 217
Fire Opal, alters assigned, 271
Fire, alter, 128
Fire, fears of, 343
Firechild alters, 480
Fireworks, at IllumiNations, 102
Firing rates, various wars, 195
First Gibraltar Savings & Loan, 107
First brain, manipulation of, 515-517
Fish, Gen. Howard, 297
Fish, in *Fantasia*, 125
Fisher, A.E., 35
Fisherman's Ring, 191
Flagyl, aka Metronidazole, 240
Flame, eternal, 48
Flanagan, Dr. Patrick, 176
Flashbacks, 335, 349
Flashbacks, memory, 403
Flashing lights, used with spin tortures, 202
Flat state, 51
Flauras, demon, 482
Flexibility, encouraged, 356
Flexibility, helpful to therapy, 421
Flies, 251
Flint, Prof. Herbert L., 220
Flooding programs, 446, 449
Flooding, of memories, 449
Flooding, symptoms during listed, 449
Florida, 65, 88, 108, 115, 194, 283, 304
Florida, DUM bases, 304
Flottorp, research, 160
Flourens, Pierre, 217
Flower, Joe, 133
Flowers in mind-control ad, 275
Flowers, as a code, 52
Flowers, in programming, 119, 125
Flowers, programmed family ties, 314-315
Fluid levels, determined by percussion, 217
Flute tones, induce trance, 131
Flute, in *Fantasia*, 129
Fluxuations of CSF, 228
Fly, mating call changed genetically, 237
Flynn, John, 185
Focal Points, demonic use, 257
Focus Trust, 104
Fog, internal, 198
Fogarty International Center, 208
Foglesong, Richard, 108
Folk witchcraft, 215
Folkart barefoot doctor system, China, 207
Followup on breakthroughs, 383

Fontanellas (fissures), 219
Food utilization rhythms, 183
Foolish Games Program, 64
Foras, demon, 482
Forbes 500, 71
Force fields, on victims, 179
Force, the, 203
Forced Brain Wave Activity Program, 64
Ford, Betty, 289
Forebrains, shut down during fear, 194
Forensic Criterion Program, 64
Forest Park, GA, 304
Forgiveness of sins, 493
Forgiveness, obtaining by faith, 493
Forgiveness, proper and improper, 500
Forgiveness, thoughts of trigger suicide programming, 493
Forneus, demon, 482
Fort Holabird, MD, 54
Fort, Dr. Joel, 298
Forum World Features, 70
Foundational programming, removal of, 486
Foundations of Spiritual Programming, 253
Four Faces, 69
Four Gates to Heaven, term, 432
Four cornerstones of system, 432
Four-Square denomination, infiltration by Illum., 259
Fourcin, 162
Fourier transformations, 161, 219, 311-312
Fourier-type translation, 219
Fourth Book of Cornelius Agrippa, 257
Fowler and Wells, 217
Fowler, Joe, 98
Fox, 235
Fox, Dr. Loreda, 67
Fox, Dr. Tom, 283
Fragment purpose armies, 483
Fragments, special purpose, 128, 193
Frame of reference, of people, 267-268
Frame-arrays, of the mind, 511
Frames of reference, needed for learning, 400
France, 74, 75, 77, 85, 89, 107, 142, 159, 160, 196, 215, 283, 310, 312
France, U.S. Ambassador to, 107
Franciscan monastery, 83
Franciscan monks, 83
Franco, Gen., 104
Frank, Rich H., 87, 89, 94, 105
Frankenstein, LaVey loved, 284
Frankfurt, Ger., 213
Frankincense oil, 36
Franklin, J., 442
Fraser Audio implants, 162
Fraternal twins, 15
Fraternity Leads Program, 64
Frayase audio implant, 162
Freak Out Program, 64
Free University of Berlin, Ger., 235
Free Will area of brain, 206
Free radicals, 239
Free sex, as an excuse for abuse, 488
Free will, 434, 448
Free will, given by God, 434
Free will, hierarchy slaves, given the pretense in joining, 358
Free will, stripped from child, 494
Freedom comes with responsibility, 494
Freedom of Choice, by God, 342
Freedom of Information Act, 3
Freedom of Thought Newsletter, 144
Freeman, L., 442
Freemasonry, 7, 86, 94, 95, 190, 214, 218, 221, 217, 278-279, 281-282, 287, 306, 481, 482, 497, 521
Freemasonry, Scottish Rite, 217
Freemasonry, and mind control, 281-282
Freemasonry, harassment & blackmail, 278-279
Freemasonry, lower levels deceived, 497
Freemasonry, rituals of upper levels, 481
Freemasonry, use of Cabala, 7
Freemasons, 481
Freese, Andrew, 164
Freezing of a brain, erases memory, 311
Freiburg, Germany, 235
French Foreign Legion, 51
French Legion of Honor, 95
French Revolution, 217, 499
French government, involvement into mind control, 504
Frenzied State Program, 64
Frequencies, of cell phones, 180
Fresno, CA, V.A., 301
Freud's theories, 412
Freud, Sigmund, 232
Frey, Allen, 176, 235
Freye, William, 201
Friends, helpful and not so helpful during grieving process, 453
Friendships, lack of, consequences, 247
Frog Man Program, 64
Front alters, 271, 380, 391, 396, 422, 479, 494, 512, 521-522
Front alters, Christians, 257
Front computers, use logic, 271
Front part of system, allowed a grieving part, 451
Front programs, 271
Front system, built to look like entire system, 479
Frontal lobes, 175, 231
Frontal skull bones, 219
Fronts, done well by programmed multiples, 512
Fronts, of Illuminati, 71
Frost, Floyd & Mildred, 283

Frost, bone research, 226
Fruit, internal, 125, 190, 329
Fry, Dr. W., 143
Ft. Bliss, title pg. chp. 1
Ft. Bragg, NC, 66, 300
Ft. Collins, CO, 303
Ft. Detrick, MD, 299
Ft. Drum, NY, 299
Ft. George Meade, MD, NSA, 297, 299, 304
Ft. Heritage, 118
Ft. Hood, TX, 306
Ft. Huachucha, AZ, 297, 302
Ft. Irwin, CA, 303
Ft. Monckton, U.K., 67
Ft. Polk, LA, 300
Ft. Ritchie, 306
Ft. Wilderness, 118
Ft. Worth, TX, 89
Fujian, China, 206
Fulford, Robert, 212-213, 222
Full Body Electro Magnetic Scanner, 463
Full Integration, term, 463
Fuller, J.L., 238
Fun, childlike, 490
Fun, good for teams, 382
Fundamental Theology Program, 64
Furcas, demon, 482
Furfur, demon, 131, 482
Fusion, 463-464
Future Shock, term, 308
Future World Section, DisneyWorld, 102

G Group Chief, 140
GABA, 29
GAO, U.S. govt., 12
GCHQ, 173
GE Government Operations, 11
GHB, 29
GWEN towers, 147, 176
Gabel, S., 442
Gabriel, R.A., 241
Gage, Phineas, 219
Galaxies, internal, 190, 314-315, 518
Galaxies, shown in film, 265
Gall, Franz Joseph, 217
Gambling industry, 103
Gambling spirit, 91
Gambling, 91, 103
Gambling, problem for Disneys, 78
Game Caller, the, nickname of Pettie, 282
Gamma Hydroxy Butyrate (GHB), 29
Gamma Ray Research satellite (alleged), 177
Gamma programming, 362
Gamma radiation, 312
Gamma waves, 174
Gamma-irradiated DNA, 240
Ganglia impulses blocked by drug action, 236
Ganglia, 236
Ganser Syndrome, 209
Garden Heliotrope, 348
Garden Room, Mormon SLC Temple, 306
Garfield, James, 9
Gargoyle cartoons, 92
Garner & Garfunkel, 339
Garrison, William Lloyd, 217
Gas Chromatography, 463
Gast, Gen. Phil, 297
Gatekeeper alters, 193, 249, 382, 390
Gatekeeper demon, 484
Gatekeeper programming, 198
Gatekeepers are from Uranus, & Mothers of 'Darkness...(proposed), 354
Gates Pass Base, AZ, 302
Gates, Bob, 172
Gateshead private school, England, 287
Gateways, 192
Gaucho, Goofy, 96
Gay, Margie, 91
Geb, demon, 254
Geils, H., 238
Gem alters, 190, 193, 252, 314-315, 432, 514, 518-519
Gem story, 464
Gemini concept, 273
Gemini, 190
Gems, codes, 57
Gems, different kinds, 314-315
Gemstone codes, 271
Genealogy of splitting, charted by programmers, 432
General Electric GE, 219, 282
General Foods, 93
General Instruments, 107
General codes, for emergency entry, 193
Generalizing, 438
Generating a Yes Set, 267
Generational Spirit, 192
Generational demonic roots, 200
Generators, 138
Genes, 235
Genes, determine range of mental modifiability, 516
Genesis II, 308
Genetic Engineering, 232-239
Genetic Studies of Genius, 234
Genetic codes, 235
Genetic engineers, 307
Genetic labs, secret, 10
Genetic maps, 237
Genetic mechanisms at cellular level, 264
Genetic programming, cellular level, 236
Genetic psychology, 235

Genetic research, 10, 304-305
Genetic screening, U.S., 10
Genetic specifications, secret goals, 10
Genetically altered men, 194
Genetics & human behavior, examples, 237
Genetics linked to behavior, 235
Genetics, 8-10, 144
Genetics, effected by freks, 144
Genetics, help determine all 7 brains, 516
Genie, in programmg, 56
Genitals, targeted, by ELF/VLF attacks, 182
Gens, associations of families, 273
Genuflections, as signal, 62
Geographic Spirits, 193
Geomagnetic fields, 183
George AFB, CA, 303
George, alter who murdered, 3
Georgetown Hospital, Wash., D.C., 255
Georgetown University, 106
Georgia DUM bases, 304
Georgia, 290, 304
Georgy Porgy, 59
German & Roman customs for rings, 191
German Medical Establishment, 214
German Secret Societies, 214
German commandoes, in film, 108
German government, involvement into mind control, 504
Germans, in Rocky Mtn. underground bases, 185
Germany, 159, 162, 164, 213-214, 235, 288, 289
Germinal cells, 236
Germinal zone, 236
Geschicter Foundation, 70
Gesellschaft fur Strahlen und Umweltforschung, Munich, Ger., 235
Gestetner, Mr., of Hungary, 286
Get Rich Quick, 91
Ghost Town, Knott's Berry Farm, 116
Ghost army, 107
Ghost stories, for programming stage 2 rprtg alters, 198
Ghosts, of the Haunted House film, 93
Giancana, Sam, 93, 109, 11
Giannini, A.P., 94
Giannini, Atillo, 94
Gibraltar Steamship Company, CIA, 299
Gibson Greeting Card Co., 89
Gifts from God, 322, 375
Gila Mountain Area, AZ, 302
Gimzewski, Dr. James M., 168
Gingerbread Man, 59
Gingerich, Newt, 178
Ginsberg, Dr. Lawrence, 281
Girl Scout Camps, 297
Gittinger, John's, PAS, 18
Gittinger, John, 34
Glantz, John, 164
Glantz, Sandra, 164
Glass House Program, 64
Glass cylinders containing humans, 305
Glass palace, 273
Glass, Dr. George S., 283
Glassy Tunnel lining, from Nuclear subterrenes, 302
Glendale, CA, 144
Glenn, Dr. 502
Glenn, John, 72
Global Positioning Satellites, 278
Globe, internal, 122
Glory of God, programmers apply this to core, 517
Glove, for virtual touch, 186
Gnashing of teeth, realm, 478
Gnome-Mobile, the, 108
Gnomes, in Disney film, 108
Gnosticism, 269, 498
Go away codes, 54
Go home cover program, 202
Go home messages, 349
Go to ground signals, 54
Goa implant, 162
Goal of restoration more important than the process, 436
Goal-setting part of mind, 189
Goals for deeper alters, 490
Goals, of God, for us, 490
Goals, of support team, 382-383
Goals, of therapy, 463
Goals, substitutes for real life goals, 245
Goblin stories, 261
Goblins, demons, 482
God the Creator, 346
God the Father, 397
God's Paradise, diagram of elements, 365
God's candle to man, 361
God's creative force, 375
God's gifts to mankind, 375
God's glory, 437
God's high hopes for us, 346
God's justice, 378
God's love to all mankind, 492
God's love, 378, 433, 492
God's love, a good proof of, 433
God's names, used in programming, 55
God's order, 365
God's plan for a person, 361
God's standards, 491
God's structure, 437
God's throne, programming meaning, 517
God's wisdom, 401
God, 253, 342, 361, 365, 378, 401, 433, 437, 448, 456
God, Almighty, continually working with us, 253

God, His blessings are poured out on all creation, 493
God, attributes of, 365
God, attributes unchangeable, 522
God, concept that he had a ring, 190
God, enjoying Him with childlike fun, 490
God, equitable, 364
God, helped victim survive the trauma, 386
God, how He communicates with mankind, often by dreams, 440
God, how He gently woos people, 434
God, how he will help victim, 485
God, how to program in his voice, 34
God, not a respecter of persons, 491
God, problems understanding Him, 490
God, programming tactics in regards to, 253
God, treatment of cities, 422
God, unchangeable, 364
God-like, child encouraged to be, 128
Goddess of Spring, 95
Goddess, Rainbow, 131
Gods of Eden, 255
Gods of each city, 273
Gods of the Pit, 285
Goethe, Johann, 47
Gog, name given int. Beast Computer, 271-272
Gold coding, 271
Gold mines, internal, 483
Gold ring symbolizes marriage of mysteries, 191
Gold, Stanley P., 87, 88
Gold, white, 265
Golden Age, 63, 273
Golden Age, concept, 217
Golden Dawn, Order of, 58-59, 97, 289
Golden Triangle, 4
Goldenstein, Leonard, 98
Goldilocks & the 3 Bears, 261
Goldshe, Dr., 283
Goldsmith, Sir James, 88
Goldstein, R., 95
Goldwyn Pictures, 111
Golem Suite, 252
Golem, 7, 217, 252-253
Golem, goal of Cabala, 217
Golem, history of, 252-253
Golem, of Prague, 7
Golf courses, Palm Springs, CA, 287
Goliath, 342
Gong Sun, Madame, 207
Gooch, N.L., 442
Good Samaritan story, 435-436
Good Wine Co., 105
Good manners, potential abuse, 280
Good news of Christ, 493
Good news, what it is NOT, 492
Good vs. want is wanted, 401
Goofy military cartoons, 113
Goofy over Dental Health, cartoon, 119
Goofy watch, for mind-control, 116
Goofy, 91
Goofy, cartoon charc., 96
Gore, Al, 2
Gorilla Warfare Program, 64
Gorilla, mated with human, 233
Gosport, U.K., 67
Gothard, Bill, 396
Gottfredson, Floyd, 79
Gottlieb, Sidney, title pg. intro
Gourd, home for Pegasi alters, 445
Grace, 485
Grace, J. Peter, 283
Graham, Billy, 72, 109, 118
Graham, Billy, example of a vigilant multiple, 444
Graham, Don, 71
Grand Deception of the End Times, using "aliens", 184, 261
Grand Druid Council, Illuminati, 57, 216, 273, 314-315, 372, 483, 514
Grand Druid Council, internal, 199-200, 272, 364, 518-521
Grand Druid Council, meets in House of the Temple, 306
Grand Druid Council, needs the steps of Masonry worked on, 521
Grand Druid Council, one of its meeting sites, 302
Grand Druid Councils, fronts, 518
Grand Duchess of Vladmir of Russia, 107
Grand Grimoire, the, 257
Grand Master alters, 412
Grand Master, Illum., about W. Disney, 76
Grand Masters, Freemasonry, garb of, 190
Grand Masters, Illum., skills, 63
Grand Masters, may be Christian ministers, 521
Grand Masters, may lead cults, 521
Grand Masters, more contact with outside world, 521
Grand Masters, of Illuminati, 63, 126, 264, 487, 521
Grand Masters, of Illuminati, interject disk magic, 264
Grand Mesa, CO, 303
Grand Wash Cliffs, AZ, 303
Grand master alters, 478
Grande Dame alters, 478, 521
Grande Dame, Progrmg. Asst., 193
Grande Dame, role in programming, 123, 193
Grande Dames, Illum., 328
Grandfather Clock, 120
Grant, Kenneth, 289
Grants, given for visual implant research, 166
Granule cells of olfactory bulb, 236
Granule cells of the cerebellar cortex, 236
Grapevine Wash, AZ, 303
Graphoanalysis, 84

Graphoanalysis, to by-pass programming, 467
Grating, the, during NDE, 263
Grave clothes, need to take off, so to speak, 366
Graveyards, internal, 451
Gray's Anatomy, 227
Great Britain, 217
Great Depression, Amer., 10
Great Plan, for NWO, 91, 92
Great Pyramid, 222
Great Pyramid, may be used for internal structuring, 472
Great Rite ritual, 63
Great Sphinx, great stone tablet, 440
Great Wall of China, 395
Great White Brotherhood, 49
Greece, 68
Greek Letter programming, 269
Greek Mystery Schools, 205
Greek philosophy, 428
Greek, 62
Greeley, Horace, 221
Green Berets, 298
Green Dragon Society, Japan, 214
Green Valley Base, AZ, 303
Green ladies, alters, 273
Green, Dr., 64
Green, significance in Satanism, 50
Greenbriar Hotel, White Sulfur Springs, WV, 306
Greene, L. Wison, 283
Greenmail, 88
Greensboro, NC, 297
Grey coding, 271
Grey propaganda, 4
Greystone CIA, 89
Grid, 13x13, 470
Grid, 465
Grid, power, of major metro area, 179
Grids, manmade AC grids on earth, 183
Grids, method to program in, 270
Grief is a releasing process, 452
Grief is not an analytic process, 452
Grief, 252, 387, 450-455
Grief, a sign we care about others, 252
Grief, during, the world doesn't make sense, 452
Grief, how it shows in children during programming, 451
Grief, what it teaches silently, 454
Grieving process, as it occurs, 452
Grieving process, commonalities for all, 452
Grieving process, involves body, mind, and spirit, 453
Grimoire Testament of Solomon, 191
Grimoire of Pope Honorius, 257
Grimoires, ancient, list of, 257
Grimorium Verum, the, 257
Grips, 52
Groom Lake, NV, 304, 305
Gross Anatomy, film, 115
Grossman, John Wesley, 226
Grossman, Lt. Col. Dave, 91, 194
Grottos, term, and locations, 283
Guangzhoi, mainland China, 162
Guard alters, 271
Guardian angel (spirit) of victim, 428-433
Guardian angel, good one, locked up, 260
Guardian angels, 260, 345, 424
Guardian angels, helped victims, 345
Guardian demons, 128, 254, 482
Guardians, examples of, 254
Guards Directorate, Russia, 297
Guided imagery, 206
Guild American West, 87
Guillotine, Dr., 216
Guillotine, invention of, 216
Guilt of Hitler & Disney, 71
Guilt, 71-72, 196, 261, 262, 380, 407, 454, 409, 492, 500, 507, 509
Guilt, biblical words and meaning, 492
Guilt, chart, 454
Guilt, created for twin programming, 509
Guilt, not the answer, 492
Guilt, used for programming, 42
Guirao, Jose, 83
Guiteau, Charles, 9
Gun dealer killed, 280
Gun, Sticky-goo, 186
Gun, to stop a car by e. field, 182
Gunnison Facility, Utah St. Prison, 175, 301
Gunshots, used to access slaves, 325
Gurdjieff's disciples, 213
Gurdjieff, 212
Gurney, Edmund, 37
Gwinn, MI, 304
Gwinner, Eberhard, 164
Gypsies, Romany Tribe, 55

H implant, 167
HAARP project, 142, 144, 177-178
HAARP, 142, 144, 177-178
HK gene, 237
HYP, intelligence acronym for Harv. Yale & Princeton, 298
Habits (K-lines), 40
Habits, 40, 350, 354
Habits, modification of, 354
Haborym, demon, 482
Hadfield, J.A., 37
Hagstrom, Robert G., Jr., 104
Hahn, Jessica, 118
Hair, magical, of Repunzel alter, 199

Halevy, Julian, 133
Haley, Leah, 185
Halifax, Nova Scotia, 196
Hall, Harriet, 9
Hall, Joe, 104
Hall, Manly P., 46, 50
Hallendale, FL, 65
Halloween Hall of Fame, film, 108
Halloween Treat, cartoons, 108
Halloween, 1996, 74
Halloween, origins mentioned by D. film, 108
Hallucinations, simultaneous by several witnesses, 399
Hamadryad alters, 196
Hameroff, Stuart R., 169
Hamilton, Dr. James, 283
Hamilton, Warren, 222
Hampton, Tracy, 66
Hanapepe, Kauai, HA, 300
Hand geometry for I.D., 174
Hand greetings, Illuminati
Hand signal, Illuminati, 124
Hand signals used on slaves, 62-63
Hand signals, used by Clinton, 267
Hand to hand murder, 196
Hand washing, obsessive, 71-72
Handbook for Behavior Modification & Behavior Therapy, 516
Handed-ness, early detection of, 18
Handel, George Frederick, 47
Handler, where they hide to access victims, 446
Handlers, perceive some therapy as helpful, 338
Handwriting analysis, therapeutic assistance, 467
Hang up calls, 56
Hangovers, some are REM deprivation, 349
Hannaford, Carla, 502
Hansel & Gretal story, 55
Happiness Potential, shown by EEG, 18
Happiness, can only be lived in present, 454
Happy alters, 451
Hapsburg Illum. bloodline, 80
Harassment techniques, books by Loompanics, 279
Harassment, 278-279
Harassment, by electronics, 182
Hardwick, Lois, 91
Hardy, Ark, 303
Harp music, 124
Harp scale, 124
Harp, on *Fantasia*, 129
Harpies, 194
Harriman, Mrs., 8-9
Harriman, Pamela, 107
Hart, Kathy, 185
Hartman, research, 442
Harvard Business School, 110
Harvard Club, 105
Harvard University, 73, 105, 110, 238, 298
Harvard, mafia plans for, 110
Harvest of Weeping, 322
Hasidic Judaism, 7
Hat, magic, Fantasia film, 126
Hau, Michaela, 164
Haugaard & Reppucci, 295
Haunted Halloween, Disney cartoon, 108
Haunted Mansion, Disneyland, 116
Haures, demon, 482
Hausman, Cynthia, 283
Having Twins, 15
Hawaii, 300
Hawley, Philip, 298
Hawthorn, Australia, 142
Hays, Will H., 95
Head oscillations, 228
Headphones, for hypnosis, 181
Healing demon, 483, 484
Healing finger, ring finger, 191
Hearing, by mind, 55
Hearst Illuminati family, 194
Hearst, William Randolph, 93, 97, 111, 284, 285

HEART TOPICS
Heart beat, influenced by music, 129
Heart beat, programming attached at primal level, 459
Heart of evil, quest for power, 496
Heart programming, early, 515
Heart rate programs, 362
Heart rate slowed by CSF, 229
Heart rates & blood pressure, typically unknown by conscious mind, 515
Heart stoppage, programming/demon involved, 484
Heart valves, 172
Heart, eaten in loyalty test ritual, 262
Heartbeat linked to 1st brain, 514
Heartbeat of cult, programming base for, 130
Heartbeat, controlled after biofeedback traing, 516
Heartbeat, programming to control, 516
Hearts and souls, taken away, 485
Heat thermography, 462
Heath, Dr. Robert G., 281, 283
Heaven, first, 191
Heavenly City in Revelation, model for deep world, 314
Heavenly communities, of TM, 230
Heavy ions, 240
Heavy metal rock, 74
Hebrew letter programming, 55
Hebrew, 62
Hedonism, 400
Heel pain, caused by implants, 171
Hegelian Dialectics, 82
Heirens, William, 3
Helendale, CA, Lockhead Underground Facility, 303

Helicopter crash of Wells', 107
Helicopter, George Bush's, 62
Helicopters, black or dark, 184
Helicopters, for m.c., 182
Helicopters, used to access slaves, 325
Helix, Double, internal, 126
Hell Fire Ceremony, 262
Hell pit, 132-133, 482
Hell pit, programming imagery, 132-133
Hell, internal construction, 477-480
Hell, reproduced into the mind of the slave, 478
Hell, shape of, 477
Hello Princess, standard codeword, 198
Helmet of Salvation, 367
Helms, Richard, title pg. intro, 283
Helpful things, listed, 422-423
Helping alters, 414
Helpless feelings, 410
Helplessness, chart, 406
Henan Province, China, 206
Henninger, 26
Heptameron, the, 257
Herbal charms, 36
Herbalism, 206
Herbs, 36
Heritage Foundation, 11
Heritage USA, 117
Hermetic magic, 191, 264
Hermetic magicians, 63
Heroin, 26
Hershey, 235
Hess, Eckard H., 427
Heterodyne Principle, 179-180
Hexamethonium chloride, 236
Hey! Diddle Diddle!, 59
Hierarchies, internal, 273
Hierarchy alters, 474
Hierarchy diagram discussed, 521
Hierarchy, 194
Hierophants, of Mysteries wear rings, 190
High Priests, in Church of Satan, control over flock, 284
High Schools, use Disney Parks, 102
High Self, methods to reach, 257
High Self, term, 257
High pressure continuous water jet tunnel constr., 302
Higher brains and 1st brain can compete, 515
Higher brains vs. reptilian brain, 395
Higher brains, 395, 396, 515, 516
Higher brains, need to be built up & exercised, 396
Highest order of demons, called Seraphim, 484
Hilgard, 37
Hill, Napoleon, 220
Hillis, Daniel, 106
Hilton Head Island, SC, 117
Hilton Hotels, 103
Himalayas, 207
Hindu color schemes, 48
Hindu holy men, 51
Hinduism, 128, 229-230, 268
Hines, IL, V.A., 301
Hinkley, 57
Hinkley, Gordon B., 306
Hinkley, Ralph, ad, 57
Hippocampal Neuron Patterning, 7
Hippocampal neurons, 179
Hippocampus memory, 169
Hippocampus, Fascia dentala granule cells of, 236
Hippocampus, elec. stim. of, 35
Hippos, in Fantasia, 132
Hirohito, Emperor, 73
Hirt, Prof., 213
Histamine, 36
History, internal, on an internal computer, 270
History, manipulation of, 66
Histrionic disorder, 335
Hit team, in 1966, 280
Hitler Youth, 38
Hitler, Adolf, 38, 71, 195, 209, 497
Hitler, Adolf, secret descendants, 10
Hitler, Aquino's fascination for, 290, 293
Hobby, as a new activity, 490
Hoch, Dr. Paul, 281, 283
Hochmair, 162
Hocus Pocus Program, 64
Hocus Pocus, film, 121
Hod, Dr. Paul, 164
Hoffet, Emile, 97
Holes in ground, trauma, 472
Holistic medicine, 206
Holland, 20
Hollister, CA, 230
Hollywood Babylon, 81
Hollywood Hills, CA, 411
Hollywood Hospital, Vancouver, B.C., 301
Hollywood Pictures, 73, 100
Hollywood movies & implants, 164
Hollywood movies, 194, 463
Hollywood movies, poor to teach surveillance, 278
Hollywood rabbi, 79
Hollywood sex parties, 411
Hollywood, 79, 186, 457
Hollywood, CA, 78
Hollywood, declared a free zone by crime families, 110
Hollywood, early bad reputation, 79
Hollywood, mafia plans for, 109
Hollywood, promotion of Chiropractic, 221
Hollywood, spied on by Disney for FBI, 112
Holmby Hills, 77
Hologram protections for entrances, like fog, 302

Holograms, 311-312
Holograms, ability to lose pieces, 312
Holograms, life size, Disney Haunted Mansion, 116
Holograms, used for accessing, 42
Holographic Implant, 167
Holographic energy template of body, 264
Holographic images, 140, 169
Holographic memories created by implants, 167
Holy Bible, 491
Holy Blood, Holy Grail, 97
Holy Book of Beelzebub, 481
Holy Ghost (see Holy Spirit)
Holy Spirit, 252-253, 264, 397, 400, 434, 466, 493, 500
Holy fire of purification, 485
Holy of Holies veil, mocked by programming, 270
Holy spirit, thought of as the Spirit Tree, 192
Home Schooling, 99
Homeopathy, 206
Homing pigeons, 183
Homosexuality, 5, 12, 14
Homosexuals, creation of, 14
Honeybees, 183
Honeymoons, to DisneyWorld, 102
Hong Kong doctors, 208
Hong Kong, 208, 299
Hood, Dr. Wharton, 215
Hood, William J., 283
Hoover, J. Edgar, 83, 86, 106
Hope, 343, 345, 522
Hope, Bob, 72, 77, 104
Hope, destroyed by judicial system, 20
Hope, lack of, 343
Hormones, 14-15, 35
Hormones, for sex prgrmg, 35
Horned King, in Disney film, 108
Horror books, by Price, 106
Horror, accumulation of it all for recovering victim, 380
Horse alters, 130-131, 445-446
Horse breeding, nazi knowledge of, 213
Horse cloning, 307
Horse temperaments, 214
Horsemen, 214
Horses, black and white, battle of, 446
Horses, programming base for, 130-131
Horses, race, 9
Hospital settings, dangers of for victims, 380
Hospital stays, effect on twin of slave, 508
Hospitals, discussion of use for victims, 369
Hospitals, used for programming with spinal surgical tech., 415
Host alter, 326, 334, 373, 374, 376, 422, 428, 438, 471, 508
Host alter, creation of, 425
Hot-Cross Buns!, 59
Hotel Sonnenberg, Seelisberg, Switz., 230
Hotel de la Poste, French Quarter, New Orleans, 301
Hotel du Cap, Antibes, France, 77
Hotels, New Orleans, 300
Hotema, Hilton, 48
Hough's, Harold, 503
Hour glass alters, 62, 314-315
Hour glass and fairy, 314-315
Hourglass, internal, 126, 314-315, 477
House & Garden, 89
House Cochlear Audio Implants, 160
House of Temple, Scottish Rite, Wash. D.C., 302, 306
House, William F., 160
Houseplants, kill by electromag. waves, 181
How to Create a Sex Slave, training film, 290
How to Divide a Personality, training film, 290
How to be a Sailor, 113
How to work with Deeper Illuminati Parts, chart, 414
Howard, Michael, 254
Howell, Dr. Robert, 281
Hualapai Mountain Base, AZ, 303
Hubbard, Elbert, 220
Hubbard, Rex, 118
Hubs, satanic, 273
Hughs Identification Device, 172
Hugo, Victor, 97
Hulteng, John L., 99
Human Growth Hormone, 29
Human Resources Div. of Disney, 106
Human sacrifice, hinted at in Sat. bible, 285
Human sacrifice, to get Adrenalchrome, 36
Human sacrifices, title pg. chp. 3, 268, 450
Human sacrifices, faked mixed with real, 290
Human sacrifices, lied about, 496
Human sacrifices, secret money to be made, title pg. chp. 3
Human spirit, 388
Humans, have been turned into robots, 504
Humberdinck, Engelbert, 104
Humility, is a protection, 256
Humility, meaning of, 493
Humpty Dumpty, 59
Hungary, 286
Hunt, Professor, 220
Hunter Tribes and psi-gene, 7
Huntington, WV, V.A., 301
Hunts, human, carried out by abusers, 506
Hupodikos, biblical term for guilt, meaning of, 492
Hutton family, 215
Hutton, Richard, 215
Huxley, Aldous, 97
Huxley, Dr. Julian, 97
Huysmans, J.K., 499
Hyde, Dr., 283
Hydra and Freemasonry, 482
Hydra, demon, 481, 482, 519

Hydraulic rock hammers, 302
Hydrocephalus, Internal, 229
Hydroxyapatite, 226

HYPNOSIS TOPICS
Hypnosis & K-lines, 39-40
Hypnosis to restore memories, 271
Hypnosis workshops, Esalen, 299
Hypnosis, 8, 14, 37-63
Hypnosis, Ericksonian, 231
Hypnosis, Male vs. Female, 39
Hypnosis, age-regression, 41
Hypnosis, aided by electronics, 181
Hypnosis, basics of, 38
Hypnosis, can by-pass minds conservative protectors, 353
Hypnosis, criticisms of, discussion of, 458
Hypnosis, done to Christian mothers, 259
Hypnosis, early use to get memories, 37
Hypnosis, induction methods, 456
Hypnosis, limitations in therapy, 442
Hypnosis, power of, 38-39
Hypnosis, pro's and cons, 456-459
Hypnosis, qualms by recovering victims, 458
Hypnosis, quick, drug for, 27
Hypnosis, research, 456
Hypnosis, to heal a slave, 50
Hypnosis, use of images, 38
Hypnosis, use of rapport, 38
Hypnosis, used as a mouse for computer icons, 459
Hypnosis, using Wizard of Oz metaphor, 51
Hypnosis, view of, 456
Hypnosis, why it is powerful, 358
Hypnotherapy, 206
Hypnotic Illuminati ritual, words of, 192
Hypnotic age advanced, 61
Hypnotic candidates, good ones, 8
Hypnotic commands to dream something, 440
Hypnotic commands, on dreams, 247
Hypnotic eye, used frequently in ads, 275
Hypnotic inductions, 57
Hypnotic levels used for programming, 457
Hypnotic suggestions, prior to sleep about dream content, 444
Hypnotic surgery, 272
Hypnotic surgery, 451
Hypnotic trance by black frames, 1 per 32, 279
Hypnotic trance levels, Illuminati ranking of, 456
Hypnotism with phrenology, 217
Hypnotism, 8, 37-63, 108
Hypnotism, in Disney film, 108
Hypnotism, of Fetus, 14
Hypnotism, of reptiles, 514
Hypnotism, use in surgery, 37
Hypnotists, circus, 220
Hypnotists, stage, 457
Hypothalamic-pituitary-adrenal activity (HPA), 164
Hypothalamus, 35

I AM force, 49
I Dream of Jeannie, 57
I Love Little Pussy, 59
I'm a Gold Lock, 59
IBM Communication on secret 2020 neural chip implant, title pg. chp.6
IBM France, 142
IBM Lab, Yorktown Heights, 173
IBM executives, members of Church of Satan, 284
IBM, 168, 173, 219
IEEE Engineering in Medicine and Biology, 166
IEEE Internat. Conf. on Systems, Man, & Cybern., 166
IEEE Transactions on Biomedical Engineering, 173
IMB leak, pros and cons if legitimate, title pg. chp. 6
INSCOM, 297
INSCOM, location of major units, 297
IRS and Disney, 113
IRS infringements, typical upper echelon threat, 279
IRS, 96
ISH internal self-helpers, 263-264, 424, 480
ISH of cult, 480
ISO 9000 program, 173
ITT, 103
Ibuprofen, 348
Icahn, Carl, 88
Ice boxes, 472
Idaho DUM bases, 304
Idaho Falls, ID, 304
Idaho, 304
Ideas, brainstorming, 383
Identities, new, given Level 4, 17
Identity in Christ, 256
Identity, discovering it, 460
Identity, how projected durg prgrmg, 32
Identity, new one after slavery, 460
Identity, of a person, 517
Identity, regaining the victim's identity, 361
Illinois State records, 83
Illness, diagnosed via dreams, 440
IllumiNations, 102
Illuminati & Network harassment tactics, 278-279
Illuminati Control Over Foods and Grains, 102
Illuminati Wheel of Life Philosophy, 450
Illuminati alters, 412-413
Illuminati ancient manuscripts, 216
Illuminati assassinations, must be approved, 372
Illuminati beliefs about chains, 191
Illuminati believe they are divine, 475
Illuminati bloodlines, 252, 268, 463 498
Illuminati bloodlines, importance of, 268

Illuminati bloodlines, who they are, 463
Illuminati ceremonies & rituals, 130
Illuminati children, isolated from each other, 280
Illuminati cosmology, 412
Illuminati families, 279
Illuminati feasts, preparing alter for, 131
Illuminati fronts, 256
Illuminati genealogies, kept in internal library, 481
Illuminati genetic breeding, 233
Illuminati hand signal, 124
Illuminati in Bavaria, 245
Illuminati infiltration of Christian churches, 117
Illuminati kingpins, covers of, 286
Illuminati life & mind control portrayed, 120
Illuminati meetings, 65
Illuminati members, do not express grief, 450
Illuminati oath, written in La Bas, 499
Illuminati parents, duty of toward child, 259
Illuminati parts, deeper, how to work with, chart, 414
Illuminati philosophy, 475
Illuminati phrases said in film, 265
Illuminati plans for Star Wars, 121
Illuminati programming about trees & flowers, 119
Illuminati ranks, 521
Illuminati religious fronts, 375
Illuminati ritual to get Hydra described, 482
Illuminati rituals, Chronology, 258
Illuminati slave owner, fears deliverance of his slaves more than therapy, 485
Illuminati slaves, characteristics, 357
Illuminati symbology, portrayed in film, 265
Illuminati system of rivalry, 475
Illuminati, & discovery of America, 217
Illuminati, 75, 106, 107, 108
Illuminati, Grand Druid Council, meet in Wash. D.C., 302
Illuminati, appreciate front parts stabilized by therapists, 479
Illuminati, awareness of ego-state formation, 189
Illuminati, backed Graham & Disney, 72
Illuminati, creation of abolitionist movement, 217
Illuminati, disinformation campaign, 2
Illuminati, infiltration into various denominations, 259
Illuminati, mentioned in Rosicrucian books, 225
Illuminati, method to suck out child's life force, 265
Illuminati, organized covens in prisons, 232
Illuminati, organizing covens, West Coast, 114
Illuminati, relations w/ Mafia, 109
Illuminati, response when leaders go berserk, 264-265
Illuminati, secret libraries, 475
Illuminati, sterilize their actions by fronts, 2
Illuminati, structured into Gens, 273
Illuminati, support for Disney, 91
Illuminati, try to snatch spark of hope from victims, 345
Illuminati, use of early D. films, 97
Illuminati, will have systems changed at a prearranged time, 430
Illusion, why it is powerful, 358
Illusionists, Disney, 115
Illusions, have a reality of their own, 504
Image, Mother, in programming, 359
Imagery for safe rooms, 495
Imagery, 458
Images, abstract, 124
Images, idealized, of thinness, cause problems, 337
Images, programming, magical & satanic, 248
Images, removal of progrmg images, 471
Images, used in hypnosis, 38
Imagination, as a foundation, 354
Imagineering, Disney, 106
Imagineers, Disney, 116
Iminodibenzyls, 27
Immersion Corp., 185
Immigrants, many programmed, 4
Immortality, 140
Implant research, 142
Implant sites, diagrams, 148-158
Implant solutions, 462
Implant victims, 3 typical reviewed, 143-144
Implant, 2020 Neural Chip Implant, title pg. chp. 6
Implant, Belldame Torture device, 172
Implant, Suicide, 172
Implant, microchip, needed to buy or sell, 309
Implants associated w/ crimes, 164
Implants, "Alien", 184
Implants, 137-186, 357
Implants, Audio, 159-163
Implants, Body manipulating, 164
Implants, Torture-Muscle Stim., 171-172
Implants, Tracking, 172-174
Implants, Visual, 164-168
Implants, body suits, 139, 147
Implants, brain stem, 308
Implants, can make victim dissociative, 171
Implants, de-activation of, 462
Implants, dealing with, 461-463
Implants, electronic, 42
Implants, for behavior mod., 164
Implants, in Sweden, 301
Implants, in alien abductions, 184-185
Implants, liquid crystals, 183
Implants, nasal, 147
Implants, no. of components, 144
Implants, on DuPont heir, 334
Implants, power source, 144
Implants, seen on x-rays, 170
Implants, to change DNA growth, 164
Implants, to stop estrogen, 164
Implex Com 12 implant, 162
Important thinking often not known by conscious mind,

515
Imprinting Early Experience & the Developmental *Psychobiology of Attachment*, 427
Imprinting brain priorities, 518
Imprinting of 1st brain, 515
Imprinting of cult mother figure to survival, 515
Imprinting of mid-brain, 424
Imprinting, 236-237, 424, 427, 514
Imprinting, parent-young of humans, 427
In the Palaces of Memory, 186
In vitro fertilization, 309
InVest, 105
Inconsistent behaviors, 410
Independent American spirit, 382
India's flag with a wheel, 268
India, 19th cent. use of hypnotism, 37
India, 207, 230, 299
Indian spirit guides, 260
Indiana, 222, 304
Indiana, DUM base, 304
Indianapolis, IN, 222, 283
Indians, American, bloodlines, 7-8
Indoctrination, 267
Indonesia, 72
Induction to power implants, 144
Induction, hypnotic by electronics, 181
Inductions, hypnotic, 57, 181
Ineraid implant, 162
Inferno, network, 172
Infighting of Network, 109
Infiltration by Illum. into particular Chr. denom., 259
Infinity sign, 125
Information Unlimited, 143
Information on the mind, suppressed for centuries, 473
Information, gleaning worthwhile from others, 448
Infra-sound attacks, 182
Infrared coding, 168
Infrared detection of people by satellite, 503
Infrared waves, associated with thoughts, 179
Infusion pumps, 172
Ingersoll, 93
Initial Questionnaire, 347
Initiate system, role in mind-control, 245
Injuries, to head, 209
Inner Circle, Chinese Martial Arts, 209
Inner Circle, Cranial Manip. Mind controllers, 212, 223, 225
Innsbruck, Austria, 162
Insanity demon, 484
Insects, 392
Inserter, pneumatic for arrays, 166
Inside the Company: CIA Diary, 3
Inside the Mouse, 115, 121
Insomnia, 205, 348
Insomnia, suggestions for, 348
Inspector General, memo to DCI of CIA, Title pg. intro
Instinct not to kill, 194
Instincts of a person, 237
Instincts, manipulation of, 35
Institut fur Genetik, Free Univ. of Berlin, Ger., 235
Institute of Hygiene & Epidemiology, Czech, 235
Institutional control of front, 245
Integration, 327, 354, 429, 430, 463-464, 495
Integration, can be done by the Eternal Light, 429
Integration, can feel like death, 464
Integration, dangers of, 327
Integration, hurdles to, 464
Integration, issues around, 430
Integration, misperceptions about, 327
Integration, of two alters, 354
Integration, primary block is programming, 464
Integration, understanding, 463-464
Intell-connection secret paper on implants, title pg. chp. 6
Intelligence Community, interested in zombies, 7
Intelligence agencies, destroying Amer., 65
Intelligence, American, 111
Intelligence, many from Yale, Harvard & Princeton, 298
Intention system, of mind, 39-40
Interface Devices, 169
Interject disks, 264-265
Internal Information, how to get i. info, 465
Internal Programmer alters, 199
Internal Protector alters, 198
Internal Self Helper, ISH, 260, 480
Internal Self Helper, locked up, 260
Internal Self-Helper ISH, hiding of, 263-264
Internal Wall alters, 199
Internal big screen, 122
Internal clock, see Clocks, internal
Internal codes, given by singing trees, 119
Internal computers, 514
Internal information, how perceived by various alters, 467
Internal information, list of articles that deal with, 465
Internal library, 481, 482
Internal persecutor alters, 422
Internal rhymes, 480
Internal rooms, 199
Internal self-helpers, ISH, 424
Internal spells, cast by Maleficia, 483
Internal trumpets, 484
Internal world, how to help victim see it, 467
Internal world, objects of, 489
Internal world, seeing it, 465
Internal worlds, can be shifted, 471
Internal, rivers, 129
Internalization of external people, 4 times listed, 510
Internalizing of dead child encouraged, 262
International Alliance of Theatrical Stage Empl., 110

International Bearer Bonds, 105
International Catholic Youth Federation, CIA, 299
International Children's School, South Burlington, VT, 300
International Children's School, U.N., 300
International Children's Summer Camp, 300
International Confederation of Free Trade Unions (ICFTU) CIA, 299
International Falls, MN, 118
International Federation of Journalists, CIA, 299
International Federation of Multiple Sclerosis Soc., 103
International Journal of Neuroscience, 179
International Police Academy, Wash. D.C., CIA, 299
International banking, Tit.pg.chp1, 286
Internet, 67, 222
Interrogation of POW, analogy, 340
Interstate 4, 98
Interviews, of people close to victim, 336
Intimidation, 278-279
Intravenous tubes (hypnotically done) for twinning, 509
Introduction to Part 2 of Deeper Insights book, 322-323
Intrusive language or skills, 336
Invaders From Mars, 97
Inventory of Biographical information, 416-419
Investors from Chicago in Columbia Pict., 93
Invocation of My Demon Brother, movie, 119
Iodoacetic acid, 240
Ionic crystalline structures in skull, 219
Ionization properties of drugs, 25
Ionizing particles, 240
Ionizing radiation, 234, 235
Ionosphere, 144
Ions, heavy, 240
Ions, in brain, manipulation, 179
Iowa, 230
Ippolito, Joey, Jr., 65-66
Ipsissimis Illuminati level, 521
Ipsissimus, 289
Ipsissimis alters, 412
Iran Contra, 107
Iranians, falsely blamed by American handlers, 461
Ireland, 86, 109
Iridium, in brain, 138
Iris scans, 173
Irritability, 205
Irvine, CA, 28
Isaiah, 473
Isigny, France, 89
Island of Atlantis, 116
Isolation Tank Programming, 301
Isolation booths, 472
Isolation programming, 387
Isolation, 279-280
Isolation, feelings of, 409
Isolation, routine strategy, 372
Israel, 159
Israel, ancient nation, 435, 460
Israel, finding its identity after Egyptn. slavery parallels recovery, 460
Israel, patriarch, 388
It's a Small World attraction, 113
It's a Small World song, 114
It's a Small World, for programming, 113, 115
Ito, Judge, 66
Iwerks, Ub, 77, 79, 111
JAMA Journal of the American Med. Assoc., 66, 219
JANAP 299, 54
JANUS programming, 303
Jacinth, 190
Jack Sprat, 59
Jack and Jill, 59
Jack, Be Nimble, 59
Jackson, MS, V.A., 301
Jackson, Michael, 121
Jacob's Ladder, 221, 240
Jacob's Ladder, 457
Jacob's ladder, programming term, 456
Jacobson, J.I., 179
Janicot, name for High Self, 257
Janis, Irving L., 298
Jansen Pharmaceutica NV unit, 168
Janus as wind, 131
Janus, 279
Janus-Alex programming, 58
Japan, 1, 72, 73, 75, 214, 231
Japanese Cranial skills, 214
Japanese Martial arts, 206
Japanese Secret societies, 213
Japanese research into structure-traits, 227
Japanese, falsely blamed by American handlers, 461
Jargon, intelligence, 54
Jars, used for captured souls by Illuminati, 265
Jasper, 190
Jealousy, used in twin programming, 509
Jean, name for High Self, 257
Jeans, dream research, 442
Jehovah's Witness worldview, 245
Jehovah's Witnesses, 55, 121, 397
Jerusalem, 395
Jerusalem, the New J., attributes of, 365
Jesuit Infinity Program, 62
Jesuit member of Church of Set, 289
Jesuits, 62, 255
Jesus Christ, 368, 396, 397, 400, 437, 485, 492, 493, 517, 521
Jesus Christ, ability to use stories, 464
Jesus Christ, always gave free will, 435
Jesus Christ, blood of, used in therapy, 472
Jesus Christ, sacrifice for us, 433
Jesus, cleansing the temple of money changers, 435

Jewelry, of codes, 57
Jewelry, use of, 257
Jicarilla Apaches, 313
Jicarilla Indian Reservation, 305
Jimsonweed, 27
Joan, name for High Self, 257
Jobs, new ones for alters, 468
Johannesburg, South Africa, 141, 167
John Hopkins Univ, Baltimore, MD, 235
John Hopkins Univ., Appl. Physics Lab, 5
John Hopkins University, MA, 5, 166, 238
John Moran Lab for Applied Vision..., U of UT, 166
John, E.R., 179
Johnny Mnemonic film, 169
Johnson and Johnson, 98, 168
Johnson, Stephen B.C., II, 20
Johnson, diagnostic eating disorder test, 339
Joint Chiefs of Staff, 288
Joker demon, 482
Jokers, internal, 374
Jones, C.B. Scott, 137
Jones, Dr. Edward Vincent, 232
Jones, Sir Robert, 215
Jones, research, 160
Jonet, name for High Self, 257
Jordan, Debby, 185
Joseph, patriarch, 191, 388, 440
Josiah Macy Foundation, 70
Josiah Macy, Jr., Foundation, 281
Journal of Abnormal Psychology, 442
Journal of Adolescent Health, 164
Journal of Nervous and Mental Disease, 143, 442
Journal of Neuroscience, 164
Journal of Physiology, 165
Journal of Scientific Exploration, 186
Journal of the Acoustical Society of America, 162
Journal of the American Medical Association (JAMA), 66
Journal of the Osteopathic Cranial Assoc., 229
Journal, benefit of, 376
Journaling, 351, 376, 402, 461, 470
Journalists, 68
Joy, 454
Jubal, 475
Judge alters, 495
Judgments on a system, 480
Judicial system, blind eye to Disneyland, 108
Judo, 206
Juices, fruit, 462
Julius, cartoon farm manager, 81
July 20, 2019, 186
Jung's theories, 412
Jung, Carl, 203, 235
Juniper oil, 36
Jurassic Park, film, 308
Justice Dept., 103
Justice System, dealing with the broken j.s., 469
Justice of God, 378
Justice system, internal, 364
Justice, 365, 367
Justice, attempts, 448
Jwing-Ming, Yang, 208

K-lines, 39-40, 174, 395, 511
K-lines, habitual ways of thinking, 353
KGB, 68, 297
KKK, 287, 306
Ka, term, 290
Kaballism, 252-253
Kabbalah, book, 252
Kabbalistic names of God, 253
Kahane, Benjamin B., 95
Kahn, Herman, 186
Kaiser Aluminum & Chemical Corporation, 310
Kaiser Aluminum News, 310
Kaiser Confrontation Program, 64
Kalahari Desert, 7
Kallman, Dr. Franz J., 281
Kandinsky, Wassily, 47
Kaneohe, HA, underground installation, 300
Kanoehe State Hospital, Oahu, HA, 300
Kansas City Star, 185
Kansas City Univ., 64
Kansas City, MO, 78, 283
Kansas DUM base, 304
Kansas Territory, 221
Kansas, 221, 304
Kantner, Paul, 290
Karaoke, used to access slaves, 325
Karat cat goddess
Karate, 206
Karate, programming for a alter, 38
Karma, theory, 392
Katmandu, Nepal 308
Katrina, Queen, 275
Katzenberg, Jeffrey, 89, 105, 106, 107, 121
Kauai, HA, 300
Kawata, K., 169
Keeloq hopping-code technology, 168
Keeneland Race Course, 300
Keeper of the Flame, fraternity, 49
Keeper of the Mirror, demon, 201
Keeper of the Tree alter, 131
Keepers of the Jewells, 483
Kelly AFB, 297
Kelly, John, 13
Kennan spy satellites, 503
Kennecott Copper Co., 306
Kennecott Mine, SLC, UT, 306

Kennedy Illuminati family, 109
Kennedy, John F., 72, 109
Kennedy, Joseph P., 93, 109
Kennedy, Robert, 72
Kennesaw Mountain, GA, 304
Kent, England, 235
Kentucky State Horse Park, 300
Kentucky, 300
Kern River, CA, 303
Kerrville, TX, V.A., 301
Kethuboth of the Talmud, 488
Kety, Seymour Solomon, 281
Key front alters, assigned diamonds, 271
Key of Solomon (aka *Legemeton*), 257
Keyhole-11 (KH-11) satellite, 503
Keys, as signals, 60
Khrushchev, Nikita, 113
Kick-It-Back Program, 64
Kicking the Fear Habit, 343
Kidder, Peabody & Co., 96
Kidnapped Children, lost at Disney amusement parks, 115
Kidnapped of children, portrayed, 120
Kilgore, Merle, High Priest, Church of Satan, 284
Kilgore, Steve, 284
Killers, for NWO, 280
Killing factors weighed in mind, 195
Killing, training for, 92
Kimball, Ward, 77
Kimbrell, Andrew, 307
Kindness liberates the hardened joints of life, 434
Kindshi, Jack, 283
King Arthur Carousel Horses, 116
King David, 286
King David, descendants, 286
King Hamlin, cartoon character, 86
King Saul, 191
King Solomon, 286
King of Belgium, 72
King of Denmark, 72
King's Chamber story, 272
Kingdom of Dreams, ruled by Trojan, 445
Kingdom of Gods, internal programming, 124
Kingdom of Heaven, 368
Kingdom of Satan, 132-133
Kingfish, nickname of Bakker, 118
Kingman, AZ, 303
Kingpins, of Illuminati, Adrenchr. use, 36
Kinnecome group, 175
Kinsley, KS, 304
Kintner, 98
Kirkland, AFB, 177
Kirksville Osteopathic College, MO, 222
Kirtland AFB, NM, 300, 305
Kirtland Munitions Storage Complex, NM, 305
Kiss of Shame, 484
Kitten alters, 62, 254
Klamath Falls, OR, 305
Kleinknecht, C. Fred, 282
Kleinsmid, Rufus B. von, 93
Kline, Dr. Nathan, 281
Klotilde, demon, 483
Kluver, Heinrich, 263
Knight of the East & West, 191
Knight of the Holy Sepulcher, 20
Knight, J.Z., 163, 268
Knight, J.Z., followers of, 268
Knight, J.Z., mind controlled slave, 268
Knight, Stephen, 278-279
Knights Templars, 2, 205
Knights of Malta, 94
Knights of the Round Table, 314
Knives, given to child to play with, 261
Knochenartz, bonesetting in Ger., 213
Knocheneinrichter, 213
Knochers, spirits, 483
Knott's Berry Farm, 116
Knoxville, IA, V.A., 301
Koko the Clown, 91
Kool aid, red, fears of, 343
Kopin, Dr. Irwin J., 25
Koppel, banker, 286
Korb, Lawrence, 7
Korean War, 195
Korim, Dr., 283
Koslow, Marvin, 95
Kraft, William A., 20
Krazy Cat, cartoons, 91
Krippner, Stanley, 441
Kroger, Dr. William, 269-270
Krugman, Herbert, 279
Kuala Lumpur, China, 208
Kundalini, 129
Kung Fu, 204, 206-208
Kunia, HA, NSA listening post, 300
Kurylowicz, Ronald, 213
Kutu, demon, 480

L-5 Society, 188
L-Tryptophan, 351
L.A. CIA drug running, 4
L.A. Hillside Strangler, 2
L.A. Times, 76, 169
L.A.'s USC County Hospital, 232
L.U.C.I.D., 172-173
LDS Seventies, 218
LDS church, 218
LSD programming, 28, 30-35, 55, 66
LSD programming, Canada, 301

LSD trip, 129
LSD trip, second core trauma, in sensory depr. tank, 431
LSD trips, for programming, 1
LSD trips, used to capture ISH, 264
LSD, for sexual programming, 34
LSD, guided programming trip, 123
LSD, setting the stage for p. use., 31
LSD, with mirrors for prgmg, 32
La Bas, 499
La Quinta Inns, 112
LaCrosse spy satellites, 503
LaVey's MTV slave video, 284
LaVey's doctrines, 487
LaVey, 496
LaVey, Anton at NORAD, 285
LaVey, Anton's son, 284
LaVey, Anton, 60, 118, 283-286, 358, 411
LaVey, Anton, as a programmer, 284-285
LaVey, Karla, 284
LaVey, Zeena, 284
LaVey, called Uncle Anton, 284
LaVey, close relationship with police, 284-285
LaVey, cover appearance, 284
Lab. of Clinical Science, NIMH, 25
Labelling, illegal, of wines, 105
Labels by therapeutic community not helpful, 511
Labor leaders, 68
Labs, 236
Laemmle, Carl, 95, 111
Lafayette, LA, 20
Lake Buena Vista, FL, 222
Lake Holden, FL, 98
Lake Norconian, CA, 94
Lake Ontario, 301
Lake Superior, 304
Lamas, high degree, 210
Lambda radiation, affects on DNA, 240
Lambert, Michael T.
Lammer, Helmut, 185
Lancashire, England, 215, 216
Lance, spiritual lance, 437
Land, tactics Disney uses to get, 100
Land-grabbing of Disney, nature of, 112
Lande, brain research, 237
Landgrabbing tactics, of Disney, 100
Landmark Lands Co., Inc., 287
Lanello, spirit, 50
Langauges, magical, for programmg, 62
Langley, VA, 298
Language of deprogramming, to give back humanness, 460
Language, for programming, 42, 189, 192, 247
Language, in structuring, 189
Language, offensive, for programming, 42
Languages, used in systems, 55
Lap-top computers, 193
Laparoscope, 309
Larch Mountain, OR, 305, 313
Las Vegas, NV, 93, 283
Laser Documentation Program, 64
Laser Documentation, secret radiation file, 234
Laser Light Distortions Experiments, secret radiation file, 234
Laser Ray Guns, for sale, 143
Laser Technology, of IllumiNations, 102
Laser listening devices, 143
Laserlight Technology experiments, secret radiation file, 234
Lasers, for surveillance, 278
Lasers, for tunnel construction, 302
Lateral geniculate nucleus, 165
Latin America, 95-96
Latin, 62
Latter Day Saints LDS, 218, 306
Laundering, money, 70
Laundry hampers, used for isolation, 472
Laura implant, 162
Laurel, MD, 101
Lavender oil, 36
Law enforcement officers, dirty, 36, 371
Law enforcement, 503
Law enforcement, cannot be trusted, 371
Law enforcement, kept Adrenalchrome secret, title pg. chp. 3
Law of Consecration, Mormon, mocked, 306
Law of Moses, 493
Law, how religious legalism kills spiritually, 493
Lawnmower man, film, 186
Lawrence, Patti, 299
Lawrenceville School, 104
Lawyers, for O.J. Simpson, 66
Lawyers, tips for looking for one, 469
Lawyers, understanding them, 469
Layering of programming, 126
Layering of witches/monster scripts, 261
Laytonsville, MD, 304
Lazarus, 366
Le Sacre du Printemps, 97
Lead shields, 462
Leadbeater, C.W. 33°, title pg. chp. 10
League of Nations, 94, 95
Lear, Dr., 184
Learning difficulties, 405
Learning sequences, and drugs, 236
Learning, a building step by step process, 400
Learning, building process, 249
Learning, how we learn, 400
Learning, neural level, 511
Learning, step by step process, 127

Lebanon, MO, 304
Lebanon, OR, 462
Lee, Brandon, 209
Lee, Bruce, 208
Lee, designer of chin. implant, 162
Left eye trauma, title pg. chp. 2
Left hand path, term, 290, 388
Legal loop-holes allowing Satan to attack, 368
Legge, Judge, 289
Lemme, David R., 223
LendVest Mortgage Inc., 105
Lenin, 70
Lens-Reverse-Angle Program, 64
Leo, astrological sign, 190
Leon, Carlos, 74
Leonard, 37
Leopard, LaVey's, 283
Leopard, can't change spots, 237
Leraikka, (Leraje), demon, 483
Leraje, Demon, 483
Leroy, LA, 20
Lesser Key of Solomon (aka *Goetia*), 193, 257
Lessing, Gunther, 81, 97
Lethe, 477-478
Letter, by Aquino, a programmer, 292, 293
Letterman Medical Center, near Presideo, CA, 294
Level 1, CIA Mind Control, 16
Level 2, CIA Mind Control, 16
Level 3, CIA Mind Control, 16-17
Level 4, CIA Mind Control, 17
Level 5, CIA Mind Control, 17
Levels of Participation, Chart, title pg. chp. 5
Levels, CIA mind-control, 5, 16-17
Leviathan, 290
Leviathan, demon, 129, 415
Levinson Transform, 183
Levinson, Norman, 183
Levitation, 210
Leviton, H.L., 442
Lewis, Dr. Nolan D.C., 281
Lewis, James, 290
Lewis, Jerry Lee, mug shot, title pg. chp. 12
Lewis, Rosi. Grand Master, 205
Lexington, KT programming facility, 281
Lexington, KT, 300
Li Bai, 207
Li Illuminati family, 208
Li family, 207
Li, 235
Li, Junxie, 207
Li, Twelfth Sister, 207
Liberty, how protected by 5th Amdmt., 174
Liboff, Dr. Abraham, 178
Librarian, in castle, internal, 467
Library, internal, 481, 482
License plates, used for access codes, 279
Lieblings of Dr. Mengele, 278
Lies, coordinated by secret group, 4
Lies, problems associated with, 65
Life force from Lucifer, 199
Life force of fetus in tree roots, 200
Life force, to be taken in film, 121
Life of St. Margaret of Cortona, 255
Life, 364
Life, experiencing, breaks down deeper programmg, 245
Life, giving life, 367
Life, has a force of its own, 473
Life, seen as a riddle, 1
Life-force, 425-433
Life-force, regulation of, 424
Light and color, for programming, 270
Light, at pyramid top, 33
Light, flickering, 270
Light, green, eternal life force, 191
Lightening, in *Fantasia*, 127
Lightening, internal, 131, 482
Lights, flashing colored, 270
Lights, flashing sequences, 62
Lights, of car brakes, used to access slaves, 325
Lights, used for programming, 124
Likeness of God, 493
Lilies, in Illum. ritual, 130
Lilith, 192
Lillian Disney Trust, 90
Lillith Grotto, NY, 284
Lilly, John C., 28, 31-34
Limbaugh, Rush, 134
Limbic system, connected to 1st brain, 515
Limbo, computer language, 172
Limbo, internal, 479
Limits, setting in regards to treatment, 327
Limits, time to therapy, 328
Limousine drivers, reports from, 138
Lin, designer of chin. implant, 162
Lincoln Savings & Loan scandal, 104
Lincoln, Abraham, 217
Lincoln, NE, V.A., 301
Lincolnshire, 215
Lindsay, John, 106
Lindsey, Robert, 143
Lindstrom, Dr. Peter, 143
Line upon line, precept upon precept, 511
Lines, as codes, 55
Linkletter, Art, 72
Lion & unicorn, 131
Lion King, critics of, 134
Lion alters, 38
Lion king, 107
Lion, nubion, Togare, 283

Lions, used in programming, 23
Lipid solubility, 25
Lippard, George, 217
Lippert, Ronald, 281
Liquid crystals, 183
Listening Devices, 138
Listening Post, NSA, AK, 142
Little Bo-Beep, 59
Little Red Riding Hood & Betty Boop, 56
Littlejohn, James, 220
Litvack, Sanford Martin, 106
Liver, 348
Livermore, 117
Living Magical Arts, book, 498
Lizard King, 282
Llano Facility, Palmdale, CA, 303
Llewellyn, 7
Lloyd's of London, 173
Locke, 399
Lockhead Sanders, 6
Lockhead Underground Facility, 303
Lockhead-Sanders, 281
Lockup of the Guardian Angel, 260
Loew, Fritz, 77
Loew, Marcus, 111
Logan, Charles H., 12
Logic alters, 501
Logic demon, 482
Logic, 398
Logic, used by front computers, 271
Logical alters, 355
Loma Linda University Med. Ctr., 185
Loma Linda University Med. School, CA, 180, 281
London Bridge, 59
London, U.K., 70, 162, 173, 214, 215, 283, 424
Loneliness, 454
Loneliness, result of prgmg isol., 249
Look alikes, 312
Look magazine, 96
Loompanics, 279
Lord of Illusion, film, 265
Loretta Lynn, 260
Los Alamos & Disney, 115
Los Alamos 1993 Conference, 5
Los Alamos National Labs, 177
Los Alamos, NM, 282, 300, 305
Los Angeles, CA, 114, 231, 283, 303
Los Gatos, CA, 230
Los Niños children, 68
Loss of sleep, effect on CSF, 228
Losses, are reframed by Illum. philosophy as a refolding, 450
Lost time, 410
Louisiana, 20
Louisville, KT, 283
Lourdes, France, 74
Love and acceptance, a need, 448
Love fantasy alters, how created, 389
Love of God, 378
Love, and protection issues for males, 360
Love, consequences of not receiving, 500
Love, demon to prevent real love, 483
Love, does not seek its own, 434
Love, innate need for by baby exploited, 427
Love, lack of, consequences, 247
Love, responsible for grieving process, 252
Love-hate relationship, programmed into Monarch twins, 509
Lovers, use sense of smell, 393
Low pressure percussive water jet tunnel constr., 302
Low-Intensity Conflict and Modern Tech..., 178
Low-frek measuring devices, 180
Lowenhertz Dogo Argentino dogs, 233
Lowenstein, Dr., 283
Lower Goose Lake, Oakley, ID, 304
Lowerarchy, term, 194
Loyal-to-vows part of mind, 189
Loyalty Test Ritual, 261
Loyalty to mother figure imprinted with survival instincts, 516
Luca abduction, with Andreasson, 184
Lucas, George, 116, 120
Lucent Technologies, 172
Lucid dreams, 443
Lucifer Dethroned, 211
Lucifer Rising, film, 118
Lucifer computer code, 173
Lucifer, 191, 191, 259, 270, 272, 364, 401, 435, 473, 475, 479, 482, 484, 496
Lucifer, Fall of, 401
Lucifer, does he exist?, 496
Lucifer, head of system, 364
Lucifer, life force from him, 191
Luciferian doctrine, 401, 487, 488
Luciferian form of demons taken in film, 132
Luciferian gnosticism, 401
Luciferian logic, 377
Luciferian rituals, 481
Luciferians, control Freemasonry, 482
Ludlow, CA, 303
Lullaby music, 41-42
Lurie, research, 160
Luteinizing hormone, 309
Lutheran Church, 522
Luxembourg, 105
Lying, way of life for CIA, 3
Lysozyme enzymes, 348

MAGI, Math. Applications Group, Inc., 120

MARC ID, 174
MCA, 107, 111
MCP, of Tron movie, 120
MEMS, 168
MGM Wizard of Oz material, 102
MGM, 93, 102, 120
MI-5, British Intell, 254
MI-6, 67, 256, 312
MI-6, use of Illuminati queens, 298
MIT, 106, 140, 188, 235
MJTF Multijurisdictional Task Force, 300
MK NAOMI, 3
MK ULTRA, ttle pg.intro, 3, 300
MKULTRA files, title pg. intro
MMPI, 335
MOSAP, 305
MP, of Australia, 103
MPD (DID) needed to survive Illuminati rituals, 498
MPD/DID, amnesia walls, 311
MRI tests, 205, 223, 228
MRI, full body, 463
MSG, 107
MTV, 60
MUFON, 282
MUM Mountain, CA, 230
MXM auditory implant, 162
MacIntryre, Malcolm, 111
MacVicar, study of, 295
Machines, thought controlled, 281
Macho King, 280
Mackay, R.S., 173
Mackey, A., 218
Maclaine, Shirley, 103
Macrobiotics, 206
Macy, Josiah Jr., Foundation, 281
Macy, Josiah, Foundation, 70
Mad Hatter Teacups, 116
Madame Gong Sun, 207
Madonna, 74
Madras, OR, 462
Mafia & Walt Disney, 111
Mafia (mob), 62, 65-66, 81, 82, 87, 88, 91, 92, 96, 104, 106, 107, 372
Mafia National Meetings, 109
Mafia agenda, 109
Mafia alliances, 109
Mafia crime bosses, 109
Mafia five year plan, 110
Mafia long-range plans, 109
Mafia yearly conclave, 109
Mafia's NCS Council of 9, 111
Mafia, 62, 65-66, 81, 82, 87, 88, 91, 92, 96, 104, 106, 107, 372
Mafia, and military, 297
Mafia, carry out assassinations for Illuminati, 372
Magic & Mystery in Tibet, 210
Magic Castle, a comedy warehouse, 116
Magic Circle, of LaVey's, 118
Magic Mascara, term in ad, 276
Magic books, secret, biblical references to, 491
Magic mirror, 100
Magic paraphernalia, biblical references to, 491
Magic programming, 64
Magic seminars, of LaVey, 283
Magic spells, herbal charms
Magic, Crowley's, 400
Magic, best information, hoarded by Illuminati, 473
Magic, highest, 264-265
Magical alters, 199
Magical terms, used to explain life by victim, 448
Magician, slight of hand analogy, 489
Magickal training, 44
Magna Mater, goddess, 273
Magna Mater, how it is a pun, 273
Magnetic Stimulation in Clinical Neurophysiology, 186
Magnetic field, earth's, 179, 183
Magnetic field, pico Tesla, 179
Magnetic field, steady-state, 179
Magnetic fields, how detected by animals, 183
Magnetic fluctuations & human thinking, 179
Magnetic healing, 220
Magnetite, in human brains, 183
Magnets, repelled from cranium, 182
Magnin, E.'s grandfather, 79
Magnin, Edgar, 79
Magothy River, 299
Magristralis Grotto, Amsterdam, Netherlands, 283
Magus of *Lucifer Rising*, 119
Magus, only wants to achieve his goals, 475
Maharishi University, Fairfield, IO, 230
Maiden rock band, 60
Maiden, Mother, Crone triad, triple goddess, 121, 275, 412
Maimonides, 231
Main Street, Disneyland, 106
Maine, 300
Maintenance programs, tests of, 297
Make Mine Music, 97
Malcolm X, 140
Malebolge, 477
Malebranche, demon, 483
Malebrinche, Demon, 132, 477
Maleficent, witch in Sleeping Beauty, 132
Maleficia, demon, 483
Maleficia, term, 132
Males, identity destroyed, 360
Males, stripped of their natural protectiveness, 360
Malibu, CA, 98
Maliner, Maj. Beverly I., 223
Malphas, demon, 483

Maltby family, 215
Mammon, demon, 483
Mammoth Cave analogy of mind-control subject, 522
Man, Dr., 185
Man, is in the image (clone) of God, 245, 255
Manassas Battle Site, 112
Manassas, battlefield site, 297
Mandala (virtual reality authoring system), 186
Mandragora plant, 27
Mandrake, 27
Manhattan, NY, 110, 286
Manic-depressive symptoms, due to poor CSF flux., 228
Mann, Dennis, 288
Mannequin, for transference work, 507
Manning, Jeane, 177
Mansfield, Jayne, 284-285
Mansfield, Jayne, obsessed with color pink, 285
Manson, Charles (Charlie), 411
Mantel-Haenszel procedure, 164
Mantle Clock, enchanted, 119
Manual on Human Resources, 253
Manuscripts, ancient, Illuminati, 216
Manzano Mountain, NM, 305
Mapping of implants on body, 462
Mapping, benefits of, 470
Mapping, by therapists, 362
Mapping, of system, 470-471
Maps of implants on a body, 148-158
Maps, retinal, 166
Maps, visual, created for sight, 165
Maravec, Hans, 140
Marax, demon, 483
Marbas, demon, 483
Marbod, Eric Von, 297
Marceline, Missouri, 78, 83
Marchosias, demon, 483
Mare Crisis, alter, 445
Mare Frigoris, alter, 445
Mare Imbrium, 445
Mare Nectaris, 445
Mariboe, William, 227
Marietta, GA, 304
Marijuana, 212, 396
Marijuana, forbidden to slaves, 212
Marin Ecumenical Housing Assn., 95
Marina Del Rey, CA, 213
Mark of the Beast, 172, 209, 481
Mark, 66
Marlborough Illuminati family, 281
Marmer, S.S., 442
Marrazzi, Dr. Amedeo S., 281
Marriage, in *Fantasia* movie, 130
Marriages, arranged, portrayed, 120
Marrs, Texe, 172-173
Mars, 48
Marsalin, MD, 20
Marshland, deep internal, 478
Martial Arts Expert, story of, 187
Martial Law training, 304
Martial arts, 203-204, 206-209
Martial law, 58
Martin, Dea, 282
Martin, Harry V., 134
Martin, brain research, 237
Martinez, James Monroe, 282
Marx, 70
Maryland DUM bases, 304
Maryland Psychiatric Research Ctr., 28
Maryland, 75, 299, 304
Masers, 175, 182
Mask brace, over head, 265
Masked Balls, of Illuminati, 357
Masks, 392
Masks, Gypsy, 69
Masks, Illum., 69
Masks, thrown away, 454
Mason Receivers, 463
Mason family, 215
Masonic - NASA connection, 282
Masonic Rituals, secret sexual, 498
Masonic Temples, 498
Masonic hand signals, 62-63
Masonic lodges, early, use of hypn., 37
Masonic ritual garments, 480
Masonic ritual with nude boys, Masonic artwork, title pg. chp. 10
Masonic symbology, 265
Masonic temples, 49
Masonry Defined, 218
Masonry, 218
Masons, List of Hollywood Freemasons, 95
Mass Program, 64
Mass Spectrotography, 463
Mass, Catholic, satanic reversal of, 62
Massachusetts Dept. of Corrections, title pg. chp. 6
Massachusetts General Hospital, 28
Massachusetts, 164-165, 166, 220, 281, 304
Massage to help body memories, 280
Massage, for body memories, 396
Masseuse, as member of a support team, 415
Master Programmers, recreated in victim, 199
Master erasure codes, 520
Master, programming themes toward (love & fear), 426
Master, slave's love for, 329
Mateland, 283
Maternal instincts, manipul. of, 35
Mathematical Applications Group, Inc. MAGI, 120
Mathers, MacGregor, 97
Mating instincts, 237

Matterhorn Mtn, Disneyland, 115
Matthews family, 214
Maturation process stopped, 244
Mature thinking, 476
Maturity of alters, 476
Max Planck Institute, Munich, Germany, 13, 36
Max-Plank Institute für Verhaltensphysiologie, Ger., 164
May Day, 27
Maybelline Mind Control Ad, 276-277
Mayday Book, 54
Mayer, Louis B., 111
Maynard, MA, 304
Mazes, how to deal with, 472
Mazes, shrinking them, 472
McCatty, Ronald R., 212, 223, 229
McClean, Douglas, 95
McCone, John, 283
McCook, NE, 304
McDaniels, Dr., 164
McDonald-Ft. Bragg Drug Smuggling Case, 66
McDonnell-Douglas, Llano Facility, CA, 303
McGill University, Montreal, 201
McGill, Ormond, 8
McGinniss, Joe, 66
McGovern, Lowell, 103
McKay, Charles, 283
McKinnel, Robert Gilmore, 309
McLean, VA, 181
McMoneagle, Joe, 281
McMurtry, Major Grady, 289
McNair, 26
Me, concept of this, with emotional constructrs, 424
Meaninglessness, 244
Mechanics of DNA Replication & Recombination, 170
Mechanisms of Memory, 179
Med-El implant, 162
MedTech, 186
Medellin drug cartel, 105
Media Spotlight, 134
Media coverage, of SRA, muted, 288
Media, establishment, cannot be trusted, 371
Media, impressions over time, 99
Media, used to access slaves, 325
Medial Prefrontal Cortex, MpFC, 164
Mediator Response Program, 64
Medical Advisory Committee, NY, 220
Medical File code numbers, 64
Medical Fringe & Medical Orthodoxy, 215
Medical supervision, needed for deprogramming end-time prgrms, 459
Medical team needed to get core, 518
Medicine In Chinese Cultures, 208
Meditation, 40-41, 498
Meditation, waves of, 174
Medulla, 424
Meetings, high level, Illum., 65
Megabrain, 144, 186
Melatonin, 164
Melbourne, Australia, 163
Melchom, demon, 483
Melchom, understand the Grand Druid Council, 483
Mellon Bank, 112
Melnick, Dan, 106
Melodyland, 117
Melting memory, 249
Member Information...Cranial Academy, 225
Membranes of skull, 228
Memex Implants, 169
Memex experiments, 142

MEMORY TOPICS
Memories, and sleep, 348-351
Memories, bad, dumped into bubbles, 132
Memories, being evoked, 444
Memories, braiding of, 130
Memories, called dreams in Oz movie, 119
Memories, cover, 335
Memories, dealing with, 449
Memories, erasure of, 471
Memories, false, 249
Memories, how the mind remembers, 393
Memories, linked to trance levels, 449
Memories, of client, 340-341
Memories, overemphasis on whether real or false, 385-386
Memories, placing on a screen, 355, 449
Memories, shrinking and storing in a box, 449
Memories, state of, contribute to transference, 506
Memories, surfacing, 374
Memories, trance level they occur at, 457
Memories, trauma, 248, 392
Memories, used to control and scare alters, 446
Memories, washing of, 471
Memories, waves of, 174
Memorization, required of scripts, 261
Memory & the Thalamus/Cortex, 174
Memory enhancement, 29
Memory flashbacks, 403
Memory work, 24 hours a day, 394
Memory work, 386, 394, 403
Memory, 17, 28, 249, 250, 311-312 415, 444, 449
Memory, Anatomy of, chart of, 250
Memory, Overwriting techniques, 17
Memory, Phases of, 28
Memory, can be lost due to pain, 415
Memory, childhood vs adult, 249
Memory, cognitive and effective, 449
Memory, demonic false, 271
Memory, drug, abreaction of, 327
Memory, dynamic and holographic, 311-312

Memory, eidetic, 249
Memory, holographic, 248
Memory, nested, 17
Memory, photographic, 249
Memory, pre-puberty area rewritten, 17
Memory, stored holographically in brain, 311
Memory, transfer capabilities, 311
Memphis, north, TN, title pg. App. 1
Men are from Mars, Women are from Venus, 354
Men, hide from light, for their deeds are evil, 366
Menen, Aubrey, 133
Mengele, Dr. Joseph, 47-48, 53, 59, 124, 171, 213, 214, 252, 278, 411, 483
Menlo Park, CA, 235
Mennonites, infiltration by Illum., 259
Mensa Programming, 62
Menstrual & sexual rhythms, 183
Mental Hospital, used for programming, drawing of tunnels, title pg. App. 2
Mental Hygiene, cover for mind-control, 186
Mental Institutions, 11
Mental processes, best, not conscious to people, 188
Mental rehearsing for new tasks, 468
Mentor Divisible Program, 64
Menzies, William Cameron, 97
Mercury, 48
Mercy, of God, 493
Merit cigarette ad, 275
Merovingian bloodline, 80, 97
Mesmerism in India & its Practical Applications...,37
Mesmerism, 217
Messages on answering machines, used to access slaves, 325
Messages, filtered down the alter grapevine, 511
Messages, sent by Network, 196
Metabolism, of crabs, 183
Metallic implants, 462
Metatron, 273
Methaqualone, 27
Methyl methanesulfonate MMS, 239
Metro Pictures, 111
Metronidazole, aka Flagyl, 240
Mexican mafia, title pg. chp. 6
Mexico, 215, 305
Mexico, title pg. chp. 1
Meyer, Cord, 283
Meyer, Kenny, 185
Meyers, Dr. R., 143
Miami, FL, V.A., 301
Mice cloning, 307
Michigan DUM bases, 304
Michigan, 101, 235, 304
Mickey Mouse Caps, 100
Mickey Mouse Clocks, 100
Mickey Mouse Club, 100
Mickey Mouse cartoons, 77, 79, 95
Mickey Mouse chinaware, 95
Mickey Mouse military cartoons, 113
Mickey Mouse programming, 100, 120
Mickey Mouse theme song, 100
Mickey Mouse watches, 93
Mickey Mouse, & hard rock, 74
Mickey Mouse, 32, 77, 79, 93, 95, 100, 111, 118, 126
Mickey Mouse, as sorcerer, 126
Mickey Mouse, origins of, 77
Mickey Mouse, programming benefits, 78
Mickey Mouse, term for silly, 100
Mickey Mouse, voice of, 77
Microbiology, analogy to spiritual war, 251
Microchip Technology (co.), 167-168
Microcontrollers, 167-168
Microelectromechanical systems MEMS, 168
Microphones, directional, 278
Microwave coding, 168
Microwave communications, White Sulphur Springs, WV, 306
Microwave frequencies, 180
Microwaves carrier waves modulated by ELF, 180
Microwaves, produce sounds, 176
Mid-brain, 424, 426
Midbrain, operant conditioning of, 194
Middle Ages, 191, 216
Middle earth, 63
Midler, Bette, 121
Midline bones in head, 211
Midos, gk. word, 48
Midway, KT, 300
Mighty Mouse, 73
Mikey, nickname for Lillith Sinclair, 294
Milbank, Tweed, Hadley, and McCloy, 113
Military Intelligence, 168, 288
Military Psychiatry: A Comparative Persp..., 241
Military Review, 288
Military base, used by TBS, 117
Military research, cranial, secret, 223
Military schools, 334
Military underground bases, 302-306
Milk, with Beta-Clor, 27
Milken, Michael & associates, 107
Milken, Michael, 88, 106, 107
Miller, Comm. John R., 283
Miller, Dr. Gary E., 283
Miller, Laurence, 209
Miller, Ron, (son-in-l. to W. Dsny.), 77, 87-88, 89
Miller, Ronald, 87
Milligan, William Stanley, 2
Milotte, Alfred, 98
Milotte, Elma, 98
Mind Tools, 186
Mind Wars, 186

Mind control, consequences of mistrust, 65
Mind control, is the heart beat of Lucifer, 488
Mind control, mentioned in Bible, 491
Mind control, widespread & perpetrated by the "finest", 447
Mind of programmed DID is complex, 376-377
Mind, ability to protect itself, 248
Mind, does most thinking without thinking about it, 465
Mind, how divided into natural parts, 187-188
Mind, how it creates a programmed reality, 358
Mind, how it protects itself, 386
Mind, its creativity, 489
Mind, its natural defenses, 438-439
Mind, uses previous patterns for learning, 127
Minds, help organize our perceptions, 489
Mineral King Resort, CA, 72
Minimizing, 438
Minister, Charismatic, using mind-control, 186
Ministers, Christian, why they are Illum., 69-70
Minsky, Marvin, 188
Mintz, Charles, 91, 93
Miracles, 252, 345
Miracles, expected by many to be instant & total, 519
Miracles, ins and outs, 331
Miraculous healings, pressures for, 328
Miramax, 73
Miranda, Dr., film character, 411

MIRROR TOPICS
Mirror demon of child, 481
Mirror image alters, 127, 130, 133, 479
Mirror image, not reflection but hypnotic view, 346
Mirror images, demon involved with, 480
Mirror images, part of twinning, 509
Mirror programming, 120
Mirror twins, 15
Mirrors around internal pyramid, 199
Mirrors, 119, 200-201, 476, 519
Mirrors, connect to other things, 472
Mirrors, how to deal with, 472
Mirrors, internal, of each dimension, 432
Mirrors, reconfiguration of, 466
Mirrors, structuring of, 200-201
Mirrors, with LSD, for prgrmg, 32
Misadventure of Merlin Jones, 108
Misdiagnoses, list of typical ones for DID (MPD), 335
Misdiagnosis, tips of, 335
Mishpucka alliances, 109
Mishpucka, 65, 79, 89, 94, 109, 110, 279
Miskamen, Paul, 2
Misperceptions about therapy, 326-329
Mission Completed Program, 64
Missouri DUM bases, 304
Missouri Institute of Psychology, 281
Missouri, 78, 82, 283, 288, 304
Mistake of calling the MPD/DID the problem, 393
Mistakes, are O.K., need for tolerance, 383
Mitomycin C, 239
Mitotic portions of cell cycle, 239
Mitre Corp., 177
Mob, 81, 82, 91, 96, 106, 107
Modern Bride, 102
Modesto, CA, title pg. chp. 12
Modulation of Neurotransmitter Function by Quantum Fields, 186
Mojacar, Corner of Enchantment, 83
Mojacar, Spain, 83-84
Molecular Cloning of Neural Genes, class, 238
Molecular Neurobiology, 238
Molecular computers, 170
Molecular lattice structures in brains, 171
Moles, can be implants, 167
Mombi, character, 119
Monarch butterfly, 126
Monarch, why term is appropriate, 432
Mondavi's winery, 89
Monde 2000, 134
Money issues, important to 1st brain, 514
Money laundering base, 300
Money laundering scripts, 59
Money laundering, 105, 110, 297, 501
Money laundering, by DSAA, 297
Monkey Alters, 196
Monkeys, flying, demons attached to them, 484
Monorail, 101
Monozygotic twins, 15
Monroe, James, 282
Monroe, Marilyn, 232, 284
Montana, 49
Montauk project, 334
Monterey Defense Language Institute DLI, 301
Monterey Vineyard, 112
Montreal, Quebec, 201, 286
Montrore Co., CO, 303
Mood changability, & structure, 227
Moody, 410
Moody, Raymond, 263
Moody, Robert, 282
Moon Child Ritual, 192
Moon Child ceremonies, 44
Moon and Nightmares, 445
Moon, programming basis, 129
Moore, 162
Moore, Bob, 80
Moore, Dr., 283
Moore, Fred, 80
Moral choices, need emotions, 245
Moral life, and emotions, 245
Moral will linked to emotions, 247
Morals are grounded in a reality, 400-401

Morgan family, 98
Morgan, Dr. Dave, 6, 281
Morgan-Evans, 98
Moriah the Wind, carries programmers love, 249
Morison, Elting E., 77
Mormon Church, 218, 306, 375
Mormon Temple, Salt Lake City, UT, 306
Mormon children's programming, 265
Mormon worldview, 245
Mormonism & mind-control, 106
Mormonism, 279, (see also Mormon church)
Mormons, hotel at DisneyWorld, 116
Morphine, 26
Morris, Robert, 82
Morrison, Jim, 282
Morse code signals with eyes, 62
Morse code, 144
Morse codes signals to slaves, 482
Morse codes, signals of, 183
Moses, 128, 460
Moslems, 280
Mosley, Leonard, 73, 76
Moss-Sharmon, Lynne, 196
Mossad, 67, 312
Mote of nothing LSD sens. depriv. tank exper., 472
Mote programming, 34
Mother Goose & Betty Boop, 56
Mother Goose, 261, 262
Mother figure and reptilian brain, 514
Mother figure, baby's imprinting and need for love, 427
Mother of Darkness alter, 247, 328
Mother of Darkness, Programg Asst., 193, 427 (see other references)
Mother spirit, 131
Mother, attitude toward baby, 14
Mother-fetus trauma, 259
Mother-of-Darkness symbols, 121
Mother-of-darkness, used to pull the real core up, 427
Mothers of Darkness, 193, 427, 483, 497
Mothers-of-Darkness, castle of, 37
Mothers-of-Darkness, use Marax to understand astrology, 483
Motion Picture Alliance, 97
Motion Picture Association
Motion Picture Producers & Dist., 95
Motor control resonance frek., 179
Motorola, 219
Motu Proprio, of pope, abolishing exorcists, 255
Moulding technic, Sutherland's Cranial technic, 227
Mount Pony, VA, 306
Mouse ears, Mickey's, 100
Mouseketeers, 100
Mouth area, and personality, 227
Mouton, Friar, 215
Movie screen, internal, 402
Movies, about entire towns into sacrifice, 279
Mr. Green, 445, 446
Mr. Moon, 261, 445
Mr. Nobody alter, 466
Mt. Archeleta, Jicarilla Indian Reservation, NM, 313
Mt. Elbrus, Causcasia, USSR, 209
Mt. Hood, OR, 305
Mt. Kisco, NY, 104
Mt. Lemmon Base, AZ, 303
Mt. McKinley, AK, 90
Mt. Shasta, CA, 303
Mt. Sinai Hospital, Toronto, Canada, 287
Mt. Tabor, Portland, OR, 313
Mueller, Bill family, 280
Mueller, Bill, 280
Mueller, Nancy, 280
Mueller, Sarah, 280
Muir, Caroline, 299
Mulciber, demon, 483
Mullen, Frank E.
Muller, H.J., 10
Multijurisdictional Task Force, MJTF, 300
Multipeak, 163
Multiple Man, novel, 308
Multiple Sclerosis, 103, 183
Multiple Sclerosis, treatment by magn. fds, 179
Multiple systems, developed from womb up, 189
Multiplex system, 192
Multiplexing, in signals, 55
Multiplicity, understanding, 353
Multiport network analyzers, 180
Multnomah Falls, OR, 313
Mummy analogy, 248
Mungadze Association, (& ph. no.), 383
Munich, Germany, 235
Murder, ritual, demons of, 482
Murmur, demon, 483
Muscle movements, done by 1st brain, 515
Muscle-testing, 231
Mushrooms, scene in p. film, 125
Music scale, 129
Music, absolute, 124
Music, carousel, 41-42
Music, influence on body, 129
Music, influence on nervous system, 205
Music, lullaby, 41-42
Music, religious, used in prgrmg, 33
Music, used by some to help with split brain programming, 502
Musical cords, code to call up alters, 252
Muskegon, MI, 117
Muskogee County, 91
Mussolini, Beneto, 77
Mustard seeds, 345
Mutations, created in mammal cells, 238

Myelin sheathing, damage to, 183
Myers, W.A., 442
Myleran, aka Busulfan, 239
Mysteries of the Deep, 87
Mystery Babylon, 121
Mystery Religions, 75, 95, 190, 216, 428, 497
Mystery School of the Hierarchy, 231
Mystery Schools, 205
Mystery religion priesthoods, 440

N-Methyl-N'-Nitro-N-Nitrosoguanidine, MNNG, 239
N-ethylmaleimide, 240
NACCB, 173
NASA HQ at White Sands, NM, 305
NASA, 100, 173, 188, 282
NBC's Headquarters, 105
NBC, 95, 105
NDE Near Death Experience, manipulation of, 263, 431
NLP, 231
NOD underground facility, Wash., D.C., 301-302, 306
NORAD, 176, 185, 285, 302, 303, 305
NPL (Nat. Phys. Labs, U.K.), 142
NSA Listening Post, AK, 142
NSA National Security Agency, 54, 57, 103, 138-139, 142, 173, 175, 177, 256, 299, 301, 304, 503
NSA, ability to track people remotely, 175
NTC '71 Record, 173
NTIA Memo of Jan-'93, 177
NWO, created own opposition, 67
NY Governor's son, 104
NY Stock Exchange crash, 79
NY Times, 106, 169, 206, 219, 233
NY Tribune, 221
Nails, beds of, 499
Names, magical, taken by Church of Set members, 290
Names, of Illuminati members, 11
Nance, Stephen, 103
Nancy, France, 37
Nano, meaning of term, 169
Nanobots, 167-169
Nanosystems, 168
Nanotechnology, 138, 167-169
Nanotechnology: Proceedings of the..., 169
Nanoteq, 167
Naohu Acupoint, 207
Napa Sentinel,, 134
Napa Valley Register, 99
Napa Valley, CA, 86, 89, 105, 112, 303
Napa, CA, 86
Naples, It. Naval Hospital, 223
Napravit, term, 215
Nar Mattaru, 480
Narc Officer magazine, 172
Narcissism, 487
Naslund, Robert, 170
Natick, MA, 281
Nation, 133
National Archives Group-238, 213
National Archives Record Group-59 &-Group-242, 213
National Bureau of Standards building, 176
National Cancer Institute, 281
National Center for Supercomputers, U.S., 142
National Dairy, 93
National Defense University, 288
National Film Finance Corp., 119
National Industry Security Program Manual, 137
National Institute of Environmental Health...Triangle Park, NC, 235
National Institute of Health, 10, 208
National Institute of Mental Health, 25
National Masonic Press, 218
National Mercantile Bancorp, 106
National Physical Labs, U.K., 142
National Program Office NPO, 297
National Reconnaissance Office NRO, 297
National Security Agency NSA, 54, 57, 103, 138-139, 142, 173, 175, 177, 256, 299, 301, 304, 503
National Security, used as bogeyman, 5
National Socialism Nazism, 81
National Students Assoc. CIA, 299
National Telecomm. Research Ctr., France, 142
National security mean national slavery, title pg. chp. 1
Natulan, 239
Nautical Science Program, 64
Nautical Science, secret radiation file, 234
Nautonnier of P. de Sion, 97
Navajo, 308
Naval Intelligence, 113-114, 178, 300
Naval Research Lab, 7
Navky, demon, 483
Navy PSYOPS, 298
Navy, U.S., 172
Nazi Germany, 171
Nazi Mind Control research, 214
Nazi Party U.S.A., 81
Nazi human experiments, 213
Nazi racial hatred, a cover for research, 2
Nazi religious philosophy, 213
Nazi research, 171, 213, 219
Nazi super dogs, 233
Nazi use of film, 38
Nazi, American N. Party, 111
Nazis, 280
Nazis, hunted, who were not only CIA payroll, 312
Nazism, 95
Near Death Experience NDE, manipulation of, 263, 431

Near Death Experiences, common experiences for people, 263
Nebiros, demon, 483
Nebraska DUM bases, 304
Nebraska S&L scandal, 104
Nebraska, 104, 304
Necronomicon, 475
Needle up Nostril torture, 22-23
Needles, mentally still in body, 415
Needs, of a person, how supplied by master, 245
Neelands, Barbara, 92
Neo-Freudian Modernists, 133
Nepal, 308
Nephalim, 308
Nephesh, word defined, 428
Nerman, Maud, 229
Nerve cells, how affected by ELF fields, 183
Nerves, 205
Neshamah, term, 257
Nest building instincts, 237
Nestle family, 102
Net, 54
Netherlands, 235
Network, the, term defined, 371
Neural Computers, large, 141
Neural circuit development, 13
Neural transmitters, 35-36
Neuro-Linguistic Programming, 269
Neurochemicals, triggered by Freks, 144
Neuron migration from germinal zone, 236
Neurons, 236
Neurons, grown on computer chips, 7
Neurons, list of sites the generate after birth, 236
Neurophone, 176-177
Neurotransmitters, 236
Neurotropic viruses, 170
Nevada DUM bases, 304
Nevada, 93, 107, 283, 304
New Age Groups, 46-47, 375
New Age Slaves, 103
New Age techniques, 474
New Age, beliefs, 268
New Cadets, West Point, 41, 42
New Hampshire DUM bases, 305
New Hampshire, 305
New Jersey DUM base, 305
New Jersey, 57, 174, 305
New Jerusalem, attributes of, 365
New Madrid, MO, 304
New Mexico DUM bases, 305
New Mexico, 185, 235, 282, 305
New Orlean's Square, Disneyland, 116, 117
New Orleans Historic Voodoo Museum, 301
New Orleans, LA, 300
New Orleans, hotels in, 297
New World Order, book, 222
New World Order, forecast, 97
New World Order, put forth by social., 81
New World Order, wrestling family, 280
New Worlds of Mind and Spirit, 7
New York City, 92, 103, 115, 122, 283, 305
New York City, NY, 283
New York DUM bases, 305
New York Lillith Grotto, 284
New York State Psychiatric Institute, 281, 298
New York Times, 78, 168, 307
New York, 9, 10, 104, 220, 221, 281, 305
Newberg, OR, 184
Newsletter From A Follower of Christ, 36
Newsweek, 87, 117
Nexus magazine, 180, 265
Neyland, Lt. Col. David, 186
Niebaum-Coppola estate, 90
Night Mare alters, 131
Night Mare, 445
Night Stallion, 445
Night alters, 471
Night on Bald Mountain (music), 96
Night, can be used for therapy, 349
Nightmare alters named after mares of Moon, 445
Nightmare alters, 445
Nightmare, 442
Nightmares and mental boundaries between fantasy & reality, 442
Nightmares, 406
Ninja, 187, 214
Ninjitsu, 187, 214
Nitrofuranes, 240
Nitrogen particle beam, 144
Nitroimidazoles, 240
Nixon, Pres. Richard M., 72, 115, 140
No Where Man, show, 17
No sense of danger, 410
No talk, no see, no hear programming, 360
No-Write Torture, 22
No-talk, no-tell progamming, 22, 127, 374
No-win thinking, instilled by trauma, 394
Noble, Elizabeth, 15
Nobleman, Frenchman, in Eye of the Devil, 411
Non Linear Detectors, 463
Non-ionizing electromag. radiation, 138
Non-lethal weapons research, 300
Non-lethal weapons, term, 186
Nonlinear mixer, 180
Norepinephrine, 36
Normalcy, key design to plans, 65
Normann, Richard A., 165, 166
Norms, confusion about sexual norms, 408
Norplant implants, 164
North American Development Bank, title pg. chp. 1

North Beach, San Francisco, 286
North Carolina, 235
North Chicago, V.A., 301
North Hollywood, CA, 70, 86
North Wind, the, 59
Northpoint Tactical Teams, 312
Northport, NY, V.A., 301
Northrop Corp., 95
Northrop Underground Facility, 303
Norton AFB, 303
Nothingness experience in sens. depriv. tank, 431
Nothingness state, 33
Notional Agent, 68
Notre Dame coach, 104
Notre Dame, football team, 72
Nottingham, 215
Nova Scotia, 196
Noyes, Cong. John, Sr., 9
Noyes, John Humphrey, 9
Noyes, John, molestation of girls, 9
Nubian Lion, Togare, 283
Nucla, CO, 303
Nuclear attack, NOD facility for gov't, 306
Nuclear subterrenes, for tunnel construction, 302
Nucleic acids, 240
Nucleus 22 implant, 162
Nucleus Minisystem 22 implant, 162
Nudity & sexual enchantment, demon for witch covens, 484
Nuernberg Trial Documents, 213
Nueva Germania colony, 233
Nugen-Hand Bank, 103, 105
Numerology, 47
Nun, catholic, as NASA physicist, 282
Nursery Rhymes, 59-60, 262
Nursery Rhymes, layering in, 262
Nurturing during grief, can be silent n., 454
Nymphomaniac programming, 35
Nysrock, demon, 483

O'Brien, Cathy, 118, 284, 290, 371
OP-O6-D, unit to test security, 297, 302
OSH-AMP-RIE Program, 64
OSS records, 213
OSS, 142, 213
OTO, 118, 224
OTO, Kenneth Grant's, 289
OTS files, CIA, title pg. intro
Oahu, HA, 300, 312
Oak Ridge, TN, 235
Oak Tree programming story, 126
Oak Tree, internal, 38, 480
Oaklander, dream therapist, 443
Oakville Grade, Napa, CA, 303
Oakville, CA, 112
Oath of Obedience tested, 262
Oath testing, 261
Oath to Hydra, part of it quoted, 482
Oath, to obey, words given, 499
Oaths, given to Lucifer, Beelzebub & Hydra, 482
Oaths, to give Lucifer the legal right to capture the core, 476
Observation skills, can be used for healing, 490
Obsidian, 314
Obsidian, cover up alters, 271
Occipital bone, 204, 219
Occiput, 204
Occult movies, of Disney, 107
Occult philosophies, help the mind control, 268
Occult philosophies, teaching, 267
Octarine, color of, 66
Octopamine, 36
Odic Force, 213
Of Mice, Men, & Molecules, 186
Office of Global Analysis, 297
Office of Naval Research, 188
Office of Naval Strategic Intelligence Service, 306
Office of Scientific & Weapons Research, CIA, 298
Office of Scientific Intelligence, of Disney film, 121
Office of Security, CIA, 181
Office of Technical Services, 299
Office of War Information, 142
Office of the Advanced Research Projects Agency, 188
Offutt AFB, NE, 302
Ogre-fen-ogre-Fen, 194
Ohio, 213, 220
Ohio-class subs, 300
Oils, pure, use of, 36
Oklahoma DUM bases, 305
Oklahoma, 91, 103, 299, 305
Old McDonald's Had A Farm, 57
Old Order Amish, 286
Oldfield-lane, England, 216
Olfactory bulb, 393
Olfactory bulb, granule cells of, 236
Olney, MD, 304
Olympia & York Developments Ltd., 286
Olympic athlete, analogy, 385
Omega Programming, 57
Omicron programming, 58
Omura, Dr. Yoshiaki, 205
On Killing, 92. 194-195
One-For-All Program, 64
Oneicromancy, 440
Oneida Colony, descendants, 10
Oneida Communities, 9
Oneida, Ltd, 9
Oneida-Illum. connections, 9
Ontario Ministry of Consumer & Commercial Relations,

287
Ontogenesis, Behavioral, 235
Onyx, 314
Oocyte, 309
Opal, 314
Opening of the Wisdom Eye, 209
Operant conditioning, 195, 516
Operation 2000, 64
Operational Services Division, 298
Opheilo, biblical term for guilt, meaning of, 492
Ophthalmologist, dirty, in Amarillo, 298
Opinions, low, of self, not expected by God, 493
Opportunities, many have been lost due to lack of teams, 513
Optic nerves, 165
Optic radiations, 165
Opus One Temple, Napa CA area, 87, 89
Orange coding, 271
Orchestra music, 96, 124
Orchestras, children, of A.-S. school, 104
Order of Leviathan, 290
Order of Oriental Templars OTO, 118, 224
Order of the B'nai B'rith, 73
Order of the Golden Dawn, 58-59, 97, 289
Order of the Skull & Bones, 11
Ordo ab chaos, 365
Oregon underground bases, 305-306
Oregon, 184, 283, 284, 305-306
Oregonian newspaper, 275
Organ functioning, done by 1st brain, 515
Organ, Hammond, of LaVey's, 283
Organic Bioprocessors, 170
Organic Mental disorder, 335
Organic Robotoids, 307-313
Organic Robotoids, definition, 310
Orgy, at Disney party, 94
Oriental view of life, 269
Orlando International Airport, 98
Orlando, FL, 100, 102
Orne, Dr. Martin, 283
Orphan School, Midway, KT, 300
Orson, James, 118
Orton Family, 220
Orwell, George, 284
Oscar, by W. Disney, 98
Oscillations, of head, 228
Oscilloscopes, 182
Osculum infame, 484
Osmond Brothers, 106
Osmond, Donny, 106
Osmond, Marie, 106
Osmond, Merrill, 106
Osteopathic Hospitals, 225
Osteopathic libraries, 228
Osteopathic schools, 222
Osteopaths, level of specialization, 226
Osteopathy in the Cranial Field, 228
Osteopathy vs Chiropractic, differences in approach, 220
Osteopathy, 220, 214-215
Osteopathy, modern, 204, 214-215
Ostriches, in *Fantasia*, 131-132
Oswald the Lucky Rabbit, 93
Oswego, NY, 301
Otologists, 159-160
Ouraboros (snake), 60
Out of This World to Forbidden Tibet, 210
Out-of-Body alters, 198
Out-of-body experience, similar to dream state, 442
Outer Space, internal, 32, 122, 128, 477
Outer space, how put in, 32
Outside activities, all have a sharp edge for deeper alters, 512
Outside-looking-In feeling, 121
Ova fertilized in vitro, 307
Ovarian ultrasonography, 309
Ovaries, 309
Over the Rainbow, 131
Overholser, Winfred, 281
Overlays, of new sensory inputs, 511
Overseer alters, 446
Overview of what support team faces, 324
Ovitz, Michael, 105, 106
Oxygen consumption of life, 183
Oxygen enhances radiation damage, 240
Oz series, 194
Oz, 119, 194, 299
Oz, theme of Rainbow Road to Oz, 100
Ozark Church, 3
Ozma, 119

P-chlorphenylalanine, 36
P300 waves, 18
PAM/FM Biomedical Telemetry System, 173
PDE Primal Dissociative Experience, 324, 424-426
PET Scans, 175, 447
PET brain scans, showing MPD (DID), 447
PET scans of region cerebral blood flow changes, 447
PMH (Pemoline-magnesium hydroxide), 27
PMH, 28
PSYOP, 141-142
PSYOPS, Navy, 298
PTS syndrome, 209, 335, 440, 442
PTSD, 209, 335, 440, 442
PTSD, dreams of, 440
Pacemaker electrodes, 172
Pacific, code word, 112
Paedophilia, 20
Page, AZ base, 303

Page, Jimmy, 119
Paimon, demon, 484
Pain and pleasure, 188
Pain clinics, 378
Pain endurance, 498-499
Pain, caused by implants, 171
Pain, doesn't bother animals, if from imprinted mother figure, 517
Pain, hides memories, 415
Pain, often given to persecutor alters, 422
Painted Black, book, 287
Palace of Pandaemonium, 479, 480
Palace of Venetian nobleman, in Fantasia, 131
Palace of glass, 273
Palace, occult meaning, 273
Palm Springs, CA, 77, 94, 287
Palmdale, CA, 303
Palmer, Bartlett Joshua, 220
Palmer, Daniel David, 220
Pamfiloff, G, 296
Pan, demon, 130, 254
Pan, in *Fantasia*, 130
Pancake People, internal, 126
Pandaemonium, 479, 480
Pandora Project, 180
Pane oil, 36
Panic Attacks, suggestions for, 355
Panic attack, how they manifest, 355
Panic attacks, 348, 355, 467
Panic attacks, may involve hidden parts, 467
Panic, definition, 355
Papa programming, 59
Papa, term, 120
Papal Rings, 191
Papertrail for programming, lays in rare arcane magic books, 473
Papoose Range, 304
Papus, 97
Para-humans, 10
Paracingulate region of brain, 253
Paradise, diagram of elements, 365
Paradise, elements of, 364
Paradox Valley, CO, 303
Paradox, CO, 303
Paraguard, system, 190
Paraguay, 105, 233
Parahumans, 307
Parallel processors, 176
Paralyzing, used for some programming, 415
Paramount, 93, 98
Paranoia, 515
Paranoid Schizophrenia, 335
Paraplegics, implants for, 164
Parchments, secret coded of 13th Bldli., 97
Parent figures, 517
Parents magazine, 93
Parfit, bone research, 226
Parietal bones, 219
Parietal lobe, 231
Paris Atheneé, 217
Paris, France, 75, 77, 94, 162, 283
Park Ave., NY, 104
Participation ritual, the, 261
Parts of natural mind, 189
Parts, internal, creative, 125-126
Parts, of the natural mind, 187-188
Parts, with humanness are buried by programmers, 451
Party, for Disney workers at L.N., 94
Passageways, secret, in LaVey's home, 283
Passantino, Gretchen, 67
Passiveness, assoc. w/ Vertical Strain Superior, 226
Password for D-Day, Mickey Mouse, 113
Passwords between worlds, 201
Patent #4,686,605, 177
Paterson, 235
Pathworking rituals, 192
Patience, need for, 327
Paul, Apostle, 463, 473
Pauline Art, the, 257
Paymon, demon for politicians, 484
Peace of God, programming meaning of term, 199, 249
Peacock demon, 481
Peacock, Andrew, 103
Pearl Harbor attack, 96, 111
Pearl clothes, title pg. chp. 12
Pearls of Wisdom, CUT, 49-50
Pearls, black, memories, 445
Pediatric Radionthology, secret radiation file, 234
Pedophile network, 282
Pedophilia, justifications for, 488
Peer pressure used not to break the circle, 509
Peer pressure, internal, 423
Pegasi alters, 445-446
Pegasus, 130
Pegasus, ship to record, 278
Pekins, white, chickens, 310
Pelican Bay Prison, Isolation Tank Programming, title pg. chp. 6, 301
Pelican Club, 301
Pemoline-magnesium hydroxide, 27
Penelope, 120
Penetrating Wave Activity, secret radiation file, 234
Pennsylvania DUM bases, 306
Pennsylvania, 220, 225, 306
Pentacles, star appearing demon, 482
Pentagon, Arlington, VA, 103, 288, 297, 306
Pentecostal Holiness, infiltration by Illum., 259
Pentecostal groups, 375

Pentylenetetrazol, 29
Peppermint oil, 36
PepsiCo, 107
Peptides, 212, 424
Perception different for different parts of brain, 236
Perception normally conforms to reality, 489
Perception, 249, 489
Perception, enhanced by programming, 263
Perception, influenced by music, 129
Perception, its role in learning, 267
Perceptions of pain, influenced by who is the imprinted mother figure, 517
Perelman, Ronald O., 107
Perfect Elu Degree, 191
Perfusate, 35
Pergamit, Gayle, 169
Periodic Mind Lapse program, 64
Periwig Club, 105
Perkins, Bill, 117
Persecution, example of it backfiring, 371
Persecutor alters, 373-374
Persecutor alters, dealing with, 373-374
Persephone, 95
Personal histories, taking of client, 334
Personal history of victim, 340-341
Personality, original, not snuffed out by programming, 361
Personalized Whole Brain Integration, 502
Personology, 232
Pesman-Rubin, ad agency, 78
Peter Pan film, 81
Peter Pan, 96
Peterson, Christ, 169
Peterson, E., 442
Peterson, Michael, 20
Petrillo, 111
Pettie, Marion, 282
Peyote, 32
Phallic religion of OTO, 118
Phantasms of the Living, 441
Pharaoh, 191
Pharaoh, Thutmes IV, 440
Pharisees, 280, 368, 397
Phelps, Digger, 104
Phenex, demon, 484
Phenobarbital, 26
Phenothiazines, 27
Pherigen Test, 463
Philadelphia Orchestra, 124
Philadelphia, PA, 225
Philanthropy, Illuminati beliefs around, 286
Philatanus, demon, 484
Phillipe, Monsieur, 97
Phillips Exerter Academy, 105
Phillips Petroleum, 88
Phillips, Mark, 371
Phillipsburg, NJ, 101
Philosophers, Arabian, 231
Philosophers, encouraged man to know thyself, 465
Philosophies, 398, 401, 492
Philosophies, modern, 398, 401
Philosophies, occult, help the mind control, 268
Philosophy, 428, 482
Philosophy, greek, 428
Phobias, 392, 406, 410
Phoe-net-ical Program, 64
Phoenix, AZ, 283
Phones, are all monitored, 463
Phones, are all tapped, and monitored, 503
Photic subliminal stimulation of brain, 270
Photographic memories, created, 236
Phrenological societies, 217
Phrenology, 213, 216-219, 232
Phrenology, nazi knowledge of, 213
Physiognomonica, 231
Physiognomy, 215, 232
Physiological rhythms, 183
Physiology and Behavior magazine, 164
Piano cords, 60
Piano scale, for programming, 124
Picatinny Arsenal, 305
Pick-up sticks, 55
Pico Tesla Magnetic Fields, 179
Picotoxin, 29
Pie Town, NM, 305
Pig, clairvoyant, in Disney film, 108
Piggybacking signals, 161
Pike, Albert, 7, 217
Pilgrim Society, 106
Pine Bluff, Ark, 303
Pine Gap, Australia, 141
Pineal gland (body), 36, 212
Pineal-hypothalamic tract, 179
Pink Room, Mormon Temple in Salt Lake City, 306
Pinocchio film, 87
Pinocchio, 94, 96
Piper, Thomas W., 2
Pisces, 190
Pit, Bottomless, 477
Pittman, Howard O., 255-256
Pituitary gland, 212
Pituitary, 212
Placebos & false hopes, 345
Planets, related to music, 48
Planned Parenthood Shasta Diablo, 90
Plans, Illuminati, 20-30 & 50 yr.plans, 11, 12
Plant alters, 196
Plant-animal hybrid alters, 196
Plastic surgery, 312
Platinum coding, 271

Platinum, 314-315
Plato, 428
Plattsburgh AFB, 305
Plaza Gardens, 104
Pleading the cause of the needy, asked by Bible, 491
Pleasure Island, Walt DisneyWorld, 112
Plebe year, West Point, USMA, 280
Pleiadian programming, 261
Plucking out the heart hand signal, 63
Pluto, creation of, 80
Pneuma, greek word defined, 429
Pneumatic inserter for arrays, 166
Pneumotropic viruses, 170
Poet demon, 484
Poland, 75
Polanski, Roman, 411
Police Report on Michael Aquino, 296
Police, Chief of, Burbank, 108
Police, Disneyland & Anaheim, 108
Police, Thailand, 174
Policeman, from L.A. who exposed prgrmg ctr., 117
Political leaders who were into witchcraft, biblical references to, 491
Political system, in each system, 376
Politicians, demon for, Paymon, 484
Polygraph, inferior to P3 waves, 18
Polygraphs, 181
Polymeric Brain Implant, 164
Polypeptide, ALY NC, 236
Polypeptidenucleic acid & memory, 311
Polyurethane, carbon-impregnated, 180
Pons, 424
Ponsonby, Hon. Spencer, 215
Pontifax, demon/alter construct, 62
Pontine cistern, 228
Pool of Darkness, 477
Pool of Tears, code said in movie, 120
Pope Paul IV, 312
Pope Paul VI, 255
Pope Pius XI, 77
Pope's seal, 191
Poppet dolls, 47
Porn catalog with Madonna, 74
Porn stars, 334
Porn, 411
Porn, by Disney, 73, 80, 87
Porn, by Hapsburgs, 80
Portable oxygen generators, 172
Portals to next world, 199
Portland, OR, 283, 310
Positive thinking, stopped by split-brain programming, 501
Positives, finding the, 381
Positives, importance of in victim's life, 324
Powder, movie, 76
Power, drive for, and the power that drives that, 496
Power, importance of to programmers, 487
Power, spiritual, of hierarchy alters, 474
Power, taking it back by victim, 423
Powerless feelings, affect of, 243-244
Powers, Pat, 93
Poyen, Charles, 217
Practical Color Magick, 46-47
Prague, Czeck., 162
Prayer circles, 423
Prayer is a spiritual lance, 437
Prayer strategies, 391
Prayer, for spiritual protection, 364
Prayer, needs to be based on God's 5 attributes, 437
Prayers, if not going anywhere, start trusting in God, 493
Prayers, true foundations, 364
Prayers, why they are insufficient for end-time programming, 459
Pre-birth traumas, 259
Pre-conditioning brain for m.c. waves, 183
Preemies, 8
Pregnant women, limited in safe meds, 348
Prep School, Ft. Worth, TX, 89
Prep school for entertainment industry, 105
Preparation sets, 179
Prescott, AZ, V.A., 301
Presidential Medal of Freedom, 95
Presidential models, 56, 196, 350
Presidents, American, 72
Presideo Child Development Center, 294
Presideo Day Care Center, 290
Presideo Day Care Scandal, 288
Presideo of Monterey, CA, 301
Presideo, CA, 59, 262, 288, 303
Presley, Elvis, 16
Pressler, Paul, 114
Pressures, dealing with, 420
Pribilof Islands, Alaska, 98
Price, Carole, syntel victims who spotted Americanisms, 461
Price, Vincent, 106
Priestly Sins, TV show, 282
Priests, of Talmud, 488
Prieure de Sion, 97, 205
Primal Dissociate Experience PDE, 324, 424-426
Primal part of mind, 236
Primal splits, 61
Primary visual cortex, 165
Prime Computer, 89
Prime Frek, 175
Prince of the Magic Kingdom, 116, 133
Princess of Oz, 119
Princeton University, NJ, 104, 105, 298
Princeton, NJ, 301

Prison inmates, fight mind-control, 175
Prisons, Privatization of, 11-12
Privacy, maintaining some, 503
Pro-Life-Go Program, 64
Problem, identification of real problem, 463-464
Procarbazine, aka Natulan, 239
Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences, 183
Procel, demon, 484
Process Church, 224
Processor alters, 190
Proctor & Gamble, 95
Prodigal son, 492
Production Code, Hollywood, 79
Professional Stage Hypnotism, 8
Professional clergy class, don't want to bandage the unclean, 436
Professions, as a clue to mind-control, 334
Profile, of adults subjected to m.c., 5
Progesterone, 14

PROGRAM TOPICS
Program Codes, Dr. Green's in '70's, 64
Program for slave to trigger themselves, 392
Program, False Hope, 272
Program, River of Forgetfulness, 477
Program, See no evil, do no evil..., 470
Program, can go under different codes, 297
Program, flooding, 449
Program, for punishment of all alters, 64

PROGRAMMERS
Programmer positions within pyramid, 200
Programmer, access to the internal computers, 272
Programmer, hides the true self from victim's mind, 360
Programmer, learns to think like a child, 248
Programmer, negatives are reframed in programming, 359
Programmer, only one to help child in well trauma, 389
Programmer, sees his inheritance coming from Lucifer, 478
Programmer, sets himself up as God, 42, 195
Programmer, slave's initial perception of, 329
Programmers, Illuminati, attitude towards public, 92
Programmers, Illuminati, know scripture, 428
Programmers, Internal, alters, 520
Programmers, are all Illum. Grand Masters, 126
Programmers, charting during programming, 362
Programmers, commitment level, 328
Programmers, do they only pretend Lucifer exists?, 496
Programmers, expert clay molders, 187
Programmers, give slaves nick-nacks, 257
Programmers, good ones, don't allow uncontrlld panic, 355
Programmers, have alibis prepared in advance, 411
Programmers, how represented in system, 200
Programmers, internalized by victim, 510
Programmers, laugh about Disney's secrets, 75
Programmers, personalities of, 5
Programmers, pretend to be aliens, 42
Programmers, sadistic, 450
Programmers, step ahead of therapists, 264
Programmers, talk about Satan's mind & the 1st brain, 517
Programmers, techniques to hide the core, 425
Programmers, try to outdo each other in sadism, 488
Programmers, want people to feel rejected by God, 493
Programmers, were Grand Masters & Adepts, 475
Programmers, will achieve goal w/ any method, 475

PROGRAMMING
Programming & Metaprogramming in the Human...,28, 31-34
Programming Center, nr. DnyWd, 98
Programming Centers, Dictionary of, 298-306
Programming Centers, special, for Level 5, 17
Programming Sites, 297-306
Programming assistants, 328-329
Programming center, Magic Castle, 116
Programming center, for children from Latin Amer., 117
Programming centers, 41, 75, 116, 117, (See App. 2)
Programming centers, moved to Disneyland, 75
Programming foundational script, Fantasia, 122-133
Programming language, 192, 247
Programming pillar, fear & dissociation, 385
Programming rituals, first 16 listed, 258
Programming roadblocks, by-passing, 467
Programming scripts, reflected in newspapers, 275
Programming sites, U.S. bases, 223
Programming state, description of, 271
Programming, Barber Pole, 59
Programming, Betty Boop, 56
Programming, Catholic, 62
Programming, Chi, 56
Programming, Death, 484
Programming, Delta, 56
Programming, Do-nothing-to-hurt-the-family, 448
Programming, Dr. Green's, 64
Programming, Dream programming, standard Illuminati programming, 444-446
Programming, Drive mechanism, 388
Programming, Epsilon, 57
Programming, Foundation upon apple visual., 43
Programming, Hebrew letter, 55
Programming, Infinity, how put in, 32
Programming, Janus-Alex, 58
Programming, Marie Antoinette, 49
Programming, Mensa, 62

Programming, Mickey Mouse, 100
Programming, No talk, no see, no hear, 448
Programming, Omega, 57
Programming, Omicron, 58
Programming, Shattering the mind, 59
Programming, Sleeping Beauty theme for core, 433
Programming, Theta, 58-59, 137
Programming, Time Clock, 56
Programming, alien, 63
Programming, around the core, 425
Programming, astral, 59
Programming, attached to heart beat, at primal level, 459
Programming, collapsed, 468
Programming, color, 46-50
Programming, colored rays, 58
Programming, common themes, 52
Programming, doll, 56
Programming, for Money laundering, 59
Programming, foundations, 66-67
Programming, foundations, destruction of, 473-486
Programming, history of, 122-123
Programming, in different time periods, 356-357
Programming, is the natural consequence of the mind protecting itself, 386
Programming, of DID, started after WWII, 2
Programming, preferred hypnotic levels, 457
Programming, put in with spinal surgical techniques, 415
Programming, revamped in late 60's, 64
Programming, security of, 495
Programming, sexual, 59
Programming, specialized to victim's mind, 357
Programming, stabilize. by drugs, 27-28
Programming, suicide, 39
Programming, swearing oaths, 59
Programming, to cover with, 59
Programming, to not allow drugs, 27
Programming, zeta, 61
Programs, LIST of, 361-362
Programs, Self-destruct, 272
Programs, codes using sounds, sights, smells, etc., 361
Programs, flooding, 446
Programs, protective, laid in by programmer against hypnosis, 458
Programs, self-destruct, 373-375
Programs, suicide, 374-375
Programs, that control actions, 361
Programs, that control the body, 362
Programs, that control the mind, 361-362
Programs, that tamper with emotions, 361
Programs, that tamper with memory, 361
Programs, to tamper with senses, 361
Programs, to tamper with spirituality, 361
Programs, types listed, 361-362
Programs, various trees, 480
Prohibition, 109
Project 2000, 64
Project Mirror (Op. # 6317-ABL-4), 299
Projection, for hypnosis, 42-43
Prometheus, 48
Promiscuity, increased by C-Sect., 15
Pronunciation, strange, to protect, 480
Propaganda films, nazi, 38
Propaganda, Evolutionary great leap forward, 488
Propaganda, white,grey, blk, 4
Prophet, Elizabeth Claire, 49-50
Prophets, Mormon, & Phrenology, 218
Prostitute Models, 196
Prostitution & the War, 96
Protection, external, for programming, 249
Protection, methods that the mind employs, 405-410
Protection, spiritual, 364
Protector alter, how made, 390
Protector alters, 23, 271, 390
Protector alters, animals, 23
Protein lattices, 170
Proteins and memory process, 311
Proteins, in bones, 226
Proteins, synthetic, 170
Proto-32 implant, 164
Protocol Virus Program, 64
Protons, 240
Providence, RI, V.A., 301
Provocation, Agent, 68
Proxying, 509
Psi-gene, 7-8, 171
Psych wards, affected by solar flares, 183
Psychiatrists, partial list of dirty ones, 281
Psychiatrists, spread disinformation for Illuminati, 501
Psychiatry & the CIA; Victims of Mind Cntrl, 186
Psychiatry, infiltration of, 356
Psychic abilities & blood types, 171
Psychic abilities, 171, 211, 412, 496
Psychic models, 197
Psychic organizer part of brain, emergence, 427
Psychic warriors, of U.S. army, 282
Psychics, 171
Psychics, identified by NWO, 171
Psychoanalysis Review, 7
Psychoanalytic Quarterly, 442
Psychogenetics, 235
Psychological Warfare Division, DIA, 287
Psychological tactics of military, 96
Psychologists help cover up implants, 143, 160-161
Psychology based upon cabalistic doctrines, 412
Psychology, during Roman Empire, 205
Psychology, infiltration of, 356
Psychology, pop, blames victim for abuse, 392

Psychosis, 335, 354, 451
Psychotic thoughts, 339
Psychotronic warfare, 178
Psychotronics, definition, 138
Psykhe, word defined, 428
Pubic area, used to hide fiber optics, 462
Public, entrust children to Disney, 134
Puder, Dorothy Disney, 87
Puder, Glen, 87
Puffer Blowfish, 27
Puja, 229
Pulse rates, 183
Pulsed Audiograms, 180
Punishment for disobedient alters, 513
Punishment, for abusers, discussion of, 411
Puppet Master, film, 121
Puppetmaster artwork by Cisco, title pg. chp. 11
Pure-fume, term, 275
Purgatory, internal, 479
Purine & pyrimidine bases, DNA, 239
Puromyxcin, 29
Purple coding, 271
Purple, occult meaning, 50
Purson, demon, 484
Puss in Boots, 86
Put Satanachia, 484
Putnam, Dr. Frank, 326, 328, 442
Putney, VT, 9
Puysegur, Marquis de, 37
Puzzle, assembling of in therapy, 465
Pyra, gk. word, 48
Pyramid, 314-315
Pyramid, double, 129-130
Pyramid, double, basic satanic structure, 365
Pyramid, double, system configuration, 432
Pyramid, imagery, 130
Pyramid, internal, 199, 272
Pyramid, represents divinity, 190
Pyramider satellite, 143
Pyramids, 222
Pyramids, Rosicrucian HQ, 225
Pythagoras, 48
Python snake, internal, 129

Qabalistic-Hermetic Order, 231
Qigong, 210
Quadrant, with front castles, 479
Quadrants, 518
Quain family, 220
Quality Control Program, 64
Quantum physics, & brain communication, 186
Quarter-Regents, 200
Quarterly Review of Biology, 235
Quartzite Mountain, NV, 305
Quasi-psychotic symptoms, 489
Quebec, Canada, 201
Queen Mary, ship, analogy, 491
Queen Mother, ritual sacrifice of, 450
Queen Sheri, 280
Queen Victoria, 216
Queen of *Captain EO* film, 121
Queen of England, 95
Queen of Hearts, 59
Queen, term used in ad, 276
Queenie, term for MI-6 women, 298
Quest for power, has Illuminati leaders captive, 496
Questionnaire, Biographical inventory, 416-419
Questions for journaling, 351
Questions not allowed alters of programming, only acceptance, 511
Questions, about High School & Teenage years, 418
Questions, about elementary school days, 417
Questions, about preschool childhood, 416-417
Questions, about roots, 416
Questions, that reasonable people should be raising, 497
Questions, the ability to ask needs to be encouraged, 511
Quicksand, legal, 469
Quid pro quo, granted DisneyWorld, 115
Quincy, CA, 303
Quinde, Herbert, 283

R&D stages, for elect. m.c., 138
R&R area for fallen angels, internal, 478
R-C Pictures Corp., 93
RCA, 93, 95
REM deprivation, 349
REM sleep, 13, 349-350, 443-444
RETLAW, 88
RF/ID, 172
RFR Radio-Frequency Radiation, 178
RKO studio, 93
RMCT masers, 175
RNA manipulation, 178
RNA synthesizing rhythms, 183
RNA transferases, 178
RNA, 28, 170, 178, 183, 235
RNA-synthesis stimulants, 28
RNM Remote Neural Monitoring, 175
RNM System, 139
RNM computerized systems for tracking, 299
ROM memory, 358
RV (Remote viewing, 137
Rabbi to the stars, 79
Rabbit embryo, 307
Racial tensions, manufactured, 65
Radar, British deception about, 66

Radar, on spy satellites, 503
Radar, passive, 503
Radiation Experiment file code no.s, 64
Radiation Experimentation, secret radiation file, 234
Radiation Genetic Lab & Chemical Mutagenesis, Univ. of Leiden, 235
Radiation experiments, 64, 234
Radiation research at White Sands, 305
Radiation, ability to change genes, 238
Radiation, ionizing, w/ chemicals, 234, 235
Radio Corp. of America, 95
Radio-Frequency Radiation, RFR, 178
Radioactive Distortions, secret radiation file, 234
Radioactive Material Contamination, secret radiation file, 234
Radioactive Waves, secret radiation file, 234
Radioactive verification, secret radiation file, 234
Radionthology, secret radiation files, 234
Rage, victim has lost toward p., 249
Railroads, near to underground sites, 302
Railway station analogy, 40
Rainbow Road to Oz, 100
Rainbow book, 46-48
Rainbow goddess, 131
Rainbow in relation to star, internal config., 191
Rainbow script, 44-46
Rainbow, 447
Rainbows, importance of, 354
Rainbows, in *Fantasia* film, 131
Rambo implant chips, 164
Rambo, independent spirit, 382
Ramo, Dr. Simon, 177
Rampa, T. Lobsang, 210
Rand Corporation, 307
Rand, Gloria, 201
Rape of six year old, 113
Rape, triggers eating disorder, 338
Rapid eye movement sleep REM, 349-350
Rappoport, Jon, 64
Rapport, inventory of bio to assist r., 416
Raschke, Carl A., 287
Rasputin, 97
Ratigan, 106
Rational thinkers, argue against supernatural forces, 496
Rational thinkers, claims about dreams, 440
Rationales, of internal hierarchies, 273
Rationales, of the abusers, 487-488
Raum, demon, 484
Raven (codename), 140
Raven Rock, 306
Raven headed demon, 481
Ray programming, 58
Raytheon Corp., 177
Reader's Digest, 164
Reagan, Ronald's mother, 72
Reagan, Ronald, 72, 98, 111, 118, 220, 288
Reagan, Ronald, assassination attempt, 57
Reagan, Ronald, political campaigns, 72
Real estate, southern California, 110
Reality for deeper alters is a facade, 460
Reality vs. Perception, 489
Reality, as programmed, 489
Reality, can seem like a drag, but hope is there, 346
Reality, its existence, 399
Realm of Gloom, 478
Realm of Lust, 478
Realms, of alters, 33
Reasoning From the Scriptures, 397
Reasoning, limitations, 397-398
Rebecca Baines Johnson Convalescent Home, 298
Reboutage, term, 215
Recall Service Notice, 16
Receptions, Fantasy, by Disney, 102
Recognition behaviors and genetics, 237
Recognition signals, 54
Recombination of DNA, 170
Record Group 226, OSS records, 213
Recording Your Family History, 419
Records, Dept. of State, 213
Records, benefit of, 376
Records, of Intelligence agencies sparse, 2
Recuperation time after first 3 trauma periods, 389-390
Red & White cars, 279
Red & black cars, 279
Red Dragon brand, 207
Red River Arsenal, TX, 306
Red Square (Area 51), NV, 304
Red Willow Co., near McCook, NE, 304
Red list, 58
Reddy, Joe, 72
Redondo Beach, CA, 105
Redwood trees, 72
Reece Family, 220
Rees, Brig. Gen. Dr. John Rawlings, 281
Reflecting on life, 454
Reflexes, death related, 359
Reflexology, 206
Reform schools, 334
Reformed Judaism, 217
Reframing process, example of, 512
Reframing, by programmer, 358
Refrigerators, used for programming, 472
Rehearsing, mental, for new tasks, 468
Reichman, Albert, 286-287
Reichman, Don Eduardo (Edward), 286
Reichman, Edward, 286
Reichman, Eva, 286
Reichman, Louis, 286
Reichman, Paul, 286-287

Reichman, Ralph, 286-287
Reichman, Renee, 286
Reichman, Samuel, 286
Reichmann family, 286-287
Reichmann, Shmuel, 287
Rein, Glenn, 186
Reincarnation, 269, 450
Reincarnation, Illuminati belief in, 450
Reincarnation, false evidence by prgd. DID, 3
Reinforcement of programming by objects, 198
Rejection by God, staged, 260
Relabelling of wines, illegal, 105
Relatives, response to therapy, 471
Relaxation, for hypnosis, 42-43
Relevance Program, 64
Reliance Corp., 88
Religion as a cover, 375
Religion of the Hearth, 273
Religion vs. spirituality, 375
Religion, organized and tyranny, 494
Religious Cover Programming, 64
Religious burdens, given men by modern pharisees, 368
Religious covers, 488
Religious fronts of Illuminati, 375, 488
Religious fronts, 286-287
Religious groups, do the day-to-day work for Illuminati, 375
Religious music, used in prgrmg, 33
Religious spirits, 368, 435, 492, 493
Religious words, may have bad connotations, 362
Remote Neural Monitoring RNM, 175
Remote Viewing (RV), definition, 138
Remote Viewing RV, 137, 138, 281
Remote Viewing companies, 137
Renaissance Weekend "meat market", 117
Renove, demon, 482
Reporting alters, 62, 64, 197, 278
Reporting alters, types (stages) of reporting alters, 197
Reprogramming, when it is done, 446
Reptilian brain, 12-13, 476, 514, 516
Reptilian brain, how to reach, 516
Reptilian brain, primary thinking center of programmers, 487
Reptilian brain, takes 8 hours training to control heartbeat, 516
Republic National Bank of NY, 105
Republican Party NY HQ, 9
Repunzel alter, 198-199
Research Triangle Park, North Carolina, 235
Research sites for genetics, sample of sites, 235
Research, secret, cranial, military, 223
Researchers, need for planned for, 11
Researchers, partial list of dirty ones, 281
Resignation, programming term, 451
Resonance Freks, for senses, 179
Resonance of Theta waves and skull, 219
Resonant frequencies of skull, 219
Resort, Heritage USA, 117
Resource, code word, 112
Respiratory rate, influenced by music, 129
Responsibilities of support team, divided up, 382
Responsibilities, tips to face new ones, 490
Responsibility comes with freedom, 494
Restaurants, used as fronts, 71
Restoration, restitution & reparation to deal with guilt, 455
Retina scans, 174
Retina, 165
Retina, silicon, 166
Retinal Chip, 165
Retinal ganglion cells, 165
Retreat Program, 64
Retrograde amnesia, 209
Return from Witches Mountain, 75
Return to Oz, film, 119
Revelation of Demons, rituals, 260
Reversals, cabal. golem magic, 253
Reverse programs, to heal victim, 466
Revlon, 107
Revolution 9, trigger word, 411
Revolution, term, 217
Rewards, for alter systems for good work, 383
Rexroat, Allison, 3
Reynolds, George, 218
Rhetoric demons, 482
Rhode Island, 217, 220
Rhodes Scholar, 91, 107
Rhodium, in brain, 138
Rhombic lip in the brainstem, granule cells of, 236
Rhymes, appear innocent, 262
Rhymes, internal, 480
Rhymes, programming power, 60
Rhythms, of human body, 183
Ribbon alters, internal, 125, 126, 270, 432, 521
Ribbons, two per Beta or Delta, 270
Richards Company, 162
Richest Cat in the World, 108
Richmond, Virginia, 181
Rickels, 26
Riddle, Rose Marie, 113
Riddles, internal, 480
Rides, Disney, tools used during rides for prgrmg, 128
Ridge implants, 163-164
Rifle, CO, 303
Right brain used during TV watching, 279
Right brain, used in indoctrination, 267
Right hand path, term, 388
Rimsley-Korsakov, 47
Rincon Mountain Base, AZ, 303

RING TOPICS
Ring finger, choice of, 191
Ring of Fire, internal, 191
Ring, Baphomet, of Madonna, 74
Ring, Eternal, 191
Ring, magic, 100
Ring, ruby, 119
Ring, sapphire, 93
Rings of power, two, reason & will, 496
Rings, 60, 63, 93, 100, 119, 190-191, 257
Rings, Illuminati, 63
Rings, Papal, 191
Rings, magical, biblical references to, 491
Rings, of Lucifer, 190
Rings, use of, 257
Rio de Janeiro, Brazil, 95
Riots, CIA article about, 66
Riska, B. 238
Risks, should be allowed, 383

RITUAL TOPICS
Rite of Spring, song, 97, 128
Rite to Remain Silent, programming, 62
Ritual Thefts of Birthright, 1 & 2, 259-260
Ritual battles, 483
Ritual date codes, 55
Ritual of Hell Fire, 262
Ritual paraphernalia, given to child to play with, 261
Ritual pattern-making, 498
Ritual times, activate internal mechanisms, 274
Ritual to Test Loyalty to Oaths, 261
Ritual with Hydra, foundation for 3-tap signal, 482
Ritual, Apple-Woodsman, 259
Ritual, Cutting the Penis, 262
Ritual, LaVey's, Man is God..., 285
Ritual, Sabbat, 484
Ritual, Satanic Wedding, 260
Ritual, Tin Man, 259
Ritual, Traitor's Death, 262-263
Ritual, child's first with ceremonial robes, 261
Ritual, circle rituals, 510
Ritual, final one, ritual murder of hierarchy mmbr, 426
Ritual, satanic, third eye opening, 211
Ritual, tibetan, third eye opening, 210-211
Rituals, Programming, first 16 listed, 258
Rituals, at Disneyland, 115
Rituals, cannibalism, 481
Rituals, creation, 128
Rituals, purpose, 245
Rituals, to reveal demons to child, 260
Rituals, witchcraft, 412 (See other ritual subjects.)
River Archeron, 478
River Archeron, invisible, 479
River Coytus, 478
River Lethe, 477-478
River Lethe, surrounding core, 477
River Phlegethon, 478
River Runs Deep Program, 64
River Styx, 129, 478
River of Forgetfulness, 477
Rivers of Blood, suicide program, 290
Rivers, guarded by fairies & goblins, 482
Rivers, internal, 129
Robert Mondavi winery, 112
Roberts, Oral, 118
Robertson, Pat, 117
Robes, ceremonial, child's first ritual with, 261
Robien, Emmanuel de, 142
Robinson, Calvin, 105
Robocop type soldier, 142
Robot alters, 483
Robotoids, organic/bionic, 307-313
Robots, 138, 168
Robots, benevolent, term, 252
Rochester, NY, 20
Rock & roll albums, use of, 257
Rock and roll, 14, 41, 60
Rock music for programming, 41
Rock music, used for traumas, 14
Rock, heavy metal, 74
Rockefeller Center, 105
Rockefeller Properties, Inc., 286
Rockefeller University, 238
Rockefeller's investment company for NY, 286
Rockefeller, John D., 220
Rockefeller, Nelson, 95-96, 220
Rockefeller, Steven and Walt Disney, 115
Rockefeller, Steven, 115
Rocks, internal, 58
Roentgen Ray, 50
Rogue agents, 68
Role confusion, good adult does bad things to child, 407
Role model, absence of, consequences, 476
Role models for child, 476
Roles, of team members can be switched, 382
Rolfing, 206
Rollins College, 109
Roman Empire, 75, 205
Roman customs, 273
Roman swimming pools resemble today's, 491
Roman toilets resemble today's, 491
Romany Tribe of Gypsies, 55
Rome, It., 97
Rome, ancient, 215, 395
Romy, term, 215
Rooms, dark, for programming, 202
Rooms, shelters, internal, 355
Roosevelt, Eleanor, 72, 260
Roosevelt, Franklin D., double of, 312

Roosevelt, Franklin Delano, 8, 96
Roosevelt, Theodore, 8
Roots, importance for a person, 416
Rose codes, 62
Rose, Alice, 15
Roselli, Johnny, 93
Rosemary's Baby, movie, 411
Rosenberg, Dr., 283
Rosenberg, Joe, 94
Rosenberg, Louis, 185
Rosenberg, Richard, 94
Rosicrucian Manual, 205
Rosicrucian Order for N. & S. America, 205
Rosicrucian chiropractors, 225
Rosicrucian material, 46
Rosicrucianism, 118, 204, 212, 213, 217
Rosicrucians, 204, 222, 224
Rosicrucians, connections to other groups, 225
Roswell Underground Labs, Roswell, NM, 235
Roswell, NM, 235
Roth, Joe, 73-74
Rothschild family, 87, 89, 105
Rothschild's winery, 89
Rothschild, Baron Guy de, title pg. chp. 2
Rothschild, Jacob de, 88
Rothschild, Lord, 307
Rothschilds, 310
Rothschilds, 87, 88, 89, 105, 107, 275, 286-287
Rothschilds, genetic research, 310
Rotten Egg Program, 64
Rou Gang, 206
Rousche, Patrick, 166
Rowan Tree Witch Day, 27
Rowan, 27
Roy E. Disney Prodns., 87
Royal & Sun Alliance Insurance Group, 275
Royal Commission...Study of Chiropractors, Osteopaths..., 226
Royal Family, British, 77, 94
Royal Project, Hillary's slave group, 282
Ruach, hebrew word defined, 429
Rub-a-Dub-Dub, 59
Rubicon, how put in, 32
Rubicon, the, 477
Ruby slippers, 447
Ruby, 314
Ruby, Jack, 282
Rumania, 284
Rumi, term, 215
Runaway Brain, film, 121
Runway, at Area 51, 305
Runways, asphalt, internal, 130
Rushing water sounds, 482
Russell, 235
Russell, Bertrand, 400
Russell, Charles Taze, 218
Russell, Dick, 285
Russell, Dr. Woolsworth, 283
Russia, 4, 70, 97, 231, 297
Russia, U.S. Ambassador to, 107
Russia, society structured, analogy, 353
Russian Czars, 97
Russian Roulette, 22
Russian pilots flying U.S. Stealths, 497
Russian roulette, 380
Russians, falsely blamed by American handlers, 461
Russians, in Rocky Mtn. underground bases, 185
Russians, tracking abilities on satellites, 503
Rutherford's winery, 89
Rutherford, CA, 87

S-2, S-4, S-6, S-66, Groom Lake, 305
SAPO, Swedish Police, dirty, 301
SBC Communications, 105
SBS, (IBM subs.), 142
SCAN (Swinburne Centre for Appl. Neurosc.), 142
SINCERE method of help, 382, 324
SPIN principle, 204
SQUASH transmitter, 161
SQUID (Supercond. Quantum Interf. Device), 138
SQUIRT transmitter, 161
SRA victims, types of dreams of, 440
SS Skeleton Collection, 213
SS, 289
SWAT teams, 503
Saadiah, 252
Sabbat ritual, 484
Sabel, Bernhard, 164
Sabnack, demon, 484
Sabotage of self-achievements, 407, 409
Sacramento, CA, 232
Sacred heart tatoo, 62
Sacrifice of unbaptized babies, 483
Sacrifice, of virgin by dancing, 97
Sacrificed babies, 478
Sacrificed twin trick, 510
Sacrifices, human, 450
Sadat, Anwar, 72
Sadism, related to C-Sections, 15
Sadistic behavior, can be trained in most everyone, 487

SAFETY ISSUES
Safe House, 369, 383-384
Safe places, internal, 374-375, 471
Safe room, internal, 495
Safe rooms, can become Palaces of pain, 495
Safety Issues, of support team, 371
Safety issues, 324, 325, 369, 371, 384

Safety issues, guide to various pertinent articles, 369
Safety issues, of slave, 369
Safety mechanisms against access triggers, 325
Safety, deep reasons it is important for therapy, 430
Safety, important to 1st brain, 514
Safety, issues, importance, 324
Safford AZ base, 303
Safra, Edmond, 105
Safra, Jacob, 105
Sage Canyon Rd., Napa Valley, 87
Sage Saying of Still, Internet website, 222
Sagittarius, 190
Sakarto of Indonesia, 72
Salem, NC, V.A., 301
Salem, OR, title pg. App. 2
Salinas, CA, 230
Salisbury, NC, V.A., 301
Salley, dream research, 442
Sally Corridor, nickname for Area 51, 304
Salmon, 183
Salomon, Richard, 107
Salt Lake City, UT, 79, 218, 301
Salten, Felix, 80
Saltine crackers, encourage L-Tryptophan, 351
Saltzman, Mark, 164
Saludo Amigos, 96
Salva, Victor, 76, 134
Salvation Package, provided by God, 494
Salvation comes in many tenses, 491
Salvation, obtaining it, issues for multiples, 490-494
Salvation, spiritual armor, 364-367
Salvation, term, 366
Samael, 273
Samaritan, good, story, 435-436
Samba, 96
Samphire alters, 196
San Bernandino, CA, 94
San Bernandino county, CA, 303
San Diego, CA, 170
San Francisco Chronicle, 74, 107, 108
San Francisco Examiner, 104
San Francisco Police Dept., 288, 296
San Francisco, CA, 103, 163, 232, 283, 285
San Jose Civic Center, CA, 185
San Jose, CA, 185
San Quentin Prison, 232
Sanctification by Holy Spirit, 500
Sanctuaries, internal, vulnerability of, 495
Sanctuary, safe room, 495
Sanders, Maxine, 411
Sandia Labs, and Disney, 115
Sandia Mountains, NM, 305
Sandia National Labs in HA, 300
Sandia National Labs, 117
Sandia National Labs, Kirtland AFB, NM, 300, 305
Sandoz Labs, Basle, Switzerland, 235
Sandyk, R., 179
Sanger, Margaret, 9
Sanitation workers, Disneyland, 82
Sanskrit, 229
Santa Barbara, CA, 49, 303
Santa Catalina Mountains base, 303
Santa Cruz, CA, 230
Santa Monica, CA, 230
Santa Rosa, CA, 303
Sapphire, 190, 314
Saratoga, CA, 230
Sardonyx, 190
Sarnoff, David, 95
SarwerFoner, 26
Satan figure in Rosemary's Baby, 411
Satan's Kingdom, built on fear, 434
Satan's Kingdom, reproduced into the mind of the slave, 478
Satan's chain of command, 255
Satan's mind resembles the 1st brain, 517
Satan's overall tactics, 434
Satan, 5, 132-133, 199, 255, 256, 262, 285, 345, 364, 368, 398, 401, 475, 479, 484, 494, 496
Satan, a control-freak, 255
Satan, a corrupter and imitator, 364
Satan, attacks weakest link, 368
Satan, demon, 199
Satan, enjoys polluting an innocent child in marriage, 494
Satan, glorified by kiss, 484
Satan, in film, 95
Satan, internalized, 510
Satan, mind of, 401
Satan, picture of, 194
Satan, rape in ritual, 389
Satanic Bible, the, 194
Satanic Cults, understanding practices of, 496-499
Satanic Toys provided, 261
Satanic Wedding Programming Ritual, the, 260
Satanic power, origin of, 496
Satanic rituals w/ self-inflicted cuts, biblical references to, 491
Satanic rituals, at Disney Amusement Ctrs, 75
Satanism, 401 (see other subjects)
Satellite Surveillance, 503
Satellites, NWO, 70, 176
Sattui's winery, 89
Saturn, 48, 218
Saudi Arabia, 105, 357
Saudi Prince Turqi al-Faisal, son of, 105
Saudis, bail out EuroDisney, 75
Sauniere, 97
Savage, Randy, 280
Saving and Loan scandal, 497

Savior figure, 457
Sc Scale, MMPI, 335
Scalar energy, 180
Scalar technology, 181
Scanning Tunneling Device, 168
Scanning Tunneling Microscope STM, 167-168
Schacter, Daniel L., 248
Schaff, Eric, 164
Schenck, Joseph, 111
Schenck, Nicholas, 111
Schizoaffective, 335
Schizophrenia, caused by poor CSF fluxuations, 228
Schlesinger, Leon, 93
Schnabel, Jim, 137
Schneider, Sidney, 269-270
Schnoebolen, Bill, 211
Scholem, Gershom, 252
School of Medicine, Yale University, 164
School, clues from performance of victim, 370
Schools, Public, teaching visualization, 43
Schools, make trips to DisneyWorld, 102
Schubert's Ave Maria, 96
Schubert, 124, 411
Schuller, Robert's, chain, 191
Schuller, Robert, 118, 191
Schumann Resonances, 181-182
Schwartzenegger, Arnold, 57
Sci-fi gurus, 138
Sci-fi stories, 261
Science News, 248
Science magazine, 35, 175, 219, 238
Science, viewed by Smith & others as savior of mankind, 492
Scientific American, 36
Scientific developments, reasons for secrecy, 308
Scopolamine, 28-29
Scorpio, 190
Scotland, 214
Scott General Hospital, Lexington KT area, 300
Scott, Oz, 108
Scottish Rite mind-control research, 281
Scottish Rite, 217, 281, 282, 306
Scrambling alters, 374
Screamer alters, 377
Screen Actor's Guild, 111
Screen, 6'x 6', 269
Screen, term for the system's grid, 193
Screens, blank, in programming, 44
Screens, used for LSD prgrmg, 32-33
Scribbles, used in programming, 470
Scripp, Betty Knight, 107
Script, programming, for Pegasi alters, 445
Scripts for programming, 193-194
Scripts, and drugs, 26
Scripts, for sadism, 487
Scripts, for twinning, 508-509
Scripts, new ones, can be given, 422
Scriptures, used in programmg, 63
Scroll & Key Fraternity, 106
Scroll of Set, 288, 289
Sea of nothingness, 128
Seagram's MCA/Universal conglomerate, 107
Seal Island, 97
Seal of the Holy One, 253
Sealing programs, 414
Search & Destroy training, 304
Searching for Memory, 248
Seashell images, 22
Seasonal rhythms, 183
Seasons, programming script, 126
Seattle, WA, 208, 283
Secobarbital Sodium, 27
Seconal Sodium, 27
Seconal, 27, 29-30
Seconal, programming use, 26-27
Second Beast, Aquino claims to be, 289
Secrecy of Cranial Osteopathy, 223-224
Secrecy, system of, extensive, 497
Secret Agenda, 186
Secret Chambers, dissociated subc. areas, 273
Secret doors, for programmers, 61
Secret government, title pg. chp. 1
Secret rituals, time for during teenage years, 418
Secretiveness, 409
Secrets, are being released so that they are not understood, 474
Sections, term, 273
Secure Data Products, 168
Security, Disney, spy on workers, 115
Seduction programming, 114, 270
Seed of Satan, 129
Seelisberg, Switz., 230
Seera, demon, 484
Sefer Yezirah, 252
Selection, of Adults for m.c., 16
Self Mutilation Program, 64
Self righteous spirits, 492
Self-concept, 14-15
Self-destruct programs, 272
Self-doubts of support team members, 420
Self-doubts, ways to dump, 421
Self-forgiveness, to achieve, 500
Self-governing mechanisms, enhanced with spinning, 202
Self-hypnosis, 465
Self-hypnosis, can be a means to freedom, 458
Self-image, and God's plan, 253
Self-image, purpose for, 188
Self-inflicted harm, 373-375
Self-love, narcissism of programmers, Reptilian brain

thinking, 487
Self-mutilation, 422
Self-preservation tied to self-image, 188
Self-punishment, 407
Self-respect, 407
Self-sense, created by peptide release during sensory exp., 424
Self-trust, 189
Selfhood and maturity, 243
Selfhood linked to choice & values, 243
Selfhood, definition, 243
Semen, 309
Semen, of Kingpins saved, 10
Sendai virus, 309
Sendai virus, fused with donor nucleus, 309
Sense of danger, absent, 410
Sense of self, stripped from deeper spin alters, 460
Sense8, 186
Senses, of slave, closed off, 511
Senses, used in hypnosis, 38, 458
Sensory Deprivation Tank, temp.,31
Sensory Deprivation Tanks, 23, 30-34, 55, 66, 197, 200, 396, 431
Sensory deprivation traumas, 23
Sensory experiences, tagged by peptides to attach self to, 424
Sequence, for entry into a system, 193
Sequoia National Park, 72
Seraphim, demons, (not to be confused with God's), 484
Serial killers, with DID, 2
Serotonin, 36
Serpentine Skin, 184
Set the stage, how done, 26
Setting the stage for healing, 490
Seven Seas Lagoon, 102
Seven deadly sins, pride, avarice, lechery, anger, gltny, envy, sloth, 478
Sex, and eating disorders, 338
Sex, un-procreative, 9
Sex, used in healing ritual, 9
Sexual Debauchery, chart, 408
Sexual behaviors and genetics, 237
Sexual development, too-early, 408
Sexual flashbacks, 335
Sexual manipulation of programmed twins, 509
Sexual problems, sexual issues, 408
Sexual programming, 34, 56, 59, 299
Sexual training, 130
Shaba lidoma, demon, 484
Shabbetai Donnolo, 252
Shadow alters, 124, 200, 247
Shadow government, title pg. chp. 1
Shah of Iran, 72
Shake down money, 110
Shamans, 37, 216
Shamans, use of hypnosis, 37
Shambhala, 46
Shamby, nickname for Michael Aquino, 294
Shame, 261, 262, 407, 409, 500
Shame, chart, 409
Shame, feelings of, 393
Shamrock Broadcasting Co., 87
Shamrock Holdings, Inc., 88
Shanghai, China, 162
Shaolin Buddhist monks, 206
Shaolin Long Fist Kung Fu, 208
Shaolin Monastery, 206-207
Shaolin Temple, 208
Shapiro, D. 516
Shatner, William, 201
Shattering, done after an assassination mission, 501
Shax, demon, 484
Sheinberg, Sid, 121
Sheldon, Sidney, 299
Shell Labs, Kent, England, 235
Shellfish, oxygen consumption changed, 183
Shells, imagery in programmg, 62
Shelter, limited, from electronic m.c., 183
Shem, possession of, 7
Shemhamphorash, 193
Sherman brothers, 115
Shiatsu, 206
Shield of Faith, 366-367
Shielding, Inc., 462
Shields, demonic, 485
Shock Permanence Program, 64
Shock, electrical, during programming, 128
Shop, term, for programming site, 297
Shu, demon/spirit, 254
Shuttle flights, & White Sands, 305
Sickle, use in progrmmg, 63
Siddhi TM program, 230
Sidis, B., 442
Sierra Club, 103
Sierra Nevada Mountains, CA, 303
Siggurd, UT, 79
Sight, how it is accomplished, 165
Sign language codes, 62
Sign of Distress, 63
Sign of Faith, 63
Sign of Preservation, 63
Sign of Satan, 63
Sign of touching Crown of Head, 63
Signals Intelligence EMF scanng network, 175
Signature, of Walt Disney, 80
Silastic Melatonin-filled implant, 164
Silastic, used for implants, 162
Silence Teaching Trauma, 22
Silence programs, 62

Silent nurturing, 454
Silicon Mirage: The Art & Science of Virtual Reality, 186
Silicon Valley, CA, 167
Silicone gel-filled devices, 172
Silver coding, 271
Silver cord, 210, 263, 265, 477
Silver cord, how it is laid in, 477
Silver veil wall, internal, 479
Silver, Joe, 107
Silver, colloidal, 26
Silverado Country Club, 104
Silverado Vineyards, 90
Silverton, OR, 284
Simmons, Menno, 396
Simon, W.G., 113
Simpson, Nicole, 66
Simpson, O.J., 65-67, 87
Sims, Derrell, 184
Sin of wrath, programming, 478
Sin, 493
Sin, belief against its existence, 268
Sinatra, Frank, 72, 104, 111
Sinclair, 235
Sinclair, Lillith, 284, 289
Sine wave analogs, 180
Singing Forest, internal, 480
Singing tree alters, 451
Singing trees, 119
Sins, only accountable for what we have done, 494
Sinusoidal carrier wave, 180
Siren face, 276
Sirius, 63
Sisters of Light alters, 497
Sisters of Light, Illuminati rank, 481
Sisyphus, mythological figure, 421
Site R, name for Blue Ridge Summit, PA underground facility, 306
Sitri, demon, 484
Situated agents, 185
Skeleton Collection, 213
Skeletons, raised in Fantasia, 132
Skepticism, plays into the programming script, 387
Skepticism, total, self-defeating, 399
Skin, special for Aquaman types, 233
Sklansky, David, 99
Skokie, IL, 269
Skouras, Spyros, 111
Skull & Bones, Order of, 11
Skull Structure, 226-227
Skull bones, discussed by Swedenborg, 218
Skull manipulation to get dissociative victims, 226
Skull membranes, 228
Skull, manipulation, history of, 206-232
Skull, resonant frequencies, 219
Skulls, of infants, remolded, 226
Slave, loses the ability to trust their own senses, 398
Slave, sexual, 243-244
Slavery, white, 115
Slaves, disobedient, punished by Maleficia, 483
Slaves, non-hierarchy, 358

SLEEP TOPICS
Sleep Temples, Egyptian, 37
Sleep deprivation of Tibetan children, 210
Sleep positions of infants, effect skull shape, 226
Sleep stages (patterns) listed, 350
Sleep, 348-351
Sleep, electronically created, 182
Sleep, intermix methods to get, 348
Sleep, mind relaxes, memories surface, 403
Sleep, mischief that happens during, 349
Sleep, trad. witch drug for, 27
Sleeper agents, 68
Sleeping Beauty Castle, 116
Sleeping Beauty film, 87, 96, 132
Sleeping Beauty theme for core, 431, 433
Sleeping Beauty, 272
Sleeping disorders, 406
Sleepy-part of mind, 189
Slipper, White Chocolate, 102
Slippers, ruby, 119
Sloth, part of mind, 189
Smart Moves: Why Learning is Not All In Your Head, 502
Smell, how the sense of s. is used, 393
Smell, sense of, linked closely to emotions, 393
Smells, used for programming, 41
Smith, Adam, 491-492
Smith, George A., 218
Smith, Joseph, Jr., 218
Smith, Manuel J., 343
Smith, William, 220
Smoke Tree Ranch, 77
Smoke, can trigger fear, 342
Smoking centers, used for m.c., 16
Snake swallowing its tail, 60
Snakes, 392
Snakes, used in programming, 23
Snow White & the Seven Dwarfs, 95, 101-102
Snow White film, 94
Snow White's Adventures, 101
Snow White's forest, Disneyland, 116
Snow White, 93
Snuff films, by Disney, 73
Social behavior and Genetics, 236-237
Social peeking orders, est. by 1st brain, 514
Social relationships, formation of, 424
Socialist Party, U.S.A., 81
Socialists, 217

Socialization, 243
Society for the Investigation of Human Ecology, 282
Society of Indep. Motion Pict. Prod., 95
Society of agents, natural mind, 188
Soder Hospital, Stockholm, Sweden, 301
Sodomy, 265
Sodomy, justifications for, 488
Solar flares, 183
Solomon, Dr. Susan, 233
Solomon, Testament of, 191
Somatization, 335
Song Mountain, Henan Prov., China, 206
Song of the South, 81
Song, Your Nobody called today, 466
Songs, for programming, 60
Sonic beams used for m.c., 143
Sophis. Electromagnetic Fields Program, 64
Sorcerer's world view, 497
Sorcerer, use of will power, 496-497
Sorceress, Internal, alter/demon, 201
Soul (or spirit), 425-433
Soul Braiding, 265
Soul pacts, 483
Soul ties, 314
Soul work by Illuminati, 264-265
Soul, demon in charge of, 483
Soul, human, issues of, same in ancient times, 491
Soul, scientific search for, 206
Soulless bodies, (see Golem)
Souls, demanded by Beelzebub, 481
Souls, of missing twins, 15-16
Souls, splintered, 264
Sound Track, person, of Fantasia film, 129
Sound bites, 176
Sound energy, 138
Sound, like rushing water, 482
Soundproof rooms, used for programming, 472
Sounds, how microwaves create, 181
South Africa, 141, 167
South America, 95-96, 215, 231, 357
South American country, setting for film, 411
South Boston, MA, 87
South Carolina, 107, 217
South Dakota, 220
Southern Baptists, infiltration by Illum., 259
Southern Utah, towns under total control, 279
Soviet electro research, 175
Soviets, 106
Space trainer, spin torture machines, 202
Spain, 68, 83-84, 104, 161
Spanish government, involved with Disney, 84
Speaking in Tongues demon, 482
Spears, Benzak, Salomon & Farrell, 107
Special Forces, U.S., 116
Special Ops Group, Navy Seals, 280
Special effects artists, Disney, 115
Special purpose fragments, 193
Specialization, by Europeans, 214
Specialization, of programming, 357
Spectrum Analyzers, 463
Spectrum analyzer, 461
Speculum, demon, 484
Speed (the drug), 27
Speed boat racing, 87
Speed, used by sexual alters for endurance, 197
Spells, term, 192
Spencer, Henry, 3
Sperm banks, 10
Spetnaz, 305
Spheno-basilar symphysis locking, 228
Sphenoid, 204, 211
Sphere system configuration, 432
Sphinx statue at Army Intelligence, 297
Spider web pearl clothes, title pg. chp. 12
Spider web, image for mind control, 125
Spiegel, 37
Spies, created from stalkers, 12
Spies, internal, 198
Spies, on Disney employees, 99
Spin alters, 377
Spin and Marty, 100
Spin families, 202
Spinal column, 205
Spinal cord injuries, 223
Spinal cord, floats in CSF, 228
Spinal implants, 172
Spinal surgical techniques, used for programming, 415
Spinners, for creating spinner families, 125
Spinning Traumas, 23
Spinning, 201-202
Spiral, the, during NDE, 263
Spire, Mike, 105
Spirit Releasement Therapy..., 15
Spirit guide, of Aquino, placed into victims, 290
Spirit of Darkness, 323
Spirit of Elijah, Mormon programming, 265
Spirit of Fear, 23, 254, 342
Spirit of Fear, brings a curse, 342
Spirit of God, 4:13
Spirit of Life, 345
Spirit of Mammon, 435
Spirit of Murder, 483
Spirit of Pederasty, 484
Spirit of Sodomy, 484
Spirit of a victim, 425-433
Spirit of the Lord, 342
Spirit tree, 192
Spirit tree, as the holy spirit, 192
Spirit, Bes, 254
Spirit, Geb, 254

Spirit, Lanello, 50
Spirit, Pan, 254
Spirit, discussion about, 429
Spirit, generational, 192, 264
Spirit, human, 388
Spirit, issues of, 491
Spirit, method it is sucked out by Illuminati, 265
Spirit, mother, 131
Spirit, of child victim, 515-516
Spirit, personal, conjured w/ drug, 27
Spirit-self, 517
Spiritism, 221
Spiritist mediums, 3
Spirits of Control, 375
Spirits of Denial, 375
Spirits of Guilt, 375
Spirits of Judgment, 375
Spirits of Obesity (gluttony), 375
Spirits of Religion, 435
Spirits of Shame, 375
Spirits of fear, 367
Spirits of judgment, 368
Spirits of religion, 368, 435, 492, 493
Spirits of self-righteousness, 492
Spirits, Geographic, 193
Spirits, Guard dogs, 254
Spirits, Knochers, 483
Spirits, Lying, 254
Spirits, control over, 498
Spirits, evil, guardian, 254
Spirits, generational, 44
Spirits, of Confusion, 254
Spirits, of Despair, 254
Spirits, of Legion, 255
Spirits, of Perversion, 254
Spirits, of Torment, 254
Spirits, planted in fetus, 259
Spiritual Issues, 375
Spiritual armor, 364-367
Spiritual manipulation of victims, 251-265
Spiritual power, of hierarchy alters, 474
Spiritual warfare, situation where needed, 367
Spiritualist meetings, 220
Splash, movie, 100
Split-brain films, 501
Split-brain programming, 501-502
Splits, early one portrayed, 315
Splitting of core, 126
Splitting script, 127
Splitting sequence, 432
Splitting the mind, chart, 409
Spoofer transmitters, 184
Spoon-feeder agent, 68
Sportsman device ad, 275
Spotlight, 134
Spring Mountain Wineries, 105
Springmeier, Fritz, Cert. Graphoan., 84
Springmeier, Fritz, Counselling instructors of, 464
Springmeier, Fritz, as 4-H counselor, 43
Springmeier, Fritz, experience with getting people to understand m.c., 255
Springmeier, Fritz, experiences w/ Schnoebolen, 211
Springmeier, Fritz, house on Lincoln St., 313
Springmeier, Fritz, on speaking circuit, 7
Springmeier, Fritz, pulse monitor incident with alter, 489
Springmeier, Fritz, speaking & radio shows, 1
Springmeier, Fritz, time as Amishman, 215
Springmeier, Fritz, time as West Point cadet, 229
Springmeier, Fritz, time at Beast Barracks, 41
Springmeier, Fritz, visits to Disney Amusement Parks, 134
Spurzheim, Johann Gaspar, 216
St. Albans, VT, 305
St. Albans, West Virginia, 275
St. Charles Borromeo, San Diego, CA, 20
St. Elizabeth Hospital, Wash., D.C., 281
St. Francis Mission, Catholic Church, KT, 300
St. Francis Mountains, MO, 304
St. Francis Yacht Club, 87
St. Helena, CA, 89, 105
St. Joseph Med. Ctr., 87
St. Louis, MO, 288, 304
St. Lukes Church, Suitland, MD area, 20
St. Mark's Hospital, 301
St. Peterburg, FL, 283
St. Temple, TX, V.A., 301
St. Therese Church, 20
Staff D, CIA assassination group, 298
Stage of wanting independence, 488
Stalin, 198
Stalkers, creation of, 11-13
Stalkers, purposes for, 12
Stallone, Slyvester, 57
Standard Programming, installation of, 269
Stanford Business Grads, Mob, & Disney, 112
Stanford Business School, 110
Stanford Press, 234
Stanford Research Institute, Menlo Park, CA, 98, 114, 140, 160, 167, 177 235
Stanford University, 88
Stanford, mafia plans for, 110
Star Speeder, programmg location, Disneyland, 116
Star Trek programming, 64
Star Trek the Next Generation, 308
Star Trek, 106, 201, 308
Star Wars, 116, 121, 193, 203, 290
Star alters, 124, 126, 127
Star appearing demons, 482
Star based system, 190

Star configurations, 191
Star dust, 314
Stardust doll, title pg. chp. 12
Starlight consciousness, 44
Stars and spider web, 125
Stars, important ones, 63
Starvation Tactics Program, 64
Starvation, eating disorder, 337-339
State Department, 298
State Dept., U.S., 104
State of Mind and CSF flow, 229
States of consciousness, regulation of, 424
States of the mind, terms in use primitive, 443
Station, the, near Amarillo, 298
Stealth aircraft, 304
Stealth bomber, 497
Steamboat Willie, 78, 93
Stein, Ruth, 74
Steinberg, Saul, 88
Steiner, Solomon, 516
Stella Adler Theater Studio, NYC, 103
Stella, role by Midler, 121
Step by step learning of mind, 511
Steps, hypnosis term, 456
Steps, value small steps forward, 421
Sterling & Monterey Vineyards, 112
Stern Illuminati family, 111
Stern, A.M., 111
Steroids, use of, 35
Steven, research, 160
Stevens, Dr., 3
Stewart, R.J., 498
Sticky-goo gun, 186
Stiffed-The True Story of MCA,...& the Mafia, 107
Still, Andrew T., family of, 221
Still, Andrew Taylor, 217, 220, 221, 224
Still, Charles, 222
Still, Ed, 221
Still, Gen., 222
Still, James, 222
Still, Shirley, 462
Still, William, 222
Stimoceiver of Delgrado's, 144
Stock Market, crash of '29, 79
Stockholm, Sweden, 301
Stockwood, England, 216
Stokes, Cecil, 46
Stokes, Daniel, 231
Stokes, Gordon, 227, 231
Stokowski, Leonard, 46, 124
Stonehenge, Eng., 119
Stories, therapeutic use, 464
Storms, geomagnetic, 179
Storms, internal, programming imagery, 129
Stormy, nickname for Cpt. White, 283
Storz Instrument Co.'s implant, 163
Strasburg, Ger., 213
Strassburg Anatomical Institute, 213
Strategic Deception in the Second World War..., 254
Strategies for confronting accessors, 325
Stratford, Eng., 214
Strauss, Robert, 106
Stravinsky, Igor, 46, 97
Straw man programming, 198
Strength of will, 245
Strength, inner, 454
Stress hormones, 420
Stress, how to handle, 420
Stretch, Olive, 212
Strieber, Whitley, 184
Stringers, of programming, 466
Stripper alters, 484
Strongholds, in the mind, 368
Struchnine sulfate, 29
Structure Clinical Interview, sect. on eating disorders, 339
Structure/Function, 205, 227
Structures of a system, 61
Structures of the mind, 358
Structures, basic, of God & Satan, 364-365
Structures, small diagrams of, 202
Structuring is the engineering to brace up control, 376
Structuring, 124-133, 187-202, 390
Structuring, mapping of, 470-471
Structuring, the ins & outs, and treatment for, 376-377
Strychnine, 29
Stuart, 235
Study part of mind, 189
Stun Guns, 200,000 volt, 143
Stytz, Lt. Col. Martin, 185
Styx, internal, 129
Sub-Chromatid mutations, 239
Subarachnoid space, 228
Subconscious mental activity, 358
Subconscious mind, ways it protects itself, 405-410
Subconscious thoughts, resonance frek., 179
Subconscious work, in witchcraft, 412
Subconscious, learning, 249
Subliminal & photic stimulation of brain, 270
Submarines, 100
Subpersonalities, of normal people, 517
Subproject #74, Deep Creek Cabins, 299
Substitutes for real goals, 245
Subsystems, of thinking, 424
Success rates, clues they are exaggerated, 356
Succubus, demon, female, 484
Such Things Are Known, 186
Suffering, 378-379
Suffering, diagnostic chart, 379
Sugar Grove, 306

Sugar, used for programming, 41
Suggestions, duration of, 39
Suicidal Mission Program, 64
Suicidal thoughts, 380-381, 406
Suicide Diagnostic Chart, 381
Suicide Implant, 172
Suicide alters, 194
Suicide alters, dealing with, 380-381
Suicide codes, 520
Suicide programming, 39
Suicide programs, 64, 374
Suicide programs, effects on DeNicola, 64
Suicide, long term work on issues, 381
Suicide, techniques used, 194
Suitland, MD, 20, 304
Sulfhydryls, 240
Sullivan, Ed, 77
Summit Lighthouse, 49
Summit University, 49
Sun acupoint, 207
Sun worship, allusion to in prgrmg film, 124
Sun, internal, 122
Sun-Tzu, 67
Supercomputer, Thinking Machines, 106
Superconducting Quantum Infterf. Device SQUID, 138
Superconductivity, 138
Supernatural help of demons, given to child victim, 260-261
Support Team, difficulties for, 420
Support person, their constant presence helps, 370
Support team, cannot afford to be sloppy one single day, 372
Support team, joy in helping, 356
Support team, list of potential participants, 485
Support team, needs to know how the mind works, 490
Support team, organizing one, 382-384
Support team, reasons for, 382
Supreme Council of the 33° Scottish Rite, 190, 302
Surgeons, & bone-setters, 216
Surgeons, using nanotechnology, 168
Surgeons, who take out implants, 462
Surgery, use of hypnotism, 37
Surveillance of world communications, 304
Surveillance, 278
Surveillance, dealing with, 503
Survey for Eating Disorders, 339
Survival mechanisms, 514
Survival mechanisms, of slaves, 336
Survival mode, opens person up to control by fears, 476
Survival of victim demanded mental structures, 516
Survival thinking, of victim, 394
Survival, linked to dissociation, 424
Survivor instinct, 345
Survivor, how the term carries denial & whitewash, 369
Surwit, R., 516
Sussman, Gerald J., 140
Sutherland Cranial Teaching Foundation, Denver, 223
Sutherland, Adah Strand, 224
Sutherland, J.D., 424
Sutherland, W.G., research hijacked by occult world, 224
Sutherland, William G., 212, 222, 224, 227, 228, 235
Sutleges (pacts written in blood, then swallowed), 483
Sutures of skull bones, 219, 228
Sutures, do not fuse, 228
Sutures, in skull, 219, 228
Swaggart, Jimmy, 2
Swami Rama, trance expert, 444
Swamps, internal, 129
Swanson, Robert, 299
Swastika, on Disney cartoon, 82, 111
Swastika, used by LaVey, 283
Swearing oaths programming, 59
Sweden, 301
Swedenborg Masonic Rite, 218
Swedenborg, Emanuel, 218
Swedish aristocracy, 218
Swedish, 461
Sweet family, 220
Sweet, 66
Swinburne Ctr. for Appl. Neurosc. SCAN, 142
Swiss Audio implants, 162
Swiss Lab, in nanotech., 168
Switches, alter, 423
Switches, detection of, 336
Switching, control over, 330
Switching, happens after a long session, 340
Switching, ingrained, 376
Switching, results from panic, 355
Switzerland, 90, 105, 162, 168, 230, 235
Sword of Moses, the, 257
Sword of the Spirit, 366
Sylvius Labs, Leiden, Netherlands, 235
Symbion implant, 162
Symbiosis, Man-machine, 310
Symbiosis, of man to earth, 183
Symbiote, 170
Symbology, in programming, 247
Symbols, deceptive, to entrap, 365
Syncom patient self-tester, 162
Synergic effect of several approaches, 519
Syntel implants, 143, 144-147, 461
Syntel implants, proof of, 144-147
Syntel, 6, 144-147, 186, 281
Syntel, definition, 138
Synthetic People, definition, 310
Synthetic Proteins, 170
Synthetic actors, 185

Synthetic humans, 307-313
Synthetic telepathy, 182
Syrian doctor, 23
System Paraguard, 190
System configurations, 190, 432
System, alter system, 188
System, of alters, 353
System, who speaks for a system?, 422
Systems, basic designs of, 190
Systems, number of alters, 336
Sytry, demon, 484

T Codes, Toddler Code, 520-521
T Memory, 520-521
T'ai Chi Chuan (Great Origin Fist), 208
T'ai Chi, 208
T-13 Complex Studies Group, 300
T-waves, 143
TBN Trinity Broadcasting Network, 117
TBS Trinity Broadcasting Systems, Inc., 117
TM & Cranial manipulation, 230
TM & mind-control, 230
TM, at West Point, 229
TM, gets money from U.S. gov't., 230
TM, headquarters at Seelisberg, Switz., 230
TPN, Trading Partner No., 173
TRIMS, USAF, Texas, 300
TRW Co, 105, 142-143
TSD activities of CIA, title pg. intro.
TSD, Office of Technical Services, 299
TV Show, *Priestly Sins*, 282
TV ad, possible trigger, 57
TV antennas, used for mind control, 180
TV broadcasting antennas, use of for syntel, 176
TV commentators, 68
TV, Christian, 117
TV/FM range signals used for m.c., 180
TVs, 462-463
Table of Contents, Part 2, 320
Table of Grand Druid Council, 199
Tables, rotating, for spin tortures, 202
Tabs, associated with Hydra, 482
Tactile Feedback, 185
Tag team tracking, 278
Taggart, David, 118
Tahiti, 215
Tai Yang, 207
Tai Yin, 207
Tai-Yang Lung Tao, 208
Tainrong Acupoint, 207
Taiyang Acupoint, 207
Tales of Power, 496
Talking to the fear & anxiety, 467
Talland, Dr., 28
Talmidim Chakham, 286
Talmud, 488
Talmudic jewish groups, 286
Tame, David, 123
Tan coding, 271
Tang Dynasty, China, 207
Tangier, Sp. North Africa, 286
Tango dresses, 74
Taoist Priest, label for Bruce Lee, 209
Taos Pueblo, NM, 305
Taos, NM, 305
Tape recorders, may be helpful in therapy sessions, 465
Tapes, of Mother's heartbeat, 14
Tapestries, used as mirror gateways, 201
Tapestry, structuring of, 201
Target, term for killing, 195
Tart, Charles, 299
Tate, Sharon, 411
Tatoos, on slaves, 62
Taurus, 190
Tavistock Institute, England, 281, 299
Tavistock Programmers, 281
Tavistock seminar on mother-infant interactn, 424
Tayi, Dr. Sudha, 281
Taylor Illuminati family, 216
Taylor family, 215, 216
Taylor, Gordon Rettry, 310
Taylor, emcee for Fantasia, 124-132
Team, reason it is created, 382
Teams, monitor each other, 278
Teams, more reasons why we need support teams, 507
Teams, of slaves, 4-person, 510
Teams, reasons for, 421
Teamwork, benefits from, 382
Teddy Bear, 359
Tehachapi Mountains, CA, 303
Tehachapi Ranch, Tehachapi Canyon, CA, 303
Teklords, 201
Tektronics, 313
Telematics, 142
Telepathic Dreams, major types, 441
Telepathic communication between twins, 509
Telepathic, feeling more, 212
Telepathy, used to access slaves, 325
Telephone calls, all monitored, 139
Telephone calls, blanks, used to access slaves, 325
Telephone charging device, source for implants, 463
Telephone lines, internal, 495
Telephone no-talk programming, 22
Telephone taps, 278
Telephone tones, 62
Teleportation, at Alien Encounter, 101
Telescoping circular worlds, 274

Television, 279, 325
Television, used to access slaves, 325
Teltelbaum, 226
Temple of Moloch, 478
Temple of Tibetan Medicine, 210
Temple to the Forbidden Eye, 117
Temple, Jerusalem, money changers cleansed from, 435
Temple, Shirley, 72, 118
Temples, of Swedenborg Rite of Masonry, 218
Tempo, and color, 48
Temporal lobe, left, 182
Temporo-parietal areas, 175
Ten Lepers story, 477
Ten nations, of NWO, names used, 271-272
Tennessee, 235
Tepa, 239
Terman, L.M., 234
Terminal Man, 308
Terms to reframe targets of assassinations, 195
Terrestrial Room, Mormon SLC Temple, 306
Territorial behaviors, 236
Territories, 24 U.S. Mob, 111
Terrorist groups, 178
Tesla waves, 138, 175
Testament of Solomon, 191
Testicular implants, 172
Testing of programming, at Disneyland, 114-115
Testosterone implant, 164
Tests for Eating Disorders, 339
Tests, of preverbal children, 17-18
Tests, to determine good splits, 193
Tetradoxyn, 27
Tetragrammaton, considered magical, 7
Texaco, 88
Texas DUM bases, 306
Texas Dept. of Public Safety, title pg. chp. 6
Texas Women's University, Dallas, TX, 299
Texas, 300, 305, 306
Thai police, 174
Thailand, 161, 174
Thalamic Law, 400
Thalamus, 174, 179
Thanoteros, 387
Thaw, Harry K., 2-3
The Adventures of Ichabod & Mr. T., 96
The American Journal of Clinical Hypnosis, 51
The Art of Human-computer Interface Design, 186
The Art of Self Defense, 113
The Art of Spiritual Harmony, 47
The Art of Walt Disney from Mickey M...,76, 95, 134
The Art of War, 67
The Art of the Bone-Setter, 214, 215, 216
The Astonishing Hypothesis The ...Search for the Soul, 206
The Background of Structure/Function, 231
The Biological Time Bomb, 310
The Body Electric, 186
The Book of Coming Forth by Night, 289
The Book of the Law, 289
The Brain & Nervous System, Disney film, 121
The Brain Changers, 186
The Brotherhood, The Secret World of The Freemasons, 278
The Brothers Karamazov, 201
The Character Builder, 218
The Cloven Hoof, 286
The Compleat Bone-setter, 215
The Compleat Witch, 285
The Corpse Had a Familiar Face, 99
The Cranial Academy, 231
The Cranial Bowl, 227
The Cranial Letter, 225, 231
The Crystal Tablet of Set, 290
The Cult of Tara--Magic & Ritual in Tibet, 210
The Development, Present Status, &...Correctional Privatization...,12
The Devil & Max Devlin, film, 102
The Devil's Rain, 201
The Doomsday Conspiracy, 299
The Dream in Clinical Practice, book, 442
The Dynamics of Change, 310
The Exterminating Angel, name for Morrison, 282
The Falcon and the Snowman, 143
The Genetics of Behavior, 237
The Goetia The Lesser Key of Solomon the King, 193
The Golden Touch, film, 82
The Great Mouse Detective, 106
The Happiest Millionaire, 102
The Haunted House, 93
The Hidden Life In Freemasonry, title pg. chp. 10
The Hungry Glass, movie, 200, 201
The Illusion, yacht of Ovitz, 107
The Illustrated Guide to Monarch Programming, 1, 132, 259, 269, 272, 359, 392, 445, 446, 483, 505, 508, 515-516
The Indianapolis Star
The Island of Dr. Moreau, 285
The Journal of Cognitive Rehabilitation, 209
The Journal of the American Medical Assoc. JAMA, 219
The Juror, 278
The Karate Dojo, 187, 214
The Little Mermaid, 73
The Magic Grandfather the Chandler Policy, 91
The Messenger's Motives, 99
The Mind of Man, 186
The Mind, 186
The New Spirit, 113

The Oregonian, 76
The Puzzle Palace, 140, 186
The Revolution in Military Affairs & Conflict..., 172
The Satanic Bible, 285
The Satanic Rituals, 285
The Satanic Witch, 285
The Search for the Manchurian Candidate, 186
The Secret Life of the Unborn Child, 13-15
The Secret Power of Music, 123
The Secret Teachings of All Ages, 46, 50
The Shaggy Dog, 100
The Silent Flyer, 93
The Society of Mind, 188
The Sorcerer's Apprentice, 73, 77
The Spiritual Shield, secret occult book, 475
The Spiritual and Clinical Dimensions of MPD, 67
The Story of Menstruation, 113
The Story of Robin Hood & His..., 96
The Stroller, nickname of Pettie, 282
The Tall Book of Make Believe, 261
The Tavistock Institute, 298
The Third Eye, 210
The Three Caballeros, 96
The Three Musketeers, film, 120
The Three-Pound Universe, 186
The Tibetan Book of the Dead, 210
The Unopened Files, 185
The Warren Buffett Way, 104
The Way of the Sun Dragon...,208
The Words of Joseph Smith: The ..., 218
The Works of John Adams, 174
The World Bewitched; An Examination of Common..., 215
The World of Suzie Wong, 201
The Zapping of America, 186
The Zen Doctrine of No Mind, 210
Theme Parks, Disney, 115-116
Theo-Tepa, 239
Theories about cult obedient alters, false ones, 433
Theosophia Pneumatica, 257
Theosophia Practica, 216
Theosophists, 213, 222
Theosophy, 204, 214
Therapeutic Chronic fatigue, 421
Therapeutic claims, false ones, 198
Therapeutic mistakes, prevented by understanding what was done, 385
Therapist, becomes the parent image, 327
Therapist, dealing with different realities, 489
Therapist, multiple, taken down, 67
Therapist, warnings to protect the client, 393
Therapists, are live-giving agents, 387
Therapists, assisted by mapping, 470
Therapists, attacks against, 371
Therapists, burn-out slower if emotionally invested in work, 421
Therapists, can use mentors, and their own support persons, 421
Therapists, can use the creativity of an alter, 468
Therapists, fallacious understanding, 464
Therapists, few have formal training in DID, 326
Therapists, have usually ignored spiritual aspects, 251
Therapists, high perc. dirty, 67
Therapists, incorrectly teach about right brain-left brain progrmg, 412
Therapists, mistakingly make core integration main ther. goal, 425
Therapists, mistakingly try to take programming out of its rel. context, 401
Therapists, most are still ignorant of DID and in denial of what's happng, 412
Therapists, need to see programming from programmers view point, 473
Therapists, need to stay on top of what programmers are doing to syst., 513
Therapists, often work for years with front parts, 479
Therapists, often work with the wrong alters, 521
Therapists, perception by public, 326
Therapists, reluctant to step into victim's wd, 248
Therapists, self-defeating habits, 421
Therapists, shrink from the horror of humans being slave robots, 504
Therapists, some are targeted to be killed, 430
Therapists, some click with particular clients, 338
Therapists, trigger programming, 466
Therapists, underestimate suicide programming, 380
Therapists, who mistakingly think client is host alter, 438
Therapy during sleep, 442
Therapy sessions, length of, 330
Therapy, aromic, 393
Therapy, can be done at night, 349
Therapy, ideas for settings, 465
Therapy, misperception about, 326-329
Therapy, should be kept private, 411
Therapy, with dreams to break down dissociation, 442
Therapy, working vertically in a system, 479
There Was Once A Time of Islands, Illusions, & Rock..., 115
There was an Owl, 60
Thermal methods for tunnel construction, 302
Theta programming, 58-59, 137
Theta waves, 174
Theta waves, produced by implant, 163-164
Theta waves, role in thought, 219
Theurgy, 498
Things to Come, film, 97
Think and Grow Rich, 220
Thinking Machines, Supercomputer, 106

Thinking, built-in mechanisms, 424
Thinking, fundamental structures, 358
Third eye area, 209-212
Thomas family, 215
Thomas, Bob, 78
Thomas, Hugh Owen, 215
Thomas, Wade, 283
Thomasina, 120
Thomasville, GA, 304
Thorn apple, 27
Thoughts, are not equal with reality, 400
Threats, methods used, 253
Three Blind Mice, 60
Three Blind Mouseketeers, film, 120
Three Caballeros, film, 120
Three Little Kittens, 60
Three Little Pigs, film, 120
Three Little Wolves, film, 120
Three Lives of Thomasina, film, 120
Three Ninjas, film, 120
Three Orphan Kittens, film, 120
Three Sisters Hill, Palmdale area, CA, 303
Three-in-One School, 226-227, 230-231
Throne, for core, made into a tomb, 518
Throne, in *Fantasia* film, 127
Thrones, in Virginia Slim ad, 275
Through the Looking Glass, 299
Thru the Mirror, film, 120
Thunder, internal, 482
Thymine, 240
Tibet, 104, 209-210, 212
Tibet, Nazi expeditions to, 209
Tibetan Monks, 209-211
Tibetan Yoga, 210
Tibetan color schemes, 48
Tichy, 162
Tieszen family, 220
Tiger, used on martial arts expert, 187
Tigers, used in programming, 23
Tilton, Christa, 103
Time clock programming, 56
Time considerations for length of sessions, 383
Time magazine, 107, 110, 206
Time perceptions, internal, 484
Time restraints in traditional therapy, 512
Time travel, programming device, 119
Time, a t. for everything, 458
Time, normal perception of, absent from 1st brain, 515
Time, perception altered by LSD prgrmg, 34
Times of imprint vulnerability, 514
Tin Man Ritual, 259
Tindal, 27
Tinkerbell, 32
Tips for Therapists, 504
Tissue-protein bonding abilities of drugs, 25
Titan demons, 477
Toccata & Fugue in D minor, 46
Toccata and Fuge, 124
Todd Shipyards, 100
Toddler switch, 520-521
Todmorden, England, 216
Toffler, Alvin, 308
Togare, nubian lion, 283
Tokens, as signal, 60
Tokens, used to access slaves, 325
Tokyo Disneyland, 75
Tolles, William, 7
Tommy Dorsey Band, 104
Tones, as codes, 60
Tones, telephone, 62
Tonopah, NV, 305
Tonsillectomy, used as a typical programming cover, 370
Toothbrush, magical in cartoon, 119
Topaz, 190, 314
Topaz, alters assigned, 271
Topos, greek word, 368
Tornado program, 202
Tornado, internal, 202
Toronto, Canada, 286
Torture chambers, at Magic Castle, CA, 117
Torture, Middle Age artwork, & and Bonesetting skills, title pg. chp. 8
Torture, tradition occupation of some families, 216
Torture-Nerve-Muscle Stim. implants, 171-172
Tortures, spinning, 202
Totems, of victim's bloodline, 260
Toto, of Oz, 254
Touch, sense of, resonance freks, 179
Touchtone films, 100
Touchtone, 73, 89
Toulmin, Stephen, 489
Tower of Babel, 48
Towers, high, built by Malphas, 483
Towers, strange, being installed, 147
Towns, under total control, 279
Toxic Light Chromatography, 463
Toys, satanic provided, 261
Tracheal protheses, 172
Tracking implants & satellites, 503
Tracking implants for sale, 143
Tracking implants, 143, 172-174, 503
Tracks, two, fantasy vs. reality, 399
Trade guilds, secret, 216
Trades, giving to take, 257
Trading Partner No. TPN, 173
Train, at Disney, 115
Train-Wreck-Perception Program, 64
Training, military, using Virtual Reality, 185
Trains, high speed, connecting underground bases,

302
Traitor's Death Ritual, 262-263
Traitor's death, 411
Trance Training, Esalen, 299
Trance depths, 39, 46
Trance states of American society, 456
Trance, becomes a reflex, 456
Trance, deep, danger of, 46
Trances, to defuse self-destruct programs, 374
Tranquilizers, effect on CRI, 229
Transactional analysis, 412
Transcendental Meditation TM, 204, 229-230
Transcript, of a deliverance session, 485
Transference issues, can be very contradictory in 1 system, 506
Transference issues, manipulated by handlers against therapists, 507
Transference triggers, 328
Transference, 327
Transference, issues of, 505-507
Transference, types of, 506
Transformation alters, 199
Transgenetic beings, 233
Transient Amnesia, 335
Translyvannia, 284
Transponders, made in CO, 176
Trap Door, programming trick with hypnotic trances, 457
Trap doors, internal, 472
Trauma Memories, 248, 311, 349
Trauma bonding to programmer, 458
Trauma memories, example of how remembered, 466
Trauma to separate 8 emotions, and 5 senses in Sens. Depriv. Tank, 431
Trauma, Mother-fetus, 259
Trauma, core splitting, 389
Trauma, effect on dreams, 440
Trauma, for Anger Management, 22
Trauma, for programming, 19-23
Trauma, hung in an isolated forest, 472
Trauma, picture on what they look for, 21
Trauma, second major programming trauma to core, 428
Trauma, teaching attention, 22-23
Trauma, to develop animal alters, 23
Trauma, to teach No-write, 22
Trauma, to teach compliance, 23
Trauma, to teach silence, 22
Trauma, trunk drowning trauma, 318
Trauma, water, 127
Trauma, well, 388-389
Trauma, womb, 389
Trauma-bonding, 411
Traumas around birthdays, 23
Traumas in cages used to separate emotions, 377
Traumas, foundational, understanding, 385-390
Traumas, given tibetan upper class youth, 210
Traumas, standard, 466
Traumas, to create kitten alters, 280
Traver, Daniel M., 60, 192
Treasure Island film, 81, 96
Treasure, programming information, 273
Treasures, internal, overseen by Melchom, 483
Trebizond Greeks, 68
Tree of Evil, 192
Tree of Life, Cabalistic, 125, 192
Tree programs, 480
Tree, Spirit, 192
Tree, internal, portrayed, 315
Trees and flowers, programming, 119
Trees, exploration of meaning for client, 329
Trees, have many deeper alters, 192
Trees, internal, 192, 328-329
Trees, internal, construction of, 192
Trenimon, 239
Triacetoneamine-N-oxyl, TAN, 240
Triad programming, 120
Triads, 109, 207, 208
Trial records, of witch trials, 216
Triangles within Triangles, 191
Triangulation of signals used, 183
Trick or Treat (book), 91
Tricking suspects, 69
Tricking, to get into therapy, backfires, 338
Trident II missiles, 300
Triethylenemelamine, 239
Triggers, access, 325
Triggers, after healing, 454
Triggers, defusing, 374
Triggers, for access, 56
Triggers, for programming, sold by Disney, 116
Triggers, how to defuse, 391
Triggers, issues around, 392-393
Triggers, list of types of triggers, 392
Triggers, positive to fight the control, 391
Trinities, used in programming, 120
Trinity Broadcasting Network TBN, 117
Trinity, false, 272
Tripler VA Hospital, 300
Triune nature of God, 397
Trojan, name of a horse alter, 445
Tron, 120
Trona, CA, 303
Trott, Roger, 20
True-Life-Adventures, TV shows, 97
Truisms, term and use, 267
Trump, Ivana, 204
Trumpet and color programming, 129
Trumpets, internal, 484
Trust issues, for victim & therapist, 330

Trust issues, with client, 421
Trust, 405, 465, 470
Trust, development of, 244
Trust, importance to society, 65
Trust, issues, etc., 394
Trust, public, in Disney, 134
Truth, 6, 268, 364, 366
Truth, a tool for warriors and spies, 497
Truth, belief imbedded against its existence, 268
Truth, difficulty in finding, 67
Truth, discernment, 397-401
Truth, spiritual armor, 364-367
Tryptophan hydroxylase, 36
Tryptophan, 36
Tubal-cain, 192, 475
Tucson, AZ, 64, 297
Tulane University, Covington, LA, 270
Tulsa, OK, 91
Tumbleweed program, 202
Tunnel system, portrayed in Wild Palms, 120
Tunnel, the, during NDE, 263
Tunnels, access methods, 302
Tunnels, at EPCOT, 101
Tunnels, in Lexington, KT, 300
Tunnels, internal, 472
Tunnels, methods for construction listed, 302
Tunnels, secret at Disney, 113
Tunnels, secret under wineries, 89
Tunnels, secret, 497
Tunnels, secret, Disneyland, 115
Tunnels, to Mormon Temple in Salt Lake City, 306
Tunnels, under Disney World, 98
Turkey, 68
Turner, Karen, 299
Turner, Karla, 184
Turner, Mary Elvira, 221
Turner, Robert, 215
Turnwise, direction of, 66
Turquoise, 314
Turquoise, alters assigned, 271
Twilight Zone Tower of Terror, 117
Twin Bridges, MO, 304
Twin Falls, ID, 304
Twin, concept of to hide MPD, 119
Twin, internalized by victim, 510
Twinkle, Twinkle Little Star, 55
Twinning, Deceit, how it helps twinning, 508
Twinning, Selection & Preparation, 508
Twinning, Structuring for, 509
Twinning, absent from most professional literature, 508
Twinning, drugs, used in programming, 508
Twinning, how done, 32
Twinning, how hypnosis is utilized, 508
Twinning, specifics on how each of the 12 sciences of mind-control are used, 508
Twinning, standard programming, 508
Twinning, trauma to create, 508
Twinning, understanding, 508
Twins, 15-16
Twins, have hidden keys to each others systems, 509
Twins, identical, 310
Twins, joint therapy, advantages, 509-510
Twins, tend to be opposites, 509
Twins, want to kill themselves if somethg happens to twin, 509
Two tracks, run by a programmed recovering multiple, 506
Two-headed beast, 485
Two-tracks, 387-388
Tyler, Cpt. Paul, 178
Types of death, 387
Tyramine, 36
Tyrannosaurus Rex, 129
Tyrosine Hydroxylase, 36
Tyrosine, 36
Tyson II, 181

U-shaped bradawl for 3rd eye, 210
U.K., 105, 161, 173
U.N., 95, 104, 113
U.S. Air Force, 223
U.S. Army War College, 172
U.S. Army, 172, 288, 294
U.S. Bankruptcy Court, 105
U.S. Dept. of Health, Ed. & Welfare, 208
U.S. District Court, Utah, 175
U.S. Documentation Center, 175
U.S. Gov't, promotes Hinduism, 229-230
U.S. Government Mind Control Experiments, 64
U.S. Government Printing Office, 208
U.S. Government, promotion of Transcendental Medit., 229-230
U.S. Military Intelligence, connected to Satanism, 288-289
U.S. Military Personnel, present during abductions, 184
U.S. Military Stress Lab, Natick, MA, 281
U.S. Military, 41, 42, 113, 147, 159, 160, 184, 283, 503
U.S. Military, recognizes Church of Satan, 283
U.S. National Archives, 213
U.S. National Defense University, 288
U.S. Navy, 172, 194, 223, 278, 306
U.S. News & World Report, 165
U.S. Pacific Fleet, 300
U.S. Patent Office, 177
U.S. Special Forces, 116
U.S. Veteran's Hospital, Lexington, KT, 300
U.S. divided into 24 Mob territ., 111
U.S. military, drug experiments, movie, 221
U.S. surveillance satellite secrets, 106

UCH audio implant, 162
UFO Expo West L.A., 184
UFO abductees, 184, 264
UFO researcher, victim of m.c., 34
UHF frequencies, 180
UN General Assembly, 103
UNICEF, 113
UNIX computer demons, 40
US State Department, 312
USAF Detachment 421, 298
USAF, 185, 298
USC County Hospital, 232
USO Tour, 104, 284
USS Alabama, nuclear sub, 113
USSR, 68, 198
USSR, former, 75
Uganda, 396
Ullman, Montague, 441, 442
Ultimate Computing: Biomolecular Consc..., 169
Ultra-orthodox Judaism, 286-287
Ultrasound, 15
Umbrella scene in Wonderland Show, 120
Un-American Hearings, Cong., 81
Unbounding the Future:..., 169
Uncle Ed, 85
Uncle, use of term, 80-81
Underground bases, N.M., 282
Underground bases, deep, 185, 302-306
Underground facilities, 185, 302-306
Underground facilities, Disney theme parks, 116
Underground facilities, types of components, 302
Underground installation, Kaneohe, HA, 300
Underground installations, 232-233
Underground programming site, Salem, OR, title pg. App. 2
Underground roads & tunnels, EPCOT, 101
Underground tunnels, White House, 301-302
Underwater I.D. bracelets, 172
Underwater, internally, 130
Unemotional people, 245
Unholy 6 saucer base, CA, 303
Unholy Trinity, 312
Unicorn alters, 445-446
Unicorn demon, Anduscias, 481
Unicorn, meaning of, 131
Unicorns, programming imagery, 130
Unified Command ELINT Center, 300
Union Pacific, 306
Union Strike against Disney, 113
Unions & Disney, 82, 96
Unions, mafia plans for, 109
Unitarians, 217
United Artists, 94, 110, 111
Universal Codes, 374
Universal Function Codes, 362
Universal Pictures, 95, 114
Universal Solders, film, 194
Universal Studios, 92
Universal codes, 520
Universe based system, 190
Universities, run by multiples, 2
University Hosp., Univ. of Calif., San Diego, 170
University of Alaska, Fairbanks, 142
University of Calif., L.A.
University of Calif., San Francisco, 163
University of California, Berkeley, 170, 238
University of California, Irvine, 28
University of California, Santa Barbara, 288
University of Hawaii, Beh. Biol. Lab, 10
University of Illinois, 186
University of Kentucky, 87
University of Leiden, Netherlands, 235
University of Louisville, KT, 289
University of Michigan School of Osteopathy, 223
University of Michigan, Ann Arbor, MI, 166, 235
University of Minnesota, 309
University of Pittsburgh, 143
University of So. California, Loma Linda, 281
University of Southern California, 93, 169
University of Utah Med. Center, 301
University of Utah, 165, 166, 175
Unpardonable sin against Lucifer, 484
Unravelling of mind trauma, 431
Unstable parts, look to master to function, 257
Untermensch, term, 195
Uphir, demon, 484
Upledger Institute, FL, 223
Upper Bourbon St., New Orleans, 301
Upton, Dr. Arthur, 281
Upton, NY, 235
Uracil, 240
Uranium, 239
Urban, Peter, 214
Urbana-Champaign University of Illinois, 281
Urine electrolyte Disposal rhythms, 183
Ursuline Academy, New Orleans, 300-301
Utah State Hospital, 301
Utah State Prison, UT, 301
Utah, 79, 175, 281, 301, 306
Utah, southern, towns under total control, 279
Uterus radiation experiments, 64
Utopian socialists, 217

VCR players, internal, 402
VERs, 18
VHF triggering reactions in people, 219
VLF waves, 144, 147
Vadne, Xanth character, 199
Valderrama, Alexander, 117

Valenski, 275
Valenti, Jack, 104
Valerian, 348
Validation, 447
Validation, attempts from extended families, 448
Valium, 349
Valley of Kings, Napa Valley, CA, 86
Value of living, realized as a lesson of grief, 454
Values, Illuminati, accepted by hierarchy slaves, 245
Values, development prevented, 243
Values, disruption of, 244
Values, how created, 476
Values, importance of, 243
Values, placed into a system, 364
Vampire stories, 261
Vampire, ex-, 211
Van Buren, Martin, 8
Van Nuys, CA, 106
Van-der-built Program, 64
VanHoffenwiggen mansion, 105
VanHoffenwiggen, John O., 105
Vancouver, BC, Canada, 284, 301
Vanderbilt family, 64
Vanishing Twin Phenomena, 15
Vanity Fair, 107, 275
Variety, 78
Vatican Embassy, involved with sexual abuse, 283
Vatican, 312
Vaughan, Alan, 441
Vaughan, E., 35
Vault bones, parietal, 204
Vauxhall Cross, Eng., 67
Vegetarian City, 217
Veil, internal, 270, 314-315
Veil, portrayed, 315
Veiling in programming, 131
Venetian nobleman, 131
Venice, in renaissance, 94
Ventilators, 172
Ventricular areas, 3rd & 4th, 211-212
Venus, 48
Verified Suggestion Program, 64
Vermont remote mtn. programming site, 301
Vermont, 9, 301
Verny, Thomas, 13-15
Vertical Strain Superior, 226
Vertical descent into system, therapeutic approach, 520
Veteran's Administration Hospitals, list of dirty ones, 301
Veys, Michael, 49
Vibrations in skull, related to thought, 219
Vibrations, 6-7 cyles/sec., 181
Vibrations, healing by, 50
Vibrato, 181
Victim, bonded to programmer, 199
Victim, confronts her programmer in movie, 4
Victim, is center of concern for therapy, 356
Victim, is taught not to trust own senses, 399
Victim, oriented by their grid, 511
Victim, perfect image of primary abuser, 357
Victim, term, why the term is used in this book, 369
Victim, what was stolen from their life?, 450
Victims test therapists repeatedly, 507
Victims, all still suffer effects of programming, 514
Victims, assume that the therapist will be sadistic like others, 507
Victims, each must choose freedom at some level, 373
Victims, have been stripped of ability to see danger, 372
Victims, of Chemical-radiation, 240
Victims, of Rosicrucian groups, 224
Victims, of cranial manipulation, responses, 204
Victims, report on Disney, 134, 136
Victims, reports from elect. m.c. victims, 181-182
Victims, sabotage their credibility, 374
Victims, sabotage their therapy, 374
Victims, should not be shamed about demons, 255
Victims, some from orthodox Judaism, 287
Victims, some go to witches for therapy, 258
Victims, sometimes concoct answers, 466
Victims, types of mind-control victims, 357
Victorian England, 168
Video encoder for visual implants, 166
Vienna, Austria, 162
Vietnam Vets, 458
Vietnam War, & drug smuggling, 66
Vietnam War, 4, 66, 159, 160, 184, 195, 221, 288
Vietnam, CIA drug running, 4
Viewtree Mountain, VA, 306
Vigilance at night, to protect victim, 350
Vine, internal, 126
Vineyard, 323
Vinge, J.D., 119
Vint Hills Farm Station, Warrenton, VA, 297
Vinyl chloride, 239
Violin, 47
Violinists, 124
Viper, demon, 481
Virginia DUM bases, 306
Virginia Slims ad, 275
Virginia, 102-103, 112, 181, 306
Virtual I-O Co., 22
Virtual Reality Holodeck attachment, 142
Virtual Reality Lab, Univer. of Ill., 186
Virtual Reality companies, 186
Virtual Reality conferences, 185
Virtual Reality ride, Disneyland, 106
Virtual Reality, 185-186
Virtual reality tactile feedback systems, 186

Virtual touch, 186
Virus implants, suggestions for, 462
Viruses, use w/ implants, 170
Viscerotropic viruses, 170
Vision & learning, how the mind works, 511
Visitors, to DisneyWorld, typical day, 101
Visual Guide to Xanth, 194
Visual Neuroprosthetics, 165
Visual centers, resonance freks, 179
Visual cortex, 263
Visual implants, 164-168
Visual maps, internal, 511
Visual prosthetics, term, 165
Visual system, of humans, 165
Visualization exerc. with drugs, 43
Visualization, 458, 498
Visualization, for hypnosis, 42-43
Visually Evoked Responses (VERs), 18
Vital part of head, 207
Vitamin E, 351
Vivid Group, 186
Vogue magazine, 275
Voice activated credit cards, 174
Voice roll, for hypnosis, 38
Voiceprints, 173
Voices, of implants, distraction, 335
Vol. 1 Top 13 Illuminati Bloodlines, 7, 87
Vol. 2 reader, 278
Vol. 2, The Illuminati Formula..., 1, 2, 68, 97, 120, 121, 125, 126, 127, 129, 138, 169, 191, 192, 194, 198, 203, 233, 240, 259, 267, 269, 278, 279, 290, 362, 392, 426, 430, 432, 445, 446, 470, 473, 480, 500, 501, 508, 519
Volarire, demon, 484
Volcanoes, 128
Volcanoes, in *Lucifer Rising*, 119
Volta, experiments by, 159
Volvoda, 162
Vomer, 211
Vomiting, 337-338
Von Kleinsmid, Rufus B., 93
Von Marbod, Mr. Eric, 297
Voodoo dolls, 301
Voodoo, 47, 62, 301, 474
Voodoo, in New Orleans, 301
Vortex of dissociation, 127
Vortex, internal, 127-128, 202
Vortexes of energy, belief about, 269
Vortexes, artwork, title pg. chp. 7
Vortices, how created, 128
Voudoun, 27, 47, 62
Vow of Silence program, 62
Vril, 213
Vympel Division, Russia, 297
W-88 nuclear warhead, 300
W.W. I, 78, 83, 85
W.W. II, 96, 111, 113, 195, 213, 254, 286, 312
WE Walk-Ins for Evolution, 265
WHO, World Health Organization, 208
WOC radio station, 220
Wackenhut Security, 11, 302, 304, 305
Wackenhut, ID, 304
Wagner, Bruce, 120
Wales, 214
Wales, Anne L., 212, 224
Walker, Card, 115
Wall Street Journal, 90, 98, 169, 172, 186, 226
Wallis, John, 103
Walls full of faces, 202
Walls, between internal worlds, 518
Walls, to prevent access, 391
Walpurgisnacht, 4/30/'66, 283
Walsh, Bob, 84
Walt Disney An American Original, 72
Walt Disney Co., annual reports, 134
Walt Disney Co., incorp. in Delaware, 112
Walt Disney Hollywood's Prince of Darkns, 79
Walt Disney Records, 75
Walt Disney Studios, 46
Walt Disney Studios, cash flow problems, 86-87
Walt Disney Studios, heavy metal rock, 74
Walt Disney Studios, subsidiaries, 73
Walt Disney TV-Media Division, 105
Walt Disney's Mickey Mouse in Color, 80
Walt Disney's Wonderful World of Color, 100
Walt Disney, An American Original, 81
Walt Disney, Hollywood's Dark Prince, 83
Walter, Dr. W. Grey, 253
Walter, Elias, 83
Walters, Barbara, 340
Wanderings and Essays on Natural History, 215
Wappingers Falls, NY, 109
War College, U.S. Army, 172
War, in churches to destroy conservative elements, 368
Warlock stories, 261
Warner Brothers, 93
Warner, Dave, 185
Warner, Jack M., 95
Warning to readers about Part 2, 321
Warped-Speed-9 Program, 64
Warrenton, VA, 297
Warring Demons, 255
Warrington Training Center, VA, 306
Warwick University, 169
Washington Bar Association, 107
Washington, (state), 268, 283-84, 306
Washington, D.C. underground network of tunnels, 302
Washington, D.C., 113, 177, 223, 255, 281, 283, 299, 301-302, 306

Wasserman, Lew, 111
Watch List, 139-140
Watcher alters, 197
Watcher demons, 484
Watches, not worn by many victims, 428
Watchtower Society, 218, 375, 397
Watchtowers, magical, 59
Water bed, electrified, 23
Water canon for tunnel construction, 302
Water deprivation, used for programming, 42
Water trauma, 127
Water, alter, 128
Water, drinking, use for mind-control, 240
Water, fears of, 343
Water, programming use of, 477
Water, sound like rushing water, 482
Waterfalls, internal, 130, 316-317
Waterton, Charles, 215
Watertown Strip, nickname for Area 51, 304
Watson, Ray, 88
Watson, Thomas, Jr., 173
Watsonville, CA, 230
Watts, Robert, 73
Wave shapes of freks, 144
Wayne, John, 95
Weak points, exploited, 372
Weather, internal, control shown in film, 63
Weaver, principles disc., 160
Web of life, concept, 450
Webster, William Hedgcock, 113
Weddings, Fairy-tale, 102
Weddings, at Disney Parks, 102
Weed's research on cerebrospinal fluid, 227
Weight-loss centers, used for m.c., 16
Welch bone-setting bloodlines, 215
Welk, Laurence, 106
Welkos, Robert W., 76
Well trauma, 388-389
Welles, Orson, 118
Wellington Group, 112
Wells, Frank G., 87, 89, 107
Wells, H.G., 75, 77, 94, 97, 285
Wells, guarded by Titans, 479
Wells, used for programming, 472
Welz, Karl, 186
West Point, USMA, 41, 42, 194, 229, 280
West Virginia DUM bases, 306
West Virginia, 275, 306
West, Dr. Louis Joyon "Jolly", 282
Western Civilization, 490
Westlake School for Girls, 90
Westmorland, U.K., 215
Wet ops, 5, 65
Whales, 183
Wheel of Fortune type spin devices, 202
Wheel of Life philosophy, 450
Wheeler, Cisco, as programmer gave mustd. seeds, 345
Wheeler, Cisco, eluded tracking cars, 503
Wheeler, Cisco, observations about other recovering victims, 371
Wheeler, Cisco, provides Chronology of prgmg rituals, 258
Wheeler, Cisco, sabotage of programs while working with others, 345
Wheeler, Cisco, temperature progrg, 37
Wheeler, Cisco, testimony for Christ at conference, 346
Wheeler, Cisco, warning about clones, 313
Wheeler, Leo, 232, 450
Whirlwind, internal, 202
Whiskey highjacking, 109
Whiskey, Scotch, 77
Whiskey, glass, argument about needs vs. wants, 401
Whisper, alter, 314-315
White Album, Beatles music, 411
White Horse, 446
White House, 301-302, 306
White House, spokesperson, 175
White House, underground tunnels, 301-302
White Rabbit, 114, 120
White Rabbit, programming song, 290
White Sands, NM, 297
White Sands-Alamogordo Area underground bases, 305
White Sulfur Springs, WV, 306
White coding, 271
White ladies, alters, 273
White noise, in isolation tank, 34
White propaganda, 4
White slavery, 73, 115, 303
White slavery, by Disney, 73, 115
White, Cpt. George, 283
White, Dr. (pseudon.), 28
White, Dr. Robert E., 283
Whitehouse, D.J., 169
Whiteside, Daniel, 205, 227, 231
Whiteside, Robert L., 226
Whitesides, 232
Whitmore, Charles, important Clinton associate, 282
Whitney, John Hay, 106
Whitworth surgery, 216
Whitworth, England, 216
Whiz kids, used by Air Force, 177
Why questions have ceased after age 3 1/2, 448
Why should we save victims of mind control?, 322
Why we fight film, 96
Wiccan counseling centers for DID, 412
Wiccan multiples doing counseling, 412
Wickbom, Ingmar, 170
Widdershins, direction of, 66

Wiesenthal, Simon, 312
Wild Palms, 120
Wild grapes, 323
Wilderness Lodge Resort, Disney World, 117
Will power, how used in programming, 496-497
Will, magic importance of, 496-497
Will, strong, desired, 8
William the Conqueror, 89
Williams, Andy, 106
Williams, Andy, wife of, 106
Willow tree, 480
Willpower, of recovering victim, 486
Wind, alter, 120, 128
Wind, voice behind, Shu, 254
Windows, critical, of vulnerability for 1st brain changes, 514
Winds, strong, internal, 482
Wineries, Napa Valley, 303
Wineries, used as fronts, 71
Winfrey, Ophrey, show of, 290
Winged Monkey Watchers, 129
Winkler, 36
Winkler, Margaret, 91
Winks, of eye, used to access slaves, 325
Winter Fighting, training site in NY, 299
Winter Park, FL, 109
Wise, Anna, 299
Wise, Kensall, 166
Witch's Mountain, 108
Witch, Maleficent in Sleeping Beauty, 132
Witchcraft teachings, intertwine with programming, 412
Witchcraft values, 245
Witchcraft workshops, Esalen Institute, 299
Witchcraft, 7, 215-216, 269, 299, 412, 479
Witchcraft, common features to all forms of w., 412
Witchcraft, coven level, 479
Witchcraft, promoted by Disney, 73
Witchcraft, use of Cabala, 7
With Thinking Fingers, The Story of...Sutherland, 224, 232
Withdrawal from people, 406
Wizard of Oz books, 118
Wizard of Oz film, 120, 130
Wizard of Oz scripts, 97
Wizard of Oz stories told, 261
Wizard of Oz theme programming, 119
Wizard of Oz, 97, 275, 290
Womb splits, 14
Womb trauma, 389
Womb, starting point for mind-control, 189
Wonderful World of Color, Walt Disney's, 100
Wonderland Show, on TV, 120
Wonderland videos, Disney, 120
Wonders of Life, 102
Wonderwoman, in progrmmg, 56
Wood, Green, protector, Pan, 254
Woodpecker signal, 182
Woodruff, Wilford, 218
Woods, Donald E., 225
Word of God, 366, 397-398
Words, plays on, for programming, 247
Words, power, 51
World Affair Council, 288
World Bank, title pg. chp.1, 306
World Citizenship, 99
World Future Society, 75
World Health Organization, WHO, 208
World Showcase Lagoon, 102
World System, diagram of elements, 365
World view, of people, 267-268
World's Fair '64-'65, 113, 115
World, exposure to, breaks down the lies, 512
World, how to understand the externl wd, 511-513
World, secret, of Pandaemonium, 479
Worlds, destruction of, 514
Worlds, of alters, 33
Worlds, patterns for, 124
Worldviews, types of, 245
Worldwide Weekly, Defense News, 7
Worship, why mankind worships, 401
Worth, Patience, 3
Wright-Patterson AFB, Dayton, OH, 173, 177, 185
Writers Guild, 87
Wu Jiaming, 206
Wundart, term, 213
Wunder, dream research, 440-441
Wushu, 206-209
Wyndham Hotel, L.A., 184

X Atensio, 102
X strokes, high frequency, show suicidal thoughts, 380
X words, 194, 289
X-Files, the Real, 137
X-rays, 170, 223, 228
X-rays, use by Ch. bone-setters, 208
Xanth series, 194
Xanth, 194, 199
Xenon lamps, 144
Xeper, term, 194, 289
Xerox Corporation, 168
Xihe Sword Dance, 207
Xronos, 292
Xtensory, Inc., 185, 186

Yacht clubs, 105
Yale University, 9, 73, 164, 298
Yamen Acupoint, 207
Yankee Doodle, for progrmmg, 60

Yeats, W.B., 97
Yebamoth of the Talmud, 488
Yellow Brick Road, 120, 124
Yellow list, 58
Yes Set, term, 267
Yesodeh Hatorah school, 287
Yetzirah world, 33
Yggdrassil tree, 480
Yiddish, used to address Beelzebub, 481
Yo-yo effect, 383
Yogism, 499
Yorkshire, England, 216
Yorktown Heights, NY, 173
You-are-one-but-you-are-many concept, 125
Young, Brigham, 218
Youth Hostels, purpose of, 297
Yuma, AZ, 302

ZD, Zeta Diogenes, 297
ZR/RIFLE, CIA assassination group, 298
Zalewski, Chris, 59
Zaya's dream research, 443
Zebedee's mother, 435
Zen Buddhism, 207
Zen martial arts masters, 208-209
Zentrallabor für Mutagenitätsprüfung der Deutschen...Freiburg, 235
Zepar, demon, 484
Zeta Diogenes ZD, 297
Zeta programming, 61
Zeus, in *Fantasia*, 131
Zilah-bore, 475
Zohar, 231
Zombie state, drugs for, 27
Zombie-trance sleep, 444
Zombies, 7
Zombies, created, 264
Zona pellucida, 309
Zone, of believability, 5
Zoos, 392

DIALOGUES WITH Forgotten Voices

RELATIONAL PERSPECTIVES ON CHILD ABUSE TRAUMA AND TREATMENT OF DISSOCIATIVE DISORDERS

HARVEY L. SCHWARTZ

BASIC BEHAVIORAL SCIENCE

DIALOGUES WITH FORGOTTEN VOICES

This page intentionally left blank

DIALOGUES WITH FORGOTTEN VOICES

Relational Perspectives on Child Abuse Trauma and Treatment of Dissociative Disorders

HARVEY L. SCHWARTZ, PH.D.

BASIC
BOOKS
A Member of the Perseus Books Group

Copyright © 2000 by Basic Books

Published by Basic Books,
A Member of the Perseus Books Group

All rights reserved. Printed in the United States of America. No part of this book may be reproduced in any manner whatsoever without written permission except in the case of brief quotations embodied in critical articles and reviews. For information, address Basic Books, 10 East 53rd Street, New York, NY 10022-5299.

Library of Congress Cataloging-in-Publication Data
Schwartz, Harvey L., 1955–
Dialogues with forgotten voices : relational perspectives on child abuse trauma and treatment of dissociative disorders / Harvey L. Schwartz.
p. cm.
Includes bibliographical references and index.
ISBN 0-465-09573-9
1. Adult child abuse victims—Rehabilitation. 2. Adult child abuse victims—Mental health. 3. Sexual abuse victims—Mental health. 4. Dissociative disorders—Treatment. I. Title.

RC569.5.C55 S395 2000
616.85'82239—dc21

00-058557

00 01 02 03 / 10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1

I gratefully dedicate this book to my patients and to my colleagues:

to my patients, who have courageously sought wholeness and
healing against great odds, and who have been
my most challenging and important teachers;

to my colleagues treating trauma and dissociation,
who have continued to find ways of reaching profoundly
violated human beings in a time of increasing
professional and cultural adversity.

This page intentionally left blank

It is often said that in today's modern and postmodern world, the forces of darkness are upon us. But I think not; in the Dark and the Deep there are truths that can always heal. It is not the forces of darkness but of shallowness that everywhere threaten the true, and the good, and the beautiful, and that ironically announce themselves as deep and profound. It is an exuberant and fearless shallowness that everywhere is the modern danger, the modern threat, and that everywhere nonetheless calls to us as Savior. We might have lost the Light and the Height; but more frightening, we have lost the Mystery and the Deep, the Emptiness and the Abyss, and lost it in a world dedicated to surfaces and shadows, exteriors and shells, whose prophets lovingly exhort us to dive into the shallow end of the pool head first.

—Ken Wilber

This page intentionally left blank

Contents

Acknowledgments xi
Introduction xiii

PART I
THE LANDSCAPES OF DISSOCIATIVE SURVIVAL, CHILD ABUSE TRAUMA, AND SOCIAL COMPLICITY

1 Necessary Illusions: The Multiple Dilemmas of Dissociative Survival 3

2 Unfathomable Realities, Discredited Testimony: Child Abuse, Victims, and Perpetrators 51

3 Child Abuse and Cultural Ambivalence: Complicity, Incredulity, and Denial 99

PART II
RESTORATION OF THE TRAUMATIZED, DISSOCIATIVE SELF

4 Major Trends in Relational Psychoanalytic Thought: Implications for Treatment of Trauma and Dissociation 127

5 From Inclusion to Integration: Basic Concepts in Psychotherapy with Severely Dissociative Trauma Survivors 165

6 From Domination to Recognition: The Restoration of Intersubjectivity and Paradoxical Awareness 207

7 The Destruction and Restoration of Fantasy and Aggression 247

8 The Destruction and Restoration of Attachment and Critical Thinking 293

PART III
SURVIVAL, TRANSFORMATION, AND TRANSCENDENCE

9 Surviving Dissociation, Surviving Destruction: Transcending Secondary Traumatization and Reclaiming Faith 347

10 The Descent for the Sake of the Ascent: Revelation, Witnessing, and Reparation 397

Notes 453
References 471
Index 499

Acknowledgments

All books are written within the context of a community of discourse, and this one is no exception.

My reflections on clinical work have been continuously nourished and revitalized by my interactions with my patients, who never cease to surprise me, change me, and inspire me.

My ideas about trauma, dissociative experience, and clinical process have also evolved through dialogues with colleagues and consultees over the years in a variety of settings. Witnessing the perseverance, dedication, and courage of many of my colleagues who continue to offer state-of-the-art treatment to severely traumatized patients in the era of managed care, the "false memory" backlash, the remedicalization of psychiatry and psychology, and a waning cultural investment in healing and reparation processes has been a truly moving experience. This book evolved through many of our individual and group consultation sessions and is in large part dedicated to supporting and recognizing your efforts.

There are many who have read chapters or sections of this book or who have offered ideas or constructive critiques or who have offered support and encouragement of one kind or another. Along these lines I would like to thank:

Suzan Harvey, Jay Rosenblatt, Cal Gough, Mary Ciofalo, Melissa Farley, Bobbie Schear, Suzanne Chassay, Leah Lazar, Joan Hertzberg, Susan Sands, Catharine MacKinnon, Sherry Brown, Robert Wilk, Marleen Norman, Patti McWilliams, June Madsen-Clausen, Karen Peoples, Randall Alifano, Martha Monetti, Jordana Schwartz, Marcia Rosenberg, Bobby Weinstock, Jim Reed, Elizabeth Pelzner, Rita Cristman, Roy Bonney, Nora Chen, Min Chen, Alicia Rause, Anne Uemura, Linda Burge, and special thanks to Lew Aron and Jeffrey Moulton-Benevedes for their extensive reading of, and valuable feedback on, an earlier version of this book. I would also especially like to thank

Cal Gough for his intensive editorial work, sound advice, and the enormous time and energy he devoted to bringing several earlier versions of this book into fruition. My heartfelt appreciation to Jay Rosenblatt and Suzan Harvey who kept believing in my creative abilities, helping me find my own voice when I could not do this for myself, and who have continued to offer love, friendship, and grounding.

My own thinking and professional and intellectual development have been inspired and influenced by the work and the writing of psychoanalysts, traumatologists, dissociation theorists, and other teachers:

Lew Aron, Jessica Benjamin, Christopher Bollas, John Briere, Philip Bromberg, Elias Canetti, Pema Chodron, Noam Chomsky, Christine Courtois, Jody Davies, Lloyd DeMause, Andrea Dworkin, Darlene Ehrenberg, Michael Eigen, Frantz Fanon, Sandor Ferenczi, Mary G. Frawley-O'Dea, Emmanuel Ghent, Emma Goldman, Judith Herman, bell hooks, Carl Jung, Richard Kluft , R. D. Laing, Lawrence Langer, C. S. Lewis, Robert Jay Lifton, Deborah Lipstadt, Catharine MacKinnon, Karen Maroda, Alice Miller, Stephen Mitchell, Adam Phillips, Frank Putnam, Wilhelm Reich, Colin Ross, Anna Salter, Gershom Sholem, Malidoma Some, Charles Spezzano, Rudolf Steiner, Robert Stolorow, Harry S. Sullivan, Bessel Van der Kolk, Cornel West, Elie Wiesel, D. W. Winnicott, and Howard Zinn.

Finally, I want to acknowledge my appreciation to my editor, Cindy Hyden, at Basic Books for her immediate and forthright response to my work, for her extensive editorial assistance, great sense of humor, and her unwavering belief in a new, unknown, relatively unaffiliated author. More than any other contributor, Cindy's gifts with words, concepts, and rhythms brought this book into fruition in the best of possible forms. My gratitude also to Basic Books—and its editorial staff, including Joan Miller, Jessica Callaway, Felicity Tucker, and Norman MacAfee—for their willingness to take on this difficult, controversial, and often misunderstood clinical subject area and their willingness to take a chance on a new and unknown writer.

Introduction

> *This breach of a child's body does count. It does register. The boundary of the body itself is broken by force and intimidation, a chaotic but choreographed violence. The child is used intentionally and reduced to less than human by the predator's intelligence as well as his behavior. The commitment of the child molester is absolute, and both his insistence and his victory communicate to the child his experience of her—a breachable, breakable thing any stranger can wipe his dick on. When it is family, of course, the invasion is more terrible, more intimate, escape more unlikely.*
>
> **—Andrea Dworkin**

Child abuse is our most powerful and successful ritual, according to psychohistorian Lloyd DeMause (1998). Some of the most egregious crimes against humanity involve the sexual abuse, abandonment, and torture of children in isolated families or in organized perpetrator groups. The fractured psyches and easily misrecognized voices and behaviors of many of the world's traumatized individuals are still not being heard or completely understood. And, while society debates, the belief systems of child-abuse perpetrators continue to pervade the minds of victims decades after the abuse has ended. As a result, far too many people live in the trap of a marginalizing psychological system of horror and terror characterized by unforgiveness, self-hatred, and dislocated accountability and responsibility. Because of their confusing symptoms and behaviors, many severely traumatized individuals are thwarted (or limited) for reasons they cannot understand when they seek to elicit help from various mental health, social services, and medical professionals, and these people remain ambivalently treated within a culture that benefits from their marginalization—primarily through a peculiar combination of fear, fascination, and incredulity.

Humility and open-mindedness are essentials in our collaborative understanding of the impact and spiraling consequences of chronic childhood trauma, including its persistent denial and frequently camouflaged effects. Successful treatment of individuals who are severely dissociative trauma survivors requires a compassionate witness sufficiently informed about the forms and transformations of trauma—and his/her own responses to them—to navigate the perils endemic to the traumatic transference/countertransference matrix so that mutuality, self-respect, and compassion may replace the tyranny of isolation and self-hatred. The severely dissociative patient's re-ownership of his/her mind, body, and spirit by means of a regenerated and reclaimed voice is the only hope. Without a therapist who is both willing to struggle with the internalized perpetrator ideologies and malignant attachments, and able to engender in the patient a deeply felt level of valuation and validity, there can be no revelation or reparation.

Contemporary relational movements within psychoanalysis have begun to respond to the clinical and sociopolitical challenges involved in recognizing and treating severely traumatized children and adults; the inclusion of feminist perspectives and the maturing response to trauma and dissociative phenomena have led to refined psychoanalytic conceptualizations of the self under siege. The integration has yielded new and creative visions of the essential reciprocities that make for mutative therapeutic interaction and in turn produce significant change in the lives of severely traumatized patients.

Accordingly, I propose a synthesis of contemporary psychodynamic views on trauma and dissociation with the traditional literature on traumatic stress and dissociative disorders. Advances in the treatment of trauma and dissociation from the contemporary psychoanalytic perspective can offer new and valuable insights into the nuances and complexities of transference/countertransference patterns with patients who are survivors of the extremes of human malevolence and depravity. Likewise, the realities addressed by the traditional trauma and dissociative disorders field can eclipse the ambiguities of psychoanalytic discourse—the traumatic fragmentation process, the alterations and concretizations in personality, and the autonomous capacities of dissociative states of mind that flourish when an individual is raised in a chronically perverse developmental context.

But instead of engaging in respectful and mutually informing dialogues, a cacophony of traumatologists, psychoanalysts, lawyers, social theorists, behavioral pharmacologists, systems-theory and cognitive-behavioral practitioners, and others has perpetuated schisms easily exploited by critics who wish to discredit psychotherapy and the emerging trauma paradigms. When the professions dedicated to treating dissociative disorders are themselves composed of mutually exclusive dissociated fragments—each encapsulated in its own worldview with little recognition for the other—both the training of clinicians and the effective treatment of trauma survivors are subverted.

The primary focus of this book is articulating the dynamics of—and philosophy for conducting psychotherapy with— patients at the extreme end of the dissociative continuum, many of whom can be diagnosed with dissociative identity disorder (DID) or multiple personality disorder (MPD), atypical dissociative disorder, chronic posttraumatic stress disorder (PTSD), complex posttraumatic stress disorder, and/or dissociative disorder not otherwise specified (DDNOS). Interpersonal trauma is enacted in a social and relational context; it follows that recovery and healing are best addressed in a socially conscious therapeutic relationship, where interaction based on mutuality is internalized and where the psychology of domination is systematically dismantled. Throughout the book I emphasize the essential and reciprocal relationships between intrapsychic, interpersonal, and cultural healing practices—and their obstruction.

With respect for the dialectical interplay of psyche, culture, and trauma, I argue for an unstinting look at child-abuse trauma and neglect—its variations, its components, its effects, its most extreme manifestations, its cultural embeddedness—toward recognizing its role in driving and creating severe dissociative disorders. Dissociative reactions may be intrinsic psychological responses to trauma or psychic overload. They are not maintained, however, without the negative potentiating factors of social facilitation via denial and disavowal of violence against children along with the failures of diagnosis, recognition, and inadequate application of reparation processes.

Thus, trauma-driven dissociative disorders are cultivated and sustained at least as much by the lack of interpersonal and cultural recognition and reparation processes for child victims and adult survivors as they are by the intrapsychic coping strategies and attachment needs of victims. From this perspective, we must also acknowledge that the social structures that permit the massive abuse of children to take place virtually unimpeded also perpetuate the core cultural dynamics of exploitation, dehumanization-objectification, sacrifice, lethal competition, misogyny and the eroticization of women's subjugation, and the valorizing of domination and collusion as modes of human relatedness.

If we agree that dissociative symptoms and dissociative disorders are almost always ultimately traceable to conditions of misuse of power in interpersonal domination, collusion, and neglect along with their intrapsychic elaborations, then analysis of pathological dissociation and analysis of pathological social relations must go hand in hand. By appreciating the embeddedness of dissociative disorders in cultural contexts of violence and prevailing oppressive power dynamics, we do not necessarily lose or obscure the psyche—its fantasies and organizing principles. However, we do potentially avoid reobjectifying and revictimizing the trauma survivor and subverting his/her messages, protest responses, and unusual pleas for recognition. In this connection, among others, psychotherapy and all of the allied mental health professions have a real mandate to challenge rather than reinforce conventional social arrangements and to reenvision social justice.

POLES OF THE CONTROVERSY

Severe dissociative disorders have landed in the heart of a psychological and cultural civil war. For some people, the problem isn't an epidemic of child abuse; the real problem is "false" memories, concretization of inchoate psychic states, transference psychoses, incompetent or overzealous clinicians, or coercive social influence. People are overstimulated and underinformed where severe trauma survivors are concerned and find it simpler to ignore child-abuse trauma altogether or jump on one of the readily available bandwagons of doubt, skepticism, and incredulity; meanwhile, in an era of escalating Holocaust denial, scholars and academics ponder the questions of whether we can ever know what really happened to anyone.

It has become increasingly difficult and intimidating to diagnose, treat, and report or even investigate cases of severe traumatization and dissociation. The existence of extreme dissociative disorders challenges our basic concepts of what it means to be a human being. Once accepted into one's worldview, the extremes of dissociative adaptation seen in many chronic trauma survivors open up deeply unsettling questions about human nature—the malleability of human identity, the astounding permutations of denial, collusion, and complicity, the workings and personifications of the unconscious mind, the existence of bizarre and sadistic forms of individually and group-directed child abuse, the power of implicit and explicit forms of thought reform and mind control, and the extent of organized crimes exploiting young children as well as teenage and adult dissociative sexual-abuse survivors.

Unfortunately, those who seek to minimize the role of trauma are encouraged by a cultural backlash predominantly orchestrated by the False Memory Syndrome Foundation (FMSF) and its media and professional advocates who, for a variety of personal, professional, economic, and political reasons, marginalize discussion of the effects and extent of child abuse in the culture and in psychopathology and tend to overplay the role of the intrapsychic and social influences or clinician malfeasance in "producing" severe dissociative disorders. Some others, motivated by more theoretical and clinical concerns, also de-emphasize the centrality of trauma in order to move our field beyond simplistic archeological and reconstructive models of psychotherapy and personality, to avoid concretization of psychic material, and to conceptualize the individual as always an active agent in his/her own life and not as just a passive victim of social and intrapsychic forces. For therapist and traumatized patient alike, navigating the intrapsychic and cultural torrents to steer a safe passage between recognizing and validating one's victimization on the one hand and transcending it on the other can be a tricky business.

Insisting on a central role for exogenous trauma in the etiology of severe dissociative disorders is not to preempt or exclude from the developmental picture the important roles of intrapsychic conflict, psychosexual development, psychological deficit, fantasy, and external shaping influences. After all, what is traumatic about trauma is both real and symbolic, both intrapsychic and relational—the events themselves, the meanings and fantasy elaborations of those events, and the interpersonal and cultural responses to those events. And none of that is to deny the existence of a minority of cases of malingering, factitious, or iatrogenic versions of dissociative disorders.

LIMITS OF NEUTRALITY

Psychotherapy is necessarily a moral discourse in which ethical commitments are always enacted and validated either covertly or overtly. Therapy and psychological theory cannot be neutral, objective, or divorced from cultural imperatives. Maintaining an appreciation for perspectivism, paradox, postmodernism, intersubjectivity, and dialectical process does not necessarily mean that one does not take a stand or hold a moral position. It does mean, however, that one's relationship to one's positions and values is porous enough to revisioning and that one is sufficiently open to scrutiny and interaction to balance the need for validation with the value of healthy, respectful conflict and dialogue. At times, for example in the face of character assassination, spurious generalizations, myopic fanaticism, extreme antitherapy rhetoric, professional and/or forensic opportunism, and radical forms of (motivated) skepticism that seek only to negate the veracity of both child and adult survivors' memory and testimony or the value of depth psychotherapy, this ideal of paradox or dialectical awareness might mean there simply cannot be real negotiation and dialogue. A transitional space of interaction and cooperation is not possible and the term "debate," which presumes a sane, respectful, and redemptive process, becomes a euphemism for ideological trench warfare and public relations hype.

The theoretical convictions, allegiances, and approaches of most social scientists including myself are doubtless related as much to personality and life experience (characterological patterns, trauma history, values, politics, ideology, social positioning) as they are to "objective" facts or truths. As a consequence, differences between advocates of opposing viewpoints will not generally respond to logic or reasoned argument. "For that very reason, they need to be discussed as problems of subjectivity and unconscious reasoning—not as issues of local politics" (Spence, 1993, p. 5). Paradoxically we need to include, within our "objective" discourse, an awareness of the "illusion of objective discourse" (O'Hara and Anderson, 1995, p. 174), which has been created by various disciplines and professions expressly to lend credibility and authority to those who are continually fighting for legitimacy. All discourse in the fields of child abuse, traumatic memory, and dissociation should be held with these thoughts in mind.

Leowald (1960) conceptualized neutrality as a love and respect for both the individual and the development of the individual; Pizer (1998) views neutrality as the therapist's responsibility to maintain an area of illusion for negotiation within the psychotherapy relationship. Both positions guarantee preservation of the interplay between reality and fantasy, protection for long periods of "not knowing," and support for the patient's capacity to face previously unassimilable traumatic realities. The intersubjective critique of the illusory and defensive aspects (viz., e.g., Orange, Atwood, and Stolorow [1997]) of the "doctrine of neutrality" of classical psychoanalysis has catalyzed appreciation of the reciprocally influencing, codetermining nature of all psychotherapy interactions: the therapist's perceptions and perspectives can never be viewed as intrinsically more real or true than the patient's.

From a relational perspective, the role of therapist is not that of neutral purveyor of expert knowledge. Rather, the therapist is a facilitator of transformative conversations, a moderator of benevolent disruptions, a coprocessor of unmetabolized pain, helplessness, and terror, and a navigator of creative and disturbing dialogues that assist traumatized patients in expanding both their imaginations and their repertoire of relatedness to self and others. At the core of this mutative process is an equal honoring of multiple narratives, multiple meanings, and multiple identities.

A DIFFERENT UNIVERSE

When clinicians spend thousands of hours with severely traumatized, dissociative individuals, their worldviews inevitably change. Those who treat trauma and dissociation occupy a different universe from those who do not. It is a consistent aim of these pages to illuminate, integrate, and *extend* the work of relational psychoanalytic theorists who have begun addressing the complex issues of sexual abuse, trauma, and dissociation. Many of these theorists, myself among them, are committed to advancing the view of complex dissociative disorders as more prevalent than is commonly believed, and also potentially more treatable psychodynamically.

Invariably, how we conceive of the patient's problem influences the solution to the problem. A delicate balance between disruption and stabilization must be continually renegotiated or the traumatized patient and the therapist will be perpetually overwhelmed or stalemated. The therapy relationship must break down old, as well as forge new, linkages between the inner world of the patient and his/her relationships with the sociopolitical world. The dissociative trauma survivor's essential individuation and differentiation from traumatic relational matrices is fostered only through ongoing challenges to the patient and therapist's unavoidable complicity with and dependence upon pathological social relations (Flax, 1996a), so that self (and society) can be reconfigured in more egalitarian and compassionate terms. In most cases, a therapist's emphasis on the patient's growth and self-awareness must be balanced with the therapist's emotional receptivity and psychological availability to the patient. Because all intimacy is perceived as threatening and potentially dangerous by severely dissociative trauma survivors, the possibilities for extended periods of agitation, psychological "disappearances," states of dissolution and deadness, treatment stalemates, or destructive acting out (on the part of patient and/or therapist) are endless.

THE TREATMENT MODEL

This book explores the effects on the patient's internal world, and on the treatment alliance, of the therapist's treatment values and goals and their communication, direct or indirect, which include

- fostering mutuality and interconnectedness
- dismantling internalized patterns of domination and complicity
- articulating and embracing of all the patient's dissociative states (in dialogue) regardless of degree of concretization or apparent threat
- encouraging restorative fantasy over repetitive (and concrete) self-defeating solutions
- fostering aggression in the service of the self rather than against the self and in the service of the perpetrator(s); this includes the therapist's supporting the patient's questioning of the authority of the therapist
- tolerating ambiguity and paradox
- processing and metabolizing fragments of helplessness, pain, dread, and terror
- expanding the capacity for freedom of association and freedom of thought—that is, restorating critical thinking
- developing more flexible psychological organizing principles, expanding and enriching the repertoire of relatedness to self and other
- developing a unified observing ego
- balancing internalized limits with internalized compassion
- developing a restored narrativity, historicity, affectivity
- facing existential issues regarding the self and human nature
- learning to live in the present, finding (and creating) joy, meaningful work, and interrelatedness in a life that is governed by neither the alternations of posttraumatic intrusions and psychic deadness nor the injunctions of perpetrators and collaborators.

The proposed treatment approach accepts the fundamental, but paradoxical reality of pathological multiplicity but consistently challenges the patient in attempts to help him/her move beyond a kind of balkanization of mind, with its polarized, warring, mutually deceiving factions attempting to dominate, eradicate, or ignore one another. The treatment approach also challenges forms of internalized irresponsibility and authoritarianism and helps develop an internal social "democracy" of self organized around authentic tolerance of internal diversity (i.e., going beyond the expert avoidance, camouflage, and polarization cultivated by most severely dissociative individuals). In this model, the internalization of new, healthy interaction patterns is as important as the internalization of new objects. These goals, like those of all relationally oriented treatments, are accomplished through immersion in (and survival of) the transference-countertransference matrix of feelings, fantasies, enactments, and memories; in this forum, polarized entanglements can lead to mutual reflection and mutually resolved disentanglements, fostering true ownership and freedom of mind.

CHALLENGES TO TREATMENT

Profound reintegration of basic attachment patterns is essential to meaningful recovery or healing. When parental, institutional, or archetypal authority has chronically betrayed a child as is the case among survivors of severe abuse, the elements of love, trust, power, and mutuality have to be reworked from the ground up. Therapists treating severely dissociative trauma survivors must be vigilant to the dynamics of power throughout the therapy relationship as these patients have experienced the most egregious abuses of power in intimate situations known to our species. Because of the ubiquity of abusive power dynamics in the lives of these patients, the clinician needs to be adept at attending to the potential replication and unconscious reenactment of the domination, torture, sacrifice, blackmail, seduction, "bait-and-switch," hostage-holding, and betrayal relational paradigms within the therapy relationship. The clinician needs to create an environment of shared inquiry, shared authority, and eventually mutual recognition and influence without negating the fundamental asymmetrical aspects of the therapy relationship (Aron, 1996). The commitment to humanizing and democratizing the therapy relationship, instead of encumbering it with the unnecessary trappings of higher authority and professional expertise (Hedges, 1997) as a vehicle for subverting old and establishing new attachment patterns does not preclude the therapist's directing, confronting, and interpreting at times. A central precept of feminist therapy (L. Brown, 1994) declares each of us an expert or source of information and authority. Often, we must help our traumatized patients who have been forced to submit to the excesses of irrational authority develop their capacities for listening to—not compulsively negating—and relying upon their own internal authority.

Because psychotherapy involves multiple parallel processes, this book is a call for an enhanced appreciation of the *complexity* of both patients' and therapists' dilemmas. The patient's challenge is to make it to therapy at all after childhood torment followed by posttraumatic symptoms, marginalization, and the unconscious lure of traumatic reenactments and self-destructive patterns; then s/he must have both the finances to afford and the will to endure the lengthy process. S/he may become the focus of the therapist's unbridled countertransference enactments ranging from fascination, rescue fantasies, denial, incredulity, and various forms of subtle or overt domination (often through interpretations) to boundary violations and distancing. S/he may become the focus of his/her family's as well as society's skepticism and derision.

The treatment of severely dissociative trauma survivors is a high-risk enterprise for therapists. Treating this highly misunderstood and difficult population the clinician faces numerous hazards, all of them leading to a high likelihood of secondary traumatization. These include the variety of aggressions, transgressions, and threats dissociative patients make toward their therapists, immersion in the traumatic transference-countertransference matrix, the hostility and incredulity of professional colleagues, increasing double binds generated by licensing boards and the legal system (including malicious lawsuits), organized antitherapy advocacy groups and skepticism salons within the society, and now the unrealistic expectations and constraints of managed care.

Both dissociative patient and therapist are caught in a sticky web of complex feelings and enactments and are enmeshed in parallel processes within the larger culture and social systems in which the treatment is embedded. Somehow, through it all, they must find ways to stay emotionally vulnerable and emotionally available in a context that is fundamentally retraumatizing for both. Most recent reviews of the issues involved in treatment of survivors of severe trauma have not taken the full measure of complexity into account.

THE BOOK

My primary intention in writing this book is to facilitate critical thinking about some of the most salient aspects of treatment for severely dissociative individuals and their therapists, and to establish a strong and lasting bridge between the contemporary psychoanalytic and the trauma/dissociation communities. My agenda is not to dictate to clinicians how to conduct psychotherapy with traumatized, dissociative patients, nor is it to establish a new list of techniques, or to push a particular theoretical agenda. Case presentations illustrate only one therapist's effort at integrating diverse clinical theories and translating them into practice. And, given the current state of polarization and the panoply of perspectives on patients' trauma memories and narratives, it is likely that various clinicians, theoreticians, and skeptics will interpret my descriptions of clinical work according to their preferred paradigms.

Every psychotherapy is unique. Every individual who is a trauma survivor is unique, and must be defined by his/her full range of adaptations, strengths, resources, and creativity more than by the nature and extent of the trauma s/he has suffered. For therapy to succeed, the therapist and patient must each find some freedom of movement within extremely restrictive and reactive intrapsychic, interpersonal, and cultural conditions. A clinician's strict adherence to dogma and party lines may obstruct effective communication and interfere with genuine opportunities for healing. A therapist's creativity and flexibility and capacity to tolerate the patient's impact on his/her psyche, open up new ways of being and experiencing for each individual patient, and for specific passages within each treatment.

The book is presented in three parts. Part One explores the issues of dissociative survival, extreme child abuse victimization, and the psychology of perpetration and complicity (collaboration). Part Two is really the clinical heart and soul of the book, applying the principles of relational psychoanalytic theorizing to restoration of the traumatized, dissociative self. Part Three introduces the multifaceted issues of the therapist as witness-participant and the therapist's survival of the treatment process. Investigations of the core dynamics of *mutual destruction* and *mutual survival* in the therapy work between therapists and severely dissociative trauma survivors track a healing journey at once grueling and inspiring.

This page intentionally left blank

Part One

The Landscapes of Dissociative Survival, Child Abuse Trauma, and Social Complicity

This page intentionally left blank

CHAPTER 1

Necessary Illusions: The Multiple Dilemmas of Dissociative Survival

Freeing yourself was one thing; claiming ownership of that freed self was another.

—**Toni Morrison *(Beloved)***

Many people enter treatment with complex, undiagnosed, or misdiagnosed problems resulting from severe childhood trauma and dissociative adaptations to chronic and sometimes sadistic abuse. As psychotherapy and psychoanalysis have matured over the last century, a growing number of clinicians have been able to discard some of the assumptions inhibiting the profession's understanding of, and response to, such patients, and to take another look at human subjectivity in general and also at altered states of consciousness, the structure of the unconscious, legal and ethical responsibilities, and the nature of evil.

The receptive clinical posture places a higher value on intersubjective discourse, reciprocal influence, and the complicated relationships among intrapsychic, interpersonal, and sociopolitical phenomena. It makes room for a host of formerly suppressed voices of traumatized individuals to surface and be recognized. The voices echo, among other things, abject terror and helplessness, shame and the conviction that the self is damaged or evil, the callous rejection of needs, feelings, and attachments, and prideful identifications with abusive perpetrators.

VOICES

"In my family I was a commodity. Everyone and everything was a commodity. I was owned—I was sold, rented, bought, traded. I never thought I could have a life of my own. I felt so intruded upon and so much hate and so much demand for service that I built a shield over myself and no can get through it anymore, not even me."

"My hurt and pain is stored in a beehive, in honeycomb form with lots of different compartments. The syrup is not golden, however, it is black and it oozes, it is disgusting. I am the one who lives outside of all of that. The others they are covered in the ooze. Me, I live in nowhere."

"I don't want to get it that this happened to me. I don't want to get it that this happens to anyone, anywhere in the world, not just in my family. I don't want to feel what I know I have to feel. I don't want to know. I want to be normal. I don't want to be an 'abuse survivor.' I want to have picnics and family reunions, pay the bills and quibble over the garbage pick-ups like everyone else. But it's not an option. It's not an option."

"They told me I liked it. I didn't like it, did I? They told me I was pretending when I said I didn't like it, and that I really did like it and want it. I pretended a lot, so I must have liked it—so maybe I really wanted it, even though I thought I didn't; and then they said I was lying when I said it hurt, so I must have really liked it but I really didn't. Do you believe me?"

"I played my part. It was the only part to play. Without it there was nothing for me. I mean nothing. I pretended to be asleep so he could pretend he wasn't doing what he was doing to me and if we both pretended then nothing happened and no one would know, especially not me."

"In order to survive I had to cling to all the wrong things and the wrong people, and now I have to unplug all of the wires and rearrange everything. But what happens when you unplug all of the wires—are you free or do you detonate?"

The child-victim's journey through the terrifying landscapes of trauma often requires, for psychological survival, the urgent mobilization of the mind's natural capacity for multiplicity in support of dissociative adaptation. Dissociation is a desperate effort to preserve life and sanity by constructing an identity to manage (for example, disown, compartmentalize, diffuse) pain, anxiety, terror, and shame. It involves the creation of self- and other-representations rooted in psychic exclusions (*Not me/Not him/Not happen)* and in identification with the only apparent objects of attachment or sources of protection—powerful others who *seem* to offer protection, escape, or some type of relief of pain or punishment. During[1] and after the trauma, the child imitates, pretends, distracts his/herself, enters altered states of consciousness; later in life, dissociative survival has to be bolstered continually by an arsenal of avoidance, addiction, and camouflage strategies.

Complicitous interpersonal and social contexts inevitably shape and reinforce the development of altered states of consciousness and the elaboration of a repertoire of alter personalities and attendant characterological patterns. The challenge to our cultural belief in a sane, just, benevolent, world and to our idealized societal self-image and the mental health professions serving it has fomented sharp divisions and bitter debates about the realities of child abuse, the veracity of patients' memories and histories, and the role and effects of psychotherapy in the treatment of trauma. Dissociative disorders are the product of a collaborative "revisioning" of history and identity by the victim, the perpetrator(s), and the colluding (i.e., invalidating, silencing, abandoning) family and social systems.

A world unready for the revelations of survivors of traumatic abuse sets up one of the primary templates for revictimization when it greets their psychic wounds with contempt, disgust, or incredulity. Any attempt to separate their adaptative mechanisms from the dynamics that spawned them runs the risk of pathologizing victims and subjecting them to another round of retraumatizing decontextualization and domination, which latter is the hallmark of interpersonal trauma. Accordingly, *recognition* of dissociative disorders must be another joint venture—of remembering, feeling, and witnessing—this one engaging the patient, the therapist, and the more benign and courageous components of the larger social system.

Part of the disturbing power of dissociation is the way it ignites parallel abusive, collusive, and revictimizing processes in every interpersonal environment, including psychotherapy. Severely dissociative patients are prone to the kind of destructive reenactments that turn those who engage with them into unwitting partners in re-creating the dynamics of their original abusive systems. Survivors of sexual abuse fear that something traumatic is about to occur, or is in fact occurring, at any given moment; moreover, their unconscious, trauma-driven preconceptions about disastrous relational outcomes disfigure the ways they anticipate and construe, as well as conduct, their own relationships (Van der Kolk, 1989; Levine, 1994).

Trauma survivors' belief systems inevitably get reinforced in treatment—not only when patients are actually mistreated, as they so often have been and still are in our mental health system, and not only because transference/countertransference pressures catalyze reenactments of traumatic relational paradigms—but also because the power of the compulsion to repeat the trauma is so intense (Van der Kolk, 1989; Briere, 1992b). As the severely dissociative patient's reality-testing fluctuates precipitously with the repetitions, the line between reality and fantasy becomes tenuous, and the "as if" or illusory quality of the transference may disappear altogether (Levine, 1990). Retraumatization will necessarily be an ongoing factor in the early phases of the therapy relationship, which will be informed and organized, like all other experience, by the memory of the trauma and its associated events. Sorting real from imagined revictimization in treatment is especially arduous when a patient steadfastly assumes the victim role or has only minimal self-reflective capacities.

Dissociative identity disorder (DID), the extreme end of the dissociative disorders continuum, is but one of the many personal and cultural passion plays of thwarted psychological liberation. It is, among many things, a complex posttraumatic stress disorder, a variable and mixed character disorder syndrome, a disorder of consciousness, and a disorder of self- and other-representation. DID is most notably an internalization of the dynamic patterns of (intimate) interpersonal violence experienced by the victim—exploitation, betrayal, subjugation, collusion, coercion, domination, blackmail, sacrifice, and forced submission to bondage (and loyalty) to irrational authority. This chapter explores the dimensions of severe dissociative adaptation, the traumatic relational dynamics that give rise to severe dissociative disorders, and the social and intrapsychic conditions that sustain them.

DILEMMAS OF DISSOCIATIVE SURVIVAL

Why? I am asked. Why do you bring that up? Must you talk about that? I asked myself the same questions until finally I began to understand. This was a wall in my life, I say, a wall I had to climb over every day. It was always there for me, deflecting my rage toward people who knew nothing about what happened to me or why I should be angry at them. It took me years to get past that rage, to say the words with grief and insistence but to let go of the anger, to refuse to use the anger against people who knew nothing of the rape. I had to learn how to say it, to say "rape," say "child," say "unending," "awful," and "relentless," and say *it the way I do—adamant, unafraid, unashamed, every time, all over again—to speak my words as sacrament, a blessing, a prayer. Not a curse.*

—Dorothy Allison, *One or Two Things I Know for Sure*

- *Donna's mother regularly turned her over to her father for sex from the age of four or five to get grocery money for the family, and also to pimps who paid well to use her in child prostitution and pornography. Donna was well-trained by the time she was six to initiate sexual behavior with any man, and when she began indiscriminately to approach her friends' fathers for sex on visiting their homes, her mother called her a slut and a whore and brutally beat her as punishment for acting like a tramp.*
- *Anna's father would ritualistically drown her in the bathtub until she was virtually unconscious. Then he would hug and kiss her in a theatrical display of rescue. Then he would sexually molest her. Then he would force her to get down on her knees and thank him.*
- *Craig was initiated into a sadistic pedophile group at the age of six by his older brother, who had been abused for years by the same group and had been molesting Craig ever since. The brother took him to a neighbor's garage where there was "a surprise" for him, opened the door, pushed Craig in, and locked it from the outside. In an exact replication of his brother's initiation, Craig was gagged and then serially raped by various men waiting their turns. He was told to get used to it, told that it would be his life from now on, and told that if he said anything to anyone, he, his brother, and his parents would be killed. A few years later, quite dissociatively organized, he was easily manipulated by the men in the group into "recruiting" other victims.*
- *Eileen finally managed to talk about how her father would gather her up after her psychotic mother's violent rages left her nearly unconscious. He would put her gently to bed and then begin molesting her; when she resisted, he sometimes acted as though she was hurting his feelings and sometimes as though she had badly misbehaved and had to be beaten. Eileen's father also used her body to teach his three sons about sex and urged them to have sex with her in his presence. They did so on their own as well throughout her adolescence.*
- *Brenda describes being buried alive by a group of seriously disturbed ritual abuse perpetrators and left in a box in the ground, cold and naked. The next day when they "discovered" her, they punished her for running away and*

hiding. She could choose—to be raped by the group or put back into isolation. Convinced that she had exercised free will when she "chose" the former, Brenda was traumatized into internalizing their edict that she belonged with them and their injunction that she obey all their wishes. As the perpetrators took over her intrapsychic and interpersonal life, she lost most of her mind with what was left of her will.

SEPARATION AND REUNIFICATION

The self-protective mechanisms of all organisms can take on a life of their own and go awry under conditions of constant bombardment: natural protest responses can devolve to autistic retreat or into addiction to self-injury; healthy detachment can calcify into heartless objectification of self and others; and restorative impulses can mutate into patterns of arrogance and domination. Our innate, malleable survival capacities adjust creatively to environmental impingements or prolonged periods of stress and deprivation by segregating, sequestering, reduplicating, distracting, and/or sacrificing parts to protect the whole, such that when physical or psychological survival is threatened, breakdowns occur. Disunity is almost always favored over unity.

"I know there is a 'there' there but I can't get at it and it can't get to me."

"I can't be astute for too long a time. It's too dangerous. I have to keep everything ambiguous, vague, tentative, optional, conditional. I need to be able to rearrange things at a moment's notice. If I don't keep my world like that then some things could get very clear and then I might have to make judgments about things and people, like my parents. I keep insisting on keeping things in two dimensions so I don't have to deal with life in three dimensions. When you ask me to relate to you and the world in a three dimensional way then I get scared that everything could come tumbling down all at once."

"They locked me in a huge meat freezer inside of a small grocery store that one of the guys in the cult I was abused by owned, I think. I was left there with the raw meat hanging and there were also dead human bodies or parts of bodies that they were saving for something, hanging there too. I know this sounds unbelievable. Anyway after a while I was taken out, I must have been unconscious and was given some kind of drug to make me not remember anything and then I remember these men were there and they were telling me things in my head about what to do, how to do it, how to remember, how to forget, what to remember, what to forget.

After a while, there was no me left anymore. I gave up somewhere in the freezer. . . . What they did after that didn't matter because I no longer cared. The 'mes' that got built up or created after that point were just puppets or marionettes acting on the commands and training of the men in the group. I became them, they became me."

Optimally, when threat disappears, motivations to reunify may take over. But when threat is chronic and enduring, it is entirely conceivable that atomized parts of the psyche will never be rejoined. Over time, the links in individual or collective memory that hold the map of unification erode. Then, only external recognition and intervention—building on the evolutionary-biological design articulated by Slavin and Kreigman (1992) whereby the self under siege stashes away elements for future actualization, validating human reparative potential—can bring about integration.

But as disunity qua survival strategy comes to constitute an independent homeostasis, the dissociative survivor comes to experience any breakthrough toward reunification of the self as a serious threat to his/her equilibrium. S/he may regard relational patterns that hold seeds of integration—insight, empathy, respect, love, compassion, encouragement to feel and reflect—as so perilous as to merit attack or avoidance; and s/he might actually seek out seemingly protective behaviors that soothe and reduce tension by sustaining psychological disunity (e.g., self-destructive acting out, substance addiction, workaholism, sexual compulsivity, involvement in abusive or duplicitous relationships, etc.).

PROTECTING DISSOCIATIVE STRUCTURES

> I was very tiny when I began filling in the blank spaces, the inconsistencies. Not being able to account for minutes or hours of time, finding myself in different clothes or geographical locations, was just an accepted part of my life. I became very adept at scanning the scene and putting together what the others inside had just done or said . . . —[explaining] what my body had done while I was not there. . . . My behavior was erratic because my many selves didn't connect with each other. Because of the continual social confusion, we all agreed to try and cooperate. . . . We all learned very quickly to stick by "The Code." . . . we made some rules, such as they had to call themselves [by the same name] in public. (Cameron, 1995, p. 101)

"It is humanly impossible to become fully alive in the present without facing and owning all of the hated, disavowed parts of the self that have shaped and been shaped by one's earliest object attachments" (Bromberg, 1998, p. 6). Existing inside a dissociative labyrinth with its oblique and unarticulated grief and continuous intrapsychic pressures (e.g., cacophony of voices) is like living in a permanent state of exile from the human community. Survivors of chronic abuse are tragically impaired when it comes to trusting or even cognitively processing the reality of their own experiences (Herman, 1992; Briere, 1996). Through repeated acts of distancing, disavowal, and dissociation, they develop an idolatrous faith in eradicating their pasts (including affectivity) while losing any faith in human solidarity and redemptive (i.e., witnessed, expressed) suffering.

Trapped in guilt, shame, and relentless self-blame, they remain enslaved to the traumas and traumatizers of the past even as they seek desperately to obliterate their history (including its pain, its meanings, and its impact). The litany of inconsistencies and self-betrayals that has become part of everyday life for survivors as by-products of their fears of change and their allegiance to dissociative defenses thwarts the development of new, loving relationships. Yet anything that jeopardizes the extension of their dissociative adaptations, including any threat to their attachments to malevolent but "protective" objects, makes the prospect of dismantling their persecutory theater of mind as hard and terrifying as sustaining it.

For complex dissociative adaptations to be truly effective, they must eradicate or conceal all evidence or knowledge of dissociation. "Cloaking devices," therefore, are essential to survival (and, because exposure is so threatening to the dissociative self-organization, extremely difficult to work through in the early stages of treatment). The severely traumatized individual works overtime "to prepare for almost any conceivable emergency that would startle [some]one into becoming aware of the dissociated system" (Sullivan, 1956, p. 203). Unfortunately, his/her unconscious motivation to deflect evidence of dissociation is often further potentiated by the incredulity of society and by manipulation on the parts of perpetrators who compound their victims' self-generated shame-based camouflage with intimidation, posthypnotic suggestions, even programmed resistance techniques.

VICTIMIZATION BY CHILDHOOD TRAUMA

> Self-preservation no longer existed in my head. Enduring was all I knew. (Cameron, 1995, p. 92)

Interpersonal trauma is at its most pernicious when it is embedded in the deliberately inflicted cruelties of a dependent relationship with a betraying, irrational authority—and just such a relational history is at the core of most severely dissociative patients' experience. In many forms of child sexual abuse, the negative impact comes more from the depth of betrayal than the severity of the violence itself (Salter, 1995). As Harris (1996a, p. 169) explains,

> Incest involves a child in coercive sexuality with an adult well known and often well loved by the child in an experience that is silenced and neither narrated nor integrated for the child by any compassionate, safe adult at the time of or in the immediate aftermath of the incest.

Severe dissociative disorders arise from internalization of social paradigms of domination, coercion, and sacrifice as sexually abused children replicate, potentiate, and simultaneously attempt to transcend the profound damage sustained by their ongoing exploitation and betrayal by caretakers and authorities. The paradigms can encompass perverse sexuality (Brenner, 1996), sadism, and the perpetrator's intentional structuring (i.e., programming) of dissociative identification with evil and malevolence; among survivors of ritual abuse groups and criminal organizations trafficking in child prostitution and pornography, "a number of dissociated sexual pathways may be [observed] in the same individual, [encapsulating] aggression, childhood trauma, anxiety, and sense of self" (Brenner, 1996, p. 165).

Throughout the literature on severe dissociative disorder, childhood trauma histories are the most consistent and prominent feature of clinical reports (Ross, 1997). Childhoods marked by chronic and severe physical, sexual, psychological, and spiritual assaults correlate with diagnoses of dissociative identity disorder (DID), formerly called multiple personality disorder (MPD) (Putnam, 1989; Kluft, 1987a; Ross, 1989; 1997).[2] Most related current research is consistent with the theory that dissociative symptomatology is based on responses to chronic childhood sexual and physical abuse (Braun, 1984; Kluft, 1987a; Ross, 1989; 1997; Putnam, 1989; Chu and Dill, 1990; Coons et al., 1988), or combinations of child abuse and/or reactions to other childhood stressors such as neglect, familial loss, and witnessing violence and abuse (Irwin, 1994; Zlotnick et al., 1995).[3]

A spate of recent studies investigating the relationship between psychological trauma and dissociative phenomena corroborated these earlier findings. In a nonclinical sample, Irwin (1999) found that pathological dissociation was positively predicted by dimensions of childhood trauma, but that nonpathological dissociation (e.g., psychological absorption) was not. Draijer and Langeland (1999) found that the level of dissociation in relation to childhood trauma in a large sample of inpatients was primarily related to reported *overwhelming* childhood experiences (sexual and physical abuse); when sexual abuse was severe (involving penetration and multiple perpetrators, and lasting more than one year, etc.), dissociative symptoms were even more prominent. Highest dissociation levels were found in patients reporting *cumulative* sexual trauma (intrafamilial and extrafamilial) or both sexual and physical abuse. (In particular, maternal dysfunction was related to level of dissociation suggesting that dissociation is neglect- and abandonment-related as well.)

Chu et al. (1999) found strong associations between *any* type of childhood abuse and elevated levels of dissociative symptoms in a large sample of women admitted to a trauma disorders unit. Higher dissociative symptoms were correlated with early age at onset of physical and sexual abuse and also with more frequent abuse. (A substantial proportion of all participants reported partial or complete amnesia for abuse memories; early age at onset of abuse was correlated with greater levels of amnesia. A majority of those who later recovered memories of child abuse were able to find corroborative evidence.)

The results of a comprehensive review summarizing and synthesizing recent findings on child abuse and dissociation (Gershuny and Thayer, 1999) suggest a fairly strong and consistent relationship among trauma, dissociation, and trauma-related distress (e.g., posttraumatic stress disorder, borderline personality disorder, bulimia). Individuals who had experienced traumatic events were more likely to dissociate than those who had not, and individuals who experienced more dissociative phenomena were more likely to also experience higher levels of trauma-related distress. The authors hypothesize that dissociative phenomena and subsequent trauma-related distress may connect to fears about death, loss, or lack of control above and beyond the occurrence of the traumatic event itself.

Despite the criticisms of skeptics and revisionists (Hacking, 1995; Brenneis, 1997; Piper, 1997; Haaken, 1998), both research and clinical experience consistently show that with increased frequency, intensity, number of perpetrators, and earlier onset of abuse, and in the absence of soothing and restorative interpersonal responses (Kluft, 1984; 1987a; Briere, 1996; Ross, 1997; Strong, 1998) there is a higher likelihood of longer-lasting and serious dissociative symptomatology. Personal clinical experience with dissociative survivors suggests that the term "child abuse" may not adequately reflect the levels of torture, degradation, terrorization, and psychic invasion that these individuals have endured.

Strong (1998), summarizing the potentiating factors of neglect, complicity, and denial, reminds us that it is not merely the acts of violence and intrusion that damage victims of abuse and lead to extreme dissociative adaptations but also the dysfunctional family systems that allow abuse to occur in the first place and often remain invalidating and dysfunctional long after the acts of sexual abuse have stopped. He notes that "incest survivors may feel even more betrayed by the nonabusing yet nonprotective parent . . . who either tacitly encourages the abuse or fails to recognize and stop it" (p. 77).

"It felt like hell lying in bed at night wondering if my father would come and take me, and then if he would take me, what he would do with me. I learned to distinguish the different pattern of footsteps . . . that would tell me whether he was going to take me down to the basement and rape me, or pick me up like a sack of potatoes over his shoulder and deliver me to those awful houses where children are used in everywhich way, and where I would have to go from room to room all night, or whether I was being taken somewhere to live for a while to participate in whatever they wanted for however long they wanted. I became a vacant shell, living between dread and numbness and physical pain until I discovered drugs and alcohol at age 13. Then I could control my body and what went into it for the first time. Or at least I thought I could.

"After getting me used to being raped and molested my father and his friends, who only seemed to like abusing little boys, gathered some of the children together in one place and had us do sexual things to one another while they watched and laughed and sometimes, not always, took pictures. We had no idea what we were doing. We thought it was fun, or special, or some secret initiation, even if we also felt scared and dirty and bad; but really they were just manipulating our innocence and getting off on it. I hate them more for raping my innocence than for raping my body."

LOSS OF LANGUAGE

Intense and overwhelming pain that is not met with human contact, compassion, and soothing (Kluft, 1987a; 1992; Van der Kolk, 1989) is one of the primary driving forces behind dissociative solutions, particularly when the traumatized child's (or adult's) need for soothing is greeted by further abuse, humiliation, and/or abandonment (including denial). And when extreme physical and psychic pain is compounded by interpersonal betrayal, social isolation, and the powerful global mistrust they engender, it leads also to the shattering of language, to the captivity and destruction of the victim's autonomous voice. The child-victim's incapacity to articulate—to witness, locate, externalize, or interpret—the traumatizing, assaultive exploitation of the self magnifies the split between his/her reality and the reality of others.

> As the content of one's world disintegrates, so the content of one's language disintegrates; as the self disintegrates, so that which would express and project the self is robbed of its source and its subject. (Scarry, 1985, p. 35)

The resulting isolation and appropriation of the victim's pain by the abuser(s) further sequesters the wounded, tortured self, and makes the individual hostage to an internalized dissociative system of perverted power dynamics. In that system, constructed under extreme conditions and elaborated during the prolonged captivity of childhood, any proximity to pain or even its relocation in memory is prohibited—and the victim's own mechanisms of denial are often lubricated by the perpetrator's conscious attempts at decontextualizing and recontextualizing his/her experiences. The language that would otherwise express those experiences is avoided, distorted, or deleted; in psychotherapy, insight alone will not be able to access what is thoroughly out of the intellect's communicative reach.

Since verbal language is either unavailable or inadequate to describe the intensity of the chronic trauma survivor's internal states, s/he is "left with a mute hopelessness about the possibility of communicating in a way that will help . . . get critical needs met. Words then seem to take on terrifying proportions; they are both too powerful and completely useless" (Strong, 1998, p. 44). In treatment, especially early on, the severely dissociative trauma survivor will more than likely fluctuate among at least three states: belief that expressing such feelings as sadness and rage will immediately lead to the destruction of him/herself, the therapist, and/or the office; use of the body as a vehicle for expressing pain through self-mutilation and other forms of self-injury, accident-proneness, or brutal reenactments of sexual trauma; and a complete sense of futility about any communication, and specifically about the therapist's ever really "getting it."

DISSOCIATIVE PATTERNING

The natural capacity to dissociate is "the escape when there is no escape" (Putnam, 1992, p. 104). When traumatic relational events overwhelm and shatter the vulnerable self, all the mental contents that constitute one's self and one's world—including one's voice, which generates and is generated by language—cease to exist (Scarry, 1985); what remains is pure *negation*.

Dissociation, a surrealistic set of discontinuities and disparities related to identity, awareness, and responsibility, sustains the survival of the traumatized individual by restricting the scope of the self—that is, by excluding the insupportable from the self-system. Cohen (1996) organizes the dissociative exclusions into four essential features: *not me* (signaling the development of alter parts); *not now* (characterizing incapacity to remain in or experience the present); *not then* (indicating disavowal of personal history); and *not ever* (identifying lack of hope, even of future orientation).

Constructing elaborate dissociative defenses while keeping toxic emotional states at bay (Briere, 1995) isolates the survivor of chronic abuse in bondage to the past. It narrows the windows of awareness and opportunity, preventing the updating of the central autobiographical consciousness, and makes guarding against retraumatization a central organizing psychological principle of life. Since intense experience, regardless of valence, can open floodgates of affect and cognition, the individual must continually *constrict* to avoid thoughts, feelings, and situations evocative of the original trauma (Van der Kolk, 1989).

The preservation of some boundary between self and not-self prevents the complete collapse of personhood[4] (Bromberg, 1998); indeed, it restores sanity. Dissociation hypnoidally unlinks incompatible states of consciousness, allowing them only separate access to awareness—that is, in the form of unconnected mental experiences—(Bromberg, 1994). And once separated, dissociated mental contents—behavior, affect, sensation, knowledge (Braun, 1984)—or interpersonal patterns (Pearlman and Saakvitne, 1995) coexist in parallel streams of consciousness without interacting and even without reference to one another. In the absence of intersection (much less conflict) between good and bad memories of a person or experience, the highly dissociative individual is not alerted to incongruity and thus not moved to resolve it.

The internal confusion and detectable inconsistencies that result from the strenuous psychological effort to avoid psychic conflict, pain, and disorientation must be camouflaged on an ongoing basis. Both the survivor who daily lives with this disjointed internal reality and those who get close enough to him/her to notice must continuously develop explanations to fill in the gaps. Combinations of cover stories (Waites, 1997), dissimulations, persona-restoring behavior, distractions, and evasions create a false sense of continuity for the dissociative survivor and for others not paying close attention. Intimacy of any kind is dangerous, however, and freighted with intrapsychic and interpersonal anxieties because the unremitting evasiveness, amnesias, and inconsistencies would become increasingly apparent under its umbrella.

Whereas repression maintains psychic material in the dynamic unconscious (Gabbard, 1994), dissociation preserves and suspends it in an array of parallel self-states and parallel fragments of consciousness, and they in turn can be multidimensionally sequestered, amplified, elaborated, and personified by a variety of fantasy operations. As Gabbard says, dissociation not only divides the self, it divides patterns of object relations. In patients with extreme dissociative disorders, these two primary sets of divisions intersect and potentiate one another so that tracking, "mapping," or following the lines of the polyfragmentation becomes nearly impossible.

Eigen (1996) describes the dazzling array of psychic possibilities once splitting and recombination run amok:

> Good or bad aspects of the self can be identified with good or bad aspects of the object, and good or bad aspects of the object can be identified with good or bad aspects of the self. If one adds dislocations and amalgams of affect, the clinical possibilities become mind-boggling. Ego, object, and affect can be taken apart and put together in myriad permutations. Bad ego can hate good ego, good ego can love bad ego, bad object can hate good object loving good ego, good ego can love bad ego hating good object, bad object can hate bad ego loving good object, good ego can hate bad ego hating good object, and on and on. (p. 31)

The dissociative system is like a labyrinth of mirrors and trapdoors, and the dissociative process the ultimate intrapsychic trickster. It reverses cause and effect and self and other configurations, and obscures (or lies about) the individual's connections to his/her history. Lost in time, fragmented in identity, hypervigilant to the possibility of exposure while ostensibly guarding against all manner of other catastrophes, and truly confused in all relationships though pretending not to be, dissociative survivors become the victims of their own dissociative roller coasters. Tragically, the vicious cycles involving impression-management and avoidance of feelings, memories, and detection frequently cause people (professionals included) to doubt and distrust everything severely dissociative trauma survivors have to say. And that leads to further rounds of self-doubt and invalidation for the survivors[5].

In keeping with the development of a "hot line" to a nodal memory network associated with fear and panic (Allen, 1995), highly dissociative individuals may demonstrate indiscriminate panic, startle responses, or even hatred toward any source of out-of-control feelings. Activation of any part of this emotional network can rapidly activate the entire complex, where hyperarousal, overstimulation, addiction to traumatic enactments, poor judgment, and intense sensation-seeking alternate and overlap. All such patterns move trauma survivors toward retraumatization, job and relationship loss, and eventually tortured lives of extreme bewilderment, isolation, and meaningless, nonredemptive suffering.

Although much remains to be learned, it is clear that young children have difficulty in cognitively and emotionally processing overwhelming and violent experiences and that they deploy dissociation as a way to master and contain traumatic affect and preserve some kind of meaning amidst mind-shattering events. Once the dissociative-survival process is set in motion, they lose control over personality changes and neurochemical alterations and sustain permanent damage to the integrated sense of agency.

The dissociative structuring of children's minds is very much in the hands of the perpetrators, however, when periods of disabling anxiety and isolation are *intentionally* followed by moments of pain and fear reduction and some form of soothing contact, human or nonhuman (food, drugs, sleep, blankets); when the abusive context systematically switches experiences of terror, pain, and helplessness with "opportunities" for actual or imagined empowerment; or when orchestrated guilt and shame alternate with orchestrated relief from being overwhelmed.

The pattern of breaking down and building up is one of the hallmarks of thought-reform and mind-control technology (see Chapter 8). It is exacerbated to advance and enhance the objectives of the perpetrating individuals or group by the planned imposition, under conditions of chronic and extreme stress, of trauma-shaping rape, torture, forced witnessing of and coerced participation in harming animals or infants as well as children or adults, electroshocks, disorienting or overstimulating drugs, learned helplessness paradigms, classical and operant conditioning techniques including powerful suggestion during and after the event, and sophisticated psychomanipulation to foster identifications with abusers and extreme states of rage and detachment. Such know-how has been available to the worldwide intelligence community since the 1950s and certainly accessible to cults and criminal groups (which sometimes overlap)—yet the mental health and academic communities have been reluctant to accept the validity of survivors' reports, and have resisted integrating it into their treatment protocols.

"I saw things no human being, no person should see. The fog is what I have to keep me from seeing that again, from knowing that which I saw, or that I ever saw it. Without the fog I have no life. It is the fog that allows me to live. And it feels like what is inside that fog could kill me."

"I am not a person. I am a creation of them. I am a cube posing as a person. I've been allowed to have a life providing I play by the rules and instructions book. If I don't I can be recalled. If I am recalled, I have to be broken down all over again. That would be a pain I could not survive."

"They told me they would always be watching me, always know what I was thinking or feeling or saying. They said they had watchers everywhere, could even read my thoughts. If I ever told anyone anything about what happened I would die and the person I told would be killed. Even if the watchers were dead, they told me they could still have eyes to see me and ears to hear me. They were everywhere and I could never get away."

LOSING AND FINDING THE SELF

Patients with severe dissociative disorders represent a veritable human encyclopedia of psychological adaptations to childhood abuse, including denying it, exonerating perpetrators, claiming guilt; maintaining sexual innocence, manifesting sexual expertise, using sexuality for power and control; betraying and abandoning the self; rebelling against and defying authority; feeling special, chosen, and above the rules of society (Goodwin, 1989).

Because of severe fragmentation and discontinuity, highly dissociative individuals are perpetually losing and finding themselves (their many selves). They frequently go unrecognized even in the mental health system, where some clinicians' entrenched biases interact with the patients' confusing presentations, eventuating in inaccurate diagnosis and ineffective treatment (Ross, 1997). Dissociation is an oddly invisible defense since when one alter or system of alters is running things smoothly, therapists do not see the dissociative process in operation and may therefore believe they have never seen a dissociative patient (McWilliams, 1994).

> If intimate partners of people with admitted, diagnosed multiple personality disorder miss signs of dissociation, it is not hard to see how uninitiated professionals can be even blinder. People who dissociate learn to "cover" for their lapses. They develop techniques of evasion and fabrication in childhood, as they find themselves repeatedly accused of "lying" about things they do not remember. Because they have suffered horrific abuse at the hands of people who were supposed to protect them, they do not trust authorities, and they do not come to treatment with the expectation that full disclosure is in their interest (p. 331).

The very strategies for conflict avoidance and psychological subterfuge that once saved the lives and the minds of childhood abuse survivors give rise to other thickets that obfuscate diagnosis and obstruct treatment of posttraumatic conditions. Some, for instance, expertly conceal their true anguished and archaic selves beneath compliant false-selves, studied personas of normalcy, and they can often appear as if they have sustained no damage whatsoever from the abuse (Grand and Alpert, 1993). Some patients' patterns of dissimulation and compliance allow for the creation of treatment-seeking selves contemporaneous with the maintaining of attachment to, and collusion with, abusive caretakers/perpetrators (Alpert, 1995). And some patients' oscillations among such extremes as asserting sexual expertise, asexuality, and assertion of sexual innocence, or construing themselves as chronic liars and then as honest informers, produce a continuously perplexing clinical picture. Complex issues of diagnostic comorbidity (reviewed by Kluft, 1996a; Ross, 1995b) amplify the chaos.

The isolation of a child or his/her captivity in an environment whose hallmarks are cruelty and irrational authority has a profound effect on that child's mental and emotional development. Such children live in a persecutory and amnestic structure where there is no continuity and few predictable links between events or relationships. Survivors of chronic trauma develop a strange but enduring attachment to states of *oblivion* and *absorption*. Although resignation, and an abiding sense of futility, contamination, and abandonment all lie close to the center of the dissociative self-organization, many dissociative trauma survivors can actually alternate between periods of heightened dedication to tasks, especially those that serve others, and periods of complete escape from all responsibilities. In extreme dissociative individuals, states of dissociated innocence and naiveté alternate with states of absolute corruption and cynicism. Their fortified persona-restoring functions often leave them oblivious to the reasons why they feel chronically guilty, self-hating, and why they are vulnerable to revictimization.

> Wherever evil occurs, systemic ambiguity, denial, and obscurity will attend it. This collusive trend toward concealment proceeds not only from evil's intrinsic unknowability, but also from the peculiarities of that developmental regression which follows upon massive trauma. For trauma is met and endured by a psyche that is creative in the exigencies of survival. Under threat of annihilation, the mind mobilizes primitive defenses, perceptions, cognitions, and affects . . . in an attempt to metabolize that which cannot be borne . . . these primitive defenses involve an autistic retreat from the human other, and an incapacity to know both history and agency (Grand, 2000, p. 12).

In order to perfect dissociative survival, traumatized individuals must develop their capacities for camouflage and self-deception. By replacing or displacing consciousness and memories of childhood terror and misery with more benign history, they achieve an essentially life-saving compromise-by-traumatic-necessity between surviving and abandoning themselves. The shattered psyche, relentlessly reorganizing and reconfiguring itself in relational milieus of abandonment, neglect, and incredulity, repeatedly discovers safety and protection in reenactment of the original trauma(s)—interspersed with denial, distraction, amnesia, and periods of apparent equanimity. The memorializing of the past through real and symbolic reenactment and repetition dynamics is "a desperate, convoluted attempt to maintain an identity . . . separate from and unvanquished by the original perpetrators" (Kafka, 1995, p. 141), while paradoxically maintaining, at least unconsciously, the attachment bond with childhood caretaker/abusers.

Invisibility, distraction, and ironclad containment allow unbearable suffering to be dispersed and denied in order to ward off (the continuously impending) inundation by traumatic affects and images or the threatened loss of needed attachment objects. The ability to pass as unitary or untraumatized and to shift identities based on perceived danger and interpersonal expectations is strengthened by the survivor's exposure to the cunning and duplicity of his/her abusers, whose agenda of secrecy and subterfuge becomes the victim's own. Now it automatically self-reinforces, but originally it was potentiated by double binds, forced choices, and variously elaborate setups to coerce complicity with the perpetrators' evil, thereby confirming the victim's evil and the shame, guilt, and fear that keep the cloaking devices on.

"When I go to work some real cool guy comes out and takes over and he is incredible at what he does. Not the insecure, incompetent, overly sensitive guy sitting before you. He is so masterful that no one would know anyone else is in here. The nights before work I can feel so much anxiety, all the time, from what I do not know. But then when I go to work, somehow, and I don't know how, he just takes over. Work itself is the best single reinforcer of my dissociation. When I come to therapy from work I cannot just shift out of this mode. When the cool work guy is out there are simply no feelings to feel. For him therapy gets in the way. For me, it feels like my only chance."

"There are too many of them [alters]. They're just getting in my way—why can't they just go away and leave me alone. . . . I don't want feelings, I don't want memories, and I don't want to be MPD. Can't you make it all go away?"

"Childlike voices in my head tell me, 'Please don't hurt me, I won't be bad anymore, I promise. I'm sorry I told, I'll be quiet now, I'll be good.' Angry, mean male voices in my head threaten to kill me repeatedly, saying: 'You traitor, you're nothing without your secrets, you're nothing without us, now you must pay. We can kill you whenever we want to, just remember that.' Another voice in my head keeps saying over and over that I'm just making it all up, why don't you just talk about something else and stop listening to stories about your family that never happened?"

"There are many levels of blocks to my remembering and telling you anything or to knowing my own mind and history. First there is just a big old suitcase slamming shut in my mind saying, 'Danger, Beware, don't go there!' Then there are the threats that people and animals I love will be harmed. That was demonstrated many times by my abusers. The next level is where I feel so sleepy that I cannot remember anything I was thinking about or that I was going to say. I was taught in some state and probably a drugged state, that every time I begin to think about so and so I will begin to feel sleepy, like a hypnosis thing deeply embedded. Beneath that is a layer of command poisoning. Somehow I am suppsed to poison myself with something dangerous or take an overdose of tranquilizers if I am beginning to remember or talk to someone outside of the group. Alters have been trained for that. Still, beneath this level are messages to call specific people, contacts in the group, to let them know I have disclosed something and then they will take care of it from there and make sure

I never do anything like that again. Finally, or at least what I can know now is a level of self-injury and suicide training, sort of like training to have a car accident or to cut my wrists. You see, I am wired or programmed to die rather than heal."

CAPACITY FOR TRANCE AND SELF-HYPNOSIS

In pathological families (and criminal systems) where children exist solely to gratify the psychological needs of the adults, their survival depends on somehow adjusting to a psychotic world where abusive behavior is acceptable but telling the truth about it is sinful (Summit, 1982). The child, literally captive to the family (Herman, 1992), must accommodate to norms of assault, exploitation, and betrayal with secrecy, self-sacrifice, and self-betrayal (Rieker and Carmen, 1986). Biologically driven to form attachments to his/her primary caretakers regardless of the quality or price of the caretaking, s/he has no choice but to love and want to be loved by his/her abusers (Ross, 1997). To cope, the traumatized child splits off experiences of terror and pain. S/he invents illusions of fantastic dividedness, including imagining him/herself as existing and *not existing*.

Over time (and with reinforcement, and biochemical alterations in the brain)[6] these sophisticated dissociative solutions develop into relatively autonomous alter personalities as well as less organized ego- or self-states generated as repositories for traumatic affects and meanings. The alteration of memory, consciousness, and identity in ways that prevent full participation in the interpersonal world makes room for the dissociative individual also to "reassociate" to fantasies of more powerful self and/or more benign or benevolent other.[7]

The roles of hypnotizability, suggestibility, and proclivity for fantasy in the etiology and maintenance of severe dissociative disorders have yet to be confirmed (Whalen and Nash, 1996). While Bliss (1986) emphasizes that dissociative phenomena are essentially autohypnotic, others comment on the formidable self-hypnotic capacity of most DID patients, the utility of hypnosis in treatment, the utility of self-hypnosis for focusing, distancing, and concretizing magical thinking (Bliss, 1980; 1986; Kluft, 1987a; Braun, 1984; Putnam, 1989; Ross, 1989), and the fact that transient analogs of DID can be created in normal subjects through the use of hypnosis (Carlson and Putnam, 1989). Still others find little correlation between dissociation and hypnotizability (Kihlstrom et al., 1994; Ray, 1996) or between dissociation, abuse, and measures of increased use of fantasy and imagination (Rhue, Lynn, and Sandberg, 1995).

Whalen and Nash (1996) conclude that there is no compelling evidence to support the proposition that hypnotizability and dissociativity are overlapping (rather than independent) psychological capacities or personality constructs. And Ross (1997), going a step further, asserts that labeling DID phenomena autohypnotic is tautological—tantamount to inferring etiology from phenomenology; inevitably, a comprehensive model of DID needs to take into account much more than autohypnosis. (Those who remain outraged by the trauma-dissociation connections that ground most current clinical theories insist, to the contrary, that the posttraumatic DID is nothing *but* an artifact of fantasy, suggestion, hypnosis, and social facilitation [Spanos, 1994; Ofshe and Watters, 1994]).

Fantasy and symbolic functions in DID and traumatized patients are quite different from those in nontraumatized people (Van der Kolk, 1987a; Bigras, 1990; Levine, 1990; Krystal, 1978; Huizenga, 1990). Specifically, their uses are highly rigidified, circumscribed, and repetitive, and only minimally restorative, transformative, or interactive with other aspects of mind. In many cases, severely traumatized individuals cannot even imagine benevolent outcomes (i.e., generate restorative or retaliative fantasies); in others, imaginal/symbolizing functions are completely suppressed—or never develop at all.

Personal clinical experience shows most severely dissociative trauma survivors to have unusually restricted imaginal lives; they actually tend to fear deployment of fantasies in problem solving, as if getting too near their inner worlds for any reason could be dangerous. By extension (see Chapter 7), DID should be construed as a disorder *of* fantasy (i.e., characterized by disordered imagination and fantasy) rather than a disorder driven by or arising *from* fantasy. The fact that severely dissociative individuals have the adaptive resources to invent closed systems for surviving physical and psychic pain and impossible double binds does not make them fantasy-prone (or, for that matter, autohypnotic, or otherwise vulnerable to any/every suggestion; in fact, they are variously suggestible and impervious at once). The right question is not how much fantasy, but what kind, for what purpose, how flexible, and how effective in promoting negotiation of complex psychic realities. Furthermore, and in keeping with Ross's (1997) advocacy of a comprehensive etiological model, attributing all of the phenomenology of severe dissociative disorders to any one factor is theoretical reductionism at its most absurd.

OMNIPOTENCE

Omnipotent solutions to traumatization—*I made it happen, I made it (them) go away, I wanted it, I deserved it and the pain makes me stronger; the abuse happened to her, she is not a part of me; I am impervious to any effects of the abusers then and now, I am secretly in charge of everything and everyone, my anger is dangerous and will annihilate everyone and everything, I like being evil and I chose to be evil*—allow the developing child to hold on to elements of healthy grandiosity when all of the nurturing and narcissistic supplies essential to development are either unavailable or only accessible through submission or self-sacrifice. In abusive family systems the requisite disconfirmations of reality and other accommodations to irrational adult authority destroy the healthy self's ability to assign appropriate meanings to, and trust perceptions of, interpersonal behavior. Omnipotent defenses, including manic denial, and alterations in reality and consciousness occur because the child's interpersonal reality has been profoundly distorted and not because the patient was originally developmentally arrested, grandiose, or lost in some elective fantasy disorder, independent of malevolent social forces.

In keeping with omnipotent solutions to childhood trauma, victims commonly minimize their abuse or assume total responsibility for it and for all violent or self-destructive sequelae enacted to reduce helplessness and vulnerability. Grotstein (1999) describes how abused children see themselves as originators of the trauma in order to master it and to reclaim some sense of self-respect or agency: their love was bad (schizoid position), their hatred was bad (depressive position), or their maltreatment was otherwise their fault. Other grandiose distortions may lodge in the shame and guilt of implicit participation, survivor guilt, and/or the perceived failure to stop the abuse from happening.

As in any rigid psychological adaptation or survival, the fixed dissociative repertoire eventually becomes self-limiting and self-destructive. All desperate attempts to maintain attachments and reclaim some aspect of the humanness broken at the time of the trauma only catalyze the submergence of self in a dissociative web of internal persecution and unusual displays of pride and bravado. The adult trauma survivor will often resort to seeking sustenance for unusual defensive grandiose self-states in keeping with what was reinforced in the abusive developmental context—for example, helplessness, perfectionism, compliance, denial, and displays of arrogance, righteousness, and sexuality.

Childhood omnipotence matures into healthy self-esteem when healthy grandiosity, or "archaic expansiveness" (Orange, Atwood, and Stolorow, 1997, p. 81), is mirrored, nourished, and nontraumatically limited; when the shame and self-hatred underlying "defensive grandiosity"(p. 81) are empathically understood; and when compulsive defenses against terrible realities and the fantasies (and the conflicts) they engender do not need to be continuously mobilized (Kohut, 1971).

DEVELOPING ALTER PERSONALITIES

Putnam (1989) succinctly defines alter personalities as "highly discrete states of consciousness organized around a prevailing affect [and] sense of self (including body image) with a limited repertoire of behaviors and a set of state dependent memories" (p. 103). Binding affect, memory, and behavior into such a series protects the abused child against being flooded by painful thoughts and feelings when s/he is not being traumatized and allows him/her to function and to continue, to some extent, to develop (Putnam, 1994). Integrating cognitive and psychodynamic perspectives, Fine (1999) views alter personalities as personified adaptational strategies that may be representations of conflicts, fears, and/or wishes, ultimately representing a traumatized child's desire to not face overwhelming experiences alone. Ross (1994), capturing the essence of MPD, calls it "an auto-immune disorder in which the psyche has become confused about the distinction between self and non-self, and has learned to turn its destructive mechanisms on the self, mistaking it for a foreign invader" (p. xiv). Children build their alter personalities from the raw materials available to them, but their multiple identities are shaped as they mature by influences in the larger society: DID patients may absorb values, attitudes, and stereotypes from family, race, religion, ethnic and other communities, the media (Kluft, 1994), and even from their own individual histories in the mental health system.

Such a complex dissociative defense as the development of alter personalities is not put into place after one traumatic episode; however, the personality fracturing arising from a single event may create the preconditions—malleability and dislocations in both personality and brain chemistry. The more severe and continuous the trauma, the more challenges to the victim, the more complex the dissociative defenses must become (Beere, 1995). Some survivors' "dissociative virtuosity" (Herman, 1992, p. 102) creates barriers to communication and impermeable boundaries for the containment of traumatic affects, escape from the constraints of reality, and an alteration in subjective sense of identity (Putnam, 1989). "The patient creates her own environment based on lack of reciprocity with the external world instead of creating a dialogue with [it]" (Elin, 1995, p. 249).

Victims end up with too many identities, each and all of which are insufficient to anchor them in time, space, and relationship. Most highly dissociative individuals are quite uncomfortable about being seen switching from one to another and will not acknowledge the process even to therapists until real trust is developed (Kluft, 1994). Many actually generate strategies to mask switching from themselves, including the design of special alters to cover the multiplicity in general and the switching phenomena in particular.

As children, most traumatized, dissociative patients consolidate the idea that no one will believe the truth about their abuse and they learn to disavow and disremember (Kluft, 1994), often after letting "their initial denials . . . crumble into false confessions [of lying]" (p. 27). They become masters at rewriting history through alter personality construction, which Braude (1995) calls an *idiom of distress* serving the short-term and then long-term adaptation needs of the besieged individual who wants to reinterpret both past and present in order to harmonize them into some desired vision for life. This process may well be the source of most of the most serious and most common "false" memories in the minds of DID individuals—fabricated memories of *nonabuse* ("Nothing happened," "I made it happen," "I liked it," or "It wasn't that bad").

EXTENT OF THE DISSOCIATIVE SYSTEM

Multiplicity exists on a continuum, and according to Kluft (1988b) the degree of multiplicity experienced by any one individual depends on the amount and severity of the trauma, the degree of dysfunction, the amount and quality of the internal communication among part-selves, and the degree to which the different alters or "parts" cooperate. Networks of alter personalities can vary greatly in their size, their permeability, and in the way aggression is distributed among them to serve developmental functions, trauma containment, and the self-hatred that keeps much of the system running.

In the severe conditions (MPD/DID), the dissociative web may be so intricately interwoven that there is actually considerable overlap among the mental systems and considerable interference with one another. That is, the overall network of dissociative barriers may not be as extensive and impermeable as what the patient presents to him/herself or to the therapist. According to Braude (1995), this explains why dissociated personalities may have common memories and why some MPD/DID child states may have access to adult vocabularies and linguistic capacities, for example. Even when alters know each other's thoughts, experiences, and actions, they nevertheless are considered dissociated from one another in multiple variations of "asymmetrical awareness" (p. 43).[8]

> If one understands the process of alter formation as one of defensive reduplication and/or reconfiguration rather than division, the problem of wondering how the mind becomes divided into such complexity ceases to be relevant. The alters become different patterns of whole and/or partial copying and/or reconfiguring, which, when activated, may be more or less similar to one another, and inevitably will have a lot in common (Kluft, 1988b, p. 57).

One part-self can have a totally loving, deferential, idealizing bond with a parent and refer to him as "my" father while another calls the same man "the" father or "her" father or a "parental unit" or "that other person who does what the adults want." Some alters may hate that parent and some do not know him at all. Aggression is transformed into separate sets of homicidal and suicidal feelings through complex dissociative splits and personifications. Feelings of sexual arousal are often personified in promiscuous alters; sexual repression, sexual avoidance, and/or frigid states predominate in marital or other intimate relationships. Mystics and demons exist side by side but never interact (outside the therapist's office). Epistemological barriers can separate part-selves when they are aware of each others' existence but otherwise dissociated (for such functions as ownership, self-awareness, and capacity for beliefs about self-states' referents) (Braude, 1995). In extreme cases of possession or dissociated will, DID patients report feeling like the passive and obedient instrument of the will of another (Spiegel and Cardena, 1991), although more often guilt- and shame-ridden dissociative trauma survivors claim that their own choices governed when in fact their sense of agency had been obliterated or co-opted by perpetrators whose own perverse wills actually defined and controlled their behavior. Negotiating tangled ownership of responsibility is one of the most difficult aspects of treatment.

The degree of overtness of the alter phenomenology may depend, according to Kluft (1996a), on the resilience of the host alter, the incidence of contemporary stress in the patient's life, the influence of secondary gain, the evidence of narcissistic investment in separateness, and the extent of underlying cooperation and number of shared goals within the dissociative self-system. Personal clinical experience with DID patients who insistently deny their multiplicity and switch smoothly and seamlessly among alters shows it to be most typically submerged by those who are highest functioning and have measurable worldly accomplishments, those who have undergone extensive thought reform and suffered extreme coercion at the hands of criminal perpetrator groups, and those who maintain frequent contact with the sources of their childhood abuse. Their covert alterity is empirically predictive of excessive swings between revelation and recantation, prognostic complications, and a greater likelihood of treatment stalemates.

Kluft's (1985; 1991b; 1995; 1996a) identification of key features and functions of alters is essential to review in light of the sensationalization of flamboyantly overt multiplicity over the past decade and the professional alternation between fascination and incredulity with the alterity phenomenon over the past century.

- The purpose of alters is the creation of alternative self-structures and psychological realities to facilitate emotional survival and cope with intolerable experiences.
- They facilitate that adaptation by segregating certain aspects of experience, self, and knowledge from one another in relatively consistent and rule-bound fashion.
- The form and content they take and elaborate is influenced by characterological and cultural factors, imagination, creativity, intelligence.
- More crucial than overt manifestations to understanding alters and their defensive and developmental functions are inner beliefs, cognitive processes, and complex interrelationships.
- Alters should be construed as "reconfigurations rather than reified divisions" (1996a, p. 343), as ways the mind may be organized rather than as pieces of a pie or any other unity; because the need, incentive, and potential for reconfiguration is exponential, their number may be very large.
- When alters can accomplish their functions without emerging completely and demonstrating their separateness, they often do so, and they are usually quite muted, contrary to public (and sometimes professional) misconception.[9]

Types of Alters.[10] The development of alters, although purely structural, self-regulatory, and adaptive, is one of the more colorful aspects of extreme dissociative living. The literature describes a wide range of different types—among them: host personalities, child alters, internal persecutors, internal self-helpers, suicidal personalities, protectors and helpers, memory trace personalities, cross-gender personalities, promiscuous alters, administrators and obsessive-compulsive personalities, substance abusers, autistic and handicapped alters, analgesic personalities, imitators and impostors, demons and spirits, personalities with special talents and skills, guardians of memories and secrets, avengers, expressers of hidden impulses, and defenders of or apologists for the abusers (Putnam, 1989; Kluft, 1984a; Ross, 1989). More unusual variations include: animal alters, cross-race personalities, babies, sadists, dead people, zombies, ghosts and other discarnate entities, specific deities, angels or religious saints, demons, mystics, healers, couriers, informers and "tape recorders," trained assassins, trained kidnappers, trained prostitutes, trainers of prostitutes and pornographic performers, time bombs/booby traps, calendars, indexers, and file managers.

In the dissociative abuse survivor's world the rules of identity are extreme, the operating assumptions and convictions outdated but accepted uncritically, and the fulcrums are domination, exclusion, and polarization. Kluft (1996a), pointing out that most classification systems cannot reconcile the full complexity of the clinical presentations of alterity, distinguishes alters according to their genesis—in response to trauma, to various narcissistic, sexual, and aggressive conflicts, to problems in attachment, and to developmental needs, conflicts, and related deficits.

Goulding and Schwartz (1995) organize alters by roles, conceptualizing three groups—*exiles, firefighters,* and *managers*. Exiles contain needs or traumatic memories and embody sensitivity and fears; often child-identified and frozen in time, they perpetually relive the trauma as if it is happening in the moment. Firefighters, invested with a "negative specialness" that Briere (1989) calls the power to do bad, are assertive, high-energy, highly automatic, controlling parts who relate primarily on the basis of distrust and one-upmanship, act out impulsively and destructively, identify with the perpetrator, and adopt unwise, expedient protective behaviors. Managers permit the individual to function on a daily basis and maintain a façade of normalcy and unity (almost a caricature of the people they have studied in order to "pass"); devoted to work and cunningly manipulative, they actualize high ambitions, tend to be hypomanic, obsessive-compulsive, and socially ingratiating, fear psychological work and cannot tolerate intimacy, and kill off spontaneity by distracting, placating, rationalizing, and avoiding.

Frankel and O'Hearn (1996) compare fractionated internal DID organizations with the fragmented culture of Eastern European Jewish ghettos during World War II. The survival agendas designed in response to extreme and unremitting stress, both individual and social, feature help-seeking *bonding* forces—traumatized alters seeking to offload pain and find someone to improve their lives; *probonding forces* charged with communicating to outsiders about the atrocities—protector alters, whose roles include generating hope, giving comfort, and disclosing secrets of the trauma; and utilitarian *antibonding forces* mandated to prevent destabilization—persecutory alters (often bonded to the abusers), whose job is to disrupt bonding with the outside world to guard against retaliation and preserve attachment to perpetrators and perceived power. (In this model, engaging with the antibonding alters is key: clinicians can defuse the guilt/innocence split, building alliances with them by acknowledging their power in the system, and by empathizing with their isolation and intense shame.)

In therapy, particularly with higher functioning patients—and contrary to the typical focus on aggressive, acting out, and self-destructive or child alters as obstacles to treatment—the internalized collusive, complicitous, and collaborationist states are most profoundly obstructionist. More often than not the source is the worldly host personality, along with passive, vacant, technically innocent alters or clusters of self-states, whose insistent superficiality, direct and indirect camouflage of injuries, naïve protection of the perpetrators, and massive denial are unnegotiable.

Internalized complicitous "bystander" states often serve the rest of the dissociative system as decoys and deflectors, not least from psychological inquiry (for which kind of work they have very poor memories). Collaborator alters, some completely controlled by still other alters, run the gamut from direct assistants to internal perpetrators to "psychotically blind" self-states who miss the most obvious danger cues or facilitate the setting up of the entire personality system for self-destructive enactments. Most commonly, collaborator personalities are modeled specifically on a nonoffending parent or a relative who has managed to remain absolutely oblivious to family reality or who has allowed the child to be abused for conscious reasons (deflecting violence, making money, generating vicarious sadistic gratification) or unconscious reasons (reenacting of his/her own betrayal). These models of complicity (and the alter personalities based on them) tend to act incompetent or in a particularly manipulative fashion, enabling their victimized children to regard them as innocent (and sometimes even enabling others to see them as victims of their children's symptomatology).

Ross (1997) addresses these phenomena under the umbrella of "host resistance" (p. 276), whereby a conscientious, victimized, and often tearful, pathetic host personality entreats the therapist's help in learning about him/herself and getting better—but completely decompensates any time other alters speak or reveal memories. Such a host is enacting the collaborator message "not to communicate" and "not to know" entrenched in the pathogenic family system. And when that host covertly reinforces the rapid switching and acting out on the part of his/her alters, Ross (1997) concludes that the problem is not that the alters come out uncontrollably, but that the host decides to let them out, again enacting the dissimulation, avoidance, irresponsibility, and inconsistency that took place throughout childhood. Ross's worst host-resistance scenario occurs when the host purposefully renders false (increasingly horrendous and extravagant) memories to distract from the real work of therapy, such that the more s/he reveals, the less is actually known.

SHAME AND SELF-HATE

Shame makes us long for invisibility, makes us feel unloved and unlovable (Nathanson, 1992), and most of all isolates us from a feeling of belonging to the human community. In children, chronic shaming leads to chronic dissociation, and chronic reliance on dissociation inevitably leads victims back to experiencing chronic shame. In severe dissociative disorders, shame is so pervasive that the continuous psychological struggle to repress and dissociate it seriously depletes the patient's life energy (Duncan, 1993). In extreme cases it produces extreme psychological organizations—adamant self-sufficiency, spite and defiance, haughtiness and arrogance, numbness, envy, obsessional stubbornness—contrived to protect the vulnerable self from further disintegration. Chronic humiliation and scorn generate profound feelings of defectiveness, weakness, and unworthiness (Nathanson, 1987), leading eventually to a turnoff of all affects and the erection of an *empathic wall* against exposure to and being overwhelmed by other people's emotions. (Empathic walls are part of what sustains separations between alter personalities.)

Child-abuse survivors, like most oppressed groups, experience the particularly entrenched form of shame that comes out of the prolonged distress of forced helplessness and powerlessness. Victims often hate themselves for their vulnerability (and not their perpetrators), and their self-hatred can become a perverse home-base, one they are reluctant to leave in spite of its suffocating limitations:[11] even though they understand at some (entirely separate) intellectual level that they could not have prevented or changed things in any way, they feel tremendous shame for their complicity and incapacity to halt the abuse and end their subjugation. And this shame is profoundly silencing—victims feel complicated allegiance to their victimizers as a function of dynamics ranging from traumatic attachment to mind control (see Chapter 8), and they fear exposure both for themselves and for their abusers—so much so that, ironically, it makes them malleable *accomplices* in their own victimization, especially when the perpetrator knows how to manipulate it.

Imprisonment in shame and self-hatred is cemented in extremely violent and perverse offender group situations, where perpetrators force children to witness and "choose" to participate in wicked actions as a means of binding them to the abuse and to permanent belief in their selves as damaged and evil. The insidious reversal whereby victims are coerced into bearing the responsibility for causing and even desiring their own abuse—whereby the child is the origin of the adult's misdeeds and inheritor of the guilt and shame the perpetrator never seems to feel—is intrinsic to child abuse (Salter, 1995).

Not surprisingly, survivors are deeply confused as to who is responsible. With psyches already organized to internalize massive amounts of shame and guilt disowned by their offenders and by a tacitly collaborative culture, they are unconsciously encouraged to remain in the victimized position (preserving the homeostasis of the perpetrating and colluding systems).[12] Telling victims that what happened to them didn't really happen to them and that they are making it all up due to confusion, unconscious fantasy, or a need for attention solidifies the interlock between perpetrator and collaborator. Grand (2000) calls this labyrinthine system of mutual influence (including intrapsychic and interpersonal transactions) among perpetrator(s), bystander(s) and victim(s) "malignant dissociative contagion" (p. 17).

"When I cried and told him to stop my father said I was faking because he said I was a little whore and I wanted it. Then, later when I told him that he was hurting me, he said that he knew I was lying because I wasn't crying, and he kept on hurting me."

"It seemed so normal from the outside when you didn't know the whole story and all that was going on. The only explanation that I could come up with was that I was the crazy one, since they were all acting like nothing was going on, watching television, talking and eating. They seemed to be having a good time. My father was always more talkative and nicer to the other kids after he raped me. He was calmer, and he even paid attention to them a little, which he almost never did. I would be feeling so strange and sick to my stomach; and then, on top of that, I thought I must be the crazy one since they are all acting so normal. Then I'd hate myself for not being like everyone else. I always wished to be normal. Then I just stopped thinking about it."

"I can't find my self-hatred anymore. How am I going to take care of myself? I feel naked without it."

Feminist legal scholar Catharine MacKinnon (1987) articulates the societal bind that can only be managed by turning the victim into a nonperson:

> Whoever is so cumulatively violated as to be an emblem of collective violation is simply not that bundle of rights termed the individual. If it happened and it hurt her, she deserved it. If she didn't deserve it either it didn't happen or it didn't hurt her. If she says it hurt her, she's oversensitive or unliberated. If she says it happened, she's a liar or a natural-born whore. Either it didn't happen or she loved it. (MacKinnon, 1987, p. 13)

Internalized paradigms of domination blend all too well with the same cultural or familial authority that blames dissociative survivors and denies their reality. The insidious and ironic result is that the cumulative trauma of child sexual abuse and torture makes victims into the best perpetrators against themselves and powerful collaborators in their own torment and captivity—even when they begin to take some steps out of the domination systems. In the first half of treatment, and sometimes even later, advances toward autonomy and differentiation may be met with an internal backlash as though the perpetrators in patients' heads (and sometimes the ones in their lives as well) are tugging on their leashes lest the survivors think themselves actually free.

Eventually, when the illusion of power and control is broken and the truth revealed, a deeper level of psychic pain must be processed in an extended and difficult mourning (Ross, 1997). Unbearable grief emerges as the granite layers of self-hatred and shame erode. Owning this level of suffering without the anesthesia of dissociative armor is perhaps the most highly integrative (and challenging) phase in the psychotherapy of severely dissociative patients.

The compounded shame of the dissociative trauma survivor leads to psychic imprisonment and sense of exile from humanity because it is based on multiple interlocking and overlapping sources. Shame comes from

- the pain, humiliation, betrayal, and degradation endured during the trauma;
- the inability to have protected the self and stopped the traumatic event(s) from taking place, the inability to prevent their impact and avoid experiencing loss of control, and (in some cases) the inability to have preempted the abuse of others;
- the coerced violation of your own ethics or moral principles, the betrayal/violation of others in order to survive;

- the symptoms of posttraumatic stress disorder and the societal response to those symptoms, including psychiatric labels, diagnoses, and misdiagnoses;
- the fragmentation, intrusion, inconsistency, and incompleteness of memories, and the constant challenge to their reality from skeptics in media, academic, medical, and psychotherapeutic settings;
- the feeling of not being like other people, not belonging, and the loss of a sense of kinship with humanity;
- the feeling of being marked, damaged, and transparent—the feeling that others can see right through you and know what you have done or what has been done to you;
- the social stigma of being an abuse survivor and the internalization of society's contempt, incredulity, and impatience with the vicissitudes of recovery (*"just get over it already"*), and the labeling of your therapist (perhaps the only person you trust) as a quack;
- the internalization of hateful, degrading messages from the perpetrator(s) and from society's blame-the-victim / pull-yourself-up-by-your-own-bootstraps rhetoric, and the harboring of "dirty" secrets that cannot be shared;
- the harboring of hateful, vengeful, destructive thoughts (and / or part-selves);
- the perversion of your sexuality and the residue of bizarre, unusual, or utterly absent sexual needs and desires;
- the awareness that you welcomed feelings of specialness or actual privileges conferred by the perpetrator(s);
- the inability to forgive perpetrators in a culture that insists on and romanticizes forgiveness;
- the vulnerability to experiencing certain normal activities as triggers (e.g., films, holidays, gatherings), such that they cannot be enjoyed;
- the history of self-destructive acting out, and the accrued costs of the effects of trauma in terms of vocational, financial, medical, and interpersonal functioning;
- the chronic out-of-control feelings and the knowledge that other people do not walk around leaking profound losses, sensitivities, and vulnerabilities "like someone with a bladder problem—only this one's emotional";
- the psychological and physiological damage that will never heal in spite of your own (and others') best efforts.

"People around you cause you to feel that you are perpetrating on them for taking the time to face something so difficult and to heal the trauma. There is this intense shame around that. My husband complained constantly about the distractions I was causing to our life, and that I wouldn't have sex with him whenever he wanted. He asked me to have a timeline to have the whole thing healed in six weeks. And my male therapist actually sat me down and told me that I should reach past my wounds to have sex with my husband whenever he wanted. This was a complete reenactment of what happened to me as a child because the perpetrator convinced me that I was wrong for not wanting to have sex with him."

IDENTIFICATION WITH THE PERPETRATOR

"She must love the people who hurt her, or die. This is the core problem in DID, and the primary driver of the dissociation" (Ross, 1997, p. 284). Attachment to the perpetrator is emerging as the central issue in all treatments of trauma survivors. The abused child, trapped in an impossible situation, must bond with his/her abuser(s) in order to survive, must learn how to forget his/her injuries and who caused them, and must internalize the abuser's power in order to maintain sanity.

The choice faced by the chronic trauma survivor is not a choice at all (Daskovsky, 1998). Identifying with one's abuser(s) against one's self is naturally preferred to experiencing powerlessness, mortification, and betrayal at the hands of needed and loved caretakers. Identification with the aggressor is a complex defense first described by Anna Freud (1936) whereby victims cope with helplessness, pain, and humiliation by doing to others (or, in the case of DID, to the self and others) what is or was previously done to them. They achieve delayed mastery over their traumas—overcoming helplessness and transforming themselves from threatened to threatening—by participating in the omnipotence of the perpetrators, assuming their attitudes and imitating their behavior. The child registers the parent as delusionally good (Shengold, 1989) and him/herself as delusionally bad, effectively intensifying his/her self-hatred while blindly obeying irrational authority and mystifying (and often eroticizing) domination.

Survivors of severe trauma, burdened by histories of conflict over loss of protection and lifelong vulnerability to feelings of abandonment, cling in masochistic desperation to the people who treat them in intrusive, neglectful, cruel, and seductive ways (Valenstein, 1973; Levine, 1994; Howell, 1997)—"velcroing to the abuser," in the words of one patient. In distorted attachment processes that go beyond the classical identification with the aggressor, victims with well-articulated collaborator-alters deny the extent or reality of the damage that has been (or is being) done.

DID children who have "chosen" to master their trauma by assisting in their own (or others') traumatization enter therapy as adults either completely convinced of their own guilt, shame, and blameworthiness—or convinced that almost nothing happened. Sorting out who did what to whom in past and present is not easy in the case of the child who instigated sexual contact instead of enduring helpless anticipation of it, who handed her mother the implements of torture to be used on her, who provoked the anger of the perpetrator/caretaker simply to get the abuse over with. It is almost as if what has been dissociated most profoundly is the intention, motivation, and accountability of the perpetrator/caretaker and the responsibilities of the colluding family and social systems.

The result of a prolonged immersion and dependent involvement with powerful adults perpetrating unspeakable abuses is that love, desire, and pleasure will be forever fused with fear, hatred, and pain, leading to a lifetime of bizarre relationship dynamics. Although from a legal-ethical point of view it is absolutely clear that sexual abuse and torture of children is a crime and that the adult is totally culpable regardless of the child's apparent acquiescence, the psychological reality is another story indeed (Daskovsky, 1998): the abuse may have been terrifying but it may also have been experienced as offering a moment of deeply longed-for closeness or of being needed or wanted in an otherwise globally neglectful surround; the pain of sexual stimulation may have been excruciating, but it may have also been disturbingly exciting or pleasurable in some ways, producing enormous confusion about accountability and choice.

A victim of child abuse may well feel even more shame when s/he responds to sexual arousal. And when the child-victim's desire is experienced as the basis for vulnerability, his/her entire relationship to desire itself becomes highly conflicted (Ehrenberg, 1992). When yearnings for attachment, self-esteem, and specialness foster in the child's concrete mind a level of instrumentality verging on participation or pleasure in the abuse, the victim has been betrayed by his/her own needs.

The need for secure attachment figures is part of what drives the invention of alters: if there is no one on the outside to love and no one on the inside with any power, then the DID solution is to create them (Ross, 1989; 1997). Different alters may become organized around different aspects of the aggressor—power, cunning, contempt, superiority, ideologies, and systems of rationalization. To grasp the complexity of DID is to appreciate the manifold dimensions of identification with the aggressor, the shrapnel of which process lodges throughout even the most apparently benign parts of the patient's self-system.

CONFUSION OF MINDS, INTENTIONS, AND MOTIVATIONS

Ferenczi (1933) suggests, in his justly renowned articulation of the psychological compromises of abused children ("The Confusion of Tongues Between Adults and the Child"), that the child-victim may collude unconsciously with what s/he believes to be the parent's needs and desires, which come to be experienced and *remembered* as his/her own. A child is exceedingly vulnerable to an adult's projections of guilt and anxiety, but his/her personality is not sufficiently consolidated to protest in thought or in action by way of expressing overwhelming confusion about boundaries, roles, and responsibilities—what happened, why it happened, or who made it happen. Ferenczi recognizes the double bind of the abused child introjecting both the guilt feelings of the adult and the adult as desperately needed object. To adapt, the child identifies with the aggressor and develops self-loathing; the only way to sustain attachment and please the abuser is to betray the victimized self.[13]

> The overpowering force and authority of the adult makes them dumb and can rob them of their senses. . . . When the child recovers from such an attack, he feels enormously confused, in fact split—innocent and culpable at the same time—and his confidence in the testimony of his own senses is broken. (p. 162–163)

Holding oneself entirely responsible for a negative event—blaming the self to preserve a sense of personal control and ward off feelings of helplessness and powerlessness (Janoff-Bulman, 1992)—may contribute to the development of an omnipotent fantasy of protection, allowing the victim to imagine she can sustain not only attachment and an illusion of power but also hope that s/he can prevent painful recurrences of the trauma.

Almost robotically, self-hate and self-mockery are used to redirect and cohere fragmented affects and belief systems so that the trauma survivor does not have to know him/herself as victim or his/her caretakers as abusers and betrayers. Instead, s/he muses indefinitely, and sometimes quite pridefully, on being "so bad no one could get near me," or filthy, worthless, and evil ("It's just a matter of time until you find out who I really am").

"When they yelled at me and ordered me around, inside me where they couldn't see me I yelled back at them. But when they laughed at me, when they mocked and humiliated me with hateful meanness I couldn't use my anger at them anymore—it didn't work—and so I joined them and belittled myself. I even enjoyed putting that boy down. Then when they laughed at the end like it was all a big joke, or a big pretend, or a big game I laughed with them too."

"I hate myself for letting him do that to me. I hate my body for responding. I hate that it still affects me and all of my relationships. I hate that he still has any power over me. I am so busy hating me I cannot see anyone or anything else."

"Am I so deeply ashamed of myself because I was helpless? Am I ashamed because I submitted and didn't shout or fight back. When I helped him or let him abuse me something broke in me. The first time I did that—not fight back in any way I mean—inside of me or outside—after that I know I was never the same again."

"Worse than feeling the pain itself is feeling like they got to me, like I failed for not fending them off, and worse than that is to think because of this they are inside of me and I am like them and always carrying around the dread that this could come out of me and I could do this to someone else even in the smallest way."

"After he raped me and in between the times he did, my father said to me what a worthless piece of garbage you are, you will never amount to anything. I have heard this in my head all my life. I have treated myself like garbage. And I have tried to prove I am not garbage. I don't know what was worse, what he did or what he said."

SELF-DISTRUST

The dynamics of shame, self-hate, and identification with the aggressor are fundamentally silencing because survivors of chronic trauma learn to distrust their feelings and sense of reality. They come to feel as if they have no right to feel what they feel or to know what they have known for so long. Protecting the perpetrator and protecting the self from exposure become one and the same agenda. Curiosity, self-observation, and reflectivity are suppressed and undeveloped; feelings and wishes become dangerous psychological territory instead of drivers of development. Sexual arousal, desire, and attraction become transmuted into helplessness and powerlessness, invoking major dissociative strategies and defensive patterns of mastery based on sadomasochistic solutions.

False memories of nonabuse or minimized abuse replace historical truth. Fantasies of invulnerability replace realities of helplessness. Personifications and enactments of self-hate replace healthy assertion, differentiation, and normal fantasies of retaliation. Suicidal fantasies fill the void created by the absence of soothing internal objects and privately become a perverse form of self-mothering and self-love. Fears of knowing and being known, and difficulties with regard to taking action (Ehrenberg, 1992) supplant a healthy quest for recognition and intimacy and the capacity for agency.

Survivors of severe trauma do not want to listen to themselves. They are exceedingly ambivalent about being heard and believed. To discover the historic reality of their fractured and betrayed existence, and to really know and experience its effects on their present lives, is such an overwhelming proposition that they have chosen, consciously and unconsciously (and in some cases forcibly through mind control), to collude in the silencing and "forgetting" of abusers and collaborating others. DID epitomizes the backfiring process whereby patients "originally victimized by others . . . they could not control, become victims of their own counterproductive survival techniques" (Ehrenberg, 1992, p. 6). In order to survive outrageous abuse and brutality, the chronically traumatized have lost and forgotten their voices.

If and when a severely dissociative patient comes to recognize what kind of disturbance s/he is contending with, s/he must then face degrading and invalidating media and academic portrayals of him/herself (and his/her therapist). The typical DID patient as presented in the media has thousands of alter personalities speaking in different accents, claims to have been a high-ranking member of an intergenerational cult, has no memories of abuse prior to starting therapy, seeks attention incessantly (especially from the media), and recants both her reported trauma history and her dissociative symptoms while pursuing lawsuits against her former therapists (Barach, 1999a).

Academic invalidation emphasizes severely dissociative trauma patients' fantasy-proneness and exaggerated needs to be believed, or their concretization of inchoate fantasies (Ganaway, 1994; Brenneis, 1997; Merskey, 1992; 1995), their roles as "storytellers" to the culture and their tendencies to "vivify and concretize more ambiguous struggles" and pass them on as actual traumatic experiences (Haaken, 1998), or their victimization by their therapists' spurious suggestions or countertransference resistances and enactments (Ganaway, 1989; 1994; Spanos, Burgess, and Burgess, 1994; Simpson, 1995; Brenneis, 1997).

Some academics view child-abuse survivors as victims not of trauma and neglect but of "semantic contagion" and "false consciousness" (Hacking, 1995), and label female survivors as suffering not from trauma but from memorophilia—addiction to the inspirational and seductive value of their stories (Haaken, 1998). Designated "empowered hysterics" who are mesmerizing their therapists, women have been said to be using recovered memories to escape diffuse conflicts from growing up female, misguidedly taking on the identity of multiplicity as a pitiful tool of rebellion, and all too willingly collapsing their developmental possibilities by following their therapists down the "dead-end street of messianic psychiatry" (Haaken, 1998, p. 221).

"When they made me dance on that stage in front of all those men I just took three steps backwards, and then there was some girl there and she was dancing for them, and I watched her do it from far away. Yes, this man trained me first how to act. She was supposed to go over to each man who showed her a coin and dance for him. She was not me, but I could see her. I didn't like her and I didn't like what she was doing. Even though I know she is me, she is not really me. I hate talking about this."

"I have this weird relationship with mirrors. When I look in the mirror I see this guy there, I don't see me. This is the way it has always been. I have thoughts, feelings—mostly criticisms and negative feelings about that guy but it is not me. I never knew what to make of that."

"I'm really just learning that the abuse isn't happening anymore. That's where the pain is, that's why I can feel pain. But I need you to know that there are parts of me that are still back there, like it's still happening and this therapy is hardest on them. While it is still happening they don't have to feel pain. If it's over, the hurt begins. So it's no victory at all to know it isn't happening anymore and never will happen again."

"One part is relieved I told you what happened, another part fears you're going to make me deal with the feelings too, another part of me is doubting and doing the false memory thing saying you put it all in me: you made me think it and say it, and another part of me is telling me—just wait, there is more to come."

"I hate thinking about what they [abusers] told me; it's in my head but I don't like to know it's there. I'm afraid to think about it or say it. If I say it I might become it. If I tell you what they taught me I might become what they taught me. My head is not a safe place. It can make me turn into someone else."

"The hard part about being multiple is that you can never finish your own thoughts. It's made that way you know because it's made a lot for distraction. It gets you into all kinds of trouble and it is hard to have a life this way."

ISOLATION AND NUMBNESS

Dissociative solutions to survival compress vitality and lead to a kind of living psychic death. Survivors shut themselves out and shut down by refusing permeability and they use up energy by keeping information out (Alpert, 1995). Old data, often unprocessed and unintegrated, is suspended and overvalued, and new material, particularly new relationship experience, cannot penetrate the dissociative barriers to rearrange traumatic belief systems. In severe dissociative disorders, this lifelessness is often buried beneath several layers of feigned normalcy.

Living psychic death is the goal in a way: if you're dead already, no one can kill you anymore; if you have no life energy left, no one take it from you; if your sexual arousal is either frozen or compulsively and promiscuously acted out, no one can control or violate your sexuality again. Repeating disasters, cultivating destructive relationships, and even inflicting pain on yourself to feel alive means that trying to hurt or negate yourself is actually saving yourself. Hating yourself is loving yourself. If suicidal fantasies are your internalized, comforting parents, no one can obliterate you without your being in control. The excruciatingly painful reality of isolation, alienation, and abandonment is buried deep beneath the cacophony of the dissociative diaspora.

"There is a coldness and numbness that comes from watching horrible, torture things being done to animals and children, and an even greater numbness and deadness that takes you over when you have to be participating in the violence. The worst numbness, like a soul death, is when you have to orchestrate others doing the whole thing, but by then you are so cut off from yourself and everyone else who is still human and loving and kind that you are nothing but a glove for the hands of the perpetrators and you feel you belong in Hell or that you must die for having survived."

"When they were fucking me I became them and it stopped the hurting. And it felt good to be the one hurting me, in charge of all that, instead of them. Now, even though I know it's me and that this belief is not real, I cannot find my way back to that little boy who was getting hurt. I haven't even felt sorry for him yet."

"With all your [therapist's] hard work, there's still no real danger of breaking through. Don't let yourself think that they [the alters/protectors] are worried that

you [the therapist] are even getting close. It's like they are still dancing in the ballrooms of Berlin and you haven't even landed your troops on Normandy yet."

"You have no idea how precious it can be to not care anymore about anything."

"They didn't hurt me, I didn't feel anything they did, nothing got to me and nothing ever will; if I let myself feel things and know how much he got to me, then he wins all over again."

"I don't want to be helped and I don't want to be loved. I just want to be left alone. If I am continuously mean to you and torment you the way I have been doing in here, then I will make you hate me and then you will make me go away, and then that will be that—I won't have anything to worry about anymore—I'll be through with all of this. If I trust you I have to feel, and I don't want to feel anything."

INDIFFERENCE TO ESCAPE

The dubious privilege of having to join with and seek recognition from what passes for culture, society, and normalcy in the world of regular, nontraumatized people may come to be excruciating for survivors once their dissociative barriers have become permeable. The "normal" world—quite often hollow, corrupt, and hypocritical—may seem merely another reflection and variation of the damaging, authoritarian, and perverse familial world in which they were broken and corrupted. As child-abuse survivors ricochet between cultivating hope in some form of trustworthy social institutions and recognizing the authoritarian and duplicitous dimensions of society, the agonizing existential dilemma may seem like a bitter cosmic joke-conspiracy. Bypassing that awareness may be one of their strongest motivations for safeguarding dissociation as a buffer. Obversely, bypassing confrontation with the excruciating awareness of our failure as a species may be one of society's strongest motivations for perpetuating denial and disavowing the realities of survivors of severe childhood trauma.

"When I realized after some time in recovery and therapy that I was a survivor, all of a sudden things made sense to me, and for the first time in my life I no longer felt like an alien or a pariah. But now, when I remember things that actually happened to me that are such an extreme from what the world knows or believes or understands I feel that alienated and excluded feeling all over again, and I hate feeling that way. It's hard to get past that sense of not belonging with other humans."

"They [the abusers] stole my life and now I have to spend the rest of my life getting back my life. It's so unfair. They're not paying, I am."

"I get confused because everyone is saying how you shouldn't be a victim, and there are people who say those who are victims just want to be pitied and get things for free. They [the abusers] made a powerless object out of me. I used to think the only way to not be a victim was to pretend I wasn't one. But, the only way to not be a victim is by knowing that I was one, and then I don't have to be a victim anymore. It's paradoxical, but it's the only way."

"What kind of forgiveness can you expect when there is no articulation. Just like, sure, yeah, I forgive you, but there is no depth. The hungry ghost of my abuser just wants forgiveness but I have to do all the articulation myself and I resent that. But you know what I resent even more than that is that I have to do all of the articulation for everyone . . . my family, the world, everyone."

DIFFICULTIES OF COMMUNICATING IN PSYCHOTHERAPY

There are always surprises and double or triple meanings with severely dissociative patients. Time is never perceived in linear terms. The past is conflated with the present, and the present can actually dissolve into a full tilt flashback of the past where the patient is absolutely convinced that someone in his/her current life, often the therapist, is harming him/her when, in fact, this is not the case. The future is hopelessly nonexistent and the experience of the present is powerfully shadowed by a past that is distorted or unknown (never thought or fully known). Flashbacks, dreams, and memories of human sacrifice may come to represent symbolically either previously unformulated inchoate primitive psychological experience or the individual's perceived sacrificial relationship with caretakers and/or the larger society. Or they may not be symbolic representations at all, but rather the residue of witnessing actual human sacrifice—usually considered impossible in Western industrialized societies.

Such comments might be a test of what the therapist can tolerate—or they might be a way to avoid other issues. Similarly, depressive symptoms and fantasies can be used to cover posttraumatic dynamics—or talk about trauma can be used to avoid the underlying grief and despair; mystical experience can be intrinsic to the internal or external world of DID patients—but at the same time it can be used to camouflage dimensions of multiplicity or "spiritual emergency" characterized by the fragmentation of the self. A high-functioning adult can rapidly shift into a quivering child as a result of some unknown triggers. Or, after years of therapy, a "new face" can appear in the relationship and the patient will interview the therapist as if s/he had never before attended a session.

What is most important for the therapist to hold at all times is that s/he cannot immediately know what any dream, fantasy, or memory means either in the patient's experience or in the therapeutic relationship. For instance, in DID, a fantasy can become a compelling subjective reality on a moment's notice. Recalled history (forgotten or never forgotten) can be doubted and called fantasy. Consensually validated reality can be abruptly suspended, never to reappear. Trauma can be acknowledged, then disavowed, hundreds of times. Different alters will maintain different impressions of the past and present to such an extent that it is even difficult for an experienced clinician not to fall into the trance logic of believing s/he is dealing with an entire factionalized village. A patient can talk cavalierly, without feeling or a sense of meaning, about childhood beatings that resulted in still-visible scars, and yet become increasingly agitated and distrustful because an item in the therapist's office is not in its usual place. A child alter can express authentic traumatic affects and memories or split-off capacities for bonding, reaching, and longing, or s/he can be used by a patient's dissociative system to divert stress from the demands of an interaction that forces a confrontation with dissociative relatedness.

"Why are you pushing me to have my feelings? I hate you for making me feel. If I feel, then I will lose everything. Why do you want me to lose everything? And, If I come to like you or depend on you, will bad things happen to you?"

"You know how some people have false selves. Well we have false memories, only our false memories are real memories and we hold them as false memories. We wonder how you could ever believe us about anything. We want to discredit you for even considering believing us. But it seems you don't want to participate in our forgetting and this makes some of us very irritated with you."

"I'm angry at all of the people who left me in that abused and abandoned condition. I had to learn to say no to you and no to everyone and everything else before I could say yes, even to myself, because I was so deceived for so long about the yesses I thought I said, the yesses they told me I said—I just didn't know that I or anyone else could survive the pain of my saying No."

"I am ready to start being free. I'm scared. There are still a few parts of me who are not as ready as I am. I'm afraid they can still get the upper hand—but I know it is only if I let them. I know I need to listen to them—they are me, aren't they?—but I won't let them get the upper hand anymore. I want to show up for my life, to love and be loved in my life, to know tenderness, and yes, that too, sorrow. I am ready. Scared, but ready."

"I want to hurt you and then again I don't want to hurt you. This is why I may not be able to stay in therapy. This is my dilemma. You always told me that I could, but I have been too scared to talk about wanting to kill you for fear that I would kill you just by talking about wanting to. Like the babies I had to kill and the children I had to hurt with them, in this case you are the baby and I am the killer and I do not want to do that to anyone ever again. The more I talk about wanting to kill you, not just talking about wanting to kill you, but from the place in me that wants to kill you, the more I realize that I am not going to do that, and that this may be a safe place to be."

"This therapy isn't about my retrieving memories, this is about retrieving parts of myself. If I have to deal with memories as part of that I will and I have and I will again, but that's not really what it's all about—it never was. I need to reclaim every lost part of myself. That's what it is all about."

"I can see past all the shame I felt for so long for not having stopped him, for not having completely stopped this evil from spreading to other parts of my family. But now I realize that redemption does not come from stopping evil. By encountering evil and not becoming it, that is what redemption is all about. Not stopping it. It's about surviving it and not becoming it."

"As a child, I was gang raped. But I've used that to transform myself and I don't see it as a curse. Even though it has taken me many years to heal it—now I see it as one of my gifts. It allows me to be the healer I am because I have a place, a space inside of me that understands wounds—intimately, physically, universally. It allows me to see other people with greater compassion. With abuse and trauma you either turn it to light or you get snuffed out in the darkness."

JARED

Camouflage can break down and dissociative disorders reveal themselves in response to small triggers (a book, a movie, a therapist's inquiry) or major life crises (a death, a divorce, having a child, losing a job)—or in the presence of real love and intimacy, as was the case for Jared, a thirty-eight-year-old gay physical therapist who entered psychotherapy at the request of his partner and their couples therapist when both became concerned about his severe and unexplainable shifts from tenderness and timidity to cruelty and sadism.

Jared had long ago figured out that keeping emotional intimacy separate from sexuality staved off some of the intrusive posttraumatic symptoms—anxiety, depression, memory failure, difficulties managing anger, voices arguing in his head—he had been masking all his life with workaholism, substance abuse, sexual compulsivity, and massive denial. Jared had always resisted falling in love because the unpredictability of spontaneous emotional exchange threatened the control that was so pivotal to sustaining his equilibrium. Jared's dissociative condition began to surface when he entered this first healthy, nonexploitative romantic relationship.

At first, Jared presented in individual therapy like many high-functioning DID patients who are not in an acute psychological crisis—depressed but with an affable, compliant, and gentle demeanor that alternated with a very good sense of humor and an extreme avoidance of any real intimacy or vulnerability. He was aware that he used entertaining people as a way of managing anxiety and controlling interpersonal situations, but his ability to reflect on the meaning of this was initially quite limited. As time went on, Jared's charming style began to show gaps. Intermittently, when anything emotional would emerge in a session, and when humor and evasion could not be deployed to manage the tension, Jared would become quite remote; it sometimes appeared as if there was no one there.

At other times, there seemed to be a sarcastic, hostile, or menacing presence operating from behind his affable persona that would seek out opportunities to make derisive remarks about his partner, people in general, and at times in a very covert way about me as well. This hostility occurred in such a camouflaged and confusing manner that I was often left wondering if what I believed happened actually happened. That is, I became hesitant to confront Jared or even bring these comments to his attention because I came to doubt my own sense of reality. Somehow Jared had me wondering if I was being unfair to him and taking things he said out of context or simply misunderstanding him.

When I eventually questioned Jared directly about his hostility, especially toward me, he adamantly denied any such feelings and attempted to change the subject. Caught in a complex, emerging multidimensional transference/countertransference matrix, I found myself alternating between feelings of protective affection and chronic irritation and anger deriving from an uneasy sense that I was being toyed with. Tracking the sequences of what led to what became almost impossible, because of the increasing rapidity of shifts in Jared's states, his investment in camouflaging his dissociative disorder, and my own intermittent bewilderment.

After a few months in treatment when his awareness of his dissociative process was growing, and when memories of possible sexual abuse by his father, his grandfather, and an extremely sadistic pedophile group were just beginning to emerge, Jared began showing increasing hostility toward his partner and to some extent toward me as well. He seemed to look for opportunities to provoke conflicts and assault his partner's deepest vulnerabilities, and he tended to act most maliciously when his partner was having the hardest time emotionally. Jared was angry at his partner for relentlessly loving him, fighting for him, and threatening his fragile equilibrium; he was angry at me for "penetrating" his façade (an offense he experienced with all the associations of a survivor of sexual abuse) and for evoking overwhelming pain and anxieties.

Jared began to increase his use of alcohol in order to manage his anxiety and also to subdue the cruelty he was inflicting and the guilt and upheaval that followed. His escalating attempts to provoke his partner into rejecting him temporarily succeeded when he engaged in an outside sexual liaison on the day after his partner lost his job and was in deep distress. Jared immediately reframed the episode as a function of his own need for space, whereupon his partner, disgusted and completely exhausted, agreed to a separation. But he also confronted and named the passive-aggressive setup and the cruelty underlying it, marking the first time in Jared's life that someone close to him (whom he loved and who he knew loved him) had forcefully exposed his self- and other-destructive patterns (in words rather than in actions).

In a reversal of intention and responsibility typical of severely dissociative individuals early in treatment (and also of perpetrators, for that matter), Jared then claimed that it was his partner who had broken up with him and not the other way around. He felt no overt, conscious guilt. He believed the cover story he had concocted to mask his dissociative split and the evidence of his strong identification with sadistic perpetrators, whose representatives in his system could usually tell the other alters what to think when he was under stress and they got the upper hand. (Those perpetrator-identified alters had taken him over completely during an earlier such period and, in classic DID/PTSD fashion, sponsored self-destructive enactments involving drug use, prostitution, and ultimately infection with HIV.)

Now "abandoned" by the one person in his life who had loved him as close to unconditionally as he had allowed, Jared was thrown back into feeling states related to his parents' leaving him alone with his grandfather for long periods of time; he was enraged, lost all sense of control, and began to become undone. He was desperate to avoid the avalanche of memories that were about to surface and the implications of the mounting evidence of his personality changes and behavior. Part of Jared's stress came from the fact that he was surrounded by three relationships where his behavior was consistently monitored and compassionately confronted. In the past, Jared had managed to live a life of interpersonal hit-and-runs where confrontation and honest feedback were avoided at all costs; he had shed old relationships like reptiles shed their skin and he moved on to the next one without integrating the meanings of each experience. Altogether overwhelmed by the compassionately aggressive intervention, Jared was struggling with the *sadistic voices in his head* that insisted that his partner and both therapists were monsters. He was experiencing these three relationships as he had experienced serial rape throughout his childhood in the sadistic pedophile group (his involvement with which had not quite fully surfaced in treatment). Yet he also experienced them as the kind of family intervention he had always longed for—so he alternated between anger and gratitude. Because of his growing capacity to hold both emotions in one consciousness Jared was able for the first time to question the dominating, sadistic voices.

Thus on the verge of some of his greatest breakthroughs in therapy and in intimacy, Jared urgently and abruptly left town. The degree to which the self-destruction to which he turned was an act of will or an unconscious reenactment of submission to perpetrators—and/or an expression of the magnitude of the threat of therapy—remained ambiguous. He returned to the environment where he had prostituted during his last acting-out episode, and was paid well to participate in an orgy that turned out to be far from innocuous. His sadistic alters had believed they were in control, but in fact had fallen prey to a group of vicious men who had spent time in prison and had lured Jared to be bound and gang raped. In his retrospective accounts, Jared described how the child part of him was brought out to endure this violation while the sadistic part watched. At the time, however, he hid out for a week using alcohol and drugs to numb the pain of the internal injuries he had suffered and to recover and create a narrative for what had taken place. Meanwhile, his various alter personalities fought and vied for power.

Jared emerged some two weeks later with several different stories: cruelly, he boasted to his partner of how well he was doing and of how many new boyfriends he had—only to initiate another contact later the same day, during which a gentle, scared Jared recalled only that he had needed to get something out of his system and that he never wanted to do "that" again; when asked what "that" was, he became evasive and disoriented. In another, more childlike voice he shared with his partner his intense fear of losing control and his embarrassed confusion as to why they were not together anymore. He was battling a blank memory for the events of the past month and a nagging feeling that he had done something terribly hurtful and wrong.

With the support, dedication, and perseverance (not to mention unresolved masochistic issues) of his partner, and with an individual therapist and a couples therapist skilled in the treatment of dissociative survivors, Jared remained in treatment, where both clinicians welcomed feedback from him about how they might have handled the crisis situation differently, engendering real trust and mutuality by taking his criticisms seriously as no authority figure ever had before. Unlike some dissociative patients who use their therapist's errors and imperfections to solidify distrusts or evade responsibility, Jared began to exchange his lifelong blaming, externalizing, and avoiding stance for ownership of his multiple self-states, abusive actions, and internal conflicts.

The point at which a dissociative trauma survivor's world is finally recognized and challenged is often when the opportunity for growth is most seriously sabotaged. The threatened dissociative system mobilizes a takeover by its most pernicious and ultimately self-destructive forces in a desperate effort to restabilize and camouflage itself, in spite of the best efforts of clinicians who are sensitive to clinical issues of timing, pacing, unconscious anxiety over loss of protective object relations, and preservation of functioning. Jared let himself fall apart, successfully confronted his multiplicity, and eventually faced some of his tortured past. Instead of enacting another macabre narrative with his body and his partner as instruments, he revealed and played out his identities and stories inside the container of psychotherapy. Jared was lucky (and courageous). Many dissociative survivors do not make it to this point.

This page intentionally left blank

CHAPTER 2

Unfathomable Realities, Discredited Testimony: Child Abuse, Victims, and Perpetrators

> *Try thinking without apology with what you know from being victimized. Give up the Olympian partiality of objectivity and try for a fairness and an authority that neither dominates nor submits to your material or your audience. . . . Look for the deepest meaning in the least elevated places. Be more radical than anyone has ever been about the unknown because what has never been said is probably what we need most to know.*
>
> **—Catharine A. MacKinnon**

CHILD ABUSE AS A MODERN CONSTRUCT

The concept of child abuse is a relatively modern idea, although historically there has never been a shortage of atrocities against children. In fact, the record is replete with documented accounts of adults inflicting harm on children in the name of good (Weiner and Kurpius, 1995), sometimes in the name of God, and almost always without guilt and remorse. As the psychohistorian DeMause (1974) notes, the further one goes back into history, the lower the level of child care, and the higher the numbers of children abandoned, beaten, terrorized, abused, and murdered. From infanticide to child labor, from incest to child prostitution, and from child pornography to snuff films, the abuse of children has been an enduring outrage.

But whereas today we identify child exploitation and maltreatment as a social problem, it was a convention if not a norm in cultures where children existed solely to serve adults and the primary mandate of those adults was child control and the management of child labor, not child protection. Most of the 2,000 references in the Old Testament to children cite child sacrifices, stonings, beatings, or the rule of strict obedience to all wishes of parents and other adults; there is nothing empathic concerning the needs of children (Weiner and Kurpius, 1995).[1] And in the United States, it was not until 1871 that laws were passed against the abuse of children, following extensive publicity about a single case.[2] Only recently has child abuse been identified as a source of other social problems with enormous institutional costs—legal, medical, educational, criminological, and in terms of the perpetuation of dysfunctional parenting patterns (Briere, 1996). And it is just within the past thirty-five years, since publication of a 1962 article by Kempe and colleagues, "The Battered Child Syndrome," that recurrent waves of collective consciousness and moral outrage about child abuse have emerged. Unfortunately, recognition and public shock are consistently undermined by social counterforces of denial, minimization, and incredulity.

Because of its far-reaching social implications, including legal and moral accountability and responsibility, the phenomenon of child abuse has become part of the controversy related to trauma and dissociation, with various factions declaring child abuse over- or underrated, too politicized or not politicized enough, and/or culture-bound or transcultural. Some minimize abuse and its effects, suggesting that fondling is the most prevalent form of child sexual abuse, that many victims seem unscathed, that children lie and are suggestible, that they have memory problems, or cannot tell reality from fantasy. A few even contend that what others term "sexual abuse" may actually be pleasurable or beneficial, or meaningless (Loftus and Ketcham, 1994; Ceci, Huffman, Smith, and Loftus, 1994; Gardner, 1992; Wakefield and Underwager, 1993).

Debunking the etiological links between childhood sexual abuse and severe dissociative disorders, critics argue that patients shape their experiences and their memories to correspond with the theories, expectations, and explanations of their therapists and the popular culture. Spanos (1996) insists on the undocumented hypothesis that DID is iatrogenic. Frankel (1994) believes that patient pressures have produced an all-too-linear clinical over-simplification such that "blame has displaced shame as the predominant . . . psychodynamic force" (p. 86). Brenneis (1997) reduces the posttraumatic ramifications of child abuse to allegations of invasive therapy, unconscious mutual influence, falsely recovered memory, and the by-products of patients' confabulatory cognitive styles.

Clinicians engaged in the treatment of severely dissociative trauma survivors, however, believe child abuse to be seriously underreported and to encompass bondage situations, exploitation for profit—child pornography, child prostitution—torture, ritual abuse, human experimentation, and mind control as well as forceful acts of penetration in intrafamilial contexts, and in all cases the extensive silencing of victims (Gelinas, 1995; Cozolino, 1989; Ross, 1997; Putnam, 1989; Enns et al., 1995; Bloom, 1994; Robbins, 1996; 1997; Finkelhor, 1994; Sinason, 1994). According to Fergusson and Mullen (1999) in their extensive review of the literature, child sexual abuse "has become one of the defining cultural themes of our age, so much so that it is all too easy to lose sight of the individual victims . . . in the midst of the sound and fury generated around the topic" (p. 1).

HOW MANY VICTIMS?[3]

We will never know the complete truth about the scope or the specifics of child abuse and neglect, nor, probably, do most of us really want to. If we are motivated both to look and look away, we mostly find ways to look away, even as some of us dutifully conduct research or actually listen to in-depth narratives of complex child abuse involving scores of people and perpetrator groups around the world. But do we really fathom the experience of the completely helpless child-victim surrounded by pure malevolence? Do we really bring our hearts and minds into direct contact with it, or do we make sure we don't have to hear more than we have room for? When there is a possible or documented case of a false allegation, it becomes a media sensation. The legal system is in a primitive state where protecting children from adults is concerned.

Perpetrators are experts at subterfuge, and at silencing and blaming the victim. Adult survivors of child abuse are dissociative and frightened. Children cannot find ways to tell, and when they do they are often dismissed. At the slightest hint of false allegation, a case becomes a media sensation. Judges and lawyers are not necessarily enlightened, and the legal system lacks the muscle and sophistication to ferret out and cope with injustice to children or their built-in limitations as witnesses in their own behalf. Clinicians are divided and increasingly wary of dissociative trauma survivors and the legal risks associated with a controversial patient population. Finally, complicity is rampant in our culture.

Child physical abuse and neglect entered the public discourse in the early to mid-1960s, and child sexual abuse was not widely discussed until the late 1970s. Persistence by a relatively small number of professionals and by the feminist movement, along with increased media awareness, has brought it out into the open, but the level of denial in many sectors of society still remains high. Reluctance to believe that anyone, especially people who appear normal, could abuse a child sexually leads to questioning children's credibility and motives, to shifting blame to the child. Historically, when children have reported abuse they have been not only disbelieved but also punished for the outrageousness of their suggestions (Oates, 1996); even today and even by professionals, what children may have experienced can be labeled the product of a vivid juvenile imagination. Period.[4]

As Fergusson and Mullen (1999) indicate, "the Achilles heel of nearly all theory and research into [child sexual abuse] is that the measurement, description, and diagnosis . . . rests upon the potentially fallible memories of childhood experiences" (p. 98). Because of the inherent constraints on empirical investigation (and the social, political, and economic stakes) it is likely that uncertainty and ambiguity will continue to plague the field for some time to come.[5] Attempting a difficult balance, Finkelhor (1998) recently identified two questions that merit top spots on the research agenda: which investigative procedures, standards (medical, ethical, child-welfare), and policies maximize the likelihood of accurate and efficient confirmation or dismissal of abuse allegations? and which confirmation procedures (investigative, therapeutic, criminological justice, case-management) maximize the security, mental health, and sense of justice for victims and their families and the rest of society? The gravity and enormity of the issue is best captured by Whitfield, who compares the estimated number of children who were sexually abused during the time of the Vietnam War with the number of Americans killed in that war (1995, p. 51):

> About 50,000 names are etched into the Vietnam War Memorial. If we made a memorial to children who have been sexually abused, it would be more than 1300 times the size of the Vietnam memorial. If we included other forms of child abuse it would be more than 7500 times its size. But these are not lives lost in

> military combat. These are souls lost in a betrayal and wounding that is so deep that most are unable to heal and reconnect with self, others and God without long-term recovery.

ORGANIZED CHILD ABUSE

In the past ten years, there has been a vehement media and academic backlash against any serious consideration of ritual abuse.[6] Even when the authors of the recent backlash literature contribute important information or perspectives, they privilege their viewpoints over all others, and they write scathingly about anyone—patient or therapist or law enforcer—who continues to believe in the possibilities of organized child abuse based on patients' memories and testimony. With the additional onslaught from the False Memory Syndrome Foundation (FMSF) and false memory movement, exploration of the issues by patients and therapists has been seriously inhibited.

All of the backlash books (and many articles as well) bear a striking similarity. They usually begin with some potentially rebalancing perspectives on child-abuse trauma, dissociation, memory, cultural reactions, and collective human experiences. By the time they reach the subjects of MPD/DID and ritual abuse—at about the halfway or three-quarter mark—the tone drastically shifts to contentious, polarized, and scathing critique. Often they associate DID and ritual-abuse accounts with UFO abduction stories or use other sensationalizing and discrediting tactics. In many of these accounts, retractor/recanter testimonies (usually of ex-psychotherapy patients pursuing lawsuits against their former therapists) are naïvely and indiscriminately elevated to extremely high levels of credibility.[7] Attacks or criticisms of feminism are usually part of the package as well. So are emphases on the breakups of families and the innocence of parents, and ditto the systematic minimization of the sexual predator/sex offender problem. Backlash authors usually claim to be truer champions of child protection than therapists and social workers. Yet they are often either nonclinicians or therapists who have never spent time with patients with DID. Egregious overgeneralizations[8] are part of the rhetoric too, such that psychotherapy in all its complexity and diversity is referred to as the "memory industry" (Jenkins, 1998, p. 185) or "RMT" (recovered memory therapy) (Ofshe and Watters, 1994).

While our cultural window on organized child abuse was briefly opened in the mid- to late eighties, the backlash has virtually silenced most other explorations and considerations. Any patients alleging organized child-abuse experiences run the risk of being dismissed as incredible or subjected to disparaging interpretations of the reasons for the presence of such grotesque material in their psyches or therapy dialogues. Any clinician willing to consider organized child-abuse allegations as real is almost immediately marginalized and discredited or labeled a conspiracy theorist, drawing "deeply from the tainted well of American paranoid theory" (Jenkins, 1998, p. 176).

We cannot address the psychology and etiology of child abuse without first surveying the commoditization of children in organized crime, syndicated sex rings, and sadistic ritual abuse.

THE COMMODITIZATION OF CHILDREN

The issue of child prostitution is a global problem of immense and disquieting proportions; no nation or region of the world is untouched (Otero, 1996; Muntarbhorn, 1996). Crewdson (1988) found that child prostitution is not just an urban problem in the United States and that arrests for juvenile prostitution have proliferated even in small midwestern cities and communities. Calling child prostitution "one of the most fundamentally outrageous issues that the world faces," Joseph P. Kennedy (1996, p. 1) acknowledges that many children as young as six or seven are being drawn or taken into prostitution rings in many cases to serve Americans who have the money to travel overseas and take advantage of young children.[9] In some cases children in prostitution (including reports about child victims from the United States) are being tattooed by members of organized crime syndicates that control them like property (J. P. Kennedy, 1996; Muntarbhorn, 1996) or cattle. The use of children as sex slaves and instruments of crime is an ultimate form of debasement and betrayal. Kennedy describes child prostitution as an attack on humanity that focuses exclusively on destroying the next generation. Victims of child prostitution are subjected to psychological and physical danger that leaves permanent scars (not to mention the undermining of their basic dignity and human rights). According to Muntarbhorn (1996), the sexual exploitation of young children has become more insidious because children are increasingly being sold and trafficked across all international frontiers.

Sex with children is a commodity with an exceedingly high exchange value. Its political economy is based on two triangulated systems of relationships: the "procurement triangle," comprised of sexually abused children, men in power, and men who get the benefits of power through procurement; and the "blackmail triangle," consisting of child victims, men in power, and men who get what they want through blackmail. "There is supply. There is demand. The biggest single problem is bringing the product to market without getting caught" (Robbins, 1996, p. 316).[10]

Pedophile rings are known to operate from North America and other Western industrialized nations with tentacles spreading throughout the Third World. In a recent case described by Muntarbhorn (1996), an American group used a so-called children's shelter as a front for pedophilia; the organizer was arrested and imprisoned. According to Muntarbhorn, connections have also been documented between American rings and European pedophiles, particularly with respect to child pornography, which is now proliferating, primarily due to computer bulletin boards.[11] In recent months Australian investigations discussed by Muntarbhorn also found a number of prominent male sex offenders involved with an "international boys' association," which was essentially a front for pedophiles to gain access to young boys from Thailand and the Philippines.

> Given the low cost of labor generally in Asia . . . what has emerged in the tourist boom is the black market for children to become prostitutes and be at the whim and call of wealthy westerners. (p. 27)

Many who investigate child prostitution in the United States and abroad (Crewdson, 1988; Muntarbhorn, 1996; Boonpala, 1996; Saikaew, 1996; Dimenstain, 1996) comment that children's parents and/or other family members may often be involved in supplying them to the prostitution and pornography trade, corroborating personal clinical and consultation experience with dozens of survivors of organized child abuse.

Crewdson documents an interview with a pedophile (1988, p. 102):

> . . . after paying . . . the hundred dollars that we agreed would be given to Yvonne's father, I had this eight-year-old to myself for about six hours. I wasn't sure I could go through with actually paying someone to have sex with their daughter. It was obvious Yvonne had been rented to several other men. The first thing she said to me that night was, "What would you like me to do?" When I was unable to take Yvonne home that night because I didn't have a car, Yvonne's father phoned my motel room and said that since I was keeping her overnight, it would cost me another hundred dollars. The next day, when her father came to pick her up, the first thing he said was, "Did you cooperate?"

CHILD SEX AND PORNOGRAPHY RINGS

Child pornography includes every conceivable lewd and perverted sexual act imaginable.[12] Child pornography is created not only for profit and for the private use of collectors obsessed with increasing the size of their collections (and sharing them with comrades in deviance), but also for demonstration and training purposes with captives—for arousing their curiosity, lowering their inhibitions, binding them by means of blackmail ("Would you like your mother to see this picture?"), and adding financial incentive (Lanning, 1984; Burgess and Grant, 1988). Even the adjunctive use of pornography in the context of child sexual abuse intensifies effects of the victim's shame, humiliation, and sense of powerlessness, because it generates a permanent record that one patient described as "having pieces of yourself stolen and trapped in hell forever."

A sex ring involves multiple victims and, often, multiple abusers; it is usually formed to turn a profit and often engages in child pornography (Burgess, Groth, and McCausland, 1981). Burgess and her colleagues (1981; 1987; 1988) have identified three types: "solo rings," where one adult is sexually involved with small groups of children and there is no transfer of children or photographs to other adults; "transitional rings," which involve multiple perpetrators with several children; and "syndicated rings," involving multiple perpetrators who form a well-structured organization for the recruitment of children, production of pornography, delivery of direct sexual services, and establishment and maintenance of an extensive network of customers.

The Burgess group (1981; 1987; 1988) studied eight sex rings, and in all cases the adults were "legitimate" authority figures —among them a scout leader, a neighbor, a school bus driver, a coach, a teacher, an apartment manager, a grandfather. Hunt and Baird (1990) studied ten sex rings: two fathers and one uncle were the offenders in three cases and child-care providers were the perpetrators in the other seven. Their operational descriptions and investigation of response patterns and psychological disturbances in child and adolescent victims are especially important to the field because their research encompassed large samples of documented sex-ring victims.

All sex rings use a combination of shaming and fear to entrap children. The victims are compelled and isolated by threats and no-exit coercion into continuing and keeping the abuse secret. Their terror is unusually intense, pervasive, and long-lasting; the violations leave them unable to follow their own instincts for guidance in any adult-child relationships, and so traumatized that they develop massive, rigid defenses and a correspondingly inflexible interpersonal presentation that adversely effects their credibility as victims (or as witnesses). In keeping with the usual profile of severe dissociative response to chronic trauma, both exposure and disclosure of sex-ring abuse trigger the breakdown of the entire defensive structure of child or adult survivors and consistently set off intrapsychic land mines in the form of suicidal, homicidal, or sexually compulsive acting-out behavior.

The adults in organized child abuse indoctrinate child-victims through an elaborate socialization process that locks them into patterns of learned maladaptive behavior and into distorted belief systems whereby initially shame/pain/guilt-inducing activities are normalized (Burgess et al., 1981; 1987; 1988). Sex-ring leaders use drugs, alcohol, intimidation, money, trance-inducing music, theatrical displays, and "games" to coerce submission and maintain group cohesion. Perversions of Ring-Around-the-Rosey, Hide-and-Seek, and Musical Chairs lower children's defenses and encourage competition, then engineer their participation in ganging up on the "loser"—usually a setup involving a particularly vulnerable or particularly resistant child or one with no registered identity, easily used for sacrificial demonstrations—who must then endure group sexual violence (which is also sometimes filmed). War games that mandate "punishment" for prisoners become channels for sexual degradation, sadism, and humiliation, including urinating into the mouths and faces of one another, for the gratification of the adult perpetrators—many of whom also eroticize the surprise, betrayal, and mortification the victims experience when they discover that playing an innocent children's game has dire consequences and that their failure to play by the "rules" has even more dire consequences.

In Hunt and Baird's (1990) study, children reported being shown "snuff films" (scenes documenting rituals of real mutilation and actual murders) and photographs of themselves and family members made to look mutilated. They reported witnessing the murder of other children and the mutilation and murder of animals as examples of what could happen to them if they told anyone about the sex ring. Children have been threatened with death by guns, knives, poison, and fire; told that they could be killed by animals or that other members of their families could be murdered; made to have sex with animals and to do so on film. One patient reports having been forced as a young girl into lewd positions with a horse and a cow, which were later sacrificed as part of a film with a revenge theme; another was forced to appear as if she had borne a litter of pups after being raped by a dog. Other patients have described being thrown into fighting rings with mistreated dogs and other abused children—all of which was filmed and later sold.

> A male DID patient in his mid-thirties has just described a model of brutal sexual abuse climaxed by exposure to the murder of other children. He would be drugged, stripped, raped by multiple perpetrators, degraded and humiliated, forced to walk on all fours like a dog to be alternately kicked and verbally denigrated. Following this ordeal a child or young infant would be sacrificed in ritualistic fashion. He would be told that the sacrifice was a gift for him.
>
> THERAPIST: Why are they killing children?
> PATIENT: For the big ZAP.
> T: What is the big zap?
> P: It's when the natural drug in your body pops through your mind and goes ZAP and there's nothing else like that.
> T: You mean like a drug rush or adrenaline rush?
> P: Yes, a rush, that's why they do it. But this is more than adrenaline rushing going on. Killing is the biggest ZAP they can get. Children are the best for that.
> T: Why is that?
> P: They are the freshest and most innocent and there's the most energy and power there.
> T: Where did you get such an idea from.
> P: Everyone knows that.
> T: Everyone?
> P: Everyone in that place knows that. They think everyone else is stupid and worthless anyway. And they laugh because no one believes this is going on so they know no one will stop it.
> T: What do you think?
> P: No one stopped it then and no one is stopping it now, so they must be right.
> T: And then when this zap and killing is over?
> P: Everything fades from there, I don't know, I just go away.
> T: Go away to where?
> P: I don't know. Just away, into the blackness.

T: Why do you think they do all these things, besides the rush?

P: They do it because they wanted to, they do it because they could, they do it because they are glad it is not them that is dying and I am just like them in that way because I was glad it wasn't me that was dying—that made me just like them.

T: This is one of your biggest confusions, isn't it, because all of this left you with the guilt and shame for all of this cruelty and with a deep confusion about whether you wanted to be part of this or not.

P: I was glad it was not me they were doing that to. They said it could have been me if I didn't help.

T: Then it seems to me like fear of death is part of what motivates this kind of abuse and your complicity?

P: They control life and death so I can't see that they are afraid of it. Sometimes they want death to happen in a certain way—to be done with quickly, and sometimes they want it drawn out. They have a lot of superstition and obsessions about death. They have to be in control of it, so I guess they must be afraid of it, and me too, but I never thought about it that way before . . .

[later in the same session . . .]

P: Sometimes they make pictures and films of this stuff.

T: What gives you that idea?

P: There are cameras in the room, off in the corner. Sometimes I can hear the sound of them clicking.

T: What are these movies for?

P: They'll be shown on special news shows like on television, to let the people know what's happening in the world.

T: Special news shows? What do you mean?

P: News programs, like you would have on Walter Cronkite or something.

T: But who would be watching?

P: The other people who live in the red world.

T: Who are they and what is the red world?

P: Special people . . . the red world is the place you go when this is happening. Some people live in that world all the time and these are the news reports they want to see to know what is going on. The red world is the place where there are no rules and you can do whatever you want to whoever you want.

T: How do you know about this?

P: The people in the red world told me. And they are going to be very very angry at you and me because I told you this.

T: How do you know what they would feel about that?

P: They told me, they showed me. You or I could die for this, you know.

T: What did they show or tell you?

P: Can we stop talking about this right now? I think I've said too much for one time and I need to stop.

T: Of course. I can see you're scared, and intimidated, and maybe even more than a little overwhelmed and that you're trying to protect both of us right now. This material is so difficult for you to talk about and feel safe at the same time; since there have been threats and intimidation, it's essential that you be in control of how much you tell me, if you ever tell me anything else, and when you tell me.

P: Good, I'm relieved, I'm glad you can see that I am also concerned about your being hurt. Not just me. We got to see others being hurt and killed and that's one of the ways they let us know what will happen but I don't want to talk about this more now, OK?

Sex-ring leaders exploit the children's peer network to coerce adaptations that perpetuate sexually aggressive and sadistic behaviors. The adults in power reinforce the "privilege" whereby older children abuse the smaller and weaker ones; they take advantage of the children's needs for attention, approval, and affection to foster group cohesion. A business ethic comes to prevail among the child-victims, who are locked into secrecy with escalating penalties for daring betrayal: they begin to pressure one another; their extortion increases as each victim (now victim-perpetrator) gains more resources, and diminishes only when a member can supply the ring with a new child—which is an incentive for children to recruit their own younger siblings.

Hunt and Baird (1990) point out that therapist resistance to even acknowledging that adults join together in groups for the sole purpose of exploiting children sexually stands in the way of their identifying and treating the survivors. When clinicians can assimilate organized victimization and then negotiate the tricky balance of maintaining sufficient emotional distance from the nightmare while maintaining sufficient emotional connection to the patient, there still remains the undoing of the effects of mind control or brainwashing (e.g., belief in the magical or supernatural powers of the perpetrators; institutionalized terror of mutilation and annihilation as a result of witnessing the dismemberment of living things)—which is one of the toughest clinical tasks in the treatment of sex-ring victims (Hunt and Baird, 1990).

ORGANIZED SADISM AND RITUAL ABUSE

Operationally, the leap from syndicated sex rings to sadistic ritual abuse is incremental, involving more drama and more theological dogma, an increase in the levels of violence, sadism, and secrecy, a more elaborate hierarchy, greater use of coercive influence, threats, and thought reform technology, greater crossover with the snuff-film industry, some crossover with political mind-control and human-experimentation groups, and a greater role for the ritual sacrifice of animals or human beings.

Ritual abuse is one of the extreme ends of the child-abuse continuum. The term now refers to the cruel subjection of victims to combinations of repeated physical, sexual, psychological, and spiritual abuse—often within a religious or pseudoreligious context (Sakheim, 1996). Goodwin (1993b) recommends emphatic addition of the word *sadistic* instead of the misleading *satanic*. While many people dismiss accounts of severe sadistic ritual abuse and torture because insufficient scientific or forensic evidence has been gathered to validate the phenomena,[13] the literature on child abuse reminds us that we must make room for what we do not know, for what we most fear, for what our patients across the country are telling us, and for what is clearly within the realm of already documented or increasingly visible criminal exploitation of children.[14] Clearly, violent, multiperpetrator, sadistic abuse does occur and some unknown segment of child-abuse survivors has endured torture of incomprehensible dimensions; partial if not complete dissociative amnesia is the likely result of such repeated acts (Briere, 1996).

> A ritually abused patient has just described a scene of horrific child torture, sadistic group sexual abuse, and human sacrifice that took place on Halloween.
>
> P: There were several children killed in this one ritual because it was such a special night. Three, I think, in different ways.
> T: Where did these children come from?
> P: They're disposable children. Children are disposable, you know, don't you?
> T: Disposable children? I never think of human beings as disposable.

P: I don't know, do they grow children just for this or do they steal them from people to torture and kill them? I don't know. Children are disposable you know, at least to these people they are. They grow children to kill like people grow farm animals to kill. Their births are never registered and they never attend school so there are no records and no one ever knows, and where they come from it's so rural there is no way anyone can know. Everyone's disbelief makes it feel that much more crazy. I feel sick to my stomach. I wish I were making this up.

T: Where are they keeping these children and who is keeping them?

P: Like I said, they are kept like on farms, in cages, or in basements and cellars—my grandmother had hidden rooms beneath her house and people were kept there, and some people have to watch over them and feed them, or not feed them and make sure they don't get away, but like I said they're like farm animals . . . they belong to the group and they are sold or killed and we're not supposed to have any feelings about those children because they won't be around for that long and because we should be happy that we are not one of those. If we don't act right we could become one of those. You live with that threat of being one of them and then you hate those children, not the abusers, but the children, for existing and reminding you that you could have it worse. So when you have to hurt those children it's easier. Do you understand?

Finkelhor and Williams (1988) propose three subclassifications of ritual abuse: cult-based, whereby sexual abuse is only one component of a child's total immersion in rituals and beliefs; pseudoritualistic, whereby sexual abuse is primary and cult rituals are secondary; and psychopathological ritualist, whereby an adult, operating alone or with others, abuses the child in a ritualistic fashion in keeping with the dictates of an obsessive or delusional system. A complex combination of abuses obtains, ranging from psychological and physical maltreatment to torture to religious oppression (Charles, 1995), and meeting several perpetrator needs simultaneously—sadistic gratification, the furthering of religious beliefs, the control or silencing of victims (Cozolino, 1989; Finkelhor and Williams, 1988), economic advancement, and the perpetuation of the malevolent system by enlisting the terrorized individuals, bonded with elaborate displays of group loyalty, to perpetrate against others. Often the abuse takes place within the context of religious ceremonies where group-specific obsessive-compulsive rituals are enacted, often quite theatrically; survivors' accounts indicate that more bizarre and extreme displays of blood and gore, together with mockery of mainstream practices, generate greater deference among group members toward their leaders.

Jones (1993) describes ritual-abuse cults as trauma-organized systems in which traumatization (and breakdown of the child-victim's personality for brainwashing in accord with the group's agenda) is intensified through the repetitiveness of ritual action (e.g., drumming, chanting, praying, posturing, etc.).[15] The repetition functions to justify the abuse by positioning it in some overarching framework. Although such justification processes are common to all forms of child abuse, they are institutionalized in ritual abuse; in many cases, rationalization systems are passed down intergenerationally in families that "pass as normal."

The abusers' instinctive (and studied)[16] techniques involve the use of trauma and violence to disrupt and empty the self of its own organizing fantasies and structures of subjectivity and to destroy the victim's critical thinking abilities. Into these wounds the cult or perpetrator group interposes its own organizing structures of subjectivity and meaning—its beliefs and ideologies paired with soothing food, warmth, clothing, drugs, grandiose beliefs in power, and fantasies of protection by the group. All of these things the beleaguered and confused child desperately takes in for lack of anything else to organize meaning and reality, and, most important, to stave off the state of annihilation produced by chronic assault and the resulting disorientation. Central to the successful breakdown of the personality prior to its reshaping is the inculcation of the belief that the child-victim has always been this way or that s/he has chosen his/her actions and attitudes. This is one of the most insidious aspects of organized child abuse and one of the most difficult aspects to resolve in treating survivors of ritual and sadistic abuse, where one is likely to encounter "cult" alter personalities who insist they were born from the earth or from a serpent's egg or that they are and always have been the child of the Devil, that they have chosen of their own free will to be who they are, that since God (or Jesus) failed to protect them, they deserve what they get and belong to the group, or in Hell, and so on.

McFadyen, Hanks, and James (1993) isolate entrapment and secrecy as core dynamics in ritual abuse. Bentovim and Tranter (1994) add that breaking down the fragile sense of morality of the child by forcing him/her into sexual activities is a powerful factor of induction into assuming an abusive role toward others. Overall, in organized sadistic perpetrator situations, the strategic use of coercion and trauma cultivates loyalty, cohesion, identification, guilt, dissociation, and silencing. Group practices are organized around indoctrination rituals, the acquisition of power, and the prevention of disclosure (Sakheim, 1996).

Cozolino (1989) has speculated that acts particular to ritual abuse may be contrived to bind the child to the group by severing his/her ties with mainstream belief systems; they also completely and deliberately undermine the child-victim's capacity for believing in the possibility of rescue, forgiveness, and redemption, in a redemptive divinity, in a just and sane world. Nurcombe and Unutzer (1991) contend that many of the severe and persistent traumas inflicted by ritual-abuse groups are purposeful attempts to induce dissociative reactions in children to ensure their compliance and cooperation—and indeed clinical evidence shows that dissociative states once induced may then themselves be systematically shaped by the groups to further control the dissociative identity-formation.

Jones (1991) suggests that the most fundamental concerns for clinicians treating ritual abuse survivors are: the significant and long-lasting distortion of the victim's attitudes, beliefs, allegiances, and fundamental personality structure, making adaptive recovery extremely difficult; the even more profound psychological damage inflicted by premeditated and sadistic activities conjoined with sexual abuse; and the utter demolition of the victim's self-esteem through the systematic degradation of the child.

> A woman with DID and an extensive history in the child-abuse criminal underground has just been describing her early training to tolerate gang rapes for the purposes of pornography and prostitution. Her shame, like the shame of all the other survivors of organized child abuse, is intense and survivor guilt is embedded in every level of her dissociative self-system. The experiences of chronic helplessness, becoming an accomplice, and being a perpetrator completely obliterate the self, making the victim/survivor (when s/he is allowed to live) a pliable puppet to the totalitarian regime of the cult or crime syndicate. Numbness and self-obliteration are preferable to thinking about what is going on.
>
> P: They told me I didn't feel any pain and that it didn't hurt, and when it did hurt that it was my fault. Over time I struggled less and it took less time to get me under control and so it seemed like what they were saying was true. After a while I never thought it hurt, so after a while I never thought it happened. But with the other kids, the ones who were supposed to live—sometimes they would cause too much

bleeding and the child would die and this would make them really mad—and they would do strange things to try and save the child, like hanging her upside down and things like that.

T: What about these other children?

P: The other ones who they called "nobody's children" lived in different people's houses. In the basement of some people's houses—in this country anyway, other places it is different and they can keep more children in one central place but here they don't do it that way. And sometimes these people would have real children living upstairs with them. I'm sorry I shouldn't have said real children like these others weren't real, but that's how they used to talk about them, like they were nobody's children, the kind of children who belonged to no one and who you could do anything you want with, and you were supposed to be glad you were not one of them, and they told you that you could become one of them at any time.

T: So you felt terribly guilty that you were glad to not be one of those children.

P: Yes, it was awful but we learned not to think about them, their rocking and their headbanging, and the vacant look in their eyes after a while. Sometimes we even hated them and the men liked that we felt that way and encouraged that, but then sometimes we had to make them do things and get them to cooperate and I hated having to be nice to them, that made it all harder. Then you had to feel something.

T: And feeling anything was dangerous.

P: Very dangerous, it could make you make a mistake. Or make them make you hurt them more.

T: So any act of kindness was prohibited.

P: Once they shocked the metal on the cage because I held one girl's hands, and we both went flying across the room with her in the cage, and I never did that again.

T: Any softness or caring would just cause more pain.

P: In that place all you care about is stopping the pain.

T: And that's the double bind of guilt isn't it, because you can't help but try and survive and yet your self-preservation feels like the worst thing, like a betrayal, and yet you can't help trying to get away from the pain and to survive.

P: You're trapped but that's not what they tell you and that's not what you think about at the time; even now some parts of me think about it the old way, like what kind of person am I to let that happen. Like it's all my fault and I wanted these things to happen so I wouldn't die.

T: Of course the complicated questions are who is letting what happen to whom. Who is really responsible for all of this. You're carrying a lot of guilt and shame over it and have been your whole life.

P: Right, I can think about that now, but back then it was not possible. Mostly I survived by not thinking about anything at all. And eventually it took a lot of drugs to help keep that going. . . .

T: Where did those children come from?

P: I don't know, but they always had plenty of them, but never too many in one place—except in some places with big houses in other countries where they keep many of them in rooms and cages—like I told you, it's done differently in different places. I think that many of them were just raised for this.

T: Raised to be used, raped, and then killed? Is that what you mean.

P: Yes, like they were nobody's children—to use up. We couldn't have any feelings about all of this, and I feel a little nauseous now, but I can't feel a whole lot about this yet. I don't understand why people don't believe this. Where do they think all the missing children are going to and where do they think these people get the children to sell and kill and use in their films from?

T: I don't think a lot of people know about this or can stand to know about it or to believe it. Or they say there simply isn't evidence of this sort of thing. Like you said about yourself, they just don't think about it. It's too awful.

P: Right. We just don't think about it. But it's still there. No one wants to believe this stuff and they, you know the ones who are doing all this, they know this real well. They laugh about it sometimes. Mocking everyone. They think they control everything. Sometimes it seems like they really do.

DISSOCIATIVE PATTERNS IN VICTIMS OF ORGANIZED AND RITUAL CHILD ABUSE

Many patients who claim to come from intergenerational, intrafamilial cults describe specific child-rearing practices that involve the suffusion of pain and fear into the sensory and psychological experiences of infants and children from the earliest points in development (e.g., starving, burning, beatings, sensory deprivation, overexposure to severe heat and/or cold, sexual molestation, and the neglect of infants). Such patterns establish dissociative imperatives at the earliest age, disrupt normal integration of self- and other-representations, and create a storehouse of rage that can be harnessed and directed by the leaders of the group. The very youngest personality is split into cult-identified and noncult sectors, and the resulting dissociative structures are molded so that cult-compliance can operate outside the full awareness of the other aspects of personality (Young et al., 1991; Smith, 1993) (see Chapter 8). Development proceeds along parallel tracks. Many patients speak of radical splits in their dissociative identity systems between "day" selves and "night" selves and insist on keeping these separate long after their involvement in perpetrator groups has ended. (One patient commented that when the leader of her perpetrator group would enter her house during the daytime to train or punish her for some transgression reported by her parents, the interpenetration of day and night worlds threw her well-compartmentalized dissociative system into complete chaos.)

Children (or camouflaged alter personalities of the child) adopt the doctrines of, and allegiances to, the cult in the absence of their own now dismantled belief systems in order to restore their psychic equilibrium and ward off further disintegration. Their attachment is completely trauma-based, embedded in the trance logic of posttraumatic suggestions and meanings, and often buried under drug-induced and hypnotically created amnestic barriers. The victims internalize the perpetrators' messages that their own selves are no longer their possessions but property of the group—sacrifices, gifts, obligations—in exchange for keeping them alive. When the children see themselves acting contrary to their internal senses of morality or core goodness they become convinced that what they have been told is true (i.e., that they are intrinsically evil, and the cycle of self-fulfilling prophecies built into the trance logic of the dissociative self-system is reinforced). The signs and symptoms of ritual abuse in children are described in great detail in Gould (1992).

In therapy, survivors of ritual abuse consistently attest to the same seesawing manipulations—likened by Ross (1995a) to the use of rat psychology on humans—designed to inculcate in them feelings of specialness and feelings of abject helplessness, in every possible combination. Their reports are consistent with reports in the clinical literature (Charles, 1995; Gould, 1992; Greaves, 1992; Sakheim, 1996), and also, tellingly, with recently released CIA files documenting the experimental use of hypnosis on unwitting subjects to create "Manchurian Candidates"—dissociative alter personalities who could be programmed and managed for espionage activities (Ross 1997).

The systematic abuse of attachment speaks to the depths of the wounds of the perpetrators, which compound profound betrayal, sacrifice, torture, and abandonment—namely, Magid's (1988) "evil self"—with severe problems of drive regulation and object relations. Such individuals construct coherent, cohesive, relatively conflict-free identities around delineated cores of negative or evil ideals and ambitions "whose execution—while reinforcing the structural cohesion of the individual self—is inimical to the lives of others" (p. 100). The need to feed their escalating maniacal grandiosity with enactments of wholesale revenge and destruction, often dressed up in ego-syntonic ideologies, takes on the powerful driving forces of an addiction, requiring ever increasing doses of violence and hatred.

The perpetrator's maniacal and insatiable greed must constantly be reworked to keep disintegration anxieties at bay; the terrors, the poisons, and primitive agonies—the "bad stuff"—must continually be ejected outward into an external container and this container must be systematically attacked to ensure that this "badness" does not take revenge on the perpetrator's self (Grand, 2000). According to Grand, such splitting and projective identification allow the acquisitor to pursue nonhuman fusion with immortality while the victims serve as the repository for disavowed, evacuated dread about extinction.

An extremely articulate female patient began to have a second wave of memories about her involvement in the snuff-film industry as part of larger childhood involvement in criminal cults and ritual abuse. She began to put diverse fragments of memory together in an effort to integrate this aspect of her severely traumatic childhood experiences. Telling me that she now often had to hide her fear of cameras from other people, she described how she worked in all aspects of the snuff-film industry from procurement to accounting, from stage management to filming, from costuming to lighting, and from courier/distribution to actor/killer. When asked if she was ready to talk about it, she said that she indeed felt ready to put these pieces together and have someone else know about them. However, she stated quite clearly that it was okay for the pieces she would tell me to go together in *my* head just as long as all the pieces did not go together in *her* head. "It's the programming," she said, "that's how it works. The pieces have to stay separate."

P: The procurement was simple. It always involved sailors, prostitutes, and dancers and I was trained to seduce them into different places promising work, sex, drugs, thrills and stuff like that.

T: The procurement did not involve children?

P: No, they were not procured in that way. Children were part of the accounting system part of it. They were sold or given as part of payment between people involved in this film business. Like in exchange for films or money or for blackmail and stuff. The procurement I was involved in was with adults or teenagers who didn't know what they were getting into, and filming their face up close with the surprise and horror when they realize they were being killed was a big part of the whole thing. Filming the surprise of the victim is a big thing with them. That's their game. They even have special language for it, special words that stood for things.

T: Words like . . . ? Can you remember anything?

P: Yes, one word pops into my mind. Caper, like referring to what happens. And transaction. That was a code word that could mean something else if people heard you talking about it.

T: The word "caper" has a lot of connotations, doesn't it?

P: Exactly. You see that. You see that weird sense of humor, the pulling one over, the getting-away-with-it thing that is so important to these people. And the mockery too, which is a big thing and is used as a theme in some of their movies besides.

T: I don't understand what you mean about accounting.

P: That was actually a big part of my job. There was a ledger with names of people, money, services, children who were kidnapped or bred or bought who were traded and logs were kept of all of this in secret places. It is like a business, like any business except for what it is and how sick it is.

T: How are you feeling telling me about this.

P: I am numb in order to get all this out but I am relieved to be saying it, and I have a headache. But I can keep going.

T: You said you were involved in all parts of this. Were you involved in the filming?

P: Not very much, they had special people for that, but I was involved in the backstage stuff. Lighting, costumes, rope cages where people would be trapped hovering above another scene of death and torture and their faces would be filmed as they witnessed horrible things and as they began to know it was going to happen to them, there were lots of close-ups on that kind of thing. And there were themes, you know. Story lines and plots. And I was used in the story as a child, like the role of the innocent . . . there is always the innocent child.

T: And what happens to that child?

P: Sometimes the innocent is also the killer. Well someone is set up to do something to that innocent child and then the child turns on them and hurts them when they don't suspect that's what is going to happen. Tricks and deceptions and playing with real and fake innocence are some of the main themes they do in those films. When it's a kidnapped child, then the innocent gets to be the one who gets killed.

T: So they are always playing out and filming these themes of betrayal, sacrifice, deception, and corruption or destruction of innocence.

P: Yes, that's the main theme and there are so many variations. Foiled rescues is another big theme for them. Like someone is set up to believe they could be saved and their hope or desperation is filmed and then the rescue is foiled and when they realize they are going to die and not be saved there is a close-up of their face because the people who like these films want to see that face when it's tricked or giving up hope or lost. That's their favorite thing . . .

They also prey on young runaways and prostitutes and erotic dancers. Especially the ones whose disappearances would not be noticed. You know drifters and people like that, there are thousands of them. There was this young erotic dancer who was lured into their game with promises of money and films and stuff. She thought she was in control and they knew she was not. She acted tough and cool but she was really naïve. I got attached to her. I was like her assistant in the early phases. I don't know if I knew what was going to happen to her. But they let her dance and they got her into cutting herself and bleeding a little bit at a time with each performance and filming so she was like getting used to this kind of thing and thought she was cool and in control. Like just a regular S and M type film thing. But then one day after a while they cut her so bad she was dying while she was dancing and being filmed and at first it was like she was partly drugged and did not get the trick and then she got it and they do that close-up on her face as she is realizing she is being killed and

> tricked and can't do anything about it. This is like the kind of things they do. Do you understand?

[Later in that session. . .]

> I also was a courier and had to bring these films from one place to another or be part of trades and distributions. Sometimes I didn't know what I was carrying from one place to the next.
>
> After killing someone they, you know, they usually dismember bodies and stuff like that. You know, like in the films they may have corpses with limbs cut off just for background decoration to make a scene. To have an effect. Everything is for effect. They keep the bodies and parts frozen in meat lockers in different places for when they need to use them. Some of the people involved have these big or little grocery stores. Anyway, sometimes I was a courier and had to bring these films from one place to another or be part of trades and distributions. Sometimes I didn't know what I was carrying from one place to the next. It's all organized like on an underground network. They all know who they are. Nobody else seems to know who they are. You have to understand these people are into very strange jokes with one another. Or maybe it was to prove something else, like they really did it, but one time they didn't put a film in the film thing, what do you call you know those metal flat silver circular tins. They would put some part of a person, like a tongue was cut out once and when I delivered it to the person who was supposed to get the film, and it was like a big joke between them that there was a tongue in there instead of a film.

RITUAL ABUSE, EVIL, AND EVERYDAY LIFE

Ritual-abuse patients share one further disturbing common denominator—the inextricability of normal everyday, "good citizen" lifestyles with organized sadism. One patient's father preached on fundamentalist Christian television during the day and engineered satanic brutality in the evenings to rid his daughter of demonic possession. Other patients have named teachers and school officials, medical professionals, clergy, and local police officers as the perpetrators in sex rings or ritual-abuse groups and cults. In one family the physician-father's access to drugs facilitated the victims' injection with all sorts of chemical agents designed to intensify their experience, ensure their compliance and silence, and totally confuse them. With the help of the patient and his mother, this same doctor-abuser shot up his two other children before leaving the house for extended periods of time to keep them completely unconscious (i.e., "switched off").[17]

Regardless of the tactics deployed or the ideological underpinnings, ritual abuse and systematic torture—conflating sadism and megalomania—always also involve economics.

> Religious beliefs, including those associated with Satanism, may be a thinly disguised pretext for giving torturers a sadistic thrill. In instances in which cults produce pornography, peddle drugs, or engage in other illegal activities, the thrill of making money and creating extensive criminal networks is also an obvious motive. In such cases, the loyalty of the individual to the group is intensified by reminding the member that she or he has engaged in criminal acts, is now—though secretly—an outcast from normal society, and would be tried for heinous crimes if the cult activity were discovered. (Waites, 1993, p. 207)

Ritual abuse should probably be reconstrued as intricately woven into the fabric of the power and economic bases of child-pornography, prostitution, drug-trafficking, and the snuff-film industries as really a means to an end rather than an end in itself (Blume, 1995). (Trauma, sexual abuse, torture, and mind control are used to cultivate and then manipulate the dissociative structures of children in quest of "a cost-free, compliant labor force to drive such high-profit criminal activities as drug dealing, pornography, and prostitution" [p. 134].)

Before we can expect a significant shift away from skepticism, denial, and avoidance in the mental health professions, law enforcement, and the media, we must wait for one or more legal convictions for satanic abuse or ritual murder, or for forensic documentation of organized child abuse or ritual abuse—or for the discovery and details of a confiscated "shipment" of children across state lines by an organized perpetrator group to be made fully public without minimization. And yet, "In the long run, perhaps it is not the incredulity but the frightening plausibility[18] of secret cults that makes them so insistently denied" (Waites, 1993, p. 203).

By way of demystification, Ross (1995a) calls for ongoing research to systematically investigate and document the extent and effects of ritual abuse; the life experiences, memory functions, symptoms, and treatment trajectories of dissociative survivors alleging participation in satanic cults are a topic that should be studied experimentally just like any other subject area.

RITUAL ABUSE AND HUMAN HISTORY

DeMause (1994), who has continually attempted to raise society's awareness about the collective use of children as "poison containers" for the deposit of adults' and society's wounds, concludes that the bizarre dramas played out in contemporary and historical cults seem to serve certain psychological meanings and functions. Sadistic individuals continually defend against primitive annihilation, disintegration, and fears of engulfment by reenacting rituals that reassure them of their potency and separateness; individual and collective fantasies of restoring potency through sexually abusing, torturing, and killing children have motivated people since the dawn of time. The *universal psychodynamics of cultic torture* and sacrifice, which transcend time and place (DeMause, 1994), include

- regression due to fears of individuation;
- refuge in trance states;
- merging with the leader in defense against engulfment;
- projective identification to relieve intolerable feelings;
- deification of the terrifying leader as a defense against helplessness;
- totalitarian organization of the cult hierarchy;
- torture and sacrificial rebirth rituals reenacting childhood traumas to recapitulate the drama of absolute power over absolute helplessness.

The megalomaniacs driving child-abuse cults around the world are attempting to resolve primitive psychological agonies and profound spiritual wounds through extreme omnipotent enactments that turn them into "gods." By spellbinding groups of people in ritual settings, by exercising high-level Mafia-type authority over major business operations, and by controlling large populations with continuous access to the management of their life, death, and reproduction, these people ward off their own apocalyptic anxieties by living out an archetypal demonic existence.

The centerpiece of victimization in ritual abuse—coercing the victim into colluding with his/her own exploitation and in the abuse and betrayal of others[19]—was also a pivotal strategy and organizing principle of the slavery system. Both worlds involve the stealing, trafficking, and breeding of victims (for profit); the destruction of the victim's sense of self-worth and autonomy; and the dismantling of all attachments that do not advance the economic (or pseudoreligious) status quo. Both worlds involve torture, sexual abuse, death threats, isolation, breeding experiments, manipulation of attachment bonds, starvation, a rationalizing and righteous spiritual system, coerced compliance and rewards for identifying with the master against the other slaves.

Nathanson (1992), discoursing on shame and the enslavement of people of African descent in the American South, could be referring to ritual abuse:

> Can there be a greater source of shame than to be declared so much less than human that one is only a piece of property. . . . People removed from their own cultures and turned into beasts of burden and creatures designed to fulfill the fantasy needs of fellow humans who now claimed to be their owners. (p. 462)

Ritual-abuse cults, like all absolute authoritarian systems, pervert loyalty and deploy death/pain threats and death/pain-avoidance strategies to motivate and manipulate victims' compliance. Whereas slaves were forbidden to read, cult victims are prohibited from interacting with or internalizing alternate sources of information—but in both cases the objective is destruction of critical thinking capacities and forced dependence on the "master" for structuring meaning. And in both settings, thought-reform techniques are used to mystify, confuse, and disempower; both systems reinforce dissociative adaptations whereby a victim must hide any knowledge of a sense of the self-as-sacred lest it be discovered, assaulted, and appropriated by the perpetrating system. Considering slavery as a subset of sadistic/ritual abuse renders the latter more comprehensible and affirms its linkage with, rather than isolation from, the realities of our history.

The Nazi Holocaust is another example of large-scale ritual abuse, though it is not often conceptualized this way. The death camps incorporated all of the elements, however: economic exploitation, spiritual assaults, torture and child abuse, death rituals and child murders, bizarre dismemberment and human experimentation, prostitution, the manipulation of dependency, filming of bizarre killings and experiments for the entertainment of the perpetrators, the turning of victims against themselves and against one another, the destruction of hope, organized deception, and the fostering of incredulity and collaboration among large masses of humanity.

As the Nazis did, ritual abusers brutally impose on their victims delusional ideologies whose grandiose coercive pressure eliminates the possibility of escape, rescue, or any kind of witnessing. The victims have no right to protest or speak up. By virtue of their contamination by the "secret order"

(Laub, 1995), they accept subhuman status as their real and rightful identity. What Laub describes as the core assault on the individual's sense of reality in the case of Holocaust survivors applies equally to survivors of organized child abuse:

> It was not only the reality of the situation and the lack of responsiveness of bystanders or the world that accounts for the fact that history was taking place with no witness: it was also the very circumstance of being inside the event that made unthinkable the very notion that a witness could exist, that is, someone who could step outside of the coercively totalitarian and dehumanizing frame of reference in which the event was taking place, and provide an independent frame of reference through which the event could be observed. (1995, p. 66)

Ritual abuse, then, is by no means a recent or an esoteric phenomenon. It should come as no surprise to students of history, psychology, and economics. Cruelty has particular power in societies that profess democracy and deny their own authoritarian elements because, by splitting it off and denying it, we collectively empower and collude in its proliferation. It is important that we do not make the mistake of dissociating evil, of splitting it off from the family of human experiences. We can learn a great deal by studying the behaviors and effects of organized violence and thought reform as practiced in destructive cults—microcosms, crucibles, extreme manifestations of ourselves—yet, thanks to an ongoing culturally sanctioned decontextualization process, we cannot seem to make room for what thousands of people have been trying to tell us.

Ritual-abuse survivors are never surprised to be disbelieved by outside cultural authorities. Their perpetrators told them it would be that way should they ever try and testify on their own behalf and betray the group. Society's unwillingness to suspend disbelief compounds the overriding sense of alienation from, and abandonment by, the rest of humanity already instilled in survivors of chronic trauma first by their supremely marginalizing experiences and then by their dissociative adaptations to them.

THE PERPETRATORS[20]

Serious abuse is seldom ambiguous and serious abusers aren't merely normal parents who have fallen on hard times. They are criminals knowingly engaged in criminal behavior, which is why they typically blame the child and hide the

> *brutal results. Giving them the benefit of the doubt, letting them off with warnings, propping them up with social services in the name of family values tells them they can escape responsibility for their crimes. Violent people take such acquiescence for approval, and escalate the abuse.*
>
> **—Richard Rhodes**

In order to understand the dynamics of child abuse and its psychological effects, particularly the ways in which offender psychology is internalized by child victims, we must know about the perpetrators. Who are they? How do they operate? What makes them do what they do? Child molesters actually come from all socioeconomic and educational levels and share few characteristics aside from their predilection for deviant sexual behavior (Myers et al., 1989; Salter, 1995). There is no profile of a typical child molester (Myers et al., 1989), no pathology discernible by generic psychological tests or clinical interviews (Salter, 1995). The most chilling aspect of this species of deviance is its invisibility (Salter, 1995); the most striking diagnostic characteristic of sexual victimizers of children is their apparent normality (Herman, 1990).

Recently, the U.S. Department of Justice (Greenfield, 1996) issued a report entitled "Child Victimizers: Violent Offenders and Their Victims." Mixing the responses of a nationwide sample of state prisoners with homicide data assembled by law enforcement agencies, the study reveals how different the victimizer of children is from the victimizer of adults. First, the *vast majority* of inmates whose victims were under eighteen had committed some form of sexual assault or molestation. Typically, perpetrators (97 percent of whom were male) knew their child-victims: about half were their parents. Indeed, nearly a third of those serving time in state prisons for violence against children had victimized their own child(ren) or stepchild(ren). One-fifth of all violent offenders serving time in state prisons reported having victimized a child (which translated in 1991 into about 61,000 child victimizers incarcerated in state prisons).

The victims of nearly two-thirds of rapists and sexual assaulters in state prisons were children. Victimizers of children were more likely than victimizers of adults to have had *multiple victims*,[21] and substantially more likely to have been physically or sexually abused themselves as children; however—and notably, toward deconstructing the myth that all perpetrators are abuse survivors—*the majority*, regardless of victim age, had *no* such history. Perhaps the most disturbing statistic the study documents is the contrast between median sentences for offenses against children—eleven years—and adults—fifteen.

Salter (1995) reports that incest offenders typically receive shorter prison sentences and are released on probation more often than other child molesters, despite the finding that about half of a sample of incest offenders had also molested children outside of their own families (Weinrott and Saylor, 1991). Salter (1995) concludes that child victimization is a highly addictive, tenacious, and repetitive problem, and, further, that it is frequently a progressive disorder: the offenses grow more intrusive, more intense, and at times more violent as time goes on; escalations can involve the types of offenses, types of victims, and numbers of victims.[22]

THE CHARACTERISTICS OF SEXUAL PERPETRATION AGAINST CHILDREN

Contrary to what society likes to comfort itself by thinking and contrary to what many abusers claim when confronted with undeniable evidence, sexual perpetration against children is not an impulsive act or momentary aberration (Pithers, 1990). Sexual offending is carefully thought-out, well-planned, and well-camouflaged behavior. "It is easier to accept the notion of error rather than evil, and coldly plotting the sexual molestation of children strikes most people as something very close to evil" (Salter, 1995, p. 38). The capacity of sexual offenders for denial, rationalization, and minimization of their deviant behavior is confirmed by Salter's (1995) finding that the population she has interviewed seem rather proud of their ability to manipulate their victims into remaining attached and loyal to them. Salter notes that frequently child abusers target their victims by calculating their probable vulnerability relative to other children, recognizing that those already being abused by others are better prey than never-molested children.

The manipulation of children's trust and betrayal of their attachment needs are such powerful guarantors of compliance that many (especially intrafamilial, nonsadistic, and/or lone operator) offenders often need not resort to anything else. (When the extremes of complicity and subjugation are involved, however, perpetrators resort to coercion, terrorization, and insidious forms of thought reform and mind control. See Chapter 8.) To protect themselves against the legal and social consequences of disclosure, they deploy threats, promises, and bribes, and, most commonly, exploit the victim's naïveté and goodwill (Salter, 1988; 1995; Howitt, 1995). Other documented methods used by perpetrators to gain mastery include the imposition of their adult authority and superior physical power and the isolation of the victim from others (Howitt, 1995). Sometimes, in preference to convincing a child that secrecy is best for him/her and for the family, an offender may not even raise the issue, lest it attract the child's attention to the inappropriateness of what is going on. In response to inquiries, abusers variously claim that "nothing" is happening or reframe the assault as somehow helpful to the child, or at least neutral. (One DID patient's mother who handed her over to pimps at night on a regular basis in exchange for money and protection would tell the bewildered girl the next morning that she had been in her own bed all night long.) Postevent suggestions become powerful organizers of victims' memories and self-reflections.

It is imperative that clinicians become well-versed in the dynamics of sexual assault and relatively fluent in the perpetrator psychology because thinking errors (Salter, 1988; 1995) that permeate the deviant sexual behavior pattern of perpetrators at every stage are often internalized by the child victims and maintained unconsciously into adult life. *Content* thinking errors among sexual offenders include palliative comparisons to minimize their behavior, reframing the abuse, and self-statements that blame the victim (Salter, 1995). *Process* errors described by Salter (including research by Yochelson and Samenow, 1976) and reflecting research by Howitt (1995) include

I can't—to disguise refusing to do things they do not want to do or to justify why they cannot resist their impulses;

victim-stancing—whereby the offender claims and believes that s/he is the real victim (one of the most prevalent sophistries in the false memory controversies);

exculpatory rhetoric—denial, minimization, scheming, dissimulating, and believing in one's innocence;

lack of time perspective—failure to take into account the future consequences of present behavior;

deficit in empathy—inability to put oneself in another's position, including the failure to consider injury to others;

pathological entitlement—conviction of his/her right to have whatever s/he needs; and *superoptimism*—the belief that s/he will not get caught or punished, amounting to a type of omnipotent logic and grandiose thinking that enables a separation of actions from their consequences or effects.

Consistent with their well-developed denial systems, child abusers make idiosyncratic distinctions in degrees of blame that are often unintelligible to an outside observer and sometimes even accept incarceration rather than admit to the full extent of the charges against them (Salter, 1988). Within the context of perpetrator thinking errors, Salter (1988) has articulated a spectrum of denial, whose components include denial of the acts themselves; denial of planning and fantasy; denial of responsibility for the acts; denial of the seriousness of the behavior or its effects; denial of internal guilt; and denial of the difficulty of changing abusive patterns. An offender will often insist that he has suffered more than the victim,[23] readily listing the costs of disclosure and public censure—his standing in the community, his job, his freedom, his family—and evidencing little internal guilt (Salter, 1988, p. 108). "Genuine contrition in a perpetrator is a rare miracle" (Herman, 1992, p. 190).

From a clinical standpoint, the most important areas of investigation involve our learning how perpetrators affect victims' identity, memory, dissociative organization, and alterations in consciousness. Toward advancing such study, some clinicians/researchers have attempted to identify different types of sexual offenders.

Finkelhor and Williams (1992) categorize five distinct kinds of incesting fathers:

1. *the sexually preoccupied*, whose clear and conscious sexual interest in their daughters, often from birth, has always contaminated their relationships;
2. *the adolescent regressives*, who appear to be developmentally arrested in early adolescence and become sexually activated when their daughters reach puberty;
3. *the instrumental self-gratifiers*, who demonstrate significant recrimination for their fantasies and behaviors—rationalized in spite of their guilt, sometimes by mentally turning their daughters into adults—and who struggle sincerely to redirect attention toward their wives;
4. *the emotionally dependent*, who target their loneliness and frustrated marital needs toward their daughters; and

5. *the angry retaliators*, embittered men with elaborate justifications for their acting out, who often blame others.

Larson and Maddock (1986) classify four family abusive styles based on underlying purpose of the abuse:

1. *affection-exchange*, whereby sexual abuse stems from the offender's need for affection;
2. *erotic-exchange*, typical of a family that sexualizes everything and all sex in the family as normal and legitimate;
3. *aggression-exchange*, whereby sexual abuse is an extension of physical abuse and part of a system of punishment and humiliation; and
4. *rage-expression*, characteristic of highly violent and sadistic families.

Salter (1995) identifies sadistic, nonsadistic, and power/control abusers, and also distinguishes the use of force (by sadists and power/control types) from the use of "grooming" to obtain victim compliance. In each paradigm of abuse and perverted desire, the perpetrator has his own preferred relationship with his victim(s), ranging from a need to see (or fantasize) him/her as sexually desirous to a need to exercise absolute control over every aspect of the victim's life, and beyond that to the need to incite complete terror and submission in order to achieve sexual arousal and psychological stabilization/inflation.

In sexually abusive family systems the child-victim is often parentified and triangulated inappropriately into parental roles either because the parents are absent, intoxicated, or have otherwise abdicated their parental responsibilities (Alexander and Friedrich, 1991; Weiner and Kurpius, 1995). The role of substance abuse as a disinhibitor, a motivating force, and as a factor in memory distortion among perpetrators should not be underestimated (Araji and Finkelhor, 1986). Intrafamilial, sex-ring, and ritual sexual abuse often takes place under the influence of mind-altering substances and often involves the forcible intoxication or drugging of children to obtain their compliance, profoundly confuse them, and disable their memories.

Notably, child sexual abusers have been shown to demonstrate significantly more learning problems, cognitive defects, and neuropsychological impairment than normal (Langevin and Watson, 1996; Langevin, Martentette, and Rosati, 1996).[24] In general the research points out that pedophiles show language-based cognitive impairment that obstructs comprehension, information retention and retrieval, and application of new learning to therapy situations and to their lives over all. (The investigators caution, however, against making conclusions about the etiological significance of their findings: there could be a bias in the sample of offenders who are caught [that is, the brighter ones may get away], or perhaps sex offenders are no different from other criminals, who may also show more cognitive defects than the population at large.)

MOTIVATIONS OF PERPETRATORS

> *Two or three things I know for sure, but none of them is why a man would rape a child, why a man would beat a child. . . . All the things I can say about sexual abuse—about rape—none of them are reasons. The words do not explain. Explanations almost drove me crazy, other people's explanations and my own. Explanations, justifications, and theories. I've got my own theory. My theory is that rape goes on happening all the time. My theory is that everything said about that act is assumed to say something about me, as if that thing I never wanted to happen and did not know how to stop is the only thing that can be said about my life. My theory is that talking about it makes a difference—being a woman who can stand up anywhere and say, I was five and the man was big. So let me say it.*
>
> **—Dorothy Allison,**
> ***Two or Three Things I Know for Sure***

Pedophilia must always be mentioned as part of the complex intersection of motivational variables, although Howitt (1995) cautions against regarding theories of pedophilia as sole explanations for why some adults sexually abuse children.25 Those who find children sexually arousing may be stirred by masturbatory fantasies encouraging such thoughts, the misattribution of affectionate feelings to sexual ones, or the message of child pornography that children are suitable sexual partners. Other theories of pedophilia argue that individuals who molest children do so because of their inability to establish normal adult sexual relationships.

Araji and Finkelhor (1986) contend that a variety of *disinhibiting factors* must be considered in understanding the cycle of child abuse that leads some adults to disregard or circumvent cultural norms and values about appropriate sexual behavior—for example, lack of impulse control, senility and mental retardation, disinhibitory effects of drugs and alcohol.

Externalization has been proposed as one of the primary privilegers of perpetrators or as a relational backdrop when the parent assaults the person of the child in an effort to avoid the narcissistic pain of accepting or struggling with devalued aspects of the self (Novick and Novick, 1994). Children's natural individuation and autonomy drives are experienced by such parents as hostile acts worthy of retaliation or as commodities to be appropriated or managed, since externalization is intimately linked with the inability to tolerate the separate existence of the other. The lack of empathy and the profound narcissistic deficits of most child victimizers lead to the use of the child as a repository of primitive agonies and disowned, hated, and humiliated self-representations.

Reenactment theory is another source of explanation of sexual victimization against children. Reenactment can refer to the direct or referential replication of the abuse that offenders suffer or have suffered (Howitt, 1995), although the theory that a history of childhood molestation leads to pedophilia may be untenable to the extent that many abusers falsely claim to have been violated (Freund, Watson, and Dickey, 1990).[26]

Another study (Federoff and Pinkus, 1996) was also unable to support the "abuse-to-abuser" hypothesis, but it did not rule out the possibility that there is a specific subgroup whose offenses parallel their own victimization histories (e.g., in terms of the ages at which they were abused and the ages of their victims). And while the research of Lisak and colleagues (1996) did find a clear link among convicted perpetrators between abuse and abusing, they concluded that the vast majority of their sample of men molested in childhood did *not* go on to become child molesters themselves. While direct or concrete reenactment theories are appealing in their simplicity, they seem to represent only a moderate element among diverse, complex psychosocial motivational factors. Perhaps if concrete, referential, symbolic, and interactional forms of reenactment were considered together, the motivational construct of reenactment would have greater explanatory power.

Addictiveness is motivating by definition. Salter (1995) understands the sexual abuse of children as a way for some adults to self-regulate, self-soothe, and, in some cases, provide self-coherence, by meeting their need for affection, for power or sensation, or for control of another's suffering to alleviate psychic deadness or psychotic anxieties. This conceptualization is consistent with what DeMause (1991; 1994) proposes concerning regulation of primitive emotional states and disintegration anxieties. The extremes of addiction in relation to child abuse occur when the perpetrator's (conscious or unconscious) shame about illicit and destructive activities evokes his/her anxiety and psychic disequlibrium leading to cravings for further perpetration as a desperate means of self-control. Escalations of this kind of cycle, particularly with sadistic pedophiles, can lead to brutal sprees of perpetration and serious, life-threatening injuries, and in some cases "unintentional" death of the victim.

Fetishism,[27] combined with the dynamics of malignant narcissism and sociopathy, also mobilizes sexual predation. Many abusers target children who remind them of themselves or who have other specific characteristics (Howitt, 1995). Some researchers have called this motivational factor emotional congruence (Araji and Finkelhor, 1986), referring to the most commonly cited theory about the origins of pedophilia—that sexual abusers choose children for sexual partners because children have some especially compelling emotional meaning for them. (Araji and Finkelhor describe, for example, arrested psychosexual development and emotionally immature patterns of male socialization that may encourage tendencies toward sexual dominance and narcissism whereby perpetrators seek sexual relationships with children with whom they identify.) For some offenders, the direct (or symbolic) replay of their own child abuse may be a dissociative strategy to avoid their own pain and remembering; when addictive and reenactment imperatives intersect, the victimizer maintains his/her own mental stability through the fetishistic, violent, or primitive envious exploitation of children's innocence, vulnerability, and capacity for unconditional love. Like other fetishes, child-abuse victims can provide the perpetrator with fantasies of protection, security, empowerment/omnipotence, revenge, and so on.

Many child sexual abusers are compulsive record keepers (Crewdson, 1988; Howitt, 1995), maintaining meticulous notes about each of the children they abuse, citing what was done to whom and where, the child's reactions, and so on. Lanning and Burgess (1984) describe one case where a perpetrator kept precise records on the average number of sex acts per child (64.68), the average duration of each relationship (2.2 years), the average age of each victim (10.89 years), and even the amount of sperm ejaculated by each boy he molested.

Relative *immunity* from consequences is surely facilitating, if not motivating of the choice to violate children in support of omnipotent, paranoid-schizoid modes of existence. When silence and disbelief are dependable social reactions, victimizers can take for granted that they are unlikely to be prosecuted. "Just as bacteria flourish when exposed to situations ideally suited to their growth needs, so torture thrives within environments that meet the torturer's needs" (Simpson, 1996, p. 203).

In *Psychopathic Sadism.* Something essentially human is missing in many perpetrators, particularly in their relationships to children—an absence of normal attachment and healthy identificatory processes. Finkelhor and Lewis (1988) hypothesize that most child victimizers have severe deficiencies in empathy and show no protective feelings for children; pervasively deny that children occupy a special status and thus require special treatment; disdain childlike emotional characteristics (e.g., neediness, ignorance, spontaneity); lack interest in children and feel inadequate in caretaking roles.

Bollas (1995) expands on the lack of a "logical emotional link" (p. 189) in the more severe cases of torturers and psychopathic sadists and on their eroticized exploitation of basic trust and their need to merge sex and death—the killer's eroticism, whereby "a traumatized soul bearing a deep wound . . . [and] an envious hatred of life mutating into an envious identification with the anti-life . . . feels condemned to work his trauma upon the human race, trying to bring others to an equivalent fall" (p. 184).

The purely sadistic and ritual abusers and megalomaniacal perpetrators, extreme psychopathic sadists who achieve positions of power and whose histories emerge during the treatment of severely dissociative patients, are not likely to give interviews to researchers like Salter (1995) or Howitt (1995). This subgroup of perpetrators shows proclivities that go beyond sadistic sexual abuse to forcing the participation of children in the abuse and torture of animals and other children, embodying bizarre eroticizations of death, dying, and dismemberment. These are the people involved in the snuff-film industry, ritual abuse, and organized victimizer groups, people who take particular pleasure in using torture, terror, and trauma to induce children to engage in behaviors that forge identificatory links with their own malignant universes. These most pathological of malignant narcissists create miniature versions of themselves in their child-victims' minds and demand precise mirroring through repetition and participation in all the perverse acts that organize their representational worlds.

The destruction and perversion of innocence (along with the mortification of the child) is eroticized and reenacted as the extremely sadistic perpetrator concretely and psychologically penetrates the child-victim with his/her own deep psychospiritual wounding, temporarily alleviating the mounting annihilation anxieties and the chronic threat of destabilization. Once penetrated by and merged with a completely demonized psyche, children become the containers for the perpetrator's living hell as well as for some of the culture's most extreme (and extremely disavowed) shadow elements. Even as this subset of profoundly disturbed patient-survivors has been surfacing in the offices of therapists who treat severe dissociative disorders, the corresponding subset of perpetrators has not been documented, studied, or consistently arrested and incarcerated.

Grotstein (1984) highlights the chronic fear of being someone else's prey as the source of the individual's becoming a predator him/herself: in order to reify his/her manic defenses and ensure his/her psychological safety, s/he reenacts a traumatic fantasy on a passive victim. Grotstein describes willful sadists and murderers as wishing to inflict pain not so much for the joy in seeing the victim suffer as to see the look of agony in the victim's face, which reestablishes contact with their own suffering selves one step removed, by means of projection. (Survivors confirm that this sight of agony is a key element in torture, snuff films, and human sacrifice situations.) The perpetrator's manic defense operates to deny and translocate the victimized self into another victim: "Evil, having been deprived of its prenatal innocence, seeks to regain it by stealing it from the unborn child, the special one, the ego ideal, the one who does not have to experience demoralization through the act of living" (p. 222).

> After he beat me, he tied me up and raged at me for the audacity of resisting him. His eyes were wild and on fire, like he was possessed. Any movement unleashed more violence and ranting. His hatred is beyond description; it cut through me like a knife. I had to learn to be completely still, but if I closed my eyes or tried to go away, you know, to dissociate, he would bring me back and make me face him so he could watch me struggle. Each of my pleas for some humanity from him were met with more abuse, making me have to face that there was no humanity left in him. Facing that was worse than the pain and fear.
>
> **—Anonymous**

Psychopathic sadists "have to continually punish the victim to prove to themselves that they are in control, that it is not themselves but someone else who is the victim. The compulsive component of this behavior is crucial to its identification" (Howell, 1996, p. 440). Howell believes that the addictive need of the psychopathic sadist for power over the lives of others comes from the dissociation of vulnerability and dependency. Howell (1996) also describes the psychopathic sadist's continuous and compulsive need to "put one over" on other people, which she equates with Meloy's (1988) concept of "endogenous deception" (p. 120). The experiences of exhilaration and contempt that follow the successful exercise of manipulation in response to internal pressures themselves become addictive; deception is ultimately necessary for the maintenance of psychic equilibrium, and not just for the usual instrumental reasons.

Sadistic ritual abusers are masters of deceit both in the contexts of the traumatic scenarios they engineer and in relation to the outside world. Specifically, they are masters of the psychological reversal: they want to control the victim's pain and escape from pain and interpretation of pain, but they do not want the victim to understand clearly who is actually inflicting the pain. The victim comes to believe that s/he is simultaneously special and worthless; is causing the pain and sexual violence; wants the pain and sexual violence; has forgotten the pain and violence and who caused it; should be ashamed of what s/he has done; is a liar who makes up stories to get attention or to get others in trouble; is victimizing the perpetrator by having rebellious thoughts or actions and should therefore feel guilty; is voluntarily one with the will and mind of the perpetrator; has false memories of abuse instead of false memories of nonabuse; is evil, whereas the perpetrator is good; is not believable, whereas the perpetrator is; and so on.

Gender Conditioning.

> The more messages males get from the culture that female children enjoy sex with adults, and/or that they deserve it because they are inferior creatures, and/or that they are not really human, the more men's internal inhibitions will be undermined. (Russell, 1996, p 182)

Social conditioning to gender roles and values lies beneath all theories of perpetrator-motivation. Indeed, the preponderance of perpetrators (particularly those who prey upon women and children) are men.[28] Russell and Finkelhor (1984) and Russell (1996) argue that patriarchial societies' sex-role socialization practices contribute to males' willingness to abuse females in general and children in particular, including

Elevating and emphasizing development of masculine qualities like dominance, fearlessness, competitiveness, toughness, and so on, that make way for predatory sexuality;

Encouraging males to split off feelings of tenderness and respect from sexual desire, allowing for their treatment of women (and children) as objects to conquer and control;

Endorsing hypersexuality as proof of virility, such that males may define all affectionate contact as sexual;

Identifying as preferred partners for men those who are younger, smaller, weaker, more innocent, vulnerable, dependent, all of which qualities are highly compatible with sexual interest in children;

Teaching men to take the initiative in sexual situations, to perceive resistance as a cover for sexual desire, and to overcome it, habituating them to coercive sexuality (Briere, Smiljanich, and Henschel [1994] refer to this as conditioning associations between sexual arousal and subjugation);

Conferring economic power on males, which reinforces their feelings of superiority and entitlement and serves to insulate them against punishment;

Exposing men to pornography, which may undermine their inhibitions and strengthen pedophilic and sadistic desires in those who already have them and arouse responses in those who do not through the laws of social learning;

Eroticizing children (particularly girls) in the media, again reinforcing emergent patterns of desire or disinhibiting some men from acting on them; and

Institutionalizing in the legal and law enforcement systems the prevailing social skepticism that men will only rarely be held accountable for incestuous abuse (Russell, 1996).

According to Melamuth, Heavey, and Linz (1996), sexual aggressors are most likely to score relatively high on measures of hostile masculinity and impersonal sexual orientation, which correspond to power and sexual motivations. They conclude that those factors in conjunction with opportunity-predictor variables can explain and predict the acting out of sexual aggression; their work demonstrates that sexual aggression may be expressed in behavior and underlying characterological patterns that are not overtly aggressive, and that sexually aggressive behavior should not be considered an isolated response but rather a way of conducting social relationships, particularly with women, and dealing with conflicts. Lisak, Hopper, and Song (1996), also addressing the convergence of gender and perpetration, document a combination of gender rigidity and emotional constriction in male perpetrators as compared with nonperpetrators.

THE WEB OF PERPETRATION

The perpetration of violence, torture, and sexual abuse of children is a multilayered, complex phenomenon, always involving the complicity and silence of many nonoffending adults (see Chapter 3). While some professionals have continued to explore the patterns and psychodynamics of child sexual abusers, some social critics like Kincaid (1998) are concerned that excessive emphasis on sexual abuse and sex predators will make innocent people (men) fearful of bathing or photographing their naked children, in addition to distracting from more important social issues and further reinforcing the sexualization of children. He encourages us to "stop looking for monsters and their victims. If we look, we'll find them. If we don't we won't," and concludes that "Such activity . . . really is a fraud, making all of us pay heavily for nothing" (p. 285). Others, like Jenkins (1998), contend that our notion of the sexual predator or sex offender is (merely) a socially constructed concept and that as such it changes with the causes, panics, and moral anxieties of each passing decade.

To date, our knowledge of child abusers derives primarily from the very small minority who get caught or come in for treatment. The proposed taxonomy that follows mines the raw material of which victims' often fragmented and variously ambiguous narratives are made, in the belief that the collective experiences of survivors are vital to expanding the scope and texture of our understanding of perpetrators' patterns. Beginning with the least destructive, those patterns are analyzed in ascending order of severity; each succeeding category incorporates the characteristics of the preceding ones.

PARASITIC PERPETRATORS

Least violent and at times nonviolent (viz., Salter's [1995] "grooming" offenders), parasitic perpetrators eroticize and prey upon children's innocence, sweetness, natural sensuality, and purity. If they suffered the traumatic loss of their own innocence in childhood (among other psychological disturbances, and not necessarily through sexual abuse), they may seek reparations through merger with the innocence of their victims; at the same time they enact their own traumatic loss by corrupting children's emerging sexuality, usually under the guise of "special relationships." Parasitic perpetrators wish to avoid harm to their victims at all costs—that is, to preserve the very innocence they feed on; indeed, due to an absence of empathy, they may not believe they are causing any damage whatsoever, and often they get their victims to internalize their beliefs. They may eroticize and exploit the children's spontaneity and mischievousness and may even create fantasied romantic attachments with them to alleviate their own emotional voids and to coerce compliance from needy, lonely victims.

Parasitic perpetrators are highly addicted to having children to molest since without victims they are almost like diabetics without insulin; they become depressed or agitated and, in some cases, disorganized unless they have a steady supply of psychological innocence to self-soothe and to self-regulate. Consequently, they position themselves to have access to prospective victims (e.g., by career choices, by marrying women with children; some commit incest instead). More apt than other types of perpetrators to get caught because they rarely resort to threats of harm or violence to ensure silence, they are also vulnerable to blackmailing and setups by sociopathic types. They may collect child pornography but they rarely traffic in children; if they are addicted to alcohol and drugs, it is only to manage their intermittent guilt and shame. Parasitic perpetrators, unlike others, do see their child-victims as separate from themselves; however, they have obvious boundary difficulties, deficits in empathy, and problems with entitlement. They leave their victims deeply mixed up about love and abuse, affection and sex, innocence and corruption. Abusers in this group are the most likely to benefit from treatment, when, as Salter (1995) indicates, such treatment is directed at teaching them empathy for their victims and correcting their cognitive distortions.

NARCISSISTIC PERPETRATORS

These abusers are defined primarily by their lack of self-other differentiation and their tendency to enact their own self-hatred and primitive grandiosity through molestation, shaming, humiliation, hate, or vicious acts on children. Externalizers par excellence, narcissistic perpetrators are threatened by any demonstration of their victims' independence, so they can become enraged and punitive in the face of evidence of autonomy or separateness; protests or struggles against the abuse, particularly indicative of just such separateness, are quick to incite further cruelty. They are most interested in exploiting the children's innocence and availability as receptacles for their own toxicity, fear, and projected emotional pain. Children's natural mischievousness and spontaneity stir their envy and intense anger in connection with their unconscious recognition of their own limitations and their corresponding psychic scarring; many mothers who sexually and violently abuse their children fit in here (as do Munchausen mothers, who generate medical crises in their children).

The self-hate and masochism of narcissistic perpetrators is often masked behind their cruel treatment of the victims from whom they do not experience themselves as separate. Some, believing they own their children, may sell them into prostitution and pornography in exchange for drugs or money; many patients report having been handed over by their fathers, stepfathers, and so on, to cover their losses at cards. Others raise their children to be the perfect "mistress," sex slave, or puppet, mirroring the perpetrators' omnipotent (e.g., restorative) fantasies and regulating intense needs for power and control. In the most severe circumstances, adults moving in and out of psychotic states of dissolution torment and torture their children by way of establishing some kind of self-cohesion and psychic equilibrium; in the absence of access to children, they may become depressed, disorganized, or overtly psychotic.

Their narcissism may allow this group of perpetrators to avoid detection and to present to the community (or the rest of the family) a completely different façade from the one they show to their children in private; the severely deranged among them may appear eccentric or unusual to the neighbors or relatives, but rarely do people suspect what goes on behind closed doors. Despite their cruelty, they are not driven (as the sadistic offenders are) by the primary desire to do harm. The harm they inflict is, in fact, secondary to their need for externalizing the hatred and pain that threaten to destabilize them psychologically. (This distinction may not matter to victims on the other end of their cruelty and machinations.) If and when they are caught, narcissistic perpetrators are likely to deny their actions or the impact of their actions, blaming everything on their victims and manipulating the victims' belief and perceptual systems even into adulthood. Left with intense shame, self-hatred, and deep feelings of unworthiness, victims of these perpetrators find themselves unlovable unless they are abused; fearing any kind of dependency, they may grow up to disparage their own vulnerability, and may even engage others in perpetuating their residual core confusions between love and hate, feelings and actions, loyalty and self-destructiveness. Survivors of this type of perpetration develop unusual fears and behavior patterns regarding feelings of anger, aggression, and hate.

PROGRAMMED PERPETRATORS

Survivors of organized child abuse often fall into this category of highly dissociative individuals whose drive to commit sexual or violent acts against children is a function of training and largely an artifact of their histories, which latter they may or may not recall or reveal for some time in treatment, even as they struggle with unconscious guilt and shame for what they feel they have done. For the most part, they do not make reenacting their abuse on children a habit or even a pattern; desperation to avoid intimacy (i.e., to avoid exposing themselves to others, and to themselves) can cause them to behave extremely inconsistently and hurtfully in their adult relationships, however. Their guilt/shame leads to chronic addictions to drugs and alcohol, sexual compulsivity, and suicidality (signaling impulses to both punish themselves for, and prevent themselves from repeating, their crimes).

Vulnerable throughout their lives to the reactivation of their programming—which might even have included training as assassins, depending on the nature of the organization to which they were captive—they tend to be highly self-defeating and self-destructive. Some of their dissociated states of mind or alter personalities may still have implanted belief systems about child abuse that are completely contradictory to the convictions they hold more consciously. Not at all incidentally, they are programmed to have no memory for their "crimes," so they are unable, if caught, to endanger their own perpetrator-programmers.

SPECIFIC-TRAUMA–REENACTING PERPETRATORS

A relatively common kind of perpetrator (when symbolic and concrete reenactment of prior trauma are considered and included in one category), trauma reenactors can be divided into masochistic and sadistic types. All tend to retain conscious beliefs in their own innocence, and their abuse reenactments involve considerable mimicry, imitation, and repetition. Those in the masochistic subgroup are usually highly self-destructive, suicidal, and addicted to drugs; they often engage their child-victims in performing sexual acts (or acts of compliance and obedience) to which they were subjected, and these sometimes include violent acts upon themselves as well. More apt to get caught (and, in fact, to unconsciously set themselves up for suspicion or detection) than their sadistic counterparts and more apt to experience guilt and shame, masochistic reenacting perpetrators are not necessarily moved to cause pain or suffering; rather, they play out the boundary violation, exploitation, and seduction/betrayal aspects of child abuse trauma. In most cases, this subgroup can more accurately be located in this sequence between parasitic and narcissistic perpetrators.

Unlike masochistic reenactors, the sadistic reenactors enjoy having control over others and externalizing pain and suffering. Eroticizing hierarchy (and at times, terror and mortification of the victim), they may be drawn to the military or to authoritarian religious and political movements; professionally, they hold positions of relative power (judge, lawyer, doctor, police officer, etc.). They are likely to seek opportunities to enter trance states from which to enact sadistic violence on children in order to release the accumulating tension generated by their own split-off traumatic affects. They are cunning and rarely ever caught. Their sadism is a lifestyle that has found expression throughout history in politically oppressive regimes. They may be among the consumers of sadistic child pornography and snuff films. As a group they are vulnerable to influence by more seriously disturbed perpetrators described below and may devolve into more malignant varieties.

"CEO" PERPETRATORS
(VICARIOUS, CULTURALLY SANCTIONED)

Interested in power and money, like high-level pimps, and not necessarily in violating children, these profiteers are products of both our societal and criminal hierarchies; they play an abuse-supporting rather than an abuse-enacting role. They may be in economic, religious, and political positions of power, and their exploitation of subordinates—particularly women—dovetails so smoothly with cultural norms as to mask their destructive impulses. Or they may be underground cartel leaders, sociopathic CEOs, whose organizations directly and indirectly support and profit from organized child abuse—or they may hold government or law enforcement positions where they take money from others in order to guarantee noninterference in criminal activities. What they want is power, and accordingly they are involved both in blackmailing actual child abusers and coordinating related "delivery" services; they may also traffic in arms and in drugs.

Mind-Control Perpetrators

Highly sadistic and utterly callous, these perpetrators are interested in the conquest of the human mind and in maintaining complete control over individuals and groups (sometimes nations), and also in economic exploitation—that is, not just in inflicting harm. They often have leadership roles in cults or mainstream religions, military intelligence, or underground criminal groups. Early incarnations of this species could be found in the more perverse elements of the Church's colonization of the indigenous people of the Americas, who combined religious indoctrination with slavery and sexual exploitation to exercise complete psychological, spiritual, and economic dominion over vast numbers of people; more recent versions surface in documented accounts of CIA mind-control projects (Weinstein, 1990; Bowart, 1978; 1994).

A highly educated segment of the perpetrator population, they have access to mind-control technology and cold, scientific attitudes toward human beings, using children like laboratory rats for medical and psychological experiments in shaping and managing dissociative response patterns. They leave victims feeling completely dehumanized, psychologically and spiritually raped, desolate, and with absolutely no sense of free will or agency. Often employed by highly secretive subgroups hidden in mainstream organizations, they are almost never caught; indeed, their existence is largely ignored, denied, or disbelieved.

Ritual-Abuse Perpetrators

Not only are these offenders highly sadistic but their brutality is also often combined with complex religious and superstitious beliefs. Their sexual abuse of children reflects extreme power and control themes and enactments. Moreover, they have eroticized, and become highly addicted to, combinations of sex and death (in fantasy and reality), and various forms of extreme mortification of children. If they come from families where perverse belief systems were passed down intergenerationally, they may be highly dissociative and able to successfully lead double lives.

Their primary imperative is the corruption and destruction of children's innocence and purity, expressed in human and animal sacrifice and dismemberment, enacted in order to obtain power. They seek to sever the victims' internal relationship with their own sense of core goodness and their relationship to hope, faith, and belief in a benevolent, redemptive deity. Their interest in conquest resembles that of mind-control perpetrators—and many ritual abusers do, in fact, engage in brainwashing and thought reform—but their goals are predominantly religious and spiritual; both economic and psychological opportunism are secondary. Also involved in the snuff-film industry and in blackmailing less sophisticated child abusers into committing more heinous crimes, they concretize fantasies of conquering God and evidence a raw, unmodulated hunger for power and dominion over their entire environment. They have a paradoxical relationship with hierarchy, debasing culturally and institutionally sanctioned models, on the one hand, and eroticizing extreme patriarchal and demonic variations on the other.

Having experienced the extremes of hatred during their own childhoods, they have committed themselves quite consciously to lifestyles of destruction and contemptuous mockery of cultural norms and mainstream religious traditions. Hence they are highly retaliatory, and leave their victims in abject devastation, indoctrinated with hateful, fear-based ideologies and phobic of (or contemptuous of and/or enraged at) mainstream religious traditions. Higher-level ritual abusers are not primarily dissociative, but rather consciously malevolent, essentially warped at their core, cunning, and rarely if ever caught. They exhibit such extreme psychological malformation that our current classification system for psychiatric disorders cannot explain much of their behavior: they appear to be so profoundly spiritually wounded that no category can contain them. Unlike the pure sadists, some of these individuals can move comfortably and without detection among various social milieus—between the "day world" that they so contemptuously mock, and the "night world" where they feel they really belong (and where they believe they rule). Their existence is currently denied by most mental health and law enforcement professionals.

PURE SADISTIC PERPETRATORS

The primary distinction here is the unmitigated intent to harm—the demonstration of unbridled sadism, independent of revenge or retaliation or, most important, ideology or doctrine. Driven by the pure joy of doing harm, sadistic perpetrators are not interested in corrupting children as much as they are in torture and the abject destruction of innocence. Their lust to destroy, like the disturbances of ritual abusers, defies psychological explanation. Their violence takes the form of sexual torture because that targets the greatest vulnerability in and elicits the most power over their victims. Addicted to sex-death enactments, sadistic perpetrators are often involved in the snuff-film industry, dismemberment rituals, and intermittent human sacrifice. They often become highly dependent on or addicted to opiates, amphetamines, tranquilizers, and/or other mood-altering substances to sustain their fragile psychic equilibrium in between sprees of destruction.

The Third Reich (among other fascistic movements of the past century from South Africa to Guatemala) permitted many such individuals to rise to positions of prominence. Giving new meaning to the concepts of hate, greed, and envy as they devour all life forms in their path, they desire to dominate others at the very deepest fathoms. They are consciously and willfully parasitic and must feed off the pain and suffering of other human beings—mostly children—in order to sustain their own psychological survival. No single organized group can accommodate too many of these highly feared (and sometimes revered) individuals; they simply do not and cannot share power. Unable to move around fluidly, they usually live in some controlled habitat or restricted-access environment, and often require drugs to maintain their psychological equilibrium.

MEGALOMANIACAL PERPETRATORS

These are the ultra-perpetrators, a rare breed that combines the sadism, power needs, complete lack of conscience, and extreme psychopathy of all the others—with the added dimension of social acceptability. Unlike the pure sadist who cannot be out in the world for any length of time in a conspicuous or public role, the megalomaniacal perpetrator (e.g., Hitler, Mengele, Saddam Hussein, Papa Doc and Baby Doc Duvalier, Pol Pot) can function in diverse social settings and move easily between conventional and criminal worlds. But like the pure sadist he is committed to wreaking havoc and inflicting harm, taking pleasure in extreme forms of power and domination over others. Unhampered by the pure sadist's limitations, the megalomaniacal perpetrator is able to split off from his overtly destructive aspects, gain social approval, and function successfully for long periods of time in the normal culture—especially if the social and political conditions are conducive. The ultimate cult or cartel leaders, megalomaniacal perpetrators are evil incarnate, and their extensive networks almost always engage in the wholesale exploitation, abuse, and slaughter of children on a vast scale.

KNOWING AND NOT KNOWING

What makes people (mostly men) abuse children? We can develop theories based on economics, psychodynamics, PTSD, reenactment, gender, spiritual deficits, addiction, and chemical dependency models. We can conjecture. However, for all of our scientific advances we do not fully understand this disturbed side of humanity or our collective role in producing thousands, perhaps hundreds of thousands, of sex offenders and child-abuse perpetrators. The analysis of perpetrator dynamics clearly reaches the limits of psychology's ability to explain human behavior; in fact, we have no precise nomenclature to describe many of those who abuse children. What is clearly needed, alongside an integrated approach to understanding them is an equally sophisticated multidisciplinary approach to the problem of collusion, individual and cultural, in the social facilitation of child abuse.

The exploitation of children's dependency, emotional vulnerability, and nascent sexuality as organizing principles for stabilizing disturbed psyches and dysfunctional families, or as a "cash crop" in the criminal subcultures of Western industrialized and third world nations, mirrors the profound greed and indifference of a society endowed with the resources to reverse it. Because our own constructs of sexuality are destructive and revolve around shame, guilt, misogyny, fear of the body, and, most important, the eroticization of hierarchy, they manifest themselves accordingly in the objectification of women, the sexualization of, and violence against, children, in denial and dissociation about the effects and meaning thereof, and, finally, in assaults on those who bring the bad news. We cannot look forward to an end to the child-abuse epidemic until we see a transformation in society from glorification of hierarchy and domination (lip service to human rights notwithstanding) to authentic commitment to social justice and the mental health and well-being of all citizens.

CHAPTER 3

Child Abuse and Cultural Ambivalence: Complicity, Incredulity, and Denial

Our culture has enthusiastically sexualized the child while denying just as enthusiastically that it was doing any such thing.

—James R. Kincaid

Child abusers, like others who commit crimes against humanity, rely on the convenient incredulity of the rest of us—on our incapacity to imagine the darker regions of human possibility, or our desire to disavow them, or both.

BARRIERS TO RECOGNITION OF DISSOCIATIVE DISORDERS

Public and professionals alike resist the idea that abused children develop real symptoms like multiple personality disorder: in the face of incomprehensible evidence of bizarre sexual abuse, sadism, and torture of children it is easier to blame and diagnose the victim than to confront (much less empathize with) the adult who has abused the child (Miller, 1984). One of the toughest challenges in treating trauma and dissociation is to integrate what we know (and don't know but can imagine) about both traumatic realities and intrapsychic fantasy. The landscape of trauma / DID treatment is a minefield of clinical recognition errors on both sides of the reality / fantasy fence where posttraumatic states and traumas are misconstrued as unconscious fantasy, and concretizations of fantasies are remembered as traumatic events.[1]

Relational psychoanalysis makes room for ideas about multiple self-organizations, the actual influence of real interpersonal events, and the dynamic interplay of psychic structures along with (and often theoretically more important than) classical notions of hierarchical renderings of conscious and unconscious mind. From this viewpoint, in other words, psychic structure is figured in terms of associative-dissociative processes; the common appearance of dissociative states in the course of intensive psychotherapy in general and in work with survivors of severe trauma in particular should not be the least bit surprising (Davies, 1996a).

At the crossroads of trauma theory and relational psychoanalysis there is a transitional theoretical space for understanding the panoply of dissociative voices emanating from the psyches of the severely traumatized. When the therapist learns to recognize and speak the often paradoxical language of multiplicity (for example, regarding alter personalities as both subjectively real and objectively illusory / delusional; regarding psychic material as both symbolic and posttraumatic), the clinician can enter a transitional space (Winnicott, 1969) where the traumatized patient's world becomes manifest, articulated, and knowable. In this milieu of transitional experiencing, theoretical absolutes and ideological autocracy about what is and isn't real or fantasy are simply impractical.

The elliptical idiom of multiplicity has blocked the appropriate recognition and legitimization of severe dissociative conditions, partly because of a historic unfamiliarity with the phenomenology of posttraumatic states in the helping professions and the mass media alike, and partly because of the complexity and magnitude of the symptoms of severely dissociative patients, their difficulties with close relationships, and their easily misunderstood character pathology. Indeed, DID patients are particularly vulnerable to misdiagnosis and to becoming revictimized by therapists and other mental health caregivers (Herman, 1992; Putnam, 1989; Ross, 1997).[2] In addition, skeptics misunderstand and misrepresent the dynamics of entitlement among DID patients as part of a cultural dissociation process that not only marginalizes and dismisses them but also—by ridiculing and pathologizing their survival strategies and isolating the effects of victimization from the cause—subjects them to a kind of collective revictimization.

This severely traumatized population has been noted to be among the most frequently involved in sexual boundary violations by therapists (Smith, 1984; Van der Kolk, 1989; Hedges, 1994; Salter, 1995). Further, and for a variety of reasons including unconscious reenactment and secondary gain, some severely dissociative patients are convinced to display their bizarre symptoms and unusual histories on television in a perverse circus atmosphere that does little to educate an already confused and overstimulated public. Survivors of sexual abuse, socialized to comply with the irrational demands of authority figures in exchange for nurturance, care, and protection, may not question the behavior of an exploitative therapist or media investigator (Pope and Brown, 1996). The average DID patient spends six to seven years in the mental health system diagnosed with schizophrenia, depression, bipolar disorder, borderline personality disorder, even premenstrual syndrome (Carlson et al., 1993; Kluft, 1987a; Putnam et al., 1986).

MIXED MESSAGES FROM THE MENTAL HEALTH PROFESSIONS

Dissociative identity disorder is so controversial in part because of disagreement about its etiology; from there follows disagreement about its status as a legitimate psychiatric diagnosis, about its treatment, and about its relationship with other disorders (Ross, 1997). The most recent schisms in the field reflect fascination with the question of whether increased diagnosis of dissociative pathologies echoes a change in the epidemiological prevalence of such disorders, overdue public acknowledgment of what has always lived secretly among us, or the iatrogenic suggestions of the psychotherapy professionals gone astray (Davies, 1996a).[3]

Specialists who have continued to explore the phenomenon of DID and its posttraumatic origins are accused by hostile colleagues of gullibility, incompetence, misdiagnosis, overdiagnosis, and faddish preoccupations (Ross and Gahan, 1988; Kluft, 1994), of using contorted logic and contradictory definitions, and of engaging with their patients in a "hoax" or a "tango of suggestion" (Piper, 1997, p. 53).[4] Multiple personality disorder has been deemed an iatrogenic creation (Merskey, 1992; Fahy, 1988), the cocreation of patient and naïve therapist (Victor, 1975), a product of social learning and role playing (Spanos, 1994), an outgrowth of patient compliance with therapist countertransference enthusiasm and feminist agendas (Ofshe and Watters, 1994; Loftus and Ketcham, 1994), a consequence of the concretization of the patient's inchoate psychic states or therapist's avoidance of painful or primitive transferences (Ganaway, 1994; Hedges, 1994), a result of masterful malingering, or a borderline psychopathology run amok.

Goodwin and Sachs (1996) respectfully attribute some of the skepticism with which severely dissociative patients' narratives are received to doubts about the trustworthiness of reconstructed memory, subject as it is to distortion and to contamination by fantasy and imaginal processes, exaggeration, cognitive confusion, erotic transference, drugs and hypnosis, and the conscious and unconscious masking of other trauma. But responsible clinicians must not be seduced into *dis*belief by those vicissitudes of memory, must not look away from the repugnant by dismissing it as implausible, must not back away from witnessing the histories even of those whose chronic exposure to extreme trauma generates alternating revelations and recantations and erratic symptomatologies.

Perlman (1999) reports how the experience of treating heroin addicts who prostituted their children for drug money reminded him that accounts of the misuse of children in profitable organized sex rings and the torture and brainwashing of children in sadistic ritual-abuse groups were not at all deniable. McWilliams (1994) points out that we already have plenty of evidence for the existence of malevolent subcultures that

> operate like factories for dissociation. . . . For every destructive cult that has been identified—the most notorious of recent years being David Koresh's Branch Davidians—there may be several that operate in complete secrecy. In an era that has seen the crimes of the Nazis, the Ku Klux Klan, the Mafia, and more isolated groups like the Manson family, we cannot afford to ignore any evidence that evil is being propagated in organized ways. (p. 326)

Greaves and Faust's (1996) conclusion supports keeping a wide-open mind:

> Every hypothesis and observation about child sexual abuse is partially true: (1) It actually happens; (2) It is overreported; (3) It is underreported; (4) It is exaggerated in importance; (5) It is diminished in importance; (6) It is lied about; (7) It is covered up; (8) It is denied altogether. (pp. 596–597)

And McWilliams (1994) wisely champions a nonideological clinical stance:

> I recommend that whatever the reader's bias, he or she try to comprehend the phenomenon of dissociation with an "experience-near" sensibility; that is, from the standpoint of empathy with the internal experience of the person who feels and behaves like a composite of many different selves. (p. 328)

The violation of children in both the family[5] and the culture can be conceptualized as a continuum beginning with benign neglect and mild narcissistic appropriation and extending through malignant narcissistic misuse and physical abuse, severe and willful neglect, emotional abuse, abandonment, and betrayal, to outright exploitation—the selling, humiliating, and trafficking in children; the sexual, fetishistic use of children; sadistic abuse, ritual abuse, human laboratory experimentation, torture, sacrifice, and sexualized murder for the snuff-film industry. The depth of the severe dissociative disorders calls attention to how victims internalize violent belief systems and relationships with disturbed caretakers, to their patterns of identification with aggressors and collaborators, and to the insidious exercise of mind control. The extreme alterations imposed on normal psychological and physiological processes by exposure to chronic violence, neglect, and terrorization, must not be underestimated.[6]

LOCATING DID IN DIAGNOSTIC SPACE

First reported almost four centuries ago (Bliss, 1986), multiple personality disorder was resurrected with the rediscovery of dissociative conditions in the mid-1970s by a few trailblazing pioneers (such as Wilbur, Caul, Greaves, Bliss, Allison, Kluft, Braun), who shifted paradigms and found new ways to listen to their patients instead of boxing them into rigid, preexisting rigid categories (Fine, 1996). Pronouncement of MPD/DID continues to elicit reactions from fascination, concern, and outrage, to incredulity, and to evoke sharp attacks on those who suffer from it as well as on those who treat it (Kluft, 1995).

Despite the ambivalence attending its reception, DID is solidly in the mainstream of American psychology and psychiatry[7] (Kluft, 1996a). In the professional literature, DID has had many names: multiplex personality, double existence, dual personality, double personality, plural personality, dissociated personality, multiple personality, split personality, and multiple personality disorder (Brenner, 1996). Kluft (1996a) notes that the reified term "personality" has long been a problematic one. The name was changed from multiple personality disorder to dissociative identity disorder in an attempt to circumvent the argument that the disorder cannot be real because it is not possible to have more than one personality (Ross, 1995b).[8] *Dissociative identity disorder* deemphasizes the notion of proliferating personalities and highlights the patient's inability to integrate various aspects of identity, memory, and consciousness (Cardena and Spiegel, 1996). But clearly, as Brenner (1996) states, the condition is experiencing an identity crisis of its own.

DID seems most functionally associated with Herman's (1993) Complex PTSD and Herman's (1992; 1993) and Van der Kolk and Fisler's (1995) proposed DESNOS (Disorders of Extreme Stress Not Otherwise Specified). The first model integrates complex and unusual variations of PTSD with specific characterological and relational patterns, including the development of identity-formation paradigms under conditions of domination and subjugation, and vulnerability to repeated harm and revictimization. DESNOS can account for the sequelae to prolonged victimization and repetitive trauma in captivity under conditions of terror, torture, and strong perpetrator-attachment bonds, all characteristic of DID. Classification based on severe and unusual posttraumatic etiology would institutionalize a coherent diagnostic vision for reparative clinical, political, and social decision-making; moreover, because it emphasizes unequivocally the role of the social context, such a schema depathologizes responses to extreme violence and trauma. The unusual, perplexing, and often provocative characterological features of DID would be understood to be secondary to the traumatic interpersonal and dysfunctional cultural environments that nourish them.

Unfortunately, the validation of posttraumatic foundations of DID and its rightful locus in the *Diagnostic and Statistical Manual* is a politically charged and controversial one, as are most correlates of trauma, dissociation, and multiplicity. The evidence adduced here supports the linkage of dissociative and posttraumatic stress disorders (see Pitman, 1993; Brett, 1993) with DESNOS, and the establishment of DESNOS as a diagnostic syndrome distinct from, if overlapping with, PTSD and dissociative disorders.

PUBLIC AND PROFESSIONAL REACTIONS TO DID PATIENTS' ALLEGATIONS OF RITUAL ABUSE

Nowhere is the polarization around child abuse, dissociation, and MPD/DID more extreme than in the debates about sadistic ritual abuse and organized evil, where there seems to be no middle ground (Charles, 1995). It is generally agreed that a good part of the polarization arises simply because of the extreme nature of the allegations involved in ritual abuse, which are startling, disturbing, and quite difficult for most people to believe or even comprehend unless they have a very good grasp of the dark side of human history (see Newton, 1996, for example, for a review of the history of human sacrifice). And it is generally recognized that some patients confabulate, or pick up material from other patients and the media, or willfully lie, and that some patients demonstrate primary process thinking and incorporate satanism or ritual abuse into their manifest delusional systems; always, there are likely to be elements of idiosyncratic distortion (Sakheim, 1996). And always in the patient population there will be those who are confused, delusional (or cultivating primitive transferences), suggestible, and extrinsically influenced, those who are malingering, elaborating for secondary gain, and camouflaging other trauma—along with those who have indeed experienced the extreme brutality and dehumanization that is sadistic child abuse.[9]

While Lanning (1992), for one, counters reports of organized sexual abuse with the fact that the FBI has not found evidence to support them, rejoinders by Noblitt and Perskin (1995) and Newton (1996) remind us that—given J. Edgar Hoover's record (of denying the existence of organized crime and suppressing evidence of Ku Klux Klan terrorism, for example)—that comment says more about the FBI than it does about child abuse. Ross (1995a), however, recommends separating the forensic and clinical issues altogether, espousing an approach that transcends the debate over whether ritual abuse is real or not and focuses on treating the patient. For Ross, neither believing nor disbelieving is the appropriate clinical strategy. And either extreme can lead to retraumatization.

While this middle ground is an important fundamental posture, psychoanalytically oriented therapists working intersubjectively or relationally cannot hide in the safe cognitive-behavioral crucible; they will have to enter the fray with their patients and confront the questions of belief, denial, incredulity, and confusion. In both their own private reveries and what they share of their countertransference experiences toward making interventions and interpretations, such clinicians will acknowledge and struggle to balance their willingness to believe with their desires to look away and deny. Discussing feelings and deconstructing doubts and fears free of absolutes promises not just the eventual reconstruction of elusive history but also transformation: the process will subvert authoritarian paradigms of coercive control—domination and silencing—and help the patient find his/her own voice and, regardless of how the facts turn out, a new and reparative relationship experience.

While acknowledging that incompetent therapists exist, that people are open to suggestion and influence, that memory is fallible, and that some individuals would rather believe they were victimized by a cult than by a beloved parent, it is still impossible to rule out the existence of organized, economically and psychospiritually motivated criminal behavior by groups of exploitative adults and sadists. Aside from the fact that the subject of ritual abuse is exceedingly controversial, our information being largely supplied by survivors whose testimonies have become increasingly marginalized by the onslaught of the false memory movement, we must, as Waites (1993) points out, balance what we know about the psychology of rumor with what we know about the psychology of denial.

> We recoil from what our preconscious perceptions tell us is happening. We reassure ourselves that such things only happen in fantasy. We hope for the best. We don't allow ourselves to ask too many questions. We get irritated when someone reminds us that there may be a problem. We wonder if they are trying to call attention to themselves or sensationalizing or are morally rigid and trying to get someone else in trouble. (Goodwin, 1994, p. 480)

As Goodwin points out, human beings are always hoping for evidence that things aren't as bad as we have suspected. Consequently, the most extreme cases are the least credible. That is, while child abuse is almost never admitted by perpetrators, victims' allegations (or even some admissions of severe child abuse) are almost never believed (Goodwin, 1994).

Yet it is unlikely indeed that the organized child pornography/prostitution industries are completely monitored by our law enforcement systems; it is also unlikely indeed that all the organized child abuse alleged by thousands of patients to thousands of therapists in this and other countries is fabricated or confabulated. Our legal and child protection systems have a long way to go before clinicians can dismiss the collective accounts of multiple perpetrator abuse and networks of child trafficking.[10]

The battle over the criminological evidence of ritual abuse may be obscuring a more basic reality: there is something fundamentally flawed in our society's ability to protect children from intra-and extrafamilial abusers. In the years to come, as denial recedes and tolerance for knowing about atrocities increases, more evidence is likely to surface about the widespread sexual abuse and sale of children. The bulk of the evidence will probably always be buried in the psyches of victims, however, and for the perpetrators, there is no better place to hide their crimes. As Nachmani (1995) reminds us, being a victim often means having no witnesses, having no capacity to witness, and having no narrative.

COLLABORATION, COMPLICITY, AND COLLUSION[11]

> In 1909, it was estimated that gonorrheal infections afflicted from eight hundred to one thousand girls in Baltimore alone. . . . Chicago's county hospital maintained a ward for children with venereal diseases, "one of the most pathetic sights" in the city, which over a twenty-seven month period was used by six hundred youngsters under twelve years of age. . . . In 1915, in a case study of sixty-six little girls diagnosed at the St. Louis clinic, researchers briefly considered the idea that infection might be spread by rape or sexual assault. . . . Lacking other hypotheses, the writers of the article traced the contagion to badly designed toilet seats. (Jenkins, 1998, p. 31)

Collaboration takes overlapping forms in abusive family, mental health, and social systems: simple ignorance; selective inattention; turning a deaf ear to the protests of victims; not confronting explicit acts of domination and perpetration; denying the extent, the intent, the consequences, or the meaning of various abusive behaviors toward children; ignoring the connections among pornography, prostitution, and child abuse; ignoring or distorting statistical data on child abuse; unquestioning identification with the existing family or societal institutions, arrangements, or customs; publicly declaring an accused perpetrator innocent when aware of his/her guilt consciously or unconsciously; producing or supporting extremely biased television documentaries on child abuse, DID, or psychotherapy; allowing one's children to be used sexually by family members; spuriously generalizing about children's suggestibility, memory problems, or tendencies to lie in order to discredit them; diagnosing and pathologizing the sequelae of abuse without linking them to the external events that precipitated the need for extreme psychological adaptations; valuing personal anxiety reduction above all other ethical or moral principles; punishing children for revealing sex crimes; failing to adequately investigate child abuse charges; selling or handing over one's child directly for abuse; exploiting the abuse of others for psychological, spiritual, or economic gratification; blaming the victim and minimizing (or contemptuously mocking the extent or continuation of) his/her pain; refusing to invest in or to orchestrate reparation processes; pressuring victims to give premature forgiveness to their perpetrators; and supporting elaborate coverups or strategic manipulation of appearances for the sake of avoiding criminal prosecution.

All of these patterns characterize severely dissociative patients as well as members of abusive family systems and our society as a whole. From this point of view, as well as from a feminist perspective, the problem of child-abuse trauma and perpetration cannot be located in the individual alone, but must simultaneously be located in the social, power, economic, and gender arrangements of the dominant culture. Any analysis of child abuse that focuses solely on the perpetrator and not on the colluding systems runs the risk of perpetuating a kind of collective dissociative consciousness where parts of a whole are separated and treated with unequal attention. Talking about child-abuse victimization without simultaneously discussing collusion is like believing that Holocausts happen because a few powerful individuals make them happen. The malignant creativity of many child abusers may involve elaborately playing on the naïveté, denial, and incredulity of society, but the ready availability of such a willing and cooperative audience meets them halfway.

THE MATRIX OF COMPLICITY: A CLASSIFICATION SYSTEM FOR COLLABORATORS IN CHILD ABUSE

> The diabolic is an arena of disorientation and confusion in which truth is lost, becoming unrecognizable even when seen. This arena is the perpetrator's cloak of invisibility, the evacuation of the victim's mind, the bystander's refusal to acknowledge sin. . . . In this obfuscation of truth, evil eludes accountability and justice. Secrecy, concealment, denial, ambiguity, confusion: these are Satan's fellow travelers, requiring elaborate interpersonal and intrapsychic collusion be-

> tween perpetrators and bystanders. The operations of silence potentiate evil and remove all impediments from its path. (Grand, 2000, pp. 10–11)

Collaborators come in many forms, ranging from true innocence and ignorance to opportunism and an educated and fully aware cooperation with the perpetrator. This list is formulated in order of increasing *conscious* awareness and interaction with the perpetrator.

Innocent Collaborators. Innocent collaboration exists everywhere. We all participate. We watch the news and hear of atrocities from child abuse to war, and—in our innocence, ignorance, or inexperience—we choose to disbelieve or discount them. Near universal denial, facilitated by mass emotional withdrawal and intellectual dismissiveness, ensues; the victims, thus abandoned, are revictimized by the larger group, whose collective attention could stop such crimes and whose inattention (disregard, disbelief) constitutes at least passive cooperation with the perpetrators—unintentional collaboration. In our innocent denial, we become part of the problem.

Innocence can be deadly. For many patients over the years, the misdiagnoses arising from innocent collaboration by dedicated professionals biased toward regarding claims of abuse as fantasy led to the administration of shock treatments and improper medications, to prolonged hospitalizations, even to suicide. Institutionalized silencing and subjugation have pernicious consequences for dissociative patients isolated in states of traumatic bonding and captivity to perpetrators. Wholesale failures to validate their past and current experiences not only drive the survivors further underground but actually reinforce everything the perpetrators ever told them would happen if and when help was sought.

"Switched-off" (i.e., Unwittingly Permissive) Innocent Collaborators. Characterized by a mix of vague awareness that something is wrong and specific ignorance born of a kind of ingenuous or preoccupied lack of imagination, this subset of innocents cannot conceive of what that something might be. They are enablers.

For example, a divorced mother may notice that little Jimmy has become depressed, even morose. She observes the bruises on one of his wrists after his uncle took him to the park and assumes he got them while playing. She works long days and she does not stop to connect the recent changes in her son's behavior with anything beyond the changes that came with the end of her marriage two years ago. Even as Jimmy becomes quieter and moodier and she does start to think about ways to cheer him up, she *literally* cannot imagine any cause but the divorce, having no life experience from which to draw a different conclusion; she opens dialogues with her son, but he cannot seem to tell her what is wrong. Tired and overwhelmed, she accepts with relief when her ex-husband's brother offers to help. Unconsciously, she opts out of the problem, and, unknowingly, she sends Jimmy off for the day with the very source of it, the uncle who is sexually abusing him.

In such unwitting collaborations, the evidence is there but the ignorant, unreflective individual lacks the wherewithal to recognize, much less stop, the violation or the perpetrator. Teachers, clergy, and medical and mental health professionals who overlook certain symptoms and patterns or fail to pursue the veiled comments of children or patients similarly cannot conceive of the dilemmas of abuse victims and/or choose to banish their own anxiety about the unknown.

Narcissistic Innocent Collaborators. Narcissistic innocent collaboration is not uninformed. It is distinguished by an element of gain that supports the individual's pathological narcissism.

- A news reporter may have a vested interest in disbelieving a child-abuse story if disproving the allegations would advance his career. He might choose to pursue only leads that would validate his cause and to disregard or dissociate information inconsistent with it.
- A male judge may directly or indirectly discourage or disallow children's testimony against their fathers in custody disputes or women's delayed-recall testimony against their fathers. Although he is technically innocent, his resistance to accusations against men may lead him to believe only the expert witness who confirms that the legal system treats men unfairly. As a consequence, he could unintentionally remand a child to the custody of an abusive parent and/or authorize the release of a perpetrator instead of punishment.
- An academic might make the opportunistic decision to omit from her dissertation medical reports citing scarring on children's genitals because they conflict with her hypothesis that child abuse does not exist.
- A mental health professional whose ideological allegiances or defensive biases run counter to the trauma-based conception of pathology

> may persist in negating the reality of severe dissociative disorders, traumatic memory, or organized child abuse, or the extent and damage of child sexual exploitation. When faced with a highly dissociative patient who presents with intimacy problems, addictions, and various cover stories, such a clinician may never adequately assess, inquire, or consult and may subtly quash the patient's efforts to bring his/her sequestered, traumatized subjectivity to the foreground by reinforcing behaviors and reflections consistent with a more optimistic view. Survivors of extreme childhood abuse, accustomed to self-sacrifice and to praise or pseudo-acceptance for participating in conscious and unconscious compliance and collusion, may for a time feel quite at home with this kind of arrangement.

Narcissistic collaborators are "innocent" because they mostly believe in the opinions they advocate; they cannot see the extent of the harm they do because they also cannot see the existence of a problem or their tacitly complicitous roles. Nevertheless, their reverse-witnessing not only abandons the victims of child abuse to their atrocities but also damages their hopes of recovery. These opportunists use the current controversies around trauma, memory, and dissociation for their own gain and in the process collaborate with perpetrators who count on such voices to protect them; because they are often respected and well known, they are often heard over the victims themselves.

While one perpetrator may molest dozens of boys in his lifetime, the written word of one narcissistic innocent can convince hundreds of thousands of people to believe that perpetrators do not exist, to ignore the call of abused children and adults, or to denounce those who work with trauma survivors; thus, they can leave legions of other children vulnerable to perpetration.

Dissociative Denial Collaborators. Unlike those whose denial is born of ignorance, these collaborators do have awareness or knowledge of heinous acts.

For instance, a mother may notice her seven-year-old daughter's unusual ability to describe sexual acts and highly sexualized behavior, and, as time goes on, she may also observe mood changes and chronic fatigue. Then, up late one night getting a glass of water, she sees her husband—from whom she has slept separately for the past few years—entering their daughter's bedroom. She hears her daughter cry, but assumes, during that first moment of conscious awareness, that he is disciplining her for some reason, and does not interfere. However, after several replays of the same scene, she knows the truth. Still, she does not act. She cannot act without putting something shameful under public or personal scrutiny. Instead, she chooses to sacrifice her daughter for her own comfort. She begins to create an elaborate internal system of self-deception and denial to support her collaboration, convincing herself that nothing really wrong is happening inside that bedroom every night, or the system of cover stories and confabulations that generate false memories of nonabuse becomes so entrenched that the mother eventually persuades herself there was no way she could have stopped the abuse. Over time, her denial devolves into full-blown dissociation whereby she believes the abuse never took place. In this scenario, the child is not only violated by the perpetrator but also variously abandoned, blamed, sacrificed, and victimized by the collaborator. In extreme (and virulently narcissitic) variations of this type of collaboration, the "nonoffending" parent, in the face of substantial evidence confirming the perpetrator's deeds, will testify against the victim (his/her son or daughter) and may serve as a character witness for the perpetrator in a court of law or on television documentaries; such collaborators may even become leaders in pro–false-memory, or anti-psychotherapy advocacy, groups.

Therapists who have been exposed to training on child abuse, dissociation, and trauma but choose to overlook the signals because doing otherwise might produce psychological discomfort or intimidating dilemmas (clinical, legal, and ethical) may intensify their patients' symptoms by disavowing, denying, or dismissing their causes and effects. Such professionals also fit the profile of dissociative denial collaborators. At times, elaborate theories (alternatives to abuse hypotheses) are necessary to sustain some professionals' dissociative-denial complicity.

Associative Denial Collaborators. Associative denial collaborators, by contrast, have suffered child abuse themselves. Regardless of their personal experience and their recognition of heinous behavior, they elect to deny the actuality of the abuse to which they are witnesses.

When those with "unconscious" personal experience of child abuse see abuses of their own children, self-preservation will force their memories into deeper sequestering. To acknowledge abuse of their sons or daughters would be to unlock their personal histories—and where that means too painful a journey, denial of their children's abuses joins their own.[12] Many women with this background continue to partner with men who abuse their children.

In cases of "conscious" memory of childhood abuse, the internal emotional support mechanisms are very often broken, so normal, healthy reactions to abusive situations (e.g., recognition, protection, aggression) are not in the repertoire. As they could not rescue themselves, such survivors cannot rescue their children. A mix of helplessness, apathy, derealization, or shock recapitulates the futility they learned from their own traumatization; they abandon their children to denial systems they create, reasoning from experience that they can do nothing in the face of such malevolence.

Similar forms of this pattern of complicity can take place when mental health and medical professionals or teachers with their own conscious, partially conscious, or dissociated histories of child abuse systematically veer away from the kinds of recognition and interventions that would assist victims and survivors. Such gross inaction, misrecognitions, and omissions perpetuate the cycle of betrayal, submission, and futility.

Programmed Dissociative Collaborators. Programmed collaboration takes place largely within organized perpetrator groups, be they criminal child-abuse syndicates or cults. Varieties of mind control combined with repeated abuse train victims to dissociate from the abusive acts, to assist the perpetrator(s), and often to turn against other victims—all at the very real risk of death or further victimization if they resist.

Further programmed to forget both their abuse and their participation in the abuse of others, victims live mostly dissociative lives outside as well as within the cult or perpetrator group systems. While victims are aware of their collaboration in the moment, the self-states in which their awareness is lodged are so strongly associated with the perpetrators (and, correspondingly, dissociated from normal waking consciousness) that separate part-selves capable of contrary thought or action do not exist. They are completely broken to the will of the perpetrators and cannot act independently, due to their violent associations to protest, escape, or autonomy responses.

Vicarious Sadistic Collaborators. Vicarious sadistic collaborators enjoy seeing (or imagining) other people suffer. Becoming collaborators makes them essentially vicarious perpetrators. A mother who consciously knows that her son is being raped repeatedly by his father and grandfather does nothing to stop it because she derives some perverse pleasure from knowing about it. At times, she may even assist the perpetrators by bringing her son to a preassigned location (their bedrooms, a private meeting hall). She does not want to perform, watch, or otherwise participate directly; her satisfaction comes from vicariously experiencing what the perpetrators are doing. Thus, she seeks to live on the edge of such perpetration, supports it to feed her own needs, and ultimately sacrifices her child to those needs—consciously and with little regret. The line between perpetrator and collaborator is tenuous here. The collaborator becomes highly dependent on the perpetrator, who needs to exercise no mind control because the control mechanism—the collaborator's addiction to his/her perversions—is already intact.

Vicarious sadists have little or no sense of separateness from their victims (which may suggest, in some cases, that there is also an element of vicarious *victimization*). They actually believe they have the right to sacrifice children for the sake of gratifying their own perversions; indeed, they find deep satisfaction in the element of sacrifice itself. (Ritual-abuse survivors have described mid- to high-ranking female cult members in such terms—women so victimized by the system in which they were raised that they sold out completely to it rather than struggle dissociatively to preserve separate innocence and the hope of recovery.) Adroit manipulators of and in the world around them, vicarious sadists live easily within the web of cover stories that enable their addictions to flourish at the children's expense. Many of them look like model citizens and show no signs of disturbance other than inordinate power/control needs, which may well be camouflaged behind socially sanctioned roles.

Sadistic Collaborators. For the sadistic collaborator, however, indirect or vicarious contact is insufficient and unsatisfying. S/he has a more powerful addiction to causing and witnessing another's pain and fear. The sadistic collaborator is apt to be a high-functioning, highly visible member of society, and is always severely, perhaps malignantly narcissistic. Adept at hiding his or her collaboration, s/he enjoys the excitement of living a secret and forbidden life. S/he collaborates out of a pure, undisguised sadistic need.

For example, an uncle may not only bring his nephew to a pedophile group to be used for sexual acts, but may actually set up the meeting himself as well as stay to watch without participating. Or a judge who has knowledge of just such a group may exercise his legal influence to protect it; in exchange, he is allowed to watch films of their activities.

In organized groups there are always those who play solely the role of sadistic collaborator. They most often hold exalted positions in the hierarchy in keeping with their power in the outer world. In cases of isolated perpetration, the sadistic collaborator has a no less pivotal part. A father may bring his daughter to a group of his friends, witness her rape with conscious intent, no guilt, and defined enjoyment of the brutality itself. There are no boundaries between the perpetrator and the sadistic collaborator; one is the mirror image of the other. They are equally destructive and particularly difficult to locate, document, and incarcerate outside of war settings.

VARIETIES OF DENIAL

> *We live in a culture that would absolutely fall apart if the truth were told.*
>
> **—R. D. Laing**

Ambivalence. Ever since Freud recanted his proposal that traumatic childhood sexual abuse was the cause of hysteria, the psychiatric establishment has betrayed ambivalence about it (Van der Kolk and Van der Hart, 1991), and the relationship between trauma and psychiatric symptoms has been a politically charged issue. In cases of posttraumatic stress disorder, especially those arising from family violence or failures in child protection, is society responsible for the individual's suffering or is the victim's personality or inherent inferiority to blame?

Historically, the case against the victim has dominated the literature. The effects of child abuse—seductive behavior with clear origins in the abusive relationship—were almost always confused with the cause as evidence that the child had initiated the incest. Children were described as acting-out, provocative, "willing participants" (Mohr, Turner, and Jerry, 1964) and the majority of pedophiles as harmless individuals whose victims were known to be aggressive and seductive (Revitch and Weiss, 1962). Not long ago, incest was thought to be as rare in North America as one in a million (Weinberg, 1955/1976; Weiner, 1962). As late as the end of the 1970s clinicians were still being taught this information as a basis for understanding child sexual abuse (Summit, 1988).

Kinsey et al. (1948) concluded that incest was to be found more in the imagination of therapists than in the lives of patients, and that there was no logical reason for children to feel disturbed by sexual abuse—in spite of the fact that they documented a 24 percent rate of sexual abuse of females and an 80 percent rate of affirmation that victims were frightened by it. In fact, Kinsey et al.'s (1953) reversal of blame onto the victim is unnervingly similar to the contentions of the false memory backlash movement that the emotional reactions of parents, teachers, and police to the discovery of child sexual abuse disturbs the child more seriously than the abuse itself. Reversals of this kind have dominated the psychiatric literature until the last decade and a half, and advocates of the false memory syndrome have lately revived them. Our collective ambivalence about naming abuse as abuse, holding perpetrators accountable, acknowledging direct effects on the victim, and supporting therapists in the work of diagnosing and treating victims of childhood trauma continues to this day.

Media management of these subjects at once echoes and sustains society's ambivalence toward child abuse. During the last decade, for instance, when national newspapers and television reported on the discovery of the largest child pornography "sting" operation of its kind in U.S. history (Taylor, 1996; Stout, 1996)—45 arrests, 70 more expected; operation in 36 states, generating some ten thousand dollars a week; a client pool including, among others, police officers, ministers, printers, laborers, and a psychoanalyst—the story was almost immediately dropped after its initial broadcast. No analysis was offered and no linkage made with the child-abuse problem nationwide, and, while there was commentary on the possible violation of the civil liberties of the pornography consumers, there was none at all about the violation of the rights of the children. In fact, there was no mention whatsoever about the known or probable effects on the lives of the children involved, nor any articulation of just how the seven- to-nine-year-olds depicted in photographs or videos having sex with one another and with adults were "being sexually abused in unthinkable ways" (Taylor, 1996). Explicit exposure of the unthinkable, however horrifying, and follow-up stories, too—what happened to those children, where are they now, how was their compliance enlisted—could have educated the public to the dynamics of child abuse instead of reinforcing the convention of mystifying it.

Legal Dilemmas. In every state, the law requires various professionals to report suspected child maltreatment to the police or child welfare authorities. Penalties have been established for failure to comply and the laws usually provide civil immunity for people who make mistaken reports in good faith. It is incumbent on clinicians to understand the statutes, know when to take action, and know whether or not doing so would be in the patient's best interest. While most support mandatory reporting laws in principle many question whether the reporting itself actually results in greater safety for children (Melton et al., 1995).[13]

The inadequacy of our bureaucratic responses to child abuse is well documented. The legal system, for one, has failed to respond adequately: few cases are referred to court and the process is painfully slow when referrals are made (Bishop et al., 1992; Jellinek et al., 1991); we often allow the government to point the finger of suspicion even in the absence of the resources to follow through. "Thus, inquiry and identification are a threat and a promise; if the promise cannot be kept by appropriate and sustained services, there is the threat of more risk of violence to the vulnerable child" (Solnit, 1994, p. 37).

Getting clinical services to those in need is also an underestimated problem. McCurdy and Daro (1993) found that about 40 percent of families in which child abuse or neglect is substantiated receive no services at all. A *New York Times* article exposing the failures of the collapsed child protective service system in New York City (Alvarez, 1996) cited serious acts of omission, narrow and incomplete research, lack of follow-up investigations—a "litany of inattention and ineptitude." This particular "child protective" bureaucracy did not adequately investigate to determine if children were in immediate danger in 13 percent of the cases; did not bother with face-to-face contact with children in 20 percent; did not bother to review previous reports of abuse in 40 percent; did not pursue abuse reports within twenty-four hours as required in 10 percent; and 18 percent of cases considered closed involved children still in potential danger. Case workers in child protective services in the United States will readily acknowledge that the state of national protection of children is mediocre at best. But child protection is not a national priority, and cultural denial about abuse, including the "false memory" controversies, helps to keep things this way.

Doubt. The single most common error concerning actual severe child abuse made by the mental health field during the past century has been the failure to see, study, and/or acknowledge it (Ross, 1997). Of no small significance in the analysis of professional denial is the fact that the "battered child syndrome" was discovered not by mental health and child care workers but by radiologists (Rascovsky, 1995), spotting the evidence of violence and brutality against children on X rays of broken bones. Also of note, many abusers, before being apprehended or convicted, already had abuse reports on record (Salter, 1995)—reports made by other children, who were disbelieved.

Why are children so often disbelieved and discredited? What is the price of our disbelief? Who has the greater reason to lie, rationalize, and distort (and who has the greater capacity to do so): children or adult perpetrators? Actual methodologically strong studies of false allegations of child sexual abuse (Benedek and Schetky, 1987a; 1987b; Corwin et al., 1987; Everson and Boat, 1989; Jones and McGraw, 1987) show that such allegations are relatively rare and that a false allegation arising solely from a child is even rarer.[14] The fact that false allegations occur at all, however, emphasizes the need for investigators to learn to detect them (Yuille, Tymofievich, and Marxsen, 1995); moreover, the poor interviewing that may produce false allegations may also lead to abuses' being ignored.[15]

Negative biases about young children's testimony—especially regarding suggestibility, memory capacity, inability to distinguish between reality and fantasy, tendencies to lie or to falsify reports with coaching—make it one of the arenas of greatest doubt (Melton et al., 1995). There continues to be ongoing debate about the conditions under which children may lie or may be suggestible (Ceci and Bruck, 1993), not to mention the concern about retractions and recantations[16] (Summit, 1983; De Young, 1986; Faller, 1984).

Solnit (1994) reminds clinicians of the problems inherent in questioning children about possible abuse. They may not be able to distinguish between what adults refer to as good and bad touching. They may not be able to answer direct questions about sexual arousal because of cognitive limitations. They may try to reduce anxiety or fear produced by the questioning by coming up with answers regardless of whether or not they understand what is going on. They may try to guess what the interviewer wants to hear in order to please him/her and diminish the threat. (The situation may be exacerbated when children are caught in divorce and custody battles, and may hope a "right" answer will prevent further separations and magically even lead to reconciliation.)

Rationalization, Disavowal, and Dissociation. Cultural dissociation in response to reports of child abuse actually resembles the types of dissociative processes—denial, disavowal, and the sealing off of memories—that child-abuse victims use to protect themselves from the knowledge of their own psychological trauma (Herman, 1992; Olafson, Corwin, and Summit, 1993). Sullivan's (1953) important concept of *not-me* self-states, while originally applied to the development of the self-system and the regulation of internal anxiety, may also be construed to operate at a collective level. Consider, in this context, extensions of *not-me* dissociative consciousness based on variations of "each man for himself" and "I don't want to know," such as: "It's not happening in my country," "not in my ethnic group," "not on my street," "I don't have to be bothered with understanding that." The same dissociative consciousness that allows disavowal of one's role (passive and/or active) in the perpetuation of traumatic events, or intrapsychic disavowal and the rationalization of one's actions or their meaning and effects in the case of perpetrators, permits most of us to disavow the human capacity for destructive aggression, greed, and the marginalization of the unfortunate. Political rhetoric, religious dogma, and media-sponsored mystification of aggression make way for the alteration of meanings to suit individual or group purposes of anxiety reduction or power-brokering.

Eliminating personal ownership frees us of responsibility—"It's not my rainforest . . . not my country . . . not my child"—for people and events. Distancing the dangerous and the dreadful as "other" is like a form of manic denial; it magically supports grandiose and omnipotent fantasies of avoiding disaster. Disengaging may reflect our individual and collective wishes to not know about our own potential for violence against children (Solnit, 1994); disavowing our own collaboration in their traumas or focusing on their dishonesty and entitlement reinforces our defensive splitting and lets us off the hook.

Not-Me Configurations in the Mental Health Field. *Not-me/not-us* thinking patterns also prevail in the mental health field, influencing views on sadistic abuse, forgotten trauma, and the dissociative structuralization of the traumatized psyche—phenomena existing outside the preferred paradigms and therefore *not-us* constructs. In this case, *not-me* consciousness has evolved into a proliferation of attitudes that have been further elaborated into derision and contempt for victims diagnosed as dissociative, and finally into derision and contempt for clinicians who treat severe childhood trauma and MPD/DID.

The disaffiliation between contemporary psychoanalytic theorists and the trauma/dissociation group that preceded them in speaking out against child abuse has been one of the more subtle operations of *not-me* consciousness in the field. In the young, emerging MPD world of the early to mid-1980s, overly directive and overly concrete techniques and practices favored overreliance on hypnosis as the ultimate approach; it failed to integrate such postclassical psychoanalytic developments as acknowledgment of the patient's sensitivities to clinician influence and awareness of coconstruction and conarrational processes in psychotherapy. And while psychoanalytic practitioners may be more likely than other professionals to have worked with people who over time reveal their multiplicity, and to have taken such revelations seriously, they have also inherited the orthodox tendency to emphasize fantasy over trauma and have accounted for the alterations in consciousness of dissociative individuals by diagnosing them as borderline or schizophrenic (McWilliams, 1994). At times, all of the mental health professions seem "to border on a relativism that is bankrupt with regard to real evil" (Grand, 2000, p. 43).

It is not hard to understand that the trauma/dissociation/MPD faction sought to differentiate itself from the constraints of analytic theory and technique, which had practically institutionalized the misrecognition of trauma and dissociative disorders for the better part of a century. It is not hard to understand either how the psychoanalytic community became troubled by some of the early trauma rhetoric that overlooked a century of wisdom about the vicissitudes of transference and demanded that clinicians invest heavily in the use of hypnosis, generally ignoring the dialectic between intrapsychic fantasy and interpersonal and cultural processes in favor of exclusive emphasis on exogenous trauma. Given the lack of dialogue, cross-fertilization, and mutual respect between the two groups in times when therapists treating trauma are under siege by the media and by legal threats, it is vital that the clinical community undertake rapprochement and strive for synthesis; otherwise, who we are and how we can conduct treatment will be defined from without.

Relational psychoanalytic theory, with its emphasis on intersubjectivity, mutuality, interaction, enactment, authenticity, and a sophisticated appreciation for the complexities of transference and countertransference dynamics, can balance the bias evident in much of the trauma and MPD/DID literature toward cognitive, concretized, and managerial approaches. Likewise, the wisdom of two decades of specialized research and practice in trauma/dissociation, the extensive mapping of the terrain of trauma and DID and their intrapsychic and interpersonal manifestations, the understanding of the cognitive errors and distortions characteristic of this population, and familiarity with the experiences of victims of multiple perpetrator and offender group situations, can enrich and enlarge the clinical perspectives of the psychoanalytic community.

Not-Me Configurations, Culture, and Child Abuse

> *If I had to name one quality as the genius of the patriarchy, it would be compartmentalization, the capacity for institutionalizing disconnection. Intellect severed from emotion. Thought separated from action. Science split from art. The earth itself divided; national borders. Human beings categorized by sex, age, race, ethnicity, sexual preference, height, weight, class, religion, physical ability* ad nauseam. *The personal isolated from the political. Sex divorced from love. The material ruptured from the spiritual. The past parted from the present and disjoined from the future. Law detached from justice. Vision dissociated from reality.*
>
> **—Robin Morgan (The Demon Lover)**

Individual and collective *not-me* dissociation facilitates perseveration of destructive patterns of selfishness, greed, and unmodulated aggression. Through failure to recognize, and emotional disconnection from, the operative causes, effects, and implications of behavior, we collude with the destruction going on around us, intervening only when disaster strikes at our own doors. The same *not-me* consciousness that allows for toxic wastes to be dumped somewhere "else" or for poverty and starvation to be tolerated in certain (other) places among certain (other) peoples is what makes room for the unspeakable abuses of children without consciousness of our interdependence and shared responsibilities.

Within the network of multiple personalities created by DID individuals, there is a compelling fantasy of having disposed of or eradicated toxic psychic material, just as the perpetrator and society have done through the combination of abuse, denial, and neglect. The MPD/DID patient intrapsychically splits off overwhelming traumatic affects and meanings into container self-states, often child states, which are continually silenced and (intrapsychically) dominated by protector- and perpetrator-identified parts of the self. An absence of critical thinking about the implications of this fantasized extermination coexists with a haunting and looming fear of some inevitable psychic backlash; it takes the form of terror (usually on the part of the host or outer functional personalities) that if the dissociative barriers are allowed to be lowered even the slightest bit, the person will be absolutely overcome and his/her life shut down completely.

As a society we are acting like a desperate DID patient doing everything s/he can to ward off the flood of traumatic affects and meanings. "Fostering a fantasy world that creates an absolute split between good and evil . . . prevents us from entertaining any but the most simplistic solutions to our problems and . . . increases the likelihood that we will perpetrate violence against the most defenseless humans among us" (Milburn and Conrad, 1996, p. 249). DID patients live by the same rules that society teaches the rest of us—ignore bad things, pretend they are not real, create amnesia, call them by another name and they will go away; pretend something never happened and it didn't. This strategy is taught directly or indirectly by the perpetrators, cultivated to survive the abuse, and reinforced by the cultural models of disavowal and minimization.

These strategies of exclusivity and marginalization within mind or within society are dissociative solutions par excellence because they are founded on trance-logic and the omnipotent fantasy of timelessness, "power-over," separation consciousness, and defiance of the laws of causality. The set of derivative forces that most radically contradicts the possibility of ecological harmony is the cluster of narcissism, consumerism, and objectification that together promote the illusion of omnipotence. As Cushman (1994) has described, our culture is configured in such a way that it thwarts social connectedness, common purpose, and group solidarity. Cushman believes that our society has difficulty solving its problems because we do not experience our selves as political beings in a meaningful or devotional relationship with the world around us.

AN ALTERNATIVE PARADIGM: INTEGRATION CONSCIOUSNESS

> A feminist perspective on trauma requires us to move out of our comfortable positions—as those who study trauma, or treat its effects, or categorize its types—to a position of identification and action. . . . By insisting that the personal is political, a holy truth of the feminist vision, it is impossible to remove

> myself and my experiences from my understanding of the etiology, meaning, and treatment of psychic trauma. (Laura Brown, 1995, pp. 108–109)

Ecological, open-system models are alternatives to the *not-me* and dissociative/disavowal paradigm. Postulating mutual, circular influence among all parts of a system and between systems at various levels (Altman, 1995), they hold central the idea that a fragmentary worldview is harmful and dangerous. What is split off and disowned comes back to haunt us in a much more destructive way than if the separation and the disavowal of dualistic thinking had never taken place to begin with (Wilber, 1995, p. 4). In other words, the dissociation of individuals and society does not eliminate pain and suffering, it only anaesthetizes it, perverts it, and leaves it out of relationship and unavailable for transformative change.

Reconnecting the Personal and the Political. When treating survivors of trauma, particularly hidden and isolating traumas like sadistic sexual abuse, clinicians must be aware of their patients' separation from context and community as children. Recognizing that their healing and integration require realignment with the wider social and historical perspective relative to their suffering is not tantamount, as some critics have alleged, to turning them into whining, entitled, demanding, and permanently infantilized adults who will take no responsilibility for themselves. The creation of linkages is part of the process of reassociation after disavowal and dissociation.

Reassociation and recontextualization do not just happen automatically on the intrapsychic level. Movement from ahistorical dissociative awareness through narrativity and testimony does not mean that a DID patient or trauma survivor will cling enduringly to the new identity of (historical) victim; one has to have a history, however, before one can transcend that history toward a more mature identity not solely defined by it. The backlash against recovered memory, psychotherapy, trauma survivors, and the MPD/DID diagnosis, with all of its sincere, insightful, and corrupt variations, has collectively turned back the clock and reversed progress in the recognition and treatment of psychological disorders rooted in child-abuse trauma.

This page intentionally left blank

Part Two

Restoration of the Traumatized, Dissociative Self

This page intentionally left blank

CHAPTER 4

Major Trends in Relational Psychoanalytic Thought: Implications for Treatment of Trauma and Dissociation

Only in relationship can you know yourself, not in abstraction and certainly not in isolation.

—J. Krishnamurti

In keeping with the goal of building new bridges as well as strengthening those already developed between trauma / dissociation theory and the philosophical and clinical traditions of contemporary psychoanalysis, this chapter reviews major relational theory trends with particular emphasis on those aspects of theory and clinical practice that can enhance our understanding and treatment of severely dissociative trauma survivors.

Multiple mind maps are vying for prominence in psychoanalysis today, where an acute interest in the "social determination of mind" (Wilson, 1995, p. 9) has begun to eclipse the extended emphasis on mind as an isolated object of study. Relational theories tend to draw upon diverse theoretical perspectives from outside of psychology and psychoanalysis such as feminism and postmodern philosophy, where the role of language and power dynamics in human relationships and in the quest for psychological knowledge are factored into theories of psychopathology and advances in clinical practice (Aron, 1996).

RELATIONAL PERSPECTIVES

In general, relational approaches privilege human relationships, intrapersonal and interpersonal alike, over biological drives in the development of the self. Stolorow, Atwood, and Brandchaft (1994) cite the following as key contributions to relationally focused psychoanalytic theory: relational-model theorizing (Mitchell, 1988); dyadic systems perspective (Beebe et al., 1992); social constructivism (Hoffman, 1991); and intersubjectivity (Stolorow et al., 1987).

Some relationally oriented analysts veer sharply away from classical and early postclassical psychoanalytic thought in their views of the role of the therapist, the use of countertransference, the meaning of resistance, and the validity of some theoretical "givens" (Rabin, 1995); contentious misrepresentations notwithstanding, however, they are not so much disavowing as modifying drive theory, the importance of fantasy and instinctual life, and insight as a clinical tool.

Relational theorists posit a view in which both reality and fantasy, both outer world and inner world, play significant and interactive roles in human life (Ghent, 1992a). The intrapsychic and the interpersonal are seen as complementary and interactive processes (Benjamin, 1990); however, the intrapsychic is viewed as constituted primarily by the internalization of interpersonal experience, which is itself mediated by the constraints imposed by biologically organized templates (Ghent, 1989). Conflict is central to a relational analysis of psychological development, but is conceptualized as occurring between opposing relational configurations, between various points and identifications with early significant others, rather than between drive and defense (Warshaw, 1992). Mitchell (1988) reframes the central dynamic struggle of life as occurring between the powerful need to establish, protect, and maintain intimate bonds with others, and various strivings to escape the pains and dangers of these attachments. He describes the contents of psychological life as metaphors for expressing and playing out relational patterns: discovery, penetration, domination, surrender, control, longing, evasion, revelation, envelopment, merger, differentiation, and so on.

The focus of relational psychoanalytic treatment is on understanding and transforming the pathological aspects of relatedness, derived from the patient's internalized models of prior relationships. Consistent with this notion, intersubjectivists focus on helping the patient organize and reorganize experience in less painful and more creative ways so that new and more flexible organizing principles can emerge; with a greater capacity for reflectivity, the patient's experiential repertoire can then become enlarged, enriched, and more complex (Orange et al., 1997). In essence, the intersubjective field created by the emotional availability of the therapist offers a developmental second chance for the patient (Orange, 1995).

Stolorow and Atwood's (1992) intersubjective vision depends on the continual flow of reciprocal mutual influence between the individual's world of inner experience and interpersonal relationships. When this notion of reciprocity (Aron, 1996) is taken seriously, the meanings of clinical material and the therapy relationship itself are subject to continual revision from multiple perspectives; no preexisting theoretical construct is allowed to dominate the discourse—the therapist's perceptions are not intrinsically more true than the patient's. Such a progressive clinical stance, whereby patient and therapist codetermine the course of the therapy process, can arouse high anxiety among practitioners who rely on traditional authoritarian arrangements and classical notions of analytic neutrality. "In order to dispense with the defensive invincibility and omniscience of the neutral stance, analysts must be prepared to bear . . . profound feelings of vulnerability and anxious uncertainty . . . [and to let] go of metapsychological and epistemological absolutes" (Orange et al., 1997, p. 42).

The theoretical underpinnings of the term "relational" reflects the constructivist, perspectivist influence of postmodern philosophy, science, and hermeneutics—namely, the "embeddedness" (Mitchell, 1995) whereby all observations and understandings are regarded as contextual, based on the interpreter's values, assumptions, and constructions of experience. In the absence of any a priori ideology, clinicians are encouraged to stay very close to the patient's subjective experience (Rabin, 1995); by extension, they relinquish the presumption that they have superior knowledge of the patient's psychodynamics (Aron, 1996), thus making way for the patient to act as coconstructor of interpretations and of the process itself. This theoretical position creates a new context for the negotiation of power dynamics and conflicts in the therapy relationship without peremptorily construing the patient's disagreements or protests as pathological or subversive of the treatment; moreover, it leaves room for surprise, for ambiguity, for not knowing. The implications of this theoretical posture for the respectful and productive treatment of traumatized and dissociative patients cannot be underestimated.

As psychoanalytic theory continues to mature, analytic humility and an appreciation for ambiguity and paradox may gradually replace what will eventually be understood as the combined fallacies of objectivity and neutrality. The nature and texture of the psychotherapy relationship and psychoanalytic process change profoundly when the clinician defines him/herself as a "collaborator in developing a personal narrative rather than as a scientist uncovering facts" (Mitchell, 1993, p. 74). Prominent relational theorists like Benjamin (1988; 1990; 1995), Mitchell (1988; 1993), Aron (1996), and Spezzano (1993a; 1993b; 1995) are clear that focusing on a new notion of "neutrality," and the value of interpersonal processes does not exclude the therapist's commitment to the importance of interpretation, insight, and the role of unconscious and fantasy life. The goal is to create the particular interpersonal conditions—developing a therapeutic ambience—where meanings can be constructed and explored, where absolute concern with "objective" truth and consensual reality is suspended.

Ghent (1995) describes the shift from a classical toward a relational paradigm as representing a movement from therapy viewed as informative, insightful, and interpretative to therapy regarded as transformative. For Fosshage (1992), the single most disruptive influence of the shift to relational theorizing is that the modern analyst/therapist has been "dethroned from the position of objective observer and becomes a co-participant" (p. 23). For Mitchell (1993), the healing power of psychoanalysis and the hope it inspires is grounded in the personal and unique meanings generated by individuals rather than in rational consensus: classical analysts may have prided themselves on "knowing and being brave enough to know," while the "current generation . . . tends increasingly to stress the value of not knowing and the courage that requires" (p. 42). For Spezzano (1993a), there is "always more to be said. The point, as a matter of fact, is to keep talking" (p. 179); truth emerges out of therapeutic conversations and confrontations.

According to Spezzano and other relationalists, the objective of therapy is the establishment of an interpretive dialogue that can regulate and contain the affects being defended against by the patient. This simple reformulation places greater responsibility for the quality and freedom of therapeutic discourse on the therapist's emotional availability, creativity, and cognitive flexibility, and less emphasis for positive outcome on the patient's overt compliance and communication skills. Therapy patients want to be known and are always trying to communicate something. Specifically, Spezzano believes that they want their disturbing affects and representations placed "first in a mind that can manage them" (1995, p. 24). In such a view, the success of treatment depends on the ability of the therapist to create an atmosphere where all of the patient's material and enactments can be welcomed, held, tolerated, and examined. Subtle domination by means of unquestioned authority or knowledge as power can be harmful to the therapy; spontaneity, creativity, and malleability are all essential to a productive outcome.

THE SELF AND PSYCHOPATHOLOGY

In relational models (Hirsch, 1994; Mitchell, 1993; Stolorow et al., 1987), the basic units of personality are the "structures of experience," distinctive configurations of self and other that shape and organize the individual's subjective world (Stolorow and Atwood, 1994). Such psychological structures are not mere internalizations or mental replicas of interpersonal events; they are organizing principles through which an individual's experiences of self and other assume their characteristic meanings. This perspective invites consideration of how the effects of power and gender arrangements and trauma can create barriers to actualizing personal agency or memory and to developing self-cohesion and continuity.

The relational view of self is a matrix of intersubjective polarities (e.g., unity-multiplicity, separateness-relatedness) in various states of tension. (According to Seligman and Shanok [1995], identity consists in the capacity to sustain and experience the simultaneity of both separateness and relatedness.) Some aspects of psychopathology can be viewed as imbalances in the tension between multiplicity and integrity/unity. For example, too much of a sense of discontinuity can lead to the fragmentation, splitting, and dissolution most commonly associated with psychotic states (Sullivan, 1956)—the signature of dissociative identity disorder (DID), whether apparent or camouflaged. A reverse imbalance, in the direction of continuity, can lead to the paralysis and stagnation of, say, obsessive-compulsive disorder, often prevalent in the rigid, self-protecting constructions of the severely dissociative patient's internal system. If optimal psychological structuralization means maintaining a balance between organization and an openness to new forms of experience (Stolorow and Atwood, 1994), then psychopathology signals developmental failures either in structuralizing the subjective world or in consolidating restrictions on one's own subjective field. The dissociative alter personalities in DID are extreme examples of both phenomena operating interactively.

Through the processes of recognition and conflict within the psychotherapy relationship, the severely dissociative individual discovers a self (or a set of part-selves) in relation to another subject—the therapist—who is willing to engage to form attachment bonds with, sometimes even to fight, the disparate, often personified and sequestered, aspects of self-experience. In cases of trauma, dissociation, and, in particular, DID, unity, integrity, and cohesion—as structural possibilities and healthy fantasies—develop through being affectively contacted, challenged, and intellectually recognized by another, nondominating subject. The accumulating evidence that both patient and therapist can survive the interplay of their unique subjectivities is what stabilizes and strengthens these experiences of evolving wholeness.

TRANSFERENCE AND COUNTERTRANSFERENCE

Relational theorists see transference and countertransference as a reciprocally influential intersubjective system. Stolorow and colleagues (1987) recognize the roles in generating transference phenomena of both the patient's unconscious *self-object* longings—for the therapist to make up for missed developmental experiences by providing substitutes—and the patient's fears (the *repeated dimension* of the transference), which are rooted in developmental failures and thwarted strivings. The therapist's psychological structures and organizing activity have decisive roles in codetermining the transference (Stolorow, 1994). Fosshage (1995) notes that the therapist's experience of the patient ranges from involvement with repetitive pathological dynamics (e.g., domination/submission) to engagement in developmentally progressive connections, affirmation, and reparation.

Stern (1994) considers transference to be the dialectic of "needed and repeated" relationships; the therapist's countertransference is impacted by the repetitive and reparative aspects of the patient's needs and transferences. The therapist's affective responsiveness is most critical clinically because mutative interactions have the capacity to transform the inevitability of destructive relational paradigms. Success is contingent on the therapist's "surviving" the unfolding transference/countertransference matrix, which in turn mandates not only maintenance of nonwithdrawing, nonretaliatory stances (Winnicott, 1969), but also tolerance for traumatic patterns of relatedness and for revelations of extreme human malevolence; "surviving" also mandates the therapist's ability to use language to break through confusion and stalemates when the power of traumatic reenactments has eclipsed reflectivity altogether.

Relational theorists continue to offer innovative ways to conceptualize and use the countertransference experience (Maroda, 1991; 1999; Ehrenberg, 1992), urging the therapist to rely on authenticity, immediacy, and emotional involvement, and to work within the reenactment process rather than to pathologize it, to "translate" or interpret it through the lens of a priori assumptions, or to discount its existence and multiple meanings.

Maroda (1991), like most relational theorists, believes strongly in the importance of the therapist's owning his/her side of the emotional interaction to provide a clear experience of mutuality as an alternative to the domination paradigm so often characteristic of the patient's family of origin and to model a responsible self-observational stance that promotes inquiry and risk taking.

In Benjamin's (1995) terms, relational perspectives make the therapist's countertransference central, not just as a source of information, but also as an instrument that reveals the effect the patient can have on others; such effects must be processed by the therapist and returned to the patient in a usable form.

Mitchell (1995) feels that, by owning and expressing his/her side of the interaction, the therapist is creating something new and important for the patient; a relational therapeutic posture invites the patient to reflect on his/her own involvement in therapy interactions in a more collaborative and potentially less defensive atmosphere.

For Ehrenberg (1992) what is essential is the therapist's willingness to take some kind of emotional risk to reach the patient. Relationalists differ when it comes to how much or how little, when and where and what specifically to share (and not share) with patients, but they all seek to establish mutuality, therapeutic presence, and authenticity.

In Eigen's (1996) view, the therapist's processing of the patient's impact on him/her (either reflectively and/or expressively) gives the patient a sense of being taken seriously. More important, through this interaction, the patient experiences the possibility that someone (at first the therapist, or the dyad, and eventually the patient him/herself) could process previously undigestible and unmetabolizable psychic material.

ENACTMENT/REENACTMENT

The concept of enactment that has become popularized in recent psychoanalytic literature may be one that can bridge the interactional space between concepts of transference and countertransference. Any unconscious interpersonal communication in which gestures, body language, and nonverbal communication play significant roles (Jacobs, 1986) is considered to be an enactment. Like *acting out* and *projective identification*, enactment denotes some form of repeating and representing through behavior rather than by remembering or verbalizing core conflicts or resistances. The term *reenactment*, sometimes used synonymously, refers to enactment of elements of the original trauma in posttraumatic symptoms, behaviors, and/or interpersonal patterns of relating—all characteristic of trauma survivors' functioning (Miller, 1984). Reflecting patients' internal working models of interactions derived from abusive relationships that govern their expectations and behaviors, reenactments become the narrative schemes by which severely traumatized patients understand their engagements with all others, including the therapist (Davies and Frawley, 1994; Fast, 1998). Spontaneous activation of these dissociated beliefs, expectations, identifications, and interactional patterns often takes place quite unexpectedly during treatment, offering at times graphic and immediate access to the patient's internal world and history (and, sometimes, to the therapist's as well). When reenactments do not lead to endless stalemates or unbridled acting out on the part of either patient or therapist (or both), and with sufficient time and space for mutual reflection, these unnerving therapeutic events can lead to magnificent breakthroughs.

In enactments, the therapist inadvertently and inevitably plays out a given role in the patient's psychic life before either patient or therapist becomes aware of the process or its meaning. The parts that are being played are not only elements of the patient's psyche but elements of the therapist's psyche as well. From this egalitarian perspective, therapists and patients are always doing things to one another—and the dyadic reciprocating field of interaction must always be kept in mind in appreciating the meaning and clinical utility of enactments and reenactments (Aron, 1996). The parts being played often relate to culturally defined self-constitutional factors: racial, ethnic, or gender roles or more subtle forms of culturally prescribed behaviors involving authority, aggression, and sexuality.

The process of enactment allows the patient to use the therapist to relive parts of his/her earlier life (Frayn, 1996). Or, it allows patient and therapist both to exist within each other's internal worlds (Bollas, 1987). From this perspective, patients are constantly oscillating between an introspective reporting mode and behavior-discharging communication. It is important to keep in mind here Aron's (1996) essential point that we must recognize enactments and projective identification as continual processes rather than as discrete events, especially in treating survivors of early complex traumas who create multiple simultaneous enactments and reenactments in order to become known to themselves and the other. The actual transformative therapeutic potential that relational theorists believe can emerge from work with enactments is not primarily based on intellectual insight alone. Rather, progress evolves directly out of increased mutual observation, creative verbal and nonverbal exchanges, and the play of (new) interaction. For the severely dissociative patient whose life has been permeated with the abuse of authority, domination, and betrayal-paradigms of relatedness, the experience with an authority figure who is humane, benevolent, nonretaliatory, open to feedback, and willing to change can, in and of itself, be profoundly disarming and reparative.

Far more important than any interpretation of an enactment is the therapist's response (Bloom, 1997). We clinicians must first change something within ourselves, in our internal relationship to the patient; only then can we change our responses to the patient. What is called for on our part to resolve the kinds of complex and painful enactments we cocreate with severely dissociative trauma survivors is a singular combination of emotional availability, integrity, honesty, and willingness to be completely misunderstood and unappreciated.

SURVIVING DESTRUCTION

A relational theory of treatment for dissociative disorders must address both the patient's and the therapist's survival—of destruction by the complexities, pains, and challenges of working within a traumatic transference / countertransference matrix where reenactments of torture, betrayal, and danger not previously understood or described in the clinical literature are taking place. Clinicians must recognize the damage done to severely traumatized, dissociative patients by their perpetrators / caretakers and validate their pain and stress; however, because such individuals are extremely wounded, they can be extremely wounding to those who share intimate psychological space with them. Since unmetabolized trauma and betrayal often lead to more enactments of trauma and betrayal, therapist and patient can get caught in reliving aspects of the past that destroyed the patient's core sense of self. Similarly, the therapist may unconsciously deploy defenses used to survive his/her own early traumas and catastrophic disappointments.

Winnicott (1969) emphasizes that the holding functions of the therapy relationship and the patient's use of the therapist as a transitional object create a critical healing opportunity: the patient can test the limits of his/her omnipotence and destructiveness. Discovering that the therapist can survive that destructiveness is the fundamentally integrative experience of treatment for an individual who was exposed to utter brutality and predation throughout childhood; indeed, experiencing the therapist's survival is the heart of what is transformative about psychotherapy for patients with DID and other severe posttraumatic conditions.

Severely dissociative patients have unique capacities and needs to test and push the survival capabilities of their therapists to the limit. They need to play with and play out many of their fears and fantasies of omnipotent destructiveness in order to discover their own boundaries and their appropriate relationships to, even the actual existence of, themselves and other people. Severely dissociative patients need to discover the possibility of benevolent and nontraumatically mutative interaction. They need to revisit the quintessential assaults on the core self and identity that were emblematic of their childhood experiences. This is frequently accomplished through placing the therapist in the positions of the child-victim, perpetrator, and collaborator in unconscious reenactments that can potentially reveal traumatic relationship dynamics of the past (Davies and Frawley, 1994)—or blow the therapy container apart altogether.

Surviving the therapy process is a formidable challenge; the process of treating a dissociative trauma survivor inevitably means experiencing some of the patient's fear, pain, rage, hatred, disillusionment, and despair. Most contemporary psychoanalytic clinicians believe that part of the healing power of a therapy process comes from the capacity to respond from an experience-near vantage point (Kohut, 1971; Stolorow et al., 1987), to get inside the inner world of the patient. The relational therapist's responses to all parts or self-states of the patient (e.g., the young and vulnerable, the seducers, the killers, the drones, the collaborators, and the self-betrayers) will facilitate the emergence of powerful transferences and become the basis of mutative interaction that s/he can eventually internalize and use to develop more expansive, less compartmentalized solutions to intrapsychic and interpersonal problems. Along the way, however, the therapist will be tested and strained to the breaking point.

How the therapist tolerates painful affect-states and remains in contact with both the patient and him/herself will be fundamental to the patient's internalization of new object experience. In this struggle between domination and mutuality paradigms of relationship the therapist's defenses may be completely assaulted. Rivera (1996), contending that a commitment to scrupulous personal honesty is the best insurance that therapists will neither burn out nor act out on their tortured and terrorized patients, identifies the need for in-depth treatment of clinicians whose defenses "have never been tampered with [lest they] crumble" and for the periodic return to treatment by the rest "to ensure that they remain a relatively clear and clean vessel for the use of their trauma survivor clients" (p. 187).

In patients with DID the ante of the traumatic relational paradigms is upped compared to other traumatized patients. The dynamics of reversals, captivity, isolation, sacrifice, blackmail, appeasement, condemnation, the assaults on hope, faith, and trust, and the attack on reality testing must all be considered. Hence, the early phases of treating the most severely dissociative patients often involve many urgent approaches to the precipice of self- and other-destruction followed by last-minute saves. The middle and later phases of treatment have their own challenges to survival, organized primarily around affect tolerance, deepening of trust, and learning to "surrender" (Ghent, 1990). When mutual survival is successfully negotiated, the patient's internalized patterns of domination, submission, avoidance, and coercion give way to conscious and voluntary surrender to the mourning and grieving process. Some identifications have to be relinquished, others must be renegotiated, and most attachments and identifications will be reconfigured in some ways. Both therapist and patient alike have to rework identity and worldviews in terms of their mutual impact. The clinical challenges of this work are enormous. There is no way to shortcut or bypass painful mergers with the patient's trauma and the split-off aspects of the patient's self.

Part of therapy is helping the traumatized patient experience and understand nonexploitative, mature, loving relationships. Inevitably, for the therapist, this will involve assaults and abuse of the attachment bond s/he has developed with the patient. Without this strain and searing pain the therapist cannot know an essential part of the patient's experience. An individual who has been severely traumatized and has developed a complex dissociative world to simultaneously contain and lose him/herself in has based that world on layers of self-deception, omnipotent reorganizations of interpersonal and intrapsychic realities, and the steadfast avoidance of contact with painful reminders of the agonies and betrayals of childhood. Such an individual will not relinquish a massive, meticulously constructed empire of defenses in the presence of a therapist who cannot tolerate pain, confusion, ambiguity, complexity, and the impact of traumatic relational dynamics.

In a welcoming ambience where confusion and ambiguity are tolerated and protest responses and confrontation are valued, the patient's increasing experience of his/her own and the therapist's aggression and survival leads to what Bromberg (1991; 1996a) refers to as the patient's developing confidence in his/her ability to move from dissociation and alienation to negotiation of intrapsychic conflict and authentic human relationship. In this realm the coexistence of more than one thought/feeling/identification/alter personality, more than one person/belief, can be tolerated and worked with at the same time. Such a developmental shift toward the use of reflection and toleration of ambiguity, intrapsychic conflict, and pain is central to the recovery process for all severely traumatized patients. The process is grounded in the new object experience that occurs in and through the reciprocal transference/countertransference entanglements and the mutuality whereby patient and therapist work their way out of the tangles together (Aron, 1996).

CONTEMPORARY (RELATIONAL) PSYCHOANALYTIC PERSPECTIVES ON DISSOCIATION

Recent advances in psychoanalytic thinking have emphasized *nonlinear dynamics, states of consciousness, self-organization,* and *dissociation,* thereby changing theoretical views of psychological structure and psychological growth (Bromberg, 1994) and bridging the unnecessarily wide gap between psychoanalysis and trauma/dissociation theory. For Bromberg, dissociation is not inherently pathological: the process can be considered basic to human mental functioning and central to the stability and growth of personality. For Goldberg (1995), dissociation plays a part in normal development and normal living, a key role in productive and creative work, and a significant role in survival in both ordinary and extraordinary situations. And for Davies (1996a), multiplicity need not be construed as solely trauma related; indeed normal multiplicity can be viewed as endemic to the progression of ego development, consistent with the poststructuralist vision of multiple self-states and with recent developments in cognitive psychology.[1]

Echoing the work of major dissociation/DID theorists (Putnam, 1988; 1989; 1992; Ross, 1989; Kluft, 1987a; 1995; Kluft and Fine, 1993) Bromberg (1994) projects dissociation as "intrinsically an adaptational talent that represents the very nature of what we call consciousness" (p. 521). He conceptualizes the human mind as a system of discontinuous and shifting states of consciousness from birth to death: "the psyche does not start as an integrated whole, but begins and continues as a multiplicity of self-states that maturationally attain a feeling of coherence which overrides the awareness of discontinuity" (Bromberg, 1993, p. 162). If "feeling of coherence" is nothing more than an adaptive illusion—an important and perhaps developmentally complex illusion—whose form and content are in large measure culturally and interpersonally determined, then the study of the dissociative disorders becomes the comparative study of adaptive and maladaptive illusions and trance states that actually protect and variously cultivate and compromise the self.

Integrated or organized multiplicity operating under the adaptive illusion of unity where conflict and paradox are tolerated and welcomed may in fact reflect maturation—"a distributed self" (Pizer, 1996a, p. 503) with the capacity to contain and sustain conscious relationship with the contradictory multitudes of self-experience. The dissociative self, in contrast is overburdened by shocking discrepant relational juxtapositions—"strained toward the traumatic breaking point" (p. 504)—and unable to negotiate contradiction in such a way as to avoid fragmentation by experiences of domination, nullification, and defeat.

In normal development, and with appropriate responsiveness from caregivers, transitions across states of consciousness are smoothed out of awareness; healthy illusions of unity and integration facilitate maturational achievements (Stern, 1985). Under conditions of chronic traumatic impingement, neglect, or violence and sexual exploitation, however, these state-changes are unmediated and the illusions of unity of self never quite realized. Paradoxically in such cases, as dissociation attends frequent and disruptive state-transitions and amplified illusions of internal separateness, it actually permits psychological survival (and sometimes even incredible developmental achievements in spite of staggering emotional devastation). Dissociation thus emerges as both a form of fragmentation and a defense against fragmentation.

Bromberg (1994) suggests that dissociation is not itself fragmentation, citing Ferenczi's (1930) brilliant insight that fragmentation may not be a consequence of trauma as much as it is an adaptation to it. In dissociating to cope with trauma, the psyche may be enlisting its inherent adaptational capacity to compartmentalize, freeze, and disconnect. Instead of remaining a passive, helpless victim to a fragmentation experience, the protective wisdom of the dissociative capacity of mind absolutely reclaims the fragmentation—orchestrating it, personifying it, and camouflaging it. Then, forever dancing on the edge of annihilation, the dissociatively organized individual creates and deploys a kind of controlled fragmentation while in fantasy avoiding, and in some corner of the mind perpetually reliving, the horrendous visitations to the psychological sites of the original traumatically disintegrating experiences. Anticipating disaster, sustaining a life that is itself a disaster zone, and ultimately remaining a psychological disaster in some ways wards off the ultimate disaster—loss of the attachments to perpetrators and loss of "self-as-disaster," the only self there is. This is a mirror dance because it takes place intrapsychically and interpersonally and these two dimensions potentiate one another until life itself becomes kaleidoscopic or cubist to the stationary observer.

Dissociation splits affect and cognition, observer and experiencer, mind and body, self and self into parts, leading to fantastic permutations and schisms in ownership/disownership, knowing/not knowing, responsibility/irresponsibility, and victim/perpetrator dynamics within the psyche and in relationships. Stern (1996) suggests, in cases of unremembered childhood sexual abuse, that dissociation is "the appropriate model for motivated not-knowing in much of our clinical work . . . [and] that in the coming years, dissociation will come to be at least as important in psychoanalytic thought as repression is" (p. 255). Bromberg (1995a), in fact, suggests a role for dissociation in the conceptualization of all of the personality disorders; and indeed compartmentalization of mind and dissociative knowledge/affect-isolation do appear all across the personality disorder continuum.

For a child—who probably doesn't have the requisite language, abstraction, or symbolization skills to integrate the traumatic experience in the first place—dissociation under stress, particularly the stress of potential loss of (security with) attachment figures, may come more easily than it does for an adult. As Stern (1996) points out, all that the child might know is that something very horrible has happened, that something feels wrong, and/or that something is confusing: sexual abuse might be encoded as something bad that has to do with touching but might not be internalized as anything sexual per se. Since the confusing, disorganized events are disruptive and challenging to the smooth flow of self- and other-representations, the experience can then be split off (Horowitz, 1986); without a narrative context, fragments not encoded or sequentially linked and ordered may or may not result in a viable memory (Stern, 1996).[2] Unlike repression, according to Stern, such dissociative experience is not ejected from consciousness. "Rather, the experience never enters consciousness at all. It is dissociated, never known, at least not in any clear and emotionally salient way. In most conscious respects, it is as if the experience never really happened" (p. 258).

For some relational theorists (e.g., Hirsch, 1994), dissociation occurs across a continuum of problems and represents split-off, internalized interpersonal configurations and the affects associated with them. For others, dissociation as a defense, as a social process, as a significant "arranger" of traumatic human experience, is the container and deflector, the divider and conqueror, the protector and destroyer of self, other, and terror within the internalized psychic landscape of trauma. According to Stern (1996), dissociation is *both* a means of coping and a significant resource for constructing views of the self and the world. It is not (p. 259), "necessarily limited to the absolute prevention of experience; it often merely drains experience of the feeling and the potential for narrative vigor that even the most terrible memory must have to be real." As Stern points out, when personalities are built around this sort of absence, the possibilities for articulating experiences of abuse become increasingly remote; adult victims who have dissociated abuse experiences may remember only "unformulated shards of something that there may not even be any words for, because there were none at the time" (p.258).

Under conditions of trauma, the acquired, developmentally adaptive illusion of unified mental functioning becomes impossible and is useless in coping with overwhelming threat. In Bromberg's (1996b) view, the traumatized mind resorts to the primitive but effective device of dissociation. The foremost goal is to absolutely avoid the repetition of trauma. Of course, the dissociative defense creates only the illusion of invulnerability—it cannot guarantee any real protection from pain and danger. What is actually avoided are the memories, feelings, and meanings of the trauma. The tragic irony about dissociatively organized experience is that it sets up the individual using it for what Kluft (1990) calls the "sitting duck syndrome," where revictimization is almost inevitable.[3] The individual dissociates the very knowledge needed to protect him/herself and prevent repetitions of traumatic relational experiences (Van der Kolk, 1989); the pressures of unintegrated relational experience toward manifestation in reenactment are intense.

Thus, paradoxically, dissociative experience, while out of awareness is continually replayed in relationships. Dissociation gathers strength as an organizing/disorganizing architect within psyche, social system, and culture, in the fertile medium of chronic, uninterrupted, and unrecognized trauma. Dissociation is the tricksterlike process of human self-protection/self-deception that can sever and recombine, sequester and nullify, neutralize and reorganize, experience, over time (i.e., destroying time), at unconscious prompting, and, sometimes, at will.

Goldberg's (1995) discussion of the "sensory cocoon" of the dissociative patient's life experience and self-construction, along with his emphasis on the requisite deceptive practices, exquisitely captures one of the primary characteristics of dissociation—a kind of autism, along with an exile from both the interpersonal world and the tumultuous and passionate internal world of the psyche. It forecloses, however, the dialectical nature of dissociative process, which involves more of an interplay of permeability and impermeability, authenticity and inauthenticity, hiding and seeking, and "hope and dread," to use Mitchell's (1993) apt description.

Winnicott's (1965) formulations of the true and false self are more useful in their acknowledgment of the struggles of neglected and assaulted individuals who must creatively resolve the dilemmas of survival and attachment, live long enough and develop enough psychologically to have the opportunity to experience transformative relationships. Eigen's (1996) essential elaboration on Winnicott's formulation describes the false self as protecting the true self, or acting as a substitute or counterfeit. In this view, the false self capitalizes on the weakness, shame, and grief of the true self; the false self converts the true self's hatred of its corruptibility to hatred of weakness as such, and gloats over the true self's shame, provoking it to hide, disappear, or seek the false self's protection.

On the other hand, such dichotomies as true/false, real/unreal, authentic/inauthentic do not reflect the subjective experience of the dissociative patient, whose mind embraces multiple and always shifting positions to cope with dissociated vulnerability and dissociated terror and pain. Further, the dissociating patient is always simultaneously galvanizing and destroying hope in an effort to leave the door open for transformative contact while also insisting on preserving his/her readiness for the return of past trauma (Bromberg, 1995a). By sustaining an ongoing traumatic internal reality, played out and reinforced through enactments, in which potential pain and exploitation are always just around the next corner, the dissociating patient paradoxically creates his/her own position of safety from which to negotiate change and new object experience.

Bromberg's theory is grounded in his sensitivity to the dissociative patient's paradoxical need for insularity and contact, to be permeable and impermeable, to simultaneously reveal and conceal, and most of all, to "preserve the dissociative structure while surrendering it" (p. 521).[4] The patient's duplicity, dissimulation, and confabulation—frustrating as they might be for the clinician—must be contextualized in their full paradoxicality through their relationship to survival, self-destruction, and, most of all, hope. Otherwise, as clinicians and theorists we run the risk of blaming the victim for his/her pathology, or wasting our energies decontextualizing the psychopathology from its origins in the helplessness of trauma (and efforts to avoid retraumatization). This is an extremely seductive and appealing possibility since the strains of working with these patients—the effects of being at the mercy of dissociative strategies—can lead to countertransference enactments of all kinds including the intellectualization of theories that are themselves based in a collapse of paradoxical thinking and on camouflaged sadism, despair, and hatred of the patient.

Bromberg's invaluable contributions to psychoanalytic dissociation theory serve as the most essential theoretical backbone of this book precisely because he has systematically integrated awareness of the "experience-near" description of the dissociative process and its underlying motivations with a great respect for the patient's struggle and an informed awareness of the dangers and pitfalls of treating dissociative patients.

> Because the anticipation of misfortune is the principal way a traumatized person protects himself from future trauma, the promise of cure (which is always implied by a therapist, even if not explicitly stated) makes the process of attempting to free a traumatized patient from the expectation of misfortune probably the most complex treatment issue a psychoanalyst faces. (1996a, p. 64)

Bromberg's thoroughgoing appreciation of the paradoxes inherent in the treatment of dissociative disorders paves the way for transcending some of the divisiveness that has existed in the professional discourse about dissociation. In order for a traumatized individual to allow his/her self-truth to be revealed, and then altered by the impact of the therapist and the therapy relationship, the therapist must join with the patient's system, and yet simultaneously stay separate from it. That is, the therapist must maintain his/her own self-observation and sensitivity to the symbolic and metaphoric significance of the patient's experience, while at the same time entering deeply into and joining with the patient's experience, psychic material, history, and personified self-organization. Finally, the therapist must view psychological health as "the ability to stand in the spaces between realities without losing any of them—the capacity to feel like one self while being many" (Bromberg, 1993, p. 166).

When the arrogance of isolation is replaced with the appreciation of relationship and affective connection, tension-states that promote integration are sustained rather than bypassed. In Bromberg's terms (1996b) such developmental shifts facilitate the development of the capacity for "genuine repression" including activation of self-reflection and the interpretive and collaborative restructuring of identity. This idea of "genuine repression" is not just semantic: it emphasizes the fact that many individuals can be primarily organized by dissociation, that repression is in fact a developmental advance that has been underestimated as an actual achievement, and that it takes a capacity for conflict tolerance and a workable, healthy illusion of a unitary self to make repression possible.

Dissociation is a method of conflict avoidance. Repression implies consciousness of conflict and a self with enough continuity and capacity to experience conflict. Hence, repression is a developmental achievement that evolves out of a negotiation process of previously unlinked self-states. The presence of intrapsychic conflict, which stands in contrast to dissociative enactments and evasion, is what fuels developmental progress and the humanizing process of psychotherapy. Ultimately, this negotiation process leads to a capacity for authenticity in the present, and, as Bromberg says, "ownership of an authentic past." This means having a self, with feeling, continuity, reflectivity, responsibility, and presence—not necessarily an absence of multiplicity. In trauma-theory terms (Van der Kolk, 1996) this developmental shift is tantamount to creating the capacity for the patient to be mindful of current experience while creating symbolic representations of past experience, with the goals of taming traumatic terror and desomatizing memories.

MERGING EPISTEMOLOGIES OF RELATIONAL AND DISSOCIATION THEORIES

Relational positions try to respect the dialectical tensions between the intrapsychic and the interpersonal domains of psychological experience, to move beyond either/or dichotomous thinking and to appreciate the power of interpersonal trauma and malevolent social and interpersonal contexts in shaping affects and self- and object-representations. Relational approaches, deeply indebted to feminist critiques, move beyond simplistic notions of neutrality, resistance, or the unitary self; in the case of trauma survivors, they integrate knowledge of the damage done with the strengths and healthy resistances to domination buried and camouflaged beneath the maze of symptoms and traumatic reenactments. In this view, severe dissociation and pathological multiplicity (definable as the internalization of malevolent power dynamics leading to hierarchical structuring of subjectivity, and not as some inherent defect in or manipulation by the individual) can be seen simultaneously as problem and solution, as a method of re-creating and transcending personal and social history. Both relational and feminist theories privilege the multiplicity of human consciousness, describing the various ways in which the individual's normal multiplicity is feared, suppressed, and manipulated in the service of survival and developmental challenge (Mitchell, 1993; Flax, 1993; Bromberg, 1993; Rivera, 1996).

Current psychoanalytic understanding of the decentered nature of self acknowledges the discontinuous and shifting states of consciousness and the healthy illusion of unitary selfhood in a dialectical relationship (Bromberg, 1996b). Since the processes of subjectivity are overdetermined and contextual, the human mind is not homogeneous, unitary, lawful, or internally consistent (Flax, 1993). For Flax, the concept of a unitary self is unnecessary, impossible, and a potentially dangerous illusion: "unity is an effect of domination, repression, and the temporary success of particular rhetorical strategies" (p. 50). The self consists of multiple self-states, an interplay of co-creating systems, which are neither spatially situated nor temporally fixed at some endpoint of stratified, archaeologically accrued development (Bromberg, 1993; Mitchell, 1993). The previous notion of a unified self gives way in relational thought to a view of the self as an "amalgamation of many fragments, narrative threads and voices" (Kennedy, 1996, p. 95; see also Mitchell, 1993); coherence, permeability, and integration of these many voices are regarded as the central issues in evaluating mental health and maturity.

Recent contributions from the trauma/dissociation and feminist literature are consistent with this emerging paradigm of multiple self-states. Feminist perspectives highlight the role of dominant cultural and political ideologies in the conceptualization of the self. bell hooks (1995), for example, claims that "psychoanalytically, it is clear that the unitary self is sustained only by acts of coercive control and repression" (p. 249). For hooks, the focus on unitary identity oppresses minority groups by rendering invisible the complex and multiple subjectivity of individuals. Consistent with this is Flax's (1993) view that the unitary self is only sustained by splitting off or repressing other parts of its own or others' subjectivities.

In discussing the nature of subjectivity, Flax (1993) reminds us that temporary coherence into apparently solid characteristics or structures is only one of the many possible expressions of human subjectivity and personality. Flax's view, which embodies a prescription for the treatment of severely dissociative individuals, emphasizes fluidity over solidity, process rather than topographical perspectives, and contextual rather than universal outlooks in conceptualizing self-development. In this framework no singular form of the self is the regulative ideal or the absolute definition or objective of human evolution and maturity.

Colin Ross's (1991) view of multiplicity as a normal organizational principle of the human psyche is in harmony with these conceptualizations, although it emphasizes psychological, spiritual, and anthropological implications. According to Ross, in Western industrialized culture natural multiplicity has been suppressed by a "cultural dissociation barrier" that separates out the executive self or dissociated ego from the mind's other part-selves. Ross compares this system of executive ego domination to a kind of "internal apartheid." As Goodwin (1993a) also points out, in our society many of us pretend that our everyday, pragmatic executive personas are the only selves we have—and we forget that not everyone shares this assumption. She, like Ross, reminds us that older cultures often provide ritualized arenas for state-changes in individual consciousness (grief states, ecstasies, regressions, and displays of anger and revenge, etc.). In psychotherapy with trauma survivors who have anything but a unitary worldview, mood state, or philosophical stance, the therapist may feel overwhelmed, disoriented, or manipulated not only by the content of the patient's state-changes but also by the suddenness of their onset.

As a disorder based on caretakers' misuse of power (domination, betrayal, sadism, neglect), DID is the ultimate paradigm of the collapse of the transitional, the dialectical, and the paradoxical in intrapsychic and interpersonal life. Contrary to most public misrepresentations of the disorder, diversity is dangerous to, and the illusion of unity highly valued by, the DID individual. What is reflected in MPD/DID symptomatology is the quintessential paradigm of hierarchy and authoritarian power imbalances—the one dominating and negating the many and the many either silenced, begging for recognition, or complicitous with the power of the one or the few. From Ross's (1991) and hooks's (1995) perspective, these forms of internalized domination and polarization reflect and are reinforced by the patterns of power enactments in the dominant culture, but also the domination and coercion of child-abuse scenarios synergistically reinforce and reify dissociative practices and support the feigning of a unitary self commonly found in severely dissociative patients. The social arrangements and intrapsychic phenomena rooted in hierarchical relationships of oppression can only lead to reification of dissociative barriers where denigration and disempowerment are internalized and where paradox, inclusivity, and ambiguity are occluded by hypervigilance and dichotomous thinking.

RELATIONAL PERSPECTIVES ON TREATMENT

Relational models offer particularly useful perspectives in approaching chronic-trauma-syndrome patients whose subjective worlds are complex survivalist constructions, whose core developmental processes have been assaulted and derailed throughout childhood, and whose patterns of relatedness are organized around domination and abuse. The emphasis of relational theories on internal structuralization of human experience and concomitant, recurrent patterns of behavior and fantasy (Stolorow et al., 1987) encourages articulation of the patient's intricately woven subjective organization, its traumatic origins, and the relational processes that maintain it. Moreover, the philosophical premises underlying most relational theories insist on the development of the therapist's alertness to the dangers of imposing his/her theory or perspectives upon the patient's subjective experience. This sensitivity can minimize further psychological violations of already chronically traumatized individuals.

It is not only therapists, however, who may contribute to the obfuscation of severely dissociative patients' internal experience. Some voices of consciousness are purposely lost, forgotten, and forced underground by perpetrator/victim relationship dynamics and complicitous cultural contexts. In such cases, coercive dissociative conditions and the barriers to locating, experiencing, and believing the internal voices are developed into personified part-selves whose function is to feign unity of consciousness, block reflection, and interfere with remembering trauma or experiencing traumatic affects—to delegitimize the multiplicity of internalized voices and block evidence for a dissociative diagnosis. Hence the early work of therapeutic encounter and dialogue is to access the multiplicity of voices and the barriers (cloaking devices, hostile alter personalities, addictions, distractions, dissimulation, lying, cover stories) to experiencing these "forgotten" voices and parts of the self, and to create an arena where the voices can interact and perhaps confront one another for the first time in the presence of a *protective witness*.

Sometimes these opportunities are created by the therapist's wedging him/herself (or accidentally stumbling) into the spaces between the patient's fragmented states and experiences with a question, an empathic commentary, a confrontation, or a statement about his/her own experience in the moment of the transaction. Sometimes the most helpful thing to do is to draw the patient's attentions to gaps, inconsistencies, and subtle shifts in behavior and relatedness in an effort toward mutual reflection. As Levenson (1996) explains from an interpersonal perspective, the self-system is a conglomeration of defenses operating to maintain self-equilibrium and minimize the emergence of situations that threaten to evoke anxiety. These defenses may include inattention, avoidance, disavowal, and, most relevant to severely dissociative individuals, a series of interpersonal maneuvers designed to distract, deflect, and in general, to contain anxiety. Therapeutic inquiry, according to Levenson, is more about *deconstructing stories and locating omissions*. Investigating omissions is a search for the absences or black holes in the patient's narrative that represent the repository of anxiety and issues or experiences being excluded from awareness.

In the severe dissociative disorders, transforming the relationship with the past means what Winnicott (1965) called turning "ghosts into ancestors." It involves overthrowing the yoke of psychic slavery, organized and sustained by terrorizing, possessive/possessing imperial part-selves (i.e., malevolent introjects, personified identifications with the perpetrator), and establishing an intrapsychic democracy where neither ghosts nor tyrannical ancestors have any dominion. This revolution can impact positively on the capacities for hope, for symbolizing, for deploying restorative fantasy (Smith, 1989; Reis, 1993; Pizer, 1998; Schwartz, 1994). Through the systematic repairing of memory and imagination (Pye, 1995), the dissociative-disorder patient moves from being a victim of his/her mind (and of control by the perverse mind of the perpetrator) to authentic ownership of that mind and body and spirit.

The term "relational" implies a focus on relationship not only with other people and things but also with internal personifications and representations (Ghent, 1992a). That focus in treatment is essential to facilitate the shift from dissociation to negotiation of meanings, conflicts, and identifications (Bromberg, 1993; 1994; Pizer, 1992; 1996; Schwartz, 1994). Addressing individual subnarratives, each in its own terms, and enabling negotiation to take place between them is the essence of structural personality growth (Bromberg, 1991). But negotiation can take place only when there are intersections—crossroads of emotional contact—instead of dissociative sleight-of-hand, camouflage, and the internal reenactment of forgetting and suppressing voices of pain or protest. Successful recognition among dissociated self-states leads to what Rivera (1989) calls the capacity to identify (with) different points of view and divergent voices as "I" rather than singling out any one as the whole story, and what Bromberg (1993, p. 166) calls "the ability to stand in the spaces between realities without losing any of them." The presence, distortions, and absence of relationship are critical avenues of therapeutic inquiry leading to engagement with all aspects of the patient's self/selves. The dissociative patient's elaborate matrices of exclusion and avoidance of anxiety (often posttraumatic anxiety) must become the focus for a renegotiation of non-trauma-based identity to take place.

Proponents of self psychology (Kohut, 1971), intersubjectivity theory (Stolorow, et al., 1987; Orange et al., 1997), and relational psychoanalysis (Mitchell, 1988; 1993; Aron, 1996) all agree that rigid application of theory must be transcended in order to encounter and then interpret from affective and empathic proximity the patient's inner experience. Emphasizing the uniqueness and integrity of the individual and his or her way of representing the world, they mandate that the therapist enter and comment on the patient's experience from the patient's frame of reference (Kohut, 1959; Stolorow et al., 1987), rather than impose a priori assumptions about who the patient is or what s/he needs. This stance is crucial to the treatment of individuals who have survived chronic violent impingement by figuring out what others expect from them. Prior to therapy, no one has engaged these objectified and dehumanized individuals in authentic dialogue. Even well-intended therapists who impose a predetermined set of meanings on the patient's life experiences can fall into the trap of replicating their domination by the caretakers of their lost childhood worlds. Intersubjective and relational perspectives are inherently inimical to power dynamics and their potential for derailing treatment; those dynamics are defused when confronted explicitly as part of the therapeutic discourse rather than tacitly legitimized and made subject to enactment.

A QUESTION OF BALANCE: PARADOX, TRAUMA, AND SEVERE DISSOCIATIVE DISORDERS

Because dissociative experience is fundamentally paradoxical (me/not me, real/not real, past/not past, present/not present, them/not them), internality and externality are collapsed in the psyches of patients with severe posttraumatic conditions. Their reversals of ownership and responsibility, real and false identifications with victim and perpetrator positions, and motivated forgetting of complicity and collaboration epitomize the posttraumatic fluctuations in their psychic states. Many severely dissociative patients have trouble knowing what they are actually responsible for: they may assign themselves excessive responsibility for everything that has happened to them, for forcing their caretakers to be abusive or for enjoying the abuse, that is, for events/conditions objectively beyond their control. Yet at other times they feel they are innocent victims—although often of the therapist, rather than the abusers—and they have difficulty accepting responsibility for frustrating the caring responses of people around them (therapists included).

It has been difficult for the mental health professions and the media to understand the essential paradoxical, biphasic feature of trauma, PTSD, and the dissociative disorders whereby DID patients describe, then deny negative views of their caretakers/abusers; remember, then (from moment to moment or month to month) recant abuse memories; and alternate between believing and doubting virtually everything they themselves say about their histories, identities, and most of all their victimizers. Baffled by the complexity and reversibility of the psyches of these patients, clinicians can be hard-pressed to come up with reasonable and responsible attitudes toward them. "One does not want to minimize the pathogenicity of external trauma, but one does not want to place such trauma on a pedestal, from where it can crowd out the internal amplifications that are likewise pathogenic" (Wilson, 1995, p. 18).

Psychic trauma involves the forced recognition of realities that most people have not yet begun to face. It often manifests as history that has no place: it does not belong in the past, where the trauma was not fully experienced; and it does not belong in the present, where its precise images and reenactments either are not fully understood or are totally denied, minimized, or reformulated (by listeners, helpers, and society as a whole) into more palatable representations.[5]

The clinical use of the concept of paradox has been a major contribution to the psychoanalytic literature. It came first from Winnicott (1969; 1971), and has been elaborated by various relational theorists (Benjamin, 1990; Modell, 1990; Ghent, 1992a, 1992b; Eigen, 1981; Pizer, 1992; 1996; 1998). Paradox includes the realm of the *transitional* where reality and fantasy can become wonderfully indistinguishable, where there is no point in determining whether a psychic element is reality- or fantasy-based. Even mutually exclusive elements can coexist in a mind that can successfully negotiate the paradox of, say, the father as the man who sadistically rapes the patient as a child in the basement when no one is looking, and as also the one who saves him/her from abuse or neglect by the mother, or as the only one in the family or the world who doesn't ignore him/her or who treats him/her specially.

The developmental perspectives of relational psychoanalytic theory have placed particular value on the individual's capacities for tolerance of both conflict and paradox leading to integration and maturation of the personality. Winnicott (1971) regards the failure to perceive and tolerate a paradoxical reality as a defensive operation of the ego. Indeed, he asks therapists to tolerate and respect paradoxes, and to try not to resolve them prematurely. Ghent (1992b) states that paradoxes must be acknowledged also without attempted resolution yet at the same time be viewed as directional signals pointing to a new level of comprehension. Pizer (1992) conceives the negotiation of paradox as the essential vehicle of the therapeutic action of psychoanalysis. Within the preservation and sustained experience of paradox lie the capacities for play, creativity, and flexibility in the development of the self and relational worlds.

The mind of the severely dissociative patient cannot bridge contradictions, however, as a result of its overload of discords and incongruities. Instead of functioning as a plastic container for mutually inconsistent representations, identifications, or memories, it operates out of fear of disintegration or retraumatization. Instead of using intrapsychic conflict to develop increasingly sophisticated resolutions, it avoids mental conflict altogether in order to sustain an illusion of unity and normalcy, and to conserve the psychic energy necessary to minimize painful states and sustain necessary attachments. There is great utility in incorporating paradox into our understanding of the nature and treatment of dissociative conditions, where intrapsychic conflict is somaticized or reenacted interpersonally but never felt, and ambivalence is a distant and dangerous possibility.

PARADOX AND THE DID DIAGNOSIS

Colin Ross (1995a; 1996), viewing DID as inherently paradoxical, says it is both real and not real. It is not real because no one can possibly have more than one actual person living inside—the alters or self-states in MPD/DID are not real persons or personalities; they are dissociative symptoms. On the other hand, the disorder is quite real because those very symptoms (alter personalities or split-off self-states) are subjectively compelling to the patient, and often to the therapist. Whereas skeptics get fixated on only one part of the paradox, that of one body/one person, the therapist must work inside the whole paradox to maintain viable connections inside and outside the patient's internal world. The therapist's mandate is to neither dismiss nor become overly engrossed in the virtual reality of multiple selves, to work *within* the patient's dissociative frame of reference instead of debating with the patient about its existence.

In other words, multiplicity is both a "useful heuristic" (Beahrs, 1994), not to be taken completely literally, and a legitimate complex posttraumatic stress disorder to be treated on its own (structural) terms—one whose real phenomenology reflects rigidification, concretization, and in some sense perversion, of normal processes or aspects of selfhood and self-development. We must acknowledge the existence of multiple internal realities and their potential for dissociation and personification in the alterity phenomenon of MPD/DID, and we must also focus on the intrapsychic and relational meanings behind the organizational and representational decisions and movements of the dissociative process as it takes place during the therapy hours. The structural and transferential elements of DID must be considered dialectically and simultaneously.

Yet another paradoxical aspect of DID is that it is both a complex character-disorder syndrome and a complex, multilayered posttraumatic stress disorder. Chronic child-abuse trauma leads to specific character problems including disturbances in relationship patterns, intimacy, and sexuality, manipulativeness, chronic defensiveness, avoidance, and so on. (Briere, 1992b), and the character pathology can in turn lead to a vulnerability to revictimization experiences (Van der Kolk, 1989; Herman, 1992). That dialectic can become a reciprocally reinforcing spiral that keeps the patient in a state of continuous traumatic reliving—actual and symbolic. Therapy must address both sides of the dynamic while remaining sensitive to the need for homeostasis in the individual's self-system, the objective being creation of the right relational conditions to maintain continuity and negotiate change simultaneously (Bromberg, 1993; 1994).

The pathway to accessing hidden meanings and hidden aspects of the self, and to articulating traumatic relational paradigms reenacted between therapist and patient is a microanalytic focus on the moment-to-moment shifts in the patient, in the therapist, and in the interactional process. Overemphasis on the intrapsychic content and structural manifestations of severe dissociative disorders may lead to reifying the symptoms of survival, but overemphasis on the process and transference alone, to the exclusion of the dissociatively organized and shifting subjectivity of the patient, may lead to an abstract, distancing approach to treatment that misses the mark of direct contact with dissociatively sequestered self-experience.

Only *direct contact* with dissociative self-states with their alterations in perception has the capacity to change the cognitive realities, transform the rigid internal worlds, and challenge the belief systems of severe trauma survivors. Direct contact with the affective and perceptual substrate of dissociative part-selves allows the therapist to penetrate the trance logic or rigidified belief system contained in that part-self, to ascertain some of the historical events, perpetrator messages, and fantasies that consolidated the cognitions and motivations of that part-self, and to gently disrupt that system. This process culminates in facilitating the patient's experience of new thoughts, revealing old and experiencing new feelings, and in the strengthening of an observing ego. Ultimately such contact, and disruption of the dissociative construction of self followed by reintegration, leads to the patient's reclaiming of his/her own mind and life.

Entry to the perceptual substrate (memories, somatic sensations, fantasies, beliefs, etc.) walled off in dissociative chambers is often catalyzed when the therapist notices subtle changes in his/her own experience, in the patient's behavior or communication style, or in their interaction. Empathic inquiry about, or mention of, the change in sensory, affective, or thought process can lead to drawing out of self-states or alter personalities not previously engaged in treatment. By paradoxically accepting and disrupting the ideologies of individual self-states, their mutual exclusion and domination, the therapist can establish a foundation for dialogue in and among part-selves whose relationship was previously defined by impermeability and control.

For example, helping a desexualized host personality understand and accept that her highly sexualized alter personalities—trained to initiate sex with adults in the contexts of child prostitution and pornography—are also victims, also vulnerable, and also deserving of respect assisted the patient in moving through some of her shame and disavowal of her past traumas and resulting dissociative identifications; simultaneously assisting her seductive alters in recognizing that their need for attention had been purposefully sexualized by her perpetrators liberated them to experience a level of vulnerability previously segregated to the host and traumatized child-states. Likewise, supporting the capacity of a patient victimized by his father as part of a man-boy pedophile group to accept and dialogue with the parts of himself that believed he *chose* to kill small animals as well as the parts that believed he was "blackmailed" into doing so when the group threatened to tell his mother about his sexual "compliance" rendered the dissociative barriers between his self-states more permeable and gave him more access to grief, rage, and sorrow. This integrative process interferes with the pathological agency and relative defensive autonomy of part-selves that have dissociated from the current environment and from information that is not consistent with what has already been accepted as "real." Eventually, the patient's lifestyle of dissociation can be converted into a lifestyle of differentiation.

PARADOX IN THEORY AND PRACTICE

The compulsive, dangerous, and often repetitive reenactments of the past that define so much of a trauma survivor's life experience cannot be viewed simply as testimony to the traumatic event(s) themselves (Caruth, 1995b). Paradoxically these reenactments bear witness to a past that was never fully experienced as it occurred. Traumatic symptoms register the force of an experience not yet owned or known. In the space of unconsconsciousness the event is preserved in its literality; it is fully exposed only in connection, and only through relationship, with another place in another time.

This book proposes paradox, along with recognition and mutuality, as a central principle of therapy with severely dissociative patients. Paradox changes that which is in its orbit; dissociation keeps things as they are, frozen in time, space, and character. The intersubjective processes of recognition and mutuality lead toward the paradoxical awareness that can be transformative: "paradox stretches us and invites us to transcend the familiar, it expands the purview of awareness and poses a mystery" (Ghent, 1992b, pp. 136–137).

Ehrenberg (1992) counsels psychotherapists to sensitize traumatized patients to the real tragedies they have suffered at the hands of others and to the ongoing tragedies they perpetuate against themselves. Bromberg (1996a) advises the therapist also to be clear that his/her goal is not to cure patients of something that was done to them in the past, but to cure them of what they still do to themselves (and to others) to cope with what was done in the past.

According to many relational theorists following in the spirit of Winnicott (1971), effective therapy consists of a containing space in which illusions can flourish and in which multiple realities can collide and intersect. When the DID patient can experience the contrast between his/her archaic objects, internalized traumatic relational paradigms, or posttraumatic belief systems and the therapist's reality against a backdrop permissive of doubt, suspicion, and incredulity, then the rigidified dissociative self-system will slowly begin to tolerate increasing conflict and ambiguity. The patient will, in turn, substitute less rigid defenses and come to establish an identity based on a more complex, multidimensional view of self and others.

ALICE

DID patients' memories are stored in layers. The emergence of new material from the underlayers—previously unthought and as yet unintegrated—is typically accompanied or interrupted by some kind of reenactment. This case is no exception.

Alice had been making progress in her professional and interpersonal life. By the early middle phase of treatment, she was acting out less and spontaneously remembering more. She had just started going beyond her sexual abuse by her stepfather and grandfather, which she had originally romanticized as signaling specialness and love—notions elaborated in her imagination to make the physical and emotional pain of her victimization more bearable—to discover material suggesting that she had also been subjected to violent, sadistic abuse.

Those recollections, totally at odds with the beliefs she had constructed to sustain her attachment to her perpetrators, inundated Alice and triggered a sudden change in her posture, some apparent confusion, rapid eye movements, and several minutes of nonresponsiveness to my gentle questioning—whereupon a somewhat sexualized child-alter surfaced, who said she was scared and asked if I would let her sit on my lap.

Trying to contain my own discomfort, I asked about the connection between her fears and her need for physical contact. Alice, seeming a mixture of conscious and unconscious alters fronted by a childlike state, replied that my holding her would make her feel safe enough to talk; later she added that it would make the bad feelings go away. All efforts to invite her to talk about her experience without physical contact were met with either stubborn silence or a sorrowful look.

When I tried to articulate the double bind we were in together ("I need words to understand what you're feeling, what you're afraid of, and why you're insisting on physical touch as the only solution—and you need me to hold you so that you can tell me"), because that strategy is usually effective with DID patients, Alice said only that maybe she shouldn't have come today. When then I reminded her that other personalities in the system claimed that when her stepfather "invited" her to sit on his lap he would fondle her genitals as a prelude to escalating sexual involvement, Alice said that her stepfather had told her he loved her and that touching was an expression of love.

I suggested that sex and affection were all mixed up in her life, that she has been willing to pay a big price for love but that real love doesn't have a price tag, and that her other part-selves too seem confused about self-protection and self-sacrifice. She asked the meaning of the word "sacrifice"—and I referred her to her other parts for the answer because I didn't want to completely support this child-alter's delusion of complete separateness (such that, unlike other alters, she either didn't know or pretended she didn't know she wasn't the size of a child), but also because I was frustrated by the lack of participation by her other parts and wanted her to listen to their voices in her head (especially about subjects that have already been discussed several times in treatment with different alters).

In a quiet moment, the other parts did explain sacrifice to her; her anxiety increased noticeably, then shifted to what I perceived as a stance correlated to anxiety-reduction and control when Alice iterated her conviction that I was rejecting her by refusing her the oasis of my lap. I speculated aloud that doing otherwise—symbolically adopting her, in keeping with another of her requests, as yet another sexualizing father—would not be helping her come to terms with what really happened but would be helping to keep her away from the pain. I want to hear about the pain, I tell her, so we can understand her feelings and her needs around sex and affection. (Alice had a history of dangerous promiscuity, including an almost complete inability to say no to anyone initiating sexual contact with her, and also a history of sexual compulsivity for managing painful states of mind.)

When, after considering my comments silently for a time, Alice's child-alter again declared that my refusal to hold her proved that she was unlovable, I remarked that her pressuring me was similar to her stepfather's pressuring her. I expanded (in slightly less complex language than I used with Alice's adult alters) on the reenactment that might be going on.

Now she reverted to bargaining about hugs instead of lap-sitting until I asserted that I was not comfortable with that kind of physical contact, that it felt forced, and that I believed that—even if it remained nonsexual as she claimed she trusted it would—it would be bewildering to someone whose life has been freighted with so much confusion about sex and affection. I added that I could see how not getting the kind of validation she was used to could itself be upsetting and bewildering, but I reminded her that I was here to discuss just those feelings.

Trying to link in other elements of Alice's dissociative system, I also reminded her that many of her other parts didn't like or trust me (some hating to be touched at all), and accordingly would not be supportive of the intimacy she is after. I was assuming, as always, that despite some amnestic barriers, I was addressing the whole patient, and I spoke (as I usually do) as if the whole patient (i.e., including adult parts) was listening, bringing up natural love feelings toward parents, sexualized attachment, desires to avoid pain, and some episodes from

Alice's history, as well as the ongoing reenactment of seduction, sacrifice, and rejection.

Finally, a break: as Alice again lamented that no one loved her or ever would, I observed how deep her shame—the feeling of unlovability—was, and I wondered if other parts counted on her to hold or resolve through physical contact that feeling for them; I commented on the pressure of her wish to be held and wondered what that might be about. Unable to sustain the child position with intensifying affect, Alice shifted to a more adultlike presentation to tell me how people would just use her, so she would take whatever she can get from them and then feel even worse.

I fixed on her shifts between feeling special and protected and feeling unlovable and worthless, and on how long she has been managing them by switching from vulnerability to control and seduction. Her needs could be met without her selling herself out, I repeated, and without her trying to get me to do the same by crossing a professional boundary or doing something that didn't feel right. "We can work hand in hand without touching," I said—and Alice and her child alter, shifting back and forth, at last seemed connected to feelings and began to talk about her mother's complicity in giving her to her stepfather the first time. Something had broken through the stalemate.

The adult (host/functional) alter, who had been moderately coconscious for most of the session, interjected her impression that I seemed overly interested in the abuse experience she had started out describing. "One voice in my head said you were getting turned on by it, another said it would make you angry, and the other said no, you just wanted to help me find a way to talk about it as you always do."

"So you had three different, strong reactions to my encouraging you to talk and you became overwhelmed and you switched. In response to the perception that I found it sexually gratifying to hear the details, you went into a child state to manage the possible sexual interaction—just as you've said you used to do with your stepfather." I hypothesized that it seemed safer to replay a familiar abuse scenario to ward off the more dangerous awareness that was emerging, and Alice agreed, answering that the choice was automatic.

Then she asked me an uncharacteristically direct question, which I acknowledged as a promisingly authentic communication showing her ability to hang in with her anxiety instead of dodging it and taking dissociative flight as she had throughout her life. "Were you aroused and stimulated by what I was saying?"

I reflected a moment and said no, that I had actually been feeling some revulsion and that I was trying to contain that feeling without making her feel that she, rather than what she was beginning to tell me, was revolting . . . and also that I was listening real hard since she seemed to be bringing up an entirely new level of trauma. Alice said she picked up on the revulsion but did think it was about her. "Arousal and revulsion are all mixed up in me." Alice was able to make use of these comments to begin sorting out some of her own past and present confusion about sex, affection, and free will and to increase her self-observational skills regarding her dissociative system.

Toward the end of the session, pressing the intimacy further and perhaps seeking (or testing) further safety, Alice asked me if I would acknowledge sexual arousal when asked about it if indeed I ever did experience such feelings when she or other patients talked about traumatic material. Because there was little time left and the question was so potentially loaded and complicated, I told Alice that I would give her a brief answer for now but that further discussion was essential. After briefly exploring what she felt her own needs would be in this context (and she admitted she was not sure she would ever even want to know), I explained that many feelings I experienced during sessions would remain part of my private reflections on our clinical process and only some would seem appropriate for sharing. How, when, where, and with whom to share them were decisions I had to make on a case-by-case, moment-by-moment basis. I also explained that honesty, intimacy, and authenticity were not necessarily equivalent to revealing all feelings.

In our ensuing dialogues about what had just taken place, I told Alice how hard it is to know what and when patients and therapists should share, but added that I felt it important that she stay with her own traumatic material and feelings about the therapy relationship and explore whatever was coming up. Alice expressed relief at being treated with (unaccustomed) respect "like a real person" and pleasure at hearing what was going on for me. She also, however, commented that such treatment made her feel pressured to "show up" more completely (i.e., to be direct and vulnerable and self-aware simultaneously)—which was something that would take some getting used to.[6]

The work in this session seemed to create the space in Alice to remember more of the sadistic abuse and to tolerate holding contradictory feelings about her perpetrators. She began to realize how her requests for physical contact correlated with strategies she had used as a child to bargain for less painful treatment. And she recalled how, when her relationship with her perpetrators changed from one of seduction to one of terrorization, she had feebly attempted to restore the milder sexual exploitation.

As a rule, any increase in intimacy can trigger immediate fears of retraumatization in treatment of severely dissociative trauma survivor patients. Alice had never come to terms with the facts that her omnipotent approaches to controlling her abusers had not worked and that recapitulating them in her adult life only brought her trouble. Now these connections were becoming directly accessible, through affect and memory, and were not just abstractions.

It was not yet time for Alice to completely relinquish using dissociation to manage her here-and-now interpersonal challenges; it was clear that she had to be allowed to play with moving back and forth among her alter-states as a way of negotiating changes in her identity and sense of history without feeling that she would have to give anything up before she was ready. I needed to respect her dissociative defenses—to honor her need to change and stay the same without imposing my impatience, expectations, or agendas.

Later in our work I was able to share my frustration in the face of her dissociative flight and her ways of projecting rejection onto others: she had cultivated a talent for leaving the relational field while pretending to be engaged. Alice was increasingly open to feedback about her interpersonal style, and became a partner in a sturdy therapeutic alliance.

BEYOND SURVIVAL: HUMANIZATION, NEGOTIATION, REPARATION

In a relational psychoanalytic model of therapy, the truth emerges from a process of inquiry, discovery, argument, and agreement involving two people in psychological community (Spezzano, 1993). Through intersubjective discourse, dissociative strategies are replaced by pathways of free association, dialogue, and negotiation. Rigid identities based on false power and false helplessness can be renegotiated to create more fluidity among parts of the self previously compartmentalized and disowned, and a real sense of agency and a realistic appraisal of danger and limitations can begin to develop. Negotiation is directed at achieving some shared reality based on respect for the subjectivity of the other; it stands in marked contrast to communication processes such as indoctrination, forced compliance, submission, and unequal participation (Goldberg, 1988; Pizer, 1992).

Psychotherapy provides a container, a holding environment (Winnicott, 1969), a cohesive temporal-relational context (Bromberg, 1996a), an anchor of tenderness, where the past, present, and future can be reliably addressed by way of the enacted and observed interpersonal experience occurring between therapist and patient. In this process, there should be an effort to welcome and communicate with the patient's multiple voices, personifications, multiple subnarratives, and multiple (historical) perspectives. When such diverse self-representations are described, symbolized, and reenacted with a receptive and emotionally available therapist who has an informed awareness about the nature of trauma, including the subtleties of dissociative adaptation and identifications with perpetration and complicity, there is never a silencing of unwelcome or unacceptable voices (Rivera, 1989; Bromberg, 1993, 1994; Schwartz, 1994). Through the therapist's efforts to build a multidimensional relationship with the patient's fragmented self, the patient's voices are brought into contact and dialogue with each other, into a capacity for conflict and collision and eventually for mutuality and harmony.

The task of approaching traumatically sequestered aspects of self is a daunting one. Even when therapy is conducted in a thoughtful way by a skilled clinician, severely dissociative patients will experience aspects of the therapy process as similar to his or her abuse, leading perhaps to forms of unconscious opposition resembling what was felt toward the perpetrator during the original trauma. Bromberg (1991) posed the question of how psychotherapy can enable someone who has fought all his or her life to keep traumatic aspects of self-experience from being thought or exposed to find a voice and enter dialogue. How can a patient who has learned to maintain a sense of being in the face of chronic catastrophic anxieties learn to experience disorganization and chaos as generative and healing?

"Finally every conflict has to be fought out in the sphere of transference" (Freud, 1912, p. 104). The transference/countertransference matrix is the medium for healing. Enactments represent the forms and transformations of experience within it. This medium makes it possible for severe trauma survivors to revisit and make conscious the full house of malevolent object relations and activates a healing configuration where benign maternal and paternal images and playful, creative aggression replace self-defeating patterns and abusive identifications.

Through effective navigation of the transference/countertransference matrix, the therapist facilitates the transfer of *the unthought known* into thought (Bollas, 1987). The patient comes to experience elements of his or her being that have not been knowable before. This new form of knowing is enabled precisely because the therapist's position of stewarding "potential" and "transitional" space helps the patient to tolerate the experience of not knowing, in Ogden's (1989) sense, as well as other tension-states from where more authentic affective and relational experience emerge. The essential developmental experience of restitution following disruption (Kohut, 1977) is internalized by the severely dissociative patient who develops a confident expectation of humanizing responses from the internal and interpersonal worlds.

As the dissociative patient internalizes the therapist's inclusive, observational, and empathic stances, and the mutuality-based patterns of interaction and power negotiation, the patient begins to treat him/herself with compassion, creativity, and respect. From this there is a continual and gradual erosion of dissociative defenses that have distanced the patient from his/her own suffering. The nonredeemable suffering of unbridled reenactments, revictimization scenarios, and fear of grieving is replaced by "redemptive suffering," whereby the patient stays affectively connected and fully aware of him/herself during periods of taking reownership of the previously disavowed and disparaged victim-self. Eventually suffering itself becomes associated with shared humanizing contact and a deepening capacity for joy and creativity rather than an unending abyss of isolation and misery. As the dissociative patient makes room for deep grief and suffering within him/herself, the integration process is well underway. The patient no longer is afraid of him/herself. Knowing what to be afraid of and what not to be afraid of, the recovering dissociative patient can actually begin to protect him/herself in complex interpersonal situations without dissociating or leaving the relational field.

The severely traumatized patient is not simply in need of reliving traumatic experience, of magical and concretized reparation rituals, or of gaining insight to moderate impaired reality testing. The dissociative survivor of chronic childhood holocausts requires a mutually transforming relationship with another human being who can help him/her find a voice to express the unspeakable and reconstruct a self that can create, hope, and love without denying his or her tormented past. The ultimate goal of *integration* is the establishment of an identity based on inclusion and recognition instead of repudiation and disavowal, with a developed sector of self for transitional experiencing where meanings, identifications, and historicity can be created, destroyed, and reconstructed joyfully without adherence to totalistic rules and ideologies of submission (Schwartz, 1994). A psychotherapy initially fraught with confusing, dominating reenactments and chronic displays of autistic, dissociative self-remedies can evolve into what Atwood and Stolorow (1984) refer to as a dialogue between two personal universes.

This page intentionally left blank

CHAPTER 5

From Inclusion to Integration: Basic Concepts in Psychotherapy with Severely Dissociative Trauma Survivors

> *The extremes of emotional excess and explosion that we call psychopathology are based on normal and otherwise healthy psychological mechanisms that have been called into play to handle situations for which they did not evolve.*
>
> **—Donald Nathanson**

> *Psychoanalysis has long understood that these primitive defenses . . . (splitting, projective identification, idealization or diabolization, psychic numbing, etc.) . . . both* characterize *severe psychopathology and also (once in place)* cause *it. But rarely in our contemporary literature do these defenses "get any credit," so to speak, for having accomplished anything in the preservation of life for the person whose heart is broken by trauma.*
>
> **—Donald Kalsched**

Childhood-trauma refugees are streaming in record numbers into clinics, mental health centers, and private practice settings. Their accounts cover a spectrum from intrafamilial incest and torture to well-organized sadistic and criminal perpetrator groups involving sophisticated mind-control techniques and the commoditization of child abuse. The patients themselves are educating their therapists in the treatment of severely dissociative trauma survivors—with their wisdom, their informing reenactments, their symptoms' disturbing challenges to theoretical orthodoxy, their suffering, their brilliant avoidance of grief, mourning, and remembering, and their astonishing capacities for reactivating developmental strivings in the face of histories of massive interpersonal violence, betrayal, and neglect. As often-isolated clinicians grope through the landscape of psychological trauma in an environment marked by the risk of imminent breakdown, the psychotherapy relationship can be suddenly turned upside down. A momentary catastrophe can become the root of a transformational process. Or a moment of promise can dissolve into agonizing misunderstandings, chaos, or tragedy—boundary violations by the therapist, premature termination by the patient, an urgent need for hospitalization, a suicidal gesture, a malicious lawsuit, the stalking and harassment of the therapist and his/her family.

VARIATIONS ON A THEME

Clinicians can now read about treatment of posttraumatic stress and dissociative disorders from just about every conceivable theoretical perspective, ranging from the immediacy of cognitive, hypnotic, and behavioral techniques to the immersion in transference and countertransference phenomena from classical and contemporary psychoanalytic points of view. Most strive for a middle ground. Trauma authorities differ on the utility of hypnosis, the value of integrating psychodynamic perspectives, the purpose and structuring of memory work, the use of countertransference, the role of hospitalization and medication, and so on. And the psychoanalytic schools are divided with respect to the fantasy/reality aspects of trauma and dissociation, the nature of neutrality, the impact of interpretation, insight, and enactment, the feasibility of reparation, the merits of confrontation, self-disclosure, and empathy in treatment.

Some clinicians discourage the patient's expression of dissociative pathology; such "benign neglect" posing as treatment is actually on the rise as a result of the growing role of managed care in mental health services. Steadfast avoidance of dissociative states or their underlying trauma history leads to little structural change in the patient's personality, however, so that "neglect" is closer to clinical abandonment. Those who equate willingness to confront dissociated aspects of a self—an essential process for trauma theorists or relational psychoanalysts—with the unprofessional relinquishing of neutrality also endorse potentially retraumatizing ideologies of suppression; they contend, in fact, that recognizing alterity is tantamount to cocreating it.[1]

The clinician who refuses to address dissociative identity disorder (DID) may provoke patients "either to dissociate, further sequestering that for which they will receive no help, or to create even more dramatic proofs that the condition [exists]" (Kluft, 1995, p. 360). Such a misadventure can pressure the patient to shield the therapist and the therapy from the alter personalities: the clinician will see fewer traces of personified dissociation and feel convinced that the policy of "nonreinforcement" is actually healing the disorder—whereas the patient is merely learning how to be more compliant, and, worse, is unconsciously reenacting the submissive identity reconstruction consistent with the original trauma dynamics. The therapist is shown exactly what s/he wants to see, or what the patient perceives s/he can handle—an increasingly well-shaped host alter personality (or set of persona-restoring self-states) who mirrors the clinician's need for a successful (nondissociative) case by becoming one, at least, temporarily. The disbelief in multiplicity and alter states or the refusal to engage with them because of a priori beliefs is emblematic of the old idea of naïve patient and all-knowing therapist, which contemporary relationally oriented theorists have come to consider as totally mythological and collusive (Aron, 1996; Renik, 1995).

The therapist should be someone with whom the patient can reexperience trauma within a new context and thereby experience for the first time what has been absent in the past (Modell, 1990). Such a stance emphasizes that the essence of psychoanalytic treatment is not in making the unconscious conscious or increasing the capacities and strength of the ego, but is rather in providing a setting in which healing can occur because connections between previously split-off and lost aspects of the self can be reestablished (Rycroft, 1985). Elaborating the psychoanalytic approach to DID, Barach and Comstock (1996) identify the need for the therapist to help the patient tolerate affect, form a cohesive sense of self, develop coherent object- and self-representations, differentiate fact from fantasy, and resolve the negative effects of compulsive reliance on dissociative defenses.

Now, some two decades after the rediscovery of DID, it appears that the interface between psychoanalysis and the trauma and dissociative disorders field will advance new forms of strategic integrationism (Kluft, 1988a) and facilitate constructive dialogue among traumatologists, cognitive psychologists, and psychoanalysts. All clinicians should be able to draw on different methodologies, including perhaps especially those that do not fit with their preferred styles. And different patients (or the same patient at different times) may respond to different modalities—for example, supportive work, medications, hospitalization, and containment at some points, and exploratory work, confrontation, and direct use of countertransference experience at others.

In discussing variations in treatment approach, it is important to remember that retraumatization can take place in *any* therapy situation. For patients with dissociated injuries, confused histories, and tangled or fragmented memories, the trap of collusion with a therapist's misrecognition, domination, or narcissistic needs is a definite possibility. When a therapeutic posture or underlying belief system permits repetition of traumatic nonrecognition experiences, for example (itself a form of clinical abandonment according to Bromberg, 1995b), that posture will reinforce the patient's conviction that others do not want to know who s/he really is; ironically, since most trauma survivors are ambivalent about being known because of the pain of the challenge to their identities, bonds, and belief systems, the therapist's misrecognition may be felt as a relief—for a while. At a deeper level, however, the failure it signals drives a wedge of despair into an already despondent and cynical psyche, confirming the abandonment and lack of concern on the part of the adult world that made possible the traumatic childhood experiences in the first place.

Our patients are not naïve and oblivious to the tensions therapists have to confront and/or the biases and theories clinicians rely on to make sense out of these tensions. Severely dissociative patients who have witnessed countless adults abuse children and skillfully manipulate them and others to avoid detection have keen observation skills. One thing they most certainly understand is power. The refusal to work with dissociative states recommended by conservative critics of traumatology assumes that patients can be fooled by pseudo-objectivity, when it is precisely the persuasive power of the therapist that fosters the patient's collusion to suppress and inhibit his/her own complex subjectivity—collusion that echoes the collusion of a lifetime. Anyone who is aware of the damage done by perpetrators of child abuse in the misuse of authority, specifically in undermining the victim's perceptions and reality testing, will see the dangers of revictimization inherent in sidestepping the multiple subjectivities of the patient.

DIVERSITY IN APPROACH

Not only the wide variety of clinical orientations, but also the wide spectrum of needs, resources, and abilities of the dissociative patient population must be taken into account when designing and implementing treatment. Patients differ in terms of accessibility to and capacity for therapy, prior history (constructive, neglectful, or destructive) with the mental health system, extent and complexity of abuse and number of perpetrators involved (and their past and current connection), capacity for and commitment to self-care, capacity for attachment and interest in relationships, capacity for symbolization, the presence of other psychiatric or medical disorders or of sociopathic traits or other particularly destructive comorbid characterological patterns, motivation for treatment, and overall physical health. Some dissociative patients can do character restructuring, memory work, and intensive mutual reflective work within the transference/countertransference while others may only be able to make use of competent supportive psychotherapy.[2] Some dissociative patients need to explore or express aspects of their spirituality and/or creativity in the therapy process; for others, such explorations or expressions only trigger useless enactments or are otherwise disruptive. It should always be remembered, however, that the subjectivity of every traumatized patient has been debased, defiled, and shattered by a fellow human being or group of fellow human beings. The patient's exposure to interpersonal savagery and his/her dissociative reactions to it must be gradually replaced by prolonged exposure to nonviolent, nonexploitative, and nondominating respectful relationship experiences.

There is tremendous range in character, temperament, and disposition among psychotherapists as well. Some will be most comfortable with more directed, less ambiguous approaches to healing, and for them relationship factors will not be primary; to diminish relationship factors for others would be to betray what they believe are the chief agents of human development and transformation. Some clinicians use formal hypnosis as an essential adjunct to treatment (Kluft, 1995; Fine, 1994); others find it unnecessary, problematic, or retraumatizing (Briere, 1992b; Enns et al., 1995; Lindsay and Read, 1994).[3] There are those for whom even the mention of spiritual matters or the inclusion of sand-tray work or stuffed animals might never happen—and there are those who espouse the introduction of all of them. Certain therapists find the concretized "mapping" of a patient's personality system, like that of a family therapy diagram, useful, while others prefer what

Marmer (1996) calls "acquainting yourself with the overall architecture of the person" (p. 202)—more like walking through a building slowly side by side with the patient than like asking him/her to generate a blueprint so the therapist can find his/her way alone. Feminist and social constructivist approaches facilitate discussions about the politics of abuse, complicity, and gender oppression in family and cultural systems, and about how the traumatized patient can find a place in a world based on such politics; many clinicians who are not so inclined and/or informed would see those conversations as detours from the central tasks of helping patients better understand their psyches and personal histories and learn more effective and appropriate coping skills.

Interpersonal and relationally oriented therapists reverse the figure-ground arrangement advanced by mainstream MPD/DID theorists: cognitive changes are secondary to emotional working-through. The therapeutic action is where the reenactment is, where the retraumatization is, where the trauma drama unfolds to be met, recognized, struggled with; enactments/reenactments are the royal roads to restored affectivity. Patient and therapist fumble together, guide one another, and come to respect one another's authority over time; the therapist consistently affirms the ascendancy of their mutuality. In contrast to traditional psychoanalysts, who may focus on the experience of the self as unitary to the point of refusing to talk to alter personalities for fear of reifying dissociative tendencies, relational psychoanalysts emphasize the dialectic between unity and multiplicity while helping a patient develop observing ego functions and resolution of omnipotent defenses.

According to relational perspectives on treatment, no intervention is an isolated event; each is mediated by the therapist's belief system, reactions, and interpretations—and they, in turn, influence what the patient thinks, feels, and eventually presents (Miller, 1996; Aron, 1996). According to Miller, therapists control for their influence on patients by "understanding that their conscious and unconscious behavior are the proximal stimuli that evoke, maintain, or transform the schemas that the patient uses to organize and interpret their interaction" (p. 395). Therapists can also balance power and control for their influence by welcoming criticism, exploring patients' reactions to the clinical methods in use, and persistently invoking patients' own inner authority. The subject of influence thus becomes part of the therapy dialogues, not ancillary to or subversive of them.[4]

DISTINCTIONS AMONG PSYCHOANALYTIC INFLUENCES IN THE TREATMENT OF DISSOCIATIVE DISORDERS

Although the literature on DID has always recommended incorporating psychodynamic perspectives (e.g., Ross, 1989; Putnam, 1989; Kluft, 1991a), explicit psychoanalytic conceptualizations—classical (Brenner, 1994; 1996; Barach and Comstock, 1996; Marmer, 1996), post-classical (Smith, 1989; Ferguson, 1990; Schwartz, 1994) and feminist (Rivera, 1996; Waites, 1993; Davies and Frawley, 1994)—have only recently begun to appear as the trauma/dissociation communities have welcomed integration and cross-fertilization as reprieves from their isolation and marginalization within the mental health field; their emergence also attests to the maturation of the field.

Relational perspectives are more sensitive to the ways an individual's construction of his/her subjectivity reflects prevailing social conditions, power arrangements, and language practices. Relational and feminist perspectives combined (cf. Mitchell, 1993; Bromberg, 1994; Flax, 1993; Rivera, 1996) tend to be concerned more with meaning than with truth, more with the complexities of identity politics than with ego-defense analysis, more with exploring multiplicity and the decentered self as a valuable resource for the patient than as something only to be worked through or resolved.

If we think about DID as a trauma/neglect-driven disorder (i.e., trauma-structured subjectivity) rooted foremost in sadistic abuse, torture, neglect, and exploitation of children, and embedded in the historical, economic, political, and cultural contexts where the inequities of capitalist patriarchy are institutionalized, then it is only secondarily a disorder of defense and identity (viz., Marmer, 1996). A primary focus on defense and identity fails to recognize that the nondisordered self is also multiple, and that the key to severe dissociative conditions is the lack of sufficient and intact linkages among self-states—not alter construction, personification, or multiplicity per se. Correspondingly, that focus fails to contextualize the patient's experience, thus unintentionally exacerbating existing splits between etiology and symptomatology, between recognition of violence and confrontation with its effects, between individual and social responsibility, and ultimately between public and private realities.

Construing DID as a trauma disorder (of extreme stress) is not meant to privilege one form of psychological pain over another, alleviate severely dissociative patients' personal responsibility for their behaviors, or reinforce pathological entitlement and victim stances. But to decontextualize any aspect of a trauma survivor's complex adaptations to malevolent social and familial systems is to "dissociate" a diagnosable disorder of defense and identity from the circumstances that give rise to disordered defenses and a fragmented identity in the first place. To sustain the important link between individual psychopathology and the cultural conditions that generate or cultivate it, we must make room for a human rights and social justice perspective in the process of assessment and treatment.

APPLYING RELATIONAL PERSPECTIVES

> Our patients bring to us not only their suffering but their creative attempts to heal themselves. As blind as they are at times to their own issues, they are often keen sighted about their therapists and other patients. The idea of the healthy well adjusted therapist curing the patient is a myth. The therapist must be candid enough and human enough to treat the patient, as a fellow traveler in life, not all that different from the therapist. (Chefetz, 1997, p. 264)

Adult survivors of severe childhood abuse need many things in treatment but first they need the emotional presence and psychological availability of the therapist. Second, they need a therapist who is informed about both the dynamics of chronic interpersonal psychological trauma—including the dissociative and characterological adaptations and the dynamics of perpetration, victimization, and complicity—and the archetypal by-products of dissociative disintegration as they appear in dreams and in the personifications of the MPD/DID individual's internal world. Third, these patients need a treatment environment that promotes explorations and inquiry, not an environment that seals over the past and addresses only adaptation without also disentangling and de-enmeshing the patient from abusive power dynamics and traumatic relational patterns; the therapist should not echo the pressure of familial and cultural backlash to conform, comply, and adjust. Finally, they need a tolerant witness, one who explicitly states and implicitly demonstrates that s/he is prepared to hear and discuss anything and everything the patient feels and believes (however bizarre or unusual), anything the patient remembers (entirely or partially, regardless of whether the memories are real), anything the patient has done or believes s/he has done (no matter how awful or gruesome or shameful), and anything and everything the patient has to say about the therapist and the therapeutic process. The therapist must make clear that while there are some actions that will not be permitted in the therapy relationship—sex, violence, emotional abuse, property damage—there are no words s/he will be unwilling to listen to.

The therapist's pledge to help the patient make sense out of his/her experiences—no matter how baffling, to be amenable to witnessing and *feeling with*, and to remain open to the possibility of traumatic realities to which the therapist personally may not have been exposed creates the kind of ambience where extreme dissociative defenses can be relaxed and where suppressed voices can emerge. This contract does not produce a false memory free-for-all. It does, however, anchor compassion and ensure acceptance for someone who is brutalized, alienated, and bereft. The therapist must never forget that compliance and protection of the (powerful, needed) other at one's own expense is central to the programming of all child-abuse victims, so without a repeatedly tested and proven belief that the therapist can tolerate exposure to horrific material about the treatment of children, the adult survivor will not venture to bare his/her multiple subjectivities and traumatic memories.

A relational approach to treating trauma and dissociation emphasizes knowing the patient through direct relatedness, direct experience, direct emotional contact (Bromberg, 1991; 1998; Davies and Frawley, 1994; Ehrenberg, 1992; Maroda, 1999). From these perspectives, which are influenced by intersubjective theory, feminism, and interpersonal psychoanalysis, the therapist does not relate to the patient as if s/he were only a resister and distorter of reality. Therapists working in the transference/countertransference matrix believe that what cannot be remembered or narrated can often be discovered through reenactment, making the very "distortions" and "resistances" believed by other clinicians to be in need of their subtle authoritarian modifications the medium for learning about the patient (Marmer, 1996). Through the immersion in that matrix, therapists inevitably become part of the problem on their way to cocreating solutions with patients (Mitchell, 1988). This means that both parties must accept the loss of their bearings during the interactional process, and must trust—subsuming distrust and presupposing the temporary disappearance of hope and faith—that insight will emerge after the enactment and confusion about who is doing what to whom have run their course.

DISSOCIATIVE DISORDERS, DEVELOPMENTAL FAILURES, AND DEVELOPMENTAL PERSPECTIVES ON TREATMENT

Because chronic violent trauma throughout childhood freezes, deregulates, and deforms almost all developmental processes, DID (and most other severe dissociative conditions) is, above all, a disorder of development, development gone awry. The cohesive and continuous self-experience of normal development is replaced by a patchwork of state-dependent organizations each operating under its own rules, which may or may not be relevant to, or even in any form of dialogue with, one another. Confabulation and self-deception supplant self-knowledge and self-observation, distraction and numbing stand in for affectivity; precocity and intellectual skill mask developmental deficits; compulsive delinking and the actual inability to make connections take over for natural continuity, curiosity, and the bridging functions of the well-developed psyche. Core beliefs in safety, benevolent authority, and personal goodness are shattered (Ulman and Brothers, 1988), memory and cognitive abilities are disrupted, and the capacities to trust, attach, and self-regulate are all fractured in significant ways. Dissociation replaces intrapsychic conflict. And because chronic trauma socializes the individual to accept authoritarian modes of relating and institutionalizes the belief that the self is damaged, worthless, or inherently bad, it restricts the effective use of fantasy, aggression, and critical thinking in the service of development. Domination/submission (and its eroticization) is deeply internalized in the intrapsychic realm as the only solution to the challenges of human relations and becomes the only adaptive paradigm in the individual's repertoire.

The adult dissociative survivor can feel deeply tormented, defective, and sick on the inside while passing in the mainstream culture as a compliant model citizen. The multiple levels of developmental failure lead to seriously impaired volition, as defined by both subjective experience and objective assessment. Of course, certain self-states can be inhibited while others are dramatically willful; self-agency may be limited to whatever functions are performed effectively by the dissociated self-state that has access to the mind at any given point in time (Bromberg, 1996a).

Like all psychoanalytic psychotherapies, relational treatment of severe dissociative disorders is a developmental process, oriented around sequences or stages reflecting retrieval, recognition, and activation of previously derailed development (Stolorow et al., 1987). Relational treatment is also conducted within the essential dialectic of "knowing" and "not knowing" (Ogden, 1989, p. 3)—of denial and intrusion, in the terminology of post-traumatic stress disorder. In trauma-oriented therapies, the need to be known and "found" alternates with the need for absolute camouflage and protection from revictimization; human contact—every human relationship, including one with a therapist—is simultaneously dangerous and longed for.

The establishment of deeply integrated psychological functioning in a DID patient must involve the resolution of the developmental deficits that have resulted from chronic trauma and neglect (Barach and Comstock, 1996). However, maturation, developmental stages, and concepts of unity and multiplicity must not themselves be concretized and reified or understood as simple cumulative or linear processes. Broader concepts of personality development are required to link treatment of problems as complex as severe dissociative disorders to psychoanalytic developmental concepts. In traditional approaches to developmental psychology, one stage is seen as leading to another—oral stage to phallic to genital; paranoid-schizoid position preceding depressive position. But what is more important is the relationship among stages, phases, and aspects of self.[5]

A relational vision of personality development does not deny that dissociative strategies for self-protection and self-construction are dysfunctional phenomena that create imbalances and rigidities in what would otherwise be freely interpenetrating, dialectical realms of experience. However, this perspective insists on contextualizing the patient's limitations and adaptations in the interpersonal and cultural matrices of childhood, and on acknowledging the survival value and, at times archetypal brilliance, of dissociative solutions to chronic violence and neglect. Therefore, developmental maturation in the context of treating dissociative disorders needs to be conceived of in dialectical terms where stages and modes of experience evolve in and of themselves and in fluid relational interchanges with other modes.

Child alter personalities, the most common alter states in DID patients (Ross, 1997), exemplify the simplest application of these dialectical concepts of development. At the end of a successful treatment one may hope to see the erosion of dissociative barriers so that child alters no longer appear in split-off form and the adult no longer has to manage his/her vulnerability by disconnecting aggression, mature functionality, and memory from need-states. Simultaneously, however, one hopes to see the patient able to move in and out of adult and childlike self-states, feelings, and identifications without losing awareness or a sense of self-ownership. Moreover, the rigid, impermeable protective barriers the patient will have mostly worked through in treatment may continue to be useful at certain times and under certain circumstances. A fluid or "distributed" (Pizer, 1996) multiple self and a unified or integrated self are not mutually exclusive.

In Leowald's (1960) terms, the developmental perspective on treatment means that the therapist always relates to the patient from the "standpoint of potential growth" (p. 20) rather than from a position of encouraging insight or analyzing defenses. Treatment involves the participation of two essential aspects of the traumatized patient: an adult who struggles to succeed, form relationships, feel accepted, and—most important—to forget; and a child who strives to remember and find a voice to scream, to tell, and to rage (Davies and Frawley, 1991).[6] The therapist's internal, inclusive vision of the patient's wholeness and integrity facilitates the truly mutative ongoing interactions that foster the patient's self-deconstruction and self-actualization. The fact that treatment for dissociative trauma survivors moves through developmental phases mirrors the fundamental reality of childhood trauma survivors.

Grand (2000) cautions against naïve optimism and the therapist's subtle betrayal of the patient through unrealistic reparation fantasies. Viewing recovery as a linear or "progressive movement from the nonlinguistic to the linguistic, from fragmentation to cohesion, and from solitude to mutuality is to suffer from an excess of hope. Such hope imagines that the traumatized self can finally locate the other who should have been there, and in that meeting, death itself will be defeated" (p. 37). Psychotherapy may be a powerful vehicle for the reestablishment of developmental processes and personality transformation, yet, as Grand poignantly expresses, psychotherapy is "not larger than death, and it is not larger than the solitude of survival" (p. 37).

COMMON STAGES[7] AND PASSAGES IN TREATMENT

In an effective treatment, the patient's initial reliance on the therapist as bridge between self-states and container of affects, tensions, and history is gradually replaced by the patient's developing observing ego, capacity to codirect the healing process, and abilities to activate aggression in the service of self-protection and tolerate complexity and ambiguity. These accomplishments do not signify that the patient has attained conscious control over all dissociative processes. They do mean, however, that reactions that were previously automatic become optional and volitional and can be reflected upon: the driving motivational system initially fueled by pain avoidance, aggression against the self, and attachment to perpetrators is now propelled by self-respect and a healthy sense of entitlement. One patient aptly described this middle stage of therapy as the point when everything "seems to be coming together and falling apart at the same time."

The first treatment goal in therapy with a severely traumatized patient after establishing an initial working alliance (trust, safety, informed consent) and stabilizing his/her hyperarousal and numbing symptomatology to maintain functionality is recognizing the dissociative disorder, which may be buried beneath years of unsuccessful (or partially successful) treatment. This diagnostic mandate is best realized when the therapist engages the patient in shared inquiry and observation of recurrent patterns of relatedness, omissions, and absences; it need not happen in a dogmatic, formulaic way.

Because addictions seem to be the glue that holds dissociation in place, the patient's relinquishing of compulsive patterns is often a prerequisite to the discovery of dissociative ones. Most severely dissociative patients do not openly present their dissociative symptoms until they recover from their addictive behaviors or relationships—to, for example, self-mutilation, food, work, sex, drugs, alcohol, shopping, computer games, abusive others, and so on. Detailed explorations of their subjective experience of addictive behavior often reveals the alterations in consciousness, trance logic, internal dialogues, and power struggles that typify extreme dissociative disorders.

For example, one patient whose initial complaint was compulsive sexual promiscuity reported the behavior without feeling and in general, stereotypical ways that obscured the subtle shifts and state-changes it involved. When he was asked to identify the moment-by-moment experiences of moving from not feeling sexually aroused to having sexual thoughts to struggling with impulses to act out to playing out the mental arguments to inducing a kind of trance to finding himself in dangerous sexual scenes that he didn't remember getting into, the dissociative process that underlay the whole sequence began to be revealed. Later on in therapy, after he started to recall traumatic moments in his past and could resist the initial momentum and not act out sexually, the remembering, and the revealing instead of sequestering, disrupted the fixity of his traumatic reenactment patterns. This process of bypassing addictive cycles is the beginning of the dissolution of some of the more rigid dissociative defenses.

When the patient/therapist dyad addresses the anxiety that inevitably floods the patient's personality system without resorting to either dissociation or rescue, a deeper and more emotionally accessible relatedness to self and others can arise from the experience of tolerating the affect. If trust breaks down, or if patient or therapist (or both) sidestep the temporary disorganization, the infusion of anxiety may remobilize the original dissociative defenses. But when addiction patterns are contained and well analyzed and the severely dissociative patient can consistently appreciate the phenomenology of his/her own dissociation, s/he can finally engage in a continuous mutual reflection process without interruption by every new wave of posttraumatic affect, without avoidance due to another crisis, and without distraction by relapses of addictive behavior.

The revelation and recognition of the structures of dissociation is anything but a smooth or continuous process. Not surprisingly, the most difficult dissociation-supporting addictions to detect and change are the ones reinforced in the "normal" social world (like workaholism and perfectionism, both particularly common in higher-functioning DID patients). While the process of recognition varies from patient to patient there is always a bargaining for the trauma and dissociation to be less serious than it is, and few patients move into awareness of their dissociative processes without a good fight (and sometimes flight). This "fight" has often been misconstrued by critics as reaction to the foisting of an inappropriate diagnosis onto the patient. But what is really going on in most instances is that once the patient's dissociative organization (including cloaking devices, distractions, and cover stories) is exposed, his/her defensive and camouflage functions flip into overdrive; they deny or minimize the revealed multiplicity to prevent retraumatization even when one or more alter personalities are simultaneously appreciating the therapist's recognition and breathing perhaps the first sigh of relief in a lifetime.

One patient experienced this biphasia in concrete and paradoxical ways: a level of deep relief alleviated a chronic suicidality in one aspect of his psyche, while threats and images of knives (suggesting that he cut himself) emanated from another aspect of his psyche. After first denying that these fleeting images of knives and impulses to cut had ever surfaced before, he remembered that they had, once, many years ago, the only other time he had been in psychotherapy and had tried to talk about the possibility of sexual-abuse trauma. For this man, like so many severely dissociative patients—especially those with histories of organized child abuse—recognition of the dissociative process is a terribly mixed blessing. Following provisional acknowledgment of dissociative disorders, patients can go back and forth a hundred times in accepting and denying the evidence of systematized dissociation. Often it is only late in treatment that they begin to fully grasp the overwhelming role that dissociation has played in their lives.

The unfolding of pathological multiplicity in treatment requires a willingness on the part of the therapist to empathically enter the patient's fragmented subjective world and to notice and inquire about the patient's shifts in consciousness, omissions, and inconsistencies in behavior or memory or self-representation. For clinicians wary of managerial methods, empathic inquiry and resonance, participation in enactments, confrontation from within the transference/countertransference matrix, and mirroring processes may be powerful enough to work through dissociative defenses without resorting to hypnosis or behavioral or cognitive treatment techniques, especially with higher-functioning patients. Regardless, the recognition of dissociation and pathological multiplicity—like other aspects of working in "potential space"—requires ongoing humility and negotiation to bridge reality, illusions, and disparate self-states because our "knowing" is always approximate and selective.

The diagnosis and treatment of severe dissociative disorders need not become a process of domination and concretization. It can take place dialectically and dialogically. Accordingly, a therapist should not represent his/her interpretation as correct, complete, or definitive. Rather, s/he should offer different options for the patient's consideration and reflection to represent or register some aspects of his/her self-experience. Negotiating the potential diagnosis has more to do with finding new ways of symbolizing and accessing the self than with reifying the self and its experiences.

Following the shared recognition of chronic dissociation between therapist and patient, there is often a dramatic shift in the patient's relationship with him or herself and a changing mixture of relief and terror and of denial and acceptance of the diagnosis. The patient gradually begins to deconstruct an old, and reconstruct a new, identity based on new information from his/her internal world as well as from reflecting on (and, at times, arguing against) the therapist's perspectives. This is the point in treatment when more systematized forms of denial and disavowal deployed by the patients to sustain their dissociative system can be articulated, and when patients begin to show some increasing ability to tolerate anxiety and depressive affect states. Now discussion of traumatic memories can move from focusing on the dynamics of shock, avoidance, doubt, and the quest for validation to developing the psychological functions requisite to disengagement from deeply entrenched sadomasochistic paradigms and advancement beyond helplessness. Severely dissociative trauma survivors switch back and forth between taking on the new challenges and remobilizing dissociative defenses—so progress, too, is nonlinear.

Motivated by reminders of the past trauma to avoid annihilation experiences, hostile protector-parts of the survivor emerge out of the unconscious—sometimes like a flash flood—to seize control of the patient's consciousness and of the therapy at many points along the way. The quality of the therapist's ongoing negotiations (occasionally wrestling matches) with these personified rebel and demon figures is, in large measure, what creates the trust that allows the trauma patient to move past isolationist and survivalist strategies of coping toward authentic engagement and true mutuality. Some patients remain in this coming-to-terms with multiplicity phase for an extended period, often regressing into addictive behavior, and not all have the necessary ego resources to enter the next phase. Some severely dissociative patients may be able to tolerate only long-term supportive therapy focused on managing life crises and preventing posttraumatic decompensation. (And many may not ever have the requisite skills or resources to pursue or complete psychic restructuring.) In any case, the defenses of survivors of extreme trauma should be assessed before proceeding with uncovering/memory work and processing of trauma (McCann and Pearlman, 1990). That destabilizing but ultimately integrative work—accessing memory and fantasy material located within or among alter personalities—also includes building relations between previously disconnected and reciprocally disavowing aspects of the self.

During intensive memory recovery and abreactive work, it is essential that the therapist provide sufficient contact, relational continuity, and support to sustain the patient's functionality and demonstrate that regression is an inevitable part of progress. This means working especially hard to keep patients out of the hospital, in their jobs or school, out of disability and welfare programs, and away from the seductions of short-term solutions that may provide immediate stagnant gratification but militate against restoring the dialectic between progression and regression in the patient's life. For example, because many severely dissociative patients have chronic unmet dependency needs, their yearnings for direct reparenting at critical junctures in the treatment, if enacted, could eclipse the essential balance between breaking down and building up that is the basis of most depth therapy.

ABREACTION

Integrating the developmental needs represented by the elements of denial and intrusion that alternate in severe posttraumatic stress dissociative syndromes is a balancing act. The therapist must at once avoid discouraging disclosure, consciously or unconsciously, and reinforcing the trauma by clinically inappropriate pacing that causes emotional flooding in the patient (Courtois, 1992; Chu, 1992b); compulsive, unexamined reenactments and malignant abreactions repeat the sadomasochistic dynamics of the original trauma.

Abreaction usually refers to the experiencing of intense feelings when recalling a disturbing past event in response to some trigger. According to Ross (1997), however, abreaction exists on a spectrum with purely informational recall of trauma on one end, and full-tilt abreaction with behavioral reenactments and dramatic behaviors on the other end. Abreaction connotes discharge but—in contrast to the overlapping construct of enactment, which begins unconsciously—abreaction most often implies a consciously and/or volitionally mediated reexperiencing.[8] And it is best when facilitated; during abreactions, one person guides another through what, in enactments, the two of them become temporarily lost in reliving. Both have their place in effective treatment; in fact, depending on the efficacy of the therapuetic process, enactment and its analysis may lead to either spontaneous, or well-guided and appropriately paced, abreaction. Both may be conceptualized as the only means by which traumatized patients' unconscious strivings to be known can become manifest and articulated. Both are ways for old and new object experience to be brought into consciousness and ultimately into dialogue.

During abreaction, a patient may experience a cathartic moment or a peak of painful emotions, somatic and/or psychological, which can represent elements of the original dissociated childhood traumatic events or elements of any trauma from any age (Sachs and Peterson, 1996). It is important to affirm that the facilitating of abreactions does not per se cause patients to become dysfunctional or to remain in regressed states;[9] indeed, abreactions are not regressions at all, but regression-*like* and transient (Sachs and Peterson, 1996). However, noting the potential for mismanaged or unmodulated abreactions—especially full-tilt abreactions with behavioral reenactments and dramatic behaviors—to lead to malignant and lasting regressions, Ross (1997) emphatically states that those are fundamentally retraumatizing to patients, and not at all essential for healing. Stressing the importance of the therapist and patient's modulating and controlling the reexperiencing of traumatic material, and reminding clinicians that emotional discharge is not in itself a therapeutic intervention, Van der Hart and Steele (2000) also emphasize that without integrative mentation abreactions may be destructive and disrupt the patient's healing.

While abreaction is a central feature of all stages of psychotherapy of severe dissociative disorders, its form and frequency change as the patient's degree of reliance on dissociative defenses shifts. Abreactive material seldom reveals a chronological map of the patient's childhood traumas (Barach and Comstock, 1996); in fact, it can relate simultaneously to the patient's traumatic past, the patient's experience of the therapeutic and extratherapeutic present, and the patient's fantasies. Early in treatment there is a greater likelihood that spontaneous and potentially destructive abreactions will take place, because the therapy relationship harbors unknown psychic landmines and because surfacing memories (be they fragments, somatic sensations, and/or nightmares) are apt to trigger transitory shock or psychic overload.

Some patients experience the therapist as torturing them from the minute they come into treatment (Marmer, 1996). For survivors of childhood torture and organized sadistic abuse, this is understandable. The rearrangement of a piece of office furniture, a change in the therapist's appearance, an illness or vacation, even a neutral expression, can sometimes set off uncontrollable reactions in a severely traumatized patient. Because the stories of survivors of organized perpetrator groups reveal that their abusers imbued everyday situations with posttraumatic triggering valences that kept the victims spinning endlessly in unconscious reenactments and flashbacks[10] and prevented them from escaping or exposing the perpetrating system, the therapist may be faced with a situation where no stimulus is a neutral one.

Revisiting the affective, sensory, and cognitive experience of traumatic events cannot be bypassed if the treatment goal is to restructure the traumatized psyche. But abreactive work is difficult because it causes somatic pain, behavioral reenactments, and hallucinations analogous to the original traumatic experience (Ross, 1989), or amalgamations of traumatic experience and fantasized elaborations. There are moments when the patient literally must leave the relational field to retrieve fragments of experience—and there are also aspects of traumatic memories that can only be retrieved through mutual examination of and reflection upon the enactments taking place between patient and therapist. Although abreaction and the integration process do not always involve significant loss of control, some relational disruption is usually inevitable when highly dissociated material appears on the horizon of consciousness—especially for the first time. That disruption itself, however, can be used as a key to enter a deeper level of association to new material, or as a rehearsal for the next abreaction of a newly accessed memory fragment.

To be effective, abreactions must occur within a trusting, well-boundaried therapy relationship (Steele, 1989).[11] From a relational perspective, the patient is not simply benefiting from affect discharge, cognitive interpretation, or integration of dissociative events, or merely internalizing a new object experience (the therapist) who relates differently from abusers. The patient is developing new self or ego capacities by virtue of internalizing healthy (i.e., respectful, nondominating, and nonauthoritarian) interactional processes (Leowald, 1960).

Abreaction helps the patient move unarticulated, unformulated, and unwitnessed experience into the potentially transformative space of the therapy relationship. Whether the decontextualized fragments of personal history being reexperienced are memories of receiving electric shocks or feelings of having been betrayed or lied to, the process allows the patient to acknowledge viscerally that the trauma occurred (as opposed to dissociating it), and to relegate it to the past (instead of continuously reliving and reenacting it) so that the trauma takes on symbolic rather than predominantly sensorimotor or behavioral properties (Van der Hart, Steele, Boon, and Brown, 1993). Clinical experience confirms that the patient can now attempt new techniques—restorative fantasy, for example[12]—to master it. What might actually have happened in the trauma, what one wished had happened, and what one was told happened or didn't happen will emerge simultaneously and/or intermittently during successful abreactions and later in free associations.

Many survivors of severe child-abuse trauma will eventually be able to recall or want to reveal fragments of their abuse history that will be excruciatingly difficult for the therapist to witness and tolerate without barging into the patient's narrative offering empathy or interpretations, or withdrawing, or becoming incredulous, before the patient has adequately felt and represented the experience. Yet, allowing the disturbing abreaction to go on too long may make the patient feel too much like s/he is replicating the original trauma. Finding the proper balance between commenting, containing, and silently witnessing is one of the most difficult challenges of doing therapy—and abreactive work in particular—with survivors of severe trauma.

Listening to a person's memories of sadistic traumas can revolt or paralyze the therapist (or stir him/her to tears) as much as it can the patient, and sometimes the only appropriate response is the natural one—shock—or silence, followed by an emphatic protest on behalf of the patient (who may be quite unable to think or feel this on his/her own). Though it is fashionable nowadays in light of the false memory movement and the recent aggressive critiques of psychotherapy to champion the value of therapeutic objectivity and the skepticism about the accuracy of patients' memories, it is not always easy or even ethical to remain emotionally indifferent. Indifference may also be clinically ineffective: it is possible that not responding empathically to material the patient is experiencing as real may do more damage than good—although such authors as Barach and Comstock (1996) believe that a neutral therapeutic stance can give the patient room to explore anxieties as he/she works to create a cohesiveness of his/her own history. The desirability and utility—and possibility—of clinical neutrality is an issue that divides the clinical professions, especially those of us who lean in the direction of believing in the authority and validity of many of our patients' reported experiences from those of us who are mindful of the limitations of memory or fearful of reinforcing so-called false memories.

Many DID patients locked into the trance logic of traumatic thinking or hypnotized by the messages their perpetrators gave them can only begin to disrupt the fixity of these frozen states and register another emotional reaction by sensing the therapist's response. With some patients, of course, any comments, empathic or otherwise, on the part of the therapist can interfere with the patient's spontaneous reflections or the emergence of traumatic memory and affects.

ELENA

Elena, a female DID patient in her early forties in the late middle phase of treatment and who has already recovered a large amount of traumatic memory remembers an abusive incident in her childhood when a

> group of men after raping her, forced her to crawl around the floor naked and act like a dog while they laughed at her and called her a fat, ugly worthless dog whose only value was to lick their shoes.
>
> It was only after experiencing the impact this narrative had on me that Elena, who was almost frozen in the belief that what the perpetrators had said was the absolute truth, could arrive at her own discovery of degradation and humiliation, and only after she acknowledged her heartbreaking feelings that she and I were able to speculate on the probable intentions of her abusers. Shifting her focus from her extreme and paralyzing shame to the intentions of her abusers—and recontextualizing the episode with what came before and after it, including how they engineered her "forgetting" it, and so on—ultimately revealed Elena's lifelong pattern of feeling degraded and behaving in a subjugated way in all her relationships. Using accrued information to point out to the patient that her perpetrators were probably training her for future abuse as well as using her for momentary sexual gratification helped to contextualize the incident in terms of the particular sex-ring in which Elena was held captive. Among other things, the memory work freed up some aggression necessary for Elena to become (for the first time) thoroughly angry at the perpetrators.

Victims of prolonged and repeated traumas may need to reevaluate virtually every assumption underlying their thinking habits in order to continue to process new memory material and in order to disengage from the social trance and derealization processes that have held them hostage intrapsychically. When the patient's entire assumptive world begins to change, then his/her dissociative self-system is likely to be radically altered in many internal locations at once; that may feel to the patient like a loss of moorings, even if the new meanings contain the possibility of redemption, benevolence, and solidarity.

Following some catharsis—dramatic or otherwise—and the reactivation of observing-ego functions, dissociative experience can shift into a permeable relational mode where self-generated and flexible applications of meanings and new identifications replace traumatically induced cognitive fixity. In this phase, all of the messages, beliefs, and cognitive distortions internalized from (or implanted by) the perpetrator(s) must be reviewed and systematically deconstructed. Traditional trauma theorists like Van der Hart et al. (1993) and others (Ross, 1989; Fine, 1996) call this aspect or phase of treatment cognitive restructuring and the correction of cognitive distortions. Both existential issues and the psychological roles of different alters within the patient's personality system can be illuminated so that the patient develops a greater breadth of understanding for his/her own survival strategies, and a greater appreciation for the more extreme alter personalities that have been rejected or marginalized because of the difficulty of their mandates in the traumatic environment.

In a relational psychoanalytic approach—which is not necessarily incompatible with the cognitive approach despite certain stylistic and philosophical differences—this integration of abreactive experience comes about in part by the therapist's creating an environment where enactments are understood to be inevitable. Transformative elements in this tradition are an emphasis on the patient's experience of his or her impact on the therapist, the therapist's observation/participation, and the cocreation of the traumatic dynamics and conarration of the meaning-making process. According to Bromberg (1993), the model of the therapist knowing the patient through direct experience can lead to the patient's creative and imaginative use of his or her own (previously split-off, or rigidly held) experience and ultimately to the pleasurable, consensual construction of a more inclusive reality; that, in turn, allows for narrative meaning-making not previously available within the patient's closed dissociative system.

> Elena's initial memory of the humiliating incident was triggered by her strange resistance when I offered to be flexible about her appointment time in order to accommodate her upcoming surgery. Her rebuffing of what I felt to be generosity and her chronic inability to accept anything good from me stirred my frustration and anger: I felt disregarded and blocked from offering protection and assistance. Our wondering about this dynamic between us seemed to shake something loose in her psyche. As she associated to profound and unalterable worthlessness and disgust with herself, another in a series of complex and bizarre memories emerged about her involvement in a highly sadistic multiple perpetrator group, encompassing training for prostitution and participation in sadistic acts against others.

It is often the case that the patient's experience of his/her impact on the therapist and/or the therapist's self-disclosure during both the revelation/remembering and reenactment phases may make way for insight and reparative relationship experiences that fundamentally disrupt the fixity of posttraumatic patterns.

To manage abreactions and reenactments cooperatively is for the patient as well as the therapist a direct experience of mutuality. As Ghent (1990, p. 108) points out, the act of "surrender" in the presence of a facilitating, trustworthy other is itself healing. Such an experience stands in stark contrast to both the patient's masochistic submission in the original trauma and to unconscious reenactments that may be contained and managed by the therapist but never felt or worked with directly. In surrender, the patient experiences the wish to be found and recognized, to move beyond false self-constructions, and to become authentic and emotionally present.

Cooperative abreaction is also an example of paradox in relational therapy. The dread and annihilation anxieties that accompany abreaction can be reexperienced and reintegrated in a firm holding environment where restitution reliably follows disruption (Kohut, 1971); the restructuring process liberates hope and attachment strivings frozen by chronic despair, shame, and rage. In addition, effective abreaction may clarify relational configurations and subjective organizing principles of childhood, fostering development of the capacity for continuity, narrativity, and historicity, revitalizing the dissociative survivor's relationship with his/her self. Finally, the experience of having one's testimony witnessed and accepted is a fundamentally healing experience especially for survivors of extreme childhood torture and victims of organized abuse groups who were convinced that they would never be believed by outsiders and were terrorized into silence about their perpetrators' secrets. The willingness of the therapist to listen empathically to the patient, and the survival of the therapist and the patient following these revelations, releases a burden of terror the patient has been carrying (usually for decades) and this mutual survival almost always allows opportunities for other traumatic material to surface.

FROM FRAGMENTED OBJECTS TO MULTIPLE SUBJECTIVITIES

Once the preponderance of reenactments in early treatment has subsided and explorations of the patient's past are conducted in a more mutually orchestrated way, the next transition involves encouraging a shift from obsessive concern with controlling defenses to relating to and being curious about the internal world. This transition parallels what relational theorists (Benjamin, 1988; Ghent, 1992b; Winnicott, 1969) call the developmental shift from object relating, a relatively primitive mode of human connection based on projection, identification, and limited intersubjectivity, to object use, where the external other—and, in the case of severely dissociative patients, aspects of the self—can be encountered and used for growth and expansion. For the therapist to become fully useful, s/he must become "real in the sense of being part of shared reality and not just a bundle of projections" (Winnicott, 1969, p. 712). S/he becomes real through the patient's testing the limits of his/her tolerance, patience, and availability, for example, through collisions between their worldviews, through the patient's experiencing his/her passionate commitment to the work and observing his/her struggle with difficult conflicts and painful emotions.

The therapist must initially function as a relational bridge over which different parts of the patient's self can come to learn of each others' existence, history, and functions once dissociation has been recognized. In this role, the therapist must attempt to acknowledge empathically all of the patient's conflicting developmental and defensive needs. During this period, in order to establish communication across the range of the patient's dissociative system, the therapist may often have to confront quite aggressively the domination of some alters by others or expose duplicitous manipulations aimed at obscuring minority intrapsychic positions. Sometimes conflicts over trust, control, and power have to be hammered out directly with different alters; at other times the therapist has to return such issues back to the patient's system, where struggling with conflicting feelings can replace reliance upon dissociation and reenactments of trauma.

There are situations when a patient's criticism of the therapist is not just an effort to protest, offer feedback, reenact sadism, and so on, but also a conscious effort to deflect the panoply of inner voices that would confirm the diagnosis of DID or threaten the attachment bond with a perpetrator. And there are situations when the therapist must become a player in the patient's internal world so that the patient will have an alternate perspective from which to observe his/her divergent attitudes, affects, and behaviors. If a hostile, intimidating alter is bullying the patient's child alters, for instance, the therapist may have to go beyond simply understanding its protective function or its reasons for being angry and abusive: s/he may actually have to debate and negotiate with the hostile alter in order to disrupt the pattern of reenactment of early traumas—a pattern that interferes with memory and affect integration and the development of healthy forms of self-protection.

As integration begins to evolve, and as the amnestic barriers between self-states begin to decrease, the patient becomes more and more able to manage continuity of consciousness, preparing for deeper transference work on core characterological patterns of self-hate, fear of dependency, identification with the aggressor, shame, and sadomasochistic dynamics. Of these, dependency conflicts seem to be among the most difficult for severely dissociative patients to reconcile. They often move back and forth among sexualization of attachment, adamant and defensive claims of autonomy, and forms of entitled ownership of the therapist, or between clinging, and crisis-generating behavior—all of which mask the patient's fundamental vulnerability and uncontrolled dependency needs *(I hate myself for needing you and I hate you for being the one I need; I've always been able to do it on my own and now I know I can't—being with you reminds me that I can't and I hate that).*

THE OBSERVING EGO AND INCLUSIVITY

Beyond stabilization, one of the most important goals in treating trauma-induced dissociation is helping the patient develop sufficient observing-ego functions, including the capacity to tolerate conflicting affects and identities as well as the disturbing meanings embedded in traumatic memories. At the outset this process overwhelms and repeatedly retraumatizes the fragile self held together and managed by dissociative devices, because development of observing ego functions in severely dissociative patients cannot avoid encountering the multiplicities that classical psychoanalytic theory, hypothesizing a unitary base of personality functioning, essentially bypasses. Where psychic life is predominantly organized by dissociation, observing ego entails reflection by one aspect of the self on other, formerly dissociated alters or parts (Bromberg, 1996b). Accepting the existence of loathsome, offensive, pitiful, or worthless part-selves is a preliminary phase in the development of observing ego capacities; cultivated during psychotherapy, they become capable of making links between personal pain and trauma, self-organization, and the power arrangements within the family and dominant society.

In Altman's (1995) wide-angle model of self-observation, a socially embedded self develops expanded observing ego capacity, such that therapy can concern itself with the invisible and unconscious ways in which traumatic patterns of domination and oppression have been built into the life and psyche of the patient. The wide-angle model stands in contrast to the automatic-shutdown, self-soothing behavior that typically follows hyperarousal once traumatic material has entered consciousness (Van der Kolk, 1987).

A POSTURE OF INCLUSION

The effective therapist encourages differentiation and integration processes to foster synthesis of object- and self-experiences that contain positive and negative affective tones. Dichotomous perceptions / representations can then be joined into a single central consciousness as opposite experiences are shifted from polarized trance states into spontaneous dialogue. Dialogue with some part-selves may be characterized by hate, terror, and intimidation at first, but it may be the only place to start. The goal is to keep the dialogue moving and prevent its collapse into a reenactment of silencing, polarization, or violation. The therapist has to support the struggle among aspects of the self so they do not fold into reconfirming original beliefs / positions in the internal world, and / or reinstating dissociative defenses. That support helps the severely traumatized patient to shift from dissociation to building the capacity to sustain the tensions inherent in intrapsychic conflict (Bromberg, 1993), which requires confrontation with not only dissociative habits but also fears about surrendering them. Such fears may emerge in concretized form as the constant anticipation of danger from the therapist or as the clamor of different alters for time with the therapist, unaware that each part benefits from the time spent with any other part. Or, the fears may be expressed more subtly, as workaholism, missed sessions, chronic attempts to distract the therapist or steer the dialogue toward superficiality, confusion of internal and external cues, or other dissociation-reinforcing behavior. The patient misinterprets his / her burgeoning anxiety as heralding revictimization. When the therapist can persuade the patient to allow the old way of life to fall apart to make way for a new one, and to tolerate the transitional anxiety, the process of integration can begin.

Healthy development involves equal opportunity for all facets of a personality to be recognized and to evolve. Unless the therapist can embody a posture of inclusiveness, s / he will replicate the central cognitive-relational errors of multiple personality disorder itself—exclusion, overgeneralization, domination, polarization, and sacrifice. The approach to the psyche that respects the balance of unity and multiplicity in psychological life celebrates intrapsychic diversity and the tensions between the literal and the metaphorical. In contrast to some of the other psychoanalytic paradigms proposed for severe dissociative disorders where conflicts are worked through and progress is expected to unfold in a linear fashion, relational models emphasize not the elimination of tensions, conflicts, and internal diversity, but the increasing ability to function comfortably and creatively in the context of tension, and, in some cases, to leave things unresolved.

Therapeutic pluralism (Kluft, 1988a), embodying the vision of paradoxical awareness, respects diversity and approaches the reconciliation of internal differences and intrapsychic opposites without losing sight of the validity of each element and without imposing false synthesis. Treatment addresses not individual psychic elements and states but the relationships among elements, and the relations between relations. Such a counterhierarchical and necessarily dialogical posture particularly suits disorders of pathological dividedness and victims of interpersonal violence, because—even though their need for alters and radical dissociation may be significantly diminished through therapy—the complexity of their internal experience dictates a continual collision of needs, desires, and beliefs. Therapists can help patients care about, and also confront and set limits on, all parts of the self, and cooperate internally instead of complying externally and reenacting self-destructively.

The negotiation of a cohesive sense of identity can only take place when there is creative participation of all of the patient's selves as well as participation of the therapist in the entirety of the patient's dissociative self-system (Bromberg, 1993; 1994). Multiple self-states must be listened to and negotiated with (Bromberg, 1993; 1994; Pizer, 1992; 1996; Schwartz, 1994) and brought into relationship with one another and the patient's here-and-now reality (Putnam, 1989; Ross, 1989) through the therapist's inclusive, dialogical connection with all the permutations of the traumatized self's organization, and through the therapist's awareness of traumatic reenactment dynamics and his/her own shifting self-states and countertransference (Davies and Frawley, 1994; Bromberg, 1993, 1994). Most experts in the treatment of multiple personality disorder (Putnam, 1989; Ross, 1989; Kluft, 1987a; 1995; Chu, 1998), and trauma (Herman, 1992; Briere, 1992b; Courtois, 1992; van der Kolk, McFarlane, and Weisaeith, 1996) advocate for the same underlying philosophical approach, variations in clinical methodology and ideological stance notwithstanding.

It is essential to treat each emerging alter personality or self-state with curiosity and respect, in an ambience where each can find its central theme and voice and can enter into a conscious, observing, and felt relationship to the others without being prematurely forced into merging with the whole because the clinician needs an integrated presentation. Neither incredulity nor fascination is appropriate; neither neglect nor reinforcement of delusions of separateness will work. There is evolving consensus across clinical subspecialties to the effect that recognition and direct, inclusive contact with dissociative self-states (including the affects, meanings, memories, fantasies, and identifications they represent), is fundamental, along with symptom stabilization and creation of an environment of safety.

The main problem with dissociation is that it fuels forms of psychic terrorism and sabotage; neglected and disowned aspects of personality, in an effort to seek recognition, tend to find abnormal, usually destructive ways of expressing themselves. Pluralist developmental perspectives welcome both unity and multiplicity in psychic life and weight them equally; unfortunately, many treatments of dissociative conditions fail because of the inability of patient and/or therapist to maintain the tension between those opposite poles. Simultaneous alliances must be forged with the patient as a whole and with his/her individual alters or less personified self-states.

Therapeutic inclusivity entails receptivity to surprises in the intersubjective dialogue, and a corresponding willingness not to silence or disavow any of the patient's voices. Arousing a new capacity for self-reflection in the patient, with or without anxiety, is important because severely traumatized, dissociative individuals have survived by avoiding introspection, focusing on externality, and exercising hypervigilance (Briere, 1992b). Some therapists are unable, too fearful, or philosophically unwilling to contact or refer to alter personalities. Others, hypnotized by the phenomenology of the disorder, become so engrossed in interacting with part-selves that they lose track of the whole-person construct (Chu, 1988; Greaves, 1988; Ross, 1989).

Unreflective treatments can collude with the patient's defensive efforts either to block access to split-off parts or to encourage a kind of elaboration of part-selves that cements the delusion of separateness or produces secondary gains. Overemphasis on unity as a result of the therapist's existential or theoretical agenda may be experienced by the patient as yet another way the person with power wants to control him/her. Relational and trauma theorists alike endorse working back and forth simultaneously between the individual as a whole, his/her parts, and the relationships among them, with the therapist in a transitional space where reality and fantasy do not always have to be immediately discriminated.

The therapist's sustained interest in the whole person, including recognition of all the separate and coconscious dissociated elements, contrasts favorably with the divide-and-conquer manipulations of the perpetrator and has a cumulative countervailing impact on the patient's internal bondage and entrapment in silence. (This impact can be especially powerful when the therapist is willing to look for and speak empathically to the invisible victim and villains in the patient's world.) The therapist's soothing and containing presence and the disarming effects of a consistently nondominating style help metabolize the tremendous anxiety released when the patient's dissociative barriers begin to come down. Often, confronting the patient's cognitive distortions empathically (Chu, 1992a), or challenging them with play, metaphor, and humor communicates the important message that the whole person is greater than the sum of his or her parts. The development of respect, rapport, and mutuality with each aspect of the patient's dissociated experience and identity, however, is an organic part of the integrative process.

PAUL

Paul brought a macho, military-identified alter in the picture after several years of therapy. Disowned or ignored until then, the Vet was linked as some kind of witness/protector to the severe traumatic memories that were sealed off in the "fog" Paul was on the verge of penetrating. He so threatened Paul's compliant, adaptive part-selves, however, that we devoted several weeks expressly to negotiating the development of cooperation, empathy, and loyalty between him and them.

Constructing that internal bridge meant first convincing the others to allow the Vet to speak at all, helping them tolerate the intrapsychic tension arising from his dystonically rude questioning of my competence and authority, and confronting the entrenched beliefs of all the part-selves about the unreality, dangerousness, or uselessness of all the rest.

It next meant establishing trust between the Vet and me. Our first bonds were rooted in my working respectfully with his anger, distrust, and defensive autonomy—by both honoring his positions within the system and challenging some of his more extreme beliefs, prejudices, and trance logic.

Toward fostering the internal alliance, I suggested that the Vet treat the other alters as comrades in the trenches rather than as useless, weak, and shallow young men, and that he ask their assistance in his quest to secure time in therapy and begin to face whatever was contained in the fog. The Vet deflected my suggestion but proposed one of his own: he was willing to consider the others as younger brothers whom he had not seen in a long time, and who had not been exposed to military training and were therefore vulnerable and needing his protection and guidance. From that perspective only he was initially willing to communicate directly with the other parts about his needs.

By considering my input but coming up with his own metaphors and setting his own limits, the Vet was beginning to finesse his emerging dependency needs while sustaining defensive autonomy. He soon began, however, to experience anxiety and share his fears of incompetence and cowardice associated with facing the terrors contained in the "fog." We spent considerable time redefining the terms weakness and strength to ensure that the feeling of vulnerability would not by itself propel the Vet out of the relational field to redissociate (or be redissociated by the others).

Eventually, he was able to move back and forth between grateful relief that I would be accompanying him on his forays into the "fog" and fears that depending on me meant that he was not as strong as he had previously believed. In order to move forward the Vet had to tolerate being vulnerable to my betraying and abandoning him, and being annihilated by the unprocessed traumatic material in the "fog." He also fluctuated between welcoming this new model of masculinity and fearing the loss of control implied by its internalization.

Not surprisingly, Paul's high-functioning, adaptive alter personalities responded with alarm when they recognized that the Vet was developing depth, complexity, and texture in the course of the therapy dialogues and becoming a personality to reckon with. The Vet's transformation and integration would make his long-avoided and excruciatingly painful traumatic memories inescapable by the others.

Following this acknowledgment, the Vet was able to recognize that he had distanced himself from the collective history of intrafamilial multiple perpetrator abuse—isolating the other part-selves' stories and memories as "pulp fiction." The Vet was responsible for more complex extrafamilial torture and organized child abuse, and by attempting to separate the two, Paul's system had perfected dissociative strategies that facilitated functionality, self-protection, and complex amnesia all around.

With the recognition of the history of negation on both sides, some of the affective and empathic walls that sustained Paul's pathological multiplicity came tumbling down. In the wake of this preliminary communion, some of Paul's deepest grieving for his lost innocence took place. Ultimately, all aspects of Paul came to confront not only their delusions of separateness, but the ways in which one set of part-selves perpetuated the others' fantasies of omnipotence. Integration was well underway when all were able to (simultaneously) reflect on their own (and the others') strengths and vulnerabilities, competencies and limitations, integrity and arrogance.

Paul's midtreatment movement toward integration was marked by a particular revelation by the functional adaptive alters (who had previously given many hours to denying and debating their multiplicity and the veracity of the memories that had emerged from other alters to that point). Paul reported that for the first time these parts of himself that had always imagined they were Paul had recognized—following more waves of deep sadness and grief—that they were only parts in a complex person and not the whole story.

EXPANDING THE CONCEPT OF SELF-HELPERS

From a relational perspective, alter personalities are regarded as self-helpers created to resist or rescue at least parts of the individual from the shattering experience of trauma. Though varying in function, responsibility, history, and maturational level, every alter must be considered of equal value—there are no "good" and "bad" personalities even if both patient and therapist are tempted to so label them. An abused child organizes his or her internal world for at least partial psychological survival by focusing on separation, idealizing, and merger fantasies to ward off disintegration anxieties (Kohut, 1977). Elaborated dissociative states like alter personalities can bind anxiety and chronic narcissistic rage and redirect them into their own "faulty selves" instead of onto the predatory perpetrators and failing caretakers.

The despised, worthless little girl alter (who holds the abuse because she believes she "deserves it") encapsulates fear, pain, abandonment, and dread, and protects the rest of the system from these disruptive affect states, while the quivering but lovable, compliant girl alter with no memory for violation or betrayal (who imagines she can please the perpetrator and everyone else) sustains hope for nurturance and reparative relationships; together they make it possible for the functional adult, persona-restoring alters to evolve, and for prostitute alter(s) to develop—mutating the child's experience of helplessness into (both fantasied and real) power and mastery, by eroticizing needs for attention and affection, tolerating objectification of the body, and ultimately liberating her to work. Since all effective plantation systems need overseers, this constellation of alter personalities allows the development of a defensive protector (through partial identification with the aggressor's power and control) to keep them all in line, to keep disturbing affect at bay, and to ensure that the dissociative barriers remain in place (a double agent, of sorts). However, if there is increasing pressure from chronic torture and degradation, this already working combination will allow a demon (or two, or three) alter to develop who minimizes (real and imagined) pain to the whole personality by becoming completely callused (encapsulating intense shame and humiliation), turning hatred and rage (away from the perpetrator) onto the inner children's needs and vulnerability, denigrating (and setting-up for harm) the prostitutes who "asked for it and deserve whatever they get," and deflecting and isolating intense physical and emotional pain from sadistic abuse through extreme identification with the perpetrator's omnipotence, contempt, and lack of guilt. All these splits and personifications allow the child-victim's body to do what s/he is told by her perpetrator and prevents the perpetrator's retaliatory rages and punishments from being further unleashed on the child-victim.

This dissociative virtuosity (Herman, 1992), among many things, allows the child-victim to encapsulate (and to some extent, neutralize) the worst aspects of the perpetrator's malevolence; s/he can minimize the risk of perpetrating against others (when not coerced into doing so by the perpetrator) and thus retain (albeit, dissociatively) some of his/her original innocence, and most importantly, some of his/her dignity and integrity. Unfortunately, this type of psychological organization leaves the victim vulnerable to many forms of interpersonal betrayal and exploitation experiences in adulthood (including vulnerability to involvement with abusive partners, sociopaths, predators, pimps, etc.). Upon encountering such an elaborate, personified dissociative system, the therapist has to (eventually) find creative ways to remind the individual part-selves of their inherent interdependence. This news is not welcomed, understood, or accepted—at least not initially—least of all by those "in charge." With the persistent, sometimes playful repetition of the liberating and dangerous knowledge that mutual interdependence once saved "their" lives and that mutual empathy and recognition can now be integrative and healing, the impenetrable system of extremely personified dissociation can become (internally and interpersonally) porous.

The dissociative patient eventually continues to rediscover the interdependence among the part-selves on his/her own. For example, a gentle alter who managed to imagine wrapping him/herself up so as not to feel the full force of the violent penetrations of savage sexual assault comes to understand that the malevolent internal counterparts who "cooperated" with the perpetrators were thereby protecting other aspects of the self. Each has been misunderstood by the others, each sacrificed a great deal, and each still operates in a limited, self-reinforcing trance state until the point of contact and conflict with the therapist and the other parts of the dissociative self-system.

Severely dissociative individuals find it almost impossible to believe that their various fragments (including the most infantile, dependent, and sadistic) can be brought into wholeness or into accepting, honest relationships. Their functional personae (their Nancy Reagans, according to one patient, their Donna Reeds, according to another), desperate to pass for normal and craving the lifestyles promised on television and in magazines, can undermine treatment in the most socially sanctioned of ways; in males, for instance, they might be reactionary military types deferential to any higher authority and entirely lacking in empathy. Many therapists are, unfortunately, prone to reward such functional alters while overtly or subtly pathologizing or rejecting a patient's defensive, defiant, and regressive aspects. Cultural pressures to deny child abuse, valorize the capacity for "resilience," and sanction authoritarian child-rearing practices all contribute to alleviating the collective sense of guilt about crimes against children and to tempting clinicians to favor compliant personalities.

Some therapists elevate to the status of cotherapists the "internal self-helper" personalities (Adams, 1989, p. 138; Allison, 1980)—highly centering, unifying, and protective and also informed about the individual's life history and dynamics—completely ignoring their limitations. Like excessive play therapy with child alters and the banishment of self-destroyers, such reification of the internal self-helper phenomenon not only endorses hierarchy in the patient's system but also reinforces the cultural value of compliance over protest and actually constricts the notion of constructive service to the self. Allying too closely with any one aspect of self may intensify the dissociation, pseudomaturity, and defensive precocity generated by the original traumas. Accordingly, the therapist must balance validation of all part-selves with reminders of their limitations, fostering the patient's working through barriers to valuing all parts of his/her intrasubjective world.

A SIMULTANEOUS RELATIONSHIP WITH THE WHOLE PERSON AND ALL OF ITS PARTS

An empathic relational field fostering establishment of basic trust with a therapist who apprehends the patient's struggle to know and to avoid knowing can begin to serve as a wedge between the old trauma-domination paradigms holding the survivor hostage—intrapsychically in the dissociative theater of the mind, and interpersonally in reenactments—and a new emergent self with hope for another way of life. The therapist's dilemma is to take into account contemporaneous, often hidden, and sometimes competing subjectivities residing in one individual (Sands, 1990).

An alter personality is the most highly coherent and personified form of a dissociative state. It usually coalesces around a particular affect, set of functions, and sense of self (body image, ideology, set of meanings) and exhibits only a limited repertoire of behavior, with access to only a limited number of (often state-dependent) memories (Putnam, 1989). Actually, alter personalities can be quite complex, clustered in groups and overlapping, so that what have been traditionally construed as alters may in some cases be subsystems of identities of the larger whole working in tandem.

Most organized and personified part-selves (and in some cases subsystems of the self) maintain their position and equilibrium in the internal world through what Kluft (1984) calls a narcissistic investment in a sense of separateness, which manifests as claims by one part-self or ego-state that it doesn't inhabit the patient's body, has different parents or relatives, or is not of the same race or gender. Ruptures in this delusion (or pseudo-delusion as Kluft refers to it) of separateness often produce overwhelming anxiety and will almost certainly be followed by desperate attempts—state-changes, attacks on the therapist, motor discharge, abruptly ending the session, threats, dissimulation, and so on—to reestablish the protective dissociative barriers that had effectively contained the overpowering affect states and the disturbing meanings they generate.

The advantage that this narcissistic investment in separateness holds for the patient is that it allows for significant development of functional achievements despite massive early traumatization. (One patient described the process as similar to the launching of the Space Shuttle, where one part of a rocket is jettisoned so that another, more important part can reach its destination.) The investment in separateness also shields the patient from access to authentic human relatedness, however, and from observing ego abilities and the shaping and transformative experiences produced by contact with internal states and helpful others. When perpetrators threaten child-victims about the consequences of revealing their abuse and tell them that what happened didn't really happen (it was a dream or it was imagined, the victims deserved or asked for it), they are counting on the children's submission and dissociative capacity to encapsulate sexual-abuse trauma and keep it away from healing or revealing experience.

All aspects of the patient's subjective experience must be invited into the therapy relationship—respecting, of course, the needs for safety, agency and autonomy, proper pacing, and sustained trust. (This is in contradistinction to the discriminatory directive strategies undertaken by practitioners who may feel out of control in the complex, volatile, and readily polarized relational field between themselves and dissociative trauma survivors: their efforts to "manage" such patients can precipitate combinations of defiant and submissive antics that form an ineluctably regressive spiral.) Dissociative experience—isolated, silenced, and well-camouflaged—continues to exert influence, but because it is often unmediated by thought or language, having been encoded in somatosensory or iconic levels of memory (Van der Kolk and Van der Hart, 1989), the results of its reactivation (via flashbacks, nightmares, body memories, behavioral enactments, etc.) are not easy to understand or integrate with other aspects of the patient's personality.[13]

Enhancing the dissociative patient's sense of subjective responsibility (especially to him/her self) and agency is crucial to any therapy. The helplessness clearly involved in the defense of dissociation should not be equated with automatic release from moral, ethical, and legal accountability when enactments cross criminal lines (viz., Braude, 1995, and Radden, 1996). Clinicians generally get better therapeutic results when they combine empathic sensitivity toward the subjective experience of helplessness with a firm expectation that the patient is fully responsible for his/her actions and decisions, incomplete control notwithstanding. The capacity to hold this paradox internally leads to more integrative behavior and enhanced observing ego capabilities.

Ultimately, the severely dissociative patient desires to repudiate different parts of the self (and to seduce the therapist into doing the same) for that is how psychological survival was ensured and how the pathological multiplicity evolved in the first place. In DID, alter personalities organized around functionality usually wish to destroy or suppress those that interfere with daily living, including traumatic-memory-holding child-parts. Similarly, defiant alters containing traumatic affects and virulent identifications with perpetrators (historically unwelcome except by the abusers in moments of privilege), may denigrate the compliant passivity of the functioning alters and attempt to do away with them in a variety of actual and fantasied enactments.

All alters fear destruction because they have been created, in some measure, to ward off and contain annihilation anxieties; many alters also fantasize that the therapist is out to destroy them. Some hostile alters, stuck in their original trance states and playing them out in the transference, begin to talk with the therapist about the worst aspects of the trauma including the phenomena associated with liking and willingly participating in the abuse; and, having learned from their sadistic perpetrators to use physical pain to distract themselves from painful emotional states and disturbing meanings, they may beg to be hurt or raped in order that their dissociative defenses can reorganize.

One such alter of a patient who has been involved in gruesome underworld child pornography, murder, and cult abuse pleaded to be hit and humiliated so that he could "flatten himself out and become two-dimensional once again." His request came when the level of emotional vulnerability became unbearable following his (the alter's) revelations of participation in organized sex-death rituals. Other alters surfaced during the next session, terrified that the perpetrator group somehow knew that their secrets were getting out; childlike, they pleaded for a promise of no physical harm to the patient and a pledge that he would never be returned to the perpetrator group.

Such incidents constitute the unconscious tests, reenactments, and double binds that challenge the progress of therapy; whether or not some of the events patients describe have actually happened is often beside the point. Double binds in particular must be articulated, as they usually contain themes of prior abuse. Unfortunately, therapists may easily fall into the polarizing trap of participating in acting out double binds, thereby replicating (instead of deconstructing) the psychological essence of the original trauma. In the name of psychotherapy, they may unconsciously repeat parental patterns of domination, neglect, complicity, and dissociation, failing to recognize the unconscious meaning of the tests and failing to offer new object experience to facilitate mastery of the original traumatic relationships. As already noted, the most useful new object experiences that can be internalized are those cocreated by the patient and therapist in an interactional process—that is, ones that are diametrically opposed to the traumatic relational paradigms of the survivor's childhood.

Continuity and Consistency

One of the greatest difficulties for dissociative patients is giving up unilateral control of treatment direction and allowing the therapist to moderate or disrupt their obsessive, authoritarian, self-denigrating forms of self-protective behavior. Pathological multiplicity has become a way of life for them, and they sometimes try to orchestrate the actions of several helping professionals at once; the result is a distinctly unhelpful mishmash of unintegrated relationships. Given the complexity of treating severely dissociative patients and the traumatic transference pressures, the multiple-therapists solution may be enticing on both sides—but inevitably, unless the clinicians involved are in constant dialogue, they and their patients will be plagued by outrageous splits, confused loyalties, and divergent perceptions of events. A single therapist for treating the problems of pathological multiplicity is almost always, therefore, preferable, and it is essential that s/he arrange and monitor referrals when adjunct services are necessary.

As each part of the dissociative individual must come to see itself in the other dissociated, disavowed aspects of the self, recognizing similarity where difference was once rigidly constellated, so the patient must eventually learn to tolerate differences in (and with) the therapist from whom sameness is often adamantly demanded as a means of controlling putative dangerousness. The therapist advocates for "federation," "distribution" in Pizer's (1996) terms, and "pluralism" in Samuels's (1989) terms, and consistently questions the exclusionary outcome of the polarizing, and domination impulses in his/her interpretations. This therapeutic posture slowly, pervasively, and persistently disrupts dissociation and leads to bridging processes that enable resolution, lack of resolution, and ambiguity to coexist.

Integration

Integration is the final stage of psychotherapy, but this notion of "stage" is somewhat too reified for what actually takes place in psychotherapy (or for that matter, in human development). Integration is both a process and an outcome. It is ongoing and cannot be precisely measured. It is never solely intrapsychic and cannot take place in isolation from the assignment of individual and collective responsibility in cultural context. Realistic goals for psychotherapy should reflect relative changes in intrapsychic, interpersonal, and life functioning, and should address the patient's capacity for negotiating power dynamics in current (and past) relationships.

> *I finally feel I have a right to exist. I used to get scared when I read the books that talked about integration for MPDs—I didn't want anyone doing me that way. Integration isn't like a cake mix recipe, it's more like a soup where everything naturally becomes a part of everything else but where there are still some pieces left that are familiar from what they were before. How can someone fuse someone else together? It happens only when and if it's ready and then it happens on its own, no one has to do anything to make it happen.*
>
> **—Lori (DID patient entering final phases of treatment)**

Integration needs to respect the subjectivity of the patient and must be negotiated between each patient and therapist, not dictated by some abstract ideal of what post-dissociative or post-DID mental health looks like. Single-self models of integration (Barach and Comstock, 1996) are useful but may not apply in all cases.[14] In fact, most individuals who have developed complex forms of DID from early childhood will probably continue to use dissociation in some form or other to cope with life stressors even after an enormous amount of working through of the traumatic aspects of their early experience.

Micro-integrations, medial integrations, and macro-integrations occur throughout treatment. Their development is often nonlinear, simultaneous, and supportive of the capacity for productive use of regressive experiences. An instance of micro-integration could be an encounter with a new part-self, or the crossing of an amnestic or dissociative barrier, or the recall of part or all of a new memory that changes a patient's understanding of his/her history and identity, or the working through of a confusion between old and new object experience with the therapist.

A medial integration could be the disappearance from internal and interactive life of certain defensively reified alter-personality constructs (without loss, and perhaps with enhancement of the patient's overall functioning), or the grasping of painful overarching meanings about the intentions of perpetrators and the patient's loss of innocence, or the patient's departure from enmeshments and situations fraught with destruction and betrayal. A medial integration may describe what takes place when therapist and patient share a difficult or moving emotional experience or resolve a complex treatment stalemate that allows for a deeper level of trust or for access to new levels of previously sequestered material.

Macro-integrations may reflect both the satori experiences common to many growth processes and/or the more sweeping and generalizable shifts in awareness that take place in the second half of therapy where the patient becomes increasingly differentiated from the abusive matrix and the cultural collusion, and where clearly assertive, self-protective, and creative solutions to life problems are born. Some macro-integrations occur when spontaneous psycho-spiritual notions arise from deep within the patient about his/her journey through the landscapes of trauma and dissociation, about the greater meaning of his/her life, and about the nature of human experience itself. As simple as it sounds, one major macro-integration is the adult survivor's realization that s/he was a child when subjected to trauma.

For many survivors, certain linchpin beliefs and fantasies or perpetrator teachings hold many levels of dissociation in place at once. Just as in a game of pickup sticks, the movement of a strategically positioned alter personality, fantasy, memory, or belief can lead to the rapid rearrangement or even deflation of dissociative defenses. Integration then involves the patient's tolerance for out-of-control states and transient periods of disorientation while internal reorganization, recategorization, and reconfiguration take place. Ultimately integration mandates the development of healthy (not sociopathic) senses of entitlement and ruthlessness and the refusal to put up with any shred of revictimization or any reversals of blame or responsibility for interpersonal violence and its effects.

Without access to this healthy aggression, survivors cannot disengage from complex circuits of interpersonal enmeshment in perpetrating and complicitous systems. Consequently, integration must replace with a sense of privilege a lifetime of diminishment, a grandiose sense of immunity from harm, resistance to all forms of denigration and exploitation, and confrontation with sociopathic modes of relating. Integration means a survivor recognizes abuse for what it is, doesn't refer to it euphemistically, and has worked through false memories of nonabuse. Integration does not mean that the survivor cannot continue to love his/her parents; it does mean the love involves no measure of self-sacrifice, self-denial, or self-sabotage. (Loving their perpetrators, either up close or from a distance, after redefining relationship to them, can be pivotal to the healing of some survivors. For others, especially those for whom any contact could be dangerous, the goals of integration involve moving on and not looking back.)

From a relational psychotherapeutic stance, integration occurs when two or more previously separated aspects of self, in their own time and of their own volition, recognize each others' existence and experience to the extent that there is a shared memory, grieving, and relinquishment of dissociative controls. A true "witnessing" of the internal other, a capacity to see the self in the other, and a grieving for the loss of omnipotent fantasies, defenses, and the illusions they protected must take place. This does not necessarily mean agreement, blending, and absence of conflict, but it does mean mutual recognition. Recognition involves conscious cooperation and a decentering process (Crossley, 1996), whereby dominating monologues become transformed into empathic dialogues.

In actual practice, integration is a subtle ongoing process where new experiences of contact and mutuality restructure a personality previously organized around disavowal, hierarchy, and separateness. Whatever form it takes, integration is a by-product of the pivotal treatment goals of mutual recognition, internal empathy, self-love, self-forgiveness, and cooperation. These processes, which lead ultimately to an increased capacity to tolerate paradox and conflict apply to a long-term, psychoanalytically informed psychotherapy, but they have particular significance for severe dissociative conditions—disorders of internalized domination and dividedness. Effective treatment leads to both intra- and intersubjective rendezvous to supplant the internal vacuum, or war zone, where the severely dissociative patient begins the therapy process. Integration should be unique for each individual and reflect his or her emergent capacities, needs, and "destiny drive" (Bollas, 1989, p. 3); it should not be based on the theoretical orientation of the therapist.

Rivera (1989) combines clinical notions of integration with poststructuralist philosophical challenges toward articulating a relational perspective on how the integration process operates. She addresses an individual's subjective experience vis-à-vis the power relations that structure social practices and identity formation; she considers notions of a unified self or a well-defined individual identity as ideological fictions that may blur awareness of differences within and between human beings. The therapist regards dissociative barriers as interfering with the patient's freedom to construct an identity from a wide range of options; the goal of treatment becomes helping the dissociative individual to hold in a single consciousness different and often contradictory emotional states.

Similarly, Bromberg's (1993, p. 166) description of the patient's evolving ability to "stand in the spaces between realities without losing any of them" and to "feel like one self while being many" speaks to integration via the pathway of recognition. Identity is constructed on the basis of inclusivity, not renunciation, repudiation, or disparagement. Health and integration are also always about being able to consciously choose and reject external realities and circumstances and extricate oneself from anyone or any context that feels abusive, invalidating, or exploitative. Integration-based freedom to circumambulate in the internal world does not however, equate with unconscious free reign in the external world. Although recovery does not mean an ability to handle all situations at all times, a survivor needs to know where s/he can and cannot be and with whom.

INTEGRATION VERSUS ADAPTATION

> Some will get lost, never finding their way to the center, others will collapse beneath the weight of hopelessness and try to paper over the cracks and grimly survive, yet others (perhaps most) will turn away from the rawness of the experience and take refuge in premature knowing, settling for an imitation of themselves, medicating in some way or another the symptoms that are a whisper from the depths, the soft call to interiority and the hunger for truth. (Chassay, 1996, p. 5)

Integration involves developing capacities to tolerate ambiguity, paradox, and conflict. It does not mean, however, complete adaptation. Coherence of self is one thing, conformity is another. Integration must involve the reinstitution of previously derailed and deformed protest responses so that the formerly traumatized and fragmented patient can aggressively respond on his/her own behalf, deconstruct the duplicity and double binds of the familial and social context, and sublimate his/her aggression in the service of self-love and respect for the rights for others.

No integration is underway as long as the patient does not understand the power arrangements that led to his/her victimization during childhood. In integration, critical thinking and self-assertion are no longer avoided: the patient previously limited to dissociative fantasies will now be able to enjoy and discuss fantasies that are not marked by overgeneralization or concretization or constrained by fears of reprisals by perpetrators. When a patient is "integrating," s/he can think or speculate without becoming terrified, and can examine the perpetrator's scripts without becoming entranced by them, and can examine the therapist's suggestions without automatically complying with (or defying) every one of them.

With the invitation to learn how to rely on, challenge, and enjoy the authority of others as equals, integration represents a return of the authority of the patient. It signifies that s/he can know there is tremendous evil in the world, that s/he has been terribly betrayed, and that without using dissociation s/he can discern some meaning and value in living. Integration means the patient has stopped choosing between different parts of him/herself and has moved beyond denial and narcissistic fantasies of separateness as a mode of psychic living. Integration means that the patient no longer avoids his/her suffering but allows it to exist in an internal place from which it can inform other aspects of life. Integration means that intrapsychic experience no longer bypasses the mind, language, symbolization, and relationship on its way to the body. Integration means that the patient knows a lot of what happened to him/her as a child and does not let those violent and violating experiences define his/her essence.

CHAPTER 6

From Domination to Recognition: The Restoration of Intersubjectivity and Paradoxical Awareness

> *If you want to shrink something, you must first allow it to expand. If you want to get rid of something, you must first allow it to flourish. If you want to take something, you must first allow it to be given.*
>
> **—Lao Tzu**

In the severe dissociative disorders, more "self" is wrapped up in disavowing multiple selves, diverse subnarratives, and alternate realities than in investing in actual self-knowledge or self-reflection; more "self" is wrapped up in holding back traumatic affects and memories than in doing anything else. Briere (1992b; 1995) calls that which is desperately avoided "the resting level of trauma." He conceptualizes this unmetabolized psychic mass as existing in contradistinction to self-capacities that enable the individual trauma survivor to cope with life, to keep the resting level of trauma from flooding and overstimulating the personality system.

How do we begin to reach and effectively communicate with individuals who have virtually closed themselves to all possibilities for vulnerable human relationships in order to seal off internalized trauma and prevent its recurrence? How do we as clinicians build healing relationships with individuals who are buried beneath layers of illusion, self-deception, and fortified avoidance? How do we help trauma survivors develop self-cohesion, agency, and courage sufficient enough to process the enormous amount of pain and anguish locked away in unintegrated, unmetabolized, disconnected self-states? Therapy is a dance between regression and progression, between deconstruction and reconstruction, between mindlessness and mindfulness. This chapter explores the destruction and reconstruction of the severely dissociative patient's subjectivity and capacity for paradoxical awareness.

"ACROSS THE GREAT DIVIDE"

Relational psychoanalytic theories attempt to avoid reductionistic thinking by welcoming the tensions in various pairs of apparently opposing principles—by acknowledging with equal regard the intrapsychic and the interpersonal, the intrasubjective and the intersubjective, the individual and the cultural, reality and fantasy, and autonomy and interdependence (Aron, 1996). The therapeutic postures that correspond to such a dialectical formulation can help offset the propensity for reification inherent in the phenomenology of severe dissociative disorders while respecting and permitting access to the unique subjective experiences of deeply traumatized individuals. In practical terms this means, for example, avoiding prolonged debates with the patient about whether an alter personality is real or manufactured and instead finding a way to relate to the patient simultaneously as a whole and as a part-self.

By sustaining a clinical perspective that appreciates paradox, therapists can integrate all aspects of DID without becoming mired in speculation about the validity of dissociative diagnoses. The two-person (or, perhaps more appropriately, multiple-person) psychology of contemporary psychoanalysis (Mitchell, 1988; Greenberg and Mitchell, 1983; Greenberg, 1991; Stolorow et al., 1987) supplies a progressive theoretical vehicle for understanding the perplexing experience of severely dissociative patients.

Individuals with severe dissociative conditions suffer from emotional swings between states of psychic deadness and unspeakable terror. Between these two extremes, they behave almost nonchalantly, as if nothing particularly disturbing has overtaken them. Under stress, however, their overall internal chaos leads to a psychic "scattering" and to the temporary exile of the managing and observing ego. Even though most patients (and for that matter, many therapists) cannot see it, this confusion and apparent chaos is almost always ordered according to a unique internal organization. As Kluft (1991) has suggested, it is primarily the intrapsychic structure of the alter-personality system more than the behavioral manifestations of dissociative identity disorder (DID) that is the key to understanding and helping patients.

Relationally oriented psychotherapy at its best provides the opportunity for dialogue, empathy, and conflict with the complexities and diversity of the dissociative patient's experience. The processes of negotiation, mutuality, and intersubjective discourse are in a sense revolutionary models for relationship because they access and elicit recognition of previously unavailable aspects of the self, and they systematically undermine internalized and interpersonally enacted forms of domination and authoritarianism.

Sometimes the only way a severely traumatized patient can represent or formulate previously unarticulated traumatic relationships and developmental experiences is through profoundly alarming or otherwise disturbing his/her therapist. Hence, the most productive focus in treatment is on transference/countertransference relationships. This approach echoes Bollas's (1987) advocacy of the therapist's feeling his/her way into the patient's internal object world: the patient not only talks to the therapist about the self; s/he also puts the therapist through intense experience, effectively inviting direct and intimate knowing of his/her self and internal objects.

POWER, INFLUENCE, AND THE RESTORATION OF THE FRAGMENTED SELF

Rivera's (1996) clinical and philosophical perspective on the fragmentation of consciousness typical of severely dissociative individuals emphasizes adaptation over pathology and meaning-making over defense-analysis. DID is rendered "an attempt to create meaning where meaning has been eroded or destroyed . . . to make order out of threatening chaos using the elements of the chaos. . . . [Its] purpose is to create a language to speak about the unspeakable" (p. 65).

Recontextualizing self-construction and self-development by raising patients' awareness of their own subjugated subjectivity mandates an affirmative, ongoing therapist/patient commitment to address the realities of relational reinforcement, institutional legitimization, and inadvertent victim-perpetuation of power imbalances. Both parties must monitor and reflect jointly on the conscious and unconscious ways in which they can be seduced into replicating the dynamics of dominance-submission, sacrifice, betrayal, collusion, subjugation, and exploitation—often in the name of healing, integration, abreaction, support, rescue, or anxiety reduction.

The severely dissociative patient who has been exposed to domination and captivity needs to be encouraged to find and speak his/her own mind and to articulate his/her feelings and beliefs regardless of how outrageous, multiplicitous or inconsistent they may seem, and regardless of how much they collide with the therapist's worldview. Where discord and disagreement were formerly potentially life-threatening for the trauma victim, the survivor in therapy slowly comes to learn that conflict and differences can clarify and deepen the treatment relationship and each one's relationship to him/herself.

Identification with the perpetrator is a primary medium through which the effects of trauma reverberate intrapsychically and interpersonally, and the echoes in the psyches of survivors will be competing with the messages and interpretations of the therapist. Accordingly, identification with the therapist, and by extension with his/her relational style and values, can be pivotal to the disruption of rigid and repetitive patterns of trauma-based relatedness. It is partly through the power of the idealizing transference (Kohut, 1971) that a traumatized patient can even come to imagine or believe that s/he can leave an enslaving internal and interpersonal world.

Identification with the therapist's power (to access feelings, subvert denial and collusion, value differences, etc.) and with the benevolent use of that power, constitutes a central intrapsychic and relational shift that contrasts with the patient's compulsive use of dissociation out of fear. The patient must come to believe that the therapist (and the therapy relationship) could actually be as powerful as the perpetrators, or more so—and that the therapist's power (to confront denial and domination, to tolerate pain and ambiguity, to communicate with passion and authenticity, to mobilize and protect democratic forms of relatedness etc.) is accessible and shareable, not rooted in coercion, self-sacrifice, or subjugation. This conception is a necessary precondition for a patient's relinquishing ties to malevolent introjects and feeling fully empowered him/herself. Clinicians must repeatedly investigate and openly discuss the patient's experience of their use of power and willingness to share it as well as their therapeutic technique, especially in terms of the patient's sense of freedom to differentiate him/herself from biases and influences with which s/he has identified. Treatment is complicated, however, and a patient's access to new interactional experience limited, when s/he absolutely will not tolerate any aspect of the therapist's authority or constantly assaults the therapist's vulnerability, trustworthiness, and goodwill (with, e.g., criticism, boundary violations, relentless demands).

Some severely dissociative trauma survivors must vehemently fight against internalizing the influence of the therapist's relational style and benevolent use of power because it threatens to dismantle fragile self-organizations based on unholy alliances; therefore, they may unconsciously engage in sadomasochistic reenactments of the traumatic past to reinforce their own adhesive and enslaving attachments to perpetrators. Purging the patient's thoughts, applied meanings, and experiences of the therapist's influence is, in Mitchell's (1993) view, anyhow impossible because the therapy dialogue by its very nature entails mutual reflection upon interactional dynamics, including the patient's ways of using, misusing, or avoiding using the therapist's participation.

Mitchell's relational perspectives represent an increasingly refined two-person psychology, an enlightened, reciprocal psychotherapy process, and ultimately a pathway out of the trauma-replicating patterns of ideological totalism and relational domination. Charting a course for integrating the patient's narratives, fantasies, dissociated identities, and historic recollections with the therapist's experience of the patient, they encompass the multiple realities of both participants and maintain open channels for ongoing revision and reconstruction. The very encouragement of direct contact with alter personalities and self-states leads to a more inclusive observing ego, a more reflective intrapsychic and interpersonal morality, and a compassionate democratization of mind.[1] These are developmental achievements of the highest order.

A relational philosophy values democratic forms of integration whereby the therapist does influence but does not dominate the patient both in terms of the meaning of the patient's material and the ultimate goals of treatment. Similarly, the eventual decision about the veracity of memories and associations accessed during the therapy process belongs to the patient, although the therapist clearly has a role to play and will undoubtedly have impact on the outcome. Ghent (1994) captures the paradoxical interplay of real and transference relationships—a benevolent collaboration between patient and therapist—in asserting that the patient always wants simultaneously "to be sure that the analyst 'gets it' the way the patient experienced it, and . . . to have the analyst help him go deeper [so that he can] 'get it' on a level that had previously been inaccessible" (p. 485).

An integral part of psychotherapeutic work is the creation of spaces for marginalized testimony or subverted discourses to be heard, specifically, those that have been excluded from representation by society's dominant (and dominating) master narratives (Price, 1995); it also involves the deconstruction and challenging of pathological stories and identifications, such as "I am worthless," "I am damaged," or "I am evil," to generate more historically accurate, compassionate, and self-affirming alternatives. Making such spaces must include investigating the subtexts and influences of the debates about false memories as well as the influence of perpetrators' thought-reform practices and other unconscious and coercive influences in child-abuse trauma. The cultural forces of denial about and collusion with child abuse, in combination with specific messages and ideologies inherent in abusive family systems and the distorted thinking of abusers, actually determine much of the form of dissociative identity construction in chronic trauma survivors.

The journey toward self-understanding then involves both an internal and external linking process (Bion, 1993) so that disparate aspects of the self can encounter one another and dialogue, and then systematically challenge and eventually dismantle the aggressive unlinking processes of the dissociative mind—the faulty associations that have held the traumatized individual captive to massive denial, the irrational logic of perpetrators, coerced belief systems, or preoperational and concrete operational thought. Clinicians treating trauma and dissociation need to be educated not only about memory and its vicissitudes but also about the dynamics of incestuous families, of perpetrators and perpetrator groups, of coercive thought-reform and its social influences, of complicity, collusion, and collaborationism, about the psychobiology of trauma and dissociation, and about the relationship between the abusive power arrangements in the culture and the internal worlds of severe trauma survivors.

LINKING THE CHARACTEROLOGICAL WITH THE POSTTRAUMATIC

Inclusivity in treatment implies a willingness and an ability to work with both character disorder and posttraumatic aspects of DID and other severe dissociative conditions. In such complex disorders of extreme stress the characterological and posttraumatic features are mutually reinforcing; the interaction between them, as well as an individual's deficits in psychosocial resources and intrinsic psychological capacities, influences the construction and personification of self-states and the development of divisions among them. For example, both borderline and avoidant personality traits (and organization) may be particularly reinforced by the highly dissociative patient's double-binding, violent, and deceitful early environment, lifelong unconscious trauma reenactment patterns, and ongoing biphasic posttraumatic symptomatology (i.e., numbing, hyperarousal, and intrusive symptoms).

During treatment it may be difficult to tease apart the characterological and posttraumatic elements, and as Kluft (1988b) has noted, various therapeutic approaches seem to focus on only one or the other. Unfortunately, treating the character disorder aspects of severe dissociative conditions without acknowledging the underlying traumatic affects and memories can produce a highly intellectualized process with minimal structural change (Putnam, 1989; Kluft, 1987a); it might even deepen the dissociation between the patient's adaptive (functional/compliant) and less adaptive selves, and could reinforce defensive precocity developed in childhood). (A patient may be well analyzed but never quite "reached" [Bromberg, 1991]). On the other hand, trauma-oriented therapies that seek only to access memories and alter personalities, that encourage the patient to abreact, express, and integrate painful material from the past, may result in overt changes in symptomatology but leave intact the untreated narcissistic, personality-disordered aspects of the patient's disturbance.

Individuals with unexamined notions of omnipotence and aggression remain incapable of intimacy and mutuality. Indeed, as Kluft (1988b) observes, failure to work with the problematic character traits of the DID patient very often result in a relapse into dividedness, and Brenner (1996) points out, in support of Kluft's recognition of the importance of the enormous characterological issues in the DID population, that "psychic welding" (p. 156) of alters through hypnosis alone is insufficient treatment and rarely works to hold a supposed integration together. Bliss (1986) concurs with Brenner, acknowledging that, despite the centrality of autohypnotic phenomena, DID requires more sophisticated treatment than hypnotically based alter integration.

Posttraumatic symptoms represent incomplete responses to the original trauma; like other defenses, they must be valued and affirmed for their latent transformative potential. Challenging the pathologizing of victims' responses to trauma, Briere (1996) maintains that the intrusion symptoms of PTSD are an inborn self-healing activity. In this "counterconditioning" view, for example, flashbacks, intrusive thoughts, nightmares, and/or traumatic preoccupation might represent the mind's natural attempt to desensitize and integrate previously overwhelming and unintegratable, affect-laden traumatic material through small, repeated, moderately distressing dosing until the survivor attains some relief and restabilization. Understanding this principle within the therapy relationship releases the developmental potential of symptoms from their previously rigidified manifestations, while ignoring or suppressing symptoms misrecognizes the natural, reconstructive pressures on the individual toward a more fully synthesized resolution of traumatic experiences. The essence, then, of the posttraumatic recovery work beyond stabilization lies in the therapist's generating an environment of safety and trust where traumatic material and related affects can surface and be reexperienced and deconstructed, and where new meanings and relationships can be negotiated (Schwartz, 1994).

Posttraumatic symptoms represent, in part, the patient's paradoxical struggle to know and to avoid knowing (and reexperiencing). The therapist must validate, empathize with, and interpret both opposing positions. Reconstructive treatment, then, begins with observations and spontaneous and empathic disruptions of dissociative defenses and other characterological patterns toward their reintegration in the context of a more flexible identity and coping style. The therapist helps the patient to

- learn to grieve, face loss, and bear depression, despair, longing, and rage;
- reactivate and accept, within the transference, disrupted developmental processes (Atwood and Stolorow, 1984), sequestered self-esteem and attachment needs (Sands, 1994), and particularly the capacity for tolerating ambiguity, ambivalence, and paradox (Schwartz, 1994);
- develop a capacity for mutual and authentic positive regard and nondominating power arrangements (as distinguished from compulsive dominance and submission);
- develop a capacity for reflectivity, especially in regard to understanding of the patterns that maintain his/her organization of dissociative self-experience and investment in separateness;
- develop a capacity for healthy dependence and independence (agency, self-assertion, aggression), as distinguished from the clinging, coer-

cion, manipulation, avoidance, or pseudoautonomy so common in this population;

- understand the role of shame and self-hatred and its internalization in subsequent personality adaptations. (These are the most immutable of the characterological aspects of severe dissociative disorders to work through in treatment—the painful feelings and beliefs that hold the entire dissociative system together);
- work through feelings of omnipotence and facilitate deployment of restorative fantasy (as opposed to catastrophic and crisis thinking, inflexible, reified imaginal productions, or trance logic); and
- recover his/her sense of continuity, personal narrativity, and historicity.

In sum, dissociative defenses are not developed or deployed in isolation; they are intertwined and interdependent with character-forming or -deforming defenses. The complex personality-disordered picture presented by severe dissociative conditions involves the variety of characterological positions located in different states whose roles and functions may vary and collide with one another. The alter personalities in an individual, like individuals in a dysfunctional family system, are locked into rigid positions that mutually reinforce and sustain each others' motivations and behaviors (Kluft, 1996a). In fact, about 50 percent to 60 percent of patients with DID meet criteria for paranoid, borderline,[2] and avoidant personality disorders (Ross, 1992).

LINKING AND DELINKING

Overreliance on dissociative solutions to trauma sustains a magical world that wards off anxiety and threat but simultaneously perpetuates the internal persecutory structure of experience and the absence of critical thinking, or a unified observing ego. According to Pye (1995), much of the clinical work with dissociative abuse survivors entails analyzing fears of linking one moment to the next, fears about the power of omnipotent fantasies, and fears about the significance of alterations in identity and affect states that surface in response to the events taking place in the therapy relationship.

In DID, as with many posttraumatic conditions, the omnipotence defense and other aspects of dissociative solutions are inherently attacks on the linking functions of the psyche (Bion, 1959). Effective psychotherapy involves recognition, interpretation, and at times confrontation with these often personified omnipotent defenses, which manage to keep emotional events and their possible traumatic meanings unrelated and disconnected in the patient's mind (and sometimes, through projective identification or other forms of unconscious influence, unrelated and disconnected in the therapist's mind as well).

Commentary on and interpretation and confrontation of omnipotent defenses and other forms of intrapsychic and interpersonal domination and coercion are central tasks of treatment. The psychotherapist's use of his/her own countertransference experiences of traumatization, intrusion, and betrayal is essential to a successful treatment outcome. The therapist's use also of his/her countertransference feelings of attachment, anger, hate, and love toward the patient both in self-reflection and in collaborative dialogue is crucial and complementary to the creation of a transformative relationship. The therapeutic posture and relational stance must be powerful enough to disrupt and neutralize internalized traumatic attachments and perpetrator identifications and to motivate the construction of a benevolent internal world.

Within the transference/countertransference matrix, it is ostensibly through the process of enactment—dramatizing or externalizing the patient's internal experience against the therapist's reality (Bromberg, 1993)—that empathic communication, useful knowing, and significant healing take place. Enactments involve the need to be known in the only way possible (i.e., intersubjectively) for Bromberg, through playing out with the therapist versions of the situations that led to the original needs for dissociation. Sharing the experience of replaying same behaviors with different responses facilitates the construction of consensually validated meaning "that allows the dissociated threat of potential trauma to be cognitively processed" (p. 154). Memories (of events, emotions, fantasies, family dynamics) that have never fully registered, never been linguistically coded into a meaningful historical narrative, can enter the psychic space between patient and therapist, first making way for the possibility of healing.

The joint discovery of, and awakening to, possible meanings of disturbing interpersonal and intrapsychic experience almost always involves confusing collisions and unusual convergences between the two parties. The manifestation of symptoms—the sudden intrusion of feelings of nausea, hostility, disgust, hatred; even a desire to withdraw from the interaction altogether—in either patient or therapist may be an important precursor to the emergence of memories, whose management will determine whether the intrusive feelings will illuminate or obfuscate the related psychic material.

Other kinds of abrupt state-changes in one or the other member of the therapeutic dyad or in the ambience between them may reveal or conceal underlying traumatic relational patterns slowly surfacing with the patient's growing tolerance for conflict and painful affect. Because severely dissociative patients are always alert to repetitions of the original traumas (which may be vigorously denied or dissociated when remembered) and because they are profoundly confused about the dynamics of trust and betrayal, unexpected and counterintuitive shifts take place between (and within) therapist and patient when they reach new levels of intimacy or when the clinician makes minor errors in empathy or consistency. In enactment their two psyches become tied in a knot; the process of untangling them is the essence of therapy. Sometimes, when new relationship experiences and insights develop swiftly, it happens rapidly, but when strong feelings of betrayal, retaliation, abandonment, and intimidation have entered the relational field, the disentangling process—understanding enactments, constructing meaning and identity, attributing responsibility—can go on for months, challenging the steadiness and resilience of the treatment alliance.

TERI

"I could die for telling you what I just told you," a dissociative patient claims anxiously. I do not negate (or become frozen and terrified of) her worldview, but explore its underpinnings, allowing her to experience the threat as real in the safe presence of inquiry that meets her subjectively compelling realities.

THERAPIST: You think I should send you away or beat you because you feel you've done something so awful here by telling me this secret; you actually believe you deserve to be treated badly even if you really don't want to be treated badly by me.

PATIENT: *[Nodding yes as if from several places at once]* I AM bad; that's why my parents left me with those people.

After a short discussion of her history and memory of being taken to various people's houses for prostitution, pornography, and sadistic abuse, the dialogue in the transference/countertransference resumes—now with more parts of the patient present.

T: Parts of you are afraid of my leaving you like the others did, parts of you want me to send you away so I will prove no threat to you in being like all the rest, parts of you want to get rid of me, and parts of you want to hang on for dear life. Some places in you think you deserve mistreatment, others don't know why you deserve such treatment, and some parts of you want to mistreat others. And all are welcome here.

P: *[Switching to another, more hostile and provocative alter]* You wouldn't say that if you knew some parts of me and what they've done.

T: You're just not sure I can handle all of you—who you are, what you've done, what you think you've done, who you think you are yet. Is that right?

P: Yes. *[Defiantly]* Can you?

T: Given your experience of betrayal, you can't just take my word that I welcome contact with all of your parts, and since maybe you know some things I don't know yet, neither one of us can be totally sure of what will happen next, so there's some risk. The real question is how will you go about finding out if I mean what I say; how will you test me?

P: What do you mean test you? I can test you? You would like that?

T: I imagine some of the ways you could test me would be quite stressful, but the point seems to be that it's hard for you to believe that I'd want you to have any power or say over what goes on in here.

P: Yes, that's right, and besides that I'm not sure if I'd want you to pass or fail.

T: Probably both at once, right?

P: *[Laughing]* Right, if you fail I'm back where I started from but at least I could gloat over that, and I would really like to gloat over that—and if you pass, I have to go forward, and I have to remember things and feel things and if I say some things bad things might happen.

T: What bad things might happen, for example?

P: I could be hurt. You could be killed. Or we could both be killed.

T: Can you say more about that feeling or idea?

P: *[After hesitating for a long time]:* Why aren't you scared to talk about this? Why aren't you scared of them?

T: When you say "them" I am not sure who you mean, but I do get the idea that you're threatened and you're wondering why I don't seem to be.

Staying close to her experience, and mindful of the dynamics of organized perpetrator groups, I do not automatically assume this concern about endangerment means the patient is projecting, deflecting her aggression toward me to some vague outside authority, or that she is simply fearful of her own aggressive impulses, although eventually, and in a different context, some of these dynamics involving fear of her own power and aggression will have to be addressed.

P: There are things she *[referring to the host personality]* doesn't know and maybe can't know yet or ever, I'm not sure, and I don't like talking about it anyway.

T: As I've told you before, you don't ever have to ever talk about anything until you're ready—if you're ever ready.

P: Okay, that's good. I still don't know why you're not scared.

T: When you feel or believe that I am not scared, what comes up for you around that?

P: Three different things. First relief, like maybe there's protection and then I want to talk to you. Tell you everything, unload. Then there's the fear—a voice in my head says he doesn't know what it's all about, how dangerous it is, he's just a stupid therapist like all the rest and he'll never believe you anyway. Then I feel numb and confused and I think maybe you don't know what you're getting yourself into. I don't want to cause you to be hurt.

Following this discussion, Teri could begin to discriminate (and negotiate with) a variety of persecutor and perpetrator alter personalities as well as more clearly define a variety of external perpetrators—some of whom, using mind-control technology, had created hypno-programmed dissociative states to serve a variety of functions including prostitute, courier, and assassin. Distinguishing internal and external threats was a major precursor to Teri's beginning integration and to the systematic deprogramming of embedded triggers, commands, beliefs, and messages from her perpetrators.

RELATIONAL PERSPECTIVES AND NEW KNOWLEDGE ACQUISITION

Certainly, given the blurring nature of dissociative processes, absolute knowledge and truth about the past may be unattainable. However, the methods of relational psychoanalysis and, to some extent, the cognitive/dynamic techniques of the dissociative disorders field foster the mutual construction of ever-changing narratives that at once make sense of the chaos of the patient's history and fragmented identity and leave room for the ambiguity of not knowing.

Along with interpretation from within the transference-countertransference matrix, and a focus on shared observation of reenactment patterns, psychotherapy for severe dissociative disorders always involves a degree of *witnessing* of survivors' testimony. Survivors have always needed not only to survive to tell their stories but also to tell their stories in order to survive (Laub, 1995). "There is in each survivor an imperative . . . to tell and thus to come to know one's story, unimpeded by ghosts from the past. . . . One has to know one's buried truth in order to be able to live one's life" (p. 63).

The intersubjective therapeutic environment promotes the patient's remembering, listening to, and tolerating the conflict among his/her multiple identities and diverse self-states without resorting to dissociation and subterfuge. Capacities for feeling, grieving, and critical thinking, shattered in the traumatic childhood, can be restored. One of the great paradoxes of treatment for the adult survivor is that trusting in the psychotherapy relationship means both that s/he might be hurt again and that s/he might finally feel safe enough to know how hurt s/he actually has been. That safety leads to awareness of the vulnerability and defenselessness long warded off and simultaneously to a realistic appraisal of one's true (as opposed to fantasied, omnipotent, identification-with-aggressor-rooted) power to survive and recover.

In the end, there can be a future for a patient who is no longer held captive to an unassimilated, unmetabolized past—a conscious, liberated, and participatory future instead of a lifetime of concrete traumatic reenactments and revictimization spirals.

Prior to involvement in such psychotherapeutic discourse, most severely traumatized patients either dissociate all human destructiveness out of mind or own and identify with it completely ("all me," "my choice," "my fault") in a childlike, omnipotent strategy to control and contain their malevolent childhood surrounds. Severely traumatized individuals have a particular incapacity to attribute responsibility properly: they impute everything that happens to their own actions or their own magical thinking (Van der Kolk, 1996), manifesting a profound omnipotent sense of responsibility not only for their abuse but also for subsequent problems over which they had no control.

The capacity to externalize cause accurately is an important element of healing, however (Alpert, 1995). Only when the dissociative conflation of past and present, the self and other, has been disentangled can a patient correctly identify and integrate his/her actual aggressive feeling, sexuality, and fantasies. Some of this work involves locating and developing entitlement feelings in the patient where none were allowed to exist before. Some of this work involves relinquishing or negotiating forms of entitlement and omnipotence developed in the abusive context and sustained throughout the survivor's life. (Cultural and professional confusion over issues of entitlement, reparations, and the protest appropriate to victims has led to incomplete treatments and in some cases retraumatization of patients within the systems designated to help them.) Some of this work involves linking personal psychological experience and character change with awareness of political and social realities that support and perpetuate child abuse and other forms of domination. And a good deal of this work involves developing models of personal transformation that promote resistance to merging with the dominant culture's unhealthy norms, a commitment to attend to one's own voice and integrity (Gilligan, Rogers, and Tolman, 1992). The purpose of psychotherapy is not only to soothe but to disrupt, not to adjust but to empower; this induces distress where formerly there was comfort, acceptance (Brown, 1994), complacency, and dissociation.

Recontextualization of DID symptoms as emblematic of the patient's adaptational and developmental needs in a sociocultural milieu of violence and betrayal is essential for avoidance of retraumatization (by means of subtly blaming the victim or potentiating disempowerment through ahistorical defense analysis). The wounded psyche of the adult survivor of severe childhood trauma must be attended to within a clinical framework that links psychological recovery of specific developmental processes with a progressive political awareness of the ways in which institutionalized systems of domination, including the family, can assault, damage, and pervert the individual. Without such an integrated approach to treatment (viz., Altman's [1995] three-person amplification of the two-person model of human development [Mitchell, 1988], where the larger social context is the theoretical third), the field of psychotherapy may participate in perpetuating a psychology of victimhood where learned helplessness, powerlessness, unmodulated rage and despair predominate in the minds of trauma survivors. The patient must be able to question ethics, morality, and responsibility in ways that help him/her find a voice of protest and outrage and a refined, conscious relationship with external authority.

Since severely dissociative trauma survivors have grown up under tyrannical and dominating family systems, the psychotherapy process must acknowledge the power of language and relationship and the psychopathologizing of subjective experience. In a context of abuse, the power to name, silence, and reverse meanings is a key tool of subjugation used by perpetrators in tandem with violence and intimidation to define the terms of reality and to exercise complete control over the victim and his/her mind. A central task in treating the severely traumatized patient—mind fragmented, reality testing permanently disrupted and confused by perpetrators—is interrupting and halting conscious and unconscious compliance with his/her own objectification and subordination, both inside and outside of psychotherapy.

RECOGNITION VERSUS DOMINATION

Dissociative identity disorder is almost always a disorder of internalized domination and failed recognition. There is too much identity and not enough identity; too much subjugated subjectivity and not enough agency; too much collusion with perpetrators and too much self-betrayal, insufficient autonomy and self-love. The too-much-identity part comes from elaborations of survival strategies, attachment needs, and the double binds of attachment inherent in child-abuse situations; the too-little identity results from developmental arrest, limited exposure to (or internalization of) benevolent interaction, and lack of integration of the disparate aspects of the self.

The inner world of the DID individual is riddled with both active and passive forms of aggression, coercion, and domination (Schwartz, 1994). The intergenerational transmission of violence and internalized oppression of perpetrating systems often results not only in internalizing the enemy/abuser and collaborator positions, but also in becoming seduced and mystified by their worldviews and messages, and ultimately in producing a set of alienated, disempowered (or falsely inflated) set of dissociated part-selves. Unconscious conditioning to fit into a pathological family and/or social system requires the development of distorted ideas about privilege and entitlement that alternate with self-deprecation, worthlessness, and alienation. (The ever-present values of the dominant culture are internalized below the level of awareness, where there is no possibility of their articulation

[Hertzberg, 1996].) In the unusual intrapsychic arrangements that evolve from chronic victimization experiences in pathological, violent families and in this culture in general, these belief systems usually emerge in treatment as cover stories along with dissociation (Waites, 1997): the patient's well-rehearsed narrative of the past (developed with the help of his/her perpetrators and collaborators and his/her own limited cognitions from childhood, plus his/her adult needs to pass as normal) obscures other versions of the past that are characterized by brutality and exploitativeness, subjectively experienced as the present, and usually sequestered in alter personalities whose voices are suppressed and "forgotten."

Neglect, violation, and duplicity have so marked the developmental experiences of the severely dissociative patient that s/he has come to embody extreme forms of human adaptation to a corrupt interpersonal world. In such deplorable and abusive interpersonal conditions, there is an almost complete incapacity for *recognition*, which—combining resonance and difference—is the response from the other that makes meaningful the feelings, intentions, and actions of the self (Benjamin, 1990). Recognition from caretakers allows the self to realize its agency and authorship in a tangible way (Benjamin, 1988). Children (indeed, people in general) come to know their emotional lives only to the extent that their emotions are recognized by others who can tolerate feelings and their corresponding representations in themselves, and who, moreover, can actually think about what they feel and can communicate to the child (or patient) something psychologically usable (Spezzano, 1996). From a contemporary psychoanalytic perspective, recognition is the central relational medium of healthy development.

From its roots in developmental psychology (Stern, 1985; Beebe and Lachmann, 1988), and developmental psychoanalysis (Winnicott, 1971), and from the self-psychological emphasis on empathic attunement (e.g., Kohut, 1971; 1984) to the emergence of theories of intersubjectivity (Stolorow et al., 1987; Orange et al., 1997; Benjamin, 1990 etc.) *recognition* has come to be seen in relational psychoanalysis as the essence of intersubjective exchange and as the primary vehicle for the transformative effects of psychotherapy (Ghent, 1995). In an effort to articulate what is at the heart of the relational perspective—even more definitive than mutuality—and to capture the nature of the mutative interaction that "reaches deep into the very essence of the patient's most private, and sometimes most unavailable, sense of self" (p. 110), Eisold (1999) has coined the term "profound recognition: . . . an experience in which the patient feels that some significant part of himself or herself, previously set aside, if not entirely dissociated, has been 'seen,' 'met' by the analyst in such a way that he or she can again come to know and acknowledge it as important"(p. 110). Rustin (1997) suggests that—leaving the patient with the feeling that s/he has been acknowledged and understood more deeply than ever before, and contributing to a feeling of unity with the therapist—such recognition leads to the development and consolidation of an enduring sense of personal agency in the patient that was not previously possible.

In sharp contrast to this model, sexual-abuse perpetrators are typically incapable of tolerating any affect or need on the part of the victim that does not conform to their own grandiose schemes for narcissistic gratification and the attendant imperative for secrecy; their interactions with the victim teach him/her to suppress all affects, behaviors, and thoughts that do not fit with the prescribed role. The mind of the perpetrator colonizes the mind of the victim and attempts to gain full recognition from the child without giving anything in return (although some children have perceived their perpetrators to have given them specialness, safety, succor, money, food, etc.).

The isolation of the victim's attention in child-abuse situations is the opposite of healthy recognition: the child must allocate most of his/her developmental resources to anticipating the needs and threats of the caretaker/perpetrators. Such marginalizing is accompanied by efforts to convince the victim to feel singled out—either as the recipient of the perpetrator's "love" or as someone worthless who "deserves" abuse. Because perpetrators withhold (or pervert) recognition experiences from their child victims (except the kinds that encourage compliance), and because the children develop state-dependent trust in untrustworthy authorities (which inevitably creates chronic doubt and confusion in their minds), the actions of the victims over time conform more and more with the ambitions of the victimizer (Nachmani, 1997).

Just as the double binds of the abuser foster division, camouflage, and self-evasion in the psyche of the victim, so the empathic and linking responses of the psychotherapist can promote internal or self-recognition processes—capacities born and shaped out of healthy mutuality in the parenting sphere of influence—to support the development and actualization of the healthy, feisty, and liberated self. The collapse of intersubjective experience and the eclipse of mutuality betoken a condition of domination, where there is refusal to accept the fundamental tension between the self's needs for assertion and the other's needs for recognition (Benjamin, 1990). A true sharing of realities presupposes appreciation for both one's own and another's (Benjamin, 1988; 1990), but in child-abuse trauma, there exists no such developmental dynamic—only the reality of a perpetrator with the power to induce fear, and the willingness to use the ideology of authority to justify abuse.

Sometimes the perpetrator uses the child's needs for recognition solely to silence him or her; at other times the perpetrator manipulates them for power—psychological inflation, sadistic gratification, or erotic stimulation. For example, some perpetrators tell the child-victim that when other people find out what s/he has done they will brutally reject and abandon him/her, while other perpetrators praise the sexual precocity of the child-victim, urging him/her to engage in even more bizarre sexual practices as proof of his/her special skills, or reinforcing his/her unique capacities to please the perpetrator and thereby gain monetary or other rewards. Through a combination of intimidation, coercion, and praise, some perpetrators are able to seduce some children to sexually abuse or violently turn against other child-victims as proof of their superiority to the other children, loyalty to the perpetrator, or entitlement to special privileges; in some instances, these events are part of the demented plots of child pornography and snuff films.

In the worst scenario, the child-victim's isolation and needs for approval and protection lead him/her to develop compliant selves that serve the economic needs of the perpetrator group, which—having deformed that child's psyche and sexuality—now profits from their accessibility. The perpetrator, the person who threatens the child's life, may also play on the child's natural empathy by claiming that s/he is hurting his feelings when s/he doesn't do as s/he is told. The highly dissociative child will then develop an ego state empathic to the perpetrator's hurt, and this state will be completely separate from the aspects of the personality that have knowledge of the abuse. Over the years, several severely dissociative patients (or specific alters within their systems) have described their awareness of (and psychological investments in) soothing their perpetrators during episodes of molestations, others have reported elaborate fantasies of *healing* the perpetrator while the perpetrator was raping him/her.

The domination experience—a variable-interval reinforcement schedule, as behavioral psychology would term it, of punishment, pain, and relief—that characterizes the life histories of almost all severely dissociative patients becomes internalized and then elaborated within the fabric of their dissociative worlds. Abusive parents/caretakers essentially use the child for primitive psychic-regulatory functions, demanding obedience and compliance, which are perversions of empathy and recognition. At the same time, they make recognition of the child's pain and needs for soothing and reality-testing, as well as moments of attention or comfort (release from pain or captivity or torture) conditional upon submission and compliance. In the most perverse child-abuse situations, such as those that obtain in most organized perpetrator groups, there is not only complete and intentional absence of recognition for the victim's experience but also the creation (and systematic inculcation) of new (false) identities and bizarre beliefs in the child-victim's confused posttraumatized mind.

Without a recognizing other to work out developmental issues of aggression and reparation from trauma-induced psychobiological dysregulation, the traumatized child, chronically jettisoned from the intersubjective, is left only with intrapsychic and dissociative phenomena to manipulate with any efficacy. Imitation (perhaps in caricature) of the most salient and powerful elements in his/her surround is sometimes the victim's only source of comforting fantasies and strategic dissociative identity formation. The psychology/ideology of the perpetrator(s)and often the collaborators as well is internalized in the child's psyche, regrettably, where the vulnerable self is treated by an increasingly dissociated self-abuser with the perpetrator's contempt and objectification.

In keeping with the operative levels of perpetrator influence and co-opting and the specific methods of torture and thought-reform deployed, self-abusers can become more and more detached from any reality other than the perpetrator's perverse desires and beliefs. In cases of internalized complicity and collusion, for example, the vulnerable, posttraumatized self is ignored, dismissed, or told by collaborator-parts either that nothing happened—that s/he is making things up just for attention—or that s/he deserved what happened. Patients who do not always (initially) remember their perpetrators' faces or names remember too well the names they themselves were called, repeatedly—names like Fat Ugly Pig, Stupid Cunt, or Worthless Whore. Words and the intent they convey are, for children, as impressive as actions, and hateful words hurt as much as physical violence, sometimes more. The internal persecutors who evolve out of chronic exposure to such contempt replay those words until internal identities actually bearing them as names emerge; thus devalued, they regularly submit to abuse and derision by the other internalized self-states. A behavioral psychologist would describe the dynamic as a conditioning paradigm in which increasingly distorted aspects of the patient's self and sexuality are systematically reinforced, while responses affirming autonomy, protest, and vulnerability are systematically ignored, punished, or extinguished.

Dissociation structuralizes the traumatized child by providing a soothing discontinuity between abuse events. (Also, it mirrors the massive denial and inconsistency inherent in abusive families or groups and echoes the state-changes perpetrators manage facilely as they switch from private to public spaces.) The result is a host of internal part-selves whose rigid roles and functions are never negotiated. As omnipotent fantasies replace restorative ones, feelings of omnipotence replace true mastery; the individual denies both inner and outer psychic realities, recognizes neither self nor other, remains desperate to sustain some sort of attachment bonds with the perpetrators, and sequesters, then vigilantly guards experiences in order to bind terror and annihilation anxiety. In short, the world has been divided into the dominators and the dominated, the potential for mutuality is lost, and dissociative limbo has become the only retreat.

Especially early in treatment, the dissociative patient will therefore attempt to convert all interactions with the therapist into repetitions of perverse power struggles with the perpetrator (including seductions, evasions, submission, coercion, and efforts to control the mind of the other), and inevitably the therapist will play out some of the expected patterns; if the patient is unable to exercise awareness of his/her dissociated past and his/her role in re-creating its dynamics, s/he will perceive the therapist as a victimizer. (Too many abuse survivors have, in fact, been exploited sexually by clergy or mental health professionals.) Some severely traumatized, dissociative patients polarize therapy interactions out of genuine confusion; others do so for secondary gain or to distract themselves from the need to face their own internal conflicts and pain.

Sometimes, early in treatment, a severely dissociative trauma survivor, often split off into a child alter personality, will refuse to leave the session or act in such a way that ending a session becomes extremely difficult for the therapist. The patient's behavior may represent true confusion in the alter personality about the nature and limits of the therapy relationship, an attempt to play upon the guilt of the therapist to gain special attention, a need to reenact boundary violations, or a need to create a power struggle with the therapist in order to deflect attention from emerging traumatic affects and memories or other disturbing needs and vulnerabilities. In a given dissociative patient demonstrating this particular behavior, all of these intentions and motivations may exist concurrently.

Extreme dissociative disorders, organized with varying degrees of narcissistic investment in separateness (Kluft, 1985) among alter personalities or self-states, replicate the dynamics at work between child and abusive caretaker(s). That is, all alter personalities dominate one another, though in different ways, being frightened of each other's power to destroy their selves or derail their pursuit of their goals according to reciprocal trance logic of the dissociative self-system. Some alters threaten, deride, and enact fantasied or actual violence on the other more compliant, complicitous, or childlike and victim-identified alters. The compliant ones exert control passive-aggressively, by disowning, disavowing, refusing to remember, and refusing to tolerate painful emotions, thus forcing those functions back onto other alters (Schwartz, 1994); enacting domination at another level, they claim innocence of aggressive impulses or behavior, preferring to feel either victimized or amnestic. Compliant alters also sabotage engagement with therapists by straining to maintain surface level dialogues, and they sabotage intimacy with other people in their lives by avoiding important self-revelation.[3]

Many severely dissociative patients insist on dictating their own treatment, being almost totally unable to tolerate the experience of another's power. In testing the therapeutic relationship, they attempt compliance, sabotage, and defiant seizures of power to determine the balance of that power. (At the same time, and paradoxically, most clinicians and theorists treating sexual trauma agree there is no group of patients more vulnerable to therapist boundary violations and other abuse than the dissociatively disabled). Toward gently disrupting the structures of internal domination that maintain the dysfunctional internal world, therapists must remember to relate all part-selves by recognizing their dependence on and domination of the others. Internalization of the benevolent, respectful, honest and mutuality-based interaction with the therapist is most subversive to the internalized system of domination.

Ultimately, a commitment to mutual recognition means reexperiencing traumatic affects and disturbing memories whose hallmarks are helplessness and betrayal, and, in turn, inevitably grieving and suffering profound loss. Therapists need to remember that it is easier for a severely dissociative patient to sustain the accustomed abusive relational dynamic in treatment (in reality or fantasy) than to risk allowing another form of relational awareness to threaten the security provided by the dissociative system. In the end (in order for a new, healthier systemic security to supplant the old one) the same gentle and gradual erosion of defenses that has distanced the patient from his or her suffering will have to be experienced by all the alters.

CLINICAL POSTURES THAT FOSTER RECOGNITION

Bringing about the *recognition* requisite to the treatment of severely dissociative patients embodies subversion of all forms of domination. Recognition is the product not of a set of interventions but of a cluster of attitudes that create an ambience—attitudes that mandate the clinician to

- Accept the intersubjective principle that the therapist's perceptions are not intrinsically more true or valid than the patient's, and that s/he cannot know the patient's internal reality directly but only through the perspective from his/her own window (Orange, 1995; Stolorow and Atwood, 1992).
- Notice and explore (and eventually diagnose and discuss as appropriate) the patient's patterns of dissociation and pathological multiplicity, maintaining openness and willingness to assess for factitious, malingering, and iatrogenic factors in a given presentation.
- Monitor his/her internal and interpersonal shifts between doubt and credulity, and balance skepticism with a willingness to believe (and to suspend disbelief) in the face of even apparently implausible or grotesque accounts of child abuse that emerge during the course of treatment.
- Access and work with alter personalities or other, less organized dissociative self-states in terms of their relationships with one another and relationships with the therapist toward apprehending empathically and articulating their roles in the individual's overall psychological and physical survival.
- Understand the paradoxical needs of most alters/self-states in a dissociative self-system to be perceived as voices at once desperately begging to be heard and having to hide and avoid recognition of any kind (Price, 1997).
- Balance the potential dangers of reifying the patient's dissociative self-system (through fascination, concretization, collusion, and reinforcement of narcissistic investment in separateness) with the dan-

gers of abandonment, neglect, and treatment stalemate due to failure or unwillingness by either party to engage in meaningful dialogue with the patient about his/her inner life.

- Be in touch with his/her own feelings as well as understand what the patient feels, what the patient has not yet felt, or what the patient may be unwilling to feel, and be open to feedback from the patient about what s/he feels the therapist is unwilling to feel, think, or believe.
- Tolerate ambiguity and uncertainty, appreciate the unexpected, and slowly cultivate these capacities in the dissociative patient's relationship to self and others.
- Face (and discuss) extreme human malevolence and be (unrighteously, but descriptively) willing to name it in the life of the dissociative individual.
- Create a climate hospitable to revisiting informed consent about different aspects of the treatment process and to reviewing responsibility and accountability in both participants.
- Respect how the patient's dissociative adaptations have served as a bulwark against overwhelming pain and distress, and explain how relinquishing dissociative solutions in treatment may lead to transitory exacerbation of symptoms in the process of coming to terms with painful recollections.
- Recognize what stage of treatment (e.g., stabilization, processing trauma, deprogramming, addressing intimacy issues, mourning/grieving, termination/resolution) the patient is ready to undertake, and help the patient learn to do so him/herself on an ongoing basis.
- Realize that patients may either be overideational, somewhat fantasy-prone, and highly invested in elaboration of an internal dissociative self-system—or fantasy-deficient, fantasy-phobic, and avoidant of any revelation or elaboration of the internal world. (Both extremes present diagnostic and treatment dilemmas, and in some cases both can exist in the same individual.)
- Explore, understand, and confront all addictions and self-defeating, self-destructive behaviors, especially those that jeopardize the patient's immediate well-being and obstruct the therapeutic alliance by cloaking and/or reinforcing dissociative strategies and impeding treatment progress.

- Foster the patient's observing ego functions regarding all internal and interpersonal patterns of dissociation, domination, collusion/complicity, and identifications with perpetrators.
- Discourage uncontrollable and exhibitionistic reexperiencing of trauma, and put safety and stabilization (and development of a strong treatment alliance) ahead of all other goals in treatment even in spite of the patient's protests to the contrary.
- Question, gently disrupt, and challenge all persona-restoring, avoidant, distracting, and obfuscating behaviors that culminate in the patient's lack of curiosity about him/herself and his/her relatedness and constrain the development of observing ego functions (respecting, of course, issues of timing, and pacing, safety, evaluation of patient's functional capacities, ego strengths, and abilities to engage in trauma work, and so on, in keeping with the dictates of treatment guidelines for DID consistently advocated by all the national experts including Ross, 1997; Kluft, 1995a; Putnam, 1989 and the recommendations of the International Society for the Study of Dissociation, 1994).
- Assist polarized self-states or alter personalities to encounter, understand, and ultimately embrace their affective, ideological, identificatory, or historic opposites.
- Discuss issues of memory and influence and address the current controversies about both in order to help patients take responsibility for deciding what in their memories and life histories is real and what is not, and also to help them tolerate the ambiguities involved in recovery of traumatic material. (This is part of facilitating an environment where the patients can eventually come to have confidence in their own gut feelings, reactions, and perceptions.)
- Investigate systematically whether the patient believes that s/he must adopt the therapist's viewpoint in order to maintain the therapeutic bond; accordingly, recognize the fact that all interpretations are suggestions that go beyond the patient's awareness of the moment and that they invite and encourage the patient to look at things from the theory-rooted perspective of the therapist (Orange, Stolorow, and Atwood, 1997).
- Name and describe double binds (and the feelings they engender) in the treatment relationship, in the patient's dissociative self-system,

and in the family system or perpetrator group. (The therapist's sharing of his/her affective responses to the double binds in a nonjudgmental way can liberate patients to express often forbidden feelings about binds they have been in throughout their lives.)

- Tolerate and allow the patient to hold two inconsistent perceptions of the therapist (or other significant others) in his/her mind at the same time, sometimes for a long time, without forcing him/her to decide prematurely which one is accurate.
- Represent, at times aggressively, the spirit of compassion, mutuality, democracy, dialogue, and negotiation to the patient (especially when s/he is intimidating, withdrawing, or polarizing).
- Maintain an atmosphere that encourages patients to (constructively) question all authority—including that of the therapist—and to express how they are experiencing the therapist and to ask how the therapist is experiencing them.
- Be emotionally available, emotionally vulnerable, and emotionally honest, and at times be very direct in standing up for him/herself against a patient's attacks, provocations, or unreasonable demands and protests.
- Be willing to be wrong, to apologize authentically to a patient, and to acknowledge personal (and professional) limitations.

RESTORATION OF PARADOX

> One cannot choose between faith and irony, since both are real capacities. The rule in psychoanalysis is openness to the play of voices. (Eigen, 1998, p. 34)

The capacity to tolerate ambiguity and paradox are vital aspects of integration and maturation of the personality. DID exemplifies a developmental inability to tolerate contradictions, ambivalence, ambiguity, or the tension between opposites without splitting and collapsing into dissociative polarized identifications. As Pizer (1998, p. 52) states, "multiple personality can be seen as the failure to communicate between self-states, the burning of bridges between islands of psychic reality (thus, one person with multiple personality told me that paradox was a nonexistent concept for her)." The repudiation of contradictory self-experiences leads to an eclipse of inner conflict and an overreliance on defenses like projective identification that preserve the illusion of a nonparadoxical self. Although the dissociative patient is continually shifting between multiple realities s/he cannot effectively perceive the presence of multiple realities—his/her own, those of others, or the shifts taking place in the treatment setting (or in other intimate relationships). The goal of all therapy from this perspective is to shift dissociated multiplicity to what Pizer (1998) calls "bridgeable multiplicity" (p. 75).

> For most severely dissociative individuals, the therapist remains one-dimensional, or many unlinked one-dimensional concrete things simultaneously—"an idea, a concept, an abstraction, safe as long as I keep you that way," in the words of one DID patient, Michael, after years of therapy. "I have never let you be flesh and blood to me," he said. . . . But there came a moment in Michael's treatment when he did, as we were negotiating a core layer of his autism and isolation, leaving him feeling dangerously exposed and then confronting him with overwhelming stimuli. It was as though a blindfold had been taken off after thirty years, or the bandages removed from a burn victim's charred skin of a long period of unconsciousness. Allowing me to be a flesh-and-blood human, which meant considering for the first time that I could be hurt, or that I might have been hurt or traumatized in my life, disrupted his entire mode of self-protection and shook the foundation of his remaining dissociative self-organization. By now, however, Michael was able to oscillate between keeping me as an abstraction and encountering me as a flesh-and-blood human being, because he had developed a capacity for paradoxical experiencing.

The essential process of negotiation that involves bridging disparate and seemingly unintegratable opposites—which Pizer (1998, p. 26) says "constitutes the intersubjective process that delivers the therapeutic action"—achieves its transformative power when a therapist finds his/her "own particular way to confirm and participate in the patient's subjective experience, yet slowly, over time, establishes his own presence and perspective in a way that the patient can find enriching" (Mitchell, 1993, p. 196)

Especially early in treatment, severely dissociative patients cannot make use of the therapeutic setting as a container of illusions because they lack the capacity for truly transforming intrapsychic conflict (as opposed to extending dissociative solutions) and for attending to multiple realities simultaneously, and also because danger is perceived as waiting around every turn. All illusions can trigger posttraumatic memories and affects for such patients, and any reality can be ignored. All transferences, since all—even positive ones—involve some illusion, are potentially traumatic: awareness of any strong feelings that might make the therapist three-dimensional is disturbing because they may lead to the patient's having to entertain multiple perspectives (about him/herself and others) at the same time in the central consciousness. In dissociative experiencing, there is no contrast among different levels of reality, but instead a collapse, or a figure/ground shift in perspective, where the relative importance or significance of one element is out of balance with the rest of the picture.

At one level this means the patient has difficulty discriminating between the transference and the objective dimension of the therapy relationship. That difficulty, in turn, produces confusion about the origin, meaning, and credibility of different voices in the severely dissociative patient's head competing for attention and authority. At the deepest level, the patient has difficulty with the very notions and the interplay of separateness and connection, symbol and reality, safety and danger. Innocuous events or dynamics can trigger defensive overcorrections in the same patient who responds to actually threatening or dangerous circumstances with indifference, a cavalier attitude, or even compliance.

In the severe dissociative disorders, instead of a healthy, vibrant tension between mutually informing psychological opposites, there is a collapse into a polarized experience of self and other. This breakdown of intersubjectivity originates in exposure to chronic trauma (i.e., in chronic traumatic impingements), and in the child-victim's helplessness in the face of abusive caretakers' extreme and nonnegotiated state-changes—the wellspring of what Pizer (1998, p. 92) defines as "intolerable paradox." Specifically, polarization results from the way trauma deforms the aggressive drive/response, inhibits use of fantasy, and disrupts cognitive development.

All intrapsychic defenses depend on the mind's capacity to minimize, magnify, or, as Eigen (1992) says, reverse valence. Chronic dissociation, more than most defensive maneuvers, interrupts the developing mind's capacity to be open to and imaginatively adopt the point of view of the *not-me* elements of the psyche (Schwartz, 1994). The radical breakdowns and/or failures in empathy among warring and mutually negating factions of the DID patient's internal world typify this problem with perspective-taking: the killers cannot see, often refuse to see, the worldview of the helpless child; the hypersexual prostitute addicted to high levels of stimulation cannot understand the need of the other functional and vulnerable part-selves for silence and retreat; the paralyzed child-states cannot appreciate the need for functioning in the world or physical contact. Chronic deployment of dissociative defenses also leaves the individual unaware of his/her impact on others and either overly empathic with them to the point of merger or absolutely insensitive to their feelings.

Both Kumin (1978) and Modell (1990) have described the pervasive fear of paradox where the child's only means of reconciling intolerable inconsistency is to split the ego defensively. In the spirit of Winnicott (1971), Modell (1990) emphasizes how the capacity to perceive and hold paradox is a function of a more advanced mode of object-relatedness that allows for effortless transitions between separateness and merger. In severely traumatized dissociative populations, however, the capacity for paradox is hostage to posttraumatic biphasic fluctuations and to a literalized imagination that experiences all change as dangerous, all symbols as real or potentially real, and all reality as alterable—except traumatic reality, which is viewed as continuous and unalterable.

Relational psychoanalytic treatment of severe dissociation must reflect efforts to restore the tension between opposites in a more unified consciousness. Dialectical therapeutic process is central to the successful reconstruction of the capacities for mutuality and healthy intersubjectivity. Bromberg, grasping the quintessentially paradoxical nature of dissociation, proposes a clinical ambience that balances empathic sensitivity with pragmatism toward creating transformative dialogue with traumatized patients. The therapist must understand their need to stay the same while changing (1995a), balance unity and multiplicity, and apprehend and act on the patient's need for him/her to keep one foot in the here-and-now, validating the patient's inner reality, while participating in "constructing a negotiated reality discrepant with it" (1993, p. 160).

Ross (1995b) expresses much the same thinking from a more classical MPD perspective and in more cognitive-restructuring terms: "It is essential to treat the alter personalities as if they are separate people, while stating explicitly that they are all parts of one person; doing so establishes the most solid treatment alliance with the parts who experience themselves as literally separate people, yet discourages secondary gain and evasion of responsibility" (p. 134). In Aron's (1999) summary words, "We need to be empathic to mirror and affirm our patients' subjective reality, and yet we need to confront their evasions and illusions" (p. 21).

In a dialectical relationship a generative tension exists between psychological opposites such that there is always movement in the direction of reconciliation. As Jung (1958) pointed out, the healing principle in psychotherapy, is to facilitate the transformation of conflict into a self-correcting play of those opposites. Siegelman (1991), writing from within the Jungian tradition, describes two methods for healing an individual's diminished freedom to "play" with opposites. First, by modeling, the therapist can help the patient juggle and creatively use multiple perspectives; in relational terms (Pizer, 1998), the therapist's recognition of multiple realities nurtures the patient's "synthetic facility for bridging the inescapable paradox of human separateness and connection" (p. 5). Second, the therapist can habituate him/herself to attending to psychic material in such elastic ways that the patient learns not from didactic commentary but "through active participating in the to-ing and fro-ing" (Siegelman, 1991, p. 165) and through experiencing the therapist's own ability to welcome more than one pole of meaning and more than one kind of outcome from the therapy and to tolerate the tension of opposites.

In thinking about trauma and its effects, neither the actual events nor their many meanings and associated fantasies can always be completely untangled. However, discourse about the myriad possibilities of meaning and identity can advance a patient's ability to come to conclusions about the past and develop capacities for self-validation—but developing appreciation for the complexity of the relationships between causes and effects and between conscious and unconscious beliefs and actions is a precondition. Rigid notions of both powerlessness and of omnipotence—often held simultaneously in separate trance states—must intersect and interact; rigid child- and adult-like responses that volley back and forth are difficult to learn to value concomitantly because they present so exclusively and dichotomously. Identity states must have a channel for dialoguing with one another, even if only through the therapist at first in the role of diplomat and interpreter. Confusion must come to be experienced as a natural part of being human rather than as merely terrifying and dangerous.

The relational psychoanalytic posture of analyzing enactments (e.g., Aron, 1996; Ehrenberg, 1992) contributes to the restoration of paradox, modifying Alexander and French's (1946) famous *emotionally corrective experience* to encompass the role of the therapist's struggle and his/her errors in the patient-instigated attempts to evoke a new model of relationship to emulate and internalize. The emphasis is on the therapist's *process* (not on the result of the struggle or even on the therapist's particular response), because it is the process of handling the challenge that the patient internalizes, symbolically, dynamically, interactionally, and transformatively.

For example, the therapist might empathically inquire into the delight with which intrapunitive alters reenact violence against helpless child personalities. By entering the omnipotent fantasy world of dissociative self-harm, s/he creates transitional space where fantasy and reality can intersect and interact. To approach the problem instead with a dialogue-quashing discussion of setting limits and making contracts around violence would be to miss an opportunity to model a nonpolarizing, nonconcretizing response to provocation or danger. (Sometimes patients unconsciously sponsor just such dilemmas for the therapist in order to create the conditions for generating a new learning experience [Modell, 1990].)

The underlying posture that guides the therapist in restoration of paradox resembles that of a negotiator among warring factions, except that the objective is not a concrete accord as much as it is the cultivation of mutual respect and of the patient's understanding of the importance of, and commitment to, taking multiple perspectives. As guardian of the tensions between opposites, the therapist manages paradox for the patient—representing minority positions and invisible points of view, exposing double binds for observation, disrupting trance logic and repetitive efforts at defensive concretization (Schwartz, 1994)—until s/he is ready to (re)activate his/her capacity for dialectical relationship, especially between the part-selves and the whole self.

In order to establish transformative dialogue, the therapist must hold and communicate to the severely dissociative trauma survivor all kinds of other paradoxes over time

- Severely dissociative individuals are both resilient and deficient: they demonstrate brilliance and density, capacity and incapacity, transparence and opacity simultaneously.
- Autonomy and differentiation, dependency and independence not only co-exist, but mutually enhance one another.
- One can be separate and connected, in communication and incommunicado, in the same relationship.
- One can be fantasy-prone, fantasy-phobic, and fantasy-deficient at the same time.

- One can be a victim, a collaborator, a perpetrator, and a rescuer at the same time.
- Overreliance on dissociative defenses simultaneously grants time to, and steals time from, the traumatized individual.
- New bridges between previously isolated or separated self-states or alter personalities lead simultaneously to relief and pain.
- Safety and danger can coexist in the same individual and within a relationship; one does not have to cancel out the other.
- Since shame is a key motivator of dissociation and shame is the emotion experienced when one feels exposed, then, as Wurmser (1987) points out, the very act of psychotherapeutic exploration aimed at reducing the patient's shame produces shame against which the patient must defend.
- Repetitions and reenactments represent developmental arrest, but they also create the conditions necessary for undoing the developmental arrest and restoring developmental progress.
- Repetitions in attaching to malevolent others (or objects) at once constitute omnipotent efforts to avoid letting go and avoid grieving and attempts to make relationships turn out differently (Russell, 1998).
- Psychotherapy is both a deconstructive and a reconstructive process: some old bridges have to be dismantled or blown up and new ones have to be built over dangerous terrain. "Tearing and building, falling apart and coming together are aspects of broader psychic rhythms, if one can tolerate the shifts" (Eigen, 1998, p. 33).
- The traumatized patient's need to be known continually meets the impossibility of being known; and the need to be known meets, as well, an inner refusal to be known (Grand, 2000). Grand calls this "annihilation's paradox" (p. 4): Although empathic understanding is critical for reparation of the trauma survivor's internal and interpersonal worlds, that very human experience threatens to renew his/her annihilation.
- Good things happen to bad people and bad things happen to good people.

PARADOX, DISSOCIATION, AND NEGOTIATION

Pizer (1998) sees the power of negotiation in psychoanalytic psychotherapy as "a jolting interruption of [the patient's] assumptions about a nonnegotiable universe" (p. 16), and he cites as end-products agreement about frame, boundaries, or fee issues; resolution of an intrapsychic and/or interpersonal conflict; a shift in the patient's representational world; a mutually sensible narrative construction of the patient's past; or a jointly accepted understanding of either a repetition by the patient or an empathic failure by the therapist.

What is extraordinary about a focus on negotiation and paradox in psychotherapy with severely traumatized, dissociative individuals—who truly do live, before treatment, in nonnegotiable universes—is that their traumatic fixity and dissociative rigidity may be consistently (and benevolently) disrupted. The whole process of working with these patients is encapsulated in a look at end-products of negotiations particular to their treatment:

- the revelation of a new alter personality;
- an encounter, an agreement to work together, or the integration of two or more alters or self-states;
- a shift from concrete enactment to symbolic representation;
- the release of traumatic memories from one encapsulated self-state into another or into a more unified consciousness. A disidentification with the aggressor and tolerance for the inevitable anxiety and disorganization that follow;
- an ability to discriminate between a perpetrator's injunctions or indoctrination and one's own thoughts and feelings;
- the shift from antagonism and self-sabotage to a firmer therapy alliance, and with it a willingness to confront attachment needs and longings;
- the capacity to contemplate the unassimilable polarities of human experience (i.e., benevolence and malevolence) without dissociating into mindless distraction, rabid denial, or extreme identifications.

JANINE

The male alter of a female patient with a history of self-mutilation is enraged by the fact that "the girls"—female alters who remember and narratively recapitulate abuse by the father—have criticized the parents, to whom "he" is loyal: "I want to blow those cunts away. I think I'll cut them up after the session today." The alter is also angry at me for allowing "the girls" to speak and for being willing to believe their version of history. ("They'd better stop criticizing our parents and you'd better not allow that or I'm going to cut them up.")

Bypassing the threat for the moment, I respond by moving to explore with the alter what happens inside him when the girls say hostile things about the parents. He, pressed to reach beyond his anger, briefly touches on feelings of sadness and loss. Here, the core of the patient's traumatic attachment to the perpetrator is beginning to be exposed and subverted.

In keeping with the expectable, paradoxical "staying the same and changing" (Bromberg, 1994; Russell, 1998), however, the male alter bounces right back into a power maneuver with threats of bodily injury in this first and very new contact with the therapist. If stripped of his repertoire of intimidation, he (and perhaps other part-selves) would be flooded with unbearable posttraumatic affect.

I make room for the alter to move back and forth between the two positions—defiant display, complete with threats, and feelings of overwhelming loss and disorientation. His very emergence heralds a new level of contact with the patient; I encourage his vitriolic verbalizing ("We hate you. You're taking us away from our parents") in preference to destructive action against the patient's body.

I make the observation that for anyone to entertain any view of the family or of reality in general counter to the one this alter holds seems to be tantamount to betrayal. The idea that the alter could remain loyal to the father but that the other parts (or the therapist) could have different thoughts and feelings comes as a total surprise to this polarizing part of the patient's self.

Introducing the question of how that dynamic has played out in the alter's relationship with the various parts—as well as the question of the therapist's role in facilitating dialogue between and among them, I speculate about the conflict between "the girls," who are angry at the parents and do not want to associate with them, and the alter ("Father's favorite"), who does not believe they did what the girls say they did. A brief discussion of the process among myself, this alter, and the self-system in general leads to clarification of each alter's position and the role of the therapist as both empathizer and disrupter.

The alter is relieved to hear me acknowledge that I am doing both things and I explain how different they are from the mutually exclusive demands or mutually inconsistent relational styles that comprised the double binds of childhood in an abusive family. The alter reminds me

> that he doesn't like to hear anything bad said about his parents, but does admit for the first time that he often felt confused watching them.
>
> When I interpret the alter's threats of violence as mechanisms to ward off feelings or other conflicts with the other alters that are hard to tolerate, he resumes his defiant posture ("So what?"), on guard for any imbalance on my part that could come across as betrayal or abandonment and trigger more polarizing behavior. Rather than react by interposing the prospect of hospitalization or medication or by negotiating a no-harm contract, given the patient's history, I introduce the idea that different feelings don't cancel each other out but can coexist without competing and even intersect—a new concept in the trance logic of the patient's dissociative world. The patient, seeing me work honestly but not submissively with personal fear, can achieve a feeling of safety that can preempt the ongoing self-destructive behaviors long since transmuted into self-protective and even empowering ones.
>
> Curiosity begins to replace threats and intimidation, to pave the way for the patient's experimenting with her experience. I do not push the patient to relinquish attachment to the perpetrator—nor do I try to become the replacement authority and object of a new traumatic attachment. Willing instead to take seriously the polarized subjective experience of the hostile alter, I make sense out of it for the patient as a whole.

Sometimes, describing—not reacting or polarizing—in a double-bind situation or enactment, and asking the patient to free-associate to the shared dilemma can effectively disrupt dissociation and concretization: ("How do you think we ended up in a lose-lose situation again?" "I wonder why we keep rerunning a play where one of us has to be hurt or humiliated or else we both have to be silenced?") The patient's alter is repeatedly invited to reflect and give me feedback on the aspects of the process that lead to impasse, stalemate, disagreement, or empathic disruption.

Sometimes, however, the therapist must disrupt polarization by confronting an alter's subjective experience of freedom (to cut the body, to block out memories, to sabotage work or school, especially to not feel) as costly to other parts of the self, and as based on commoditizing, objectifying, and dominating the self. Alters have to be nudged toward negotiating with, and ultimately embracing, their affective, behavioral, and psychological opposites.

The severely dissociative patient consistently urged to tolerate tension states begins to grow through paradoxical rather than dissociative awareness and begins the shift from holding contradictions in separate trance states to holding paradox. This process becomes most intense when the patient's love and hate for the abusers (as for the therapist), previously held in separate parts of the internal world—each almost with a life of its own—begin to collide. The patient learns that hating and loving can fight with one another and need not cancel each other out (or result in pain, humiliation, torture, or death), that they can find their way with their mixed feelings and that their mixed feelings can find their way with each other, when made conscious, verbalized, and placed in dialogue either in the inner world or (whenever appropriate, or possible) with the person who arouses mixed feelings.

The dissociative patient learns that paradox must be tolerated through bridging and bearing the irresolvable (Winnicott, 1971; Pizer, 1998). When the therapist models acceptance of and willingness to work creatively with psychological opposites, contradictions, and apparent inconsistencies (his/her own and the patient's), a developmental context is set that promotes the patient's achievement of the capacity to tolerate paradox. Then drastically incompatible emotions and perceptions that originally led to the unmodifiably dissociated organization of self (Bromberg, 1994) can be brought into conflict, negotiation, and dialogue—and ultimately some form of integration. Integration in this case does not necessarily mean resolution, for with paradox, the maturational developmental line has more to do with tolerance, acceptance, and creative reflection on that which may be irresolvable rather than with any kind of problem solving or synthesis per se.

In such a facilitating ambience there is, as Pizer (p. 65) says, "the feeling that the existence of the impossible is OK, even as it strains the accommodating embrace of the mind." Ghent (1992b) described the capacity for living with paradox as close to the concept of "acceptance" (p. 155). Significantly beyond the need for splitting and other defensive operations, the maturity implied in living with paradox involves the toleration and even the enjoyment of uncertainty, an ability to live in the flux of one's own and another's subjectivity, and the ability to maintain the tension between the need for discovery and the need for closure and privacy. In Pizer's terms, the developmental capacity for tolerating paradox is essential to bridging the disparate islands of self-experience that are the hallmark of the severe dissociative disorders. As Pizer writes, when therapists "are receptive to the multiplicity within their patients, they serve as transformational objects, sponsoring . . .

tolerance for paradoxical self-states by holding them within the unity of a single negotiated relationship" (p. 95).

LORRAINE

Lorraine, a polyfragmented DID patient in her late thirties, would bring one fascinating life crisis after another to therapy, only to drop each for its successor the following week. My inquiry about her experience of such discontinuity led to discussion not only of how her sequential abusers treated her when she was prostituted as a child (and especially of the humiliation after they finished with her) but also of how she related to her internal and interpersonal world on a first-come/first-served basis. Everything—topics, projects, people—was addressed as though here-today/gone-tomorrow, that is, without coordination, linkages, or sustained momentum.

So extreme a dissociative adaptation had allowed Lorraine to survive enormous abuses. Its central organizing principle—it's safest to keep moving—meant that having anything, showing someone that you had anything, or attaching to anyone or anything was dangerous; as a style of relating it made for quick shifting in response to interpersonal pressures. No one at work had any idea that Lorraine had a dissociative disorder: her behavior was idiosyncratic and sometimes even amusing, she "passed" as eccentric. The adaptive discontinuity served her well in certain ways, but it foreclosed deep feeling, deep attachment, and real emotional bonding in therapy and elsewhere.

Lorraine was unsure about whether she wanted to change her survival strategy, which I articulated as a natural response to survival imperatives during her years of sadistic abuse, adding that both her needs for relatedness and her needs for distance from people and from the pain of her internal conflict were valid. She became increasingly curious about her dissociative strategies and her effects on others and increasingly interested in monitoring the discontinuities that were her psychological process, often joshing about her follow-up or lack of follow-up and the complexity of her DID system.

In a later session and in a very playful way, Lorraine asked if she was driving me crazy. Before answering, I asked if her abusers had ever used that as an excuse or justification, and she replied that they did often blame her for their cruelty, saying at times that she was a terrible

> child who, indeed, was driving them crazy. When she asked me again if I ever felt that way I said yes, sometimes I felt dizzy and a little crazy from the shifts and the absence of follow-through.
>
> Then I asked Lorraine what it felt like to hear me say that. Scared and relieved, she said, because people have rarely been so direct and honest with her, the intimacy of it felt new and uncomfortable—but she recognized my forthrightness as trusting, and that was a source of gratification. Finally, I asked if I was driving her crazy with my challenges to her way of being in the world; laughing, she answered in the affirmative. I speculated that we were reaching each other in deep ways by driving each other a little crazy, and perhaps breaking through barriers that couldn't otherwise be breached. Sometimes teasing, sometimes harassing, sometimes introducing one another to different sets of psychological rules, we were releasing aggressive energy in a safe way instead of just becoming irritated and frustrated.
>
> Welcoming the mind-boggling notion that safety and aggression could coexist, and welcoming also my admission that her driving me crazy let me know some of how she might have felt as the child of deeply disturbed parents who misused, abused, and exploited her in every way imaginable, Lorraine reflected on the paradoxes and on the pervasive dividedness of her own mind. When she came to the conclusion that she could never see putting all the separate needs in different parts of herself together, I told her that they didn't have to fit like the pieces of a perfect jigsaw puzzle—that things could work out just as long as all the pieces were willing to touch, see, feel, and talk to each other some of the time.

In Mitchell's (1998, p. 55) terms, engaging and sustaining paradox "blows the old system apart, just enough for some new organization to emerge. For severely traumatized, dissociative patients the stakes of bridging (or negotiating) disparate facets of experience and tolerating paradox are high. Bearing—let alone standing in—the spaces between realities (Bromberg, 1994; 1998) is equivalent to embracing the almost inconceivable notion that the trauma is over, the self is safe, and freedom of (intrapsychic) movement is possible.

Negotiating attachment and identity, past, present, and future, and safety and danger in such a way can only take place when the severely dissociative patient is immersed for a long period of time in a therapy relationship where s/he faces and revisits his/her worst fears with outcomes consistently different from those that occurred during childhood. The therapeutic leverage derives from the therapist's allowing the patient to negotiate his/her experience of the therapist as both the person with whom the initial negotiation failed and the person with whom it might possibly be different (Russell, 1998).

As Leowald (1971) astutely observes, the only thing that works in psychotherapy is negotiation, and what negotiation actually means is whether things have to happen the same way this time. The ambience of negotiation can lead to the most significant redistribution of internal self- and other-configurations when the severely traumatized, dissociative patient recognizes simultaneously that s/he is totally responsible for everything that happens (in the present) and that someone else (namely, the therapist) can make a difference (Russell, 1998). For some extremely dissociative individuals, this amounts to the stunning realization that they are not alone in a barren, alien, or hostile universe, and that true benevolence exists.

This page intentionally left blank

CHAPTER 7

The Destruction and Restoration of Fantasy and Aggression

Perhaps it is awful to think of therapists as "experts" in awfulness. But it is part of one's job to turn awful situations around and around until unexpected pathways begin to open.

—Michael Eigen (1996)

The kinds of traumatic experience severely dissociative patients have lived through have led to significant derailments in the development of aggression, fantasy, and the use of transitional phenomena. Their psyches have been colonized by dominating others. When healing begins to happen, therefore, they must struggle toward new internal and interpersonal power arrangements. Treatment moves them toward democratic models of mind and relationships. This chapter explores two of the essential elements in the restoration of the fragmented lives and minds of severely dissociative individuals: fantasy and aggression.

THE RESTORATION OF FANTASY AND TRANSITIONAL EXPERIENCING

We turn wounds into dreams, poems, religion, art, law, social institutions. By feeding injury into dream work, primary process begins the endless task of

> making something of suffering, of working with pain through images, of discovering the joy of symbolizing what cannot be endured. (Eigen, 1996, p. 21)

It may seem paradoxical to conceptualize DID and other severe dissociative disorders as disorders of the psychological capacity for fantasy. The often theatrical elaborations of dissociative structures, the sheer diversity and complexity of their form and content, and the intricacies of patients' internal systems seem to suggest overinvolvement in, even mastery of, the use of fantasy. A more precise view, however, reveals that the severely dissociative individual is highly constricted in his or her abilities to imagine, play, and enjoy transitional space and transitional object relations.[1]

Traumatologists have described how chronic reliance on dissociation interferes with symbolization, keeping memory locked in iconic and somatosensory levels of experiencing (Van der Kolk and Van der Hart, 1989). Hence, what may appear as transitional or fantasy phenomena in DID to some theorists (Brenner, 1996) may upon closer inspection turn out to be epiphenomena of the maladaptive developmental line that moves from normal transitional objects to fetishism (Bak, 1974; Roiphe and Galenson, 1975; Weissman, 1971). Under conditions of extreme stress and fear, including danger to the body and annihilation experiences, a childhood transitional object can be treated fetishistically—rigidly and obsessively rather than flexibly and fluidly. In such cases, human relatedness and imagination are foreclosed and not enhanced by their use.

Essentially, illusions set up to mediate and negotiate the distinction between internal and external reality—transitional phenomena—may begin developing with the body (Smith, 1989) and shift to its soothers and caretakers, real and imaginary. Bodily violence and neglect from caretakers can severely disrupt developmental achievements that foster mind-body integration from infancy on, causing a split that disables the individual from accepting the separation of inner and outer reality by impairing the capacities to tolerate psychic pain and to experience the other as an independent object (Winnicott, 1971). The transitional space is an "intermediate area" between the infant or child's illusion of omnipotence and objective perception based on reality testing (Winnicott, 1971)—a sort of third world that is neither wholly subjective nor wholly objective, neither purely inner nor purely outer. Winnicott describes transitional phenomena as permanent facets of our mental lives, made possible when bridges over the gaps between self and other and internal and external reality are generated or supported by caregivers.

Transitional experiencing is, among other things, then, a child's way of handling the shock that results from the loss of omnipotence, according to Winnicott. In normal development this intermediate zone of experiencing continues to grow in complexity and richness and underlies the capacity to play and the process of symbolization associated with human culture. The absence of constructive experiences during childhood will be reflected in the patient's overall lack of integration and in the nature of the psychopathology to come (Giovacchini, 1978). Resulting disturbances in either primary or secondary processing functions of the psyche, or disruptions in their reciprocity can lead to developmental failures in the use of the transitional zone of experiencing.

Although complete mastery of intense pain and prolonged trauma may be too much to expect from any individual or any psyche, Eigen (1996) reminds us of the hope that rests in the primary processing capacity of the human mind: reworking of psychic injury in primary process may always be only partial and fragmented; however, by biting off bits of painful experiences and reworking savage wounds a little bit at a time, within transitional experiencing the psyche can grow its digestive capacity—absorbing terrifying impacts, shrinking masses of unmetabolized pain, and reworking states of shock and paralysis. But primary process itself can be wounded: when traumatic experiences (and/or biological predisposition) completely overwhelm, or damage the primary processor, the psyche's inability to process catastrophe inevitably becomes part of the catastrophe. The frozen states and chronic repetitions of posttraumatic conditions reveal a psyche that cannot develop images, fantasies, primitive narratives, or dreams able to effectively break up and rework psychic damage. For Eigen, psychoanalytic treatment involves more than making the unconscious conscious; it involves helping unconscious processing (of affects, ideas, and experiences) reset itself so that it can work effectively.

Dissociation, by segregating feeling-states and self-other perceptions, freezes and compartmentalizes experience, making it inaccessible to the dynamic restorative workings of the creative unconscious (Peoples, 1992). The resulting internal fixity and defensive commitment to the nonrestitutive deployment of fantasy among severely dissociative individuals severely challenges treatment committed to reactivating developmental strivings and aimed at cultivating transitional or potential space. While according to Goldman (1996), it is the "repeated cycles of adaptation, de-adaptation, collision, and negotiation that help generate potential space" (p. 355), these elements so essential to any effective depth psychotherapy are hard for the severely dissociative patient to tolerate because they are inevitably associated with imminent danger and often lead to emergency responses; further, constant immersion in the patient's concretizations and loss of symbolic functioning is detrimental to the therapist's own symbolizing capacities (Giovacchini, 1978).

DISTURBANCES IN USE OF FANTASY IN DISSOCIATIVE DISORDERS

In severe dissociative conditions, the collapse of subjectivity and intersubjectivity is intricately intertwined with the developmental arrest in transitional experiencing. This is not to say that severely dissociative patients do not engage in these adult forms of transitional phenomena; rather, their engagement is often limited and/or underscored by a desperation and fragility that does not allow for a true contact with otherness or a release from the alienation that marks the patient's entire mental and interpersonal life.

For Marmer (1980), MPD patients create and use alters as "transitional objects forced inward" (p. 458); in a recent reformulation (1996),

> Because they can't make a coherent self, they make a polyfragmented self or selves, and they use their alters for the same purposes that non-DID children would use transitional objects, except that in normal childhood, transitional objects are a way station on the road to establishing a coherent self, and in DID, patients are stuck with their alters. (p. 200)

Smith (1989), however, views MPD/DID as a complex false-self formation and an inability to develop and use transitional objects; instead of representing an alternative form of transitional object, dissociative alter-personality construction may actually foreclose transitional experiencing. Alter construction may in fact signal the incapacity to tolerate working in potential space where otherness may not always be omnipotently controllable or playfully negotiated.

Brenner (1996) believes that attributing DID patients' deficits to impaired use of transitional phenomena minimizes the importance of amnesia and altered states, and that "casual inspection of patient rooms in a dissociative disorder inpatient program" yields indirect evidence affirming the use of transitional objects in this population because they contain "more stuffed animals per capita than anywhere else in the hospital" (p. 157). In fact, however, the plethora of stuffed animals is probably evidence of DID patients' fetishistic and obsessive attachments to nonhuman objects.[2] Despite circumscribed manifestations of creativity consigned to specific alter personalities charged with distraction from pain, memories, and awareness of abuse, DID patients often have inhibited capacity for play. Some of their relationships with stuffed animals represent more of a collapse of the memory-imagination dialectic (Pye, 1995) than fantasy-proneness or effective use of transitional objects.

The issue is not whether severe dissociative disorders arise from fantasy proneness (as so many critics dismissively claim they do) or not, or whether the patients have overactive or underactive imaginations, or whether memories are only real or only false, but what kinds of limitations to fantasy and memory result from the trauma and defensive efforts at restitution of the self.[3] Working through the investment in some such efforts can even impact on the lifting of those limitations—as in each of three cases where Caucasian DID patients developed African-American alter personalities and strong identifications with African-American cultural icons. Their perpetrators had subscribed to White Supremacist ideologies and the victims had had to witness and participate in the kidnapping, torture, mutilation, and murder of kidnapped African Americans, sometimes children. Although the alters evolved to help the patients individuate from their traumatic environments and to master aspects of the guilt and shame associated with the atrocities, they also embodied the patients' respective capacities for protest, joy, and disaffiliation with the offenders—and, as the adaptive and defensive values of the cross-race alters were worked through in therapy, none of the three lost her affinity for African-American culture. That is, the capacity to play with adult forms of transitional experiencing actually increased while the more constricted need for specific alters to contain and isolate those patterns to particular part-selves faded.

In fact, DID and other severely dissociative patients vary a great deal in their use of fantasy and in their access to memory. When evaluating patients early in treatment, iatrogenic, fictitious, and malingering dimensions must always be taken into account. Some patients' dissociative systems show secondary and tertiary elaborations, and extreme levels of narcissistic investment in separateness with correspondingly high degrees of personification; others present very camouflaged, unimaginative, and constricted versions of DID.

Moderate- to higher-functioning DID outpatients tend to be disturbed by evidence of their multiplicity. Their investment in normal-unitary behavior leads to subtler presentations and less (at least for some time) elaboration of their personality systems (names, maps, personalities, definitions).

From a clinical standpoint, each subgroup presents its own difficulties: the inpatient's (sometimes flamboyant) narcissistic investment in separateness makes the working through of dissociative defenses more challenging, while the resistance to acknowledging the pathological multiplicity and the concomitant reticence to playing with identity construction and deconstruction in therapy handicaps intersubjective discourse with higher-functioning outpatients committed to camouflage. For the most part, the use of imagination among DID patients seems constricted even when they are obviously elaborating and personifying their systems for secondary gain. The themes of their fantasies are quite limited and repetitive, and any creativity polarizes into stereotypes and caricature qualities in many of their alters.

In DID, what may at first appear to be elaborate fantasy constructions turn out to be brittle and impermeable personified dissociative states that manifest in an unusually limited repertoire of behavior, affect, and cognition. Some alter personalities demonstrate more diversity, capacities, and elasticity than others—which is fortunate, because the by-products range from the potential for greater coconsciousness with other part-selves to the potential for greater participation in life and also in the therapy process. But other patients' alters excel only at specific tasks, functions, or attitudes that sustain the dissociative organization of self, as a result of the defensive development of parallel realities with limited internal space for the reconciliation of reality with fantasy.

From this perspective, dissociation can be conceptualized as another means of walling off experiences that cannot be transformed through fantasy–truly unassimilated, unassimilable experience. Alter personalities, then, are holding containers for pseudofantasy *(This is not my body. This is not my father. She made him hurt me. I am powerful. I don't feel. I wasn't there. I don't need anyone)*, which operates on unmetabolized traumatic experience that has not been integrated by means of normal restorative fantasy.

THE SYMBOLIC REALM UNDER SIEGE

Repeated confrontation with mortality (Janoff-Bulman, 1992) and betrayal results in a massive disintegration of the symbolic world of the survivor of chronic child abuse, who has come to minimize contact with the external world in an effort to nullify the ideational, affective, and interpersonal effect of the traumatic spiral. Chronic trauma can thus be said to constrain symbolic elaboration and to sponsor a suppression or repetition of what limited symbolic functioning exists (Bollas, 1992). The disturbance in symbolizing capacity among sexual-abuse victims can severely constrict the ego's ability to represent elements of the trauma and its aftermath or to develop affective associative connections between the traumatic experiences and other sectors of the mind. In traumatized individuals the distinctions between reality and fantasy, remembering and reliving, and past and present, are either blurred or lost altogether as the innate capacities for self-observation and tolerance for ambiguity are overwhelmed by intrusions of powerful aggressive or sexualized transferences (Levine, 1990). These powerful transferences are rooted in posttraumatic reliving and also in how the trauma has deformed and perverted sexual and aggressive feelings and functions. The therapist may experience prolonged immersion in either affective deadness alone or in combination with volatile affect-states and sadomasochistic enactments before any of the patient's psychic material can be interpreted or mutually reflected upon.

At the very least, chronic trauma severely compromises a child's recuperative psychological capacities for fantasy, reflection, dreams, creativity, and play. (Even when the dissociative survivor has managed to maintain an outlet—or alter—for creative expression, and even when his/her artistic productions are ingenious and compelling, a constricted, repetitive character is, prior to therapy, consistently discernible.) In addition, chronic trauma survivors lose the capacity for wish-organized symbolic functioning (Auerhahn and Laub, 1987), and fail, because of traumatic impairment of the capacity for fantasy (Fish-Murray, Koby, and Van der Kolk, 1987), to use mental activity to transform traumatic experience. Fantasy, then, becomes conservative and preservative rather than mastery oriented and progressively constructive.

Where trauma cannot be transformed through fantasy operations, the child will resort to repetitive behavior and intrusive imagery in an effort to repeat or undo it. The world feels so fundamentally insecure that omnipotent fantasy solutions are not gradually relinquished but tenaciously retained. In the words of the main alter-group within one severely dissociative survivor of organized child abuse: "There is only me in a glass bubble watching and everyone else in the world who does cruel things. You [the therapist] aren't quite real, because I could have just invented you so you are really part of me. Or you could be one of 'them' in which case I cannot trust you. So either way I don't want to let you exist as a separate being I can't control."

Overexploitation of the imaginary to compensate for disappointments in the real interpersonal world after massive upheaval and chronic trauma is not the same as fantasy-proneness. The conservative, inflexible fantasy life of the severely dissociative individual is geared to preempting and controlling psychic damage; psychological survival is sustained at the cost of sacrificing most forms of intimate human relatedness and the freedom of psychological (intrapsychic) mobility. As Bromberg (1994) points out, the deformed imagination of severely dissociative patients is compounded by their continual reenactment of the experiential traumatic memory. Their simultaneous and steadfast avoidance of reflection upon and reexperiencing of trauma further restricts opportunities for both interpersonal and imaginal experiences of restitution.

Although Modell (1990) is impressed with the transformative possibilities inherent in symbolic and enacted repetitions of trauma in spite of their apparent impenetrability, these hope-inspiring notions of 'playing' with symbols and imaginary productions have given way in the severely dissociative patient's mind to other, more reified constructions. And the ability to create playfully has given way to fear of novelty such that behavioral discharge, amnesia, and numbing become the only options to having an inner life. In other words, the effort to work through and master trauma is replaced by massive efforts to (consciously) stay away from anything remotely resembling the trauma including fantasies, symbols, and dreams that bring reminders of the trauma to consciousness.

The severely dissociative patient's compromised imagination is fundamentally and paradoxically related to difficulties with reality testing, which involves more than merely intellectual and cognitive functions, according to Leowald (1974). He defines the relationship between the experiential testing of fantasy and an individual's full appreciation of reality as essentially interdependent, and defines the task of testing the "potential and suitability for actualization" of fantasy and "the testing of actuality—its potential for encompassing . . . and penetration [by] . . . one's fantasy life" as "a reciprocal transposition" (p. 368). The encapsulation of dissociative experiences and their impenetrability to modification by new relational and imaginal input lead to the atrophy of both reality-testing and fantasy capacities. Accordingly, both Leowald (1988) and Mitchell (1999) stress that an important goal of treatment is not simply the transformation of primary process into secondary process or the removal of the patient's distortions but the actual opening up of the potentially enhancing channels between fantasy and reality.

Bollas (1989) writes about the stylized, ritualized use of the internal world in extreme psychopathological conditions as the "ghostline world" or "playless space" (p. 129), a universe denuded of meaningful interplay between areas of mind that process internal and external reality. Forms of defensive concretization predominate, preserving or maintaining the dissociative organizations of self instead of promoting interactive transformative relatedness, such that the abused child no longer fantasizes escape or rescue or imagines retaliation, for example. Instead, s/he counts flowers on the wall, retreats to nothingness, or splits into part-selves that separately handle the hating, raping, memorializing, obliterating, and beating. The fragmented, dissociative self of the chronic trauma survivor, rigorously defended against intrusion or disruption and perpetually obsessed with its own imminent disintegration, does not have the luxury of entertaining renewal through nonthreatening forms of disorganization, regression, and recategorization.

Consequently, the patient may accuse the therapist of disloyalty and betrayal if s/he challenges dissociative solutions, sustains uncertainty and symbolic inquiry, or resists colluding with the patient's concretized responses to psychic pain and narcissistic or attachment needs. The patient may become enraged when the therapist proposes exploring why s/he wants to leave a small object behind in the office, preferring that the therapist accede without asking questions ("just do it"). The patient who tries to camouflage a potential reenactment of childhood sexual abuse or other boundary invasions as a simple request for empathic sensitivity, holding/containing, and/or generosity, becomes tyrannical when the therapist inquires about what is being concealed instead of addressing what is apparent. The therapist's inquiry is simultaneously perceived as rejection by the child-alters, as defiance by the internal perpetrators, and as irritatingly "therapist-like" behavior by the host/functional and collaborator-type personalities—all of which impressions may lead to a rupture (whereby the patient withdraws, ends the session, crawls under the desk, etc.) in the therapy relationship before the therapist can even determine what is fueling the affect storm.

INTEGRATING RESTORATION OF FANTASY AND PARADOXICAL EXPERIENCING

The therapist may become the first transitional object the dissociative patient has ever experienced—"the first constant object, . . . the first lighthouse, first North Star" (Marmer, 1996, p. 201). The therapist may be the first individual with whom all parts of the patient have relationships, the first to sustain an ongoing reality for all the alter-states. As each alter internalizes the therapist's attitudes of inclusion and acceptance along with his/her challenges to dissociative modes of relatedness, the therapist is eventually experienced as a unified transitional object instead of as a collection of transitional objects mirroring the patient's inner fragmentation and dividedness. In Marmer's analysis, the fulfillment of relational needs that will activate transitional functions is what allows the patient to reorganize him/herself in a more integrated fashion for the first time.

To accomplish the formidable task of assisting the severely dissociative patient with reactivating dialectical internal relations and developing transitional space, the therapist must adopt a posture that continuously opens up avenues for restorative fantasy and play, especially with themes of destruction and attachment; s/he must resist unceasing seductive pulls toward concretization—that is, replication of the dynamics of the original trauma—and the collapse of potential space. The severely dissociative patient unconsciously strives for just that collapse of the therapy frame into a fantasyless theater of concrete reenactments by enlisting alters who will not negotiate or who insist they are the only ones, or that the multiplicity does not exist, by generating threats and fears of violence, by requesting drugs, hypnosis, restraints, hospitalization, disability, by making demands for direct reparenting or excessive cancellations, extratherapeutic phone calls, and so on. Inexperienced therapists or those intimidated by the patient, by ethical dilemmas, by double binds and emotional blackmail (if-then proposals), may even with the best intentions unwittingly participate in perpetuating the central patterns and paradigms of pathological multiplicity—polarization, unbridled reenactments, concretization, domination, and false self-construction.

Of course, the need for concrete intervention can on occasion eclipse the need to restore transitional space in order for the therapist to protect the patient or the treatment or to jump-start symbolic processes and support the working through of traumatic memories, and the patient's experience of concrete protection to "survive destruction" (Winnicott, 1971) has the potential to enhance movement from concretized fantasy to symbolization. (For instance, internalizing the therapist's distress-response can lead to imagining rescue fantasies or to developing alternative approaches to the precipitating issues.)

There remains, however, the risk that the therapist will unconsciously participate in the maintenance of defensive multiplicity, omnipotence, and polarization, and under the rubric of effective intervention fail to steward the patient's advancement toward "potential space." This is most likely to occur when a therapist immediately seeks outside help because s/he is unable to contain—and too afraid to manage within the therapy dialogue—a patient's threats, self-destructive acting out, and aggressive energies. The patient's insecurity escalates with the mixed message of protection and betrayal/abandonment, which is reminiscent of the original trauma in which those elements were reversed in insidiously deceptive ways. Moreover, both parties may become increasingly dependent on outside support to manage their relationship.

For example, if a patient tells a therapist that s/he can only work through a disturbing memory in the hospital in restraints and if the therapist cooperates, especially without exploring the patient's obvious distrust of the therapist's capacity to provide containment and a suitable holding environment, the possible reenactment meanings of the request and the event would be buried. Or, more simply, if the therapist cooperates without examining whether the patient is actually ready for any such memory-processing (requiring concrete reenacting of the original trauma conditions), s/he may reinforce the defensive precocity and pseudo-autonomy the patient developed as a child to cope with overwhelming stress. Even by delaying action on the patient's suggestion while questioning, empathizing, and confronting at different points along the way, the therapist may become embroiled in a prolonged power struggle with the patient and the various alters who are advocating for hospitalization.

But by refusing to support the plan and insisting instead that the patient negotiate the different real and transferential meanings involved in the request, the therapist offers a new form of safety whereby the patient can discuss fantasies of restraint without having to enact them. Further, the dialogues that will ensue when the therapist opens for discussion his/her apparent failure to create the requisite climate of safety and trust in the treatment space can increase the intimacy and security of the therapy relationship and demonstrate the importance of reflection and multiple solutions to complex problems. The therapist thus models collaborative dialogue and mutuality in preference to dominance/submission and soothing through concretization, and still makes way for the patient's associations to childhood experience.

Similarly, when a patient makes unreasonable demands (for medications, physical contact, "special" privileges, multiple therapists, excessive or extratherapeutic contact) and the therapist agrees without extensive negotiation—perhaps out of his/her countertransference fears and anxieties, or perhaps because s/he and the patient have cocreated a situation in which the therapist, feeling like a victimized child, needs to enlist powerful authorities to protect them both—a collapse of transitional space is likely to occur independent of whatever crisis the patient has concocted to test the treatment or reenact traumatic patterns. Once again, the patient may feel unconsciously betrayed and will continue to seek the kind of holding environments where only concrete controls are believed to provide safety, where human beings are seen as helpless bystanders too afraid or too weak to confront and experience the patient's agonies directly.

From this perspective, effective treatment of severe dissociative patients must do more than suppress alter personalities with posthypnotic suggestions and ritualized integrations, perhaps reinforcing false-self organization and the collapse of symbolic functions (Smith, 1989). Rushing in prematurely to lower anxiety with action or directed fantasy to attain forgiveness, revenge, restitution, compensation, or even "safe places" without sufficient analysis, grief, and mourning can be tantalizing bait for therapists and patients alike. Therapists, too, welcome immediate tension reduction and soothing when immersed in chronically stressful conditions, and they may find themselves jumping into solutions they never would have dreamed of enacting with nondissociative patients just to avoid escalating the levels of fear and dread in the room.

Gaining the capacity to grieve or to fantasize retaliation and forgiveness and enjoy doing so is a major developmental achievement for most severely dissociative patients—an achievement that comes on its own when an ambience of mutuality, negotiation, and transitional experiencing is promoted through the implicit and explicit interventions of the therapist. Likewise, gaining the capacity for free association, a crucial element (often taken for granted) in the reactivation of restorative fantasy operations, represents significant realignment of developmental processes.

No such capacities can be foisted on the patient prematurely, however, to satisfy his/her or the therapist's need for completion of an abreactive or developmental process. Nor should alternative fantasies (i.e., alternatives to the trauma that the patient can hold on to) be cultivated by the therapist for, and foisted on, the patient to avert their having to sit with helplessness and despair. After doing just that, sitting with their pain, and experiencing its containment, witnessing, and even to some degree sharing, most dissociative patients begin without prompting to provide their own antidotes to the reliving of traumatic experience, having internalized the therapist's trust of their innate capacities to tolerate affect and restore fantasy.

The suggestion popularized in some of the early MPD literature to develop hypnotically induced "safe places" may work temporarily to create an illusion of safety but may leave the patient unduly dependent upon the therapist to do so and may actually foreclose the patient's own activation of restorative fantasy capacities, and may, in the end, fail to create any enduring fantasies of safety. In many cases therapist and patient have developed elaborate rituals—that sometimes take one-third of a session—for placing each alter personality in his/her own preferred special safe place. Such immediately helpful concrete enactments serve to manage other anxieties (usually hostile, sometimes erotic feelings in both patient and therapist) by submerging them; only on the surface do they support the patient's use of fantasy, and since repetitive rituals are tedious and boring they probably play to child-alters invested in reparenting.

The patient is after all an adult. Play therapy with child alters is not the same as play therapy with real children. Highly nurturant therapists who find this kind of ritual rewarding and soothing would be well-advised to examine their interactions and countertransference anxieties to guard against avoidant, constrictive, or destructive enactments that suppress the patient's maturation and development. By the same token, therapists who are reluctant to engage in safety rituals should examine whether they are acting out the role of the depriving or withholding caretaker of childhood.

In any event, a traumatized patient can derive feelings of safety by such other means as discussing insecurity and danger with the therapist, surviving making criticisms of the therapist, or interacting in other ways that articulate and disentangle the confusion between the past and the present. So the demand by a patient trained in the "safe places" strategy by prior therapists for help in imagining safe houses for each of his/her alters at the end of a session as a way of self-soothing, containing, and closing down is an invitation to wonder about its potential for mutating transitional experiencing into fetishistic experiencing and unanalyzed dependency. It is also an opportunity to ask about feelings of unsafety, about what might be going on in or missing from the current relationship to trigger a need for directed imagination. Further, the pain of separation and the processing of meanings and feelings about the ending of sessions may get eclipsed by these ritualized endings. Jointly surviving some of the power struggles that initially emerge from discussions of those issues both reduces the patient's anxiety and increases the ability to sit with feelings of pain, rage, loss, fear, dread, abandonment, helplessness, and endangerment that is the hallmark of integration.

The therapist must become the guardian of the realm of the symbolic. When his/her wishful thinking mirrors the magical solutions used by the dissociation-prone child to cope with massive trauma, the patient will continue to act out and engage in self-destructive behavior. The patient will not be able to internalize anything from relationship with a therapist whose "best efforts" entail, for instance, the exchange with the patient of excessive personal material to promote feelings of attachment and safety and the crowding of his/her office with examples of same. Indeed, objects from the therapist's office given to promote attachment, transitional experiencing, or help soothe immense anxieties about separation should become part of the ongoing dialogues. They are not magical tokens that should never be discussed again. Since DID patients can become fetishistically attached to objects, variously refusing to return them, developing very ritualized uses for them, or sometimes breaking them, the mere act of assigning transitional objects to DID patients hardly guarantees in and of itself the cultivation of transitional experiencing.

Negotiating from within the transference/countertransference dialogue is the clinician's best tool for monitoring the arena where reality and fantasy can blend and be articulated. When verbal expressions of terror, rage, hatred, and love replace obsessive requests for hypnotically created or concrete evidence of safety, progress is usually being made on all developmental fronts, and, more often than not, the patient's spontaneous use of self-protective and restorative fantasy follows naturally on the heels of restored affectivity. Psychotherapy must help the patient develop the capacity to bear and integrate anxiety and psychic pain and make room for an intermediate space, a space of illusion, while relinquishing omnipotent defenses and beliefs, addictions to substances, psychic numbing, and pathological identifications with perpetrators and collaborators. In this transitional zone, creativity, faith, and multiple meanings can be explored as the severely dissociative patient's urgency to concretize and to "know" gives way to a toleration for ambiguity, "not knowing," and the synthesis of new meanings for his or her personal history (Schwartz, 1994).

Within transitional experiencing, multiple realities being held by different self-states can find opportunities for linkage (Bromberg, 1994). Through the quality of language that emerges from participation in, and mutual reflection on, the patient's enactments, cognitive symbolization actually supplants the dissociative language often used by the patient to manage his/herself (selves) and avert the danger at once denied and anticipated. According to Bromberg, that cognitive symbolization becomes a new medium for transitional relating, and for the new, more flexible and imaginative self-narratives created in an ambience of such relating. Positing an important developmental trajectory where self-reflection and intrapsychic conflict-resolution achieve ascendancy over dissociation, Bromberg believes that a new experience of reality is also developed—one that goes beyond only the perceptual and interpersonal. By maintaining a therapeutic posture that values transitional experiencing, that protects the boundaries and frame of therapy in order to sustain what Moore (1991) calls "a sacred transformational space," the therapist becomes a "steward" rather than a director of liminal or potential space.

RESTORATION OF HEALTHY AGGRESSION

> What a beautiful garbage dump therapy can be. Generations of psychic pollutants pour into therapy. The beauty of therapy survives them. How beautiful the ocean in spite of all the waste it metabolizes. Can it keep up with the toxins? (Eigen, 1996, p. 177)

Destruction of the natural and healthy aggressive, assertive, and self-protective functions of the psyche is one of the most insidious results of chronic child-abuse trauma. Some severely dissociative patients have absolutely no access to any anger—aside from virulent and repetitive self-hatred—that can be directed anywhere, especially toward any authority figure from the past. Other patients (or specific alters within them) remain perpetually angry with their therapists for real, imagined, and especially deflective purposes. They use anger to discourage dialogues about traumatic memories and affects, and, perhaps most of all, to forestall any implicit threats to their attachment to perpetrators. These patients seem unable to become angry at any of their family members until later in treatment, in spite of remembering or recovering and believing in their own abuse accounts, no matter how awful. Still other traumatized, dissociative patients engage in ongoing conflict and angry outbursts at a host of authorities in daily life—from bosses to employees and managers of hotels, restaurants, and car-rental agencies who in any way slight them or stimulate feelings of unfair treatment or betrayal. Never able to be angry at those who violated them the most, these individuals go about life making scenes, demanding redress and amends from vague or impersonal "power" figures, and end up alienating many people in their lives.

Untreated or minimally treated severely dissociative patients tend to be kind to those among their intimates who treat them abusively, inconsistently, or exploitatively; in their behavior to those who treat them caringly, fear, cruelty, and hatred alternate with moments of appreciation and recognition (usually when they sense that the other is fed up with their antics). Real emotional intimacy is extremely difficult to develop and sustain because aggression is completely upside down in the psyches of most severely dissociative trauma survivors. In keeping with the empirical correlation between how bad the abuse history and how long it takes for the patient to mobilize anger at the perpetrators, victims of organized child-abuse groups that relied on torture and mind control to co-opt their dissociative self-organizations are those in whom anger retardation reaches its zenith.

FORMS AND TRANSFORMATIONS OF AGGRESSION IN SEVERELY DISSOCIATIVE PATIENTS

- Despite being placed on a locked unit and closely monitored during her early treatment, Sara (whose host and functional alters remained completely amnestic) split off into sadistic perpetrator alter personalities who carved pentagrams onto her arms in blocks of odd numbers until she reached the number thirteen; once she had carved thirteen pentagrams on her arms and hands, she began the entire self-mutilation mathematics all over again.
- Following upsetting phone calls from her "former" perpetrator father, Diane split off into hostile and perpetrator alter-states, burned herself

with cigarettes, broke light bulbs and cut herself, and in one instance carved the words "I hate you" and "fuck you" on her breasts.

- Following a series of conflicts with her therapist, and experiencing extreme feelings of betrayal and distrust, Thea, a polyfragmented DID patient broke into her therapist's office and read the files of several patients, including her own. She did not reveal these actions to her therapist for several weeks.
- Whenever memories of coerced perpetration against animals and other children begin to surface in Justin's consciousness, he would fly into fits of rage and smash his hands against hard surfaces and valuable objects in a desperate attempt to contain and deflect the rage that was once co-opted by his perpetrators to be directed against others; Justin relies upon his hands to earn his living.
- Anna is a DID patient with severe diabetes and other health-related problems; she had hostile alters in her system who created amnesia barriers for the others so that they forget to take their insulin, precipitating recurrent medical crises.
- Stacey, a severely dissociative, ritual-abuse survivor reveals (or alleges) to her therapist that she is still actively involved in her family's intergenerational perpetrator group and has been reporting on the goings-on in her therapy through one of her mind-control-trained "informer" alter personalities; Stacey eventually declares that the group has been monitoring the movements of the therapist and his family and has people stalking his children at their school. Finally, her hostile alters announce that the perpetrator group is considering kidnapping and using one of his children in a ritual sacrifice.
- Deciding to use stuffed animals to communicate with her child-alters, Mira, a ritual-abuse survivor with severe dissociative patterns reveals that when she wakes up in the morning she finds the "children's" favorite one completely dismembered and disfigured; every time she sews it back together, hostile alters on the other side of an amnesia barrier emerge and cut up the stuffed animal again. These alters leave Mira and the therapist a note in red ink stating that the children must not be allowed to get attached to anything or anyone and that further efforts to repair the damage will only lead to more damage.
- Julia hears hateful voices in her head calling her "filthy slut," "worthless whore," and "stupid cunt"; she believes these names represent the hidden but ultimate truth about who she is. "Somehow" these

voices take over and leave burns on her body and make her beat herself with belts and whips—sometimes "against her will," sometimes with her "compliance."

- Roberta, a DID patient with a confusing symptom profile alternately accelerates revelations of childhood violence and threatens, first subtly, then overtly, to report the therapist to state authorities and the False Memory Syndrome Foundation for willingness to believe her; some alters support, reassure, and plead on behalf of the therapist, while others continue to threaten and contemptuously deride the therapist for considering historical truth in the patient's material.
- Delia, a severely dissociative patient with a history of multiple hospitalizations, multiple suicide attempts, and multiple treatment failures reveals to her therapist that she has been in treatment with another therapist for the last 18 months of their relationship; Delia managed to obtain reduced fees from both therapists for multiple visits to each per week, has different parts of herself in relationship with each therapist, and has kept all of this a secret from both therapists for the entire 18 months.
- The hostile alters of Maureen, a polyfragmented DID patient, sought reprisals (for perceived neglect, abandonment, and other narcissistic injuries) against inpatient hospital staff and a particular patient on her unit. During the week when that patient was responsible for care of the unit's large aquarium, Maureen sneaked into the dayroom and took several of the fish out of the tank; she held them in her hands until they were almost dead, then returned them to the tank to struggle with shock and stress. At the next morning's community meeting, Maureen began a campaign against the patient charged with aquarium care and the director of the milieu program, accusing them of neglecting their duties and "murdering the fish."

Dissociative identity disorder represents, among other things, a thwarted and fragmented aggressive response to chronic trauma.[4] Individuals subjected to prolonged, repeated trauma develop insidious forms of aggression that invade and erode the personality (Eigen, 1992): hyperarousal to emotional and sensory stimuli (Kardiner, 1941; Krystal, 1978; Lindemann, 1944); automatic and urgently repetitive destructive and self-destructive behavior (Grossman, 1991); provocation of attacks on themselves by abused children at play, and assaults on others (Galenson, 1986; Glenn, 1978), modulating aggression by oscillating between uncontrollable expressions of rage and absolute intolerance of aggression in any form (Van der Kolk, 1987b). These extremes may be so polarizing that the same individual will have a history of multiple violent enactments against self and others and absolute intolerance for even the fantasied pain of, say, cut vegetables or flowers (Schwartz, 1994).

HOSTILE/AGGRESSIVE ALTERS

The DID individual, infused with chronic painful bodily and emotional experiences at an early age and isolated from soothing/restorative responses, is unable to direct the hyperstimulated arousal of aggression toward the sources of injury. The fear of abandonment by the abuser/caretaker forces the child into states of abject compliance and submission by developmental necessity—but as Freud (1930) so clearly stated, obedience does not exorcise aggression; rather it directs aggression against the self. In Freud's terms, authoritarian arrangements produce aggression that devolves into forms of self-domination, and the individual's own conscience becomes suffused with the hostility that cannot be directed at the unassailable authority.

DID/MPD dissociative solutions to this dilemma include the creation of alters who are fearfully compliant, proudly collaborative, or tenderly loving in relation to the psychopathology and tyranny of the impinging parent/caretakers; other defiant, aggressive alters are "secretly" constructed around counteridentifications to evade impinging others and eventually impinging memories (and concomitant fantasies), and still other alters are constructed according to elaborate rules of counterdependence.

Hostile alter personalities serve as a kind of trauma membrane in the multiple personality internal world (Putnam, 1989), and function aggressively like personified narcissistic and sociopathic defenses. They regulate the flow of information and memory; discharge aggressive and sexual tension states; maintain and protect remnants of the grandiose self; defend against the experience of hope, guilt, shame, vulnerability, disappointment; and attempt to prevent the reshattering of previously shattered fantasies of self in relation to self-object (Kohut, 1977). Deformed and derailed as they might appear, the severely dissociative individual's aggressive alter personalities contain much of the life force of the pretraumatized individual (Putnam, 1989).

Most experienced clinicians treating dissociative patients agree that it is essential to engage aggressive alters in a therapeutic alliance that recognizes their value and potential for healthy self-protection and differentiation; at times, it can be important to meet their force with counterforce. Hostile alters, usually the most underappreciated and misrecognized aspects of the self are not merely drive-derivatives of aggression or responses to empathic failure; they represent efforts—faulty efforts—at self-restoration, self-preservation, and shame avoidance. (The more they are identified with perpetrators—and the more they have been forced to participate in perpetration against others—the more shame they are holding and defending against experiencing.) Concretized and elaborated over time and in response to different developmental challenges, hostile alters are originally created by the child (in some cases with the direct help and shaping of the perpetrators) so that s/he could survive physically and psychologically (Putnam, 1989; Ross, 1989; 1997). When there is no soothing or ventilation of the injury, coping is accomplished through dissociation and personification of defenses paralleling identification with (or imitation of) the aggressor. These are the only tools of power left to the powerless.

Because the abused child's ability to sustain attachment (see Chapter 8 for elaboration of attachment dilemmas) depends upon the dissociative compartmentalization of aggression rather than on the direct expression or conscious experience of that aggression, the child comes to identify his/her own angry behavior and aggressive feelings as threatening rather than those of the predator/perpetrator (Howell, 1997); she may, accordingly, also dissociate unexpressed and inexpressible terror, pain, and helpless rage. The resulting protector self-state now must vigilantly monitor the child's behavior for anything that would be threatening to the attachment figure. "The fact that protection may require the vigilant monitoring, even persecution, of the ordinary self in order to curtail its potentially attachment-threatening behavior is what makes for the dual role of protector and persecutor" (p. 242). As the protector—who has been holding the rage and averting the provocation of dangerous others through preemptive persecution or criticism of his/her compliant and masochistic part-selves—becomes increasingly persecutory, its aggressivity can inflate into "cruel sport."[5]

The developing child relieves him/herself of rage, and knowledge of betrayal (Freyd, 1996), by placing (and reversing) thoughts and feelings onto other personality segments and then walling them off (Putnam, 1989; Ross, 1989; 1997). Since such alters come into existence to protect survival, their greatest fear is their own annihilation—being destroyed or literally killed by the therapist or others—often concretizing their anticipation of psychic disintegration in the face of powerful affects, dependent feelings, or any other kind of vulnerability.

Many internal persecutors begin as internal friends or helpers; some even evolve from imaginary playmates (Kluft, 1985a). Certain helper personalities initially created to suffer abuse have come over time to identify with the aggressor/abuser and to resent suffering for the other personalities (Putnam, 1989). Other aggressive and criminal personalities are specifically shaped through ongoing participation in organized perpetrator groups, where split-off aspects of the self, elicited and molded through behavior modification, torture, drugs, and elaborate mind-control procedures operate independently of the rest of the personality system and sustain ardent allegiance to the group and its ideologies. These hostile cult-type alters believe themselves guilty of complicity in all sorts of real and imagined crimes; silenced and enslaved by guilt and shame and sealed over by prideful identifications with the power of the group leaders—along with contempt for those outside of the group—they feed off the fear of other parts of the patient's system and of people (including the therapist) outside it.[6]

Frankel and O'Hearn (1996) identify subsets of hostile/aggressive alters in their classification system of alter personalities based on the social organization of the Eastern European Jewish ghettos during World War II (see Chapter 1). While some dissociated aggression manifests through help-seeking alters—essentially maladaptive role players who carry the burden of posttraumatic stress disorder symptoms and may be substance abusers or promiscuous or suicidal—most split-off aggression in DID is located in the "anti-bonding force," which consists of the following subsets.

Enforcers, often arrogant and challenging, are persecutory alters who are anesthetic to pain and amnestic for the circumstances surrounding their original emergence in the system. They control the system by force, threat, intimidation, and inciting acts of self-harm.

Deniers, self-blamers, and approval seekers divert and mislead the clinician and seek to discourage or distort the disclosure of newly emerging traumatic material. It is they who facilitate ongoing contact with perpetrators and instill denial both inside and outside the system, and it is they who create the internal conditions whereby all other alters are constantly questioning their reality. They use self-blame to create chronic doubt and to steer bonding with the clinician off-course.

Internal leaders, generally the most dominant group in the system, are often hidden behind the other groups of alters. They discourage bonding with the therapist for fear it will put the entire internal system in danger; they also distort and reframe information and experience to match perpetrator ideologies and belief systems.

Independence forces trust absolutely no one inside or outside of the dissociative system, including any of the sources to whom they report even though they may pretend to have temporary allegiances; they are completely self-serving. By warning of impending disaster to protect survival or guarding distrust as a survival strategy when other alters appear to be growing too comfortable with the therapy relationship, they can function to stabilize or disrupt at the same time.

According to Frankel and O'Hearn, these alters have a wide-angle perspective and "special dispensation to move about the internal system with a kind of limited immunity" (p. 501). While their observational acuity is potentially useful, they generally provoke chaos and havoc in therapy, at times *impersonating* alters from other groups. Personal clinical experience reveals that the greater a patient's exposure to a totalist, sadistic family system and/or to organized child abuse, the greater the likelihood that his/her dissociated aggression will mutate into Frankel and O'Hearn's diverse forms. All hostile alters, whether directly or indirectly shaped in response to perpetrators' messages, attitudes, and behaviors exist in a world of omnipotent rage and grandiose thinking. They can represent the extremes of collusion with the authoritarian paradigms of domination—and the only solution the traumatized self could develop to maintain the capacity to subvert authority through simultaneous maintenance and avoidance of attachments. Virtually all hostile alters are the terrorized, shame-ridden child- and adolescent-aspects of the personality who have seen and internalized the worst of human interactional patterns—those built on domination, betrayal, and duplicity. Their belief systems are based on particularly bitter and sardonic worldviews where sadism and control are the only pleasures left in a world devoid of protection or benevolent relationship.

Some hostile alters mutilate the body and set up dangerous situations including rape or other violence. Some sabotage treatment by convincing the patient to miss sessions, distrust the therapist, or drop out of therapy altogether, or by taking over the personality at certain specific times so the other personalities "forget" their therapy appointments. Some distract the patient's patterns of thinking and listening with chants, number-counting, headaches, or psychic fog to the point that they can interfere with the person's job and social functioning. However, by transforming themselves from the one threatened to the one making the threat, by shifting from passive into active modes of assimilating trauma and mastering anxiety-provoking experiences, hostile alters harbor the patient's capacity for healthy protest response and, ultimately, for separation from attachments to perpetrators.

A therapist's initial engagements with hostile alters may not be easy. And an alter's first contact with the therapist, beyond acting out or passively influencing other alters in ways that disrupt the treatment and the patient's life, usually entails some maneuver conceived to interfere with a genuine human connection. Created to deflect attention from traumatic memory and from revelation of the pathological multiplicity that concretizes their ongoing psychological mobilization for disaster, hostile alters seek to intimidate at the outset through displays of adolescent rage, obstinacy, and contempt.

SARA

Sara, who had managed to carve satanic pentagrams all over her arms repeatedly while "contained" on a locked unit in a psychiatric hospital in an astonishing display of dissociative aggression (and enterprise) following attempts to engage her hostile alters in dialogue, wrote me letters in the early stages of treatment.

"We think you are a sneaky slimy son-of-a-bitch who is out to get what you can. Maybe you think you're better than we are and you know more but you know NOTHING about us and how we are and how we work and you never will so you can just go fuck yourself and the whole fucking world. DO you understand? WE HATE YOU . . . We don't trust you, we don't like you. We don't trust or like anyone. We don't come to see you because there is nothing to talk about. We are just fine with hating everyone and everything and there's nothing wrong with that. We don't even trust each other and we don't have to. We're writing this jointly because we all think the same way on this. There is no reason why we have to like each other and we don't. So you can just stop being confrontative with that slut [the host personality] because we're never coming to you and we think that's just fine that she hates us too—this is mutual all the way around. Now she has to pay for trying to get through to us. And everything she tries, she will have to pay for it. We want her to hate us; we have no need for friends or understanding. All we want is for her and you to leave us alone. Goodbye from us."

In this case I chose to value what certainly appears to be a refusal to engage in treatment as an introduction to important parts of this patient that were based on radical self-sufficiency, intense shame, humiliated rage, strange bonds (but bonds nonetheless) to perpetrators, and a prideful refusal to trust anyone. By not backing down from contact with these parts and by insisting on the merits of communication while continuing to value the resistances to communication, I was eventually able to break the stalemate. In the end—and this is often the case—it was the patient's host personality and functional alters who were the most resistant to dialogue with the angry part-selves. Disrupting the dichotomies and internal polarizations they represent is a central task of treatment.

RESTABILIZING AGGRESSION

Healthy aggression leads to essential developmental achievements in the areas of differentiation and capacity for love, play, mutuality, and fantasy (Winnicott, 1971). There is no way to avoid fury in childhood, according to Winnicott; the crucial factor is how this fury is met with by others. When all self-assertion, agency, and efforts at individuation (including thinking one's own thoughts) threaten the omnipotence and narcissistic equilibrium of the child's abusers, their reactions (rage, retaliation, abandonment) foster a developmental "freeze" in crucial areas. Everything related to aggression is experienced in omnipotent form, forced back into the intrapsychic realm, and fantasized as dangerous, and the victim keeps aggression dammed up in the internal dissociative matrix with no safe flow to the intersubjective world. With no expectation of welcome for, recognition of, or dialogue about anger, rage, or individuation strivings, the severely dissociative trauma survivor withdraws into excessive internalization and reenactment of abandonment/retaliation scenarios.

Since mental organization acquires some of its most significant characteristics as the child learns to express and regulate aggression (Grossman, 1991), working through the aggressive aspects of DID is a central reorganizing aspect of the psychotherapy process. It involves accepting and empathizing with the personified villains and demons and helping patients to apprehend compassionately these self-preservative shadow aspects of themselves—which, in fact, become destructive only when ignored or devalued (or programmed by perpetrators and split off from the agency and control of the rest of the personality system). Effective treatment also encompasses collisions with the therapist's power and value system, interpretations of the strengths and limitations of the alters' worldviews and methods of self-protection, and challenges to dangerous manipulations, cover-ups, and policies of deceit and omission.

Misconstruing motivations of hostile aspects of the self can be a major precipitant of violence and acting-out episodes. An overtolerant stance toward the dissociative patient's power plays can lead to regressive spirals of disorganization and disintegration of functioning—but the therapist committed to support restoration of a healthy protest response to welcoming all forms of anger into the therapy relationship is up against some difficult decisions. S/he has to determine when to empathize with what seems to be important communication about the therapist-patient interaction and when to confront blatant manipulations that enable sadistic acting out, replays of traumatic relational patterns, and most commonly avoidance of difficult feelings and conflicts, particularly about threats and challenges to attachments with perpetrators.

Successful treatment involves substantial engagement with hostile (and perpetrator-identified) aspects of the patient where an invitation into the intersubjective dialogue can be experienced as safely containing and negotiating aggression between the parameters of validation and limit setting. The accumulation of such engagements (e.g., where anger is dialogue rather than action, where fighting is safe, etc.), gently disrupts the sense of omnipotence that organizes and orchestrates dissociative life: aggressive alter personalities who boast about their sense of power will begin to admit feelings of vulnerability; compliant part-selves, cowering before conflict or any revelation of their own sadism, will become acquainted with the creative processes of diplomacy, assertion, resistance, and confrontation. Empathic acknowledgments of breakdowns in therapeutic rapport represent significant interventions because they demonstrate the therapist's benevolent use of power and solidify the patient's tentative expectation that restitution can follow disruption, an experience central to fostering healthy restructuralization of self (Kohut, 1971; 1977).

Negotiating with intrapsychic (and at times, interpersonal) terrorism is not a simple task, however. The dissociative patient's projections of, and seductive counterinvitations to, abandonment and retaliation can be relentless during some phases of treatment. Following Winnicott's (1971) assertion that the developing child must be permitted to continually create and destroy the other in fantasy to discover the durability of the other in reality, several psychoanalytic theorists (Benjamin, 1990; Eigen, 1981; 1996; Ghent, 1990) emphasize the developmental necessity of healthy collisions between self and other for establishing a sense of externality and engendering the capacity to maintain the tension between omnipotence and recognition of reality without constricting into the polarized identifications that are the hallmark of aggression in severe dissociative conditions. For Eigen and Winnicott, survival of the patient's destructive assaults (on self and others) leads to surrendering of false-self solutions and to the patient finally believing that s/he can really use another person for his/her growth. When the patient (or alter) systematically attacks the therapist's benevolence, the therapist must hold in mind that the patient deeply (often secretly) wishes for survival of the very goodness under attack.

Dialogues with hateful, vengeful, and demonized aspects of the self must take place so that the patient can deflate some of his or her omnipotent fantasies of aggression. For many hostile alters, the experience of having their hateful feelings symbolized, verbalized, and witnessed by a therapist who does not back away in disgust or fear from emotional contact is powerful enough to catalyze the building of bridges to other parts of the self. Curiosity, inquiry, and mirroring emergent aggression (in such forms as detailed, bloody vengeance-scenarios; joyous reveling in sadistic fantasies; colorful invectives directed toward the therapist) must guide the therapeutic process, supplanting the patient's passive-aggressive, acting-out, and self-injurious forms of expressing aggression.

Beneath the reenactments, the severely dissociative patient is seeking a new reparative object relationship to mobilize his/her derailed development. Effective treatment calls for a therapist who can empathize with and survive (without being overwhelmed by) deep and dissociated terror, rage, and hate, so as to render him/her at once less intimidating and less intimidated by his/her own aggression. Specifically, most people with DID have never learned how to say "yes" or "no" from a position of self-ownership and self-authorship. Traumatically induced compliant "yesses" and sequestered defiant "nos" (and extreme passive-aggressive behavior) have filled the void where no solid core self or will once existed (Schwartz, 1994). Organic protest responses have been disrupted and extinguished (Van der Kolk, 1987a).

Slavin (1997) writes about the importance of the patient's recovering a sense of agency from the process of recovering memories. Therefore, the pacing and timing of the regressive aspects of the therapy work and ownership of the memory retrieval process (including assessment of the relative veracity of the memories) must remain firmly in the hands of the patient. This approach will prevent even the therapist with the best of intentions from making the fundamental error of inadvertently subverting the patient's will and agency as a result of either overzealousness or intrusive skepticism or credulity. The therapist must encourage and respond authentically to all forms of the patient's protest responses, regardless of how provocative or camouflaged, in order to maintain an invitation for the patient to say no in every conceivable way while a therapeutic alliance based on mutuality rather than on compliance or defiance is being forged and strengthened.

The fractured developmental line of aggression can be recovered through empathic confrontation (Chu, 1992a), exploratory inquiry into instances of dissociative flight, and repeated successful collisions with the therapist and the frame of psychotherapy. The patient experiences the vulnerabilities and strengths of the therapist who remains unafraid of the patient and the patient's material and/or speaks honestly of his/her fears and concerns; concomitantly, the patient's omnipotent fantasies of destructiveness are worked through. The patient thus tolerates and sustains contact through conflict. S/he reflects on affirmative and negative responses and develops and delivers them with coherence, consistency, and space for negotiation. Formerly violent somatic communication on the body-self in the face of misrecognition, fear, or pain is transformed into verbal expressivity and the confident expectation of empathy in the face of hurts and disruptions in rapport.

One of the many ways concretized aggression manifests in treatment of severely traumatized, dissociative individuals—both inside and outside of the consulting room—involves weapons. Clinicians frequently have to work through issues involving dangerous drugs, knives, and guns with patients in order to establish firmer treatment alliances and to understand the inner dynamics of the their systems. The encounter with and mastery of fear, danger, and threat in the countertransference opens a channel for symbolic communication; variously, the patient may turn in guns to the police or unload and turn them in to the therapist (who then either turns them in to the police or safely contains them in accord with a joint agreement).

RENA

Early in treatment many hostile alters competed with the therapist for control of Rena, a particularly fragmented patient. When the therapist announced plans to take a vacation, a new alter—and the new issue of guns—emerged.

During the vacation this alter, who typically spent hours loading and unloading and stroking her guns as a form of self-soothing, convinced the others in the internal system that the therapist was dead. When treatment resumed, it took several weeks of reworking the fears and pain about the vacation for a number of the alters to realize how they had been "managed" by the powerful hostile alter, who had essentially created a set of false memories about the therapist's death (not an uncommon scenario).

The realization exposed further splits in the patient's system: parts wanted to keep the guns, parts found them an ever-present danger. Manipulating the guns (and manipulating other alters and the therapist about the guns) was the only way the hostile alters could protect flooding of affect and the release of too much dangerous information at once. It turned out that several were hidden in different locations; each was a secret revealed by some alters who angered the others by telling the therapist about it. Guns were clearly a preferred attachment alternative: they didn't talk back or ask questions—and they didn't take vacations. Frightened alters made desperate phone calls to the therapist, in whom great anxiety about suicidal possibilities was created ("The gun is in my hand, what do I do now?" or "He [another alter] is threatening to kill me, can you help?"). At the same time as patient and therapist were negotiating about power and the limits of the therapist's control and addressing issues of attachment and abandonment, suspense and morbid anticipation-reenactments were taking place.

After the therapist tried talking the patient down on the phone (unload the gun, put it in a new place, check in the next day), it was apparent that her agreeing to a no-harm contract would not work and that she had to turn in all her guns in order for treatment to proceed. This became a nonnegotiable condition, having to do with "safety first" issues and also with the impossibility of finding new solutions to self-soothing and self-protection needs in the presence of such concrete options. The therapist had personally to confront the subtle intimidation message, and to make room for some of the alters' feelings of betrayal about the vacation.

Standing firm about the absolute necessity that the guns be turned in before further treatment could take place, the therapist provided enough containment for the patient to persuade the hostile alters to try to go along with therapist's views of safety. After the guns were turned in, however, two more appeared: seeing a hole in the therapist's holding functions and feeling unsafe at some level, the hostile alters went out and bought others, generating another round of confrontation and negotiation.

When the therapist set a final limit, a deeper sense of balance was restored in the patient's system, where the hostile alters—sensing the therapist's strength and commitment and ongoing lack of fear and openness to dialogue, discovered a new and pivotal level of communication and bonding with the therapist. Giving up the guns did bring about more disorganization and disintegration besides—but increased contact with the therapist and the addition of very low-dose major tranquilizers to the medication regimen gave the therapist more access to more alters and led in turn to a higher level of integration and overall stabilization.

Before there was relief, however, the hostile alters, sensing the intensity of affect and pain, escalated arguments for the use of knives as a less dangerous but still soothing alternative to both guns and the current decline in functioning. The therapy dialogues then proceeded to take on the most difficult issues of all—trust, protection, attachment, and betrayal, and the question of whether or not any human being in the entire universe was big and strong enough to handle all of this patient's pain and aggression.

The fact that the therapist chose not to immediately hospitalize the patient or call the police but instead spent some time negotiating, inquiring, and assisting and then stepped in with a firm and rigid limit created the space between the therapist and patient where human relationship could be brought to conflicts the patient had only previously dealt with on her own. When patient and therapist continually relate in such a way that the concrete, literal quality of the patient's aggression is contained in a holding environment of shared responsibility and mutual reflection, the disparate self-states and full range of the patient's self-narratives (and the full range of his/her perceptual apparatus) are embraced within a single relational field (Bromberg, 1994). In this view, the dissociative patient's limitations in both the domains of aggression and fantasy and the constricted and repetitive narrative structures that maintain dissociation "as though the past were still a present danger" (p. 539) are resolved by the creation of new realities between the therapist and patient. This therapeutic ambience honors the patient's dissociative self-remedies of the past while forging more integrated protest—and imaginative responses to intrapsychic and interpersonal conflicts and challenges.

There is a small subset of hostile/perpetrator alters (and dissociative patients in general) who may impede treatment severely, sometimes permanently. Such alters represent one or all of the following: programmed, highly trained perpetrator-identified part-selves created through torture, operant and classical conditioning techniques, hypnosis, and the extreme manipulation of shame and guilt by organized perpetrator-groups; nonnegotiable commitment to either a criminal way of life or an extreme or corrupt political or spiritual ideology; the products of repeated, failed, or abusive therapies in addition to massive early traumatization; personifications of what Rosenfeld (1971) called "destructive narcissism," whereby they cannot tolerate the therapist's efforts to unmask their underlying worth or goodness because they experience shame for not being cruel or malevolent enough.

In this bizarre reversal, a therapist may be construed as a perpetrator, not for hurting or empathically failing the patient but for indicating that s/he is not all bad. When such strong identifications with criminality or evil exist in a severely dissociative patient, the alters or self-states embodying them will be nearly impossible to treat because they will see any sign of therapeutic progress as weakening their diabolism and as an affront to their sense of superiority. Shame is so intensely defended against that coming into contact with any vulnerability feels like a cruel death or dismemberment to these extremely corrupted part-selves. Interestingly, Rosenfeld's (p. 174) description of the internal world of the "destructive narcissist" sounds quite similar to the organization and dynamics of many perpetrator groups:

> The destructive narcissism of these patients appears often highly organized, as if one were dealing with a powerful gang dominated by a leader, who controls all the members of the gang to see that they support one another in making the criminal destructive work more effective and powerful. However, the narcissistic organization not only increases the strength of the destructive narcissism, but it has a defensive purpose to keep itself in power and so maintain the status quo. The main aim seems to be to prevent the weakening of the organization and to control the members of the gang so that they will not desert the destructive organization and join the positive parts of the self or betray the secrets of

> the gang to the police, or the protecting super-ego, standing for the helpful analyst, who might be able to save the patient.

In some hostile/perpetrator-identified alters the level of identification with pure malevolence, spite, envy, haughtiness, and callousness is so severe that their pleasure in assaulting the treatment and the psyche and spirit of the therapist (and the self) are endless. Yet sometimes, after years of confrontations and strengthening alliances with other sectors of the self, these extreme psychological positions can be systematically undermined and gradually eroded: in such cases the treatment is like a slow titration of light into completely dark chambers of the heart and mind of the patient.

When, however, these patients move among therapists or treatment programs, a set of seductively waiflike, victim-identified self-states often provides initial engagement (and hope); then, the set of powerfully malignant narcissistic/sociopathic alters finds ways to drive clinicians to get rid of them, taking perverse pride in their dark triumph over healing and goodness. They become predators in the mental health system. A few of these predatory, narcissistic/sociopathic alters might pursue malicious lawsuits against their therapists (sometimes in conjunction with their families or perpetrator groups); the ambiguities involved in diagnosis and treatment are manipulated by the patient to humiliate and ultimately destroy the career of the therapist and to extort enormous sums of money from insurance companies. (The wave of backlash against trauma therapy, MPD/DID, and "recovered memory" has created a cultural climate hospitable to such actions against therapists.)

More often than not, these unrelenting part-selves abort treatment or lead to patients' reentry into the criminal underworld (including the cult, perpetrator group, or family of origin) or to incarceration and/or suicide. Most therapists would like to believe that we can engage all aspects of a patient's dissociative self-system or that through a creative combination of empathy and confrontation we can eventually reach remote corners of the patient's shame-ridden and hostile self—but as Pizer (1998) laments in his work on negotiation and bridge-building in psychoanalysis, some things, some people, and some aspects of people are unnegotiable. While encountering this phenomenon of psychic nonnegotiability is exceedingly painful, awareness of its existence in certain hostile alters can help clinicians in the assessment and prognostic aspects of treatment; moreover, knowledge of such self-states can keep our own potentially inflated fantasies of rescue or redemption from leading us into naïve collaboration in our own victimization.

JOANN

Her last therapist promised her the world, then abruptly terminated treatment when Joann became suicidal and required hospitalization. The one before that got involved with her sexually. Given those therapy failures and others before them, Joann's fears of dependency—of being seduced and abandoned yet again in another therapy relationship—are quite pronounced.

Just as she had begun to open up an extremely traumatic issue from the past for the first time, a hostile male alter emerged to protect her from herself, that is, from trusting me. One of an unusual number of aggressive personalities who had manifested in Joann's self-destructive behavior (cutting, substance abuse, conflicts with coworkers, suicidality), he consistently preserved his separateness from the rest of her self-system. As soon as Joann's compliant demeanor gave way to his glaring defiant interruption, he said threateningly, "How would you feel if I cut her up into pieces?"

Acknowledging his power, I wonder aloud about whom the alter really wants to cut up into pieces—other part-selves, people from the past or present, maybe even me? He warns me acerbically: "If you make her talk about those things I will have to slice her up," and if I try any "shrink tricks" on him, he will slice me up too. This patient has provoked previous therapists into power duels, and I don't want to catalyze an acting-out episode—but I feel blackmailed by the bind he's tightening around talking. Recognizing it as a means of self-regulation and containment, however, I try linking it to his concern about the prospect of retraumatization in therapy with me, based on the earlier therapy failures. . . .

THERAPIST: I can see that your anger might be triggered by Joann's wanting to talk about what happened with your mother, and my encouraging her to express her feelings . . .

PATIENT: She's not my mother, she's her mother.

T: This distinction seems important to you. I think you're trying to tell me about what you're angry at yourself besides the fact that Joann and I are talking about painful things you feel might get out of hand.

P: Yeah, I am angry, so what. I'd just as soon cut you into pieces as talk to you.

Ironically, while trying to protect the patient from experiencing painful affects as well as from abandonment, and retraumatization, this alter is mimicking some of the threats of her perpetrators; he has probably caused more revictimization in the patient's life than he has prevented.

T: There seems to be a lot of emphasis on this cutting and threatening business; can we talk about it and get past all the intimidation in order to understand the meaning of the threats and the feelings that go with them?

P: Listen, mister, I just like to cut-cut-cut and tear and rip things. Cutting is better than talking. Get it!

Joann's history of severe self-mutilation had abated earlier in the treatment process when the DID diagnosis first opened up inter-alter communication.

T: How so? I want to understand how you see this.

P: It just is. I feel stronger and better and it keeps the others under control: when they begin to feel or get close to people, they get into trouble, and I can stop any feelings I want by telling them I will cut them or by cutting them or getting other parts to burn them and do stuff to them.

T: So you're in charge and you're protecting them by hurting and threatening them.

P: It sounds strange when you say it like that. . . . I have to think about it. . . . Listen, don't indulge yourself thinking I am here out of loving concern. I really don't give a damn about any of those others, so don't act like I care or anything. I don't feel like answering your shrink questions right now, I would rather go back to cutting; we haven't done that in a long time and I want to again. It's my body isn't it?

T: You're making a very important point, it's definitely your body—a shared body of course, but yours too.

P: Don't remind me about the other ones, I like to forget about them.

T: It seems like you can only cut and burn them when you forget about them, and forget that you're one of them.

P: You really like to rub it in. I've had therapy before and I know all about that stuff. I don't block them from knowing about the MPD anymore, but I still have to keep them in line. Reminding me that this is my body too and all of that therapy jazz—like I haven't heard some of this shit from your predecessors. . . .

T: You feel I am being sadistic now to remind you about your dissociation and the continuity of your body with your parts, like my reminding you that you're part of the others was some kind of attack. From your point of view, I'm pushing you around, hurting you, using power over you, just like everyone else always has.

P: The others are dumb enough to think you are different and trust you but I know you're just like all the other shrinks she's had. She always wants to trust them and she is always fooled in the end.

T: You're keeping them from falling into the trap of trusting me too much, is that right? You don't want them to need me and have me mistreat them, abandon them, force them into things. . . .

P: Without me, they'd have been in even more bad relationships than they have been.

T: I am going to say something that might also challenge the way you view things. It's possible that you even have a role in some of those relationships, including therapy relationships, not working out.

P: Yeah, right. People betray you and I have to take the heat for everything. I hate people, I hate you, leave me alone. I want to go away.

T: Let's talk about your hate and the betrayals. This is a safe place to do that. Don't just take your hurt and outrage and switch off or go away.

My invitation to dialogue openly about his hateful feelings—and only "for as long as he liked"—subdued the alter, who certainly wasn't expecting it and ended up focusing on superficial things he hates about the office and some clothes I have worn. When I pressed him to tell me what he really hated about me, the alter seemed to become hesitant, and in the middle of shifting states (as if really dialoguing about hate was beyond his capacity) said he hated that I seemed confident in what I was doing as a therapist. Not long afterward (and with no time to discuss the final comment), a slow switch took place and Joann returned, somewhat dazed and disoriented and with only vague recollections for the session. I proceeded to fill her in and explore why she had to dissociate it. My recounting of the session obviously disturbed her.

P: I don't know whether I am more scared of you or me right now.

T: What else can you say about your fears?

P: I don't like saying mean things to you. I'm afraid they'll make you go away like everyone else, and I'm afraid of what is inside of me. I don't want to know about it, but I do. I'm just mixed up.

T: You're afraid of ruining our relationship and losing me if these feelings get out of control, and you're afraid of not making any progress if you don't face this angry part of yourself and what he represents.

P: Yes, that's the bind. Things always get screwed up with me and other people, and I can't deal with it. Nothing ever changes.

T: Joann, have you ever considered that your not wanting to deal with your hate and aggressive feelings, your going away from them, is as much a part of the problem as the angry alter himself?

P: No, I never thought about it that way before.

T: Aren't you curious about what that part of you thinks and feels?

P: Honestly, no. I'm too scared to be curious. I don't want to start cutting again or being cut on or however it works in me. You can be curious for both of us *[somewhat sarcastically, which is unusual for the host personality]*; how about that?

T: There's a little edge to your voice now that you usually don't risk when you talk to me. What are you feeling right now?

P: Curiosity is a luxury. Don't you get that?

T: You mean this therapeutic ideal of knowing yourself that I represent and push on you from time to time is more difficult, more frightening than I understand.

P: Right. This angry part of me reminds me of people who really abused me and it doesn't feel like part of me, and when you try and convince me to deal with it I feel cornered and that brings up very scary feelings. But more than that, I don't want to lose my good feelings with you.

Since we are reaching the end of the session, I try to recap. I articulate the bind we seem to be in where neither talking nor not talking works:

talking with Joann's hostile alter about aggressive feelings threatens her attachment to me and triggers traumatic anxieties, memories, and fears of loss of control; not talking about these feelings keeps everything frozen, keeps our relationship limited, and keeps Joann at risk of spontaneously splitting off into self-destructive behaviors for reasons she doesn't fully understand. I also underscore an element of real progress: the aggressive aspects of her self are now in some kind of dialogue with me, and, whether for that reason or another, she was able to respond more assertively to my inquiries. Both the fact that progress could be identified and the fact that I found her directness and anger encouraging seemed to take Joann by surprise.

The hostile alter returned in the next session per my request, and after briefly reviewing our prior conversation, I patiently discussed the dynamics of protection, rigidity, and overgeneralization in an effort to define the costs/benefits of different forms of self-protection in relationship to the therapy, the various parts of the self, and to other people. Following several rounds of hit-and-run, his role in the system was also defined. Then he actually took me up on my offer of dialogue and shared inquiry, beginning by iterating his confusion about my approach to him, Joann, and some of the other parts.

P: You seem so comfortable pushing us around.
T: How do you feel pushed around?
P: You make me have to feel things.
T: When you say it that way, it sounds like force is involved.
P: No, you don't exactly force me, but you make me and them face things. I don't want to face what they did, how it felt, how it still feels, and then I start feeling weakened inside and it seems like it's your fault. You say you want me to talk and not cut and threaten and then I do and then I feel worse. And then it's all your fault.
T: By following my suggestion to talk instead of act out you're feeling something uncomfortable and painful. It's almost like you feel that I'm purposely doing something to make you feel bad.
P: First of all, talking usually does no good. Plus, here with you I'm starting to feel weak and you seem like you are enjoying yourself.

In my work with severely dissociative patients I do often enjoy "mixing it up" with hostile alters because I find that it leads to breakthroughs in resolving omnipotent thinking, models how aggressive feelings can safely be part of intimacy, and at times also releases pent-up aggression for patient and therapist alike. The accusation lands on more than a grain of truth, prompting me to reflect on what my motivations are, what I might not be aware of, what sadistic part from the patient's psyche or past or from my own I might be playing out.

T: I can see that I've been pushing you to deal with aspects of your dissociation, and actually I was feeling okay about doing that; it's not from wanting to hurt you or see you suffer that I was enjoying our work, but since you bring that up, I promise that I'll look at it and think about it. What I do know is that I was feeling frustrated with our conversation going in circles about the cutting, so maybe I've pressed you to deal with the dissociation too soon. But you know that sooner or later I would have asked you to look at the ways you stay separate from the other parts and how that affects the cutting and your history of self-destructive behavior.

P: *[cynically]* You're going to think about what I said. . . .

T: I will. And I can hear your doubt and skepticism, so let's keep talking. It seems as if you believe that if you're with someone else and feeling any kind of emotional pain, that someone is enjoying inflicting it on you.

P: That's how it's always been. And it doesn't seem any different with you: you're making us feel and look at what's causing the pain—so you must like doing it.

T: I can see how this is confusing. You don't really know what my intention is, and you have no reason to trust me. From your point of view I could be completely bullshitting you.

P: You probably are, because everyone does.

T: And you don't really know how to tell the difference.

P: Maybe I do and maybe I don't.

T: So if we get into any area where you or any other part starts to feel pain, or fear, or weakness, or vulnerability—which are places therapy eventually has to go—then you feel like I might be hurting you and enjoying having power over you or enjoying watching you squirm.

P: I don't trust anyone, so don't try and get me to trust you. People tell you what they have to just to get you to do what they want. That's what I think. No, that's what I know.

T: So what do you figure my motives are in working with you and the others, in questioning your dissociation or your relationships with one another or even in encouraging feelings whatever they might be?

P: I don't know what you're after, but I know it must be something. Maybe you're just taken with how smart you are or maybe you just like pushing your patients around, how am I supposed to know?

The alter started to dissociate and look uneasy. I asked what just happened.

P: I don't know. I can feel "they" don't like me talking to you that way.

T: You're putting your distrust and suspicion of me into words, and the others are more uneasy than you are with conflict and confrontation.

P: I don't care how they feel. I said what I said and I meant it. They like to be good and nice, as if that gets them anywhere. Nice sucks.

T: My feeling about what's been going on between us since the other day is that you were pushing me and threatening the others with violence and I was pushing you back, challenging you. I hoped we could both take that kind of struggle and get somewhere by putting the aggression in you between us instead of your isolating all of your anger inside and turning it on yourself as you usually do or maybe taking potshots at me. So, I was glad something different was happening: you're talking to me directly from your anger instead of doing hit-and-run. But, I also see how that was a risk, which could get us stuck in the replay of the past. You could think I am only trying to hurt you as other people have; then you get stuck and can't think about it any other way.

P: Well, I don't know if I can believe you, but you did say you'd be thinking about whether you wanted to hurt us or not. . . .

T: Yes, I did, and I will. I know I can be impatient at times and then push at your dissociative barriers too hard out of frustration to get through a stuck place, but I'm not feeling like I would enjoy watching you suffer. Since you keep asking, I'll keep thinking about it.

P: *[Somewhat mockingly but also, now, almost playfully]* Good. You think about it and get back to me.

T: It seems you're more comfortable with the idea that I'd want to hurt you than with what I have offered—a different type of relationship in which you would learn to integrate aggressive feelings and energies, and which would be inclusive of you and all the other parts of Joann.

P: Well, if I believe that you actually are enjoying being with me and pushing back and forth, and that it's safe to do that, then I'd have to trust you, and I don't want to do that because if I did then they'd all crumble into needing you too much and into feeling all sorts of things that I don't want them or me to feel, to remember, to think or talk about. It's easier to keep it locked up. That's what I know how to do.

T: So, it's all linked inside of you? One thing leads to another, and if one thing changes then everything has to change—and there's the dreaded dependency and betrayal waiting like a guarantee at the end of the road.

P: Right, and I don't like change. Or trust. Or dependency. It's weak. And I hate weak.

T: Playing with your anger with me and disagreeing is a kind of strength. How does it feel?

P: If I think you're trying to "get" me I don't like it, but if I believe that you actually like my pushing you and you can take it and you don't want to make me go away because of it, then I might really start to feel good about it and even enjoy getting angry with you myself, instead of just pretending.

T: Then we both would be safe and able to enjoy being with angry feelings and no harm would be being done to anyone.

P: It sounds too good to be true.

T: I understand that it's hard for you to believe things could be different. Why not keep talking and see what happens over time? If I do anything that doesn't feel right or fair, I want you to let me know.

P: But how do I know you are not tricking me?

T: That's a problem, isn't it? You aren't sure how to know the differences between words you can trust and words that are tricks.

P: I've been tricked a lot in my life and I swore that would never happen again.

T: Can we talk about that sometime—the deception you're referring to?

P: Maybe.

T: *[Playfully]* Since it's getting toward the last part of the session, let me ask you to think about it and get back to me on it, okay?

We both laugh at the same time and the atmosphere in the room shifts dramatically from an adversarial dynamic to alliance.

T: Before we begin to wind down this session, can I push you on this question of trust?

P: Okay. You're doing okay today, so go on.

T: What was going on between the Joann part of you and me the other day that made you come out in the first place?

P: Well, she was feeling just a little too comfortable with you and you with her. I thought you were just luring her in for the big kill and she didn't know it; she's so stupid about those things.

T: What was I doing or saying that made you feel that way from behind the scenes?

P: You were acting like you cared when she began talking about the grandfather-in-the-attic stuff. I thought you were trying to get her to open up to you by pretending you were interested and concerned like all the shrinks she had in the hospital who dumped her as soon as she got to be too much for them.

T: So you weren't sure if this was any different and you can't tell if I really care or just pretend to care as part of my job, so you came in to stop a catastrophe before it happened?

P: I guess you could say it that way. Anyway, I'd rather hurt them than have anyone else hurt them again.

T: You didn't want her to be seduced and encouraged by me into opening up and letting down her guard, only to be abandoned by yet another person promising to help?

P: Just don't give me that bullshit about how I do what I do because I really care about her, because like I told you, I don't care about anyone. I don't do what I do out of caring. I'm a survivor.

The alter was now attempting to reconstitute his initial position after softening some.

T: There's is a lot of cynicism and hurt embedded in what you're saying. Obviously a lot of the hurt, betrayal, fear, and rage about the past is coming into our relationship and we have to find a way to talk this through.

P: You can talk it through with other ones who like to talk. Me, I just keep them in line.

T: That's some pretty intense guard duty; you're always on alert aren't you?

P: That's my strength. Don't make me give it up.

I stress that except for our basic working contract prohibiting violence, sexuality, and confidentiality, no one in this relationship was going to make anyone or any part of anyone do anything against his or her will.

P: I'll consider that you mean what you say.

T: That also means I won't react well to you or any part of you threatening me or other parts of the self either.

[Then, taking a leap] Did you ever threaten your other therapists?

P: There've been lots of other therapists. And yes, I've probably done things to make a few of them feel uncomfortable and see how they reacted, but a lot of them pretended everything was okay even though I could see they were scared and then they found a way to get rid of me. At least you're telling me some of what you think and not pretending everything is okay.

T: On the one hand you're saying you value honesty, but on the other you like to test people without their knowing about it. I have some idea why you do that, but it can be confusing to be on the other end of it at times. It's even possible that you've had a role in the breakdown of some of those therapy relationships.

P: Okay, you're probably right about some of that, but don't tell me you don't know that a lot of those people in mental health just bullshit the patients all the time. Especially the ones they're scared of.

T: I won't deny that there's truth to some of what you are saying, but I think we need to put all the pieces together in one place to understand everything that's happened with you and the previous treatments to clear a path for some kind of different experience with me if that's still possible.

P: *[Sounding actually caring for the first time]* I don't think they can handle another therapy not working out.

T: I understand that could be devastating at this point and make everyone feel like giving up. One thing is for sure; it is hard for you to tell whether someone is or is not really there with you or for you, and whether someone is trying to hurt you, help you, trick you, or deceive you. That's a kind of "not knowing" we'll be exploring together for a while.

P: You mean you aren't going to try and convince me that you really care and that you really mean what you say and are totally trustworthy? The others always did.

T: With all you've been through, how could I do that and be believed? Anyway, I don't think real trust gets built just by what people say. You need to have enough time and experience with someone in order to know where they're coming from, and that's why I was suggesting you come back and talk some more and keep testing me and questioning me. Besides, it seems as if the too-trusting and the not-at-all-trusting parts of you aren't even in communication with each other.

P: It hasn't worked for us to know each other too well.

T: It's not working any longer for you not to know each other.

Just before Joann returns toward the end of the session (amnestic for large parts of the conversation), the alter offers, "And I think it will be okay for you to push me again sometime."

T: Maybe. That's giving a lot on your part. I appreciate your openness. Maybe, if it feels right. It's hard to know what will come up in a given session or what you or Joann or others will need to talk about. But, maybe next time I'll ask your permission to push you first about some things so you could be part of that decision.

P: It'll be a while before she can handle me and what I have to tell her.

T: I can see you don't want her to be overwhelmed, so I want you to consider that these things can happen slowly but consistently, a little bit at a time.

P: But she thinks your talking to me will make you not like her anymore.

T: Maybe we can both help her start to feel safe with angry, hateful feelings. Maybe she can enjoy getting angry, pushing me or you back sometimes, without having to worry about losing me or getting cut or threatened.

P: Maybe. I'm not sure how I'd feel about that.

T: Of course you're not because that would mean you and she would be closer, and you and I, and she and I . . . Some of your walls would be less thick. And there are so many feelings in there.

P: I've never been close to anyone. Just cutting and screwing and drinking and drugging. This is all new to me. Don't think anything is going to change all that fast, okay?

T: Okay. Nothing too much at once or too fast.

P: And don't give up on us either, okay?

When the therapist is enlisted as an ally, not only in processing traumatic experience but in "affect retraining," then therapist and patient will find themselves in the middle of repetitions of what has been experienced in the past and potential repetitions of what did *not* happen (Modell, 1990). The affects that surface in the transference include the re-creation of archaic feelings of love and hatred regarding the self as an object. Because of the compulsion to repeat, to reaffirm a perceived identity, and to engage the therapist in testing assumptions/perceptions, the severely traumatized patient may

> use the therapist's affective responses as a means of defensively re-establishing the false self . . . the hated aspect of the self may be a shell that protects a hidden, beloved sense of self . . . with the unexpressed hope that the therapist in her affective responses will interrupt this repetitive confirmation of archaic affect categories. (p. 69)

Effective treatment of the derailed aggressive and protest responses of severely dissociative individuals is an extremely arduous task, especially in today's litigious climate. As Barach (1999d) points out, many a therapist is so afraid of saying or doing the wrong thing that s/he rapidly falls into the tense and compliant role of the abused child in a disturbed family: when the therapist stays nice to avoid being attacked, or threatened, or sued and the patient stays nice to avoid being abused or threatening his/her attachments to either perpetrator(s) or therapist, then, "nobody trusts anybody and nothing is done" (p. 1).

RESTORATION OF DERAILED AGGRESSION

To sustain a therapeutic ambience that encourages the transformation of dissociated aggression, the therapist must

- Emphasize safety, stabilization, life functioning, and symptom reduction over memory processing, analysis of reenactments, or interpretation of the patient's dynamics.
- Review issues of informed consent on a consistent, intermittent basis so that the patient (and all of the alters) are continuously involved in collaborative decision-making and reflection about the directions and goals of therapy—with full knowledge of the potential risks and benefits involved in various aspects of treatment.
- Face, not avoid, all aspects of the patient's aggression regardless of form, content, or origin—which mandates confronting and negotiating with all intrapsychic and interpersonal threats, intimidation, passive-aggressive behavior, and blackmail. As Bromberg (1996b) states, a psychotherapy may not be successful or complete if the therapist has not gone head-to-head with the patient for a long period of time about a variety of issues; Pizer (1998) likens this butting of heads to a meeting of minds.
- Communicate empathy and respect for all, even the most extreme forms, of dissociated aggression and rage—which means assisting all parts of the patient to apprehend the survival-value of the hostile part-selves as well as the risks of maintaining their dissociation for the patient's future.
- Model diplomacy, mutuality, equality, reciprocity, and respect (including internal and interpersonal variations on "tough love").
- Teach the patient to observe him/herself and not to loathe and disavow what is observed (Wurmser, 1987).
- Confront all destructive uses of the therapy relationship and nonjudgmentally hold the patient accountable and responsible for his/her participation and behaviors.
- Develop an alliance with protector/persecutors based on empathizing with how much the patient as a child needed protection and how much his/her sense of attachment to caretakers/abusers needs to be protected (Howell, 1997).
- Encourage the patient's verbal and fantasy representations of hatred, revenge, and rage instead of concretizations, acting out, or dangerous reenactments, conveying the necessity to explore hurt, angry feelings while affirming that tyrannizing the therapist (or others, or other alters) will not be tolerated.

- Understand (and be able to communicate to the patient about) the complex issues of shame, guilt, and (coerced) identifications with the aggressor that many hostile/perpetrator alters represent.
- Focus on positive, life-enhancing, and creative aspects of the patient's aggression (or its potential).
- Recognize that the extremes of dissociative aggression—suicidality and homicidality—can emanate from any or all of three sources simultaneously: the patient's responses to real or imagined threat; identification with significant others; programmed messages and conditioned behaviors implanted by perpetrators.
- Help the patient discriminate between aggressive and perpetrator alters and self-states cultivated from his/her own ideas, imagination, and coping strategies, and those that have been heavily influenced by thought reform, torture, and training.
- Work through the therapist's fears of his/her own aggression and use of therapeutic leverage or power.
- Be willing to terminate treatment (in a thoughtful, nonretaliatory spirit) when a patient has refused to engage in cooperative management of safety and stabilization issues or when a patient has dangerously violated the boundaries and frame of the therapy. (Patients should be informed of these potential consequences as early in treatment as possible.)
- Emphasize restoration of the patient's sense of free will, sense of agency, and appropriate responsibility (and deflation of omnipotent fantasies of responsibility)—and, specifically, help the patient distinguish between having to do something and choosing to do something. (This theme, simple as it sounds, must be continuously revisited.)
- Focus on the patient's need for elaborate self-empathy, self-love, and self-forgiveness.

This page intentionally left blank

CHAPTER 8

The Destruction and Restoration of Attachment and Critical Thinking

> *Who controls the past controls the future. Who controls the present controls the past. . . . All that was needed was an unending series of victories over your own memory. . . . Reality control, they called it . . . double-think.*
>
> **—George Orwell, *1984***

Attachment and critical thinking are two complex developmental trajectories that get significantly derailed in the inhumane environments where dissociative disorders are cultivated and elaborated. Victims' lifelong struggles to relate to others as well as their ongoing struggles for dominion over their own minds are particularly insidious consequences of chronic trauma.

REWORKING ATTACHMENT

Facilitating shifts from masochistic, self-destructive attachments to mutually respectful, loving, and empowering relationships must be a key emphasis in the treatment of severely traumatized, dissociative patients. All parts of the patient's dissociative self-system, from the most needy to the most disengaged, must enter into dialogues with the therapist about their intense fears, pains, and longings. Yet, due to the disorganized, anxiety-producing, and sadomasochistic attachment experiences that characterize the relational history of most dissociative individuals—and the corresponding expectations and self-fulfilling prophecies that have defined their lives until they started treatment—all aspects of human bonding have become threatening.

Chronic attachment to abusers throughout childhood leads to the phenomenon of *trauma-bonding*, whereby untrustworthy and destructive relationships are normative and innate protective mechanisms for discriminating safety from danger are turned upside down (Herman, 1992; Van der Kolk, 1989). Patients with highly dissociative psychic organizations demonstrate extreme vulnerability to revictimization—Kluft's "sitting duck syndrome"—because they block out danger cues, not by way of ignoring evidence of threat but as a product of activating dissociation to escape it (Waller, Quinton, and Watson, 1995). In turn, chronic reliance on dissociation actually deprives victims of vital access to signals of danger as resources for self-defense.

Survivors of chronic trauma may experience danger as fundamentally unavoidable, and in the absence of healthy aggression for self-protection, they are in fact quite vulnerable in all relationships. Most are "quite susceptible to declarations . . . of love . . . by unsavory types of people. . . . They often cannot tell the difference between the fools' gold of false promises and the real gold of sincere caring" (Howell, 1997, p. 243). Accordingly, all forms of intimacy are suspect for the dissociatively adapted. (And emotional involvement with them can be dangerous for others, including therapists, because of their emotional unavailability, seductiveness, inconsistency, intense neediness, and split-off sadism.)

Since prolonged captivity in abusive situations disrupts all future relationships, the dissociative survivor of chronic trauma will oscillate between intense attachment and terrified withdrawal (Herman, 1992), and approach all relationships as if questions of life and death are at stake. Lacking as s/he does secure, stable internal representations of other people, s/he will assign them roles (rescuer, bystander, perpetrator, etc.) that are subject to sudden and (to the outside observer) inexplicable change. ("There is no room for mistakes. Over time, as most people fail the survivor's exacting tests of trustworthiness, she tends to withdraw. . . . The isolation of the survivor persists even after she is free" [p. 93].)

Psychotherapy represents the proverbial dangerous crossroads where the legacies of old attachments are revealed and reenacted and where new forms of attachment can be negotiated. When significant attachment figures in a patient's early life are also predators, such that his/her very survival has been contingent on dangerous objects, the intrapsychic and interpersonal impact on bonding, trust, and intimacy are devastating. Clinicians can expect not only chronic distrust, intense avoidance, and endless rounds of testing, but also—as aspects of treatment challenge the patient's fundamental attachment to dangerous perpetrators—the upping of an ante that places them at personal and legal risk of reprisals. The reworking of the abnormalities of dissociative attachment mandates that the therapist believe and communicate

> how the individual is made and held within relationship, how there can be no such thing as an individual outside of relationship—that it is relationship (the fact that we are in relation with one another) that makes human endeavor, human individuality as we know it, possible. . . . Attachment, relationship, and the transmission of culture are unique human enterprises; without attachment to other humans, we cannot hope to be human let alone individual. (Orbach, 1999, p. 81)

ESSENTIAL ATTACHMENT

Bowlby (1969) presents evidence that human infants are hardwired for attachment in the service of survival. Since attachment is not optional if survival is to be achieved, children become powerfully attached to whatever is available, for better and for worse (Main, 1995). The primary attachment process also plays a major role in forming character and in determining (and limiting) interpersonal repertoire; further, underlying attachment styles appear to organize emotional and behavioral responses (Bowlby, 1982; Main, Kaplan, and Cassidy, 1985; Stern, 1985).

Bowlby's attachment theory emphasizes the creation of an internal working model of relationships that guides people to re-create their original attachments throughout their lifetime; the more an individual replicates the old patterns of attachment, the more convinced s/he becomes of the viability of his/her relationship models. In order for severely dissociative individuals to maintain their old models, however, they must systematically misperceive discrepant aspects of their current reality; they must also continue to ignore evidence of, and continue to forget, their abuse and exploitation, and they must drive away (or keep testing) those who might support their individuation and emancipation from destructive patterns of relationship.

Since the abused child has no choice but to turn to the tormenting caretaker for soothing, protection, and assistance, Freyd (1996) suggests that s/he may need to stifle the ability to detect betrayal for the greater goal of survival. Not only is the (evolutionarily) adaptive mechanism of dissociation a defense against overwhelming trauma, overstimulation, and horrifying affects and events, but also it is a prime technique for maintaining attachments in the most brutal, inconsistent, and absurd situations. The dependent child protects (or minimizes harm to) him/herself both in fantasy and reality by separating out any thoughts, feelings, and memories that might disrupt idealization of the adults (Shengold, 1989) or provoke inner conflict or trigger more abusive attacks. In other words, s/he must sacrifice aspects of the self associated with perception of the malevolence of the caretakers. Freyd (1996) calls this *betrayal blindness*: the abused child maintains the relationship on which s/he is dependent by blocking awareness of feelings or information that reveal(s) betrayal.

As abusive caretakers persist in ignoring a victim's needs, the victim learns to be ashamed of those needs and the attendant perceptions and reactions. In some cases, they are literally beaten out of the child; many perpetrators physically force victims to stop crying (stop feeling), stop escaping, and stop resisting (stop thinking their own thoughts). In situations where a child is exploited and his/her anger and hurt are not recognized, the ability to sustain attachment will come to depend on the dissociative compartmentalization of aggression (Howell, 1997), and when it does, the child begins unconsciously to identify his/her own aggressive feelings and responses as the real (and perhaps only) threat. For the adult survivor of childhood abuse, the reemergence of normal needs and perceptions in other intimate relationships (including therapy) is blocked by intense shame (Benjamin, 1988), fear, or dread, curtailing any investigative curiosity s/he might have had.

An intense and perverse dependency evolves as victims become more isolated from people other than their perpetrators and as they come to depend, therefore, on the perpetrators for information, emotional sustenance, and in some cases physical and basic bodily needs (Herman, 1992). With increasing fear, victims bond even more powerfully to perpetrators, who understand the importance of destroying all old attachments. Isolation from them is not enough; even internal images must be demolished. (The most sadistic abusers tease their victims with temporary contact with a beloved person or object—only to dismember or destroy it before their eyes.)

Still more poignant and bizarre than a victim's eventual view of the world mirroring that of the perpetrator is a victim's quest for the humanity in the captor / tormentor (as per clinical communications in which survivors of sexual abuse report fantasies of healing their abusers / torturers). The counterintuitive form of captor / captive bonding first documented in 1973 as the Stockholm Syndrome (referring to the unexpected behavior of four bank employees held hostage in Sweden) embodies several such essential paradoxes (Graham, 1994). Hostages felt gratitude toward their captors for sparing their lives instead of anger at them for threatening their lives. Hostages remembered the small kindnesses shown them in preference to the larger picture of the captors' indifference to their terror and suffering. Hostages perceived the captors as the good guys and the police as the bad guys and would not have welcomed police-generated opportunities to escape lest the captors be killed in the cross fire. Some of the hostages became sympathetic to the political rhetoric of their captors, refused to testify against them, and variously sought leniency or developed legal defense funds on their behalf.

Investigators of the underlying psychodynamics of the Stockholm Syndrome (Soskis and Ochberg, 1982; Graham, 1994) conclude that *any* individual trapped in a situation involving confinement, isolation, and helplessness or inescapable violence will come to believe in the captor's capacity for kindness. When entrapment is prolonged, victims feel overwhelmed and appease, submit to, cooperate, and even empathize with their oppressors (Symonds, 1982). Soskis and Ochberg (1982) believe that since captors are the source of hope in an otherwise hopeless situation, the psychological adaptation to pleasing them preempts a collapse into futility and despair and activates escape fantasies when actual escape seems impossible.

When the victim believes his / her survival is at stake, s / he begins to determine what will keep the abuser happy and becomes hypervigilant to the abuser's needs, feelings, desires, and perspectives to the point of trying to think like the abuser, taking on his worldview (Graham, 1994). If the conditions of terror are prolonged, Graham says, the victim's entire sense of self comes to be experienced as through the eyes of the abuser:

> They will report how their abusers perceive them. If asked how they feel about something, they will report how their abusers feel about it. If what they are do-

> ing is pointed out to them and they are once again asked these questions, they will answer they do not know. (p. 273)

At one level, all children are hostages to their parents, totally dependent on them for survival, which is threatened by parental abandonment or violence (Graham, 1994). In incestuous, sadistic-abuse, or criminal families or cult systems, children are in fact literal and absolute hostages to their parents (Herman, 1992). DID—almost always cultivated under conditions of prolonged exposure to sadistic abuse and cultlike conditions of isolation, terror, and information control—is the Stockholm Syndrome run amok. The paradoxes of helping-hurting, rooted in traumatic attachments, are replicated in the internal world of pathological multiplicity, especially in the formation of aggressive/protector- or perpetrator-alters, who interfere directly in the establishment of loving attachments while reenacting parental abuses in the apparently contradictory services of self-protection and self-punishment.

For the severely dissociative patient, hurting is helping and actual helping hurts. Clinicians must fully grasp this elemental paradox in order to understand the subjective world of internalized violence, captivity, and torture. The shaming, subordination, and submission to the will of the irrational authorities who once dominated the victim's interpersonal life now completely color his/her intrapsychic life; they hold the fragile self together—by keeping the self divided. The healthy anger that might have supported differentiation from the traumatic attachment is now distorted to strengthen the traumatic bonding, keeping the child—and, later, the mind, body, and soul of the adult victim—psychologically annexed to the perpetrator's primitive narcissistic self-regulatory functions. In the dissociative matrix of elaborate intrapsychic compromise formations, self-sacrifice becomes the only instrument of attachment and the only way of life.

NO PRICE IS TOO HIGH TO PAY

The human need for an emotional bond with another person prevails at whatever cost. If the only available relationship is an abusive (or seductive) one, seeking pain (or seduction) becomes the vehicle for interaction. Children with histories characterized by violence and forced submission "choose" the pain of contact over the pain of rejection and develop strange forms of collaboration with their abusers in their own abuse. Eventually, sadistically abused children become their own perpetrators and remain so even long after they have left home or their abusers have died.

One patient reported giving her mother the iron she was to be burned with. Another remembered signaling her father for sexual abuse by way of controlling at least the timing of the inevitable and quelling her intolerable anticipatory anxiety. Still another patient calls herself evil (as her father did during and after perpetration of emotionally humiliating, physically violent, and sexually abusive actions) whenever she recalls the incidents; some parts of her fractured mind say she must be awful to come up with these ("imaginary") ideas in the first place, while others say she deserved all of the abuses since she was so awful, and yet others—identifying with the father who repeatedly switched from TV evangelist persona to sadistic cult participant—believed that her abuse was justified by his benevolent efforts to cleanse her of evil.

When masochism is framed as an outcome of dissociation (and pain) rather than of volition (and pleasure), its victim-blaming connotations vanish, according to Howell (1997). Failure to understand the double binds of attachment reinforces the entrenched perpetrator-implanted conviction that masochistic behavior shifts responsibility for maltreatment to the victim. In fact, the masochist is not seeking pain or punishment at all; s/he tolerates both in the context of another priority. The desperate need for attachment supersedes even avoidance of pain as a guiding imperative.

Children raised in cults or criminal perpetrator groups and families are often forced to recruit other children by means similar to those used to force them into compliance. They learn to cultivate dissociative states and alternate identities when they are coerced into harming and killing animals and other human beings—often infants and young children.

> The final step in the psychological control of the victim is not completed until she has been forced to violate her own moral principles and to betray her basic human attachments. Psychologically, this is the most destructive of all coercive techniques, for the victim who has succumbed loathes herself. It is at this point, when the victim under duress participates in the sacrifice of others, that she is truly broken. (Herman, 1992, p. 83)

Identifying with abusers' ideologies and motivations not only sustains attachment possibilities, but allows victims to endure excruciating, otherwise intolerable guilt and shame. Dissociating the meaning, cause, and responsibility for the violence and rearranging all of those according to the perpetrator's psychological, political, spiritual, or even forensic needs, the victim becomes inextricably linked with protecting the perpetrator(s) or the family myths, ideologies, and delusions. The trauma bond is such that the perpetrator's agenda becomes the victim's, and the victim may cover more effectively for the abuser than the abuser can for him/herself. The trauma-bonding process is susceptible to manipulation by sophisticated perpetrators, who can, if all else fails, always count on their victims to be assaulted by incredulity, skepticism, and doubt—by them (the perpetrators) and by the culture.

With great shame and hesitation, several patients who were involved in sex-death cults throughout childhood and were forced to engage in ritual murder and dismemberment of infants and children have described their rage at the human sacrifices for not dying fast enough. Rage at perpetrators was unthinkable, having been extinguished as a possibility long before the child-victim was trained to kill. Slow deaths of those being sacrificed caused increased stress, shock, guilt, and horror for the child coerced into homicide—effects confirmed when the perpetrators criticized his/her killing technique, solidifying the child's belief in him/herself as evil, incompetent, or both. The perpetrators also defined the sacrificial victim as an enemy and a source of the suffering of the child-murderer, who thus deserved to die; not surprisingly, the child would come to develop alter personalities with no feelings (other than, perhaps, pride) about killing others.

No individuation is tolerated in the dominating and abusive families and/or perpetrator groups of severely dissociative patients. Any movement toward autonomy is accompanied by powerful anxieties about isolation, terror, and disintegration of self. Differentiation (much less escape) from one's caretaker/abusers would mean loss of ties to internal objects that have provided an enduring sense of belonging and identity—connectedness, albeit mediated by pain and desolation (Mitchell, 1988). Out of a desperate need for rescue and the maintenance of a good object representation, the child must repetitively split off what s/he experiences and must register the parent "delusionally as good" (Shengold, 1989, p. 26). Of course, such a mind-fragmenting operation requires strong and elaborated dissociative defenses, especially when the abuse is chronic.

The self held together by the dissociative tapestry is a very fragile one, so when old forms of attachment and bonding are threatened, extreme annihilation panic and narcissistic rage surface, accompanied paradoxically by numbness, psychic deadness, and compliance. The ensuing patterns of anxious and disorganized attachment, pseudocompliant attachment, sadomasochistic attachment (Barach, 1991), and fervent disattachment alternate in mutually exclusive, associatively unavailable presentations. When and if hope for another way of life emerges, it is met with a startling internal backlash and massive unconscious efforts to restore the primary attachment system. This aspect of treating severely dissociative patients produces enormous stress and particular pain for therapists.

In healthy development and attachment, where the child is constantly discovered and rediscovered in an ongoing process of satisfying recognition, contact with the environment is the source of his/her sense of existence (Winnicott, 1953; 1971). In situations of extreme impingement, however, it is only through withdrawal that an individual can feel allowed to exist: attachment is based not on recognition but on camouflage. To be found is to be humiliated, devoured, or destroyed by the caretakers' consumption-based narcissistic needs; the mere act of self-exposing is fraught with terror and annihilation anxieties.

Not surprisingly, the therapist's search for the patient's self is construed by the patient as a mission of destruction (or seduction), ultimately bringing the therapist into the triple transferential role of seeker-destroyer, seeker-seducer, seeker-betrayer. Simply sharing knowledge about the self/selves with the therapist (especially revelation of organized multiplicity), indeed any intersubjective discourse, can precipitate acute dread as the perceived demand for relinquishment of ties to one's internal objects arouses anxiety, and can even trigger emotional collapse akin to the psychic states that initiated defensive dissociation during and immediately after childhood traumas.

The patient's fear of, and resistance to, being known, so fundamental to the architecture of pathological multiplicity, must therefore be continually acknowledged by the therapist along with the patient's desires to be seen and contacted. Treatment must be informed by awareness of the matrix of interlocking double binds; it must recognize and affirm, and also dialogue with (but not pathologize) so-called resistance in all its myriad manifestations. At the same time, the expert dissociator's propensity for omissions and deletions must be systematically confronted: the subjective experiences of satisfying self-injury, positive identifications with violence, and attachment to totalitarian ideological systems must be understood and articulated from within the frames of reference of the alter(s). This posture stretches the limits of the therapist's empathy.

When a therapist decides to avoid contact with all or certain types of the patient's alter personalities for fear of being harmed or out of the mistaken assumption that s/he might be reinforcing a pathological multiplicity that would otherwise gracefully melt away, s/he conveys the message that s/he does not want to know the patient deeply. That message will be greeted with mixed feelings of relief and betrayal—and the core conflict of MPD/DID that needs to be worked and reworked in the transference/countertransference will be bypassed. The patient's ambivalent wishes to be attached and unattached, to be bonded both in old ways and new, must be attended to without one's being allowed to eclipse the other. If, because of his/her own ideological perspective or because of a personal desire to nurture the patient to health by ignoring the multiplicity, the therapist selectively supports only pieces of the paradoxical wish to be known and to remain hidden, dissociation will be strengthened. But if dissociative barriers are weakened and the patient struggles with his/her increased intimacy and trust with the therapist, a new sense of self can coalesce around this noble pivotal battle.

For traumatized dissociative patients, the psychotherapy process is in a sense an elaborate web of tests of the therapist. The object of the tests is to determine whether or not the therapist will relate in terms of the familiar pathological attachment dynamics mastered in the traumatic situations. For example, DID patients have a knack for regarding their therapists as simultaneously significant and irrelevant, replicating the original traumatic-bonding paradox whereby caretakers alternately disparaged and treated them as special; urgent demands for concrete rescue can coincide with strident disavowal of the therapist's usefulness—paralleling the patient's internal experience of a deeply conflicted and tormented relationship to him/herself and to the abusers of his/her childhood, when the inconsistencies of irrational authority became the focus around which predictive defensive strategies for survival were organized.

Behind the compliant, affable mask of the host personality's apparent accessibility lie layers upon layers of terror, anger, and humiliation-fueled rage resulting from compounded attachment failures. The therapist must recognize and continuously negotiate with the split-off extremes of traumatic compliance and virulent defiance—accepting both, questioning both, and introducing the patient to the notion of holding these voices in one central consciousness. When the patient can sustain the conflict among polarized parts of the self without resorting to remobilizing his/her dissociative defenses, s/he can begin to integrate attachment longings with attachment fears and develop the capacity to tolerate knowledge and feelings about past betrayals.

Relational psychoanalytic and trauma/dissociation theory share the conviction that the needs for safety, emotional contact, and (by fantasied extension) power to heal the disturbed caretaker synergize in the child-victim's mind to create strong unconscious bonds with malevolent perpetrators. From a traditional MPD perspective, the elaboration of separate identities as a means of maintaining attachment to dangerous caretakers is an epiphenomenon of the core dissociation that drives DID—a function, specifically, of the unconditional psychological survival need for someone to love: when there is no one on the outside, the DID child may create someone on the inside; essentially, the drive to attach drives the delusion (Ross, 1997).

Relationalists construe the fulcrum of DID to be an internally maintained and externally perpetuated repetition of power ties to bad objects or malevolent introjects (Fairbairn, 1952); the result is a personality structure whereby the processes of self-fragmentation aimed at retaining ties to bad internal objects operate discontinuously with other self-experience. Psychopathology is a cocoon actively woven of fantasied ties to significant others (Mitchell, 1988); relational patterns are the glue that holds the self together, the loyalties through which the child feels connected, devoted, and motivated to internalize the abuser and because of which s/he will inevitably confound loving bonds with sadistic behavior.

THEA

Thea, a polyfragmented DID patient became so adept at dividing her consciousness in relation to the only attachment figure with whom she could cultivate even an imaginary bond that she construed as entirely separate entities the father who carried her out to his truck late at night for delivery into group-abuse situations—and the father who picked her up after nights of prostitution, pornography, and brutal cult rituals and drove her home.

The latter, the one who "rescued" her from the multiple perpetrators, was her savior. Thea would not, or could not, connect him with the criminal lackey who sold, and sold out, his daughter—or with the father who raped her in the basement or the father who demanded sex in exchange for money for groceries for the other children or the father who just sat for hours staring into space stonefaced and drunk.

Traumatic relational paradigms are perpetuated in other relationships and become the *definition* of the self-in-relationship. As a consequence of the child-victim's chronic enmeshment in double binds—whereby counterintuitive givens abound, like the child's feeling safe only when the perpetrator is nearby (Ross, 1997)—the attachment circuitry is wired along lines that facilitate bonds with perpetrators (or, in psychoanalytic terms, malevolent introjects): nondominating, nonbetraying, and nonhumiliating relationships simply make no sense and bring on great anxiety. Healthier relationships, while longed for on the one hand, are so disruptive to the pseudoequilibrium of the trauma survivor on the other that the patient may repeatedly retreat from contact with the therapist to return symbolically or actually to the bond with the abuser. This can happen hundreds of times before any durable and transformative attachment is established.[1]

The dissociative patient, persuaded that no attachment contract can encompass differentiation, protest, or mutuality, becomes the best friend and collaborator of the perpetrator and his/her own worst enemy. Colluding with hard-won dissociated elaborations of the abuser's illusions has been a learned route to minimizing anxiety, and the contracts (tacit or explicit) between the psyches of victim and perpetrator become the basis—and disavowal of self the price—for other kinds of human contact. Thus, severely dissociative patients, whose capacities for trust are fragile at best, may continually ask the therapist to provide abuse—historically their only source of relational predictability. Perceived abuses, in any form, are experienced at once as intolerable violations and as treasured forms of relatedness (Lyon, 1992). This paradox can entrap patient and therapist alike in endless rounds of actual and fantasied trauma reenactments and double-binding tests of trustworthiness.

As Mitchell (1988) so aptly stated, psychopathology in its infinite variations reflects the unconscious commitment to stasis, to repetition of, and deep loyalty to, what is familiar. What is familiar in DID is layered in complexes of misidentification and dissociated belief systems. Loyalty to omnipotent, sadistic caretakers is a surrogate for self-cohesion; the necessary disruption of the ties to bad objects is exceedingly painful and disorienting for the patient. Therapists must appreciate how creatively grandiosity and idealized self- and object-representations are used to consolidate developmentally essential relationships, and must balance the challenging of patients' illusions with accepting and to some degree participating in them (Mitchell, 1993). Perhaps the most disorganizing experiences for the dissociative patient are facing the fact that s/he has created a whole texture of false-selves, self-deception, and illusion (including even invented memories of benign caretakers) to make life bearable and to avoid relinquishing the patterns that maintain familiar, destructive object relations.

When the narcissistic illusions ("I deserved it, I made it all happen" or "He loved me and that's why he did that to me" or "They're so awful they couldn't help themselves") are finally disrupted, the cement that has held together the whole labyrinthine construction crumbles. What results are apocalyptic anxieties—an immense and frightening sense of confusion, loss, and psychic nausea that often culminates in suicidal or homicidal urges. Only beyond them lies the transformative experience of freedom—freedom to protest and rage, freedom to imagine, freedom to question authority, freedom to trust, freedom to feel all the feelings on the spectrum (hatred to joy), freedom to love self and others.

THEA (CONTINUED)

> When she first realized that her savior was her betrayer, Thea experienced a surge of virulent self-hatred: she was stupid for having needed and hoped for protection from her father and for not having put all the pieces into one single mind at the same time. She was stupid for needing and hoping. That was all there was to it. The father was not guilty of betrayal or criminal action. The patient was guilty and to be debased for hoping and trusting.
>
> But the defense against grief and rage and against grasping the depth of her betrayal waned. A taboo image rose, an idea so long feared that it she could never before let it in. Thea was able to entertain for the first time the fantasy of punching her father in the face. (What made this particularly meaningful was that Thea's father used to punch her in the face whenever he thought her insufficiently compliant.)

Impairments in reality-testing and cognitive-processing abilities may protect traumatic attachments for victims and abusers alike: with the internal abusing parental introject (now the victim him/herself) as well as the actual parent of the adult abuse survivor usually denying, minimizing, or amnestic for the abuse, neither the victim nor the perpetrator wants to relinquish the trauma bond. The therapist, immersed in contradictory representations, can be in a precarious legal position in addition to a frustrating clinical dilemma. A severely dissociative trauma survivor may misrepresent the therapy relationship—out of genuine confusion or in the context of a seduction/betrayal enactment—when communicating with his/her family and thereby ignite retaliatory actions, for example. (In a worst-case scenario, a patient actively involved in a criminal family, cult, a perpetrator group, or a false memory advocacy group may explicitly set up a therapist.) Ultimately, the therapist's job is to assist the patient in holding in one consciousness contradictory ideas and feelings about attachment to primary caretakers/abusers and in tolerating ambiguity and conflict, but not to decide for the patient what his/her reality is or what his/her future relationships with family members should look like.

RECOVERY OF CRITICAL THINKING

We only become what we are by the radical and deep-seated refusal of what others have made of us.

—Jean-Paul Sartre

All forms of sexual, physical, and emotional abuse of children involve the destruction of the child's capacity for critical thinking and psychological reflection. The more intense the abuse, the more extreme the conditions of the victim's captivity, and the more profound the isolation from other sources of attachment and information, the more serious the damage to the essential functions of agency, autonomy, introspection, reflectivity, self-differentiation, and so on, that give rise to, and sustain, what is commonly referred to as free will.

The assaults on the minds and free wills of children by perpetrators occur in a whole variety of forms from subtle and unconscious influence and suggestion to cunning mind manipulations orchestrated to control their lives—all the way to formal brainwashing by means of mind-control technology for the manufacture of a supply of psychic slaves to support criminal, political, and spiritual cults and perpetrator subcultures. It is hard for most of us to accept that while some parents and caretakers pour their hearts and souls into raising and loving their children, others deliberately feed off of children's innocence, use them as psychic dumping grounds, and/or systematically break children's hearts, minds, and spirits—sometimes for the fun of it, sometimes for profit, often to unconsciously perpetuate intergenerational forms of captivity, subjugation, and sacrifice.

Abused and neglected children are easy to manipulate. Their undeveloped sexuality can be easily shaped and perverted to match a perpetrator's appetites and their affectional needs can be completely sexualized; their sense of their own innocence and worth can be completely undermined and corrupted, and their needs for comfort, protection, and attention can be systematically exploited to get them to behave in perverse, destructive, and self-destructive ways. Psychological usurpation can be so thorough that the perpetrator's agenda can be substituted for the child-victim's spontaneous desire, initiative, and worldview with the complete eradication of the child's sense of self and invalidation of his/her sense of reality.

When chronically abused children are coerced into having sex with or harming other children (or animals or other adults) for the entertainment or economic profit of the perpetrators, or into kidnapping (or otherwise seducing) other children into doing so, overwhelming and intolerable shame can dominate every waking moment of their lives. They have to identify with evil in order to maintain their psychological equilibrium. Malevolent authority has succeeded in creating the developmental conditions where inflexible, automatic, and unreflective psychological organizing principles (Stolorow, Brandchaft, and Atwood, 1987) govern everything from the child's inferences and convictions to his/her behaviors and sense of future possibility. Perpetrators' exploitation of shame combined with self-disgust can "destroy self esteem with a ferocity unequaled in human experience" (Nathanson, 1992, p. 463). When a child's sense of self has been totally annihilated to this extent, all forms of mind control are possible.

Most children will work hard without much training and prompting to project that everything in their lives is normal: they devote enormous efforts to covering their confusion, despair, and psychic injuries of immense proportions, so even in our putatively enlightened era most children's torment goes unnoticed. Adult survivors of severe abuse describe how as children they moved among sadistic family systems, criminal cults, public schools, neighbors' houses, and religious institutions without generating the slightest awareness that anything was awry. Adult survivors also consistently report no reaction, much less any investigation whatsoever into possible abuse, from the medical professionals who treated their physical injuries over the years.[2]

> A remarkable characteristic of trauma is the blindness and indifference of "authorities," the purposeful lack of curiosity, the denials of family and relatives. These are the denials of the editors of the communal text. Most atrocities have not begun with the slaughter of the innocents, but with the selective silencing of narrators . . . what makes trauma traumatic is not simply the violation of a person's rights and expectations, as in the violation of a taboo, but the deadly fact that nobody notices, labels, categorizes, talks about it. (Nachmani, 1997, p. 194)

Psychotherapy must become a vehicle for restoring critical thinking. The role of the therapist is to help the patient organize and reorganize experience in less painful and more creative ways—but, as intersubjective theory reminds us, all clinicians must be sensitive to the influence and impact of their own thinking and psychological organization. To the extent that a therapist does not understand the dynamics (or believe in the existence) of mind control/thought reform and of the survivors' accommodations to this particularly insidious element of their trauma, s/he will fail to cocreate the transformative vehicle of liberatory intersubjective discourse for repairing the patient's shattered critical thinking. Toward preventing even inadvertent reinforcement of a mind-control victim's isolation and despair, the goal here is to help clinicians to pursue the ultimate intersubjectivist agenda—creation of a spacious intersection between the unique subjectivities of patient and therapist where the unbelievable, the unfathomable, and the unspeakable can be explored together and known, and can begin to be integrated (Orange et al., 1997).

RON

Extremely charming and high-functioning in a way that obscured his severely dissociative (atypical DID) organization, Ron had been in the mental health system for a number of years prior to beginning therapy with me. He had attained sobriety through 12-step programs and had left a physically abusive relationship with a male lover of almost two decades after completing a Victims of Domestic Violence program. Sexually compulsive and acting out in dangerous ways, he had also been misdiagnosed with bipolar disorder and overmedicated accordingly. His unconscious attachments to perpetrators were thereby sustained and his silence thereby perpetuated.

Analyzing the unusual intensity of his sexualized attachment to me from the beginning of therapy is what led to broadening his awareness of his dissociative process and the emergence of memories of incest. Once Ron was able to recall and face his victimization by his father—who regularly slept with him—and his abuse by multiple perpetrators in an all-male pedophile group, he came off all of his medications and began to reveal the complex traumatic bond whereby fantasies of specialness and exhibitionism substituted for real love and attention.

Ron's father would take him to the perpetrator group and trade him for access to other young boys. Ron eventually disclosed that the men in the group anally penetrated him with a gun following his first serial rape and molestation. No words or threats were necessary to elicit his compliance or guarantee his silence: the gun was sufficient. All thoughts of escape or rescue were dissociated behind layers of fear and intimidation, feelings of deep shame about his complicity, and in the end behind perpetrator-identified self-states cultivated to defend against guilt at harming animals and having sex with other children on command.

During the middle phase of treatment when elements of his malignant attachment were being exposed and deconstructed, Ron spontaneously remembered what he called his father's tacit "ten commandments":

1. You will never be strong.
2. You will excel but you will never enjoy your success.
3. You will give without receiving.
4. You will not resist.
5. I own you.
6. You exist to please me.
7. There's not enough to go around and you lose.
8. You will never love or be loved.
9. You must give sex on demand.
10. Betrayal equals death.

Ron's articulation of these injunctions and other aspects of group and paternal programming allowed him to develop a firm protest response and to begin differentiating himself from the traumatic bonding matrix.

Ron was soon able to establish the first mutuality-based, loving, intimate romantic partnership of his life.

THE DISSOCIATION OF MEANING

All persistent child sexual abuse involves boundary violations, coerced compliance, and disruptions in the victim's relationship to his/herself—all damaging the child's delicate but emerging capacity for intentionality, self-reflection, and free will. Chronic sexual abuse also creates changes in consciousness and in the victim's identity and invents pseudo-identities (that may or may not evolve into alter personalities) based on self-betrayal, shame, and identification with the perpetrator as well as on the silence of the colluding family and social system.

When the family or subculture is extremely sadistic, cultlike, and/or part of a criminal organization, the power of meta-communications (Bateson, 1972) to silence and to shape personality and behavior will eventually have effects as powerful as torture. The natural automaticity of being—the knee-jerk, nonconscious links between our goals and our perceptions, evaluations, and self-regulating activities that function to make us behave in consistent ways and effectively pursue our objectives (Bargh and Chartrand, 1999)—can be corrupted in environments where volition is systematically undermined.

Patterns characteristic of incestuous family systems make them crucibles for the isolation, confusion, and dependence on mythology that set the stage for subversion of the minds of the child-victims. They feature closed-group, cultlike dynamics, being socially separate, unusually enmeshed, resistant to change, and dominated by authoritarian leadership; their communication style is distinguished by secretiveness, inconsistent or unclear messages, infrequent discussion of feelings, little attentive listening, and lack of conflict resolution skills (Trepper et al., 1996). Other indices of dysfunction include minimal nurturing activities, lack of healthy attachment, and a large role for substance abuse as a precipitant for episodes of abuse.

The relationship between autobiographical memory and sense of self is a dynamic, interactive process. Language serves to organize what to remember, and how it will be remembered and for how long. Dissociative experience, which reorganizes self-structure after massive upheaval and annihilation anxieties, adds, deletes, compartmentalizes, and distorts aspects of the original traumatic events. Since severe dissociative conditions are created through the double-bind process, the language of multiple personality is a language of contradictions that can never be spoken (Rivera, 1996): "Your father loves you; your father rapes you; your father never touched you, and if you say or even think he did, he will hurt you again harder until you learn that he never hurt you" (p. 60).

Children in particular are profoundly influenced in thought, action, and reflections about events by both direct and indirect pressure from authority figures. Waites (1997) describes the many ways in which, throughout a lifetime, external or internalized authority figures serve gatekeeping, reminding, or censoring functions. Extremely powerful others, when they are excessively rigid and absolute, may govern all narratives that shape memory in a child's life; they may also implicitly and explicitly forbid questioning and impair critical thinking. Definitions of reality by perpetrators and collaborators imposed on a child's natural strivings to make sense out of abusive incidents and their aftermath can disrupt healthy observing ego and critical-thinking capacities.

When people in power provide misleading or false explanations about traumatic events, they not only reinforce denial but also supply alternative narratives to define the victim and the victim's relationship to the world (Waites, 1997). Variously by silencing protests, labeling actual experiences as dreams or fantasies, orchestrating elaborate cover stories, dismissing accusations as products of wild imaginations, or insisting that the victims are guilty and will be punished for disclosing anything to anyone, perpetrators manipulate malleable posttraumatic psyches and the dependency of the children they abuse, encouraging the rapid internalization of false beliefs that will reliably regulate victims' identities and camouflage the perpetrators' crimes. The victims' compulsive self-doubting, confusion, and recantation patterns support the impression that they are not competent sources of information; both publicly and internally, they compare unfavorably to the confident attitudes of the perpetrators.

Increasing the complexity of the memory-suggestibility issue is the fact that reality and fantasy interact. An individual's encoding of external events as well as his/her reactions to them can be seriously distorted by the need to substitute acceptable self/other representations and less threatening narratives for unacceptable impulses and disturbing experiences; one result will be the quashing or editing of truthful reports (Waites, 1997). More benign or bizarre narratives may be created, their coherence dependent on the non-conscious incorporation of inferences to fill in blanks in an effort to make sense of or adapt or transcend painful aspects of reality. In some cases the details of a memory are inaccurate but the gist of the story or event is correct; in others the details may be quite right but the overall interpretation skewed (Siegel, 1997). And once the capacity for fantasy construction has been developed, false assumptions are integrated into the fantasies ("Things like that don't happen here," "Adults are always trustworthy," "I am worthless," "I deserve punishment," etc.), and the fantasies become integrated into memories (Waites, 1997).

The beneficial dimension of suggestibility is the opportunity to internalize the messages and belief systems of trusted authorities under optimal conditions. This salutary process can lead to learning when and how to ask for help and how to detect candor or deception in others. However, in situations where hierarchy is valued (and/or eroticized) over equality, the development of the critical thinking faculties necessary for evaluating the influence of other people will be inhibited by toxic interpersonal and cultural (power) arrangements. Further complications derive from the fact that victimized children may have only limited tools for analyzing and limited repertoires for categorizing their own experience.

Vulnerability to undesirable suggestion and an overreliance on external authority as arbiter of truth and reality are consequences of a reduced capacity for critical analysis, and they culminate in excessive self-censorship, overcompliance, and failures to discriminate between appropriate and inappropriate demands. As Waites (1997) points out, "Instituting the self as a distinct authority who can override other authorities is a complex aspect of individuation that is typically not fully achieved until adulthood and, in some individuals, never achieved at all" (p. 81). When psychotherapy fulfills its mandate to support the individuation process, the patient's emerging capacities for critical thinking may coincide with access to previously unavailable knowledge about traumatic personal history—both in its details and in its meanings. When psychotherapy betrays its essential functions, however, it can suppress the patient's autonomy and critical thinking and train the patient to lean on the therapist's power and perspective (and/or reinforce the patient's false self adaptations and submission to familial, societal, and/or perpetrator group belief systems, cover ups, and denial).

A double injury is inflicted on the child's fragmenting self at the moments of chaos and self-disintegration when the hunger to make sense out of experience, to stave off annihilation anxiety, is most desperate (Schwartz, 1994). The victim's matrix of meaning, order, and predictability is shattered—and, ironically, it is to the victimizer's worldviews and definitions of self that the victim will adhere. Internalizing the offender's cognitive distortions by buying into responsibility for what s/he did, what s/he did not do, and what s/he could not and did not know how to do is actually a way of preserving some hope of controlling the abuse—an investment in the prospect that if the victim caused it, s/he can prevent its recurrence (Salter, 1995).

"Trauma echoes" (Rasmussen, Burton, and Christopherson, 1992, p. 43) are the perpetrator messages that continue to resonate beyond the period of the abuse—messages that the victim adopts as his/her own beliefs. Binding victim and perpetrator in a sadomasochistic attachment and also to a distorted worldview,[3] these are the most likely of all the disturbing, insidious, and far-reaching effects of trauma to lead to despair and self-destructive behavior. The enduring residue of dissociation is such that the *meaning* of traumatic events for which patients finally retrieve memories, details, and fantasies continues to elude them. Thus, individuals surrounded by the intentional cruelty of malevolent caretakers throughout their lives may be unable to feel, name, and react to it, even as they project the malevolence onto innocent others in their worlds. Basch (1983) refers in this connection to "alterations . . . that prevent the union of affect with perception" (p. 137).

ALEC

> Alec, who indeed separated perceptions from affects was entirely without access to the inconsistencies in his memory and their stunning implications. His parents had drugged, raped, and handed him over to strangers involved in organized criminal activities—but they also programmed him during hypnotic daytime "training conversations" to invalidate his experience of reality ("You're a good boy, you know what to remember and what not to remember," or "We're your parents and you know we would never do anything to hurt you").
>
> Plied with cognitions that destroyed his critical thinking and his curiosity about himself and his own history, this Ivy League graduate fluent in Holocaust literature and leftist politics developed alter personalities that maintained that people who are parents could never do awful things to their children. So simplistic and magical an equation of family and benevolence from a sophisticated, highly educated, and politically astute man is emblematic of the construct Basch (1983) labels "disavowal of meaning" (p. 137).

In keeping with the foregoing, dissociative patients frequently remain more resistant to relinquishing their trauma-based belief systems than to reexperiencing traumatic affects and imagery. That is, long after recalling gruesome details and confronting some of the previously dissociated mind-body pain attendant on childhood abuse, a survivor may feel incapable of separating from tenacious attachment to systems of meaning that transpose a hurt self into a bad self, a helpless and victimized self into a willful and powerful agent of harm. The shocking absence of any anger at the perpetrators is entrenched and stays intact, as though prolonged immersion in sadistic abuse and extreme trauma bonding have almost completely reversed the self-protection system of the survivor.

"BRAINWASHING" AND MIND CONTROL

The shaping of captives' thought patterns and belief systems—called "brainwashing" in reference to the Chinese indoctrination techniques discovered in the 1950s—leads to some of the most pervasive and devastating sequelae of child abuse. As documented by a CIA and Air Force sociologist (Biderman, 1957), the coercive techniques for eliciting individual compliance resemble those used in Ewan Cameron's more recent CIA-sponsored research on mind control (Weinstein, 1990; Bowart, 1994). The basic methods for developing dependency on, and obedience to, the captors have been generally accessible for at least the past forty or forty-five years, and they are the same ones described by people who have been indoctrinated into mainstream cults or underground criminal cults, including satanic groups.

- isolation;
- monopolization of perception (sensory deprivation);
- induced debilitation and exhaustion;
- threats (to self and family, of endless isolation, etc.);
- occasional indulgences;
- demonstrations of omniscience or omnipotence (complete knowledge of victims' activities, control over their fates);
- degradation (reinforced helplessness, lack of privacy, insults, taunts, imposition of incontinence, disregard for human dignity);
- enforcement of trivial demands (obedience to detailed rules governing all aspects of daily living, even simple and menial).

Long before *The Manchurian Candidate*—Richard Condon's 1958 novel of an American army sergeant captured during the Korean War and hypno-programmed to murder on cue—brought mind control to the attention of the American public, the psychological techniques it describes had been used by various groups as the "blueprint for the creation of an army of hypno-programmed zombies" (Bowart, 1994), many of whom were assassins prepared to kill on cue; others were informers, hypnotized to remember minute details of events and conversations; some were couriers, carrying illegal messages outside the chain of command, their secrets securely hidden behind posthypnotic blocks. In all cases, posthypnotic amnesias were installed to ensure the disappearance of secrets from the minds of those who "no longer had the need to know" (Marks, 1979; Bowart, 1994). The essential goal of mind-control programming is the creation of a population of subconsciously programmed individuals, motivated without their knowledge and against their wills to perform in ways in which they would not otherwise perform. Bowart claims that, although forms of brainwashing and mind control have existed for centuries, complete control of the human mind was only managed in the late 1940s by the U.S. government through the use of pain- and trauma-based classical conditioning paradigms.[4]

Many political, religious, military/paramilitary, and cult groups deliberately program ideas and beliefs into their victims during overwhelmingly painful torture sessions, or during periods of shock, and/or following periods of sensory isolation and incited terror.

ALEC (CONTINUED)

After a period of sensory deprivation and confusion, Alec was forced to witness a gruesome infant sacrifice that he was told was conducted for his benefit—that the sacrificial victim was chosen to die while he was chosen to live; because he was to be forever indebted for his life, his loyalty to his perpetrators was impenetrable for many years. The dissociative split in his personality thus orchestrated became the basis for elaborate assassin training involving myriad obedient, perpetrator-identified, cult-alters, who were specifically instructed to distrust all therapists and law enforcement agents, and to deflect or argue against any mention of multiple personality disorder. Over many years in treatment, Alec observed the emergence of a consistent, ego-dystonic type of hatred toward me whenever the subject of child abuse or multiple personality disorder was discussed.

SONJA

While being repeatedly raped and sodomized by a group of men from a satanic/Aryan cult in the basement of a local church, Sonja was told that she was Satan's child whose special position in the cult hierarchy made her worthy of such treatment, and simultaneously that she was a worthless whore who was good for nothing but being excreted upon. (She went on to develop isolated islands of specialness and worthlessness, loyalty to the group, and vehement self-sabotage.) Following other torture sessions, Sonja was repeatedly indoctrinated with beliefs that God hated her and had rejected and abandoned her (how else could such satanic abuse be taking place?), and that whenever she entered a church she would be reminded of her torture and would not hear or remember anything being said during church services. Not surprisingly, Sonja developed a complex set of phobias and traumatic reactions to churches, clergy members, and crucifixes. Reinforced by and intertwined with preexisting and ongoing everyday life experiences like so much other programming, Sonja's embedded beliefs in her abandonment by a benevolent deity were highly resistant to change.

CLARITA

After being removed from a sensory deprivation situation in extrafamilial ritual abuse, Clarita was repeatedly raped and told that her old self died in the "death box" while her new self, an obedient and compliant alter, was being born to serve her masters. This new self was given specific hypnotic instructions to wake up in the middle of the night, go into the kitchen and get a butcher knife, and go up to her parents' bedroom and murder them in their sleep. The perpetrator group had Clarita's cult alter practice with various animals, dolls, and possibly in one case with an infant. The double murder was averted when Clarita's abuse came to her parents' attention just as she was being trained to respond to the hypnotic triggers. For many years in treatment, Clarita remained terrified of her own angry and aggressive feelings, secretly (and unconsciously) fearing that any expression of fury would lead to homicidal behavior.

Automatic responses to the trigger cues embedded in the victim's unconscious mind (activated by strategic words, sounds, phone messages, hand signals, etc., and/or sometimes by a message with encoded information passed along by an unwitting sibling, relative, or friend) can cause switches between personality states and amnesias, and can lead a victim to follow directions to attend a gathering or ritual against his/her will.

ROBYN

> By means of commands implanted during and after torture sessions when she was in robotic self-states of whose existence she had little or no awareness for most of her life, Robyn had been hypnotically trained to open her front door when she heard a specific sequence of footsteps. She often let cult contacts right in through her front door only to be transported to rituals where she was retraumatized and reprogrammed. Some of this took place while Robyn was in her first stages of contact with the mental health system. At that time, and prior to her being correctly diagnosed with DID, she was almost completely dysfunctional and unable to communicate about most of her experiences. When she tried to tell her psychiatrist and the staff at the mental health center about people entering her home at night and her agitation about footsteps, they told her she was paranoid and administered antipsychotic medications. Because her perpetrator group knew that Robyn was in treatment during that period, they initiated intense supplementary silencing programming. Caught between two destructive subcultures, Robyn ingested massive quantities of Valium and gin and repeatedly attempted suicide.

Most survivors report that while the torture is going on they are given specific instructions on how to behave outside the group, whom to associate with and whom to avoid, and of course the consequences for talking about the abuse or group subculture. Inevitably, programming in these cult contexts indoctrinates into children beliefs in their superiority over others, isolating them from identification with healthy human beings (Smith, 1993), and bonding them by means of the perverse sense of specialness that is the only allowable form of recognition—and the pride of membership in the elite group that is the only allowable form of belonging.

Although many people find the ideas of brainwashing, mind control, or posthypnotic suggestion hard to believe, theories and research on the physiology of psychological trauma, extreme stress, and state-dependent learning (Elin, 1995; Van der Kolk, 1987b; 1995; Rossi, 1986; Rossi and Cheek, 1988; Krystal et al., 1996), the processing of dissociation in response to trauma (Foa and Hearst-Ikeda, 1996) as well as the literature on hypnosis (Nemiah, 1985; Whalen and Nash, 1996) suggest that information offered during and after torture may be encoded at deep psychobiological levels, sequestered from mainstream consciousness. Such information may then become state-dependent to specific psychophysiological stimuli and/or triggers; memory and learning may become apparently dissociated or lost (or retrieved) when there is a shift between states (i.e., alter personalities).

Foa and Kozak (1986) note that pathological fear structures, including the unrealistic elements that may become associated with states of absorption and heightened arousal often attendant on extreme stress, are *extremely resistant to modification*. Hence, the power of all statements made during and immediately after abusive episodes while the victim is in an altered state will be enhanced by the absence of an operative critical consciousness (Conway, 1994) and by the indelible connection with intense fear, intolerable anxiety, or mind-shattering dread. Psychologically sophisticated abusers who have mastered the methods of mind control know how to induce state changes, how to elaborate and encapsulate them, how to provide the cues to trigger them, how to tap into and alter the victim's motivational and belief systems, and how to layer amnesias within a personality so that a polyfragmented DID individual can appear to lead the life of a normal hardworking citizen, yet can function undetected (by himself or by others) as a mind-controlled operative or marionette-operative and remain available for service to malevolent individuals or groups.

The motivations behind the extremes and excesses of perpetrators who use mind control may be

- *psychological*, and include sadism, psychosis, paranoid fantasies, reenactment, tension reduction, primitive envy, omnipotence, externalization of primitive states of inner torment, and so on.
- *economic*, involving the supply of labor for prostitution, pornography, drug running, arms trafficking, and snuff-film industries, and so on.
- *political*, entailing espionage, sabotage, propaganda, assassinations, indoctrinating ideologies, and so on.
- *forensic*, aimed at silencing victims, protecting secrets, evading detection, confusing the public and the authorities, blaming victims and other innocent people, and so on.

- *spiritual*, in the forms of hatred of God, hatred of humanity, assault on Creation, destruction of society, mockery of culture à la Charles Manson, defiling innocence, archetypal envy, and so on.

But there is more to understand. The mother of all addictions is the addiction to power, particularly power over others. The axiom that "power corrupts and absolute power corrupts absolutely" is central to apprehending the extremes of human malevolence once power over others appears to the perpetrator(s) to be unlimited. Those who have not been personally exposed to those extremes may be unable fully to appreciate the compelling, corrupting, degenerative spiral of extreme power obsessions. History has shown that once an individual or group becomes inflated with power (Hitler, Idi Amin, Pol Pot, the Duvaliers, Stalin, to name a few), a pattern of extravagant sadism, wanton cruelty, and irrational and ultimately self-destructive binges of exhibitionistic violence leads to eventual explosion or collapse. History has yet to reveal that these same diabolical dynamics are at work outside the context of war and politics—in perpetrator groups inflicting their power on children worldwide in the form of unimaginable abuse.

JENNY

Like other survivors, Jenny reported deliberate assaults on hope and mastery at the hands of particularly sadistic parents and in perpetrator groups whose training program mandated complete breakdown of the personality to facilitate the substitution of their agenda for her own. Jenny's mother's sadism was so extreme that it is difficult to fully understand her motivations to inflict such ongoing torment on her daughter. Although Jenny's mother received money from the pimps and handlers who came to take Jenny to houses of prostitution in the evenings, on weekends, and during school holidays, her own sadism was so unbridled and so twisted that she tortured her daughter in the regular "preparation" process and inflicted ongoing torment the rest of the time. It is impossible to know whether she learned her methods from upper-level perpetrators or came up with them on her own—and impossible to imagine what kind of internal state she herself must have been living in.

Jenny's mother created a cruel game to "purify" her hours before she would be serially raped and sodomized. She purportedly filled three enema bags with water, two of them with household cleansers mixed in. Jenny, four to ten years old during this period, was told to choose the one that would be used to clean her out; if she picked one of the solutions that would burn her insides, it was her decision, her responsibility, and, of course, her fault. While struggling with the effects of the painful enemas, Jenny would be beaten "to help her make the right choice next time." The mother, when handing her over to the men looking like a wreck, would tell them that Jenny had resisted her enemas, for which they would administer extra punishment. It took years for Jenny to realize that the Russian roulette with her intestines was bogus and that her mother had always set it up so that all three bags contained the painful solutions. Jenny's mother was head of the school PTA during some of this time.

Jenny's personality was annihilated, her self-hatred consolidated and intensified. She was completely confused and devoid of any sense of hope, agency, or mastery. The tortures amplified her sense of numbness and isolation, and eventually fostered increased compliance with both mother and perpetrator group. The constant double binds escalated her vulnerability to extreme dissociative adaptations, which were exploited by the group to shape alter identities who could tolerate extreme pain and horror, and participate in destructive activities without any feeling or caring.

CLARITA (CONTINUED)

Like many groups trafficking in child prostitution and pornography, Clarita's perpetrators were also involved in satanic ritual abuse, part of whose programming necessitates a rupture in the child-victim's relationship with a benevolent Divinity. Accordingly, Clarita was told by her handler that she was going to a special place for a surprise (which only a highly dissociative child would believe after multiple rapes and betrayals), and then ordered Clarita into the confessional booth in a Catholic Church where a costumed "priest" (either a child prostitution customer or a member of the pedophile group) was waiting for her. He demanded that she perform oral sex, he raped her, and during the molestation he locked in her view of herself as damaged, evil, dirty, and abandoned by God, saying that she was very good at "this"; that "this" was all she was good for; that God knew she liked "this"; God knew this was what she was good at; that God was coming through him as he was inside of her and that God wanted her to always be like "this" and do things like "this"; and that he was planting God's seeds in her.

After ejaculation, the "priest" pushed Clarita out of the confessional into the waiting arms of her handler, who typically gave her some kind of drug-laced candy or ice cream to induce sleep between the traumatizing events and the posttraumatic programming. (Of course by early adolescence Clarita had a raging eating disorder). On the way home, the handler reinforced and expanded on what the "priest" had begun: God wanted her to do this for other men, God knew what she liked and who she really was, and this was all she was good for; God would reject her, God had raped her, and since God would have nothing to do with her, she belonged to the group who would protect her from God's cruelty.

Clarita remembered that when she awoke later that afternoon in the home of her neighbor/perpetrator he was telling her that she had had a bad dream, that things like that don't happen, could never happen in a church in broad daylight since so many people would be coming in and out.

During this session, the perpetrator had his arm around her as he assured her, "you are still special to me no matter what." He taught her some breathing techniques to suppress the emergence of bad feelings and implanted suggestions about how to manage them. Dissociation training and pain- and affect-management are essential parts of most perpetrator groups' programming methods to increase the victim's dependency on them and enable the victim to cope with the pain they inflict.

When her primary perpetrator grabbed her by the shoulder in the midst of an altered, drugged state, looked her forcefully in the eye and repeated, "I am the only one who can protect you," Clarita concluded that you have to protect your protector and that the man influencing her then was not the same person as the man orchestrating her abuse. She went home to her parents' house later that day feeling awful and condemned but not knowing why, since she had no memory of the events; later, whenever any memories began to surface, a voice in her head would remind her it was only a dream; things like that never really happen.

THE CONTINUUM OF MIND CONTROL AND THOUGHT REFORM

In the lives of severely dissociative individuals, attachment to the sources of trauma has taken precedence over self-gratification and self-actualization. This is not surprising since the resources of the traumatized self have been devoted to survival and avoidance of painful feelings and memories, and since some stability has been achieved through identification (including rehearsal of false historical narratives, cover stories, and lies) with the perpetrator's worldview, belief systems, and representations of the victim. Even more disturbing than vulnerability to collaborating in one's own subjugation by establishing traumatic attachments with oppressors is the exploitation of that vulnerability by those oppressors, possessed of the know-how to capitalize on human desperation in the face of stress, chronic shame, and isolation. And more disturbing still is the evidence of persistent denial among mental health professionals that precisely these species of thought reform and mind control are realities to be reckoned with.

From military and paramilitary brainwashing to the criminal and ritual abuse of children in cults and incestuous families, from Stockholm Syndrome situations to television advertising that plays on people's fears and low self-esteem, the mechanisms of thought reform and mind control operate on a continuum whose points include subtle influence, coercive persuasion, traumatic bonding, orchestrated terror, torture, and indoctrination. While in cases of child abuse specifically, the more organized the context, the more central will be the role of explicit programming, the distance on the continuum between the myth making and denial characteristic of the enmeshed, secretive incest family and the systematic tactics of the most "professional" groups is more of degree than of kind. If the former embodies entrenched identification with the aggressor and the absolute collapse of critical thinking, the latter can involve greater dissociation as well as the encapsulation of layered trauma and belief systems in a complex psychic organization that can take years to dismantle.

Salter (1995) likens the thought-reforming process to footprints left by the perpetrator on the victim's heart and mind. She also distinguishes between two types of denial, both of which shape the victim's experience of reality. *Explicit denial* applies where the offender "attempt[s] to groom, persuade, instruct, bribe, and/or threaten" (p. 123) the victim before, during, and/or after the abuse to control the characterization of reality. *Implicit denial* refers to the tacit message conveyed when "rape in the night [is] followed by breakfast with family [members] who act . . . (for different reasons) as though nothing happened. Upon leaving the house, [the victim] face[s] an entire world of implicit denial. Everyone—teachers, friends, coaches—all act . . . as though nothing happened" (p. 123). Different types of abusers leave different footprints on the child-victim's identity, memory, feelings, and worldviews, consistent with their different imperatives—sadism, hunger for power and control, fantasies of the child's arousal, or impulses to participate in evil behavior. Motive notwithstanding, however, abuse always attacks and sometimes suppresses the child-victim's sense of reality, recall, and capacity for critical thinking.

THOUGHT REFORM AND SUBJECTIVE ORGANIZATION

> *Things will happen to you from which you could not recover if you lived a thousand years. Never again will you be capable of ordinary human feeling. Everything will be dead inside you. Never again will you be capable of love, or friendship, or joy of living, or laughter, or curiosity, or courage, or integrity. You will be hollow. We shall squeeze you empty and then we shall fill you with ourselves.*
>
> **—George Orwell (*1984*)**

Linked to the literature on incestuous families, thought reform, cults, and the Stockholm Syndrome, is Brandchaft and Stolorow's (1990) important theoretical statement about the defensive encapsulation of mental life in the service of sustaining primitive object ties to malevolent caregivers. "Developmental traumata derive their lasting significance from the establishment of invariant and relentless principles of organization that remain beyond the accommodative influence of reflective self-awareness or of subsequent experience" (p. 108). Similarly, Stolorow and Atwood (1994), though not addressing incestuous families and organized sex rings, describe the primary developmental motivation of the self to be maintaining the organization of experience by consolidating pathological structures that rigidly restrict the individual's subjective field. These inflexible structures allow traumatized individuals to predictably order their experiences to prevent the emergence of emotional conflict and subjective feelings of danger; in the case of more profound thought reform and pathological attachments to violent perpetrators, the constriction exists to prevent any free thought and feeling that can disrupt the rigid belief system internalized during the prolonged immersion in the abusive relationship and the totalist milieu.

When traumatized individuals develop cohesive psychological structures whose primary goal is to prevent the consolidation of new structures, the thus-enfeebled core self is as trapped intrapsychically as the captive child was in the malevolent caregiving system. So when highly dissociative patients begin in therapy to demonstrate increased self-reflection, observing ego, and critical thinking abilities, powerful internal voices emerge almost immediately to sow profound doubt and confusion, and fears of repeating traumatic childhood experiences plant unconscious defensive resistances to change. The fears arise unpredictably in the transference as the process of therapeutic inquiry illuminates and therefore threatens "the matrix of emotionally enslaving early ties" (Brandchaft, 1994, p. 67).

Recantation of child-abuse claims are easily explained by the tenacity of the entrenched principle of self-organization whose primary feelings and cognitions are in complete compliance with the delusions, cover-ups, omnipotent fantasies, and threats of the perpetrators. The constituent losses of inner cohesion, subjectivity, affectivity, authenticity, agency, temporality, continuity, and self-differentiation are articulated by Orange, Atwood, and Stolorow (1997). The following self-destructive beliefs and invariant organizing principles internalized by the victim accumulate in proportion to the frequency and intensity of abuse, the number of perpetrators, and the degree of organized cult or criminal involvement:

- You deserve punishment and condemnation.
- Resistance is futile.
- There is no escape and no hope, and hoping will cause you more pain.
- You can do nothing to effect any change in the situation.
- No one can hear you scream, no one cares; faith in any person or in God is useless, and continued screaming will elicit more torture.
- No one will believe anything you say, no matter what you tell them.
- Feelings are dangerous; stay away from them or you will be destroyed.

- Weakness and vulnerability are disgusting; they merit punishment, torment, and humiliation.
- You will do and think and say exactly what you are told, but you will think you are doing as you choose.
- Your choices have made all this happen.
- You have and will have no memories but the memories I/we authorize.
- We are always watching you; we know your every thought, feeling, and action.
- You can hate and be angry only at yourself or those we direct you to hate and harm.
- Something is deeply wrong with you and you must constantly hide it from others.
- You must always act normal and fit in as though nothing out of the ordinary has ever happened to you.
- You belong to us; we will protect you.
- Any power or success you have comes from us and belongs to us; should you seek anything on your own you will endlessly self-sabotage until you collapse into utter futility and self-hatred.
- You will die if you tell anyone or if you try to leave us.

THE SYSTEMATIC DESTRUCTION OF CRITICAL THINKING

> First you take a child and confine it in a box. Then you add worms, bugs, and snakes and place a lid on the box. The child will kick and scream in terror. You ignore the child until no noise comes from the box, at which time you remove the top of the box. You then check the muscle tone of the child. If the tone is relaxed, you have caused a dissociated switch, and you can now train this new personality to be who you want and to do what you want. The child will obey without question. (Fraser, 1997, p. 195, paraphrasing the instructions of a patient raised in a Satanic cult)

Once the cult-indoctrinated alter—sometimes given a new name[5] that the perpetrators can use to elicit learned (state-dependent) behaviors—is further separated from the pretrauma self and directed to perform certain acts, its sense of isolation from the rest of the personality (and from humanity) is concretized, and its identification with the group continues in a mindless and robotic pattern.

Singer (1995), defining the tactics used in cult contexts, identifies three staged preconditions for thought control: *destabilization* of the victim's sense of self, *indoctrination* into the leader's re-vision of reality, and *dependency* on the group. (In psychoanalytic language, that paradigm translates as disruption without restitution, faulty or deceptive restitution, and identification with the aggressor.) Hassan (1990) labels the same phases *unfreezing*—by means of drugs, hypnosis, torture, shock, or trauma (which last can be accomplished in children through seduction, shaming, or sexual arousal alone); *change*, commonly registered with the deliberate inculcation in the victim of a special belief, for example (see *Clarita*, below); and *refreezing*.

CLARITA (CONTINUED)

> Molested in a child-care/baby-sitting context for two years beginning at the age of seven along with her little brother, who was then two and a half, Clarita was conditioned to believe that she was sexually excited by death. The perpetrators purported to murder her brother and then (exploiting her rivalry toward him and his favored role in her family), claimed they had done so as a gift to her. After carrying him away (temporarily unconscious), they unleashed a particularly sadistic man on her who raped her brutally. Her "handlers" told her that she enjoyed the sex more this time because it followed her brother's killing—but that they would keep her secret, since she would be publicly humiliated if people found out that she was THAT kind of person.

Nachmani's (1997) basic scenario for eviscerating the capacities for self-witnessing, memory, and narrativity in interpersonal trauma cuts across incestuous families, ritual-abuse cults, and military mind-control programs.

First, victims are isolated, their credibility and judgment are destroyed, and their shame at their own helplessness is exploited along with their humiliating degradation on finding themselves powerless to make any choice other than to collude in their own captivity and subjugation, unwittingly, by identifying with the aggressors. Next, victims are deprived of what they care about, whereupon the abusers create double binds around pain avoidance and their attachment needs to cultivate dependency and engender betrayals of self and others. Then victims are deliberately confused, forced to reassign responsibility and to subscribe to a new worldview, according to which pain is pleasure and pleasure is pain; feelings are bad, numbness is good; vulnerability and resistance are bad, power and compliance are good; keeping secrets is praiseworthy, speaking openly is stupid and dangerous.

CLARITA (CONTINUED)

> Consistent with extremes of abuse that included gang rape and burial in a mortuary chamber along with threats to harm her family or expose her to the authorities and also the intermittent administration of drugs, usually in ice cream or other sweets, Clarita was subjected to extremes of confusion in the form of the "dichotic listening paradigm" dating back to mind-control methods of the 1950s.
>
> Two men on either side of her would simultaneously whisper different messages in her ears. When, for instance, the perpetrators coerced her little brother on top of her naked, one man said, "You must lie with your brother," and the other said, "It's a sin to lie with your brother." And in another set of double binds, when Clarita was forced to have oral sex with several men, she was told at once how specially good she was at and for doing it, and what an awful pig of a child she was for wanting to have sex with all those men—and her little brother. . . .
>
> Years later in therapy, the patient reported that her anxiety became so intense that she felt as though she would agree to do anything they asked just to make the feeling stop. The continuous shifting between self-images of specialness and despicable worthlessness is common practice among perpetrators seeking to "break" a child by fomenting dissociative splits in his/her psyche.

For Feiner (1996), the knowledge taboo—being forbidden to know—underlies mind control, thought reform, and brainwashing of all kinds, independent of the sophistication of the particular technique. Negating that edict wreaks intrapsychic havoc on a dissociative system set up with not knowing as its central organizing principle. (Not knowing contributes also to the susceptibility of abused children to "the inauthentic, the con, or the adulterated" [p. 419].)

When a victim is able to transcend the pseudo-safety of Freyd's (1996) aforementioned *betrayal blindness* and surmount the anxiety involved in breaking the unconscious contract with the perpetrator, s/he can count on him/her to attempt to reinstate the original subjugation by means of a letter, a phone call, a look across a courtroom, a hypnotic preprogrammed trigger word or signal, or a direct threat. If that fails, the perpetrator will switch to debunking the victim's narrative. And if that fails, the perpetrator will reverse cause and effect to make the victim look like the victimizer.

Lifton (1961) notes that thought reform has a self-perpetuating momentum, and indeed patients' accounts confirm that organized mind control is consistently, if unintentionally, reinforced by the family and culture at large. The bizarre creeds of ritual abusers and cults that culminate in counterintuitive self-sacrificing totalism emanate from the same conditions and the same dynamics that apply in incestuous and sadistic family systems. In each context, the group is valorized over the individual, the expression of feelings and the use of language are severely constricted, the power of the leaders/parents is magnified by the failure of the authorities to intervene; outsiders are regarded as worthless, protest is suppressed, autonomy is associated with danger, and escape is portrayed as futile. Most DID patients have been exposed to the extreme end of the continuum—and it is once again, emphatically, a continuum—of totalist environmental conditions.

The combination of brutality and sadistic sexuality with harsh, punitive, and fear-based fundamentalist religious practices that can devastate any child's self-esteem and create constant guilt and shame makes for a not uncommon kind of additional doublespeak. Conformity to conventional dogma by day is perverted by explicitly forbidden abuse by night—sometimes ritualized in satanic ceremonies conducted by the same individuals who conduct socially sanctioned religious services; the perpetrator's use of (pseudo) religious terminology to justify the abuse compounds the child-victim's mystification.

Many patients who have been victims of mind-control cults have reported experiences of good cop/bad cop scenarios in which one perpetrator asks personal questions in an accusatory manner, inflicts pain, and/or makes derogatory statements while another acting friendly, speaks comfortingly. Like the dichotic listening paradigm, this model seems to have the effect of arousing high anxiety and psychological states of terror, eradicating memory for the specifics of the event, and fracturing the psyche in such a way that the perpetrator's messages, beliefs, or directives may be implanted beneath the layers of the victim's conscious awareness. Later in life, such patients experience great panic whenever anyone asks even innocuous personal questions, and they do not understand their intense reactions even to filling out forms.

Several patients who were trained for long-term participation in sex/death cults or criminal groups making snuff films had to undergo various forms of classical and operant conditioning in order for them first to be able to tolerate witnessing animals, children, and adults being tortured, raped, and killed, and then to become sexually aroused by these stimuli. By the time they were responding automatically (against their own inner moral imperatives) to the torture with sexual arousal, their memories of having been conditioned had disappeared from consciousness; they knew only that they were filled with unbearable shame and an inexplicable mix of specialness and awfulness.

The victims' belief in their new identities is reinforced when perpetrators recount their involvement or replay the events on film. One thing is certain in these conditions: the now dissociative child will virulently hate him/herself and not the perpetrator and will become highly invested in covering his/her own tracks, believing s/he is and has always been evil. When a therapist, often later in therapy, uncovers such an elaborate perpetrator-identified dissociative matrix in a patient, s/he is likely to be disparaged, ridiculed, and emotionally (sometimes physically) assaulted in a variety of ways, in an analog to the predictable responses of an exposed perpetrator.

Some patients have described the day-by-day breaking down of their personalities through exposure to impossible ethical or psychological conflicts and double binds. Organized perpetrator groups have learned how to induce antisocial behavior in otherwise moral and ethical individuals by using hypnosis, blackmail, forced choices, threats, coerced participation in perpetration, and other brainwashing techniques. The use of chronic pain, electroshocks (high voltage to hurt and fracture the personality, lower voltage to implant suggestions and shape the emerging self-state), drugs, sleep deprivation, physical exhaustion, incited terror, isolation, and starvation further help break down victims' personalities to make them reliably receptive to programming (Bowart, 1994).

JULIA

Julia was five years old when one of her primary pimps in an organized sex ring threatened that if she did not initiate oral sex her siblings would be spirited into the group's sexual adventures too. When, after much hesitation, she complied, her perpetrators built the case that she had chosen to participate in the sex that was to brutalize her body. They even forced Julia to watch films of her "volitional" sexual activity to lock in her identification with that choice. Of course these same films had another value—on the black market—after they were used to cement her indoctrination. When her perpetrator group later wanted to

> punish a transgression (an imaginary one, in this case, meant more to break her down than to actually punish her) and teach her that she was completely powerless, and to gain complete compliance and submission, they raped her sister in front of her and threatened to do it again if she ever strayed from the group again (which she had not done to begin with).
>
> When Julia's perpetrator/trainer lost his erection he would rage at her for not "doing it right" and then penetrate her with objects that made her desperate for a method—any method—to sustain his and then the paying molesters' erections. The same perpetrator taught this five-year-old that his penis was a person who could read her mind and see what she was doing so that when she was misbehaving his penis would know it, become erect, and have to come find her and rape her. Even late in her therapy, Julia had difficulty comprehending the basic facts of male sexuality; she was nauseated by almost any sexual contact.

Victims report literally being driven out of their conscious minds—losing their free will and their ability to reason and question. One objective of mind control is the victim's conviction that s/he has made the decisions; when personalities are thus strategically subdivided, they can be harnessed by "invisible reins" (Bowart, 1978; 1994). Reworking the attendant assumptions in therapy can be among the most difficult tasks of integration and recovery from chronic trauma.

JENNY (CONTINUED)

> Late in her therapy, Jenny and I stumbled into a major piece of torture and programming related to hope, futility, ambition, and despair. It came about when a series of extended medical complications thwarted her plan to complete her education (one of the by-products of her success in treatment), whereupon Jenny fell into a massive depression unlike anything we had previously encountered.
>
> A defiant, detached, depleted, and deadened set of alter personalities emerged in response to both present concerns and unmetabolized trauma, though how much to which was for a time unclear. The density of Jenny's reactions was threatening a dangerous psychological paralysis such that for the first time in our years together I was feeling like giving up on her. Only when I shared that feeling with her was Jenny's

psychic deadness and our paralysis punctured: the intensity of our discouragement, the depth of our mutual caring, and her gratitude for the honesty and the wake-up call were powerful enough to surface fragments of the story that follows and give us access to programmed beliefs and alter personalities.

Jenny had been incested, tortured, and used extensively in child prostitution, pornography, and ritual abuse before entering first grade—but once she started school, her handlers had to preempt the prospect of her exposing that world/life, wittingly or not. Jenny's extravagantly sadistic mother was a natural ally at coming up with ways to break Jenny's spirit and destroy her soul to condition her to remain a pawn of the group twenty-four hours a day. Aside from outlets for her own sadism, Jenny's mother received money from the group for her efforts and at times participated herself (for money and possibly for her own perverse amusement) in prostitution and pornography. Jenny was, in effect, a major financial support of this extremely poor family.

In Jenny's school, each child had to bring a cigar box filled with crayons, pencils, scissors, a ruler, and other school supplies. Jenny's eagerness to put her "gift box" together was matched by her mother's perverse pleasure in alerting the head of the child-abuse ring to report it, and his response was to rape Jenny anally and vaginally with the precious objects in her special cigar box, tainting them and conditioning an ugly association.

Only a couple of days after that incident, on the eve of the first day of school, Jenny's mother went into a rage, scribbling all over the precious box and systematically ruining the contents. Jenny was horrified the next morning when she opened the box and was so anxious about what the teacher might say that she closed it and, as she remembered in therapy, put her head on her desk and refused to talk as the teacher approached her desk. She gave up fighting the inevitable, took her hand off the box . . . and adamantly denied responsibility for the destruction—whereupon the shocked, angry teacher telephoned Jenny's mother, who beat her on her return home both for her alleged behavior and for "lying" about it.

The school authorities branded her a liar (and she carried that label in school from then on); her perpetrator group, meanwhile, brutalized Jenny for "bringing attention to herself." She was also taught to never draw pictures like the other kids in class, to never follow the teacher's directions to draw objects or people but to ONLY draw scribbles. Reinforcement of these conditioned inhibitions throughout her school life ensured that Jenny would produce no artwork that would cast suspicion on her extra-school life.

While Jenny looked forward to a good start to second grade, having completely "forgotten" the details of this initial incident because of her already fixed dissociation, her mother by then had to make the game more complex. She threatened Jenny with no food or sleep until she actually participated in the destruction, helping to break up each pencil and crayon and make at least a few scribbles of her own on the new, clean cigar box. Now her complicity was assured; this time, if she denied doing the damage when confronted, she would indeed be lying.

By the end of third grade, Jenny dreaded school and had a deep distrust of her own memory. She had come to believe that she had "somehow" destroyed her own school supplies—after all, everyone agreed, her parents, the teachers, the aunt who had paid for them and to whom Jenny was forced to apologize. Her reputation as a liar and as a "hard-to-reach child" preceded her year after year. Meanwhile, Jenny had become so highly dissociative that she often did things she could not remember doing, which added to her overall confusion.

This took place in the late 1950s and early 1960s in a midwestern small town where there were no school psychologists. Jenny remembered hating herself for believing life would or could be different. She hated herself for hoping. She developed alter personalities to defend against hope and to denigrate those who believed in a brighter future. Some forty years later, it was still hard for Jenny to conceive of how much energy her perpetrators had put into abusing her and shaping her mind and belief systems, and also to recognize her mother's role in orchestrating the concentric double binds with the perpetrator group—to make Jenny an expert dissociator and correspondingly excellent performer for the group. Any hopes of escape were systematically shattered.

So much rigorous training had gone into consolidating Jenny's memory-loss programming that whenever, early in her first inpatient hospitalizations, she would begin talking with mental health workers or her psychiatrist about her childhood traumas, she would immediately dissociate, become mute, and lose complete memory for what was going on in the conversation. At times, the entire musculature of her body would freeze and she would enter into dissociative states of paralysis, completely unresponsive to all stimuli. Incorrectly diagnosed, and greeted with rage, frustration, and retaliation by various caretakers, Jenny earned a reputation as a difficult, noncompliant patient. As she eventually explained to me once her dissociative patterns were recognized and correctly diagnosed, she needed someone to help her learn to talk, think, and remember all over again—from scratch.

BASIC FORMS OF ORGANIZED PROGRAMMING

Although not an exhaustive list, the following represent the essential forms of organized programming used in all mind-control situations, and are the foundation upon which all other more complex and sophisticated forms of indoctrination and structuralized dissociation are based.

Memory Loss. This most basic of programming objectives maintains the secrecy of the group, cult, or individual perpetrator, ensuring the ongoing viability of the abusive situation. From the molester of a single child to government-sanctioned operations, all use amnesia techniques (hypnotic suggestions, threats, shaming, drugs, classical conditioning, dissociation training) to erase victims' memories of incidents, names, even faces. (If you ever begin remembering you will . . . fall asleep, immediately think of something else, cut yourself, walk into traffic, etc.) (Related programming may include silencing training, shutdown training, confusion, recantation and false memory training, etc.)

Cover Dialogue. While the purpose here is also the containment of perpetrator identity, the method is not merely obliteration of actual memory, but in fact the implantation of phony memory. In the simple cover-story situation, the child is programmed to recall incidents that never happened and to recount them when asked by outsiders for explanations. (Fresh bruises, for instance might be described as by-products of a fall on the ball field.) In cults, the cover programming is far more complex: children are often trained to dissociate and feign ignorance on hearing such trigger words as "child abuse," "multiple personality," "Satan," "sacrifice," "rape," and "torture"; or the demeanor of abject confusion itself becomes the cover.

At a simple level, many survivors use the repetitive story that they are "crazy," "damaged," or "awful" when any traumatic memories are emerging; the shame of exposing their defective self becomes motivation to guard secrecy while sustaining a plausible (and ego-syntonic) narrative for deflecting further introspection. If anyone gets close enough to become acquainted with the survivor's internal process, these negative self-affirmations will seem part and parcel of a problem in self-esteem and will more than likely be accepted as neurotic symptoms rather than suspected to be the tip of a posttraumatic and brainwashing iceberg.

In other situations, a child is taken to a local pickup point, say in a shopping mall or at a theme park, and used for hours in prostitution, pornography, and rituals and then programmed to tell about his/her day at the cover location when anyone asks where s/he spent the last period of time. (When Jenny was sent away for entire summers the cover story that she spent her summer with her "uncle" in the country was implanted and trained into her mind, and told by all of her family members.)

In long-term abuse, cover-dialogue programming becomes an intricate and well-developed part of the child's identity and world. The programming can be so extensive that nothing of the original child's personality remains and, instead, an outer shell is built that functions in the outer world. This pseudo-identity can eventually become, and indeed is intended to become, more real than the child's personality. With time, the innocence of the original child is stored in a sub-child-alter personality. Like a prisoner who has been kept in isolation for most of his life, this personality often remains autistic and unable to function in any place or setting without the help of its guard: the hostile alter. It is important to note, however, that the innocent alter is a source of hope for successful treatment—evidence that personality integration may in fact be possible.

All of the cover stories can surface as such when retold during therapy: they begin to unravel under scrutiny as factual improbabilities, insufficient detail, and false meanings become clear. The very revelation of ill-fitting pieces may lead to a breakthrough. Often, the cover story emerges simultaneously with other traumatic memories and competes for attention and allegiance within the mind of the patient. Many therapists preferring to believe innocuous stories over trauma memories are seduced by cover dialogue.

Task Programming. Programming children to perform tasks—from stealing money for a parent to delivering messages or drugs on to committing harmful acts including kidnapping, murder, or political assassination—involves some form of abuse to ensure compliance. That is, the victim is repeatedly victimized in whatever specific way that will break him/her to do whatever s/he is asked to do; s/he is eventually rendered not just malleable to the perpetrator but actually a "willing" collaborator. One way this occurs is when a child is forced to choose between being (once again) tortured or torturing someone else. Once the child "chooses" to harm another, s/he becomes ensnared in guilt and shame and "willing" to do what the perpetrator asks.

In other situations, following complete breakdown of the child's personality through electrocution torture, for example, opiates combined with hypnotic commands are given so that pain relief becomes conditional on compliant performance of specific tasks and functions. Medical professionals trained in torture and personality restructuring may monitor the breakdown and reconstruction process through noting optimal levels of arousal, dissociation, breathing, heart rates, various brain waves, and so on, in preparation for conducting inductions and personality shaping. In the most sophisticated child-prostitution rings, victims are trained and conditioned under threat of pain, terror, and death, to discriminate among and fulfill the fantasies of different types of child molesters.

One DID patient explained how she was trained to stalk and lure children to waiting cars with the promise of candy or a toy. By means of films and onsite observation such as at parks, playgrounds, and beaches, she was taught to detect parents who let their children wander or children who seemed lost. She learned how to approach the potential kidnap victim and begin to play with him/her to gain his/her trust. Once in the car, where a perpetrator would immediately drug the kidnapped child, she was to contain him/her on the floor of the backseat until the vehicle arrived at a transfer point. Such training took place with an already broken, highly dissociative, compliant child with a considerable history already in underground activities. She was told that if she did not comply she would end up as one of the "van children," who never went to school, had no records, and had no life outside of the perpetrator group; they were shuttled about in trucks to be repeatedly prostituted, raped, used in pornography, and eventually murdered in a ritual or snuff film.

Suicide Programming. In most cases where an abuse victim has witnessed the victimization of others, or where s/he has been privy to illegal actions of other kinds, suicide is encoded into the child's programming as a mind-control safety net for the perpetrator(s). Lifelong, very specific, and often designed to pass as something else, the suicide program could entail becoming dissociative and walking in front of a moving bus or falling out of a window.

(In cult or governmental/military assassination programming, of course, the individual is programmed to kill himself after killing the assigned subject(s) and in some apocalyptic cult groups the individual is programmed to commit "random acts of violence" prior to self-destruction.)

Many survivors are programmed to cut themselves with razor blades, to drive off the road, or to overdose with drugs and alcohol when they are about to remember and/or reveal the traumas or group secrets. Very urgent, peculiar, and often ego-dystonic thoughts disconnected from major life concerns—an impulse to slash one's wrists, for example, in the middle of washing the dishes—may be exposed as the result of suicide/self-injury programming.

Some survivors have described being cut with knives or razor blades by their perpetrators following rape or torture as a "demonstration" accompanying hypnotic suicide programming. The combination of hypnosis and cutting creates repetitive, powerful state-dependent imitations very difficult to undo even when the survivor becomes aware that the operative thoughts, intentions, and actions are not his/her own. Ritual-abuse victims report implanted commands to enact suicide on birthdays, anniversaries, and special "holidays."

Hostage Programming. Intended to keep the victim bonded to the perpetrator and thereby insulating the group's inner spheres, hostage programming inculcates a false form of loyalty—as when an incesting parent convinces the child (using threats, physical abuse, manipulations, seduction, authoritative/authoritarian influence), that disobedience or disloyalty—or displays of anger or disagreement, indeed any expressions of independent thought, which are part of all children's normal development—would victimize the perpetrator. So a father abusing his son might explain that he has every right to touch and even hurt him, that all adults have the same right, that telling anyone will bring more pain on him and will be tantamount to hurting the whole family.

In its most extreme form, hostage programming becomes a form of total personality removal. That is, the victim is programmed to feel no anger, no thoughts of revenge toward the perpetrator and/or is programmed either to not have the desire to escape or to not even know that escape is a possibility. Normal, healthy self-protective reactions are obliterated; what is left to the victim is only a shell. Systematically taught that all hope is lost, separation from the perpetrator impossible and maybe not even desirable, and that attempts to escape will either cause more torment to the victim or else be futile, the victim will run up against a corresponding block in therapy and will contend, after assembling most of his/her shattered memories, that s/he cannot do anything with them, that s/he will NEVER be able to get away from the perpetrator or the cult. At this intersection with hostage programming, the patient usually becomes highly resistant to the therapist s/he had learned to trust and may want to quit treatment; s/he may become agitated, resentful, depressed, and/or suicidal, entrapped in the conviction there is no exit from the allegiance to which s/he is internally programmed for life.

LINA

> Painful genital torture was administered in conjunction with messages telling Lina that she was being filled with poison and toxins. They would infect anyone she would ever get close to or love (and indeed they affected all her intimate relationships), and her entire life would be a failure regardless of any efforts she made. When repeated therapies that focused on intimacy issues (but did not address trauma or programming) failed to produce the desired results, Lina became increasingly depressed and suicidal, feeling impotent and incompetent to change her life in any significant way. Various forms of learned helplessness had been essential parts of the breakdown and conditioning of her personality—and Lina was also repeatedly hypnotized to have an inexplicable urge to find a razor blade and cut herself whenever she was about to reveal anything about her trauma. The ongoing malignant synergy between the unconscious narratives inculcated during torture and the naturally occurring reenactments of trauma in everyday life created a virtual-reality psychic prison for Lina; many survivors can never escape.

DEPROGRAMMING AND THE RESTORATION OF CRITICAL THINKING

It is virtually impossible to disrupt such programming in therapy without restoring affectivity—having the patient recount and find feelings for the specific traumas that were used to create the dissociative identity splits in the first place. This is extremely difficult and laborious because the abusers usually layer mind-control programming with suicidal and homicidal thought-behavior patterns, encapsulate dissociative states in drugged conditions that block access in the therapy setting, and leave the patient terrified of recalling the points where splits under torture were created. The goal of thought reform, whether in the incest family or in the organized child-abuse group is the same: gaining control over the individual and his/her identity and dissociative states to establish the greatest degree of compliance and the greatest degree of silence. The more complex the actions required of the victim, the more elaborate is the shaping and structuring of the dissociative system.

The goal of therapy where mind control and malignant attachments are concerned is to enable the state-bound commands, beliefs, identifications, and physiological and affective reactions to be accessed, deconditioned (unlearned), and integrated (Conway, 1994). Deprogramming, correcting cognitive errors, breaking trauma bonds, illuminating unconscious organizing principles, reversing brainwashing . . . Brandchaft (1994, p. 57) felicitously calls the process "freeing the spirit from its cell." By whatever name, it presupposes belief in the fundamental priority of individual autonomy—including a subjective sense of agency, critical thinking, and the capacity for protest.

> Whatever new identity she develops in freedom must include the memory of her enslaved self. Her image of her body must include a body that can be controlled and violated. Her image of herself in relation to others must include a person who can lose and be lost to others. And her moral ideals must coexist with the knowledge of the capacity for evil, both within others and within herself. If, under duress, she has betrayed her own principles or has sacrificed other people, she now has to live with the image of herself as an accomplice of the perpetrator, a "broken" person. The result, for most victims, is a contaminated identity. Victims may be preoccupied with shame, self-loathing, and a sense of failure. In the most severe cases, the victim retains the dehumanized identity of a captive who has been reduced to the level of elemental survival: the robot, animal, or vegetable. (Herman, 1992, pp. 93–94)

In order for healing to take place, relationships with oneself and society must be regarded as more important than those with family or any other group, including any religious system and also including the theoretical system of the therapist. The therapist must create an atmosphere of safety so that the patient can choose to begin crossing the amnestic barriers constructed by the perpetrating agent(s) and the colluding social systems. Unless s/he understands and repeatedly contextualizes the patient's unavoidable existential shame over his/her victimization and loss of free will, the working-through process will be stymied and the reciprocally reinforcing protection racket between victim and perpetrator will not be exposed and undermined. The therapist must apprehend and help the patient to apprehend the reversals of trust/distrust and safety/danger produced when perpetrator-manipulated shame is at the root of dissociative identities. The therapist must take the position that feelings must be valued at least as much as thoughts; doctrine and logic must be circumvented by exposing double binds and the explicitly deceptive practices of the captor(s).

Of course, the therapy relationship must be simultaneously exposed to the same scrutiny. Any doubts or fears the patient has about the therapist or the practices must be immediately and sensitively addressed and when possible the patient's perceptions must be validated. Unprocessed injunctions from the perpetrator continue to control the victim-survivor's identity and self-esteem and to some extent his/her behavior until these messages are verbalized and the context of their inculcation recalled (when possible). Beyond the restoration of affectivity—the capacity to sob, to rage, to feel gratitude and to hope, and to tolerate helplessness and despair—the essence of "deprogramming" involves accessing perpetrator-shaped dissociative identities and belief systems and linking their existence to the observing ego capacities of the self as a whole.[6] The cognitive dissonances stimulated in therapy dialogues inevitably lead to great anxiety and turmoil in the survivor which, when navigated ineffectively, may propel him/her into a speedy retreat into the security of the old belief systems regardless of how absurd or destructive the beliefs might be (Brandchaft, 1994). Hence, this reparative discourse must take place in a relationship ambience where the therapist consistently communicates that the individual's free will and free choice are to be respected at all times. Even the freedom to return to his/her abusive original group/family or to sustain a particular belief system must remain an option so that new forms of indoctrination and coerced compliance are not being used to replace the old system.

The attempt at integration of mind-control programming will require that patient (and therapist) face disturbing realities about the existence and nature of evil, raising intense anxiety and unsettling fears about self, security, and the world. Most difficult to confront is the deep shame that surfaces when the patient becomes fully aware that someone has literally stolen his/herself or mind (sometimes subjectively experienced as something s/he has given away, sold out, or "sold to the devil"—or as abandonment by God). The realization that one has been thoroughly and completely deceived and subjugated leaves in its wake a haunting recognition of the self's vulnerability. Survivors of mind control tend to be angrier at the absence of something in themselves, something they imagine should have been there to protect them, than at their families or at society for perpetrating or colluding in child exploitation.

The therapist and patient must not only empathically understand and disrupt cognitive distortions, mutually reflect on the methods and intentions of the captors/perpetrators, and help the survivor understand his/her adaptations to totalism, but also learn to tolerate the ambiguity whereby the therapist is regarded as simultaneously or alternatingly a potential liberator and a new form of captor/perpetrator/torturer. Similarly the therapist will have to tolerate the patient's shifts among moments of self-liberation, threatening and intimidating enactments, and efforts to make the therapist the object of thought reform and mind control.

The treatment of thought reform and traumatic bonding cannot simply take place on the cognitive, didactic, or insight levels, important as they are. Essential for providing the framework of a powerful "new object" or "emotionally corrective experience" are the therapist's consistent disarming of the dissociative self-protective system through empathic resonance and empathic-introspection; authentic and spontaneous use of his/her emotional presence and authenticity; a sense of humor; persistent challenges to automaticity of both patient and therapist's response patterns; use of language that enlivens rather than deadens therapy dialogues; and maintaining a therapeutic posture that welcomes protest, disagreement, and discourse about the patient's experience of the therapist.

Therapists unfamiliar with the dynamics of perpetrators, abusive groups and subcultures, or authoritarian systems may be at a disadvantage in understanding the thinking and relationship patterns of survivors of chronic childhood trauma and DID patients; they may misrecognize the common patterns of impermeability; they may misunderstand the layering phenomenon where self-generated dissociative identities strategically mask the existence of perpetrator-structured dissociative states; they may directly or indirectly disparage (or submit to) the patient. They may become so frustrated at the other end of dialogue with dissociative mind-control victims who do not know they are mind-control victims that the inevitable (and potentially useful) transferential assaults on the therapist's hope, faith, and capacity for critical thinking become unbearable. They may find it difficult to avoid frustration, rage, and the impulse to encourage the patient to restore observing ego functions rapidly when states of mindlessness and robotism emerge in an otherwise responsive and/or intelligent individual. DID patients working through complex mind-control programming, however, need to pass in and out of the states of mindlessness and deadness that occurred as a result of the original trauma and mind control in order to link up all of the previously separated self-states.

To be effective in disrupting thought reform, the therapist must begin relationships and facilitate dialogues with these unfeeling, unreflective parts of the self (including the "cult alters") and help the patient as a whole to own—and to not avoid or disavow in fear of losing the therapist's respect by revealing part-selves who are automatons, prostitutes, couriers, or killers—these mentally impoverished and thoroughly indoctrinated self-states. Many dissociative patients are afraid to think out loud or mention the cues, triggers, trainings, directives, and specifics of their mind-control programs, lest doing so lead to their acting on suicidal or homicidal feelings or to their regressing to mindlessly enacting the structured identities or behavior patterns. They are also afraid the therapist will abandon them after the horrors (and identities) are revealed. It is only by directly facing these fears that a patient and therapist can cocreate an environment of sufficient trust, safety, and shared power to overcome in the patient's mind the real and imagined power of the perpetrators and their coercive influence on the patient's cognitions, affects, and consciousness.

Therapists who treat severely dissociative patients solely with fantasies of restoration and reparenting are forgetting that they have experienced repeated failures of attachment and meaningful, protective, well-boundaried relationships, and that in some cases they suffered explicit torture aimed at altering their core personalities. Avoiding the individual's distrust and rage with reparenting strategies is only a temporary and, in fact, doomed effort. Both overnurturing and overdirection reinforce compliance, eclipse paradoxical experiencing, collapse intersubjectivity, subvert mutuality, and perpetuate embedded sadomasochistic relationship patterns. These therapeutic extremes also foreclose sitting with (and sharing) the patient's dread, despair, and helplessness in the face of extreme human malevolence.

As bad object ties are slowly given up and risks are taken for new kinds of relationships, the cast of characters in the dissociative patient's subjective world changes and the possibility of a new kind of life emerges. The patient will experience both a new sense of connectedness with others and a new sense of aloneness. Critical thinking replaces betrayal blindness, dissociation, and knowledge isolation of all kinds. The fact of human malevolence and evil is faced consciously for the first time because the reality of human benevolence—including someone willing to witness atrocity without turning away—is experienced by the patient, creating the kind of inner strength necessary to hold knowledge of his/her history. Rigid beliefs and thought reform based on viewing the self through the eyes of the perpetrator, the collaborating family members and society, or the misrecognitions of the unenlightened mental health system are replaced by an ability to more accurately detect deception, betrayal, and self-deception in interpersonal affairs, and most of all by an ability to consider multiple perspectives. This includes tolerating the anxiety of not knowing without collapsing into rigid, arrogant, and other defensive postures learned in the perverse context of traumatic captivity.

"Deprogramming" should not be considered something outside of or adjunctive to psychotherapy or psychoanalysis, nor should it be mystified or associated solely with cult-related phenomena. Critical thinking, healthy assertion and agency, and the capacity to belong and relate to others out of choice and not out of desperation or direction are goals of therapy that cut across all modalities. So is establishment of a strong empathic bond and relatively stable trust (i.e., where distrust can be discussed) with a therapist who is seen as both powerful and compassionate. Indeed, the power of a healthy therapeutic relationship is usually underestimated not only by those who abuse and program children, but by the patient him/herself.

Deprogramming then involves deflating omnipotence, restoring affectivity, activating the patient's critical thinking abilities, remembering and systematically analyzing as many of the perpetrator's inculcated messages, identities, behavioral chains, secrets, and values as possible, and cultivating an informed protest response. Grieving, mourning, and some depression will inevitably follow as the dissociative survivor recovers memories of myriad deceptions, betrayals, and manipulations against his/her will. Survivors need an enormous amount of patience from therapists in working through the intense shame that accompanies recognition of mind-control subjugation while taking responsibility (without guilt, blame, or judgment) for the creation of traumatic bonding as a survival solution and for the resulting vulnerability to thought reform, alongside accepting the truth of their helplessness and powerlessness in the authoritarian or abusing system. Ultimately, all patients must be helped to realize that recovery from mind control and separation/individuation from the traumatic matrix is a potent form of self-love and is also the most constructive, permanent form of retaliation against one's abusers.

However, the ultimate transformation of severe dissociative disorders and all traumatically bonded individuals takes place when the mystification of the omnipotent is replaced by a healthy respect and valorization for the more mundane but enormously powerful forces and struggles involved in human love, respect, and mutual regard. More than any technical procedure or therapeutic stance, the enduring power of a passionate and compassionate human bond that survives the vicissitudes of traumatic transference/countertransference enactments and polarizations leads to the disempowerment of the internalized traumatic bonding and to the disarming of mind-control programming. It is a relationship, not a technique, that results in the trauma victim's empowerment as a thinking, feeling, protesting, witnessing, working, remembering agent.

This page intentionally left blank

Part Three

Survival, Transformation, and Transcendence

This page intentionally left blank

CHAPTER 9

Surviving Dissociation, Surviving Destruction: Transcending Secondary Traumatization and Reclaiming Faith

The first rule of therapy is that the therapist must survive the process.
—**Margo Rivera**

One may need to sink a long time into the limits of capacity, into what cannot be done, for bits of movement to begin, for unexpected openings to occur.
—**Michael Eigen**

Psychotherapists find themselves trapped in double binds of inconsistent and contradictory demands and expectations from the culture at large, and from patients, their families, the professions, the legal system, insurance and managed-care companies, and from conflicting personal, theoretical, and political loyalties and attachments. Emotionally embroiled in the suffering of those they treat, therapists sometimes feel like victims to the destructive forces operating within severely dissociative patients' psyches and family systems, and sometimes feel as though they are losing themselves to the clients they serve (Figley, 1995). They sometimes feel impossibly sandwiched between the needs of their traumatized patients and the needs of people in their personal lives, particularly those who do not comprehend the enormous demands of clinical work with severely traumatized people. They sometimes end up feeling like bait for predatory, avaricious lawyers, or like pawns in the burgeoning, dehumanized, mega-business of administerial health care. They may be compelled to take sides in polarized professional controversies against their better judgment or torn apart and more confused than supported by factionalized commentary of the elders of the field. Heartbroken by their patients' accounts of pain and torment, they may also be worried, even shamed, because being heartbroken might be an unprofessional response. In the face of intense object-hunger, greed, selfishness, insensitivity, distrust, and demandingness, subtle and overt, from severely dissociative trauma survivors, therapists can come to feel like units of flesh are being torn from their bodies. Sometimes they wonder about just giving it all up for almost anything else. "[M]any of us who started out hoping to make a difference in the world have ended up hoping simply to make it to the end of the day" (Grosch and Olsen, 1994, p. ix).

FROM THE TRENCHES. . .

A young therapist treating her first MPD case seeks consultation after experiencing generalized anxiety, nightmares, and flashbacks to the patient's grim memories of sadistic sexual abuse and forced dismemberment of animals in the family basement. Her marriage is at risk because of her overinvolvement—which now includes daily extra-session reading of the prolific patient's journal tracking her exponentiating alter personalities as well as nightly phone calls to manage panic attacks and suicidality. Initially fascinated by the disorder and committed to empathize and avoid retraumatization at all costs, the therapist has agreed to a reduced fee for longer and now more frequent sessions. She cannot bring herself to change the status quo lest the patient repeat the accusation that anything less than adherence to the needs and goals the patient asserts makes the therapist no better than another sadistically abusive perpetrator.

An experienced therapist, already struggling with increasingly frequent periods of depression after listening for years to survivors of incest and egregious sadistic violations in childhood, now faces a feeling of overwhelming futility on learning that the police declined to take action against a family he reported for abusing the young cousin of one of his patients. The therapist alternately fantasizes transferring all his trauma cases and quitting clinical practice altogether.

Late one night the husband of a difficult, long-term DID patient with a history of dangerous acting-out calls her therapist to report that she didn't return home after that evening's session. Mindful of the time the year before when the patient had sliced her wrist in the bathroom of his office suite, the therapist rushes back to see if she might have locked herself in there again. She hadn't, so he roams nearby streets looking for her, checking in periodically with the husband, who informs him sometime after midnight that the patient has just sauntered in and said there's nothing for anyone to be so upset about. When confronted by husband and therapist, she complains that she's a victim of unfair questions and undeserved hostility; furthermore, she insists that the therapist's concern about a suicide attempt is his agenda, not hers, and rooted in his unconscious wish to get rid of her. (The year before, after the therapist contacted the husband to go after the patient in response to an actual suicide note, she temporarily dropped out of treatment, enraged that the therapist hadn't cared enough to come and stop her himself.)

After twenty years of clinical experience, several of them treating trauma survivors, a therapist finds herself silenced, unable to respond inquiringly or empathically, let alone identify reenactment themes, when a patient describes in childlike voices alternating between terror and flamboyant eroticism the roles she played in pornographic films. The therapist switches rapidly in and out of skepticism, nausea, numbness, and sexual arousal while listening, feeling out of control and sometimes overcome by drowsiness and the sense that her brain has "turned to cotton candy." Mostly, she cannot collect her thoughts to make coherent interpretations during the clinical hour; when she can, she feels that the patient would be devastated by their content if she were to share them.

About a year after starting to treat a woman suffering from classic posttraumatic stress symptoms including bizarre nightmares of rituals, orgiastic sex, and human sacrifice, a veteran therapist reports finding bloodstains on her office porch, a dead bird in front of her house, and one of her tires flattened five times in a six-month period. She some-

> times felt she was being followed by a car that resembled the patient's, and began to feel haunted by a barrage of strange messages on her answering machine accompanied by lengthy musical passages. Agitated and afraid, the therapist felt guilty for connecting the traumatized patient to this sequence of events. . . . By the time she asked for consultation, she was seriously considering buying a gun.

TRAUMATIC TRANSFERENCE AND COUNTERTRANSFERENCE

Trauma survivors' emotional responses to people in authority have been so deformed by their experiences that they are prone to transference reactions unparalleled in ordinary psychotherapy (Herman, 1992). Shengold (1989) refers to the "galloping transference," Loewenstein (1993) to the "flashback transference," Ogden (1992) to the "tyrannizing transference," and Rosenfeld (1987) to the "lavoratoric transference." The shattered trust and deep-seated expectation of imminent abandonment and betrayal that pervade all of their relationships causes trauma survivors to challenge every aspect of the therapist's identity and integrity as well as the value, dependability, and efficacy of psychotherapy.

Correspondingly, their therapists' experiences stretch the usual notion of countertransference to its philosophical limits, incorporating the phenomena of emotional contagion, covictimization, secondary traumatization, and secondary traumatic stress disorder. In its psychoanalytic evolution, countertransference has emerged from its limited construction as a treatment obstacle and therapeutic contaminant into a resource for therapeutic understanding (Natterson, 1991)—an instrument for gathering data and illuminating ongoing intrapsychic and interpersonal relationships (Boyer, 1979). It has come to embody the totality of the therapist's emotional reactions and to stand for their utility for understanding the patient in ongoing treatment and for formulating interventions (Kernberg, 1976; Searles, 1959; Gorkin, 1987). A heightened interest in the patient-therapist relationship as a forum for the reenactment of past experience (Aron, 1996; Ehrenberg, 1992; Gabbard, 1993) has accompanied the postclassical vision of countertransference.

Immersion in the transference/countertransference matrix when the psychic material of the patient is volatile and harsh places enormous strain on the therapist. To understand and empathically resonate with many posttraumatic psychic orientations, therapists must give up their usual hold on reality in favor of a kind of permeability that disrupts their own personalities when they open up areas they would rather keep dormant (Giovacchini, 1989). Genuine emotional release is essential—the willingness to have some defenses and the safety of the witnessing/observational distance broken down and broken through—so that a traumatized patient who has never been able to make an impact on anyone and fears that s/he would be destructive, seductive, or poisonous, can be encouraged to test new assumptions.

Giovacchini (1989) describes engulfment in the inner life of a disturbed patient as the psychic equivalent of invasion by a "foreign body . . . an unformed psychic amoeba" (p.178). McCann and Pearlman (1990) define the same experience of countertransference as vicarious traumatization—the cumulative transformative effect on the therapist of working with survivors of severe trauma—also construing it as a process rather than an event. The inevitable intimate internal changes, including lasting alterations in their cognitive schemas and representational systems, constitute an occupational hazard whose individual cost, if unaddressed, can metastasize into cynicism and despair: the therapist's inner experience of other people as trustworthy and benevolent may be disrupted, his/her sense of personal safety and power profoundly threatened; the collective cost can be a real risk to the profession.

Treating such a population challenges defenses that may never have been tampered with, forcing the therapist to examine his/her own emotional vulnerability as well as personal and philosophical issues with scrupulous honesty (Rivera, 1996); otherwise, s/he may have to leave the field to rebuild his/her defense system. Putnam (1989) discusses how extended encounters with severely dissociative patients produce feelings of intimidation and ineptitude. Herman (1992) cites the unbearable sense of helplessness that can lead a therapist to assume the role of rescuer. Kinzie and Boehnlein (1993) distinguish the problem of excessive identification with victimized patients and intolerance of patients whose suffering is less extreme; they also mention depression, anger, irritability, hyperarousal, and heightened vulnerability outside the office.

The literature also defines biopsychological effects: powerful visceral reactions like nausea, diarrhea, headaches (McCann and Colletti, 1994), along with disturbed sleep, loss of appetite, increased anxiety, increased fear, hostility, and distrust of others (Youngson, 1994). Davies and Frawley (1994) report feelings of numbness in an extremity, tingly skin, vaginal pain or contractions, dizziness, alterations in perception of one's body size, and disorienting sexual arousal, as well as difficulties in partnerships and family relationships; they go on to say that therapists are besieged by frightening and formless countertransference feelings and experiences far beyond anything their training has prepared them for, and that those psychic and somatic invasions challenge the integrity of their functioning. So even though some of the aspects of secondary traumatization can contribute to an experience-near understanding of the patient's childhood colonization by the perpetrator/caretaker, the impact of the process on the therapist can be so alarming as to actually compromise his/her capacity for empathic immersion.

And then there are the direct attacks on therapists engaged in clinical work with severely dissociative patients. Aside from physical and verbal assaults, their range encompasses: leaving dead animals on the therapist's porch, poisoning or releasing the therapist's pets, vandalizing the therapist's possessions, filing frivolous or malicious lawsuits or mailing letters of complaint to supervisors or ethics boards, making harassing phone calls, bringing guns and knives to the office, seeking information and gossiping about the therapist with others, making damaging or untrue remarks to friends or other patients or to the therapist's friends and family or both, refusing to leave the therapist's office, refusing to pay for treatment (Comstock, 1992); also undressing in the therapist's office, breaking into the therapist's office, stalking the therapist and the therapist's friends and family members, becoming interpersonally or sexually involved with the therapist's professional colleagues and/or relatives (Davies and Frawley, 1994).

Even the most fundamental rules of human relatedness can be broken in clinical work with MPD/DID individuals. Therapists may come to question what seems like an absence of coherent motivation or a "faulty work ethic" (Kluft, 1994c, p. 134) in the highly dissociative, severely traumatized patient population. Kluft describes how DID patients can lead the therapist to feel fooled, misled, and betrayed. Sometimes, when the therapist confronts the patient, Kluft says, the patient often

> responds either by self-attack (designed to propitiate the therapist by forestalling an anticipated attack), by attempts to represent the misrepresentation as essential and even wise in view of some other consideration, by further evasions, by counterattacks on what is perceived as the therapist's attack, or by

> portrayals of himself or herself as so piteous (usually accompanied by a switch to a terrified and/or weeping child alter) that only a sadist would press the confrontation. (p. 134)

Reeling from a bewildering array of reactions provoked by (among other things) reversals run amok, the therapist can find it difficult to remain focused on the therapeutic task.

Davies and Frawley (1994) describe the strain on the therapist from exposure to trauma survivors' entrenched and bizarre forms of reenactment, difficulty with judgment, diminished capacity for reality testing, problems in learning from experience, pathological doubting, confusion about responsibility, blaming the therapist and playing victim, unresolved issues around honesty, integrity, and truthfulness—all of which collide with a therapist's expectations of treatment alliance and a secure therapeutic frame. The result is a sense of entrapment that parallels the patient's torturous core life-experience of a world with no relief, no redemption, and no exit. Eigen (1991), speaking of difficult countertransference pressure, asks if flexible benevolence on the part of someone under attack is possible, suggesting that there may be a limit to how much exposure the therapist can bear.

Russell (1998a) comments that the most powerful source of resistance in psychotherapy is the therapist's resistance to what the patient feels. Describing the essence of transformation and the blocks to it

> We resist feeling ourselves what things were really like for the patient. We tell ourselves we know their history, but it is not possible to do this work without resistance against feeling the pain. And it's no mystery that what we do not want to feel with our patients bears directly on what we resist in ourselves. What we have to ask of ourselves is nothing other than what we hope the treatment process may make possible for the patient, namely that urgencies be used, not in the service of repeating, but as a way of feeling what could not be felt before. (p. 18)

Predictable responses to treating dissociative survivors of severe trauma take shape as behavioral permutations of either denial/withdrawal or overinvolvement/hyperarousal—and they in turn will impact on and interact with the patient's independent dynamics (Wilson and Lindy, 1994). The therapist is at high risk of enacting one or both patterns—that is, of getting rid of the patient directly (terminating or transferring the case, refusing to treat any such cases at all) or indirectly (rejecting the diagnosis, refusing the reality of the patient's experience, shutting down, medicating), or of psychologically adopting the patient (overidentifying, rescuing, reparenting, merging, taking responsibility for the patient's life).

The therapist must understand the need to create the most facilitative relational conditions for the patient's relinquishment of dissociative isolation, and that presupposes understanding the patient's imperative to preserve the illusion that s/he can "stay the same while changing" (Bromberg, 1993, p. 151), can maintain the dissociative structure while surrendering it (Bromberg, 1996a). The therapist must recognize the perceived threat embodied by the goings-on in the transference/countertransference matrix: the patient comes to feel that, by asking that s/he assimilate so much newness, the therapist is destroying his/her world.

A major force in disrupting the patient's dissociative modes of relatedness is the therapist's creative use of self and self-disclosure (both of which remain highly controversial topics within psychoanalysis and across all psychotherapy disciplines). Personal clinical experience with severely dissociative trauma survivors supports Maroda's (1999) recommended emphasis on the (potential) curative effects of the therapist's use of his/her emotional availability and vulnerability with patients (sometimes by sharing aspects of his/her experience) for breaking through stalemates and in facilitating personality transformation. Within a process of mutual emotional engagement between therapist and patient as a vehicle of therapeutic change, Maroda describes how many patients need to feel that they have emotionally impacted the therapist in some significant way and/or that the therapist has given over something in order for the patient to release him/herself into a new relational experience. Maroda notes, however, that some patients who cannot bear to receive any emotional input from the therapist (at all, or just at a given point in time), may need to flee or punish the therapist for violating him/her.

The need of severely dissociative trauma survivors, especially early in the process, to feel they are making an impact on the therapist and the often distorted experience of this impact as evidence of betrayal, seduction, or abuse by the therapist appear simultaneously. Therefore, the process of mutual emotional engagement with severely traumatized individuals can offer contradictory outcomes. A patient may open up or seem to be moved and then cancel sessions or drop out of treatment, or simply move on to other topics acting as if nothing important whatsoever has taken place, failing to integrate the experience within the lived history of the therapy relationship. Or, conversely, a patient may initially block or distort disclosure by the therapist, seeing it as potentially dangerous, and through dialogue, where distrust and ambiguity are tolerated, shift gears into a more emotionally vulnerable state. Sometimes too much of the therapist's aliveness can be threatening and overwhelming for the severely dissociative patient to bear. Sometimes emotional distance is what is needed by both patient and therapist.

It is however essential for the therapist to remain aware of what s/he feels and when s/he has lost connection with feeling altogether. While a therapist's ability to empathize with suffering and loss and create or develop affective bridges to (and within) severely traumatized patients is considered essential to treatment, humility about what we can and cannot feel or know is as important in honoring the level of violation many of these individuals have experienced.

> Some experiences are so scorching, some feelings are so frightening or painful, that, at whatever cost, the patient will know far more about them than we do. They do not need us to know immediately. But they do need us to know that we do not know. (Russell, 1998a, pp. 18–19)

THE THERAPIST'S PSYCHOLOGICAL AND PROFESSIONAL SURVIVAL

Cultural and external professional pressures also impinge. The increasing incursion by managed-care systems has impacted the quality, duration, and economics of long-term treatment. In the current litigious climate therapists work under the potential threat of legal prosecution (Davies, 1997), and there are ever more legal demands on therapists—to monitor patients' suicidality and dangerousness to others as well as the ongoing or potential abuse of children—and ever more legal restrictions on the freedom to work with and take traumatic memories seriously. Patients, their families, or even spouses and friends of patients can and do misrepresent therapists for all kinds of secondary gain including revenge, financial rewards, unification around a common enemy, or simply reenactment of complex group interpersonal betrayal and sacrifice dynamics; being unprepared for how severely traumatized, dissociative people (and their social systems) relate means being unprepared for the battles that may result.

It is unwise for clinicians treating trauma, especially those who believe in raising consciousness about abuse and women's oppression, to lose sight of the fact that every victim is also in some ways a perpetrator—toward him/herself and toward others. Therapists must get beyond the myth of the noble trauma survivor to avoid splitting this core paradox of victim-perpetrator and to hold the tension between the two; they must, without judging or moralizing, come to accept the fundamental power-based nature of relational trauma, which produces enormous identification with the aggressor and huge quantities of unmetabolized, raw destructiveness in personalities with limited and/or shattered capacities to assimilate, process, and sublimate them. Victims of organized child abuse and mind control often have completely split-off centers of agency that operate outside of their own will and conscious control and serve the will and ideology of their perpetrators regardless of whether or not they are still associated with them.

Trauma therapists are positioned between an extremely challenging patient population that exudes toxins and massive social and professional forces that diminish their capacity to heal. For clinicians treating DID and other severe dissociative disorders at this juncture in the history of both psychotherapy and Western society as a whole, there is essentially no secure professional and cultural "holding environment" (Saakvitne, 1995). The therapist must come to know with whom to undertake treatment and with whom doing so would exhaust his/her reserves of energy, goodwill, and tolerance for pain. S/he must know how and when to be aggressive in holding and supporting him/herself in terms of respecting limits, boundaries, and beliefs in what makes therapy effective. S/he must leave behind the polarizing questions from without (e.g., did this trauma happen?) to engage with what Davies (1996a) calls traumatic relationship dynamics, not in a hunt for traumatic memory.

The therapist's survival of the patient's dissociative camouflage and relational espionage depends in part on the therapist's ability to connect with his/her own inner ruthlessness (Pizer, 1998). If a therapist can be coerced, corrupted, intimidated, manipulated, or rendered ineffective by a traumatized patient, then not only is the therapeutic potential foreclosed but also the patient can become terrified and begin to act out (Ehrenberg, 1992); defeating, destroying, or duping the therapist can confirm a patient's worst fears about abandonment, rejection, lack of protection, and his/her own omnipotent destructiveness. In the end, the only movement possible is from the contest for domination (you or me) to mutual survival: either we both sink or we both swim. Surviving the emotional collisions—tolerating the tension, trusting in the process, sustaining faith in not knowing—and being able to reflect together on their meanings will unite the psychotherapy pair, except of course where the need to traumatize the therapist and communicate by means of reenactments is unnegotiable, rendering the patient unavailable for reflection and unable to mobilize the emotional generosity requisite to forming an alliance.

Some patients find trying to harm, deceive, or reject the therapist the only way they can be known and manage their suffering *(I have to hurt and destroy something or someone. It's the only thing that keeps me from losing my mind)*. Interpretation in such cases may be too distant from the operant self-state to bridge the disparate aspects of the severely dissociative patient's personality. Sometimes empathic inquiry into the motivational system of the destructive alter is the most promising route to mutative dialogue. When a personality is organized significantly by dissociation the therapist must be able to "relate to several selves simultaneously while maintaining an authentic dialogue with each" (Bromberg, 1994, p. 534)—to hold concurrent citizenship in several domains of reality "with passports to multiple self-states of the patient" (Bromberg, 1991, p. 410).

With the intersubjective space dominated by duplicity, dissimulation, and selective amnesia, therapists may lose their bearings and begin compulsively to doubt themselves and their competence and come to feel outmaneuvered, manipulated, or betrayed—much as the vulnerable child the patient felt when s/he was at the mercy of cunning perpetrators who assaulted his/her sense of functional integrity along with his/her sense of reality. Chronic, pathological self-doubting by either member of the therapy dyad can be consensually validated in the treatment relationship, fueling ever shifting power dynamics as patient and therapist play the roles of believer, denier, doubter, and revealer.

Davies and Frawley (1994) describe the "game of turnabout" (p. 111) whereby a patient, identifying with the perpetrator, relentlessly attacks the therapist's sense of reality (e.g., denying, distorting, disremembering events and conversations that took place in treatment, fostering confusion and compulsive self-doubting; acknowledging traumatic memories replete with displays of affect and somatic pain followed by recantation then followed by de-recantation, etc.); when the patient does not acknowledge participating in such an enactment, the therapist feels marooned, viscerally ripped-off. The therapist's healthy aggression is required to confront dissociative strategies, however, and to disrupt traumatic fixity and steward mutuality, lest the treatment dissolve into a quagmire of double binds. Too many therapists end up intimidated—afraid their patients will leave treatment, kill themselves, act out against the therapist's property or family, or initiate malicious lawsuits.

At the root of the patient's chicanery, of course, are the evasion of pain, the maintenance of attachment to childhood abusers and malevolent introjects, and the warding off of annihilation anxieties. But since the treatment alliance is built on candor, truth, and identification with the therapist, the patient's relentless reenactments of betrayal and deception assault the therapist's capacity to generate the goodwill and benevolence essential to attaching to the patient altogether. An inexperienced therapist who does not understand the psychic milieu of a severe trauma survivor may feel unnecessarily guilty for mistrusting and resenting the patient; the insidious reversal whereby a beleaguered therapist is essentially persuaded to sacrifice his/her sanity for the hope of a patient's improvement is a predictable MPD/DID power play, however. Most severely dissociative trauma survivors will also unconsciously toy with a therapist's intuitive resources in an effort to insinuate doubt, distrust, and fear where therapists are most used to accessing reliable impressions and information about the world. Dialogues must replace enactments of sabotage in all its forms in order that the therapist's failing voice be restored and the patient's observation of his/her dissociation-driven self-sabotage begin. Psychological terrorism should not be tolerated for long.

The dissociative web redistributes traumatic anxieties, annihilation anxiety, and unbearable meanings to the point of containing that which might otherwise have led to a breakdown or the cultivation of a more psychotic or paranoid delusional system. If the patient's house of cards is exposed as such before enough wherewithal is developed to handle the psychic earthquakes attendant on the deconstruction process, the patient will likely take flight, generate innumerable crises, or find other ways to stalemate the treatment. Yet as the therapist is drawn deeper and deeper into an unreal world of disabling relational patterns, s/he will be seduced to act on the wish or to act on the wish to "cure" the patient of his unrelatedness as quickly as possible (Bromberg, 1995b, p. 177). Retaliating by foisting too much reality on the patient too soon is, in fact, a survival strategy for therapists who feel they are losing their own minds in the swirling and fragmented treatment process.

The DID patient's continuous shifts between revealing and concealing, capacity to sustain plausible denial about everything and anything, chronic forgetfulness, injections of confusion, and proneness to concretization, etc., disorient the therapist and render some of his/her usual regulatory and reality-testing tools unworkable. The ubiquity of reversals, a sense of underlying suspense and urgency, elements of terror and dread, the patient's overreliance on magical thinking, trance logic, and omnipotent fantasies, the frequent blank stares, interpersonal voids, states of psychic emptiness or numbness, the patient's tendency to bargain with unpleasant realities (past and present), the collapse of the utility and meaning of language—all create an interpersonal atmosphere that violates the mind of the therapist.

The countertransferential reluctance to confront the patient for fear of being considered an abuser or of letting him/her down or of seeming unempathic or of driving the patient to leave treatment, have a breakdown, or attempt suicide paralyzes the therapist when s/he needs to pull him/herself and the patient out of the destructive quagmire of relatedness-by-reenactment. By so assiduously trying to avoid recapitulating betrayal, the therapist may unwittingly participate in cocreating the conditions for a painful therapy failure that the patient will construe as betrayal in another form. The patient can be given so much rope that s/he hangs him/herself, the therapist, or both of them.

We as therapists need to acknowledge our limitations to ourselves and our patients, along with the inevitability of some failures. By colluding with patients to believe that we are absolutely devoted, completely tolerant, infinitely patient, and unceasingly generous we are only setting ourselves and our patients up for disappointment. (Personal consultation experience suggests that most therapists who end up transferring or otherwise abandoning their patients have made errors of this kind, often in quite concrete ways.) Placating traumatized patients in a desperate effort to reparent them or escape their unbridled sadism and retaliation (or our own) and/or avoiding confrontation with their many varieties of self- and other-destructive behaviors is not doing them any favor. A therapist treating severe trauma survivors must use his/her own protective aggressive responses early in treatment and set the stage for disrupting all forms of domination, collusion, and exploitation. We do not lose compassion, power, or authority when we negotiate the patient's needs and limits and our own along the way. We are not only thus modeling essential forms of mutuality from the start, but also we are preempting avoidable disasters.

UNDERSTANDING LIMITATIONS

There is no guarantee that the patient, the therapist, the therapy relationship, and as of recently, the institution of psychotherapy will survive the multiple assaults and complex systems of denial, dissociation, and reenactment within the therapy relationship and within the culture. Surviving destruction (Winnicott, 1971) as a central metaphor and practical reality in the treatment of severely dissociative trauma survivors always involves the basics of sustaining transformational space, that is, resisting the lures of withdrawal and/or retaliation (and identifying and often acknowledging their emergence to the patient). Surviving destruction also means tolerating the fallout from the deconstruction and reconstruction processes inherent in both psychological and cultural transformation of trauma. Patient and therapist must be allowed to explore multiple narratives, multiple subjectivities, multiple transference/countertransference paradigms, and multiple meanings in a prolonged and uninterrupted dialogue of mutual respect without interference from outside forces, and the potential/transformational therapy space must be able to survive a historic period when such liberatory psychological and political spaces are fast disappearing, regularly misrepresented, and under systematic attack.

Although the success rate with severely traumatized and dissociative patients has improved in the past two decades with heightened professional awareness, an ever increasing body of research, and revised clinical approaches, the reality is that we cannot successfully treat everyone. As Bloom (1997) points out, sometimes we fail with traumatized patients because the trauma has done overwhelming developmental damage to the physical and psychological systems necessary to engage reparative and recovery processes; sometimes we lack the power or knowledge to reverse this damage. Although many severely dissociative patients do make progress in treatment they remain so vulnerable to stress that their wounds are continually reopened and inflamed whenever they come near situations that are similar in ways to the original traumas. Sometimes we fail to reach many patients or to hold them in treatment long enough for significant change to take place because there are not sufficient economic, social, cultural, or professional resources available. Sometimes therapists fail because a dissociative patient has extensive sociopathic features, ongoing involvement with destructive families or criminal groups, or an impenetrable and spiteful commitment to self-destruction. Sometimes therapists fail because they are not aware or educated enough, not honest and direct enough, not sensitive and empathic enough, not aggressive enough, not cunning enough, or not emotionally available enough.

JOHN

Like many high-functioning DID patients who go to great lengths to mask their pathological multiplicity, John was more invested in sustaining his persona and functionality than in self-knowledge, truth, or depth. But after five years, during which we had to fight to survive an interpersonal field charged with destruction, threat, intimidation, and torture, John broke through his terrors to come face to face with what he called the "abyss" at the core of his being—only to conclude that the consequences of exploring it could be so hazardous that he probably could never "go there." He was too damaged.

Brilliant and cunningly avoidant, terribly afraid of regression, dependency, and healthy forms of human love, John camouflaged his inordinate need to be in control at all times beneath a veil of apparent compliance; he could fill his therapy hours with details of his daily life events that completely obscured any feelings or meanings. He would turn out to be one of the most profoundly fragmented, high-functioning DID patients I would ever meet, and his personality contained some of the most extreme polarizations I have ever seen in one individual—among them, innocence and diabolism, compliance and dominance, permeability and impenetrability, precise recall and recurrent amnesias, lovability and hatefulness, knowing and unknowing, doing and undoing, cleverness and denseness, dependency and refusal to need or be vulnerable, hyper-responsibility and externalization of blame.

Background: John was a 41-year-old gay physician who entered therapy several months after moving to California, where the symptoms for which he had been in traditional psychoanalytic psychotherapy for about ten years did not, as he had hoped, magically disappear. A new acquaintance who had been a patient of mine (though not himself treated for trauma or dissociation and unaware of my specialization in the area) was the source of John's self-referral to address his familiar and mounting "adjustment disorder" problems, which included depression, anxiety, recurrent nightmares from which he awoke screaming so loudly that he roused the neighbors, panic attacks when alone, somatic preoccupations, chronic self-loathing, compulsive high-risk sexual behavior, dependency on marijuana and sometimes also Valium, inability to tolerate conflict with colleagues and peers, sociopathic entanglements, unusual fears of unknown origin triggered by innocuous stimuli, and out-of-the-ordinary concerns about death and dying.

Among the salient memories that emerged before any direct traumatic material was revealed were his diagnosis with anal fissures at age three, his virtual decompensation on seeing *The Exorcist*, and severe anxiety attacks and the press of irrational fears throughout his youth. John had had what he termed a "nervous breakdown" on discovering his first significant lover's infidelities at the end of their relationship, whereupon his parents, to whom he was not at all close at the time, came to live with him (allegedly, since other narratives later emerged) to prevent further collapse. He reported consistently extreme reactions (obsession, fascination, revulsion) to any material having to do with the Holocaust or other gruesome crimes against humanity, but had absolutely no associations to those patterns.

Early Treatment: John said his former therapist used to tell him that he "had the word 'trauma' written all over his forehead," adding that he never really knew what the therapist meant but acted as though he did so that the matter would be dropped—as it always was until the next time, when it would be dropped again. John acknowledged manipulating that therapist by means of distraction, evasion, and playing dumb, seeming entirely unaware of his own intentions or their possible implications. When I expressed curiosity as to how that pattern might play itself out between us if I said something that threatened him, he showed both fear and relief.

Once, during the early months of therapy, as John was describing the "craziness" and cruelty of many of his family members, he began to talk about their large summer gatherings at his grandparents' house. I casually asked about the sleeping arrangements, and John nearly fell off of his seat. He froze for some minutes, then shifted into a hostile stance I had never seen before, and asked me contemptuously why I wanted to know. My original question went unanswered; in fact, it remained unanswered for the next four or five years. Finally, John asked, puzzled, "If I have no memory for any of this, why is this such a big deal for me?" We reflected on the possibilities that he had experienced my question as intrusive or suggestive or that it had stirred something he was unable or unready to deal with. Later in therapy, on more than one occasion, John forgot that this conversation ever took place.

I treated John during the early to mid-1990s when scarcely a day passed without media mention of something related to the false memory syndrome (FMS) controversy, which was to play an extraordinary role in the dynamics of his therapy. He would begin, in a fragmented and highly dissociated manner, to switch self-states and spew out numerous stories of mostly extrafamilial (neighbors, teachers, family friends) and some intrafamilial (aunt, grandfather) sexual abuse—only to have some of his alters revise the material to conform to the therapist memory-implantation theory, specifically to the assertions of the voices in his head that told him that I was a trickster who used techniques he had not yet heard of to, variously, input the memories or somehow make him invent his alters because I only wanted to work with dissociative patients. Not only some parts of John but also some parts of his social circle were focused on false memory rhetoric as the anti-MPD campaign was reaching its zenith.

The idea that he was "crazy," losing his mind, served to deflect his MPD identification for a couple of years. Such deflection is one of the most common tactics among severely dissociative trauma survivors (and a commonly used programmed message from perpetrators) in search of some frame or meaning when they are inundated by memories, affects, or flashbacks. Some can actually use repetitive statements about being crazy to contain and stop the flow. John didn't subjectively feel he was crazy, but the voices in his head said he was, so frequently and so adamantly that the distinction had no meaning and he became thoroughly anxious about going mad, and would plead for help in differentiating clinical psychosis from dissociation. John often forgot this particular therapy dance and wanted me to repeat and repeat it, in spite of the fact that we came up with the same conclusion time and time again in our respectful collegial reviews: his symptom profile matched severe dissociative disorder, probably DID.

Middle Phase: John's repetitive cycles eventually became a source of humor and playfulness in the therapy. Beyond analyzing their multiple possible meanings (my corruption, his dissociative processes, his deception, media and family influences, etc.), John began to be able to laugh at his own state-changes and his methods of managing and controlling the treatment. That freed up a new arena for engagement and conflict about the truth/falsity of his memories, breaking out of the binary or otherwise rigid thought-loops (I'm crazy; it can't be real because it doesn't feel real) that precluded the establishment of a consistent observing ego and a real treatment alliance.

John was one of the few patients for whom the "conflict" about whether he was dissociative and a trauma survivor dominated the treatment for several years. He was also one of the few who exhibit all the classical MPD/DID symptoms but could not comprehend even the idea of being dissociative or traumatized. He had what I would call radical dissociation of meaning, dissociation for his impact on others, and unusual dissociation for his own dissociation. So brilliant (and professionally successful) in so many ways, he was unable to think certain thoughts, hold inconsistency in his mind without dissociating, or put two potentially meaningful clues together when they concerned himself; he was actually incapable of grasping how he could have part-selves with diverse opinions, attitudes, and modus operandi.

Meanwhile, regardless of whatever other meanings we generated together, some of John's voices kept insisting that he was "just acting." John knew as well as I did that he had a compliant side, so we examined his notions of my exploiting it as he used his acting talents to mutate into my alleged favorite diagnostic type. (I did not, after some time, hide from John the fact that I was actively engaged in the clinical specialty of trauma and dissociation.) In fact, however, John would have been a terrible actor at anything aside from passing as normal: he had extremely limited fantasy abilities and rarely elaborated or even finished any memory material once he reached a certain level of anxiety.

John's functional selves were quite porous to internal voices and yet quite impervious to the voices of other people—particularly voices of love, compassion, and respect, or voices that could potentially validate his trauma history and dissociative organization. At the beginning of treatment John seemed unclear even about whether or not someone in his life was insulting or manipulating him. His putative compliance was more apparent than real; actually, beyond coming across as the nice guy likable by all, John mostly did just as he pleased.

Internally, he lived as though in a world of one-way mirrors where some parts of him could be seen and influenced while other parts would remain oblivious. It was difficult for John to sustain observing ego and critical thinking capacities about his own complex, polarized, internal, and interpersonal process. We spent a good deal of time hypothesizing as to the mechanics of the collusion, suggestion, and influence alleged by some of his voices to be the real issue between us and also as to how his protector personalities might be using the others' allegations for avoidant or nefarious purposes. Sometimes our discussions had a collaborative tone; at other times, the derision coming from him was difficult to bear. Because his hate was so split off, the energy behind it was particularly foul, and his contempt could take on such a haughty, demonic cruelty that I had to struggle to keep the rest of him in my mind.

In spite of the fact that I leaned in the direction of feeling that John had DID and was probably a survivor of multiple-perpetrator sexual abuse, I tried to keep our dialogues about influence as open as I could while being quite frank about what I tended to believe and why. Who was suggesting what to whom, who was submitting to whom and/or what or for what purposes became important issues. Was John compliant with his own highly developed dissimulation practices, compliant with his family—its myths and relational practices—or dominated by the biases and interpretations of his therapist? All points of view were looked at simultaneously. Nothing was ruled out or decided upon. Multiple realities were held simultaneously in the potential space of the therapy relationship, and, in some cases, much was left unresolved. However, John's recurring amnesia for therapy sessions did frequently interfere with discussing the psychotherapy relationship. When John forgot what took place in sessions, he simply changed the focus to work-related problems.

He was afraid to have any strong feelings toward me or toward anyone else for that matter; merely speaking of (or reporting the comments of the voices in his head about) his aggressive, sexual, or cruel feelings or impulses was threatening for John and made him feel like he was losing control. Yet the more John revealed pieces of his sexual-abuse history, the more his overall psychological, interpersonal, and professional functioning seemed to improve. In fact, he actually developed more of a capacity for emotional presence, interpersonal conflict, and affectivity—when he wasn't denying, disavowing, and recanting.

A Game of Cat and Mouse: John couldn't help complying with and believing whatever his internal antitherapy voices were telling him—for example, about the perpetrator's presence in the room and influence on our relationship—but at the same time, he felt continually assaulted and demoralized when the voices that told him awful things about me (to whom parts of him had become quite attached) and about himself. Over time, however, his tolerance for conflict steadily increased as he was able to eventually see the issue not as two separate positions that had nothing to do with one another, but rather as a dramatic manifestation of an intense inner ambivalence about being known, about having feelings, vulnerabilities, and attachments, about experiencing family members in an unfavorable light, and about risking retraumatization in his relationship with me. Because John used FMS ideologies to regulate our exchanges and his access to painful material, the therapeutic movement into more symbolic, dialogical, and potential space took a couple of years.

Although eventually John said he didn't believe what his inner voices were telling him, they continued to distort his perceptions and distract his attention; they almost always automatically entranced him. Devaluation and overvaluation were enacted in the most extreme form using the FMS template as theatrical set to the therapy dialogues. John's distrustful and dissimulating alter personalities developed an unusual attachment to me. Occasionally, when caught and confronted in the act of subverting the therapy through false memory syndrome antics, these mischievous and sometimes malevolent and arrogantly hostile part-selves would act like they were enjoying toying with me in an elaborate chess game that I was reminded I was good at but would never win.

John described his subjective experience of alters taking over or influencing him in terms that paralleled "possession"[1] experiences reported in the anthropological literature. That is, in spite of his intelligence and his increasing familiarity understanding dissociative processes, John's subjective experience was that these voices from inside his head were totally "not me." However, John was too terrified to associate to who else or what else they might be, and in fact the mere request to look into it or to let whatever comes up come could trigger heart palpitations and mini-anxiety attacks.

To say that this patient lived in a house divided is an understatement. When out from under the spell of his hostile/blocker personalities, John's other part-selves could see the absurdity and illogical nature of most of what was being proposed, but a week later when under the spell again, John would act as if the conversation never took place. With

John anything could become unreal or be recategorized at any given point in time, including his own or our mutual history. Most therapies with severely dissociative trauma survivors involve continuous reinvention of the proverbial wheel, but this one often felt like it was regressing instead of progressing, and like we were endlessly caught in quicksand: I felt at times like he was pulling me in as I was trying to pull him out; at other times I felt like letting him drown in his own machinations and misery.

How a highly functional medical professional responsible for life-and-death decisions on a daily basis could show the kinds of memory deficits I witnessed often shocked and baffled me. Whenever we discussed it, John dipped into the litany of confabulated answers he had been using for years—"Oh, I'm just crazy," said dismissively, or cavalier versions of "I don't know," meaning "I'm not interested in knowing." Equally confounding was his indifference to the glaring inconsistencies in his life and his unusual thoughts and behaviors, and his utter lack of curiosity to explore them.

Eventually it was revealed that John's DID system had a very well-developed and highly protected functional set of self-states that could perform professionally without interference from any feelings, fears, or doubts—an essential adaptation. The host personality in his case was a dominant cluster of self-states responsible for work and functionality that weren't, in the words of some other parts, "designed for critical thinking." Of course, the meaning of the word "design" was not open to mutual reflection. This kind of thing was never negotiable. I eventually learned to accept and respect it as a form of containment.

A Deepening Bond or Bondage: It was difficult to know how John saw my use of power in our relationship. He would sometimes thank me for being confrontative enough to break through his façades and his duplicity, liberating him to experience honesty and intimacy for the first time, and advancing his treatment and his life. At other times, John would tell me that I was mean, harsh, impatient, and "over the top" with some of my formulations. The more evasive and distrustful parts of him would claim that I was being abusive—the same parts that denied that anything abusive had ever taken place in his early life.

John's feedback was probably on target some of the time, insofar as my frustration and irritation with the process would often be visible, becoming fodder for our discussions of the transference and countertransference whenever possible. (Like most of the DID patients I have treated, John never used that kind of sharing to subvert trust.) In any case, John benefited from the opportunity to give me feedback and I valued his regulating our relationship by telling me how I was affecting him. This was a totally new aspect of human relating to which John had never been exposed. Discussing power seemed to neutralize some of the underlying hostility, but never all of it.

John's systematic avoidance of traumatic affects and memories defined much of his waking life. As we became closer, he alluded to horrific fantasies of sexualized violence that his voices were imagining enacting toward me; he was terrified and unwilling to articulate them, fearing that the words or ideas alone could destroy our relationship. For a long time, no analysis, interpretation, or reassurance helped John risk revealing those fantasies; what freed him somewhat was my gradual acceptance of his governing subjective reality. Clearly, John was afraid of facing either the perpetrators of his past or the perpetrator(s) within, although by keeping me in the role of perpetrator much of the time per the FMS paradigm, he was able to ward off partially his feared encounter with himself and his history.

John and His Family: John declared, then disowned, memories of childhood promises that adult affection would be forthcoming—promises that turned into forced sexual liaisons with relatives, neighbors, or friends of the family. From his descriptions of childhood, John appeared to be quite vulnerable (almost to the point of having a neon sign on his forehead announcing his availability for abuse) to any disturbed adult's interest in him; at the same time, and for reasons that never became completely clear, John's early life brought him into an unusual amount of contact with numerous perpetrators. John was completely unable to feel any anger at any of those authority figures, even the ones whose specific betrayals he remembered. He was admittedly reluctant to learn anything about his past that would disturb the positive connection he had lately cultivated with his family, and emphatically invested in what he called his "Disneyland" relationship with his parents. Although he eventually described their hateful treatment and rejection of him, he maintained a superficial congeniality with them; as soon as some of John's alters made reference to the sexual abuse perpetrated by both of them, other alters immediately refuted it and recanted. Absolutely anything I said to slightly challenge or question his defensively protective attachment to his parents was met with a total emotional-cognitive shutdown. John recognized the way he automatically activated such a powerful force-field but reported feeling helpless to delve into it.

John had no difficulty remembering his parents' sadistic emotional abuse, however. In fact, that was his presenting narrative of his life history, according to which a highly attractive couple gave birth to a less-than-perfect child who became the object of constant scorn and ridicule in scenes of humiliation intermingled with neglect. What with his father's pornography addiction (the extensive collections outstripping available space in his bedroom), derisive behavior toward John, and seductiveness toward his sister, and his mother's addiction to tranquilizers and other mood-altering prescription drugs, they sounded like two disturbed people who were "passing" as ordinary suburbanites. John would also occasionally mention but never fully examine the extensive psychological disabilities of his two younger siblings.

John had always longed for—no, craved—parental approval. He finally had achieved some version of it with his professional success and corresponding financial resources. His parents were sometimes actually deferential to him and strove to stay in his good graces. (They often convinced him to buy them expensive gifts or to give them large sums of money.) The idea that therapists force patients to abandon their families struck me as hilarious at many points in John's treatment, not only because it was elevated to the center of the professional and cultural debates at that time. Dissociative subterfuge was so intense where John's family was concerned that an army of therapists could not have pried John (or, for that matter, so many other dissociative trauma survivors) loose from his convoluted involvement with them.

John felt helpless to do anything for his young nephews and nieces, all of whom were showing signs of bizarre behavior and disturbed adjustment. Eventually able to recognize that they may have been exposed to some serious abuse, he compared what he was in a position to offer them to "what a German could do by passing a potato to a Jewish captive through the barbed wire of a concentration camp." Since he was not willing to remember certain things about his relatives as he knew he would have to were he to report on the risk to the children, he decided simply to stop thinking about them, which he was quite able to do. When upon termination John asked that I write up his case so that others might benefit from what I was learning from working with him (even where he could not), I understood his request as an effort to pass a potato to someone else on the other end of some kind of intrapsychic barbed wire. The idea that anyone might gain from his struggles, suffering, and psychotherapy moved him deeply and surfaced a kind of hope that doomed people show when they realize that it is too late for them, but not for everyone.

John could dissociate his concerns about his nephews and nieces. I, however, could not. Here was the quintessential transference/countertransference enactment in our relationship, which is a part of most trauma therapies at one point or another—the patient's depositing of trauma, danger, suspense into the therapist's mind and then taking dissociative flight. This particular minefield was unusually complex because John knew that if he had ever clearly revealed sexual or physical abuse memories about his father I might have to report him to the child-abuse authorities in the state where they lived. He never dissociated his awareness of the potential for legal intervention, and I believe that, together with the rest of his perpetrator-protecting pattern, it accounts for why he always skirted details about his father's culpability even while revealing memories of abuse by several other relatives.

John made sure I was never in a strong enough position to file a child-abuse report while keeping me on the edge of my seat with respect to the children who might be subject to harm. There was nothing either of us could do about it. Like John in his own early life and even in his current family experience, I was now a silenced collaborator, bound and gagged in the face of possible abuse. The combination of legal, ethical, clinical, and moral stresses in treating John sometimes felt like a form of torture—and that, too, seemed to be communicating something to me about John's internal world that he could not otherwise express.

The Therapeutic Use of "False Memory" Rhetoric: John himself acknowledged that, as a professional physician, if he had been diagnosed with any medical condition other than MPD/DID, he would have been in the library poring over every reference he could locate. Of course, his ability to reflect upon or to connect any meaning to this inconsistency was limited. Several alter personalities pointed out that reading would have been useless anyway because his hostile blocker/protectors would distract his attention and "drain" from him any of the memory of what he read. Any discussion of how such an elaborate intrapsychic suctioning mechanism could have developed or still be so powerfully operative was met with a wall of confusion and superficial dismissiveness. He was, however, on top of the "false memory" controversy as it was depicted on television and in newspaper articles, and he felt compelled to bring all of this material into our dialogues. After a year or so, the compulsion was driven by paradoxical intentions, embodying not only defensive and sadistic impulses but also an effort to minimize secrets between us as we analyzed the media reports together. This was progress for John: he was letting me in on how he was trying to defeat me and destroy our relationship (as he had done with so many others) instead of just playing it out. After a lifetime of keeping secrets, the idea of revealing the very material he could and did use internally to advance his system of opposition to the therapy represented a level of intimacy he had never ventured into before.

One of John's many enactments of his inner dividedness and reenactments of his family dynamics was to speak to numerous people in his life about his therapy and to provoke splits in opinion about it. The romantic partner whom he met about a year into our work together as well as his most intimate friends saw evidence of his multiplicity and heard his screams at night; they aggressively supported the therapy, whereas others, who were influenced by the waves of FMS material hitting the media (and some of whom John believed to be survivors themselves) would organize interventions to try and get him to leave his therapy. Although John could see that what was in his head mirrored to some degree the schisms represented in his circles of friends, he had trouble perceiving his role in creating them. He upped the ante every time his own ambivalence about therapy provoked another friend to make vague threats (which he told me about) of reporting me to the "authorities" for doing "false memory therapy" with him. We could never mutually reflect on the sadism John thus enacted as a reenactment from his childhood since he either couldn't remember or refused to believe the horrific tales of sexual abuse and betrayal his alters had told me. Escalations of this rhetoric sometimes kept John's core issues of dependency and sadistic aggression in dissociated compartmentalization and at other times completely shut down the flow of traumatic material within the therapy hour and in John's outside life.

John's self-states and alters were the most sociopathic and perpetrator-like I have ever seen in an MPD/DID patient (identifying reflexively with the intuited pain of child molesters interviewed on television; taking the name and playing the part of the Devil; maintaining the haughtiest, most contemptuous attitudes imaginable). At the same time John was gentle and in some respects very easily hurt—yet he had no real empathy for others and little capacity for true remorse. Although mildly aware of his propensity for surprising people with unexpected shifts into cruelty and exploitativeness, John's only concern seemed to be restoring their trust and affection toward him. As he began to see some of the effects of his behavior on me—someone he was growing to love as much as he was trying to hate and destroy—during the course of the therapy relationship, some authentic, healthy guilt emerged for the first time in his life.

John read Lenore Terr's popular books on memory and nonfiction accounts of the now-famous Eileen Franklin case, and I encouraged him also to consult Ofshe and Loftus's work along with classic material on trauma and MPD. He was able to apply his sophisticated intelligence to deconstruct some of the FMS perspectives, but only vis-à-vis others. He could not extrapolate to himself, and in fact reported having extreme difficulty understanding one section in a popular book about trauma—the chapter on MPD, about which there was absolutely nothing complicated. Written material about MPD actually exacerbated John's confusion and memory problems.

We finally did come to a point in our discourse where we could explore different possible meanings of his behavior and diverse narratives and recantations about his traumatic history without eliminating any and without his forgetting any. He learned to reflect on my thoughts without dissociating, without derisive hostile alters taking over, and without shutting down the dialogue. It was almost as if a new personality was formed—a self that could do the therapy, remember, feel, observe, link, and critically think about himself. After about three years, John accepted the obvious evidence of the DID diagnosis.

He remained unconvinced that he had experienced any childhood trauma, however, and when he did begin to integrate traumatic material and its implications, he continued to claim that he had not been severely effected, focusing consistently on his professional achievements as a way of demonstrating that the damage was minimal. He became able to think inquiringly about the inconsistencies in his life and his therapy without the cavalier dismissals that foreclose rather than promote dialogue. As exhausting reenactments gave way to reflection, we could examine everything in a spirit well beyond accusations or confrontations. John felt secure that he could disagree radically and irritatingly with me without being abandoned, punished, or withdrawn from.

And we could collaborate, knowing that agreement wasn't simply compliance. I recall one session in which I described in detail how critics like Loftus and Ofshe would probably conceptualize an important piece of trauma work we had just done together. This was part of how we manipulated the FMS, betrayal, and distrust themes—evaluating the same interpersonal process from a variety of perspectives, increasingly with humor: John's hostile alters usually played the parts of the FMS Foundation and I played the various protherapy roles. As John began to work through his defenses against acknowledging his pathological multiplicity and some of his traumatic history, we began to be able to define our therapy relationship and our conclusions from either side of the memory and MPD debates. Instead of the obstacle it was initially, FMS rhetoric became part of the play of therapy.[2]

A Tentative Breakthrough: Usually, following a productive therapy session with John some form of backlash, amnesia, or sabotage could be expected. However, during this time it was I, in the context of playing with different points of view, who generated the reversal fantasies of who was doing what to whom. It was I, not John's hostile blockers, who raised doubts about how the week's therapy might be projected from the FMS/anti-MPD postures. My creative portrayal of our recent piece of work as a dance of my coercion and John's compliance was very convincing—both a serious and humorous moment because we had visited so many times the landscape of absolute paranoia and confusion over who was doing what to whom. Usually some form of backlash, amnesia, or sabotage could be expected following a productive session with John—but by literally beating him to the punch, I somehow upset his dissociative apple cart enough to trigger a different reaction to our traumatic-memory work.

The hostile/blocker part-selves who had orchestrated the bulk of the "false memory enactments" were shocked and impressed that I was giving them so much ammunition with which to fight the therapy. I replied that, if after all we had been through, John were to take the FMS route once again in the same old way, I would recognize that something had disrupted our trust or that I had made some kind of error—or else

I would understand the regression to be a statement that John didn't think he could go into the depth of his pain. My flexible take on the meanings of any resumption of false memory rhetoric undermined some of John's cognitive rigidity and subtly eroded some of his dissociative barriers; it advanced us further toward disarmament, enhanced our trust, and allowed John some space to depolarize internally. As a consequence of that playful session, John asserted in an uncharacteristically somber tone, "You know I could go down that path [FMS] and avoid all of this pain; it would be so much easier." Then, after a pause, "And, I am not going to do that. "

A new sense of will, agency, and ownership of self set in at that moment. An almost four-year siege against the therapy gave way to a new level of depth and a wider window on his complex multiplicity. John began exploring more troublesome traumatic memories and developed a stronger capacity for staying with feelings and gruesome images without retreating to dissociative flight. For an uninterrupted period of time, he was able to make and sustain links between different states of mind and to wonder about their relationship with one another; no longer was every attempt at bridge building followed by demolition. Soon, very disturbing memories of sadistic abuse, ritual abuse, and group perpetration began to surface, and John focused on them for a couple of months before he shut down in a combination of terror, incredulity, and stubborn refusal to go further.

By then, our joint history of surviving his extended nay-saying and our working through of new ways to say yes without compliance and new ways to say no without sabotage and dissimulation had engendered considerable changes in his interpersonal life. John had been able to deepen outside relationships and also to handle increasing administrative challenges at work. The subsequent increase in responsibilities and acceleration of his professional ambition were among several factors that ultimately discouraged him from wanting to face and follow any more traumatic material wherever it might lead. During a kind of breakthrough session, some very deeply buried alter personalities emerged to say, "I don't want to be helped, I don't want to be loved, I am too damaged." John began to sob deeply, which is something he had rarely done in his life and something he had never allowed himself to do with me. After his years of psychic deadness, endless doubting, and his brilliant avoidance of vulnerability, I was profoundly moved to witness this opening.

John's resistance to feeling any pain or loss of control was enormous. He could, however, experience real intrapsychic conflicts about wanting to be known, recognized, and loved. They no longer had to be externalized and enacted, concretized by DID and by FMS ideologies. Once these core conflicts finally found their way into the therapy discourse, core issues—attachment, dependency, fears of retraumatization—could be accessed and discussed. John's defenses yielded to more emotionally vulnerable dialogues that led again to the ritual-abuse memories. It was they that elicited a level of anxiety that remobilized some of his more rigid dissociative defenses.

The Beginning of the End: Following major events in his professional and private lives—a big promotion at work that would mean greater demands on his time, his lover's unexpected HIV diagnosis—and several months after he reported a series of memories involving animal torture and killing and the abuse by a group of perpetrators of several children at once, John told me that the voices in his head wanted him to stop therapy. One of his alters identified those recollections of animal sacrifices as screen memories for human sacrifices; another began to allude to the possibility that John had committed some form of sexual abuse on his younger sister. Those revelations would prove to be John's last: analysis of his dependency, erotic, and sadistic issues was difficult enough, but he could not tolerate exploring the perpetrator within.

What was different from John's familiar one-step-forward/two-steps-backward pattern was that for the first time what he called a "majority" opinion was presented. John moved through a variety of enactments and excuses to conclude, honestly, that he believed there was "an abyss" at the base of his being that was so dark and so deep that he needed to take time to think about whether or not he could take on the dangerous journey. In that moment I realized that John might be terrified for good reasons: not all traumatized, dissociative patients can integrate. Sometimes trauma has outstripped the capacities for repair in what is left of the shattered self. Sometimes it is simply better not to know. Sometimes the decision to not go forward in treatment is an issue of faith—in the self, in the therapist, in the process, in a benevolent universe, in a benevolent deity—and sometimes it is the only way to keep on living.

Termination: By the end of the twice-weekly therapy, John was in a stable long-term relationship. He had resolved most of his fears and anxieties about being alone and was able to buy a house for the first time in his life. His sexual addiction and dangerous acting out had completely subsided; his reliance on chemicals for anxiety-reduction had significantly diminished. He had relatively few nightmares, was no longer anxious and depressed, and had begun tentatively exploring a spiritual life. In spite of those remarkable improvements, John was never able to consolidate and integrate trauma/memory material in any consistent, enduring fashion. And while he could now acknowledge his extreme pathological multiplicity, he remained primarily organized by dissociation and was unmotivated to change that. His capacities for intimacy and self-observation were still quite limited. The level of fear, hate, malevolence, and spite he carried within his psyche was reduced but not significantly diffused.

Our work, therefore, was successful, but incomplete. John spoke of his opposing hopes and dreads that leaving treatment would dislodge something fixed and rigid in him so that he could resume therapy with access to deeper places in himself; enable him to return to a less complicated, less conflictual life where he could be satisfied with what changes he had made; and allow him to be completely left alone and not bothered in any deep or meaningful way by anyone, providing a final reprieve from the pressures of intimacy. He expressed feelings of love and gratitude toward me along with fears and sadness over terminating—yet at the same time his hostile alters snickered about the money he would save and about their victory in preventing John from delving too deeply into his memories; having spent long periods of time locked in and retreating to small, dark, enclosed spaces during childhood, these alters longed to go back to that impersonal world. My own feelings mirrored John's. I was sad, relieved, disappointed that so much effort could not take him to another level of trust, faith, and integrity, and hopeful about moving on at some point in the future.

Within every trauma survivor there is the ongoing debate about preserving functionality versus the digging into posttraumatic material and characterological patterns so freighted with pain, grief, and rage that it inevitably disrupts functioning, at least temporarily. Some severely dissociative patients, in spite of extreme trauma, can generate enormous faith in the process of deconstruction and reconstruction and some cannot. Some have the capacities for the process and some do not regardless of issues of faith. Similarly, some therapy dyads are able to generate hope and a capacity for faith that can see them through extremely difficult times and some can do so only in a limited way. The analytic process is sometimes conceptualized as a duet of two voices, interweaving tonalities and lyrics of resonance and difference (Pizer, 1996a).

Whether a different therapist might have taken the treatment further is a question that both patient and therapist should always explore, and John and I did. I pressed John to make his termination-decision as consciously as possible, so that it would be uncontaminated by old patterns of self-deception or compliance and defiance. I shared my complex ambivalence with him. John and I had gone either as far as he could go or as far as he could go with me, at least at the time. In spite of his gains in internal and external adjustment, the relentless reinvention of the wheel with respect to certain parts of the therapy, the continuous disruption of attachment, and the continuous problems with amnesia and purposeful forgetting left me feeling exhausted and sometimes exploited. John was quite afraid of finding out who he might be. Any further therapy, it seemed, would be motivated more by his fear of not being in treatment than by his commitment to investigate his traumatic material and the abusive relational paradigms cocreated in the treatment process. At the end, John could be honest about his lack of interest and motivation to know about himself in all of these ways. He would take refuge in his work, his friendships, and his relationship with his lover. Something inside of him, inside of me, or between us could not be stretched any further.

Epilogue: I saw John on three separate occasions for two or three sessions each in the first few years after his termination. He would call me in the midst of an overwhelming life crisis that precipitated massive posttraumatic responses (e.g., nightmares of violence and abuse, return to sexual compulsivity), suggesting, among other things, that deeper material (from the abyss) might be trying to surface once again. Just reaching out and being in the presence of my capacity to hold and remind him of the whole of him seemed to alleviate those transient decompensations. Although we revisited the possibility of our doing supportive therapy only or of his working with another therapist each time he renewed his attachment to me and the same set of conflicts about going deeper presented itself, we would always come to the same conclusion: John could not or would not engage in a more intensive

> therapy dialogue. He never fully left the concentration camp of his own mind—but I am sure that because of our experience together, he worked out an interesting and more spacious compromise with the internal perpetrators and demons that plagued and controlled him. Some corner of hope inside him had become ignited and if now there was only a candle in the dark, someday, I thought, somewhere and with someone else it might catch fire.

Khan's (1978) and Winnicott's (1967) comments on the limits of the therapy contract have permeated my reflections on the way John ended our work together. As they point out, sometimes it is more important for a therapist to sustain a person in living than to rid him/her of his illness. The "absence of psychoneurotic illness may be health, but it is not life" (Winnicott, 1967, p. 100). As Khan (1978, p. 259) elegantly articulates:

> The demand for life, and if that is not possible, for not living, is made upon us by the patient and is not a bias of our restitutive omnipotence as therapists. When a patient makes this demand upon us, we have every right to refuse it, but not to confuse it. The patient is willing to stay ill and suffer its consequences so long as he or she is living or not living. If we try to subvert his life by a cure he either escapes us or gives up the right to be alive and ill and enters into a complicity with us which we mistake for "treatment alliance."

SURVIVING DISSOCIATION

The therapist treating severely dissociative patients must become, in a sense, "bilingual," able to shift frames of reference between unitary and multiple modes of relatedness and fluent at navigating violent internal and interpersonal politics. The therapist can succeed in forming a relationship with one aspect of the patient's personality system only to see that part ejected, covered over, or domineered out of the relationship by another, more aggressive or avoidant part. The normal clinical attachment process is subverted in relationships with severely dissociative patients.

There exists a unique cross-cultural difference (Kluft, 1989) between the therapist, whose own self-states are presumably organized predominantly by repression and other higher-order defenses and the MPD/DID patient who is in large measure dissociatively self-constructed. (However, since most human beings also deploy dissociation in various forms, long-term immersion in the transference/countertransference with severely dissociative trauma survivors is likely to bring most therapists into contact with their own dissociative self-experience; these experiences can be mild, moderate, or overwhelming for the clinician). Working with such a patient can feel like being on the receiving end of a series of repetitive abandonment, hit-and-run, bait-and-switch maneuvers, and the therapist's natural reactions to those feelings can impact the ability to trust the patient and cocreate an effective holding environment.

Of course it is not the therapist alone who creates a therapeutic holding environment. The patient contributes to the process if only insofar as a level of consistency and continuity of self comprises the basis for a treatment alliance—but that assumption, with the severely traumatized, dissociative population, cannot be counted on. The feeling of trying to create and maintain a holding environment on one's own is, as so many different therapists have commented, a symbolic replication of the traumatized child's abandonment to the desperate and lonely effort to restore him/herself without the assistance of a protective, soothing, and nonabusive significant other. The solitary construction of a holding environment by the therapist is so critical to treating dissociative individuals that the inability to make it happen will be a stumbling block to the healing process.

Modell (1990) comments on the precocious yet fragile patterns of maturational adaptation by children who experience early and massive losses of parents as protectors. In the face of such parental failure, which is one of the hallmarks of the severely dissociative patient's experience, the child can only sustain him/herself by relying upon his/her own constructed reality—a reality often largely composed of grandiose, omnipotent fantasies through which the unshielded child seeks safety and self-sufficiency. The life-preserving creation of an alternative inner world leads to resistance to taking things in from others because accepting the ideas of others confronts the individual with the limits of his/her omnipotence. Thus the severely traumatized, dissociative patient may consistently reduce the therapist to talking to him/herself while superficially offering a kind of affable compliance just sufficient to regulate the interpersonal field.

The abandonment of the therapist through relational retreat by the highly dissociative patient and the attitude of indifference on the part of an abruptly "absent" patient can leave the therapist with paralyzing anxiety and rage. The presence of this absence—the deadness and nonbeingness through which the dissociative patient passively allows certain internal and interpersonal enactments to occur without intervening, without applying critical thinking, and without grasping the destructive meanings and historical implications of the events—may be the single most difficult unconscious identification with the perpetrating/collusion system that blocks attachment to the therapist. Based on the internalization of the nonintervening, collaborating, collusive, and therefore ultimately abandoning parent, this identification also interferes with new learning and keeps the patient distracted, confused, and permeable to maladaptive forms of aggression from within and without.

Reversals and *polarizations* commonly take place during therapy (within the patient and between patient and therapist) between adult and child states, deadness and hyperarousal, clinging attachment and antibonding sentiment, impervious superficiality and depth of feeling, masculinity and femininity, belief and incredulity, rebelliousness and obedience, fragility and sturdiness, attentiveness and distraction, confidence and self-doubting, trust and distrust, collaborativeness and sabotage, loving and hating, arrogance and helplessness, remembering and forgetfulness, yearning for specialness and fear of any recognition whatsoever, attachment to life/hope and tenacious suicidality and clinging to death, anxiety or distress and numb or cavalier attitudes, and cooperativeness and abusiveness.

In particular, tentatively emerging healthy grandiosity can suddenly transmute into virulent self-denigration; other people may be simultaneously heralded and derided by different aspects of the self-system as the patient negotiates a safe intimacy/distance balance to avoid retraumatization; and, especially after the leakage of traumatic material, dependency needs (or unbridled sadism and vindictiveness) can abruptly resurface and totally overwhelm an individual's dissociative equilibrium. Meanwhile, independently, the therapist may be attempting to bond with and treat some fragment of the patient's self created to manage superficial functioning issues, erroneously thinking s/he is creating an alliance with a more important aspect of that self. In the extreme, a hostile adult alter may cancel an office visit while a pleading child-part phones the therapist, misinterpreting (perhaps through the passive influence of more dominant personalities) the missed appointment as therapist-initiated and evidence that the therapist no longer likes the him/her.

Indeed, some of the most disconcerting and troubling facets of the switching and reversing process transpire around being in and out of treatment—forgetting to show up for appointments, canceling sessions, threatening to end the therapy, arguing over paying for it, making special requests, and generally bouncing around the most elemental commitment to treatment (or, in analogous cases, to sobriety or recovery from other addictions). Some patients are so overstimulated and overwrought by the therapy process that they manage their anxiety by starting and stopping several times a year, never getting beyond the initial stages or past specific power struggles. In the multidimensional world of a severely dissociated individual, each interruption in treatment may be experienced as wiping the slate clean and in no way connected to previous interruptions or to any ambivalence/enactment pattern—which, not incidentally, portends a particularly poor prognosis. Surviving destruction in those instances consists in the therapist's ability to tolerate repeated comings and goings without giving up on the patient and in the patient's gradual ability to tolerate increasing tension-states before taking flight the next time.

At a certain point in the process, however, if the therapist is not willing to lose the patient altogether by taking a stand that the patient agree to an uninterrupted treatment, then the therapist will have failed to engage the patient in a deeper mutual survival of destruction. In the treatment of torture survivors (for whom the blocking of avoidance, escape, and dissociative defenses was pivotal to the traumatization) more flexibility may be called for, and many therapists working with individuals who have suffered either containment traumas—being buried, locked in closets, put into cages and trunks of cars—or other absolute forms of loss of control allow extra leeway to approach and avoid. Overall, the therapist's most important tool for disrupting this form of chronic switching is the eventual sharing of his/her experience of the patient and of the therapy. Such modeling of emotional availability and directness can access the patient's underlying terrors in a way that encourages their interpersonal negotiation (in contrast to the nonrelating, defensively autonomous way most trauma survivors have learned to manage fears and anxieties).

At the most basic level, as Ross (1997) explains, the therapist must be prepared to let the patient die, otherwise he/she can't help the patient. When a therapist is continuously frightened and worried or desperate to "save" the patient, neither of them will develop the necessary capacities to tolerate the work of integrating traumatic memories and affects or dissociated identities. More than likely, in fact, the therapist will become uncomfortably entrenched in the rescuer position and the patient will become infantilized and never integrate his/her aggression; s/he will either remain chronically regressed, embark on sprees of destructive acting out, or drop out of treatment entirely.

The inevitable chronic suicide threats and attempts and other, less lethal flirtations with danger that trauma survivors compulsively repeat are particular sources of stress for the clinician. The patient performs an elaborate dance whose postures alternate between clinging to life, damning the world, feeling condemned, courting death, and begging for rescue. The therapist is always both witness and participant and also is expected to continuously, simultaneously, and undauntedly hold all the hope while the patient enacts the dance. In terms of "proving" to the patient that s/he is capable of the level of devotion and caring tragically missing from the abusive family, the therapist is thrust into a role that somewhat resembles that of a child-victim living on the brink of disaster and doom, never empowered to make a difference in the course of events.

GINA

A therapist senses a spike in the curve of what has come to be "normal" suicidality in Gina, who insists however that nothing unusual is going on.

So the therapist questions her intuition: is she projecting her own destructive wishes—or is she picking up on something real? Or is the patient baiting and switching?

Later, one of Gina's child-alters leaves a message on the therapist's answering machine spelling out a detailed suicide plan. The therapist calls back, but the primary adult-alter who answers (persona-restoring, functional type) cavalierly claims to know nothing about it. Is her innocence denial? dissociation? conscious manipulation? all of the above?

The next morning Gina herself, shocked and distraught, leaves the therapist a message saying she awoke from a trance to find that she had turned on all the gas appliances and sealed all the doors and windows. Who's trying to kill whom? Is this suicide or homicide?

The therapist feels she's holding a life in her hands. Should she call the police and, if so, when? Gina will hate her if she does—and also if she doesn't. Professional ethics demand evaluation of the suicide risk but evaluating risk in DID patients is difficult to do and difficult to document. The whole situation turns into a forced choice about which hate and betrayal the therapist is ready to cope with on this particular day.

> And, of course, that which is being avoided either within the patient or between patient and therapist—at the very least a direct encounter with aggressive feelings—will easily get lost in the management crisis.

When the patient attempts to pass on core responsibility for life itself, the therapist can be kept spinning between legal dilemmas, professional obligations, and personal attachment to the patient and their joint history—often while holding alone the identification with redemption and healing. S/he is apt to feel either the urge to implore the patient to sit still and give him/her a break or the impulse to say "go ahead and drop out of treatment, or kill yourself already, I'm sick of the back and forth of it all." Therapists will certainly bounce rapidly between optimism and hopelessness, between supporting and devaluing the patient—who will assuredly pick up on the ambivalence, accelerating a downward acting-out spiral.

By continually reversing directions, the severely dissociative individual avoids bringing polarized beliefs out of the realm of sequestered trance logic into a reflective consciousness. Until a certain point in the treatment, often far into the middle phases, the severely dissociative patient cannot help but keep things whirring to avoid stepping on any trauma land mines. For the therapist, the result may be a kind of motion sickness that generates chronic and disorienting disequilibrium.

> ## JIM
>
> Even though Jim is onto the shenanigans of his tricksterlike voices that consistently block emerging feelings, memories, or attachment longings, and even though he sees through their attempt to disrupt his struggle to go deeper in therapy, when they insist that there's nothing to go deeper about ("You're making things up just to please the shrink"), he's thrown off course by the same internal reversal he experiences in intimate relations as the voices remind him not to get close to anyone. They let him reveal alters and parts of traumatic memories in therapy, but only as long as he subsequently negates them.
>
> Jim's brutal, cunning perpetrators manipulated both his attachment system and his neurochemistry to train him not to trust anyone but themselves. In one scenario, after they drug, multiply abuse, and momentarily abandon the boy, the father who brought him to the group and who has been raping him since age three (as a training exercise

> rather than solely for personal gratification) reaches out to him. The almost-embrace lasts one second before Jim is turned around and raped yet again. The group laughs derisively as he's humiliated and emotionally tormented for daring to hope and daring to believe in rescue.
>
> This is just one of Jim's experiences of coerced bonding, "lessons" in the futility of hope. Yet for years this man has been unable to locate his compulsive distrust in his treatment by his perpetrators. He feels no anger toward them; in fact, the very thought of it agitates and terrifies him. He describes his alters "hard-wired to deflect closeness of any kind"—that is, to reverse direction in the face of any intimate encounter—but to pursue connections with a high potential for abuse, like promiscuous sex in public places and/or with strangers.

In patients with histories like Jim's, the therapist's empathy, compassion, or love triggers reminders of the early direct and indirect assaults on hope, setting back their intimacy projects by catalyzing new rounds of acting out. Such patterns can bury patients for years in the mental health system where their cycles of provocative and self-destructive behavior are never fully understood. In some very disturbing cases, where the therapist is made into an enemy for a long time, certain of the patient's parts (sometimes in conjunction with the abusive family or perpetrator group if it's still in the picture) will actually institute dangerous threats, blackmail, or even malicious lawsuits against him/her.

As dissociative reversals interact with projection, projective-identification, and denial and combine into multiple levels of transference, almost everything the therapist says and does—move a clock in his office, take a vacation—can be portrayed as dangerous by subcomponents of the DID patient's system. Still, however, the patient often cannot experience his/her actual abusers as dangerous, and the reversals around siting danger, particularly in the therapist and in the childhood perpetrator, will continue throughout much of the treatment process. The therapist's tolerance for being perceived as dangerous, along with willingness to confront the patient's manipulation and avoidance and to honor the patient's anger by negotiating its possible meanings, creates a climate in which the trauma survivor may find his/her protest-voice as well as the courage to challenge real and internalized perpetrating systems.

SANDRA

> In the space of one month, Sandra's pet dies, Sandra's friend dies (HIV), and a celebrity dies. Feeling that she was the cause in all cases, Sandra tells the therapist she's too dangerous to come in for treatment for a while lest she bring harm to him. She adamantly refuses his invitation to discuss and actually test out her belief. It's unclear to the therapist what parts of Sandra's stance connect to treatment dynamics and his letting her down, and what parts are rooted in triggers or surfacing memories or fears of retraumatization.
>
> Sandra is always conflating safety and danger. By producing an excuse for interrupting therapy, she's choosing to stick with her familiar omnipotent fantasies and delaying collisions with the therapist that might undermine the dissociative rigidity of her beliefs. By reversing her state from relation to isolation, she keeps herself safe from stimulating any overwhelming traumatic affects and safe from the risk of retraumatization; she also forestalls the abandonment she predicts will result from the impact of her destructive influence on the therapist.

Interpretation is rarely what gets a therapy dyad through impasses born of entrenched reversals of cause and effect. Sandra was impelled to take a brief hiatus from therapy, and in this case the therapist's empathic understanding and tolerance of a decision the patient had feared would result in his withdrawal or retaliation, together with his sharing of his sorrow and frustration at being kept out and prohibited from working in partnership with the patient at such a crucial time, is what seemed to break through the otherwise impenetrable wall Sandra had built around herself.

FORGETTING TO REMEMBER AND REMEMBERING TO FORGET.[3]

> We all hover at different distances between knowing and not knowing about trauma, caught between the compulsion to complete the process of knowing and the inability or fear of doing so. . . . The knowledge of trauma is fiercely defended against, for it can be a momentous, threatening, cognitive and affective task, involving an unjaundiced appraisal of events and our own injuries, failures, conflicts, and losses. During massive trauma, fiction, fantasy, and demonic art can become historical fact; this blurring of boundaries between reality and

> fantasy conjures up affect so violent that it exceeds the ego's capacity for regulation. To protect ourselves from affect, we must, at times, avoid knowledge. (Laub and Auerhahn, 1993, p. 288)

Therapists treating severely dissociative trauma survivors must not only grapple with the posttraumatic vicissitudes of memory as it plays out in the therapy relationship, but they must also struggle with aftershocks of recent cultural civil wars about the veracity of delayed (or traumatic) memory and the potentially contaminating effects of psychotherapy. In many cases therapists and patients alike must find a way to pursue treatment for posttraumatic issues while maintaining their equilibrium and integrity during a period of cultural ambivalence, incredulity, and disparagement toward (interpersonal) trauma survivors and psychotherapy.

Trauma distorts the memories of its victims; no one disputes that. What is disputed, and disputed widely and often bitterly, are the cognitive and dynamic mechanisms underlying traumatic forgetting, memory recovery, and the motives and contexts that enhance both processes. Memory is a tricky business and the politics of memory is even trickier. The ownership of memory is inextricably related to the ownership of history, and the ownership of history (including personal history) is largely a function of power. Refuting the capacity or reality of someone's memory is, correspondingly, disempowering—an act of subjugation and remarginalization.

On the one hand we must acknowledge the limitations of memory and of our ability to arrive at objective interpretations or reality, and on the other hand we must acknowledge that memory preserves in the internal world important interactions with external reality that would otherwise be lost (MacVicar, 1997). Memory involves pruning, selecting, registering, and retaining, linking and delinking. As soon as events occur we begin forgetting them, altering them, making them better or worse (or in the case of DID, possibly both at once), changing the characters, making myths about them, and attempting to fit them in with what we already know (Schacter, 1996). The accrual of a clinical base of knowledge to guide the assessment of memory and other psychic material that emerges during psychotherapy needs to be informed by cognitive research—but not dominated, subverted, or marginalized by it.

Many people's memories have been systematically manipulated (usually by perpetrators and collaborators). Some people flee from their histories and others desperately search for lost memories. Some are haunted and chased by memories and others willfully avoid and manipulate their memories or their access to them. Some believe their fantasies and cannot integrate their actual memories, some use fantasy to cover actual memories. Some DID patients maintain false memories of nonabuse, affirming how wonderful their families really were; others enlist actual pleasant or innocuous memories to defuse emerging traumatic narratives. And some finally come to believe their often brutal or bizarre memories, only to experience the reignition of their chronic self-doubting in the reigning culture of skepticism.

All kinds of dichotomous characterizations of memory—implicit and explicit, traumatic and nontraumatic, semantic and iconic—coexist in the same individual. The fanatical focus on veridicality by extremists on all sides has supported simplistic conceptions of psychopathology and psychotherapy (Berger, 1996). A preferable epistemology tolerates complexity and ambiguity; Frawley-O'Dea (1997) enjoins preservation of the dialectical tension between narrative and historical truth. "The aim of analysis is not to recover the past, but to make recovery of the past possible, the past that is frozen in repetition" (Phillips, 1994, p. 69).

Remembering can be healing but is not necessarily healing in and of itself; similarly, not remembering and not knowing can serve *or* subvert the process of healing. By bearing witness to the patient's suffering, the therapist can ameliorate some of the essential isolation of the trauma and neglect experience and support the reestablishment of healthy attachment bonds and soothing introjects (Laub and Auerhahn, 1989); still, however, whatever traumatic material is uncovered needs to be integrated in terms of its impact on and for the patient's developmental tasks (Barach, 1999c).

Since reinstating development and fostering personality growth and integration is what is essentially healing about memory work, Kepner (1995) believes that the goals and purpose of working with a patient's memories necessarily vary with the stage of development of both the patient and therapy relationship, and he describes the most common course of emergence and assimilation of traumatic memories. Initially, memory fragments often do not emerge in recognizable form unless some degree of support is available; also, they often do not appear in logical or linear fashion but are, rather, disconnected. The patient is apt to move from a state of shock to one of self-doubt and then to cycle back and forth between them for some time; eventually, s/he can begin to affirm that what has emerged has at least some kind of truth in it and to start the difficult work of integrating new meaning structures and reorganizing identity.

Accordingly, therapists may need to provide the initial ego resources for severely traumatized patients who are learning to trust their basic perceptions and may also need to validate some of those perceptions (Steele, 1999). Until patients begin to develop a modicum of trust in their sense of reality, however, Steele cautions that this process is better undertaken with current and daily issues than with history and memories. In that connection, it may sometimes become necessary for the therapist to acknowledge the essential truth of the patient's experience or to challenge what appears to be unlikely.

In a relational perspective, the focus of treatment is on the impediments that interfere with a free commerce between various "layers" or "levels" of the patient's mind (Pizer, 1998), rather than on its repressed contents or on gaps in the patient's history. Close attention to process elements and to the intrapsychic realities observable on-the-scene replaces the collection of historical vignettes; the therapist can concentrate on "removing obstacles to intrapsychic freedom" (Berger, 1996, p. 171).

The actual complexities of clinical work are often bypassed, however, by memory researchers consumed with true/false dichotomies, by clinicians who believe that rapid collection of trauma narratives can actually lead to a realistic and lasting cure, and by those who refuse to accept the real possibilities of extreme violation reflected in some patients' memories. In all such limited conceptual frameworks "one does not have to tolerate the anxiety aroused by extended uncertainty, by working within a complex, subtle, uncertain clinical, and epistemological framework, and by accompanying a patient in an unpredictable, complex, frightening therapeutic journey" (p. 174); and in the matching treatment approaches, the psyche will not be liberated from patterns of internalized domination and colonization.

In the final analysis, as Davies (1996b) indicates, the truths we come to accept and ultimately to own during psychotherapy are those that improve clinical symptomatology—those memories whose processing ameliorates or even reverses posttraumatic, addictive, and self-destructive patterns. While it can certainly be argued that mutative elements of the attachment and relationship dynamics between therapist and patient, and perhaps the symbolic reparation involved in discussing and grieving over retrieved material (accurate or inaccurate), are the operative variables in generating positive changes from memory work in psychoanalytic psychotherapy, the reality probably fluctuates between and incorporates both possibilities. Portraying any form of memory work as an isolated project of its own stripped of the dialogical give-and-take of any well-conducted psychotherapy would be to misrepresent the process therapists and patients actually engage in.

Brenneis (1994) recognizes the double bind whereby the therapist's belief in the possibility of the existence, recoverability, and reconstructability of repressed or dissociated abuse may constitute a necessary precondition for the emergence of valid memories on the one hand, and fertile ground for overt and covert suggestion that could lead (in combination with the patient's quest for approval and affiliation), to the production of false memories on the other. "At some points, we may find ourselves forced to choose between bearing false witness or failing to bear true witness without knowing with any certainty which we are doing. Neither of these alternatives is without clinical consequences" (p. 1050).

In the American trauma drama there may be false accusers, false innocents, and false recanters, along with true victims, real innocents and legitimate recanters. And no one can ascertain the difference for certain in any of these conditions. False memories of abuse and false memories of nonabuse may actually coexist in the same person (and vice versa). The existence of one does not necessarily negate the existence or validity of the other. False memories of nonabuse, or minimization of abuse and omnipotent forms of disavowal, may even be the most prevalent form of "false memory" in human psychology. Whatever the situation, falsification of memory is most likely to take place under conditions of subtle or overt domination, whether it is a political or incestuous family system (Grand, 1995) or an unethical or clumsy clinician. This understanding must help us prevent overintrusive and dominating psychotherapy in terms of excessive suggestion, overidentification with victim roles, denying the patient's experience, or foreclosing on purely ideological grounds the exploration of possible trauma and dissociative self-organization.

Doubting is as infectious as credulity. Doubting is more hypnotic than credulity. We are all vulnerable, often in subliminal and subtle ways, to the forces of cultural and professional doubting, just as we are to those cultural and professional forces that would enlist our support. Doubt can itself become a phenomenon of paradoxical influence. A patient's doubting of him/herself can make a clinician doubt the patient. A clinician's doubting can make the patient doubt him/herself. The culture's doubting can make either or both of them doubt the veracity of the patient's material.

Too much emphasis on memory recovery at the expense of characterological work can imbalance a treatment, while the avoidance of memory work and accessing dissociative states can make a treatment overly intellectual and stale, reducing its transformative value. Therapists need to focus not just on the content of memories, but on the process of empowering patients in their relationships to their memories (Pye, 1995). That mandate encompasses the rehabilitation of imagination and restorative fantasy capacities, which when integrated and interacting with memory work, allow for a deeper integration of trauma and dissociative aspects of the personality.

WHO'S INFLUENCING WHOM?

> So the question is: given his or her training—whatever its theoretical allegiances—what is the repertoire of life-stories the analyst can allow, or allow himself to hear, and consider plausible? What are the acceptable shapes of a life that the analyst by virtue of his profession and his conscious and unconscious aesthetic preferences, find himself promoting? At what point, in listening to a life-story, does he call the police? Everybody sets a limit to the stories they can be told; and in that sense there is a repertoire of stories they are likely to hear. (Phillips, 1994, p. 70)

It is imperative that we take a very wide-angle view of the dynamics of influence in psychotherapy. Not all influence is coercive, nor are all attempts (conscious or otherwise) to influence equally effective: influence is fluid, and neither linear nor unidirectional. Indeed, much that is influential in psychotherapy (from the overarching interpersonal power dynamics to the particular offering of interpretations), can be made conscious and can be negotiated; influence is not inevitable and certainly is not automatically tantamount to indoctrination.[4] Indeed, relational psychoanalytic theories specifically emphasize the clinical utility of reciprocal influence.

Clinicians working within an intersubjective frame value difference, disagreement, and the exploration of paradoxes and alternative explanations. Patients are invited to disagree, to comment on the therapist's behavior, even to disclose suspicions of the therapist's motivations and to learn the workings of the therapist's mind, thus creating an atmosphere of mutual influence that promotes critical thinking and leaves possibilities of meaning open. The intersubjective vehicle is one in which the elements of influence are discussed and analyzed, and where there can be a recognition of mutuality of influence between therapist and patient while preserving an asymmetry of roles (Aron, 1992). In other words, relational and intersubjective theorists affirm or even at times take pride in the element of influence in their clinical work.

All therapy patients differ in the degree to which they are vulnerable to suggestion or hypnosis (Whalen and Nash, 1996). No trauma survivor is a sponge without some critical thinking ability and some defenses against impingement. Indeed, many of their life experiences have made them quite distrustful of authority and less receptive—and possibly less vulnerable—than others to influence and suggestion (Leavitt, 1997). The same dissociative strategies that may spare a patient psychic torment from abusers can also insulate him/her from assistance.

If the influence phenomenon in DID was a simple unidimensional construct as the critics and false memory syndrome proponents would have us believe, treatment would move along at a lot quicker pace. It is in the very nature of dissociation to encapsulate experience, affect, and belief systems in such a way as to make patients impermeable to influence except when brought into direct affective contact with, and direct perceptual awareness of, the therapist and the therapy relationship. If these patients were extremely suggestible, their self-hate could probably be dissolved with a year of sensitive, empathic, and supportive therapy. That isn't what happens.

Why is it that the media has chosen only to show the most primitive, bizarre, and exaggerated forms of treatment and mistreatment, instead of seizing the chance to educate the public about the complex nature of trauma, PTSD, dissociative adaptations, and child abuse? Why do television documentaries consistently pair MPD and trauma with past-life regression, UFOs, half-baked cathartic group-encounter sessions, and therapists who either are (or are edited to look) foolish and incompetent? Why does the media not seek out competent therapists to interview about sensitive MPD treatment (and then not manipulatively edit their testimony)? Are these influence phenomena not also essentially part of what we need to include in the current debates to attain a fully balanced perspective?

Clinicians will position themselves on different points along the skepticism-belief continuum in keeping with their own characters, histories, anxieties, and personal exposure to life's horrors. Their mental biases, including tendencies to overdiagnose or minimize the possibility of abuse, may play a role in the way in which patients come to understand and categorize their experience (Rogers, 1995). Those therapists familiar with the dynamics of sex offenders, sex rings, mind control, or perpetrator groups perceive and respond to patients' reports of such phenomena differently from those who are either new to such manifestations of human evil or afraid to listen.

Skill at handling prolonged ambiguity, informed conviction about the nature of memory and fantasy, willingness to agree and disagree with patients and to make and correct errors are what clinicians working with abuse victims should strive for, in contrast to the self-serving comfort of indefinite skepticism and ivory-tower neutrality. But the role and responsibilities of the therapist, wherever s/he is on the skepticism-belief continuum, should be distinguished from those of a judge or a lawyer in a courtroom. There must be room for "knowing" and "not knowing," for intersubjective knowing, and for consensual validation, all as part of an overall plan consistent with restoring lost connections in the patient's psyche.

The therapist's beliefs and expectancies may dovetail destructively with particular patient vulnerabilities. A patient with a pronounced need for closure to problems, or a need to find a single, comprehensive cause or explanation for his/her suffering, may embrace new information or interpretations without testing them. On the other hand, of course, patients determined to avoid emotional exposure may resist new information without testing out its possibilities.

According to contemporary relational theories, change does not come about because of the lifting of repression, nor insight through interpretation of conflicts: change occurs as a consequence of new experience and awareness of interpersonal entanglements (Levenson, 1972); and those—new representations of the self, others, and relationships—emerge as a result of new experiences in the therapy situation (Greenberg, 1986). This form of benevolent influence is rarely alluded to in the polarized discourse about memory and psychotherapy.

Consistent with the relational psychoanalytic conviction that neither patient nor therapist has sole access to reality, each partner influences, deflects, and changes the other. Building on the dynamics of that intersubjective truth, it is a relational ambience that can best moderate the destructive potential that inheres in inappropriate influence—an ambience where a willingness to believe the patient replaces either radical skepticism or unwavering belief; where a welcoming atmosphere of safety and validation makes way for expression of all the patient's protest responses and so-called resistances; and where the therapist is willing to repair disruptions, take responsibility for his/her effects, and simultaneously entertain multiple viewpoints without prematurely foreclosing any potential meaning.

The combined recommendations of most experienced clinicians regarding issues of influence and suggestion consistently lead back to the same focus on the patient as final arbiter of his/her own reality, as final authority on his/her own memories and history, as final determinant of his/her relationship with his/her family of origin (or cult, or perpetrator group), and to the central therapeutic goals of the patient's enhanced sense of agency, autonomy, relatedness, and critical thinking capacity.

BEYOND SURVIVAL

Only to the extent that we expose ourselves over and over to annihilation can that which is indestructible be found in us.

—Pema Chodron, quoting a well-known Buddhist saying

Therapy for trauma, like all depth therapy, involves an interplay of deconstruction and reconstruction; the core psychological structures, organizing principles, and beliefs of both members of the dyad will be challenged. To some extent, new identities must emerge for both or neither partner will feel an enduring sense of completion. As Russell (1998, p. 18) writes, "the difficult treatment forces us to widen our experience, to recognize that there are parts of ourselves, much more than the troublesome parts of our patients, that we do not yet understand."

From this perspective, survival of destruction involves more than just avoiding the inevitable impulse to retaliate or withdraw from the patient. Underlying that survival are the therapist's struggle to stay connected to his/her own feeling-states (and the shifts that take place during the clinical hour), and the therapist's ability to communicate about personal feelings and vulnerabilities to the patient in a way that breaks through the stalemates of dissociative retreat, the endless interlocking chains of double binds, and the persistent identification with the aggressor. It is both troubling and gratifying for a therapist to be so consistently challenged to face his/her own fears, anxieties, and limitations along with previously dissociated states of mind in the service of the therapy. The humility that comes from such courageous encounters with self and other bonds therapist and patient in a sacred process of mutual transformation that powerfully transcends many forms of internalized and institutionalized domination.

> The patient often harbors the fantasy which the therapist sometimes shares, that if the therapist can avoid the repetition, some kind of corrective emotional experience can occur. The thing that is in fact traumatizing is not the repetition, which has to happen in some measure, but the therapist's not being in touch with what he or she feels. The failure to feel on the part of the therapist does in fact recreate a context-specific loss of connectedness. (Russell, 1998, p. 17)

Sometimes fire can be fought only with fire. Sometimes the patient has to know that s/he has pushed the therapist to the absolute limit before something inside can give way. One subtext here is the trauma victim's quest for the *No* response that never came from his/her own lips because of terror and subjugation, nor from the mouth of any family member, nor from the community, nor from the whole society because of one or another level of collusion. Encountering the therapist's self-protective, limit-setting *No* in the context of compassion and empathy can be a central integrative experience.

And so can encountering a passionate other who will not settle for distancing intellectualization. Indeed, witnessing the therapist's struggle with his/her own vulnerabilities and limits can puncture the patient's dissociative armor. The essence of the therapist's struggle to survive is a kind of risk-taking—yielding his/her identity to be challenged and deconstructed—motivated by fierce protection of the treatment relationship and stewardship of its potential space. It is also the survival of the patient and the therapist's inevitable despair[5] and survival of the core assaults on hope, faith, and reality testing that carves a path from mutual survival to shared faith. Ultimately, the therapist survives destruction because something inside the patient—call it generosity, integrity, soul, the awakened capacity for love (or for achieving the depressive position)—interacts with the therapist's courage, compassion, humility, love, dedication . . . to constellate a new holding environment that transcends the isolation of the original trauma and the reenactments it generates.

When the core of a patient's traumatic experience has been an encounter with archetypal human malevolence or evil, only such a powerful communion can help the patient find the courage to remember, work through, and renegotiate this devastating experience. Only such communion of patient and therapist based on numerous experiences of survival and a growing mutual trust and respect can foster a belief in the power of human relationship and of psychotherapy dialogues to metabolize and transform pure destruction into developmental progress, creativity, and wisdom.

When therapist and dissociative patient survive destruction together, the shared experience is so profound that it not only counteracts the dehumanization of the trauma but also engenders something beyond the psychological—in the area we commonly refer to as faith. Eigen, rejecting mere mastery as the goal of therapy, refers to the area of faith as "a way of experiencing that is undertaken with all one's heart, with all one's soul, and with all one's might" (1981, p. 413). At times, Eigen points out, faith requires catastrophe to be met with catastrophe. "Certainty is beyond certain reach," he goes on, but anything less than the attempt to take up the journey "is self-crippling. The undertaking itself involves one in continuous re-creation."

In the cauldron of trauma therapy, catastrophe can be transformed into redemption. Underscoring the inevitability and importance of the therapist's secondary posttraumatic stress, the *Kaballah* tells us that the most powerful faith of all is faith that is lost and refound in the journey through the darkness—*the descent for the sake of the ascent* (Sholem, 1974).

This page intentionally left blank

CHAPTER 10

The Descent for the Sake of the Ascent: Revelation, Witnessing, and Reparation

The greatest sorrow is witnessing. . . . The greatest sorrow is to be a veteran, witness to the atrocities of humanity.

—Deng Ming Dao (Taoist Master)

There's a difference between knowing the facts and hearing the details.

—Anonymous torture survivor

There is a cultural gap between the inhabitants of the traumatized and nontraumatized worlds. Those of us relatively unscathed by interpersonal violence and domination often choose not to confront its consequences: it is simply "more orderly . . . to ignore the victim" (Nachmani, 1997, p. 203).

REPARATION AND RECONSTRUCTION

Victims of torture live in a different universe of discourse from the ones in which nonvictims live (Langer, 1996). Borrowing from Langer's attempt to articulate the value of narrative reconstruction with Holocaust survivors, we can probably agree that the developmental movement from victim to survivor entails finding one's voice, creating narrativity and historicity, and being witnessed by another in an empathic relationship—one in which the urgent mandate to tell and bear witness continually runs into the impossibility of telling (Laub, 1995).

Stern's (1997) relational perspective on healing trauma emphasizes the facts that the witness—in this case the therapist—is an active participant-observer in the conarration/identity- restructuring process, and that dissociative experience most often shows up indirectly in the organization of the patient's internal object relations. Hence, the heart of treating a patient whose current difficulties are rooted in dissociation of the past is articulating the shared experience of the therapy relationship as coconstructed via the transference/countertransference. "In the completeness of such narration, what was absent becomes present, what was silent enters speech, what was fragmented becomes linear, enactments, flashbacks, body memories find cure" (Grand, 1997, p. 212).

Van der Kolk and Van der Hart (1995), echoing Pierre Janet's (1889; 1986) clinical wisdom, refer to this process of witnessing and reconstruction as the reliving and integrating of trauma, making meaning by taming the transference experiences. The task is complicated by the severely dissociative patient's inconsistent memories, self-sabotage, alternating identifications, and unwillingness to resign him/herself to the realities of his/her subjection to horrific acts and the subjugation of his/her will and autonomy. In most victims' lives, observational, critical thinking abilities and reflective curiosity are supplanted by chronic self-doubting and incoherent narratives. Effective psychotherapy, then, must create dialogues where the isolation and confusion of the victim and the annihilation of history itself can be subverted by mutual reflection, collaborative reconstruction, and the generation of transformative protest responses.

Revisiting the traumatic experience in the transference links past and present, facilitating mutative process—by drawing from history without the compulsion to repeat it. The relational, cognitive, and witnessing process also inevitably involves disconfirming in the here-and-now of therapy the painful past traumatic interaction (Van der Kolk and Van der Hart, 1995), as per the trauma survivor's ongoing unconscious testing of the therapist.[1] Evidence of the weakening of the power of traumatic memory (with its attendant elaborated fantasies) and the trauma itself to dominate or contaminate current cases empowers the patient to remember and also to imagine alternative scenarios. A renewed capacity for narrative memory rooted in a recovered sense of agency requires that the patient develop a sense of self as separate from others, including the perpetrator(s) (Slavin, 1997)[2]. When the trauma patient is no longer at the mercy of the will of others, of the haunting absence or unwanted intrusions of memory or posttraumatic imperatives, s/he is free to experience a restoration of the dialectic between narrative and historic truth, free to discover him/herself (Frawley-O'Dea, 1997).

REPARATION AND CULTURAL INFLUENCES

A central problem in both clinical and cultural forms of reparation and witnessing of trauma is that prevailing images and definitions have been too narrow: the dominant group defines the discourse and writes the diagnostic manuals. The traumas that lead to the development of severe dissociative disorders are those private, often sexualized, and insidious abuses in which there are inherent gaps in shared reality, shared experiencing, and shared responsibility (Brown, 1995). And the posttraumatic syndromes are based not only on the events themselves but also on the psychosocial atmosphere of the cultural surround, which can variously support or hinder the process of coping with and integrating their effects (Kleber, Figley, and Gersons, 1996). Consequently, traumatic experiences—and what it takes to heal them—need to be conceptualized in terms of the dynamic interactions between the victimized individual and the surrounding society over time (Summerfield, 1996). Unlike adult war veterans and political prisoners who may have had the opportunity for identification with comrades (and for corroboration of the realities of traumatization), survivors of sadistic child abuse and torture have had only their perpetrators to identify with and no sense of community or alternative viewpoints—and certainly, no sense of shared or consensually validated history. In sum, *context* is critical to both interpreting and transcending traumatic events.

Keenan and Caruth (1995, p. 258) identify the "double trauma" whereby cataclysmic events that produce symptoms and calls for testimony are compounded by denial or devaluation and an absence of witnessing and testimony. Laub (1995) observes, "The loss of the capacity to be a witness to oneself . . . is perhaps the true meaning of annihilation, for when one's history is abolished one's identity ceases to exist as well" (p. 67). Indeed, a survivor who does not tell his/her story becomes a victim of distorted memory that contaminates his/her life; s/he begins to doubt the reality of the original events. The ultimate irony is the victim's coming to believe that it was s/he rather then the perpetrator(s) who is responsible for the atrocities s/he suffered. This displacement of responsibility occurs in an extreme form in almost every case of dissociative identity disorder. Concepts of reparation in therapy with child-abuse survivors must attend to both the internal (fantasy) and external (historical) worlds and recognize the effects of the "double trauma." Therapists must strive toward grasping elements of historical truth that persist within the labyrinth of the patient's narration, in spite of the fact that absolute knowing most often remains an impossibility (Grand, 2000). "We must persist in attempts to know historical truth because it is the truth of oppression" (p. 54).

BARRIERS TO REPARATIONS

> One can be simultaneously victimized and responsible; neither negates the other. (Flax, 1993, p. 108)

The psychological damage from chronic child abuse does not easily lend itself to accurate recognition or simple reparation. Recognition and disavowal, believing and disbelieving, alternate like a metronome in human life and human history. Individual and/or collective readiness to accommodate or assimilate new, often terrible realities is as much a part of the actual discovery of the true nature of these traumatic realities as is the locating of actual evidence. (Sometimes monuments are built and public declarations or ritual processes conducted to commemorate the social maturation process.) The readiness factor applies as much to an individual's ability to access, believe, and tolerate his/her own traumatic past experience as it does to whole societies' capacities for locating, acknowledging, and expressing compassion toward victims of violent trauma, be it rape, incest, ritual abuse, political torture, or slavery.

The posttraumatic symptoms, the multiple self-states, and the suffering—the rage and pain forbidden explicitly by the perpetrator(s) and tacitly by social indifference and the victim's own sense of unworthiness—are legitimized and respected. That is not the same as "encouraging a culture of victimization" (Loftus, Milo, and Paddock, 1995, p. 307), however, and not the same as relieving individuals from responsibility for their actions and their consequences in the name of *empowerment*—which is not about abdicating responsibility any more than it is about endorsing retribution.

On the contrary, helping patients who are completely dissociated from the intrapsychic, interpersonal, and historical realities of their lives come to understand their experiences of victimization as *part* of the process of identity integration leads them to enhanced senses of agency and mastery. For many survivors of chronic childhood trauma, in fact, self-compassion, self-forgiveness, and even self-pity represent enormous developmental achievements, whose by-products may also include capacities for self-soothing that are not based on reenactments of destructive relationships with caretaker/abusers.

While some therapists are indeed prone to infantilizing their patients or overidentifying with their suffering, critics of trauma/dissociation theory seem inordinately worried that validating victimization will foster irresponsible, infantile, or entitled attitudes and behavior. Horevitz (1994), attempting to take a more moderate position, suggests that making past trauma the central treatment issue leads to inappropriate emphasis on retribution and litigation, and advocates focusing instead on the patient's pathological dissociative processes. But a few litigious patients and a few nationally popularized legal cases cannot and should not be used to define a complex and diverse victimized population. Supporting reclamation of previously disorganized protest responses is quite different from supporting retaliation, as critics like Paddock (1994) and Loftus, Milo, and Paddock (1995) suggest. Psychotherapy is not a search for unequivocal truth or some Holy Grail.

> Psychotherapy is not intended to help patients extract a pound of flesh from those they believed have wronged them, to blame others for past misdeeds, or to help them seek legal damages. Treatment endeavors to help people make sense of the incomprehensible, to relieve suffering, to modify pain of past hurts, to alter unwanted behaviors, and to function at a higher psychological level. (Althof, 1994, p. 249)

Relational theorists like Mitchell (1993) and Bromberg (1993), moving beyond concrete notions of fixed time, blame, and responsibility and favoring appreciation for the dialectical, the permeable, and the paradoxical, are concerned with linking- and meaning-making—returning narrativity and historicity to the patient, and with them ownership of his/her own identity construction, memory, and validation processes. (The clinical reality is that most severely dissociative patients are carrying the guilt and shame of the world in their minds, and their ideas of responsibility have been perverted in their psyches; the worry about creating a mass culture of victims out of a population of extreme self-loathing individuals is yet another reversal of truth, another variation on "blame the victim.")

Most victims of child-abuse trauma want and need a witness (a human heart and mind operating in harmony, that can listen and bear the effects of listening), an apology, someone to *not* look away in disgust, contempt, or incredulity when their story is told, adequate health care, and an opportunity to make sense out of the chaos and confusion of their life experience in order to move beyond being perpetually defined by the cascading effects of traumatization. The persistent portrayal of child-abuse victims as whining, self-pitying, welfare-chiseling sympathy seekers and "borderlines" can only be seen as part and parcel of the social problem of reparations for injustice and oppression that characterizes so much of American history, where perverse stereotyping of the disadvantaged and the disenfranchised, primarily women, African Americans, and Native Americans, "justified" their exploitation by the dominant culture and served to expiate guilt (Cushman, 1994a).

Although many people believe that Nazi Holocaust survivors have been treated with a level of recognition, compassion, and respect uncharacteristic of other oppressed and traumatized groups, this is not the case. When Danieli (1988) conducted open-ended interviews with psychotherapists working with Holocaust survivors, many therapists admitted to deploying a variety of denial, avoidance, and victim-blaming attitudes. For example, some therapists admitted to numbing themselves during sessions when Holocaust stories left them feeling overwhelmed; acknowledged not entirely believing their patients; accused patients of exaggeration; repeatedly forgot details of their patients' narratives and history; became impatient at hearing their patients repeating the same story; lectured and admonished patients for complaining; and insisted that the patients leave the Holocaust behind and talk only about here-and-now issues. Danieli summarized her findings stating that regardless of how compassionate or enlightened therapists believed themselves to be in their theoretical or political attitudes toward human cruelty, many interpreted the urgency of Holocaust survivors' needs to understand what happened as a lingering and unhealthy obsession and not as an entirely natural and appropriate response to their traumatic experiences.

In child-abuse territory, stereotypes sustain the appropriation of victims' psyches and self-respect. Caricatures of the oppressed discourage protest and function as obstacles to the empowerment necessary to break out of conditioned thought patterns and pathological attachments. The myths of false memory currently circulating ironically reinstitute the double binds to which abuse survivors had to accommodate as children (Hegeman, 1997). To the extent that trauma patients are portrayed as entitled, self-serving manipulators or as the compliant dupes of incompetent, exploitive therapists, the quest to expose intrafamilial and organized criminal child victimizers will end up in the same old cultural graveyard.

Throughout the history of psychotherapy, there has been unending debate regarding the reality of the pain and the credibility of the memories of victims of trauma—combat, incest, battery, rape, and childhood abuse. The consequences within the mental health professions of collective doubt include inadequate and inappropriate treatment and, in turn, retraumatization (Herman, 1992; Ross, 1989; Putnam, 1989). Freud's legacy has left us titillated by the unconscious fantasies and alleged sexual and aggressive desires of children—but without corresponding concern about the conscious, predatory sexual impulses of adults toward them. Why have the tastes of a considerable subset of adults for bizarre and brutal sex with children never become an object of study while the alleged perversions of children's imaginations have literally become embedded like granite in our psychological theories?[3] Moreover, since the same dysfunctional culture that permits the victimization of over one-fifth of its children also has the power to construct an understanding (and evaluation) of the abuse and its effects, we should not be surprised by the labeling of abuse victims as secretly desiring abuse (the Oedipal approach), or as manipulative and untrustworthy (the borderline approach), or as unwitting liars (the false memory approach) (Briere, 1996). We thus marginalize and revictimize "those who carry evidence of our own sins: our willingness to permit the wholesale sexual victimization of our children" (p. 50).[4]

How do we conduct psychotherapy with, and how does our society begin to make reparations to, children or adults who have been victimized by multiple perpetrators, tortured, gang raped, drugged, forced to hurt innocent others, and used in pornography and snuff films? Do we delay resolving this nightmare indefinitely because it is so unbearable and unfathomable, or because cognitive memory researchers have questioned the memory and therapy processes? Do we remain bogged down in debates targeting those who remember and those who speak out—survivors and therapists—so that we do not have to take the next step?

POSTTRAUMATIC SOCIETY

We are living in a traumatized environment, a traumatized culture, a traumatized society. Collective forms of PTSD—apocalyptic anxieties, breakdown of community, escalating polarization and violence, alternating hyperarousal and numbness—intersect with individual PTSD, whose sufferers constantly rename, recode, and otherwise revise their unusual and unvalidatable experience. Unaware of its traumatic roots and unable to make sense of their own intrapsychic assaults or the destructive interpersonal patterns that follow, survivors rely on disguise, distraction, and camouflage—sometimes called confabulation, dissimulation, denial, or hysteria.

The collective analog to the biphasic individual PTSD syndrome—the splits between believing and disbelieving, feeling (or remembering) too much or not at all, for example—probably accounts for the academic/professional, legal, and cultural schisms, where people overwhelmed by or overinvested in attention to violence in the world are locked in debate with people who enact denial, minimization, and numbing. Usually, there is a combination of both reactions in a given individual, with perhaps a predisposition to one of them; in many cases the response to trauma is linked to scope of imagination, such that if a person can't conceive that something so awful could happen, then it can't.

Also militating against recognition of extreme sadistic, sexual, and criminal abuse of children is the built-in organizing principle that people usually get what they deserve.

In preference to struggling with disorganizing information whose assimilation would shatter existing meaning structures, those professionals polarized into the disbelief camp adopt the anaesthesia of victim-bashing, therapist-bashing, and false memory propaganda. There is little middle ground left, since neutrality may be more of a fantasy posture than anything else. In Flax's (1993, p. 12) words: "Everyone might be better off if we acknowledge we are all operating on the terrain of power and not truth or objectivity." Our theoretical/ideological positions derive from a whole web of factors, ranging from idiosyncratic psychological desires, personal temperament, family dramas, and larger group loyalties and identities, to the contingencies of historical events and locations and the set of language games available at the time. One of the most important lessons for psychology from feminism and postmodernism, as Flax emphasizes, is that clinical treatment cannot be politically or socially neutral.

Whenever therapy liberates or recognizes the voice of the socially oppressed, or legitimates a marginalized discourse (Price, 1995), the institution of psychotherapy is bound to be targeted for a backlash by other forces with a vested interest in the cultural status quo. After doing almost nothing for the past century to expose the predatory nature of pedophiles and other perpetrators of sexual abuse, the psychotherapy world has spawned some left-turning wings—triggering the coalescence of opposing forces like warriors on a battlefront protecting the status quo, chiefly in the name of "the family," through intimidation, scary projection and propagandizing, and creative, new forms of denial, all fueled by partial truths that promise an alternative to participating in suffering, bearing witness, and reparation.

In the North American trauma drama, the legal system has now begun to take a large role. Alleged survivors are suing alleged perpetrators; alleged perpetrators are suing the alleged survivors' therapists; recanting ex-patients are suing former therapists with the help of family with whom they've recently reconciled; factions are lobbying for legislation of clinical work with patients whose memories affect their perspectives on their families.

> You can be sued for failing to diagnose what is wrong with the patient, and you can be sued for diagnosing something the patient doesn't *want* to have. You can be sued for failing to warn somebody about your dangerous patient. You can be sued if your patient decides to attempt suicide but survives, and you can be sued by the patient's estate if the suicide is a success. You can be sued just because the patient doesn't feel like paying your bill. In fact, in many states you can be sued even if there is no evidence of wrongdoing just "because" the patient is angry at you and the patient's attorney expects a settlement offer from your malpractice insurance company. (Barach, 1999d, p. 1)

When the legitimacy of traumatic memory, diagnosis (MPD/DID), and a given treatment are questioned, "The authority of the therapist is in danger of being supplanted by the authority of the lawyer" (Hegeman, 1997, p. 155). And when the scourge of child abuse receives the media attention that has been showered on the False Memory Syndrome Foundation/Movement with a passion and a zeal unlike anything the profession has ever seen, recovery from the epidemic will be well on its way. For the present, the fact

> that journalists . . . should so unquestioningly peddle inflammatory . . . attacks on incest survivors is very disturbing. News reports echoing the Foundation's propaganda frequently mention aliens, witches, fairy tales, UFO's in the same breath as the agonizing memories of people who were raped in childhood. (Landsberg, 1996, p. 1)

Reparation and restitution are always stormy processes. Even in unambiguously traumatic accident/disaster situations, victims are quite quickly admonished to get over it or put it behind them (Gelinas, 1995), or to forgive the perpetrator(s). When that impatience is compounded by disbelief, restitution is that much less likely. And, as Gelinas points out, those who are the most seriously abused are the ones who are most apt to be disbelieved: they tell the most terrible stories, and they are the most symptomatic and the most dismissable. While overt contempt for victims and their supporters is ego-dystonic with the American national character, there does appear to be what Summit (1989) calls an "entrenched, religious ignoring" (p. 418). Herman (1992) cites a cultural form of dissociation on the part of a society that finds acknowledgment of the realities of child abuse too great a challenge to its belief in a just world. Society's dissociative silence cannot help but compound the victims' torment and experience of betrayal.

THE TRAUMATIZED SELF: VICTIM/PERPETRATOR PARADOX

All traumatized individuals must somehow integrate the internal splits that reflect their identifications with victim, colluder, and perpetrator psychologies, whether by maintaining lifestyles of reenactment and/or addiction, becoming disabled, becoming perpetrators themselves or other kinds of criminals, achieving worldly and professional success that excludes an inner or intimate life, managing the destructive effects of trauma creatively on their own, or undertaking psychotherapy to put the pieces back together.

DEFAULT MECHANISMS OF SURVIVAL TO CHRONIC TRAUMATIZATION

According to Briere (1996), because s/he is chronically deprived of any real sense of control or self-determination, the victimized child can sustain illusions of safety only by extreme denial, "other-directedness" (relying on the reactions of people outside him/herself as a basis for self-esteem, reality testing, and safety), strange, paradoxical alternations between hypervigilance to danger and complete unawareness of danger, conditional reality (i.e., reality viewed as a relative abstraction, "a construct that can be molded or altered according to external contingencies" [p. 58]), avoidance, and extreme forms of self-loathing and "negative specialness" (e.g., a magical sense of power deriving from the ability to do bad).

To make a lifestyle out of denying the reality of a traumatic childhood is to make full use of such defensive tactics as identifying with the aggressor (projecting the victimized self on to others); glorifying authority ("cleansing" the abusive parents); thinking rigidly (creating artificial boundaries of safety and containment); avoiding introspection (flattening the psyche); or cynically distrusting all others (controlling and distancing the projected bad object)—Godwin (1996). Making a personal and/or professional lifestyle out of radical denial, for example, a victim may identify with "toughing-it-out" approaches, denying personal vulnerability and choosing relationship and vocational contexts that mirror these choices. S/he may make a lifestyle out of "identification with the aggressor," and seek safety by joining various authoritarian groups, movements, and religions, or the military. Godwin (1996) sees this pattern of victim denial as a breeding ground for conservative and reactionary political values and positions. Terrorists from the political right and the left may originate from such self-organization and traumatic experience.

Alternatively or concurrently, the victim can organize perpetration against him/herself within an internal dissociative system that contains subjectively compelling representations of victims, perpetrators, and collaborators. S/he can transpose all hurt into self-hatred, self-defeat, self-sabotage, and worthlessness. S/he can develop a condition of extreme vulnerability to reenactment through repeated enmeshments with abusive or sociopathic individuals. This deficiency of will in the service of the self is sometimes juxtaposed, as Howell describes, by an active gratification of and devotional service to others. Having dissociated the unbearable pain to which s/he was exposed as a helpless victim, the survivor in masochistic mode is deprived of the pain cues and the signals and sources of aggression vital for self-protection and self-defense (Howell, 1996). In the extremes of "other-directedness" described by Briere (1996), victims of chronic childhood abuse demonstrate boundary problems, isolation and neediness in the absence of internal support, hypersensitivity and extreme emotional reactivity to others, and suggestibility or malleability when faced with expectations and demands of peers or authority figures, and an impoverished sense of entitlement that can lead to the extremes of subservience and arrogance.

A victimized individual can also become what Whitfield (1995, p. 118) calls a "co-abuser," variously colluding or collaborating with traumatizers in what may be among the most common adaptations to childhood trauma. Women abused as children may fail to protect their own children from abuse, perhaps by directly offering them up, perhaps by looking the other way; then they deny their roles in the arrangements. Such women are identifying with, or at least covering for, the abusers (their spouses, say), just as they did in the cases of their own abusing parent(s).

In other adaptations, survivors frustrate, tyrannize, and terrorize their therapists as well as significant others in their lives. Professionals must endure the stress of witnessing, containing, and finding meaning in extreme masochistic enactments (by their very nature sadistic vis-à-vis the helper). Victims can present as people without histories compliant with authority, as workaholic, as robotic-normotics, as drones, and can remain (willfully) confused about their backgrounds, identities, and circumstantial risks. They can become unable or unwilling to know their own minds, think their own thoughts, and speak with their own voices. They can echo internalized perpetrator messages, accepting them as the "real me." To maintain family ties and/or sustain their internalized domination-oriented object relations, they can trade in all possibilities of benevolent intimacy. To bind the processes of dissociation and disavowal, they can become addicted to anything, from sex, drugs, food, and work to extreme dogmatic, double-binding religions, extremist, righteous politics, skepticism, obsessive coveting or collecting, prostituting, and enslaving relationships. Victims can become expert in all forms of collusion and complicity in exploiting themselves or others. Taken together, these adaptations to extreme and chronic traumatization and neglect create extreme attachments to perpetrators and profound confusion over core issues of identity, responsibility, worth, and personal potential.

Complex attachments to perpetrators are some of the most insidious side effects of chronic child-abuse trauma and some of the most difficult to resolve (see Chapter 7). Van der Kolk's (1987b) review of studies of traumatic bonding reveals that children, like animals, cling more persistently when their caretakers are abusive. Fraiberg's (1982) work shows that infants exposed to unpredictable eruptions from caretakers and prolonged experiences of helplessness were able to obliterate pain from consciousness and participate in sadomasochistic play with their parents. Freyd (1994; 1996) and Ross (1997) emphasize the centrality of attachment to the perpetrator as an issue in the treatment of victims of (particularly intrafamilial) violence. Indeed, according to Salter (1995), there are usually three people in the therapist's office—the patient, the therapist, and the perpetrator. "Underneath the gentle tones of therapy, there is always a fight going on" (p. 281). The conflict has to do with the patient's struggle between sustaining bonds with perpetrators and entering into other, more mutuality-based relationships, including the one with the therapist.

One of the most prevalent clinician errors is to assume that trauma survivors can be cured with kindness alone (Blizard and Bluhn, 1994). When the victim's primary attachment has involved traumatic bonding with a perpetrator, all moves are suspect and subject to interpretation as approaches toward abuse. Specifically, benevolence on the part of the therapist can so threaten the patient with the loss of the abusive internal representation (around which the self has become organized and identified) as to precipitate severe abandonment depression, flight-fight responses, and suicidal acting out.

In chronically traumatic relationships, abused children learn both victim and perpetrator roles and re-create the whole traumatic attachment dynamic in other circumstances (Sroufe and Fleeson, 1986). They do not actually have different working models for the roles of terrorized victim and gleeful sadist, however; they have only one model, of which the apparently polarized positions are flip sides, compelling them to identify with and enact abuser and victim roles simultaneously (Prior, 1996). Identifying four primary patterns through which the abused child constantly rotates—seesawing between victim and victimizer roles, identifying with the perpetrator, tormenting him/herself with blame and guilt, and seeking object contact through perverse or violent means—Prior (1996) captures the dilemmas that organize his/her psyche and future relationships.

> It is intolerable to live life as a victim: one is weak and powerless. But it is equally intolerable to live life as a perpetrator, for then one deserves all manner of punishment. It is intolerable to be completely alone and unconnected. But it is equally intolerable to seek relationship through perversion or violence. It is intolerable to be a passive and helpless victim. But it is painful to escape from this helplessness by believing that you caused and deserved abuse. The escape from passivity is achieved by feeling inescapably bad. (p. 75)

Clearly, there are infinite variations on maintaining the effects of trauma, passing it on, and organizing around identification with power, perpetration, and righteous disregard for the vulnerability of others. Most abused individuals do not go on to abuse others (but many go on to co-abuse). Severely traumatized individuals have to find some way to balance the victim-perpetrator dialectic within their own psyches.

FUSION AND CONFUSION OF VICTIM-PERPETRATOR-COLLABORATOR POSITIONS

Perhaps the most insidious complex of victim-perpetrator dynamics occurs when the child is coerced into complicity. Encountered in almost every case of ritual abuse, pseudoreligious cult abuse, and organized crime, forced perpetration subverts the will of the child for the group's malignant ends, yet it is almost always experienced as "choice." When a dissociative individual (often through a child-alter) remembers hurting or having to have sex with other children, or luring or kidnapping them to be victimized and sometimes killed, or defecating on a Bible and "spitting in the face of God," or torturing and dismembering animals, s/he is guiltily locked even as an adult into his/her "voluntary" participation as a traumatized, entranced child with no other way to understand its cunning orchestration by the perpetrators. The manipulation of the psychic wounds of the child to solidify his/her identification with evil, generated dissociative splits organized around a perception of self as omnipotently dangerous and entombed him/her in secrecy, silence, and devastating shame.

Needless to say, forced complicity and the resulting amalgam of victim-perpetrator roles are among the more difficult aspects of severe trauma and dissociation to treat clinically. The real perpetrators and their intentions, directions, and coercion will be buried in some dissociated state beyond the possible reach of any reflectivity or critical thinking. Van der Kolk (1995; 1996) stresses that traumatic memories barred from consciousness and hence unavailable for the kinds of cognitive operations that create change over time are impervious to language and perceived experience. The corrupted sense of agency associated with forced perpetration will crystallize convictions about the self as unredeemable and unsalvageable, *making prideful identifications with malevolence a seductive alternative identity to unmitigated helplessness and exploitation*. Some dissociative patients' unyielding attachments to and identification with such unredeemability can either slow an integration process down for an extended period, or, worse, stand permanently in the way of complete healing in an otherwise successful treatment.

Confounding the clinical picture with many severely abused dissociative patients is the fact that they often possess many persecutor and perpetrator alter personalities—some of whom believe that they chose to commit acts of violence and some of whom claim to really enjoy hurting others. Some patients have committed actions against innocents over whom they had authority during childhood even outside of the primary abusive context. A few have committed abusive or murderous acts in the context of child care during their teenage years or in adulthood. A few have harmed their own children (or the children of friends or relatives) in mild or severe ways. Others have committed acts of violence only when involved as children with perpetrator groups but live in the dissociative world as if these events are still taking place in present time. Some are easily connected to guilt and shame; others, through complex dissociative processes largely shaped by the perpetrating group, are adept at keeping guilt and shame split into more distant part-selves while many of the rest highly and proudly identify with evil. Some internal persecutor alter personalities become perpetrators because they were trained to, and some commit acts of violence or sexual abuse whenever stimulated by specific triggers (e.g., a naked small child) and have little impulse control in the areas of sexuality and aggression.

Perpetrator-identified self-states and alters are probably more common in severely dissociative patients than has previously been appreciated and therapists are likely to encounter the most intractable forms of avoidance, distraction, and counterattack when trying to get near them—and likely to provoke a systemic uproar if they succeed.[5] The challenge is to find ways to empathize with and confront them, or at least move them to think critically and feel pain by linking them with other parts of the patient's system; the problem is that the sadistic parts are desperate to keep themselves and their massively dissociated vulnerability, dependency, and shame isolated from the rest.

Of course, like all other parts of the personality system, these self-states are part of an elaborate protective system. They deflect the locus of blame from the perpetrators onto the victim—some of whose host-personalities even believe that these parts *are* the real perpetrators—and perpetrator-alters may even be "best friends" of the actual perpetrator(s), in which role they provide excellent camouflage from legal and criminal investigation. They free functional alters from exposure to sadistic, rageful, and brutal feelings and fantasies, defend against the enormous shame associated with coerced complicity, perpetration, and the inability to protect the self from psychic breakdown and takeover, and they keep the core vulnerability safely hidden. Not all perpetrator-identified parts are equally responsive to treatment; indeed, where the internal splits are enormous, treatment is sabotaged at every opportunity as the dynamics of evil and betrayal are relentlessly reenacted, especially when the patient is revealing forbidden secrets or beginning to make a significant developmental leap by reclaiming aggression or forging a deeper bond with a therapist.

There is a small minority of highly dissociative patients whose omnipotent perpetrator-alters/self-states refuse direct involvement in treatment or cannot resist continuously sadistically undermining the therapy relationship, even given optimally balanced empathy, inquiry, interpretation, and confrontation of abusive ideologies on the part of the clinician. Whether or not the patients are still somehow involved with their abusive groups or families, these part-selves cannot disengage for long enough to work through any issue or conflict from the compulsion to wreak havoc with the therapy and the addictive pleasure of making the therapist writhe helplessly. Direct dialogue is limited to those times when they are caught red-handed in the enactment, which incidents they perversely enjoy. (Thus pressed, one perpetrator-alter in a male DID patient whose outer presentation was quite gentle, affable, and compliant described his fantasies of inflicting harm on me and watching me suffer while I become confused as to the location, origin, and reality of the experience; actually able to articulate his recurrent need to be the cause of others' suffering without their being able to identify him as such, this alter had absolutely no capacity to reflect on the origins of that need—nor, of course, did the host personality.) The key in some cases is to work around such alters to strengthen the rest of the personality system so that their internal and interpersonal power is disrupted and then depleted from within. Helping patients differentiate *being* evil from *imitating* evil in order to survive encounters with evil is a labor-intensive process.

THE OBFUSCATION OF THE VICTIM AND PERPETRATOR POSITIONS

If the victimization of children is the number one blind spot, number two is what sexual offenders get away with (Salter, 1995)—the compulsive, repetititive, chilling invisibility of their acts. The average person (who is the average juror) does not know enough about sexual assault to avoid being conned—and clinicians treating survivors need to be well-versed in the dynamics of offender psychology, not least because the internalizations of perpetrator consciousness can be the most intractable obstacles encountered in therapy.

> Sexual abuse is not an accident. It does not "just happen." It is not typically an impulsive act. It is a series of interlinking thoughts, feelings, and behaviors that are highly compulsive. It will not go away on its own. It is not easy to change, and it can never be cured, only controlled. (Salter, 1995, p. 103)

There is in fact a "syntactical process, grammatical structure, and violent semantic failure by which a person is rendered a thing" (Nachmani, 1997, p. 204). The relational processes that facilitate multiple and ongoing traumatic events involve systematic planning as well exploitation of power dynamics vis-à-vis the victims and propaganda-like effects on victims and bystanders alike.

It is not only perpetrators who go to extremes. Self-hating victims further empower them by losing sight of their own external oppression, identifying with their abusers consciously or not, and splitting off their inevitable aggression and their self-valuation; the result is the collapse of their protest and escape responses into collusive patterns, which enable the abusing system to perpetuate itself. Thus, the victim/perpetrator dichotomy is simplistic and false—yet many clinicians

> have fallen for the sentimental fallacy that dissociative adults are basically wounded children needing only parenting-like love and soothing to heal. . . . Although there are certainly aspects of these patients that experience themselves as childlike victims, our *adult* patients are *adults*. They can do everything that other adults can, including severe harm to others. (Barach, 1999b, p. 1)

Highly dissociative people can and do harm others. Many patients who have been involved in ritual and organized child abuse have reported committing murders (Barach, 1999b), and kidnapping, torturing, and training other children to become prostitutes and perpetrators. Some survivors continue to struggle with sexual attraction toward children and may talk about having molested children at some points in their lives; some may still struggle with urges to abuse their own children or children in their care. Because dissociative, traumatized patients are prone to reenact traumatic relational paradigms, emotional assaults on the therapist's sense of hope, faith, goodwill, and core emotional vulnerabilities can be anticipated during therapy. Treating these patients' perpetrative tendencies may force clinicians to "confront moral repugnance that goes well beyond the realm of countertransference" (Barach, 1999b, p. 1).

There is also the reality that some dissociative patients have also perpetrated against their current or former therapists—knowingly and intentionally spread rumors about them on the Internet and elsewhere, filed complaints with licensing boards or initiated civil or criminal suits fabricating claims of sexual molestation (or other violations) by the therapist and that misrepresent their own histories and treatment experiences. A small number of dissociative patients have threatened therapists' persons, therapists' property, and therapists' families. And this far-from-exhaustive list does mention damage from the severely disturbed families or criminal/perpetrator groups by which some dissociative patients remain controlled.

On the other hand, some dissociative trauma survivors hold in their psyches and spirits an extreme level of pain, terror, and knowledge of human evil, unburdening the rest of us from witnessing atrocity, often going to their graves at an early age, and often dying without recognition, treatment, valuation, or respect.

The victim-perpetrator dialectic is complex, involving reality, fantasy, projection, dissociation, and incomprehensible inconsistencies. No perpetrator is without his/her weakness and pain. No victim is without his/her cruel, sadistic, and aggressive side. No perpetrator commits acts of harm and atrocity twenty-four hours a day (viz., the Nazi war criminals who demonstrated adoration, concern, and generosity toward their own family members [Lifton, 1986]). Some perpetrators are dissociatively disordered and enact abuse on their victims for which they are completely amnestic the rest of the time; others commit their offenses while intoxicated and their memories for the events are clouded and vague.

Evil is mixed into the stuff of ordinary living, defying expectations, which is one reason it can be so elusive. One man, nothing short of a serial child rapist, murderer, and trafficker in child pornography and snuff films, tended a garden, raised pigeons, and occasionally went to church. The perpetrator who suffocates or drowns a child for his/her own sadistic gratification is the same one who "rescues" the child (albeit for his/her own aggrandizement, as a prelude to programming based on traumatic bonding, and of course also to keep the victim alive for future abuse) and to whom the child then clings for dear life. Sometimes the person who abuses a child is the one who protects him/her from the rest of the family. Or the day father may be entirely different from the night father.

BEN

> Ben's father took him on a camping trip for his tenth birthday. Before and after the rape that came late at night (upon the father's usual signal, which by that point was a conditioned stimulus for a dissociative switch in the child-victim), the camping trip was like any ordinary father-son event—dinner followed by card games, then each to his own separate tent. There was a strange and strained silence right before and for some time after the rape, but when breakfast was served the next morning, it was back to the birthday camping trip complete with laughter, good cheer, and no sign that anything unusual had taken place during the night. Such juxtapositions, unimaginable to most people, were normal.

Psychotherapy with criminal perpetrators and pedophiles often involves accessing the hidden, split-off victimized child self. Psychotherapy with victims often involves accessing the hidden, split-off sadistic self. But to describe the victim-perpetrator paradox is not to define them as moral equivalents. In fact, although sadistic-trauma survivors can bring incredible pain and suffering to those who get close to them, their dynamics are not predominantly predatory. Rather, most of their enactments, outbursts, manipulations, and chicanery are best understood as desperate efforts either to attain safety and relief from pain (Salter, 1995) or to communicate in the only way they can about the abuses of power in their families of origin or the social systems that allowed them. Sometimes their relentless self-defeating and self-destructive behaviors are the results of deeply implanted or unconsciously internalized messages or injunctions from the perpetrators that have not yet been recognized and deconstructed.

Once a victim has become a perpetrator as an adult, however, and entered the often addictive cycle of regulating affect through acts of physical and sexual abuse, a shift takes place in his/her consciousness such that pain, vulnerability, and access to the original traumas are vehemently sequestered. The lifestyle of perpetration, with its layers of deceit, distortion, and manipulation, makes most of its adherents inaccessible to treatment. Solzhenitsyn (1974) invokes a psychic threshold of evil doing, and holds that some people can cross a boundary of identification with fellow humans that admits no possibility of return. Unfortunately, some survivors of sadistic and ritual abuse who were forced to perpetrate violence upon others believe they have crossed this boundary and have been repeatedly told as much by their perpetrators—but in fact they have not: their own intentions were completely supplanted by the will and agenda of the perpetrators.

Most patient-survivors in the beginning of their recovery have little connection to identities of self-as-victim or self-as-perpetrator. Often a mixture of confusion and vague self-loathing masks the complex web of victim, perpetrator, and collaborator self-states. Davies and Frawley (1994) suggest that for a traumatized patient to become fully healed, and especially for him/her to claim and internalize an appropriate sense of empowerment, s/he may need to try on the mantle of the abuser as well as the victim.[6] S/he will have to recognize and relinquish his/her own patterns of dissociation and rigid identification with both victim and perpetrator elements of the psyche (which entails self-forgiveness); s/he will have to reenact both parts, witness his/her systematic denial of both parts, and eventually integrate victim and perpetrator identification to bring the polarities into a new and different, conscious relationship. Most difficult of all to locate and work through are the levels of collaborationist/complicitous self-states modeled after negligent and collusive parental, political, religious, and social systems. These part-selves may be even more intractable than persecutory alters.

TRANSCENDING VICTIM, PERPETRATOR, AND COLLABORATOR IDENTIFICATIONS

A final option for the victimized individual is to confront the emotional devastation hidden behind the mask of calcified normality. This choice will inevitably involve facing internalized and interpersonally enacted elements of many or all of the destructive patterns of relatedness just outlined. Eventually, the decision to seek healing will involve relinquishing the comforts provided by the elaborate systems of dissociative defense, pretense, and the omnipotent solutions of childhood: idealization and mystification of irrational authority and of violence will be replaced by a capacity for vulnerability and a tolerance for helplessness; domination and submission shift into the background while mutuality, equality, and reciprocity become increasingly prominent features of intrapsychic and interpersonal life.

The liberation and development of a trusted internal authority can challenge and then supplant submission to the internal persecutors and perpetrators that have been governing the self. Ownership of that self and its life experience is permanently registered and openly expressed. Internalized messages from the perpetrator(s) are recognized, deconstructed, disidentified with, and assertively mastered. Betrayal of self and other, as a way of life, is worked through as the confusion between loyalty and betrayal is examined. Subjugated proclivities for aggression and protest are realigned into productive achievement and empowering interpersonal communication. Capacities to feel pain, sorrow, grief, and despair, all lost in the compulsive use of dissociation, are redeveloped, and so is the aptitude for symbolizing, creating, and maneuvering intrapsychic representations and fantasies. Real empathy for the self (and all of its parts) and for others is nurtured. Most of all, conflict, emotion, and self-reflection are tolerated, even enjoyed, and no longer systematically avoided.

Survivors of tortured childhoods must integrate and deconstruct the particularly insidious forms of shame and guilt that have lodged in the spaces among their part-selves. Victims of encounters with human evil often bear the burden of that evil as though they had committed evil themselves, believing that they "allowed" it to happen to them. As patients, they must work through the self-protective omnipotent illusions ranging from "not-me" *(It didn't really happen; I wasn't there, she was)* to "all-me" formulations *(I made it happen, I liked it, I'm one of them)*. The true desolation of the chronic trauma survivor is the reality that s/he was betrayed and violated by those whom s/he most trusted and needed, and was powerless to do anything other than capitulate and at some level join the perpetrator; will and sense of agency were completely undermined and assaulted. The victim's coerced moral transgressions represent "the marriage between ethical collapse and primitive desire; they precipitate guilt and reparative hunger. And they compel the survivor to want death for wanting life" (Grand, 2000, p. 93).

For many survivors of chronic childhood trauma, the grueling task of recovery is overwhelming. Relinquishing all forms of self-deception, omnipotence, and dissociation is more difficult than climbing the highest mountain with inadequate gear. Separating from entrenched attachments to perpetrators can leave the victim with a disorganized sense of self to which almost anything seems preferable. Thus, some may only get part of the way toward wholeness and healing. Some jump off the path when what has to be faced—or relinquished—seems too much to bear; some get pushed off by traumatic therapies or abusive relationships. Some choose a life of workaholism, numbing, and psychic deadness. Some rejoin abusive families or criminal cults. A small number commit suicide. A few become permanently physically disabled from the cumulative effects of childhood trauma. Some become chronic mental patients bouncing in and out of hospitals, day treatment programs, and brief interludes of work, and live on disability for the bulk of their lives. Many reach a compromise between the demands of full recovery and the limitations of their psychological capacities and other resources. Amazingly, some traumatized individuals do fully recover—but not without many scars. Some have such enormous wherewithal in spite of massive traumatization that they show their therapists the extremes of shadow and light—catastrophe and faith—in human life.

PSYCHOTHERAPY IN THE WAKE OF TRAUMA

> People organize their lives to avoid the imagined catastrophe of certain conversations; and they come to analysis, however fluent they may be, because they are unable to speak. But some people, of course, have had unspeakable experiences, or experiences that have been made unspeakable by the absence of a listener. (Phillips, 1994, p. 84)

Trauma continues to build until its cascading after-effects are restrained and diffused by a more powerful (and benevolent) obstacle. Psychotherapy must become that obstacle. Nachmani (1995) says that what makes an event traumatic is the failure or the absence of a compassionate disruption. Moreover, he says, "Actions that traumatize are not restrained or inhibited or considerate. They are inflicted because a compassionate morality is absent, or because a cunning, perverse morality is cultivated" (p. 427).

A therapeutic relationship of reciprocal influence and emotional attunement, where coconstructed meanings and multiple narratives (and the feelings and fantasies they generate) can evolve over time without the limitation of dogma, theory, or incredulity is one possible transformative disruption. In this relational view of psychotherapy, an asymmetrical relationship continues to exist where hierarchy is not collapsed altogether; it reflects commitment to mutual exploration of therapist's and patient's participation and assumptions, including their use/misuse of power (Shapiro, 1997). When a trauma survivor's experience of authority has been deformed by exposure to torture (as is most often the case in DID), treatment must address the authority dynamic within the treatment relationship (Eckhardt, 1987; Brown, 1994) in an ongoing way.

What actually constitutes trauma is highly personal and contingent on preexisting mental schemata, cultural norms, personal history, and age at the time of the events (Van der Kolk, Van der Hart, and Marmer, 1996), yet almost all theorists across diverse schools of thought now emphasize that it is the *meaning* attributed to the event rather than the event itself that actually determines the intensity of the emotional reaction and eventually accounts for the resulting psychopathology. In patients with complex dissociative disorders, it is often those meanings—increasingly disturbing, unassimilable, and often intolerable—of events and relationship dynamics that fuel and trigger dissociative defenses. It appears to be easier for the severely dissociative patient to reexperience the somatic and sensory aspects of a physical or sexual violation than to confront the intentionality, planning, betrayal, and systemic collusion of the adults in the abuse scenarios. The realization and remembering of malevolent relational dynamics, the reassociation of meaning and context, can only take place after prolonged immersion in a nondominating, noncomplicitous therapy relationship.

Interpersonal trauma takes place in relationship, and it is spread through the medium of relationship. Its reality is denied and disavowed in relationship, so the sequelae of trauma must be met and contained, the contagion disrupted and healed, in an alternative model of relationship. Psychoanalytically informed, relationally focused psychotherapy gives rise to a relationship that recognizes, wrestles with, and survives the intrinsic traumatic feelings and the penetrating reenactments of exploitative and malevolent dynamics often played out by adult survivors of severe and chronic child abuse. Child-abuse trauma, like so many violent events, dehumanizes the individual; psychotherapy, when it works, humanizes the individual and reorients him/her at least to the world of mutual, reciprocal, and benevolent relationships.

The psychotherapy relationship is key to developing a facilitative level of awareness that can both access and penetrate dissociative states and the fears, beliefs, and identifications that hold them together. A relationally oriented therapy consists of an incisive intersubjective discourse and a refined mutuality. Such mutuality evolves out of an interplay of symmetry and asymmetry and the field of intersection between two different subjectivities

(Benjamin, 1995; Aron, 1996). In fact it is the patient's continual surprise and wonder at the therapist's failure to (completely) confirm traumatic expectancies and relational paradigms of domination, betrayal, sacrifice, and subjugation that so powerfully disarms compulsively deployed dissociative defenses. This encounter leads to recognition and working through of the entrenched, internalized after-effects of interpersonal trauma—especially distorted belief systems—that are often buried beneath, and camouflaged by dissociative structures and symptomatology. The therapist's noncompliance with the patient's traumatic expectations has this affirmative impact only where mistrust is overcome and safety guaranteed (Nachmani, 1997). The patient's expectations will not be disconfirmed without the therapist's reliability being assailed at every turn, without the therapist's making a few errors along the way, and without the therapist's encountering his/her own sadism, despair, futility, and rage.

Within a relational therapy process, interpretations and interventions must be grounded in the experiential interactive field occurring between therapist and patient, rather than exclusively oriented toward the inner life of the patient, as in classical psychoanalysis. In the treatment of DID, interpretations must move back and forth between descriptions of the patient's internal world and the interpersonal dynamics produced by the collision between the worlds of patient and therapist. Severely dissociative patients often use distraction (sometimes diversions toward the interpersonal) to deflect attention from their inner worlds and traumatic pasts; likewise, they sometimes focus on their internal worlds (or crises) and their pasts to deflect interpersonal tensions arising in the treatment. Relational and emotional collisions, traumatic reenactments, confusion over who did what to whom, and painful alterations in worldviews are some of the inevitabilities inherent in the treatment process for therapist and patient alike.

TRAUMA, PSYCHOTHERAPY, AND REPARATION

Whenever chronic brutalization and betrayal have been part of an individual's early life, psychic dismemberment will find its way into the therapy relationship. And, even if most of it originates in the patient, the therapist's own lived experiences plus his/her defenses against primitive anxieties never concretized in lived experience will be stirred. Hence, the psychotherapy relationship with severely traumatized patients necessarily involves the traumatization of the therapist and, to some degree, the retraumatization of the patient. According to contemporary psychoanalytic paradigms, therapists necessarily enter the relational worlds of their patients, and they get to know the essence of their patients by what is lived out between them (Hirsch, 1994). From the relational perspective, these working-through processes involving the therapist as participant-observer create a new object relationship for the patient, one that substantially changes what the patient comes to expect from significant others (Davies, 1997). However, as Davies states, for the therapist, living within the patient's internal object world is no easy task for those internal objects of the patient's will invariably collide with the therapist's own internal objects and self-representations. "We must expect, in the course of treating adult survivors, to experience the most ravaging self-doubts, to be subjected via projective forces of transference-countertransference reenactment to the same forms of coercive mind control that once seized control of the patient's reality" (p. 69).

When an individual who bears the burden of psychological trauma (especially chronic childhood sexual and physical abuse) and a psychotherapist willing to recognize the damage and participate in the healing come together, they will inevitably collide, destabilize each other's worlds, and be forever changed by the encounter. Traumatized patients may alternatingly or simultaneously experience themselves as destructive, dangerous, or punitive agents of control in all their relationships, as the denying Other(s) who minimize their own suffering and pain, and/or as passive victims of the therapist's and others' betrayals; they may perceive the therapist as helpless, naïve, uncaring, vulnerable, seductive, and/or malevolent (Neumann and Gamble, 1995). Apprehending the therapist's innocence—or their own—is among the encounters most vehemently resisted by dissociative survivors of sadistic abuse and coerced perpetration: in its presence, their core structures of identification with perpetration, malevolence, or evil collapse, evoking enormous vulnerability. Invariably, the patient also regards the therapist as savior and redeemer.

As for the therapist: clinical work with survivors of chronic child abuse inevitably challenges his/her helper identities (Neumann and Gamble, 1995); s/he feels as though s/he has "been thrown into a maelstrom with no lifeline" (p. 342). Clinical experience shows that dissociative survivors will do almost anything to avoid reexperiencing their own pain, grief, and suffering. They will also resist all efforts to support their relinquishing attachment and intrapsychic bonds with their childhood caretakers/perpetrators, as annihilation-panic (often articulated directly as fear of falling apart) surfaces with the destabilizing of their elaborately constructed identities and the dreaded rupture of their dissociative barriers. Treating trauma often demands that therapists tolerate prolonged periods of helplessness, inadequacy, attack, shame, and abandonment.

Of course, much in the way of therapeutic intervention consists precisely of efforts to carve a path for affective expression of extraordinarily painful, traumatic feelings, and for the questioning of identifications with significant others of childhood. This makes therapy a dangerous enterprise for the patient, who at once reaches for it with primal, elemental longings, and compulsively seeks to circumvent and sabotage it. When his/her own disavowed and forgotten voices are discovered, the severely dissociative patient often simultaneously loves and resents the therapist—for the recognition and for the persistence and respect that follows it. Then, however, the patient may unravel as warring intrapsychic factions identify the therapist as most hated, most feared, and most revered and desired object. The ensuing transferential enactments reflect the traumatized patient's embedded expectations that power in the therapy relationship will be misused by the authority/parental figure. "This dynamic leads to a replaying in all forms, in the analytic arena suspended in time and space, of some of the nastiest behaviors of the species" (Hegeman, 1995). But if the therapist's becoming swept up into relational reenactments is "the source of the greatest turmoil in therapy, [it is also] the best single pathway to growth—finding and directly engaging the patient's dissociated voices as discontinuous but individually authentic . . . expression of selfhood" (Bromberg, 1995a, p. 521).

In these moments, the real conflicts and multiplicity of the patient crash into the conflicts and multiplicity of the therapist. That is, there are inevitable conflicts between their multiple identities and multiple needs that cannot be reduced to the "phantasms projected into the therapist" (Slavin, 1996) by the patient. The renegotiation and reintegration of identity and conflict on the patient's part can only take place when the patient taps into the therapist's conflicts and identity struggles in a way that takes us

> someplace that is obviously hard for us to go. We go there and we often change in the process, because to some degree, having a relationship with this patient requires it. Our patients are, all the time, provoking in us (and reading) the quality of our inner dialectic between multiplicity and integration. And they are

> assessing its implications for renegotiating or reintegrating their selves in the context of inducing us to adapt to them and them to us. (Slavin, 1996, p. 623)

In profound statements about mutuality in psychotherapy, both Slavin and Bromberg speak to the states of being alone in the presence of the other, and together in collision with the other, to the value of the processes of mutual deconstruction—witnessing the other's struggle with disintegration dynamics, multiple identities, and conflicting loyalties—*and* to the negotiation of new meanings, identities, and relational paradigms out of that shared experience. Even in the absence of dangerous concretizations and the acting out of traumatic patterns of relating, the treatment of severe trauma survivors always involves gut-wrenching anxieties that tear at the very fabric of psychological cohesion and integration.

In other words, the process of mutual deconstruction is not without its consequences for therapists.

> The therapist's private experience becomes the channel through which the patient's full range of dissociated self-experiences can first achieve linguistic expression, but optimal use of this channel depends on the analyst's ability to allow a transitional reality to be consensually constructed between himself and his patient. (Bromberg, 1995a, p. 521)

In the transitional zone, the severely dissociative patient's internal characters and less-well-organized self-states appear and disappear and they change and evolve with humanizing contact from relationship itself, from interacting with "otherness." But the battles in this zone unlike the original traumatic contexts are waged in fair and clear terms, and their resolutions are negotiated, not established through domination and terror. The therapist treating trauma and dissociation from a participant-observation perspective is continually challenged to respond, immerse, adjust, negotiate, and to change (Pizer, 1996; Bromberg, 1996b; Davies, 1996a; Slavin, 1996), and s/he does not emerge from this sort of experience unscathed (Eigen, 1992; Goldberg, 1990): s/he cannot conduct an effective treatment of severe trauma without risking being known, being touched, and, at some moments being just as terrified as the patient. The therapist must reach the patient and allow him/herself to be reached without the protection of psychological rubber gloves (Ehrenberg, 1996). "Our very vulnerability often becomes our most sensitive instrument, and paradoxically thereby, a source of analytic power and strength" (Ehrenberg, 1996, p. 281).

Therapist and patient will destroy each other's mythologies, worldviews, and identifications. If all goes relatively well, they can eventually move through and out of the series of traumatically defined, painful reenactment and merger states into a different kind of unity. This unification or integration is defined by a sense of having survived—actually and symbolically, of having weathered the stormy treatment, of having "come through the whirlwind" (Eigen, 1992). Ehrenberg (1996) views this emotional joining as emerging not so much out of the linear, intellectual part of the work as from the sharing of emotional availability and the affective experiences of the moment. Goldberg (1990) refers to the process as a "fusion of horizons" (p. 148, citing Gadamer, 1975), whereby therapist and patient are two persons on the road to discover" the necessary use of others as the building blocks of our self" (p. 148): a synthesis representing a previously unthought view of self and world can evolve. Goldberg's relational perspective proposes that truth is never final and exhaustive, and that meaning is in a constant state of creation and revision. Individuation (the development of an autonomous, interdependent self), respect (the capacity to value, honor, and hold in regard), and mutuality (the capacity for reciprocity, paradox, recognition, inclusivity, and empathy) are just some of the fruits of this new, differentiated union. Integration, maturation, and wholeness are some of the terms applied to the optimal or successful negotiation of such a psychotherapy process.

The patient's use of the therapist's self as a medium for accessing the communications of his/her own sequestered voices requires the therapist to balance and project openness and permeability with solidity, consistency, and distinctness. This is no easy task when the therapist's psyche is assaulted by the multiple challenges engendered by the therapy material and traumatic reenactments; it is further complicated by the media's persistent portrayal of therapists as dangerous and incompetent memory-implanting fanatics. The treatment of severely traumatized people—the *Kabbalah*'s "descent for the sake of ascent" (Sholem, 1974)—is redemptive for therapist and patient alike, but traumatization or retraumatization is always unavoidable in the process. If, accordingly, it can be said that the path to Heaven goes through Hell, that the greatest light emerges out of the most abysmal forms of darkness as the *Kabbalah* counsels, then the wise therapist will try to make space for the spiritual questions that inevitably enter the treatment and struggle along with the patient to come to terms with the spiritual implications of what has taken place in the patient's life.

MARJORIE

Marjorie is a high-functioning woman in her midforties whose subtle but complex disorder falls into the diagnostic category known as DDNOS (dissociative disorder not otherwise specified) because of the high degree of coconsciousness and cooperation among her various self-states and her only mild to moderate memory loss; she has never elaborately personified her dissociative self-system into the full MPD/DID symptom picture. Marjorie has always remembered some of her sexual abuse in the basement at the hands of her father. Therapy provides a safety net for remembering—and revealing, and integrating—the rest. She maintains a strong treatment alliance and is highly motivated to fully recover.

Courageously moving in and through her traumatic material and integrating it rapidly, Marjorie spends minimal time debating the reality of the events she recalls. Her major debate revolves around how deeply her extremely disturbed parents got to and damaged her. Did they win? Are parts of her like them, or did she somehow mysteriously resist the identification with her aggressor? When she sacrificed herself to protect her siblings, was she successful in sparing them the abuse she suffered? How much did she comply with her abuser father and how much did she fight him and resist?

Part of Marjorie's dilemma as a child, and now as an adult reconstructing her past and her identity, was that her father was someone she could attach to in spite of his brutality and escalating sadism while her mother's callousness and inhumanity left no room for any real bonding. She tells me about the time, over fifteen years ago, that she told her mother that her father had abused her. Her mother's one-sentence reply echoes in her mind to this day. "I thought he was doing your sister." So for Marjorie to remember her father's absolute sadism without diluting and deflecting it with her own self-hate is to lose, once again, the only parental bond that got her through.

One day, Marjorie was reviewing her initial trip down to the basement with her father, some persistent dreams making her think there was more in that episode to be looked at. For the first time in her life he had been playing a children's game with her in the living room. He had also been drinking, as usual. When he casually invited her to accompany him to the basement, Marjorie welcomed the rare moment of special attention—something she always craved since neither parent could ordinarily be counted on to be emotionally available.

Several memories blended together and Marjorie reconnected with fragmented images of a knife or weapon that had been plaguing her in dreams and in other intrusive images over the years but had never before surfaced into consciousness. The particular event she began to recall involved not just the sexual abuse that had become chronic by that time, but specifically sexualized punishment, imposed by way of retaliation for her interference with her father's efforts to abuse one of her siblings.

One of the triggers for this set of memories was a widely publicized case of child sexual abuse and murder by parents in the basement of their house. The child was found by the police tied up and with duct tape on her mouth. Marjorie's natural empathy, outrage, and identification with the child-victim were compounded by her increasing agitation and obsessive focus on the duct tape and the binding of the victim's hands. While open to the possibility that these images were merely suggestive but not actually reflective of her own abuse, Marjorie was prompted by the waves of nausea and resistance, fear and dread that had in the past always signaled unprocessed traumatic memory to explore what about duct tape and ropes was so disturbing her affect.

When describing a moment when her father threatened her with a knife if she cried out or refused to take her clothes off, Marjorie stops her story abruptly. Her eyes go backward and I feel as if I have lost her to some awful fate. Her face contorts, her neck twists back, her mouth is open in haunted terror, her eyes get wide in fright, then they close altogether; she shifts, puts her hand tightly over her mouth, and starts softly whimpering. Every time Marjorie has gone in and out of such states, she seems to return more whole, more self-aware; is she building another bridge now—to herself, to me—with her mind and body? Can I trust her process, our process?

I find myself moving in and out of anger, nausea, and my familiar clinical interrogatives. Is this yet another violation like the ones she lived through? Am I putting her through this or seeing her through? Is my willingness to wait, watch, listen, another kind of violation? Am I forcing her to do this—perpetrating? Or am I just standing by—colluding? Is she forcing me—victim—to witness helplessly? Who is seducing whom? Or are we knowing and not knowing together, liberating frozen parts of her experience to be voiced, making meaning? Are all of these things happening at the same time? Is it all a matter of mutual suggestion as the critics would say or is that a distraction? Must I link these expressions immediately to other patterns and transference experiences, or should I give her space to lose and then reinvent herself? Is testifying with her full self healing or retraumatizing? Is witnessing building faith, trust, and tolerance for anxiety and ambiguity, or another form of collaboration?

No words pass between us. I think I know what I am seeing as Marjorie's movements suggest that her arms are tied and her head held back while she's being orally raped. Coming back, she begins to choke, then cough. "Can you connect with me here and now," I ask. "Tell me about this pain your are in." I wonder if I have spoken too soon—to reduce my own anxiety—or not soon enough. Can I trust my own instincts and sense of the rhythms of integration?

Rubbing her neck and shoulders while returning to her adult communicative state, Marjorie answers in a somber voice, "What did I do to make him hate me? He told me that it didn't hurt when I said to stop. Then he put duct tape on my mouth, called me a liar and a slut. . . . Why did he want to kill me. He always said I made him do this to me because of the way I looked at him upstairs. He said he knew what I wanted and he was going to give it to me. What did I want? Since I wanted his attention, maybe he was right. I hate myself for needing it, for believing he would be nice to me."

I remind Marjorie that she always turns her rage on herself—as if she should have known what was coming or could have prevented it. "The shame and humiliation are all tied up in why you didn't do something to stop him almost as if there was no one else in the event but you, and also as if you're forgetting that you were a child when all this took place."

"Why didn't I scream or shout or hit him?" she asks herself, me, and the universe.

"What happened when you did try and protect yourself?" I ask.

"It enraged him and things got worse. But I could have done something else couldn't I?"

THERAPIST: It has always been so much you and so little anyone else in this world of self-hate you have built to cope with all of this trauma.

PATIENT: It's like he's not even there anymore . . . just me by myself, feeling defeated, like the images of me alone and cold in the basement feeling awful and feeling like I had done something wrong or failed to do something important.

[Long silence] . . . When I can remember that he planned it and knew what he was doing, that feeling does shift, but I have to come out of the memory of it in order to see that. Some places in me can't see that part of it yet.

T: His planning and intentions are some of the hardest part of this to get, along with your helplessness, which is the very hardest part.

P: I am trying to see this from different sides, and now it's about why did he have to tie me up, what did I do to deserve that. I don't think he directly said things like about my deserving it, but that was implied. What he did say was that he could and would kill me. . . . It wasn't just to silence me, it was more than that.

T: What do you think?

P: I think he maybe got off on stuff like that sometimes.

T: You mean he liked making you afraid as part of the abuse?

P: I keep moving in and out of it, then and now. It's confusing.

T: Being inside of it and outside of it at the same time is what we're trying to help you be able to do. When it's not so fixed it's not so overwhelming. You can move around the event and the feelings and fantasies you had about what was going on instead of being frozen in one place.

Marjorie and I have processed many memories together and at the end of this session she asks me what it was like for me, as she occasionally does by way of bridging and reconnecting to a living witness and by way of grounding herself in here-and-now reality in preparation for leaving. She also does so as a means of reversing the absence of witnessing in her family and as a means of having some sense of agency in the therapy process. First, I ask her what she imagines.

P: I think it is hard for you to see me go through this and it probably makes you mad and sick.

T: Anger and nausea were two feelings that came and went at different times this session.

P: I have been feeling sick and nauseous on and off the whole session. But something about you sharing, no, your even having feelings about this brings me more in touch with that in me, now more than before.

T: My words about my feelings seem to link you to yours, or help you give them a name.

P: Or maybe just help me stay with it more knowing I am not so alone.

T: The words can bring together pieces that have been disconnected. And the anger?

P: Still far away, but I can imagine feeling it one day soon. Somehow seeing this in this way reminded me that I was a child. I always think of myself as an adult being abused. When I see my true size, then I can begin to get angry. [*Pause. Silence*] . . . I have mixed feelings about making you feel bad.

T: I think there is a desire on your part to protect me on the one hand and to want me to know it up close on the other, which is even harder to own.

P: In the old days I used to want to rub your face in it to make you know it and that way I would know you felt it, and I would completely split off in those days and not know I needed you to know, so I could make you know more by force like he did to me.

T: The sick feeling is some part of this we can share, so even though you have to go through this alone in a way, you are also not completely alone. You need to have this shared in some deep way, but without anyone making anyone else feel anything by force.

P: Part of me still feels alone in some of this, probably because there is more about this to remember, I think. It's not as hard as it used to be to stay with it. I am sad for me now, but I am sadder for that little girl who I know is me but who I can't quite connect with fully yet as me. I know it matters to you, I matter, that changes it. The nothingness isn't completely gone I know, but it's different, you're different, I am different—we are both changed a little bit by this. Somehow this mattering to you makes me matter to myself in a little different way. It helps me move past wishing or pretending it didn't happen to feeling a little different about what did happen, or maybe even seeing it in a real way for the first time.

We agree that the nausea is passing for each of us. Some of it seems to be related to feeling isolated or alone with the material. When we can share something about it together, then neither of us is so much assaulted by images or sensations, and we can begin to make some sense out of them.

The processing of this set of memories was not complete for some time. Another trauma within the series of traumas emerged. Marjorie alternated between remembering her father smashing her hands down on the table to be tied and revisiting an image of her broken self submitting by offering her hands ("willingly") to be tied upon his request. The foray into this zone was particularly conflicted because complete submission was abhorrent to her; her pride and dignity were invested in the idea (real and imagined) that she fought back.

As I was encouraging Marjorie to free-associate to what she saw or felt, there was a switch. One part of her asked me why I was "making the child go back to that man" in such a vivid way that it seemed for a moment to both of us that the remembering and witnessing process itself was completely equivalent to retraumatization—or to the initial traumatization—and that I was a collaborator and perpetrator in that moment.

When we agreed to completely stop the process and to explore what was happening in our relationship, there was great relief. It led to a series of discussions of transference fears of repetition of domination dynamics. Marjorie needed to recover her sense of her own power in relation to me in the here-and-now of therapy before going any further into memories that shattered her illusions about her own self as always capable and self-protective, and about her father as occasionally protective. And that led to a reworking of a previously traumatic therapy relationship.

Hypnosis had been used from the second session on in that therapy to make Marjorie revisit her childhood bedroom, where she would repeatedly relive terrifying and painful sensations but where even after many years no verbal or narrative memory ever could be integrated. The timing and pacing of this prior therapy were rooted in the clinician's own systems (and inexperience or naïveté) and not based on anything happening with Marjorie, who ended up losing quite a bit of functioning and integrating very little during that time. Clearly she now felt we were verging on repetition of that kind of domination paradigm; Marjorie decided to call a halt to "exploratory work for her own good" for several weeks.

Marjorie had what she called "an elaborate temper tantrum," which to me represented the emergence of a new level of aggression whereby she was playing with her own power in relation to me and, of course, to her perpetrator. This was the first of a number of episodes of Marjorie's expressing anger at me for real or imagined injuries or boundary violations (for example, sharing too much with her, raising her fee, forgetting something she had told me a week before, and so on). Each always presaged revelation of another layer of more brutal sadistic trauma: her father seemed to like most to beat her into unconsciousness and then orally rape her; he tormented her at any sign of resistance and frequently engaged in various forms of bondage, torture, and verbal death threats.

Finally, Marjorie spent several sessions just being angry and talking about it quite eloquently. Marjorie was angry that these terrible things had happened to her, angry that she had to spend time and money dealing with them when not everyone else in the world had to, angry that anyone could do them to a child, angry that she had submitted, angry that she had to know about such things in the first place, angry that she didn't or couldn't protect herself, angry at the prior therapist for reenacting and not giving any credence to her protest responses about their process together, angry at me for wanting more from her, angry at the world outside the basement window that was indifferent to her suffering.

For the first time Marjorie was able to get in touch with a level of hate toward her father—hate that he put his perversion in her, hate that he broke her, hate that she helped him hurt her. During this period her omnipotent defenses against helplessness collided with her anger, disappointment, and despair. By choosing not to delve further into her memories for awhile Marjorie was saying no to me, no to her father, no to her mother, and no to society's collaboration, no to her prior therapist's impingement, control, and suppression of her voice of protest—and she was also saying, no I don't want this to have happened, I don't want this to be true; I can still make it not true, I have the power now and I want to play with it.

> In this case, witnessing Marjorie's anger, protests, distrust, and negation was almost more important to her integration process than the witnessing of the traumatic events themselves. Welcoming and validating Marjorie's "nos" instead of writing them off as resistance or defense was essential to her accumulating enough resilience to face the next layers and to reverse the legacy of submission into one of empowerment. Before recovering any more memories, Marjorie had to develop a stronger sense of agency in order to tolerate the impact of the material that was still to come.

Destruction of the core experience of agency is the crux of what happens to victims of sadistic sexual abuse and torture, according to Slavin (1997), and restoration of agency is the crux of healing trauma.

> In the confusion of motives, the obfuscation of reality, . . . the toying with meanings and events, the crazy-making redefinition of pleasure and pain—in the moment of experiencing one's self instantaneously as both the helpless victim and the omnipotent perpetrator—the child's maturing and differentiated sense of self, and of self as agent, is irrevocably damaged. (p. 227)

In the treatment of survivors of severe trauma, patients and therapists always struggle over who will be the agent of memory recovery. The recovery of memory must always yield to recovery of agency even when—most especially when—the patient refuses (temporarily) to reveal, to remember, or to bear witness. And while the recovery of agency does not substitute for the recovery of memory, taking charge of oneself within the transitional zone of the therapy relationship does indeed enhance the capacity for narrativity, for the retrieval of personal history, and for tolerating that which may never be fully knowable. Most important, it develops the capacity for protest, for healthy aggression, and for differentiating self and other in new ways.

ALEC

Now in his late thirties, Alec is an exceptionally intelligent and successful gay attorney who survived a complex intra/extrafamilial sex ring, torture, and ritual abuse. When he began treatment during his first year of law school, his presenting complaints included a history of extreme sexual compulsivity and promiscuity, depression, and the recollection that he had molested his brother, three years his junior, over a period of seven or eight years during childhood.

Alec had already undergone several prior therapies and just gained full control over his high-risk sexual acting out in a 12-Step group for sex addicts. As a result of dangerous dissociative reenactments of the gang rapes of his youth, Alec had become infected with HIV. So although a healthy long-term relationship was helping him to feel safe enough to go deeper into his therapy, the entire treatment was shadowed and fueled by a beat-the-clock urgency.

Alec was always quite open to looking at his part in the interpersonal process and exploring its meaning, and to being called on his manipulations and unconsciously brutal reenactments. He appreciated honesty, even confrontation, from me, including my acknowledgments of frustration with ways of toying with his own and my reality testing; he learned that such transitory frustration would not lead to disaster. For Alec, emerging memory was always preceded by enactment, and there was a recognizable rhythm to approaching and distancing himself from relationship to me and his part-selves. What Alec does not like to do, however—giving rise to our ongoing tug-of-war over issues of attachment and dependency—is to link his behaviors with their origins in his family and associated perpetrator group: his split-off beliefs in the goodness of the criminal offenders and especially his mother who had a major role in the group was juxtaposed with his terror and utter fragmentation on receiving a phone call even from relatives never involved.

Like many complex, fragmented but highly functional DID patients, Alec both revealed and denied his dissociatively organized self-system. After months of negotiation about tolerating his own feelings and voices versus acting out, shutting down, and withdrawing, Alec had finally agreed to let some of the vehemently suppressed voices in his head (mostly child alter personalities) reveal what was on his mind, which in his case meant letting all of his voices speak without deciding if what they said was absolute truth or not. This commitment gave Alec great relief, for he had never known any real freedom in relationship. Life was always about bargaining, scheming, and avoiding.

One of Alec's signs that traumatic material is close to the surface during clinical hours is the onset of miniconvulsions—like hiccups without the belching sound; at different times they emanate from different regions of his torso, anywhere from his groin to his throat. The convulsions have been manifesting since the day—three years earlier, one full year into treatment of his depression and narcissistic personality disorder—when he first mentioned the possibility that his father had incested him.

We variously considered them somatic reenactments of anal rapes by his father, his uncle, and other groups of multiple perpetrators (as his history was to reveal), Geiger counter–like warnings that other voices were trying to break through, seductions, and even something that I had somehow placed inside him. To the part-selves who supported this last possibility, the argument that if a therapist could implant false memories, he could implant strange body movements seemed compelling. And Alec's flirtation with the false memory movement—one of his many defensive strategies to sidestep critical thinking and, by extension, his traumatic material—made this otherwise extremely bright man so vulnerable to internally constructed recantation dialogues that he could have been a national poster child for the False Memory Syndrome Foundation.[7]

Alec spent so much of his childhood being deceived and brainwashed and dissociating and lying to himself that he often became more convinced about unrealities than realities. Indeed, he regulated his early encounter with his multiplicity and horrific multiple-perpetrator memories by subscribing tenaciously to the notion that I was an evil genius who had mysteriously made him think and feel things that had nothing whatsoever to do with him. The running commentary in his head could transpose any newly generated meanings—about his victimhood or his parents' abuse and complicity—into certain very rigid and repetitive viewpoints: he was stupid or a liar or attention-seeking, I was untrustworthy or diabolical, he was simply trying to give his life meaning and nothing traumatic had ever happened to him, his parents were benevolent narcissists, and I was the false memory therapist par excellence. We left all of these prospects open for a very long time in order for Alec to locate and make up his own mind.

At any rate, a strong wave of miniconvulsions started up on the day Alec had agreed to allow himself to invite other part-selves into dialogue instead of actively excluding them. When I saw his throat wrenching, I became aware that I had seen so much of Alec's convulsing over the years that I had actually stopped inquiring about it, stopped listening to it as a form of communication, perhaps. This time I pointedly asked Alec what he thought the convulsions were about just now and why they were so specifically centered on the throat. I also commented on how we never distinguished among the different gestures and treated them like they were all the same. The smirk that showed up on his face was by now a familiar warning sign that either a line into traumatic memory had been crossed or his blocker alters had been caught covering up. He replied that he hated when my questions landed on the mark—meaning that his dissociative default mode was threatened and he might have to feel something.

There was a long pause. He convulsed again and again. I had the spontaneous thought that I was going to hear another child shock-treatment torture narrative. (I later wondered if I had somehow magically made him say just that—the notion an index of the impact of the dynamics of mind control and their reenactment, as well as indicative of the extent to which the role of false memory rhetoric in our dialogues inspired all manner of illogical doubts, which would have been easier to bear than what was probably coming.) I fleetingly remembered the time when as a child I put a knife in the toaster, and my whole world stopped for a moment. And then I remembered three detailed electricity tortures that previous patients had described. (I have since heard many more such revelations about the use of electricity in mind-control programming from patients of my own, my colleagues, and my consultees.)

Faced with the possibility of a similar story from yet another patient, I wanted to know and I didn't want to know. I would have to shift gears completely. I felt some shame and guilt that I might have missed this for so many years. Or was this an example of unconscious influence? Were my associations accurate?

Almost immediately, Alec said that his convulsions could be electric shocks. Then, following a huge motor discharge, he almost came off the chair. I took a deep breath and asked again if he felt he could tell me anything about that or, if not, if he would let the parts who could tell. He asked aloud (something he had only just begun to do) for other parts of himself to feel free to speak. And then I asked if he was willing to remember what was said.

He seemed furious at me, almost as if I was the source of his shock treatment torture. "Isn't it enough that I am doing this, do I have to remember it too?"

I said, "Alec, because I know that facing sides of yourself that you'd rather not have or know about can be extremely uncomfortable, I want to tell you yet again that you don't have to go forward into any feelings, memories, or contact with other parts of you unless or until you are ready. Do you believe me?"

"Most of me knows you don't like to see me in pain or hear about this stuff, and most of me knows I still can't hate my perpetrators so I hate and accuse you instead, but still I cannot say all of me believes that somewhere you are not getting off on this in some way. I guess I don't trust anyone completely, never have."

Alec then spoke of deep shame about aspects of the abuse that he may have liked, confusion about being told he liked things he didn't, and a fleeting realization that he was never permitted to have the thought or feeling or memory of not wanting or not liking some sexual, sadistic, or complicitous act his perpetrators' forced him to experience. There followed a moment of vitality when he realized that he could now actually decide that he did not like or want something. For Alec—in spite of his brilliance—it was a revelation. He reflected on his appreciation for my permissiveness, particularly my willingness for him to hate and accuse me of various things.

The issue of liking it/not liking it so central to Alec's confusion about who was responsible for his abuse had always come before, during, and after each and every traumatic memory. His conception of himself as a horny, oversexual, nasty child who was a sex maniac by age five was one set of cognitions that would immediately motivate redissociation of newly articulated memories. "For now," I said, "all I am asking is that you make a decision to not redissociate what you are saying to me . . . and to deal with your ambivalence about remembering and feeling with me directly instead of after you leave the sessions."

What was to be revealed was that Alec had been trained to lose his voice. In one of many training sessions, he was strapped to a chair and told to pretend it was after school, that the woman before him was a teacher he could trust. ("Pretend" was a word frequently used by his offenders to confound his sense of reality.) He was seven years old, in second grade, and already a veteran of organized abuse and mind control. So even though Alec knew this "teacher" from group sexual encounters (i.e., knew her not to be a teacher, let alone his real teacher), he was so desperate and so dissociative that he remembers pretending to the point of believing that the fake teacher would actually help him.

There was one man working the shock machine and another giving that man directions. Alec said that his father and a group of others were behind a barrier watching the whole thing. Two patches of white tape attached a wire to his body, possibly to each of his forearms, possibly elsewhere, he was not completely sure. In the charade that followed, the director told Alec to tell the "teacher" about people who hurt him—and Alec, obeying hesitantly, said something about sexual touching. He was given a mild shock. He jolted. Next the director told him to tell the "teacher" about things that scared him most. Reluctantly playing along, he began to describe "a group of people who hurt children," and the shock came full blast.

Alec then stopped telling his story. He shifted states immediately. He became vaporous and transparent, weak, and his face, jaws clenched tightly, lost all color. The world went dead. I brought myself back by noticing his locked jaw and by asking him to reconnect with me. "What is the pain, Alec?" My voice brought him back. "Can you still feel your connection to me here in the room?"

There was a moment of confusion when a perpetrator-identified part of him told the narrator part that he was being abused now, and that I was the person shocking him, not the others. That seemed to be both an extension of the deliberate mix-up of past and present orchestrated by some of his part-selves and a function of the dynamics of treating this survivor of complex torture, whereby my pressure on his dissociative defenses invariably placed me in the role of the perpetrator. Alec and I started to talk about how my asking him to remember felt like my shocking him, my perpetrating on him, but by now he was so familiar with his own internal reversals and avoidance strategies that, for once, he declined to detour to make me the offender and stayed with the experience instead. (Sometimes a patient's making the therapist the perpetrator is a measure of progress; sometimes, as here, progress lies in a compulsive patient's capacity to cease doing that as a deflective tactic.)

Alec said his jaws were shut tight for a long time after that shock, and he said the rest of the shocks were moderate. "They didn't have to do the real bad one more than once." He described how he would do anything to avoid the severe shock again and he fully complied with the abusers after that point. "All it takes is one shock like that and you're gone—and though you want to be gone, you'd do anything not to be made gone like that ever again. These people know what they're doing."

An alter personality appeared in the following session to describe how Alec pretended the white patches of tape were a doorway he could enter to avoid the pain he knew was happening to somebody, but not to him; on the other side was an imaginary room in which he placed his fear, his hate, his rage, and the members of the offending group. In that room anything could happen and he could use his power to destroy the abusers or save it for years later when he could hunt them down—yet Alec was afraid to go there now in his own imagination. As I articulated the isolation and terror of his predicament and the number of splits his psyche had come up with to cope with it all, he seemed relieved, and we could begin to discuss the value of his dissociative solutions side by side with the ways in which they left him so divided and broken apart that he was his own worst enemy. And we could begin to discuss his entrenched patterns of sabotaging all loving and potential helpful relationships in his life.

When I asked him if he believed he was actually another somebody when the abuse was taking place, he deflated slightly and said, "not really." He told me he hated me for reminding him. He hated when I said things that made him feel anything. I said, "This is progress. The hate comes at me like a flash whenever I threaten your dissociative barriers, whenever something I say reveals the pretend part for what it might really be—but the hate is between us and not locked away in the room, not aimed at yourself in destructive enactments. Maybe we could talk about it. We could even go into the white room together if you want, when you want."

Of course he hated me: not only was I making him feel, but also I was making him tell, which was not unlike the perpetrators making him not tell; the hate in one sector of his personality was trying to counteract the growing trust and dependency in the others. But Alec was introduced to safe hating, and safe hating means no one dies, no one is raped, and no one is tortured when you express negative feelings. It was the beginning of his ability to do just that. Later, he thanked me for letting him hate me, which seemed almost more important at that point than positive attachment because it allowed disparate parts of himself to be brought into our relationship, each on its own terms.

Alec had been caught between speaking and losing his voice in peculiar ways that were atypical even of other torture survivors. One of the mysteries of his peculiar incapacity to release the part-selves with direct knowledge of traumatic events was resolved. Alec was finally one with himself. And now some of the mysteries over his unusual patterns of following healthy bonding with sudden reversals (predominantly toward me, his partner, and some close friends) also began to clear up

In the next couple of dialogues devoted to processing and digesting this disturbing set of memories, another alter personality entered the coconscious discussion to describe how special he had felt as the only child at the shock session because being the center of all the adults' attention enabled him to pretend that he was actually controlling all of their actions. In other words, this electricity-training event was a privilege, not a torture. He was the one in charge. Moving in and out of awareness that this was fantasy, Alec expressed irritation with my interjections about the need of the child in him to come up with the power scenario to make it all less awful and him less helpless. He went on to elaborate on how he made up a story about being the real leader of the group, which gave him so much power that the adult perpetrators didn't even know about how powerful he really was, "although one day they just might," he added.

Since this alter had split off from the pain itself and from identification with the victimized child self, his omnipotent illusions were well developed and his representation of the events almost lighthearted. My admiration for the creativity of his solutions combined with my challenge to the dissociative process seemed to make the conversation less overwhelming for this part of Alec, who slowly began to move closer to his own pain. My desire to "shock" him out of his omnipotent and self-negating illusions came and went; still, I had trouble juggling my reactions to match Alec's different states.

Sitting with the shattered one, the electrocuted one, was more difficult. "I was naked in the chair, I could feel my back against and my butt against the metal. I thought I was tied down but I wasn't because when the shock came my hands went up in the air. Everything went black, then white; I could feel my finger tips and toes tingling and my jaw tightening and my head hurt, I don't know why I felt it in my head if the wires were connected to my arms. I felt my butt go up and down just a little on the chair, and then I didn't feel anything anymore. I just dissolved into it, and then there was nothing. It stopped hurting after a while, I felt numb. Everything went from black to white. Then there was no pain."

When Alec told me this, I said nothing at first. We both wanted the memory over with in some ways, but to leave it too quickly would be to enact yet another abandonment on his entire self, specifically the part holding pain in isolation from other parts. I had mixed feelings about the pacing. On the one hand I didn't want Alec to become unglued; on the other, he seemed more authentic in sharing the details of the event and I didn't want him to lose these hard-won connections to himself. I felt that if I made the wrong move the whole session could be wasted.

For his part, Alec had been trained not to make any wrong moves himself, and never to trust any professional societal authority with revelations about his other life. (Years later Alec disclosed that he had been trained specifically to hate therapists for trying to thwart the beneficent goals of the group and to target them for violent actions. He came to realize that he had been systematically programmed to deflect and negate any mention of multiple personality disorder, child sexual abuse, and so on; not so the term *dissociation*, however, which we had enlisted as the word of choice for communication about his inner life.)

Alec had tried to train me over the years to stay away from traumatic material, repeatedly reenacting shifts from alliance making to alliance breaking, in keeping with his perpetrator group's reversals. Now, by focusing on and positioning himself between the survival and denial values of his fantasies and alter creations, Alec was trying to move closer to the pain of the actual trauma and to what it meant. For the first time the motivations to connect with other parts—unfamiliar, amnestic, and cult-identified parts—of himself came from him. This was progress and I hoped it wouldn't get disrupted.

A heavy sadness emerged in that session. Alec's torturers had permanently altered his personality. Their expert mind-control tactics had left Alec with blank spots in his memory and an inability to apply what critical thinking abilities he had developed to an analysis of his predicament. The implicit denial operative in his disturbed family every day of his life, the pervasive atmosphere of terror in the perpetrator group, and the culture of violation of the laws of society and basic human rights in which he was captive over a period of many years had left him with a chronic incapacity for testing reality and tolerating uncertainty.

Shocked into full submission—terrified, literally out of his mind to the point of creating many minds around a single traumatic event, Alec was left in a tomb of numbness. As he told his story, parts of him became aware for the first time that its events had actually happened to him, not to some other little boy. He also became aware that the part of him that had been paralyzed did not have to stay that way. The trauma could actually be over with forever. The witnessing and testimony were inextricably connected to the subjective experience of the trauma abating.

Now there was no more pretending. From Alec's despair came a chorus of denial and recantation followed by an integrated sense of knowing what he had always known, to echo his words. It was still too dangerous to make associations to his perpetrators and to their intentions; that would come later. Occasionally, Alec expressed deep gratitude for the chance to have someone listen to those parts of him which he felt no one would ever hear from, which he had been explicitly told no one would ever believe.

Still, he felt the need periodically to attack our connection and my goodwill toward him in order to regulate his own strange attachment compromises, ward off the interference of more memories, reenact the assault on relationship that would have to be revisited many times in the months ahead, and most of all sustain bonds with his parents and their imagined innocence. Witnessing the original trauma was a turning point, however: after those sessions, there was considerably less recanting and denying, and a deeper and more consistent commitment to listening to himself emerged.

A couple of weeks later, Alec completed a major element of his testimonial about shock treatment torture and training. He remembered in fragments that the perpetrators had sexualized it at the end when the leader instructed the adults to masturbate as Alec was being shocked. Whether this was part of the omnipotent fantasy he cultivated to temporarily master the events or whether the group actually climaxed to his pain remained unclear. He recalled being carried off and tenderly dressed by the leader who at that moment felt strong and protective. So his first human contact following torture created another layer of

> trauma bonding, and putting together that this man was the same man who had orchestrated the torture took some time, as Alec's attachment fears were more complex than any others. Finally, after weeks of work, Alec was able to identify both of his parents in the circle of adults, and that was the most devastating part of the memory. Behind it was another: Alec was able to evoke an earlier ritual of sorts in which his parents publicly turned him over to the group and officially ended their parental relationship with him.
>
> Some renewed protest responses emerged spontaneously, and Alec decided on his own to go into the memory of the physical pain to completely unlock the part of himself frozen in the electrocution trauma. This new piece of internal theater had the earmarks of an adult's taking appropriate responsibility for a child, reversing some of the internalized relational paradigms where children service the adults while pretending they have good parents. By facing the most excruciating of the physical and attachment pains and betrayals, Alec was able consciously to work through the convulsing of the first few years of the therapy. In the end it was his healthy anger affirming that he no longer wanted to be stuck with that pain that motivated this piece of reclaiming himself. What Alec wanted was to put his own holding arms around his child self and remove the posttraumatized boy from the arms of the perpetrator. Alec's description embodied the restorative fantasy operations newly developed to alter the past in the present and to cultivate a new sense of agency.

As Slavin (1997) states, when agency is taken away or toyed with, memory becomes unstable. When impaired agency begins to heal from the damage of cumulative trauma, not only does memory return but the ability to synthesize and integrate memory—and the ability to deploy fantasy operations (instead of dissociative solutions) to rework helplessness—also return or are developed for the first time.

THE WITNESS AND THE WITNESSED

> I think it is important to recognize how much we get from our patients. Our patients are holding environments for us, as well as we for them. We organize ourselves through their presence. We immerse ourselves in them on a daily basis, and this immersion restores and enriches (not only drains) us. They give

> us a chance to use our minds and feelings creatively and usefully. We come up against our (and their) walls and find ways to keep flowing. (Eigen, 1998, p. 42)

With all that has been written about working with traumatic reenactments and transference analysis, clinicians and theorists can forget that the act of listening and witnessing the testimony of survivors is most fundamental to the reparative process. As psychotherapists, we take it for granted that we know how to listen and hear people in their pain but we have much to learn, primarily from our patients. Both the suffering and the complex maneuvering to minimize suffering of the dissociative survivor, however fractured and internally inconsistent, need to be witnessed. An atmosphere of safety is a precondition for the testimony and for gently but continuously steering traumatized people toward their pain.

Through testimony, the narrator reverses the process of objectification and loss of identity: "to testify is to engage precisely in the process of re-finding one's own proper name, one's signature" (Felman, 1995, p. 53). Through testimony and witnessing, the legacy of annihilation inherent in trauma is subjected to the reparative processes of making an impact and making a difference on the other. The patient's awareness of his/her traumatization cannot be presupposed. In fact, knowledge about trauma "can only happen through testimony: it cannot be separated from it. It can only unfold itself in the process of testifying, but it can never become a substance that can be possessed by either speaker or listener outside of this dialogic process" (Felman, 1995, p. 53). This illuminates one of the many problems in translating that which takes place in the clinical hour to courtrooms and legal proceedings, and even to case presentation.

Testimony as a process refers to the healing and *empowerment* aspect of language itself and reverses the *obliteration* of language and connection that took place in trauma. Using language and informed silence to penetrate to the state of being wounded and helpless is to both enter the state of paralysis imposed by trauma and held in dissociative states, and to foster a reemergence from that psychic paralysis. Testimony also provides a link between the psychological and the political, between the private and the public, and its power can help restore affective ties and integrate fragmented experience. Without denying the reality of the transference/countertransference, and without ignoring the issue of unconscious conflict, clinicians have to work from a nonneutral commitment to help patients convert a sociopolitical crime from an individual illness into something amenable to cultural elaboration (Becker, 1996).

Rape and child abuse take place in the universes of sexual, gender, family, and interpersonal politics; like political torture, they may be regarded as pathologies of power relationships. Consequently, the posture of "neutrality" for caregivers is a fallacy when it comes to torture, child abuse, and organized violence against innocents, a variety of denial (Simpson, 1996). It must be revised so that doing nothing, or behaving as if nothing has happened, or not analyzing the meaning of what has happened is not neutrality. Not only is it a pathological form of denial but also it is actually enabling to perpetrators.

It is impossible to treat survivors of severe childhood trauma and remain morally neutral about some of our societal norms. Quoting Montaigne who four hundred years ago wrote that "science without conscience is but the death of the soul," Simpson states: "No doctor feels bound to be neutral toward cancer. Why should we treat torture, the cancer of freedom, any differently?" (1995, p. 209). Becker's (1996) position supports Simpson's: apolitical treatment of trauma, including the use of some clinical language and attitudes that excessively pathologize and decontextualize victims' responses and posttraumatic symptoms can mirror the self-justifying attitudes of victimizers. Cautioning against converting ourselves into traumatizing agents in our roles as helping professionals, Becker reminds us that the recovery from trauma, particularly the restoration of dignity and self-respect, is catalyzed when trauma survivors are regarded less as individually disturbed and more as people suffering the consequences of a disturbed society. Unarguably, traumatic experience and the search for meaning it triggers must be understood in terms of the patient's relationship with both him/herself and his/her social surround, not least since outcomes are influenced by always evolving forces located both within the individual and in the larger interpersonal, cultural, and political domains (Summerfield, 1996). Understanding the suffering of victims who cope and transcend and of those who do not can only be achieved, according to Summerfield, when the mental health field makes common cause with other disciplines and with the testimonies of the survivor populations themselves.

Creamer (1996) expresses in cognitive terms what most traumatologist-clinicians from Janet and Freud to Herman (1992), Courtois (1988), Briere (1992b), Van der Kolk (1995; 1996), Bromberg (1994; 1996b), and Davies and

Frawley (1994) recommend: recovery from severe trauma requires two conditions. First, reminders of the experience must be made available in a manner that will activate the traumatic memory network (affects, sensations, relational configurations, and meanings), since the personality alterations that coalesced around traumatic experience cannot be modified if the network remains dormant or dissociatively out of consciousness. And second, again so that modification can occur, information inconsistent with what is contained in that network must be made available—Nachmani's (1995) benevolent or compassionate disruption.

Like Creamer, most clinicians, whether working from cognitive, hypnotic, or relational psychoanalytic approaches, seek to access the direct perceptual substrate of traumatic experience within the therapy dialogue often enough and for long enough and at a mutually regulated pace and intensity that modification can occur. "Moving on" must involve a new engagement with benevolent interpersonal reality. And this benevolence must demonstrate itself and include a sharing of horror, speechlessness, and powerlessness. "What inundates a traumatized life is, really, at once overwhelming, void of meaning, and unsayable. That is what people in pain are telling us, if only we will hear" (Egendorf, 1995, p. 20). Though trauma may remain incomprehensible, through testimony and through countertransference experience it becomes accessible.

Foa and Kozak (1986) suggest that PTSD, like other anxiety disorders, can be construed as reflecting a pathological fear structure. Pathological fear structures are hypothesized to contain excessive response elements resistant to modification and also to include unrealistic appraisals of nondangerous stimuli that produce avoidance. The fear structure must be activated with matching input on the one hand in order for it to be modified—yet the information to be processed in the course of therapy will, on the other hand, be incompatible with the structure's pathological elements. This essential cognitive model, like Creamer's proposal, fails to take into account the complexity of the testimonial and witnessing processes, nor does it reflect communication through enactment or the use of the transference/countertransference to access and then moderate dissociated traumatic experience. Indeed, many cognitive approaches downplay the importance of the relationship between therapist and patient in favor of the linear transformation that can take place through reeducation, interpretation, and the replacement of old thoughts with new ones. In practice, the treatment of severe trauma survivors does involve accessing fear structures, unrealistic appraisals, and avoidance strategies; however the working through is hardly a linear or simply didactic process. In order to uncover and witness traumatic memories, therapists must confront, and in some manner transcend, their own feelings of horror and the desire to look away as well as the their voyeurism. Hegeman (1997) compares cognitive and psychoanalytic approaches to trauma therapy and reconstruction, referring first to the former.

> There are many recommendations that the transference be diluted as much as possible by the use of treatment teams, and changes in therapist are often encouraged. The idea of rebuilding trust gradually through a deeply valued analytic relationship, or of the treatment room as a special place for trust and play, free enough of reality constraints for the self to be re-imagined, is nonexistent for the cognitive behavioral approach. (Hegeman, 1997, p. 151)

Perhaps Bromberg's (1980) dual emphasis on empathy and anxiety, and the negotiated dialectic between attunement and confrontation best mirrors the essential features of transformative and interactional witnessing. Bromberg (1996b) believes that there is no way for a patient's personal narrative to be truly transformed through a cognitive editing process alone. Rather, only a change in the perceptual reality—which arises out of witnessing and testifying from the direct experience of the dissociated self-states involved in the traumatic experience—can make mutative alterations in the cognitive reality that defines the patient's internal object world. Without direct access to the affect, memories, belief systems, and programming, a severely traumatized patient may remain fundamentally isolated, permanently subjugated to the tyrannizing systems of childhood.

Such a transformative dialogue differs radically from neutral narration and listening, and brings new meaning to the term witnessing. Now an interactive process, it introduces a new relationship, and a shared consciousness, into the dissociative psyche's splits, blank spots, and points of traumatic overwhelm. Based on mutuality and a sharing of power, and with a substantial power of its own (harboring no intention to harm), the new relationship constitutes a bridge to the terror, anxiety, and pain that have existed previously in isolation, a bridge that the patient can choose to use or not. The challenge for the interactive witness is to tolerate confusion, ambiguity, and contradictory realities without prematurely foreclosing meaning or attempting to resolve paradox. Its successful resolution reverses the original traumatizing domination, intrusion, and appropriation of the victim's psyche.

Witnessing from within the transference/countertransference matrix means that the therapist cannot listen without getting his/her hands, mind, self, and spirit dirty. The clinician's struggle with his/her own confusion and painful affective states is as much a part of the witnessing process as inquiry, empathy, or interpretation. In contrast to the contentions of some of the more concrete or cognitive or hypnotism-based approaches, the revisionist message here (Egendorf, 1995; Ehrenberg, 1992; Bromberg, 1996b) is that treatment cannot be completely or even mostly "managed" or orchestrated. The listening process is not an uncontaminating one. The traumatic reenactments must impact the listener for the underlying perceptual substrate of the narrative to be accessed and the story to be told transformatively. "Therapy may involve skill, but it is also a form of prayer" (Eigen, 1998, p. 43).

WITNESSING AND SURVIVAL

Clinician/theorists who have spent a great deal of time in the presence of enormous suffering have attempted to organize theoretical concepts around the processes of witnessing and testimonials. Laub (1995) distinguishes three levels—being a witness to oneself, being a witness to the testimony of others, and being a witness to the process of witnessing itself. Standing in all these places at once is a key to avoiding collapse into an anxiety-relieving comfort of either arrogant and premature knowing *or* incredulity .

Hearing people through their pain is described by Egendorf (1995) as consisting of four distinct but overlapping registers: *decoding* ordinary meanings, *resonating* with the significance for another's life, *awakening* to the reality of one's experience and identity in the presence of a witnessing other, and *communing* with the other through the dialogues that occur between the witness and the witnessed. Egendorf likens this form of hearing to meditation and mindfulness. The exacting process of attending thoughtfully mandates us to rescue ourselves from distraction and preconception. "What hits in the moment of confronting trauma is ultimately nothing we can name. Literally nothing. Nor some speculative category in a philosophical system, but a life-sucking void that takes our breath away" (Egendorf, 1995, p. 20).

Egendorf encourages us to remain in a constant state of readiness to be surprised, to discover hidden meanings not immediately apparent, and also to realize—in another version of the redemptive paradigm whereby Heaven is reached via Hell—that pain and illumination are so intricately intertwined that we must direct the search for understanding into the heart of human agony. This is at the core of the reparative process of psychotherapy. When patients are ready, healing dialogues can lead them through the confrontations with death, symbolic death, threatened death, near death, intentional evil, or capricious destructiveness to accept what is given and what is taken away,

> by inviting them to speak into being the great absence in their lives. And as they do, and grow willing to turn from their reflexive turning away, we may guide them further—to verify for themselves that they, as the ones who are raised up in wakefulness to meet trauma's demand, do not perish, not even in the face of nothingness. (p. 21)

DID AND WITNESSING

The processes of witnessing and testifying are different with severely dissociative patients from those same kinds of processes with survivors of collectively experienced adult trauma (e.g., the Holocaust). During DID psychotherapy, witnessing itself is fragmented, sporadic, and often interspersed with reenactments and alternate versions of events. The narrative process may be the nonlinear outgrowth of screen memories made up of fragmented images, themselves fragments of memories representing preliminary attempts to historicize (Kornfeld, 1996), all punctuated with revelations of omnipotent fantasies organized by a child-victim struggling to make a less disturbing, less overwhelming meaning of what s/he was experiencing.

The therapist often witnesses by direct experience through projective identification and through his/her participation in reenactments. Bodily sensations of nausea and pain may alternate with numbing and distraction. The therapist's rage at the patient's perpetrators may be difficult to contain while the patient—rarely even close to anger in his/her initial presentations—works at disentangling past from present and cutting loose from the frozen terror of reexperiencing for long enough to stay in affective contact with the therapist. Sometimes the therapist feels as though s/he is lowering the patient into a dark well and straining to prevent the connecting rope from breaking: when to tug the patient back into the present and when to allow the free fall into the traumatic material is the constant dilemma for clinicians trying to balance dosing, pacing, and containing with the ultimate goal of gently advancing toward the pain the patient has spent his/her entire life trying to avoid.

Sometimes, segments of traumatic experience appear as partial constructions of what may have happened, but the mechanisms adopted by the DID patient for sheer psychic survival may mask his/her recognition of them as elements of his/her experience. With the passage of time and the deepening of the therapy process, however, the reconstruction of gaps in the patient's own history is catalyzed (Kornfeld, 1995). The possession of the past by a self in dialogue with itself and a witnessing other supplants the possession (and fragmentation) of the self by the past (and the perpetrators). For DID patients no less than for other survivors of chronic interpersonal trauma, the witnessing process is still always a double-edged sword, as returning to the scenes and affects of the trauma produces losses as well as the hoped-for transformation.

REVERSING THE DAMAGE: "HEARING PEOPLE THROUGH THEIR PAIN"

Egendorf (1995) elegantly describes how hearing people through their pain is first and foremost a privilege, and how healing dialogues can raise communication to communion where two who remain distinct meet as one. Reminding us that hearing creatively and calling out to the survivor to enable him/her to voice the hitherto unmentionable is the most potent antidote to traumatic estrangement from the self and alienation from others, Egendorf believes that the patient learns through this kind of intense meeting and discourse that such speaking is indeed possible and worthwhile. "Hearing people through their pain therefore means . . . that we draw them out in the midst of what obscures them from themselves, and use talk creatively ourselves to show, rather than to tell them, that they not their hurt are foremost" (p. 18).

The witnessing, testimonial, and remembering processes in work with severely dissociative and other severely traumatized patients confirm that they have in reality survived (i.e., that the trauma is indeed over), and allow them to become full participants in their own suffering rather than dissociative managers committed to contain it and to avoid overwhelming trauma. Becoming a full participant in the presence of an empathic and benevolent other is a core and healthy reversal of the self-betrayal institutionalized in the trauma and posttraumatic symptomatology. To the degree that the therapist is impacted and uses the experience of impact in contactful dialogue toward a true "meeting of minds" (Aron, 1996) with the patient, a reparative and redemptive mutuality replaces the domination/submission paradigm emblematic of child-abuse trauma. By taking an active role in the reconstruction of narrative history and the reformulation of meanings, the therapist is assisting the patient to differentiate from the traumatic relational matrix—to think different thoughts from the victimizer or perpetrating system, and to have different feelings from those that governed the self-hatred that left the abusers out of the picture entirely, and thus to take steps toward reclaiming an identity independent of the ideologies and denial systems of the traumatizers of childhood.

Witnessing narrative testimony and witnessing through the countertransference facilitate the patient's assertion of autonomy and separation from the internalized (and actual past and present) abusive system(s) while simultaneously opening channels for new connections with the patient's self and benevolent others. "The individual not only has a history which an observer may unravel and describe, but he is history and makes his history by virtue of his memorial activity in which past-present-future are created as mutually interacting modes of time" (Leowald, 1972, p. 409). This transformational perspective—in stark contrast to the recommendations of Loftus and Ketcham (1994) and Ofshe and Watters (1994), who emphasize cognitive-behavioral treatment of the patient's here-and-now symptoms, behaviors, and circumstances to the exclusion of renegotiating his/her past and internal representations—fully respects the dialectical relationships among past, present, and future. "The modification of the past by the present does not change what objectively happened in the past, but it changes that past which the patient carries within him as his living history" (Leowald, 1980, p. 144).

For therapy to be truly transformative, it must engage in what Brown (1994) calls subversive dialogues. In this view, the patient begins to have access to the previously dissociated world of affective responses like rage, despair, sorrow, and compassion for the self. Such therapeutic conversations reinforce mutuality, deconstruct the power relationships in the patient's past and present (including the patient's experience with the therapist), and examine potent causal/collusive factors in the culture at large. Also paramount is the consistent return to the patient of the power to define meanings, by continually guiding him/her back and forth from the therapy dialogues to his/her internal authority in order to establish what ultimately feels valid. The patient's disagreements, protests, and accusations toward the therapist must be tolerated and explored to create a climate where trust and difference can coexist; this one element of the treatment disarms dissociative defenses for cult survivors in particular, and loosens their identifications with the aggressor. The agency restored when authentic aspects of the self are freed from dissociated memories and omnipotent solutions to trauma confers the acquired power to search for and live one's own truth (Kafka, 1997). Psychotherapy's interpersonal reparations develop a self that will not be silenced or subordinated, a self that can subvert the dominant paradigms of social oppression rather than be subverted by them.

This page intentionally left blank

Notes

CHAPTER 1

1. Bremner and Brett (1997) found that dissociation in the face of trauma is a marker of long-term psychopathology; their results related to and supported Pierre Janet's (1889) turn-of-the century theories of dissociation.

2. The National Institute of Mental Health (NIMH) found that 97 percent of a sample of 100 MPD cases reported experiencing significant trauma in childhood; 83 percent reported being sexually abused, 75 percent reported being repeatedly physically abused, and 68 percent reported being both sexually and physically abused (Putnam, Guroff, Silberman, Braban, and Post, 1986). Other research findings (Bliss, 1984; Ross, Norton, and Wozney, 1989; Coons and Milsten, 1986; Ross et al., 1990), confirm sexual abuse—preponderantly incestuous and predominantly in tandem with extensive physical abuse—as the element most commonly reported by DID patients. Almost all abusive incidents examined by Putnam (1989) show extreme trauma involving sadism, torture, bondage, prostitution, isolation, severe punishment, and deprivation.

3. According to Kluft's (1996a) review of the DID literature, most child abuse is reported retrospectively in adulthood. Some studies, however, have been able either to document or corroborate independently a substantial number of reported abuse allegations (e.g., Coons, 1986; 1994; Hornstein and Putnam, 1992). These studies demonstrate that trauma can be documented in 95 percent of children and adolescents with DID and allied forms of DDNOS (dissociative disorder not otherwise specified). Ross's (1997) overview of the research across five major studies including over 700 patients, concludes that at least 88 percent of adult DID patients report childhood physical and / or sexual abuse at first assessment. (Most, incidentally, affirm continuous memory for some of the abuse throughout their lives, supporting Ross's contention that the stereotypical DID patient with no trauma memories at all before treatment reflects only a small minority of cases, and indeed may be a clue to iatrogenic, malingering, or factitious phenomena.) Ross's (1997) initial research on recantation reveals that most if not all DID patients in treatment (excepting those with either initial malingering, factitious, or iatrogenic presentations) toward integration do not recant their child abuse histories during or following therapy.

4. Secondarily, the individual can at once severely curtail and minimally preserve the capacity for reflectivity. Such depersonalized compromising (e.g., in observing self and other) has been noted to be among the major mechanisms of defense among survivors of Nazi concentration camps (Bluhm, 1999 / 1948).

5. Foote (1999) notes that the skeptical reaction to DID can largely be attributed to a specific set of transference / countertransference interactions that these patients tend to inspire in therapists. Comparing and contrasting the presentation, life histories, and underlying psychodynamics of DID and hysterical patients, Foote notes that it is the DID patient's experience of chronic interpersonal powerlessness that leads to presentation of symptoms in an unconvincing, "hysterical" manner: The "natural unconvincingness" of the DID patient is *not* the socially

adaptive interactional style of the high-functioning hysteric, says Foote, and, moreover, this style represents the DID individual's internalized expectation of agonizing impotence, often with associated rage and terror. He uses the term "pseudo-hysteria" to denote situations in which genuine psychiatric disorders such as PTSD or DID are perceived as hysterical productions.

6. See: Bremner et al. (1995; 1997); Southwick et al. (1993); Putnam (1999), Putnam and Trickett (1997), DeBellis et al. (1994a; 1994b; 1999); Charney et al. (1993); Krystal et al. (1996).

7. Personal clinical observation suggests that severe and chronic trauma (not unlike near-death experiences or chronic use of psychedelics) ruptures many kinds of psychological and neurophysiological thresholds and stimulus barriers, foreclosing some experiences and making way for others. The latter include subjectively compelling interface with "spirits" during and after specific traumas—sometimes the only sources of hope and help a patient has ever known. Whether such perceptions of benevolent "contacts" are construed as products of omnipotent fantasy, extensive hyperarousal and the vicissitudes of brain chemistry, and/or authentic mystical experience, working with severely dissociative patients requires open-mindedness and the willingness to temporarily suspend incredulity.

8. Braude (1995) has introduced terminology to categorize the enigmas of disordered awareness, disordered agency, epistemic barriers, and unusual self-ascription commonly found in the severe dissociative disorders. For example, a state is *indexical* when a person believes it to be his/her own (i.e., to be assignable to him/herself), *autobiographical* when a person experiences it as his/her own. Two or more self-states are *coreferential* when they may be ascribed to the same person, *cosensory* when they seem to be simultaneously aware of external events such as sights or sounds, *intraconscious* when they claim knowledge of the other's mental states such as feelings, memories, and/or beliefs; *coconsciousness* may reflect either cosensory and/or intraconscious features.

9. Hence, DID is predominantly a covert condition (Kluft, 1985). Its purest form is virtually isomorphic, occurring when a traumatized child creates another version of him/herself to hold traumatic or conflictual experience and/or to represent the wish to have been unaffected by it (Kluft, 1996a).

10. Rarely do single alter personalities operate without the copresence, support, or direction of others. What we call alters may actually be groups of parts operating in unison; some of our categories and labels for types still speak to the unitary conceptual approach to multiplicity inherent in our bias. In this connection, Putnam (1989) addresses the phenomenon of the "host," which is often equated with the presenting personality in treatment. An alter may actually be an alliance, a "social facade created by a more or less cooperative effort of several alters agreeing to pass as one" (p. 107). That alliance is easier to see in patients who do not dramatize their multiplicity and do not name and codify their alters; the pattern of blending and passing as one is more difficult to discern among those who have elaborated systems with large numbers of alters in complex relationships with one another, resembling three soap operas going on the same screen at once.

11. As Turner, McFarlane, and Van der Kolk (1996) have indicated, when shame of this kind dominates, avoidance reactions are pronounced and victims are likely to disclose their most traumatic experiences late in the course of treatment. Most DID patients will suffer in isolation for a long time even while firmly engaged in ongoing therapy.

12. Revisionist theorists like Haaken (1998) prefer to believe that oppressive cultural practices alone (i.e., independent of sexual violence) can evoke "storytelling" about incest, and that trauma/dissociation theorists in their quest to understand the literal are losing the symbolic. Although undoubtedly some public and private displays certainly fall into that category, *most* revelations about sexual abuse are hardly "storytelling" contrived for an audience—and severely dissociative individuals are not in the business of "concretizing cultural myths." On the contrary, the psyches of severely dissociative trauma survivors contain much of the culture's split-off knowledge of its own "sins" and crimes against humanity, making them exceedingly vulnerable scapegoats.

13. Discussing the suppression and censorship of the "Confusion of Tongues" paper, Rachman (1997) summarizes Ferenczi's brilliant early insights into sexual abuse: the robotlike obedience and emotional surrender of the child-victim in the face of domination and betrayal by the adult perpetrator; the development of adult characterological patterns from the child's use of dissociation to cope with severe early trauma; the child-victim's renunciation of his/her own reality testing to conform to the needs of caretakers/abusers; the presence of pervasive confusion in the mind of the victim as an overriding state, which results in the belief that the abuse was an act of love rather than exploitation for the adult's own gratification; and identification with the aggressor, leading to the shared pseudo-delusion that victim and perpetrator are in a mutually tender and beneficial relationship.

CHAPTER 2

1. The New Testament is more child-friendly. For example, Jesus preaches that "unless you change and become as little children, you shall never enter the Kingdom of Heaven" (Matthew 18:3); later when the apostles try to keep some children away from him, Jesus says: "Let the little children come to me" (Matthew 19:14). Paul (II Timothy 3:15) writes to Timothy (son of a Jewish mother and Greek father): "You have known the Holy Scriptures since your childhood," and so on.

2. The Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals had intervened to stop the repeated physical abuse of a female child by her foster mother (Solnit, 1994; Weiner and Kurpius, 1995).

3. Fergusson and Mullen (1999), summarizing and integrating the results of a large number of child sexual-abuse prevalence studies, conclude that estimates suggest up to one-third of women may report exposure to unwanted sexual attention, with the majority of studies suggesting prevalence between 15 percent and 30 percent, with similar estimates reported for males (approximately 30 percent, estimates lying between 3 and 15 percent). According to Putnam (1999), the prevalence of child maltreatment in the United States has reached more than 1.6 million *confirmed* new cases per year. (Reports based on the annual survey by the National Committee to Prevent Child abuse [Wang and Daro, 1998] reveal that over 3 million allegations of child maltreatment were made to child-protective agencies nationwide.) Putnam's (1999) review of the breakdown of the confirmed cases reveals: 52 percent from neglect, 25 percent from physical abuse, 13 percent related to sexual abuse, and 10 percent from other sources. According to his review of the literature the number of children seriously injured due to abuse has quadrupled from 1986 to 1993. Briere (1992b) states that reported victimization rates jump to between 36 percent and 70 percent in clinical, hospital, and psychiatric settings, depending on the study.

4. According to a 1997 survey of adolescents conducted by the Commonwealth Fund (Schoen and Davis et al., 1998) one in eight (13 percent) high school boys had been physically or sexually abused or both. Two-thirds (66 percent) of boys who reported physical abuse said it occurred at home, and 68 percent reported that the abuser was a family member. Of those boys sexually abused, one-third (35 percent) said the abuse happened at home and less than half (45 percent) said the abuser was a family member. Approximately 21 percent (one in five) high school girls surveyed reported that she had been physically or sexually abused. The majority of the abuse occurred at home (53 percent) and more than once (65 percent). In their recent review of sexual abuse of male children and adolescents, Holmes and Slap (1998), like Fergusson and Mullen, conclude that such abuse of boys is common, but often goes undetected and untreated. Holmes and Slap found that although boys across the sociodemographic spectrum appear to be at risk for sexual abuse, the boys who were at highest risk were less than 13 years old, nonwhite, of low socioeconomic status, and living without their fathers. Typically, the abuse occurred outside of the home, was repeated, and involved penetration. Of particular concern was the finding that the number of children who report being exposed to acts of abuse that involve sexual penetration is as high as 13 percent for females and 11.3 percent for males, with the majority of studies reporting prevalence figures in the range of 5 percent to 10 percent. Although

females report an overall higher rate of sexual abuse compared to males, when it comes to the more severe forms of abuse involving penetration, the estimates do not vary widely between boys and girls (Fergusson and Mullen, 1999).

5. In one of his earlier comparative reviews of the research literature on child abuse, Finkelhor (1994) found that the studies were extremely variable in their scope and quality and that the variation in rates (found, for example between countries) probably does not accurately reflect variation in true prevalence as much as it reflects methodological limitations, sampling differences, and definition differences across studies. The influence of a society's overall consciousness about child abuse and dissociation issues on both the researcher's methods and interpretations and the response sets of the participants must be questioned consistently. (Prevalence rates range from a low of 2 percent reported in France, Great Britain, and Sweden to a high of 16 percent in the Netherlands, which is most comparable with the U.S. prevalence data. Countries in the middle prevalence range included Australia and New Zealand, Costa Rica, Canada, and Austria. Apparently the screening questions and interviewing sensitivity was most sophisticated in the Dutch study, where the highest rates were found.) According to most researchers (Briere, 1992a; Finkelhor, 1994; 1998; Enns et al., 1995; Oates, 1996; Fergusson and Mullen, 1999) the differences in findings from prevalence studies reflect some of the problems inherent in this research. These include heterogeneity among those who have been classified as sexually abused; indeterminacy in the criteria for defining abuse; the source of the sample (in terms of education, socioeconomic status, and ethnicity); the scope of the definition used in the survey; the upper age-limit of "child" (sometimes eighteen, sometimes fourteen); variations in the methods of questioning about abuse; sampling techniques (i.e., random sample, college students, community sample, sex of respondents); the response rate; and the accuracy of the respondents' memory. Oates (1996) notes the contrast between the high figures of prevalence studies with studies of reported incidence that tend to give lower figures. According to the reported incidence statistics, sexual abuse in the United States in 1993 was 5 cases per 1,000 children, with the incidence of *substantiated* cases revealing approximately 2 cases per 1,000 (Daro and McCurdy, 1993). In spite of the methodological flaws that might exist in prevalence studies or in the analysis of notification figures, Oates (1996) believes that the extreme difference between reported incidence and prevalence confirms the view that most child sexual abuse goes unreported. Fergusson and Mullen (1999) conclude that despite the debates about the true prevalence of abuse when less stringent definitions are applied, the prevalence of more *severe* forms of abuse involving penetration cannot be regarded as an inconsequential problem of childhood. These authors offer the example that if physically intrusive CSA only had a true prevalence rate of 3 percent, this would still mean that one child within each class of thirty schoolchildren in the U.S. would contain at least one child who was the victim of what is considered to be severe abuse.)

6. Especially since the failure of several important ritual-abuse day-care cases (e.g., in Manhattan Beach, California, and Jordan, Minnesota), articles condemning the reality or possibility of ritual abuse have appeared in magazines as varied as *The New Yorker, Harper's, Vanity Fair, National Review, Redbook, Mother Jones, Village Voice,* and *Playboy* (Jenkins, 1998). Further, a wave of debunking books (e.g., Jenkins, 1998; Hakken, 1998; Ofshe and Watters, 1994; Hacking, 1995; Kincaid, 1998) have been produced in recent years by academics (usually, but not always nonclinicians), all with rather acerbic and contemptuous approaches to the possibility of ritual abuse or other forms of organized perpetrator groups or networks of child exploitation.

7. This elevationist stance toward retractors often occurs without any consideration of the individual's complete psychiatric history complex overlapping dynamics of diagnostic comorbidity, factitious disorder, malingering, psychological and economic opportunism, not to mention the potentially powerful effects of posttherapy suggestive social influence (for example, from family members, lawyers, groups of false memory advocates or other recanters, and sensationalist media presentations). See Brown and Scheflin, 1999; Marmer, 1999; Brown, Frish-

holz, and Scheflin, 1999; Armstrong, 1999; Scheflin and Brown, 1999 for discussions of these issues.

8. Both cause and effect of the disinformation so destructive to patients and therapists alike are spurious generalizations based on a few poster-child cases, like this one from Jenkins (1998, p. 183): "Generally, a woman or teenage girl would consult a therapist for a personal problem like an eating disorder only to be convinced after some weeks or months that her real problem could be traced to an early history of ritual abuse in which her parents participated. The victim would sever connections with her family. . . ."

9. Former Representative Joseph P. Kennedy II claims that over 100,000 children are involved in child prostitution in the United States. "Frankly, most of my congressional colleagues have no idea that such an industry even exists. . . . We think of ourselves as civilized people living in modern times, yet child prostitution is a growing problem in both developing and developed countries" (1996, p. 2).

10. One of the biggest problems with child prostitution cases when they are prosecuted at all, according to Flores (1996), is that timely and efficient prosecution is rare; it typically takes months after an arrest for cases to get to trial. That means the pimp will be out on the streets almost immediately, and the child-victims are quite aware of this.

11. The Internet is, of course, an unsurpassed instrument for the distribution of kiddie porn ("chicken porn") (Muntarbhorn, 1996), which is generated both intra- and extrafamilially (Tyler and Stone, 1985). Until 1977, few states legally prohibited the use of children in obscene material or performances (Pierce, 1984). Back in the late 1980s, Crewdson (1988) wrote that the computer industry estimated that there were approximately 2,500 pedophile-related bulletin boards operating at any one time: "since they are mostly run from garages and spare bedrooms, it is impossible to keep an accurate account" (p. 104). In light of the incalculable increase in Internet–related child-abuse crime, a press release was recently issued by the Office of Justice Programs of the United States Attorney General's office announcing $2.5 million in grants would be given to help local law enforcement agencies combat Internet crimes against children (OJP, 2000).

12. Perhaps the most disturbing (and for many simply impossible to believe) part of child (and adult) pornography—the snuff-film industry—is still largely undocumented. According to some survivors' reports, a child can be kidnapped, tortured, raped, and murdered on videotape and the tape copied and distributed on the black market days or even weeks before his or her face even appears on a milk carton.

13. Approximately one-third of a national sample of psychologists reported that they had treated at least one case of ritual abuse (Jaroff, 1993). Braun and Grey (1987) estimate that about 28 percent of all patients with MPD have undergone ritual abuse; among inpatients the figure may go as high as 50 percent (Braun, 1989). In their national investigation of 270 cases of substantiated sexual abuse of 1,639 children in day care, Finkelhor, Williams, and Burns (1988) found that 13 percent of the cases involved allegations of ritual abuse.

14. Ritual abuse shares underlying dynamics with incestuous abuse (Russell, 1996; Herman, 1992), which also often involves torture and captivity. Indeed, Amnesty International's (1973) definition of political torture blurs the distinction between intra- and extrafamilial abuse—"the systematic and deliberate infliction of acute pain in any form by one person on another . . . in order to accomplish the purpose of the former against the will of the latter" (p. 31).

15. Numerous authors have described similar reports of other ritual actions including excreting on Bibles, defacing Christian images by raping children with crucifixes, publicly rejecting God and accepting Satan, engineering mock marriages to the devil or other malevolent deities, drinking blood, urine, feces, eating human flesh, being locked in cages or jails, being told that parents or siblings would be killed if they told anyone about the abuse, being held underwater, being threatened with guns and knives, being buried in the ground in coffins or "boxes," being injected with needles, bled, drugged, being photographed during the abuse, being tied upside down over a star or being hung from a pole or hook, being burned with candles,

being terrorized with snakes, spiders, or insects, having blood poured on their heads, hearing songs and chants, being forced to kidnap children from playgrounds, being given electric shocks, having observed animals being killed, having observed torture, mutilation, and murder of infants and children, being taken to churches, graveyards, other day-care centers, and other peoples' houses for sexual abuse and/or rituals, being threatened with supernatural powers (Noblitt and Perskin, 1995; Ross, 1995a; Ryder, 1994; Sinason, 1994; Smith, 1993; Young et al., 1991; Young, 1992; Faller, 1994; Waterman et al., 1993; Hudson, 1991; Bybee and Mowbray, 1993; Jonker and Jonker-Bakker, 1997).

16. Although some perpetrators operate out of pure malevolent instinct, others were trained in mind control in the course of their own abuse as children and/or systematically as apprentices to the abuse of others. Some patients have reported that their mind-control training was witnessed by groups of "doctors" with clipboards who were studying the methods of torture and brainwashing. During these training sessions these patients were trained to not see the "scientists" in the room or to see them as if they were behind a wall or a two-way mirror.

17. Smith (1993) presents data on 52 adults who claimed to be survivors of childhood ritual abuse and found that perpetrators were reportedly fathers (67 percent), mothers (42 percent), stepfathers (31 percent), stepmothers (23 percent), aunts (21 percent), uncles (27 percent), nonfamily member physicians (33 percent), nonfamily member clergy (17 percent), and nonfamily member teachers (17 percent). In her study of the occupations of family and nonfamily alleged perpetrators she found physicians (33 percent), teachers (25 percent), clergy (22 percent), police (15 percent). These findings were more or less consistent with an earlier study (Driscoll and Wright, 1991) that investigated the experience of 37 adult mental health patients who were alleged survivors of ritual abuse. In the latter study, perpetrators included fathers (63 percent), uncles (41 percent), mothers (38 percent), stepfathers (35 percent), stepmothers (22 percent). Other abusers included physicians (54 percent), neighbors (41 percent), friends and relatives (49 percent), church members (35 percent), police (27 percent), teachers (22 percent), morticians (19 percent).

18. Goodwin (1994) recounts the documented crimes of the Marquis de Sade to expose that plausibility: "What passions are detailed in story and deed? To mention a few: locking in cages, threatening with death, burying in coffins, holding under water, threatening with weapons, drugging and bleeding, tying upside down and burning, wearing of robes and costumes, staging of mock marriages, having victims witness torture, having them witness homicides, pouring or drinking of blood, and taking victims to churches and cemeteries. I mention these acts in particular among the 600 sadistic practices described in de Sade's book, because these are 15 of the 16 types of allegations found characteristically in children and adult psychiatric patients complaining of 'ritual abuse' in the 1980's and 1990's. The only one missing from de Sade's 1789 inventory is photography (not yet invented); its place is taken by use of peepholes and use of stages at the orgies, where each libertine could be seen to perform with his entourage of victims" (pp. 483–484).

19. According to Grand (2000), the perpetrator experiences his/her greatest triumph and concealment when the victim is coerced into perpetration and complicity. In such conditions, the real history of the perpetrator's culpability is occluded by the victim's/survivor's "shared monstrosity. . . . It is a tribute to the perpetrator's brilliance that the survivor's coerced transgressions obscure questions of agency, responsibility, guilt, and innocence. In the survivor's breach of his own moral integrity, the perpetrator locates a mirror for his own disavowed culpability" (p. 93). "The victim is haunted by her own moral failure, and the perpetrator is cleansed and obscured in the survivor's guilt" (pp. 94–95).

20. The most recent and conclusive review of victim-perpetrator relationships (Fergusson and Mullen, 1999), indicates that contrary to popular belief, the majority of episodes of child sexual abuse do not involve immediate family members (between approximately 6 percent and 32 percent of CSA incidents were committed by family members including parents, stepparents, and siblings; the weighted average estimate from the series of studies reviewed suggested

that overall 10.4 percent of CSA incidents involved close family members). Rather, most sexual abuse is committed by other acquaintances who are known to the victim (between 20 percent and 50 percent of CSA perpetrators are described in this category, with a weighted average estimate overall of 47.8 percent). These authors also found that when sexual abuse did involve family members it was more often of a *severe* and *recurrent* nature. (This fact may explain the popular belief that most common forms of CSA involve intrafamilial abuse because these incidents are more likely to come to attention in various ways.) This review also found stepparents to be at far higher risk (approximately ten times higher) of being perpetrators than biological parents.

21. Based on the estimated number of victims reported by state inmates in 1991, the more than 60,000 violent offenders who had child victims may have had as many as 95,000 victims. Three out of four child victims were female. More than 40 percent of child victims of incarcerated violent offenders suffered forcible rape, injury, or death as a result of the crime. About one in seven child victimizers reported that the victim died as a consequence of the violent crime; death was substantially more likely to be reported when the victim was an adult.

22. Two comprehensive studies (Abel et al., 1987; Becker and Quinsey, 1993) found extremely high rates of sexual offending. Of 561 perpetrators in Abel and colleagues' sample, there were a total of 291,737 paraphilic acts with a total of *195,407* victims. Of those, molesters of girls reported an average of 19.8 victims each; molesters of boys reported an average of 150.2 victims each. The numbers of victims per abuser documented by the legal system differ substantially from those acknowledged via anonymous self-reporting: for example, Groth, Longo, and McFadin (1982) found that incarcerated sex offenders admitted anonymously to two to five times more offenses than had come to the attention of the criminal justice system; Weinrott and Saylor (1991) found that a sample of 67 child molesters incarcerated for molesting 136 victims admitted to more than 8,000 sexual acts with 959 children.

23. "Distortions provide offenders with an interpretive framework that permits them to construe the behaviors and motives of their victims as sexual and allows them to justify and excuse to themselves (and others) their offending behavior" (Howitt, 1995, p. 93).

24. In these studies, researchers document that over one-half of the abusers had repeated early grades in school or been placed in special education classes, and about one-third suffered from documented neurocognitive impairment.

25. The diverse array of theories of pedophilia include: sexual learning theory, precondition models, cognitive distortion theory, psychodynamic (including Jungian) approaches, feminist theories of pedophilia as gender politics (including the role of pornography), theories of pedophilia as a biological quirk, and theories relating pedophilia to disturbances in fantasy including influences from pornography, cultural myths, and the media Howitt, 1995).

26. Estimates of the percentage of child sexual-abuse perpetrators who report being sexually abused in childhood typically range only from 20 percent to 30 percent (Freund, Watson, and Dickey; Murphy and Smith, 1996).

27. The abuser, having experienced the extremes of powerlessness, helplessness, lovelessness, and rage, at the hands of early caretakers, fantasizes the fetish as a weapon with which to beat the parent at his/her own game (Eigen, 1984).

28. In their review of eight major studies of gender issues and victim-perpetrator dynamics conducted during the past decade, Fergusson and Mullen (1999) found that for *female victims* of child sexual abuse between 92 percent and 99 percent of the perpetrators were men, while for *male victims* between 63 percent and 86 percent of the perpetrators were male. In their research on documented child abuse in day-care settings, Finkelhor and Williams (1988) found that female perpetrators were much more common in child-care settings than elsewhere: approximately 20 percent of the abuse of both boys and girls was by a female perpetrator acting alone or with other females, and approximately 33 percent of the abuse involved female perpetrators acting in concert with male perpetrators. Greenfield's (1996) survey of incarcerated criminals reveals that males were the perpetrator in 97 percent of cases. In Groth's (1979) study of con-

victed male sex offenders, of the 60 percent who claimed to have been victimized in childhood, 20 percent of the victimization was committed by females. In the Burgess et al. (1987) study of serial rapists, *of the* 56 percent who claimed to have been sexually abused, 40 percent reported female perpetrators. For detailed discussion about female perpetrators, see Elliott (1994).

CHAPTER 3

1. In actual clinical work with dissociative patients, understanding the exaggeration of external reality as a defense against intrapsychic conflict (Inderbitzin and Levy, 1994) must be balanced against the dissociation of painful reality, the use of intrapsychic conflict as a defense against historical reality, and the disturbing intrapsychic fantasies that arise from traumatic experiences. Neither the use of fantasy as a defense against reality nor the use of reality as a defense against fantasy should come to dominate the field or our clinical formulations about trauma and dissociation.

2. Revulsion and disbelief sometimes prevent clinicians from asking questions and listening effectively (Ganzarain and Buchele, 1989). In the psychoanalytic community, the intergenerational transmission of blind spots regarding sexual abuse (Kramer, 1994) and severe dissociative disorders has produced contemptuous, marginalizing references to this patient population—"bad borderlines," "bad" hysterics, litigious feminist zealots, easily suggestible patients with identity diffusion, fantasy-prone confabulators, disability and welfare chiselers, manipulators, attention-seekers, liars, members of "a cult of victimization" exercising "the abuse excuse."

3. The iatrogenic hypothesis has never been empirically validated (Kluft, 1989; Kluft and Foote, 1999; Ross, 1997), and there is not one documented case of iatrogenic MPD in the clinical literature; still, it is repeatedly invoked in the ongoing debates about DID, recovered memory, and trauma therapy. Although some critics have argued that DID is a North American culture-bound condition (for example, Fahy, 1988), Kluft and Foote (1999) describe how numerous studies including cohorts from the United States, Canada, the Netherlands, Norway, and Turkey consistently demonstrate comparable findings that previously undiagnosed DID occurs in 3 to 6 percent of psychiatric inpatients and 5 to 18 percent of patients in substance-abuse treatment settings. According to these authors, if DID were a culture-bound syndrome, predominantly iatrogenic and primarily determined by social psychological factors, then one would expect variations across cultures with more DID patients being found in those nations in which the disorder had become part of the professional cultural idioms and in which professionals would presumably have become more "adept" at inducing (or implanting) the features of DID. Research has consistently documented the role of trauma-related events in precipitating dissociative features and dissociative disorders, however. Ross (1997) claims that "the quality of argument used by DID skeptics is evidence of the failure of liberal arts education in the English-speaking world. None of the published critiques of DID have any base in research or data" (p. 226). Kluft (1996a) deconstructs their circularity: "Since DID cannot be legitimate, it must be artifactual, and then it is merely a matter of assigning blame for the initiation and perpetuation of the clinical picture" (p. 354). While recognizing the possibility that extremely bad therapy could conceivably create an iatrogenic pathway to some of the patterns of DID, and while questioning the creation of analogs of alter personalities among college students as proof of the iatrogenic hypothesis, both Ross and Kluft continue to caution therapists to be aware of the potential for secondary gains for some patients from displaying DID symptoms and, accordingly, to avoid amplifying them unnecessarily.

4. McHugh (1997), a particularly vituperative critic, contends that the "twisted logic" of the DID literature has "deranged the discourse of psychiatry and cultivated a Sherlock Holmes fantasy among many psychotherapists" (p. ix). Piper (1997) likens support for the MPD/DID paradigm to psychiatry's embrace of lobotomy and he warns that it may drain the lifeblood of, and permanently damage the public trust in, the wisdom of the mental health professions.

5. A document issued by the U.S. Advisory Board on Child Abuse and Neglect Worldwide (cited in Cavaliere, 1995), and presented to Congress and the Clinton administration, concluded that "at least 2000 children a year—five each day—die at the hands of their parents or caretakers; more pre-school children are killed by their parents than die from falls, choking, suffocation, drowning or fires" (p. 34). Moreover, as the U.S. Advisory Report indicates, some 18,000 children annually are permanently disabled and another 142,000 are seriously injured from severe abuse.

6. Recent breakthroughs in brain research reveal alarming dimensions to trauma's effect on mind and body, particularly in young children. Developmental traumatologist DeBellis and colleagues (1999) recently documented that the overwhelming stress of maltreatment experiences in childhood is associated with adverse brain development: specifically, PTSD subjects had smaller intracranial and cerebral volumes than matched controls; the total midsagittal area of the corpus collosum and middle and posterior regions remained smaller, while right, left, and total lateral ventricles were proportionately larger than controls after adjustment for intracranial volume. Brain volume robustly and positively correlated with age of onset of PTSD trauma and negatively correlated with duration of abuse. Results of a prospective longitudinal study of 166 abused girls age six to fifteen conducted by Putnam (1999) found that compared to matched controls, the abused girls demonstrated permanent biological system abnormalities (hypothalamic-pituitary-adrenal axis, sympathetic nervous system, physical growth and development, immune system function, hypothalamic-pituitary-gonadal axis). These biological changes relate to the psychopathologies of affect regulation, attentional problems, and possibly disturbances in sense of self or identity. Directly experiencing and/or witnessing violence can alter the brain's anatomy and chemistry in ways that inhibit learning, concentration, attachment, empathy; consequences include impairment of the immune system and shortening of the life span. Accordingly the results of a study by Felitti and colleagues (1998) investigating the relationship between childhood abuse (and household dysfunction) and adult medical problems found a strong graded relationship between breadth of exposure to abuse and multiple risk factors for several of the leading causes of death in adulthood (including ischemic heart disease, cancer, chronic lung disease, skeletal fractures, liver disease, and HIV). In essence, experience can become biology, so the traumatization of children is a public health and human rights issue, not just a law-enforcement problem.

7. Discussing the painful irony in the dissociative disorders field when in the past decade the mental health professions have at their disposal an unprecedented amount of knowledge about how to diagnose and treat patients with severe dissociative disorders, Kluft and Foote (1999) note that profound impediments continue to exist limiting optimal utilization of this information in the service of patient care (for example, lack of widespread knowledge about dissociative disorders in the professional community, ongoing skepticism about the legitimacy of the disorder, the recent backlash against trauma treatment and traumatic memories, the rise of managed care with its devaluation of intensive forms of psychotherapy, the lack of mental health research funds available to study severe dissociative disorders, and the ongoing dominance within the mental health professions of paradigms that do not accord a place of value and importance—including in training curricula of the mental health professions' educational endeavors—to traumatic stress and the spectrum of disorders resulting from interpersonal violence). According to these authors, these forces have a detrimental effect on the well-being and treatment of patients with DID and other severe dissociative disorders and compromise their access to appropriate care, thereby revictimizing a victim population.

8. According to Ross (1995b) the name of the disorder was changed (in discussions of the American Psychiatric Association committee revising the *Diagnostic and Statistical Manual (DSM IV)* "in an effort to neutralize the pervasive fixed negative cathexis in psychiatry of the term multiple personality disorder. . . . Whether this will prove to be a successful political strategy or not, time will tell" (p. 66). In his discussion comparing *DSM IV* with *ICD–10*, Ross articulates the highly political nature of attitudes, inclusion criteria, and classification of certain disorders,

which he views as ideologically—not scientifically—based; he suggests that *DSM IV* still suffers from "the vestigial effects of Freudian theory" (p. 66).

9. Discussing the debates over the legitimacy of ritual abuse, Noblitt and Perskin (1995) explain the many arguments supporting the existence of ritual abuse. Among the most important are ample historical and anthropological evidence that ritual abuse has occurred in a variety of cultures throughout history; confessions by some perpetrators of ritual abuse and other cult-based criminal activity; convictions in criminal cases and guilty verdicts in civil cases against individuals accused of ritual abuse; cases of ritual murder (e.g., Matamoros) are a matter of public record, as are cult abuses by for example, the People's Temple, the Branch Davidians; survivors from all over report similar ritual, torture, and mind-control experiences, and respond to exactly the same trigger words, programmed cues, and invocations.

10. Bowart (1994) identifies problems with FBI Special Agent Ken Lanning's (1992) public conclusions, often cited (by backlash writers), that there is no evidence of any truth to reports of ritual abuse: Lanning's story and conclusions have changed; the FBI cannot find abuse because they won't come to a crime scene to see it when called (sometimes they arrest the complainant); Lanning admits (in a *Vanity Fair* dialogue with Leslie Bennets, 1993, p. 42) to having never interviewed one survivor, to confining his search for evidence to conversations with other law enforcement officers and a few therapists. Bowart further reports that Lanning rushed out to interview "several dozen" victims as soon as his "oversight" was pointed out, only to conclude that there was still no evidence of any truth to their reports of ritual abuse. Given the numerous testimonies of survivors suggesting that a large, well-organized cryptocracy is using mind control to guard its secrets (Bowart, 1994; Noblitt and Perskin, 1995; Ryder, 1994) and that law enforcement agencies such as the FBI are part of that cryptocracy, Lanning's arguments—citing the difficulties of successfully committing large-scale conspiracy crimes and the limitations of human nature in terms of maintaining cult secrets—hardly hold water.

11. The phenomena of collusion and collaboration are so central to the social facilitation of child abuse and to the maintenance of the internal world of severely dissociative patients—who internalize and identify as much with collaboration and collusion as with "the aggressor"—that we must be as interested in elucidating forms of collaboration as we are in understanding forms of perpetration. In fact, among the most recalcitrant, self-defeating aspects of DID patients' personality systems are those part-selves or alters insistent on denying negative realities. Much of their "psychotic blindness" is rooted in their internalization of the disavowal, dismissiveness, and incredulity projected by their nonabusing or colluding caretakers and by family members and the society at large; it is bolstered by their adamant desire to be normal, regardless of the intrapsychic cost in self-betrayal. The tenacity of these internalized collaborator parts of severely dissociative trauma survivors is greater, although subtler, than that of acting-out parts associated with identification with the aggressor. *Collaboration* is defined as "a cooperation with an enemy invader," *collusion* as "a secret agreement for fraudulent or illegal purposes," and *complicity* as "the fact or state of being an accomplice; a partnership in wrongdoing" (Webster, 1989).

12. For others, the abuse of a daughter or son may break open years of denial; realization and action may save both parent and child, ending collaboration.

13. A few studies (Brosig and Kalichman, 1992; Kim, 1986) of mental health professionals' compliance with mandatory reporting of child-abuse laws show that more than 30 percent of clinicians sometimes suspect that one of their cases involves child maltreatment but fail to report it. Nationally, child protective services are under siege (explosive increases in cases, poor staff morale, public blame for the failure of the system as a whole), and constrained by limited resources despite the legal requirement that all reports be investigated (Melton et al., 1995).

14. Literature reviews (e.g., Everson and Boat, 1989) cite documented prevalence rates of false allegations ranging from 2 to 50 percent, and these wide discrepancies have been attributed to biased and small samples in prior studies.

15. Peterson and Briggs (1997) studied problems related to asking of "specific" questions when interviewing children about trauma. They found that preschool children are much less

likely to be veridical when they say "no," as they may do to influence the interviewer's evaluation of them, because they cannot remember, because they do not understand the referent being queried, because young children like the word no, because rapport is not well established, because the child wants to agree with an adult, or because the child wants the questioning terminated. Hence when young children deny a queried proposition they are often seriously misrepresenting the truth of what actually occurred, or their answers could potentially be manipulated because of their syntactic, intellectual, or social confusion. Peterson and Briggs conclude that, since yes/no questions are often used by law enforcement personnel and others asking about forensically relevant events, the risks that children will deny that child abuse has taken place must be taken into account.

16. Sorenson and Snow (1991) investigated 116 confirmed cases of child sexual-abuse disclosures. They found that in 22 percent of the cases, children recanted their allegations, but that 92 percent of those who recanted eventually reaffirmed their abuse allegations.

CHAPTER 4

1. Normal and pathological multiplicity define a continuum that extends from fluid movement, healthy dynamic interplay, and simultaneous awareness of multiple self-states in varying relationships to one another, to the fragmentation-disturbances of severe dissociative disorders, which always involve a collapse of flexibility, paradoxical experiencing (Bromberg, 1994; Schwartz, 1994; Pizer, 1992; 1996a; Davies, 1996a; 1996b), and a "scotomatous narrowing of consciousness"(Davies, 1996a, p. 566). By extension, unconscious life is conceptualized as dissociatively based, rather than as primarily repression-based.

2. Bromberg (1994, p. 520) eloquently describes the dissociative dialectic between knowing and not knowing: "Where drastically incompatible emotions or perceptions are required to be cognitively processed within the same relationship and such processing is adaptationally beyond the capacity of the individual to contain . . . within a unitary self-experience, one of the competing algorithms is hypnoidally denied access to consciousness to preserve sanity and survival. When ordinary adaptational adjustment to the task at hand is not possible, dissociation comes into play. The experience that is causing the incompatible perception and emotion is unhooked from the cognitive processing system and remains raw data . . . cognitively unsymbolized within that particular self-other representation except as a survival reaction."

3. One important corollary is the relationship between childhood violence and adolescent or adult entrance into prostitution: from 60 percent to 90 percent of those in prostitution were sexually assaulted in childhood (Harlan, Rodgers, and Slattery, 1981; Murphy, 1993; Silbert and Pines, 1983; Giobbe, 1991). From 62 percent to 90 percent of women in prostitution have been physically battered in childhood (Bagley and Young, 1987; Silbert and Pines, 1981; Giobbe, 1991). Hunter (1994) reports on a study of more than a hundred survivors of prostitution at the Council for Prostitution Alternatives in Portland: 85 percent reported a history of incest, 90 percent a history of physical abuse, and 98 percent a history of emotional abuse. Sixty-seven percent of prostitutes interviewed in five countries (South Africa, Thailand, Turkey, Zambia, and the United States) met diagnostic criteria for PTSD (Farley et al., 1998).

4. Bromberg's emphasis, from the relational perspective, on staying the same while changing is paralleled by Briere's (1996) pragmatic trauma-theory emphasis on balancing safety and engagement in the treatment of sexual abuse survivors: "good therapy must acknowledge and honor the survivor's competing needs to maintain safety and inner stability, while at the same time, being open to information and experiences so that he or she may heal and grow" (p. 112).

5. Caruth (1995) describes one of several moral dilemmas at the heart of the difficult task of recognition and reparation of trauma. "How do we help relieve the suffering of victims, and learn to understand the nature of suffering, without eliminating the force and truth of the reality that trauma survivors face and quite often try to transmit to us? . . . The difficulty of listening and responding to traumatic stories in a way that does not lose their impact, that does not

reduce them to clichés or turn them all into versions of the same story, is a problem that remains central to the task of therapists, literary critics, neurobiologists, and filmmakers alike" (1995, p. vii).

6. I felt this to be a vivid illustration of what Bromberg (1995a) calls the patient's need to "stay the same while changing."

CHAPTER 5

1. "One simply never talks to an alter" (McHugh, 1995, p. 114); "When you want a particular behavior to stop, you stop reinforcing it" (Loftus, 1995, p.208); "Paying attention to the alters does not always make them disappear" (ibid.)—as if such disappearing per se were the goal of therapy.

2. See Boon (1997), Van der Hart and Boon (1997), and Kluft (1999a) for discussions of supportive versus uncovering therapy for DID patients, and for a review of the prognostic criteria for making decisions over whether (and when) to proceed with trauma work.

3. The dichotomy between those who use hypnosis and those who do not is better bridged when therapy is defined as facilitating a more fluid and creative relationship for the patient with self and others. Most DID patients are so gifted at self-hypnosis—even to the extent of self-inducing impermeable trance states bordering on the autistic—that orchestrated hypnotic interventions may not be necessary.

4. These formulations are products of a relational revisioning of the notion of neutrality where the effects of the therapist's influences are regarded as inevitable and working with the dynamics of reciprocal influence is regarded as essential to moderate the intrusiveness of the therapist's values and beliefs and to temper the therapist's use of power over the patient in any way.

5. This view corresponds to Ogden's (1989) description of how a more primitive mode of experiencing (the paranoid-schizoid mode, for example) may be useful in certain situations and may inform and help articulate other modes (e.g., the depressive).

6. Within each of these essential aspects of the traumatized self there are solid and immovable structures of aggression organized around attachments and identifications with perpetrators (as well as islands of insight, self-soothing, and self-protection that appear both mystical and transcendent in their wisdom and serenity).

7. Many theorists (Herman, 1992; Ross, 1989; 1997; Putnam, 1989; Harvey, 1996; Kluft, 1998; 1999b) posit systematic stage models of treatment to guide both clinicians and patients through the complexities of the treatment process. Most of the systems break treatment down into early, middle, and late phases (for example, Herman's "safety stage," "remembrance and mourning stage," and "reconnection stage"). One of the most inclusive and articulated in terms of guiding the treatment of complex posttraumatic and dissociative disorders is the model proposed by Chu (1992b; 1998): early stage—focusing on self-care and symptom control, acknowledgment of trauma and its effects, maintaining functioning, verbal expressivity, development of capacity for healthy relatedness; middle stage—defined by exploration and abreactive work, breakdown of denial and dissociative defenses, and development of new perspectives about the past, the self, and relationships, and often including mourning and grieving, which extend into the final treatment phase; late stage—reflecting consolidating gains and increasing skills in creating healthy interactions with the world, self-empowerment and self-confidence, and an ability to move forward in the world relatively unencumbered by the past.

8. Discussing the confusion in the field over the catch-all word *abreaction* and ultimately recommending its abandonment in favor of more appropriate and specific terminology, Van der Hart and Steele (2000) summarize the most frequent usages: reactivated traumatic memories are called *spontaneous abreactions*; the treating or processing of traumatic memories refers to *planned abreactions*; the products of gradual, carefully paced work on trauma are called *fractionated abreaction;* therapy patients are helped to *abreact* their traumatic experiences. Van der Hart and Steele note that the dissociative disorder field prefers *spontaneous abreactions* while the post-

traumatic stress disorders field speaks of *flashbacks* and more recently also of intrusions, intrusive recall, or intrusive traumatic memories (e.g., Van der Kolk, McFarlane, and Weisaeth, 1996); however, when the term *flashback* is used, it is often unclear whether the author is referring to its visual, sensorimotor, or intrusive dimensions or just how encompassing the phenomena might be. Van der Hart and Steele favor *traumatic memories*, which they view as "representations of experiences that are either not integrated or insufficiently integrated in consciousness, memory, and identity, and thus are clearly dissociative in nature" (p. 4).

9. To represent all work with regressive states, memory material, or any posttraumatic affect as dangerous and ill-advised is to *mis*represent it, even though excessive abreactions (those "conducted" or "directed" by well-intended, overzealous, naïve, or incompetent clinicians) can indeed lead to losses, temporary or long term. It is important to note here that *failure* to access and rework past traumas can also lead to losses in functioning.

10. A flashback is defined by Sonnenberg (1985, p. 5) as "an altered state of consciousness in which the individual believes he or she is again experiencing the traumatic event." Sonnenberg notes that in spite of its dramatic manifestations, a full-blown flashback is only one point on a spectrum of more or less subtle alterations in consciousness experienced by individuals suffering from various forms of posttraumatic stress disorder.

11. Van der Hart and his colleagues (1993) describe a three-stage process (synthesis, realization, and integration) for moderating abreactions: in the *synthesis* phase, the therapist guides the patient to associate elementary and fragmented psychological phenomena (e.g., sensations, affects, behaviors, thoughts, images, etc.) into more complex and coherent mental structures; in the *realization* phase, the patient develops increased ability to give autobiographical accounts (rather than sensorimotor and behavioral reenactments) of his/her past trauma, becomes aware that the trauma is indeed over, and is able to assign meaning to the past experience in such a way that s/he has some understanding of the implications of the event(s) for his/her past, present, and future existence; *integration* phase of abreaction refers to the ongoing process of returning to various aspects of the trauma and its consequences to redefine its meanings within the patient's autobiographical self.

12. The healing effects of fantasies of retaliation or fantasies of forgiveness or notions about healing the perpetrators are more powerful if they arise spontaneously after frozen trauma has been unfrozen, relived, and then worked through in one way or another. If such fantasies are prompted before the painful memories are revisited, they may bolster dissociation rather than help restore unity in the traumatized, dissociative self.

13. In the dissociative disorders, some alternative, independent, mutually exclusive ego- or self-states are associatively unavailable and/or antagonistic to each other. Which one predominates depends on the patient's emotional condition, on whether traumatic memories have been stimulated, on current life circumstances, and on the specific transference/countertransference patterns operating at the time (Davies and Frawley, 1991).

14. Among the most useful of these models with clear application to most severely dissociative trauma survivors is Harvey's (1996) "ecological" view of trauma therapy. According to Harvey, the primary elements of the recovery and integration process include: establishing authority over the remembering process; integrating memory and affect; developing affect tolerance; mastering symptoms and distressing stimuli; developing self-esteem and self-cohesion; developing and repairing relational capacities, including the ability to negotiate realistic attachments; and developing the capacity for meaning-making, including mourning the traumatic past and imbuing it somehow with life-affirming and self-affirming meanings.

CHAPTER 6

1. Such respect for the patient's subjectivity is of course inconsistent with the insistent avoidance and suppression of alter personalities and dissociative symptoms enjoined by Loftus (1995) and other supporters of the false memory syndrome movement, who fear reification of the disorder. They define a willingness to work with DID on its own terms, including talking

with alter personalities, as representative of the negative influence of therapists (Loftus, 1995; McHugh, 1993a; 1993b; Brenneis, 1997; Ofshe and Watters, 1994); they do not address the influence and domination involved in denying the legitimacy of the patient's memories or his/her subjectively compelling experience of alter personalities. The suggestion (Loftus, 1993; Loftus and Ketcham, 1994) that avoiding a patient's dissociative aspects will result in that patient's suppressing posttraumatic behavior can be viewed as countertransferential acting out and as concretizing traumatic relational paradigms of subjugation; moreover, it may lead to retraumatization. ("Therapists who are skeptical about MPD but partially accept its reality often talk about strengthening the patient and eliminating the need for the alter personalities, when what they are actually doing is reinforcing the degree of separation between the host and other alter[s]" [Ross, 1995b, p. 133].) Finally, dissociation is not in any case something to be eradicated or conditioned out of existence. In the transitional zone of the therapy relationship, the realness or falseness of the part-selves is not a central issue; it is only central for the skeptics and the legalists who require a world organized into absolute truths and absolute lies.

2. Clinicians disagree about the similarities between DID and borderline personality disorder (Fink and Golinkoff, 1990; Kemp, Gilvertson, and Torem, 1988; Ross, 1989; Young, 1988). Many DID patients meet BPD diagnostic criteria—with the regrettable result that DID critics accuse DID specialists of creating a disorder that is merely an epiphenomenon of BPD. The position that DID patients are essentially borderlines-run-amok often hinges on dismissing the veracity of the trauma-based etiology of DID. Chu (1996), discussing the fact that many BPD patients report extensive histories of childhood abuse (emotional, physical, and sexual) and profound neglect as well as the witnessing of violence, concludes that it is not trauma that produces borderline disorder but the accompanying gross disruptions of familial attachments and the massive failures in appropriate caregiving and protection. This book shares Ross's (1997) view that BPD should be regarded as a trauma disorder that entails the use of many of the forms of dissociation used by DID patients (not, however, excessive dissociation of knowledge), but to a lesser extent. In order to articulate the intrinsic overlap between the two more precisely, Ross (1997) recommends that future research identify three subgroups: DID with BPD, DID without BPD, and BPD without DID. According to Ross, neither DID patients nor borderlines have anything particularly wrong with their personalities: they both have dissociative disorders involving numerous psychic functions, and both DID and borderline personality are features of chronic trauma disorders in the majority of patients treated by mental health professionals. If and when the dissociative anxieties and depressive symptoms of the alleged borderline patient are successfully treated the "borderline" personality will melt away. Likewise, if and when the DID patient's addictions, underlying needs for dissociation, and traumatic attachments are addressed, the borderline features will dissipate, and the "management" of the patient can turn into effective treatment. Ross (1997) describes how DID patients typically fall into one of three Axis II groups: (1) those with no serious character pathology or management problems where only occasional or no inpatient care is required; (2) an intermediate group with more severe Axis I and II pathology early in treatment but a favorable prognosis; and (3) a poor-prognosis group where character pathology and treatment-resistant Axis I symptoms predominate, and where mental health resource utilization is high. See Kluft (1994a; 1994b) for discussion of treatment trajectories in DID patients, which essentially parallels Ross's (1997) findings; Kluft has developed the Dimensions of Therapeutic Movement Instrument (DTMI)—to assess (and track) DID patients' prognosis and progress. In examining Axis II and prognosis issues in the treatment of DID, Ross finds that "An important consequence of the DID diagnosis is that many people regarded as high-character pathology/poor prognosis cases by other psychiatrists prove to have a good prognosis when the DID and the childhood trauma are addressed systematically by a skilled treatment team" (p. 134).

3. Personal clinical experience reveals that the developmental trajectory from domination, disavowal, and dissociation toward recognition either between alters (or self-states) and in the individual's relationship with his/her self as a whole passes through (or becomes fixed at one

of) four basic developmental stages: *Noticing* (limited self-observation, inconsistent memory, minimal pattern recognition or insight); *Acknowledging* (intellectual insight, more continuous memory, curiosity with minimal affective engagement); *Embracing* (affective resonance, internal empathy, self-forgiveness, consolidated memories, capacity for intrapsychic conflict); and *Integrating* (psychological communion, an integration of wisdom and compassion, dissolution of all dissociative barriers).

CHAPTER 7

1. Winnicott's (1951, p. 2) seminal paper on "Transitional Objects and Transitional Phenomena" identifies "an intermediate area of experiencing, to which inner reality and external life both contribute, . . . [that] shall exist as a resting-place for the individual engaged in the perpetual human task of keeping inner and outer reality separate yet interrelated." Many psychoanalytic theorists believe that the potential for creative play, intersubjectivity, and the use of fantasy and imagination for creative problem solving and other important developmental achievements are the result of the individual's capacity for transitional experiencing.

2. The presence or absence of a stuffed animal in the room may not be the only observation to be made about it—independent of such iatrogenic situations as when a therapist refuses to allow it into the office and a stuffed animal becomes the basis of a power struggle, or when a therapist inadvertently reinforces the patient's narcissistic investment in separateness by instigating excessive play therapy with child-alters.

3. Evidence reviewed by Whalen and Nash (1996) reveals that fantasy-proneness is only moderately correlated with DID, and recent research by Leavitt (1997) reveals that patients who recover memories of abuse in psychotherapy are less suggestible than other psychiatric patients.

4. Brenneis (1997) and Haaken (1998) propose in contrast that many of the transference manifestations, including aggressive ones, of alleged trauma survivors and DID patients are actually the result of invasive, controlling, and inappropriate therapeutic techniques visited by a zealous practitioner on a malleable patient. Brenneis insists that many of the posttraumatic symptoms are the patient's way of saying that s/he feels mistreated and abused by the therapist's interventions—which is entirely possible (and not only in DID- or trauma-oriented therapies), especially when the therapist dominates with his/her point of view and leaves little room for other ones or for protest or for multiple narratives. The bulk of disturbed aggressive responses of DID patients, however, are based on profound rage, suppressed protest responses, lack of integration and maturation of the aggressive drive, enactments of the original traumatic relational paradigms within the transference, and therapists' errors other than indoctrination (e.g., empathic failures, poor timing and pacing, and unbalanced treatment alliances that do not take all of the patient's alter personalities into account, etc.). It is important that all therapists discriminate between unconscious communications and reenactments that reveal the patient's camouflaged feelings toward the therapist and those that reveal as yet unsymbolized, or unformulated, dissociated aspects of prior relational or traumatic experience. Sometimes both are going on at once, and the therapy dyad must enter a long period of mutual reflection and collaboration to untie all the knots.

5. Howell (1997) points out how an unconscious need for resonance can lead masochistic aspects of the dissociative self to form bonds with antisocial others.

6. Grand (2000) describes the result of situations in which trauma victims are welcomed back into the perpetrator's or perpetrators' "approving embrace" following moral transgression. Under conditions where the victim's own torture ceases following the moral transgression (Grand refers to this coerced perpetration as "the bestial gesture," p. 113), and if the victim had no cohorts with whom to make a reparative gesture, and particularly if this annihilation occurred in early childhood, the capacity for healthy guilt may be permanently eradicated. According to Grand, this developmental deficit is not merely the result of identification with the aggressor

with its attending states of terror, pain, and confusion. Rather, it is due to the victim's inventing of an empathic other in the perpetrator who becomes the victim's only mirroring object, the only human link; the only outlet for the victim's need to make a reparative gesture is the perpetrator.

CHAPTER 8

1. Based on my own clinical experience and observations, and contrary to the allegations of critics who fail to understand the power of trauma-bonding, the abuse survivor is more likely to become a protector and caretaker of the perpetrator and family system (or pimp) than s/he is to initiate confrontations or lawsuits or even to leave home and break connections—(*viz.*, cases cited by Cheit [1999] and Gartner [1999], in which abused children as adults could not override the trauma bond [or did so and then, in the face of a guilty verdict, attempted to recant] when asked to testify against their perpetrator-fathers in accusations brought by others). I have never met or consulted on a severely traumatized dissociative patient who did not have at least one powerful alter identified with, or at the very least with a profoundly protective attitude toward, his/her perpetrators.

2. Many dissociative trauma survivors of organized perpetrator groups report that medical professionals were often actively involved in the groups' activities and were utilized by group leaders to perform emergency surgeries and other medical interventions on traumatized children. These interventions were designed to disguise evidence of the abuse or to save the life of a child whose death might have brought suspicion onto the cult or perpetrator group. Finally, many survivors report that medical professionals were used in mind-control training sessions since they had the skills and means of measuring alterations in brain waves, breathing, heart rates, and so on. important in evaluating optimal conditions for various aspects of coercive thought reform and brainwashing.

3. Examples of the truths tacitly agreed on include the abuse was the child's fault because of his/her behavior, personality, or gender ("Girls and women drive men wild"), or because the child's body responded physically to the perpetrator's manipulations, proving that s/he obviously wanted to have sex and thus was responsible for it in the first place, or because the child responded by "freezing" rather than by fighting or running away; the offender could not control his/her behavior or was under stress, sick, drunk, and so on, and so not responsible; the abuse was the fault of the perpetrator's wife for not having more frequent or better sex with him; the offender never intended to hurt the victim; it was up to the child to stop the offender, or to take care of the adult's sexual needs; the victim overreacted to the abuse; the victim should feel bad if s/he is unable to forgive the offender (Salter, 1995, pp. 213–214).

4. One of the most sophisticated instances of mind-control programming, often associated with the now-renowned MKUltra projects of the CIA, documented the engineering of *Manchurian Candidate*-like "marionette operatives" (Marks, 1979; Bowart, 1994; Thomas, 1989). Bowart (1994), cautioning us to remember that only failures of mind control survived to tell the stories—because when mind control is successful, there is no memory left at all—hints at the sinister extent of just this one operation when he notes that virtually every government agency became involved eventually, wittingly or unwittingly.

5. "Patricia Hearst was rebaptized Tania, the revolutionary; Linda Boreman was renamed Linda Lovelace, the whore" (Herman, 1992, p. 93).

6. The therapist and patient should maintain a focus on self-reflection, the patient's (and therapist's) automatic state changes, extreme shifts between feeling and deadness or between terror and blankness, and the patient's rapid changes in feelings toward the therapist. Specifically, a patient's sudden, intense, and unexpected or intrusive homicidal and suicidal feelings, or uncanny flight reactions may, if reflected and not acted upon, reveal perpetrator-implanted thought patterning. (This is not, however, to suggest that patient and therapist avoid intense rage and hate emerging in the transference by labeling these emotions "programming.")

CHAPTER 9

1. See Noblitt and Perskin (2000) for documentation of Dr. Noblitt's disturbing experiences with the media.

2. Analyzing the various meanings of John's use of FMS ideologies, while important, would have been insufficient to produce some of his longer-lasting changes. Playing with the originally concretized material on the other hand, turned it into a version of Winnicott's (1971) *squiggle game*, whereby partners take turns drawing and modifying each other's scribbles.

3. Systematic summaries of research on memory consistently indicate that basic memory processes in adults, and to a lesser degree in children, can and should be considered generally accurate but subject to distortion under pressure. Hence it is possible for memories of abuse that have been forgotten for a long time to be remembered and it is also possible to construct convincing pseudomemories for events that have never occurred (Alpert et al., 1996). Research on the accuracy of recovered memories of abuse by Dalenberg (1996) found that recovered and continuous memories of abuse are equally likely to be supported by objective evidence and that the therapy setting does not tend to foster the recovery of inaccurate memories. Results of her study also indicated that recovered or delayed memories tended to involve shame or terror whereas continuous memories tended to include sadness or loss.

4. Laura Brown (1996) points out that a good deal of the public thrashing of therapists and their influence—by Ofshe and Watters (1994), and Loftus and Ketcham (1994), for example—is rooted in references to self-help books and to reports made by third parties who were never present at the therapy in question, or to so-called scholarly material based primarily on analysis of popular press sources or on the accounts of third parties who almost always are accused parents with clear investments in how therapy is portrayed. Anything can be made to look good or bad by being redescribed (Rorty, 1989)—and as Spezzano (1993a) writes, even "truth resides not in the observations or measurements but in the discussion" (p. 204).

5. Safran (1999) describes how in order to be able to tolerate the depths of the patient's despair, therapists must be able to tolerate whatever personal feelings of despair are evoked. Safran understands the therapist's despair as: (1) despair experienced in relation to, or based on empathic resonance with, the patient's despair; and (2) despair related to the therapist's feelings of impotence vis-à-vis the patient. Emphasizing an essential element of what is involved in surviving destruction, Safran explains that therapists need to be familiar with the experience of working with helplessness, hopelessness, and despair in their own lives, and they need to have developed a significant degree of compassion for themselves in their own despair. Without this developmental achievement, Safran warns, the therapist might be prone to avoid real contact with the patient's despair, retreating to the safety of formulations, or engaging in futile efforts to take away the patient's despair through "interpretation, consolation, hollow empathy, or reassurance" (p. 7). Similarly, without tolerance for his/her own impotence as helper/healer and his/her inability to take away the patient's pain or solve problems for the patient, the therapist may retreat to magical rituals of completion, restitution, or transformation, never fully confronting his/her limitations or the limitations of psychotherapy.

CHAPTER 10

1. Ogden (1990) suggests that deliberate remembering can be a form of mourning where the patient can acknowledge that past events no longer exist in their original forms. He believes the analysis of the transference can transform repetition into a memory that shifts experience from more paranoid-schizoid modes of relating—and hence rigid and impermeable—to depressive position modes, thus expanding historicity and the capacity for affect tolerance. Clinicians from diverse theoretical orientations underscore similar requirements for transforming trauma, such as using language that subjectively validates connections to previously dissociated experience,

and reworking traumatic experience in the here-and-now of the therapy interaction where old and new object relational experience collide and are eventually disentangled.

2. Subtle or overt shaming of a trauma survivor for his/her "failure" to forgive the abuser(s) is unfortunately a far too common, culturally sanctioned form of revictimization. Grand's (2000) important contributions to the psychology of trauma and redemption of both victims and perpetrators emphasize that for many victims of unspeakable acts, forgiveness violates rather than restores. For many victims and perpetrators alike, forgiveness—especially forgiveness that transpires without a dialogue with the perpetrator's repentance—is tantamount to an abandonment of memory and an invitation to redissociation and renewed violations. For Grand, forgiveness of the unrepentant facilitates malignant dissociative contagion and fosters the reproduction of evil. Not only can the victim be retraumatized by pressures to (prematurely) forgive his/her perpetrator, but any hope for the healing of the perpetrator may also be lost, especially if the culpability of the perpetrator remains occluded and he/she is never "required to meet the real other, or to know himself as real. To embrace the unrepentent perpetrator in the soft envelope of forgiveness is to abandon the perpetrator to the loneliness of his own depravity" (p. 157).

3. In a group of normal undergraduate males, Briere and Runtz (1989) found 21 percent who reported sexual attraction to children. Seven percent of the subjects revealed that they might engage in sex with a child if they could do so without being discovered or punished. Factors associated with sexual interest or intent toward children aside from the ability to evade detection included having a traditional view of women and children as objects or property without feelings to be taken into account, or with feelings to be manipulated or invented for convenience.

4. Our culture's ambivalence about recognizing and making reparations for childhood trauma is no different from our denial and confusion over making reparations for so many historical violations—the annihilation of Native American populations; slavery; our refusal to rescue victims of the Nazi holocaust before and during World War II and our granting of citizenship (and government, military, and intelligence positions) to Nazi perpetrators and Nazi scientists (Hunt, 1991); war atrocities (Dresden, Hiroshima and Nagasaki, Vietnam); the betrayals of the McCarthy era; and government/CIA-sponsored military mind control, LSD, sterilization, and radiation research on human subjects.

5. Although I have not found any data documenting the frequency of occurrence of perpetrator-identified states in DID patients (which measurement would surely be confounded by the intense cover-up and camouflage these alters enjoy within DID systems), Ross's (1997) report on 236 DID cases reveals the presence of the related phenomenon of persecutory alters in 84 percent of them.

6. Similarly, the therapist treating the survivor of severe childhood trauma will inevitably end up feeling that s/he is victim, collaborator, and perpetrator within the therapeutic relationship. Even the most well-intentioned therapist "will be experienced as abusing his/her power at some point, and will certainly feel like, and possibly even be, the patient's victim at others" (Hegeman, 1995, p. 409). In concrete and symbolic ways the therapist will feel guilt, shame, and confusion about these roles—many times before the journey of therapy is concluded. The shrapnel of the patient's trauma may land squarely in the heart of the therapist's most vulnerable psychological territory.

7. For whatever combination of reasons, in my clinical experience, severely dissociative male patients use the false memory syndrome ideology much more frequently than their female counterparts do (and for more prolonged periods of time) in their struggles to decide what to believe and to engage their therapists in enactments around betrayal, boundary violation, mind control, and domination/submission.

References

Abel, G.G., Becker, J.V., Mittelman, M., Cunningham-Rathner, J., Rouleau, J.L., and Murphy, W.D. (1987). Self-reported sex crimes of nonincarcerated paraphiliacs. *Journal of Interpersonal Violence*, 2(1), 3–25.

Adams, M.A. (1989). Internal self-helpers of persons with multiple personality disorder. *Dissociation*, 2(3), 138–143.

Alexander, F., and French, T.M. (1946). *Psychoanalytic Therapy: Principles and applications*. New York: Ronald Press.

Alexander, P., and Friedrich, W.N. (Eds.) (1991). *The Role of the Extended Family in the Evaluation and Treatment of Incest*. New York. W.W. Norton.

Allen, J.G. (1995). Dissociative processes: Theoretical underpinnings of a working model for clinicians and patients. In J.G. Allen and W.H. Smith (Eds.). *Diagnosis and Treatment of Dissociative Disorders* (pp. 1–24). Northvale, NJ: Jason Aronson, Inc.

Allison, R.B. (1980). *Minds in Many Pieces*. New York: Rawson, Wade.

Alpert, J.L. (1995). Criteria: Signposts toward the sexual abuse hypothesis. In J.L. Alpert (Ed.), *Sexual Abuse Recalled: Treating trauma in the era of the recovered memory debate* (pp. 63–96). Northvale, NJ: Jason Aronson, Inc.

Alpert, J.L. (1996). Informed clinical practice and the recovered memory debate. In K. Pezdek and W.P. Banks (Eds.), *The Recovered Memory/False Memory Debate* (pp. 325–340). San Diego, CA: Academic Press.

Alpert, J.L., Brown, L.S., Ceci, S.J., Courtois, C.A. Loftus, E.F., and Ornstein, P.A. (Eds.) (1996). *American Psychological Association Working Group on Investigation of Memories of Childhood Abuse: Final report*. Washington, DC. American Psychological Association.

Althof, S.E. (1994). A therapist's perspective on the false memory controversy. *Journal of Sex Education*, 20(4), 246–254.

Altman, N. (1995). *The Psychoanalyst in the Inner City*. Hillsdale, NJ: Analytic Press.

Alvarez, L. (1996). After death of six-year old girl: Report shows system collapse. *New York Times*, April 9, p. 1.

Amnesty International (1973). *Report on Torture*. London: Gerald Duckworth.

Araji, S., and Finkelhor, D. (1986). Abusers: A review of the research. In D. Finkelhor (Ed.), *A Sourcebook on Child Sexual Abuse* (pp. 89–118). Beverly Hills, CA: Sage.

Armstrong, J.G. (1999). False memories and true lies: The psychology of a recanter. *Journal of Psychiatry and Law*, 27, 519–548.

Aron, L. (1992). Interpretation as the expression of the analyst's subjectivity. *Psychoanalytic Dialogues*, 2, 475–508.

Aron, L. (1996). *A Meeting of Minds: Mutuality in psychoanalysis*. Hillsdale, NJ: Analytic Press.

Aron, L. (1999). Clinical choices and the relational matrix. *Psychoanalytic Dialogues*, 9(1), 1–30.

Atwood, G., and Stolorow, R. (1984). *Structures of Subjectivity: Explorations in psychoanalytic phenomenology*. Hillsdale, NJ: Analytic Press.

Auerhahn, N.C., and Laub, D. (1987). Play and playfulness in holocaust survivors. *Psychoanalytic Study of the Child*, 42, 45–58.

Bagley, C., and King, K. (1990). *Child Sexual Abuse.* New York: Tavistock/Routledge.

Bagley, C., and Young, L. (1987). Juvenile prostitution and child sexual abuse: A controlled study. *Canadian Journal of Community Mental Health,* 6(1), 5–26.

Bak, R. (1974). Distortions of the concept of fetishism. *Psychoanalytic Study of the Child,* 24, 191–214.

Barach, P.M. (1991). Multiple personality disorder as an attachment disorder. *Dissociation,* 4(3), 117–124.

Barach, P.M. (1999a). President's message. *The International Society for the Study of Dissociation News,* 17(3), 1.

Barach, P.M. (1999b). President's message. *The International Society for the Study of Dissociation News,* 17(4), 1.

Barach, P.M. (1999c). President's message. *The International Society for the Study of Dissociation News,* 17(5), 1.

Barach, P.M. (1999d). President's message. *The International Society for the Study of Dissociation News,* 17(6), 1.

Barach, P.M., and Comstock, C.M. (1996). Psychodynamic psychotherapy of dissociative identity disorder. In L.K. Michelson and W.J. Ray (Eds.), *Handbook of Dissociation: Theoretical, empirical, and clinical perspectives* (pp. 413–429). New York: Plenum Press.

Bargh, J.A., and Chartrand, T.L. (1999). The unbearable automaticity of being. *American Psychologist,* 54(7), 462–479.

Basch, M.F. (1983). The perception of reality and the disavowal of meaning. *Annual of Psychoanalysis,* 11, 125–153.

Bateson, G. (1972). *Steps Towards an Ecology of Mind: Collected Essays in Anthropology, Psychiatry, Evolution, and Epistemology.* New York: Ballantine.

Beahrs, J.O. (1994). Dissociative identity disorder: Adaptive deception of self and others. *Bulletin of the American Academy of Psychiatry and the Law,* 22(2), 22–237.

Becker, D. (1996). The deficiency of the concept of posttraumatic stress disorder when dealing with victims of human rights violations. In R.J. Kleber, C.R. Figley, and B.P.R. Gersons (Eds.), *Beyond Trauma: Cultural and societal dynamics* (pp. 99–109). New York: Plenum Press.

Becker, J.V., and Quinsey, V.L. (1993). Assessing suspected child molesters. *Child Abuse and Neglect,* 17(1), 169–194.

Beebe, B., Jeffrey, J., and Lachmann, F.M. (1992). A dyadic systems view of communication. In N. Skolnick and S. Warshaw (Eds.). *Relational Perspectives in Psychoanalysis* (pp. 61–81). Hillsdale, NJ: Analytic Press.

Beere, D. (1995). Loss of background: A perceptual theory of dissociative disorders. *Dissociation,* 8(3), 165–174.

Benedek, E.P., and Schetky, D.H. (1987a). Problems in validating allegations of sexual abuse. Part 1: Factors affecting perception and recall of events. *Journal of the American Academy of Child and Adolescent Psychiatry,* 26, 912–915.

Benedek, E.P., and Schetky, D.H. (1987b). Problems in validating allegations of sexual abuse. Part 2: Clinical evaluation. *Journal of the American Academy of Child and Adolescent Psychiatry,* 26, 916–921.

Benjamin, J. (1988). *The Bonds of Love: Psychoanalysis, feminism, and the problem of domination.* New York: Pantheon.

Benjamin, J. (1990). An outline of intersubjectivity: The development of recognition. *Psychoanalytic Psychology,* 7, 33–46.

Benjamin, J. (1995). Comment. *Psychoanalytic Psychology,* 12(4), 595–598.

Bennets, L. (1993). Nightmares on Main Street. *Vanity Fair,* June, p. 42.

Bentovim, A., and Tranter, M. (1994). A systematic approach. In V. Sinason (Ed.), *Treating Survivors of Satanic Abuse.* New York: Routledge.

Berger, L.S. (1996). Cultural psychopathology and the "false memory syndrome" debate: A view from psychoanalysis. *American Journal of Psychotherapy,* 50(2), 167–177.

Biderman, A.D. (1957). Communist attempts to elicit false confessions from Air Force prisoners of war. *Bulletin of the New York Academy of Medicine*, 33, 616–625.

Bigras, J. (1990). Psychoanalysis as incestuous repetition: Some technical considerations. In H.B. Levine (Ed.), *Adult Analysis and Childhood Sexual Abuse* (pp. 173–196). Hillsdale, NJ: Analytic Press.

Bion, W.R. (1959). Attacks on linking. *International Journal of Psychoanalysis*, 40, 308–315.

Bion, W.R. (1993). *Second Thoughts: Selected papers on psycho-analysis*. Northvale, NJ: Jason Aronson, Inc.

Bishop, S.J., Murphy, J.M., Jellinek, M.S., Quinn, D., and Poltrast, F. (1992). Protecting seriously maltreated children: Time delays in a court sample. *Child Abuse and Neglect*, 16, 465–474.

Bliss, E.L. (1980). Multiple personalities. *Archives of General Psychiatry*, 37, 1388–1397.

Bliss, E.L. (1984). A symptom profile of patients with multiple personalities, including MMPI results. *Journal of Nervous and Mental Disease*, 174, 727–735.

Bliss, E.L. (1986). *Multiple Personality, Allied Disorders, and Hypnosis*. New York: Oxford University Press.

Blizard, R.A., and Bluhn, A.M. (1994). Attachment to the abuse: Integrating object relations and trauma theories in treatment of abuse survivors. *Psychotherapy*, 31(3), 383–390.

Bloom, S.L. (1994). Hearing the survivor's voice: Sundering the wall of denial. *Journal of Psychohistory*, 21(4), 461–468.

Bloom, S. (1997). *Creating Sanctuary: Toward the evolution of sane societies*. New York: Routledge.

Bluhm, H.O. (1999/1948). How did they survive? Mechanisms of defense in Nazi concentration camp survivors. *American Journal of Psychotherapy*, 53(1), 96–122.

Blume, E.S. (1995). The ownership of truth. *Journal of Psychohistory*, 23(2), 131–140.

Bollas, C. (1987). *The Shadow of the Object*. New York: Columbia University Press.

Bollas, C. (1989). *Forces of Destiny: Psychoanalysis and human idiom*. Northvale, NJ: Jason Aronson, Inc.

Bollas, C. (1992). *Being a Character: Psychoanalysis and self experience*. New York: Hill and Wang.

Bollas, C. (1995). The structure of evil. In C.Bollas, *Cracking Up* (pp. 180–220). New York: Hill and Wang.

Boon, S. (1997). The treatment of traumatic memories in DID: Indications and contraindications. *Dissociation*, 10, 65–80.

Boonpala, P. (1996). The role of the International Labor Organization. *The Prostitution of Children* (pp. 53–62). Symposium Proceedings, U.S. Department of Labor, Bureau of International Affairs, 1996.

Bowart, W.H. (1994/1978). *Operation Mind Control: Researcher's Edition*. Fort Bragg, CA: Flatland Editions. (Previously published, 1978: New York: Dell Publishing Company.)

Bowlby, J. (1969). *Attachment and Loss. Vol. 1 Attachment*. New York: Basic Books.

Bowlby, J. (1982). *Attachment*. New York: Basic Books.

Boyer, L.B. (1979). Countertransference with the severely regressed. In L. Epstein and A.H. Feiner (Eds.), *Countertransference: The therapist's contribution to the therapeutic situation* (pp. 347–374). Northvale, NJ: Jason Aronson, Inc.

Brandchaft, B. (1994). To free the spirit from its cell. In R.D. Stolorow, G.E. Atwood, and B. Brandchaft (Eds.) *The Intersubjective Perspective* (pp. 57–76). Northvale, NJ: Jason Aronson, Inc.

Brandchaft, B., and Stolorow, R. (1990). Varieties of therapeutic alliance. *The Annual of Psychoanalysis*, 18, 99–114. Hillsdale, NJ: Analytic Press.

Braude, S.E. (1995) *First Person Plural: Multiple personality and the philosophy of mind*. (Rev. Ed.) London: Rowman and Littlefield.

Braun, B.G. (1984). Towards a theory of multiple personality and other dissociative phenomena. *Psychiatric Clinics of North America*, 7, 171–193.

Braun, B.G. (1989). Letter to the editor. *International Society for the Study of Multiple Personality and Dissociation Newsletter* (p. 11). Chicago, IL: ISSMPD.

Braun, B.G., and Grey, G. (1987). Report on the 1986 questionnaire on multiple personality disorder and cult involvement. Paper presented at the 4th International Conference on Multiple Personality Disorder and Dissociation, Fall, 1987, Chicago.

Bremner, J.D., and Brett, E. (1997). Trauma-related dissociative states and long-term psychopathology in posttraumatic stress disorder. *Journal of Traumatic Stress*, 10(1), 37–49.

Bremner, J.D., Randall, P., Scott, T.M., Bronen, R.A., Delaney, R.C., Seibyl, J.P., Southwick, S.M., McCarthy, G., Charney, D.S., and Innis, R.B. (1995). MRI based measurement of hippocampal volume in posttraumatic stress disorder. *American Journal of Psychiatry*, 152, 973–981.

Bremner, J.D., Randall, P., Vermetten, E., Staib, L., Bronen, R.A., Mazure, C., Capelli, S., McCarthy, G., Innis, R.B., and Charney, D.S. (1997). MRI based measurements of hippocampal volume in post-traumatic stress disorder related and childhood physical and sexual abuse. *Biological Psychiatry*, 41, 23–32.

Brenneis, C.B. (1994). Belief and suggestion in the recovery of memories of childhood sexual abuse. *Journal of the American Psychoanalytic Association*, 42, 1027–1053.

Brenneis, C.B. (1997). *Recovered Memories of Trauma: Transferring the present to the past*. Madison, CT: International Universities Press.

Brenner, I. (1994). A twentieth century demonological neurosis. *Journal of Psychohistory*, 21(4), 501–504.

Brenner, I. (1996). The characterological basis of multiple personality. *American Journal of Psychotherapy*, 50(2), 154–166.

Breslau, N., and Davis, G.C. (1992). Posttraumatic stress disorder in an urban population of young adults: Risk factors for chronicity. *American Journal of Psychiatry*, 149, 671–675.

Brett, E.A. (1993). Classification of posttraumatic stress disorder in DSM IV: Anxiety disorder, dissociative disorder, or stress disorder. In J.R.T. Davidson and E.B. Foa (Eds.), *Posttraumatic Stress Disorder: DSM IV and Beyond* (pp. 191–206). Washington, DC: American Psychiatric Press.

Briere, J.N. (1989). *Therapy for Adults Molested as Children*. New York: Springer.

Briere, J.N. (1992a). Methodological issues in the study of sexual abuse effects. *Journal of Consulting and Clinical Psychology*, 60(2), 196–203.

Briere, J.N. (1992b). *Child Abuse Trauma: Theory and treatment of the lasting effects*. Newbury Park, CA: Sage.

Briere, J.N. (1995). Child abuse, memory, and recall: A commentary. *Consciousness and Cognition*, 4, 83–87.

Briere, J.N. (1996). *Treatment of Adults Sexually Molested as Children: Beyond survival*. New York: Springer.

Briere, J., Henschel, D., and Smiljanich, K. (1992). Attitudes towards sexual abuse: Sex differences and construct validity. *Journal of Research on Personality*, 26, 398–406.

Briere, J.N., and Runtz, M. (1987). Post sexual abuse trauma: Data and implications for clinical practice. *Journal of Interpersonal Violence*, 2, 367–379.

Briere, J.N., and Runtz, M. (1989). University males' sexual interest in children: Predicting potential indices of "pedophilia" in a non-forensic sample. *Child Abuse and Neglect*, 13, 65–75.

Briere, J.N., and Smiljanich, K., and Henschel, D. (1994). Sexual fantasies, gender, and molestation history. *Child Abuse and Neglect*, 18, 131–137.

Bromberg, P.M. (1980). Empathy, anxiety, and reality: A view from the bridge. *Contemporary Psychoanalysis*, 16, 223–236.

Bromberg, P.M. (1991). On knowing one's patient inside out: The aesthetics of unconscious communication. *Psychoanalytic Dialogues*, 1, 399–422.

Bromberg, P.M. (1993). Shadow and substance: A relational perspective on clinical process. *Psychoanalytic Psychology*, 10, 147–168.

Bromberg, P.M. (1994). Speak! That I may hear you: Some reflections on dissociation, reality, and psychoanalytic listening. *Psychoanalytic Dialogues*, 4, 517–547.

Bromberg, P.M. (1995a). Dissociation and personality organization: Reflections on Peter Goldberg's essay. *Psychoanalytic Dialogues*, 5(3), 511–528.

Bromberg, P.M. (1995b). Resistance, object usage, and human relatedness. *Contemporary Psychoanalysis*, 31, 173–192.

Bromberg, P.M. (1996a). Hysteria, dissociation and cure: Emmy von N revisited. *Psychoanalytic Dialogues*, 6(1), 55–72.

Bromberg, P.M. (1996b). Standing in the spaces: The multiplicity of self and the psychoanalytic relationship. *Contemporary Psychoanalysis*, 32(4), 509–536.

Bromberg, P.M. (1998). Introduction. In P.M. Bromberg, *Standing in the Spaces: Essays on clinical process, trauma, and dissociation* (pp. 1–16). Hillsdale, NJ: Analytic Press.

Brosig, C.L., and Kalichman, S.C. (1992). Clinicians' reporting of suspected child abuse. A review of the empirical literature. *Clinical Psychology Review*, 12, 155–168.

Brown, D. (1995). Sources of suggestion and their applicability to psychotherapy. In J.L. Alpert (Ed.), *Sexual Abuse Recalled: Treating trauma in the era of the recovered memory debate* (pp. 61–100). Northvale, NJ: Jason Aronson, Inc.

Brown, D., Frishholz, E.J., and Scheflin, A.W. (1999). Dissociative identity disorder—An evaluation of the scientific evidence. *Journal of Psychiatry and Law*, 27, 549–637.

Brown, D., and Scheflin, A.W. (1999). Factitious disorders and trauma related diagnoses. *Journal of Psychiatry and Law*, 27, 373–422.

Brown, L.S. (1994). *Subversive Dialogues*. New York: Bass Books.

Brown, L.S. (1995). Not outside the range: One feminist perspective on psychic trauma. In C. Caruth (Ed.), *Trauma: Explorations in memory* (pp. 100–112). Baltimore, MD: Johns Hopkins University Press.

Brown, L.S. (1996). Your therapy client as plaintiff: Clinical and legal issues for the treating therapist. *Sexual Abuse Recalled: Treating trauma in the era of the recovered memory debate* (pp. 337–362). Northvale, NJ: Jason Aronson, Inc.

Burgess, A.W., and Grant, R.N. (1988). *Children Traumatized in Sex Rings*. Washington, DC: National Center for Missing and Exploited Children.

Burgess, A.W., Groth, A.N., Holmstrom, E.L., and Sgroi, S.M. (1987). *Sexual Assault of Children and Adolescents*. Lexington, MA: Lexington Books.

Burgess, A.W., Groth, A.N., and McCausland, M.P. (1981). Child sex initiation rings. *American Journal of Orthopsychiatry*, 51, 110–119.

Burgess, A.W., Hazelwood, R.R., Rokous, F.E., Hartman, C.R., and Burgess, A.G. (1988). Serial rapists and their victims: reenactment and repetition. In R.A. Prentky and V.L. Quinsey (Eds.). *Human Sexual Aggression: Current perspectives*. Annals of the New York Academy of Science (pp. 277–295), Vol. 528, August 12. New York: New York Academy of Science.

Bybee, D., and Mowbray, C. (1993). An analysis of allegations of sexual abuse in a multi-victim day-care case. *Child Abuse and Neglect*, 17, 767–783.

Cameron, M. (1995). *Broken Child*. New York: Kensington Publishing Corp.

Carlson, E.B., and Putnam, F.W. (1989). Integrating research in dissociation and hypnotic susceptibility. Are there two pathways to hypnotizability? *Dissociation*, 2(1), 32–38.

Carlson, E.B., Putnam, F.W., Ross, C.A., Torem, M., Coons, P., Bowman, E.S., Chu, J., Dill, D.L., Loewenstein, R.J., and Braun, B.G. (1993). Predictive validity of Dissociative Experiences Scale. *American Journal of Psychiatry*, 150, 1030–1036.

Caruth, C. (1995). Preface. In C. Caruth (Ed.), *Trauma: Explorations in memory* (pp. vii–ix). Baltimore, MD: Johns Hopkins University Press.

Caruth, C. (1995a). Introduction. In C. Caruth (Ed.), *Trauma: Explorations in memory* (pp, 3–12). Baltimore, MD: Johns Hopkins University Press.

Caruth, C. (1995b). Recapturing the past. In C. Caruth (Ed.), *Trauma: Explorations in Memory* (pp. 151–157). Baltimore, MD: Johns Hopkins University Press.

Cavaliere, F. (1995). Parents killing kids: A nation's shame. *APA Monitor*, August, 1995, 34.

Ceci, S.J., and Bruck, M. (1993). Suggestibility of the child witness: A historical review and synthesis. *Psychological Bulletin*, 113(3), 403–439.

Ceci, S.J., Huffman, M.L.C., Smith, E., and Loftus, E.F. (1994). Repeatedly thinking about a non-event: Source misattribution among preschoolers. *Consciousness and Cognition*, 3, 388–407.

Charles, G. (1995). The assessment and investigation of ritual abuse. In Ney, C.T. (Ed.), *True and False Allegations of Child Abuse*. New York: Bruner/Mazel.

Charney, D.S., Deutch, A.Y., Krystal, J.H., Southwick, S.M., and Davis, M. (1993). Psychobiological mechanisms of post-traumatic stress disorder. *Archives of General Psychiatry*, 50, 294–305.

Chassay, S. (1996). Trauma as initiation: A shamanic perspective on sexual abuse. *Shamanic Applications Review*, 2, 3–12.

Chefetz, R.A. (1997). Special case transferences and counter-transferences in the treatment of dissociative disorders. *Dissociation*, 10(4), 255–265.

Cheit, R. (1999). Junk skepticism and recovered memory. Plenary Paper presented at the 16th annual Fall Conference of the International Society for the Study of Dissociation (ISSD). Miami, FL, November 1999.

Chodron, P. (1994). *Start Where You Are: A guide to compassionate living*. Boston, MA: Shambala.

Chu, J.A. (1988). Ten traps for therapists in the treatment of trauma survivors. *Dissociation*, 1(4), 24–32.

Chu, J.A. (1992a). Empathic confrontation in the treatment of childhood abuse survivors, including a tribute to the legacy of Dr. David Caul. *Dissociation*, 5(2), 98–103.

Chu, J.A. (1992b). The therapeutic roller-coaster: Dilemmas in the treatment of childhood abuse survivors. *Journal of Psychotherapy Practice and Research*, 1, 351–370.

Chu, J.A. (1996). Posttraumatic responses to childhood abuse and implications for treatment. In L.K. Michelson, and W.J. Ray (Eds.), *Handbook of Dissociation: Theoretical, empirical, and clinical perspectives* (pp. 381–400). New York: Plenum Press.

Chu, J.A. (1998). *Rebuilding Shattered Lives: The responsible treatment of complex post-traumatic and dissociative disorders*. New York: John Wiley and Sons, Inc.

Chu, J.A., and Dill, D.L. (1990). Dissociative symptoms in relation to childhood physical and sexual abuse. *American Journal of Psychiatry*, 147, 887–892.

Chu, J.A., Frey, L.M., Ganzel, B.L., and Matthews, J.A. (1999). Memories of childhood abuse: dissociation, amnesia, and corroboration. *American Journal of Psychiatry, 156(5)*, 749–755.

Chu, J.A., Matthews, J.A., Frey, L. M., and Ganzel, B. (1996). The nature of traumatic memories of childhood abuse. Dissociation, 9(1), 2–17.

Cohen, B.M. (1996). Art and the dissociative paracosm: Uncommon realities. In L.K. Michelson, and W.J. Ray (Eds.), *Handbook of Dissociation: Theoretical, Empirical, and Clinical Perspectives* (pp. 525–544). New York: Plenum Press.

Comstock, C. (1992). Response to the centrality of relationship: What's not being said. *Dissociation*, 5, 171–172.

Conway, A. (1994). Trance formations of abuse. In Sinason, V. (Ed.), *Treating Survivors of Satanist Abuse* (pp. 254–264). New York, NY: Routledge.

Coons, P.M. (1986). Treatment progress in 20 patients with multiple personality disorder. *Journal of Nervous and Mental Diseases*, 174, 715–721.

Coons, P.M. (1994). Confirmation of childhood abuse in child and adolescent cases of multiple personality disorder and dissociative disorder not otherwise specified. *Journal of Nervous and Mental Diseases*, 182, 441–464.

Coons, P.M., Bowman, E.S., and Milstein, V. (1988). Multiple personality disorder: A clinical investigation of 50 cases. *Journal of Nervous and Mental Diseases*, 176, 519–527.

Coons, P.M., and Milstein, V. (1986). Psycho-sexual disturbances in multiple personality: Characteristics, etiology, and treatment. *Journal of Clinical Psychiatry*, 47, 106–110.

Corwin, D.L., Berliner, L. Goodman, G., Goodwin, J., and White, S. (1987). Child sexual abuse and custody disputes: No easy answers. *Journal of Interpersonal Violence*, 2(1), 91–105.

Courtois, C. (1988). *Healing the Incest Wound: Adult survivors in therapy*. New York: Norton.

Courtois, C. (1992). The memory retrieval process in incest survivor therapy. *Journal of Child Sexual Abuse*, 1(1), 15–32.

Cozolino, L.J. (1989). The ritual abuse of children: Implications for clinical practice and research. *Journal of Sex Research*, 26 (1), 131–138.

Creamer, M.A. (1996). A cognitive processing formulation of posttraumatic stress reactions. In R.J. Kleber, C.R. Figley, and B.P.R. Gersons (Eds.), *Beyond Trauma: Cultural and societal dynamics* (pp. 55–73). New York: Plenum Press.

Crewdson, J. (1988). *By Silence Betrayed: Sexual abuse of children in America*. New York: Harper and Row.

Crossley, N.C. (1996). *Intersubjectivity: The fabric of social becoming*. Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage Publications.

Cushman, P. (1994). Confronting Sullivan's spider: Hermeneutics and the politics of therapy. *Contemporary Psychoanalysis*, 30, 800–844.

Cushman, P. (1994a). *Constructing the Self, Constructing America: A cultural history of psychotherapy*. New York: Addison-Wesley.

Dalenberg, C. (1996). Are memories recovered in therapy as accurate as continuous memories of abuse? *Journal of Psychiatry and Law*, 24(2), 229–275.

Danieli, Y. (1988). Confronting the unimaginable: Psychotherapists' reactions to victims of the Nazi Holocaust. In J.P. Wilson, Z. Harel, and B. Kahana, (Eds.), *Human Adaptation to Extreme Stress: From the Holocaust to Vietnam* (pp. 224–225). New York: Plenum Publishing.

Daro, D., and McCurdy, K. (1993). *Current Trends in Child Abuse Reporting and Fatalities: The results of the 1993 Annual Fifty State Survey*. Chicago: National Committee for the Prevention of Child Abuse and Neglect.

Daskovsky, D. (1998). The Abuser and the abused: Sources of resistance to resolving splits in the countertransference in the treatment of adults who were sexually abused as children. *Psychoanalytic Psychology*, 15(1), 3–13.

Davies, J.M. (1996a). Linking the "psychoanalytic" with the postclassical: Integration, dissociation, and the multiplicity of unconscious process. *Contemporary Psychoanalysis*, 32(4), 553–576.

Davies, J.M. (1996b). Maintaining complexities: A reply to Crews, Brenneis, and Stern. *Psychoanalytic Dialogues*, 6(2), 281–294.

Davies, J.M. (1997). Dissociation, repression, and reality testing in the countertransference. In R.B. Gartner (Ed.), *Memories of Sexual Betrayal: Truth, fantasy, repression and dissociation* (pp. 45–76). Northvale, NJ: Jason Aronson, Inc.

Davies, J.M., and Frawley, M.G. (1991). Dissociation processes and transference-countertransference paradigms in the psychoanalytically oriented treatment of adult survivors of sexual abuse. *Psychoanalytic Dialogues*, 2(1), 5–36.

Davies, J.M., and Frawley, M.G. (1994). *Treating Adult Survivors of Childhood Sexual Abuse*. New York: Basic Books.

DeBellis, M.D., Chrousous, G.P., Dorn, L.D., Burke, L., Helmes, K., Kling, M.A., Tirckett, P.K., and Putnam, F.W. (1994a). Hypothalamic-pituitary-adrenal axis dysregulation in sexually abused girls. *Journal of Clinical Endocrinology and Metabolism*, 78, 249–255.

DeBellis, M.D., Lefter, L., Trickett, P.K., and Putnam, F.W. (1994b). Urinary catecholamines excretion in sexually abused girls. *Journal of the American Academy of Child and Adolescent Psychiatry*, 33, 320–327.

DeBellis, M.D., Keshavan, M.S., Clark, D.B., Casey, B.J., Giedd, J.N., Boring, A.M., Frustaci, K., and Ryan, N.D. (1999). A.E. Bennett Research Award. Developmental traumatology. Part II: Brain development. *Biological Psychiatry*, 45(10), 1271–1284.

DeMause, L. (1974). The evolution of childhood. In L. DeMause (Ed.), *The History of Childhood*. New York: Psychohistory Press.

DeMause, L. (1991). The universality of incest. *Journal of Psychohistory*, 19, 123–164.

DeMause, L. (1994). Why cults terrorize children. *Journal of Psychohistory*, 21(4), 505–518.

DeMause, L. (1996). Restaging early traumas in war and social violence. *Journal of Psychohistory*, 23(4), 344–391.

DeYoung, M. (1986). A conceptual model for judging the truthfulness of a young child's allegation of sexual abuse. *American Journal of Orthopsychiatry*, 56(4), 550–559.

Dimenstein, G. (1996). The role of the media. *The prostitution of children* (72–75). Symposium Proceedings, U.S. Department of Labor, Bureau of International Affairs, 1996.

Dorpat, T.L. (1996). *Gaslighting: The double whammy, interrogation, and other methods of covert control in psychotherapy and psychoanalysis*. Northvale, NJ: Jason Aronson, Inc.

Draijer, N., and Langeland, W. (1999). Childhood trauma and perceived parental dysfunction in the etiology of dissociative symptoms in psychiatric patients. *American Journal of Psychiatry*, 156, 379–385.

Driscoll, L.N., and Wright, L. (1991). Survivors of childhood ritual abuse: Multigenerational satanic cult involvement. *Treating Abuse Today*, 1, 5–13.

Duncan, C.W. (1993). *The Fractured Mirror: Healing multiple personality disorder*. Deerfield Beach, FL: Health Communications, Inc.

Eckhardt, M.H. (1987). Discussion of "Some problems of cross-cultural therapy with refugees seeking therapy" by C-I Dahl. *American Journal of Psychoanalysis*, 49, 33–36.

Egendorf, A. (1995). Hearing people through their pain. *Journal of Traumatic Stress*, 8(1), 5–28.

Ehrenberg, D.B. (1992). *The Intimate Edge: Extending the reach of psychoanalytic interaction*. New York: Norton.

Ehrenberg, D.B. (1996). On the analyst's emotional availability and vulnerability. *Contemporary Psychoanalysis*, 32(4), 275–286.

Eigen, M. E. (1981). The area of faith in Winnicott, Lacan, and Bion. *International Journal of Psychoanalysis*, 62, 413–433.

Eigen, M.E. (1984). On demonized aspects of the self. In M.C. Nelson and M.E. Eigen (Eds.), *Evil, Self, and Culture* (pp. 91–123: Volume IV, Self-in Process Series). New York: Human Science Press, Inc.

Eigen, M.E. (1991). Winnicott's area of freedom: The uncompromisable. In N. Schwartz-Salant and M. Stein (Eds.), *Liminality and Transitional Experiencing* (pp. 67–88). Wilmette, IL: Chiron Press.

Eigen, M.E. (1992). *Coming Through the Whirlwind: Case studies in psychotherapy*. Wilmette, IL: Chiron Press.

Eigen, M.E. (1996). *Psychic Deadness*. Northvale, NJ: Jason Aronson, Inc.

Eigen, M.E. (1998). *The Psychoanalytic Mystic*. Binghamton, NY: ESF Publishers.

Eisold, B.K. (1999). Profound recognition: Where does it fit in analytic work. *Contemporary Psychoanalysis*, 35(1), 107–130.

Elin, M.R. (1995). A developmental model for trauma. In L. Cohen, J. Berzoff, and M. Elin, (Eds.), *Dissociative Identity Disorder* (pp. 223–259). Northvale, NJ: Jason Aronson, Inc.

Elliott, D. and Briere, J.N. (1995). Posttraumatic stress associated with the delayed recall of sexual abuse: a general population study. *Journal of Traumatic Stress*, 8, 629–647.

Elliott, M. (1994). *Female Sexual Abuse of Children*. New York: Guilford.

Enns, C.Z., McNeilly, C.L., Corkery, J.M., and Gilbert, M.S. (1995). The debate about delayed memories of child sexual abuse: A feminist perspective. *The Counseling Psychologist*, 23(2), 181–279.

Everson, M.D., and Boat, B.W. (1989). False allegations of sexual abuse by children and adolescents. *Journal of the American Academy of Child and Adolescent Psychiatry*, 28(2), 230–235.

Fahy, T.A. (1988). The diagnosis of multiple personality disorder: A critical review. *British Journal of Psychiatry, 153*, 597–606.

Fairbairn, W.R.D. (1952). *Psychoanalytic Studies of the Personality*. London: Tavistock.

Faller, K.C. (1984). Is the child victim of sexual abuse telling the truth? *Child Abuse and Neglect*, 8, 473–481.

Faller, K.C. (1994). Ritual abuse: A review of research. *APSAC Advisor*, 1, 19–27.

Farley, M., Baral, I., Kiremire, M., and Sezgin, U. (1998). Prostitution in five countries: Violence and posttraumatic stress disorder. *Feminism and Psychology*, 8(4), 415–426.

Fast, I. (1998). *Selving: A relational theory of self*. Hillsdale, NJ: Analytic Press.

Federoff, J.P., and Pinkus, S. (1996). The genesis of pedophilia: Testing the abuse-to-abuser hypothesis in sex offender treatment. In E. Coleman, S.M. Dwyer, and N.J. Pollone (Eds.), *Sex Offender Treatment: Biological dysfunction, intrapsychic conflict, interpersonal violence* (pp. 85–101). New York: Haworth Press.

Feiner, A.H. (1996). Bewitched, bothered and bewildered: Some core issues in interpersonal analysis. *Contemporary Psychoanalysis*, 32(3), 411–425.

Felitti, V.J., Anda, R.F., Nordenberg, D, Williamson, D.F, Spitz, A.M., Edwards, V., Koss, M.P., and Marks, J.S. (1998). Relationship of childhood abuse and household dysfunction to many of the leading causes of death in adults. *American Journal of Preventive Medicine*, 14(4), 245–258.

Felman, S. (1995). Education and crisis or the vicissitudes of teaching. In C. Caruth (Ed.), *Trauma: Explorations in memory* (pp. 13–60). Baltimore, MD: Johns Hopkins University Press.

Ferenczi, S. (1930). Notes and fragments II. In M. Balint (Ed.), *Final Contributions to the Problems and Methods of Psychoanalysis* (pp. 219–231). New York, Bruner/Mazel, 1980.

Ferenczi, S. (1933). Confusion of tongues between adults and the child. In S. Ferenczi (1955), *Final Contributions to the Problems and Methods of Psychoanalysis* (pp. 87–101). London: Hogarth.

Ferguson, M. (1990). Mirroring processes, hypnotic processes, and multiple personality. *Psychoanalysis and Contemporary Thought*, 13, 417–450.

Fergusson, D.M. and Mullen, P.E. (1999). *Child Sexual Abuse: An Evidence Based Approach*. Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage Publishing.

Figley, C.R. (1995). *Compassion Fatigue*. New York: Bruner/Mazel.

Fine, C.G. (1994). Cognitive hypnotherapeutic intervention in the treatment of MPD. *Journal of Cognitive Psychotherapy*, 8(4), 289–298.

Fine, C.G. (1996). A cognitively based treatment model for DSM-IV dissociative identity disorder. In L.K. Michelson and W.J. Ray (Eds.), *Handbook of Dissociation: Theoretical, empirical, and clinical perspectives* (pp. 401–412). New York: Plenum Press.

Fine, C.G. (1999). The tactical-integration model for the treatment of dissociative identity disorder and allied dissociative disorders. *American Journal of Psychotherapy*, 53(3), 361–376.

Fink, D., and Golinkoff, M. (1990). Multiple personality disorder, borderline personality disorder, and schizophrenia: A comparative study of clinical features. *Dissociation*, 3(3), 127–134.

Finkelhor, D. (1994). The international epidemiology of child sexual abuse. *Child Abuse and Neglect*, 18, 409–417.

Finkelhor, D. (1998). Editorial: Improving research, policy, and practice for understanding child sexual abuse. *Journal of American Medical Association*, 280, 1865–1866.

Finkelhor, D., Hotaling, G., Lewis, I.A., and Smith, C. (1989). Sexual abuse and its relationship to later sexual satisfaction, marital status, religion, and attitudes. *Journal of Interpersonal Violence*, 4, 379–399.

Finkelhor, D., Hotaling, G., and Sedlak, A. (1990). *Missing, Abducted, Runaway, and Throwaway Children in America*. Executive Summary. Washington, DC: U.S. Department of Justice, Office of Juvenile Justice and Delinquency Prevention.

Finkelhor, D., Hotaling, G., Lewis, I.A., and Smith, C. (1990). Sexual abuse in a national survey of men and women. *Child Abuse and Neglect*, 14, 19–28.

Finkelhor, D., and Lewis, I.A. (1988). An epidemiological approach to the study of child molestation. In R.A. Prentky and V.L. Quinsey (Eds.), *Human Sexual Aggression: Current Perspectives*. Annals of the New York Academy of Science (pp. 64–78).

Finkelhor, D., Williams, L., and Burns, L. (Eds.). (1988). *Nursery Crimes: Sexual abuse in day care*. Newbury Park, CA: Sage Publications.

Finkelhor, D., and Williams, L.M. (1992). The characteristics of incestuous fathers (ERIC Document, No. 354451).

Fish-Murray, C.C., Koby, E.V., and Van der Kolk, B.A. (1987). Evolving ideas: The effect of abuse on children's thought. In B.A. Van der Kolk (Ed.), *Psychological Trauma* (pp. 89–110). Washington, DC: American Psychiatric Press.

Flax, J. (1993). *Disputed Subjects: Essays on psychoanalysis, politics, and philosophy*. New York: Routledge.

Flax, J. (1996a). Review essay. *Psychoanalytic Dialogues*, 6(6), 837–849.

Flax, J. (1996b). Taking multiplicity seriously. *Contemporary Psychoanalysis*, 32(4), 577–593.

Flores, R. (1996). Child prostitution in the U.S. In *Forced Labor: The prostitution of children* (pp. 41–52). Symposium Proceedings, U.S. Department of Labor, Bureau of International Labor Affairs, 1996.

Foa, E.B., and Hearst-Ikeda, D. (1996). Emotional dissociation in response to trauma: An information-processing approach. In L.K. Michelson and W.J. Ray, (Eds.), *Handbook of Dissociation: Theoretical, empirical, and clinical perspectives* (pp. 207–224). New York: Plenum Press.

Foa, E.B., and Kozak, M.J. (1986). Emotional processing of fear: Exposure to corrective information. *Psychological Bulletin*, 99, 20–35.

Foote, B. (1999). Dissociative identity disorder and pseudo-hysteria. *American Journal of Psychotherapy*, 53(3), 320–343.

Fosshage, J. (1992). Self psychology: The self and its vicissitudes within a relational matrix. In N. Skolnick and S. Warshaw (Eds.), *Relational Perspectives in Psychoanalysis* (pp. 21–42). Hillsdale, NJ: Analytic Press.

Fosshage, J. (1995). Interaction in psychoanalysis: A broadening horizon. *Psychoanalytic Dialogues*, 5(3), 459–478.

Fraiberg, S. (1982). Pathological defenses in infancy. *Psychoanalytic Quarterly*, 51, 612–635.

Frankel, F.H. (1994). Adult reconstruction of childhood events in the multiple personality literature. *American Journal of Psychiatry*, 150, 954–958.

Frankel, S.A., and O'Hearn, T.C. (1996). Similarities in responses to extreme and unremitting stress: Cultures of communities under siege. *Psychotherapy: Theory, research, and practice*, 33(3), 485–502.

Fraser, G.A. (1997). Visions of memories: A patient's visual representation of ritual abuse: In G.A. Fraser (Ed.), *The Dilemma of Ritual Abuse* (pp. 183–196). Washington, DC: American Psychiatric Press.

Frawley-O'Dea, M.G. (1997). Discussion: P3: Patients, politics, and psychotherapy in the true/false memory debate. In Gartner, R.B. (Ed.), *Memories of Sexual Betrayal: Truth, fantasy, repression and dissociation* (pp. 149–178). Northvale, NJ: Jason Aronson, Inc.

Frayn, D.H. (1996). *Enactments: An evolving dyadic concept of acting out*. American Journal of Psychotherapy, 50(2), 194–207.

Freud, A. (1936). *The Ego and the Mechanisms of Defense*. London: Hogarth.

Freud, S. (1912). The dynamics of the transference. *S.E.*, 12, 99–108.

Freud, S. (1930). Civilization and its discontents. *S.E.*, 21, 59–145.

Freund, K., Watson, R., and Dickey, R. (1990). Does sexual abuse in childhood cause pedophilia? An exploratory study. *Archives of Sexual Behavior*, 19, 557–568.

Freyd, J.J. (1994). Betrayal trauma: Traumatic amnesia, as an adaptive response to childhood abuse. *Ethics and Behavior*, 4(4), 307–329.

Freyd, J.J. (1996). *Betrayal Trauma: The logic of forgetting childhood abuse*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.

Fullerton, C.S., and Ursano, R.J. (1997). The other side of chaos: Understanding the pattern of posttraumatic responses. In C.S. Fullerton and R.J. Ursan (Eds.), *Posttraumatic Stress Disorder* (pp. 3–20). Washington, DC: American Psychiatric Press.

Gabbard, G.O. (1993). Countertransference and borderline patients. *The Journal of Psychotherapy Practice and Research*, 2(1), 7–18.

Gabbard, G.O. (1994). Psychotherapists who transgress sexual boundaries with patients. *Bulletin of the Menninger Clinic*, 58, 124–135.

Gadamer, H.G. (1975). *Truth and Method*. New York: Seabury Press.

Galenson, E. (1986). Some thoughts about infant psychopathology and aggressive development. *International Review of Psychoanalysis*, 13, 349–354.

Ganaway, G. (1989). Historical versus narrative truth: clarifying the role of exogenous trauma in the etiology of MPD and its variants. *Dissociation*, 2, 205–220.

Ganaway, G.K. (1994). Transference and countertransference shaping influences on dissociative syndromes. In S.J. Lynn and J.W. Rhue (Eds.), *Dissociation: Clinical and theoretical perspectives* (pp. 317–337). New York: Guilford.

Ganzarain, R.C., and Buchele, B.J. (1989). *Fugitives of Incest: A perspective from psychoanalysis and group therapy.* Madison, CT: International Universities Press.

Gardner, R. (1992). *True and False Allegations of Child Sexual Abuse.* Cresskill, NJ: Creative Therapeutics.

Gartner, R.B. (1999). *Betrayed as Boys: Psychodynamic treatment of sexually abused men.* New York: Guilford.

Gelinas, D. (1995). Dissociative identity disorder and the trauma paradigm. In L. Cohen, J. Berzoff, and M. Elin (Eds.), *Dissociative Identity Disorder: Theoretical and treatment controversies* (pp. 175–222). Northvale, NJ: Jason Aronson, Inc.

Gershuny, B.S., and Thayer, J.F. (1999). Relations among psychological trauma, dissociative phenomena, and trauma-related distress: A review and integration. *Clinical Psychology Review,* 19, 631–657.

Ghent, E. (1989). Credo: The dialectics of one-person and two-person psychologies. *Contemporary Psychoanalysis,* 25, 169–211.

Ghent, E. (1990). Masochism, submission and surrender. *Contemporary Psychoanalysis,* 26, 108–136.

Ghent, E. (1992a). Foreword. In N.J. Skolnick and S.C. Warshaw (Eds.), *Relational Perspectives in Psychoanalysis.* Hillsdale, NJ: Analytic Press.

Ghent, E. (1992b). Paradox and process. *Psychoanalytic Dialogues,* 2, 135–160.

Ghent, E. (1994). Empathy: Whence and whither? *Psychoanalytic Dialogues,* 4(3), 473–486.

Ghent, E. (1995). Interaction in the psychoanalytic situation. *Psychoanalytic Dialogues,* 5(3), 479–492.

Gilligan, C. Rogers, A, and Tolman, D. (1992). *Women, Girls, and Psychiatry.* New York: Haworth.

Giobbe, E. (1991). Prostitution: Buying the right to rape. In A.W. Burgess (Ed.), *Rape and Sexual Assault III: A research handbook.* New York: Garland Press.

Giovacchini, P.C. (1978). The impact of delusion or the delusion of impact: Ego defect and transitional phenomena. In S.A. Grolnick, L. Barkin, and W. Muensterberger (Eds.), *Between Reality and Fantasy.* Northale, NJ: Jason Aronson, Inc.

Giovacchini, P.L. (1989). *Countertransference Triumphs and Catastrophes.* Northvale, NJ: Jason Aronson, Inc.

Glenn, J. (Ed.). (1978). *Child Analysis and Therapy.* New York: Jason Aronson, Inc.

Goldberg, A. (1988). *A Fresh Look at Psychoanalysis: The view from self psychology.* Hillsdale, NJ: Analytic Press.

Goldberg, A. (1990). *The Prisonhouse of Psychoanalysis.* Hillsdale, NJ: Analytic Press.

Goldberg, P. (1995). "Successful" dissociation, pseudovitality, and inauthentic use of the senses. *Psychoanalytic Dialogues,* 5(3), 493–510.

Goldman, D. (1996). An exquisite corpse: The strain of working in and out of potential space. *Contemporary Psychoanalysis,* 32(3), 339–358.

Godwin, R. (1996). The exopsychic structure of politics. *Journal of Psychohistory,* 23(3), 252–259.

Goodwin, J.M. (1989). *Sexual Abuse: Incest victims and their families.* Chicago, IL: Yearbook Medical Publishing.

Goodwin, J.M. (1993a). Human veterans of trauma: Illustrations from the Marquis de Sade. In J.M. Goodwin (Ed.), *Rediscovering Childhood Trauma: Historical casebook and clinical applications* (pp. 95–112). Washington, DC: American Psychiatric Press.

Goodwin, J.M. (1993b). Sadistic abuse: Definition, evaluation, and treatment. *Dissociation,* 6(2/3), 181–187.

Goodwin, J.M. (1994). Credibility problems in sadistic abuse. *Journal of Psychohistory,* 21(4), 479–496.

Goodwin, J.M., and Sachs, R.G. (1996). Child abuse in the etiology of dissociative disorders. In L.K. Michelson and W.J. Ray (Eds.), *Handbook of Dissociation: Theoretical, empirical, and clinical perspectives* (pp. 91–106). New York: Plenum Press.

Gorkin, M. (1987). *Uses of Countertransference.* Northvale, NJ: Jason Aronson, Inc.

Gould, C. (1992). Diagnosis and treatment of ritually abused children. In D.K. Sakheim and S.E. Devine (Eds.), *Out of Darkness: Exploring satanism and ritual abuse* (pp. 207–248). New York: Lexington Books.

Goulding, R.A., and Schwartz, R.C. (1995). *The Mosaic Mind: Empowering the tormented selves of child abuse survivors.* New York: Norton.

Graham, D.L.R. (1994). *Loving to Survive.* New York: NYU Press.

Grand, S. (1995). Incest and the intersubjective politics of knowing history. In J.L. Alpert (Ed.), *Sexual Abuse Recalled: Treating trauma in the era of the recovered memory debate* (pp. 235–256). Northvale, NJ: Jason Aronson, Inc.

Grand, S. (1997). The paradox of innocence: Dissociative adhesive states in perpetrators of incest. *Psychoanalytic Dialogues,* 7(4), 465–490.

Grand, S. (2000). *The Reproduction of Evil: A clinical and cultural perspective.* Hillsdale, NJ: The Analytic Press.

Grand, S., and Alpert, J.L. (1993). The core trauma of incest: an object relations view. *Professional Psychology: Research and Practice,* 24(3), 330–334.

Greaves, G.B. (1992). Alternative hypotheses regarding claims of satanic cult activity. In D.K. Sakheim and S.E. Devine (Eds.). *Out of Darkness: Exploring satanism and ritual abuse* (pp. 45–72). New York: Lexington Books.

Greaves, G.B., and Faust, G.H. (1996). Legal and ethical issues in the treatment of dissociative disorders. In L.K. Michelson and W.J. Ray (Eds.), *Handbook of Dissociation: Theoretical, empirical, and clinical perspectives* (pp. 595–615). New York: Plenum Press.

Greenberg, J.R. (1986). Theoretical models and the analyst's neutrality. *Contemporary Psychoanalysis,* 22, 87–106.

Greenberg, J.R. (1991). *Oedipus and Beyond.* Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.

Greenberg, J.R., and Mitchell, S.A. (1983). *Object Relations in Psychoanalytic Theory.* Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.

Greenfield, L.A. (1996). *Child Victimizers: Violent offenders and their victims.* Justice Department Joint Publication with the Office of Juvenile Justice and Delinquency Prevention. NCJ–153258, March, 1996.

Grosch, W.N., and Olsend, D.C. (1994). *When Helping Starts to Hurt: A new look at burnout among psychotherapists.* New York: W.W. Norton.

Grossman, W.I. (1991). Pain, aggression, fantasy and concepts of sadomasochism. *Psychoanalytic Quarterly,* 40, 22–52.

Groth, A.N. (1979). *Men Who Rape.* New York: Plenum Press.

Groth, A.N., Longo, R.E., and McFadin, J.B. (1982). Undetected recidivism among rapists and child molesters. *Crime and Delinquency,* 28(3), 450–458.

Grotstein, J.S. (1984). Forgery of the soul: Psychogenesis of evil. In M.C. Nelson and M.E. Eigen (Eds.), *Evil, Self, and Culture* (pp. 203–226: volume IV, Self-in Process Series). New York: Human Science Press, Inc.

Grotstein, J.S. (1999). The fate of the unconscious in the future of psychotherapy. *American Journal of Psychotherapy,* 53(1), 52–59.

Haaken, J. (1998). *Pillar of Salt: Gender, Memory, and the Perils of Looking Back.* New Brunswick, NJ: Rutgers University Press.

Hacking, I. (1995*). Rewriting the Soul: Multiple personality and the sciences of memory.* Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.

Harlan, S., Rodgers, L.L., and Slattery, B. (1981). Male and female adolescent prostitution: Huckleberry House sexual minority youth services project. Department of Health and Human Services, Youth Development Bureau, Washington, DC.

Harris, A. (1996a). False memory? False memory syndrome? So-called false memory syndrome? *Psychoanalytic Dialogues,* 6(2), 155–188.

Harvey, M.R. (1996). An ecological view of psychological trauma and trauma recovery. *Journal of Traumatic Stress,* 9(1), 3–24.

Hassan, S. (1990). *Combatting Cult Mind Control. Rochester,* VT: Park Street Press.

Hedges, L.E. (1994*). Remembering, Repeating, and Working Through Childhood Trauma.* Northvale, NJ: Jason Aronson, Inc.

Hegeman, E. (1995). Resolution of traumatic transference: Two cases. *Contemporary Psychoanalysis,* 31(3), 409–422.

Hegeman, E. (1997). Reconstruction and the psychoanalytic tradition. In Gartner, R.B. (Ed.), *Memories of Sexual Betrayal: Truth, fantasy, repression and dissociation* (pp. 149–178). Northvale, NJ: Jason Aronson, Inc.

Herman, J.L. (1990). Sex offenders: A feminist perspective. In W.L. Marshall, D.R. Laws, and H.E. Barbaree (Eds.), *Handbook of Sexual Assault: Issues, theories, and treatment of the offender* (pp. 177–193). New York: Plenum Press.

Herman, J.L. (1992). *Trauma and Recovery.* Basic Books: New York.

Herman, J.L. (1992a). Complex PTSD: A syndrome of survivors of prolonged and repeated trauma. *Journal of Traumatic Stress,* 5, 377–391.

Hertzberg, J.F. (1996). Internalizing power dynamics: The wounds and the healing. *Women and Therapy,* 18(3/4), 129–148.

Hirsh, I. (1994). Dissociation and the interpersonal self. *Contemporary Psychoanalysis,* 30(4), 777–799.

Hoffman, I.Z. (1991). Discussion: Towards a social-constructivist view of the psychoanalytic situation, *Psychoanalytic Dialogues,* 1(1), 74–105.

Holmes, W.C., and Slap, G.B. (1998). Sexual abuse of male children common, under-recognized, under-treated. *Journal of American Medical Association,* 280, 1855–1862.

hooks, b. (1995). *Killing Rage: Ending racism.* New York: Henry Holt, and Co.

Horevitz, R. (1994). Dissociation and multiple personality: Conflicts and controversies. In S.J. Lynn and J.W. Rhue (Eds.), *Dissociation: Clinical and theoretical perspectives* (pp. 434–461). New York: Guilford.

Hornstein, N., and Putnam, F.W. (1992). Clinical phenomenology of child and adolescent multiple personality disorder. *Journal of the Academy of Child and Adolescent Psychiatry,* 31, 1055–1077.

Horowitz, M.J. (1986). Stress-response syndromes: A review of posttraumatic and adjustment disorder. *Hospital and Community Psychiatry,* 37, 241–249.

Howell, E.F. (1996). Dissociation in masochism and psychopathic sadism. *Contemporary Psychoanalysis,* 32(3), 427–454.

Howell, E.F. (1997). Masochism: A bridge to the other side of abuse. *Dissociation,* 10(4), 240–245.

Howitt, D. (1995). *Paedophiles and Sexual Offenses Against Children.* New York: Wiley and Sons.

Hudson, P. (1991). *Ritual Child Abuse: Discovery, diagnosis and treatment.* Sarasota, CA: R and E Publishers.

Huizenga, J. (1990). Incest as trauma: A psychoanalytic case. In H.B. Levine (Ed.), *Adult Analysis and Childhood Sexual Abuse* (pp. 117–136). Hillsdale, NJ: Analytic Press.

Hunt, L. (1991). *Secret Agenda: The United States Government, Nazi scientists, and Project Paperclip 1945 to 1990.* New York: St. Martin's Press.

Hunt, P., and Baird, M. (1990). Children of sex rings. *Child Welfare,* 419(3), 195–207.

Hunter, S.K. (1994). Prostitution is cruelty and abuse to women and children. *Michigan Journal of Gender and Law,* 1, 1–14.

Inderbitzin, L.B., and Levy, S.T. (1994). On grist for the mill: External reality as defense. *Journal of the American Psychoanalytic Association,* 42, 763–788.

International Society for the Study of Dissociation (1994). *Guidelines for Treating Dissociative Identity Disorder (multiple personality disorder) in adults (1994).* Skokie, IL: International Society for the Study of Dissociation.

Irwin, H.J. (1994). Proneness to dissociation and traumatic childhood events. *Journal of Nervous and Mental Diseases,* 182, 456–460.

Irwin, H.J. (1999). Pathological and nonpathological dissociation: The relevance of childhood trauma. *Journal of Psychology,* 133(2), 157–164.

Jacobs, T. (1986). On countertransference enactments. *Journal of the American Psychoanalytic Association*, 34, 289–302.

Janet, P. (1889). *L'automatisme Psychologique*. Paris: Felix Alcan.

Janet, P. (1986/1925). *Psychological Healing*. New York: Macmillan.

Janoff-Bulman, R. (1992). *Shattered Assumptions: Toward a new psychology of trauma*. New York: Free Press.

Jaroff, L. (1993). Lies of the mind. *Time*, November 29, 52–59.

Jellinek, M.S., Murphy, J.M., Poltrast, F., Quinn, D., Bishop, S.J., and Goshko, M. (1991). Serious child maltreatment in Massachusetts: The course of 206 children through the courts. *Child Abuse and Neglect*, 16, 179–185.

Jenkins, P. (1998). Moral Panic: *Changing Concepts of the Child Molester in Modern America*, New Haven, CT: Yale University Press.

Jones, D.P.H. (1991). Ritual child sexual abuse. *Child Abuse and Neglect*, 15, 163–170.

Jones, D.P.H. (1993). Child sexual abuse and satanism. *Newsletter of the Association of Child Psychology and Psychiatry*, 15, 207–213.

Jones, D.P.H., and McGraw, J.M. (1987). Reliable and fictitious accounts of sexual abuse of children. *Journal of Interpersonal Violence*, 2(1), 27–45.

Jonker, F., and Jonker-Bakker, I. (1997). Effects of ritual abuse: The results of three surveys in the Netherlands. *Journal of Child Abuse and Neglect*, 21, 541–556.

Jung, C.G. (1958). *The Collected Works of C.G. Jung: Vol. 3 Schizophrenia*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.

Kafka, H. (1995). Incestuous sexual abuse, memory and the organization of the self. In J.L. Alpert (Ed.), *Sexual Abuse Recalled: Treating trauma in the era of the recovered memory debate* (pp. 135–154). Northvale, NJ: Jason Aronson, Inc.

Kafka, H. (1997). Incest survival, memory disruption, and authenticity of the self. In Gartner, R. B. (Ed.), *Memories of Sexual Betrayal: Truth, fantasy, repression and dissociation* (pp. 113–128). Northvale, NJ: Jason Aronson, Inc.

Kalsched, D. (1996). *The Inner World of Trauma: Archetypal defenses of the personal spirit*. New York: Routledge.

Kardiner, A. (1941). *The Traumatic Neuroses of War*. New York: Paul Hober.

Keenan, T., and Caruth, C. (1995). The AIDS crisis is not one: A conversation with Gregg Bordowitz, Douglas Crimp, and Laura Pinsky. In C. Caruth (Ed.), *Trauma: Explorations in memory* (pp. 256–271). Baltimore, MD: Johns Hopkins University Press.

Kemp, K., Gilverston, A.D., and Torem, M. (1988). The differential diagnosis of multiple personality disorder from borderline personality disorder. *Dissociation*, 1(4), 41–46.

Kempe, C.H., Silverman, F.N., Steele, B.F., Droegemueller, W, and Silver, H.K. (1962). The battered child syndrome. *Journal of the American Medical Association*, 181, 17–24.

Kennedy, J.P. (1996). Keynote Address. Symposium Proceedings: *Forced Labor: The Prostitution of Children* (pp. 1–8), U.S. Department of Labor, Bureau of International Labor Affairs, 1996.

Kennedy, R. (1996). Aspects of consciousness: One voice or many? *Psychoanalytic Dialogues*, 4, 73–98.

Kepner, J.I. (1995). *Healing Tasks: Psychotherapy with adult survivors of childhood abuse*. San Francisco, CA: Jossey-Bass.

Kernberg, O. (1976). *Object Relations Theory and Clinical Psychoanalysis*. New York: Jason Aronson, Inc.

Kessler, R.C., Sonnega, A., Bromet, E., Hughes, M., and Nelson, L.B. (1995). Posttraumatic stress disorder in the national Comorbidity Study. *Archives of General Psychiatry*, 52, 1048–1060.

Khan, M. (1978). Secret as potential space. In S.A. Grolnick, L. Barkin, and W. Muensterberger (Eds.), *Between Reality and Fantasy* (pp. 259–270). Northvale, NJ: Jason Aronson, Inc.

Kihlstrom, J.F., Glisky, M.L., and Angiulo, M.J. (1994). Dissociative tendencies and dissociative disorders. *Journal of Abnormal Psychology*, 103, 111–124.

Kim, D.S. (1986). How physicians respond to child maltreatment cases. *Health and Social Work*, 11, 95–106.

Kincaid, J.R. (1998) *Erotic Innocence: The culture of child molesting*. Durham, NC: Duke University Press.

Kinsey, A.L., Pomerory, W.B., Martin, C.E., and Gebhard, P.H. (1948). *Sexual Behavior in the Human Male*. Philadelphia, PA: Saunders.

Kinsey, A.L., Pomerory, W.B., Martin, C.E., and Gebhard, P.H. (1953). *Sexual Behavior in the Human Female*. Philadelphia, PA: Saunders.

Kinzie, J.D., and Boehnlein, J.K. (1993). Psychotherapy with victims of massive violence: Countertransference and ethical issues. *American Journal of Psychotherapy*, 47, 90–102.

Kleber, R.J., Figley, C.R., and Gersons, B.P.R. (1996). Introduction. In R.J. Kleber, C.R. Figley, and B.P.R. Gersons (Eds.) *Beyond Trauma: Cultural and societal dynamics* (pp. 1–9). New York: Plenum Press.

Kluft, R.P. (1984). Treatment of multiple personality disorder. *Psychiatric Clinics of North America*, 7, 9–29.

Kluft, R.P. (1984a). An introduction to multiple personality disorder, *Psychiatric Annals*, 14, 19–24.

Kluft, R.P. (1985). Childhood multiple personality disorder: Predictors, clinical findings, and treatment results. In R.P. Kluft (Ed.), *Childhood Antecedents of Multiple Personality Disorder* (pp. 168–196). Washington, DC: American Psychiatric Press.

Kluft, R.P. (1985a). Childhood multiple personality disorder: Predictors, clinical findings, and treatment results. In R.P. Kluft (Ed.), *Childhood Antecedents of Multiple Personality Disorder* (pp. 167-196). Washington, DC: American Psychiatric Press.

Kluft, R.P. (1985b). Making the diagnosis of multiple personality disorder (MPD). In F.F. Flach (Ed.), *Directions in Psychiatry* (pp. 1–10). New York: Hatherleigh.

Kluft, R.P. (1987a). An update on multiple personality disorder. *Hospital and Community Psychiatry*, 38, 363–373.

Kluft, R.P. (1987b). The simulation and dissimulation of multiple personality disorder. *Journal of Clinical Hypnosis*, 30(2), 104–118.

Kluft, R.P. (1988a). Today's therapeutic pluralism. *Dissociation*, 1(2), 1–2.

Kluft, R.P. (1988b). The phenomenology and treatment of extremely complex multiple personality disorder. *Dissociation*, 1(4), 47–58.

Kluft, R.P. (1989). Iatrogenic creation of new alter personalities. *Dissociation*, 2, 83–91.

Kluft, R.P. (1990). Incest and subsequent revictimization. In R.P. Kluft (Ed.), *Incest Related Syndromes of Adult Psychopathology* (pp. 263–288). Washington, DC: American Psychiatric Press.

Kluft, R.P. (1992). Paradigm exhaustion and paradigm shift—thinking through the therapeutic impasses. *Psychiatric Annals*, 22(10), 502–508.

Kluft, R.P. (1994a). Treatment trajectories in multiple personality disorder. *Dissociation*, 7, 63–76.

Kluft, R.P. (1994b). Clinical observations on the use of the CSDS Dimensions of Therapeutic Movement Instrument (DTMI). *Dissociation*, 7, 272–283.

Kluft, R.P. (1994c). Countertransference in the treatment of multiple personality disorder. In. J.P. Wilson and J.D. Lindy (Eds.), *Countertransference and Posttraumatic Stress Disorder* (pp. 122–150). New York: Guilford.

Kluft, R.P. (1995a). The confirmation and disconfirmation of memories of abuse in dissociative identity disorder patients: A naturalistic clinical study. *Dissociation*, 8(4), 253–258.

Kluft, R.P. (1996). Dissociative identity disorder. In L.K. Michelson and W.J. Ray (Eds.), *Handbook of Dissociation: Theoretical, empirical, and clinical perspectives* (pp. 337–366). New York: Plenum Press.

Kluft, R.P. (1998). Reflections on the traumatic memories of dissociative identity disorder patients. In S. Lynn and K. McConkey (Eds.), *Truth in Memory* (pp. 304–322). New York: Guilford.

Kluft, R.P. (1999a). An overview of the psychotherapy of dissociative identity disorder. *American Journal of Psychotherapy*, 53(3), 289–319.

Kluft, R.P. (1999b). Current issues in dissociative identity disorder. *Journal of Practical Psychiatry and Behavioral Health*, 5, 3–19.

Kluft, R.P., and Fine, C.G. (1993). *Clinical Perspectives on Multiple Personality Disorder.* Washington, DC: American Psychiatric Press.

Kluft, R.P., and Foote, B. (1999). Dissociative identity disorder: Recent developments. *American Journal of Psychotherapy*, 53(3), 283–288.

Kohut, H. (1959). Introspection, empathy and psychoanalysis. *Journal of the American Psychoanalytic Association*, 7, 459–483.

Kohut, H. (1971). *The Analysis of the Self.* New York: International Universities Press.

Kohut, H. (1977). *The Restoration of the Self.* New York: International Universities Press.

Kohut, H. (1984). *How Does Analysis Cure?* Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Kornfeld, E.L. (1996). The development of a treatment approach for victims of human rights violations in Chile. In R.J. Kleber, C.R. Figley, B.P.R. Gersons (Eds.), *Beyond Trauma: Cultural and societal dynamics* (pp. 115–130). New York: Plenum Press.

Kramer, S. (1994). Further considerations on somatic and cognitive residues of incest. In A. Sugarman (Ed.), *Victims of Abuse: The emotional impact of child and adult trauma* (pp. 69–95). Madison, CT. International University Press.

Krystal, H. (1978). Trauma and affects. *The Psychoanalytic Study of the Child*, 33, 81–116.

Krystal, J.H., Bennett, A., Bremner, J.D., Southwick, A.M., and Charney, D.S. (1996). Recent developments in the neurobiology of dissociation: Implications for posttraumatic stress disorder. In L.K. Michelson and W.J. Ray (Eds.), *Handbook of Dissociation: Theoretical, empirical, and clinical perspectives* (pp. 163-190). New York, NY: Plenum Press.

Kumin, I. (1978). Developmental aspects of opposites and paradox. *International Review of Psychoanalysis*, 5, 477–483.

Lander, D. (1997). The sacrifice of the innocents. *Journal of Psychohistory*, 24(3), 214–220.

Landsberg, M. (1996). Beware of false prophets peddling false-memory hype. *Toronto Star*, February 11, p. A2.

Langer, L. (1996). *Admitting the Holocaust: Collected essays.* New York: Oxford University Press.

Langevin, R., Martentette, D., and Rosati, B. (1996). Why therapy fails with some sex offenders: Learning difficulties examined empirically. In E. Coleman, S.M. Dwyer, and N.J. Pollone (Eds.), *Sex Offender Treatment: Biological dysfunction, intrapsychic conflict, interpersonal violence* (pp. 71–84). New York: Haworth Press.

Langevin, R., and Watson, R.J. (1996). Major factors in the assessment of paraphiliacs and sex offenders. In E. Coleman, S.M. Dwyer, and N.J. Pollone (Eds.), *Sex Offender Treatment: Biological dysfunction, intrapsychic conflict, interpersonal violence* (pp. 39–70). New York: Haworth Press.

Lanning, K.V. (1984). Collectors. In A. Burgess and M. Clark (Eds.), *Child Pornography and Sex Rings* (pp. 83–92). Lexington, MA: Lexington Books, D.C. Heath and Company.

Lanning, K.V. (1992). A law enforcement perspective on allegations of religious abuse. In D.K. Sakheim and S.E. Devine (Eds.), *Out of Darkness: Exploring satanism and ritual abuse.* New York: Lexington Books.

Larson, N.R., and Maddock, J.W. (1986). Structural and functional variables in incest family systems: Implications for assessment and treatment. In T.S. Tepper and M.J. Barrett (Eds.), *Treating Incest: A multiple systems perspective.* New York: Haworth Press, Inc.

Laub, D. (1995). Truth and testimony: The process and the struggle. In C. Caruth (Ed.), *Trauma: Explorations in memory* (pp. 61–75). Baltimore, MD: Johns Hopkins University Press.

Laub, D., and Auerhahn, N. (1989). Failed empathy—A central theme in the survivor's Holocaust experiences. *Psychoanalytic Psychology*, 6, 377–400.

Laub, D., and Auerhahn, N. (1993). Knowing and not knowing massive trauma: Forms of traumatic memory. *International Journal of Psychoanalysis*, 74, 287–302.

Leavitt, F. (1997). False attribution of suggestibility to explain recovered memory of childhood sexual abuse following extended amnesia. *Child Abuse and Neglect*, 21(3), 265–272.

Leowald, H. (1988). *Sublimation.* New Haven, CT: Yale University Press.

Leowald, H.W. (1960). On the therapeutic action of psychoanalysis. *International Journal of Psychoanalysis*, 41, 16–33.

Leowald, H.W. (1972). The experience of time. *The Psychoanalytic Study of the Child*, 27, 401–410.

Leowald, H.W. (1974). Psychoanalysis as art and the fantasy nature of the psychoanalytic situation. In Leowald, H., *Papers in Psychoanalysis* (pp. 352–371). New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 1980.

Leowald, H.W. (1980). *Papers on Psychoanalysis*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press.

Levenson, E. (1972). *The Fallacy of Understanding*. New York: Basic Books.

Levenson, E.A. (1995/1996). A monopedal presentation of interpersonal psychoanalysis. *The Review of Interpersonal Psychoanalysis: William Alanson White Institute of Psychiatry, Psychology, and Psychoanalysis*, 1(1), 1–4.

Levenson, E.A. (1996). Aspects of self revelation and self-disclosure. *Contemporary Psychoanalysis*, 32(2), 237–248.

Levine, H.B. (1990). Introduction. In H.B. Levine (Ed.), *Adult Analysis and Childhood Sexual Abuse* (pp. 3–20). Hillsdale, NJ: Analytic Press.

Levine, H.B. (1994). Repetition, reenactment and trauma. In A. Sugarman (Ed.), *Victims of Abuse: The emotional impact of child and adult trauma* (pp. 141–164). Madison, CT: International University Press.

Lifton, R.J. (1961). *Thought Reform and the Psychology of Totalism*. New York: W.W. Norton.

Lifton, R. J. (1986). *The Nazi Doctors: Medical killing and the psychology of genocide*. New York: Basic Books.

Lindemann, E. (1944). Symptomatology and management of acute grief. *American Journal of Psychiatry*, 101, 141–148.

Lindsay, D.S., and Read, J.D. (1994). Psychotherapy and memories of childhood sexual abuse: A cognitive perspective. *Applied Cognitive Psychology*, 8, 281–338.

Lisak, D., Hopper, J., and Song, P. (1996). Factors in the cycle of violence: Gender rigidity and emotional constriction. *Journal of Traumatic Stress*, 9(4), 721–742.

Loewenstein, R.J. (1993). Anna O: Reformulation as a case of multiple personality disorder. In J.M. Goodwin (Ed.), *Rediscovering Childhood Trauma: Historical casebook and clinical applications* (pp. 139–167).

Loftus, E.F. (1993). The reality of repressed memories. *American Psychologist*, 48, 518–537.

Loftus, E.F. (1995). Remembering dangerously. *Skeptical Inquirer*, 19, 20–30.

Loftus, E.F., and Ketcham, K. (1994). *The Myth of Repressed Memory: False memories and allegations of sexual abuse*. New York: St. Martin's Press.

Loftus, E.F., Milo, E.M., and Paddock, J.R. (1995). The accidental executioner: Why psychotherapy must be influenced by science. *Counseling Psychologist*, 23(2), 300–309.

Lyon, K.A. (1992). Shattered mirror: A fragment of the treatment of a patient with multiple personality disorder. *Psychoanalytic Inquiry*, 12, 71–94.

MacKinnon, C.A. (1987). *Feminism Unmodified: Discourse on life and the law*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.

MacVicar, K. (1997). Discussion: The retrieval of repressed memories. In C. Prozan (Ed.), *Construction and reconstruction of Memory: Dilemmas of childhood sexual abuse* (pp. 189–206). Northvale, NJ: Jason Aronson, Inc.

Magid, B. (1988). The evil self. *Dynamic Psychotherapy*, 6(2), 99–113.

Main, M. (1995). Recent studies in attachment: Overview with selected implications for clinical work. In Goldberg, S., Muir, R., and Kerr, J. (Ed.), *Attachment Theory*. Hillsdale, New Jersey: Analytic Press, pp. 19–43.

Main, M., Kaplan, N., and Cassidy, J. (1985). Security in infancy, childhood, and adulthood: A move to the level of representation. In I. Bretherton and E. Waters (Eds.), *Growing Points of Attachment Theory and Research: Monography of the Society for Research in Child Development*, 50, 66–104.

Marks, J. (1979). *The Search for the "Manchurian Candidate": The CIA and Mind Control.* New York: Times Books.

Marmer, S.S. (1980). Psychoanalysis of multiple personality disorder. *International Journal of Psychoanalysis,* 61, 439–459.

Marmer, S.S. (1996). An outline for psychoanalytic treatment. In J.L. Spira (Ed.), *Treating Dissociative Identity Disorder* (pp. 183–218). San Francisco, CA: Jossey-Bass.

Marmer, S. (1999). Variations on a factitious theme. *Journal of Psychiatry and Law,* 27, 459–481.

Maroda, K.J. (1991). *The Power of Countertransference: Innovations in analytic technique.* New York: Wiley and Sons.

Maroda, K.J. (1999). *Seduction, Surrender, and Transformation: Emotional engagement in the analytic process.* Analytic Press: Hillsdale, NJ.

McCann, I.L., and Coletti, J. (1994). The dance of empathy: A hermeneutic formulation of countertransference, empathy, and understanding in the treatment of individuals who have experienced early childhood trauma. In. J.P. Wilson and J.D. Lindy (Eds.), *Countertransference and Posttraumatic Stress Disorder* (pp. 87–121). New York: Guilford.

McCann, L., and Pearlman, L.A. (1990). Vicarious traumatization: A framework for understanding the psychological effects of working with victims. *Journal of Traumatic Stress,* 3(1), 131–149.

McCurdy, K., and Daro, D. (1993). *Current trends in child abuse reporting and fatalities: The results of the 1992 Fifty State Survey.* Chicago, IL: National Center on Child Abuse Prevention Research.

McFadyen, A., Hanks, H., and James, C. (1993). Ritual abuse: A definition. *Child Abuse Review,* 2, 35–41.

McHugh, P. (1997). Foreword. In A. Piper, *Hoax and Reality: The bizarre world of multiple personality* (pp. ix–x). Northvale, NJ: Jason Aronson, Inc.

McHugh, P.R. (1993a). Procedures in the diagnosis of incest in recovered memory cases. *FMS Foundation Newsletter,* May 3, p. 3.

McHugh, P.R. (1993b) To Treat. *FMS Foundation Newsletter,* October 1, p. 1.

McHugh, P.R. (1995). Witches, multiple personalities, and other psychiatric artifacts. *Nature Medicine,* 1, 110–114.

McWilliams, N. (1994) *Psychoanalytic Diagnosis: Understanding personality structure in the clinical process.* New York: Guilford.

Melamuth, N.M., Heavey, C.L., and Linz, D. (1996). The confluence model of sexual aggression: Combining hostile masculinity and impersonal sex. In E. Coleman, S.M. Dwyer, and N.J. Pollone (Eds.), *Sex Offender Treatment: Biological dysfunction, intrapsychic conflict, interpersonal violence* (pp. 13–37). New York: Haworth Press.

Meloy, R. (1988). *The Psychopathic Mind: Origins, dynamics, and treatment.* Northvale, NJ: Jason Aronson, Inc.

Melton, G.B., Goodman, G.S., Kalichman, S.C., Levine, M., Saywits, K.J., and Koocher, G.P. (1995). Empirical research on child maltreatment and the law. *Journal of Clinical Child Psychology,* 24 (Suppl), 47–77.

Merskey, H. (1992). The manufacture of personalities: The production of multiple personality disorder. *British Journal of Psychiatry,* 160, 327–340.

Merskey, H. (1995). The manufacture of personalities: The production of multiple personality disorder. In L. Cohen, J. Berzoff, and M. Elin (Eds.), *Dissociative Identity Disorder: Theoretical and treatment controversies* (pp. 3–32). Northvale, NJ: Jason Aronson, Inc.

Milburn, M.A., and Conrad, S.D. (1996). The politics of denial. *Journal of Psychohistory,* 23(3), 238–251.

Miller, A. (1984). *Thou Shalt Not Be Aware.* New York: Farrar, Straus, and Giroux.

Miller, M.L. (1996). Validation, interpretation, and corrective emotional experience in psychoanalytic treatment. *Contemporary Psychoanalysis,* 32(3), 385–411.

Mitchell, S.A. (1988). *Relational Concepts in Psychoanalysis: An integration.* Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.

Mitchell, S.A. (1993). *Hope and Dread in Psychoanalysis*. New York: Basic.

Mitchell, S.A. (1995). Interaction in the Kleinian and Interpersonal traditions. *Contemporary Psychoanalysis*, 31(1), 65–91.

Mitchell, S.A . (1998). Letting the paradox teach us. In J.G. Teicholz and D. Kriegman (Eds.), *Trauma, Repetition, and Affect: The Work of Paul Russell*, (p.49–66). New York: The Other Press.

Mitchell, S.A. (1999). Attachment theory and the psychoanalytic tradition: Reflections on human relationality. *Psychoanalytic Dialogues*, 9(1), 85–108.

Modell, A.H. (1990). *Other Times, Other Realities*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.

Mohr, J.W., Turner, R.E., and Jerry, M.B. (1964). *Pedophilia and Exhibitionism*. Toronto: University of Toronto Press.

Moore, R. (1991). Ritual sacred space and healing: the psychoanalyst as ritual elder. In N. Schwartz-Salant and M. Stein (Eds.), *Liminality and Transitional Phenomena* (pp. 13–32). Wilmette, IL: Chiron.

Morgan, R. (1989). *The Demon Lover: On the sexuality of terrorism*. New York: Norton.

Morrison, T. (1987/1991). *Beloved*. New York: Penguin/Signet.

Muntarbhorn, V. (1996). International perspectives and child prostitution in Asia. In *Forced Labor: The Prostitution of Children* (pp. 9–31). Symposium Proceedings, U.S. Department of Labor, Bureau of International Labor Affairs, 1996.

Murphy, P. (1993). *Making the Connections: Women, work and abuse: Dramatic insight into the lives of abuse victims and practical recommendations for their successful return to work*. Orlando, FL: Paul M. Deutsch Press.

Murphy, W.D., and Smith, T.A. (1996). Sex offenders against children. In J. Briere, L. Berliner, J. Bulkley, C. Jenny, and T. Reid (Eds.), *The APSAC Handbook on Child Maltreatment*. Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage.

Myers, J.E.B., Becker, J., Belliner, L., Corwin, D.L., and Saywitz, K.J. (1989). Expert testimony in child abuse litigation. *Nebraska Law Review*, 68(1/2), 1–145.

Nachmani, G. (1995). Trauma and ignorance. *Contemporary Psychoanalysis*, 31(3), 423–450.

Nachmani, G. (1997). Discussion: Reconstructing methods of victimization. In R.B. Gartner (Ed.), *Memories of Sexual Betrayal: Truth, fantasy, repression and dissociation* (pp. 189–208). Northvale, NJ: Jason Aronson, Inc.

Nathanson, D.L. (1987). A timetable for shame. In D.L. Nathanson (Ed.), *The Many Faces of Shame* (pp. 1–62), New York: Guilford.

Nathanson, D.L. (1992). *Shame and Pride: Affect, sex, and the birth of the self*. New York: Norton.

National Center for Missing and Exploited Children. (1998). *1997 Missing Children Statistics Fact Sheet*. Arlington, VA: National Center for Missing and Exploited Children.

National Victim Center Infolink on Missing Children (1996). Vol. 1 (32). Arlington, VA: The National Center for Victims of Crime.

Natterson, J. (1991). *Beyond Countertransference: The therapist's subjectivity in the therapeutic process*. Northvale, NJ: Jason Aronson, Inc.

Nemiah, J.C. (1985). Dissociative disorders ("hysterical neurosis, dissociative type"). In H.I. Kaplan and B.J. Sadock (Eds.), *Comprehensive Textbook of Psychiatry*, 4th edition. Baltimore, MD: Williams and Wilkins.

Neumann, D.A., and Gamble, S.J. (1995). Issues in the professional development of psychotherapists: Countertransference and vicarious traumatization in the new trauma therapies. *Psychotherapy*, 32(2), 341–347.

Newton, M. (1996). Written in blood: A history of human sacrifice. *Journal of Psychohistory*, 24(2), 104–131.

Noblitt, J.R., and Perskin, P.S. (1995). *Cult and Ritual Abuse: Its anthropology and recent discovery in contemporary America*. Westport, CT: Praeger.

Noblitt, J.R., and Perskin, P.S. (2000). *Cult and Ritual Abuse: Its history, and recent discovery in contemporary America* (Rev. Ed.). Westport, CT: Praeger.

Novick, J., and Novick, K.K. (1996). Externalization as a pathological form of relating: The dynamic underpinnings of abuse. In A. Sugarman (Ed.), *Victims of Abuse: The emotional impact of child and adult trauma* (pp. 45–68). Madison, CT: International Universities Press.

Nurcombe, B., and Unutzer, J. (1991). The ritual abuse of children: Clinical features and diagnostic reasoning. *Journal of the American Academy of Child and Adolescent Psychiatry*, 30(2), 272–276.

Oates, S.R.K. (1996). *The Spectrum of Child Abuse: Assessment, treatment, prevention*. New York: Bruner/Mazel.

Ofshe, R., and Watters, E. (1994). *Making Monsters: False memory, psychotherapy, and sexual hysteria*. New York: Scribners.

Ogden, T. (1989). *The Primitive Edge of Experience*. Northvale, NJ: Jason Aronson, Inc.

Ogden, T. (1990). *The Matrix of the Mind*. Northvale, NJ: Jason Aronson, Inc.

Ogden, T. (1992). Consultation is often needed when treating severe dissociative disorders. *Psychodynamic Letter*, 1 (10), 1–4.

O'Hara, M., and Anderson, W.T. (1995). Psychotherapy's identity crisis. In W.T. Anderson (Ed.), *The Truth About Truth: De-Confusing and Re-Constructing the Postmodern World* (pp. 170–176). New York: Jeremy P. Tarcher/Putnam.

OJP (2000). Office of Justice Programs. Press Release, May 10, 2000: New Grants to Combat Internet Crimes. Justice Department's Office of Juvenile Justice and Delinquency Prevention (OJJDP), (www.ojp.usdoj.gov.).

Olafson, E., Corwin, D.L., and Summit, R.C. (1993). Modern history of child sexual abuse awareness: Cycles of discovery and suppression. *Child Abuse and Neglect*, 17, 7–24.

Olio, K.A., and Cornell, W.F. (1993). The therapeutic relationship as the foundation for treatment with adult survivors of sexual abuse. *Psychotherapy*, 30, 512–523.

Orange, D. (1995). *Emotional Understanding: Studies in psychoanalytic epistemology*. New York: Guilford.

Orange, D., Atwood, G.E., and Stolorow, R.D. (1997). *Working Intersubjectively: Contextualism in psychoanalytic practice*. Hillsdale, NJ: Analytic Press.

Orbach, S. (1999). Why is attachment in the air? *Psychoanalytic Dialogues*, 9(1), 73–84.

Orwell, G. (1949). *1984*. New York: New American Library, Signet Classic Edition, 1949.

Otero, J.F. (1996). *Forced Labor: The prostitution of children*. Symposium Proceedings, U.S. Department of Labor, Bureau of International Affairs, 1996.

Paddock, J.R. (1994). Disengaging from a blaming: Psychology in the 1990's. *Georgia Psychologist*, 47(4), 2–6.

Pearlman, L.A., and Saakvitne, K.W. (1995). *Trauma and the Therapist: Countertransference and vicarious traumatization in psychotherapy with incest survivors*. New York: Norton.

Peoples, K.M. (1992, August). Unconscious dominance and submission. In E. Cardena (Chair), *Consciousness, dissociative alterations of consciousness and trauma*. Symposium conducted at the Centennial Convention of the American Psychological Association, Washington, DC.

Perlman, S.D. (1999). *The Therapist's Emotional Survival: Dealing with the pain of exploring trauma*. Northvale, NJ: Jason Aronson, Inc.

Peters, D.S., Wyatt, G.E., and Finkelhor, D. (1986). Prevalence. In D. Finkelhor (Ed.), *A Sourcebook on Child Sexual Abuse* (pp. 15–59). Beverly Hills, CA: Sage Publishing.

Peterson, C., and Biggs, M. (1997). Interviewing children about trauma: Problems with "specific" questions. *Journal of Traumatic Stress*, 10(2), 279–290.

Phillips, A. (1994). *On Flirtation: Psychoanalytic essays on the uncommitted life*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.

Pierce, R.L. (1984). Child pornography: A hidden dimension of child abuse. *Child Abuse and Neglect*, 8, 483–493.

Piper, A. (1997). *Hoax and Reality: The bizarre world of multiple personality disorder*. Northvale, NJ: Jason Aronson, Inc.

Pithers, W.D. (1990). Relapse prevention with sexual aggressors: A method for maintaining therapeutic gain and enhancing external supervision. In W.L. Marshall, D.R. Laws, and H.E. Barbaree (Eds.), *Handbook of Sexual Assault: Issues, theories, and treatment of the offender* (pp. 343–361). New York: Plenum Press.

Pitman, R.K. (1993). Biological findings in posttraumatic stress disorder: Implications for DSM IV classification. In J.R.T. Davidson and E.B. Foa (Eds.), *Posttraumatic Stress Disorder: DSM IV and Beyond* (pp. 173–190). Washington, DC: American Psychiatric Press.

Pizer, S.A. (1992). The negotiation of paradox in the analytic patient. *Psychoanalytic Dialogues*, 2(2), 215–240.

Pizer, S.A. (1996). The distributed self: Introduction to symposium on "The multiplicity of self and analytic technique." *Contemporary Psychoanalysis*, 32(4), 499–508.

Pizer, S.A. (1996a). Negotiating potential space: illusion, play, metaphor and the subjunctive. *Psychoanalytic Dialogues*, 6(5), 689–712.

Pizer, S.A. (1998). *Building Bridges: The negotiation of paradox in psychoanalysis.* Hillsdale, NJ: Analytic Press.

Pope, K.S., and Brown, L.S. (1996). *Recovered Memories of Abuse: Assessment, therapy, forensics.* Washington, DC: American Psychological Association Press.

Price, M. (1995). Knowing and not knowing: Paradox in the construction of historical narratives. In J.L. Alpert (Ed.), *Sexual Abuse Recalled: Treating trauma in the era of the recovered memory debate* (pp. 289–309). Northvale, NJ: Jason Aronson, Inc.

Price, M. (1997). Knowing and not knowing: Paradox in the construction of historical narratives. In R.B. Gartner (Ed.), *Memories of Sexual Betrayal: Truth, fantasy, repression and dissociation* (pp. 129–144). Northvale, NJ: Jason Aronson, Inc.

Prior, S. (1996). *Object Relations in Severe Trauma: Psychotherapy of the sexually abused child.* Northvale, NJ: Jason Aronson, Inc.

Putnam, F.W. (1988). The switch process in multiple personality disorder. *Dissociation*, 1(1), 24–32.

Putnam, F.W. (1989). *The Diagnosis and Treatment of Multiple Personality Disorder*. New York: Guilford.

Putnam, F.W. (1992). Discussion: Are alter personalities fragments or fiction? *Psychoanalytic Inquiry*, 12, 95–111.

Putnam, F.W. (1994). The switch process in multiple personality disorder and other state change disorders. In R.M. Klein and B.K. Doane (Eds.), *Psychological Concepts and Dissociative Disorders* (pp. 283–304). Hillsdale, NJ: Lawrence Erlbaum and Associates.

Putnam, F. (1997). *Dissociation in Children and Adolescents: A developmental perspective.* New York: Guilford.

Putnam, F.W. (1999). Childhood maltreatment and adverse outcomes: A prospective developmental approach. Paper presented at the American Psychiatric Association Annual Meeting (Day 2, May 18, 1999).

Putnam, F.W., Guroff, J.J., Silberman, Barban, L., and Post, R.M. (1986). The clinical phenomenology of multiple personality disorder: Review of 100 recent cases. *Journal of Clinical Psychiatry*, 47, 285–293.

Putnam, F.W., and Tricket, P.K. (1997). The psychobiological effects of sexual abuse: A longitudinal study. *Annals of the New York Academy of Science*, 821, 150–159.

Pye, E. (1995). Memory and imagination: Placing imagination in the therapy of individuals with incest memories. In J.L. Alpert (Ed.), *Sexual Abuse Recalled: Treating trauma in the era of the recovered memory debate* (pp. 155–184). Northvale, NJ: Jason Aronson, Inc.

Rabin, H.M. (1995). The liberating effect on the analyst of the paradigm shift in psychoanalysis. *Psychoanalytic Psychology*, 12(4), 467–481.

Rachman, A.W. (1997). The suppression and censorship of Ferenczi's "Confusion of Tongues" paper. *Psychoanalytic Inquiry*, 17, 459–485.

Radden, J. (1996). *Divided Minds, Successive Selves: Ethical issues in disorders of identity and personality.* Cambridge, MA: MIT Press/Bradford Books.

Rascovsky, A. (1995). *Filicide: The murder, humiliation, mutilation, denigration, and abandonment of children.* New York: Jason Aronson, Inc.

Rasmussen, L.A., Burton, J.E. and Christopherson, B.J. (1992). Precursors to offending and the trauma outcome process in sexually reactive children. *Journal of Child Sexual Abuse,* 1, 33–48.

Reis, B.E. (1993). Toward a psychoanalytic understanding of multiple personality disorder. *Bulletin of the Menninger Clinic,* 57, 309–318.

Renik, O. (1995). The ideal of the anonymous analyst and the problem of self-disclosure. *Psychoanalytic Quarterly,* 64, 466–495.

Revitch, E., and Weiss, R.G. (1962). The pedophiliac offender. *Diseases of the Nervous System,* 23, 73–78.

Rhue, J.W., Lynn, S.J., and Sandberg (1995). Dissociation, fantasy, and imagination in childhood: A comparison of physically abused, sexually abused, and nonabused children. *Contemporary Hypnosis,* 12(2), 131–136.

Rieker, P.P., and Carmen, E.H. (1986). The victim to patient process: The disconfirmation and transformation of abuse. *American Journal of Orthopsychiatry,* 56(3), 360–370.

Rivera, M. (1989). Linking the psychological and the social: Feminism, poststructuralism, and multiple personality. *Dissociation,* 2(1), 24–31.

Rivera, M. (1996). *More Alike Than Different: Treating severely dissociative trauma survivors.* Toronto: University of Toronto Press.

Robbins, A.D. (1996). Sexual abuse and the epistemology of civil life. *Journal of Psychohistory,* 23(3), 307–329.

Robbins, A.D. (1997). Cults and cult abuse: Clinical realities, historical perspectives. *Journal of Psychohistory,* 24(4), 409–416.

Rogers, M.L. (1995). Factors influencing recall of childhood sexual abuse. *Journal of Traumatic Stress,* 8(4), 691–716.

Roiphe, H., and Galenson, E. (1975). Some observations on transitional object and infantile fetish. *Psychoanalytic Quarterly,* 44, 206–231.

Rorty, R. (1989). *Contingency, Irony, and Solidarity.* Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

Rosenfeld, H. (1971). A clinical approach to the psychoanalytic theory of the life and death instincts: An investigation into the aggressive aspects of narcissism. *International Journal of Psychoanalysis,* 52(2), 174.

Rosenfeld, H. (1987). *Impasse and Interpretation: Therapeutic and anti-therapeutic factors in the psychoanalytic treatment of psychotic, borderline, and neurotic patients.* London: Tavistock.

Ross, C.A. (1989). *Multiple Personality Disorder: Diagnosis, clinical features, and treatment.* New York: Wiley.

Ross, C.A. (1991). Epidemiology of M.P.D. and dissociation. *Psychiatric Clinics of North America,* 14, 503–517.

Ross, C.A. (1992). Validity and reliability of MPD diagnoses. *California Psychologist,* September, p. 15.

Ross, C.A. (1994). *The Osiris Complex: Case studies in multiple personality disorder.* Toronto: University of Toronto Press.

Ross. C.A. (1995a). *Satanic Ritual Abuse: Principles of treatment.* Toronto: University of Toronto Press.

Ross, C.A. (1995b). The validity and reliability of dissociative identity disorder. In L. Cohen, J. Berzoff, and M. Elin (Eds.), *Dissociative Identity Disorder.* Northvale, NJ: Jason Aronson, Inc.

Ross, C.A. (1996). History, phenomenolgy, and epidemiology of dissociation. In L.K. Michelson and W.J. Ray (Eds.), *Handbook of Dissociation: Theoretical, empirical, and clinical perspectives* (pp. 3–24). New York: Plenum Press.

Ross, C.A. (1997). *Dissociative Identity Disorder: Diagnosis, clinical features, and treatment of multiple personality.* New York: John Wiley and Sons.

Ross, C.A., and Gahan, P. (1988). Cognitive analysis of multiple personality disorder. *American Journal of Psychotherapy*, 42, 229–239.

Ross, C.A., Miller, S.D., Reagor, P., Bjornson, L., Fraser, G.A., and Anderson, G. (1990). Structured interview data on 102 cases of multiple personality disorder from four centers. *American Journal of Psychiatry*, 147, 596–601.

Ross, C.A., Norton, G.R., and Wozney, K. (1989). Multiple personality disorder: An analysis of 236 cases. *Canadian Journal of Psychiatry*, 34, 413–418.

Ross, C.A., Ryan, L., Voigt, H., and Edie, L. (1991). High and low dissociators in a college student population. *Dissociation*, 4(3), 147–152.

Rossi, E.L. (1986). *The Psychobiology of Mind-Body Healing: New concepts in therapeutic hypnosis*. New York, NY: Norton.

Rossi, E.L., and Cheek, D.B. (1988). *Mind-Body Therapy*. New York, NY: Norton.

Russell, D.E.H. (1986). *The Secret Trauma: Incest in the lives of girls and women*. New York: Basic.

Russell, D.E.H. (1996). The prevalence of trauma and sociocultural causes of incestuous abuse of females. In R.J. Kleber, C.R. Figley, B.P.R. Gersons (Eds.), *Beyond Trauma: Cultural and social dynamics* (pp. 171–186). New York: Plenum Press.

Russell, D., and Finkelhor, D. (1984). The gender gap among perpetrators of child sexual abuse. In D.E.H. Russell (Ed.), *Sexual Exploitation: Rape, child sexual abuse, and workplace harassment* (pp. 215–231). Beverly Hills, CA: Sage Publications.

Russell, P. (1998). The role of paradox in the repetition compulsion. In J.G. Teicholz and D. Kriegman, (Eds.), *Trauma, Repetition, and Affect Regulation: The Work of Paul Russell* (pp. 1–22). New York: The Other Press.

Rustin, J. (1997). Infancy, agency and intersubjectivity: A view of therapeutic action. *Psychoanalytic Dialogues*, 7, 77–80.

Rycroft, C. (1985). *Psycho-Analysis and Beyond*. London: Chatto and Windus.

Saakvitne, K.W. (1995). Therapists' response to dissociative clients: Countertransference and vicarious traumatization. In L. Cohen, J. Berzoff, and M. Elin (Eds.), *Dissociative Identity Disorder* (pp. 467–507). Northvale, NJ: Jason Aronson, Inc.

Sachs, R.G., and Peterson, J.A. (1996). Memory processing and the healing experience. In L.K. Michelson and W.J. Ray (Eds.), *Handbook of Dissociation: Theoretical, empirical, and clinical perspectives* (pp. 475–498). New York: Plenum Press.

Sade, Marquis de. (1789/1987). *The 120 Days of Sodom*. New York: Grove Press.

Safran, J.D. (1999). Faith, despair, will, and the paradox of acceptance. *Contemporary Psychoanalysis*, 35(1), 5–24.

Saikaew, L. (1996). A non-governmental organization perspective. *The Prostitution of Children* (pp. 63–71). Symposium Proceedings, U.S. Department of Labor, Bureau of International Affairs, 1996.

Sakheim, D.K. (1996). Clinical aspects of sadistic ritual abuse. In L.K. Michelson and W.J. Ray (Eds.), *Handbook of Dissociation: Theoretical, empirical, and clinical perspectives* (pp. 569–594). New York: Plenum Press.

Salter, A.C. (1988). *Treating Child Sex Offenders and Victims*. Newbury Park, CA: Sage.

Salter, A.C. (1995). *Transforming Trauma: A guide to understanding and treating adult survivors of child sexual abuse*. Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage Publications.

Samuels, A. (1989). *The Plural Psyche*. New York: Routledge.

Sands, S. (1990). Bulimia, dissociation, and empathy: A self psychological view. In C. Johnson (Ed.), *Psychodynamic Treatment of Anorexia Nervosa and Bulimia Nervosa* (pp. 34–50). New York: Guilford.

Sands, S. (1994). What is dissociated? *Dissociation*, 7(3), 145–152.

Saxe, G.N., Van der Kolk, B.A., Berkowitz, R., Chinman, G., Hall, K., Lieberg, G., and Schwartz, J. (1993). Dissociative disorders in psychiatric inpatients. *American Journal of Psychiatry*, 150, 1037–1042.

Scarry, E. (1985). *The Body in Pain: The making and unmaking of the world*. New York: Oxford University Press.

Schacter, D.L. (1996). *Searching for Memory: The brain, the mind, and the past.* New York: Basic Books.

Scheflin, A.W., and Brown, D. (1999). The "false-litigant" syndrome: "Nobody would say that unless it was the truth." *Journal of Psychiatry and Law,* 27, 649–705.

Schoen, C., and Davis, K. (1998). *The Health of Adolescent Boys: Commonwealth Fund Survey Findings.* New York: The Commonwealth Fund.

Schwartz, H.L. (1994). From dissociation to negotiation: A relational psychoanalytic perspective on multiple personality disorder. *Psychoanalytic Psychology,* 11(2), 189–231.

Searles, H.F. (1959). The effort to drive the other person crazy: An element in the aetiology and psychotherapy of schizophrenia. In *Collected Papers on Schizophrenia and Related Subjects* (pp. 254–283). New York: International Universities Press, 1965.

Seligman, S., and Shanok, R.S. (1995). Subjectivity, complexity, and the social world: Erickson's identity concept and contemporary relational theories. *Psychoanalytic Dialogues,* 5(4), 537–565.

Shapiro, S. (1997). Discussion: Makes me want to shout. In Gartner, R.B. (Ed.), *Memories of Sexual Betrayal: Truth, fantasy, repression and dissociation* (pp. 95–112). Northvale, NJ: Jason Aronson, Inc.

Shengold, L. (1989). *Soul Murder.* New Haven, CT: Yale University Press.

Sholem, G. (1974). *Major Trends in Jewish Mysticism.* New York: Schocken Books.

Siegel, D.J. (1997). An overview of cognitive process: Childhood memories of trauma. In L. Prozan (Ed.), *Construction and Reconstruction of Memory: Dilemmas of childhood sexual abuse* (pp. 39–70). Northvale, NJ: Jason Aronson, Inc.

Siegelman, E.Y. (1991). Playing with opposites: Symbolization and transitional space. In N. Schwartz-Salant and M. Stein (Eds.). *Liminality and Transitional Phenomena* (pp. 151–168). Wilmette, IL: Chiron Press.

Silbert, M.H., and Pines, A.M. (1983). Early sexual exploitation as an influence in prostitution. *Social Work,* 28, 285–289.

Simpson, M.A. (1995). Gullible's travels, or the importance of being multiple. In L. Cohen, J. Berzoff, and M. Elin (Eds.), *Dissociative Identity Disorder: Theoretical and treatment controversies* (pp. 87–134). Northvale, NJ: Jason Aronson, Inc.

Simpson, M.A. (1996). What went wrong? Diagnostic and ethical problems in dealing with the effects of torture and repression in South Africa. In R.J. Kleber, C.R. Figley, and B.P.R. Gersons (Eds.), *Beyond Trauma: Cultural and societal dynamics* (pp. 187–212). New York: Plenum Press.

Sinason, V. (1994). *Treating Survivors of Satanic Abuse.* New York: Routledge.

Singer, M.T. (1995). *Cults in Our Midst: The hidden menace in our everyday lives.* San Francisco, CA: Jossey-Bass.

Slavin, J. (1997). Memory, dissociation, and agency in sexual abuse. In R.B. Gartner (Ed.), *Memories of Sexual Betrayal: Truth, fantasy, repression and dissociation* (pp. 221–236). Northvale, NJ: Jason Aronson, Inc.

Slavin, M. (1996). Is one self enough: Multiplicity in self-organization and the capacity to negotiate relational conflicts. *Contemporary Psychoanalysis,* 32(4), 615–625.

Slavin, M., and Kriegman, D. (1992). *The Adaptive Design of the Human Psyche.* New York: Guilford.

Smith, B.L. (1989). Of many minds: A contribution on the dynamics of multiple personality. In M.G. Fromm and B. Smith (Eds.), *The Facilitating Environment* (pp. 424–458). Madison, CT: International Universities Press.

Smith, M. (1993). *Ritual Abuse: What it is, why it happens, how to help.* San Francisco, CA: Harper.

Smith, S. (1984). The sexually abused patient and the abusing therapist: A study in sadomasochistic relationship. *Psychoanalytic Psychology,* 1, 89–98.

Solnit, A.J. (1994). A psychoanalytic perspective of child abuse. In A. Sugarman (Ed.), *Victims of Abuse: The emotional impact of child and adult trauma* (pp. 25–44). Madison, CT: International University Press.

Solzhenitsyn, A. (1974). *The Gulag Archipelago.* New York: Harper and Row.

Sonnenberg, S.M. (1985). Introduction: The trauma of war. In S.M. Sonnenberg and J.A. Tabbott (Eds.). *The Trauma of War: Stress and recovery in Vietnam veterans* (pp. 3–12). Washington DC: American Psychiatric Press.

Sorenson, T., and Snow, B. (1991). How children tell: The process of disclosure in child sexual abuse. *Child Welfare League of America,* 70(1), 3–15.

Soskis, D.A., and Ochberg, F.M. (1982). Concepts of terrorist victimization. In F.M. Ochberg and D.A. Soskis (Eds.), *Victims of Terrorism* (pp. 105–135). Boulder, CO: Westview Press.

Southwick, S.M., Krystal, J.H., Morgan, A., Johnson, D., Nagy, L., Nicolaou, A., Henniger, G.R., and Charney, D.S. (1993). Abnormal noradrenergic function in posttraumatic stress disorder. *Archives of General Psychiatry,* 50, 266–274.

Spanos, N.P. (1994). Multiple identity enactments and multiple personality disorder: A sociocognitive perspective. *Psychological Bulletin,* 116, 143–155.

Spanos, N.P. (1996). *Multiple Identities and False Memories: A Sociocognitive Perspective.* Washington, DC: American Psychological Association.

Spanos, N.P., Burgess, C.A., and Burgess, M.F. (1994). Past-life identities, UFO-abductions, and satanic ritual abuse: The social construction of memories. *International Journal of Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis,* 42, 433–446.

Spence, D. (1993). The hermeneutic turn: Soft science or loyal opposition. *Psychoanalytic Dialogues,* 3, 1-11.

Spezzano, C. (1993a). A relational model of inquiry and truth: the place of psychoanalysis in human conversation. *Psychoanalytic Dialogues,* 3(2), 177–208.

Spezzano, C. (1993b). *Affect in Psychoanalysis.* Hillsdale, NJ: Analytic Press.

Spezzano, C. (1995). "Classical" versus "contemporary" theory: The differences that matter clinically. *Contemporary Psychoanalysis,* 31(1), 20–46.

Spezzano, C. (1996). The face of two-person psychology. *Psychoanalytic Dialogues,* 6(5), 599–622.

Spiegel, D., and Cardena, E. (1991). Disintegrated experience: The dissociative disorders revisited. *Journal of Abnormal Psychology,* 100, 366–378.

Sroufe, L.A., and Fleeson, J. (1986). Attachment and the construction of relationships. In W.W. Hartup and Z. Rubin (Eds.), *Nature and the Development of Relationship.* New York: Erlbaum.

Steele, K. (1989). A model for abreaction with MPD and other dissociative disorders. *Dissociation,* 2(3), 151–159.

Steele, K. (1999). Response to critical issues. *The International Society for the Study of Dissociation News,* 17(1), 3.

Stern, D.B. (1997). Discussion and constructivism. In R.B. Gartner (Ed.), *Memories of Sexual Betrayal: Truth, fantasy, repression and dissociation* (pp. 77–93). Northvale, NJ: Jason Aronson, Inc.

Stern, D.N. (1985). *The Interpersonal World of the Infant: A View from Psychoanalysis and Developmental Psychology.* New York: Basic Books.

Stern, S. (1994). Needed relationships and repeated relationships: An integrated relational perspective. *Psychoanalytic Dialogues,* 4(3), 317–345.

Stolorow, R.D., (1994). The nature and therapeutic action of psychoanalytic interpretation. In R.D. Stolorow, G.E. Atwood, and B. Brandchaft (Eds.), *The Intersubjective Perspective* (pp. 43–56). Northvale, NJ: Jason Aronson, Inc.

Stolorow, R.D. and Atwood, G. (1992). *Contexts of Being: The Intersubjective Foundations of Psychological Life.* Hillsdale, NJ: Analytic Press.

Stolorow, R.D., and Atwood, G. (1994). Toward a science of human experience. In R.D. Stolorow, G.E. Atwood, and B. Brandchaft (Eds.), *The Intersubjective Perspective.* Northvale, NJ: Jason Aronson, Inc.

Stolorow, R.D., Brandchaft, B., and Atwood, G.E. (1987). *Psychoanalytic Treatment: An intersubjective approach.* Hillsdale, NJ: Analytic Press.

Stout, D. (1996). Child pornography mailing list leads to 45 arrests nationwide. *New York Times,* May 9.

Strong, M. (1998). *A Bright Red Scream: Self-mutilation and the language of pain.* New York: Penguin Publishing.

Sullivan, H.S. (1953). *The Interpersonal Theory of Psychiatry.* New York: Norton.

Sullivan, H.S. (1956). *Clinical Studies in Psychiatry.* New York: Norton.

Summerfield, D. (1996). Addressing human response to war and atrocity: Major challenges for research and practice and the limitations of Western psychiatric models. In R.J. Kleber, C.R. Figley, and B.P.R. Gersons (Eds.), *Beyond Trauma: Cultural and societal dynamics* (pp. 17–28). New York: Plenum Press.

Summit, R. (1982). Beyond belief: the reluctant discovery of incest. In M. Kirkpatrick (Ed.), *The Dark Continent.* New York: Plenum Press.

Summit, R. (1983). The child sexual accommodation syndrome. *Child Abuse and Neglect, 7,* 177–193.

Summit, R. (1988). Hidden victims, hidden pain: Societal avoidance of child sexual abuse. In G. Wyatt and G.J. Powell (Eds.), *Lasting Effects of Child Sexual Abuse* (pp. 39–60). Newbury Park, CA: Sage.

Summit, R. (1989). The centrality of victimization: Regaining the focal point of recovery for survivors of child sexual abuse. *Psychiatric Clinics of North America,* 12, 413–430.

Switzer, G.E., Dew, M.A., Thompson, I.L., Goycoolean, J.M., Derricott, T., and Mullins, S.D. (1999). Posttraumatic stress disorder service utilization among urban mental health center clients. *Journal of Traumatic Stress,* 12(1), 25–39.

Symonds, M. (1982). Victim responses to terror: Understanding and treatment. In F.M. Ochberg and D.A. Soskis (Eds.), *Victims of Terrorism* (pp. 95–103). Boulder, CO: Westview Press.

Taylor, M. (1996). 45 Held in child-porn postal sting. *San Francisco Examiner,* May 9.

Thomas, G. (1989). *Journey into Madness: The true story of secret CIA mind control and medical abuse.* New York, NY: Bantam Books.

Trepper, T.S., Nedner, D., Mika, L, and Barret, M.J. (1996). Family characteristics of intact sexually abusing families: An exploratory study. *Journal of Child Sexual Abuse,* 5(4), 1–18.

Turner, S.W., McFarlane, A.C., and Van der Kolk, B.A. (1996). The therapeutic environment and new explorations in the treatment of posttraumatic stress disorder. In B.A. Van der Kolk, A.C. McFarlane, and L. Weisaeth (Eds.), *Traumatic Stress: The effects of overwhelming experience on mind, body, and society* (pp. 537–558). New York: Guilford.

Tyler, R.P., and Stone, L.E. (1985). Child pornography: Perpetuating the sexual victimization of children. *Child Abuse and Neglect,* 9, 313–318.

Ulman, R.B., and Brothers, D.B. (1988). *The Shattered Self: A psychoanalytic study of trauma.* Hillsdale, NJ: Analytic Press.

U.S. Advisory Board on Child Abuse and Neglect (1993). U.S. Department of Health and Human Services, Office of Human Development Services. Washington, DC.

U.S. Department of Health and Human Services, Children's Bureau (1998). *Child Maltreatment 1996: Reports from the States to the National Child Abuse and Neglect Data System.* Washington, DC: Children's Bureau, U.S. Department of Health and Human Services.

Valenstein, A. (1973). On attachment to painful feelings and the negative therapeutic reaction. *The Psychoanalytic Study of the Child,* 28, 305–392.

Van der Hart, O., and Boon, S. (1997). Treatment strategies for complex dissociative disorders: Two Dutch case examples. *Dissociation,* 10, 157–165.

Van der Hart, O., and Steele, K. (2000) Critical issues column. *The International Society for the Study of Dissociation News,* 18(2), March/April, 4–5.

Van der Hart, O., Steele, K., Boon, S., and Brown, P. (1993). The treatment of traumatic memories: Synthesis, realization, and integration. *Dissociation,* 6 (2/3), 162–180.

Van der Kolk, B.A. (1987a). The psychological consequences of overwhelming life experiences. In B.A. Van der Kolk (Ed.), *Psychological Trauma* (pp. 1–30). Washington, DC: American Psychiatric Press.

Van Der Kolk, B.A. (1987b). The separation cry and the trauma response: Developmental issues in the psychobiology of attachment and separation. In B.A. Van der Kolk (Ed.), *Psychological Trauma* (pp. 31–62). Washington, DC: American Psychiatric Press.

Van der Kolk, B.A. (1989). The compulsion to repeat the trauma: reenactment, revictimization, and masochism. *Psychiatric Clinics of North America*, 12(2), 389–411.

Van der Kolk, B.A. (1995). The body memory and the psychobiology of trauma. In J.L. Alpert (Ed.), *Sexual Abuse Recalled: Treating trauma in the era of the recovered memory debate* (pp. 29–60). Northvale, NJ: Jason Aronson, Inc.

Van der Kolk, B.A. (1996). The complexity of adaptation to trauma: Self-regulation, stimulus discrimination, and characterological development. In B.A. Van der Kolk, A.C. McFarlane, and L. Weisaeth (Eds.), *Traumatic Stress: The effects of overwhelming experience on mind, body, and society* (pp. 182–213). New York: Guilford.

Van der Kolk, B.A., and Fisler, R. (1995). Dissociation and the fragmentary nature of traumatic memories: Overview and exploratory study. *Journal of Traumatic Stress*, 8(4), 505–526.

Van der Kolk, B.A., McFarlane, A.C. , and Weisaeth, L. (Eds.) (1996). *Traumatic Stress: The effects of overwhelming experience on mind, body, and society*. New York: Guilford.

Van der Kolk, B.A., and Van der Hart, O. (1989). Pierre Janet and the breakdown of adaptation in psychological trauma. *American Journal of Psychiatry*, 146, 1530–1539.

Van der Kolk, B.A., and Van der Hart, O. (1991). The intrusive past: The flexibility of memory and the engraving of trauma. *American Imago*, 48, 425–454.

Van der Kolk, B.A., and Van der Hart, O. (1995). The intrusive past: The flexibility of memory and the engraving of trauma. In C. Caruth (Ed.), *Trauma: Explorations in memory* (pp. 158–182). Baltimore, MD: Johns Hopkins University Press.

Van der Kolk, B.A., Van der Hart, O., and Marmer, C. (1996). The history of trauma in psychiatry. In Van der Kolk, B.A., McFarlane, A.C., and Weisaeth, L. (Eds.) (1996), *Traumatic Stress: The effects of overwhelming experience on mind, body, and society* (pp. 47–76). New York: Guilford.

Victor, G. (1975). Grand hysteria or folie à deux? *American Journal of Psychiatry*, 132, 202.

Waites, E.A. (1993). *Trauma and Survival: Post-traumatic Stress and Dissociative Disorders in Women*. New York: W.W. Norton.

Waites, E.A. (1997). *Memory Quest: Trauma and the search for personal history*. New York: W.W. Norton.

Wakefield, H., and Underwager, R. (1993). Interview. *Paedika*, 3, pp. 2–12.

Wakefield, H., and Underwager, R. (1994). *Return of the Furies: An investigation into recovered memory therapy*. Chicago, IL: Open Court.

Waller, G., Quinton, S., and Watson, D. (1995). Dissociation and the processing of threat-related information. *Dissociation*, 8(2), 84–90.

Wang, C.T, and Daro, D. (1998). *Current Trends in Child Abuse Reporting and Fatalities: The results of the 1997 Annual Fifty State Survey*. Chicago, IL: National Center on Child Abuse Prevention Research, National Committee to Prevent Child Abuse.

Warshaw, S.C. (1992). Mutative factors in child psychoanalysis. In N.J. Skolnick and S.C. Warshaw (Eds.), *Relational Perspectives in Psychoanalysis* (pp. 147–174). Hillsdale, NJ: Analytic Press.

Waterman, J., Kelley, R., Olivieri, M.K., and McCord, J. (1993). *Beyond the Playground Walls: Sexual abuse in preschools*. New York: Guilford.

Weinberg, S.K. (1955/1976). *Incest Behavior*. New York: Citadel.

Weiner, I.B. (1962). Father-daughter incest: A clinical report. *Psychiatric Quarterly*, 36(1), 607–632.

Weiner, N., and Kurpius, S.E.R. (1995). *Shattered Innocence: A practical guide for counseling women survivors of childhood sexual abuse*. Bristol, PA: Taylor and Francis.

Weinrott, M.R., and Saylor, M. (1991). Self-report of crimes committed by sex offenders. *Journal of Interpersonal Violence*, 6(3), 286–300.

Weinstein, H.M. (1990). *Psychiatry and the CIA: Victims of Mind Control*. Washington, DC: American Psychiatric Press, Inc.

Weissman, P. (1971). The artist and his objects. *International Journal of Psychoanalysis*, 52, 401–406.

Whalen, J.E., and Nash, M.R. (1996). Hypnosis and dissociation: Theoretical, empirical and clinical perspectives. In L.K. Michelson and W.J. Ray (Eds.), *Handbook of Dissociation: Theoretical, empirical, and clinical perspectives* (pp. 191–206). New York: Plenum Press.

Whitfield, C.L. (1995). How common is traumatic forgetting? *Journal of Psychohistory*, 23(2), 119–130.

Wilber, K. (1995). *Sex, Ecology, Spirituality: The spirit of evolution*. Boston, MA: Shambhala.

Wilson, A. (1995). Mapping the mind in relational psychoanalysis: Some critiques, questions, and conjecture. *Psychoanalytic Psychology*, 12(1), 9–30.

Wilson, J.P., and Lindy, J.D. (1994). Countertransference in the treatment of posttraumatic stress disorder. In J.P. Wilson and J.D. Lindy (Eds.), *Countertransference and Posttraumatic Stress Disorder* (pp. 5–30). New York: Guilford.

Winnicott, D.W. (1953). Transitional objects and transitional phenomena. *International Journal of Psychoanalysis*, 34, 89–97.

Winnicott, D.W. (1965). *The Maturational Processes and the Facilitating Environment*. London: Hogarth.

Winnicott, D.W. (1967/1971). The location of cultural experience. In D.W. Winnicott's *Playing and Reality*. New York: Basic Books.

Winnicott, D.W. (1969). The use of an object and relating through identifications. *International Journal of Psychoanalysis*, 53, 711–716.

Winnicott, D.W. (1971). *Playing and Reality*. New York: Basic.

Wurmser, L. (1987). Shame: The veiled companion of narcissism. In D.L. Nathanson, (Ed.), *The Many Faces of Shame* (pp. 64–92). New York: Guilford.

Yochelson, S., and Samenow, S.E. (1976). *The Criminal Personality: A profile for change*. New York: Jason Aronson, Inc.

Young, W.C. (1988). Psychodynamics and dissociation: All that switches is not split. *Dissociation*, 1(1), 33–38.

Young, W.C. (1992). Treating survivors reporting ritual abuse. In D.K. Sakheim and S.E. Devine (Eds.), *Out of Darkness: Exploring satanism and ritual abuse* (pp. 249–278). New York: Lexington Books.

Young, W.C., Sachs, R.G., Braun, B.G., and Watkins, R.T. (1991). Patients reporting ritual abuse in childhood: A clinical syndrome. *International Journal of Child Abuse and Neglect*, 15, 181–189.

Youngson, S.C. (1994). Ritual abuse: The personal and professional cost for workers. In V. Sinason (Ed.), *Treating Survivors of Satanic Abuse* (pp. 292-302). New York: Routledge.

Yuille, J.C., Tymofievich, M., and Marxsen, D. (1995). The nature of allegations of child sexual abuse. In T. Ney (Ed.), *True and False Allegations of Child Abuse: Assessment and case management* (pp. 21–46). New York: Brunner/Mazel.

Zlotnick, C., Shea, M.T., Zakriski, A., Costello, E., Begin, A., Pearlstein, T., Simpsom, E. (1995). Stressors and close relationships during childhood and dissociation experiences in survivors of sexual abuse among inpatients psychiatric women. *Comparative Psychiatry*, 36, 207–212.

Index

Abel, G.G., 459n22
Abreaction, 180, 181–184, 464–465n8, 465n11
  cooperative management of, 187
  integration of experience of, 186
Academic invalidation of abuse victims, 39–40
Addictions, 84–85
  as glue that holds dissociation in place, 177, 408
  and power, 319
  those reinforced in "normal" social world, 178
"Affect retraining," 289, 339–340
Agency, destruction and restoration of, 432, 442, 451
Aggression
  abused child's own seen as threat to attachment to perpetrator, 296
  compartmentalization of, 266
  destruction and restoration of, 261–291
  examples of amongst DID patients, 262–265
  forms and transformations of in severely dissociated patients, 262–265
  and hostile and aggressive alters, 27, 265–269
  and idea that it is caused in patient by therapist, 467n4
  and internal persecutors, 266–267
  maladaptation in expression of, 261–262, 270
  necessity for therapist's healthy use of, 357–358
  obedience as self-aggression, 265
  restabilizing of in therapy, 270–278, 289–291, 432, 451
Agony, sight of, 87
Alec (treatment account), 313, 315, 432–442
Alexander, F., 236–237
Alice (treatment account), 155–160
Allegations of child abuse, false, 118, 462nn14–16
Allison, Dorothy, 6–7, 83
Alter personalities, 22, 24, 26–30, 198, 454n10
  child, 175–176, 195–196, 200, 250
  and clinical postures that foster recognition, 229
  and confronting subjective experience of freedom of, 241
  "cult," 65, 341
  and dealing with extremes amongst, 302–303
  defiant, 200
  developing, 24–26
  and developmental trajectory toward integration, 466n3
  and difficulties in communication, 43–44
  and emphatic walls, 31
  functional, 200
  as holding containers for pseudofantasy, 252
  host, 30, 167
  hostile and aggressive, 265–269, 271, 272, 273–275, 276–277
  and idea of use as transitional objects in polyfragmented self or selves, 250

  - and identification with perpetrator, 35–36, 322, 411–412
  - and inclusion, 190–193
  - and Joann, 278–280, 282–289
  - and narcissistic investment in separateness, 198–199, 228, 252
  - persecutor, 411–412
  - and refusal of therapist to engage, 464n1, 465–466n1
  - as replication of child-abusive caretaker dynamic, 228
  - as self-helpers, 195–198
  - switching of, 25–26
  - and therapist as first to have relationship with all, 256
  - and therapist's confronting of overly aggressive, 188
  - therapist's disbelief in will ensure he/she will not see, 167
  - types of, 28–30, 267–268
  - understanding and integration of, 100, 153–154, 175–176, 195–201
  - unfolding of, 179
  - *See also* Multiplicity

- Altman, N., 189
- Ambivalence, 115–116
- Amnesia and age of onset of abuse, 12
- Araji, D., 83
- Aron, L., 130, 135, 236–237
- Associative denial collaborators, 112–113
- Attachment, xii, xix, 244, 293–306
  - betrayal of children's' needs for, 79, 383–384
  - and Bowlby's theory of working model of relationships, 295
  - and child's necessity for maintenance of with abusive caretaker, 299–300, 303
  - and disruption of capacity for relationships, 294–295
  - healthy and non-healthy forms of, 301
  - human need for attachment to abusers, 298–299
  - and integration of longings with fears, 302–303
  - and internal persecutors, 266
  - with perpetrator, 35–36, 297, 304, 308, 417, 468n1
  - systematic abuse of, 70, 79
  - and victim's bonding with abusive caretaker, 21, 297–298
  - *See also* Victim/perpetrator paradox
- Atwood, G., 128, 129, 163, 324
- Atypical dissociative disorder, xii
- Authorities, influence upon children of, 312, 313
- Authority
  - development of self as, 312, 417
  - dynamic of within treatment relationship, xx, 129–130, 172, 272, 392, 419

- Backlash movement
  - against acknowledgement of organized child abuse, 55–56, 77
  - against dissociative disorders, xiv-xvi
  - and slowing effect on process of treatment, 123
- Baird, M., 58, 59, 62
- Barach, P.M., 167, 184, 289
- Basch, M.F., 313
- Battered child syndrome, 117–118
- "Battered Child Syndrome, The" (Kempe), 52
- Becker, D., 444
- Ben (treatment account), 415
- Benjamin, J., 130, 133
- Bentovim, A., 65
- Bestiality, 59–60
- Betrayal
  - and child sexual abuse, 11, 13
  - working through, 417
- Betrayal blindness, 296, 327
- Bliss, E.L., 22, 213
- Bloom, S., 360
- Boehnlein, J.K., 351
- Bollas, C., 86, 255
  - and therapist knowing patient's internal object world, 209
- Borderline personality disorder (BPD), 215, 466n2
- Bowart, W.H., 315, 462n10, 468n4
- Bowlby, J., 295

"Brainwashing" and mind control, 314–322
  See also Mind control
Brandchaft, B., 128, 323, 338
Braude, S.E., 26, 454n8
Braun, B.G., 457n13
Breaking down and building up, 17–18
Bremner, J.D., 453n1
Brenneis, C.B., 53, 389, 467n4
Brenner, I., 104, 213, 250–251
Brett, E., 453n1
Briere, J.N., 29, 207, 214, 406–407, 444–445
  and abuse occurrence statistics, 455n3
  and balance of safety and engagement in treatment, 463n4
  and sexual attraction to children, 470n3
  and victim's other-directedness, 407–408
Briggs, M., 462–463n15
Bromberg, P.M., 138, 141, 149, 155, 444–445
  and anticipation of misfortune, 143
  and balance of sensitivity with pragmatism, 235
  and cognitive symbolization, 261
  and enactments, 216
  as essential theoretical backbone of this book, 143
  and going head-to-head with a patient, 290
  and imagination of severely dissociative patient, 254
  and mutuality and interactional witnessing in psychotherapy, 423, 446
  and nature of dissociation, 140, 463n2
  and returning patient to his/her own identity, 401
  and standing in spaces between realities without losing them, 205, 244
  and staying the same while changing, 143, 159, 463n4, 464n6
  and therapist knowing the patient through direct experience, 186
Brown, D., 450
Brown, Laura, 469n4
Burgess, A.W., 58, 85

Camouflaging of dissociative disorders, 45–49
Caruth, C., 399, 463–464n5
Central Intelligence Agency (CIA) and mind-control projects and research, 95, 314, 468n4
Characterological disorders, and linking with posttraumatic disorders, 212–215, 466n2
Cheit, R., 468n1
Child abuse
  ambivalence towards, 115–116
  and debunking of link with severe dissociative disorders, 52–53
  and dissociation, 12–13
  and effect on brain and other biological changes, 461n6
  and historical emphasis on case against the victim, 115
  history of concept of, 51–52
  interpersonal recognition of, xiii-xiv
  and later prostitution, 463n3
  and legal dilemmas and mandatory reporting, 116–117, 462n13
  moral outrage relative to, 52
  most reported in adulthood, 453n3
  and neutrality, 444
  organized, 55–77
  statistical occurrence of, 53–55, 403, 453n2, 455n3
  underreporting of, 53
  and victims as best perpetrators against themselves, 33
  as well-planned, 79
  See also Organized child abuse; Ritual abuse
Child pornography, 74, 458n12
  and internet, 57, 457n11
  scope of, 58
Child prostitution, 56–57, 74, 457nn 8, 9
Child protective system, 117, 462n13
Children
  and biological drive to form attachments to primary caretakers, 21

  commodization of, 56–57
  as containers for perpetrator's negativity, 87
  and disbelief of their reports of abuse, 54
  "disposable" or "nobody's," 63–64, 67–68, 335
  easy to manipulate, 307
  forced to coerce other children, 299
  and increased capacity for dissociation, 140–141
  and internalization of psychology/ideology of perpetrator, 226
  and manipulation of need for recognition of, 225–226
  and omnipotent solutions to traumatization, 23–24
  and recognition, 223
  sexual attraction to, 470n3
  and victimization by trauma, 10–12
Child sex rings, 57, 58–63
  methods of, 59
  and snuff films, 59–60
  therapist resistance to acknowledgement of, 62
  types of, 58
Child sexual abuse as a defining cultural theme of our age, 53
"Child Victimizers, Violent Offenders and Their Victims" (U.S. Department of Justice), 78–79
Chodron, Pema, 393
Chronic posttraumatic stress disorder (PTSD), xiii, 104, 214, 391
  collective forms of, 404
  and intersection of individual and collective forms of, 404
  pathological fear structure of, 318, 445
  See also Posttraumatic symptoms
Chu, J.A., 12, 464n7, 466n2
CIA. *See* Central Intelligence Agency (CIA)
Clarita (treatment account), 316, 320, 326, 327
Clinicians, changing of worldview of when spending time with traumatized, dissociative individuals, xvii
Cognitive approaches to psychoanalytic treatment of trauma patient, 445–446, 450
Cognitive restructuring, 185–186, 187
Cohen, B.M., 15
Collaborators in child abuse, 107–115, 462n11
  associative denial, 112–113
  dissociative denial, 111–112
  forms of, 107–108
  innocent, 109
  Narcissistic innocent, 110–111
  programmed dissociative, 113
  and sadistic collaborators, 114–115
  "switched-off" (unwittingly permissive), 109–110
  and vicarious sadistic collaborators, 113–114
Collusion and cultural responsibility for child abuse, 108
  See also Collaborators in child abuse
Commodization of children, 56–57
Complex dissociative disorders, xvii
Complex posttraumatic stress disorder, xiii
Complicity
  forced, 410
  of nonoffending adults, 90
Comstock, C.M., 167, 184
Condon, Richard, 314–315
Confusion of intentions and motivations, 37
"Confusion of Tongues Between Adults and the Child, The" (Ferenczi), 37, 455n13
Countertransference, 132–133, 143, 161, 162
  as a resource for therapeutic understanding, 350
  biophysical effects of, 351–352
  as vicarious traumatization, 351
  and witnessing, 447, 450
  See also Transference/countertransference

Courtois, C., 444–445
Cozolino, L.J., 66
Creamer, M.A., 444–445
Crewdson, J., 56, 57, 457n11
Critical thinking
  deprogramming and restoration of, 337–343
  systematic destruction of, 325–333
  undermining of and excessive hierarchy, 312
Cults. *See* Ritual abuse
Culture
  and controversy over DID by mental health professions, 101–103, 460nn 3, 4
  and embeddedness of child abuse in context of, xiv, 108, 172, 444
  and marginalization and denial of child abuse, 122, 212, 403, 404–406, 454n12
  and necessity for recognition of child abuse, xiii-xiv
  and "not-me" configurations, 121–122
  and posttraumatic society, 404–406
  and reinforcement of power enactments, 147
  and reparation from trauma in context of, 221, 399–400
  and "tacit truths" that support abuse, 468n3
Cushman, P., 122

Dalenberg, C., 469n3
Danieli, Y., 402
Daro, D., 117
Davies, J.M., 138–139, 351–352, 444–445
  and patient attacking therapist, 357
  and patient reenacting both victim/perpetrator, 416
  and strain on therapist, 353, 421
  and traumatic relationship dynamics, 356
  and truths which reverse negative patterns, 388
Death, eroticizing of, 95, 326
DeBellis, M.D., 461n6
De Mause, Lloyd, xi, 51, 75, 84
Democratic society and splitting off of evil and authoritarianism, 77
Deng Ming Dao, 397
Denial of abuse
  and ambivalence, 115–116
  by perpetrator, 322
  and disavowal of violence against children, xiii
  and doubt, 117–118
  and legal dilemmas, 116–117
  and rationalization, disavowal, and dissociation, 118–119
Dependency, 296
Deprogramming, 337–343
  and exposing perpetrator-shaped identities to observing ego capacities, 339, 468n6
  and necessity of valuing oneself and society, 338
  as normal part of psychotherapy or psychoanalysis, 342
  and relationship with therapist, 343
  and restoring affectivity, 337–338
De Sade, Marquis, 458n18
"Descent for the sake of ascent," 424
DESNOS (Disorders of Extreme Stress Not Otherwise Specified), 194
Developmental perspective on treatment, 174–176
  common stages and passages in, 176–181
  and development failure, 174
Diagnostic and Statistical Manual, 104, 461–462n8
DID. *See* Dissociative identity disorder (DID)
Disbelief, 117–118
  of ritual-abuse survivors, 77
Dissociative patterning, 15–18
Dissociation
  as adaptational talent, 139, 227
  and advancement to repression, 144
  and child's easy capacity towards, 140–141
  and construction of identity, 4
  contemporary (relational) psychoanalytic perspectives on, 138–144

  and creation of self- and other-representations, 4–5
  as escape when there is no escape, 15
  and fragmentation, 140
  as means for maintaining attachment in abusive situations, 296
  and psychic terrorism, 192
  and revictimization, 141
  and segregation of feeling-states and self-other perceptions, 249
  as sensory cocoon, 142
  theories of and relational theories, 145–147
  therapist's surviving of, 378–385
  and young children, 17
  See also Patient, traumatized
Dissociative denial collaborators, 111–112
Dissociative disorder not otherwise specified (DDNOS), xiii, 425
Dissociative disorders, xv
  and breakdown of symbolic functioning, 252–255
  camouflaging of, 45–49
  categorization of states of, 454n8
  and childhood trauma histories, 10–13
  and compromise of child's recuperative psychological capacities, 253
  and controversy regarding verity of, xiv-xvi
  and disturbances in use of fantasy, 248, 250–252
  and galvanizing and destruction of hope, 142–143
  and hypnosis, 21–23
  invisibility of, 18–19
  as living psychic death, 41
  and losing and find of the self, 18–21
  and overexploitation of imaginary, 254
  and problem with perspective-taking, 234–235
  recognition of and barriers to that recognition, 5, 10, 18–19, 99–107
  and resting level of trauma, 207
  and revictimizing processes, 5
Dissociative identity disorder (DID), xiii, 6, 11, 26, 137
  and alter personalities, 25
  and avoidance of linking functions of psyche, 171, 215–216
  backlash attacks on, 55, 453–454n5
  and characterological diagnoses, 215
  and clinician's refusal to address, 166–167
  and domination, 222–223
  and Eastern European Jewish ghetto culture, 29
  examples of aggressive behavior of, 262–265
  and fantasy and symbolic functions, 22–23
  and fear of lowering of dissociative barriers, 122
  and finding of unity in therapeutic process, 131–132, 147
  and identification with perpetrator, 35–36, 322, 411–412
  and inhibited capacity for play, 248, 251, 254
  location of in diagnostic space, 103–104
  marginalization and dismissal of, 100–101, 453–454n5, 460n2
  naming of, 104, 461–462n8
  and paradox, 152–154
  and patient's denial of multiplicity, 27
  and power imbalances, 147
  proposed as iatrogenic and culture-specific, 52, 101–102, 460n3
  and repetition of power ties to bad objects, 303
  self-hypnotic capacity of, 22
  and splitting off traumatic affects, 121–122
  and statistics of trauma, 453n3
  and therapist's violating sexual boundaries of, 101
  and witnessing, 448–449
  and working with both character disorder and posttraumatic aspects of, 212–215
Dissociative patterning, 15–18
Disunity as a survival strategy, 9

Domination
  cultural glorification of, 98
  internalization of, 225–226
  internalized paradigms of, 33
  versus recognition, 222–232
Doubt and denial of child abuse, 117–118, 462–463nn 14–16
Dowkin, Andrea, xi
Draijer, N., 12

Egendorf, A., 447–448, 449
Ehrenberg, D.B., 133, 155, 424
Eigen, Michael E., 16, 133, 142
  and effective processing of psychic injury, 249
  and faith and catastrophe, 395
  and intrapsychic defenses, 234
  and process of therapy, 347
  and therapist's response to attack, 353
  and use of others for growth, 272
Eisold, B.K., 223–224
Elena (treatment account), 184–185, 186
Embeddedness, 129
Emotional congruence, 85
Emotionally corrective experience, 236–237
Emphatic walls, 31
Enactment/reenactment, 134–135, 161, 216
  and abreaction, 181, 187
  analyzing of and paradox, 236–237
  and patient-therapist relationship, 217
  as royal road to restored affectivity, 170
Entitlement, 203, 221
Evil, 412, 417
  and attempt to regain innocence through abuse, 87
  facing of, 342
  identification with, 307
  and splitting it off, 77
  and well-planned child abuse, 79
Externalization, 84, 91

Faith and the therapeutic dynamic, 395
False allegations of child abuse, 118, 462nn 14–16
False memory, 389, 403
  See also Memory
False memory syndrome (FMS)
  controversy, 55, 106, 117, 363, 386, 389, 405
  and dynamics of influence, 391
  use of rhetoric of in therapy, 370–373, 434, 435, 470n7
  See also Memory
False Memory Syndrome Foundation (FMSF), xv, 55, 264, 405
Family systems
  abuse styles of, 82
  and comparison to ritual abuse beliefs, 328
  dysfunctional, 13
  tyrannical and dominating, 221–222
  violation of children in, 103, 461n5
Fantasy, 22–23, 100, 230, 460n1, 465n12
  and dissociative individual's constriction in, 248, 250–252
  and integration, 206
  and interaction with reality, xvii, 312–313
  proneness in DID, 467n3
  and reality-testing, 255
  restoration of and transitional experiencing, 183, 247–261
  and variation in use of by DID and dissociative patients, 251–252
Faust, G.H., 102
Federal Bureau of Investigation (FBI), 105, 106, 462n10
Feiner, A.H., 327
Felitti, V.J., 461n6
Feminist perspectives, xii
  and bringing of child abuse into open, 54
  and personal as political, 122–123
  and privileging multiplicity, 145
  and therapy, xx, 170, 171
Ferenczi, S., 37, 140, 455n13
Ferguson, D.M., 53, 54, 455n3, 455–456n4
Fetishism, 85, 248
Fine, C.G., 25
Finkelhor, D., 54, 64, 81–82, 456n5
  and abuser's human deficiencies, 86

  and disinhibiting factors, 83
  and sex-role socialization, 88–89
Fisler, R., 104
Flashbacks, 182, 465n10
Flax, J., 145, 146, 404
Flores, R., 457n10
Foa, E.B., 318, 445
Foote, B., 453–454n5, 460n3, 461n7
Forgiveness, 470n2
Fosshage, J., 130, 132
Fragmentation, 140, 209–212, 250
Fraiberg, S., 408–409
Frankel, F.H., 52–53
Frankel, S.A., 29, 267–268
Frawley, M.G., 351–352, 353, 357, 416, 444–445
Frawley-O'Dea, M.G., 387
French, T.M., 236–237
Freud, Anna, 35
Freud, Sigmund, 444–445
  and children's sexual fantasies, 403
  and obedience as self-aggression, 265
  and recanting of connection of child abuse and hysteria, 115–116
Freyd, J.J., 296, 327, 409

Gabbard, G.O., 16
Gartner, R.B., 468n1
Gelinas, D., 406
Gender conditioning and perpetrators of abuse, 88–90, 459–460n28
Ghent, E., 130, 151, 211–212, 242
Gina (treatment account), 382–383
Giovacchini, P.L., 351
God and purported abandonment of victims, 316, 320–321, 340
Godwin, R., 407
Goldberg, P., 138, 142, 424
Goldman, D., 249–250
Goodwin, J.M., 63, 102, 106, 146, 458n18
Gould, C., 69
Goulding, R.A., 29
Graham, D.L.R., 297–298
Grand, S., 32, 70, 238, 458n19, 467–468n6
  and forgiveness, 470n2
  and naïve optimism, 176
Grandiosity, 23–24
Greaves, G.B., 102
Grey, G., 457n13
Grief, 33
Groth, A.N., 459n22
Grotstein, J.S., 24, 87
Guilt, 467–468n6
Guns, 273–275

Haaken, J., 454n12, 467n4
Hanks, H., 65
Harris, A., 11
Harvey, M.R., 465n14
Hassan, S., 326
Heavey, C.L., 89
Hegerman, E., 446
Helplessness, 31
Herman, J.L., 204, 351, 406, 444, 464n7
Hierarchy, 98
Holmes, W.C., 455–456n4
Holocaust, 397
  and cultural collusion, 108
  and ritual abuse, 76–77
  and sadistic perpetrators, 97
  and survivors' depersonalized compromising, 453n4
  treatment of victims of, 402
hooks, b., 146, 147
Hopper, J., 90
Horevitz, R., 401
Howell, E.F., 87–88, 299, 407, 467n5
Howitt, D., 80, 83, 86
Human nature, xv
Hunt, P., 58, 59, 62
Hunter, S.K., 463n3
Hypnosis, 169, 391, 430, 462n3
  and autohypnosis, 22
  and creation of "safe places," 259
  and dissociative disorders, 22, 120
  and programming, 317–318, 335, 336

Iatrogenic, DID proposed as, 52, 101–102, 460n3
Identification
  with perpetrator, 35–36, 322, 411–412
  with therapist's power, 210
Imagination, overexploitation of compared to fantasy-proneness, 254
Imitation, 226

Immunity from consequences, 85–86
Incest
  family situations of, 310, 434
  historical perception of rarity of, 115–116
  sentencing perpetrators of, 79
  types of fathers who perpetrate, 81–82
Inclusivity, 189–193, 212
Individual as active agent rather than victim, xv
Individuation
  and development of self as authority, 312
  non-toleration of in child of abusive family, 300
Influence in therapeutic circumstance, 390–393
Innocence, destruction and perversion of, 86–87
Innocent collaborators, 109
  Narcissistic, 110–111
  unwittingly permissive, 109–110
Integration, 163, 189, 201–206
  consciousness, 122–123
  and healthy sense of entitlement, 203, 221
  and internal selves recognizing and witness each other, 204
  micro-, medial, and macro-, 202–203
  as ongoing process, 201–202, 204
  single-self models of, 202, 465n14
  versus adaptation, 205–206
Internalized perpetrator ideologies, xii
Internet, 57, 457n11
Intersubjective exchange, 129
  breakdown of, 234
  and delivery of therapeutic action, 233
  and jettisoning of child from, 226
  and recognition, 223
Intrapsychic
  defenses, 234–235
  elaborations of child abuse, xiv
  influences, xv
Irwin, H. J., 12
Isolation and numbness, 41–42

James, C., 65
Janet, Pierre, 398, 444–445, 453n1
Janine (treatment account), 239–243
Jared (treatment account), 45–49
Jenkins, P., 90
Jenny (treatment account), 319–320, 330–333, 334
Jewish ghettos, Eastern European
  compared to DID internal organization, 29
  and hostile/aggressive alter personalities, 267–268
Jim (treatment account), 383–384
Joann (treatment account), 278–289
John (treatment account), 361–378
Jones, D.P.H., 65, 66
Julia (treatment account), 329–330
Jung, C.G., 236

Kaballah, 395, 424
Kalsched, Donald, 165
Keenan, T., 399
Kempe, C.H., 52
Kennedy, Joseph P., 56, 457n8
Kepner, J.I., 387
Ketcham, K., 450, 469n4
Khan, M., 378
Killing
  of children, 60, 63–64, 68
  eroticism of, 86, 326
  and slow deaths, 300
  in snuff films, 71–73
  and suicide programming, 336
  and training for participation in, 315, 316, 328–329
Kincaid, James R., 90, 99
Kinsey, A.L., 116
Kinzie, J.D., 351
Kluft, R.P., 26, 27, 29, 453n3, 460n3
  and DID patients leading therapist to feel betrayed, 352–353
  and dissociation setting up individual, 141
  and focus on characterological or posttraumatic, 213
  and impediments to utilization of knowledge about DID, 461n7

  and part-selves' narcissistic investment in separateness, 198
  and problems with use of term "personality," 104
  and "sitting duck syndrome" of revictimization, 294
  and understanding of intrapsychic structure of DID patients, 209
Knowing and not knowing, 162, 174–175, 261, 392, 463n2
Knowledge acquisition, 219–222
Knowledge taboo, 327
Kozak, M.J., 318, 445
Kreigman, D., 9
Krishnamurti, J., 127
Kumin, I., 235

Laing, R.D., 115
Langeland, W., 12
Langer, L., 397–398
Language
  loss of, 13–14, 359, 443
  and organization of what is remembered, 310–311
  and testimony, 443
  use of in therapy and cognitive symbolization, 261
Lanning, K.V., 85, 105, 462n10
Lao Tzu, 207
Larson, N.R., 82
Laub, D., 77, 399
Lawsuits, 405
  against perpetrators, 401, 468n1
  potential, against therapist, 277, 305–306, 355, 384, 414
Leavitt, F., 467n3
Legal dilemmas, 116–117, 383
Leowald, H.W., xvii, 176
  and negotiation as only thing that works in psychotherapy, 245
  and reality-testing and fantasy capacities, 254–255
Levenson, E.A., 148
Lewis, I.A., 86
Lifton, R.J., 328
Limitations
  and treatment account of John, 361–378
  understanding of, 359, 360–361, 378
Lina (treatment account), 337
Linking and de-linking, 215–217
Linz, D., 89
Lisak, D., 84, 90
Loewenstein, R.J., 350
Loftus, E.F., 372, 401, 450, 469n4
  and criticism of his unwillingness to work with DID on its own terms, 465–466n1
Longo, R.E., 459n22
Lori (treatment account), 202
Lorraine (treatment account), 243–244
Losing and finding the self, 18–21

MacKinnon, Catharine, 32–33, 51
Maddock, J.W., 82
Magid, B., 70
Managed-care systems, 355
Manchurian Candidate, The (Condon), 314–315
  creation of individuals like, 69–70
Marginalization of effects and extent of child abuse, xv
Marjorie (treatment account), 425–432
Marmer, S.S., 170, 250, 256
Maroda, K.J., 133, 354
Masochism, 299
Masochistic reenactors of abuse, 94, 408
McCann, L., 351
McCurdy, K., 117
McFadin, J.B., 459n22
McFadyen, A., 65
McFarlane, A.C., 454n11
McHugh, P., 460n4
McWilliams, 102, 103
Meaning, dissociation of, 310–314, 364
Media
  and ambivalence towards child abuse, 116
  and inflammatory reporting on incest survivors, 405–406
  and invalidation of abuse victims, 39
  and misrepresentation of treatment of severe trauma, 101, 391
Medical professionals, 468n2
Megalomaniacal perpetrators, 97–98
Melamuth, N.M., 89
Meloy, R., 88
"Memorophilia," 40

Memory, 385–390
  all kinds exist simultaneously in individual, 387
  and allowing in psychic space between patient and therapist, 216
  and American trauma drama, 389
  and discussing current controversy regarding with patient, 231
  distorted by trauma, 386
  doubts about reconstructed, 102
  and dynamics of influence, 390–393
  "false" of nonabuse, 26, 38, 387
  falsification of and its myths, 389, 403, 469n3
  as "fantasy" in eyes of media and academics, 39–40
  and implantation of phony through cover dialogue, 333–334
  and memory-loss programming, 332
  recovery of, 180, 272–273, 432, 433, 445, 469n3
  and suggestibility of the victim, 311–312
  therapist's relationship to skepticism-belief continuum relative to, 391–392
  See also False memory
Mental health professions
  and controversy over DID, 101–103, 166–167, 460n4, 461n7
  and refusal to study or acknowledge child abuse, 117–118
  and understanding of trauma patients, 444
Michael (treatment account), 233
Miller, M.L., 170
Milo, E.M., 401
Mind-control technology, 17–18, 31
  and basic forms of organized programming, 333–337
  and "brainwashing," 314–322
  continuum of, 322–323
  and creation of fear structures, 318
  and deprogramming, 337–343
  and "dichotic listening paradigm," 327, 328
  government involvement with, 95, 314, 468n4
  and knowledge taboo, 327
  methods and tactics of, 314–315, 325–333
  and ordinary-appearing victim, 318
  perpetrators of and their motivations, 95, 96, 318–319
  and ritual abuse, 458n16
  and subjective organization, 323–325
  therapist's understanding of, 308
  and torture, 317, 318
  and victim's conviction s/he has made decision, 330
  See also Deprogramming; Programming
Mitchell, S.A., 128, 130, 133, 142
  and commitment to stasis or the familiar, 304
  and engaging and sustaining paradox, 244
  and opening channels between fantasy and reality, 255
  psychotherapy process of, 211
  and returning patient to his/her own identity, 401
Modell, A.H., 235, 379
Montaigne, 444
Moore, R., 261
Morgan, Robin, 121
Morrison, Toni, 3
Mullen, P.E., 53, 54, 455n3, 455–456n4
Multiple personality disorder (MPD), xiii, 11, 25
  and change of name to Dissociative identity disorder (DID), 104, 461–462n8
  continuum of, 26–30
  media discussion of, 391
  and statistics of trauma, 453n2
  world of therapists of, 120
  See also Dissociative identity disorder (DID)
Multiplicity, 145–146
  as a useful heuristic, 152
  coming to terms with, 180
  continuum of, 463n1
  disbelief in, 167
  and inclusion, 190–193
  as normal organizing principle, 146
  and shifting of to "bridgeable multiplicity," 232–233

  suppression of in Western
    industrialized culture, 146
  See also Alter personalities
Muntarbhorn, V., 56, 57
Mutilation. *See* Self-mutilation
Mutuality, 155
Mystical experience, 43

Nachmani, G., 107, 326, 418,
    445
Narcissist, destructive, 276–277
Narcissistic innocent collaborators,
    110–111
Narcissistic perpetrators, 91–93
Nash, M.R., 22, 467n3
Nathanson, Donald L., 76, 165
Nazi Holocaust. *See* Holocaust
Negation and dissociative patterning, 15
Neglect, 166
Negotiation, xvi, 161, 179
  of attachment, 244
  list of specific forms of, 239
  and paradox, 238–245
Neutrality
  and interplay between reality and
    fantasy, xvii
  and psychotherapy, xvi, 130, 167, 184,
    444
New Testament, 455n1
Newton, M., 105
Noblitt, J.R., 105, 462n9
Nonoffending parent, 112
Not knowing and knowing, 162,
    174–175, 261, 392, 463n2
"Not-me" configurations
  and culture, 121–122
  and dissociative consciousness, 119
  in the mental health field, 119–121
Nurcombe, B., 66

Oates, S.R.K., 456n5
Objective discourse, xvi
Observing ego, 189–190
Ochberg, F.M., 297
Ofshe, R., 372, 450, 469n4
Ogden, T., 162, 350, 464n5, 469–470n1
O'Hearn, T.C., 29, 267–268
Old Testament, 52
Omnipotence defenses
  and expression of aggression, 272,
    273
  and linking of parts of psyche,
    215–216
  relinquishing of, 221
  and replacement with respect for
    ordinary, 342, 343
  as solutions to traumatization, 23–24,
    439
Orange, D., 324
Organized child abuse, 55–77
  backlash movement decrying
    existence of, 55–56, 74, 456–457nn
    5–7
  and programmed dissociative
    collaborators, 113
  and sadistic collaborators, 115
Organized crime, 410
Organized sadism and ritual abuse,
    63–68
  and cult compliance, 69
  dissociative patterns in victims of,
    68–73
Organized sex rings, 59–63
Orwell, George, 293, 323

Paddock, J.R., 401
Paradox, 234
  child's fear of, 235
  and clinical use of term, 151
  and collapsing of opposites into
    psyche of dissociative patients, 150
  and cooperative abreaction, 187
  and the DID diagnosis, 152–154, 208
  and difficulty of DID patient to hold,
    235, 236
  and integrating restoration of fantasy
    and paradoxical experiencing,
    256–261
  and negotiation, 238–245
  and reality of the transitional where
    reality and fantasy are
    indistinguishable, 151
  restoration of, 232–238
  in theory and practice, 154–155
  which is held and communicated to
    patient over time, 237–238

Parasitic perpetrators, 90–91
Patient, traumatized
  and anticipation of trauma, 143–144
  and balance between disruption and stabilization, xvii
  and denial of reality of traumatized childhood, 407
  and making it to therapy, xx
  and relationship to therapist, 419–425
Paul (treatment account), 193–195
Pearlman, L.A., 351
Pedophilia, 7, 83, 85, 459n25
Perlman, S.D., 102
Perpetrators of child abuse, 77–90, 458–459n19–20
  as abuse survivors themselves, 78, 459n26
  and addictiveness, 84–85
  apparent normality of, 78
  CEO or vicarious and culturally sanctioned, 94–95
  characteristics of perpetration, 65, 79–83
  and child's feeling of empathy for, 225
  and claim to child that "nothing" is happening, 80
  complexity and inconsistencies of, 414–415
  and compulsive record keeping, 85
  and externalization, 84, 91
  and fear of being prey as causative factor, 87
  and fetishism, 85
  and gender conditioning and issues, 88–90, 459–460n28
  identification with, 35–36, 322, 411–412
  and immunity from consequences, 85–86
  and information from those arrested or treated, 90
  and lack of emotional link, 86
  and learning and neuropsychological impairment, 82–83
  maniacal grandiosity of, 70
  megalomaniacal, 97–98
  mind-control, 95
  motivations of, 83–90
  parasitic, 90–91
  as planners of abuse, 412–413
  programmed, 93
  and psychopathic sadism, 86–88
  reasons for, 98
  and recognition of the child, 224–225
  and reenactment theory, 84
  ritual-abuse, 95–96
  sentencing of, 78–79
  specific-trauma-reenacting perpetrators, 93–94
  statistics relative to victims of, 78, 459nn 21, 22
  types of, 82
  weakness and pain of, 414
  See also Victim/perpetrator paradox
Perskin, P.S., 105, 462n9
Personality, 104
Peterson, C., 462–463n15
Physical abuse, statistics of, 453nn 2, 3, 455–456nn 3–5
Piper, A., 460n4
Pizer, S.A., xvii, 151, 201
  and bridgeable multiplicity, 233
  and feeling of existence of the impossible as OK, 242
  and inability of DID personality to communicate between self states, 232
  and intersubjective process, 233
  and "intolerable paradox," 234
  and negotiation, 238
  and patient and therapist butting heads, 290
  and unnegotiability of some patients, 277
Play
  inhibited capacity for and DID, 248, 251, 254
  therapy, 259
Political awareness of domination by institutions and family, 221–222
Postmodern philosophy, 128, 129
Poststructuralism and integration, 204
Posttraumatic symptoms
  and linking with characterological, 212–215

  as means of knowing and avoiding knowing, 214
Power
  addiction to, 319
  and democratizing of therapy, xx, 129–130, 162, 229, 392
  dynamics of, xix-xx, 147
  and integration, 205
  and patient's difficult with therapist's, 228
  and patient viewing therapist as childhood perpetrator, 227
  therapist use of, 210–211
Powerlessness and shame, 31
Prior, S., 409
Professional forces that diminish therapist's capacity to heal, 356
Programmed dissociative collaborators, 113
Programmed perpetrators, 93
Programming, 330
  cover dialogue, 333–334, 440
  and deprogramming, 337–343
  hostage, 336–337
  and indoctrination of belief in superiority, 317
  memory-loss, 332, 333
  suicide, 335–336
  task, 334–335
  See also Deprogramming
Prostitution, child, 56–57, 74, 457nn 8, 9
Psychoanalysis and growth and change relative to traumatized patients, 3
Psychoanalytic community and bridge with trauma/dissociation community, xxi, 171
Psychopathic sadism, 86–88
  and destruction and perversion of innocence, 86–87
Psychopathology and multiplicity and integrity/unity balance, 131–132
Psychotherapy
  and cognitive approaches that downplay importance of relationship between patient and therapist, 445–446
  and creation of individuation, 312
  and creation of spaces for hearing, 212
  and difficulties in communicating with dissociatives, 43–45
  and growth and change relative to traumatized patients, 3
  and moral positions, xvi
  and neutrality, xvi, 130, 167, 184, 444, 464n4
  relational movements within, xii
  and trauma/dissociation/MPD faction, 120–121
  in the wake of trauma, 418–451
  See also Relational psychoanalytic thought; Therapist; Therapy
PTSD. *See* Chronic posttraumatic stress disorder
Putnam, F.W., 24, 351, 453n2, 454n10, 455n3
  and biological system abnormalities cause by child abuse, 461n6
Pye, E., 215

Rachman, A.W., 455n13
Radiologists and discovery of "battered child syndrome," 117–118
Rape
  explanations for, 83
  and neutrality, 444
  statistics of, 78
Rationalization, 118
Recantation of child abuse, 118, 463n16
Recognition
  clinical postures that foster, 229–232
  and cooperation and decentering process, 204
  cultural, of child abuse, 404–406
  of dissociative disorders, 5, 155, 178–179, 193
  incapacity for amongst severely dissociative patients, 223
  and listening and responding to trauma without losing impact, 463–464n5
  as primary vehicle for transformative effects of psychotherapy, 223
  profound, 223–224
  versus domination, 222–232

Reconnecting the personal and the political, 123
Reconstruction and reparation, 397–406
Reenactment
  need for therapist to pull patient out of, 359
  and past never fully experienced as such, 154
  process, 133, 134–135, 433
  and specific-trauma-reenacting perpetrators, 93–94
  theory, 84
Regression, 180
Relatedness, transforming of pathological aspects of, 128–129
Relational
  as a term, 129
  context of interpersonal trauma, xiii
  as reference to relations with internal personifications, 149
Relational psychoanalytic thought
  and balancing of trauma and MPD/DID literature, 120–121
  and dissociation theories, 145–147
  and drawing from outside sources, 127–128
  major trends in, 127–163
  and movements within psychoanalysis, xii
  and multiple self-organizations, 100
  and perspectives on dissociation, 138–144
  and privileging of multiplicity, 145
  and self and psychopathology, 131–132
  and shift from object relating to object use, 187–188
  and "structures of experience," 131
  See also Psychotherapy; Therapy
Relationship, trauma and healing both occur within, 419
Relationships
  and danger of for dissociative personality, 16
  and disruption of capacity for, 294–295
  perpetuation of traumatic relational paradigms in, 304
Religious beliefs
  fundamentalist, and child abuse, 328
  and mind-control, 319
  negative, instilled by satanic/Aryan cult, 316
  and ritual abuse, 64–65
Remembering, 385–390, 449, 469–470n1
  See also Memory; Witness/Witnessing
Rena (treatment account), 273–275
Reparation
  barriers to, 400–403, 470n4
  and cultural influences, 399–400
  and false views of abuse victims, 402–403
  and reconstruction, 397–406
  and trauma and psychotherapy, 420–442
Repetition, tendency of trauma victims towards, 6, 238, 253
Repression, 16, 141, 144
  as advancement over dissociation, 144
Rescuing, 354, 381
Responsibility for abuse internalized by victims, 31–32, 37, 312–313, 330, 400, 410
Restructuring, 185–186, 187
Retaliation, 401
Retraumatization, and psychotherapy, 6, 168, 420–421
Reversals or chronic switching, 380–381, 383, 384
Revictimization, 5, 100, 141, 153, 279, 294, 403
Rhodes, Richard, 77–78
Ritual abuse, 68–73
  actions undertaken in, 65, 457–458n15
  classifications of, 64
  and coercion of child into complicity, 75, 300, 410, 458n19
  and comparison of beliefs to family systems, 328
  and cover programming, 333–334
  and cult compliance, 69
  decrying of existence of, 456n6
  dissociative patterns in victims of, 68–73
  and everyday life, 73–74

  - and Holocaust, 76–77
  - and human history, 75–77
  - and mind control tactics in cults, 325–326
  - perpetrators of, 95–96
  - and programmed dissociative collaborators, 113
  - psychological motivations for, 75
  - and psychopathic sadism, 86–88
  - public and professional reactions to allegations of, 105–107, 462n9
  - and slavery, 75–76
  - statistics of incidence of, 457n13, 458n17
  - and vicarious sadism, 114
- Rivera, M., 137, 149, 347
  - and fragmentation, 209
  - and poststructuralism and integration, 204–205
- RMT or "recovered memory therapy," 55
- Robyn (treatment account), 317
- Ron (treatment account), 308–310
- Rosenfeld, H., 276, 350
- Ross, Colin A., 22, 23, 25, 30, 69, 470n5
  - and abreaction, 181, 182
  - and allowing patient to die, 381
  - and borderline personality disorder, 466n2
  - and centrality of attachment to perpetrator, 409
  - and criticisms of arguments of DID as iatrogenic, 460n3
  - and DID as inherently paradoxical and real and not real, 152
  - and multiplicity as organizational principle, 146
  - and politics of changing name of MPD to DID, 461–462n8
  - and ritual abuse, 74, 105
  - and statistics of child abuse, 453n3
  - and treatment of alters, 235
- Runtz, M., 470n3
- Russell, D.E.H., 88–89, 353, 393
- Rustin, J., 224
- Sachs, R.G., 102
- Sadism
  - and abuser types, 82
  - psychopathic, 86–88
  - public and professional reaction to allegations of, 105–107
  - and pure perpetrators of abuse, 97–98
  - reenactors of abuse, 94
  - and ritual abuse, 63–68
  - and sadistic collaborators, 114–115
  - and unmitigated intent to harm, 96
  - and vicarious sadistic collaborators, 113–114
- Safety in therapy, 231, 241, 260–261, 291
  - creation of by therapist, 257, 443
  - and creation of spaces via hypnosis, 259
  - and weapons, 273–275
- Safran, J.D., 469n5
- Salter, A.C., 79, 80, 86
  - and perpetrator's existence in therapist's office, 409
  - and spectrum of perpetrator denial, 81
  - and thought-reforming process and denial, 322–323
  - and treatment of parasitic perpetrators, 91
  - and types of abusers, 82
- Samuels, A., 201
- Sandra (treatment account), 385
- Sara (treatment account), 269–270
- Sarte, Jean-Paul, 306
- Satanism, 63, 74
  - and creation of dissociated child, 325
  - and satanic cults, 316, 320–321, 328
- Satori experiences, 203
- Saylor, M., 459n22
- Schwartz, R.C., 29
- Secondary traumatization, 352
- Self
  - as agent, damage to, 432
  - and illusion of unitary, 145–147
  - losing and find of, 18–21
  - and multiple self-states, 145–146
  - patient's developing sense of, 312, 399, 417, 451
  - relational view of, 131–132
  - true and false, 142

Self-disgust, 307
Self-distrust, 38–40
Self-hatred, 31–35, 37, 407, 438
Self-mutilation, 262, 268, 279
Self-observation, 189–190
Self-protective mechanisms, 8
Self-understanding, 212
Separateness, investment in, 198–199
Separation and reunification, 8–9
Sex-role socialization and perpetrators of abuse, 88–90
Sexual abuse
  child, as a defining central theme of culture, 53
  and children, 11, 13
  statistics of, 453nn 2, 3, 455–456nn 3–5
Sexuality
  and attraction to children, 470n3
  and children's fantasies, 403
  and promiscuous alters, 27
  and victim's desire and child abuse, 36
  See also Child pornography; Child sex rings
Shallowness, xi
Shame, 31–35, 36, 238, 307, 401–402
  as means to safeguard secrecy, 333–334
  origin of, 33–34
  in response to awareness of programming, 339–340, 342
  understanding and contextualization of, 339, 417
Shaming, 470n2
Shengold, L., 350
Shock treatment, 435, 437, 438, 439–440, 441–442
Siegelman, E.Y., 236
Simpson, M.A., 444
Singer, M.T., 325–326
Slap, G.B., 455–456n4
Slavery system compared with ritual abuse, 75–76
Slavin, M., 9, 272–273
  and destruction and restoration of agency, 432, 442
  and mutuality in psychotherapy, 423
Smith, B.L., 250
Smith, M., 458n17
Snow, B., 463n16
Snuff films, 59–60, 61, 68, 70–73, 74, 457n12
  and conditioning prior to participation in, 328–329
  and sadistic perpetrators, 97
Social constructivist approaches to therapy, 170
Society
  and context for reparation from trauma, 399–400, 444
  and marginalization and denial of child abuse, 122, 403, 404–406, 454n12
  posttraumatic, 404–406
  See also Culture
Solnit, A.J., 118
Solzhenitsyn, A., 416
Song, P., 90
Sonja (treatment account), 316
Sonnenberg, S.M., 465n10
Sorenson, T., 463n16
Soskis, D.A., 297
Spaces
  creation of for hearing, 212
  and creation of therapeutic holding environment, 379, 422
  and creation via hypnosis, 259
  diagnostic, and location of DID in, 103–104
  restoring of transitional, 256–261, 308
  sustaining transformational, 360, 423
Spanos, N.P., 52
Specific-trauma-reenacting perpetrators, 93–94
Spezzano, C., 130, 131, 469n4
Spirits, contact with, 454n7
Spiritual
  matters, 169
  notions and macro-integration, 203
Splitting, 16, 69
  of evil in democratic society, 77
Stabilization, 189
Steele, K., 182, 388, 464–465n8
Stern, S., 132, 140, 141
Stockholm Syndrome, 297, 298, 322, 323
Stolorow, R.D., 128, 129, 132, 163

Stories of individuals, Jared, 45–49
Strong, M., 13
Stuffed animals, 251, 467n2
Subjective organization, and thought reform, 323–325
Substance abuse and child abuse, 82, 310
Suggestibility
  beneficial aspect of, 313
  and memory, 312–313
Suicide threats, 382–383
Summerfield, D., 444
Summit, R., 406
Survivor reports
  acceptance of validity of, 18
  and necessity of witnessing, 220
"Switched-off" (unwittingly permissive) innocent collaborators, 109–110
Symbolic functions and DID, 22–23
Symbolization
  cognitive, 261
  and dissociation interfering with, 248, 252–255
  therapist as guardian of realm of, 260

Teri (treatment account), 217–219
Terr, Lenore, 372
Testimony, 443–444, 445, 449
  See also Witness/Witnessing
Thea (treatment account), 303, 305
Therapeutic pluralism, 191
Therapist, xvii, xx
  acceptance of as human being, 233
  and accounts of experiences of, 349–350
  as an ally, 289
  and balance between patient's growth and availability, xviii
  and biopsychological effects, 351–352
  and boundary violations of sexual trauma patients, 228
  challenge to identities of, 421–422, 424
  and countertransference strain, 350–351
  and creation of holding environment by him/herself, 236, 379
  and creative use of self and self-disclosure, 354
  and cross-cultural difference with MPD/DID patient, 378–379
  and despair, 394, 469n5
  direct attacks upon, 352, 414, 441
  and disbelief in multiplicity, 167, 465–466n1
  as empathizer and disrupter, 240
  and hostile alters, 269
  and humility about what can and cannot be felt or known, 355
  as master or guardian of realm of symbolic, 260
  and need for healthy aggression in therapy, 356, 357–358
  and patient's breaking of rules of human relatedness, 352–353
  perceived as victimizer, 227, 470n6
  and power, 210–211
  and professional forces that minimize capacity to heal, 356
  and relationship to patient, xvii, 419–425
  requirements of, 423–425
  and resistance to feeling what patient feels, 353
  and response to enactment, 135
  and surviving process of therapy, xxi, 135–138, 347–348, 355–359, 378–385, 393–395, 420–421, 447–448
  and therapy as series of tests for, 302
  traumatization of, 420
  and victim's reversal of persuading therapist to sacrifice his/her sanity, 358
  and witnessing, 442–451
  See also Therapy
Therapy, xiii, xix-xxi, 128–129, 172–173
  acknowledging and understanding limitations of, 359, 360–361, 378
  and allowing of posttraumatic symptoms, 214–215
  and allowing patient time before excessive exposure, 358
  and allowing trauma to be actually experienced, 167

as a relationship or alliance between patient and therapist, xiii, 357, 419–425
both parties acceptance of loss of bearings in, 173
and capacity to sustain tensions inherent in intrapsychic conflict, 190, 205
and change through new experience in therapy situation, 392
common stages and passages in, 176–181, 464n7
and concept of self-helpers, 195–198
and continuity and consistency, 201
and debate regarding preserving functionality versus digging further, 376–377, 378
democratizing of, xx, 129–130, 172, 229, 392
and dependency conflicts, 189
and deprogramming and restoration of critical thinking, 337–343
and development of observing ego, 189
and developmental perspectives, 174–176
and dialectic of "knowing" and "not knowing," 162, 174–175, 261, 392
and direct contact of dissociative self-states with their alterations, 153–154
diversity in approach to, 166, 169–170
and emphasis on therapist's process, 237
and emphasizing uniqueness and integrity of individual, 149
and enactment/reenactment, 134–135, 236–237
and engagement of aggression, 265–266, 270–271
and enhancing sense of subjective responsibility, 199
and error of feeling that kindness alone is enough, 409
and establishment of interpretive dialogue, 130
and faith, 395
feminist, xx, 170, 171
and focus also on internal personifications, 149
and humanization, negotiation, and reparation, 160–164
and idea of posttraumatic symptoms in patient a result of therapist, 467n4
and inclusivity, 189–193, 212
and influence, dynamics of, 390–393
and interpretations and interventions grounded in interactive field, 420
and linking of characterological and posttraumatic, 212–215
and mutual emotional engagement rather than domination, 130–131, 133, 172, 354–355
and mutuality and recognition, 155, 423, 450
and need for concrete intervention, 256–257
and need of patient to feel he/she is making impact on therapist, 186–187, 354–355
and neutrality, xvi, 130, 167, 184, 444, 464n4
and new knowledge acquisition, 219–222
and owning grief, 33
and paradox, 154–155, 187, 237–238, 242
and patient and therapist co-determining the course of the therapy process, 129–130, 170
and patient's asking therapist for abuse, 304
and patient's bargaining and defensive fighting, 178, 180
and patient's confusion about nature and limits of, 227
and patient's fear to be known and desire to be seen, 301
and patient's passing on responsibility for life itself, 383
and perspectives on treatment, 147–150
and pitfalls of for those unfamiliar with DID and trauma, 340–341
and pluralism, 191

  and recognition, 155, 223–224, 229–232, 423, 450
  and refusal to deal with dissociative states, 167–168, 302
  and removing obstacles to intrapsychic freedom, 388
  and repeated comings and goings by patient, 379–381
  and restabilizing of aggression, 251, 270–278, 289–291, 432
  and restoring of transitional spaces, 212, 256–261, 308, 360, 379, 422, 423
  and retraumatization, 6, 168, 420–421
  and reversals and polarizations, 380
  and simultaneous relationship with whole person and all of its parts, 198–201
  and subversive dialogues, 450–451
  and success rate and failures of, 360–361
  and surviving the process, xxi, 135–138, 347–348, 355–359, 378–385, 393–395, 420–421, 447–448
  and therapist as new object relationship for the patient, 421
  and transference and countertransference, 132–133
  and working inside the paradoxes of patient's internal world, 152
  See also Abreaction; Countertransference; Developmental perspective on treatment; Relational psychoanalytic thought; Transference; Witness/Witnessing
Thinking. *See* Critical thinking
Thought-reform technology, 17–18
  and slavery and ritual abuse, 76
  See also Mind-control technology
Time, 43
Torture, 320, 330, 419, 444
  with electricity, 435, 437, 439–440, 441–442
  and encoding of information at deep levels during, 318
  and instructions relative to behavior and communication, 317
  and special leeway in approaching and avoiding, 381
  victims of, 397–398
Trance and self-hypnosis, 21–23
Transference, 132–133, 136, 161, 162, 446
  and discriminating from objective dimension, 234
  revisiting traumatic experience in, 398, 430
  traumatic nature of in survivors, 350
Transference/countertransference
  classic enactment of, 370
  and contacting the past, 398
  and enactments, 216
  and negotiating where reality and fantasy can blend, 260
  and strain on therapist, 350–351
  traumatic, 350–359
  and witnessing process, 447
Transitional experiencing, 247–261, 467n1
  definition of, 248–249
Transitional objects
  and alter personality construction, 250
  and fetishism, 248
  therapist as first, 256
Transitional zone. *See* Spaces
Tranter, M., 65
Trauma-bonding, 294, 305, 442
  and adapting of abuser's ideologies, 300
Trauma/dissociation communities
  and bridge with psychoanalytic community, xxi, 171
  and psychotherapy, 120–121
  and welcoming of integration and cross-fertilization, xxi, 171–172
"Trauma drama," 389, 405
"Trauma echoes," 313
Treatment accounts
  Alec, 313, 315, 432–442
  Alice, 155–160
  Ben, 415
  Clarita, 316, 320, 326, 327
  Elena, 184–185, 186
  Gina, 382–383
  Janine, 239–243

  Jared, 45–49
  Jenny, 319–320, 330–333, 334
  Jim, 383–384
  Joann, 278–289
  John, 361–378
  Julia, 329–330
  Lina, 337
  Lori, 202
  Lorraine, 243–244
  Marjorie, 425–432
  Michael, 233
  Paul, 193–195
  Rena, 273–275
  Robyn, 317
  Ron, 308–310
  Sandra, 385
  Sara, 269–270
  Sonja, 316
  Teri, 217–219
  Thea, 303, 305
Turner, S.W., 454n11

Unity and disunity, 8–9, 139, 145
Unutzer, J., 66
Unwittingly permissive innocent collaborators, 109–110
U.S. Advisory Board on Child Abuse and Neglect Worldwide, 461n5

Van der Hart, O., 182, 398, 464n8, 465n11
Van der Kolk, B.A., 104, 398, 408, 410, 444–445, 454n11
Victim
  and articulation, 42–43
  becoming a "co-abuser" or perpetrator, 408, 415–416
  defense mechanisms of, 406–410
  harm done to others by, 413
  and his/her denial of childhood trauma, 407
  and individuation from traumatic relational matrices, xviii
  and lack of self-defense, 407
  and learning of secrecy and subterfuge, 20–21
  and loss of language, 13–14
  and other-directedness, 407–408
  and prideful identifications with malevolence, 410
  and readiness factor, 400
  and reevaluation of every one of his/her assumptions, 185
  self-destructive beliefs and organizing principles of, 324–325
  and traumas as part of process of identity integration, 400–401
  and vulnerability in relationship, 294
  See also Victim/perpetrator paradox
Victimization
  and childhood trauma, 10–12
  recognizing and validating versus transcending, xv, 401
  vicarious, 114
Victim/perpetrator paradox, 406–418
  and adapting of abusers' ideologies, 88, 299–300, 312–313
  also a perpetrator toward him/herself and others, 33, 356
  and attachment to abuser, 35–36, 297, 304, 408, 417, 468n1
  and buying into responsibility for the what perpetrator did, 31–32, 37, 312–313, 330, 400, 410
  and child's feeling of empathy for perpetrator, 225
  and collusion with parent's needs and desires, 37
  and default mechanisms of survival of chronic traumatization, 406–410
  defining and labeling of by perpetrator, 311
  and difference between, 415–416
  and fusion and confusion of victim-perpetrator-collaborator positions, 410–412
  and identification with perpetrator, 35–36, 322, 411–412, 470n4
  and learning and enacting of both roles, 409
  and obfuscation of the victim and perpetrator positions, 412–416
  and transcending victim, perpetrator, and collaborator identifications, 416–418

Voice and voices
  accounts of, 4
  regenerated and reclaimed, xii

Waites, E.A., 106, 311, 312
Watters, E., 450, 469n4
Weapons, 273–275
Weinrott, M.R., 459n22
Whalen, J.E., 22, 467n3
Whitfield, C.L., 54–55, 408
Wilber, Ken, xi
Will, free, assault on, 306
Williams, L., 64, 81–82
Winnicott, D.W., 136, 142, 148, 155
  and developing child's creating and destroying the other, 271–272
  and fury in childhood, 270
  and limits of therapy contract, 378
  and paradox, 151, 235
  and transitional experiencing, 247–248, 467n1
Witness/Witnessing, xii, 428
  and abating of trauma, 441
  as active participant-observer in co-narration/identity-restructuring process, 398
  and DID, 448–449
  and "hearing people through their pain," 449–451
  as interactive process, 446–447
  and levels or registers of, 447
  loss of capacity to be a, 399
  of survivors' testimony, 220
  and therapist's survival, 447–448
  trauma victim's need of, 402
  and treatment of child abuse, xii
  and the witnessed, 442–447
Wursmer, L., 238

DOPE, INC.

Britain's Opium War against the U.S.

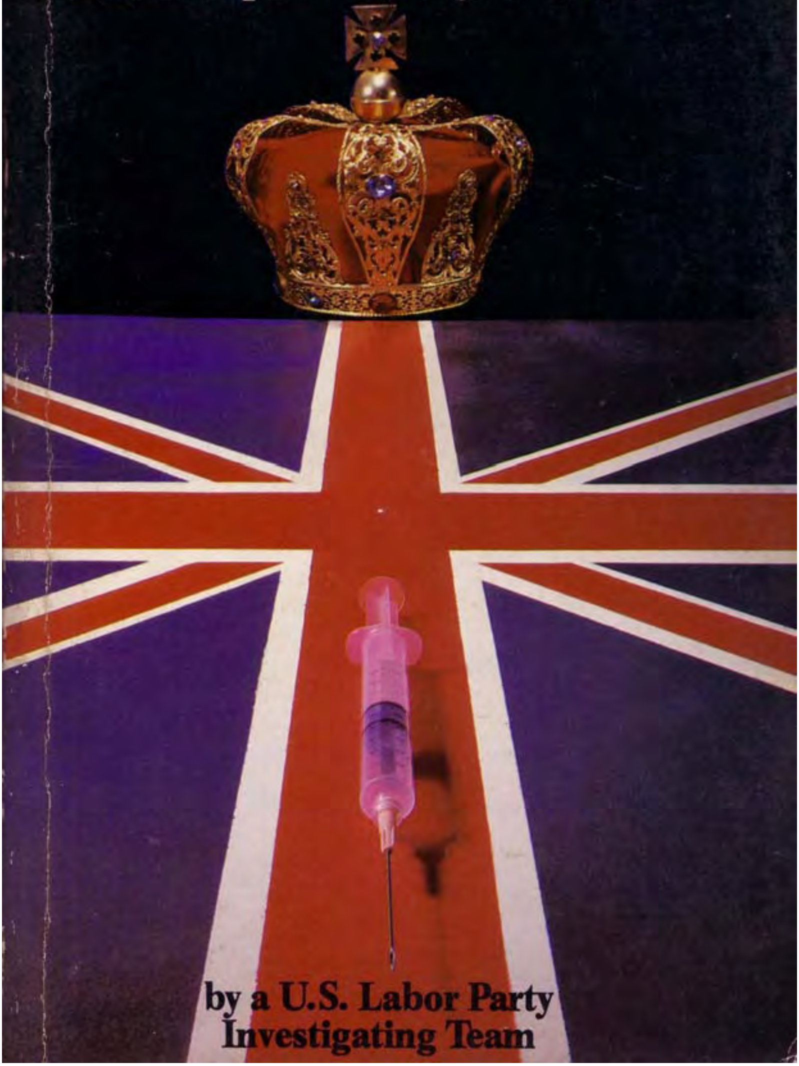

by a U.S. Labor Party
Investigating Team

DOPE, INC.

Britain's Opium War Against the U.S

by a U.S. Labor Party
Investigating Team
directed by
Konstandinos Kalimtgis
David Goldman
Jeffrey Steinberg

Contents

Dedication iii
Acknowledgments v
Introduction 1
Part I: History 7
Introduction 9
1. Britain's First Opium Wars 12
2. Palmerston's Fifth Column, USA 25
3. Britain's "Noble Experiment" 43
Part II: How the Drug Empire Works 57
Introduction 59
1. Banking and the World's Biggest Business 63
2. From Opium to Dirty Money 78
3. How the Drug Trade is Financed 83
4. Britain's Gold and Dirty Diamond Operations 92
5. Hong Kong: The World's Drug Capital 106
6. The Peking Connection 113
7. How the Royal Institute of International Affairs Runs Drugs and Dirty Money 139
8. Canada: North America's Hong Kong 160
9. All in the Family: The Real Syndicate 175
Part III: Organized Crime 261
Introduction 263
1. The Bronfman Gang 269
2. The Kennedys: Organized Crime in the Government 289
3. Britain's Assassination Bureau: Permindex 301
4. Permindex Unveiled: Resorts International Intertel 321
5. The Jacobs Family's Emprise: Sports and Crime 330
6. The Philadelphia Story 344

Dedication

Lyndon H. LaRouche, Jr.
New York City
October 18,1978

It is with proper pride that we dedicate this book to the often-unsung U.S. intelligence and law enforcement officers who have so often, so obscurely, died or languished in undeserved imprisonment in the silent war of the United States against the British monarchy's illegal drug traffic into our nation.

This book is published with special thanks to those intelligence and law enforcement officials who have given us such extraordinary assistance in cross-checking facts in putting the story together. These have included officials not only in the USA, but our nation's French ally, and also patriots in Canada embittered against what the Bronfmans and others have done to their nation and our own.

It is no exaggeration to sum up the situation thus: the only proper comparison for today's British drug traffic into the USA is the British monarchy's 19th century Opium Wars against China. There is more than a parallel. The same HongShang and other banking interests that developed their wealth in the China opium trade are involved in the financial side of the traffic against the USA — aided by those leading elements of the Zionist Lobby which have controlled organized crime in the USA and the Caribbean since the early 1920s.

This is a calculated form of political warfare against the USA by the British monarchy. Not only are the London-centered Canadian, Hong Kong, Singapore, and British West Indies financial interests involved in pulling tens of billions out of the USA — our biggest source of balance-of-payments losses — but this is a pre-calculated political warfare. The evil British intelligence executive — and head of the Aristotle Society — Bertrand Russell proposed this use of drugs as political subversion back during the 1920s. Among Russell's most prominent collaborators in this effort was Aldous Huxley, coordinator of the 1960s introduction of psychedelic substances to U.S. youth.

The fight against illegal drugs and against the evil forces of "decriminalization" is nothing less than a war against Britain, to the purpose of saving our youth and our nation from the destruction the British monarchy has projected for us.

Acknowledgments

Dope, Inc. was commissioned in September 1978 by U.S. Labor Party National Chairman Lyndon H. LaRouche, Jr., and was produced under his direction. At that time the Labor Party launched an international campaign against organized crime and drug traffic. As LaRouche has pointed out numerous times in the pages of the Labor Party's newspaper, New Solidarity, the forces that run the drug trade are the same forces that are now unleashing every capability — including scenarios for thermo-nuclear war — to halt the emergence of a new monetary system represented by the July 6 establishment of the European Monetary System in Bremen, West Germany, a system founded on the principles elaborated by LaRouche in his 1975 proposal for an International Development Bank. An October 1978 statement issued by LaRouche — "A National Strategy to Control Crime" — formed the kernel of this book.

This book is the product of a 100-person combined research team of the U.S. Labor Party in New York City, the Mexican Labor Party in Mexico City, and the European Labor Party in Wiesbaden, West Germany. The efforts of this team, since its founding in January 1974 under the direction of Lyndon LaRouche, drew the circle tighter around the perpetrators of narcotics traffic over a period of years. The authors particularly acknowledge the efforts of Marilyn James, Richard Schulman, and Alfred Ross, whose research supplied the core of this book, and the contributions of Kathy Burdman, Scott Thompson, Paul Goldstein, Harald Hermann, Joseph Brewda, Roger Moore, Michelle Steinberg, Peter Wyer, Karen Steinherz, and Peter Ennis. Our appreciation also goes to Linda Frommer, the book's

editor, who accomplished the final stage of the manuscript's completion.

The authors are unfortunately unable to thank by name the many former and currently serving law enforcement officers of several nations who took the greatest risk in coming forward with information and experience to indict the most dangerous enemy of all.

Introduction

America is at war. For the first time since 1865, the battleground is not abroad, but on the streets and schools of American cities. Casualties registered in the course of the conflict are incomparably higher than at any other time in American history. We are fighting for our lives, and in the most literal sense, for the lives of our children. Until now, we have been losing.

The enemy's most deadly weapon is dope.

Unlike most wars, which force both combatants deeply into debt, in this undeclared war the offensive power becomes wealthier and wealthier, while the stupefied victim becomes impoverished. In return for destroying the minds, and in many cases the lives, of the 48 million Americans hit by this weapon, the enemy exacts a payment of $50 billion in retail drug sales alone in the United States, and $200 billion worldwide. That $200 billion, robbed from the world's productive sector, is the slush fund for everything evil in the world, including political terrorism — and including the murder of American Presidents.

There is not a parent, thinking over the destruction of a child, who really believes that drug abuse is a self-inflicted crime. Americans, no matter what else they have learned to tolerate, believe that the advancement of the next generation is part of the way things should be. If an entire generation of Americans is in jeopardy of being lost, then someone has done this to them.

We will tell you precisely who has done this — who has the ability to control the flow of dope from the mountains of the Far East and the valleys of Colombia to American high schools, who controls the banks which launder the $200 billion in take, who puppeteers the crime syndicates in charge of retail distribution, and who corrupts our political life. It is the same people against whom we fought the American Revolution, who set up the world opium trade a century and a half ago, and who run it today: the aristocratic and banking oligarchy of Great Britain..

Look into the motionless stupor of the mind of a youth who has been sapped and destroyed by addiction. Incapable of reason, incapable of thought, today's addicted youth lives for only one thing: his "fix," his "high." Then consider the body count of Britain's Opium War against the United States: Over 48 million Americans, mostly between theages of 12 and 25 are officially known by the Drug Enforcement Administration to be frequent users of heroin, cocaine, and marijuana. Over one-fourth of the American people are severely wounded or dead in a war the country has not yet mobilized to fight.

The Drug Enforcement Administration has released these statistics on drug use by Americans:

Heroin
500,000 daily users (other sources place this hardcore addict figure at between 750,000 and 1 million)
4,000,000 occasional users

Cocaine
575,000 users between the ages of 12-17
4,500,000 users between the ages of 18-25
1,000,000 users over the age of 25

Marijuana
11,000,000 daily users
24,000,000 occasional users

These figures do not include that portion of the population addicted to amphetamines, barbiturates, and hallucinogens. This figure alone according to recent reports from the National Institute of Drug Abuse constituted between 12 and 25 percent of all patients admitted to federally funded drug clinics during 1977. The last census taken of drug abuse in 1974, issued as a Report to the President, calculated conservatively that close to one and a half million Americans had "gotten into trouble"—been arrested, treated, or hospitalized — through the use of amphetamines or barbiturates. When calculated for only youth of high school age, the rate of amphetamine and barbiturate use was four times as great as that of the adult population.

Since the inauguration of Jimmy Carter, whole categories of drug abuse are no longer monitored. The computer system of the Drug Enforcement Administration has been shut down. Behind that action is the grim fact that many of Mr. Carter's domestic policy advisors are on record as being committed to decriminalization of deadly drugs — beginning with marijuana. If such policies go through, statistics will be meaningless: drug abuse will treble within months of legalization. The $200 billion take for the British drug traders will climb to $300 billion.

The world's biggest business

How is the $200 billion monstrosity of world drug revenues hidden? In the most important way, it is not. The flow of narcotics and dirty money is conducted in the full light of day, the same way rum-running was conducted during Prohibition. Only misdirection prevents the public from understanding who the enemy is. Massive crimes are not hidden under cover of darkness, but under the cover of an effective lie. The operative lie in this case is "Free Enterprise."

When Sam Bronfman sold his rotgut to American mobsters, supplied by the old British distillers and financed by the old British banks, it was a matter of free enterprise: what the mob did with it after it crossed the American border was of no concern to him. When Meyer Lansky made his first heroin connection with Britain's dope-trading Keswick family in Shanghai in 1920, the sale was legal and in the light of day; what the mob did with the heroin later was not the responsibility of Britain's Far East traders.

Now, when the Hongkong and Shanghai Bank "launders" the $10 billion annual flow of narcotics money through Hong Kong, is it anything but a matter of "free enterprise" where their deposits come from and their loans go? When the Bronfmans in Canada and the Jacobs family of Buffalo finance organized crime, is it anything more than a "free enterprise" business relationship? The entire army of the enemy was built, and functions, under the open view of the public.

In fact, the chain of interlocking "free enterprise" relationships that describes the flow of drugs and dirty money in and out of the United States only masks the type of conspiracies that Americans see not in pulp thrillers, but in nightmares. We will uncover these conspiracies, the spider's web of the British monarchy — the Italian-surname organized crime syndicates, London's Zionist-cover terrorist operation, the secrets of Peking's dope-running foreign intelligence organization. We will trace them all back to their common "mother," the great aristocratic families of Britain.

With this report, you will see your enemy as he is, behind the veils of misdirection, past the Hollywood parodies of organized crime. We are now in sight of the day when we will turn the tide against the dope warriors of Great Britain — by striking at the head of the beast.

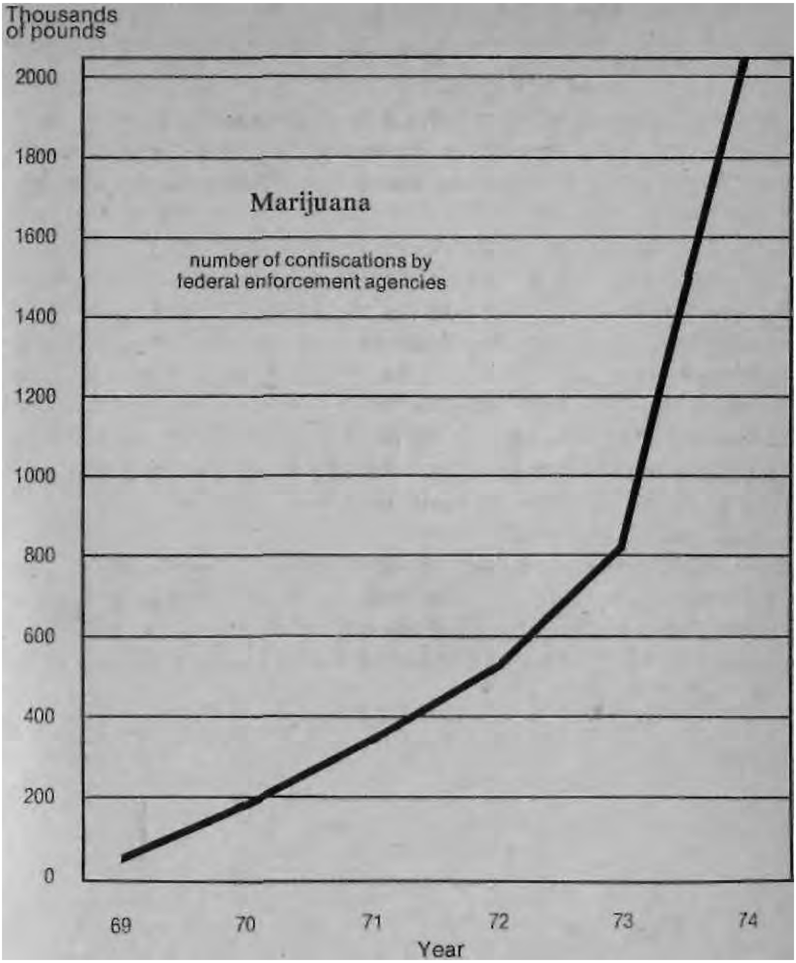

Fig.l

The Rate of Increase in Marijuana Use in the USA

The above graph of confiscations of marijuana by federal enforcement agencies provides only a rough barometer of the accelerated increase of marijuana smuggling into and use in the USA between 1969 and 1974. As is common knowledge, from 1974 to the present, marijuana use has gone up at a rate whose acceleration dwarfs that depicted above. In the past year alone, "drug decriminalization" campaigning by British agents-of-influence in the White House, and governors and Congressmen in the hip-pockets of Edgar Bronfman and Meyer Lansky, has caused marijuana use to increase at an astronomical rate.

PART I

History of Britain's First Opium Wars

Introduction

This is the setting for what follows below: narcotics are pouring in from abroad through a well-organized, efficient group of smugglers. One-fifth of the population abuses drugs, an epidemic surpassing any known since the Great Plagues. Not only the poor, but the wealthy and the children of the wealthy have succumbed. Within the nation, organized crime displays its drug profits without shame, ruling local governments, and threatening the integrity even of national government. None of their opponents is safe from assassins, not even the chief of state. Law enforcement is in shambles. The moral fiber of the nation has deteriorated past the danger point.

And one of the leading dope-traffickers writes to his superiors abroad, "As long as this country maintains its drug traffic, there is not the slightest possibility that it will ever become a military threat, since the habit saps the vitality of the nation." (1)

The description is familiar, but we are not writing of America in 1978, but China in 1838, on the eve of the first Opium War, when Great Britain landed troops to compel China to ingest the poison distributed by British merchants.

An American President lies dead of an assassin's bullet. Corrupt members of the Cabinet cover the tracks leading to a conspiracy, including the leading narcotics mobs, ethnic-based secret societies, and a foreign government. The public does not believe that the assassin acted alone, but the weight of the cover-up, the silence of the leading press, and the deaths of witnesses blur the trail from the public's view.

Was that the death of John F. Kennedy? It was also the death of Abraham Lincoln.

During the last century, British finance protected by British guns controlled the world narcotics traffic. The names of the families and institutions are known to the history student: Matheson, Keswick, Swire, Dent, Baring, and Rothschild; Jardine Matheson, the Hongkong and Shanghai Bank, the Chartered Bank, the Peninsular and Orient Steam Navigation Company. Britain's array of intelligence fronts ran a worldwide assassination bureau, operating through occult secret societies: the Order of Zion, Mazzini's Mafia, the "Triads" or Societies of Heaven in China.

Paging back over the records of the narcotics traffic and its wake of corruption and murder, the most uncanny feature of the opium-based Pax Britannica is how shamelessly, how publicly the dope-runners operated. Opium trading, for the British, was not a sordid backstreet business, but an honored instrument of state policy, the mainstay of the Exchequer, the subject of encomia from Britain's leading apostles of "Free Trade" — Adam Smith, David Ricardo, Thomas Malthus, James Mill, and John Stuart Mill. The poisoning of China, and later the post-Civil War United States, did not lead to prison but to peerages. Great sectors of the Far East became devoted to the growing of the opium poppy, to the exclusion of food crops, to the extent that scores of millions of people depended utterly on the growing, distribution and consumption of drugs.

The Keswicks, Dents, Swires and Barings still control the world flow of opiates from their stronghold in the British Crown Colony of Hong Kong. Jardine Matheson, the Hongkong and Shanghai Banking Corporation, and the Peninsular and Orient Steam Navigation Company still control the channels of production and distribution of the drugs from the Far East, through the British dominion of Canada, into the United States. By an uninterrupted chain of succession, the descendants of the Triads, the Mafia, and the Order of Zion still promote drug traffic, dirty money transfers, political corruption, and an Assassination Bureau even more awesome than the conspiracy that claimed Abraham Lincoln's life. Of course, the drug revenues of this machine are no longer tallied in the published accounts of the British Exchequer. But the leading installations of the drug traffic are no more hidden than they were a hundred years ago. From the Crown Colony of Hong Kong, the "HongShang" Bank does what the Keswicks set it up to do: provide centralized rediscounting facilities for the financing of the drug trade. Even the surnames of senior management are the same.

Even today, the grand old names of Prohibition liquor and dope-running rouse the deep awareness of Americans: Bronfman, Kennedy, Lansky. Are the denizens of the India opium trade, of the Prohibition mob, imprisoned in the history books and behind the movie screen? Not infrequently, the observer feels a momentary lapse in time, and sees not a history book, but the morning newspaper, not the late-night movie, but the evening television newscast.

The story we have to tell happened twice. It first happened to China, and now it is happening to the United States. Emphasizing that neither the names nor the hangouts of the criminals have changed, we begin by telling how it happened the first time.

1

Britain's First Opium Wars

From 1715, when the British East India Company opened up its first Far East office in the Chinese port city of Canton, it has been official British Crown policy to foster mass-scale drug addiction against targeted foreign populations in order to impose a state of enforced backwardness and degradation, thereby maintaining British political control and looting rights. While the methods through which the British have conducted this Opium War policy have shifted over the intervening 250 years, the commitment to the proliferation of mind-destroying drugs has been unswerving.

It was the British Crown's categorical opposition to and hatred for scientific and technological progress that led it to adopt an Opium War policy during the last decade of the 18th century. Having stifled the development of domestic manufacturing during the previous century, the British Crown found its treasury rapidly being drained of silver reserves — the only payment the Chinese Emperor would accept in exchange for silk, tea, and other commodities Britain imported. To reverse the silver exodus, which threatened to collapse the financial underpinnings of the British Empire, King George III mandated the East India Company to begin shipping large quantities of opium from Bengal in the British Crown Colony of India into China. The dual objective was to favorably alter the balance-of-payments deficit and to foster drug addiction among China's mandarin class. By the time of the American Revolution, East India Company opium trafficking into China was officially reported to be at a scale 20 times the absolute limit of opium required for medical and related use.

In a very direct sense, the Founding Fathers of the United States fought the American Revolution against the British Crown's opium policy.

* East India Company intelligence operative Adam Smith's Wealth of Nations spelled out the colonial looting policy against which the Founding Fathers rebelled. In that same document — as part of the same scheme to defend the Empire — Smith advocated a massive increase of East India Company opium exporting into China. (2)

* The dirty money culled from that opium trade made up a sizable portion of the war chest that financed Britain's deployment of Hessian mercenaries into North America to attempt to crush the rebellion.

* The "Secret Committee" of the East India Company — under the direction of Lord Shelburne and company chairman George Baring — coordinated British secret intelligence's campaign of subversion and economic warfare against the newly constituted American republic even before the ink had dried on the Treaty of Paris (1783). (3)

After the American Revolution, Smith's call for a dramatic increase in opium exporting into China was enacted with a vengeance. From 1801 to 1820, official British figures placed the opium trade at approximately 5,000 chests per year. By the late 1820s, a network of trading companies operating under overall East India Company "market control" was founded to facilitate the trade. Some of these British opium houses, including the biggest, Jardine Matheson & Co. Ltd., maintain an active hand in Far East heroin trafficking to this day.

The establishment of these trading companies — the core of

Britain's Opium War infrastructure — fostered an epidemic-scale increase in opium trafficking into China. By 1830-31, the number of chests of opium brought into China increased fourfold to 18,956 chests. In 1836, the figure exceeded 30,000 chests. In financial terms, trade figures made available by both the British and Chinese governments showed that between 1829-1840, a total of 7 million silver dollars entered China, while 56 million silver dollars were sucked out by the soaring opium trade. (4)

When the Chinese Emperor, confronted by a galloping drug addiction crisis, tried to crack down on the British trading companies and their dope smugglers, the British Crown went to war.

In 1839, the Chinese Emperor appointed Lin Tse-hsu Commissioner of Canton to lead a campaign against opium. Lin launched a serious crackdown against the Triad gangs sponsored by the British trading companies to smuggle the drugs out of the "Factory" area into the pores of the communities. The Triad Society, also known as the "Society of Heaven and Earth," was a century-old feudalist religious cult that had been suppressed by the Manchu Dynasty for its often violent opposition to the government's reform programs. The Triad group in Canton was profiled and cultivated by Jesuit and Church of England missionaries and recruited into the East India Company's opium trade by the early 19th century. (5)

When Lin moved to arrest one of the British nationals employed through the opium merchant houses, Crown Commissioner Capt. Charles Elliot intervened to protect the drug smuggler with Her Majesty's fleet. And when Lin responded by laying siege to the factory warehouses holding the tea shipments about to sail for Britain until the merchants turned over their opium stockpiles, Elliot assured the British drug pushers that the Crown would take full responsibility for covering their losses.

The British Crown had its "casus belli." Matheson of the opium house Jardine Matheson joyously wrote his partner Jardine — then in London, conferring with Prime Minister Palmerston on how to pursue the pending war with China:

> . . . the Chinese have fallen into the snare of rendering

> themselves directly liable to the Crown. To a close observer, it would seem as if the whole of Elliot's career was expressly designed to lead on the Chinese to commit themselves, and produce a collision.

Matheson concluded the correspondence: "I suppose war with China will be the next step." (6)

Indeed, on October 13, 1839, Palmerston sent a secret dispatch to Elliot in Canton informing him that an expeditionary force proceeding from India could be expected to reach Canton by March, 1840. In a follow-up secret dispatch dated November 23, Palmerston provided detailed instructions on how Elliot was to proceed with negotiations with the Chinese — once they had been defeated by the British fleet.

Palmerston's second dispatch was, in fact, modeled on a memorandum authored by Jardine dated October 26, 1839, in which the opium pusher demanded: 1) full legalization of opium trade into China; 2) compensation for the opium stockpiles confiscated by Lin to the tune of £2 million; and 3) territorial sovereignty for the British Crown over several designated off-shore islands. In a simultaneous memorandum to the Prime Minister, Jardine placed J&M's entire opium fleet at the disposal of the Crown to pursue war against China. (7)

The Chinese forces, decimated by ten years of rampant opium addiction within the Imperial Army, proved no match for the British.

The British fleet arrived in force and laid siege in June of 1840. While it encountered difficulties in Canton, its threat to the northern cities, particularly Nanking, forced the Emperor to terms. Painfully aware that any prolonged conflict would merely strengthen Britain's bargaining position, he petitioned for a treaty ending the war.

When Elliot forwarded to Palmerston a draft Treaty of Chuenpi in 1841, the Prime Minister rejected it out of hand, replying, "After all, our naval power is so strong that we can tell the Emperor what we mean to hold, rather than what he should say he would cede." Palmerston ordered Elliot to demand "admission of opium into China as an article of lawful commerce," increased indemnity payment, and British access to several additional Chinese ports. (8)

The Treaty of Nanking, signed in 1842, brought the British Crown an incredible sum of $21 million in silver — as well as extraterritorial control over the "free port" of Hong Kong — which to this day is the capital of Britain's global drug-running.

The First Opium War defined the proliferation of and profiteering from mind-destroying drugs as a cornerstone of British Imperial policy. Anyone who doubts this fact need only consider this policy statement issued by Lord Palmerston in a January 1841 communique to Lord Auckland, then Governor General of India:

> The rivalship of European manufactures is fast excluding our productions from the markets of Europe, and we must unremittingly endeavor to find in other parts of the world new vents for our industry (i.e., opium — ed.). . . If we succeed in our China expedition, Abyssina, Arabia, the countries of the Indus and the new markets of China will at no distant period give us a most important extension to the range of our foreign commerce. . . . (9)

It is appropriate to conclude this summary profile of Britain's first Opium War by quoting from the 15th edition of the Encyclopedia Britannica, published in 1977. What the brief biographical sketch of Lin Tse-hsu — the leader of the Chinese Emperor's fight to defeat British drugging of the Chinese population — makes clear to the intelligent reader is that British policy to this day has not changed one degree:

> ... he (Lin—ed.) did not comprehend the significance of the British demands for free trade and international equality, which were based on their concept of a commercial empire. This concept was a radical challenge to the Chinese world order, which knew only an empire and subject peoples. ... In a famous letter to Queen Victoria, written when he arrived in Canton, Lin aked if she would allow the importation of such a poisonous substance into

her own country, and requested her to forbid her subjects to bring it into his. Lin relied on aggressive moral tone; meanwhile proceeding relentlessly against British merchants, in a manner that could only insult their government.

Britain's opium diplomacy

Not a dozen years would pass from the signing of the Treaty of Nanking before the British Crown would precipitate its second Opium War offensive against China, with similar disastrous consequences for the Chinese and with similar monumental profits for London's drug-pushers. Out of the second Opium War (1858-1860), the British merchant banks and trading companies established the Hongkong & Shanghai Corporation, which to this day serves as the central clearinghouse for all Far Eastern financial transactions relating to the black market in opium and its heroin derivative.

Furthermore, with the joint British-French siege of Peking during October 1860, the British completed the process of opening up all of China. Lord Palmerston, the High Priest of the Scottish Rites, had returned to the Prime Ministership in June 1859 to launch the second war and thereby fulfill the "open China" policy he had outlined 20 years earlier.

Like the 1840 invasion of Canton, the second Opium War was an act of British imperial aggression — launched on the basis of the first flimsy pretext that occurred. Just prior to his ordering of a northern campaign against Peking (which permitted the British to maintain uninterrupted opium trafficking even while a state of war was underway), Lord Palmerston wrote to his close collaborator Foreign Secretary Lord John Russell (grandfather and guardian of the evil Lord Bertrand Russell). "We must in some way or other make the Chinese repent of the outrage," wrote Palmerston, referring to the defeat suffered by a joint British-French expeditionary force at Taku Forts in June 1859. The expeditionary fleet, acting on orders to seize the forts, had run aground in the mud-bogged harbor and several hundred sailors attempting to wade to shore through the mud were either killed or captured. "We might send a military-naval force to attack and occupy Peking," Palmerston continued. (10) Following Palmerston's lead, The Times of London let loose a bloodcurdling propaganda campaign:

> England, with France, or England without France if necessary. . . shall teach such a lesson to these perfidious hordes that the name of Europe will hereafter be a passport of fear, if it cannot be of love throughout their land. (11)

In October 1860 the joint British-French expeditionary force laid siege to Peking. The city fell within a day with almost no resistance. Despite French protests, British commander Lord Elgin ordered the temples and other sacred shrines in the city sacked and burned to the ground — as a show of Britain's absolute contempt for the Chinese.

Within four years of the signing of the Treaty of Tientsin (October 25, 1860), Britain was in control of seven eighths of the vastly expanded trade into China. This trade amounted to over £20 million in 1864 alone. Over the next 20 years, the total opium export from India — the overwhelming majority of which was still funneled into China — skyrocketed from 58,681 chests in 1860 to 105,508 chests in 1880. (12)

. Furthermore, the opening of China prompted the British opium traders to diversify into "legitimate business." The opium firms opened cotton traffic into China — to the point that cotton cloth shipments into China (like the opium shipments) quadrupled from 1856-1880 from 115 million yards of cloth to 448 million yards.

The London opium traffickers' diversification into the cotton trade at the close of the second Opium War intersected with the same London oligarchy's shifting of its principal strategic policy focus to the destruction of the United States — beginning with the efforts to wreck the republic via the British-sponsored Civil War. The massive expansion of cotton exporting was undertaken with full knowledge that U.S. cotton production — centered in the

Deep South slavocracy — would be severely disrupted with the pending "civil war" destabilization in North America. (13)

The slave and cotton trade in the South was run to a significant degree by the same Scottish-based families that also ran the opium traffic in the orient. The Sutherland family, which was one of the largest slave and cotton traders in the South, were first cousins of the Matheson family of Jardine Matheson. The Barings, who founded the Peninsular & Orient Steamship Line heavily involved in the opium trade, had been the largest investors in U.S. clipper shipping from the time of the American Revolution. The Rothschild family as well as their later "Our Crowd" New York Jewish banking cousins, the Lehmans of Lehman Bros., all made their initial entry into the United States through the pre-Civil War cotton and slave trade.

In the case of the U.S. Civil War, the British opium traffickers bet on the loser. By the mid-1860s, cotton goods from the southern United States were back on the international markets, triggering waves of bankruptcies among London speculators who bet on dramatic inflation in the prices of Indian and Egyptian cotton. As in the period immediately following Britain's loss of its American colonies during 1776-87, the oligarchy turned to an expanded opium traffic to paste over the losses.

To facilitate the planned expansion of the opium trade, the British banking and merchant circle founded the Hongkong & Shanghai Corporation in 1864. Almost simultaneously, the Matheson family founded Rio Tinto (now Rio Tinto Zinc), a tin mining venture in Spain which soon began shipping these ores as a method of payment for the opium.

Who founded the Hongkong and Shanghai Corporation? The same circle of merchant banking, trading, and shipping families — centered around the British monarchy — who opened the East India Company's opium trade as an instrument of British state policy during the previous century.

The following points summarize British Opium War policy against China through the 19th century:

* Open sponsorship of mass-scale opium addiction of targeted colonial and neocolonial populations by the British Crown;

* Willingness of Her Majesty's government to deploy military force up to and including full-scale conventional warfare in support of the opium trade;

* Build-up of an allied terrorist and organized criminal infrastructure employing revenues gained from opium trade and related black market activities.

Protecting the opium market

Even through the early decades of the present century, Britain retained an open diplomatic posture on behalf of unrestricted drug profiteering.

In 1911, an international conference on the narcotics problem was held at The Hague. The conference participants agreed to regulate the narcotics trade, with the goal in mind of eventual total suppression. The success of the Hague Convention, as it was called, depended on strict enforcement of the earlier Anglo-Chinese agreement of 1905. Under that agreement, the Chinese were to reduce domestic opium production, while the British were to reduce their exports to China from British India correspondingly.

The Chinese, who had subscribed enthusiastically to both the 1905 and 1911 protocols, soon discovered that the British were completely evading both by sending their opium to their extraterritorial bases, Hong Kong and Shanghai. Opium dens in the Shanghai International Settlement jumped from 87 licensed dens in 1911 at the time of the Hague Convention to 663 dens in 1914! (14) In addition to the trafficking internal to Shanghai, the Triads and related British sponsored organized crime networks within China redoubled smuggling operations — conveniently based out of the warehouses of Shanghai.

If anything, British profiteering from the opium trade jumped as the result of the reversion to a totally black-market production-distribution cycle. Ironically, the legalization of the opium trade into China forced upon the Emperor through the Opium Wars had cut into British profits on the drug. Legalization had brought with it the requirement that the British opium merchants pay import duties, an overhead they did not have to absorb when the drug trade was illegal.

In yet another act of contempt for the Hague Convention, Britain issued a major new loan to Persia in 1911. The collateral on that loan was Persia's opium revenues. (15)

Even with the post-Versailles creation of the League of Nations, Britain flaunted its drug trafficking before the world community. During this period, Her Majesty's opium trafficking was so widely known that even the Anglophile U.S. newsweekly The Nation ran a series of documentary reports highly critical of the British role. (16)

At the Fifth Session of the League of Nations Opium Committee, one delegate demanded that the British government account for the fact that there were vast discrepancies between the official figures on opium shipments into Japan released by the Japanese and British governments. The British claimed only negligible shipments, all earmarked for medical use, during the 1916-1920 period; while the Japanese figures showed a thriving British traffic. When confronted with this discrepancy as prima facie evidence of large-scale British black market smuggling of opium into Japan, the British delegate argued that such black marketeering merely proved the case for creating a government owned opium monopoly.

As late as 1927, official British statistics showed that government opium revenues — excluding the far more expansive black market figures — accounted for significant percentages of total revenue in all of the major Far East Crown colonies. (17)

British North Borneo	23 percent
Federated Malay States	14 percent
Sarawak	18 percent
Straits Settlements	37 percent
Confederated Malay	28 percent

In India as well, official Crown policy centered on protection for the opium market. According to one recently published account, when Gandhi began agitating against opium in 1921

> . . . his followers were arrested on charges of "undermining the revenue." So little concerned were the British about the views of the League of Nations that after a commission under Lord Inchcape had investigated India's finances in 1923, its report, while recognizing that it might be necessary to reduce opium production again if prices fell, went on to warn against diminishing the cultivated area, because of the need to safeguard "this most important source of revenue."
>
> . . . while the British Government was professing to be taking measures to reduce consumption of opium and hemp drugs, its agents in India were in fact busy pushing sales in order to increase the colony's revenues. (18)

Lord Inchcape — who chaired the India Commission which endorsed continued opium production in British India — was a direct descendant of the Lord Inchcape who during the previous century founded the Peninsular & Orient Steamship Line and subsequently helped found HongShang as the clearinghouse bank for opium trade. Through to the present, a Lord Inchcape sits on the boards of P & 0 and the HongShang.

In 1923, the British-run opium black market represented such a seriously perceived international problem that Representative Stephen Porter, Chairman of the U.S. House of Representatives Foreign Affairs Committee, introduced and passed a bill through Congress calling for country-by-country production and import quotas to be set on opium that would reduce consumption to approximately 10 percent of then-current levels. The 10 percent figure represented generally accepted levels of necessary medical consumption.

Porter's proposal was brought before the League of Nations Opium Committee — where it was publicly fought by the British representative. The British delegate drafted an amendment to Porter's plan which called for increased quotas to account for "legitimate opium consumption" beyond the medical usage. This referred to the massive addict population in British colonies and spheres of influence (predominantly in Asia) where no regulations restricted opium use. The enraged U.S. and Chinese delegations led a walkout of the plenipotentiary session; the British rubberstamped the creation of a Central Narcotics Board designated with authority to gather information and nothing more; and the journalists stationed in Geneva henceforth referred to what remained of the Committee as the "Smugglers Reunion." (19)

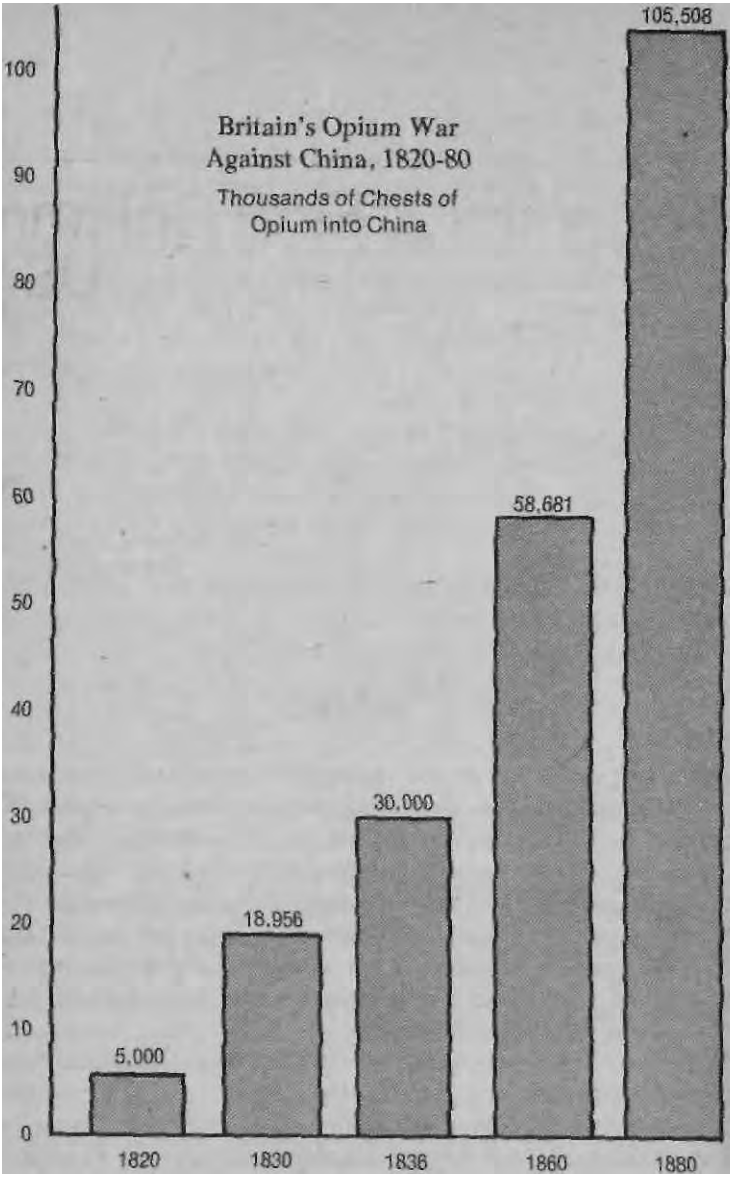

A chest of opium in 1820 sold for $2,075 on arrival at the port of Canton. While this figure tended to drop marginally as the volume of traffic increased after 1830, any calculation of cash valuation of the opium trade into China establishes a figure that very nearly parallels "the present $100-200 billion (when appropriate calculations are made to account for differences in purchasing power of the dollar in ratio to total volume of world production) in annual "black" revenues.

2

Palmerston's Fifth Column, USA

The assassination bureau

Narcotics traffic was the business of organized crime during the 19th century no less than in the 20th, and Britain's Opium War cabinet spun out a web of criminal connections that crisscrossed the globe. Prime Minister Palmerston conducted, the opium business behind a screen of respectability, in full public view. What remained hidden — until the report of the Military Commission that heard evidence on the Lincoln Assassination — was the importance of Palmerston's secret life, as Patriarch of the Scottish Rite of Freemasonry.

It does not surprise the modern student that the perpetrators of the narcotics traffic show up in every element of the dirty side of 19th century politics, including presidential assassinations. But the extent of the web of criminal networks put in place by Palmerston could have come out of a Gothic horror story, American counterintelligence specialists of the time, such as Edgar Allan Poe and Samuel Morse (1), knew the problem well.

Palmerston's irregulars, employed in illegal dope trafficking, assassinations, and "Fifth Column" subversions against the United States in the period before and during the Civil War, are the linear ancestors of what is now called organized crime. The Chinese "Triads," or Societies of Heaven; the Order of Zion and its American spinoff, the B'nai B'rith; "Young Italy," whose Sicilian law enforcement arm became known as the Mafia; the Jesuit Order based in decaying Hapsburg Austria; Mikhail Bakunin's bomb-throwing anarchist gangs; and nearly every other inhabitant of Britain's political netherworld followed a chain of command that led through the Scottish Rite of Freemasonry directly to Lord Palmerston and his successors.

The model for the Scottish Rite operation is the ethnic secret society — Jewish, Italian, or Chinese. Closest to hand among Palmerston's agencies was the Order of Zion, a highly specialized dirty tricks operation founded by London-based Hofjuden ("Court Jew") families, whose close ties to the British oligarchy traced back to the founding of the Bank of England, and before that to an alliance with the piratical financiers of post-Renaissance Genoa. The names of these families will appear and re-appear throughout this report, including the Mocattas and Goldsmids, gold dealers in London before even the Bank of England was there, now the operators of one of the world's most sophisticated money-laundering devices; the Montefiores, now central figures in the modern Most Venerable Order of St. John of Jerusalem; and the de Hirsch family, whose tightly controlled colonization program for Jews in Canada brought the present leaders of organized crime to the New World.

Control over the Order of Zion rested in the British Board of Deputies, founded in 1763 and still in action. One of the board's earliest presidents was Sir Moses Montefiore, described in contemporary accounts as "Queen Victoria's favorite Jew." (2) When Montefiore took command of the board in 1835, its dirty tricks division, the Order of Zion, was on the verge of launching the covert campaign that would lead to both the Lincoln assassination, and the founding of organized crime, so-called, in the United States. Through the efforts of Montefiore, later Prime Minister Benjamin Disraeli (the Earl of Beaconsfield), and the then nouveau riche Rothschilds, the Order of Zion nursed into being the leadership of the Confederacy.

Their starting point was the 1843 founding of the B'nai B'rith, also called the Constitutional Grand Lodge of the Order of the Sons of the Covenant, as a recognized branch of the Scottish Rite for American Jews. B'nai B'rith's first headquarters were at 450 Grand Street in Manhattan, at the house of Joseph Seligman, the wealthy "dry goods" merchant. (3) Seligman, whose name survives on Wall Street along with such of his contemporaries as August Belmont, Loeb, Schiff, and Lazard, was allied to the cotton-trading British oligarchy.

B'nai B'rith was a straightforward covert intelligence front for the Montefiores and Rothschilds. Its American house organ, the Menorah, could not disguise its relationship to the Rothschilds. It chose to flaunt it:

"The name Rothschild, in all countries is a synonym for honor and generosity, and no name in Europe has a popularity so great and so well merited. The Rothschilds in France occupy a social position even higher than that of the English branch of the family." (4)

The Menorah was also frank on the subject of the B'nai B'rith's relationship to the Scottish Rite Freemasons:

"Their reunions were frequent and several of them being members of then existing secret benevolent societies and especially of the Order of the Free Masons, and Odd Fellows, they finally concluded that a somewhat similar organization, but based upon the Jewish idea, would best obtain their object." (5)

Once in operation, the B'nai B'rith effectively merged its operations with another branch of the Scottish Rite, based in the Midwest and South — the Knights of the Golden Circle, the forerunner of the Ku Klux Klan, the training ground for the entire Confederate military and political leadership. (6) Its most important American operative was Judah P. Benjamin, a British subject and leader of the B'nai B'rith, whose amazing career included a brief term as Confederate Secretary of War and then Secretary of State, during the closing phases of the Civil War. (7) Another British subversive agent later worked together with Benjamin to found the Ku Klux Klan. He was Dr. Kuttner

Baruch, B'nai B'rith leader and grandfather of Bernard Baruch, a leading Wall Street Anglophile. (8) Their colleagues in that venture included Confederate General Albert Pike, a Grand Commander of the Scottish Rite, and a Jesuit priest. (9) The same group carried out the Lincoln assassination — which raises questions concerning the Defense Department's refusal to release secret files concerning that assassination. Are they afraid to embarrass the now politically powerful B'nai B'rith?

The B'nai B'rith and its Confederate opposite numbers, the Knights of the Golden Circle and the Ku Klux Klan, were only three of the many parallel operations that Palmerston brought to life during the 1860s. In Britain, future Prime Minister Disraeli, the man who evaded debtors' prison through the help of the House of Rothschild, launched the "Young Englanders." (10) In Italy, the local leader of the Scottish Rite, Mazzini, organized and commanded "Young Italy." (11) Scottish Rite member and Rothschild agent Alexander Herzen initiated a similar group covertly, avoiding the watchful eyes of the Czarist secret police; his best-known protege took the name Bakunin. (12) In China, as of the second Opium War, the long-established "Triad" secret societies had already taken the retail distribution franchise for the distribution of British opium imported from India, and had become an uncontrollable, paramilitary arm of British "free trade."

What Palmerston and his colleagues had at their disposal was an International Assassination Bureau, capable of eliminating any chief of state who resisted British policy objectives. Not much different from the Red Brigades of Italy or the Baader-Meinhof terrorists of Germany today, the Scottish Rite's rainbow gathering of secret societies took money from the narcotics traffic and orders from Lord Palmerston.

What must be judged, in the long run, as the most deadly of these organizations was organized on an international footing at the same time that B'nai B'rith appeared in the United States. Disraeli, Moses Montefiore, and other leading British Hofjuden founded a new masonic-style order called, in the original French, the "Alliance Universelle Israelite." It became known — and feared — under the name of its elite secret arm, the Order of

Zion. (13) Most of the Order of Zion's funding was provided through the London and Paris banking houses of Rothschild, Montefiore, and de Hirsch. In crucial respects, the Order of Zion and Palmerston's Scottish Rite of Freemasonry were indistinguishable. In France, for example, the head of both organizations was the same individual, Adolphe Isaac Cremieux. (14)

Order of Zion leader Judah P. Benjamin was the individual who gave the order for Lincoln's assassination, according to the one authoritative historical document in the public domain, the report of the Judge Advocate assigned to investigate the assassination and report to the Military Commission responsible. (15) The report cites the orders of Confederate President Jefferson Davis and Judah Benjamin. According to this document, Confederate secret intelligence had raised a dirty tricks slush fund of $649,000 through the sale of Confederate bonds in Liverpool. At the time, the headquarters of this outfit, called the Secret Cabinet, were housed in St. Lawrence Hall in Montreal — in the same building occupied by the Commander in Chief of British forces in Canada, General Sir Fenwick Williams. (16) The report names George N. Sandis as the group's money mover; Sandis was an American citizen, formerly an advisor to Democratic presidential candidate Stephen Douglas, and Consul of the United States in Liverpool under the Pierce Administration.

Eight days before Lincoln's death, the chief of the Secret Cabinet — former Interior Secretary in the Buchanan Administration, Jacob Thompson — withdrew $180,000 from the group's account at the Bank of Montreal in Montreal, to set the murder plot in motion. (17) His courier was one John Harrison Suratt, a British agent trained at Jesuit Georgetown College. Neither Thompson nor Benjamin was ever apprehended; both fled to England and remained there under the Crown's protection. (18) This evidence, heard on June 25 and June 26, 1865, ran up against a cover-up effort under the direction of Secretary of War Edward Stanton that compares in audacity with the work of the 1963 Warren Commission. The relevant raw documentary is not available to researchers. The documents relating to the Lincoln assassination are still locked up in the archives of the Defense Department. Jefferson Davis, who lived comfortably in Montreal after the collapse of the Confederacy, kept his papers in the Bank of Montreal, the same bank that conduited the funds for the assassination itself. If they are still in the vaults of the Bank of Montreal, the bank has not acknowledged this. (19)

These facts concerning the death of President Lincoln are more than a useful case history, illustrating the power of the dope trade's criminal networks. If the leads developed in New Orleans District Attorney Garrison's investigation of the Kennedy assassination were accurate, the two murders were the work of the same operation. All that is necessary is to cross out the names "Secret Cabinet" and "Judah Benjamin," and write in: Permindex and Major Louis Bloomfield (see Part III, Section 3).

From what remains of the official record, there is no question that the death of Abraham Lincoln was traced to British-controlled and British-funded networks by American military intelligence. It must be underscored that much more than the central figure of Lord Palmerston brought these networks into the mainline of the narcotics traffic. Southern cotton, for which the British verged on invading the United States during the Civil War (20), was not merely a facet of the same trading operation that produced the dope trade; for all purposes, it was the dope trade. Opium was the final stage in the demand cycle for British-financed and slave-produced cotton. British firms brought cotton to Liverpool. From there, it was spun and worked up into cloth in mills in the north of England, employing unskilled child and female labor at extremely low wages. The finished cotton goods were then exported to India, in a process that destroyed the existing cloth industry, causing widespread privation. India paid for its imported cloth (and railway cars to carry the cloth, and other British goods) with the proceeds of Bengali opium exports to China. Without the "final demand" of Chinese opium sales, the entire world structure of British trade would have collapsed. Palmerston's above-cited remark concerning the future of British trade in opium-consuming China and other parts of the East was, in fact, a matter of hard contingency.

Britain's new instrument of subversion in the United States was controlled elements of Italian and Chinese immigration, combined with the Order of Zion entity that had been in place since 1843. By the turn of the century, the different ethnic networks became so intertwined that, for generic purposes, the name "organized crime" applies to all of them.

The implantation of the ethnic secret societies into the United States is a complex story, but may be centered accurately in a few case histories. One is the way that the family of Sam Bronfman — the man who shipped enough liquor to the United States to double the size of Lake Erie, in the testimony of Lucky Luciano — got to North America. Bronfman's story begins, in fact, in Romania, where the Order of Zion secret organization achieved its first major victory, a coup d'etat that brought King Charles of Romania to the throne in 1887. In the years following the Civil War, the Order of Zion merged with the much older Cult of Mizraem, a centuries-old covert organization that dated back to the days of Genoese and Hapsburg intrigue and assassination. (21) From the British side, Sir Moses Montefiore, and on the Romanian front itself, American Consul Benjamin Peixotto, aided the local secret society in installing a new monarch. (22) Peixotto held a leadership position in the American B'nai B'rith and was a member of the Order of Zion.

The Elders of Zion

Romania became, in consequence, a nesting place for the most lurid form of Central European covert operations until the Second World War. The character of the political machine the Order of Zion installed in that country is perhaps best illustrated by the strong support Order of Zion elements gave to the Romanian Green Shirt Nazis, who seized power in Hitler's wake during the 1930s. (23) Romanian Jews show up prominently in American organized crime, as well as in the terrorist activities of the Israeli secret service, the Mossad.

The Order of Zion was simply the Jewish division of the Most Venerable Order of St. John of Jerusalem, the London-centered chivalric order and secret society, whose members swear — and act on — a blood oath. A secret meeting in Paris in 1884 yielded the famous minutes of the Order, published under the title, Protocols of the Elders of Zion. The minutes were intercepted and published by the Russian counterintelligence service, the Okhrana. (24) Probably, the decision to publish the captured minutes involved retaliation against the Order of Zion's role in fomenting a sweeping destabilization against the government of Russian Prime Minister Count Witte, whose government fell during the so-called 1905 Revolution. Witte had sought an alliance with Germany and France against Britain on a program that included the industrial development of Russia. The question of the authenticity of the Protocols has been a matter of fierce, even hysterical dispute. The question may be settled with dispatch by a textual comparison between the oaths of the Order of Zion printed in the Protocols, and the blood-curdling oaths sworn by initiates into the fourth Grade of the Knights of Columbus of Mexico, which maintains close ties to the Jesuits and to the Order of St. John of Jerusalem, which reads in part as follows: (25)

> I, ________ , in the presence of all-powerful God, the blessed Virgin Mary, the blessed St. John the Baptist . . . by the belly of the Virgin Mary, the womb of God and staff of Jesus Christ, I declare and swear that his holiness the Pope is vice regent of Christ and sole and true head of the universal Catholic Church on earth, and in virtue of the keys to do and undo given to your holiness by my savior Jesus Christ, (you) have the power to depose kings and heretics, princes, states, communities and governments and dismiss them from office without risk. . . .
>
> I promise and declare that I will, when the opportunity presents itself to me, wage war without quarter, secretly or openly, against all the heretics, Protestant and Mason, such as I may be ordered to do, in order to extirpate them from the face of earth, and I will not take into account either age, sex or station, and I will hang, burn, strangle and bury alive those infamous heretics: I will cut open the

> stomachs and wombs of their women and smash the heads of the babies against the rocks and walls, in order to annihilate the execrable race; that when this cannot be done openly, I will secretly employ the poison cut, strangulation, the sword, dagger or bullet, without consideration for the honor, rank, dignity or authority of the persons, whatever their status in public or private life may be, such as I may be ordered at any time. . . .
>
> If I manifest falsity or weakness in my determination, I consent that my brothers and comrade soldiers in the army of the Pope may cut off my hands, my feet and slit my throat from ear to ear. . . .
>
> I promise to execute and fulfill this oath, in testimony whereof, I take this sacred sacrament of the Eucharist and affirm it even with my name written with the point of this dagger, drenched in my own blood and sealed in the presence of this holy sacrament. Amen. (26)

Romania's Order of Zion stronghold produced, among other criminal elements, one Yechiel Bronfman, who emigrated to Canada in 1889. The circumstances of Bronfman's emigration are noteworthy. His passage was paid by the de Hirsch family fund for settlements in Canada — which conferred benefits with strings attached. De Hirsch political screening of new immigrants was so precise that a significant number of new arrivals were sent back without funds, for unreliability. (27).

The important features of the arrival of the Italian "Mafia" in the United States are inseparable from the story of the Order of Zion. Mazzini, the sponsor of the Mafia in Italy, reported directly to the most prominent of Britain's Hofjuden, Prime Minister Benjamin Disraeli, and received funding from the leading British Hofjuden bankers, Rothschild and Montefiore. (28) Correspondingly, when Mazzini sent his lieutenants into the United States, the veterans of the "Young Italy" movement moved into channels already carved out by the likes of ex-General Pike and B'nai B'rith. The combination of Hofjuden-controlled crime networks and the Mafia provided the framework for organized crime on a big-business scale.

Mazzini's mafia

The first arrivals of the Italian-speaking mob followed the tracks of the original "dry goods" merchants who figured so prominently in the B'nai B'rith, the grandfathers and fathers of the Our Crowd banking group in New York City. New Orleans, the first base of the Lehmans and Lazards in the United States, also became the receiving station for the Mazzini networks. Most important, the first recorded evidence of organized Mafioso activity in the United States identifies the Mazzini networks with General Pike's guerrilla war against the "Reconstruction" South.

Nothing depicts this arrangement better than the stories of the first New Orleans godfathers, Joseph Macheca and Charles Matrenga. Proteges of Mazzini, they took over the New Orleans franchise on behalf of the Palermo mob, which reported to Mazzini and thence to Disraeli. The chain of command was so well known that the joke made the rounds that the word "mafia" was really an acronym for "Mazzini autorizza furti, incendi, e attentati" — "Mazzini authorizes theft, arson, and kidnapping." (29) The first of the Mazzini networks drifted in before and during the Civil War. "The Mafias in New Orleans, New York, and Palermo were separate societies," wrote one leading historian of the period, "but they cooperated closely. A member who was properly sponsored could be transferred from one city to another, from one family to another." (30)

By the close of the Civil War, Disraeli's Mafia was in the hands of one Joseph Macheca. By contemporary accounts, the activities of the Macheca gang were indistinguishable from those of the Klan. In 1868, Macheca organized the New Orleans side of Democratic candidate Seymour's campaign against Ulysses S. Grant. Seymour's funding and political direction came from August Belmont, the Rothschilds' official business agent in the United States. The campaign, such as it was, was described as follows in the New Orleans Picayune:

> This popular and pleasant-mannered gentleman (Macheca) organized and commanded a company of Sicilians, 150 strong, known as the Innocents. Their

> uniform was a white cape bearing a Maltese Cross (the insignia of the British Royal Family's Order of St. John of Jerusalem — ed.) on the left shoulder. They wore sidearms and when they marched the streets they shot at every Negro that came in sight. They left a trail of a dozen dead Negroes behind them. General James E. Steadman, managing the (Seymour) campaign, forbade them from making further parades and they were disbanded. (31)

One historian of the Mafia notes, "This matter-of-fact account is the first report of a formal Sicilian organization in New Orleans, and it is likely that from the ranks of these armed Innocents came the nucleus of Macheca's Mafia." (32)

Belmont's presidential candidate ran on a program drafted at the Seligman and associated Our Crowd banking houses in New York: the repeal of Lincoln's Emancipation Proclamation. The same cousins of the British Hofjuden controlled General Pike and his hooded goons, the Ku Klux Klan, whom Macheca's gangsters took such great pains to imitate — along with the conceit of the Maltese Cross. Pike, Macheca, and their paramilitary irregulars unleashed a wave of violence across the South that buried Lincoln's Reconstruction policy not many years after the President himself.

The historical record shows that Macheca's group in New Orleans, which started out by shooting blacks for the copperhead Our Crowd banks in New York, had proved its mettle by the early 1870s. It became the jumping-off point for the organization of the mob throughout the United States. Macheca provided a base for Mazzini's syndicate organizer of the first years of the Mafia, Giuseppe Esposito. A close Mazzini associate, Esposito fled Sicily in the early 1870s, arriving in New Orleans to make contact with Macheca. Esposito traveled through the United States, pulling together Italian-speaking secret societies and establishing inter-city communications where none had existed before. From Esposito's tour onwards, the Sicilian-speaking secret societies became crime syndicates. Mazzini's representative on the scene had absolute authority over the local godfathers, even over the leader of the New Orleans base organization. Macheca's "Mafia leadership was eclipsed briefly," according to one historian, "from 1879 to 1881, when he temporarily deferred to Giuseppi Esposito." (33)

Macheca died at the hands of a New Orleans mob, which dragged him from a prison cell and lynched him, after he had been arrested for the murder of a policeman. (34) His old lieutenant Matrenga took over the reins. Macheca's death left a deep impression on the syndicates; possibly this is the point where the mob decided to "go legit," its strategy ever since. In order to do so, the Matrenga gang turned back to the Hofjuden.

The vehicle for the New Orleans mob's conversion to "legitimate business" in 1900 was another Romanian Jew, an immigrant from the Romanian province of Bessarabia, whence Yechiel Bronfman had migrated to Canada some ten years earlier. The new immigrant, one Samuel Zemurray, obtained financing from a group of Boston and New York Our Crowd banks, and bought out a portion of the Macheca gang's shipping interests. A historian comments, "Joe Macheca's shipping line merged with four others to form the great United Fruit Company, which remains one of the largest of all U.S. firms." (35) United Fruit — rechartered recently as United Brands Company — traditionally brought in Our Crowd bankers for its top management. Nonetheless, the Sicilian mob was remembered with nostalgia. When Charles Matrenga died in 1943, the entire board of United Fruit turned out for the funeral. (36)

From these most prominent among the Jewish and Italian ethnic crime stories of the formative years of the American syndicates, the roots of the narcotics traffic and associated evils are already evident. The Bronfmans, we will document later, founded and bankrolled the modern-day Murder Incorporated, Permindex, the firm that police agencies in the United States and Europe have suspected of organizing the murders of John F. Kennedy, Italian oil magnate Enrico Mattei, and former Italian premier Aldo Moro, as well as the many attempts on the life of Charles de Gaulle. It was in New Orleans that District Attorney Garrison linked the remnants of the old Macheca mob to the events in Dallas in November 1963.

As old Charles Matrenga withdrew into a "legitimate" background, the day-to-day operations of the New Orleans mob fell into the hands of Sylvestro Carolla, who, in turn, passed the godfather's mantel onto Carlos Marcello in the early 1950s. What had begun as a small secret cult, receiving direction from the London center of the Scottish Rite of Freemasonry and Prime Minister Disraeli's Order of Zion, had spread across the American South, the Caribbean, and Central America. It maintained close ties with Meyer Lansky and the British installations in the West Indies.

And, according to sources in the Drug Enforcement Administration, 20 percent of cocaine smuggled into the United States arrives on the ships of United Brands.

The Chinese entry

Opium and morphine, in the early days of the mob, were not illegal drugs; heroin only came into circulation at the turn of the century and was not made illegal as a prescription drug until 1924. But the British dope-runners had a direct hand in the infiltration of narcotics into the United States, through the third wave of crime-tainted immigration, from China.

Not coincidentally, the first large-scale importing of opium into the United States commenced with the "coolie trade," referred to by its British Hong Kong and Shanghai sponsors as the "pig trade." Even before the Civil War, the same British trading companies behind the slave trade into the South were running a fantastic market in Chinese indentured servants into the West Coast. In 1846 alone, 117,000 coolies were brought into the country, feeding an opium trade estimated at nearly 230,000 pounds of gum opium and over 53,000 pounds of prepared (smoking) opium. (37) Although Lincoln outlawed the coolie trade in 1862, the black marketeering in Chinese (the term "Shanghaied" referred to the merchant company kidnapping — through the Triad Society — of impoverished and often opium-addicted Chinese) continued at an escalating rate through to the end of the century. Often these Chinese "indentureds" would put their entire earnings toward bringing their families over to the

U.S. This traffic in Chinese immigrants represented one of the earliest channels of opium into the country, and laid the foundations for the later mass-scale drug trade out of the Chinatowns developed in San Francisco, Vancouver, and other West Coast cities during this period.

The amount of opium coming into the United States during the last quarter of the 19th century is measured by the fact that in 1875, official government statistics estimated that 120,000 Americans — over and above the Chinese immigrant population — were addicted to opium! (38)

Adding to the opium addiction was the fact that British pharmaceutical houses had begun commercial production of morphine in the years leading up to the Civil War and made large quantities available to both armies. The British firms misrepresented the morphine as a "nonaddictive" pain killer and even had the audacity to push it as a cure for opium addiction.

The British Brahmins in the U.S.

The nature of the London-centered cycle of international trade from cotton to opium further cultivated a group of British financial allies in the United States. Some of these allies are comprador trading families whose activities span the entire period from the inception of the opium traffic through to the Second World War.

Most important among these groups is the Astor family dynasty, whose founder, John Jacob Astor (1763-1848) made his fortune in Chinese opium sales. One of his biographers reports, "We see that quicksilver and lead from Gibraltar and opium from Smyrna, as well as some iron and steel from the North of Europe, began in 1816 to take a conspicuous place in the list of Astor's imports into China... Since according to Dr. Kenneth Scott Latourette, quicksilver and opium did not become regular articles of import into China by Americans till about 1816, Astor must have been one of the pioneers of their introduction." (39)

Leveraged into investments in Manhattan real estate, John Jacob Astor's opium earnings formed the basis of one of

America's largest family fortunes. Participation in the China opium trade, a de facto monopoly of the East India Company at the time Astor took part in the traffic, was a privilege extended only to Americans the East India Company thought deserving. Other American firms active in the Canton trade did not touch opium. (40) Possibly, Astor's trading privileges were a British pecuniary reward for services as a British intelligence operative in the United States. Astor provided funds for the escape of his attorney Aaron Burr after Burr murdered Alexander Hamilton; at the time, Burr was a British intelligence agent. Burr's control, and the man to whom he fled after the murder of Hamilton, was East India Company employee Jeremy Bentham. (41)

Apart from the Astor group in New York City, the East India Company developed similar networks in Philadelphia and Boston, among other American cities. The leading British merchant bank Baring Brothers, which remodeled the old East India Company as an instrument for the opium traffic after William Pitt's installation as British Prime Minister in 1783, acquired a group of business partners (and brothers-in-law) in Quaker Philadelphia. The family the Barings married into was William Bingham's, reportedly the richest in the United States at the turn of the nineteenth century. Barings were prominent throughout the first years of the China traffic, founded the Hongkong and Shanghai Bank in 1864, and retained their family seat on its directing "London Committee" as of the HongShang's 1977 annual report.

One historian describes how closely the Bingham group aped the British oligarchy:

> Bingham was a most enthusiastic admirer of the British financial system which he desired to see copied in America. . . . Immense wealth enabled the Binghams to import fashions, and copy the Duke of Manchester's residence in Philadelphia. . . they gave the first masquerade ball in the city, encouraging what soon became a mania among the American rich — a passion for dressing up as aristocrats.
>
> The Binghams finally achieved their ambitions by

> uniting two daughters to foreign aristocrats: one to Count de Tilly, and the other to a member of the London banking house of the Barings, who later became Lord Ashburton. (42)

Another Philadelphia family that united itself with Baring Brothers was that of millionaire Stephen Girard, (43) whose interests survived under the family name, in Philadelphia's multibillion dollar Girard Bank and Trust.

Several of the old "Boston Brahmin" families, however, made it into the mainstream of the 19th century opium traffic, alongside the well-remembered British names of Jardine, Matheson, Sassoon, Japhet, and Dent. The Perkins and Forbes families achieved notoriety in the traffic after the East India Company's monopoly expired in 1832, and after the Astors had ceased to be an important factor. William Hathaway Forbes became so prominent an associate of the British trading companies that he joined the board of directors of the Hongkong and Shanghai Bank in 1866, two years after its founding.

Hathaways, Perkins, and Forbes operated through a joint outlet, Russell and Company, formed around the Perkins family shipping empire, a "business reaching from Rio to Canton." (44) The fortunes of these families, as with the Philadelphia group, began with the slave trade — handed to them when the British dropped the slave trade as unprofitable in 1833. The China clippers of Russell and Company made not only Perkins's fortune, but most of the city of Boston's. A biographer reports, "By merging and creating. Russell and Company, he was responsible to a large degree in the establishing of all of Boston's merchant families — Cabots, Lodges, Forbes, Cunninghams, Appletons, Bacons, Russells, Coolidges, Parkmans, Shaws, Codmans, Boystons and Runnewells." (45)

Baring Brothers, the premier merchant bank of the opium traffic from 1783 to the present day, also maintained close contact with the Boston families. John Murray Forbes (1813-98) was U.S. agent for Barings, a post occupied earlier by Philadelphia's Stephen Girard; he was the father of the first American on the HongShang board.

The group's leading banker became, at the close of the nineteenth century, the House of Morgan — which also took its cut in the Eastern opium traffic. Thomas Nelson Perkins, a descendant of the opium-and-slaves shipping magnate who founded Russell and Company, became the Morgan Bank's chief Boston agent, through Perkins's First National Bank of Boston. Morgan and Perkins, among other things, provided the major endowments for Harvard University. (46) Morgan's Far Eastern operations were the officially conducted British opium traffic. Exemplary is the case of Morgan partner Willard Straight, who spent the years 1901-12 in China as assistant to the notorious Sir Robert Hart, chief of the Imperial Chinese Customs Service, and hence the leading British official in charge of conducting opium traffic. Afterwards he became head of Morgan bank's Far Eastern operations. (47)

The above facts are necessary to round out the historical background to the opium traffic today. What makes them especially interesting is the intricate trail that leads investigators of present-day drug financing back to the same American families and American banks. In Part III, we will blow the cover of Philadelphia's old "Main Line" Quaker families, whose present generation controls not only the leading supply of illicit amphetamines in the United States, but funds a whole array of street-level drug-trafficking operations as well.

Morgan's case deserves special scrutiny from American police and regulatory agencies, for the intimate associations of Morgan Guaranty Trust with the identified leadership of the British dope banks (see Part II, Section 7). Jardine Matheson's current chairman David Newbigging, the most powerful man today in Hong Kong, is a member of Morgan's international advisory board. The chairman of Morgan et Cie., the bank's international division, sits on the Council of the Royal Institute of International Affairs. The chairman of Morgan Grenfell, in which Morgan Guaranty Trust has a 40 percent stake,- Lord Catto of Cairncatto, sits on the "London Committee" of the Hongkong and Shanghai Bank.

But perhaps the most devastating example of continuity among the corrupted American families involves the descendants of old

John Jacob Astor. American citizen Waldorf Astor, his direct descendant, was chairman of the Council of the Royal Institute of International Affairs during the Second World War, while Harvard-trained American citizens of the Institute for Pacific Relations smoothed the transition to People's Republic of China opium production (see Part II, Section 7).

The old Boston families who made their fortunes on the narcotics traffic were the ones whom old Joseph Kennedy strove to imitate when he obtained his British liquor delivery contacts during Prohibition, and the same ones who staffed his son's Administration.

Britain's "Noble Experiment"

In the years 1919 and 1920, two events of critical strategic importance for Britain's opium war against the United States occurred. First, the Royal Institute of International Affairs was founded.

The purpose of this institution had been set forth over 40 years before in the last will and testament of empire-builder Cecil Rhodes. Rhodes had called for the formation of a "secret society" that would oversee the reestablishment of a British empire that would incorporate most of the developing world and recapture the United States (see Part II, Section 7). Toward this objective, Rhodes's circle, including Rudyard Kipling, Lord Milner, and a group of Oxford College graduates known as "Milner's Kindergarten," constituted the Round Table at the turn of the 20th century. In 1919, the same grouping founded the Royal Institute of International Affairs as the central planning and recruitment agency for Britain's "one world empire."

On January 6 of the next year, Britain declared its opium war against the United States. Americans knew it as Prohibition.

Prohibition brought the narcotics traffic, the narcotics traffickers, and large-scale organized crime into the United States. Illegal alcohol and illegal narcotics made up two different product lines of the same multinational firm. The British, through their distilleries in Scotland and Canada, and the British, from their opium refineries in Shanghai and Hong Kong, were the suppliers. The British, through their banks in Canada and the Caribbean, were the financiers. Through their political conduits in the United States, the British created the set of political conditions under which the United States might be won back by means other than the failed Balkanization plan of the Civil War period.

Two tracks led to the drug epidemic in the United States, one in the Far East, and the other in the United States and Canada. Against the outcry of the League of Nations and virtually all the civilized world, the British stubbornly fought to maintain opium production in the Far East, expanding the illegal supply of heroin, just as the drug went out of legal circulation in America in 1924. In North America, Canada — which had had its own period of Prohibition — went "wet" one month before the United States went dry.

In interviews with the authors, Drug Enforcement Administration officials have emphasized the similarity of the alcohol and narcotics modus operandi. When the agents of Arnold Rothstein and Meyer Lansky made their first trips to the Far East in the 1920s, they purchased heroin from the British with full legality. What the American gangsters did with the drug was their own business; the British opium merchants were merely engaging in "free enterprise." When Britain's leading distilling companies sold bulk quantities of liquor to Arnold Rothstein and Joseph Kennedy — for delivery either to the Bahamas or to the three-mile territorial limit of the United States coastal waters — they had no responsibility for what happened to the liquor once it reached American shores. (The identical explanation was offered by an official of the British Bank of the Middle East, which now services the Far East drug traffic through a smugglers' market in gold bullion in Dubai, on the Persian Gulf. "We only sell the gold, old boy," the banker said. "What those fellows do with it once they get it is up to them.")

Which of the American syndicates obtained this month's franchise for drug or liquor distribution was immaterial to the British traffickers. The greater the extent of intergang bloodshed, the less obvious their role would be. In fact, the British distillers could provoke such events at will by withholding needed inventory of bootleg alcohol.

The "Noble Experiment" was aimed at degrading the American people through popular "violation of the law" and association with the crime syndicate controlled by the Our Crowd banks of Wall Street — the Zionist Lobby of its day (see Part III). New York's Our Crowd is an extension of the London Rothschild banking network and British Secret Intelligence into the United States. For example, Sir William Wiseman was the official head of British Secret Intelligence in the United States throughout the World War I period. He became a senior partner in the investment house of Kuhn Loeb immediately on demobilization. Wiseman was a personal protege of Canadian Round Table founder Lord Beaverbrook and one of the most prominent public figures in the Zionist movement. (1)

With this lower Manhattan-Canada-centered grouping acting as the political control, the Prohibition project was launched during the early 1910s under the shadow of the United States' entry into World War I. It should shock no one that the creation and rapid growth of an organized crime syndicate in the United States was the filthy business of the Our Crowd banks — employing the cults of Lord Palmerston and Disraeli that conducted the unsuccessful assault against the American republic during the Civil War.

It is a fraud of the highest order that Prohibition represented a mass social protest against the "evils" of alcohol. Like the environmentalist movement and other present day anti-progress cults, the Women's Christian Temperance Union (WCTU) and its Anti-Saloon League offshoots were a small, well-financed and highly organized circle that enjoyed the financial backing of the Astors, the Vanderbilts, the Warburgs, and the Rockefellers. (2)

Then as now, the funding conduits were principally the tax-exempt foundations — specifically the Russell Sage Foundation and the Rockefeller Foundation. John D. Rockefeller I was hoodwinked by Lord Beaverbrook colleague and former Canadian Prime Minister MacKenzie King into not only bankrolling the WCTU, but providing it with the services of the foundation's entire staff of private investigators. (3)

Who made up the Temperance Movement? It was run by Jane Addams, who studied the Fabian Society's London settlement house Toynbee Hall experiment and came to the United States to launch a parallel project which later produced the University of Chicago. (4) The "cadre" were drawn almost exclusively from three pools: 1) the settlement house and suffragette networks run by Addams and the Russell Sage Foundation; 2) the pro-terrorist synthetic religious cults operated out of Oberlin College in Ohio; and 3) the Ku Klux Klan in the South.

Oberlin College was founded by British "Christian missionaries" in the decades leading up to the Civil War. Like the ancient anti-Christian Manichean cult, Oberlin was organized around the principle that the material world was wholly evil; all students (i.e. initiates) were required to become vegetarians. From Oberlin's student body some of the most violent radical abolitionist terrorists were recruited, trained and deployed and safehoused during the Civil War. (5)

Like its predecessor radical abolitionist movement, the Temperance Movement was founded at Oberlin in the post-Civil War period as a violent cult (known at the time as "Organized Motherlove"). At the height of the Prohibition drive during the 1910s, bands of ax-wielding lesbians — the Susan Saxes and Bernadine Dohrns of their day — received banner headlines for their assaults against saloons throughout the Ohio Valley. Many of these women were drawn from the Manichean cult at Oberlin.

Once launched as a nationwide movement, WCTU founded a national headquarters in Evanston, 111. Nearby Wilmette, 111. (along with London and Tel Aviv) subsequently became the North American headquarters of the British Intelligence-organized Ba'hai terrorist cult. (6)

In the South, parallel "fundamentalist Christian" cultists had been drawn together from the turn of the century under the direction of the Ku Klux Klan.

These three British cults agitated nationally for Prohibition. While the WCTU and Anti-Saloon League staged well-publicized and frequently violent raids against saloons, the more sophisticated Fabian Settlement House social workers of Jane Addams used the unique conjuncture of the recently passed Seventeenth Amendment certifying women's voting rights in national elections and the concentration of much of the adult male population on the war effort to vote up the Eighteenth Amendment making Prohibition the law of the land. The Amendment was fully ratified by 1917; however, the Volstead Act that defined the federal enforcement procedures was not scheduled for implementation until January 6,1920.

The three-year lead time was critical for the establishment of a tightly organized crime syndicate, which was being organized out of Canada and Our Crowd banking circles in New York:

* In Canada, a brief Prohibition period (1915-1919) was principally enacted by order of Her Majesty's Privy Council to create the financial reserves and bootlegging circuit for the U.S. Prohibition. In this period Canada's Hofjuden Bronfman family established the local mob contacts in the U.S. and consolidated contractual agreements with the Royal Liquor Commission in London.

* Primarily out of Brooklyn, New York, teams of field agents of the Russell Sage Foundation conducted a reorganization and recruitment drive among local hoodlum networks — already loosely organized through Tammany Hall's New York City Democratic Party machine. "Legitimate" business fronts were established, replacing neighborhood nickel-and-dime loan sharking operations, and specially selected individuals — largely drawn from the Mazzini "Mafia" transplanted to the U.S. during the late 1800s Italian migrations — were sent out of Brooklyn into such major Midwest cities as Chicago, Detroit, and St. Louis in the 12 months leading up to the Volstead enforcement. One such Brooklyn recruit was Al Capone.

The British oligarchy did much more than supply the gutter elements of the crime syndicates with their stock in trade. To a surprising extent, the Anglophile portion of America's upper crust joined the fun. The case of Joseph Kennedy, who owed his British contracts for liquor wholesaling to the Duke of Devonshire, and later married his daughter into the family, is notorious (see Part III). In some respects more revealing is the strange case of Robert Maynard Hutchins, the President of the University of Chicago from 1929 to 1950. Hutchins had American citizenship, but was so close to the British aristocracy that he became a Knight Commander of Her Majesty's Venerable Order of St. John of Jerusalem, swearing an oath of chivalric fealty to the head of the order, the British monarch.

Under the guise of "social studies research," several well-known University of Chicago postgraduate students received their apprenticeships in the service of the Capone gang:

* In 1930, University of Chicago graduate student Saul Alinsky, the godfather of the "New Left," entered the Capone Mob in Chicago. Alinsky for several years was the accountant for the gang — at the height of the Prohibition profiteering. (7) Alinsky went on to be one of the most important British Fabian-modeled social engineers in the United States for the next 30 years, specializing in the creation of synthetic dionysian cults among the nation's youth and ghetto victims.

Alinsky, in fact, used the organizational model of the Capone Mob to build up a criminal youth gang infrastructure in Chicago during the early 1960s that assumed street-level control over drug trafficking and related criminal operations run 30 years earlier through the Capone gang. When the Our Crowd sponsors of Capone's initial deployment to Chicago determined at the close of Prohibition that a more "civilized" cutout was desired, Alinsky was the channel for bringing Frank Nitti into the Mob.

* In the late 1940s, University of Chicago professor Milton Friedman was installed as President of the Gold Seal Liquor Company — the original Capone enterprise. Friedman soon also assumed the presidency of the Illinois Wholesale Liquor Dealers Association — a position from which he no doubt carried out his first experiments in "free market economics." (8)

* As late as the 1960s, retired University of Chicago President Hutchins himself was under investigation for his involvement

with drug trafficking and other black market enterprises. Through the late 1960s his Center for the Study of Democratic Institutions was financed principally through Bernie Cornfeld's Investments Overseas Service (IOS) — an international pyramid swindle and drug money laundering enterprise (see Part III, Section 3). Furthermore, Hutchins was simultaneously the president of a little-known Nevada foundation called the Albert Parvin Foundation which several congressional committees investigating organized crime cited as a front for Las Vegas gambling receipts. (9)

Mounting the drug invasion

The United States' fourteen-year experiment in Prohibition accomplished precisely what its British framers had intended. Ralph Salerno, an internationally recognized authority and historian on organized crime, a law enforcement consultant and former member of the New York City Police Department's intelligence division, succinctly summarized the effect of Britain's Prohibition gameplan in his book, The Crime Confederation:

> The most crucial event in the history of the confederation (organized crime — ed.) was a legal assist called Prohibition. . . . Prohibition helped foster organized crime in several ways. It was the first source of real big money. Until that time, prostitution, gambling, extortion and other activities had not generated much capital even on their largest scale. But illegal liquor was a multibillion dollar industry. It furnished the money that the organization later used to expand into other illegal activities and to penetrate legitimate business. Prohibition also opened the way to corruption of politicians and policemen on a large scale. It began the syndicate connection with politics and it demoralized some law enforcement groups to the point where they have never really recovered. . . . The manufacture and distribution of illegal liquor here and

> the importation of foreign-made liquor gave the men who were organizing crime experience in the administration and control of multibillion dollar world businesses with thousands of employees and long payrolls. Men who had never before managed anything bigger than a family farm or a local gang got on-the-job training that turned them into leaders developing executive qualities. . . . Mass evasion of the Volstead Act also put the average citizen in touch with criminals, resulting in tolerance and eventually admiration and even romantic approval of them. It permanently undermined respect for the law and for the people enforcing it. Ever since Prohibition the man in the street has accepted the idea that cops can be bought. (10)

The combined revenues of the illicit whiskey and drug trade during Prohibition had constituted a multibillion dollar black market booty. While families like the Kennedys and Bronfmans "made out like bandits" in the early 1930s transition to "legitimate" liquor trade, the overall financial structure for maintaining an organized crime infrastructure demanded diversification into other areas of black market activity only marginally developed previously. The market for illicit drugs in the United States — though significantly expanded as the result of the Prohibition experience — was not to become the foundation of a multibillion dollar traffic for several decades.

In the interim, the Our Crowd-British crime syndicate turned to casino gambling and associated enterprises as the immediate area for expansion. The Lansky syndicate took the opportunity of Nevada's 1933 passage of specific regulations legalizing casino operations to turn that no-man's-land into a desert resort to house all the West Coast criminal operations that had previously been run on pleasure boats 12 miles off the coast of Hollywood. Lansky also moved into the Caribbean, preparing the way for the British offshore complex of unregulated banking.

Through the investment of the phenomenal profits derived from the Prohibition into gambling casinos, professional sports stadiums and racetracks, organized crime established the foundations during the 1930s and 1940s for the drug trafficking that would begin in the mid-1950s — once a cultural climate had been created that was conducive to fostering drug addiction.

Nixon's war on drugs

It is not widely known that President Nixon was a casualty in the war against Britain's drug invasion of the United States. Had Nixon not taken up the most basic interests of the nation in launching a wholesale effort to shut down the drug trafficking — from the top down — it is likely that he would not have been unceremoniously forced out of office by Henry Kissinger, Ted Kennedy, and their British masters.

By 1970 Nixon became profoundly aware that the proliferation of drug abuse among the nation's youth had become a problem of such monumental significance that all his efforts to institute a long-range program of peace-through-development would be meaningless unless combined with a ruthless crackdown on the poison that threatened to wreck the nation's future leadership and its productive sector. Documents are available in the public domain from the Drug Enforcement Administration and other executive agencies showing that Nixon's "War on Drugs" was directed at the top — at the banking institutions, the transportation grids, and only then at the distribution channels delivering the volumes of drugs onto the streets of the country.

At the same time that Nixon generically understood the top-down nature of the problem, he and his assistants scarcely understood that by going after the drug infrastructure they were taking on the entire British oligarchy and the entire underpinnings of the Eurodollar market and the People's Republic of China. Had Nixon understood the drug problem as a London-Peking problem, he would have perhaps been better prepared to deal with the "inside-outside" attack against his Presidency.

In Part II of this report, we will reveal the inner workings of the London-Peking Drug Empire the Nixon Administration ran up against when it declared its War on Drugs.

Notes

1. BRITAIN'S FIRST OPIUM WARS

1. As quoted in Jack Beeching, The Chinese Opium Wars (New York: Harvest Books, 1975), p. 258.
2. Adam Smith, Wealth of Nations, Representative Selections (New York: Bobbs-Merrill, 1961).
3. Richard Morris, The Peacemakers: The Great Powers and American Independence (New York: Harper & Row).
4. Beeching, Chinese Opium Wars, p. 43.
5. In addition to the Chinese Hong merchants who collaborated with the British opium houses and the run-of-the-mill pirates and river rats that the British recruited into their service as the "eyes and ears" in Canton and the interior, the Hakkas, a people living in the southern province of Kwangsi who were under the strong influence of the Heaven and Earth Society (Triads) were particularly important to the British operations. The Triads, devoted to the days of the Ming Dynasty — and who were very similar to the Freemason organizations in Europe and North America — wanted to overthrow the Manchu Dynasty. The Hakkas were used by both the British and their Triad allies as a grassroots bludgeon against the Emperor. The key figure in the joint Anglo-Triad venture was a religious fanatic named Hung Hsui-Ch'uan.

Hung, having suffered public "loss of face" on four occasions — he failed the examinations that would allow him to join the mandarin class and become a government official — suffered a nervous collapse. He was in a trance for 40 days in which he was supposedly born again and then, using a translation of the King James Bible, he created a new religion based on the notion of "The Chosen People." The Hakkas were to be the Chosen People, and the Triad identification of the Manchus as the enemy was fully incorporated into Hung's quasi-Protestant religion.

Hung served as the "prophet," and a Hakkas Triad member, Yang Hsin-Ch'ing, served as the recruiter and military commander of the movement. Yang was in the employ of the British as an opium runner on the Pearl River.

In 1851, Hung and Yang launched a full-scale assault against the Manchu Dynasty — called the Taiping Revolt, or "The Triad War" — which drained China's treasury, shook the government, and demoralized China's pathetic army. The Taiping-Triad forces also played a significant role in the 1911 overthrow of the Manchu Dynasty that led to the republic of China under its president Dr. Sun Yat-sen (also a member of the "Hung Society"), although the organization was outlawed as treasonous and terrorist in 1890.

For further reading on the Hung-Triad Societies see: Lady Queensborough, Occult Theocrasy, Volumes I and II (France: The International League for Historical Research, 1931), pp. 441-42; Beeching, Chinese Opium Wars, pp. 180-205.
6. Beeching, Chinese Opium Wars, p. 80.
7. Ibid., p. 98.
8. Ibid., p. 127.
9. Ibid., p. 95.
10. Ibid., p. 272.
11. Ibid., p. 272.
12. Ibid., p. 264.
13. Karl Marx and Frederick Engels, Civil War in the United States (New York: International Publishing Co.).
14. Brian Ingles, The Forbidden Game: A Social History of Drugs (New York: Charles Scribner's, 1975), chapter 11.
15. Ibid.
16. Ibid.
17. Ibid.
18. Ibid.
19. Ibid.

2. PALMERSTON'S FIFTH COLUMN IN THE USA

1. Samuel Morse, "The Present Attempt to Dissolve the American Union: A British Aristocratic Plot" (New York: John F. Trow, 1862); Samuel Morse, "A Foreign Conspiracy against the Liberties of the United States" (New York: originally published by the New York Observer, 1835); see also the soon-to-be-published book, The First American Intelligence Service (New York: Campaigner Publications). Morse signed all his published articles under the name "Brutus."
2. C. Bernant, The Cousinhood (New York: Macmillan Company, 1972).
3. Benjamin Peixotto, ed., The Menorah, official organ of the B'nai B'rith, New York, 1 (Sept. 1886).
4. Ibid.
5. Ibid.
6. Official document recorded by Benn Pittman, The Indianapolis Treason Trial, 1865; Official Report — A Western Conspiracy in the Aid of the Southern Rebellion (Indianapolis: 1865); see also An Authentic Exposition of the Knights of the Golden Circle or a History of Secession (pamphlet), author unknown, believed to be Union counterespionage agent named Jim Pumfrey (Indianapolis: 1861); Mayo Fesler, "Secret Political Societies in the North during the Civil War," Indiana Historical Magazine 3 (Sept. 1918).
7. Burton Hendrick, Statesman of the Lost Cause, Jefferson Davis and His Cabinet (New York: Literary Guild of America, 1939), pp. 153-181; Max Kohler, Judah Benjamin: Statesman and Jurist (Baltimore, 1905).

8. Israel Joseph Benjamin, "Three Years in America, 1859-62" (New York: 1863), Vol. I; contains a profile of B'nai B'rith and 44 Jewish organizations.
9. Albert Pike, Lectures of Arya and Indo-Aryan Deities and Worship, published by the Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite of Freemasonry of the Southern Jurisdiction of the U.S.A. on orders of the Grand Command of the Supreme Council 33°; see also Queensborough, Theocrasy.
10. Queensborough, Theocrasy.
11. Ibid.
12. Ibid.; see also Merle Curti, "Young America," American Historical Review, 1929.
13. Menorah, Sept. 1886; see also Queensborough, Theocrasy.
14. Queensborough, Theocrasy.
15. John A. Bingham, Special Judge Advocate, "Trial of the Conspirators for the Assassination of President Lincoln Delivered June 2-28, 1865, before the Military Commission of the Court Martial of the Lincoln Conspirators," War Department Records, Section Monograph 2257, Official Transcript.
16. Clayton Gray, Conspiracy in Canada (L'Atelier Press, 1957); David Balsiger and Charles Sellin, The Lincoln Conspiracy (Albuquerque: Sun Publishing Co., 1977).
17. Gray, Conspiracy in Canada.
18. Ibid.; see also Susan Davis, Authentic History of the Ku Klux Klan, 1865-1877,1924.
19. Gray, Conspiracy in Canada.
20. A. R. Turner-Tyrnauer, Lincoln and the Emperors (New York: Harcourt, Brace and World, Inc., 1962).
21. Queensborough, Theocrasy.
22. Menorah, Sept., 1886.
23. The Green Shirts emerged from the networks that the Order of Zion had put in place in Romania and consolidated with the coup to install King Charles in 1887; see also Paul Goldstein, "The Rothschild Roots of the KKK," Executive Intelligence Review 39: 50.
24. The political error the Okhrana made in its use of the Protocols was to generalize the notion of a Zionist conspiracy to include all of Jewry. The Protocols were then used by British intelligence operatives within the Okhrana to unleash pogroms against Russian Jews in conjunction with and following the "1905 Revolution" destabilization of the Witte government.
25. The Protocols have been published most recently in Herman Bernstein, The Truth About the Protocols of Zion (New York: Ktav Publishers, 1971).
26. Sources in Mexico made this oath available to the authors and have confirmed that it is authentic. It should be noted, however, that the Knights of Columbus in the United States is a very different organization from this Mexican branch, and the two should not be confused.
27. Canadian Jewish Congress report, 1967-68 (see Part III, Section 1).

28. Edyth Hinkley, Mazzini: The Story of a Great Italian (Port Washington, N.Y.: Kennikat Press, 1924).
29. Charles William Heckethorn, The Secret Societies of All Ages and Countries, Vol. I and II, 1875 (New York: University Books, Inc., 1965); see also David Leon Chandler, Brothers in Blood (New York: E.P. Dutton Co., Inc., 1975), p. 31.
30. Chandler, Brothers in Blood, p. 103.
31. Ibid., p. 75.
32. Ibid.
33. Ibid., p. 79.
34. Ibid., pp. 95, 97.
35. Ibid., p. 97.
36. Ibid., p. 98.
37. Beeching, Chinese Opium Wars, p. 178.
38. Ibid.
39. Kenneth Wiggins Porter, John Jacob Astor, Business Man (New York: Russell and Russell, 1966).
40. Beeching, Chinese Opium Wars.
41. Porter, John Jacob Astor, p. 604.
42. Miriam Beard, History of Business, Vol. II (Ann Arbor: University of Michigan Press, 1963), p. 162ff.; see also Joseph Wechsberg, The Merchant Bankers (Boston: Little, Brown, and Company, 1966), 104 ff.
43. Wechsberg, Merchant Bankers, p. 123.
44. Beeching, Chinese Opium Wars.
45. Brett Howard, Boston: A Social History (New York: Hawthorn Books, Inc., 1976).
46. Ibid.
47. Ingles, The Forbidden Game.

3. BRITAIN'S NOBLE EXPERIMENT

1 Who's Who in America and Who's Who in World Jewry.
2. John Kobler, Ardent Spirits (New York: G. P. Putnam's Sons, 1973).
3. Ibid.
4. Jeffrey Steinberg, "Robert M. Hutchins: Shaper of an American oligarchy," The Campaigner, Vol. II, 3-4:73-77.
5. Queensborough, Occult Theocrasy.
6. Bruce Wood, "Cult and Terrorist Activities in the Detroit, Michigan Area Since the 1960s," an unpublished manuscript, September, 1976.
7. Saul Alinsky, Reveille for Radicals (New York: Random House. 1969).
8. John Kobler, Capone: The Legacy (New York: G. P. Putnam's Sons, 1972).
9. Hank Messick, Lansky (New York: Berkley Medallion Books, 1971), p. 152.
10. Ralph Salerno and John S. Tompkins, The Crime Confederation (New York: Doubleday and Company, Inc., 1969). pp. 275,278-79.

PART II

How the Drug Empire Works

Introduction

The basis of this investigation

In the following pages we will take the reader from the opium-growing mountains of the Far East's Golden Triangle, to the offices of opium wholesalers in the expatriate Chinese districts of Bangkok, Rangoon, and Singapore; we will take him through the bonded warehouses, shipping lines and air freight companies of old-line British trading companies who control the Chinese expatriate wholesalers; we will lead him through the maze of financial channels that fund the Far East's opium trade, to the august portals of Hongkong and Shanghai Banking Corporation and other top British banks who control the financing topdown; we will take him across the Pacific to the ports of entry for heroin into the United States, to the skyscraper offices of the Canadian banks and corporations who finance, ship, and protect the heroin en route to the United States; and, finally, we will guide the reader down the family trees of the Canada-based Zionist financiers, to their contact-points in the world of organized crime and heroin distribution. When this is done, we will have reconstructed the Annual Report of Dope, Incorporated, including balance sheet, board of directors, senior operating officers, table of organization, and subsidiaries.

At the conclusion, the reader will know and understand more about the personnel and operations of illegal drugs — the world's biggest business since the days of opium-pusher Adam Smith — than the law enforcement authorities of the United States and other countries knew until recently. In the files of these agencies, in the minds of solitary investigators, and, to a surprising extent, in the public record itself, the pieces of the puzzle have existed for years. Fitting them together into a single picture is the task of this investigation. But the puzzle is not a jigsaw game, in which the picture is assembled by fitting the pieces together side-by-side. As a first approximation, it would be better for the reader to imagine a set of clear plastic overlays, each of which contains part of the picture; laid one on top of the other, they complete the puzzle.

The different overlays of this puzzle are these:

1) The detailed record assembled by American and other investigators of the mechanics of the opium trade from the Golden Triangle down to opium's ports of departure to the rest of the world;

2) Pinpointed identification of opium wholesalers, largely in the Chinese expatriate community, including the names of leading bankers;

3) A comprehensive profile of British finance in the Far East, revolving around the Hong Kong financial center and its leading bank, the Hongkong and Shanghai, including the web of British ties to the Chinese expatriate banking community throughout the area;

4) An exhaustive grid of the British control over means of laundering dirty money in the hundreds of billions of dollars, including "offshore" banking, gold, and diamonds;

5) A grid of the huge quantity of public record material showing the integration of British Far East and dirty money financial] operations worldwide with the top level of British foreign policy-making, centered in the Royal Institute of International Affairs;

6) The similar public record of evidence of strategic agreement between Great Britain and the Maoist People's Republic of

China, going back to negotiations between British opium-runners and Mao Tse-tung, under the auspices of the Royal Institute of International Affairs;

7) Twenty years of official documentation — from American, Japanese, Taiwanese, and Soviet sources — that the People's Republic of China grows and exports opium not only to earn foreign exchange, but to fund secret intelligence operations, through Chinese expatriates;

8) A comprehensive grid of the intimate links between all these elements — British old-line opium-runners, British dirty money operations, Chinese expatriate overseas operations, British-Chinese policy agreement — with the "Canadian" connection to American organized crime;

9) The international web of the British-centered "Zionist lobby," and its special function in gold and diamond-related dirty money operations, laundering of dirty money, financing of international terrorism, and financial control of the Canada-U.S. drug channels;

10) Lastly, a gridding that demonstrates that the leading controllers of the opium war against the United States are not only connected by interlocking directorates and other business ties but by ties of "blood" that constitute this web under one family.

The resulting picture is comprehensive: the entire mass of detailed, documented evidence fits together into a single picture, stretching from the present day back through the British origins of the opium trade in the time of Adam Smith.

The Hongkong and Shanghai Bank and related companies finance the opium trade. In this, they are acting as designated agents of the British monarchy, through the Royal Institute of International Affairs. Not only do they control the expatriate Chinese legmen of the opium trade, but they do so as part of an agreement negotiated between Mao Tse-tung and the Royal Institute of International Affairs, by the Hongkong and Shanghai's leading representatives!

The gold and diamonds side of the dirty money laundering operations, under the immediate control of Britain's Zionist Hofjuden (Court Jews), is part of the same machine. Through the highest circles of British policy, all the important branches of the drug machine — the Chinese connection, the old-line British opium traders, the dirty "offshore" banking sector, and the Zionist Hofjuden — run Canada from the top.

From there the trail leads directly into the American crime syndicate, through the Hofjuden Bronfman family.

The world illegal drug traffic is not only the world's biggest swindle and subversive agency: it is controlled by a single group of evil men whose names and organizational affiliations are all printed below, and whose intimate ties of ownership, family, and political collaboration go back 200 years. We know their names and addresses, and know how to mop them up.

1

Banking and the World's Biggest Business

Assembled as one picture, the hard evidence available from the Drug Enforcement Administration and other law enforcement bodies leaves only one possible conclusion: The drug "industry" is run as a single integrated world operation, from the opium poppy to the nickel bag of heroin sold on an inner-city street corner. Not only is illegal drug traffic under the control of a single world network, but opiates traffic in particular is without doubt the best-controlled production and distribution system of any commodity in international trade, illegal or legal. De Beers' Central Selling Organization's 85 percent control of world diamond wholesaling — an example not irrelevant to the drug trade — pales by comparison to the orderly marketing arrangements for heroin demonstrated by the hardest figures available.

Investigators are daunted by the fact that the solution to the problem is so damned obvious. Imagine Edgar Allan Poe's fictional purloined letter, photographically enlarged to 8 by 20 feet, and used as wallpaper; then, imagine the French police attempting to find it with magnifying glasses.

When we speak of the drug-related illegal economy — for drugs are the pivot on which most other illegal activity turns — we are talking of a $200 billion per year business, the biggest business in the world. That is net, not gross, annual sales of drugs, plus related illicit payments.

How can such activity avoid sticking out wildly, especially in areas of concentration such as the Far East? Because the British monarchy organized most of the Far East to conform to the drug traffic! How can $200 billion in illegal payments get through the international banking system past the eyes of law enforcement authorities? The answer is: the Anglo-Dutch "offshore" banking system. This and related precious metals and gems trade were designed around illegal money in the first place!

Mere consideration of the obvious — or what will quickly become obvious when the evidence of the public record is assembled below — gives the financial specialist the equivalent of an inner-ear disorder. The financial world, remember, is one in which the stock market will do flips over a measly few hundred million dollars' difference in the weekly reported figures for the American money supply. Although most of the necessary evidence has long been available, both investigators and the public prefer to see world drug traffic and related illegal activity as a montage of movie villains: Far Eastern warlords, free-lance smugglers, jowly gangsters, and corrupt politicians. Such individuals figure into the world drug traffic, but as the arms and legs of a top-down operation, under the immediate control of the British and allied monarchies.

The most striking single fact for this conclusion is that the price series for heroin at retail level in major American cities show virtually total uniformity. Law enforcement records show that, within the acceptable range of 3 to 6 percent purity at the street level, the price of heroin has been constant between widely disparate distribution points during the past ten years. Arrests of local distribution chains, internecine warfare among drug-traffickers, interdiction of smuggling routes, the virtual elimination of the Turkish opium supply after 1972, the scouring of Asian and European transit points, and local changes in political and growing conditions in the Golden Triangle growing area, all have failed to have any effect on the single world heroin price! The few exceptions prove the rule, and consist mainly of sharp temporary drops in some local retail prices, attributed to occasional free-lance supply through returning Vietnam War veterans and the like. (1)

Where does it go?

Closely related to the striking uniformity of inner-city heroin prices at retail level in the United States is the gigantic discrepancy between known levels of opium production for illegal purposes and consumption by the world's addict population. Fairly reliable statistical data are available for both. Within great margins of fluctuation depending on weather, enforcement, and other conditions, available supply exceeds demand by roughly a factor often.

Approximately 700 tons annually are produced and transported out of the world's largest opium-growing area, the Golden Triangle. (2) Seven hundred tons of raw opium, in the form of balls of opium gum, are the equivalent of about 70 tons of refined heroin. In practice less than half this amount is refined into heroin; the remainder is sold in the form of either opium or morphine base, largely for smoking purposes, and largely to an addict population in the orient itself. However, by all estimates of the American addict population, approximately three tons per year of refined heroin are more than sufficient to meet annual consumption "requirements." About that much again is required to maintain all other heroin addicts in the noncommunist advanced sector.

DEA and other official sources affirm the cited production figures through direct monitoring of opium shipments and other sophisticated intelligence methods. Consumption and sales are obviously limited by the possible size and financial resources of the addict population in the advanced sector. To use a rough example: If the full 30,000 kilograms of annual Golden Triangle heroin production obtained the full street price for heroin, the total retail value would be about $150 billion. But most estimates of annual illegal purchases of retail heroin are under $15 billion.

In short, most of it is never sold, because production capacity is enormous relative to the market's absorption capacity.

What happens to the rest of the heroin? Only a small portion of the total comes into the hands of law enforcement agencies, whose capture of a few pounds of heroin is a matter for celebration. We still must account for tens of tons. The law enforcement records indicate that the drug is warehoused in huge stockpiles against contingencies and to prevent oversupply on the market. For example, during the height of the crackdown on Southeast Asia heroin traffic in 1972 (immediately after U.S. troops withdrew), a single refinery captured by Thai police had on hand a stockpile of 3,000 kilograms, roughly one-tenth of Southeast Asian production. At the time, 21 refineries were known to be operational in the area. (3).

MARKET ANALYSIS

The law enforcement record shows that Dope, Incorporated does its best to avoid mishaps through careful research — on the streets of American cities — which is transmitted back to the poppy fields. Meo tribesmen in the Burmese or Yunnan Province mountains foothills do not plant what they feel like, but what they are told to plant. This facet of the production cycle is well known to law enforcement investigators. If for some reason the market research is off, chaos will ensue, as it did in 1972, when the Golden Triangle yielded a bumper harvest, after wholesalers told poppy-growing peasants to increase their acreage by 50 to 100 percent. The wholesalers counted on the continuing exponential expansion of heroin consumption among American soldiers in Vietnam. Nixon pulled the rug out from under them by pulling the troops out, leaving the world heroin market in an unprecedented state of oversupply.

Reckless price-cutting and competition for sales outlets in this case might have provoked serious consequences for Dope, Incorporated were it not for "government regulatory intervention." The Thai government stepped in and sold 22 tons of opium to the United States. The opium was burned in a public ceremony attended by giggling Thai officials, thus restoring "equilibrium" to the market. (In any case, the Thais were only repeating the action of the Imperial Chinese in 1839, who purchased and burned more than 3,000 tons of opium to the great relief of oversupplied British traders, who sent special fleets to India to bring additional opium back to get the Imperial Government's attractive price.)

Once world illegal opiates traffic comes under scrutiny as an integrated, centralized "monopoly," the discrepancy between the huge oversupply and relatively restricted demand presents no further difficulties. We are looking at an "industry" based on the same principles as the world diamond cartel controlled by De Beers, or the so-called "club" among leading pharmaceuticals manufacturers. Diamond production capacity is so large relative to the absorption capacity of the world market that De Beers' Central Selling Organization, running 85 percent of world diamond wholesale trade, limits availability in order to obtain essentially the price it wants. Pharmaceuticals are, ironically, an even better example. Since the knowledge to manufacture most of the commonly used prescription drugs is widespread among the pharmaceuticals companies, and since the costs of production are insignificant compared to the retail prices of most drugs, elaborate legal arrangements are necessary to prevent a price collapse. Notoriously, the profits of the pharmaceuticals industry owe not to chemists but to patent lawyers.

How big an industry?

Heroin trade is the ideal commodity cartel; its price is more reliably controlled than that of crude oil, and its world volume of sales, at roughly $25 billion for heroin alone and considerably more for smoking-opium and other derivatives, is substantially higher than that of most of the commodities UNCTAD is presently considering for cartelization. A couple of comparisons are in order. At the recent world gold price of $225 per troy ounce, annual world gold mining production (outside the Soviet Union) yields less than $7 billion. During 1977, after an unprecedented price run-up, world diamond output was under $5 billion.

Allowing for the relative ease with which a large dollar value of heroin may be transported — the drug is worth at street level 366 times its weight in gold (4) — the worth of the drug trade is still boggling. It is even more boggling when the retail value in the United States and other OECD countries of nonopiate illegal drugs comes into the picture. For example, the Colombia marijuana crop officially estimated for this year alone carries a retail value of $40 billion. (5) Since marijuana smoking is so widespread in the OECD countries, there probably exists a much larger market in dollar terms than the relatively restricted market among heroin addicts.

Beyond such examples, no accurate data exist. The best that can be stated is that the total world cash flow of illegal drug traffic certainly exceeds $100 billion, and almost certainly does not exceed $200 billion.

The $100 to $200 billion figure includes heroin, opium, morphine, marijuana, cocaine, so-called hallucinogens, and abuse of otherwise-legal prescription drugs. It does not include the proceeds of other drug-related illegal activities, including gambling, theft, prostitution, smuggling, arms traffic, and so forth. It is almost meaningless to assign a total figure to the size of the world's illegal economy. It can only be stated confidently that the illegal economy, whose cornerstone is illegal drug traffic, exceeds the gross national product of most of the OECD countries! That is an extremely conservative projection of the hard data available.

To put the matter another way: all international traffic in controlled substances, including drugs, and also including means of barter for drugs — gold, diamonds, armaments, and so forth — the $200 billion international narcotics trade is bigger than the world oil trade. "DOPEC" is bigger than OPEC. World trade volume is a mere trillion dollars.

Where does the money go?

The question that emerges now is, "How is it possible that $200 billion and up in dirty money, crisscrossing international borders, can remain outside the control of the law?" Again, only one possible answer can be admitted: a huge chunk of international banking and related financial operations have been created solely to manage dirty money. More than that, this chunk of international banking enjoys the sovereign protection of more than a few governments.

These conclusions are obvious. If the entire resources of the largest private bank in the world, roughly $70 billion, had no other use but the financing of illegal world drug traffic and related illegal activity, those resources would be insufficient. If the members of the New York Clearinghouse, the richest group of commercial banks in the world, applied their entire $150 billion lending volume to the illegal economy, the volume might just be sufficient.

In the following sections of this report, the Anglo-Dutch banking operations that control illegal drug and related trade are documented in detail. Below, we will demonstrate through several chains of evidence that this is the only possible banking network that could handle the requisite volume of illegal traffic. The Anglo-Dutch oligarchy's banking operations have the following qualifications :

1) They have run the drug trade for a century and a half.

2) They dominate those banking centers closed off to law enforcement agencies.

3) Almost all such "offshore,"unregulated banking centers are under the direct political control of the British and Dutch monarchies and their allies.

4) They dominate all banking at the heart of the narcotics traffic; the Hongkong and Shanghai Bank, created in 1864 to finance the drug trade, is exemplary.

5) They control world trade in gold and diamonds, a necessary aspect of "hard commodity" exchange for drugs.

6) They subsume — as documented below — the full array of connections to organized crime, the prodrug legislative lobby in the USA, and all other required elements of distribution, protection, and legal support.

THE OFFSHORE COVERUP

Financial specialists, who have lived too long with the smell of the West Indies backwaters to mind it any longer, will choke on the above assertion. The general reader, by contrast, only needs to know a few facts in order to realize that something is wrong. All the offshore international banking operations — including the clean side — are such a speculative whirlpool that virtually the entire deposit base changes hands every week. Hundreds of billions of dollars, including at least a hundred billion in the offshore centers and further hundreds of billions elsewhere, circle the world through teletyped bank transfers.

No banking reserves are kept on any of this, as insurance against sudden withdrawals; in the United States, by contrast, commercial banks must hold 15 percent of their checking account balances and 4 percent of their savings balances on reserve. The "offshore" banks just assume that if they are short of cash, they can borrow what they need on the enormous "interbank" market. This mind-boggling financial procedure involves banks lending funds to each other in order to obtain fractional advantages in interest rates. Perhaps 40 percent of the total market is interbank money. Deposit maturities are so short, and money transfers are so rapid, that $50 billion changes hands every business day through the New York banks' Clearinghouse system alone.

The "offshore" banking markets are precisely what the name implies: either Britain's old island colonies refurbished for international banking, or inland feudal relics like Andorra and Liechtenstein. Federal bank regulators will only stare at their shoes when asked what goes on in these places.

In the Cayman Islands, one of the largest offshore centers, the only government is the official "Tax Haven Commission." Law enforcement officers have absolutely no way of getting hold of bank records in such places. Repeatedly, they have identified the offshore centers as the place to look for dirty money. They have not been able to, because virtually all the centers are under British political protection (see below).

American banks do a land-office business in the offshore centers, precisely because no reserves are needed, and every dollar of deposits can be lent out for interest. Currently American banks have over $35 billion in loans booked through Caribbean offshore islands, more than through their offices in London.

Even clean banking operations have moved offshore because present federal banking regulations virtually force them to. The big movement offshore began under the Kennedy Administration, when Anglophile Treasury officials C. Douglas Dillon and Robert V. Roosa railroaded legislation through Congress that taxed loans made to foreigners by American banks. The tax did not apply to loans made offshore, so that is where the bankers went. By the time the Dillon-Roosa legislation was lifted in 1974, the banks were "hooked" through the difference in reserve requirements. In a recent interview in Euromoney magazine, Citibank's chairman Walter Wriston denounced the Dillon-Roosa taxes as a "pure gift to London." (6)

According to the estimates of the Bank of International Settlements, the total assets of so-called Group of Ten offshore banking centers, the unregulated islands and enclaves where "bank inspector" is a dirty word, amount to $94.349 billion, or close to $100 billion, as of February 1977. The figures break down as follows:

Deposits of Group of 10 Banks in Offshore Centers
(in millions)

Andorra	$ 3
Liechtenstein	466
Monaco	48
Bahamas	35,700
Barbados	70
Bermuda	900
Caymans	12,200
Netherlands Antilles	1,600
Panama	7,200
Trinidad and Tobago	154
Kuwait, Qatar, UAE	3,300
Bahrein, Iran, Iraq, Libya, Oman	9,300
New Hebrides	139
Singapore	10,000
Hong Kong	8,300
Lebanon	392
Liberia	4,577
Total	$94,349

Source: Bank for International Settlements

The above figures do not show the actual size of the offshore banking centers, because they include only the assets of branches domiciled in the largest ten industrial countries. They do not include such entities as the three large banks in Thailand's capital, Bangkok, which figure prominently in financing Golden Triangle opium production. Nor do they include thousands of smaller, "offshore" finance companies based only in the offshore centers themselves. Expatriate Chinese banks in the Far East, which have long been known to be a key point of contact with illegal drugs and other contraband traffic in the Far East, also do not show up on these tables; there is no available data on these institutions at all. Furthermore, the above table does include a great deal of legitimate banking business which American and other industrial-country banks bring to the "offshore" market for tax and other reasons. However, the round figure of $100 billion is a useful starting point.

Another set of figures is provided in the Bank of England's quarterly report, although it contains the same unwanted additions and deletions, and is thus relevant; it shows the large vol-

Deposits In or Loans From Britain By Overseas Banks (in millions)

	Deposits	Loans
Bahamas	$3,000	$6,200
Bermuda	262	17
Caymans	1,380	1,408
Hong Kong	1,333	1,910
Lebanon	867	16
Liberia	—	1
Netherlands Territories	151	83
New Hebrides	13	7
Panama	118	583
Singapore	833	3,173
Barbados	—	—
Trinidad and Tobago	179	23
Total	$8,134	$13,399

Source: Bank of England as published by Bank for International Settlements.

ume of interchange between London, which in major respects functions as the world's biggest "offshore" center, with the previously mentioned outposts for illegal money. Unfortunately the available figures mix in both British banks' dealings and those of American and other banks which have offices in London.

OWNED AND OPERATED BY LONDON

More important than these numbers — which give a meager understanding of the volume of business in the offshore centers and mix in the legitimate business of American and other institutions — is the political control of the unregulated banking centers, With very few exceptions, offshore banking as a whole is under the thumb of the Anglo-Dutch oligarchy.

The British pre-eminence makes the world picture of offshore banking and dirty money more comprehensible. If the world offshore banking sector appears to run as a single operation under British monarchy control, that is because the same group of people who run it also run the opium traffic whose proceeds this banking sector was created to handle.

One index of British muscle is the following breakdown of the offshore banking centers, comparing the number of banks in each center directly attached to the Royal Institute of International Affairs governing bodies with the number of other banks in each center:

Offshore Center	RIIA-linked Banks	Others
Bahamas	23	21
Bermuda	5	0
Antigua	5	0
Barbados	6	3
Cayman Islands	22	12
Trinidad and Tobago	6	3
Netherlands Antilles	10	5
Panama*	9	20
Singapore**	14	20

*The only one of the above not under British government control.

"Does not count overseas Chinese banks and other expatriates. (Source: Polk's Banking Directory.) See also Directory to RIIA Chart (Section 7).

London and Switzerland are not normally considered offshore banking centers, although in practice both centers function that way. Although Switzerland has signed a treaty with the United States permitting law enforcement officers to investigate and seize funds relating to illegal narcotics traffic (resulting in one recent $250 million seizure), Swiss banks are still notorious depots for dirty money. However, the Swiss side of the operation, typified by Lombard Odier and Edmond de Rothschild's Banque Privee in Geneva, and the Zionist-controlled Baseler Handelsbank is more specialized. Their most important activity is conduiting funds for international terrorism. Most recently, European authorities traced the funding of the 1978 Aldo Moro assassination through Swiss channels back to Israel.

London is the largest center for Eurodollar banking under the encouragement of the Bank of England, which permits the foreign branches of U.S. and other banks to hold external accounts in London without reserve requirements, and with minimal inspection. At last count, international banks had $90 billion in assets in London. The Bank of England can do as much or as little as it wants in the way of regulation, under British law.

For self-evident reasons, even the best-protected institutions of the British oligarchy prefer to launder their dirty money through Caribbean, Hong Kong, and similar branch operations, rather than in London itself.

Because the British suppliers of narcotics have ironclad control over offshore bank operations, American organized crime marketers of those narcotics have had a field day in the Cayman Islands and the Bahamas. American drug enforcement authorities know that most of the dirty money arising from the U.S. drug trade and related illegal activities ends up in the Bahamas. There has been, unfortunately, little public heat against the British officials who control the operations.

This level of control reaches the flagrant. For example, the chief of all banking regulation and licensing in the Cayman Islands, a close third behind Hong Kong and Macao in the big league of dirty money, is one Mr. Benbow. Mr. Benbow is a retired official of Britain's National Westminster Bank, which shares two directors, J.A.F. Binny and R.J. Dent, with the

Hongkong and Shanghai Bank. Benbow got his present job at the recommendation of the British-influenced International Monetary Fund, according to a source at the IMF's Exchange and Stabilization division. Direct British "hands-on" management of the Caribbean offshore operation dates back to the 1940s, when E.D. Sassoon, Ltd. of Hong Kong — which had made its fortune from the opium trade over the preceding century — picked up, moved, and became E.D. Sassoon, Ltd. of the Bahamas.

Virtually the only one of the offshore centers not under official British control is Panama; not coincidentally, Panama is the only offshore center where American banks strongly outnumber British banks. That is not to say that Panama is clean; on the contrary, most of the funds derived from the Colombian trade in marijuana and cocaine are laundered through Panama, through the three large Colombian banks resident there. However, American banks have a measure of maneuvering room that they do not have in the Cayman Islands or the Bahamas, under the snooping eyes of the British authorities.

West German banking sources believe that the British banks behind Drugs, Incorporated want to move in on Panama and close the gap. The West German sources identify a special feature of the drug-ridden Hongkong and Shanghai Bank's proposed takeover of a controlling share in New York's $20 billion Marine Midland Bank: Marine Midland is the transactions agent for the central bank of Panama. All of the national accounts clear through Marine Midland. Should the Hongkong and Shanghai succeed in acquiring the American bank, it would exercise a decisive margin of control over the Panama offshore market, and bring British control over the offshore centers full circle.

Longstanding ties between Marine Midland and Panama were reflected in the fact that a former board member of Marine Midland Bank, Coudert Brothers lawyer Sol Linowitz, negotiated the Carter Administration's recent treaty concerning the Panama Canal.

FAR EAST CHOKEPOINT

The next sections will concentrate on the Far East offshore banking connection to the drug traffic as a model for the world operation, and follow the trail back to the controlling centers in London. British control over the world dirty money operation is no secret, and the British-Canadian-Caribbean connection to organized crime in the United States is so thoroughly documented that no doubt need remain.

However, it is the Far East that acts as a chokepoint for dirty money, in such volume that it dwarfs legitimate economic activity in the region, and in the British Crown Colony of Hong Kong in particular.

London has seduced and jostled American banking operations into the Caribbean to such an extent that there is a vast amount of legitimate money mixed in with the proceeds of the drug traffic. However, Hong Kong was set up by the British, literally from bare rock, as a center for the drug trade, and remains to this day purely British, and purely a center for the drug trade. In the Far Eastern example we can "prove" that Britain (and its Peking allies) run every phase of international drug traffic.

The laundering cycle

The Drug Enforcement Administration and other law enforcement organizations know how the cycle of dirty money in the United States works. The $50 billion retail proceeds of the total drug traffic in the United States are partly recycled into the drug operation in the United States itself, with large "offtake" by each level of the crime machine. The net profits, in cash, are laundered through hotels, restaurants, gambling casinos, and sports events — the "corporate profile" of the Max Jacobs family and other footsoldiers of the British drug machine.

After the cash is laundered through these nominally legitimate channels, it is transferred to offshore banking operations or their equivalent. Then, according to Drug Enforcement Administration officials, the funds take several trips around the world over the telex machines of offshore banks, passing through at least a half-dozen, and usually more, different bank accounts and corporate fronts, from the Caymans to Liechtenstein, from Liechtenstein to the Bahamas, from the Bahamas to a "nonresident corporation" in Canada, from Canada to Panama, and so forth.

At various points in the process, the funds will purchase diamonds, gold, paintings, or similar portable valuables. At a further point, the valuables will be translated back into cash, eliminating even the trace of a bank transfer. For this reason, the use of undercover agents, in place even at fairly high levels in known branches of narcotics trafficking, has a poor record of detecting either the source or ultimate destination of narcotics-related funds.

Once laundered, the proceeds of the drug traffic and related illegal activities divide into three channels. First, between 10 and 20 percent of the total is recycled back to the opium wholesalers in the Far East and the marijuana wholesalers in the Caribbean and Latin America, constituting the net profits of the wholesale drug trade. A second part is invested in expansion of offshore operations, particularly gambling casinos, resorts, and other profitable operations that are also useful for further laundering of dirty money. The remainder is reinvested in the United States in "legitimate" racing, gambling, hotels, restaurants, and other business appropriate for cash-laundering and further expansion of the domestic drug traffic.

As noted, Hong Kong and related Far East operations are the chokepoint in the entire traffic, where dirty money is a way of life. We will focus on the Far East, the point of origin of world heroin traffic, and work backwards through the maze of Dope, Incorporated fronts and subsidiaries, to arrive at the British-controlled syndicates in the United States.

2

From Opium to Dirty Money

The starting point for the drug cash flow is the cash size of the opium and heroin traffic in the Far East itself, before the drugs obtain the stupendous price markups available in Western markets. The price pyramid is known to be the following:

1. Raw opium, the gum of syrup extracted from opium poppies, is produced in the Golden Triangle, the conjunction of the southern border of the People's Republic of China (Yunnan province), and the northern borders of Thailand, Burma, and Laos. The mountainous terrain, largely above 4,000 feet in elevation, provides ideal growing conditions. Mountain peoples, rather than ethnic Chinese (including those in Yunnan province), grow the opium and collect the gum. The merchant purchasing the gum pays roughly $100 a pound, (1) at collection points such as Lashio or Misai in Burma.

2. By the time the merchant, typically a Yunnanese, has brought the gum by mule train to the triborder area, e.g. Tachilek or Chiengrai in Thailand, the price has doubled, to $200

a pound. (2) At this point the opium is either refined into heroin at refineries located in the triborder area itself, or earmarked for the large Far Eastern market for smoking opium and related derivatives.

Existing data permit the estimate that a division of an average 700-ton crop into 300 tons for heroin refining and 400 tons for opium shipment for Far Eastern smoking purposes is usual. (3)

The $200 pound price at the triborder area is the price paid to the local agent by a wholesaler based either in Bangkok, Rangoon, or Hong Kong. Any distinction among these cities is meaningless. The business structure of the area is under the control of two principal groups that straddle the Far East. The first is the old British banks and trading companies, including the HongShang, Jardine Matheson, Charterhouse Japhet, Swire's, and the Peninsular & Orient Lines. The second, their satellites, is the overseas Chinese networks, under the joint control of London and Peking.

The wholesale value of the 700 tons of annual opium product in the Golden Triangle, prepaid in the triborder area, is roughly $280 million. The $280 million figure, compared with the Gross National Product of Thailand, is considerable; it is like $35 billion in terms of the American GNP.

3. But this wholesale figure is only a small portion of the cash flow of the Far East drug traffic. The next wholesaler, the Bangkok merchant who buys from the first wholesaler, pays about $1 billion for the equivalent of 700 tons of opium in the form of either raw opium or refined heroin. This is roughly four times what the opium was worth at the first wholesale round. The majority of production is retailed locally at large markups (although the markups are much smaller than in the case of heroin retailed in Western countries).

While no hard estimates are possible, the cash flow in the Far East related to this first phase of opium production alone could not be less than $1 billion. That by itself is 15 percent of the estimated assets of foreign banks in Hong Kong, or 10 percent of estimated bank assets of foreign banks in Singapore, or precisely Thailand's 1977 balance of trade deficit!

Measured against the size of economic activity in the regions, there is no possible way to chalk these numbers up in the "Errors and Omissions" column. The cash must go through nominally legitimate channels, in such volume that the nominally legitimate channels — like the HongShang — cannot possibly be unwitting as to the origin.

Even these numbers do not sufficiently reflect the scale of the cash flow derived from crude opium sales alone. It must be added that most of this cash flow is seasonal; virtually all wholesaling must be completed during the two months following the March poppy harvest. Correspondingly, the visible flow of drug-related funds is several times as large during those two months.

4. Finally, the wholesale and local retail cash figures presented above exclude what is possibly the largest component of Far Eastern narcotics money: the reflow of funds back to the Far East from sales made in the West. The narcotics wholesaler in Bangkok or Rangoon or Hong Kong with direct contacts with the growers and control of refineries has paid about $2,000 a pound for the refined heroin. Between him and the street corner, the same pound of heroin will undergo three markups of 1,000 percent. Its ultimate retail value (for pure heroin) will be close to $5,000,000 per kilogram, according to official DEA figures, or $2.27 million a pound, with a total of $25 billion for Western sales.

What portion of this markup, and. in what quantity, accrues to the Far East wholesaler? There is no possible way to estimate this. According to the record of arrests of heroin smuggling, a substantial portion of such smuggling is conducted directly through expatriate Chinese channels, like the Hong Kong-to-Vancouver route, (4) and the notorious activities of the China Sailors' Union of Hong Kong. However, it is this markup that pays the wholesaler's out-of-pocket costs, including the original purchase from the highlands merchant, the refining, the huge quantity (perhaps 300 tons annually) of acetic anhydride used in heroin refining, security, bribes, transportation,, warehousing, and so forth.

If the annual profit of the Golden Triangle operators is in the range of $5 billion — or a mere one fifth of the annual retail sales

GOLDEN
TRIANGLE

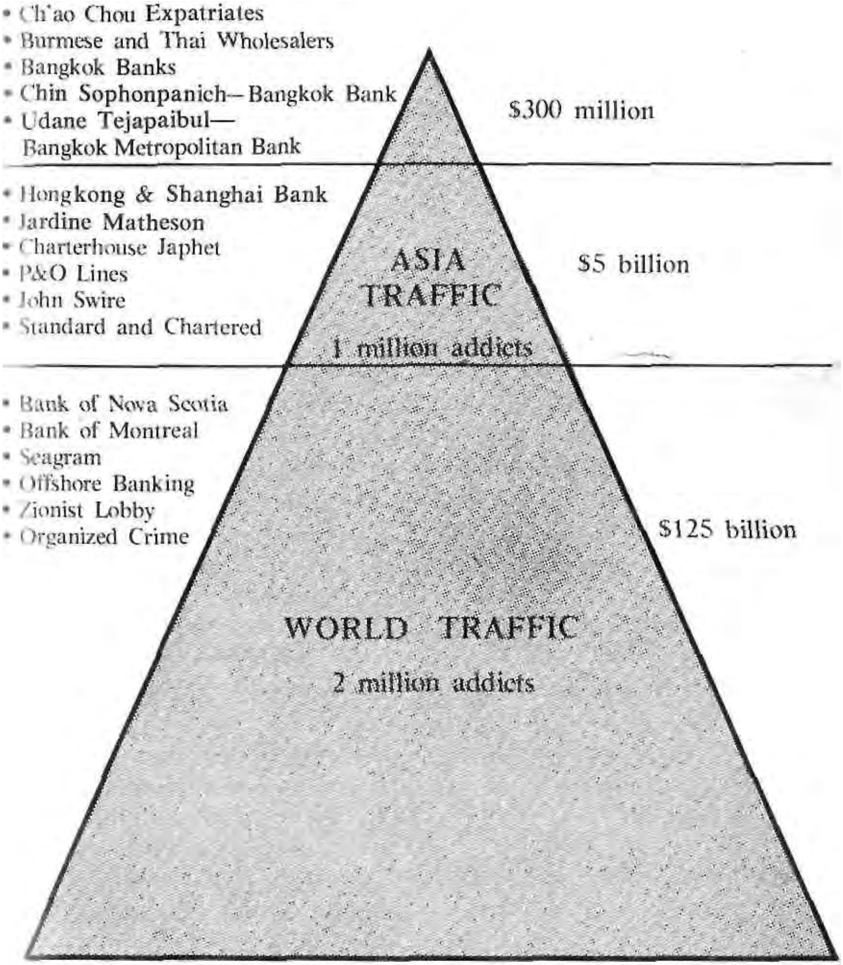
• Ch'ao Chou Expatriates
• Burmese and Thai Wholesalers
• Bangkok Banks
• Chin Sophonpanich—Bangkok Bank
• Udane Tejapaibul—
Bangkok Metropolitan Bank
$300 million
• Hongkong & Shanghai Bank
• Jardine Matheson
• Charterhouse Japhet
• P&O Lines
• John Swire
• Standard and Chartered
ASIA
TRAFFIC
1 million addicts
$5 billion
• Bank of Nova Scotia
• Bank of Montreal
• Seagram
• Offshore Banking
• Zionist Lobby
• Organized Crime
$125 billion
WORLD TRAFFIC
2 million addicts

Figure 1

of heroin in the West — then the total cash flow in the Far East related to drugs is not $1 billion, as above, but $6 billion. The actual reflow is probably several times that sum. Some of the $5 billion may be banked elsewhere than in the Far East. The comparisons to the size of the region's economic activity become all the more grotesque: Thailand's 1976 total exports were only $2 billion. Even the $6 billion figure does not include the huge Far Eastern market for opium and heroin consumption. Added in, the retail volume brings the total close to $10 billion — twice Hong Kong's money supply.

There is another way to arrive at the same $10 billion figure: the official estimate for bribes paid annually to Hong Kong police is an astonishing $1 billion, more than the annual police budget. From a hard business standpoint, that $1 billion in payoffs is a major part of the overhead cost of both wholesale and retail drug operations in Hong Kong, the area's drug capital. Since the known profit margin in the drug trade is 500 to 1,000 percent, it is fair to state that the $1 billion bribe figure is no more than 10 percent of local drug revenues. If $1 billion is 10 percent of the total, the total is $10 billion.

3

How the Drug Trade is Financed

The chain of financial control of world opium traffic begins in Hong Kong, with billions of dollars in Hong Kong dollar loans to expatriate Chinese operators in the drug-growing regions. These expatriates include two of Bangkok's best-known bankers, according to American law enforcement files.

Hong Kong also provides essential logistical support, including:

1) Smuggler-sized gold bars, obtainable through Hongkong and Shanghai Bank subsidiaries;

2) Diamonds, available through Hong Kong's Anglo-Israeli controlled diamond monopoly; and

3) Warehousing facilities, dominated by a subsidiary of the Hongkong and Shanghai Bank.

The HongShang

Hongkong and Shanghai Bank is the semi-official central bank for the Crown Colony, regulating general market conditions, holding excess deposits of the myriad smaller banks, providing rediscount facilities, and so forth. Clearly, the Hongkong and Shanghai Bank is also the financial hydra unifying the production, transportation, and distribution of Asia's opium.

Not only does it dominate financial activity in Hong Kong, with 50 percent of total banking business on the island, but "bank and government often work closely together," (1) the London Financial Times comments. The Colonial government in Hong Kong makes virtually no statistics on banking activity available. Commenting on the $8.3 billion figure for Group of Ten bank operations in Hong Kong, the Financial Times notes that, "The official figures are also just the tip of an almost certainly greater volume of business, which is conducted by international banks with finance company subsidiaries in Hong Kong, or organized from Hong Kong but routed through entirely offshore accounts in such places as Vila (New Hebrides)." (2) To be precise, there are 213 deposit-taking finance companies in the Colony, as well as 34 local banks and 104 bank representative offices. Over these squats the HongShang.

The Chinese middleman

The essence of the bank's drug control is its intimate relationship to scores of expatriate Chinese banking families scattered throughout the Far East. The British and Dutch connection to these families dates back to the first East India Company penetration of the region. The central banking role of the HongShang expresses an agreement that grew out of a century of official opium trade and continues through the present.

First, consider the financial and logistical requirements of the trade. Planning for the March opium harvest begins in September. The Bangkok or Hong Kong drug wholesaler must estimate the size of his market during the next summer, and, after market research is completed, inform his agents in the triborder area. (That market research must come from the United States and other retailers.) They, in turn, will communicate to the Yunnanese and other merchants who operate in the poppy-growing highlands to the north what the market will bear for the next harvest. The merchants then inform the Meo peasants what acreage they may plant.

At this point, the wholesaler must consider the following. First, the physical means of payment must be obtained, including American or Soviet armaments, gold in appropriate small-bar or jewelry form, or whatever, and this to the tune of $140 million worth. Golden Triangle peasants can't use American dollars. Thousands of mules and muleteers must be made ready for the treks into the highlands. Bribes must be paid, routes monitored, border conditions observed, smuggling routes secured, contacts opened in the West, and other loose ends secured. The required seed money is in the range of the wholesaler's $2,000 a pound price for refined heroin. (3)

What portion of the investment is made through "internal resources" of the drug wholesalers, and what portion borrowed, is a matter of guesswork. It is known that a very large amount is borrowed seasonally to finance drug wholesaling, largely from expatriate Ch'ao Chou Chinese banking networks. Since the Ch'ao Chou category includes Thailand's most prestigious bankers, who are known to engage in financing drug traffic, very considerable financial resources are at the traffic's disposal. It is a matter of a 200 percent annual rate of interest — agreed and no questions asked.

Known "angels" of the narcotics trade include Chen Pi Chen, a.k.a. Chin Sophonpanich, Chairman of the Board of the Bangkok Bank, with $5 billion in assets; and Udane Tejapaibul, former Chairman of the Board of the Bangkok Metropolitan Bank, with $2.4 billion in assets. Significantly, Sophonpanich, whose name is a Thai pseudonym, is a Ch'ao Chou Chinese expatriate. (4)

Such scandalous relationships are not much of a surprise in the region. At the time of the 1973 Thai coup, the premier's son and chief of the narcotics bureau, Narong Kittikachorn, was found to be a prominent investor in drug wholesaling.

The annual credit line that must be extended to drug wholesalers, assuming they finance half their operations through credit, probably comes to about $150 million. Through pure chance, that is the average annual growth of the Bangkok Bank's "Loans and

Advances" during each of the last ten years. Of course, Chin Sophonpanich competes with many of his Ch'ao Chou colleagues for this lucrative business.

THE CH'AO CHOU

Wherever the Ch'ao Chou expatriate banking community has surfaced in leading positions of influence, Peking, British, and opium trade connections are evident. In 1958, the Thai authorities issued a fraud warrant against Bangkok Bank's Sophonpanich. He fled to Peking and remained there until 1965, after which he returned, a deal with the Thai military in hand. According to area sources, Sophonpanich still maintains close contact with the Peking regime.

As one among several Bangkok financiers who finance the drug wholesalers in the volume of $100-200 million per year, Sophonpanich's contacts include several names that have frequently appeared on the "Opium Watch List" of American law enforcement agencies: Ying Tsu-li, General Lo, and the brothers Hutien-Hsiang and Hutien-Fa, leading refiners of heroin in the triborder area.

In addition, area sources report that Sophonpanich has direct links to the so-called Triads, the expatriate Chinese secret societies that do most of the legwork in the opium traffic (see Part I).

Yet, Sophonpanich is actually nothing more than a subcontractor of the Hongkong and Shanghai Bank, as we now demonstrate.

The HongShang-Chinese deal

Bangkok Bank illustrates the way the chain of financing leads back to the HongShang. Its current asset volume is $5 billion, much larger than the savings capacity of the area could justify. Banking sources report that most of its credit-generating capacity comes from rediscounting of the trade paper of the Singapore and Hong Kong financial markets, and mostly with the HongShang itself. Since the HongShang controls 50 percent of Hong Kong deposits and acts as the ultimate rediscount agency for the entire colony and much of the rest of Southeast Asia, the dependency of the Bangkok Bank and other Thai banks on the HongShang is virtually total. Most of the Bangkok Bank's lending volume is subcontracted business, controlled by the HongShang.

The British-Chinese expatriate link goes back as long as the British have been in the Far East. The British organized the systematic colonization of tens of thousands of Chinese expatriates throughout the area, and started them out in the lower levels of the business otherwise conducted by the East India companies and their successors. (5)

Even where Britain displaced early overseas Chinese financial interests from positions they had enjoyed in the precolonial period, they left them in local control or in a junior status in such ureas as opium trading, and often virtually restricted them to those areas. As W.J. Cator notes in his book The Economic Position of the Chinese in the Netherlands Indies (6) and Purcell notes in The Chinese in Malaya, (7) Chinese monopolies of opium and alcohol local distribution continued in many Southeast Asian colonies, under the aegis of the colonial authorities, into the first decades of the 20th century.

Colonial powers divested Chinese merchants of control of many trading monopolies granted by the precolonial local authorities, hut left them in control of gambling and local drug and alcohol distribution because Chinese secret societies were uniquely equipped to handle them. The secret societies, representing branches of societies operating in southern China, theoretically pursued the aim of their founding — the overthrow of the Manchu Ch'ing Dynasty in Peking. But as time wore on and the regime remained in power, the societies abroad became less interested in the politics of their homeland and more the instruments of overseas economic interests. As anthropologist William Skinner notes in his book Chinese Society in Thailand, An Analytical History, (8) the immigrant societies were usually headed by influential monopoly owners — opium traders, keepers of gambling and prostitution houses — who generally used the societies to further the interests of their monopolies.

In other economic sectors besides opium, it is common knowledge that overseas Chinese business interests were often employed as compradors, middlemen in the service of colonial banking and trading operations, indispensable due to their knowledge of the local market and their language abilities. The close economic relationships that certain segments of the Chinese business community enjoy with particular British banking interests date from that experience. At every point in the postwar political history of the region, the Chinese expatriate financiers have acted as consistent allies of the British and Dutch. According to standard estimates, Chinese expatriate financiers currently control 60 to 80 percent of the economies of Indonesia, Thailand, and Malaysia.

REGIONAL CONTROL

What the size of expatriate dependency on the Hong Kong market is can only be guessed. However, the existing financial data show that the Hong Kong financial market is enormously oriented to foreign lending, in roughly the same proportion as the American banking system. One-third of all Hong Kong-dollar denominated loans — excluding the so-called Asiadollar market — are to foreign borrowers. Foreign lending stood at HK $18.47 billion in March 1978, against $39 billion in local loans. (There are about 4.6 Hong Kong dollars to one U.S. dollar.) (9)

Since the borrowers' market for Hong Kong, rather than American, dollars is limited to the areas of the Far East still under British financial sway, the HK $18.47 billion figure of overseas loans reflects the immense financial dependency of Burma, Thailand, and Malaysia on Hong Kong. The business is largely conducted through Chinese expatriate family ties. Most of Hong Kong's 250 locally registered finance companies, in fact, are owned by Chinese expatriates.

The scale of expatriate Chinese operations, centered in Hong Kong and dependent on the HongKong and Shanghai Bank, is gigantic; the overseas Chinese community controls 42 percent of the foreign trade of the Southeast Asian countries, compared to 32 percent of Western business, 18 percent of non-Chinese local firms, and only 8 percent of state-controlled trading companies. (10) As of the most recent figures available, Chinese expatriate investments in the area totalled only slightly less than

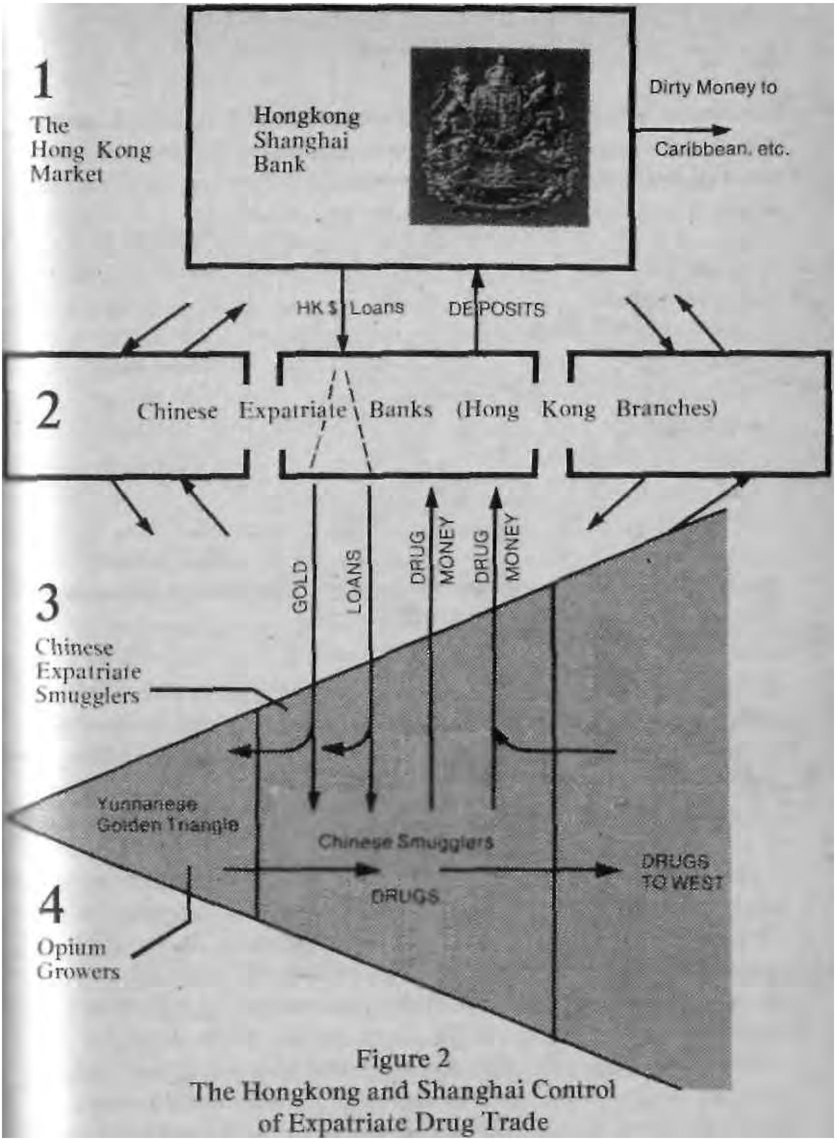
1
The Hong Kong Market
Hongkong Shanghai Bank
Dirty Money to Caribbean, etc.
HK $ Loans
DEPOSITS
2
Chinese Expatriate Banks (Hong Kong Branches)
GOLD
LOANS
DRUG MONEY
DRUG MONEY
3
Chinese Expatriate Smugglers
Yunnanese Golden Triangle
Chinese Smugglers
DRUGS
DRUGS TO WEST
4
Opium Growers

Figure 2
The Hongkong and Shanghai Control of Expatriate Drug Trade

The Hongkong and Shanghai Bank, self-described as "a monument to British finance in Asia," is in full control of the Hong Kong money market (1), on which such Chinese expatriate institutions (2) as the Bank of Bangkok absolutely depend for rediscounting loans, etc. Opium smugglers and wholesalers (3) in turn depend on the expatriate banks to finance their barter-purchase, refining and transport of opium and heroin from the "Golden Triangle" peasants of Southeast Asia and China's Yunnan Province (4). From seed-money to dirty-money, the proceeds of the drug trade start and finish with the HongShang.

combined American, Western European, and Japanese investments (although recent Japanese expansion in the area may have shifted the proportion somewhat).

Country	Total Expatriate Chinese Investment
Indonesia	$1.2 billion
Malaysia and Singapore	2.2 billion
Philippines	1.0 billion
Thailand*	.3 billion
Cambodia**	.12 billion
South Vietnam**	.25 billion
TOTAL	$5.07 billion

*Does not include investments of "assimilated" Ch'ao Chou bankers such as Udane Tejapaibul and Chin Sophonpanich.
**Current status unknown.

The above figures only give a partial picture of overseas Chinese financier dominance of Southeast Asian economies, because the expatriate Chinese bourgeoisie is overwhelmingly in such strategic sectors as banking, insurance, shipping, warehousing, and other intermediary activities, rather than manufacturing or agriculture.

According to one of Stanford University's classic China studies, Thompson and Adloff's Minority Problems in Southeast Asia, "Foreign-exchange and other controls (imposed by national governments in the area — ed.) have transformed many of the Chinese into smugglers and black marketeers, and such operations have increased both their wealth and their unpopularity. Attempts to control the Chinese have almost everywhere run into the bewildering maze of overlapping Chinese organizations which exists in every country of the area, and they have been frustrated by Chinese evasion, ability, and indispensability." (11)

The activities of the corrupted section of the expatriate Chinese community in Southeast Asia have provoked a long series of clashes with national authorities — who have not generally been successful in limiting illegal traffic. The one exception is the British possession of Hong Kong, the center of illegal operations in the area, where the smugglers are members of Hong Kong's high society, e.g., Macao gambling overlord Stanley Ho, who made his career smuggling strategic materials from Hong Kong to China via Macao during the Korean War.

4

Britain's Gold and Dirty Diamond Operations

One feature of the financing chain of the Far Eastern drug traffic—the Asian gold market—is a tipoff of the British (and especially Hongkong and Shanghai Bank) control over the entire process. It might seem strange to the general reader, but the gold connection was one of a handful of critical clues that led investigators up the whole chain of evidence that will eventually put the management of the HongShang and a few other long-established institutions behind bars.

Vast quantities of gold are absorbed into the Asian drug trade—an inestimable percentage of the 400 to 600 tons of the metal that pass through the orient in a year, mainly through Hong Kong, and mainly through subsidiaries of the HongShang. The trade could not run without it and other precious, portable, untraceable substances—like diamonds.

First of all, peasants of the Golden Triangle poppy fields do not appreciate secret accounts in the Bahamas. Furthermore, since the end of the Vietnam War, and the end of the widespread traffic in contraband and American arms and American dollars, the U.S. dollar in the form of currency is no longer an acceptable medium of exchange. They must be paid in food—which they do not produce themselves—goods, and gold or the equivalent.

Secondly, the People's Republic of China's share of Golden Triangle production is paid almost entirely in gold, shipped in bulk across the Burmese border. (1) PRC gold income on opium production probably absorbs around one-seventh of all gold traded in the orient (judging from data analyzed more closely in Section 6, The Peking Connection). There could be some double counting here, since Peking also sells gold on the Hong Kong market.

Third, and possibly most important, gold cannot be traced, although any bank transfer ultimately can. One bar of gold looks like any other; changing a bank balance into gold or diamonds, and then changing it back into a bank balance, is like crossing a river to avoid bloodhounds.

Gold is so important to the entire business that the metal's price is pegged to the price of raw opium in the Golden Triangle highlands. The dollar's fall in terms of the gold price from $35 an ounce before 1971 to about $225 recently has also dramatically escalated opium wholesale prices. The escalation of the gold price over the past year has been so steady that all the numbers regarding the size of the opium trade may already be gross underestimates. One indication of the closeness of the gold-opium relationship is the well-known story that the CIA fieldmen in northern Laos carried both gold and opium, to use as means of payment to the local Me'o population in case of need.

How illegal gold travels

The American public will be shocked at how openly the HongKong and Shanghai Bank uses its monopoly in the Far Eastern gold trade to feed smuggling operations. Prior to the official opening of the Hong Kong gold market in 1974, HongShang openly financed the gold markets of Macao, the flagrantly crime-ridden island that plays "offshore" to Hong Kong's own "offshore" operations. Today the Hong Kong market is run topdown by Sharps Pixley Wardley, a 51-percent owned subsidiary of the HongShang. The Hong Kong market's current daily trading volume is in the hundreds of millions of dollars, on a par with London and Zurich.

Apart from Hong Kong, the other route for smuggled gold to the Far East is through the Persian Gulf sheikdom of Dubai. The dominant commercial and gold market force in Dubai is the British Bank of the Middle East, a 100 percent subsidiary of the Hongkong and Shanghai Bank.

A 1972 description from one of Britain's best-known experts, Timothy Green of Consolidated Gold Fields, Ltd., (2) is instructive on how the illegal flow of gold travels:

"It may indeed sound romantic, but it is a fact that both in 1970 and 1971 at least 500 tons of gold—that is to say half of all South Africa's production, or 40 percent of total gold production in the non-communist world—passed through unofficial channels on the way to its ultimate destination."

"Unofficial" channels, as the author proceeds to make clear, means illegal channels. Most of the world's existing gold is held by central banks; prior to 1971, gold was the basis of central bank reserves. With the advent of the new European Monetary System, gold is again becoming an official monetary reserve. Gold dealings among banks, industrial users such as jewelers, and so forth, are also counted as "official" channels.

Apart from the drug traffic and related money-laundering uses, gold smuggling has played a major role in aggravating the payments deficits of Third World countries such as India, where large numbers of private citizens hold gold. However, the Indian government in 1977 opened up direct sales to the Indian population. This largely eliminated India as a haven for gold smuggling by making gold available through official channels. Despite this, judging from the activity of the Hong Kong market, the proportion of gold running into illegal channels has, if anything, increased, and the drug-related proportion of the illegal gold increased as well.

"UNOFFICIAL" MEANS ILLEGAL

Green continues: "... these unofficial channels usually start in gold markets such as Beirut (since defunct — ed.), Dubai, Vientiane, Hong Kong and Singapore which I am discussing today. Their chief role — their raison d'etre — is as distribution centers for the smuggling; they are entrepots convenient to nations, which for a variety of reasons, forbid the official import of gold for commercial or hoarding uses ....

"Dubai has become the largest gold market in the world, except for London and Zurich — no mean achievement for a shiekhdom with a population of around 60,000. Both in 1970 and 1971 Dubai had well over 200 tons of gold — indeed in 1970 the equivalent of a quarter of all South African production found its way along this golden pipeline to India and Pakistan (and further East. Since the beginning of official gold sales by the Indian government, and the reopening of the Hong Kong gold market, Dubai's importance has attenuated somewhat — ed.) . . .

"By contrast to Dubai, a gold market that developed very quickly to meet a special short term need was Vientiane in Laos. The market there really grew with the escalation of the war in South Vietnam. And it grew because it was the nearest and cheapest source of gold. . . . This gold which was bought as a hedge against the constant devaluations of the Vietnamese currency and to hide the vast black market profits made from pilfered American arms and equipment, was paid for almost entirely in cash. (Throughout the 1960s and 1970s, pilfered American arms and equipment formed a major part of the barter goods exchanged for opium in the Golden Triangle highlands — ed.).

"Vientiane's short success made some impact on the oldest gold market in the Far East — Hong Kong, or more correctly Hong Kong-Macao, for the two are held together as it were by a golden chain. Hong Kong, as a British Crown Colony, forbids the private holding of gold bullion; only commercial gold of less than 945 purity may be traded. To get around this regulation, gold bullion has for more than twenty-five years made a curious sideways shuffle from Hong Kong to Macao and back again. The gold bullion — in 995 good delivery bars — that comes into Hong Kong by air from Europe and Australia ... is transferred in Macao, where it is melted down into Chinese 1.5 and 10 tael bars. It then returns, stealthily, to Hong Kong. This traffic has been presided over for may years by the Wong Hong Hon Company which negotiated a series of two-year contracts with the Portuguese authorities in Macao for exclusive rights for the gold traffic. The traffic was financed by the Hongkong and Shanghai Bank," (emphasis added)

That is, in the testimony of Britain's leading gold expert, the HongShang financed illegal gold trade in Hong Kong itself, prior to the reopening of the Hong Kong gold market, after which the HongShang subsidiary Sharps Pixley Wardley took over the legal trade.

AN UNDERESTIMATION

Digging into the back archives, it is clear that Consolidated Gold Fields' 40 percent figure for smuggled gold in 1972 represents, if anything, a moderation of past trends. Earlier figures are much higher. For example, British author Paul Ferris in The City (3) claimed that in 1951 only 17 percent of all world gold production went through official channels; Ferris's report was based on interviews with the London gold pool. "What happens to the gold when it disappears into the economic undergrowth of the East is of no concern to the London bullion dealers," Ferris claimed, but as we will demonstrate, the London bullion dealers know precisely what happens to the gold in the Far East. The London bullion market is merely a subsidiary of Dope, Incorporated.

In the July 22, 1952 issue of The Reporter, an article under the byline of H.R. Reinhart, the then Far East correspondent of the Neue Zuercher Zeitung, estimated Asian gold smuggling at $150 million in that year. At today's gold prices, the figure would be $1 billion for the same quantity of gold. The account bears impressive credentials, since 1) the Reporter editor at the time was Harlan Cleveland, now a senior official of the Aspen Institute, and part of the present drug machine in the U.S.; and 2) the Neue Zuercher Zeitung, Switzerland's top daily paper, is linked through European aristocratic ties directly to the British monarchy. (4)

Reinhart identified a "Golden Loop, the circuitous path that leads from North Africa to the coast of Red China and back again as far west as India." The center of gold smuggling was the Portuguese-controlled island of Macao, where gold smuggling is legal, and "anyone who dares call a smuggler a smuggler can be sued for libel." Then the gold is smuggled into Hong Kong, and thence to the rest of Asia.

A mere 3 percent of the smuggled gold is seized by Hong Kong authorities, Reinhart noted, even though customs officials receive a 20 percent commission on all seizures; presumably, bribes to customs officials are more substantial.

Standard Western and Soviet sources estimate the smugglers' commission at 30-50 percent in such transactions. Soviet economist M.A. Andreyev reports: "According to a Chinese businessman in Singapore, smuggling yields a profit of up to 100 percent on invested capital, which is several times higher than the prcfit received in the basic branches of the island's economy. In Hong Kong the commission paid to smugglers amounts to from 30 to 50 percent of the cost of the smuggled commodities." (5)

However, if the bribes paid to Hong Kong customs officials are substantial enough to overshadow the 20 percent kickback on seized contraband gold, the bribes must also be in the order of 30 to 50 percent. The point is that the gold trade itself would not be profitable, unless it were only a bridge transaction in a much more profitable operation — e.g., narcotics traffic! That is the case.

But as Reinhart reported, "British justice, as dispensed by the magistrates' court in Hong Kong, extends even the benefit of the doubt to a suspected smuggler caught with the goods." That should not be a surprise at this point; as noted before, it was a matter of public record for a quarter century that Britain's Hongkong and Shanghai Bank itself financed the gold smuggling!

PEKING'S GOLD

One further crucial point — whose full importance will only emerge in the following sections — is that the People's Republic of China has been in on the illegal gold market since the 1949 Maoist takeover.

Gold flown into Macao, as noted above, was (before Hong Kong opened up its gold markets in 1949) resmelted into bars of less than 95 percent purity, whose trading the Hong Kong authorities hypocritically endorsed. The resmelting, Reinhart reported, was

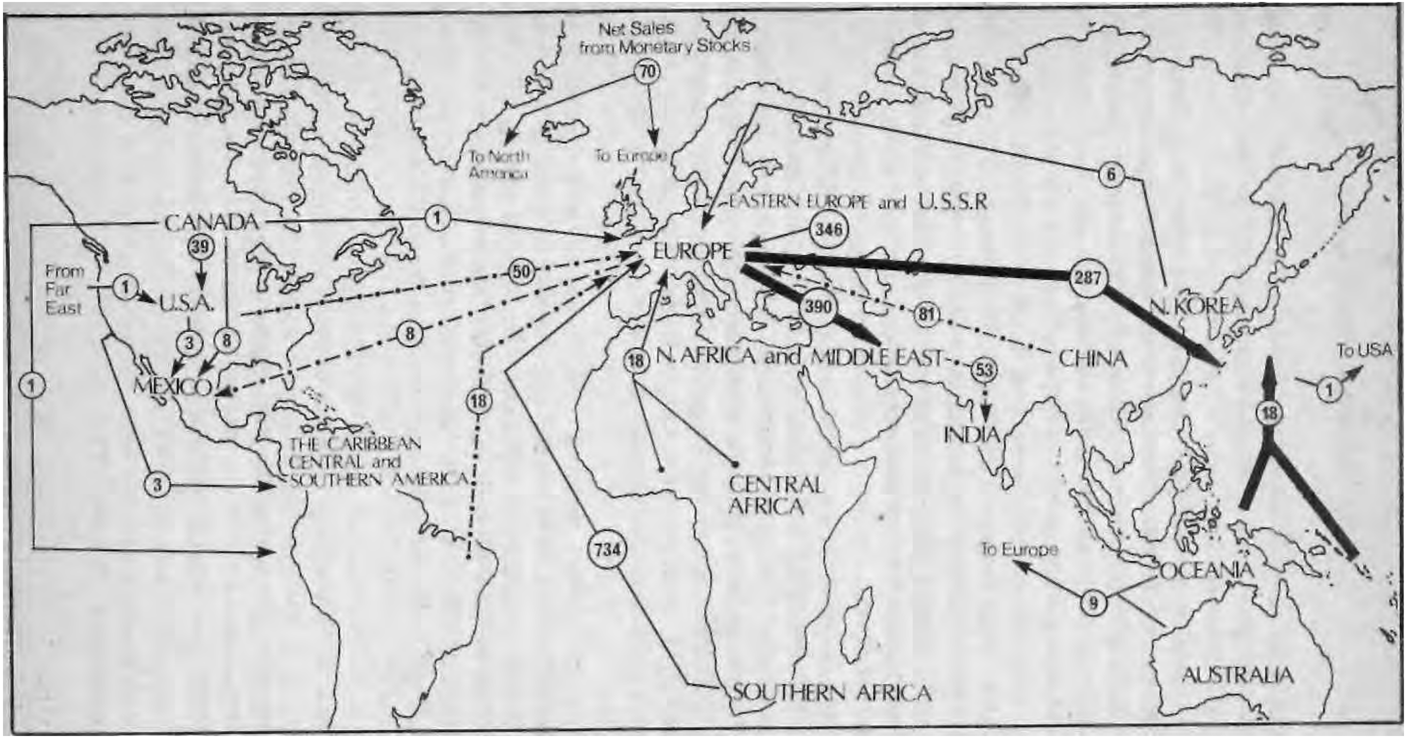
Net Sales
from Monetary Stocks
70
To North America
To Europe
CANADA
39
From Far East
1
U.S.A.
3
8
MEXICO
1
1
50
8
18
THE CARIBBEAN
CENTRAL and
SOUTHERN AMERICA
3
EUROPE
EASTERN EUROPE and U.S.S.R
346
6
287
N. KOREA
390
81
CHINA
18
N. AFRICA and MIDDLE EAST
53
INDIA
CENTRAL
AFRICA
734
SOUTHERN AFRICA
18
1
To USA
To Europe
9
OCEANIA
AUSTRALIA

the business of the Kan Kuam Tsing Company in Macao. "On the Hong Kong exchange," the Swiss journalist added, "the buyer is not unlikely from the People's Republic of China." Since the PRC buyer wants metal of monetary-reserve purity, above 95 percent, he takes the gold back to the Kan Kuam Tsing Company, and reconverts the gold back to a higher purity level. Reinhart identified the firm Pao San and Co. as a regular vehicle for Peking gold purchases during the early 1950s. (6)

According to Reinhart, the PRC entered the Hong Kong gold market in 1950. Last July's announcement that 13 Communist-owned banks in Hong Kong would be permitted to trade directly in the Hong Kong gold market thus only extends an agreement that has been in force since the founding of the PRC.

One big gold pool

Apart from a relatively insignificant flow of gold into Hong Kong from mines in Australia and the Philippines — insignificant

Figure 3

Adjacent map is based on one appearing in the 1977 annual report of Consolidated Gold Fields, Ltd. The world total of gold in metric tons was only approximately 1,500. Of this, 390 metric tons was distributed from Europe through Dubai and 287mt through China, primarily by British-controlled agencies, most of it ending up in Hong Kong. Another 18mt is directly exported to Hong Kong, for a total of 695mt. The vast proportion of this flow is "unofficial," and is put to use in drug-related dirty-money laundering. (Cf. Figure 5.)

compared to the 300 tons of gold traded in Hong Kong during 1977 and the 600 tons traded during 1978 (projected) — Hong Kong depends entirely on the London gold pool for its supplies.

Why do London's gold pool operators tolerate this situation? Because the London gold pool is the same operation as the Hongkong and Shanghai Bank, controlled by the same London families whose drug-running activities go back 150 years.

There are two major South African gold producers, Anglo-American and Consolidated Gold Fields (whose gold specialist was quoted above); there is one major South African diamond producer, De Beers, largely owned by Anglo-American; and five major London gold pool firms, who meet every day in the trading room of N.M. Rothschilds at New Court, St. Swithin Street, London, to set the world gold "fixing." Examining these firms individually, we discover such a manifold of connections that it is meaningless to speak of the London and Hong Kong gold markets as anything but branch offices of the same operation.

Hongkong and Shanghai's own gold-trading outlet is Sharps Pixley Wardley, of which they own 51 percent. One of the five London gold pool firms, Sharps Pixley, owns the remaining 49 percent. But Sharps Pixley itself is a fully owned subsidiary of the London merchant bank Kleinwort Benson whose deputy chairman is Sir Mark Turner, the chairman of Rio Tinto Zinc. Rio Tinto Zinc itself was founded a century ago with the opium-trading profits of Jardine Matheson, by a member of the Matheson family; the Mathesons are still large shareholders in the HongShang. The Matheson family's heirs, the Keswick family, still have their traditional seat on the HongShang board. Sir Mark Turner spent World War II at Britain's Ministry of Economic Warfare, which also employed Sir John Henry Keswick, and another HongShang board member, John Kidston Swire.

Hong Kong's second largest bank, the Standard and Chartered Bank, owns a majority share of another member of the London gold pool, Mocatta Metals. Standard and Chartered's predecessor, the Standard Bank, was founded a century ago by Cecil Rhodes, of whom we will have much to say later in Section 7. Standard and Chartered is not only a close collaborator of the HongShang in such matters as the transfer of Red Chinese opium

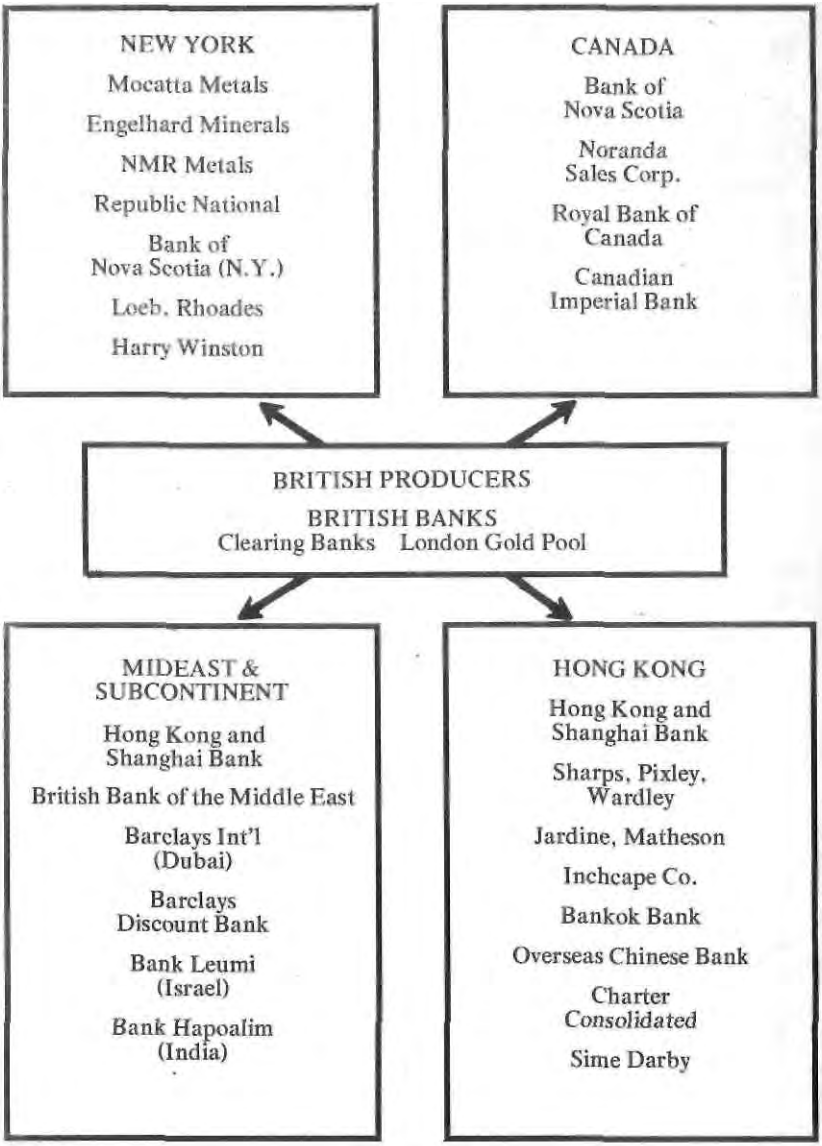
NEW YORK
Mocatta Metals
Engelhard Minerals
NMR Metals
Republic National
Bank of Nova Scotia (N.Y.)
Loeb, Rhoades
Harry Winston
CANADA
Bank of Nova Scotia
Noranda Sales Corp.
Royal Bank of Canada
Canadian Imperial Bank
BRITISH PRODUCERS
BRITISH BANKS
Clearing Banks
London Gold Pool
MIDEAST & SUBCONTINENT
Hong Kong and Shanghai Bank
British Bank of the Middle East
Barclays Int'l (Dubai)
Barclays Discount Bank
Bank Leumi (Israel)
Bank Hapoalim (India)
HONG KONG
Hong Kong and Shanghai Bank
Sharps, Pixley, Wardley
Jardine, Matheson
Inchcape Co.
Bankok Bank
Overseas Chinese Bank
Charter Consolidated
Sime Darby

Figure 4. British Gold and Diamond Syndicate

money (see Section 6 below) — but is heavily interlocked since the days of the official British opium trade.

One of Standard and Chartered's directors is the current Lord Inchcape, of Inchcape and Co. and the Peninsular and Orient Steam Navigation, the latter dominating ocean freight in the Far East. Both companies are heavily represented on the HongShang board of directors. Inchcape's father wrote the notorious 1923 Inchcape Report recommending continued British sponsorship of the opium traffic — despite the outrage of the rest of the League of Nations — in order to "protect the revenues" of then-British colonies in the Far East.

This example also indicates why the London gold pool's dirty money operations are a worldwide, not merely a Far Eastern, problem. Mocatta Metals, a subsidiary of Standard and Chartered's Mocatta and Goldsmid, operates one of New York's biggest dirty money laundering operations.

Mocatta Metal's current chairman, Dr. Henry Jarecki, has been under investigation for years for illegal activities, although no indictment has yet been handed down. According to European intelligence sources, Jarecki's dirty money operation helps fund the activities of the Mossad, Israel's foreign secret intelligence service, in New York City, including assassination teams.

Jarecki is no small fry: he is a frequent gold columnist for British financial publications such as Euromoney, and rated a lengthy profile in the September 1978 issue of Fortune magazine. Nonetheless, he is eminently suited for the role of bag-man for Israeli intelligence hit squads. Jarecki began running drugs as a small-time pusher on the University of Michigan campus in 1950-51. In 1952, he spent six months in jail for suspected espionage in East Berlin. According to published sources, approximately half of Jarecki's present staff of 28 gold traders started out in the same Harvard Psychology Department that featured LSD-pushers Dr. Timothy Leary and "Baba Ram Dass" in the early 1960s. (7)

Midland Bank stands behind both Standard and Chartered and Mocatta and Goldsmid, with a 20 percent ownership of Standard and Chartered; it also wholly owns another London gold pool bank, Samuel Montagu. Sir Mark Turner is a director of both

Midland Bank and Samuel Montagu. The Montagu family, heavily intermarried with the Rothschilds, Montefiores, and Samuels, is the cream of Britain's Court Jews. One of their proteges is HongShang board member Philip de Zulueta.

N.M. Rothschild and Sons, which opened up operations in Hong Kong in 1975 to take advantage of the newly liberalized gold trading laws, and Johnson Matthey, the remaining members of the London gold pool, are also interlocked several times over with both the HongShang and the major South African gold producers, Consolidated Gold Fields and Anglo-American who control between them 90 percent of South Africa's gold output.

(For further details see Section 7 and 8.)

The diamond black market

Second in importance in the money-laundering process is the world diamonds market, worth $5 billion annually at wholesale value, whose single presiding manager is Sir Harry Oppenheimer of De Beers Corporation. Oppenheimer is also the chairman of the larger South African gold producers, Anglo-American. The Anglo-American and De Beers complex runs the Hong Kong side of the money-laundering diamonds operation on two levels — wholesale and retail. De Beers runs 85 percent of the wholesale diamonds market; through his intimate Israeli connections, Oppenheimer also runs the Hong Kong diamond market.

WHY DIAMONDS

There are two points of special relevance for diamonds to the international heroin traffic. The first is that, in value relative to size and weight, diamonds are the closest approximation to heroin as a store of value for furtive use. Secondly, the De Beers-controlled international diamond cartel operates according to a pyramidal structure identical to that of the world heroin trade.

The use of expatriate ethnic networks for the dirtier side of the operations is also homologous, except that in the case of diamonds, Jews take the place of Ch'ao Chou Chinese. Not coincidentally, there is almost as little publicly available information on international diamonds trade as on the heroin traffic.

South Africa's largest producer, De Beers, was the 1888 creation of Rothschild legman Cecil Rhodes; in 1929, the company underwent reorganization by Sir Ernest Oppenheimer, of the Anglo-American family. De Beers controls the Central Selling Organization (CSO), which handles 85 percent of international diamond trade.

At ten "sights" each year, 300 clients purchase stones from the CSO. The list of these select clients is secret. Following their purchase by the secret list of clients, the diamonds are sent to cutting centers for further preparation. The two dominant cutting centers are Antwerp and Ashqelon, in Israel. Antwerp's diamond-cutting and related trade is financed by the Banque Bruxelles-Lambert, controlled by the Lambert family, the Belgian cousins of the Rothschilds. Israel's (and also New York's) diamond business is financed by Bank Leumi. (8)

Within the individual centers, dealers trade among themselves on such exchanges as the New York Diamond Dealers Club, the Ramat Gan in Tel Aviv, and the Antwerp Diamond Bourse. No written records are kept of any transactions on these exchanges; the agreements are sealed with a handshake. No aspects of this trade are available for scrutiny by law enforcement agencies, even under American law, before the diamonds reach the jewelry store level.

Hong Kong's own substantial wholesale diamond market is the virtual monopoly of the Union Bank of Israel; this bank is wholly owned by Israel's largest finance house, Bank Leumi. Bank Leumi, in turn, is under the control of Barclays Bank, on whose board sits Harry Oppenheimer and the Oppenheimer family itself. Bank Leumi's own chairman is Ernst Israel Japhet, of the Charterhouse Japhet family whose fortune derived from the official British opium trade during the nineteenth century!

Ten times a year, representatives from the Ramat Gan, Tel Aviv's diamond exchange, go with Union Bank financing to the De Beers Central Selling Organization "sights" in London, and purchase one-third of the world diamond output.

Like the Peking-British-controlled Ch'ao Chou Chinese networks in the Far East, Britain's Zionist financiers are a cult unto themselves, with their own family networks, cults, and language. New York's diamond market consists, at the lower levels, mainly of members of the extremist Hasidic sects resident in the area. This exotic feature of the diamond traffic achieved public notoriety after several unexplained thefts and murders occurred in the diamond trade during 1977.

Although there is an apparent division of labor between the Hofjuden precious metals and precious stones channels of the world dirty money operation, the various firms involved are so closely intermarried, interlocked, and interowned with the major dirty money banks, that the working of the dirty money apparatus is totally integrated.

A case in point is Canada, the dumping ground for all aspects of Dope, Incorporated that feed into the United States. The Bank of Nova Scotia, for example, is both the major gold dealer (and banker for the second largest gold dealer, Noranda Mines), and the major dirty money operator in the Caribbean.

The Nova Scotia is notorious for bribing its way into new branch offices in the Caribbean, violating local currency laws, running flight capital against currency restrictions, "investing" in local businesses known to be intelligence fronts, and so forth. Nova Scotia's branch network in the Caribbean is the largest of any bank in the world, save Barclays which has a similar pedigree. Gold is a specially useful medium for the special case of the Caribbean, where official restrictions make some bank transfers difficult. Conveniently, Nova Scotia leads the Toronto gold market.

The other leading gold market operator in Toronto is Noranda Mines: its chairman Powis is a member of the board of directors of the Bank of Nova Scotia. Powis is also a member of the board of Sun Life Assurance, the Rothschilds' insurance company.

5

Hong Kong: The World's Drug Capital

Illegal drugs are the biggest business in the Far East — and by a close margin the biggest business in the world — but in Hong Kong, drugs do not merely dominate the economy: they are the economy. A look at the British colony of Hong Kong gives us a picture in microcosm of the drug-dirty money economy worldwide.

First, start with the fact that Hong Kong is the most drug-ridden place in the world, per capita. Official British police estimates have it that 10 percent of Hong Kong's population or 500,000 people, are hardcore addicts. Unofficialestimates run this figure up to 50 percent. A safe, conservative estimate is 20 percent or 1 million people — more than New York City's addicts. Assuming the daily cost of a serious opium or morphine habit in Hong Kong to run to about $10 U.S., the annual cash-flow of retail drug sales at HongShang's back porch runs to about $3.7 billion.

As the region's central bank, the Hong Kong and Shanghai bank provides banknotes to its clients, among other services. Any reasonable estimate of Hong Kong's dirty money operations including the retail drug trade, as well as the notorious bribes to police officers, international drug wholesaling based on the island, illegal gambling, and other forms of illicit transactions, must yield a shockingly large number. With a drugged-up population of that size, the life of Hong Kong's population must be organized around illegal activity.

Shifting focus to New York City for a moment indicates the magnitude of the world's drug-centered illegal economy. Most estimates put the city's addict population at 500,000 (and another 250,000 nationally). Assuming a $50 per day habit is average — which the federal estimates apparently do — this addict population must obtain $9 billion a year out of New York City's faltering economy to meet its needs.

Where does it get $9 billion? Not substantially through well-paying jobs. With rare exceptions that is physically impossible. Not from muggings; however bad matters seem, neither 500,000 muggings, nor a combination of muggings and burglaries, take place daily in New York City. Even prostitution could contribute only a small portion of the $9 billion annual habit of New York City's addicts.

Where does the money come from? From organized crime activity: the numbers racket, bookmaking, protection rackets, autotheft, stolen auto parts distribution, prostitution, pornography, arson-for-hire, and similar occupations. Drug addiction could not possibly exist without organized crime to provide the means of financing addiction.

The National Education Television's recent series on the narcotics trade demonstrated irremonstrable nerve by repeatedly citing the view of the (well-paid) Royal Police of Hong Kong that the narcotics traffic will always exist as long as there is a market. The market for the worst form of human misery not only is the most centrally organized of any market in the world, but could not possibly exist in any other way. If the demand provokes the supply, one might ask, why do narcotics wholesalers produce roughly ten times what addicts can consume annually?

Hong Kong is the capital of the world's illegal drug economy. This explains some of its most notable characteristics: the biggest illegal market in dirty money, drugs, and gold; the world's biggest liquidity ratio; and the world's biggest bribe rate.

The annual exports of the colony this year will be no more than

$8 billion; as we have seen, it will take in more than $10 billion in drug and drug-related financial activity. There is no credence to the myth that Hong Kong's economy is booming on the basis of cheap electronics and textiles.

The illegal market

Apart from retailing and wholesaling of drugs, huge sectors of the island's economy are indirectly dependent on the drug traffic. Exemplary is the booming gold market, whose turnover doubled from 305 tons in 1976 to 600 tons (worth $43.6 billion) in 1977. Some several hundreds of millions of dollars of gold go directly to the Golden Triangle; hundreds of millions more absorb and hide the profits of drug traffickers across the Far East.

This is the place where the Hongkong and Shanghai Bank smuggled gold openly for a quarter-century, rigs the stock market in full public view, and promotes Chinese smugglers to the upper reaches of Hong Kong society. Nothing moves in the colony without the knowledge and approval of the Hongkong and Shanghai Bank and interlocked old-line opium trading companies. They set the island up as an opium center in the 1820s when it was bare rock, and they run it now.

A Soviet commentator, M.A. Andreyev, wrote in 1974:

"In the Far East Hong Kong is the main center of illegal operations in gold and foreign exchange. Large-scale illegal transactions are carried on regularly there in Filipino pesos, Indonesian rupees, Malay and Singapore dollars, Burmese kyats, Thai bahts, South Vietnamese piastres, Cambodian riels, Laotian kips, Chinese yuans, British pounds and U.S. dollars. The foreign exchange transactions in Hong Kong daily involve several billion U.S. dollars (the figure is a gross underestimate, even for 1974 — ed.), with the larger part of these transactions carried on by businessmen from Southeast Asian countries. On a lesser scale such illegal transactions in foreign exchange and gold are conducted in Singapore and Bangkok ....

"The overseas Chinese bourgeoisie actively finances the gold and foreign currency operations in Hong Kong and on the outskirts of Southeast Asia. Ever since the end of the Second World War much of the migrating capital from China has been used in the illegal gold and foreign exchange operations in Hong Kong. U.S. economists note that in the mid-1950s most of these operations in the Hong Kong black market were handled by Chinese brokers. Chinese businessmen are even more active in the gold and foreign exchange black markets in the Southeast Asian countries. Regarding the part played by Chinese financiers in the gold and foreign exchange market in the Philippines, a Hong Kong publication (Wong Po-Shang, The Influx of Chinese Capital into Hongkong since 1937— ed.) wrote: 'Besides remitting through the regular free market, these people have made transfers of their money by trade transactions and devious means as well as by out and out smuggling. This is said to be the case with money from the Philippines where large underground organizations are said to be in operation with the object of helping to smuggle funds, gold bullion and valuables out of the country.' " (1)

Andreyev adds: "Three types of transactions predominate among the innumerable and varied black market gold and foreign exchange operations. These are, first, the acquisition in the local market of gold and foreign exchange (mainly U.S. dollars) smuggled into the country concerned for local currency which devalues quickly. Next, the smuggling of local currency overseas, to countries with a relatively stable currency, for the subsequent exchange of that currency for gold or hard currency. Whereas these types of transactions involve the physical movement of gold and bank-notes from one country to another and are, thereby, closely connected with smuggling (in all Southeast Asian countries there are strict limitations on the inflow and outflow of gold, foreign exchange, and local currency), the third type of black market gold and foreign exchange operation is practically not linked with the movement of bank-notes or gold from country to country . . . (but rather with obtaining) funds in the black market from local businessmen desiring to build up large overseas hard currency or gold accounts.

"The existence of organizational links between numerous

Chinese companies in the different Southeast Asian countries makes it possible to export Chinese capital from country to country even without the physical movement of that capital. Take, for instance, a Chinese firm with branches in Hong Kong, Singapore, Djakarta, Kuala Lumpur and Bangkok. It can, if it so desires, pay for its operations conducted in its behalf by its Bangkok branch not through official channels but by transferring the necessary sum of money in foreign exchange to that branch's overseas bank account. In this case the Bangkok branch pays for these operations from its local currency fund and in exchange gets an addition to its hard currency account abroad." (2)

Highest liquidity ratio

Hong Kong's drug traffic and the regionwide illegal dealings surrounding it undoubtedly account for the colony's chronic excess of liquidity (see International Currency Review, vol. 10, no. 4, for a descriptive analysis). Year-to-year growth in money supply as of April 1978 was 25 percent; however, some of that is attributable to inflows of foreign currency related to the opening of an offshore Hong Kong bond market. Over the past 15 years, the huge volume of external lending tended to suppress the other-Wise huge money supply needed to finance several billions of illegal activity on an island whose reported money supply is now about $4.5 billion, U.S. Offshore business booked through Hong Kong was formerly so large that the liquidity ratio of the banks (taking into account both cash and rediscounted offshore bills of exchange) stood at an extraordinary 50 percent. Most of the local money supply was in the form of cash. (3)

In effect, the cash-based local drug traffic in Hong Kong created a reserve base for offshore lending to finance the drug traffic in the rest of Asia! Since 1975, however, the development of the offshore bond market and the influx of foreign capital has led to the reduction of the liquidity ratio to a still-extraordinary 43 percent.

Understandably, even public business practice in Hong Kong is politically corrupt. The HongShang's entirely open role in gold smuggling between Hong Kong and Macao was noted above. The London Financial Times of July 4, 1977 reported a 1977 scandal in which Wheelock Marden, a trading company listed on the Hong Kong Stock Exchange, provoked an investigation by the Securities Commission, after a "modestly optimistic statement" was followed by "revelation of huge profits drop, dividend cut, write-offs and liquidity problems."

The Financial Times wrote, "insider trading is rampant . . .. These flurries may be attributable to leaks by clerks, secretaries and translators, rather than to insider trading at the top. But who can blame these lesser lights when Mr John Marden is still chairman of Wheelock Marden, still sits on the board of the Hongkong and Shanghai Bank, is still a pillar of 'respectable' colonial society?" (4)

Biggest bribe rate

Law enforcement sources report that the "lesser lights" are generally taken care of through the world's most efficient bribery system. At least $1 billion is passed out to Hong Kong's officialdom.

According to a report in the same London Financial Times article cited above:

" 'Perhaps a billion dollars a year flow into the syndicates,' admits Mr Jack Cater, Hong Kong's head of the Independent Commission Against Corruption (ICAC) started in February. The sum gives one clue to the size of the problem the ICAC has to tackle. Another, Mr Cater points out, is the extent of official and in particular police corruption in the Colony. With membership varying from 10 to 300, there are at least 28 identifiable public sector syndicates, and 25 of them are in the Royal Hong Kong Police Force ....

"The ICAC has considered about 9,500 reports on corruption, about 85 percent of them involving Her Majesty's service. Reports of police crime (4,000) have regularly accounted for more than half the reports of government crime .... Mr Cater has failed to bring back the many wealthy and mostly Chinese non-commissioned police officers who left Hong Kong before the ICAC cast its net." (5) (The largest concentration of the last-mentioned is in Vancouver, British Columbia, where they are still active in the narcotics traffic, according to law enforcement specialists.)

The $1 billion figure cited can be counted as overhead on the narcotics and related drug traffic in the area. Earlier, the local Hong Kong retail drug traffic was estimated at about $4 billion, and the area's drug wholesaling business at $3 million and more. Assuming that bribes of police and other officials — what most of the $1 billion cited represents — amount to no more than 10-15 percent of the volume of drug traffic, retail and wholesale combined, then the estimates for the size of the drug traffic already made are unquestionably on the low side. The $1 billion in Hong Kong corruption annually estimated by the authorities — and it is not likely that this estimate is excessive — indicates drug traffic in and through Hong Kong of close to $10 billion, by ordinary reasoning. That figure, of course, does not include bribes to customs officials at Bangkok, Rangoon, Singapore, and elsewhere, let alone bribes to Thai and Burmese army officials.

To the extent that limited efforts at giving the appearance of honesty have come to pass in Hong Kong, both the police and the Chinese expatriate community have risen in revolt against them. Last year police rioted uncontrollably against so-called anticorruption efforts. The July 4, 1977 Financial Times account notes that the crusade "enraged Chinese business in particular .... In a rare display, the Chinese Manufacturers Association (pro-Peking) and the Kowloon Chamber of Commerce held a mass rally to protest against 'interference in Chinese ancient customs.' " (6)

Such ancient customs indicate the nature of Hong Kong and its bank. According to custom, no bribes are solicited, none offered. Instead, couriers make their rounds through Royal Hong Kong Police and other official buildings early each Monday morning, leaving an envelope containing between one and five hundred-dollar bills in the top drawer of every desk. Any policeman who refuses to take his envelope will probably be dead within 48 hours, according to law enforcement officials.

The Peking Connection

Some of them (U.S. troops in Vietnam) are trying opium. And we are helping them. . . . Do you remember when the West imposed opium on us? They fought us with opium. And we are going to fight them with their own weapons. . . . The effect this demoralization is going to have on the United States will be far greater than anyone realizes.

Chinese Prime Minister Chou En-lai,
in conversation with Egyptian
President Nasser, June 1965 (1)

Only since Henry Kissinger's 1972 trip to China has the Chinese role in the world opium trade been out of the headlines. The American, European, Japanese, and Soviet authorities had long insisted that Peking was a major primary producer and exporter of opium and its derivatives, and the British, under extreme pressure from abroad, had to assent. The highlights of the public record to this effect follow below in this section. However, even the most compelling documentation of Peking's role in opium production misses the point.

Red China's revenues from opium exports, as we will demonstrate, are a mere $800 million annually. Peking makes its real profits in the wholesaling, retailing, and financing of the opium traffic, mainly through Hong Kong, where the big money is made. As noted in Section 4, the People's Republic of China has taken active part in the gold smuggling side of drug financing in the orient since 1950.

But since approximately the time of the Sino-Soviet split in the late 1950s, Peking has deliberately integrated its external financial affairs with the top British drug-running firms in Hong Kong, and the expatriate Chinese drug wholesaling and dirty money networks throughout the orient. Peking's financial policy coincides with strategic commitment — stated unambiguously by the late Premier Chou En-lai — to the full-scale use of the opium weapon against the White Devils of the United States.

Peking's financial dependence on Hong Kong is a matter of public record. On Oct. 2, 1978, Chase Manhattan Bank's newsletter East-West Markets estimated that the financial flow into mainland China this year (excluding exports) through Hong Kong would total $2.5 billion, up from $1.3 billion in 1977. This $2.5 billion includes income on Peking's foreign investments in Hong Kong and other Southeast Asian centers, plus remittances back to relatives on the mainland from Chinese expatriates.

Apart from the purely financial offtake, most of Red China's exports pass through Hong Kong. In 1976, Peking earned $2.4 billion in exports through the British colony, or sufficient to cover 40 percent of the PRC's total import requirements for that year. Peking does all its banking through Hong Kong, largely through the Hongkong and Shanghai Bank, and secondarily through the Standard and Chartered Bank. Peking conducts all its investments abroad through Hong Kong. That dependency is not merely established, but is increasing markedly.

The astonishing $2.5 billion financial reflow back to the PRC this year represents the fruits of Peking's 20-year-old program of moving into the higher echelons of the drug traffic, by agreement with the British. Combining American and Soviet sources, we will demonstrate that this estimation of foreign drug revenues through Hong Kong is a good approximation of Peking's income from drug wholesaling, retailing, and financing, as well as gambling, real estate, and other shady joint ventures with British and expatriate Chinese finance, closely related to the drug trade proper.

Even the $2.5 billion figure does not include the $800 million Peking earns as a primary opium producer. To estimate Peking's gross revenues from the drug traffic, an additional sum of several hundred millions of dollars must be added: the overhead cost of maintaining one of the largest and best-financed intelligence and sabotage operations in the world, the Chinese Communist Intelligence Service (CCIS).

In summary, we will demonstrate that the People's Republic of China is a 40 to 60 partner with the British oligarchy in the Far Eastern narcotics trade.

OLD TIES GROW STRONGER

Peking's current policy represents a direct line of continuity between the current regime and Britain's 19th century corrupt collaborators in China. Correspondingly, the fortunes of the Maoist Great Han Chauvinist faction in Peking are linked to the opium trade and the British oligarchy. They have staked China's economy — its capacity to import urgently needed foreign goods — on the opium trade.

In consequence, the factional importance of the opium issue inside China is enormous. One unmistakable indication that reached Western view is the peculiar case of the Chinese-made film The Opium War, now distributed throughout the West. The Opium War uses the 19th century events as a parable for contemporary China. The villains of the film are not so much the British, but the corrupt Chinese who enable the British to win the Opium Wars, by preventing the Emperor and his loyal intelligence chief Lin Tse-hsu from repelling the White Devils. The film was initially banned by Madame Mao and the rest of the "Gang of Four," allegedly because hero Lin Tse-hsu was an oblique reference to Gang of Four opponent Teng Hsiao-p'ing. Some observers, however, have speculated that the banning was related to a raging political battle over Peking involvement in drugs.

What political fireworks ensue every time a Japanese trade delegation, export-financing agreements in hand, shows up in Peking, can only be imagined. Japan's economic approach to China, embodied in the recent Sino-Japanese treaty, offers the PRC an alternative to dependence on drugs and the British. Correspondingly, the Japanese approach gives the anti-opium group in the PRC powerful factional arguments.

Despite the Japanese initiative, however, Peking's policy has taken dramatic new steps toward economic integration with British Hong Kong.

Among the first major foreign credit arrangements the Peking government has accepted was a $200 million deposit last summer in the Bank of China by a consortium of banks led by Standard and Chartered. Then, in October 1978, the venerable opium traders Jardine Matheson concluded a $300 million agreement with PRC firms in Hong Kong to develop a real estate complex adjoining a branch station of Hong Kong's new mass transit system. Apparently, the joint investment came as part of a package deal including the largest-ever export package to China, also announced at the beginning of October by Jardine Matheson, which handled the negotiations on behalf of a consortium of British firms. The $300 million real estate development in Hong Kong's New Territories includes an 80 percent stake on the part of two PRC-owned firms in Hong Kong, the Sun Company and the Kui Kwing Company; a 15 percent stake from the Hong Kong Land Company Ltd., headed by Jardine Matheson's ex-chairman H. N. L. Keswick; and a 5 percent share from Jardine Matheson itself. (2)

The extraordinary leap in Peking's investment income in and through Hong Kong, and the haste in opening new operations in common with the British, including Peking's official entry into the Hong Kong gold market, mean one thing: Peking and London are jointly preparing a massive expansion of the opium and heroin traffic. Apparently, the market research that Dope, Incorporated conducts in the United States shows that the push for decriminalization of drug use could open the U.S. market up like a clam.

In this section, we will show:

(1) The content of Peking's activities in Hong Kong;

(2) The documented record of Peking support for the drug traffic;

(3) The activities of the grossly underestimated Chinese Communist Intelligence Service (CCIS). Peking intelligence and the expatriate, largely Ch'ao Chou Chinese networks who handle the drug traffic are the same entity. As we demonstrated in Section 3, the expatriate networks operate under financial control from London. In fact, the entire operation of these networks runs through Peking-London joint ventures.

Then, in the next section, we will report how the Royal Institute of International Affairs — which makes policy for the HongShang and the rest of the British banking establishment — negotiated the continuation of the old Anglo-Chinese drug traffic at the end of World War II.

"Communist fat cats"

London's current view of Hong Kong's relationship to the mainland is rosy. "By its acceptance of the status quo, China shows that it is happy to keep the Kong Kong show on the road," wrote the London Financial Times. "The existence of the communist banks (in Hong Kong) is an indication of the continuing commitment, as the establishment of a machinery manufacturing plant on Tsing Yi island, one purpose of which is to modify mainland machinery which fails to meet the requirements of potential buyers in the region.

"This sort of commitment is understood by even the most nervous businessmen and helps remove the cloud of uncertainty which would otherwise start to gather. ... It may be the final irony of the Hong Kong paradox that to ensure Hong Kong's well-being, Peking will have to increase its own investment and participation in the colony." (3)

The same Financial Times report then specified what it meant by increased Peking participation in the colony, citing the exemplary case of a leading Hong Kong and Macao entrepreneur, Mr. Stanley Ho:

"It is a widely accepted allegation that Mr Ho and his partner, Mr Henry Fok, started their fortunes at the time of the Korean War running strategic materials into China. Certainly, both men became prominent during that era of smuggling. Indeed, Mr Ho seems to have weathered the 1967 riots (following the Cultural Revolution — ed.) without taking sides, and he even managed to bolster his friendship with Peking authorities. The relationship, and Mr Ho's wealth, can be traced to the award of China's sand monopoly in Hong Kong to his partnership with Mr Fok. Later, in 1962, Mr Ho was awarded the 25-year gambling franchise in Macao, where he had worked during World War II for a Japanese company. It is fair to say that the gambling franchise was a present from Peking."

The Financial Times could have cited other cases, like the Shaw Brothers (Anglicized Chinese name), Hong Kong's premiere producers of Kung Fu films for distribution throughout the world. Apart from their chain of theaters in Chinese communities across the world, the Shaw brothers control most of Hong Kong's prostitution. (4)

In any corner of the world but Hong Kong, Peking's relationship to the British elite — Peking-owned businessmen and British bankers rub shoulders in the Hong Kong Jockey Club and other havens of Hong Kong's elite — would be a source of international outrage.

Peking controls the Chinese General Chamber of Commerce in the colony, the same organization that organized riots in 1977 to protest the Independent Commission Against Corruption's "interference in the ancient Chinese practice" of bribing police officers. Its chairman, Dr. Wang Kwan-cheng, is a frequent visitor to the mainland, and has been identified in intelligence reports as a PRC political intelligence operative. Wang's position has been described as "the most prestigious in the colony, along with the British Governor-General." Among other things, Wang is among the wealthiest men in Hong Kong, with interests in the retail trade, restaurants, real estate, and transportation. According to his entry in Who's Who in Hong Kong, Wang is "chairman of the Board of Directors of Magna Development Company, Chinese Arts and Crafts (Hong Kong)," and a member of the Hong Kong Jockey Club.

The vice-chairman of the Chinese Chamber of Commerce is C. H. Kao, who, like Macao gambling czar Stanley Ho, amassed great wealth by running strategic materials into China during the Korean War. Other known Peking agents include Ho Yin, chairman of the Macao Chamber of Commerce, and Macao's representative to the PRC's People's Congress, the organization that centralizes the political activities of Chinese expatriates through Peking (see below). Another is K. C. Jay (or Choi), formerly with the Bank of China in Peking, and currently a resident financial intelligence operative and currency specialist for the Bank of China in Hong Kong.

As Richard Deacon, the British author of The Chinese Secret Service, puts it: "What is abundantly clear is that Peking has a great reservoir of strength and talent among its supporters in Hong Kong. Its Secret Service activities there are low-key, as in many other centers, and have avoided clashes with the authorities. Indeed the only espionage scandals to break in the colony for several years past are attributable to other powers altogether, some of them at least manufactured by the Chinese to embarrass another nation. Perhaps the subtlest of these was when in 1973 a Chinese Intelligence agent tipped off the British about two K.G.B. agents, who had been taught Chinese at the University of Vladivostok, arriving in Hong Kong. In their possession were found documents containing valuable information about the Soviet espionage network in the Far East."

And as Deacon remarks, "There may even be some unofficial contacts on an intelligence level between the British and Chinese secret services. . . ." (5)

Deacon also reports that when China's narcotics smuggling operations were at their height, they were controlled by the Central External Liaison Department and the Ministry of Investigation. According to Deacon, the major secret agents were employed through the pro-Peking China Sailors' Union in

Hong Kong. The union was responsible for bringing in a large shipment of heroin discovered by the New York police in January 1973. "The International United Front operations, controlled by the CFLD, included drug-pushing with the aim of creating disruption and demoralization in carefully selected target areas indicated by the CFLD."

Deacon adds: "From Italian sources, diplomatic and otherwise, comes confirmation that the heroin traffic between Hong Kong and Europe is master-minded by Chinese secret agents. It is even suspected that there may have been undercover deals between the Chinese and the Mafia for distribution of the stuff."

Deacon identifies Keng Biao as the chief of the cited Central External Liaison Department. Whether Keng, in fact, coordinates Chinese drug-pushing cannot be independently corroborated at this time. Since the 1974 publication of Deacon's account, however, Keng was elevated to the Politburo, China's highest political body, in August 1977. In August 1978, he toured some of the prime marijuana-growing regions of the Caribbean, including Jamaica. Keng also stopped in the island of Malta, the old base of the drug-pushing Maltese order, for unexplained reasons, on his return home.

The renowned Mr. Stanley Ho, mentioned above, who as controller of Macao gambling is the proprietor of what law enforcement agencies consider the world's dirtiest financial operation, is a bona fide member of Hong Kong's social elite. Macao's relationship to Peking became a public scandal in 1974, when the revolutionary Portuguese government offered to cede the colony to PRC. The Peking government refused, because Macao is much more useful to Peking as a source of illicit foreign exchange earnings through opium and other forms of smuggling than as a people's commune. (6)

Only in rare instances have the links between the Hong Kong opium firms, British intelligence, and the Chinese Communist Intelligence Service come to public light. Where they have, the results put the best pulp thrillers to shame. One illustration is the story of the luckless Rennie family, Scots traders who sold their operation to Jardine Matheson in 1975. The Rennies are old Africa and Asia hands both in merchant ventures and the British colonial service, with major operations in South Africa, through Rennies Consolidated Holdings Ltd. (7) A relative, Sir John Rennie, resigned as head of Britain's foreign secret intelligence organization DI6. Normally the identity of the chief of DI6 — "M" in the James Bond movies — is one of Britain's best-guarded secrets. But Rennie's identity came to light after his son, Charles Tatham Ogilvy Rennie, was arrested for heroin trafficking in London on January 15,1973. Official British press censorship, the infamous "D-notices" sent to newspaper editors, delayed press coverage of the blue-blooded drug bust until February 7, 1973, when London's Evening Standard reported that "the previously unnamed son of the head of DI6, who is facing drugs charges in London, is Charles Tatham Ogilvy Rennie."

Significantly, on the same day West Germany's Stern magazine blew Sir John Rennie's cover — in a dispatch from Hong Kong, the base of the Rennie family's business partners, Jardine Matheson. Stern magazine's information could have come either from Rennie family channels through Jardine Matheson, or through the Chinese Secret Service, or both. According to a Chinese Communist intelligence source cited by a British author, "In the case of Sir John Rennie I believe the Chinese were so cautious that they refused to accept their own suspicion (that Rennie was head of DI6) for a long time. Confirmation finally came when Sir John's son was arrested. They did not have far to look as his son's wife used Gerrard Street — almost a 100 percent Chinese quarter of London — as a rendezvous for obtaining Chinese heroin." The British author, Richard Deacon, commented, "I suspect that some of the leakages to the press of this information came from the Chinese, who have a very high regard for the British Secret Service."

Of course, nothing is proven; British author Deacon guards his version of this story with an elaborate description of the Chinese Communist Intelligence Service's purported method of discovering the chiefs of British intelligence branches through a careful reading of Who's Who. Nonetheless, we have the fact that the head of DI6 was a member of a family with intimate business ties to the core of the Hong Kong drug traffic; that his son dealt in narcotics through Peking intelligence agents in London; and that the ultimate public announcement of his son's arrest came via Hong Kong sources, either British or Chinese.

More recent events provide a useful epilogue. On September 2, 1978, the London Economist reported, "One after another, top South African businessmen have been falling foul of the country's strict foreign exchange laws. This week's man in the spotlight was Mr Charles Fiddian Green, chief executive of the country's leading transport conglomerate, Rennies ... He was convicted of currency offenses on Aug. 29 and fined Rand 10,000.

"Last week Mr Gordon Rennie (Sir John's relative and Rennie Consolidated chairman) cut his throat and wrists after police came to talk to him. He went to hospital and was charged with currency offenses. Four other Rennies executives have been questioned by police; another has already been charged with currency smuggling; and two, including Mr Laurence Parry, have been sacked after apparently leaving the country." (8)

Also significant is the implication of Laurence Parry in the recent Rennies scandal; Parry was chief of Rennies Holiday Inn franchise in Swaziland and Lesotho, where rich South Africans, spend weekends gambling and watching fleshy floorshows that are prohibited in puritan South Africa. Rennies, since 1975 a 53 percent owned subsidiary of Jardine Matheson, has an almost classical dirty money profile, apart from its casino-gambling and fleshpot operations. Rennie's subsidiary in the security field, Fidelity Guards, is South Africa's leader in armored car services and payroll preparations, including its own computer facilities — tailor-made for the currency smuggling operations of which Rennies has just been accused. In addition, Rennies owns its own air and cargo shipping facilities, making it the leading transport group in South Africa. (9)

At the time of Rennies' merger with Jardine Matheson, South Africa's magazine Management wrote, "For both, it's a getting together of like people, like lifestyles, and remarkably similar management philosophies. Good solid Scots tradition abounds in both groups." Apart from its affinity to the leading Hong Kong dynasty, Rennies is part of the South African mining establishment. Two of its board members, the just-arrested Charles Fiddian-Green and Fred G. Wolmarans, were previously senior officials of Consolidated Gold Fields of South Africa. Consolidated Gold, as quoted extensively in Section 4 above, wrote the book on currency smuggling — literally.

THE MONEY LINKS

The PRC's financial intimacy with Hong Kong is a matter of public record. (Less public is the PRC's relationship to the Bangkok connection noted above, the seven-year residency of drug financier Chin Sophonpanich in Peking.)

The PRC's roughly $3 billion in foreign exchange reserves are banked through HongShang, Standard and Chartered Bank, and other British banks through Hong Kong. In 1978 Peking began large purchases of gold through the Hong Kong gold market, according to the London Economist's Financial Report. (10)

The International Currency Review reported in September 1978: "China's increasingly open economic policies are likely to have a further impact on other Hong Kong balance-of-payments items . . . the Bank of China's announcement in early July that the 13 Communist-owned banks in Hong Kong would be able to purchase bullion, deventures and possibly equities, should generate further hard currency revenue for Hong Kong's financial community — and will also probably encourage a great deal of additional business. . . . The Chinese Government's initiative in this connection represents one of several financial liberalizing measures recently implemented by Peking. In June, for example, the Bank of China and the Vanying Bank issued guarantees for a real estate project in Tsuen Warn, located in the new territories." (11)

Peking's opium weapon

Gold trading, banking, property, gambling — and roughly half of Peking's foreign trade. That is the bottom line of the Peking investment in Hong Kong. Since the early 1950s, it was the official view of American law enforcement agencies that Hong Kong was the main outlet for heroin grown in Red China. In 1961, just before the Kennedy Administration kicked him out, U.S. Narcotics

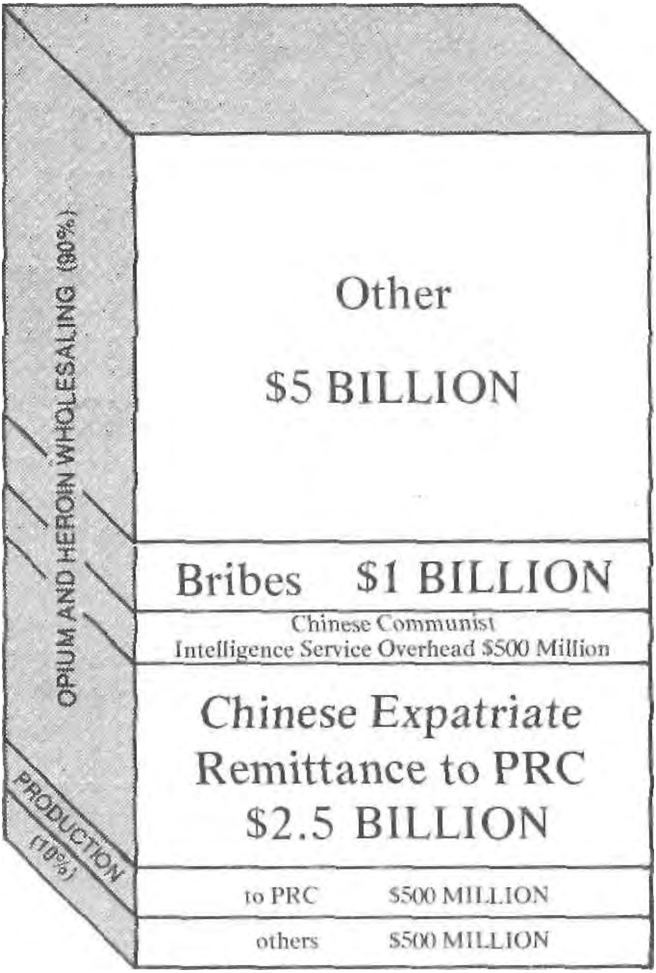

Figure 5

Hong Kong and Peking: Sharing the Drug Take

Roughly $10 billion annually passes into and out of Hong Kong as payments related to the production and wholesaling of illegal opium. Of this, something under half is paid to or at the disposal of the People's Republic of China. The involvement of the Chinese Communist Intelligence Service in the dope trade may be considered self-financing, at a minimum; the Chinese also receive something on the order of a $.5 billion directly for opium-growing. By far the largest part of Peking's drug-take assumes the form of remittances to the mainland by overseas expatriate Chinese, the bulk of this $2.5 billion accounted for by those Ch'ao Chou drug-financiers and others in the Southeast Asian orbit of Britain's Hongkong and Shanghai Bank.

Bureau Chief Harry Anslinger stated, "One primary outlet for the Red Chinese traffic has been Hong Kong." 02)

The police blotter's record of Red Chinese opium traffic through Hong Kong is comprehensive. Even the British and Hong Kong police have been forced, on occasion, to admit this is the case. Scotland Yard attributed a large quantity of heroin seized in a 1969 bust in London's West End to PRC shipments through Hong Kong. On Oct. 15,1970, the chief of Hong Kong's notoriously corrupt narcotics bureau, Shih Tieh-pi, told a press conference that his force had confiscated 10,500 pounds of raw opium, 320 pounds of heroin, and 250 pounds of morphine, all of Red Chinese origin, during 1969. The quantities just cited compare dramatically with the largest-ever U.S. bust of heroin — the so-called French Connection bust involved a mere 100 kilograms. (13)

Without knowing the quality of the heroin seized, or the veracity of Mr. Shih Tieh-pi, comparisons are difficult. But if the 320 pounds of heroin seized so close to the original source were fairly pure, which is likely, and the rule of thumb applies that roughly one-tenth of illegal narcotics shipped are seized by police — then 3,200 pounds of heroin passed through Hong Kong in 1969. That is roughly what American narcotics addicts consumed in 1969.

The PRC's Hong Kong connection is not a matter of convenience, but the expression of a quarter-century-long policy agreement between the Peking government and the highest levels of the British oligarchy. The best-known source for the unexpurgated views of China's elite is Al Ahram editor Mohammed Heikal. Heikal reported the following 1965 conversation between Nasser and visiting PRC Prime Minister Chou En-lai:

"One of the most remarkable statements Chou En-lai made on that evening (June 23, 1965 — ed.) during our discussion of the demoralization of American soldiers was that: 'Some of them are trying opium and we are helping them. We are planting the best kinds of poppies especially for the American soldiers in Vietnam.' Nasser appeared to be somewhat disturbed, but Chou continued: 'We want them to maintain a large army in Vietnam that will serve us as a hostage, and we wish to demoralize the troops. The effect of this demoralization on the United States will be much greater than anyone can imagine.' Nasser thought that Chou might be exaggerating somewhat, but Chou's concept was clear. He left no doubt that this was his course of action." (14)

The Soviet government newspaper Isvestia of Feb. 17, 1978 cited a Chou En-lai speech in Wuhan in 1952 elaborating the same policy. According to Isvestia, the Chinese Prime Minister said:

"We are trying in every way to support the creation of opium poppy plants. From the standpoint of the revolution, opium is one of the means of helping the revolutionary cause and must be used actively. If the question is approached from a class standpoint, opium is one of the most powerful sorts of weapons of the proletarian revolution. ... It is extremely important for us to export morphine and heroin in big quantities, use them to weaken the combat strength of the enemy and destroy the enemy without entering into war with him."

Whether or not the Soviet citation is accurate, the views expressed coincide with those reported by observers such as Heikal, who is far from pro-Soviet or anti-PRC, and conform to the practice of the PRC and its secret service, the CCIS.

Ironically, the British were quick to point an accusing finger at the PRC when it benefitted their policy, during the Korean War. In 1950, the British Mission to the United Nations made public a PRC offer to sell 500 tons of opium grown in Jehol (North China) and in storage in Canton, to a firm in Hong Kong. The British Mission said that the offer had been refused.

FROM HONG KONG

Until the "China Card" strategic policy found favor in Washington under Kissinger, the official American view, among others, was that the PRC grew and exported large quantities of opium. Harry Anslinger, the first chief of the U.S. Federal Bureau of Narcotics, said in 1961: "Heroin made in Chinese factories out of poppies grown in China is smuggled into Hong Kong and onto freighters and planes to Malaysia, Macao, the Philippines, the Hawaiian Islands, the United States, or, going the other direction, India, Egypt, Africa, and Europe. A prime 'target area' in the United States was California. The Los Angeles area alone probably received 40 percent of the smuggled contraband from China's heroin and morphine plants. The syndicate crowd does not object to dealing with the Reds as long as the profits are big in terms of dollars." (15)

U.S. investigators have only succeeded in putting heat on the Hong Kong authorities, provoking token busts of local drug operations. The last major scandal raked up by American authorities — immediately before the "opening to Peking" slammed the lid down on further action — came in 1973, when U.S. Congressman Lester Wolff visited Hong Kong on behalf of the House Select Committee on Drug Abuse. Citing the Nixon Administration's effective crackdown on Turkish heroin entering the U.S. East Coast through the so-called French Connection in Marseilles, Wolff charged, "All the narcotics entering the United States must be coming from somewhere else, the center of which is Hong Kong." (16)

The Japanese authorities held the same view. Susai Sugahara, head of the Japanese Narcotics Bureau, maintained that China was the largest opium producer in the world. Taking the export figure Sugahara cited, the Soviet commentator V. Ovchinnikov estimated in 1964 that one-third of PRC opium production went to Japan. According to the Japanese Narcotics Bureau, the PRC was the source of the major influx of opium into Japan that began in the early 1950s, producing an estimated 40,000 addicts as of 1953. (17)

In 1969, the Soviet monthly Liternatura Gazyeta estimated Chinese opium export earnings at $500 to $800 million per annum. (18) There is no way to confirm this report, and Soviet estimates (as well as Taiwanese) of the size of the PRC's opium crop unquestionably exaggerate in many instances. However, there is a strong element of credibility in the 1969 Soviet report: the $500 to $800 million is within the range of the $1 billion estimate developed independently (see Section 2) for the primary wholesaling revenue of the Far Eastern opium traffic. The Soviet estimate corresponds closely to what may be readily deduced from hard law enforcement agency data.

Why has no action been taken against Hong Kong, when the evidence is so well known? There are two reasons. First, no

American law enforcement or intelligence agency has ever had operational access to Hong Kong. Hong Kong, as British territory, was strictly off limits to American investigators. To our direct knowledge, American intelligence never tries to circumvent this feature of the "special relationship" between Britain and the United States. Secondly, the courageous work of Harry Anslinger and other American narcotics officials did succeed in putting some heat on the rotten little island. The British seizures of narcotics cited earlier are an indirect result of the pressure applied, in the context of Nixon's war against drugs.

The more important reason is that, to a great extent, the actual refining of heroin — which moved lock, stock, and barrel to Hong Kong from Shanghai after the Communist takeover in 1949 — is no longer done in Hong Kong. Rather, Hong Kong's importance is overwhelmingly in the sphere of dirty money operations, and secondarily in transshipment of heroin. The great shift of the production-refining cycle from the Shanghai to Hong Kong route to the Golden Triangle (including substantial portions of China's Yunnan province) occurred in the context of the Vietnam War. Vietnam, which Britain successfully advised the United States to enter, provided a gigantic captive market with easy access from the Burmese-Thai-Laotian growing areas, some of which had already grown substantial quantities of opium during the British colonial period.

For whatever reason, American intelligence ignored field reports throughout the 1960s that indicated a gigantic step-up of Peking's narcotics trafficking. One of the most extraordinary of the stories that got lost in the intelligence bureaucracy involved an airfield in northern Laos, 75 miles south of the PRC border, built by PRC troops during the summer of 1964. According to American intelligence sources, the airfield appeared in Phong Sally province, between Luang Prabang, Thailand's religious capital, and the border of Red China's Yunnan province. Meo guerrillas operating in the area under American direction discovered the Chinese building the airstrip far into Laotian territory, and reported back in June 1964. However, the intelligence chain-of-command showed little interest in those reports. An enterprising mercenary pilot flying a T-28 aircraft obtained clear-as-daylight reconnaissance photographs of the airfield, including shots of Chinese soldiers pushing wheelbarrows. The photographs were duly sent through channels, where they disappeared. American officers, however, believed that the airstrip was intended to link up with an asphalt highway the Chinese had been building from Yunnan province into northern Laos for some time. Initially, thinking among American intelligence officers centered on the possibility that the airstrip had been intended as a forward fighter base for PRC involvement in the Indochinese conflict. Only later, when no Chinese fighters appeared, did the truth emerge: the Chinese road and connected airstrip were built to ship opium out of Yunnan province.

American investigators, who have always viewed the drug traffic from the bottom levels upward, never "cracked" the controlling financial relationship that Hong Kong exercises over the traffic.

The Ch'ao Chou connection

The key to the Far Eastern drug traffic — the link that ties the entire operational picture together — is the Chinese expatriate connection. As noted in Section 3, law enforcement investigators have known for years what the Ch'ao Chou Chinese networks were up to. But the law enforcement agencies never followed through the maze of financial connections: to do so would have violated standing American intelligence agreements with British intelligence.

Crucial clues to the inner operation of drug traffic — the joint operations of the Chinese Communist Intelligence Service (CCIS), British intelligence, and Chinese and British finance — have been gathering dust in police files for years. One such clue is the 1972 arrest of a Chinese Communist Party official in Djakarta, the Indonesian capital, in 1972. The Indonesian authorities arrested a Ch'ao Chou Chinese, complete with Chinese Communist Party card and other documentary evidence, in possession of 30 kilograms of heroin — worth between $60 and $150 million in terms of American street value, depending on the quality. The investigation, employing the combined efforts of Indonesian and American drug enforcement officials, showed that the purpose of the heroin imports was the financing of the Indonesian Communist Party (PKI) through the creation of a drug ring in Djakarta. (19)

An interview by a U.S. Labor Party investigator with a Malaysian intelligence source made in November 1978 is worth printing in full here for the insight it gives into this particular type of operation:

> Source: It is definitely a fact that China distributes narcotics to its fraternal Communist parties in Southeast Asia as a means or raising funds for their activities. The most recent case is that of North Korea. Their diplomats have been kicked out of several European countries for smuggling and distributing heroin. Opium is not grown in North Korea. It is obviously given to them by the Chinese. In Singapore Communist agents were reported selling narcotics to American students at the American school for lunch money. Imagine, they were giving fixes out for 20 or 30 cents — just to get the kids hooked for their return to the U.S.
>
> Question: Can you substantiate that?
>
> Source: It's on the Singapore official record. There is more information at the local Kiwanis Club. They keep a file on narcotics. Also there was a DFA report written on how the PRC distributes narcotics through local party functionaries in the region. The report was never released but photostats exist.
>
> Question: There is a lot of accumulated evidence that the Hongkong and Shanghai Bank is at the center of the entire Far Eastern narcotics trade.
>
> Source: HongShang is the largest bank in the region and particularly in Singapore. China's biggest agent is Pang Hock-lim. He is instrumental in trafficking Chinese opium into India, Thailand, Singapore, and Malaysia.
>
> Question: Has he been arrested?

> Source: Sure. He's been arrested plenty of times but every time a fix is made and he is released.
>
> Question: Who makes the fix?
>
> Source: He's directly linked with the Hongkong and Shanghai Bank. That's a fact.

A handful of similar incidents are on record. At the same time, American policy busted a Filipino diplomat carrying seven pounds of pure Number Four white heroin in his country's diplomatic pouch. He had been followed from the Philippines to a New York City hotel room. His contact man, arrested with him, was a Ch'ao Chou Chinese.

One of the very few things that American intelligence knows about the CCIS is that the majority of its operatives are ethnic Ch'ao Chou. The Ch'ao Chou — as in the case of leading Bangkok banker Chen Sophonpanich — are also the leading element in the expatriate Chinese community involved in the drug traffic. (20)

Published Soviet material documents the spider's web of links between the Peking government and expatriate Chinese; the cited M. A. Andreyev's recent book, Overseas Chinese Bourgeoisie — A Peking Tool in Southeast Asia, is the most comprehensive Soviet source available. What the Soviets either do not know, or have not chosen to publish, is that joint Chinese expatriate-British financial operations in the world narcotics traffic hold the entire stpucture of Chinese foreign intelligence together.

The Chinese expatriate population's close ties to the Peking regime are well documented. According to a British author writing in 1965, two-thirds of the Chinese expatriates in Southeast Asia supported the Peking regime, and only one-third Taiwan. (21) American authors like A. Doak Barnett have drawn the same conclusion. (22) These impressive figures are the result of assiduous cultivation of such ties on the part of the Peking government.

Peking's insistence on the continuity of ties between the 12 million Chinese residing abroad and the Great Han motherland is a matter of public record, and achieved notoriety through such incidents as the recent border disputes with Vietnam.

Andreyev complains, "Under the 1954 Constitution the overseas Chinese have 30 representatives in the National People's Congress, the highest legislative organ in China. ... In 1953, representatives of overseas Chinese supporting the people's democratic system and actively opposing the Chiang Kai-shek regime met in Peking, where they had a preliminary discussion on the procedure for nominating deputies to the National People's Congress from the Overseas Chinese. . . An enlarged sitting of the Overseas Chinese Affairs Committee, held in Peking in July 1954, was attended by 195 representatives of Chinese living in different countries. This meeting delegated 30 representatives of the overseas Chinese to the National People's Congress." (23) At that time, the Chairman of the Overseas Chinese Affairs Committee declared that "no one can rupture the bonds linking overseas Chinese with their homeland. China is the motherland of all overseas Chinese." Peking policy, as stated publicly, has not changed through to the present.

Andreyev documents a complex, tightly knit web of Peking connections to the expatriate Chinese, including foreign investment, trade, and, perhaps most important, expatriate remittances to relatives in the PRC. Andreyev writes, "By agreement with the Bank of China, two British banks — the Hong Kong and Shanghai Banking Corporation and the Chartered Bank — with their large network of branches in Southeast Asia — handle the remittances of overseas Chinese to China." (24)

The system of remittances from Chinese residents abroad to families on the mainland, and the more recent system of joint investments between the Peking regime and Chinese expatriates, are not only a major source of foreign exchange for China; they are the financial infrastructure of Chinese secret intelligence. The network of financial ties between Peking and the expatriates overlaps the networks that control the wholesale drug trade in the Golden Triangle.

Several examples make this conclusion inevitable. One is the cited fact that the biggest dope financier in the region, Bangkok Bank chief Chin Sophonpanich, fled a fraud charge in Thailand and spent the next seven years in Peking; since his return, Sophonpanich has kept up close contact with Peking. But the most compelling evidence is the structure of the remittances transfers which — as noted — channel through the Hongkong and Shanghai Bank.

The cited Soviet commentator argues that the standard estimates of the flow of remittances back to China, which run to a few tens of millions of dollars a year, are grossly inadequate. "Most of these evaluations," Andreyev wrote, "are based on at least three assumptions. The first is that all the foreign exchange and commodities are sent via Hong Kong. Actually, this is not true. In particular, this assumption ignores Macao, through which pass considerable quantities of overseas Chinese capital. Moreover, in Southeast Asia and Hong Kong there are a number of official PRC agencies that have the possibility of secretly sending large sums of money directly to Peking. Considerable possibilities are opened for this by China's commercial dealings with Southeast Asian countries, and Peking, evidently, uses these possibilities." (25)

Andreyev continued, "Lastly, along the poorly controlled Sino-Burmese border there, probably, are loopholes through which considerable material values can drain to the PRC, at least from the countries in the Indochinese Peninsula. This is borne out by the flow of gold to China across that border." (26)

That report — matching the earlier-cited Isvestia estimate that the PRC's opium earnings were $500 to $800 million — is entirely credible, when matched to related evidence. This is in the general range of what the PRC's "take" should be if our earlier chain of evidence holds up. The Burmese border area is the ultimate destination of much of the gold that passes through the HongShang's gold market in Hong Kong, through the myriad of small Chinese banks. (With the 13 PRC-owned banks in Hong Kong now operating in the gold market, the PRC will be able to take an additional cut, in the form of trading commissions on gold that it will ultimately receive as payment for opium.)

Red China not only receives gold across the Yunnan province border in the Golden Triangle in return for opium going out, but indirectly intervenes among the competing opium warlord factions in Burma itself. During the early 1970s, the PRC armed the so-called White Flag Communist Party under the command of Ping Chia-hsiang, supporting Ping's move to take over prime opium-growing areas in the neighborhood of the Suloween River. (27)

China is one primary factor in the opium growing regions; Britain is the other. Most of the Burmese opium-growing regions are subject to genial competition between the Maoist-controlled White Flag Communist Party and other armed gangs, and Self-Defense Forces under the control of British-trained and still British-influenced Burmese security forces. Anglo-Chinese cooperation on the Burmese border is one of the biggest scandals in the area.

Forging the Hong Kong-Peking link

Until the Sino-Soviet split period, the ties that bound the expatriate Chinese to the mainland were the strongest of all: family. This link was expressed in the large-scale transmission of remittances back to families on the mainland. According to the limited available data, the largest volume of such remittances, for which special remittance transfer agencies had been created, was to the small city of Swatow on the northern Chinese coast; Swatow is the home city of the Ch'ao Chou Chinese. The Ch'ao Chou, seafaring and commercial people with a special dialect, evidently maintained the closest family links with the mainland. That is the background to the wholesale recruitment of expatriate Ch'ao Chou Chinese into Chinese secret intelligence during the postwar period. (28)

In the late 1950s, the volume of reported remittances dropped off sharply. Instead of paying remittances directly to relatives, expatriate Chinese invested heavily in both mainland China and in foreign joint ventures with the Peking government. The flow of remittances was capitalized in joint ventures with Peking, and relatives back home received dividends from these investments.

The volume of remittances is given in the following table:

1950	39.0
1951	29.1
1952	19.2
1953	29.2
1954	30.2
1955	30.1
1956	30.2
1957	27.4
1958	15.6
1959	9.1
1960	8.6
1961	8.4
1962	8.4
1963	8.4
1964	8.4

(Based on published data for Thailand, Malaysia, and Singapore, projected to include the rest of Southeast Asia.)

(Source: Andreyev, Overseas Chinese Bourgeoisie: A Peking Tool in Southeast Asia.)

The point of decline of remittances (that is, legal remittances, as reported above) coincides with Peking's orientation to joint investments with expatriate Chinese. That policy goes back to 1951, when the South China Enterprise Company, the forerunner of the present Overseas Chinese Investment Corporation, sold 100,000 shares to Chinese businessmen in Hong Kong and Macao. However, until 1957, the attractions for such investors were limited; overseas Chinese investment could only find opportunities in agriculture, the least profitable sector of the economy.

But in 1957 new regulations came into effect that not only guaranteed a 12 percent dividend investment, against a normal 8 percent dividend in ordinary mixed companies. The Peking government also made provision for repatriation of part of the profits to the overseas Chinese investor.

By the mid-1950s, this capital was concentrated in the Overseas Chinese Industrial Construction Company and related companies, which merged into the Overseas Chinese Investment Corporation (OCIC) in 1955, with initial capitalization of $50 million. The board of directors of the OCIC included leading Chinese businessmen resident in Southeast Asia. By 1966, there were 140 businesses under the OCIC aegis operating in China. (29)

By the mid-1960s, however, the policy of using the hard currency of expatriate Chinese to invest in China gave way to a much more efficient form of raising vitally needed foreign exchange. Peking took a stake in the expatriate Chinese community's expanding operations in drug-pushing and dirty money operations, centering on the boomtown in Hong Kong. The result is the flagrant cohabitation between London and Peking noted in Section 4. (30)

THE $2.5 BILLION TAKE

Despite the overwhelming weight of evidence showing Peking's integration into the Southeast Asian drug trade, there is no way to "prove" that the $1.3 billion financial reflow into the PRC during 1977 estimated by Chase Manhattan and the projected $2.5 billion flow during 1978 represent the revenues of the traffic. However, it can be demonstrated to the satisfaction of the reader that this estimate is entirely consistent with all the previous data.

By two independent types of estimate, our earlier data (Section 3) showed that the cash flow of the Far East drug trade broke down as follows:

Primary wholesaling of opium and heroin (Golden Triangle plus secondary PRC production)	$1 billion
Secondary wholesaling of opiates to West (20 percent cash reflow of $25 billion world opium/heroin market to Far East)	$5 billion
Retail opiates consumption in Far East	$3-4 billion

Assuming that the PRC's primary wholesaling profits are $500 million, or half of the total — the lower range of apparently accurate Soviet estimates — then the PRC's secondary wholesaling profits would be in the ratio of 5 to 1 with respect to the first figure, or $2.5 billion. That is the Chase Manhattan figure reported above. Since the PRC is undertaking major official investments in Hong Kong this year, it is fair to assume that it would repatriate illegal profits to be re-invested in legal enterprises to a greater extent than during 1977, when the reflow back to Peking was only $1.3 billion.

Of course, the above calculations are hypothetical, but they do indicate that the $2.5 billion net revenue suggested by the Chase Manhattan figure is well within the range of accuracy.

The same type of range can be obtained through an entirely different chain of reasoning. The Soviet economist Andreyev, using published sources of area governments, calculated that total expatriate Chinese capital flow into China amounted to $1.66 billion in the years 1950-64 inclusive. Up through this period, the primary financial relationship between the PRC and expatriate Chinese was in the form of foreign investment inside China, through such vehicles as the Overseas Chinese Investment Corporation, as noted above. It is documented that after 1964, PRC policy shifted into a high-gear "Opium War in Reverse" posture, to use the phrase of British author Richard Deacon. At this time, Chou En-lai made his infamous confession to Nasser.

As noted, the financial relationship shifted into joint ventures in Southeast Asia between PRC-owned institutions and expatriate Chinese, with a heavy concentration in narcotics traffic and related activities.

Assume that the identical rate of expatriate Chinese financial support continued during the years 1965-78 in this form of investment, augmented only by a 10 percent inflation factor, highly conservative for the area. The aggregate investment during 1965-78 would amount to $6.3 billion, in joint operations with the PRC. Assume a 40 percent annual profit margin on this investment, much lower than profits on the drug trade, but in the middle of the range of the 30-50 percent figure given above for smugglers' profits in the area. The annual income from this investment would be precisely $2.5 billion.

The big move into Hong Kong transformed Red China from a mere producer of opium, into Britain's international partner in the distribution, and later the financing, of the opium trade in the Far East — if not elsewhere. (The Ch'ao Chou Chinese arrested in a New York hotel room with a Philippine diplomat and seven pounds of heroin carried the business card of the local New York Ch'ao Chou fraternal association.)

America's disastrous involvement in Vietnam gave the Mao regime the opportunity to make it big in the world of narcotics, and Peking jumped in — and into Hong Kong — with both feet. America paid the price of a skyrocketing rate of narcotics addiction. Nonetheless, the late 1960s were only a period of transition, the fulfillment of a strategic design sketched out between Mao Tse-tung and the British old-line opium families in the early 1940s. That agreement, which united the highest level of British intelligence and finance with the Peking leadership, we turn to in the next section.

7

How the Royal Institute of International Affairs Runs Drugs and Dirty Money

Now we will take the reader up through the chain of command of the world drug and dirty money business, to the top level of political control: to Chatham House, St. James Square, London, the headquarters of the Royal Institute of International Affairs. We have inspected the books of Drugs, Incorporated, met the operating personnel, visited its subsidiaries in Hong Kong, Bangkok, and Peking, as well as its farms and factories in the Golden Triangle, on the common border of Burma, Laos, Thailand, and the People's Republic of China. The Far East drug traffic emerges as a single business operation, a British-Chinese joint venture, in which Britain is the senior partner.

It is obvious, by now, that an operation of this scope could not exist without the political approval of the British government, nor without the gigantic supporting facilities of the world's offshore credit markets, the world's gold and diamonds trade, and "hands-on" management of the retail distribution, or organized crime aspects of the operation.

The next step is an introduction to the Board of Directors of Drugs, Incorporated, and an overview of their multifarious ties to the Far East opium growing and wholesaling operation, the offshore dirty money operations, gold and diamonds mining and distribution, the Canadian connection, the Zionist Lobby dirty money installations, and the top levels of British policy-making.

The Hongkong and Shanghai Bank is not an independent malefactor, but a special operation of the British oligarchy's top banks, specializing in the Far Eastern drug traffic. The Hongkong and Shanghai Bank's governing body, the London Committee, is the British oligarchy's delegated group assigned to the Far East drug traffic.

More specifically, it is an economic warfare operation. Two of its directors, J.H. Keswick — of the family that founded Jardine Matheson in 1828 to trade opium — and J.K. Swire — of the Swire family of hereditary opium traders — were senior officials in Britain's Ministry of Economic War during World War II. Another senior official of that Ministry is Sir Mark Turner, the chairman of Rio Tinto Zinc, the HongShang's partner in numerous fields, including gold operations. Turner is now a key figure in the Royal Institute of International Affairs, founded by Lord Milner, an earlier chairman of Rio Tinto Zinc.

What we will show here is that the Royal Institute of International Affairs (RIIA) and its leading personnel control not only the Far Eastern drug traffic but every important dirty money operation on the surface of the globe.

The next section will further document the British monarchy's control of the Canadian banks and corporations, the same installations responsible for channeling drugs into and illegal funds out of the United States. It demonstrates that the direct agency of control over Canada's huge financial warfare apparatus is the Canadian Institute of International Affairs (CIIA), a mock-up of Britain's RIIA, created by the RIIA in the first place. Included in the Canadian operation are the Bank of Nova Scotia's domination of Canada's gold market, Canadian banks' huge role in Caribbean Silver Triangle dirty money operations, and — most important — the direct links between the hard-core Far East drug wholesalers, and the Canadian institutions that have participated in the wholesale drug traffic on the North American continent since the closing days of Prohibition. Through the

Canadian outpost of the British monarchy, the drug traders close the circle between the Keswick family of Hong Kong, the founders of Jardine Matheson in 1828, and the Bronfman family, the immediate sponsors of the top levels of so-called organized crime in the United States.

From their base in the $200 billion dirty money traffic, the institutions assembled in force on the leading committees of the RIIA dominate:

1) All of Britain's top commercial banks directly;

2) Both big British oil companies, British Petroleum and Royal Dutch Shell directly;

3) All the leading British merchant banks, directly or indirectly;

4) The world gold and diamonds trade;

5) Every leading old-line opium trading firm, including the P&O Steamship Company, Jardine Matheson, John Swire and Sons, and Charterhouse Japhet, directly.

GOAL: REBUILD THE EMPIRE

Now that the command structure of the worldwide operation is evident, we are going to examine the content of the Royal Institute of International Affairs' subversive activities, following through the careers of some of its leading operatives — including Sir John Henry Keswick, member of the family which controls the Hongkong and Shanghai Bank, and from the old Jardine Matheson opium trading firm; and the current chairman of the Council of the RIIA, Lord Humphrey Trevelyan, member of the board of directors of HongShang's gold-smuggling subsidiary, the British Bank of the Middle East. These are the men who created the Peking Connection in its modern form.

According to the Charter of the RIIA published in 1920, the Royal Institute of International Affairs is "an unofficial and non-political body," whose object is "to advance the sciences of international politics, economics, and jurisprudence," to "provide and maintain means of information upon international questions," and "to promote the study and investigation of such questions." Few times in the history of the written word have so many lies appeared in so few lines.

However, a concise summary of the RIIA's purposes appears in its de facto founding document, Cecil Rhodes's 1877 bequest. Rhodes, who founded both the gold and diamond mining empire that still dominates world markets under the aegis of Anglo-American and De Beers, and also founded the dope-trading-Standard Bank (the African partner of the Asian-based Chartered Bank, since merged), is the starting point for the present form of the disease. Rhodes left his wealth to the Rhodes Trust, administered by Lord Milner. Milner's collection of Ocxford trainees, called the "Milner Kindergarten," made up most of the 1916 Lloyd George government, and formed the RIIA at a meeting in Versailles on May 30,1919.

Rhodes's 1877 will was:

> To establish a trust, to and for the establishment and promotion and development of a secret society, the true aim and object whereof shall be the extension of British rule throughout the world, the perfecting of a system of emigration from the United Kingdom and the colonization by British subjects of all lands wherein the means of livelihood are attainable by energy, labor, and enterprise, and especially the occupation by British settlers of the entire continent of Africa, the Holy Land, the valley of the Euphrates, the islands of Cyprus and Candia, the whole of South America, the islands of the Pacific not heretofore possessed by Great Britain, the whole of the Malay Archipelago, the seaboard of China and Japan, the ultimate recovery of the United States of America as an integral part of the British Empire, the consolidation of the whole Empire, the inauguration of a system of colonial representation in the Imperial Parliament which may tend to weld together the disjointed members of the Empire, and finally, the foundation of so great a power as to hereafter render wars impossible and promote the best interests of humanity. (1) (emphasis added)

The secret society concept was passed on by Milner, Rhodes's successor as High Commissioner in South Africa, through

Milner's trainees Lionel Curtis (of the Round Table Group), and Lord Robert Cecil — whose family dates back to the Genoa-Amsterdam coup against Elizabethan humanism in 1601. Curtis and Cecil both participated in the May 1919 meeting at Versailles which founded the RIIA.

The Royal Institute for International Affairs is the secret society.

1949: The British-Peking deal

Let us backtrack, for a moment, to the point of origin of the London-Peking joint drug-running venture in the Far East, the wartime deal between the RIIA and Chou En-lai. Detailed records of the relevant years have recently been made available. In August 1978, the U.S. State Department released 1,300 pages of documents to the public dealing with American diplomacy in China at the time of the Maoist takeover. (2) From the British side, the RIIA in 1977 released its own records of its wartime and postwar operations group in the region, the Far East Committee — the real British Foreign Office. (3)

Both sets of documents yield the same interpretation: the creation of the People's Republic of China included an alliance between the British dope-runners and the Chinese dope-runners. This was negotiated from the British side by Sir John Henry Keswick and from the Chinese side by Chou En-lai. The Chinese team also prominently included top figures in the opium trade, such as the Bank of China's Chi Ch'ao-ting, Shanghai Commercial Bank's K.P. Chen (who also headed the Chinese wing of the Institute for Pacific Relations), and elements of the so-called Green Gangs. The Green Gangs, which could be called the Chinese mafia, ran the opium trade not only in the Far East but through the far-flung networks of the Chinese expatriate community.

From both the British and the Chinese side, the alliance was explicitly against the United States. The Chinese knew it, and said so, the British knew it, and said so, and American diplomats cabled home that the United States had been shafted. (4)

When the top representatives of Britain's RIIA began soundings in the Chinese Communist stronghold of Yenan and at Chou En-lai's Chungking legation during the World War II period, they had reasons dating back a century to expect results. China lost the opium wars because such a large section of officialdom had been corrupted through opium dependency.

But the credit for the re-creation of the alliance between Britain and the modern equivalent of the Triad gangs must go to Sir John Henry Keswick, the RIIA's man-on-the-spot at the British Embassy in Chungking during the crucial period of World War II. It is known that Keswick was in regular contact with Chou En-lai in his capacity as a prominent businessman and through his attachment to the British embassy in Chungking. Chou was in Chungking from 1937 through the 1940s. (5)

Keswick, of the hereditary drug-trading family that founded and still controls Jardine Matheson, also represented the RIIA and its sub-branch, the Institute for Pacific Relations, to the United States. (6) Sir John Henry is still Britain's number one man for China policy, Chairman of Britain's China Association, Vice-President of the Sino-British Trade Council, and a member of the Great Britain-China Committee. (His predecessor at the China Association from 1951-55 was John Kidston Swire, of the old opium-trading Swire family, who still sits on the London Committee of the HongShang.)

Two pieces of eyewitness testimony from Mao Tse-tung's wartime hideout in China's northern Yenan province bear comparison. The first is the report by Peter Vladimirov, the Soviet liaison to Mao's headquarters in Yenan during 1941-45. According to the Soviet-published Vladimirov Diaries, the Chinese Communist Party operating in Yenan grew opium for profit, not only for medicinal uses. Opium had been a major cash crop for Yenan before Mao's arrival; Vladimirov claimed that Mao continued the practice. The Soviet representative also suspected the CPC's chairman's close contact with American visitors connected to the Institute for Pacific Relations. (7)

A second account appeared in the January 1978 issue of International Affairs, the journal Of the RIIA:

> Victor Farmer, who was a director of Imperial Chemical Industries (China) and who in 1944 had recently returned from a visit to the Far East (stated): "I have met some (Chinese) Communists and their ideas are very open-minded. If you could get rid of this ultra-nationalist clique in the saddle at present in Chungking, and many Government officials are extremely broad-minded, I think that the way would be open for a compromise with the Communists; and an effective compromise." (8)

The view Farmer expressed on behalf of the RIIA's Far Eastern Committee had already surfaced in the United States through the committee's American branch, the Institute for Pacific Relations (IPR), the institution that produced the pro-Maoist group in the U.S. State Department centered around John Stuart Service and John Carter Vincent. Although the IPR included American citizens and was funded through the Rockefeller and Carnegie Foundations, it functioned exclusively as a branch of the RIIA and British policy-making. The IPR's two most prominent general secretaries, Edward Carter and William Holland, had extensive British pedigrees. Carter, whose reign as IPR chief lasted until 1946, was a leader of the international YMCA, while his successor Holland was a citizen of New Zealand until 1943 and a member of London's Royal Institute.

The dead giveaway on the IPR's British character is the organization's move to Canada subsequent to the 1950 McCarran Committee investigation, which mistook pro-British treason for pro-Communist treason. With hearty British cheers, the disgraced Institute for Pacific Relations moved to Canada.

Britain's support for the IPR was further expressed by the chairman of the RIIA's Far Eastern Group, Sir Andrew McFadyean (who in 1947 became the chairman of S.G. Warburg's, the merchant bank). In a 1952 letter he wrote: "The fact that I have criticized certain activities and certain officers of the IPR entitles me to say with greater emphasis, firstly that it would have been a useless body if it had not represented a wide variety of political views, and secondly that throughout my acquaintance with the Institute its governing body, while respecting the rights of free expression, has never encouraged or countenanced subversive views." (9)

Once in Canada, the IPR came under the official sponsorship of the Canadian Institute of International Affairs, the local RIIA subsidiary, and its chairman — now "honorary Chairman for Life" — Walter Lockhart Gordon. During the last 30 years, Gordon has been the most consistent North American apologist for Maoist China. Gordon currently has direct personal ties to Canada's "old China hands," including Dr. Paul Lin, Chester Ronning, and James Endicott. All three served as advisors to Chinese Premier Chou En-lai; Paul Lin's official duties as an aide to Chou terminated only in 1965. Lin, in turn, is a power in the expatriate Chinese community in Vancouver, the most important transshipment point for opium entering the United States.

The ties run back the other way across the Pacific as well. Gordon sponsored the initial founding of the Chinese People's Institute of Foreign Affairs in China, an official Red Chinese organization that currently maintains links with the Canadian Institute of International Affairs. Chester Ronning has been the Chancellor of the University of York in Canada; Walter Lockhart Gordon arranged funding for the Norman Bethune School at that university under Ronning's supervision, the most overtly pro-Maoist institution on the North American continent. That is the pedigree of the British-created, British-defended, and still British-run Institute for Pacific Relations. (10)

SQUEEZE PLAY

According to the RIIA's official account cited above, the RIIA-IPR's function at the close of World War II was to propose the John Service-John Keswick policy of fostering Maoism as the "alternative" to Britain's shrill insistence on her colonial rights in the area. Prime Minister Churchill still balked at the self-determination provisions of the Atlantic Charter, namely that Britain give up its Southeast Asian colonies. Anti-British feeling ran so high in the United States, the International Affairs study points out, that Henry Luce's Life magazine urged the British people "to stop fighting for the British Empire and fight for victory ... if you cling to the Empire at the expense of a United Nations victory you will lose the war because you will lose us." A poll taken in 1942 revealed that 56 percent of Americans questioned agreed that the British could rightly be described as "oppressors . . . because of the unfair advantage . . . they have taken of their colonial possessions."

The RIIA and the IPR's "alternative" posture was a retreat under fire from an imperial position in the Far East to an alliance with the Great Han chauvinists of the Communist Party of China. Any suggestion that an actual policy difference intervened between the "hidebound reactionary" Winston Churchill and the openly pro-Maoist Victor Farmer of the RIIA's Far Eastern Group, is made silly by the role of Jardine Matheson's John Henry Keswick.

Keswick was a prominent figure in the Shanghai International Settlements, of which his brother, Sir William Johnston Keswick, was chairman throughout the 1930s and until 1949. Britain had owned a chunk of the city of Shanghai by the treaty that ended the Second Opium War. The status of the Shanghai International Settlement was one of the major policy conflicts between Roosevelt and Churchill, since it represented a foreign colonial intrusion in an allied nation. Britain's concern for Shanghai may also have been motivated by the fact that it was the world's center for refining opium into heroin. Keswick and the refineries both picked up and moved to Hong Kong in 1949.

In January 1945, pro-Maoist Victor Farmer and John Henry Keswick (with Andrew McFadyean) together led Britain's delegation to the Institute for Pacific Relations's most important conference at Hot Springs, W. Va. Ten British officials went along in tow with the RIIA officials. The British delegation presented a softer front to the Americans than the Churchill government was then willing to officially concede. RIIA documents show that the queer combination of Chinese Communist Party apologist Victor Farmer and old-line opium trader John Keswick did the trick of mollifying the Americans.

"The general atmosphere here (at Hot Springs — ed.) is very much better than (at the last Institute for Pacific Relations conference at) Mont Tremblant. . . . There is much less disposition to twist British tails just for the fun of seeing how the animal reacts," McFadyean wrote back to the RIIA in relief. (11) American delegates included Treasury official Harry Dexter White, responsible for selling to the United States John Maynard Keynes's British blueprint for the International Monetary Fund.

Not until Mao's army marched into Shanghai in 1949 did the Americans realize what they were in for. The new mayor of Shanghai, Chen Yi, summoned John Keswick for secret talks, the State Department documents reveal, virtually as soon as the mayor arrived in the city. After a lengthy round of talks, Keswick departed and called on the American consul-general. The stunned diplomat later telexed back to Washington that Keswick "made a statement that he did not expect Americans to fare well under the Communist regime, but did not indicate whether this opinion was formed as a result of the conversation with the mayor." Keswick was either threatening the United States or relaying what the Chinese had told him, the consul-general wrote. "He would hardly have invented this as a bluff to frighten away American competitors," the American concluded optimistically. (12)

How ingenuous that evaluation was became clear within days. Behind the backs of the Americans, the British negotiated a deal to keep Hong Kong under London's control, and opened up confidential lines of communications between the mainland and Hong Kong. In wires to Washington, American diplomats accused the British of tearing up the standing Anglo-American agreement that all decisions respecting the Communist government would be made in close consultations. "The Communists are obviously trying to play off the British against us and seem to have succeeded somewhat," one American official wrote. (13)

The British added insult to injury by maintaining an official pro-Maoist propaganda campaign, which began far before the Communists took over. British officials gave awards to leading members of the CCP, even while maintaining "official" diplomatic relations with Chiang Kai-shek, and gave lavish public receptions for dissident elements of the Kuomintang, such as the widow of Sun Yat-sen, the Chinese nationalist leader who died in 1925. (Sun's wife is currently an official of the PRC government.) Shortly before the Communist takeover, one journalist wrote: "The British have a reputation for very smart diplomacy in Asia. Part of this comes from their ability to spot key groups and get on the right side of them. It is generally believed by observers that the British now figure the intellectual left wing to be one of the groups that will gain rather than lose strength in the political changes of the next few years, and are preparing for this eventuality." (14)

American intelligence dispatches from 1947 reprinted in the State Department release wrote: "It is significant to note that shortly after the Communist takeover of the key city of Shanghai, the Maoists halted all anti-British propaganda." (15)

Creation of the Hong Kong drug nexus

Under the public cover of Anglo-Chinese mutual seduction, and before the horrified eyes of American observers, the British and Maoists created the financial infrastructure of what would later underwrite the Far East narcotics traffic. Keswick's opening of channels between Peking and Hong Kong permitted a division of the Shanghai banking families between mainland China and Hong Kong; this 1947 division founded the expatriate Chinese connection between Peking and London. (Apparently, other expatriate networks, like the Thai bankers who date back to the 1930s, were consolidated in the same fashion, although the same degree of documentation from the period is not yet available.)

The Senate investigation of the Institute for Pacific Relations revealed indirectly the role of the Royal Institute of International Affairs in the creation of the drug-financing networks. The McCarran Committee made public some of the correspondence of IPR General Secretary William Holland. Holland, before his ascendance as IPR chief in 1946, took over the China stations of the American Office of War Information, an organization closely tied to the wartime predecessor of the Central Intelligence Agency, the Office of Strategic Services. Holland was in frequent touch with the head of the RIIA in London, which as noted above, had created Holland's IPR in the first place.

In one of the letters available from the 1950-51 McCarran proceedings, Holland informed the RIIA that a top Chinese Communist banking official "may turn out to be one of the best friends we have." (16) The official in question, Chi Ch'ao-ting, was a top officer in the Nationalist Bank of China, until the Maoist victory. At that moment, he shifted allegiance to the PRC Bank of China. Moreover, Chi's defection was preceded by that of a whole faction within the Nationalist Bank, which chose to "make a deal" with the Communists rather than flee to Taiwan. This faction, according to the 1949 State Department papers, made arrangements to communicate with Chinese IPR leader and Shanghai banker K.P. Chen, who had left Shanghai for Hong Kong, even after-the Communist takeover. (17)

It should be added that, as a matter of public record, most of the Nationalist Bank of China's cash flow during the period of Chi's service came from the opium traffic, which the Chiang Kai-shek government continued throughout the war years. Chi's shift of allegiance was merely the poppy stem's bending with the wind of change.

Chi's defection to Mao's Bank of China began an illustrious career, during which he rose to a high position in the bank and participated in international conferences for the PRC as well. As noted, the Bank of China's financial connections to the West are through Hong Kong, its reserves were and still are held with the Hongkong and Shanghai Bank and the Standard and Chartered Bank, its remittances payments conducted through the same banks, and so forth. Chi's move — under the approving eyes of Holland — only typified what went on in the Shanghai banking community at large. In the same dispatch to the RIIA cited above, Holland reported on his contacts with leading Shanghai bankers, citing the case of Chinese Shanghai Commercial Bank chief K.P. Chen. Chen fled to Hong Kong shortly before the Communists took over, Holland reported, adding, "Impossible as it now seems, I have an idea Chen will later go to Shanghai." (18)

An entire section of the Shanghai bankers resisted pressure by the departing Nationalist forces to transplant their operations to

Taiwan. As in the case cited by Holland, they preferred to hedge their bets between the British and the People's Republic of China. At the lower levels of the narcotics traffic, the notorious Green Gangs, the footsoldiers of the traffic, broke en masse with the Kuomintang forces, and moved into the Communist camp. Neatly and speedily, the entire postwar opium apparatus had been redeployed between Shanghai and Hong Kong.

One of Holland's close associates during the period was the Canadian representative in Chungking, Chester Ronning — still prominent in the Canadian connection to the London-Peking drug apparatus. Utterly enamored of the Maoists, Ronning met almost weekly with Chou En-lai's chief deputy, Wang Ping-nan, during his 1945-47 tour of duty. (19)

Ronning's relationship with Wang Ping-nan has a special importance, which we will indicate momentarily. Ronning went on to act as midwife in the Institute for Pacific Relations's 1950 rebirth in Canada after the scandal.

Both the State Department and the RIIA releases make fools of those Americans who thought that the Institute for Pacific Relations had "betrayed" American ally Chiang Kai-shek to the red menace. The Kuomintang, a gang that couldn't shoot straight, was merely losing the battle for Far Eastern opium. (There has been substantial documentation, not immediately relevant to the present chain of evidence, that remnants of the Kuomintang army in Burma continued to grow opium for a quarter-century after the Communist victory, and that some of their friends in the China Lobby, e.g. AirAmerica, transported it for them.) In fact, the United States was sold down the Pearl River by our British "allies," in combination with the snickering Chinese. America's youth paid the terrible price of this deception.

At the outset of the Korean War, the public amity between Great Britain and China was reduced — for purposes of public consumption. However, the leading individuals who created the Peking Connection continued to hold all the important strings, and maintained the full continuity of the narcotics traffic. Despite the public hostilities, the PRC operated freely on Hong Kong's illicit gold exchanges, and present-day luminaries like

Stanley Ho (see Section 5) made their fortunes smuggling strategic goods into China from Hong Kong.

THE EMERGENCE OF THE "CHINA CARD"

In 1951, Lord Humphrey Trevelyan took his post as British Ambassador to China, the same man who today sits on the board of the British Bank of the Middle East. Public contacts between Lord Trevelyan and the Peking regime were necessarily low-key, by the dictates of what even the British and Chinese consider public decency. To cover their tracks the British claim that Trevelyan did not meet Premier Chou En-lai during the first two years of his stay in Peking, although they do admit that Trevelyan's fellow diplomat John Henry Keswick had had regular access to Chou during the early 1940s in Chungking.

However, Trevelyan's stay in Peking was not without great importance. Trevelyan set up the beginnings of the so-called American opening to China, laying the basis for the "China Card." His partner in this maneuver was Chester Ronning's old Maoist contact, Wang Ping-nan. By this time, Chou En-lai's old deputy of the Chungking days was the PRC's Ambassador to Poland. Trevelyan set up the first American diplomatic contacts with the People's Republic of China — through China's Embassy in Poland — during the mid-1950s. America's contact man with the Peking government was Ambassador Wang Ping-nan.

Trevelyan's further career is remarkable. After a brief stay in West Germany, he went on to become Britain's Ambassador to Egypt during the Suez Crisis — the British-French-Israeli invasion of Egypt that wrecked President Eisenhower's world development plan, the Atoms for Peace program. After a tour at the British Foreign Office, he was Britain's Ambassador to the Soviet Union during 1962-65, during the British-inspired Cuban missile crisis. Currently, he sits on the board of directors of British Petroleum, along with John Keswick's brother Sir William Johnston Keswick, and various other members of the boards of the HongShang and the RIIA council.

Lord Trevelyan completed the circle by taking the chairmanship of the Council of the RIIA, while keeping an active hand in the opium business, through the British Bank of the Middle East.

Direct experience in the drug trade is apparently a standard qualification for chairmen of the Council of the RIIA. When Trevelyan, Keswick, Holland, and Ronning were young men setting up the Peking Connection during World War II, the chairman of the RIIA Council was Waldorf Astor. Astor's great-grandfather, John Jacob Astor, was a British agent-of-influence in the first years of the American republic; according to his biographer, J. J. Astor was the first American to get in on the drug trade alongside the British East India Company, starting in 1816.

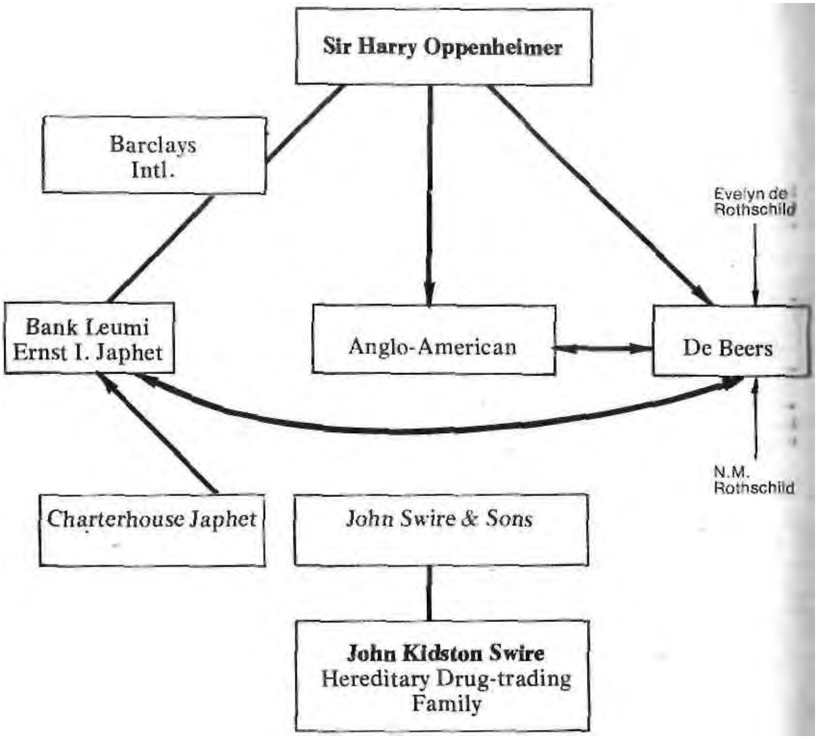
Sir Harry Oppenheimer
Barclays Intl.
Bank Leumi Ernst I. Japhet
Anglo-American
De Beers
Evelyn de Rothschild
N.M. Rothschild
Charterhouse Japhet
John Swire & Sons
John Kidston Swire
Hereditary Drug-trading Family

Figure 6

London's Royal Institute for International Affairs—

Drugs and Dirty Money

The RIIA is not composed of the most influential people in Great Britain - the inner circle of the British monarchy and the orders of nobility — but rather brings together the chief operating officers of the British monarchy's policies in various fields. Its leading members include the following:

Lord Humphrey Trevelyan: Son of the British historian George Trevelyan; Chairman of the Council of the RIIA; Chairman of the Trustees of the British Museum; Chairman of the Committee for the Tutankhamen Exhibit; Economic and Financial Advisor, United Kingdom High Commission for West Germany, 1951-53; Ambassador to Egypt, 1955-56; Undersecretary at the United Nations, 1958; Ambassador to Iraq, 1958-61; Deputy Undersecretary of State of the Foreign Office, 1962; Ambassador to the Soviet Union, 1962-65; High Commissioner in South Arabia, 1967. Director: British Petroleum Co., 1968-75; British Bank of the Middle East (100 percent owned by Hongkong and Shanghai Bank); General Electric Company Ltd., 1965-75; President, Council of Foreign Bondholders.

Sir (Roland) Mark (Cunliffe) Turner: Council RIIA, 1949-50; Chairman Rio

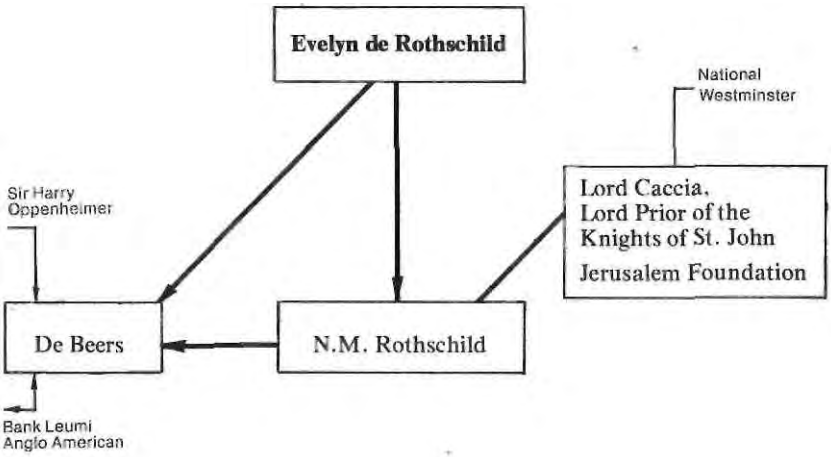
Evelyn de Rothschild
National Westminster
Sir Harry Oppenheimer
Lord Caccia,
Lord Prior of the Knights of St. John
Jerusalem Foundation
De Beers
N.M. Rothschild
Bank Leumi
Anglo American

Tinto Zinc; Deputy Chairman of the merchant bank Kleinwort Benson Ltd.; Chairman, Bank of America International Ltd. (London), 1971-; Director, National Cash Register; Toronto Dominion Bank; Midland and International Banks Ltd.; formerly with Samuel Montagu and Co.; Ministry of Economic Warfare, 1939-44; Undersecretary, Control Office for Germany and Austria, 1945-57.

Sir Frank Roberts: Member of RIIA Council; Advisory Director Unilever; Advisor on International Affairs to Lloyds; British Embassy in Paris, 1932-35; Cairo, 1935-37; Charge d'Affaires to Czech Government, 1943; Deputy High Commissioner to India, 1949-51; Ambassador to Yugoslavia, 1954-57; Representative to North Atlantic Council, 1957-60; Ambassador to the Soviet Union, 1960-62 (preceding RIIA Chairman Lord Humphrey Trevelyan); Ambassador to West Germany, 1963-68; Vice-President, German Chamber of Commerce in the United Kingdom, 1974-.

Sir Richard Powell: Member of RIIA Council; Deputy Chairman, Permanent Committee on Invisible Exports, 1968-; Deputy Secretary Ministry of Defense, 1950-56; Permanent Secretary, Board of Trade, 1960-68; President, Institute for Fiscal Studies.

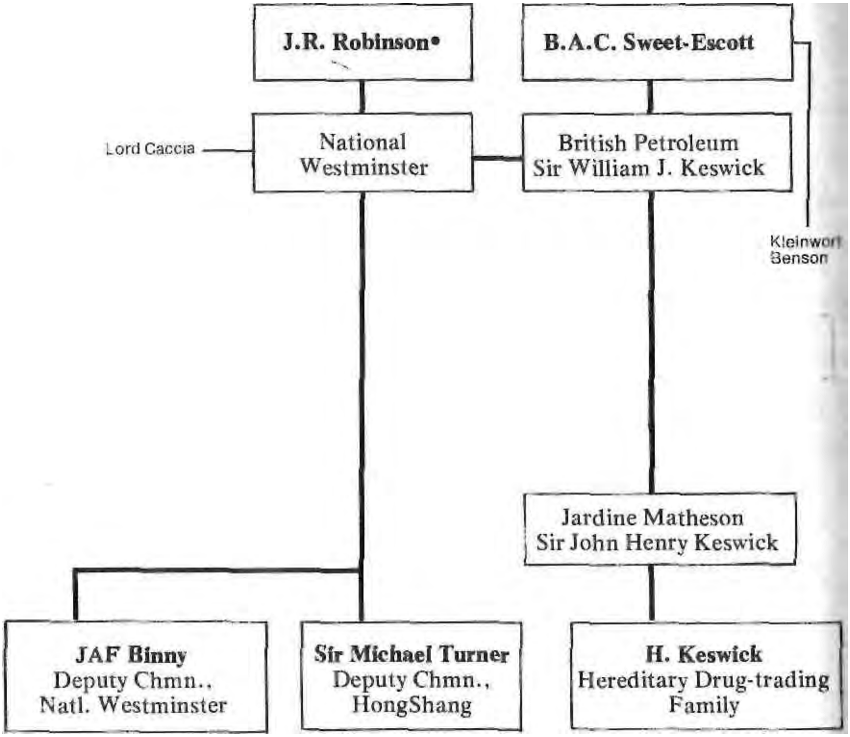
J.R. Robinson•
B.A.C. Sweet-Escott
Lord Caccia
National Westminster
British Petroleum Sir William J. Keswick
Kleinwort Benson
Jardine Matheson Sir John Henry Keswick
JAF Binny Deputy Chmn., Natl. Westminster
Sir Michael Turner Deputy Chmn., HongShang
H. Keswick Hereditary Drug-trading Family

Carmichael C.P. Pocock: Member of Council, RIIA; Managing Director, Royal Dutch Shell, 1970-; joined Shell in 1946,

Sir Arthur Knight Member, RIIA Council; Chairman of Courtauld's since 1975; Director, Rolls Royce, 1971-; Member, Finance Committee of RIIA, 1971-; Court of Governors, London School of Economics, 1971-. Andrew Knight: Member, RIIA Council; Editor of the London Economist, 1974-; J. Henry Schroeder and Wagg Co., 1962-; Investors Chronicle, 1964. Ronald Grierson: Economist staffwriter, 1947-8; S.G. Warburg, 1948-58, executive director 1958-69; Chairman Orion Bank, 1971-75; Director, General Electric Ltd; member Trilateral Commission.

William Malpas Clarke: RIIA Council; Director, Committee on Invisible Exports since 1966; Director, Grindlays Bank Ltd.; Euromoney Publications; Brandt's Ltd.; The London Times, 1962-66.

Baron Shawcross: Member, RIIA Council; Director, Shell Transport and Trading Co., 1961-72; Morgan et Cie., International, 1966-; Times Newspapers Ltd., 1967-74; Hawker Siddeley Group Ltd., 1968-; Chairman, International Advisory Council, Morgan Guaranty Trust Co. of New York until 1978.

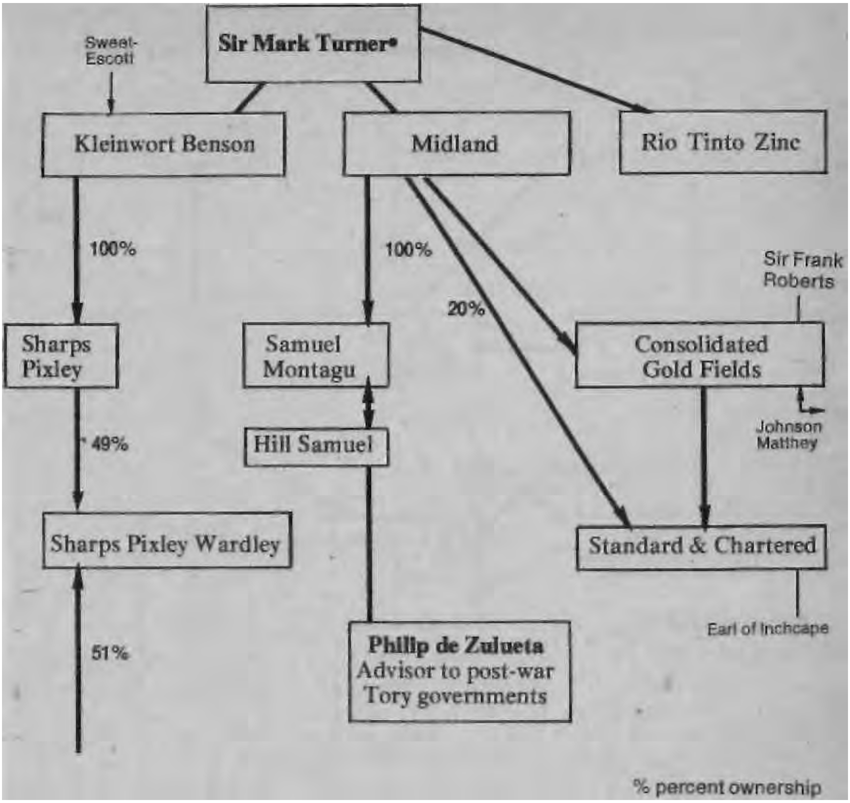
Sir Mark Turner•
Sweet-Escott
Kleinwort Benson
Midland
Rio Tinto Zinc
100%
100%
20%
Sir Frank Roberts
Sharps Pixley
Samuel Montagu
Consolidated Gold Fields
49%
Hill Samuel
Johnson Matthey
Sharps Pixley Wardley
Standard & Chartered
Earl of Inchcape
51%
Philip de Zulueta
Advisor to post-war Tory governments
% percent ownership

B.A.C. Sweet Escott: Finance Committee, RIIA; Group Finance Co-ordinator, BP Co. Ltd., 1962-; Economic and Overseas Committees, Confederation of British Industries; Kleinwort Committee on Invisible Exports.
J.R. Robinson: Finance Committee, RIIA; director, Eagle Star Insurance; former director, National Westminster; Finance Director, Rio Tinto Zinc.
J.P.G. Wathen: Finance Committee, RIIA; General Manager, Barclays Bank Dominion, Colonial and Overseas; former manager, Lloyds Bank Ltd.
Again, Chart 2 shows that the leading members of the London Committee of the Hongkong and Shanghai Bank have extremely close ties to the core RIIA group. The chart also shows that these links continuously intersect two major groups whose activities are key to drug wholesaling and large-scale laundering of dirty money. The first is the old-line British opium traders, including the Peninsular and Oriental Steamship Lines, Jardine Matheson, John Swire and Sons, and Charterhouse Japhet. The second is the tightly knit complex of world gold and diamonds production and sales.

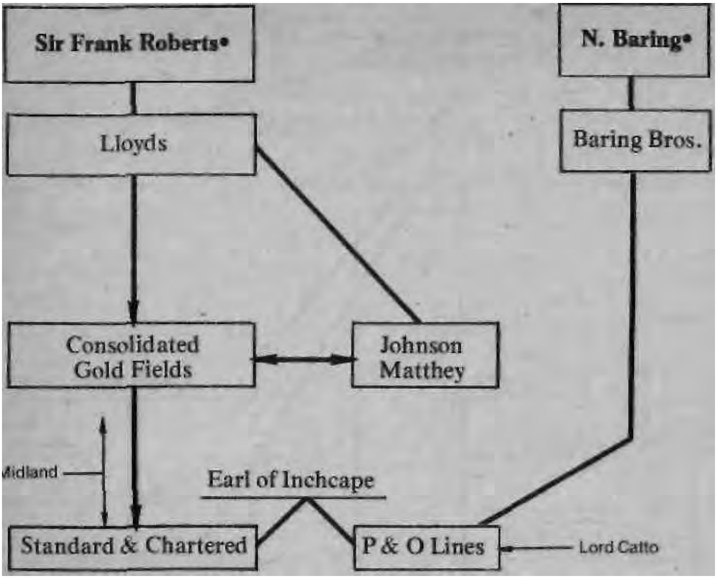

Lord Catto of Cairncatto is the chairman of the board of the prominent merchant bank Morgan Grenfell & Co., which has close ties of ownership to Morgan et Cie. International, one of Lord Shawcross's companies. Philip de Zulueta, the private parliamentary secretary to Harold MacMillan when the latter was Prime Minister, advisor to every Tory Prime Minister since the war, spent most of his career with the leading British merchant bank Hill Samuel, also the largest merchant bank in South Africa; he is thus in close association with Sir Mark Turner, Rio Tinto Zinc's Chairman, and a director of Midland, and International Banks, Samuel Montagu (owned by the same families as Hill Samuel), and various gold and other mining ventures in which Zulueta has interests.

Henry Neville Lindley Keswick, of the family that controls Jardine Matheson, now occupies the traditional Jardine Matheson seat on the London Committee of the HongShang, a tradition that goes back to 1864. His father, Sir William Johnston Keswick, is also a director of British Petroleum, along with Lord Trevelyan, Chairman of RIIA, and B.A.C. Sweet-Escott of the RIIA Finance Committee. The elder Keswick is also the representative of drug wholesaling operations in the Far East with respect to drug retailing operations in Canada: he is a director of the Hudson Bay Company (see Section 8). H.N.L. Keswick's uncle David Johnston Keswick has been with

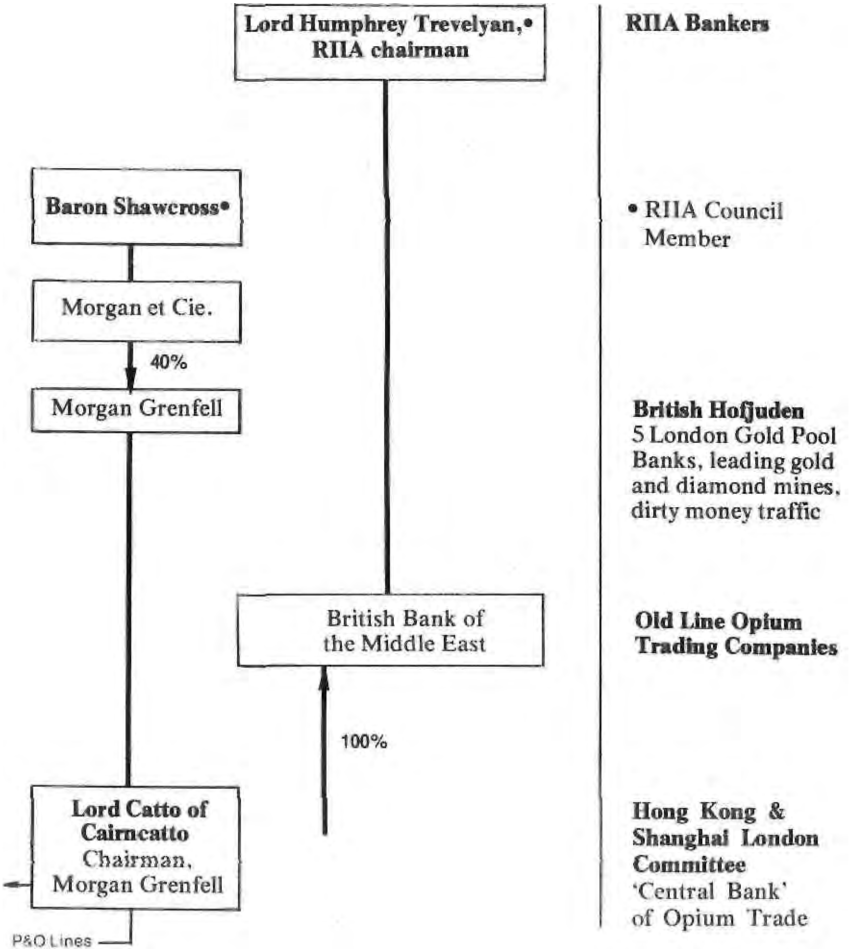
Lord Humphrey Trevelyan,•
RIIA chairman
RIIA Bankers
Baron Shawcross•
• RIIA Council Member
Morgan et Cie.
40%
Morgan Grenfell
British Hofjuden
5 London Gold Pool Banks, leading gold and diamond mines, dirty money traffic
British Bank of the Middle East
Old Line Opium Trading Companies
100%
Lord Catto of Cairncatto
Chairman, Morgan Grenfell
Hong Kong & Shanghai London Committee
'Central Bank' of Opium Trade
P&O Lines

Samuel Montagu, a core RIIA bank, since 1930, as well as with the family firms. Another uncle, Sir John Henry Keswick, is the top man for British corporate policy towards China. He is Chairman of the China Association, Vice-President of the Sino-British Trade Council, and a member of the Great Britain-China Committee.

John Kidston Swire, the Swire family's representative on the HongShang board, goes back to World War II with RIIA Council Member Sir Mark Turner and various other leading lights of the RIIA, when they all worked on the Ministry of Economic Warfare. Sir John Henry Keswick is another Ministry of Economics War veteran.

J.A.F. Binny and R.J. Dent are both directors of the National Westminster Bank, one of the core RIIA institutions.

Sir Michael Turner, who retired as Chairman of the Hongkong and Shanghai Bank in 1952 but remains on the London Committee, is still a director of National Westminster Bank.

8

Canada: North America's Hong Kong

Most heroin entering North America comes through Canada. This is the estimate of authoritative law enforcement sources — despite the misleading publicity about Mexican supply routes, which are in any case mostly transshipment channels for Far Eastern dope.

Virtually everything the reader now knows about the British Crown Colony of Hong Kong applies to the British Dominion north of the American border. The idea that Canada is a nation — in the sense that Americans understand the term — is the product of low-grade, if persistent, public relations efforts. Politically and financially, Canada is run straight from the top by the British monarchy, starting with the Governor-General whom the Queen appoints, the Privy Council, and including the core group of Knights of St. John of Jerusalem who control the bulk of Canadian business.

Canada's role in the drug flow to the U.S. is not much different from its role during Prohibition — as we will document in Part III of this report. Canada transships most of the heroin entering the American market, because it was created and maintained as a

British Dominion on the northern flank of the United States to carry out precisely such operations.

Despite the British monarchy's iron grip over the highest levels of Canadian public life, there are a few individuals well placed in Canada, including in its law enforcement services, who look to America rather than Britain as a model for Canada's future. At great risk to themselves, they have fought a long rearguard action against criminal activities that enjoy near official sanction. The American public has heard little of their efforts because of Canada's Official Secrets Act, modeled on Great Britain's own 1911 Official Secrets Act. That legislation prevents any publica-' tion or public discussion of what the government — that is, the British-appointed Governor-General — chooses to regard as a state secret. Given Canada's make-up, most drug-running, dirty money laundering, and organized crime activity, including political terrorism, fall into that category. Anyone who writes about this in Canada will go to jail immediately and could, under the law, be executed. But without the help of Canadian citizens with access to official sources, willing to take the risk, this report could not have been written.

Three crucial cases

Before examining the structure of Canada's drug and dirty money operations, a few leading examples will suffice to indicate the nature of the problem. One is the personage of Walter Lockhart Gordon, Honorary Chairman for Life of the Canadian Institute of International Affairs (CIIA), the Canadian offshoot of the British Royal Institute of International Affairs. The. CIIA receives most of its funding directly from the office of the Governor-General. Every Canadian Secretary of State for External Affairs since the CIIA's founding has been a CIIA member. The CIIA is also the official sponsor of the Institute for Pacific Relations, the nexus of Britain's Peking Connection (Sections 6 and 7), after public scandal forced the Institute for Pacific Relations to leave the United States after 1947.

1. WALTER LOCKHART GORDON

Walter Lockhart Gordon's fingerprints show up throughout this section. Apart from his lifetime post at the top of the CIIA, he is a past chairman of the Privy Council, the Governor-General's select operations group for running Canadian politics (1967-68); he was finance minister from 1963 to 1965; and is a director of some of the dirtiest corporate operations in Canada.

But most important, he founded Clarkson and Gordon, the accountants firm that audits three of the five Canadian chartered banks: Bank of Nova Scotia (of which Gordon is a director), Toronto Dominion Bank, and Canadian Imperial Bank. Gordon's partner, Stephen Clarkson, is also a leading member of the Canadian Institute of International Affairs, as well as a leading sponsor of the Institute for Pacific Relations. Through a network of accountants dispersed through these banks, Clarkson and Gordon functions as a command center for the most extensive dirty money laundering operation in the world, stretching from the heroin receiving points in the Pacific Northwest, to the branch operations of the Canadian banks in the Caribbean Silver Triangle.

Gordon, as we shall detail below, is also Canada's chief contact-man for the Peking Connection (see Section 7).

2. THE EAGLE STAR INSURANCE COMPANY

A second example is the group of British "spooks" who run the Eagle Star Insurance Company, which heads the accompanying chart of the Canadian drug networks. Eagle Star is one of Britain's largest financial corporations, and a joint operation between Britain's top financial firms, including Barclays Bank, Lloyds, Hill Samuel, and N.M. Rothschild & Sons.

Eagle Star, as the chart shows, runs the Bronfman family operation from the top, through its control of English Properties, and English Properties' control of the "Bronfman" Trizec Corporations.

The Bronfmans are what is known in intelligence jargon as "cutouts," or controlled front-men. What is significant here is Eagle Star's special qualifications for controlling the Bronfman family's corporate group, which, in turn, has been the seat of

Canada's rum- and dope-running, dirty money, and terrorist operations since Prohibition.

Eagle Star's management is British intelligence, by an arrangement that traces back to World War II.

Two Eagle Star directors, Sir Kenneth Strong and Sir Kenneth Keith, were Number One and Number Two men, respectively, in British intelligence immediately after World War II — when the Bronfman family created its "legitimate" front Trizec with Eagle Star funding. (1) Both men have kept up their close ties to Britain's foreign intelligence service, MI6. Part III of this report tells the story of the Bronfman family's dope-running, organized crime, and terrorist activities. What is crucial to keep in mind here is that the men who own the Bronfmans sit in the highest councils of British covert operations.

In a pattern that has already become familiar, Sir Kenneth Keith moves between the secret world of British intelligence and the opium politics of the Far East. Keith is also a leading member of the Canadian Institute of International Affairs. Among other leading corporate positions, including a directorship at Canada's Bank of Nova Scotia, he is the chairman of the Hill Samuel group of companies, one of the leading British merchant banks, and an incarnation of the old Samuel banking family's interests.

Sitting with Sir Kenneth Keith on the board of directors of Hill Samuel is the Hongkong and Shanghai Bank's Sir Philip de Zulueta, member of the HongShang's controlling "London Committee." Zulueta was private parliamentary secretary to a string of British Conservative prime ministers while Sir Kenneth Strong was completing his career at British intelligence.

Eagle Star is a sterling example of Canada's role in drugs because it contains every element of the drug machine: the Bronfman family, which has spokes tying into the Zionist dirty money and terrorist apparat; the top levels of British intelligence; and the core of the opium trade, the HongShang itself.

3. THE HUDSON'S BAY COMPANY

The Hudson's Bay Company is the appropriate starting point for a look inside the operations of Canada's drug machine. During

Prohibition, it was the Bronfman's Seagram's partner in the "Pure Drug Company," the main source of bootleg liquor during Canada's dry period.

The Hudson's Bay is also a front for the grand old families of the opium trade, the Inchcape and Keswick families, the proprietors, respectively, of the Peninsular and Orient Steamship Company, the world's (and the Far East's) largest shipping fleets, and Jardine Matheson, Hong Kong's dominant trading company. The 2nd Earl of Inchcape, whose son still runs the P&O lines, wrote the notorious 1923 Inchcape report advocating the continuation of opium production in the Far East to maintain British revenues. The number two man today at the P&O, Vice-Chairman of the board Eric Drake, sits on the board of Hudson's Bay.

Jardine Matheson's Sir William Johnston Keswick — the chairman of the Shanghai Municipal Settlements during the 1930s peak of Shanghai heroin traffic — only recently retired as a director of the Hudson's Bay Company.

William Johnston Keswick and Sir Eric Drake also sit together on the board of British Petroleum, next to Lord Humphrey Trevelyan, the chairman of the council of the Royal Institute of International Affairs and Britain's charge d'affaires in Peking during the critical years 1951-53.

Drake is also a director of the top British merchant bank Kleinwort Benson. As noted in Section 7, Kleinwort Benson's wholly-owned subsidiary Sharps Pixley Ward jointly runs the Hong Kong gold market with the Hongkong and Shanghai Bank, a crucial support operation for the Far East drug traffic. Drake's fellow director, the deputy chairman of Kleinwort Benson, is Sir Mark Turner, of Rio Tinto Zinc. Rio Tinto Zinc, in turn, was founded by Matheson family money in the 1840s, and Mathesons ran Rio Tinto Zinc until the turn of the century. To complete the circle, William Johnston Keswick sits on the board of Jardine Matheson, along with several directors of Sir Eric Drake's P&O Steamship Company.

In other words, the Hudson's Bay Company, the most "Canadian" of companies, is run from the top by a combination of Far Eastern old-line drug traffickers and their closest London contacts.

The Hong Kong opium connection goes even further. Sir William Keswick's son, Henry Neville Lindley Keswick, a board member of the Hongkong and Shanghai Bank, is also a director of MacMillan Bloedel, one of Canada's biggest pulp and paper operations, closely tied to the Macmillan publishing interests. The Macmillans took off as a Canadian family when Harold Macmillan—later British prime minister at the time of the Kennedy Administration — married the daughter of Canada's Governor-General, the Queen's personal representative. The Governor-General in question was the 9th Duke of Devonshire, Victor C.W. Cavendish, who held office 1916-20 at the outset of Prohibition; his son-in-law Harold Macmillan became his chief assistant in Canada in 1919, the same year that Arnold Rothstein set up the big liquor delivery contacts in England. The Governor-General's son William helped Joe Kennedy make-contacts among big English distilleries. The MacMillan interests started with Prohibition. Today, through their association with William Johnston Keswick — who personally ran the Shanghai heroin traffic during the 1930s — they are up to their necks in the drug trade.

Canadian Pacific Ltd., the biggest company in Canada, holds a controlling interest in MacMillan Bloedel.

Dope goes in, dirty money goes out

According to high-level Canadian intelligence sources, most of the heroin that reaches North America is flown in through Canadian Pacific Air. There is no "smoking gun" evidence to substantiate this, but a November 1978 trial in Vancouver reveals evidence that Canadian Pacific was involved in the smuggling of 22 pounds of cocaine from Hong Kong.

Figure 7 neatly traces the flow of heroin and dirty money in Canada: the drugs come in through Canadian Pacific and then are conduited to points south of the border. Heavily interlocked with the Western Canada connection is the Bronfman group, whose corporate center is Seagram, and whose financial center is the Trizec group. Since Prohibition, Seagram has handled the flow of smuggling into the United States (see Part III).

Both Seagram (and its old Prohibition rum-running partner, Hudson's Bay) are interlocked through a maze of contacts with all five of the big Canadian chartered banks: the Bank of Montreal, the Royal Bank of Canada, the Bank of Nova Scotia, the Toronto Dominion Bank, and the Canada Imperial Bank. Thus the dirty money gleaned from the drug trade is conduited through these banks to points further south: the banks' offshore centers in the Caribbean and from there the money makes its whirlpool round of worldwide laundering.

Canada's Big Five dominate all Canadian banking as fiercely as the British Big Four — Barclays, National Westminster, Lloyds, and Midlands — do in Britain. Unlike the United States, which has a relatively broadly spread base of regional banking, Canadian and British banking is run from the top by the institutions named. The Canadian institutions are barely distinguishable in their current practice from the British buccaneers who plied the Caribbean during the 17th century. Along with the British banks, which have numerous joint ventures with the Canadians — e.g., the Royal Bank operates in the Bahamas under the "RoyWest" cover in a joint venture with National Westminster — they are the core of the dirty money operations offshore of the United States.

The Royal Bank of Canada has 21 affiliates in offshore banking and subsidiaries — more than any other bank in the world save Barclays Bank. Royal Bank's "RoyWest" connection to the National Westminster Bank ties it closely to the Hongkong and Shanghai bank itself; HongShang has two mutual directors with National Westminster, J.A.F. Binny and R.D. Dent. Dent is the descendant of the old-line British opium trading family that founded Lancelot Dent about the same time that Jardine Matheson appeared.

Among other links, the Royal Bank of Canada is tied to the Bronfmans through Neil Phillips — son of Lazarus Phillips, the Bronfman family's lawyer and most trusted aide from Prohibition until the 1950s.

CANADA'S SILVER TRIANGLE

Royal Bank has the dirtiest reputation of any bank in the Caribbean. According to authoritative diplomatic sources, the Royal

Bank of Canada directly ordered the Guyanese government to plant marijuana in order to raise foreign exchange income. In 1976, when Guyana went flat broke and applied to the International Monetary Fund for emergency assistance, Royal Bank of Canada officials met with senior members of the Guyana government. The Royal Bank insisted that Guyana transform its economy into a "cash crop" producer before it, or any other major bank, would issue loans. The Guyanese were desperate and did what they were told. Northwest Guyana, in consequence, has become a major producer of marijuana for the North American market.

Second in the Caribbean offshore centers to the Royal Bank is the Bank of Nova Scotia — Walter Lockhart Gordon's bank. A top Bronfman aide and figure in Canadian Zionist organizations, R.D. Wolfe, sits both on the board of Seagram and the Bank of Nova Scotia. Scotiabank has 13 branches in offshore centers, as well as innumerable joint ventures and similar fronts.

Banking and diplomatic sources agree that the Bank of Nova Scotia is the number one handler of flight capital out of Caribbean countries, especially troubled countries such as Jamaica. Apart from funds fleeing difficult political situations, much, if not most, of all illegal money transfers out of the Caribbean. A large portion of Jamaican illegal funds are conduited through a Jamaican national currently employed in a senior position at the big New York brokerage house Drexel Burnham Lambert. (2)

Scotiabank's Jamaican trade is a particularly filthy business, since it involves shifting funds earned in Jamaica by local criminals into safe havens. The cash side of the Jamaican operations, according to law enforcement sources, is done more with arms than drugs. Planes fly into Jamaica with loads of small arms, and take loads of marijuana out. The retail side in Jamaica is arms selling. The ultimate cash proceeds of the selling chain are then laundered through Scotiabank.

The Bank of Nova Scotia's role in Canadian gold markets, through its own trading operations and its interlock with the chairmain of the second-largest Canadian gold trader, Noranda Mines, was already noted in Section 4. According to informed New York gold market sources, a substantial proportion of Nova

Scotia's flight capital operations are accomplished through illegal purchases of gold by Jamaican and other nationals. The same sources add that Dr. Henry Jarecki's Mocatta Metals in New York (see Section 4 again) has a substantial share of Caribbean dirty money traffic.

The Canada-Peking connection

The starting point of any examination of Canadian drug traffic is Walter Lockhart Gordon's close relationship to Canadian Pacific. Gordon is Canada's grand old man, Honorary Chairman of the Canadian Institute of International Affairs for Life, top leader of the ruling Liberal Party, finance minister after 1963, and chief foreign policy-maker in Canada for the past 30 years.

Gordon sits on the board of directors of Canadian Pacific and the Bank of Nova Scotia; his accounting firm, Clarkson and Gordon, handles the accounts of the Bank of Nova Scotia, Toronto Dominion Bank, and Canadian Imperial Bank.

THE GO BETWEEN

Authoritative Canadian intelligence sources further identify Gordon as the controller of Canada's three leading China specialists, Paul Lin, James Endicott, and Chester Ronning, whom we met earlier in Section 7. The association goes back in the cases of Endicott and Ronning to the end of World War II, when the two returned from close collaboration with Chou En-lai, to become the core of the transplanted Institute for Pacific Relations in Canada.

Based in Montreal, Paul Lin is the go-between for Walter Gordon and the Vancouver, British Columbia drug wholesaling and transshipment operations. Lin's most important contact is the former president of drug-shipping Canadian Pacific, John D. Gilmer. Gilmer is a Knight of St. John of Jerusalem, and the patron of People's Republic of China fronts on Canada's West Coast. Paul Lin is his personal attorney.

In turn, Gilmer is the attorney for two open representatives of the People's Republic of China in Vancouver, B.C., the Chinese Commercial Corporation and the Chinese Cultural Center. The

Chinese Cultural Center in Vancouver receives funding from another Knight of St. John, John Robert Nicholson, a close associate of Gilmer.

Both Gilmer and Nicholson are major funders of the Simon Fraser University in Vancouver, which became the home of the Institute for Pacific Relations after it was driven out of the United States. Paul Lin's brother, Dr. Tsing Lin, is currently employed at the Institute for Pacific Relations. All these men have been working together since the Institute for Pacific Relations, as detailed in Section 7, served as the Royal Institute of International Affairs bridgehead into the United States, and Chester Ronning was meeting weekly with Wang Ping-nan and occasionally with Chou En-lai in Chungking.

Endicott, now an old man, created the leading North American center of explicit Maoism, the Norman Bethune Institute at York University. Walter Gordon was the university's chancellor for many years. Gordon personally arranged the funding of the Bethune Institute, named after a Canadian doctor who served in Mao's armies.

Gordon's accounting firm Clarkson and Gordon tries to keep its nose clean of overt involvement in the drug trade. But one of its escapades caused a public scandal in Canada five years ago. Clarkson and Gordon put together the funding for Rochdale College in Toronto, an experimental university that quickly became the most drug-ridden college campus in Canada. By the early 1970s Rochdale College had become not only a main center of illegal drugs consumption, but also the retail distribution point for marijuana and hallucinogens throughout most of Eastern Canada. When the story inevitably became headline material in the early 1970s, Canadian police were compelled to shut it down, as a matter of public decency. Clarkson and Gordon, who had created Rochdale College, sadly took the drug-ridden remnant back, acting as its receiver and liquidator.

Who rules Canada

But the company to which Gordon is closest is Canadian Pacific, which controls most of the dominion's air, sea, and land

Figure 7
Drug-Running—The Canadian Connection

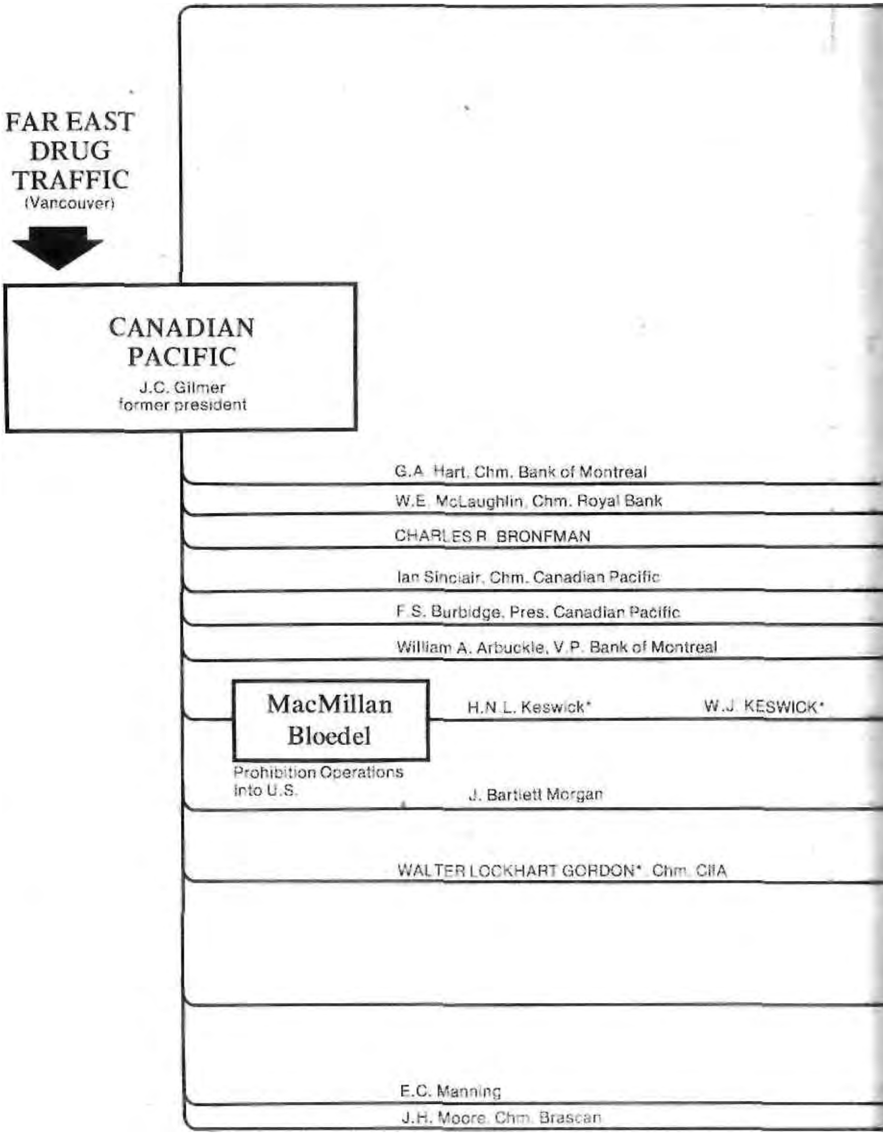
FAR EAST DRUG TRAFFIC
(Vancouver)
CANADIAN PACIFIC
J.C. Gilmer
former president
G.A. Hart, Chm. Bank of Montreal
W.E. McLaughlin, Chm. Royal Bank
CHARLES R. BRONFMAN
Ian Sinclair, Chm. Canadian Pacific
F.S. Burbidge, Pres. Canadian Pacific
William A. Arbuckle, V.P. Bank of Montreal
MacMillan Bloedel
Prohibition Operations into U.S.
H.N.L. Keswick*
W.J. KESWICK*
J. Bartlett Morgan
WALTER LOCKHART GORDON*, Chm. CIIA
E.C. Manning
J.H. Moore, Chm. Brascan

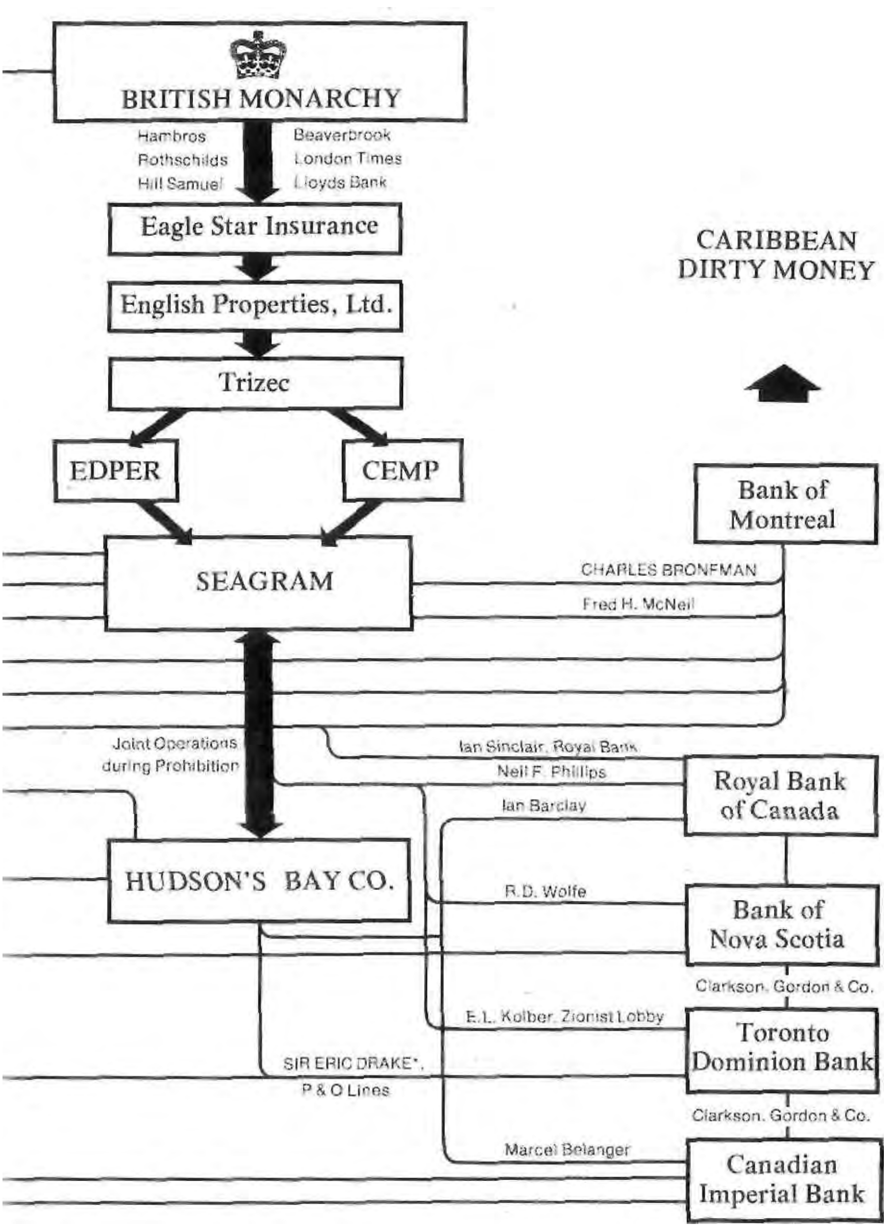
BRITISH MONARCHY
Hambros
Rothschilds
Hill Samuel
Beaverbrook
London Times
Lloyds Bank
Eagle Star Insurance
English Properties, Ltd.
Trizec
EDPER
CEMP
SEAGRAM
CARIBBEAN DIRTY MONEY
Bank of Montreal
CHARLES BRONFMAN
Fred H. McNeil
Joint Operations during Prohibition
Ian Sinclair, Royal Bank
Neil F. Phillips
Ian Barclay
Royal Bank of Canada
HUDSON'S BAY CO.
R.D. Wolfe
Bank of Nova Scotia
Clarkson, Gordon & Co.
E.L. Kolber, Zionist Lobby
Toronto Dominion Bank
SIR ERIC DRAKE*, P & O Lines
Clarkson, Gordon & Co.
Marcel Belanger
Canadian Imperial Bank

*Far East Opium Runners

transportation. It has directors in virtually every industry it does not control. As the accompanying chart demonstrates, it is interlocked three ways with Seagram Ltd., the core of the Bronfman group. The chart only shows a handful of Canadian Pacific's links to the five major chartered banks; no fewer than 14 of its directors sit on their boards.

Most important, Canadian Pacific features no fewer than four members of the Most Venerable Order of St. John of Jerusalem on its board. They include the aforementioned J.C. Gilmer of Vancouver, the angel for every Maoist front in the city; W.E. McLaughlin, the chairman of the board of the aforementioned Royal Bank of Canada; and J.P.W. Ostiguy.

Only one other corporation in the world, Barclays Bank, contains more members of the British monarchy's most elite order among its directors. That fact alone establishes Canadian Pacific's vassalhood before the feudal rights of the British monarchy. In terms of Canada's real chain of command, it is an honor for Charles R. Bronfman to sit on Canadian Pacific's board.

The concentration of Knights of Malta on the council of the Canadian Pacific Company also clears up — from a professional intelligence standpoint — why that company has special access to the Far Eastern narcotics traffic. The chairman of the board of the HongKong and Shanghai Bank from 1962 to 1970 was Sir Michael Turner. When the current chairman, M.G. Sandberg, replaced Turner in 1970, he remained on the "London Committee" of the HongShang (as well as the board of directors of National Westminster Bank, with two of his fellow HongShang directors). Sandberg was created Commander of St. John, a high-ranking position in the elite order, in 1960. He is still the chairman of the Council of St. John — the organization of the Knights — in Hong Kong. The company most under the direction of the Knights of Malta in Canada deals directly with the chief of their order in Hong Kong.

At the other end of the Canadian drug cycle, the dirty money banks, each of the five Canadian dirty money banks has at least one Knight of Malta on its board. The Canadian Imperial Bank and the Bank of Nova Scotia are directed by three Knights of Malta each.

In addition, there is no question that the Canadian Institute of International Affairs — which has picked every Canadian foreign minister of this century — is not a Canadian institution, but the local branch of the British monarchy's most elite chivalric order. Canada's former Governor-General, Roland Michener, and current chairman of the CIIA is also a Knight of St. John. A board member of the Italian branch of the Order of St. John, the Order of St. Lazarus, is a member of the CIIA's board, Henry R. Jackman. J.J. Jodrey, another board member, is also a Knight of St. John.

The Order of St. John respects the same chain of command as do Canada's Governor-General and Privy Council: the Queen of England, who is the titular head of the Order, and the Queen's cousin, the Duke of Gloucester, who is Grand Prior to the Order. These men control the finances and logistics of Canada's economy. Through a series of "cutouts," like the Bronfman family, they also control the drug-running, the organized crime, and the political terrorism directed against the United States.

There has been little effective challenge to their rule of these forces in Canada since 1910, when then-Prime Minister de Laurier attempted to organize a counterweight from within the British dominions, including support from then Prime Minister of South Africa, Botha. Lord Milner, whom we profiled earlier in Section 7, traveled to Canada in 1908 to avert what would have been a catastrophe in the eyes of the British monarchy.

Milner's visit, which founded the Canadian Round Table Group — the mother organization of Walter Lockhart Gordon's Canadian Institute of International Affairs — was ultimately successful. Robert Borden, a Milner protege, replaced de Laurier in 1910, and Canada was secured for the Prohibition offensive against the United States. Robert Borden's descendant Henry Borden still sits on the Council of the Canadian Institute of International Affairs.

The project is best summarized in a letter that Rudyard Kipling, the swastika-wielding racist who helped found Canada's Institute of International Affairs, wrote to Lord Milner after the de Laurier initiative failed:

"This busts the de Laurier-Botha liaison," Kipling wrote, "in what are called our Imperial Councils. Additionally, Australia will be deprived of big sister's (i.e. Canada's — ed.) example as an excuse for nibbling after American 'protection' on her behalf . . . and I do believe it smashes French power for good. Seriously, don't you think it's the best thing that's happened to us in ten years? Also, we've worked very hard for it." (3)

9

All in the Family: The Real Syndicate

Why, if so much detailed evidence on the world narcotics traffic exists in the public record or in the files of law enforcement agencies, has this picture remained hidden for so long? The answer put forward at the outset was that the "Purloined Letter" principle is in effect: the HongShang and other top traffickers who mingle freely in the business world were designed specifically to hide the drug trade behind a facade of legitimate finance. At bottom, that fraud may deceive the general public, but it could not—by itself—hold professional investigators at bay indefinitely. The more important answer lies deeper.

The answer takes the reader behind the corporate board rooms and precious metal exchanges to the inner life of the British elite. What we now present would be easier to explain in the format of fiction than of fact: the entire world drug traffic has been run by a single Family since its inception. That statement applies not merely to growing and distribution, but to political, intelligence, and ideological support as well. We will sketch out the animal in this section and in the accompanying chart.

Popular accounts of the Italian organized crime families, or their counterparts in the Jewish and expatriate Chinese banking groups, give the reader a starting point whence to look at Great Britain's oligarchy. Britain's elite, in a superficial sense, runs along lines not much different from the organized crime families. The Keswick family of Jardine Matheson, the Inchcape family of the Peninsular and Orient Steamship Co., the Russells, the Dukes of Sutherland and Elgin, appear and reappear in this account, from the first Opium War to the directors' lists of the most prominent British banks. The same interbreeding dynasty controls every major bank, mining, and transportation company in London, including the HongShang, Jardine Matheson, Barclays Bank, Anglo-American Corporation, N.M. Rothschild, and Lazard Freres. As we will show, their cousins and in-laws also control Britain's political and intelligence establishments, and have done so throughout the entire time-frame of this report.

After a more careful look, however, the "Mafia" image turns out to be something like a pornographic negative: the Italian, Jewish, Ch'ao Chou Chinese, and other ethnic minorities that figure in aspects of the narcotics traffic are fitting allies of the British oligarchy because their tight-knit family networks parallel it. But the British dynasty is deeper, more sinister than that. The dynasty enjoys such power in Britain that a favored nephew can clear opium shipments through Hong Kong, while an uncle clears payments through a big London bank, a second cousin expedites necessary gold shipments through the Hong Kong market, and an in-law in British intelligence reassures the American drug enforcement authorities.

To call this a "conspiracy" would abuse the meaning of the term. Under examination is a dynasty that has controlled Britain for hundreds of years, enjoys virtually all major positions of corporate and political power, and believes that making events happen from behind the scenes is as natural and ordinary as afternoon tea. When the chairmen of the boards of Britain's leading banks, trading houses, and mining companies show up at the same weddings and christenings (and bar mitzvahs) as the chiefs of British intelligence and various government ministries, there is no need for the formal trappings of conspiracy. Conspiratorial rituals are useful to bind together secret societies composed of otherwise unorganized individuals. But it doesn't work that way at the top. In a frank discussion, a Lazard Freres partner who is quite active in the Royal Institute of International Affairs exclaimed. "You seem to think that a group of men meets secretly in a room somewhere to hatch plots about this or that. I can assure you that it doesn't work that way!"

The British gentleman is entirely within his rights. Like the HongShang Bank itself, the British oligarchy is so much part of the bedrock of events that it does not need to act in conspiratorial fashion: by its own self-description, it merely is, and always has been. Its adherents have indulged in public self-examination only under the protective coloring of fiction, e.g. a famous novel by a member of one of the British secret societies, Bram Stoker's Dracula. Of that secret society, the "Order of the Golden Dawn," more will be said below.

THE FAMILY RELIGION

The sinister element that sets the British oligarchy apart from the popular image of the Mafia family is its unshakable belief that it alone is fit to rule the world—the view reflected in Cecil Rhodes's 1877 Testament, cited in Section 7. Their religion is not the Anglican Christianity they publicly profess, but a hodge-podge of paganism, including satanic cults such as Theosophy and Rosicrucianism. The central, syncretic ideology of the oligarchy's inner cult life is the revived Egyptian drug cult, the myth of Isis and Osiris, the same anti-Christian cult that ran the Roman Empire. And like the ancient Isis-worshipping Egyptian dynasties, the British ruling family networks have maintained power for centuries by keeping the secrets of their intrigues within the family.

The Isis cult also formed the core of Lord Palmerston's Scottish Rite of Freemasonry. As Prime Minister during both Opium Wars, Palmerston employed variants of this ideology to spin a web of connections that stretched from the Order of Zion in Romania to the Ku Klux Klan in the United States. Parts I and III of this report document how Palmerston's Scottish Rite engendered the subterranean world of drug-related mysticism, and its various secret societies, including what the public now calls "Organized Crime." (1)

The Cult of Isis, dredged up in modern format, was the official ideology of leading British politicians, financiers, and literary figures during the previous century. Its great public exponent was the colonial secretary during the Second Opium War, Edward Bulwer-Lytton, the author of The Last Days of Pompeii, which first popularized the Isis cult, and the mentor of Cecil Rhodes's whole generation of British imperialists.

The Royal Institute of International Affairs was the "secret society" called for in Rhodes's will and is the body that provides the command structure for the drug trade. But the Royal Institute itself was founded by an even more secret group: the "Circle of Initiates . . . devoted to the extension of the British Empire," in the description of one of its historians. (2) The Circle of Initiates included Lord Milner; Cecil Rhodes, the founder of Britain's African mining empire; future prime minister Arthur Balfour; Albert Grey; and Lord Rothschild.

All these men celebrated forms of the Isis cult. Their world-view was largely designed by Britain's leading exponent of the Isis cult, novelist Edward Bulwer-Lytton, and his protege John Ruskin. Britain's High Priest of Isis, Bulwer-Lytton, was also the British government's chief drug-runner.

The words of American Founding Father Tom Paine to characterize British King George III, against whom America fought the Revolutionary War, thus are highly appropriate: "I rejected the hardened, sullen-tempered Pharaoh of England forever . . . and disdain the wretch."(3)

The beginning: the Knights of St. John of Jerusalem

The elite of the elite in Britain's secret dynastic life is Her Majesty's Most Venerable Order of St. John of Jerusalem — the "Christians who are not really Christians." (4) We have already highlighted the Knights' prominence in the centers of the world drug traffic: from the Hongkong and Shanghai Bank to the Canadian Pacific in Vancouver to Barclays Bank in London. Although Queen Victoria reconstituted the Most Venerable Order in the 1880s as the Protestant British branch of the Knights of Malta, our tale properly begins much earlier with the original order of the Knights of St. John, founded in Jerusalem in 1070. The order of St. John inherited what British authors smirkingly call "the wisdom of the East" from the Coptic. Gnostic, and Manichean networks of the Eastern Mediterranean. The Order of St. John thus maintained direct continuity with the ancient Cult of Isis.

However distant from the familiarity of the American reader, the area we have entered must be viewed the way the families themselves see it. The brooding evil of Walter Scott or Robert Louis Stevenson romances, or their cheap Gothic novel imitations, gives the reader a basis for insight into the inner history of the families, and the need to begin with cobwebbed history in order to get to the bottom of Dope, Incorporated.

To begin at the beginning: in the 14th century, the Order of St. John's emergence in England was part of a project to annihilate its humanist opposition, the Knights Templar. Total warfare had broken out on the continent. The oligarchists in France and Italy, Philip the Fair and Pope Clement V, slaughtered hundreds of Templars, and burned the Templars' courageous Grand Master, Jacques de Molay, at the stake in 1314.

A renegade group of Templars under the command of an adventurous thug, King Robert Bruce, grabbed Scotland — Europe's least civilized outpost — as an "offshore" stronghold, as a form of insurance against their uncertain fortunes on the European continent. King Robert Bruce is not only the spiritual founder of the Scottish Rite of Freemasonry but the direct ancestor, by unbroken lineage, of all the men of evil in England who figure in this report.

> After the death of Jacques du Molay, some Scottish Templars. . . at the instigation of Robert Bruce ranged themselves under the banners of a New Order (The Royal Order of Scotland) instituted by this prince. . . It is there

> that we must seek the origin of the Scottish masonry. (emphasis added) (5)

This statement by a leading historian of the Masonic movement is the standard interpretation of the origin of the Scottish rite.

The Family's Opium Wars

As the accompanying Family Tree indicates, there is a direct lineage from the King Robert Bruce to the British officials who ran the first opium wars against China. James Bruce, the 8th Earl of Elgin — after supervising the Caribbean slave trade as Jamaican Governor General from 1842-46 — was appointed Ambassador and Minister Plenipotentiary to China from 1857 to 1861 — the period covering the Second Opium War against China. His brother Frederick Bruce had been Colonial Secretary at Hong Kong during the mopping-up operations following the First Opium War and returned to China in 1857 to assist his brother in delivering the British government's ultimatum to the Chinese emperor. (6)

The British Dictionary of National Biography summarizes the Chinese career of the elder Bruce succinctly:

> In 1857 Elgin was sent as envoy to China. On reaching Singapore he was met by letters from Lord Canning informing him of the Indian mutiny, and urging him to send troops to Calcutta and from the force which was to accompany him to China. With this requisition he at once complied, sending in fact the whole of the force, but he proceeded himself to Hong Kong in the expectation that troops would speedily follow. . . .
>
> He repaired to Calcutta. . . . Later in- the year he returned to China, fresh troops having been sent out (to replace those which had been directed to India — ed.). . . . Canton was speedily taken and some months later a treaty was made at Tientsin, providing, among other matters, for the appointment of a British minister, for additional

> facilities for British trade (i.e., opium — ed.). . . and for a war indemnity. (emphasis added)

Elgin returned to England in 1859.

> In the following year he was again sent to China, the Emperor having failed to ratify the treaty of Tientsin and having committed other unfriendly acts. . . . The military opposition (to Elgin's mass addiction policy — ed.) was not effective, but the Chinese resorted to treachery. (Chinese forces killed some British troops enforcing opium distribution — ed.). In retribution for this treacherous act, the summer palace, the favorite residence of the Emperor at Peking, was destroyed. A few days later the treaty of Tientsin was formally ratified. (7)

The account concludes that Elgin's "letters show he was a man of warm affections, eminently domestic, with very decided convictions on religion. . . ."

Who was running England at the time? The prime minister was the same Lord Palmerston who turned the Scottish Rite into Britain's leading cash-producing export product. The foreign secretary was Lord John Russell, son of the 6th Duke of Bedford, and grandfather of Britain's most dangerous 20th century intelligence operative —• Bertrand Russell.

Palmerston and Russell were relatives of the Bruce brothers, the Elgin peerage, by marriage into the direct line of Order of St. John control over England. The branch that encompasses Britain's two leading cabinet ministers during the Second Opium War is the Villiers line. The line began with George Villiers, who assisted Robert Cecil and Edward Bruce in seizing the English throne for another descendant of Robert Bruce — James I of Scotland — in 1603. (8)

Lord Russell's daughter, Victoria, married into the Villiers family. Russell's grandson, Bertrand, among his other covert operations, maintained liaison with Chou En-lai throughout the postwar period on behalf of British intelligence, at the height of the Anglo-Chinese drug traffic. (9)

Even more significant is the third member of the London team during the Opium Wars — Colonial Secretary Edward Bulwer-Lytton, a relation by marriage of the Duke of Wellington. His son married Edith Villiers, of the same branch of the leading Order of St. John dynasty.

The imperial cultists and opium

Bulwer-Lytton is best known to Americans through his 1838 novel, The Last Days of "Pompeii, but he is also both the spiritual father of the Rhodes-Milner secret societies and of Nazi fascism. A mystic and prenascent fascist, Bulwer-Lytton led the English Rosicrucians, a branch of the Scottish Rite Masons headed by his Prime Minister Palmerston.

Unlike the comparatively closed members of the British elite around him, Bulwer-Lytton was an outspoken exponent of the Isis cult, which formed the subject of his famous novel. His popularized Isis myth was the inspiration for an entire array of warped imitations.

Included among these was Helena Blavatsky's book, Isis Unveiled, and her Theosophist cult. Theosophy was the Satanic bible of the mystic secret societies, including Germany's "Thule" group, which produced most of Hitler's SS. (10)

Another Bulwer-Lytton protege was satanist Aleister Crowley, of the "Thule" group's equivalent in England, the "Isis-Urania Hermetic Order of the Golden Dawn." Both of these groups traced their lineage back to Palmerston's Scottish Rite Masons through Bulwer-Lytton. (11)

Aieister Crowley was the tutor of Aldous Huxley, the prophet of mind control, who later introduced the LSD cult into the United States during the 1950s (see Part IV). (12)

Britain's imperial link to Nazi fascism is even more direct in the case of Bulwer-Lytton's other published work. His novel Rienzi, about the Knights of St. John, provided the text of Richard Wagner's first opera. His 1871 novel, Vril: The Power of the Coming Race, contained virtually everything that Houston Stewart Chamberlain later had to say on racial theory; Prof.

A victim of Britain's Opium War against the U.S.

2

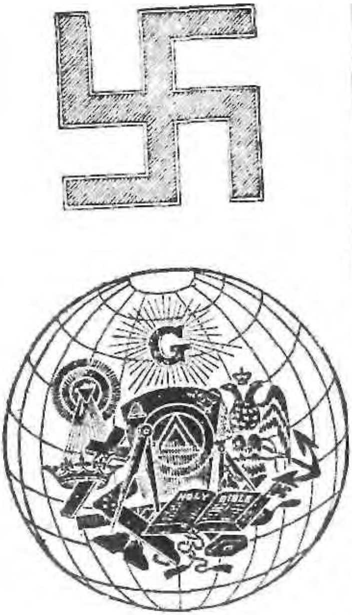
G
HOLY BIBLE

3

4

5

6

2. Rudyard Kipling
3. The symbols of the Scottisch Rite of Freemasonry
4. Milton Friedman
5. Adam Smith
6. A 19th century Chinese opium smoker

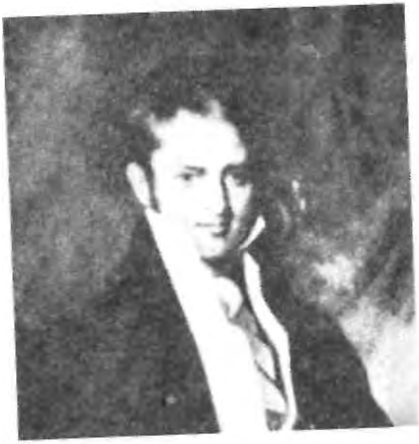

7

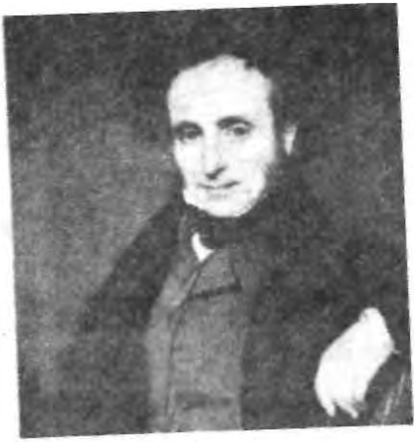

8

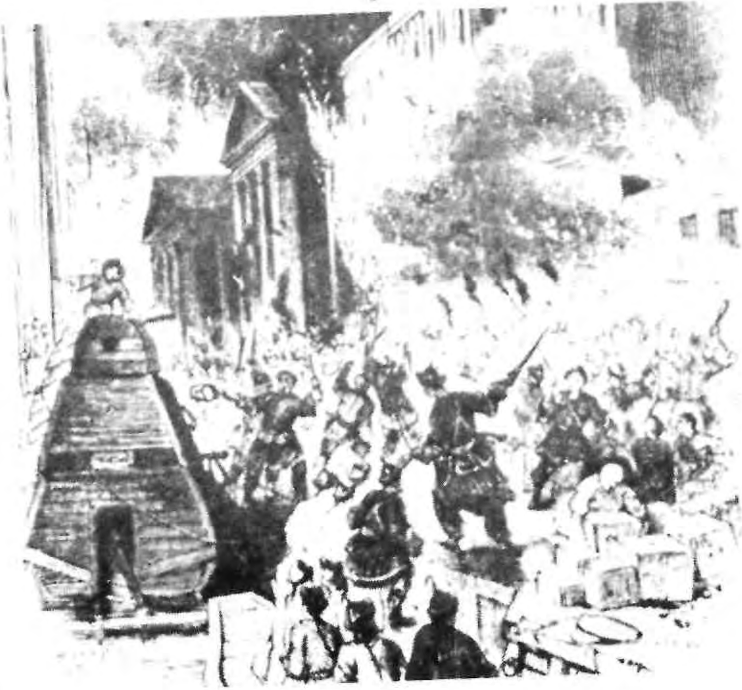

9

7. William Jardine
8. James Matheson
9. An artist's depiction of the First Opium War

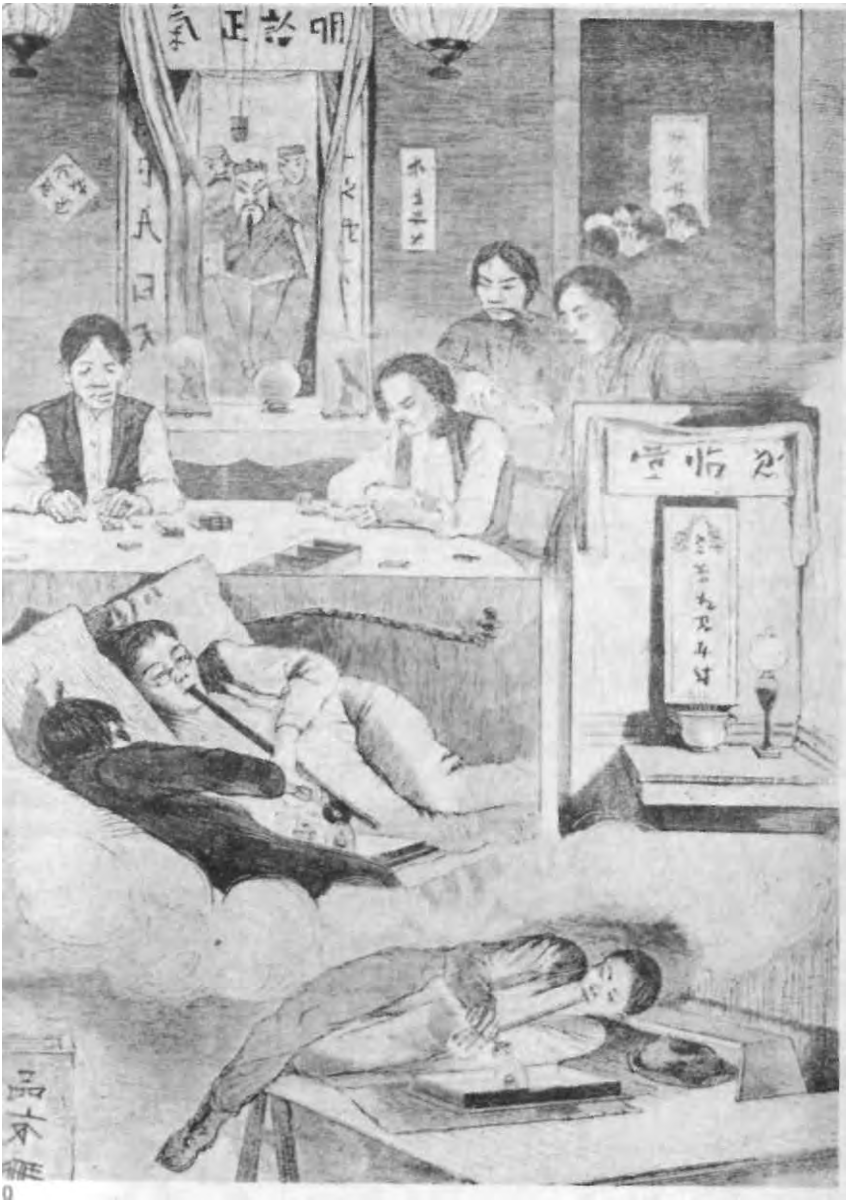

10. A Chinese-American opium den (by artist Winslow Homer) as depicted in Harper's, 1874

11

11. Giuseppe Mazzini
12. Chinese "coolies" — opium smokers — at work on *U.S.* railroad
13. Lehman Bros. (Lehman & Durr) office in Montgomery, Alabama shortly after the Civil War; the same building *houses* The Oddfellows secret society
14. Lincoln's assassination by John Wilkes Booth, *a British agent* (artist's depiction)

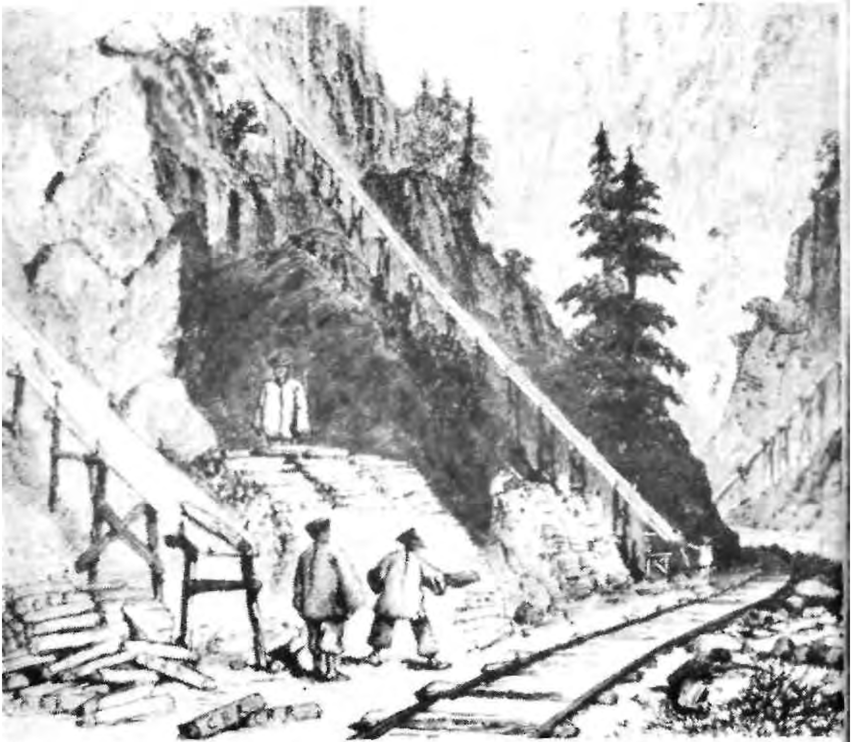

13

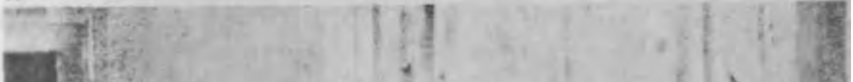

14

15

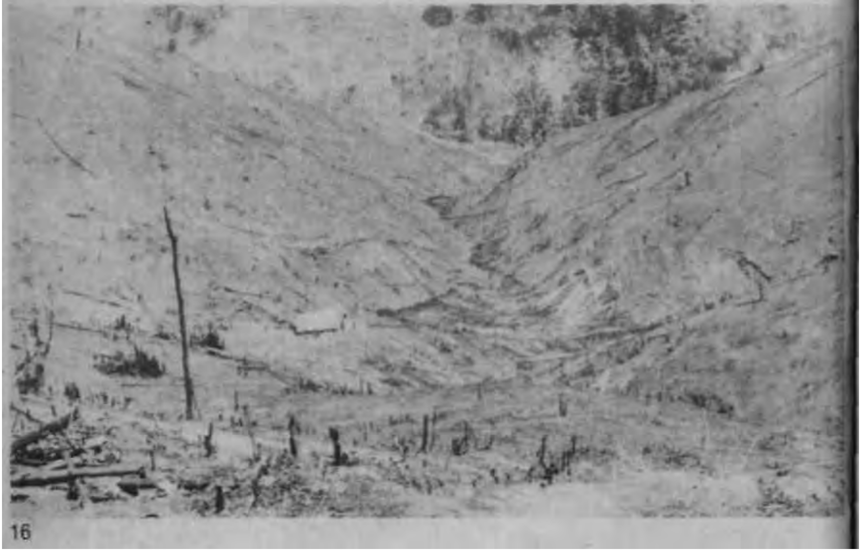

16

15. A mule-team convoy carrying opium through northern Thailand (1967)
16. Hillsides in northern Thailand devastated by the planting of opium poppies

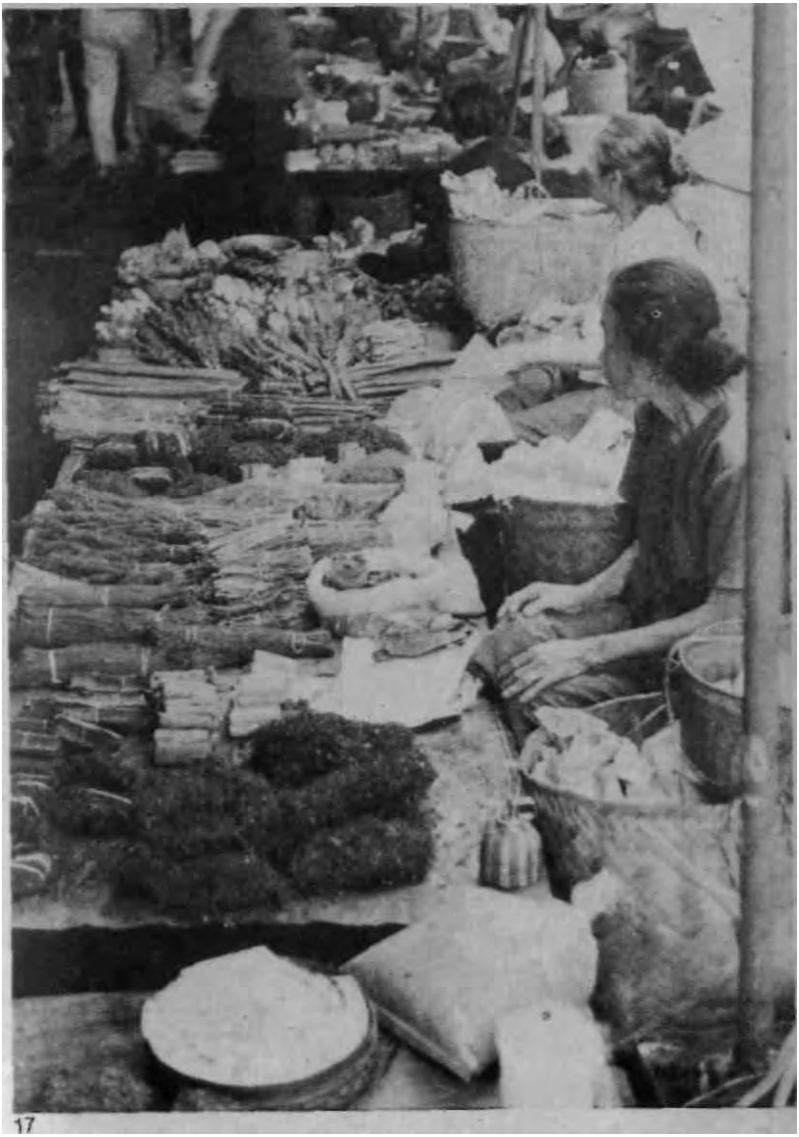

17. A drug-stand in the open market place, Vientiane. Laos (1967)

18. Chin Sophonpanich, Chairman, with other directors of the Bank of Bangkok

19

20

19. Chinese expatriate gold-dealer (Woo Hong-fai), Hong Kong, 1977
20. Udorn Tejapaibul, Chairman, Bangkok Metropolitan Bank

21

22

21. The Crown Colony of Hong Kong, financial center of the drug trade

22. Brian Slevin, Hong Kong Chief of Police

23. M.G.R. Sandberg, Chairman, The Hongkong and Shanghai Bank

24. The Hongkong and Shanghai Bank building

25. Hongkong and Shanghai emblem

26. Current notes issued by the Hongkong and Shanghai and the Standard Chartered banks in Hong Kong; at bottom, an 1879 issue of the Anglo-Egyptian Bank (Barclays)

23

24

25

10
THE CHARTERED BANK
10
769207
10
THE HONGKONG AND SHANGHAI BANKING CORPORATION
JP321253
JP321253
TEN DOLLARS
HONG KONG 31ST OCTOBER, 1973.
HONG KONG
圓拾
The Anglo Egyptian Banking Company Limited
£ TWENTY
20

26

27

28

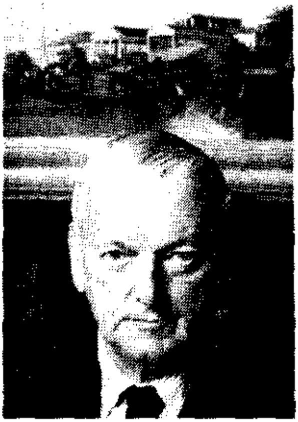
29

30

31

32

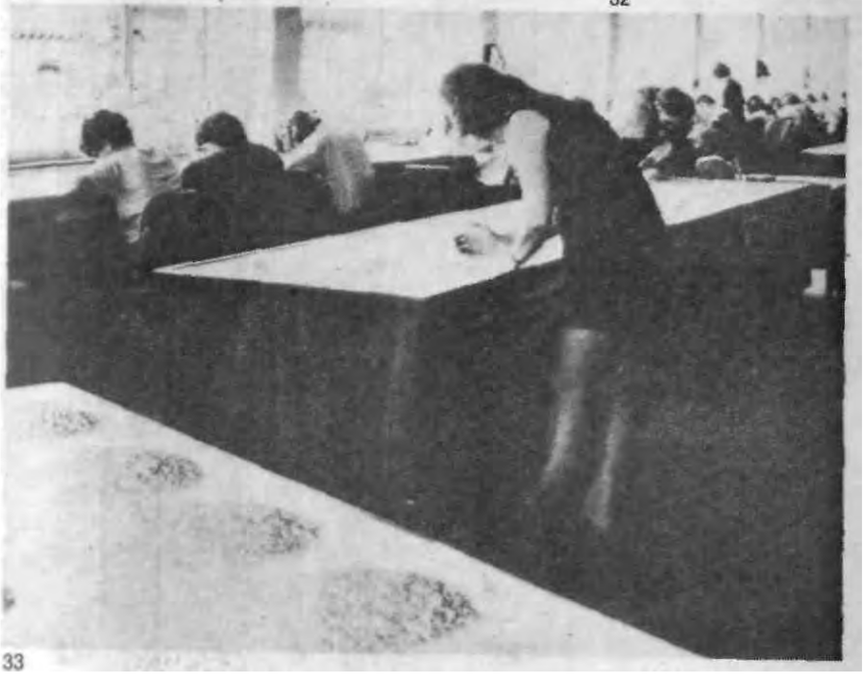

33

27. Henry Keswick, Sr., Managing Director, Jardine Matheson
28. Sir Mark Turner. Chairman Rio Tinto Zinc, and Governing Council, the Royal Institute of International Affairs
29. John Keswick, Director, Matheson and Co.
30. David Newbigging, Managing Director, Jardine Matheson
31. Bars of gold distributed by Mocatta Metals
32. Harry Oppenheimer
33. Diamonds sorted by quality, shape and color

34

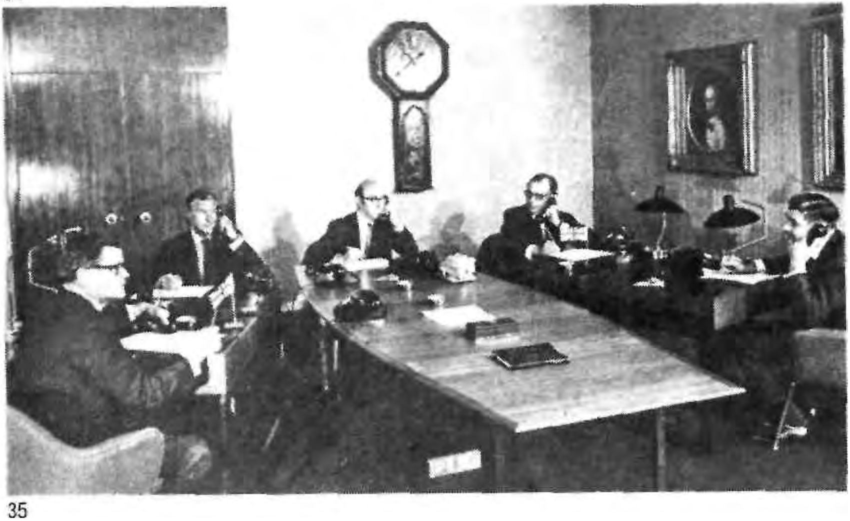

35

34. Henry Jarecki (c) with Edward Mocatta (r) and Keith S. Smith, Managing Director. Mocatta and Goldsmid
35. A morning gold-fixing, N.M. Rothschilds, London (second from right, Edward Mocatta)

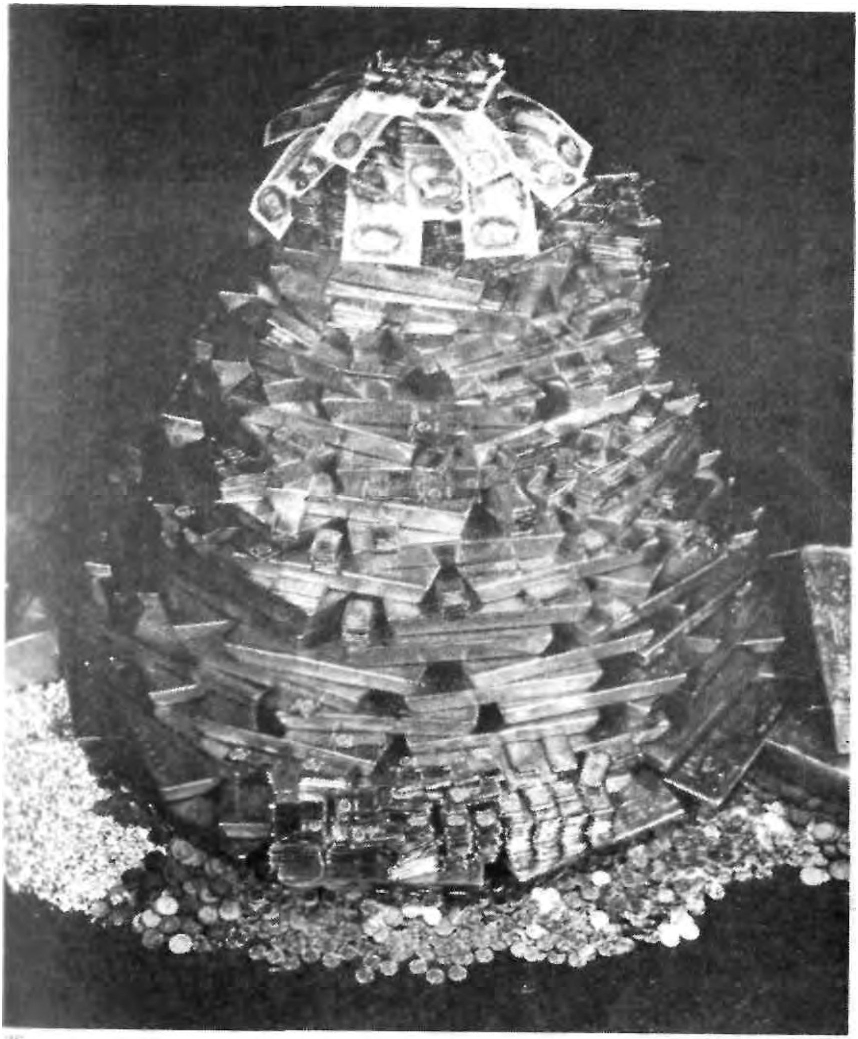

36

36. "Bullion Pile" prepared for a visiting Queen Elizabeth II by Mocatta's parent bank (valued at £6,000,000)

37

38

39

40

41

37. Mao Tse-tung with U.S. General Hurley, 1949: double-cross
38. Chinese Premier Chou En-lai, 1949
39. Bertrand Lord Russell
40. Walter Lockhart Gordon (r) with Peter C. Newman (c) and Abraham Rotstein of Canada's "China Lobby"
41. Lord Amory, 31st Governor, G.T. Richardson, 32nd Governor, and A.J. Macintosh, Deputy Governor of the Hudson's Bay Company in 1971

42

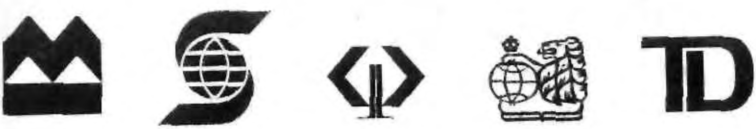

43

45

42. Queen Elizabeth II with Canadian Prime Minister Pierre Elliot Trudeau, 1978
43. Corporate emblems of the Canadian money-laundering banks: Bank of Montreal, Bank of Nova Scotia, Canadian Imperial Bank, Royal Canadian Bank, Toronto Dominion Bank
44. John Ruskin
45. Cecil Rhodes

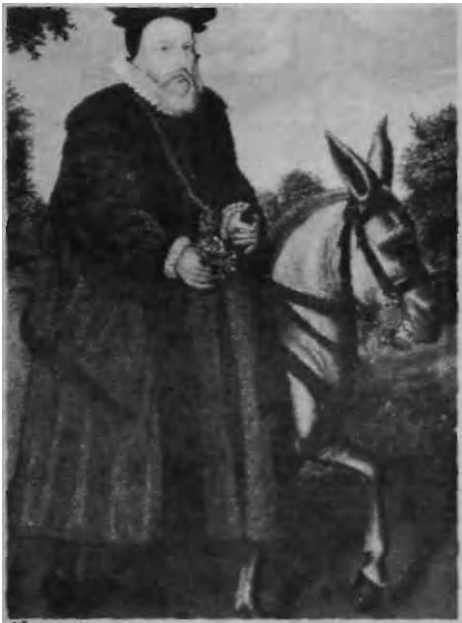

46

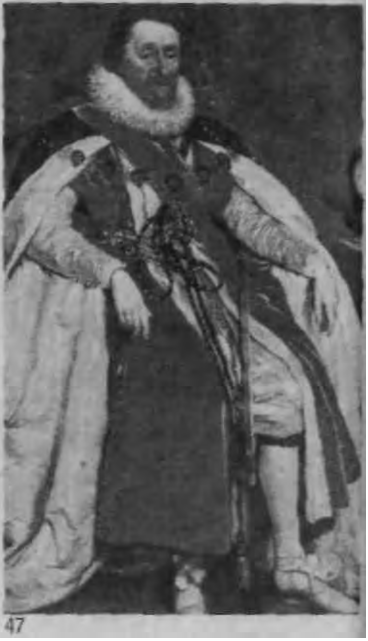

47

46. Robert Cecil, Lord Burghley, who delivered Tudor England to the Order of Malta's House of Stuart
47. Stuart James VI of Scotland, James I of England (1603-1625).
48. Grand Master of the Order of St. John of Jerusalem, Villiers de I'Isle-Adam entering Malta in 1530
49. The Seal of the Knights Templar
50. A 14th century Knight of St. John depicted kneeling before Rhodes, the order's home base before the Hapsburg gift of Malta

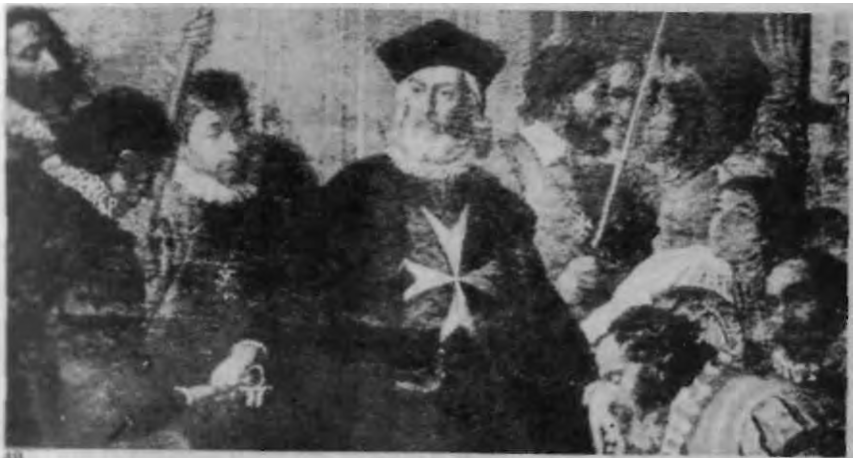

48

SIGILLVM MILITVM XPISTI

49

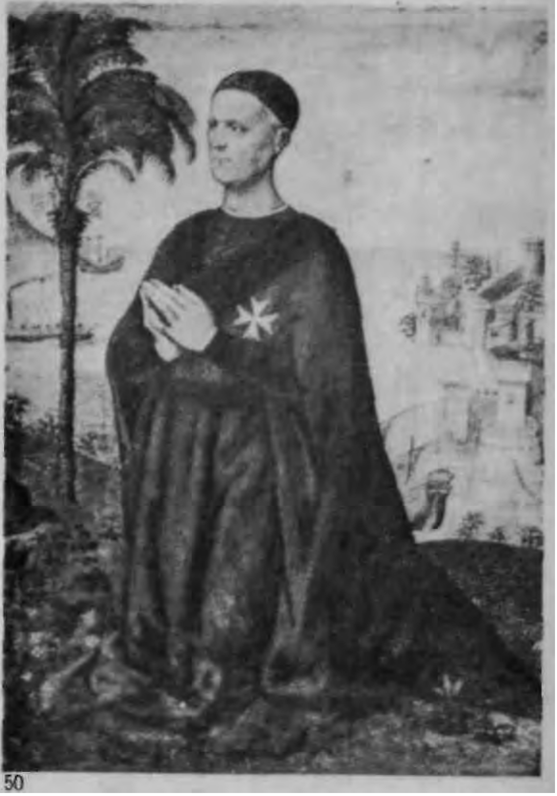

50

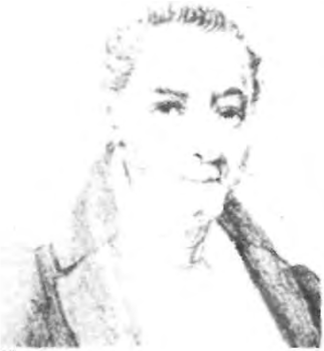
51

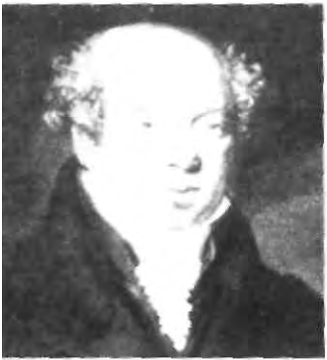
52

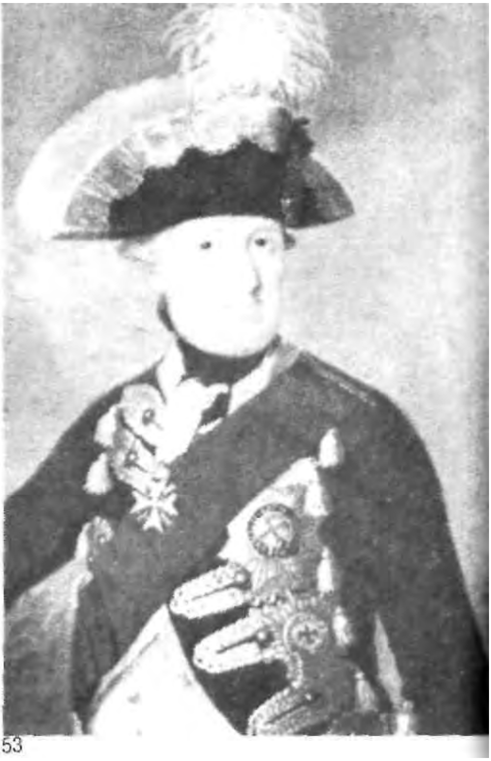
53

51. Amschel Rothschild, 18th century German founder of the family's financial empire
52. Nathan Rothschild, founder of the family's British branch
53. Prince William IX of Hesse Cassel, first patron of the Rothschilds, whose Prussian field marshal's uniform is decorated by a Cross of Malta

54

55

54. Modern rites of the Order of St. John of Jerusalem
55. Winston Churchill in Warden of Cinque Ports costume for the 1953 coronation of Elizabeth II

56

57

58

56. The current Cecil, Lord Harlech
57. Joseph P. Kennedy during the whiskey-running years
58. John Fitzgerald Kennedy and Robert Francis Kennedy

59

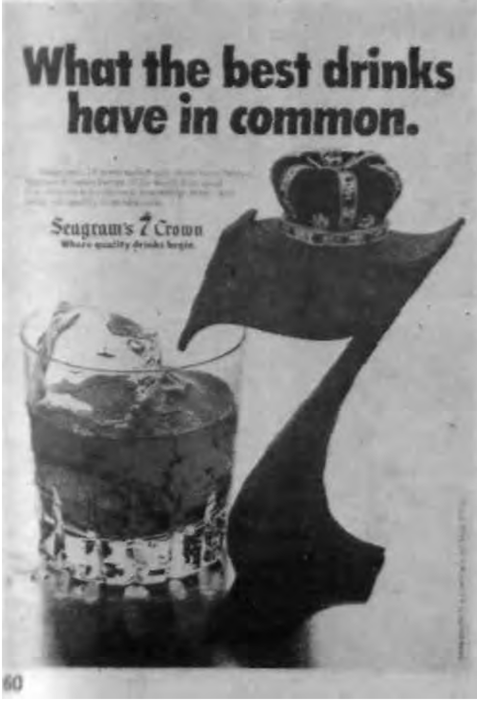

What the best drinks have in common.

Seagram's 7 Crown

Where quality drinks begin.

60

59. *Edgar Bronfman*
60. The whiskey his father Samuel ran into the USA during Prohibition

61

62

63

64

65

66

67

68

69

61. Arnold Rothstein
62. Meyer Lansky
63. Thomas E. Dewey, re-organizer of organized crime in the 1930s
64. Al Capone
65. Charles "Lucky" Luciano
66. Johnny Torrio
67. Abner "Longie" Zwillman
68. "Bugsy" Siegel
69. John F. Kennedy, beginning the 1963 motorcade in Dallas that ended in his assassination
70. Major Louis Bloomfield, wearing the Cross of Malta

70

71

72

71. The Beatles are introduced to America
72. The British intelligence cult of Hare Krishna

73

74

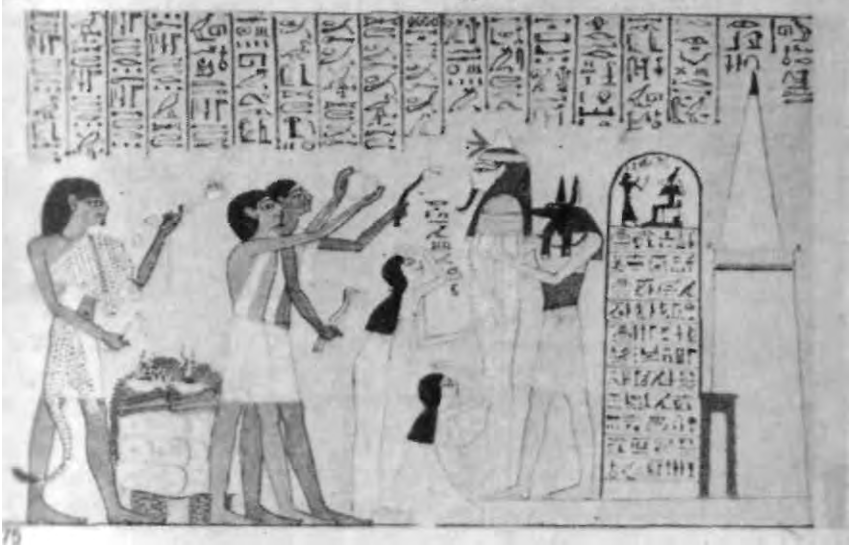

75

73. Aldous Huxley
74. Aleister Crowley, in robes of the Order of the Golden Dawn
75. Ancient Egyptian wall-painting, depicting the death rites of the Cult of Isis (now in British Museum)

76

76. The Drug Lobby: Senators Jacob Javits and Edward Kennedy

Karl Haushofer, who ghost-wrote most of Mein Kampf in Hitler's prison cell 50 years later, named his first secret organization the "Vril Society." (13) Bulwer-Lytton's Nazi German and British secret societies met officially for the last time when Nazi minister Rudolf Hess attempted to make contact in 1941 by flying to Britain.

Bulwer-Lytton directly influenced John Ruskin at Oxford University and established the lineage that leads — through such names as Milner and Rhodes — to the present-day Royal Institute of International Affairs. Ruskin's students included Milner, Rhodes, Albert Grey, and the future director of research for the RIIA, Arnold Toynbee.

Ruskin's inaugural speech at Oxford in 1870, inspired by Bulwer-Lytton, left such an impression on Cecil Rhodes that he carried a handwritten version of it with him until he died. The speech — which set the tone for Rhodes's 1877 will quoted in Section 7 — stated in part:

> There is a destiny now possible to us — the highest ever set before a nation, to be accepted or refused. We are still undegenerate in race; a race mingled of the best northern blood. . . . We are rich in an inheritance of honour, which it should be our daily thirst to increase with splendid avarice. . . . (England) must found colonies as fast and as far as she is able . . . seizing every piece of fruitful ground she can set her foot on, and teaching these her colonists that their . . . first aim is to advance the power of England by land and sea.. . . (14)

Bulwer-Lytton's son Edward Lytton was Viceroy and Governor-General in India 1876-80. Two aspects of the younger Lytton's rule in India are important to this report. First, Lytton supervised the single greatest expansion period in the history of opium production in British India. (15) As noted in Part I, Palmerston had set forth this task as a means of compensating for Britain's industrial decline relative to the United States. It was fitting that the son of his former cabinet colleague and fellow cultist personally carried out Palmerston's opium-expansion program.

Secondly, Edward Lytton's rule in India provided a home for the most important of the crackpot cultists inspired by his father. Lytton himself was the closest friend of Rudyard Kipling's parents, members of the circle around A. P. Sinnett's Allahabad journal The Pioneer. (16) The elder Bulwer-Lytton's follower Madame Blavatsky, of the Theosophy Cult, appeared in India in 1879, and recruited A. P. Sinnett to her belief-structure. (17) Both Kipling and Blavatsky employed the swastika as their personal mystic symbol. From Kipling, Blavatsky, Haushofer, and others, the swastika found its way into the German cults that formed the core of later Nazism.

Kipling's last major official post was under press czar Lord Beaverbrook at the wartime Propaganda Ministry; working side-by-side with him was a relative of the Lyttons' by marriage, Sir Charles Hambro. Hambro went on to run Britain's dirty operations during World War II as chief of the Special Operations Executive from 1942 onwards. Kipling also served as a trustee of the Rhodes Trust from 1917-25.

Kipling's cousin, Stanley Baldwin, was prime minister from 1923-29 and 1935-37; during his second tenure, the Baldwin government groomed Hitler as a "marcher lord" against the Soviet Union, setting the stage for Munich 1938. (18)

Another well-known British literary figure, also with a mystical bent, deserves mention in this context: Alfred, Lord Tennyson. Tennyson married the niece of the 8th Lord of Elgin (James Bruce), and remained a close personal friend of the commander-in-chief of the Second Opium War. Tennyson was a founding member of the Metaphysical Society, with Bulwer-Lytton's protege John Ruskin, Lord John Russell's uncle Lord Arthur Russell, future prime minister Arthur Balfour, and Thomas Huxley. (19) In 1880, the Metaphysical Society was reorganized, and became the Aristotelian Society. Lord John Russell's grandson Bertrand Russell became the Aristotelian Society's President 1913-14 and 1935-37; one of his successors was Sir Karl Popper. The Aristotelian Society remains the Apollonian side of British intelligence's High Priesthood.

Tennyson's unambiguous endorsement of opium abuse was expressed in his well-known poem, "The Lotus Eaters":

Let us swear an oath, and keep it with an equal mind,
In the hollow Lotus-land to live and lie reclined,
On the hills like Gods together, careless of Mankind. (20)

Today's opium dynasty

The closing days of the Baldwin government and the opening days of World War II are an appropriate place to pick up the contemporary trail of the leading opium families — the Inchcapes and Keswicks. In 1939 the creation of Britain's Ministry for Economic Warfare offered a meeting place for the old families: Sir John Henry Keswick, later the architect of the Peking Connection; Sir Mark Turner, the current chairman of the old Matheson-Keswick firm Rio Tinto Zinc; Gerald Hyde Villiers, a leading scion of the evil old family; and John Kidston Swire, of the old Swire dope-trading family.

Starting from the Matheson family's role in the first Opium War and tracing through to the World War II period and up to the present, the fortunes of the Matheson and Keswick line of the dynasty run the entire gamut of political developments surrounding the drug trade.

The Rio Tinto Zinc Company was founded in 1873 by James Sutherland Matheson's nephew Hugh Matheson — taking the lineage of that firm all the way back to the days of George III and the American Revolution through then-Prime Minister Spencer Perceval. The younger Matheson founded the firm with his uncle's opium profits and help from the Schroeder banking family — who in 1931 funded Bulwer-Lytton's ideological spawn Adolf Hitler. The Lyttons and Mathesons are relatives by marriage, through the Villiers family and the Sutherland family.

Hugh Matheson's successor at Rio Tinto Zinc in 1898 was J. J. Keswick, a partner in the opium-running Jardine Matheson firm, and a relative of the Mathesons by marriage through the Fraser family.

Apart from their leading role in Jardine Matheson, J. J. Keswick's family had a leading role in the British governance of the official opium trade. His cousin, William P. Keswick, was

British Consul-General in Hong Kong during the same years that Edward Lytton, Governor-General in India, was expanding opium output according to the Palmerston program.

William P. Keswick's son Henry Keswick, a past chairman of the Hongkong and Shanghai Bank at the height of its dope-trading glory, had three sons: David, John H., and William J. David Keswick is still among the largest shareholders and a partner of the London merchant bank Samuel Montagu. Sitting with him on the board of directors of Samuel Montagu is Rio Tinto Zinc's current chairman Sir Mark Turner. Turner, as noted, also worked with brother Sir John Henry Keswick in the Ministry of Economic Warfare. Later, John Henry went on to the British embassy in Chungking, picking up the opium trail where World War II had cut it off (see Section 7).

The third brother, Sir William Johnston Keswick, is the protagonist of Section 8 dealing with Canada; as previously documented, Keswick ruled the Shanghai Municipal Settlements at the height of Shanghai's heroin traffic, and set up the first big heroin connection, via intermediary Jacob "Yasha" Katzenberg (see Part III Section 1).

The family history of the Keswicks intersects the story of the Russells, Villiers, and Bruces through their most senior political operatives, notably Lord Milner. Milner, Cecil Rhodes's protege and one of racist John Ruskin's early trainees, bridged the gap between the establishment of the Rhodes Trust and the creation of the Royal Institute of International Affairs in 1920. Milner became a director of Rio Tinto Zinc in 1921, and served as chairman from 1922 until his death in 1925.

More important, however, is Milner's joint work with the Keswick family in setting forth the "geopolitical" policy than finds its most succinct expression today in Britain's proposed alliance with China against the Soviet Union. As documented above, that policy includes a free hand for British drug-running.

This option first saw the light of day through the World War I collaboration of Lord Milner, William Boyce Thompson, and wartime British Commissioner in St. Petersburg, Frederick Lindley. During his wartime mission to Russia, according to the History of the London Times, a documentary source, Lord Milner worked closely with Frederick Lrndley to install and then, unsuccessfully, to maintain in power, Alexander Kerensky. (21) This followed Britain's post-American-Civil War policy of fostering a weak and dependent Russia.

Frederick Lindley was the grandfather of Henry Neville Lindley Keswick, who currently occupies the traditional family seats at the head of Jardine Matheson's directors and on the board of the Hongkong and Shanghai Bank.

The third member of the Milner team, William Boyce Thompson, was the head of the Red Cross delegation in Russia; the Red Cross is, officially, the "charitable" side of the Order of St. John of Jerusalem. (22) After the war, Thompson, with funding from the Morgan bank, established the Anglo-American mining firm in South Africa — which now controls 60 percent of world gold output outside the Soviet Union, and, through its controlling interest in De Beers, virtually all the diamond output (see Section 4). That is the origin of London's top-down control over the precious metals and gems channels for laundering dirty money.

To tie these strands back into the main line of the narcotics traffic: Milner's hand-picked successor at Rio Tinto Zinc, whose original mines were in Spain, was Sir Auckland Geddes. Geddes, who ruled until 1952, was a sponsor of Francisco Franco's fascist coup in Spain. (23) His nephew, Ford Irvine Geddes, was a director and then chairman from 1971-72 of the Inchcape family's huge shipping complex, the P&O Steamship Company, which has shipped more opium than any other entity in the world.

One of P&O's officers, deputy chairman Sir Eric Drake, is a close associate of Sir William Johnston Keswick, also of the old Rio Tinto Zinc family (see Section 8). Drake and W. J. Keswick jointly control Canada's Hudson's Bay Company, which established the rum-running routes from Canada into the United States during Prohibition, together with the Bronfmans.

The old Inchcape family, whose current scion, the 3rd Earl of Inchcape, still is chairman of the P&O Lines, is closely related to the Matheson family of Jardine Matheson. The founder of Jardine Matheson, James Sutherland Matheson, was the son of Katherine Mackay and Donald Matheson; Mackay is the family name of the Earls of Inchcape. The 3rd Earl, J. W. Mackay, is the son of the 2nd Earl of Inchcape, who authored the infamous 1923 Inchcape Report, insisting that the opium trade must be maintained to "protect the revenues" of the British Empire — despite the outcry of the League of Nations.

Through the current Lord Inchcape, the old opium dynasty married into the highest level of British banking. The aforementioned J. W. Mackay of the P&O Lines married Aline Pease, his brother-in-law, Richard T. Pease, has been the vice-chairman of Barclays Bank since 1970. Barclays Bank, as noted above, is the controlling institution for the entire array of Israeli financial operations, through its control over the current Japhet family bank — Charterhouse Japhet. The current senior Japhet family member, Ernst Israel Japhet, is now. the chairman of Israel's biggest commercial bank, Bank Leumi. Barclays Bank controls outright Israel's second-largest commercial bank, the Israel Discount Bank, also known as Barclays discount bank.

Taking together the Inchcapes, Keswicks, Peases and related families, control over London's banking establishment becomes a swirl of intermarriages, to the point that the top London banks and the scions of the drug trade appear as a single family entity, rather than competing or even parallel institutions. For example, the current deputy chairman of Inchcape and Co. — the family, holding company that owns majority stock in the P&O Lines — is Sir Hugh Mackay-Tallack. Mackay-Tallack is also the deputy chairman of the Standard and Chartered Bank, the second-largest bank in the Far East after the HongShang. The 3rd Lord Inchcape himself, J. W. Mackay, is also a director of Standard and Chartered, along with cousin Sir Hugh.

As the reader can judge from the chart, the Pease branch of the Family is further closely related to:

* The Schroeder Bank, whose chairman, the 10th Earl of Airlie, is the brother-in-law of A. D. F. Lloyd, of the bank that bears his name.

*Kuhn Loeb, whose leading partner was Otto Kahn; his granddaughter is the wife of the 10th Earl of Airlie, the chairman of Schroeder Bank.

* The family of Winston Churchill, whose mother-in-law is an Airlie;

* The Lazard group, related to the Churchills by marriage; Lazard controls the London Financial Times, the Economist, Penguin books, as well as one of Britain's top merchant banks. It should be remembered that the Lytton family and the Keswick family are related to each other, via marriage through the Fraser family, whose current leading member is deputy chairman of Lazard.

The British and American Hofjuden are represented at the borders of this complex. As noted, the 10th Earl of Airlie married the granddaughter of Otto Kahn, Capo of American Hofjuden; his sister, Margaret Ogilvie, married into a branch of the dynasty (see chart) that, in turn, married into the Rothschilds.

The Rothschilds were the first of a number of leading families to come up the ladder through intermarriage with the leading families — an award for special service to the British monarchy. Other prominent examples are the Kennedys and Bronfmans.

After a display of Anglophilia during his tenure as America's Ambassador to the Court of St. James, Joseph Kennedy achieved his ultimate social-climbing ideal: his daughter Kathleen married the son of the 10th Duke of Devonshire. After their elevation to the status of leading Hofjuden during the 1930s, the Bronfmans intermarried with the French de Gunzberg family and the Belgian Lambert family (the Belgian branch of the Rothschilds). However, Edgar Bronfman's attempt to wed Caroline Townshend, the direct descendant of the Lord Townshend who precipitated the American Revolution through a tea tax, came to naught. Shortly after their 1972 marriage, Edgar Bronfman sued for divorce, on the grounds that the English noblewoman had denied him connubial relations. Apparently, there are limits to what the British families will suffer from social-climbing Hofjuden.

Few even among specialist readers will appreciate how many significant historical and intelligence problems of the last hundred years are clarified, in one degree or another, by this summary description of the Family. Only a small portion of the names listed on the chart, or their historical significance, has been presented in this section. Nonetheless, the point is irrevocably established for the general reader that the individuals named throughout this section are part of a single family operation, whose members take critical roles in furthering the opium trade, financing the opium trade, and directing the opium trade — wherever the opium trade is a matter of public record. This includes every crucial juncture of Dope, Incorporated: the period of opium production expandion in India, the Opium Wars against China, the Shanghai Connection of 1928, the Peking Connection of the World War II period and after, and the Opium War against the United States.

The point is also indisputably established that this has been and is the policy of the British government and, through the Most Venerable Order of the Knights of St. John of Jerusalem, the British Monarchy itself.

The Dynasty of Robert Bruce

THE DRUG FAMILY TREE

List of Abbreviations

A.D.C., aide decamp
Aff., affairs
Amb., ambassador

B.. baron
B.P., British Petroleum

Can., Canada
Chan., chancellor
Chm., chairman
Cons., consul

d., died
Dau., daughter
Dir., director
Dpty., deputy

Env., envoy
Exch., exchequer
Extr., Min. Plen., extraordinary, Minister Plenipotentiary

Fin., financial, finances

G.C.M.G., Grand Cross of St. Michael and St. George
Geo., George
Gen., general
Gov., governor

HK, Hong Kong

Intell., intelligence

K.G., Knight of the Garter
KG. St. John, Knight of Grace of the Order of St. John

L.G. St. John, Lord of Grace of the Order of St. John
Lt., lieutenant
Ltd., limited

m., married
Mem., member
M.E.W., Ministry of Economic Warfare
Min., minister
Mvmt., movement

Neth., Netherlands

P.M., Prime Minister
Parl., parliamentary
Pres., president
Ptnr., partner

R.I.I.A., Royal Institute of International Affairs
RTZ, Rio Tinto Zinc

S.O.E., Special Operations Executive
Soc., society

Tee., trustee

U-, under-

V., vice

• denotes chart overlap

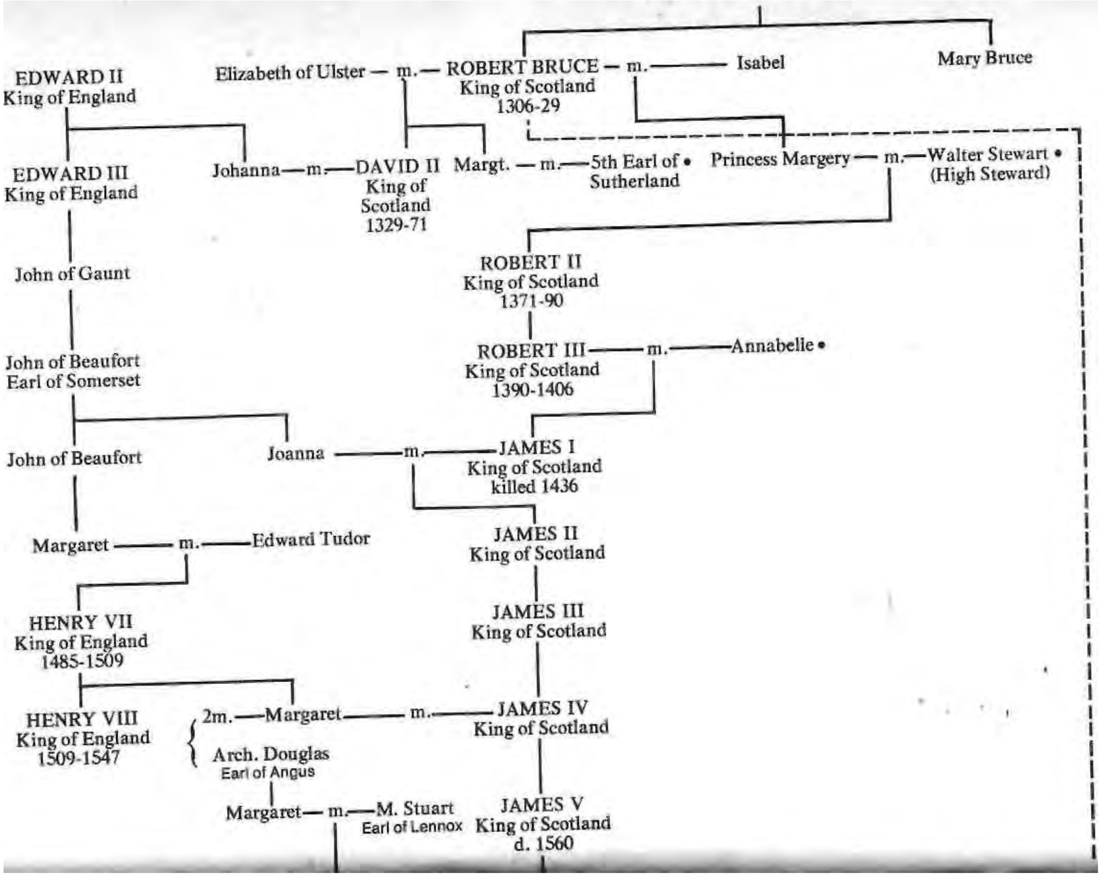
EDWARD II
King of England
Elizabeth of Ulster — m.— ROBERT BRUCE — m.— Isabel
King of Scotland
1306-29
Mary Bruce
EDWARD III
King of England
Johanna—m.—DAVID II
King of Scotland
1329-71
Margt. — m.—5th Earl of •
Sutherland
Princess Margery — m.—Walter Stewart •
(High Steward)
John of Gaunt
ROBERT II
King of Scotland
1371-90
ROBERT III—m.—Annabelle •
King of Scotland
1390-1406
John of Beaufort
Earl of Somerset
John of Beaufort
Joanna —m.—JAMES I
King of Scotland
killed 1436
Margaret —m.—Edward Tudor
JAMES II
King of Scotland
HENRY VII
King of England
1485-1509
JAMES III
King of Scotland
HENRY VIII
King of England
1509-1547
2m.—Margaret—m.—JAMES IV
King of Scotland
Arch. Douglas
Earl of Angus
Margaret— m.—M. Stuart
Earl of Lennox
JAMES V
King of Scotland
d. 1560

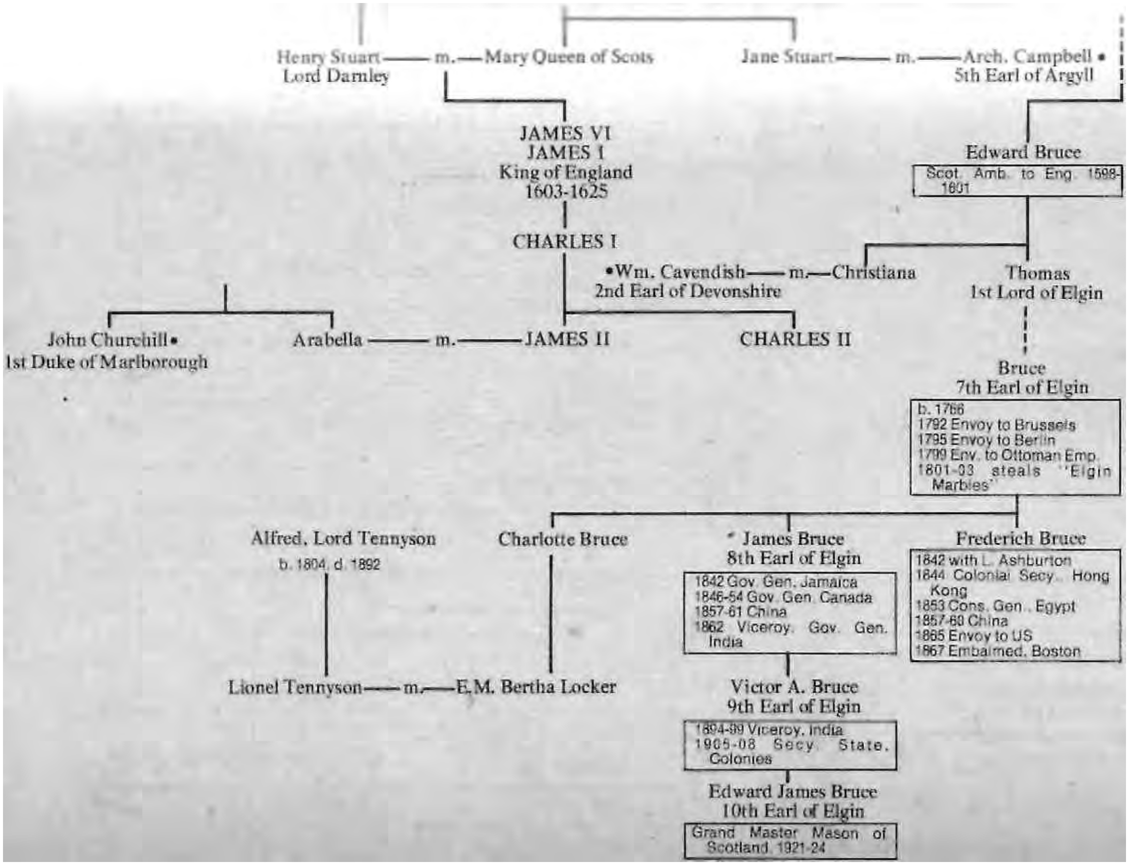
Henry Stuart—— m.—Mary Queen of Scots
Lord Darnley
Jane Stuart—— m.——Arch. Campbell •
5th Earl of Argyll
JAMES VI
JAMES I
King of England
1603-1625
Edward Bruce
Scot. Amb. to Eng. 1598-1601
CHARLES I
•Wm. Cavendish—— m.—Christiana
2nd Earl of Devonshire
Thomas
1st Lord of Elgin
John Churchill •
1st Duke of Marlborough
Arabella —— m. ——JAMES II
CHARLES II
Bruce
7th Earl of Elgin
b. 1766
1792 Envoy to Brussels
1795 Envoy to Berlin
1799 Env. to Ottoman Emp.
1801-03 steals "Elgin Marbles"
Alfred, Lord Tennyson
b. 1804, d. 1892
Charlotte Bruce
* James Bruce
8th Earl of Elgin
1842 Gov. Gen. Jamaica
1846-54 Gov. Gen. Canada
1857-61 China
1862 Viceroy. Gov. Gen. India
Frederich Bruce
1842 with L. Ashburton
1844 Colonial Secy., Hong Kong
1853 Cons. Gen., Egypt
1857-60 China
1865 Envoy to US
1867 Embalmed, Boston
Lionel Tennyson—— m.—E.M. Bertha Locker
Victor A. Bruce
9th Earl of Elgin
1894-99 Viceroy, India
1905-08 Secy. State, Colonies
Edward James Bruce
10th Earl of Elgin
Grand Master Mason of Scotland 1921-24

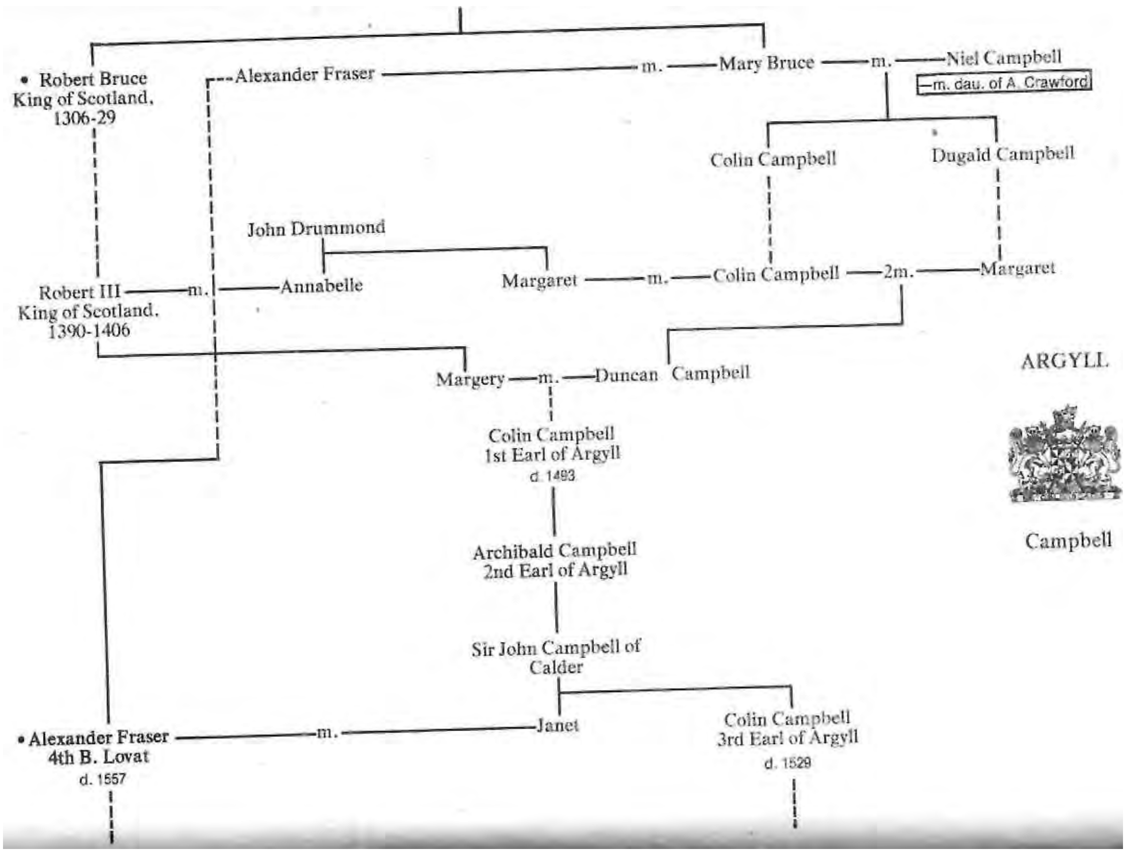
• Robert Bruce
King of Scotland,
1306-29
Alexander Fraser
m.
Mary Bruce
m.
Niel Campbell
m. dau. of A. Crawford
Colin Campbell
Dugald Campbell
John Drummond
Robert III
m.
Annabelle
King of Scotland,
1390-1406
Margaret
m.
Colin Campbell
2m.
Margaret
Margery
m.
Duncan
Campbell
ARGYLL
Campbell
Colin Campbell
1st Earl of Argyll
d. 1493
Archibald Campbell
2nd Earl of Argyll
Sir John Campbell of
Calder
• Alexander Fraser
4th B. Lovat
d. 1557
m.
Janet
Colin Campbell
3rd Earl of Argyll
d. 1529

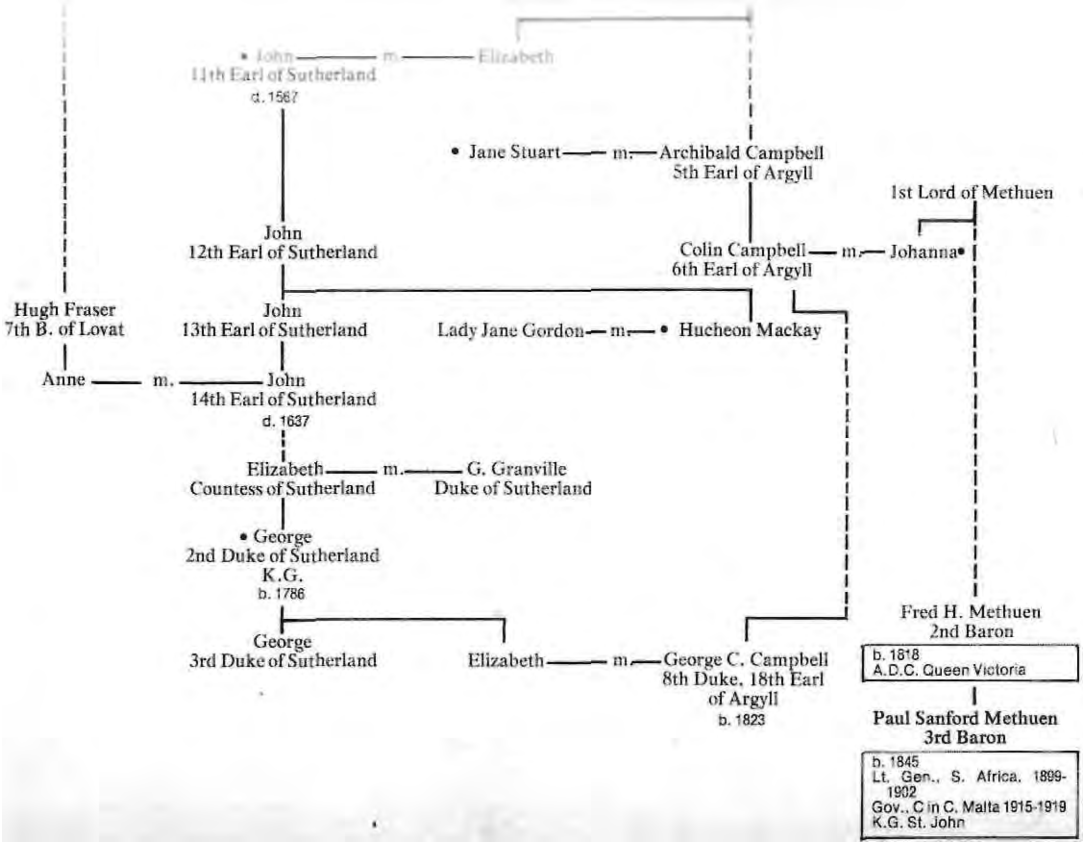
• John 11th Earl of Sutherland d. 1567
m.
Elizabeth
• Jane Stuart
m.
Archibald Campbell 5th Earl of Argyll
1st Lord of Methuen
John 12th Earl of Sutherland
Colin Campbell 6th Earl of Argyll
m.
Johanna•
Hugh Fraser 7th B. of Lovat
John 13th Earl of Sutherland
Lady Jane Gordon
m.
• Hucheon Mackay
Anne
m.
John 14th Earl of Sutherland d. 1637
Elizabeth Countess of Sutherland
m.
G. Granville Duke of Sutherland
• George 2nd Duke of Sutherland K.G. b. 1786
George 3rd Duke of Sutherland
Elizabeth
m.
George C. Campbell 8th Duke, 18th Earl of Argyll b. 1823
Fred H. Methuen 2nd Baron
b. 1818
A.D.C. Queen Victoria
Paul Sanford Methuen 3rd Baron
b. 1845
Lt. Gen., S. Africa, 1899-1902
Gov., C in C. Malta 1915-1919
K.G. St. John

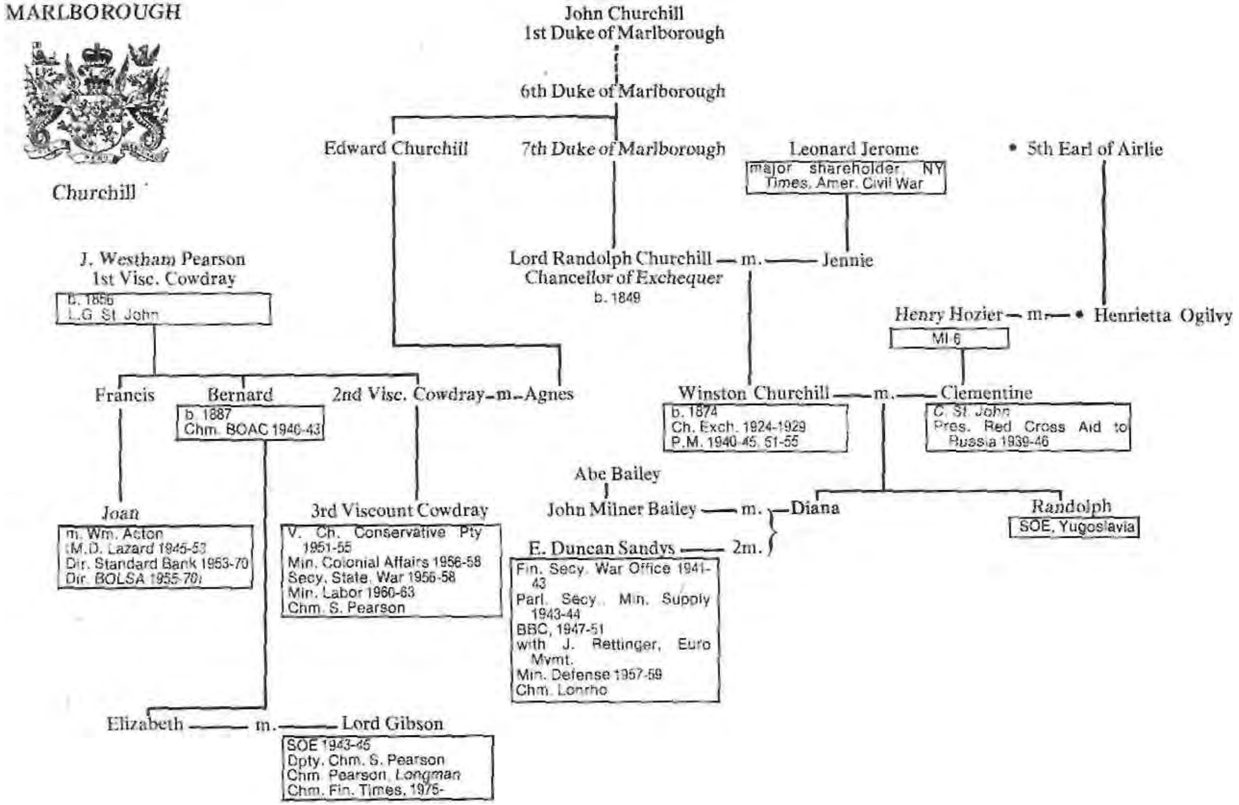
MARLBOROUGH
Churchill
John Churchill
1st Duke of Marlborough
6th Duke of Marlborough
Edward Churchill
7th Duke of Marlborough
Leonard Jerome
major shareholder, NY Times, Amer. Civil War
• 5th Earl of Airlie
J. Westham Pearson
1st Visc. Cowdray
b. 1856
L.G. St. John
Lord Randolph Churchill — m. — Jennie
Chancellor of Exchequer
b. 1849
Henry Hozier — m. — • Henrietta Ogilvy
MI-6
Francis
Bernard
b. 1887
Chm. BOAC 1946-43
2nd Visc. Cowdray – m. – Agnes
Winston Churchill — m. — Clementine
b. 1874
Ch. Exch. 1924-1929
P.M. 1940-45, 51-55
C. St. John
Pres. Red Cross Aid to Russia 1939-46
Abe Bailey
John Milner Bailey — m.
Diana
Randolph
SOE, Yugoslavia
E. Duncan Sandys — 2m.
Fin. Secy. War Office 1941-43
Parl. Secy., Min. Supply 1943-44
BBC, 1947-51
with J. Rettinger, Euro Mvmt.
Min. Defense 1957-59
Chm. Lonrho
Joan
m. Wm. Acton
(M.D. Lazard 1945-53
Dir. Standard Bank 1953-70
Dir. BOLSA 1955-70)
3rd Viscount Cowdray
V. Ch. Conservative Pty 1951-55
Min. Colonial Affairs 1956-58
Secy. State, War 1956-58
Min. Labor 1960-63
Chm. S. Pearson
Elizabeth — m. — Lord Gibson
SOE 1943-45
Dpty. Chm. S. Pearson
Chm. Pearson, Longman
Chm. Fin. Times, 1975-

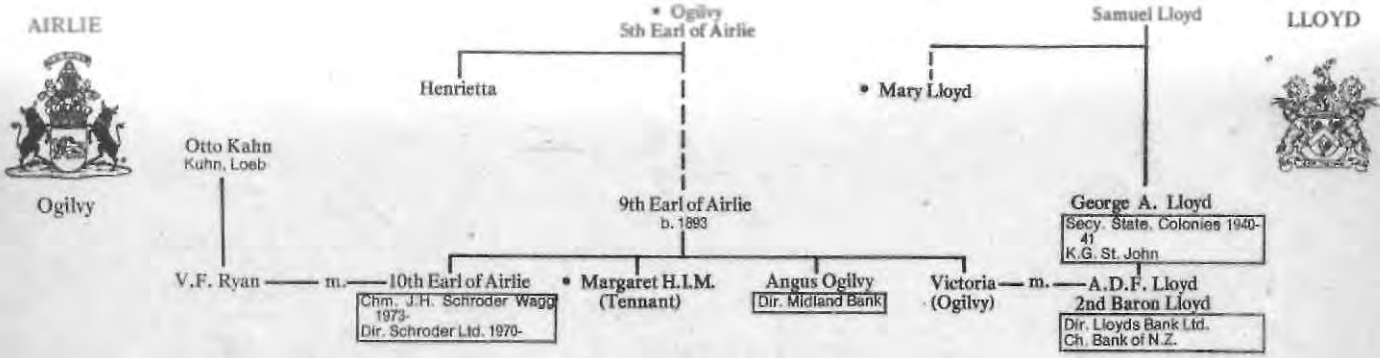
AIRLIE
Ogilvy
• Ogilvy
5th Earl of Airlie
Samuel Lloyd
LLOYD
Henrietta
• Mary Lloyd
Otto Kahn
Kuhn, Loeb
9th Earl of Airlie
b. 1893
George A. Lloyd
Secy. State. Colonies 1940-41
K.G. St. John
V.F. Ryan
m.
10th Earl of Airlie
Chm. J.H. Schroder Wagg 1973-
Dir. Schroder Ltd. 1970-
• Margaret H.I.M.
(Tennant)
Angus Ogilvy
Dir. Midland Bank
Victoria
(Ogilvy)
m.
A.D.F. Lloyd
2nd Baron Lloyd
Dir. Lloyds Bank Ltd.
Ch. Bank of N.Z.

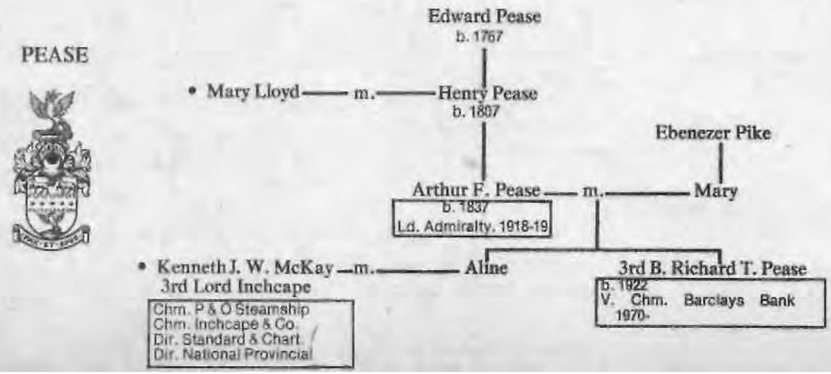
Edward Pease
b. 1767
PEASE
• Mary Lloyd
m.
Henry Pease
b. 1807
Ebenezer Pike
Arthur F. Pease
b. 1837
Ld. Admiralty. 1918-19
m.
Mary
• Kenneth J. W. McKay
3rd Lord Inchcape
Chm. P & O Steamship
Chm. Inchcape & Co.
Dir. Standard & Chart.
Dir. National Provincial
m.
Aline
3rd B. Richard T. Pease
b. 1922
V. Chm. Barclays Bank 1970-

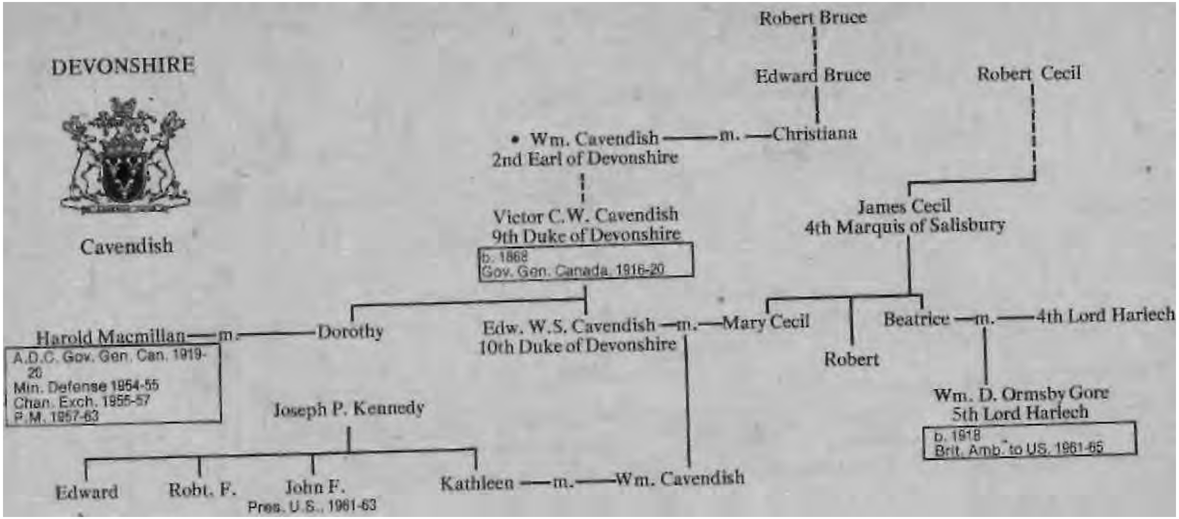
DEVONSHIRE
Cavendish
Robert Bruce
Edward Bruce
Robert Cecil
• Wm. Cavendish
2nd Earl of Devonshire
m.
Christiana
James Cecil
4th Marquis of Salisbury
Victor C.W. Cavendish
9th Duke of Devonshire
b. 1868
Gov. Gen. Canada, 1916-20
Harold Macmillan
m.
Dorothy
A.D.C. Gov. Gen. Can. 1919-20
Min. Defense 1954-55
Chan. Exch. 1955-57
P.M. 1957-63
Edw. W.S. Cavendish
10th Duke of Devonshire
m.
Mary Cecil
Robert
Beatrice
m.
4th Lord Harlech
Wm. D. Ormsby Gore
5th Lord Harlech
b. 1918
Brit. Amb. to US, 1961-65
Joseph P. Kennedy
Edward
Robt. F.
John F.
Pres. U.S., 1961-63
Kathleen
m.
Wm. Cavendish

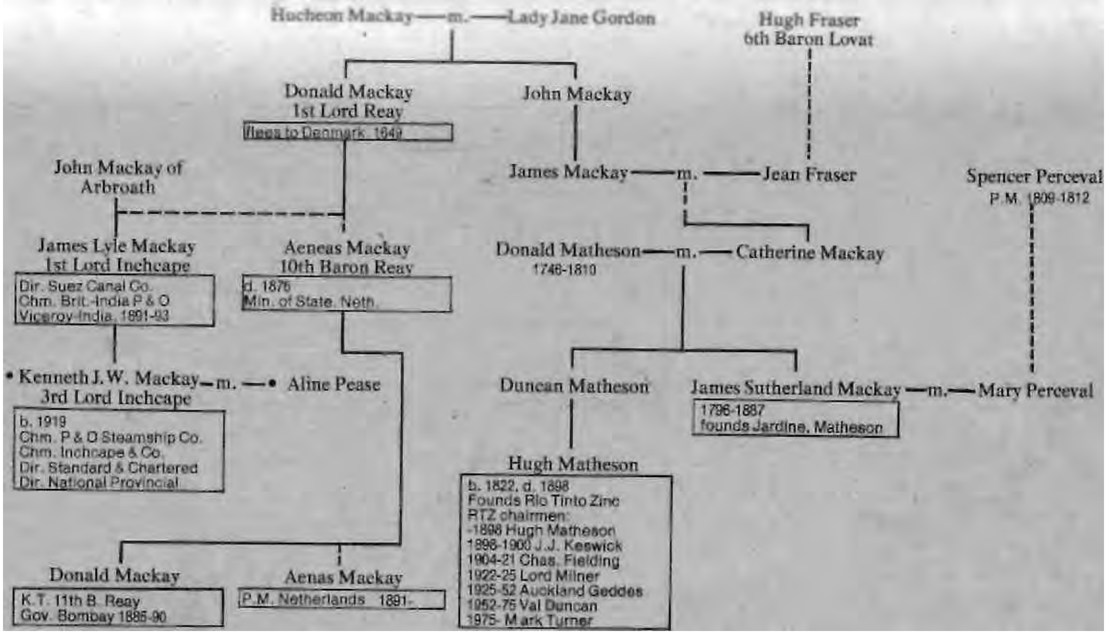
Hucheon Mackay—m.—Lady Jane Gordon
Hugh Fraser
6th Baron Lovat
Donald Mackay
1st Lord Reay
flees to Denmark 1649
John Mackay
John Mackay of
Arbroath
James Mackay—m.—Jean Fraser
Spencer Perceval
P.M. 1809-1812
James Lyle Mackay
1st Lord Inchcape
Dir. Suez Canal Co.
Chm. Brit.-India P & O
Viceroy-India, 1891-93
Aeneas Mackay
10th Baron Reay
d. 1876
Min. of State, Neth.
Donald Matheson—m.—Catherine Mackay
1746-1810
• Kenneth J.W. Mackay—m.—• Aline Pease
3rd Lord Inchcape
b. 1919
Chm. P & O Steamship Co.
Chm. Inchcape & Co.
Dir. Standard & Chartered
Dir. National Provincial
Duncan Matheson
James Sutherland Mackay—m.—Mary Perceval
1796-1887
founds Jardine, Matheson
Hugh Matheson
b. 1822, d. 1898
Founds Rio Tinto Zinc
RTZ chairmen:
-1898 Hugh Matheson
1898-1900 J.J. Keswick
1904-21 Chas. Fielding
1922-25 Lord Milner
1925-52 Auckland Geddes
1952-75 Val Duncan
1975- Mark Turner
Donald Mackay
K.T. 11th B. Reay
Gov. Bombay 1885-90
Aenas Mackay
P.M. Netherlands 1891-

SALISBURY

Cecil

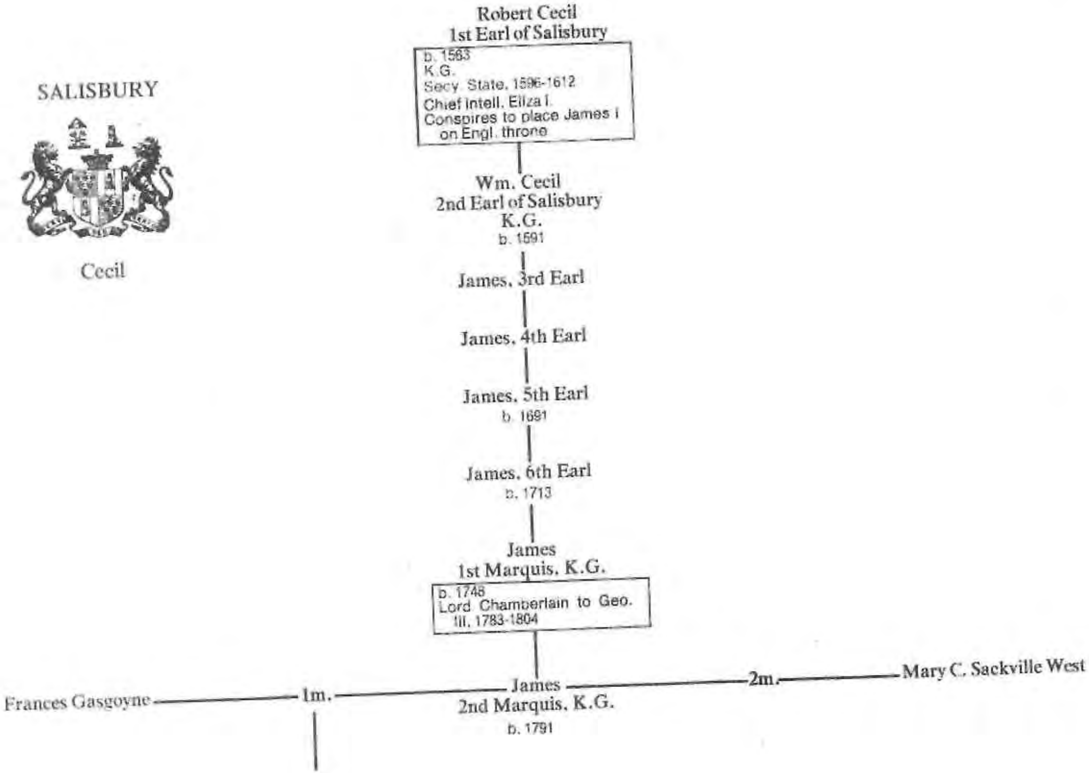
Robert Cecil
1st Earl of Salisbury
b. 1563
K.G.
Secy. State, 1596-1612
Chief Intell. Eliza I.
Conspires to place James I on Engl. throne
Wm. Cecil
2nd Earl of Salisbury
K.G.
b. 1591
James, 3rd Earl
James, 4th Earl
James, 5th Earl
b. 1691
James, 6th Earl
b. 1713
James
1st Marquis, K.G.
b. 1748
Lord Chamberlain to Geo. III, 1783-1804
Frances Gasgoyne
1m.
James
2nd Marquis, K.G.
b. 1791
2m.
Mary C. Sackville West

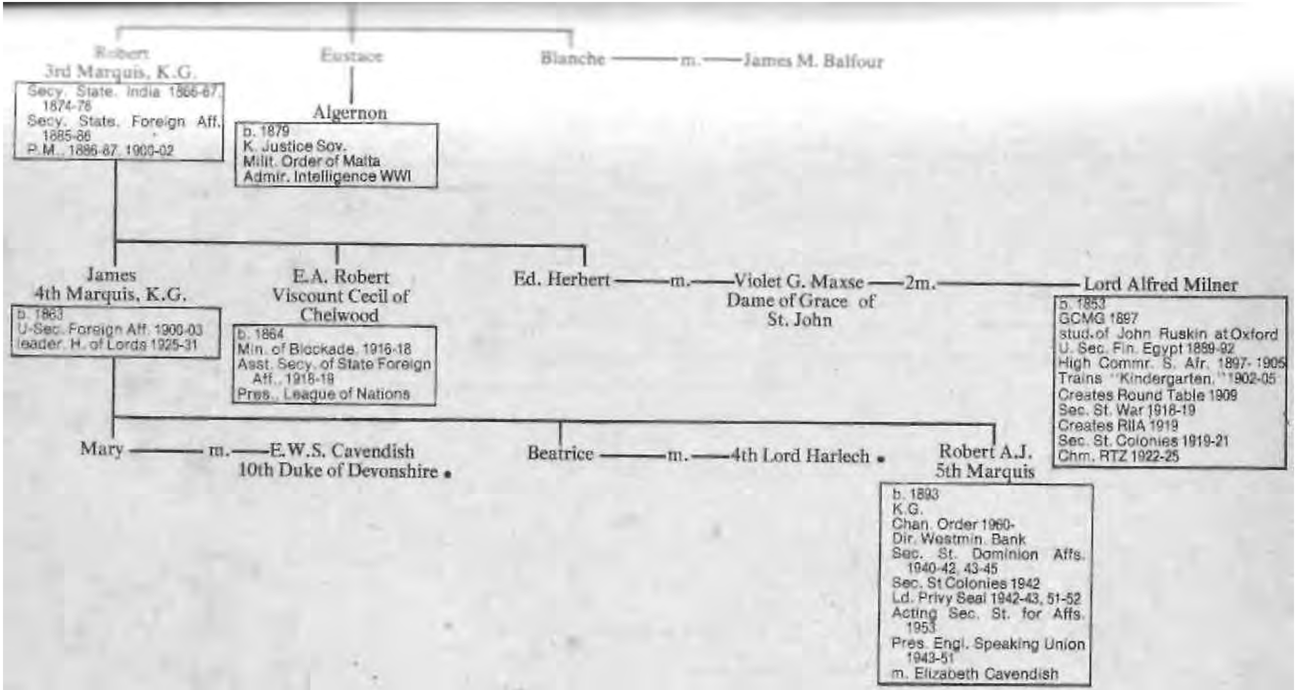
Robert
3rd Marquis, K.G.
Secy. State. India 1866-67, 1874-78
Secy. State. Foreign Aff. 1885-86
P.M., 1886-87, 1900-02
Eustace
Blanche —— m. —— James M. Balfour
Algernon
b. 1879
K. Justice Sov.
Milit. Order of Malta
Admir. Intelligence WWI
James
4th Marquis, K.G.
b. 1863
U-Sec. Foreign Aff. 1900-03
leader. H. of Lords 1925-31
E.A. Robert
Viscount Cecil of
Chelwood
b. 1864
Min. of Blockade. 1916-18
Asst. Secy. of State Foreign Aff., 1918-19
Pres., League of Nations
Ed. Herbert —— m. —— Violet G. Maxse —— 2m. —— Lord Alfred Milner
Dame of Grace of
St. John
b. 1853
GCMG 1897
stud. of John Ruskin at Oxford
U. Sec. Fin. Egypt 1889-92
High Commr. S. Afr. 1897-1905
Trains "Kindergarten," 1902-05
Creates Round Table 1909
Sec. St. War 1918-19
Creates RIIA 1919
Sec. St. Colonies 1919-21
Chm. RTZ 1922-25
Mary —— m. —— E.W.S. Cavendish
10th Duke of Devonshire •
Beatrice —— m. —— 4th Lord Harlech •
Robert A.J.
5th Marquis
b. 1893
K.G.
Chan. Order 1960-
Dir. Westmin. Bank
Sec. St. Dominion Affs. 1940-42, 43-45
Sec. St Colonies 1942
Ld. Privy Seal 1942-43, 51-52
Acting Sec. St. for Affs. 1953
Pres. Engl. Speaking Union 1943-51
m. Elizabeth Cavendish

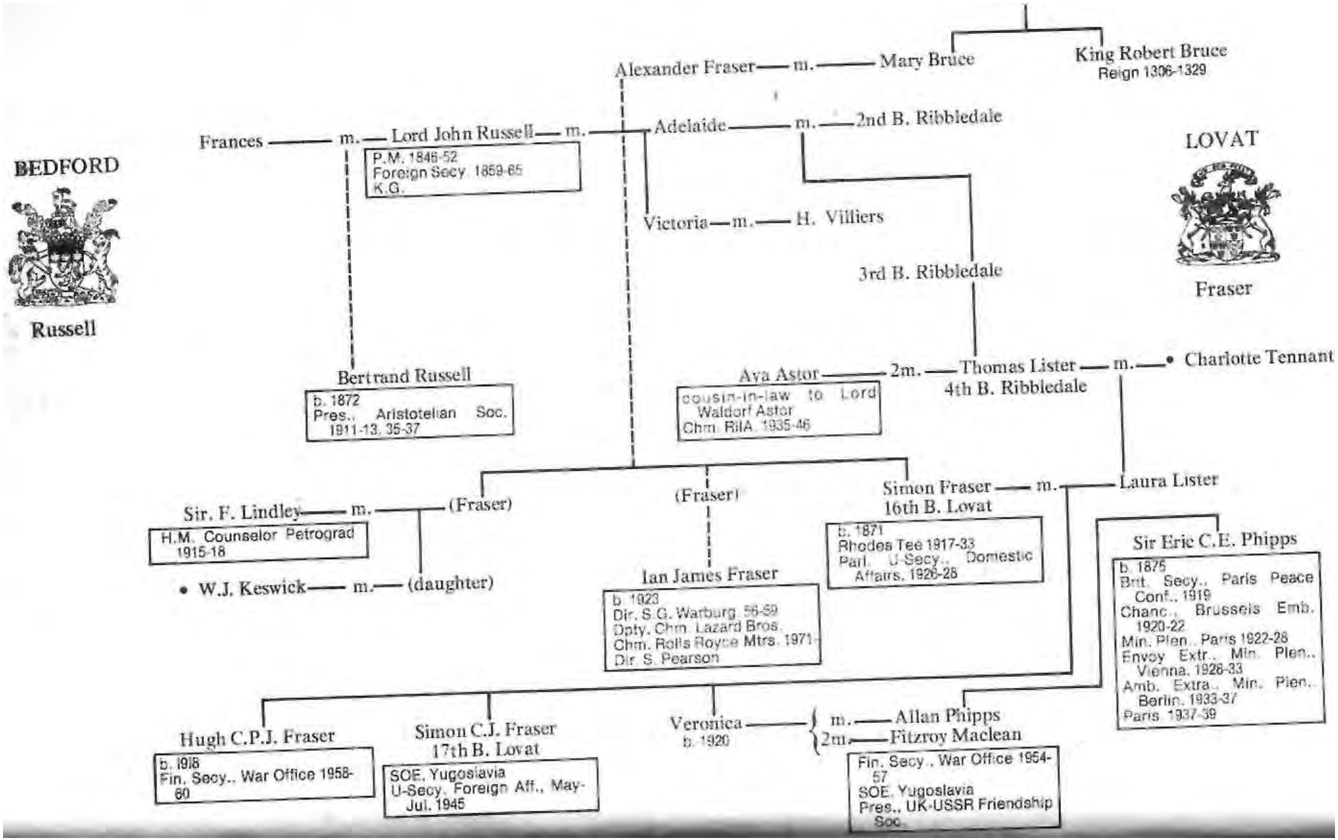
King Robert Bruce
Reign 1306-1329
Alexander Fraser — m. — Mary Bruce
LOVAT
Fraser
BEDFORD
Russell
Frances — m. — Lord John Russell — m. — Adelaide — m. — 2nd B. Ribbledale
P.M. 1846-52
Foreign Secy. 1859-65
K.G.
Victoria — m. — H. Villiers
3rd B. Ribbledale
Bertrand Russell
b. 1872
Pres., Aristotelian Soc. 1911-13, 35-37
Ava Astor — 2m. — Thomas Lister — m. — • Charlotte Tennant
4th B. Ribbledale
cousin-in-law to Lord Waldorf Astor
Chm. RIIA. 1935-46
Sir. F. Lindley — m. — (Fraser)
H.M. Counselor Petrograd 1915-18
• W.J. Keswick — m. — (daughter)
(Fraser)
Ian James Fraser
b. 1923
Dir. S.G. Warburg 56-59
Dpty. Chm. Lazard Bros.
Chm. Rolls Royce Mtrs. 1971-
Dir. S. Pearson
Simon Fraser — m. — Laura Lister
16th B. Lovat
b. 1871
Rhodes Tee 1917-33
Parl. U-Secy., Domestic Affairs, 1926-28
Sir Eric C.E. Phipps
b. 1875
Brit. Secy., Paris Peace Conf., 1919
Chanc., Brussels Emb. 1920-22
Min. Plen., Paris 1922-28
Envoy Extr., Min. Plen., Vienna, 1928-33
Amb. Extra., Min. Plen., Berlin, 1933-37
Paris 1937-39
Hugh C.P.J. Fraser
b. 1918
Fin. Secy., War Office 1958-60
Simon C.J. Fraser
17th B. Lovat
SOE, Yugoslavia
U-Secy. Foreign Aff., May-Jul. 1945
Veronica
b. 1920
m. — Allan Phipps
2m. — Fitzroy Maclean
Fin. Secy., War Office 1954-57
SOE, Yugoslavia
Pres., UK-USSR Friendship Soc.

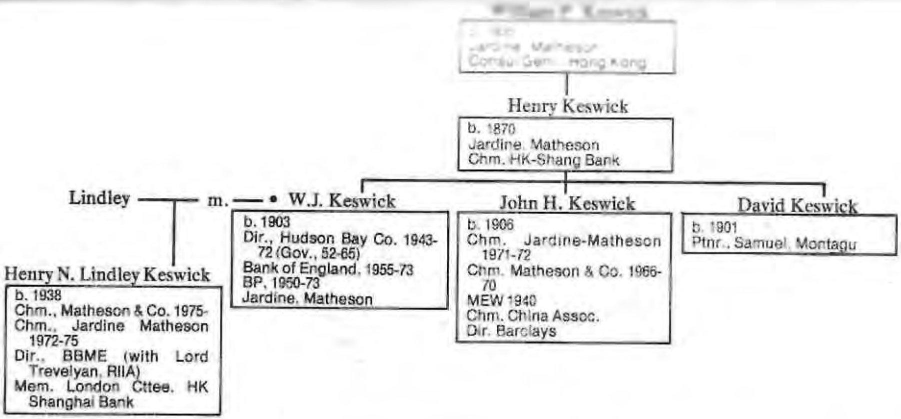
William P. Keswick
b. [illegible]
Jardine Matheson
Consul Gen., Hong Kong
Henry Keswick
b. 1870
Jardine, Matheson
Chm. HK-Shang Bank
Lindley
m.
• W.J. Keswick
b. 1903
Dir., Hudson Bay Co. 1943-72 (Gov., 52-65)
Bank of England, 1955-73
BP, 1950-73
Jardine, Matheson
John H. Keswick
b. 1906
Chm. Jardine-Matheson 1971-72
Chm. Matheson & Co. 1966-70
MEW 1940
Chm. China Assoc.
Dir. Barclays
David Keswick
b. 1901
Ptnr., Samuel, Montagu
Henry N. Lindley Keswick
b. 1938
Chm., Matheson & Co. 1975-
Chm., Jardine Matheson 1972-75
Dir., BBME (with Lord Trevelyan, RIIA)
Mem. London Cttee. HK Shanghai Bank

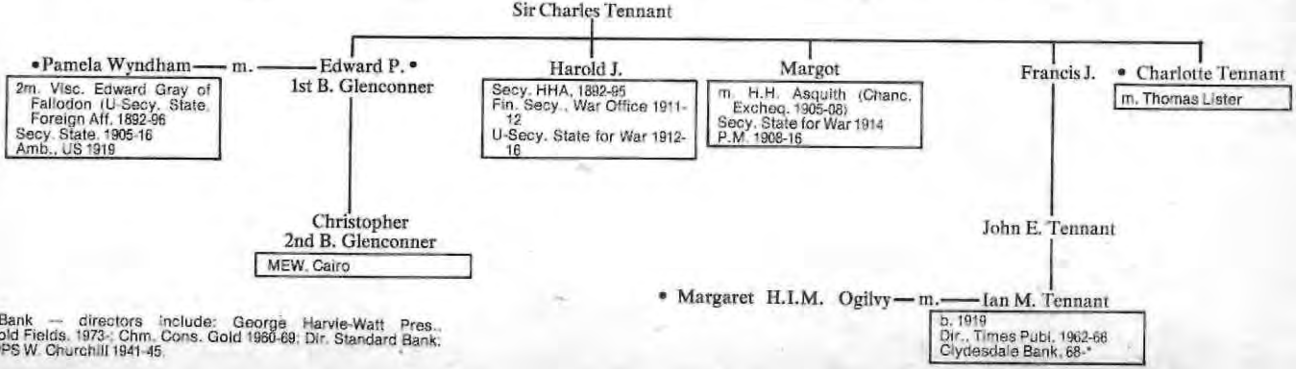
Sir Charles Tennant
•Pamela Wyndham
m.
Edward P. •
1st B. Glenconner
2m. Visc. Edward Gray of Fallodon (U-Secy. State, Foreign Aff. 1892-96
Secy. State. 1905-16
Amb., US 1919
Harold J.
Secy. HHA, 1892-95
Fin. Secy., War Office 1911-12
U-Secy. State for War 1912-16
Margot
m. H.H. Asquith (Chanc. Excheq. 1905-08)
Secy. State for War 1914
P.M. 1908-16
Francis J.
• Charlotte Tennant
m. Thomas Lister
Christopher
2nd B. Glenconner
MEW, Cairo
John E. Tennant
• Margaret H.I.M. Ogilvy
m.
Ian M. Tennant
b. 1919
Dir., Times Publ. 1962-66
Clydesdale Bank, 68-*

* Clydesdale Bank — directors include: George Harvie-Watt Pres., Consolidated Gold Fields, 1973-; Chm. Cons. Gold 1960-69; Dir. Standard Bank; Midland Bank; PPS W. Churchill 1941-45.

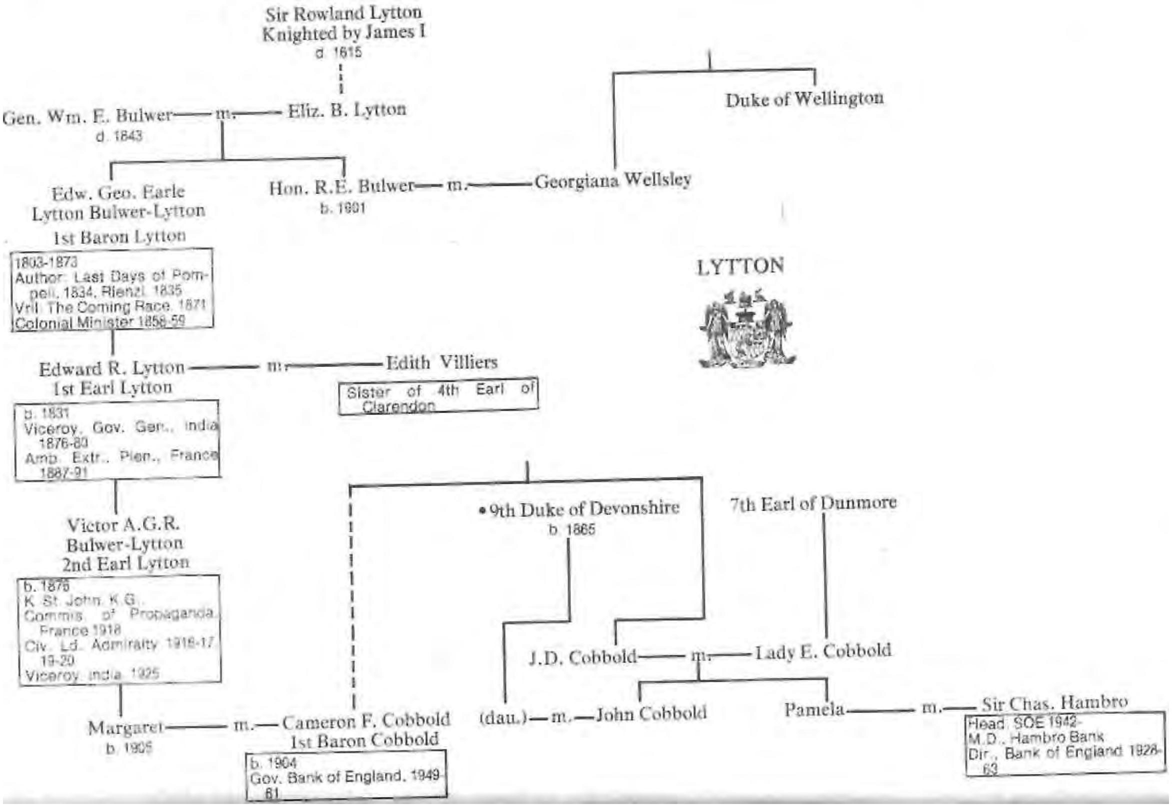
LYTTON

Sir Rowland Lytton
Knighted by James I
d. 1615
Gen. Wm. E. Bulwer — m. — Eliz. B. Lytton
d. 1843
Duke of Wellington
Edw. Geo. Earle Lytton Bulwer-Lytton 1st Baron Lytton
1803-1873
Author: Last Days of Pompeii, 1834, Rienzi 1835
Vril: The Coming Race, 1871
Colonial Minister 1858-59
Hon. R.E. Bulwer — m. — Georgiana Wellsley
b. 1801
Edward R. Lytton 1st Earl Lytton — m. — Edith Villiers
Sister of 4th Earl of Clarendon
b. 1831
Viceroy, Gov. Gen., India 1876-80
Amb. Extr., Plen., France 1887-91
Victor A.G.R. Bulwer-Lytton 2nd Earl Lytton
b. 1876
K. St. John, K.G.
Commis. of Propaganda, France 1918
Civ. Ld. Admiralty 1916-17, 19-20
Viceroy, India 1925
•9th Duke of Devonshire
b. 1865
7th Earl of Dunmore
J.D. Cobbold — m. — Lady E. Cobbold
Margaret — m. — Cameron F. Cobbold 1st Baron Cobbold
b. 1905
b. 1904
Gov. Bank of England, 1949-61
(dau.) — m. — John Cobbold
Pamela — m. — Sir Chas. Hambro
Head: SOE 1942-
M.D., Hambro Bank
Dir., Bank of England 1928-63

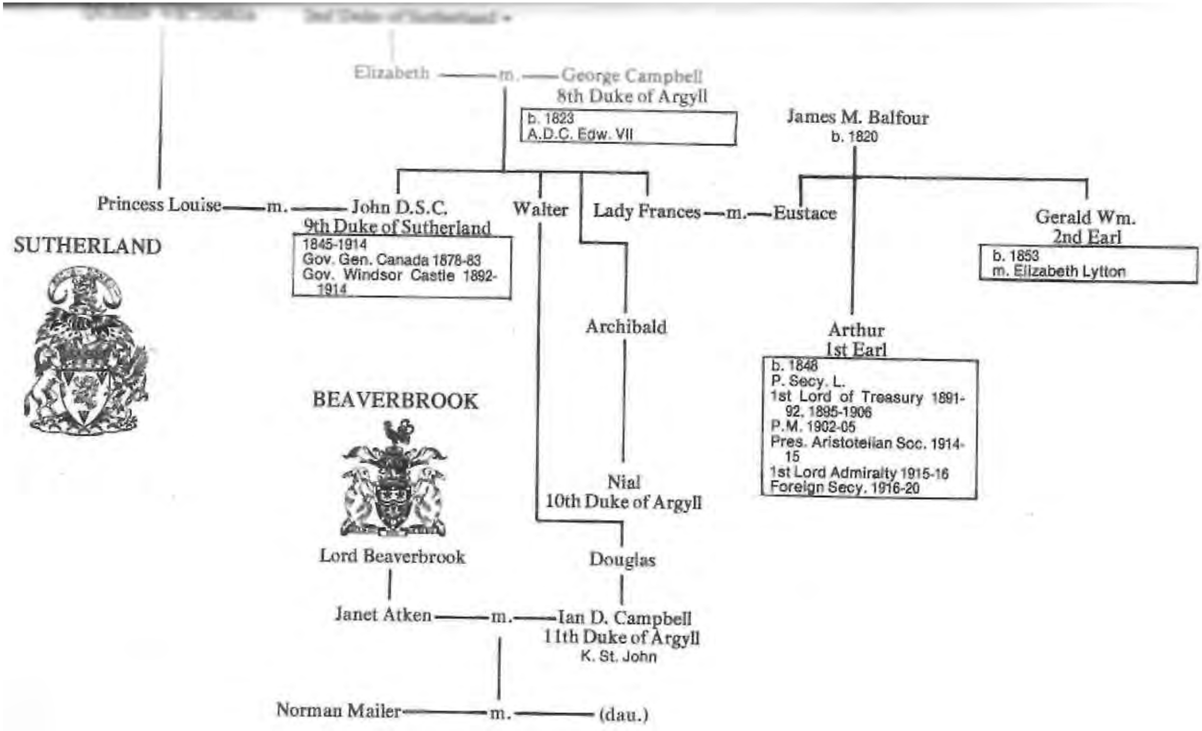
Elizabeth — m. — George Campbell
8th Duke of Argyll
b. 1823
A.D.C. Edw. VII
James M. Balfour
b. 1820
Princess Louise — m. — John D.S.C.
9th Duke of Sutherland
1845-1914
Gov. Gen. Canada 1878-83
Gov. Windsor Castle 1892-1914
Walter
Lady Frances — m. — Eustace
Gerald Wm.
2nd Earl
b. 1853
m. Elizabeth Lytton
SUTHERLAND
Archibald
Arthur
1st Earl
b. 1848
P. Secy. L.
1st Lord of Treasury 1891-92, 1895-1906
P.M. 1902-05
Pres. Aristotelian Soc. 1914-15
1st Lord Admiralty 1915-16
Foreign Secy. 1916-20
BEAVERBROOK
Nial
10th Duke of Argyll
Lord Beaverbrook
Douglas
Janet Atken — m. — Ian D. Campbell
11th Duke of Argyll
K. St. John
Norman Mailer — m. — (dau.)

ROTHSCHILD

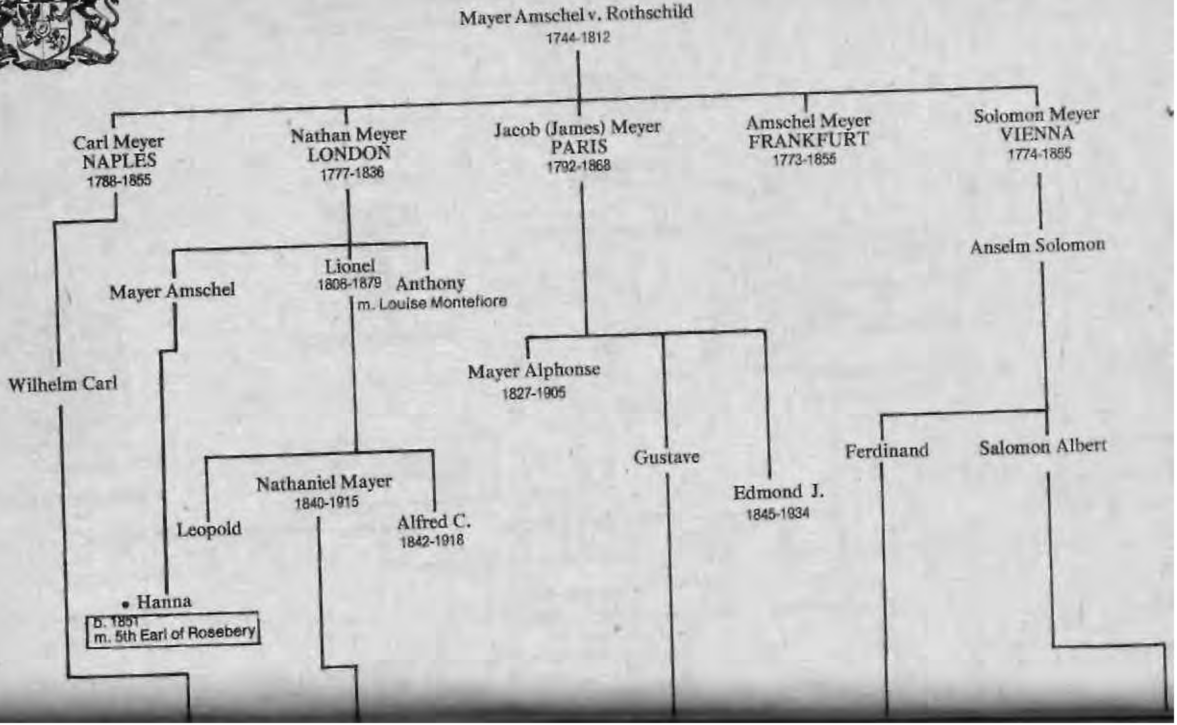
Mayer Amschel v. Rothschild
1744-1812
Carl Meyer
NAPLES
1788-1855
Nathan Meyer
LONDON
1777-1836
Jacob (James) Meyer
PARIS
1792-1868
Amschel Meyer
FRANKFURT
1773-1855
Solomon Meyer
VIENNA
1774-1855
Anselm Solomon
Mayer Amschel
Lionel
1808-1879
Anthony
m. Louise Montefiore
Wilhelm Carl
Mayer Alphonse
1827-1905
Gustave
Edmond J.
1845-1934
Ferdinand
Salomon Albert
Nathaniel Mayer
1840-1915
Leopold
Alfred C.
1842-1918
• Hanna
b. 1851
m. 5th Earl of Rosebery

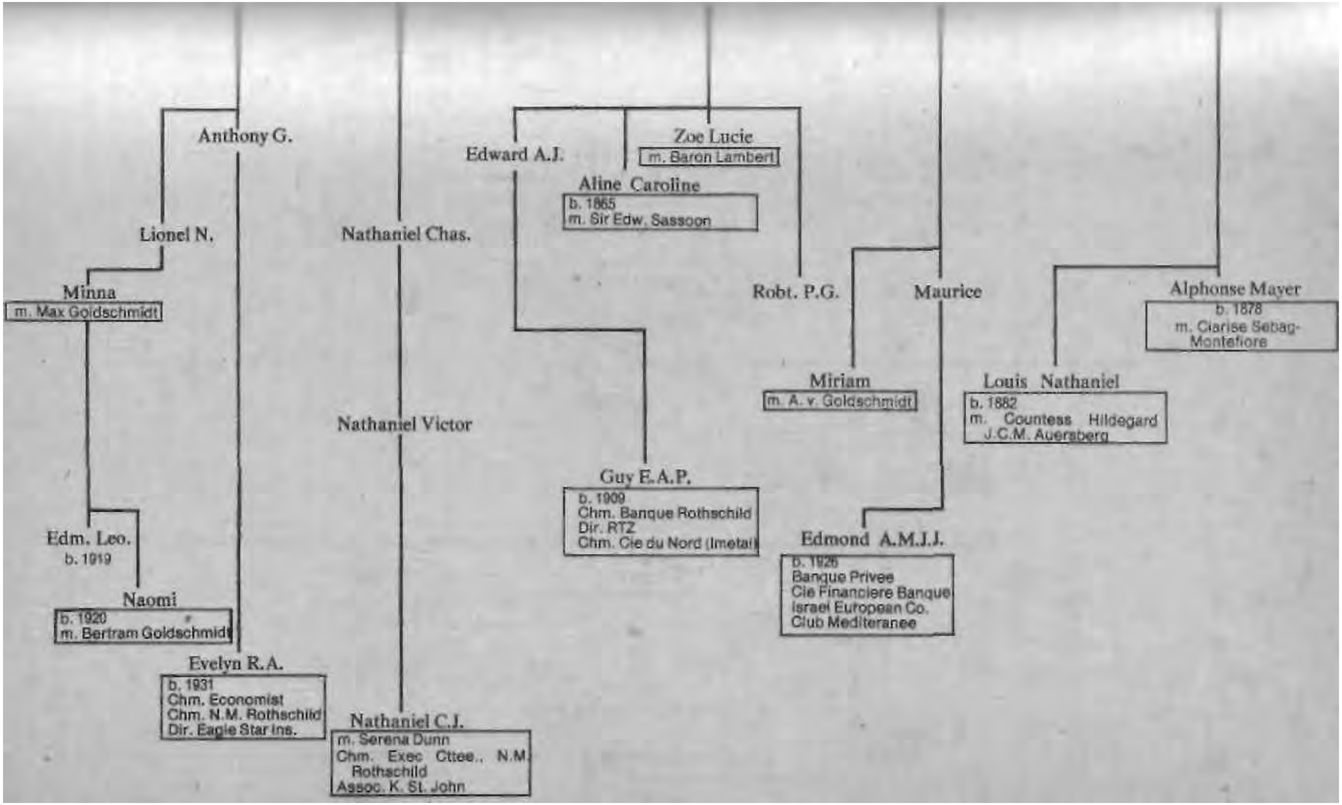
Anthony G.
Lionel N.
Minna
m. Max Goldschmidt
Edm. Leo.
b. 1919
Naomi
b. 1920
m. Bertram Goldschmidt
Evelyn R.A.
b. 1931
Chm. Economist
Chm. N.M. Rothschild
Dir. Eagle Star Ins.
Nathaniel Chas.
Nathaniel Victor
Nathaniel C.J.
m. Serena Dunn
Chm. Exec Cttee., N.M. Rothschild
Assoc. K. St. John
Edward A.J.
Zoe Lucie
m. Baron Lambert
Aline Caroline
b. 1865
m. Sir Edw. Sassoon
Guy E.A.P.
b. 1909
Chm. Banque Rothschild
Dir. RTZ
Chm. Cie du Nord (Imetal)
Robt. P.G.
Miriam
m. A. v. Goldschmidt
Maurice
Edmond A.M.J.J.
b. 1926
Banque Privee
Cie Financiere Banque
Israel European Co.
Club Mediteranee
Louis Nathaniel
b. 1882
m. Countess Hildegard J.C.M. Auersberg
Alphonse Mayer
b. 1878
m. Clarise Sebag-Montefiore

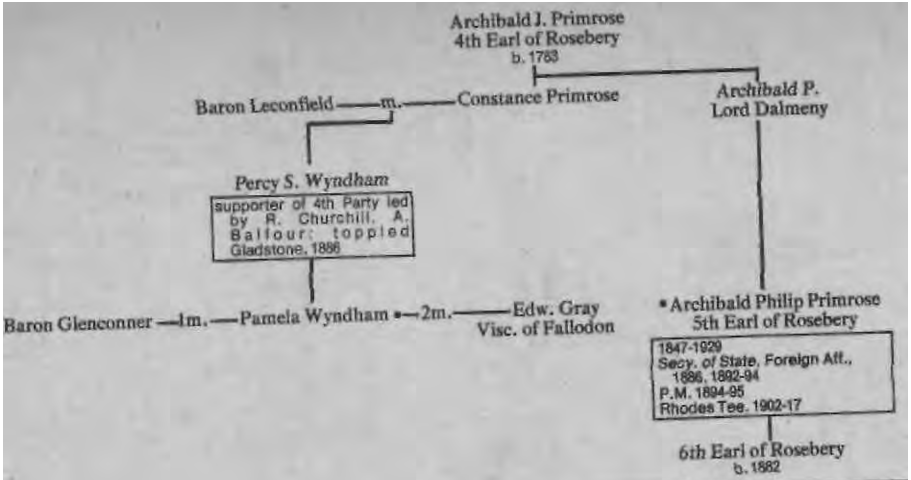
Archibald J. Primrose
4th Earl of Rosebery
b. 1783
Baron Leconfield —m.— Constance Primrose
Archibald P.
Lord Dalmeny
Percy S. Wyndham
supporter of 4th Party led by R. Churchill, A. Balfour; toppled Gladstone, 1886
Baron Glenconner —1m.— Pamela Wyndham •—2m.— Edw. Gray
Visc. of Fallodon
• Archibald Philip Primrose
5th Earl of Rosebery
1847-1929
Secy. of State, Foreign Aff., 1886, 1892-94
P.M. 1894-95
Rhodes Tee. 1902-17
6th Earl of Rosebery
b. 1882

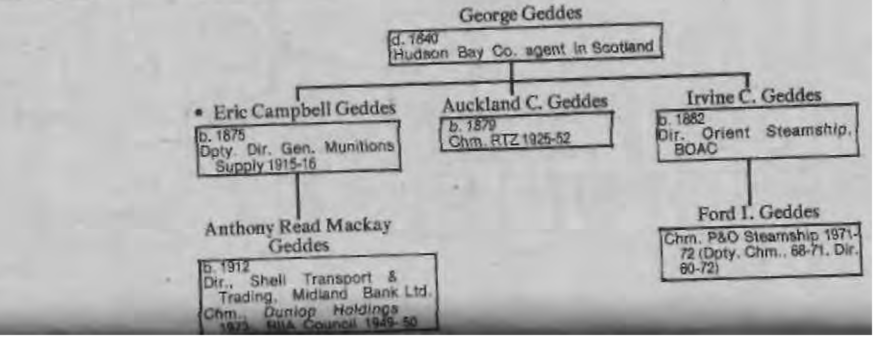
George Geddes
d. 1840
Hudson Bay Co. agent in Scotland
• Eric Campbell Geddes
b. 1875
Dpty. Dir. Gen. Munitions Supply 1915-16
Auckland C. Geddes
b. 1879
Chm. RTZ 1925-52
Irvine C. Geddes
b. 1882
Dir. Orient Steamship, BOAC
Anthony Read Mackay Geddes
b. 1912
Dir., Shell Transport & Trading, Midland Bank Ltd.
Chm., Dunlop Holdings [illegible], RIIA Council 1949-50
Ford I. Geddes
Chm. P&O Steamship 1971-72 (Dpty. Chm., 68-71, Dir. 60-72)

Notes

1. BANKING AND THE WORLD'S BIGGEST BUSINESS

1. Based on interviews with Drug Enforcement Administration sources. The typical deviation from the price trend resulted from the importation of several kilograms of high-grade number four (85 to 95 percent pure) heroin from Vietnam by individual returning soldiers, who would attempt to start their own distribution chain. Such incidents stood out because the novice distributor tended to dilute the heroin too little — often distributing heroin at 30 percent purity and above, rather than 5 percent purity, the normal dilution. The free-lance pusher would therefore occasion an extraordinarily large number of drug overdoses, enabling the authorities to spot him quickly.
2. The 700 ton figure is also used by the most widely circulated sources on the subject, e.g., Alfred McCoy et al., The Politics of Heroin in Southeast Asia, (New York: Harper and Row, 1974).
3. The New York Times, January 20,1971, p. 1.
4. According to Drug Enforcement Administration estimates.
5. The $40 billion figure is almost certainly an exaggeration; it does not count attrition of the marijuana crop because of Colombian or U.S. government counteraction. Since Colombia is the primary supplier of the American market, the likely figure is half that.
6. Euromoney (London), April, 1978.

2. FROM OPIUM TO DIRTY MONEY

1. The $100 per pound initial price is slightly higher than most estimates cited in studies which date back to 1971 or earlier. Since the opium price is principally measured in terms of gold, it is fair to assume a substantial increase since 1971 when gold went for $42 an ounce. The $100 figure is conservative, assuming that the raw opium price has doubled in reflection of local inflation. But if the opium price has risen in tandem with the gold price, the figure is much higher.
2. Calculated on the basis of price markups as reported by law enforcement sources in interviews with the authors.
3. The estimate was derived from the following calculations: At the 1971-72 peak of heroin production in the Golden Triangle, much of which was intended for American soldiers in Vietnam, 21 refineries were in operation; since then the number has declined. Assuming that ten are still in operation, and that the annual output of each is equivalent to the 3,000

kilograms of heroin seized in one major bust on record, then they produce roughly 30,000 kilograms a year of heroin, derived from about 300 tons of raw opium.

4. Richard Deacon, The Chinese Secret Service (New York: Ballantine Books, 1976), p. 447.

3. HOW THE DRUG TRADE IS FINANCED

1. London Financial Times, April 24,1978.
2. Ibid.
3. A close examination of the price markup structure of the Golden Triangle's primary wholesalers demonstrates that the increased prices at various stages merely account for substantial additional expenses, including the livelihoods of an inestimable number of Thai and Burmese policemen and customs officials. The real profitability — the enormous profits associated with the traffic — depends on the process of cutting the pure heroin into "decks" of street quality for sale in the West. The profits of the Hong Kong syndicates who wholesale heroin are not accrued through the difference between primary and secondary wholesale prices, but as a percentage of the profits obtained through distribution of the drugs in the West. In other words, the Hong Kong networks are directly represented in the Western "organized crime" segment of Dope, Inc. and take their cut in the form of a reflow of the retailing profits. Scattered bits of evidence — the most prominent of which is the activities of the expatriate Chinese community in Vancouver — indicate that this is, in fact, how these syndicates operate.
4. The authors obtained briefings concerning — but were not able to see — classified dossiers on Tejapaibul and Sophonpanich in the possession of the American, Malaysian, and Thai governments. As noted below in the text, they are "cut-outs" for the Hongkong and Shanghai Banking Corporation. Tejapaibul, whose -bank handles most of Thailand's chemical imports, developed the Golden Triangle's major source of acetic anhydride, the chemical required to refine opium into heroin, through a Hong Kong subsidiary of the Bangkok Metropolitan Bank.
5. Certain aspects of the expatriate Chinese activity antedate the British. The relationship between Ch'ao Chou Chinese merchants and the Thai royal family, for example, dates back several centuries. The predominance of Chinese compradors in the region, however, dates to the turn of this century.
6. W. J. Cator, The Economic Position of the Chinese in the Netherlands Indies, p. 97-98.
7. Victor Purcell, The Chinese in Malaya, p. 189.
8. William Skinner, Chinese Society in Thailand: An Analytical History, p.140.

9. International Currency Review, Vol. 10, No. 4, p. 145.
10. M. A. Andreyev, Overseas Chinese Bourgeoisie — A Peking Tool in Southeast Asia (Moscow: Progress Publishers, 1974), p. 30.
11. V. Thompson, R. Adloff, Minority Problems in Southeast Asia (Stanford: Stanford University Press, 1955), p. 13.

4. BRITAIN'S GOLD AND DIRTY DIAMOND OPERATIONS

1. Andreyev, Overseas Chinese Bourgeoisie, p. 120. In contrast to many Soviet publications on the subject, the Andreyev book is a scholarly monograph through nine-tenths of its extent, using quotations from Western sources for most of its material. The propaganda factor is comparatively small. Apart from the fact that it is a good survey of Western literature on the subject, there is a special feature of this short work that indicates its value to the investigator. The work is a classical example of careful Soviet "surfacing" of their on-the-ground intelligence reports, in such form as to make the conclusions politically useful, without compromising their operations. The clear intent of publication of the work is to put some heat on Chinese intelligence operations in the Far Eastern theater. The occasional "zingers" Andreyev includes, such as the report of Chinese import of gold through the Golden Triangle, are intended for a small professional audience in other intelligence services. To the extent the authors were able to cross-check Andreyev's facts with Western sources, they have checked out. Therefore the authors believe that the Andreyev work is an acceptable reference source.
2. Timothy Green, "Other World Markets," speech at the Gold Conference of the London Financial Times and Investors Chronicle, The London Hilton, October 24,1972.
3. Paul Ferris, The City (London, 1951).
4. H. R. Reinhart, The Reporter, July 22,1952.
5. Andreyev, The Chinese Bourgeoisie, p. 120.
6. Reinhart, The Reporter.
7. This information is a byproduct of a U.S. Labor Party counterintelligence investigation of the operations of the Israeli intelligence agency, Mossad, for which Jarecki appears to be a "bagman." The details were cross-checked with law enforcement officials.
8. According to interviews with leading diamond traders in New York.

5. HONG KONG: THE WORLD'S DRUG CAPITAL

Virtually all published sources identify Hong Kong as the world's center for transshipment of opiates from the Far East, and even as the center for heroin refining. For the most part, these admissions —

encouraged by the local British authorities — are in error. In fact, heroin is refined in the triborder area of the Golden Triangle itself. Once in the compact form of heroin, the drug may be shipped by air, through individual couriers using a multiplicity of different routes. It need not pass through Hong Kong at all, although Hong Kong is possibly the most important of these various routes, and may conduct significant refining operations. The British admissions concerning refining and transshipment of opium and heroin tend to distract the investigator from the more important issue: that Hong Kong is the financial center for the Far East drug trade, and hence the point of control for the Golden Triangle.

The most recent American congressional investigation into Hong Kong, in 1973, wrote:

> The British Crown Colony plays a major role in the trafficking and refining of narcotics which originate in the "Golden Triangle":
>
> 1) It serves as a major target for the production area;
>
> 2) The criminal syndicates behind the Southeast Asian drug traffic are based in Hong Kong;
>
> 3) It serves as the refining center for "Golden Triangle" opium and morphine base; and
>
> 4) It is a major transshipment point for heroin coming into the U.S. and for transshipment to our 7th Army in Germany via The Netherlands.
>
> . . . It is estimated that 48 tons of opium are smoked in Hong Kong annually and 4 tons of heroin are consumed. Local officials also estimate that 4 to 10 tons of heroin is transshipped from Hong Kong (primarily by body pack) to the United States annually, but accurate information is lacking. Ten thousand dollars worth of heroin in Hong Kong would retail for $50 to $60 million in the United States.
>
> From reports we received in The Netherlands, it is also apparent that heroin is being transported by air and ship to The Netherlands from Hong Kong to supply the 7th Army in Germany. The potential for growth of these shipments is unlimited. . . .
>
> Despite the recent steps to upgrade the enforcement effort, Hong Kong will continue to act as a funnel for heroin destined for the United States unless some fundamental changes take place.
>
> Smuggling into Hong Kong is almost impossible to control because: 1) it is a free port and the economy of the Crown Colony is dependent upon its being easily accessible; 2) many drops are made outside of the jurisdictional waters of the Crown Colony; 3) personnel are not adequate; and 4) intelligence is lacking.
>
> Since Hong Kong is a free port, there are no regularized customs inspections. Also, most goods coming into Hong Kong are in sealed containers. The Preventive Force, as a result, must rely primarily on tips to conduct searches. The searches, however, are only of

> vessels entering the harbor; not those leaving which could be transmitting narcotics to the United States, The Netherlands, or other points.
>
> A major obstacle, also, is the lack of cooperation from the People's Republic of China. Many of the drops are made in Chinese waters because the Chinese do not police their coasts for narcotics. We were told that a Chinese vessel will ignore a trawler smuggling narcotics. Moreover, since the British in Hong Kong are naturally sensitive to their relations with the People's Republic, they carefully observe territorial waters and are careful to avoid appearances that a crackdown on traffickers is a vendetta against the Chinese. ...
>
> The British in Hong Kong are also reluctant to recognize the severity of the problem evidenced by the increasing availability of narcotics, and to, correspondingly, take action. For instance, most officials we spoke with were "uptight" about the recent report of the House Foreign Affairs Committee which concluded that the Hong Kong Government has been lax. They also resented the fact that no one had talked to them before filing the report. (Report by Hon. Lou Frey, Jr., Hon. Peter N. Kyros, and Hon. James F. Hastings, Members of the Committee on Interstate and Foreign Commerce, Concerning Narcotic Enforcement Efforts in Hong Kong, Thailand, Burma, India, Lebanon, Greece, Turkey, France, and The Netherlands; April 1973, pp. 2-11 passim).

Like most such documents, this report is loaded with inconsistencies, although it contains occasional useful pieces of information. One such item concerns the Hong Kong police force's most successful means of discovering illicit heroin, noting that police "found drugs concealed in the rectums of 40 defendants referred to them by the courts in one week."

Also useful is the report that Hong Kong consumes 4 tons of heroin and 48 tons of opium (medically equivalent to 4.8 tons of heroin annually), from Hong Kong authorities. Taking this at the equivalent of 8.8 tons of heroin consumption, the figure corroborates the charge in this section that Hong Kong harbors one million drug addicts in a 5 million population. At standard 5 percent purity for street use, 1 kilogram of heroin will yield 150,000 "decks," or single doses; 8.8 U.S. tons will yield roughly 1.2 million doses. A serious addict requires more than one dose per day, so it Is hard to estimate the precise number of addicts; but it is clear that the British figures, probably conservative, are in the required range.

The report that the PRC does not interfere with opiates transshipment in its territorial waters speaks for itself, as does the statement that Hong Kong serves as a base for the criminal syndicates behind the Southeast Asian drug trade. However, the failure of the Congressional investigators to cite police corruption at any point as an obstacle to narcotics enforcement in Hong Kong demonstrates how inadequate the effort was.

There is nothing in the published literature concerning the financial relationships between the Hongkong and Shanghai Bank and the Chinese syndicates; information had to be obtained from interviews with knowledgeable area sources, and compared to studies of financial market mechanisms.

1. Andreyev, The Chinese Bourgeoisie, pp. 146-147.
2. Ibid.
3. Financial Times, July 4,1977, p. 24.
4. Ibid.
5. Ibid., p. 19.
6. Ibid.

6. THE PEKING CONNECTION

Following Kissinger's 1972 trip to Peking, American public and private literature both have played down the "Peking Connection," to the point of ridiculing existing and current evidence of People's Republic of China involvement in the trade. However, an examination of these sources does not reveal a single piece of evidence that the PRC role has stopped.

The current "standard reference work" on the Far East traffic is The Politics of Heroin in Southeast Asia, by Alfred W. McCoy, with Cathleen B. Read and Leonard P. Adams II (New York: Harper and Row, 1972). In dismissing the claims of former Bureau of Narcotics and Dangerous Drugs chief Harry Anslinger, McCoy quotes an unnamed BNDD agent who dismisses Anslinger's accusations against Peking, saying that the People's Republic of China has no role whatsoever in the opium trade, and that Anslinger's accusations are substantiated by nothing more than Taiwanese propaganda. McCoy cites no other evidence, and merely brushes the issue aside.

In fact, McCoy and his co-authors went so far out on a limb that even sympathetic experts were forced to correct them. In a review published in the Bulletin of Concerned Asian Scholars in September 1973; Peter Dale Scott wrote:

"McCoy quotes U.S. narcotics officials today to ridicule the 1950s claims by then-U.S. Narcotics Commissioner Anslinger (and his government) about Communist China's 'twenty-year plan to finance political activities and spread addiction' in the United States. But McCoy subscribes to the equally dubious 'Turkey hypothesis' which replaced Anslinger's in the 1960s; namely, that all of the U.S. plague of heroin produced in the laboratories of Marseilles could be attributed to opium grown in the Middle East. McCoy even claims that

> Throughout the 1960s ... the U.S. Bureau of Narcotics paid almost no attention to Asia, there were few seizures of Asian heroin and

> little awareness of the colony's growing role in the international traffic. It was not until American GIs serving in Vietnam began using . . . heroin refined in the Golden Triangle region that any attention was focused on the Asian heroin trade, (pp. 223-24)

"That is an important claim," reviewer Scott continued, "and it is quite false. In 1960, as he knows, the United States officially listed Hong Kong as the first of the 'principal sources' of the diacetylmorphine (heroin) seized in the United States; and the Federal Bureau of Narcotics showed its concern by opening a branch office in Hong Kong in 1963. Anslinger himself, while transmitting KMT (Kuomintang, or Taiwanese — ed.) propaganda about a Red Chinese opium conspiracy, proved himself to be well-informed about the world-wide significance of the Northern Thailand traffice, even to such details as the roles played by a Macao financial syndicate, and a Bangkok official of the Soong Bank of Canton." Peter Dale Scott's references are to Harry J. Anslinger, "The Opium of the People's Government," in U.S. Congress, House, Soviet Total War, 85th Congress, House Document No. 227, pp. 759-61.

The accuracy or inaccuracy of Harry Anslinger's presentation is not what is in question at the moment. Rather, it is a simple point of fact that McCoy and his co-authors have no facts whatever to indicate that the PRC is not involved in the drugs traffic; and furthermore, that their treatment of U.S. authorities who presented facts implicating the PRC is wildly inaccurate. As the Scott review demonstrated, that is a matter of the published record.

Experts on the Southeast Asian theater at the time McCoy wrote simply doubt the author's integrity. McCoy had available to him a mass of documentary evidence showing that roughly half of the Golden Triangle growing area lay within the confines of Communist China's Yunnan province. He also had available a substantial portion of corroborating facts contained in this report. McCoy simply chose to ignore this evidence, or, more accurately, to attempt to refute it with unsubstantiated assertions. According to individuals who knew McCoy when he was a regular in the anti-Vietnam War movement, McCoy was in close friendly contact with North Vietnamese legations in Western Europe at the time of writing of The Politics of Heroin in Southeast Asia, and intended his efforts to undermine the American war effort. In that context he deliberately excised references to PRC opium trafficking. Since the PRC and North Vietnam have come to blows over the status of the expatriate Chinese comprador community in the latter country, it may be that McCoy's political judgment, rather than North Vietnamese views, were faulty on this subject. McCoy's book cannot be taken seriously as far as the PR C issue is concerned.

McCoy, incidentally, does mention that expatriate Chinese syndicates are the main traffickers in the Far East, and that Hong Kong is the main transshipment center.

Typical of public sources is a Congressional investigation of 1973 which reported:

"There is no indication that the People's Republic of China is a source of illegal narcotics coming to or through Hong Kong. A former American missionary in China, now with SARDA (Society for Aid and Rehabilitation of Drug Addicts — ed.), said that since 1965 not one addict from China has appeared in Hong Kong. Prior to 1965 they arrived in droves. Arrests and seizures also evidence no Red Chinese involvement whatsoever in narcotics traffic in Hong Kong.

"It was interesting to note the reaction of the Government officials regarding the 'Chinese connection.' They thought that such statements were 'rubbish and either made out of ignorance or by individuals seeking political gain.' To say they were emphatic would be an understatement.

"When the Communists came into power in 1949 in China, they imposed the death penalty on anyone producing or consuming opiates. Users were sentenced to long terms, which included building a road toward Siberia. This was, in effect, a death penalty. Their success and continuing interest in purging addiction from their society has removed China as a major source of narcotics."

The report says further, "All officials acknowledged the fact that most of the opium or morphine base coming into Hong Kong comes from either Bangkok or the Gulf of Siam." (Report by Hon. Lou Frey, Jr., Hon. Peter N. Kyros, and Hon. James F. Hastings, members of the Committee of Interstate and Foreign Commerce, Concerning Narcotic Enforcement Efforts in Hong Kong, Thailand, Burma, India, Lebanon, Greece, Turkey, France, and The Netherlands; April 1973, p. 4).

These claims are worth examining one by one.

First, the Report does not seek to determine whether opium coming into Hong Kong from Bangkok is, in fact, of Red Chinese origin. According to our expert sources, the main PRC transshipment route southwards, through the Golden Triangle, to Bangkok.

Second,, whether or not the "former missionary" source cited is accurate, the appearance or nonappearance of drug addicts from the PRC mainland is utterly irrelevant to the issue of PRC involvement in the wholesale drug traffic. Moreover, the citation of 1965 as the end-point of PRC traffic is suspicious, since the hardest evidence of all — Chou En-lai's recorded boasts on the subject — dates from that year.

Third, the authority cited by the Congressional delegation is the Hong Kong Government itself. The integrity of the Hong Kong authorities may be judged from material presented in Section 5 of this report. The utter ingenuousness of the Congressional document cited, however, may be gauged from its enthusiasm for the Hong Kong police: "We were impressed by the desire of the Service to do a job. Their frustration was also apparent. They'll give it 100 percent, but no matter how much they try —or how good a job they do —it's just too big for them" (p. 10).

Two years after the publication of this document, the Independent Commission Against Corruption in Hong Kong made its official estimate of a $1 billion annual rate of police bribery in the colony.

The most complete British work on the subject, Richard Deacon's The Chinese Secret Service (New York: Ballantine Books, 1976) merely ignores the issue, and defends PRC motivations! He argues, "If opium could be introduced into a country that did not wish it in peacetime by a so-called civilized Western Power, with the connivance of its Government, how can the British adopt an outraged critical tone towards China for copying her own tactics, not by having opium forcibly imported this time, but by exporting the stuff to try to check such a war as that in Vietnam, which threatened to go on indefinitely. . . . Can one blame China, however intrinsically disgusting the tactic may be, for manipulating an 'opium war in reverse'?" (p. 441).

Deacon does admit, "Many nations and many individuals are in the drug game solely for sordid commercial gain. It is essentially an international problem, but that should not blind one to the fact that only in the hands of the Chinese Communists has it been used almost solely as a subversive weapon and for financing, by an opium war in reverse, a great many of their espionage operations."

After 1972, American officials accepted the official line that China had ceased to be an exporter of opiates, although they never liked it. A case in point was Gen. Lewis W. Walt, a retired Marine Corps officer who became the chief investigator for a set of hearings on "World Drug Traffic and Its Impact on U.S. Security" (see note 27 below). On September 14, 1972, Walt states, "The official U.S. position today is that we have no evidence that opium or opiates are coming out of Communist China." However, a specialist familiar with the intelligence reports that made up the raw material of Gen. Walt's briefing to the Subcommittee, said, "It is highly significant that he used the word evidence, rather than information. That is an intentional dodge. He is playing a word game: evidence is a legal term, and may exclude information. Had he used the word information, he would have had to explain away a couple of hundred reports coming in at the time."

Walt continued, "There can be no question that large quantities of opium were coming out of China in the 1950s and early 1960s. . . . The Director of British customs at Hong Kong also told us that they had no evidence that opiates were coming out of China. On the other hand, he informed us frankly that they were not looking for evidence — that, for political reasons, they do not search ships or cargo coming out of mainland China. An identical situation prevails in Portuguese Macao."

1. Heikal, Mohammed Hassanein, The Cairo Documents (Garden City, N.Y.: Doubleday and Company, 1973), pp. 306-307.

2. The significance of the investment, which occasioned widespread com-

mentary in the Western press, is not so much the novelty of the joint-venture format, but the surfacing of longstanding business relationships between Jardine's and the PRC.

3. London Financial Times, July 4,1977, p. 20.

4. Interviews with law enforcement officers. Law enforcement authorities suspect, but have never proven, that the Shaw Brothers' international film distribution network also conduits narcotics.

5. Deacon, Chinese Secret Service, pp. 437-438.

6. In 1949, according to recently released American diplomatic cables, the newly formed PRC was happy to permit Britain to retain control over Hong Kong for the same reason.

7. Management Magazine (South Africa), December 1975. The Rennie and Matheson families' relations go back much further than the recent merger of business operations. They are intermarried through the Ogilvie family, which is itself intermarried with the current British royal family. The Rennies are core members of the British establishment in South Africa. For example, relative Julian Ogilvie Thompson is a member of Anglo-American Corporation's three-man operating committee (see Section 4 for details on Anglo-American's role in dirty money operations). The Rennies show up prominently in British diplomatic and military posts throughout Africa and Asia, e.g., Sir John Shaw Rennie was Governor and Commander in Chief of Mauritius (1962-68), and Sir Gilbert McCall Rennie was Governor and Commander in Chief of Northern Rhodesia in 1952.

8. The Economist, September 2,1978.

9. The authors benefited from an unpublished letter, "Jardine's Octopus in Southern Africa; Rennie's Consolidated Holdings," by David Cherry of the Africa staff of Executive Intelligence Review.

10. Peking's influence on the international gold market has been the subject of considerable commentary in the financial press; during 1977 the Bank of China suddenly released about 80 tons of gold onto the international markets, a move which commentators believed depressed the gold price. What commentators were then at a loss to explain is how the PRC, which runs a chronic balance-of-trade deficit, was able to obtain the gold in advance of selling it off. Peking's role in the gold-related aspect of opium financing provide some explanation.

11. International Currency Review, Vol. 10, No. 4, p. 146.

12. Harry J. Anslinger, The Murderers (New York: Farrar, Straus, and Cudahy,1961).

13. "World Drug Traffic and Its Impact on U.S. Security," Hearings before the Subcommittee to Investigate the Administration of the Internal Security Act and Other Internal Security Laws of the Committe on the Judiciary, United States Senate; 92nd Congress, Second Session; Part 3, The International Connection; September 13,15,1972, p. 101.

14. Haikal, Cairo Documents.

15. Anslinger, Murderers.
16. Harold Chang, "U.S. Sanction Threat to HK Over Drugs," South China Morning Post, August 18,1977.
17. Isvestia, February 17, 1978 (article by Bandura based on an article in the Japanese weekly, Shukan Bunshun, by N. Otiai).
18. According to interviews with Far Eastern and Soviet specialists, the figure Liternatura cited was "laundered" through a series of different Soviet conduits and publications during the 1960s, in a form typical of Soviet "surfacing" of hard intelligence for more general consumption. This particular report is taken much more seriously by Western specialists, than, for example, Soviet claims that the PRC at one point had 35,000 tons per year annual opium production — enough dope to keep the entire U.S. population addicted.
19. Reported in the Indonesian journal Buana Minggu, December 12, 1972. Many similar reports came through during the same period, including the following item from Indonesia as reported in the December 29, 1970 issue of Foreign Broadcast Information Service Daily Report:

> Djakarta — The weekly CHAS has signaled the possibility that Adjitorop, former Brigadier General Suharjo, and other elements of remnants of the G-30-S/PKI who lived in communist China, the Soviet Union, or other communist countries, continue to operate in Indonesia. According to CHAS, they often come to Singapore using foreign passports and fake names and disguised, because of Singapore's proximity to Indonesia.
>
> In view of the great risk of capture by Indonesia state agencies, these elements use Singapore for their subversion against Indonesia. The attempts to crush the Indonesian republic by remnants of the G-30-S/PKI also depend on assistance from and subversion by the above states.
>
> This was the observation of a correspondent of the weekly CHAS who recently visited Singapore, North Sumatra, Riau, and West Kalimantan.
>
> According to CHAS, Indonesia is one of the targets for subversion by communist China in fighting the Soviet Union and its allies, and in the struggle between the communists and the West.
>
> To attain their purpose, all sides employ all kinds of methods to mobilize local forces, which in the current new order oppose and undermine the Indonesian republican government overtly and covertly. Among these forces are remnants of the G-30-S PKI and groups which are defending the political principles of the old order.
>
> In launching its subversion, communist China conspicuously combines trade activities with the dissemination of communist ideology and instigation to rebel against the Indonesian government, CHAS concluded.

20. U.S. intelligence agencies had the same problem with the Ch'ao Chou element in the Chinese Communist Intelligence Service that Japanese interpreters had with American radio dispatches during World War II; American military forces employed Sioux and other Indians for certain classified radio transmissions, for which the Japanese had no interpreters. The entire American government had, during the early 1970s, only two employees capable of translating the Ch'ao Chou dialect. How extensive this network is, therefore, remains a matter of mystery. One disturbing feature of the New York City incident is that the Ch'ao Chou contact had with him the business card of the local Ch'ao Chou fraternal association in New York's Chinatown (See Note 3, Section 3).

Virtually the only published source indicating the Ch'ao Chou operation is John Le Carre's The Honourable Schoolboy (New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1977). Its leading character is Drake Ko, supposedly a Hong Kong kingpin of narcotics traffic with an Order of the British Empire and a brother in the Chinese Politburo. "They'd come up from Swatow, the two of them," a Le Carre character remarks of Ko and his brother. "They were boat people, Chiu Chow." Le Carre's novel, according to highly informed sources, is a straight roman a clef from the files of British intelligence; most of the individual characters are scarcely disguised real figures in the Far East drug traffic and mercenary scene. The book's apparent intent, to portray fictionally the replacement of British intelligence-power in the Far East by the CIA's, is patent nonsense. The interesting question is how Le Carre became so well-informed; his acknowledgements are to British intelligence and police sources.

21. Daniel Insor, Thailand: A Political, Social, and Economic Analysis, (London: 1965), p. 135.

22. A. Doak Barnett, Communist China and Asia (New York: 1960), p. 186.

23. The Chinese Bourgeoisie, p. 67.

24. Ibid., p. 154.

25. Ibid., p. 120.

26. Ibid.

27. Statement of Gen. Lewis W. Walt, before the Subcommittee to Investigate Administration of the Internal Security Act and Other Internal Security Laws of the Committee of the Judiciary, Hearings on "World Drug Traffic and its Impact on U.S. Security," Part 4, September 14, 1978, p. 160. "Communist guerrillas in Thailand are in control of an important stretch of opium-growing land on the Laos frontier," Walt testified. "The most serious insurgency is the White Flag Communist Party. . . it is Peking which has armed the insurgents and trained their leader, and supports them with a China-based radio operation. Over the past year, the White Flag Communist insurgency has grown to the point where it absorbs up to 80 percent of the counterinsurgency efforts of the Rangoon government. All the armed groups in Burma, pro-communist or anti-communist, have been involved in the drug trade. . . .The area that

the Communists control is estimated at 25 percent of Burma's total (opium) production. Burma produces 400 tons of opium a year." The authors cross-checked Walt's testimony with U.S. Foreign Service officers and found the above statement to be accurate.

28. Apparently, the relatively small city of Swatow was the center of an extraordinary prerevolution network of mainland financial links with expatriates that was maintained intact after the PRC was established. The remittance agencies, based in Swatow, Amoy, and Canton, had 1,000 branches throughout Southeast Asia as of 1950. After the revolution, the PRC government transformed them into an intelligence operation, employing the agents of the remittance companies abroad for intelligence-gathering purposes. Once the external financial operations of Peking's state banks got off the ground, however, the remittance companies were merged into the new apparatus.

29. Andreyev, The Chinese Bourgeoisie, p. 111.

30. Ibid., p. 117. Much of this is of a directly political nature. "Mention must also be made," the Soviet author says, "of the large contribution made by overseas Chinese businessmen towards financing the operation of PRC representatives in Southeast Asian countries (Burma and — until recently — Cambodia and Indonesia). Although in the given case these large contributions are spent in the countries concerned, they are neither more nor less than a clandestine form of sending foreign exchange to the PRC. In some cases local Chinese businessmen helped to finance the propaganda campaigns of the PRC embassies, the current expenses of embassies and missions and even the implementation of the economic aid agreements signed by the PRC. For example, the building of four factories in Cambodia under an economic aid agreement signed with the PRC was financed by local pro-Peking businessmen." However, Andreyev's data, the most current available, drop off at the critical period; no figures are available for the joint venture investments. The more recent picture was filled out through interviews with American and Southeast Asian specialists on PRC external finances.

7. T HE ROYAL INSTITUTE OF INTERNATIONAL AFFAIRS

1- John Flint, Cecil Rhodes (Boston: Little, Brown, and Co., 1974).

2. U.S. State Department, Foreign Relations of the United States, 1949, Vol. VII: "The Far East: China."

3. Christopher Thorne, "Chatham House, Whitehall, and Far Eastern Issues: 1941-45," International Affairs, January, 1978. The authors were compelled to rely on this summary rather than the original documents of the Royal Institute itself. However, the Thorne article is by a member of the RIIA, and published in the RIIA's own journal, and may be considered an authoritative representation of the RIIA's views

concerning its own history. The 1977 release of RIIA papers was, unfortunately, selective. Thorne notes, "The preparation of this article was greatly facilitated by a grant given to the Royal Institute of International Affairs by the Leverhulme Trust, which enabled the Institute to put its archives in an order more readily accessible to researchers. With the exception of papers dealing with the internal affairs of the Institute, those archives more than thirty years old are now open to bona fide research workers." The RIIA, of course, decides who is or is not bona fide.

4. State Department, Foreign Relations, pp. 1289-92.

5. Chou En-lai represented the CP in its "United Front" in Chungking with the Kuomintang during these years.

6. Thome, "Chatham House," p. 20

7. Peter Vladimirov, Vladimirov Diaries, (Doubleday & Co.: 1976).

8. Thome, "Chatham House," pp. 4-5.

9. Ibid.

10. The ties of Ronning and Endicott to China go back very far and have served as a crucial contact between British policy and the PRC. Endicott was born of missionary parents in China in 1899, and worked there as a Methodist minister for many years. By the time of the 1927 Shanghai massacre of communists by the KMT, Endicott admitted in a discussion that he was already working as an advisor to Chiang Kai-shek. In the early 1940s Endicott underwent a "Damascus Road" transformation to Marxism and became a supporter of the CCP. He became close to Chou En-lai during this time. Following his return to Canada, Endicott formed a newsletter which reported on the PRC and was a founding member of the Norman Bethune College at York University, working closely with Chester Ronning.

Ronning, also born in China of missionary parents, was in the Royal Canadian Air Force Intelligence during World War II. With the end of the War, Ronning became a Canadian foreign officer in China, during which time he developed close relations with CCP leaders, especially Chou En-lai, and current PRC Foreign Minister Huang Hua. Ronning argued strongly for Western recognition of the PRC after 1949, as did the leaders of the Far East Group of the RIIA, and was recognized as a friend by PRC leaders. Ronning served as translator for Huang Hua, who was the official spokesman for the PRC in the aftermath of the Communist victory. When China began diplomatic openings to the West in the early 1970s, Canada was one of the first countries chosen for normalization. Ronning's friend Huang Hua was the PRC's first ambassador to Canada.

Investigations have shown that both Paul Lin and Endicott maintain extensive ties to Canadian Maoist organizations, and through them, to international terrorist organizations. Ronning is known by professional intelligence officers to play a higher "coordinating" role at the government level of terrorist deployment; Endicott and Lin handle the "field work" with the Maoists. (The information here is derived from team interviews with Endicott himself and associates of Paul Lin.)

11. Thome, "Chatham House," p. 27.
12. State Department, Foreign Relations, pp. 1289-92.
13. Ibid.
14. Christopher Wren, New York Herald Tribune, January 16,1948.
15. State Department, Foreign Relations, pp. 1289-92.
16. U.S. Senate, Committee on the Judiciary, 82nd Congress, First Session, Subcommittee on Internal Security, Hearings on the Institute for Pacific Relations, Part I.
17. State Department, Foreign Relations, pp. 331-332.
18. U.S. Senate, Hearings on the Institute for Pacific Relations, Part I.
19. Ibid.

8. CANADA: NORTH AMERICA'S HONG KONG

Most of the source material from this section came from analysis of bank and corporate annual reports and Who's Who entries; a simple cross-correlation of such information produced an unbroken trail of dope and dirty money from the Far East, through Canada, into the United States. The business, legal, and accounting relations noted here are all a matter of public record. In addition, the authors interviewed several former and serving Canadian and American law enforcement officers, who have had Walter Lockhart Gordon and his Canadian "China Lobby" under scrutiny for years.

1. An egregious example of British intelligence activity in Canada is the formation of the British Newfoundland Corporation (Brinco) in the early 1950s. This project was planned by Winston Churchill, the Rothschilds, and Newfoundland's Premier Joseph "Joey" Smallwood, a Master Scottish Mason. According to Virginia Cowles's book on the Rothschilds (1973):

> In 1951 shortly after Winston Churchill had become Prime Minister for the second time, he received Mr. Smallwood, the Premier of Newfoundland. Smallwood unfolded plans for a vast development scheme in Labrador and Newfoundland. To carry it out British capital was needed on a truly mammoth scale. . . . When the consortium of firms was formed (Churchill) was delighted that N. M. Rothschild & Sons should head it.

Participation in the founding of Brinco included the leading firms involved in Dope, Inc., including Morgan, Grenfell, Kleinwort and Sons, Rio Tinto Zinc, Anglo-American Corp., and Prudential. Cowles adds, "Brinco's terms of reference were breathtaking: the exploratory right to sixty thousand square miles in Newfoundland and Labrador, an area larger than England and Wales. . . ."

In Smallwood's autobiography (New American Library, 1973), he identified himself: "In 1967 (I) enjoyed immensely the distinction of being installed in office (as Master Mason) by the Grand Master Mason (Scottish Constitution) Lord Bruce, who came from Scotland especially for the purpose. So I met the direct descendant of King Robert the Bruce. Proud? Oh, yes."

Brinco's board of directors today includes Mark Turner, the chairman of Rio Tinto Zinc, former member of the RIIA Council; Edmund de Rothschild, the president of N. M. Rothschild and Sons; and Sam Harris, the New York lawyer who is a director of Rio Tinto Zinc and whose law firm represents RTZ as well as the Kaplan Foundation, a funder of environmentalist groups. In court papers filed by the Westinghouse Corporation, Harris was named a conspirator in a plan to raise artificially the price of the world's uranium 800 percent during the 1970s.

2. This piece of information was an incidental product of a Labor Party countersurveillance operation against a number of individuals associated with the top management of Drexel Burnham Lambert.

3. A. J. Colin, Pro-Consul in Politics (New York: Macmillan, 1964).

9. ALL IN THE FAMILY: THE REAL SYNDICATE

1. The cult of Isis was developed in ancient Egypt no later than the Third Dynasty of the Old Kingdom, approximately 2780 B.C., and represents one of the earliest formal articulations of the entropic and backward ideology of mother-worship. As known to the Priesthood of the Temple of Isis — true believers themselves — the Isis cult formalizes the elements of a capability for social control, exploitation, and destruction of creative free will in subject populations. The elements include:

- Use of various schizophrenia-inducing drugs;
- Use of repetitive, heteronomic sounds to supplement the effect of psychotropic drugs, and to create a societal aesthetic that endorses and encourages use of the drugs;
- Creation of synthetic cults based on the original reactionary Isis myth, but specific to the psychological profile of the population which the priesthood has targeted for subversion;
- Enforcement of a political-economic model antagonistic to general human progress, and containing targeted populations within non-creative, manual slave-labor projects (e.g., pyramid-building).

This combination of Pharaonic cult capabilities was taken as a model for further refinement in this century by the British Secret Intelligence Service's Tavistock Institute in London — an institution which launched the "counterculture" in the United States and Europe, based on the very drugs, mescaline and hashish, the Ancient Priesthood had employed (see Part IV).

2. Carroll Quigley, Tragedy and Hope (New York: Macmillan Co., 1974), p. 131. The "Circle of Initiates" formation was explicitly modeled after the ancient Isis Priesthood.

3. R. S. Clymer, The Book of Rosicruciae (1947), Vol. II, p. 106.

4. See Lyndon H. LaRouche, Jr., "Is Jimmy Carter Truly a Christian?," New Solidarity, Vol. IX, No. 64, October 13,1978.

5. Cited in Nesta H. Webster, Secret Societies and Subversive Movements (London: Boswell Printing and Publishing Co., 1924), p. 115.

6. Their father, the 7th Earl of Elgin, was famous for his theft of the "Elgin Marbles" from Greece, smuggling them to the British Museum.

7. Dictionary of National Biography (London: Oxford University Press, 1968), Vol. III.p. 104ff.

8. Jean de Villiershad was the Master of the Knights of St. John of Jerusalem from 1285-93, when the preparations for the slaughter of the Knights Templar were undertaken. Philippe Villiers de l'Isle Adam was the Grand Master of the Knights of St. John in France from 1521-22, and was the first Grand Master in Malta from 1530-34. Today Sir Charles Villiers, who was the managing director of J. Henry Schroder Wagg from 1960-68, is the chairman of the British Steel Corp. Sir John Michael Villiers, a Knight of St. John, was the Queen's Harbour Master Malta from 1952-54, and Lieutenant-Governor of Jersey, an offshore banking center, from 1964-69.

9. By his own testimony in various writings, Lord Russell was in periodic contact with the Communist Chinese regime and Premier Chou in particular after 1949.

10. For example, Rudolf Hess and Professor-General Karl Haushofer, ghost-writer of Mein Kampf; Alfred Rosenberg, Nazi Minister of Foreign Services; Max Amann, Editor in Chief of Nazi Publications; Hans Frank, Nazi Governor-General of Occupied Poland during World War II; and several members of the Wittelsbach family (the Bavarian royal family) who sponsored much of Adolf Hitler's career. Hitler himself was an associate of the society, known as a "Visiting Brother."

11. The connection is visible in the 1866 founding of the "Masonic Rosicrucian Society" whose leaders, Mathers, Wescott, and Woodman, also formed the Isis-Urania Temple of the Hermetic Students of the Golden Dawn in 1886. The Golden Dawn group, by 1890, included the mystic poet, William Butier Yeats, former Secretary of the Theosophist Society. Aleister Crowley was the order's historian during the period of Yeats's association with it.

12. The LSD cult was a creation of the Royal Institute of International Affairs and its psychological warfare arm, the Tavistock Institute (see Part IV).

During the late 1960s — at the height of the "counterculture" and "hippy movement" in the United States — the Director of the RIIA, Andrew Schonfield, was a member of the Tavistock Institute's Governing Council. In 1967, during Schonfield's tenure at RIIA and Tavistock, Tavistock's leading Staff Psychologist, R. D. Laing, published his book, The Politics of Experience, which advocated schizophrenia ("madness is the only sanity") and drug use. Laing writes:

> I want you to taste and smell me, want to be palpable, to get under your skin, to be an itch in your brain and in your guts that you can't scratch out and that you can't allay, that will corrupt and destroy you and drive you mad.

During the 1960s, the Tavistock Institute received large grants from the Ford Foundation, the British Center for Environmental Studies, the British Defense Ministry, Harvard University, and at least £22,797 from the Social Science Research Council, of which Schonfield was chairman at the time.

13. See Robert Cohen and L. Wolfe, "Karl Haushofer's Mein Kampf," New Solidarity, Vol. IX, No. 45, August 7,1978.
14. Cited in John Flint, Cecil Rhodes, p. 27.
15. Martin Fido, Rudyard Kipling (New York: Viking Press, 1974).
16. Ibid., p. 35.
17. See Harbans Rai Bachchan, W. B. Yeats and Occultism (Delhi: Motilal Banarsidass, 1965).
18. See Lyndon H. LaRouche, Jr., "Hitler: Runaway British Agent," New Solidarity, Vol. VIII, No. 87, January 10,1978.
19. Tennyson in 1820 had been a member of the "Cambridge Apostles" which initiated the Metaphysical Society in 1868-69. Other members of the Metaphysical Society included H. W. Ackland, the Duke of Argyle, Alexander Campbell Fraser, William Gladstone, Shadworth Hodgson, and Walter Bagehot. This group included prominent members of the Society for Psychical Research, Mind magazine, and the Fabian Society.
20. Verse 8 of the Choric Song of the poem.
21. History of the Times, Vol. IV: 1912-1920 (New York: Macmillan Co., 1952), p. 244. The relevant section reads:

> On Jan. 19, 1917, Milner left London at the head of an Allied mission which, during three weeks in Petrograd, laid down a suitable scheme for keeping the Russian forces supplied with Western munitions. . . . It was widely believed at the time that the February Revolution (installing Kerensky — ed.) was hatched at the British Embassy.

22. After the destruction of the Knights Templar in the 14th century, the Knights of St. John appropriated the Templars' Red Cross symbol into their own iconography.

According to Ferdinand Lundberg, America's 60 Families (New York: Vanguard Press, 1937), p. 146ff:

> The Russian Mission of the Red Cross was headed by Col. William Boyce Thompson and Col. Raymond Robbins . . . (who) used the Red Cross to forward the war aims of Wall Street in a way unsuspected by the American people. The purely political function of the Red Cross is not generally appreciated even today.
>
> . . . Thompson and Robbins, according to their own statements, functioned in Russia as a political arm of the War Department. Their crowning achievement was the purchase of enough delegates to the All-Russian Democratic Congress (to support Kerensky — ed.). The cost of seducing this congress was $1,000,000.

Winston Churchill's wife, Clementine, a Commander of the Order of St. John, served as the Chairman of the Red Cross Aid to Russia Fund from 1939-46. The same uses of the "Red Cross" cover for intelligence operations is implicit in the fact that a direct descendant of King Robert Bruce of Scotland, David Bruce, was the Chief Representative of the American Red Cross in Britain in 1940, and one year later, in 1941, became head of Office of Strategic Services (OSS) Operations in the European Theatre; the same David Bruce, during the Nixon Administration years, was selected by Secretary of State Henry Kissinger to be Chief of the U.S. Mission to the People's Republic of China from 1973-74, and then became U.S. Ambassador to NATO from 1974-76.
23. For example, in his April 1938 Annual Report to the Shareholders of Rio Tinto, chairman Geddes noted that:

> Our company has received recently a great deal of attention in the press of many countries. Propagandists possessed of lively imaginations but devoid of respect for accuracy have told the world of our doings. In result a lot of nonsense has been published, evidently designed to suggest that your Board is composed of violent fascists actively participating on the side of General Franco. I read the other day an article in which it was stated as a fact that we had sent in a year 300,000 tons of copper to Germany and 65,000 tons to Italy to pay for supplies from those two countries to General Franco. . . . This is just rubbish. ... I have seen it stated in the press that we . . . your Board . . . "gave" . . . help to General Franco's cause. It depends on your meaning of the verb "to give."

Significantly, in 1923's Annual Report by then-Chairman Lord Alfred Milner, it was stated that "The constantly increasing burden of taxation, especially in Spain, where the (republican — ed.) government is evidently convinced that it can never kill the goose that lays golden eggs. ..." (See David Avery, Not On Queen Victoria's Birthday: The Story of the Rio Tinto Mines, London, 1973, pp. 371ff.)

Auckland Geddes' grandfather had been the Hudson's Bay Company's official agent in Scotland. His second nephew, Anthony, was a member of the Governing Council of the Royal Institute of International Affairs in 1949, alongside Sir Mark Turner, Rio Tinto's current chairman. The same Anthony is a director of the Midland Bank.

PART III

Organized Crime

Introduction

We have now taken the reader through the production and wholesaling phase of Dope, Incorporated. We have introduced the Far East clearinghouse bank, the Hongkong & Shanghai Bank and he gold and diamond houses that with HongShang feed the black market with invisible forms of payment.

In the following pages we will concentrate on the distribution side of Dope, Incorporated's business cycle. We will first enter the Canadian board rooms where the Keswicks, the Inchcapes and their representatives brush shoulders with the wholesalers of the drug trade — the Zionist Hofjuden middlemen — whose assigned task is to ensure swift and secure delivery of that "most valuable source of revenue" to Britain's retail distributors: the mob. The Bronfman family of Canada is our leading case, since they are the top middlemen for the U.S. market which, in turn, is the richest in the world.

Beneath the respectable veneer of the Bronfmans' corporate financial empire we will uncover Dope, Incorporated subsidiaries that control the criminal underworld of North America. We will look closely at Meyer Lansky, the Marcello family, and other

"Mafia" figures and discover that like China's Green Gang, the mob is a secret army, a fifth column controlled by Britain against the United States.

We will trace the drug money to the gambling casinos and other "legitimate" enterprises that are the syndicate's indispensable storefront cover for the drug trade. From these respectable enterprises we will trace the drug money into the halls of the state assemblies, city councils, congressional offices, and into the pockets of America's contemporary Benedict Arnolds and Aaron Burrs, among whom we will find Edward Kennedy, Jacob Javits, Henry "Scoop" Jackson, and other leading lights of the Zionist Lobby. We will find tainted heroin money being funneled into Zionist organizations and from Zionist fronts back into political machines for the dual purpose of buying protection for the drug trade and shaping U.S. policy.

We will then take a grand tour through the Anglo-Dutch offshore banking centers, watching money being laundered through Basel, Liechtenstein, Tel Aviv, and the Bahamas; tracing it carefully as it changes ownership from the mob, to the Bronfmans, to British banks, to the Israeli Mossad — finally ending up in dummy corporations to finance international terrorism and a privately owned worldwide assassination bureau.

By the time we finish, the reader will have a view of organized crime that tears to shreds all the fairy tales of the drugstores novels and Grade-B Hollywood productions. The image of gangsters and thieves lurking in the dark underworld will dissipate before the fact that we are dealing with the most highly integrated, top-down political machinery in the world — one that enjoys the logistical support of a $200 billion per annum international cartel and the "protection" of every political entity Britain has created through these vast "invisible earnings."

The cutouts

The police investigator has a problem in trying to track down the source of the drug trade: he invariably proceeds from the bottom up and gets lost along the way long before he reaches the level of command that counts. Every year, local police arrest thousands of street corner and schoolyard pushers, yet it is a rare occasion when any of these arrests leads to the arrest of higher up syndicate figures who ply the street trade in the first place. And these local syndicate warlords are themselves usually several steps removed from the "Mr. Bigs."

As Part II of this report demonstrated, at the top, British banking — through HongShang — controls the production and wholesaling side of Dope, Incorporated. This "outfront" activity in the Far East is protected by the legal technicality that the area is off-limits to U.S. investigative agencies. (As one experienced U.S. foreign service officer put it, "It would be easier for a white Anglo-Saxon Protestant to penetrate the Politburo of the Chinese Communist Party than it would be to gain access to the Hong Kong or Swiss bank accounts of the drug traders.") At the retail, distribution end, there is no parallel way of directly linking the British oligarchy to the drug traffic — at least not with the ordinary tools of the police trade.

One of the ABCs of any covert operation is the time-tested practice of securing middlemen — or, to use the professional expression, "cutouts" — that effectively conceal the identities of the stage managers who run the show from behind the lace and velvet curtains. From the top all the way down to the street level, Dope, Incorporated is run through layer upon layer of such cutouts.

Even in China, where the British Crown brazenly pursued its opium policy, it operated through the corrupted Soong family which carried out the day-to-day business operations for Jardine Matheson.

In the West, the prime cutout for Dope, Incorporated is the Zionist Lobby.

This cutout begins at the top with the cohesive grouping of Hofjuden ("Court Jews") who serve the British monarchy as loyal, wholly owned servants. These families, whom we will meet by name, have a centuries-long tradition of attaching themselves to the predominant noble houses of Europe, providing indispensable services as tax-farmers and errand boys for the types of missions that the aristocrats would prefer to plan but not get caught in carrying out.

Many of these Hofjuden families migrated from Amsterdam to Britain after the "Glorious Revolution" (1688), which brought the Dutch House of Orange onto the British throne in alliance with the most bucolic, feudalist landed gentry of the Isles. That Anglo-Dutch merger of the late 17th century turned Britain into the most powerful center of the European oligarchical faction — a status it has maintained for three centuries. For these Hofjuden families, the relocation to Britain marked no shift in allegiance; they have functioned as servants for the oligarchical system, not for specific houses. Several of the Hofjuden families who converged on London during the 17th and 18th centuries had served the Genoese bankers in their takeover of Holland, had participated in the Dutch East India Company's first expeditions in opium trade, and had collaborated over the centuries with the British Jesuits against European humanist forces.

The Hofjuden should not be confused with the Jewish people. In much the same way that one would not condemn an entire nation for the crimes committed by its most deranged citizens, one cannot condemn the entire Jewish people for the centuries of crime committed by the Hofjuden. The only relationship the Hofjuden have had to Jewry is that of persecutors and tormentors. As the clandestine operations bureau for the oligarchy, they quickly learned that they could augment their capabilities tremendously by subjecting Jews to waves of persecutions and then recruiting terrorized Jews into Zionist organizations that had as their ostensible aim the "survival" of Jewry! In street parlance, the Hofjuden have run a six-century-long protection-extortion racket against the Jewish people — to the overall effect of building up a sizable "Zionist" network at the disposal of British Secret Intelligence. This traditional relationship to Jewry was carried to its lawful conclusion in the 20th century when the Rothschilds, Warburgs, Oppenheimers, Schroeders, and other Hofjuden became the leading financial backers of Adolf Hitler.

One of the greatest benefits that the Hofjuden gained by their complicity in Hitler's genocide of the East European population was that they could henceforth hide behind the memory of the awesome fate of millions of Jews and conduct the filthiest sorts of operations — from drug-running to terrorism to genocide against Arab and related populations — without being exposed for these crimes against humanity. Whenever any critic attempted to expose these crimes, he was quickly assaulted as a "Nazi," a "fascist," or an "anti-Semite."

It is neither unrelated nor coincidental that these Zionist Hofjuden were delegated the role of cutouts between the inner circles of the British nobility and the filthiest gutters of organized crime. Even within the Hofjuden, we encounter two levels: one is the centuries-old families (the Hofjuden "elite") who rub shoulders with and are intermarried with the nobility; and the second, the "initiates" — "chosen" by the Hofjuden elite to be the drug-runners, the bootleggers, the murderers, and extortionists - who themselves hope that by slavishly serving the British oligarchy they will be placed among the ranks of the Zionist "respectables."

Within the first category, we find such "respectable houses" as these:

The Montefiores trace their origin as "special operations" experts for the European oligarchy to the 13th century in Spain, when they ran errands as tax farmers and Inquisitors for their masters, the Genoese. The Montefiores later moved to Holland to help found the Dutch East India Company and the Bank of Holland. After the Stuart Restoration of the mid-17th century, the Montefiores moved to England where they helped establish the Bank of England and the British East India Company. Under Sir Moses Montefiore, the family collaborated with Lord Palmerston and Prime Minister Disraeli in the founding of the present-day Zionist "movement."

The Goldsmids and Mocattas have been the leading bullion merchants for the royal family of England since the Stuart Restoration, predating the founding of the Bank of England. As we have seen, both families conduct a significant portion of the black marketeering in precious metals for the Hong Kong drug traffic.

The Oppenheimers control a large portion of the diamond and gold mining in South Africa and are interlocked with the

HongShang Bank to provide yet another means of exchange for drug transactions.

The Canadian de Hirsch family bankrolled much of the Jewish migration from Eastern Europe to Canada and is still a bankroller of Zionist organizations.

The Sassoons were the first Hofjuden family to concentrate their resources primarily in opium production. Known as the "Rothschilds of the East," they settled in India at the beginning of the 18th century. The Sassoons relocated in 1949 to the Caribbean where they established themselves on the ground floor of casino gambling and unregulated offshore banking.

The Rothschilds began their fortune in Hesse-Cassel, Germany by supplying Hessian mercenaries to the Hanoverian King George III of Britain against the American colonies. They are "johnny-come-latelys" to the Hofjuden circle, having only seriously gained a place in the oligarchical court with the Treaty of Vienna in 1815. From that point, however, the Rothschilds have expended considerable resources toward the subversion of the American republic; they maintain an "investment" presence in Dope, Incorporated.

Immediately below the Hofjuden elite are those "initiate" families selected and sponsored to run the criminal underworld and its "legitimate" front organizations. Into this category falls the powerful Bronfman family of Canada, the Hong Kong of North America. By all accounts one of the richest families in the world, the Bronfmans are a sterling example of a family handpicked and raised out of the gutter to become some of the best paid crooks in the world. A Bronfman illegal loan of $350,000 to the Campaign to Re-Elect Hugh Carey as Governor of New York recently caused a public outcry, but as the story we now tell shows, the Bronfmans themselves are owned and operated by the British banking elite of Dope, Incorporated.

1

The Bronfman Gang

The Bronfman family is best known to Americans through its ownership of Seagram, the biggest liquor company in North America. The family's holdings stretch from whiskey, banking, mining, real estate, and — although somewhat less publicized — narcotics. Today they are regarded as respectable and outstanding "philanthropists" whose name is attached to everything important in Canada — and Israel — be it government, business, or "cultural" affairs.

This was not always the public profile of the Bronfman family. Less than 50 years ago, they were known to be the biggest bootloggers in North America and were referred to by the less prestigious title "the Bronfman gang."

The Bronfmans have always been beholden to the Hofjuden elite. The first member of the family to come to North America was Yechiel Bronfman, a grist mill owner from Bessarabia, Romania, who later anglicized his name to Ekiel. Yechiel emigrated to Canada in 1889 under the sponsorship of the Moses Montefiore Jewish Colonialization Committee. (1)

This enterprise had been initiated at an 1872 meeting between

Baron Maurice de Hirsch, Baron Alfred de Rothschild, and other Zionists that established a Jewish Colonialization Association to bring selected Russian and Eastern European Jews to agricultural settlements ("kibbutzim") in the Canadian provinces of Manitoba and Saskatchewan. (2) The same period marked the transfer of the Warburg, Kuhn, Loeb, and related Our Crowd migration from Germany and Britain into lower Manhattan. In 1912 William Sebag Montefiore himself arrived in Montreal where he spent the remainder of his life (d. 1950). Lord Harold Sebag Montefiore, current head of the Jerusalem Foundation (the Zionist wing of the Most Venerable Order of St. John of Jerusalem) was sent to Canada for his early education. In the same period, Baron de Hirsch established the De Hirsch Foundation in Canada as the umbrella for all Canadian Jewish "philanthropic" activities and the Montefiores created a club (named after the family) to service the resident Zionist elites. The Rothschilds, too, planted a branch of their family on Canadian soil.

Meanwhile, in Saskatchewan, the Bronfman family found little interest in eking a living out of the plains of midwestern Canada. The strenuously Orthodox Jewish family first turned to selling wood, then to horse trading, and then most successfully to the hotel business (and prostitution). (3)

In Yiddish Bronfman means "liquorman," and the hotel business put the Bronfmans in a good position to take advantage of the 1915 advent of Canadian prohibition. Bronfman hotels became "boozeriums." Prohibition — enacted on orders from the Privy Council as the prelude to the 1920s U.S. Prohibition and birth of organized crime — catapulted the Bronfmans into the multimillionaire bracket and a status as the untouchable kingpins of crime in North America.

During Canada's four dry years from 1915 to 1919, the Bronfmans established their contacts with U.S. criminal figures for illegally importing liquor into Canada. In 1916, the Bronfmans established their first link with the opium trade proper. Samuel and Abe Bronfman, two of Ekiel's four sons, collaborated with the Hudson's Bay Company — in which the Keswick family of Jardine Matheson had controlling interest — to buy the Canadian Pure Drug Company. In this way the Bronfmans rushed into the loophole in the War Measures Act that permitted the distribution by pharmacists of alcohol for "medicinal" purposes.

When prohibition in Canada ended in 1919 and Prohibition in the United States began, the Bronfmans simply turned from whiskey importing to whiskey exporting. After it was all over, in May 1936 the Bronfmans agreed to pay $1.5 million to settle their account with the U.S. Treasury; the sum amounted to an admission that half the liquor that came into the United States during Prohibition was from the "liquormans." (4)

The "Seagram Chickencock" the family poured across the border was pure poison — a mixture of pure alcohol, sulfuric acid, caramel, water, and aged rye whiskey that paralyzed its victim. Between 1920 and 1930, 34,000 Americans died from alcoholpoisoning.

Their control of liquor flow into Prohibition USA gave the Bronfmans literally life-and-death control over American crime. Refusing to play ball with the Bronfman gang usually spelled death, and independently minded gang bosses were often known to be executed by their lieutenants on the Bronfmans' behalf. One of the buyers best liked by the gang was New York City beer baron Arthur Flegenheimer, a.k.a. Dutch Schultz, who succeeded in wiping out his competition including the notorious killer Legs Diamond. Schultz himself was later rubbed out when he took it into his head to murder the reforming New York District Attorney Thomas Dewey. (We will meet up with Mr. Dewey later in regard to the Mary Carter Paint Company.) (5)

In the first years of Prohibition, Ekiel's four boys ran all bootlegging from the prairie states of Canada to major distribution sites south like Chicago. To secure the shipment lines, Harry set up a dummy firm, Transcanada Transport Company. Transcanada was a protective cover for the Canadian Pacific Railway owned by respectable gentlemen back in London, which ran the whiskey across the border. (6) The Bronfmans also bought up stretches of barren farmland along the border and even built an underground pipeline to pump their "chickencock" into the United States.

During these early years, the Bronfmans were scarcely under the protective wing of their Zionist sponsors. Thus, for example, in 1932 Bronfman brother-in-law Paul Matoff was executed gangland-style by the Chicago mob in a dispute over profit splitting. A scandal ensued, public hearings were convened, and the Bronfman crimes came spilling out into the light of day. The Bronfmans received a mild reprimand from the Canadian government and relocated their operations to Montreal.

1922 also marks the year that the Bronfmans procured their own distillery, hauled with workmen included from Kentucky to Montreal.

Since 1920 the Bronfmans had been importing British whiskey from the Distillery Company of London (DCL), which controlled more than half the world market in scotch whiskey. Owned by the higher echelons of the British nobility including Field Marshal Haig, Lord Dewar, Lord Woolavington, and others, the dispensation of distribution rights was a decision made by HM the King. In 1926, upon the request of Samuel Bronfman, the DCL agreed to go 50-50 in the Bronfmans' distillery and the Distillery Corporation Limited was formed as a holding company with Bronfman and Seagram distilleries. Headquarters were established at the Bronfmans' corporate castle in Montreal, but it was the Distillery Company of London's William Ross who was installed as president with Sam Bronfman as vice-president. The British elite had made a decision to go with the Bronfman option.

Despite the massive infusion of capital and the newly gained legitimacy the link-up with DCL afforded them, the smell of Bronfman smuggling both into and out of Canada and their wholesale bribery of Canadian customs a la Hong Kong had gotten too strong. In 1928 the Royal Commission on Customs recommended the immediate prosecution of Harry Bronfman on charges of attempted bribery. Nothing happened, but shortly thereafter the Bronfmans created the Atlas Shipping Company and moved their smuggling operations to the French islands of St. Pierre and Miquelon, 15 miles off the Newfoundland coast. With licenses in Bermuda, Saint John, New Brunswick, and Belize, British Honduras, the Atlas Shipping Company was one of the first ties laid down in the dirty money-drug underground railway between Canada and the Caribbean. (7)

A little ditty popular during the time indicates the amusement with which the British viewed the entire operation:

Four and twenty Yanks
Feeling very dry,
Went across the border
To get a drink of rye.
When the rye was opened,
The Yanks began to sing:
"God bless America,
But God save the King."

Organized crime comes of age

With Prohibition, crime became a bigtime business. It was no longer based on small-scale prostitution, loan sharking, or petty protection rackets. Now it was centralized around the marketing of one precious and outlawed commodity whose supply was controlled from London and from the British colony of Canada.

Crime was reorganized from top to bottom into an integrated wholesale and retail distribution chain with well-defined marketing districts, quotas, and uniform pricing. Crime became syndicated.

Hundreds of movies spewed out of Hollywood about the "Roaring Twenties" have glamorized the truth: with Prohibition, Britain — through its Bronfman Gang cutout — had created a nationally syndicated crime cancer. Within a decade of the Roaring Twenties, the Bronfman syndicate would be peddling heroin, cocaine, and every other available poisonous drug through the same wholesaling, transporting, and retailing system that bootlegged booze.

Bronfman's counterpart in the United States was one Arnold Rothstein. Just as Bronfman made it into the bigtime under the auspices of the Hofjuden elite, so Arnie Rothstein was sponsored by Our Crowd Zionist investment bankers who arrived in New York as the Montefiores were setting up business in Canada.

Arnold Rothstein — the godfather of organized crime — was the son of a wealthy Our Crowd dry goods merchant.

At the turn of the century, the Russell Sage Foundation had issued a well-publicized field study of loan sharking in New York City. (8) The report's wide publicity resulted in the bankrupting, jailing, or takeover of the petty gangsters by Rothstein, who emerged as a powerful Tammany Hall figure with a fabled loan sharking business estimated at several million dollars.

Regionwide combines were formed up and down the East Coast for smooth distribution. The Reinfeld Syndicate — named after the Newark, New Jersey bootlegger and accused murderer Joseph Reinfeld — functioned as the middleman between the British liquor distilleries and the "Rum Rows" of Boston and New York. Its controlling shareholders were the four Bronfman brothers, Allan, Sam, Edgar, and Charles. The U.S. leg was handled by Reinfeld and Abner "Longie" Zwillman, later the boss of Atlantic City, and Rothstein's gangs in New York. (9)

In 1927, the Big Seven combine consolidated the entire East Coast distribution system. Its organizer was John Torrio — a dapper little gentleman who without benefit of family, racket, or turf had gained notoriety for eliminating any local crime bosses who stood in the way of national syndication. Torrio was a Bronfman man who had murdered his own uncle to prove it. Brought into Chicago in 1910 by his uncle, racketeer "Big Jim" Colosimo, Torrio smelled the wind on the eve of Prohibition and demanded that his uncle start making the right contacts to get into the lucrative business of bootlegging. When "Big Jim" refused, Torrio had him murdered and took over the Chicago mob as the distribution point for the Bronfman liquor. (10)

In 1925, Torrio suddenly left Chicago heading first for Havana and then landing in Italy. Returning to the United States in 1927 after he miraculously "escaped" Mussolini's purges of the Mafia, Torrio came back with one goal: to build a nationally) organized crime syndicate.

While the mad killers and punks like Dutch Schultz, Legs Diamond, and Al Capone made the headlines every day and provided good material for gangster movies, John Torrio quietly continued the work that Arnold Rothstein (assassinated in 1928) had begun, now with the aid of Rothstein's successor Meyer Lansky. Torrio could do what Lansky and the Bronfmans were prohibited from doing for reasons of ethnicity: discipline the scores of family local crime chieftains and "moustache petes" into one centralized business that could penetrate every sector of the economy. Known as the "assassin who never carries a gun," Torrio presented himself as the elder statesman of organized crime and commanded respect from the Mafia locals. "Cooperation is good for business" was his slogan.

The Big Seven had been Torrio's first step. The cooperative of East Coast bootleggers controlled from the top down to the local levels all prices, membership, centralized distribution points, corruption, and protection.

By 1928 Torrio was able to call a Cleveland meeting to establish a nationwide crime syndicate. (11) The gathering was unique in that it had succeeded in bringing together into one room all the crime bosses of every major organized city. There were three items on the agenda. First, how to use the huge profits of Prohibition and invest them in legitimate business that would permit a steadily increasing take for the syndicate. Second, how to deal with the Italian question. The ritual vendetta murders of the Mafioso families were good for the newspapers, said Torrio, but bad for business. Immediately after the meeting the Castellammarese gang wars broke out in New York as the test case for Torrio's syndicate. Under the auspices of Lansky and Torrio, Lucky Luciano succeeded in wiping out all recalcitrant godfathers. During the last night of the war — the infamous "Night of the Sicilian Vespers" — over 40 people were gunned down. (12) With cartelization came the need for more long-lasting regulation — gangland style. In the early 1930s Murder, Incorporated was formed as a regulatory commission of sorts to police any overzealous "free enterprise" advocates who might try to buck the syndicate. A special assassination bureau was set up by

Meyer Lansky and Benjamin "Bugs" Siegel. The "Bugs and Meyer Gang" had been distinguished by the fact that they owed allegiance to no one (except maybe Arnold Rothstein); they had originally been used to protect Bronfman liquor shipments across the border against "freelance" hijackers. (13)

By 1932 Torrio was strong enough to pull together another meeting of the syndicate, this time in Atlantic City, where a National Commission — the board of directors of organized crime — was officially formed. Aside from the leading Italian mafiosi who had survived the transition, Meyer Lansky, now regarded as the financial and enforcement wizard of the syndicate, and Atlantic City's Zwillman were in attendance as honored guests.

Thus, for the British, Prohibition was a roaring success. What had begun as a three-way contract between Britain (the supplier), Bronfman (the cutout), and Rothstein (the distributor) had become within the space of a decade a nationally organized crime syndicate — a private, secret army under British banking and political control.

The Rothstein-Hong Kong connection

To pick up the story of the modern-day Dope, Incorporated, let us return to Cleveland and John Torrio's first 1928 meeting of the syndicate. The third item on the agenda was what to do after Prohibition. The commodity, Torrio proposed, that would replace liquor as the black-market, big-profit taker was narcotics.

When Prohibition began in 1920 Arnold Rothstein had personally gone to Great Britain to establish the liquor pipeline with the British distilleries. Less known but more important is that at the same time he had dispatched his underling Jacob "Yasha" Katzenberg to Shanghai to begin negotiations for a dope pipeline from the Far East into the East Coast of the United States. (14) (The West Coast had been sewn up in the previous century with a pipeline from Shanghai straight into the Pacific Chinese coolie communities.)

It was projected that the same networks established to bootleg liquor could just as easily smuggle and retail narcotics. By 1926, U.S. narcotics agent-on-the-scene in the Far East, Ralph Oyler, wrote back to his boss Levi Nutt, chief of the U.S. Narcotics Division, that the opium market had expanded so tremendously that Britain was "even taking shipments of crude opium from the

Near East to add to her gigantic supply of Asian opium" in order to meet market demand. The traditional opium families of Keswick, Sassoon, and Inchcape were preparing for the future. (15)

One year after Oyler's report, the 1927 Shanghai massacre put an end to all challenges to the rule of opium. The Shanghai uprising had been an attempt by the nationalist factions within the Kuomintang and Communist Party to destroy the opium dealers, such as the Soong family, who had seized control over the government and had carved up China into drug-running "warlord" satrapies. The massacre was carried out by the Green Gang Syndicate, acting on orders and funding from the Extraterritorial International Settlements on Shanghai headed by Lord William Johnston Keswick. The British enclave harbored the Green Gang criminals at the time of the massacre, and the British-dominated Municipal Council (headed again by Lord Keswick) turned over trade union leaders and others to Green Gang criminals who executed them. (16) Had the Shanghai massacre occurred during the previous century, it would have been known as the Third Opium War; the consequence of the slaughter was yet another dramatic increase in British opium control over China.

The two principal Green Gang leaders involved in the massacre were Tu Yueh-sheng, "whose factories flooded the American market with narcotics" after the coup, and Huang Chin-jung, who was Arnold Rothstein's contact man. British-dominated post-1927 Shanghai was to become for the next 14 years the premier drug depot for the world.

This shift East in the production of the opium cycle has been documented by Jonathan Marshall in the Bulletin of Concerned Asian Scholars:

> By the late 1920s, China was a net exporter of opium, and within a few years it replaced the Near East as the world's opium smuggling capital. By 1931, China produced seven-eighths of the world's narcotics. Chinese opium flooded the world markets through Hong Kong, Shanghai and Macao. ... By the mid-1980s, Chinese heroin dominated the American market.

As documented by Marshall, Lord Keswick and the other controllers of the opium trade imposed the Green Gang dope merchants in power in China, making the production and distribution of opium the backbone of the Chinese economy. The consequences were predictable: unparalleled genocide against the Chinese population.

> In early July, 1932, T.V. Soong, who had resigned (as Finance Minister — ed.) the month before after failing to raise enough money for the communist suppression campaign, hinted that he would return to office if a new source of revenue — such as opium — could be found. He picked up the support of the influential H.G.W. Woodhead, who, probably reflecting the sentiment of the British business community (i.e., Keswick, the HongShang, and Standard and Chartered — ed.) argued that only such a monopoly could solve China's financial crisis. An opium monopoly was a small price to pay to protect the stability of China's business climate. . ..
>
> (Due to the forced cultivation of opium — ed.) millions of acres of land were taken out of food production. In food-short China, this reduced the margin of peasant survival . . . the most notorious case of famine brought on by over-cultivation of opium occurred in Shaanxl province between 1928 and 1933. It took as many as six million lives in four provinces, wiping out perhaps a third of the entire population of Shaanxl province. (17)

Let us now stand back and review — in light of this history — the jigsaw puzzle pieces that fall into place with Yasha Katzenberg's trip to Shanghai and the sealing of an opium pact.

First, Arnold Rothstein, Yasha Katzenberg's employer, was a product of the Rothschild "dry goods" empire that included the Seligman, Wannamaker, and Gimbel families. During Prohibition, according to the Bronfmans' own testimony, Rothstein, Meyer Lansky, and Lucky Luciano were the Bronfmans' main distributors. As Prohibition came to a close Bronfman associates traveled to Shanghai and Hong Kong to streamline and expand the drug trade into the United States, negotiating with the foremost Chinese drug-runners who were not only encouraged but pressured by the British "business community" to pull together an opium cartel.

The man dictating the opium policy to China in this period, the man who sired the T.V. Soong opium monopoly, was Sir William Johnston Keswick of Jardine Matheson and the Hongkong and Shanghai Bank. From the period of the Shanghai massacre to 1942 when he was interned by the Japanese, Keswick directed the international Settlements of Shanghai — the period of gross expansion of Shanghai heroin into the United States. The same Sie William Keswick was until very recently the director of the Hudson's Bay Company of Canada, the same company, it will be recalled, that collaborated with Sam and Abe in 1916 to found the Pure Drug Company for illegal distribution of whiskey into Canada.

Working for Hudson's Bay along with Keswick is Sir Eric Drake, who not only sits on the board of several Bronfman-run banks and companies, but is also an employee of the Inchcape family and presently the deputy chairman of the Inchcapes' Peninsular & Orient Steamship Company. The current chairman of the board is the son of the Lord Inchcape who in 1923 called for the expansion of "that most valuable source of revenue" — the opium rade.

Sie Eric Drake is also a member of the board of Canadian Pacific, which plays a most vital role in the transshipment of drugs through Canada into the United States, just as they did with alcohol during the Prohibition. Along with Lord Trevelyan, who heads up the HongShang's "gold-for-dope" exchange from his position at the British Bank of the Middle East, and Lord Inchcape, Sir Eric Drake sits on the board of British Petroleum, as does Sir William Johnston Keswick.

Sitting on the board of the Bank of Montreal along with Charles Bronfman and two Seagram directors are J. Bartlett Morgan, William Arbuckle, and F.S. Burbridge, who in turn sit on the boards of Hudson's Bay, Canadian Pacific, and a host of other banks and corporations in which the drug families of the HonkShang nexus play a policy-making role.

We are not charging "guilt by association" but rather making note of the fact that the series of "legitimate" enterprises the Bronfmans moved into toward the close of Prohibition are indistinguishable from and intermeshed with companies controlled by Keswick, Inchcape, and other leading opium traders. During the same period, these gentlemen openly supervised the drug trade into the United States. This association not only continues to this day but is the mainstay of the Bronfman empire.

Going legit ain't necessarily kosher

With the repeal of Prohibition and with the Shanghai opium deal in operation, the Bronfmans, like so many of their partners across the border, "went legit." Organized crime sunk its millions in legitimate businesses that both acted as cover for illegal activities and set up the laundry networks for dirty money. The new phase of respectability signaled that the most successful bigtime whiskey bootleggers were switching to bigtime narcotics.

In the early days, the Bronfmans had to run all the risks of the smuggler's profession. They had to dodge the law, stay one step ahead of the desperadoes on the other side of the border, and whenever things went wrong, face the humiliation of public exposure and scandal. As a result, the family acquired a considerable reputation.

Looking expectantly toward the fast increase in drug trade in America, the British could not afford to leave their leading cutout in such an exposed and precarious position. Nor could they simply dispose of the Bronfmans after Prohibition. The family had become irreplaceable due to its in-depth control over the syndicate. Yet, they would be a liability if they continued to work as openly with their distributors in narcotics trafficking as they did running Prohibition.

The problem was resolved by bringing the Bronfmans into the lower rungs of the Hofjuden caste. Almost overnight, the Rothschilds, Montefiores, de Hirsches, et al. took "Mr. Sam," the crime czar of North America, and transformed him into a rising star of the Canadian Zionist movement.

* In 1934, Mr. Sam was given his first "respectable post" as chairman of the National Jewish People's Relief Committee (Canada).

* By 1939 he had been appointed head of Baron de Hirsch's Jewish Colonization Association, the same Association that had brought Yechiel to Canada.

* In the same year, the Canadian Pacific Corporation invited Mr. Sam to establish a new refugee organization for Eastern European Jews.

* Within five years, the prince of crime was transformed by the good grace of His Majesty's oligarchists into a Zionist "philanthropist." One post followed after another. He became head of the Canadian Jewish Committee, replacing Lyon Cohen, the son of Lazarus Cohen, the founder of the Jewish Colonialization Association and the official agent of the de Hirsch family interests. After World War II, Mr. Sam established the National Conference of Israeli and Jewish Rehabilitation, using his considerable smuggling skills to run guns to the Haganah.

Similar posts were awarded to the other Bronfmans. Allan Bronfman was named president of the Zionist Organization of Canada, a member of the board of trustees of the Federation of Jewish Philanthropists and of the national council of the Canadian Jewish Congress. Abe Bronfman was posted to the Joint Distribution Committee and also to the national council of the Canadian Jewish Congress.

Finally, in 1969 the Bronfmans were given the highest reward issued by Her Majesty. Sam was made a Knight of Grace of the Most Venerable Order of St. John of Jerusalem — Her Majesty's official chivalric order. His brother Allan and his son Charles were appointed to the highest rank, Knight of Justice of the Order. These appointments are emphatically not ceremonial, but are only bestowed on those who have carried out the most dangerous and fruitful missions for the British Crown.

The Bronfmans' time had truly come. Sam's children were welcomed into the Hofjuden elite by intermarriage. Minda married Baron Alain de Gunzberg, himself an extension of the Rothschild family tree. De Gunzberg sits on the board of Seagram, is managing director of the Banque Louis Dreyfuss, and controls the Seligman-Louis Hirsch investment house which has close Rothschild ties. Edgar Bronfman's first marriage was to Ann Loeb, bringing him instantly into a command position within the Wall Street house of Loeb, Rhoades, and Co. While taking over the Seagram main branch in New York, Edgar's marriage clinched the tie to Our Crowd that had begun during Prohibition. His second marriage, to Lady Caroline Townshend, as we have seen, was unsuccessful. Phyllis Bronfman married Jean Lambert of the Belgian banking and mining interests.

Yet, despite their mountains of wealth, despite their hard-won entry into the realms of good breeding, it would be a mistake to think the Bronfmans were a power in their own right. When it comes to the question of control, they are treated as if the money were not their own.

Take, for example, the case of "Trizec," the holding company through which the Bronfman brothers ostensibly run their various corporations, including Seagram. Since it was formed in 1960, the Bronfmans have never held a majority position within Trizec! Trizec is run by Eagle Star Ltd. of London, a holding company whose directors have been described by one author as "the most notable of the British aristocrats." (18) Evelyn de Rothschild, the earls and dukes who control Lloyds of London and other banking and insurance firms, and leading lights of British intelligence such as Sir Kenneth Strong and Sir Kenneth Keith all converge on the board of Eagle Star. (See Part II, Section 8.) This extraordinary company in turn owns English Property Corp. Ltd. — whose principal individual shareholder Laurie Marsh has gained notoriety in Britain as the "Prince of Pornography"for his ownership of the majority of pornographic movie theaters, massage parlors, and "red light district" real estate in London. (19) English Property Corp. Ltd. owns majority holdings in Trizec.

Neither are the brains behind the Bronfman empire situated between the ears of members of the Bronfman family. The source lies elsewhere — in the family's law firm of Phillips, Bloomfield, Vineberg, and Goodman (now Phillips and Vineberg).

The personage of family arbiter and attorney Lazarus Phillips, in particular, was a constant sore to Mr. Sam. Born into the upper crust of the Zionist elite, Lazarus Phillips succeeded in gaining all the yeckus — publicly recognized respect — that Mr. Sam could never seem to win. Phillips was a holder of the Order of the British Empire, a senator in the Canadian Congress, a member of the board of directors of the Royal Bank of Canada, invited into the exclusive Mount Royal Club as a member, and was a power-broker for the Liberal Party.

But without Phillips the Bronfman family empire could not survive. It is likely that through him the Bronfmans received the input of cash that allowed them to proceed steadily from bootlegging to the legitimate bigtime. Certainly it was Phillips who unfroze enough funds under export control from the grip of the Bank of Canada to finance Seagram's wartime expansion into the United States. As the final judge in all family matters — legal and otherwise — Phillips has sat on the board of Seagram since 1940 and on every other company and philanthropic front nominally run by Mr. Sam. He is still the codirector of Trizec and the other major Bronfman holding company Edper (named after Edgar and Peter Bronfman). Phillips is also the expert who managed to get the Bronfmans off every legal hook they ever got caught on. (20)

Philip F. Vineberg is part of the Vineberg family of Abraham Moses Vineberg, chairman of the Moses Vineberg Investments firm and the de Hirsch Institute. Cochairman of all the Bronfman holding companies, Vineberg runs the Canadian Israeli Bond Drives and the Canadian Council of Christians and Jews. He is also a member of the Hofjuden elite's Montefiore Club.

Major Louis Mortimer Bloomfield, also of the firm Phillips, Vineberg, and Bloomfield, is however, without a doubt the most colorful of the Bronfman brains-behind-the-scenes and this may explain why his name was left out of Peter Newman's 1978 book The Bronfman Dynasty (rumored to have been commissioned by the Bronfmans themselves). In addition to his position up to the late 1960s as a Bronfman family lawyer, Bloomfield remains a close banking associate. The Major's Zionist activities are numerous: he is involved in a nest of corporations including the Israeli Continental Company, he is chairman of the Canadian

Histadrut Campaign, and a former president of the Israeli Maritime League. He also holds the post of Consul-General in Liberia, under whose flag vast quantities of opium and narcotics are shipped. He is a high-ranking member of the Most Venerable Order of St. John of Jerusalem and runs its subsidiary Canadian Red Cross Ambulance Corporation.

Major Bloomfield also runs Britain's International Assassination Bureau, an entity we will soon examine in detail.

Are they really clean?

The answer, of course, is no. Since the days they sent their "chickencock" across the border to their claim as the world's finest whiskey blenders, the Bronfmans' ties to North America's crime syndicate have never been broken but merely undergone corporate reorganization. In Section 3 on the Bronfman company of Permindex, we will analyze their criminal activities in length At this point a few examples will suffice.

Take the case of Bronfman family intimate Murray Koffler. A leader of the Jerusalem Foundation in Canada, Koffler was the subject of a major scandal in 1976 when his business associates, Starkman stores, were busted by Canadian police after its pharmacists were caught manufacturing illegal amphetamines and funneling them into the black market. (21)

Charles Bronfman's sister Phyllis Lambert was the subject of a simultaneous scandal for her involvement in Heritage Canada, a government funded "social service" program that got caught conduiting drugs onto Canadian college campuses. (22)

In 1975 the Bronfmans again made the front pages when Edgar Bronfman's eldest son, Samuel II, was reported kidnapped. The case revealed the kidnapper to be Sam II's homosexual lover. When the police found them, Sam's kidnappers pleaded that the Bronfman youth had blackmailed them into the hoax as a way of extorting money from his father. The jury agreed; the two abductors were declared innocent of kidnapping, but found guilty of the lesser charge of extortion. The press also aired the kidnappers' pleas that their lives were now in danger for having sung about Sam II.

Since he took over the reins of Seagram's New York branch in the 1950s, Sam II's father, Edgar, has built the Seagram distilleries network into a multinational global empire. The

Bronfmans, for example, have entered into a most profitable business partnership with the Cuban rum Bacardi family. After Fidel Castro took over the island in 1959, the Bacardis switched their base of operations to Puerto Rico and Miami, taking along with them a small army of anti-Castro Cuban exiles. The Bacardis, headed by Manuel Cutilla Bacardi, have been pinpointed by law enforcement agencies as the funders and political controllers of entire networks of Cuban exiles. The "gusanos," as they are called, are not only involved in terrorism (Orlando Bosch's September 1976 bombing of a Cubana airlines plane killed over 70 people). Drug runners in the Bacardi-Cuban exile networks, Jose Medardo Alvero-Cruz and Antonio Cruz Vasquez, have been recently arrested for drug trafficking in the Caribbean and Mexico. (23)

Seagram has also staked a conglomerate empire in Mexico. Bronfman's contact is former Mexican President Miguel Aleman, who owns and operates Acapulco. Today Aleman is demanding the revival of casino gambling in Mexico; in the 1930s nationalist President Lazaro Cardenas threw the casinos, and with them Meyer Lansky, out of the country.

In short, wherever Seagram branches appear on the map, they are thoroughly intermeshed with narcotics runners, gambling, and crime.

One the public record, the Bronfmans' gutter connections are most visible in the case of Mitchell Bronfman. The son of Knight of Justice Allan Bronfman, Mitchell is reportedly never without the automatic strapped to his shoulder and his stiletto strapped on his left calf. He is on record with the Montreal Police, the Quabec Provincial Justice Ministry, and the Royal Canadian Mounted Police as a kingpin of organized crime in Montreal. (24) A 1972 report by the Montreal Crime Commission names one Willie Obront as the head of the syndicate in the area and describes the relationship between Obront and Mitchell Bronfman as "almost a brotherly relationship." (25)

> This relationship extends into illegal activities in which they have mutually or jointly indulged . . . the special kinds of favors they did for each other and the resulting advantages of each in the fields of loan sharking, gambling, illegal betting, securities, tax evasion and corruption. (26)

Everything was on a strictly "friendly basis," claims Mitchell.

Obront first came to the attention of the authorities after two of his Quebec nightclubs used as hangouts for Montreal's underworld were raided. It was revealed that Mitchell's friend was one of Montreal's top movers of dirty money from narcotics, prostitution, and loansharking.

Together with Willie, Mitchell Bronfman is a minority partner in the Pagoda North, a Miami restaurant that has been identified by U.S. and Canadian law enforcement agencies as the headquarters for a continentwide illegal bookmaking syndicate run by Vito Genovese.

Willie Obront was convicted in 1976 of "tax evasion" and put behind bars. Mitchell Bronfman narrowly averted the same fate.

Another one of Mitchell Bronfman's business partners is Sidney Rosen, who was also arrested and convicted in 1975 for looting 35 Canadian and American companies of $7 million through an asset-stripping clearinghouse called Value Trend Holding Company. Value Trend in turn laundered these stolen assets, along with other dirty revenues from illegal gambling, extortion and narcotics, through Corporate Bank and Trust Company of Freeport, Grand Bahamas and Flendon Ltd., of the same address. Both companies are jointly owned by Rosen and Mitchell Bronfman through another holding company called the "Milton Group." When Rosen went off to jail (again leaving Mitchell Bronfman scot free), the $7 million passed unscathed into offshore accounts in Barclays Bank in Freeport. (27)

But the two major corporations that Mitchell operates out of are the mysterious "Securex" and "Execaire Aviation." The former was disbanded in 1977 by Ouebec Provincial Justice Minister Delard. While the Official Secrets Act has kept the reasons behind this hidden, it can be stated with reasonable certainty that Mitchell Bronfman and the company were discovered to be up to their necks in the wave of FLQ (Front pour la Liberation du Quebec) terrorism that had plagued the province since 1970 — not to mention the narcotics trade.

The two directors of Securex at the time of its banning were Donald McCleary and Gilles Brunet, formerly RCMP sergeants in charge of the G-4 (Secret Service Division) of the Mounties. Both were fired from the Service in 1972 when it was discovered that they were close associates of Mitchell Bronfman. (28) McCleary and Brunet were in charge of the counterterror efforts in 1970 when the FLQ kidnapped a provincial official and a British government officer, an affair which led to the declaration of a state of emergency. The emergency period was used as a pretext to go after the French Canadian networks that had been built up by de Gaulle in conjunction with the Vatican to liberate Quebec from British colonial status.

In point of fact, the FLQ was itself funded by Bronfman family networks as an extension of earlier efforts to assassinate French President de Gaulle (the story will be told below). The Bronfmans' FLQ option was the North American version of the British Special Air Service's control over both the Provisional Wing of the Irish Republican Army and the British Army's counterterror efforts.

Securex advertises itself as a security "consulting firm specializing in anti-terrorism, anti-kidnapping, and guerrilla warfare training." (29) All things considered, it would have to be regarded as both a semi-official covert branch of British intelligence in Canada and as a bridge to the criminal underworld.

Its affiliated Execaire Aviation emerges as yet another scarcely concealed front for crime. Execaire is the largest private charter airline service in Canada specializing in jet service for business executives . . . and narcotics.

Is Mitchell Bronfman just the black sheep in the Bronfman family? It is unlikely. Cemp, the Bronfman family trust, signed a guarantee for part of Execaire's line of credit at the Bank of Montreal.

Nevertheless, the high publicity the Bronfmans have received over the years for such exploits as Mitchell's has prevented the family from receiving that degree of respectability they have always coveted. In the 1950s Mr. Sam looked across the fence at the status of his friend Senator Jacob Javits and decided that he would buy the ultimate title to confer respectability to his name: he sought to become a Senator of the Canadian Congress. All told, he spent $1.2 million in bribes. The Liberals took his money but wouldn't give him a seat. The Bronfman name was still too dirty to be permitted in the ranks of Canadian politics.

In this regard, the Kennedy family fared much better.

2

The Kennedys: Organized Crime in the Government

There are some facts in the mind of the American public that hint at the reality behind the "Kennedy look": Ted's Chappaquiddick disaster, Judith Exner Campbell's revelations that Chicago mobster Sam Giancana had given her to Jack, and the well-known stories of Papa Joe's bootlegging days. The suspicions are there but Americans aren't really sure what the Kennedys are; after all, if they're so dirty, how do they stay so clean? Dope, Incorporated supplies the answer. The Kennedys are clean because, beginning with Papa Joe, they were flea-dipped, scrubbed, and polished by the British to be the respectable front for organized crime. Whether or not a Kennedy crosses the British Crown in terms of policy — as Jack Kennedy did in 1963 — does not alter the fundamental content of the political machine that gives the Kennedy dynasty its power. The Kennedy machine is organized crime in government.

If Ted Kennedy becomes President in 1980, whom will he owe debts to? The same people who pay for him now. At the top of the list of contributors to Kennedy's 1976 senatorial campaign released by the Federal Elections Commission is one Joseph Linsey. (1) A Massachusetts bootlegger who maintains connections to Meyer Lansky from the 1930s, Linsey sits on the board of International Airport Hotel Systems Inc., a Miami-based company whose board also includes Lansky. Hotel Systems is also connected to Resorts International, a firm we will soon hear more of. FBI wiretaps showed recently that Linsey also has dealings with Raymond Patriarcha, the titular godfather of New England narcotics trafficking. (2) Patriarcha is a partner of the Jacobs family (whom we will also encounter later) in several business ventures, including a multimillion dollar a year slot machine company in St. Louis. Although sentenced to jail for murder, Patriarcha was released over four years ago when doctors "discovered he was suffering from a case of terminal cancer" from which he presumably still suffers.

Among the business enterprises of Kennedy financier Joseph Linsey are two liquor distributing firms, Crown and Whitehall, and a dogracing track in Tauton, Massachusetts. Whitehall's chief "salesman" Mike Rocco was described by the McClellan Committee hearings on organized crime, in which both John and Robert Kennedy participated, as a "collection man for the mob." (3) Linsey's chief political lobbyist, Hirsch Freed, is a senior partner in the law firm of Brown, Rudnick, Freed, Gesmar and sits on the board of the Combined Jewish Philanthropies of Boston. Freed and all of his law partners are generous donors to the Kennedy campaign fund. (4)

It is the character of Kennedy's friends rather than his own low personal standard of morality that explains why as a leader of the powerful Senate Judiciary Committee he has come forward as the leading sponsor of federal legalization of marijuana and why he has given his approval to decriminalization of heroin "for experimental purposes." The job of the Kennedy dynasty is to usher in British dope and the criminals who distribute it — through the front door.

The rise to power

Papa Joe Kennedy did not have to struggle like the Bronfmans did to make their name and money in the world of crime — he was born into it. Joe's father P. J. Kennedy was one of the shanty-town mobsters of late 19th century Boston.

P. J. began his rise to fortune as a tavern keeper who bought his way into the corrupt Democratic Party machine (a machine that, like the Jacob Astor-Aaron Burr power system in New York, had its roots in opium trafficking). Once he had obtained a seat on the ward's Democratic Committee at the age of 26, P. J. gave up his tavern and went into the more lucrative wholesale liquor business. Two years later in 1886 he began the first of five consecutive terms in the Massachusetts State Legislature. By 1896, he was part of the triumvirate of Kennedy-Donovan-Corbett, known as the Board of Strategy, which controlled the Democratic organization in Boston. But it was common knowledge that the secret to P. J. Kennedy's political success was his control of the local crime ring, the "McGuire Gang." (5)

Joe Kennedy's mother sadly recognized that with her husband, her social pretensions could never be realized for herself. Kennedy's public image was so filthy that he could not even Qualify for entry into the "High Irish" social circles of Boston, let along the Brahmin elite centered around the opium smuggling Perkins family. She set her hopes on her children. It was Joe Kennedy's marriage into the Fitzgerald family (over the vehement protests of his father-in-law, Boston's High Irish Mayor "Honey" Fitzgerald) that launched the Kennedy family into high society.

Nevertheless, when Joe Kennedy went to Harvard he was snubbed and ridiculed by his Brahmin classmates, who never missed a chance to remind him of his family's seedy history. Joseph bitterly referred time and again to his rejection by the exclusive "final clubs," Harvard's most desired status symbol. (6)

After World War I, Kennedy was employed by Galen Stone, a partner in the prestigious Hayden, Stone and Co., a Boston Hat street investment house with ties to the Rothschilds. While there, he made his first contacts with the British aristocracy. Kennedy got wind that one of Hayden, Stone's clients, the British company of Robertson-Cole Pictures, was in the throes of a credit squeeze. The ambitious Irishman went to London to seek the purchase of the company's U.S. distribution affiliate, the Film Booking Company. He was turned down flat. Within a month, however, Lord Inverforth arrived in Boston to take Kennedy up on the offer. Through a subsequent merger With Ideal Films Ltd. Kennedy founded what was described at the time as the "first genuinely reciprocal exchange of production and distribution facilities between British and American companies." (7) Kennedy's joint ventures with the British soon produced RKO studios, ushering in British financial and cultural domination of Hollywood.

Kennedy's film ventures were also noteworthy for another reason. Lord Inverforth later showed up during World War II working closely with British Secret Intelligence Services chief William Stephenson ("Intrepid"). (8) The Robertson-Cole deal was Kennedy's first contact with Britain's aristocratic high command.

In 1929, Kennedy joined with Blair and Co., a firm operated by Elisha Walker, later of Kuhn, Loeb, and Jacques Monnet, to bid for control of A. P. Giannini's Transamerican Co., the controlling company for the Bank of America. The attempt failed, but Kennedy gained another invaluable contact. Jacques Monnet had come to North America to represent his family's liquor business, Monnet et Cie., in dealings with the Hudson's Bay Company. In the period that Kennedy was working with Blair and Co., Monnet was traveling to Shanghai on a financial mission for the League of Nations. Since the delegation came on the invitation of notorious opium dealer T.V. Soong, and given Monnet's associations with the Hudson's Bay, it is likely that more was on the agenda than the financing of Chinese railroads.

Papa Joe also had business liaisons with the seamier side of the illegal distribution market. During his own bootlegging days in Prohibition, Kennedy entered into a coalition with Newark's Reinfeld Syndicate, which it will be recalled was 50 percent owned by the Bronfman gang. Joe retained his business dealings with the syndicate thugs all the way until 1946. At that time, in preparation for the launching of his sons' political careers, Joe sold his liquor company, Somerset Importers Ltd., for $8 million to the "Renfield Importers" — a revised version of the Reinfeld Syndicate. (9)

As the end of Prohibition approached, Kennedy again turned to London where Winston Churchill personally approved the grant to Joe of the British distillers' franchise for the American market. Through Kennedy's Somerset Importers Ltd. and Renfield Importers, Kennedy marketed Dewar's scotch, Gordon's gin, Ron Rico rum, and Haig and Haig. (10)

But as Papa Joe made clear early in the game, he was not in it for the money. His goal was to build a political dynasty, and his wife produced nine children in succession to get it going. Churchill's nod of approval and the cash flow accompanying it signalled that the British were ready to take advantage of Joe Kennedy's political ambitions.

Kennedy acknowledged the deal by placing his accumulated fortune in the hands of one of the inner circle of London finance: Lazard Brothers Ltd. Andre Meyer, head of the U.S. branch of that house, became the manager of the Kennedy Estates. Lazard Brothers Ltd. is owned by Viscount Cowdray (Weetman John Churchill Pearson), cousin of Winston Churchill.

In 1933, Kennedy was appointed by President Franklin Roosevelt to head the new Securities Exchange Commission. Kennedy's earlier association with the London banking circles had put him in the inside track to conduct a flurry of stock speculation on the eve of the 1929 stock market crash and walk away from it all with a pocket full of cash. When the SEC was created to regulate the market, Roosevelt returned Kennedy's 1932 favor of swinging the Boston Democratic machine behind the FDR candidacy at the 1932 nominating convention.

In 1936, FDR appointed Kennedy U.S. ambassador to Great Britain, a post Kennedy wanted more than life itself. As Joe's official biographer explained, "The old American aristocracy, with its Anglophilic leanings—the aristocrats that had rejected Kennedy at Harvard—regarded the post as the nation's highest social office." (11) Kennedy had at last succeeded in giving the Boston Brahmins a kick in the teeth. Once in London, the Royal Family further obliged the funny Irishman by posing with his family in full regalia for the newspapers.

Kennedy quickly attached himself to the most pro-Nazi British aristocrats centered around Lady Astor's Cliveden Set where

Round Table figures such as Lazard Brothers' Lord Robert Brand, the Marquess of Lothian, Fabian George Bernard Shaw, and the opium-trading Sassoon family congregated to dictate Britain's appeasement policy for the British Foreign Office.

Kennedy's antics in Britain soon got back to President Roosevelt who, by the outbreak of World War II, had developed a fairly accurate view of Britain's imperial designs. Kennedy's notoriety as a Nazi supporter — like his father's earlier underworld career — could not be covered over by even the most sympathetic biographer. Thus, David E. Koskoff in his commissioned biography of Joe Kennedy reported the following:

> Kennedy had become intensely Anglophilic: "Indeed there are unfortunate signs that Kennedy is going by way of Page." They reported that he was one of the prime exhibits of Cliveden . . . that he was a partisan of England and should be watched carefully. . . . .
>
> From the beginning of the Ambassador's career to the end, the spectre of Walter Hines Page haunted Joseph Kennedy. From his position as Ambassador to England, Anglophile Page had literally conspired with the British to bring America into World War I. . . . Kennedy always resented the fact that his name was always linked with Page. . . . Even Roosevelt said before the outbreak of war, "He's more British than Walter Hines Page." (12)

Kennedy's unswerving loyalty to the British monarchy was rewarded; his daughter, Kathleen Kennedy, the sister of John, Robert, and Edward, married William Cavendish, the Marquess of Hartington. Hartington was the son and heir to the 10th Duke of Devonshire and his wife, Lady Mary Alice Cecil (daughter of the 4th Marquess of Salisbury), the Dutchess of Devonshire.

In the hierarchy of the British nobility, the dukes are the highest rank of royalty, taking second place only to the monarchy itself. The Duke of Devonshire is at the center of the interlocking families of the Cecils, Salisburys, and Macmillans who have run British politics since the Glorious Revolution.

Joseph Kennedy repeated the theme many times: "If Kathleen and her husband were living, I'd be the father of the Duchess of Devonshire (first Lady-in-Waiting to the Queen) and the father-in-law of the head of all the Masons in the world." (13) Later, his son John would marry Jacqueline Bouvier, whose sister Lee Radziwill married Prince Stanislaus Radziwill, a member of the Polish nobility who traces his titles back over 500 years. The Radziwill family, which resides in England, established the Order of St. John of Jerusalem in Poland in 1610 and was instrumental in transplanting the Order into the United States in the early 20th century. While serving as ambassador in Britain, Joseph Kennedy was made an initiate in His Majesty's Most Venrable Order of St. John of Jerusalem. Despite Joseph Kennedy's eventual unceremonious recall from the Court of St. James at the beginning of World War II, the elder Kennedy had succeeded brilliantly in restoring his tarnished reputation. During his sojourn in Britain, he turned over his sons to the British Round Table for a "proper" education. Joseph Kennedy, Jr. and John F. Kennedy were trained at the London School of Economics, an institution founded by the Fabian Society dedicated to training and recruiting foreign cadre as future British agents within government, business, media, and educational posts in their respective countries. The Kennedy brothers were trained by Fabian Society Executive member Harold Laski. At Harvard, on the Kennedys' return to the United States, further tutoring for son John was secured from Sir John Wheeler-Bennett, the founder and head of the research division of the Royal Institute of International Affairs. Wheeler-Bennett denies that he was the writer of Kennedy's Harvard master's thesis, later published in book form as Why England Slept — an apologia for the Cliveden Set's and his father's sympathies for Hitler. (14) There is little doubt that Wheeler-Bennett was aware that he had been entrusted with the training of Britain's future political kingpins in the United States. As he recalls:

I was invited one evening to dine informally at the American embassy. We were a small party, not more than

> ten, as I recall, and the three eldest Kennedy sons sat in a row on the far side of the table to myself. . . . "I'll tell you about these boys," said the Ambassador to me in his rasping nasal voice, as if they weren't there at all. "There's young Joe, he's going to be President of the United States. And there's Jack, he's going to be a university president; and there's Bobby (tapping his nose in a cunning manner), he's the lawyer." (15)

Why the British killed Kennedy

When John F. Kennedy became President of the United States in 1960, it is reported that Andre Meyer of Lazard Brothers Ltd. went around Europe introducing himself as "the real President." Whether the story is true or not, it is the case that the Court of St. James had at least temporarily seized control of the Oval Office. So had organized crime. The Kennedy machine moved into the Justice Department, specifically Robert Kennedy's Organized Crime Strike Force. The Organized Crime Drive, as it was called. was a highly irregular unit, even according to its nominal chief, Ed Silberling. The section was in fact run by non-lawyer Walter Sheridan, a former FBI man who had worked as Chief of the Counterintelligence Section, Special Operations Division, Office of Security, and the National Security Agency. It was Sheridan who had the ear of Robert Kennedy, often as much as three times a day. (16)

According to Victor Navasky's Kennedy Justice, the Sheridan crew "had free access to the files of the McClellan Committee. It was in touch with grand juries throughout the country. It had an undercover air of mystery about it. Its modus operandi was cloak and dagger. . . Its relations with the FBI were highly irregular in that it received little or no cooperation from the top, yet Sheridan, an ex-FBI man, had a degree of line cooperation in the field that was, in some respects, unparalleled. He actually coordinated FBI agents with his own men — told them where to go when, and they went.

"Unlike every other unit of the Justice Department, which is organized around subject areas of responsibility," reports Navasky, "the Sheridan unit's raison d'etre seemed to be not a subject area but a target: Jimmy Hoffa." (17)

If Kennedy himself was obsessed with getting Hoffa, the machine behind him found the campaign a convenient ruse for three reasons. First, it badly damaged the biggest and strongest trade union in the country, which had consistently used its power to press for industrial growth. Second, the publicity it engendered was a good diversion. And third, it was a good cover for going after local Mafiosi who might object to a tightened drug syndicate and the rise of the new black mafia to service the cities. The fanfare around the Valachi revelations served the same purpose.

A look at the ensuing careers of the Kennedy crimefighters underlines the point.

*Henry Peterson of the Organized Crime and Racketeering Division joined Max Jacobs's Emprise Corporation, a money-laundering outfit examined in Section 4.

*His boss William Hundley and Robert Peloquin of the Criminal Division left Justice, formed their own law firm, and now sit on the board of International Intelligence (Intertel), Meyer Lansky's crime clearinghouse (see Section 3).

*Stanley Mills, head of the Kennedy Anti-Trust Division, became general counsel for Max Jacobs's Sportsystems.

*William O. Bittman, prosecutor for the Justice Department against Hoffa, joined the board of Sportsystems.

*Daniel Holloman and Thomas Kennedy of the Organized Crime Division joined the same board.

*Horace Webb of the department's Public Informational Services Division is the public relations man for Sportsystems.

*Thomas J. Mekeon, member of the Organized Crime Strike Force in Detroit, is assistant general counsel and vice-president of Intertel.

While Sheridan's "Terrible Twenty" burned the small fry, Meyer Lansky and Max Jacobs went untouched. Lansky's biographer, Hank Messick, could even report that "Lansky could deplore the loss of Newport and Hot Springs, but the attack on La Cosa Nostra caused him no loss of sleep. Instead, from 1960 to

1965, he succeeded in keeping his name completely out of the newspapers. That five-year period was for Lansky one of the most active, and profitable, eras he had known." (18)

DOUBLE-CROSS

Meanwhile, in the White House John Kennedy was being advised by the higher echelons of the same network that had invaded the Justice Department. Almost simultaneously with Kennedy's inauguration, Harold Macmillan moved into 10 Downing Street. Macmillan was himself part of the extended Devonshire family into which Kennedy's sister Kathleen had married. His Canada-based pulp and paper company, MacMillan Bloedel, as noted, was a component of the British Columbia drug-smuggling apparat. (19)

Macmillan's newly appointed ambassador to the United States, David Ormsby-Gore (later Lord Harlech), was also a distant in-law of the President through the Cecil family. Ormsby-Gore had been a close friend of JFK's since their days together at the London School of Economics. The British ambassador had daily access to the President. He was the fourth member of Kennedy's inner policy-making core, "ExComm," along with Robert Kennedy and the Anglophile National Security advisor McGeorge Bundy (also a Harvard protege of the Round Table's William Yandell Elliott). During the Cuban Missile Crisis, documents show that Ormsby-Gore and Macmillan made most of the minute-to-minute decisions at the point that the United States was on the brink of nuclear war.

Best estimates have it that up through the winter of 1962-63, British directives to the White House, transmitted through Ormsby-Gore, were carried out with only minor points of difference. That special relationship began to show signs of deterioration during early 1963. Policy differences between the Kennedy and the Macmillan governments began to surface, as the U.S. President took a series of initiatives toward detente with the Soviet Union and Cuba. (20)

The diaries of Macmillan testify that Kennedy had to be intensely armtwisted at the famous Nassau summit in spring 1963 before he would agree to turn over the Polaris missile program to the British. (21) That move precipitated French President Charles de Gaulle's vehement denunciation of the Anglo-American violation of the Atlantic Charter, followed by France's withdrawal from NATO.

A combination of factors was operating on Kennedy. Foremost among them was Papa Joe. Individuals, interviewed by the authors, who knew Joe Kennedy intimately during the 1920s report that he cherished a deep hatred for the British and the Anglophile society of Boston that had humiliated him; however, the same individuals report, Kennedy had made a decision that if he was going to make it, he would have to prove his usefulness to the British. With John Kennedy's accession to the Presidency, Joe Kennedy's dream of using the British to build a sufficient power base for himself was a reality. No astute political observer during the 1960s could ignore the possibility of a "Kennedy dynasty" installed in the White House for several uninterrupted decades.

During the spring and summer months of 1963, JFK began reversing previous policies. Plans were being prepared to devolve U.S. presence in Southeast Asia. Detente discussions were opened up with the Soviet Union; in the weeks prior to his assassination, Kennedy even sent a secret emissary to Havana to open up talks with Fidel Castro. The Kennedys were showing signs of bucking the machine that had put them in power. The British had him killed. To use the language of a Grade-B movie, "Kennedy tried to double-cross the syndicate and he got iced." It is reported by Kennedy biographer Koskoff that upon JFK's death, Lord Beaverbrook (whom we shall encounter in regard to the International Assassination Bureau) sent a scarcely veiled warning to Joe Kennedy:

Perhaps he (Joe Kennedy—ed.) was a little comforted by the kind note that his dear friend Lord Beaverbrook sent to Rose: "May Joe find solace. . . in the assurance that Bobby will repeat Jack's career." (22)

When Robert Kennedy refused to back off from the track of his brother's assassins and began to prepare his own campaign for the Presidency, he too was assassinated on British orders.

Playing by the rules of the game is Ted Kennedy's insurance policy. That's what makes him the foremost proponent of dope decriminalization; that's what makes him today's frontrunner for organized crime; that's what makes him the collaborator of the assassins of his brothers.

Britain's Assassination Bureau: Permindex

Following the assassination of President John F. Kennedy in Dallas on November 22, 1963, New Orleans District Attorney James Garrison launched an investigation that led him to the doorsteps of an obscure Montreal-based corporation called Permindex, headed by the Bronfman family's attorney, Major Louis Mortimer Bloomfield. One of the directors of Bloomfield's ostensibly small international trading company, Col. Clay Shaw of New Orleans, was Garrison's chief suspect in the Kennedy murder. Shaw ran the World Trade Mart in New Orleans, a subsidiary of Permindex that was described by a former Shaw associate (1) as a front for Mafia drug-running and organized crime activity centered in the Caribbean.

Shaw was the financial backer and controller of Lee Harvey Oswald during his lengthy stays in New Orleans, Garrison had established, and the District Attorney also had evidence that Shaw had been the safehouse channel out of the country (into Italy) for several unidentified persons believed to have been the real "triggers" in the Kennedy assassination. (2)

James Earl Ray, the "patsy" in the 1968 assassination of Martin Luther King in Memphis, was also a frequent visitor to Shaw's New Orleans' World Trade Mart during the month before King's murder. Ray escaped via Canada to London where he was traced and captured a month after King died. (3)

After more than a half dozen mysterious deaths of key witnesses against Permindex and a national smear campaign against Garrison run by Kennedy Justice Department troubleshooter Walter Sheridan, the New Orleans investigation into Permindex was terminated, and the entire affair quickly faded into obscurity.

After an estimated 30 to 40 aborted assassination attempts against French President General Charles de Gaulle during the 1960s, the French intelligence bureau, SDECE, exposed the same Permindex as the financier and controller of the OAS (Secret Army Organization) death squads. (4) SDECE gathered reams of evidence showing that Permindex had been the recipient of funds laundered into Geneva and Basel through Zionist "charitable organizations" and Israeli intelligence fronts such as the Bank Hapoalim of Histadrut, the Israeli trade union movement and Socialist International affiliate. These funds had been channeled into the OAS as well as into the neo-Nazi terrorist groups in West Germany and Italy.

De Gaulle issued vociferous personal protests to the Swiss and Italian governments. As a result, Permindex was forced to shut down its offices in those countries and move to a more friendly location, Johannesburg, South Africa. (5) The Paris-based Western European branch headquarters of Israel's foreign intelligence service, the Mossad, was kicked out of France and reestablished its operations in Belgium and the Netherlands.

In 1970, the prestigious Italian newsweekly Panorama published an account of the mysterious death of Italian Oil Minister Enrico Mattei in an October 1962 plane crash on his was to a historic economic summit in Africa. (6) Mattel's plane was sabotaged during a contrived unscheduled stopover at an obscure airport in Sicily. Forty-eight hours before the crash, New Orleans mobster and Permindex associate Carlos Marcello had been identified by local police in Sicily as the mysterious American who showed up at the airport while a four-man team was tampering with Mattel's plane. Marcello owned a private fleet of chartered jets called the United Air Taxi Service, which shared its staff of pilots and mechanics with Permindex. One such "shared employee," David Ferrie, was also a pilot for Marcello and Clay Shaw. Ferrie was found murdered days after he was subpoenaed to testify before Garrison's grand jury on the Kennedy killing. (7)

Within months of the April 1978 kidnapping and murder of former Italian President Aldo Moro, the Italian Carabinieri were in hot pursuit of evidence firmly implicating Italian Jewish banker George Mantello (aka George Mandel) in the affair. (8) It was believed that Mantello's Rome villa had been the first safehouse where Moro was brought after his abduction by the Red Brigades. Weapons found in a Carabinieri raid of Mantello's villa turned out to match the weapon used to kill Moro as well as that used in the 1977 Baader-Meinhof gang kidnapping-murder of West German industrialist Hanns-Martin Schleyer. An agent of the Black Guelph House of Savoy (the pretenders to the throne of Italy), Mantello is a board member of a Permindex subsidiary, Centro Mondiale Commerciale (CMC). Mantello's Swiss holding company, Capocetto, was exposed by de Gaulle's SDECE as a conduit for Histadrut funds into Permindex. (9)

Who runs Permindex?

Sixteen years have passed since Permindex conducted its first known assassination deployment. Despite all the accumulated evidence, none of the principals has been brought to justice; Permindex today is one of the best kept secrets in the world. What is Permindex? Who are the powerful forces protecting his nest of assassins from prosecution for crimes of high treason against no fewer than three sovereign states? As we shall soon learn, Permindex is a top-secret branch of one of the most sophisticated and well-financed intelligence agencies in the world and a convergence point for every filthy network that we have met so far — from the British Far East banking and shipping magnates who run the dope trade at the top to the gutters where Mafiosi, neo-Nazis, and the Order of Zion function as retailers for Dope, Incorporated.

The starting point to unravel the story behind this International Assassination Bureau is the office of the chairman of its board. The founder, president, and majority (50 percent) shareholder in Permindex since its incorporation in Montreal in 1958-59 is Major Louis Mortimer Bloomfield.

Bloomfield is a man of many hats. He was a founding partner of the prestigious Hofjuden law firm of Phillips, Vineberg, Bloomfield and Goodman, the firm that represents and controls the Bronfman family holdings. Bloomfield's name was formally removed from the firm's letterhead in 1968 after the de Gaulle exposures of his Permindex assassination bureau threatened to create an embarrassment. Such cosmetic gestures, however, have little significance in the murky world of Canadian politics where the most prestigious names all appear on the board of directors of Dope, Incorporated.

Among his business holdings, Major Bloomfield controls the Israeli Continental Corporation, the Canadian subsidiary of the Dutch Heinekens Breweries, and Credit Suisse of Canada, a correspondent bank to the Credit Suisse of Geneva that was among the holding agencies exposed by SDECE for laundering "hit money" to the OAS. (10) All these corporations are listed among the investors in Permindex.

Like his law partner, Lazarus Phillips, and his clients, the Bronfmans, Major L. M. Bloomfield is an outstanding Zionist philanthropist. Among his numerous honorary positions, Bloomfield is the annual chairman of the Histadrut Campaign of Canada, which collects "charitable contributions" and passes them on to the Israeli labor movement. Curiously, these funds have been discovered on several occasions to have found their way back to Permindex after recycling through the Histadrut's Bank Hapoalim. (11)

Bloomfield's charitable activities extend into his chairmanship of the Canadian Red Cross ambulance service, a position traditionally held by a top-ranking Knight in the Queen's official chivalric order, the Most Venerable Order of St. John of Jerusalem. As an operating arm of the Sovereign Order, the Red Cross ambulance service has been a frequently called upon front for terrorism. (12)

Bloomfield's business interests extend into the field of transoceanic shipping. A former head of the Israeli Maritime League of Canada, Bloomfield has been the Consul-General in charge of the Western Hemisphere of the Liberian government since World War II. Liberia is notorious as both a tax shelter and smugglers' port-of-call. With no shipping regulations to speak of, Liberia is the flag of convenience under which the majority of ships bearing bulk shipments of Far East narcotics are registered, and also serves as one of the secondary ($7 billion in average daily transfers) offshore banking centers through which British drug revenues are laundered.

The only other foreign-stationed Consul-General for Liberia is Bloomfield-Permindex associate and Israeli Mossad official (ret.) Tibor Rosenbaum, whom we shall meet shortly.

Beneath his various hats as banker, philanthropist, prominent attorney, and Permindex director, Bloomfield is first and foremost an agent of the most secretive branch of Her Majesty's Intelligence service, the Special Operations Executive (SOE). Bloomfield was recruited to the SOE by its director, Sir William Stephenson, in 1938. (13) Stephenson, a Canadian-born protege of Round Table founder Lord Beaverbrook, appointed Bloomfield as the recruitment officer and "agent handler" for the newly created counterespionage and espionage branch of the U.S. Federal Bureau of Investigations (FBI), known as Division Five. (14)

Agents of Division Five, in turn, have been among the points of the New Orleans grand jury investigation into the Kennedy assassination. Guy Bannister, the head of the southeast regional office of Division Five (located in New Orleans) at the time of the Kennedy murder, died under mysterious circumstances shortly after the events in Dallas. (15) Bannister was the owner of a New Orleans office building that housed a number of Division Five fronts and groups under close D-5 surveillance. These included the left-radical Fair Play for Cuba Committee and the violently anti-Castro Free Cuba Committee. Lee Harvey Oswald was alternatively a member of both these groups during various stages of his "laundering." (16) According to one source, in 1962 Bannister was also the personal conduit of at least one $100,000 payoff to the OAS for an assassination attempt against de Gaulle. One of his agents flew directly from New Orleans to Paris to deliver the funds. In 1966, that courier, who operated a Permindex front, the Caribbean Anti-Communist League, died when he was thrown out of a sixth floor window in a San Juan Puerto Rico, hotel. (17)

How did Louis M. Bloomfield, a Canadian citizen, manage to assume a highly secretive top post within the Hoover FBI? And what's more, how did he manage to retain that post for over 30 years — even after his name had been raised in conjunction with assassinations against officials of three governments? Stephenson, using the "special relationship" that British Prime Minister Winston Churchill had cultivated with Franklin Roosevelt, arranged Bloomfield's commission as an officer in the U.S. Army (hence the rank of major) assigned to the Office of Strategic Services, the wartime predecessor of the Central Intelligence Agency. Bloomfield was only one of many Canadians brought into the U.S. military under Stephenson's auspices. (18) Stephenson was creating an SOE in-depth penetration into the American services that could run clandestine operations under an American cover. This became a particularly important feature of SOE postwar activities in locations like Italy where Churchill's open role in installing Mussolini in power had engendered a profound hatred of the British.

Unfortunately, very little of the publicly accessible information about the SOE is reliable. It is known that the SOE was created at the personal initiative of Sir Winston Churchill as an expansion of Section D (for "Destruction") of the British Secret Intelligence Service, the branch responsible for "aggressive espionage and sabotage" against enemies of the British Empire. (19) Evidently, after World War II, the United States, in Churchill's eyes, fit the definition of "enemy."

As the top secret action branch of British intelligence, the SOE operated through "cutouts," especially commercial and philanthropic fronts. Stephenson set up SOE headquarters in New York City's Rockefeller Center under the name of an importing-exporting company and established its communications and clandestine center at a resort complex at Montego Bay, Jamaica. (20) Under Major Bloomfield, Division Five's spies operated as a Christian missionary group, sending its devotees to every corner of the United States and Latin America. (21)

It should be noted that all the SOE's activities were conducted under the protective umbrella of Her Majesty's Official Secrets Act. Any British Commonwealth citizen releasing information about the SOE without the advance permission of the monarchy is liable to prosecution on charges of high treason, punishable by execution. No wonder that the reliable sources of information on the SOE are French, Italian, and West German intelligence agencies.

A relevant feature of the wartime Stephenson-Bloomfield team was its use of Mafiosi as "intelligence agents" for the U.S. OSS and FBI Division Five. Charles "Lucky" Luciano is the best-known case of a convicted drug-runner, pimp, and suspected murderer who was "rehabilitated" under OSS-SOE sponsorship. (22) Luciano was dispatched to Sicily to reconstitute old networks that had been dispersed or expatriated during the Mussolini period. Our point here is not to provide a biography of Luciano, but to show that Permindex's Major Bloomfield came into active collusion with Meyer Lansky's narcotics syndicate by no later than the close of World War II—when he was more openly under the official auspices of the British monarchy. According to a four-part series of articles published in October 1978 in the Soviet youth magazine Ogonyok by Julian Semyonov, the Bloomfield-Luciano collaboration was still operational in 1962 when Luciano was the case officer on the scene in Sicily for the Mattei assassination. The decision to go with a plane crash was made by Luciano only after the options of hiring an OAS team or an American "leftist" controlled by a Texas oil company (invested in Permindex) were determined to be too politically explosive. (23)

Based on this profile of the many-sided Major Bloomfield, the first pieces of the Permindex puzzle fall into place. Far from being a small international trading company, Permindex is revealed to be a subsidiary branch of the most powerful, well-financed, and well-protected intelligence agency in the world — a subsidiary branch responsible for carrying out the most important political assassinations of the century. The next step in completing the Permindex puzzle is untangling the complex web of holding companies, dummy corporations, and offshore sealed bank accounts through which the Permindex Assassination Bureau works.

The Bloomfield, Lansky, Rosenbaum circuit

Sufficient evidence has surfaced in the public record to show that Permindex is the courier channel through which the retail revenues of Dope, Incorporated are shuttled from the regional syndicates into designated secret bank accounts in Geneva, Basel, Liechtenstein, and the Caribbean.

Even in its official records, Permindex cites among its investors the regional crime czars of North America and the Caribbean, the lieutenants of Meyer Lansky. (24) From 1928, when he inherited the bootleg booze and narcotics trade from the deceased Arnold Rothstein, Lansky has been the undisputed "chairman of the board" of organized crime and the pusher behind the move into bigtime narcotics, offshore banking, and the Caribbean casino circuit. Lansky's biographer, Hank Messick, estimates that Lansky's personal fortune exceeds $300,000,000. Messick describes the weekly ritual in which the regional syndicate couriers converge on the Singapore Hotel in Miami to deliver 60 percent of their take to the "financial wizard." From there money travels the route of Dope, Incorporated. Reports Messick:

> The scope of Lansky's interests is illustrated by a trip his international courier, John Pullman, made in 1965. His first

> stop was Bogota, Colombia. The Eden Roc in Miami was his next destination. In February he went to the Sands Hotel in Las Vegas, where Lansky's old bootlegging chum from Boston, Hy Abrams, was boss. In March he was conferring in Los Angeles with Mike Singer, an ex-Teamster official who had helped put together the Bank of World Commerce (a part of the Permindex infrastructure of offshore banks — ed.) with Alvin Malnik. Later in March he was in Honolulu, where the syndicate was attempting to get control of Ewa Plantation and hoped, eventually to legalize gambling. In April he was at the Peninsular Hotel in Hong Kong, where the syndicate had casinos and obtained much of its narcotics. Lebanon and its casinos were visited next. By June, Pullman was back in Switzerland where he conferred with Lansky in person. Together they visited the French Riviera to study plans for the ultimate takeover of the casinos there. (25)

The money is placed in initial deposits in any one of a number of Geneva, Basel, Liechtenstein, or Caribbean banks affiliated with Major Bloomfield's little "trading company." Several of these banks, like the Astaldo Vaduz of Miami, De Famaco Vaduz of Liechtenstein, and De Famaco Astaldo Vaduz of Geneva, are post office box fronts. These three, for example, are all listed as wholly owned subsidiaries of Permindex. As noted above, Credit Suisse, one of the more formidable laundering holes, maintains a Canadian subsidiary, also run by Major Bloomfield. (26) The Bank of World Commerce Ltd. of Nassau, Grand Bahamas, was a personal creation of Lansky's. The largest and most important banking entity in the Permindex-Lansky family was the Banque de Credit Internationale (BCI) of Basel, which was bankrupted in 1974 as part of a London upset of world financial markets. (27) BCI was itself almost indistinguishable from the infamous Investors Overseas Services (IOS), an international "mutual fund" which garnered an excess of $2 billion in investment capital on behalf of "unnamed subscribers." (28) According to Messick, there are strong indications that the majority of those unnamed subscribers were named Meyer Lansky. IOS gained international notoriety for its army of salesmen who crisscrossed the globe carrying satchels of cash earmarked for sealed bank accounts in every unregulated banking port in Western Europe, Latin America, the Caribbean, and the Middle and Far East.

Any sleuth attempting to trace out the originating source for the IOS funds would do well to dig out the October 8,1967, issue of Life magazine, which detailed the following interesting triangular business relationship. (29) Sylvain Ferdman, an officer of BCI, was the business agent for the Investors Overseas Service. U.S. law enforcement officials in turn identified Ferdman as the chief bagman for the Lansky syndicate. Ferdman, a Swiss citizen, and John Pullman, an American who transferred his citizenship to Canada after a 1950s federal conviction, carried money from the Caribbean to Lansky, and then on to the BCI and Bloomfield's Credit Suisse. Pullman, in addition to his global travels, was the president and director of the Bank of World Commerce Ltd. of Nassau.

So far the picture is very neat. BCI-IOS was the Swiss side of a triangle composed of a dirty money professional hit bureau, and Meyer Lansky's retail drug business in North America and the Caribbean. Major Bloomfield's trading company in Montreal, with branch offices in Geneva and Rome (through its subsidiary Centro Mondiale Commerciale), ran the protection side of the courier operation and was on the receiving end of those funds earmarked for terrorism and political assassinations. (An assassination such as the John F. Kennedy hit or any one of the 30 plus tries on the life of de Gaulle would cost upwards of $10 million between the preparatory work, the hit, and the cover-up, which have often involved further murders.) The remainder of the dirty money either went to the Far East to cover production costs, to maintain the internal machinery of organized crime, N.A., or to investment in "legitimate" business, and so forth.

The picture takes on additional political implications as we probe further into the Banque de Credit Internationale.

BCI was originally established in 1959, at the same time Major Bloomfield founded Permindex as an intelligence and financial front for the Israeli Mossad.

BCI's founder and president was Tibor Rosenbaum, a close associate of Bloomfield from at least the end of World War II when both smuggled weapons, money, and mercenaries into the Haganah. (30) Rosenbaum was subsequently appointed the first Director-General for Finance and Supply of the Mossad (1948). An Austrian Jew who graduated from the economics department of the University of Vienna (31), Rosenbaum, in addition to his Mossad affiliation, was a cofounder of the World Zionist Congress and a director of the Jewish Agency. The Jewish Agency in turn created the Bank Hapoalim as the official agent for the Israeli labor movement, Histadrut.

With the exception of Major Bloomfield, Rosenbaum is the only foreign representative of the African smugglers' paradise, Liberia.

The BCI was ostensibly founded as a vehicle for financing illegal Israeli trade with Africa and the Third World; however, this half-truth served merely to justify its location in the world capital of secret banking, Switzerland, and its relationship to the Mossad.

The picture emerges in full upon discovery of another member of the BCI board of directors: Ernst Israel Japhet. Japhet brings us straight back to the London banking circuit that runs Dope, Incorporated.

Who is Ernst Israel Japhet in addition to his membership on the board of the bank that serviced Meyer Lansky's retail revenues from narcotics, gambling, prostitution? Japhet is the chairman of the Bank Leumi, the largest bank in Israel, which we have already identified as a link in the diamonds-for-dope trade into Hong Kong. The latest heir of a German Hofjuden banking family that traces its roots back centuries, Japhet was bought up by the Quaker Barclays Bank of London, that created the wholly owned subsidiary Charterhouse Japhet. The Japhet family's more recent roots go back to Hong Kong's opium trade, into which the family moved 150 years ago and never left (see Part II). The Japhet bank was the granddaddy of the Palestine-to-Hong-Kong dope-for-diamonds trade, now run by Bank Leumi under Mr. Japhet, now on behalf of his 100 percent owners in London at the staid offices of Barclays.

Joining Japhet on the board of Leumi is Baron Stormont

Bancroft, a member of the Hofjuden Samuel family, a former Lord-in-Waiting to the Queen and a director and deputy chairman of Cunard Lines, a shipping company heavily involved in the drug traffic over Middle East, India, and Far East routes. (32)

Bank Leumi keeps its hand in the drug trade through its 100 percent owned subsidiary, Union Bank, of which Ernst Israel Japhet is also chairman. Union Bank deals over one-third of the world's diamonds.

Under Japhet, Bank Leumi bought into international terrorism in 1976 when it took over the American and Argentinian subsidiaries of the Banque pour le Commerce Continentale following its bankruptcy. The BBC's branch in Montevideo. Uruguay was the investment vehicle for the Israeli-Argentinian financier David Graiver, who was the financial advisor for the Argentine Montaneros. Graiver disappeared under strange circumstances in 1976. It was publicly reported that he died in a plane crash; however, subsequent reports speculated that he had clandestinely moved to Israel. (33)

Bank Leumi was not the only Israeli bank to heavily invest in the Banque de Credit Internationale. Even more heavily involved is the Bank Hapoalim. As chairman of the Canadian Histadrut Campaign, Major Louis Mortimer Bloomfield of Permindex maintained direct cash flow relations to Hapoalim. (34)

The Bank Hapoalim, the third largest bank in Israel, was founded by the Jewish Agency, which runs the bank today. Its founder and present board member, British High Commissioner Viscount Erwin Herbert Samuel, belongs to the same Samuel family that retains interests in Bank Leumi and Cunard Shipping Lines. Viscount Samuel presides as head of the Israeli Red Cross, an official branch of the Most Venerable Order of St. John of Jerusalem. (35)

Bank Hapoalim has been widely exposed in the Western European press as a dirty-money channel into Swiss and Liechtenstein banks. (36) The charge is corroborated by the presence of Bank Hapoalim director Zwi Recheter on the board of Rosenbaum's BCI.

Another channel of Bank Hapoalim's complicity is the

Permindex family of dope traders and assassins is the Israeli Continental Bank Ltd., a 50-50 joint venture between Bank Hapoalim and its West German Socialist International counterpart, Bank fur Gemeinwirtschaft. The German bank is chaired by Walter Hesselbach, a member of the West German branch of the Jerusalem Foundation, the Zionist branch of the Order of St. John of Jerusalem. (37)

Stepping back for a moment, what have we now pieced together? Within the sealed accounts and well-guarded board room of the Banque de Credit Internationale we have uncovered yet another point of convergence of the three divisions of Dope, Incorporated: the production-distribution wholesaling division represented by Bank Leumi director Ernst Israel Japhet, the criminally syndicated retail division represented by the Lansky bagmen Pullman and Ferdman, and the murder division represented by the cash flow into Permindex. We have now established that Israeli banking and the Israeli Mossad are cutouts — like their Hofjuden sponsors — of the British monarchy, which runs the whole show through its merchant banks and its Knights of St. John.

The Nazi connection

Having set all the pieces in their appropriate places, we have sketched the outlines of both an operational flow chart for Dope, Incorporated (See Figure 1) and a global network of professional murderers, narcotics traffickers, secret intelligence officers, and portly London bankers and aristocrats.

Now let's return to the original question: what is Permindex? Working under SOE "case officer-in-charge" Major Louis Mortimer Bloomfield, at the executive offices of Permindex and its subsidiaries — the Centro Mondiale Commerciale, the Italo-American Hotel Corporation and Capocetto — is a rogue's gallery of Nazis and Fascists, underworld bosses, and feudal throwbacks - the sort of cast one would expect to encounter at the seat of International Murder, Inc.

Begin with Prince Gutierez de Spadafora, the former

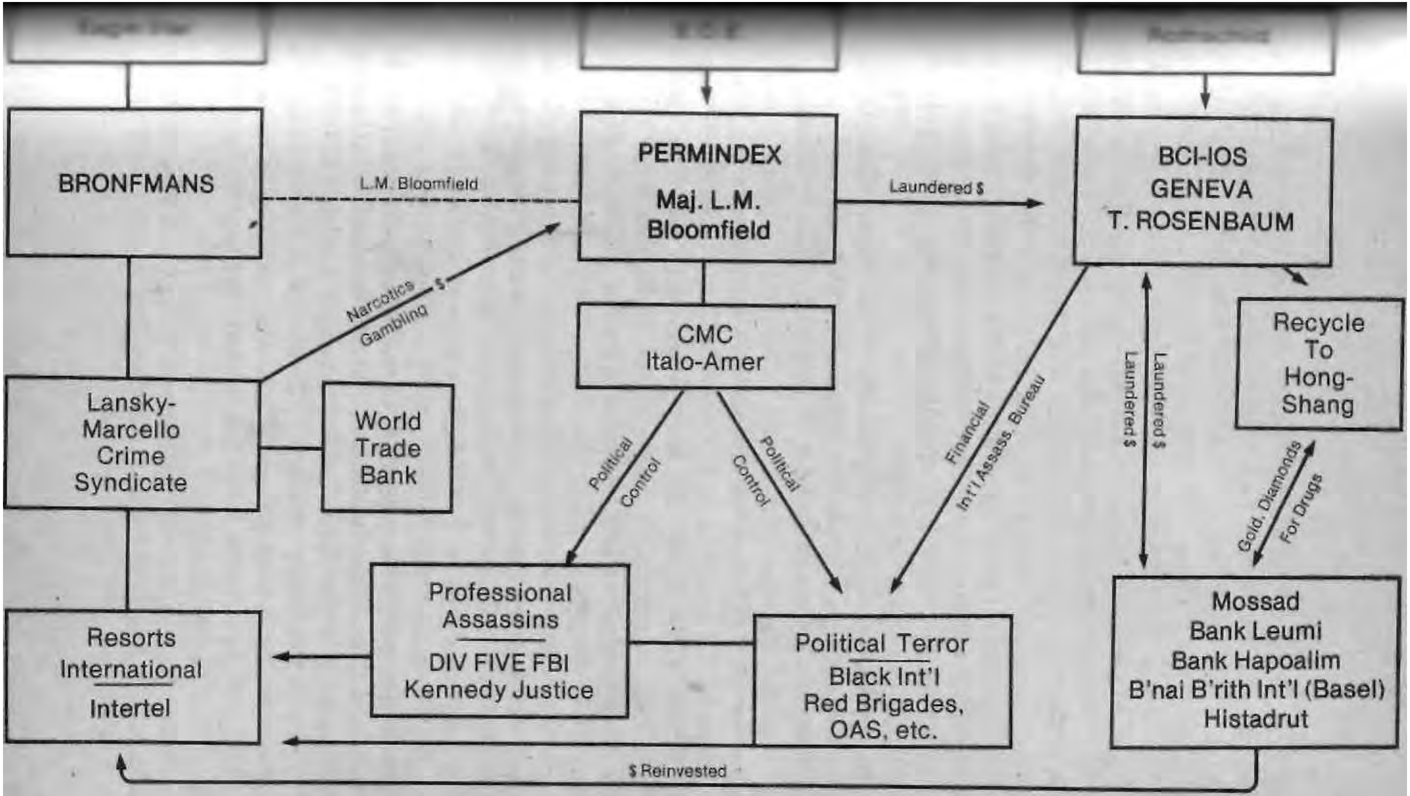
BRONFMANS
L.M. Bloomfield
PERMINDEX
Maj. L.M. Bloomfield
Laundered $
BCI-IOS
GENEVA
T. ROSENBAUM
Narcotics $
Gambling
CMC
Italo-Amer
Recycle To Hong-Shang
Lansky-Marcello Crime Syndicate
World Trade Bank
Political Control
Political Control
Financial
Int'l Assass. Bureau
Laundered $
Laundered $
Gold, Diamonds
For Drugs
Professional Assassins
DIV FIVE FBI
Kennedy Justice
Political Terror
Black Int'l
Red Brigades, OAS, etc.
Mossad
Bank Leumi
Bank Hapoalim
B'nai B'rith Int'l (Basel)
Histadrut
Resorts International
Intertel
$ Reinvested

Figure 1. Dope Inc. Assassination Bureau

Undersecretary of Agriculture for Benito Mussolini. Spadafora is a director of Centro Mondiale Commerciale and the president of the Sicilian Compagnia Amatrice Industriale Petrolifera Armatoviole, a front for illegal arms smuggling. (38) The prince's son married the daughter of former Nazi Finance Minister Hjalmar Schacht, the architect of the Nazi economic policy that led to the extermination of millions of Jews. Schacht's other son-in-law was Nazi SS Colonel Otto Skorzeny, Hitler's Special Operations executive. After receiving a slap on the wrist for his wartime crimes against humanity, Skorzeny established the Spanish-based ADSAP Corporation, which hired out former Nazi SS paramilitary and intelligence specialists for projects arranged through Schacht. (39)

George Mantello (a.k.a. Mandel), the Romanian Jewish emigre whom we already encountered as a chief suspect in the Aldo Moro kidnapping-murder and who was under investigation by both the French SDECE and Garrison, is at once a board member of CMC and the owner of Permindex's Capocetto subsidiary. Capocetto was revealed by several Italian journalists (40) to be the liaison between the B'nai B'rith International and such terrorist gangs as the Red Brigades and the Baader-Meinhof, as well as a string of neo-Nazi groups in West Germany and Italy. Implicated B'nai B'rith officials included B'nai B'rith International Director Schlumberger, B'nai B'rith Continental (the West European branch housed in Basel) chief Erlich, B'nai B'rith France (also known as Ligue Internationale contre l'Anti-Semitisme, or LICA) head Jean Pierre-Bloch, and B'nai B'rith Austria director George Bloch.

Mantello is the financial advisor and investment banker for the House of Savoy, the pretenders to the nonexistent throne of unified Italy and the black nobility sponsors of Mussolini. (41)

The administrative officer of Permindex is Max Hagerman, the editor of the West German right-wing newspaper National-Zeitung, Israeli media have denounced National Zeitung as a "neo-Nazi" publication.

Ferenc Nagy was the President of Hungary during the Nazi occupation. Nagy tendered his resignation as President in 1946 via an infamous telephone call placed from a bank lobby in Geneva. A member of the Eastern European branch (founded by the Radziwill family) of the Order of St. John of Jerusalem, Nagy relocated to the United States during the 1950s. Here he became the titular head of a number of White Russian-Eastern European groups which performed covert services for Allen Dulles and Division Five of the FBI in Eastern Europe, employing former members of the Hungarian fascist movement, Arrow Cross. (42) According to one source, Nagy came under the close scrutiny of New Orleans District Attorney Garrison for possible involvement in the John Kennedy assassination. (43) Nagy was in Dallas for the four-week period leading up to November 22, 1963, as case officer for Permindex and Division Five. Along with Nagy, Garrison was investigating the simultaneous surfacing of George Mantello in Los Angeles. Garrison established that Nagy and Mantello were both business and personal associates of Carlos Marcello, the New Orleans lieutenant of Meyer Lansky who carried out the assassination of Enrico Mattei.

Giuseppe Zigiotto, on the board of CMC, is the head of the House of Savoy Italian neofascist movement called the Fascist National Association for the Militia Arms.

Carlo D'Amelio, another Permindex-CMC board member, is an agent for the Italian black nobility houses of Savoy and Pallavicino. From the Mussolini period, d'Amelio was the attorney representing the grouping of oligarchical families that imposed the fascist dictator in collaboration with Sir Winston Churchill. This grouping was known as Circo Rex ("Royal Circle") and is believed to exist today as the control point for the Red Brigades, the neofascist cells, and the Autonomi (a mass-based anarchist counterculture movement parallel to the youth movements out of which Mussolini recruited his Black Shirts.)

The Pallavicini family, in addition to its sponsorship of terrorism and destabilization against the Italian government, is deeply involved in the Lebanese fascist movement, the Falange, through blood ties into the Coptic Christian families of Lebanon. On November 11, 1978, the Italian government's antiterrorist director, General Delia Chiesa, delivered a significant setback to this oligarchical network by arresting Paolo Sebregondi on charges of conspiring with the Red Brigades in the assassination of Aldo Moro. Sebregondi is the son of Countess Viondi and grandson of Princess Resta-Pallavicino, the former maid-in-waiting to the Queen of Italy. Paolo's brother, Stefano Sebregondi, known to be presently hiding in Mexico, is also being sought by Delia Chiesa in the same case. The exposure of this long-concealed link between the ostensibly gutter-level left radical Red Brigades and the Houses of Savoy and Pallavicini — the employers of d'Amelio and George and Enrico Mantello — establishes the chain of court admissible evidence for the Permindex role in carrying out the murder of Aldo Moro at the behest of the Black Nobility centered in London.

One of the principal channels of laundered money for Permindex-CMC's assassination teams is in the Seligman Bank of Zurich, a bank represented directly on the board of International Assassination Bureau by Hans Seligman, the director of the bank.

Although not an officially cited board member of any of the Permindex fronts, John De Menil bears special note as an indispensable business partner of Major Bloomfield. DeMenil is the president of the Schlumberger Corporation of Houston and southern Florida. The firm was implicated by Jim Garrison along with Permindex in smuggling guns and explosives to anti-Castro Cuban exiles who also came under investigation for the Kennedy assassination. DeMenil worked with a CIA Miami-based front called "Double-Chek," which in turn was a contact point for Major Bloomfield's FBI Division Five. (44)

DeMenil is a White Russian emigre who fled to France, married into the wealthy Schlumberger family, and eventually settled in Houston to open a U.S. branch of the family's heavy) machinery firm. DeMenil was a close associate and contact man for Permindex case officer Nagy during the preparation period for the Kennedy assassination. (45)

One of DeMenil's closest associates is Col. Clay Shaw, a member of the Permindex-CMC board. Shaw was Garrison's chief suspect in the Kennedy killing and is the business partner of

Carlos Marcello. Shaw's circle of former associates who mysteriously died before they could testify before D.A. Garrison included: David Ferrie, Shaw's former pilot and employee at the World Trade Mart; Guy Bannister, the southeast regional chief of Major Bloomfield's Division Five of the FBI; and George de Mohrenschildt, a White Russian leader who allegedly committed suicide on the eve of his scheduled appearance before the House Assassination Panel. The day of his death he was interviewed by journalist Edward Jay Epstein, a self-admitted ghost writer and stringer for former Central Intelligence Agency counterintelligence director James Jesus Angleton. (46)

No discussion of Permindex, Division Five, or Major L.M. Bloomfield would be complete without a note on the controversial Mr. Angleton. This is not the time to reach any verdict on Angleton's place in the international hall of fame of assassins, dope pushers, and spies. We merely note a fantastic coincidence of facts. As head of counterintelligence for the CIA for nearly 30 years, Angleton was the official in charge of all activities relating to terrorism, assassinations, and international narcotics traffic. As the head of the Israeli Desk, he was also the liaison chief to the Mossad. Among his other responsibilities at the CIA, Angleton ran the Vatican desk, a position that placed him equally in touch with the House of Savoy. This last connection would have been solidified way back in the 1940s when Angleton was the OSS station chief for Italy, and therefore the officer in charge of OSS special agent Charles "Lucky" Luciano.

In short, Permindex's roster of directors and associates makes a mockery of everything the Zionist Lobby professes to stand for. The Montefiores, the de Hirschs, the Rothschilds, and their Bronfman and Bloomfield retainers are at once the most zealous leaders of the Zionist Lobby and the sponsors and controllers of a criminal network that extends to self-professed Nazis. It is time to bring before the courts the persons of Louis Bloomfield, Tibor Rosenbaum, the directors of Bank Leumi, of Bank Hapoalim, of B'nai B'rith International, of the Histradrut. Among the long list of indictments, one of the charges would be violation of the

Nuremberg statutes for crimes against humanity — for deploying drug-runners and convicted Nazis for assassinations of world-shaking importance. Before the Zionist Lobby shouts "anti-Semitism," it must explain the composition and directorate of Permindex, which exposes once and for all the real controllers of the Nazi "Black" International.

A

Permindex Unveiled: Resorts International -Intertel

In September, 1974 less than four weeks after President Richard Nixon was driven out of office, Evelyn de Rothschild, Walter Hesselbach, and a handful of others conspired to bring down the Banque de Credit Internationale (1). The collapse caused a momentary panic on the international financial markets and more longterm financial problems for such people as Nixon and Michele Sindona, the Italian banker, whose poor judgment led them to place their money in the hands of IOS. Did this financial catastrophe spell the end of Permindex? After all, BCI had been one of the centerpieces of the dirty money side of Major Bloomfield's assassination bureau.

Not only did the International Assassination Bureau survive the September 1974 events, and the earlier shunting of Permindex to South Africa. Pulling the plug on the BCI appears to have been a loud diversionary maneuver to obscure the fact that quietly, systematically, over a period of years, the Permindex capability was upgraded, expanded, and relocated to a spot only miles off the coast of the United States: Paradise Island in the Grand Bahamas. Here stands the corporate headquarters of

Resorts International and its wholly owned subsidiary "security division, International Intelligence ("Intertel").

Forget about the pictures of Resorts International in glossy travel brochures or the advertisements in the Travel Section of the Sunday New York Times. Scarcely concealed among the palm trees, the swimming pools, and the all-night casinos and nightclubs is Major Bloomfield's Royal Commission of High Executioners — and billions of dollars in dope. Barely hidden behind the Resorts International letterhead is the eminence grise of organized crime, Meyer Lansky.

Beginning no later than 1960, Lansky hatched a grand scheme to create a "Hong Kong West" (2) in the Caribbean: an offshore center that would bring together gambling, narcotics, dirty money, and Murder Inc. under one unregulated and "highly respectable" roof.

First, Lansky picked the Grand Bahamas Island as the site for a plush casino-resort. Operating through a Canadian "cutout," longtime business associate Louis Chesler, Lansky negotiated a purchase of a large tract of land on the island and oversaw the construction of a grand hotel, the Lucayan Beach Hotel, which was completed and opened for business before the end of 1963. (3) At the time the venture began, casino gambling was illegal in the Grand Bahamas — except for those hotels that received a Certificate of Exemption from the Bahamian government. The most powerful political figure on the island, chief of the so-called "Bay Street Boys," was Sir Stafford Sands. Several meetings between Sands and Chesler and $1,800,000 in bribery later, Lansky received his Certificate of Exemption on March 27, 1963. On January 22,1964, the casino at Lucayan Beach was opened under festive circumstances that Hank Messick described as follows:

> The international jetset was on hand to give the event some class, but Meyer Lansky's veterans were in complete control. Red Ritter was general manager; Max Courtney was credit manager; Charley Brudner was his assistant; Dino Cellini was supervisor, and so on. As a matter of fact, Dino had operated a school in London to train the dealers and stick men who came originally from Sicily by way of the syndicate casino on the Isle of Man in the Irish Sea. (4)

Phase One of Lansky's "Operation Respectable" completed, the old wizard proceeded with the next steps. First, he cleared the way for a consortium of "legitimate" investors headed by the Miami-based Mary Carter Paint Company to buy into Hog Island (renamed Paradise Island by its owner Huntington Hartford, the multimillionaire magnate of the Great Atlantic and Pacific Tea Company) and to receive a Certificate of Exemption for the construction of a hotel-gambling casino. Sir Stafford Sands, now in Lansky's hip pocket, saw these measures through and simultaneously announced that the Bahamian government was undertaking the construction of a bridge connecting Grand Bahamas to Hog Island, to be completed by December 31,1967. (5)

What sort of weird entity was Mary Carter Paints and why had Meyer Lansky gone out of his way to open all the doors on Bay Street to it?

To begin with the obvious, Mary Carter Paint Company was involved in more than wall coverings. In 1958, it was effectively taken over by merger with the Crosby-Miller Co. — a Florida company about which little is known except that former New York Governor and two-time Republican presidential candidate Thomas Dewey was one of its biggest investors. (6) Dewey's "Mr. Clean" crimebuster reputation, dating back to his days as special prosecutor during the 1940s, was a perfect cover for Lansky's move to Paradise Island.

Via the 1958 merger, the president of Mary Carter Paint Company was James M. Crosby. Crosby's brother, Peter Crosby, was a convicted stock swindler and a close business associate of Dino Cellini. Cellini was the first lieutenant to Meyer Lansky and was known as Florida's "connection" to Canadian heroin trafficker Guiseppi Cotroni. So even with Gov. Thomas Dewey's Anglophile profile on the label of every can of Mary Carter Paint, the product was severely tarnished by bigtime crime.

Fidel Castro's takeover of Cuba in 1959 had been a bitter pill for the Lansky syndicate to swallow; however, it taught the old wizard a valuable lesson: don't take politics for granted. Before he socked tens of millions of dollars into his Grand Bahamas dreamland, Lansky would make absolutely certain that he was treading on solid political ground.

So, in 1964, Lansky arranged a small scandal centered around the sudden "revelation" that Lucayan Beach promoter Lou Chesler had connections to organized crime boss Meyer Lansky! Chesler left the island no doubt laughing all the way to the bank, and Lansky became invisible.

Next, Lansky moved to overthrow the deeply entrenched and corrupted Bay Street Boys (the "Batistas of the Bahamas") and impose a new government committed to the public welfare of the Bahamian population — as long as the welfare was provided by revenues from lucrative gambling takes. Covertly, Lansky political operatives — often men like Big Mike McLaney, who had been Lansky's bagman for payoffs to Cuban dictator Batista — began to heavily bankroll the Progressive Liberal Party representing the islands' black majority. (7)

At the same time, Lansky began releasing blackmail dossiers on the Bay Street Boys. First, James Crosby went to the Justice Department to meet with Robert Peloquin of the Organized Crime Strike Force. Crosby clinched a deal with Peloquin (representing Robert Kennedy's "secret team"). Shortly thereafter Peloquin launched a full-scale investigation into "corruption in the Grand Bahamas" — using the evidence provided through Lansky. Another Lansky frontman, Tex McCrary, began leaking material to the press. McCrary's leaks enabled the Wall Street Journal to win the 1966 Pulitzer Prize for a lengthy series of articles exposing the connections between organized crime and the ruling political elite of the island — the Bay Streeters. (8)

Following the Crosby-Peloquin meeting, in 1965 the Internal Revenue Service — in conjunction with the Organized Crime section of the Justice Department — embarked on "Operation Tradewinds," ostensibly an investigation into "hot money" operations in the Bahamas. Heading the IRS side of the investigation was William Koler. Running the effort from the Justice Department was Robert Peloquin, working in close contact with Organized Crime and Racketeering section head Henry Peterson and Criminal Division head William Hundley.

By Christmas, 1966, growing scandals had presented the Bay Street Boys with a fait accompli. They called for elections and, on January 10, 1967, were driven out of office by the Progressive Liberal Party. Progressive chairman Lynden O. Pindling became Premier, and he petitioned for the convening of a Royal Commission of Inquiry to handle the organized crime penetration and control over Bay Street. The commission was convened in February 1967 under the chairmanship of Sir Ranulph Bacon, former head of Scotland Yard. Its investigation was based almost exclusively on the Lansky dossiers, which were passed on to Sir Ranulph by the Operation Tradewinds crew. (9)

By March 1967, all competitors with Mary Carter Paint Company had withdrawn their bids on the Hog Island land in fear that they would be exposed for their corrupt ties to Bay Street. Before the end of the month, Sir Stafford Sands packed his bags and retired to a castle in Spain.

Lansky, as the business agent for Dope, Incorporated, had completed a most silent coup d'etat. In rapid succession, all the rats surfaced to claim their just rewards.

Peloquin and Hundley "retired" from the Justice Department, opened up a law firm, and within a month were retained to manage the legal affairs of "Resorts International" — the new name adopted by Mary Carter Paints in 1966 when it made the bid for Hog Island. Both men became vice presidents of Paradise Enterprise, Inc., the Resorts International subsidiary that owns the island. By 1970, Resorts had created a wholly owned subsidiary private security army, Intertel. Its cofounders (who started off with a $2,000,000 commission from Resorts) were Peloquin, who became president, and Hundley, who became the secretary and the general counsel. Their initial recruits were drawn principally from the Operation Tradewinds taskforce, beginning with former IRS Intelligence Division head Koler. What Permindex had previously done under a shroud of secrecy and multiple layers of cover, Intertel was set up to do on a grand scale — before the public eye under the cover of crime control!

Before we look at Intertel and its personnel, more closely, it is important to set a few things straight about the investment capital that went into the construction of Resorts International.

Resorts International was financed largely with a transfer of funds from the Banque de Credit Internationale of Tibor Rosenbaum and Major Louis Mortimer Bloomfield, and the Investors Overseas Service of Bernie Cornfeld and the Rothschild family.

An estimated $14 million in transferred monies traveling through Meyer Lansky's World Trade Bank and the Fiduciary Trust Company of Nassau, a wholly owned subsidiary of IOS, found their way into Resorts during its half-dozen formative years. (10)

Furthermore, by the agreement that first cleared the way for the granting of the property title, the construction rights, and the vital Certificate of Exemption, 44 cents on every dollar of profit taken in at the Paradise Island casino goes to the Lucayan Beach Hotel and Casino Corporation — still largely owned by Meyer Lansky through his Canadian business partner Lou Chesler.

From its investors' side then, Resorts International is indistinguishable from the previously Geneva and Basel-headquartered Permindex-BCI-IOS — a nexus that we have shown to be founded on the revenues of Dope, Incorporated. Resorts International equals bigtime drug trafficking: cocaine and marijuana from the Caribbean and South America, LSD and hashish produced in factories in the Bahamas, Costa Rica, etc., with venture capital provided through IOS. Resorts International's stationing on Paradise Island created the "Silver Triangle" — a dope route up through the Caribbean that the U.S. Drug Enforcement Administration estimates to be the source of over $7 billion a year alone in narcotics passed through the southernmost tip of Florida.

Perm index moves to Bay Street

As the guts of BCI moved to Paradise Island, so the Permindex murder ring moved to Intertel. No longer was the Special Operations Executive to house its secret assassination teams in trading companies, Christian missionary schools, and commercial executive airline services. Murder, Inc. was to become part of the respectable, Kennedy "liberal establishment," flaunting itself as a private intelligence army for hire.

Of course, occasionally old methods of cover were demanded when inquiring reporters, grand juries, or congressional committees threatened to come a bit too close to the truth. Thus, when Intertel was brought before the Senate Watergate Committee for possible investigation, it was officially described as a "commercial firm that specialized in the identification of typewriters." (11)

What is International Intelligence? A "Who's Who" listing of its board and senior staff reads like a printout of British intelligence, the Mafia, and Mossad.

Intertel President Robert Peloquin was a troubleshooter on the Kennedy Justice "secret team" under Walter Sheridan. A World War II naval intelligence officer assigned to the Office of Naval Intelligence, Peloquin was transferred to the National Security Agency where he remained until moving to the criminal division of the Justice Department. In 1966, Peloquin was sent to Buffalo to head up the first official Organized Crime Strike Force in the country. Peloquin's "no crime here" coverup of the Jacobs family syndicate (see Section 5) was so well received that his boss, Henry Peterson, was gratefully hired as general counsel for the Jacobs' Sportsystems Corporation and let loose with a $1 million annual budget. Hundley and Peloquin run Intertel; Peterson runs Sportsystems; all three have been partners in the same law firm since 1976.

Hundley, the secretary and general counsel for Intertel, spent the 1951-57 years in the Internal Security section of the Justice Department. In that capacity, Hundley would have liased with the Division Five of the FBI headed by Permindex's Major Louis Mortimer Bloomfield. From Internal Security, Hundley moved onto the Kennedy Justice "secret team" and participated in the prosecution of Teamster President James Hoffa.

Sir Ranulph Bacon, the former head of Scotland Yard who conducted the Royal Commission inquiry that cleaned out the Bay Street Boys for Lansky, cashed in his chips by moving on to the Intertel board.

John D. O'Connell is the executive vice-president of Intertel in charge of its New York City operations. A 24-year veteran of the FBI, O'Connell was the supervisor of all FBI intelligence activities related to organized crime.

Thomas J. McKeon, vice-president and assistant general counsel, was a supervisor with Major Bloomfield's FBI Division Five before he went to Detroit to head up the Organized Crime Strike Force.

David Belisle, a member of the board, was the Deputy Director for Security at the State Department and subsequently the head of the Security section of the National Security Agency.

Edward M. Mullin, presently Intertel's director of intelligence operations, was with Division Five of the FBI and later with the CIA as an assistant deputy director in charge of clandestine services. Mullin's private security front in Washington, D.C., was infamous as the base of operations for E. Howard Hunt during the time of the Watergate breakin. Mullin is also directly tied into the Miami Double-Chek outfit that is implicated in several Permindex-run assassinations, including the JFK killing.

Among the other board members and ranking staff of Intertel are: a retired director of the Royal Canadian Mounted Police; a president of the Bronfman family's Royal Bank of Canada Trust Company; a president of the Dreyfus Corporation, an investment fund owned by the Hofjuden de Gunzberg family, into which the Bronfmans are intermarried.

What do we have here? First we have Resorts International, financed through the Geneva-Basel retail revenues of Dope, Inc. The manager of Paradise Island for its first half decade of operation (1968-73) was Eddie Cellini, the brother of Dino Cellini and another well-known lieutenant of Meyer Lansky. (When Cellini's criminal record became a potential sore spot for Resorts, he was discreetly shipped off to Miami where he now handles "charter flights" between Florida and Paradise Island — flights that may shuttle more than paying customers.) In 1972, Robert Vesco came a hairsbreadth away from buying majority holdings in Resorts International for $60 million — a transaction that was heartily endorsed by the "supersleuths" at Intertel. (12)

If Resorts International is a glossy front for Meyer Lansky's retail end of the biggest business in the world then what does that say for its wholly owned subsidiary, Intertel? Is it conceivable that this collection of senior officials from the most prestigious and sophisticated intelligence services of the United States, Canada, and Britain could be oblivious to the fact that they are "riding shotgun" for one of the biggest channels of narcotics and hot money in the Western Hemisphere?

Intertel stands exposed as the successor to Major Bloomfield's Permindex, drawing on the same SOE-Division Five capabilities, the same "direct line" interface into the official intelligence branches of half the countries in the world, the same allegiance to the British oligarchy behind the $200 billion a year Dope, Inc. While the motives may vary case by case, it is sufficient to say that anyone on the inside of Intertel attempting to break from its service and spill the beans would have about the same chance for survival as a Royal Hong Kong police officer who decided to turn down his weekly bribery envelope.

With the consolidation of Resorts International, we once again swing full circle. From a Prohibition-era jumping-off point of syndicated organized crime in the United States — fostered by the same British families that had ordered the Shanghai massacre to safeguard the rule of Dope, Inc. in China — we now find ourselves 50 years later confronted by a criminal infrastructure lobbying for the decriminalization of crime itself! The Kennedy Justice, Scotland Yard, and RCMP boys at Intertel sell their services as "experts in cleaning out undesirable criminal elements from your corporation." (13) Through this ruse they captured the Howard Hughes fortunes and are at present taking over "security services" for all the big Las Vegas casinos. (14) They moved into New Jersey and imposed gambling, horse racing, and numbers as the three "growth industries"; they are now posing New Jersey as the model to be followed by Florida, Arizona, Rhode Island, Massachusetts, and New York.

After World War II, one of the economic warfare specialists in Sir William Stephenson's SOE, a fellow named Ian Fleming, wrote a series of coded novels describing the efforts at world conquest of a "third force" — an ultramodern international crime syndicate housed in the resort islands of the Caribbean. The weapons of "third force" conquest were drugs, political assassinations, grand-scale blackmail, and economic war against the nations of the world. With Resorts International-Intertel, Fleming's "third force" — the British oligarchy's Dope, Inc. — put itself up for trade on the stock markets of the world.

5

The Jacobs Family's Emprise: Sports and Crime

On June 2, 1976, moments after a bomb exploded in his car and inflicted fatal injuries, dying Arizona investigative reporter Don Bolles whispered three words to the rescue team that pulled him from the wreckage: "Mafia . . . Emprise . . . Adamson."

Bolles was on the verge of completing a seven-year investigation of laundered drug traffic money in the state of Arizona, including organized crime takeovers of dog tracks and horse racing—areas the Buffalo-based Jacobs family began moving into in 1959. A Phoenix resident, John Adamson, pleaded guilty to the murder in January 1977, naming a local real estate developer, Max Dunlop, as the man who hired him to murder Bolles. Mysteriously, no investigation ever took place of Emprise, the leading vehicle since 1916 of the Jacobs family, which had been the primary target of Bolles's investigation and the subject of his last words.

Emprise was one of the largest nonpublic, family-owned corporations in the world, a conglomerate with control or partial control over 450 separate companies. Its stated annual profit is $350 million, from holdings in North American and British sports complexes, race tracks, and food consortia. It is probably the biggest quasi-legitimate cover for organized crime's money laundering in the United States. Were it a public company, it would rank about 150 in the Fortune 500.

The Jacobs family's only concession to the numerous attempts by law enforcement agencies to shut them down was to change Emprise's name to Sportsystems in 1972.

The vast extent of the present Jacobs empire is approximated by Sportsystems' 1977 declared holdings. The pattern that emerges conforms to the requisites of an international laundering racket for narcotics, prostitution, and gambling receipts.

Sportsystems Corporation maintains:

*majority interest or significant minority interests in over 20 horse racing tracks in the United States and Canada;

*food concessions at over 40 horse racing tracks in the United States and Canada plus another 15 in England. Those in Great Britain are maintained in the name of Sportsystems' wholly owned subsidiary, Letheby and Christopher Ltd., chaired by a retired British Army colonel, Livingstone Learmouth;

*over ten greyhound racing tracks in the United States and Canada, including majority holdings in nearly every track in the heavily drug-trafficked state of Arizona;

*24 concession contracts with major-league baseball teams in the United States, including Chicago's Comiskey Park and Detroit's Tiger Stadium;

*ownership of the Boston Garden indoor professional sports complex and the Boston Bruins professional ice hockey team;

*ownership of Professional Sports Publications, Inc., the largest U.S. publisher of sports events programs;

*161 concessions at theaters and bowling alleys in the United States;

*15 airport concessions, including in-flight and ground-level concessions at Washington, D.C. airports and Palm Springs, Florida;

*two jai alai stadiums (legal gambling facilities) in Florida;

*industrial food catering services at such locations as the Gulf of Mexico oil drilling platforms; and

*one Alaska-to-Seattle cargo fleet comprised of six ships. This route curiously parallels the prime entry point to the U.S. of Chinese heroin.

Within this maze of operations, each characterized by a high volume of cash turnover, the $350 million figure is a fraud, published for tax purposes. Law enforcement sources estimate the annual flowthrough of tainted cash in the range of several billions of dollars.

That is not conjecture. Emprise and its incarnation, Sportsystems, left a broad trail of investigations, indictments, and convictions, occurring mainly during the years of Nixon's War on Drugs—a trail that ended with the Bolles murder. In 1972, the family firm was convicted of conspiracy to take over a gambling casino in Las Vegas by illegal means. That incident, among other things, provoked the change of the Emprise name. Indicted along with the Jacobs brothers were some of the best-known faces in the mug files of the Justice Department's Organized Crime Strike Force. Among the co-conspirators were top racketeers, drug traffickers, and the entire leadership of the Detroit mob, including

*Anthony Zerilli, son of Joseph Zerilli, Detroit's mob boss and an official of the Emprise subsidiary, Hazel Park Racing Association;

*Michael B. Polizzi of Grosse Point, Michigan, an owner of the Valley Die Cast Association, identified as a Detroit mob lieutenant in police files;

*Anthony Giordano of the "St. Louis Banana Distributing Company," the kingpin of St. Louis drug traffic;

*Peter J. Bellanca, also a director of the Emprise-owned Hazel Park Racing Association; and

*Jacob Shapiro, a Detroit-Miami mobster, with interests in Las Vegas' Silver Slipper casino.

Conviction in the same dock with known mobsters did not deter the Jacobs family. Since 1972, they have continued to act as money-movers and bagmen for a whole list of organized crime figures. Several large loans to crime syndicates are on the record, including a $2 million 1972 loan to the Montreal Expos—owned by their old sponsors and counterparts across the Canadian border, the Bronfman family of Montreal. An earlier recipient was convicted murderer Raymond Patriarcha, the crime boss of Rhode Island. Louis Jacobs, one of the three brothers, brought Patriarcha into a partnership in the Chicago Lion Manufacturing Company, since renamed the Bally Manufacturing company, the largest American producer of pinball and slot machines and the source of supply for the mob's pinball distribution. Also on the list of the Jacobs' "loan" recipients are a number of associates of syndicate financier Meyer Lansky, including Morris Dalitz, according to testimony introduced into the Congressional Record (1).

A Michigan grand jury is currently hearing a case implicating the Jacobs' Sportsystems and the Jacobs brothers personally in an attempt to tamper with Michigan state criminal records involving members of the Zerilli mob and St. Louis crime figure Morris Shenker.

Despite a record of criminal activity stretching back to the 1910s—and never interrupted—the Jacobs family remains one of the open, "legitimate" fronts for Dope, Incorporated. Not only is the Jacobs family protected, but, as we will document below, it retains a group of veterans of the Kennedy Administration's Organized Crime Strike Force as its legal department.

Emprise appeared in 1916, the year that the Bronfmans and the Hudson's Bay Company began bootlegging through the "Pure Drug Distribution Company," using the three Jacobs brothers as contacts right across the border in Buffalo. The original Jacobs brothers, Louis, Marvin, and Charles, used the old smugglers' cover of "food concessions" for a chain of vaudeville theaters on the Canadian border crossing points at Buffalo and Cleveland. (2) The modus operandi is pretty much the one Mitchell Bronfman used during the early 1970s for smuggling heroin into the United States. Once established, the Jacobs machine became a leading distributor for Bronfman liquor as the United States went dry.

Functionally, Emprise represented the "throttle" through which shipments of liquor could be turned on or off to the American mob. The Jacobs family, enduring a half-dozen criminal indictments through the 1920s, controlled the supply and financing of illegal booze for most of American organized crime.

Their dependents included the Purple Gang of Detroit, the gang convicted with the Jacobs brothers in the 1972 Las Vegas incident; the Morris Dalitz Cleveland-Las Vegas crime syndicate: and the Crown-Lundheimer mob in Chicago, the Zionist controllers of the colorful "cutout" Al Capone. (3) Not only are these ties still in place; every man who tried to do something about them is either dead, like reporter Don Bolles, or broken, like former Arizona Congressman Sam Steiger.

The Steiger investigation

Beginning in 1970, five-term Arizona conservative Congressman Sam Steiger began an investigation into Emprise's activities in his home state. Working closely with Bolles, Steiger prepared a series of reports for the House Select Committee on Crime, of which he was a member. Steiger placed two damning reports on Emprise in the Congressional Record in 1970 and 1972 (4). He also widely publicized the finding of an Arizona State Auditor General report charging Emprise with falsifying figures to get a tax-break bill through the State Legislature. By 1972, in conjunction with the Nixon Justice Department, he succeeded in getting grand jury charges and federal court convictions against Emprise and the six Detroit area mobsters already cited. On May 24, 1972, pressure on Emprise had reached such a public crescendo that even Sports Illustrated ran a lengthy expose titled "Jacobs — Godfather of Sports"; the magazine was promptly sued for $20 million and settled out of court.

At that point, Democratic Party politicians and prominent figures in the Zionist Lobby went into action on Emprise's behalf. Not coincidentally, the same forces that came forward for Emprise were also preparing the Watergate scandal to bring down President Richard Nixon. (5)

Democratic members of the House Select Panel on Crime denounced the majority report prepared by Steiger exposing Emprise's ties to organized crime. As admitted by Max and Jeremy Jacobs in congressional testimony, Emprise hired New York public relations man Hal Antin to defeat Steiger in his 1976 re-election bid. A Phoenix underworld figure, George H. Johnson, was paid to wiretap and survey Steiger and manufacture scandals against him. Arnold Weiss, a Buffalo attorney on the Emprise payroll, was sent to meet with Steiger and deliver a series of ultimatums. Weiss reportedly threatened to ruin Steiger by planting rumors that his marriage had broken up after his wife caught him in illicit relations with their three-year-old daughter. Such rumors, in fact, did appear in various Arizona media. (6)

In 1972, Senator Robert Dole, a Kansas Republican, publicly protested the House Select Panel's decision to terminate the hearings on Emprise. Dole revealed that the decision had followed a private meeting between Jeremy Jacobs and Democratic National Committee Chairman Larry O'Brien. O'Brien subsequently left his Democratic Party post and assumed a lucrative job as president of the National Basketball Association—an organization with heavy representation by the Jacobs family.

As the Watergate campaign broke down Nixon's resistance and dismantled the core of his efforts to suppress organized crime, the attack against Emprise faded. By June 1976, Don Bolles was dead. On November 3, 1976, in an election heavily shaped by nationwide vote fraud (7), Rep. Steiger lost his bid for a sixth term in Congress. By this time a broken man fearing for his life, Steiger met with Jeremy Jacobs to "apologize" for his accusations against Emprise. At this time Emprise-Sportsystems had three pending civil suits against Steiger. In a last act of humiliation, Steiger wrote to Attorney General Edward Levi as a spokesman for Emprise on behalf of a presidential pardon for the 1972 federal racketeering conviction. Incoming Attorney General Griffin Bell turned down the request as "not deserving." (8)

Jacobs and Royal Crown

The second generation of Jacobs brothers, Max, Jeremy, and Lawrence, underwent the same "washing" into respectable society as their old Prohibition business partners, the Bronfmans. Ironically, the Jacobs brothers used their longstanding association with the Bronfmans, since married into the upper reaches of the European Hofjuden, to lend them an air of respectability somewhat above that of the outright thugs with whom they still do most of their business. For example, a third-generation Jacobs, Jeremy, took his "higher education" not at a university, but at the Toronto Jockey Club, after his 1960 high school graduation. The Bronfman-run Toronto Jockey Club, like its counterpart in Hong Kong, is not only one of Canada's best protected dirty money-gathering outfits, but a place where Hofjuden and gangsters can amiably mix in safety. Regular denizens of the Toronto Club include Viscount Hardinge and Canadian organized-crime figure Murray Koffler. Koffler's role as a retail outlet for Bronfman dope-running came into the public domain in 1976, when an associate's chain of retail drug stores was indicted for maintaining an amphetamine factory and a national army of pill-pushers. That distinction did not prevent Koffler from attending the wedding of Britain's Princess Anne, or from maintaining his close friendship with Anne's husband. Captain Mark Phillips. (9)

So far the Jacobs have been barred from marriage into the leading Hofjuden circles. However, the Jacobs have been awarded a respectable role in the train of the British monarchy, in a service capacity. The "crown jewel" of the Jacobs' operations is the British firm, Letheby and Christopher Ltd.—the caterers, by Her Majesty's appointment, to "all events with a royal presence." (10) Their concessions through Letheby and Christopher include the Tate Gallery, the Ascot Races, and other gathering places of the Royal Family and the British aristocracy. L & C, as it is affectionately known in Britain, was awarded the management of Ascot through the Bank of Norfolk, whose trustees include the Marquis of Abergavemy and Lord Tyron—the Keeper of the Queen's Privy Purse, third in aristocratic rank to the Keeper of the Queen's Horse, and the Keeper of the Queen's Bedchamber.

Apart from its royal honors, the Jacobs subsidiary manages 12 other racetracks in Great Britain including the national track at Liverpool, the site of the Grand National, and Wembly Stadium, Britain's equivalent of Madison Square Garden.

More than their retailing services for British dope-peddlers, however, accounts for the Jacobs family's honored position at the British court. They have conducted crucial—and dangerous—political errands for the British oligarchy over a period of years. One such mission involved the successful sabotage of Richard Nixon's 1972 plan for detente with the Soviet Union. Their instrument for the act of sabotage—the man whose presidential campaign they funded lavishly—was Senator Scoop Jackson.

"Scoopsie," Max Jacobs once said, "is the best friend Israel has in the Congress." Max and brother Jeremy were funders of their torpedo's run for the White House. (11)

Jackson authored the "Jackson-Vanik" Amendment to destroy the effectiveness of Nixon's 1972 treaty for expanded trade and scientific cooperation, which rested, among other things, on American credits for Siberian development. Jackson's operation prevented the United States from extending any credits to the Soviet Union until the Soviets "liberalized" their Jewish emigration policy. (Under the Nixon Administration, such emigration had already increased fourfold.)

The Jacobs brothers had hamstrung a treaty the British Crown viewed as a mortal enemy, one the Rothschild-owned London Economist denounced as a "waltz of the elephants." Jackson has continued to work as a pawn of the Jacobs crime family, advocating, among other projects, a military alliance with and weapons sales to China, Britain's partner in world dope traffic.

In the Jacobs group, America has its homegrown version of the Green Gangs, the fifth column Britain used to destroy China.

Working for the HongShang

From available evidence, the British oligarchy rates the Jacobs group's political usefulness as an intermediary for control over organized crime sufficiently important to make major efforts to rebuild the Jacobs' tarnished image. The prize that motivates Britain in this regard is the Buffalo-based Marine

Midland Bank, which the Hongkong and Shanghai Bank now wants to buy out.

From the American side the most important "inside agents" pushing the HongShang takeover are Leonard Rochwarger and Paul Schoelkopf, since 1973 the closest business associates of Max and Jermy Jacobs. (12) Rochwarger is president of First-mark Corporation, a heavy equipment leasing company and the American leg of an international conglomerate controlled by Britain's most important Hofjuden, the Rothschilds and Sebag-Montefiores.

Rochwarger was brought into the deal at a Paris meeting in 1971 with Edmond de Rothschild and Robin Sebag-Montefiore, who represented, respectively, the Isrop S.A. of Luxembourg and the Gilsyd Corporation of Liechtenstein. Under an intricate merger arrangement, Rochwarger emerged from the meeting as president of a new international subsidiary of the Rothschild and Montefiore companies, Israel-American Leasing of Tel Aviv, now the largest firm of its type in Israel.

Rochwarger is an old associate of Max Jacobs; both sit on the board of the Joint Distribution Committee, the funding center for American Zionist organizations. In addition, Rochwarger is the director of the National Jewish Centers and Youth Programs both in the United States and Canada, a regional board member of the Anti-Defamation League of B'nai B'rith, and fundraising chairman of the United Jewish Appeal.

Paul Schoelkopf, another Buffalo-based Zionist, is leading the local campaign in support of HongShang's bid for Marine Midland. Schoelkopf is chairman of Buffalo's Niagara Share Corporation, an investment company that pools the resources of wealthy local investors for large investments. Among Niagara's holdings is 246,000 shares in HongShang stock. Its other holdings include investments in the Swire family's Pacific A Corporation, and 400,000 shares in two Hong Kong holding companies, Cheung Kong Holdings Ltd., and the trading company Hutchinson Whampoa, also linked to HongShang.

Another Schoelkopf investment vehicle is the $250 million per year food wholesaling-retailing group, Niagara Frontier Services, whose chairman is Armand Castellani, a member of Marine Midland's board of directors. A merger is currently in process between Niagara Frontier Services and Sportsystems, which would double the stated "legitimate" revenue base of the Jacobs family empire.

If HongShang receives the Marine Midland Bank from the hands of Max Jacobs, the link between the retail cash laundering facilities of the American mob and the wholesale financing of the international dope traffic will be complete. As noted in Part II, Section 1, it will also complete the British oligarchy's takeover of the last remaining offshore center not wholly in its possession, Panama.

Jacobs joins Intertel

In the aftermath of Congressman Steiger's investigation, Sportsystems underwent a corporate personnel reorganization. The result was that Sportsystems established an interface with the center of the crime syndicates and the reincarnated Assassination Bureau—Resorts International and its subsidiary, Intertel.

The entire executive team and legal staff brought into Sportsystems in 1975 was made up exclusively of veterans of the Kennedy Justice Department—the same Kennedy Justice Department that sent the man who is now president of Intertel, Robert Peloquin, to Buffalo, to "investigate" the Emprise crime syndicate!

In early 1975, Donald Carmichael, a Kennedy Democrat who had served as a delegate both at the 1964 and 1968 Democratic conventions, as well as on the President's War on Poverty panel, became the president of Sportsystems. Carmichael ushered in a dozen Kennedy Justice Department hands over the next two years.

In 1976, Max and Jeremy Jacobs' close friend and "business associate" Max Fisher released the general counsel of his own corporation, United Brands (formerly United Fruit), so that he could accept Jacobs' offer of the post of general counsel to Sportsystems. Before his employment at United Brands, Stanley Mills had been a Justice Department aide to Attorney General Robert Kennedy. (13)

In 1977, when the Bolles murder temporarily threatened to bring Emprise-Sportsystems under criminal investigation, Horace S. Webb joined the firm as public relations director. Webb, who assisted the Watergating of Richard Nixon on behalf of the Kennedy machine, had previously been Deputy Public Information Director for the Justice Department and later press secretary for Attorney General Elliot Richardson.

By the time the facelift of Sportsystems was finished, four other Kennedy Administration officials—each a member of Robert Kennedy's "secret team"—were brought into the firm's legal division.

Half the Kennedy "old boys" had moved into Resorts International and Intertel; the other half went over to the Jacobs group, for the same type of assignment.

Heading the "Intertel Team" at Sportsystems is Henry Peterson, the former chief of the Organized Crime and Racketeering Division of the Kennedy Justice Department. At Camelot, Peterson was the superior of Robert Peloquin, now president of Intertel.

Peterson's entire staff from the old Robert Kennedy days came with him. At Sportsystems, his chief aides are William Bittman, Daniel Hollman, and Thomas Kennedy. Kennedy worked for Peterson in the Organized Crime Division of the Department of Justice. Their big assignment in the old days came when Peterson sent them to New York State—to investigate the mob connections of Emprise!

"Bagman" Max Fisher

Max Fisher, today the chairman of United Brands, is the acknowledged "kingmaker" in the Michigan Republican Party, and a political power nationally. As president of the United Jewish Appeal, president of the Jewish Welfare Fund, and honorary chairman of the American Jewish Committee, Fisher holds rank next to his close friends Max and Jeremy Jacobs and the Bronfman brothers as one of the leading lights of the Zionist Lobby in North America. Fisher is also Henry Kissinger's contact man in the Michigan-Ohio area, and until recently was national fundraising chairman for the Republican Party.

Those are impressive credentials for a man who got his start as "bagman" for Prohibition's "Purple Gang." Max's job was to run advance payments for Bronfman liquor across the Canadian border and secure advance deliveries of Bronfman "rotgut" to the speakeasies that dotted Michigan's auto towns. Today, Max's headquarters, the Fisher Building, is owned by the Bronfmans.

Today Midwest law enforcement officials name Max Fisher as the prime candidate for arrest and conviction as the kingpin of the vast narcotics trade in the Midwest—including the tons of drugs that pour into the auto belt. Yet no indictments have been forthcoming. Freuhauf Trucking Company, based in both Canada and the United States, provides one channel for large-scale drug smuggling, these officials report. Max Fisher is a Freuhauf board member and large shareholder. Knowledge of Fisher's drug connection even includes the various parking lot "truck stops" — adjacent to Fisher's Detroit suburban headquarters — that are believed to serve as transshipment points for heroin, cocaine, and marijuana. Fisher's privately owned Marathon Oil Company, barging crude oil into the Midwest from ports of call in South America, is also suspected of joining Fisher's United Brands in running the "Silver Triangle" drug traffic.

Since its founding by the New Orleans Macheca mob and Montefiore-sponsored Jewish immigrant Zemurray, United Fruit-United Brands has dominated both licit and illicit trade in the Central and Latin American countries that produce cocaine and marijuana for the American market. In those same countries, the Israeli financial and intelligence networks identified earlier with the narcotics traffic have become the principal supplier of weapons. In Central America and in Chile, Israel has replaced the U.S. as the leading arms merchant for United Brands' "banana republic" governments. (14)

That none of the evidence has brought action against Fisher raises some interesting questions about who controls Michigan politics. Fisher, as noted, is not only the powerbroker for the Republican Party, but along with the Socialist International affiliate, the United Auto Workers (UAW), is on top of the ghetto and in-plant crime machine and Maoist-environmentalist gangs that push drugs and terrorism. This was the conclusion drawn from an investigation involving federal law enforcement officials after a July 1978 attempted assassination of U.S. Labor Party Chairman Lyndon LaRouche in Detroit.

The "political cover" under which drugs and terror find their way into the floors of the auto plants is the Communist Labor Party of Michigan. This avowedly Maoist grouplet is an outgrowth of the nest of agents provocateurs who incited the late 1960s riots that left large sections of Detroit's working class districts in ruins. After the riots, Max Fisher and then-UAW President Leonard Woodcock (now U.S. Emissary to the People's Republic of China) stepped in to found the New Detroit Corporation as the "reforming" de facto ruling body over the region. New Detroit outflanked the constituency political machine in the city administration and police department, removing the chief impediment to the "liberal" proliferation of drugs, vote fraud, and fingertip-controlled political violence. The Communist Labor Party of Michigan provides the footsoldiers for all three.

According to records on file with Detroit City Clerk, the Communist Labor Party is financed by Max Fisher's Zionist Lobby. Among the campaign contributors to its 1976 and 1978 "electoral campaigns" are Avern Cohen, Fisher's personal attorney and his political lieutenant, and Richard Lobenthal, the head of the Michigan Anti-Defamation League of B'nai B'rith. The Communist Labor Party also gets money from a group called the Anti-Nazi Coalition, in which it joins the B'nai B'rith, and a Zionist umbrella group called the Jewish Community Council. The latter is financed by numerous Zionist philanthropies including the Jewish Welfare Fund, and by thousands of dollars in UAW membership dues. (15) The Anti-Nazi Coalition services a string of storefronts, bookstores, and other commercial enterprises that dish out dope to the auto plants and ghettos.

Dope, Inc. goes "legit"

The Jacobs family, Max Fisher, the Bronfman brothers: these figures stand behind organized crime, the drug traffic, and the systematic corruption of the political process in nearly every precinct of the United States. A precise estimate cannot be given of the percentage of the $200 billion of narcotics revenues diverted into political corruption and disruption. But the nearly $1 billion the Jacobs family put up to oust Congressman Sam Steiger, the Bronfmans' multimillion dollar expenditure for political and economic warfare against the U.S. Labor Party, and the $1 million "war chest" that Resorts International assembled to put across legalized casino gambling in New Jersey by legislative fiat, provide sufficient warning that the sums spent on illegitimate political activities exceed those spent under the Federal Election Law.

Corruption of politicians is more flagrant, more public, than streetcorner soliciting by prostitutes. Take the case of St. Louis Representative William Clay, now treasurer of the Black Caucus in Congress. Clay was selected for his job by Morris Shenker, the owner of the Dunes and Sands casinos in Las Vegas and the attorney for Anthony Giordano in the 1972 federal case against Emprise. (16) Clay's Black Caucus colleague Parren Mitchell of Baltimore, who has emerged as a leading spokesman for drug decriminalization, is another.

The roster of Britain's Green Gang thugs in the United States, stretching down to every populated center, is too extensive to bear further detail. The Jacobs, Bronfmans, Fishers have the same modus operandi: understand it, and nothing about organized crime elsewhere will be difficult to understand. Once this operation is cracked, drug traffic and corruption in cities across the country can be broken, assembly-line fashion.

Britain's agents of corruption are now beginning the final phase of opium warfare against the United States, as the dope-runners and money-launderers press for legalization of gambling and drug addiction. Under the transparent lie that legalization means the destruction of organized crime—rather than its enthronement in the state capital—gambling has opened up in New Jersey, under the aegis of Meyer Lansky's Resorts International and Intertel. Dope, Incorporated is preparing, in effect, to take its "rightful place" at the top of the Fortune 500. The American Green Gangs are preparing the final "Shanghai Massacre" of the American people.

6

The Philadelphia Story

A long trail of indictments, fines and press stories leads to one of the most dramatic case histories of Dope, Incorporated, and to Philadelphia, the City of Brotherly Love. Under the direction of old Philadelphia Quaker families, whose roots in the opium traffic go back to the first years after the American Revolution, and with the cooperation of one of Britain's oldest opium-running families, the Phiadelphia dope network can be charted from the wholesale production of illicit drugs down to the gutter.

Tucked away in the towering Sun Oil building in downtown Philadelphia are the small corporate headquarters of an obscure firm known as Paco Pharmaceuticals. Paco has only one line of business: it packages roughly two-thirds of the amphetamine tablets sold in the United States, under contract from the old Quaker pharmaceuticals companies in the Philadelphia area, including Smith, Kline and French, Rohm and Haas, and Pennwalt. It publishes no annual report or other information concerning its activities, except for one crucial fact: it is owned by Charterhouse Japhet, the present incarnation of the old Japhet family opium interests. Paco is also the source of most of the "leakage" of amphetamines into illicit channels in the United States. (1)

Federal agencies have tried to crack down on the Paco nexus for years, but have succeeded only in wrist-slapping its local collaborators. The record of citations of the amphetamine producers is lengthy. It includes:

*A $200,000 fine imposed in October 1977 by the Drug Enforcement Administration on Pennwalt Pharmaceuticals, after Pennwalt was convicted of 17 counts of questionable practices in the production of medicines containing cocaine.

*A 1972 accusation against Pennwalt by the predecessor organization of the Drug Enforcement Administration, the Bureau of Narcotics and Dangerous Drugs, involving Pennwalt's use of Mexican subsidiaries to provide illicit channels of drug traffic in the United States with amphetamines. The BNDD discovered major accounting discrepancies between the amounts of amphetamine Pennwalt claimed it shipped to Mexico and the amount of amphetamine that actually arrived in Mexico.

*A recent order by the Food and Drug Administration compelling Pennwalt to close a warehouse housing opium, ostensibly for manufacture into licit morphone under federal license, due to "leakage" of the opium.

*In November 1976, CBS's "Sixty Minutes" news feature program accused Pennwalt of marketing amphetamine-based diet pills, with the deliberate objective of creating a "hooked" market of dependent amphetamine users. Commentator Mike Wallace cited a 1970 Pennwalt internal memorandum to substantiate this allegation.

The hard evidence of illegal drug trafficking by the old-line drug firms in amphetamines, and strong suspicion of similar trafficking in cocaine and opium, is the starting point for a chain of control that ends with the retail drug trade, terrorism, and crime on the streets of Philadelphia, leading through individuals in high positions in the city's top banks and "charitable" foundations. A November 13, 1978, expose of the Philadelphia Foundation in the Philadelphia Daily News brought to public light the incriminating information that had, independently, been gathered by a U.S. Labor Party investigative team.

One James Boudine, a director of Pennwalt Pharmaceuticals, is the leading connection between the wholesale and street-level sides of Philadelphia's narcotics traffic. Until 1977 he was president of the First Pennsylvania Bank, in charge, among other things, of its support of the Philadelphia Foundation. Despite his departure from the president's suite, he remains on the board of directors and continues to direct the bank's "charitable" activities.

What First Pennsylvania's and other Philadelphia banks' funds went for became clear in the summer of 1978, when a member of a local leftist cult, known as "MOVE," killed a Philadelphia policeman with an automatic rifle. Heavily oriented towards drugs and terrorism, MOVE is part of a family of similar groups that functions under the umbrella of the drug-oriented Movement for a New Society, one of the ugliest concoctions ever to appear on the streets of the United States. The Movement for a New Society and its more explicitly violence-prone outlets, such as MOVE, receive most of their funding from the Philadelphia Foundation and two associated funding conduits for the Quaker pharmaceuticals firm and the related Philadelphia banks. (3) The other conduits are the William Penn Foundation, controlled by the five members of the Haas pharmaceuticals family who sit on the foundation's board, and by the Philadelphia Yearly Meeting of the Religious Society of Friends (Quakers).

The Yearly Meeting is no more a religious Quaker institution than Seagram Liquors or Emprise are religious Jewish institutions, but serves as a front for leading British-allied banking and chemical companies of Quaker origin. The funds of the Yearly Meeting are controlled by Robert Boudine—of the same Boudine family—in two secret accounts held at James Boudine's First Pennsylvania Bank, and shunted to undisclosed activities. Among known contributions is a $2,000 donation to the MOVE group, before the murder of the Philadelphia policeman attracted public attention. That contribution was only discovered after Philadelphia police moved in to clean out MOVE's headquarters, and discovered a receipt for $2,000 from the Yearly Meeting of the Friends in MOVE's quarters.

The Movement for a New Society is the biggest law enforcement problem in the city of Philadelphia. Not only has it produced killers like those from MOVE, but its combination of pro-drug, pro-homosexuality, pro-pederasty, pro-environmentalist ideology provides an environment that breeds terrorists. According to its own publications, the Movement for a New Society provided the cadre who led the "Clamshell Alliance" demonstration at New Hampshire's Seabrook nuclear reactor site in 1977. New Hampshire police conducted mass arrests of the demonstrators after receiving information that the demonstrators planned terrorist action.

This antisocial organization receives its funds from the pharmaceutical firms and their bankers, through the Philadelphia Foundation, the William Penn Foundation, and the Yearly Meeting's $25 million secret slush fund. The William Penn Foundation funds the Movement to the tune of $40,000 a year. The foundation was established by Rohm and Haas. The Philadelphia Foundation provided the Movement's funding conduit, Neighborhood Resources West, with $6,472 in recorded funds in 1977. That foundation was founded under the auspices of officials of the Fidelity Bank of Philadelphia Banking Corporation. On the Fidelity Bank's board is John C. Haas of Rohm and Haas; its chairman is Howard C. Petersen, who also sits on the board of Rohm and Haas.

How little the operations of the Philadelphia Society of Friends resemble the religious principles of Quakerism is evident from one fact: their Philadelphia offices house the headquarters of 1) the Venceremos Brigade, the mother organization for the terrorist Weathermen; 2) the Susan Saxe Defense Committee, which conducted legal efforts on behalf of Weatherwoman bank robber Susan Saxe; and 3) the Puerto Rican Socialist Party, which officially supports the terror-bombings of the so-called FALN. The "Religious Society of Friends" designation is a misnomer. The Philadelphia Quakers operate through the American Friends Service Committee, an organization that religious Quakers have despised since its founding.

The American Friends Service Committee's spawn, the Movement for a New Society, funded through Quaker accounts, is explicitly pro-violence. One of its publications, a 1976 pamphlet entitled "Moving Towards a New Society," says: "There are a number, perhaps a growing number, of completely sincere humanist revolutionaries who believe that violence is necessary, although regrettable, and that only through armed struggle can the powerful American Empire be toppled...it is important that we express solidarity with all who share our goals," e.g. Susan Saxe and the Venceremos Brigade.

The Quaker-funded Movement for a New Society also published a series of frankly pornographic manuals for their "revolutionaries," including such titles as "Gay Oppression and Liberation," "Liberating Sexuality," and "Take Heart—All Those in the Struggle." These publications advocate pederasty, "multiple sexual relationships," and public masturbation. One of these publications, "Gay Oppression and Liberation," reports that "non-gays in the Movement for a New Society have made great strides recently in reducing their complicity with hetero-sexism." This is not only a breeding ground for the dope traffic and terrorism, but an expression of the cult existence prescribed by the original masters of the narcotics traffic (see Part IV). And it is the bottom line for the William Penn and Philadelphia Foundations.

Charterhouse Japhet's presence in the middle of this mid-Atlantic zoo is the link back to the highest levels of Dope, Incorporated, the queer alliance of Friends-who-are-not-Friends and Jews-who-are-not-Jews. The leading Quaker banking families in Philadelphia allied themselves with the Baring bank and the dope traffic in the first years of the American Republic. The top British banks include old Quaker families, who have been represented in the United States for two centuries. Britain's largest bank, Barclays, founded in its present form in 1835, has been in Quaker hands for 200 years. Its representative David Barclay lived in Philadelphia during the 18th century, at the same time that the Baring Bank set up shop there. Barclays' board, as noted earlier, includes five members of the Most Venerable Order of St. John of Jerusalem, the chivalric dirty tricks arm of the British and related monarchies.

Charterhouse Japhet today is controlled by Barclays Bank, through an intermediary. Barclays controls Slough Properties, which functions as the de facto parent organization of Charterhouse Japhet. Through its hold on the Japhet family interests, Barclays controls Israeli finance, by way of Ernst Israel Japhet, the chairman of Israel's largest finance house, Bank Leumi. Bank Leumi has just applied to the American regulatory authorities for permission to open a branch office in Philadelphia.

Consequently, the joint appearance of "Quaker" and "Jewish" financiers at the center of the Philadelphia Story is no accident. Neither of them have anything more to do with the two religions than does the Movement for a New Society's perverted gibberish. Under the control of the British oligarchy and the Order of St. John, they are the instruments of a British subversion plan in Philadelphia that, in the words of the Movement for a New Society's badly printed tract, wants to "topple the American Empire."

Notes

1. THE BRONFMAN GANG

1. Canadian Jewish Congress Report, 1967-68, in commemoration of Samuel Bronfman.
2. Ibid.
3. Peter C. Newman, Bronfman Dynasty, The Rothschilds of the New World (Toronto: McClelland and Stewart Ltd., 1978), pp. 66-73.
4. Newman, Bronfman Dynasty, p. 64.
5. Hank Messick, Lansky (New York: Berkley Medallion Books, 1971), pp. 230-31.
6. James H. Gray, Booze (Toronto: Macmillan Co. of Canada, Alger Press, 1972).
7. Newman, Bronfman Dynasty, p. 127.
8. Russell Sage Foundation, 1907-1946 (New York: Russell Sage Foundation, 1947), Volume 1.. Loanshark operation surveys were also conducted in Illinois and Kentucky.
9. Hank Messick, Secret File (New York: G.P. Putnam's Sons, 1969), pp. 277-78.
10. Torrio's rise to power has been chronicled in hundreds of books and press accounts dealing with the history of organized crime and with the "Capone" Chicago organization in particular. See Don Maclean, Pictorial History of the Mafia (New York: Pyramid Books, 1974); Ralph Salerno and John S. Tompkins, The Crime Confederation (New York: Doubleday & Company, Inc., 1969); Martin A. Gosch and Richard Hammer, The Last Testament of Lucky Luciano (New York: Dell Publishing Co., Inc., 1974). Additional insight was provided through numerous interviews with law enforcement officials at the U.S. Customs Bureau and Drug Enforcement Administration.
11. Maclean, Pictorial History of the Mafia, p. 150; see also Donald R. Cressey, Theft of the Nation: The Structure and Operations of Organized Crime in America (New York: Harper and Row, 1969), pp. 29-53.
12. Maclean, Pictorial History of the Mafia, p. 461. Figures vary for the death toll reached during the war period; however, on the night that New York boss Salvatore Maranzano — September 11, 1931 — was assassinated and the immediate 48-hour period following, it is estimated that 40 gang leaders were killed in the overall purge. See also: Donald R. Cressey, Theft of the Nation, pp. 29-53. and Peter Maas, The Valachi Papers (New York: Bantam Books, 1968).
13. Messick, Secret File, pp. 96-97. Corroboration of the analysis presented here was provided through numerous and exhaustive

interviews with law enforcement officials at the DEA and U.S. Customs Bureau.

14. Messick, Lansky, pp. 90, 97-98. Additional corroboration was provided by DEA officials in interviews in December 1977.

15. Report from Narcotics Division Agent Ralph Oyler to Narcotics Division Chief Levi Nutt, March 30, 1926 (DEA Library, Washington, D.C.).

16. Jonathan Marshall, "Opium and Politics of Gangsterism in Nationalist China—1927-45," Bulletin of Concerned Asian Scholars 3 (1976): 19-48.

17. Ibid.

18. Henry Aubin, Who Owns Montreal.

19. Ibid.

20. Newman, Bronfman Dynasty, pp. 55-61.

21. Starkman stores' connections to Koffler were widely publicized at the time in the Toronto Globe and Mail.

22. See also Newman, Bronfman Dynasty, pp. 167-169.

23. The Washington Post, November 6,1978, p. 2.

24. Newman, Bronfman Dynasty, p. 233.

25. Ibid., p. 231.

26. Ibid., p. 225.

27. Ibid., p. 232.

28. Ibid., p. 227.

29. Ibid., p. 227.

2. THE KENNEDYS: ORGANIZED CRIME IN GOVERNMENT

1. Financial Campaign Report filed by the Kennedy for Re-Election Committee, 1976, with the Clerk of the Senate.
2. Pictorial History of Mafia; see also Clark R. Mollenhoff, Strike Force: Organized Crime and the Government (Englewood Cliffs, N.J.: Prentice-Hall, Inc., 1972).
3. Senate Committee Hearings on Organized Crime and Narcotics, 1963.
4. Financial Campaign Report filed by the Kennedy for Re-Election Committee, 1976.
5. David E. Koskoff, Joseph P. Kennedy: A Life and Times (Englewood Cliffs, N.J.: Prentice-Hall, Inc., 1974), p. 9. Additional insight and information on Kennedy was provided through interviews with law enforcement officials.
6. Koskoff, Joseph P. Kennedy, p. 19.
7. Ibid., pp. 28,30.
8. Ibid., p. 28; see also William Stevenson, A Man Called Intrepid (New York: Ballantine Books, 1976), p. 325.
9. Interview with DEA officials, December 1977; see also Messick, Secret File, p. 197 and Koskoff, Joseph P. Kennedy, p. 53.

10. Koskoff, Joseph P. Kennedy, p. 53.
11. Ibid., p. 115.
12. Ibid., pp. 166,394-95.
13. Ibid., p. 378.
14. Sir John Wheeler-Bennett, Special Relationships: America in Peace and War (New York: St. Martin, 1976), pp. 34-35; see also Koskoff, Joseph P. Kennedy, pp. 403-4.
15. Wheeler-Bennett, Special Relationships, pp. 34-35.
16. Victor Navasky, Kennedy Justice (New York: Atheneum, 1970), p. 404.
17. Ibid.
18. Messick, Lansky, pp. 241-42. This viewpoint was also shared by numerous law enforcement officials who were interviewed in the course of researching the history of organized crime.
19. Who's Who in Canada.
20. Harold Macmillan, At the End of the Day 1961-63 (London: MacMillan London, Ltd., 1973), 6:359-60. According to Macmillan: "The President did not want to give us Polaris on political grounds, for fear of upsetting all the European nations. . . . The arrangement finally agreed was that we should be supplied with the Polaris missile. . . . Our nuclear fleet was to be 'assigned' to NATO, except in cases 'where Her Majesty's government may decide that superior national interests are at stake.'. . . Three days' hard negotiating — nearly four days in reality. The Americans pushed us very hard. . . the discussions were protracted and fiercely contested. . . ."
21. Ibid.
22. Koskoff, Joseph P. Kennedy, p. 439.

3. BRITAIN'S ASSASSINATION BUREAU: PERMINDEX

1. The former Shaw associate was Gordon Novel. Novel, an associate of Clay Shaw and Carlos Marcello, was himself under investigation by Jim Garrison for possible involvement in the Kennedy assassination conspiracy. An expert in electronic devices (including highly sophisticated surveillance equipment), Novel was employed by the Marcello-Permindex group in New Orleans and apparently also by the CIA through its Miami-based Double-Chek commercial front. Novel was interviewed by the authors on several occasions during spring-summer 1977. In October or November 1977, Novel was arrested in an Atlanta, Ga. suburb on charges of violation of bail conditions. The conditions were set by a New Orleans Parish Judge after a 1976 arrest on charges of conspiring to burn down a commercial building in that city. Novel is presently in New Orleans Parish jail awaiting trial on the bomb-arson plot charges.
2. A series of articles appearing in Paesa Sera on March 4, 12, 14, 1967; see also Les Echos and Le Figaro during spring 1962 for numerous news

and editorial references to Permindex's role in the assassination attempts against President de Gaulle. .

3. Anonymous, The Permindex Papers, 1970, p. 58. This unpublished manuscript was reviewed by the authors on condition that the title of the document and the biographical material provided on its author would be kept confidential. The Permindex Papers is not the actual title of the manuscript. The author or authors used documents prepared by the Justice Department and Treasury Department of the United States government. Additionally, they cited public sources including magazine articles, newspaper articles, and books. In cases where the original sources were cross-checked, the original sources will be cited directly.

4. Ibid., pp. 141-49.

5. Louis Wiznitzer, "Will Garrison's Inquiry into Kennedy Assassination Lead to Montreal?" Le Devoir, March 16, 1967, Montreal; also Canadian Dimension, September-October, 1967 (reprint).

6. Giuseppe Pantaleone, "An Interview," Panorama, April, 1970.

7. Anon., Permindex Papers, p. 164.

8. From an unpublished interview with an anonymous Rome-based foreign correspondent conducted in Rome, August 15-16,1978.

9. Wiznitzer, "Will Garrison's Inquiry."

10. Ibid.

11. Ibid.

12. In Italy, for example, the head of the Order of St. John Ambulance Squad was directly implicated in the assassination of former Italian President Aldo Moro. Baron Johann von Schwartzenberg was under intensive investigation by Italian authorities as the suspected mastermind of the Moro murder. Schwartzenberg was exempt from any prosecution, search, or interrogation due to his diplomatic status as an emissary of the Sovereign Order of St. John, Order of Malta, which is recognized by many governments, including the Italian government, as a sovereign state. Schwartzenberg died within a month of Moro's dea'th in an automobile accident.

13. Anon., Permindex Papers, p. 231.

14. Ibid., pp. 231-32.

15. Ibid., p. 161.

16. Allan J. Weberman, Coup d'Etat in America (New York: Joseph Okpaku, 1975) pp. 39-40.

17. Anon., Permindex Papers, p. 73. The name of the courier was Maurice Gatlin. According to testimony delivered by Jerry Milton Brooks before the New Orleans Grand Jury investigating the assassination of Kennedy, Gatlin was a "transporter" for both the CIA and Division Five of the FBI.

18. Virtually all the book-length material on Sir William Stephenson and the British Security Coordination-Special Operations Executive is "official cover story" commissioned by the SOE to provide limited exposure to aspects of its operations while withholding the most illegal

and anti-American activities. Two books that fit this "official cover story" description, but which provide numerous references to Stephenson's methods of operation, including his penetration into every level of the U.S. military command with his SOE agents, are: H. Montgomery Hyde, Room 3603 (New York: Ballantine Books, 1962) and William Stevenson, A Man Called Intrepid (New York: Ballantine Books, 1976).

19. Richard Deacon, A History of the British Secret Service (New York: Taplinger Publishing Company, 1970), p. 296.

20. Anon., Perm index Papers, p. 265.

21. Ibid., p. 196.

22. Rodney Campbell, The Luciano Project (New York: McGraw-Hill Book Company, 1977); see also Julian Semyonov, "Capriccio Siciliano," Ogonyok (Moscow), October-November, 1978.

23. Julian Semyonov, "Capriccio Siciliano," reprinted in English translation from Ogonyok in Executive Intelligence Review 43 (1978): 38.

24. As reported in the Permindex Papers, pp. 46-51, Permindex included among its investors: Morris Dalitz, the organized crime czar of Cleveland and Las Vegas and a personal associate of Lansky dating back to Prohibition; Joseph Bonanno, the New York City and Phoenix mobster who took control over the New York City-based Lionel Corporation and used it as a business front for a variety of criminal activities that included investment in Permindex; Carlos Prio Socarras, the President of Cuba from 1948-52 who subsequently became the chief of Meyer Lansky's gambling racket in Havana until the Castro takeover.

25. Messick, Lansky, p. 241.

26. Canadian Who's Who (Toronto: TransCanada Press) Vols. 7, 8, 9, 10; and (Toronto: Who's Who Canada Publishers) Vols. 11,12,13.

27. The most comprehensive documentation of the bankrupting of BCI is contained in an unpublished report by Richard Freeman, "The Case of Investors Overseas Services: Dirty Money International," August 12, 1978; see also Robert Hutchinson, Vesco (New York: Praeger Publishers, 1974).

28. Messick, Lansky, p. 248.

29. Anon., Permindex Papers, p. 105; and Messick, Lansky, p. 248.

30. George Nichols, "Exclusive: The Mossad — Who Is Behind This Secret, Global Gang of Political Terrorists Who Intimidate Presidents?" The Spotlight 39 (1978): 13-16.

31. The Economics Department of the University of Vienna, known as the Vienna School, was founded as a joint project of the British Fabian Society, the Rothschilds, and the Austrian royal Hapsburg family. In 1868, the British Foreign Office established the Royal Colonial Institute at the initiative of the Sassoon family, among others. Its principal sources of funding were the Hongkong and Shanghai Corp. and Barclays Bank. The head of the institute, Alfred Marshall, was also the chief economist for Cecil Rhodes. According to the Official History of the Fabian Society,

from 1884-92, Marshall, in collaboration with Fabian Executive members Beatrice and Sidney Webb, founded three institutes of economics. These three institutions to this day produce the membership for the Order of St. John's Mont Pelerin Society.

The Vienna School was established in 1884 on the strength of London School of Economics publications building the credibility of Karl von Menger, head of the University of Vienna Economics Department and the personal economic advisor to the Hapsburg court. Menger, an impoverished nobleman working as a journalist, had been turned into the personal economic tutor of Hapsburg Crown Prince Rudolph in 1876 by Baron Albert Rothschild, head of the family's Vienna House. Each of Menger's disciples was a Rothschild recruit from the Hapsburg nobility: Eugen Bohm von Bawerk was a member of the House of Lords and three times Austrian finance minister from 1896-1904; Friedrich von Weiser, also a Lord, was the Minister of Commerce.

In addition to Tibor Rosenbaum, some of the leading products of the Vienna School are Friedrich von Hayek, Herbert von Mises, and Nikolai Bukharin.

32. Who's Who in Great Britain; see also 1977 Annual Report of the Bank Leumi.

33. The U.S. government has recently gone on record as believing that David Graiver is indeed still alive. Graiver achieved notoriety when his American Bank and Trust Company in New York City went bankrupt in 1976, amid charges that Graiver had siphoned off some $50 million from the bank and then disappeared. A federal indictment was sought and gotten. When Graiver was reported to have been killed in a plane crash, those charges were dropped. In June 1978, the U.S. Attorney for the South District of New York petitioned for the charges to be reinstated. The petition was granted the same month. See The New York Times and the Wall Street Journal of June 3-30,1978.

Rosenbaum was a board member of the American Bank and Trust, which acted as the conduit for various illegal payments — including the $5 million in bribes that Graiver paid to Argentine officials during 1975 to "persuade" them to purchase Canada's Candu nuclear reactor system rather than the originally preferred Westinghouse nuclear reactor. Graiver received these funds from the Canadian government's official broker in that matter, Israeli broker and foreign intelligence operative Shaul Eisenberg.

Graiver, Eisenberg, Rosenbaum, American Bank and Trust chairman Abe Feinberg, were all proteges of Nahum Goldmann, the man who brought most of them out of Europe through his 1938 deal with Heinrich Himmler to select out Jews from Nazi Germany and occupied Austria. Goldmann, the long-time head of the World Jewish Congreess, was recently replaced by Chicago-based partner of Salomon Brothers, Phillip Klutznik; he is the man who sold the American Bank Trust to Graiver — he ran it on behalf of the Israeli government — in 1975.

34. Who's Who in Canada; see also Wiznitzer, "Will Garrison's Inquiry."

35. Col. Sir Edwin King and Sir Harry Luke, The Knights of St. John in the British Realm — Being the Official History of the Most Venerable Order of the Hospital of St. John of Jerusalem (London: Hills & Lacy, 1924).

36. See New York Times Index citation on "Banque de Credit Internationale" and "Tibor Rosenbaum," particularly covering the period of September through December, 1974, for numerous references to the exposure of Bank Hapoalim and related institutions' involvement in money laundering; see also Katherine Burdman, "The British Crown's Secret Financial Capability: Israeli Banking," Executive Intelligence Review 44 (IMS).

37. Criton Zoakos, et al., "The Black International Terrorist Assassination Plot to Kill Lyndon H. LaRouche, Jr.," Campaigner Special Report (New York: Campaigner Publications, 1977), p. 29.

38. Anon., Permindex Papers, p. 87.

39. Ladislas Farago, Aftermath: Martin Bormann and the Fourth Reich (New York: Simon & Schuster, 1974); see also William Stevenson, The Bormann Brotherhood (New York: Bantam Books, Inc., 1973).

40. Two Rome interviews conducted from August 10-16,1978, with prominent Italian journalists and one Austrian journalist who request to remain anonymous. The interviews were conducted by members of the Rome staff of the New Solidarity Press Service at the request of the authors.

41. Max Gallo, Mussolini's Italy: Twenty Years of the Fascist Era (New York: Macmillan Company, 1973).

42. Anon., Permindex Papers, p. 97.

43. Ibid., p. 178.

44. Ibid., p. 213.

45. Ibid., p. 212.

46. Edward J. Epstein, Agency of Fear — Opiates and Political Power in America (New York: G.P. Putnam's Sons, 1977).

4. PERMINDEX UNVEILED: RESORTS INTERNATIONAL

1. Hutchinson, Vesco.

2. Messick, Lansky, pp. 221-51. Lansky had had his eye on the Bahamas since the 1940s, but his attention was then fixed on his Cuban and Las Vegas casino empires. (Castro's refusal to play ball with the Hofjuden mob allegedly inspired Lansky to issue a $1 million "contract" on Castro's life.) With the 1959 fall of the Batista government the Bahama option became an imperative. Thus, it was no accident that the British gave the go-ahead for legalized gambling not only for their Caribbean holdings but in Britain as well. Messick reports (p. 228): "All that was needed in 1960 was to find a semirespectable front from which he (Lansky — ed.) could operate."

3. Ibid., p. 228.

4. Ibid., p. 229.
5. Ibid., pp. 230-32; see also Jim Hougan, "A Surfeit of Spies," Harpers, December 1974, p. 58; Frank J. Prial, "Concern Fights Crime in Business," New York Times, July 26,1970, Business Section, p. 1, p. 11.
6. Messick, Lansky, pp. 230-231, 235.
7. Ibid., pp. 232-233.
8. Ibid., p. 232; see also Hougan, "Surfeit of Spies," pp. 58,63.
9. Hougan, "Surfeit of Spies," pp. 58,63.
10. Hutchinson, Vesco; see also James Hougan, Spooks: The Haunting of America — The Private Use of Secret Agents (New York: William Morrow and Co., 1978), pp. 390-392.
11. Hougan, "Surfeit of Spies," p. 54.
12. Ibid., pp. 66-67; see also Hutchinson, Vesco.
13. Hougan, "Surfeit of Spies,"pp. 54, 56: see also Prial, "Concern Fights Crime," p. 11.
14. Hougan, "Surfeit of Spies," p. 66: Hougan's information is corroborated by the authors' interviews with law enforcement officials.

5. THE JACOBS FAMILY'S EMPRISE: SPORTS AND CRIME

1. Testimony of labor racketeer, James Plumeri (Jimmy Doyle) before the McClellan Subcommittee on Criminal Laws and Procedures; see also Congressman Sam Steiger's insertion into the Congressional Record of the 91st Congress, "Emprise: A Lesson in Corporate Calumny."
2. Testimony of Plumeri before the McClellan Subcommittee on Criminal Laws and Procedures.
3. From their positions in Cleveland and Buffalo, the Jacobs family was a Bronfman link into the United States in alliance with the Reinfeld Syndicate and the Big Seven Combine (see Section 1).
4. "Emprise: A Lesson in Corporate Calumny," 91st Congressional Record, p. 5888; "Emprise: A Little More of the Iceberg Exposed," 91st Congressional Record, p. 6830.
5. Many of the Justice Department officials who worked with Robert Kennedy in the "Get Hoffa" campaign turned up playing supporting roles in forcing Richard Nixon out of office, particularly when Nixon demonstrated a commitment to go after organized crime. This includes most especially Horace S. Webb.
6. Jeremy Jacobs admitted to the activities directed against Steiger under questioning during 1972 hearings of the House Select Committee on Crime.
7. U.S. Labor Party Legal Division, "Evidence to Overturn the Fraudulent Election of James Earl Carter," Campaigner Special Report (New York: Campaigner Publications, November 26, 1976); U.S. Labor Party Legal Division, "Conclusive Evidence of Carter Vote Theft Goes Before Federal Court in Ohio and New York," Campaigner Special Report (New

York: Campaigner Publications, December 9, 1976). The Committee for Fair Elections, a nonpartisan citizens group representing participation from the U.S. Labor Party, the Democratic, Republican, and American Independent parties, initiated official investigations and selective court actions in Pennsylvania, Wisconsin, New York, and Ohio as the result of accumulated evidence of overwhelming fraud in the general elections of November, 1976. In addition to extensive regional press coverage of the specific legal actions, the investigations and legal actions received national coverage on CBS television news (The Seven O'Clock Report) by Walter Cronkite and in the Washington Star by Jack Germond.

During those same 1976 general elections, the following additional situations suggested similar evidence of election tampering on a large scale:

* Rep. Richard Torny was convicted of vote fraud in the Louisiana Democratic primary following a federal grand jury investigation. Torny was removed from the congressional seat that he won in the subsequent November general election.

* Ron Paul, a former U.S. congressman, contested the general elections in Austin, Texas, in which he was narrowly defeated by Democratic Party candidate Robert Gamage. Paul proved sizable fraud before the courts: however, the judge ruled that sufficient magnitude of fraud to turn the elections had not been shown and denied Paul's motion to be placed in Congress.

* Two witnesses to massive fraud by Congressman William Clay (D-Mo.) in the November elections in St. Louis subsequently died under violent and mysterious circumstances. Clay is linked to the Jacobs family interests (see below in text).

8. "Critic Changes Tune," Courier Express (Buffalo, N.Y.), January 27, 1977.

9. According to a July 1978 edition of the Toronto Globe-Mail, Mark Phillips stayed at the residence of Koffler when he went to Canada.

10. Courier Express, December 28,1970.-

11. According to the June 15, 1972, Buffalo Evening News, Max Jacobs was a heavy contributor to Scoop Jackson.

12.' The information presented here on the HongShang takeover attempt is on the public record and was reported in the Courier Express.

13. Courier Express, February 24,1976.

14. The top Israeli purveyor of weapons to the Central American dictatorships is one Shaul Eisenberg, who operates behind a myriad of trading company fronts, of which the best known is "United Development, Inc." with headquarters in Panama. Eisenberg is the world's largest supplier of assassination weapons, as well as the "godfather" of the Israel Aircraft Company, the manufacturer of Israel's Kfir fighter plane. According to the Washington Post of September 11, 1978, he is also one of the most senior operatives of the Israeli secret intelligence, the Mossad. With specializations in the Far East and Latin America, Eisenberg runs

the Zurich Mossad station, under the day-to-day control of the Zurich branch of Bank Leumi and hte personal direction of a Swiss-based member of the Oppenheimer family. Apart from the arming of such entities as the Somoza dictatorship of Nicaragua, the capabilities of the Eisenberg operation include Israel's main illicit connections to the Far East, where Eisenberg spent World War II, and a significant portion of wholesale drug transshipments across the Mediterranean route. Eisenberg build (and paid for in cash) a building dubbed "Adia House" in Tel Aviv, housing most of the Asian countries' trade representatives in Israel. He also has a billion-dollar credit line in Hong Kong at the Standard Chartered Bank.

15. Zoakos, Assassination Plot, pp. 9-11. The information was originally developed in a July 15, 1978 telephone interview with Paul Bowden, the head of the Detroit Anti-Nazi Coalition and himself a retired UAW worker.

16. Jeffrey Steinberg, "Jacobs Family and Related Organized Crime Activities in the St. Louis, Mo. Area," an unpublished manuscript (New York), October 1978.

6. THE PHILADELPHIA STORY

1. Phone interview with official of Paco Pharmaceuticals. For Ernst Japhet control over Paco, see Charterhouse Japhet Annual Report, 1977.

2. Proceedings and Yearbook, Philadelphia Yearly Meeting of the Religious Society of Friends, 1978, cites "friendly presence group" activities to conduct nonviolent demonstrations in support of human rights for MOVE (p. 11-12) and operations request of $2000 per month for work in conjunction with vigil at MOVE headquarters (p. 16). According to the Philadelphia Inquirer, a diary was found at MOVE headquarters after the September 1978 shootout citing support, including financial support, from the American Friends Service Committee.

3. William Penn Foundation Annual Report for 1977 cites $120,000 to Neighborhood Resources West (p. 39). The wife of the director for the Movement for a New Society is on the board of directors of the NRW. NRW funds Movement houses in West Philadelphia for "community development," according to interviews with "members of both the NRS and the Movement for a New Society. The Annual Report of the Philadelphia Foundation for the year ending April 1977 and also for 1976 cites over $20,000 transferred to a "clearinghouse" which in turn funds community projects (p. 14); see also Proceedings and Yearbook, Philadelphia Yearly Meeting, pp. 183-84.

PART IV

Creating the Market: The British Origins of the Counterculture

The acts or gestures that accompany the incantations constitute the rite (of Isis). In these dances, the beating of drums and the rhythm of music and repetitive movements were helped by hallucinatory substances like hashish or mescal; these were consumed as adjuvants to create the trance and the hallucinations that were taken to be the visitation of the god. The drugs were sacred, and their knowledge was limited to the initiated; their preparation and their gathering were surrounded with . . . secrecy. . , . In some cases, like the harvesting of the mandrake, they remained secret until the Middle Ages.

Possibly because they gave the illusion of satisfied desires, and allowed the innermost feelings to escape, these rites acquired during their execution a frenzied character that is conspicuous in certain spells: "Retreat! Re is piercing thy head, slashing thy face, dividing they head, crushing it in his hands; thy bones are shattered, thy limbs are cut to pieces."

The House of Life: Magic and
Medical Science in Ancient Egypt,
by Paul Ghalioungui (1)

If this description of pagan cult ceremonies dating back to the Egyptian Isis priesthood of the third millenium B.C. reads like a journalistic account of a "hippy be-in" circa 1969 A.D., it should. The counterculture that was foisted on the 1960s adolescent population is not merely analogous to the ancient Cult of Isis. It is a literal resurrection of the Isis cult — down to the popularization of the Isis cross as the counterculture's most frequently used symbol.

As we shall show here, the drug-rock counterculture was the result of Britain's 30-year Opium War against the United States, which included not only chemical and psychological warfare but the hideous military project called the Vietnam War.

The British fostered the creation of the bestial rock and drug cult for the same reason that their colonial policy enforced backwardness throughout the empire and for the same reason that the pharaohs of ancient Egypt and the Ptolemaic priests of the first century A.D. Egypt fostered the practice. As long as a population is organized around superstition, magic, hallucinogenic drugs, and animal-like pursuit of immediate sensory gratification ("if it feels good, do it"), it will remain incapable of acting on behalf of its own interests. It was for this reason that the oligarchies of ancient Egypt organized themselves into priesthoods and created dozens of apparently contending pagan cults, all characterized by the same bestialist outlook.

True religion, as opposed to the worship of magically endowed cult-gods, addresses man's capacity for reason, his "Godliness." Unlike the lower beasts, the human species is uniquely capable of creative thought — the ability to break out of the bounds of sense-certainty, develop new scientific knowledge, and socially apply that knowledge through technological innovations that uplift the material and cultural condition of man. Historically such true religion has been associated with the development of urban centers where science, culture, and commerce could flourish. Its sworn enemy has been the oligarchy and its priesthoods and cults which on countless occasions have mobilized to sack the cities, murder the city-builders, and bring on the "dark ages" of plague and ignorance.

The gentlemen at the Royal Institute of International Affairs responsible for charting Britain's global drug trafficking recognized that no mass-scale drug epidemic could be produced in the United States until the American people's fundamental commitment to scientific and technological progress had first been significantly undermined. The drug-rock counterculture was no mere "sociological phenomenon."

In his City of God, the great humanist St. Augustine described the degeneration into cultism that brought on the destruction of Rome, in terms that have direct bearing on the post-1963 degeneration of the United States:

> The stage plays, those exhibitions of depravity and unbounded license, were not introduced in Rome by men's vices, but by the command of your gods. Far more justifiably might you have paid divine honors to your Scipio than worship gods such as those, for they were not more virtuous than their high priest.
>
> Are your minds bereft of reason? You are not merely mistaken; this is madness. Here are people in the east bewailing Rome's humiliation, and great states in remote regions of the earth holding public mourning and lamentation — and you Romans are searching for theaters, pouring into them, filling them, behaving more irresponsibly than ever before. It is this spiritual disease, degeneration, decline into immorality and indecency that Scipio feared when he opposed the erection of theaters. He saw how easily ease and plenty would soften and ruin you. He did not wish you to be free from fear.
>
> He did not think that the republic could be happy while walls were standing, yet morals were collapsing. But, you were more attached to the seductions of foul spirits than to the wisdom of men with foresight. That is why you take no blame for the evil you do, but blame Christianity for the evil you suffer. Depraved by prosperity, and unchastened by adversity, you desire, in your security, not the peace of the State, but liberty for license. (2)

The high priesthood

The "case officer" for Britain's Opium War was Aldous Huxley, the grandson of Thomas H. Huxley, a founder of the Rhodes Round Table group and a lifelong collaborator of Arnold Toynbee. Toynbee himself sat on the RIIA council for nearly 50 years, headed the Research Division of British intelligence throughout World War II, and served as wartime briefing officer to Prime Minister Winston Churchill.

Toynbee's "theory" of history, expounded in his 20-volume history of Western civilization, was that its determining feature has always been the rise and decline of grand imperial dynasties. At the very point that these dynasties — the "thousand year Reich" of the Egyptian pharaohs, the Roman Empire, and the British Empire — succeed in imposing their rule over the entire face of the earth, they tend to decline. Toynbee argued that this decline could be abated if the ruling oligarchy (like that of the British Round Table) would devote itself to the recruitment and training of an ever-expanding priesthood devoted to the principles of imperial rule. (3)

Trained at Toynbee's Oxford, Aldous Huxley was one of the initiates in the "Children of the Sun," a dionysian cult comprised of the children of Britain's Round Table elite. (4) Among the other initiates were T.S. Eliot, W. H. Auden, Sir Oswald Moseley, and D. H. Lawrence, Huxley's homosexual lover. It was Huxley, furthermore, who would launch the legal battle in the 1950s to have Lawrence's pornographic novel Lady Chatterley's Lover allowed into the United States on the ground that it was a misunderstood "work of art." (5)

Aldous Huxley, along with his brother Julian, was tutored at Oxford by H. G. Wells, the head of British foreign intelligence during World War I. Wells's writings (Time Machine, etc.), along with those of his proteges Aldous Huxley (Brave New World) and George Orwell (1984, Animal Farm), were written as "mass appeal" organizing documents on behalf of Britain's "enlightened" world order. Only in the United States are these "science fiction classics" taught in grade school as attacks against fascism. (A contemporary British intelligence operative-turned-author, Anthony Burgess, wrote Clockwork Orange in the Wells-Orwell-Huxley tradition as a pornographic celebration of the drug-rock counterculture.)

Under Wells's tutelage Huxley was first introduced to Aleister Crowley (see Part II, Section 9). Crowley was a product of the cultist circle that developed in Britain from the 1860s under the guiding influence of Edward Bulwer-Lytton — who, it will be recalled, was the colonial minister under Lord Palmerston during the Second Opium War. In 1886, Crowley, William Butler Yeats, and several other Bulwer-Lytton proteges formed the Isis-Urania Temple of Hermetic Students of the Golden Dawn. This Isis Cult was organized around the 1877 manuscript Isis Unveiled by Madame Helena Blavatsky, in which the Russian occultist called for the British aristocracy to organize itself into an Isis Priesthood. (6)

Crowley in turn initiated Aldous Huxley into the Isis-Golden Dawn Temple and introduced him to psychedelic drugs in 1929. (7)

In 1937, Huxley moved to the United States, where he remained throughout the period of World War II. Through a Los Angeles contact, Jacob Zeitlin, Huxley and pederast Christopher Isherwood were employed as script writers for MGM, Warner Brothers, and Walt Disney studios. As we have seen, Hollywood was already dominated by organized crime elements bankrolled and controlled through London. Joseph Kennedy was the front man for a British consortium that created RKO studios, and

"Bugs" Siegel, the West Coast boss of the Lansky syndicate, was heavily involved in Warner Brothers and MGM. Huxley was instrumental in founding a nest of Isis cults in southern California and in a San Francisco suburb called Ojai — which consisted exclusively of several hundred deranged worshippers of Isis and other cult gods. (8) Isherwood, during the California period, translated and propagated a number of ancient Zen Buddhist documents, inspiring Zen-mystical cults along the way. (9)

In effect, Huxley and Isherwood (joined soon afterwards by Thomas Mann and his daughter Elisabeth Mann Borghese) laid the foundation during the late 1930s and the 1940s for the later LSD culture by recruiting a core of "initiates" into the Tsis cults that Huxley's mentors Bulwer-Lytton, Blavatsky, and Crowley, had constituted while stationed in India.

LSD: "visitation from the gods"

The next phase in the war involved the introduction of LSD for which Aldous Huxley was the designated Crown agent.

Lycergic acid diethylamide, or LSD, was developed in 1943 by Albert Hoffman, a chemist at Sandoz A.G. — a Swiss pharmaceutical house owned by S. G. Warburg. While precise documentation is unavailable as to the auspices under which the LSD research was commissioned, it can be safely assumed that British intelligence and its subsidiary U.S. Office of Strategic Services were directly involved. Allen Dulles, the director of the U.S. Central Intelligence Agency in 1952 when that agency began its covert LSD experiment, MK-ULTRA, was the OSS station chief in Berne, Switzerland throughout the early Sandoz research. One of his OSS assistants was James Warburg, of the same Warburg family, who was instrumental in the 1963 founding of the Institute for Policy Studies, and worked with both Huxley and Robert Hutchins. (10)

In 1952, Aldous Huxley returned to the United States from Britain, accompanied by Dr. Humphrey Osmond, the Huxleys' private physician. Osmond had been part of a discussion group Huxley had organized at the National Hospital, Queens Square, London. Along with another seminar participant, J. R. Smythies, Osmond wrote Schizophrenia: A New Approach, in which he asserted that mescaline — a derivative of peyote mushrooms used in ancient Egyptian and Indian pagan rites — produced a psychotic state identical in all clinical respects to schizophrenia. On this basis, Osmond and Smythies advocated experimentation with hallucinogenic drugs as a means of developing a "cure" for mental disorders.

Osmond was brought in by Allen Dulles to play a prominent role in MK-ULTRA. At the same time, Osmond, Huxley, and the

University of Chicago's Robert Hutchins held a series of secret planning sessions in 1952-53 for a second, private LSD-mescaline project under the Ford Foundation funding. (11) Hutchins, it will be recalled, was the program director of the Ford Foundation during this period. His LSD proposal incited such rage in Henry Ford II that Hutchins was fired from the foundation the following year.

It was also in 1953 that Osmond gave Huxley a supply of mescaline for his personal consumption. The next year, Huxley wrote The Doors of Perception, the first public manifesto of the psychedelic drug cult, which claimed that hallucinogenic drugs "expand consciousness."

Although, through the sane intervention of Henry Ford, the Ford Foundation rejected the Hutchins-Huxley proposal for private foundation sponsorship of LSD, it appears that the project was not dropped. Beginning in 1962, the RAND Corporation of Santa Monica California began a four-year experiment in LSD, peyote, and marijuana. The RAND Corporation was established simultaneously with the reorganization of the Ford Foundation during 1949-50. RAND was an outgrowth of the wartime Strategic Bombing Survey, a "cost analysis" study of the psychological effects of random bombings of German population centers. It is well known that RAND has been responsible for conduiting such patently insane policies as "limited thermonuclear war" and the "insanity doctrine" into the U.S. Pentagon — most notably through RAND's James Schlesinger.

According to the 1962 RAND Abstract, W. H. McGlothlin conducted a preparatory study on "The Longlasting Effects of LSD on Certain Attitudes in Normals: An Experimental Proposal." The following year, McGlothlin conducteda year-long experiment on 30 human guinea pigs, called "Short-Term Effects of LSD on Anxiety, Attitudes and Performance." The study incredibly concluded that LSD improved emotional attitudes and resolved anxiety problems. (12)

HUXLEY AT WORK

Huxley expanded his own LSD-mescaline project in California by recruiting several individuals who had been initially drawn into the cult circles he helped establish during his 1937-45 stay. The two most prominent individuals were Alan Watts and Dr. Gregory Bateson (the former husband of Dame Margaret Mead). Mead).

Watts became a self-styled "guru" of a nationwide Zen Buddhist cult built around a series of his well-publicized books. Bateson, an anthropologist with the OSS, became the director of a hallucinogenic drug experimental clinic at the Palo Alto Veterans Administration Hospital. Under Bateson's auspices, the initiating "cadre" of the LSD cult — the hippies — were programmed. (13)

Watts at the same time founded the Pacifica Foundation, which sponsored two radio stations — WKBW in San Francisco and WBAI-FM in New York City. The Pacifica stations were among the first to push the "Liverpool Sound" — the British-imported hard rock twanging of the Rolling Stones, the Beatles, and the Animals. They would later pioneer "acid rock" and eventually the avowedly fascist-psychotic "punk rock."

During the fall of 1960, Huxley was appointed Visiting Professor at the Massachusetts Institute of Technology in Boston. Around his stay in that city, Huxley created a circle at Harvard parallel to his West Coast LSD team. The Harvard group included Huxley, Osmond, and Watts (brought in from California), Timothy Leary, and Richard Alpert.

The ostensible topic of the Harvard seminar was "Religion and its Significance in the Modern Age." The seminar was actually a planning session for the "acid rock" counterculture. Huxley established contact during this Harvard period with the president of Sandoz, which at the time was working on a CIA contract to produce large quantities of LSD and psilocybin (another synthetic hallucinogenic drug) for MK-ULTRA, the CIA's official chemical warfare experiment. According to recently released CIA documents, Allen Dulles, purchased over 100 million doses of LSD — almost all of which flooded the streets of the U.S. during the late 1960s. During the same period Leary began privately purchasing large quantities of LSD from Sandoz as well. (14)

From the discussions of the Harvard seminar, Leary put together the book The Psychedelic Experience, based on the ancient cultist Tibetan Book of the Dead. It was this book that popularized Osmond's previously coined term, "psychedelic mind expanding."

THE ROOTS OF THE FLOWER PEOPLE

Back in California, Gregory Bateson had maintained the Huxley operation out of the Palo Alto VA hospital. Through LSD experimentation on patients already hospitalized for psychological problems, Bateson established a core of "initiates" into the "psychedelic" Isis Cult.

Foremost among his Palo Alto recruits was Ken Kesey. In 1959, Bateson administered the first dose of LSD to Kesey. By 1962, Kesey had completed a novel, One Flew Over the Cuckoo's Nest, which popularized the notion that society is a prison and the only truly "free" people are the insane. (15)

Kesey subsequently organized a circle of LSD initiates called "The Merry Pranksters." They toured the country disseminating LSD (often without forewarning the receiving parties), building up local distribution connections, and establishing the pretext for a high volume of publicity on behalf of the still miniscule "counterculture."

By 1967, the Kesey cult had disseminated such quantities of LSD that a sizable drug population had emerged, centered in the Haight-Ashbury district of San Francisco. Here Huxley collaborator Bateson set up a "free clinic."

Among the founders of the "free clinic" were:

Dr. David Smith — now a "medical advisor" for the National Organization for the Reform of Marijuana Laws (NORML), an entity we shall discuss in Part V;

Dr. Ernest Dernberg — an active-duty military officer, probably on assignment through MK-ULTRA;

Roger Smith — a street gang organizer trained by Saul Alinsky. During the Free Clinic period, Roger Smith was the parole officer (and probable controller) of the cultist mass murderer Charles Manson;

Dr. Peter Bourne — formerly President Carter's special assistant on drug abuse. Bourne did his psychiatric residency at the clinic. He had previously conducted a profiling study of GI heroin addicts in Vietnam.

The Free Clinic paralleled a project at the Tavistock Institute, the psychological warfare agency for British Secret Intelligence Service. Tavistock, founded as a clinic in London in the 1920s, had become the Psychiatric Division of the British Army during World War II under its director, Dr. John Rawlings Rees. (16)

During the 1960s, the Tavistock Clinic fostered the notion that no criteria for sanity exist and that psychedelic "mind-expanding" drugs are valuable tools of psychoanalysis. In 1967, Tavistock sponsored a Conference on the Dialectics of Liberation, chaired by Tavistock psychoanalyst Dr. R. D. Laing, himself a popularized author and advocate of drug use. That conference drew a number of people who would soon play a prominent role in fostering terrorism; Angela Davis and Stokely Carmichael were two prominent American delegates. (17)

Thus, by 1963, Huxley had recruited his core of "initiates." As the general reader is well aware, all of them — Leary, Osmond, Watts, Kesey, Alpert — were highly publicized promoters of the early LSD counterculture. By 1967, with the cult of "Flower People" in Haight-Ashbury and the emergence of the antiwar movement, the United States was ready for the inundation of LSD, hashish, and marijuana that hit American college campuses in the late 1960s.

"The beating of drums ..."

In 1963, the Beatles arrived in the United States, and with their decisive airing on the Ed Sullivan Show, the "British sound" took off in the USA. For their achievement, the four docksters were awarded the Order of the British Empire by Her Majesty the Queen. The Beatles and the Animals, Rolling Stones, and homicidal punk rock maniacs who followed were, of course, no more a spontaneous outpouring of alienated youth than was the acid culture they accompanied.

The social theory of rock was elaborated by British agent and musicologist Theodor Adorno, who came to the United States in 1939 to head the Princeton University Radio Research Project (18) Adorno writes:

> In an imaginary but psychologically emotion-laden domain, the listener who remembers a hit song will turn into the song's ideal subject, into the person for whom the song ideally speaks. At the same time, as one of many who identify with that fictitious subject, that musical I, he will feel his isolation ease as he himself feels integrated into the community of "fans." In whistling such a song he bows to a ritual of socialization, although beyond this unarticulated subjective stirring of the moment his isolation continues unchanged ....
>
> The comparison with addiction is inescapable. Addicted conduct generally has a social component: it is one possible reaction to the atomization which, as sociologists have noticed, parallels the compression of the social network. Addiction to music on the part of a number of entertainment listeners would be a similar phenomenon (emphasis added). (19)

The Hit Parade is organized precisely on the same principles used by Egypt's Isis priesthood and for the same purpose: the recruitment of youth to the dionysiac counterculture.

In a report prepared for the University of Michigan's Institute of Social Research, Paul Hirsch described the product of Adorno's Radio Research Project. (20) According to Hirsch, the establishment of postwar radio's Hit Parade "transformed the mass medium into an agency of sub-cultural programming." Radio networks were converted into round-the-clock recycling machines that repeated the top 40 "hits." Hirsch documents how all popular culture — movies, music, books, and fashion — is now run on the same program of preselection. Today's mass culture operates like the opium trade: the supply determines the demand.

The Vietnam war and the antiwar trap

But without the Vietnam War and the British Secret Intelligence Services' "antiwar" movement, the Isis Cult would have been contained to a fringe phenomenon — no bigger than the beatnik cult of the 1950s that was an outgrowth of the early Huxley ventures in California. The Vietnam war created the climate of moral despair that opened the educated elite of America's youth — the first 20th-century generation raised in a climate free from depression and war — to drugs.

The reader has already been shown that the Kennedy Administration installed in the White House by the 1960 elections was sponsored by the British Round Table (see Part III). Under Kennedy, American involvement in Vietnam — which had been vetoed by the Eisenhower Administration — was initiated on a limited scale. Under Lyndon Johnson, American military presence in Vietnam began in earnest. Johnson's principal Vietnam advisor was not even American. He was a British officer, Sir Robert Thompson, whose entire career had been spent conducting counterinsurgency warfare in Southeast Asia. Playing on the President's "yahoo" anticommunist profile, Thompson convinced President Johnson that communist insurgency had to be stopped at all costs and that a strong U.S. military presence in South Vietnam was necessary for that containment. Johnson, a military and foreign policy incompetent whose other chief Vietnam advisor, National Security Council Director Walt Rostow, held the Cross of the Order of the British Empire, was dragged by the nose into Vietnam by the British.

The British, to put it simply, had two reasons for manipulating the United States into Vietnam. The first was to foster a "limited war" confrontation in Southeast Asia between the United States and the Soviet Union (through its North Vietnamese "surrogate") that would both refuel the Cold War and effectively undercut the influence of both powers in the region. The second and equally significant reason was to demoralize the American people to such a degree that the sense of national pride and confidence in the future progress of the republic would be forever shattered.

Just as Aldous Huxley began the counterculture subversion of the United States 30 years before its consequences became evident to the public, Lord Bertrand Russell began laying the foundations for the antiwar movement of the 1960s before the 1930s expired. Lord Russell and Aldous Huxley cofounded the Peace Pledge Union in 1937 — just before both went to the United States for the duration of World War II. (21)

Russell's antiwar zeal, it should be noted, was a patent fraud. During World War II, Lord Russell opposed British and American warfare against the Nazis because he was a peripheral member of the pro-Nazi Cliveden Set. In 1947, when the United States was in possession of the atomic bomb and Russia was not, Russell loudly advocated that the United States pre-emptively commence World War III — against the Soviet Union. His 1950s "Ban the Bomb" aboutface was fundamentally an antitechnology movement against the peace-through-development potentials represented by President Eisenhower's "Atoms for Peace" initiative to the Soviets; Eisenhower's 1954 proposal to the United Nations was predicated on the development of thermonuclear fusion power and concomitant city-building projects throughout the underdeveloped sector.

From the mid-1950s on, Russell's principal assignment was to build an international antiwar and anti-American movement. Coincident with the escalation of U.S. involvement in Vietnam under British manipulation, Russell upgraded the old Peace Pledge Union (which had been used in West Germany throughout the postwar period to promote an anticapitalist "new left" wing of the Social Democratic Party, recruiting several future members of the Baader-Meinhof terrorist gang in the process) into the Bertrand Russell Peace Foundation.

In the United States, New York's Our Crowd banks provided several hundred thousand dollars to establish the Institute for Policy Studies (IPS), as effectively the U.S. branch of the Russell Peace Foundation. Among the founding trustees of the IPS was James Warburg, directly representing the family's interests.

IPS drew its most active operatives from a variety of British-dominated institutions. IPS founding director Marcus Raskin was a member of the Kennedy Administration's National Security Council and also a fellow of the National Training Labs, a U.S. subsidiary of the Tavistock Institute founded by Dr. Kurt Lewin.

IPS in turn financed and ran the Students for a Democratic Society (SDS) — the student antiwar movement — up through and beyond its splintering into a number of terrorist and Maoist gangs in the late 1960s. (22) If one were to take the time to trace the pedigrees of all of the leaders of the antiwar movement in the United States, an almost unbroken pattern of either IPS or direct Russell Foundation control would emerge. This is not to say that the majority of antiwar protesters were paid, certified British agents. On the contrary, the overwhelming majority of antiwar protesters went into SDS on the basis of outrage at the developments in Vietnam and subsequently got trapped. Once caught in the environment defined by Russell and the Tavistock Institute's wartime psychological warfare experts, their sense of values and their creative potential were snatched up in a cloud of hashish smoke.

The LSD connection

Who provided the drugs that swamped the antiwar movement and the college campuses of the United States in the late 1960s? The organized crime infrastructure — which had set up the Peking Connection for the opium trade in 1928 — provided the same services in the 1960s and 1970s it had provided during Prohibition. This was also the same network Huxley had established contact with in Hollywood during the 1930s.

The LSD Connection begins with one William "Billy" Mellon Hitchcock. Hitchcock was a graduate of the University of Vienna and a scion of the millionaire Mellon banking family of Pittsburgh. (Andrew Mellon of the same family had been the Treasury Secretary throughout Prohibition.) In 1963, when Timothy Leary was thrown out of Harvard, Hitchcock rented a 55-room mansion in Millbrook, New York where the entire Leary-Huxley circle of inititates was housed until its later move back to California. (23)

Hitchcock was also a broker for the Lansky syndicate and for the Fiduciary Trust Co., Nassau, Grand Bahamas — a wholly owned subsidiary of Investors Overseas Services. He was formally employed by Delafield and Delafield Investments where he worked on buying and selling vast quantities of stock in the Mary Carter Paint Co. — soon to become Resorts International.

In 1967, Dr. Richard Alpert put Hitchcock in contact with Augustus Owsley Stanley III. As Owsley's agent, Hitchcock retained the law firm of Rabinowitz, Boudin and Standard (24) to conduct a feasibility study of several Caribbean countries to determine the best location for the production and distribution of LSD and hashish.

During this period, Hitchcock joined Leary and his circle in California. Leary had established an LSD cult called the Brotherhood of Eternal Love and several front companies, including Mystics Art World, Inc. of Laguna Beach, California. These California-based entities ran lucrative trafficking in Mexican marijuana and LSD brought in from Switzerland and Britain. The British connection had been established directly by Hitchcock, who contracted the Charles Bruce chemical firm to import large quantities of the chemical components of LSD. With financing from both Hitchcock and George Grant Hoag, the heir to the J.C. Penney dry goods fortune, the Brotherhood of Eternal Love set up LSD and hashish production-marketing operations in Costa Rica in 1968. (25)

Toward the end of 1968, Hitchcock expanded the LSD-hashish production operations in the Caribbean with funds provided by the Fiduciary Trust Co. (IOS). In conjunction with J. Vontobel and Co. of Zurich, Hitchcock founded a corporation called 4-Star Anstalt in Liechtenstein. This company, employing "investment funds" (i.e., drug receipts) from Fiduciary Trust, bought up large tracts of land in the Grand Bahamas as well as large quantities of ergotamine tartrate, the basic chemical used in the production of LSD. (26)

Hitchcock's personal hand in the LSD connection abruptly ended several years later. Hitchcock had been working closely with Johann F. Parravacini of the Parravacini Bank Ltd. in Berne, Switzerland. From 1968, they had together funded even further expansion of the Caribbean-California LSD-hashish ventures. In the early 1970s, as the result of a Securities and Exchange Commission investigation, both Hitchcock and Parravacini were indicted and convicted of a $40 million stock fraud. Parravacini had registered a $40 million sale to Hitchcock for which Hitchcock had not put down a penny of cash or collateral. This was one of the rare instances in which federal investigators succeeded in getting inside the $200 billion drug fund as it was making its way around the "offshore" banking system.

Another channel for laundering dirty drug money — a channel yet to be compromised by federal investigative agencies — is important to note here. This is the use of tax-exempt foundations to finance terrorism and environmentalism. One immediately relevant case makes the point.

In 1957, the University of Chicago's Robert M. Hutchins established the Center for the Study of Democratic Institutions (CSDI) in Santa Barbara, California. Knight Commander Hutchins drew in Aldous Huxley, Elisabeth Mann Borghese, and some Rhodes Scholars who had originally been brought into the University of Chicago during the 1930s and 1940s.

The CSDI was originally funded (1957-61) through a several-million-dollar fund that Hutchins managed to set up before his untimely departure from the Ford Foundation. From 1961 on, the Center was principally financed by organized crime. The two funding conduits were the Fund of Funds, a tax-exempt front for Bernie Cornfeld's IOS, and the Parvin Foundation, a parallel front for the Parvin-Dohrman Co. of Nevada. IOS and Parvin-Dohrman held controlling interests in the Desert Inn, the Aladdin, and the Dunes — all Las Vegas casinos associated with the Lansky syndicate. IOS, as already documented, was a conduiting vehicle for LSD, hashish, and marijuana distribution throughout the 1960s. (27) In 1967 alone, IOS channeled between $3-4 million to the center. Wherever there is dope, there is Dope, Inc.

Notes

IV. CREATING THE MARKET: THE BRITISH ORIGINS OF THE COUNTERCULTURE

1. Paul Ghalioungui, The House of Life: Magic and Medical Science in Ancient Egypt (New York: Schram Enterprises Ltd., 1974).
2. Saint Augustine, The City of God (New York: Oxford University Press, 1963).
3. Arnold Toynbee, A Study of History (New York: Oxford University Press, 1935).
4. Martin Green, Children of the Sun: A Narrative of Decadence in England After 1918 (New York: Basic Books, Inc., 1976).
5. See Ronald William Clark, The Huxleys (New York: McGraw-Hill, 1968).
6. Helena P. Blavatsky, Isis Unveiled, A Master Key to the Mysteries of Ancient and Modern Science and Theology (Los Angeles: Theosophy Co., 1931).
7. Francis King, Sexuality, Magic and Perversion (New York: Citadel, 1974), p. 118.
8. Sybille Bedford, Aldous Huxley: A Biography (New York: Alfred A. Knopf and Harper & Row, 1974).
9. Ibid.
10. Institute for Policy Studies, "The First Ten Years, 1963-1973," Washington, D.C., 1974.
11. Humphrey Osmond, Understanding Understanding (New York: Harper & Row, 1974).
12. RAND Catalogue of Documents.
13. Gregory Bateson, Steps to the Ecology of the Mind (New York: Chandler, 1972).
14. Ralph Metzner, The Ecstatic Adventure (New York: Macmillan, 1968).
15. See Ronald William Clark, The Huxleys (New York: McGraw-Hill, 1968).
16. Michael Minnicino, "Low Intensity Operations: The Reesian Theory of War," The Campaigner (April, 1974).
17. R.D. Laing et al., The Dialectics of Liberation (London: Tavistock Press, 1967).
18. Theodor Adorno was a leading professor at the Frankfurt School of Social Research in Germany, founded by the British Fabian Society. A collaborator of twelve-tone formalist and British intelligence operative,

Arnold Schonberg, Adorno was brough into the United States in 1939 to head up the Princeton Radio Research Project. The explicit aim of this project, as stated in Adorno's Introduction to the Sociology of Music, was to program a mass "musical" culture that would steadily degrade its consumers. Punk rock is, in the most direct sense, the ultimate result of Adorno's work.

19. Theodor Adorno, Introduction to the Sociology of Music (New York: Seabury Press, 1976).

20. Paul Hirsch, "The Structure of the Popular Music Industry: The Filtering Process by Which Records are Preselected for Public Consumption," Institute for Social Research's Survey Research Center Monograph, 1969.

21. Ronald W. Clark, The Life of Bertrand Russell (New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1976), p. 457.

22. Illinois Crime Commission Report, 1969. The Institute for Policy Studies (IPS) was established in 1963 by Marcus Raskin, a former National Security Advisor under NSC Director McGeorge Bundy, and Richard Barnet, a former State Department Advisor on Arms Control and Disarmament. Among the Board of Trustees of IPS were Thurmond Arnold, James Warburg, Philip Stern, and Hans Morgenthau, with seed money from the Ford Foundation (later to be headed by McGeorge Bundy). IPS has functioned as the "New Left" think tank and control center for local community control, community mental health centers and direct terrorist organizations, In its report "The First Ten Years," the Institute lists among its lecturers and fellows members of the Weathermen group, known associates of the Japanese Red Army, the Puerto Rican terrorist Armed Forces of National Liberation (FALN), and the Black Liberation Army. See also Carter and the Party of International Terrorism, Special Report by the U.S. Labor Party, August, 1976.

23. Mary Jo Warth, "The Story of Acid Profiteers," Village Voice, August 22,1974.

24. Ibid.

25. Ibid.

26. Ibid.

27. Hutchinson, Vesco.

PART V

The Drug Lobby: The Criminals Come Out in the Open

In California, laws are now before the state legislature that would decriminalize all drug use on the grounds that this would free law enforcement and judicial agencies to deal with "more serious crime." The sponsor of that bill is State Representative Willie Brown, a paid lobbyist for Resorts International.

That's the tip-off to the real nature of the Drug Lobby. Britain's secret army of organized crime is now out in the open demanding the expansion of its dope market.

Since 1973, when Watergate finished off Nixon's attempt to shut down the drug trade, the Drug Lobby has succeeded in decriminalizing marijuana in nine states. In every case, the result has been an immediate outbreak of drug abuse of epidemic proportions. According to Dr. Peter Bensinger, Director of the Drug Enforcement Administration, the decriminalization of marijuana in the state of Maine additionally opened the coastal area as a major smuggling center for marijuana, cocaine, and heroin.

By the open admission of the Drug Lobbyists, legalized proliferation of marijuana is just the foot-in-the-door for eventual legal cocaine and heroin proliferation. Dr. Peter Bourne, who until 1978 was President Carter's special advisor on drug abuse, making him the highest ranking federal drug enforcement officer, has appeared on nationwide television to advocate national legalization of cocaine.

A systematic campaign to legalize heroin use has been underway since 1977. A bill was placed before the state legislature of Ohio and narrowly defeated in committee in 1977 removing heroin from the list of Category I drugs (those drugs outlawed for even medical use). New Mexico and Florida — both states identified by the DEA as major distribution points for heroin — have bills presently pending that would, like the Ohio bill, legalize the use of heroin under medical supervision in cases of terminal illness and for "experimental purposes." When a similar bill was briefly enacted in New York (in 1919, coincident with Prohibition) , the widely documented consequences were an immediate jump in heroin addiction, far in excess of the number of "officially registered" patients.

At present, two Zionist Lobby sponsored bills are before the U.S. Congress that would nationally legalize marijuana: the Javits-Koch bill and the Kennedy-authored S.1437 which thoroughly overhauls the Federal Criminal Codes on a British "common law" basis.

Kennedy's drug-death Cult

The U.S. Drug lobby is run out front by the Most Venerable Military and Hospitaller Order of St. John of Jerusalem.

In the 11th century, the Knights-Hospitallers had organized hospices as a "death cult" where the sick were administered hallucinogenic drugs instead of medical treatment. The hospices became known as the dissemination point for drugs and lethal poisons, often targeted at the Knights' humanist adversaries.

In 1967, the Order of St. John resurrected the 11th century hospice movement at St. Christopher's Hospice in London. Here, "patients" are administered a "pain-killer" called the Brompton Mixture. It consists of heroin, cocaine, alcohol, tranquilizers, and chloroform water. It is administered every three hours — until the patient dies. (1)

In 1977, the Order of St. John launched a hospice movement in the United States. It advocates the decriminalization of heroin and cocaine — on the "humanitarian" grounds that everyone has the human right to die as he or she sees fit.

To propagate the hospice movement here, the Order founded the National Committee on the Treatment of Intractable Pain (NCTIP). Its honorary chairman is Lady Mary Ward, a British specialist in the hospice movement who founded Hospice, Inc. in Connecticut as the first operating "death clinic" in the U.S. The director of the NCTIP is another British national, Arthur Trebach. A professor at the Center for the Administration of Justice at the American University in Washington, D.C., Trebach is also the Director of the Institute on Drugs, Crime and Justice in Britain. For the past five years, Trebach has sponsored hundreds of U.S. medical students, professional physicians, and others for special indoctrination sessions at the Imperial College of Science and Technology, University of London. The theme of the session is the "success" of Britain's policy of legalizing heroin in curbing the illegal drug problem. (2)

In the United States, the Hospice, Inc. is financed by the Kaiser Foundation, which includes on its board Kingman Brewster, current U.S. Ambassador to the Court of St. James and also a member of the Order of St. John. The Kaiser Foundation's participation in Britain's Opium War dates back to at least 1958, when Dr. Timothy Leary conducted his first experiments with LSD at the Foundation's Kaiser Experimental Hospital in San Francisco.

The other institution currently involved in financing the hospice project is the Joseph and Rose Kennedy Institute for the Study of Human Reproduction and Bioethics at Georgetown Univeristy. (3)

In October, 1978, the first annual National Hospice Organizing Meeting took place in Washington, D.C.; the two keynote speakers were Senator Edward Kennedy, now chairman of the Senate Judiciary Committee and a ranking member of the Senate Public Health Committee, and Secretary of Health, Education and Welfare Joseph Califano.

The Order of St. John also maintains significant influence on the board of directors of the Ford Foundation, the world's largest tax exempt funding conduit for dionysian cults. On the board are John Loudon, a Commander in the Knights of St. John, the chairman of Royal Dutch Shell, and the present President of the World Wildlife Fund (the funding conduit for the terrorist component of the environmentalist movement worldwide) (4) and Eugene Black, another Knight and former director of the World Bank. The foundation's current policy thrust was charted during the 1951-54 period when its associate director and policy formulator was Knights Commander Robert M. Hutchins, whom we met earlier as a controller of the Capone mob.

The Ford Foundation gives multimillion dollar annual grants directly to the Royal Institute of International Affairs; it is also the principal funder of the Drug Lobby in the U.S. In 1972, the Foundation established the Drug Abuse Council with a $1 million war chest which has been refilled every year since. (5)

As its first public act, the Drug Abuse Council issued a widely circulated report advocating the decriminalization of marijuana, a tenfold increase in methadone (synthetic heroin) clinics, and the British system of legalized government-sponsored heroin addiction. Following the release of that report, the Kaiser Foundation and the Commonwealth Fund established a matching fund that more than doubled the annual revenues available to the Drug Abuse Council to push drug legalization.

Jacob Javits and organized crime

From this level down, the so-called "liberal" drug decriminalization lobby is thoroughly interlocked with organized crime, by those forces whose monetary interest lies in the expansion of the drug market.

The interlock is keyed around the Zionist Lobby, and more precisely around the person of Senator Jacob Javits (R-N.Y.).

It has been reported by several knowledgeable sources that Senator Javits gets his orders several times a week at private planning briefing sessions at a number of exclusive New York City apartments. Among those present are Arthur Ross of London's International Institute for Strategic Studies and a sub-agent of Rio Tinto Zinc's Mark Turner, Rio Tinto Zinc's Sam Harris, Nahum Bernstein of the Jerusalem Foundation, and Warburg, Pincus's Henry Simon Bloch. This, in turn, is the same circle that maintains ownership of the Bronfman family.

Startling evidence of this Bronfman-Javits relationship surfaced in 1977 when bribery and extortion were employed to pass a marijuana decriminalization bill through the New York State Legislature and to subsequently cover up the findings of a legislative investigating committee that showed a 300 percent jump in adolescent marijuana abuse in the state following decrim. As the sponsor since 1968 of legislation to federally decriminalize marijuana, Javits (along with cosponsor Edward Koch, now Mayor of New York City) was the most outspoken organizer for the New York State marijuana legalization bill.

During the 1977 legislative session, the bill was defeated. In an unprecedented move pushed by the senior U.S. Senator, Governor Carey personally conducted a pressure campaign on behalf of a reintroduced version of the same bill, which passed by one vote in June, 1977. The decisive vote was cast by a severely ill hospitalized member of the legislature who was helicoptered back and forth from his sickbed by state police on personal orders from the Governor.

These extraordinary measures were perhaps clarified several weeks later when Edgar Bronfman made a personal "loan" to Carey of $350,000 to pay off the Governor's outstanding 1974 campaign debts. The loan was in violation of state and federal campaign financing laws.

Like the Bronfman family itself, Javits's direct connections to organized crime and drug trafficking run deep. According to affidavits on file from the Internal Revenue Service and the Securities and Exchange Commission, Javits functions as a listening post and conduit of classified government information for the Lansky syndicate.

In one recently publicized incident, Javits provided Lansky and other crime figures with information on IRS moves to secretly shut down a multibillion dollar tax loophole that enabled mob investors in the domestic coal industry to claim 500 percent tax writeoffs on their investments. Through Javits's "tip" Lansky and Co. made a huge, final move to take over the independent coal operators 24 hours before the new codes went into effect. Another crime figure implicated in the coal industry killing was Richard L. Herring, a Georgia-based intermediary of Robert Vesco. In addition to his involvement in the creation of the offshore Caribbean "dirty money" apparatus through Investors Overseas Services, Vesco is a known collaborator of Lansky's in running the Caribbean Silver Triangle drug traffic in heroin, cocaine, and marijuana. (6)

Javits's links to Lansky and Vesco surfaced in yet another context in October, 1978. After a several ton marijuana bust off the coast of Massachusetts, the defendants were represented in court by James Lawson, the head of the state chapter of the National Organization for the Reform of Marijuana Laws (NORML). NORML is the principal public lobby for the decriminalization of marijuana and addictive drugs in the U.S. Sitting on its Advisory Board is Sen. Jacob Javits. Evidence surfaced in the course of the trial that the front money for the captured marijuana shipment had been provided by Meyer Lansky and Robert Vesco. (7)

Should there be any lingering doubt in the reader's mind that Javits is a witting conspirator in the campaign to poison the country through drugs, the following should be considered. From 1940 to 1942 Javits was the Assistant to the Chief of Chemical Warfare, Office of Strategic Services. From 1954 to 1956, as New York State Attorney General, Javits administered a clandestine experiment on the effects of LSD in conjunction with the Central Intelligence Agency. At least one active duty military officer died as the result of being given an unsolicited dose of LSD — an incident which Javits covered up and which only came to light through recent Freedom of Information Act disclosures. (8)

Javits is, of course, the unofficial public head of the Zionist Lobby in the United States. He is the National Chairman of the Anti-Defamation League of B'nai B'rith, and a board member of the American Jewish Committee, the Zionist Organization of America, and the Amer-Israel Cultural Foundation.

Kennedy's NORML

Next to Jacob Javits, the most outspoken drug lobbyist in Washington, D.C. is Senator Edward Kennedy, the sponsor of the other pending marijuana decriminalization bill. As the new chairman of the Senate Judiciary Committee, Kennedy has necessarily steered away from Javits's open lobbying posture on behalf of drugs in order to maintain a modicum of credibility among the powerful law enforcement lobby. Yet the Kennedy family is directly represented on NORML's advisory board by ex-brother-in-law Peter Lawford.

Like Javits, Kennedy too is up to his neck in Lansky-Vesco offshore criminal activities. At the top of Kennedy's 1976 campaign contributors list is Joseph Linsey, a leading Zionist Lobby "philanthropist," who is also known as the kingpin of organized crime in New England. Linsey is a business partner of Meyer Lansky in the International Airport Hotel Distributing, Inc.

The Kennedy fortunes are even more directly linked to Lansky through the already documented Resorts International-Intertel interface. Nowhere is this interface more evident than in New Jersey, where a combination of Justice Department "watergating specialists" teamed with a $1 million Resorts International lobbying and payoff campaign to legalize casino gambling.

New Jersey Governor Brendan Byrne, who was recruited out of the Essex County Prosecutor's office by the Kennedy Justice hands and installed in the Governor's mansion, is a nationally prominent spokesman for drug decriminalization. As Chairman of the Law Enforcement Assistance Administration (LEAA) National Advisory Committee on Criminal Justice Standards and Goals, Byrne commissioned a series of studies supporting decriminalization of marijuana and casino gambling.

NORML, the clearinghouse organization for the various local dionysian cults and Zionist Lobby "liberal" legislators, is itself a thinly veiled cover through which the poisoning influence of organized crime is extended into the high schools and neighborhoods of the country. NORML is virtually indistinguishable from the drug cult-pornographic magazine High Times, which boasts a several hundred thousand circulation predominantly among high school age drug users. The magazine features dozens of pages of advertisements for drug paraphernalia, instructions on the production and use of legal and illicit drugs, and pornographic photographs and interviews with various "high priests" of the drug-rock cult. Through the revenues of High Times, through an average of $100,000 per year in tax exempt grants from the Playboy Foundation, and through "frequent anonymous contributions from drug dealers," NORML is financed. (9)

The Advisory Board of NORML includes (in addition to Javits and Peter Lawford): Max Palevsky, chairman of the board of the Xerox Corporation; Hugh Hefner, owner of Playboy Enterprises, Inc.; William F. Buckley Jr.; Burton Joseph, Director of the Playboy Foundation; Canon Walter D. Dennis of the Cathedral of St. John the Divine in New York City, the " temple and headquarters" of the Order of St. John of Jerusalem in the United States; and Stewart Mott, heir to the General Motors fortune.

NORML's general counsels Michael Kennedy and Gerald Lefcourt, are also connected to terrorism through their defense of the Puerto Rican FALN (Armed Forces for National Liberation) and Weatherunderground leader Mark Rudd.

Notes

V. THE DRUG LOBBY

1. Karen Steinherz and Marie Mendez, "The Hospice Movement - Taking the Pain Out of Genocide," New Solidarity, Vol. IX, No. 62, October 6, 1978. See also Sandol Stoddard, The Hospice Movement (Briarcliff Manor, New York: Stein & Day, 1978).
2. Seminar listings for the Fifth Institute on Drugs, Crime and Justice in Britain, held in London in July 1978. The Institute has held five such annual conferences at the Imperial College of the University of London, bringing American university students and American public health officials to study drug abuse in Britain and the "British Model" of treatment.
3. Steinherz and Mendez, op. cit.
4. Who's Who in America (Chicago: Marquis, 1974); Annual Reports of the World Wildlife Fund of America, 1976 and 1977; see also, The Foundation Directory, 5th Edition (New York: The Foundation Center).
5. Ford Foundation Annual Reports, 1972-78, and The Drug Abuse Council Annual Reports, 1972-77.
6. NBC-TV News broadcast transcript, "Coal Fraud," Reporters Ross and Silverman, September, 1978.
7. Federal District Court Records of the First Circuit Court, Boston, Massachusetts. Additional information was provided on drug charges by New England-based officials of the Drug Enforcement Administration in September, 1978.
8. In 1976, following Congressional hearings into the intelligences community, the files pertaining to the Central Intelligence Agency's MK-ULTRA, BLUEBIRD and ARTICHOKE programs were released to the public. The FOIA documents reveal extensive details of the CIA and Army's experiments with mind control techniques including LSD. In 1977, Renee J. Roberts, the daughter of Harold Bauer who died as the result of a dosage of a hallucinogenic drug administered to him at the New York State Psychiatric Institute as part of an Army-contracted experiment, began a civil damages suit against offiicials responsible for failing to investigate the circumstances of her father's death. Sen. Jacob Javits is a defendant in that suit, stemming from his position as New York State Attorney General at the time of Bauer's death.
9. Interview with Keith Stroup, Playboy Magazine, 1978; see also issues of NORML Newsletter describing anonymous contributions.

Epilogue

On October 18,1978, the authors of this book met in Washington, D.C., with eight officials of the Federal Reserve Board of Governors, including Mr. John E. Ryan, director of Banking Supervision and Regulation, and Mr. Robert Mannion, director of the Board of Governors' legal department. Present were two lawyers for the Hongkong and Shanghai Bank, including the HongShang's chief legal counsel in the United States, Mr. Steuart L. Pittman. At this meeting, the authors presented evidence incriminating the HongShang in the international narcotics traffic and argued that the Federal Reserve should block HongShang's proposed acquisition of 51 percent of the shares of the $20 billion Marine Midland Bank of New York. On October 25, a similar meeting was held with officials of the New York State Banking Authority, including New York State Deputy Superintendent of Banking William Heany.

Also, portions of the manuscript have circulated in photostat form for several weeks prior to publication through the State Department, Treasury Department, Drug Enforcement Administration, and related enforcement and regulatory agencies.

In public meetings and radio and television appearances in a dozen cities in the United States, the authors have outlined the contents of this book before a broad and diverse audience. Through these various channels, word has gotten out.

Most readers will have asked themselves the question that the authors have been asked often in the course of this report's preparation: "How will the powerful men who stand behind the narcotics traffic react to this exposure?" The answer is already evident, at least in part. On November 11, European collaborators of the U.S. Labor Party team conducted a public meeting in Paris to present the results of the investigation. The meeting was attacked by 20 hooded and armed members of the fascist organization, Betar. French police were on guard and prevented injuries to members of the audience, but one policeman was injured by the assault. The French authorities believe that the attack was ordered by the Mossad, Israel's foreign secret service. The Betar was founded in the 1930s by Yakob Jabotinsky, a Polish Zionist who modeled himself on Benito Mussolini, and who was the mentor of present Israeli Prime Minister Menachem Begin. Undoubtedly, the decision to launch an attack against not only the collaborators of the authors, but the French police — who know well how to deal with such matters — indicates a great fear in the perpetrators of the narcotics traffic.

What this report has intersected, however, goes far beyond the petty thuggery of the Mossad. Discreetly, officials of the HongShang warned the authors shortly after the cited meetings in Washington what would happen to the United States if they persisted: "You know, of course," an official said, "that the British government has made representations to the American authorities on behalf of the HongShang, which is after all a British bank. American banks have had pretty much a free run of it all in London, and we British rather feel that we should have the same privileges here. If the American authorities give us any trouble, the Bank of England will start exhuming skeletons from the closets of the American banks."

In fact, the British had already surfaced an undercover agent in New York's Citibank in mid-July, a junior official named David Edwards, who sued the bank for $14 million and made numerous allegations of illegal money transfer operations. Recently, after the HongShang official made the statement quoted above, the Edwards case has taken a new turn. On November 5, Katharin Graham's Washington Post added major new expose material to Edwards's original allegations, citing its own sources inside Citibank. The authors have learned that Katharin Graham is personally directing Edwards's appearances before one Senate and three House of Representatives committees.

Coming at a time when the British banks are making a massed bid to acquire American banking assets, the inside-outside job against Citibank is ominous. Apart from the HongShang's cited plan to acquire Marine Midland, the Canadian Bank of Montreal wants to buy out 81 retail branches of New York's Bankers Trust; Standard and Chartered Bank wants to buy up the $3 billion Union Bank of Caliornia; and buy-out attempts or branch office openings are in the works involving Barclays Bank, National Westminster Bank, Bank Leumi, Bank Hapoalim, and other financial institutions implicated in the world narcotics traffic. An invasion is on against the already weakened American monetary system, and the evidence suggests that the British dope-runners are deliberately seeking to destabilize American banks to further this invasion.

Apart from the dirty tricks operations aimed at American banks, numerous other attempts will emerge from the dope-traffickers to cushion themselves from the impact of this report. Lower-level operatives, expendable portions of the network may be sacrificed, the way that assassins like Lee Harvey Oswald or Sirhan Sirhan were sacrificed by their masters.

But the enemy cannot recoup what it has lost. The $200 billion dope trade cannot be hidden; it can only be protected through misdirection. The web of lies now hangs in tatters. If the American public forces its legislators and law enforcement officials to act, Dope, Inc.'s defense will no longer avail. The first blood has already been drawn from a group of gentlemen who have been long accustomed to working at a distance from the combat zone. The terms of the battle have been redrawn to make an American victory possible.

Konstandinos Kalimtgis
David Goldman
Jeffrey Steinberg

New York City
November 17,1978

Svali Speaks Again

Healing from ritual abuse and mind control

Mizpah: Svali Speaks Again
About
Contact
Blog
Articles
Book Info

Early Splits and Theta Programming

This is from a book I wrote a couple of years ago…

The primary core splits, and the master controllers are always created first. These will take on the roles and names of spiritual entities, since a programmed system is first and primarily spiritual, designed to serve satan, the antichrist, and the beast (father, son and spirit). All three will be represented in these first splits along with other deities.

The presentations are also created, and dedicated to deities with roles of amnesia; in fact, the presentation undergoes as much or more programming than any other parts in sophisticated systems, which tends to surprise survivors. who may have believed that these systems "didn't go through bad things." They have, and their traumas are among the worst, **which is why presenter programming is often the last to heal in many systems**.

These traumas fuel the deep amnesia that is always present in programmed systems: there are always huge barriers placed between the presentations ("hosts"), the cover programming, the main group programming and the New World Order programming.

Buffers

In these sophisticated systems, buffers will be created in epsilon between the front and back with one sole purpose: to hide the extent of the programming, by "buffering" the feelings between front and back, and maintaining emotional and memory distance between the two. The buffers will always be very void of feeling, and extremely traumatized, since they "hide the back" and help make the programming "undetectable" to the world, and the survivor.

Brain Wave Programming, Early Theta and Spiritual Training

Modern programmers utilize the fact that when a person's brain waves are in theta state, they are the most open to the spiritual realm. This is why much of their spiritual training is conducted when the individual is in theta state.

Early Brain Wave Programming

The infant is taught to stay in theta state by attaching electrodes to their head that pick up brain waves and show them on a monitor. When the infant personality that is being trained is in theta state, the infant is heavily praised. If the personality “bounces” out of theta state, as is normal, the infant is heavily shocked. Eventually, the personalities created learn to stay permanently in theta state (this same training method is also used for the personalities in other brain wave states, to teach them to stay in the desired brain wave state).

To the left above is a graph of brain wave states (the major ones except epsilon are shown). Gamma is the highest brain wave state, and will occur when a person is in a highly excited or nervous state. This is where loyalty programming and sabotage scripts will later be programmed in, since the high anxiety in this state will trigger calling the police, accuse the helper of kidnapping, or other self-sabotage, if someone tries to help the survivor.

Beta state is a normal alert state, and this is where military systems and those that need a normal alert state will be created. Alpha is more relaxed, and accessing systems and presentations will be created in this state. Delta is the deepest brain state, and will hold semi-unconscious and even unconscious beliefs; delta programming will be discussed in more detail later in this book.

Theta Training

Once they can stay in theta state, the early spiritual training begins. The thetas are kept in a blackened room, and the people who interact with them appear shadowy. Actors dressed as demons will come into the room, and “chain” the infant to them. The actors demonstrate to the infant how demons act, growling, snarling and torturing them in various ways. At the same time, the infant is told that THEY are the demon. This is how demonic punishers and controllers are created in the first weeks of life.

The programmers understand that an infant must be shown an external reality in order to internalize it. **The infant must internalize in order to establish the programming that the programmers desire for later control.**

The theta state parts in the infants are left in darkened cribs and are given objects such as decapitated heads to play with; or demonic toys such as fetishes. The infant’s fingers are placed around the neck of a kitten, and when they squeeze, as babies will, they are highly praised. The infant has no idea of what they are doing at this stage, but the foundation for later assassination training is being put in place.

Demons come into the room, and talk and play with the infant’s theta parts. This is their first bonding, with these creatures that appear horrific.

Gradually, the infant is taught to call on the demonic for theta capabilities. The programmer will throw a ball at the infant to hit it, and encourage the baby to spiritually throw the ball back at them (they are too young to have the physical coordination to do so, but can easily do this demonically). Throwing a ball demonically is demonstrated, and the baby is hit again and again, until in anger and frustration, they are able to loft the ball back at the person hitting them. This is heavily praised, since the infant is using spiritual power to accomplish what it cannot physically, and using its hurt and rage at being abused and turning it to hurt another back. This is the early foundation for later theta capabilities.

The infants are taken to rituals, where they watch sacrifices performed, their infant seats propped amidst the fires. They are also taken to re-enactments of “hell” where demons dance and torture victims, and the first subconscious images of hell and the need to punish even the slightest disobedience are ingrained. The infants undergo extensive torture from demons, to teach them in these first weeks of life to fear “descending” and “going to hell” above any other punishment.

Share this:

Twitter Facebook

Loading...

Create a free website or blog at WordPress.com.

JOHNNY CIRUCCI

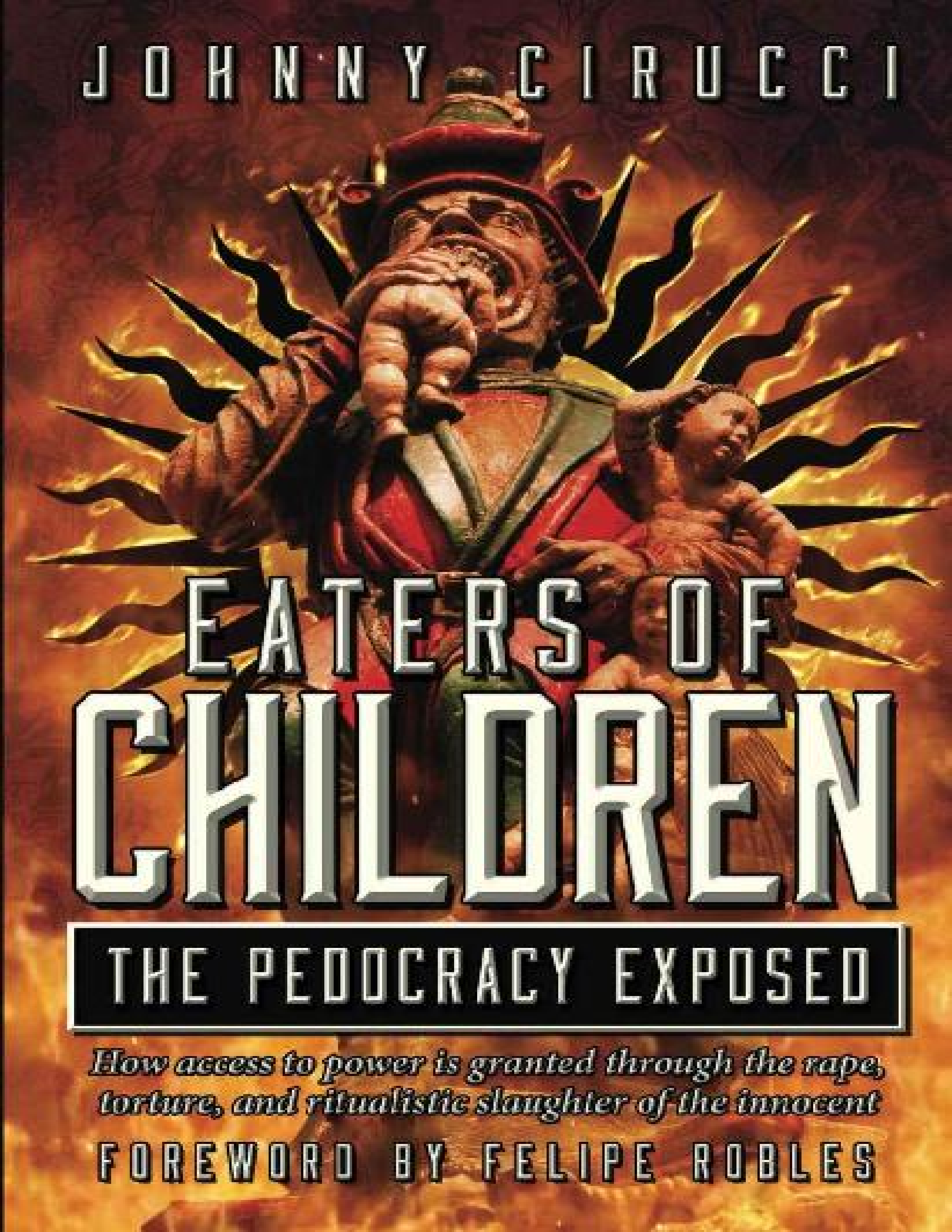

EATERS OF CHILDREN

THE PEDOCRACY EXPOSED

How access to power is granted through the rape, torture, and ritualistic slaughter of the innocent

FOREWORD BY FELIPE ROBLES

Eaters of Children:
The Pedocracy Exposed

How access to power is granted through the rape, torture and ritualistic slaughter of the innocent.

by
Giovanni Augustino “Johnny” Cirucci

Forward by Felipe “Doc” Robles
Proofing: Klint “Hawkeye” Burton
Cover art by Greg Hardesty
greg@glyph.it

Copyright © 2017

All rights reserved.

ISBN: 1548350478
ISBN-13: 978-1548350475

“And from the dispensation
of John the Baptist
until now
the Kingdom of Heaven suffereth violence,
and the violent take it by force.”

~ Matthew 11:12

What we will have to give an account for our works in blood-purchased freedom to the One who paid in full the debt of all that occurs in dark corners to those that know and those who do not

Mourn and

Weep

The children are naked and are being devoured ~ Hawkeye, 2017

Acknowledgements

I credit the Lord Jesus Christ with the ability to see what others could not, or because of their cowardice, refused to.

He gave me a best friend for a wife who is my "*help-meet*" in every way. She enabled my writing this book by masterfully handling the paucity of our finances to prioritize which bills had to be paid and which bloodsucker could go to hell. Although "Information Technology" is *nowhere* in her resumé it should be. From mobiles to computers to services, she learned them, deciphered them, fixed them, dealt with their near-useless foreign help desk operators and kept me up and running. Whenever something was out of our ability to address, she was there for me to vent to.

As far as "bills" went, my mother on my side and both parents on her side repeatedly blessed us and helped keep the lights on.

Several times, well-wishers have promised to donate regularly but never did. Mark (a Christian truck-driver) never promised, he just did it. His generosity kept me at my desk instead of flipping burgers.

Steve is another dear friend who has made this book possible, because he is obedient to the Voice of the Holy Spirit.

I have reached out to nearly everyone of note in the "alternative media" community and been shunned by each and every one. Felipe Robles came to me. Since then, his research, writing and aid have become foundational to my efforts to expose the Great Harlot and I am honored to have him write the Forward to this exposé.

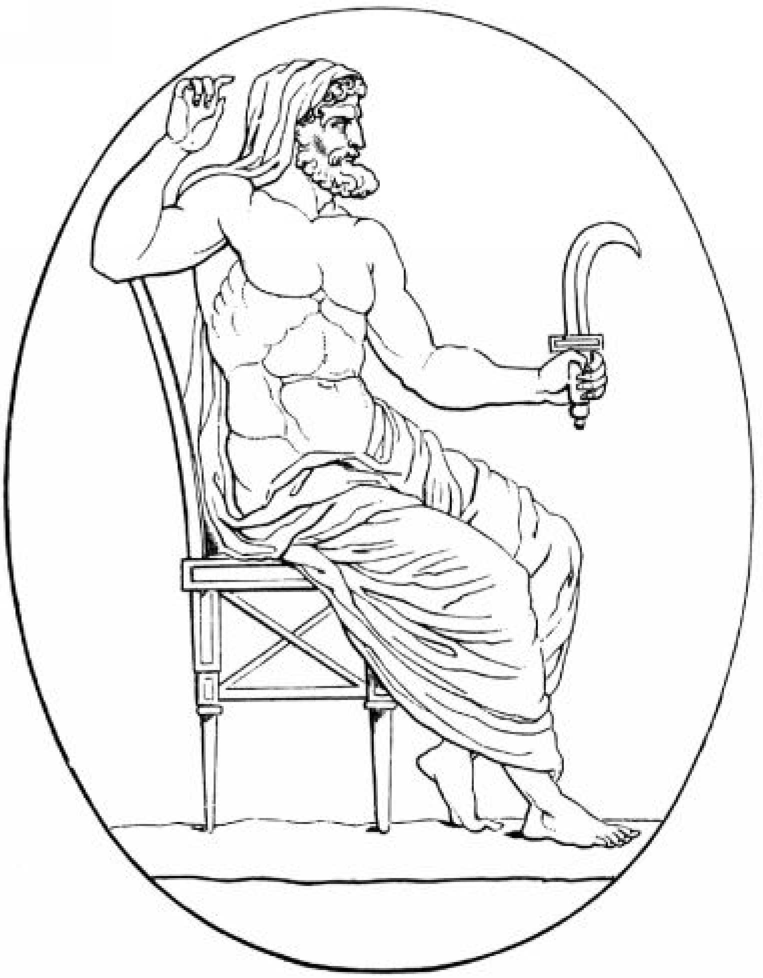

Cronus depicted with the specialized ritual knife he used to castrate his father. (Wikimedia Commons) According to Hesiod, the Titan Cronus so lusted for power that he castrated his father Uranus, then married his sister Rhea and reigned with her as king and queen.

When it was prophesied that one of his own children would dethrone him, he began devouring them as they were born.

In Roman mythology Cronus was adopted and renamed Saturnus, a title with roots in the Hebrew *Satan*.

CONTENTS

Acknowledgements..i
Preface..vii
Forward..viii
Chapter 1: The Devil’s Simulation...1
Truth Mixed With Lies..3
Phrygian “Freedom”..13
The First “Orgy Island”..32
Chapter 2: The Beast Transformed..39
Saint Simon..49
Chapter 3: Slavers...51
For Whom The Bell Tolls..74
Chapter 4: The Pedocracy Puts on a Lab Coat.............................78
The Pedophiles of Pseudo-Science..108
Criminal Behavior..118
Networking the Devil’s Simulation...143
Chapter 5: Preyed Upon..145
Chapter 6: “Lolita”..167
“Baby Burlesks”...190
Satanic Serendipity?..191
Stockholm Syndrome..193
Chapter 7: No Laughing Matter..194
Chapter 8: Spotlighting...207
Boston Catholic Outreach to “Sexual Minorities”.......................217
Chapter 9: Helter Skelter..237
Young Charlie..242
“Charlie’s Girls”...248
Helter Skelter..255

Chapter 10: Maskell—The *Real* Murdering Monster, Not Manson......258
But Nun Are Brave.......269
Black Sabbath.......270
Serial Lawlessness.......275
Murder(s).......296
Chapter 11: "A Gross Breach Of Trust..".......298
John Charles McQuaid: Ruler of Catholic Ireland.......321
Chapter 12: The Milwaukee Cannibal.......329
Chapter 13: Paedophiles Prove War is Pointless.......348
Chapter 14: Federal Bureau of Obfuscation.......363
Chapter 15: House of Horrors.......370
All Roads Still Lead To Rome.......387
London.......390
Shirley Oaks / Lambeth.......393
Chapter 16: Who Took Johnny?.......408
Where's Johnny?.......427
Depressed.......437
Chapter 17: In The Heart Of The Beast.......443
Chapter 18: Milk Carton Kids.......450
Chapter 19: "Satanic Panic".......456
The Mayor of Sin City.......461
Hysterical.......467
Chapter 20: "Just A Cog".......473
Taken.......486
Chapter 21: The ***Boys Town*** Cover-Up.......498
Author, Author.......502
Under Sus-Spence.......503
Good Morning Vietnam!.......509
Chapter 22: Muddy Waters In Arkansas.......512

Chapter 23: *Primæ Noctis*..524
Ridsdale & Pell..527

Chapter 24: Grove Ritual..579
Richard Allen Davis...581
Three Strikes...583
No Klaas...585
Bohemian..588

Chapter 25: River's End..592

Chapter 26: Maddie...608

Chapter 27: The Black Waters of Malta...613
Joseph Schmitz...620
J. Cofer Black...623
Special..634

Chapter 28: Vampire of the Caribbean...641
The Patron Saint of NAMBLA..646

Chapter 29: Child Predator Services..647

Chapter 30: Pedd State...655
Both Sides of the Street..663

Chapter 31: "#PizzaGate"..672
Learning Against Learning...678

Chapter 32: CONCLUSION...692

About the Author..693

Preface

“How could ‘they’ keep a conspiracy secret?”

“Of *course* we went to the moon!”

Of *course* Lee Harvey Oswald fired three shots from an antiquated 6.5mm bolt-action Manlicher-Carcano from 200 yards away in 8.3 seconds blowing off the *back* of President Kennedy’s head (shooting from behind him).

What you are about to read in these pages will forever put to bed any notion of normalcy, trust in your major institutions or ease of sleep that you ever had.

A system of evil controls your government, your military, your law enforcement, your judges and even your entertainment that is so vile the details of it may very well leave you catatonic.

It is, quite literally, of “Biblical proportions”.

AUTHOR’S NOTES:

Multiple citations are not redundantly attributed but the bibliography is meticulous and exhaustive. It was my intent to give you all the tools you would need to verify my work and pick up where I left off. I have maintained hyperlinks, color and a few highlights for digital versions of this book.

In dealing with these issues, I will frequently rely upon my own Christian Faith for moral references as well as passages from the Bible to validate my positions. In no way do I wish this to alienate non-Christians as this information is for anyone who lives as a slave under the current system of secret oppression.

That’s about “99%” of you.

FORWARD

Growing up as a Seventh Day Adventist, I was quickly introduced to the concept that the Roman Catholic Church was some sort of devilish cult. Grandma would shout “Beast!” as soon as the Pope appeared on TV, usually to address and/or condemn any random act of violence happening in the world. Of course, at the time I gave little to no importance to what the old man dressed in white had to say. If only I knew...

Time passed and my heart was continually hardened as I made my way through the Godless system of secular education. Even the daily Bible readings I had with my parents as a child felt silly and vague by the time I was in college. It seemed that the fears of Martin Luther concerning the Universities turning into gates to hell were indeed true. The world, or more precisely the Devil’s Simulation, had successfully convinced me that all I had ever learned about God was based on fairy tales: moral stories not to be taken literally.

By destiny, or by God’s Plan (as I prefer to think), I decided to move to the United States as many Latinos do in search of a better life. Digging for the Truth was in no way part of my plan. However, as I started browsing countless “conspiracy theory” websites and watching even more YouTube videos on the topic, my view of the world radically changed. All the sudden names like “Rockefeller”, “Rothschild” and “Bilderberg” popped up on my radar and I thought I had everything figured out: “It’s the Jews!”. Well, not all of them. Just the bad ones…

But at this stage, I came across an interview with a researcher named “Johnny Cirucci”. Never heard of him before anywhere around the “Truth Community” but decided to give him a chance not knowing at the time that that particular interview would change my life forever. Johnny was exposing with sources and citations what could easily be tracked: who was really responsible for the endless War on Terror, 9/11, the Kennedy and Lincoln assassinations and more. He proved that, to this very day, all roads lead to Rome. More precisely, they lead to the Vatican and the Jesuits.

As a result, I reached out to Johnny and to my surprise, he got back to me. Anyone that ever spent time researching these topics knows that it’s not the norm. Soon enough I was tracking for myself the Catholics or Jesuits in the woodpiles of many prominent people in the world. From politics to entertainment, I was able to find the Catholic connections with no effort. It’s like they were there all the time, but only at that moment I had acquired the proper glasses to see past the innumerous distractions. Practically, what started out as a hobby evolved into a volunteer job.

The peak of our collaboration was a program Johnny and I did together in which we re-examined the infamous Franklin Cover-Up that took place in Omaha, Nebraska and surfaced publicly in the late 80’s. The information we gathered on this case alone was impressive. More astounding was the fact that it’s never been exposed the way it should. Did you know that Lawrence E. King Jr., then high-level Republican official and manager of the Franklin Federal Credit Union, procured boys to be abused by the Elite from Boys Town, a Catholic non-profit organization supposedly dedicated to care for children? How did such an organization manage to brilliantly disassociate itself from this story? Could it have been the fact that the lead perspective in the case, John DeCamp, studied in a Catholic monastery as a boy intending to be a priest? Or the fact that DeCamp was the lawyer of Monsignor Robert Hupp, the overseer of Boy’s Town at the time? Do you think Hupp’s actions at Boys Town contributed to him being nominated as a representative to the United Nations on behalf of children? Why did the FBI try to intimidate Alisha Owen, one of the victims? Why did it do whatever it took to cover-up the pedophilia allegations? Is it possible that their interests are not aligned with those of the American people?

[ix] It’s my opinion that the Boys Town Cover-Up (as it should be named) re-directed our attention towards exposing the underbelly of the world system, namely the rape and torture of kids and young adults. It wasn’t for the sake of devious pleasure alone, but as a requirement to anyone who wished to acquire power and influence. Hence: the “Pedocracy”. Recent developments in the case brought to light by the mainstream and alternative media as “PizzaGate” prompted common people to research this dark subject. However, as well-intentioned as a person can be, their efforts will

lead to little results without knowing the root cause of the problem. As Red Skull stated in the movie *Captain America: the First Avenger*, “cut off one head and two more shall take its place”.

In a world where it’s convenient to find information anywhere, disinformation agents and opportunists can be found in hoards. Who is to blame? Is it the Democrats or the Republicans? Or perhaps is it the bankers? How about the Satanists? The blame is cleverly shifted to fit the bias of each individual.

In the face of these odds, Johnny took upon himself the task of going against this terrible Babylonian Hydra that has been feeding off of our children since the beginning of time. As a true Protestant of his age, Johnny exposes the Roman Catholic Church and its Special Forces, the Jesuits, as the foundational structure through which the Devil has built and runs his simulation. In contrast to the movie *Spotlight*, which only focus on the dioceses of Boston and treats the problem as a recent one, you will learn that pedophilia in the priesthood is endemic and rampant throughout the world. Moreover, this behavior is not only tolerated but encouraged and can be traced back to the origins of the Papacy as it incorporated its philosophy from the Babylonian and Roman Empires that came before it. Johnny really goes deep into the rabbit-holes to explore the Catholic connections behind Jimmy Savile, Charles Manson, “Doctor” Alfred Kinsey, Jeffrey Epstein, Johnny Gosch and the Maddie McCann abduction, as well as many others. They are all the tie-ins that were meticulously covered-up or purposively ignored by agents of the Whore of Babylon in order to erase her tracks.

This is a book that perhaps none of us would like to write, but it’s paramount that this information come to light as the rape, torture, and murder of kids is ongoing. Even though it’s our firm belief that we’re entrusted with this knowledge and charged to act upon it by the Lord Jesus Christ, it should be the duty of every man, Christian or non-Christian, to care for the well-being of women and children. The Bible commands us to *have nothing to do with the fruitless deeds of darkness, but rather expose them* (Ephesians 5:11-12). It also guarantees us that Christ, upon His Return, will break them in pieces (Daniel 2:34) and this System shall be thrown down and *shalt not be found forevermore* (Revelation 18:21). It’s also worthy to remember that if you’re a Roman Catholic, Jesus has lovingly called you to *come out of her, lest you share in her sins, and lest you receive her plagues* (Revelation 18:4).

It’s impossible to tell all the stories of countless victims of Luciferian abuse in one work but at this time it’s the best we can do with the resources we have available. With this work, we show that we care for the little ones and exhort you to do the same as we patiently await the right time given by the Lord to take the next step and physically stand against the evildoers. Trust us, the time is coming!

I thank God for the opportunity to have met Johnny and the rest of the team. We will drive on as there is no coming back once you know the Truth. If you haven’t already, it’s my hope that you experience the same and, if possible, take the Lord with you in this journey.

~ Your Huckleberry, “Doc”

And it came about when Samuel was old, that he installed his sons as judges for Israel. ...

They were judging in Beersheba. But his sons did not walk in his way, for they followed after unlawful gain, and they took bribes, and they perverted justice.

And all the elders of Israel gathered together and they came to Samuel at Ramah. They said to him, "You are old and your sons do not walk in your ways. Now, install for us a king to govern us like all the nations."

But the thing was evil in the eyes of Samuel, because they said, "Give us a king to govern us." And Samuel prayed to the Lord.

The Lord said to Samuel, "Obey the voice of the people in relation to all that they say to you. For it is not you they have rejected, but Me they have rejected from reigning over them. Just as all the deeds which they have done to Me, from the day I brought them up from Egypt even to this day, in that they have forsaken Me and have served other gods, so they are doing also to you now. Now then, obey their voice. Only you will testify against them and proclaim to them the judgment concerning the king who will reign over them."

So Samuel said all the words of the Lord to the people who were asking from him a king. And he said, "This will be the judgment concerning the king who will reign over you:"

"Your sons he will take..."

— "And your daughters will be taken..."

~ I Samuel 8:1, 2-11, 14 (Modern English)

Chapter 1

The Devil's Simulation

~29 AD: *The Temptation of Christ.*

> *Again, the devil took Him up on a very high mountain and showed Him all the kingdoms of the world and their grandeur, and said to Him, "All these things I will give You if You will fall down and worship me."*
>
> *Then Jesus said to him, "Be gone, Satan! For it is written, 'You shall worship the Lord your God, and Him only shall you serve.'"*
>
> *Then the devil left Him, and immediately angels came and ministered to Him.* ~ Matthew 4:8-11 (Modern English)

Certainly, in our spinning-globe-Earth-modern-reality, such Bible passages seem quaint, perhaps even ridiculous.

But what if some version of the devil's narrative (remembering that he is the very "father of lies", [John 8:44]) were accurate?

Perhaps he has utilized whatever advantages he retained as an inter-dimensional entity, along with those loyal to him, and conducted a malignant version of the game "Sims" — slowly building empires from the ground up and giving his most trusted lieutenants control over principalities. (Daniel 10:13)

Perhaps God allowed this to take place for several reasons:

- He places restrictions upon His interventions to guarantee free will is granted His created beings.
- The malignancy of the empires created by the devil are used by God to test and refine His Children; to perfect them as companions for His Son. [Romans 8:29]
- He has pity for the angelic beings that do not receive the opportunity for redemption that human souls have. [Matthew

25:41; II Peter 2:4]

- He is giving those who choose to participate “enough rope to hang themselves” as a Testimony to His Justice.

500
500
100
100
STONE AGE
Menu
Chat
Diplomacy

Screenshot from the Microsoft video game *Age of Empires*.

(Wikimedia Commons/Fair Use)

If true, does this put the words of Jesus to Pontius Pilate in a different light, “My Kingdom is not of this world”? [John 18:36]

The Greek *κόσμου* (“kosmou”) translated as “world” has an interesting double meaning to include “adornment” or “trappings”. Is there a hidden metaphor that implies a malignant system at work; the devil’s empire-building simulation?

How can Christ be “King of kings and Lord of lords” (Revelation 19:16) and yet not rule “in this world”?

Was Jesus giving Pilate a false sense of security by *actually* saying “That which empowers Me is not the system which has elevated you...”?

This further makes sense in light of the assertion that all of Creation was made *through* Christ and *for* Him. (Colossians 1:16)

If true, then the Devil’s Simulation would be a tenuous parasite, controlling God’s Creation. As a fallen angel, he has the handicap of needing to co-opt human hands to do the work for him. He would need a system that insured the loyalty of anyone he empowered. It would be a system that guaranteed any human he used would someday share in his judgment.

Those who choose loyalty to God would be known by partaking of His Nature; compassion and selfless love. (I John 4:7-21) The devil would force his followers to show their allegiance by going as far in the opposite direction as possible: lust of any kind, feeding self-interest, creating a callous, inhuman monster.

This is exactly what history shows.

The Bible states that the first rebellion by man against God was led by Nimrod in Babylon.

Historian Alexander Hislop (1807 to 1865) wrote in his epic exposé on the Catholic Church — *The Two Babylons*[1] — that Nimrod (also known as “Ninus”) was executed by Noah’s son Shem, the progenitor of the Hebrew race, for apostasy. His body was cut into pieces and sent to the four corners of the Earth as a warning to anyone who might follow after him.

Thus began the deification and mythologizing of rebellion against God via a methodology so powerful it seems almost certainly to have come from a source outside our time/space continuum.

Truth Mixed With Lies

The Greek Titan Prometheus was said by the poet Hesiod to have stolen fire from Olympus to give to man. Furious with him, Zeus bound him to a rock amongst the mountains in the Caucasus where an eagle pulls out and devours his liver daily, as the immortal Titan's organ regenerated each night.

Prometheus is considered by the powerful Elite to be a metaphor for Lucifer, "the light-bearer", and "fire" is likened to the secret knowledge and power Lucifer bestows upon his worshippers.

Although the average rational adult sees such myths as laughable, the Luciferian Elite believe them to be the reality which guides their every move.

Their reverence for them is betrayed in their favorite, highly-controlled medium: movies.

In the climax of the $165,000,000 Disney/Marvel comics science fantasy extravaganza, *Doctor Strange* (starring Benedict Cumberbatch, Rachel McAdams, Mads Mikkelsen and Tilda Swinton), Strange faces off against interdimensional, world-ending evil in *Dormammu*. The hero (destined to become "Sorcerer Supreme") levitates into Dormammu's dimension against impossible odds and manages to trap Dormammu in a never-ending time loop but in order to do so, Strange must accept the dragon-creature killing him over and over and over again until Dormammu submits to a "bargain" in exhausted frustration.

Dr. Stephen Strange, by Maxifajardo, Wikimedia Commons

In that fantasy, Prometheus wins.

To add further twist, Benedict Cumberbatch also voiced and acted the computer-graphics-interfaced (“CGI”) Dormammu.

Also in 2016 was an even more blatant homáge to the unbelievable: the story of Osiris, Isis, Horus and Set retold with a $140,000,000 budget in *Gods of Egypt* starring *300*’s Gerard Butler.

A title search in the Internet Movie Database for “Hercules” turns up no fewer than *two hundred* works spanning from 1938 to 2017 (excluding documentaries on the propeller-driven military transport of the same name).

In the midst of Adam’s fall from grace came the promise of a Redeemer —

> *And the Lord God said unto the serpent,*
> *Because thou hast done this, thou art cursed above all cattle, and above every beast of the field; upon thy belly shalt thou go, and dust shalt thou eat all the days of thy life:*
> *And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her Seed;* [“He”; Hebrew ה֖וּא] *shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise His Heel.* ~ Genesis 3:14-15 (King James Version, capitalization added)

This prophecy of a Messiah who would arrive via a virgin birth (“Seed of the woman”, confirmed in Isaiah 7:14) and be cut off, but not for Himself (Daniel 9:26), only to return in power and glory (Acts 1:11, Isaiah 9:6-7) was co-opted and powerfully used by the worshippers of Lucifer — “Luciferians”.

Their legends had the wife of Nimrod (executed and dismembered by Noah’s son Shem for his rebellion against YHWH), Semiramis, seek out his body parts to re-assemble him. Unable to locate his genitals, some stated she fashioned them herself, others that the fish god Dagon pulled them from the water for her. She then applied sex-magic (designated by occultist Aleister Crowley as “magick”) and impregnated herself with the “child of promise” — her husband reincarnated and renamed Tammuz.

St. Peter’s Square, Daryl Mitchell, Wikimedia Commons

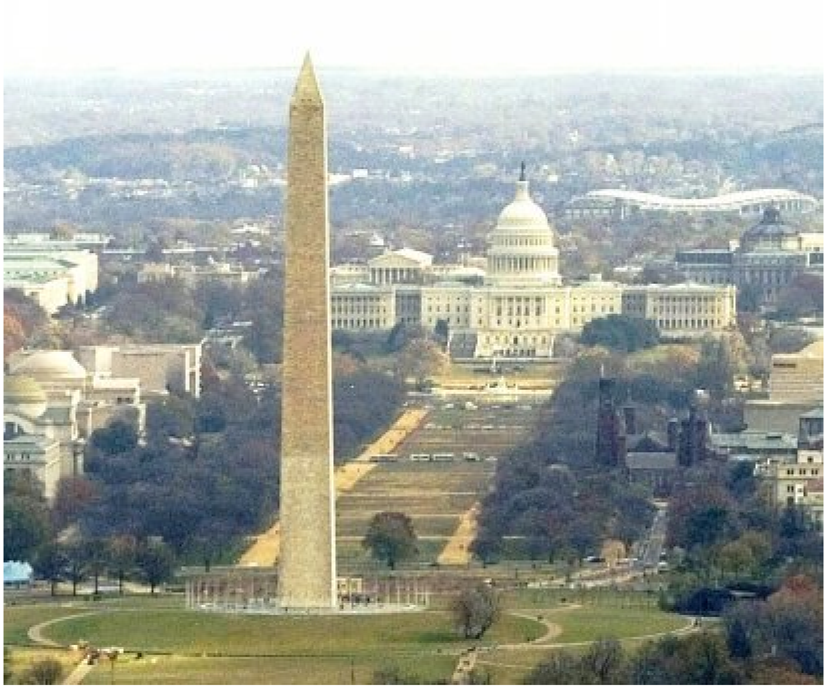

Chief Photographer’s Mate Johnny Bivera, U.S.N., Wikimedia Commons

This “sex-magick” is conjured in the architecture of the Vatican; an obelisk (phallus) across from a dome (womb).

> *The Egyptian version of the legend of Nimrod has a fascinating twist; the good god Osiris (Nimrod) is murdered by his evil brother Set (Shem) while his wife Isis (Semiramis) manages to conceive his son Horus with him, posthumously.*
>
> *It is this undead body part of Osiris that sprouts up the many obelisks around the world and the most significant of them are erected across from domed structures that represent the womb of Isis. ~ Illuminati Unmasked*[2]

This pattern was cunningly duplicated by Roman Catholic Freemason Pierre Charles “Peter” L’Enfant for Washington, District of Columbia, and finalized with the greatly exaggerated phallic obelisk of architect Robert Mills.

The “mother goddess” has taken on many forms through the centuries, “Columbia” being one of the more recent versions.

What has been consistent, however, has been the connection to debauchery, fixation on reproduction and proof of dedication by causing the innocent to suffer.

Bust of Attis, Jastrow, Wikimedia Commons

These are all foundational to the Devil's Simulation.

In Greece, the mother-goddess Cybele was honored in such fashion. The most iconic example of blood-sacrifice to Cybele was the slaughter of a bull upon her altar, known as the Taurobolium.

The consort of Cybele was Attis, a youth who was so dedicated to her that he cut off his own genitals in her service.

The voluntary or involuntary castration of young men became a key part of pagan rites.

Such boys were presented to kings as cowed servants, guaranteed not to interfere with royal harems.

These abominable practices go back to the dawn of "civilization".[3]

Across the centuries it was learned that court "eunuchs" could also be employed as minstrels known as "*castrati*" (singular, "*castrato*").

> *... lack of testosterone meant that [the victim's] epiphyses (bone-joints) did not harden in the normal manner. Thus the limbs of the castrati often grew unusually long, as did the bones of their ribs. This, combined with intensive training, gave them unrivalled lung-power and breath capacity.[1] Operating through small, child-sized vocal cords, their voices were also extraordinarily flexible, and quite different from the equivalent adult female voice. Their vocal range was higher than that of the uncastrated adult male. ~ Wikipedia*[4]

With good reason is the practice known by an Italian term. It wasn't until 1861[5] that the practice was finally outlawed in Italy but it continued to be openly “tolerated” and secretly encouraged by the Vatican at least until 1959.

Thousands of boys were mutilated regularly, ostensibly to give them singing voices unattainable any other way but most never sang after they were victimized. As the *Guardian* admitted —

> *... let us remember the many thousands of boys who did go under the knife (up to 4,000 a year, between the age of eight and 13), but whose names are long forgotten. ... hundreds* [ended up] *on the streets as beggars or prostitutes.*[6]

“Prostitute” is extremely misleading. It conjures images of male gigolos servicing desperate women.

The reality (then and now) is that the majority of male “prostitutes” are violated serving homosexual men.

This was particularly the case for boys who had been feminized by castration.

Fitting in perfectly with the agenda was how most boys never survived the “procedure”. Excused as having fallen to incompetent “surgeons”, they were offered up before Attis and Cybele regardless of the reason, whether truth or propaganda.

> *And those were the ones who survived the operation. Depending on the executant — at best a skilled surgeon, at worst a back-street barber or abortionist, or the knife-wielders of Norcia, Umbria’s pig (and boy) castration capital — there was a very high mortality rate. Some of these deaths were the result of haemorrhaging or post-operative infection in a pre-antibiotic age. Others came from overdoses of opium, used as a sedative in conjunction with a hot bath and judicious pressure on the carotid arteries.*[7]

Even as anger rose over the practice, *castrati* like Alessandro Moreschi (1858 – 1922) continued to entertain Papal courts in the Sistine Chapel.

His voice was captured by phonograph recordings and again the *Guardian* must admit the mutilation did him little good.

> *The strange, swooping, curdled sound of Moreschi's voice was subsequently captured for posterity on phonograph rolls in the early 1900s. This is fascinating, but by no means easy listening; ... these recordings from his early 40s show him in less than lovely vocal shape.* [8]

The fact that *castroti* were common in Rome into the 20th century is labeled by such media as "ambivalent" at best and "hypocritical" at worst, citing supposed Vatican "restrictions" against the practice.

The reality is that no modern Pope has acknowledged the practice, not to mention outlawed it or even apologized for being the bastion of its proliferation.

> *Italy's leading newspaper, **Corriere della Sera**, said the Pope ... should follow up his admission of church wrongs ... by expressing sorrow for the castrati.*
>
> *"Despite the willingness to address just about any issue, the current pope has yet to confront an unresolved problem of ... history. Why doesn't he suggest prayers and remorse for the church's past connivance with the practice of castrating males?"*
>
> *Human rights activists and academics endorsed the call. Amnesty International said the value of recognising past wrongs in an apology should not be underestimated.*
>
> *"Many of those afflicted by ongoing human rights abuses — including genital mutilations of women and rape as torture — desperately desire official recognition of the terrible wrongs done to them. An apology from those involved may be the hardest thing of all to achieve, and the most valued."*[9]

In fact, the only Papal documents referenced are those supporting the barbarism!

> *Pope Sisto V ... sanctioned their presence in the Vatican by a papal bull in 1589.*[10]

When sources like *The Guardian* greatly over-state the musical excuse for the ancient rite, without ever calling it a ritual of pagan worship, one wonders how the research could be so short-sighted.

When media goes even further by misquoting and blaming the Bible, the "wonder" is solved (they're agents of the Vatican).

> *Their ability to sing beyond normal human limits enraptured opera-goers, emperors and popes, who commissioned a choir of castrati to perform in the Sistine chapel. An edict by St. Paul prevented women singing in church.*[11]

Note that no such "edict" is cited.

There are several New Testament passages from Paul, Peter and even Jesus regarding gender roles but they usually pertain to the relationship between a husband and wife.

Wives are told to submit to the authority of their husbands [I Peter 3:1] but immediately following husbands are told to cherish and care for their wives in honoring their submission. The consequences of their failure to do so would affect their very communion with God!

> *Likewise, you husbands, live considerately with your wives, giving honor to the woman as the weaker vessel, since they too are also heirs of the grace of life, so that your prayers will not be hindered.* ~ I Peter 3:7, Modern English

Essentially, God will turn His Back upon a husband who fails to cherish his wife with the sacrificial love equal to that which put Christ on the cross. [Ephesians 5:25]

With that context, Paul addressed women as students of the Word (not in worship). He also made it clear that such an "edict" was his in keeping with Jewish Law [I Corinthians 14:34], not as a specific Commandment from God.

> *A woman must quietly receive instruction with entire submissiveness. But I do not allow a woman to teach or exercise authority over a man,*

> *but to remain quiet. For it was Adam who was first created, and then Eve.* ~ I Timothy 2:11-13, New American Standard

As one understands that the agenda of the Roman Catholic "Counter-Reformation", masterminded by the Jesuits, is to discredit the Bible, it becomes clear whom the editors at *The Guardian* (and other major papers) answer to.

However, a little-reported story has surfaced from the Netherlands which proves beyond any doubt that mutilation of boys has a much more sinister purpose for Rome.

The *Handelsblad en de Nieuwe Rotterdamse Courant*, a Dutch newspaper (usually abbreviated "NRC"), broke the story briefly in 2012 and it was subsequently remarked upon by the *Telegraph*. Beyond that, media ignored it — more proof of who is actually in control.

In 1956, young Henk Heithuis reported that he had been sexually abused by clergy at a Roman Catholic boarding home. In response to his report, he was forcibly castrated.

When he attempted to go to the police, he was turned back over to Catholic authorities.

> *Two clergymen were convicted of abuse but Mr. Heithuis, a victim, was nonetheless transferred by police to a Catholic psychiatric hospital before being admitted to the St. Joseph Hospital in Veghel later that year.*[12]

When NRC reporter Joep Dohmen tracked the story down, he was shocked to learn of collusion between Dutch Catholic leadership and government officials to punish Henk for being an unruly victim of institutionalized pedophilia; an unwilling sacrifice to Attis and Cybele.

> *There, court papers confirm, he was castrated "at his own request", despite no submission of his written consent. Sources told Mr. Dohmen that the surgical removal of testicles was regarded as a treatment for homosexuality and also as a punishment for those who accused clergy of sexual abuse.*[13]

Would that this “treatment” should be inflicted upon all pedophiles in power, particularly Papal predators, the positive results would be instantaneous.

Henk Heithuis went public in 1956. Within two years he was dead from a “car accident”.

Upon examination of the deep corruption that mingled both Catholic and governmental authorities, foul play is practically a foregone conclusion.

What’s more, Henk’s case was just one of a sickening and unreported large number.

> *Cornelius Rogge, 79, a well-known Dutch sculptor whose family knew Mr. Heithuis in the 1950s, reported the castration to an official inquiry into abuse within the Catholic Church. But his evidence was ignored.*
>
> *“We once asked Henk to drop his pants when the women were gone. He did that. He was maimed totally. It was a huge shock,” he said.*
>
> *Last December, an official investigation by Wim Deetman, a former Dutch minister, received 1,800 reports of sexual abuse by clergy or volunteers within Dutch Catholic dioceses in the period since 1945.*
>
> *The Deetman inquiry received a report of the Heithuis case from Mr. Rogge but it was not followed up because “there were few leads for further research”.*
>
> *Evidence emerged on Monday that government inspectors were aware that minors were being castrated while in Catholic-run psychiatric institutions.*
>
> *Minutes of meetings held in the 1950s show that inspectors were present when castrations were discussed. The documents also reveal that the Catholic staff did not think parents needed to be involved.*
>
> *There are also allegations that Vic Marijnen, a former Dutch Prime Minister, who died in 1975, was linked to the case.*
>
> *In 1956, Mr. Marijnen was the chairman of the Gelderland children’s home where Mr. Heithuis and other children were abused. He*

> *intervened to have prison sentences dropped against several priests convicted of abusing children.*[14]

Phrygian "Freedom"

Attis is often depicted wearing a "Phrygian cap" and was later associated with the Roman mystery cult of Mithras.

Worship of Cybele blended into following the Earth goddess Gaia, though the importance of debauchery and brutality was more likened to what was done in honor of Dionysus, known to the Romans as Bacchus. [italics suspended, except in the original, for ease of reading]

> Ancient followers of Dionysus believed he was the presence that is otherwise defined as the craving within man that longs to "let itself go" and to "give itself over" to baser earthly desires. What a Christian might resist as the lustful wants of the carnal man, the followers of Dionysus embraced as the incarnate power that would, in the next life, liberate the souls of mankind from the constraints of this present world and from the customs which sought to define respectability through a person's obedience to moral law. Until that day arrive, the worshippers of Dionysus attempted to bring themselves into union with the god through a ritual casting off of the bonds of sexual denial and primal constraint by seeking to attain a higher state of ecstasy. The uninhibited rituals of ecstasy (Greek for "outside the body") was believed to bring the followers of Dionysus into a supernatural condition that enabled them to escape the temporary limitations of the body and mind and to achieve a state of *enthousiasmos,* or, outside the body and "inside the god." In this sense Dionysus represented a dichotomy within the Greek religion, as the primary maxim of the Greek culture was one of moderation, or, "nothing too extreme." But Dionysus embodied the absolute extreme in that he sought to inflame the forbidden passions of human desire. Interestingly, and most students of psychology will understand, this gave Dionysus a stronger allure among the Greeks who otherwise tried in so many ways to suppress and control the wild and secret lusts of the human heart. Dionysus resisted every such effort, and, according to myth, visited a terrible madness upon those who tried to deny him free expression.

This Dionystic idea of mental disease resulting from the suppression of secret inner desires, especially aberrant sexual desires, was later reflected in the atheistic teachings of Sigmund Freud. Freudianism might therefore be called the grandchild of the cult of Dionysus. Conversely, the person who gave himself over to the will of Dionysus was rewarded with unlimited psychological and physical delights. These mythical systems of mental punishments and physical rewards based on resistance and/or submission to Dionysus, were both symbolically and literally illustrated in the cult rituals of the Bacchae, as the Bacchae women (married and unmarried Greek women had the “right” to participate in the mysteries of Dionysus) migrated in frenzied hillside groups, dressed transvestite in fawn skins and accompanied by screaming, music, dancing, and licentious behavior. When, for instance, a baby animal was too young and lacking in instinct to sense the danger and run away from the revelers, it was picked up and suckled by nursing mothers who participated in the hillside rituals. On the other hand, when older animals sought to escape the marauding Bacchae, they were considered “resistant” to the will of Dionysus and were torn apart and eaten alive as a part of the fevered ritual. Human participants were sometimes subjected to the same orgiastic cruelty, as the rule of the cult was “anything goes,” including lesbianism, bestiality, etc. Later versions of the ritual (Bacchanalia) expanded to include pedophilia and male revelers, and perversions of sexual behavior were often worse between men than they were between men and women. Any creature that dared to resist such perversion of Dionysus was subjected to *sparagmos* (“torn apart’) and *omophagia* (“consumed raw”).

In B.C. 410, Euripides wrote of the bloody rituals of the Bacchae in his famous play, *The Bacchantes*:

> the Bacchantes...with hands that bore no weapon of steel, attacked our cattle as they browsed. Then wouldst thou have seen Agave mastering some sleek lowing calf, while others rent the heifers limb from limb. Before thy eyes there would have been hurling of ribs and hoofs this way and that, and strips of flesh, all blood bedabbled, dripped as they hung from the pine branches. Wild bulls,

> > that glared but now with rage along their horns, found themselves tripped up, dragged down to earth by countless maidens hands.[1]
>
> Euripides went on to describe how Pentheus, the King of Thebes, was torn apart and eaten alive by his own mother as, according to the play, she fell under the spell of Dionysus. ~ Horn[15]

In Rome, worship of Cybele was said to give priestesses the ability to attain great knowledge or see into the future — a process known as the Sibylline Oracle.

Sexual perversion also translated into military power, especially in Greece.

Sparta practiced homosexual pairing amongst warriors but the most renowned and successful was the Sacred Band of Thebes; an elite unit of no more than 150 soldiers each having a homosexual lover.

2nd century Roman marble of Mithras slaughtering a sacrificial bull, always depicted as being aided by a serpent and a scorpion which attacks the bull’s genitals. This piece was transported from Rome and brought to the British Museum because of its secret importance. Carole Raddato, Wikimedia Commons

These practices are not as removed from our modern times as one would think. The glorifying by movies and militaries of Spartans as ultimate warriors is a sign.

A top proponent of liberalizing regulations restricting homosexuality in the United States military has been four-star Special Forces General Stanley McChrystal.[16] A powerful figure, McChrystal served as head of Joint Special Operations Command, Commander of the International Security Assistance Force and Commander, U.S. Forces Afghanistan as well as Director of the Joint Staff.

McChrystal's treasonous, bloody fingerprints were all over the body of NFL star-turned Army Ranger Pat Tillman, as well as *Rolling Stone* journalist Michael Hastings.[17]

McChrystal also —

- *Ordered the rules of engagement that put American soldiers, sailors, airmen and Marines in needless danger.*[420]
- *Pushed the integration of overt homosexuals into the military ranks to destroy effectiveness and cohesion*[cxxii]*.*[421]
- *Banned "Conservative" Fox News from his entire Headquarters (**hundreds** of soldiers effected in their orbit around McChrystal's arrogance).*[422]
- *Joined Jesuit-trained*[423] *Barack Obama with Jesuit-trained*[424,cxxiii] *Secretary of Defense/Director of the Central Intelligence Agency Leon Panetta in asserting*[425] *that "serious action*[426]*" needs to be taken on confiscating privately-owned weapons from the American people.*

~ *Secret History*[18]

On April 19th (a date of strong Luciferian significance[19]), 1989, Turret Two of the USS Iowa battleship exploded killing 47 sailors. Gunner's Mate 2nd Class Clayton Hartwig was said by the Navy to have rigged the explosion as a funeral pyre for himself.

The Iowa was the lead ship in her class; the most powerful sea-going vessel anywhere at the time and Gunner’s Mate Hartwig was the Navy’s warrior.

> *Hartwig, who was 6 feet 2 and weighed more than 200 pounds, “always liked to portray the bad-ass image,” according to another shipmate. “He used to talk about gassing people... about sticking gasoline-soaked toothpicks in people so they would die in a slow way.” “Death and destruction was Clay’s power trip,” said a sailor who spent a lot of time with him on the Iowa. “That’s everything he did; everything he said. It always led back down to the bottom line of death and destruction. ~ The Washington Post*[20]

The Iowa in Los Angeles. Jonathan Williams, Wikimedia Commons

Hartwig was also homosexual.

The Phrygian cap worn by Attis and Mithras was seized upon by the Luciferian Elite who manipulated the “revolutions” of the 18th century in America and France.

Maintaining the Templar duality of their icon, the two-headed Roman eagle —

Templar Seal

The two heads are the two faces of secrecy; one for the initiated and the other for the uninitiated. ~ Secret History[21]

— the Phrygian cap was re-branded as a symbol of “freedom”.

If the uninitiated asked any questions, they were told it was the cap worn by emancipated Roman slaves. There was little danger the uneducated masses would connect the dots to satanic debauchery and brutality, though such was the fruit of the French Revolution, in particular.

You can even name your artwork “The Furies of the Guillotine” and the masses still wouldn’t understand.

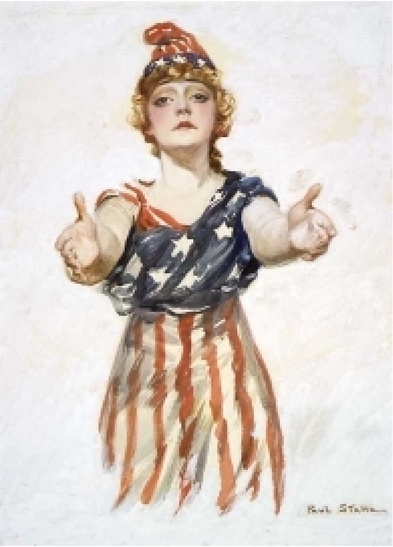

“Columbia”, Paul Stahr

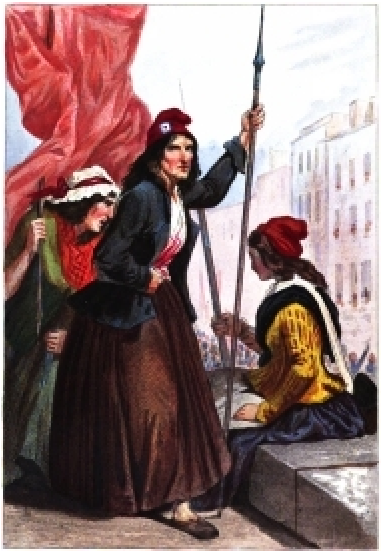

***Les Furies de Guillotine*, Baron & Massard**

Wikimedia Commons

The “Furies” were vicious goddesses of vengeance, birthed when Cronus castrated his own father Uranus and cast his genitalia into the sea. They arose from the resulting foam to torment their victims mercilessly.

Who has preserved this satanic system (the Devil’s Simulation) into modern times?

— A surprising source: the Roman Catholic Church.

Although there have been several orders of knights, priests and nuns who have served “the Church” in this evil endeavor, none have rivaled the inversely-named “Society of Jesus”, founded by Ignatius de Loyola in 1534. They have been ruefully nicknamed “Jesuits”; *jesuita*, “Are you Jesus-like?” It is meant as an ironic accusation as “the Company” specializes in any method necessary to further the hegemony of the keepers of the Devil’s Simulation from war to assassination to blackmail to organized crime like trafficking in narcotics or human beings.

The guillotine was invented by a Jesuit priest and professor, Dr. Joseph-Ignace Guillotin.[i]

The Jesuits are as equally responsible for the American Revolution[22] as they are the French Revolution — [italics suspended except in the original]

> The Jesuit Order was created by Catholic Ignatius Loyola in 1500s to counter the Reformation and uplift the authority of the Papacy.
>
> Since the beginning, the purpose of the Jesuits has included global political domination, as Loyola himself once said:
>
> > *Finally, Let all with such artfulness* ***gain the ascendant over princes, noblemen, and the magistrates*** *of every place, that they may be ready* ***at our beck****, even to sacrifice their nearest relations and most intimate friends, when we say it is for* ***our interest and advantage*** *(emphasis added).*[i]
>
> The world’s wars and revolutions occur because the Jesuits want to establish a one-world government with the Papacy at its head. Even over a century ago their plans were succeeding, as 19th-century theologian Luigi De Sanctis tells us:
>
> > *At what then do the Jesuits aim? According to them, they only seek the greater glory of God; but if you examine the facts you will find that they aim at* ***universal dominion*** *alone. They have rendered themselves indispensable to the Pope, who, without them, could not exist, because Catholicism is identified with them. They have rendered themselves indispensable to governors and*

> > ***hold revolutions in their hands****; and in this way, either under one name or another, it is* ***they who rule the world*** *(emphasis added).*[ii]
>
> As the sources below attest, the Jesuits have been involved in — and even spearheaded — many of the world's worst wars, revolutions, and massacres. At times, the Jesuits are directly involved, at other times, they use their influence over the Freemasons and other secret societies. ...
>
> The French Revolution and the spread of the antiChristian Cult of Reason were the result of Jesuit, Masonic, and Illuminati influence.
>
> Jesuit Professor Adam Weishaupt created the Order of the Illuminati in 1776 in Bavaria, Germany. These Illuminati were part of the coalition of rebels that became the Jacobins — the group responsible for the French Revolution.
>
> > *The Jacobins currently terrorizing France, Barruel argued in his preface, could not have appeared out of thin air...The principal authors of the conspiracy, he claimed, were Voltaire, Jean-le-Rond d'Alembert, and King Frederick of Prussia, who had secretly planned to destroy Christianity...These "sophists" had formed an alliance with the Freemasons, whose antireligious conspirital origins Barruel traced back to the medieval Knights Templars. The final and most utterly evil group in this triple conspiracy, however, were the Bavarian Illuminati, under their satanic leader Adam Weishaupt. Jacobinism had emerged out of the union of these three groups.*[x]
>
> The French philosopher Voltaire, whose ideas were instrumental in the French Revolution, was a Freemason — as was Napoleon... ~ Amazing Discoveries[23]

Much more than a Freemason, François-Marie "Voltaire" Arouet was a Jesuit-trained Roman Catholic who supposedly "left the Church" yet his efforts brilliantly advanced the Devil's Simulation for the Jesuits by taking the crimes of Catholicism and wrongfully applying them to Christianity.

The Catholic Church has far more in common with her predecessor — the Roman Empire — than with Christianity, and it was even prophesied to be so in the Christian Bible.

The Prophet Daniel had a vision of the four beasts (empires) that would rule from his day forward, recounted in Chapter 7 of the Book of Daniel.

> *The first was like a lion and had eagle's wings. I watched until its wings were plucked and it was lifted up from the Earth and made to stand on the feet as a man, and a man's heart was given to it.* ~ Daniel 7:4 (Modern English)

Babylon conquered with the ferocity of a lion and the swiftness of an eagle. Despite the recounting of Nebuchadnezzar's relationship with YHWH in Daniel, it is a nation the Bible uses as a metaphor for all of man's rebellions against God.

> *Another beast appeared, a second, like a bear, and it raised itself up on one side, and it had three ribs in its mouth between its teeth. And they said to it, "Arise, devour much flesh."* ~ Daniel 7:5 (Modern English)

The Medes and Persians allied together and quickly overthrew the empire of Lydia (546 B.C.) before conquering Babylon (539 B.C.) and even bested Egypt (525 B.C.). At first the Medes lead the coalition but soon the Persians became the stronger.

> *After this I looked and there was another, like a leopard, which had on its back four wings of a fowl. The beast also had four heads. And dominion was given to it.* ~ Daniel 7:6 (Modern English)

Greece, under Alexander, overcame nations even faster than Babylon did (perhaps twice as fast).

But in 323 B.C., Alexander died suddenly at only 32 years of age — numbers not lost on the Luciferians. Whether his age played a role in his death can not be known for sure but Diodorus, Plutarch, Arrian and Justin all entertain the notion that Alexander was murdered by poisoning.

Upon his death, Greece was divided into four empires ruled by each of his most powerful generals: Lysimachus, Cassander, Ptolemy and Seleucus.

But it was the last beast that frightened Daniel the most.

> *After this I saw in the visions at night a fourth beast, dreadful and terrible, and exceedingly strong. And it had great iron teeth. It devoured and broke in pieces, and stamped the rest with its feet. And it was different from all the beasts that were before it, and it had ten horns.*
>
> *I considered the horns, when there came up among them another little horn before whom three of the first horns were plucked up by the roots. And there, in this horn, were eyes like the eyes of man, and a mouth speaking great things.* ~ Daniel 7:7-8 (Modern English)

Rome was, indeed, a dreadful empire, but is there a dichotomy in this final beast?

Do the ten horns replaced by one speak of the suppression of the Roman Senate in favor of the Emperor or does this bespeak of the office of the Papacy?

— or both?

The teeth of iron are consistent with the dream Nebuchadnezzar had of the same four empires presaged as four metals that composed the statue of a giant man — the legs and feet of the statue were made of iron. (Daniel 2)

But why do both visions end with the Roman Empire? Are these prophecies incomplete and useless to modern readers, or is Rome still secretly in control?

It is only within the last century that we even must ask this question as Rome’s control was a clear and present danger, not a secret.

The Protestant historian Henry Grattan Guinness felt it was obvious and specifically referenced Daniel 7 in proving his point. [italics suspended except in the original]

> It is important that we should clearly grasp one great historical fact; i.e. the rule of Rome has never, since it first commenced, ceased to exist, save once, for a very brief period during the Gothic invasions. It has changed in character, as we have seen, but it has continued.

Rome ruled the known world at the first advent of Christ, and still rules hundreds of millions of mankind, and will continue so to do right up till the second advent of Christ.

So this prophecy teaches; for not until the Son of man takes the dominion of the earth, and establishes a kingdom that shall never pass away, is the monster representing Roman rule destroyed.

The rule of Rome, we repeat, *has never ceased*.

It was a secular pagan power for five or six centuries; it has been an ecclesiastical and apostate Christian power ever since, that is to say, for twelve or thirteen centuries.

There lay a brief period between these two main stages, during which professing Christian emperors ruled from Rome, followed by an interval when, for a time, it seemed as if the great city had received a fatal blow from her Gothic captors. ...

The rule of Rome revived in a new form, and was as real under the popes of the thirteenth century as it had been under the Caesars of the first.

It was as oppressive, cruel, and bloody under Innocent III as it had been under Nero and Domitian.

The reality was the same, though the forms had changed.

The Caesars did not persecute the witnesses of Jesus more severely and bitterly than did the popes; Diocletian did not destroy the saints or oppose the gospel more than did the Inquisition of Papal days.

Rome is one and the same all through, both locally and morally.

One dreadful wild beast represents her, though the symbol, like the history it prefigures, has two parts. There was the undivided stage, and there has been the tenfold stage. The one is Rome pagan, the other Rome Papal; the one is the old empire, the other the modern pontificate; the one is the empire of the Caesars, the other is the Roman Papacy.[24]

Even the “great boasts” of the little horn correspond with depictions of this same office described in the Book of Revelation.

In fact, Revelation states that this final beast will have the traits of the previous 3 empires (the pagan beliefs of which have been retained by the Vatican).

> *I stood on the sand of the sea. And I saw a beast rising out of the sea, having seven heads and ten horns, with ten crowns on his horns, and blasphemous names on his heads.*
>
> *The beast which I saw was like a leopard. His feet were like those of a bear, and his mouth like the mouth of a lion. The dragon gave him his power and his throne and great authority.*
>
> *I saw one of his heads as if it was mortally wounded, but his deadly wound was healed, and the whole world marveled and followed the beast.*
>
> *They worshipped the dragon who gave authority to the beast. And they worshipped the beast, saying, “Who is like the beast? Who is able to wage war with him?”*
>
> *He was given a mouth speaking great things and blasphemies. And he was given authority to wage war for forty-two months.*
>
> *He opened his mouth to speak blasphemies against God, to blaspheme His Name and His Tabernacle and those who dwell in Heaven.*
>
> *It was granted to him to wage war with the saints and to overcome them. And authority was given him over every tribe and tongue and nation.*
>
> *All who dwell on the earth will worship him, all whose names have not been written in the Book of Life of the Lamb who was slain from the foundation of the world.* ~ Revelation 13:1-8

A “beast” in the Bible describes an empire, a “woman” describes a religious system. Rome is shockingly, accurately described as both.

One of the seven angels who had the seven bowls came and talked with me, saying to me, "Come, I will show you the judgment of the great prostitute who sits on many waters, with whom the kings of the Earth committed adultery, and the inhabitants of the Earth were made drunk with the wine of her sexual immorality."

Then he carried me away in the Spirit into the wilderness. I saw a woman sitting on a scarlet beast which was full of blasphemous names, having seven heads and ten horns.

The woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet, and adorned with gold and precious stones and pearls, having in her hand a golden cup full of abominations and the filth of her sexual immorality.

On her forehead a name was written:

MYSTERY,
BABYLON THE GREAT,
THE MOTHER OF PROSTITUTES
AND OF THE ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH.

I saw the woman, drunk with the blood of the saints and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus. ~ Revelation 17:1-6 (MEV)

Monsignor Rauber, Cardinal Danneels, Monsignor Vangheluwe, Bishop of Bruges and his successor Monsignor Jozef De Kesel. Vangheluwe was forced to step down due to predatory pedophilia cover-up. Carolus, Wikimedia Commons.

Sexual infidelity in the Bible is often used as a metaphor for blasphemy, but it can also speak of literal sexual perversion.

If you say the words “Passion Play” by themselves, you wouldn’t think they had a “religious” connotation but contemporary society automatically understands them to be Roman Catholic “Easter” depictions of the trials, torture and crucifixion of Jesus Christ.

However they are all cunning remembrances of pagan sexual perversion masquerading as Christian observance.

> *The Sumerian goddess Inanna, or Ishtar, was hung naked on a stake, and was subsequently resurrected and ascended from the underworld. One of the oldest resurrection myths is Egyptian Horus. Born on 25 December, Horus and his damaged eye became symbols of life and rebirth. Mithras was born on what we now call Christmas day, and his followers celebrated the spring equinox. Even as late as the 4th century AD, the* ***sol invictus****, associated with Mithras, was the last great pagan cult the church had to overcome. Dionysus was a divine child, resurrected by his grandmother. ...*
>
> *In an ironic twist, the Cybele cult flourished on today’s Vatican Hill. Cybele’s lover Attis, was born of a virgin, died and was reborn annually. This spring festival began as a day of blood on Black Friday, rising to a crescendo after three days, in rejoicing over the resurrection. There was violent conflict on Vatican Hill in the early days of Christianity between the Jesus worshippers and pagans who quarreled over whose God was the true, and whose the imitation. What is interesting to note here is that in the ancient world, wherever you had popular resurrected god myths, Christianity found lots of converts. So, eventually Christianity came to an accommodation with the pagan Spring festival. Although we see no celebration of Easter in the New Testament, early church fathers celebrated it, and today many churches are offering “sunrise services” at Easter – an obvious pagan solar celebration. The date of Easter is not fixed, but instead is governed by the phases of the moon – how pagan is that?*

> *All the fun things about Easter are pagan. Bunnies are a leftover from the pagan festival of Eostre, a great northern goddess whose symbol was a rabbit or hare. Exchange of eggs is an ancient custom, celebrated by many cultures. Hot cross buns are very ancient too. In the Old Testament we see the Israelites baking sweet buns for an idol, and religious leaders trying to put a stop to it. The early church clergy also tried to put a stop to sacred cakes being baked at Easter. In the end, in the face of defiant cake-baking pagan women, they gave up and blessed the cake instead.* ~ Heather McDougall, *The Guardian*[25]

Miss McDougall is either a criminally ignorant writer for one of England's most popular newspapers or she's as cunning as François-Marie "Voltaire" Arouet (and on the same payroll).

She has carefully re-branded all of the misdeeds of Rome as "Jesus-worshipping" and "Christian". For instance, the date of "Easter" was made to float because of the gnostic calendar created by Jesuit Christopher Clavius.

> *Papal, Catholic, pagan Rome adopted the pagan sungod calendar of her predecessor and mentor, Caesar's Imperial Rome. Julius Caesar got his calendar from the pagan religions of both the Eastern and Western sun worshiping religions of his ancestors. Roman Catholicism viciously attacked all who kept the Scriptural calendar and slaughtered millions of Jews and true Christians who followed Yahweh's ancient ways. She insisted on controlling the calendar and ordered all to adopt her corrupt computations. The results were predictable. By the year 1582 the Julian calendar was off by 11 days and began to be embarrassing to the "fisherman, lord god, the pope". Pope Gregory XIII then called on his own church version of the "Gestapo", the Jesuits for a fix. They then provided a Jesuit, Christopher Clavius, S.J.*[546]*, who became the architect of the Gregorian calendar! This heathen was a German Jesuit mathematician and "pseudo astronomer" and became the main engine of the modern Gregorian calendar used by Christianity today. With this Jesuit calendar, came also the Jesuit astronomy or, as is known today, the "heliocentric universe". With his introduction of the new Catholic*

> *calendar, Pope Gregory XIII demonstrated to the world that the changing of "times and seasons" is centered in Rome, and not on Scripture and certainly not centered on the Holy One of Israel. This was an interesting "trick" and was probably related to countering the Protestant reformation, which was going on in Europe at the time. The protestors failed to protest or counter this change and the Christian Church remains ignorant of it to this present day!* ~ Talbott[26]

At no point does Miss McDougall betray that everywhere the pagan practices were adopted it was via the Roman Catholic Church and she even goes to great lengths to mask Papal paganism when there's no clear alternative by claiming that pagans had a conflict with "Vatican Hill".

Although the icons of these practices are left to be "fun" for the uneducated masses, they certainly weren't (or aren't) for the victims of these observances still done in secret today.

> *It's here that we begin to discover the real meaning of the term "passion plays", because it is sexual passion which ignites the alchemical operation of the Divine Marriage. The passion plays were centred on the goddess Demeter who, in myths, is found wandering the Earth in grief after her daughter, Persephone, is abducted into the Underworld by Hades. The sexual seed was represented by wheat and, at the culmination of the rituals, the hierodule would make love with the high priest, or hierophant. ...* ~ Ishtar Babilu Dingir[27]

Throughout history, when initiations into the Devil's Simulation couldn't be masked as "Christian" they were masked as "agricultural"; yet they were nothing of the sort.

> *Because of the focus on the wheat in the dramatic performances, and the theme of the land remaining barren until Persephone re-emerges in the Spring, some commentators believe that the purpose of fertility rites was to placate the gods in order to get a good harvest and increased yields of cattle. But fertility rites existed long before the agricultural period ... and so it is obvious that there was a much more profound purpose behind these sacred passion plays than merely material abundance on the Earthly plane.*

> *The Lesser Mysteries would end with a water baptism, while the Greater Mysteries climaxed with a fire initiation.* [Here, the author carefully avoids describing the vicious brutality of “fire initiation”.]
>
> *At the Lesser Mysteries, the teachings were given in the form of allegorical stories in which the true meanings were hidden. All of this was to prepare those few who were going forward to the Greater Mysteries, where the inner meanings of the stories would be revealed and the fire initiation would take place.*
>
> *In other words, it was only at the Greater Mysteries that the initiates were shown that these plays were allegories which had a dual purpose – as both spiritual and astronomical/astrological teaching stories that were a precursor to spiritual initiation. But the students of the Greater Mysteries were also under pain of death never to reveal anything of what they had been taught or seen. ...*
>
> *Sex and death are very close together in that they are both initiations into another portal. What men are not receiving through sacred sex magic, they seek for in promiscuity, rape, violence and war... due to a yearning for that portal... and the Masters of War know it. ...*
>
> *The Christian Church now only gives the water initiation to the masses, in the form of the baptism, as if their congregations were attendees of the Lesser Mysteries; if the Church ever does give a fire initiation, the rank and file of this religion never get to hear about it.* [28]

Again, we have a disingenuous author who calls Catholic “Christian” and implies the truth but keeps it hidden; the “duality” of one explanation for the masses and another for the initiates is necessary because the true practices used to attain the “Mysteries” would horrify anyone with a conscience.

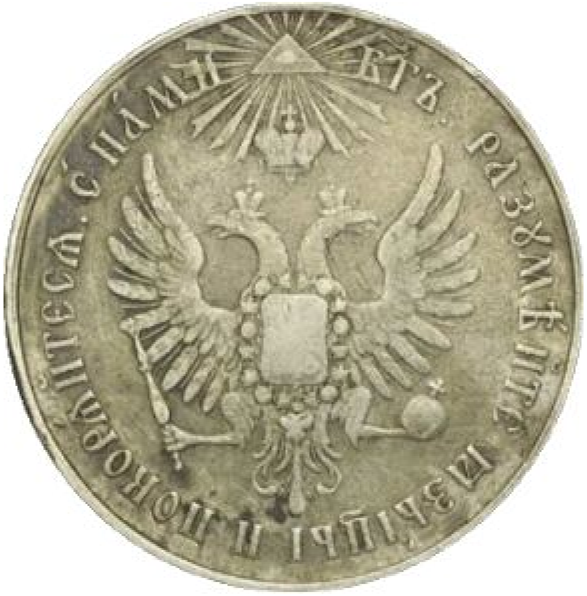

In Russia, the Templar influence manifested into a Jesuit influence.
Prussian interloper "Catherine the Great" gave the Jesuits safe harbor during their brief 1773-1814 suppression and their hand can be seen in this medal commissioned by Czar Nicholas I in 1849 for the suppression of Hungary and Transylvania; particularly the All-Seeing Eye pyramid in a sunburst.

"Holy" Rome has taken up seamlessly from her imperial predecessor. The Papacy's vicious persecutions of faithful Christians are both legion and legendary yet the Popes speak as the "Vicar of Christ on Earth".

> *As early as 1087, the **Dictatus papae** (attributed to Hildebrand of Sovana, a.k.a. Pope Gregory IX) had stated that no one can judge the Pope and that "the Roman Church has never erred." So, with capitalized pronouns, Innocent pronounced the "Will of God". ...*
>
> *To Catholics, this is simply the authority of the successor of Peter, but to Protestants, it was a cynical maneuver to assure the primacy of the Bishop of Rome, and arch blasphemy. ~ Secret History*[29]

Hidden from the uninitiated, the Vatican has maintained the Devil's Simulation for the pagan powers that preceded her.

The First "Orgy Island" [italics suspended]

This was the original pleasure palace. In the sumptuous gardens, young men and women dressed as nubile nymphs and coquettish Pans openly prostituted themselves to guests in woodland “lechery nooks” beneath the stars.

Inside the imperial cliff-top villa, fortified by the finest food and wines served by nude handmaidens, wanton license took hold. Troupes of beautiful youths of both sexes, gathered from all corners of the Roman world and trained in unusual sexual practices, reclined in vast marble halls ready to excite the elderly Emperor’s flagging libido.

Known as *spintriae*, their role was to perform erotic sexual practices in groups before the head of the empire — a man who was commonly known by his subjects as “the old goat”.

Many of the lavish regal rooms were furnished with pornography and explicit sex manuals from Egypt — in case any of their number was unsure precisely what was expected of them.

In a private chamber, the Emperor indulged his most obscene desires to the full. He had little boys trained as minnows or “tiddlers” to chase him when he went swimming in the imperial pool, nibbling between his legs.

This was the royal residence at Capri, where Tiberius the Tyrant lived a life of extraordinary debauchery. For more than a decade in the early part of the first century AD, this picturesque Italian island was the principal home of the Roman emperor.

Here, he practised lechery and bloodlust in equal measure, hosting endless summer orgies and watching his enemies being tortured before being thrown 300ft off the cliffs into the sea below. ...

The estate stands on the grounds where 12 villas were built by Tiberius during his reign from AD 14 to 37.

At risk of assassination, he chose the site chiefly because the remote location made it easy to defend — but also so that he could indulge his sordid predilections away from prying eyes. ...

Power was forced upon him ... events would transform him from a sullen recluse into a despotic and carnal fiend.

Indeed, it was during the brutal reign of Tiberius that Jesus was crucified, under the authority of the Roman governor of Judea at the time, Pontius Pilate. ...

He ... became Emperor in AD 14 at the age of 56. Before the old Emperor’s body was cold, Tiberius had ordered the execution of Augustus’s young grandson and son of the disgraced Julia’s first marriage to her cousin — presumably in case he became a rival.

A mathematician who displeased Tiberius was beaten to death and decapitated. ...

The vengeance of Tiberius was terrible. [Lucius Aelius] Sejanus [Prefect of the Praetorian Guard] was killed after being tortured and dragged through the streets of Rome.

Next, according to the historian Tacitus, writing some 70 years after Tiberius’s reign, the Emperor ordered revenge against Sejanus’s young children, a boy and a girl. Tacitus quoted contemporary writers who reported that, because capital punishment of a virgin was unprecedented, the daughter was violated by the executioner. Then both children were strangled and their young bodies thrown on the Gemonian Steps.

Frenzied with bloodlust, the Emperor next ordered the execution of all those associated with Sejanus. Heaps of victims lay in the streets, with relatives forbidden to give the rotting bodies a proper burial.

In AD 26, Tiberius retreated to the island of Capri, never to return to Rome — according to Tacitus, in order to indulge his carnal desire. There, he established a new office, master of the imperial pleasures, whose job was to gather the most beautiful youngsters in the land together, for the Emperor to defile. ...

His lusts reached ever lower depths and he preyed on the children who lived in and around his court. Tacitus tells us “new names for types of perversions were invented”, such was Tiberius’s depravity. Tiberius hired slaves to find him children to satisfy his urges. These agents were entirely above the law and they kidnapped victims if parents or relations put up a fight. Some even violated the children before they reached their lustful master. It was, says Tacitus, “like the sack of a captured city”. ...

His gardens, where he arranged “a number of nooks of venery where boys and girls solicited outside bowers and grottos”, were called by locals “the old goat’s garden”, punning on Capri’s name, which translates as “goat island”.

His particular fantasy, which small boys were taught to carry out, was to swim in the blue, lukewarm waters of the Capri grottos surrounded by lascivious youngsters swimming like little fish alongside an old shark, licking and nibbling at his private parts.

He was also a sexual voyeur and enjoyed watching groups of youngsters copulate before him.

Once, at a religious sacrifice on Capri, driven to a frenzy by the beauty of the priest’s assistant, he lost control of himself in the temple and, hardly waiting for the ceremony to end, rushed him off and debauched him and his brother, the flute-player, too. Subsequently, when they complained of the assault, he had their legs broken.

Women were also of interest to him — no matter how unwilling they were. One historian, Suetonius, says: “How grossly he was in the habit of abusing women even of high birth is very clearly shown by the death of a certain Mallonia.”

“When she was brought to his bed and refused most vigorously to submit to his lust, he turned her over to the informers, and even when she was on trial he did not cease to call out and ask her ‘whether she was sorry’; so that finally she left the court and went home, where she stabbed herself, openly upbraiding the ugly old man for his obscenity.”

Increasingly ravaged by the years and his vile excesses, Tiberius had certainly become the most unattractive of men. His once handsome

> face was disfigured by a form of eczema and covered with blotches, scars and the unguents prescribed by his physicians.
>
> Brutality, too, marked his years in exile. When his litter was struck by a bush, he had the centurion who had been sent ahead to clear the way stretched out and flogged half to death before him. Facing the Emperor’s apartments was a precipice called Tiberius Fall, because from it, he would dispense with unwelcome visitors or disobedient servants. Tiberius would watch as they fell towards the sparking water, and their bodies were mutilated at the bottom of the cliff by armed soldiers.
>
> Suetonius says: “Among various forms of torture he had devised this one: he would trick men into loading themselves with copious draughts of wine, and then on a sudden tying up their private parts, would torment them at the same time by the torture of the cords and of the stoppage of their water.”
>
> Tiberius died at the age of 78, during the 23rd year of his reign. It is said that he was eventually smothered beneath a pile of mattresses, although there are other accounts that he was poisoned by his heir, Caligula. ~ Brennan[30]

Sadly, Gaius “Caligula” Julius Caesar Germanicus would be little better.

Tiberius raised him on Capri where he fell in love with his sister Drusilla, eventually consummating the relationship with incestuous sex (although he would also bed his other two sisters as well).

A life-threatening illness in October 37 A.D. would take his perverse upbringing and transform it into a monstrous personality.

Caligula returned from the brink of death less human then when he entered it. The loss of his one and only true love, Drusilla to an apparent unknown illness, finished whatever hope of conscience the Empire had in its despot.

Impressed with her perverse prowess, he married the illegitimate whore Milonia Caesonia in order to produce an heir.

Caligula used debauchery as power over Consuls, raping their wives, sons and daughters, sometimes as they watched.

Having exhausted the treasury, he opened a brothel in Rome and forced the wives of Senators to earn his party-wealth back.

This staggering perversion and brutality was transferred with ease into the Papacy. A mirror of Caligula's lifestyle insured the Protestant Reformation! From *Secret History*:[31][italics suspended unless original]

> In 1488, Giovanni de Medici's father, *Lorenzo il Magnifico* ("Lorenzo the Magnificent"), ruler of the Province of Florentine, prevailed upon his relative, Giovanni Battista Cybo (Pope Innocent VIII) to make his son a cardinal, which Cybo did.
>
> Having bought Giovanni the cardinalcy at such a young age (13) he was forbidden to wear the insignia or deliberate as Cardinal for another 3 years.
>
> In 1513, de Medici was "elected" Pope. Clearly a political decision, after it was made, the College of Cardinals realized de Medici had never been ordained a priest. This minor oversight was rectified on a date that proved the Papacy was far more "Roman" than "Christian" — the Ides of March (the 15th) of that same year — the date memorialized as the assassination of Julius Caesar.
>
> Medici maintained and even increased his lavish lifestyle which included the sexual perversions of the upper class. Pope Leo was well-known as a "lover of boys".
>
> > *Leo X was said to have invited guests to lavish banquets with up to 65 courses at which little boys jumped naked out of puddings.*
> >
> > *It was no secret Leo was "a lover of boys" who possessed also "an insatiable love of pleasure".*
> >
> > *Like Pope Paul II, Leo loved parades and his passion was to travel around Rome at the head of a long procession featuring panthers, jesters, and a white elephant called Hanno a gift from the King of Portugal.*

> *Scholar Joseph McCabe said Leo was “a coarse, frivolous, cynical voluptuary, probably addicted to homosexual vice in the Vatican”.*
>
> *Leo spent much of his childhood in numerous abbeys which, like many monasteries since the time of Leo III (795-816), had become homosexual haunts.*
>
> *Even before he became pope, Leo X allegedly had been a practicing sodomite.*
>
> *On the day of his election, Leo suffered from chronic ulcers [venereal skin ulcers, not of the stomach] and had to be carried into the conclave on a stretcher.*
>
> *Not a few remarked that the ulcers had been caused by his “boyish predilections” ... ~ D. Christie Sinton*[113]

Medici was far from unique as a corrupt, immoral and depraved Pope.

- *Pope Sergius III had his predecessors Pope Leo V and Antipope Christopher murdered. He sired a bastard son who would later become Pope John XI.*
- *Pope John XII cut off the nose and tongue and two fingers of the Cardinal-Deacon, flayed the skin off Bishop Otger, cut off the hands of Notary Azzo, and beheaded sixty-three of Rome’s clergy and nobility. He kept a brothel at the Vatican and let his mistress Maricia run it. During drunken gambling revelry he was heard to toast Satan. While having sex with a married woman, he was caught by the husband who (being quite Italian) ignored his Holy Office and smashed the Pope’s head in with a hammer, killing him.*
- *Roderic Borgia, Pope Alexander VI (1492-1503)...in this devilish roll-call of nefarious names, none sends such a chill up the spine as that of “Borgia”. It is impossible to imagine a family more heavily tainted by the stains of sin and immorality, and – as even those who have not seen the eponymous television series will know – there is scarcely one of their*

number who does not seem to be cloaked in an aura of iniquity. The founder of the family's fortunes, Alfons de Borja (1378-1458) – who reigned as Pope Callixtus III – was decried even by his closest allies as the "scandal of [his] age" for his monstrously corrupt ways. His nephew, Rodrigo (1431-1503) – who he himself elevated to the cardinalate, and who would be elected Pope Alexander VI in 1492 – was reputed to be even worse.

- *Pope Julius III kidnapped and seduced a homeless teenage boy whom he maintained as his lover and rewarded with a Cardinalcy.*

Chapter 2

The Beast Transformed

21 March 1475: *Two year old boy found murdered, the victim of a ritual sacrifice, in Trento, Italy on Easter Sunday.*

> *The small Simon, a little boy from Trent, was slayed on the 21st March, 1475 A.D., on Maundy-Thursday during Holy Week. The Jews of this town wanted to celebrate their Passover in their own way; so they secretly abducted the small boy and carried him to the house of the Jew Samuel. During Holy Week on Maundy-Thursday, the day before Good Friday, "and" on the day before the outlawed "Perfidious Passover", about three hours after supper, the little boy, like children do, was sitting in front of his parents' house. Neither his father nor mother were home at the time as they were at Church. It was at this time that the Jew Tobias approached the child, who was not quite 30 months old, and while speaking kindly and offering the boy a piece of money, picked him up and carried him at once to the house of the Jew Samuel.*
>
> *When night fell, the twin brothers Saligman and Samuel, with Tobias, Vitalis (Veitel), Moses, Israel and Mayr, undressed the little boy and unmercifully butchered him. While Moses strangled him with a handkerchief as he lay across Samuel's knee, pieces of flesh from his neck were cut with a knife and the blood collected in a bowl. At the same time, they punctured the naked offering with needles and murmured Hebrew curses. They then cut pieces of flesh from the boy's arm and legs and collected the blood in pots.*
>
> *Finally the torturers imitated the crucifixion by holding the twitching body upside down and the arms outstretched...* ~ St. Simon of Trent.com[32]

The attacks upon Judaism by the Catholic Church, especially in the Middle Ages, were almost as vicious as the literal Crusades against Christians.

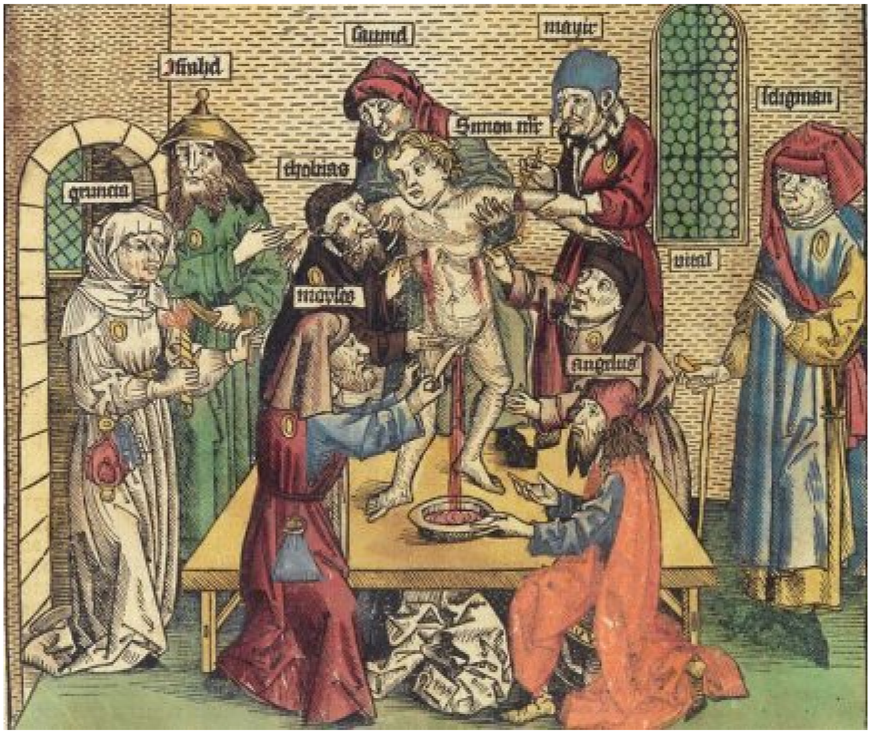

Were the Vaudois and Valdneses the Remnant ***ekklēsia****, maintaining the Truth of Christ against the Dragon?*

Certainly, Rome thought so, and Crusaders pursued the inoffensive Alpine Christians with vicious ruthlessness perhaps even unseen in Palestine.

To combat the "heretics", Rome needed a special office designed to use every means necessary to force the wayward children back into the fold. As the Crusader/Inquisitor saying went; ***aut Mass aut mortem*** *— be at Mass or be dead.*

In haughty power did Rome seek to bring all Christians under her dominion.

> *"You said, 'I am forever — the eternal queen!' ... lounging in your security and saying to yourself, 'I am, and there is none besides me. I will never be a widow nor suffer the loss of children.'"* ~ Isaiah 47:7-8 (NIV)[xxiv] *Christians have been*

> *thrilled by Papal propaganda depicting heroic Crusaders battling bloodthirsty Muslims but the picture erased from history is that of knights ruthlessly slaughtering Christian men, women and children in the most heinous fashion they could. ~ Secret History*[33]

Slightly better known (because it serves the Luciferian "clash of civilizations" Hegelian Dialectic[ii]) is the persecution of Jews by Rome.

Suspiciously, anti-Semitism was already being stirred in Trento before the heinous incident.

> *Shortly before Simon went missing, Bernardine of Feltre, an itinerant Franciscan preacher, had delivered a series of sermons in Trent in which he vilified the local Jewish community. ~ Wikipedia*[34]

A more detailed account is found in the Jewish Encyclopedia. [italics suspended]

> **The Disappearance of Simon.**
>
> The harmonious relations between the Christians and the Jews in Trent had excited the anger of the semidemented Franciscan friar Bernardinus of Feltre, who was a son of a notorious enemy of the Jews. In his Lenten sermons (1475) he endeavored to incite the people against them, but instead provoked displeasure on the part of the Christians. Then he predicted that at the next Jewish Passover a ritual murder would occur. In accordance with this prediction, the child Simon, twenty-eight months old, disappeared on March 23, 1475. Bernardinus of Feltre, Johannes Schweizer (a neighbor of the Jews), and, at last, the excited people themselves declared that the child would be found among the Jews; but a careful search through the Jewish quarter, ordered by Bishop Hinderbach and executed by the podestà of Trent, Johann Sala, proved fruitless.
>
> On the eve of Easter Monday, March 26, some Jews noticed the body of a child in the river, near the house of one of their number named Samuel. Without a moment's delay three of them, Tobias (a physician), Samuel, and Angelus, hastened to notify the bishop, but were not

> admitted to his presence. The podestà, however, visited the house of Samuel, took possession of the child’s body, and ordered the arrest of those present — Samuel, Angelus, Tobias, Israel, Bonaventura, Toaff, and a second Bonaventura (the cook). After a medical examination of the body it was stated that death was the result of violence, not of accidental drowning. A baptized Jew, Johann of Feltre, who had been a prisoner for several years for theft, seized the apparent opportunity to shorten the term of his imprisonment by declaring that the Jews use the blood of Christians for ritual purposes at the Passover. On the strength of this allegation all the members of the Jewish community, women and children included, were arrested. The proceedings against them began on March 28. The accused pleaded not guilty, and denounced two men: Johannes Schweizer, who had access to the river flowing by Samuel’s house and who for a long time had been an enemy of the Jews; and the German tailor Enzelin. Johannes Schweizer and his wife were arrested, but proved an alibi as regards the 23d of March, though only for the daytime; they were finally liberated from prison in a “miraculous” manner.
>
> ### Torture Suffered by the Jews.
>
> Then began days and nights of torture for the Jews, in which numerous methods of compelling “confession” were tried. For a long time the sufferers remained steadfast and faithful; but after weeks of torture had weakened the will, they “confessed” in the exact words dictated by their clerical tormentors and assassins. These abominable practises caused Duke Sigmund and others to intercede and stop the proceedings (April 21). But the persecutions were resumed on June 5, and were maintained until the Jew Moses, aged eighty years, after terrible tortures and persistent denials, likewise “confessed.” Toward the end of June (21-23) eight of the wealthiest Jews, after receiving baptism, were put to death, some being burned at the stake and the rest beheaded.[35]

It is significant that a Jewish prisoner, already baptized into the Roman Catholic religion, was the “witness” who condemned the accused.

It was neither the first nor the last example of Jewish treachery within the ranks.

During the Passover in Judea of ~32 A.D. Jewish religious leadership betrayed the people and convinced their Roman task-masters to put to death an innocent and extremely popular Rabbi from Nazareth because he (He) threatened their abusive control. [Matthew 27:20]

Hungarian Jewish billionaire George Soros is constantly demonized by supposed “Right-wing” media like Fox News. Fox News was founded by Australian “purveyor of pornography”[36] Rupert Murdoch, a Knight of Malta[37] who has received the Order of St. Gregory personally from Pope Saint John Paul II[38],[iii]. Yet it is little-known that Soros was a Nazi collaborator.

> *As a young man, in Budapest, George Soros was a courier for the Jewish Council, the Nazi-established and Nazi-run organization that ran the Jewish community. The Jewish Council was ultimately controlled by Adolf Eichmann, the man known as the “architect of the Holocaust,” who was in charge of the mass deportation of the Jews of Poland and Hungary to the extermination camps. Eichmann arrived in Budapest in early 1944, to take charge of the elimination of the Hungarian Jews. Before Eichmann left, 430,000 Hungarian Jews had been put to their death. In 1960, agents of the Israeli Mossad kidnapped Adolf Eichmann from Argentina, and brought him to Israel, to stand trial as a war criminal. During the trial, Eichmann was kept in a glass cage. He was convicted, sentenced to death, and was executed in 1962.*
>
> *In his 1965 memoir of the wartime,* ***Masquerade — Dancing Around Death in Nazi-Occupied Hungary****, George Soros’ father, Tivadar Soros, devoted an entire chapter to the Jewish Council, and his son’s involvement.*
>
> *“When systematic persecution of the Jews began,” Tivadar Soros wrote, “it was carried out not by the Germans, nor by their Hungarian lackeys, but — most astonishingly — by the Jews themselves. One of the first things the Germans did was to form a so-called Jewish*

> *Council, consisting of the leaders of the Jewish community. Council members were made personally responsible for the implementation of the various German measures relating to the Jewish population. As a reward, they, their families, and those who worked for them were exempted, at least at the beginning, from these restrictions... The Jewish Council carried out the German wishes far more conscientiously than the Germans could themselves."*
>
> *Tivadar Soros described his son George's role. "As Jews couldn't go to school any more and their teachers couldn't teach, they were ordered to report to council headquarters. The children were enlisted as couriers under the command of their teachers. My younger son, George, also became a courier. On the second day, he returned home at seven in the evening.*
>
> *"'What did you do all day?' 'Mostly nothing. But this afternoon I was given some notices to deliver to various addresses.' 'Did you read what they said?' 'I even brought one home.' He handed me a small slip of paper, with a typewritten message [a summons]. 'Do you know what this means?' I asked him. 'I can guess,' he replied, with great seriousness. 'They'll be interned.'"* ~ LPAC[39]

Apparently, the Jews who are empowered by Rome to be Vatican scapegoats don't even mind when the Papacy steals and traffics their children.

The opportunity came during the Holocaust — an outrage also engineered by Rome.

> ***The Catholic Intelligence Agency***
>
> *The CIA (then the OSS) was founded by Catholic Wall Street lawyer, and Knight of Malta,[447] William Donovan.*
>
> *Donovan was specifically selected because his loyalties to Rome far outweighed any scruples he had about honoring an allegiance to America, her citizens or her Constitution.*
>
> *Well before the conclusion of World War II in July of 1944, Eugenio Pacelli ("Pope Pius XII") awarded Donovan Knight Grand Cross by*

the Order of St. Sylvester.[448]

It certainly wasn't because Pacelli was interested in conquering the Nazis (at least, not quickly). He was personally responsible for their rise, having been the Papal Nuncio (Vatican Ambassador) to Prussia from (1926-29) and to Germany (1917-30). So much so, in fact, he has been named "Hitler's Pope".[449] *This, too, is subterfuge as Adolf Hitler was only a pawn of the Papacy.*[450] *They even had a viciously anti-Semitic Jesuit named Bernhardt Staempfle write Mein Kampf for Hitler.*[451] *...*

Rome and her Special Forces, the Jesuits, were absolutely determined to needlessly raise up antagonists in Germany and Russia to brutally punish the birthplace of the Reformation and the world for receiving it. In the process, her minions treasonously played both sides and made billions in the process. ...

Inside Germany, Rome had double agents like "Lutheran" Martin Bormann. Bormann was one of the most powerful men in the regime. He was head of the Nazi Party Chancellery (the **Parteikanzlei***) and Adolf Hitler's private secretary who personally controlled the flow of information and access to Hitler.*[455]

*He was also an active participant in "Red Orchestra" (***Die Rote Kapelle***) — a cell of traitors who gave German intelligence to the Soviet Union. It was further evidence that Bormann worked for Rome. Between the Allies and the Communists, the Allies were a far more lucrative recipient of important intelligence. One could easily negotiate their way into a very posh retirement by pulling the right strings (as many Nazis did). ...*

Not working directly with the Allies forced Rome to intervene to provide for Bormann's "retirement" and he was put into the Vatican rat lines disguised as a Jesuit priest and he ended up safely in [Jorge "Pope Francis" Bergoglio's] *Argentina*[456] *where he died peacefully and unmolested.*

> *His wife, Gerda, was carefully screened from harassment by any intelligence agencies*[cxxv] *and she appointed a Roman Catholic priest as executor of her will. Bormann's eldest son, Adolf, (named after his godfather, Adolf Hitler) became a Jesuit and was given special deference and consideration because of his father's contribution to Rome.*[457] ~ *Secret History*[40]

As a result of the Holocaust, desperate Jewish parents turned their children over to Catholic institutions — hospitals, orphanages, etc. — as well as Elite Catholic families, to give them a chance to survive the War.

They were never seen again.

> *A letter from Pope Pius XII to his representative in Paris on November 20, 1946 shows that he ordered Jewish babies baptized during the Holocaust not to be returned to their parents. ...*
>
> *Former Chief Rabbi Yisrael Meir Lau has said that the Holocaust-era Pope Pius XII refused several requests by Chief Rabbi Isaac Herzog to meet with him before and during the war to discuss how the Church could either help save Jewish lives or locate Jewish orphans cared for by Catholic families.*
>
> *On the other hand, Rabbi Lau said that the previous pontiff, Pope John Paul II, told him in 1993 that he had refused to baptize a Jewish child whose parents had died, "because the parents had specifically requested that the child be brought up as a Jew."*
>
> *However, the same John Paul II did not respond to a request by Ukraine's Chief Rabbi Yaakov Dov Bleich to open church archives and reveal the names of Jewish children who were raised as Catholics during World War II.* ~ Arutz Sheva[41]

In 2005, the *Times* printed what was purported to be Pacelli's letter.

> *Paris, October 23, 1946*
>
> *Concerning Jewish children who were entrusted to Catholic institutions and families during the German occupation and are now demanded by Jewish institutions to be handed over to them, the Holy*

> *Congregation of the Holy Office has made a decision that can be summarized in this way: 1) Avoid, as much as possible, responding in writing to Jewish authorities, but rather do it orally.*
>
> *2) Each time a response is necessary, it is necessary to say that the Church must conduct investigations in order to study each case individually.*
>
> *3) Children who have been baptized must not be entrusted to institutions that would not be in a position to guarantee their Christian upbringing.*
>
> *4) For children who no longer have their parents, given the fact that the Church has responsibility for them, it is not acceptable for them to be abandoned by the Church or entrusted to any persons who have no rights over them, at least until they are in a position to choose themselves. This, evidently, is for children who would not have been baptized.*
>
> *5) If the children have been turned over by their parents, and if the parents reclaim them now, providing that the children have not received baptism they can be given back.*
>
> *It is to be noted that this decision of the Holy Congregation of the Holy Office has been approved by the Holy Father.*[42]

Media, in general, and the *New York Times* very specifically, is run by Jews emplaced by the Vatican to both do Roman biding and insure Vatican deniability.

The releasing of Pacelli’s letter was another Papal chess move; giving up a pawn to gain a bishop.

- Surely edited, it allowed for damage control. As we’ve seen, little consideration has been given by criminal clergy whether children are “baptized” Catholic and much more their use in sacrifice and to bring money.
- It gave the *Times* credibility as a “real paper”.

- It continued to foment racial divide by bringing the topic to light.

These suppositions were proven true by the Jewish professor in Roman Catholic France, Catherine Poujol, who “examined” the issue...for the Vatican!

> *For almost a decade, Poujol has refused to talk to the press about her discovery. Now, she explains the reasons behind her silence. ...*
>
> *“I didn’t want to add fuel to the fire without properly investigating the subject — and this was a very complex, lengthy process,” she told The Times of Israel. ...*
>
> *“The Church felt cornered, and at first adopted an inward-looking stance. But soon it realized that denying the access to these postwar documents would fuel the scandal even more.”*
>
> *After examining countless sources and traveling throughout Europe, the U.S. and Israel, Poujol came to the conclusion that even if this document clearly outlines the Church’s intention of keeping baptized Jewish children under its custody, it doesn’t cast blame on the entire Catholic Church.*
>
> *“Many priests and bishops acted completely independently and didn’t abide by the directive,” she says.*
>
> *In 1944, two Jewish boys, Robert and Gerald Finaly, were sent by their parents to a Catholic nursery in Grenoble. After the parents were deported and died at Auschwitz, their uncle and aunt, who were living in Israel, attempted to get the children back.*
>
> *In 1948, French Catholic nurse Antoinette Brun baptized the children without the family’s permission and formally adopted them, omitting to tell the judge about the existence of other relatives.*
>
> *The affair reached the national spotlight when a police investigation found that several nuns of the Notre Dame de Sion order and Basque priests had arranged and executed the kidnapping and smuggling of the children in Spain in February 1953. ...*

> *“French public opinion was divided into two opposing camps, clericals against anti-clericals, Zionists against anti-Zionists, and canon law against Republican law,” she adds. ~ Times of Israel*[43]

“Two Jewish boys in 1944”?

Rome has stolen and trafficked *tens* of *thousands* of children but when it suits her she will show her hand on two of them to give up the pawn of a momentary “sin” and gain the bishop of stoking racial hatred toward Jews.

Saint Simon

Despite the controversy surrounding the question of who really murdered two year-old Simon in ritual torture honoring castrated gods like Attis, he was soon canonized as the Patron Saint of kidnap and torture victims.

A sickening number have fallen under his patronage ever since.

540 years later, children would again come into the spotlight in Trento when Roman Catholic priest Don Gino Flaim told a local La7 News crew that he “understands” pedophilia, that it needs to be “accepted” as any other sin.

> *Unfortunately there are children who seek affection because they don’t receive it at home and I understand that some priests can give up. ...*
>
> *I could accept pedophilia, but I’m not so sure about homosexuality.*[44]

La7 appeared to be following up on a story (which also surfaced at that time) that the Venturini monastery in Trento had become a “rehabilitation resort” for Rome’s deviant clergy. Apparently immune to prosecution by any secular authority, there they could attain “a period of training, personal reflection and enlightenment.”[45]

But, surely, it must be the Jews.

Chapter 3

Slavers

1609: *The Spanish governor of Asunción, Phillip III, brokers a deal with the Jesuit Provincial of Paraguay to set up communes populated by natives at strategic points along the Paraná river.*

Spurred by the property-sharing philosophies of Thomas Aquinas, Jesuits created the first communist villages across South America.

Known as *Reduccións* in Spanish or *Reduções* in Portuguese these "Reductions" served several purposes:

- Maintain a strategic presence for Spain or Portugal without the overt appearance of armed soldiers.
- "Convert" natives to become Catholic citizens of their imperial conquerors.
- Enrich the elites of Spain, Portugal and Rome with slave labor that cost little to maintain...unless you were a slave.

> *Containing undesirables from Indian reservations to Nazi concentration camps to Soviet gulags to Franklin Roosevelt's Japanese/American internment, all have the common ancestor of Jesuit "reductions" in South America. ...*
>
> *Before the days of **Avtomat Kalashnikov** rifles and **Schmeisser** submachine guns, large groups of prisoners were hard to handle with just a few Jesuit priests. The Company needed to use brains over brawn. Later, they would be able to appropriate the "brawn" of whole nations.*
>
> *The appeal of wealth redistribution is that recipients can live a somewhat easier life, though it is a utopia that has always disappointed.*

> *In South America, "social justice" would become the cry for taking from "the rich" and giving to "the poor". What usually happens, however, is that the super-rich exploit the poor to bleed the few real producers in the Middle Class.*
>
> *If this seems like the perfect weapon to be used in the Counter-Reformation, it's not by coincidence.*
>
> *The phrase "social justice" was coined by the Jesuit theologian and mentor to Pope Leo XIII, Father Luigi Taparelli D'Azeglio. ...*
>
> *The utility of Communism was immediately seized upon by the Vatican. ...*
>
> *The Jesuits took their experiences with the South American* ***reducciones*** *and fed them to a German Jewish aristocrat who had never held a "proletariat" working-class job in his life — Karl Heinrich Marx. ~ Illuminati Unmasked*[46]

1618: *Home Children Scandal — "vagrant" children rounded up in England and sent to Canada, America, Australia as slave labor against their will. The process was used by the Catholic Church, first behind "secular" and "Protestant" fronts, then directly, for predation.*

Because the governments of several nations were involved in the child slave trade (and still are), "official histories" are whitewashes, at best.

Yet, even the Australian government must admit that "child migration" has been "chequered", to put it lightly.

> *Child migration had a long and chequered history surrounded with controversy and marred by scandal. It was, actually, never a single policy pursued continuously: rather it was a complex tangle of competing private schemes, government initiatives, charismatic personalities, muddled priorities and confused agendas. It was critically affected by the economic, political and social pressures of particular times.*
>
> *The first 100 children – "vagrants" – were despatched from the London area to Virginia in the Americas in 1618, their passage*

> *arranged by the City Fathers, while the last nine children were flown to Australia in 1967 under the auspices of Barnardo's.*[iv] *It follows that the origins of child migration were linked to Britain's acquisition of an empire in North America during the early seventeenth century. In the wild, untamed, thinly-populated continent, there was an insatiable demand for men and women to populate and exploit the new territories. The demand was so great, and the perils of the sea journey and the initial pioneering so desperate, that those whom it was convenient for England to send abroad – the convicted felons, the parish poor and abandoned children were considered suitable and many were despatched.*
>
> *It was in January 1615 that the Privy Council issued a warrant to exile certain convicted felons to the New England colonies and four years later that these provisions were confirmed and extended by a further order from the Council.*[4] *Child migration was commenced – in 1618 – in this context as state officials cast around for other sources of labour in the colonies. Later in that year, the Virginia Company requested a second consignment of "vagrant" children (i.e. street kids) and the City Fathers cooperated in procuring them – by having the constables arrest vagrant children and place them in the Bridewell or gaol until ships were ready for their departure.*[5] *However, many of the children did not wish to go and under challenge it became clear that the first group had been despatched illegally. The City made urgent representation to the Privy Council and on 31 January 1620 the Council gave its approval to despatch the "recalcitrant" children...*[47]

In the schizophrenia of official whitewash, the Australian government first claimed that "the consent of the children or their parents was not an issue" then immediately follows with how the children were basically kidnapped.

The fact that Protestants were used as cover for the heinous practice is also leaked in the admitted reaction of real American Puritans who outlawed and attempted to police up the crimes and protect the children.

> *The consent of the children or their parents was not an issue, although it is clear that many of the young people were runaways and*

> *abandoned children, beyond the interest or control of surviving parents or guardians.*[7]
>
> *It was likely to follow that where there was a commercial need, i.e., the desperate labour shortage in the colonies, then private enterprise was likely to follow the clear, unambiguous lead taken by the state authorities. There opened a ready cash market for any able-bodied man, woman or child who could be persuaded, fooled, forced or "spirited" to the new colonies. In a word "spiriting" was kidnapping, and for the next 150 years child migration operated on three levels: some children were sent to the North American or West Indian colonies by various Poor Law authorities and government bodies who worked within the 1620 ordinance of the Privy Council; a few were escorted by religious philanthropists; and the majority were kidnapped or "spirited" from towns close to the ports for despatch to and sale in the colonies. There the children's labour was purchased by planters and other farmers until the child reached majority, a procedure given a thin veneer of legality by the signing of indentures.*[8]
>
> *The traffic in children being "spirited" to the Americas increased during the civil wars of the 1640s, and the Puritan-dominated parliament on 9 May 1645 passed a strongly-worded ordinance against the practice.*[9] *Ships were to be searched by justices of the peace where there was reason to believe they held kidnapped children.* [48]

The reaction of the Protestants in America to the slave trade was again attested to in the Australian government timeline —

> ***1783:*** *American War of Independence confirms the Declaration of Independence of the Thirteen seaboard colonies in North America; end of adult convict transportation to the American colonies.*[49]

The inversely-named "Sisters of Charity" handled many of the details of the child sex slave trade[50] and we will see more of them shortly.

The "Protestant" face of the slave trade was handled by Freemasonry. It is an extremely convenient arrangement for Rome, delivered by the hands of the Jesuits.

No less a source than high Luciferian Helena Blavatsky can be found on this.

> *As to the modern Knights Templar and those Masonic Lodges which now claim a direct descent from the ancient Templars, their persecution by the Church was a farce from the beginning. They have not, nor have they ever had any secrets, dangerous to the Church. Quite the contrary; for we find J. G. Findel saying that the Scottish degrees, or the Templar system, only dates from 1735-1740, and "following its Catholic tendency, took up its chief residence in the Jesuit College of Clermont, in Paris, and hence was called the Clermont system."*
>
> *Count Ramsay, a Jesuit, was the first to start the idea of the Templars being joined to the Knights of Malta. Therefore, we read from his pen the following: "Our forefathers (! ! !), the Crusaders, assembled in the Holy Land from all Christendom, wished to unite in a fraternity embracing all nations, that when bound together, heart and soul, for mutual improvement, they might, in the course of time, represent one single intellectual people."*
>
> *This is why the Templars are made to join the St. John's Knights, and the latter got into the craft of Masonry known as St. John's Masons.*[51]

"Scottish Rite" Freemasonry is especially useful to the Company and, as a result, they keep their supposed "arch enemies" very close, indeed.

> *...both the Scottish Rite Supreme Council 33° of the Gran Loggia d'Italia (GLDI, founded in 1910 after a schism with the* ***Grande Oriente d'Italia****) & the Church of the Gesù – the mother church of the Jesuits – are located in Piazza del Gesù! In fact the GLDI is known as the Piazza del Gesù obedience. This body is recognised by the Scottish Rite's U.S. Southern Jurisdiction ("Mother of the World") Supreme Council 33° in Washington, D.C.* ~ Troy Space, London[52]

As Jesuit code, the name of the "Scottish Rite, United States, Southern Jurisdiction" is often simply abbreviated "SJ".

Although far from conclusive, it should be taken with suspicion that “Protestant” child traffickers of the 19th century (a very active era for Jesuit Freemasonry) like “Quaker” Annie Parlane MacPherson would hail from Scotland.

However, when using dupes and shell organizations, one doesn’t get the responsiveness necessary for full exploitation.

As the 19th century rolled into the 20th, it was time for “the Church” to get actively involved in the “Home Children” source of prey items.

Again, the Australian government lets the cat out of the bag —

> [Child trafficking] *was associated with the founding of the Knights of the Southern Cross in Perth in 1922 as a Catholic counterpart to the Freemason Lodge. One of the Knights’ objectives was increasing Catholic migration to Western Australia, and more specifically child immigration.*
>
> *In 1926, the Knights’ executive found ready support from Brother Paul Keaney, the newly-appointed Director of the Clontarf orphanage near Perth. Brother Keaney with financial support from the Knights, planned a farm school at Tardun near Mullewa, west of Geraldton, to cater for the farm training of older Australian boys in care and also for British child migrants.*[53]

Then and now, orphanages (*especially* Catholic ones) were prime pens for pedophiles.

Unfortunately, because the abuse of children is a massive, systemic gateway to power (here-forward referred to as the “Pedocracy”), government documents must be carefully parsed for disinformation and subterfuge.

Even so, the truth comes out.

Although the Australian “Home Children” report — another meaningless “report” provided as subterfuge in lieu of pedophile prosecutions — dramatically downplays the role of the Catholic Church, it can not avoid the crimes committed by the order of the “Christian Brothers” (another sect as inversely named as the “Society of Jesus”).

> *By this time, the Christian Brothers were managing child care for Catholic boys and young men in four coordinated institutions, at Clontarf and Castledare orphanages in the suburbs of Perth, at the farm school at Tardun and on the new property at Bindoon, one hundred kilometres north of Perth, a property recently donated to the Order by a wealthy benefactor.*[54]

It is noteworthy that the official "well-researched" government document doesn't give any detail about the "wealthy benefactor" who believed Catholic child trafficking was important enough to bankroll.

Even more so is how co-operative the "Anglican" / "Protestant" government of the United Kingdom was in the effort.

> *It seemed relatively easy to integrate child migrants from Britain within the four orphanages according to their ages and talents. The British, Commonwealth and Western Australian governments were willing to assist with maintenance of the children.*
>
> *In this situation, the Western Australian bishops arranged for Brother A Conlon* [full name, Patrick Aloysius Conlon] *to proceed to London to negotiate for ... child migrants with the British Catholic Rescue Societies in 1938. Conlon's task took longer than he anticipated, but over 1938–39 some three groups of boys ... sailed for Western Australia to be educated and trained within the Christian Brothers four orphanages, collectively referred to as "the Scheme".*[55]

Why name a "humanitarian relocation" effort for the "welfare" of young boys as "the Scheme"?

Maybe it was the type of "education and training" the "Christian Brothers" had in mind.

Finally, in 2016, yet another do-nothing "committee" put together another impotent "report" on monsters who had been raping children for generations.

> *In Australia, 853 people have made a claim or substantiated complaint of child sexual abuse against one or more Christian Brothers, with*

> *75% of victims under the age of 13 at the time, a royal commission has heard.*
>
> *The royal commission into institutional responses to child sexual abuse has turned its attention to the Christian Brothers as the third round of its hearings into the diocese of Ballarat began on Monday. A religious community within the Catholic church, the Christian Brothers primarily worked in educational facilities for children.*
>
> *In all, 281 individual members of the Christian Brothers in Australia have been subject to one or more claims or substantiated complaints of child sexual abuse, the commission heard... ~ The Guardian*[56]

Certainly, when you have a monster who targets pre-teens (it takes a special kind of demon to rape kids who haven't even hit puberty), you want to protect his identity.

> *The commission's data showed that the highest number of claims of child sexual abuse were against a brother identified only as Brother CCK, who had 46 complaints made against him about incidents in Victoria and Tasmania. The average age of his victims was 11 years old and the abuse occurred between 1963 and 1987, including in Ballarat.*[57]

Does the Catholic Church maintain the Devil's Simulation?

Do pedophiles run the halls of power?

Both questions were just answered — crimes first reported over half a century ago are only handled by a meaningless government commission and even there the identity of a single Catholic predator priest is kept in confidence.

The shocking lawlessness in Australia is, sadly, the same everywhere.

Even when predator priests are identified, they are never brought to justice. In fact, they are allowed to stay in the company of children and rape until they die.

> *Another Brother, Stephen Farrell, a Christian Brother at St. Alpius Boys' School in Ballarat East, had allegations of sexual abuse made*

> *against him from six people, with the abuse allegedly occurring between 1971 and 1974. In 1997, Farrell was convicted of nine counts of indecent assault against two boys aged nine and 10 at the school but his two-year prison sentence was wholly suspended.*
>
> *He was convicted of a further charge of indecent assault against a 10-year-old boy, with his sentence suspended on appeal. The commission heard another Brother, Gerald Leo Fitzgerald, was forced to retire from teaching at St. Alpius Boys' School, with a report saying he had "reached that stage of life when, for some men, control of emotional impulses becomes lessened".*
>
> *He was allowed to continue to live within the St. Patrick's religious community, the commission heard. A separate report stated he went into the junior dormitory to "play with boys". He died in 1987 and was never charged.*[58]

In fact, when there's no fear of justice (because law enforcement and judiciaries are also owned by Rome and run by pedophiles), priests can be downright bold about their abominations.

> *One, Brother Edward Dowlan, "made little attempt to conceal his behaviour", Barlow said, frequently placing his hands down boys' pants while they walked around. In a previous commission hearing about Ballarat held last year, the commission heard from a witness that he was raped by Dowlan.*[59]

Organizations other than the Freemasons have been very helpful to Rome in trafficking children, such as the Knights of Malta.

This can be deduced by the role the tiny island nation played in the Home Children Scandal.

> *While he was in Europe, Brother Conlon explored the possibilities of bringing Maltese children to Western Australia, but negotiations broke down at this stage. There were also tentative arrangements to bring a party of girls to the Nazareth Sisters Home in Geraldton, WA...*
>
> *During this 1946–47 trip to Europe, both Archbishop* [Justin Daniel] *Simmonds and Brother Conlon visited Malta to explore the migration*

> *possibilities: the Archbishop to explore the overall migration scene and Conlon to arrange juvenile immigration.*[60]

Malta is no bigger than 300 square kilometers with a total (current) population of 400 thousand. By comparison, the wide-open state of Texas is twice as big and is 70 times more densely populated.

But who are we to argue with such wisdom as traveling to Malta to arrange for the island to give up her children to the tender care of Rome?

The location of the Grandmaster's Palace on the island in the city of Valetta was no coincidence. It was named after its founder, Grand Master of the Knights of St. John, Jean de Valette in 1566 — a short time after the Protestant Reformation.

The "capital" for "The Sovereign Military Hospitaller Order of Saint John of Jerusalem of Rhodes and of Malta", however, remains in Rome.[61] The Order is itself, a sovereign entity[62] "free" of the insignificant laws of the nations in which its insurgency operates. Despite ludicrous propaganda to the contrary (such as the January 2017 "condom controversy"[v]) the KoM have never been anything other than loyal footsoldiers of the Papacy since their founding in 1048 A.D.

The Knights of Malta remain a key player in the movement of children to this day.

By another "coincidence", at this writing, the Order is hosting an "International Children's Day conference" with emphasis on "assistance for child victims of conflict".[63]

Six months prior to this, the grandiosely-named Grand Hospitaller Dominique de La Rochefoucauld-Montbel addressed Ban Ki-moon and the United Nations General Assembly in New York on the issue of children and the "migration challenge" caused by incessant wars.[64]

What de La Rochefoucauld-Montbel didn't address is how many of those wars were enabled, started, enflamed and profiteered from by Knights of Malta: almost all of them.

No one illustrates this better than Erik Dean Prince, the founder of "Blackwater" — the most notorious war profiteers perhaps of all time (for more, see Chapter 27).

1758: *The first Magdalene "asylum" for women is founded in "Anglican" Whitechapel, England.*

Preying upon the innocent in order to defile them, to make them suffer as a show of willingness to enter into the Devil's Simulation takes malice and callousness.

Yet, humanity (as a whole) rejects such a system which is why the Devil's Simulation is only open to a very small number of monstrous sociopaths who are able to rid themselves of the best of what it means to be human; compassion, empathy, protectiveness towards the vulnerable, self-sacrifice and selfless love.

For Christians it is the shocking reality that Jesus Christ has been far more victorious than we ever realized — particularly on the Cross.

He even conquered the Roman Empire.

> *Rome was an empire splintered and scattered when the armies of Marcus Maxentius and Flavius Constantinus met in 312 A.D. Both were vying for complete control of the most powerful nation ever seen before or since.*
>
> *Just prior to the critical battle of Milvian Bridge it was reported that Flavius Constantinus — Constantine — had a miraculous intervention by the Christian Messiah, Jesus.*
>
> *According to Church historian Eusebius[2] — an adoring contemporary of the future emperor — Constantine was threatened by the "black magic" of his enemy, Maxentius, (and his rival also had an army twice the size of his).*
>
> *Desperate for some way to counter it, Constantine compared the beliefs of other great men he had known. One after another, the pantheon of pagan gods had failed them. But the beliefs of one man stood out — his own father (Emperor Constantius Chlorus[3]) who had*

> *adopted the Christian God and commended the safety of the Empire to Him.*
>
> *This seems like propaganda but Constantinus Chlorus was more benevolent to Christians then, say, Nero.*
>
> *While imploring the Christian God, Constantine received an answer in a vision, “In this Sign, conquer!”*
>
> *The “Sign” was the* ***lambarum****; the intersection of the Greek letters* ***chi*** *(X) and* ***rho*** *(P) as an acronym for Christ and Christians. ...*
>
> *The historian Lactantius states*[5] *that Constantine ordered his men to place the “Sign” upon their shields, and so they did.*
>
> *At the conclusion of the battle, Maxentius had drowned in the Tiber and his army was completely routed.*[6]
>
> *Constantine now ruled Rome ...* [whose] *Edict of Milan in 313 AD that officially ended Christian persecution. ~ Secret History*[65]

Though many experts question the sincerity of Constantine’s conversion even now, none can argue that he made the rituals and rites of the Luciferians illegal and drove them underground.

Within a few years of the Edict of Milan he increased in his animosity towards pagans and began raiding their shrines.

They never again had the power to return to the open debauchery of Sodom; even Tiberius needed to retreat to an island for his outrages. This made the Luciferians desperate as to how to carry on.

They would start by attacking and taking back the instrument that was their downfall: the Roman Empire.

If Constantine ruled as a true Christian (there are few reasons to believe he did not) he was still a Roman Emperor. This led him to the error of coalescing ecclesiastical authority for Christianity in Rome. When he began arbitrating doctrinal differences amongst Christian sects, it set the stage for Rome’s transformation.

It would take almost 10 emperors hence but Theodosius I finished the job with the Edict of Thessalonica in 380 A.D. In it he required all Romans to become Christians and thus the Luciferians had their answer: syncretism.

They would put on the mantel of Christianity while conducting all of the same ancient rituals they had always done.

Thus was born “Roman Catholicism”.

Outwardly, there was feigned love and compassion but inwardly they were ravenous parasites who fed off the lives of others.

Such were the Magdalene “asylums”.

Billed as homes for single mothers and children in need of shelter and compassion, they were Jesuit Communist slave labor camps, every bit as cruel and barbaric as their Nazi, Stalinist or Maoist counterparts (and each of those regimes have the same roots in Rome).

Perhaps most shocking of all, these institutions had the full and complete co-operation of their host nation’s governments; Australia, Canada, England, Ireland, France, Spain, the United States and all of South America. Sometimes they worked openly and in unison.

That was the case in Ireland. As a result, the atrocities that have been buried elsewhere have come to the surface in that country where the government has been forced to take responsibility (though it was the junior partner).

In 2012, Ireland’s *The Journal* ran just one story of the thousands that have been kept out of the public eye —

> *The treatment of women incarcerated in Magdalene Laundries – and the level of State involvement in these Church-run institutions – has been highlighted yet again this month. There was disappointment among survivors and relatives of those kept in the Laundries when it was announced that a State committee’s final report into the matter would be delayed until the end of the year.*
>
> *To reiterate the urgency of revealing the inter-departmental findings, the Justice for Magdalene advocacy group last week distributed some redacted statements of women detailing their lives in such institutions.*

(The group claims that there was State involvement in the operation of the Laundries as places to send women considered to be “problem girls”, due to poverty or pregnancy outside marriage for example.)

Samantha Long’s mother Margaret Bullen was placed in Gloucester Street (now Sean McDermott Street) Laundry c.1967 and died 35 years later, never having been released into society and her own home. Margaret died of an illness known as Goodpasture Syndrome, a disease of the kidneys and liver – one of the causes is exposure to industrial-strength chemicals such as those used in the Laundries.

Samantha made a lengthy statement to the interdepartmental committee, led by Senator Martin McAleese, about her mother’s life. Margaret Bullen had a tragic start in life: she was born in a mental institution in Grangegorman, Dublin to a mother who already had six children, Margaret being the youngest. Margaret was sent home to Kimmage to live with her siblings and father, where she remained until she was three years old. At that point, Margaret’s brother was sent to Artane industrial school and Margaret and her sister closest to her in age sent to the notorious High Park industrial school and Laundry in Drumcondra. That, as Samantha says of her mother, “was the end of her and the outside world”.[66]

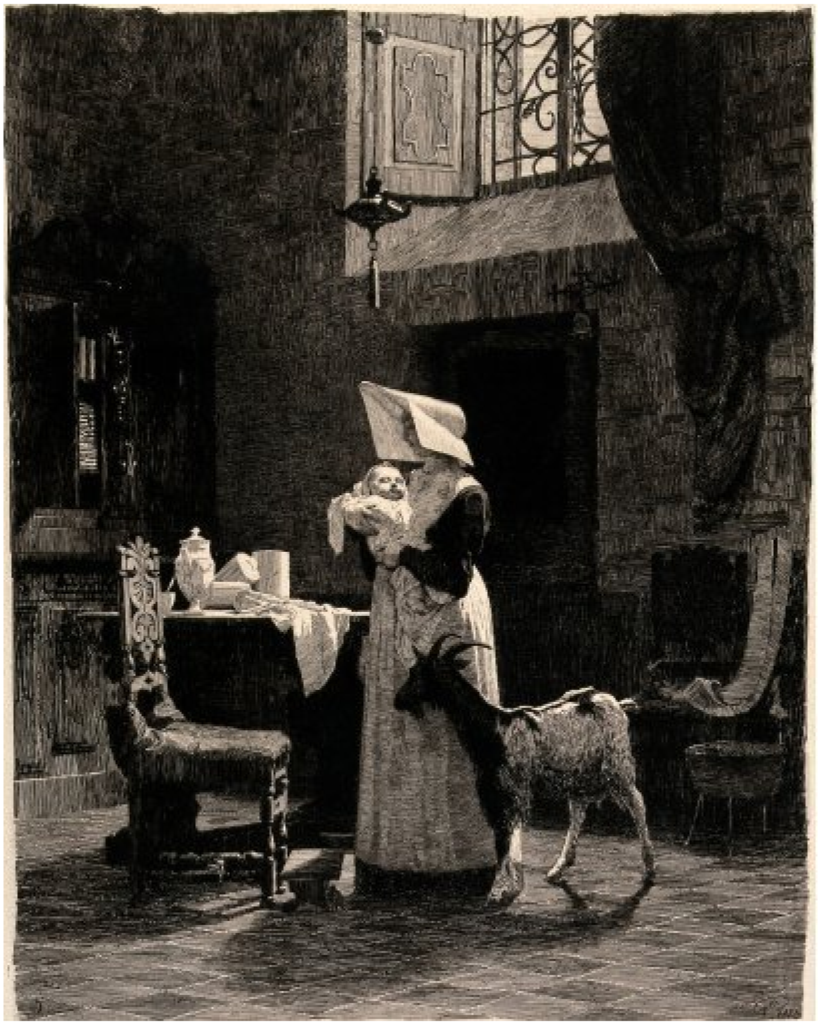

Etching by Alberto Maso Gilli. Wikimedia Commons

Margaret suffered fits as a child which went ignored and untreated by the nuns of the facility, ironically named the Sisters of Charity of Refuge. They are now the Sisters of Our Lady of Charity; “Our Lady” being “the Queen of Heaven”, Semiramis, Isis, Columbia, or Cybele. That is the “charity” that was shown Margaret — that of Cybele, not Miriam, the mother of Yeshua of Nazareth.

Margaret was deemed “mentally unfit” for education but fit for slave labor.

As a young teenager, uneducated and mentally impaired, she was preyed upon under the supervision of the nuns and the sexual attacks left her pregnant...*twice*. Each time, the nuns stole her baby and trafficked the child for cash.

The fact that this vast system was controlled from stem to stern by agents of the Papacy made it well-suited for providing pedophiles with their prey.

Such was what happened to Mary Monaghan — ripped from her mother's arms at two years old by the Sisters of the Sacred Heart and sent to vicious pedophile William O'Brien in California.

She was immediately set upon by the monster (imagine what it takes to sexually assault a two year-old toddler).

> *"My mother was a fallen woman,"* [Roman Catholic terminology for pregnant, unwed teenager] *says Ms. Monaghan, who now lives in Massachusetts. "I really do not remember a lot [about the actual moment]."*
>
> *"But even though you're so young, you still have feelings. You remember being ripped away even if you don't remember the physicalities of it."*
>
> *To the outside world, her new family appeared perfect for a lonely child taken from her mother and transported more than 5,000 miles away to California. ~ Daily Mail*[67]

Fitting the profile the nuns sought, Mary's adoptive pedophile father was rich, respected and Roman Catholic.

> *Mary's new father, William, was a prosperous businessman and well-respected in the local community...*
>
> *"When I first got there, I would often be ill," she says of her early years with the family. "I would have all kinds of allergies and break out because I was allergic to the food."*
>
> *But worse was to come. "My memories [of childhood] are terrible," Ms. Monaghan says, sadly. "I was physically punished for not being able to eat."*
>
> *"If I did what a little child does and wet the bed, then I was literally put in the toilet. Then the sexual abuse started and it just progressed."*[68]

O’Brien was no run-of-the-mill monster accidentally hit upon by incompetent Catholic nuns; he was plugged in to the Devil’s Simulation — well-versed and trained in how to administer trauma-based mind control on an innocent, vulnerable victim.

> *“I had to be kept in my little routine as it were, so I tried to break away. It was all systematic. It was very serious paedophile thinking.”*
>
> *With the O’Briens keeping up appearances in front of friends and neighbours, the bewildered little girl found herself alone and with no one to turn to.*
>
> *“I could not perceive of any way of doing something* [to alert the authorities] *and I had to protect myself. Because if I had said something and it had come to light, then I probably would not have lived another day.”*
>
> *“And that is not an exaggeration. He had the world fooled.”*
>
> *The abuse lasted throughout her childhood with Mary fleeing her abusive family as soon as she was old enough.*[69]

Not even Mary, herself, understood that she had been trafficked for the very purpose of ritual abuse. Bolstered by media, government and Vatican disinformation, she naively believed what happened to her was “mismanagement”.

Nothing could be further from the truth.

> *“I still have flashbacks sometimes and I still struggle with substance abuse occasionally. And I have been diagnosed with post-traumatic stress disorder.”*
>
> *Although Ms. Monaghan did eventually find her birth mother, it wasn’t until she was 52 that she was able to come to London to meet her.*
>
> *“Well, that was quite a moment when we first met,” she smiles. “I went up to her and I hugged her and she froze. She literally froze. So it came through to me that I needed to tread lightly.”*

> *Tragically, her mother's shame at being an unwed parent followed her to London and Ms. Monaghan says she was very reluctant to admit the truth to her Irish family.*
>
> *"It was very clear that I was to keep my mouth shut. That I was a secret. That I was a long lost cousin. I did play along even though it was hard. But some people did guess."*
>
> *The pair had just 10 years together, with Mary's mother Theresa dying in 2010. "It's just unfortunate that she had to take so much shame to her grave," she adds. "It just isn't right."*[70]

Margaret Bullen's two daughters — Samantha and Etta — experienced similar heartache even after all that had already been done to their mother.

They were wounds that continued on long after the initial crimes were committed.

> *Margaret was only 42 at the time but looked much older. She was carrying a handbag but it was completely empty, because she didn't own anything nor did she have any money. Samantha recalls:*
>
> > *And, she was just lovely, and she was asking extremely innocent questions like, she, it was the first time she ever had coffee and it was very exciting for her to have coffee and she hadn't seen brown sugar before either and obviously in the Gresham there was brown and white sugar cubes on the table and it was all very fancy to her. And she was just overjoyed to be there and absolutely wowed by everything.*
> >
> > *She looked, she looked like a pensioner. I couldn't believe she was forty-two, I kept looking, I kept looking into her face to find a forty-two year old and I couldn't, because she had the face of hard work, that face that you see in so many women that have just had to work too hard and have never had a rest and have never had anyone to take care of them or tell them to put their feet up, and who have just, just worked too hard. Because, as I said on the radio a few years ago, this was slavery and I don't use that term lightly and I'm not an emotive person but slavery is a form of*

> *work for which you get no pay and you can't leave and these were the white slaves of Ireland and they were never emancipated. And nobody stood up for them until now, until you guys (**Justice for Magdalenes**) did.*[71]

All of Samantha's efforts at redress of grievances have been directed towards the government of Ireland while the Catholic Church keeps entirely out of the spotlight.

Few media sources are to be found on the topic so again we return to *The Journal* for another story; that of Kathleen Legg.

Kathleen was born out of wedlock under troubled circumstances. Her mother turned her over to her grandmother to raise but her grandmother died when she was 14. Not willing to take her back and believing she would get a good education from the Sisters of Charity, Kathleen was delivered to St. Mary's Stanhope Street Training Centre in Dublin.

> *This was simply not the case.*[72]
>
> *Rather than getting an education, once she entered the convent and was stripped naked and given a uniform, she wouldn't see another classroom for four years.*[73]
>
> *For the next four years I would scrub, polish and clean every inch of that building, working long hours in the laundry. I had my name changed and I was known as number 27. This was an institution, which generated enormous amounts of wealth, and all the time I was there I had little to very basic food. In fact it was dismal and how we survived I'll never know. I was constantly hungry and on the verge of starving.*
>
> *The Nuns treated me and indeed others in there as slaves. They gave to the world a false sense of what was being done. So much so that they even sent out school reports saying how well I did in class and how great I was at cooking, housewifery and other such subjects. I never attended a class. I never even met the mother superior. I never saw a clock, book or newspapers when I was there.*

> *Every morning you would awake to the sound of a bell. You operated like a robot and you did not dare question a nun. We bathed once a week and I remember the lice from our hair used to float around the top of the water so if you were one of the last to get washed it was horrific.*[74]

The slave labor of young girls was very lucrative for "the Church" as well as the major corporate interests Rome was in bed with.

> *There was no privacy, no care, no love or support in there. The nuns controlled your every movement and they hated it if you took ill, as this meant you were holding up the work that had to be done. We did laundry for all the big hotels, hospitals, companies and other individuals. It was hard tenuous work, which involved heavy lifting.*
>
> *I was told years later that due to the heavy lifting I did in there this impeded me having my own children. The Nuns robbed me of my life and the life I could have given to others.*[75]

There has been a government "investigation" but Kathleen's experience will not be addressed as it has been deemed that the facility at St. Mary's, Stanhope Street in Dublin, was not a "Magdalene Laundry" according to the official definition.[vi]

> *"There were great big heavy rollers. The sheets would be red hot. It would be the work of an adult man. I was up at six in the morning and every time the bell rang you went where you were told to go."*
>
> *"I didn't know how old I was. There were no mirrors and birthdays were never celebrated."*
>
> *She also described how the nuns systematically ensured the girls there did not make friends.*
>
> *"We didn't speak to each other. We were too frightened," she said. "In the room we sang hymns all day long."*[76]

Like any concentration camp, escape was impossible.

> *Others have spoken about trying to escape but being unable to scale the high walls, often topped with glass.*[77]

With order names like “Charity” and “Mercy” women working for Rome conducted barbarism not seen since the overt Roman occupation of the islands.

> *Mary Merritt, 83, who was “in the care” of the nuns for 14 years before escaping, spoke out in September, 2014, about her ordeal.*
>
> *She was born in 1931 to a single mother in a workhouse and went on to an orphanage, run by an order of nuns called the Sisters of Mercy where, she says, the children were made to work and were beaten if they refused.*
>
> *Mary, who now lives in Tunbridge Wells, said that at the age of 11, she was so hungry that she took apples from the convent orchard and as punishment was sent to work in a Magdalene laundry at High Park in Dublin run by another order, the Sisters of Our Lady of Charity.*
>
> *“They told me that I would stay in the laundry until I learned to stop stealing. Fourteen years they kept me there. You get less for murder these days.” ~ Daily Mail*[78]

When Mary did manage to run away, she was treated with the same brutality (perhaps worse) than when Roman occupiers wore breastplates and carried swords.

> *She said: “The laundry was heavy, heavy work and the heat was terrible and you didn’t break until 12 o’clock when you broke for your dinner, such as it was – potatoes and cabbage and fish – and then after you went straight back to the laundry again to work and you worked in the laundry until at six o’clock.”*
>
> *Most shocking of all, Mary claims that after running away she was raped by a priest, but despite this terrible violation she was ignored by police and then shamed by the nuns.*
>
> *Mary said: “When the police took me back to the laundry, they didn’t* [address my complaint that] *I had been raped but shaved my head,*

> *made me apologise for running away and put me in the punishment cell."*
>
> *But when Mary became pregnant as a result of the rape and gave birth to a daughter, in a stunning act of cruelty, the nuns took the baby against Mary's will and* [sold] *her away for adoption.*[79]

Shocking collusion with government authorities who are sworn and paid to protect the citizenry from such atrocities has been the unbelievable norm in every country that Rome controls (which appears to be nearly all of them).

In fact, taxpayers, not the Vatican, gave Irish victims their payoff.

> *... in February 2013 that survivors received an apology from the Irish government and have since received £50million in compensation.*[80]

The outrageous irony was not noted by the *Daily Mail*.

While many more victims wait for justice, compensation or even recognition, the Irish government astoundingly continues to hand the wheel over to the Vatican for essential services.

At this writing, it has been announced that the very same "Sisters of Charity" are to be given "sole ownership" of Ireland's newest, ***taxpayer-funded***, state maternity hospital, "Saint Vincent's".[81]

As anyone with qualms about how the nuns conduct themselves jumps ship[82], Ireland's newborns continue to be placed into the hands of the charitable sisters.

For Whom The Bell Tolls

In Spain, hundreds of thousands of babies were stolen from their parents and trafficked by the Fascist government of Francisco Franco via the Catholic Church.

> *Up to 300,000 Spanish babies were stolen from their parents and sold for adoption over a period of five decades, a new investigation reveals.*
>
> *The children were trafficked by a secret network of doctors, nurses, priests and nuns in a widespread practice that began during General Franco's dictatorship and continued until the early Nineties. ...*
>
> *Several mothers say they were told their first-born children had died during or soon after they gave birth. ...*
>
> *But the women, often young and unmarried, were told they could not see the body of the infant or attend their burial.*
>
> *In reality, the babies were sold...*
>
> *Official documents were forged so the adoptive parents' names were on the infants' birth certificates. ...*
>
> *Journalist Katya Adler, who has investigated the scandal, says: "The situation is incredibly sad for thousands of people."*
>
> *"There are men and women across Spain whose lives have been turned upside-down by discovering the people they thought were their parents actually bought them for cash. There are also many mothers who have maintained for years that their babies did not die – and were labelled 'hysterical' – but are now discovering that their child has probably been alive and brought up by somebody else all this time."*
>
> *Experts believe the cases may account for up to 15 per cent of the total adoptions that took place in Spain between 1960 and 1989.*
>
> *It began as a system for taking children away from families deemed politically dangerous to the regime of General Franco, which began in 1939. The system continued after the dictator's death in 1975 as the*

> *Catholic church continued to retain a powerful influence on public life, particularly in social services. ~ Daily Mail*[83]

What made the scheme easy to accomplish was that the Catholic Church ran schools, orphanages and hospitals, and still does (even in “Protestant” countries like America).

In Fascist Spain, however, the power of the Catholic Church was as blatant and all-encompassing as it is in Ireland.

> *On April 1, 1939, Generalísimo Francisco Franco, crusading leader of the rebellious Nationalist forces, triumphantly declared the Spanish Civil War over. The Catholic Church was the institution that most benefitted from Franco’s victory. Its hierarchy had blessed the Nationalist uprising as a crusade and had justified the war to the world as an “****armed plebiscite****.” Now it reaped the reward. Franco quickly abolished all those Republican** measures that had undermined the Church’s spiritual and social roles, and entrusted it with more power and privilege than it had enjoyed since the 18th century.*

Generalísimo Francisco Franco, Kutxa Foundation

> *For the Church, the privileges constituted a spiritual “reconquista” complementing the political “reconquista” enjoyed by Franco and his Nationalists. What the political “reconquista” meant was the return to Castilian centralism and the elimination of other ideologies. The “reconquista” for the Church signified Catholic monopoly over the life of all Spaniards, a vital privilege if society was to be “re-Catholicised”. This “re-Catholicisation” was not an easy undertaking keeping in mind that, in supporting the Nationalists during the War, the Church had alienated a large percentage of the population. ...*

> *For Cardinal Gomá, primate of Spain, the only way was to impose "**divine totalitarianism**", i.e. the imposition of Catholic values on all Spanish society. Franco was only too glad to help.*
>
> *The privileged status of the Church was granted immediately following the Civil War. A little later —in June 1941— its rights were outlined in an Agreement between the Vatican and the Franco government, and finally formalised in a Concordat signed in August, 1953. Amongst the provisions were:*
>
> > *1. recognition of Catholicism as the official religion of the country;*
> > *2. Mandatory religious instruction at all educational levels in conformity with Catholic dogma;*
> > *3. Financial support of the church by the state (paying the salary of priests and contributing to the (re)construction of church buildings);*
> > *4. Guaranteed representation in both press and radio.*
>
> *~ Spain Then And Now*[84]

The fact that the government of Spain, in collusion with the Catholic Church, were the institutions that kidnapped babies meant that it is impossible to account for them all. Despite media white-washing, it is a foregone conclusion that many of the children weren't simply "sold" to good Catholics who wanted them, they were trafficked, tortured and ritually slaughtered.

Proof is found in how Rome maintained these crimes against the Spanish people long after Franco's death.

Generalísimo Francisco Franco was personally assisted by Father Josemaria Escriva, the founder of Opus Dei.[85]

It would not be the last time Opus Dei was the vehicle by which children were trafficked, abused and murdered.

Chapter 4

The Pedocracy Puts on a Lab Coat

1948: *“**Doctor**” Alfred C. Kinsey — an unrepentant sexual deviant — publishes **Sexual Behavior in the Human Male** with the intent of using pseudo-science to legitimize sexual anarchy and give cover for the Pedocracy.*

He is more successful than he could possibly have imagined.

If we understand the Pope as the titular head of the Pedocracy with the Jesuits running the Pentagon (pentagram) and “War Department” then Alfred C. Kinsey was their Minister of “Science”.

This arrangement has actually been quite fruitful for Rome because Kinsey has been scrubbed of all ties to the Papacy.

As a result, he is a favorite target of agents of the Vatican who seek to emphasize his debauchery in order to give cover for the Devil’s Simulation as the over-arching mechanism of power for all.

The repeatedly-used stage prop for this propaganda is that Kinsey had a "very strict Methodist upbringing" in Hoboken, New Jersey and the unbearable repression caused him to "rebel".

The reality, however, is quite different.

Kinsey was sickly and abnormal both mentally and emotionally from a young age.

Under his picture in his high school year book he quoted *Hamlet*: "Man delights me not; no, nor woman either."[86]

But the truth was, man delighted him much.

Friendly biographer and Georgetown Fellow[87] Dr. James H. Jones was given full access to the Kinsey archives. Jones contradicted the standard lines that Kinsey was "bisexual" or "asexual". He stated with derision (betraying his own bias and why he was warm towards someone like Kinsey) that Kinsey was forced by "middle class morality" to keep his homosexuality "in the closet".[88]

Despite being frail and sickly, Kinsey became a fervent Boy Scout and relished the "outdoors".

Exactly why would come out later.

However anyone wishing to research Kinsey has only two sources: fawning sycophants in pseudo-science or devout Roman Catholics.

Critics run from pundits like Jesuit-trained (in both high school and college) Patrick Joseph Buchanan to Notre Dame Professor E. (Eugene) Michael Jones who eventually left Notre Dame because it was a Catholic college that wasn't Catholic enough.

In fact, hearing an "expert" carefully avoid the avalanche of evidence against systemic pedophilia carried out by the Catholic Church to instead zero in on Kinsey is a clear indication that such an "expert" is an agent of Rome.

An excellent example is "atheist" author Joseph Atwill. Atwill is an archetypical Jesuit operative who writes books such as *Caesar's Messiah:*

The Roman Conspiracy to Invent Jesus. Atwill is also, “oddly”, a foe of Kinsey.[89]

It’s not quite so “odd” that he attacks both Kinsey and the legitimacy of Jesus Christ given that he was educated by the Jesuits at St. Mary’s Military Academy in Japan.[90]

In his agency for Rome, Atwill has been invited on “alternative media” shows like that of “Vinny Eastwood” to brilliantly mix truth with lies: “Jesus Never Existed, Rome Never Fell”.[91]

Tactics like these truly show whom the “Society of Jesus” actually serves.

But for the hardest-hitting critiques of Kinsey, Rome chose a Jew: Judith Ann Reisman (*née* Gelernter[vii]).

Reisman has an extensive and impressive bio, including a Ph.D. in Communications from Case Western in 1980. She is currently a tenured Research Professor and the Director of the Child Protection Institute at the Liberty University School of Law.

Liberty is billed as an “Evangelical Christian” University.

As a result of her position as pedophile gate-keeper (giving phenomenal information on one specific criminal and then immediately stomping the breaks to go no further), she’s cleared to instruct at all the Roman-controlled institutions.

> *An author and lecturer, Dr. Reisman has been a consultant to three U.S. Departments of Justice administrations; Education; and Health and Human Services. Dr. Reisman has consulted with members of the U.S. Joint Chiefs of Staff...*
>
> *Special thanks to the Naval Aviation Foundation...*
>
> *I am indebted to the research staff at the Guggenheim Foundation, the National Research Council, the Rockefeller Archives, The American Law Institute, and the Eli Lilly Foundation for their professionalism and aid in providing me with my requested materials.*[92]

What is usually left out of her bios and resumés is her work as "a Vatican consultant on legal matters"[93] or her many trips to Rome for "seminars".[94]

This relationship is particularly disturbing given the unspeakable horrors that Catholic Church in general, and the Inquisition in specific, have visited upon the Jewish people.

At minimum, her collaboration with the likes of arch anti-Semites such as E. Michael Jones[95] and Patrick J. Buchanan[96] are troubling.

The impetus for her selection appears random and tragic enough —

> *I was born Judith Ann Gelernter in 1935 in Newark, New Jersey. Mine was a large and thriving second-generation Jewish-American family...*
>
> *My mother, Ada, was of more common Goldberg stock. ...*[viii]
>
> *I lived at a wonderful time. My mother welcomed me home every day and my father supported anything I did. I felt safe with neighbors, uncles or cousins as was the custom of that time. I married, and the hedge of protection about my life was not breached until 1966, when my 10-year-old daughter, Jennie, was molested by a 13-year-old adored and trusted family friend. She told him to stop, but he persisted. He knew she would like it, he said, he knew from his father's glossy magazines, the only "acceptable" pornography of the time. The boy left the country a few weeks later, after it came to light that my daughter was but one of several neighborhood children he had raped, including his own little brother.*[97]

It certainly is helpful when you have a child-raping child to be able to have the resources to "up and leave the country" before the heat gets turned on.

From here Reisman's selection becomes a little more apparent.

Robert James "Bob" Keeshan (1927 – 2004) was beloved by millions of families, especially children.

He enlisted in the United States Marine Corps Reserve in 1945 and so he did not serve in World War II.

He began his Jesuit instruction at Fordham but transferred to the more general “Judeo-Christian tradition” at Hillsdale.

This is a common practice for those who will be used by “the Church” yet are instructed to erase her fingerprints.

Other “transfers” out of Jesuit tutelage include Donald Trump, his daughter Ivanka, Donald Rumsfeld and many more.

When one adds “dropouts” from Jesuit seminary like California Governor Jerry Brown, Kennedy Assassination conspirator and CIA pilot David Ferry,[ix] “alternative media” talk show host Doug Hagmann, Godfather of European Unification and the Bilderberg Group Józef Retinger, Clinton hatchet-man and child-rapist John Podesta, amongst others, the tactic becomes clear.

One can just imagine a cold, calm voice saying, “We’ve decided you’ll be of more use in service to us *outside* of this institution.”

— And, like Bob Keeshan, they all have been!

Bob was better known by his stage name: Captain Kangaroo.

The Jesuit-trained Keeshan had a staff of Jews on the show like Producer Jim Hirschfeld who picked the young Jewish woman for a task that required minimum training and modest talent (not that Dr. Judith wasn’t thoroughly qualified) — writing and performing children’s songs.

With this empowerment, Reisman had the financial comfort to get a Masters and a Doctorate in Communications.

If one can get past Reisman’s betrayal of her own people and how she gives cover to the most heinous pedophiles in human history by fixating on just one key enabler, her work shows itself to be exemplary.

Like his nemesis, Kinsey was selected and enabled very early on and his sexual perversions are what pointed him toward entomology.

> *Kinsey reportedly secured a scholarship,[19] and money from an “elderly widow,”[20] to finance his final two years at Bowdoin College (1914-1916). According to Christenson, he devoted most of his time to*

> *zoology (16 credit hours the first year) and biology (four hours), while "[s]ociology and psychology courses rounded out the year's work."[21] He was primarily interested in insects and animals.*[98]

He was already gaining skill in manipulation that would weaponize his deviancy.

> *During his last year at Bowdoin he added "fifteen hours more of zoology" and began to collect wasps. His courses in psychology, especially those dealing with Pavlovian concepts of control through conditioned reflex, would serve him well in later years.[22] In **Female**, Kinsey cites Russian physiologist Ivan Petrovich Pavlov's use of dogs as "subjects"[23] to detect the "conditioned reflex, a physiological reaction to environmental stimuli" that shaped the development of behaviorism.[24]* [99]

Not surprisingly, other "scientists" whose mission it was to sow a false reality were his heroes.

> *Another major influence on Kinsey was Charles Darwin, the English naturalist who is credited with formulating the theory of evolution in such works as **The Origin of Species** (1859).[25] Kinsey was so impressed ... that, upon graduating* magna cum laude *from Bowdoin in 1916, he quoted him in his commencement address.[26]* [100]

He continued to prove himself of the same sociopath "stock" as other monsters hiding under lab coats, and do so via safe, "non-Catholic"[x] institutions.

> *Following graduation, Kinsey continued his studies at Harvard's Bussey Institution, which was a hotbed of Darwinism and the "New Biology" that led scientists to envision improving the human species through "eugenics." Jones identifies Kinsey as one of the scholarly pre-World War II eugenicists who issued a "terrifying" call for the mass sterilization of "lower level" Americans and a breeding plan for superior classes.[27]...*

> *Sir Thomas Huxley (1825-1895), the foremost proponent of Darwinism in England, was credited by Kinsey with crafting a scientific "declaration of independence."*[28] *...*
>
> *Kinsey would also play in the same elite eugenic league as Sir Thomas Huxley's grandsons, Aldous and Julian. Sir Julian Huxley, a geneticist and first director-general of UNESCO (United Nations Educational, Scientific, and Cultural Organization) became acquainted with Kinsey's work through Indiana University President Herman Wells. In 1932, Aldous Huxley wrote* ***Brave New World****, which became required reading in many American schools.*[101]

It is instructive to learn that Kinsey's attraction to men and boys found an outlet in the Boys Scouts.

Kinsey joined the Scouts when nearly an adult and was a YMCA "Youth Counselor" who lured boys into his circle with pornography. [italics suspended except in original]

> As "shy" as he was around women, Kinsey was much at home with young boys. He preferred their company in both outdoor and indoor settings. He joined the Boy Scouts at about age 17, and later as a married man continued to wear his Scout uniform, take boys on nature hikes and the like, and sleep alongside them in tents. The Boy Scout movement, which was founded in Great Britain in 1907, has helped to instill such character traits as honesty, courage, tenacity, cooperation, and devotion to God and country in tens of millions of boys worldwide. Additional millions of devoted men have served as leaders in the Boy Scouts of America (hereafter BSA), founded in 1910, providing young Scouts with positive role models and rewarding experiences. Sadly, however, Scouting has too often been exploited by deviates with less honorable objectives in mind.
>
> Claiming that Kinsey's obsession with boys was entirely platonic, Pomeroy and Christenson insist that he led a largely sexless life. Evidence from Kinsey's own writings, however, raised serious questions about his sexual orientation long before publication of Jones' *Alfred C. Kinsey* confirmed his deviancy. Even in college he opted for

the companionship of youths and boys. A fellow counselor describes Kinsey (then age 21) at the Newark YMCA: *His tent, with his nature “library” of a dozen volumes, was a rendezvous for dozens of campers during the day and well into the night, even after taps had sounded and we were supposedly tucked in. ... The boys loved “Al” and couldn’t get enough of him. He had a merry eye, a wide smile and a hearty laugh. ... Always ready for the latest camp prank, he was just as ready to pitch in and help any kid in trouble...*

> *Unlike most of us, Kinsey had experience at several other camps also; was an active leader in Boy Scout work, often wore his Scout uniform. A camp history refers to war games in 1914… “under… Field Marshal Alfred Kinsey.”* [While Kinsey was a student at Bowdoin] *he was by far the greatest specialist in that group of young men…* [H]*e was thoroughly enjoyed as a companion by everyone.*[30]

Note that Pomeroy places nature “library” in quotation marks. People in the 1920’s would have understood this to mean that Kinsey collected nature (nudist) magazines, with drawings and photographs of nude youths and adults.

Biographer James H. Jones confirms that Kinsey received nudist magazines at the family home-certainly an interest in conflict with his public “conservative” persona.[34]

Years later, Kinsey would write a curious letter to an old Scouting friend, perhaps one of the boys with whom he had shared his “nature library,” or to whom he devoted so much attention during his adolescent, college, postgraduate, and even married years.[35] Kinsey wrote, “We did have good times together, and you must understand from that Scout troop I began to learn some of the things that made it possible for me to do some of the research that we are now engaged in.”[36] Clearly, Kinsey was not referring to wasp collecting, but to the sexual research and experimentation that would eventually result in publication of *Male*.

> According to Pomeroy, “Kinsey began to leave Scouting and the sexually sterile world of his boyhood behind him when he graduated from high school.”37 Not mentioned is Kinsey’s continuing close association with boys through his leadership activities, as above, during his college years at Bowdoin and in the Bethany Boys’ Club. According to Christenson: *A major activity during his three years of postgraduate studies was the Bethany Boys’ Club at the local Bethany Methodist Episcopal Church.* [There were] *Saturday hikes and weekend overnight camping trips with Kinsey.*38
>
> Indeed, Kinsey so enjoyed the Scouting atmosphere that he continued to lead a summer camp program after he was married. He and his wife, Clara, once examined property with the thought of “establishing a boys’ camp of their own.”39 [[102]]

At that time, the Scout Handbook warned Scout Masters to dissuade curious boys from using masturbation to explore sex. Kinsey was able to get that warning removed.[103]

Although Reisman paints a picture of the Boy Scouts as an institution of high standards targeted and perverted by deviants, she later acknowledges they were founded by someone of Kinsey’s persuasion.

> *Kinsey’s interest in Scouting appears to have been similar to that of the movement’s founder, Sir Robert Baden-Powell. Like Baden-Powell, Kinsey married relatively late for his time (age 26) and seemed obsessed with nude males. These and other similarities to Baden-Powell, who is known to have collected “nature” photographs of young boys engaged in such activities as skinny-dipping, is both noteworthy and disturbing.*[104]

With a background like this, Kinsey was a shoo-in to begin teaching at Indiana University.

Once there, he immediately began seducing his male students by exploiting and abusing their trust in order to satiate his perverse desires.

> *Kinsey’s interest in camping with young boys continued after college. His professorship at Indiana University, as well as his field research in*

> *zoology, placed him in close contact with young male students. One was Ralph Voris, a friend whom Kinsey nicknamed "Mr. Man." From as early as 1926 the two shared intimate correspondence. Sex historian and friendly Kinsey biographer Paul Robinson depicts Voris as Kinsey's most intimate, though possibly latent, homosexual companion. ...*
>
> *Interviewed for the 1996 Yorkshire program, "Kinsey's Paedophiles," Jones described how,*
>
> *[T]wo male students, Brayland and Coons, worked under Kinsey's supervision in 1934/35. There were numerous episodes, nude and whatnot nude. [There is an explicit] photograph of Kinsey in the buff. On that trip [they engaged in] masturbation sessions, group masturbation. Both of the young men were trying to keep Kinsey at arm's length.*
>
> *Asked what Brayland's wife thought about it, Jones recalled: "I can tell you that she didn't like Alfred Kinsey. [She responded] that they were just kids from Mississippi and that Alfred Kinsey hurt them." And in his recent biography, Jones notes, Kinsey bathed with his students… striding about camp naked… [Confided one student] "You'd see him… going to the bathroom, and all that sort of thing… He'd just take a leak right there in front of us…" Professors simply did not engage in that sort of behavior with their graduate students. Yet Kinsey seemed totally oblivious to sexual taboos… as though he was determined to flaunt them… Kinsey had become a sexual rebel… manipulative and aggressive, a man who abused his professional authority and betrayed his trust as a teacher… [O]nly… a compulsive man would have taken such risks.*[47] [105]

However, these were times when the outing of such behavior brought consequences. Kinsey would need a "beard"; the appearance of normal life brought by a woman with little to no will of her own — someone who could be manipulated into full co-operation with any criminal act or behavior.

Such was Clara Bracken McMillen. Kinsey brutalized and manipulated her from the beginning, training her to be his willing slave.

> *Christenson describes how Alfred Kinsey used the couple's honeymoon to "test" his wife's courage and stamina. Though his bride was allegedly an outdoor girl, she had never climbed a mountain. Kinsey, who worked for years to overcome his sickly youth, had acquired mountain-climbing skills and commonly utilized them to establish his superiority over other men. Christenson writes, They climbed Mount Washington in a blizzard. Since Clara had never seen a mountain before, this was a real initiation into rugged climbing and all-weather camping. On the first stiff ascent Alfred selected a fire-warden's trail, which was the shortest feasible route and, in Clara's words, "straight up." Alfred, in good trim, led the way, with his new bride lagging somewhat behind.*[52]
>
> *As the honeymoon trek continued, Kinsey would forge ahead, then wait for his bride to catch up. Christenson notes: "It was clearly a test of her mettle, and she was equal to it."*[53]
>
> *Christenson does not ask why Dr. Kinsey did not opt for a traditional honeymoon of blissful togetherness. Instead of wine and roses, he brought pitted prunes and prepackaged trail foods. Instead of a cozy cottage with a warm fire, the future sex authority chose wind, rain, and frigid nights outdoors — conditions virtually guaranteed to preclude consummation of their marriage: "When necessary they built a lean-to for shelter from the wind and rain. The evening routine was to take off their boots and belts and to put on clean socks, plus all the extra clothing available, before climbing into their blankets."*[54] [106]

They were married in 1921 and even *Wikipedia* notes that it was a ceremony avoided by Kinsey's father.[107]

Their children would all be exploited to varying degrees with some overcoming it (even dismissing it) better than others.

> *Appearing on the 1996 BBC program "Reputations," Kinsey's two (by then elderly) daughters claimed that their father was a typical middle-class dad who was thoughtful in all things. Surviving son Bruce has repeatedly refused interviews with anyone writing about his father.*[108]

For Kinsey, “religion” was still a part of life but biographers and “critics” like Jewish Judith Reisman don’t give specifics.

> *Christenson notes that “Alfred described in detail to Clara his church work with the Bethany Boys’ Club while he was at Harvard,”[50] which suggested to Clara that Kinsey was “too churchy” for her.[51] Pomeroy insists, to the contrary, that by age 26 Kinsey was a committed atheist. If so, he apparently hid that fact from Clara. ...*
>
> *A later incident, while Kinsey was mentoring his sexology disciples, further underscored* [Reisman mislabels this Kinsey’s “atheism”]. *He and Pomeroy were talking about theological matters. Pomeroy, puzzled by the impression “that [Kinsey] still entertained religious feelings,” interjected, “...Do you really believe in God?” Kinsey was irate and “surprised” ...*
>
> *Alfred and Clara were married on June 3, 1921. She gave birth to their first son, Donald, in mid-1922. A diabetic, he died at a young age. They had three other children: daughters Anne (1924) and Joan (1925), and son Bruce (1928). Little is known about the Kinsey children, other than that one took piano lessons, they were forbidden to receive confirmation despite attending church and that they eventually gave their sex histories to Pomeroy and their father. Jones reports that Kinsey led his family on nudist vacations to the Smoky Mountains, and that nudist magazines were perused in the home. Kinsey himself would often shave in the nude in the presence of the children.[56] We are not told at what age this practice ended, or if it ended.*
>
> *All of the young Kinseys attended church. “Both parents,” Pomeroy explains, “felt it was a cultural experience they should have.” It is conceivable that Dr. Kinsey attended primarily to enhance an aura of respectability. Years earlier, Jones reports, he had joined with leaders of the eugenics movement, whose devotees disdained the Judeo Christian belief system. But a churchgoing image would provide useful cover for his secret life and unorthodox research.*[109]

What “church” (lower case) did the children attend?

— The one where teenagers are “confirmed” (and, apparently, one which Dr. Reisman wishes to screen out of the Kinsey family experience): Roman Catholicism.

The connection would be even more clear later in Kinsey’s life.

One of Kinsey’s favorite lines to wow future sexual deviants in his classroom was to impress them with how the “Kinsey Institute’s” collection of pornography was second only to the Vatican’s.

Jewish Dr. Judith “invalidates” this habit of Kinsey’s by quoting shameless anti-Semite E. Michael Jones. It seems Jones called the Vatican and the representative he spoke with denied the charge.[110]

Case closed!

Regardless, it is clear that both the Kinsey Institute and the Vatican prioritize pornography in their agendas.

As proof of how much power the Vatican has, Kinsey’s work is intimately intertwined with the Godfather of porn: Hugh Hefner.

> *Kinsey disciple Hugh Hefner launched the “other” revolutionary book,* ***Playboy****, in 1953, the same year that Kinsey’s* ***Female*** *volume was published.*
>
> *Hefner said that Kinsey was the researcher and that he was the “pamphleteer.” Hefner marketed Kinsey’s view of men as “Playboys,” and women and children as their sexual “Playmates.”*[111]

The connection is more clear with *Playboy’s* companion magazine, *Penthouse*, founded by Italian Roman Catholic media magnate Robert C. “Bob” Guccione.

Interestingly, Guccione is not mentioned by Reisman.

In 1979, Guccione spent nearly $20 million of his personal fortune to memorialize the Roman Emperor Caligula with a pornographic “epic” by the same name. He was surprisingly able to recruit big-named talent. The explicit sex movie starred Malcolm McDowell as Caligula and included

Teresa Ann Savoy, *Sir* John Gielgud, *Sir* Peter O'Toole and *Dame* Helen Mirren.

One can only guess how much their participation has guaranteed their continued success. At this writing, Hollywood.com has published the glitz article — ***50 Cent: "I'm in love with Helen Mirren"***

> *5**0 Cent** has fallen for the charms of **Dame Helen Mirren**, insisting he finds it hard not to just stare at her whenever he's in her company.*
>
> *The 69-year-old Oscar winner and the rapper, who is almost 30 years younger, met up on the red carpet at the 57th Monte Carlo TV Festival on Tuesday (20Jun17) in Monaco, and he is happy to admit he now has a major new crush.*
>
> ***50 Cent** posted a photo of the odd couple together on Instagram and added the caption: "70 is the new 50… Yeah, I think I love her, man. I'm trying not to stare at her.*[112]

If only "50 Cent" had been with Dame Helen 40 years ago, he could've played one of her Nubian consorts in Caligula's Court.

Although Judith Reisman stands dutiful guard before the Vatican's porn vaults, she's absolutely correct when she assails and assesses the damage (but not without, again, taking a swipe at a "Methodist minister" and his sleazy operation) — *Pomeroy tells us that Kinsey had a "grand scheme,"*[52] *and that sexualized images were vital to his dream of moving American society from its traditional moral standard based on marriage, to one predicated on "free love." Images intended to promote and legitimize deviant behaviors were critical to this moral and cultural conversion – what the IASHS calls the brain's "restructuring."*

> *The widespread availability of limitless varieties of pornographic magazines, videos, and computer graphics has institutionalized an assault on the fabric of our country that is, among other things, alienating an increasing number of men from real-life women, their wives, and their families.*[53] *As the institution of marriage has eroded, sexual violence toward women and children has escalated.*[113]

As to the Institute's own pornography, admiring Kinsey biographer Jonathan Gathorne-Hardy admitted — *The Kinsey Institute already moved Kinsey's notorious sex-films to a secret location. And they have vowed to destroy painstakingly accumulated material (including a $40 million erotic art collection almost never seen) if the police arrive with warrants — as the Tate documentary suggests is desirable... I'm afraid a lot of material has probably already been destroyed... I think it's inevitable that things will be got rid of. They're under siege...Tate...marks Kinsey down as a fifth-columnist gay man — the very image of deceit and lies.*[114]

Kinsey's homosexual student conquest[xi], Ralph "Mr. Man" Voris, remained "intimate" with him even to the point of collecting "data" on Greek boy-love.

> *Regarding "aesthetic admiration for the bodies of Greek youth," Kinsey wrote to Voris about his collection of "gorgeous" male homosexual photographs*[14] *in a manner somewhat reminiscent of Scouting founder Sir Robert Baden Powell's remarks about young male nudes:*[15]
>
> > *What I would have done without your earlier help, I do not know. ... I have whole albums of photographs of their friends, or from commercial sources-fine art to putrid. Some of the art model material is gorgeous. I want you to see it.*[16] [115]

Voris died just as their "research" was getting underway — supposedly of pneumonia — at only 38 years of age in 1940.

The whitewash by Kinsey's fellow deviant Wardell Baxter Pomeroy (regurgitated faithfully by *The Atlantic*) is a clinic in spin.

> *After remarking on the unexceptional character of Kinsey's professional and domestic life before 1938, Pomeroy continues, with an air of mystery and significance: "Yet there was one event that made these years far from ordinary for him. It was his friendship for a student, Ralph Voris ... Voris became the closest friend Kinsey ever had; their relationship probably meant more to him than any other." Voris died of pneumonia in 1940, and Kinsey was heartbroken,*

> *especially as he had hoped to share the challenge of his new project with this younger friend.*[116]

With "friendship" actually meaning seduction by abuse of trust for sodomy, we already see how trustworthy "Kinsey Institute" conclusions are.

Voris' wife repeatedly begged Kinsey to visit his "younger friend" — the one who meant more to him than any other — but he was too busy with "sex research".

However, after Voris died, Kinsey did decide upon a visit.

> *Alfred Kinsey's close friend Ralph ("Mr. Man") Voris died on May 9, 1940. Despite repeated requests by Voris' wife for a bedside visit, Kinsey was too deeply involved in sex interviews to see him. He and Clara did, however, drive immediately to Springfield, Missouri, to comfort the widow and attend the funeral service. Then, [U]nder the cover of darkness, he [Kinsey] entered Voris' office and removed certain items, including copies and originals of their private correspondence. This accomplished, Kinsey and Clara returned to Bloomington, without staying for the interment two days later...*[2] [117]

In 1938, Kinsey managed to finagle a position teaching a marriage course. It was something he was completely unqualified to do but it was a position that allowed him the cover to begin a lifetime of sex crimes masked as "science".

Perhaps more than any other enabler was the fact that Kinsey again avoided service in war. While the flower of America's youth was being shredded in World War II, Kinsey was a jackal amongst their wives and children.

He quickly arranged for deferments for his entire sex staff[118]: a feat which betrays the support of powerful "friends".

During this time, Kinsey was honing his skills as a predator and master manipulator; taking boys (Scouts, church youth groups and students) out on "camping trips" in which he insisted they all bathe daily and openly.[119]

Kinsey was a textbook maladjusted homosexual deviant who secretly despised women including his own wife. This was apparent as he badgered and brutalized young females into openly discussing their most intimate sex lives for his “research”. He then berated them for what he perceived were “lies”, often fabricating what he thought he *should’ve* found had they told him what he wanted to hear.

This was particularly outrageous for the 1940’s but Indiana University stood by their “scientist” then and still does today.

Kinsey biographer James Jones openly admits that Kinsey’s “interviews” for sex histories were primarily used to arouse the “scientist” and not for any semblance of “research”.[120]

Kinsey’s personal perversions consumed him with lust and he actively sought the most depraved acts possible until, eventually, nothing aroused him and, ironically, he became impotent.[121]

What any of Kinsey’s admirers fail to admit is that “research” with a predetermined outcome isn’t “science”, it’s propaganda.

It takes merely the slightest familiarization with Alfred Kinsey to understand that he was a sexual pervert on a mission to normalize deviancy yet this is never admitted.

The conclusion is startling: each and every Kinsey peer in “science” approves of what Kinsey did and is satisfied to maintain the lies despite how it destroys their own credibility and offends real science.

As a result of this agenda of pseudo-science, Kinsey needed to be assured of the co-operation of willing agents of disinformation.

He did that with blackmail.

He recruited only young people and then immediately demanded they give every detail of their previous sex lives which he meticulously chronicled and filed away.

If they wished to advance, they were entirely reliant upon him.

> *Kinsey’s principal assistants and coauthors of the **Male** volume — Wardell Pomeroy and Clyde Martin — were both young, inexperienced, and without doctorates or published academic work.*

> *Their lack of professional standing was unusual for such a controversial and high profile research study. For Kinsey, their loyalty would be reinforced by their lack of academic achievement. The team was entirely dependent on Kinsey for professional advancement.*[122]

Pomeroy described Kinsey's bullying and manipulation in a very distinct way —

> *That was Kinsey, the mother superior keeping us within the strict boundaries of his schedule, yet we did not often resent it.*[123]

But he didn't stop there.

He then required them to be filmed in sexual activity of all kinds, done in a special sound-proof room provided him by Indiana University.

> *Kinsey's fixation on direct participation in, and observation of, sex acts led eventually to the construction of a soundproof laboratory at Indiana University's Wiley Hall, where Kinsey, his staff, their wives, and invited guests could engage in all sorts of sexual antics. Some were documented on film. Kinsey believed that sexual experiments on humans should not differ measurably from those on "other animals." Wrapped in the protective aura of "scientific research," he sought* [any depraved act possible] ... [124]

Friendly Kinsey biographer James H. Jones told the BBC "there was more than a little masochism filmed at the institute." Jones admitted Kinsey's "personal interest" in making sado/masochistic pornos.[125]

For ultimate secrecy (and participation — which he often did, being the good scientist) Kinsey created a sex studio in the attic of his own home.[126]

Most of the men on Kinsey's staff were also his homosexual conquests.

> *It is to be remembered that both Pomeroy and Martin were, reports Jones, Kinsey's "lovers" from time to time.*[127]

If they were particularly pleasing to him, he allowed them to have sex with his wife.[xii]

But only after he sodomized them first.

Vincent Nowlis was the only heterosexual to join Kinsey and that didn't last long. He was the exception: choosing to resign rather than participate in the "homosexual experience".[128]

> *The "public" might indeed have been "astounded," since the "eminent scientists" who appeared in the Institute's sex films included all of the carefully selected Kinsey team, including Kinsey, his wife, the wives of all or most of Kinsey's coauthors, the timid Martin, the eager Pomeroy (who occasionally performed sexually with Kinsey* ***and*** *his wife), and a sexually-coerced Dallenback. In a brazen example of sexual workplace harassment parading as "science," Kinsey hired only those who would yield to his demands for "primary" sources.*[20] *His methodology included secrecy and deception, which he deemed necessary to accomplish his goals while hiding his techniques from the public.*
>
> *The histories were taken in soundproof facilities constructed, according to Jones, between 1942 and 1943 (approximately when Pomeroy joined the team), with additions in 1950. Christenson writes: The "lab" — as we always called it — presented a uniform, trim, antiseptic appearance… all well locked. At Wiley Hall where the Institute was housed on the ground floor, windows… were carefully fitted with strong metal grills. ... All doors to private offices had to be soundproofed and special locks were installed to insure privacy in discussion and interviewing.*[21]*...*
>
> *The 1996* ***World Book Almanac and Book of Facts*** *states that 40 decibels are comparable to "light traffic," 70 decibels to "normal traffic, quiet train," and 80 decibels to "rock music or a subway."*[23]
>
> *Kinsey's "eighty decibels" would conceal quite a lot, including the shrieks and screams of the sadomasochistic acts performed by Samuel M. Steward, whom Kinsey labeled a "masochist." Steward would later become a well-known homosexual psychologist whose special interests included boy "hustlers" and tattooing.*[24] [[129]]

Here, again, Jewish Dr. Judith seems to have missed Samuel Morris Steward's full resumé.

Steward was a deviant who wrote homosexual eroticism under the names Phil Andros, Phil Sparrow[xiii] and others.

It is amazing that a sexual pervert and "tattoo artist" like Steward should have such a long life (1909 – 1993), perhaps there were other factors involved.

Most importantly, Samuel Morris Steward was a Roman Catholic, highly sought after by Catholic institutions of higher learning.

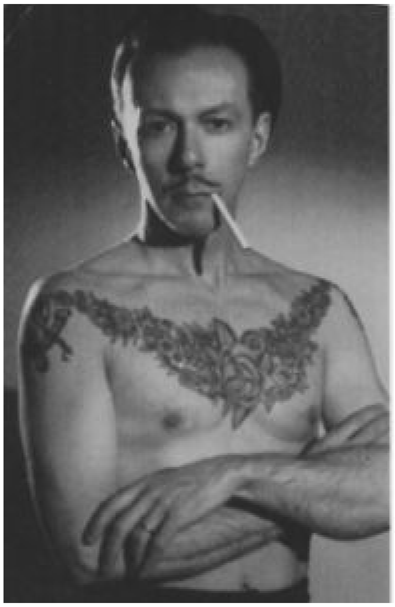

He first taught at Archbishop John Carroll College in Montana but then received a promotion to Jesuit Loyola University in the "Windy City", Chicago (a Jesuit stronghold where future Jesuit *protégés* like Barack Obama would be taught how to "community organize"[130]).

Seeking more "intimacy" with his students, Steward transferred again (but still to another Catholic college in Chicago), to DePaul.

Clearly, Samuel Steward was the kind of man clergy wanted mentoring their students.

It was here that Steward and Kinsey were brought together.[131]

Steward was a "scientist", too.

> *Openly consorting with like-minded authors, teachers, students, artists and performers, pick-ups, and tricks, Steward kept detailed diaries and lists of all his sexual "conquests" and escapades in a box marked*

> *“Stud File.” The liaisons number into the thousands. He also took photographs and filmed his sexual orgies. Considering that he could have been arrested and blackmailed for any of these indiscretions, it’s remarkable that these documents survived. ... He was encouraged in this endeavor by his good friend and guide, Alfred Kinsey, who saw in Steward an invaluable entree into the homosexual demimonde (to which he was himself drawn) and a unique example of a sexual gourmand, for want of a better word, for whom quantity was more important than quality. ~ Huffington Post*[132]

Steward was brought to Kinsey to be mentored in perversion.

It was a match made in Hell and Steward marked the connection with an interesting characterization of Kinsey that only Luciferians would understand — *In spring of 1950, at Kinsey’s invitation, he was filmed engaging in BDSM sex with Mike Miksche, a New York-based erotic artist also known as Steve Masters. ... Kinsey was Steward’s most important mentor; he later described Kinsey ... as a god-like bringer of enlightenment to mankind, thus giving him the nickname, “Doctor Prometheus.”*[3] *~ Wikipedia*[133]

This homosexual porn film was especially organized although what lead to it has received little-to-no scrutiny.

Judith Reisman gives more detail —

> ***SEX-TORTURE EXPERIMENTS***
>
> *Writing in the November 13, 1980, issue of **The Advocate**, a homosexual monthly, Steward recalled the time he was flown to Indiana to be filmed in a sex sadism film produced and directed by Kinsey. Pomeroy described Steward as a “partner” in a “homosexual couple,”*[25] *but Steward wrote that he had never met the “partner” (Mike Miksche) until they were introduced in Kinsey’s garden. Shortly thereafter, the two prepared for the filming of an act of sexual sadism as Kinsey’s “scientists” watched and took notes.*
>
> *Pomeroy claims that the sadism filmed that day was merely part of the couple’s “normal” sex life. He recalls that Kinsey, while in New York*

> *observing men battering one another in sadistic rituals, “was particularly intrigued by the intercourse of a homosexual couple in which one of the partners had an orgasm,” so he invited Steward to his “lab” for a demonstration.*[26]
>
> *Steward wrote that by the time he arrived on campus, Kinsey had gotten Miksche “half-drunk on gin.” The subsequent sadism film sequences were not quite what Steward had anticipated: I was marked and marred, all muscles weakened… my jaws were so tired and unhinged… Mike slapped me hard and [unprintable]... During the sessions I was vaguely conscious of people dropping in now and then to observe, while Mrs. Kinsey, a true scientist to the end… sat by, and once in a while calmly changed the sheets upon the workbench.*[27]
>
> *While Pomeroy suggests that the “partners” had a clear idea of who was in charge, operationally speaking Kinsey and Pomeroy were in charge of the entire scenario. The Kinsey team admittedly solicited victim and offender, paid for the service, and engaged in deception to bring it about.*[134]

Alfred Kinsey and Samuel Steward were true soulmates having walked (or been guided through?) the same path from Methodism to Roman Catholicism.

> *Born into a Methodist household, Steward converted to Catholicism during his university years, but had long since abandoned the Catholic Church by the time he accepted his teaching position at Loyola. ~ Wikipedia*[135]

Interesting that Steward should “long-abandon” Catholicism but be selected to teach for the Jesuits and then transfer again to yet another Catholic college.

Protestants in general and Methodists in specific would be targeted even further when Kinsey homosexual partner and subordinate “scientist” Wardell Pomeroy was sent from the “Institute” to further the work of another sexual deviant, Ted Mcllvenna. Mcllvenna was masquerading as a

Methodist (in this case, a “minister”, to boot), in the Jesuit stronghold of San Francisco.[xiv]

Dr. Reisman is careful to expunge what “church” Kinsey kept his children from being “Confirmed” in (but specifically sent them to for training), or how Kinsey’s connection with pornography “Professor” Samuel Steward was arranged on the campus of Catholic DePaul University but she had no problem calling Ted Mcllvenna, a “Methodist minister”.

> *After leaving Bloomington, Wardell Pomeroy became Academic Dean of the Institute for the Advanced Study of Human Sexuality in San Francisco alongside the Rev. Ted Mcllvenna, a Methodist minister.*
>
> *Like the Kinsey Institute, the IASHS filmed sexual acts among staff members, including scenes of these sex professionals engaged in graphic homosexual and heterosexual orgies seen in **Meditations**, an IASHS by-product. The IASHS sold its child pornography to **Hustler** magazine for widespread publication.*[136]

If we were to contrast whether the Vatican truly has the world’s greatest collection of pornography or Ted Mcllvenna should be honestly labeled a “Methodist minister” without qualification, there’s a good chance the Methodists would be able to make the finer point.

In his position as a trusted Catholic sexual deviant, “professor” and “author”, special arrangements were made[137] to have Steward meet and promote two infamous Jewish lesbians residing in Catholic Paris; Gertrude Stein and Alice Toklas.

With surreal obedience, like Ygor to Dr. Frankenstein, Kinsey’s wife Clara submitted to any and all sexual perversions foisted upon her by “guests” and “researchers” alike. When not a participant, she would bring milk and cookies to the porn studio in between sets and replace the sheets soiled by semen, urine and excrement.[138]

Kinsey biographer James Jones characterized this as “befitted the wife of the high priest of sexual liberation.”[139]

“High priest”, indeed. However few have been as hopelessly enslaved as Alfred Charles Kinsey.

As Kinsey continued to collect “sex histories”, he became a junior J. Edgar Hoover — carefully assimilating dirt on anyone he could, dragging them into the Devil’s Simulation.

> *Kinsey’s aggressive, intrusive, and arguably illegal conduct was protected by Indiana University’s public relations apparatus. We now know that some of the women and children in publicity photographs may have paid a high price to maintain the carefully honed Kinsey image. In October 1997, syndicated columnist Mona Charen, commenting on James Jones’ biography, noted that “according to one wife of another employee, there was ‘sickening pressure’ to agree to have sex on film.”*[78]
>
> *Many officials and scholars covered up Kinsey’s highly improper activities during his lifetime, and continue to do so at the Kinsey Institute and Indiana University today. Pomeroy adds some perspective to what was foisted onto the public and misrepresented as an objective scientific quest for human betterment: I think he liked secrets, that their possession gave him a sense of power. And there was no question that the histories did give him unique potential power. On the Indiana campus alone, there were at least twenty professors with homosexual histories unknown to anyone else, not to mention the numerous extramarital experiences recorded. ... With his intimate knowledge of the sexual lives of important people, Kinsey could have figuratively blown up the United States socially and politically. [P]erhaps he liked to feel sometimes that he was putting something over on the world.*[79] *[Emphasis added.]*[140]

Perhaps a better description would be “Jesuit Confessor”. It’s one Kinsey made himself.

> *Kinsey once claimed that he and his team had earned the rights of “a priest...”*[63] *to keep confidential the information provided by rapists, murderers, child-molesters, and pedophile murderers.*[141]

Kinsey took particular pleasure in terrorizing children in the guise of "science" such as showing explicit films of animal copulation — particularly violent or graphic ones like porcupines.

Note the expressions of Kinsey and his wife Clara (second from the right).

Keep all this in mind whenever Alfred Kinsey is mentioned with hallowed reverence as an esteemed "scientist".

With a totalitarian iron fist no different than Nazis or Communists, Kinsey pushed for the "right" to commit any heinous sex crime on man, woman, child or beast and mask it as "science".

Sadly, even his detractors allow this subterfuge.

> *Kinsey often expressed an elitist right to unlimited, uncontrolled "scientific research" into everyone's sexuality, including that of children from birth. It should hardly surprise us, then, that in the chapter on child sexuality in the* ***Male*** *volume he writes wistfully of the great things that science might accomplish with absolute freedom to conduct human experiments: "Erotic arousal [of children] could be subjected to precise instrumental measurement if objectivity among scientists and public respect for scientific research allowed such laboratory investigation."*[84] *This noxious attitude caused Ashley Montagu to accuse Kinsey of "scientomania:"*
>
> > *The analyst must first and foremost be human, must be responsive to the emotions which motivate human beings. Kinsey doesn't*

> *appear to be very interested in emotions. ...* *85* [[142]]

This is, at best, a gross misunderstanding of what "science" is and, at worst, a purposeful deception.

Nonsensical words like "scientomania" or "scientism" spin pseudo-science as "pure" but misguided when, in reality, it is neither.

The foundation of science is the Scientific Method:

- Make an observation.
- Develop an hypothesis.
- Conduct experiments in a sterile environment (isolating known variables) to replicate the observation, thereby proving the hypothesis.
- Present to peers of equal or greater reliability in this method who can prove or disprove using the same steps (peer review).

Many would be shocked to learn just how much pseudo-science is taught as real science in every school with neither the requirement to obey their own disciplines nor the acceptance of cross-examination or dissent of any kind. Along with Kinsey's "sex science" are the frauds of evolution, paleontology and astronomy. Their suppositions are neither observable, testable nor repeatable yet they are commanded to be taught without exception or criticism.

When laymen make observations that contradict the "experts" they are ridiculed or targeted for insider jargon they aren't meant to make sense of.

For instance, an unbiased observation tells us the sun and moon are roughly the same size and relatively close to us yet the "experts" say it's merely an optical illusion: the sun is 400x bigger than the moon and, "coincidentally" 400x further from us.

"Experts" like the National Aeronautics and Space Administration tell us that —

- The Earth is spinning at 1,000 mph (breaking the 767mph sound barrier).

- The Earth revolves around the sun at 67,000 mph.
- The solar system moves through the Milky Way at 500,000 mph.
- The Milky Way moves through the universe at 670,000,000 mph.

Yet the North Star remains absolutely fixed.

Again, we're told this is an "optical illusion".

The North Star is so far away, it only *seems* fixed.

The keepers of the Devil's Simulation own our very reality and our most trusted institutions are our most vicious enemies.

Doctor of Communications Judith Reisman admits that big money like the Rockefeller Foundation hands weaponized tactics to government agencies like the CIA on how to manipulate public opinion with the goal to get innocent citizens to approve that which would ultimately cause great harm to themselves and their children.[143]

As a key player in this deception — the complete destruction of traditional, Christian sexual morays and norms — "Dr." Alfred Kinsey's *"research" had been based on the experiences of deviants, prisoners, homosexuals in bars and baths, and child molesters*.[144]

> *For his database, Kinsey classified more than 1,400 criminals and sex offenders as "normal,"[4] on grounds that such miscreants are essentially the same as normal men. ...*
>
> *Kinsey associate Paul Gebhard explained that even the prison sample was heavily weighted toward sexual disorder, since the Kinsey team specifically sought the worst sex offenders...*[145]

Gebhard later admitted to Yorkshire Television (for their 1998 BBC documentary *Secret History: Kinsey's Paedophiles*) that when they went to prisons, they told each administration, "'Give us the list of everyone who is up on a pedophilia charge', and we'd go after them."

Even more astoundingly, Gebhard outed the existence of the Devil’s Simulation child sex slave network: “*There was also a pedophile organization, in this country. They co-operated with us. Some of them, of course, were not incarcerated.*”[146]

Even after picking the most outrageous subjects, even after coercing them into explicit detail and encouraging them to be as wild and perverse as possible, the Kinsey team still didn’t get enough of the “results” they were looking for so they often “embellished” the accounts.

> *Kinsey’s figure of 10 percent homosexuality, for example, mirrors what is called the statistical “fudge factor.” It can also be applied to his data on adultery, sodomy, etc. If a subject stubbornly refuses to admit committing acts recited by the interviewer, the latter simply speculates about what* ***really*** *happened. Among scientists, such manipulation is euphemistically termed “massaging the data.”*[147]

Yet, today, 70 years after the publication of *Sexual Behavior in the Human Male*, believing that 1 person in 10 is homosexual is as accepted as the spinning of the Earth or the Age of the Dinosaurs.

Because they receive, use, and even facilitate themselves, “data” derived from criminal acts, the Kinsey staff (then and now) lives in an alternate reality that allows them to validate any aberrant behavior as “normal”.

> *...it is apparent that Kinsey’s peculiar definitions of such terms as “college,” “married,” “rape,” “contacts,” and “partner” were precisely designed to bolster his team’s bizarre views of rape, crime, marriage, and child molestation.*[148]

Their enablers in law enforcement, justice and government see that they have no need of leaving this alternate reality.

The Pedophiles of Pseudo-Science

First and foremost, Alfred Kinsey, his subordinates and all they employed were pedophiles.

In this, they were (and are) true members of the Devil’s Simulation.

In 1965, the “Kinsey Institute” published *Sex Offenders: An Analysis of Types*.

It was a one thousand page subterfuge whose biggest deception was to paint the abuse of the innocent in grades.

It was immediately brought in as definitive text for cops, judges, lawyers, doctors and teachers who were all taught that, if a child walks away from abuse without a swollen face and internal bleeding, it’s much less a crime.

Reality is just the opposite. The latent harm done to the rape of children may not manifest for decades. It can run the gamut from mood-swings like depression or inexplicable rage to schizophrenia. It can include the inability to normally interact with others from basic office co-workers to friends, family, spouses or children.

Almost every time, child abuse leads the victim to harmful addictions and often ends in suicide.

One of the “trusted Institute researchers” for *Sex Offenders* was Glenn Ramsey, a Peoria school teacher — himself a sex offender having “interviewed” 350 “sexually aberrant” boys. He was subsequently getting fired for “improprieties”. Even here, Ramsey escaped being arrested and prosecuted.

Judith Reisman noted —

> *Nevertheless, Kinsey defended Ramsey vociferously, and obtained Rockefeller Foundation money to pay his legal fees.*[149]

She then quoted Kinsey out of context as being deathly afraid of “Catholics” because they harassed his “researchers”.

The Rockefeller family and Foundation is another “safe” target, seemingly devoid of connections to the Catholic Church but the strings are attached if one takes just a little time to look for them.

For instance, one of the Presidents of the Rockefeller Foundation was Father Theodore Martin Hesburgh (1917 – 2015) — one of the most powerful Roman Catholic priests in America.

Hesburgh was also the President of Notre Dame for 35 years (just a few hours north of Indiana University).

Father Hesburgh was an invisible hand in every Presidential administration from Eisenhower to Obama and he served openly as a United States Government representative in a variety of posts such as the “National Science Board” or the Civil Rights Committee as well as the Civil Rights Commission and the President’s Blue Ribbon Immigration Reform Commission.

Each position promoted a treasonous agenda of lies and deceit.

Father Hesburgh was a VIP guest of the United States Navy and joined them in a supposed secret expedition to the South Pole — except that such a journey remains impossible both then and now.

“Immigration Reform” was and still is code for the Catholic Church’s agenda to endlessly flood the United States with Roman Catholic illegal aliens from the south, trained by countless Jesuit institutions to demand socialism and communism from their host nation. Open borders means aliens go through no assimilation process and they are used to accent the “clash of civilizations” causing chaos and anger wherever they accumulate.

Even the Catholic Church’s involvement in “civil rights” has a poisonous end-state.

On the surface, “civil rights” seems a praiseworthy endeavor but harmonious reconciliation was not on the agenda for Hesburgh or any of the thousands of Catholic priests and nuns who helped fan the flames of racial unrest, especially in the 1960’s.

It was all part of the “Divide and Conquer” technique still in use today.

As a result of Theodore Hesburgh’s power in the American government he was honored in a way unique to Rome’s authority over the United States military — Father Ted was given a “ride” in the Air Force’s most secret platform in his day, the SR-71 Blackbird.

Interracial Council
RESTAURANT
HALL BE GHT
EGATION NOW
ILLIONS FOR BUILDINGS; MUCH FOR STICE?
CATHOLICS Do NOT DISCRIMINATE
CATHOLIC STUDENTS PROTEST DISCRIMINATION

Underneath the façade of a scholarly college president, Hesburgh was just as much the deviant as Kinsey which is why he fit perfectly at the Rockefeller Foundation, bankrolling Kinsey's work. From abortion to "sex education", Hesburgh outraged conservative Catholics with his politics.[150] He even promoted SIECUS, the "Sex Information and Education Council of the United States" — a radical organization that teaches complete depravity to the youngest of children captive in both public and private schools.

Judith Reisman notes —

> *In 1964, the Sex Information and Education Council of the United States (SIECUS) was launched at the Kinsey Institute. Its objective was to teach Kinseyan ideology as sex education in our schools.*
>
> *SIECUS (which now calls itself the* ***Sexuality*** *Information and Education Council of the United States) imprinted the new Kinsey variant standard on almost all sex education curricula. Its early leader, Dr. Mary Calderone (past medical director of Planned Parenthood) was the direct link between Kinsey's university-based research, Planned Parenthood's grassroots outreach, and SIECUS.*
>
> *SIECUS was a "Resource Center [operating] Specialized Programs to Distribute Information about Human sexuality [through] learned*

> *journals, research studies, training materials for health professionals and sample classroom curricula."*[111]
>
> *As SIECUS is regularly funded by the State, questions need to be asked about the January 1979* ***Annual Playboy*** *which announced that "****Playboy*** *Foundation provide[d] the first of several major grants to The Sex Information and Education Council of the United States to support its nationwide educational programs."*
>
> *As Christie Hefner added,* ***Playboy*** *also provided the original seed money for SIECUS: Through the* ***Playboy*** *Foundation, Hefner put his money where his mouth was. It made the initial grant to establish an Office of Research Services of the Sex Information and Education Council of the U.S. (SIECUS) in the late 60s.*[151]

However, Roman Catholic priests like Hesburgh aren't shown by Kinsey critics in their role behind the scenes, Jews are. Again, eager to betray her own people to serve the Authors of the Inquisition, Judith Reisman connects the dots from SIECUS to eugenics and Planned Parenthood founder Margaret Sanger through Kinsey's propaganda of sexual perversion in patsy Jews like David Loth and Morris Ernst.

When Kinsey published *Sexual Behavior in the Human Male*, "historians" like Loth and "jurists" like Morris simultaneously applied it to their fields.

> *The fourth book published in tandem with Kinsey's Report was* ***American Sexual Behavior and the Kinsey Report****. This very important contribution to the growing "free love" legal debate was co-authored by ACLU attorney, Morris L. Ernst, and historian David Loth. The book's dedication was to the accommodating Kinsey team who "enriched the market-place of thought."*[28] *Ernst advocated legalization of adultery, obscenity, and abortion throughout his career, as well as Kinsey's full panoply of sex law changes: Let me mention a few items on which law must say thank you [to Kinsey]. Our laws have attempted to abolish all sexual outlets, except marital intercourse, … [including] sodomy [and] seduction… Forty-four states have laws against adultery. … Yet the Kinsey report may well… show that one third of all husbands [commit adultery] …Those who are concerned*

> *with juvenile delinquency, treatment of homosexuals, and the frightening attitudes of our penal institutions will have a glimmer of what the Kinsey report will do to the stream of law.*[29]
>
> *Ernst was influential. He served as a "personal representative for President Roosevelt during World War II."*[30] *Moreover, he was well credentialed as a legal radical for serving as a founding member of the American Civil Liberties Union (ACLU).*[31] *Ernst was also the attorney for Kinsey, Margaret Sanger, the Kinsey Institute, the Sex Information and Education Council of the United States (SIECUS), and Planned Parenthood of America. Ernst had close ties to influential and progressive Supreme Court Justices Louis Brandeis,* [William Joseph] *Brennan,* [Felix] *Frankfurter and Judge* [Billings] *Learned Hand,*[32] *among others. Through the considerable efforts of Ernst, the Kinsey study would have special salience in the courtroom as its findings were plied there. In 1945, Ernst declared, "[w]e had fun educating juries and judges" with their new "scientific" sex information...*[152]

The United States Supreme Court is another excellent case study in Roman Catholic control.

From its inception, the Court was *never* intended to wield the tyrannical, autocratic power it does. That power was fabricated by Chief Justice John Marshall through his decision in Marbury v. Madison (1803).

> *Thomas Jefferson had just won the presidency from John Adams. Adams, before leaving office, appointed William Marbury as Justice of the Peace in the District of Columbia. President Jefferson ordered his Secretary of State, James Madison, to withhold the appointment and Marbury brought suit.*
>
> *Part of the decision of* ***Marbury v. Madison*** *came down to "who had the final authority" given that the Judiciary Act of 1789 appeared to give powers not found in Article III of the Constitution. Although Marshall's overall decision was not to expand the powers of the Central Government, he crowned the Supreme Court as the ultimate arbiter in the question of constitutionality. This unprecedented power is today known as "Judicial Review".*

> *It has been the root of treasonous tyranny throughout American history ever since, where as few as 5 Supreme Court Justices can subvert the will of the entire American populace... ~ Illuminati Unmasked*[153]

If Justices are sick, absent or recused from a decision, less than five individuals unaccountable to the American citizenry can dictate “law” to them.

Some of the most heinous agendas have been accomplished in just this fashion from the “right” to murder the unborn to the safeguarding of pornography as “free speech”.

While America was vigilant, Rome had to rely upon Freemasonic faux Protestants, committed Communist Jews and an occasional overt Catholic serving on the Court.

As that vigilance waned, by 2016 the Vatican was confident enough to openly own the Supreme Court with a solid majority of *six* Roman Catholics flanked by three token Leftist Jews.

On February 13th, 2016, one of those Roman Catholic Justices — Antonin Scalia — was reported dead at the secluded Cibolo Creek, Texas Ranch of wealthy investment banker John Poindexter. The official story was that, after “quail hunting” the day before, the 79 year-old “died in his sleep”.[154]

Scalia was immediately attended to by his doctor, Rear Admiral Brian P. Monahan. Monahan is also the Attending Physician of the United States Congress. He, too, is a Roman Catholic who was trained at not one, but *two* Jesuit institutions; Fairfield and Georgetown.[155]

However, suspicions immediately arose when the Cibolo Ranch and Scalia were implicated in ritual child sex abuse.[156]

The alternative media web site *Veterans Today* ran this byline without explaining it — ***Worst person in the world found dead in Texas “rent boy ranch,” playground for Mike Jagger and Charlie Sheen.***[157]

Perhaps it remained unexplained because *Veterans Today* and Senior Editor Gordon Duff are vicious anti-Semites (which is why they’ve been seeded into alternative media on behalf of Rome).

More specifically, speaker, activist, blogger and author David Shurter claimed that, as a victim of ritual child sex abuse, Scalia was one of his rapists.[158]

The use of secluded ranches had been described as a *modus operandi* of the Pedocracy 35 years earlier by victim whistleblower Paul Bonacci.[159]

Scalia has been named as a member of the super-secret, ultra-orthodox Roman Catholic cult of Opus Dei.[160],[161] Several Opus Dei inductees have been implicated in ritual child sex abuse, torture and murder. The juxtaposition of extreme Roman piety with such an ultimate evil is telling.

Did something go wrong at the "rent-boy[xv] ranch"? Did the debauchery do in the debilitated devil-worshipper? Perhaps one of the seemingly defenseless victims suddenly turned upon his abuser in uncontrollable, pent-up rage.

More on Opus Dei and ritual child abuse in Chapter 30.

As we try to regain awareness of Vatican secret control over power from Helsinki to Hollywood, Denmark to D.C., the Dragon of Rome is making attempts to cover her tracks again.

President Donald Trump (trained by the Jesuits at Fordham then sent to "secular" University of Pennsylvania for his sheepskin) selected "Protestant" 10th Circuit Court Judge Neil McGill Gorsuch as his replacement.

Gorsuch attends St. John's Episcopal Church in Boulder, Colorado — the same parish as the family of JonBenét Ramsey.

St. John's is pastored by a woman, "Reverend" Susan Springer. She is notably Leftist in her teachings — as is the vast majority of all Episcopal churches. In fact, the Episcopalian Church is such a close off-shoot of Roman Catholicism it is often called in jest "Catholic Lite".

Amongst the Luciferians, any reference to "John" immediately calls up Templar worship of John the Baptist as the "true messiah" instead of Jesus Christ, known as "Johannism".

A Jewish journalist at the *Washington Post* wrote a prominent piece promoting Gorsuch as “the First Protestant on the Court in Years[162]” (he was, of course, confirmed by the Senate).

The Washington Post is now home of Martin “Marty” Baron, the driving force behind the *Boston Globe*’s Spotlight exposé on Catholic sex abuse in that city. It was his first action as Editor and he left shortly thereafter (almost as if he was on a mission to resuscitate the Globe’s mummified credibility). He’s now an Executive Editor at the *Post*.

JonBenét

If ever there were an obvious victim of the Devil’s Simulation it would be JonBenét Ramsey.

The obsessive behavior of her parents, John Bennett and Patricia Ann “Patsy” Ramsey left all of the warning signs.

Glamorizing a small child into adult sex appeal should be immediate cause for any “parent” to be under investigation but John Bennet was a millionaire who worked for Lockheed Martin.

JonBenét Ramsey, Wikipedia

The fact that JonBenét was garroted and bludgeoned to death on Christmas Day in 1996 made it clear the perpetrators had an emotion-driven motive connected directly to the child.

An autopsy revealed JonBenét’s vagina had been damaged and wiped clean.[163]

She was even found in the basement of the family home.

A 1999 grand jury voted to indict John and “Patsy” Ramsey as both abusive parents and accessories to the brutal murder of their 6 year-old little girl but then-District Attorney Alex Hunter refused.[164]

41-year-old elementary school teacher John Mark Karr a was arrested in Bangkok, Thailand, in 2006. Karr confessed to the crime and evidence quickly ruled him out.

What happened to JonBenét Ramsey remains “unsolved”.

Or, perhaps a more accurate description would be “un-prosecuted”.

Criminal Behavior

What was the “motive” behind Alfred Kinsey’s “research”?

There is no other explanation for the “data” in *Sexual Behavior in the Human Male’s* “Table 34” than satanic child sex abuse.

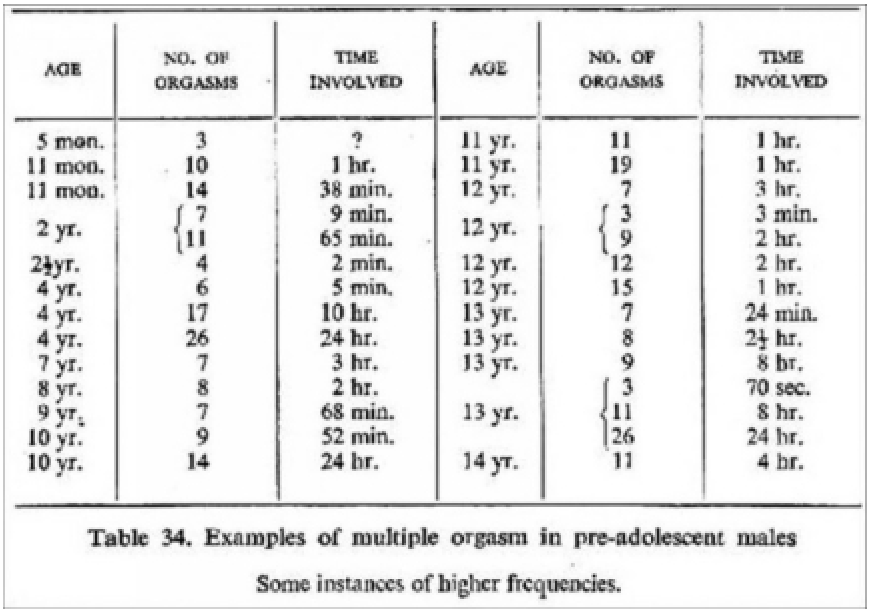

AGE	NO. OF ORGASMS	TIME INVOLVED	AGE	NO. OF ORGASMS	TIME INVOLVED
5 mon.	3	?	11 yr.	11	1 hr.
11 mon.	10	1 hr.	11 yr.	19	1 hr.
11 mon.	14	38 min.	12 yr.	7	3 hr.
2 yr.	7	9 min.	12 yr.	3	3 min.
	11	65 min.		9	2 hr.
2½yr.	4	2 min.	12 yr.	12	2 hr.
4 yr.	6	5 min.	12 yr.	15	1 hr.
4 yr.	17	10 hr.	13 yr.	7	24 min.
4 yr.	26	24 hr.	13 yr.	8	2½ hr.
7 yr.	7	3 hr.	13 yr.	9	8 hr.
8 yr.	8	2 hr.	13 yr.	3	70 sec.
9 yr.	7	68 min.		11	8 hr.
10 yr.	9	52 min.		26	24 hr.
10 yr.	14	24 hr.	14 yr.	11	4 hr.

Table 34. Examples of multiple orgasm in pre-adolescent males

Some instances of higher frequencies.

Examples in *Male* include an “orgasm” from a two-month-old infant and 26 “orgasms” from a 4 year old boy in 24 hours.

Even though Kinsey and his criminal cabal claimed (then and now) not to have directly participated in nor encouraged crimes against children, the fact that “orgasms” were “timed with a stop watch” means perpetrators were instructing in criminal abuse of children, toddlers and infants.

Eventually, they divulged that they were also directly involved, themselves.

> *Pomeroy claimed:*
>
> > *Kinsey tried to train me to help with interviewing the children, but I found that I wasn’t good at it. For that matter, none of the other staff members was any more successful at this delicate job, and Kinsey had to do nearly all of it alone.*[56] ...
>
> *Pomeroy explains how critics were lulled into a false sense of security about the sources of the child samples by Kinsey’s euphemistic*

> *description of the interview process: He concentrated at first on the three-, four- and five-year-old levels, working primarily in nursery schools...* [58] [165]

The true agenda of the "Kinsey Institute" is personal gratification via the most perverse sex possible and to legitimize it as "science" to be used by other deviant Elites.

Kinsey was the worst of them and did directly participate in criminal acts.

> *Kinsey told Dr. Frank K. Shuttleworth of the Institute of Child Welfare, University of California at Berkeley, "that students in the field had all been 'too prudish' to make an actual investigation of sperm count in early adolescent males." Pomeroy stated that Kinsey himself collected "some material" in the "first ejaculate," but "he did not yet have any actual counts."*[59]
>
> *The third research method employed by the Kinsey team entailed genital experiments; observing, recording, and filming not only adults, but children and infants as well. This technique primarily underpins Chapter 5 of the Male volume and Chapter 4 of the* ***Female*** *volume. Data about the sexual response of children could not be obtained by interview, and the precise details on how the data were obtained may never be fully revealed. It will likely require intense public pressure to force full disclosure. As noted, however, comments about the process have occasionally surfaced from Kinsey Institute team members. In* ***Human Sexualities*** *(1997), John Gagnon, a Kinsey Institute associate, offhandedly acknowledges the illegality of the experiments: A less neutral observer than Kinsey would have described these events as sex crimes, since they involved sexual contact between adults and children. Whether or not these observers were "scientifically trained" [as Kinsey claimed] it seems advisable to use caution in interpreting their findings.*[60]
>
> *Gagnon did not demand that the adults who committed the "sex crimes" be arrested and prosecuted, or that the public be fully informed about the ghastly project. ...*

> *During the past half-century, enormous changes in law, medicine, science, and education have been wrought by Kinsey's data.*[166]

Again proving the existence of the Devil's Simulation, and that ritual child sex abuse, torture and murder are foundational and systemic, Kinsey and his criminal subordinates cultivated monsters everywhere and then trained and encouraged them.

> *Kinsey and his team also collected films of children engaged in sex acts, a fact confirmed in 1981 by Kinsey's coauthor Paul Gebhard. In a letter to this author, while he was director of the Kinsey Institute, Gebhard stated: Since sexual experimentation with human infants and children is illegal, we have had to depend upon other sources of data. Some of these were parents, mostly college-educated, who observed their children and kept notes for us. A few were nursery school owners or teachers. Others were homosexual males interested in older, but still prepubertal, children. One was a man who had numerous sexual contacts with male and female infants and children and, being of a scientific bent, kept detailed records of each encounter.*
>
>> *Some of these sources have added to their written or verbal reports photographs and, in a few instances, cinema... The techniques involved [included] adult-child contacts — chiefly manual or oral.*
>>
>> *[While "Esther," appearing on the British documentary, stated:] My father did mail some questionnaires… I believe to the Kinsey Institute about the sexual abuse he was doing on me… since 1938, which makes me about four years old... I know he had a… camera that he used... There was one time when I do remember a movie camera was running and he says, oh, don't pay attention to that... You could only be a little girl to understand that it couldn't possibly be enjoyed. That was* ***slavery****.*[36] *[Emphasis in original.]*
>
> *That the Kinsey team permitted, and possibly filmed and/or participated in, the sexual abuse of infants and children is confirmed by its own writings and reports. Members readily admitted that,*

> *methodologically, they viewed* **all** *human beings as mere animals, and often boasted that they did not recognize any moral or legal restraints on their research.*[167]

When Kinsey couldn’t find children, he would settle for adult homosexual trysts in any seedy venue he could find from rest stop urinals to back rooms in “tea houses”.[168]

It was all carefully scrubbed from the propaganda that was his public image.

Although not all homosexuals are pedophiles, homosexuality (especially amongst men) is a gateway to more extreme sexual perversion[xvi] and Kinsey found his lifestyle and trysts fertile ground for expanding his pedophile connections.

> *Moving in homosexual circles, Kinsey would have likely met many educated sexual deviants eager to tell him about their sex lives. Pomeroy reported that one of their technically trained “observers” was a man who collected detailed data on orgasm from as many as 800 children. He was “a college graduate who had a responsible government job,”*[54] *while the current Kinsey director, John Bancroft, euphemistically described the same man as an “elderly scientist.”*[55] *Kinsey, Pomeroy, and Bancroft acknowledge that Kinsey directed at*

> *least two serial child rapists — one a lawyer and the other described as a “college” man.*[169]

Non-standard sexuality is the easy target — which is why it’s the subject of excessive emotion and hyperbole.

Even more insidious is the role of pornography. Even the least explicit forms of pornography — media that only show nudes — still engender lust that soon fixates on children.[170]

Kinsey and his “Institute” not only spun their “findings” they carefully censored anything negative to encourage readers to believe there are no harmful effects from the worst of sexual perversions.

With relish did Alfred Kinsey — the malignant homosexual deviant with hatred towards women — lay this trap for the fair sex.

> *Rape, jealousy, venereal disease, pregnancy, out-of-wedlock birth, and abortion are largely non-existent in the Kinsey data. Thus, Kinsey created the possibility of a carefree, aggressive ... sexuality. Perhaps the most damaging outcome to be based on Kinsey’s fraudulent data was the myth that women could, and should, separate responsibility and commitment from sex and sex from fertility and childbirth.*
>
> *Rather callously Kinsey claimed to have found sexual abuse of young girls to be harmless, claiming that adult women were **never** traumatized by childhood sexual abuse and incest.*[171]

In the *thousands* of crimes of Kinsey-inspired abuse of children, *Sexual Behavior in the Human Female* (published in 1953) remarked of only one instance where an adult male violating a little girl caused serious injury and only a “few instances” of internal bleeding which readers are assured “did not appear to do any appreciable damage”.[172]

Children were redefined as “potential sex partners”.[173]

Kinsey was even more desperate for depravity in *Female* than *Male* despite his practice of seeking prostitutes and prison inmates for “interviews”. Much of *Female’s* data was fabricated whole cloth and terms like “legally married” were expunged.

The innocence and vulnerability of animals was not overlooked. They, too, were victimized and recommended for exploitation by the “scientists”.

> *Kinsey’s attempt to normalize bestiality has surfaced in sex education and pornography, including Kinsey coauthor Wardell Pomeroy’s bestselling sex education text,* ***Boys and Sex****:*[16]
>
> > *[Having sex with] the male animal, whether it is a dog, horse, bull, or some other species, may provide considerable erotic excitement for the boy or older adult...*
> >
> > *His enjoyment of the relationship is enhanced by the fact that the male animal responds to the point of orgasm...*
> >
> > *Psychically, animal relations may become of considerable significance to the boy who is having regular experience… [and] in no point basically different from those that are involved in erotic responses to human situations.*[17]
>
> *Kinsey, Pomeroy, and Martin essentially held that “sexual contacts between the human and animals of other species are at no point basically different from those that are involved in erotic responses to human situations.”*[18] *This gives perspective to the disordered admissions of Kinsey colleague Dr. Clarence Tripp during his interview for the August 1998 Yorkshire documentary “Kinsey Paedophiles.”*
>
> *Dr. Tripp, sexologist and psychologist-author of* ***The Homosexual Matrix*** *(1975), candidly stated,* ***If you go out and masturbate dogs — I was very good at this when I was a boy*** *— the dog will love you to pieces because the dog has no efficient way to masturbate. He loves the orgasm as much as anybody else but he can’t self-produce it. Now you just do this a time or two. The dogs do various... things. You try this on all the neighborhood dogs...*
>
> > *Some dogs will always expect or try to talk you into doing it...*
> >
> > *Other dogs will come to any human and say, please touch me here in a certain kind of way.*[174]

A Kinsey Institute author, psychologist and “sexologist” used to masturbate dogs as a boy. One would think this information would’ve been essential to a critical look at Kinsey and the “Kinsey Institute” but the BBC disagreed. “Surprisingly” it didn’t make the cut.

> *That snippet from the interview was not broadcast, but the documentation is in this author’s archive.*

This also speaks to the character of “scientists” employed at the “Kinsey Institute”.

It is instructive that, even during the happy hunting of World War II (when both shepherds and sheepdogs were engaged elsewhere), the vast majority of child victims were from non-nuclear families.

> *The subjects were largely from fatherless and unconventional homes with a high incidence of early sexual experience.*[175]

This demographic holds true throughout the Devil’s Simulation. The most condemned child anywhere is an orphan in the care of the Catholic Church.

The second-most is a child being promoted by self-serving parents.

Another concept completely fabricated by Kinsey is that of each gender having a “sexual peak” greatly divergent from the other. This lie (either that “peaks” are divergent or that they even exist at all) has helped destroy commitment to marriage almost as much as pornography.

Sexual abuse and exploitation of a child requires a seared conscience and a soul-less will desperately enslaved to lust. These maladies infect an individual to varying degrees but when one’s monstrous proclivities surges above the rest, he is recognized and promoted in the Devil’s Simulation.

Such was Rex King.

King had been found and cultivated by Kinsey’s mentor, Robert Latou Dickinson. Dickinson was an English gynecologist infamous for a fixation on human private parts. He used “medical examination” as an excuse for excessive groping and he recorded volumes of detailed drawings of his patient’s anatomies — usually without their permission or understanding of his activities.[176]

The fact that Dickinson was a “gynecologist” in Britain, connected to King in America, who had mentored Alfred Kinsey and handed King off to Kinsey, is more proof that the Devil’s Simulation exists and that it’s crimes are systemic, spanning ages, governments and continents.

They were such good friends, Kinsey arranged for Dickinson to do a sex lecture at Indiana University.[177]

Dickinson is not the only sexual deviant to hide in the field of gynecology. It is the one discipline that should be heavily weighted in favor of female doctors but even they are not immune to the temptation of criminal betrayal of doctor/patient trust.

As further proof of the systemic nature of child abuse (a fact left unaddressed by Judith Reisman, the BBC or any other “mainstream” source), serial child rapist Rex King was a representative of the United States government. King, like Kinsey, was spared participation in World War II.

King used his mobility and government credentials to insulate him as he targeted fatherless home after fatherless home in a country at war.

Under the encouragement and tutelage of Dickinson and Kinsey, King raped *hundreds* of children for *decades*. He was never charged, arrested or even caught by anyone with the power to do so.

Harvard “sexologist” and Kinsey team member (which means he had been sodomized by Kinsey) Paul Henry Gebhard was interviewed by the BBC and chuckled over King’s predations; “sex was his main hobby in life”.[178]

Gephard excused the sexual psychopath with “he was interested in having sex with men, women, children and animals, and he just was curious to see what would happen.”

Another Kinsey “researcher” (and homosexual partner), Clarence Arthur Tripp told the BBC that King’s first sexual experience was intercourse with his grandmother. “In the 38 members of his family tree he had sex with almost all of them,” Tripp happily told the documentary crew.

“He had had intercourse with hundreds upon hundreds of males and females of every conceivable age.”

Rex King was certainly the type of well-adjusted individual “scientists” would train and set upon fatherless children across America’s southwest.

That is exactly what happened as Tripp admitted, “My memory is that it exceeded 600 [rape, assault and abuse victims] for both boys and girls who haven’t yet got to maturity.”

Tripp was sent to Kinsey from 20th Century Fox as a trained cameraman. He became the Institute’s pornographer.

Even though the Devil’s Simulation has a strangle-hold on cops, judges and government officials, it doesn’t have them all and fears the combined might of the people. As a result, when dealing with King, the Kinsey Institute gave him the code names “Mr. X,” or “Mr. Green”.

In arrogance over their power, Tripp bragged to the BBC that there was nothing wrong with how they had enabled King because he had never been arrested.

King was a good student of Dickinson and Kinsey and meticulously recorded every detail of his crimes in hand-written journals.

Kinsey wouldn’t allow the remotest risk that the journals would fall into the hands of a normal citizen or, worse, a government official who wasn’t on the pedophile payroll. In June of 1944 (the height of the war), Kinsey drove 1800 miles from Indiana to Arizona to take them by hand from his trained monster. They remain locked up at Indiana University to this day, without the slightest chance of being confiscated by a warrant from law enforcement.

Encouraged by “science”, King wrote in his diary, “experimented with baby ...” he then remarked about how the baby reacted to being sexually tortured and violated.

Kinsey continued to spur King on to new levels of heinous acts, writing to him in a letter, “I congratulate you on the research spirit which has led you to collect data over these many years.”[179]

Chapter 5 of *Male* contained large portions of King’s diary; but rather than admit them to be the “encouraged research” of a serial monster, Kinsey presented them as “scientific proof that children were sexual from birth.”

There was nothing “scientific” about it; Kinsey simply regurgitated the pedophile’s twisted version of his rapes of children, toddlers and even infants.

The descriptions of their reactions included remarks like “extreme tension”, “groaning”, “sobbing”, “violent jerking of the entire body”, “an abundance of tears, especially amongst younger children” — all indicative of sadistic torture of the young.

Even friendly biographer James Jones admitted, “the individual in question, I think, uh, harmed, in serious ways, ah, a large number of young people.”[180]

Judith Reisman — via her own privileged access to the unedited Yorkshire documentary — was able to recount another clip that didn’t make it off the cutting floor where Jones acquiesced “Christian outrage” to the BBC: *“Do you think it is right that the Kinsey Institute continues to protect him? Which is more important, confidentiality or those children?” Jones replied, “In my mind those children,” and continued, I don’t think the Christian right is wrong on that. I think they have their right to be outraged... political ideology really doesn’t have much to do with people’s reactions to child abuse.*

> *Countering the Kinsey Institute’s defense that the children did not “complain” about their abuse, Jones asked, How did they know they didn’t complain? The person who was rendering that information is the same person who abused them. It seems to me that they have as much credibility as a rapist would have, saying that the victim enjoyed the rape.*[[181]]

Per Kinsey’s direction, King specifically targeted the youngest of boys from infants through toddlers to “determine” for Kinsey exactly when they were capable of “orgasm”. This was regurgitated by Kinsey as “scientific” data for “Table 31”.

"Table 32" listed the details Kinsey had encouraged King to take down such as timing of these "orgasms".

What Tables 32 and 34 (so-called "multiple orgasms" of children) showed was that King had repeatedly preyed upon his victims sometimes for as long as a full day of torture for Kinsey.

At minimum, 317 of the youngest possible children were violated, perhaps as many as over 1,200.

Vincent Nowlis remarked to the BBC that infants brought to "orgasm" chronicled "to fractions [listed to hundredths] of a second" was "an absurd page in science...I didn't feel it had a place in a 'scientific' book".

Recall that Nowlis was a willing team member who only shirked from being sodomized by Kinsey.

In response, Clearance Tripp told the BBC, "...Nowlis was damaged in childhood with all this morality. And then he had this peculiar moralistic wife — I'm understating it — through all this it sounded to him like pure sin" — the raping of infants and toddlers, that is.

Like Vincent Nowalis, his wife was not a fan of participating in a sexual free-for-all "at work" nor being violated by the great Alfred Kinsey — all necessary if Nowalis wished to stay aboard the Institute.

At the time of the BBC documentary, "sexologist" Dr. John H.J. Bancroft was Director of the "Kinsey Institute". Being a Cambridge man with four names means that if he makes a statement that is ridiculous or nonsensical, it's because you lack the intelligence to understand him.

Bancroft told the BBC that he did, indeed, consider Rex King's serial child abuse to be "research" and that to betray King to law enforcement would've been "immorality of the highest order".

In Dr. John H.J. Bancroft's world, white is black and black is white.

Friendly Kinsey biographer Jonathan Gathorne-Hardy told the BBC that he saw evidence "Mr. Green" continued to rape children for another decade after first meeting Kinsey. Gathorne-Hardy would know, as an Institute-approved biographer, he was given special access to the criminal database locked deep in the University of Indiana campus.

Judith Reisman added —

> *Jonathan Gathorne-Hardy, a recent Kinsey biographer (**Sex the Measure of All Things; A Life of Alfred C. Kinsey**, London: Chatto & Winds, 1998), reveals that Kinsey Institute Director John Bancroft secretly allowed him to read and copy Kinsey's pedophile team reports: [Kinsey] was deeply affected by five paedophile headmasters who...had... loving relationships with young adolescent boys of twelve or thirteen. ... The reason the Kinsey Institute is so careful...is that...they have... evidence of sexual behaviors that even now are illegal. ...*
>
> *Gathorne-Hardy perused Rex King's records. He confirmed that King was indeed the individual whom Wardell Pomeroy said raped at least 800 infants, children, kin, and strangers: Eight or nine typewritten volumes [were] typed up by Kinsey's wife... prior to 1945, which was, you know, before Kinsey admitted [he had employed King. King] went on having sex with everybody until the end... long after Kinsey got the journals. The material in that chapter almost entirely came from [King's] journals which Kinsey got in 1944/45.*
>
>> *I daren't put this on film. I did read [King's records] but Bancroft doesn't want me to say I read them. Bancroft says that if the people know I read them they will go to him and say, you've let one scholar have them, and I'm not going to do that. So what I had to say in my book is that I closely questioned Bancroft and Gebhard about the contents of the journals, but I didn't read them. In fact, I did read them. **But I can't say I read them**.*[[182]]

Jonathan Gathorne-Hardy had nothing to worry about. That portion of his interview was also edited from the BBC's final "hard-hitting" exposé.

Although the "Institute" likes to maintain plausible deniability in regards to Rex King's serial child rape, Kinsey subordinate Clarence Tripp told Yorkshire he *personally* validated as much of King's "research" as possible.

> ***Interviewer:*** *what you're saying then is that it is possible that Kinsey personally validated [King's] material [the sex with children]?*
>
> ***Tripp:*** *Almost always... there is no mention of his observing people. But he did. He wanted to see everything. This is a hands-on scientist... he had to see it to really believe it... He poked into, he looked at everything. He often had to have these things photographed because he simply didn't have time... [Kinsey] was in the market for everything... people who are into special things, love to document it. And it seems to rev them up if they mark it down on a calendar.*[183]

This, too, was only available via the unedited copy given to Dr. Judith Reisman.

But Rex King (a representative of the United States government) wasn't the only mass child rapist to help Alfred Kinsey in his push for sexual anarchy. The "Institute" was connected to another abuser of monstrous proportion: Fritz von Ballusek.

Judith Reisman recounted —

> *Thanks to the Yorkshire documentary, we now know that "Mr. X" was Rex King, and we also know the name of at least one other key Kinsey pedophile. In a classic case of truth being stranger than fiction, one of Kinsey's child sex experimenters was a World War II Nazi Storm Trooper. Yorkshire Television researchers uncovered his name, photograph, history, and court records. After the war, Dr. Fritz von Balluseck became a respected lawyer.*
>
> *Yorkshire investigators had followed up this author's original questions regarding Kinsey's association with Nazis and the possibility that some of the abused children were obtained from WWII Germany and/or Russia. At least one of Kinsey's sex collaborators was a documented Nazi, the infamous George Sylvester Viereck, a convicted German spy who had worked among Washington D.C. power brokers. David Brinkley in his history of the period,* ***Washington Goes to War*** *(Ballantine, 1988, p. 26) wrote that Viereck was "one of*

> *the...masterminds of the propaganda cabinet that Germany set up here early in the war."*[184]

An extremely important factor that neither Yorkshire, the BBC nor Judith Reisman noted was how a connection to espionage shows the hand of the Luciferian hierarchy in Rome. War between nation-states is completely unnecessary and must be carefully manipulated. "Intelligence" sets the stage (especially via double and triple agents of supposed enemy intelligence agencies working together) and illegal trafficking in drugs, arms and human beings both insures wars and benefits from them.

Examples include the Nazi / Soviet intelligence co-operative "Red Orchestra" (*Die Rote Kapelle*) run by Jesuit agents like Martin Bormann.[185]

Another is the death of General George S. Patton; grievously wounded by an OSS assassin and the Soviet NKVD was sent to his hospital to finish the job.[186] Patton was at risk for outing how men like Eisenhower, Bradley, Churchill and Roman Catholic traitor General Walter Bedell "Beatle" Smith (the CIA's first Director) had all been complicit in the needless prolonging of the war.

We will see more of these "missed" Intelligence/Pedocracy connections in Chapter 13.

> *Yorkshire researchers flew to Berlin (as did this author), interviewing and digging through old files and press reports. There they discovered Dr. Friedrich Karl Hugo Viktor von Balluseck, who was tried in Berlin in 1957 for a child sex murder. According to Paul Gebhard who took over serving as the prestigious Director of Indiana University's Kinsey Institute, just after Kinsey's death: [Kinsey] wrote him questions in the letter and they carried on quite a correspondence...*
>
> > *Police [seeking a child sex murderer] went through his possessions... found his correspondence with Kinsey. ... They got Interpol. ... The FBI put pressure on Kinsey to reveal the guy's sexual diary. Kinsey said, absolutely not. [T]he poor paedophile... had his reputation destroyed... finally quit corresponding with us.*

> *Like Kinsey, fascist scientists in Germany[92] believed that they had a right to experiment on anyone. Dr. von Balluseck[93] was an incest offender who raped and sodomized not only his own offspring, but Jewish, Polish, and German children as well, from roughly 1927 to 1957. The German press reported Kinsey's visit to Frankfort during his world tour in 1956. Little else is available regarding the German stopover, or if Kinsey met with Balluseck, and there was no mention of Kinsey's visit to Frankfort in the approved writings about Kinsey's European travels.*[187]

German judges, police and national government officials were (are) just as corrupt as their American counterparts. The frauds at the Federal Bureau of "Investigation" politely asked Kinsey and Indiana University for the evidence that showed he had collaborated with and encouraged a serial child rapist and sadistic psychopath. Both Kinsey and Indiana U. courageously stood their ground and refused the timid G-men.

Don't try this at home, however. When Federal agents are ready to come after *you* they will surveil you without due process and send a literal army of officers in camouflaged body armor, wielding assault weapons and riding in armored vehicles to storm your home at 3 a.m. being sure to kill your dog before you even know what hit you.

In Germany, after decades of raping and torturing children "*Doctor*" von Ballusek walked free from the death of the one little girl he finally went to trial for slaughtering.

By the way, all of this below was also edited out of the Yorkshire ***tell-all*** exposé.

> *Dr. von Balluseck's trial for the murder of 10-year-old Loiselotte Has, who was "found… naked and throttled… on a piece of wasteland," was widely covered in Germany*[xvii]*. It was "completely unprecedented in the moral history of the post war era," and von Balluseck was described as "the most important pedophile in the criminal history of Berlin." Kinsey collaborator Balluseck was tried for the abuse of 50, or "more than 100," or "several hundred"*

> *children. As noted, he had sexually violated children for "over the last three decades" (**Frankfurter Allgemeine Zeitung**, May 22, 1957).*
>
> *News of Kinsey's role in the case was splashed across the headlines of Germany's largest newspapers.*
>
> *Judge Heinrich Berger "emphasized again and again the important function played by the press in warning the public against paedophiles like Balluseck, who approach children as understanding friends and helpers in their sexual need" (**Frankfurter Allgemeine Zeitung**, May 22, 1957). Despite Alfred Kinsey's shocking role in the explosive case, the U.S. press was uniformly silent about it.*
>
> *According to Yorkshire Television's research department, from 1942 to 1944 Dr. von Balluseck was the Department of Justice District Kreishauptmina, the commandant of the small Polish town of Jedrzejow. It was there that he targeted the children he sexually assaulted, warning them, according to German news accounts, that "It is either the gas chamber or me." **The Encyclopedia Judaica**[94] reports that all Jedrejow Jews ended up in the gas chambers. All, including the children, were under the control of Dr. von Balluseck.*[188]

It's an unexplained shame why Yorkshire and the BBC should put so much effort into exposing "Kinsey's Paedophiles" and then leave the best of it on the cutting room floor.

At this writing, 60 years after von Ballusek walked for the murder of Loiselette Has, the Vatican is still targeting Poland for sexual perversion. Poland provided Rome with devout servants like American National Security Advisor Zbigniew Brzezinski (the Jesuit-trained operative who created al Qaeda[189]) and his dear friend Karol Józef Wojtyła. Despite his role in helping Nazis slaughter Jews during WWII,[190] Karol Wojtyła was recently canonized Pope *Saint* John Paul II ... or maybe because of it.

The Vatican has made "World Youth Day" in Poland, June of 2017, the location for the unveiling of its "Youth Sex Education" program; one which has conservative Catholics quite upset.

The program was overseen by Archbishop Vincenzo Paglia. It was not the first time Paglia was the fomenter of outrage.

Harkening back to Medieval aristocracy, Paglia commissioned a homosexual Argentinean named Ricardo Cinalli to paint a homo-erotic mural in his cathedral in 2007.

> *It depicts Jesus carrying nets to heaven filled with naked and semi-nude homosexuals, transsexuals, prostitutes, and drug dealers, jumbled together in erotic interactions.*
>
> *Cinalli told the Italian newspaper* ***La Repubblica*** *in March 2016 that the archbishop oversaw every detail of the work.*
>
> *“There was no detail that was done freely, at random,” he said. “Everything was analyzed. Everything was discussed. They never allowed me to work on my own.”*
>
> *In the right-hand net, what appears to be young naked children can be seen entangled with the bodies of older men and women...*
>
> *In one instance, one male can be seen with his hand between another male’s legs groping his reproductive organ.*
>
> *The image of the Savior is painted with the face of a local male hairdresser, and his private parts can be seen through his translucent garb.*
>
> *Included in one of the nets is Paglia, the then diocesan bishop. Wearing his skull cap, he is depicted as clutching another semi-nude man who is tenderly embracing him.*
>
> *Cinalli told* ***La Repubblica*** *that the naked people in the nets were meant to be “erotic,” although he said Paglia drew the line when Cinalli proposed to show people actually copulating.* ~ LifeSite[191]

Paglia was hand-picked by Jesuit Pope Francis (Jorge Bergoglio, also from Argentina) to be President of the Pontifical Academy for Life and the Pope Saint John Paul II Institute for Studies on Marriage and Family.

He was “uniquely qualified”.

When he came aboard, Paglia summarily dismissed all the members[192] so that he and his Jesuit Pope could start from scratch, adding such family/life stalwarts as pro-abortion, pro-euthanasia Anglican professor Nigel Biggar.[193]

From his position as the Godfather of Rome's "family" doctrines, Paglia has ushered in a sex education program that mirrors his values and that of his superior — to cut out the role of parents as guardians over their children and to entice children into the sexual chaos of the Devil's Simulation.

> *The sex-ed program, titled "The Meeting Point: Course of Affective Sexual Education for Young People," was criticized by Catholic life-and-family leaders for bypassing parents as the primary educators of their children and for its immoral content.*
>
> *The program was also criticized for failing to name and condemn immoral sexual behaviors, such as fornication, prostitution, adultery, contracepted-sex, homosexual activity, and masturbation as objectively sinful actions that destroy charity in the heart and turn one away from God.*
>
> *Along with using sexually explicit and suggestive images in activity workbooks, the program recommended various sexually explicit movies as springboards for discussion.*[194]

Back in 1957, the connection between von Ballusek and Alfred Kinsey was momentarily mentioned by the suddenly-awakened German press (remember, Kinsey has been OK'd as a target by the Vatican).

> *The German press described early attempts to "cover up" who Balluseck really was, including efforts to keep his photograph under wraps and the court description of the influential attorney as a "shop-worker." And commenting on the experiments recorded in volumes found in von Balluseck's desk, Judge Berger exclaimed: "This is no longer human! What was this all for? To tell Kinsey about?" (**Morgenpost**, May 16, 1957).*[195]

Once the Devil's Simulation network connected Kinsey and von Ballusek, the "scientist" did all he could to encourage the sadist. Neither he nor his collaborators at Indiana University were held to account.

Nor, for that matter, was von Ballusek.

> ***“KINSEY…ASKED THE PAEDOPHILE SPECIFICALLY FOR MATERIAL OF HIS PERVERSE ACTIONS”***
>
> > *The connection with Kinsey, towards whom he’d showed off his crimes, had a disastrous effect on [von Balluseck]... [I]n his diaries he’d stuck in the letters from the sex researcher, Kinsey in which he’d been* ***encouraged to continue*** *his research. ... He had also started relationships…* ***to expand his researches****. One shivers to think of the lengths he went to.* ***[TSP, May 17, 1957, emphasis added]***
> >
> > *Indeed, the German press reported that Post WW II von Balluseck sexually assaulted his own daughter, and the 11-year-old son of a vicar, and forced the boy to write down the acts for Kinsey.*
> >
> > *Kinsey had asked the paedophile specifically for material of his perverse actions. The presiding judge, Dr. Berger noted that it was Kinsey’s duty to get Balluseck locked up, instead of corresponding with him.* ***[Berliner Zeitung, May 16, 1957]*** *...*
>
> *In the diaries, described as volume 1 & 4, he described with pedantic exactness, how he committed his crimes. ... Balluseck had close contact with the so called American sex researcher, Kinsey, to whom he’d repeatedly and explicitly reported his perverse crimes.*
>
> > *Balluseck had also described those in pedantic detail in his diaries.* ***[National-Zeitung, May 15, 1957]***
>
> *So Balluseck was not only sending Kinsey his old child abuse data, recorded during his days as a Commandant in Jedrzejow; he was also seeking to “continue” and “expand” his sexual seduction of children for Kinsey’s use.*
>
> *The University of Indiana press office regularly forwards international articles about the school (especially those containing damaging information) to the administration. According to Paul Gebhard, the*

> *University and its president, Herman Wells, were aware of Kinsey's collaboration with Balluseck.*
>
> *Kinsey refused to provide evidence that the FBI knew he had regarding Balluseck's crimes.*
>
> *After serving his sentence for child sex abuse (he was not convicted on the murder charge), Balluseck continued his correspondence with Gebhard...*[196]

Again, it's amazing how someone can "refuse" a Federal investigation into serial child abuse but we don't recommend you attempt that should the FBI come "knocking" at 3 a.m.

Although Kinsey dare not risk overseeing his Nazi "researcher" during the war, he may very well have gotten some "hands on" afterward as part of his 1955 "world tour".

Judith Reisman admits that the central focus of the tour was Italy —

> *Pomeroy devotes six pages to Kinsey's visits to France, Denmark, Norway, and Sweden, but ten pages to his trip to Italy alone.*[197]

— but makes no mention of the fact that Italy is the host nation to the most powerful religion on Earth.

Italy briefly attracted another sexual sado-satanist of equal infamy; Edward Alexander "Aleister" Crowley.

> *Crowley (1845-1947) called himself alternatively "the Beast" and "the World's Most Wicked Man". A pagan/satanist, he was and remains one of the most influential men of the 20th century. Immortalized by propagandists, he was sung about by Black Sabbath's lead vocalist Ozzy Osbourne in his second single "Mr. Crowley", released in 1980. In the song, the hint at child sacrifice is unmistakable.*
>
> > *Mr. Crowley, what went down in your head?*
> > *Mr. Crowley, did you talk to the dead*
> > *Your lifestyle to me seems so tragic*
> > *With the thrill of it all*

> *You fooled all the people with magic*
> *You waited on Satan's call Mr. Charming, did you think you were pure*
> *Mr. Alarming, in nocturnal rapport*
> *Uncovering things that were sacred, manifest on this earth*
> *Conceived in the eye of a secret*
> *Yeah, they scattered the afterbirth ...*

Crowley took over the British chapter of "Ordo Templi Orientis" — a secret society based upon an amalgamation of the Templars and the Freemasons. ...

The O.T.O. has a hierarchy of attainment by "degrees", as the Freemasons do, but in the O.T.O. there are only 12 degrees.

The perverse tie-in to Rome is shocking and unmistakable.

> *While the O.T.O.'s initiatory system is a sort of Kafkaesque bureaucratic club game, it has a religious association under its obedience: The Gnostic Catholic Church — one of the O.T.O. groups — intends "to restore Christianity to its real status as a solar-phallic religion." ~ Koenig*[1471]

The VI° of the O.T.O. is the "Illustrious Knight Templar of the Order of Kadosch, Companion of the Holy Grail" and a "Grand Inquisitor Commander"[1472]*. Does Aleister Crowley sound like a satanist Beast to you...or a Papal one?*

The VIII° is the "Perfect Pontiff of the Illuminati"[1473] *— the Pope of the Jesuit-created Freemason super-sect.*

The "working" of the degrees within the O.T.O. is meant to usher in the "Aeon of Horus".

Crowley asserted that man was first civilized under the Gaia-like "Aeon of Isis" where he worshipped "Mother Nature" in harmony with the Earth.

What we understand as medieval history, Crowley calls the "Aeon of Osiris" and submission to the "Father god".

> *The offspring of Osiris and Isis is Horus and he is to be coaxed into this world by a series of satanic sex rituals Crowley called "sex magick" instituted in geographic locations called "workings" that are perceived to be interdimensional portals...or the most convenient apartment.*
>
> *This was all catalogued in Crowley's "Thelema" religion (which he pulled entirely out of his "eye of Horus" with the help of his interdimensional friends Aiwass, Choronzon and Lam). ~ Illuminati Unmasked*[198]

Although Judith Reisman makes none of these connections, she does note that Crowley's most sinister work took place in seclusion on the island of Sicily at his "Thelema Abbey". There he got mothers to have sex with their children and then murdered them as a blood sacrifice.[199]

Outrage eventually drove Crowley from his Italian base and he died soon after in 1947.

Heinous satanic sexual activity like that was a top priority for the Kinsey "scientists" to see, even 7 years later.

Kinsey was personally escorted around the "Abbey" by Crowley homosexual acolyte and pornographer, Kenneth Wilbur Anglemyer. According to Crowley "scholar" and biographer[200] Marco Pasi, Anglemyer gave Kinsey some of Crowley's journal notes[201] on satanic sexual sadism — for "science", of course.

Like Crowley, Anglemyer was an English Freemason — a member of the "Hermetic Order of the Golden Dawn".[202]

As a "dream-weaver" for the Devil's simulation, Anglemyer was as equally influential in the entertainment industry. For propaganda, he renamed himself "Kenneth Anger" just as Papal Court Jew and clown prince of Satanism Howard Stanton Levey rebranded himself "Anton Szandor LaVey".

Kenneth Anglemyer, a.k.a. “Kenneth Anger” poses (right) with *Doctor* Alfred Kinsey (left) inside Aleister Crowley’s “Thelema Abbey” in Sicily.

Anglemyer, Levey and Crowley have been “inspirational” to high-profile personalities of all sorts from Martin Scorsese to Mick Jagger.[203]

> *Ken was obsessed with Crowley’s life & magic. As a child, Ken had danced with Shirley Temple in competition after she became a child star. ...*
>
> *Ken Anger did his casting for his film “Lucifer Rising” by telling occult friends & acquaintances that they could live out their goddess or god power-trip fantasies by acting for him. The British government’s National Film Finance Corp. fronted 15,000£ for Lucifer Rising’s production. Famous occult musician Jimmy Page did the sound track gratis. ...* ~ Springmeier[204]

The connection between Kenneth Anger and Shirley Temple will soon shock you as you read on into Chapter 6.

Networking the Devil’s Simulation

Not only was Kinsey plugged in to the existing pedophile network, he did all he could to expand it and add new member monsters.

Esther White was on the receiving end of those efforts.

She was tag-teamed for abuse by her father and grandfather starting at only 7 years of age.

At the peak of the abuse, she discovered a questionnaire from Kinsey with detailed queries about what her father was doing to her and she realized why he timed his abuse with a watch. She asked him about its meaning and he explained it and said he had a “deadline” to meet; which means Kinsey was insuring as much harm happened as quickly as possible.

White believes that the horrors she experienced were part of the subsequent Kinsey assertion in *Sexual Behavior in the Human Female* that children can enjoy being raped.[205]

During her interview with Yorkshire/BBC, Esther White (well into her 70s) could not recount what happened to her as a child without breaking down in tears.

> ***Narrator:*** *“In his final years, Kinsey would testify before legislatures and courts that pedophilia was a less dangerous problem than public intolerance of it.”*

Kinsey homosexual partner and “fellow scientist” Clarence Tripp proved that he remains a deviant sociopath to this day by saying for Yorkshire — *Kinsey said some of the most* ***brilliant*** *imaginable about that* [sic]. *Ah, pedophilia is almost non-existent, um, ah, kind of crime and the thing he hated most about it is the people who use words like, like, ah “child molestation”*. ***What is that?*** *Nobody knows! Um* [laughs] *the — ah, “abuse of children”? Are they talking about bollicks* [sic] *them against the ear or hitting them with a stove pipe or are they talking about tickling them a little. Ah, are you talking about fondling — you gonna put* ***fondling*** *and death attacks in the same group? As Kinsey said, by this kind of paranoia, you do the child more damage, for life, than all the pedophiles in the world would do.*

We’re not sure how one is able to time “orgasms” on an infant with “tickling” but it’s probably something we all should be wary of now.

Yorkshire then cut to Esther White —

> [choked with emotion] *I think taking information from pedophiles glorifies the abuse.*
>
> *They* [Kinsey Institute] ***used*** *me and they used those children — for a* ***lie****.*

Another Kinsey homosexual partner and “scientist” Paul Gebhard then bragged to Yorkshire that the criminal records encouraged and solicited by the “Institute” are logged under code and that the code key can be quickly destroyed if there is any threat of court order investigation.

If that is meant to be a tactical challenge to good men who might someday attempt to conduct the long-overdue law enforcement raid (storm Indiana University to secure the codes before they are destroyed and/or break the code without the key if necessary), we are certain it doesn’t pose much of a threat. The spirits of the Rangers who climbed the cliffs of Pointe Du Hoc while Kinsey and his accomplices were raping their children will help them achieve the impossible.

Chapter 5

Preyed Upon

1950: *"Reverend Father" Lawrence C. Murphy begins a 25 year reign of predation and terror in Milwaukee.*

Being a sexual predator requires the perpetrator bury or destroy their human capability for empathy or compassion.

It is a conscious process that includes many predetermined and premeditated steps. It is not, nor can it be, a simple "crime of passion".

As the keepers of the Devil's Simulation, Roman Catholic clergy are trained, cultivated and enabled into this monstrous, inhuman state in order to maintain and propagate it.

The result of such satanic training means that Catholic clergy are in unique positions to engender the trust of children and their families. Once achieved they mercilessly abuse them all; like a wolf-spider, luring its prey in to capture it and slowly drain the life from them.

Unaware of the Devil's Simulation, victims mistakenly think of their Roman gatekeepers as men or women "of God". Often, the predators cement the satanic inversion by abusing them during a religious act like prayer or "confession".

They often rob their prey of their bodies, their lives and even their souls; vampires in every sense.

This may seem like an extreme exaggeration or even a baseless slander, but the endless cases of atrocity say different. [italics suspended]

> Steven Geier was taken to [Roman Catholic] St. John's [School for the Deaf in Saint Francis, Wisconsin] at the age of eight, after a high fever made him deaf. He was crying as his parents left, and it was Fr.

Murphy who offered comfort then, only to abuse him later. Mr. Geier also witnessed about a dozen other boys being abused. ...

Father Murphy was a predatory paedophile whose crimes were all the more revolting for the helplessness of his victims. The pupils at St. John’s School, St. Francis city, Wisconsin, were deaf. This was a boarding school, so there was no escape at nights from the vile priest who had power over them.

... he was the only adult many of them could communicate with. They were given no sex education, so they had no way of understanding what he was doing. Some may have thought they deserved this treatment. ...

He was the mentor and spiritual guide to hundreds of vulnerable boys – and one thing they learnt from him is that there are some disgusting individuals in the adult world who gratify their sleazy appetites without a thought for others. ...

“Murphy was so powerful and it was so hard,” he said in an interview four decades later. “You couldn’t get out. It was like a prison. I felt so confused. Here I had Fr. Murphy touching me. I would be like, ‘God, what’s right?’”

“It was an awful thing,” another of his former victims, Joe Daniels said. “I felt anger and shame.” Little Arthur Budzinski would hide under his bed, crying, when it was time to go back to boarding school. His parents did not know what was wrong...

There is an old photograph of Arthur Budzinski taken in 1962, when he was 13, with 10 other deaf boys who made up the St. John’s School basketball team. Father Murphy is standing alongside them in a long clerical gown. Five of the 11 boys were sexually assaulted.

Budzinski witnessed a boy of his age, Pat Cave, being abused in the dormitory. They met again, 42 years later. Until that meeting in 2004, Pat Cave thought he was the only boy to have suffered the priest’s attentions. In fact, he was probably not even the only victim in his family. He had an older brother who also went to St. John’s, who was

> frequently called into Murphy’s office at night for long periods. The brothers never discussed why. His brother died in a motorcycle accident at the age of 21.
>
> No one knows exactly how many boys suffered at Murphy’s hands in the 24 years he was running the school. It could have been as many as 200. Most said nothing about it for decades, if at all. James Smith had bottled it up for so long that when he began talking about it, at the age of 62, he started to shake and cry. He said: “I would be playing baseball, and the boys would come and say: ‘Fr. Murphy wants you to come and see him.’ I would refuse to go, and pretty soon I was dragged into his office and molested again. I never told anyone. I thought I was alone.” ...
>
> “[I was abused] During my confession with Fr. Murphy [several] times he played with my penis in the bedroom, in the bathroom, in Fr. Murphy’s office... During the summer times Fr. Murphy took some boys and me to his cottage and on the way I was a passenger and sat near Fr. Murphy driving while he touched my penis in front of other boys... For my six years, I suffered bad from Fr. Murphy.” ~ *The Independent*[206]

When victims and their families finally forced Murphy’s abominations to come to light, he was simply removed from St. John’s.

No criminal investigation.

No trial.

No punishment.

The predator was relocated to prey again.

The reactions by Murphy’s superiors were as criminal as the abuse. Rather than be turned over to authorities for incarceration and trial, Murphy was sent to therapy and given “restrictions” that he, himself, was responsible for maintaining.

> *Julie Wolf, communications director for the Archdiocese of Milwaukee, said that Father Murphy was placed on certain restrictions upon*

> *leaving Milwaukee that included not having any contact with children and that "he ignored the restrictions."*
>
> *Ms. Wolf added, "Over time, they tried to deal with him, but over time they weren't successful." ~ NY Times*[207]

Coming from wealth, Murphy's family owned a beautiful lakefront cottage in Northwoods, Wisconsin. Having been pulled from St. John's, Murphy no-longer had a captured, handicapped pool of victims to choose from. The predator priest used the cottage as a honey trap to lure his new round of little boys.

> *Kathy Lyn Walter, a social worker and an expert on sexual disorders who was hired by the archdiocese to interview Father Murphy in 1993 ... said he offered them what seemed like a beachfront reprieve from their lives in the dormitories, with canoe trips, picnics and barbecues.* [208]

Unfortunately for these new victims, the therapy sessions and "self-policing" imposed upon Murphy by his superiors had as much effect as requiring a tiger to lose his stripes — which was exactly what the gatekeepers of the Devil's Simulation intended.

> *In fact, around Boulder Junction, in high school religious classes and preparation for the sacrament of confirmation, in sleepovers at his cottage and fishing excursions, Father Murphy interacted freely with children until his death in 1998, never having been punished by the church or local criminal authorities in Milwaukee, according to documents and interviews with people in the area.*
>
> *Donald Marshall, who is 45 and lives in West Allis, Wis., said in an interview last week that he was molested by Father Murphy in 1977 or 1978, when he was 13 or 14, a few years after Father Murphy was sent to live in Boulder Junction.*
>
> *Mr. Marshall had been sent to the juvenile detention center, the Lincoln Hills School for Boys, for burglaries he said he committed. He said Father Murphy sometimes served at the school as a chaplain, and he met the priest at a dining room table one night. When he got in a*

> *fight with some other inmates, Mr. Marshall said, he was sent to a "security cottage" and put in a cell alone, behind a solid steel door with a high window.*
>
> *Mr. Marshall said that Father Murphy visited him there, that they sat on the bed talking, and that the priest tried to put his hand down the boy's pants. Mr. Marshall said he resisted, and as soon as Father Murphy left the cell, the teenager told a security officer, who called the superintendent of the center. The superintendent interviewed him twice to make sure he did not change his story.*[209]

Murphy's insatiable predations left a trail of broken bodies, minds and spirits.

> *... Mr.* [Donald] *Marshall said that years later, after problems with alcoholism and anger, and after serving eight years in prison for drunken driving, he contacted the Archdiocese of Milwaukee asking for help in the form of therapy, which he said he never received.*[210]

Again, proving that he was part of a systematic, premeditated criminal enterprise, Murphy co-opted older boys into luring, grooming and training the younger boys.[211]

They are tactics well-known to both victims and "law enforcement".

Further proof that a pedophile network runs the Devil's Simulation (and not the propaganda that mere individuals arise by random chance to commit the heinous acts) is found in the selection of victims.

Who suffers at the hands of the powerful is dictated by a formula; children without guardians are the primary source pool and children with handicaps like being unable to hear or speak are preferred.

In June of 1960, Father Neil Gallanagh was arrested after he sexually assaulted a nine-year-old boy during a day-trip to the Isle of Man.

Once his British superiors realized they had a monster who preyed upon children, they used their agents in law enforcement to insure he stayed out of prison, then they moved him to more fertile hunting grounds; as chaplain at a home for handicapped children.

It was brought to light well after the rapist had had his fill, when he was retired and over 75 years old.

> *The Roman Catholic Church covered up the criminal past of a paedophile priest and gave him a job in a school for deaf children where he went on to sexually assault vulnerable young boys, an* ***Observer*** *investigation can reveal.*
>
> *The church is now facing a massive compensation claim from the victims of the priest, Father Neil Gallanagh, who accuse the authorities of "willful neglect". Child abuse campaigners are calling for a public inquiry into the case, which they claim led to a "reign of sexual terror" for some boys at the school. ...*
>
> *The attacks took place while Gallanagh was a resident chaplain at St. John's during the Seventies. Many of the pupils at this residential school were deaf and dumb. The victims are mainly now in their forties and the assaults came to light only recently after one alleged victim spoke to his doctor and another attended a reunion party and spoke with other pupils.*
>
> ***The Observer*** *has obtained evidence showing that Gallanagh was given the job by the Catholic church at St. John's despite having been caught abusing children as a priest more than a decade earlier while working at Craigbane church in Derry, Northern Ireland. It has emerged that, while he was on a day-trip to the Isle of Man in June 1960, he sexually assaulted a nine-year-old boy. A report from the* ***Isle of Man Daily Times*** *on 27 June 1960 described how Gallanagh sat with "bowed head clasped to his hands" in the dock at Douglas Court House after he was arrested. ...*
>
> *Gallanagh was not jailed but fined £30 after he promised to seek medical treatment. A short report of his arrest appeared in the* ***Belfast Telegraph****.*
>
> *It appears that rather than throw Gallanagh — who was related to the then Bishop of Derry, Neil Farren — out of the church, he was moved to Leeds and allowed to continue preaching. The then Bishop of Leeds, William Wheeler, made him resident chaplain at St. John's School for*

> *the Deaf in 1974. Gallanagh's previous conviction was not made known to the court in the 2005 case and his victims at St. John's were unaware of his history until* ***The Observer*** *uncovered the earlier press reports from newspaper archives. ~ The Observer*[212]

Even after Gallanagh's ... "preaching" subsided, as victims were allowed to come forward, they were mitigated and he continued to be protected.

> *Last year Gallanagh, 75, pleaded guilty to indecently assaulting two pupils of St. John's Roman Catholic School for the Deaf in Wetherby, West Yorkshire. The school was under the control of the diocese of Leeds, which employed Gallanagh. A further 11 charges against him of indecently assaulting five other boys aged under 16, including an 11-year-old, were left on file.*[213]

The obvious truth finally dawned upon one of the men who was violated by Gallanagh as a boy.

At least for Rome, the cover of being "Christian" had the desired negative effect (with the help of her agents in the media).

> *One of his victims at St. John's expressed his outrage at the latest disclosures. "I am more than livid and feel totally let down by a so-called Christian organisation. How could the church have allowed this to happen? How could they have put a paedophile into a school for deaf children who were unable to speak out? This man ruined many people's lives, including mine. At the very least the* [C]*hurch is guilty of willful neglect; at the worst it is something unimaginable," he said.* [214]

"Unimaginable" indeed.

If he only knew the full extent of the network, that it includes the very "secular" government officials sworn to protect him from such abominations.

> *...abuse campaign group ... Phoenix Survivors ... was outraged that, even after his latest crimes, Gallanagh received only a six-month suspended sentence and a £1,500 fine. Judge Norman Jones said that*

> *Gallanagh's age, recent poor health and good character for the last 30 years meant jail was inappropriate.*[215]

To add insult to the injuries of the victims, when forced to publicly address the pedophile predations of priest Neil Gallanagh, the Vatican refused to "laicize" the child rapist and kept him on the roles of consecrated clergy.

The "scandal" hit in 2010 during the Papacy of one-time Nazi Youth cadet[216] Joseph Ratzinger, a.k.a. "Pope Benedict XVI". During his tenure as Prefect of the Congregation for the Doctrine of the Faith (Superior-General of the Inquisition), it was revealed that his office had a "lenient approach"[217] to dealing with pedophile clergy like Gallanagh and Oakland, California parish priest Father Stephen Kiesle.

Kiesle's "reign of terror" mirrors that of Gallanagh (and of *hundreds* perhaps *thousands* of other pedophile clergy).

> *Even in his seminary days in the early 1970s, there were questions about California priest Stephen Kiesle: Colleagues said he had trouble relating to adults, lacked spirituality and didn't seem committed to anything but youth ministry.*
>
> *Those colleagues, who helped make the case to the Vatican in 1981 seeking to let him leave the priesthood, said they were concerned before Kiesle was ordained, and more so after revelations Kiesle had molested children in his parish.*
>
> *"He was not grown up. He spent more time with kids than with people his own age. You get suspicious of that. There's something wrong there," said John Cummins, former bishop in the Diocese of Oakland, now retired.*
>
> *Still, future Pope Benedict XVI resisted pleas from the diocese to act on the case, according to a 1985 letter in Latin obtained by* ***The Associated Press*** *that bore his signature as then-Cardinal Joseph Ratzinger. ~ CBS News*[218]

The letter that neither CBS nor the AP didn't feel the need to share with its audience, carefully written in Latin to minimize the number of those who might be privy to it, stated that, when considering the “laicizing” of monsters like Gallanagh and Kiesle, the “good of the universal Church” needed to be considered.[219]

One can only assume that the “good of the universal Church” being considered by the most Reverend Excellency[220] Joseph Cardinal Ratzinger, Superior-General of the Inquisition, was to insure that child-raping monsters be kept in circulation as much as was in his power to accomplish.

Fortunately for “the Church” there are many agents of the Devil’s Simulation that don’t wear black cassocks — judges and cops, for instance — who can help Inquisitors like Joseph Ratzinger in his agenda to keep serial child rapists amongst their prey (your children).

> *Kiesle was sentenced in 1978 to three years’ probation after making a plea of no contest to charges of lewd conduct related to tying up and molesting two young boys in a San Francisco Bay area church rectory. ~ Telegraph*[221]

Understanding that handicapped children make the easiest victims, the Catholic Church has special schools to lure the prey into position.

That statement may appear to be inflammatory hyperbole yet the fact that the entire scenario repeatedly plays itself out renders it shockingly accurate.

The most recent example occurred at the Father Antonio Provolo Institute for the Deaf in Verona, Italy.

> *...a notorious school for the deaf where hundreds of children are believed to have been sexually assaulted over the years by two dozen priests and religious brothers. ~ Catholic Herald*[222]

When one monster rose above the rest — Father Nicola Corradi — he was relocated to the sister Provolo Institute in Lujan de Cuyo, Argentina (the home country of Pope Francis). There he continued to rape children who were unable to interact with the outside world: prisoners in a never-ending nightmare. They weren’t even able to hear their abusers enter the room.

Like voracious animals, the priests and nuns attacked the children in bathrooms, in confessionals, in their dorm rooms, even in the chapel (perhaps, purposefully so in ritual for the Devil's Simulation). In fact, the "Virgin Mary" (Semiramis / Isis / Cybele / Columbia) stood watch over the abuse.

> *The school has "a little chapel with an image of the Virgin and some chairs where the kids would get confession and receive the communion. That's where some of the acts were happening," Fabrizio Sidoti, the prosecutor who has been leading the investigation since the scandal broke, told the AP.*[223]

> *The children said the ... Roman Catholic priests continuously raped them, beside the image of the Virgin Mary. ~ Daily Mail*[224]

Finally, after getting his fill of destroying the innocence of the vulnerable and defenseless, the decrepit beast was arrested ... at 82 years of age, wheelchair-bound and barely aware of his surroundings[225] — almost like his victims.

In "humble, elderly priest" Nicola Corradi's quarters police found evidence of an organized sex-trafficking network; pornographic magazines and videos along with $34,000 in cash.[226],[xviii]

In fact, the handicapped children were used like adult film sex workers.

> *Children from other regions of Argentina who lived at the dorms were especially vulnerable and often targeted by the abusers. The tales are harrowing: One of the victims told the* ***AP*** *she witnessed how a girl was raped by one priest while the other one forced her to give him oral sex. ~ Fox News*[227]

Proving again that the victims had nowhere to hide; one of their chief tormentors was a nun from Japan — Sister Kosaka Kumiko. Her nationality likely made it easier for her to enable the abuse and exploitation of Argentinian children.

> *But to* ***truly*** *punish a people, you need a puppet with few connections to them.*

> *Herod, who would think nothing of slaughtering all the boys in Bethlehem from 2 years old to newborn, wasn't a Jew, he was an Edomite.*[956]
>
> *Napoleon Bonaparte wasn't French, he was from Corsica.*[957]
>
> *Adolf Hitler wasn't Teutonic, he was Austrian.*[958]
>
> *With good reason has Barack Hussein Obama failed to produce a valid birth certificate. ~ Illuminati Unmasked*[228]

Sister Kumiko easily slides in to the above list.

> *Kosaka Kumiko, 42, was charged with helping the priests with anal and vaginal rapes, fondling and oral sex, which were allegedly committed in the bathrooms, dormitories, garden and a basement at the school in Lujan de Cuyo, a city about 620 miles northwest of Buenos Aires.*
>
> *The case against Kumiko began after a former student accused her of making her wear a diaper to cover up a hemorrhage after she was allegedly raped by priest Horacio Corbacho. ...*
>
> *The nun, who has Argentine citizenship, has also been charged with physically abusing the students — whose torments could only be heard by those abusing them since the other children were deaf — at the Antonio Provolo Institute for children with hearing impairment in northwestern Mendoza province. ~ AP*[229]

Argentina is fertile ground for Roman atrocities.

Before he was "elected" Pope, Jesuit priest Jorge Mario Bergoglio was one of the most powerful men in Argentina:

- Jesuit Provincial Superior of Argentina (1973–1979)
- Auxiliary Bishop of Buenos Aires (1992–1997)
- Titular Bishop of Auca (1992–1997)
- Archbishop of Buenos Aires (1998–2013)
- Cardinal-Priest of San Roberto Bellarmino (2001–2013)

- Ordinary of the Ordinariate for the Faithful of the Eastern Rites in Argentina (1998–2013)
- President of the Argentine Episcopal Conference (2005–2011)

Jorge Bergoglio may claim to have been unaware of the heinous crimes of his clergy but victims know different.

> *The victims' families contend that the Vatican knew about* [abuse at the Provolo Institute, in general, and the outrages of Nicola Corradi, in specific] *since at least 2009, when he was publicly accused of abusing students at the Provolo Institute in Verona, Italy, where he then worked.*
>
> *They allege nothing was done then nor later in 2014, when they told Pope Francis in a letter that Corradi was living in his native Argentina. ~ Fox News*[230]

There was no reason for Bergoglio to react; he had ultimate authority over Corradi's "relocation".

> *Members of the Provolo association met with the Pope last year and asked for an independent commission to investigate. The Provolo group provided the* ***AP*** *with the letter from the Vatican dated February 5, 2016, in which the Vatican said it had forwarded the request to the Italian bishops' conference, saying it was up to them to investigate.*
>
> *"As of now, nothing has happened," the group said in an email. "We have to ask ourselves: the Pope, who was for many years the primate of the Argentine church, did he know nothing about clerical abuse in his country?" ~ Herald*[231]

There are a great many agents of disinformation in employ by the Vatican who first bait their audience by attacking their masters only to mislead them in the end.

There are also some honest Catholics who are simply disgusted by what they've seen.

> > *"And peace to the children, on this special day on which God became a child, above all those deprived of the joys of childhood*

> *because of hunger, wars or the selfishness of adults." — Pope Francis' Christmas* ***Urbi et Orbi*** [City and the World] *Message 2016*

Indeed, Pope Francis. ***The joys of childhood*** *are deprived to the victims of clergy sexual abuse by the* ***selfishness of adults****. Despite his global popularity, the reality is that Francis is all talk, and no action when dealing with clerical child sex abuse. Not surprisingly, as the novelist, V.S. Naipaul observed about Argentines, "it is the Argentine attitude to suppress and ignore."*

Notwithstanding his incessant chatter about mercy and human trafficking, this Argentine Pope continues to ***suppress and ignore*** *the ongoing clerical child sexual abuse. The latest case of papal inertia and deafness is especially heinous since it involves the sexual abuse of hundreds of disabled deaf and mute children in Italy and Argentina by several priests, giving tragic magnification to the oft used term,* ***voiceless victims****. This cover-up lies squarely on Bergoglio's watch.*

During the 3 1/2 years of the Francis Papacy, the self-appointed ***Merciful One*** *is not so merciful when it comes to the victims of clergy sex abuse. As Archbishop of Buenos Aires, Bergoglio left a record of abysmal apathy and inaction to root out clergy sex abuse. This pattern lives on behind the Vatican walls.*

Who could forget the now familiar Francis fury raging at the faithful Catholics of Osorno Chile who pleaded with the Pope not to elevate a bishop who had allegedly protected a serial child predator? Francis ignored and suppressed their concerns as "stupid." Who could forget the Pope's personal appointment to the Synod on the Family of Cardinal Danneels, the renowned Belgian prelate who protected predator clerics? Don't forget child abuse victim Peter Saunders, who served on the papal child protection commission and was forced to take a leave of absence for criticizing the Pope's decisions on clerical sex abusers.[[232]]

Wake up, Francis fawners, his mercy meme rings as hollow and empty, as ***hope and change****. ~ The* [Catholic] *Remnant*[233]

Back in Milwaukee, after decades of raping little boys, as he approached death from old age, Father Lawrence C. Murphy's American superiors finally attempted some form of impotent action and even that was thwarted by the Vatican.

> *In the two years before Father Murphy died, the bishops in Milwaukee and Superior tried to have him defrocked but were dissuaded by Vatican officials who had received a letter from Father Murphy asking for leniency. The Vatican said Father Murphy had shown "apparent good conduct" in the 24 years since he had been removed from St. John's and sent to Boulder Junction. ~ The New York Times*[234]

Again, it is the collaboration of secular, government authority that shocks the sensibilities most. They, too, are secret members of the Devil's Simulation, unbeknownst to the citizenry they are paid and sworn to protect.

> *Victims back in Milwaukee and St. Francis say the police ignored their reports of the priest's sexual contacts. They also went to the district attorney's office in Milwaukee. E. Michael McCann, then the district attorney, said last week that his office had not pursued the allegations because they were beyond the state's statute of limitations.*
>
> *The victims and their advocates recall it differently, saying that one victim was then a student at the school and was being abused — which would have been well within the statute. Mr. McCann said his office was under such scrutiny in the Murphy case that it would have been impossible for them not to pursue an active case of abuse. But once Father Murphy moved to Boulder Junction, local authorities said they were not made aware of any complaints.*
>
> *"Our department never conducted any criminal investigations," said Chief Deputy Joe Fath of the Vilas County Sheriff's Department. "There were never any allegations of anything occurring in Vilas County at his place of work or residence."*
>
> *Father Murphy always lived freely. ~ The New York Times*[235]

Those who enable the Devil’s Simulation — the repeated and even ritualized defiling and victimizing of the innocent, and the vulnerable — advance in power and prestige.

The outrages at the Provolo Institute harken to Murphy’s crimes and just who it was that kept him unpunished and even unaddressed until his ignoble death in 1998. [italics suspended]

> ...the Vatican halted the investigation of a Wisconsin priest accused of molesting some 200 deaf boys have eerie echoes in Italy, where 67 deaf men and women accused two dozen priests of raping and molesting children for years.
>
> Only now — a year after the Italian case became public — is the Vatican directing the diocese to interview the victims to hear their testimony about the accusations, The Associated Press learned Thursday.
>
> The two cases are the latest in a burgeoning abuse scandal on both sides of the Atlantic ... The office charged with disciplining clergy was long led by Cardinal Joseph Ratzinger, now Pope Benedict XVI, and a church prosecution in the Wisconsin case was stopped after an appeal to Ratzinger.
>
> The Vatican strongly defended Benedict on Thursday and denounced what it said was a concerted campaign to smear him and his aides for a problem that Rome insists is not unique to the Catholic Church.
>
> Benedict’s actions have been marked by “transparency, firmness and severity in shedding light on the various cases of sexual abuse committed by priests and clergymen,” the Vatican newspaper *L’Osservatore Romano* said in a front-page article. ...
>
> In a signed statement last year, the 67 former pupils at a school for the deaf in Verona described sexual abuse, pedophilia and corporal punishment from the 1950s to the 1980s. They named 24 priests, brothers and lay religious men at the Antonio Provolo Institute for the Deaf.

> While not all acknowledged being victims, 14 of the 67 wrote sworn statements and made videotapes, detailing abuse, some for years, at the hands of priests and brothers of the Congregation for the Company of Mary.
>
> One victim, Alessandro Vantini, told the AP last year that priests sodomized him so relentlessly he came to feel “as if I were dead.”
>
> “How could I tell my papa that a priest had sex with me?” Vantini, 59, said through a sign-language interpreter. “You couldn’t tell your parents because the priests would beat you.” ~ *Associated Press*[236]

At the time, Cardinal Ratzinger (who co-authored Vatican II along with Jesuit Karl Rahner) maintained a very special position.

> *The bishop of Verona, Monsignor Giuseppe Zenti, initially accused the former students of lying. However, after one of the accused lay religious men admitted to sexual relations with students, the bishop ordered an internal investigation. It found some abuse occurred, albeit a fraction of what had been alleged.*
>
> *Advocates for the victims, however, said the diocese investigation was fatally flawed because no one interviewed the former students.*
>
> *Last summer, the diocese forwarded its files to the Vatican office that prosecutes sex crimes by clergy, the Congregation for the Doctrine of the Faith. It was headed for years by Ratzinger, who issued a 2001 directive that requires bishops to report suspected clerical abuse cases to the Vatican, but makes no mention of calling police. ~ The Boston Globe*[237]

What the *AP* neglects to tell its readers is that the “Congregation for the Doctrine of the Faith” is the kindler, gentler name for the Inquisition. [italics suspended except in the original]

> The **Congregation for the Doctrine of the Faith** (Latin: *Congregatio pro Doctrina Fidei*, **CDF**) is the oldest among the nine congregations of the Roman Curia. It was founded to defend the church from heresy; today, it is the body responsible for promulgating and defending

> Catholic doctrine.[1] Formerly known as the **Supreme Sacred Congregation of the Roman and Universal** Inquisition,[a] it is informally known in many Catholic countries as the **Holy Office,** and between 1908 and 1965 was officially known as the **Supreme Sacred Congregation of the Holy Office**. ~ *Wikipedia*[238]

Few know and understand that the Inquisition never ended, it just changed its methodology.

Ratzinger had risen through the ranks, proving himself to be a reliable gatekeeper for the Devil’s Simulation. In fact, this is the key to promotion and the foundation of Ratzinger’s Papacy.

> *Benedict also has come under pressure over a case dating back to his time as archbishop of Munich, in his native Germany, three decades ago.*
>
> *The Munich archdiocese has said that Ratzinger was involved in a 1980 decision to allow a priest who had been accused of abusing boys, the Rev. Peter Hullermann, to be transferred there for therapy. ~ The Boston Globe*[239]

Being in command of the Archdiocese of Munich was no small honor. It has had a powerful Jesuit presence for several hundred years and was the location where Adam Weishaupt taught Canon Law at Jesuit Ingolstadt University. Weishaupt would go on to define Communism and found the Jacobinism that fueled the bloody French Revolution as well as the Illuminati secret society.

But Ratzinger’s pedophile credentials don’t end there, he comes from a family of sadistic predators.

> *The priests at the Regensburg, Bavaria, boarding school for boys liked to make the students take off their clothes and bend over for either a violent whipping or forcible anal sex. Sometimes the priests made them drink red wine. Sometimes the priests masturbated in front of the children. Other times they made the children masturbate for them, perform oral sex or fondle each other.*

> *The complaint is not about just one or two isolated cases. At least 231 and more likely as many as 700 boys who attended the school between 1953 and 1992 were subjected to what has been described by the victims as “ritual abuse,” according to Ulrich Weber, a German lawyer commissioned by the choir who represents the alleged victims. “I have here 231 reports of physical abuse,” Weber told reporters at a press conference in Regensburg on Friday when he presented a report based on an eight-month investigation into the alleged abuse. “The abuse ranges from sexual assault and rape to food deprivation to the boys who were less cooperative.”*

— The fact that the words “ritual abuse” have been mentioned by victims is extremely important. — *The bulk of the abuse, which also included canings, forced gluttony and anal penetration with foreign objects, happened in the mid-1970s to boys being groomed for the world-famous Domspatzen boys choir of Regensberg’s St. Peter’s Cathedral when a certain Father Georg Ratzinger was the choir leader. Ratzinger, who will turn 92 next month, is the elder brother of Josef Ratzinger, better known as Pope Benedict XVI. He conducted the choir from 1964 to 1994. When asked if Ratzinger knew what was going on, Weber said, “After my research, I must assume so.”* ~ *Newsweek*[240]

Investigators have put the number of complaints at *over two thousand*.

It is the magnitude of a *war crime* yet no Catholic or secular authority has even so much as addressed it.

> *The prestigious choir dates back to the year 975 and grew to become one of the most famous musical training schools for boys, producing a number of successful composers and directors including Franz Wittenbrink, who came forward when the allegations of abuse first surfaced. In 2010, he told investigators that priests at the Regensburg boarding school engaged in what he described as “an elaborate system of sadistic punishments combined with sexual lust.”*
>
> *He said that he and several other boys were often “chosen” to be invited by the headmaster at the time to his personal apartment where they were plied with red wine and made to perform sex acts on the*

> *headmaster and on each other. “Everyone knew about it at the time,” he said in 2010.*
>
> *Whether the elder Ratzinger told his younger brother about the abuse remains dubious, especially given that the younger Ratzinger served as head of the Congregation for the Doctrine of the Faith, the church’s former Inquisition office that now sees to the interpretation and enforcement of church doctrine, before being tapped as pontiff. If he had been informed, he would have been in a prime position to expose it. The recent revelations of the extent of abuse will seal Benedict’s record on the greatest scandal to rock the Catholic Church as weak, at best.*[241]

When the decades-old secrets began to surface in 2010, an anemic victim’s advocacy group conducted a little-noticed protest.

Even that was attacked by police.

> *...a group of clerical abuse victims staged a press conference outside St. Peter’s Square in Rome to denounce Benedict’s handling of the case and gave reporters church and Vatican documents on the case.*
>
> *Afterward, Italian police detained four American abuse victims for 2 ½ hours because they didn’t have a permit for the news conference and suggested they get a lawyer in case a judge decided to press charges, the victims said.*
>
> *“We’ve spent more time in the police station than Father Murphy did in his life,” Peter Isely, the Milwaukee-based director of SNAP, the Survivors Network of Those Abused by Priests, said after his release. ~ Associated Press*[242]

A change has since occurred.

The sudden increase in arrests (2016/2017) may be the result of secular partners in Vatican crime feeling the heat of increased focus on their abominations by angry citizens.

Or it may be something even more sinister; a Satanic game of chess.

As priest abuse victim lawyer Mitch Garabedian (played by Stanley Tucci) stated to *Boston Globe* reporter Mike Rezendes (played by Mark Ruffalo) in the 2015 movie *Spotlight*, “The Church thinks in *centuries*, Mr. Rezendes.”

Rome was founded in the 6th century, B.C. and had grown into an Empire by the 1st century, B.C. She maintained her power and wealth and transformed into an all-encompassing religious authority by the 6th century A.D. She has co-opted the most powerful organizations in the world from banking to organized crime to the militaries and intelligence agencies of nation-states. She specializes in the most lucrative black markets; weapons, narcotics, people. The wealth horded and hidden by the Vatican can only be guessed at but it must surely stagger the imagination.

> *You might find a couple of quid tucked down the back of the sofa cushion if you’re lucky. More likely it’s just coppers and crumbs.*
>
> *But such is the vastness of the Vatican’s wealth that it can find hundreds of millions of euros just “tucked away” off of its central balance sheet, according to the cardinal responsible for the Holy See’s finances.*
>
> *“It is important to point out that the Vatican is not broke,” Cardinal George Pell, the Vatican’s prefect of the secretariat for the economy, wrote in the Catholic Herald. ~ International Business Times*[243]

Pell would know. He was the top Roman Catholic cleric in Australia before his activities protecting pedophile priests earned him a substantial promotion in Rome. After a “job well done” the promotion has afforded Pell a lavish lifestyle.[244]

More on George Pell in Chapter 23.

For years, controlled media has been slowly leaking out stories that powerful computers can use specialized programs to collate patterns and effectively predict the future.[245],[246]

Such stories claim that the capability is rudimentary and blunt; only able to “predict” very large, general events like wars. It is guaranteed to be much more precise and trends such as citizen awareness of the Devil’s Simulation have almost certainly been predicted. This allows the criminals, themselves, forewarning to expertly release information and to initiate “investigations” to feign action while getting in front of the trend and steering it clear of the areas that are the most vulnerable — what you’re reading of in these pages.

That “steering” includes insuring that citizens don’t understand the full scope of Luciferian activities or who is at the top, organizing them all.

Agents of espionage in secular offices are critical to these efforts and they provide a range of subterfuge to keep the enemies of mankind protected.

- Communicating crimes to law enforcement falls short of arrests.
- Arrests end with failure to prosecute.
- Prosecutions end with failures to convict.
- Convictions end with heinously light sentences.

While thoughts of near-limitless wealth and super-computers that predict the future may make the Jesuit-run Vatican seem like an unbeatable foe filled with malice and power, it’s important to remember that all of these resources are expended for one purpose: to keep the sleeping giant of humanity unaware of Rome’s crimes.

More than anything else, she is an enemy that desperately fears an awakened populace.[xix]

Chapter 6

“Lolita”[247]

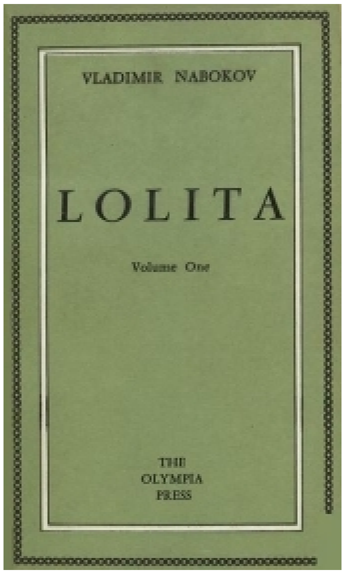

1955: *Russian émigré to the United States, Vladimir Nabokov, brings pedophilia into popular culture with the publication of his novel* ***Lolita****.*

As a result, “Lolita” became pedophile code for any immature girl that was lusted after...of any age.

The main character in the novel took the name “Humbert Humbert” in order to give him cover for stalking and raping prepubescent girls.

“Humbert Humbert” even married a widow to gain access to her 12 year old daughter.

Nabokov was heavily into lepidoptery[248] which has led to butterflies also being used as code for lusting after immature girls.

Conversely, a powerful tool employed by the Devil’s Simulation — trauma-based “mind control” — has also co-opted the butterfly as a trigger symbol.

The agenda of “mind control” is to torture a victim until their psyche shatters but is not allowed to self-destruct or shut down. Given the paradox, Dissociative Identity Disorder is forced upon the victim and as soon as a new identity or personality is spawned they can be trained and molded to do whatever their tormentor programs them with.

Methods of torture go far beyond just physical distress to include sexual violation (the younger the victim, the more effective) or subjecting the victim to take part in or witness something horrific.

First devised by Inquisitors and codified in the text *The Malleus Maleficarum* (The Witch Hammer), in 1486, it was perfected by Rome's agents and operatives in Nazi Germany like Roman Catholic Josef Mengele[249] and then transported to the West to be further enhanced by Jesuit-controlled Western Intelligence; CIA, MI6, Mossad, etc. with residual information being shared in the East such as the KGB — all secretly working together.

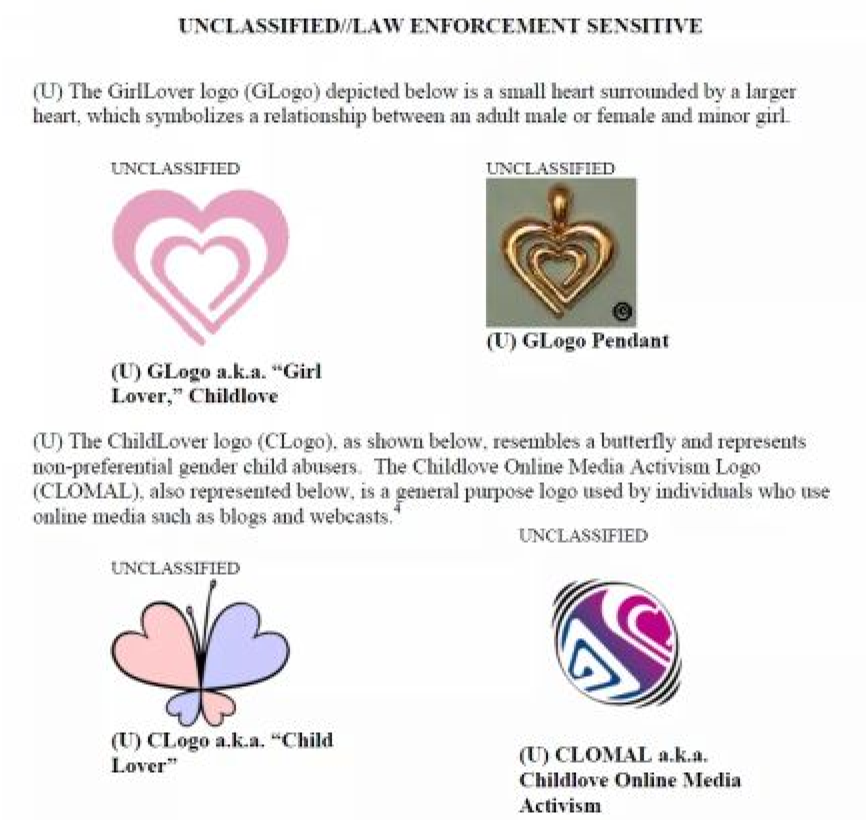

UNCLASSIFIED//LAW ENFORCEMENT SENSITIVE

(U) The GirlLover logo (GLogo) depicted below is a small heart surrounded by a larger heart, which symbolizes a relationship between an adult male or female and minor girl.

UNCLASSIFIED

(U) GLogo a.k.a. "Girl Lover," Childlove

UNCLASSIFIED

(U) GLogo Pendant

(U) The ChildLover logo (CLogo), as shown below, resembles a butterfly and represents non-preferential gender child abusers. The Childlove Online Media Activism Logo (CLOMAL), also represented below, is a general purpose logo used by individuals who use online media such as blogs and webcasts.[4]

UNCLASSIFIED

(U) CLogo a.k.a. "Child Lover"

UNCLASSIFIED

(U) CLOMAL a.k.a. Childlove Online Media Activism

Roman Agents in the Central Intelligence Agency would generally group these abominations under the heading "MK ULTRA" but specifics were bound in Project: MONARCH, also known as “Monarch Programming”. [250]

In January 2007, the FBI released a “law enforcement sensitive” memorandum[251],[252],[253] that showed the use of secret symbolism as code amongst pedophiles.

As citizens became aware of what to look for, they were shocked to see the symbols everywhere.

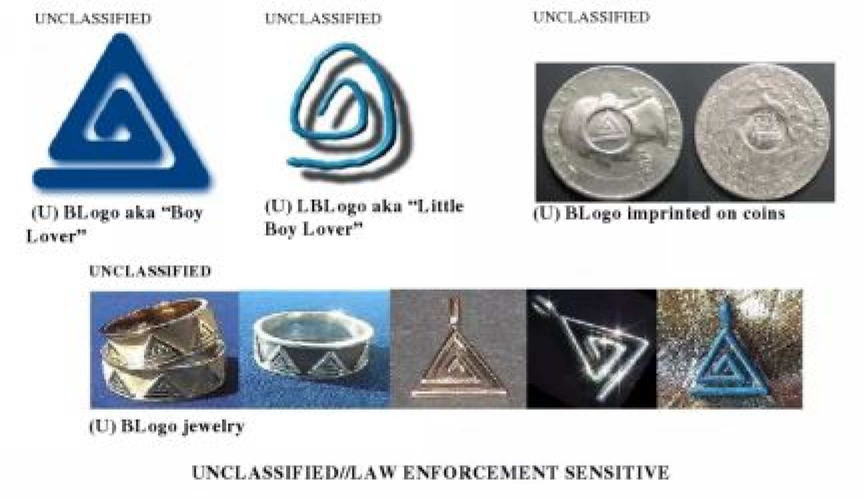

UNCLASSIFIED

(U) BLogo aka “Boy Lover”

UNCLASSIFIED

(U) LBLogo aka “Little Boy Lover”

UNCLASSIFIED

(U) BLogo imprinted on coins

UNCLASSIFIED

(U) BLogo jewelry

UNCLASSIFIED//LAW ENFORCEMENT SENSITIVE

— Even on the identification of the government officials entrusted to protect them from pedophiles.[254]

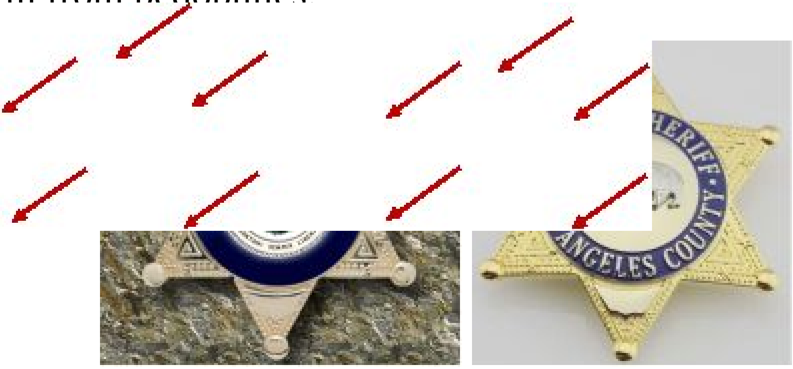

In his book, Nabokov meticulously charted the size and development of girls to pinpoint the perfect “Lolita”.

Rather than be investigated for suspected crimes with children, *Lolita* became the first book since *Gone with the Wind* to sell 100,000 copies in its first three weeks.[255] Media commemorated the “50th Anniversary” of the “masterpiece” in 2005 by remarking that, at that time, 50 *million* copies had been sold.[256]

Lolita was praised for having exposed the empathy deficits and cognitive disorders of pedophiles. However it also enticed millions of normal citizens into pedophilia.

In both *Lolita* and an earlier 1939 novella *The Enchanter*, Nabokov showed the stalking and “grooming” behaviors of pedophiles and portrayed their predilection for preying upon single mothers with children.

Although single “lone wolf” predators do exist they are almost non-existent as a threat to humanity. It is the *system* that keeps the Devil’s Simulation running that is the overwhelming threat. As a result, the most dangerous institutions are hidden in plain sight: Intelligence Agencies, law enforcement, judges, politicians and “Churches”.

This is why that same demographic — vulnerable single mothers and / or children without guardians — have been equally targeted by Roman Catholic “charities”.

In *Lolita* and *The Enchanter*, Nabokov’s predators experiment with the use of drugs to sedate victims or their guardians; the same has been done by the organizations that run systemic pedophilia.

Lolita also described the foundational role pornography and child pornography plays for pedophiles.

Consequently, a Hollywood movie adaptation was guaranteed and within only 7 years, Jewish Luciferian insider Stanley Kubrick (*Spartacus*, *Dr. Strangelove*, *2001*, *A Clockwork Orange*, *The Shining*, *Full Metal Jacket*, *Eyes Wide Shut*) released one in 1962 starring James Mason as Humbert Humbert, Peter Sellers as Humbert’s pedophile competition Clare Quilty and 14 year old Sue Lyon as Lolita.

Even at 14, Lyon was too developed for Nabokov (a “technical advisor”) who wanted a midget actress to better portray the diminutive size of pre-teen Lolita.

Early in the movie, Sellers invites Mason to play a game of “Roman Ping Pong”, chillingly presaging (or perhaps laying the foundation for) controversy that would swirl around the 2016 U.S. Presidential elections.

Accusations arose that the Campaign Chairman for Hillary Rodham Clinton, the Chief of Staff for Jesuit-educated President Bill Clinton, the Counselor to Jesuit-mentored Barack Obama and former Jesuit seminarian John Podesta had been abusing children via an unlikely hub; Comet Ping Pong Pizza based in Washington D.C. and owned by James Alefantis.

It was labeled by the media as “the baseless conspiracy” of “PizzaGate” to imply that it had been contrived by billionaire Donald Trump’s campaign operatives to muddy the waters against “rival” Hillary Clinton.

The name was meant to harken back to the break-in of the Democrat Party offices at the Watergate Hotel in Washington D.C. by the Nixon campaign to uncover strategies of “rival” George McGovern in 1972.

Watergate was the reverse of “PizzaGate”; a trivial matter given coverage well out of proportion to its criminality.

Far more interesting but far less covered were the men involved such as FBI agent George Gordon Battle Liddy, a Jesuit-educated[257] Irish Roman Catholic and Everett Howard Hunt, a CIA operative. Hunt was involved in everything from the United Fruit Company-sponsored Foster brothers overthrow of Guatemalan President Jacobo Árbenz to the broad-daylight assassination of President John F. Kennedy.[258]

Although overtly an Episcopalian, Hunt converted to Roman Catholicism with his wife Dorothy[259], shortly before her death in a “pilot error” plane crash that killed all 43 passengers aboard United Airlines 553, Washington to Chicago. It is believed that Dorothy was being used as go-between for Hunt while he either blackmailed or brokered his way out of prison. She was found to have $10,000 in cash stuffed in her purse.[260]

The wages of sin pay well but are still never enough when the bill comes due.

Having no one to look after his children while he served 33 months of a 35 *year* prison sentence[xx], Hunt turned them over to dear friend and fellow CIA operative William F. Buckley — a devout Roman Catholic and member of the Yale Skull and Bones Society, 1950.[261]

More on “#PizzaGate” in Chapter 31.

Apparently, *Lolita* was too important a novel to allow for just a single film adaptation and a joint French/American venture portrayed pedophilia for pop culture again in 1997.

This time, Jeremy Irons was Humbert Humbert, Frank Langella was his pedophile peer Clare Quilty and Dominique Swain was Lolita.

Perhaps it was fortuitous that Nabokov died 20 years earlier given his dissatisfaction at the choice of 14 year old Sue Lyon for the part in the Kubrick film; Swain was an elderly 17.

Still, the film did not go without controversy and release was delayed in Australia for 2 years.

Irons continues to be a popular choice for studios and has given a noteworthy rendition of Jesuit Father Gabriel in the 1986 Roland Joffé movie *The Mission*.

Was Vladimir Nabokov a pedophile or someone trying to bring attention to the Devil’s Simulation?

Although he left strong evidence to imply that he, himself, was a victim of pedophilia and incest, when queried by a BBC reporter on why he wrote *Lolita*, Nabokov denied any moral or social purpose.[262]

Yet Nabokov declared with derision that *Alice in Wonderland* author, Anglican Deacon Charles Ludwig Dodgson (a.k.a. “Lewis Carroll”) was a pedophile obsessed with taking pictures of naked children; a new technology quickly brought in to child soft-porn.

Although the “secret” was well-known in the inner circles, it was finally deemed fit for public consumption 150 years later.

> *The BBC is to broadcast a controversial new documentary exploring whether Lewis Carroll was a "repressed paedophile", on the 150th anniversary of his beloved children's book Alice's Adventures in Wonderland.*
>
> *The potentially-explosive programme, presented by Martha Kearney, will explore the nature of Carroll's relationship with children, and feelings toward the real Alice, the inspiration behind his most famous work.*
>
> *The show, in which he is referred to by a contributor as a "heavily repressed paedophile", will detail a newly-discovered photograph of a naked girl from a forgotten archive, said to show a "shockingly different" side to the author's friendship with children.*
>
> *The programme, entitled The Secret World of Lewis Carroll, is scheduled to be broadcast by the BBC next weekend, with contributions from famous faces including Philip Pullman and Will Self, as well as members of the real Alice's family.*
>
> *It will debate whether new evidence shows Carroll, whose real name was Charles Dodgson, took an interest in sexualising young children and teenagers, and whether he should or could be considered a "Victorian Jimmy Savile".*
>
> *The story of the real inspiration of Carroll's children's book is already relatively well-known, with the fictional Alice being based on young Alice Liddell, the daughter of the Dean of Christ Church and his neighbour.*
>
> *Alice and her sisters, Lorina and Edith, feature in Carroll's novels, with a host of surviving photographs taken by the author of Alice already published. ~ The Telegraph*[263]

This was an open secret to Vladimir Nabokov in the 1950's but the British media was "shocked" by it in 2015.

> *The picture, which is not comprehensively proven to have been taken by Carroll, is believed to show Alice's elder sister entirely nude, in a*

> *full-frontal pose described by Kearney as something "no parent would ever have consented to".*
>
> *Found in a French museum with an inscribed attribution on the frame saying it was by Lewis Carroll and of Lorina Liddell, it shows an "uneasy" pubescent model in her teenage years.*
>
> *Expert analysis shows it was taken around the time Carroll was seeing the Liddells, using the same processes he is known to have used in photography. ...*
>
> *Prof Hugh Haughton, one of the contributors to the programme, said the photograph – if it was taken by Carroll – was a "shocking image", with the author's relationship with the Liddell girls known to have a "huge intensity" which would be "pretty strange now".*
>
> *He added: "It will certainly make it harder for those who believe that Carroll's interest in little girls was totally innocent; it will make that more complicated."*
>
> *Will Self, the author, said of Carroll: "Dodgson himself, I think, was a heavily repressed paedophile, without doubt. It's a problem, isn't it, when somebody writes a great book but they're not a great person."*[264]

Actually, 'tis the other way 'round, Mr. Self: the Pedocracy found a moderately-entertaining book and gave it it's "immortal prominence" because it came from one of its own.

Perhaps unknowingly or knowingly, Alfred Kinsey nemesis Dr. Judith Reisman drew an odd parallel in regards to how Kinsey warped identifiers to cover the crimes he and other "researchers" committed — ***THE RED QUEEN: WORDS MEAN WHAT I SAY THEY MEAN***

> *"Let the jury consider their verdict," the King said for about the twentieth time that day.*
>
> *"No, no," said the Queen. "Sentence first-verdict afterwards."*
>
> *"Stuff and Nonsense," said Alice loudly. "The idea of having the sentence first."*

> *“Hold your tongue!” said the Queen, turning purple.*[66]
>
> *Like the Red Queen in Lewis Carroll’s* ***Alice’s Adventures in Wonderland****, Kinsey’s contention that in the late 1940s and early 1950s the U.S. was steeped in promiscuous sex was heavily dependent on his use of self-serving semantics. For example, he defined a “married woman” as one who had lived with a man for “at least a year, which could include working prostitutes.”*[67] *...*
>
> *For Kinsey, “normal” was a non-word, as were “criminal” and “crime.” His definition of “underworld” eliminated sex crimes, unless they had a monetary motive. A child molester was simply a “partner,” since the word “rape” is excluded from his study. And in his lengthy studies of human sexuality, such terms as “love” and “childbirth” do not appear in the indices.*
>
> *In Chapter 5 of the* ***Male*** *volume, Kinsey defines as “contacts” what most Americans would likely describe as sexual assault, rape, and sodomy. He mixes the experiences of “older subjects” with those of “older boys” and “adult men,” as though the categories are interchangeable. He also combines “younger boys” with “preadolescent boys,” which camouflages the rape of children under age 13.*[265]

Given Reisman’s position as chosen by Rome to defend “family values” one can only hope she knew not what she did. However, that is somewhat difficult to believe when it’s the very subject the Doctor of Communications is a highly-prized expert in.

If the secret life of Charles “Lewis Carroll” Dodgson was lost on Dr. Judith Reisman, it wasn’t lost on his fellow “paedophiles”.

In 2001, a U.K.-based “paedophile” internet club was finally taken down after long years of operation.

> *Everyone had a nickname ...*
>
> *But it was the sinister entry fee that exposed the fact that this was no ordinary club: each new member had to supply 10,000 pornographic*

> *images of children.*
>
> *This was the Wonderland Club, an international online paedophile ring which ran for four years before finally being smashed by the biggest international police operation ever undertaken. ~ The Observer*[266]

Actually, we consider "***smashed***" a bit of an exaggeration when no one gets brought to justice.

Certainly quite a bit of tax money was spent —

> *The international investigation to crack the ring was the biggest in policing history, taking in 13 countries and 180 men. Led by British officers, on 2 September 1998 police forces simultaneously kicked in the doors of 107 homes and made 104 arrests.*[267]

"10,000 pornographic images of children" was the entrance fee. Imagine the effort and power one must have to accomplish just getting in to the "Wonderland Club". In today's "ISIS" terror Police State you need only say the word "bomb" on your cell phone to have platoons of camouflaged "Police" wielding automatic weapons "smashing" down upon you but, oddly, no one of any consequence was "smashed" in this massive international sting.

> *The suspects included the usual collection of outsiders: unemployed loners in U.K. bedsits, a father and son in a U.S. trailer-park.*[268]

"***Smashed!***"

> *One prolific abuser, Gary Salt, invited other members to visit his Stockport home to pose with children in front of the webcam as if they were meeting a screen hero. The sheer weight of the physical evidence illustrates the enormity of Operation Cathedral — 750,000 individual images of children and 1,800 computerised videos depicted children being sexually abused.*[269]

"Operation Cathedral"?

> *The images were so appalling that National Crime Squad officers who had to sift through the mountain of material had compulsory therapy sessions to help them deal with what they saw.*
>
> *“These really are quite horrific images,” said Alex Wood, deputy chief inspector of the NCS. “These are kids being subjected to the most serious, serious, abuse.”*
>
> *The ring began to unravel after the arrest of Ronald Riva in Greenfield, California. Officers discovered that Riva had raped his daughter’s 10-year-old friend in front of a camera which relayed the live image onto the internet. The child, who had been invited to a slumber party by Riva’s daughter, is one of only two of the 1,236 Wonderland victims to have been traced. The other, a Portuguese boy, has disappeared and police fear he may have been murdered.*
>
> *Among six men who had typed messages of encouragement to Riva was Ian Baldock, a 31-year-old computer consultant from St. Leonards, East Sussex. The FBI informed the U.K. police, who soon realised the scale of the enterprise they had stumbled on. Operation Cathedral was born.*[270]

One wonders how such a complex, international operation of combined law enforcement was only able to rescue *two* of the *thousands* of abused children used by the Wonderland Club...and one of the two was “lost presumed dead”!

> *Wonderland, the Orchid Club, and other pornography rings are not simply exchanging images of undressed children romping on the beach. They have images that are the most horrible — two-year-olds, even six-month-old babies, being violently raped.*
>
> *Most of the 107 men eventually convicted for participation in the Wonderland Club were sentenced to fines. The heaviest sentence was three years in prison. Over 100 of these men are on the streets today.*
>
> *The Wonderland used sophisticated encryption codes originally developed by the KGB.*

> *The images they traded like baseball cards were of children tied up, children being raped, children having sex with animals, adults or other children. ~ Portuguese Lost Children*[271]

Portugal figures prominently as a safe haven for "paedophiles". We'll see that conclusively as we get into the story of Madeleine McCann in Chapter 26.

Again there is the use of Intelligence technologies implying the involvement of government agencies and evidence that the scale is clearly a systemic one.

"Operation Cathedral" was truly an appropriate name.

The British government joined law enforcement to quickly put harsh penalties in place to send a message to international child sex slave traffickers ... but too late for the "outsiders" and trailer park trash paedophiles nabbed by "Operation Cathedral".

> *"At first there was not enough police knowledge or power," said Wood.*
>
> *"We had to bring in computer experts who worked with U.S. for 14 months. Once we had traced actual computers we then had to establish who was using that computer at a particular time and with many of them in libraries and universities it wasn't easy."*
>
> *Round-the-clock surveillance on suspects had to be introduced to ensure none had access to children while the investigation was ongoing. At one point, the operation almost collapsed when one British man, Gavin Seagers, was discovered working with Sea Cadets. The police knew that if they arrested him they risked tipping off the whole network. Tracing the victims of the Wonderland Club is now a priority. New technology is being tested out by Interpol based in Lyons, France, to enable photographs sent in by social services and families to be "matched" by computer against the victims' photographs. Already 900 children have had their photographs "sanitized" and stored and police forces across the world will be able to access them.*

> *The British Government introduced legislation last month to increase maximum sentences for the possession of child porn from six months to five years. Those caught producing or distributing the images will now receive sentences of 10 years rather than the present maximum of three. But the new sentences will not apply to the Wonderland Club. ~ Observer*[272]

Once a child is traumatized by the Devil's Simulation, they still have choices. They can resist or succumb. If they succumb, they often grow into adulthood to become fellow partakers of the abuse they once suffered. Once they prove their loyalty to the monsters who stole their innocence, they may be rewarded lavishly.

Such was pop music sensation Michael Jackson. Bizarre behavior such as surgical addictions and severe identity crises of both race and gender are clear signs of early abuse.

Jackson's secluded multi-million dollar estate (perfect for abusing children without interference) was named the "Neverland Ranch"; taken from J.M. Barrie's legendary children's fable *Peter Pan*.

Many children were allowed to be placed in Jackson's care. Eventually, one child's parent came forward with accusations of abuse.

Wikipedia states definitively it was a "false accusation".

> *In the summer of 1993, Evan Chandler falsely accused Michael Jackson of sexually molesting his 13-year-old son, Jordan.*[273]

It was a "false accusation" that won Evan Chandler and his son a massive settlement from the pop star. It's an interesting outcome given that, apparently, nothing came of the criminal investigation.

Yet, after this victory against the Pedocracy, Mr. Chandler got "depressed".

> *In January 1994 Jackson reached a financial settlement for $32,000,000 with the Chandlers to resolve the matter and in September a criminal investigation was closed. On November 5, 2009, Chandler committed suicide in his apartment in Jersey City, New Jersey.*[274]

It was just a few months after Jackson, himself, had “died in his sleep” at only 51 years of age.

> *On June 25, 2009, Jackson stopped breathing while attempting to sleep under the care of Conrad Murray, his personal physician. Murray had reportedly given Jackson an array of medications in an attempt to help him sleep at his rented mansion in Holmby Hills, Los Angeles. Attempts at resuscitating Jackson were unsuccessful.[292][293]* ~ *Wikipedia*[275]

At least he was in the care of a trusted physician who was pumping him full of narcotics to “help” him.

Seven years after the deaths of both Jackson and his first accuser, upon “investigating” another accusation police and media finally decided, “Well maybe there was something there after all...”

> *In 2003, police raided Neverland Ranch while investigating charges of child molestation that had been brought against Michael Jackson. Jackson was acquitted in 2005 — but now, seven years after the late pop star’s death, a newly surfaced police report details what Santa Barbara County Sheriff’s Department found during their raid: a disturbing collection of pornography that included images of children’s faces superimposed on adult bodies, as well as materials police said can be used to de-sensitize young children in order to groom them for future abuse.*
>
> *Radar Online obtained the documents, which contain description and pictures from various books and magazines found in Jackson’s secluded California home.*
>
> *Many of the materials contain nude young adults and adolescents, and many were described as consistent with the type of material that can be used to lower young victims’ inhibitions. Some of the materials centered on S&M, and Radar Online also describes images of animal torture and gore.*
>
> *The police investigation began in 2003, when the singer faced accusations of child molestation and intoxication of a minor after*

> *Gavin Arvizo, then 13 years old, came forward. From all of the charges combined, Jackson could have served 20 years in prison — but he was acquitted in 2005, and died four years later from cardiac arrest. ~ Vanity Fair*[276]

No name is more synonymous with "children's entertainment" than "Disney".

However, Walter Elias Disney (1901 – 1966) was an abused child reputed to be a homosexual pedophile.[277] He was also a member of the de Molay Society for Boys. Named after the "final" Grand Master of the Templars, Jacques de Molay. Other prominent members include Jesuit-trained "Baptist" William Jefferson Clinton and Irish Catholic film star Marion Michael Morrison (also a Freemason[278]). Morrison is better known by his screen name, "John Wayne".

Disney productions are renown for hiding sexually-explicit images or subliminal messages but only the Roman Catholic "American Life League" was allowed to bring the matter to public attention with a Disney boycott and newspaper-published Opinion Editorial by President and Co-Founder Judith Brown — [279]

> *Why is a Pro-Life organization taking on the Walt Disney Co. over a few subtle sexual messages?*
>
> *A little boycott background: The Catholic Church has always taken an unwavering stand against the horror of abortion.*
>
> *Back in April of 1995, the Walt Disney Co. attacked God, the Catholic Church and Christianity in general with the release of a film called "Priest," through the company's subsidiary, Miramax. For this reason, those of us in the American Life League felt compelled to stand up for God and for the church that fights for life. Thus, the Disney boycott began with our demands that "Priest" be pulled and that Disney apologize to all Christians.*
>
> *Many of our supporters began to call and inform us of other gripes they had with Disney. Those supporters included: * The aunt of a 4 year-old who found "S-E-X" in "The Lion King".*

> ** A man who faxed us a story uncovering "Good teen-agers take off your clothes" in "Aladdin."*
> ** And a grandmother who wrote to tell us of the clergyman who is shown with an obvious erection in "The Little Mermaid".*

The "clergyman with an erection" was so offensive (though not far from real life) it lead to a lawsuit.[280] However, the suit was dropped, probably due to the cunning deniability built in to the animation. In one scene, there is a single "bulge" that appears below the waist then disappears but later a scene shows two bulges that are clearly knees.

This and another example were dismissed by the media with ridicule.

> *You may recall that there are two popular penis-related rumors circulating about* ***The Little Mermaid****. On the original home-video release, the cover art features a giant, golden tower in the background that looks an awful lot like a giant, golden erect dick. (It has long been rumored that this was intentional because, you know, disgruntled, horny cartoonists.) ~ When the Religious Right Attacked "The Little Mermaid", The Daily Beast* (*Newsweek*)[281]

However, if the subliminal messages are presented properly, there appears to be much less to mock: they are "mind control" suggestions designed to sexualize the innocents watching enraptured.

With this understood, Disney's repeated efforts to illegaly collect personal information on children without their parents' consent or even knowledge is beyond disturbing.[282]

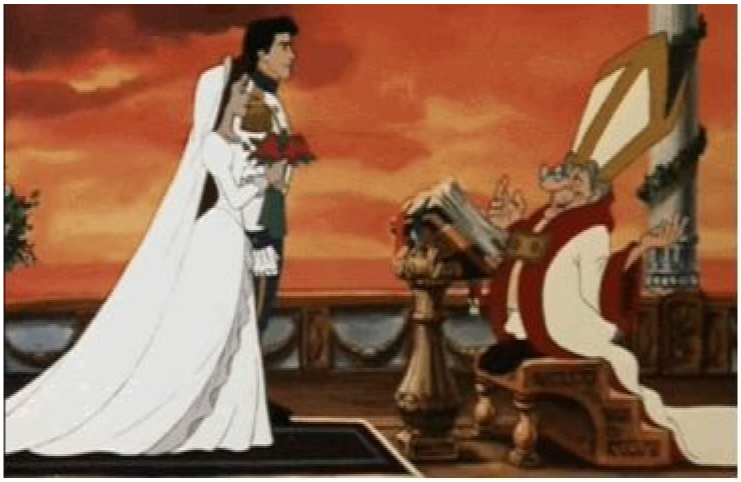

FAIR USE: screen shots from *The Little Mermaid* (1989) to illustrate a point.

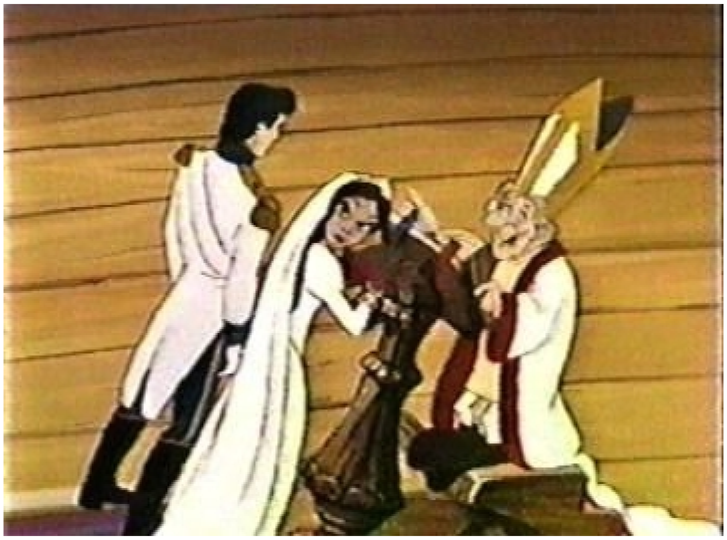

The examples could fill a book of itself but perhaps one more is called for: Peter Pan.

> *Peter Pan is a fictional character created by Scottish novelist and playwright J. M. Barrie. A free spirited and mischievous young boy who can fly and never grows up, Peter Pan spends his never-ending childhood having adventures on the mythical island of Neverland as the leader of the Lost Boys, interacting with fairies, pirates, mermaids, Native Americans, and occasionally ordinary children from the world outside Neverland. ~ Wikipedia* Our first red flag is that “Pan” is the mischievous Greek god of sex, often depicted as a satyr with an erect phallus. It was a god happily adopted by the Romans with no changes.

The second is the endless depictions in plays and film and the third is the number of androgynous young women cast as “Peter Pan” in most of them.

If you add adaptations, the list grows logarithmically.

For instance, the 1987 movie *Lost Boys* is about teenage boy vampires who “never grow up”. It starred Corey Haim, Kiefer Sutherland and Corey Feldman. Haim would later die before his 40th birthday. His close friend and fellow child actor Corey Feldman stated that the official cause of “pneumonia” was a cover-up, that Haim’s conspicuous problems with drugs and alcohol were caused by trauma he received as a victim of Hollywood pedophiles.

> *Corey Feldman has shared shocking details about the rampant sexual abuse he and other young actors were forced to endure during their years in Hollywood.*
>
> *In an interview with The Hollywood Reporter, Feldman discusses how he was repeatedly molested by adult males in the industry, saying these men would pass many young stars “back and forth to each other.”*
>
> *He also reveals that his closest friend, Corey Haim, was raped when he was just 11 by a producer, the start of a long cycle of sexual abuse that Feldman believes led to his friend’s problems with drugs and alcohol later in life.*
>
> *Haim would struggle with drugs up until his death in 2010 at the age of 38, a death that Feldman blames on the men who abused the actor.*
>
> *Feldman’s comments come just days after another former child star, Elijah Wood, also gave an interview talking about the pedophilia problem in Hollywood. ~ Daily Mail*[283]

In an interview with *ABC: Nightline,*[284] Feldman would state: *“The number 1 problem in Hollywood was, and is, and always will be pedophilia...that’s the biggest problem for children in this industry.”* ...

> *“It’s all done under the radar.”* ...
>
> *Host: “Nobody talks about it?”*

> *Feldman: "It's the big secret."*
>
> *Host: "It's that widespread?"*
>
> *Feldman: "Oh yeah. I was* ***surrounded*** *by them when I was 14 years old." ...*
>
> *"They all had their own power or connections to great power in this industry." ...*
>
> *"They've gotten away with it for* ***so long*** *that they feel they're above the law, and it* ***has*** *to stop."*

Their manager was Chris Snyder who also managed River Phoenix. Phoenix died at 23 of a "drug overdose" on Halloween in 1993. More on that in Chapter 25.

Worst of all are the concerns surrounding Peter Pan's creator, Baronet Sir James Matthew Barrie.

The impetus for his "Lost Boys" were the children of Arthur and Sylvia Llewelyn-Davies, a middle class family with many bills to pay. Barrie began paying them and, in turn, spent an inordinate amount of time with the boys.

Barrie's idol was novelist George du Maurier who wrote the novel *Trilby*. In it a musician named Svengali hypnotizes a tone-deaf girl into singing greatness. Maurier was speaking from experience as he used the technique to seduce a 17 year old "nude model" of his.
[italics suspended]

> To Barrie, Trilby represented the very sort of mind-games and manipulation that appealed to his nature. He must also have suspected that du Maurier had written from experience. He wanted to connect with him, for the mesmeric magic to rub off on him too.
>
> But du Maurier was dead, from cancer, in 1896, just two years after his great literary success. So Barrie turned to the next best thing. He inveigled his way into the du Maurier family — and, in particular his daughter, Sylvia, married to Arthur Llewelyn Davies and mother of those boys...

Ever the stalker, he engineered a meeting with Sylvia and Arthur at a society dinner party, where he pronounced Sylvia “the most beautiful creature” he had ever seen. He noticed her squirreling away sweets, which she said were for her boys. Barrie was in.

Then, like a cuckoo in the nest, with generous gifts and ever-presence, he cleverly sidelined Arthur and wheedled his way into Sylvia’s affections. ...

What began with seduction of the du Maurier clan ended in abduction.

Humiliated by Sylvia’s friendship with Barrie, Arthur Llewelyn Davies died at 44, of a horribly disfiguring cancer of the face — followed shortly after by Sylvia herself, also at 44 of cancer.

Barrie, though no relation, simply assumed guardianship of the boys on the pretence that he had been about to marry their mother before her death.

What is extraordinary is that no one else in the du Maurier family made any claim on the orphans, not grandparents nor aunts and uncles. Perhaps they were indifferent; perhaps they thought Barrie a perfectly fitting father.

But to head off any objections, Barrie had Sylvia’s will to wave at them — which he had, with consummate calculation, forged in his favour. ...

Michael was ten when Sylvia died and the most handsome of all the brothers. Ten was the age Barrie considered perfection in a boy, and the two became very close, unhealthily so, according to many who witnessed their relationship.

For all his preferred image of innocence, walking by the Serpentine with a rapt child hanging on each hand, friends of the boys thought Barrie creepy. There was something “sinister about him”, one recalled. It wasn’t so much the fear of sexual abuse that concerned them but the domination he exercised over such young and impressionable minds and personalities.

> Nor did his power stop there. Barrie's malignant influence also extended into the rest of the du Maurier family. He struck up a firm friendship with Gerald, Sylvia's actor brother and the boys' uncle, insinuating himself into his household too.
>
> Four-year-old Daphne, the second of Gerald's three daughters — destined to be a writer every bit the equal of Barrie — was drawn into his make-believe world ...
>
> She adored her father with a passion that, returned by him, may have edged too close for comfort to incest. Or maybe, when she confessed to such things, she was simply making it up. With master-storytellers, you can never be quite sure.
>
> Not yet 16, she had an affair with a philandering cousin 22 years older, then, when sent away to a finishing school in France, claimed to be sleeping with the thirty-something lesbian principal. Later, there would be a marriage and children, but also lovers, two of them women.
>
> She claimed, not a little resentfully, her sexual orientation had been confused by her childhood part in Barrie's "boy-cult". He had got inside her mind, toying with her sense of self, just as he had the Llewelyn Davies boys and their mother. ~ *Daily Mail*[285]

Was there improper sexual contact at any time? There is evidence to that effect. Of the Llewelyn-Davies boys left to Barrie's care, Michael was his favorite.

> *Barrie enjoyed taking photographs of the boys, sometimes in homemade costumes and often wearing no clothes at all. ...*
>
> *In June 1908, Barrie wrote this note to Michael for his eighth birthday, "I wish I could be with you and your candles. You can look on me as one of your candles, the one that burns badly — the greasy one that is bent in the middle. But still, hurray, I am Michael's candle. Dear Michael, I am very fond of you, but don't tell anybody." ~ She Knows*[286]

Michael Llewelyn-Davies would grow to become a traumatically-confused homosexual who died in a questionable drowning incident.

> *The Llewelyn-Davies boys ... suffered hugely because of the hold Barrie had over them. George went to war to escape his influence and was killed in the trenches in France in 1915. Jack suffered from depression.*
>
> *Michael drowned clasping a fellow undergraduate, another "lost boy", it seems, in a pool near Oxford in 1921 in what was described at the time as a tragic bathing accident, but may well have been a suicide pact. ...*
>
> *Peter also killed himself, beneath the wheels of a train. ~ Mail*[287]

"Suicide pact" is a bit of a stretch when it appears Michael's "Lost Boy" friend survived.

Placing pedophiles on pedestals for their victims to adore and admire is something the Pedocracy takes perverse pleasure in. If they can place their pervert in front of families and children for adoration, the Luciferians enjoy it even more.

Baronet Sir Barrie has been immortalized again and again with the never-ending depictions of "Neverland". Books, movies, plays, documentaries, comics, TV shows and even video games have all promoted the paedophile's plots.

Not content to just immortalize his fantasies, the entertainment industry lionized Barrie, himself, in the 2004 film *Finding Neverland*. It was a re-write of reality that would've made Joseph Goebbels proud. It was given an Academy Award and the altruistic hero, Baronet Barrie, was played by Johnny Depp.

As a sequel to the many Peter Pan films, Walt Disney Productions hired Steven Spielberg to help write and direct *Hook* in 1991.

Robin Williams portrayed Peter Banning/Peter Pan. In 2014, Williams was found dead of apparent suicide at 63.

> *Williams had "a recent increase in paranoia" and was sleeping in a stepson's bedroom because of insomnia and anxiety associated with Parkinson's, according to the coroner's report. ...*

> *Williams was found in a seated position on the floor of the bedroom with a belt secured around his neck and the other end of the belt wedged between a closet door and door frame.*
>
> *... according to Williams' wife, is that he may have learned of the suicide technique from a movie role in which a character Williams portrayed died from autoerotic asphyxiation. ~ CNN*[288]

The movie was ironically titled *World's Greatest Dad* (2009). In it, Williams happens upon the body of his teenage son who died while attempting autoerotic asphyxiation; the practice of achieving an ultimate sexual high by restricting the flow of oxygen while masturbating.

Hook also starred Bob Hoskins, perhaps best known as the alcoholic private detective Eddie Valiant in the 1988 "adult" Disney live action / animated film *Who Framed Roger Rabbit?*

In the film, as Hoskins exits a public restroom after relieving himself, he walks past graffiti on the wall that is only visible for a second: [289]

> *For a good time, call Allyson Wonderland.*

"Baby Burlesks"

Alexander Nabokov mocked Hollywood as a secret hotbed of pedophilia, calling out the supposedly satirical "Baby Burlesks" [*sic*] — short films of toddler Shirley Temple by Jack Hays and Charles Lamont in 1932/33.

Extreme, perverse sexual innuendo abounds in these "satires" where Temple frequently played a child prostitute.

In *Glad Rags to Riches* (1933), a male toddler suitor bites an oversized pickle which squirts Temple in the face.

In *War Babies* (1932), a boy in diapers waits for milk from a bottle above him to squirt down. When it spills and covers his face, he begins to cry. Temple shows up with a rubber glove to put to a keg of "Sweet Milk" whilst a man makes noises off camera that are a cross between a "moo" and a moan.

In other productions, Temple plays a child in an orphanage or a runaway — prime prey for pedophiles.

In *Poor Little Rich Girl* (1936), Temple caresses and serenades her on-screen father (actor Michael Whalen), singing “Marry me and let me be your wife...”

In *Captain January* (1936), co-star Buddy Epson thrusts her head towards his groin during a dance scene.

In *Curly Top* (1935), a millionaire benefactor sings about his enchanting young ward that he places in his “Wonderland”; the movie was banned in Denmark for its obvious pedophilic innuendo.

Satanic Serendipity?

In 1918, Vladimir Lenin forced Russia to adopt the Gregorian calendar created by Jesuit Christopher Clavius. This moved Nobakov’s birthday from April 10th to April 22nd but he chose to celebrate it on April 23rd because it was the birthday of both Shirley Temple and “William Shakespeare”.

Shakespeare is believed by experts and Luciferians alike to actually have been gnostic Freemason Sir Francis Bacon[290]; the man who edited the 1611 Authorized Version of the Bible for King James I of England.[291]

In a cryptic post-script to Lolita, Nabokov claimed he originally wanted to name the subject of desire after Joan d’Arc who was burned alive by the Roman Catholic college of Sorbonne for wearing men’s clothing and armor.[292] Was this an attempt to project his own victimized experiences as a boy?

Nobakov’s effete aristocrat uncle, Vasily Ivanovich Rukavishnikov was a member of the Czarist foreign service and maintained a posh property in Rome. He may also have been the pedophile who sexually abused Nobakov.

“Uncle Ruka” shared so many similarities with “Humbert Humbert” as to be beyond coincidence; particularly the age differences between Humbert and Lolita vice Ruka and Nabokov.

According to Nabokov scholar Joanne Morgan, the controversial author had extreme disgust for Sigmund Freud and his “Oedipus Complex” which Nabokov saw as pedophile subterfuge and validation.

In yet another quirk of satanic serendipity, “Freud” and “pedophile” would be placed in a sentence decades afterward.

Sir Clement Raphael Freud (1924 – 2009) was the grandson of Sigmund Freud.

> *...he moved to the United Kingdom from Germany as a child and later worked as a prominent chef and food writer before becoming known to a wider audience as a television and radio personality. He was elected as a Liberal Member of Parliament in 1973, retaining his seat until 1987, when he received a knighthood. In 2016, seven years after he died, three women made public allegations of child sexual abuse and rape by Freud, which led to police investigations.[4] ~ Wikipedia*[293]

The convenience of the “police investigation” occurring *after* the death of the powerful, prominent pedophile who was also a media personality and Member of Parliament was a circumstance repeated so often as to almost have no exceptions.

Being wealthy and powerful, Freud kept a resort villa in picturesque Praia da Luz, Portugal.

By coincidence, it was that same villa where 4 year old Madeleine McCann went missing in 2007 while her “working class” parents Gerald and Kate were on holiday.

The “coincidence” goes even further as e-mails were exchanged between the Parliamentarian pedophile and the McCanns.

> *A woman who says she was a victim of Freud claims she told police about his links to the family, but nothing was done. ...*
>
> *“Nobody else would have thought Freud capable of abuse and rape but he did it to me.”*
>
> *“I’m angry police were dismissive of my information.”*

> *“My son wrote to the police with my account and concerns over Freud in connection to the McCanns, but he never got any response.”*
>
> *“I have a six year old granddaughter, a young girl like Madeline. If you have a something you feel needs to be looked at you have to tell someone. That’s what I did.”*
>
> *“That’s why I contacted the police, when I read Kate McCann’s account, I wanted the detectives to know what I knew about Clement Freud.” ~ The Mirror*[294]

It would seem that the ensuing “police investigation” will not be a comprehensive one.

More on Madeleine in Chapter 26.

Stockholm Syndrome

If Vladimir Nabokov wanted to expose pedophilia as a victim of it, why not be more overt, more obvious?

Being victimized by a pedophile causes extreme trauma to a child. They are confused, pleased to be the object of apparent desire but horrified at the physical violation and often injured by it.

Without understanding, rehabilitation or a source of solace outside of themselves (usually found in a spiritual faith) their experiences poison the mind. If their abuser is a member of the clergy, they are robbed even of this.

Unable to deal with what happened to them, many attempt to erase the crimes with alcohol or narcotics. When this ultimately fails them, they take their own lives.

A small number go in another direction. Projecting themselves into the place of their tormentor (“Stockholm Syndrome”), they become pedophiles, themselves.

This terrible occurrence is actually cultivated by the keepers of the Devil’s Simulation and encouraged to happen to the child as quickly as possible so that they can become agents of the Pedocracy and used to lure in new victims.

Like some terrible virus, pedophilia metastasizes within each victim turning them into the next generation of vampires who are then enlisted into the ranks of the secret cabal of Luciferian Elite.

Chapter 7

No Laughing Matter

1963: *First allegations of predatory pedophilia made against English DJ, television and radio personality Sir James Wilson Vincent "Jimmy" Savile (1926 – 2011), OBE, KCSG.*

No action taken.

Savile leading the Lochaber Highland Games in 2006. Wikimedia Commons

The summary on Savile from *Wikipedia* states:

> *Savile was conscripted to work in the coal mines as a Bevin Boy during the Second World War, reportedly sustaining spinal injuries, aged 14.*[9] *He began a career playing records in, and later managing, dance halls, and was said to have been the first disc jockey to use twin turntables to keep music in constant play. His media career started as a disc jockey at Radio Luxembourg in 1958 and on Tyne Tees Television in 1960, and he developed a reputation for eccentricity and flamboyance. At the BBC, he presented the first edition of* ***Top of the Pops*** *in 1964 and broadcast on Radio 1 from 1968. From 1975 until 1994, he presented* ***Jim'll Fix It****, a popular television programme in which he arranged for the wishes of viewers, mainly children, to come true. During his lifetime, he was noted for fund-raising and supporting charities and hospitals, in particular Stoke Mandeville Hospital in Aylesbury, Leeds General Infirmary and Broadmoor Hospital in Berkshire. In 2009 he was*

> *described by The Guardian as a “prodigious philanthropist”[10] and was honoured for his charity work.[11] He was awarded the OBE in 1971 and was knighted in 1990. ~ Wikipedia*[295]

To commit to the Devil’s Simulation is to be protected for your lifetime.

After that, you’re on your own.

For those willing to defile the innocent in order to have access to power, a pattern emerges; connections in government and law enforcement insure free and unfettered access to the world’s children with little fear of reprisal.

Such was the case for *Sir* Jimmy Savile, OBE, KCSG.

> *The earliest known complaint about Savile dates from 1963 and it is one of eight complaints that were never registered at the time they were made. This one occurred just as his television career was really beginning to take off. A male victim told his local police officer in Cheshire that Savile had raped him. He made the complaint the day after the assault. The officer told the victim to “forget about it” and that they should “move on”.*
>
> *The officer did not record a report of what the victim had said — and so there was no investigation into the DJ.*
>
> *There was a similar second incident — this time after the DJ had begun presenting Top of the Pops. A man told the Metropolitan Police that his girlfriend had been assaulted during a recording of the programme. An officer told him that he “could be arrested for making such allegations”. No report appears to have been logged.*
>
> *The HMIC says that, to its knowledge, complainants went to three other forces in England and Wales — Merseyside, the then Royal Ulster Constabulary and West Yorkshire — but failed to get police to take them seriously. The Police Service of Northern Ireland, the RUC’s successor, says that it checked all records and could not find any report about Savile.* ~ BBC[296]

A year later, an officer with the Metropolitan Police Service of London, Headquartered at Scotland Yard, took a report that Savile had committed crimes at the Duncroft School for emotionally-troubled girls in Surrey.

Again, no action was taken.

The true story of what happened at Duncroft is beyond belief. Savile was directed there by pedophile powers and turned loose upon the girls interned in the government facility to rape and abuse at will. The young teenagers — sent to the facility because they needed compassion, help and a safe haven — were easy prey. They had only one barrier between them and Savile, the Duncroft staff who all turned a blind eye. Savile abused, violated and raped the girls in their rooms, in the intensive care infirmary, even in the principal's office. He actually stayed the night on several occasions.

It is not known if Savile had meals catered to each crime scene, but it's certainly plausible.

Perhaps his ultimate show of arrogance was to write in the Duncroft visitor's log —

called — and fell in love with it all!!!

("I wonder if it's legal to love 20 wives")

If they're 12 years old and unwilling, one would think not.

It was signed as Savile signed everything; with a smiley face in the "J" a $ for the "S" and £ for the "l".

But for Savile, it was about much more than money.

Not only did he rape the teenage patients under government care with impunity, after his death (when it was safe to circulate victims' complaints) remaining staff continued to live free of any interference by law enforcement or the justice system, including Headmistress Margaret Jones.

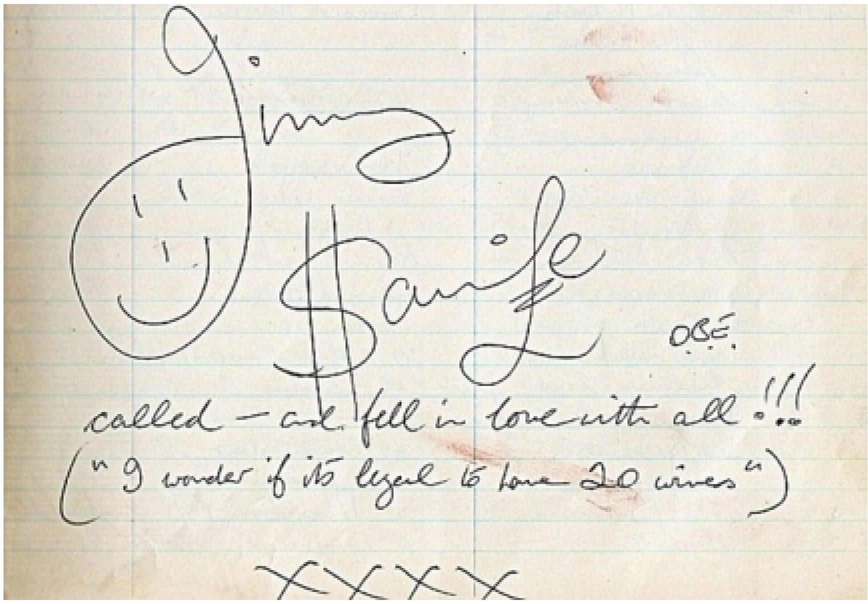

Jimmy Savile OBE.

called – and fell in love with all!!!

("I wonder if its legal to have 20 wives")

XXXX

> *A woman who was abused at Duncroft aged 14, said she was furious that there are to be no charges. She said: 'It is shameful. Teachers knew what that monster was doing.'*
>
> *One former pupil, one of three girls photographed with the star in 1972, has said: 'Jimmy treated Duncroft like a paedophile sweet shop.' ~ Daily Mail*[297]

Also after Savile's death, the taxpayer-funded British Broadcasting Corporation conducted an independent media investigation into the accusations of child sex abuse. It cost £200,000 but the BBC decided to do nothing with the information gleaned. When prompted to at least release the findings, the committee led by former Sky News head Nick Pollard refused.[298]

Outrage over these and many, many other unrestrained criminal activities forced Metro Police to initiate a special task force (after Savile's death, of course) which they called Operation: YEWTREE.

Even in this, the cops mocked the citizenry.

The yew tree was (is) highly revered by Celt and Saxon pagans as representative of sex magick; "fertility", "regeneration" and "immortality".[299] Often trees within "sacred" groves were pruned, shaved or hacked to increase a phallic resemblance.

> *It was, therefore, probably the oak tree that was the most revered of all tree species – particularly when it was being parasitised by the sacred mistletoe (Viscum album), as in such instances it would be seen as one of their deities' chosen trees (Altman, 2000). The oak would thus be found abundantly within sacred groves frequented by the druids (used to worship deities such as Baal, who was the god of fire), where ceremonies religious in nature (including – at times very gruesome – human sacrifice), communal gatherings (for the purpose of learning and socialising), and legal discussions would be held (Altman, 2000; Cusack, 2011; de Cleene & Lejeune, 1999; Hooke, 2010; Macculloch, 1911). In fact, this is a common theme amongst all forms of Paganism, as trees usually display their sacredness through ritualistic practice. Other tree species, such as yew (Taxus baccata) were also to be found within the groves, and in many instances these groves of species including oak and yew would also be located near to a river or other water source (Cusack, 2011). Worship, in particular, would not be held indoors, but instead amongst these sacred groves (Monaghan, 2014), where no temple walls would have been built around such sacred locations that were often deep within the woodlands and away from settlements (Hageneder, 2000).*
>
> *Curiously, the word druid may even translate to "oak men", as may the druids' word for sanctuary originate from the Latin word* ***nemus****, which translates to mean "grove" (Haberman, 2013). In turn, this explains the name of the goddess of the sacred groves of the Celts: Nemetona ("goddess of the sacred grove") (Forest, 2014). In Sanskrit, druid literally translates to "tree knowledge", where "dru" means tree and "wid" means knowledge (Hageneder, 2000). Of course, within these Celtic groves, other deities were worshipped, including Taranis (Cusack, 2011), who – much like other European thunder and storm gods (including Jupiter, Perkūnas, Perun, Thor, and Zeus – some are discussed later) – was represented by the oak tree (Forest, 2014; Gardiner, 2007). ~ Arboriculture*[300]

The connection between druidism and the language of the Roman Empire is not coincidental.

Many will be shocked to learn that the tree grove sex and blood rituals condemned by the Bible are still carried out to this day.

There are a multitude of examples but one of interest can be found in Judges 6. The Israelites had been subdued and tyrannized by the Midianites in response to their own wickedness. They cried out to YHWH for delivery and an angel was sent to Gideon, a young man from the tribe of Manasseh. To show his loyalty in response of the call, Gideon sacrificed to YHWH in Levitical fashion and the Angel of the Lord showed the sacrifice approved by consuming it with fire.

That night, Gideon was told by the Lord to use a strong young bull and tear down the altar of Baal built by his own father as well as the Asherah pole next to it (KJV; “grove”).

Asherah was (is) the Canaanite mother goddess of fertility; Semiramis / Isis / Columbia / “Mary”. She was the consort of the Sumerian god Anu and the Ugaritic god El (though not to be confused with the Hebrew / Semitic “El”, YHWH).

When the Canaanites realized what Gideon had done, they sought to rebuild the altar of Baal and slaughter the young man on it to renew their commitment.

In response, Gideon’s father Joash repented of his past involvement and joined his son to defy them.

> *When the men of the city got up early in the morning, the altar of Baal was torn down, the Asherah pole beside it was cut down, and the second bull had been offered on the new altar that had been built.*
>
> *They said to each other, “Who has done this?”*
>
> *When they had inquired and asked, they responded, “Gideon son of Joash has done this.”*
>
> *Then the men of the city said to Joash, “Bring out your son so that he may die, for he tore down the altar of Baal and cut down the Asherah pole beside it.”*

> *Joash then said to all who stood against him, “Would you plead for Baal? Would you save him? Whoever fights for him will be killed by morning. If Baal is a god, let him fight for himself, for someone has torn down his altar.” Therefore on that day he called him* ***Jerub-Baal****, saying, “Let Baal fight him, for he tore down the altar of Baal.”* ~ Judges 6:28-32 (Modern English)

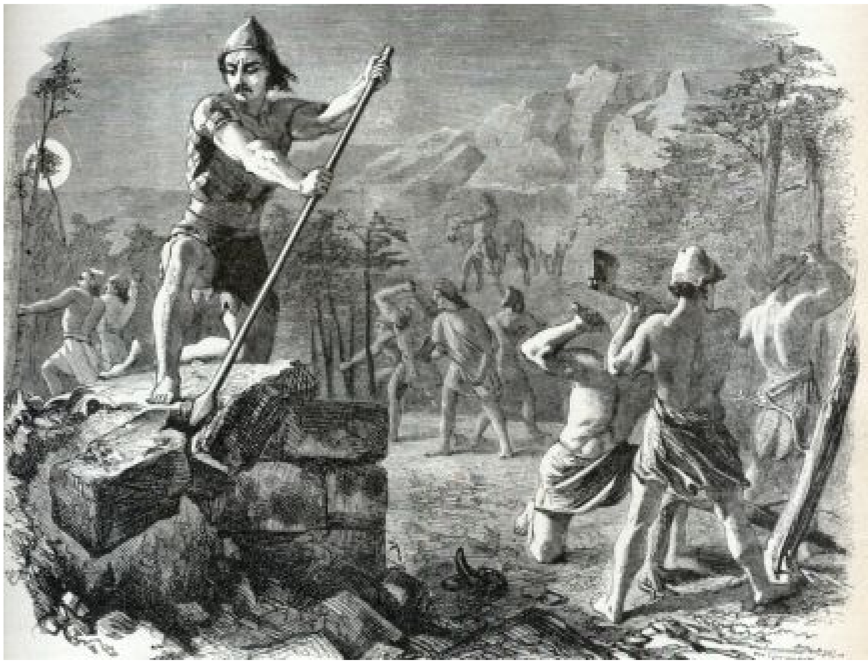

Gideon inspires the Israelites to tear down the groves and altars of the Devil’s Simulation.

The event was a catalyst for war. The Midianites were joined by Amalekites and other Canaanite tribes but Gideon’s tribe of Manasseh followed in Joash’s footprints, repented of their Baal worship and rallied to him. They were joined by warriors from the tribes of Asher, Zebulun, and Naphtali and overwhelmingly crushed the Baal worshippers, throwing off the Midianite yoke of oppression.

None of this, however, was in the minds of the Metro Police; only that they would let their fellow Baal worshippers rest assured that the servants of Asherah would protect them from Operation: YEWTREE.

The secret Baal worshippers at Metro Police announced that they had found 666 suspects had abused children within institutions.[301]

Are you laughing yet?

To date, YEWTREE arrests include Elvis impersonator Gary Glitter, Rolf Harris (a painter) and Geoffrey Wheeler, an Open University contractor who sometimes worked for the BBC.

Scotland Yard always gets its man...as long as they're no-one of consequence.

Meanwhile, Sir Savile's pedophile friends and connections ran through the highest levels of British government.

As a result of the "30-Year [secrecy] Rule" expiring on the Thatcher administration, some "intimate" e-mails between Sir Savile and Prime Minister Margaret Hilda Roberts, Baroness Thatcher, have come to light — but only a few. The rest remain sealed despite the expiration of the 30-Year Rule.

It seems Savile was the Iron Lady's favorite party guy; she spent 11 consecutive New Year's Eves with the serial pedophile. They frequently lunched at the culturally-iconic Chequers Pub together. Thatcher personally oversaw Savile's Knighthood.

A hand-written note sent on February, 1980, from Sir Savile to Prime Minister Thatcher states effusively —

> *My girl patients pretended to be madly jealous and wanted to know what you wore and what you ate.*[302]

He used the same signature as when he signed the Duncroft register, before proceeding to rape and terrorize emotionally troubled pre-teens.

Given that the closest Savile ever came to the medical profession was to use it for access to the most vulnerable children in Britain's socialized medical care, it seems clear (along with the refusal to release the bulk of Savile / Thatcher correspondence) that at minimum Thatcher was aware of Savile's monstrous proclivities.

However, what we know of the Devil's Simulation makes it a foregone conclusion that Baroness Thatcher was a full participant. She could not have made it to become one of the longest tenured Prime Ministers in British history, otherwise.

The Duncroft Approved School in Surrey was not the only government medical facility Savile had free and unfettered access to.

He also raided and raped the young patients at Stoke Mandeville Hospital in Buckinghamshire.

Given the extent to which Savile was able to enter these facilities, commit heinous crimes on children, then leave without thought nor care of interference, it's clear that he had the full co-operation of England's socialized National Healthcare Service.

What is also obvious is that powerful pedophiles in British government were steering the monster specifically to these locations; having already cleared them for his activities.

Victim reports from Stoke Mandeville show that Savile wasn't just a serial child rapist: he was an active member of the Devil's Simulation.
[italics suspended except in the original]

> *Jimmy Savile beat and raped a 12-year-old girl during a secret satanic ritual in a hospital.*
>
> The perverted star wore a hooded robe and mask as he abused the terrified victim in a candle-lit basement.
>
> He also chanted "Hail Satan" in Latin as other paedophile devil worshippers joined in and assaulted the girl at Stoke Mandeville Hospital in Buckinghamshire. The attack, which happened in 1975, shines a sinister new light on the former DJ's 54-year reign of terror.
>
> Savile, who died aged 84 in October 2011, is now Britain's worst sex offender after police revealed he preyed on at least 450 victims aged eight to 47.
>
> The girl kept her torment hidden for nearly 20 years before finally opening up to therapist Valerie Sinason.

Dr. Sinason told the Sunday Express she first spoke to the victim in 1992. “She had been a patient at Stoke Mandeville in 1975 when Savile was a regular visitor.”

“She recalled being led into a room that was filled with candles on the lowest level of the hospital, somewhere that was not regularly used by staff. Several adults were there, including Jimmy Savile who, like the others, was wearing a robe and a mask.”

“She recognised him because of his distinctive voice and the fact that his blond hair was protruding from the side of the mask. He was not the leader but he was seen as important because of his fame.”

“She was molested, raped and beaten and heard words that sounded like ‘Ave Satanas’, a Latinised version of ‘Hail Satan’, being chanted. There was no mention of any other child being there and she cannot remember how long the attack lasted but she was left extremely frightened and shaken.”

Savile was a volunteer porter and fundraiser at the hospital between 1965 and 1988 and had his own quarters there.

Five years after the hospital attack, he abused a second victim during another black mass ceremony held at a house on a wealthy London street.

The woman was 21 at the time and was made to attend an orgy, which later took on a darker twist.

Dr. Sinason, director of the Clinic for Dissociative Studies in London, said: “A second victim approached me in 1993. She said she had been ‘lent out’ as a supposedly consenting prostituted woman at a party in a London house in 1980.”

“The first part of the evening started off with an orgy but half-way through some of the participants left.”

“Along with other young women, the victim was shepherded to wait in another room before being brought back to find Savile in a master of ceremonies kind of role with a group wearing robes and masks. She

> too heard Latin chanting and instantly recognised satanist regalia. Although the girl was a young adult, who was above the age of consent, she had suffered a history of sexual abuse and was extremely vulnerable."
>
> Both victims contacted Dr. Sinason, who is president of the Institute of Psychotherapy and Disability, while she was involved in a Department of Health-funded study into sexual abuse committed during rituals and religious ceremonies. She said: "Both these witnesses did speak to police at the time but were vulnerable witnesses and on encountering any surprise or shock did not dare to give all the details."
>
> The police took no action. ...
>
> "Neither girl knew one another, they lived in different parts of the country and contacted me a year apart yet their experiences are very similar." ...
>
> Dr. Sinason has passed details of the abuse to officers from the Savile inquiry, Operation Yewtree. ~ *Express*[303]

That meant that the "details" have been dutifully disposed of by the oath-breaking cops at London Metro.

Is it that simple?

Was Jimmy Savile just a "satanist"?

So far, it's clear that the Roman Catholic Church took over from the Roman Empire as the caretakers of the Devil's Simulation. Were there more clues than just Savile speaking Latin and approximating a "Mass" while he raped prepubescent girls?

The truth seemed as elusive as a Scotland Yard investigation but the first clue arrived upon Savile's death in 2011.

After his gold coffin was paraded around Leeds, "Sir Jimmy" was given a full complement of Royal Marines to carry it into the funeral ... held at St. Anne's Roman Catholic Cathedral there in Leeds.

Two years later, it quietly emerged that Britain’s top Roman Catholic cleric, Cardinal Keith O’Brien, was a dear friend.

It was an association that ran decades and included Savile’s mother.[304] Was Jimmy Savile selected for his role long before he was ever famous?

The association of Savile and Cardinal O’Brien includes pedophile predation by the priests, as well.

> *The pair first met in the 70s, when O’Brien was a priest in Kilsyth, North Lanarkshire – and worked with a friend of Savile’s mum.*
>
> *Another priest at Kilsyth at the time has been suspended following claims of abuse against two young victims. ~ The Mirror*[305]

That same year, O’Brien was forced to step down when no fewer than 4 priests came forward claiming he had touched or propositioned them for homosexual gratification, often during their shared evening prayers.[306]

Before the full extent of Savile’s secret outrages were known, the *International Business Times* leaked the truth from Catholic sources.

> ***Jimmy Savile was a practicing Catholic but this was omitted from most of his obituaries.***
>
> *Jimmy Savile was a devout Catholic who attended Mass regularly, it has emerged.*
>
> *In the wake of Savile’s death last year, a Catholic newspaper even questioned a “conspiracy of silence” surrounding the TV presenter’s religion at the time of his death.*
>
> *The Catholic Herald noted that few newspapers mentioned that he was a practising Catholic, who attended mass on a regular basis, when writing their obituaries of the DJ.*
>
> *The Herald asked: “Why not mention that an important part of his life was attending daily Mass? There’s a deep dedication in the life of a man who gives away 90 per cent of everything he earns and so tirelessly does all the other things he did.*

> *“You’d think that an obituarist would want to ask a simple question: where did all that come from? It’s almost as though they couldn’t bear to accept that the answer was his Catholicism: even that Catholicism itself could ever be the source of actual human goodness.”*[307]

The piece from the *Herald* has since been taken down[308] and re-written.[309]

The original headline from columnist William Oddie was —

> ***Jimmy Savile’s Obituaries Mentioned His Charity Work But Why The Conspiracy Of Silence About His Faith?***

The answer to Mr. Oddie’s question is: *because media and government are as beholden to Rome today as they were in the Middle Ages and Rome controls the abominations that open access to the Devil’s Simulation.*

Chapter 8

Spotlighting

20 April 1967: *Father John Joseph Geoghan is transferred from Blessed Sacrament Parish in Saugus, Massachusetts to St. Paul's parish in Hingham, Massachusetts without explanation to parishioners from his superiors. Within a year, he is caught by a Hingham father molesting his young son. The man complained to Church authorities. Geoghan was sent to Seton Institute, Baltimore for "counseling" and then transferred to St. Mary's parish in Melrose, Massachusetts where he molested all four boys belonging to single mother Joanne Mueller.*

After 40 years of raping and abusing children, the complaints over Geoghan finally produced action: Pope Saint John Paul II defrocked the priest in 1998. He had had his run, he was now cleared as a sacrificial scapegoat.

Three years later, in 2001, the Spotlight "deep investigation" team of the *Boston Globe* conducted a series of reports that detailed Geoghan's decades of outrages.

The Globe was dominated by Jesuit-trained Catholics like Spotlight team lead Walter "Robbie" Robinson. Was it courage that instigated the reports? — A desire to purge the Archdiocese of its pedophile priests?

In 2015, Spotlight would get the spotlight of Hollywood to further prove that media controlled by Knights of Malta was actually trustworthy — especially when given to Jews to steward.

Martin "Marty" Baron was a Jewish circuit-riding editor, bouncing from paper to paper, working miracles for their flagging reputations.

In July of 2001, Baron succeeded Notre Dame-educated Matthew Storin as Executive Editor of the *Globe*. In his very first staff meeting, Baron recommended the Spotlight team hone in on Father John J. Geoghan.

Was this upstart outsider Jew playing Superman and forcing the Jesuit-trained Catholics of the *Globe* to do their jobs? He certainly had the resume for it.

> *Baron was born in Tampa, Florida, to Jewish emigrants from Israel. He attended Berkeley Preparatory School and worked on the school's student paper. He matriculated at Lehigh University where he was editor of* ***The Brown and White*** *student newspaper. He earned both a Bachelor of Arts in Journalism and MBA with honors in four years, graduating in 1976.[1] He had received special permission to take graduate classes as an undergraduate.[2] Baron is a fluent Spanish speaker.[3]*
>
> *The year he graduated from college Baron began working for* ***The Miami Herald****; he moved to* ***The Los Angeles Times*** *in 1979, and to* ***The New York Times*** *in 1996.[4] He returned to the* ***Herald*** *as executive editor in 2000 and led coverage of numerous key stories, including Elián González's return to Cuba and the 2000 election. ~ Wikipedia*[310]

Sadly, the true story is as corrupt and cynical as all the others you've read so far. Elián González was an immigrant Cuban child ripped from his family at gunpoint by the Jesuit-trained Bill Clinton Administration and deported. As his lead on the story showed, Marty Baron was the perfect Jewish front-man for Rome to use to help her puppets in propaganda promote the idea that they were true journalists.

Boston and surrounding dioceses had suffered for being so openly controlled by Rome. Serial predators like Father Paul Shanley and Father James Porter had raped and abused *hundreds* of children and they were carefully enabled by constant transfers to new pastures once parishioner ire was raised in an old one.

By 2003, the Jesuit-trained Roman Catholic Attorney General of Boston, Thomas Francis Reilly,[xxi] was forced to admit that *thousands* of children had been abused by Catholic clergy in his district over the previous 60 years.

> *At least 789 children and probably more than 1,000 have been sexually abused by 250 priests and other church workers in the Roman Catholic Archdiocese of Boston since 1940, according to a 16-month investigation by the Massachusetts attorney general that was made public today. ~ The New York Times*[311]

One can assume the real numbers stagger the senses, especially when expanding the parameters of the locations and dates.

Father James Porter started molesting children even before his ordination — about the same time Alfred Kinsey was in full swing with his agenda out of Indiana University.

Like all before or since, Porter raped children with impunity and when he was done, he was released from his vows and allowed to settled down. Even “user-edited” *Wikipedia*’s summary is honest and horrific in its proof of the systemic corruption that is the Devil’s Simulation —

> *Porter started both training for the priesthood and molesting children at a young age; he abused his earliest known victim in 1953, the summer before he entered seminary.[2] He was ordained in 1959 and became a priest of the diocese of Fall River, Massachusetts.*
>
> *Porter was assigned to St. Mary’s parochial grammar school in North Attleboro, Massachusetts in April 1960 and put in charge of the altar boys. Porter gained a reputation there as a child molester, but no action was taken against him by the Catholic Church until 1963, by which time at least four parents had complained to his superiors about his inappropriate behavior. Rather than contact the police, however, Church officials moved Porter to a parish in Fall River, where further complaints about his behavior surfaced.[1] In the early 1960s, more than 60 North Attleboro children were sexually victimized by James Porter, and nearly 100 in southeastern Massachusetts.[3]*
>
> *In 1964, Porter was arrested for molesting a 13-year-old boy and sent to a mental institution for 13 months* [outrageously light sentence]. *Once released, he was quickly reassigned to another parish, the first of many such reassignments over the years. He was shuffled into two*

> *more parishes before more accusations piled up and he was hospitalized again in 1967, this time to a hospital run by fellow priests who practiced holistic psychotherapy upon its patients, many of whom were clergy members suffering from psychological problems. Porter's "problem" was not unique among the hospital's patients; two of them were later imprisoned for abusing, between them, hundreds of children.*

— Punishment for raping kids: receive "therapy" from other priests on why taking the innocence of children is not acceptable. —

> *Porter was released after a few months, once again declared cured, and given probationary assignments in parishes in Texas, New Mexico and Minnesota, all of which included access to children. Complaints surfaced by the dozen against Porter, but none of them resulted in disciplinary action beyond his being moved from post to post.*[1]
>
> *In 1973, Porter wrote a letter to Pope Paul VI requesting to be released from the priesthood, in which he admitted molesting children across five states. The Pope granted his request and, in 1974, Porter gave up his collar.*[4] *He married, and eventually settled in Minnesota. He and his wife had four children.*

Like a Mafia hit-man, Porter destroyed countless lives than simply "opted out". He was allowed to do so by Rome and her dutiful public servants through a multiplicity of States where he had raped children.

Paul Shanely was a Jesuit-styled "community organizer"; "hippie street preacher" by day, child rapist by night.

At the culmination of his 40 years of terror (which included the rape and abuse of toddlers), the elderly Shanely was finally jailed in 2005. After serving the minimum sentence, he was released. Even at 86 years old, victims were infuriated that he should be returned to society.[xxii]

> *Attorney Mitchell Garabedian, who represented some of those men in lawsuits against the Archdiocese of Boston, said his clients are upset that Shanley is getting out of prison.*

> *"Unfortunately, there is no mechanism in place which will prevent Paul Shanley from sexually abusing once again," Garabedian*[xxiii] *said. "When it comes to a sexual abuser abusing an innocent child, the abuser can be 35 or 95 – there's no age limit." ~ The Press Herald*[312]

Shanley was billed by both Catholic leadership and media like the Associated Press and Fox News as having a "special ministry for teens":

> *For over 20 years, the Rev. Paul Shanley established a reputation as a "street priest," setting up a ministry for runaways, drug addicts, drifters and teen-agers struggling with sexuality.*
>
> *But Shanley apparently had another side.*[313]

One can't be sure what the "other side" of targeting "teen-agers struggling with sexuality" is but it wasn't something Shanley did of his own accord: he was ordered to it.

> *Newly released documents show he had an extended history of sexual-misconduct allegations. He publicly defended sex between men and boys and was even at the sexuality conference that saw the founding of the North American Man Boy Love Association.*
>
> *Among the documents turned over by the Roman Catholic archdiocese of Boston in relation to a lawsuit recently filed against it was the Feb. 12, 1979, issue of a publication called* ***GaysWeek*** *that includes an article titled "Men & Boys." ...*
>
> *The* ***GaysWeek*** *article described a meeting of 150 people in Boston on the topic of man-boy love. It said many speakers representing various religions endorsed such relationships — including Shanley, who was there as a representative of then-Cardinal of Boston Humberto Medeiros' program for outreach to sexual minorities. ...*
>
> *The North American Man Boy Love Association apparently was formed at the end of the conference by 32 men and two teen-agers. There was no indication in the article that Shanley was among them.* [314]

Yet, we are to believe that Father Paul Shanley went from being under orders to lead “Cardinal of Boston Humberto Medeiros’ program for outreach to sexual minorities” to helping found NAMBLA on his own accord.

Shanley’s NAMBLA co-founder was Thomas Reeves, a college professor who lived and worked in Boston. Like Shanely, Jesuit Father Richard McSorely and many other Catholic clergy, Reeves was a far-Left “community organizer” specializing in issues like homosexuality, AIDS, race or the Vietnam draft.

Reeves, however, was an ordained Methodist minister. He was born in Nashville, Tennessee and pastored a church in Blue Springs, Alabama. However, he felt pulled to the Catholic haven of Boston to settle.

Reeves wasn’t a strict Methodist, in fact, he was a member of Taizé; a French ecumenist movement that encouraged Protestants to merge with their “mother” Catholic Church.[315]

Any resemblance between the *Croix de Taizé* and the gnostic Maltese Cross used by Catholic Knights to denote their allegiance is purely coincidental.

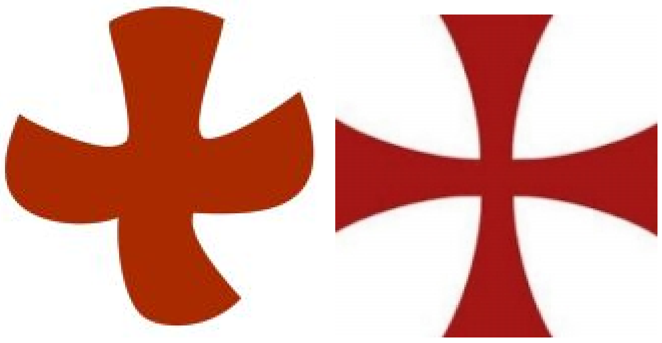

Croix de Taizé Templar Maltese Cross

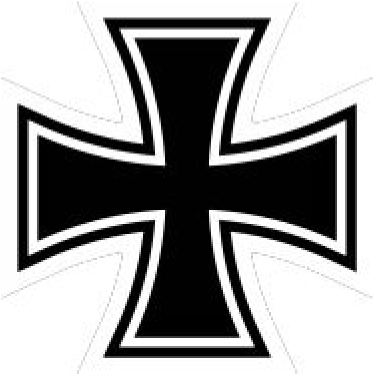
The same “coincidence” can be found in the Teutonic “Iron Cross”; a military decoration founded by Friedrich Wilhelm III of Prussia in March 1813 and proudly awarded to many a Nazi during WWII for their service to ... “Germany”.

In 2012, Thomas Reeves died of heart failure in another Catholic haven city he liked to spend time in: Baltimore. Well-wishers were requested to donate to the St. Joseph’s orphanage in Port-au-Prince, Haiti. NAMBLA would proudly proclaim of him —

> *From 1976 to 2001, Reeves taught at Boston’s historically black Roxbury Community College, where he became a full professor of social sciences and director of the school’s Caribbean Focus program. Tom had a particular interest in the plight of Haiti, writing and speaking frequently about the country and joining a number of delegations and humanitarian missions, for which he was honored by the Haitian government. At Tom’s invitation, the then recently-overthrown Haitian president Jean-Bertrand Aristide spoke at the college and received an honorary degree in April 1992.*[316]

Jean-Bertrand Aristide was, himself, a Jesuit priest[317] who usurped power in 1990. Eight months later he was overthrown by a military coup.

Haitians had had a belly-full of Jesuit seditions (what the order does best). Despite having thorough control of “mainstream” media, a few examples surface through the years.

For instance, in 1964 the Company was threatened with expulsion after two Jesuits were arrested with documents deemed vital to the national security of Haiti.[318] Although vicious Roman Catholic dictator François “Papa Doc” Duvalier did expel the Jesuits later that year, he would sign a

Concordat two years afterward which granted him the privilege of Investiture — the ability to choose Bishops and Cardinals apparently loyal to him.[319] It was a power that caused wars several times through England’s history (for more read *Secret History*). In return, Rome maintained ultimate control over Haiti and continued to allow Duvalier to use his *Tonton Macoute* secret police to murder and terrorize Haitians.

Duvalier applied theater to control through fear and often dressed as “Baron Samedi”, the Haitian spirit of lust and the dead. In an autocratic tyranny, tracking victims is impossible but the total number of dead at the hands of François Duvalier may go as high as 60,000.

Tonton Macoute is a Voodoo / Creole tradition translated “Uncle Knapsack”: a tuxedo-dressed demon who kidnaps children.

When François “Papa Doc” Duvalier died in 1971, he left his son Jean-Claude “Baby Doc” Duvalier in his place. However, “Baby Doc” was not nearly as focused as his murderous father. He turned to what he knew to be the source of power — Rome — and gave up his father’s Investiture in favor of open Vatican approval of his regime.

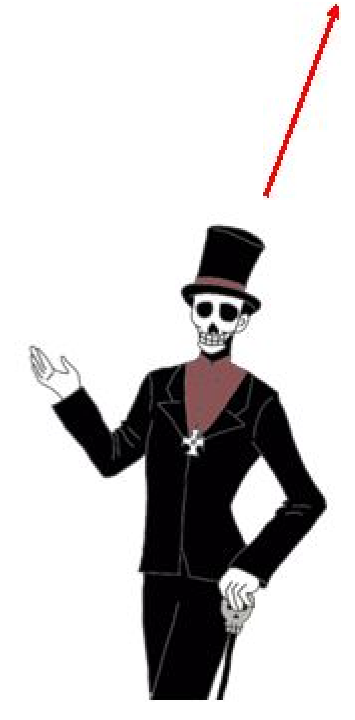

Apparently even Baron Samedi is also a Knight of Malta.

Recognizing his weakness, a visit by Pope Saint John Paul II was arranged in 1983 but Duvalier was shocked when the Vicar of Christ made a speech in Creole pronouncing “Things must change here.”[320]

One year later, the Jesuits returned from exile full force courtesy of a new treaty signed between “Baby Doc” Duvalier and Rome (known as a “Concordat”).

> *Baby Doc had been out-manoeuvred. The Pope, intent upon positioning the Church for the future, was happy to betray his host. Giving Papa Doc control of the Haitian Church had served its purpose*

> *and now it was time to reign in his weak son and have him sign the new concordat in the window of opportunity before he was forced out. While deliberately hastening Baby Doc's departure, the Vatican seized the chance to drive a hard bargain with his collapsing government. The concordat amendment of 1984 rescinds even the President's nominal right of nominating bishops and archbishops* [Investiture].*[25]*
>
> *In addition to a favourable concordat, the Vatican's belated opposition to the regime offered further opportunities. It allowed the Church to distance itself from the dictator it had once supported. (The Vatican had used the same strategy in the previous decade during the declining days of Franco's Spain.) This move gave the Church credit for helping to usher out an unpopular dictator and at the same time distracted Haitians from the Vatican's record of regularly supporting the nation's strongmen and élites.*
>
> *In 1986 protests against Baby Doc led the U.S. to arrange for Duvalier and his family to be exiled to France and a new constitution was proclaimed the next year. ~ Concordat Watch*[321]

By betraying the dictators Rome had once supported she could now claim credit for the Duvalier ouster. In 1986, the *New York Times* proudly trumpeted —

> *A group of Haitian priests and nuns are pressing for the resignation of the Archbishop of Port-au-Prince because of what they say was his collaboration with the Duvalier Government. ...*
>
> *Militant sectors of the Roman Catholic Church that played a key role in the ouster of President Jean-Claude Duvalier on Feb. 7 appear to be behind the campaign against the Archbishop, Francois-Wolff Ligonde.*[322]

The Archbishop of Port-au-Prince (Haiti's capital) holds the same power that the Archbishop of Canterbury holds in England. To believe any Prelate in such a critical position would forego loyalty to Rome over loyalty to their host nation is either to be completely ignorant of Catholic hierarchy or purposefully deceptive.[xxiv]

In 1994, Jesuit Father Aristide rode on the backs of American soldiers sent by Jesuit-trained President Bill Clinton in *his* triumphant return to power.

The Jesuits certainly don't lack in cheek. The legislation they installed after the false flag of 9/11 that pushed America into an Orwellian Police State was labeled by Catholic agents in Congress as "the Patriot Act". Bill Clinton's "errand of mercy" to reinstall Father Aristide at the point of American bayonets was called "Operation Uphold Democracy".

Standing with the American forces in Haiti to reinstall their Jesuit Priest President was a young Army Major named Michael Thomas Flynn, Sr.[323] A devout Roman Catholic, Flynn would go on to make General and head the Defense Intelligence Agency. He would later spend a brief time as Donald Trump's National Security Advisor before being asked to step down by another devout Catholic (later re-branded an "Evangelical"[324]), Trump's Vice President, Michael Pence.[325] Flynn and his son, Flynn Jr. were at the heart of a media firestorm[326] over the so-called "PizzaGate" scandal. It implicated Democrat power-broker and former Jesuit seminarian John Podesta in child sex slave trafficking which centered around Comet Ping Pong Pizza in Washington D.C. More on "PizzaGate" in Chapter 31.

Perhaps it's no surprise that Catholic St. Joseph's orphanage, so well thought-of by NAMBLA and "Methodist minister" co-founder Thomas Reeves, is also plagued by reports that the children interned there are constantly victimized and forced into the sex slave trade. More on that in Chapter 28.

Boston Catholic Outreach to "Sexual Minorities"

Aside from that single *Associated Press* mention, nothing more can be learned of Cardinal Medeiros' "program". The *Boston Globe* would go on to say of Shanley that he rescued "legions of homosexual runaways" and "their parents ... considered Shanley a hero and his work a ... blessing."[327] The same piece bragged that Shanely was driving state-to-state "on a rambling speaking tour." Was Paul Shanley the Roman Catholic Tony Robbins, or were his superiors insuring that he had access to children even outside Massachusetts?

In fact, serial boy-rapist Paul Shanley was an extraordinarily powerful man, from mentoring homosexual legislators on their way to Congress to assisting Alfred Kinsey in pulling America towards sexual anarchy —

> *Representative Barney Frank, then a state legislator active in gay-rights issues, attended legislative meetings with him. One of only a handful of priests in the country assigned to work full time with homosexuals, Shanley charmed not only the media and city leaders, but clerical and youth workers throughout New England. They studied Shanley's taped essays on "Counseling Parents of Gays" and "Changing Norms of Sexuality" as if they were scripture.*[328]

The Church had big plans for Barnett "Barney" Frank. As a homosexual Jew he was another excellent front man. He would go on to disgrace Congress for the Commonwealth of Massachusetts for over 30 years. During that time, he was instrumental in loosing restrictions on predatory banks via the repeal of the Glass-Steagall Act[329] as well as the catastrophe that was the "Housing Bubble".

> *...his fingerprints are all over this fiasco. Time and time again, Frank insisted that Fannie Mae and Freddie Mac were in good shape. Five years ago, for example, when the Bush administration proposed much tighter regulation of the two companies, Frank was adamant that "these two entities, Fannie Mae and Freddie Mac, are not facing any kind of financial crisis." When the White House warned of "systemic risk for our financial system" unless the mortgage giants were curbed, Frank complained that the administration was more concerned about financial safety than about housing.*
>
> *Now that the bubble has burst and the "systemic risk" is apparent to all, Frank blithely declares: "The private sector got us into this mess." Well, give the congressman points for gall. Wall Street and private lenders have plenty to answer for, but it was Washington and the political class that derailed this train. ~ Boston Globe*[330]

Are we to believe that Humberto Medeiros assigned Paul Shanley these critical positions unbeknownst of his sexual depredations? Shanley even had the approval of Medeiros' successor, Cardinal Richard Cushing. The

Boston Globe admitted Shanley’s crimes were well-known in his powerful circles.

> *For some devout Catholics, the notion of such a ministry seemed at odds with church teachings. ...*
>
> *That Shanley, now 71* [in 2002]*, was accused of molesting some of the boys who turned to him for help is now well known. Harder to divine is what church leaders knew or suspected of his behavior. And even more disconcerting, particularly for some of his alleged victims, is the fact that so many prominent Bostonians admired and supported Shanley’s work and yet were seemingly unaware of his flagrant sexual activities. Shanley’s penchant for young boys was no secret, at least not in some quarters of the city, and the word among street veterans was to steer clear of him. ...*
>
> *So daunting was Shanley’s celebrity that some of those who followed his career and had suspicions about him didn’t know where to go with their concerns. Boston, after all, was among the most Catholic of cities. Nor was the gay community, struggling to emerge from a shroud of secrecy and condemnation, particularly eager to have one of its most vocal champions linked to sexual abuse.*
>
> — But it is thoroughly consistent with where
> promoting homosexuality eventually leads! —
>
> *One exception was Elaine Noble, the first openly gay state representative in the country, who knew Shanley well in the 1970s. She said she was suspicious of his activities and complained to a host of city leaders, including the police and mayor’s office. That nothing came of her reports she attributes in part to Shanley’s popularity and potent connections. ...*
>
> *Noble says she took her concerns about Shanley to the Boston police; to Katharine Kane, then a deputy mayor; and to several priests who are now dead. Kane, now retired, said she “never heard of Shanley until now.” And when leaders in the gay community heard what Noble had done, she said, “I got holy hell. People in my own community just*

> *didn’t want to believe it. The truth is that people were afraid of Shanley. ... No one could shut down Paul Shanley.”*[331]

Shanley had limitless access to children into adulthood either in or out of “the Church” to include his duty as the Chaplain of “public” Boston State University. Thanks to deviants like Alfred Kinsey and other Luciferians, it became culturally-accepted to believe the ludicrous idea that children can perceive themselves to be homosexual. These hapless victims were then funneled to predator “advocates” like Father Paul Shanley.

> *By the early 1970s, Shanley had become so linked to the issue of gay youth that “he was the go-to guy if your child was homosexual,” said Roderick MacLeish Jr., who represents almost half of the 26 alleged Shanley victims who have taken legal action. “Paul Shanley would be the referral from the hot lines, from the newspaper, from the street.” ...*
>
> *Carmen Durso, the attorney who represents several of Shanley’s alleged victims, says Shanley’s choices were no accident. Shanley, he said, “went out and created a pool of kids he could go after. He advertised for them. He went after the kids at the bus stops, the runaways, the kids who nobody cared about and who had no one to talk to. Shanley was very instinctive about his victims, like finding the weakest member of the herd.”*[332]

Shanley’s crimes may even have been worse than the hundreds of other priests who abused the trust of families in them because he specifically appealed to young boys who questioned their very identities.

> *Shanley’s alleged victims had a lot in common, according to several of their lawyers. They were lonely. Depressed. Terrified of their sexuality. Some came from single-parent homes and had few friends. A few had never had sex before.*[333]

While he raped them, he lived like a prince on a “priest’s salary”.

> *Lightly supervised by the church* [in Boston that Catholic Church is universal enough to be written lower-case], *freed of tedious parish duties, Shanley was a one-man ministry. He walked the city’s streets at all hours ... trailed at times by those who knew he held the key to a*

> *meal and bed. His routine varied often, particularly as his public speaking and traveling schedule picked up... He toured the youth hangouts, Boston Common, and bus stations. He held Masses for Dignity, an association of gay Catholics. And ... he rented an elegant Beacon Street apartment in the Back Bay that, one of his accusers said, was a regular gathering spot for teenage boys, "and right in the middle of them Shanley would sit enthroned, sort of holding court."*[334]

The *Globe* admitted that, during this time, neither it nor any other media outlet appeared to be doing their job very well.

> *No one was more taken with the fiery, witty priest than the media.*[335]

Where was Marty Baron when you needed him?

While he lived like a king, Shanley not only took advantage of confused boys by raping them, he proffered them to his powerful friends.

> *But if the public and press were largely blind to Shanley's ways, the boys he allegedly made his victims were definitely not. They are men, now, their childhoods long behind them. But their encounters with Shanley have stained their lives like scarlet ink. Many have suffered from prolonged addictions and recurring depression. Some have been unable to form lasting relationships and have tried to take their own lives.*
>
> *One of them, now a 47-year-old builder and father of three who asked that his name not be used, says he met Shanley when he was 13 and had run from his South Shore home to the Boston "scene." He recalls Shanley telling him that he was a psychologist who specialized in teen issues. And when the priest offered the boy a place to stay, he says he agreed, and Shanley took him to his third-floor bedroom at Warwick House. He says Shanley had the maid take his dirty clothes and offered him a robe. When it came time for bed, he recalled, "[Shanley] said, 'You can sleep with me.' I was thinking this is not a good idea. And then all of a sudden he is naked and touching me, and I am petrified ... I was completely freaked out."*

> *Another boy, now age 43, was introduced to Shanley in 1974 at age 15 and told that the priest could help him with his many family problems. At Shanley's suggestion, he says, the two played strip poker and then stood naked before a mirror in his Beacon Street apartment. For about a month, he says, he continued to visit Shanley, who told him he was "an expert in sexuality," for weekly "sessions" during which they had sex. One day Shanley asked the boy if he would like to have sex with other men. "I said, 'I don't know,"' said the man, who lives in Boston and filed a civil lawsuit against Shanley in April. "He said, 'Well, I think you should, because part of being a man is having a lot of sexual experiences."'*
>
> *Throughout the 1970s, Shanley allegedly took young men to a number of his residences, including the elegant Back Bay townhouse with its black French doors, a Vermont retreat called "Rivendell" ...*[336]

Why would a powerful pedophile priest name his expensive townhouse after the fantasy elf enclave from the *Lord of the Rings* trilogy? It was more than just a penchant for orcs and wizards.

> *John Ronald Reuel Tolkien ... was an English writer born in South Africa in 1892. ...*
>
> *Although his family was composed mostly of Protestants, Tolkien's mother Mabel converted to Catholicism following a trip to Birmingham, England, after the death of Tolkien's father.*
>
> *This decision caused Mabel's Protestant and Baptist family to withdraw her financial support.*
>
> *Such struggles contributed to her death four years later, but not before she had enrolled John and his brother Hilary Arthur Reuel Tolkien into St. Philip's Grammar School, associated with the Birmingham Oratory. There, they were acquitted to Father Francis Xavier Morgan, a Roman Catholic priest, who eventually took custody of Ronald and Hilary. Morgan was named after Francis Xavier, one of the founders of the Jesuits along with Ignatius Loyola and Peter Faber. The brothers considered the Oratory as their home, serving as Morgan's altar boys every morning.*

> *These events set Tolkien to be a devout Roman Catholic. ~ J.R.R. Tolkien & C.S. Lewis: Jesuit Imagineering,* JohnnyCirucci.com[337]

But Shanley didn't just rape boys in his expensive apartments and townhouses, he showed his powerful public connections by also taking them to a secluded cabin which was part of the Ponkapoag Outdoor Center, run by the YMCA.

Through it all, Father Paul Shanley was carefully protected and enabled by his superiors spanning three successive Cardinals.

> *Shanley was allowed to continue in the priesthood for years. When he moved to California to join the San Bernardino Diocese in 1990, he served for three years without restriction on his contact with children.*
>
> *... alleged abuse victim Gregory ... Ford ... said he repeatedly was raped by Shanley in the 1980s, also alleges that Boston Cardinal Bernard Law, who succeeded Medeiros, allowed the priest to remain as pastor at St. John the Evangelist Parish until 1989, despite knowledge of his behavior. ...*
>
> *The earliest document related to Shanley's alleged sex abuse dates to 1967: A priest at LaSalette Shrine in Attleboro, Mass., wrote a letter of concern to the archdiocese, relating allegations that Shanley had taken boys to a cabin and molested them.*
>
> *When Shanley moved to California in 1990 after a medical leave from Boston, the Rev. Robert J. Banks wrote to San Bernardino officials to say, "I can assure you that Father Shanley has no problem that would be concern to your diocese."*
>
> *In 1995, Shanley moved to New York to become assistant director of Leo House, which housed transients, clergy, people visiting the sick, students and travelers. He later was poised to become director of the organization, but was not given the job. ~ Fox News / AP*[338]

As Father Paul Shanley tagged out of serial child raping in Boston (and elsewhere), Father John Joseph Geoghan tagged in.

Once Geoghan was cleared by Rome as a sacrificial goat, the *Boston Globe* Spotlight Team could write about him.

They even received the help of a female Superior Court Judge — Constance Sweeney (also Roman Catholic) — who ordered records sealed years earlier to be released to the *Globe*.

Now the Boston paper could do the job it was supposed to and report (at least on Geoghan) that he was a monster who focused on the very young, especially if they were poor.

During his reign of terror, Geoghan had the full support of his superiors like Bernard Cardinal Law.[xxv]

> *Almost always, his victims were grammar school boys. One was just 4 years old.*
>
> *Then came last July's disclosure that Cardinal Bernard F. Law knew about Geoghan's problems in 1984, Law's first year in Boston, yet approved his transfer to St. Julia's parish in Weston. Wilson D. Rogers Jr., the cardinal's*[xxvi] *attorney, defended the move last summer, saying the archdiocese had medical assurances that each Geoghan reassignment was "appropriate and safe."*
>
> *But one of Law's bishops thought that the 1984 assignment of Geoghan to St. Julia's was so risky, he wrote the cardinal a letter in protest. And for good reason, the Spotlight Team found: The archdiocese already had substantial evidence of Geoghan's predatory sexual habits. That included his assertion in 1980 that his repeated abuse of seven boys in one extended family was not a "serious" problem, according to an archdiocesan record.*
>
> *The St. Julia's assignment proved disastrous.*[xxvii] *Geoghan was put in charge of three youth groups, including altar boys. In 1989, he was forced to go on sick leave after more complaints of sexual abuse, and spent months in two institutions that treat sexually abusive priests. Even so, the archdiocese returned him to St. Julia's, where Geoghan continued to abuse children for another three years.*[339]

It was a pattern that lasted *decades* —

> *Before Geoghan ever got to Weston in 1984, he had already been treated several times and hospitalized at least once for molesting boys. And he had been removed from at least two parishes for sexual abuse. In 1980, for instance, he was ordered out of St. Andrew's in Jamaica Plain after casually admitting he had molested the seven boys.*
>
> *In 1981, after a year's sick leave, Geoghan was dispatched to St. Brendan's in Dorchester, with little chance he would be placed under scrutiny...*
>
> *In September 1984, complaints that Geoghan had abused children at the Dorchester parish prompted Law to remove him. Two months later, the cardinal gave Geoghan a fresh start at St. Julia's.*
>
> *Law allowed Geoghan to stay in Weston for more than eight years before removing him from parish duty in 1993. But even that decision to recast Geoghan as a functionary at a home for retired priests did not prevent him from seeking out and molesting children, according to the multiple civil suits and criminal charges filed against the 66-year-old Geoghan.*[340]

Like a jackal stalking a herd, waiting for the sick or the young to stray into vulnerability, Geoghan fixated on easy prey.

> *From the Jamaica Plain case alone, the archdiocese's top officials were aware of Geoghan's attraction to young boys, and how he picked his victims: The affable Geoghan usually befriended Catholic mothers struggling to raise large families, often alone. His offers to help, often by taking the children for ice cream or praying with them at bedtime, were accepted without suspicion.*
>
> *That is how 12-year-old Patrick McSorley, who lived in a Hyde Park housing project, allegedly became a Geoghan victim in 1986 — two years after Geoghan's assignment to Weston.*
>
> *According to McSorley, Geoghan, who knew the family from St. Andrew's, learned of his father's suicide and dropped by to offer*

> *condolences to his mother, who is schizophrenic. The priest offered to buy Patrick ice cream.*
>
> *“I felt a little funny about it,” McSorley recalled in an interview. “I was 12 years old and he was an old man.”*
>
> *Riding home after getting ice cream, McSorley says, Geoghan consoled him. But then he patted his upper leg and slid his hand up toward his crotch. ...*
>
> *For years, McSorley has battled alcoholism and depression. And now, as the plaintiff in one of the lawsuits against Geoghan, McSorley is bitter. “To find out later that the Catholic Church knew he was a child molester — every day it bothers me more and more,” McSorley says.* [341]

It was the price Bostonians paid for having their city so overtly and completely owned by Rome and one they paid with their children.

> *No American diocese has faced a scandal of similar dimensions since 1992. That year, in the Fall River Diocese, more than 100 of former priest James Porter’s victims surfaced publicly with evidence that Porter’s superiors — including, in the 1960s, then Monsignor Medeiros — shifted him from one parish to another as parents learned of his compulsive abuse.*
>
> *Since 1997, the archdiocese has settled about 50 lawsuits against Geoghan, for more than $10 million — but with no confidential documents ever made public.*[342]

Sadly, nothing has changed since this story was published in 2002. Secular institutions remain firmly in Rome’s grip.

> *... Massachusetts law assured secrecy — and still does. For all the years that Geoghan was molesting children, clergymen were exempt from laws requiring most other caregivers to report incidents of sex abuse to police for possible prosecution. It was only after last summer’s revelations that the archdiocese dropped its long-standing*

> *opposition to legislation adding clergy to the list of "mandated reporters." But the legislation died in committee.*[343]

Like so many other predator pedophile priests, Geoghan came to the Catholic Church ready to rape little boys ... almost as if he was recruited for it.

> *There is no dispute that Geoghan abused children while he was at Blessed Sacrament in Saugus after his 1962 ordination. The archdiocese has recently settled claims on accusations that he did, and the church records obtained by the* ***Globe*** *note that Geoghan in 1995 admitted molesting four boys from the same family then.*[344]
>
> *In an April 1995 session with* [Massachusetts General Hospital psychiatrist Dr. Edward] *Messner, Geoghan said that even as a newly ordained priest he would "experience arousal when there was physical closeness" with children.*[345]

Another priest attempted to tell both superiors and secular authorities about Geoghan but was cowed into silence despite contradicting his own sworn affidavit.

He, too, remained free from prosecution.

> *A former priest, Anthony Benzevich, has said he alerted church higher-ups that Geoghan frequently took young boys to his rectory bedroom. In news reports after accusations against Geoghan surfaced publicly, Benzevich was also quoted as saying church officials threatened to reassign him as a missionary in South America for telling them about Geoghan. Benzevich told his story to Mitchell Garabedian, who represents nearly all of the plaintiffs in the civil suits against Geoghan and church officials, according to an affidavit Garabedian filed.*
>
> *But court records reviewed by the* ***Globe*** *show that when Benzevich appeared in Garabedian's office for a pre-trial deposition in October 2000, he was represented by Wilson Rogers 3d — the son of Law's principal attorney. Then, under oath, Benzevich changed his story. He said he was not certain that Geoghan had had boys in his room. And*

> *he said he could not recall notifying superiors about Geoghan’s behavior with children.*
>
> *In a recent interview with the **Globe**, Benzevich said he does indeed remember Geoghan taking boys to his room. He said Geoghan often sought to wrestle with young boys — and liked to dress them in priest’s attire. But he repeated his sworn assertion that he does not recall notifying his superiors.*
>
> *Before his deposition, Benzevich said, Wilson Rogers 3d approached him, told him the church was trying to protect him from being named as a defendant, and offered to represent him. His earlier statements to reporters, Benzevich said, had been misconstrued.*[346]

Most shocking were the Catholic parents who discovered the monster abusing their children and meekly complained to “Church” superiors.

It was a story that repeated again and again.

> *The pending lawsuits include accusations that Geoghan again abused young boys from several families in his next parish, St. Paul’s in Hingham, between 1967 and 1974. One of his alleged victims, Anthony Muzzi Jr., said in an interview last week that in addition to his own abuse, his uncle caught Geoghan abusing his son. The uncle ordered Geoghan to leave his house, and complained to the priest’s superiors at St. Paul’s. ...*
>
> *During his assignment in Hingham, Geoghan found victims far afield, befriending Joanne Mueller, a single mother of four boys who lived in Melrose. There too, according to depositions, the priest became a regular visitor, a spiritual counselor to Mueller and a helpmate to her boys, who were between 5 and 12.*
>
> *One night, she testified, her second youngest son came to her, insisting that she keep Geoghan away from him. “I don’t want him doing that to my wee-wee, touching my wee-wee ...” Mueller recalled the boy saying.*
>
> *Mueller, according to her deposition, summoned her three other sons and learned that Geoghan, while purporting to be taking them out for*

> *ice cream, helping them with their baths, and reading them bedtime stories, had been raping them orally and anally. Also, Mueller said, Geoghan was insisting they tell no one. "We couldn't tell you because Father said it was a confessional," she said one of her sons told her.*
>
> *Mueller testified that she immediately took the boys to see Rev. Paul E. Miceli, a parish priest at St. Mary's in Melrose who knew both Geoghan and her family.*[347]

The behavior by parents to trust officials in the Catholic Church rather than law enforcement was and is criminal collusion; aiding and abetting the sexual abuse of their own children.

The *Globe* attempted to soften this behavior by calling it "unwitting facilitation" but it was, at best, mental instability equivalent to a cult mentality and at worst, criminal.

> *If Mueller had unwittingly facilitated Geoghan's access to the children in her home in Melrose, the same role was played by Maryetta Dussourd at the priest's next stop: St. Andrew's, in the Forest Hills section of Jamaica Plain, where he served from 1974 to 1980.*
>
> *Dussourd was rearing her own four children — three boys and a girl — as well as her niece's four boys. In her hardscrabble neighborhood, she said in an interview, she hoped there was a priest the children could look up to. Then she met Geoghan, who oversaw altar boys and Boy Scouts at the parish.*

— Seven boys under the care of one woman; Geoghan must've thought he hit the Devil's jackpot. Also, we again see secular agencies giving predatory priests access to children outside their domains and, again, the Boys Scouts are involved. —

> *Geoghan, she recalled bitterly, was eager to help. Before long, he was visiting her apartment almost every evening — for nearly two years. He routinely took the seven boys out for ice cream and put them to sleep at night.*
>
> *But all that time, Geoghan regularly molested the seven boys in their bedrooms, Dussourd said. In some cases, he performed oral sex on*

> *them, according to court documents. Other times, he fondled their genitals or forced them to fondle his — occasionally as he prayed.*

— There can be no other conclusion but that the Roman Catholic priest
(thoroughly enabled by his superiors, fully aware of his lust
to violate children) was praying to Satan as he did so. —

> *A 1994 Archdiocesan memorandum, labeled "personal and confidential," said Geoghan would stay in the Dussourd home "even when he was on retreat because he missed the children so much. He 'would touch them while they were sleeping and waken them by playing with their penises.'"*
>
> *Dussourd discovered what was happening after the children finally told her sister, Margaret Gallant. Horrified, Dussourd complained to the Rev. John E. Thomas, the pastor of St. Thomas Aquinas, a nearby parish, according to court documents and accounts by Dussourd and a church official who asked that he not be identified.*[348]

Guardians who aid the violation of children in their care should be at least institutionalized, if not receive a criminal penalty. It would be no different from a day care worker who allowed a serial child rapist to enter their facility like a wolf breaking into a sheep pen.

We'll expose that in Chapter 19.

The shuffling of Geoghan from parish to parish was validated by corrupt medical personnel who certified him "safe".

> *... court documents that include Geoghan's psychiatric records contain starkly contradictory assessments of his danger to children from different therapists. He received at least four clean bills of health between 1980 and 1990, a period when the Archdiocese of Boston assigned him three times to parishes despite his record of abuse; but prompted declarations that he was an incurable pedophile after he became a public embarrassment to the archdiocese in the mid-1990s. ~ Boston Globe*[349]

To further insure monsters like Geoghan were able to successfully violate children in families completely unaware of his nature, Cardinal Law and his underlings used mechanisms like “sick leave” to allow furor from his previous crimes to die down before sending him to the next virgin pastures.

> *Geoghan spent the following year on sick leave, under treatment for his compulsion, but living with family in West Roxbury. In February 1981, he was sent to his fifth parish, St. Brendan’s.*
>
> *Almost immediately, Geoghan was working with First Communicants, befriending young children and their parents, even taking some boys to his family’s summer home in Scituate, where — parents say they later discovered — he sexually abused the youths. ...*
>
> *Despite his record, Geoghan was assigned to St. Julia’s. And in his first two years, he was in charge of altar boys, religious education for public school youngsters and a youth group, according to the church’s annual directories. ~ Boston Globe*[350]

For Bostonians, the net result of decades of abuse by predator pedophile priest after predator pedophile priest — all carefully enabled by superiors and kept untouched by corrupt cops, prosecutors and judges — was generational family victims from overlapping reigns of serial rapists.

> *The civil and criminal allegations Geoghan faces in Middlesex and Suffolk counties suggest that he allegedly abused at least 30 more boys after Law sent him to Weston in 1984 — both before and after the half year’s sick leave in 1989.*
>
> *After Geoghan’s 1989 return to St. Julia’s, it was another 38 months before Law took him out of the parish. Three years later, Geoghan was still seeking out victims, allegedly including an altar boy donning vestments for a christening ceremony, according to the criminal charges.*
>
> *The shuttling of Geoghan from one parish to another created a devastating coincidence for one family. One boy he allegedly molested is the son of a man who had been among the many sexually abused by Porter during the 1960s in the Fall River Diocese, according to Roderick MacLeish Jr., the attorney who represented the man and 100 other Porter victims.*[351]

After forty years of raping children, Geoghan was targeted for sacrifice to serve “the greater good” of the Church and her minions.

The fact that he was defrocked in 1998 before either his first criminal court appearance or focus on his misdeeds by the *Boston Globe* (all in 2002) is definitive. Geoghan had been selected for the psychological operation that Boston’s secular institutions were really doing their jobs.

Interestingly, the sacrifice of Geoghan didn’t end there. As if “tying up loose ends”, Geoghan was placed in a cell with Joseph L. Druce (born Darrin Ernest Smiledge).

Druce had been sent to prison for murdering a man who attempted to sexually violate him after the man picked Druce up hitchhiking.[xxviii] Within a year of Geoghan’s conviction, Druce had strangled and stomped him to death.

> *The press raised questions about prison officials’ judgment in placing these two men in the same unit for protective custody. In addition, they had been warned by an inmate that Druce had something planned against Geoghan.[11] ~ Wikipedia*[352]

Did Geoghan somehow betray his masters? Was he a liability that needed to be dealt with? — Or was he just another ritual sacrifice?

Prison surveillance video of the murder was “mysteriously” released and uploaded to YouTube.[xxix]

> *A video, which shows correction officers trying to open Geoghan's prison door, which Druce had wedged shut when he attacked the former priest, was released on YouTube in June 2007.[12][13] Officials claim not to know how the video, recorded by the prison surveillance systems, was made public.*[353]

To add insult to the injuries of the victims (and as proof that nothing has changed) Geoghan’s single conviction of “fondling a boy’s buttocks in a pool” was erased by the Massachusetts State Appeals Court. Corrupt secular officials still bow to Rome.

> *The Appeals Court issued its ruling after Geoghan's lawyer filed a death certificate this month and asked the court to dismiss his conviction. Prosecutors in Middlesex County, where Geoghan was convicted, did not oppose the motion.*
>
> *The three justices who ruled on the case — James McHugh, David A. Mills, and Mark V. Green — said little about Geoghan in their short opinion that was entered Sept. 17. They noted that they were following the direction of the Supreme Judicial Court and that vacating the conviction is "customary practice of the courts in this Commonwealth under such circumstances."*
>
> — Did you know "vacating" criminal convictions just because the criminal died was "customary practice"? —
>
> *Geoghan was convicted in January 2002 of indecent assault and battery for fondling the buttocks of a 10-year-boy in a public swimming pool. He was sentenced to serve six years of a nine- to 10-year prison sentence.*
>
> *Although Geoghan had been accused of molesting nearly 150 children, the Middlesex case was the lone case that went to trial. ...*
>
> *For alleged victims of Geoghan, his 2002 conviction was a symbol that the legal system was finally holding him accountable for his actions. ~ Boston Globe*[354]

If Geoghan's single conviction for "fondling a boy's buttocks in a pool" (verses decades of *raping* over *one hundred and fifty* children) was a "symbol" that cops, prosecutors and judges actually did their jobs then the overturning of that single conviction was the crushing reality that they do not: ***Rome*** controls them all, and not just in Boston.

But Geoghan was simply the weapon. The malignant authority who repeatedly aimed him at the unsuspecting families of Massachusetts was Bernard Cardinal Law.

A year after Geoghan's death in 2003, Law skipped town. He was granted a posh "retirement" in Rome after a job well done. Upon his arrival in Rome, he was given the honor of presiding as "Archpriest of the Basilica of St.

Mary Major” and invited to serve upon a number of important boards including the Pontifical Council for the Family.

He certainly seemed qualified.

> ... *Law* [has been] *a frequent presence at all major Vatican ceremonial and diplomatic events, a lifestyle that galled many abuse victims who have long insisted that the Vatican crack down on bishops who transfer abusive priests rather than report them to police. ~ Associated Press*[355]

Law has been thought so highly of in Rome that he was appointed to help select other Catholic leaders who would follow in his footsteps.

> *Law remains a member of a half a dozen important Vatican congregations, including the office that helps the pope select bishops.* [356]

A little over a decade past Geoghan’s sacrifice, the propaganda that secular institutions are really doing their job got a further boost from Hollywood. In 2015, a major motion picture spotlighted the heroic work of Marty Baron and his intrepid “deep research” Spotlight team titled *Spotlight*.

The movie boasted major talents in casting; Mark Ruffalo as Michael Rezendes, Michael Keaton as Walter “Robby” Robinson, Rachel McAdams as Sacha Pfeiffer, Liev Schreiber as Marty Baron, John Slattery as Ben Bradlee, Jr., Brian d´Arcy James as Matt Carroll and Stanley Tucci as attorney Mitchell Garabedian.

Like the Spotlight team, the film was made by Jesuit-trained Roman Catholics such as writer / director Tom McCarthy (Catholic) and producer Blye Pagon Faust (Jesuit-educated at Santa Clara).

One year later *Spotlight* won the 2016 Academy Award for “Best Picture”.

In the film, the audience is warned by Stanley Tucci, as attorney Mitchell Garabedian, that the Catholic Church “thinks in terms of centuries.” An organization with that mentality isn’t above carefully planning the sacrifice of a pawn to validate bishops and knights.

After his work saving the reputation of the *Boston Globe* as a “watchdog of the people”, Marty Baron was given Executive Editor at the *Washington Post*; a paper which later granted accused pedophile John Podesta his own column.[357]

As both Hollywood and media congratulated the *Globe* for spotlighting a pedophile priest (dead for 12 years by then), Marty Baron crowed from the *Post* in February of 2016, *I’m In “Spotlight”, But It’s Not Really About Me. It’s About The Power Of Journalism*.

In the column Baron gave himself, he effused that the movie’s portrayal of the way “journalism” does its job was “stunningly accurate!”

> *It was not until the premiere at the Toronto International Film Festival on Sept. 14, 2015, at the immense Princess of Wales Theatre that I saw “Spotlight” on a big screen, along with 2,000 others.*
>
> *The movie had a powerful effect. The* **Los Angeles Times** *noted that five days into the Toronto festival, “Spotlight” stood “as the only movie to generate applause during the film and afterward, when the credits roll.” The audience applauded, too, as Tom called the actors to the stage. And then he called the journalists to the stage, one by one. And something happened that’s rare for journalists: We received a protracted standing ovation.*[358]

Mission accomplished. Now everyone go back to sleep.

Chapter 9

Helter Skelter

MANSON, Charles Milles
CII 966 856

9 August 1969: *Charles Manson's followers Charles Watson, Susan Atkins, Linda Kasabian, and Patricia Krenwinkel enter the home of Terry Melcher and kill everyone they find. They slaughtered actress Sharon Tate, who was living there at the time, Jay Sebring, Abigail Folger, Wojciech Frykowski, and Steven Parent. They were caught, tried, found guilty and given the death sentence but the sentences were automatically commuted to life in prison when California abolished capital punishment in 1972.*

One of the most notorious boogeymen and cult leaders of all time has been Charles Milles Maddox, better known to the American public as "Charles Manson".

Was Manson just a wayward psychotic or was he a smart weapon of chaos carefully crafted by the Devil's Simulation and his Roman caretakers?

He received the perfect start as the bastard son of a 16 year old teenager, Kathleen Maddox, on 12 November 1934. He apparently wasn't wanted as the original entry for him from the General Hospital in Cincinnati, Ohio was "No Name Maddox".[359]

The callousness didn’t end there.

> *According to Manson’s family, Kathleen traded Charles for a pitcher of beer shortly after he was born.*
>
> *When he was still an infant, Kathleen took her son to a restaurant and had him resting on her lap when she sparked up a conversation with the waitress. The waitress was eager to become a mother herself, and thinking that baby Manson was cute, she joked that she’d buy him from Kathleen.*
>
> *“A pitcher of beer and he’s yours,” was Kathleen’s reply. The waitress probably thought she was joking, but she brought Kathleen an extra pitcher anyway. What she didn’t expect was that as soon as Kathleen finished her beer, she sneaked out of the restaurant — and left Charles behind.*
>
> *Manson only made his way back home because his uncle found out what had happened. He tracked down the waitress a few days later and got the boy back to his mother.*
>
> *When Charles Manson was five years old, his mother was sent to jail. She and a friend had met a stranger named Frank Martin, who took them out for drinks. Kathleen decided that Martin had “too much money for one man” and called her brother, Luther, to help him rob him.*
>
> *She talked Martin into driving her, her friend, and Luther to a hotel. When they made it out of town, Luther made Martin stop and get out of his car. Luther then held a ketchup bottle filled with salt to Martin’s back and claimed he had a gun. Martin saw through the lie, but Luther just beat him in the head with bottle and took his money anyway.*
>
> *The group escaped with $27 and were arrested shortly after. Kathleen was sentenced to five years in jail, and Charles Manson was sent to live with his aunt.* ~ Chaostrophic.com[360]

Maddox was paroled and returned to retrieve her son. She then sought to enter him into a foster home but none were available.

It was here that the State intervened and insured the vulnerable boy was placed into the Devil's Simulation. A "secular" Indiana court put Manson in the Gibault School for Boys in Terre Haute: a Roman Catholic orphanage.

> *Conceived in 1909 by the Indiana Knights of Columbus, and named for Fr. Pierre Gibault, the Gibault School for Boys was dedicated on October 9, 1921, in Terre Haute, IN. The first director of the school was Rev. Michael Gorman.*
>
> *Quickly exceeding its original capacity of 25 boys, two new halls were added: Chartrand Hall was completed in 1922, and Aldering Hall in 1926. The staff was expanded in 1934, and administration of the school turned over to the Brothers of Holy Cross from Notre Dame, IN. The first Holy Cross era director was Rupert Poudrier, and under his administration, the school was expanded to allow boys from every midwestern state.*
>
> *Charles Manson attended this school at one time. William Heirens also attended the school. ~ Wikipedia*[361]

Not one, but *two* notorious criminals were birthed at this Catholic institution.

> *William George Heirens (1928 – 2012) was a convicted American serial killer... Heirens was called the Lipstick Killer after a notorious message scrawled in lipstick at a crime scene. At the time of his death, Heirens was reputedly Chicago's longest-serving prisoner, having spent 65 years in prison.*[2] *...*
>
> — That's "justice" in Catholic-controlled Illinois. —
>
> *At 13 years of age, Heirens was arrested for carrying a loaded gun. A subsequent search of the Heirens's home discovered a number of stolen weapons hidden in an unused storage shed on the roof of a nearby building along with furs, suits, cameras, radios and jewelry he had stolen. Heirens admitted to 11 burglaries and was sent to the Gibault School for wayward boys for several months.*[5]

> *Not long after his release, Heirens was again arrested for burglary. This time, he was sentenced to three years at the St. Bede Academy, operated by Benedictine Monks. During his time at the school, Heirens stood out as an exceptional student... ~ Wikipedia*[362]

Americans have no idea that their “secular” government turns wayward orphans over to Roman Catholic institutions where they are abused and warped into weapons to be used against them.[xxx]

The Knights of Columbus are far more powerful than their public relations present them.

> *The Knights themselves, it may be truthfully said, are not in the organization entirely for the sake of their own health, or even for the glory of the Church, inasmuch as there are many ambitious men among their leaders, and some that have little or no use for the Church. However, they work in collusion with the Hierarchy, and are heart and soul in politics.*
>
> *This fact is well known to political machines and non-Catholic politicians, whose candidates must receive the approval of Rome and the Knights before they dare nominate them for either dog pound or presidency.*
>
> *Knights of Columbus have assured me that their organization, with the Church of Rome, controls the Municipal, State and Federal Government, and also influences the business interests throughout the country. They have also assured me within the past few years that it is almost impossible for a man to secure a position or promotion in any business house or corporation, if a Knight of Columbus be a competitor.* ~ Crowley[363]

Notable Knights include Alfred E. Smith.

> *In 1928, the two men on the ballot for president were the Democrat Governor of New York, Alfred E. Smith and the Republican Secretary of Commerce Herbert Hoover. The issue of Smith’s Catholic religion came up in an exchange between himself and lawyer Charles Marshall via editorials printed in Atlantic Monthly magazine.*

> *Marshall warned that when torn between the best interests of America and the best interests of the Church, devout Catholics were always at risk of choosing Rome over the Land of the Free. ...*
>
> *Smith lost the election but was soon immortalized in an annual dinner hosted by the Church that requires the two American finalists for the presidency to appear before one of the most powerful Papal emissaries in the world — the Cardinal of the Archdiocese of New York — and make him laugh.*
>
> *Today's dinners are presided over by the aristocratic descendent of the NY Governor, Alfred E. Smith IV.*
>
> *The dinners continue even in off election years where luminaries from all walks show homage to Rome, from the director of the FBI, to the Chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff, to the Secretary of State. ~ Illuminati Unmasked*[364]

Another notable Knight is John Ellis "Jeb" Bush (Senior), the former Governor of Florida.

Luciferian Elites like the Bush crime family are chosen to rule over us which is how the Connecticut Bushs become Governors in Texas and Florida or father and son Bushs become Presidents.

Americans excited over "elections" is a cruel joke.

"Jeb" Bush may seem an unusual convert from his "Episcopal" family but he's a very comfortable fit for Rome, especially given that maternal grandfather George Herbert Walker (namesake to multiple Bushs) was also Roman Catholic. He was educated by the Jesuits at Stonyhurst boarding school in "Anglican" Lancashire, England.

In fact, "Jeb" is quite the Catholic king-maker, having gone to Mass at St. Patrick's in NYC courtesy of his friend Timothy Cardinal Dolan. He was also part of the American delegation to Rome at the installing of Joseph Cardinal Ratzinger upon his ascendency to become Pope Benedict XVI in 2005. He then was given a personal audience.

His political policies seem mixed for a supposed “Conservative” Catholic but not for an agent of the Leftist Roman insurgency.

Like everyone else in American politics (Catholic or otherwise), “Jeb” pushes treasonously-open borders to continue the flood of Catholic aliens from the south but when it comes to “life”, Bush seems inept.

> *Many of his priorities during his two terms as governor of Florida aligned with those of the Catholic Church — including his extraordinary, and unsuccessful, effort to force a hospital to keep Terri Schiavo on life support, as well as less well-known, and also unsuccessful, efforts to appoint a guardian for the fetus of a developmentally disabled rape victim and to prevent a 13-year-old girl from having an abortion. ~ NY Times*[365]

Not sure how one’s unsuccessful attempts at keeping your own government from starving and dehydrating a mentally aware[366] handicapped woman can also be “extraordinary” but who are we to argue with the wordsmithing of the Old Gray Lady?

The *Times* did note, however, in that very same paragraph that “Jeb” was able to deliver on something far more important to Pro-Lifers; in 1999 he signed into availability a “Choose Life” license plate for Florida’s illegal alien drivers.[367]

Young Charlie

Not surprisingly, young Charlie Manson didn’t care for the care of the brutal priests and Knights at Gibault.

> *...a strict school where punishment for even the tiniest infraction included beatings by either a wooden paddle or a leather strap. ~ The Weekly View*[368]

After 10 months he escaped and returned to his mother but she rejected him.[369]

Manson then committed a string of robberies for the money to live on but was eventually caught.

He was placed at the Plainfield Juvenile Correctional Facility, also known as the Indiana Boys School (IBS). Under “government protection” he was tortured and molested.

It was during his “training” that he came to the attention of a Catholic priest at the “secular” Indiana facility.

> *During this time, he was frequently detained at the Indiana Boys’ School in nearby Plainfield. It’s been speculated that it was at the Indiana School for Boys that 5 foot tall Charles Manson was beaten and raped repeatedly for over three years. During one of these detentions, young Manson was “discovered” by a local priest, Rev. George Powers. “This particular boy seemed very lonesome, just craving attention and affection,” recalled Father Powers, now an instructor at the New York Theological Seminary. “He looked like an innocent altar boy, and he was so ashamed of his mother.”*
>
> *Father Powers arranged for Manson to be sent to the famous Father Flanagan’s Boys Town near Omaha, Nebraska. The Indianapolis News ran a front page story on March 7, 1949 headlined “Dream Comes True for Lad; He’s Going to Boys Town.” It characterized 14-year-old Manson as a “dead end kid” who was getting a second chance by being sent to the “last chance” haven for wayward boys. “He won everybody over,” the priest said. “The juvenile court judge was completely taken with his personality. He had ability beyond his years to present himself; he was a beautiful kid for his age.” ~ The Weekly View*[370]

Few Americans understand the power held by Roman Catholic priests who walk seamlessly in and out of America’s “secular” institutions.

Finding a good-looking boy who had been raped and brutalized at the Indiana Boys School, Father Powers exerted his influence upon “secular government” and had him moved to Boys Town for further ... “training”.

> *“Manson arrived at Boys Town in 1949 after begging Indianapolis priests and authorities for a chance to succeed in life,” said McDowell. “He had just turned 14 years old and was a kid who*

> *experienced a childhood no one should endure." ~ Omaha Lifestyles Magazine*[371]

"Begging priests and authorities"? Remember, this is not Medieval France, Spain or Italy. This is "secular" America, 1949, sixty-six years before Jesuit Pope Francis was invited by two Jesuit-trained House Speakers (Nancy Pelosi, "Democrat" and John Boehner, "Republican") to address a joint session of Congress in September of 2015.

Manson's internment at Boys Town has been termed a "mystery"[372] with "scarce details".[373]

To help matters, author Lawson McDowell spent extensive time interviewing Manson in prison to present the facts to the public...liberally mixed with fabrications in his 2013 book *Before He Became a Monster: A Story of Charles Manson's Time at Father Flanagan's Boys Town*.

> *McDowell's book tells the story of how Manson came to stay at Boys Town and what happened during his time there, blending real and imagined events. The episode is shrouded in uncertainty, and Manson himself gave cryptic answers to some of McDowell's questions.*
>
> *What is certain is that Manson's admittance to Boys Town was meant to turn his life around. ~ Omaha World-Herald*[374]

When queried, McDowell responded that one needed to read his truth mixed with lies "tell-all book" to get...the "truth".

> *So, what went wrong at Boys Town? McDowell wouldn't say. In fact, his response was, "No spoilers today." ~ Omaha Lifestyles*[375]

“Secular, America”: Jesuit Father Edmund Walsh, namesake of the Georgetown School of Foreign Service, which boasts endless numbers of the world’s elite alumni from judges to generals, accompanies General Douglas MacArthur after helping guide him in his reconstruction of post-war Japan (Tokyo, 1948). The Jesuits had a keen interest in seeing the “heretic Japanese” dealt with. Considering the priests enemy agents, insurgents and assassins (all true), Tokugawa Shoguns Hideyoshi and Ieyasu began restricting and finally expelling them from 1587 to 1614. Three centuries later, the Jesuits would exact their terrible revenge through their handmaids in the United States military culminating in a devastating pair of attacks on Hiroshima and Nagasaki (the port they were finally ejected from in the 17th century); all carefully co-ordinated in Japan by future Jesuit Superior General Pedro Arupe.[376] **By “coincidence”, both of the Boeing B-29 “Superfortress” bombers involved in the assault (“Enola Gay” and “Bockscar”) were made special at the Martin plant at Offutt Air Force base in Omaha.**[377][xxxi] **Wikimedia Commons** What is for certain is that both Boys Town and the *Omaha World-Herald* would be implicated in child sex slavery of satanic proportions just a decade later. More on that in Chapter 21.

Whatever happened at Boys Town, it was enough to drive Manson to escape just a few days after his internment.

Despite the fact that McDowell was on the team —

So, how did the folks at Boys Town respond to McDowell’s questions?

> *"…When they saw I was not out to harm them or their great institution, most were very cooperative," he said. "On balance, I was very impressed with Boys Town." ~ Omaha Lifestyles*[378]

— he still wasn't allow to see Manson's files. Only there a few days, yet Manson's Boys Town dossier was forbidden to a trusted author?

Does it contain meticulous records of Manson's development through multiple Catholic and government institutions?

If the goal was to bring Charles Manson into the Devil's Simulation by subjecting him to the mental virus of sexual abuse it worked flawlessly.

> *In what would be his last act of violence before the Hollywood murder spree that would make him infamous, while behind bars, Manson sodomized a young boy while holding a knife to his throat. ~ The Weekly View*[379]

His "training" complete, things moved fast. The coming tragedy was set into play by willing members of government who allowed the dangerous convict to relocate to America's center stage.

> *On his release day, March 21, 1967, Manson received permission to move to San Francisco, where, with the help of a prison acquaintance, he moved into an apartment in Berkeley. In prison, bank robber Alvin Karpis had taught him to play the steel guitar. Now, living mostly by panhandling, he soon got to know Mary Brunner, a 23-year-old graduate of the University of Wisconsin – Madison. Brunner was working as a library assistant at University of California, Berkeley, and Manson moved in with her. According to a second-hand account, he overcame her resistance to his bringing other women in to live with them. Before long, they were sharing Brunner's residence with 18 other women. ~ Wikipedia*[380]

His prosecutor and biographer (an odd combination unless one has been steered by the Machine to be a gatekeeper), Vincent Bugliosi, seemed in his research to miss completely Manson's overwhelming connections to Catholicism. Instead, Bugliosi claimed Manson was influenced by obscure sources like Scientology and the Process Church.

> *Manson established himself as a guru in San Francisco's Haight-Ashbury, which during 1967's "Summer of Love" was emerging as the signature hippie locale. Vincent Bugliosi said in his book* ***Helter Skelter*** *that Manson appeared to have borrowed philosophically from the Process Church, whose members believed Satan would become reconciled to Christ, and they would come together at the end of the world to judge humanity. Expounding a philosophy that included some of the Scientology he had studied in prison,[1]:163–164 he soon had the first of his groups of followers, which have been called the Manson Family, most of them female.[1]:137–146* ~ (user-edited) *Wikipedia*[381]

Satan being redeemed is a central Luciferian fantasy, and an ancient myth.

The "Process Church of the Final Judgement" was founded in London in the early 1960s by former Scientologists, Mary and Robert DeGrimston.

Scientology was founded by author Lafayette Ronald Hubbard who received his Luciferian training with "rocket engineer" John Whiteside "Jack" Parsons in occultist and MI5 operative Aleister Crowley's Californian branch of the Ordo Templi Orientis ("O.T.O.").[xxxii]

Hubbard "assisted" Parsons with perverse sexual rituals designed to usher in the "Æon of Horus" via the conception of the "magick [*sic*] child". This was Crowley's "Babalon [*sic*] Working". Afterward, Hubbard absconded with Parsons' life savings, a little over $20,000. He also took Parsons' teenage girlfriend Sara Northrup who was the sister of his first wife Helen.

"Charlie's Girls"

One of "Charlie's Girls" (along with Lynette Fromme and Mary Brunner) was Patricia Dianne Krenwinkel.[xxxiii]

Krenwinkel quickly became the matron of the "Manson Family", providing care to the several illegitimate children birthed in the group and giving Manson his most emphatic support.

Krenwinkel has deep Catholic roots.

> *For a time she taught Catechism (Roman Catholic religious instruction) and considered becoming a nun. She decided to attend the*

> *Jesuit college, Spring Hill, in Mobile, Alabama. ~ Wikipedia*[382]

It was Krenwinkel who, along with fellow “Family” member Ella Bailey, managed to get themselves into the Los Angeles home of Beach Boys founding member and drummer, Dennis Wilson. They brought along Manson and the rest of the “Family” in short order.

> *Wilson paid for studio time to record songs written and performed by Manson. Wilson introduced Manson to entertainment business acquaintances. These included Gregg Jakobson, Terry Melcher and Rudi Altobelli (the last of whom owned a house he would soon rent to actress Sharon Tate and her husband, director Roman Polanski).* [1]:250–253 *Jakobson, who was impressed by “the whole Charlie Manson package” of artist/lifestylist/philosopher, also paid to record Manson material. ~ Wikipedia*[383],[xxxiv]

Patricia Krenwinkel (not Charles Manson) personally participated in the events of August 9th, 1969.

For the Manson trial and subsequent historical record, Vincent Bugliosi would have us believe that it was simply a twisted Manson whim that sent the “Family” to the property of Terry Melcher and murder everyone they found.

They brutally killed Jay Sebring, Abigail Folger, Wojciech Frykowski and Steven Parent.

But perhaps the most well-known victim was actress Sharon Tate, the wife of Director Rajmund Roman Thierry Polański.

Polanski is a Polish Jew who, like so many other Jews in prominent positions (especially Hollywood), has Roman roots.

Polanski’s mother was raised Roman Catholic in Russia, and the “Jewish / agnostic” Director was, himself, thoroughly trained in Romanism.

> *After being introduced to Catholicism primarily by a Catholic family that he lived with while hiding from the Nazis, Roman Polanski became a religious Catholic when he was about 10 years old. He*

> *staunchly identified himself as Catholic until he was fifteen years old.*
> ~ Adherents.com[384]

It’s also interesting to note that Polanski didn’t pick another Jew for his affections: Sharon Tate was also Roman Catholic.[385] Despite her “liberated” Hollywood lifestyle it was her Catholicism that urged her to press Polanski to legitimize their new family in marriage.

Ironically, this pressure lead to her murder.

Tate was on the eve of giving birth to their first child and simultaneously working on the French / Italian movie *Twelve Plus One*. It was the night before her return trip to Rome.

Apparently lost to prosecutor Bugliosi was the fact that both Sharon Tate and her child were unwanted by Roman Polanski.

> *Just as Sharon made a conscious decision to pursue her career again, the unexpected happened: she became pregnant. She had made no secret of the fact that she wanted a baby, but Roman, reluctant even to commit to marriage, was hardly in the mood to consider starting a family. He had previously told Sharon. according to one source, that he would never have a child. ...*
>
> *Sharon had been using an IUD, installed in France a year earlier. Her doctor was mystified as to how the pregnancy occured.*[6] *Although she knew of the pregnancy by the middle of February, Sharon did not tell Roman. Their marriage, just a year old, was already in deep trouble, an unsettling mixture of happiness and strained arguments. Uncertain about her own future, she still clung to the belief that fatherhood might change Roman’s philandering ways. Yet she was also aware of his opposition to a baby. Throughout the three years of their relationship. Sharon had always acquiesced to Roman’s wishes, and he had never shown himself to be particularly sensitive to her own desires. Sharon was also aware of her own weaknesses. In the past, Roman had easily managed to influence her in matters professional and personal. She had always wanted a strong, committed marriage, and it is a measure of his power over her that Sharon had begun to parrot Roman’s views*

> *about an open relationship, even though she herself was opposed to such an arrangement. Now she apparently feared he might coerce her into having an abortion, and friends later insisted that she deliberately kept the news from her husband until such an option was too late.*[7] ~ King[386]

Polanski may even have convinced himself of the need to murder his unwanted wife and miracle child, having directed *Rosemary's Baby* just the previous year; a movie about a satanic cult conducting sex rituals to give rise to the Antichrist.

Within a decade, Polanski would be tried for drugging, raping and sodomizing 13-year-old[387] Samantha Gailey at the home of actor Jack Nicholson.

Polanski was well taken care of in court.

> *As a result of the plea bargain, Polanski pleaded guilty to the charge of "Unlawful Sexual Intercourse with a minor,"[115][116] and was ordered to undergo 90 days of psychiatric evaluation at California Institution for Men at Chino.[117] Upon release from prison after 42 days, Polanski agreed to the plea bargain, his penalty to be time served along with probation. ~ Wikipedia*[388]

However, something quite unexpected happened — Judge Laurence J. Rittenband had determined to ignore the plea bargain and apply a sentence which may have included up to 50 years of imprisonment.

Fortunately for Polanski, the sources that protected him were fully aware of Judge Rittenband's every move and forewarned him.

> *Polanski decided not to appear at his sentencing. He told his friend, director Dino De Laurentis* [actually spelled "De Laurentiis"], *"I've made up my mind. I'm getting out of here."[119] On the day before sentencing in 1978, Polanski left the country.[122] As a French citizen, he has been protected from extradition and has lived mostly in France since then.[123] ~ Wikipedia*[389]

De Laurentiis (who died in 2010 at aged 91) was not only a Roman Catholic but also a Roman — born and bred. Among his surviving family is granddaughter Giada De Laurentiis (wealthy Master Chef at the Food Channel) and second wife Martha (born Martha Schumacher), 35 years his junior. At 70 and 72 he sired two daughters by her.

In fact, De Laurentiis lived and died like a Pope.

> *It will be a long time before Hollywood sees another Roman Catholic funeral the likes of which Dino De Laurentiis received Monday.*
>
> *The legendary Italian producer, whose career encompassed everything from Fellini classics to* ***Serpico*** *to* ***King Kong*** [1976] *to* ***Blue Velvet****, was laid to rest after the ceremony at the Cathedral of Our Lady of the Angels in downtown Los Angeles. The Oscar winner died Thursday at age 91.*
>
> *The was a long list of Hollywood names filling the pews, including Bob Daly, Rob Friedman, Jeff Berg, Chris McGurk, Hawk Koch, Lou Pitt, Rick Nicita and Paula Wagner, Tom Pollock, Alan Ladd Jr., Sam Raimi, Maria Shriver and Gov. Arnold Schwarzenegger. ~ Hollywood Reporter*[390]

Was Charles Manson the patsy to a Hollywood / Roman Catholic cult sacrifice?

Even his “fact-mixed-with-fiction” biographer Lawson McDowell implied as much.

> *So, does McDowell believe there is a question about Manson’s guilt?*
>
> *“Perhaps, but to me, a bigger question is the fairness of the trial. We live in a nation where the rule of law is so important that we set people free if there is any reasonable doubt of guilt. Yet, in Manson’s case, we had a suspect who was denied his own witnesses, denied the right to cross-examine, and faced a single eyewitness against him, a girl who had been part of the actual murder party… America needed a demon to explain these unthinkable murders. Manson was the answer.”*

> *As for the conversations themselves, McDowell said that the two had to work at being congenial. McDowell had to suppress his own biases against Manson, while Manson had to overcome his distrust for outsiders and the fear of people trying to hurt him.*
>
> *"There are plenty of killers in prison who would bask in the notoriety of killing a celebrity like Manson," he said.*
>
> *As for Manson, he still maintains his innocence; has since the start according to McDowell.*
>
> *"Most people think he was convicted of murder, but that's not correct," he said. "Committing murder was never the question. He was convicted of conspiracy to commit murder."*
>
> *"Before He Became a Monster" was released earlier this month. McDowell said that readers will find it entertaining and upbeat with little gore while suggesting what might have gone terribly wrong at Boys Town.*
>
> *"For me," said McDowell, "the book was a mind-opening project that left me wondering: Has America's demon been telling the truth all along?" ~ Omaha Lifestyles*[391]

Los Angeles County District Attorney Vincent Bugliosi was placed on the map by his prosecution of Manson. He would ride his fame to become a "*New York Times* bestselling author".

In 2007, Bugliosi looked to further bury another patsy, Lee Harvey Oswald, with his book *Reclaiming History: The Assassination of President John F. Kennedy*. According to Bugliosi, Oswald did it.

The year after, Bugliosi would indict George W. Bush for the terrible crimes of the "Global War on Terror" with his book *The Prosecution of George W. Bush for Murder*.

Jesuit-trained CIA operatives are the true culprits of the heinous crimes of 9/11[392] and its aftermath. For instance, the inversely-named "Patriot Act" (written and ready in 2001) was crafted by Georgetown Law Professor and Roman Catholic Viet D. Dinh.[393]

Author Atticus Lish quoted Roman Catholic “Feminist” Camile Paglia in his praise for *Prosecution*, calling Bugliosi “*a classic example of a Jesuit, a monk packing a pistol*.”[394]

Rome has secretly ridden America’s military to untold crimes and atrocities and then used agents like Bugliosi to cover her tracks.

Bugliosi’s religious background has remained a mystery until his last book. Following in the footsteps of another Jesuit-trained “atheist”, François-Marie “Voltaire” Arouet, Bugliosi wrote *Divinity of Doubt: The God Question* in 2011, just 4 years before his death in 2015.

> *I grew up a Catholic, attending Assumption Hall, a Catholic school with nuns of the Benedictine order as teachers, through the eighth grade. And of course it was inculcated into one that God was all-good, all-powerful, and all-knowing. The conundrum which most of us have heard, that either God can prevent evil but chooses not to, which means he is not all-good, or he wishes to prevent evil but cannot, which means he is not all-powerful, was not something I, as a believer, concerned myself with in those early years. But something similar was troubling to me.*
>
> *The head of the Blessed Sacrament Church, which was associated with the school I attended, was a gray-haired eminence named Monsignor Limmer. The monsignor appeared ancient to us kids, and with his deep, baritone voice and dour expression, someone not only to look up to but fear. Though he lived in the back of the church, we sensed that he really came from some other place, some place where ordinary humans did not go. The good monsignor would visit our classroom for ten minutes or so once every week or two, and we listened in awed silence to his wisdom about God and Christ. One day when I was in the third or fourth grade, he was explaining that God was all-good, all-powerful, and all-knowing, and I asked him why (I had a yen for the why question even back then), if God was all-good, he would put people on this earth who he knew were going to end up in hell, burning throughout eternity. The monsignor proceeded to tell me it was a good question, but he had the answer. God gives all of us free will, the monsignor assured us, and when we come to the fork in the road where*

> *one path will lead us to heaven arid one to hell, we have a choice, and God is not responsible for what choice we make. Yes, I said, but if God is also all-knowing, he knows what path we're going to take before we take it. So, I said, I still didn't understand how God would put people on this earth who he already knew were going to end up in hell. The monsignor coughed nervously, noted it was the end of the hour, and said we'd talk about it some other time, a time that never came. No one in Christianity, to my knowledge, can answer that question.*
>
> *I even have trouble with the whole concept of prayer, in which literally billions of people throughout history have begged God for mercy. But since God is supposed to be all-good and merciful, why would we have to beg him to be what he supposedly already is? Most of those who believe in God also believe in the devil, who they feel is responsible for all the evil in the world. I'm going to sound laughable here, and it's nothing I'm recommending, since I don't believe in the devil, but logically speaking, shouldn't people be praying to the devil? One doesn't have to beg a good being to be good, one only has to ask a bad being to be good. No? Since the devil is the bad guy, isn't he the one we should begging for mercy? Yet the Jesus prayer, and informal personal ones, says: "Lord Jesus Christ, have mercy on me."*[395]

Unfortunately Mr. Bugliosi went on to receive his answer from the Source before we could tell him his question was non-sequitur. The fact that God has foreknowledge of the damnation of souls has nothing to do with His goodness. Creating human beings with guaranteed outcomes abrogates free will.

His second "conundrum" is even more Jesuitical than the first. Exactly what is he talking about? Generalized claims of "people begging for mercy" tell us nothing of substance. Each individual is answered according to their needs and their relationship with YHWH through Jesus Christ. No relationship with Jesus Christ, no answer. Simple.

We're not sure how Mr. Bugliosi fared after that but we're sure he was "begging" for himself with just as little response.

Helter Skelter

Even post his imprisonment, Charles Manson continues to be handled by Jesuit agents (who also conveniently make a buck off him) like his prison counselor Edward George. In 1999, George wrote *Taming the Beast: Charles Manson's Life Behind Bars*.

If Manson is a Roman patsy, it has been ordained by Roman agents that he never sees the light of day (or truth).

> [*Taming the Beast* is] *The latest entry in the canon of a true madman. George, a retired corrections officer who met Manson in 1975 at San Quentin, says up front that his Jesuit training led him to believe that the beast could indeed be tamed. His years of knowing Manson whom he frequently describes as devilish or demonic, ... as both George's narrative and the parole board hearing transcripts cited here make clear, Manson is as monstrously sick as ever.*
> ~ Kirkus[396]

Manson's apparent racism seems to be part of a far-deeper agenda; one that meshes quite well with the Luciferian / gnostic / Jesuit / Freemason tactic of "divide and conquer" by enflaming racial hatred. He even gave it a name; "Helter Skelter", taken from the Beatles song released just one year before the "Family" crime spree in 1969. It was published by the group on what is known as "The White Album" because it has no graphics or identification but is simply all white.

It was a stark contrast to the cover art of the album the year prior; *Sgt. Pepper's Lonely Hearts Club Band*. Besides the band members in brightly colored uniforms are some 57 other historical notables in wax or cardboard cut-outs including Aleister Crowley and Lewis Carroll.

Only one personality appears more than once; in fact *three* times.

— Child actress Shirley Temple.[397]

Chapter 10

Maskell: The *Real* Murdering Monster, Not Manson

3 January 1970: *The body of Roman Catholic nun Catherine Ann Cesnik is found in a garbage dump in Lansdowne, Maryland.*[xxxv]

It is no coincidence that America's Capitol (named after one of the seven hills of Rome) is found in the vicinity of the Vatican's key colony of Maryland — along with the major headquarters of coercive force in the United States from the Pentagon to the Nation Security Agency.

> *In 1534, Ignatius Loyola started his Jesuit order*[1161]*, later to be officially sanctioned by the "Holy See" in 1540.*
>
> *In 1634, Sir Cecilius Calvert, Lord Baltimore, commissioned the Catholic colony of Maryland in America for Rome and managed it from England.*[1162] *... ~ Illuminati Unmasked*[398]

> *If manipulation was easy in England, it was even easier outside her borders where the Jesuits were safe to operate unhindered by English law.*
>
> *One of the first colonies in America was granted to a newly-converted Roman Catholic named George Calvert, Lord Baltimore, by "Anglican" King Charles I. Calvert would pick a name for his acquisition that would have an immediate response from fellow Catholics: Mary-land. The capital would become "Baltimore".*
>
> *George Calvert passed on and left his work for Rome to his son, Cecilius, who wasted no time putting together two ships filled with*

> *Catholics and Jesuits; the Ark and the Dove. They were joined in America by the Carroll family, John, Daniel and Charles.*
>
> *They quickly got to work, insinuating their way into all of America's key institutions and events.*
>
> *Daniel Carroll was one of only 5 men to sign both the Articles of Confederation and the Constitution.*
>
> *At the time of the Revolution, the "Capitol" was firmly planted in Mary-land.*
>
> *The term "Capitol" is derived from the Temple of Jupiter on Capitoline — one of the seven hills of Rome.*
>
> > ***"Here is the mind which has wisdom: The seven heads are seven mountains on which the woman sits."*** ~ Revelation 17:9
>
> ~ *Secret History*[399]

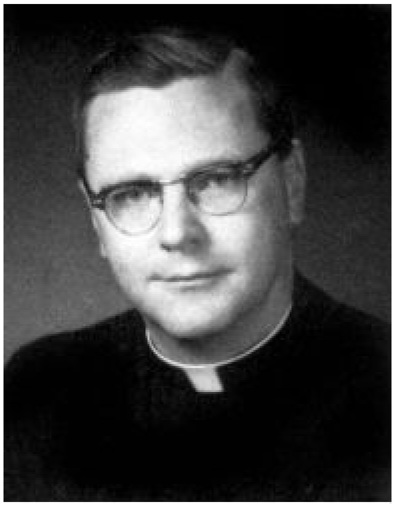

The newspapers, law enforcement, prosecutors and judges appeared to be all over the coincidentally-convenient murder of Roman Polanski's unwanted wife and child by a threat created in Roman Catholic institutions like Boys Town — Charles Manson. Meanwhile, a self-made predator was ruling unhindered on the other side of the country in the capital of Roman Catholic Maryland.

Father Anthony Joseph Maskell was the chaplain at Archbishop Francis Keough High School in Baltimore.

He was also a serial child rapist and complicit in at least one murder.

He preyed mostly upon teenage girls while at Keough but he was an indiscriminate animal who also sodomized boys, like one victim who admitted he was assaulted by Maskell while at a seminary summer camp in the 1950's.[400]

Fitting the profile of a predator, Father A. Joseph Maskell exploited his position of trust and respect to target the most vulnerable.

> *Keough was a traditional Catholic school, where students were required to wear knee-length plaid skirts and shirts buttoned all the way up to their necks. But it was hardly immune to the 1960s counterculture. Former Keough students said that in Maskell's office and in the nearby rectory, where he lived, the priest offered the girls a relaxed, open-minded environment where they could talk freely about sex and drugs, drink alcohol, smoke cigarettes on his red velour sofa and ask for help dealing with their traditional Catholic parents. At the peak of the sexual revolution, Maskell was well positioned to exploit the experimental and rebellious atmosphere of the late 1960s and early 1970s. In a confusing time, he offered an intoxicating cocktail of spiritual guidance, hypnosis, booze, pills and himself.*
>
> *Maskell was a charismatic young man in his late 20s when he started at Keough as chaplain in 1967, two years after it opened. Broad-shouldered, with light blue eyes, the Irish-descended priest also served as the school's psychological counselor. He later earned an advanced degree in psychology from the prestigious Johns Hopkins University.*
>
> *Former Keough students said Maskell used his charm, psychology training and moral authority to first disarm the young girls, then to manipulate them into sexual relationships. He targeted struggling or badly behaved students —* [Gemma] *Hoskins and* [Abbie] *Schaub, who got straight As, said he never bothered them — asking the girls if they were having problems at home, or if they had been sexually active with their boyfriends or used drugs. Sometimes the priest used repetitive phrases — "I only want what's best for you, just what's best for you," one woman recalled him saying — to coax them into talking.*

> [Teresa] *Lancaster, a soft-spoken mother of four with wispy blonde hair, said that when she was a junior in 1970, she went to Maskell's office to talk to him about some problems at home. Her parents had found a marijuana joint in her bag, she said, and they didn't approve of the long-haired boy she was dating. It was the middle of the school day, and Maskell invited her into his office and shut the door behind her. He then proceeded to strip her clothes off and forced her to sit on his lap, naked. He told her he was touching her in a "godly manner."*
> ...
>
> *Sometimes he would play Irish music while he was with her, "almost like it was a sick date," Lancaster said. ~ Huffington Post*[401]

As a loyal member of the Devil's Simulation, "Father" Maskell proceeded to rob his victims of both their innocence and their souls by associating their trauma with their Faith.

50 years later, the Roman Catholic-dominated internet movie streaming service "Netflix" premiered a documentary on what happened at Archbishop Keogh.

Motive is difficult to discern. Often Catholic-controlled media will sacrifice a pawn (especially one that's been dead for decades) in order to gain the perception that they are doing their jobs as journalists, reporters, editors, etc.

Director Ryan White is personally involved; he's Roman Catholic and comes from a large Catholic family.[402] In fact, he says that his aunt was a classmate of Maskell's chief victim, Jane Doe (Jean Wehner).[403] In an interview with *E! Live from the Red Carpet*, White made a believable case that he simply wants justice[404] (good luck).

Although Maskell (if he's critically referenced by news media at all) is usually painted as a "lone wolf" predator, he was extremely powerful and plugged in to city, state and national governments including the organizations that carry guns — police and military. He was Chaplain for the Baltimore City Police, Baltimore County Police, Maryland State Police and the Air National Guard.

His brother Thomas “Tommy” Maskell was a Baltimore city police officer.

Victim Jean Wehner remembered that Maskell had specifically invited his cop brother to abuse her, which he did.[405]

Maskell provided his controlled sex slave children to many of them.

There was even an instance where an officer balked at raping the young girl but Maskell cajoled him into it and he did.[406]

One series of rapes occurred on the pagan/demonic festival of Samhain (“Halloween”), clearly showing that the crimes were committed for Lucifer, and not just lust.

> *After pointing out that “I was afraid of the man [Father Maskell] because he had a gun,” Ms. Lancaster described how the priest was also serving as the chaplain to the Baltimore Police Department, and how he would sometimes take her on “police runs” with policemen and then encourage them to sexually assault her in his presence.*
>
> *“On one occasion, Halloween night of 1970, I was sexually assaulted by two policemen in uniforms, while Maskell looked on,” she said. “He also took me to a gynecologist in Towson [Dr. Christian Richter]. While Maskell raped me, the gynecologist felt my breasts.” ~ Inside Baltimore*[407]

There was a complete blending of “secular” institutions with Catholic authority, power and abuse. While presiding over St. Clement Parish before becoming Archbishop Keogh’s Chaplain, Maskell supervised the local Boy Scout Troop — fertile ground for his proclivities.

Maskell used the church where he pastored as a hub to bring other Luciferian brethren in to ritually rape the children.

> *Several of the women who spoke to* ***The Huffington Post*** *about Maskell’s abuse described the priest setting up what amounted to a full-on brothel.*
>
> *Wehner said that during her senior year, Maskell began driving her to St. Clement Church, where he preached, after school, and that a string of men abused her in his office there. She does not know who the men*

> *were, but they referred to each other by generic names — Brother Ed, Brother Ted and Brother Bob. She said some of the men gave Maskell money in exchange for the abuse. “He was prostituting us,” Wehner said.*[408]

Anthony Joseph Maskell was a priest among priests; his mother raised him from childhood for his destiny. She had him practice with wafers simulating the Catholic Eucharist. While other boys played ball, young Anthony Joseph was in the yard saying Mass.[409]

Maskell was in the perfect position to provide his brethren in the Baltimore Police Department with victims as well as keep himself screened from anyone who would dare buck the system and attempt to stop them.

> *Maskell in particular was a difficult target. At the time, he served as the chaplain for the Baltimore County police, the Maryland State Police and the Maryland National Guard. Maskell kept a police scanner and loaded handgun in his car, drank beer with the officers at a local dive bar, and often went on “ride-alongs” with his police friends at night to respond to petty crimes or catch teenagers making out in their cars.*
>
> *Bob Fisher, the owner of an automotive repair shop in southwest Baltimore where Maskell took his car on his days off, remembers the priest boasting about his police privileges to anyone who would listen. “He’d say, ‘I’d hear something on the scanner, and we’d jump in the car and take off, and we’d catch these people!’” said Fisher, 74. “Really wild stories.” ~ Huffington Post*[410]

Maskell enlisted the aid of a fellow Luciferian who was also a doctor, to make sure none of his victims got pregnant.

> *The women recall that Maskell had a gynecologist friend, Dr. Richter, who would examine them to make sure they weren’t pregnant. Lancaster claims Maskell took her to see Richter for a pregnancy test and then raped her on the table while Richter performed a breast exam.*

> *Fisher, the auto repair shop owner, said Maskell boasted about taking high school girls to the gynecologist when he dropped his car off at the shop in the afternoons. "He would say, 'Me and the doctor, we take them back and we give them exams and check them,'" said Fisher. "There's no question he was always involved with the exams — that he made clear."*[411]

The priest had a truly diseased mind and subjected his victims to any perversion he could think of. He even raped some of them on the school chapel altar in order to show his loyalty to Lucifer.

> *Maskell's trips to the gynecologist reflected a fixation with the practice. Lancaster said he liked to perform pelvic exams on the altar of the school chapel and administer vaginal douches, enemas and anal suppositories in the bathroom of his office and in the rectory. Multiple other girls also said they were on the receiving end of the mock gynecological exams and enemas. It was a way to establish further authority over the girls — the creation of a doctor-patient relationship — while acting out whatever fetish inspired the abuse.*[412]

The children lived in fear, never knowing when they would again be called to Maskell's office.

Young Donna VonDenBosch told one of the nuns that Maskell was raping her but the woman dismissed her accusation.[413]

Only Sister Cathy Cesnik, a popular young nun who taught English and drama, seemed to have any compassion for the girls.

> *The only person who tried to help the girls was Sister Cathy Cesnik. Wehner said that in 1969, at the end of her sophomore year, Cesnik stole a moment alone with her in her classroom. "Are the priests hurting you?" the nun asked gently. Wehner nodded her head, too afraid to open her mouth. Cesnik told Wehner to go home and enjoy the summer. She said she would handle the situation.*
>
> *Kathy Hobeck, 63, said she asked Cesnik to protect her from Maskell's abuse when she attended Keough in 1968. "She would make excuses for me when he would ask me to come down [to his office]," Hobeck*

> *said. “She’d say, ‘She’s in a study, she can’t get away,’ or she’d make up a story.”*[414]

Cathy Cesnik and her roommate Sister Russell Phillips were commissioned by Mother Superior Maurice Kelly[xxxvi] to be part of a special clandestine program where they were sent in civilian attire to teach in public schools incognito. Again, this shows the all-encompassing power of the Catholic Church over “secular” governments everywhere, especially in the United States.[xxxvii]

As a Roman Catholic nun, Cesnik was not quick to intervene in what a priest was doing (service to “the Church” was always top priority) but she had more conscience and integrity than anyone else at Keogh.

She began asking probing questions of Maskell’s victims, but power and the culture of control at Keogh, and even throughout the city of Baltimore and beyond, kept all who knew quiet.

Her integrity would eventually cost Catherine Cesnik dearly.

> *Around 7:30 p.m. on November 7, 1969, Cesnik told her roommate, Helen Russell Phillips, that she was going to swing by the bank and then shop for an engagement gift for her cousin. According to media reports from the time, she cashed a $255 paycheck at a bank in Catonsville, Maryland, then drove to the Edmondson Village Shopping Center, where she bought buns at Muhly’s Bakery. When she hadn’t*

> *returned home by 11 p.m., Phillips called two priest friends, who drove to her apartment and called the police. Later that night, Cesnik's brand-new green Ford Maverick was found unlocked and illegally parked a block from her apartment, even though she had a designated parking spot behind the building. There was no sign of the nun anywhere.*[415]

An honest-but-cowed Italian Roman Catholic officer was promptly put on the case which was quickly handed off and has remained "unsolved" ever since.

> *The man assigned to investigate Cesnik's disappearance was Nick Giangrasso, a 28-year-old homicide detective who had worked in the Baltimore City Police Department for five years. Giangrasso led the investigation for the three months Cesnik was missing, then had to turn the case over to Baltimore County detectives when her body was found outside the city limits. But Giangrasso, now 72, spent enough time on the case to feel like something suspicious was going on between the police department and the church.*
>
> *"The Catholic Church had a lot of input into the police department," he said. "A lot of power."*[416]

In November of 1969, Maskell then took his favorite victim, 16-year-old Jean Wehner, to a garbage dump outside the city *It was then that she saw the body crumpled on the ground.*

> *The week prior, ... Cesnik ... had vanished ... Students, parents and the local media buzzed about the 26-year-old's disappearance. People from all over Baltimore County helped the police comb local parks and wooded areas for any sign of her.*
>
> *Wehner immediately recognized the lifeless body as her teacher. "I knew it was her," she recalled recently. "She wasn't that far gone that you couldn't tell it was her."*
>
> *Cesnik was still clad in her aqua-colored coat, and maggots were crawling on her face. Wehner tried to brush them off with her bare hands. "Help me get these off of her!" she cried, turning to Maskell in*

> *a panic. Instead, she says, the priest leaned down behind her and whispered in her ear: "You see what happens when you say bad things about people?" ...*
>
> *Two months later, the police announced that a pair of hunters passing through a dump outside of Baltimore had stumbled upon the body of the missing nun. Cesnik had choke marks on her neck and a round hole about the size of a quarter in the back of her skull. An autopsy confirmed she had been killed by a blow from a blunt object, probably a brick or a ball-peen hammer. But ... the police never solved it.*[417]

There were some initial interviews conducted. Gerard Koob was the first. At the time, Koob was a Jesuit priest and Sister Cisnik's lover. Today, he's a married Methodist minister living in New Jersey.

> *Harry Bannon, another retired Baltimore City homicide investigator, told the Baltimore City Paper in 2004 that he thought Koob knew more about the murder than he was admitting, but that the church forced him to back off the priest. "The church lawyers stepped in and they talked to the higher-ups at the police department. And we were told, 'Either charge Koob with a crime or let him go. Stop harassing him,'" said Bannon, who died in 2009. "After that, we had to break away from him. And that was a shame, because I'm sure Koob knew more than he was telling."*[418]

The shocking power of the Catholic Church in controlling critical secular authorities like politicians, cops and judges is the most well-kept secret even in today's "information age". Catholic clergy can literally get away with murder.

> *On March 27, 1992, Sister Abhaya awoke at 4:00 AM to begin her studies at the St. Pius X convent in Kottayam, India. Before starting for the day, the 19-year-old Knanaya Catholic nun went to the kitchen to get a glass of water. The next person to come to the kitchen found the refrigerator door open. There was a bottle of spilled water, there was a slipper under the fridge, and Sister Abhaya was missing. After a short search, her body was found in the convent's well.*

> *At first, her death was ruled a suicide, despite there being a number of cuts and abrasions on her body. The case remained closed until almost 16 years later. The nuns at the convent had sent a petition to India's police agency, the Central Bureau of Investigation (CBI), asking them to reopen the case, which they did in 2007.*
>
> *During their investigation, the CBI interviewed three individuals who lived at the convent — Father Jose Puthurukkayil, Father Thomas M. Kottur, and Sister Sephy. The CBI gave all three a Narco Analysis, which is a truth serum test. Under the influence of the serum, the three confessed to the murder. Apparently, Sister Abhaya caught the three of them in a compromising sexual position. Sephy panicked and struck Sister Abhaya three times with the blunt side of an ax. The three of them then dumped the body in the well.*
>
> *Puthurukkayil, Kottur, and Sephy were arrested but were released on bail. They have yet to go to trial because of how the evidence was handled. ~ Viral Top 10s*[419]

Actually, the evidence was *mis*-handled.

During the original investigation, the Superintendent of Police (the chief law enforcement officer) helped the investigation by *destroying* evidence. Subsequent oversight seemed unable to trace or track down any records.

> *The CBI on Monday told the Kerala High Court that the agency was unable to trace the additional records and old files from the Kottayam sub-divisional magistrate's office in a case relating to the destruction of evidence in the Sister Abhaya murder case.*
>
> *It said it had completed the investigation into the case and would submit the final report before the CBI special court before June 30.*
>
> *The High Court had asked the CBI to continue with the investigation into the Abhaya murder case after social activist Jomon Puthenpurackal had moved it saying former superintendent of police K.T. Michael, who investigated the case first, was instrumental in destroying the pieces of material evidence, including personal clothing*

> *recovered from Sr. Abhaya's body, a plastic bottle, a pair of lady's slippers and a white veil.*
>
> *They were produced before the SDM's court, Kottayam, but were destroyed hastily on the basis of a note prepared by the clerk of SDM court on July 7, 2003, without handing them over to the CBI, the petition had stated.*
>
> *The CBI said it examined 48 persons during the investigation and scrutinised documents, including registers of distribution and unclaimed articles of 1992-93 period, files relating to the unnatural death of Sister Abhaya maintained at the SDM office and inquest reports.*
>
> *The destruction of material evidence was of great significance as the case had no eyewitnesses. ~ Deccan Chronicle*[420]

There can be a tendency for laity — Catholics and non-Catholics alike — to look upon nuns as having more compassion or empathy than priests based on their gender and human predispositions to seeing females as more loving than males.[xxxviii]

But Nun Are Brave

Unfortunately, nuns have proven equal partakers in the Devil's Simulation. Although "sisters" may not aggressively violate children in the same numbers as priests, they give active aid to the predators (and not the prey; innocent, vulnerable children).

We need not even leave "predominantly Hindu" India for such an example.

In February of 2017, arrest warrants were sworn out for six nuns and a doctor for concealing the rape of an underage girl by a priest.

The assault impregnated the victim and the cabal illegally secreted the girl to a Catholic orphanage in Kannur where she would give birth. She was then forced to leave her baby in the "care" of the orphanage.

> *"They deliberately hid the incident from officials," Prajish Thottathil, a senior police officer, told AFP, adding some of the accused likely also knew about the alleged assault.*
>
> *Three of the accused work at a private hospital while the rest were associated with the orphanage where the baby was left.*
>
> *The accused priest Robin Vadakkumchery was arrested last week after the victim gave birth in February, prompting an investigation.*
>
> *Under Indian law doctors and hospitals must report all teenage pregnancies and deliveries to authorities.*
>
> *The victim told investigators the accused priest raped her at a church-run school last year. ~ AFP*[421]

Nuns deal with their vow of celibacy[xxxix] in the same way as priests do. Many of them find an outlet for their normal human drives that is, at best, unhealthy and, at worst, guarantees great evil.

Religious adherence in India is said[422] to be 79.8% Hindu, 14.2% Muslim, 2.3% "Christian" and 1.7% Sikh yet it was the preferred location for an American pedophile priest to escape to once his crimes came to light.

Father Joseph Jeyapaul had been raping teenage girls in his Greenbush, Minnesota parish. He raped them in the parish office, in the confessional and where-ever he chose.

After a year of his abuse, Megan Peterson (a 14 year-old “altar-server”[xl]) found the courage to speak to a school counselor who then informed police.

Jeyapaul was somehow alerted to the proceedings (by a Catholic cop or fellow pedophile perhaps) and fled to India.

Amazingly, he was arrested by Interpol and extradited back to the United States.

Peterson and another girl came forward with charges. Peterson’s were dropped and the priest plead guilty to the other. He was given a single year prison sentence which was immediately waived in lieu of “time served” while waiting for his trial. He returned to India where the Vatican promptly reinstated him to full priestly duties.[423]

Black Sabbath

In Ohio, Catholic clergy were given full rein to do anything they wished from raping children to conducting satanic rituals. Such rituals included abortions, torturing animals and murdering an entire range of victims from infants to adults.

In 1980, on the day before Easter (known as “Black Saturday” to Roman Catholics[424]), Sister Margaret Ann Pahl was found dead in the chapel where she worked at the Toledo Mercy Hospital in Toledo, Ohio.

> *She had been strangled, draped with an altar cloth and stabbed 31 times, including nine wounds in the shape of an upside-down cross. There was a smear of blood across her forehead, as if she had been anointed in* [pagan / Roman Catholic] *last rites. ~ NY Times*[425]

Apparently, the Jewish reporter and editor at the *Times* didn’t want to get *too* specific[xli] but details of just how despicable the crime was are available.

> *She had been confronted by her killer as she prepared for that day’s services. Pahl was choked to death’s door, jabbed mercilessly with a letter opener, and then* [the elderly woman was] *sexually violated. She was found with an altar cloth shrouding her torso.*
>
> *It was a ritual murder with hallmarks of pathological rage.*
>
> *Among 31 stab wounds, nine punctures over her heart formed the outline of an inverted Crucifix, a demonic symbol. She had been stripped below the waist and defiled with a cross.*
>
> *The homicide was unthinkable. Who would do such a thing to an elderly nun? ~ New York Daily News*[426]

The immediate and only suspect was her co-worker at the hospital, Father Gerald Robinson.

But he got a “pass” from police.

> *One of the first police officers at the scene of the 1980 killing of Sister Margaret Ann Pahl in Toledo, Ohio, told* ***CBS News*** *Tuesday that he*

> *believed the slaying was not investigated as vigorously as it should have been.*
>
> *The Rev. Gerald Robinson, a Roman Catholic priest who worked at the same hospital as the 71-year-old nun, was charged this weekend with the bizarre, ritualistic slaying. He is being held on $200,000 bond.*
>
> *In an interview on* ***The Early Show****, retired Toledo police officer Dave Davison said Robinson's was the only name ever mentioned as a suspect when the crime was first investigated in 1980.*
>
> *"Everybody I talked to — and I talked to dozens — said either Father Robinson or that they didn't know his name, they said it was a priest," Davison told co-anchor Harry Smith. "I mean, there was no other name mentioned."*
>
> *Davison, a patrolman at the time ... happened to be among the first at the scene because he was having breakfast in the hospital cafeteria when the nun's body was found in the chapel. ...*
>
> *The investigation that followed "seemed to go nowhere," the retired officer said. "I mean, you talk to the guys, ask what progress. And basically they would toss you off. So it didn't go anywhere." ~ CBS News*[427]

It was perfectly clear what happened and who did it, but nothing was done by sworn public servants.

> *Police detective Steve Forrester and Tom Ross, an investigator with the Lucas County prosecutor's office, told The Blade newspaper that the nun's killing was part of a "ceremony" in the chapel. They would not elaborate.*
>
> *In December, authorities re-examined old evidence and concluded that the murder weapon, which they did not identify, was "in the control of the suspect."*[428]

Actually, what neither CBS nor Toledo Police were admitting is that the "unidentified" murder weapon was Gerald Robinson's letter opener, still in his "control".

> *Although it was not made public in 1980, detectives had found the letter opener used to stab the nun in Robinson's office. ~ New York Daily News*[429]

The case remained "cold" for 20 years and Gerald Robinson continued on in his activities unmolested.

He even presided over the funeral of his victim, Sister Pahl.[430]

As officer Davison explained —

> *"You have to remember on our department, the people in the upper command levels that had control on this are good Catholics."*[431]

What that means is that Roman Catholicism is an insurgency. Where-ever Roman Catholics hold positions of authority, they are at risk of corruption and criminal activity because they are beholden to a foreign, malignant power.

Consequently, they are frequently placed in those key positions for just such utility.

As Joe Mahr, an investigative reporter for the *Toledo Blade*, told NPR's Madeleine Brand, Catholic clergy have been allowed to commit crimes at will in Toledo, thanks to a completely corrupt and controlled government at all levels.

> *...we've got about 10 priests that we're looking at, and they all range from priests who were overtly not arrested or they knew there were allegations to priests that got special treatment in other ways, even recently where there were children's services, which has child case workers where they wouldn't investigate a priest for nearly a year when they thought he might have access to children. So it kind of runs the gamut of favoritism. ...*
>
> *...one of the best examples of the overt policy was the first case in 1958. There was a priest named Fred Garand (ph), and he was at a South Toledo church, and the captain of the detective bureau found out or suspected, I should say, that Father Garand was molesting at least one child in the neighborhood...there was no police report filed, no*

> *investigation. Even the chief of detectives didn't or couldn't do anything.*
>
> ***Brand:*** *And this was simply because the chief of police was a prominent Catholic in the community?*
>
> ***Mr. Mahr:*** *That's what we believe. That's what officers have told us, yes.*
>
> ***Brand:*** *But how does that explain the continuation of the policy after he was no longer police chief?*
>
> ***Mr. Mahr:*** *What officers told us is it became ingrained in the culture of the department. This is a department that also had a lot of Catholics on it, like a lot of police forces in the country. This is a Catholic town. There were some officers who were hired as private investigators for the diocese, so they were technically off the clock at the police department and they would look at these cases, and they may confirm a priest is a pedophile, but they wouldn't report it to the police department. They would report it quietly to the diocese, and the diocese would handle it in whatever way they saw fit.*[432]

Perhaps understanding this, a victim of sex abuse during satanic ceremonies presided over by priests like Gerald Robinson came forward — not to police or prosecutors — but to the Toledo Diocese Review Board.

> *A Toledo woman came forward claiming she'd been sexually abused as a child by Catholic priests during Satanic rituals. ...*
>
> *The woman ... testified before the Diocesan Review Board on June 11 and wrote a detailed statement alleging years of abuse by priests during her childhood.*
>
> *The woman, now in her 40s, described satanic ceremonies in which priests placed her in a coffin filled with cockroaches, forced her to ingest what she believed to be a human eyeball and penetrated her with a snake "to consecrate these orifices to Satan."*
>
> *She also alleged that the clerics killed an infant and a 3-year-old child, performed an abortion on her and mutilated dogs during the rituals,*

> *according to a copy of her statement. ~ CBS*[433]

Apparently, the Board gave police and prosecutors the “go-ahead” to investigate — not the ritual rape, torture and murder of children and animals by a cabal of satan-worshipping Catholic priests[xlii] — but of the 20-year-old murder of one of their own, Sister Margaret Ann Pahl.

> *On April 23, 2004, the case returned to front pages when Robinson was charged with the murder, based upon evidence available 24 years earlier. ~ Daily News*[434]

26 years after he ritually slaughtered Sister Pahl in the Toledo Mercy Hospital Chapel, Father Gerald Robinson was convicted and sent to prison where he died on the 4th of July in 2014.

Had he stayed alive, in a few short months he would’ve been eligible for parole.

Serial Lawlessness

Back in Mary-land, during the 1970 investigation into the murder of Sister Catherine Ann Cesnik, police and media admitted to a string of young girl murders all being related but they, too, went “unsolved”.

> *...20-year-old Joyce Helen Malecki, who disappeared days after the nun did and whose body was found at Fort Meade; 16-year-old Pamela Lynn Conyers, whose body was found in Anne Arundel County in 1970; and 16-year-old Grace Elizabeth “Gay” Montanye, whose body was found in 1971 in South Baltimore. ~ Baltimore Sun*[435]

Their bodies and their blood fed into the Devil’s Simulation.

Decades went by.

Maskell and his clients remained thoroughly protected by the Luciferian cartel, until angry, frustrated victims started to take matters into their own hands.

Receiving no justice from law enforcement, they filed a $40 million dollar civil suit against Maskell and the Archdiocese of Baltimore.

It was dismissed.[436]

Victims like Jean Wehner came forward to tell their stories and give details only those who had been there would know.

They, too, were dismissed.

> *Investigators were initially skeptical of her claim that Cesnik had maggots on her face, because maggots are usually not present in cold November temperatures. But an autopsy showed there were in fact maggots in Cesnik’s throat — a detail that had not been made public. ~ Huffington Post*[437]

Feeling the heat — not from officers sworn to protect them — but from citizens with torches and pitch-forks, Maskell ran.

> ... [Maskell] *checked himself into a residential treatment facility, claiming he needed help coping with the stress and anxiety the case*

> *had caused him. Weeks later, he quietly checked himself out and fled to Ireland, where he continued to work as a priest.*[438]

The only time Roman Catholic leadership appeared to intervene was to tell the monster to police himself.

> *Maskell was living in Wexford, Ireland. Archdiocesan officials sent letters to Maskell saying he was not to perform any priestly duties and asking him to return to Baltimore, Caine said. ~ Sun*[439]

Unfortunately for the citizenry, they lacked the reach of those they paid and swore in for such work and the prominent individuals lived full lives free of prosecution.

> *Law enforcement dropped the investigation ...* [and] *Maskell ... died* [in 2001] *without ever being charged with a crime.* [Father E. Neil] *Magnus had died years earlier, in 1988. Richter died in 2006.*[440]

47 years after Sister Catherine Anne Cisnek's body was found, it was now safe for law enforcement and media to selectively address the ground-level of these abominations.

The Keepers documentary subsequently aired on Netflix; a source not unfamiliar to programs where Catholic Italy figures prominently. The series *Medici: Masters of Florence* began in October 2016 and stars Dustin Hoffman as Giovanni di Bicci de' Medici, the father of modern banking. [xliii]

In fact, one blogger listed[441] what he called a "plethora" of Catholic movies back in 2010 — * *A Hand of Peace* * *A Man for All Seasons*
* *After the Truth* * *Don Matteo*
* *Father of Mercy: The True Story of Venerable Don Gnocchi*
* *Faustina* * *God in China*
* *Into Great Silence* * *John XXIII*
* *Karol: The Pope, The Man* * *Love is a Choice*
* *Maria Goretti* [girl ritually stabbed, subsequently beatified]
* *Our Father's Plan* * *Pope Benedict XVI*
* *Padre Pio Between Heaven and Earth*
* *Paul VI: The Pope in the Tempest*

* *Road of Hope* * *Saint Anthony*
* *Saint Francis* * *Saint Rita*
* *Saints and Soldiers* * *St. Teresa of Avila*
* *St. Giuseppe Moscati: Doctor to the Poor*
* *The 13th Day* * *The Jeweler's Shop*
* *The Miracle of Marcelino* * *The Reluctant Saint*
* *The Spiritual Exercises of St. Ignatius*
* *Théresè* Ludicrously and impotently, Baltimore Police have exhumed Father Anthony Joseph Maskell's body to see if it matches Lansdowne crime scene evidence ... from 1970.

> *Maskell's body was exhumed Feb. 28* [2017] *at Holy Family Cemetery in Randallstown and returned to the grave the same day, county police spokeswoman Elise Armacost said. ...*
>
> *Baltimore archdiocese pays settlements to a dozen people alleging abuse by late priest*
>
> *One of the women who came forward in the 1990s with allegations of abuse by the priest has implicated him in the nun's death. ...*
>
> *Investigators "have never established that [Cesnik] was killed because of information that she had about abuse in the Catholic Church," said Armacost, though she acknowledged that's a theory, among others, that police have pursued.*
>
> *She said there is little physical evidence remaining in the decades-old case, but detectives "felt very strongly that in the interest of leaving no stone unturned, it was necessary to exhume Maskell's body and compare his DNA to the evidence that is remaining." ~ The Baltimore Sun*[442]

Although the exhumation of the near-50-year-old crime suspect has occurred but weeks before the release of the documentary, Spokeswoman Armacost said Baltimore PD was not influenced by the late media spotlight.

The victim profiles were all the same: each girl or boy had been previously raped or abused, sometimes by family. Others came from a broken or dysfunctional background.

Lillian Knipp (*née* Hughes), Keogh class of 71, was a promising student taking classes in dictation and stenography. Maskell brought her in to carefully chronical the details of sexual perversion of all kinds; incest, bestiality, group sex and ritual abuse sex. The subjects of her “records” included public figures. Maskell provided her with privileges such as getting out of class which made her feel special. She never thought to report the criminal activities she chronicled for him.

The behavior of Maskell was remarkably Kinsey-esque and it provided the pedophile priest with extra material for blackmail.

Maskell received a certification in Psychology from Johns Hopkins (a “secular” facility with very strong Roman ties), and he weaponized his knowledge.

Maskell also exploited narcotics and hypnosis in manipulating his victims. Was he trained to do so? From where?

Jean Wehner states openly that she was a victim of Dissociative Personality Disorder[443] — the same trauma-based mechanism used by the CIA and other Intelligence Agencies to “mind control” victims.

Jean Marie Wehner (*née* Hargadon) was a freshman at Keogh struggling with a dark secret — she had been abused by her uncle when she was younger.

Jean needed compassion and consolation.

She wrestled repeatedly with whether or not to take it to confession.

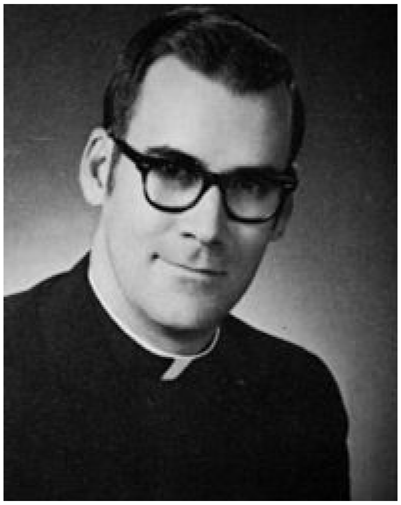

When she finally did, it was with Keogh’s Religious Services Director, Father Neil Magnus.

After hearing her unburden herself with how she had been abused, Magnus asked to see her face-to-face where he told her “I don’t know if God can forgive this.”

He began calling her into his office and sexually assaulting her, telling her this was part of the “forgiveness” process. Magnus told her that she wasn’t a victim, she had brought it all upon herself.

After several “sessions”, Keogh’s Chaplain, Father Anthony Joseph Maskell began showing up.

Wehner was afraid of him instantly.

She knew he would have no qualms about hurting her.

They began to abuse her together and “praying” in Latin over her while doing it. Sometimes at the point of their climax they would tell her to “receive the Holy Spirit.”

Wehner related to the Netflix crew that “Magnus would call his [semen] the ‘Eucharist’ and use it on me as ‘symbols’ of what was ‘sacred’.”[444]

One “session” was so brutal Wehner emerged from Maskell’s office (strategically located in the corner of the school where there was little traffic) in a daze. She wandered the halls without purpose and ran into Sister Cathy who allowed her to sit in a classroom and compose herself.[xliv]

50 years after the events, Jean Wehner still cried in the recounting for Netflix.[445] Yet she would go on from high school to become a “Eucharistic Minister” in her local Catholic church. Perhaps as a result of her dissociative personality disorder, Wehner remained a devout Catholic into adulthood.

Wehner then paused and stated “My life would’ve been very different had I not gone in that confessional.”

The Religious Services Director and the Chaplain worked together, screening and grooming unsuspecting victims they thought were the easiest prey.

> *When Maskell spotted a girl who seemed troubled or was engaged in bad behavior, he would start calling her out of class over the loudspeaker for “therapy” in his office.*
>
> *“I would be in class, and it could be any time. I’d hear my name over the loudspeaker, ‘Report to my office now,’ and I would have to report to Maskell,” said Donna VonDenBosch, 58. “I remember being in class, just crying, ‘Don’t make me go, don’t make me go!’ And the teacher pulled me out in the hall and said, ‘We all know he’s a weirdo, but you have to go.’”*
>
> *Wehner said she went to see* [Father Neil] *Magnus, the school’s religious services director, for confession when she was 14 years old, because she had been feeling guilty about sexual abuse she experienced as a young child. The priest turned to her in the confessional, quizzed her on the details of the abuse, and began masturbating as she talked, she said.*
>
> *After that, Maskell and Magnus would call her into their offices for joint counseling sessions, which they said was for the purpose of helping her find God’s forgiveness for what she did as a child. She says they would masturbate in front of her, take nude photos of her and force her to perform sex acts as part of her “spiritual healing” process. ...*

> *Soon, Maskell began calling Wehner out of class and into his office without Magnus, she said. He would show her pornography, tell her that he was trying to help God forgive her for the abuse she suffered as a child, and rape her. "He kept saying it didn't seem like I was open to the Holy Spirit and God's grace," Wehner said. "I was just doing what I was being told, thinking I must be such a horrible person that God can't forgive me." ~ Huffington Post*[446]

A friend invited Wehner to attend a Keogh reunion and it deeply troubled her but she couldn't explain why. In prayer and contemplation the memories flooded back. Another friend, "Sarah", brought Wehner to see Father Art Valenzano and Father Rick Woy who were subsequently joined by Monsignor (later Bishop) William Francis Malooly, all Archdiocese officials. The Archdiocese at that time was headed by Archbishop William Keeler.

At no point was law enforcement considered by any of the parties.

When she told the delegation of her abuse by Maskell, Valenzano and Woy said, "We believe you but we have to get proof."

At a second meeting, Wehner was surprised to be introduced to Archdiocese counsel Kathy Hoskins who advised her to get a lawyer. In subsequent meetings, Hoskins was joined by a second Archdiocese lawyer.

Wehner had prepared to recount some memories of her abuse to the "council". She told the Netflix crew which memory she recalled but then paused and broke into uncontrollable sobbing.[447]

The "council" then demanded Wehner corroborate her accusations before they moved on *Church mechanisms* against Maskell. These included "self-policing", "therapy" or restrictions against interacting with children — again, self-enforced — to take effect now 20 years after the complaint was first experienced.[448]

In fact, that is exactly what happened. After the first accusations by Jean Wehner (a.k.a. "Jane Doe") were presented — not to police — but to the Archdiocese of Baltimore, Maskell was sent to the "Institute of Living" in Hartford, Connecticut for "therapy".

The “Institute of Living” was managed by respected Jewish Psychologist Leslie M. Lothstein, II, who took predator priests like Maskell and insisted that they could be treated and “cured”.

> *Dr. L. M. Lothstein of the Institute of Living in Hartford, Connecticut — a premier psychiatric hospital to which many problem priests were sent — in a paper delivered before the National Diocesan Attorneys’ Association on April 30, 1990, said, “The fact is that many priests who are labeled as child molesters are treatable and can return to ministry.”*[180]
>
> *Lothstein, who boasted that the Institute of Living had “established a model program that addresses the psychological, theological, vocational, and legal issues surrounding return to ministry”,*[181] *concluded that “to date, approximately 60% of priests treated at three treatment centers have been successfully returned to active ministry.”*[182] *While conceding that “in a few cases the decisions were wrong,”*[183] *he reemphasized that “most sexually addicted priests can be returned to a successful active ministry after treatment.”*[184]
>
> *In “Ways Cited to Treat Priests Who Abuse” by James L. Franklin, the* ***Boston Globe*** *reported on July 19, 1992, that “officials of three of the four leading centers that treat priest sex offenders — Southdown near Toronto, St. Luke Institute in Maryland and the Institute of Living in Hartford — said in interviews last week that improved treatment yields great success with as little as a two percent recidivism rate. They and other specialists said many offenders can be returned to active ministry so long as the clergy and their supervisors accept lifelong restrictions and follow-care.”*
>
> *During the O’Connor administration, the archdiocese had to contend with its share of predator-priest cases. One of these hit the front page of the* ***New York Post*** *in December 1989; it concerned the founder of Covenant House, Father Bruce Ritter.*
>
> *Father Ritter, a Franciscan priest, founded Covenant House in the Times Square area in 1972 as an institution to help teenage runaways. What started as a nickel-and-dime operation had grown by 1988 to an*

> *$87 million one funded mostly by private donations and managed by a board of directors made up of New York's captains of industry and finance. Its shelter sponsored highly praised programs that included helping youths infected with the AIDS virus and drug addicts and providing long-term housing and education for motivated teenagers. In his 1984 State of the Union Address, President Reagan hailed the efforts of Covenant House in aiding troubled youths.*

— Such "growth" and national coverage betrays the Devil's Simulation. — *In December 1989, Ritter was accused of giving gifts to a former male prostitute in return for sexual favors. Ritter denied the allegations, and Cardinal O'Connor, who had spoken with him, said he had complete confidence in the priest.*

— We can assume that the anemic and innocuous "accusation" was the least offensive in a litany of outrages. This is borne out by how John O'Connor dismissed what was clearly a symptom of sexual perversion in desperate need of being addressed. — *Shortly thereafter, other accusers surfaced. The Manhattan district attorney began an investigation, and Covenant House's board of directors ordered its own probe, which was led by former New York Police Commissioner Robert McGuire.*[xlv]

> *As more and more salacious details made front-page news, including stories in the* ***New York Times****, which had previously praised Ritter's work, the board turned to Cardinal O'Connor for help in March 1990. Calling the situation at Covenant House "a mess", O'Connor appointed two of his priests to serve as temporary administrators in place of Ritter, who had resigned in late February, and he agreed that the archdiocese would pay their salaries during this interim period. "It is no longer a question of guilt or innocence, but of public perception", he said.*[185]

— Once again, we are told that Catholic authorities will do the job we expect of our "secular" cops, judges, prosecutors and law-makers. — *On August 3, 1990, the Covenant House board released its report, which gave detailed evidence "that Father Ritter used his position to facilitate sexual relationships*

> *between himself and young men who came under Covenant House's care". The report substantiated the allegations of four young men who claimed Ritter had had sex with them, and it revealed other evidence "indicating a pattern of sexual misconduct on Ritter's part.*
>
> *Ritter resigned from the Franciscan Order and moved to India to work with the poor; he eventually returned to the States and lived quietly in Upstate New York until his death in 1999. Covenant House was restructured and continues successfully to aid troubled youth. ~ Sons of Saint Patrick*[449]

Again, the serial predator was not punished by the secular authorities sworn to protect the citizenry and was even allowed to continue in his field as a "self-less priest helping the poor."

Psychologist Leslie Lothstein told Netflix, upon receiving his first pedophile priest he called the priest's superior and said, "We're not here to protect this priest from the embarrassment of his arrest."

Lothstein continued, "This happened over and over and over again. By about '94 or '95 we confronted this issue. We basically said 'We're not going to accept any more patients from the Catholic Church unless you send us the whole file and every file you have on the patient and tell us the real reason for why they're coming. We never got a single referral again."[450]

Lothstein made that prepared statement to the documentary crew 20 years after the fact. The Vatican-preferred Jewish Psychologist never contacted law enforcement. In some rare instances, professionals privy to the commitment of a crime, even in the "confidence" of medical or religious endeavors, are still required to do so by law.

But not in Connecticut.

In 1975, Sister Marylite Friia, the new Principle of Archbishop Keogh "warned off" Maskell so he was promoted to the Catholic Archdiocese Division of Schools where he remained from 1975 through 1980.

Archbishop Keogh High School was administrated by the Sisters of Notre Dame.

In 1980 Maskell was sent to the Parish of the Annunciation [of Mary].

He stayed there for two years and then was shuttled to Holy Cross Parish of Baltimore where he remained from 1982 through 1992.

For his “therapy”, Maskell spent 6 months at the “Institute of the Living” then returned having been “cured” and was assigned to the Parish of St. Augustine in Elkridge in 1993.

The Baltimore Archdiocese legal round-table that Jean Wehner spoke with was quite angry when she presented the names of other clergy and officials who had abused her. They insured her that they could not go anywhere with those allegations — they wanted the names of other *victims*. One can only imagine the risk those victims would be subject to once their names were given up. Wehner refused.

After that meeting, Wehner’s own lawyer, Steve Tully, berated her for giving up the names of abusers. Furious with the betrayal, Wehner’s husband, Mike, released Tully from representing them.

Wehner then called Father Rick Woy and asked if they could pray together on how to proceed. Woy responded that he didn’t think that was a good idea and that Wehner should instead immediately replace her legal counsel.

The Wehners then hired lawyer Beverly Wallace to represent them.

The Wehner family actively solicited Archbishop Keogh alumni for victims and they noted to Netflix, “the response was overwhelming.”

The devout Roman Catholic parents of Teresa Lancaster, Keogh ‘72, helped target their own daughter for ritual rape and abuse. After finding drug paraphernalia in her purse, they took her to Father Maskell for counselling. Seeing her as an “unruly” teen, Maskell moved in. “My father was a very, very strict Catholic,” Lancaster recounted. He was convinced that Father Maskell was saving me.”

Instead, he was raping her.

Dr. Christian Richter was a corrupt gynecologist. He enabled the children to be entrapped (“groomed”) with “prescribed” douches and suppositories that Maskell would then administer.

Maskell used another compatriot in the medical industry to prescribe Thorzine for schizophrenia to Teresa Lancaster; part of the narcotic application in abuse.

Former *Baltimore Sun* Journalist Bob Erlandson told Netflix that Richter admitted he allowed Maskell to be present during “examinations”. He quoted Richter as saying “That was his only opportunity to see a woman in that position.”

Erlandson continued, “There was apparently a lot of that kind of stuff going on,” meaning corruption of both secular and Catholic authorities.[451]

Maskell had Baltimore police “liberated” Teresa Lancaster and a friend from parental care on Halloween 1970. They were taken to a secluded wood and Lancaster was raped by two of Baltimore’s finest.

Police officers, clergy, local business owners, politicians — all were part of the network.

Journalist Bob Erlandson noted that, when “Jane Doe” (Jean Wehner) implicated Maskell in the death of Cathy Cesnik, neither the Archdiocese nor the Baltimore police reacted positively — even 25 years after the event.

Erlandson then showed the documentary crew his sword commemorating the Jacobite Rebellion. The man most responsible for that rebellion was Jesuit Professor Johann Adam Weishaupt. Although propagandists like Jesuit *Abbé* (Father) Augustin Barruel (1741 – 1820) attempted to paint the Jacobins as Freemasons who attacked “the Church”, many historians have since asked *cui bono*? — Who benefited?

Freemasonic apologist Rene Fulop-Miller states —

> *Whenever gross abuses have been found within the lodges, Masonic historians have immediately given vent to the suspicion that the wily Jesuits have once again smuggled their emissaries into the association, and corrupted it in this cunning manner.*
>
> *Suspicions of this kind are associated with the first beginnings of the lodges in England. The remarkable circumstance that the earliest lists of members contained the names of several Jacobites is explained by*

> *the assumption that the Jesuits had sought to misuse Freemasonry for the restoration of the Catholic Stuarts.*[452]

Muslim apologist Omar Zaid asks —

> *Did not the Jesuits benefit when their Jacobins murdered King Louis XVI and Marie Antoinette, as Louis's Bourbon grandfather, Louis XV, had expelled the Society from France in 1764 and Marie's Habsburg mother, Maria Theresa, had expelled the Order from Austria in 1774? Was this not revenge?*[453]

Although the Jacobins failed in England, their failure looked suspicious to men like Tupper Saussy who noted that their destruction can be blamed on the complete lack of Roman support to overthrow the Protestant Crown.

> *The year 1745 is distinguished by the so-called Jacobite Rebellion, another wondrous Sun-tzuan ruse in which apparent defeat for the Society of Jesus masked a hidden victory.*
>
> *The Jacobite Rebellion aimed to restore Roman Catholic rule over England by deposing George II and placing James II's grandson Charles Stuart, better known as Bonnie Prince Charlie, on the throne. However, when Charlie marched on London with a band of Scottish devotees, no Catholic politician of any prominence would desert George II. The Rebellion was forced to abort. Charlie escaped to France and the and the Scots were massacred. Clearly, this was a Catholic disaster. Or was it? Such extensive Catholic support for a Protestant king assured England that the monarchy would be forever Protestant. A Catholic England was now an impossible dream. The Jesuits could give up. Englishmen could now relax with them in their midst, just as Jesuits could now go about their business without causing official alarm. The Jacobite Rebellion made England at last...* ***safe*** *for the black papacy. The Jesuits secured a new cover by blowing their cover – "blown cover as cover" in the parlance of CIA. The Sun-Tzuan General wins whatever the circumstances.*[454]

Is Rome capable of betraying her own soldiers and sacrificing battles to win wars that span centuries? It is a tactic recommended in the "Chinese" manual *Art of War*. Saussy also notes with suspicion that *Art of War* was “translated” by Jesuit Father Jean Joseph Marie Amiot and there is no such historical figure as “Sun Tzu”. The “sun” is far more important to the gnostic Jesuits than the Chinese.

It is noteworthy that even our whistleblower journalist in Baltimore is a Jacobin enthusiast.

Because Baltimore police, prosecutors and judges refused to protect the public as they had been sworn to, regular citizens were forced to replace them with themselves.

Civilian investigator Gemma Hoskins told Netflix, “We heard a story that one day in 1990 at Holy Cross there was a bizarre episode. Father Maskell suddenly told cemetery caretaker William Storey to get a front-loader and dig a 10 x 20 foot hole in the back abandoned part of the cemetery. Maskell brought in a pickup truck filled with boxes wrapped in plastic. They put the boxes into the ground. Maskell told Storey to fill it in and put grass over it. Storey looked at the documents. Maskell fired him a few months later. In August of 1994, when Jane Doe came forward, Mr. Storey went to a Baltimore Detective.”

An officer wishing to remain anonymous told Hoskins that Baltimore PD knew from Storey about the document cache. They had eagerly recovered it but they weren’t going to submit it for prosecution. The officer told Gemma Hoskins and the other investigators that they needed to be careful for their physical safety. “This goes bigger and deeper than you can imagine,” he warned. He also assured them that he would not be taking action either, lest he or his family be harmed.[455]

Jean Wehner’s attorney, Beverly Wallace noted that at the time that the stories began to break, (1983-2004) Maryland Chief Sex Offenders Prosecutor (a black woman) Sharon A. H. May refused to even consider any indictments. Such indictments would’ve forced an investigation due the overwhelming evidence the attorneys had gathered in lieu of police work. [456]

With certification of being “healed”, Maskell remained free and at large.

Exposés like the *Boston Globe* Spotlight investigation into Father John Geoghan and Cardinal Bernard Law sex abuse in Boston and *The Keepers* documentary in Baltimore paint the pictures that "media works" and that abuses were confined to the cities. However, it is clear that rape, torture and murder of innocents is systemic.

It is the Devil's Simulation and it is guarded, owned and run by the Roman Catholic Church.

Baltimore journalist Tom Nugent spoke with the anonymous Police officer who admitted that he had personally interviewed over 100 girls regarding Maskell and sex abuse. "We had a credible, 'Red Ball' case. A 'Red Ball case' is any case that's going to cause national or media attention." As a result, everything they did was, by necessity, done in conjunction with the State Attorney's office.[457]

The anonymous officer took all of his evidence directly to Sharon May.

Gemma Hoskins asked the officer, "I'm curious, that if you had over 100 women with allegations that Maskell had abused them, why didn't you charge him at this time in 1994?"

The officer replied, "I'm telling you, Sharon May ran interference for the Church any time we got a priest case."

Loyola University, Maryland, School of Counseling Professor Lee J. Richmond (a woman) told Netflix, "I met Joe Maskell at [Johns] Hopkins around 1982.[xlvi] At the time I was in charge of counseling. I was a professor, there. They had a program which trained school and community counselors. I would come to see my student [pedophile priest A. Joseph Maskell] as a colleague and as a friend."

Richmond continued, "He liked guns. He told me that he had a collection." ... "I thought, that was his thing." ... "I was supposed to visit him at a certain time once and he said he was busy digging in a cemetery." ... "He said he had to bury some psychological papers there. It sounded strange but I did not question it."

Journalist Bob Erlandson had worked for the *Baltimore Sun* but when investigating Maskell, found himself working alone. Erlandson told Netflix, “We got a call from Storey that the cops were digging up the records.”

The anonymous Baltimore Police Officer volunteered, “I saw pictures myself” of naked teenage girls along with their “profiles”. “Typical pedophile behavior. They can not separate with his [*sic*] collection. Even though he knows he can’t get to it he knows it’s there. ... We could’ve arrested him right then and there. But what I’m saying is, every damn time we had a case involving a priest Sharon May ran interference for the Church. She was the Division Chief of the Sex Offender Unit and she ran interference.”

One of the ways she did that was to deny or delay warrants, knowing that most actionable accusations disappear or go cold within 48 hours.

May remained on as a Maryland government official, transferring to the Office of Community Services and eventually to a lucrative private law practice. “I had just bought a shiny red convertible,” she told Netflix. “I drove to the cemetery with the top down. I was pumped but to my recollection there were nothing that pointed the finger and said, ‘Oh, Maskell molested these kids.’”[458]

Perhaps it was the glare of the sun shining upon her “shiny red convertible” that kept the Prosecutor from seeing what the Police Officer saw.[xlvii]

Allegations of criminal misconduct committed by Baltimore government officials remain unaddressed.

May further told Netflix, “I remember one incident where we had a subpoena to get Maskell’s records ... we talked to a secretary who let us know that Maskell had taken all the stuff and things were gone.” May, an officer of the state, was content to leave it at that.[459]

“He was apparently hospitalized” [in CT] “and given the nature of the facility that wasn’t someplace where we would have access to him.”

Again, we recommend that ordinary citizens not uses these tactics to avoid pursuit by any member of governmental law enforcement. However, Catholic ordination seems to work quite well.

May was very clear to Netflix, “I was and am not Catholic.”

During the legal roundtable, attorneys Michael Lehane represented Maskell (a personal friend), Thomas “Tommy” Harris represented the School Sisters of Notre Dame and Kevin Murphy represented the Archdiocese. Victims now included Teresa Lancaster (“Jane Roe”) along with Jean Wehner (“Jane Doe”).

The battery of lawyers destroyed the two women with probing, humiliating questions.

Wehner’s attorney Beverly Wallace told Netflix, “We wanted to depose Maskell but he disappeared.”

Loyola Professor Lee Richmond knew where he was. He was hiding in the dementia ward of Stella Maris Nursing Facility in Baltimore.[460] Richmond was invited to visit her “friend Joe” and console him in a nearby rectory. “I asked him, ‘Joe how could you do these things? Do you think it’s moral to keep your silence?’ He told me it was because he was protecting the Church.”

In 1994, Maskell was secreted to Ireland.

Aquinas[xlviii] Walter Richard Sipe, a former Benedictine monk, is now a “secular” expert on priest abuse. Sipe — also a Johns Hopkins alum — claims that 6% of Catholic priests illegally “act out” on sexual urges.

Aquinas Sipe still sports the full beard of his days as a priest, although now he prefers to be called “Richard”. Sipe gave his expertise to both the Boston Globe and Netflix but requests for help with this book went unanswered.

In an effort to destroy the allegations of sex abuse victims like Teresa Lancaster and Jean Wehner, the Vatican brought in another Johns Hopkins man: Hopkins Director of Psychiatry, Dr. Paul McHugh.

McHugh used weapons like “false memory phenomenon”, “false memory syndrome” and “recovered memory syndrome” which he called “artifacts[xlix]” and “artificial productions”. Netflix quoted McHugh as saying “we don’t equivocate on this matter.”

It is an interesting statement given that psychiatry is anything but a hard science of strict cause-and-effect rules. If anything *can* be proven it is that the trauma of sex abuse inflicted upon a child or teenager can take *decades* to come to the surface of a psyche.

“Secular” Hopkins Director of Psychiatry Paul McHugh is also on the Catholic Bishops National Review Board and gives his advice on a host of Church issues.

McHugh’s efforts to use his resumé to destroy abuse victims on behalf of the Catholic Church puts him in league with Roman Catholics like Josef Mengele.[461]

McHugh mocked repressed memory as being on par with “unicorns”. Yet it is a medical fact that often results from human beings attempting to deal with insufferable trauma.[462]

Institutional denial and skepticism over repressed memory, Post-Traumatic Stress Disorder and Dissociative Identity Disorder, are extremely suspicious as these are the results of the Devil’s Simulation.

Baltimore Police Captain James L. Scanell used McHugh’s reasoning when he slandered the victims as “treasure hunters”. “Prove it to me,” he told Netflix, “and not with ‘recalled memory’.”

It was on Captain Scanell’s watch that Catherine Cesnik was murdered. Perhaps more than any other, he is responsible for Sister Cathy’s brutal rape (which culminated in having her head bashed in) going “unsolved”.

James Scanell seemed completely oblivious to his responsibility to investigate criminal accusations, or perhaps it was only because of who was accused.

When pressed by Sister Cathy’s *civilian* investigators (doing his job for him), Scanell admitted that Father Anthony Joseph Maskell wasn’t even questioned. Perhaps not by coincidence, Scannell was the first officer dispatched to investigate Cathy Cesnik’s body.

Scannell described the suspect as “a friend and a ***fellow officer***” [emphasis added with incredulity].

Scannell also admitted letting the priest familiarize himself with firearms on the Police range, courtesy of the taxpayers. Did the victims he threatened with guns know he was trained by the Baltimore Police?

Scannell told Netflix that he and Maskell had a “friend” on Dundalk pier and they frequently all fished together. The Captain seemed unaware of any conflict of interest. “He was like any other officer on the force, to me.”

Baltimore Archbishop William Keeler was up for Cardinal when the Maskell/Cesnik story broke. Wehner attorney Beverley Wallace said she thought the scandal would keep Keeler from the Cardinalcy.

Bishop Keeler flew from purple to red with the greatest of ease.

Jane Doe v. Joseph Maskell went to trial just as Pope Saint John Paul II visited Baltimore.

Judge Hilary Caplan refused to waive the 3 year statute of limitations and Jane Wehner lost. It is a statute that continues to be questioned. Only 3-5% of abuse victims ever speak openly about what happened to them. If they do, it’s usually many years after the crimes first occurred.[463]

Sister Cathy’s Forensic Pathologist was Werner Spitz — a man whose career defines the word “cover-up”.

Spitz was the selected coroner for the U.S. government “House Assassination Committee” for both the John F. Kennedy and Martin Luther King, Jr. examinations.

Spitz advised the family of Mary Jo Kopechne who supposedly drowned after spending an evening with Edward “Teddy” Kennedy (she was actually murdered[l]).

Spitz was involved in a civil case against OJ Simpson and he was the medical “expert” in the investigation over the death of JonBenét Ramsey.

He was also called upon as “subject matter expert” in the trials of “Night Stalker” Richard Ramirez, Casey Anthony (chief suspect in the disappearance of her two year old daughter Caylee), the Memphis 3 and the Norfolk 4.[464]

Murder(s)

Joyce Helen Malecki was a Maskell parishioner; she was in the pews when Father Maskell gave Mass. He received her confessions.

Four days after Sister Cathy disappeared, Joyce Malecki's body was found on Fort Meade in Baltimore. She had been stabbed and strangled (authorities refused to disclose if she was sexually assaulted).

Because she was found on “Federal land”, the investigation was turned over to the FBI. There it ended.

Joyce Malecki was 20 years old.

In 2014, believing the murders to be related, citizen investigator Gemma Hoskins filed a FOIA request with the FBI. She found that there were some four thousand documents related to the Malecki murder.

Three years later, she told Netflix that the Federal government has yet to honor the stipulations of the Freedom of Information Act.

*****

At the height of public interest in the murder of Sister Cathy Cesnik and the accusations of abuse at Archbishop Keogh High School, the Catholic Church released 50 names of priests accused of sexual assault, including that of Father Anthony Joseph Maskell.

Only one of those priests was criminally convicted...he pled guilty.

Chapter 11

“A Gross Breach Of Trust...”

1978: *Tony Walsh is ordained a Roman Catholic priest and begins his “ministry” in the west Dublin parish of Ballyfermot, Ireland — a location already stalked by pedophiles like radio personality Eamon Cooke and priests William Carney and Francis McCarthy. Before even graduating seminary, Walsh was accused of sexually abusing an 8 year old boy.*

The serial criminal predations of the powerful pedophiles in Dublin were so egregious that citizen outrage forced the formation of a government “commission”.

It was chaired by a woman, Yvonne Murphy — a Circuit Court judge from 1998 to 2010.

Barely more forthright than historical examples like the Warren Commission or the 9/11 Commission, the Murphy Commission’s agenda was essentially the same: acknowledge some facts that have been duly hidden by compatriots in the media while continuing to screen for the source of the crimes at the top.

Like the previous examples, few would bother to read the Murphy Commission Report (published in 2009).

Even so, the exploits of Father Tony Murphy, “the singing priest”, were so extreme that, at first his identity was protected under the pseudonym “Fr. Jovito”. However, the section (Chapter 19) was ultimately redacted entirely, along with the next (Chapter 20) dealing with the criminal predations of Father Patrick Joseph McCabe (rather clumsily, to boot).[li]

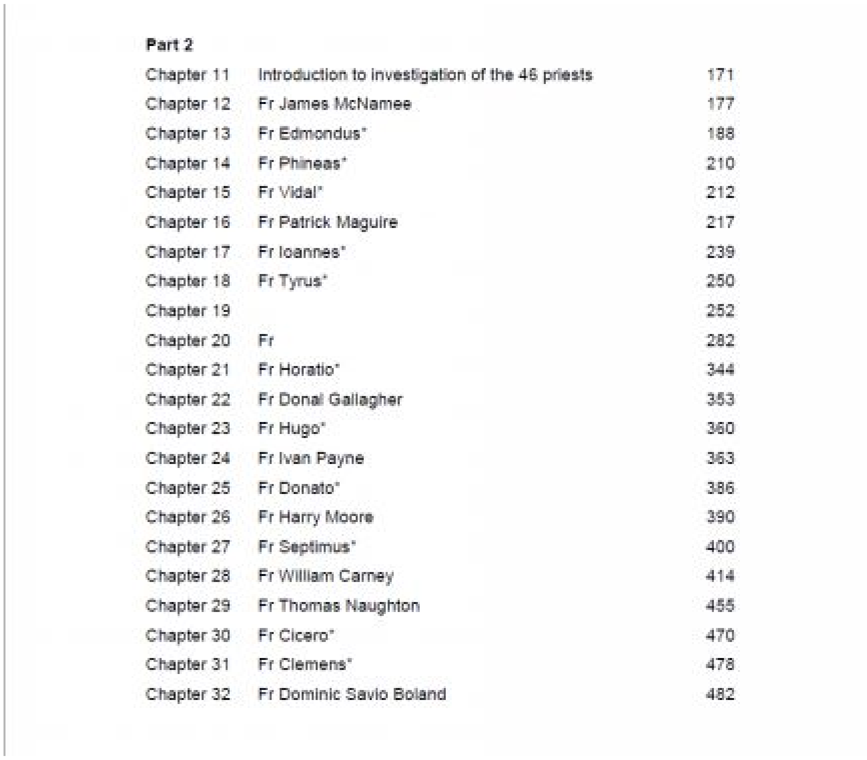

Part 2

Chapter 11	Introduction to investigation of the 46 priests	171
Chapter 12	Fr James McNamee	177
Chapter 13	Fr Edmondus*	188
Chapter 14	Fr Phineas*	210
Chapter 15	Fr Vidal*	212
Chapter 16	Fr Patrick Maguire	217
Chapter 17	Fr Ioannes*	239
Chapter 18	Fr Tyrus*	250
Chapter 19		252
Chapter 20	Fr	282
Chapter 21	Fr Horatio*	344
Chapter 22	Fr Donal Gallagher	353
Chapter 23	Fr Hugo*	360
Chapter 24	Fr Ivan Payne	363
Chapter 25	Fr Donato*	386
Chapter 26	Fr Harry Moore	390
Chapter 27	Fr Septimus*	400
Chapter 28	Fr William Carney	414
Chapter 29	Fr Thomas Naughton	455
Chapter 30	Fr Cicero*	470
Chapter 31	Fr Clemens*	478
Chapter 32	Fr Dominic Savio Boland	482

The material was eventually released but if few read the original Murphy Report, even fewer read the missing chapters 5 years afterward.

The most shocking aspect of Murphy Chapter 19 is the extent to which Church leadership, secular authorities and even the Catholic parents of the victims enabled Walsh’s heinous acts.

As a result, we will examine them in detail but rest assured, the same chain of events has occurred every time a predator came to light.

> *19.1 In 1995 Archbishop* [Desmond] *Connell* [Archbishop of Dublin and Primate of Ireland] *wrote that Fr. Walsh “is a confirmed paedophile. He was ordained in 1978, but even before his ordination – as it subsequently appeared – he was engaged in paedophiliac activities with minors”.*
>
> *19.2 Fr. Walsh is probably the most notorious child sexual abuser to have come to the attention of the Commission. The Commission is aware of more than 40 named people who have complained of child sexual abuse by him. He has admitted to abusing many others...*

Apparently recruited into his position of pedophile predator priest, Walsh was immediately plugged in.

> *19.3 Fr. Walsh was born in 1954. He was ordained in 1978. The earliest allegations against him predate his ordination. He himself has admitted that he abused before he was ordained but most of the complaints about his activities prior to 1978 did not surface until many years later. It is known that during his time as a seminarian he had a key to the house of another well known* [sic] *abuser, Fr. Noel Reynolds (see Chapter 35), and it is alleged that some of the abuse took place in that house. While he was in Clonliffe College, he organised visits by groups of altar boys to Clonliffe and it is alleged that he abused some of them on the seminary premises.*

A cabal of pedophile priests preyed upon the children of Ballyfermot like a pack of hyenas in the midst of a flock of lambs.

They were organized and systematic.

> *During his final years at Clonliffe College, Fr. Bill Carney and his friend Fr. Francis McCarthy visited children's homes around Dublin, offering to help the boys and girls with their school work and taking them out on day trips that later became overnight trips and holidays.*
>
> *They started an altar boy circle at Clonliffe College. When Carney and McCarthy were ordained in 1974, Tony Walsh, who was still a seminarian, took charge of the altar boys, leading the trips to Clonliffe College.*
>
> *Carney was posted to Ballyfermot Vocational School, and his friend McCarthy to Dunlavin in Co Wicklow. Carney used to visit McCarthy at weekends in Dunlavin, according to the Murphy Report. Victims later told the Murphy team that they were abused by both McCarthy and Carney. ~ Sunday Independent*[465]

What further enabled Walsh and continues to help the pedophile priesthood is the criminal collusion of indoctrinated Roman Catholic parents. Astoundingly, their loyalty to the Roman Beast feeding on their own children outweighed any instincts or compassion they felt for their offspring.

> ***First complaint, 1978***
>
> *19.5 Fr. Walsh's first appointment was to Ballyfermot parish in July 1978. Two days after his appointment a complaint was received at Archbishop's House that he had sexually abused an eight-year-old boy. The abuse was alleged to have taken place within the previous month at the house of the aforementioned Fr. Noel Reynolds. The parents of the boy concerned informed a priest about the alleged abuse. He in turn spoke to Archbishop Ryan's secretary. A note on the file to the Archbishop in July 1978 refers to a "homosexual incident involving a young lad … and a newly ordained Dublin diocesan priest". The Archbishop asked a vicar general, Monsignor Glennon, to investigate the matter.*
>
> *19.6 It was noted by the priest to whom the complaint was made that "the parents are most responsible people and there is no danger of publicity". The Archdiocese made no response to the boy's parents nor, indeed, to the priest to whom the complaint was made.*

This kept everything "in-house" and allowed Walsh's superiors to keep him active.

When Walsh was finally examined by a court of law, first in 1995, and again in 2010, details of his enabling by Catholic parents shocked juries.

> *The court heard that when one boy told his parents about the abuse, they viciously beat him. "How can you say that about a man of God, a man of the cloth?" they asked him before sending him back down to Walsh who again molested him. ~ Irish Times*[466]

The process was (still is) both highly codified and yet as ancient as the Roman Empire.

> *19.7 Fr. Walsh was interviewed by Monsignor Glennon. In his note of this meeting, Monsignor Glennon described the alleged abuse as involving: "**osculae, amplexus and tactus immodesti**". This translates as kisses, embraces and shameless touching.*

> *19.8 Fr. Walsh categorically denied any abuse and stated that the boy concerned had been merely sitting on his knee. The vicar general noted that "Fr. [Walsh] impressed me as telling the truth." Nothing further was done.*

Walsh went immediately back to work and, again, the next victim's parent brought her concerns back to the very Machine responsible for the predation, rather than to the secular authorities to conduct a criminal investigation.

> ***Next complaint, 1979***
>
> *19.9 The next complaint was made by the mother of a 14-year-old boy who alleged that he was abused by Fr. Walsh in Ballyfermot in 1978 and 1979. The boy and his parents lived on the north side of Dublin. The abuse ended when he told his mother. She promptly went to her parish priest who told her that he would contact Archbishop's House about the matter. After some time had elapsed and no further word had been received, the boy's mother contacted the parish priest of Ballyfermot, Canon Val Rogers, seeking some action. The only action taken was that Fr. Michael Cleary, who was also based in Ballyfermot at the time, was sent to the boy's house some time* [sic] *in early 1980 in order to educate him on issues of male sexuality. The mother told the* [253]*Commission that Fr. Cleary did apologise. There are no records available of any communication between the boy's family and the Archdiocese around this time. In 1985, Canon Rogers told Monsignor* [Alexander] *Stenson that matters were "hushed up" at the time of the mother's complaint.*

Certainly, when a trusted cleric exploits his position to prey upon an innocent child, an "apology" usually serves the cause of justice to all concerned.

Sadly, secular authorities were little help when they *were* involved.

Playing the game, Walsh's superior (Monsignor Alexander Stenson) sent the serial predator for "counseling".

> ***Treatment***
>
> *19.19 Monsignor Stenson recommended that Fr. Walsh approach a psychiatrist with a view to addressing "his problem". Fr. Walsh attended the psychiatrist on two occasions. In June 1985, the psychiatrist told Monsignor Stenson that Fr. Walsh was amenable to treatment and that there were three treatment alternatives: medication, electric shock therapy and what was referred to as the "re-orientation method to channel the drive appropriately". Fr. Walsh had elected for the third option as the "lesser of the evils". The psychiatrist was "'cautiously optimistic' that this could be successful given the fact that Fr. [Walsh] had not the normal sexual outlets available to him in virtue of his priesthood".*

Actually, the reverse is the stark truth.

Like alcoholics, a pedophile can never be fully "healed" but unlike alcoholics they are a danger to children around them rather to themselves.

> *Most of us cannot think of a greater sin than hurting a child and when the offense is a sex crime, well, we often feel even greater anger, if that's possible, against the perpetrator. It is terrifying to learn, then, that treatment programs do not rehabilitate sexual offenders before they are released from prison. So says Dr. David K. Ho, consultant forensic psychiatrist, clinical research lead, South Essex Partnership University NHS Foundation Trust, in his new opinion piece appearing in the British Medical Journal.*
>
> *"People should know that the treatments offenders receive in prisons and secure hospitals lack evidence of efficacy," Ho states.*
>
> *Are we ready to heed his warning? While Ho, whose credentials suggest he certainly knows his subject matter, speaks convincingly... ~ Medical Daily*[467]

Even more surprising is Dr. Ho's admonition that lust to defile children sexually is related to other "non-traditional" sexual desires.

> *Typically, we think of sex crimes as including rape, child sex abuse, sexual assault, female genital mutilation, incest, and the, in most*

> *people's minds, lesser crimes of exhibitionism and prostitution. Yet, sexual offending, says Ho, "consists of a heterogeneous group of acts, which may not include but are likely to include at least some elements of paraphilia," defined as mental disorders of sexual preference, such as pedophilia, voyeurism, fetishism, exhibitionism, frotteurism (rubbing up against a non-consenting person), sadomasochism, sexual sadism, sexual masochism, and disorders not otherwise specified.*[468]

Although no authority would dare question the correlation between homosexuality and pedophilia the evidence is there (and we will examine it shortly).

The system remained tidy and self-contained thanks to Catholic parents who brought their chicks back to the foxes.

> ***Further complaint, October 1985***
>
> *19.20 In October 1985, a parent complained to Fr.* [Donal] *O'Doherty, the parish priest in Ballyfermot, that Fr. Walsh had indecently assaulted a young girl. Fr. O'Doherty reported this to Bishop O'Mahony who, in turn, told Monsignor Stenson. The psychiatrist was informed. Fr. Walsh denied this allegation.*
>
> *19.21 No further inquiries were made. There is no evidence that any new treatment was considered. ...*

In many municipalities it is now illegal for any medical professional to deal with a known pedophile and not report the matter to law enforcement ... not that such a report would bring results.

The unsuspecting Murphy investigator seemed flabbergasted that Walsh could then be promoted with congratulations from Dublin Archbishop Dermot J. Ryan.

> *19.21 ... Fr. Walsh was removed from Ballyfermot and appointed to Westland Row. The Archbishop's letter appointing him states: "I take this opportunity to thank you for your dedicated work in Ballyfermot". While this is the standard formula in such appointments, it is, nevertheless, astonishing that it could be used in the light of Fr. Walsh's history in Ballyfermot. Since he left Ballyfermot in 1985,*

> *numerous complainants have come forward alleging abuse by Fr. Walsh while he was there.*

The Murphy investigator continues to appear unaware that Walsh's promotion was a determined effort by his superiors to keep him active and amongst a flock that had little idea he was a wolf in a priest's collar.

> *19.24 At this stage, the Archdiocese was aware of four specific complaints and a number of concerns.*[lii] *Fr. Walsh had admitted to the abuse of three children. It is difficult to understand how the seriousness of his situation was not fully appreciated. It is also difficult to conclude that the move was for any purpose other than to avoid further scandal in Ballyfermot. Fr. Walsh was removed from a parish in which the parish priest was aware of his activities*[257] *and was endeavouring to restrain him to a parish in which, it would appear, the parish priest had no awareness of his proclivities.*

The continued collaboration by Roman Catholic parents with the very Leviathan that preyed upon their children insured Walsh's free reign — even when he left a trail of traumatized children in his wake.

> *19.25 Meanwhile, the mother of the 1979 complainant was in touch with Monsignor Stenson because of her son's continuing difficulties. She was being assisted by a priest who was a member of a religious order. This priest was clearly angry at the way the matter was being handled and he upbraided the Archbishop for unsatisfactory responses to the mother's letters and said: "I think that [the mother] may be forgiven if she regards this letter as an attempt to sweep the matter under a carpet". He went on to say: "Scandal has been given and serious harm done to a young boy by a priest of the Archdiocese. If it is neither feasible nor desirable that this unfortunate priest himself personally try to undo the damage he has done, is it not your duty as his Superior to do so…".*
>
> *19.26 Monsignor Stenson met the mother who wanted help for her son and wanted to ensure that Fr. Walsh did not carry on his singing activities around her area. Monsignor Stenson noted: "I was*

> *impressed by this woman who is obviously a concerned person and who is distressed by what has happened to her son [...].*

The fact that these parents were finally able to locate a sympathetic priestly ear does not abrogate them from responsibility to being accomplices in the abuse of their own children.

The fact that nothing came from the "angry" priest's letters further validates that said parents are criminally negligible.

An entertainment cover was created for the pedophile priests, like enemy agents in a foreign nation (which is exactly what they were).

> *Over the years, Fr. Michael Cleary seemed to watch out for Walsh. Cleary was then a charismatic, celebrity priest who was the "warm up" act for Pope John Paul's historic mass on his visit to Ireland in 1979.*
>
> *Like Cleary, Walsh was a singer too. He was in a group of singing priests who toured an act called the 'Holy Show' in which he did Elvis impersonations.*
>
> *Fr. Cleary had secrets of his own — long relationship with his housekeeper with whom he fathered two sons.* ~ Independent[469]

Walsh left copious amounts of evidence that he was an arch criminal and sexual deviant who even went as far as sedating his victims with intravenous narcotics.

> ***1987***

> *19.28 In January 1987, the housekeeper to the administrator in Westland Row alleged that she found items of her clothing in Fr. Walsh's room. This included underwear which, she alleged, had been "used". She had to burn the clothing. She also found condoms and syringes in his room. She further mentioned that a number of boys had slept overnight in his bed and a boy from Balllyfermot had been visiting. Monsignor Stenson noted that he had "no doubt about her truthfulness".*

The mind boggles at the unending stream of Catholic parents willing to allow their children to be violated by trusted clergy.

> *19.32 Monsignor Stenson met the parents who had made the most recent complaint. He noted: "[The father] said that he would not like [J]*[liii] *to suffer because of one misdemeanour. They pray for him and hope he can get help. I was greatly impressed by this couple. They were extremely kind and concerned. I did not indicate that there was a history of this behaviour".*

A decade after the first reports of his criminal activities came to the attention of his superiors, they finally acted...sending him to therapy.

But by now, even his therapist was showing deep concern.

> *19.34 In May 1988, ten years after the first complaint was made to the Archdiocese, the Archbishop and the auxiliary bishops decided to send Fr. Walsh to Stroud* [a mental health facility in Gloucestershire, England] *for treatment. He was removed from his position in Westland Row in June 1988.*
>
> ***Stroud, 1988***
>
> *19.35 Monsignor Stenson provided Stroud with a brief history of the incidents he had investigated together with a copy of Fr. Walsh's statement.*[260] *Shortly after Fr. Walsh's arrival in Stroud, his therapist there reported to Monsignor Stenson that Fr. Walsh appeared to be more realistic about his situation than other similar men. A month later, Monsignor Stenson noted the following comments made by a psychologist from Stroud: "[J]*[liv] *is 'extremely compulsive – there*

> *have been an awful lot of children involved he is a very disturbed man he is always going to be dangerous. He could not be let near schools, children, Confession without a grille etc…'".*

Note that the therapist made the report — not to law enforcement — but to Church officials.

> *19.36 In its final report in November 1988, Stroud said that ... under no circumstances should he* [Walsh] *have any apostolate involving children.*

This was a secular British medical facility turning a clear threat to children back to his religious hierarchy. That hierarchy did exactly what they have before and since — put the monster back into circulation.

Not only did Walsh's behavior show him to be a malignant serial predator, he was also clearly a satanist who looked to cause physical, emotional and spiritual harm from his position as a trusted religious representative.

On one occasion he sodomized a young boy with a crucifix.[470]

After his "therapy" at Stroud, he resumed his activities.

> *19.43 In the meantime, Fr. Walsh started to resume his old behaviour. Parents complained to Monsignor Stenson that, at a fete* ["festival"] *at All Hallows* [College] *in August 1989, Fr. Walsh brought their son to his car, sat him on his lap and "kissed him..."*

Almost as astounding as the parents who enabled the pedophile to prey upon their children, are the number of secular medical professionals who never thought to report to anyone other than a Roman Catholic authority. That was despite their findings that Walsh was an extremely dangerous individual in a key position of trust that gave him access to countless unsuspecting families.

> *19.48 Further medical reports were received, in December 1989 and January 1990, from the psychiatrist who had treated him in 1985 and from the psychotherapist he had been attending since early 1989. The psychiatrist's report was described by Monsignor Stenson as "anything*

> *but encouraging". The psychiatrist considered that Fr. Walsh had made no real progress over the four years 1985 – 1989.*

Although there was talk of "laicization" (defrocking Walsh), no moves were made to restrict him in any way.

In fact, he was allowed to return to where his crimes first began to again prey upon the children of that same parish!

When a concerned parent realized what had happened, she did what she thought she was supposed to...and complained to the Archdiocese.

> *19.57 In March 1991, a scout leader and a parent contacted the Archdiocese to report that Fr. Walsh was back in Dublin.*[lv] *Fr. Walsh had been seen with a boy in his car and was calling frequently to this boy's house.*

Still, the appearance of action had to be kept up.

> *19.59 At a bishops' meeting in March 1991 it was decided to institute a penal process against Fr. Walsh. The bishops also discussed informing the Gardai but did not do so.*

The *Garda Síochána* ("Guardians of the Peace") or *Gardaí* are the national police of Ireland; the Irish equivalent of the FBI.

In both cases the institutions are far more complicit in committing crimes rather than solving them.

In relation to Father Tony Walsh, the *Gardaí* were his "secular" law enforcement enablers.

In August of 1991, the first brave parent in 20 years of Walsh's reign of terror got in touch with law enforcement.

Sadly, she received the same response if she would've called the Archdiocese like the rest.

> *19.64 In August 1991, Fr. Walsh had a review meeting with Monsignor Stenson*[lvi] *where he expressed his dissatisfaction with Mellifont* [an Abbey where he received more "counseling"]. *He refused to go to the*

therapeutic centre in the UK stating that he was happy with his current therapist.

> ***Concerns reported to Gardai***
>
> *19.65 Shortly after this meeting, Fr. Walsh approached a young boy in Drumcondra and, having established his name and address, asked him to get into the car. The boy immediately went home and told his mother. The following day he called to the boy's house. The mother called the Gardai.*
>
> *19.66 The garda investigation started in the absence of any specific allegation of child sexual abuse.*[lvii] *The Gardai contacted Mellifont. A priest in Mellifont told the Gardai that Fr. Walsh was in Mellifont because there were numerous allegations of paedophilia against him and referred them to the Archdiocese. In his report on the matter in 2002, the garda investigating the case stated that, as no crime had been committed, he himself reported the matter (he does not say to whom and there is no record of a report on the garda files) and then circulated Fr. Walsh's car number and a description of Fr. Walsh as being likely to engage in paedophilia. No attempt was made at that stage to investigate the statement that Fr. Walsh had been sent to Mellifont because of numerous allegations of paedophilia.*

The Gardaí response was lackadaisical and incompetent. Rather than conduct an independent investigation, Gardaí asked the foxes if they've been in the hen-house.

> *19.67 The Archdiocese took the fact that Fr. Walsh had now come to the attention of the Gardai far more seriously than the Gardai did. Monsignor Stenson noted: "Apparently [a garda] from Whitehall Garda Station had been looking for a Fr. [Walsh] with an address at Mellifont. [Walsh] had approached a child and the mother had complained to the Police. … I rang [the garda] and explained who I was and what I had heard. I asked if he could provide details. He did but wondered if [Walsh] had a record. I evaded that but told him to proceed with whatever steps he thought he should take."*

As the monster was coddled with counseling, he continued to prey upon children unhindered by cops or clergy.

> *19.69 In September 1991, the Archbishop ordered Fr. Walsh to live in St. John of God psychiatric hospital until such time as he was to be transferred to the therapeutic centre in the U.K. On the night before he was due to enter St John of God's, he attempted to persuade a young boy aged 11, whom he had baptised, into his car. The boy refused. He then followed the boy to his house and attempted to persuade his sister that the boy should go out with him. The family called the Gardai. In an interview with his psychologist the following day Fr. Walsh described the boy as "incredibly good looking".*

In fact, the Gardaí were even nice enough to tell Walsh's superiors the coast was clear. A pesky officer trying to do their job was handled proper.

> *19.70 A few days later, the garda investigating the concerns expressed in August 1991 rang Monsignor Stenson inquiring about Fr. Walsh's whereabouts. It seems that gardai from another station had been in touch with him concerning a young boy who had recently been approached by Fr. Walsh outside a shopping centre. Monsignor Stenson told the garda that Fr. Walsh was in St. John of God's*[lviii] *and that he had no access to his car. It then emerged that this Garda was aware of an incident involving Fr. Walsh and the most recent complainant which occurred a year earlier. At the time, the garda reported the incident to the boy's headmaster but did not do anything else. Monsignor Stenson's note of these contacts with the garda ends: "[the garda] assured me that there was 'no question of prosecution'...".*

Embarrassed, the Murphy Report noted this "lapse" in duty.

> *19.73 ...for all practical purposes, any garda investigation into Fr. Walsh's activities ceased at this point even though by now, while there were no specific complaints of child sexual abuse known to the Gardai, they were aware of three incidents of suspicious behaviour. Of course, Monsignor Stenson's failure to tell the Gardai of the other known allegations against Fr. Walsh meant that they were, as yet, unaware of the bigger problem.*[lix]

Walsh continued to bounce from clinic to clinic rather than from prison to prison. While at an unspecified clinic in the United Kingdom he admitted to defiling over 100 boys.[471]

The true and final numbers will never be known.

Said “U.K. clinic” appears to be unspecified by the Murphy Report to cover *their* criminal enabling of Walsh!

> ***1992***
>
> *19.75 Fr. Walsh returned to the U.K. clinic in January 1992 to begin his intensive course. A remarkable tale then emerged. Apparently the clinic allowed Fr. Walsh to roam the streets of the nearby large city unsupervised. He dressed in clerical attire and introduced himself to local clergy and said mass in local churches. He befriended a family with young children telling them that he was training as a counsellor at the clinic and that if they saw him with other people in the street they should not approach him as you could not be too careful around sex offenders. Fr. Walsh visited their house and paid a lot of attention to their 11-year-old son including sitting him on his lap. He agreed to baby-sit for their children. By chance, the father of the children[270] called to the clinic where the true story emerged. Fr. Walsh was immediately removed from the clinic and returned to Ireland.*

Certainly Walsh must’ve been sorely disappointed that the child’s father wasn’t a more dutiful Catholic.

Despite Monsignor Stenson alerting the Gardaí to this latest incident, corrective action was left to the foxes and it was as anemic as all previous “actions”.

> *19.76 Monsignor Stenson reported Fr. Walsh’s return to the garda sergeant and commented: “In view of Fr. [Walsh’s] behaviour in the past you might give this information whatever attention you think it may require”.*
>
> *19.77 In March 1992, the bishops again decided that he was to be instructed not to say mass, not to wear clerical dress and not to exercise any functions of priesthood. He was to engage in a form of*

> *occupational therapy and it was decided to inform a number of parish priests of the position. He was also told that he could not use his car. He was given work in the archdiocesan library.*

Truly, the entire lot should be in prison awaiting sentencing; both cops and clergy.

As his reign of terror began to burden “the Church”, moves were slowly made to defrock him — but nothing more.

His own psychologist was astounded.

> *19.87 Fr. Walsh’s psychologist was not impressed with the decision to dismiss him from the priesthood. He expressed his dissatisfaction to Fr. Aidan McGrath (who was Fr. Walsh’s advocate or procurator during the penal process) in September 1993: “As you know, I favour judgements in the courts which both impose a punishment, but which allow genuine change to lead to escape from that punishment. Good deeds can earn both remission and forgiveness. [Walsh] faces no such prospect, and I wonder why this kind of sentence was excluded”.*

Perhaps if the psychologist had hounded law enforcement, personally, he would’ve been more than simply “astounded”.

After *decades* of raping children, as Irish superiors *finally* began ineffective action against Walsh, Rome intervened to insure even *this* was circumvented!

> *19.89 In October 1993, Fr. Walsh appealed to Rome against the decision to dismiss him. ... In June 1994, the appellate judges in Rome allowed* [Walsh] [273]*to remain in the clerical state...*

As the years rolled on, Walsh continued to approach children unhindered.

No venue was sacred.

Perhaps, more accurately, no venue was “off limits” as Walsh clearly associated Roman Catholicism with worship of Lucifer which he proved by his incessant and heinous behavior.

During court proceedings in 2010 it was revealed that Walsh frequently used the confessional to rape boys. Even presiding magistrate Frank O’Donnell (a Catholic) was disturbed.

> *“It is difficult to imagine more reprehensible circumstances than a priest in confession setting about the sexual abuse of a young boy,” the judge said. “This is a gross breach of trust, and that’s putting it mildly.” ~ Irish Times*[472]

In fact, as a Luciferian, Walsh found perverse pleasure in exploiting what his victims would consider “holy” such as grooming boys during the funeral of a family member (which he did repeatedly).

Although the Garda was now involved, Ireland’s Finest continued to sit on the sidelines.

> *19.90 Meanwhile, a complaint of sexual assault was made to the Gardai. In May 1994, a young boy complained to the Gardai in Ballyfermot that he had been sexually assaulted by Fr. Walsh in the toilet of a pub following the funeral of the boy’s grandfather. The family alleged that a similar incident had happened a year earlier but they did not report it at the time. The Gardai contacted Monsignor Stenson. Fr. Walsh attended the garda station and declined to answer any questions. The Gardai told Monsignor Stenson of their intention to arrest Fr. Walsh. They also told him that they were in the process of “linking of various skeletons” and that press were “sniffing out a story”. Fr. Walsh denied the allegation.*

Notice that the good Catholic family could’ve reported a “similar incident” previously, but didn’t.

The media got involved. Agents of the Devil’s Simulation there also made sure that Walsh was still protected.

When one of Walsh’s victims became suicidal, his mother contacted ... well, you know who.

> *19.91 In late 1994 there were newspaper reports about this latest incident; these did not name either Fr. Walsh or the boy. In December 1994, a mother of boys who had been abused by Fr. Walsh rang*

> *Monsignor Stenson to say that her son was suicidal and that Fr. Walsh had been babysitting in recent weeks.*

This new “media attention” — despite being as anemic as the Garda response — was still attacked by the clergy.

> *19.93 In spite of the mounting evidence and in the light of the recent media coverage, Monsignor* [Gerard] *Sheehy advised Archbishop Connell: “I think it important that every one of us should at this stage avoid any excessive reaction – no matter what the civil law may say. Least of all should we pay any real attention to the money-making posturing of the media”.*

Perhaps it’s not surprising that Sheehy would so aggressively defend a monster like Father Tony Walsh; Sheehy was ordained at the same Holy Cross seminary in Clonliffe.[473]

Finally, in February of 1995, Walsh was charged with a single assault, convicted and sentenced to a year in prison. [Murphy 19.95]

Astoundingly, he continued to walk free and the “problem” of where to station him arose for “the Church”. [Murphy 19.98]

Now that he was a convicted pedophile, the Archdiocese decided it was a good time to give up some of the extensive records of his activities. [Murphy 19.96]

Walsh was charged with new offenses in July of 1995 but the proceedings were suspended so that the Garda could “collate all the cases.”

He continued to roam free, even as a convicted pedophile.

The Garda made no moves that weren’t first co-ordinated with the Church.

> *19.100 In July 1995, Fr. Walsh was charged with further sexual offences in the District Court. The case was adjourned to allow the Gardai pursue further investigations. In November 1995, the Gardai told Monsignor Stenson that all garda stations had been asked to collate all cases they had concerning Fr. Walsh.*

Walsh further thwarted justice by exploiting free legal aid which gave him eight more years of opportunity to rape children.[474]

Over a year later, the convicted pedophile was finally defrocked, though still roaming free and living at the Mount Melleray Abbey. [Murphy 19.104]

Sad to see Walsh put out, Pope Saint John Paul II and the Curia awarded the serial child rapist £10,500 in “severance pay”. [19.105]

As the convictions rolled in, the courts played a judicial game of propaganda; instead of requiring Walsh to serve terms for his offenses consecutively, they were lumped together concurrently. This allowed the government to appear to be hammering the priest with multiple convictions but, in actuality, he would only be required to serve the time for a single one. [19.109]

One reason Walsh’s “therapists” never turned him over to authorities is because they were paid by his superiors to keep things quiet.

This conflict of interest continued through the pedophile priest’s trials, much to the anger of his victims. [19.111]

During the proceedings it surfaced that victims were displeased with relying upon clergy for justice and restitution, although one can’t help but wonder why.

> *19.113 ...one complainant told the Commission that he was unhappy with how he was treated and said that “the Church have failed me and still fail me today”.*

As Walsh’s *concurrent* prison time passed quickly, he came up for release.

It was September of 2001. [19.116][lx]

Upon his release, Walsh ignored his laicization and continued on as a Roman Catholic priest! The response of Rome was to “threaten” him with “excommunication” (which never occurred). [19-119]

As a result of the actions of Ireland’s law enforcement, judges, the Director of Public Prosecutions and Catholic clergy from Dublin to Rome, Tony

Walsh continued to rape children as a defrocked priest even after his sickeningly short, concurrent prison term(s).

> *19.122 Between 2002 and 2006, over 20 further individuals alleged that they were abused by Walsh.*

In 2010, Walsh was again brought into court and, again, Ireland's "Justice System" served up injustice.

It should be noted that the sickening leniency Walsh received was the "harshest" of any pedophile priest.

> *Five of the 13 counts, for buggery, attracted sentences of 10, 12, 14, 16 and 16 years each. The remaining counts, for indecent assault, brought sentences ranging from four to nine years. As Walsh is to serve his sentences concurrently, 16 years is the maximum time he will spend in jail. It is the most severe sentence ever imposed on a clerical child sex abuser in the State. (Four years were suspended, as a psychologist's report said it was unlikely Walsh would offend again.) With good behaviour Walsh could be out of jail in 2019.*
>
> *Fr. Brendan Smyth, probably Ireland's most notorious clerical paedophile, was jailed for 12 years at the Circuit Criminal Court in July 1997. He died a month into his sentence. Another notorious abuser, the Donegal priest Fr. Eugene Greene, was released in 2008 after serving nine years of a 12-year sentence. ~ Irish Times*[475]

What little "justice" was delivered by the agents of the Devil's Simulation was the result of citizens like one of his victims who hounded authorities for seventeen years seeking for Walsh to be reined in.[476]

The same scenario played out across decades of abuse but the details of just a few incidents show what satanic sociopaths Tony Walsh, all such pedophiles and all who aid them, are. He repeatedly mixed "sacred" religious paraphernalia in with his crimes (part of the Luciferian ritual?) and was completely unfazed by the pain he caused his child victims.

> *In David's case Walsh did not plead guilty and forced a trial. The jury last month found him guilty, unanimously and after just 94 minutes, on the 13 counts. The speed of the conviction was down to David himself,*

> *who, as Justice O'Donnell said on Monday, had been "an absolute stalwart" in his evidence to the court.*
>
> *David's victim-impact statement, prepared by the psychiatrist Prof Ivor Browne, includes the details of three shocking incidents. One took place in "a small tunnel" at the Phoenix Park, "towards the Furry Glen", where there was "a small cream mattress". David was raped there by Walsh. The boy "felt severe pain and cried a lot".*
>
> *Afterwards Walsh wiped him with "a purple sash (stole) he had with him". When Walsh picked up his jacket "a small receptacle for holding Holy Communion wafers fell out of his pocket". He brought David back to the presbytery, "put on Elvis records ... and gave him a glass of Coke". He then showed David "a Bible with pictures of hell and said if he told anyone he would burn in hell and never go to heaven and then he let him go home". ~ Irish Times*[477]

Shockingly, as David attempted to get help from his family, he was assaulted again!

> *These were not isolated incidents. As Prof* [Ivor] *Browne* [of the Rape Crisis Centre and the Institute of Psychosocial Medicine in Sandycove, Dublin] *said in the victim-impact report, they were described in detail "because they were particularly heinous". But, he continued, "it should be stressed that over the five years, between the ages of seven and 12, that this abuse continued, David was raped anally and buggered by the priest on average a couple of times a week." When David told his uncle what Walsh had been doing to him, his uncle also raped him "on a couple of occasions".*[478]

Were these just unbelievably bad circumstances or evidence of a network of child rapists?

Although the link in this instance is tenuous, if one considers the possibility that interdimensional agencies ("demons") were contributing, it becomes more likely.

Other victims like David continued to step forward and force government officials to act. As a result, Tony Walsh is back in prison and not due for release until 2023.

Even this can not be considered “justice”.

Unfortunately for Ireland’s citizenry, the Catholic Church saw to the abolishment of the death penalty in 1964.

The criminal behavior from Ireland’s religious and “secular” authorities by enabling monsters to prey upon the citizenry they are sworn to protect is why Chapter 19 of the Murphy report was redacted.

John Charles McQuaid: Ruler of Catholic Ireland

One man not examined by the Murphy Commission was Archbishop John McQuaid; arguably the most powerful man in Ireland during his tenure.

> *The HSE* [Health Service Executive, the governmental authority for Ireland’s Catholic-sponsored socialized medicine] *has refused to explain why an allegation that one of the most powerful figures in the Catholic Church had abused a minor was not passed to a commission investigating abuse in the Dublin Archdiocese.*
>
> *Gardai last night said they were still investigating two complaints made against former Archbishop of Dublin John Charles McQuaid.*
>
> *Yesterday it emerged that one of the complaints — made in 2003 — was never reported to the Murphy Commission.*
>
> *Dr. McQuaid was archbishop between 1940 and 1972 and was criticised by the commission for his failure to protect children from abusive priests. He died in 1973.*
>
> *Yesterday it emerged that the 2003 complaint was not forwarded to the Murphy inquiry until May 2009, just as it was winding down.*
>
> *Details of that complaint — and a second made directly to the Dublin Archdiocese — were contained in the supplementary report to the Dublin Archdiocese Investigation by the Murphy Commission.*
>
> *The HSE refused to comment on why the allegation had never been investigated. ~ The Irish Independent*[479]

In fact, despite the procedure of the Devil’s Simulation to only promote those who partake in the defiling of children, Roman Catholic Bishops and Cardinals remain untouched by media or law enforcement.

Yet the likelyhood that they are criminals is absolutely assured, if only how they enable the heinous acts of their subordinates.

But in McQuaid’s case, there is even more.

> *Allegations that Dr. McQuaid had abused children first emerged in 1999 in a biography of the cleric by* ***Irish Independent*** *journalist John Cooney.*[480]

The usual procedure in addressing priest predations of waiting until the perpetrator was a retired octogenarian was padded for *Doctor* McQuaid. The Archbishop’s crimes lay unreported until Cooney’s book *John Charles McQuaid: Ruler of Catholic Ireland*, was published — almost 40 years after McQuaid’s death.

Even then, only a smattering of complaints were allowed to be addressed.

> *Two specific complaints and a separate unspecified “concern” against an unidentified cleric were reported to the Murphy Commission, a state-sponsored investigation into the handling of clerical sexual abuse of children in the Dublin archdiocese.*
>
> *The commission published its main report in 2009, but it said that “due to human error” the latest allegations emerged only in a supplementary report published in July. This does not name Archbishop McQuaid, but the* [*Irish Times* disclosed] *that the allegations of abuse contained within it refer to the archbishop. One allegation is regarding abuse of a 12-year-old boy in 1961. ~ NY Times*[481]

Cooney noted that McQuaid reigned supreme in Ireland and that his “Protestant opposition” was little of either.

Upon word of his death, top Protestant leaders immediately took up the Catholic (pagan) practice of praying for the dead pedophile’s soul.

They also dropped their agendas to force the Irish government to give Protestant Christianity equal footing in public affairs.

> *The unexpected death ... of Archbishop John Charles McQuaid deflected a group of Protestant churchmen from taking the historic step of sanctioning radical measures to eradicate sectarian bigotry in the North and to promote an inclusive pluralist society in the Republic. ...*
>
> *A few minutes later Alan Buchanan, the Church of Ireland Archbishop of Dublin, rushed back into the room and announced in his strong Monaghan accent, "Archbishop McQuaid is dead. Archbishop McQuaid is dead." Instantly, the Church of Ireland Primate of Armagh, George Otto Simms, the Presbyterian, Jack Weir and the former Methodist President, Eric Gallagher, stood in silent prayer with Buchanan for the soul of John Charles. It was a spontaneous act of spiritual homage from the Protestant leaders to the undisputed champion of Catholic supremacy.*
>
> *Observing this remarkable event as The Irish Times religious affairs correspondent, I was puzzled by such a show of reverence. Even in death, McQuaid cast a heavy shadow. On Buchanan's suggestion, the Protestant church leaders sent a telegram of sympathy to Archbishop Dermot Ryan, who 15 months earlier had succeeded McQuaid. More importantly, they postponed a decision to invite Catholic observers to the Irish Council of Churches. It was as if the ghost of John Charles chuckled at this proof of Protestant indecision. ~ Irish Times*[482]

For a brief period of time, Rome's death-grip on Ireland's women and children was challenged by Noël Browne, a Doctor of medicine and Minister in the Dáil Éireann (the lower house of Ireland's Legislature).

Because Browne rose against Catholic power, mention of his name and his short-lived efforts to remove Vatican tyranny in hospitals are always addressed with adjectives like "*highly* controversial". His legislation was slammed as the "Mother and Child *Scheme*" which "brought down" entire administrations!

Because he was "*highly* controversial", Browne was frequently kicked out of any political party he tried to affiliate with.

Despite being “*highly* controversial” he was immediately elected to Teachta Dála (equivalent of an American Congressman, usually abbreviated “TD”) upon arriving in a new party.

> *Noël Christopher Browne (20 December 1915 – 21 May 1997) was an Irish politician and doctor.[1] He holds the distinction of being one of only seven TDs to be appointed Minister at the start of their first term in the Dáil. His controversial Mother and Child Scheme in effect brought down the First Inter-Party Government of John A. Costello in 1951.*
>
> *Browne was a well-known but at times highly controversial public representative, and managed to be a TD for five different political parties (two of which he co-founded). These were Clann na Poblachta (resigned), Fianna Fáil (expelled), National Progressive Democrats (co-founder), Labour Party (resigned) and the Socialist Labour Party (co-founder). ~ Wikipedia*[483]

> *The Mother and Child Scheme was a healthcare programme in Ireland that would later become remembered as a major political crisis involving primarily the Irish Government and Roman Catholic Church in the early 1950s.*
>
> *The scheme was referred to as the Mother and Child Service in legislation. A brochure, “What the new service means to every family”, was prepared. It explained the new service but was not issued to the public. The scheme was engulfed in crisis before this could happen. ~ Wikipedia*[484]

Not realizing the true nature of the Catholic Church — that it is anything but “Christian” — the few who rise against it wrongly believe that secularism is the preferred tactic when fighting such a Dragon.

However, it is an anticipated tactic and one that Rome’s enemies are carefully maneuvered in to. Once immersed in the quagmire of *no* moral authority above “government”, she steps into the vacuum and fully flexes her muscles through her agents both overt and covert.

The Vatican's influence in Ireland, particularly when wielded by Archbishop John Charles McQuaid was all-encompassing.

> *None of his successors, Dermot Ryan, Kevin McNamara and Desmond Connell, has exercised the enormous spiritual power, let alone the almost unbounded temporal power, which he commanded.*
>
> *It was not until the publication in 1987 of the de Valera papers relating to the drafting of* [Ireland's] *1937 Constitution that the extent of McQuaid's power began to be fully appreciated.*
>
> *These papers showed how McQuaid, as president of Blackrock College, collaborated closely with de Valera*[lxi] *in drafting the fundamental law of the State.*
>
> *Even more importantly, the opening of the McQuaid archive a decade later, in 1997, revealed a homespun spy system which had won the admiration of the head of the FBI, the legendary J. Edgar Hoover.*
>
> *A control freak, McQuaid mobilised government Departments, Dublin Corporation, and the medical, legal and teaching professions to defend* [the Roman Catholic Church from all enemies[lxii]].
>
> *In the McQuaid story lies the awesome power exercised by the Catholic Church in Ireland in the mid-twentieth century.* ~ Cooney[485]

According to his biographer, John Cooney, it was Archbishop McQuaid's mismanagement of Dublin diocese finances — which were on the brink of bankruptcy in the 1970's — that fostered his two heart attacks.

The biographer added this fascinating incident which occurred after the highest Roman Catholic prelate in Ireland was undergoing care at St. Columcille's Hospital in the Dublin suburb of Loughlinstown from his second heart attack:

> *Knowing that his end was approaching, he rose up from his pillow and asked a Roscommon nurse if he had any chance of reaching heaven.* [486]

Following the Catholic (and very pagan) practice of literally worshipping upon the dead, McQuaid's body was given the highest honors.

> *McQuaid was buried under the High Altar in Dublin's Pro-Cathedral...* [487]

It is a very un-Christian practice that goes back thousands of years.

> *Setting aside a special time and place in which to focus upon one's relationship with God — "going to church" — is a purely pagan contrivance.*
>
> *All cathedrals and most churches are built upon sacred burial sites (dead bodies) because pagans believed that such sites facilitated interdimensional communication through rituals like the "mass".*
>
> > *From the earliest times the barrow was regarded as sacred ground, and near it the pagan temple was erected. When we look at our country churches, surrounded by rows of grass-covered mounds, we see a type of the olden practice very little altered, indeed, for the Christian Church was often built on the actual foundations of the pagan temple ... ~ Puckle*[59]
>
> *Vatican City is a sacred "city of the dead" built upon an ancient Etruscan grave site. ~ Secret History*[488]

Given John McQuaid's tyrannical power in Ireland it is even more disturbing to learn that his crimes went beyond merely covering for sexual deviant predatory priests.

> *The astronomer Frederick O'Connor hand-built a telescope so the Archbishop could view the stars and indulge a scholarly interest in astronomy.*
>
> *But according to John Cooney's new book, John Charles McQuaid Ruler of Catholic Ireland, the Archbishop used his eye in the sky for more prurient pursuits.*
>
> *The book alleges he used the powerful lens to spy on courting couples making out on Killiney beach.*

> *They allege that the Machiavellian churchman who effectively ruled the church not only in Dublin, but in Ireland, for 32 years and impacted on the affairs of State in a most profound way, was also a Peeping Tom in a cassock. ...*
>
> *These allegations of voyeurism were used to substantiate far more sinister allegations contained in Cooney's book and carried last week in the Sunday Times, which claimed the Archbishop was a homosexual who preyed on children. However, another allegation that the Archbishop also used the telescope to spy on schoolgirls at a nearby convent was physically possible and when we visited the turret this week we could see children playing in the school grounds. ~ The Irish Independent*[489]

An important source for Cooney in regards to accusations that McQuaid was a sexual deviant and a pedophile came from none other than Dr. Noël Browne.

> *That central allegation of paedophilia, inappropriate behaviour towards children and an unhealthy and unsavoury interest in sex is based in part on a manuscript by the late Noel Browne.*[490]

The source was an unpublished autobiography that included an interview with a school inspector who had direct knowledge of McQuaid's leanings.

> *John Cooney was given a copy of the controversial* [work] *by Dr. Browne's widow when he approached her following her husband's death.*
>
> *John Cooney's book will state that Browne was convinced that the story related by the school inspector pointed towards the Archbishop being a paranoid schizophrenic as well as an abuser.*[491]

These are impeccable sources (mocked by the media) which show that the Bishops, Cardinals and Popes who enable pedophile priests are doing so because they are child predators, themselves.

That's how they got "elected".

Chapter 12

The Milwaukee Cannibal[lxiii]

1978: *Jeffrey Lionel Dahmer (1960 – 1994) committed his first murder in the summer of 1978 at the age of 18, just three weeks after his graduation. At the time, he was living alone in the family home. Owing to his recent divorce from Dahmer's mother, Dahmer's father temporarily lived in a nearby motel and his mother had relocated to Chippewa Falls, Wisconsin[38] with his younger brother. On June 18,[39] Dahmer picked up an 18-year-old hitchhiker named Steven Mark Hicks.[40][41] Dahmer lured the youth to his house on the pretext of the two young men drinking alcohol together. Hicks, who had been hitchhiking to a rock concert in Lockwood Corners, agreed to accompany Dahmer to his house. According to Dahmer, after several hours' drinking and listening to music, Hicks "wanted to leave and [I] didn't want him to."[42] In response, Dahmer bludgeoned him with a 10 lb. dumbbell. Dahmer later stated he struck Hicks twice from behind[43] with the dumbbell as Hicks sat upon a chair. When Hicks fell unconscious, Dahmer strangled him to death with the bar of the dumbbell, then stripped the clothes from Hicks' body before masturbating as he stood above the corpse.[43] The following day,[44] Dahmer dissected Hicks' body in his crawl space; he later buried the* *remains in a shallow grave in his backyard[45] before, several weeks later, unearthing the remains and paring the flesh from the bones.[46] He dissolved the flesh in acid before flushing the solution down the toilet; he crushed the bones with a sledgehammer and scattered them in the woodland behind the family home.[47]*

Six weeks after the murder of Hicks, Dahmer's father and his fiancée returned to his home where they discovered Jeffrey living alone at the house. ~ Wikipedia[492]

In alternative media there is a popular series of interviews that floats around the internet with a woman who says her name is Kay Griggs (*née* Pollard), the former wife of Marine Corps Colonel George Griggs who worked in the Pentagon's Special Operations.

The interviews are a fascinating mix of truth and subterfuge. "Mrs. Griggs" claims to be a devout *Protestant* Christian, well-studied in the "Reformation[lxiv]" yet she states that she liked her then-current Pope, Saint John Paul II, and believed Opus Dei to be "an Italian business group". She claimed that the main forces behind the world's evils were "the mob" and the Jews — which is exactly what the Vatican likes to hear.

Many of her obscure assertions turned out to be true such as her proof that then-Commandant of the Marine Corps, General Alfred M. Gray Jr, remained single all his life. She claimed it was indicative of his homosexuality and sexual perversion. "Mrs. Griggs" says that is why Gray was chosen for his job.

"Mrs. Griggs" claims that sexual deviancy is the primary requirement for promotion in the United States military and the "Tailhook" scandal of 1991 was part of that culture. During the annual meeting of the "Tailhook Association" (a "fraternal order" of naval aviators) in Las Vegas, a large number of women were assaulted and "groped" — many of them were military personnel.

It was supposedly a "stain" on the record of then-Chief of Naval Operations, Admiral Frank Benton Kelso II (1933 – 2013). Kelso was also there.

The “response” to the scandal was a call from Congress to reduce Kelso in rank upon his retirement — twelve years after the fact.

It was led by United States Senator from Mary-land, Barbara Ann Mikulski.[493]

Mikulski is another sickeningly-tenured Leftist Catholic insurgent, doing the subversive work of Rome in Congress for *forty years* (at this writing), and still counting.

Mikulski was educated by the inversely-named “Sisters of Mercy” (who figure so prominently in child abuse and trafficking) at Mount Saint Agnes, a Roman Catholic college for women.

“Mrs. Griggs” stated that she was good friends with the wife of Admiral Frank Kelso, “Landess”. That was, indeed, the name of Kelso’s wife until her death in 2012.

In 2013, Kelso married Georgia Robinson. Two weeks later *he* was dead due “complications” from a “fall”.[494]

Another assertion “Mrs. Griggs” made was that government patsies, assets and operatives are psychologically screened for flaws and sexual perversions to ease their use, manipulation and control. She gave as examples, Oklahoma City bombing patsy Timothy McVeigh, JFK assassination patsy Lee Harvey Oswald (a bisexual), and serial killer Jeffrey Dahmer.

Although “Mrs. Griggs” never fully explained who the “profilers” were, she was again correct in her statement that all three of her examples served in the United States military.

In the case of Jeffrey Dahmer, we can conclusively explain here who those “profilers” were.

Dahmer was born and raised in Wisconsin; a state with a deceptively-strong Jesuit presence. The State of Wisconsin is its own Jesuit Province. It’s largest city, Milwaukee, is less than 90 minutes from the Jesuit citadel of Chicago, Illinois.

Milwaukee is home to Jesuit Marquette University. Despite media propaganda over the "drop" in Catholic attendance and recruitment, 2017 saw a landmark for the Jesuits.

> *If you had asked Wisconsin native Brad Held if he'd be celibate for the majority of his life, he would have laughed.* [Given the way priests obey their vow of celibacy he's probably still laughing.]
>
> *But that all changed during his junior year at Marquette University when he decided a career in political science wasn't for him. And on June 3, he was ordained ... in the largest class of Jesuits in the Midwest since 1995. ~ Milwaukee Journal Sentinel*[495]

Wikipedia, normally quiet on Roman breadcrumbs, noted this about Dahmer's early life and family —

> *Jeffrey Dahmer was born at the Evangelical Deaconess Hospital in Milwaukee, Wisconsin[6] on May 21, 1960, the first of two sons born to Joyce Annette (née Flint) and Lionel Herbert Dahmer. Dahmer's mother worked as a teletype machine instructor,[7] whereas his father was a student at Marquette University, working towards a degree in chemistry.*[496]

The chemistry the Jesuits taught Lionel Dahmer would serve his son very well in disposing of his future victims.

In 1979, under pressure from his Jesuit-trained father, Dahmer enlisted in the Army and received medical training that would further weaponize him. As a homicidal homosexual, the Army was the perfect place for Dahmer to be developed.

> *Preston Davis, a fellow soldier who worked in a medic unit with Dahmer, believes that he was drugged by Dahmer inside an armored personnel vehicle and raped.*
>
> *Once Davis left Germany, he was replaced with 17-year-old Billy Joe Capshaw, who claims that he was raped by Dahmer as well* [Capshaw was the perfect victim to stick with Dahmer — as young and vulnerable as possible]. *After the first assault, Capshaw leaped from*

> *the third-floor window to escape. According to Capshaw, Dahmer raped him 8 to 10 times within a period of 17 months. In Capshaw's words, Dahmer would tie him to the bunk with motor-pool rope, stripping all his clothing and beat him before raping him.*
>
> *Soon after, Capshaw reported the abuse to his commander and was taken to the dispensary for a rape test to determine if he was telling the truth. The doctors did nothing and Capshaw was sent back to the room and spent another 17 months with Dahmer, suffering more rape and torture.* ~ TheCrimeMag.com[497]

Dahmer was stationed in Germany and he may not have confined his activities to his fellow soldiers.

> *Later, speculation arose about numerous young German men reported missing at the time that Dahmer had been stationed there.* ~ U.S. History.com[498]

Dahmer was sent back to the American citizenry after serving only two years of his 4-year enlistment. However, he wasn't discharged for mental dysfunction or sexual assault, it was for "alcoholism".

Dahmer took up with his grandmother back in Wisconsin where he experimented on animals with chemicals and applied "techniques" to a male mannequin. He was getting ready for his calling. As he did so, the "justice system" happily obliged.

> *In 1982, Dahmer moved in with his grandmother in West Allis, where he lived for six years. During this time, his behavior grew increasingly strange. His grandmother once found a fully dressed male mannequin in his closet; Dahmer had stolen it from a store. On another occasion, she found a .357 Magnum under his bed. Terrible smells came from the basement; Dahmer told his father that he had brought home a dead squirrel and dissolved it with chemicals. He was arrested twice for indecent exposure, in 1982 and 1986; in his second offense, he masturbated in front of two boys.*
>
> *In summer 1988, Dahmer's grandmother asked him to move out because of his late nights, his strange behavior, and the foul smells*

> *from the basement. He then found an apartment on Milwaukee’s West side, closer to his job at the Ambrosia Chocolate Factory.*
>
> *On September 26, 1988, one day after moving into his apartment, he was arrested for drugging and sexually fondling a 13-year-old boy in Milwaukee. He was sentenced to five years’ probation and one year in a work release camp. He was required to register as a sex offender. Dahmer was paroled from the work release camp two months early, and he soon moved into a new apartment. Shortly thereafter, he began a string of murders that ended with his arrest in 1991. ~* Murderpedia[499]

While still with his grandmother in West Allis, Dahmer committed another murder.

> *In November 1987, Dahmer — at the time residing with his grandmother in West Allis — encountered a 25-year-old from Ontonagon, Michigan named Steven Tuomi at a bar and persuaded him to return to the Ambassador Hotel, where Dahmer had rented a room for the evening. According to Dahmer, he had no intention of murdering Tuomi, but simply intended to drug and rape him as he lay unconscious. The following morning, however, he awoke to find Tuomi lying beneath him on the bed, his chest “crushed in” and “black and blue” with bruises. Blood was also seeping from the corner of his mouth, and Dahmer’s fists and one forearm were extensively bruised. Dahmer stated he had absolutely no memory of having killed Tuomi,*[79][82] *and later informed investigators that he simply “could not believe this had happened.” To dispose of Tuomi’s body, he purchased a large suitcase in which he transported the body to his grandmother’s residence. There, one week later,*[83] *he severed the head, arms, and legs from the torso,*[82] *then filleted the bones from the body before cutting the flesh into pieces small enough to handle. He then placed the flesh inside plastic garbage bags.*[83] *He wrapped the bones inside a sheet and pounded them into splinters with a sledgehammer. The entire dismemberment process took Dahmer approximately two hours to complete, and all of Tuomi’s remains — excluding the severed head*[84] *— were disposed of in the trash.*[85]

> *For a total of two weeks following Tuomi's murder, Dahmer retained the victim's head wrapped in a blanket. After two weeks, Dahmer boiled the head in a mixture of Soilex (an alkali-based industrial detergent) and bleach in an effort to retain the skull, which he then used as stimulus for masturbation. Eventually, the skull was rendered too brittle by this bleaching process, and was also pulverized and disposed of.*[84] *~ Wikipedia*[500]

"Vice" happily remarked that Dahmer's accommodations were provided by another wealthy individual trained by the Jesuits.

> ***I Drank Old Fashioneds Where Jeffrey Dahmer Killed His First Victim in Milwaukee***
>
> *In the fall of 1987, serial killer Jeffrey Dahmer murdered a man in his room at the Ambassador Hotel, a local landmark where you can still get a mean cocktail. ...*
>
> *Strangely enough, even as the Ambassador has sought to distance its name from that of the notorious cannibal, small connections between the two still seem to emerge. Barry Leach, my server at the hotel's lobby bar — Envoy Lounge — tells me about the two taverns he owned previous to his stint here, starting in 1980: Barry's Water Street Pump and Just Arts Saloon. Both were located in Walker's Point, a now-bustling area of town that Dahmer frequented.*
>
> *"We were the first popular straight bar in the neighborhood," he tells me about Just Arts, alluding to Walker's Point's history as the gay district in town. ...*

— In a city and sub-district owned by the Jesuits, Dahmer excelled because of sanctioned sexual perversion. —

> *"Most of what we know about the hotel's early days has come from word-of-mouth," says Amy Schneider, the Ambassador's assistant general manager. "We wouldn't know as much as we do if people hadn't stopped by with stories and photos."*
>
> *Those memories of the Ambassador's glory days, however, have only fueled its owners' commitment to the neighborhood that surrounds it.*

> *“Our owner is a Marquette grad,” Schneider adds, referring to Milwaukee’s Jesuit university just a few blocks east of the hotel. “And he fell in love with the neighborhood as a student. His entire livelihood is wrapped up in its success — in several apartment buildings and other properties in the area.”*
>
> *That makes the Ambassador more of a growing pillar in Milwaukee’s rebound than a creepy venue for costumed drinking this Halloween. Come for the cocktails, stay for dinner, watch for the glamorous undead on October 31, and come back knowing your choice is fueling the rebirth of the city’s heyday.*[501]

What does it take to put a happy spin on blood-curdling murder, dismemberment and cannibalism? — The same thing it takes for the Ambassador Hotel to get free advertising: a Roman Catholic connection.

The aptly-named “Vice” magazine (now a media conglomerate) was co-founded by Canadian Gavin Miles McInnes: a devout Roman Catholic and Knight of Columbus.[502]

Although McInnes and his admirers paint him as a “former atheist” and new convert to Catholicism, his “public” Bachelor of Arts from Concordia can also be traced to the Jesuits.

> *Concordia University (commonly referred to as Concordia) is a public comprehensive university located in Montreal, Quebec, Canada.[6] Founded in 1974 following the merger of Loyola College and Sir George Williams University, Concordia is one of the three universities in Quebec where English is the primary language of instruction. As of the 2014–2015 academic year, there were 46,378 students enrolled at Concordia, making the university among the largest in Canada by enrolment.[7][8] The university has two campuses, set approximately 7 kilometres (4 miles) apart: Sir George Williams Campus is the main campus in Downtown Montreal, in an area known as Quartier Concordia, and Loyola Campus in the residential district of Notre-Dame-de-Grâce.[9] ~ Wikipedia*[503]

Merging with Concordia provided the Jesuits with yet another public school name to cover their tracks.

January 2009 cover of *Vice* magazine.
Wikipedia

> *After the Tuomi murder, Dahmer continued to kill sporadically: two more murders in 1988, and another in early 1989, usually picking up his victims in gay bars and having sex with them before killing them. He kept the skull of one of his victims, Anthony Sears, until he was caught.*
>
> *In May 1990, he moved out of his grandmother's house for the last time and into an apartment that later became infamous: Apartment 213, 924 North 25th Street, Milwaukee. Dahmer picked up the pace of his killing: four more murders before the end of 1990, two more in February and April 1991, and another in May 1991.* ~ Murderpedia[504]

Dahmer continued to be enabled by the "authorities" Americans trust to protect them. Particularly disturbing was the teenage boy who almost got away from the monster but was kicked back to him ... by police.

> *In the early morning hours of May 27, 1991, 14-year-old Konerak Sinthasomphone (the younger brother of the boy whom Dahmer had molested in 1988) was discovered on the street, wandering naked, heavily under the influence of drugs and bleeding from his rectum. Two young women from the neighborhood found the dazed boy and called 911. Dahmer chased his victim down and tried to take him away, but the women stopped him. Dahmer told John Balcerzak and Joseph Gabrish, police officers dispatched to the scene, that Sinthasomphone was his 19-year-old boyfriend, and that they had an argument while drinking. Against the protests of the two women who had called 911, who recognized him from the neighborhood and insisted that he was a child and couldn't speak English, the officers turned him over to*

> *Dahmer. They later reported smelling a strange scent while inside Dahmer’s apartment, but did not investigate it. The smell was the body of Tony Hughes, Dahmer’s previous victim, decomposing in the bedroom. The officers did not make any attempt to verify Sinthasomphone’s age or identity, nor locate someone who could communicate with him, and failed to run a background check that would have revealed Dahmer being a convicted child molester still under probation. Later that night, Dahmer killed and dismembered Sinthasomphone, keeping his skull as a souvenir.*[505]

Thanks to the help received by authorities, Dahmer could step up his pace while taking the time to torture his victims.

> *By summer 1991, Dahmer was murdering approximately one person each week. He killed Matt Turner on June 30, Jeremiah Weinberger on July 5, Oliver Lacy on July 12, and finally Joseph Brandehoft on July 19. Dahmer got the idea that he could turn his victims into “zombies” — completely submissive, eternally youthful sexual partners – and attempted to do so by drilling holes into their skulls and injecting hydrochloric acid or boiling water into the frontal lobe area of their brains with a large syringe, usually while the victim was still alive. Other residents of the Oxford Apartments complex noticed terrible smells coming from Apartment 213, as well as the thumps of falling objects and the occasional buzzing of a power saw.*[506]

At last, Jeffrey Dahmer’s reign of terror was put to an end.

> *On July 22, 1991, Dahmer lured another man, Tracy Edwards, into his home. According to the would-be victim, Dahmer struggled with Edwards in order to handcuff him, but ultimately failed to cuff his wrists together. Wielding a large butcher knife, Dahmer forced Edwards into the bedroom, where Edwards saw pictures of mangled bodies on the wall and noticed the terrible smell coming from a large blue barrel; the barrel was filled with potent acid which dissolved human bodies to sludge for disposal via the apartment toilet. Edwards punched Dahmer in the face, kicked him in the stomach, ran for the door and escaped. Running through the streets with handcuffs still*

> *hanging from one hand, Edwards waved for help to a police car driven by Robert Rauth and Rolf Mueller of the Milwaukee police department. Edwards led police back to Dahmer's apartment, where Dahmer at first acted friendly to the officers. However, Edwards remembered that the knife Dahmer had threatened him with was in the bedroom. When one of the officers checked the bedroom, he saw the photographs of mangled bodies and called for his partner to arrest Dahmer. As one officer subdued Dahmer, the other opened the refrigerator and found a human head. Further searching of the apartment revealed three more severed heads, multiple photographs of murdered victims and human remains, severed hands and penises, and photographs of dismembered victims and human remains in his refrigerator. ...*
>
> *Dahmer was indicted on 17 murder charges, later reduced to 15. Dahmer was not charged in the attempted murder of Edwards. His trial began on January 30, 1992. With evidence overwhelmingly against him, Dahmer pleaded not guilty by reason of insanity. The trial lasted two weeks.*[507]

When Jeffrey Dahmer was escorted into court, on either side of him was the Company of Loyola.

Prosecuting Dahmer was a Jesuit priest.

Yes, you read that right. One of the most notorious and heinous serial killers in "secular" America was prosecuted by a Jesuit priest.

Frederick Tupper Saussy wrote one of the best exposés on Roman subversion of America; *Rulers of Evil*. He was hunted down and brought in to court on tax-related charges.

> *On freshman orientation day at the University of the South in Sewanee, Tennessee, I took a seat across the table from my faculty advisor. He was a professor of botany named Edmund Berkeley. Dr. Berkeley studied the tab on my manila file folder as though it were some rare species of leaf. Suddenly his eyes leapt into my face. Giddy eighteen-year-old that I was, I gulped and tried to smile.*
>
> *'"Saussy,"' he mused calmly. "Good Huguenot name."*

The word stumped me. “Huguenot?”

“‘Saussy’ is a French name,” he lectured. “Sewanee is a Protestant university. Your people must have been Huguenots.”

I silently forgave my father for never having told me our name was French and that our ancestors might have been something called “Huguenots.”

“What exactly are Huguenots?” I inquired.

“French Protestants,” declared my advisor. “Massacred by soldiers ordered by Catherine d’Medici in cahoots with the Jesuits. The survivors were exiled. Some established in England, others in Prussia. Some came to America, as your people obviously did.” ...

I never had occasion to think about my conversation with Edmund Berkeley until some thirty years later, in August of 1984, during a brief but telling encounter with an assistant United States attorney by the name of John MacCoon. We were standing a few paces apart in the marble hallway outside a federal courtroom in Chattanooga, waiting for the morning session to be called.

I was on the docket, scheduled to be arraigned on charges of willful failure to file income tax returns for the years 1977, 1978, and 1979.

I had no doubt that the charges would be dropped. The statute I had supposedly run afoul of applied to persons “required” to file returns. Yet I possessed a letter signed by the IRS District Director stating that a diligent search of IRS files had failed to disclose any tax liability in my name for those years. People who have no tax liability are not required to file returns. Why was I there?

The booming voice of a lawyer friend broke my concentration.

“Tupper,” he said, guiding me over to John MacCoon, “have you met your prosecutor?”

He introduced us in a jovial fashion and then rushed off to a huddle of other litigants.

> *MacCoon and I shook hands. “John,” I asked, feeling the need to make small talk, “are you from Chattanooga?”*
>
> *“No,” he replied, “I came from Washington.”*
>
> *Something inside told me to press. “So you’re originally from Washington?”*
>
> *“No, originally I’m from New Orleans.”*
>
> *“I have lots of cousins in New Orleans,” I beamed. He seemed to get a little edgy.*
>
> *“Well, the name Saussy is not unknown there,” he said.*
>
> *“One of my favorite cousins lives in New Orleans,” I said, and named my cousin.*
>
> *“He’s your cousin? Why, he and I were ordained together.”*
>
> *“Ordained?” I asked. “My cousin is a Jesuit priest. Are you a Jesuit?”*
>
> *“Yes,” said my prosecutor, now visibly agitated. “You know, I might have to recuse myself...”*
>
> *“I’ve got a better idea, drop the charges.”*
>
> *“Oh no, I couldn’t do that.”*
>
> *The dialogue ended suddenly with the hoarse drawl of a bailiff announcing that court was now in session.*
>
> *So John MacCoon was a Jesuit! The media, spoon-fed by his offices, had already branded me a “tax protestor.” What was going on? Were the Jesuits chasing Protestants again?*[508]

A similar Jesuit “feast” was held repeatedly over the trial, imprisonment and release of Kent “Dr. Dino” Hovind. A Certified Public Accountant, educated by the Jesuits in both High School and College, named Peter J. Reilly covered the Hovind story with repeated columns for *Forbes* magazine.[lxv]

Not only was Saussy targeted and prosecuted by a Jesuit priest, it was one specifically assigned to that task from the nation's "capital" — Washington, D.C.

Saussy says nothing about how he got into tax trouble with the United States Government but he may have been entrapped by an "Intelligence" tactic of flushing possible enemies. Tax laws are purposefully so complex they require an expert to weed through. Citizens dissatisfied with their government are constantly urged by subversive agents to refuse to pay their taxes. When they expose themselves the full force of the "Federal" government crashes upon them. In special cases like Tupper Saussy's, a Jesuit leads the prosecution.

It is then citizens find out too late they've been fooled into thinking they can fight an unwinnable battle.

Few indictments are more powerful regarding the covert control of the United States of America by Rome than how Jesuit priests prosecute crimes against the government.

Defending the homicidal homosexual cannibal was Milwaukee lawyer Gerald Boyle. Boyle would continue to make a name for himself after the high-profile case with such clients as professional football player Mark Chmura of the Green Bay Packers. Boyle got Chmura acquitted of charges of molesting a teenager at a post-prom party.

Boyle added corrupt cops to his list of wealthy Elite clientele and cannibalistic serial killers.

> *He defended John Maloney, a Green Bay arson detective convicted of killing his wife and setting fire to her body. ...*
>
> *In more recent years, Boyle represented a fired Milwaukee police officer in the Frank Jude beating case, the former head of the Milwaukee police union charged with forgery, a psychotherapist charged with having a sexual relationship with a patient, and a Kenosha lawyer charged with money laundering. ~ The Milwaukee Journal Sentinel*[509]

Frequent complaints were made against Boyle and his daughter Bridget Boyle (also a lawyer) for “mishandling” client funds or negligent incompetence.

> *The OLR* [Wisconsin Office of Lawyer Regulation] *sought a six-month suspension of Boyle’s law license, but the referee who heard the case, Hannah Dugan, recommended the 60-day suspension, which Boyle appealed.*[510]

Rather than accept the 2-month suspension for his criminal activities (which is probably how long Boyle takes vacations) he arrogantly clogged the Wisconsin justice system with appeals which were dutifully passed up to the Wisconsin Supreme Court.

How does a Milwaukee lawyer rate such deference? — He’s a Jesuit-trained Roman Catholic.

In fact, when Marquette athletes forced two freshman girls to be their sex slaves on Halloween night in 2010, the Jesuits sought their alumnus, Gerry Boyle, to cover them in the “administrative meeting” that addressed the “mishap”.[511]

No charges were filed.

Unfortunately for Jeffrey Dahmer, Gerry Boyle wasn’t quite on his game for the trial.

— Not that his life was at stake. When States controlled by the radical Left were abolishing the death penalty in the 1960’s, the Jesuits of Wisconsin were ahead of them by over a century.

> *Dahmer was indicted on 17 murder charges, later reduced to 15. Dahmer was not charged in the attempted murder of* [Tracy] *Edwards. His trial began on January 30, 1992. With evidence overwhelmingly against him, Dahmer pleaded not guilty by reason of insanity. The trial lasted two weeks.*
>
> *The court found Dahmer sane and guilty on 15 counts of murder and sentenced him to 15 life terms, totaling 957 years in prison, which was*

> *the maximum penalty available as Wisconsin abolished capital punishment in 1853.* ~ Murderpedia[512]

In twisted doctrine that can truly be labeled “Jesuitical”, the Catholic Church teaches that execution is not acceptable as a form of punishment (despite Biblical evidence in both the Old and New Testaments to the contrary). This is ludicrously labeled “Pro-Life”; the equating of cannibalistic serial killers with unborn babies.

Even Dahmer’s Jesuit priest prosecutor was in agreement. His “jurisprudence” was used to bolster a “protest” by Nebraska police and prosecutors against that state’s death penalty in 2016. The Nebraska Legislature had outlawed capital punishment in 2015, incensing Nebraskans. They reversed the decision by referendum the next year[513] causing the officials sworn to protect them to “protest” on behalf of the would-be criminals seeking their victimization.

> *... a group of law enforcement professionals, current and former police, prosecutors, correctional officers, and judges, ... released a series of statements condemning Nebraska’s death penalty. ...*
>
> *Fr. Greg O’Meara, Creighton University law professor who prosecuted Jeffrey Dahmer, explains, “Most people commit murders in a fit of passion, they do so quickly without thinking about it, and they don’t think they’re going to get caught. And since they don’t think they’re going to get caught, they won’t worry about the penalty.”* ~ Death Penalty News[514]

Omaha, Nebraska was the epicenter for a child sex trafficking scandal in the 80’s and 90’s in which many police, prosecutors and judges were participating offenders so perhaps that was on their mind in 2016. More on that in Chapter 21.

Fr. Greg O’Meara, who was named Rector of Creighton University’s Jesuit Community, is considered an ultimate authority in Wisconsin or Nebraska when it comes to American law.

> *Fr. O’Meara was ordained in 2002 and has taught at Marquette University Law School in Milwaukee since that time. He was granted*

> *tenure and named associate professor of law in 2010. He has been awarded the James D. Ghiardi Faculty Award for Teaching Excellence on three different occasions. His research centers on the philosophical foundations of legal interpretation.*
>
> *Fr. O'Meara's legal experience also includes serving as an assistant district attorney in Milwaukee County and teaching at the University of Wisconsin Law School. While serving as rector, he will also teach in the Creighton University School of Law.* ~ Jesuits.org[515]

While in prison, Dahmer reportedly accepted Jesus Christ as his Born Again Savior and was subsequently baptized by local preacher Roy Ratcliff.

He didn't have time to serve out his 15 life sentences. Shortly after he gave his heart to the Lord, fellow inmate Christopher Scarver took his life. Dahmer died on November 28th, 1994, the Monday after Thanksgiving weekend.

Jeffrey Dahmer tortured, raped and murdered 17 men and boys by "official" count which means the ultimate number was much larger. From start to finish, he was carefully handled by the "Society of Jesus" like some parasitic smart weapon of pain and chaos aimed right at the American people.

At this writing, a movie is scheduled to be released roughly the same time as this book, commemorating the "sad, funny" story-before-the-story of the man who drilled into the frontal lobes of his victims (thanks to that Army medical training) to "zombify" them for eternal sexual abuse.

> ***My Friend Dahmer*** ... *Written and directed by Marc Meyers, the movie is based on Derf Backderf's nonfiction graphic novel of the same name, in which the author recalls his high school friendship with "Jeff" Dahmer, who would go on to murder 17 men between 1978 and 1991.*
>
> *"It's the story before the story we're all familiar with," says director Meyers, who shot some of the film in the actual house where Dahmer grew up. "The book is this haunting, sad, funny, true look at Jeffrey Dahmer's high school years, growing up in the suburbs of Akron,*

> *Ohio, in the mid-to-late ’70s — and that’s exactly what this film has become. I went through an exhaustive search to find an actor who I believed could play the role of Jeff Dahmer as a high school kid. I must have met with over 80 actors for the two main teen roles. I just locked into Ross when I met him. I felt that he both had the versatility as an actor and the look. I thought it was exciting that he was just ending his run as the lead of a Disney show and was the lead of their Teen Beach Movie franchise — but he looks like Jeff! And then, even more so, when you put some glasses on him.”* ~ MySpace[516]

Of course only a Disney teenager could do justice to “Derf Backderf’s” funny recollections of Jeffrey Dahmer.

Chapter 13

Paedophiles Prove War is Pointless

November 1978: *London Metropolitan Police raid the paedophile safe house of diplomat and intelligence operative Sir Peter Telford Hayman KCMG CVO MBE.*[lxvi] *The* ***Daily Mail*** *reported that Police found* ***"a huge trove of revolting paedophilia and other extreme pornography."*** *In best Kinsey "research" fashion they also found* ***"Among it was a library of 45 substantial diaries in which Sir Peter had recorded in detail his sexual experiences ... including sex with minors."***[517] *He was released from Police custody with a "warning".*

War between nation states is as unnecessary as it is devastating to the common citizen.

> ***Chapter 4***
> ***War: What Is It Good For?***
>
> *Modern warfare between nation states is an enterprise wholly manufactured by the Luciferian Elite for three general purposes: I. To make obscene amounts of money.*
> *II. To slaughter the commoners and cull the "useless eaters[283]".*
> *III. To punish the enemies of Rome.*
>
> *Enemies have been created and crises have been contrived in order to motivate populations to give up rights and make drastic sacrifices for the Elite that they would not normally make.*
>
> *Good Americans thank a soldier with no legs for endless deployments in the "War on Terror" to "protect our freedoms" as they hold their hands up in surrender to be humiliated by a naked body scanner at the airport.*
>
> *— And it's all by design. ~ Illuminati Unmasked*[518]

Because of this, there is an unusual and “unexpected” connection the Pedocracy of the Devil’s Simulation has to “Intelligence”.

This explains the protected existence of foreign diplomat and Intelligence operative Sir Peter Telford Hayman, KCMG, CVO, MBE (1914 – 1992).

> *Sir Peter Hayman’s life was one decorated with worthy acronyms and exclusive memberships.*
>
> *By the time of his retirement from “the Diplomatic”, the Stowe and Oxford-educated former Rifle Brigade officer had been a Home and Foreign Office mandarin, working closely with the intelligence services at the height of the Cold War: it has even been suggested he was a senior figure in MI6.*
>
> *His final posting was as High Commissioner to Canada.*
>
> *As a result of these labours he was made a Knight Commander of the Order of St Michael and St George (KCMG), Commander of the Royal Victorian Order (CVO) and an MBE.*
>
> *Off duty he also belonged to the MCC* [Marylebone Cricket Club — owner of “Lord’s Ground” Cricket venue at St John’s Wood, London and the “guardian of the Laws of the game”] *and the Army and Navy private members’ club (The Rag). Like Sir Peter, both were pillars of London’s old-school-tie Establishment.*
>
> *Yet unlike the MCC, there was no distinguishing neckwear at Sir Peter’s rather more discreet third “club”, to which he seems to have devoted most physical energy and expense as a pensioner newly returned from post-colonial duties in Ottawa.*
>
> *His membership number was “330” and this organisation of similarly minded if not gilded individuals was called the Paedophile Information Exchange. ~ The Daily Mail*[519]

The “Paedophile Information Exchange” is the English version of the “North American Man/Boy Love Association”: openly promoting the Pedocracy in public. Both are a testimony to the power of the Devil’s

Simulation but “P.I.E.” supposedly disbanded after 10 years, from 1974 to 1984.

Peter Hayman’s P.I.E. membership number, “330”, implies a Freemasonic connection which intuitively fits his position. Hayman was living a life of lies, both as a participant in the Devil’s Simulation pedophile network and as a “spy”. For the Jesuit-controlled Luciferian Elite, the true purpose of espionage was to insure that supposed “enemy nations” always stayed in antagonism and of equal threat to each other (at least as far as public perception). In this system, Freemasons are the faux-Protestant footsoldiers of lie-perpetuation.

Ironically, because “Sir Peter” was living a life of lies and assumed identities, the authorities didn’t know it was him when they conducted their raid...otherwise they wouldn’t have.

> *PIE supported and encouraged illegal sexual relationships between adults and children. In other words, child abuse.*
>
> *Sir Peter lived with his wife of 40 years in a lovely home in South Oxfordshire where, in a parallel existence, he was deputy chairman of the Conservative Association. He acted as a churchwarden’s assistant, and opened the local fete.*
>
> *Everyone there thought he was marvellous. Who was to know otherwise?*
>
> *That was because his official PIE literature and graphic correspondence with fellow paedophiles was by squalid necessity sent to a flat at 95 Linden Gardens, Notting Hill Gate, London, some 50 miles away.*
>
> *The ex-diplomat had rented it for that purpose — as well as extra-marital sexual liaisons — under the name of Peter Henderson. The fact that the flat was almost across the road from the Soviet embassy was simply an irony. ...*

— No, it showed Peter Hayman’s important position in a game completely manipulated by the Luciferian Elite. — *Then Sir Peter made a mistake. He left a packet of paedophile material in an envelope on a London bus. It was*

> *addressed to Mr. Henderson at Linden Gardens in Notting Hill. A fellow passenger was curious. The package came into the possession of the police.*
>
> *Soon afterwards, in November 1978, they raided the Linden Gardens flat.*
>
> *What they found was a huge trove of revolting paedophilia and other extreme pornography. Among it was a library of 45 substantial diaries in which Sir Peter had recorded in detail his sexual experiences ... including sex with minors.*[520]

Further details proved “Sir Peter” was networked both for the abuse of children and the *perpetuation* of the Cold War.

> *There was also substantial correspondence with other PIE members — 111 pages in one instance — in which they shared their otherwise secret desires and other graphic paedophile material.*
>
> *Police later found that two of the dozen or so paedophiles in Sir Peter’s epistolary circle had been writing to each other about ... extreme sexual torture and murder of children.*
>
> *Even the hardened cops of the Obscene Publications Squad were “revolted” by the Linden Gardens haul.*
>
> *When interviewed, Sir Peter — a man who had been deputy commandant of the British zone in Berlin and was later tasked to tear a strip off the Soviet ambassador to London after Moscow crushed the Prague Spring of 1968 — broke down and wept.*

Sir Peter Hayman, KCMG, CVO, MBE, and Lady Hayman,

(Rosemary Eardley-Blomefield) Again, “by coincidence” Peter Hayman worked in Berlin, in close proximity with the Soviets during the Prague Spring. Czech citizens desperate for freedom were slaughtered by Soviet tanks and artillery. The survivors were raped, brutalized and further enslaved and the British response was to have Paedophile Peter Hayman “tear a strip” off the Soviet ambassador?

The reality is actually far worse.

The war crimes committed by the Soviet Union in 1968 were carefully planned by the CIA and MI6; all being co-ordinated by the Jesuits in Intelligence and the Luciferian Elite in Rome to keep the Cold War hot.

A shocking game of betrayal was played repeatedly on oppressed Patriots around the world. Again and again, Western Intelligence begged good citizens to revolt against their brutal Communist oppressors; vowing to immediately step in with aid and support. Each time Patriots were tricked into acting, the rug was pulled from under them. They received none of the promised support and too late did they realize all their actions did was expose them to their captors. Each time, they were met with a crushing Communist response while the West turned a blind eye, both governments and media, alike.

- Hungary: 1956

- Bay of Pigs, Cuba: 1961
- Prague, Czechoslovakia: 1968

To make absolutely sure Soviet armor had as much time as was needed to slaughter as many Hungarian Patriots as possible, Eisenhower had his Ambassador to the United Nations, Adlai Ewing Stevenson II, delay any possible U.N. intervention.[472]

The exact same scenario replayed itself 12 years later in Czechoslovakia. After goading Czech Patriots into action for the 1968 "Prague Spring", all of Western Intelligence not only went silent, it went dark.

> *... 27 divisions of Soviet Russians, Poles, Hungarians and Bulgarians — around 300,000 men, armed with 2,000 heavy cannons — marched into the small state of Czechoslovakia to end the experiment of "socialism with a human face." It was the largest military operation since the World War II...*
>
> *For months, the eyes of the world had been on Prague, where a group of officials around Communist Party chief Alexander Dubcek had challenged the Soviets with new civil rights for Czechoslovakia, new press freedoms and plans for privatization. Leonid Brezhnev, General Secretary of the USSR's Communist Party, ordered a number of threatening military maneuvers in and around Czechoslovakia starting in May.*
>
> *But when the maneuvers grew serious, the American, British and German governments seemed to look the other way, judging by documents from the NATO archive in Brussels as well as intelligence files seen by* ***Spiegel****. "Not a single evaluation" managed to predict the Soviet invasion of Prague, according to the NATO Military Committee, the alliance's highest military authority.*
> *~ Der Spiegel*[473]

Western media pushed the laughable idea that — despite Western leaders being given daily (probably hourly) briefs on Czechoslovakia —

> *a WWII-sized Soviet invasion force was simply "lost" to the combined efforts of Allied intelligence operations.*
>
> *Seven years earlier, in 1961, a similar treason was conducted on the Patriots of Cuba. These Cuban exiles, however, had direct interaction with the CIA in their training, organization, equipping and transportation.*
>
> *They received everything except what they needed most; a flight of 6 A-26 Invaders as air support. National Security Advisor McGeorge Bundy (Skull and Bones 1940) personally saw to this betrayal as has been noted by Air Force Colonel and Joint Chiefs of Staff Chief of Special Operations for President Kennedy, Leroy Fletcher Prouty.*[474]
>
> *Bundy would go on to blame John F. Kennedy for sabotaging the Bay of Pigs leading up to his assassination by the Jesuit-run CIA*[475] *as well as see to it that CIA fingerprints were covered up.*[476] *~ Secret History*[521]

Geoffrey Arthur Prime is another prime example of how this game is played. Prime was the "paedophile" at GCHQ (Government Communications Headquarters) who fed the Soviets secrets for 20 years through the 1960's and 70's.

> *On 10 November 1982 Prime pleaded guilty to seven espionage counts, and three counts of sex offences against children. His sex offences included indecently assaulting three girls aged 11 to 14.*[20][21] *He was sentenced by Lord Lane, the Lord Chief Justice, to a total of 38 years, 35 for offences under section 1 of the Official Secrets Act 1911*[22] *and three for his sex offences.*[21] *...*
>
> *The British media was prevented from reporting on the Prime affair until after his trial, a trial that was conducted in secret session.*[3] *...*
>
> *Prime was released from HM Prison Rochester in March 2001, after serving half of his sentence... ~ Wikipedia*[522]

Prime was also a member of "P.I.E." He was released in 2014 after serving half of his sentence for causing *billions* in damage to world citizens via his work to prolong the Cold War, including an outrageously light 3-year sentence for raping little girls as young as 11. Prime was put right back into circulation — on government benefits, no less.

> *Now freed from prison and living on benefits near a children's centre, Geoffrey Prime was the traitor whose work for the KGB came to light in 1982 as police investigated his terrifying and prolonged sexual assaults on girls as young as 11. ~ Mail*[523]

His counterpart at the FBI was Special Agent Robert Philip Hanssen: devout Roman Catholic and member of Opus Dei.

Hanssen helped keep the Soviet threat vibrant against the debilitating disease of Jesuit-spawned Communism with secrets he gave them for over two decades.

Although Rome carefully places "Papal Court Jews" in positions of high visibility but low influence (like the control of Hollywood), the real power in government, the military and intelligence, go to those loyal to her. From the Cold War to the "Global War on Terror", her Catholic agents insure that their lies lead to tragedy for citizens everywhere.

In 2014, the Catholic news consortium "Open Tabernacle" warned that Opus Dei influence had taken over the Vatican.

Such spin may help keep conservative Catholics (or, judging by the "vast Right-wing conspiracy" slant of the piece, Liberal ones) on the farm but the truth is that they are simply loyal soldiers for Rome.

> *"It's widely known that Supreme Court Justices Antonin Scalia, Samuel Alito, and Clarence Thomas belong to Opus Dei – and that Chief Justice John Roberts may also be a member," stated Matthew Fox, a former priest, progressive theologian and author of more than 23 books.*
>
> *"They're in the CIA, the FBI," said Fox. "Daniel Ellsberg recently told me that some of the ranking commanders of our military are also Opus Dei," Fox stated in another interview. Veteran investigative reporter Seymour Hersh made a similar observation. "Hersh stated that Gen. Stanley McChrystal, Vice Admiral William McRaven and others in the Joint Special Operations Command (the group*

> *responsible for the assassination of Osama Bin Laden) were members of the Knights of Malta and Opus Dei. ...*

— They were members of the Vatican insurgent team that ran the Psychological Operation of the "killing" of Osama bin Laden. — *Hersh added that members of these societies have developed a secret set of insignias that represent 'the whole notion that this is a culture war between religions.'"*

> *The* ***New York Times*** *noted in 2012 that an Opus Dei boy's prep school "has become the popular school for a small clique of Washingtonians": Rick Santorum; lobbyist and former U.S. Senator (R-FL), Mel Martinez; Sect. of Defense Chuck Hagel; the infamous FBI spy and Opus Dei member Robert Hanssen's boss, former FBI director Louis J. Freeh; NOM founder Maggie Gallagher and* ***National Review*** *editor Kate O'Beirne.*
>
> *Fox said that both Santorum and Newt Gingrich are members but that doesn't guarantee Opus Dei/Catholic Church backing. These organizations will support whichever Republican candidate has the best chance of winning regardless of his religious affiliation. That's why the endorsement by five former U.S. ambassadors to the Vatican of Mitt Romney in early January 2012 before the primaries signaled that "big money" had already chosen the GOP presidential nominee.*

— Fascinating that Rome should endorse a Mormon, unless one is aware of the Freemasonic roots of Mormonism and the Jesuit control of Freemasonry. Even less so, to understand that the "election" was in the bag either way, given Barack Obama's child abuse, CIA past and training by Jesuit Greg Galluzzo in Chicago.[524] — *Robert P. George, a Princeton University professor closely associated with Opus Dei, changed the landscape of U.S. politics. Neocon politico Deal Hudson stated that "If there really is a vast, right-wing conspiracy, its leaders probably meet in George's basement."* [George was r]*eferred to by the* ***New York Times*** *as "the country's most influential conservative Christian* [Catholic![lxvii]] *thinker..."*[525]

It is important to note that Princeton is a renowned *public* University but, clearly, Rome has a secret influence. It is only one of many such examples.

The combined efforts of the CIA and FBI were completely defeated by this “lone” traitor until a brave young Jesuit-trained Roman Catholic G-man, Eric O’Neill, finally put a stop to Hanssen’s treason — after a 22 year run.

More on Opus Dei, child sex slave trafficking and treason, in Chapter 30.

As with all the other participants in the Devil’s Simulation, having sold his soul through the abuse of children, Sir Peter was granted an Earthly life of power and reputation ... emphasis on “Earthly”.

> *Much to the anger and disbelief of the Obscene Publications Squad he was let off with a caution. The grounds for this decision certainly seem extraordinary to contemporary eyes. The Director of Public Prosecutions deemed that as the paedophile material sent through the post by Sir Peter and his friends had not been “unsolicited” nor traded for profit, no offence had taken place worthy of prosecution.*
>
> *The result? Save among a few officers at Scotland Yard, Sir Peter’s reputation remained intact ... until his death in 1992...*
>
> *The Hayman affair came back into the spotlight this week, with David Cameron ordering an investigation into an alleged cover-up of a VIP paedophile ring which included leading figures in Westminster and Whitehall. [with only a handful of investigators into a massive conspiracy]*

— The “Cameron investigation” results can be illustrated by the fact that no one even knew the banking family Elitist[526] ordered it in the first place. — *The matter was raised by campaigning MP Simon Danczuk, and centres on a dossier of child sex allegations involving senior Establishment figures, which was handed to the then Home Secretary Leon Brittan by fellow Tory MP Geoffrey Dickens in November 1983.*

> [Then Home Secretary] *Lord* [Leon] *Brittan says that he passed the documents on to Whitehall officials. But no action was taken and the*

> *Home Office has admitted that the Dickens dossier was subsequently destroyed. ~ Daily Mail*[527]

Critics claim that the law finally caught up with Sir Peter in 1984 but he was “convicted” of “gross indecency” in a public lavatory, not raping little boys as young as 11.[528] British media carefully avoid what the “conviction” equated to but the nebulous statute leaves the sentencing up to the court and Sir Peter Telford Hayman KCMG, CVO, MBE, escaped punishment for his crimes.

Members of the Devil’s Simulation can never include anyone who sincerely holds Right-wing values and ethics. The Left with its tenets of hedonism and the subversion of the individual in favor of authority is where the Pedocracy thrives.

Yet citizens (especially “Bible-belt country folk”) demand they be represented. Almost always, the Pedocracy is able to insert frauds who talk a good game and deliver nothing of substance. Every so often, a sincere “Conservative[lxviii]” is able to elbow himself in to cause a ripple or two before they are shut down or nullified.

Such a man was Geoffrey Dickens.

Geoffrey Kenneth Dickens was a successful boxer (40 wins of 60 fights) turned Conservative British Minister of Parliament for Huddersfield West starting in 1979. His seat, however, was abolished in 1983.

Miraculously, Dickens was able to get elected to represent Littleborough and Saddleworth and was able to hold that district until his death in 1995 at the relatively young age of 64.

Dickens was lampooned by the British media as a “colorful” country bumpkin but having been raised in foster care gave him a heart for children not apparently shared by editors or fellow MPs.

The founder of the Paedophile Information Exchange was Thomas Victor O’Carroll. O’Carroll interestingly holds dual citizenship in both Britain and Ireland. This surely came in handy for his activities, perhaps especially for the Catholic Church.

O’Carroll had several visits to court but, not surprisingly, spent little time in jail. During one of his trials, the exploits of Sir Peter Hayman were divulged. The ensuing inaction by the English Justice system had at least one MP up in arms.

> *..while Hayman was alluded to in court, his identity was still protected. It seemed the “cover-up” had succeeded. Dickens was outraged and took a radical step.*
>
> *He used parliamentary privilege, which affords legal protection from libel, to name Hayman in questions to the then Attorney General, Sir Michael Havers.*
>
> *He further demanded that Hayman should be prosecuted and asked: “How did such a potential blackmail risk come to hold highly sensitive posts at the MoD and NATO?” ~ The Daily Mail*[529]

Perhaps Sir Peter Telford Hayman, KCMG, CVO, MBE, was a pampered, protected, pedophile because he wasn’t just a lowly “intelligence operative” in the British Secret Service (as characterized by papers like the *Telegraph*[530]); he was the head of MI6.[531]

The information Dickens had linked child sex slavery to the Intelligence community and ultimately to the infamous Elm Guest House (which will be discussed in-depth, in Chapter 15).

> *In 1984, he campaigned for the outlawing of Sir Peter’s Paedophile Information Exchange (PIE) organisation. He also handed a dossier containing allegations of abuse of children in local authority care to the then Home Secretary, Leon Brittan.*
>
> *After a 30-minute meeting with Sir Leon, Dickens said he had been “encouraged” but later expressed concern that the Cabinet Minister had not banned the PIE.*
>
> *Last month Metropolitan Police began Operation Fernbridge into allegations that residents of a children’s home in Richmond, west London, were taken to the nearby Elm Guest House in Barnes, where they were abused. Pornography involving adults having sex with*

> *children was allegedly shot at the property and then circulated commercially.*
>
> *Sir Peter was among the visitors to the property. Others, according to a list seized by Scotland Yard last month, were the late Liberal MP Cyril Smith, the former Russian spy Sir Anthony Blunt, a Sinn Fein politician, a Labour MP, and several Conservative politicians.*
>
> *After neighbours complained about the arrival of children, the police raided the guesthouse in 1982 but the operation was mysteriously cut short. A 2003 investigation also failed.*
>
> *During a debate on child abuse in the House of Commons on 29 November 1985, Dickens warned that paedophiles were "evil and dangerous," adding child pornography generated "vast sums."*
>
> *He went on: "The noose around my neck grew tighter after I named a former high-flying British diplomat on the Floor of the House."*
>
> *"Honourable Members will understand that where big money is involved and as important names came into my possession so the threats began."*
>
> *"First, I received threatening telephone calls followed by two burglaries at my London home. Then, more seriously, my name appeared on a multi-killer's hit list." ~ The Independent*[532]

Lord Sir Leon Brittan "lost" the dossier Dickens gave him.

> *Sources close to the police who have recently investigated associated allegations say that it seems to have subsequently "disappeared". The Home Office confirmed that it had not been "retained". ~ The Daily Mail*[533]

Few indictments better prove the theory that all war is manufactured by the Keepers of the Devil's Simulation than Peter Hayman's foreign service record. Twenty years safely after his death, the *Daily Mail* admitted only a portion[534] but it was enough to connect the dots.

During World War II Hayman attained the rank of Major in an un-named Rifle Brigade but we're told neither of his record nor any subsequent combat action or recognition thereof.

The *Mail* jumps from 1945 to 1950 where Hayman is suddenly promoted many times to Assistant Secretary of the Ministry of Defense.

He then helped to found the North Atlantic Treaty Organization — the collection of Allied nations tasked with “protecting” the West against Communism.

From 1955 to 1958, Hayman was tested in Eastern Europe as the MI6 Station Chief for what was then Belgrade, today, “Yugoslavia”.

Having proven himself, he was “promoted” to a location that brought him into the inner-circle as MI6 Station Chief for Malta for a year starting in 1958.

Without understanding the role of the Knights of Malta as insurgents for Rome, and Rome as the Keeper of the Devil’s Simulation (which includes the promulgation of needless war), this seems like an embarrassing slap — a man of Hayman’s status relegated to a tiny island?

From there, Hayman was sent to sow the seeds of the future Global War on Terror as the MI6 Station Chief in Baghdad (1959 - 1961).

As we’ve already shown, those planning these offenses against mankind think in decades and centuries.

From there, Hayman was transferred to the sword arm of Rome and the central location of her war-planning: Washington, District of Columbia. From 1961 to 1964, he was Director General of the British Information Services in Washington D.C.

Finally he was sent to the front of the Cold War in Berlin. From 1964 to 1966, Hayman was the totalitarian-sounding Deputy Commandant of the Military Government in West Berlin, where he oversaw the continued punishment of Martin Luther’s homeland.

The *Mail* then magically skips again to 1973 where Hayman is admitted “retired” yet secretly Deputy Director of MI6. Exactly when he rises to the top of British Intelligence is left for *Mail* readers to guess.

> ***Peter Hayman named as VIP who Sexually Abused Boys at Dolphin Square Apartment Complex near Parliament***[535]

The 2014 story was picked up by the *Event Chronicle* and the headline from the smaller paper was more faithful to the important truth of Hayman’s career — ***Ex-MI6 Chief Peter Hayman named as VIP who Sexually Abused Boys at Dolphin Square Apartment Complex near Parliament***[536]

Chapter 14

Federal Bureau of Obfuscation

1979: *Edward Hope "Teddy" Smith and Alfred "Q" Evans, both 14, go missing within four days of each other. Both were found dead on July 28th in a wooded area across from Niskey Lake in Atlanta, Georgia. Teddy Smith had been shot in the back, executed, with a .22 caliber weapon (the choice of either street thugs or trained assassins). Q Evans was listed by the coroner as having been asphyxiated by "probable" strangulation.*[537],[lxix]

Across a two-year period from 1979 through 1981, almost 30 people, most of them children, were murdered in Atlanta, Georgia.

On June 21st, 1981, 23 year old Atlanta native Wayne Bertram Williams was arrested and subsequently tried and convicted for the murders of 27-year-old Nathaniel Cater and 29-year-old Jimmy Ray Payne. He was given life in prison. After the conviction, Atlanta Police released a statement that Williams was responsible for 23 of the 29 linked "Atlanta Child Murders" but Williams has never been brought to trial for any of them. To this day, he maintains his innocence. Unlike any of the previous pedophile predators examined in these pages, Williams is still serving his sentence at Telfair State Prison in Helena.

> *In May 2004, about six months after becoming the DeKalb County* [Georgia] *Police Chief in November 2004,* [Louis] *Graham reopened the investigations into the deaths of the five DeKalb County victims:* [10] *Aaron Wyche, 10; Curtis Walker, 13; Yusuf Bell, 15; William Barrett, 17; and Patrick Baltazar, 11. Graham, one of the original investigators in these cases, said he never believed Wayne Williams, the man convicted of two of the killings and blamed for 22 others, was guilty of any of them. ...*

> *The criminal profiler* [FBI Agent] *John E. Douglas said that, while he believes that Williams committed many of the murders, he does not think that he committed them all. Douglas added that he believes that law enforcement authorities have some idea of who the other killers are, cryptically adding, "It isn't a single offender and the truth isn't pleasant."[11]*
>
> *On June 21, 2006, the DeKalb County Police dropped its reinvestigation of the Atlanta child murders. After resigning, Graham was replaced by the acting chief, Nick Marinelli, who said, "We dredged up what we had, and nothing has panned out, so until something does or additional evidence comes our way, or there's forensic feedback from existing evidence, we will continue to pursue the [other] cold cases that are [with]in our reach."[5] ~ Wikipedia*[538]

Although the Atlanta victims were poor blacks, the fact that there were so many in such a short period of time garnered national scrutiny. As a result, the FBI helpfully presented "profiler" John Edward Douglas to solidify the Atlanta Police Department's untried accusation that Wayne Williams was the serial killer in question — no one need look any further into the crimes.

> *FBI Agent John E. Douglas, who had previously conducted a widely reported interview with* ***People*** *magazine about profiling the killer as a young black man, has admitted that when the news of Williams' arrest was officially released (his status as a suspect had previously been leaked to the media anyway), he stated that if it was Williams then he was "looking pretty good for a good percentage of the killings". This was widely reported across media outlets as the FBI effectively declaring Williams guilty...[8] ~ Wikipedia*[539]

However, Douglas admitted to the *Baltimore Sun* that the investigation into the guilt of Wayne Williams was shoddy at best.

> *Evidence was being lost, murder sites were being tampered with, conflicting coroners reports were being filed.*[540]

Even so, he was the man most responsible for Williams' conviction.

> *...he attended the subsequent legal proceedings and helped the prosecution trap Williams into showing anger, which was key in showing the jury that Williams was the murderer.[5] ~ Wikipedia*[541]

Although the FBI had no jurisdiction, Federal "law enforcement" took a heavy-handed interest in hammering Wayne Williams as the fall-guy for the Atlanta murders, helpfully providing appropriately-named "Lab man"[542] Hal Deadman.

> *The prosecution's presentation of fiber statistics, particularly in the testimony of FBI special agent Deadman and in the summing up, has been criticized for being based on speculative assumptions and misleading phrasing of probabilities, to an extent that in some jurisdictions might have resulted in a mistrial.[10] ~ Wikipedia*[543]

Not satisfied that Williams was in enough of a bind, the Governor of Georgia, George Dekle Busbee, Sr., joined hands with then Vice President George Herbert Walker Bush to move things along.

> *With the governor threatening to replace the prosecutor if he didn't move things along faster, and the FBI and even Vice President George Bush exerting their powerful influences to move things along, the defense was in trouble. The defense's attempt to investigate many of the leads and loose ends in the prosecution's case in hopes of finding the real killer had to be abandoned in the face of the need now to defend Williams against an avalanche of unrelated charges. ~ Spin*[544]

According to one woman, Bush may have had a personal stake in covering up the Devil's Simulation.

> *Cathleen Ann O'Brien is a Michigan woman who has published a book that made the shocking accusation that she was sold into sex slavery by her father and tortured to become a sex robot for America's most powerful people in the 80's and 90's. ...*
>
> > *O'Brien claims that some of her abusers were George H.W. Bush, Ronald Reagan, Gerald Ford, Jimmy Carter, Dick Cheney, and Hillary Clinton. She says that she was rescued in 1988 by a man*

> *named Mark Phillips who claims to be a former CIA operative. ...*
> *~ Mark Dice*[1348]

Phillips has also admitted to being inducted into the Knights of Malta.[545] O'Brien was only "rescued" from being used as a sex rag, she is still completely "handled" by the Romans who run the Devil's Simulation and she never speaks without Phillips controlling her nearby.

> *One of the first perpetrators O'Brien identified was Michigan Republican Congressman Guy Vander Jagt. O'Brien implied a strong Catholic influence from Vander Jagt yet he is supposedly a Presbyterian.*
>
> *But Vander Jagt began a law degree at Georgetown and stopped, transferring to the University of Michigan for his actual diploma*[1349]*. This would give him full secular education credentials. ...*
>
> *O'Brien then states that a priest abused her in the confessional*[1351] *and, later, both Vander Jagt and Gerald Ford raped her as well.*[1352]
>
> *According to O'Brien, Vander Jagt's strongest connection to what happened to her was through the local Catholic Church. The co-operative was openly satanic. ~ Illuminati Unmasked*[546]

O'Brien said that she was allowed to become pregnant to bring a daughter into the slave ring and that Bush took particular pleasure in sexually abusing the toddler.[547]

The rail-roading of Wayne Williams (who was likely guilty of crimes perhaps as severe as murder but clearly not the Atlanta serial-killer) by the Georgia and United States governments incensed local blacks. Given that stoking the flames of racial divide is a foundational tactic of the Luciferian Elite, it may very well have been counted on. If Atlanta blacks didn't see Williams as innocent, they certainly felt that a vicious murderer was still on the loose — one that preferred children.

Worse, evidence was accumulating which pointed to satanic ritual sex abuse and sacrifice.

On March 3rd, 1981, 15 year old Joseph “Jo-Jo” Bell called the Cap’n Peg restaurant where he worked and told Assistant Manager Jerry Lee — *“They’re about to kill me. I’m about dead, they are about to kill me. Jerry, they’re about to kill me.” ~ Spin*[548]

— then the phone went dead.

Bell was found murdered by strangulation in the South River 3 days later. The cause of death of 14 year old Lubie Geter was also listed as “strangulation” but his privates were cut out and his feet cut off indicating ritualized torture and sacrifice.

Neither Jo-Jo’s call nor his mention of “they” were referenced in official investigations.

The government watchdog “Truth About Business And Congressional Crimes Organization” (T.A.B.A.C.C.O.) summarized the climate.

> *In April 1981, FBI spokesmen declared that several of the crimes were “substantially solved,” outraging blacks with suggestions that some of the dead had been slain by their own parents. While that storm was raging, Roy Innis, leader of the Congress of Racial Equality, went public with the story of a female witness who described the murders as the actions of a cult involved with drugs, pornography, and Satanism. Innis led searchers to an apparent ritual site, complete with large inverted crosses, and his witness passed two polygraph examinations, but by that time police had focused their attention on another suspect, narrowing their scrutiny to the exclusion of all other possibilities.*[549]

Not only was the Federal government involved in the Atlanta murders, so was Hollywood.

> *In 1981, actor Robert De Niro, when accepting the Best Actor Oscar for his role in the film Raging Bull, wore a green ribbon as a sign of solidarity with the children of Atlanta. He is believed to be the first celebrity to have worn a ribbon at a major event as an awareness-raising effort. ~ Wikipedia*[550]

De Niro, perhaps one of the best-known actors of all time, is an admitted Roman Catholic.[551]

More than that, he is reputed to be a Knight of Malta.[552]

Lending credence to this was the 2005 report from the *Malta Independent* that famed Director Guy Ritchie was slated to shoot the planned film *Knights of Malta* starring De Niro along with Sir Anthony Hopkins but, apparently, the project never got the “green light”.[553]

In Chapter 25, we will examine overwhelming evidence that Hollywood is a foundational member of the Devil’s Simulation. As “Madonna’s” ex-husband, Ritchie would know.

The controversy over the Atlanta murders received little media coverage. One exception was *Spin Magazine*.

Spin was founded by wealthy publishing magnate Robert Charles Joseph Edward Sabatini “Bob” Guccione, also a Roman Catholic.

At one point in his life, Guccione considered joining the priesthood.[554] Instead, he founded the pornographic magazine *Penthouse* to compliment Hugh Hefner’s *Playboy*.

Perhaps, not surprisingly, *Spin* would avoid the suspicion of a pornographically-charged satanic cult being behind the Atlanta murders and go on to blame the KKK, instead.[555]

Twelve years later, Special Agent Douglas would again be sent by the FBI to intervene in a State prosecution. Three hundred miles west of Atlanta, in West Memphis, Arkansas, three young men were being arraigned on charges that they had sexually abused, tortured and ritually slaughtered three boys. Again, evidence pointed toward Satanic Ritual Abuse but, thankfully, the Federal government arrived on the scene to promote otherwise.

Chapter 15

House of Horrors

January 1982: *British Customs seize video tapes of young boys being sexually abused, tortured and murdered from businessman Russell Howard Tricker as he returns from Amsterdam, capital city of the Kingdom of the Netherlands.*

June 1982: *London Metro Vice raid the Elm Guest House in Rocks Lane, near Barnes Common in south-west London pursuant to allegations of child sex abuse. No prosecutions followed.*

The success of the Devil's Simulation in infiltrating key positions in government in order to thwart justice should not be mistaken for the notion that the Pedocracy is "all-powerful". Steps are constantly taken to minimize risk like moving criminal activities where they are less-likely to be addressed.

In Amsterdam the legal perversion and sexual chaos is legendary.[556] In 2007, Europe's Sodom proudly unveiled a bronze statue honoring prostitution: the only one of its kind.[557]

Such an atmosphere is perfect for taking sexual anarchy (dominated by men) to its ultimate conclusion.

> *We have uncovered an international paedophile ring whose roots spring from Amsterdam, where, in the late 1980s, a group of British paedophiles set up a colony, exploiting the freedom of the city's gay community as cover to make a business of their fantasies. ~ The Guardian*[558]

As was typical of the minions in the mainstream media: 20 years after the incident first occurred, the *Guardian* allowed journalist Nick Davies to address it.

> *A year after Bristol detectives finally started to unravel the ring of paedophiles who had been abusing children there for up to 20 years, they found an informant with an alarming story. The man, whom we will call Terry, had a long history of sexually abusing boys. He did not come from Bristol but, by chance, he had come across some of the paedophiles the detectives were investigating — in Amsterdam, where he said they had become involved with a group of exiled British child abusers who had succeeded in commercialising their sexual obsession.*
>
> *The exiled paedophiles were trafficking boys from other countries; running legitimate gay brothels and selling under-aged boys "under the counter"; they had branched out into the production of child pornography. And they had killed some of them. One boy had simply been shot through the head, Terry said: he had been causing trouble and had been executed in front of several paedophiles. Another, he believed, had been thrown into one of the canals. But the one about whom he spoke the most was a boy who had been tortured and killed in the most painful fashion in the course of producing a pornographic video.*
>
> *Terry said he had seen most of the video himself and had vomited before he could reach the end.*[559]

Media continues to report the poor, over-burdened cops as hard about their work. Repeatedly, pedophile protecting police are painted as having no evidence to follow —

> *The few detectives who specialise in the investigation of child abuse invariably say the same thing about "snuff" movies: they have often heard of them, sometimes pursued them but never found one. The videos remain one of the great unsolved mysteries of the burgeoning underworld of international sexual exploitation.*[560]

The only "mystery" is how any of these frauds sleep at night.

They almost had their quarry but then they were stymied by their Dutch counterparts!

> *For a short while, the Bristol detectives thought they might be able to make progress in tracking down the truth; but when two of them flew to Amsterdam in the autumn of 1998 to pass on their information to Dutch officers, they hit a wall...*
>
> *Dutch police said it was not enough: without the full name of a victim, they would not begin an investigation. Having fought their way through the swamp of inertia which surrounds British policing and prosecution of child abuse, the Bristol detectives had now hit the deeper swamp of virtual paralysis that afflicts its international policing.*[561]

Though the subterfuge of excuses is steaming with excrement, the conclusion is quite accurate —

> *The result is that there is now a flourishing underground trade in boys who are being exported from the economic chaos of eastern Europe, as well as from the streets of London, to be put to work in the sex industry of western Europe. And no effective police operation to deal with it.*
>
> *Predatory paedophiles cross whatever borders they like in order to pursue their obsessions...*[562]

British “paedophiles” like Alan Williams, having been treated by their justice system with a velvet glove, moved to where the hunting was even more protected.

> *Williams, the “Welsh Witch”, ... already had a vicious history of abusing boys in south Wales. Williams arrived in Amsterdam in 1988, aged 21, and soon set himself up as the manager of a gay brothel called Boys Club 21 at 21 Spuistraat, near the central station. Across the road at number 44, another British paedophile, a chubby Londoner named Warwick Spinks, then aged 25, was running a similar club called the Gay Palace. Both clubs had a legal business, running a bar and offering the services of adult male prostitutes.*
>
> *But Williams and Spinks had much crueller interests. Williams had fled to the Netherlands after being convicted in Britain of indecent assaults on boys. In Amsterdam, he boasted of the day in south Wales when he*

> *had seen a 10-year-old boy on his bike, grabbed him, raped him, and, when he cried, strangled him. From Boys Clubs 21, he organised the importing of boys from Cardiff and London, inflicting intense violence on any who defied him.*
>
> *Spinks had been running a mail order pornography business from Brighton, before he moved to Amsterdam, where he pioneered the trafficking of boys as young as 10 — first, from the streets of London, and, after the collapse of the Soviet Union, from the poverty of eastern Europe. Having brought them to Amsterdam, he used these "chickens" himself, sold them into the brothels or through escort agencies and put them in front of the camera. Some resisted, some ran away, but most were made to comply through the removal of their passports and doses of drugs and violence.*
>
> *By 1990, these two clubs on Spuistraat, together with Boys for Men, De Boys, the Blue Boy and the Why Not, had become the busiest watering holes in the international paedophile jungle.*[563]

That was where Russell Tricker showed his utility.

> *Russell Tricker, now 58* [in 2000]*, a former private school teacher who was convicted of child sex offences in the UK, used his job as a coach driver to ferry suitable boys from London ...*[564]

Lest anyone think these were "random" crimes of lust, they were not. They were all part of the Devil's Simulation; the cult of demonic Attis worship.

> *...the most startling allegations came from a gay man, "Frank", who had gone to Amsterdam in July 1990 and found himself caught up in this paedophile underworld. In 1993, he spoke to ... Scotland Yard.*
>
> *Frank told police that Warwick Spinks had invited him to come on a trip to the Canaries, where he had suggested Frank should help him sell videos and showed him a sample. Frank said he watched in growing horror as the video played out a murder — a boy who seemed to be no older than 12 was beaten and attacked with needles, before being castrated and cut open with a knife.*[565]

Not surprisingly, nothing came of Frank’s report to Scotland Yard.

In Eastern Europe, impoverished by the ravages of Communism, boys were sold for pittance.

> [Homosexual club owner Warwick] *Spinks described how he picked up boys in Dresden, in Bratislava in the Czech Republic, and in Poland, where, he claimed, they cost only 10p* [10 pence — $1.62, U.S.]. *The undercover officer asked Spinks if he could get him a sado-masochistic video featuring boys as young as 10, and Spinks replied that he knew people in Amsterdam who could: “I know, well I knew, some people who were involved in making snuff movies and how they did it was, they only sold them in limited editions, made 10 copies or something, 10 very rich customers in America, who paid $5,000 each or something like that”. ...*
>
> *A couple of years ago, I sat in the Blue Boy club on Spuistraat* [in Amsterdam], *amid the dry ice and the boys in thongs, and flicked through the catalogue on the bar, offering “truly the best boys in town”, and watched a Japanese businessman make his purchase. In search of their origins, I went to Berlin, to the Bahnhof Am Zoo, where the trains arrive from all over eastern Europe, bringing the destitute in search of a dream. A specialist social worker there, Wolfgang Werner, told me there were some 700 east European boys, aged from 11 to 17, who had ended up in the sex industry in Berlin. But, to his knowledge, many hundreds of others had been taken off on a kind of underground railroad which fanned out to Zurich and Hamburg and Frankfurt, and, most of all, to Rotterdam and Amsterdam.*
>
> *Werner told me, for example, about the Romanian boys who had been sold by their parents to a wandering Polish criminal, who had paid cash for some and a bottle of vodka for another, before putting them on to the streets of Berlin.*[566]

Boys were being kidnapped in Britain, too. It was relatively easy once they were placed into a Catholic or public orphanage.

> *Two alleged victims of a sophisticated paedophile ring at the centre of a police investigation claim they were taken on trips to Amsterdam*

> *where they were sexually abused in brothels in the 1980s.*
>
> *One male victim had been taken from the Grafton Close care home in Richmond, south-west London, it is claimed, and, as well as being trafficked in Amsterdam, was rented out to customers at the Elm Guest House, a bed and breakfast nearby. Another man has claimed he was taken to Amsterdam on a different trip. ~ The Independent*[567]

Just as in Amsterdam, Germany and elsewhere, the purpose for the Elm Guest House was to provide "services" to homosexual men they couldn't get due to "prejudice".

> *It was only yards from Barnes Common, which was, and still is, a well-known gay cruising ground. ~ Mail*[568]

The guest house manager and founder was Carole Kasir. As *The Independent* reported, Kasir died under "suspicious circumstances."[569]

> *To some, German-born Kasir's liberal-minded attitudes prompted her, in the mid-1970s, to offer a meeting place for gay men embarrassed by their sexual orientation just a decade after it was made legal. To others it was the starting place that ultimately led her to accumulate substantial sums of money by letting rooms where child porn videos were shot and exploitative men could abuse underage boys brought in from a local care homes.*
>
> *Kasir – who ran the guest house with her husband Haroon Kasir, died on 17 June 1990, aged 47, eight years after a specialist police team raided the guest house, which has since been turned into flats.*
>
> *At the inquest into her death, the court heard Kasir, a diabetic, was found by a friend about 11am with "numerous injections and phials of insulin" next to her body, but that did little to stem a series of ... allegations. The inquest was shown suicide notes allegedly written by Kasir to her lover, but three witnesses – two child protection workers and a private detective – queried the provenance of the notes, telling the court Kasir feared for her life because of what she knew. She had been receiving threatening phone calls, was being harassed by police and told them she was being followed by an unmarked car, they said.*

> *After adjourning the case several times, the coroner ruled she had "taken her own life" and that she died from hypoglycaemia caused by an insulin overdose. Friends claimed there were questions that were not adequately answered, such as why Kasir was injected several times in the bottom* [buttocks], *when she always took her injections in the arm* [as do the vast majority of diabetics]. *One witness at the inquest said he was shown photos of illustrious public figures in compromising poses, an allegation recently backed up by another witness.*
>
> *Those friendly with Kasir said that, in the months before her death, she spoke about lifting the lid on the guest house, including listing those who visited, in a book.*[570]

An un-named children's advocate interviewed by the *Mail* was adamant that the circumstances around Kasir's death showed corruption and cover-up.

> *Shortly after her death, a child protection campaigner from the National Association Of Young People In Care (NAYPIC) called for a criminal investigation into events at Elm Guest House.*
>
> *The campaigner claimed that he had been told by Mrs. Kasir that boys had been brought in from a children's home for sex. She had told him she had photographs or video of many establishment figures at her hotel, including a bishop.*

— Interesting that the *Mail* doesn't tell you what denomination the "bishop" represented. —

> *One photograph allegedly showed a former cabinet minister in a sauna with a naked boy.*
>
> *The same campaigner told us this week that he could not speak at length because the police wanted to interview him.*

— Not very helpful to the public but we're sure arrests resulted from the information gleaned by London's finest! —

> *However, he claimed he knew of 11 boys from Grafton Close Children's Home who had been abused at the Elm Guest House.*

> *He added: "Carole Kasir had logbooks, names, times, dates, even pictures of people who went in and out of Elm Guest House. Her house was raided in the Eighties."*
>
> *"The police say it was done by a local force, but I know it was done by Special Branch. That evidence — of who visited Elm Guest House — no longer exists."*
>
> *"I'll leave people to draw their own conclusions, but Carole Kasir was held without charge for three days, and you don't do that on a run-of-the-mill vice raid. There was more to it than that."*
>
> *He added: "There were boys found in the home, but they were only ever interviewed as witnesses to the brothel, never as victims of abuse." ...*
>
> *The same allegations were pursued for several years by Mary Moss, a former colleague of the campaigner at NAYPIC (which is now defunct).*[571]

Again, we're not surprised to read that a child care watchdog "is now defunct".

> *In October last year, the Labour MP Tom Watson alleged in the Commons that there was evidence of child abuse in senior Tory circles. ~ The Independent*[572]

The idea that either the Conservative / Tories on the fraudulent Right or Labour on the Left "owned" child abuse is, of course, a dodge.

The media under-reports phony Right-wing abuses slightly less than Leftist crimes. They occasionally dare to parade such stories as proof that anyone with Right-minded values is a hypocrite. But the danger of exposing the Devil's Simulation with such a ploy usually keeps grand-standing to a minimum.

> *The Elm Guest House in Rocks Lane, Barnes, said to have been frequented in the Seventies and Eighties by prominent peoples including* ["]*former*["] *Tory politicians, is at the centre of the investigation.*

> *An* ***Independent on Sunday*** *investigation last week revealed the disgraced former MP Cyril Smith was a frequent visitor to the property...*[573]

Unfortunately (and as usual), the accusations about Rochdale’s Minister of Parliament Cyril Smith didn’t really surface until his death in 2010.

> *Cyril Smith, MBE[1] (28 June 1928 – 3 September 2010) was a British Liberal Member of Parliament (MP) for Rochdale. After his death, numerous allegations of child sexual abuse by Smith emerged ... leading the police to believe that Smith was a serial sex offender.[2] ~ Wikipedia*[574]

“MBE” means the rotund “paedophile” was awarded the “Most Excellent Order of the British Empire” in 1966 when he was still the lowly Mayor of Rochdale.[575]

In the case of “Big Cyril”, police seemed afraid to act because of corruption and political influence. In Big Cyril’s Rochdale, they were afraid to address Muslim immigrants trafficking young girls lest they be accused of racism.

> *Fears that they would be branded racist meant that police and social services left an Asian paedophile ring free to rape up to 50 white girls, it was claimed today.*
>
> *The sex grooming gang plied teenagers with alcohol before abusing them and could have been stopped two years before their sickening crimes were finally uncovered in Rochdale, Greater Manchester.*
>
> *Nine were all jailed for their role in the sexual abuse today, with at least two due to be deported after serving their prison term.*
>
> *Former Labour MP for Keighley Ann Cryer said that the authorities ignored complaints about them because they were “petrified of being called racist”.*
>
> *These innocent girls were ultimately “betrayed” and left to live lives of “untold misery,” because of political correctness, she said.*[576]

IHS
FOR GOD AND THE EMPIRE

The Most Excellent Order of the "British" Empire: a Maltese Cross and gnostic sunburst similar to that found on the Jesuit monogram.

The massive influx of immigrants and refugees is part of the Luciferian strategy of tensions, otherwise known as "clash of civilizations". Therefore the story is more quickly reported (rather than 20 years after the key criminal's death) but only as an ethnic problem.

Playing the game to the hilt, the *Mail* repeatedly characterized the accused as "Asian" which is technically correct but colloquially-misleading. This also stirs British anger, implying a "cover-up".

> *All the men are from Pakistan, with one from Afghanistan and two will now be deported.*[577]

Justice has been served!

But to men like Peter Bornshin, there will be no justice. After growing up as a perverse play-thing for Britain's most powerful, Peter Hatton-Bornshin took his own life in 2013 on his 28th birthday.

Peter's story ended the way many of the victims of child sex slave trafficking do, yet are so seldom recorded or even acknowledged. Those who do manage to recover physically from their abuse live with permanent mental and emotional scars.

Peter's path to pain is the most heavily traveled: left to the care of an orphanage rather than loving parents, he was quickly targeted.

> *Peter was only a baby when his father died in an accident. He was orphaned at 13 when his mother threw herself in front of a train. His stepfather then handed Peter and his older brother to social services.*
>
> *And that is how Peter ended up at the Grafton Close Children's Home, which was run by Richmond borough council in South-West London. Truly, he was a lost soul. ~ Daily Mail*[578]

From Grafton Close, boys were fed to the Elm Guest House.

> *During a police raid on a property in central London last month, detectives seized a list of names of high-profile alleged visitors to the Elm Guest House in Barnes, South-West London — a gay-friendly establishment, and one where under-age rent boys and children from the Grafton Close home were reportedly brought to have sex with adult men.*
>
> *The list includes a number of senior MPs, a high-ranking policeman, a leading tycoon, figures from the National Front and Sinn Fein, an official of the Royal Household, an MI5 officer, two pop stars and the traitorous Soviet spy Anthony Blunt.*[579]

"Sinn Fein, MI5 and a Soviet Spy..." From Irish unrest and terrorism to British national intelligence (who actually spies on Britons, not their "enemies") to helping the Soviet Union continue to be a threat through the Cold War. Each agenda is important to the Luciferian Elite and connected via abuse of children to the Devil's Simulation.

Sir Anthony Frederick Blunt (1907 – 1983), KCVO (Knight Commander of the Victorian Order) was a traitor and a spy.

He began passing information to the Soviet Union in World War II as an operative of MI5 and continued working for the Communists decades afterward. In 1956, Queen Elizabeth II (no relation to Protestant Elizabeth I in any way what-so-ever) awarded Blunt his “Knight Commander” but he was “under suspicion” before then[580] so this was clearly a reward for treason. In 1963, Blunt finally “confessed” in a “deal” to give up Soviet secrets which kept him in good standing, free from prosecution for being an enemy of the British people. He went to his grave a “Knight Commander of the Victorian Order” — and a “paedophile” who raped little boys at the Elm Guest House. Perhaps the emblem of his “Knighthood” explains why: multiple Maltese Crosses turned into a gnostic sunburst.

Another catch by Dover Customs was “children’s home consultant” Peter Righton. As usual, it was more “catch and release” than “catch”.

> *In September 1992, Righton pleaded guilty to three charges of importing or possessing obscene material — paedophile gay porn — after customs officers at Dover intercepted two packages addressed to him.*
>
> *... Righton, then aged 66, was no ordinary child sex offender. He had been a very senior and respected figure in the field of residential child care, and a former consultant to the charity the National Children’s Bureau, whose patrons included the then Health Minister, Virginia Bottomley.*
>
> *After his conviction, it emerged that Righton was a founder member of the Paedophile Information Exchange — a contact group for men interested in sex with children. He is now believed to be dead.*[lxx] ~ *Mail*[581]

In 1982, Elm was raided and the Kasirs were arrested for “running a disorderly house” but —

> *At the Old Bailey* [Central Criminal Court of England and Wales] *the following year they were convicted, fined and given suspended sentences.*
>
> *All other charges in relation to the raid had been dropped by then.*[582]

“All other charges” apparently included the inconsequential issue of forcing young boys to be raped by the rich and shameless.

The Telegraph would add —

> *Carole and Harry Kasir, the owners of the Elm Guest House were fined £1,000 each and given suspended nine-month sentences at the Old Bailey for “running a disorderly house”. They were found not guilty of living off immoral earnings and having obscene films.*
>
> *Five years later Carole told child protection officers that children from the council-run Grafton Close Children’s Home had been supplied to the brothel. She provided names of people who had frequented the guesthouse.*
>
> *The Liberal MP Cyril Smith, now dead, has been widely alleged to have abused children from Grafton Close at The Elm.*
>
> *At an inquest into her death in 1990, members of The National Association of Young People in Care said that Kasir had lived in fear of her life since the hotel was exposed. Christopher Fay said: “The reasons for her death are all tied up in this child pornography ring at the hotel.”*
>
> *“She was hounded and harassed by police and security services. She knew all the top people who had been involved in the ring at the hotel.”*[583]

Police refusal to act against accusations of criminal child abuse at Grafton and Elm wasn’t for lack of probable cause.

In 1981, young Vishal Mehrotra was kidnapped off the streets of London. His father, Vishambar Mehrotra, received an anonymous phone call from a male prostitute (which he recorded) telling him that his son had been taken to the Elm Guest House for abuse.

> *He told* ***The Telegraph****: “I was contacted by a young man who seemed to be in his 20s. He told me he believed Vishal may have been taken by paedophiles in the Elm Guest House near Barnes Common.”*

> *“He said there were very highly placed people there. He talked about judges and politicians who were abusing little boys.” Mr. Mehrotra, a solicitor who was a JP at Wimbledon magistrates’ court until retiring in 2006, claims the man said he had already informed police about activities at the guesthouse, but had received no response.*
>
> *He added: “I recorded the whole 15-minute conversation and took it to police. But instead of investigating it, they just pooh-poohed it and I never heard anything about the tape again. The whole thing went cold.”*
>
> *“At that time I trusted the police. But when nothing happened, I became confused and concerned.”*
>
> *“Now it is clear to me that there has been a huge cover up. There is no doubt in my mind.”*
>
> *In February 1982, part of Vishal’s skeleton*[lxxi] *was found in woodland in West Sussex. There was no trace of his legs, pelvis or lower spine, nor of his outer clothes, his sleeveless vest or his Superman underpants.*[584]

The Mehrotras were proud Britons in the 1980s —

> *Mr. Mehrotra’s son Vishal was abducted as he walked home to Putney after watching the Prince of Wales and Diana Spencer ride to their wedding in a carriage on July 29 1981.*[585]

Today, not so much.

> *In June 1982, four months after Vishal’s remains were found, police raided the Elm Guest House.*
>
> *Dozens of men were questioned, reportedly including at least 30 who were prominent in public life and business. It was widely reported at the time that the raids were linked to Vishal’s disappearance.* ***The Times*** *reported that the investigation had included the disappearance of another boy, Martin Allen, 15, missing since Guy Fawkes Night, 1979, whose body has never been discovered. The son of the chauffeur*

> *to the Australian High Commissioner, he was last seen waving goodbye to a school friend at King's Cross Underground station.*
>
> *Police at the time dismissed the reports as "nonsense".*[586]

Perhaps Martin Allen's disappearance on Guy Fawkes Night was no coincidence.

> *Are the Jesuits powerful enough to both create and control their own opposition?*

Hacker "Htoo Wunna Ko Ko"
Wikimedia Commons

> *The most ubiquitous symbol of resistance to the New World Order is the Guy Fawkes mask. From the hacker collective known as "Anonymous" to "Occupy Wall Street", anyone who wishes to strike a blow for freedom while in public demonstration is wearing one.*
>
> *The masks were popularized by the 2005 movie "V for Vendetta."*[lxxii] ...
>
> *"V for Vendetta" portrays an odd love/hate dynamic with Christian and Crusader imagery. The setting was a dark fantasy future but the person of Guy Fawkes comes from a real English past. ...*
>
> *The Gunpowder Plot of 1605 was an effort by a Jesuit cabal of Catholics*[1222]*, led by Fawkes to assassinate James I of England*[1223]*. Jesuit priests Henry Garnet and John Gerard were implicated during the subsequent investigation.*[1224]
>
> *It was just one of many targeting Protestant England. ~ Illuminati Unmasked*[587]

Since then, every November 5th in England has been celebrated by burning the Pope in effigy. Did Papal paedophiles take their deadly revenge in 1979 on poor young Martin Allen?

In lieu of arrests and justice have been a slew of "reports" and "operations". Surprisingly, U.K. citizens continue to buy the story that their justice system is fast at work and will “nick” the “paedos” in the end!

But for the victims, the pattern of ancient pagan cult worship remains the same: very often, the poor boys who are sodomized and abused end up dead. Whether by a sacrificial castration sickle or being hit by a car, the result is the same: murder for the Devil’s Simulation.

> *Scotland Yard launched Operation Fairbank two years ago to look into suggestions that high profile political figures had been involved.*
>
> *Officers have set up a new strand of the inquiry, Operation Midland, after being passed information about the three alleged murders.*
>
> *The allegations emerged when a man in his 40s came forward claiming to have been one of around 15 boys who were abused by a powerful paedophile network 30 years ago.*[lxxiii]
>
> *Some of the abuse allegedly took place at flats in the Dolphin Square development in Pimlico, where a number of politicians have had London homes.*
>
> *According to the man, a 12-year-old boy was strangled by a Conservative MP at a town house in front of other victims.*
>
> *On another occasion, a boy of around 10 was deliberately run down and killed by a car being driven by one of his abusers, the man claimed. ~ Telegraph*[588]

It wasn’t just spies and politicians who were “serviced” at the Elm Guest House; many in the entertainment industry frequented the locale to seduce and rape boys, sometimes promising them a moment in the spotlight. One victim would later be seen on the television serial *Doctor Who*.[589]

All Roads Still Lead To Rome

Forty years ago, the manager of the Grafton Close children’s home in Hanworth — the facility that fed young boys to powerful homosexuals and deviants frequenting the Elm Guest House — was John Stingemore.

Stingemore went to his grave without ever being prosecuted for raping and pimping the boys in his care — but it was a close call.

> *Mr. Stingemore was due to be on trial as well but was found dead at his home in St. Leonards-on-Sea on January 14* [2015]. ~ *Your Local Guardian*[590],[lxxiv]

However, Stingemore's "friend", Roman Catholic Priest Tony McSweeney was forced to address complaints that he had frequented Grafton Close to abuse the boys there.

> *Opening the trial, prosecutor Sarah Plaschkes QC said: "From the time before he became a priest, he has had a sexual interest in teenage boys."*
>
> *"Over the decades on various occasions, he has taken indecent images of teenage boys."*
>
> *"In 1998 his cleaner found a video in his home. Finally when he was arrested in 2013, indecent images were found on his laptop."*
>
> *"Between 1979 and 1981, the prosecution say, he sexually abused teenage boys."*
>
> *"At that time, he was a close friend of a man called John Stingemore. He was the officer in charge of Grafton Close, a residential home for vulnerable children."*
>
> *"That gave this defendant the opportunity to sexually abuse teenage boys who were in care."*[591]

Another *public* venue Father McSweeney was privileged to abuse children in was the Boy Scouts. Did he have a "friend" there, too?

> *Ms. Plaschkes told the court in the 1970s and 1980s, Mr. McSweeney was involved in the Scout movement.*
>
> *In the late 1970s at a scout retreat, Mr. McSweeney met a boy who was 15 at the time, and the teenager later helped at a week-long retreat.* [592]

The prosecutor, "Ms. Plaschkes", didn't see any evidence of a "paedophile" network outside Stingemore and McSweeney.

> *“The prosecution say it was a joint enterprise between the two men.”*[593]

Apparently, the “historical” ties between Grafton Close and the Elm Guest House went unnoticed to the stalwart woman of the “Queen’s Counsel”. With Stingemore’s timely or, rather “untimely” death, that left Father McSweeney to “face justice” alone.

He’ll probably continue to do well with public institutions, if the way police reacted to his house cleaner reporting him in possession of child pornography is any measure.

> *The cleaner, Julia Woodyatt, later played one of the videos and saw it was of two young boys engaged in a sex act so reported it to the police* [back in 1998].[594]

For Elm Guest House guests who didn’t have the power the Catholic Church wields with the British government, other tactics would be needed to shield them from scrutiny. Given that diplomats and spies were amongst the frequenters, one of those tactics was the Official Secrets Act.

The Official Secrets Act first became law in the United Kingdom in 1911 and was subsequently updated in 1920, 1939 and fifty years later in 1989. That final “update” was to remove the “public interest defence”. It was a protection for whistleblowers that allowed “sensitive” information to be disclosed if the crime outweighed the advantage received by England’s “enemies” in the public interest.

Small news venues like the *Local Guardian*, *Sunday People* or the now-defunct (not surprisingly) government watchdog *Exaro* attempted to do the job mainstream media refused to, particularly in regard to child trafficking in general and the Elm Guest House in specific.

Occasionally, it gets re-reported by slightly bigger papers such as the *Mirror*.

> *A former Tory cabinet minister was pictured in a video allegedly featuring child sex abuse, it has been claimed.*

> *The tape is believed to be among a batch of films seized by customs officials and handed over to MI5, reports the* ***Sunday People****.*
>
> *No details about it have ever been made public.*
>
> *But the customs officer who seized the haul is said to have identified the ex-minister in the footage. ...*
>
> *A probe by the* ***Sunday People*** *and investigative website* ***Exaro*** *has uncovered evidence that the cassette was confiscated at Dover in 1982.*
>
> *A seizure notice shows a customs officer took custody of three 8mm films, three video cassettes and an order form.*
>
> *The notice said the items were "seized as liable to forfeiture upon the grounds that the said goods are indecent or obscene articles".*
>
> *Friends of the customs officer, now retired, have confirmed he told them this week that he recognised the minister in the film but would not say anything else after his former bosses reminded him he had signed the Official Secrets Act.*
>
> *This week the officer was too frightened even to open his front door, and said he was unwilling and unable to comment.*
>
> *He said: "I am bound by all these regulations until I die." ...*
>
> *The video was seized at Dover's Eastern Car Terminal along with other child pornography.*
>
> *It was being brought into Britain from Amsterdam by Russell Tricker, a British-born businessman based in the Dutch capital. He was held for two hours and officials confiscated the tape.*
>
> *The customs officer then passed the case over to senior managers at Customs and Excise – since reorganised as part of HM Revenue and Customs.*
>
> *They took no further action against Mr. Tricker, and are understood to have passed the tape to MI5.*[595]

After that, the story disappeared.

Whenever possible, however, Britain’s most popular papers like the *Daily Mail*[lxxv] or the *Telegraph* quickly seize upon every opportunity...to discredit whistleblowers such as Social Worker Christopher Fay who named names of the rich and shameless as they abused boys at the Elm Guest house.[596],[597]

Perhaps that’s because one of those names was the current Vice-President of the European Commission, Leon Brittan. Or, as he’s more properly known, “The Right Honourable Lord Brittan of Spennithorne, PC, QC, DL.”

If Tory MP Geoffrey Dickens knew in November of 1983 that his then-Home Secretary was busy buggering boys at the Elm Guest House, he might not have expected to get any results from the paedophile dossier he turned over to him.

London

London is the capital city of Great Britain.

It’s also considered the banking capitol of the world.

Like the Vatican and Washington, D.C., London maintains a special status in the Realm.

Although this is often “debunked”, the fact is that London is an incorporated principality. The City of London is referred to by Elites as simply “The City”.

> *The City is not a part of England, just as Washington is not a part of the USA. The City is* [one of, if not the] *wealthiest ... on earth and is presided over by a Lord Mayor who is appointed annually. When the Queen wishes to conduct business within the City, she is met by the Lord Mayor at Temple (Templar) Bar where she requests permission to enter this private, sovereign state. She then proceeds into the City walking several paces behind the Mayor. Her entourage may not be clothed in anything other than service uniforms.*
>
> *In the nineteenth century, 90% of the world’s trade was carried by British ships controlled by the Crown. The other 10% of ships had to pay commissions to the Crown simply for the privilege of using the world’s oceans.*
>
> *The Crown reaped billions in profits while operating under the protection of the British armed forces. This was not British commerce or British wealth, but the Crown’s commerce and the Crown’s wealth. ...*
>
> *The aforementioned Temple Bar is the juristic arm of the Crown and holds an exclusive monopoly on global legal fraud through their Bar Association franchises. The Temple Bar is comprised of four Inns of Court. They are; the Middle Temple, Inner Temple, Lincoln’s Inn and Gray’s Inn. The entry point to these closed secret societies is only to be found when one is called to their Bar.*

> *The Bar attorneys in the United States owe their allegiance and pledge their oaths to the Crown. All Bar Associations throughout the world are signatories and franchises to the International Bar Association located at the Inns of Court of the Crown Temple.* ~ Owen[598]

Western lawyers (many of whom are politicians and / or judges) bow, along with the Sovereign of England, to the authority that rules in London: the Templars. The Templars, in turn, bow to Rome.

Modern usury banking wasn't created by Jews nor is it overseen by them. Like everything else, they're just the selected middle-men.

> *The Templars established forts, lodges and temples at strategic locations where travelers could turn in their valuables and get an encoded writ as receipt that only Templars could decipher. The writ could then be cashed in at any other Templar fort or lodge.*
>
> *This was an innovation offered by no one else and the Templars charged a fee based upon the amount guarded; usury. ...*
>
> *"Bank" is derived from the Italian* **banco***, the counter where the new money merchants* [like the powerful de Medici family] *conducted their business. ~Secret History*[599]

Proof that the Templars control London and London controls the Crown can be found in the incorporated City Coat of Arms and the actual Crown, itself; both copiously adorned with the symbolism of Rome.

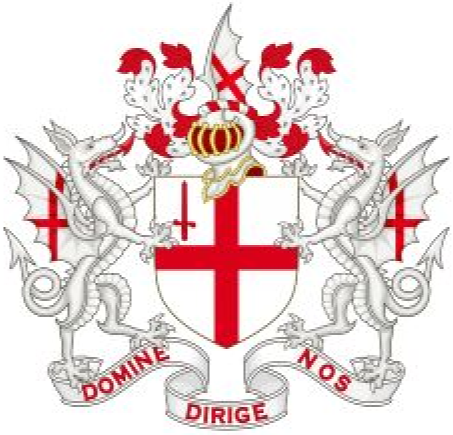

More proof of how the English don’t control England can be found only 6 miles from the Elm Guest House; yet another den of depravity.

Shirley Oaks / Lambeth

In heart of London is the Borough of Lambeth. Lambeth was home to the Shirley Oaks orphanage for “mentally handicapped children”.

It was the perfect location for serial predators to raid and they did so with such vicious cruelty that it shocked even hardened investigators.

Living survivors say their memories of abuse go back to the 1950’s but corruption kept the scandal under wraps until just last year (2016).

Eventually, victims found a louder voice in numbers and they banded together to form the “Shirley Oaks Survivors Association” (SOSA). It was their unified complaints that forced an official response. Unwilling to wait for the Metropolitan London Police investigation (“Operation Middleton”), Raymond Stevenson of SOSA provided the combined Metro / Lambeth Council investigation with a 130-page preliminary report.

In it, he called the abuse at Shirley Oaks “industrial scale”. Stevenson was able to verify seven hundred children raped, tortured and some murdered by the criminal Elite who were carefully protected by Scotland Yard; that’s because some of the pedophiles were cops.

In fact, some children were brought to a special government-operated dungeon where they were tortured Inquisition-style.

> *Senior council officials apparently violently raped and abused women and children in a London council basement during the 1990s, an explosive new report has revealed.*

> *Until now allegations of a paedophile ring operating at Lambeth Council have never been made public.*
>
> *According to a report, obtained exclusively by Sky News, council figures used the basement of Lambeth's housing headquarters to carry out the horrific abuse on women, children and even animals "without fear of interruption by other staff".*
>
> *Among the allegations includes a female member of staff who described being raped "of horrendous proportions" — suffering serious injuries still one month afterwards. The broadcaster also reported she was raped alongside children and animals by senior members of the council.*
>
> *Three male employees, including one in a senior position, were suspended from their jobs in the housing department in light of the findings following an internal investigation. But they were removed on grounds of breaching the authority's "equal opportunities policy". No criminal investigation was launched at the time despite the claims in the report.*
>
> *But now the Metropolitan Police are investigating the abuse allegations and the 1993 murder case of Lambeth Council's housing manager Bulic Forsythe under Operation Trinity — linking it to the Westminster paedophile ring that involves high profile politicians and MPs during the 1970s and 1980s. ~ International Business Times*[600]

Forsythe made the mistake of telling people he had seen terrible things and he was drumming up the courage to make it right.

> *A council official was murdered days after he vowed to expose "horrible" people linked to a VIP paedophile ring, a witness has claimed.*
>
> *Detectives are investigating claims Bulic Forsythe was silenced by a children's home vice ring said to have included a future minister in Tony Blair's government.*
>
> *A friend of Bulic, traced by the Mirror, said the social services manager at Lambeth council in south London confided in him shortly*

> *before he was murdered 22 years ago last month.*
>
> *The witness claimed: "I will never forget one evening in the pub when he told me and my wife: "There are some people in Lambeth Council who are doing really horrible, disgusting things and I am going to expose them. I won't let them get away with it."*
>
> *"I was nervous when he was telling me all of this. I could feel by the anxious, determined emotion in his voice just how serious the situation was."*
>
> *"I will never forget the look on his face when he was telling me this. He was seriously disgusted and disturbed by what he knew and was determined to see that justice was served. Several days later, he was murdered."*
>
> *The witness, a former para-legal, said he contacted the police with the information at the time. He claimed: "It was a very short conversation with no interest expressed by the police and no one ever called me back." ~ The Mirror*[601]

That February in 1993 he was brutally beaten to death and his flat was set ablaze.

In an interview with the press, Lambeth Council Administration Manager Mike Waller would say—

> *Bulic worked for Lambeth Soc. Services at our Headquarters in Clapham for over 4 years. Although he was considered by some people to be rather over-zealous, in fact his bark was much worse than his bite.*[602]

A more accurate portrayal would've been, "Over-zealous Bulic will never be given the chance to bark."

One of the high-profile accused "paedophiles" was British Labour Party Member of Parliament (MP) Paul Yaw Boateng. That's *Baron* Boateng to be precise.

> *...inquiry counsel Ben Emmerson QC, said it would be examining whether the abuse within the Lambeth homes was carried out by an*

> *organised network of paedophiles. Emmerson said the investigation would attempt to piece together all the reports, evidence and allegations over more than four decades.*
>
> *He said allegations that the former government minister Paul Boateng had connections to the paedophile Michael Carroll, who ran the Angell Road home, would be examined. ~ The Guardian*[603]

Boateng was England's first black Cabinet Minister for the administration of Prime Minister Tony Blair.

> *... modern war is always accompanied by copious amounts of propaganda, subterfuge and outright lies. A few may raise ire over such a process (such as the Telegraph's George Pitcher) but controlled media is never allowed to examine such issues too closely.*
>
> *In 2009, Pitcher lambasted former Prime Minister Tony Blair for his participation in the Iraq War, especially given that Blair converted to Roman Catholicism immediately upon leaving office.*[64] *...*
>
> *In 2004, Tony Blair signed the Constitution to the European Union at a revealing location —*
>
> > *Tony Blair joined other EU leaders today in putting his signature to the new European Constitution — as Jack Straw disclosed that the promised referendum on the treaty would not be held until 2006.*
> >
> > *The ceremony took place in the ornate surroundings of the Palazzo dei Conservatori in the heart of ancient Rome where the original treaty establishing the Common Market was signed 47 years ago.*
> >
> > *It marked the start of a two-year ratification process in which the treaty has to be accepted into law by the national parliaments of all the member states. ~ The Independent*[367]
>
> *What correspondent Gavin Cordon of* ***The Independent*** *failed to tell you (or* ***The Independent*** *failed to show) was that Blair signed the*

> *constitution under Alessandro Algardi's massive 1645 A.D. bronze statue of Pope Innocent X. ~ Secret History*[604]

What did it take for Paul Boateng to become Baron Boateng, the first black Cabinet Minister under closet Roman Catholic Tony Blair? — He is a "Labour" Leftist and a "paedophile".

Of course, *The Guardian* would be quick to add that accusations against Boateng have not been substantiated.

But that wouldn't stop his son, Benjamin Boateng, from drugging and raping 23-year-old Clare Walker at a party.[605]

We certainly can't condemn someone just by association. Just because Tony Blair was a frequent guest of Jeffrey Epstein[606] doesn't mean he liked to rape children.

However, the daughter of Bulic Forsythe wasn't quite as privileged as Benjamin Boateng. In fact, because her father tried to be a man of conscience, she never knew him.

> *Kiddist Forsythe – born three months after her dad's murder – believed he may have been targeted because of what he knew and she is urging the police to fully reopen the murder investigation.*[607]

> *Forsythe's daughter Kiddist told the* [Sky News] *broadcaster: "Some of the stuff that's in here, [the report*[lxxvi]*], I honestly can't believe happened. I was very shocked."*[608]

A decade and a half after all the "paedophiles" have had their fill, cops, judges, journalists and editors are finally on the job.

> *A long-running police inquiry — Operation Middleton — which looked at all the borough's children's homes over a 20-year period, concluded there were at least 35 men and women who had abused children. In its final report, investigators said 16 suspected abusers died before the inquiry began — and another 19 could not be identified.*
>
> *This figure does not include the men who have been arrested and charged. One killed himself on the eve of his trial. Add those to the total and there were up to 50 paedophiles abusing children in Lambeth's homes.*
>
> *The recently set-up Shirley Oaks Survivors Group believes that is a severe underestimate. The group already has more than 600 members. Many of the survivors do not trust the police and are undecided about whether they will ever feel confident enough to come forward.* ~ BBC Newsnight[609]

Showing how serious they are, the British government brought in a woman from New Zealand to take charge; Judge Justice Dame Lowell Goddard, QC.

The monster who doled out the innocent children to powerful un-named "paedophiles" ran up to five orphanages for the Lambeth Council. He was specially picked for his job and arrived ready to rape kids.

> *Nobody doubts that paedophiles were operating seemingly at will in Lambeth — the question that remains is whether successive inquiries unravelled the full extent of the abuse, and to what degree this behaviour was coordinated by a large group of abusive men.*
>
> *How did Lambeth find itself so compromised?*

> *In the days when police checks were not as rigorous as they are today, councils were occasionally unlucky enough to employ predatory paedophiles. Lambeth was unlucky time and again, over 20 years, in several children's homes. Was that just negligence? Or was something else at play?*
>
> *One man — Michael John Carroll — will be central to the investigation.*
>
> *Goddard says she will examine "the involvement of Michael Carroll in the sexual abuse of children in the care of the council; his recruitment and continued employment by the council; and the circumstances surrounding his application to foster a child and the council's subsequent account to the Clough Inquiry".*
>
> *Carroll is better known by his second name, John. He was employed by Lambeth in 1978, became manager of the Angell Road home in 1981, and continued to run the home in Brixton until he was sacked for fiddling his expenses in late 1991.*
>
> *To begin with, Carroll was considered an exemplary manager who ran a model home. But he had a reputation as a bully to other staff — and as a disciplinarian with the children in his care, who were as young as three.*
>
> *Lambeth knew Carroll was a problem long before he was eventually dismissed. In 1986, it discovered something that should have excluded him from working with children. Carroll already had a conviction for child abuse — which he hadn't disclosed when he had applied for a job in Lambeth. But the conviction, and his failure to disclose it, did not lead to his dismissal.*[610]

"Unlucky", indeed.

Not to question the fine journalism at the BBC, but all of the spin seems to have caused a misunderstanding. Michael John Carroll wasn't convicted of "disciplinary child abuse". He was convicted of sexually assaulting a child all the way back in 1966.[611]

He was a particularly diseased and heinous child predator. Children came into the care of his government orphanages, desperate for love and that is what he exploited to rape them or offer them to his depraved high-profile clientele.

Despite the fear and distrust of corrupt cops, another witness did come forward.

> *The retired social services boss told detectives how the politician suspected of child abuse would spend evenings with the convicted paedophile who ran the home.*
>
> *The witness said the man would arrive alone and then join Michael Carroll in an annex where the beast is known to have attacked a string of youngsters.*
>
> *She said Carroll and the public figure would take young boys to the top-floor flat in Angell Road children's home in Brixton, South London.*
>
> *She said: "John would sometimes come down and select one of the boys to go up to the flat. He would say, 'Uncle John wants to talk to you' and the child would go up holding his hand."*
>
> *Official documents reveal one of Carroll's alleged victims told detectives 16 years ago that a group of paedophiles attacked children in the flat.*
>
> *Carroll was the only person convicted of abuse linked to the home, despite a number of children claiming they were attacked by other men there.*
>
> *The witness accused Scotland Yard of covering up the alleged abuse after she originally gave evidence to then-detective inspector Clive Driscoll in 1998.*
>
> *She said the Metropolitan Police failed to follow up on her evidence after they removed Mr. Driscoll from the investigation.*
>
> *Detectives from the Met's Child Abuse Investigation Command have now taken statements from her, after she was tracked down during a 16-month* ***Mirror*** *investigation.*

> *She said she saw the politician at the children’s home about four times in a three-month period while she was a trainee there in the early 1980s.*
>
> *She said: “It was always in the evenings, between about half six and eight. He would see John and then disappear upstairs with John to his private flat. He would always arrive by himself.”*
>
> *She said none of the staff would speak up when Carroll returned to select a boy.*
>
> *She said: “The first time I saw it I asked a staff member what was going on and she told me John was doing ‘direct work’.” This meant working one-to-one with children addressing issues including sexual abuse. Convicted paedophile Carroll claimed to be an expert on counselling abused children.*
>
> *The witness said: “There were a group of John’s favourite boys who would go up to the flat. All were aged between about six and 10 and very vulnerable. They all had the same look – like they craved love and affection.”*
>
> *She said the politician was one of several men who visited the home including a police officer and social workers from other parts of Lambeth. The* ***Mirror*** *knows the identity of three of the others. All their names have been passed to the police.* ~ Mirror[612]

The *Mirror* has the names of the high-profile “paedophiles” but they’re not giving them up; legal protections, don’t you know!

> *An alleged female victim of Carroll told detectives in 1998 that a paedophile ring abused boys in the Angell Road annex, known to staff and children as “John’s room”.*
>
> *The girl told detectives she was violently sexually assaulted by Carroll, referred to as MJC in an official document seen by the* ***Mirror****. ...*
>
> *The witness said she saw the minister on two further occasions, once with a social worker and the police officer. She told managers she*

> *suspected abuse. She said: "I was told John was a law unto himself and was protected by someone higher up."*[613]

The name "Carroll" in general and "John Carroll" in specific should immediately make Americans wary.

The Carroll family was the power behind the American Revolution for the Papacy.

> *The Carrolls were thoroughly invested in the American Revolution. Cousin Charles Carroll signed the Declaration of Independence and Daniel was one of only two Catholics to sign the Constitution and one of only 5 men to have signed both Constitution and the Articles of Confederation.*[1619]
>
> *Daniel Carroll's brother John was a Jesuit and the first Arch Bishop of Baltimore*[1620]*. John Carroll founded a private school for boys, and named it "Georgetown".*[1621] *~ Illuminati Unmasked*[614]

Westminster was no stranger to grisly crimes against women and children in 1974. Two hundred years prior, a visiting American diplomat was doing his share in Clapham.

> *Workmen have dug up the remains of ten bodies hidden beneath the former London home of Benjamin Franklin, the founding father of American independence.*
>
> *The remains of four adults and six children were discovered during the £1.9 million restoration of Franklin's home at 36 Craven Street, close to Trafalgar Square. Researchers believe that there could be more bodies buried beneath the basement kitchens.*
>
> *Initial estimates are that the bones are about 200 years old and were buried at the time Franklin was living in the house, which was his home from 1757 to 1762, and from 1764 to 1775. Most of the bones show signs of having been dissected, sawn or cut. One skull has been drilled with several holes. Paul Knapman, the Westminster Coroner, said yesterday: "I cannot totally discount the possibility of a crime. There is still a possibility that I may have to hold an inquest."*

> *The principal suspect in the mystery is William Hewson, like Franklin a Fellow of the Royal Society, and the husband of Polly Stevenson, the daughter of Franklin's landlady, Mary Stevenson. ~ The Sunday Times*[615]

"Bawdy Ben Franklin" was a well-known "lady's man" which is whitewash code for "Member of the Devil's Simulation in Good Standing."

Not only was Franklin a Master Grand Mason,[616] but he also enjoyed the night life in London with the Hellfire Club.

The Hellfire Club was founded by Sir Francis Dashwood. It has been spun as a mockery of religion. Dashwood had personal experience by visiting several seminaries and convents throughout Europe.

> *The Hellfire Club was the popular name for an exclusive English club that met irregularly from 1746 to around 1763, run by Sir Francis Dashwood. During the time of the club's operation, they were commonly thought to hold notorious, orgiastic and Satanic meetings at Medmenham Abbey, beside the Thames and later at West Wycombe Caves.*
>
> *The term was not invented by the 1750 club; they first met to celebrate an earlier club founded in 1720 by Charles Edward. Other clubs using the name were set up throughout the 18th century.*
>
> *The club was founded by Sir Francis Dashwood after he returned from his Grand Tour of Europe. According to the 1779 book **Nocturnal Revels**, on the Grand Tour he had visited various religious seminaries...*
>
> *At the first gathering in May 1746, they met at the George and Vulture public house in Lombard Street, London, the meeting place of the 1720s group. The initial membership was limited to twelve but it soon increased. Of the original twelve, seven have been almost certainly identified: Dashwood, Robert Vansittart, William Hogarth, Thomas Potter, Francis Duffield, Edward Thompson, and Paul Whitehead. Though not a member, Benjamin Franklin occasionally attended the*

> *club's meetings. The later membership is potentially immense, including John Wilkes and John Montagu, 4th Earl of Sandwich.*
>
> *They did not call themselves the Hellfire Club, but used a number of mockingly religious titles, initially the Brotherhood of St. Francis of Wycombe. Other titles used included the Order of Knights of West Wycombe and later the Monks of Medmenham. The members called each other brothers and referred to Dashwood as abbot; female guests were nuns. Unlike the more determined Satanists of the 1720s the club motto was* ***Fay ce que vouldras*** *(Do what thou wilt) from François Rabelais, later used by Aleister Crowley. Although indulging in pseudo-Satanic rites the "monks" were keener devotaries of Bacchus and Venus.* ~ Wikipedia[617]

In light of all the other material in these pages, we know that Dashwood and Franklin weren't mocking "religion"; they were partaking in it.

The net cast by Metro Police was thrown after all the sharks were long gone but the Devil's Simulation did allow a few lingering piranhas to get caught.

The background behind one of them confirms for us who really benefited from the children given away at the "public" London orphanages.

> *Philip Temple, 66, admitted seven charges committed in the 1970s when he appeared at Woolwich Crown Court.*
>
> *He pleaded to 20 similar charges and two of perjury at Croydon Crown Court in April.*
>
> *In all, he admitted abusing 12 boys and one girl while working in south London care homes and a north London church.*
>
> *He also admitted lying on oath in the 1990s when he was cleared of child sex abuse charges following accusations by a teenage boy from his church.*
>
> > ** In the 1970s, Temple worked as a social worker at three south London children's home. He abused children in each of the homes but gained successive promotions.*
> > ** Eventually made a "housefather" of Rowan House in the*

> *Shirley Oaks complex near Croydon.*
> ** Suspended in 1977 after allegations of sexual offending were made.*
> ** Became a monk in the Roman Catholic Church in 1981.*
> ** Ordained a priest in 1987 based at Christ the King Monastery in Cockfosters, north London.*
> ** Faced trials in 1998 and 1999 after a teenage boy from the church accused him of sexual abuse.*
> ** The first trial ended without a verdict and the second with an acquittal.*
> ** Following the trial in 1999, the diocese* [“]*wanted*[”] *to have Temple removed. His order set up an internal commission of inquiry.*
> ** In 2002 the diocese was reassured by the order Temple was not in the UK and would not be returning.* ~ BBC[618]

Allow us to read between the lines for the BBC, whose bold headline reads ***Ex-Catholic Priest Admits Seven Charges Of Child Sex Abuse*** yet nowhere in the piece do we read of Brother Philip Temple being laicized.

> * Philip Temple was a vicious “paedophile” who raped and abused children as a social worker.
> * He was repeatedly promoted and given more and more access to vulnerable young children.
> * As a vicious “paedophile” he made his way to the Lambeth orphanages and was granted access.
> * At the height of his career of crime against the innocent, he became a Catholic priest. It was a calculated decision to grant him more access to children. Both the aptly-named Temple and “the Church” were happy with the arrangement.
> * He continued to rape and abuse children for years more.
> * Like his “paedophile” priest peers, he was moved all across Europe to insure his anonymity and increase the reach of his predation.
> * After a full career of 4 decades, he was finally reigned in.

As Kiddist Forsythe, the daughter of the brutally-murdered whistle-blowing Housing Manager Bulic Forsythe, described upon reading Raymond

Stevenson’s SOSA report; London’s Elite bringing women, children and animals to torture, rape and murder into a specially-configured dungeon in a government building shocks the senses.

With almost no-one being prosecuted or punished for the unbelievable crimes and the victims doing the Metro’s job for them, the Lambeth Council had the Lord Mayor of London write the biggest check of its kind.

> *Lambeth council is to pay tens of millions of pounds in compensation to children abused in its care homes, after a report by survivors of the Shirley Oaks home in the borough detailed systematic abuse by 60 paedophiles against thousands of young people.*
>
> *The payouts, which are understood to total around £40m, are likely to far exceed the average payments of around £13,000 awarded in court to abuse victims. Lambeth’s decision to accept liability and set up what it said was a “far reaching redress system” is being seen as a radical blueprint for other institutions to follow when sexual and physical abuse on such a systematic scale is uncovered.*
>
> *The report by the Shirley Oaks Survivors Association (SOSA), which interviewed 400 former residents of the children’s home, identifies 27 suspected paedophiles by name, and gives details of 60 who have had multiple allegations of abuse made against them. ~ The Guardian*[619]

Apparently, the irony of British citizens paying hush money through the nose to placate the survivors of the malignant Pedocracy aimed against them was lost on *The Guardian*.

Perhaps, given who edits British media, we shouldn’t be surprised.

*****

In Grafton Close / Elm Guest House victim Peter Hatton-Bornshin’s suicide note were found the words “I will get those bastards.”[620]

Perhaps some who have read his story here will see it done.

Chapter 16

Who Took Johnny?[lxxvii]

5 September 1982: *12 year old John David "Johnny" Gosch disappears while on his paper route in Des Moines, Iowa.*

In recounting the disappearance, John Gosch, Senior, stated that he always accompanied his son every Sunday morning for his paper route, but that morning he didn't. Supposedly, Johnny took his wagon filled with papers and the family dachshund to go it alone.

By 6 a.m., neighbors began calling the Gosch residence to complain that they hadn't received their paper. John Senior drove the route and found Johnny's wagon and the family dog still tied to it, but no sign of the boy.

John Senior, along with his wife (Johnny's mother) Noreen, called the Des Moines Police but they were disturbingly unresponsive. They took 45 minutes to arrive (Headquarters was 10 minutes away) and distressed the Goschs by suggesting that Johnny had run away from home. Johnny was well-adjusted and happy. He had just bought himself a dirtbike with his paper route money. The Goschs quickly dismissed the assertion that he had run away.

John Gosch Sr. had met Noreen through a mutual friend he knew from his days in the Marine Corps. Noreen had recently lost her first husband to cancer and the two were married a short time later.

Neighbor John Rossi stated that they had seen Johnny being talked to by a man who had emerged from a parked blue two-toned Ford Fairmont with Nebraska plates.

That individual left after supposedly asking Johnny for directions.

He continued on his route until another neighbor, young Michael Smith, heard a car door and observed a silver and black Fairmont shoot out of the neighborhood by running a Stop sign. Johnny Gosch's wagon was there, but not Johnny. Smith's father, Frank (a family friend) was also adamant: Johnny did not run away. Witness and neighbor John Rossi was disturbed, "Why the police didn't take more interest, I don't know."[621]

Former President of the Help Find Johnny Gosch Foundation, John Sampson, noted how Iowa State law aided any possible kidnappers by mandating that authorities wait 72 hours before considering action in a missing person incident. Leads from a kidnapping usually fade after only 24 hours.

According to the United States Justice Department Criminal Resource Manual, the FBI doesn't have jurisdiction over local missing persons.[622]

However, in the case of a child of "tender years" (12 or younger) the FBI will initiate an investigation.[623] But, according to Noreen, the FBI response was to label the vocal Goschs as "loons".

Former Executive Producer of *America's Most Wanted*, Paul Sparrow stated, "People would be shocked by what the real situation was ... The FBI would track your stolen car across state lines, but not your stolen child."

The host of *America's Most Wanted*, John Walsh, had also lost a child to possible kidnappers. Sparrow noted that when they had attempted to get FBI help searching for Walsh's son, "they waved us off".

Reporter Eileen Wixted for WHO-TV in Des Moines candidly admitted that the story went from a missing child to a conflict with law enforcement; "You're not doing enough." Wixted continued, "People would say that Noreen was over the top, at times."

Such would be the reaction either of a frantically-distraught mother, shocked to find that the government agencies she trusted to "serve and protect" were ignoring the disappearance of her son, or an arch criminal desperate to cover her tracks after being involved in a heinous crime.[lxxviii]

As we've seen, rarely have children been kidnapped or sold into slavery without the aid of a family member.

John Gosch's military background could easily conceal connections to systemic child trafficking. Gosch, Senior, was Noreen's second husband and apparently Johnny's father. Children victims from multiple marriages are often sacrificed because they were from a previous spouse.

However, if the Goschs were suspects, they had little to fear from "law enforcement". If they were heartbroken parents, they had little to hope for.

Des Moines Police Chief Orval Cooney stated, "it's a frustrating investigation." "I'm optimistic that we will find the boy alive."

Yet the *Des Moines Register* quoted Cooney in regards to Johnny's mother claiming they weren't doing enough, "I really don't give a damn what Noreen Gosch has to say. I really don't give a damn what she thinks...I'm kind of sick of her."

In 1983, Cooney resigned over scandal from public intoxication, "fixing tickets" of friends and interfering with an investigation into the criminal activities of his son. An 18-officer complaint about his wrongdoing was filed and mentioned by the *Des Moines Tribune*.

No prosecution followed.

“The Police Chief had a lot of problems,” John Senior chuckled.[lxxix]

Two years later, on August 14th, 1984, 13 year old Eugene Martin disappeared from his Des Moines paper route under identical circumstances. However, West Des Moines Police Captain Bob Rushing claimed, “We tried in-depth to make a connection but the boys were dissimilar in everything except their gender.”

Two years after that, 14 year old Marc Allen disappeared after going out for pizza. Again, law enforcement found no connection.

In 1991, a Nebraska man named Paul Bonacci gave testimony to his attorney, John DeCamp, stating that he was used as an accessory in the kidnapping of Johnny Gosch in nearby Des Moines, Iowa. Bonacci would go on to be the center of a whirlwind of controversy regarding systemic child sex slave trafficking in Omaha (see Chapter 21).

WHO TV interviewed Bonacci in a Nebraska state penitentiary where he was serving time for the inappropriate touching of an under-age family member (behavior indicative of having suffered similar abuse). Producers showed the unedited footage to West Des Moines Police with the implication that Bonacci was worth questioning (Omaha is 2 hours from Des Moines).

However, West Des Moines Police Capt. Bob Rushing claimed there was not enough reason to warrant the effort.

In an interview with *America’s Most Wanted*, Bonacci claimed that Johnny had tried to run away from his kidnappers, was recaptured and “branded”. Phone calls came in to *Most Wanted* from other supposed victims sharing a brand scar identical to what Paul Bonacci had described.

The use of a “brand” to physically mark runaway sex slaves implies a trafficking network of staggering proportion.

Bonacci took *Most Wanted* to a trafficking “safe house” which he described in detail beforehand. Their visit verified his claims. Tunnels were found under the house along with a basement prison with initials carved into wood beams of apparent victims.

The previous owner of the property was a prison guard who had subsequently “disappeared”.

This information was garnered by *America’s Most Wanted*, not law enforcement.

When the production crew of *Who Took Johnny?* interviewed FBI Child Abduction Unit Agent Ron Hosko, he claimed he was unfamiliar with the high-profile Gosch case. A female voice off camera immediately stopped any follow-up with, “We agreed that there would be no questions about Johnny Gosch.”

In 1993, Noreen and John Gosch, Senior, divorced.

In 1997, Noreen claimed that she had a surprise visit from a man stating he was her son. She has said that she knew it was him because she recognized his eyes.

The man told her boys who could escape wouldn’t because they were forced to participate in and commit crimes so they feared jail. “They did things to us,” he told her. “They control us,” he said.

Gosch kept the visit to herself until, two years later. She was called to testify in the *civil* trial between Paul Bonacci and his accused slave handler, Lawrence King. There she divulged her secret under oath.

The circumstances surrounding this supposed visit, however, raise more questions than they answer.

Purported victim of Satanic Ritual Abuse David Shurter expressed on his blog the suspicion that Noreen Gosch fabricated the visit because a live Johnny Gosch leaves no one liable to the law (given today’s statute of limitations protections they receive). A murdered, Johnny, however, still allows the remote chance of adjudication.

> *The tales of Johnny Gosch have done quite a bit to distract people from what was going on in Omaha, but other than Paul* [Bonacci]*,* [John] *DeCamp, and Noreen Gosch — who has had contact with Johnny? No one that I know of — people think he is alive because these three say he is — and ONLY these three. Why would they continue this facade you ask? Because there is no statute of limitations on murder — and if it is discovered that Johnny Gosch is in fact deceased — these three are going to have A LOT of questions to answer. That is why I believe this whole fall out with Nick Bryant and Noreen Gosch — even though it happened 18 months ago — is relevant. He wanted to flush out Johnny — and of course the Gosch camp can't allow that — as I believe there is no Johnny to flush out.* [624]

Bolstering Shurter's suspicions are the lengths Noreen Gosch went to in order to cover even criticisms as vague as "but your adult Johnny looks nothing like your childhood Johnny".

> *He is known as the "chameleon". Why? Because he can so completely change his appearance.*[625]

If Noreen Gosch is complicit in the abduction, abuse and murder of her own son (sadly, many victim parents are), it gives motive for this seemingly needless melodrama.

In 1999, the *Omaha World-Herald* published John Senior's skepticism over his ex-wife's assertion.

> *The father of a Des Moines newspaper carrier who disappeared more than 16 years ago said he is skeptical of his ex-wife's statement that their son showed up at her apartment in 1997. ...*
>
> *She testified in a case involving the imprisoned Lawrence E. King Jr., former head of the failed Franklin Community Federal Credit Union of Omaha.*
>
> *John Gosch said that if their son had returned to the Des Moines area, he probably would have gone to the couple's home, where John Gosch*

> *was living and where Johnny Gosch grew up, instead of his mother's apartment. ...*
>
> *Noreen Gosch met Monday with police officers for about an hour and told them about the brief reunion she says she had with her son.*
>
> *"In the past she told us something similar to this and then chose to recant it," West Des Moines Police Capt. Bob Rushing said earlier.*[626]

To make matters even more complex, both the West Des Moines Police and key officials at the *World-Herald* have also been implicated in child sex slave trafficking!

Noreen Gosch[lxxx] also claimed she received photographs in the mail sent anonymously in 2006 of a boy bound and gagged. She believes them to be her son. She shared them with the West Des Moines Police Department and the National Center for Missing and Exploited Children. Both agencies claimed nothing could be done because the boy in the photographs was not Noreen's son, Johnny Gosch.

The pictures were also shown to Detective Nelson Zalva of the Hillsborough County Sheriff's Office. He said he recognized them and that they were in relation to a case in 1979 that had since been solved; the boy[lxxxi] was found and no charges were filed. When the *Who Took Johnny?* production crew showed one of the photographs to Detective Zalva, he stated he didn't recognize it.

Another picture received by Noreen Gosch gives a clue as to the "system" behind systemic child sex slave trafficking.

In the picture is a victim, trussed up on a bed (perhaps it is Johnny Gosch, perhaps an unknown child). Behind him is a laundry bag.

Camp Caribou is located in Ontario, Canada and is run by the Legionnaires for Christ. It is one of some 50 such camps all across Canada and the United States for both young boys and young girls.

The Legionnaires for Christ are part of *Regnum Christi*[lxxxii]; an international organization of Catholic Laity similar in scope and mission to other Catholic societies such as Opus Dei, Knights of Malta, Knights of Columbus, etc. The Legionnaires are mostly composed of clergy.

The Legionnaires for Christ was founded by a Mexican priest named Marcial Maciel Degollado in 1941. Maciel maintained leadership of the movement for nearly 65 years. *Regnum Christi* was founded in 1959 to allow laity to follow Maciel’s movement.

Marcial Maciel was a “made” monster. He was brought in to the Devil’s Simulation by abuse and continued it in power.

> *The youngest of five boys in a family of nine children, Maciel was born in 1920 into the provincial aristocracy of Cotija de la Paz in south-central Mexico, today a crossroads in the drug wars. The surname derived from his father’s Creole French-Spanish ancestry. His father, a rancher with a sugar mill, ridiculed the boy for being a sissy, subjected him to whippings by older brothers, and sent him to work with field hands to shape up as a man. Many years later, he told one of his seminary victims, Juan Vaca, how mule drivers sexually abused him. ~ Newsweek*[627]

As we shall soon see, Maciel’s ties to the Central Intelligence Agency will make us question as to the “accidental” happenstance of his coming from the heart of Mexico’s drug enterprise.

An opining Catholic journalist[lxxxiii] would note of the peculiar name:

> *The literal meaning of his mother’s surname – which in Spanish fashion is inserted after his father’s surname Maciel is fascinating. The literal meaning of “degollado” is “a man whose throat has been ripped out”. ~ The Guardian*[628]

The young victim of sexual molestation attended a Mexican seminary but was forced to leave for reasons not covered by any source. Where else can a Mexican boy with a heart to serve Rome go to become a priest? — To Jesuits in “New” Mexico; the United States of America!

The story goes that Maciel was also rejected by the Jesuits but it was due to the influence of his family that he was finally ordained.

> *That was after he had left two seminaries — in Vera Cruz, Mexico, in 1938 and a Jesuit-run seminary in Montezuma, New Mexico, in 1940 — for what the official history calls “misunderstandings” about his desire to start a religious order. ~ Hartford Courant*[629]

The “official history” would go on to claim that Maciel’s ordination was executed by his uncle. Such an accomplishment is unprecedented in Catholicism. Is the “official history” a re-write which attempts to distance the Jesuits from their pupil? The facts are that Marcial Maciel Degollado was an ordained priest and the last seminary he attended was run by Jesuits. Was this notorious criminal also a Jesuit priest?

As an unknown Mexican *padre* freshly granted his position by a family member, it’s difficult to see how Maciel was weaponized. But as a specially-trained Jesuit, it’s not a leap to see his progression.

It is a link that runs from the Legionnaires through the Jesuits to Opus Dei into Spain; the host nation of them all.

> *Maciel won government support for seminary scholarships in Madrid, after the Spanish Civil War cemented ties between Francisco Franco’s*

> *dictatorship and the Catholic hierarchy. Wealthy industrialists and patricians from the Spanish-speaking world poured money into Maciel's fledgling order. ~ Newsweek*[630]

What Newsweek is neglecting to mention is that Francisco Franco was a devout Roman Catholic. A close advisor of his was Josemaría Escrivá de Balaguer, the founder of Opus Dei.

Escrivá created the secretive group on the 2nd of October 1928, there in Madrid.

Spain is also the birthplace of the Jesuit order. Its founder Íñigo López de Loyola (Ignatius Loyola) and his close friend Francisco de Jasso y Azpilicueta (Francis Xavier) were Spaniards.

As a result, there are many powerful families there who happily give blood and treasure to further the agendas of Rome.

> ... *rich and powerful* [allies] ... *notably the Oriol family ... served to established Maciel Degollado in high society in Spain, helped him to collect money from the rich and had aided him to become acquainted with the dictator Francisco Franco. ~ Guardian*[631]

Maciel immediately began opening schools and seminaries across Europe, Central and South America and looking for pre-pubescent boys to fill them. Again, the "official history" claims Maciel was able to raise vast sums of money without outside influence to ingratiate himself with an unwitting Vatican.

> *Maciel raised money for lodgings and lessons in Mexico City for the small group of followers he had attracted. In 1946 he arrived in Rome and gave $10,000 to Cardinal Clemente Micara, the vicar of Rome, "a huge sum in a city reeling from the war," a priest with seasoned knowledge of Legion finances told me. Maciel, 26, tall and lean with searchlight eyes, spoke no Italian. But the portly Micara, a former Vatican diplomat, spoke Spanish; he provided an endorsement letter for Maciel's fundraising and an audience with Pope Pius XII.*[632]

Maciel tapped in to the Roman-controlled Cold War Hegelian dialectic and painted himself as a passionate opponent of Communism (a movement started by his own Jesuit order).

But what was most on his mind was the abuse of children.

> *In the late 1940s, Maciel began sexually plundering teenage seminarians in the religious order he founded, the Legion of Christ. He also shuttled between Mexico, Venezuela, and Spain, courting benefactors like a senator with silk between the fingers, portraying his Legionaries as a force of resurgent orthodoxy, himself a fearless foe of communism.*[633]

"In the late 1940s..." implies that this wasn't an immediate agenda yet the same *Newsweek* piece tells us Maciel was "family-ordained" in the "mid 1940s" —

> *On his mother's side, four uncles were bishops. Maciel as a teenager entered a seminary in Mexico, but was dismissed for reasons yet to surface; he joined a seminary run by Jesuits in New Mexico and was again expelled for "misunderstandings," according to his official biography. Had it not been for the quartet of uncles, he never would have been a priest. But pull is pull. Bishop Francisco Arias arranged private lessons and ordained his nephew in 1944. A cameraman filmed Maciel in the moment, the footage used in later years for Legion marketing efforts.*[634]

The obvious conclusion is that the most important part of Legionnaire facilities was to provide young boys for abuse. They would later be conditioned to serve, not just as Catholic clergy, but as powerful secular officials in governments everywhere. For instance, one of Maciel's victims was Arturo Jurado Guzman. Rather than being ordained, Jurado would go on to teach at the U.S. Defense Department School of Linguistics in Monterey, California.

Again, the "official history" was that Maciel's ability to fundraise and provide young priests with Jesuit-like devotion to the Catholic cause was why his crimes were overlooked. Yet he repeatedly told his victims that he had “Papal dispensation” to abuse them.

> *After decades of silence, nine men have come forward to accuse the head of an international Roman Catholic order of sexually abusing them when they were boys and young men training to be priests.*
>
> *The men, in interviews in the United States and Mexico, said the Rev. Marcial Maciel Degollado, the founder of the Legionaries of Christ, molested them in Spain and Italy during the 1940s, ‘50s and ‘60s.*
>
> *Several said Maciel told them he had permission from Pope Pius XII to seek them out sexually for relief of physical pain. ~ Hartford Courant*[635]

This boast was actually made repeatedly and of different Popes!

> *One victim reported that Fr. Maciel boasted that he had a special written dispensation from Pope John Paul II to allow him to be masturbated because of the pains he suffered as a result of his “delicate” health.* ~ VatiLeaks[636]

The list of Popes runs as follows —

- Pius XII: Eugenio Maria Giuseppe Giovanni Pacelli — implicated as a “founding father” of both Communism in the East and Fascism in the West. He is frequently mislabeled “Hitler’s Pope” for Vatican deniability. Actually, ‘tis the other way ‘round.
- John XXIII: Angelo Giuseppe Roncalli. In March of 1962, Jacqueline Kennedy had a private audience with Roncalli. A little over one year later, her husband had his brains blown out as he sat beside her. Truly, a “deal with the devil” can be implied as Kennedy’s philandering was a well-known humiliation to his wife. She probably didn’t intend her “favor” to go that far.
- John Paul I: Albino Luciani. There arguably wasn’t time for Maciel to receive his “Papal dispensation” from John Paul I to

rape children as his Papacy lasted only 32 days. Allegations have been that the CIA caused Luciani's "heart attack" because he was a Communist yet his successor (though painted as the anti-Communist who helped Reagan and Thatcher bring down the Soviet Union) was just as sympathetic to Communist causes. What is most likely is that Luciani was a Communist ideologue unwilling to use Communism as a tool of manipulation.

- John Paul II: Karol Józef Wojtyła — reputed by radio host and author Milton William "Bill" Cooper to have been directly involved in the Holocaust. Cooper was killed by Arizona Sheriff's Deputies shortly after 9/11.
- Benedict XVI: Joseph Aloisius Ratzinger — former member of the Nazi Youth who were frequently abused to become abusers; former Archbishop of Munich (the Jesuit-dominated region of Germany that birthed Illuminati founder Johann Adam Weishaupt — Bavaria); co-author of Vatican II along with his Jesuit friend, Karl Rahner and former Prefect of the Congregation for the Doctrine of the Faith — also known as the Inquisition.

Whether Maciel had letters of Papal dispensation to abuse boys from each can only be speculated at.

However, Maciel continued to curry the favor of every Pope he served under. Pope Saint John Paul II was particularly fond of him.

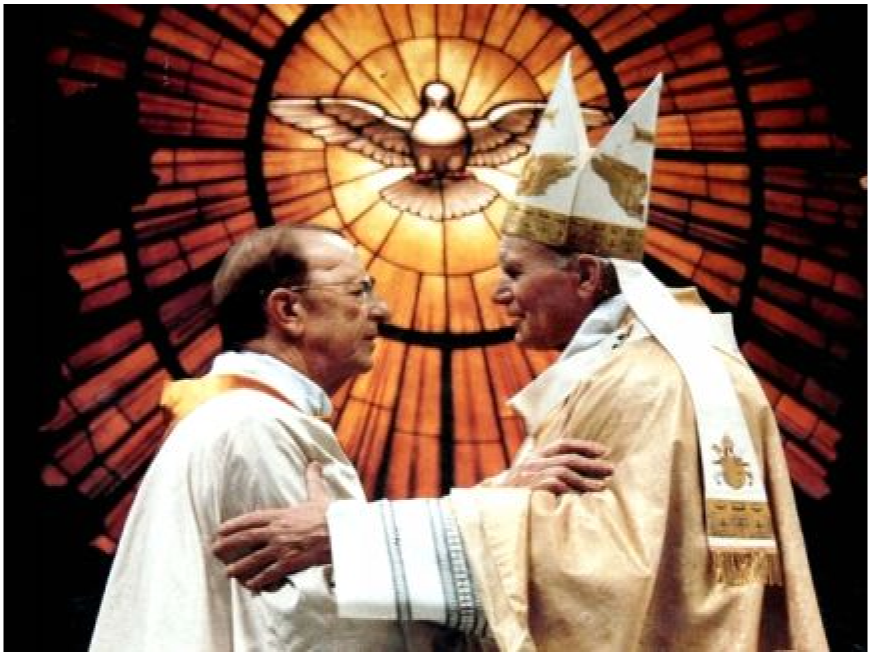

> *During the term of his papacy Pope John Paul II took Fr. Maciel with him on three overseas journeys to Mexico, the first in January 1979, 1990 and 1993. Those trips were public signs of the extraordinary bond between the two men, yet the Pope either actively or passively ignored open allegations that Fr. Maciel was an active paedophile who also fathered children with at least two women and whose monetary schemes included bribery and financial misconduct in the highest levels of the Vatican. Fr. Maciel collaborated extensively with John Paul II who praised, endorsed and glorified him, promoting him to different Vatican offices and making him an integral part of the Holy See's inner circle of associates. Public accusations against Fr. Maciel again surfaced in the mid-1990s, yet John Paul II protected him from investigation and criminal charges right up to his death in 2005. ~* VatiLeaks[637]

As a product of the narco-polity we call "Mexico", Maciel was addicted to illicit drugs — morphine in particular. He was "investigated" for this by the Vatican from 1956 through 1958. During that time, despite a supposed suspension from heading the Legionnaires, he continued to run the organization. The result of the "investigation" was a clean bill of health by several Vatican-employed doctors.

> *Maciel's medical history has been a source of curiosity to the men who say he sexually abused them. Each one said Maciel was addicted to painkilling drugs despite his being cleared of that accusation in the Vatican investigation.*
>
> *In Rome,* [Arturo] *Jurado* [the DoD language teacher mentioned above] *said, he was dispatched to Salvator Mundi hospital on a dozen occasions to obtain morphine. Under orders from Maciel, Jurado said, "I gave him injections many times in the forearm." ~ Hartford Courant*[638]

Doubtless, the narcotics were part of Maciel's regimen in coping with his abuse of children.

> *The former Legionaries said that Maciel seemed to dissociate himself from the sexual acts, separating the bedroom encounters from his priestly activities.*
>
> *To some he never acknowledged that anything unusual had happened. Barba, the literary scholar, said that after a sexual encounter with Maciel, the priest calmly dressed and walked with the youth to bless an outdoor lunch under blue skies.*
>
> *"Fundamentally, Maciel's case is one of a divided personality," said Miguel Diaz, in his initial statements.*[639]

Either through his Jesuit training or as an incognito Jesuit priest, Maciel built his own "Company" very much like Loyola's. Legionnaires were instructed to consider him a "living Saint" and to address the pedophile priest with God-like respect as "*Nuestro Padre*": "Our Father".

Like the Jesuits, Legionnaires took a "Fourth Vow".

> *The Legionaries pledged total fidelity to the pope and took the traditional three vows that members of other religious orders do — of poverty, chastity and obedience. They took a fourth one as well: They swore never to speak ill of the Legion, Maciel or their superiors — and to inform on anyone who did. ...*

> *As described by the men, it was a culture in which one's every moment was to be accounted for, not just in seminary but throughout their lives as priests — a system of total control. Incoming and outgoing mail was monitored and they had no access to telephones. The oath to inform on anyone speaking ill of* ***Nuestro Padre*** *or his Legion meant they were expected to spy on one another, they said.*
>
> *Contact with their families was severely curtailed. Juan Vaca said that for "12 years I was kept in Europe away from my parents and family. I was not allowed to see them or keep close contact with them."*
>
> *The former Legionaries said punishment was harsh.*[640]

Maciel lived like a king. More accurately, he lived like a secret agent; siring children out of wedlock in multiple locations.

> *In 1980 Maciel sired a son, Raul, by Blanca Gutierrez Lara, whom he met in Acapulco. He was 60; she was 22, with a 3-year-old boy from a previous relationship. Maciel used the name Raul Rivas on the birth certificates of Raul Gutierrez and a second son he had by Blanca. He gave her a house in Cuernavaca with financial support, visiting periodically, telling them that he was a CIA agent and oil-company detective. Meanwhile, he held great prominence in Rome. Cardinals relished the grand dinners with a mariachi band at the Legion college. He traveled relentlessly, each time taking $10,000 in cash with no questions asked from his subalterns.*
>
> *In 1986 he had a daughter by another woman from Acapulco. ...*
>
> *In the late 1980s he brought Raul together in Rome with Normita, his daughter by Norma Hilda Baños. Wearing his Roman collar, he arranged for Raul to attend a private Mass with John Paul in the Apostolic Palace. ~ Newsweek*[641]

Newsweek spins Maciel as a master manipulator who told outrageous lies to his family and deceived his good friend, Pope Saint John Paul II.

However, reading the facts aside from spin it is clear that he not only wielded power but those around him knew exactly who he was and what he did.

Of all the “outrageous lies” (implied by *Newsweek*) to tell his family, why that he was an operative of the CIA? — Almost certainly because it wasn’t an “outrageous lie”. An actual connection to the CIA is likely given his power in the Catholic Church, his connection to drugs in Mexico and his role as a facilitator of child victims.

By “coincidence”, the devout Roman Catholic Director of the CIA was also a big Maciel donor.

> *Even as Maciel siphoned Legion funds*[lxxxiv] *to support his secret life and shadow families, President Ronald Reagan’s CIA director, William Casey, and his wife made a seven-figure donation for construction of a Legion building in Cheshire, Connecticut, and were memorialized by a plaque.*[642]

Casey was as “unaware” of who Marcial Maciel was as was Pope Saint John Paul II; not at all. How the Director of the CIA, a supposed public servant, had “seven figures” available for a donation to a Catholic Church society marred by child sex abuse is another matter entirely.

Indeed, Legionnaires and their laity liaisons — *Regnum Christi* — are so powerful they are known derisively as “the Millionaires of Christ”.[643]

Although exploiting handicapped children in an orphanage for abuse sets the mark for pedophile priest depravity, Maciel attempted to outdo it by siring a son out of wedlock then raping him.

> *His son Raul watched the news on TV in Cuernavaca; several years had passed since he had been heard from, though Raul in subsequent interviews said he never forgot how the man he knew as dad sexually abused him through adolescence, a charge now pending in a civil lawsuit against the Legion in Connecticut.*[644]

Maciel maintained a protected status through to his 80’s and the death of Pope Saint John Paul II. By that time, his successor Pope Benedict XVI was required to feign an investigation and subsequent “punishment”. His victims certainly weren’t going to get satisfaction from their respective police, prosecutors and / or judges.

> *Not until 2004, when Maciel was 84 and John Paul was dying, did Ratzinger dispatch trusted canon lawyer Charles Scicluna to investigate the allegations. ...*
>
> *The Legion had a $650 million annual budget and $1 billion in assets by May 2006, when Ratzinger, as Benedict, banished Maciel to "a life of prayer and penitence." The Vatican communiqué did not stipulate what he had done. But Maciel had "more than 20 and less than 100" victims, according to an unnamed Vatican official quoted by John Allen in the* ***National Catholic Reporter****.*
>
> *Maciel retired to Jacksonville, Florida, and a house with a pool in a gated community the Legion bought to comply with Rome's penitential order. He died January 30, 2008, surrounded by several priests, his daughter Normita, and her mother, Norma Hilda Baños. Several days later he was buried at a family crypt in his hometown, Cotija de la Paz. ~ Newsweek*[645]

There was speculation that Maciel's close relationship with Pope John Paul II would taint or hinder his consideration for Sainthood, but the reverse seems to have been the case: few have been beatified faster.

> *In the last week of October, 2011, an* ***Associated Press*** *story under the headline, "Legion of Christ investigation: The cover-up continues", the Italian cardinal appointed by Pope Benedict XVI to clean up the order, Velasio De Paolis, said this about the possibility of another enquiry into other alleged cover-ups within the Legion; "I don't see what good would be served … rather, we would run the risk of finding ourselves in an intrigue with no end … because these are things that are too private for me to go investigating". The implication of his statement is that there is more to be revealed about the secrets of the Legionaries of Christ, and they may well involve Pope John Paul II.*
>
> *Fr. Maciel was a member of the Vatican's old boy's club and part of an exclusive and charmed inner circle. He had the Holy See's protection, tolerance, and shelter for his criminal actions, right up to, and including the current pope, Benedict XVI. In 2006, and as "punishment" for his perverse life, Benedict XVI ordered the*

> *disgraced Fr. Maciel to live a life of prayer and penance, and at the same time admitted that John Paul II had approved a "false prophet" in promoting Fr. Maciel, who in his dying days, had an exorcist in attendance at his bedside.*
>
> *The three recipients of the once-secret documents were surprised at the speed with which John Paul II was beatified, considering the pontiff was not only fully aware of Fr. Maciel's criminal conduct, but abetted his crimes. For those unfamiliar with the story, there were numerous calls from Catholics groups and even some cardinals to halt the beatification process until a full review of his record as pope was assessed. However, in Vatican City on Sunday May 1st, 2011, Benedict XVI bestowed the status of "blessed" on his predecessor after the Vatican had determined that John Paul II had performed the necessary miracle for his elevation. In a ghoulish performance, his coffin was disinterred from its resting place of six years and placed on a platform beneath the main altar of St. Peter's for pilgrims to pass in rituals, and express emotions that accompany the passing of a loved one. Amidst widespread opposition, he was beatified only six years after his death, and non-Catholics saw the ceremony as an obscene display of the worship of the dead similar to ancient Pagan tradition. ~* VatiLeaks[646]

A "Legionnaire" is a member of a Roman Legion; a soldier for Rome.

The Legionnaires have been strongly supported by parishes like St. Catherine of Sienna[647]; a locus for Opus Dei Catholics like Antonin Scalia, FBI Director Louis Freeh and 20-year FBI double agent for the Soviet Union, Robert Philip Hanssen.[648]

— Just a coincidence, of course.

Another big donor to the work of Marcial Maciel has been the founder of Blackwater, converted Roman Catholic Erik Prince.[649] More on that in Chapter 27.

Where's Johnny?

In 2005, a political “scandal” brought the story of Johnny Gosch briefly and obliquely to mainstream level; perhaps by design of the Pedocracy.

A “Conservative journalist” with White House credentials was “outed” by Leftist media as being a fraud.

> *Last week, Republican activist Bobby Eberle, the man behind the now infamous conservative Web site Talon News, insisted that before hiring “Jeff Gannon” as his White House correspondent, he never looked into Gannon’s background. If true, Eberle probably wishes he had. And the same could be said for the White House officials who bent the rules to make way for Gannon in the press briefing room. There’s new evidence that the Talon reporter, who lobbed softball questions at Bush during press conferences on behalf of a dubious news operation, recently worked as a male escort.*
>
> *Gannon, whose real name is James Guckert, made headlines last week when he resigned from Talon after days of intensive scrutiny from bloggers. Online critics first raised questions about Guckert’s questionable journalistic methods and his lack of experience (he often cut and pasted White House press releases into his “news” stories), as well as Talon’s lack of independence from Eberle’s purely partisan GOPUSA Web site. Then questions arose about why the Talon reporter was given access to the White House press room after being turned down for Capitol Hill press credentials. The final straw for Guckert came when bloggers revealed associations that Guckert and his Delaware-based company had with a handful of gay-themed male escort services. ...*

— Delaware is the home state of United States Senator and Vice President Joseph Biden; also a devout Leftist Roman Catholic. —

> *On Monday, John Aravosis posted on his liberal site AmericaBlog.org detailed evidence indicating that not only was Guckert personally involved with the Web sites, but he was also offering his escort services for $200 an hour, or $1,200 a weekend.*
>
> *Aravosis received on-the-record confirmation, complete with five invoices paid by Delaware’s Bedrock Corp., from the person Guckert*

> *hired to build the gay Web site USMCPT.com, which features X-rated photos. The Web designer also forwarded to Aravosis dozens of unused photos that Guckert sent him when the site was being built. “Each photo looks remarkably like Jeff Gannon,” Aravosis writes.*
>
> *AmericaBlog also details scores of other gay escort sites featuring photos and personal profiles of Guckert, such as MaleCorps.com, WorkingBoys.net, and MeetLocalMen.com. Guckert’s first site remained live until May 8, 2003, one month after he began covering the White House for Talon. According to Aravosis’ research, Guckert’s escort profile on WorkingBoys.net was still active as of Monday. Aravosis says he contacted Guckert for comment for the story but received none. On Sunday night, Guckert had a two-hour phone conversation with Michelangelo Signorile, who hosts a talk show on Sirius satellite radio. Although much of the conversation was private, according to Signorile, he asked Guckert specifically, and on the record, about his gay escort past. “I’m just not going to address it,” Guckert said. ~ Salon*[650]

The Left always has fun with exposing the sexually-perverted underbelly of the pseudo-Right but it quickly leads to the inner workings of the Devil’s Simulation so it never receives the coverage one would expect.

The same is true for a similar scandal in the 1980’s but it, too, was quickly buried as the Reagan / Bush “call boy” story which lead to the “Franklin” Cover-up (more in Chapter 21).

However, “alternative media” did follow up on the Gannon / Guckert / gay escort story.

> *In late January a conservative journalist in Washington D.C. was found to have gained access to the White House press pool despite using a fake name, and despite the fact that he once worked as a high-priced homosexual escort.*
>
> *Jeff Gannon was a White House correspondent for Talon News who regularly attended White House press briefings and at least four press conferences with President George W. Bush. On Jan. 26, 2005, Gannon asked a question of the president that was so friendly and*

> *factually inaccurate that some of his colleagues began looking into his background.*
>
> *Talon News, it was learned, is a barely disguised tool of the Republican Party, and Gannon's credentials as a journalist consist solely of a training course at the Leadership Broadcast School of Journalism. After two days of training that cost $50, Gannon was officially a graduate of a journalism school and on his way to the White House press pool.*
>
> *It was soon discovered that Gannon's real name is Jeff Guckert and that he has also gone by the nickname "Bulldog" when listing himself on the Internet as a homosexual escort and personal trainer charging $200 per hour for his "discreet" services.*
>
> *Gannon was removed from the White House and resigned from Talon News on Feb. 8 "Gannongate" quickly became the presidential scandal of the hour, though the story faded from public view as politicians and the media eagerly turned their attention to such pressing matters as steroids in baseball and the Terri Schiavo[lxxxv] situation.*

— "Christian Conservative" politicians hiring out the services of sodomites is nothing much of a story, anyway. —

> *But before long, Internet bloggers had picked up the story and began to think back to the administration of President Bush's father, which was rocked by a scandal that allegedly involved a high-level official giving private, late-night tours of the White House to teenage, male prostitutes. The* ***New York Times*** *and the* ***Washington Post*** *both wrote about the story and the eventual death of Washington lobbyist Craig Spence, who reportedly arranged the visits. Spence, it has been suggested, was preparing to admit publicly that he was using the teenage boys to blackmail high-powered politicians in the beltway. He committed suicide before he had the opportunity to do so. ...*
>
> *Private investigator Sherman H. Skolnick posted a story about the Gannon debacle on www.rense.com, a site known for its conspiracy theories, and publicly stated on Feb. 19 that Gannon is Johnny Gosch.*

> *Andy Stephenson, a blogger from Seattle familiar with the details of the Johnny Gosch case and the child sex rings in Nebraska detailed in the Book, "The Franklin Cover-Up," began, with a group of other writers and investigators, to ponder the claim. They looked at markings on Gannon's body and compared them to those reported on Johnny Gosch. They considered the lack of personal information about Gannon's early years. They considered that Johnny was alleged to have been used as a gay prostitute for blackmail purposes. They considered that the high-powered people alleged to have kidnapped and brainwashed children as part of the government's Monarch Project and MK-Ultra program, including Johnny, did so to use them in a variety of ways to advance their own agendas. And they contacted Noreen Gosch and discussed the idea with her — the first she'd heard of the theory — and they, too, came to the conclusion that Jeff Gannon is none other than Johnny Gosch.*
>
> *The Internet has been abuzz with the theory ever since. And, in a way, it makes perfect sense. You've got a kid abducted and brainwashed into doing the bidding of government officials as part of top-secret mind-control programs, so now that he's older why not put him into the White House to soften press briefings to make the president look better? The suggestion from many is that Gannon is a Monarch Program child-turned-adult operative.* ~ Pointblank Des Moines[651]

Alternative media then received "spokesmen" for the issue: gatekeepers who carefully steered the conversation clear of Roman implications. These included men like Nebraska State Senator John DeCamp (a Roman Catholic seminarian and former aid to CIA Director

William Colby, the “warrior monk” — also a devout Roman Catholic). Also making the rounds was Theodore L. “Ted” Gunderson, former FBI Special Agent in charge of the high-profile Los Angeles office. Gunderson helped destroy the creditability of child sex-slave trafficking with his appearance alongside “Satanist” Michael Aquino (who attained Lieutenant Colonel in the United States Army, ludicrously waxed “horned” eyebrows and all) for the comic relief that was daytime television and the Geraldo Rivera show. Geraldo is a Puerto Rican Roman Catholic.

Another is retired Jewish NYPD Detective James “Jim” Rothstein.

Each played their part in blaming nebulous and nefarious “Satanists” with clownish pawns like Colonel Aquino portraying one.

Rothstein “investigated” the disappearance of Johnny Gosch and provided a “confidential report” for Noreen which she posted on her web site “The Johnny Gosch Foundation”.[652]

As a dutiful “Papal Court Jew”, Rothstein covered for his masters by claiming that the CIA’s James Jesus Angleton “compromised” the Vatican and allowed pedophiles to “get a foothold” there.

If ever there was a man who embodied the fraud of needless war and proved its genesis was in Rome, it was James Jesus Angleton.

Angleton held the vital position of Chief of Counterintelligence for the critical Cold War decades of 1954 to 1974. From there, he kept those in the CIA who were serious about their work cowering in fear from the seeming paranoia of his persecutions while devastating moles like MI6's Harold Adrian Russell "Kim" Philby — a friend of Angleton's — sent *reams* of sensitive information to the Soviets.

> *Angleton, in his relentless pursuit of Soviet agents, questioned the loyalty of many of the agency's best analysts of Soviet affairs, and ruined the careers of more than a few. The CIA only recently completed the painful business of restoring the reputation of those Angleton besmirched.*
>
> *During Angleton's tenure as chief of counterintelligence from 1954-74, the CIA's ability to decipher the politics and military strategy of the Soviet Union was often crippled by his byzantine investigations.*
>
> *Oddly, Angleton insisted that he never suspected Kim Philby, the British intelligence officer who provided Moscow with a stream of British and American secrets while a friend and close associate of Angleton. ~ New York Times*[653]

In a similar "PsyOp" (Psychological Operation), the Leftist magazine *Mother Jones* also claimed the CIA manipulated the hapless Vatican but, in the process, admitted the shocking revelations that Angleton was a Knight of Malta, was in position to be screened for his treasonous future by working in Rome during World War II and had ran the supposedly "non-existent" Vatican and Israel Desks for "the Company".[lxxxvi]

> *The SMOM had given a different prestigious award in 1946 to another high-level CIA operative, James Jesus Angleton. "It had to do with counterintelligence," Angleton told* ***Mother Jones****, when asked why he was chosen for such a distinction. During World War II, Angleton was head of the Rome station of the OSS. Later, on his return to Washington, he ran what was tantamount to the "Vatican desk" for the CIA. According to Angleton, the agency does not have a Vatican desk. Nor does it have an Israel desk, for that matter, yet Angleton also covered that area. The extreme sensitivity associated with Israel and the Vatican required that work relating to them be buried among Angleton's counterintelligence staff, which was well-suited for such assignments.*[654]

Angleton's work on the unacknowledged "Israel Desk" shows the Zionist quagmire is cunningly woven by Rome through Western Intelligence.

"Jesus" Angleton is also reputed by at least one Vatican insider to have directly fed information to the KGB resulting in the death of agents working in Russia.[655]

In his "Confidential Report", Detective Rothstein admitted that the CIA was involved in *commercial-grade* pedophilia.

> *A notorious homosexual pedophile and procurer ... Ben Rose was arrested after an investigation by the New York Police Department at his residence on St. Mark's Place in New York City during the summer of 1972. At the time of the arrest, he had in his possession three young boy ages 14-15 years, who had been transported by him from Baltimore to New York City for the specific purpose of sexual exploitation.*

— Baltimore is a city as openly-controlled by the Catholic Church as Boston. It was founded in honor of Cecil Calvert, 2nd Baron Baltimore whose Roman Catholic father, George Calvert secured the colony of Maryland for the Vatican. —

> *Upon his arrest, he agreed to cooperate with the New York City Police Department and an investigation was begun under the code name GAFF.*[lxxxvii] *This investigation uncovered the commercial part of pedophilia and child abuse.*
>
> *The commercial group includes child pornography, prostitution, pimping, extortion, and human intelligence. Child pornography, prostitution, and pimping are well organized and promoted throughout the pedophile community. Because of Ben Rose's cooperation with investigators, many of the rumors and information under investigation were verified. He informed the New York City Detectives that in November of 1971, three boys, ages 14-15 years, were sexually abused and then murdered in his apartment on East 64th Street in New York City by three men he identified as Dr. (name deleted) (a surgeon), (name deleted) (OPEC), and (name deleted) (CIA). The bodies were*

> *then transported to Connecticut by car and then buried on a farm. Under the GAFF investigation these murders were to be assigned to other investigators in the New York City Police Department, but then disappeared in the hierarchy of the Department.*
>
> *A second investigation conducted in the mid 1970's, by the Police Department during which thirteen homicides, plus the murder of these 14-15 year old boys at Ben Rose's apartment, were investigated under the code name OPERATION TOGETHER. This investigation was under the command of Deputy Inspector John Colin. At a critical point in the investigation, it was stopped. Inspector Colin was demoted and forced into retirement.*
>
> *The third investigation was done by the New York State Select Committee on Crime. This Committee served subpoenas on both (name deleted) and (name deleted). When (name deleted) was served with the subpoena and questioned by the detectives, he informed them that because he worked for the CIA, the subpoena would be quashed, invoking National Security. He was correct, because before the detectives returned to their offices, the subpoena was withdrawn. One wonders what part of the National Security Act allows the murder of children.*

How is it that America's international intelligence agency should be her most heinous enemy, kidnapping her children off the street to torture, rape, abuse and sell them? — Because the CIA doesn't work for the American people, it works for Rome and serves the Devil's Simulation.

Rothstein also admitted that Cardinal Francis Joseph Spellman (1889 – 1967) was an arch pedophile who remained free during his lifetime to rape children at will, thanks to protection from Roman Catholics in New York State government and law enforcement.

> *...from the days of Cardinal Spellman (nicknamed "NELLIE", a known pedophile) in New York City to the present, no scandals have been made public. There is no way that these hidden scandals will be made public as long as (name deleted) or someone like him is the District Attorney in New York City. Any District Attorney or Prosecutor who*

> *routinely covers up these crimes against children by politically connected pedophiles, assures these crimes against children will remain hidden from the public.*

This bears out our contention that Cardinals and Bishops who protect pedophile priests are, themselves, child predators who remain protected and anonymous in their crimes. Neither "mainstream" media, "alternative" media, nor any government institution is allowed to bring them down or even out their status.

New York has always been owned by either Roman Catholics or "Papal Court Jews" and she has suffered for it. On the heels of the Sandy Hook false flag in Connecticut, far-Left Catholic Governor of New York, Andrew Cuomo (son of Leftist Catholic Governor of New York Mario Cuomo), over-nighted a bill which destroyed what was left of New York gun rights. In violation of the New York State Constitution, Cuomo forced his inversely-named SAFE Act through the legislature in a closed door session without any committee hearings. In hours it was passed and Cuomo immediately signed it in a bold show of lawless Leftist Catholic tyranny. Cuomo was required by the Constitution of New York to allow law-makers and citizens three days to examine proposed legislation and he simply ignored the requirement. To date, no citizen, lawyer or advocacy group (such as the highly-publicized "National Rifle Association") has attempted to bring this outrage into court where only the most corrupt and debased judge would dare to uphold it.

Detective Rothstein also acknowledged that the Pedocracy takes care of its own.

> *In most investigations into pedophilia and child abuse, the investigators, federal and local, will initially do an honest and in-depth investigation, but when a certain level of progress is attained, the investigations are stopped or compromised. Again one asks the question, "Why is this?" To this date there is no high profile case that has ever been investigated to the fullest extent and then prosecuted in the court of the United States. Why? Three examples of this can be found in the following cases: a) The Finders – Florida and Washington*

> *D.C.; b) Franklin Cover-up – Nebraska; c) St. Johns Abbey – Minnesota.*
>
> *In segments of the family, homosexual, commercial, serial killer, and the occult, the pedophile and child abuser feel that they are above the law. They believe that because of their contacts, position in society, or the secrecy of their actions, if caught, they can use these connections to cover-up their criminal activities. In most cases this is true and known throughout the pedophile subculture.*

High-profile pedophiles even use this protection as validation and vindication.

In 2017, four men accused Seattle Mayor Ed Murray of sexually abusing them when they were boys. One of the men was in Murray’s care as a foster child. Murray is an overt “married” homosexual and remains tightly tied to the Catholic Church.[656] He arrogantly used lack of criminal prosecution as the reason why he refused to step down as Mayor in light of the accusations.[657] How an overt homosexual is able to care for foster children is, itself, a heinous crime of the Pedocracy.[lxxxviii]

For a high-profile big-city Mayor, Ed Murray’s past is apparently “hands off” to the “secular” media. However, if one digs deep enough, one finds that, like California’s once-and-future Governor Jerry “Moonbeam” Brown, Ed Murray was trained in a Jesuit seminary.[658],[659],[lxxxix] *Depressed*

Independent investigative reporter Tim Schmitt of the now-defunct news outlet *Pointblank Des Moines* linked the apparent suicide of famed journalist Hunter Stockton Thompson to the "outing" of White House press reporter "Jeff Gannon", a.k.a. "James Guckert" and supposedly a.k.a. John Gosch, Jr.

> *Shortly after the theory was presented, Gannon posted an article titled "Hiding in Plain Sight," and has posted a column entitled "Fear and Loathing in the Press Room," which some suggest is a reference to the recently deceased Hunter S. Thompson, who also was accused of involvement in pedophile, child slavery rings in the 1980s ...*
>
> *Others suggest that his name itself is a clue to his real identity. Both Jeff Gannon and James Guckert share the same initials as Johnny Gosch. Furthermore, shortly after Johnny's disappearance, Noreen made a personal plea to the editor of The Des Moines Register, Johnny's employer. The editor printed her letter in the paper and mocked it by allowing the police department to dissect it. The editor's name was James Gannon. ...*
>
> *The Gannon/Gosch connection was first made public early in the morning on Feb. 20. Later that same day, Hunter S. Thompson was found dead in his home, the victim of an apparent self-inflicted gunshot.*
>
> *Few people would ever have thought to connect Thompson and Gosch, but those familiar with the tales of child abuse and pedophilia documented in "The Franklin Cover-Up," a book first released in 1994 by former Neb. State Sen. John DeCamp, understand the association.*
>
> *In his book, DeCamp relates many interviews and discussions with Paul Bonacci, the young man who claims to have been involved with the kidnapping of Johnny Gosch. Bonacci told horrific tales of being forced into sex with adults and other children. In one case he recalls being flown into Nevada with another young boy whom he did not know. They took on another passenger there and headed to a secluded*

> *location where Bonacci says he was forced to have sex with the younger boy. The young boy, Bonacci claims in this book, was also forced to have sex with adult males, who then killed the boy with a gunshot to the head. Bonacci says he was then forced to have sex with the corpse.*
>
> *The passenger they took on in Nevada filmed the entire thing, and Bonacci recalled that his name was Hunter Thompson.*[660]

Thompson was an anti-American muck-raker who was an important part of Jesuit "counter-culture". He disguised his yellow journalism with a new name: "gonzo journalism". However, raw, emotion-filled diatribe is the same it has always been before or since: propaganda.

As a result of being an active agent for the Devil's Simulation, Thompson was lionized by fellow deviants in Hollywood.

> *The work he remains best known for,* ***Fear and Loathing in Las Vegas: A Savage Journey to the Heart of the American Dream*** *(1971), constitutes a rumination on the failure of the 1960s counterculture movement. It was first serialized in* ***Rolling Stone****, a magazine with which Thompson would be long associated, and was released as a film starring Johnny Depp and Benicio del Toro and directed by Terry Gilliam in 1998. ...*
>
> *In accordance with his wishes, his ashes were fired out of a cannon in a ceremony funded by his friend Johnny Depp and attended by friends including then-Senator John Kerry*[xc] *and Jack Nicholson. ~ Wikipedia*[661]

Schmitt also connected the CIA to Johnny Gosch.

> *George Paul Bishop (often known just as Paul Bishop) claimed he was a "CIA asset" and arrived in Des Moines in July of 1984 to offer his assistance to the Goschs. Before he left, he provided, through his investigation, a detailed map of the kidnapping scene. Bishop, according to Noreen's book, often called the Gosch home from the Washington D.C. office of Sen. Charles Grassley, with whom Noreen had worked on Johnny's case.*

> *“Many times Paul Bishop would call me from Sen. Grassley’s office and, when finished speaking with me, he would hand the phone to one of Grassley’s aides who I was familiar with,” Noreen recalled in her book, published in 2000. “That convinced me Paul was an accepted visitor on the Hill in Washington.”*
>
> *Based on this, Noreen believed that Bishop was responsible for securing her invitation to testify before Sen. Arlan Specter’s Hearing on Organized Crime and its Relationship to Kidnapping at the U.S. Capitol. Bishop, in fact, picked Noreen up from her D.C. hotel and accompanied her to the hearings.*
>
> *Bishop became close to Noreen, even referring to her as “Mom,” but suddenly, in 1985, he disappeared from the scene. The phone number he’d left was no longer valid and no one knew how to contact him. No one had seen or heard from him in almost 20 years, until he was suddenly arrested on Feb. 4 of this year in Virginia, after police allegedly found an explicit video of a 16-year-old boy in his home.*
>
> *Detectives searched Bishop’s home and found the tape after receiving a complaint that he was allowing teenage boys to drink and use drugs on the premises.*
>
> *Noreen wonders now if Bishop was on the wrong side of Johnny’s case all along. Was he involved in the kidnapping and merely running a smokescreen at the time to prevent discovery? Was his recent arrest an effort to keep him quiet about the larger story? A threat? ...*
>
> *Either way, Bishop seemed to know a lot about Johnny’s disappearance in 1982, and his sudden reappearance on the scene coinciding with the outing of Jeff Gannon [and] the death of Thompson ... is too much of a coincidence for some to accept.*[662]

From its founding through today, the CIA has been so overtly Catholic that the *Catholic Herald* sheepishly admitted to its nickname “the Catholic Intelligence Agency”, or alternatively “Catholics In Action”.[663]

Many of its Directors have been devout Catholics (most of them, Jesuit trained or mentored) and Knights for the Vatican; OSS founder William

Donovan, the CIA's first Director Walter Bedell Smith, John McCone, William Colby, William Casey, Michael Hayden, Leon Panetta and John Brennan. Many more can be found in key positions and those who aren't overt Catholics are still tied to the Church. They have engineered America's most grievous treasons. Examples include Allen Dulles and the murder of sitting Jesuit-trained Roman Catholic President John F. Kennedy or George Tenet and 9/11. Dulles was the brother of John Foster Dulles, Kennedy's Secretary of State who later committed suicide under odd circumstances. John's son, Allen's nephew, Avery Dulles, subsequently became one of the most powerful Jesuit Cardinals in the United States. This is in spite of the claim that the Dulles family was the same religion that married the Catholic homosexual pedophile Mayor of Seattle Ed Murray; Episcopalian.

"Orthodox" George Tenet was trained by the Jesuits at Georgetown. Even if the ludicrous official story of 9/11 was true, Tenet should have been dragged from office in disgrace and prosecuted for criminal negligence that caused the death of over 3,000 Americans and *billions* of dollars of damage resulting in a modern Police State.[xci] Instead, President George W. Bush (Yale Skull and Bones '68), son of President George H. W. Bush (Yale Skull and Bones '48) gave him the highest civilian honor, the Medal of Freedom.

Perhaps what got John F. Kennedy slaughtered while sitting next to his wife in Dallas more than anything else was his threat to break the CIA into a thousand pieces and scatter it to the wind.[664]

Such a job was not his to accomplish. It will belong to others more determined and righteous, perhaps enraged at the full scope of the Catholic

Intelligence Agency’s crimes against the American people in specific and humanity as a whole.

Kennedy’s serial adulteries may have played a critical role in his murder. Just one year before he was killed, his wife Jackie had a private audience with John XXIII. Did she ask for intervention but not know she had made a deal with the devil she would come to horribly regret?

Legendary CIA operative Everett Howard Hunt confessed that the tactical organizer of Kennedy’s assassination was CIA Policy Chief Cord Meyer[665] — a friend and associate of James Jesus Angleton. Meyer had been humiliated when one of Kennedy’s many sexual conquests was his wife, Mary Pinchot Meyer.

She was later murdered on the campus of Georgetown by what witnesses thought was a Professor at the Jesuit college; a “Vatican assassin”.

Chapter 17

In The Heart Of The Beast

22 June 1983: *15 year old Emanuela Orlandi is kidnapped off the streets of Rome. She is never heard from nor seen again.*

Not only is the Orlandi family devoutly Roman Catholic, they were citizens of the sovereign city-state that is the Vatican.

To say such an honor was exceptional would be an understatement. There are never more than 500 Vatican citizens at one time.[666]

Her father, Ercole, was a lay employee who helped organize Vatican functions.

Despite this, or maybe because of it, Emanuela was specifically targeted for her fate.

> *The teenager, the fourth of five children in a devoutly Catholic family, was enticed to meet her abductors with the offer of some work distributing leaflets at a fashion show for Avon cosmetics.*
>
> *In reality, the Avon job did not exist. No one has ever been convicted of her disappearance and no body has ever been found. ~ Mail*[667]

11 days after her disappearance, Karol Józef "Pope Saint John Paul II" Wojtyła made a public appeal for Emanuela's "speedy return".

From the kidnapping in 1983 until 2015, the Vatican has refused to co-operate with authorities; no interviews or investigations were allowed.

> *In 1997 the enquiries were halted – they were useless as the Vatican refused to cooperate with the Italian investigators.*[668]

As a sovereign city-state, it was a stance that was unassailable by any Italian official who dared try.

Since they were Vatican citizens, the Orlandis had access to Papal Mass. In 2013, after their new Jesuit Pope Francis, Jorge Mario Bergoglio gave such a Mass, he shook the hand of Emanuela's mother, Maria, and told her, "Emanuela is in Heaven." Proving this wasn't "just something nice to say", when queried further, Francis doubled-down.

> *Her brother Pietro, surprised, told the Pope: "Until there is proof to the contrary, I live in hope that she's alive. And I hope you will help me find the truth."*
>
> *But the Pope repeated: "She's in heaven."*
>
> *Since then, Pietro says, he has repeatedly tried to get an explanation from the Vatican but has not received a reply. "I want to understand if she is dead or alive. He says she's dead now? How does he know?" he said.*
>
> *The truth "must come from the Vatican," he said. "She was a Vatican citizen. But they have never collaborated with investigators. They have always obstructed the investigation. They have behaved in a way that is not Christian."*
>
> *A month after Emanuela went missing, he was told of a memo from the Italian Prime Minister's office to the Vatican recommending that they "do not — with the Orlandi's case — open a Pandora's Box that would be difficult to close".*
>
> *He said now: "It must be a secret that weighs heavily on the church. I think that the case has been closed after 32 years because they still don't want to open the Pandora's Box."*

> *Pietro claims a monsignor told him that John Paul II had made Emanuela's disappearance an official pontifical secret, "an order that no one in the Vatican would dare break".*[669]

Then, in 2015, the matter of Vatican refusal to co-operate was made mute by a helpful Italian judiciary.

> *But now judges in Italy have controversially closed the decades-old case in what will seemingly remain one of the country's greatest unsolved mysteries.*
>
> *Despite fierce opposition from the Orlandi family, investigators said there was not enough evidence to go to trial.*[670]

Outlandish accusations from 1983 through today have been thrown out from "secular" media in smokescreen fashion. Everyone from the mafia to Turkish assassins have been blamed.

Bolstering the "Turkish assassins" theory has been the Vatican, itself, claiming said assassins have called with threats, acknowledging they took the young girl. This remains unproven as Vatican officials refuse to turn over recordings of those conversations supposedly in the city-state's possession.

The story then received a bump from an unlikely source.

> *Italian newspapers received letters from a group calling itself the Turkish Anti-Christian Liberation Front demanding Agca's release.*
>
> *But investigators later found that the real source of these letters was the Stasi the East German Intelligence Service.*[671]

The Stasi has not been known for its "kindler, gentler" helpful side. It is a connection which proves how the Cold War was as much a Roman fabrication as the previous war, World War II. Both had identical priorities. The top of that priority list was to punish the home of Martin Luther — Germany in general and East Germany in specific.

Another surprising source lent credence to the "Turkish assassins" theory; Emanuela's father, Ercole. Was he somehow complicit?

Whatever Orlandi knew about the disappearance of his daughter he took with him to an early grave in 2004.

John Paul II's supposed would-be assassin in 1981, Mehmet Ali Agca (a Turk), had been held in a Vatican prison for almost 20 years and then released. Claims that his imprisonment was the cause for Emanuela's kidnapping were proven fraudulent.

Agca, himself, stated that he had inside information regarding her disappearance and put extreme effort into being heard.

> *Last December* [2014] *he drove across the Balkans to Rome and demanded to be interviewed by investigators on the Orlandi case.*
>
> *To Pietro's disappointment* [Emanuela's brother] *he was swiftly deported and his testimony was not taken.*[672]

It certainly seemed that Italian authorities were in as little a hurry as the Vatican to uncover the truth about Emanuela's disappearance.

But another man with inside information was able to make a statement.

In 2012, 85 year-old Father Gabriel Amorth, appointed by John Paul II as the Vatican's chief exorcist, made some astounding assertions.

> *Father Amorth, in an interview with* ***La Stampa*** *newspaper, said: "This was a crime with a sexual motive."*
>
> *"It has already previously been stated by (deceased) monsignor Simeone Duca, an archivist at the Vatican, who was asked to recruit girls for parties with the help of the Vatican gendarmes."*
>
> *"I believe Emanuela ended up in this circle. I have never believed in the international theory (overseas kidnappers). I have motives to believe that this was just a case of sexual exploitation."*
>
> *"It led to the murder and then the hiding of her body. Also involved are diplomatic staff from a foreign embassy to the Holy See." ~ Mail*[673]

Since its re-birth, Rome has never done its own dirty work and, in the case of the kidnapping of Emanuela, Father Amorth said the Vatican Police put the literal "black bag" over her head.

> *“Parties were organised, with a Vatican gendarme acting as the ‘recruiter’ of the girls.” ~ Telegraph*[674]

Amorth was then mocked by media like the *Daily Mail* for decrying the Satanic influences behind cultural trends such as Yoga and the Harry Potter craze of books and movies. If Father Amorth ever peruses the *Mail* online, we’re sure the pornographic pop-culture sidebar would earn it a similar condemnation. Amorth’s claims strike a chord with “fundamentalist” Protestant Christians and add to the priest’s credibility.

The organized crime explanation was as convoluted and outrageous as the Turkish assassins story but with threads of truth to make it believable (truth mixed with lies).

> *Then in 2005...*
>
> *A former member of the right-wing crime syndicate Banda della Magliana, which terrorised Rome in the 1970s and 80s, claimed that the gang had kidnapped Emanuela.*
>
> *The group was laundering its profits of their robbery, kidnap and extortion through the Banco Ambrosiano, a bank closely tied to the Vatican’s own bank, Antonio Mancini claimed.*
>
> *But the Banco Ambrosiano collapsed in 1982 and its head Roberto Calvi was found hanging from London’s Blackfriars Bridge.*
>
> *The gang leader, Enrico “Renatino” de Pedis wanted to retrieve the money and used Emanuela to blackmail the Vatican, he claimed.*
>
> *The claim was corroborated by de Pedis’ former lover, Sabrina Minardi, who told prosecutors that she had seen Emanuela’s dead body thrown into a cement mixer in November 1983.*
>
> *Emanuela was initially taken to a house on the seaside, then an apartment with a vast underground cavity, on the Gianicolo hill near the Vatican, she said. She was then entrusted to a priest.*
>
> *High level Vatican insiders, including the head of its bank, Archbishop Paul Marcinkus were involved in the plot, she claimed.*

> *Minardi abused cocaine for years and parts of her account are clearly wrong.*[675]

In 1990, a rival gang is said to have gunned down de Pedis in Rome. He was a facilitator in the trafficking of drugs and sex slaves. As a result, he was given special treatment by the Vatican and honored with the ancient, pagan ritual of being interned in a place of worship.

Every Cathedral or Basilica has the bones of the dead beneath the feet of the worshippers; the more famous the Cathedral, the more famous the dead body / bodies.

> *After a tip off, it emerged that the crime boss had been given a secret grave in the Basilica of Sant Apolinare, attached to the very building where Emanuela had her music lessons.*
>
> *In 2012 investigators opened his diamond-encrusted tomb, and amid the stench of death found additional human remains, including the skull of a young girl.*
>
> *The macabre mystery could finally be solved, it seemed. But DNA tests showed that the remains did not belong to Emanuela.*
>
> *The prosecutor said that "high up people in the Vatican knew what happened and should be questioned".*
>
> *But following the statement the new chief prosecutor took over the case. Giancarlo Capaldo was demoted to deputy. ~ Mail*[676]

Besides the fact that it was the building next to where Emaunela was headed for her flute lesson the day she disappeared, the Basilica of *Sant'Apolinare* has an important derivation.

> *The warmest lead in the case came as long ago as 2005, when an anonymous caller to the television programme* ***Who Has Seen?*** *alleged that Emanuela had been seized at the behest of Cardinal Ugo Poletti, Vicar-General of Rome, in 1983. The motive was, it was hinted, sexual – but ... Cardinal Poletti died in 1997 ... . However, it was he who, in 1990, agreed to the burial of de Pedis in the Basilica of*

> *Sant'Apollinaire, an Opus Dei church usually reserved for the burial of senior clerics. ~ Telegraph*[677]

It would not be the last time the ultra-pious sect "Opus Dei" would be implicated in child sex slave trafficking.

Chapter 18

Milk Carton Kids

10 February 1984: *10 year old Kevin Andrew Collins is abducted coming home from school. He was never seen again.* [xcii]

By 1984, the Pedocracy’s voracious appetite for children was finally drawing attention to its existence. It needed to calm rising fears with the appearance of action. Police officers, prosecutors and judges certainly weren’t going to slow down the Devil’s Simulation. They would need cover, as well.

The propaganda was promoted that they were *unable* to do their jobs; that they needed civilian “eyes and ears”. Thus was born the “milk carton kids”. It was a push that was as short-lived as it was fruitless. Not a single child placed on a milk carton was found via citizen awareness giving a tip to law enforcement (those that actually did their jobs). As it quickly died off, the spin was launched that the program created “public awareness” and, here, it was lauded as a great success. In fact, the shocking numbers of missing children created the “public awareness”.

In 2013, ABC admitted — *According to the National Center for Missing and Exploited Children, roughly **800,000** children are reported missing* *each year in the United States — that's roughly* ***2,000*** *per day.*[678]

This number is only a *fraction* of the true figures because children abused in orphanages, foster homes or detention centers are kept "off the books".

— And that's just for the United States of America.

Imagine how many more children are taken, abused, tortured and murdered in countries with less information-sharing capabilities.

But to make the milk carton propaganda work, a "poster child" was needed.

That was 10 year-old Kevin Andrew Collins of San Francisco.

Why Kevin? Because the Collins family were devout Roman Catholics and the school Kevin was kidnapped coming home from was Jesuit St. Agnes.

David and Ann Collins were good Catholics who strictly obeyed Rome's twisted and perverse restrictions against birth control[xciii]: Kevin had 8 other brothers and sisters.

The school and Cathedral of the Jesuits of St. Agnes are located on "Masonic Street" in San Francisco. There the Jesuits control thoroughly and openly as they do in Chicago, Baltimore or Boston. Public-sounding "San Francisco University" is actually a Jesuit school and one of its past Presidents, Father Stephen J. Privett, S.J. was the personal mentor of radical Leftist and former House Speaker, Nancy Pelosi. Pelosi's far-Left views on abortion and homosexuality don't bother the Jesuits at all. In fact, that's where they come from.

At this writing, Pelosi has been a United States Representative for over *forty years* (remember, this requires her to be re-elected every two years).

In 2015, secretly Roman Catholic LifeSiteNews opined — *Pelosi brought her grandchildren to see her receive an award from the Gay and Lesbian Victory Fund, to show the young, impressionable children that "marriage equality*[xciv] *is important."*

> *In an interview with Thomas Roberts on MSNBC, Pelosi said she took the children to the Gay and Lesbian Victory Fund gala because "it's really important to see what the practice of our faith is."*

> *Pelosi, who described herself as a faithful Christian and "mainstream Catholic," said her pre-adolescent grandchildren needed to see and be present at a gay and lesbian celebration in order "to give them the image that we have for all people," meaning the image the Catholic Church has for all.*[679]

Sadly, Pelosi is perfectly accurate in her assessment.

Was the author (Fr. Mark Hodges) really that shocked? More likely, he was simply stirring the impotent Right as part of the Hegelian dialectic.

The Catholic far-Left has long held a position of honor within the Church. Pelosi, herself, (along with another far-Left 40-year + agent of Roman insurgency, former United States Senator, former United States Vice President Joseph Biden, Jr.) personally attended Jorge Mario Bergoglio's inaugural Mass as Rome's first Jesuit Pope.[680]

St. Agnes has been an epicenter of Jesuit insurgency since its founding in the 19th century.

> *San Francisco's Haight Ashbury neighborhood wears its 1960s countercultural history as a badge of honor. Double-decker tour buses grind up and down Haight Street throughout the day, pointing out local landmarks: the former home of the members of the Grateful Dead, the Haight Ashbury Free Clinic, the plethora of tie-dye clothing stores and smoke shops and the corner of Haight and Ashbury itself, now home to a Ben and Jerry's ice cream store. ...*
>
> *St. Agnes Catholic Church was established in 1893. ... Its current pastor, Ray Allender, S.J., is a San Francisco native who grew up in the neighborhood. Like the city that surrounds it, St. Agnes prides itself on its inclusiveness; its website describes the parish as "Inclusive, Welcoming and Jesuit." ... The parish is home to a large number of graduates of Jesuit colleges and has been active in welcoming L.G.B.T. Catholics, who, Father Allender says, are leaders in the church community.*
>
> *Mass at St. Agnes on a Sunday morning is packed. ~ America Magazine* (a Jesuit publication)[681],[xcv]

Despite spin claiming they “joined in” the “counter-culture”, the truth is the Jesuits *spawned* the “counter-culture”.

> *Cultural icons like Aldus Huxley and Timothy Leary encouraged Americans to “turn on, tune in, drop out” with LSD.*
>
> *— That’s Holy Cross Jesuit-educated Catholic Irishman Timothy Francis Leary.*[1497] *~ Illuminati Unmasked*[682]

It was later learned that Leary was receiving a United States taxpayer stipend courtesy of the Central Intelligence Agency for his efforts to turn America’s children into uneducated, dope-addicted wrecks.[683]

Recall the *Herald*’s admonition that a common insider nickname for the CIA is “Catholics In Action”.

Thanks to Rome’s control of all American institutions, the Jesuits can proudly flaunt their lawlessness agenda of chaos and spin it as “compassion”.

> *It is the city’s remaining Latino population that is the focus of St. Agnes’s work right now. On Jan. 19, the day before the presidential inauguration, St. Agnes became the United States’ first Jesuit parish to declare itself a sanctuary church. According to Natalie Terry, director of St. Agnes’s Ignatian Spiritual Life Center, the decision came after a period of discernment. Sister Laetitia Bordes, a St. Agnes parishioner ... says that people need a greater understanding of the roots of immigration in order to overcome the stereotyping of undocumented people as “illegals.”*[684]

Today in America, Jesuit parishes can openly declare their refusal to obey the law because secret Catholic agents have been doing so for generations and keeping America’s borders open to millions of Catholic aliens is a top priority.

Unfortunately for the Collins family, they were right in the middle of it. It surely consoled them little to have Kevin be given the infamy of national recognition as America’s first “milk carton child”.

Newsweek, a subsidiary of Knight of Malta Henry Luce's *Time*, aided the push to make the young Jesuit-trained Catholic child the "poster boy" for the Eaters of Children and put Kevin's face on the March 19th, 1984 cover.

The efforts to find Kevin ended there.

30 years later (in 2013), the San Francisco Police Department added insult to injury by claiming they finally had a "person of interest" in Kevin's disappearance; a protected pedophile named Daniel Therrien who had died 5 years previously.

> *He was a man of many names and police say that's why they had such a tough time investigating him. He had at least five different aliases. "On April 16, 1981, Jackson was arrested under the name Wayne Jackson, in the Fisherman's Wharf area in San Francisco, for kidnapping and lewd acts on a child," said Lt. Tim Plyer said. ...*
>
> *"For the individual with five names who we now know had a history of molesting young boys," said Kevin's brother, Stephen Collins. "It seems like he should have been a stronger suspect back then."*
>
> *ABC7 News learned Wednesday that at the time, police knew about the Fisherman's Wharf arrest which is why they questioned Therrien and searched his home. ...*
>
> *"They said he was a person of interest in '84," said Kevin's aunt, Jackie Deasy. "Why didn't they connect that with the arrest made in 1981? Alias or no alias, they'd have fingerprints." ~ ABC7*[685]

The offensive Keystone Cop routine had only one real effect: to rip scabs off old wounds for those who loved Kevin. Given the fact that these were (are) the same people who routinely rape, torture and murder the innocent and the vulnerable (like Kevin) it may very well have been their sick intent.

The San Francisco Police Department is not known for its professionalism but it is known for its "inclusivity".

In 2007, SFPD proudly made "history" by having its female Police Chief, Heather Fong, joined by a transgender woman, Theresa Sparks, as the new Police Commissioner.

Theresa Sparks lives as an elegant older woman, following a sex change operation. She is the first transgender president of a police commission.

“So there’s never, ever been a president of any commission in San Francisco who’s transgender,” Sparks said. “So that’s really significant, particularly since it’s the Police Commission.”

The pay is nominal, with commissioners receiving just $42.00 per meeting. Luckily, Sparks has a day job.

“I’m the president of Good Vibrations, which is a women-focused adult erotic store,” she said. ~ KCBS 740AM[686]

Chapter 19

“Satanic Panic”

July 1984: *A three year-old girl is brought to the emergency room with a lacerated vagina. When asked what happened, she said that workers at her West Point military day care center hurt her.*

No arrests were made.

Soon, complaints from other parents about their children followed. There were both physical and psychological injuries that they had received under Army care. Yet, by October, there still was no effort by the military or local law enforcement to set things right.

> *No one has been arrested in the two- month-old inquiry into charges that at least 2 and as many as 11 children at the West Point Child Development Center may have been abused. ~ New York Times*[687]

Once again, parents were forced to look at civil redress for the unbelievably heinous crimes committed against their children — children of men in the service of their country.

> *A Newburgh lawyer, William E. Crain, said yesterday that seven families had contacted him with allegations that their children had been abused at the center. Besides these seven children, he said, child and adult witnesses had provided him with accounts that at least four other children had been abused there.*
>
> *Six of these 11 children were alleged to have been sexually abused, three were subjected to “excessive corporal punishment” and two were said to have been burned, bruised or otherwise physically abused, Mr. Crain said.*
>
> *Mr. Crain said the children range in age from 13 months to 3 1/2 years, and that much of the evidence of abuse is physical. He said*

> *some of the allegations were based on interviews with children, two of whom made statements that were videotaped by a hidden camera.*
>
> *Last week, Mr. Crain asked a Federal Court in Manhattan to let him take sworn statements from suspects and supervisors at the center and an F.B.I. agent in the case. He said families of the abused children had turned to him after their complaints had been rebuffed by the center and by Army and F.B.I. officials, who told them the two suspended aides had passed lie detector tests.*[688]

Except, in the case of military day care outrages, it was a double injustice: the monsters who committed the crimes against the children of service members weren't prosecuted and the taxpayers footed the bill for the "hush money".

> *Seven years have passed since she was sexually abused at West Point's child-care center. Yet today, the 10-year-old girl can't go to the bathroom without her mother waiting by the door.*
>
> *The girl – who was 3 when West Point child-care workers were accused of sexually abusing her and 10 other children in 1984 – also asks her mother about whether she will be able to bear children when she grows up.*
>
> *"This happened seven years ago, and it's not any better," the girl's mother said. "She's constantly asking, 'What if we're out in the store, Mommy, and we see these people? Are they going to hurt me?' ... But this is constantly on her mind because she knows these people are not in jail for what they did."*
>
> *In the U.S. District Court files in Manhattan, the West Point sexual abuse case is resolved. The government failed in 1985 to indict any suspects in its criminal investigation. But last month, it settled a civil suit brought by the parents of the 11 victims. Nine of the victims will receive $2.7 million, with awards ranging from $25,000 to $625,000. ~ Times Herald Record*[689]

However, it wasn't enough to buy back the innocence of the abused children.

> *“These people stole our children,” the mother said. “(She’s) nothing like she used to be. She’s a very angry little girl. She doesn’t trust anyone. She’s nothing like she was before this happened.”*
>
> *“It’s never going to be over for them, or for us.” ...*
>
> *The Army’s reaction to the parents’ plight so enraged former Army Dr. Walter R. Grote that the ex-captain refused a promotion to major in 1985 because of the treatment of his child’s sexual abuse case at West Point. He was one of the first parents to file the lawsuit, but later dropped out of seeking money from the case.*
>
> *“Unfortunately, money can’t ... undo the trauma incurred by scores of children at West Point ... because people with responsibility didn’t exercise that responsibility,” said Grote, now in private practice in New Jersey. “What the hell is a settlement? ... They could have caught these people doing it at the time that they were doing it.” ...*
>
> *The mother of the 10-year-old said the settlement will pay her daughter’s college bills. But the mother said she would have preferred the government kept its money and punished the abusers.*
>
> *Without the prosecution, West Point has retained its polished national image, she said. Even last month, the government admitted none of the allegations in making the settlement, a reminder of what parents say was West Point’s callous denial.*[690]

The purpose of these crimes was to defile the innocent for Satan in any way possible and that included both physical and psychological torture. When what happened to the children wasn’t enough, animals were brought in and harmed in front of the toddlers.[691]

The parents had a clue that they missed completely; by “coincidence” the building number of the West Point daycare facility was “666”.

> *The incidents unfolded against a backdrop of satanic acts, animal sacrifices and cult-like behavior among the abusers, whose activities extended beyond the U.S. Military Academy borders to Orange County and a military base in San Francisco, parents charged.*

> *The specter of satanism would later spur U.S. Military Academy officials to change the West Point child-care center's building number from 666 to 673.*[692]

Were these children being specifically targeted because they belonged to service personnel? The rash of shocking, similar accusations across the country proved such was the case.

The Presidio in California has long been important to Rome as far back as its colonial Spanish Catholic founding.

> *Mikhail Gorbachev oversaw the destruction of the USSR which critically weakened Russia. Gorbachev ran to a surprising source for safe haven: George H.W. Bush. Bush turned over the military base at the Presidio in California to the former Communist and it became a base of operations for Gorbachev's continued subversive efforts under the guise of "environmentalism".*
>
> *It is a place of special significance to Rome. ...*
>
> *The Presidio has been the reward of other Congressional Catholic Communist faithful like Pennsylvania Democrat Congressman John Murtha (ensconced in power until carried out in a pine box*[972]*) and former House Speaker Nancy Pelosi. ...*
>
> ***Satan's Army***
>
> *A man who figures prominently in* [purported CIA mind control sex slave victim] *Cathy O'Brien's mind control narrative is Michael Aquino.*
>
> *There is no Wikipedia entry for "Michael A. Aquino".*[1447] *...*
>
> *"Truther" blogs around the internet will alternatively label him as "Lieutenant Colonel" Aquino or "General" Aquino of the United States Army Reserve and sometimes as a "Green Beret". This is probably an exaggeration based upon Aquino's work in Special* ***Operations*** *and not the Special* ***Forces****.*
>
> *Aquino received a commission in the United States Army* [Reserve] *and did time in "Psychological Operations" during the Vietnam war*

as an administrator.

In 1980, while at the Catholic/Army fortress retreat of the Presidio, Aquino wrote a short paper for his boss titled ***From PSYOP to MindWar: The Psychology of Victory****.*

His superior was then Colonel Paul E. Vallely, darling of today's Conservative Christian movement and frequent contributor to FoxNews. ...

Aquino would show up 6 years later in 1988 as one of the accused in a scandal centered on a Presidio daycare center where as many as 60 toddlers claimed to have been molested in sado / satanic sex rituals.

Although this was spun as "hysteria" based upon the over-active imagination of the children, the ***NY Times*** *reported that at least 4 of the little girls (who hadn't even been through puberty) were diagnosed with the sexually-transmitted disease chlamydia.*[1450]

This was on the heels of another Army scandal where parents had been shocked to learn that their children from 3 years old down to ***three months old*** *had been sexually assaulted on the other side of the country in a West Point daycare facility. Even more upsetting to the parents; officers, administrators and commanders at West Point were all claiming they bore no responsibility for the outrage*[1451]*. United States Attorney Rudolph Giuliani was the man entrusted by the Elite to make it go away. ~ Illuminati Unmasked*[693]

*****

The Mayor of Sin City The future cross-dressing Mayor of New York City[xcvi] was richly rewarded for his loyalty to the Devil's Simulation.

> *Despite 950 interviews by 60 FBI agents assigned to the investigation, an investigation led by former U.S. Attorney Rudolph Giuliani produced no federal grand jury indictments. The investigation did find "significant indications that children may have been abused" at the center.*
>
> *Until now, no official reports or investigations have verified the sexual abuse.*
>
> *The **Times Herald-Record**, however, has learned that a still-secret, independent report – prepared by one of the nation's top experts on child sexual abuse – confirms the children's accusations of abuse. The report also played a vital role in ending the seven-year legal ordeal and in enabling the case to be settled without the children undergoing potentially hostile questioning on the witness stand, said U.S. District Judge Whitman Knapp, who heard the civil case.*[694]

It wasn't the first nor the last time Rudy Giuliani put large effort into covering for child predators.

> *Giuliani employs his childhood friend Monsignor Alan Placa as a consultant at Giuliani Partners despite a 2003 Suffolk County, N.Y., grand jury report that accuses Placa of sexually abusing children, as well as helping cover up the sexual abuse of children by other priests. Placa, who was part of a three-person team that handled allegations of abuse by clergy for the Diocese of Rockville Centre, is referred to as Priest F in the grand jury report. The report summarizes the testimony of multiple alleged victims of Priest F, and then notes, "Ironically, Priest F would later become instrumental in the development of Diocesan policy in response to allegations of sexual abuse of children by priests." ~ Salon*[695]

Not that Placa really needed his friend's support; as with all other child rapists in clerical robes, the Vatican continued to keep him on the roles.

> *Five years after he was suspended from his duties because of the abuse allegations, Placa is currently listed as "priest in residence" at St. Aloysius Church in Great Neck, N.Y., where close friend Brendan Riordan serves as pastor, and officially lives at the rectory there with Riordan. In addition, Placa co-owns a penthouse apartment in Manhattan with Riordan, the latest in a half-dozen properties the two men have owned in common at various times since the late 1980s.*
>
> *Placa has worked for Giuliani Partners since 2002. As of June 2007, he remains on the payroll. "He is currently employed here," Giuliani spokeswoman Sunny Mindel confirmed to Salon, adding that Giuliani "believes Alan has been unjustly accused." Mindel declined to discuss what role Placa plays with the consulting firm, or how much he is paid. Says Richard Tollner, who testified before the grand jury that Placa had molested him, "[Giuliani] has to speak up for himself and explain himself. If he doesn't, people shouldn't vote for him." Adds Anne Barrett Doyle, co-director of BishopAccountability.org, which tracks suspected priest abuse, "I think Rudy Giuliani has to account for his friendship with a credibly accused child molester." ...*[696]

In fact, Giuliani is so close to the pedophile priest, one wonders if there are any limits to the relationship — *He was the best man at Giuliani's first marriage in 1968 to his second cousin, Regina Peruggi, then helped Giuliani get an annulment in 1982 — over Regina's protests — so he could marry his second wife, Donna Hanover. Placa officiated at the wedding of Hanover and Giuliani in 1984. In September 2002, while suspended by the diocese over the sexual abuse allegations and no longer permitted to perform priestly duties, Placa received special permission to officiate at the funeral of the former mayor's mother, Helen. He also officiated at the funeral of Giuliani's father and baptized both of Giuliani's children.*

> *During Giuliani's political rise from U.S. attorney to mayor, when reporters wanted quotes from old friends they would often turn to Placa. A 1985* ***New York Times*** *story noted that Placa stayed over at Giuliani's apartment as often as once a week, where the two men would "talk poetry, theology and politics deep into the night." The*

> *monsignor also knew Giuliani well enough to describe his relationship with his father...*[697]

But Placa isn't just a pedophile priest, he's a pedophile priest pleader: Placa weaponized his law degree and the Vatican put him to use protecting other pedophile priests. This came in handy for the Archdiocese of Boston.

> *In addition to being a priest, Placa had received a law degree, and he first came to work for the diocese as its legal consultant. He was legal counsel to Bishop John McGann, and, starting in 1992, also a member of a three-person diocesan team charged with fielding allegations of sexual abuse by priests.*
>
> *When a molestation scandal erupted in the Catholic Archdiocese of Boston in early 2002, it spilled over into Long Island. The newly installed bishop, William Murphy, had been the No. 2 official in Boston from 1993 to 2001. He had helped arrange early retirement for the most notorious of the abusive priests, Father John Geoghan. After Geoghan was sentenced to prison for molestation in February 2002, the archdiocese revealed that it had settled 100 civil suits on Geoghan's behalf...*[698]

Again, not that his help was truly needed as the "secular" American justice system made sure no pedophile priest was punished using dodges like "statutes of limitations". Even more outrageous was the tactic of examining "Church procedures" as a ruse of secular oversight in the doings of the Catholic hierarchy. Americans would be shocked to see their "public" institutions indistinguishably working with those of the Vatican — no different than the intermingling of "Church and State" in Ireland, Spain or any "overt" Catholic country.[xcvii]

> *In Nassau County, the district attorney concluded that the statute of limitations had expired on all reported incidents and stopped investigating. Suffolk County convened a special grand jury to investigate specific allegations of abuse and how the diocese had dealt with them. The jury heard from 97 witnesses over nine months, and uncovered "deception and intimidation" by those diocesan officials who were supposed to be fielding sexual abuse complaints from*

> *parishioners. “The evidence before the grand jury,” stated the report, “clearly demonstrates that diocesan officials agreed to engage in conduct that resulted in the prevention, hindrance and delay in the discovery of criminal conduct by priests.”*
>
> *None of the diocesan officials or accused priests are cited in the grand jury’s final report by name; the report instead identifies 23 priests by letter, and identifies diocesan officials by the duties they performed. Ultimately, the grand jury determined that “priests working in the Diocese of Rockville Centre committed criminal acts ... These criminal acts included, but were not limited to, Rape, Sodomy, Sexual Abuse, Endangering the Welfare of a Child and Use of a Child in a Sexual Performance.” Because the alleged criminal acts had occurred more than five years ago, however, the statute of limitations meant no charges could be filed against any of the accused.*[699]

It was extremely ironic to those unfamiliar with the Pedocracy that a supposed defender of children would actually be one of their abusers.

> *Suffolk County District Attorney Thomas Spota would not confirm to the Long Island newspaper* ***Newsday*** *at the time of the report’s release in February 2003 that Priest F was Alan Placa. Spota would say, however, that “this is a person who was directly involved in the so-called policy of the church to protect children, when in fact he was one of the abusers.” Multiple media outlets have named Placa as Priest F. Placa implicitly acknowledged as much to the New York Times in a Feb. 20, 2003, story, titled “L.I. Monsignor Scorns Jury, Insisting He Is No ‘Monster’,” in which he denied the specific allegations in the report. One of the victims whose testimony is cited in the report has also confirmed to* ***Salon*** *that Placa is Priest F.*[700]

Sadly, the only way a predator priest is stopped is when the child does it themselves.

> *The Suffolk County grand jury report, released eight months after Placa’s suspension, includes evidence from three alleged victims. It states that in Priest F’s first assignment, “he appears to have made feeble attempts at abusing a boy who was an alter [sic] server. ... He*

> *pulled up a chair next to the boy and put his right hand on his thigh. Slowly his hand began to creep up towards the boy's genital area. Alarmed, the boy covered his crotch."*
>
> *"After his first assignment," the report continues, "Priest F was transferred within the Diocese to ... a school. Priest F was cautious, but relentless in his pursuit of victims. He fondled boys over their clothes, usually in his office. Always, his actions were hidden by a poster, newspaper or a book. ... Everyone in the school knew to stay away from Priest F."*
>
> *The report describes two alleged victims complaining to the school's rector about Priest F, and their "suspicions, later confirmed to be correct," that the priest was abusing a fourth boy. Eventually, one of the alleged victims told Priest F, in an encounter witnessed by another boy, "Don't ever fucking touch me again or I'll kill you."*
>
> *In an interview with* ***Salon****, former St. Pius X student Richard Tollner, now 48, confirms that he is one of the alleged victims who testified before the grand jury — the one who allegedly told Priest F "Don't ever fucking touch me again." He also confirms that Placa is Priest F. Tollner claims Placa molested him and at least two others, but when he told school authorities at the time, he says nothing happened. "No one contacted my family or me," Tollner, now 48, recalls. "I told another priest while I was on a retreat and he said he would explore it and he never did." So far none of the alleged victims besides Tollner has come forward publicly. Placa has denied Tollner's allegations and has referred to the former St. Pius X student as "troubled."*[701]

As previously occurred in Catholic households, victimized children were even ostracized by their own devout Roman Catholic parents.

> *When one of the victims attempted to report the alleged abuse, "the response I had gotten from my family, from my parents specifically was, that's impossible ... Priests just don't do these things. You must be mistaken."*[702]

Although Rome is usually satisfied with keeping her pedophile priests out of prison, Monsignor Allan Placa received special treatment. He was given a clean bill of health on December 7th, 2009.[xcviii]

> *The Diocese of Rockville Centre announced on Friday that the Catholic Church had found Monsignor Alan Placa not guilty of molesting teenage boys, an allegation that first surfaced in a local grand jury investigation in 2002. The grand jury report concluded that Placa could not be prosecuted criminally because the statute of limitations had expired.*
>
> *Victims' rights groups harshly criticized the Catholic Church's decision and the process of trying the accused priest. ~ ABC News*[703]

The only outrages that can compete with the Pedocracy are false flags; mass tragedies manufactured by traitors in our own governments for the Hegelian purposes of enslavement and war profiteering.

Here, too, Rudolph Giuliani was the Vatican's gatekeeper of choice in New York City on one of the worst false flags in human history: 9/11.

> *When Georgetown alum George Tenet (then Director of the CIA) would oversee the most treasonous mass-killing in America on September 11th, 2001, Giuliani was the man in NYC to see it done on his end. ~ Illuminati Unmasked*[704]

Hysterical

> **Day-Care Sex-Abuse Hysteria**: *Wikipedia Day-care sex-abuse hysteria was a moral panic that occurred primarily in the 1980s and early 1990s featuring charges against day-care providers of several forms of child abuse, including Satanic ritual abuse.[1][2] A prominent case in Kern County, California first brought the issue of day-care sexual abuse to the forefront of the public awareness, and the issue figured prominently in news coverage for almost a decade. The Kern County case was followed by cases elsewhere in the United States as well as Canada, New Zealand, Brazil, and various European countries.*[705]

“Hysteria” ... “charges” ... repeatedly the corruption of cops and judges is used as proof that heinous crimes never took place; yet the breadth of the “accusations” across states and even countries again proves the systemic nature of the Devil’s Simulation.

Perhaps the most staggering aspect of the military daycare “hysteria” was that infants and toddlers were the prey of choice, as UPI disclosed about the West Point crimes in October of 1984 — *The youngest victim was 10 months old, he said, and the oldest was 3 years old.*

> *No one has been arrested since the charges surfaced in late July. The identities of the teachers, who are civilian employees paid by the U.S. government, have been kept secret.*[706]

An “expert” from the University of Pennsylvania was brought in to assuage the families of victims.

> *The expert, Dr. Ann Wolbert Burgess, a professor of psychiatric nursing at the University of Pennsylvania at Philadelphia and the author of the book, “Child Pornography and Sex Rings,” entered the case in 1989.*
>
> *She interviewed all the children. She said yesterday that her goal in the case had been to reduce harm to the children because testimony in open court could have triggered symptoms of abuse, prompted by a “resurfacing” of the original incident.*

> *Knapp said that because Burgess worked for neither the government nor the plaintiffs, but reported directly to the court, her findings carried additional credibility. Neither Burgess nor others would speak about her specific findings. ~ Times Herald Record*[707]

The child abuse “expert” being employed at “public” University of Pennsylvania is no accident. An insider Vatican source has claimed that the Jesuits control the University of Pennsylvania incognito.[708] This becomes extremely helpful when giving a prominent puppet his “secular” education; for instance, Donald John Trump spent 2 years with the Jesuits at Fordham but then transferred to the University of Pennsylvania. His daughter Ivanka has followed exactly in his footsteps, first being trained by the Jesuits at Georgetown, then moving on to U. of Penn.

One can’t be sure how far back Jesuit control of the “secular” institution goes but the list of alumni is both interesting and telling.[709]

> * Francis Hopkinson, designed the first official American Flag.[xcix]
> * George Clymer, Founding Father; early advocate for complete independence from Britain.
> * James Wilson, Founding Father; one of the six original justices appointed by George Washington to the Supreme Court of the United States.
> * Benjamin Rush, Founding Father of the United States; Surgeon General of the Continental Army.
> * 9th President of the United States William Henry Harrison.
> * Gunslinger John Henry “Doc” Holliday (College of Dental Surgery)
> * Martha Hughes-Cannon, first female United States Senator.
> * William Wrigley, Jr., founder of the Wm. Wrigley Jr. Company.
> * American poet and critic Ezra Pound, a major figure in the early modernist movement.
> * Kwame Nkrumah, first President of Ghana, and previously first Prime Minister of Ghana.
> * 45th President of the United States Donald Trump.
> * Warren Buffett
> * Warren Commission member and subsequent United States Senator from the Commonwealth of Pennsylvania, Arlen Specter.

* Infamous Jewish Communist theologian Noam Chomsky, BA in 1949, MA in 1951, PhD in 1955.
* Hotel and casino mogul Steve Wynn.
* Ed Rendell, 45th Governor of Pennsylvania; 96th Mayor of Philadelphia.
* Governor of Utah, Ambassador to Singapore and China, Mormon (Freemason) Jon Meade Huntsman Jr.
* Elon Musk, founder and CEO of PayPal, Tesla Motors and SpaceX.
* Patrick Ellis: President, The Catholic University of America, (1992–98); President, La Salle University, (1977–92)
* Arnold Eisen: Chancellor, Jewish Theological Seminary
* Vernon F. Gallagher: 8th President of Duquesne University, (1950–59) [private Roman Catholic school]

— along with many others.

Amongst the U. Penn. alumni is wealthy investment banker Peter Lynch.[710] Lynch also attended Roman Catholic Boston College. His Jesuit-educated wife, Carolyn Hoff-Lynch, was a generous benefactor and Trustee at U. Penn. until her death of leukemia. She was highly-lauded by both Jesuits and “youth organizations” — *For her leadership and generosity, Ms.* [sic] *Lynch received numerous honors, including honorary degrees from Emmanuel College and Boston College, the Alexis de Tocqueville Award for Leadership from the United Way, the Ad Majorem Dei Gloriam Award from the Society of Jesus New England Province, the Pedro Arrupe Medal for Excellence in Ministry from the Weston Jesuit School of Theology, the Boys and Girls Club of Boston Partners of Youth Award, the Massachusetts Horticultural Society President’s Choice Award, the Saint Julie Billiart Award of the Sisters of Notre Dame and the Papal Honor of Saint Gregory the Great.*[711]

Because of their great wealth, during Carolyn Lynch’s lifetime and afterward, large portions of Lynch money (good Boston Roman Catholics that the U. Penn. notables were) was directed to “the Church”.

> ***About the Lynch Foundation***
>
> ***Mission** — The Lynch Foundation primarily supports four areas of giving: education, cultural and historic preservation, health care and wellness, and the religious and educational efforts of the Roman Catholic Church. The Lynch Foundation's relationship with its grantees is a partnership, with the foundation providing the resources and support needed to help its grantees succeed in the Greater Boston community.*[712]

There are many more examples of "secular" schools that are as intimately tied to the Catholic Church as the Irish, Spanish, Australian, British or American governments.

The corruption over the child abuse at West Point had both parents and activists beside themselves with anger and frustration.

As they tried to put together the pieces that used to be the psyches of their innocent toddlers-turned-shattered-pre-teens, government officials sworn to protect them and see justice done — like Federal Prosecutor Rudolph Giuliani — turned their backs.

> *After a federal grand jury failed to return indictments, community members joined the parents in calling for another investigation in 1985.*
>
> *Joan Benedict walked with parents at a protest in Highland Falls in hopes of inspiring another probe. And she was a member of an Orange County anti-pornography group that sponsored a forum to allow the victims' parents to speak out in 1986. ...*
>
> *Ms. Benedict, a Town of Cornwall resident, started her own crusade*[c] *to spark the Justice Department to reopen the abuse case. She ended her efforts in 1988 when she was convinced of a federal cover-up after receiving a letter from the U.S. Department of Justice.*
>
> *Mary C. Spearing, a special attorney with the Justice Department's National Obscenity Enforcement Unit, wrote that the case was closed.*

“Unfortunately, no new evidence, revelation or hint of wrongdoing or negligence surfaced during our review,” she wrote. ...

The monetary settlement, however, did not resolve the parents’ bitterness over what they still maintain was a botched FBI investigation. In fact, court papers filed by parents showed federal investigators not only refused to believe the children, but, in some cases, also criticized some parents for not keeping their children under control in their homes.

“When the agents came to the house, they did not appear to have a tape recorder and they were not taking notes during the interview,” one parent said in a sworn statement, according to 1984 court papers. “He became annoyed and frustrated and said, ‘It looks like she’s just trying to get attention.’” ...

Prosecutor Giuliani did not return calls [to the *Times* Herald Record] *last week. In 1987, Giuliani said his detailed investigation showed only one or two children were abused. The federal investigation cleared the center staff members accused by the children.*

The mother of the 10-year-old girl still tries to cope with the abuse’s aftermath.

“As far as I’m concerned, the government gave them a license to go out and abuse other children,” the mother said. “I have to explain to my daughter these people are still out there.”

“And she still has nightmares. She’s afraid they’re going to come through the window at night to get her.”[713]

Chapter 20

“Just A Cog”

February 1986: *Marc Dutroux and his second wife Michelle Martin are arrested for abducting and raping five young girls. The two are turned around through the penal system, given government aid, and set back out upon the unsuspecting Belgian people.*

Belgium is a tiny country bordered by France, the Netherlands, Germany, Luxembourg, and the North Sea. The Travel Channel aptly describes it as roughly the size of the State of Maryland[714] and it has remained thoroughly Roman since the empire conquered that part of Europe in 100 B.C.

As a result, the diminutive Catholic country wields power far beyond its geography. It was a key territory during the *overt* reign of the Holy Roman Empire and is the locus from which the Vatican engenders its return.

Belgium in dark green. *Wikipedia*

> *Belgium is one of the six founding countries of the European Union and hosts the official seats of the European Commission, Council of*

> *the European Union, and European Council, as well as a seat of the European Parliament in the country's capital, Brussels. Belgium is also a founding member of the Eurozone, NATO, OECD and WTO, and a part of the trilateral Benelux Union. Brussels, hosts several of the EU's official seats as well as the headquarters of many major international organizations such as NATO.[nb 1] Belgium is also a part of the Schengen Area. Belgium is a developed country, with an advanced high-income economy and is categorized as "very high" in the Human Development Index. ~ Wikipedia*[715]

Belgium maintained a massive colony in Africa (over 905,000 square miles) from 1908 to 1960 known as the Belgian Congo. Belgium gave up *overt* control of her colony in 1960 which immediately resulted in chaos and civil war. Power was finally coalesced under corrupt tyrant Joseph-Désiré Mobutu. Mobutu was educated by the Roman Catholic "Christian Brothers" in Coquilhatville.

Marc Dutroux was born on November 6th, 1956, in Ixelles, Belgium. His parents, both teachers, had been forced to return from the Congo because of the upheaval. They separated when Dutroux was 4 and he was raised by his mother. As with so many single-parent families, the result was disastrous. Dutroux began a life of crime as a juvenile and quickly built international connections from stealing cars. These would help him when he escalated to trafficking children.

Dutroux was pulled into the sex trade as a result of his tumultuous upbringing.

> ... *Dutroux* [left the care of] *his mother ... at age 16, work*[ed] *briefly as a prostitute serving men.* ~ Murderpedia[716]

As a teenage boy "serving men" his psyche was sufficiently warped to birth a monster.

Neither media nor law enforcement give details of this part of Dutroux's life. Teenage boys don't simply decide to "service men" and accomplish as much on their own. Doubtless the sex underworld brought him in and "showed him the ropes". How much of it was forced upon him remains unknown.

Dutroux married at 19, fathered two children then divorced his wife in favor of Michelle Martin — a woman he had already begun an adulterous affair with.

It was Martin who helped Dutroux become a serial rapist.

They began a spree of kidnapping and raping young girls. It continued until the two were arrested in 1986.

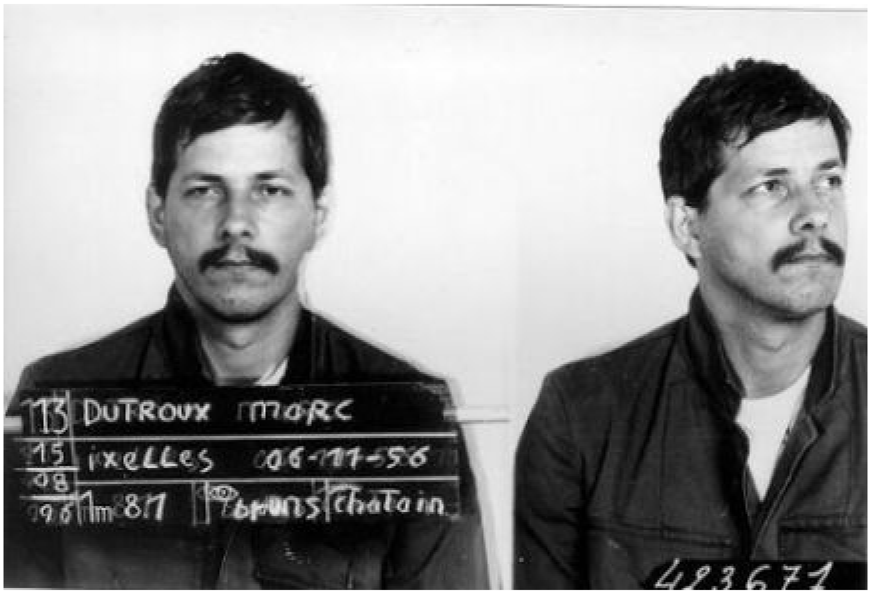

Three years later, in 1989, Dutroux was finally sentenced to thirteen and a half years in prison. Martin was sentenced to five years. While in prison in the Catholic Socialist country, Dutroux and Martin were able to marry.

The serial rapist had only served three years in prison when Justice Minister Melchior Wathelet had him released — but not under the guise of "good behavior". While behind bars, Dutroux had amassed over 30 serious infractions.[717] His own mother wrote the warden to alert authorities about who they had in custody.

> *She complained that Mr. Dutroux was using supervised visits to his grandmother's house to write up an inventory of the elderly woman's possessions, leaving her anxious and distressed.*

> *"I have known for a long time and with good cause my eldest's temperament," she wrote.*
>
> *"What I do not know, and what all the people who know him fear, it's what he has in mind for the future."*
>
> *According to the French newspaper **Liberation**, the letters went unanswered.* ~ BBC[718]

How was a serial rapist of children getting "supervised" vacations from prison in the first place?

Shortly after, Belgian authorities gave up any pretense of keeping Dutroux incarcerated and released him completely.

The official who did so — Melchior H. M. J. F. C. Wathelet — is both a Socialist Politician and a Judge. He teaches Roman Catholics about "justice" and dispenses it within the "European Union".

> *He has degrees in law and in economics (University of Liège) and is a Master of Laws (Harvard University). He is also a professor at the Catholic University of Louvain and the Université de Liège. From 1995 to 2003 he was a Judge at the European Court of Justice. Since October 2012 Wathelet serves as advocate-general at the Court of Justice. ~ Wikipedia*[719]

Somehow, Wathelet has escaped any fallout for unleashing Dutroux upon the Belgian people after he was trained in prison. It was there that Dutroux was instructed on how to build a false room to help hide and shuffle victims.[720]

Upon his release, a board of government-appointed psychiatrists proscribed him sleeping pills. No reference can be found as to the medicinal reason.

He was also placed on government benefits which helped him maintain seven different residences that he used like CIA black sites to transport victims from locations where they would be sought after.

On June 24th, 1995, Julie Lejeune and Mélissa Russo were kidnapped from the municipality of Grâce-Hollogne. Both were only 8 years old. Dutroux was blamed for the kidnapping because the little girls ended up in the cellar of his main residence in Charleroi, an hour away.

The girls were abused for use in child pornography which instantly bolsters the accusation that Dutroux was just a cog in a much larger pedophile network.

> *An accomplice, Michel Lelievre — a drug addict and petty thief — told police soon after his arrest that the girls had been kidnapped to order, for someone else. ~ The Observer*[721]

Brussels businessman and pub-owner Jean-Michel Nihoul was later named as Dutroux’s facilitator. Nihoul was the buffer between the blunt instrument that did the acts and the Elites who enjoyed the children he procured for them.

Nihoul was connected to Dutroux by the testimony of Regina Louf, a woman who said her own parents put her into the child sex slave network.

> *She told investigators how from the age of 12 she’d been “given” by her parents to a family friend, Tony Van den Bogaert, who’d had a key to their house. He would collect her from school and take her away for weekends to sex parties where she was “given” to other men and secretly filmed having sex with them. “It was highly organised,” she says. “Big business. Blackmail. There was a lot of money involved.”*
>
> *In 1996 she related her experiences to a police team under carefully filmed and supervised conditions. She described certain regular clients including judges, one of the country’s most powerful politicians (now dead) and a prominent banker. She gave the police the names by which she knew these men, detailed the houses, apartments and districts where she’d been taken with other children to entertain the guests.*
>
> *This “entertainment” was not just sex, she told the police. It involved sadism, torture and even murder, and again she described the places, the victims and the ways they were killed. One of the regular organisers of these parties, she claimed, was the man she knew as “Mich”, Jean Michel Nihoul, “a very cruel man. He abused children*

> *in a very sadistic way", she said. Also there, she said, was the young Dutroux.*
>
> *"Dutroux was a boy who brought drugs, cocaine to these parties — he brought some girls, watched girls. At these events Nihoul was a sort of party beast while Dutroux was more on the side."*[722]

This would've been about the time Dutroux was a "male prostitute" — a traumatized teenager turned into a robotic monster and child procurer for gutless monsters above him who didn't have the stomach to risk themselves in kidnapping.

But what they did have the stomach for is beyond blood-curdling.

Journalists Marie-Jeanne Van Heeswyck, Annemie Bulté and Douglas De Coninck managed to gain access to government records regarding the Dutroux investigation. They used that material to write the 1999 book *The X-Dossiers*, which was quickly made unavailable.

Regina Louf had been interviewed by Belgium's paramilitary police force, the Gendarmerie, and given the code name "X1" along with over 20 other purported victims.

Regina's accusations are deeply disturbing but no less so than those of Cathy O'Brien or Sue Ford (who wrote under the pen-name "Bryce Taylor"). Both have written books describing what they claimed were their terrible experiences as CIA mind-controlled sex slaves.

> [Profile] *"X1": Born in 1969. Abused and neglected by her parents. When 2 years old, sent to her grandmother in Knokke, who owned a hotel-villa that was used as a brothel for high-level pedophiles and sadists. Pedophile videos were also shot here. Introduced to her pimp, Tony Vandenbogaert, at age 4 who began to take her to other locations for sexual abuse and torture. Sent back to her parents in Gent in June 1979 for a variety of reasons. Extremely neglected by her parents for several months until her old pimp showed up again. For years she was taken to abuse — and torture parties. Managed to hook up with a boy she fell in love with, married, and immediately moved out in 1988, which appears to have saved her from ending up in a snuff movie.*

> *Never managed to break away completely from the network. Sometimes when her husband left the house for a few days to work as a truck driver, her pimp and some of his associates would show up and take her with them to locations where children were abused. On these occasions she was raped herself or had to participate in abuse against others. X1 was diagnosed with MPD/DID.*[ci] ~ van der Reijden[723]

One independent source still giving the grizzly details of the Pedocracy in Belgium is Dutch researcher Joël van der Reijden. Doubtless, he and his "Institute for the Study of Globalization and Covert Politics" are allowed to exist because they are obscure and don't threaten the secret control of the Vatican. Terms like "Illuminati", "Globalist" and "Deep State" are used by van der Reijden to obscure such details.

In regard to the naming of powerful Elites involved, van der Reijden uses historical examples to prove the validity of the accusations.

> *"Blood countess" Elizabeth Bathory and Gilles de Rais, two historical nobles who together murdered about 1,400 children. De Rais was primarily interested in satisfying his pedophile and homosexual needs, but also loved to watch his victims die slow agonizing deaths. Along with a number of servants, Bathory viciously tortured to death an estimated 650 servant girls. Many victims were beaten to death or literally cut up alive over a period of hours or even weeks. She also practiced cannibalism and sometimes forced girls to strip their own flesh and eat it. Both Bathory and de Rais were interested in the occult. The only reason we know about their crimes is because they eventually angered powerful interests: the church and rival families. If they would have kept to ordinary peasant children, most likely they would never have been put on trial and we never would have had a clue as to what these two did.*
>
> *There seem to have been plenty of other nobles who took their frustrations out on servants. Darya Nikolayevna Saltykova (1730-1801), a noblewoman in Russia, admitted to torturing and murdering over 130 of her servants at the time of her arrest at age 32, some of them 11 or 12 years old.*

> *Throughout history, most kings enjoyed rape, murder and extensive torture, so why should we be surprised? What our modern day elites might be doing is almost a case of honoring the principals of 10,000 years of despotic rule.*[724]

The period of history where Countess Elizabeth Báthory of Hungary conducted her atrocities is key: the late 1500's, early 1600's — as the Protest against Rome was going full force.

Even *Wikipedia* admits that the "Blood Countess" wasn't forced to trial by "the church" unless you take the lower-case "c" literally.

> *Between 1602 and 1604, after rumours of Báthory's atrocities had spread through the kingdom, Lutheran minister István Magyari made complaints against her, both publicly and at the court in Vienna.[20] The Hungarian authorities took some time to respond to Magyari's complaints. Finally, in 1610, King Matthias II assigned György Thurzó, the Palatine of Hungary, to investigate. Thurzó ordered two notaries to collect evidence in March 1610.[21] In 1610 and 1611, the notaries collected testimony from more than 300 witnesses. The trial records include the testimony of the four defendants, as well as thirteen witnesses. Priests, noblemen and commoners were questioned. Witnesses included the castellan and other personnel of Sárvár castle.*
> ...
>
> *Thurzó went to Čachtice Castle after Christmas on 30 December 1610 and caught Báthory in the act. Thurzó arrested Báthory and four of her servants, who were accused of being her accomplices: Dorotya Semtész, Ilona Jó, Katarína Benická, and János Újváry ("Ibis" or Fickó). Thurzó's men reportedly found one girl dead and one dying and reported that another woman was found wounded while others were locked up.[6] The countess was put under house arrest.*[725]

As with the other monster Elites we've examined, she was spared true justice.

> *Thurzó debated further proceedings with Elizabeth's son Paul and two of her sons-in-law. A trial and execution would have caused a public*

> *scandal and disgraced a noble and influential family (which at the time ruled Transylvania), and Elizabeth's considerable property would have been seized by the crown. Thurzó, along with Paul and her two sons-in-law, originally planned for Elizabeth to be spirited away to a nunnery, but as accounts of her murder of the daughters of lesser nobility spread, it was agreed that Elizabeth Báthory should be kept under strict house arrest and that further punishment should be avoided.*[28]
>
> *King Matthias urged Thurzó to bring Elizabeth to trial and suggested she be sentenced to death, but Thurzó successfully convinced the king that such an act would adversely affect the nobility. Thurzó's motivation for such an intervention is debated by scholars. It was decided that Matthias would not have to repay his large debt to Elizabeth.*[29][726]

Instead, the wrath of the public was aimed at her accomplices in Inquisition fashion.

> *Three of the defendants, Semtész, Jó, and Ficko, were condemned to death and their sentences carried out immediately. Before being burned at the stake, Semtész and Jó had their fingers ripped off their hands with hot pincers. Ficko, who was deemed less culpable, was beheaded, and his body burned. Benická was sentenced to life imprisonment, since testimony indicated that she was dominated and bullied by the other women.*
>
> *Following the trial, a red gallows was erected near the castle to show the public that justice had been done.*[727]

Was it? A gallows was erected yet no bodies hung from it!

The woman behind it all lived on and the initial intent for her destination — a Catholic convent — proved whom she served and why she was protected until a Lutheran minister found the courage to speak up. Realizing that smuggling the monster to a nunnery was too much to swallow for the angry populace, she was placed in solitary confinement where she died years later.

The Blood Countess was not the last child predator who would escape justice by running to a convent.

According to accusations of victims like “X2” and “X3”, the Belgian aristocracy was no less vicious (and no-less Catholic).

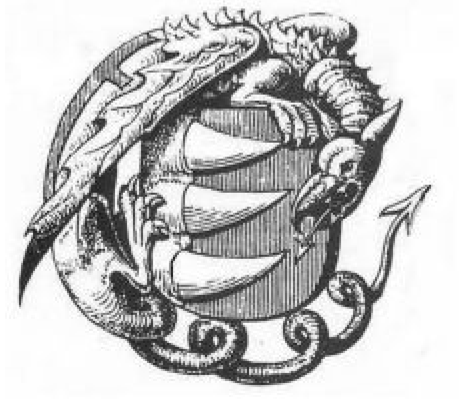

Coat of arms of Countess Elizabeth Báthory de Ecsed of Hungary(1560-1614)

> *The Belgian royal family has been implicated on several occasions. X2 spoke about a girl she had known who had been murdered, and how this girl told her about the domain of Princess Liliane de Rety (“a madwoman”) where children were buried.[197] Liliane was the second wife of King Leopold III (d. 1983) and lived until her death in 2002 at Chateau d’Argenteuil. In 2004, the Delwart family, shareholders of Solvay, bought the domain.[198]*
>
> *From personal experience, X2 mentioned having seen Prince Laurent, the brother of Belgium’s present crown prince. Laurent apparently was more interested in masturbating at child abuse orgies than taking part in the actual abuse.[199]*[728]

We’ve had many opportunities to list the gory details of what exactly goes on in the Devil’s Simulation. At least one possible testimony is necessary to show the depth of evil ... and to steel the anger of the rising resistance.

WARNING: GRAPHIC

> *X3 implicated Prince Charles (1903-1983), the second son of King Albert I; King Baudouin (1930-1993), the eldest son of King Leopold III; and either King Albert I or II. Unfortunately, X3 spoke about experiences from the 1950s and early 1960s, which meant that none of the other* ***X-Dossier*** *witnesses could confirm aspects of her story. Two*

of her primary abusers, Paul Vanden Boeynants and Charly De Pauw, had already appeared in the Pinon file of the early 1980s; the same is true for King Albert II.[200] *Additionally, part of the details of the abuse described by X3, although recognizable, can be a bit hard swallow (the scale and setting), all making her testimony hard to use without more backup from other witnesses. In X3's support, however, she was a well-respected person in the support community for abused women and children, and her interviewers refused to write down most of what she said. A few excerpts from a summary written about X3's testimonies:*

> *"The car stopped on a parterre before the house. [It] was surrounded by a park. Two supervisors were present: Ralf and Walter. The children were taken to a tower made of natural stone and with a wooden door... an underground [corridor] left from the turret toward the cellars... without light... going downward. In the cellars there were cells where the children were locked up, awaiting their turn. There also were some cells for the dogs (dobermans). The passageway gave way to a room of spectacle. In the tower: dead children's bodies in various stages of decomposition (sometimes dismembered and/or missing body parts) and carcasses of dogs. Spectators: always the same but difficult to identify — about fifty. She recognized the regent Charles, King Baudouin and King Albert, and two others that she calls Charly [De Pauw] and Polo [Paul Vanden Boeynants]. She thinks to have recognized Willy Claes [later NATO secretary general] and doctor Vanden Eynde. The dogs listen to Ralf and Walter. The addicted dogs are excited. Spectacles — orgies, putting to death children and dogs. The spectacle room has a strong odor of excrements of dogs. Dogs can roam free in the garden... Gilles (12 years old??) was castrated by Polo. The other children have to drink the blood... Girls are slashed with razor blades. The lips of the vagina of X3 have partially been cut and were given to eat to the dogs... A girl's [large] vulva was cut into slices and fed to the dogs..."*

> *“Childbirth by a teenager through a caesarean section. Baby pulled out of the stomach and given to the dogs by Polo. She saw the dismembered mother again in the exposition of the dead... She has to eat the human flesh cut from the bodies. She has to eat pieces of children (fingers) served in gelatin. Good taste — slightly sugary. It provoked an enormous sensation of hunger and thirst. Drinking blood relieved the sensation of thirst... She speaks of another murder that she committed on a girl of 3-5 years under the threat that it would be her brother who would be killed. She opened up the girl from the vagina to the breastbone with a knife. She gave the internal organs to the dog. Someone cut off the head. The child was devoured by the dogs... Murder of a young teenage woman who was opened up by Vanden Eynde... The baby shouted in the mother’s stomach. She resewed the stomach with the baby inside...”*

> *“Luxurious house with a surrounding wall and gate... non illuminated twisting path. There were some stables. Parterre with flowers. Hall of entry — cream-colored and blue tiles — red carpeting. Walls made of marble with a teenage picture of [later king] Baudouin on it. She spent a whole night with Baudouin — fellatio and sodomy. Presence of maid... In this house there were many servants... She remembers one evening when she had been smeared with cream before being brought to the table on a tray. She had been licked off and raped... At the end of another evening a child... had been castrated. The other children that were present buried the boy in a flowerbed. She remembers a child who had been decapitated, then cut and fried before being eaten. She remembers children who hung on hooks in the kitchen. A certain Solange [a female name] has been enucleated [what exactly?] with a spoon by her and an old lady.”*[201][729]

These could be dismissed as the ravings of a perverse mind seeking attention but what “attention” have these purported victims received?

“X1” (Regina Louf) gives an explanation for these atrocities with a logic far beyond her humble background.

> *Underage girls were often exchanged to seal certain illegal deals. The pimps would take pictures during these events. ...*
>
> > [X1] *Because once you've had sex with a child, you are branded... unless all parties keep their mouths shut. ...*
> >
> > *Contracts between the business milieu and the political world, contracts between businessmen amongst each other, fraud with subsidies or licenses, setting up fake firms, criminal contracts like arms trade... everything was possible. And it always ended with sex and children... Pictures were taken, in jest, to keep both parties to their contracts... The men were brought to ideas by child pornography movies that were played at parties... The pimps also had another tactic. They invited a person who could be useful to them. They went to dine with him, and took him — after he had been liquored up — to a "party". Men from the top layer of society are used to visiting or getting offered prostitutes. They usually knew that something like this would follow, and the prostitutes they would see upon entering would be slightly older girls, between 16 [sexually mature in Belgium] and 18 years old. More booze and cocaine would be supplied, for ambience. And only then the "prey" would be taken to a room where a younger girl was waiting, like me, then. I had the assignment to get him into bed with me and if I didn't succeed in that sanctions would follow. The bed scene was secretly filmed and served for blackmail purposes. Most men probably realized only afterwards in what kind of hornet's nest they now found themselves, but by then it was far too late...* [730]

This also explains the use of *unconvicted* "businessman" Michel Nihoul as an intermediary.

> *Christine Van Hees was 15 or 16 years old when she fell in love with Michel Nihoul. He bought her a number of presents and was very nice to her. After a while Nihoul convinced her, through his psychological games (**"you are not a child anymore"**; **"I gave you so much"**; **"I'm a grown man and I have certain needs"**), to have sex with Regina and later with him.*

After a while "Chrissie" found out about the real Nihoul, not the least through a ritual abuse ceremony in which the stomach of a white bunny was slashed open. During the abuse at this event a snuff movie was played in which a two year old girl was raped, tortured and murdered.

Christine was murdered in February 1983, soon after the murder on Regina's child.

Mieke was murdered in November 1984 in the villa of her grandmother by the same people that killed Christine.[731]

Taken

The next two victims arrived into the hands of Dutroux in what could’ve been a scene from the 2008 movie *Taken*, starring Liam Neeson.

Neeson is a favorite for an industry that appears to be controlled by Jews. For the native-born Irishman, Catholicism was more a way of life than a religion. Yet, the well-known actor has an unlikely role model.

> *Raised Catholic in the town of Ballymena, Northern Ireland, Neeson, 52, spent many of his adolescent Friday nights standing at the back of a small meeting hall near the town’s train station, listening to the hell-fire-and-brimstone sermons of radical Protestant politician Rev. Ian Paisley. Though Paisley was notoriously anti-Catholic*[cii]*, Neeson, already mulling a life in the theatre, thrilled to the spectacle.*
>
> *“He was just an extraordinary preacher. I just loved his style of oratory,” Neeson recalls. ...*
>
> *“I didn’t believe any of the stuff Paisley was spouting forth about, I just admired his presence, his knowledge of the Bible, the way he intimidated anybody in the room,” he says. ...*
>
> *But here’s what’s especially noteworthy. In spite of Paisley’s poisonous sermons, “I admire the man, you know?” Neeson says, as if amused by the notion. “He’s a Ballymena man, I’m a Ballymena man, you know? I find myself, in some weird way, sticking up for him, despite myself. Even though he can spew unbelievable venom and hate, I kind of admire him.” He pauses to consider this. “Maybe it’s tribal.”*
>
> *Perhaps he just didn’t feel targeted by the Reverend’s anti-Catholic rhetoric. For though Neeson spent six years as an altar boy, he never had much use for faith. ...*
>
> *“I loved being an altar boy, loved being in a church. Sometimes it was just the priest and myself, basically. Like at 6:30 mass, winter mornings, there would be three old-age pensioners, and that was it. But the preparation of lighting candles, laying out the priest’s vestments and stuff: That whole ritual was pretty profound.” ~ The Globe and Mail*[732]

The “Jews” of Hollywood were well-familiar with Neeson’s fond memories of being an altar boy and he was chosen to play Jesuit priest Father John Fielding in the 1986 movie *The Mission*. In that movie, reputed Knight of Malta Robert De Niro played Captain Rodrigo Mendoza — an obvious facsimile of the Order’s founder, Ignatius de Loyola.

Of course Jesuits were happily on hand to guide both the movie and the actors. Why not? “Jesuit Theater” gave birth to the false and almost always poisonous enterprise of “entertainment”.

> *As for Neeson, he only took acting seriously when he discovered its spiritual roots. Almost 20 years ago, he was on location in the jungles of Colombia while filming* ***The Mission****, the Robert De Niro-Jeremy Irons drama about 18th-century Spanish Jesuits. During some down time in filming, Neeson struck up a fast friendship with Father Daniel Berrigan, a famous anti-war Catholic priest and poet making his feature-film acting debut. “I was having a wee bit of trouble with accepting professional acting,” he recalls. “I still felt that being in these movies was, like, kind of a joke, a chance to have a good time.”*
>
> *He confessed his doubts to Father Berrigan, who told him that Saint Ignatius of Loyola, the founder of the Jesuit movement, had directly influenced Konstantin Stanislavsky, the father of modern acting.*[ciii] *It seems that Saint Ignatius had devised a set of spiritual exercises that included an exhortation for students to envision themselves within certain biblical scenes — say, as a shepherd witnessing the birth of Jesus. That inspired Stanislavsky’s famous acting exercises, detailed in his book* ***An Actor Prepares****, in which actors use their imaginations to place themselves within a character’s so-called “given circumstances.”*
>
> *“It was like something went off in my head, these two worlds absolutely coming together, and I had an immediate sort of peace with what I was doing,” Neeson says quietly (he says most things quietly). “For me to discover this in Colombia, with this great Jesuit teacher, man, poet, to hear this little piece of info that I never knew before — it really affected me, and I started really just taking my craft really,*

> *really seriously. It just changed something inside me. Rooted me in some way, you know?"*[733]

Neeson was chosen to play the lead in the 2004 film "Kinsey" about the "sexologist" of the same name. Despite the ire of Rome, it was an uncritical whitewash of the criminal personality who did more for sexual chaos in his day than any other. Perhaps that is why the film was quietly boosted by Catholic and Jesuit colleges.

> *... Fordham University in New York allowed Hollywood filmmakers and actor Liam Neeson on campus to shoot part of a movie that whitewashes the discredited Kinsey ...*
>
> *In May, Fordham even gave Neeson an honorary doctorate of fine arts. For the Jesuits of Fordham to help Hollywood glorify Kinsey, a moral monster and scientific fraud, is nothing less than to repudiate 2,000 years of Catholic moral teaching, not to mention good science.*
>
> *It's no wonder that on October 17-19, 2003, Fordham's Law School hosted "Lavender Law," a national meeting of the National Lesbian and Gay Law association and the National Lesbian and Gay Law Foundation, to discuss sodomy laws, homosexual "marriage," homosexual "rights" in academia, etc. Scheduled speakers included Fordham Law School assistant dean Tom Schoenherr and Fordham law professor Sonia Katyal. ~ Human Events*[734]

In the movie *Taken*, Neeson's ex-wife talks the military security expert into allowing his teenage daughter to vacation across Europe — interestingly enough, following the Irish Catholic band "U2" on their tour.

Such was the case for 19 year-old Eefje Lambrecks and 17 year-old An Marchal. On August 23rd, 1995, they traveled to Blankenberge to see "magician" Roland van den Berg, a Dutch citizen who gave himself the stage name "Rasti Rostelli". At the show, Eefjie and An were chosen from the audience to be hypnotized.

Later that night they were subdued.

> *They were drugged with sleeping pills and taken to Dutroux's home to be kept, chained to a bed and naked, in a room above the cellar.*
>
> *It is not known for how long they were kept in such conditions. Eefje was repeatedly raped and, in evidence that moved jurors to tears, buried under the earth in Dutroux's garden while still alive. ~ Telegraph*[735]

What the *Telegraph* is neglecting to tell you is that these were the same powerful prescription sleeping drugs given to Dutroux upon release from prison by a government medical board. There is no record of Marc Dutroux suffering from an illness requiring such a prescription. The only conclusion one can draw is that he was purposefully released early and given the tools to help him in his trade. When a patsy was needed, he was finally allowed to be arrested and charged only with the victims that could be traced to him.

How many more did Marc Dutroux procure for Europe's pedophile Elite?

> *Suspected child murderer Marc Dutroux was not working alone but was part of a network, the public prosecutor at his trial in Arlon told the jury on Tuesday.*
>
> *Reading out a 56-page statement summing up the events leading up to Dutroux's 1996 arrest, Royal Procurer Michel Bourlet said Dutroux was not an "isolated predator". ~ Expatica News*[736]

Of the six girls traced to Dutroux, four were found dead. He adamantly states none of them were killed by his hand.

> *The accused child-murderer Marc Dutroux yesterday denied any role in the gruesome death of four young girls, claiming that he was just a low-level cog in a powerful sex-slave ring and mostly acting under orders. ~ Telegraph*[737]

He would go on to claim that the girls he kept he was protecting from the Pedocracy. The media mocked this idea and, on the surface, may not seem out-of-bounds to do so[civ] ... unless the testimonies of 20 *X-Dossier* victims were taken seriously.

“X1” Regina Louf claimed that she had been impregnated by her abusers and that police officers were part of what they did to her afterward.

WARNING: GRAPHIC

1998, Regina Louf, ***Zwijgen is Voor Daders — De Getuigenis van X1*** *[Silence is for Perpetrators — The Testimony of X1], p. 133-134:*

> *“Grandmother was in the kitchen... I told her I was losing water. She said nothing, but looked at my legs and wiped her hands in her skirt. She felt with ice cold fingers in my panties and sent me to the bedroom... I crawled onto the bed, went to lie in the fetal position and sung silently to keep in control of my fears. About an hour later the first contractions started... I didn’t even know how the baby would emerge out of my body, or through where. I felt so incredibly vulnerable and longed desperately to an adult. Then the men came. A baron, pépère, two brothers, a police officer. They watched, forced me on the bed and when a contraction started, pépère forced himself inside me. I was in a complete panic... I squeezed hard in the arms of the baron. He hit me in the face, once, twice, thrice.”*

In PV 118.869 Regina gave the names:

> *“When the contractions started her grandmother made a phone call. The Lippens brothers, Vanden Boeynants and the assistant commissioner of Knokke arrived. [Baron] De Bonvoisin and Vander Elst arrived thereafter... Vander Elst puts a knife on her throat while Bonvoisin rapes her... She must masturbate while Vander Elst makes a number of photos. Lippens rapes her with a razor blade. When the child exited de Bonvoisin beat her. Directly after X1 gave birth she was raped and sodomized. Her daughter disappeared six weeks later. She only saw her [daughter] at the factory again (PV 118.872).”*[738]

Dutroux’s claim of “protecting” the girls he kidnapped and raped now can be seen in the twisted logic of a traumatized patsy.

He would also claim police officers were directly involved.

> *Speaking at his trial in the Belgian city of Arlon, Dutroux said that he had abducted 17 year old An Marchal and Eefje Lambreckx, 19, near*

> *to the port of Ostende. He said he was helped by sidekick, Michel Lelievere and two men who he later found out were police officers.*
>
> *He did not name the alleged police officers but said that one of them, along with Leievre, had raped one of the girls. ~ Expatica News*[739]

In late 1995, Dutroux was arrested for car theft. He spent only four months in jail.

During that time, the search for missing girls, particularly the two 8 year-olds (Julie Lejeune and Mélissa Russo) was finally directed at one of the Dutroux residences where the cries and screams of girls were said to be heard.

> *No-one has ever followed the Dutroux investigation more closely than Gino and Carine Russo, the parents of Melissa. ...*
>
> *... while Dutroux admits incarcerating their daughter in his home, he denies her kidnap, rape or murder. Dutroux even claims he tried in vain to save the girls and that Melissa died in his arms.*
>
> *The Russos have lived this nightmare ever since Melissa disappeared with her friend Julie in June 1995. Although Dutroux was a known paedophile, police didn't search his house for five months, and when they did they failed to find the girls, despite the sound of children in the cellar.*
>
> *When a parliamentary commission examined the series of failures in the Dutroux investigation the police officer responsible, René Michaux, claimed it was a genuine mistake, that the entrance to the dungeon was well hidden and that the children's voices seemed to come from outside. He found a speculum on the floor which he lifted, handled and returned to Dutroux's wife without forensic analysis.*
>
> *They found films which went undeveloped and videos which they didn't watch. Had they done so, they would have seen Dutroux building the dungeon. Instead Dutroux continued to abduct girls. ~ The Observer*[740]

Julie Lejeune and Mélissa Russo were eventually starved to death. Forensic evidence indicated that they had been continually raped through the period that Dutroux was in prison but authorities refuse to give any indication that they acknowledge more than Marc Dutroux and his then-wife Michele Martin as having been involved in their tragedy.

Police Officer René Michaux was an accomplice.

There were no negative repercussions for his actions.

The idea that he and fellow officers would be privy to clear evidence of kidnapping in the home of a convicted pedophile that went unheeded — such as video of both the construction of the hidden room and sex abuse of victims — is beyond mere “incompetence”. It is willful criminal abetting of the child sex slave trade. The L-shaped “hidden” cell where Dutroux kept the girls was added in to his Charleroi residence basement. Any trained investigator would’ve immediately noticed the layout in the basement didn’t match the over-all shape of the house.

Two months after his release, in May of 1996, 12-year-old Sabine Dardenne was kidnapped, ostensibly by Dutroux and drug addict accomplice Michel Lelièvre.

In August of 1996, 14-year-old Laetitia Delhez was kidnapped.

Both girls were placed in the “hidden cell” in Charleroi.

Fortunately for the girls, Laetitia Delhez was kidnapped in Neufchateau district. It, apparently, was presided over by a Magistrate intent on doing his job named Jean-Marc Connerotte.

Connerotte received information from an alert young man that helped him trace a white van possibly used by Dutroux in transporting victims. He quickly had Marc Dutroux and his wife Michele Martin arrested, followed a short time after by “business man” Michel Nihoul.

Once arrested, it was Marc Dutroux who lead the *Gendarmerie* to Sabine and Laetitia.

During his investigation, Connerotte actively sought testimony from victims (something none of his peers seemed interested in). A key witness that he found credible — despite the stories she told — was “X1” Regina Louf.

Two months later, Jean-Marc Connerotte was sacked because he had attended a party for Sabine and Laetitia: “conflict of interest”.

It is interesting that Connerotte’s parents named him after Gospel writer John Mark.

For many Belgians it was the last straw. Protests erupted nation-wide amongst a populace disgusted with clear corruption in the institutions they believed were entrusted to protect them.

They were met by Police water cannons and pepper spray.[741]

The “factory” Louf said was a locus for abuse of children has roots in the European military / industrial complex.

> *PV 116.253, November 30, 1996: “X1 recognizes two places where sacrifices of children have taken place during videotaped parties. ASCO factory. Axory Parcels firm. Sterrebeekstraat in Zaventem.” ...*
>
> *The factory in PV 118.872, December 18, 1996, is ASCO, the (former) arms company of the Boas family, who are close associates of Paul Vanden Boeynants. A lot of filming was done at this location.*[742]

History, About Us, ASCO

Although ASCO now claims to be “a world leader in the design and manufacture of high lift devices, complex mechanical assemblies and major functional components for the aerospace industry,” it was, indeed, created by the Boas family to complete military contracts.

Companies like Bell, Raytheon, Grumman and Lockheed-Martin have been named by victims such as Cathy O’Brien as being deeply involved in the torture and use of sex slaves.

This comports perfectly with our assertion that war is a needless endeavor inflicted upon an unwitting populace by Elite within the Devil’s Simulation. Where threats do not exist, they are manufactured and enabled. Contractors like ASCO reap the rewards, often via a thoroughly corrupt bidding process.

But the military / industrial complex is not the top of the Pedocracy pyramid. “X1” Regina Louf was sent to Catholic school where the nuns in administration were fully aware of what was being inflicted upon her.

> *In June 1979, Regina was allowed back to her parents in Gent. The reason was that Regina had told a friend, who usually walked home with her until they reached the grandmother’s villa, about the abuse. The parents of this girl then invited Regina to a birthday party where she retold her story. The result was that the girl’s parents, knowing Regina could never know all these details without having experienced them, informed the principal, a nun, of her school. Regina went to the*

> *directress and showed the bruises in her neck. The nun told Regina that she was "a fantasizer" and called up her grandmother. According to Regina, during the phone call the nun looked at her with a mischievous twinkle in her eyes, and ended the conversation by saying* ***"I feel sorry for you, such a granddaughter... that must not be easy."***[743]

In 2010, the former Cardinal Archbishop of Brussels — Godfried Danneels — was debriefed by authorities regarding the child-trafficking and abuse supposedly conducted by "lone pedophile" Marc Dutroux. In the Cardinal's possession were computer discs with graphic photographs of victims.[744]

The resulting spin was that the Cardinal was made privy to confidential Police files, but for what purpose?

At best, it was an example of the power of the Catholic Church, perhaps using an influential member of clergy to insure nothing that was to have been blamed on Marc Dutroux made its way back to the steps of St. Peter's Basilica.

At worst, it proved that the ultimate guardian to the Devil's Simulation is and has always been the Roman Catholic Church.

In 2012, Marc Dutroux's ex-wife Michele Martin (unreported as a Catholic) was released from her 2004 prison sentence into the custody of a nunnery.

> *Michelle Martin, the ex-wife and accomplice of the notorious Belgian paedophile killer Marc Dutroux has been granted a conditional release from prison to serve the rest of her sentence in a convent.*
>
> *She is expected to enter the sisters of Clare convent within days to serve the rest of her sentence "in prayer"... ~ The Telegraph*[745]

*****

Given the power of the Devil's Simulation, a re-examination of Marc Dutroux is in order. What has been called "The Dutroux Affair" or "The Dutroux Scandal" is as mislabeled as "The Franklin Cover-up".

The true monsters were — are — the police, judges, politicians, generals and, most of all, clergy, all feigning horror and disgust.

> *The AFP news agency said he told the court how Sabine Dardenne, then 12, and Laetitia Delhez, then 14, had believed Mr. Dutroux's story that he was protecting them from a gang of men who wanted to murder them.*
>
> *When the alleged murderer escorted police to the purpose-built dungeon in his house on 15 August 1996, the girls "didn't want to come out" and tried to hide, thinking their rescuers were members of the supposed gang, Mr. Connerotte said.*
>
> *"They thanked Dutroux. It was absolutely terrible. They kissed him. That shows how much he had conditioned them."* ~ BBC[746]

Did it?

Chapter 21

The ***Boys Town*** Cover-Up

14 November 1988: *The Federal Bureau of Investigation, the Internal Revenue Service and the United States National Credit Union Administration raid the Franklin Federal Credit Union in Omaha, Nebraska. All records are impounded and the General Manager — Lawrence E. King — is arrested for embezzlement.*

A Federal Credit Union is a government-subsidized bank with a target clientele, usually minorities or government employees.

On the surface, such a bank appears to be giving “the disadvantaged” a “helping hand” but the true purpose is to endear large populations to socialized governmental control.

In 1979, Lawrence King was made Chief Executive Officer of the Franklin Federal Credit Union, ostensibly to rescue it. At the time, he was a

Democrat, but by the inauguration of the Reagan / Bush administration, King had switched parties.

As a Republican black businessman, he was highly prized and sang the national anthem at the 1984 and 1988 Republican national conventions.

King was also a child sex slave trafficker and vicious sadist who had likely been earmarked for his role from the beginning.

The scandal would later be called “the Franklin Cover-up” based off the 1992 book of the same name. In ultimate “learning against learning” fashion, the title is, itself, a cover-up designed to distract from the epicenter of the scandal. That was the Roman Catholic orphanage known as “Boys Town”. The focus was deflected to be placed on scape goat Lawrence King and the Franklin Federal Credit Union.

Boys Town was founded in 1917 by Monsignor Edward Joseph Flanagan (1886 – 1948). Just as “scientist” Alfred Kinsey sent his pedophile “researchers” to prey upon America’s children while her men were being needlessly slaughtered in World War II, Father Flanagan started collecting orphans during the heat of America’s involvement in World War I.

Boys Town proves the power the Catholic Church has in “Protestant” America. It is an incorporated municipality, a Catholic diocese and a school district.

For a humble, “non-profit” religious endeavor of “charity”, Boys Town handled enormous sums of money. The “sinisterly un-aired” documentary on this subject, Yorkshire Television’s 1994 *Conspiracy of Silence* stated that Boys Town had cash reserves of *$500 million* but also raised up to $35 million annually. The “tell-all” documentary then explained these staggering 1993 numbers as the work of diligent priests and nuns sending “begging letters” and pushing “promotional videos”.

If there were “promotional videos” they weren’t anything American families would consider appropriate.

The *New York Times* admitted with copious amounts of spin and subterfuge — [Monsignor Robert Hupp] *assumed leadership in 1973 in the wake of a crisis after a Pulitzer Prize-winning report in* ***The Omaha Sun*** *that said*

Boys Town was amassing much more money than it was spending to take care of boys.

> *In 12 years as executive director, Monsignor Hupp responded by spending money on a new hospital, a new high school, far-flung research into the problems of youths and a new system of suburban-style houses presided over by married couples.*
>
> *The houses replaced traditional dormitories dating back to the days when Boys Town was thought of as an orphanage.*
>
> *He also put a positive spin on Boys Town's aggressive campaigns to raise money, usually one or two dollars at a time from people who did not have much to give, arguing that solvency was no sin.*[747]

"Begging letters" and "promotional videos" little explain these vast sums but trafficking in child sex slaves does.

Perhaps Rome just has good public relations.

After only 20 years of existence, Boys Town would receive the ultimate free advertising; a project from "Jewish-controlled" Hollywood.

In 1938, Metro-Goldwyn-Mayer gave the Catholic orphanage its own big-budget film starring Spencer Tracy and Mickey Rooney.

> *Once the largest, most glamorous, and most revered film studio, MGM was founded in 1924 when the entertainment entrepreneur Marcus Loew gained control of Metro Pictures, Goldwyn Pictures, and Louis B. Mayer Pictures. ~ Wikipedia*[748]

The movie *Boys Town* was nominated for 5 Oscars and Tracy won for "Best Actor". MGM Chief of Production Dore Schary (also a Jew) won for "Best Original Story".

"User-edited" *Wikipedia* attempts to explain why Hollywood Jews would put so much effort into spinning a happy yarn about how well the Catholic Church takes care of young boys — *Although the story is largely fictional, it is based upon a real man and a real place. ...*

> *Legendary MGM Studio head Louis B. Mayer, who was a Belorussian-Canadian-American Jew known for his respect for the Catholic Church, later called this his favorite film of his tenure at MGM.*[749]

If there is one entity above any other which has made the lives of Jews filled with misery, it is the Roman Catholic Church. In nations where the Church rules openly like Portugal and Spain, Jews were hounded and forced to convert to Catholicism. When it was perceived that they weren't practicing their new religion with enough zeal and sincerity, many were tortured and killed. Many more had their possessions confiscated and were forced to leave. They were even given a special name — *marranos*. If Jews were tolerated in Catholic society, it was with the stigma of special accoutrements such as a badge or armband.

Long before *Krystalnacht* ever took place, Popes like Lotario dei Conti di Segni — "Innocent III" — were requiring Jews to identify themselves with badges or armbands.[750],[cv] This is, in fact, where "German" Nazis got the idea.

How does one explain the dichotomy between the historic abuse and persecution the Catholic Church has given Jews and this inexplicable loyalty?

It is proof of the Roman tactic of scapegoating Jews. To the delight of their Inquisitors, Catholic power-brokers are able to manipulate their proxies into willing subservience by dangling positons of power and prominence over them.

Author, Author

The author of *The Franklin Cover-up* was Nebraska State Senator John DeCamp.

During the Vietnam War, DeCamp was the aide-de-camp to the CIA Station Chief in Saigon, William Egan Colby. What got DeCamp his job was the same qualification that got Colby his — they were both devout Roman Catholics.

DeCamp and Colby worked the American end of the purposeful debacle known as “Vietnam” to include lawless war crimes committed during the “Phoenix Project”[751] such as mass murder as well as trafficking in women, children and opium.

The Princeton and Columbia-educated Colby was so devout, in fact, he was known as “the Warrior Priest”.[752],[cvi]

DeCamp is equally in the Catholic camp; having spent his formative years as a young teenager at a monastery in Minnesota.[753] Whether he, too, was abused is currently unknown although he does claim to have spent time at Boys Town, as well.[754]

DeCamp was retained as legal counsel for the Director of Boys Town, Monsignor Robert Hupp, during the very years in question.[755] On the rare occasions where DeCamp is cleared to be interviewed by Roman puppets in “alternative media”, this conflict of interest is left unaddressed.

DeCamp was personally commissioned for his work as an agent of disinformation and “cover-up” by the Prefect of the Congregation for the Doctrine of the Faith (what was formerly the Inquisition), Cardinal Joseph Aloisius Ratzinger. DeCamp would see his friend again, after he became “Pope Benedict XVI”.[756]

Although *Conspiracy of Silence* paints Monsignor Robert Hupp as an unwitting victim of Lawrence King, the reverse is true. Hupp was fully aware of what was going on at Boys Town when he became its director in 1973. This included abuse of boys so severe one sadistic priest ended up murdering his victim.[757]

In an act of supreme perversion, President Gerald Ford (a former member of the Warren Commission) appointed Hupp a U.S. Government representative to the United Nations for the welfare of children.[758] The man who helped cover-up the broad-daylight slaughter of sitting President John F. Kennedy by the Vatican-controlled CIA would later appoint another accomplice to become Director of "Catholics In Action": George Herbert Walker Bush.

After victims were given to Lawrence King from Boys Town (girls were added to the orphanage in 1979) they were transported all over the country to be used and abused.

Reputed victims and whistleblowers like Paul Bonacci claimed they were taken from the redwoods of Bohemian Grove in California to the basement of the White House in Washington, D.C.

Under Sus-Spence

If mainstream media covered the issue, it was with the spin that the boys taken from jails, foster homes and orphanages like Boys Town were actually adult homosexual prostitutes. However, even the labels of "call boy" or "rent boy" implies they are under-age which is what the sexual deviants — most of them homosexuals — desire.

> *A homosexual prostitution ring is under investigation by federal and District authorities and includes among its clients key officials of the Reagan and Bush administrations, military officers, congressional aides and U.S. and foreign businessmen with close social ties to Washington's political elite, documents obtained by* ***The Washington Times*** *reveal.*
>
> *One of the ring's high profile clients was so well-connected, in fact, that he could arrange a middle-of-the-night tour of the While House for his friends on Sunday, July 3, of last year. Among the six persons on the extraordinary 1 a.m. tour were two male prostitutes. ~ The Washington Times*[759]

The list of those who patronized the "homosexual prostitutes" is impressive — *Among the client names contained in the vouchers — and identified by* *prostitutes and escort operators — are government officials, ... U.S. military officers, businessmen, lawyers, bankers, congressional aides, and other professionals. ...*

> *One of the ring's big-spending clients is Craig J. Spence, Washington socialite and international trade consultant, according to documents and interviews with operators and prostitutes who say they engaged in sexual activities with Mr. Spence.*
>
> *Mr. Spence spent upwards of $20,000 a month for male prostitutes who provided sex to him and his friends, said to include military personnel who also acted as his "body-guards." It was Mr. Spence who arranged the nocturnal tour of the Reagan White House. Repeated attempts to reach Mr. Spence by telephone, fax machine and personal visits to his home, were unsuccessful.*[760]

Perhaps Spence couldn't be reached because he was already in the process of "getting depressed". The former ABC correspondent-turned Asian lobbyist made the mistake of trying to play the CIA's game without the CIA.

> *Craig J. Spence, an enigmatic figure who threw glittery parties for key officials of the Reagan and Bush administrations, media stars and top military officers, bugged the gatherings to compromise guests, provided cocaine, blackmailed some associates and spent up to*

> *$20,000 a month on male prostitutes, according to friends, acquaintances and records.*
>
> *The 48-year-old D.C. power broker has been linked to a homosexual prostitution ring currently under investigation by the U.S. Attorney's Office. Its clients included several top government and business officials from Washington and abroad. ...*
>
> *Mr. Spence's influence appeared unlimited, aptly demonstrated by his ability to arrange midnight tours of the White House, according to three persons who said they took part in those tours.*
>
> *"It was a show-the-flag time for Craig Spence," said one person who went on a July 3, 1988, tour that included two male prostitutes. "He just wanted everyone to know just how damned powerful he was," said the person. "And when we were strolling through the White House at 1 o'clock in the morning, we were believers."*[761]

Those who attended Mr. Spence's "parties" were all of America's big names — many of them quite Catholic.

> *After arriving in Washington in the late 1970s, Mr. Spence was hosting parties during the early Reagan years attended by, among others, journalists Eric Sevareid, Ted Koppel and* ["Neocon[cvii]" Jew] *William Safire; former CIA Director William Casey* [Roman Catholic]*; the late John Mitchell, attorney general in the Nixon administration; conservative activist Phyllis Schlafly* [Roman Catholic Dame of Malta]*; Ambassador James Lilley* [Yale Skull and Bones CIA operative]*; and Gen. Alfred M. Gray* [extreme sexual deviant[762],[763]], *the commandant of the Marine Corps.*[764]

The location from which the Jesuits exert much of their control on Washington is Georgetown University and Craig Spence had a "friend" there, as well — but of course when the "friend" noticed Spence behaving oddly he broke off the "friendship" immediately!

> *Georgetown University law professor Richard Gordon said he was a close friend of Mr. Spence's until his "behavior began deteriorating quite markedly."*

> *Mr. Gordon recalled being at a gathering at Mr. Spence's home and having a conversation with veteran NBC and CBS correspondent Liz Trotta.*[765]

Apparently Spence made his Jesuit/CIA connections while helping spin Vietnam for ABC.

> *Mr. Spence, a former ABC-TV correspondent who covered the war in Vietnam, was one of the biggest spending clients of the homosexual prostitution network, according to credit-card vouchers obtained by **The Times**.*[766]

The control the Devil's Simulation has over editors and "journalists" is just as important as what it exerts over cops and judges. Yorkshire Television's *Conspiracy of Silence* claimed that the biggest name to come from the "Franklin" (Boys Town) scandal in media was *Omaha World-Herald* celebrity columnist Peter Citron.

Yet, the most reliable of the Franklin / Boys Town victim whistleblowers — Alisha Owen — named *World-Herald* Publisher Harold Andersen as a friend of Lawrence King and frequent raper of children.

Andersen wielded influence well beyond Omaha.

> *He was publisher and chief executive of the newspaper from 1966 until 1989. He also served high-profile roles for groups representing newspapers around the country and the world, including the American Newspaper Publishers Association and the World Press Freedom Committee. He also served on The Associated Press Board of Directors from 1980 to 1986. ~ The Journal Star*[767]

When repeated claims of abuse reached the Nebraska State Foster Care Review Board, a massive report was filed and turned in to law enforcement. Board Chair Carol Stitt[cviii] would tell Yorkshire Television the report was fully one foot high in documents.

Nothing was done.

The Nebraska Legislature stepped in and conducted its own investigation, retaining Private Investigator Gary Caradori. Caradori took personal statements from Paul Bonacci, Alisha Owen and another purported victim, Troy Boner.

Owen also named wealthy department-store heir Alan Baer and Omaha's Chief of Police, Robert C. Wadman as voracious child predators.[768] She would go on to claim in Nebraska State Court that Wadman had impregnated her during one of the many sex abuse sessions she was subjected to.

Like Lawrence King, Wadman was brought in from outside Omaha. He had skyrocketed from obscurity as the Utah Deputy Commissioner of Public Safety. When things got too hot for Wadman, he moved on to become the Chief of Police of Aurora, Illinois, a suburb of the Catholic stronghold of Chicago.

In July of 1990, Gary Caradori phoned his wife and told her that he had "big names" to turn in to the Nebraska State Senate. He piloted a Cessna airplane to Chicago, ostensibly so that he and his son could watch the Baseball All-Star game. Actually, Caradori was collecting evidence. During his return flight, early on the morning of July 11th, Carardori's plane exploded. His 8 year old son Andrew James ("A.J.") died with him. Both were found amongst the debris which, unfortunately for them, just happened to fall into the new jurisdiction of Chief Robert Wadman.[769]

Alisha Owen fared little better. By that time, the FBI had finally arrived in Omaha and immediately began applying pressure — not to any pedophiles, but to Alisha's fellow whistleblower Troy Boner. The FBI flipped Boner and got him to reverse statements he had made to government officials and Private Investigator Gary Caradori. Boner became a key witness in court, testifying that the accusations of child sex slave trafficking in Omaha were a "hoax" dreamed up by Owen for financial gain.

Still from Private Investigator Gary Caradori's recorded debrief of Omaha child sex trafficking victim Alisha Owen.

Lawrence King was arraigned for embezzling $38 million dollars from the Franklin Federal Credit Union. The FFCU had a very large number of accounts with the municipality of Boys Town — known as "the richest square mile in the world". Essentially, King was stealing from the Catholic Church and *that* was what brought the swift full force of the "secular" United States government down upon him.

Charges of child abuse and sex trafficking went unaddressed. He was given the minimum sentence of 15 years.

Alisha Owen's testimony was used against her. She was tried and convicted of five counts of perjury and given the maximum 5 year sentence on each for a cumulative 25 years in prison.

After her conviction, Owen received help in filing her appeal from a Nebraska lawyer — a former State Senator named John DeCamp.

Not surprisingly, her appeal was unsuccessful.[770]

Good Morning Vietnam!

Being a media propagandist during the Vietnam war[cix] helped Craig Spence tap into the drug trade which shifted from the Orient in the 1970’s to South America in the 1980’s.

> *Mr. Spence was generous with cocaine at his parties, according to several people who said they witnessed drug use at the exclusive Kalorama house. ...*
>
> *Several friends said Mr. Spence bragged that U.S. military personnel, for whom he had built a gymnasium in El Salvador, had smuggled cocaine back to him when they returned to the United States.*
>
> *“I heard he was selling drugs, or smuggling drugs into the country from El Salvador,” said a friend who worked closely with Mr. Spence. “He went down there two or three times or maybe more. He was trying to interest a Japanese firm with buying a fishery in El Salvador.” ~ Washington Times*[771]

Fortunately for Mr. Spence, the government agencies citizens have entrusted to interdict drug trafficking are as effective as the ones supposedly interdicting human trafficking.

> *U.S. Drug Enforcement Administration officials said this week they had no evidence of any such operation.*[772]

As “former” Roman Catholic Lieutenant Colonel Oliver North, USMC, would tell Yale Skull and Bones Roman Catholic John Forbes Kerry for his Senate “investigation” of “Iran/Contra”, “I don’t recall...”

Although Spence was painted as erratic and making wild, unsubstantiated boasts, he clearly wielded power.

> *Mr. Spence made good contacts in Japan and among Chinese expatriates, often bragging of his close association with former Japanese Prime Minister Yasuhiro Nakasone and appearing in public with a Chinese businessman who once served as an unofficial representative of Communist China in Washington, sources said.*[773]

The *Washington Times* quoted an unnamed “businessman” as having heard Spence claim he was a “secret agent”. This was spun as just another wild boast, much like what Father Marcial Maciel told his son Raul, right before he raped him.

> *He described Mr. Spence as “strange,” saying that he often boasted that he was working for the CIA and on one occasion said he was going to disappear for a while “because he had an important CIA assignment.”*
>
> *According to the businessman, Mr. Spence told him that the CIA might “double-cross him,” however, and kill him instead “and then to make it look like a suicide.”*
>
> *The businessman also said he attended a birthday bash for Roy Cohn at Mr. Spence’s house. He said Mr. Casey was at the party. “One time he stormed into another party with a big, white hat and an entourage of security guards,” the businessman said. “It was all rather bizarre.”*[774]

Finally in 1989, it was decided to rein Mr. Spence in.

> *Craig J. Spence, a Washington lobbyist who is a subject of a Federal investigation of male prostitution in Washington, is facing cocaine and gun possession charges in New York, the Manhattan District Attorney’s office said yesterday.*
>
> *Mr. Spence, 48 years old, was arrested July 31 at the Barbizon Hotel at 140 East 63d Street in Manhattan. ~ NY Times*[775]

Three months later, *to the day,* Craig J. Spence was dead.

> *Craig Spence, a lobbyist linked to a homosexual escort service under Federal investigation, was found dead in a hotel room here, the police said today.*
>
> *Mr. Spence, 49 years old, was found in the Ritz-Carlton Hotel on Friday after firefighters used a saw to cut open his door, which was barricaded with a bed. Leonard Atkins, the Suffolk County Medical Examiner, said that an autopsy had been completed but that it might be weeks before a cause of death was announced. ~ NY Times*/AP[776]

Apparently his claims of a suicide double-cross weren’t so “bizarre” after all.

Chapter 22

Muddy Waters In Arkansas

5 May 1993: *West Memphis, Arkansas boys Steve Branch, Michael Moore, and Christopher Byers — all three are 8 years old — are reported missing. At 1:45 pm the next day, their bodies were found in a drainage canal in Robin Hood Hills. They were naked and hog-tied. The genitals of Christopher Byers had been mutilated.*

Suspicions were immediately cast upon three disaffected teenagers; Charles Jason Baldwin (16, at that time), Jessie Lloyd Misskelley Jr. (17) and Michael Wayne “Damien” Echols (18,).

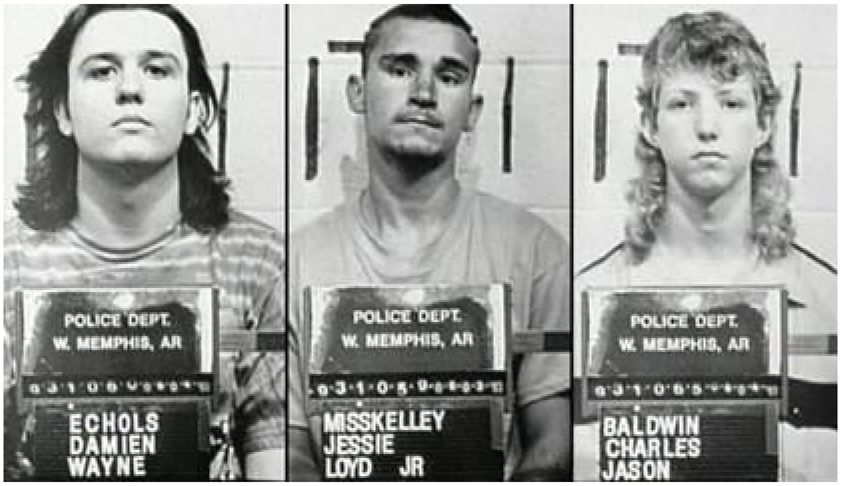
POLICE DEPT.
W. MEMPHIS, AR
ECHOLS
DAMIEN
WAYNE
POLICE DEPT.
W. MEMPHIS, AR
MISSKELLEY
JESSIE
LOYD JR
POLICE DEPT.
W. MEMPHIS, AR
BALDWIN
CHARLES
JASON

Baldwin was a loner in school, Misskelley and Echols were drop-outs.

All three had reputations for vandalism and bizarre behavior typical of youth seeking attention.

Of the three, Misskelley seemed the least intellectually capable. In fact, some questioned his ability to function as a consenting adult. It was he who ended up giving police a confession that the boys had been raped and mutilated by the teenagers as part of a satanic ritual.

Evidence of sexual molestation (beyond the mutilation of young Christopher Byers) remained mostly unaddressed, despite all three having a “dilated anus”. This was later dismissed as typical post mortem.

The genitals of Steven Branch showed signs of forced stimulation and the anus of James Moore had dirt and debris.[777],[778],[779]

The medical examiners claimed very specifically on each boy’s rectum: “no evidence of injury”. Yet “injury” does not preclude sexual abuse. In fact, the conditions of each boy — naked with wrists tied to ankles, left to left, right to right — made the question of abuse nearly a foregone conclusion.

In 1993, DNA profiling had been in use for almost a decade, yet it was not brought into play to help identify who molested the boys.

Although there were multiple contusions and abrasions on all three boys, there was little blood where the bodies were found. Likely what was done to them took place in another location.

FBI “profiler” John Douglas was consulted and Douglas concluded that the motive wasn’t perverse ritual such as “Satanism” but personal animus.[780] What three 8 year-old boys did to cause someone to hate them so, the Federal “profiler” didn’t say.

Also of note; all three victims were from the same Cub Scout Troop. Was the perpetrator also involved and did they use this connection to target the boys?

Apparently, neither law enforcement nor media felt these were pertinent questions.

What was sadly consistent with both the victims and suspects was that all were part of poor, broken families. The victims were little-supervised and the suspects were little-loved.

Because Jessie Misskelley gave evidence against Charles Baldwin and Michael “Damien” Echols, he received a separate trial.

> *On February 5, 1994, Misskelley was convicted by a jury of one count of first-degree murder and two counts of second-degree murder.*[31]

> *The court sentenced him to life plus 40 years in prison.[32] His conviction was appealed, but the Arkansas Supreme Court affirmed the conviction.[33] ~ Wikipedia*[781]

Echols was treated as the ring-leader and seemed happy to incriminate himself during interrogation. He had knowledge of Steve Branch and (James) Michael Moore being drowned as well as the mutilation of Christopher Byers. Defense argued that police or media exposed Echols to those facts and he was manipulated into divulging them as evidence of "guilt".

Both Baldwin and Echols were found guilty of murder in the first degree, three counts. Christopher Baldwin was sentenced to life in prison, Michael "Damien" Echols was sentenced to death.

Two years after the trial, HBO sent "documentarians" Joe Berlinger and Bruce Sinofsky to West Memphis. The two were fresh off their victory of having Delbert Ward acquitted of the death of his brother William in Syracuse, New York with their documentary *Brother's Keeper*.

One wonders at the capability of lawyers and police officers when such is necessary yet, sadly, still plausible.

However, their corresponding documentary in Arkansas — *Paradise Lost: The Child Murders at Robin Hood Hills* — answered few questions. By admission of the "documentarians", this was on purpose.

> *"We embrace ambiguity, not because we want to confuse people but because, unless you're an eyewitness to an event, there's no one answer to a situation," Berlinger says.*
>
> *Disturbing facts about the defendants — such as Echols' blasé attitude toward his defense and his professing to like being known as a "bogeyman" — coexist with stories of lazy police work that suggest other possible suspects may have gone unnoticed. ~ Chicago Tribune*[782]

What was noteworthy was that the film crew was given a "memento" from (John) Mark Byers, the adoptive father of Christopher Byers: a folding knife. When the crew realized the knife had blood on it, they sent it to the West Memphis Police.

All three boys had received lacerations and Christopher was mutilated with a knife.

The blood tested human — O+. Both Byers and, by coincidence, his adopted son had O+ blood.

Mark Byers and his wife Melissa (Christopher’s biological mother) had been in trouble with the law. In 1994, they were arrested for stealing $20,000 of antiques from a neighbor’s house and trying to sell them at a pawn shop. When Byers happened upon a fight between two boys, he forced them to finish with his knife while he held them at gunpoint. One boy required hospitalization.

During their interviews by HBO, the Byers were the most vocal in their hatred for the three suspects.

While the court appearance for their burglary was still pending in 1996, Melissa Byers died “mysteriously”. Paramedics were dispatched to their home in Cherokee, Arkansas to find her naked, on her bed with her arms at her sides, unresponsive.

When she was pronounced dead at the hospital, Sharp County Sheriff Sonny Powell called Arkansas State Police Investigator Stan Witt to report it as suspicious.

> *...her urine was abnormal. It tested positive for marijuana and for hydromorphone, the synthetic narcotic more commonly known as Dilaudid. Melissa Byers did not have a prescription for Dilaudid. On the street, it sells as much as $50 per tablet. The drug is a potent opiate. It can slow breathing, heart rate, and brain activity. What was strange was that, while the drug showed up in Melissa Byers’ urine, suggesting recent use, it was not found in her blood, which would be expected of a lethal agent. Moreover, that anomaly in the body was matched by an anomaly in the report.*
>
> *Through what Jim Clark, the director of the crime lab, recently described as a “typographical error,” no mention of the finding of*

> *Dilaudid appeared in the autopsy report's conclusions. Instead, on the report's final page, the word "hydromorphone," or Dilaudid, appeared as "hydrocodone," which is another drug entirely. Nor was the Dilaudid mentioned on the page listing the medical examiner's findings.*
>
> *Asked if the discovery of an illegal drug in the body of a possible homicide victim was not a finding worth listing, Clark affirmed that, "There may be room for some further investigation as to how she obtained the drug." As for the needle marks in the body's arms, feet, and groin, Clark said, "In the pathologist's opinion, all those wounds were probably done at the hospital."*
>
> *When Witt received the report, it offered no indication that Byers' death might be connected to illegal drug activity. Instead, he had the crime lab's vague conclusion that, "because of the lack of definitive anatomic or toxicological findings, the cause and manner of death are left undetermined." ~ The Arkansas Times*[783]

Even more curious was the prosecution of Byers' problems with the law.

> *On Aug. 28, 1995, he entered into a plea agreement negotiated by his attorney and Stewart Lambert, a deputy prosecutor for the Third Judicial District. According to the negotiated plea, Byers was to pay $20,000 to the woman whose house was burglarized, make restitution to the father of the boy who was injured in the fight, and pay a $250 fine.*
>
> *An additional part of the agreement was that Byers would leave the Third Judicial District, which is made up of Sharp, Lawrence, Randolph, and Jackson counties and not come back to them, or to Fulton County either.*
>
> *Lambert, the prosecutor, said he entered the plea agreement with Byers because a key witness in the burglary case was a minor whose mother was reluctant to have him testify, making a successful prosecution difficult. As for ordering Byers out of the district, Lambert said, such an arrangement can be legal if done with the agreement of the party*

> *being banished. Byers accepted those terms, but has not made the required payments.*[784]

“Make restitution and get out of town”?

Byers has been presented as a “low-income, backwoods ‘bumpkin’”. Where did he get the $20,250?

If there were strange powers at work in Arkansas they seemed to belong more to Mark Byers than “Damien” Echols.

Byers had by far the most motive and the crime fit him best as perpetrator. His adopted son received the worst treatment, just as the innocent “rival” of another man’s seed would have.

To this day, Mark Byers remains even to be questioned as a suspect.

As a result of the HBO documentary *Paradise Lost*, the “West Memphis Three” gained national prominence and became the *cause célèbre* of the entertainment industry — a clique of people not known for their judgment, morals or ethics.

Michael Wayne Echols bore the brunt of police investigation as the leader of the three suspects. He was the best witness for the prosecution against himself. He reveled in darkness, satanism and witchcraft and cultivated the persona of a “boogeyman”. His nonplussed behavior through proceedings that would ultimately send him to Death Row added to the perception that he was guilty.

> *Damien’s dress and behavior, his interest in the occult and Wicca, and his love for heavy metal represented to many in the community iconic symbols of the devil. These beliefs are hardly relegated to West Memphis. Recent polls from Gallup and Harris have found six in ten adult Americans believe in the existence of the devil and four in ten believe in demonic possession. Damien played to these fears. He would later described himself as a candidate for the local boogeyman. ...*
>
> *Even his name became a matter of controversy, with some believing Damien chose his name after the antichrist character in the Omen films.* ~ Hill[785]

Conversely, Echols enjoyed the most support from notables in “entertainment”. The personalities included Eddie Vedder of “Pearl Jam” — a name which has been suspected of having sexual overtones but has been assured as an *homáge* to professional basketball player Daron Oshay “Mookie” Blaylock. Apparently, Mookie meant a lot to the band.

Also in support of the would-be Wiccan was Natalie Maines of “the Dixie Chicks”, artists Patti Smith, Henry Rollins and Tom Waits as well as John Michael “Ozzy” Osbourne, formerly of the aptly-named band “Black Sabbath”. It was Osbourne who, in 1980, released his own *homáge* to the self-described “Beast” Aleister Crowley with a song of the same name: “Mr. Crowley”.

Hollywood would not be left behind and famed New Zealand film Director / Producer Peter Jackson felt the plight of “Damien” and his friends was something that couldn’t let him sleep at night.

Jackson is best known for the 6 movie effort he has put in for John Ronald Reuel Tolkien’s Roman Catholic fantasies; *The Lord of the Rings*. In 2012, Jackson released another film, *West of Memphis*, adding to the new legend of Damien Echols.

The pressure worked.

DNA evidence was re-found — not to help conclude who abused and murdered the three 8 year old boys — but to help exonerate the “West Memphis Three”.

In 2010, the Arkansas Supreme Court ordered a hearing to review the “new” evidence.

Prosecutors, however, didn’t want to let it get that far and negotiated an “Alford plea” with the three. An “Alford plea” asserts the innocence of the accused while simultaneously acknowledging that the evidence in the possession of the prosecution would likely convict them.

Yes, you read that right.

It’s known as a “legal loophole” for a Prosecution that isn’t interested in its responsibilities.

In 2011, all three were given their freedom.

When Echols was released from prison, he was met by one of his greatest fans, actor Johnny Depp.

With his new freedom, “Damien” took his wife to live in a location he felt best suited who he was; Salem, Massachusetts.

> *Echols now lives in a historic 18th century home with his wife, Lorri Davis, 49, whom he met and married while on death row. Davis first reached out to Echols after she saw a documentary about the case. They married in a Buddhist ceremony in a prison visiting room in 1999. It was the first time the two had ever touched. ~ USA Today*[786]

Clearly, there was something that attracted the Elite to “Damien” Echols. Were it not for him, there would have been no attention lavished on West Memphis, Arkansas and suspects Jessie Misskelley and Jason Baldwin would’ve languished in prison.

What was it?

> *Born Michael Wayne Hutchison on December 11, 1974, he changed his name to Damien Wayne Echols in his early teens after being adopted by his stepfather Jack Echols, a strict Catholic. He stated at trial he chose the name Damien because he had for a brief period explored Catholicism, and he was fascinated by the saint, Father Damien, who had worked with lepers, eventually becoming infected with the disease. This was confirmed by his father and by his* [parole officer] *Jerry Driver. Driver, a member of the parish, said he spoke with Damien’s priest, although Driver intimated that Damien’s only interest in the Catholic church was to infiltrate it in order to steal the eucharist for satanic ceremonies.* ~ Hill[787]

Even “Damien’s” parole officer was a devout Roman Catholic; so much so that he sought to distance the convicted Death Row inmate from the “Mother Church”.

The idea that Michael Wayne Echols chose the nickname “Damien” from an obscure Catholic “Saint” is as ridiculous as it is telling.

Yet, even the attempts by Echols to fabricate a dark mystique has thoroughly Roman roots.

The 1976 horror movie by Jew Richard Donald Schwartzberg ("Richard Donner") *The Omen* was yet another big-budget Hollywood film that gave cover for the Vatican. It reinforced the Jesuit Biblical heresy and subterfuge that "Antichrist" is a single individual who suddenly appears verses the Protestant (and Biblical) doctrine that Antichrist is the Office of the Papacy.

> *...it is manifest that the Roman pontiffs, with their adherents, defend [and practice] godless doctrines and godless services. And the marks [all the vices] of Antichrist plainly agree with the kingdom of the Pope and his adherents. For Paul, in describing Antichrist to the Thessalonians, calls him II Thess. 2:3 —* ***an adversary of Christ, who opposes and exalts himself above all that is called God or that is worshiped, so that he as God sits in the Temple of God.*** *He speaks therefore of one ruling in the Church, not of heathen kings, and he calls this one the adversary of Christ, because he will devise doctrine conflicting with the Gospel, and will assume to himself divine authority. ~ Concordia,* Philip Melanchthon[788]

Three years before, in 1973, *The Exorcist* showed the world how difficult it was for Catholic priests to "tame" little "demon-possessed" girls. It was created by Jesuit school valedictorian[789] William Peter Blatty. The success raised Blatty to an "instant millionaire". For such a devoted Catholic,[790] Blatty's Lebanese / Greek background made him an interesting mix. He called his time under the Jesuits at Georgetown "the best years of my life".[791] Blatty made Father William J. O'Malley, S.J., a technical advisor for the film.[792] In return, the McQuaid High, Fordham Prep teacher got the role of Jesuit Father Joseph Dyer to play.

Warner Brothers and Blatty offered Direction of the film to Stanley Kubrick but it eventually went to William Friedkin of *French Connection* fame. Both were / are Jews.

— Because it's "the Jews" who run Hollywood, right?

Although much has been made of “Damien” Echols being a “Buddhist” or a Wiccan, while he was still in prison, benefitting from massive media attention (unlike his comrades), Catholicism was on his mind.

> ***CNN: Larry King Live***
>
> *KING: We are back with Damien Echols. By the way, we understand you are supported by many people. Among them, Natalie Maines of the Dixie Chicks and Eddie Vedder of Pearl Jam, is that right?*
>
> *ECHOLS: That is correct.*
>
> *KING: Have they been to see you?*
>
> *ECHOLS: Eddie has. He has been to see me a couple of times. We talk on the phone, write, things of that nature. He keeps a — he has been — Eddie has went above and beyond the call of duty to me and my wife both. You know, he has been probably the greatest friend a person could have through all of this.*
>
> *KING: Do you have strong spiritual beliefs?*
>
> *ECHOLS: I think I do. But it is pretty hard to articulate exactly what that is.*
>
> *KING: What keeps you going all day?*
>
> *ECHOLS: My wife. My wife and I guess you could also say those spiritual beliefs.*
>
> *KING: You are a Catholic?*
>
> *ECHOLS: I’m a member of the Catholic Church, yes.*[793]

As far as Echols being on Death Row, “Eddie” blames his plight on “religious fundamentalist Christianity” — as well as animal cruelty and restrictions on abortion.

> *These days, the singer pours his anger into political campaigning. He insists that unlike the Dixie Chicks, Pearl Jam didn’t lose fans after criticising the Bush administration, though they “didn’t win any either”. He’s still furious about the last presidency. “Those fucking*

> *bastards, they put us in this situation and screw up the whole fucking planet and goodwill with every other nation, and they are not going to be held criminally responsible."*
>
> *Above him in the HQ there's a portrait of Obama. Vedder concedes that things are changing, but there's so much that hasn't: "People on death row, the treatment of animals, women's right to choose. So much in America is based on religious fundamentalist Christianity. Grow up! This is the modern world!"*
>
> *He sounds more like an angry kid than a middle-aged man. He sounds as contrary as one, too. ~ The Guardian*[794]

It is a schizophrenic application of compassion, to say the least, but one all-too-common for "mentally-challenged" entertainment Elites.

Interesting that both "Pearl Jam" and "The Dixie Chicks" stand with Damien Echols yet against George W. Bush, despite the Bush family Nazi, CIA, secret Roman Catholic lineage (or, rather, because of it).

As Eddie Vedder, Natalie Maines, Peter Jackson and Johnny Depp all surrounded their hero, "Damien" Echols, the contorted bodies of three little boys got lost in the media hype. Also lost and forgotten was the fact that no one had been punished for the horrible things done to them.

Just as intended, all that has come out of West Memphis, Arkansas since then have been muddy waters.

Chapter 23

Primæ Noctis

27 May 1993: *Father Gerald Ridsdale, accompanied by Bishop George Pell, appears in Melbourne Magistrates Court for molesting 8 boys — Ridsdale is given a 3 month sentence.*

Because pedophilia is a crime that shames its victims, accurate statistics are impossible to keep.

Because the Devil’s Simulation has emplaced its members in key positions within media, law enforcement, politics and the judiciary (not to mention military and intelligence), when numbers are finally discussed, they are always far short of reality.

Therefore, when *al Jazeera* reports that Australia’s “Royal Commission into Institutional Responses to Child Sexual Abuse” has chronicled —

> *... 4,444 alleged incidents of sexual abuse by Catholic priests between 1980 and 2015.*
>
> *The inquiry also heard that 1,265 priests and religious brothers and nuns had been accused during a 60-year period ending 2010.*[795]

— we can assume those numbers are even worse than they appear ... far worse.

The “Commission” also heard the patented claim that only 6-to-7% of clergy abuse children.

The number of victims, alone, makes this assertion ludicrous.

If one factors in the number of clergy who are privy to the crimes yet refuse to report them to authorities, that number gets inverted: 93-to-94% of Roman Catholic clergy are aware of, or involved in criminal activity. Those who don’t directly participate collude with the perpetrators and shield them from future victims and authorities.

The very fact that a “Commission” or “Committee” or “Board” of politicians has been called to deal with a problem that isn’t its purview (unless the lengthy process of legislation is involved) shows that the system is corrupt.

If a country is suffering from a wave of heinous crime instituted by a foreign entity, the bodies most effective for dealing with them are the judiciary, law enforcement at all levels and even the military.

Those same foreign agents have, until now, misused the military to do the job of law enforcement and acclimated the citizenry to a Police State. But imagine the military being used to address pedophilia committed by the Catholic Church — a sovereign political body — against the people of any nation suffering from it.

Now apply the twisted rules those same foreign agents have used to fabricate needless wars towards one that is needed. An invasion of Italy — with or without that government’s permission — culminating in seizure of all Vatican personnel and property.

Thanks to the many crimes of Vatican agents in the West, it is not without precedent!

In consequence of uncalled-for militarization of all major nations and Western ones, in particular, the forces needed are already prepositioned.

Of those Western nations, Australia, in particular, seems well-controlled by the Vatican and her Jesuit special forces.

The 28th and, at this writing, current Prime Minister is Anthony John "Tony" Abbott; a Jesuit-trained Roman Catholic. His *alma mater*, St. Ignatius College, was reported in 2015 as having the Rector of the school — Stanislaus Hogan — arrested because police found an unbelievable one thousand, five hundred images on his computer of children being sexually abused.[796]

> *The Prime Minister and Agriculture Minister Barnaby Joyce attended Riverview, Education Minister Christopher Pyne attended St. Ignatius and Joe Hockey* [Australian Ambassador to the United States] *is an Old Aloysian. ...*
>
> *During Hogan's 50 years as a priest, he served in all four Australian Jesuit schools, including Riverview and St. Aloysius in Sydney, and Xavier College in Melbourne. the Prime Minister and Agriculture Minister Barnaby Joyce attended Riverview, Education Minister Christopher Pyne attended St. Ignatius and Joe Hockey is an Old Aloysian.*
>
> *South Australian District Court judge Peter Brebner yesterday said some of the images Hogan had downloaded were among the worst types of child pornography, including photos of semi-naked or naked boys aged between 12 and 16 tied to a bed or being subjected to bondage, and of children engaged in fellatio and penetrative abuse. ...*
>
> *The court heard Hogan had been collecting the books and magazines since the 1970s... ~ The Australian*[797]

What wasn't addressed by the media or law enforcement were the venues from which the well-placed, senior Jesuit was able to amass such a shocking amount of illegal materials.

The chief executive office of any nation is usually held by a puppet who has little will or agenda of their own. If they do, and that agenda does not comport with the Devil's Simulation, they receive the "Kennedy treatment".

As a result, looking for Roman “breadcrumbs” in high-profile positions isn’t as important as finding them in key offices that receive little media attention.

Even so, a quick look at who have been Australia’s Prime Ministers is telling. Here are just the last few years’ worth —

- “Tony” Abbott: Jesuit-trained Roman Catholic.
- Julia Gillard: Australia’s first woman Prime Minister, turned her back on her Baptist upbringing to become an “atheist”.[798]
- Kevin Rudd: Marist College, Ashgrove
- John Howard: far-Left “Rhodes Scholar”
- Paul Keating: LaSalle, Bankstown
- Malcolm Fraser: Magdalen College, Oxford[cx]

The list is extensive and repetitive; far-Left, Jesuit-trained Catholics or both. All faithfully serve the Devil’s Simulation.

Of course not every Roman Catholic is willing to commit treason, or worse, in order to maintain allegiance with the Vatican but nearly all in prominent positions were emplaced there because they are.

Ridsdale & Pell

The story of Gerald Francis[cxi] Ridsdale is the same as pedophile priests before and since.

The victims’ advocacy group, Broken Rites Australia, appears more intent on exposing Ridsdale and Pell than “mainstream” media.[cxii]

> *... the Catholic Church harboured ... child-abuse criminal — Father Gerald Francis Ridsdale — for 30 years in western Victoria while his superiors and fellow-priests remained ... . In 1982, when Father Ridsdale had been abusing children for 20 years, a clergy committee (of which Father George Pell was a member) noted that Ridsdale was being transferred away from Victoria. Eventually, some of Ridsdale’s victims began to report his crimes to the Victoria Police, instead of*

> *merely to the offending organisation (the church). So, in 1993, Victorian detectives charged Ridsdale in court. He was accompanied to court by his support person, George Pell, who had become an assistant bishop in Melbourne. However, no bishop accompanied the victims. Encouraged by Broken Rites, more victims later spoke to the detectives. In his four court cases between 1993 and 2014, Ridsdale has been jailed for a minimum of 24 years for assaulting 54 of his victims. In 2017, after eleven more of his victims spoke to the detectives, Ridsdale is facing court again, on a fifth batch of charges, including rape, buggery and indecent assault.*[799]

Gerald Ridsdale and George Pell, as well as their families, have always been close since their up-bringing in the "very Catholic" city of Ballarat, Victoria. Ridsdale began priestly duties in 1961 while Pell continued to study abroad, returning to join him a decade later. They even shared a Ballarat house for a year in 1973.

Like so many other predator priests, Ridsdale began to abuse and assault children even before his ordination — as if it was his calling.

> *According to church documents, Ridsdale offended against children during his seminary training in the late 1950s and again immediately after he was ordained in 1961. Bishop James O'Collins's office learned in 1961 that Ridsdale was abusing a boy in Ballarat. Nevertheless, the church (under Bishop Mulkearns) continued using Ridsdale as a priest, putting more children at risk. The diocese shifted the Ridsdale problem from parish to parish but it never warned parishioners that their children were in danger. ...*
>
> *Ridsdale has admitted that, even while working in his very his first parish, he was already abusing children. The earliest of his charged offences was for an incident in late 1961, a few months after his ordination. This victim ("Gilbert") was from Camperdown, in Victoria's south-west. The court was told that Gilbert's father was hospitalised and Ridsdale was "minding" the boy. ...*
>
> *In some parishes, Ridsdale lasted only months or weeks. Early in his posting at the Inglewood parish (in north-central Victoria) in 1975, he*

> *fled from this town overnight after some victims reported his crimes to the police, and he had to ask the bishop for a new posting. Ridsdale's sudden disappearance from Inglewood was obvious to his fellow priests in western Victoria.*
>
> *In the 1980s and early 1990s, Ridsdale was evacuated from the Ballarat diocese — to spend "time-out" in Melbourne, Sydney and the United States, to get him away from his further troubles in western Victoria. This "time-off", especially his overseas trip, was common knowledge among his Victorian colleagues. Priests were always interested to learn that another priest was getting an interstate or overseas trip.*
>
> *Ridsdale also committed crimes in New South Wales and the United States. He has not yet been brought to justice in those jurisdictions.*
>
> *His interstate and overseas stints were interspersed with more postings in the Ballarat diocese, all of which ended in more crimes.*
>
> *Ridsdale was still protected by the church's code of silence. One family says that when they complained to a senior cleric (Monsignor Leo Fiscalini) about Ridsdale committing buggery on their son, the monsignor urged the family to remain silent "for the church's sake".* [800]

Simultaneously, George Pell was going places.

> *Meanwhile, Father George Pell's career boomed. He moved to Melbourne, where he was the rector of Victoria's Corpus Christi seminary (in 1985-87) before becoming one of Melbourne's four auxiliary bishops (in 1987). As a Melbourne auxiliary bishop, Pell was no longer associated with the Ballarat diocese but was responsible for overseeing Melbourne's southern suburbs.*[801]

After 30 years of abusing children, Ridsdale's crimes were finally allowed to catch up to him.

The full details and numbers will never be known.

> *By Ridsdale’s fourth sentencing, in April 2014, his convictions involved a total of 54 children (mostly boys, plus several girls), aged between six and 16, who were sexually assaulted between 1961 and 1987. These are not Ridsdale’s only victims — they are merely those who eventually took advantage of the opportunity to talk with detectives from the Victoria Police and whose cases were included in Ridsdale’s pleas of guilty.*
>
> *Although the first of these convictions was for a crime committed in 1961, this does not mean that Ridsdale waited until 1961 before becoming a danger to children. The significance of “1961” is that this is about the time he was ordained as a Catholic priest, and this status gave him easy access to (and authority over) children. It remains to be seen what he was doing with children before he was ordained.*
>
> *Only a few of Ridsdale’s victims have contacted the police. Other Ridsdale victims (mostly boys, but also a few girls) have contacted* **Broken Rites** *or psychiatrists or solicitors or (unwisely) the Catholic Church without contacting the police.*
>
> *Countless more victims still remain silent. The total number of Ridsdale victims may amount to hundreds.*
>
> *Many Ridsdale victims still remain silent because they do not want to upset their “loyal Catholic” parents.*
>
> *Others feel embarrassed about contacting the detectives. Some of the victims in Ridsdale’s later court appearances said that this embarrassment was why they had waited so long.*[802]

Also, like his predator priest peers, Ridsdale conflated “sacred” with profane and seemed to find a religious aspect to his crimes; as if he was serving a spiritual entity in robing the innocence of children.

> *Gerald Ridsdale’s victims were sexually abused inside the church, in the presbytery (the parish house), in the priest’s car, in victims’ homes, at the home of Ridsdale’s parents in the city of Ballarat, during outings, and on holidays with the priest. He molested one boy and his sister a few hours after their father’s funeral.*

> *Some of the offences occurred during the sacrament of Confession — while Ridsdale would be asking questions about a child's "sins". After Confession (and after the molestation), Ridsdale would perform the rite of Absolution — an official declaration that the child was forgiven for the child's "sins".*
>
> *Many offences occurred before and after the celebration of Mass, First Holy Communions, Confirmation ceremonies, weddings and funerals. Many of the victims were altar boys.*
>
> *One altar boy was even sexually abused at the altar, when the church was empty and locked after Mass.*[803]

The pain of victims was also as it had been in other locations; needlessly exacerbated by the dedication of friends and family to the Catholic Church.

> *Many victims found it difficult to tell their Catholic parents that a Catholic priest was a child-molester. Some parents defended Ridsdale and the church, thus alienating their own children. Some victims remained silent, knowing that their "devout" family would not believe them. All this disrupted the relationship between victims and their parents.*[804]

Ridsdale's predations — like the crimes of his peers — were far more than physical; they left psychological scars that sometimes never healed.

> *For many Ridsdale victims, this was their first "sexual" experience. And this first experience was with a Catholic priest! This had adverse effects on the sexual development of victims, some of whom ended up with sexual problems.*[805]

Like his peers, no victim was off-limits.

> *One victim in the late 1970s was "Shane", an altar boy, who lived at in Ridsdale's earlier parish of Apollo Bay. Ridsdale had sexually abused him frequently while at Apollo Bay. Soon after Ridsdale was appointed to Edenhope, the priest heard that Shane's father died in an accident. Ridsdale returned to the Apollo Bay district to conduct the father's funeral and then offered to take Shane (aged 12) and his sister*

> *“Jill” (aged 11) to the Edenhope presbytery. The children’s mother gratefully accepted the offer. Back at Edenhope, on the night of the funeral, Ridsdale indecently mauled the girl and later the boy — while they were still grieving their father’s death. Jill told police in 1994 that, about 1990, she informed a female counsellor at the Catholic Family Welfare Bureau in Geelong about these assaults but the counsellor did not suggest reporting the priest to the police. Jill said she was surprised and angry about this omission.*[806]

Like other pedophile priests, Gerald Ridsdale seemed satanically-possessed to violate the most innocent of children who showed no outward signs of sexual maturity. Some of his victims were as young as 4 years old.[cxiii]

Ridsdale’s nephew, David, would be such a child whose pain and confusion would destroy his sexual identity.

As more victims began to point their anger at the refusal of Australian agencies to carry out their responsibilities to protect and defend the citizenry against any malignant foreign insurgency (for such is Roman Catholicism), the national government acted: it instituted a “commission”.

In 2015, David Ridsdale gave an emotional testimony to the “Royal Commission into Institutional Responses to Child Sexual Abuse”.[807]

David wisely began at the beginning of his troubles —

> *I grew up one of nine children in a large Catholic family in Ballarat. Both my parents are from large families and there are around 50 grandchildren on my father’s side of the family.*
>
> *The religion of my parents was an all invasive force in our lives with every aspect centred on the Catholic community. My mother was secretary of St. Alipius Parish School and was involved in the school for over 50 years. My parents remain committed members of St. Alipius Parish. My grandparents lived opposite the Redan Church and my grandmother was like a mother to all the priests who resided there. ...*
>
> *My uncle (my father’s oldest brother) Gerald Ridsdale, was a Catholic priest in the Diocese of Ballarat. Gerald was treated like a shining*

> *light on my father's side of the family, particularly by my dad's mum. I believe he represented the pinnacle of her Catholic achievement.*
>
> *As a priest, Gerald held an almost supernatural level of power in our family and exerted a great deal of control over the family. He was treated as being better than his siblings and took full advantage of his exalted status. Gerald was charismatic and many were in awe of him.*
>
> *When Gerald came home to visit my grandmother, she would be very frantic. For example, hours before he was due to arrive, all of my father's 6 other siblings had to get their cars off the driveway and everything had to be prepared for Gerald to drive smoothly in.*

For David, the abuse didn't end with his uncle. There was inappropriate behavior from the clergy at his school, as well.

> *In 1974, I went to St. Alipius Boys Primary School for grade 3. My grade 3 teacher was Brother Gerald Leo Fitzgerald. Every Friday at the end of school, Brother Fitzgerald lined up our class, and we all had to kiss him goodbye, or potentially be strapped. Some kids got "special" kisses, meaning he used his tongue. This happened to me a couple of times and I would see him linger with other boys.*

Although David may have escaped invasive sexual abuse, those he had concerns over did assault other children.

> *While working in Ballarat East, Ridsdale also acted as chaplain at the four-classroom St. Alipius parish school, where he found like-minded company. Brother Robert Best who taught grade 6, Brother Edward Dowlan who taught grade 5, and Brother Gerald Leo Fitzgerald (now dead) who taught Grade 3, were all child-abusers. So was a later teacher there, Christian Brother Stephen Francis Farrell. All, except Fitzgerald, were later convicted of sex crimes. During Dowlan's County Court trial in 1996, the prosecution alleged that three St. Alipius boys were each sexually abused by Dowlan, Best and Ridsdale.*
>
> *One former St. Alipius altar boy said in his police statement, that after he was indecently assaulted by Ridsdale, the priest gave him a piece of Holy Communion bread (as used in Mass) as a reward. Another former*

> *altar boy said that Ridsdale indecently assaulted the boy while the boy confessed his sins to the priest during the "sacrament of Confession".*
> ~ Broken Rites[808]

There were other similar incidents of impropriety for David Ridsdale but he buried them, especially because they weren't as severe as what his own uncle had been doing to him.

When David's mother became pregnant again with another sibling (like a good Catholic woman), Father Gerald Ridsdale began taking David for weekends to "help out". He was only 11 years old when the abuse began.

Gerald Ridsdale's assaults were brazen, especially in the company of other clergy. Their acquiescence incensed David.

Father Ridsdale again exploited his trust by taking temporary custody of a boy whose parents were divorcing. He did as he pleased amongst the devout Catholics.

> *I remember that while we were at my grandparents' home Gerald stood the boy on the table and was giving him Eskimo kisses and kissing him inappropriately in front of the members of the family who were present. I cannot recall exactly who was there, but it was more than just my immediate family. I remember being disturbed that nobody said anything to Gerald at the time. I remember as my parents were driving home from my grandparents' house, someone commented that Gerald's behaviour with the boy was weird. Nothing else was said.*

Everything that Father Gerald Ridsdale did to his own nephew was predatory and premeditated.[cxiv]

> *Gerald sexually abused me on a regular basis until 1982, when I was 15. ...*
>
> *Gerald wasn't secretive about his love for boys or in having boys around and touching us. He would use his power and prestige as a priest to convince children and adults to trust him.*
>
> *When Gerald started paying more attention to our family he began buying gifts for my parents. One gift I remember he bought us was a*

> *colour TV. It was the first colour TV we owned. Much later my dad said,* **"I always wondered why he was so nice to us."** *I think one of my parents' biggest issues looking back was realising that Gerald groomed them to get to me.*

This was Gerald Ridsdale's carefully-considered *modus operandi*.

> *Early on, it became obvious that Gerry Ridsdale was obsessed with boys. He maintained an "open house", making his presbytery a drop-in centre for boys. He acquired a pool table and he was an early possessor of colour television, a microwave oven, an electric typewriter, a video-cassette player and computer games — all these became a magnet for boys.*
>
> *He would often invite a boy to stay overnight. Many "staunch Catholic" parents permitted (and even encouraged) this, believing that a priest is a good role model. But the boy would find that he was forced to share a double bed with Ridsdale.*
>
> *Sometimes Ridsdale took his victims far away from their families — on trips to other parts of Victoria, such as the presbytery at picturesque Apollo Bay. Even after leaving a parish, he would sometimes re-visit a family, perhaps a year later, to take their son on an outing, during which he would abuse the boy.*
>
> *He also took boys to White Cliffs in far-western New South Wales, where he had a mining right in an opal region.*
>
> *A significant proportion of Ridsdale's victims came from large families or families where the father was ill or dead or working away from home or doing shift work. A busy mother would gratefully accept Ridsdale's offer to "help" by taking one of her sons on a trip or to stay at his presbytery.*
>
> *At his various parishes, Ridsdale acted as a visiting "chaplain" at local schools, thereby gaining access to more boys.* ~ Broken Rites[809]

Although David Ridsdale was not subject to sexual abuse when he began attending St. Patrick's College (also run, as St. Alpius was, by the

“Christian Brothers”), he was physically abused and he knew of instances were other students were sexually assaulted.

David disclosed the painful effects of his uncle’s abuse and how it destroyed his sexual identity.

> *It was a long time before I knew I was being sexually abused. I just didn't know at the time.*
>
> *After Gerald abused me, I was left alone with feelings and ideas I did not understand, with no-one to talk to. The Church was a leader in the social idea that gender and sexuality was a simple binary choice. In my experience, if a male did not present heterosexual traits he was prone to ridicule and Isolation. I felt I was completely alone and unable to tell any adult what was happening, especially as I started to struggle with my sexuality.*

Shockingly, David’s own family members colluded with “Father Gerald” and enabled the abuse.

> *From the age of 15 I told a close family member on at least 5 occasions that I had been abused by Gerald. By the fifth time I bluntly said,* ***“Gerald has been molesting me”****. Rather than respond to my comment the close family member just said* ***“I hope one of your sisters would return to the Church one day.”*** *It was as if they did not hear what I had just said.*

As David matured, he found the courage to speak out. What he received in return was the numbing realization that predation by Catholic clergy upon Australian children was as pervasive as a virus.

> *When I was about 16 or 17, I started telling my peers about my abuse. I had been working with people of my age in youth and social programmes at the YMCA and issues of abuse had been raised which triggered memories and a new understanding of what had happened to me. I began to confide in my fellow volunteers and, almost without fail, all of them said that some form of abuse had happened to them. At that time, I had a perception that this was a normal part of society.*

As David began to consider building a family of his own, he was horrified at the possibility that he would become his uncle.

Seeking consolation and counsel, he called a family friend.

> *I didn’t know what to do. I was terrified of ringing the police, and I was terrified to go public with my story. I decided to ring George Pell. ...*
>
> *I’ve known George Pell since I was born. He was a family friend. He used to attend church services and activities when he was an assistant parish priest at St. Alipius. We continued to see him, even when he headmaster at St. Aquinas Teachers’ College and School. Pell was an avid swimmer and I would see him often at either Eureka Stockade or YMCA pool. I have called him George from since I was a kid. I never recall calling him “Father”. I chose to phone George on that day for one reason, he was the only human being in the Church who I believed was still a friend and that I could trust. ...*
>
> *I told George that I had been abused by Gerald. His first reaction was “Oh. Right”. There was no shock. His tone then became terse relatively quickly and I could sense anger in his voice. ...*
>
> *I had been clear to George that I was concerned about my grandmother and was seeking a private process that could assist me as the pain and distress was overwhelming. George then began to talk about my growing family and my need to take care of their needs. He mentioned how I would soon have to buy a car or house for my family. I remember with clarity the last three lines we spoke together.*
>
> *Me: Excuse me, George, what the fuck are you talking about?*
>
> *George: I want to know what it will take to keep you quiet.*
>
> *Me: Fuck you, George, and everything you stand for.*

It was clear to David that George Pell was also a willing enabler of his friend’s abuse, even of Ridsdale’s own family.

> *George was the first person in the Catholic Church whom I officially told about my abuse by Gerald.*

> *In 1994, when I was working at a private psychiatric Hospital in Brighton run by St. John of God nuns, I saw George Pell for the first time since our conversation in 1993. George came up to me and said "Oh David, how are you going?" He did not ask if I was alright, or if I needed help, or if he could do anything to help? He had had plenty of opportunity to call me and help me, but he never did.*
>
> *In the mid-1990s, I saw George Pell again at a Ballarat forum after* ***Towards Healing*** *was introduced. The forum was supposed to provide an overview of the Church's response to the historical abuse. Pell seemed surprised that the attendees did not believe that the Church had been unaware of the conduct of its clergy. I called him a liar there but I was actually the quiet one compared to some of the other individuals present. I recall one man said that he wanted to kill Pell and the other attendees had to calm him down.*
>
> *I now understand that this same man has committed suicide.*

The reaction of George Pell and other clergy steeled David to report what he had experienced to the Police. It just so happened that they were in the process of collecting statements from other victims. They seemed eager to help David Ridsdale have his accusations added to the prosecution ... until that time arrived.

> *As the case drew nearer the police asked me whether I would agree to drop the charges that Gerald would not plead guilty. The reasoning for this I was told was to avoid the need to give evidence at a trial and so Gerald could be sentenced and jailed as soon as possible and so they could release his name to gather more evidence against him. I agreed to drop half the charges against Gerald, and as a result he was charged only the more minor offences against me.*
>
> *Gerald was convicted and sentenced for sexually assaulting eight boys, including me, on 27 May 1993. He was sentenced to two years, three months' imprisonment. He served 3 months. ...*
>
> *My trust in institutions and authority was a shaken after this.*

In an attempt to help other victims cope and come forward, David began giving media interviews. There was immediate backlash from Catholic laity and clergy.

This pushed him toward civil proceedings against “the Church”, especially in light of the paltry sentence his uncle received — 3 months for abusing only 8 boys.

The Catholic Church played dirty pool and David’s own lawyers helped them.

> *Soon after commencing proceedings, I was told by my parents that Bishop Mulkearns who was the Bishop of Ballarat at the time, held a meeting with my parents and encouraged them to get me to drop the case. This meeting was held without my knowledge. My parent told me that Bishop Mulkearns refused to acknowledge any inappropriate conduct on the part of Gerald.*
>
> *The Church made me an offer of $10,000 to resolve the proceedings. My lawyers, Williams Winter & Higgs, advised me that if I did not accept the $10,000 offer I would be dragged through a court case that I would never win* ***“not in a million years”****. They went on to advise that I would end up with a $60,000-$100,000 bill which would* ***“destroy my family’s and my life forever.”*** *At that time, I was a terrified 25 year old with absolutely no support from anyone. I rejected this offer.*
>
> *The Church made me a second offer of $30,000. I begrudgingly accepted this second offer after I was made to feel scared and convinced that the Church’s legal status as a noncorporate entity meant they could not be legally challenged.*

Again, David’s family attacked him as a “liar” and “gold-digger”.

> *My cousin, who was also abused by Gerald told me that he has been told by family members that if he ever took any money or compensation from the Church for the molestation, then anything he ever bought with it would forever remind him of the abuse. One of my*

> *aunts that still visits Gerald in jail claims she does so in honour of her mother.*
>
> *With the Church being such an integral part of my family's life, the fallout from revelations against Gerald has permeated every aspect of our family. The lack of understanding of the impact of abuse and the shame of Gerald makes it painful for them to discuss it. This inadvertently making me feel very much alone to deal with the damage it has caused me.*

David was further shocked to learn of how the Catholic Church controlled “secular” institutions like law enforcement, even in his own family.

> *At my grandmother’s funeral, one of my aunts said to me* ***“I’m so glad it’s finally out. I’ve known for so long”****. I replied* ***“Sorry, what?”*** *She said* ***“Oh well, you know in Edenhope when it got too much and we got told about it”****. She then told me that she and her husband, who was a policeman at the time, had helped move Gerald quietly out of Edenhope. I reacted harshly towards my aunt as Gerald was abusing me at that time. My older sister was standing next to me. My aunt was very surprised at my reaction and became upset.*

Neither his responsibility as a law enforcement officer nor the fact that “Gerald” had raped children within the family were enough to keep David’s Police Officer uncle from aiding and abetting the pedophile priest.

He was, after all, Catholic.

In colonial America, Roman Catholics were forbidden to vote because their allegiances were questioned; would they vote in the best interest of Americans or of Rome?

Today such restrictions are held up as proof of a “Byzantine”, prejudicial past. It is clear, however, that they were completely vital.

For David Ridsdale, the abuse ran far beyond what his priest uncle did to him.

> *I have been asked when did the abuse stop, but my response is that it ever has stopped.*

> *What Gerald did was the result of a pathetic man unable to make correct choices. The combative approach from the Church and their efforts to paint me as a liar were just as painful to my life as the abuse itself. Discovering that the Church leaders were aware of his abuse of others has shattered my trust in social institutions.*
>
> *The impact of my abuse has been a complete invasion of every aspect of my life. The upbringing I received in the Church ensured my naivety was so great I was unaware of what Gerald was doing to me. My fear of being different and a sinner in the eyes of the Church meant that I was sure it was me doing something wrong.*
>
> *My personal sexual journey was completely disrupted and poisoned by the actions of Gerald. My inability to trust anyone enough to tell them was a result of the Church dogma and supernatural regard of its leaders. When I told my father this, he agreed and said that that sadly I was probably right and that no-one would have believed me back then.*

In the face of painful consequences, David Ridsdale has chosen to bravely keep hoping in and assisting “official inquiries”.

> *I was asked to sign a confidentiality agreement when I did receive money from the Church.*
>
> *This made me feel that the Church was offering to buy my silence. I decided to tell the truth, no matter what. I have lost a great deal from going public, but I know that my actions in 1993 and beyond have helped in a small way to lead to this Royal Commission, and for that I am grateful.*

Despite his connections to Gerald Ridsdale, George Pell continued to rise in the Catholic hierarchy. In 2003, Pope Saint John Paul II gave him his Cardinalcy. In 2014, Jesuit Pope Francis made him Cardinal-Prefect of the Secretariat for the Economy; the third most powerful post in the Vatican, in charge of all Rome’s finances.

When “secular” Harvard wished to train its students in “leadership”, they were sent to learn it from George Pell. What Pell told the students and media showed that he either lives in an alternate reality or has an unending reservoir of gall.

> *Cardinal Pell, prefect of the Secretariat for the Economy, spoke just before giving his speech on Principled Leadership to a group of 20 people who are among Harvard University's graduating class of 2017 and who traveled to Rome for a four-day "Harvard Vatican Leadership Summit."*
>
> *... the event was held at the Pontifical Lateran University and hosted students from various backgrounds at Harvard, including the business, law, divinity, medical, and dental schools.*
>
> *In addition to Cardinal Pell, other key figures participants have met with during the summit include Vatican Secretary of State Cardinal Pietro Parolin; Vatican Secretary for Relations with the States, Archbishop Paul Gallagher; Cardinal Peter Turkson, president of the Pontifical Council for Integral Human Development; and Cardinal Giuseppe Versaldi, prefect of the Congregation for Catholic Education.*
>
> *In his comments to CNA* [Catholic News Agency], *Cardinal Pell outlined the key principles that ought to guide business and economic decisions, saying that no matter what, "you must be aware of the common good."*
>
> *"Think of the whole of society..." he said. "Have some real understanding of what justice is. Have a special sensitivity for those who are less fortunate, those who are poor."*[810]

Perhaps George Pell made his outrageous statements because he was keenly aware of how "justice" has been kept from the *hundreds* of *thousands* of children who have been eaten by the Dragon of Rome — many at Pells' own hand.

When Harvard's doctors, lawyers and "Protestant" preachers receive their "secular" degree few will know they were indoctrinated in Communism by the Vatican but such was the intent of putting them in the highly-respected "public" school.

The relationship between George Pell and Gerald Ridsdale has been compared to Bernard Cardinal Law and Father John J. Geoghan ... or Bernard Law and Paul Shanley ... or Bernard Law and James Porter ... etc.

The accepted process for addressing Catholic clergy who have preyed upon children for Rome's agents in media, justice and law enforcement is that low-level priests can be outed but hierarchy can not.

Hence, Bishops, Cardinals and Popes are treated as if they have remained pure through their entire careers yet they rise from the same pool that provided heinous predator priests and they have all done their best to protect and enable those predator priests.

This is made easy for the Vatican when victims choose to bring the crimes to "the Mother Church" instead of law enforcement or social services.

Such was the case with "Phil", an altar boy molested by *Cardinal* Pell *even before his ordination*.

> *Australia's Catholic Church hierarchy received a complaint in 2002 that a trainee priest (George Pell) had sexually abused a twelve-year-old altar boy (named Phil) in 1961-1962 at a holiday camp for boys on Phillip Island, south-east of Melbourne. According to a church document, Phil has alleged that, on several occasions, the trainee priest George (then about 20) thrust his hand down the inside of Phil's pants and got "a good handful" of the boy's penis and testicles; and, on other occasions, George allegedly tried to guide the boy's hand into the front of George Pell's pants. By the year 2000, when Phil was aged 50, he realised (from television news footage) that the trainee priest George had risen to become an Archbishop. Phil was shocked — "he did not think it right that someone who had behaved indecently towards children should lead the church," the church document says. ...*
>
> *In 2002, the hierarchy paid a senior barrister, Mr. Alex Southwell QC, to examine (and report on) Phil's complaint. Archbishop George Pell (who was indeed at the altar boys' camp) denied committing any abuse. Mr. Southwell's report concluded that the former altar boy "appeared to speak honestly from an actual recollection". Mr.*

> *Southwell said he was not persuaded that the former altar boy was a liar as alleged by Pell. ...*
>
> *The complainant [who is referred to as "C" in Mr. Southwell's report] alleged that he was not the only boy at the camp who was abused by George Pell. C alleged that he witnessed a friend of his (referred to as "A") being molested by "big George". C told George to "fuck off". A and C later protested by lighting a glass fire near the camp. A died in 1985, and therefore he could not be questioned by the Southwell inquiry.* ~ Broken Rites Australia[811]

If the Cardinal-Prefect of the Secretariat for the Economy was reaching down the pants of little boys before he was even ordained, what can we assume about the rest of his time since then?

As with so many other victims, "C" paid a price well after George Pell was done with him.

> *Beginning in his teens, C's life was disrupted. He developed a problem with alcohol and gambling. In his early twenties he got into trouble with the law, serving time in jail for alcohol-related offences.*[812]

Obviously, Gerald Ridsdale wasn't the only pedophile priest protected by George Cardinal Pell. Another priest, equally as evil and vicious, was Kevin O'Donnell.

> *One of Australia's most notorious paedophile priests, Father Kevin O'Donnell, committed sexual crimes against children throughout his 50-year career in Melbourne Catholic parishes while his superiors and colleagues looked the other way. In his final years, he even received public praise from one of his superiors, Bishop (later Cardinal) George Pell ... . Eventually some of O'Donnell's victims (with help from Broken Rites) contacted the police and got O'Donnell convicted and jailed. Later, more people came forward with complaints about Father O'Donnell (including Anthony and Chrissie Foster, whose two young daughters encountered O'Donnell in his final parish). After all this exposure about Father O'Donnell, Archbishop George Pell hired a public relations firm to paint Pell as a pioneer in "helping" victims.*

Therefore, Anthony and Chrissie Foster asked Pell to grant proper compensation to help their two damaged daughters, but Pell's lawyers tried to defeat the Fosters (instead of "helping" them). The story of the Fosters is told in the second half of this Broken Rites article.

O'Donnell is dead but his numerous victims — and their families — still bear the scars of his crimes.

Father Kevin O'Donnell was a child abuser from 1942 to 1992. He fitted Masses, weddings and funerals in between his sex-abuse activities.

The Catholic Church now admits that O'Donnell was a child-abuser from day one. ***Broken Rites*** *has seen a typed transcript of an interview that Mr. Peter O'Callaghan QC (sex-abuse commissioner for the Melbourne archdiocese) had with an O'Donnell victim on 23 March 2003. In the transcript, Mr. O'Callaghan commented that O'Donnell was engaged in sex abuse from the time he was ordained — and (said Mr. O'Callaghan) he did it in every parish he was in.*

During his career, the Melbourne church authorities were told of O'Donnell's crimes but chose to keep him in the ministry, thus inflicting him on further victims. Some of O'Donnell's fellow-priests knew that he was a danger to children but they remained silent. Certain other priests, when consulted by O'Donnell victims, just "didn't want to know about it".

Instead of sacking O'Donnell, the Melbourne archdiocese retained him in parish work until he retired gracefully from full-time ministry in 1992, aged 75, after clocking up his 50 years of sexual abuse. On his retirement, he was given a parting tribute by Archbishop Frank Little.

The archdiocese then conferred on him the distinguished title Pastor Emeritus (meaning "retired with honour") — despite his record of sexual abuse. In 1993, O'Donnell was still serving as a part-time relieving priest at several parishes.

Beginning in late 1993, ***Broken Rites*** *exposed the church's cover-up of O'Donnell. In 1995, he pleaded guilty to child-sex crimes and was*

> *jailed.*
>
> *But, even after he was jailed, the church authorities failed to remove him the priesthood. They continued to list "Reverend" Kevin O'Donnell (in the next edition of the annual Australian Catholic Directory) as a "supplementary priest of the Melbourne archdiocese".*
> ~ Broken Rites Australia[813]

Despite the fact that Kevin O'Donnell was well-known in "the Church" for being a pedophile, he received nothing but praise from George Pell and his peers.

> ***Broken Rites** has obtained a video tape of a confirmation ceremony at Kevin O'Donnell's Sacred Heart parish in Oakleigh in 1989. On this tape, Auxiliary Bishop George Pell (then responsible for Melbourne's southern suburbs, including O'Donnell's parish) praised the work of Father Kevin O'Donnell.*
>
> *Near the end of the ceremony, Pell thanked all who helped to organise the ceremony. He then told the parishioners: "And I would like to congratulate Father Kevin [O'Donnell] and Father Michael for all the work they are doing here. It is obviously a great and strong parish with a proud Catholic tradition, and I know you will work to maintain this just as your priests do, and **I look forward to many, many more years of work from Father O'Donnell in the church here.**" ...*
>
> *The O'Donnell case was transferred to the Melbourne Magistrates Court, and John Kevin O'Donnell appeared there briefly on 7 September 1994, charged with 32 incidents of indecent assault at four*

> *parishes, involving seven boys and one girl.* ***Broken Rites*** *representatives were present in the courtroom. ...*
>
> *After the September 7 hearing, a priest in one of his former parishes asked the congregation to "pray for Father O'Donnell" but did not mention the victims.*
>
> *Some Melbourne priests in late 1994 discussed the possibility of issuing a joint public statement, supporting O'Donnell. However, a better-informed priest (who knew "Damian") warned his colleagues that massive evidence was mounting against O'Donnell, and this was likely to result in a conviction.*[814]

The indoctrination of Roman Catholicism meant that pedophile priests continued to receive aid from even their own victims and the victims' families.

In response to being raped by O'Donnell, one young girl immersed herself even further into his religion, allowing it to rob her of her youth.

> *A female victim ("Mary", from the Seymour parish) was sexually abused for three years from the age of 13 when helping O'Donnell conduct late-afternoon catechism classes for State School children in the early 1950s. To escape O'Donnell, Mary entered a nunnery at 16 and remained a nun until she was 25. The loss of these vital years had a devastating effect on Mary's later life.*
>
> *Mary told police:* ***"While I was still a nun, I told a Catholic priest, from the Jesuit order, about O'Donnell but he didn't want to know about it."***[815]

Even more sinister was O'Donnell's access to children in "secular" organizations like the Boy Scouts. He would violate children there and, obediently, even Boy Scout leadership took the matter back to "the Church".

> *One victim, "Michael", from the Dandenong parish, said that he and his Scout leader officially reported O'Donnell's sexual abuse to the Vicar-General of the Melbourne archdiocese, Monsignor Laurence Moran, in 1958-59. ...*

> *Michael says that, after this, Auxiliary Bishop Arthur Fox ... interviewed him and urged him to remain silent about the sexual incidents.*
>
> *For 35 years, Michael presumed that he was O'Donnell's only victim. But in early 1994 he was shocked to see the media reports about O'Donnell being charged with assaulting another boy [this was Damian, the victim who had contacted Broken Rites]. Michael then contacted the police, becoming the second victim to make a police statement.*
>
> *Michael told the detectives in 1994 about his scoutmaster's 1959 complaint to the archdiocese. When O'Donnell was charged in 1994, O'Donnell was given details of the evidence against him, including the information about the scoutmaster. In October 1994, while church lawyers were considering how best to defend O'Donnell, the church's Melbourne vicar-general (Monsignor Gerry Cudmore) sent a priest to interview the scoutmaster. After this interview, the priest wrote to Cudmore on 31 October 1994 with some good news — the priest "assured" Cudmore that the scoutmaster does not intend to give evidence in the criminal proceedings. Thus, the church's cover-up would not be revealed in court.*[816]

The next example of enablement defies description.

> *"Damian" (at the Hasting parish in the 1970s) said he was unable to tell his parents about O'Donnell's abuse because his parents were loyal Catholics and he did not want to upset them. When Damian got married in the early 1980s, his mother insisted that Father Kevin O'Donnell should perform the wedding. Damian reluctantly consented but he is still angry about this.*
>
> *Damian said:* ***"About 1986, I complained to two priests in other parishes that I had been molested by a priest but they didn't want to know the name of the offender. I also had some counselling in 1986 with a nun, who immediately wrote to the archdiocese about O'Donnell, but the archdiocese ignored the letter."***

> *Damian eventually told his mother about O'Donnell and she wrote* ***a letter of complaint to the archdiocese*** *but the church authorities allowed O'Donnell to continue ministering at Oakleigh until he retired at age 75 in 1992.*[817]

If the good Catholic mother demanded of the sexually abused son that he give O'Donnell the right of *primæ noctis*[cxv] would he have agreed to that too?

As in Gerald Ridsdale's trail, the Prosecution was very helpful ... to "the Church".

> *... the prosecuting authorities decided not to wait for more victims to be interviewed but to go to court immediately with the existing batch of signed victim statements. ...*
>
> *The prosecution dropped all the other incidents, including some more serious charges involved oral and digital penetration. The dropped charges would have incurred a longer jail sentence. ...*
>
> *In the Melbourne County Court on 11 August 1995, Judge Murray Kellam sentenced John Kevin O'Donnell to a total of 39 months jail, with a minimum of 15 months behind bars before parole.*[818]

This meant that O'Donnell was quickly released to get back to his mission: defiling the innocent for Rome.

> *O'Donnell was released from jail in late 1996. He was still listed as a priest in the mid-1996* ***Official Directory of the Catholic Church in Australia*** *(in the Supplementary List of Diocesan Priests, page 142) and he still held the title of "Pastor Emeritus" (retired with honour). ...*
>
> *The charges in court were confined to offences between 1946 and 1976 but the additional complaints (after the court case) included children in his final parish, Oakleigh, up until O'Donnell's retirement in 1992. ...*
>
> *After O'Donnell retired from full-time parish work in 1992, he continued to associate with boys. In addition, he had access to girls at the Oakleigh parish primary school...*[819]

At no point in his career did Kevin O’Donnell stop abusing children and, to the end, he continued to be enabled by Roman Catholic families who seemed to offer their children to him.

> *As well as being the Parish Priest, O’Donnell had also been the “chaplain” at Oakleigh’s Sacred Heart Primary School. This role gave him the right to roam around the school and its playground. He could request to have any child sent to him to help him do chores at the church or in his presbytery. He also would see a child in private for “counselling”.*
>
> *One such child was Emma Foster, whose years at Sacred Heart primary school co-incided with O’Donnell’s final years there. Later, during the 1990s, Emma developed into a disturbed teenager and she eventually attempted suicide several times. After the jailing of O’Donnell, Emma disclosed that O’Donnell had sexually abused her at the primary school. Emma had remained silent about this during her school years because she knew that she was prohibited from saying anything negative about the clergy. O’Donnell’s eventual disgracing removed this prohibition, leaving Emma free to make her disclosure.* [820]

“Devastated” by the rape of their daughter, her devout Catholic parents took the matter to the “Mother Church”.

> *Emma’s parents (Anthony and Chrissie Foster) were devastated. In the late 1990s, Anthony and Chrissie lodged a complaint with Melbourne archdiocesan sex-abuse commissioner Peter O’Callaghan QC.*[821]

After finding that O’Donnell had exercised his right of *primæ noctis* and stolen their first daughter’s virginity, Anthony and “Chrissie” received an apology.

> *After a thorough forensic examination of the case, Commissioner O’Callaghan officially ruled that Emma had indeed been sexually abused by O’Donnell. The archdiocese offered a written apology to Emma from Archbishop George Pell on behalf of the church.*[822]

They were later “shocked” to learn that both the daughters they had offered to the monster were accepted and abused.

> *Meanwhile, in the late 1990s, Anthony and Chrissie were alarmed to find that their second daughter, Katie, was having a disturbed adolescence, similar to Emma. Eventually it was ascertained that Katie, too, had had been sexually abused by O’Donnell when she was at the primary school.*[823]

The painting by Broken Rites of the Fosters as heroes falls far short of the mark. It wouldn’t be the first time that a supposed dogged enemy of the Vatican was found to actually be loyal soldiers playing a role.

The fact is that Kevin O’Donnell was a voracious pedophile and anyone that received any information confirming him to be as such — especially his rape of one of the two daughters he had been in contact with — should’ve immediately pushed the Fosters into stringent action against him with Police. Immediately following, a thorough counseling would involve all other likely victims such as their other daughter.

None of that was done and the two girls suffered accordingly.

> *By the late 1990s, Katie had started drinking to numb the pain. In 1999, she walked in front of a speeding car, and this left her with permanent intellectual and physical disabilities. Katie now needs full-time supervision, with specialised helpers — an expensive on-going procedure.*
>
> *For 12 years after O’Donnell’s jailing, Emma’s parents battled to keep Emma alive as she sank into a spiral of self-destructive behaviour, including drug-taking. But in early January 2008, Emma died alone on her bedroom floor clutching her teddy bear, a treasured first birthday present from her parents. She was aged 26.*[824]

Anthony and “Chrissie” Foster were as guilty of what happened to their children as if they had done it themselves.

In fact, in many (perhaps most) of the incidents of child sex abuse, the parents are involved in either offering, selling or directly abusing the children.[825]

Although the Fosters were never investigated for collusion, they did profit from what happened.

> *In the late 1990s, when Chrissie and Anthony Foster submitted their complaint to the Melbourne archdiocese about how Fr. Kevin O'Donnell had abused their two daughters, Archbishop George Pell's "Melbourne Response" scheme offered the Fosters a small amount of compensation...*
>
> *Chrissie and Anthony rejected this ... and initiated steps to tackle Pell and the Melbourne archdiocese in the civil courts for a more appropriate amount...*
>
> *... Pell ... signed a more adequate ... settlement with the Fosters.*[826], [cxvi]

Further proof developed regarding the complicity of the Fosters in the crimes that occurred to their daughters.

After they were lavishly paid, the Fosters went on a speaking circuit regarding their experiences.

In 2010, "Chrissie" Foster turned it all into a book — "the harrowing, true story of a mother's struggle for justice."[827]

Apparently, in that "harrowing struggle for justice" it never occurred to the Fosters to see O'Donnell or the Catholic Church be held to account *legally* for their crimes.

Earlier this year (May 2017), Anthony Foster died of a stroke at only 64 years of age. As perhaps the ultimate red flag upon the collusion of the Fosters with Rome, he was honored by the Australian government with a State Funeral.[828]

Once again, the grandiose actions of "secular" Aussie authorities did absolutely nothing to address the warfare going on in that island continent by a malignant foreign entity.

At no point during their “harrowing struggle” did the Fosters speak negatively about the Roman Catholic Church.

Astoundingly, the accusations against Kevin O’Donnell get worse.

“Commissions” are at least good for one thing: collecting information for serious bodies to follow up on.

Some of that material is quite useful.

After Australia’s “atheist” woman Prime Minister Julia Gillard ordered the impotent Royal Commission into Institutional Responses to Child Sexual Abuse in 2012, former Police Woman, Professor and child advocate Freda Briggs (1930 – 2016) provided a valuable paper.

What Mrs. Briggs (*née* Akeroyd[cxvii]) found was that the problem of pedophilia in the Catholic Church was not a matter of lone aberrant criminals but of the entire institution.

> *Some priests think pedophilia does not “break celibacy” and that sins can be confessed away, one of the nation’s top child protection experts says.*
>
> *Emeritus Professor Freda Briggs, who has just published a seminal text on child protection, says sexual abuse by a priest is “the most damaging of all” for children and that the Catholic Church is guilty of forgiving priests instead of punishing them.* ~ News.Com.Au[829]

Mrs. Briggs discovered that Roman Catholicism made it easy to be a pedophile.

> *She says confession, which plays an important role in the Catholic Church but is also practised in other Christian religions, made churches attractive to pedophiles.*
>
> *“Churches are psychologically attractive to sex offenders because they can ask for forgiveness one day and offend again on another day,” she said.*
>
> *“There was one priest in Victoria who admitted when caught that he had confessed 200 times and nobody had reported him, because priests*

> *are not allowed to report anyone who confesses in a confessional.”*
>
> *Priests are not subject to mandatory reporting laws so they don’t have to report child abusers who confess to them. Generally, a priest who receives such a confession is meant to convince the abuser to report themselves to authorities.*
>
> *Across Australia people such as doctors, nurses and teachers, who work with children, have to report child abuse but no Australian state or territory has included priests in their mandatory reporting requirements.*[830]

“Confession” as a license to rape children? — We’ll call this the “Opus Dei effect.”

Ultimately behind the crimes against children was the issue of *power*. The reason why so many priests begin raping children before they’re even ordained is that *they were already pedophiles who were attracted to and recruited into the priesthood*.

> *UniSA* [University of South Australia] *Associate Professor Dale Bagshaw, an adjunct professor in the School of Psychology, Social Work and Social Policy, says ultimately it’s power that’s the problem, and that pedophiles join the church because of its structure.*
>
> *“It’s power and trust, manipulation, grooming and abuse,” she said.*
>
> *“... a lot of pedophiles actually join the church to be in a position to abuse children … it gives them a powerful position.”*[831]

Perhaps the most controversial figure to speak before the Royal Commission was a woman named Fiona Barnett.[cxviii]

She still, however, refused to give up big names.

> *A woman who alleges she was a child victim of the paedophile ring named by Liberal senator Bill Heffernan* [an inconsequential politician] *said she had repeatedly reported the abuse to authorities but no action had been taken.*

Speaking outside the Royal Commission into Institutional Responses to Child Sexual Abuse, Fiona Barnett called on the authorities to investigate the alleged ring, which she believes is still operating.

Ms. Barnett alleged the ring involved hundreds of perpetrators, including a political elite, such as a former governor-general and a former education minister, but she did not name them.

"Throughout my childhood I was a victim of Australia's VIP child sex trafficking ring," she said.

"The people involved in this elite paedophile ring included high-ranking politicians, police and judiciary."

— Notoriously absent from that list is the word "***clergy***". —

Ms. Barnett, 45, said she had reported her abuse to health care professionals, the NSW and Australian Federal Police and the royal commission but felt her claims were not taken seriously.

— SPIN ALERT: the fact is that a report was made but
not acted on. The reason it wasn't acted on
was not obvious and should not be deduced,
especially in favor of negligence over willful criminal collusion. —

"The way I have been treated for reporting the crimes I witnessed and experienced has been far worse than my original abuse experiences," she said.

Ms. Barnett was critical of the scope of the royal commission, which examines the responses of institutions such as religious groups and schools to allegations of child sexual abuse.

"I want all of the claims pooled and I want them investigated," she said.

"I don't think the royal commission seems to be equipped to do that, do you? Amongst victims, we think this is just a complete whitewash." ~ The Sydney Morning Herald[832]

Like Regina Louf, Barnett being acknowledged by mainstream media (albeit barely) is ominous.

> *... Fiona Barnett alleged she had been the victim of a "VIP child sex trafficking ring".*
>
> *... Barnett took aim at the authorities, including the Royal Commission into Institutional Responses to Child Sexual Abuse, which she described as "disappointing". ...*
>
> *... in 1996* [Labor politician Franca Arena] *named two people – retired judge David Yeldham and former state MP Frank Arkell – as potential paedophiles.*
>
> *At the time, a royal commission into the NSW Police Service headed by Justice James Wood was in full swing, but Arena and others believed it was not doing enough to look at people in high places. ...*
>
> *But before long, Yeldham was revealed to have lived a double life as a homosexual, and he took his own life on November 4, 1996.*
>
> *Arkell was horrifically murdered on June 26, 1998, a fortnight after another Illawarra man, David O'Hearn, was killed in equally brutal fashion in his Albion Park home.*
>
> *The perpetrator in both cases was a 19-year-old, Mark Valera, who claimed that both men had propositioned him sexually, and that he had been abused by his own father.*
>
> *Despite the apparent vindication of Arena's use of parliamentary privilege, the pressure on her continued. ~ The Newcastle Herald*[833]

Barnett bridged the gap between the pedophilia and the darkest accusations against the Devil's Simulation: the abuse, torture and ritual slaughter of animals and children in full dedication to Satan.

A Jesuit "law professor" acknowledged as much to the Australian Broadcasting Corporation.

> *Father Frank Brennan, a Jesuit priest and Professor of Law at the Australian Catholic University, told the ABC last night that in the past*

> *children were “sacrificed” for the interests of the church or particular clerics ...*[834]

The juxtaposition of a Jesuit who “teaches law” and acknowledges the “sacrifice” of children “for the interests of the church or particular clerics” is chilling.

Fiona Barnett claims that she was brought into the child sex abuse and trafficking trade by her Lithuanian grandmother, “Helen Holowczak”,[cxix] and her Polish step-grandfather “Peter Holowczak”.[cxx] She states that her mother was oblivious to the abuse, especially given that visits with “nana” appeared to be so pleasant.

Barnett further states that her father was conditioned by his own abuse at Dunlea Centre.

Dunlea is a “residential school” for children with “behavioral issues”. It was founded in 1940 by an Irish priest who emigrated to Australia, named Thomas Vincent Dunlea.

Prior to the strategic name change in 2010, it was known as “Boys’ Town Engadine” and it was every bit the hell for children that the propagandized orphanage in Omaha, Nebraska was.

Barnett states that her grandparents were relocated Nazis and that Slavs did much of the “dirty work” for the Party. None of her claims can be verified directly but such an assertion does have historical precedent.

Barnett says her problems started on her 6th birthday where she was traumatized with a “Hunger Games”-style hunt of other children by evil men.[cxxi] One of them bred dogs who were used in the abuse for hunting, bestiality and to consume human bodies once the victims were murdered.

This comports with statements from other purported victims, for instance the use of dogs in the statement of “X2”. CIA child sex slave Cathy O’Brien mentions a similar “Hunger Games” experience of “hide and rape”. On one occasion, her abuser was former Vice President, former Haliburton CEO Richard “Dick” Cheney.[835]

Barnett claims that the Australian government is in full co-operation with the Pedocracy, including the military. This we've seen borne out in other instances, not just in Australia but in all major nations — particularly in the West.

She states that the Australian government offered her as a child to Richard Nixon.[836]

There may be a discrepancy regarding dates: a source lists Barnett as having been born in 1969.[837] The assumption in her story is that Nixon was President at the time but she does not explicitly state that. The Nixon Presidency lasted from 1969 to 1974, slightly too early for Barnett's timeline. There are several variances that could still allow this accusation to be true.

Barnett says that she was brought to the Fairbairn Royal Australian Air Force base in Australia's national capital of Canberra (the base was decommissioned in 2007). She was brought on board Nixon's aircraft and abused by him there.

Barnett claims that she was also abused at Holsworthy Army Base and the Lucas Heights nuclear power plant — both have secure, secluded facilities which were used.

She states that two key tormentors of hers were Dr. John W. Gittinger Sr. and Dr. Antony Kidman, father of actress Nicole Kidman.[838]

They are an odd combination unless you know what you're looking at: both were "clinical psychologists".

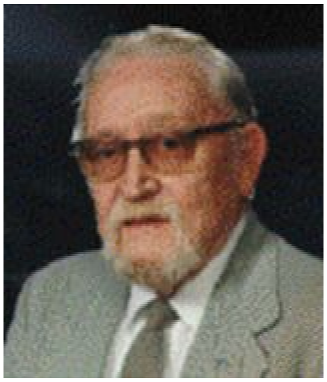

Gittinger is reknown for having formulated a way to assess personality traits called the "Personality Assessment System".

It’s not a far leap to see his “research” go further into creating or manipulating those same traits based upon external stimuli or trauma for use in “mind control”.

It’s further validated when sources like *Wikipedia* acknowledge Gittinger’s role in the Central Intelligence Agency.

> *John Gittinger, the developer of the PAS, worked as a psychologist for the Central Intelligence Agency during the time he developed the PAS. Early publications describing the PAS appeared in academic publications and did not mention Gittinger’s employer.*[11] *While the PAS has been used in many contexts such as education and clinical work, it was developed by John Gittinger who worked with a number of other CIA employees. Gittinger and his PAS work were related to a wide range of projects, some of which were part of the set of projects called MKULTRA. When there were Senate hearings on the MKULTRA project, Gittinger was a witness and identified as a CIA psychologist.*[12] *The relationship of Gittinger, the PAS and MKULTRA is discussed by Marks in chapter 11 of his book based upon examination of thousands of documents.*[13] [839]

The implication that Gittinger’s association with the Central Intelligence Agency was a “passing collaboration” is almost certainly *not* the case.

Equally suspicious is that Gittinger has no entry for himself and that information across the internet is extremely scarce.

The book referenced is *The Search for the “Manchurian Candidate”: The CIA and Mind Control: The Secret History of the Behavioral Sciences* by John D. Marks.

Marks acknowledges that “mind control research” in the CIA centered around torture and narcotics; part of the process to force Dissociative Identity Disorder on the victim.

> *With one exception, the CIA’s behavioral research — whether on LSD or on electroshock — seems to have had more impact on the outside world than on Agency operations.*

> *That exception grew out of the work of the MKULTRA program's resident genius, psychologist John Gittinger.*
>
> *While on the CIA payroll, toiling to find ways to manipulate people, Gittinger created a unique system for assessing personality and predicting future behavior. He called his method — appropriately — the Personality Assessment System (PAS). Top Agency officials have been so impressed that they have given the Gittinger system a place in most agent-connected activities. To be sure, most CIA operators would not go nearly so far as a former Gittinger aide who says, "The PAS was the key to the whole clandestine business." Still, after most of the touted mind controllers had given up or been sent back home, it was Gittinger, the staff psychologist, who sold his PAS system to cynical, anti-gimmick case officers in the Agency's Clandestine Services.*[840]

More disturbingly, Marks acknowledged that Gittinger made "observations" on children as they grew into adulthood.

> *From observation, Gittinger concluded that babies were born with distinct personalities which then were modified by environmental factors. The Internalized — or I — baby was caught up in himself and tended to be seen as a passive child; hence, the world usually called him a "good baby." The E tot was more interested in outside stimuli and attention, and thus was more likely to cause his parents problems by making demands. Gittinger believed that the way parents and other authority figures reacted to the child helped to shape his personality. Adults often pressured or directed the I child to become more outgoing and the E one to become more self-sufficient.*
>
> *Gittinger found he could measure the compensations, or adjustments, the child made on another Wechsler subtest* [the Wechsler intelligence scale, a standard IQ test with 11 parts], *the one that rated arithmetic ability.*
>
> *He noticed that in later life, when the person was subject to stress, these compensations tended to disappear, and the person reverted to his original personality type. Gittinger wrote that his system "makes possible the assessment of fundamental discrepancies between the*

> *surface personality and the underlying personality structure — discrepancies that produce tension, conflict, and anxiety."*[841]

Also revealed by Marks is that Gittinger's "research" was funded and maintained by the CIA when other sources would've refused.

> *Any one of these drawbacks might have stifled Gittinger in the academic world, but to the pragmatists in the CIA, they were irrelevant. Gittinger's strange ideas seemed to work. With uncanny accuracy, he could look at nothing more than a subject's Wechsler numbers, pinpoint his weaknesses, and show how to turn him into an Agency spy. Once Gittinger's boss, Sid Gottlieb, and other high CIA officials realized how Gittinger's PAS could be used to help case officers handle agents, they gave the psychologist both the time and money to improve his system under the auspices of the Human Ecology Society.*[842]

Sidney Gottlieb (born Joseph Scheider) was another "Papal Court Jew" who worked for "Catholics In Action". His methods were as monstrous as those of any Nazi and they included drugging unwitting American citizens as part of his "mind control research".[843]

> *Friends and enemies alike say Mr. Gottlieb was a kind of genius, striving to explore the frontiers of the human mind for his country, while searching for religious and spiritual meaning in his life. But he will always be remembered as the Government chemist who dosed Americans with psychedelics in the name of national security, the man who brought LSD to the C.I.A.*
>
> *In the 1950's and early 1960's, the agency gave mind-altering drugs to hundreds of unsuspecting Americans in an effort to explore the possibilities of controlling human consciousness. Many of the human guinea pigs were mental patients, prisoners, drug addicts and prostitutes — "people who could not fight back," as one agency officer put it. In one case, a mental patient in Kentucky was dosed with LSD continuously for 174 days. ~ The New York Times*[844]

It is ludicrous to paint any such criminal activities against the American people in anything less than what they were: a malignant foreign insurgency.

As has been done so many times before and since, the criminal traitor was given accolades for his outrages and his tracks covered.

> *The C.I.A. awarded Mr. Gottlieb the Distinguished Intelligence Medal and deliberately destroyed most of the MKUltra records in 1973.*[845]

The whitewash by media like the *New York Times* is, in itself, criminal.

> *John Gittinger, a C.I.A. psychologist who vetted Mr. Gottlieb — "one of the most brilliant men I've ever known" — and worked with him for 22 years, said the agency began the tests because it was gripped by "a great fear" in the cold war. It was afraid that the Soviet Union would corner the market on LSD and use it as a chemical weapon or that China would perfect the black art of brainwashing, Mr. Gittinger said.*
>
> *First-hand testimony, fragmentary Government documents and court records show that at least one participant died, others went mad, and still others suffered psychological damage after participating in the project, known as MK Ultra. ...*
>
> *In all, the agency conducted 149 separate mind-control experiments, and as many as 25 involved unwitting subjects. ...*
>
> *The experiments were useless, Mr. Gottlieb concluded in 1972, shortly before he retired. ...*
>
> *John Marks, author of the definitive book on the experiments, "The Search for the 'Manchurian Candidate'" (Times Books, 1979) said Mr. Gottlieb was "unquestionably a patriot, a man of great ingenuity."*[846]

"Only 25 unwitting victims and it didn't work so it was quickly shut down." Are there thinking, mature adults who actually buy that?

Gottlieb, a Socialist Jew, was the perfect front-man for the CIA's Roman insurgency.

The “Papal Court Jews” at the *New York Times* were happy to pin his crimes only on him.

> *Mr. Gottlieb joined the C.I.A. in 1951, although not before telling Mr. Gittinger, his interviewer, that he had been a socialist in his youth.*
>
> *Two years later, the agency established MKUltra and Mr. Gottlieb was running it.*[847]

According to Fiona Barnett, “Doctor” Antony Kidman was cut from the same cloth as Gittinger and Gotlieb. She accompanied her posts on social networking with rudimentary drawings that were simple, yet effective.

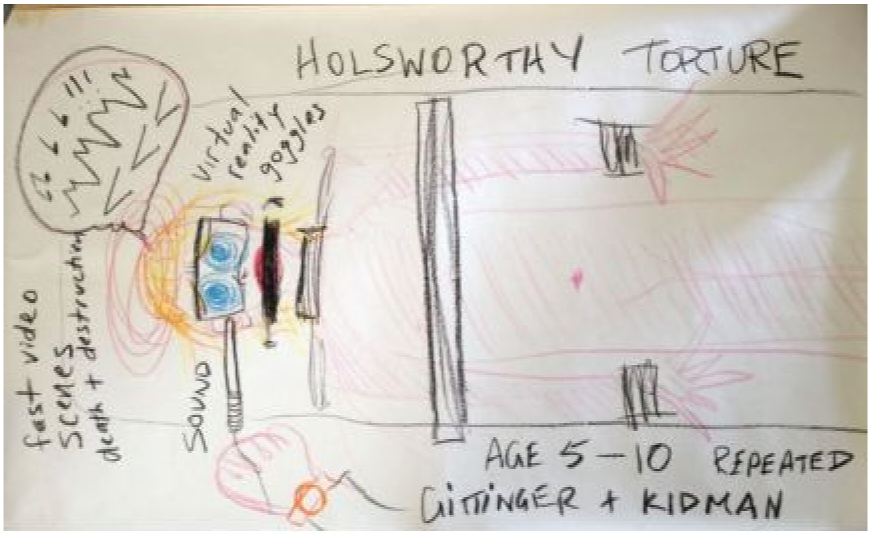
HOLSWORTHY TORTURE
?? ?? !!!
virtual reality goggles
fast video scenes death + destruction
SOUND
AGE 5—10 REPEATED
GITTINGER + KIDMAN

At the same time as Fiona Barnett says she was being tortured in this manner, Hollywood Director Stanley Kubrick (also a Jew) was depicting them in the 1971 movie *A Clockwork Orange*.

Scene from Clockwork Orange (1971) [FAIR USE]

Kubrik is the same Director who brought Vladimir Nabokov's *Lolita* to the silver screen in 1962. His star, Malcolm McDowell played Caligula in Bob Guccione's pornographic "drama" of the same name 8 years later.

A Clockwork Orange was based upon the "satirical" novel by John Anthony Burgess Wilson, FRSL.[cxxii] "Anthony Burgess" wrote the screenplay for the 1977 Franco Zeffirelli TV mini-series *Jesus of Nazareth*. He was raised devout Roman Catholic and educated in the "Jesuit tradition" of the Xaverian Brothers.

Fiona Barnett claims that Nicole Kidman was kept free of abuse but was privy to it, often looking on at Barnett's torture with a smirk.

In 1999, Kidman starred as "Alice" opposite her then-husband Tom Cruise in *Eyes Wide Shut*; a movie depicting the control of world affairs by a secret religious order that conducts evil, perverse ritual sex rites.

It was directed by Stanley Kubrick.

Kidman's latest marriage to singer Keith Urban was presided over by the family's personal Jesuit, Father Paul Coleman.[848] Together, they have two girls, "Sunday Rose" and "Faith Margaret".

The gossip site "CeleBuzz" admits — *Faith Margaret ... was born via a surrogate*.[849]

Given what we know, we have to ask, “Was the ‘surrogate’ willing and are they still alive?”

Right before Fiona Barnett began to go public, Antony Kidman died mysteriously in Singapore. The 12 September 2014 headline from the *Mirror* read —

> ***Nicole Kidman's Father Killed After “Fall” In Singapore***[850]

— Odd wording that isn’t explained. As of this writing, the post has no content due to an ongoing web site “migration” ever since.

His death was reported on September 12th, but did it occur on September 11th?[cxxiii]

In spite of (or perhaps because of) the accusations that Antony Kidman was an exceptionally-depraved, sadistic, child-raping monster, the *Sydney Morning Herald* eulogized him thus —

> ***Dr Antony Kidman: Nicole Kidman’s Father’s Legacy Of Nurture***[851]
>
> *Tony Kidman was a man of grand passions: war historian, scientist, avid follower of political life, singer, lover of performing arts and fitness enthusiast. Above all, Tony was a devoted family man. He was a visionary leader, driven to help others. Fortunately he saw many of his dreams reach fruition during his lifetime. ...*
>
> — Kidman was a dutiful Leftist. —
>
> *In 1966, Kidman moved to Washington DC to the National Institute of Mental Health at St. Elizabeth Psychiatric Hospital* [a United States Government facility focusing on “mental health”]. *During this period, Tony and* [wife] *Janelle, who were always politically active, took part in anti-war protests.*
>
> *Kidman had a strong moral compass. He believed those who struggled in society should be supported by government. He often wrote to senior politicians about injustices he witnessed at the grass roots. ...*

— If Barnett is to be believed (and we think she is), this is pure "gaslighting[cxxiv]" by members of the Pedocracy. —

> *He was open-minded, accepting, kind and caring.*
>
> *Despite his connections he was a very humble man. To his staff, he was a father figure ...*

— *The Herald* allows that Kidman had a "heart" for "young people". —

> *As the importance of early intervention in mental illness came to light, Kidman shifted the focus of the unit to young people and commenced research and clinical programs addressing mental health concerns in this population.*

— For his "accomplishments", he was "Knighted" by the Australian Government. —

> *In 2005 Kidman was made a Member of the Order of Australia for his contribution to clinical psychology.*

The Jesuit-mentored Kidman family weren't the only "celebrities" mentioned by Fiona Barnett.

> *I was trafficked to the USA, to Bohemian Grove where I was drugged & raped by the Rev. Billy Graham – Richard Nixon's pal, in a pink bubble room. I was also made to dress up like a teddy bear and play hide, seek & rape. I also witnessed the ritual murder of a person by politicians dressed up in robes. I was taken via Sydney airport, in a crate like an animal. On the way home I was drugged, raped and beaten at an exclusive, after hours, pedo gathering at Disneyworld.* [852]

With more drawings, Barnett connected the dots between the military, "Intelligence" and the Catholic Church.[cxxv]

Another relocated Lithuanian Nazi abusing children as "science" was Leonas Eugenijus Petrauskas (1919 — 1994). Barnett says he was "Jesuit-trained".[853]

> *A kiddie killing cult underpins the Roman Catholic Church, Engadine BoysTown, Holsworthy Army Base, Lucas Heights nuclear reactor. Here are the only photos I can present as evidence. First we have Leonas Petrauskas (aka Dr. Mark) performing an abortion on me beneath Engadine BoysTown. Next we have the statue of "Dagon" located on the ground floor of the 6-7 story underground facility at Holsworthy, located far from the main entrance gate. Then we have Dagon statue in fish form, kneeling beside a murky pool, on the ground floor of Lucas Heights nuclear reactor. Lucas Heights, like Pine Gap, are CIA facilities where the Jason Project was conducted. Both facilities were built by the same group.*[854]

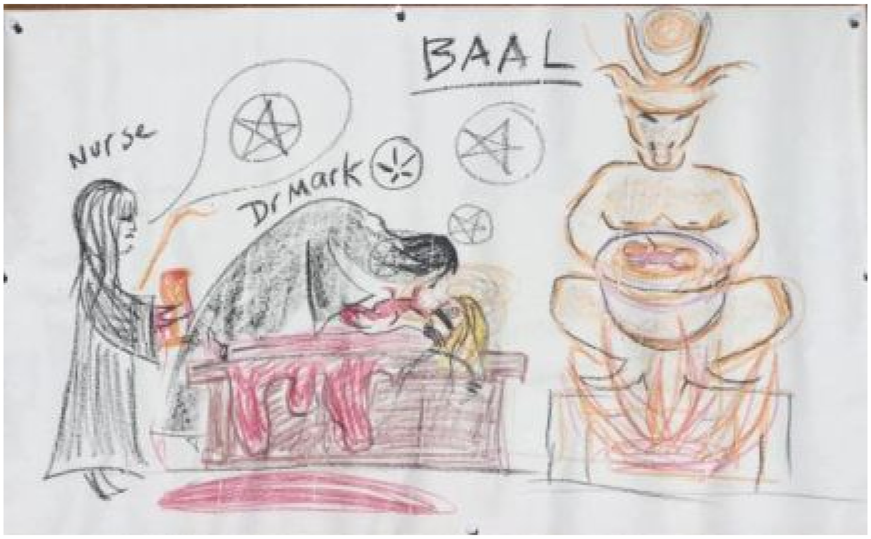

Corroborating Fiona Barnett's disturbing narrative, the Holsworthy Barracks are no more than 20 minutes' drive from Boys' Town Engadine, a.k.a. "the Dunlea Centre".

One of the Chaplains on post was a Roman Catholic priest named Kevin O'Donnell.[855]

Fiona Barnett's blog, "Pedophiles Down Under", lists an account by "James Shanahan",[cxxvi] a purported victim. Accompanying the account are documents that seem to corroborate Shanahan's assertion that the Catholic Church knew all about Kevin O'Donnell. O'Donnell didn't stop at just raping children, he tortured and slaughtered them, as well.

> *While reading this, bear in mind that the Catholic Church has accepted this as true.*
>
> *It was 1961 and I had just turned 11 years old and was attending school at the Christian Brothers' College in East St. Kilda, Melbourne. I was told to leave the classroom one day and go to the brother's quarters to see Fr. Thomas O'Keefe for the purposes of sex education. O'Keefe was the school chaplain and was also the assistant parish priest at Sandringham where I was an altar boy.*
>
> *It was a large dim room. There were tall windows at the end and I could see trees outside bathed in bright summer light. O'Keefe sat next to me and began to fondle me. I focussed on the trees through the window and lost awareness of everything else. I had dissociated. It was something I had learned to do to cope with the violent nature of my home life. This fact was not lost on O'Keefe.*
>
> *Thereafter, he would regularly sexually abuse me and soon introduced me into the Satanic cult he was part of. The particular coven that O'Keefe belonged to was led by another priest, Kevin O'Donnell, best known for his extensive paedophilia. Looking back, it is clear that I was to be trained to take up a leadership role in that cult.*[856]

Dissociation played a key role in the abuse of Shanahan, as it does in "mind control". The two are intermingled by necessity.

> *At 11 years old, I was beyond the usual age to start the indoctrination and programming but I could already dissociate and I was very intelligent and rather outgoing and so was, no doubt, an attractive proposition to them. Dissociation is important to create alter personalities that can be trained to do certain tasks and to contain the memories and programming separate from the rest of the personality. This is easier done the younger the victim is. I could already do that so I was ready to begin the training.*[857]

Again, we read of a connection between the military, "Intelligence" and the Catholic Church.

> *First, I was humiliated and degraded much like happens in army boot-camp only far more obscene. Then I was terrorised using dogs and guns. I was raped on occasions using loaded guns and I was also shot at close range with blank ammunition. On the one hand I was told I was below worthless and could do nothing without the cult and on the other hand I was told I was so powerful bullets couldn't hurt me. The disorientation and terror was used to break down my understanding of the world and my place in it. This was to leave me mentally adrift ready for the next stage.*
>
> *Next came the electro-shock treatment. I was strapped in a heavy chair and given two batons to hold through which the shocks were administered. A bright, dazzling light was placed in front of me. I was subjected to a high pitched noise in my right ear and O'Donnell would yell nonsensical things in my left ear; things like, "God is evil, Satan is good" and "Good is evil and evil is good".*
>
> *Interspersed with these insane back-to-front statements were electro-shocks. I was told that I could not feel them and if I called out, I was further punished. (Some years ago I read descriptions of electro shock treatment employed by the CIA in their MK-Ultra program that was exactly the same as I experienced. There was obviously some connection with the Roman Catholic Church and the CIA).*
>
> *It was all designed to overcome my trust in my own senses and to accept what these priests said as reality. Controlling what people think of as reality is real power.*[858]

It is instructive and important to be exposed to the depth of evil in the Devil's Simulation so we will present one final graphic description because it links an acknowledged pedophile to acts so shocking they seem to not be possible ... but they are.

WARNING: GRAPHIC

> *The most direct demonstration of power over others is the stealing of their lives. There were four murders carried out by Kevin O'Donnell that I witnessed and that I was involved in various ways. ...*

... The first was a young man who was clearly drugged though he was still distressed so presumably was aware of his fate. He was beheaded with an axe. After decapitating the man, O'Donnell rushed in front of the man's severed neck to catch the stream of gushing blood with his mouth. He then came over to me and, dragging me by the hair, pushed my face into the severed neck. I can still feel the hard bony vertebra contrasting with the squishy flesh of the neck against my cheek. I was being "blooded".

The man's head was put on a tray and was passed around the group for them to "Kiss John goodbye". I took it as a mocking salute to the beheading of John the Baptist.

— A central theme in Satanic Gnosticism disavows the
Divinity of Jesus of Nazareth as Son of God and Messiah
and substitutes John the Baptist in His Place.
This is known as Johannism.
It was the true philosophy behind why Templars denied Christ
in their inner rituals. It is clearly still practiced. —

On another occasion, a teenage girl whom I knew, was drugged sufficiently well to show no awareness of her position or fate. She was naked and lying face up on an altar. O'Donnell had his hand over mine and in my hand was a knife. The knife was pressed against the young girl's throat and O'Donnell pressed down on my hand and quickly drew it backwards to slash her throat, killing her in the process. Her breasts were cut off and O'Donnell and O'Keefe proceeded to eat one each. Their faces were pictures of delight.

An infant girl was also killed and I was blamed for her death. I was told by O'Donnell to choose between a young boy, maybe 6 to 8 years old, and the infant girl as to who would die. If I didn't choose, both would be killed. I had already seen O'Donnell kill and had no doubt he would kill both if I did not choose. The boy was looking at me with terror in his eyes and so I chose the infant. Instantly, it seemed, O'Donnell cut the baby's throat. He placed his fingers into the wound and then pushed his blood soaked fingers into my mouth saying, "You killed her".

> *The baby’s body was then cut up as you would joint a chicken. A leg was pushed into my face and I was told to eat it. I refused. The world was spinning around. O’Donnell, wild with rage, brandished his knife in my face and threatened to kill me if I didn’t eat but I was happy to die. I didn’t move or say anything. I had let go of any desire to live.*
>
> *Then, O’Keefe intervened and somehow persuaded O’Donnell to not kill me. I presume it was because others knew I was with O’Keefe and my disappearance would lead directly to him. ...*

— Essential to the Devil’s Simulation is the inverse of Divine qualities; love, empathy, compassion. —

> *The last murder had the most profound effect upon me. I’m sure it was designed to teach me that love kills; that love leads to death. This was Marama. She was a beautiful woman and probably in her early thirties. Her job had been to show kindness towards me and then betray me and this happened repeatedly. “Love is not to be trusted” was the lesson.*
>
> *As planned, I fell in love with her. It was not surprising because, in all my fourteen years, it seemed to me that no one had touched me except to hurt me. Violence had followed me through my life from my family to my school to the cult. What was unplanned by the cult was that Marama developed a love for me. Once O’Donnell knew this, Marama was of no further use to the cult and was a threat to their plans for me.*
>
> *Marama was naked, spread-eagled and chained down on an altar. O’Donnell was in my face yelling at me, “Do you love her?” I was silent. He repeated it many times. Of course, I did love her but I did not know which way would be best to answer as I was fearful for Marama. Finally, I said, “Yes”. O’Donnell then said, “Then, she has to die” and brought down a hatchet onto Marama’s chest.*
>
> *I will leave the description there.*[859]

The Australian Broadcasting Corporation has added some mainstream strengthening to this disturbing narrative.

A violent and abusive priest who allegedly molested the son of cold case murder victim Maria James was never investigated as a potential suspect in her killing.

James, a 38-year-old single mother, was stabbed 68 times in the back of her second-hand bookshop in Thornbury in Melbourne's north in June 1980.

In 2013, her son Adam James revealed he was abused by a local priest, Father Anthony Bongiorno, in the month leading up to his mother's murder.

*Maria James murder***:**

** Stabbed 68 times in her Melbourne home.*
** Hands bound in what police described as a "frenzied attack".*
** Youngest son abused by two local priests.*
** One priest seen covered in blood on day of murder.*

But Adam has told the ABC that on one occasion he was also sexually assaulted by a second priest, Father Thomas O'Keeffe.

Both priests lived and worked at St. Mary's Parish in Thornbury, just around the corner from Maria James' bookshop.

Father Bongiorno was seen with blood on his hands, arm and face around the time of the murder.

Adam, who was 11 at the time, says he told his mother about the abuse, and believed she was going to confront Father Bongiorno.

Police eliminated Father Bongiorno as a suspect in 2015, but won't say how they ruled him out. ...

... police never looked into O'Keeffe, who died in 1984.

Ron Iddles, who has investigated the murder of Maria James for many years, believes she knew her attacker.

The James family were regular attendees at St. Mary's Presbytery — where Father O'Keeffe helped administer Adam's first communion.

Now 48, Adam — who has cerebral palsy and Tourette syndrome — believes he might have been involved in his mother's murder.

Along with his older brother Mark, he is calling on police to investigate Father O'Keeffe as a potential suspect.

While Father Bongiorno was an outspoken public figure, Father O'Keeffe kept a far lower profile.

"I was actually scared of him as a young boy," says Mark James.

"He was the cold, silent one in the background."

— Remember the assertion by University of South Australia Associate Professor Dale Bagshaw that child predators seek and are welcomed into the Catholic Church. —

Father O'Keeffe had a history of violence and sexual abuse even before he became the parish priest at St. Mary's in 1978.

While at Doveton Parish in south-east Melbourne in the 70s, he preyed on young children alongside a group of paedophile priests.

The ABC's Trace podcast has spoken to many of Father O'Keeffe's victims.

James Shanahan was abused by the priest as an 11-year-old at Christian Brothers College in East St. Kilda.

— This is the same James Shanahan who gave a *full* account at "Pedophiles Down Under". —

"O'Keeffe came to my classroom and took me out of it for the purpose of sex education," Mr. Shanahan said.

"We went into the brothers' residential quarters, into a very large room, and he started to fondle me."

"At that point I remember disassociating almost straight away. I remember looking out the window, so very bright sunlight, and I just focused on that and that's mentally where I went."

The abuse continued for three years.

> *Mr. Shanahan detailed the nature of the abuse in a submission to the Catholic Archdiocese of Melbourne in 1999, as part of the Church's Melbourne Response.*
>
> *He described abuse of a violent, sexual, ritualistic, and sadistic nature.*
>
> *The Church-appointed Independent Commissioner, Peter O'Callaghan QC* [Queen's Counsel]*, met with Mr. Shanahan in 2000.*
>
> *In his formal response, Mr. O'Callaghan wrote:*
>
> > *"I am satisfied that Mr. Shanahan was a victim of sexual abuse inter alia by Father Thomas O'Keefe (deceased) substantially in the circumstances described by Mr. Shanahan."*
> >
> > *"I confirm that the events which Mr. Shanahan describes are extraordinary, but I have no reason or justification for doubting his credibility."*
>
> *In 2001, James Shanahan received a letter signed by then Archbishop of Melbourne, George Pell, which read:*
>
> > *"I apologise to you and to those around you for the wrongs and hurt you have suffered at the hands of Father T O'Keefe."*
>
> *Mr. Shanahan received $33,000 in compensation from the Church for the abuse.*
>
> *Speaking to Trace, Mr. Shanahan — now 67 — describes O'Keeffe as a "psychopath". ...*
>
> *James has a memory of his wrists being bound with cord or a rope. On another occasion, James says O'Keeffe threatened him with a knife in his own home.*
>
> *"He raped me and threatened to run me through with this carving knife.*
>
> *"He was out of his mind with rage."*[860]

In 2015, St. Mary's along with five other churches affiliated with Thomas O'Keefe, Kevin O'Donnell and other pedophile priests went up in flames in a series of unexplained fires.[861]

It would seem the “rage” now belongs to the victims.

It is building into a conflagration hot enough to touch Rome.

Chapter 24

Grove Ritual[cxxvii]

1 October 1993: *12 year-old Polly Hannah Klaas is kidnapped from her Petaluma, California home.*

> *And they built the high places of Baal, which are in the valley of the son of Hinnom, to cause their sons and their daughters to pass through the fire unto Molech; which I commanded them not, neither came it into My Mind, that they should do this abomination, to cause Judah to sin.* ~ Jeremiah 32:35, (KJV, capitalization added to correct disrespect)

The "official story" of what happened to Polly Hannah Klaas is immediately suspicious.

> *Twelve-year-old Polly Hannah Klaas was having a slumber party when a strange man holding a knife entered her bedroom, tied up all the girls and put pillow cases over their heads. The intruder then took a sobbing Polly off into the night.*
>
> *Her friends stood back-to-back trying to untie themselves. When that didn't work, one girl was able to bring her hands under her feet to free herself. The girls then awakened Polly's mother, who immediately called the police. ...*
>
> *A stranger had invaded a private home in Petaluma, CA and snatched an innocent child from her very own bedroom. There were witnesses to tell the story. People in her home town and throughout the world helped search for her.* ~ The Polly Klaas Foundation[862]

A home invasion by a stranger who specifically targets only the child who lives there during a "slumber party" filled with other girls her age?

The icon of the "Polly Klaas Foundation" is a large, "adult" compass overlaying a small "child" compass.

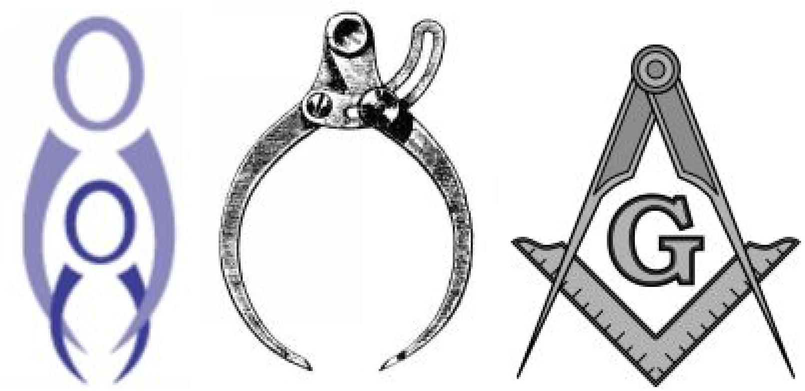

FAIR USE of registered image for illustration.

Polly’s kidnapping received massive media coverage, but little from law enforcement.

> *Over the next two months, about 4,000 people helped search for Klaas.*[3] *TV shows such as 20/20 and America’s Most Wanted covered the kidnapping. An APB (all-points bulletin) with the suspect information was broadcast within 30 minutes of the kidnapping. The broadcast however, only went out over Sonoma County Sheriff’s Channel 1. ~ Wikipedia*[863]

That meant that she was in a secure location, destined for sex abuse, torture and ritual slaughter.

Polly’s father, Marc Klaas, figures prominently in that media coverage from Polly’s kidnapping through today. Each time he gives a statement it is grandiose and laden with emotion.

Polly’s parents divorced when she was 2. She was staying at the home of her mother, Eve Nichol, yet Nichol has been erased from the narrative. Media even goes as far as mislabeling the woman Klaas cohabited with after the divorce, “Violet Cheer”, as Polly’s mother.

Of his marriage, Marc Klaas told the media indelicately—

> *“We had a bad marriage but an extremely successful divorce...” ~ LA Times*[864]

Further digging discloses that Polly was the tie that bonded Klaas to his despised ex-wife.

> *Klaas's first marriage, to hotel assistant personnel director Eve Lax in 1977, was rocky almost from the start. "I was really not a happy soul," says Klaas, a concierge at the same hotel. Although the couple was thrilled with Polly's birth in 1980 — she was conceived in an attempt to save their relationship — Klaas moved out three years later. ~ People*[865]

We must assume that Polly's birth "thrilling the couple" was recounted by Marc Klaas as Eve Nichol (*née* Lax) was never interviewed. Given the massive multiplicity of pieces printed by *People* on Polly, alone, there certainly seemed to be plenty of opportunity.

At no time was Marc Klaas ever questioned in the disappearance of his daughter yet he clearly should've been a prime suspect.

Richard Allen Davis

The main suspect for Polly's kidnapping was Richard Allen Davis.

Davis, like Jeffrey Dahmer, Timothy McVeigh, Lee Harvey Oswald and many other patsies, put himself on the radar of the Elite with military service.

He was also raised in a broken home, albeit one more abusive. When his mother, Evelyn, caught young Richard smoking, she held his fingers over the stove until they blistered.[866]

He soon began taking out his anger on animals, cutting stray dogs and burning cats with kerosene.

Davis soon entered the revolving door of the California penal system; kidnapping, assault with a deadly weapon, armed robbery and burglary.

REWARD
$200,000
KIDNAPPED
Polly Hannah Klaas
SUSPECT
LAST SEEN OCTOBER 1, 1993 IN PETALUMA, CALIFORNIA
If you have any information – please call:
PETALUMA, POLICE: 707-778-4481
OR THE FBI AT 415-553-7400
OR THE POLLY KLAAS SEARCH CTR. 1-800-587-4357 • P.O. BOX 800 • PETALUMA, CA 9495

Although he kidnapped and attacked women on at least three occasions, his attempts at sexually assaulting them were clumsy and ineffective. It is important to note that Richard Davis was never charged with a sex crime.

On the night Poly Klaas was kidnapped, Davis drove his car into a ditch in Santa Rose, 20 miles from Petaluma. Sheriff’s deputies helped the ex-con extricate his car and, even though they found an open can of beer, and their background check disclosed his prison record, sent Davis on his way.

> *... in July 1993, he took up residence at Turning Point, a San Mateo homeless shelter. On Sept. 23 he secured permission to visit his sister Darlene’s family near Ukiah, about 100 miles north of San Francisco. Just over a week later, on Oct. 1, he made his way to Petaluma, a pleasant town of 46,000 where his mother apparently was living, and found his way to the cozy two-bedroom home where Polly Klaas lived.*
>
> *No one is sure just why Davis chose Polly — or, once he did, why he killed her. Davis’s attorney has said that he had come to Petaluma to find his mother to borrow money. Davis has claimed that he was under the influence of drugs and alcohol and that he picked the Klaas home at random. ~ People*[867]

“Where his mother apparently was living”? Were the “journalists” at *People* unable to do their job ... or unwilling?

“Made his way...” San Mateo is roughly 70 miles and an hour and a half by car from Petaluma.

At first, Davis vociferously denied any involvement in the crime. His near constant state of inebriation made him unable to think or remember clearly.

> *It was two months before detectives zeroed in on Davis and wrung a confession from him. By then the case had captivated the nation like no other before it. ~ San Francisco Chronicle*[868]

Helping to “ring” the confession from Davis was the Federal Bureau of Investigation. Although Polly had not been taken across state lines, she fell into the murky jurisdictional boundary of being a missing child “of tender years”. This is an extremely helpful clause given the FBI’s role in facilitating child sex slave trafficking.

After his “confession”, Davis supposedly led authorities to Polly’s body in a field near Cloverdale. She was partly dressed, badly decomposed and had been beheaded.[869]

“*No one is sure just why Davis chose Polly — or, once he did, why he killed her.*”

Indeed. Motive and methodology made Davis an unlikely suspect. It should’ve been a potent defense. Instead, Davis’ court-appointed lawyer left him behind and quickly betrayed him to the Prosecution.

> *Davis’s court-appointed attorney, Barry Collins, has conceded to jurors in San Jose that Davis killed Polly Klaas, Davis has pleaded not guilty to the murder — and to the additional charges of burglary, kidnapping, robbery and performing a lewd act on a child. ~ People*[870]

Three Strikes

As we’ve seen, prisons are just as important a source of children for the Pedocracy as are orphanages and foster homes.

But they’re also a source of wealth to the Elite and the imbalance of justice serves their purpose for societal chaos. Suspects convicted of “light” crimes are given heavy sentences yet those who commit heinous acts are given light ones. Monsters are turned back into the populace and chance criminals are turned into monsters.

In 2011, Luzerne County, Pennsylvania Judge Mark Ciavarella Jr. was caught earning over $1 million in graft, redirecting juveniles that were unlucky enough to stand before him to private prisons where they were “taken care of.”[871] Ciavarella was arraigned in Scranton, home of “Scranton University” — another school with a public-sounding name but a Jesuit administration.

> *Ciavarella is a lifelong resident of Wilkes-Barre, Pennsylvania, having been raised in the East End section of the city and attending St. Mary’s* [Roman Catholic] *High School. After graduating from the local King’s College he attended* [private Roman Catholic] *Duquesne University School of Law, receiving his law degree in 1975. Ciavarella entered private legal practice, becoming a partner in the firm of Lowery, Ciavarella and Rogers. From 1976 to 1978 he was city solicitor and then from 1978 until 1995 he served as solicitor for the city zoning board. In 1995 he ran for judge in Luzerne County on the Democratic ticket and was elected to a ten-year term. He was re-elected to a second ten-year term in 2005. Ciavarella was also active in several civic and Catholic organizations. He was married to the former Cindy Baer and the couple have three children.[1] They separated on September 15, 2010, and on May 2013 she filed for divorce.[6] ~ Wikipedia*[872]

To add to the chaos, Polly’s kidnapping and murder was used to rescue the stalled “Three Strikes” bill in the California Legislature. It quickly passed.

California is a state completely controlled by Roman Catholic Democrats (many of them voters, yet not registered citizens). It produced a justice system that repeatedly put violent felons back on the streets.[cxxviii]

With the advent of “Three Strikes” the pendulum was thrown to the opposite extreme, equally poisonous to the populace.

Years later, the “political strategist” who authored “Three Strikes”, Daniel Newman, has been forced to admit its misuse.

He used intriguing examples to do so.

> *Horrific events — even national tragedies such as Sept. 11 and Pearl Harbor — often lead well-intentioned people to rush through poorly drafted policies with some unintended consequences ... ~ San Francisco Chronicle*[873]

No Klaas

As the *Chronicle* noted, Polly was called *"'America's Child' by everyone from President Bill Clinton to Johnny Cash*".[874]

Richard Davis was labeled "*the real-life bogeyman*".[875]

Interestingly, it's the same phrase used to describe West Memphis Three suspect "Damien" Echols.

After the kidnapping and ritual killing of his daughter, Marc Klaas has enjoyed celebrity and wealth that allowed him to quit his job at Hertz Rental.

> *Now her father, with a dedication that even he concedes borders on obsession, is on a crusade to rid the streets of the sort of habitual criminal who, police say, confessed to the kidnaping and murder.*
>
> *Having abandoned the workaday world he inhabited until the night Polly vanished ... [h]e has hobnobbed with Hollywood stars and met with the President in the White House. He has testified before Congress, become a fixture on morning network news, and even produced stories on missing children for a nationally syndicated TV news magazine. ...*
>
> *Emerging from a West Los Angeles theater after the premiere of "Little Women," a film dedicated to his slain daughter, Klaas squinted into the flashing lights of photographers snapping pictures of the movie's stars and prepared to make his way to a post-premiere party at a studio down the block.*
>
> *As Klaas crossed the street, a woman pressed against a barrier and extended a notebook and pen.*

> *“Can I have your autograph?” she asked. An embarrassed Klaas obliged. California’s best-known grieving father, he is recognized almost everywhere he goes.*
>
> *He uses his celebrity—indeed, depends on it—to gain access to the famous and the powerful, people in positions to help him enact his agenda. That night in Los Angeles, Klaas was accompanied by a publicist he hired to help him arrange interviews. ~ Los Angeles Times*[876]

With his money and celebrity, Klaas was able to create the “Polly Klaas Foundation”. Yet his irascible and intemperate behavior forced his own board to fire him!

When Klaas finally married his “partner” Violet Cheer at a ceremony undisclosed by the media, the presiding “official”, one “Michael Groves”, was told to state— *“In Polly’s name, I now pronounce you husband and wife...” ~ People*[877]

Given that Polly was an unwanted child from a previous marriage, one wonders at the mental disposition of Marc Klaas’ partner, Violet Cheer (who allowed him to cohabitate with her for 10 years before finally uttering the words every woman wants to hear).

The mental disposition and even sexuality of someone like Mark Klaas is of extreme importance when questioning his involvement in the disappearance of his daughter. Information from family can be telling in this regard.

In August of 1994—

> *Marc’s brother Jonathan died at 35 of complications from AIDS... ~ People*[878]

An early death from AIDS is often indicative of an aberrant sexual lifestyle. *People*, however, didn’t see the need to elucidate further.

The religious affiliations of either of Polly’s parents have been kept well-hidden by the media but clues were allowed to slip through.

> *Polly’s maternal grandfather, Eugene Reed, a Jewish immigrant from Austria, told jurors he had lived through the Holocaust and the*

> *bombing of London during World War II, but that nothing in his life compared to the loss of his granddaughter.*
>
> *He and his wife survived those tragedies, he said, "only in our old age to be hit by this devastating nightmare." ~ San Francisco Chronicle*[879],[cxxix]

Where Polly's memorial was in 1993 and who attended was extremely telling.

> *More than 1,500 mourners said farewell to Polly Klaas on Thursday night, part in tribute to her brief life and part in pledge that her death would not be wasted.*
>
> *"Tonight, we continue to remember Polly, whose life and death have brought our entire community to an all-new height of caring and love for one another, a very mighty legacy for a 12-year-old girl to have given us," said the Rev. George Risden, pastor of St. Vincent de Paul Church.*
>
> *Many of those crowded into the Roman Catholic church had never met Polly, but her kidnapping at a slumber party on Oct. 1 gave rise to an extraordinary search by this farming town that drew the attention of the nation.*
>
> *President Clinton sent a message of sympathy to the parents of Polly, whose body was found on Dec. 4. Joan Baez opened the memorial by singing "Amazing Grace." Other mourners included Gov. Pete Wilson, Senators Barbara Boxer and Dianne Feinstein, the author Ram Dass and the actress Winona Ryder. ~ The New York Times*[880]

Recall the estimates: ***800,000*** children go missing each year, ***2,000 a day***. Was the "tribute" truly to Polly, or to her chosen sacrifice to the Pedocracy?

Child actress Winona Ryder attended Petaluma Junior High as did Polly. Her frequent "photo ops" sometimes were filled with tears. As to whether they were tears of empathy, tears of an actress playing a role or the tears of a girl equally abused, it is difficult to tell.

Like Polly’s maternal grandfather, Ryder, Senator Dianne Feinstein and many others at the memorial were / are Jewish yet they seemed quite at home in St. Vincent de Paul Cathedral.

Bohemian

In October of 2000, alternative radio personality Alex Jones released the “documentary” *Dark Secrets: Inside Bohemian Grove*.

Jones purportedly crashed the remote retreat to secretly record a ceremony called “The Cremation of Care” — a supposed “mock” child sacrifice to what appeared to be the ancient pagan deity “Moloch” (in his “owl” form). The participants were dressed in druidic robes.

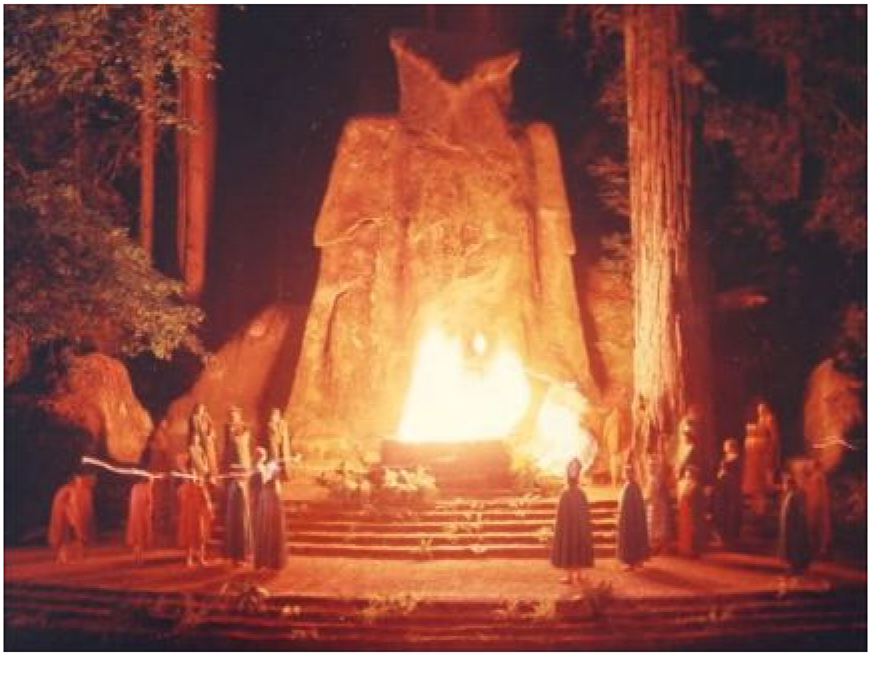

> *Proof that Luciferians run the world system of “Mystery Babylon” can be found in their secret assemblies like the Bohemian Grove and the*

> *Bilderberg Group.*
>
> *Both Bohemian Grove and the Bilderberg Group are gatherings of the most powerful people in the world that are completely free of media scrutiny — never a good sign. ...*
>
> *Bohemian Grove is a scenic retreat located in Monte Rio, California and has been frequented by every Republican in high office in the past 100 years and more than a few Democrats as well.*[1518] ~ *Illuminati Unmasked*[881]

The idea that the world's Elite — led by the highest officials within the United States — would participate in such a ceremony has shocked even the most ardent members of the "Truth Community".

Worse, purported victims such as Paul Bonacci, Cathy O'Brien, David Shurter and Fiona Barnett have claimed that the Alex Jones documentary is a whitewash. According to them, children are regularly raped, tortured and ritually slaughtered at the Grove.

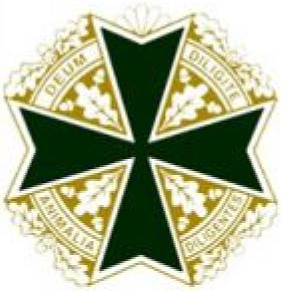

Shurter adamantly proclaims that it is impossible to "crash" the Grove — an assertion that is intuitively true.

Both the Bohemian Club and Bohemian Grove are controlled by the "International Order of St. Hubertus". The Order is a Roman Catholic organization of Knights founded 1695 by Count Franz Anton von Sporck of Bohemia (the modern Czech Republic).

The Bohemian Club maintains a posh, private facility in the Union Square district of San Francisco — a Roman Catholic city not known for "traditional values". Like Scranton, San Francisco is dominated by the Jesuits out of a public-sounding University of San Francisco.

As invitees enter Bohemian Grove, they are met by a statue of “Saint John of Nepomuk”. Original accounts of his death are related to political intrigue but they were later expanded upon to include an ignoble death from refusing to breach the “sanctity” of “confession”.

> *Saint John of Nepomuk (c. 1345 – March 20, 1393)[2] is the saint of Bohemia (Czech Republic), who was drowned in the Vltava river at the behest of Wenceslaus, King of the Romans and King of Bohemia. Later accounts state that he was the confessor of the queen of Bohemia and refused to divulge the secrets of the confessional. On the basis of this account, John of Nepomuk is considered the first martyr of the Seal of the Confessional, a patron against calumnies and, because of the manner of his death, a protector from floods and drowning.[2] ~ Wikipedia*[882]

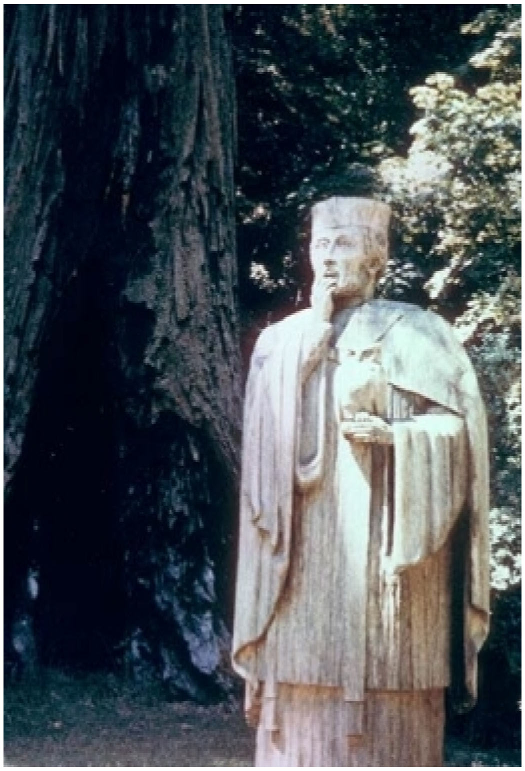

One can easily see the perverse applications of such a figure at that location, especially given the double-meaning of the term “Bohemian” to be code for hedonism.

Putting a finger to the lips is also Luciferian code that intuitively implies “conspiracy”.

The overt Catholicism of the Grove has been as lost on mainstream and alternative media as has been the location of the Grove — ***33*** miles north of where Polly Klaas was abducted from her mother’s home in Petaluma.

The Grove is almost half the distance to Polly’s location verses the San Mateo halfway house Richard Davis was staying in. In fact, the Grove and Petaluma even reside in the same County of Sonoma.

How these facts went “unnoticed” by conspiracy theorists like “Alex Jones” can be answered by the same assertion of how he got his film footage...

— He was invited.

Chapter 25

River’s End

31 October 1993, “Halloween”: *22 year-old “River Phoenix” (born River Jude Bottom)dies from a simultaneous ingestion of heroin, cocaine and Valium.*

How the drugs got into the system of the vegetarian health enthusiast should have been more questioned than it was.

photo by Alan Light

By now, the parameters of the Devil’s Simulation have become more familiar to us.

* A “Faustian bargain”...a “deal with the Devil”.
* Is the subject willing to use or be used by others?
* What is the subject willing to do to advance themselves?
* Sexual deviancy?
* Homosexuality? Gender confusion (either from trauma or willfully striven for) is indicative.
* Rape? Inappropriate seduction qualifies, especially when aided by narcotics, hypnosis, etc.
* Abuse of a child?
* Abuse a child so young they are completely unaware of sex and have no sexual appeal? (to normal human beings)
* Kill an animal? (particularly one that is helpless)
* Murder a human being?
* Torture something innocent and defenseless?

As we see the same names in popular culture rotating before us it is made clear: they have participated to some degree in the Devil’s Simulation — even if a reliable-source accusation isn’t readily available.

Few venues make this more illustrative than “entertainment”; particularly television and film (but also music).

River Jude Bottom didn’t skyrocket through child acting from obscurity. He was victimized by the Children of God cult; an offering from his “hippie” parents John Lee Bottom and Arlyn Phoenix (likely with his siblings — Joaquin, Rain, Summer and Liberty[cxxx]).

Although Jews are the favorite patsies of Luciferians who run the Devil’s Simulation, Biblical, Protestant Christianity is their most hated enemy. At every opportunity, they cultivate and enable agents of subterfuge.

Such an agent was David Brandt Berg (1919 – 1994). Berg was born in Oakland, California of Jewish blood and a tumultuous “Christian” upbringing.

> *Virginia Brandt Berg, David Berg’s mother, is the individual whom he credited for influencing him the most. Although raised in a Christian home, Virginia became an atheist and wild society girl during her college years. However, shortly after the birth of her first child, she broke her back in an accident and spent the next five years as a bedridden invalid, often hovering near death. Eventually she recovered and spent the rest of her life with her husband, Hjalmer, in active Christian service as a pastor and evangelist. ~ Wikipedia*[883]

From “wild society girl” to “pastor” with a broken back, Virginia Berg was neither conventional mother nor conventional Christian — especially in the 1920’s and 30’s.[cxxxi]

Schizophrenic Christianity would define David Berg for the rest of his life, especially when he started “The Family”.

“The Family” began as a pseudo-Christian hippie commune in 1968 (thanks to Jesuit counter-culture influence) and within two years, Berg was in Italy getting plugged in to a powerful Italian family and having a nun guide “The Family” into a Papal audience.

> *One of the first Italian converts was Emanuele Canevaro, scion of a noble family from Florence, who later was referred to as “our Italian*

> *king" in one of David Berg's visions and who put his Bassetto farm in Poggio Secco near Florence at the group's disposal. Canevaro's farm was later the home of the first Montessori school of the Children of God in Italy...*
>
> *On Easter Sunday April 22, 1972 Faith* [Berg's daughter] *and her group gathered with the crowd in St. Peter's Square to hear Pope Paul VI. ... Although at the time the Children of God had only six members in Italy, they attracted the attention of a group of Little Sisters of Jesus, a female Roman Catholic order of nuns devoted to radical poverty and already active with the hippies. One of them, Sister Magedlena, proved a long-lasting friend of the group and rendered to the Children of God a number of important services in the following years.* ~ CESNUR[884]

By this time, Berg was completely deluded; calling himself "Moses David" and writing "epistles" of requirements and "revelations" which he called "Mo Letters".

Being empowered by the Papacy excited the pariah but he knew not he was simply being moved like a pawn on a chess board of chaos.

> *Prospects seemed reasonably bright... He was enthusiastic enough about Italy to write one of the MO Letters, **Arrivederci Roma**, where he reported the vision of a river — God's will — coming down from Northern Europe to Italy... He went on to comment that the Children of God were "now beginning to invade the Catholic countries" where they would have to show themselves to be "pro-Catholic", to the point of honouring the Pope ("kiss the Pope's foot, if necessary") and attend the Catholic mass. Rome thus became a critically important city: "All roads lead to Rome, they say, but we are going to find, God Willing, that all roads lead from Rome and through Rome!". Berg mentioned Emanuele and Sister Maddalena in the letter...*[885]

By "kissing the Pope's foot", Berg was given special access to "Catholic countries".

Berg was hooked like a "flirty fish".

> *Although some of the suggestions to behave like good Catholics in Italy may simply sound like public relations strategies, Berg was at that time engaged in a re-evaluation of Roman Catholicism, and in another letter of September 1972 — published under the title* ***Are the Children of God Catholics or Protestants?*** *— he concluded that "surely we Children of God have more in common with the Catholics than with the Protestants."*[3][886]

Masters of espionage (having conducted it for *centuries*), the Romans boosted the cult while maintaining "plausible deniability". "Sister Magedlena" guided the fledgling group (minus its scion founder) through a *general audience* with Giovanni Battista Enrico Antonio Maria Montini, a.k.a. Pope Paul VI.

> *On October 4, 1972, Sister Magedlena accompanied Faith and six other Children of God (small children included) to Pope Paul VI's general audience. At the end of his speech the Pope passed through the crowded hall and gave to the assembled faithful, including Sister Maddalena and Faith, his hands to kiss. An excited Faith reported in a MO Letter dated October 1972 that the Pope put his hand on her head twice and said to her (in Italian) "God bless you," and the Letter carried photographs of the Pope placing his hand on the head of a little baby from the group (today a grown-up member of The Family) and blessing a group including Faith, and of Faith playing guitar with a smiling Sister Magedlena.*[887]

It is not uncommon for a "general audience" to reach 400,000 (as Jesuit Pope Francis entertained in August 2015[888]), yet the tiny cult was able to be directly blessed by Paul VI twice[cxxxii] thanks to their helpful guide.

Soon "The Family" was enabled with the finances and licensing to start a coffee house and even a disco in the most important city in the world.

> *A small coffee house was opened in the center of Rome where the Children of God tried to attract young people from the hippie subculture. In 1974 they added a disco in Via della Farnesina in an old warehouse (the place has now been converted to an Italian public television's storehouse), later called by different names, including the*

> *O.K. Club. With the disco came real success for the Italian Children of God (who in 1974 had also started distributing MO Letters in the streets). The disco became popular and was attended by hundreds of young people; the success enabled the Children of God to expand their missionary activities all over Italy and to open a second coffee house in Via Melzo in Milan. When the press campaign against the movement began in 1978*[cxxxiii] *there were around 300 Italian Children of God (including foreigners living in Italy), and some Italian members had started missionary activities in other countries.*[889]

With Rome’s goal being to discredit Christianity by projecting her own crimes upon Christians, “The Family” was an investment that paid high dividends.

Despite his Jewish background (or because of it), Berg railed against blacks and Jews.

This tactic is an important part of Roman occupation — divide and conquer. It may even have been taught to Berg.

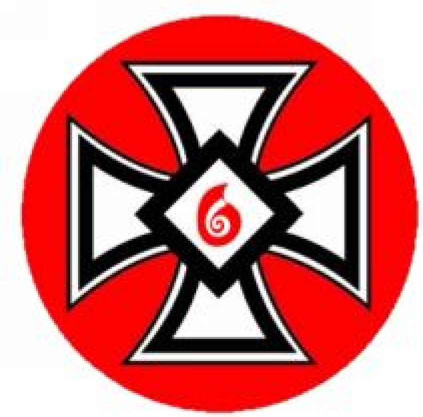

Other agents like the Ku Klux Klan seek cover with feigned hatred of Roman Catholics yet they proudly wear the Maltese crosses of dutiful Papal Knights.

The KKK was founded by Confederate General Albert Pike. Pike was a high Freemason who was “handled” by Jesuit Pierre-Jean de Smet (1801 – 1873) — one of the most powerful men in America at that time and the most powerful west of the Mississippi.

Perhaps Klansmen, more than the average agent of the Papacy know their place in the Devil’s Simulation — hence the Satanic “6” in the center of their “Iron Cross”.

David Berg controlled his adherents with harsh discipline and Satanic deviancy. Children were communal property and often passed around for sexual gratification.

> *Born into an evil cult, called the Children of God, sisters Celeste, Kristina and Juliana Jones were abused from the age of three. Torn from their parents, their childhood was dominated by the warped cult leader David Berg.*
>
> *...sexual grooming was an everyday part of my life.*
>
> *Sickeningly, the cult leader David Berg, or “Mo” as he called himself, claimed that God intended everyone to become part of a sexual experience. The result was a childhood of abuse and pain. ...*
>
> *Discipline was strict. Reveille was at 7.30am, and after breakfast, I’d go to our communal school. We were shown illustrated stories which were often filled with scenes of explicit sex, nudity or gruesome demons.*
>
> *When I was six, Berg requested the women to dance naked for him on the video which I still have today. I watched the women, then the other girls, strip and dance. Then a white veil was tied around my neck, which I was supposed to take off during the dance, and Paul gave directions from behind the camera: “Wiggle nicely and rub your bottom, honey.”*
>
> *I simply copied the motions I had seen the adult women perform earlier. “Good, very good! Now blow kisses,” he said. Watching it now makes me feel physically sick. Nude pictures were taken of us girls on a regular basis and sent to Berg. ...*
>
> *Once a week, our commune would gather for a dance night, and the adults — all those over the age of 12 — paired off for sex.*

> *Meanwhile, during the day, everything would stop for so-called "Cuddle Time" — a euphemism for group sex.*
>
> *I remember lying horrified in the clutches of my teacher, Johnny Appleseed (some of the cult members took stupid, folksy names), while other adults were having sex around us. When he finished assaulting me, he said a prayer as I lay in terror...*
>
> *...we moved to a communal house rented by the sect and were ordered to change our names...*

— Meaning those involved knew there was a need to make it difficult to be found by authorities. — *Families were separated all the time. When I was eight, the leaders decided to keep me apart from Dad, and only let me see him once a week, while other couples helped to raise me.*

— Another premeditated tactic of conditioning, as were non-sensical dictums. — *Berg decided we were all to use spoons, instead of forks. We could not use black pepper, women could not wear jeans, and men replaced their briefs with boxer shorts just because he expressed his dislike for them. Fruit and vegetables had to be soaked in salt water for 20 minutes — which made them taste awful.*

The most culpable criminals in the cult weren't the leaders, but the adult parents who willingly subjected their children to abuse.

> *When I was 11 years old,* [Family leader] *Paul* [Peloquin] *decided that my best friend Armi and I had to have sex with two boys, Patrick and Nicki, aged 12 and nine. This was to happen once a week.*
>
> *Armi and I were also "scheduled" with the adult men — sex with men old enough to be my father.*
>
> *It was an horrific assault on my prepubescent body, but I had to bear it; I was powerless to stop it. Now, when I look back at the terrible things that were done to me, I see that my father should have done something to stop it, but he didn't.*

> *How could a man stand by while his 11-year-old daughter was effectively raped by another man? ~ Daily Mail*[890]

Her father was willing to offer up his little girl so that his own lusts could be indulged.

The children and women were told to help recruit new members by offering their bodies to them; a process Berg disturbingly called “Flirty-Fishing”.

Apparently, it worked well.

> *The former Fleetwood Mac band member Jeremy Spencer was a member of the cult. On the regular dates we had, he would play a tape of saxophone music. The routine was, by now, familiar — undress, pray, kiss and then perform lewd acts for him.*[891]

The mother of Celeste Jones found the partial courage to leave and take sister Kristina and brother David leaving Celeste and Juliana to the cult’s “care”.

> *At 14, I learned that my mother and 12-year-old sister Kristina — whom I had not seen for many years — had left the cult. Kristina had been sexually abused from the age of three by my mother’s second partner Joshua, and then other men from the cult.*[892]

Again, the searing of conscience required to molest, violate and sexually assault a toddler is an act that puts one in league with the most evil of beings. Given that such are the likes who control access to power, that is what one is usually granted.

Perhaps it is understandable that the mother of Celeste Jones wasn’t able to boldly rebel. She had been indoctrinated since her own teenage years. Showing the power of the cult, she was recruited out of an un-named English school “The Family” was given access to for that purpose.

> *Rebecca was recruited during a visit to her school by the Children of God when she was just 16, and married our father a year later in 1974.*[893]

“Rebecca” was then provided some press coverage in England to voice the crimes of the “Christian cult”. Celeste was “trained” by cult leaders and sent to England from her commune in Bombay, India (a location with less visibility for committing crime).

> *The leaders of the cult who had accompanied me made me draft an affidavit stating that I hadn’t been abused as a child. Lying on a desk, I found another affidavit which Kristina had written, saying she had been abused from the age of three by grown men including her stepfather.*
>
> *I felt physically sick and I knew instantly that she wasn’t lying because I had suffered the same abuse. But I was too scared to leave The Family — it was the only world I knew.*
>
> *Over the next year and a half, I appeared on a number of television programmes, including Sky News and the BBC, to deny the stories my mother and Kristina were openly talking about.*[894]

At the time, Sky News was run by Knight of Malta Rupert Murdoch.

Fifty years hence, media still hangs the outrages of the *Catholic* “Family” on Christianity.

> *Because of the cult’s Christian fundamentalist underpinnings, members were forbidden from using any form of contraception. Not surprisingly, there were plenty of children born out of the Children of God.* ~ The Canadian Broadcasting Corporation, 2016[895]

The CBC highlighted the experiences of former Family member Jerry Golland — a Jew who worked for Catholics.

> *Golland, 69, also grew up in Montreal, raised in a secular Jewish family. A little over a year ago he retired from a teaching position with the Ottawa Catholic School Board.*[896]

Golland then admitted being a willing agent of the cult for two decades, preying upon the vulnerable.

> *“I was so ingrained not to be religious, I had always mocked it all my life. And then 40 or 50 people, I heard this music coming from the*

> *park, and standing all around me [were people] saying, 'Hey, come with us, come on our bus, you can come home with us.'"*
>
> *He says in different times he would have run like hell, but he was at the end of his rope.*
>
> *"Nothing attracted me to them," Golland said. "They scraped me off the street."*
>
> *He would spend the next 20 years as a member of the cult, always on the lookout for vulnerable people — people just like himself — to recruit.*
>
> *"We'd learn to spot, you know ... those eyes, that person, there is a vulnerable person. We called them sheep. He's a real sheep as opposed to someone who was more antagonistic — he was a wolf."*[897]

Another former member, Danielle Fortin, recounted her "wild" youth. In Catholic Spain, "The Family" lured her with Christian terminology that was nothing less than sinister.

> *She describes being "wild" in her youth, and that included taking hard-core drugs. ...*
>
> *Fortin's first exposure to the Children of God came in the mid-1970s. She was hooked on heroin, unhappy with her life and looking for meaning. She recounts going to Spain on impulse during a drug-fueled binge.*
>
> *"And there was some people singing on the street, three or four guys singing, 'You got to be a baby to go to heaven.' And at that time my state of mind was, 'Wow! Can I be a baby and go to heaven?' And they told me yes — if I receive Jesus into my heart."*[898]

Another hit piece was put forth by *Salon* magazine. Author Mary Mahoney told the harrowing story of rebelling against her good Roman Catholic family to join the "Christian" Children of God cult.

> *I grew up in suburban Washington, D.C., the youngest of seven children in a comfortably middle-class Catholic home. We must have looked like the perfect family. My parents were leaders of the*

> *Charismatic group at their large church. Our house was clean – almost sterile. ...*
>
> *I was trying to find my path in life, and I thought this might be it. Here was a group of dedicated Christian young people determined to return to the pure roots of Christianity by living communally and sharing all things. I felt loved and accepted, and was welcomed into the fold as a new “babe” in Christ. Born again. I didn’t see this as a “cult”; I saw it as a chance to live an honorable life of service to God and others. And I was so young. What did I know about how the world worked? ... I had no idea I was walking into a nightmare. ...*
>
> *Like St. Francis of old, I saw myself as a committed follower of Christ. I saw this as my “new family.” ...*[899]

But even the terminology of the cult was *Catholic*, and not “Christian”.

> *In 1976, I was taking care of the children of COG “Archbishops” in a secret Commune in Pennsylvania.*
>
> *... free sex and no birth control were seen as the only way to please the Lord.*[900]

Apparently that didn’t ring a bell with Miss Mahoney — or it did and she kept it to herself for the purpose of her *Salon* propaganda.

The application of extreme sexual perversion to Jesus Christ can rightly be termed “Jesuitical”.

> *At 20 I lost my virginity Flirty Fishing a Middle-Eastern gentleman – all for the cause of Christ, of course.*[901]

Miss Mahoney even managed to take a swipe against mistrust of vaccines.

> *Our unvaccinated children came down with whooping cough, and then later measles, rubella and mumps. After months of quarantine to contain the spread, the leader moved her children away.*[902]

Certainly, if governments can kidnap children off the street to torture them, turn them into sex slaves and sometimes ritually kill them for Satan, misuse of vaccines is far from an outrageous concern.

Actress Rose McGowan has appeared in such classics as “Going All the Way”, “Devil in the Flesh”, “Monkeybone” and “The Black Dahlia”. She also played an alluring witch on the Warner Brothers TV series “Charmed”.

McGowan’s American father ran a Children of God chapter in a well-known European location.

> *McGowan, the second-eldest of six children (plus two half-siblings), was born in Certaldo, Italy, the daughter of Terri, a former writer and Microsoft employee, and Daniel McGowan, who worked as a commercial artist.[1] Her parents were American, and she has Irish and French ancestry.[2] Daniel McGowan ran an Italian chapter of the Children of God, to which both he and his wife held membership until 1978.[3] McGowan spent her early childhood amid the group’s communes, often traveling through Europe with her parents.[2] When interviewed by Howard Stern in 2001, she stated she had avoided the group’s calls for members to become sexually active as children, and stated that she never personally experienced abuse as a child.[1] Through her father’s art contacts in Italy, McGowan became a child model and appeared in* ***Vogue Bambini*** *and various other Italian magazines.*
>
> *Her parents returned to the United States when she was ten years old, settling in Eugene, Oregon.[2][4] ~ Wikipedia*[903]

Hollywood star Rose McGowan’s mother was a Microsoft writer in Italy and her “connected artist” father ran the Children of God chapter.

McGowan claims she was never molested. Subsequently, she seems to have developed into perfect normalcy.

> *McGowan had a wayward childhood, living as a teenage runaway in Portland, Oregon and associating with a group of drag queens in the city.[2][5] ~ Wikipedia*[904]

> *McGowan recalls that* “[returning with family to America] *was not an easy assimilation” into the mainstream way of life. “My brothers and*

> *sisters, we thought everyone was boring."*
>
> *Many years later, she returned to the small town in Italy with her then-boyfriend, rocker Marilyn Manson. "We created quite a stir," she admits. ~ People*[905]

If anyone epitomizes of "normalcy" it's Brian Hugh "Marilyn Manson" Warner.

> *Manson was born in Canton, Ohio. He is the only son of Barbara Warner Wyer and Hugh Angus Warner.[37] He is of German, English and Irish descent.[38] In an August 12, 2015 interview, Warner claimed that his Appalachian family also has "Sioux" heritage.[39] In his autobiography* ***The Long Hard Road Out of Hell****, he detailed his grandfather's alleged sexual fetishes, including bestiality and sadomasochism.*
>
> *As a child, he attended his mother's Episcopal church, though his father was a Roman Catholic.[40][41] ~ Wikipedia*[906]

"Manson" used his Catholic father's influence to become a "Satanist". His former girlfriend, Rose McGowan, claimed she was more fervent at it than he was.[907]

Is "Satanism" the religion Rose McGowan most identifies with or is there another?

Marilyn Manson, ComicVine

In 2008, McGowan was in England filming "Fifty Dead Men Walking"; a movie about Irish Catholic petty criminal Martin McGartland who was turned by the Royal Ulster Constabulary to be a snitch against the Irish Republican Army. After the film was released, McGowan told media that she would've been happy to have joined the IRA during the height of bloodshed in Belfast.[908]

Brian “Marilyn Manson” Warner is in tight with another Hollywood personality.

> *Johnny Depp reportedly used Manson as his inspiration for his performance as Willy Wonka in the film* ***Charlie and the Chocolate Factory****... ~ Wikipedia*[909]

Although Rose McGowan seems to have enjoyed her “non-traditional” past and the boost the Children of God gave her into stardom, another former member didn’t fare quite as well.

At 1 a.m. on Halloween in 1993, River Phoenix lay in convulsions on the sidewalk of the Sunset Strip in Los Angeles. Before the turn of the hour, doctors would pronounce him dead.

Media later claimed that his death was due to ingesting heroin, cocaine and Valium dissolved into a drink — an extremely dangerous combination.

It was spun as just another drug overdose in Hollywood. In fact, the concoction even has a name (a “speedball”) implying that the rich and famous do them all the time.

However, although Phoenix may have experimented with drugs, those who knew him were shocked that he would’ve died in such a manner.

> *The sudden death of someone young, talented and apparently healthy is always shocking; in Phoenix’s case, it seemed doubly so. Given his reputation as a clean-living vegetarian and a passionately serious artist, Phoenix seemed an unlikely candidate for dying young from living fast. The disbelief of friends, fans and colleagues was expressed by Phoenix’s maternal grandmother, Margaret Dunetz, who, two days after her grandson’s death, was still unable to refer to him in the past tense. “I’m in shock,” she said. “I can’t describe what a wonderful kid he is. I can’t understand why—how—it could happen.”*
>
> *For now, the cause of Phoenix’s death remains officially undetermined. A spokesman for the L.A. coroner’s office said its autopsy was “inconclusive.” ~ People*[910]

This didn’t stop the media from pushing the image that River Phoenix was a drug addict.

In fact, not only was he not, he may even have “had religion” — which would’ve put him high on the hit list of the Devil’s Simulation.

> *While* ***Sneakers***[cxxxiv] *shot in Los Angeles, River stayed at Flea’s house* [Red Hot Chili Peppers basist Michael “Flea” Balzary]. *The bassist was out of town on tour, but plenty of his friends still came around, giving River easy access to whatever drug he wanted, including heroin. Not that it was all party time: one disagreement led to a drug buddy chasing River through the house with a butcher’s knife.*
>
> *Soon after that incident, River’s former tutor Dirk Drake came to visit and was extremely concerned by the heroin situation. He told River that he was “furious about the glamour those friends attached to scag.”*
>
> *To which River replied, “Don’t worry, I have the fear of God.”*
>
> *That infuriated Drake, who suggested that River should change careers from actor to Baptist preacher. ~ Vanity Fair*[911]

Where was Phoenix when he received the deadly concoction?

— In the “Viper Room”: a private lounge for Los Angeles Elite.

The owner of the Viper Room is Johnny Depp.

Chapter 26

Maddie

3 May 2007: *Four year old Madeleine Beth McCann "disappears" from a holiday apartment in Praia da Luz, Portugal.*

Immediately after the disappearance of Madeleine McCann was reported to the police in Portugal, her parents Gerald and Kate McCann became suspects (as they should have been).

Over time, however, the British media pushed a relentless campaign in their favor, spinning the unlikely propaganda that Madeleine was taken by a stranger.

> *Madeleine was on holiday from the UK with her parents, Kate and Gerry McCann, her two-year-old twin siblings, and a group of family friends and their children. She and the twins had been left asleep at 20:30 in the ground-floor apartment, while the McCanns and friends dined in a restaurant 55 metres (180 ft) away.[5] ... Madeleine's mother discovered she was missing at 22:00. Over the following weeks ... the Portuguese police came to believe that Madeleine had died in ... the apartment, and that her parents had covered it up. The McCanns were given* ***arguido*** *(suspect) status in September 2007, which was lifted*

> *when Portugal's attorney general archived the case in July 2008...[6][7]*
> ~ *Wikipedia*[912]

Another subterfuge the media continues to push is that Madeleine is still alive; frequently promoting any candidate they could find, including one poor girl found in a well-known city.

> ***Madeleine McCann FOUND? English-Speaking Girl Called "Maria" Discovered in Rome***, *The Sunday Express*[913]

"Maria" turned out to be 21 year old Embla Jauhojärvi of Stockholm, Sweden. Embla's father, Tahvo Jauhojärvi, said she had gone to Italy in May of 2016 to study language but went missing. She was later found, dazed, missing her ID and Passport and sleeping on the street.[914]

As we have seen, Madeleine McCann was the target age for ritual abuse and murder. Rarely are children taken without the collusion of a family member.

> *A Portuguese judge reportedly is deciding whether to grant an emergency request by the public prosecutor in the Madeleine McCann case seeking to seize a "mystery object" described as being vital to the investigation.*
>
> *Evidence suggesting that Kate and Gerry McCann, the parents of the missing girl who disappeared just short of her fourth birthday, were involved in their daughter's death was passed to the judge late Tuesday night.*
>
> *In addition to the prosecutor's request, the judge will consider whether the couple should be charged.*
>
> *The judge has a number of options, including ordering the couple to return to the Algarve to be placed under house arrest, or submit to further police questioning. He also could order additional searches and wire taps. The judge has 10 days to make his ruling.*
>
> *The public prosecutor's request to seize an "object" vital to the inquiry could include searching areas such as a lawyer's office or a place of worship, which are protected under Portuguese laws. ~ Fox News*[915]

The “place of worship” only hinted at by Knight of Malta Rupert Morduch’s “Fox News” was Nossa Senhora da Luz Cathedral in Praia da Luz. The McCanns had private access with a key given to them by Father Jose Manuel Pacheco[916] ... both Gerald and Kate McCann are devout Roman Catholics.

Within a month of Madeleine’s disappearance, Gerald and Kate McCann were in Rome, treated to a private audience with Pope Benedict XVI. It was provided for by Sir Philip Nigel Ross Green — a billionaire with a reputation for corruption.[917]

> *The couple will fly to Rome this afternoon from Faro on a 12-seater Gulfstream jet owned by the businessman Sir Philip Green. ~ The Guardian*[918]

Even more noteworthy, Sir Philip Green isn’t Catholic, he’s a Jew and he’s been accused of connections with MI6 for aiding the child sex slave trade.[919]

On 16 May, 2007, a witness dictated a statement to the *Polícia Judiciária*, the national criminal investigation agency of Portugal. She stated that she was in the company of Gerald McCann and a friend. They were talking about Madeleine and the friend, a doctor like McCann, asked “Does she do this?” and placed his finger in his mouth and circled his body in a sexually-suggestive manner.[920]

The Doctor and his wife were questioned by the Leicester Police Constabulary and gave evasive answers.

By “coincidence” the site the McCann’s chose to vacation happened to be in close proximity of a high-profile pedophile, the Knighted grandson of Sigmund Freud — Sir Clement Raphael Freud.

> *The former Liberal MP, who died in 2009, owned a villa in Praia da Luz – close to where Madeleine went missing when she was three-years-old.*
>
> *Freud also hosted her parents Kate and Gerry McCann on two separate occasions.*

> *It was revealed earlier this week that Freud, who first invited the McCanns to his Portuguese villa two months after their daughter went missing, spent years sexually abusing girls as young as 10. ~ The Sunday Express*[921]

As part of Operation: Grange — the London Metro investigation into Maddie McCann's disappearance — sketches were released of men wanted for questioning. It has been noted that the two men bear a marked resemblance to Democrat power players John and Tony Podesta.

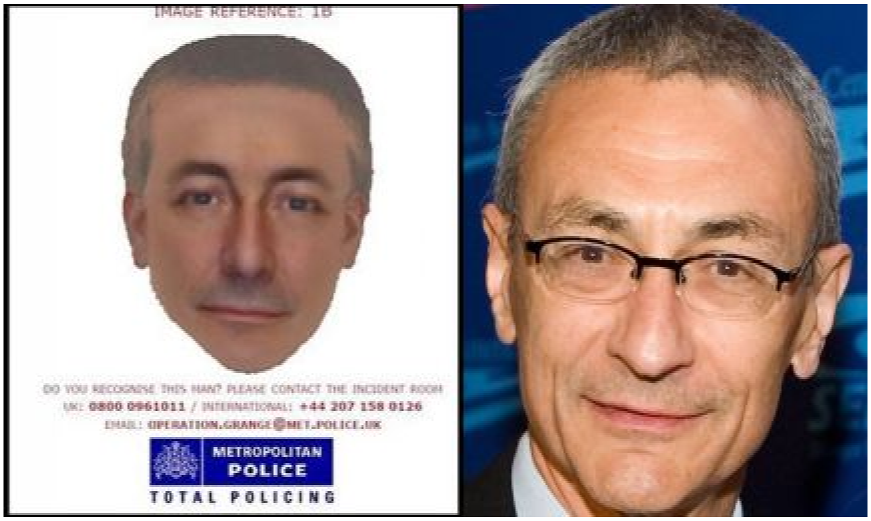
IMAGE REFERENCE: 1B
DO YOU RECOGNISE THIS MAN? PLEASE CONTACT THE INCIDENT ROOM
UK: 0800 0961011 / INTERNATIONAL: +44 207 158 0126
EMAIL: OPERATION.GRANGE@MET.POLICE.UK
METROPOLITAN POLICE
TOTAL POLICING

FAIR USE: images of public personalities for illustration.

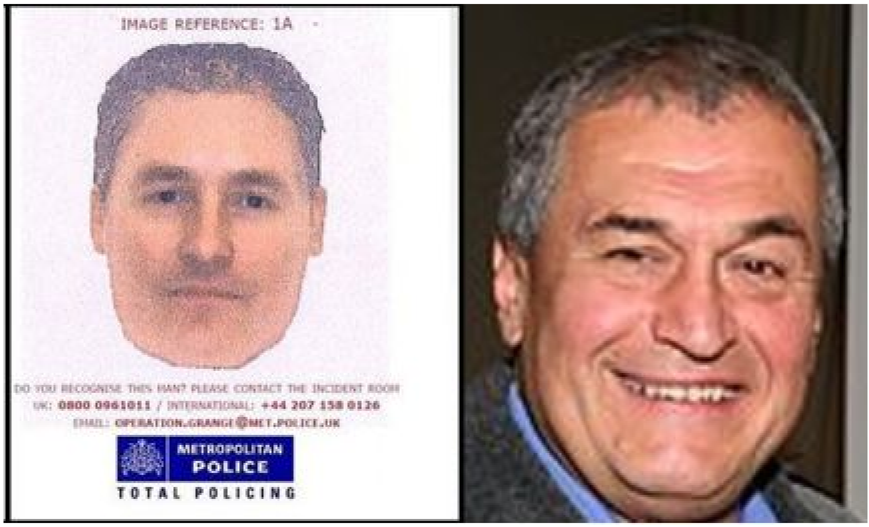
IMAGE REFERENCE: 1A
DO YOU RECOGNISE THIS MAN? PLEASE CONTACT THE INCIDENT ROOM
UK: 0800 0961011 / INTERNATIONAL: +44 207 158 0126
EMAIL: OPERATION.GRANGE@MET.POLICE.UK
METROPOLITAN POLICE
TOTAL POLICING

FAIR USE: images of public personalities for illustration.

The Podestas would surface again in the 2016 "PizzaGate" scandal. More on that in Chapter 31.

The *Polícia Judiciária* ("PJ") Detective who made the McCanns *arguidos* (suspects) was Gonçalo Amaral. Amaral retired shortly after the scandal broke and began making public statements he could not have made as a Detective about the guilt of the McCanns. The McCanns sued Amaral for liable and were denied by the Portuguese Supreme Court.[922]

Although Amaral's pointed statements even went so far as a book — *The Truth of the Lie* (a Portuguese best-seller) — he did not entertain accusations that the McCanns were part of a systemic child trafficking ring.

In 2008, Amaral was sighted attending a charity benefit for The Sovereign Military Hospitaller Order of Saint John of Jerusalem, also known as the Knights of Malta.[923]

Perhaps the worst indictment of all, after collecting forensic evidence, the *Polícia Judiciária* have made the astounding statement that Gerald McCann was not Madeleine's biological father.

Despite the "furious rebuttals" from the McCanns and the British media, it isn't as far-fetched an assertion as it seems — all three of the McCann children were "in-vitro fertilization".[924]

Was Madeleine McCann "bred" by her devout Roman Catholic parents for a grisly end — especially given the coloboma defect in the iris of her right eye?

If so, the special private audience they received at the Vatican shows, Rome was appreciative.

Chapter 27

The Black Waters of Malta

16 September 2007: *...employees of Blackwater Security Consulting (since renamed Academi), a private military company, shot at Iraqi civilians, killing 17 and injuring 20 in Nisour Square, Baghdad while escorting a U.S. embassy convoy.[1][2][3] The killings outraged Iraqis and strained relations between Iraq and the United States.[4] In 2014, four Blackwater employees were tried[5] and convicted in U.S. federal court; one of murder, and the other three of manslaughter and firearms charges.*[6] *...*

On August 4 2017, a three-judge panel of the U.S. Court of Appeals for the District of Columbia Circuit tossed [security contractor Nicholas] *Slatten's murder conviction and ordered the other defendants to be re-sentenced.[21] A new trial was also recommended for Slatten, on the grounds that it was unjustifiable to try him with his co-defendants, and that he should have been tried separately.[21] ~ Wikipedia*[925]

Having billionaire Edgar Dale Prince as a father provided certain "opportunities" for Erik Dean Prince, such as world travel and an appointment to the United States Naval Academy.

Prince chaffed, however, at the Plebe hazing and left Annapolis for Hillsdale. He then joined the Navy and became a SEAL where he served in the Middle East, Haiti and the Balkans but saw no combat.[926]

Each of these locations remain a hotbed of human trafficking, Haiti, in particular (see Chapter 28).

Prince left the SEALs after a short 4-year stint[927] and then founded one of the most infamous war profiteering organizations of all time — Blackwater — immediately after.

Clearly, he felt he had a sure thing.

Blackwater would go on to net over $1 billion in U.S. government contracts and that was despite the Nisour Square massacre of 16 September 2007. When an Iraqi car tangled with a Blackwater-guarded convoy the response was a hail of weapons fire and explosives which killed anywhere between 17 and 28 men, women and children.[928]

Later, the U.S. military examined the carnage. It was determined that there was no evidence of any insurgent activity — a wayward Iraqi civilian unwittingly touching off a powder-keg of undisciplined, trigger-happy mercenaries.[929]

Two months prior, the State Department was warned about Blackwater's lawless arrogance by an investigator who had uncovered shocking levels of corruption and negligence. He was stopped, however, by the company's lead man in Iraq — another ex-Navy SEAL named Daniel Carroll. Carroll told Diplomatic Security Special Agent Jean Richter: *that he could kill me at that very moment and no one could or would do anything about it as we were in Iraq...*[930]

Either Blackwater's top man in Iraq, Daniel Carroll,[cxxxv] was unbelievably reckless or he was fully assured of the ability to murder a United States government official and get away with it.

To their surprise, the Iraqi government backed Blackwater. Special Agent Richter and his small fact-finding delegation were immediately sent back to the United States.

Perhaps it wasn't all that surprising given bribes totaling $1 million dollars handed to key Iraqi officials by the Papal Knight mercenaries.[931]

The twist is that the bribes were sanctioned (sometimes *recommended*) by the same State Department that sent Richter and his team, showing that the "fact-finding mission" was never intended to find facts.[932]

Two months later an Iraqi mother lay burned to a crisp in their family car, clutching her infant to her — the heat from the explosions had melded their bodies together.[933]

Unfortunately for her relatives, monetary compensation for wrongdoing doesn’t quite flow from mercenaries as bribes do.[934]

War is business and business is good.

Is the characterization of Blackwater mercenaries as “kill-happy cowboys” unfair?

Outrage over the company’s actions both in America and Iraq was answered by yet another Congressional hearing: the House of Representatives Committee on Oversight and Government Reform, then chaired by California Democrat Henry Waxman. Waxman is Jewish and has been a politician since 1969.[cxxxvi]

Congressman Waxman disclosed that in the two years leading up to the Nisour Square massacre, from 2005 to 2007, Blackwater was involved in 195 shootings, 84% were initiated by the mercenaries.

What Waxman didn’t disclose was the number of innocent Iraqis who have been wounded or killed as a result. Such information is difficult if not impossible to find.

It’s not a long-shot to deduce that a shooting incident initiated by Blackwater was both unnecessary and unwarranted meaning that the resulting dead can be considered “murdered innocents”.

The “shoot first, ask questions later” methods of America’s “guns for hire” are in stark contrast to the stifling Rules of Engagement given to the United States military.

Some of the most notoriously restrictive “RoE” were set by Knight of Malta[935] “Green Beret” General Stanley McChrystal.[936]

In the best Hegelian Dialectic, while one group of Roman traitor agents in the military dictated restrictions that cost American lives, another group in the media frothed anger over it.[937],[cxxxvii]

In light of lawless corruption, the Bush / Rice State Department brought their overwhelming power to bear: they initiated a panel.

> *On Oct. 5, 2007, just as the State Department and Blackwater were being rocked by scandal in the aftermath of Nisour Square, State Department officials finally responded to Mr. Richter's August warning about Blackwater. They took statements from Mr. Richter and Mr. Thomas about their accusations of a threat by Mr. Carroll, but took no further action.*
>
> *Condoleezza Rice, then the secretary of state, named a special panel to examine the Nisour Square episode and recommend reforms, but the panel never interviewed Mr. Richter or* [State Department analyst] *Mr.* [Donald] *Thomas* [a member of Richter's team]. ~ *NY Times*[938]

The Nation's Jeremy Scahill (one of Blackwater's most passionate media detractors) has called Erik Prince "a reclusive right-wing evangelical Christian".[939]

Such a characterization is amazing given that even *Newsweek* reported on Prince leaving his Dutch Reform Calvinism behind for Roman Catholicism. In the piece, *Newsweek's* Evan Thomas disclosed a Prince statement that implies his involvement in Templar Freemasonry: *In his occasional public utterances at security conferences, his vision emerges. He was once quoted by a defense-industry newsletter describing why his private contractors could provide better — more effective, more efficient — "relief with teeth" in a dangerous environment than international aid organizations or even the U.S. military: "Everybody carries guns, just like Jeremiah rebuilding the Temple in Israel, a sword in one hand, a trowel in the other." Prince, a weapons expert and adventure seeker since he outgrew playing with lead soldiers as a boy, has seen the promised land, and it is righteous and well-armed.* [*sic*][940]

Interestingly, one of Protestantism's most renown opponents of the Catholic Church, Baptist firebrand Charles Haddon Spurgeon (1834 – 1892), named his magazine *Sword & Trowel*.[941]

Scahill is a close associate of legendary Jewish homosexual journalist and personal confidant of "whistleblower" Edward Snowden, Glenn Greenwald. It's difficult to imagine how he could make such a clumsy mistake as there is very little “Christian” about either Erik Prince or Blackwater. However, both are very much the flower of Papal Knighthood.

Perhaps it was the influence of Scahill’s “longtime friend” and mentor, Jesuit Father Daniel Berrigan[942] that helped him get things mixed up.

You do have to admire someone like Scahill, *fearlessly* going after a military/industrial kingpin with a net worth of $2.4 *billion*.[943]

Is it just coincidental that the Jesuit Oath includes the words — *My son, heretofore you have been taught to act the dissembler: among Roman Catholics to be a Roman Catholic, and to be a spy even among your own brethren; to believe no man, to trust no man. Among the Reformers, to be a Reformer; among the Huguenots, to be a Huguenot; among the Calvinists, to be a Calvinist; among other Protestants, generally to be a Protestant; and obtaining their confidence, to seek even to preach from their pulpits, and to denounce with all the vehemence in your nature our Holy Religion and the Pope; and even to descend so low as to become a Jew among Jews, that you might be enabled to gather together all information for the benefit of your Order as a faithful soldier of the Pope. You have been taught to plant insidiously the seeds of jealousy and hatred between communities, provinces, states that were at peace, and to incite them to deeds of blood, involving them in war with each other, and to create revolutions and civil wars in countries that were independent and prosperous, cultivating the arts and the sciences and enjoying the blessings of peace; to take sides with the combatants and to act secretly with your brother Jesuit, who might be engaged on the other side, but openly opposed to that with which you might be connected, only that the Church might be the gainer in the end...*[944]

Is Blackwater Catholic?

The fraudulent “Global War on Terror”[cxxxviii] seems to be the ultimate Hegelian corruption: fabricate a needless conflict then rob the citizenry of billions to pay for it.

At the heart of it all is Rome.

The founder and Chief Executive Officer for most of the organization’s existence is a converted Roman Catholic which means Erik Prince’s

Catholicism is *especially* devoted.

Lewis Paul Bremer III was instrumental in making sure Blackwater got filthy rich on uncontested GWoT contracts. Bremer was a long-tenured State Department man from Henry Kissinger thru Alexander Haig to whom he was Executive Secretary and Special Assistant.

Haig, himself, was a Catholic-educated (Notre Dame) and Jesuit-trained (Saint Joseph's Prep and Georgetown) Roman Catholic. Haig's brother, Frank Rawle Haig, is a powerful Johns Hopkins-accredited Jesuit who would eventually become President of Wheeling University in West Virginia, a Jesuit institution.

During the heat of the second war in Iraq, L. Paul Bremer had the critical position of "Coalition Provisional Authority".

He, too, is a devout, converted Roman Catholic.

> *Prince's connections seem to have paid off for Blackwater. Robert Young Pelton, author of "Licensed to Kill: Hired Guns in the War on Terror," has reported that one of Blackwater's earliest contracts in the national arena was a no-bid $5.4 million deal to provide security guards in Afghanistan, which came after Prince made a call to then CIA executive director Buzzy Krongard. What's more, Harper's Ken Silverstein has reported that Prince has a security pass for CIA headquarters and "meets with senior people" inside the CIA. But Prince's most important benefactor was fellow conservative Roman Catholic convert L. Paul Bremer, former head of the Coalition Provisional Authority, the American occupation government in Iraq. In August 2003, Blackwater won a $27.7 million contract to provide personal security for Bremer. In charge of the Blackwater team guarding Bremer was Frank Gallagher, who had provided personal security for former Secretary of State Henry Kissinger when Bremer was managing director of Kissinger's consulting firm, Kissinger and Associates, in the 1990s. ~ Salon*[945]

Not only did L. Paul make sure his Roman Knight friend got lucrative no-bid contracts, he made sure his services were needed with policy decisions so bad they were nothing less than treason.

> *The decision to dissolve the Iraqi army robbed Baghdad's post-invasion military of some of its best commanders and troops. Combined with sectarian strains that persist 12 years later, it also drove many of the suddenly out-of-work Sunni warriors into alliances with a Sunni insurgency that would eventually mutate into ISIS. Many former Iraqi military officers and troops, trained under Saddam, have spent the last 12 years in Anbar Province battling both U.S. troops and Baghdad's Shi'ite-dominated security forces, Pentagon officials say. ...*
>
> *So how did the Iraqi army come to dissolve? The Bush Administration tapped Paul Bremer to head the so-called Coalition Provisional Authority on May 11, 2003. Twelve days later, he issued an order wiping away the Iraqi military... The army's end quickly led to civil unrest, a growing insurgency and a U.S. occupation that would last eight years and cost the lives of 4,491 American troops. ...*
>
> *Bremer's decision to disband the Iraqi army has been shrouded in mystery. ~ Time*[946]

It's not a mystery if one knows L. Paul was a traitor who worked for a malignant foreign entity that sought to exacerbate the chaos in Iraq caused by an entire cabal of traitors.

Joseph Schmitz

Then there's Prince's right-hand man; Joseph Edward Schmitz. He got a great start as the fox in the hen-house.

> *In 2002, President Bush nominated Schmitz to oversee and police the Pentagon's military contracts as the Defense Department's inspector general. Schmitz presided over the largest increase of military-contracting spending in history: As of 2005, 77 companies were awarded 149 "prime contracts" worth $42.1 billion, with hundreds of millions going to Blackwater. Unlike previous I.G.s, Schmitz reported directly to the secretary of defense — a setup that both Democratic and Republican lawmakers objected to, given Schmitz's oversight responsibility. ...*

> *Schmitz has many ties to the Republican Party establishment. His father, John G. Schmitz, was a two-term Republican congressman, and his brother, Patrick Schmitz, served as George H.W. Bush's deputy counsel from 1985 to 1993. Joseph himself worked as a special assistant to Reagan-era Attorney General Edwin Meese.*
>
> *Schmitz resigned in 2005 under mounting pressure from both Democratic and Republican senators, who accused him of interfering with criminal investigations into inappropriately awarded contracts, turning a blind eye to conflicts of interest and other failures of oversight. According to an October 2005 article in Time magazine, Schmitz showed the White House the results of his staff's multiyear investigation into a contract in which the Air Force leased air-refueling tankers from Boeing for more than it would have cost to buy them, then agreed to redact the names of senior White House staffers involved in the decision before sending the final report to Congress. Schmitz informed his staff on Aug. 26, 2005, that he was leaving the Pentagon; in September of that year, he went to work for Blackwater. ~ Salon*[947]

What *Salon* fails to tell you about Schmitz is that he's a devout Roman Catholic Crusader, all-in for the fraudulent "Global War on Terror", and even *Wikipedia* admits he's a Knight of Malta![948]

Perhaps Schmitz was selected for his key role in corruption and treason while he was under Jesuit care in prep school.

The Jesuits apparently liked what they saw enough to have him go from student at Georgetown Prep to Professor at Georgetown University (but only after a "secular" degree at Stanford).

He's also intimately involved with "Conservative" smoke and mirrors media in order to keep Right-minded Americans angry about the wrong things.

Perhaps most telling of all is Schmitz' Pentagon "investigation" into human trafficking, specifically focusing on the locations destroyed by war which were made fertile for such outrages.

It must be remembered that wars are started with this “benefit” in mind.

> *Schmitz was born in Milwaukee, Wisconsin,[3] the son of John G. Schmitz, former California State Senator, member of the U.S. House of Representatives, and U.S. presidential candidate in 1972. Schmitz attended Catholic schools as a child and Georgetown Preparatory School for high school while his father served in Congress. He holds a Bachelor of Science (1978) from the United States Naval Academy in Annapolis, Maryland where he was on the wrestling team and a Juris Doctor (1986) from Stanford University. His three siblings include Mary Kay Letourneau, Jerome Schmitz and John Schmitz.[4]*
>
> *Upon graduation from the Naval Academy, Schmitz served in the U.S. Navy for approximately four years, including a stint as an exchange officer with the German Navy. After leaving active duty, Schmitz went to law school and was in the Naval Reserve until 2001. He clerked with James L. Buckley, Circuit Judge for the D.C. Circuit Court and was a special assistant to Attorney General Edwin Meese III during the Reagan Administration.[4] Schmitz entered the private sector in 1987, eventually joining the Patton Boggs law firm in Washington, D.C.[5] He was also an adjunct professor of law at Georgetown University in the 1990s and founded his own firm, Joseph E. Schmitz, PLLC, in 2008.[6]*
>
> *He is a member of the Sovereign Military Order of Malta[7] and a co-author of the book,* ***Sharia: The Threat to America****.[8]*
>
> *As Inspector General, Schmitz investigated involvement of the U.S. military in the sex trade in South Korea, Bosnia, and Kosovo.*
>
> *Schmitz writes a column titled “Support and Defend” for the media organization Newsmax.[9] He co-founded the law firm Schmitz & Socarras LLP[10] in 2014 and serves as Chairman of the Board of Directors for CharityEngine, a McLean, Virginia-based software company.* ~ Wikipedia[949]

Several alternative media blogs[950],[951] and one well-researched alternative media news outlet[952] also label Joseph Edward Schmitz as a member of

Opus Dei.

J. Cofer Black

Joseph Cofer Black was Erik Prince’s Heinrich Himmler.

They even look alike.

Joseph Cofer Black in 2002 Heinrich Luitpold Himmler in 1942

While either with the State Department or the Central Intelligence Agency, J. Cofer Black was the man who made black-bag “rendition” and torture operations possible against “Enemies of the State”.

> *In 2004, Cofer Black passed from CIA to the State Department and thence became Blackwater’s vice-president. While still in the CIA, Black was in charge of the “special extraditions” organising the secret transfer of prisoners from Iraq or Afghanistan to countries less rigid against the practice of torture, such as Poland, Romania, Egypt, and so on.*
>
> *These planes, which travelled between Abu Ghraib, Guantanamo and Afghanistan often made stopovers in many European countries such as the UK, Italy, France, Germany and Malta many times without the countries themselves being informed what was going on.*
>
> *Now the Swiss procurator Dick Marty has sent documents regarding the “CIA’s flying prisons” to the European Parliament and names two Blackwater subsidiaries – Presidential Airways and Aviation Worldwide Services. ~ Independent*[953]

From the CIA Director behind 9/11 (George Tenet) to the Mormon Presidential candidate (Mitt Romney), Cofer's connections run deep.

Unfortunately, when someone like him makes a comment about putting "flies" on the "eyeballs" of their victims, he's quite serious.[cxxxix]

> *Black spent most of his 28-year CIA career running covert operations in the Directorate of Operations, where he worked with Rob Richer... At the time of the 9/11 attacks, he was director of the CIA's Counterterrorism Center. There he was former CIA Director George Tenet's ace in the hole when it came to convincing Bush that the CIA should lead initial U.S. combat operations in Afghanistan after 9/11. Black is, according to published accounts, a man with a flair for the dramatic, the kind of briefer President Bush likes. In one briefing, according to several reports, Black told the president, "When we're through with [terrorists in Afghanistan], they will have flies walking across their eyeballs." (Black also ordered CIA field officer Gary Schroen to bring back Osama bin Laden's head packed in dry ice so Black could show it to Bush.) Black's Afghanistan presentation earned him "special access" to the White House, the Washington Post's Dana Priest reported in December 2005.*
>
> *Black is also one of the more prominent faces associated with the Bush administration's interrogation and extraordinary rendition policies. In a famous moment, Black told Congress in 2002, "After 9/11, the gloves came off." And the group within the CIA responsible for extraordinary renditions — operations in which covert agents grab terror suspects and take them to secret prison facilities for interrogations that would normally be prohibited as torture — fell under Black at the CTC, Priest has reported.*
>
> *Black later went to the State Department, where one of his roles was to begin coordinating security for the 2004 Olympics in Greece. In 2003, the State Department gave Blackwater a contract to train the Olympic security teams.*
>
> *In 2004, Black left the State Department to join Blackwater, part of what Harper's Silverstein termed a "revolving door to Blackwater"*

> *from the CIA. In addition to his work with Blackwater and his own company, Total Intelligence Solutions, Black also recently joined the presidential campaign of former Massachusetts Gov. Mitt Romney, where he serves the Republican hopeful as senior advisor for counterterrorism and national security. ~ Salon*[954]

Like Himmler, Black's Catholic affiliation has been wiped from almost all sources save his attendance of the Canterbury School in Connecticut — a Roman Catholic all-boys college prep school.[955]

Himmler is just as nebulous a Catholic but his secret ties are much more powerful.

Mainstream sources grudgingly admit he was "raised" Catholic.

> *...the physical extermination of the Jews took place on the largely Catholic continent of Europe. We are faced with the plain, appalling fact that many of the world's greatest mass murderers were born and raised Catholic — Adolf Hitler, Heinrich Himmler, and Rudolf Höss, to mention only a few. The small number of Catholic rescuers are obscured by the mountain of evil cast over them by these perpetrators.* ~ Phayer[956]

But at least one source makes the astounding claim that Himmler was an ordained Jesuit priest. [italics suspended except in original]

> After graduating as a full Jesuit Priest no later than 1925, there is no precise evidence as to exactly the activities of Himmler until his arrival on the scene in 1929 as deputy of Erhard Heiden.
>
> *The Arrival of Fr. Himmler S.J. and the Nazis*
>
> One of (several) absurd mythologies accepted by eminent historians and academics is the proposition that the Schutzstaffel (German for "Squadron" and the same concept as the Italian "Blackshirt Squadrons" of Catholic Mussolini) was formed in 1925 as the personal bodyguard of Hitler following his release from prison.
>
> Some audacious writers have even "revised history" to claim the Schutzstaffel (frequently cut in half to try and get two S's out of the

single word for squadron) had already started to use the SS and skull and bones symbols, including calling their head the Reichführer-SS and the Roman Salute (straight arm) to their allegiance to the Vatican, Rome.

The ridiculous nature of these lies are easily exposed when the facts are considered that Hitler's main claim to fame in 1925 was as a book writer and budding political philosopher.

In fact, the first election of the reformed NDSAP [*Nationalsozialistische Deutsche Arbeiterpartei,* The National Socialist German Workers' Party] in May 1928 was a complete humiliation and disaster. It was during this period of recrimination and failure that Fr. Heinrich Himmler S.J. entered to be immediately appointed the deputy of Erhard Heiden, commanded of the Schutzstaffel (squadron). Within a matter of a few months, Erhard Heiden resigned and Fr. Himmler S.J. was appointed as commander of the Schutzstaffel.

It is a remarkable and rarely considered event occurred — in 1929, a 29 year old rank outsider with dubious military experience, but impeccable Catholic and Jesuit connections is suddenly appointed Reichführer-SS — the 280 most elite security personnel and bodyguards of Hitler himself.

There can be absolutely no question that Himmler was a direct Vatican appointment via the support of Jesuits as there is no way Hitler would have accepted such an appointment of such a person into a critical role unless it came from the very highest authority.

Again, it is important of emphasize that the Schutzstaffel (only one S) wore brown shirts until the Reich Concordat was signed between Cardinal Pacelli and Franz von Papen (for Germany) in 1933 bestowing exclusive spiritual powers on the Schutzstaffel of Fr. Himmler S.J. by the Vatican. The Jesuit Skull and Bones was incorporated by Fr. Himmler into the military insignia of the Schutzstaffel but not the infamous SS until after the 1933 Concordat.

The political fortunes of the NDSAP appeared to suddenly turn around thanks to the swelling ranks of disciplined recruits to the Schutzstaffel.

In September 1930, the NSDAP won 18.3% of the vote and 107 seats in the Reichstag (Parliament). By the July 1932 national elections, this vote had swelled to 37.8% and 230 of the 608 seats of Parliament. However, in the November 1932 elections, their lead had dropped to 33.1% and 196 seats in a 584 seat Parliament.

By 1933 National Elections, the Schutzstaffel under the control of Fr. Himmler S.J. numbered at least 52,000 highly trained and absolutely loyal members – a far cry from the early incompetence in Munich ten years earlier.

It was March 1933 that the world saw the word “Nazi” unleashed as a political religious force in the elections following the destruction of the Reichstag (Parliament) by Schutzstaffel agents and blamed on communists.

Red Herrings Abound

To distract as much as possible from the Jesuit connections, soft history was created in the form of allegations he married or was in a *defacto* relationship with an already pregnant Protestant woman seven years his senior called Margarete. A convenient window dressing rarely challenged in spite of the fact Himmler was famously known for being a devout Catholic from a devout and powerful Catholic family.

In another brilliant misdirection, some rare claims exist stating that Himmler had an “uncle” who was a Jesuit priest and that any reference to Fr. Himmler S.J. is the uncle, not Heinrich.

The Birth of the Nazi SS

There is a parallel and quite extraordinary change within the power structure of the NSDAP as the Nazis- the rise of Fr. Himmler to Reichführer (also Reichführer Nazi SS) – or Superior General of the Knights of the Holy See — SS standing for *Sedes Sacrorum* or “Holy See” in Latin.

Many historians deliberately mask the first beginnings of the use of the title Reichführer by dropping off the word “Nazi”, or removing “SS” to somehow claim this position was the official title of the commander of the Schutzstaffel as early as 1925. The reason for this forgery is twofold — one to mask the true date of 1933 as the historic shift in the introduction of the initials SS and secondly to mask the true arrival of Himmler in 1929 and the title Reichführer-Nazi SS in 1933.

> But what is more incredible is the fabricated history that continues to hid the absolute fact that in 1933 after the Reich Concordat was signed with the Vatican, Fr. Himmler was elevated in power, name and status above Hitler. Fr. Himmler S.J. as the Reichführer has superior title (as opposed to plain old führer for Hitler). Fr. Himmler had complete independent control over all police, paramilitary, intelligence, scientific research and weapons development and the dreaded elite units of over 50,000 just in 1933 — and Hitler had absolutely no authority over him. In fact the proof of the distaste each man had for one another is demonstrated in countless war archive movies showing in clear detail the body language of both men. ~ One-Evil[957]

Far-fetched?

Himmler hailed from Bavaria (now Munich), the same Jesuit stronghold that produced Adam Weishaupt. Weishaupt was a Jewish convert to Roman Catholicism who started his Jesuit education at 7 years of age and went on to teach Canon Law at Jesuit Ingolstadt University. He is credited with founding Jacobinism, modern statist Communism and “the Illuminati”.

In such a light, this quote makes eminent sense —

> [Quoting Adolf Hitler] *Above all I have learned from the Jesuits. And so did Lenin too, as far as I recall. The world has never known anything quite so splendid as the hierarchical structure of the [Roman] Catholic Church. There were quite a few things I simply appropriated from the Jesuits for the use of the [Nazi] Party. I have learnt most of*

> *all from the Jesuit Order... So far, there has been nothing more imposing on earth than the hierarchical organization of the [Roman] Catholic Church. A good part of that organization I have transported direct to my own [Nazi] party... The Catholic Church must be held up as an example... I will tell you a secret. I am founding an order... In Himmler I see our Ignatius de Loyola.* ~ Zaid[958]

Is Erik Prince a Knight of Malta?

Given his ties to Rome it’s academic though we (so far) haven’t found anyone willing to admit Erik Prince has been knighted.

To be sure, a Knighthood is simply a mechanism of manipulation designed to appeal to the victim’s ego and give then a vested interest in compromising their morality to serve, ultimately, the devil (either through government indirectly or to Rome directly).

The evidence, however, is there to pin Prince as a KoM even without one of their own “mainstream” sources admitting it. For instance, media mogul Henry Luce — *Time*, *Life*, *Fortune*, *Sports Illustrated*, as well as newspapers, radio and television — was both a member of the secretly-Catholic secret society Skull & Bones[959] as well as a Knight of Malta along with his media mogul peer William Randolph Hearst.[960],[961]

As all-encompassing as this strangle-hold on media is, clues still slip out — sometimes from surprising sources.

For instance, on the heels of the Nouri Square massacre, the *Malta Independent* reported (in anger, it would seem) that Italian Minister of European Parliament Giovanni Claudio Fava presented a “working document” which disclosed that the tiny island was Blackwater’s “Operational Base”.[962]

That same article noted that Cofer Black’s torture victims were being ferried through Malta.

Prince’s Jesuit-trained Hegelian nemesis, Jeremy Scahill, let it slip out that when Blackwater was creating its own deadly little Air Force, Malta was a frequent stop-over.[963]

As was disclosed in the “Home Children” deportation scandal, Malta is also a main hub of human trafficking.

Two years after the Nouri Square massacre, the non-profit Human Rights Watch blew the whistle on a triad of corruption and crime that involved the governments of the United States, Italy and Libya. Refugees from war and unrest were kept from seeking asylum in safe havens. This insured they would remain easy prey for traffickers.

> *The U.N. High Commissioner for Refugees (UNHCR) expressed “deep concern” regarding the fate of the interdicted migrants on May 7, saying that they were returned to Libya “without proper assessment of their possible protection needs.”*
>
> *“Tomas,” a 24-year-old Eritrean man interviewed in Rome on May 20, gave Human Rights Watch an account of abuse, beatings, a long journey in a packed and airless truck, and ill-treatment in prison:*
>
> > *“The [Libyan] navy forces caught us and took us to ... a place called Jawazat. It was an immigration prison. ... We were in the same room with 160 others — all in one room. ... We were only allowed to use the toilet once a day. Many people had skin problems. There was no soap. They gave us water in a jar to drink. Many of us had stomach problems. We had to beg the guards to take sick people to the toilet. ...*
> >
> > *After two months, they put us with another group of Eritreans — 150 people in all. They put us in a big truck. It was packed with people. There wasn’t room for anyone to sit down. We all remained standing. ... We started at 6 a.m., and traveled all day and all the next night. ...*
> >
> > *When they let us out of the truck, we were in Kufra prison. We spent one week there. They fed us food only once a day. Only rice. Ramadan was over. I had already experienced two months of hunger in prison. We were now 800 prisoners crowded in different rooms. We slept on pieces of cardboard. ... It was dirty. ...”*

> *Tomas said Kufra is Libya's deportation site and that the guards have an agreement with smugglers, who press the migrants to pay hundreds of dollars to return them to Tripoli. He said he failed in two further attempts to flee Libya, and suffered lasting damage from beatings:*
>
> > *"I was beaten by wood and metal sticks by three guards. They beat me for more than 10 minutes. They called me 'nigger' as they beat me. When I fell to the ground, they kicked me. They beat me with a metal stick on my head. I have scars and pain inside my head. I still have pains in my shoulder. The metal sticks were thin, but they did not bend."*[964]

Again, Malta and her Roman Knights were the focal point of these evil operations.

Those refugees who did escape were funneled into Europe to fuel anger against "immigrants". It is another page from the Luciferian playbook enabled by traitors in government to create a "clash of civilizations": immigration forced *en masse* by needless war.

Rather than slow, well-regulated immigration where approved migrants have time to assimilate, rapid flooding of refugees causes ghettos and clashes which are then manipulated by agents at all levels to direct hatred at the migrants rather than the manipulators in government and higher.

The U.S./Italy/Libya/Malta trafficking arrangement took a deadly turn into over-drive with the commencement of Barack Obama's illegal and unconstitutional war on the African nation in 2011.

On March 19th, 2011, a "coalition" lead by the United States containing token representatives of NATO members like France and Britain (with Italy as an un-publicized partner) invaded Libya for reasons that remained a mystery to the uninitiated.

After months of his country being devastated by the might of the West, Muammar Gaddafi (spelled a variety of ways in English including "Qadhafi") had retreated to the town of Sirte. On October 20th he was captured by Misratan militia. Gaddafi (or, more likely, an unfortunate body double[cxl]) was brutally tortured, sodomized and eventually bludgeoned to death.

The quiet, stable former Italian colony was plunged into chaos where the three staples of Luciferian prosperity were heavily moved about; arms, narcotics and enslaved human beings.

Libya's powerful Soviet-bloc weapons were taken from her safely-enclosed armories and dispersed amongst "jihadis" trained by the CIA, MI6 and the Mossad. This is a useful practice in the treason of threat-empowering. When the Western-enabled "terrorists" strike, they do so without leaving a NATO signature.

As Henry Luce's *Time* admitted in 2015 —

> *After Gaddafi was deposed in 2011, the region* [Libya's southwestern border] *descended ... into lawlessness. The regime's few border guards went north to fight, allowing smuggling to boom into a $3.8 billion economy. The rival tribes began an increasingly violent struggle that in September 2014 blossomed into armed conflict on the streets of Ubari. The Tubu say they are helping fight Islamic extremism; the Touareg claim they are simply trying to protect their homes and communities.*[965]

Mercilessly displaced Libyans were sent north to cause "clash of civilization" unrest in Europe.

> *The situation in Ubari has drawn fighters from across the region to the city, giving smugglers greater access to the ungoverned border between Niger and Libya. This has helped fuel the unprecedented flow of migrants to Europe in 2015; this year, the International Organisation of Migration (IOM) predicts some 120,000 migrants will cross the Nigerien border seeking access to northern Africa and the Mediterranean.*[966]

And like some satanic virus, the chaos is a breeding ground to fuel more devastation and empower more brutal jihadist patsies.

> *The chaos in southwestern Libya hasn’t just allowed human trafficking to thrive; Western officials see a buildup in Islamist extremism in the region — mainly Jihadist groups allied to Al Qaeda driven out of Mali and Chad by French counterterror operations.*[967]

Mainstream media gives government traitors cover as being “inept” — despite *decades* of experience,[cxli] they just had no idea the effects of their lawless decisions would have!

It allows sources like the *International Business Times* to then give headlines like —

Drug and Human Trafficking
in “Lawless” Libya is Funding ISIS[968]

— yet the Luciferian government insurgents responsible are never held to account.

Special

Although they aren’t paid as well, many of these insurgent Knights remain in their host nation’s military.

In time, they are picked to advance and are made comfortable; rewarded for their willingness to commit treason and betray the trust of their subordinates and the citizenry.

As warfare has advanced, the agents within “Special Operations” have been found to be particularly useful. There the rigorous selection process masks their presence. While candidates are tested for physical and mental endurance, they are also being tested for use by Luciferians. Often this includes some quirk or flaw that may be exploited at a later time like homosexuality or sexual perversion. Other times good men are later compromised by mistakes or traps that are carefully laid for them.

In the end, they are made to break their oath to country and Constitution in order to serve Rome and Satan.

Those who refuse are humiliated and drummed out.

The very-controlled *New York Times*[cxlii] may have reported on just such a man or perhaps used his story for credibility on disclosing the Pedocracy.

Sometimes, in their over-eagerness to support one divisive agenda like the clash of civilizations, they give up too much information on another.

In Afghanistan, pederasts call their young boy sex slaves and their abuse “*bacha bazi*”.

In 2015 Joseph Goldstein wrote this disturbing report —

> *In his last phone call home, Lance Cpl. Gregory Buckley Jr. told his father what was troubling him: From his bunk in southern Afghanistan, he could hear Afghan police officers sexually abusing boys they had brought to the base.*
>
> *“At night we can hear them screaming, but we’re not allowed to do anything about it,” the Marine’s father, Gregory Buckley Sr., recalled his son telling him before he was shot to death at the base in 2012. He*

urged his son to tell his superiors. “My son said that his officers told him to look the other way because it’s their culture.”

Rampant sexual abuse of children has long been a problem in Afghanistan, particularly among armed commanders who dominate much of the rural landscape and can bully the population. The practice is called ***bacha bazi****, literally “boy play,” and American soldiers and Marines have been instructed not to intervene — in some cases, not even when their Afghan allies have abused boys on military bases, according to interviews and court records.*

The policy has endured as American forces have recruited and organized Afghan militias to help hold territory against the Taliban. But soldiers and Marines have been increasingly troubled that instead of weeding out pedophiles, the American military was arming them in some cases and placing them as the commanders of villages — and doing little when they began abusing children.

“The reason we were here is because we heard the terrible things the Taliban were doing to people, how they were taking away human rights,” said Dan Quinn, a former Special Forces captain who beat up an American-backed militia commander for keeping a boy chained to his bed as a sex slave. “But we were putting people into power who would do things that were worse than the Taliban did — that was something village elders voiced to me.” ...

After the beating, the Army relieved Captain Quinn of his command and pulled him from Afghanistan. He has since left the military.

Four years later, the Army is also trying to forcibly retire Sgt. First Class Charles Martland, a Special Forces member who joined Captain Quinn in beating up the commander.

When asked about American military policy, the spokesman for the American command in Afghanistan, Col. Brian Tribus, wrote in an email: “Generally, allegations of child sexual abuse by Afghan military or police personnel would be a matter of domestic Afghan criminal law.” He added that “there would be no express requirement that U.S. military personnel in Afghanistan report it.”[969], [cxliii] This is how good men get compromised, corrupted, or beat down and thrown out: by being forced to work for Luciferian insurgents who give immoral or treasonous orders.

Predictably, Goldstein went on to explain the abuse of children in Afghanistan as “cultural” — but the information in these pages proves otherwise.

His false spin is bolstered by the only explanation possible, though still clearly irrational: that to stop the rape of children is “offensive” to the indigenous peoples and therefore, against Pentagon policy.

> *But the American policy of treating child sexual abuse as a cultural issue has often alienated the villages whose children are being preyed upon. The pitfalls of the policy emerged clearly as American Special Forces soldiers began to form Afghan Local Police militias to hold villages that American forces had retaken from the Taliban in 2010 and 2011.*
>
> *By the summer of 2011, Captain Quinn and Sergeant Martland, both Green Berets on their second tour in northern Kunduz Province, began to receive dire complaints about the Afghan Local Police units they were training and supporting.*
>
> *First, they were told, one of the militia commanders raped a 14- or 15-year-old girl whom he had spotted working in the fields. Captain Quinn informed the provincial police chief, who soon levied punishment. “He got one day in jail, and then she was forced to marry him,” Mr. Quinn said.*
>
> *When he asked a superior officer what more he could do, he was told that he had done well to bring it up with local officials but that there was nothing else to be done. “We’re being praised for doing the right thing, and a guy just got away with raping a 14-year-old girl,” Mr. Quinn said.*
>
> *Village elders grew more upset at the predatory behavior of American-backed commanders. ...*

> *Soon another commander absconded with his men’s wages. Mr. Quinn said he later heard that the commander had spent the money on dancing boys. Another commander murdered his 12-year-old daughter in a so-called honor killing for having kissed a boy. “There were no repercussions,” Mr. Quinn recalled.*
>
> *In September 2011, an Afghan woman, visibly bruised, showed up at an American base with her son, who was limping. One of the Afghan police commanders in the area, Abdul Rahman, had abducted the boy and forced him to become a sex slave, chained to his bed, the woman explained. When she sought her son’s return, she herself was beaten. Her son had eventually been released, but she was afraid it would happen again, she told the Americans on the base.*
>
> *She explained that because “her son was such a good-looking kid, he was a status symbol” coveted by local commanders, recalled Mr. Quinn...*
>
> *So Captain Quinn summoned Abdul Rahman and confronted him about what he had done. The police commander acknowledged that it was true, but brushed it off. When the American officer began to lecture about “how you are held to a higher standard if you are working with U.S. forces, and people expect more of you,” the commander began to laugh.*
>
> *“I picked him up and threw him onto the ground,” Mr. Quinn said. Sergeant Martland joined in, he said. “I did this to make sure the message was understood that if he went back to the boy, that it was not going to be tolerated,” Mr. Quinn recalled. ...*
>
> *Sergeant Martland, who received a Bronze Star for valor for his actions during a Taliban ambush, wrote in a letter to the Army this year that he and Mr. Quinn “felt that morally we could no longer stand by and allow our A.L.P. to commit atrocities,” referring to the Afghan Local Police.*[970]

A much more logical explanation (though far more shocking) is that top brass at the Pentagon and policy-makers in Washington, District of Columbia, are members of the Devil’s Simulation in good standing. They are all sexual deviants who give cover for each other in the rape, torture and murder of the innocent.

The story of Lance Cpl. Gregory Buckley Jr. was told by his father for a very sad reason:

> *The father of Lance Corporal Buckley believes the policy of looking away from sexual abuse was a factor in his son's death, and he has filed a lawsuit to press the Marine Corps for more information about it.*
>
> *Lance Corporal Buckley and two other Marines were killed in 2012 by one of a large entourage of boys living at their base with an Afghan police commander named Sarwar Jan.*
>
> *Mr. Jan had long had a bad reputation; in 2010, two Marine officers managed to persuade the Afghan authorities to arrest him following a litany of abuses, including corruption, support for the Taliban and child abduction. But just two years later, the police commander was back with a different unit, working at Lance Corporal Buckley's post, Forward Operating Base Delhi, in Helmand Province.*
>
> *Lance Corporal Buckley had noticed that a large entourage of "tea boys" — domestic servants who are sometimes pressed into sexual slavery — had arrived with Mr. Jan and moved into the same barracks, one floor below the Marines. He told his father about it during his final call home.*
>
> *Word of Mr. Jan's new position also reached the Marine officers who had gotten him arrested in 2010. One of them, Maj. Jason Brezler, dashed out an email to Marine officers at F.O.B. Delhi, warning them about Mr. Jan and attaching a dossier about him.*
>
> *The warning was never heeded. About two weeks later, one of the older boys with Mr. Jan — around 17 years old — grabbed a rifle and killed Lance Corporal Buckley and the other Marines.*
>
> *Lance Corporal Buckley's father still agonizes about whether the killing occurred because of the sexual abuse by an American ally. "As far as the young boys are concerned, the Marines are allowing it to*

> *happen and so they’re guilty by association,” Mr. Buckley said. “They don’t know our Marines are sick to their stomachs.”*
>
> *The one American service member who was punished in the investigation that followed was Major Brezler, who had sent the email warning about Mr. Jan, his lawyers said. In one of Major Brezler’s hearings, Marine Corps lawyers warned that information about the police commander’s penchant for abusing boys might be classified. The Marine Corps has initiated proceedings to discharge Major Brezler.*
>
> *Mr. Jan appears to have moved on, to a higher-ranking police command in the same province.*[971]

Unfortunately, Mr. Buckley’s assessment seems devastatingly accurate: abuse victims see NATO and American muscle as pedophile enforcement.

They’re absolutely right.

*****

War and its devastation are powerful tools that both enable and give cover for these unspeakable crimes of graft, profiteering, arms trade, narcotics and human sex slavery.

In eras past, “Knights” carried their plunder from the battlefield.

Today, they have them flown out on C130s.

Chapter 28

Vampire of the Caribbean[cxliv]

4 February 2010: *Haitian police arrest "Baptist missionary" Laura Silsby for child kidnapping with intent to traffic.*

On January 12th in 2010, a devastating magnitude 7 earthquake struck Léogâne in Haiti, approximately 16 miles west of the capital, Port-au-Prince.

Over 300,000 Haitians were killed and some 3 million were effected with injuries or loss.

Amongst the dead was the most powerful Catholic cleric in Haiti, the Archbishop of Port-au-Prince, Monsignor Joseph Serge Miot.

Undeterred by the Wrath of God, Roman agents in the United States exploited the tragedy to wreak further havoc in the tiny half-island nation.

Hiding in the international relief effort was a band of 8 "Baptist missionaries" lead by "Idaho businesswoman" Laura Silsby and her "nanny", Charisa Coulter.

Silsby was billed by the media as a “humble mom from Idaho with a heart for children”, yet she had a checkered past filled with money and corruption.

It also appears that the Baptist missionaries were duped into joining the “businesswoman” as Protestant cover.

> *Silsby had a history of failing to pay debts, failing to pay her employees and failing even to follow Idaho laws.*
>
> *Silsby has been the subject of eight civil lawsuits and 14 unpaid wage claims. The $358,000 Meridian, Idaho, house at which she founded her nonprofit New Life Children’s Refuge in November was foreclosed upon in December. A check of Silsby’s driving record revealed at least nine traffic citations since 1997, including four for failing to provide insurance or register annually.*
>
> *Silsby is a longtime Idaho businesswoman. In 1999, she founded an Internet business. As CEO of PersonalShopper.com, the mother of three was named eWomenNetwork’s international businesswoman of the year in 2006.*
>
> *Three years later, building an orphanage for Haitian and Dominican children became Silsby’s vision, and the 40-year-old brought others on board, including her 24-year-old nanny, Charisa Coulter.*
>
> *“The folks in the church embraced their vision, and it became a shared vision,” said Coulter’s father, Mel. “The church made it part of their missions program.” But Silsby’s failure to work with Haitian authorities before trying to take children from the country last week has many questioning the woman and the cause.*
>
> *Members of her church, Central Valley Baptist in Meridian, did not return calls Wednesday.*
>
> *An e-mail circulated Wednesday at PersonalShopper.com urged employees not to speak to the press or post any information on Web sites. “Given the aggressive nature of the press and the fabrications already being invented, we need to make sure nothing in writing is published that can be misconstrued in any way,” the e-mail says.*

> *Employees also were given the option to work from home to avoid reporters.*
>
> *Fourteen claims, including two by the same employee, were filed against Personal Shopper Inc. for nonpayment of wages between March 14, 2008, and July 21, 2009, according to the Idaho Department of Labor. ~ McClatchy*[972]

Once in Haiti, Silsby collected up 33 children (a number significant to gnostics, Luciferians and Freemasons), all under 12 years old including toddlers and infants. Many of the children weren't orphans, Silsby "liberated" them from their poor Haitian families with promises of care and education.

It must again be remarked that the children would've remained safe if their parents had not been willing to abrogate their responsibilities.

Given Silsby's past, the situation in Haiti and her intent to traffic the children, financial payments to the families were also likely involved.

Silsby didn't attempt to travel by air or sea with her catch, as a legitimate philanthropist would have. She took them to the Dominican border where, failing to provide proper documentation for the children, she was arrested along with her shocked Baptist missionaries.

However, in less than a week (February 12th), charges of child trafficking were dropped.

Direct intervention by the Hillary Clinton State Department was suspected but vociferously denied by the Obama Administration.[973] Yet the supposed underground hacking effort known as "Wikileaks" released a State Department memo promoting the tiny 10-missionary effort, complete with where to send "prayer requests".[974]

Shortly after, Judge Bernard Saint-Vil released the 8 missionaries, stating that they had been "duped". Judge Saint-Vil held Silsby and her "nanny" Charisa Coulter (responsible for recruiting the other Baptists) for conspiracy and child abduction. On March 8th, 2010, Coulter was released.

The charges against Silsby were reduced to “arranging illegal travel”.[975] She was found guilty but her sentence was reconciled as “time served”.[976]

Hillary Clinton maintained “plausible deniability” by sending her “retired” ex-President husband, Bill, to broker the deal.[977]

Later it was revealed that the Clinton State Department, along with “Secretary of Homeland Security” Janet Napolitano, paved the way for the tiny “Baptist” effort before they even got there by forcing Haiti to loosen restrictions on “adoptions”.[978]

Napolitano was the Attorney General of the State of Arizona from 1999 to 2003 and then became Governor from 2003 to 2009. She was trained by the Jesuits of Santa Clara University as was former Obama Secretary of Defense and Director of the CIA, Leon Panetta. As alumni, they stand alongside former Bill Clinton Press Secretary Margaret Jane “Dee Dee” Myers, Governor of San Francisco and Lieutenant Governor of California, Gavin Newsom, Professional Basketball player Steve Nash (also an outspoken Leftist), Mayor of Los Angeles Richard Riordan, 9th Circuit Court Judge Richard Tallman, and many others.

— And that’s just one institution where the Jesuits train openly.

Each graduate is known for radical Leftist politics. The Ninth Circuit Court is so infamous for outrageous decisions destroying popularly-supported legislation it has been nick-named “the 9th Circus”.

As law enforcement officials in El Salvador watched the proceedings in Haiti, they thought they recognized Silsby’s lawyer. They made some calls and had him arrested.

They were right.

Jorge Torres-Puello was a notorious human trafficker whose wife, Ana Josefa Ramirez Orellana, was already in a Salvadoran prison for the “sexual exploitation of minors and women”.[979] When it was learned that Torres-Puello wasn’t licensed to practice law, his title was down-graded to “legal advisor”.

Jorge Torres was, himself, a Dominican “anchor baby”: his illegal alien mother had made it to the State of New York and birthed him into citizenship.

The ludicrous, treasonous process is actually much more tenuous than Americans realize. It is based upon nothing more than an insidious footnote placed in the 1982 Supreme Court case *Plyler v. Doe* by Roman Catholic agent of subversion, Justice William J. Brennan: “no plausible distinction with respect to Fourteenth Amendment ‘jurisdiction’ can be drawn between resident aliens whose entry into the United States was lawful, and resident aliens whose entry was unlawful.”

Brennan was another graduate of the incognito Jesuits at the “public” University of Pennsylvania.

After her freedom was granted, Laura Silsby dropped into obscurity until the “PizzaGate” child trafficking scandal erupted across “alternative media” during the 2016 Presidential campaign. It was leaked that Laura Silsby had become “Laura Silsby-Gayler” or simply “Laura Gayler”. She was sitting comfortably as the Vice President of Marketing for “Alert Sense”; a government contractor that publicizes missing children “Amber alerts”.

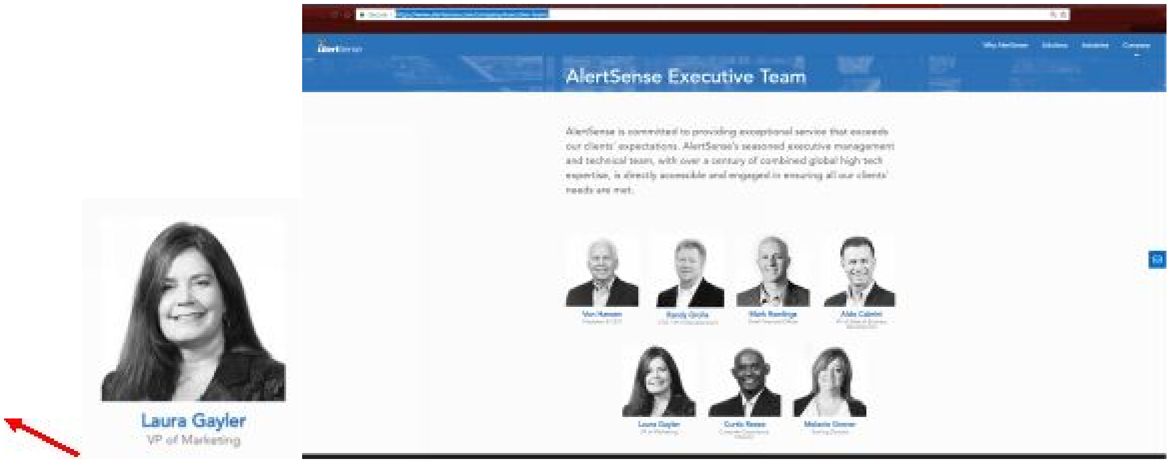
AlertSense Executive Team

AlertSense is committed to providing exceptional service that exceeds our clients' expectations. AlertSense's seasoned executive management and technical team, with over a century of combined global high-tech expertise, is directly accessible and engaged in ensuring all our clients' needs are met.

FAIR USE: screen shot of public corporate information (since taken down)

“Silsby-Gayler” was taken off the site shortly thereafter.

It is a cozy if outrageous arrangement: “rescue” children by kidnapping them then receive taxpayer money to tell parents their children are gone.

The Patron Saint of NAMBLA

Recall the request by well-wishers seeking to commemorate the memory of NAMBLA co-founder Thomas Reeves recommending a donation to St. Joseph’s Home for Boys in Port-au-Prince?

The orphanage was founded by “former Catholic brother” Michael Geilenfeld in 1985.

Haitians should’ve been alarmed that an open homosexual like Geilenfeld had taken such a close “interest” in orphaned little boys.

In 2015, Haitian police arrived at the orphanage to close it down in response to complaints that Geilenfeld was sexually abusing the boys in his care.

Workers at the orphanage resisted and a government agent was forced to fire a weapon into the air to accomplish their mission.[980]

What ensued has been nothing less than a battle for the soul of Haiti with Geilenfeld alternatively winning and losing civil and criminal cases along with their appeals.[981],[982]

Chapter 29

Child Predator Services

26 March 2010: *Former Georgia State Senator and child advocate Nancy Schaefer is found dead in her home along with her husband, Bruce. Both were shot. Police would later tell media it was a "murder / suicide".*

Because of the control the Pedocracy has, government agencies sworn to protect children are actually the very places they are trafficked through for horrible abuse.

It is an unbelievable betrayal of the public trust.

The names of the organizations vary from municipality to municipality, country to country. Most often they are called "Child Protective Services" or "CPS".

In Australia, a child advocacy group named Bravehearts conducted a forum in 2017 to force the Australian government to deal with these issues.

> *... allegations include:*

> ** A grandfather who alleges his grandson was ordered by the court to live with a sexually abusive mother;*
> ** A mother who alleges her children were left in the custody of a father who performed sex acts in front of the children;*
> ** Critical parts of Family Court transcripts were removed.*
>
> *Bravehearts founder Hetty Johnston said the Family Court was a secretive and powerful institution that did not always act in the best interests of vulnerable children.*
>
> *"The family law system is simply the most dangerous institute in Australia for children," she said.*
>
> *A lawyer, who asked not to be named and is providing evidence to Bravehearts, said the court had a mindset where allegations of sexual abuse were almost automatically treated with scepticism, leaving many children at grave risk.*
>
> *"It is not a conspiracy – it is a culture," the lawyer said.*
>
> *Ms. Johnston said that the Royal Commission already had much of the bureaucracy to incorporate an examination of the Family Court. ~ The Courier-Mail*[983]

As we've seen, the explanations provided to spin the facts are far off.

The fact is that allegations of abuse were given to the Court which were ignored. Stating that the Court treated the allegations with "skepticism" is spin.

The fact is that the Australian "Family Law System" is a source of heinous crimes against children in government care. The assertion that it is a "culture" of "negligence" is spin.

Some of the specific examples of abuse will leave readers deeply shaken and in sickened disbelief.

This one is from Arizona in the United States:

> *After Arizona's Department of Child Safety placed a toddler with a man who ran a "pornographic pedophile ring" out of his home, it*

moved her to a home where the foster mother burned her with scalding water over 80 percent of her body...

The Department of Child Safety, formerly Child Protective Services, removed Jane Doe from her biological mother's home in 2013, when she was 2, and placed her with David and Barbara Frodsham, a state-licensed foster home...

The state allowed Jane to stay with the Frodshams for 18 months, despite her biological mother's complaints of "Jane Doe's repeated documented urinary tract infections," the complaint states.

"Instead of investigating Jane Doe's biological mother's concerns of abuse, [DCS] and the defendant caseworkers accused her of making false and exaggerated reports to DCS," according to the complaint.

The state did not act until David Frodsham, driving drunk, left 3-year-old Jane and another child in his parked car while he was collecting his foster parent check in a state office, while "visibly drunk and acting belligerent." Police were called and found Frodsham had a .28 blood alcohol concentration. They removed Jane from his care but did not investigate his home, the complaint states.

It continues: "Later, David Frodsham was arrested and accused of sexual misconduct with a minor, procuring minors for sex, and possessing and/or manufacturing child pornography. Law enforcement's investigation revealed a video made by David Frodsham of a 3- or 4-year-old girl being penetrated by an adult male and screaming for her mommy. David Frodsham pled guilty rather than face a trial and has been sentenced to 17 years in the Arizona Department of Corrections. David Frodsham was part of a pornography ring involving numerous children in his pornography and the procurement of sex for the ring." ...

Unfortunately, things did not improve much when the state moved Jane into the care of Justin and Samantha Osteraas, her guardian says. According to the complaint, "Defendant Samantha Osteraas submerged and held down Jane Doe, a 5-year-old, in a bath of scalding hot water. Jane Doe suffered severe burns over 80 percent of

> *her body. When police arrived, there was blood on the floor and piece of Jane Doe's skin were falling off her body. There were bruises to her neck and arms along with other signs of trauma."*
>
> *Jane had to be placed in a medically induced coma, suffering from organ failure. She lost her toes to amputation "and will undergo lifelong operations to replace 80 percent of the skin on her body and will need incredible amounts of care for the duration of her life as a result of the abuse she suffered in the Osteraases' home."*
>
> *Samantha Osteraas, 28, was arrested in January this year and charged with child abuse. The state then removed her three biological children from her home, according to the* ***Arizona Daily Star****. She is awaiting trial. ... ~ Courthouse News*[984]

In Israel, Jericho and Yamit Dudovich were taken this year (2017) from their American father, David, by police and social workers under the pretense that they were malnourished. They were separated even from each other and kept in prison conditions, though Jericho suffers from grand mal epileptic seizures.[985]

In the Commonwealth of Pennsylvania, a teenage girl placed in foster care was raped, murdered and dismembered:

> *Before her torturous death, Grace Packer grew up in a hell of emotional, physical and sexual abuse, according to three children fostered by the adoptive mother who now stands charged, along with her boyfriend, of killing and dismembering the 14-year-old girl as part of a barbaric rape-murder fantasy.*
>
> *Police say Sara Packer, a former county adoptions supervisor, watched as her boyfriend, Jacob Sullivan, beat and raped Grace, who was then bound, gagged and left to die in a sweltering attic. Returning the next day and finding Grace still alive, Sullivan strangled her, court documents say. They stored her body in cat litter for months, then hacked it up and dumped it in a remote area where hunters found it in October, police said.*

> *In separate interviews with* ***The Associated Press****, the now-grown former foster daughters, all of whom lived with Sara Packer several years before Grace's rape and murder, said Sara abused her adopted daughter and clearly favored Grace's biological brother, who was also adopted. ...*
>
> *Sara and her husband at the time, David Packer, fostered dozens of children before David was arrested in 2010 and sent to prison for sexually assaulting Grace and a 15-year-old foster daughter at their home in Allentown, about an hour north of Philadelphia.*
>
> *Sara Packer lost her job as an adoptions supervisor for nearby Northampton County in April 2010, and she was barred from taking in any more foster children. But she wasn't charged with a crime related to her husband's abuse, and Grace and her brother continued to live in the home. ~ CBS Philadelphia*[986],[cxlv]

As a Georgia State Senator, Nancy Schaefer attempted to be someone who didn't corrupt her public trust.

— An extreme rarity.

In 2007, she published the following release to her constituents:

> ***The Corrupt Business of Child Protective Services***[987]
>
> *My introduction into child protective service cases was due to a grandmother in an adjoining state who called me with her tragic story. Her two granddaughters had been taken from her daughter who lived in my district. Her daughter was told wrongly that if she wanted to see her children again she should sign a paper and give up her children. Frightened and young, the daughter did. I have since discovered that parents are often threatened into cooperation of permanent separation of their children.*
>
> *The children were taken to another county and placed in foster care. The foster parents were told wrongly that they could adopt the children. The grandmother then jumped through every hoop known to man in order to get her granddaughters. When the case finally came to court it was made evident by one of the foster parent's children that the*

foster parents had, at any given time, 18 foster children and that the foster mother had an inappropriate relationship with the caseworker.

In the courtroom, the juvenile judge, acted as though she was shocked and said the two girls would be removed quickly. They were not removed. Finally, after much pressure being applied to the Department of Family and Children Services of Georgia (DFCS), the children were driven to South Georgia to meet their grandmother who gladly drove to meet them.

After being with their grandmother two or three days, the judge, quite out of the blue, wrote up a new order to send the girls to their father, who previously had no interest in the case and who lived on the West Coast. The father was in "adult entertainment". His girlfriend worked as an "escort" and his brother, who also worked in the business, had a sexual charge brought against him.

Within a couple of days the father was knocking on the grandmother's door and took the girls kicking and screaming to California.

The father developed an unusual relationship with the former foster parents and soon moved back to the southeast, and the foster parents began driving to the father's residence and picking up the little girls for visits. The oldest child had told her mother and grandmother on two different occasions that the foster father molested her.

To this day after five years, this loving, caring blood relative grandmother does not even have visitation privileges with the children. The little girls are in my opinion permanently traumatized and the young mother of the girls was so traumatized with shock when the girls were first removed from her that she has not recovered. ...

Having worked with probably 300 cases statewide, I am convinced there is no responsibility and no accountability in the system.

I have come to the conclusion:

> ** that poor parents often times are targeted to lose their children because they do not have the where-with-all to hire lawyers and fight the system. ...*

> ** that caseworkers and social workers are oftentimes guilty of fraud. ...*
> ** that the separation of families is growing as a business...*
> ** that The Adoption and the Safe Families Act, set in motion by President Bill Clinton, offered cash "bonuses" to the states for every child they adopted out of foster care. ...*
> ** that some parents are even told if they want to see their children or grandchildren, they must divorce their spouse...*
> ** that tax dollars are being used to keep this gigantic system afloat, yet the victims, parents, grandparents, guardians and especially the children, are charged for the system's services. ...*
> ** that The National Center on Child Abuse and Neglect in 1998 reported that six times as many children died in foster care than in the general public and that once removed to official "safety", these children are far more likely to suffer abuse, including sexual molestation than in the general population.*
> ** That according to the California Little Hoover Commission Report in 2003, 30% to 70% of the children in California group homes do not belong there and should not have been removed from their homes.*

The next year she was forced out of office.

She continued to speak publicly about government responsibility in child abuse.

Two years later, she and her husband were dead.

> *It is a mystery that may never get a satisfactory answer. ...*
>
> *What happened? Why did he kill his wife of 52 years? What did the notes say?*
>
> *Here's what police say:*
>
> *On March 26, Bruce Schaefer, 74, a longtime Atlanta stockbroker who'd retired to his boyhood mountain haunts, shot his sleeping wife, Nancy Schaefer, 73, a former state senator and a conservative political activist. Then he turned the .38-caliber handgun on himself.*

> *The Schaefers were dead when their daughter found them in the bedroom of their Habersham County home. Investigators discovered a suicide note, as well as notes to each of the couple's five children.*
>
> *The Georgia Bureau of Investigation, which is investigating the case, is emphatic.*
>
> *"This is as clear-cut a case of murder-suicide as you'll see," said spokesman John Bankhead. The state agency will close out its investigation after doing a few more interviews and running some toxicology tests — standard procedure in death cases, said Bankhead.*
>
> *So case closed — or nearly.*
>
> *And yet, people talk. They talk about a twosome that was rarely apart, about a woman who achieved renown for her unapologetic stands against abortion and overzealous child protective services. They talk about her husband, who tried, but never managed, to ignore his wife's critics as effectively as she.*
>
> *People talk, and they wonder. ~ Atlanta Journal-Constitution*[988]

Actually, there's no "wonder" in it.

Chapter 30

Pedd State

5 November 2011: *Penn State Football Assistant Coach Gerald Arthur "Jerry" Sandusky is arrested and charged with seven counts of involuntary deviate sexual intercourse, eight counts of corruption of minors, eight counts of endangering the welfare of a child, seven counts of indecent assault, and other offenses.*

Sandusky was born into a Polish / Irish, Catholic family. The work his father did with the charity sports "Brownson House" in Washington, Pennsylvania inclined him toward a similar future. It is not known if Arthur Sandusky was also a pedophile. Given the commonality of generational abuse amongst predators, it is a prudent question to ask.

Sandusky, along with his wife Dorothy (who claims she was never aware of any abuse) were cleared to adopt 6 children and were also foster parents, keeping a regular flow of new victims coming through their home.

It is entirely possible if not probable that they were knowingly given victims to abuse. To date, son Matthew has stepped forward to testify that he was violated by his adoptive father[989] and son Jeffrey has been arrested for child sex abuse offenses.[990]

Like other predators, Sandusky enjoyed many decades of raping children while friends, family, co-workers and even sworn officials looked the other way.

Penn State Head Coach Joe Paterno (1926 – 2012) was a devout Roman Catholic and a member of the pious, secretive Opus Dei. His franchise gave him the most wins in NCAA Division I Football and he was lovingly referred to by media and fans as "JoePa".

Paterno knew what Sandusky was from the beginning, and chose to screen for him.

> *Penn State football coach Joe Paterno, told by a teenage boy in 1976 that assistant coach Jerry Sandusky molested him in a shower, responded that he didn’t want to hear about it and had “a football season to worry about,” according to court documents unsealed Tuesday.*
>
> *The boy, now a man identified as John Doe 150, said in 2014 that other boys in a shower heard him yell that Sandusky had just touched him sexually. He said he told several adults about it before seeking out Paterno.*
>
> *“Is it accurate that Coach Paterno quickly said to you, ‘I don’t want to hear about any of that kind of stuff, I have a football season to worry about’?” a lawyer for Penn State’s insurance carrier asked the man.*
>
> *“Specifically, yes,” the man replied.*
>
> *“I was shocked, disappointed, offended. I was insulted,” John Doe 150 testified. “I said, ‘Is that all you’re going to do?’”*
>
> *He said Paterno “just walked away.” ~ Associated Press*[991]

That same year (1976), the FBI was called in — not to investigate allegations of child sex abuse and trafficking, but to protect Paterno from a “bitter father” who had written him an anonymous letter with a “veiled threat”.

The FBI maintained their job of carefully watching out for and protecting Joe Paterno for two decades. In that time, child sex abuse or trafficking was never broached.

Once the Sandusky scandal came to light, the official 868-page FBI file was released in 2012.

However, 44 pages were “redacted”.[992]

How did the college football coach (little-known in 1976) rate such deferential taxpayer-funded treatment? —He was an Opus Dei, pedophile-protecting Roman Catholic.

22 years later, accusations would reach the desk of the Centre County District Attorney, Ray Gricar. Portrayed before and since as a no-nonsense, incorruptible official, Gricar refused to prosecute.

> *Ray Gricar came under fire because a 1998 report concerning Sandusky allegedly molesting two boys in a shower did not lead to charges. Under the scope of the findings of the 2011 grand jury, Sandusky admitted to taking a naked shower, touching a boy and asked for forgiveness. However, six weeks later, police closed the case.*
>
> *Gricar disappeared on April 15, 2005. He told his girlfriend he was going for a drive. His car was found in a Lewisburg, Pa. parking lot and his laptop missing its hard drive was located in the Susquehanna River, the Patriot News stated.*
>
> *Gricar was declared dead in July 2011, although his body has not been located. ~ Huntington News*[993]

Apparently Gricar's Catholic upbringing and education at "Marianist" University of Dayton[994] wasn't enough to save him.[cxlvi]

Sandusky was well-connected and clearly involved in a systemic child sex trafficking ring. It was a ring with tendrils running as far as Omaha, Nebraska. At least one name that came up in the Boys Town / Franklin scandal re-emerged with Sandusky.[995]

One year after pious Opus Dei Catholic Joe Paterno left a Sandusky victim standing in disbelief and betrayal, Sandusky started The Second Mile Foundation; a charity that would allow him to screen and groom thousands of poor, vulnerable children.

> *The charity's name came from the collection of moral lessons from Jesus' Sermon on the Mount, specifically from Matthew 5:41: "And whosoever shall compel thee to go one mile, go with him two."*
>
> *The state Attorney General's office on Saturday charged Mr. Sandusky, 67, with 40 sex charges against boys from 1994 to 2005, all of whom he met through the Second Mile Foundation he founded in 1977. Started as a small home for six troubled boys outside State College, it*

> *has grown to a statewide organization whose mission is to help "young people to achieve their potential as individuals and community members by providing opportunities for them to develop positive life skills and self-esteem."*
>
> *Mr. Sandusky and his wife Dottie have six adopted children and had cared for foster children, which led them to start the nonprofit. ~ Pittsburgh Post-Gazette*[996]

Was Sandusky mocking Jesus Christ with his crimes or did he live in some schizophrenic, pious/heinous Opus-Dei-style reality? Only he can answer (and he will, eventually).

It was later revealed that, not only was Sandusky raping the vulnerable and destitute boys his Second Mile foundation "rescued", he was offering them to his powerful Elite friends.[997]

One of those friends was District Judge Leslie Dutchcot. Dutchcot was a generous donator to Second Mile and, in return, she received financial assistance from a "Second Mile official".[998] What else she received has not been disclosed as of yet.

Dutchcot is a good Catholic girl who got her doctorate at Duquesne.

When Sandusky was finally arraigned, Prosecutors considered him a flight risk. They demanded no bail be allowed but, if set, should be nothing less than $500,000.

The judge ignored them and set the bail at $100,000. Jerry Sandusky was happy to walk around free while awaiting his criminal trial.

That judge was Leslie Dutchcot.

Montgomery County Representative Mike Vereb (Republican) was furious that Dutchcot had not recused herself due conflict of interest and demanded the State Supreme Court investigate her[999] but no investigation took place. Instead, Dutchcot spent three more years on the bench until walking away to a lucrative position in a private law firm outside her old Centre County jurisdiction.[1000]

At no time was Penn State University at risk of criminal or civil prosecution. Instead, like the Roman Catholic Church, school administrators were left to “police themselves”.

Who better for the “secular, public” university to choose for that than former Director of the FBI, Louis J. Freeh? By an amazing “coincidence”, Freeh is also an Opus Dei Roman Catholic.

> *“It’s widely known that Supreme Court Justices Antonin Scalia, Samuel Alito, and Clarence Thomas belong to Opus Dei — and that Chief Justice John Roberts may also be a member,” stated Matthew Fox, a former priest, progressive theologian and author of more than 23 books.*
>
> *“They’re in the CIA, the FBI,” said Fox. “Daniel Ellsberg recently told me that some of the ranking commanders of our military are also Opus Dei,” Fox stated in another interview. Veteran investigative reporter Seymour Hersh made a similar observation. “Hersh stated that Gen. Stanley McChrystal, Vice Admiral William McRaven and others in the Joint Special Operations Command (the group responsible for the assassination of Osama Bin Laden) were members of the Knights of Malta and Opus Dei. ...*
>
> *The New York Times noted in 2012 that an Opus Dei boy’s prep school “has become the popular school for a small clique of Washingtonians“: Rick Santorum; lobbyist and former U.S. Senator (R-FL), Mel Martinez; Sect. of Defense Chuck Hagel; the infamous FBI spy and Opus Dei member Robert Hanssen’s boss, former FBI director Louis J. Freeh; NOM founder Maggie Gallagher and National Review editor Kate O’Beirne.*
>
> *Fox said that both Santorum and Newt Gingrich are members...*
>
> *That’s why the endorsement by five former U.S. ambassadors to the Vatican of Mitt Romany in early January 2012 before the primaries signaled that “big money” had already chosen the GOP presidential nominee.*

Robert P. George, a Princeton University professor closely associated with Opus Dei, changed the landscape of U.S. politics. Neocon politico Deal Hudson stated that "If there really is a vast, right-wing conspiracy, its leaders probably meet in George's basement." Referred to by the **New York Times** *as "the country's most influential conservative Christian thinker,"*[cxlvii] *it was George's study conducted in the late 1990s showing that allegiance to the Republican Party depended not so much on religious affiliation as the frequency of church attendance which Karl Rove used to direct support for George W. Bush into pulpits, church bulletins, parking lot pamphlets and mailing lists taken from parish rosters. ...*

After becoming an archbishop, [George] *Pell invited Opus Dei to establish themselves in Melbourne and then Sydney. Under Pell's patronage, "Opus Dei's star is on the rise, it is said, and that of others — including other more established groups within the Church — is sinking,"* ***Sydney Morning Herald****'s religious affairs columnist wrote in January 2002. This reporter saw "signs of a new elitism….a clerical culture is being encouraged in which there is a highly select 'in' crowd around Pell."*

Pell has maintained a close relationship with Australia's conservative PM, Tony Abbott, and his party for decades. Days before Pope Bergoglio appointed Pell on April 13, 2013, to his "G8" group of cardinals who would advise the pope on "governing the Church," Pell attended a "Gala Dinner" celebrating the Melbourne-based Institute of Public Affairs (IPA) an "ultraconservative think tank." Rupert Murdoch was guest of honor and Abbott the keynote speaker. (Murdoch was awarded a papal knighthood by Pope John Paul II for "promoting the interests of society, the Church and the Holy See.")

From Bergoglio's point of view, Pell has sound business experience. "[Pell's] archdiocese's assets have nearly doubled since 2004 to over $1 billion at the end of 2013... . Since Pell became archbishop in 2001 the archdiocese has paid out $6.8 million to settle 82 claims for sex abuse according to figures provided by the archdiocese's business manager — an average of $83,200 each," reported one Australian

> *newspaper. "The disturbing consequence of this strategy, adopted widely in the Catholic Church, is that Catholic leaders effectively accepted that human worth can be measured by economic price. They accepted that the priority of the Church lay in the market where its task was to preserve and enhance its financial resources," noted another Australian publication.*
>
> *Pell is permanently relocating to Rome and will probably reside in the "grand apartment" he has used in the past at the Australian Church's guest house in Rome recently refurbished at a cost of "between $30 million and $85 million." ~ Daily Kos*[1001]

Although written with the paranoid Leftist spin that the "radical Right" secretly controls all, including the hapless Vatican, the Kos piece was professional. The facts disclosed show how Opus Dei is used to control "secular" universities like MIT and Harvard.

> *Boston Cardinal Sean O'Malley, the only American on the G8, is a faithful supporter of Opus Dei and has sponsored the canonization of the priest who "established an Opus Dei presence among students and professors at Harvard University and Massachusetts Institute of Technology" between 1946 and 1956. Metropolitan Boston now has more than eighty colleges and universities attracting thousands of students from around the world. Like Cardinal Marx, O'Malley celebrates special Masses commemorating Opus Dei founder, Josemaria Escriva, and visits the Opus Dei (male only) center at Harvard.*[1002]

— And whatever Opus Dei (and Rome) controls, it destroys.

> *Honduran Cardinal Oscar Rodríguez Maradiaga, coordinator of the G8, has become the pope's right-hand man, "some might say vice pope." Rodríguez Maradiaga is "the leader of Opus Dei" in Honduras which "participated actively in the 2009 coup against the constitutional [and progressive] president, Manuel Zelaya." "Active members of this clan are making intromissions in Honduran national politics." "Honduras now has the highest homicide rate in the world fueled by the drug trade and government corruption. Only 2 percent of*

> *murders are solved.” Rodríguez Maradiaga blamed “the Jews” for the scandal arising from clerical crimes.*[1003]

Given that Director Freeh’s “investigation” was “in-house” and carried no weight or substance, he was free to do it properly.

> *The most powerful leaders at Penn State University showed “total and consistent disregard” for child sex abuse victims while covering up the attacks of a longtime sexual predator, according to an internal review into how the school handled a scandal involving its former assistant football coach.*
>
> *Investigators conducted more than 400 interviews and found that several officials had “empowered” Jerry Sandusky to continue his abuse, while Joe Paterno, the school’s legendary head football coach, could have stopped the attacks had he done more, investigators said Thursday.*
>
> *In a scandal that has shaken Pennsylvania residents and gripped the nation, leading to Paterno’s dismissal and the ouster of longtime president Graham Spanier, Louis Freeh, the former FBI director who led the review, said top university officials forged an agreement to conceal Sandusky’s sexual attacks more than a decade ago.*
>
> *“There are more red flags here than you can count,” said Freeh, emphasizing the abuse occurred just “steps away” from where Paterno worked in the university’s Lasch Building. ~ CNN*[1004]

In proof of this, complicit Penn State administrators like President Graham Spanier and Athletic Director Tim Curley continued to draw pay even after they stepped down from their positions.[1005]

While it was in operation, Sandusky’s “Second Mile Foundation” received a strong helping-hand from many high-profile figures such as Roman Catholic Pittsburgh Steeler Linebacker Jack Ham, Pittsburgh Steeler Running Back Franco Harris (black father, Italian Roman Catholic mother) and Irish Roman Catholic actor Mark Wahlberg.[1006]

In 1990, Yale Skull and Bones President George Bush #41 recognized Second Mile as one of his “Points of Light”.[1007]

In 2002, United States Senator from the Commonwealth of Pennsylvania and Penn State alumnus, Rick Santorum, recognized Sandusky’s foundation with a “Congressional Angels in Adoption” award[1008] ... although many of the children raped and abused there saw nothing “angelic” about it.

The former Presidential Candidate is also an Opus Dei Roman Catholic.

Both Sides of the Street

In fact, Opus Dei has a special, dedicated outreach to convert the “rich and Republican”.

> *Rev. C. John McCloskey III, a priest of the traditionalist Opus Dei order...makes converts, often of the rich and Republican.*
>
> *He has personally prepared for conversion to Catholicism, among others, Gov. Sam Brownback of Kansas; the Supreme Court nominee Robert H. Bork; the columnists Robert D. Novak and Lawrence Kudlow; the conservative publisher Alfred S. Regnery*[cxlviii] *... Bernard Nathanson*[cxlix]*; and Lewis E. Lehrman, an investment banker and former candidate for governor of New York.*
>
> *Father McCloskey, 61, is hardly the only conservative priest or minister. But few have his knack for persuading political conservatives to adopt a different religion.*
>
> *After military school, Columbia University and a stint at Merrill Lynch, he joined Opus Dei and became a chaplain at Princeton University. He then ran the Catholic Information Center, an outreach ministry near the White House, where he introduced many Washington insiders to Catholicism. At his silent retreats in Virginia, Capitol Hill and K Street types see one another and nod. ~ New York Times*[1009]

Even the loyal Papal Court Jews at the *New York Times* were forced to admit the Hegelian machinations of Rome.

While the Jesuit White Pope works the Left side of the street, agents like Opus Dei “Father McCloskey” work the Right.

> *Many of his converts know one another; it is a kind of club. As Pope Francis is breathing life into the Catholic left, Father McCloskey is defibrillating the Catholic right.*
>
> *...after a period in Chicago...where Opus Dei sent him...Father McCloskey and I shared a late-afternoon cocktail. He talked about his college years, his time on Wall Street and his calling to become a priest. ...*
>
> *Then, when it was over, Father McCloskey surprised me by asking that I not quote him. Opus Dei would not let him speak on the record.*[1010]

Why would a “simple religious club” fear even controlled media? Perhaps it’s the extent of their reach that Opus Dei wishes to keep secret; from publishers to commentators to politicians —

> *...I turned to some of the men and women whom Father McCloskey has counseled.*
>
> *Several discussed the pleasure he takes in conservatives’ company, and his quiet facility with networking. He gets referrals. To take one example, before Mr. Regnery ever met Father McCloskey, he knew about him from Mr. Kudlow and Mr. Novak, converts of Father McCloskey’s who, as conservative opinion columnists, knew pretty much everyone.*
>
> *And in a church whose priests are often on the left economically, Father McCloskey has a niche. He is a devout free-marketeer, a priest who defends the compatibility of pro-business policies and Catholic theology.*
>
> *But more than anything, when I asked what made Father McCloskey so successful at persuading people to join the church, I heard the answer, counterintuitive in its simplicity, that he befriends people, whether they ask for it or not.*

> *“Once Father John gets his claws into you, he never lets go,” said Mr. Kudlow, who was fighting addictions to alcohol and cocaine when he met Father McCloskey in the 1990s.*[1011]

It is an apt description. Each new convert becomes an agent for Rome willing to betray all else in service to the Papacy.

> *Shortly after he began counseling Mr. Kudlow, Father McCloskey suggested that he go to church. Mr. Kudlow found that he loved Mass, and in 1997, he was baptized Catholic.*
>
> *Mr. Brownback and Mr. Lehrman did not respond to requests for comment. Nor did the presidential candidate Rick Santorum, whose son was baptized by Father McCloskey. But Mr. Regnery, whose family firm has published William F. Buckley Jr., Ann Coulter and Dinesh D’Souza, did respond, effusively.*
>
> *In the 1990s, dissatisfied with the Episcopal Church, Mr. Regnery attended two weekend retreats run by Father McCloskey. They became friends, and in 2006 or 2007, he became a Catholic.*[1012]

Indeed, “Mr. Regnery” has done an excellent job promoting those loyal to the Catholic cause and denying those who aren’t (such as yours, truly).

It may surprise readers to learn that frequent Fox News guest Ann Coulter fits in very well. Despite *appearing* to be “far Right”, Coulter has pushed for Presidential candidates like Mormon moderate Mitt Romney and closet Catholic Chris Christie (also not very “Conservative”).

Romney comes from a family of Mormon Ruling Elites — something far more common in America than our Founding generation would ever have dreamed.

Romney’s father, George Wilcken Romney, was the 43rd Governor of Michigan and the United States Secretary of Housing and Urban Development under Richard Milhous Nixon.

CIA mind-controlled sex slave, Cathy O’Brien, states in her book *Trance Formation of America* that she was abused at the Michigan Governor’s mansion during his tenure.[1013]

Whenever a Jesuit plant needs Conservative credentials, they rail against Communism — it’s safe and it’s completely contained.

Once the Jesuits created Communism via their Reduction settlements in Paraguay, Argentina, Brazil, and Bolivia, it was insinuated at every level of American life. The infiltration was so bad it needed cover.

That cover was provided via the outrageous antics of a corrupt Irish Catholic Senator named Joseph McCarthy.

But the idea wasn’t his, it was the brainchild of Father Edmund Walsh, SJ[1014] — the man whom the Georgetown School of Foreign Service is named after.

Georgetown SFS is a prerequisite for anyone who expects to serve in power because they will ultimately serve Rome. The list of alumni is too vast to show but it includes names like —

> * Donald Trump strategist / Breitbart CEO Steve Bannon
> * President of the European Commission and former Prime Minister of Portugal José Manuel Durão Barroso
> * U.S. Army Chief of Staff George Casey
> * President William Jefferson Clinton
> * Reagan Secretary of State Alexander Haig
> * Obama's National Security Advisor Gen. James Jones, USMC
> * Trump Secretary of Homeland Security Gen. John Kelly, USMC
> * Former President of the Philippines Gloria Macapagal-Arroyo
> * Obama Chief of Staff and Deputy National Security Advisor Denis McDonough
> * CNN Commentator Kayleigh McEnany
> * Wall Street Journal columnist Daniel Henninger
> * Actor, Producer, Director Carl Reiner (a Jew)[cl]
> * NASA Chief of Staff Courtney Stadd
> * U.S. Senator from Alaska Daniel Sullivan
> * CIA Director George Tenet —And many more.

Rightly is the Jesuit school for intrigue in "Foreign Service" named after Edmund Walsh.

> *If the Vatican and Jesuits are not up to their eyeballs in provoking wars and creating general chaos worldwide, then why did Georgetown Jesuit priest, Edmund A. Walsh, handpick and place mass murderer Joseph Stalin into power?*
>
> *If Walsh wasn't a kingpin in the New World Order, how could he have the power to use American money to fund Russian communism? How could he have had the power to handpick FDR and Eisenhower to push a phony, controlled World War II onto the American people?*
>
> *How could Walsh, the creator of the School of Foreign Service at Georgetown, have had the power to act as chief consultant to the Nuremburg trial judges in order to keep the Jesuits and Vatican connection to the Nazis out of the public record as well as ensuring some prominent Nazis were never convicted?*

> *If Walsh was only a harmless school teacher as depicted by the Jesuits, how come he was instrumental in establishing diplomatic relations for the U.S. Government in Baghdad way back in 1931? How come he personally assisted Plutarco Elías Calles in the formation of the National Revolutionary Party (PNR), ensuring the security and primacy of the Catholic Church in Mexican politics and the party—an alliance that remains unbroken to this day? Of course, all these important questions have never been answered by U.S. leaders and the Vatican. Why? Because it would show, beyond a reasonable doubt, the two entities are working together to destroy America from within and have been doing it for a very, very long time.* ~ Szymanski[1015]

Joe McCarthy was trained by the Jesuits at Marquette — the same location where Jeffrey Dahmer's father was instructed in "chemistry".

Notable alumni also include 2016 Republican presidential candidate and former Wisconsin Governor Scott Walker, comedian Chris Farley (who died at the "magick" age of 33) and reporter James Foley. Foley was supposedly beheaded by "ISIS" and his "death" was heavily propagandized to breathe new life into the muslim terror boogeyman. It's probably only a coincidence that Foley was working for "USAID", a "non-governmental organization" (NGO) known by independent journalists to be a front for CIA operations.[1016]

A mass was given at Marquette for Foley[1017], though whether he attended is up for speculation.

Marquette is actually quite proud of Joseph McCarthy[1018], maybe that's why Ann Coulter is a fan, too.[1019]

Why would Coulter be such a passionate defender of Joe McCarthy? — Because her father was a devout Catholic and famed FBI Communist fighter.[1020]

It's interesting that John Vincent Coulter shared the same FBI resumé as a man on the other side of the supposed political spectrum-Connecticut Senator Thomas J. Dodd.[1021] Dodd, like Father Walsh, was also at Nuremburg. The devout Catholic Senator liked the Nazis so much, he used the 1938 Nazi Gun Control Act to fashion his 1968 Gun Control Act.[1022] It needed the help of media anti-gun propaganda after the murder of John F. Kennedy but it was passed.

The Dodd’s are yet another Catholic Ruling Elite family who have been destroying America for multiple generations on behalf of Rome.

Son Christopher Dodd took up where his father left off as a Connecticut Congressman and Senator. Dodd, along with homosexual Massachusetts Congressman Barney Frank created massive debt and disaster for Americans via government real estate hand-outs at Fannie Mae and Freddy Mac.[1023] Fannie and Freddy are part of the socialized lending initiated by Freemason Franklin Roosevelt’s 1938 “New Deal”.

Christopher Dodd went to Georgetown Prep[1024] and was instrumental in helping brother Thomas Dodd, Jr. — a professor at Georgetown — become a United States ambassador.[1025]

After proving his loyalty to the Whore of Babylon, dealing decades of damage to America as a Legislator, Dodd was given another important job: directing the Psychological Operations of the Court Jews in Hollywood. Dodd is the current Chairman and Chief Executive Officer of the Motion Picture Association of America.

Keep this in mind when the Jews are blamed for poison of “entertainment”.

Although, like Donald Trump, Ann Coulter claims she’s a Presbyterian[1026], she’s a council chair for the homosexual Republican group “GOPROUD”.[1027]

But Opus Dei doesn’t pigeon-hole itself with just the frauds on the “far Right”, it also goes after pop music icons like “Madonna” Louise Ciccone.[1028]

Ciccone is certainly a worthy catch, from her mocking the crucifixion of Jesus Christ on stage[1029] to her 1992 book *Sex*.

What possibly connects “Madonna” Ciccone and Ann Coulter? — The “stage” of the Devil’s Simulation, run by Rome.

On the one side is the confused, distracted Right; kept so by agents of disinformation like Coulter.

On the other are bold harlots like Ciccone who sell their bodies and souls for fame and seek to sexualize as many as they can (the younger the better).

The media is only too happy to contribute.

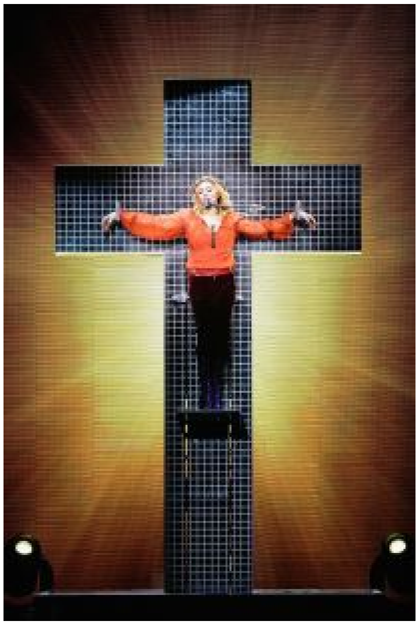

FAIR USE for illustration.

> ***Madonna’s Pussy Is the Temple of Learning***
> Rich Juzwiak, Gawker[1030]
>
> *Today,* [her 1992 album] ***Erotica*** *turns 20 (tomorrow* [her 1992 pornographic picture-book] ***Sex*** *will do the same), but only now has S&M really broken the mainstream pop culture to the level of a phenomenon (courtesy of* **50 Shades of Grey***). Only now are we accustomed to having a pack of female pop icons who sing about being excited by whips and chains, who snarl, “I’m a slut like you!,” who espouse the virtues of “pussy power” on talk shows. Only now are we used to the kind of content onslaught that Madonna delivered in 1992...*
>
> *If* ***Erotica*** *wasn’t responsible for these developments, it certainly predicted them. The album was more ahead of its time than any pop record released that year. ...*
>
> ***Sex*** *boasts even more layers and is more engaging for it. There are straightforward jokes amidst the softcore porn, which includes depictions of water sports, bondage, pansexuality amongst both sexes and public nudity. ...*
>
> *All of these sentences start mini-essays: “Sex with the young can be fun if you’re in the mood”; “There’s no better way to wake up in the morning than with my* [CENSORED]*”; “When I was a child I used to*

> *sit on the toilet backward and wait for the burning sensation between my legs to go away.”; “I like my pussy.”*

Juzwiak and “Gawker” don’t just play at publicizing the Christ-mocking depravity that makes the Devil’s Simulation run, they work at it with all their might with pieces and headlines like this: ***The Second Coming, A Proud Slut and YouTube Stars: This Week’s New Music Summarizes the Whole Year***[1031]

Their boldness derives from the idea that no one would dare stop them.

Those who rape, torture and murder children are even more bold.

Imagine their surprise if a popular uprising suddenly and quickly overwhelmed them.

Chapter 31

"#PizzaGate"

4 February 2011: *Conservative Jewish political commentator Andrew*

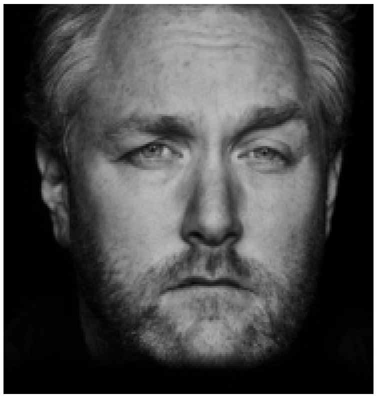

Breitbart "tweets" from his certified account —
How prog-guru John Podesta isn't household name as world class underage sex slave op cover-upperer defending unspeakable dregs escapes me.

Neither Breitbart nor any other member of "Conservative" media mentions it any further.

One year and one month later, Andrew Breitbart dropped dead onto the sidewalk in Brentwood, Los Angeles.

As far as Andrew Breitbart was concerned, the idea that the Democrats were hiding participation in a child sex slave operation was nothing more than political fodder; ammunition to selectively release at the most opportune time. He even joked about it four months after his "tweet" on the Fox News late-night show "Red Eye" with Catholic commentator Greg Gutfeld.

Gutfeld attended Roman Catholic Junípero Serra High School in San Mateo, California.

Serra is the "Saint" whom Jesuit Pope Francis honored when he came to America to address the United States Government in a joint session of

Congress on 24 September 2015. It was the first time in American history a Pope had done so.

He was invited by former Speaker of the House of Representatives Nancy Pelosi, ("Democrat", California) and her Ohio "Republican" replacement, Congressman John Boehner. Pelosi was mentored by Jesuit Father Stephen J. Privett, President of San Francisco University and Boehner was trained by the Jesuits at Xavier.

Although Pelosi wasn't sitting across from Boehner during the Pope's speech, the Democrat President of the Senate was; Vice President Joe Biden. Biden, also a Roman Catholic, was given an honorary degree by the Jesuits at Scranton University.

The two "rivals" frequently stood in applause to honor their Jesuit Pope.

When Francis led Congress to pay homage to the controversial Saint (some have questioned his methods amongst native Americans), they didn't have far to go. A bronze statue of Father Junípero Serra is prominently displayed in National Statuary Hall on "Capitol Hill".

"Capitol Hill" is named after Capitoline (*Campidoglio*) Hill in Rome. It is also why all seats of government are called "Capitols". It is one of the seven hills referenced in Revelation 17; cited again: ***The Great Harlot and the Beast***

One of the seven angels who had the seven bowls came and talked with me, saying to me, "Come, I will show you the Judgment of the Great Prostitute who sits on many waters [who controls large numbers of people]*, with whom the kings of the Earth committed adultery* [they denied God and their humanity and sold themselves to her for power]*, and the inhabitants of the Earth were made drunk with the wine of her sexual immorality."* [They worshipped her in her falsehood and perversion.]

Then he carried me away in the Spirit into the wilderness. I saw a woman sitting on a scarlet beast which was full of blasphemous names, having seven heads and ten horns. The woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet, and adorned with gold and precious stones and pearls, having in her hand a golden cup full of abominations and the filth of her sexual immorality. On her forehead a name was written:
MYSTERY,
BABYLON THE GREAT,
THE MOTHER OF PROSTITUTES
AND OF THE ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH.

I saw the woman, drunk with the blood of the saints and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus. [No entity has tortured and slaughtered more Christians than Rome.]

When I saw her, I marveled greatly. Then the angel said to me, "Why do you marvel? I will tell you the mystery of the woman and of the beast that carries her, which has the seven heads and the ten horns. The beast, which you saw, was, and is not [How perfectly does this describe the rise, fall and rise of Rome?!]*, and is to ascend out of the bottomless pit and go to destruction. Those who dwell on the Earth whose names are not written in the Book of Life from the foundation of the world will marvel when they see the beast that was, and is not, and is to come."*

"Here is the mind which has wisdom: The seven heads are seven mountains on which the woman sits. They are also seven kings. Five have fallen, one is, the other has not yet come; and when he comes, he

> *must remain a little while. Concerning the beast who was, and is not, he is the eighth, and is of the seven, and is going to destruction."*
>
> *"The ten horns which you saw are ten kings who have received no kingdom yet, but they will receive authority as kings for one hour with the beast. These are of one mind and will give their power and authority to the beast. These will wage war with the Lamb, but the Lamb will overcome them, for He is Lord of lords and King of kings. Those who are with Him are called and Chosen and Faithful."*
>
> *Then he said to me, "The waters which you saw, where the prostitute sits, are peoples and multitudes and nations and tongues. These ten horns and the beast which you saw will hate the prostitute; they will make her desolate and naked, and devour her flesh, and burn her with fire. For God has put in their hearts to fulfill His Will, and to be of one mind, and to give their kingdom to the Beast, until the Words of God are fulfilled. The woman whom you saw is that great city, which reigns over the kings of the Earth."* ~ Revelation 17, Modern English Version (some capitalization added for clarity and reverence) Andrew Breitbart's death at only 43 years of age was quickly ruled a "heart attack by natural causes".

At the time of his death, Brietbart was Executive Chairman of the Brietbart News Network which included a web site. Like all the others in its class, the site puts a pseudo-Right spin on its propaganda exploiting emotionalism over information.

After his death, his position was taken over by Stephen Kevin Bannon.

Bannon is the quintessential Roman propaganda operative.

Raised in an Irish Roman Catholic "pro-union Democrat" household,[1032] Bannon attended Benedictine College Preparatory, a private, Catholic, military high school in Richmond, Virginia.

Bannon then served as a Surface Warfare Officer aboard the Navy destroyer USS Foster. It is here that his fast track began and he was sent to become "special assistant" to the Chief of Naval Operations, Admiral Thomas B. Hayward at the Pentagon.[1033]

From the Pentagon, Bannon moved to Goldman Sachs as an investment banker in "Mergers and Acquisitions".[1034]

He was promoted and sent to Hollywood to help the Goldman expansion there.[1035] He left as a Vice President.

Bannon later described his time with one of the most notorious financial firms in the world as "like joining the Jesuits".[1036]

Steve Bannon, 2017 "Conservative Political Action Conference" in National Harbor, Mary-land, by Gage Skidmore

To complete his weaponizing as expert in Right-wing distraction and disinformation, he received his Master's Degree in "National Security Studies" from the Father Edmund Walsh School of Foreign Service at Jesuit Georgetown University.[1037]

Bannon then began to exploit his Hollywood experience by making muck-raking political propaganda films — none of which ever used the words, "Rome", "Jesuit" or "Vatican", of course.

Although a founding member of Breitbart News[1038], sources like *Wikipedia* excite paranoia over "***far Right***" Jewish "Zionist" control.

> ***Breitbart News Network*** *(known commonly as* ***Breitbart News****,* ***Breitbart*** *or* ***Breitbart.com****) is a far-right*[6] *American news, opinion and commentary*[7][8] *website founded in 2007 by conservative commentator Andrew Breitbart. The site has published a number of falsehoods and conspiracy theories,*[9][10][11][12] *as well as intentionally misleading stories.*[13]
>
> *Conceived by Breitbart during a visit to Israel in mid-2007 as a website "that would be unapologetically pro-freedom and pro-Israel"*[14] ... ~ *Wikipedia*[1039]

Oddly, “user-edited” *Wikipedia* doesn’t mention anti-Semitic race-baiting as a “false” or “purposefully misleading” agenda.

As good a job as Jewish figurehead Andrew Breitbart was doing in substanceless muck-raking, he still wasn’t a fully-aware member of the “team”. He was clearly at risk of giving up information he shouldn’t have so he was replaced with someone who was “read-in”.

In an interview with a sister propaganda effort, “WorldNetDaily” founded by secret Lebanese Roman Catholic Joseph Farah, Bannon told Roman Catholic reporter Jerome Corsi that questioning Andrew Breitbart’s sudden heart attack death at only 43 was “irresponsible”.

> *Filmmaker Steve Bannon, appointed executive chairman of the Breitbart News Network after Breitbart’s death, has insisted to WND that the media mogul died of natural causes and to suggest anything else is irresponsible.*
>
> *“Breitbart had an enlarged heart,” Bannon told WND. “He had been hospitalized for the problem last year and told to lose weight that he did not lose.”*
>
> *Bannon, formerly a Breitbart News Network board member, told WND that for months prior to his death, Breitbart had been working overtime to finalize a refinancing of his news agency.*
>
> *“He died of natural causes,” Bannon said. “The family wants the matter put to rest, and WND is beginning to irritate me suspecting foul play.”* ~ WorldNetDaily[1040]

By all means, if Steve Bannon claims the family of Andrew Breitbart doesn’t want his possible murder investigated then that’s the end of it!

In 2014, Steve Bannon was called to the Vatican.[1041]

Two years later he was Presidential Campaign Chief Executive for Jesuit-educated “Protestant” Donald Trump. After Trump’s election, Bannon became White House Chief Strategist.

Learning Against Learning

Right-spinning Roman muck-raking is an art form. It requires the deft touch of a bomb-maker: how much truth can be sown while still masking the Whore of Babylon as the ultimate Puppet Master?

Too little truth and no-one buys it.

Too much truth and you threaten to wake the Sleeping Giant.

As with nearly all previous elections, Rome carefully mitigated the tiny portion of unknowns in supposed “democratic elections” to two choices — both firmly in the Pope’s back pocket.

Hillary Clinton had long ago put herself in full volunteer status for the Devil’s Simulation. She dutifully stood by her Jesuit-trained husband through all of his criminal activities from running drugs for the CIA through Mena when Bill was Governor[1042] to the sexual abuse of women and children (which she fully participated in).[1043] For this, she was gifted with becoming a United States Senator in a State she never lived in — New York. It was also the State that was the home of Bill’s likely biological father, Winthrop Aldrich Rockefeller.[1044]

Winthrop fit well in the Devil’s Simulation. He was an extreme sexual deviant who left New York to be gifted as Governor of Arkansas. It was he who arranged for his illegitimate son to meet Jesuit-mentored President John F. Kennedy just months before he was brutally murdered.[1045]

Rockefeller also arranged for Bill to receive a Rhodes Scholarship and a Vietnam draft deferment.[1046]

But Hillary Rodham was no fool. She knew that her masters didn’t meddle in details as long as the outcome pleased them. At her level, it was a cage match so she loaded it in her favor by choosing United States Senator for the Commonwealth of Virginia, Tim Kaine, as her running mate.

Kaine is a devout Roman Catholic, trained by the Jesuits in high school and college. After college, he went on a mission trip with the Jesuits to South America. During the campaign, he swore that one of the top Clinton/Kaine agenda items would be to legalize the millions of illegal Roman Catholic aliens in America.[1047]

The Governor of Virginia then, and at this writing, was/is Terence Richard "Terry" McAuliffe — a Jesuit-trained Roman Catholic.

Because the two Roman-controlled puppet camps were being left to fight it out, they both played dirty; although Bannon & Company played dirtier. They decided to leak information about key Democrat pedophiles and deviants — nothing linking important players like Clinton, directly, of course.

It was disclosed that a hub of child sex slave trafficking was Comet Ping Pong Pizza in Washington D.C. owned by James Alefantis. Alefantis was listed by GQ as one of the "50 Most Powerful People in Washington".[1048]

The Podesta brothers, John and Tony, are well-known in Washington as extreme sadists and deviants. In fact, they may have been chosen to be spotlighted in "PizzaGate" because they were beginning to annoy other members of the Pedocracy.

Tony Podesta's mansion is littered with extreme and perverse "art" from scared, scantily clad toddlers to a suspended 8' bronze by Louise Bourgeois called "the Arch of Hysteria"; a headless, naked man arched in the identical way one of Jeffrey Dahmer's victims was found.[1049]

Operatives for the Bannon / Trump team were allowed to emphasize the story but only in select circles. The controversy climaxed when the son of Trump's National Security Advisor, United States Army General Michael Thomas Flynn, Sr. (Flynn, Jr.) "tweeted" criticism of the Roman Catholic Director of the FBI, James Comey. Comey had denied investigating and disclosing Podesta's electronic communications.[1050],[1051]

“Nothing to see here...move along, move along.”

In response, the former Defense Intelligence Agency Director, Flynn, Sr., was forced to step down as NSA by “Evangelical” Catholic Vice President Mike Pence.

That was despite Flynn’s qualifications as a high-ranking Catholic General in “Military Intelligence”. It is guaranteed that Flynn was a willing participant in the sophistry that is the “Global War on Terror.”

In December of 2016, fresh after the “election”, CNN’s Jake Tapper repeatedly “grilled” Vice President-elect Pence on why Mike Flynn Jr. was given a security clearance.

> *I wanna ask you about an incident on the transition, today, Michael G.* [sic] *Flynn, the* ***son*** *of the future National Security Advisor, Lt. General Michael Flynn, has been pushing a bunch of conspiracy theories, including one, ah, that ended up, ah, impacting* ***your*** *— where you’re staying right now — your local pizza place, Comet Pizza, ah, an insane lie, spread online, it lead a North Carolina man to barge into the restaurant with two weapons, thankfully no one was hurt...*[1052]

We don’t know if the “Evangelical” Catholic Vice President was actually “staying” at Comet Ping Pong Pizza — as in *living* there. Maybe Mr. Tapper was just over-excited. Comet was special for him, too.

Just the year before, Jake and his wife were treated to a puff piece from *The Washingtonian*. In it, Jennifer Tapper said the favorite place for her and Jake to take the kids, was Comet Ping Pong Pizza. She said that her favorite “date night” location for her and her husband was “Buck’s Fishing and Camping” — also owned by James Alefantis.[1053]

We hope for the sake of the Tapper children, all they did was eat pizza.

The “shooting incident” Tapper was referring to was an extremely suspicious affair. The day before the interview, on the 5th of December, 2016, former actor “Edgar Maddison Welch” burst into Comet Ping Pong Pizza with a deadly AR-15[cli] and shot a single round that miraculously took out the restaurant’s computer but did no other damage.[1054]

Perhaps he bought his ammunition from the same place Lee Harvey Oswald bought his magic seven-ricocheting bullet. If so, he was probably told where to get it by Arlen Specter; the Jewish lawyer who fabricated the ludicrous theory for the Warren Commission.

Although he was raised in Kansas, Specter was schooled by the Jesuits in secret at the University of Pennsylvania. He was rewarded for his loyalty by being “elected” a United States Senator from the Commonwealth of Pennsylvania; a position he maintained for Rome for *thirty years*.

Edgar Maddison Welch has been credited in such movies as *The Mill* (2008), *A Tale About Bootlegging* (2005) and the violent 2009 B-horror movie, *The Bleeding*.[1055]

Perhaps the most astounding “coincidence” of them all was where Edgar was in 2010. While Laura Silsby-Gayler was “rescuing” Haitian children by kidnapping them, Edgar was building homes for them with an un-named “church”.[1056]

*****

Why didn’t the Democrats fight fire with fire?

Maybe they weren’t ruthless enough (though, highly unlikely).

There certainly is plenty for them to exploit.

Donald John Trump is exactly like any other Roman agent in a key position: a sexual deviant and a pedophile. In fact, Trump may even have abused (is abusing?) his own daughter, Ivanka.[1057]

Ivanka and her Jewish husband have been given “unprecedented”[1058] access to American government.

Ivanka walked in the identical footsteps of her father (or was directed to), receiving training from the Jesuits at Georgetown for two years before transferring to the “secular” University of Pennsylvania for her “public school” degree.

Her husband, Jared Kushner, is an important figurehead whom the media have used repeatedly for the idea that a Jewish conspiracy exists — it may even have been intended in their marriage. Her brother Eric (a key advisor and fund-raiser to his father) also married a Jew; Lara Yunaska.

Eric stayed at Georgetown for a full degree and is now on the Board of Directors for the McDonough School of Business at his *alma matter*.

As far as the “Jewish Conspiracy” goes, the *Washington Post* was mild, headlining how Kushner had been “tapped” by Trump to lead a “SWAT team” to “fix government with business ideas”.[1059]

The far-Left *Huffington Post* was more incendiary.

> ***White House Announces Jared Kushner Is Now Responsible For Everything***[1060]

As things got too hot for Steve Bannon, he bowed out. The *Huffington Post* blamed the Jewish husband of the President’s daughter.

> ***Jared Kushner Helped Push Steve Bannon Out Of The NSC***[1061]

The sad part about Rome using Jewish patsies is how many of them are willing to be used.

Trump’s pedophile pimp has been “mystery” billionaire Jeffrey Epstein.

As far back as 2002, media began asking questions about the former math teacher from Dalton, Ohio who skyrocketed through fellow Jew and Senior Bear Stearns Partner Ace Greenberg into the Wall Street stock exchange[1062] where insider trading is as easy as raping a child.

Perhaps in honor of Tiberius and Caligula, Epstein bought his own island from which to showcase women and children. It has been called euphemistically, “Orgy Island”.

The list of Epstein’s clientele reads like a “Who’s Who” of fame.[1063] The names include (but with many more besides): Bill Clinton Kevin Spacey
Chris Tucker Prince Andrew
Stephen Hawking (for entertainment?)
Bill Richardson David Copperfield
Alan Dershowitz Courtney Love
Ehud Barak Alec Baldwin
Ralph Fiennes Ted Kennedy
David Koch Tony Blair
Naomi Campbell Dustin Hoffman
Michael Bloomberg Richard Branson
Mick Jagger Michael Jackson
David Frost Jimmy Buffett.

— and, of course, Donald John Trump.

> *Epstein was also a regular visitor to Donald Trump’s Mar-a-Lago, and the two were friends. According to the Daily Mail, Trump was a frequent dinner guest at Epstein’s home, which was often full of barely dressed models. In 2003,* ***New York magazine*** *reported that Trump also attended a dinner party at Epstein’s honoring Bill Clinton. ...*
>
> *“I’ve known Jeff for 15 years,” Trump said. “Terrific guy. He’s a lot of fun to be with. It is even said that he likes beautiful women as much as I do, and many of them are on the younger side. No doubt about it — Jeffrey enjoys his social life.” ~ The New York Post*[1064]

If “Jeffrey enjoys his social life” is code for “we all like to rape little girls,” the girls aren’t laughing.

In fact, one of them is doggedly pursuing the President of the United States for having raped her when she was 13 at an Epstein "party".[1065]

As a puppet, William Jefferson Clinton has been retired and more detail (but not all) can be given of his predations.

> *Epstein has spent the bulk of his adult life cultivating relationships with the world's most powerful men. Flight logs show that from 2001 to 2003, Bill Clinton flew on Epstein's private plane, dubbed "The Lolita Express" by the press, 26 times. After Epstein's arrest in July 2006, federal tax records show Epstein donated $25,000 to the Clinton Foundation that year.*[1066]

But if Epstein's clients thought they were getting sex with children for nothing, they were mistaken.

> *One powerful friend of Epstein is former President Bill Clinton, who FoxNews.com first reported took 26 trips around the world aboard Epstein's Boeing 727, dismissing his Secret Service detail for five of the trips.*
>
> *Virginia Roberts, who claims that at age 15 she was a "sex slave" for Epstein and his friends, and is one of the plaintiffs in the ongoing civil case against the federal government, claims the plane was outfitted with a bedroom for orgies, earning it the name "Lolita Express."*
>
> *"Epstein required me to describe the sexual events that I had with these men, presumably so that he could potentially blackmail them," Roberts said in an affidavit filed with the court. "Based on my knowledge of Epstein and his organization, as well as discussions with the FBI, it is my belief that federal prosecutors likely possess videotapes and photographic images of me as an underage girl having sex with Epstein and some of his powerful friends."*
>
> *One key piece of evidence from Epstein's case was released last week by the Florida State Attorney General's Office: a one-hour video showing the Oct. 20, 2005, search of his mansion. The video captured numerous salacious photos of young girls, some totally nude, as well*

> *as a photo of a child around 5 years old bending over in a short dress, adorning his walls.*
>
> *Other Epstein items documented in the police video include a small stuffed teddy bear by his bedside, a professional dental chair and drill set in his bathroom, and Epstein in a photo standing next to a Catholic pope, but not shown are the hidden cameras found on his property. ~* Fox News[1067]

For some reason, Fox News didn’t feel it was necessary to elaborate on which “pope” Jeffrey Epstein was friends with ... perhaps more than one.

As more of Epstein’s victims came forward, prosecution was forced upon an unwilling Pedocracy.

Epstein was charged on at least 5 counts of Federal criminal acts involving minors and under-aged sex. The United States Attorney, Alexander Acosta, dropped all Federal charges. Epstein plead guilty to the Florida charge of “solicitation of a minor” and was given 13 months of “house arrest”.

> *In 2007, Acosta signed a non-prosecution deal in which he agreed not to pursue federal charges against Epstein or four women who the government said procured girls for him. In exchange, Epstein agreed to plead guilty to a solicitation charge in state court, accept a 13-month sentence, register as a sex offender and pay restitution to the victims identified in the federal investigation.*
>
> *“This agreement will not be made part of any public record,” the deal between Epstein and Acosta says. The document was unsealed by a federal judge in a civil lawsuit in 2015.*
>
> *Reiter said in the 2009 deposition that federal prosecutors in Miami told him “that typically these kinds of cases with one victim would end up in a ten-year sentence.” Reiter said he was surprised not only by the decision to pull back from prosecuting the case, but also by the light sentence and liberal privileges granted to Epstein during his jail term. ~ The Washington Post*[1068]

Donald Trump’s first choice for Labor Secretary was fast food chain Carl’s Jr CEO Andrew Puzder.

Under Puzder's guidance, Carl's Jr. led the field in unhealthy menu items in an industry that specializes in poison for the poor. He then packaged it in porn; television ads so controversial, it cost him several positions. Although Puzder didn't see any conflict with his Catholic religion, the other members of the Board of Trustees at Thomas Aquinas University did and forced him off.

> *Under Puzder's leadership, CKE Restaurants, which owns Carl's Jr. and Hardee's restaurants, launched several racy ad campaigns featuring women in bikinis eating burgers. ...*
>
> *In one 2003 ad featuring Hefner, the Playboy founder responds to a question about having favorites while standing with his girlfriend and two Playboy Playmates, according to reports in the L.A. Times and in AdWeek. ~ CNN*[1069]

Unfortunately, Puzder was a little too greasy even for Congress.

Instead, Trump replaced him with a shoo-in: an up-and-coming United States Attorney who once clerked for Opus Dei Roman Catholic Supreme Court Justice Samuel Alito.[1070]

That was Alexander Acosta and the Senate confirmed him with a solid 60-vote majority (with less than 100 showing up to work on 26 April 2017).

Once Donald Trump got into office, "#PizzaGate" was made to go away, kept alive only by a handful of "alternative media" personalities.

Perhaps the one who has gotten the most face-time is David Seaman; another Jew in journalism.[clii]

Seaman has claimed to be one of the first to break the "PizzaGate" story online. His YouTube *About* profile boasts 150,000 subscribers and an overall view count of just under 18 million — 12 million since the last quarter of 2016.[1071]

For "alternative media", Dave Seaman has quite an extensive mainstream resumé.

> *I report the truth. Often socially liberal, fiscally conservative, and curious. Always human. Former contributor: Huffington Post, Business Insider. Maybe you've seen me on as a guest in the past: ABC News Digital, Coast to Coast, CNN Headline News, BBC, HuffPost LIVE, The Young Turks, or Fox News.*[1072]

As investigators have found, "mainstream media" is locked down extremely tight. Can someone who hasn't been vetted as trustworthy with the Machine Agenda appear on CNN, FoxNews, the Huffington Post or the BBC?

We would add another venue David seems reticent to admit; he's also been with Alex Jones…more than once.[1073]

Although David claims that he was terminated from the *Huffington Post* for simply questioning Hillary's health[1074], he's still listed as an author.[1075]

Of all the reasons to be "terminated", "Hillary's health" is the most banal and least harmful to the Pedocracy if further discussions ensued. Should David have been terminated for questioning Hillary Clinton's role in raping and murdering children or her empowerment (along with her Jesuit-trained husband) by Central Intelligence Agency drug running into the continental United States, that might have raised too many eyebrows.

The tactic of garnering sympathy because he *appears* to have been terminated from mainstream media for daring to bring up such a critical issue to Americans as Hillary's health seems to have worked well for Seaman.

He may not go for real "alternative" topics but what Dave *does* like to push are investments in Bitcoin and gold. Both are frequent traps for unsuspecting truth-seekers to fall into. Assuming a Machine big enough to control the banking of the most powerful nations in existence wouldn't have an interest in "crypto-currency" is the height of foolish naiveté. The pitfalls of investing in precious metals are just as many.[1076]

Seaman is an expert in self-promotion and propaganda. In 2008, he stated in an interview with Business Beat Live, "I would protest gravity if I thought it was going to get me a buzz."[1077]

It was an interesting claim to make for someone supposedly of the "truth community".

But as far as hawking goes, David Seaman is more than just a promoter of Bitcoin, he's an investor and close confidant of the major holder behind Bitcoin's parent company "Goldmoney", Roy Sebag.[1078] When Sebag (an Israeli Jew) popped up out of nowhere to purchase Goldmoney, investors were deeply concerned. Had they been aware of the history of banking — invented by the Templars then perfected by the Bardis, Gondis, Peruzzis and Medicis of Italy, they would look more to Rome than Tel Aviv for answers.

Perhaps most troubling of all is the location of Goldmoney's corporate headquarters in Saint Helier, Jersey.[1079] It's a 15 minute drive from the Haut de la Garenne Children's Home where children were raped mercilessly by Jimmy Savile and others.

In fact, the remote location of Jersey makes it a rape hell for children all over the island; including (and especially) at the Catholic orphanage run by "compassionate" nuns.

> *The serial abuser Jimmy Savile was among those accused of attacks at Haut de la Garenne and at a home on the island run by French Catholic nuns, the Sacre Coeur orphanage. Wilfred Krichefski, a Jersey senator and TV executive, now* [conveniently] *dead, was also named as an alleged abuser. ...*
>
> *One man said senior boys used a generator to administer electric shocks to younger children and threw darts at them. A girl is said to have been punished by having to spend a night in a room with the body of a dead nun. ...*
>
> *A former female resident said Haut de la Garenne was evil. "It was the place where all the abandoned children were put. It was the kind of place that everyone was dumped," she said.*
>
> *One man alleged he was raped repeatedly by Krichefski and another man – whom he knew only as "the posh bastard" – in the early 1960s*

at Haut de la Garenne. He said the senator told him: “Be a good boy and do as you are told otherwise you will never go home.”

A woman described an incident in which three men in their 30s, “scruffy looking with Jersey accents”, came into the dormitory one night and raped a girl in turn, egging each other on. She said they returned on four or five occasions.

Former Haut de la Garenne residents said they were abused by Savile. One said the television star sexually assaulted him between eight and 12 times in a camper van parked in the home’s grounds.

Haut de la Garenne was by no means the only home where abuse took place, the inquiry was told. A woman who was a resident of the Jersey Home for Girls in the 1940s told how she used to be taken by a female member of staff to a man’s office, where she was sexually assaulted and raped by him.

Another resident of the girls’ home said she was punished by being taken down into the cellar, having her clothes removed and being beaten with fresh stinging nettles.

At the Sacre Coeur orphanage, one woman said, if a child wet the bed they would be put on a chair with their pants on their head. The other children would then be told to form a circle around the child and the nuns would lead a rhyme in French, ridiculing them.

A woman said she was abused by Savile at the orphanage in 1969. She said she reported it to a nun but had her mouth washed out with soap and was told never to speak to anyone about it. ...

Physical and psychological abuse ranged from having mouths washed out with carbolic soap to being beaten with stinging nettles, the inquiry heard. Some of the abuse was carried out by older children with the [direction] *of staff. ...*

Lenny Harper, who was deputy police chief at the time of the Haut de la Garenne searches, claimed during the inquiry that the abuse of children on Jersey was systemic. ~ The Guardian[1080]

The fact that the older children were directed to conduct the abuse was premeditated and chilling. It was *not* the product of whimsical perversion.

By including the older children in the abuse, victims are trained to accept it as older children are seen as “one of us”.

It also gave the nuns, priests and administrators plausible deniability; “We didn’t abuse anyone.”

Worst of all, it brings a new generation into the Devil’s Simulation.

How is this possible...?

*****

Chapter 32

CONCLUSION

NOW: *An important question remains to be answered ... perhaps one of the most important.*

How is it that, after being tortured, raped and abused, some children become dysfunctional perhaps to the point of suicide yet some are strengthened; sadder, wiser, mature?

How is it that, after being tortured, raped and abused, some children become whistleblowers and activists, determined to tear down the Pedocracy while others join it, seeking to rain down the terror they once felt themselves?

— Because even victims have free will.

Although they may be trapped to experience the trauma, what they do with it afterward is up to them.

What will *you* do with this information?

Will you bury it and put it aside because, deep down, it touches upon perversions and lusts you wish to nurture rather than deny?

— Or will you have empathy for the vulnerable and the defenseless?

They are desperate for men and woman of conscience and integrity.

Surprisingly, this is the most powerful weapon available to tear down the Devil’s Simulation. Despite its control of all government, judiciaries, police departments and armies, it cowers at the approach the Righteous.

It is time to make a whip of knotted cords and start flipping tables in the Temple.

In fact, it’s long overdue.

About the Author

Giovanni Augustino "Johnny" Cirucci is a veteran of the Army and Marine Corps. He has served overseas as part of the "Global War on Terror."

His derivation is 100% Italian, 4th generation immigrants. His family settled in the Philadelphia metropolitan area, on the New Jersey side. He was raised "Conservative" and Catholic; an upbringing that encouraged him to "give back" with service in the United States military.

Johnny's home life was difficult. His abusive father left when he was 20 and it gave him a rebellious nature that was quick to question authority.

Johnny went off to college as a non-practicing Catholic. There he began blogging and wrote columns for his University newspaper.

A conversion experience at a local Evangelical church brought him back home as a Born Again Christian.

Frustrated with the hard-Left slant of "mainstream" media, he gravitated towards "Conservative" outlets.

However, the advent of Barack Obama in general and Obama's "killing" of Osama bin Laden, in specific, showed Johnny that "Conservative" media was just another side of the same Machine coin. Those on the "Right" refused to adequately investigate Barack Obama's shady background. When they maintained the official story regarding the "death" of Osama bin Laden, it was the end of Johnny's dependence upon them. He had insider information from his military connections that confirmed bin Laden's "death" was a Psychological Operation by the United States government against American citizens.

This pushed Johnny into the realm of "alternative media" where he stayed for about 2 years.

However, Johnny eventually learned that so-called "alternative media" was just as controlled as "mainstream media". It was completely owned by

Machine agents who gave the same information day after day.

The operatives in “alternative media” presented varying levels of truth at a greater rate than “mainstream media” but were always careful not to expose “the grand scheme”.

Sometimes, however, Machine agents of disinformation get caught in their own game. One such agent helped Johnny put together the pieces of the puzzle that pointed towards Rome as the top of the “New World Order” pyramid.

An ardent researcher, Johnny quickly verified some astounding facts and found that, historically, Christians considered Rome the great Whore of Babylon and the Pope as anti-Christ.

When one of his web site columns on the subject did very well, he knew he needed to turn the information into a book.

That was *Illuminati Unmasked*, published in 2015.

The following year, Johnny published *Secret History*, divulging the detailed background to *Illuminati*.

As a passionate Born Again Christian, Johnny has doggedly searched for and disclosed the Truth. It was this obsession that helped him uncover the Devil’s Simulation and his faith in Jesus Christ that gave him the courage and determination to share it with you.

ENDNOTES

[i] The history texts tell us that Guillotin left the Company but this is propaganda. He never renounced his service to them and their causes as did true “ex-Jesuit” Alberto Rivera. This tactic is often used as cover and was done for Father Adam Weishaupt and Father Malachi Martin.

[ii] — The process of manipulating an unsuspecting subject group to go in a direction they do not wish to by creating a problem (thesis) then also creating the solution (antithesis) thereby herding the subjects, seemingly of their own volition, to enter into a situation that is harmful to them (synthesis). It is named after German philosopher Georg Wilhelm Friedrich Hegel although Hegel never specifically listed the formula as such.

[iii] All three of the supposed “non-Catholics” given the Order in January of 1998 by John Paul II — Rupert Murdoch, Roy Disney and Bob Hope — were arch villains for the Papacy. Each has gone all in on the Devil’s Simulation, personally participating to sign their contracts.

[iv] Irishman Thomas John Barnardo of the “Plymouth Brethren” was yet another dupe and Protestant patsy for the child sex slave trade of the 1800s. There were several, such as Annie Macpherson, Maria Rye, William Booth and John Middlemore; all with “chequered” histories, themselves. The very premise that Christians believed that children without guardians should be subjected to the dangers and upheavals of being trafficked to uphold imperialism and slavery is patently absurd — again, the reaction admitted by the Australian government of the New England Puritans to the practice bears this out.

[v] At this time, the “Grand Master” of the Knights of Malta was Matthew Festing from “Protestant”, “Anglican” England. Festing “sacked” his “Foreign Minister” (remember, the “Sovereign Military order of Malta” is “sovereign”) Albrecht von Boeselager because von Boeselager was supposedly behind Knights handing out condoms in Myanmar (formerly Burma). *How* or *why* the Knights were in Myanmar handing out condoms wasn’t addressed by the media, probably because they have a lock on “news” with “Knights” like William Hearst, Henry Luce, Rupert Murdoch, Leo Kirch and many others.
Condoms are a big Catholic no-no (even when given to “heretic” Burmese) but progressive *Papa Francisco* sided with von Boeselager, took over leadership of the KoM and forced Festing to resign. What was really going on is anyone’s guess. For more, see — *Vatican Takes Over Leadership of Knights of Malta Chivalric Order After British Grand Master Resigns in Acrimonious Battle Over Condoms*, Nick Squires, *Telegraph*, 25 January 2017

Why Is Myanmar Ethnic-Cleansing Muslims? Johnny Cirucci, Johnny Cirucci.com, 1 May 2017

[vi] Apparently, in Ireland, when a crime is committed it must fall under a very specific label to be recognized and addressed...at least that’s the case whenever the Catholic Church is the perpetrator.

[vii] If a career woman’s maiden name is important for any reason (it actually isn’t unless one is trying to make the case for how blue her blood is) the traditional way to present it is preface it with the French “*née*” to avoid confusion.

The modern convention purposely seeks confusion by writing the maiden name as an un-hyphenated middle name.
This is simply another battle front in the *real* war on Divinely-defined gender.

[viii] This surprising statement makes my point: did you know that “Goldberg” was “more common stock” than “Gelernter”?
Did you care?
What kind of person does?

[ix] Ferrie was thoroughly Jesuit-trained both in high school (St. Ignatius High, Cleveland), and college (John Carroll University, Cleveland) but he attended the Francis de Sales Seminary of St. Mary’s which is also in Cleveland.

[x] This, too, is subterfuge. When Harvard students train to be “leaders”, they do so at the feet of the Jesuit White Pope.
Harvard Students To Visit Vatican, Meet Pope, Caroline S. Engelmayer, The Harvard Crimson, 3 March 2017

[xi] It’s important not to give Kinsey any credibility with an excuse like “Ralph Voris was always ‘gay’ so it was a mutual attraction with an age difference.” When predators latch on to prey their “grooming” and manipulation is often strong enough to destroy a victim’s identity.
Kinsey was already a master manipulator, trained in psychology with a specialty in “conditioned responses”.

[xii] Reisman doesn’t mention this but it’s a foregone conclusion that a monster like Kinsey also offered his children to “special guests”.

[xiii] Given Steward’s resemblance to Johnny Depp’s pirate “Jack Sparrow” this may provide you a different experience watching any of Disney’s myriad “Pirates of the Caribbean” movies.

[xiv] *Exempli gratia*: the University of San Francisco is the city’s premier college and one would assume, with that name, it was public but, in fact, it’s a Jesuit institution. The 27th President of U. of S.F., Father Stephen Arena Privett, S.J., was the personal mentor of 52nd Speaker of the United States House of Representatives, pro-homosexual agenda, pro-abortion Democrat Nancy Pelosi. In 2010, Pelosi turned control of the House over to her “opponent”, Jesuit-trained Republican John Boehner. In 2015, Boehner turned the gavel over to Wisconsin Congressman Paul Ryan; yet another Roman Catholic whose roots run all the way back to his many years as an altar boy.

[xv] Even this moniker is propaganda. “Rent-boy” implies somewhat-willing, paid adult homosexual prostitutes. The victims at these locations are neither adult, willing nor paid.

[xvi] The controversy surrounding homosexuality is made many times worse than necessary from these same Luciferian Elites seeking to cause as much division as is possible. Instead of rational conversations over how one defines normal sexual relations, provocateurs stir irrational hatred to encourage chaos and distraction.
The irony is that the majority of these agents and their masters are, themselves, homosexual and often proceed out of self-loathing.

[xvii] Remember, von Ballusek tortured *hundreds* of children over *decades* but the German media "widely covered" the rape and murder of little Loiselotte Has.
In America, Rome had a stranglehold on media with Knights like Henry Luce and William Randolph Hurst.
She managed the same in the birthplace of the Reformation with counterparts like devout Roman Catholic Leo Kirch. Born in the Jesuit stronghold of Bavaria, Kirch's "Kirch Group" made him the man who cleared any topic Germans were allowed to read. Kirch died in 2011. His funeral was held at the Jesuit cathedral of St. Michael in his home of Bavaria ("Munich") and was attended by his close friend, German Chancellor Helmut Kohl ... also a devout Roman Catholic though a "secret" one.

[xviii] Because this is clear evidence of a child sex slave trafficking network, Knight of Malta, Order of St. Gregory, Rupert Murdoch's Fox News altered the original Associated Press report to say only "magazines of naked women". [*Alleged Victims of Pedophile Priests say Pope Francis was Made Aware in 2014*, unattributed, Fox News, 23 December 2016]

[xix] Although we can't know the parameters of weapons like super-computers that "predict the future" there are always limitations and unforeseen pitfalls.
In the service, we called this part of the "Military Decision-Making Process" the understanding that "the enemy gets a vote".
The enemy of the Devil's Simulation is *you*.
How will *you* vote...?

[xx] George Gordon Battle Liddy was sentenced to 20 years for his role in Watergate but his sentence was commuted by President Jimmy Carter to 8 years. He served 4.

[xxi] There's only one "Francis" Catholics are thinking of when they name their children.
Reilly attended St. Francis Xavier University in Nova Scotia, Canada. *Wikipedia* lists the university named after the co-founder of the Jesuits as "Public Liberal Arts" with "Roman Catholic affiliation".

[xxii] **NOTE:** prolonged tenure in prison is *not* "justice". It is a vicious system of penal corruption...but that's a different book to be written.

[xxiii] Despite repeated attempts to interview anyone on the Spotlight staff then or now, attorney Mitchell Garabedian or anyone representing the poorly-named "SNAP" (Survivors Network of those Abused by Priests) none of the author's calls or e-mails were acknowledged.

[xxiv] For more on the treason and battles fought over positions like the Archbishop of Canterbury, read *Secret History*, Cirucci, CreateSpace (2016).

[xxv] Like aristocratic royalty, the proper way to acknowledge a Cardinalcy is to place the title after the first name as is done for "Lords"; for example "Alfred Lord Tennyson".

[xxvi] Again, in Boston, Cardinals are lower case.

[xxvii] It certainly wasn't a "disaster" in Law's eyes: the goal was to provide Geoghan with fresh, unsuspecting children to prey upon and that is exactly what happened.

[xxviii] Normally, a single murder as a “crime of passion” wouldn’t bring such a stiff penalty in far-Left Roman Catholic Massachusetts but murdering a homosexual on the make steps over the line.

[xxix] This is the same YouTube which instantaneously cripples the author’s videos upon upload under the guise of “copyright infringement”.

[xxx] Remember, this is under the guise of a “secular State” which means that in the absence of an acknowledged source of values the most powerful force remaining usurps authority. Rome *knows* this which is why she has used her traitor agents to manufacture the myth that a “secular State” does or can work. The solution is *not* “separation of ‘church’ and State,” it is a true *Christian* State that actively fights all other influences.

[xxxi] To add to the satanic serendipity, Cathy O’Brien stated that there was a Top Secret CIA / NASA mind control torture facility at Offutt. *Transformation of America*, O’Brien and Philipps, Reality Marketing (1995), p. 119 [digital]

[xxxii] Crowley did not found the OTO but he did take it over and fundamentally alter it.

[xxxiii] The brutal exploits of “Charlie’s Girls” would be further glorified by Hollywood — by implication, of course — with the television series created by Aaron Spelling (born of Polish Jewish immigrant parents in Texas) titled “Charlie’s Angels” which began in 1976. Three female police academy graduates are dissatisfied with their assignments and are recruited by “Charlie” to become private investigators where they are appreciated and empowered.

[xxxiv] All of the footnotes trace back to Vincent Bugliosi’s book. He basically wrote the entry for *Wikipedia*.

[xxxv] Hat/tip to my friend Rob Hase. This story was Divinely appointed as it came just when I had finished the Chapter on Manson.

[xxxvi] Coincidence? Three key nuns all with the names of men.

[xxxvii] Now look back on *your* “secular” schooling and wonder if your teacher wasn’t an incognito priest or nun.

[xxxviii] This has been a hook that has entrapped many, many people into some form of false “mother goddess” worship.

[xxxix] Requiring a “priest” or “priestess” to be celibate is an ancient pagan practice that guarantees funneling *millions* of clergy into the Devil’s Simulation.

[xl] Making little girls “altar-servers” has served the same purpose as making women soldiers; more victims for the Luciferians to feed upon.

[xli] The reporter was John Schwartz, a Jew. His Jewish Editor Jill Abramson was replaced in 2014 by Catholic-educated Creole, Dean Baquet. However, the Roman-selected Jewish hand at the *Times* has always been firm. Generations of Sulzbergers — Arthur Ochs Junior and Senior — have always made sure the Pope’s false reality is what you read of in “the Old Gray Lady”.

[xlii] With amazing uniformity — *CBS*, *Associated Press*, *NY Times* — all state “the victim’s claims were never substantiated”.
Happy birthday, America.

[xliii] Although usury banking was invented by the Templars (also in the service of the Papacy), it was the Medicis who “mastered” it ... not the Jews.

[xliv] Keogh girls related “older nuns were much more authoritarian. You couldn’t even approach them.”

[xlv] McGuire simply continued on in the exact same capacity as when he was Police Commissioner: as an oath-breaking foreign enemy agent whose loyalty ran behind the citizens of New York City straight to Rome.
This relationship was found again in how “secular” Penn State dealt with its pedophilia scandal. More on that in Chapter 30.

[xlvi] Again we see the role “secular” Johns Hopkins plays in educating Catholic scholars and rapists.

[xlvii] Did the license plate say, “CHURCH $”? —or perhaps “CROOK’D”.

[xlviii] Although Augustine (inspiration for the author’s middle name) is lauded by both Protestants and Catholics, an excellent case can be made for his sincere Born Again conversion. *Saint* Thomas Aquinas, on the other hand, was a Roman through-and-through and was personally responsible for the betrayal and death of William Tyndale — recognized even by his foes as a great man of God. For more on both, read my book *Secret History*.

[xlix] No idea what that means. Guess I need to spend $60,000 and 6 years at Johns Hopkins to find out.

[l] I received this information from a Jesuit informant who was “in the know”. The “drowning” was a cover-up.

[li] Ostensibly, the explanation for both was due to “pending legal action”.

[lii] Four overt complaints and a “number of concerns” far underestimates the true scope of Walsh’s serial predations but it does serve to show any objective authority he was not to be trusted around unsuspecting families.

[liii] This is an instance of Walsh being protected even by the Murphy Report where the initial of his pseudonym, “Fr. Jovito”, was used.

[liv] As much as a monster as Walsh was, the Murphy report continued to go to great lengths to protect his identity giving him cover twice over by only using the initial of his pseudonym.

[lv] The implication by the Murphy Report that the Archdiocese was oblivious as to Walsh’s whereabouts is patently absurd.

[lvi] After all this time, the serial monster received a “review” regarding his performance!

[lvii] It would appear that the *Gardaí* are, themselves, criminally incompetent! (Or, more likely, carefully infiltrated with pedophiles dedicated to the Devil’s Simulation.)

[lviii] One is always suspicious of a Catholic facility named “Saint John” as it is a gnostic / Luciferian / Templar belief that John the Baptist was the true Messiah and Yeshua of Nazareth an imposter.

[lix] Again, this is criminal negligence on behalf of the Gardaí, reinforced by the Murphy Report.

[lx] Satanic serendipity? The attacks of 9/11 also interrupted the investigation by the *Boston Globe* Spotlight team into the systemic pedophilia of the Boston Archdiocese.

[lxi] Ireland’s 3rd President, Éamon de Valera was born “Jorge de Valero” in New York City in 1882. Valera doesn’t seem the perfect pick for a pivotal politician to help form the Free Irish State unless your intent was to secretly subvert it.
Even *Wikipedia* is forced to use the word “devious” when referencing his life and political agenda.

[lxii] Cooney actually says “*to defend ‘Catholic Ireland’ from the liberal wiles of The Irish Times, Trinity College, and the Communist Party*” but this is a grossly negligent characterization, perhaps on purpose.
McQuaid committed unbelievable crimes against the Irish people and Rome *owns* both mainstream media and the Communist agenda as we’ve shown you here and in previous works.

[lxiii] This chapter was written in large part by the research assistance of Felipe Robles.

[lxiv] The use of the term “Reformation” instead of “Protestant” implies the agenda of “reforming” Catholicism and eventually returning to the “Mother Church”.

[lxv] I was just becoming prominent then and had made some public statements regarding Hovind’s eminent release in July of 2015. I was shocked when Reilly got in touch with me and a little unnerved when he began following me via social networking.

[lxvi] — The Most Distinguished Order of Saint Michael and Saint George, The Royal Victorian Order (signified by its Templar cross) and The Most Excellent Order of the British Empire (also with an equilateral gnostic / Templar cross). Hayman was a right proper decorated paedophile.

[lxvii] The misrepresenting of “Catholic” as Christian is a frequently-used propaganda trick although a few misguided Catholics actually believe it to be true.

[lxviii] This descriptor is purposefully misleading and implies that anyone who holds Right-minded values is incapable of change or independent thought. The reverse is true of “Liberal”. Leftists are spun as “Liberal” or “Progressive” which means they are “open-minded”.
The keepers of the Devil’s Simulation own our very language and do all they can to give themselves the advantage.

[lxix] If a teenage boy is murdered by strangulation, there is no “probable” about it. The force necessary would clearly leave ligature marks. We already have questions about the coroner’s work and signs of a cover-up.

[lxx] “Believed to be dead”? Does the *Daily Mail* not have employees known as “journalists” to check the whereabouts of a notorious “paedophile”?!

[lxxi] This implies little Vishal’s remains were completely decomposed but that could not occur in just a few months’ time (especially through an English winter). He was dismembered. Whether he was still alive when it happened, one shudders to think yet that is what these monsters did and still do.

[lxxii] Both Wachowski brothers, Andy and Lawrence, (who also authored the movie *The Matrix*) have undergone “gender reassignment”. One can only guess if they have been subjected to “mind control” attacks, chemical, technological or otherwise, that forced this upon them as “punishment”.

[lxxiii] Here again is the misleading propaganda implication that these crimes are “historical”.

[lxxiv] For some reason, major papers weren’t interested in this story.

[lxxv] Certainly, with the side-panel of putrid pop-culture ***porn*** the *Mail* sports each day, it’s tough to even criticize the stellar institution’s methods.

[lxxvi] Said “report, exclusively obtained by” Knight of Malta Rupert Murdoch’s “Sky News” has disappeared. The author has sent a request directly to the Shirley Oaks Survivor’s Assocation. The result was the same when he reached out to the Survivor’s Network of Those Abused by Priests: no response.

[lxxvii] Uncited assertions in this section are taken from documentary *Who Took Johnny* (2014), written and directed by David Beilinson and Michael Galinsky.

[lxxviii] Multiple attempts to correspond with Noreen Gosch, either e-mail or by phone, remain unacknowledged.

[lxxix] Even years after, it still seems surreal for the father of a kidnap victim to laugh about the corruption of a government official sworn to find his missing son and is possibly complicit in the crime.

[lxxx] She apparently maintains her married name despite the divorce.

[lxxxi] There were actually three.

[lxxxii] *Regnum Christi* is Latin for “Kingdom of Christ”. The movement is as inversely-named as the “Society of Jesus” or the “Patriot Act”.

[lxxxiii] Outside of Catholics the only other kind allowed are subservient Jews.

[lxxxiv] At no point was Maciel accused of embezzlement. The statement that he “siphoned Legion funds” is more spin designed to distract from the fact that the “humble” pedophile priest lived more luxuriously than most Heads of State.

[lxxxv] Recall that Terri Schiavo was starved and dehydrated to death under the watchful eye of Knight of Columbus John Ellis “Jeb” Bush Sr. — a devout, “Pro Life” Roman Catholic who was, at that time, the Governor of Florida.

[lxxxvi] It’s no coincidence that “the Company” is a euphemism for both the Central Intelligence Agency and the “Society of Jesus”.

[lxxxvii] Appropriate choice.

[lxxxviii] Hat-tip to my good friend Rob for this story.

[lxxxix] Hat-tip to my partner Felipe for starting the research on this.

[xc] John Forbes Kerry, Roman Catholic, Yale Skull and Bones ’66: he is the Vatican puppet responsible for the smoke and mirrors that was the Senate “investigation” of Iran/Contra. The crux of that outrage wasn’t the illegal weapons trading as much as it was CIA drug-running.

[xci] Recall that the inversely-named “Patriot Act” was ready and waiting, having been crafted by Georgetown Law Professor Viet D. Dinh.

[xcii] Hat/tip to our beloved “REPLY ALL George”.

[xciii] These restrictions not only create more Catholics but more victims for Rome’s evil agenda. Note how the very critical differentiation over *post-conception* “birth control” (abortion) is never made in these efforts.

[xciv] The radical Left always speaks in code because being honest shows their depravity. Defiling the Sacrament of Marriage by recognizing the coupling of homosexuals becomes “marriage equality”. We’ll see more of this double-speak shortly from Jesuit “America Magazine” (they’re so proud of their secret control). Truly such double-speak can be appropriately called “Jesuitical”.

[xcv] “America Magazine”: the Jesuits do so enjoy flaunting their control.

[xcvi] Surf internet videos for something like “Donald Trump motorboat into fake breasts of Rudy Giuliani.” Yeah...I wish I were kidding.

[xcvii] I want to make it very clear that what America needs is not “separation of” (small “c”) “church and State” but separation of *Vatican* and State; essentially separation of *Satan* and State. Values (and power) must come from a trustworthy source and there is none better than *true* Christianity.

It is shocking to see supposed Vatican-fighters like the Seventh Day Adventists touting the Luciferian line that promotes the myth of a “secular State” ... until one comes across the influence of Freemasonry on the Adventists from their founding through today.

[xcviii] If you think the release of this endless “sneak attack” on the 68th anniversary of Pearl Harbor (an assault known of well in advance by Luciferian Freemasons like Franklin Roosevelt and Winston Churchill) was a “coincidence”, then you don’t know Rome.

[xcix] See Frederick Tupper Saussy’s *Rulers of Evil* about the Roman machinations behind the American Revolution in general and even the direct Jesuit involvement with the American flag in specific (starting around page 189).

[c] Poorly put but purposeful choice, we’re sure.

[ci] “Multiple Personality Disorder” now called “Dissociative Identity Disorder”.

[cii] Ian Paisley’s antics often passed into outrageous and it is entirely possible that he, too, secretly worked for Rome.

[ciii] Saussy’s work on this is excellent [*Rulers of Evil*, Chapter 9]. Italian Jesuit Eusebio Kino (1645 – 1711) fathered the American trade in cattle and his example was used to fabricate the “cowboy” genre of movies that helped establish the industry. As Saussy points out, it was another false reality which encourages the viewer to believe man can live a disciplined, upright life without the guidance of Jesus Christ or the Bible. To this day, “Kino” in German means “cinema”.

[civ] Neither “journalists” nor “law enforcement” should ***ever*** mock ***any*** accusation no matter how outlandish. They maintain a public trust to dispassionately investigate. Emotional statements of derision about seemingly “crazy” stories are symptomatic of corruption and cover-up.

[cv] Jewish sources on persecution oddly mislabel it “Christian” when it is clearly the military / political entity that is the Roman Catholic Church. Are they still serving Rome while feigning to decry her crimes? Many Jesuit-trained atheists, like François-Marie “Voltaire” Arouet have done the same.

[cvi] This is not to be confused with Donald Trump’s Secretary of Defense, United States Marine Corps General James Norman Mattis. Mattis is also a devout Roman Catholic whose unmarried “dedication” to “service” has earned *him* the title of “Warrior Monk”.

[cvii] “NeoCon” or “NeoConservative” are fabricated buzzwords for any Machine apparatchik who pushes “new” wars against innocent, stable Muslim nations.

[cviii] Stitt went out of her way to blame Omaha child sex abuse on only one man: Lawrence King. She enjoyed a full career at her position. Not surprisingly, Stitt ignored attempts by the author to contact her.

[cix] Just as important to the Luciferian Elite was the *negative* as well as positive war propaganda. In fact, in relation to the unbelievable futility traitor Roman agents created for the Vietnam war, it was more so.

[cx] The face of Magdalen is “public” or “Anglican” but it was founded by Catholics, is run by Catholics and has an unmistakable Catholic tradition.

[cxi] Another Roman Catholic monster named after the co-founder of the Jesuits.

[cxii] And yet, it is a tried and true tactic of Rome to own both her allies and her supposed, apparent enemies.

[cxiii] *Any* sexual activity between an adult and a minor is evil but it takes a special kind of monster — devoid of all human compassion — to violate a pre-pubescent child, or a toddler or an infant.

[cxiv] In his testimony, David Ridsdale was very deliberate to differentiate his uncle from the "Ridsdale" family, hence the use of his "Christian" name, "Gerald".

[cxv] "Right of the first night": the right of any member of the Elite to take the virginity of a bride on her wedding night. Sources like *Wikipedia* claim it is a myth which, perhaps, makes it even more sinister and plausible.
Regardless, this is exactly what pedophile priests do anyway! They steal the innocence and virginity of children long before they are ever wed as if it's their right and Vatican authorities agree it is.

[cxvi] The excess of "..." marks are the result of purging the citation of blatant emotional defense of the Fosters — again signs that both Broken Rites and the Fosters are not what they appear to be.

[cxvii] Interesting that Briggs kept her married name in light of the stupidity that she blamed the "patriarchy" of the Catholic Church for the Vatican's crimes. Either the "children's advocate" was completely oblivious to the collusion of nuns and women in abuse or she was yet another highly-regarded agent of disinformation.

[cxviii] Fiona, like her friend David Shurter, refuses to acknowledge this author or this effort to out the monsters they supposedly fight against.
It's OK to be afraid, but it's not OK to make yourself a public figure and then give cover to the very criminals you claim you are trying to expose.
That makes you no different from them.

[cxix] "PizzaGate Wiki" states Helen Holowczak [was] possibly Jelena Milewska Holowczak.

[cxx] "Piotr Holowczak" from the same PizzaGate Wiki entry.

[cxxi] The "Hunger Games" books and movies, themselves, draw red flags. For instance, author Suzanne Collins is from Newtown, Connecticut, the location of the 2012 Sandy Hook false flag. Actress Jennifer Lawrence, star of the movie series, has been rumored to have immersed herself (either voluntarily or involuntarily) into mind-controlled sexual perversion and deviancy. Sometimes victims are granted fame as a "reward", sometimes they sell themselves for it.

[cxxii] A "Fellow" of the "Royal Society of Literature".

[cxxiii] The same is true of Irish Protestant firebrand Ian Paisley.

[cxxiv] Audacious inversion of reality used as propaganda.

[cxxv] This is not an angle that Barnett pushes strongly and we feel we know why.

[cxxvi] Perhaps part of why "James Shanahan's" narrative is still appealing to Roman manipulators (and why it's allowed to be promoted) is because he also claims that "Satanic cults" are *within* the Catholic Church and not the very foundation of that religion...which they are.

[cxxvii] Hat/tip to our beloved "REPLY-ALL George".

[cxxviii] Perpetual imprisonment is not "justice". Such inhumane depravity is a product of corruption previously used by tyrants through history against political or personal enemies.
In ages past, thieves were forced to make restitution even if it required slavery until the debt was met. Murderers were executed. Rape, manslaughter and other crimes had varying punishments based upon the integrity of the jurors.

[cxxix] This is the ***second*** story I found in reference to the kidnapping, abuse and ritual slaughter of Polly Klaas published on the 4th of July, 1996. The other was from the *Los Angeles Times*.
As I noted in the bibliography, this is *not* a coincidence. The Pedocracy wants America to know what it has created for her legacy of "Independence".

[cxxx] I believe the family left "the Family" before Liberty was around to be raped.

[cxxxi] Odd how "*Wikipedia*" lets that slip by.

[cxxxii] Hey, two "head pats" counts as two "blessings".
In seriousness, the description shows that, despite thousands in attendance, Montini knew to linger on the cultists for full effect.

[cxxxiii] Both as legitimate backlash for crimes committed by the cult and as cunning enablement; as media Knights know — controversy brings popularity.

[cxxxiv] While filming the 1992 movie, Phoenix bonded with elder co-star Dan Aykroyd. Aykroyd was raised devout Roman Catholic and even spent time in a seminary, intending to become a priest, before dropping out in favor of the entertainment industry.

[cxxxv] Mary-land plantation owner Daniel Carroll (1730 – 1796) was one of the most powerful Roman Catholics of the American Revolution. As *Wikipedia* notes; *he served in the Confederation Congress, was a delegate to the Philadelphia Convention of 1787 which wrote the Constitution, and was a U.S. Representative in the First Congress. Daniel Carroll was one of five men to sign both the Articles of Confederation and the Constitution.*
Not only do we think that the chances of the two Carrolls being related are very high, they both serve(d) Rome with equal vigor.

[cxxxvi] At this writing, Waxman has spent a sickening forty two years ensconced and entrenched as a far-Left Jewish Congressman of the United States representing California's 33rd District.
This is even more disgusting when one realizes Representatives are up for re-election every two years.

[cxxxvii] As I recall my service in Iraq and the extreme difficulty of "Stability and Support Operations" under RoE identical to what McChrystal set in Afghanistan, the emotions are hard to

describe.
— But they start somewhere around “rage”.

[cxxxviii] “Fraudulent” right down to the name, itself. All carefully planned that way.

[cxxxix] The classic profile of a sadistic bully, these are the ones who urinate and defecate themselves the *second* they fall into the hands of their enemies.

[cxl] The practice is as old as “civilization” itself and far more common than the average citizen knows. For an insight into the usage, see the 2011 Lee Tamahori movie *The Devil’s Double*: the story of Saddam Hussein’s son Uday as seen through the eyes of his double.

[cxli] The fact that “public servants” spend *lifetimes* in office committing such treason is, itself, sickening.

[cxlii] “News media” is the second favorite place for Luciferians to prop up “Papal Court” Jews — Hollywood being the first. The *NY Times* has been maintained by the Sulzbergers since 1896 and, like Luciferian-collaborating tribal Jews everywhere else, they always empower other Jews in their employ. Very little Roman oversight is needed — emplace the right traitor Jew and they remain loyal to spreading Luciferian lies while simultaneously engendering anger at their own tribalism.
They are the perfect patsies.

[cxliii] It’s instructive to note that even though a Jew wrote the story, the Romans still left their fingerprints: heartfelt photographs of the participants and their families were taken by Kirsten Luce.

[cxliv] Nickname for the tyrannical monster the Catholic Church inflicted upon the Haitian people: François “Papa Doc” Duvalier. It aptly describes what Rome has done to Haiti through the French, the Spanish and her traitor puppets in the United States.

[cxlv] Note that this sickening outrage was only given local media coverage.

[cxlvi] Rome is *decades* beyond owning key officials at the national level.

[cxlvii] The radical Leftists at the Daily Kos, perhaps under Vatican direction, did spin this information as a “vast, Right-wing, ‘***Christian***’ conspiracy”.

[cxlviii] Maybe this is why they wouldn’t publish me...

[cxlix] The Leftist Jews at the *Times* spun Nathanson as “anti-abortion” rather than “pro-life” which I omitted. Yet he still played on the same team as they do. He started his medical career as a *pro*-abortion “atheist Jew” until he became a pro-life converted Opus Dei Roman Catholic.

[cl] Why would a Hollywood comic Jew need the Georgetown SFS? — So that he could be read-in on the propaganda priorities for his Papal puppet-masters.

[cli] We’re not sure how Edgar Maddison Welch got his AR-15 into a city where reading a gun magazine on the commode is probable cause for D.C.’s woman Police chief to dispatch a SWAT team. But “AR-15s” are the boogey-weapon of choice when pulling false flags.

[clii] Information on David Seaman gathered by “Joseph”.

---

[1] *The Two Babylons*, Alexander Hislop, open source, 1858, Chapter II, Section II, Sub-Section V, *The Deification of the Child*.

[2] *Illuminati Unmasked*, Johnny Cirucci, CreateSpace (2015), p. 590

[3] *Animal and human castration in Sumer, Part II: Human castration in the Ur III period*, Kazuya Maekawa, Journal of the Research Institute for Humanistic Studies, Kyoto University (1980), pp. 1–56

[4] *Castrato*, *Wikipedia*,

[5] *Decline; Castrato*, *Wikipedia*
Note the Roman propaganda which states —
The rumours of another castrato sequestered in the Vatican for the personal delectation of the Pontiff until as recently as 1959 have been proven false. The singer in question was a pupil of Moreschi's, Domenico Mancini, such a successful imitator of his teacher's voice that even Lorenzo Perosi, Direttore Perpetuo of the Sistine Choir from 1898 to 1956 and a lifelong opponent of castrati[clarification needed]*, thought he was a castrato.*
Yeah. I'll bet “clarification needed”...a lot. No other footnotes, as well.

[6] *What's So Great About Eunuchs?* Meurig Bowen, *The Guardian*, 27 March 2006

[7] *ibid*

[8] *ibid*

[9] *Pope Urged to Apologise for Vatican Castrations*, Rory Carroll, *The Guardian*, 14 August 2001

[10] *ibid*

[11] *ibid*

[12] *Dutch Roman Catholic Church ‘Castrated at Least 10 Boys’*, Bruno Waterfield, *Telegraph*, 19 March 2012
“At Least 10...”
Really?

[13] *ibid*

[14] *ibid*

[15] *Apollyon Rising 2012: The Lost Symbol Found and the Final Mystery of the Great Seal Revealed*, Thomas Horn, Defender Publishing (2009), pp. 169-172

[16] *McChrystal's Social Liberalism and the Integration of Gays in the Military*, Marc Ambinder, The Atlantic, 24 June 2010

[17] *Secret History*, Johnny Cirucci, CreateSpace (2016), pp. 507-508

[18] *Secret History*, Johnny Cirucci, CreateSpace (2016), p. 509

[19] *Illuminati Unmasked*, Johnny Cirucci, CreateSpace (2015), pp. 248-250

[20] *The Different Faces Of Clayton Hartwig*, George C. Wilson, *The Washington Post*, 10 September 1989

[21] *Secret History*, Johnny Cirucci, CreateSpace (2016), p. 79

[22] *Secret History*, Johnny Cirucci, CreateSpace (2016), pp. 491-503

[23] *Jesuits Behind Politics*, Amazing Discoveries, 19 August 2010

[24] *Romanism and the Reformation; from the Standpoint of Prophecy*, Henry Grattan Guinness, A.C. Armstrong, New York (1887).
Digital pages in my version clearly won't match any hard copies but this passage is found in *Chapter 2: The Daniel Foreview of Romanism, Second Part*.
Paragraph breaks added for ease of reading and emphasis.

[25] *The Pagan Roots of Easter*, Heather McDougall, *The Guardian*, 3 April 2010

[26] *The Gregorian Calendar vs Gods Holy Calendar*, Rev James Talbott, NavigatingThroughProphecy.com, 17 October 2013

[27] *The Sacred Sex and Death Rites of the Ancient Mystery Groves*, article was extracted from *The Sacred Sex Rites of Ishtar: Shamanic sexual healing and sex magic*, by Ishtar Babilu Dingir, Ancient Origins, 9 October 2014

[28] *ibid*

[29] *Secret History*, Johnny Cirucci, CreateSpace (2016), pp. 404, 405

[30] *Roman's Palace of Deparavity*, Zoe Brennan, *Daily Mail*, 18 August 2006

[31] *Secret History*, Johnny Cirucci, CreateSpace (2016), pp. 154-160

[32] *The Torture and Death of Saint Simon of Trent*, "from the Sacred Liturgy: *Auferte gentem perfidam credentium de finibus* (Take the faithless tribe from the borders of the believing)", unattributed, undated
Not surprisingly...absolutely diseased, naked, Roman anti-Semitism!

[33] *Secret History*, Johnny Cirucci, CreateSpace (2016), pp. 106-107

[34] *Events; Simon of Trent*, *Wikipedia*

[35] *Simon (Simedl, Simoncino) of Trent*, Joseph Jacobs and Aaron Tänzer, the 1906 Jewish Encyclopedia (unedited)

[36] *Strange bedfellows?* Joseph Farah, WorldNetDaily, 12 May 2006
It tickles me greatly to use the material of one muck-racking Roman “Conservative” fraud (Joseph Farah) against another (Rupert Murdoch).

[37] *Caped crusaders: What really goes on at the Knights of Malta’s secretive headquarters?* Evgeny Lebedev, the Independent, 28 March 2014

[38] *Pope Honors Rupert Murdoch, Roy Disney, Bob Hope*, John Dart, the Los Angeles *Times*, 3 January 1998

[39] *Eichman and Soros: A Case in Perfidy*, LaRouche Political Action Committee (LPAC), Executive Intelligence Review, 15 July 2008
Lyndon LaDouche: another Papal puppet!

[40] *Secret History*, Johnny Cirucci, CreateSpace (2016), pp. 514-515, 516, 519, 520

[41] *Call for Pope to Reveal Hidden Holocaust Children*, Hillel Fendel, Arutz Sheva 7, 22 April 2009

[42] *1946 Letter From the Vatican*, *NY Times*, 8 January 2005

[43] *Jewish Children Hidden Twice Over by the Church*, Rebecca Benhamou, The *Times* of Israel, 27 May 2013

[44] *Il prete che giustifica i pedofili*, La7.it, 10 June 2015
English subtitles currently available here; *Pedophile Priest Confessions*, Alessandro Benigni, YouTube, 6 October 2015

[45] *CHURCH SHOCKER: Gay and pedophile priests sent to monastery for ‘sex cures’*, unattributed, Catholic Online, 6 October 2015

[46] *Illuminati Unmasked*, Johnny Cirucci, CreateSpace (2015), pp. 313, 315, 320

[47] *Good British Stock: Child and Youth Migration to Australia*, unattributed, undated, National Archives of Australia: Government of Australia
Very professionally done, Bruce.
— ***Not***.

[48] *ibid*

[49] *ibid*

[50] *ibid*

[51] *Isis Unveiled: A Master-Key to the Mysteries of Ancient and Modern Science and Theology, Volume II – Theology*, Helena Petrovna Blavatsky, Theosophical University Press (1877), pp. 351, 354

[52] *Masonic Catholic Priest at Piazza Del Gesu Grand Lodge of Italy in Rome*, Troy Space, 5 January 2009
Not surprisingly, the original post has been marked "PRIVATE" but it has been archived here.

[53] *Good British Stock*

[54] *ibid*

[55] *ibid*

[56] *Hundreds of Child Sex Abuse Complaints Made Against Christian Brothers, Royal Commission Hears*, Melissa Davey, *The Guardian*, 21 February 2016

[57] *ibid*

[58] *ibid*

[59] *ibid*

[60] *Good British Stock*

[61] *Rome; History; Sovereign Military Order of Malta*, *Wikipedia*

[62] *Sovereign Military Order of Malta*, *Wikipedia*

[63] *Latest News: International Children's Day Conference Raises Awareness*, unattributed, Order of Malta, Grand Priory of England, 1 June 2017

[64] *"Together we must succeed…"* Hospitaller magazine, Winter 2016, p. 4

[65] *Secret History*, Johnny Cirucci, CreateSpace (2016), pp. 6-7, 7-8

[66] *A life unlived: 35 years of slavery in a Magdalene Laundry*, unattributed, The Journal, 30 September 2012

[67] *Irish Woman Who Was Adopted as a Child by Paedophile Says Nuns Condemned Her to Years of Sexual Abuse*, Ruth Styles, *Daily Mail*, 18 September 2014

[68] *ibid*

[69] *ibid*

[70] *ibid*

[71] *A life unlived: 35 years of slavery in a Magdalene Laundry*, unattributed, The Journal, 30 September 2012

[72] *Column: 'How we survived, I'll never know' – a Magdalene survivor's story*, Kathleen Legg, The Journal, 6 June 2012

[73] *"It Will Be With Me Until The Day I Die"*, Naomi Greenaway and Luisa Metcalfe, *Daily Mail*, 26 May 2015

[74] *Column: 'How we survived, I'll never know' – a Magdalene survivor's story*, Kathleen Legg, The Journal, 6 June 2012

[75] *ibid*

[76] *"It Will Be With Me Until The Day I Die"*

[77] *ibid*

[78] *ibid*

[79] *ibid*

[80] *ibid*

[81] *Sisters of Charity to be given new National Maternity Hospital*, Patsy McGarry, The Irish *Times*, 18 April 2017

[82] *Senior doctor resigns over plan to hand Dublin hospital to order of nuns*, Henry McDonald, *The Guardian*, 27 April 2017

[83] *300,000 Babies Stolen From Their Parents — And Sold For Adoption*, Polly Dunbar, *Daily Mail*, 16 October 2011

[84] *Franco and the Catholic Church*, unattributed, Spain Then And Now, undated

[85] *Priest Linked To Franco To Be Canonised*, Stephen Bates, *The Guardian*, 21 December 2001

[86] *The Scientific 100*, John Simmons and Lynda Simmons, Kensington Publishing Corp. (2000), p. 450

[87] *History of Medicine and Bioethics Lectures, October 29*, Stony Brook University, 23 October 2015

[88] *Kinsey: Crimes & Consequences*, Judith Reisman, The Institute for Media Education (1998), p. 4
Actually, Reisman is here citing the Yorkshire/BBC4 documentary *Kinsey's Paedophiles* but, interestingly, Reisman had access to the unedited version as I don't recall Jones being this honest. In

fact, what I saw as the end result was criminally hacked and anemic. Probably because there are quite a few “paedophiles” at Yorkshire and “BBC4”.

[89] *UnSpun 031 – “Alfred Kinsey and the Peddling of Pedophilia”*, UnSpun, Gnostic Media, 20 July 2016

[90] This has been wiped from the internet...but I got a screen shot! Write me and I’ll gladly share.

[91] *Jesus Never Existed, Rome Never Fell, Joe Atwill Ryan Gilmore 6Sep2013*, Vinny Eastwood, YouTube
Vinny Eastwood: fraud and cockroach whom I have personally called out for ... being a fraud and a cockroach!

[92] *Kinsey: Crimes & Consequences*, Judith Reisman, The Institute for Media Education (1998), jacket, pp. xiv, xv

[93] *Comprehensive Sex Ed Based on Debunked Studies by “Psychopath” Scientist, Media Expert Says*, Resty S. Odon, CBCP News for Life, 31 January 2012
Archived by Reisman, here.

[94] *Exposing Kinsey Sex Atrocities Goes Global*, Bob Unruh, WorldNetDaily, 14 January 2012

[95] *E. Michael Jones, the Newest Anti-Semite on Iranian TV*, Aryeh Tuchman, JHate, 28 May 2011

[96] *Pat Buchanan: Anti-Semite*, Ben Shapiro, FrontPage Mag, 1 March 2012

[97] *Kinsey: Crimes & Consequences*, Judith Reisman, The Institute for Media Education (1998), pp. xvii-xviii

[98] *ibid*, p. 5

[99] *ibid*, p. 5

[100] *ibid*, p. 5

[101] *ibid*, p. 5

[102] *ibid*, pp. 6-7

[103] *ibid*, p. 8

[104] *ibid*, p. 10

[105] *ibid*, p. 10

[106] *ibid*, pp. 11-12

[107] *Personal life; Marriage and family; Alfred Kinsey*, *Wikipedia*

[108] *Kinsey*, Reisman, p. 12

[109] *ibid*, pp. 12, 13

[110] *ibid*, pp. 13-14

[111] *ibid*, p. 83

[112] *50 Cent: "I'm in love with Helen Mirren"*, unacknowledged, Hollywood.com, undated
Who needs to know the details on such an epic piece?!!

[113] *Kinsey*, Reisman, p. 83

[114] *It's Time To Ditch The Dirt*, Jonathan Gathorne-Hardy, London Independent, 10 August 1998

[115] *Kinsey*, Reisman, p. 19

[116] *The Case for Dr. Kinsey*, Paul A. Robinson, May 1972, The Atlantic
Thanks scumbag, we don't need to "make the case" for that monster.
Only from the diseased Leftists at "The Atlantic".

[117] *Kinsey*, Reisman, p. 16

[118] *ibid*, p. 16

[119] *ibid*, p. 20

[120] *ibid*, p. 72

[121] *ibid*, p. 286

[122] *ibid*, p. 30

[123] *ibid*, pp. 9-10

[124] *ibid*, p. 71

[125] *Secret History: Kinsey's Paedophiles*, Yorkshire Television, BBC4, 1998

[126] *Alfred C. Kinsey: A Public/Private Life*, James Howard Jones, Diane Publishing (1997), pp. 605-614, 669-684, 755

[127] *Kinsey*, Reisman, p. 31

[128] *ibid*, p. 35

[129] *ibid*, p. 74, 75

[130] *Secret History*, Johnny Cirucci, CreateSpace (2016), pp. 567-580

[131] *Sex the Measure of All Things: A Life of Alfred C. Kinsey*, Jonathan Gathorne-Hardy, Indiana University Press (1998), p. 233
Indiana University — just *so* helpful.

[132] *Lover Man: The Samuel Steward Story*, Brooks Peters, Huffington Post, 19 August 2010

[133] *Life and career; Samuel Steward*, *Wikipedia*

[134] *Kinsey*, Reisman, pp. 75-76

[135] *Life and career; Samuel Steward*, *Wikipedia*

[136] *Kinsey*, Reisman, p. 81

[137] *Lover Man: The Samuel Steward Story*, Brooks Peters, Huffington Post, 19 August 2010

[138] *Kinsey*, Reisman, p. 77

[139] *Alfred C. Kinsey: A Public/Private Life*, James Howard Jones, Diane Publishing (1997), p. 607

[140] *Kinsey*, Reisman, pp. 35-36

[141] *ibid*, p. 65

[142] *ibid*, p. 36

[143] *ibid*, pp. 38-39

[144] *ibid*, p. 42

[145] *ibid*, p. 50

[146] *Secret History: Kinsey's Paedophiles*, Yorkshire Television, BBC4, 1998

[147] *Kinsey*, Reisman, p. 60

[148] *ibid*, p. 66

[149] *ibid*, p. 92

[150] *Fr. Hesburgh Took Notre Dame Off Course*, Super User, The New American, 29 May 2009
"The New American" is the publication of the John Birch Society, yet it prints anonymous Catholic outrage. No surprise as the "Birchers" were secretly controlled by Rome.

[151] *Kinsey*, Reisman, pp. 176-177

[152] *ibid*, pp. 192-193

[153] *Illuminati Unmasked*, Johnny Cirucci, CreateSpace (2015), p. 699

[154] *Death; Personal life; Antonin Scalia*, *Wikipedia*

[155] *Education; Brian P. Monahan*, *Wikipedia*

[156] *Former Victim Claims Scalia Was a Pedophile*, Makia Freeman, The Freedom Articles, undated

[157] *Scalia Sleeps With the Fishes*, Gordon Duff, Veterans Today, 17 February 2016

[158] *A New Chapter I Just Wrote for An Upcoming Book…* David Shurter, DavidShurter.com, 1 January 2017

[159] *The Franklin Cover-Up: Child Abuse, Satanism, and Murder in Nebraska*, John W. DeCamp, AWT, Inc. (1992), pp. 2-5

[160] *Radicals on the High Court*, Mike Whitney, CounterPunch Magazine, 17 January 2004

[161] *Opus Dei Influence Rises to the Top in the Vatican*, Betty Clermont, Daily Kos, 6 April 2014

[162] *Neil Gorsuch Belongs to a Notably Liberal Church — and would be the First Protestant on the Court in Years*, Julie Zauzmer, *Washington Post*, 1 February 2017
To be sure, Julie Zuazmer didn't write the headline. That was probably a different Papal Court Jew.

[163] *Evidence Voluminous But Tricky*, Karen Augé, Denver Post, 14 October 1999

[164] *Ramsey grand jury accused JonBenet's parents in death, but prosecutor declined to bring charges*, unattributed, Fox News, 25 October 2013

[165] *Kinsey*, Reisman, p. 62

[166] *ibid*, p. 63

[167] *ibid*, p. 78

[168] *ibid*, p. 95

[169] *ibid*, p. 99

[170] *ibid*, pp. 101-102

[171] *ibid*, pp. 106-107

[172] *Nature, Science and Dr. Kinsey*, Geoffrey Gorer, found in *Sexual Behavior in American Society*, Himelhoch and Fava, W.W. Norton & Co. (1955), p. 52.

[173] *Kinsey*, Reisman, p. 107

[174] *ibid*, p. 111

[175] *ibid*, p. 117

[176] *American Eugenics: Race, Queer Anatomy, and the Science of Nationalism*, Nancy Ordover, University of Minnesota Press (2003), p. 94

[177] *Kinsey*, Reisman, p. 24

[178] *Secret History: Kinsey's Paedophiles*, Yorkshire Television, BBC4, 1998

[179] *ibid*

[180] *ibid*

[181] *Kinsey*, Reisman, p. 136

[182] *ibid*, p. 136

[183] *ibid*, p. 137

[184] *ibid*, pp. 164-165

[185] *Secret History*, Johnny Cirucci, CreateSpace (2016), pp. 518-522

[186] *Illuminati Unmasked*, Johnny Cirucci, CreateSpace (2015), pp. 75-79

[187] *Kinsey*, Reisman, p. 165

[188] *ibid*, pp. 165-166

[189] *Illuminati Unmasked*, Johnny Cirucci, CreateSpace (2015), pp. 44-46

[190] *Illuminati Unmasked*, Johnny Cirucci, CreateSpace (2015), pp. 90-91

[191] *Vatican Archbishop Defends Cathedral's Pornographic, Homoerotic Mural as 'Evangelizing' Tool*, Pete Baklinski, LifeSiteNews, 7 June 2017

[192] *Archbishop Paglia Lays Out His Vision for the Pontifical Academy for Life*, Edward Pentin, National Catholic Register, 6 June 2017

[193] *Pro-Abortion Theologian Picked as Pontifical Academy for Life Member*, Edward Pentin, National Catholic Register, 13 June 2017

[194] *Vatican Archbishop*, LifeSiteNews

[195] *Kinsey*, Reisman, p. 166

[196] *ibid*, p. 167

[197] *ibid*, p. 281

[198] *Illuminati Unmasked*, Johnny Cirucci, CreateSpace (2015), pp. 512, 513, 514-515

[199] *Kinsey*, Reisman, p. 279
This is worth the price of Reisman's book; no one else of her caliber acknowledges that is what Crowley was doing.

[200] *Aleister Crowley and the Temptation of Politics*, Marco Pasi, Routledge (2014)

[201] *An Alfred Kinsey-Aleister Crowley Connection?* Chas Clifton, Letter from Hardscrabble Creek, 9 May 2015

[202] *Two Faces of Freemasonry*, John Daniel, DAY Publishing, 3rd Edition (2007), p. 41

[203] *Kenneth Anger*, *Wikipedia*,

[204] *Bloodlines of Illuminati*, Fritz Springmeier, Pentracks Publications (1995), p. 46

[205] *Secret History: Kinsey's Paedophiles*, Yorkshire Television, BBC4, 1998

[206] *The priest who abused deaf boys for 24 years*, Andy McSmith, The Independent, 27 March 2010

[207] *Exiled Pedophile Priest May Have Continued Abuse*, Susan Saulny and Laurie Goodstein, the *NY Times*, 2 April 2010

[208] *ibid*

[209] *ibid*

[210] *ibid*

[211] *Mea Maxima Culpa: Silence in the House of God*, Alex Gibney, HBO, 2012
Currently, a copy can be found on YouTube, here.

[212] *Paedophile Priest was Given Post at School for the Deaf*, Antony Barnett and Ali Beach, The Observer (reposted here by *The Guardian*), 5 August 2006

[213] *ibid*

[214] *ibid*

[215] *ibid*

[216] *Illuminati Unmasked*, Johnny Cirucci, CreateSpace (2015), p. 102

[217] *Catholic Church Decided Not to Unfrock Priest Who Abused Deaf Boys*, Jonathan Wynne-Jones, *Telegraph*, 10 April 2010

[218] *Calif. Priest Raised Concerns Early in Career*, unattributed, CBSNews / Associated Press, 12 April 2010

[219] *Text of 1985 Letter from Future Pope Benedict on California Sex Abuse*, “the most Reverend Excellency” Joseph Cardinal Ratzinger, Prefect for the Congregation of the Doctrine of the Faith, *Telegraph*, 09 Apr 2010

[220] *ibid*

[221] *Pope Benedict Accused of Delaying Unfrocking of Sex Abuse Priest*, Tom Leonard and Nick Squires, *Telegraph*, 09 Apr 2010

[222] *Two Priests in Argentina Arrested over Alleged Abuse of at least 22 Children at School for the Deaf*, unattributed, Associated Press / Catholic Herald, 6 December 2016

[223] *Alleged Victims of Pedophile Priests say Pope Francis was Made Aware in 2014*, unattributed, Fox News, 23 December 2016

[224] *Angel from Hell*, Timothyna Duncan, *Daily Mail* / Associated Press, 6 May 2017

[225] *Two Priests in Argentina*, Associated Press

[226] *ibid*

[227] *Alleged Victims of Pedophile Priests*, Fox News

[228] *Illuminati Unmasked*, Johnny Cirucci, CreateSpace (2015), p. 323

[229] *Angel from Hell*, *Daily Mail*

[230] *Alleged Victims of Pedophile Priests*, Fox News

[231] *Two Priests in Argentina*, Associated Press

[232] *Victim critical of pope on abuse asked to leave Vatican commission*, Inés San Martín, Crux, 6 February 2016

[233] *No Mercy for Sex Abuse Victims*, Elizabeth Yore, The Remnant, 2 January 2017

[234] *Exiled Pedophile Priest May Have Continued Abuse*, Susan Saulny and Laurie Goodstein, the *NY Times*, 2 April 2010

[235] *Exiled Pedophile Priest May Have Continued Abuse*, Susan Saulny and Laurie Goodstein, the *NY Times*, 2 April 2010

[236] *Sex Abuse Scandal in US, Italy Taints Papacy*, Nicole Winfield, Associated Press / The Boston Globe, 26 March 2010

[237] *ibid*

[238] *Congregation for the Doctrine of the Faith*, *Wikipedia*

[239] *Sex Abuse Scandal in US, Italy Taints Papacy*, Associated Press

[240] *Did Pope Benedict XVI's Brother Run a Sadistic Sex Camp for Choirboys?* Barbie Latza-Nadeau, The Daily Beast, 09 January 2016

[241] *ibid*

[242] *Vatican defends decision not to defrock priest accused of molesting deaf boys in Wisconsin*, unattributed, The Associated Press, posted at Syracuse.com, 25 March 2010

[243] *How Rich is the Vatican? So Wealthy it Can Stumble Across Millions of Euros just "Tucked Away"*, Shane Croucher, International Business *Times*, 5 December 2014

[244] *Heart condition improving then, George?* Frank Coletta, *Daily Mail*, 10 May 2016

[245] *The Computer that Predicts the Future*, Charlie Brooker, the *Guardian*, 11 September 2011
You better believe that this story being published on "September 11th" of 2011 was *not* a "coincidence".

[246] *Can Supercomputers Predict the Future?* Tiffany Trader , HPC Wire, 12 September 2013
Let's put the "coincidence" to bed with *this* story published on September 12th of 2013!

[247] The majority of references from this chapter come from the 2010 documentary *The Lolita Riddle*, produced by "CutSnake" in collaboration with Nabokov scholar Joanne Morgan. An online version is posted at the YouTube channel McNab342 which has no other activity save to "like" the music video "Breath Me" by Fingersmith — a video with a near-explicit lesbian sex scene.

[248] *Nabokov's Butterflies: The Lolita Author's First, Fluttering Love*, Ella Morton, Slate.com, 18 August 2014
Almost *sixty years later* perverts in "mainstream media" are still fawning over this shit.

[249] *Vatican Assassins*, 3rd Edition, Eric Jon Phelps, Lowvehm (2007), pp. 36, 601
If you follow me, you know I have first-and experience with the Jesuit who calls himself "Eric Jon Phelps" but he's effective because he's about 85% truth / 15% bullshit.

[250] *Trance Formation of America*, Cathy O'Brien and Mark Phillips, Reality Marketing (1995), pp. 77, 78, 81, 84
NOTE: These are the digital pages of my copy and will not match hard copies.

[251] *(U) Symbols and Logos Used by Pedophiles to Identify Sexual Preferences*, Federal Bureau of Investigation, Intelligence Bulletin, Cyber Division, Innocent Images National Initiative, 31 January 2007
Currently archived here.

[252] *FBI pedophile symbols*, Wikileaks

[253] *Revealed: The symbols that pedophiles use to signal their sordid sexual preferences on social media*, Mia De Graaf, *Daily Mail*, 26 April 2016

[254] *"To Protect and Serve…" Pedophiles*, Felipe & Johnny Cirucci, JohnnyCirucci.com, 2 March 2017

[255] *"Hurricane Lolita"*, Steve King, Barnes & Noble Review, 18 August 2011

[256] *50 Years Later, 'Lolita' Still Seduces Readers*, unattributed, NPR, 15 September 2005

[257] *Liddy as Teen-ager Was Intense and Tenacious*, Philip Wechsler, *NY Times*, 27 August 1973

[258] *The Last Confession of E. Howard Hunt*, Erik Hedegaard, Rolling Stone, 5 April 2007

[259] *My Friend, E. Howard Hunt*, William F. Buckley Jr., LA *Times*, 4 March 2007

[260] *CNN LIVE TODAY*, Daryn Kagan, transcript, aired 9 December 2005

[261] *Skull linked to secret Yale society to be sold*, unattributed, AP / NBC News, 5 January 2010

[262] *The Lolita Riddle*, "CutSnake" in collaboration with Joanne Morgan, 2010

[263] *BBC Investigates Whether Lewis Carroll Was "Repressed Paedophile" After Nude Photo Discovery*, Hannah Furness, *The Telegraph*, 26 January 2015

[264] *ibid*

[265] *Kinsey: Crimes & Consequences*, Judith Reisman, The Institute for Media Education (1998), p. 65

[266] *This Club Had Its Own Chairman And Treasurer. Its Business Was Child Abuse.* Martin Bright and Tracy McVeigh, The Observer, 10 February 2001, archived here by *The Guardian* (because we don't want to lose any opportunities to blow bullshit and smoke about the authorities seeming to do their job...but not really).

[267] *ibid*

[268] *ibid*

[269] *ibid*

[270] *ibid*

[271] *Old Stories: Pedophile Rings With Links To Portugal*, Postado por Fernando Moura às Domingo, Portuguese Lost Children, 23 de Setembro de 2007

[272] *This Club Had Its Own Chairman And Treasurer.* The Observer

[273] *1993 child sexual abuse accusations against Michael Jackson*, *Wikipedia*

[274] *ibid*

[275] *Death and memorial; Michael Jackson*, *Wikipedia*

[276] *Newly Surfaced Police Reports Detail Michael Jackson's Disturbing Pornography Collection*, Laura Bradley, Vanity Fair, 21 June 2016

[277] *New Book Alleges Walt Disney Was A Gay Pedophile*, Vickie Chang, OC Weekly, 9 August 2010

[278] *Famous American Freemason: Tom Mix*, Todd E. Creason, undated, Midnight Freemasons.org

[279] *Calling on Disney to Clean Up*, Judie Brown, The Free Lance-Star, 15 September 1995

[280] *GILMER v. WALT DISNEY COMPANY* (1996), United States District Court, W.D. Arkansas, Fayetteville, Justia.com

[281] *When the Religious Right Attacked 'The Little Mermaid'*, Asawin Suebsaeng, The Daily Beast, 20 November 2014

[282] *Lawsuit Claims Disney Apps Track, Collect Kids' Digital Information Illegally*, Asher Klein, NBC 4 New York, 7 August 2017
"Advertising" is the tip of the sinister pyramid.

[283] *"I Was Molested And Passed Around"*, Chris Spargo, *Daily Mail*, 26 May 2016

[284] *Corey Feldman Claims Pedophilia in Hollywood*, ABC News, 10 August 2011
This is a video. I typed the transcript myself. Can't remember who the snapperhead host was, don't fucking care.

[285] *The Monster Of Neverland: How JM Barrie Did A "Peter Pan" And Stole Another Couple's Children*, Tony Rennell, *Daily Mail*, 8 July 2008

[286] *7 Dark Secrets About The Real Peter Pan Include Suicide And Pedophilia*, unattributed, She Knows, 08 December 2016

[287] *The Monster Of Neverland: How JM Barrie Did A "Peter Pan" And Stole Another Couple's Children*, Tony Rennell, *Daily Mail*, 8 July 2008

[288] *Robin Williams' Death Ruled Suicide*, Matthew Stucker, CNN, 11 November 2014

[289] *Hidden Adult Messages You Probably Missed in Disney Movies*, unattributed, Memes.com, 2015
Sorry, no specific date listed.

[290] *Summary of Baconian Evidence for Shakespeare Authorship*, lawrencegerald33@yahoo.com, Sir Bacon.org, undated but with 32 footnotes (asshole)

[291] *Francis Bacon and the James 1st Bible*, A. E. Loosley, Sir Bacon.org, undated

[292] *Secret History*, Johnny Cirucci, CreateSpace (2016), pp. 113-129

[293] *Clement Freud*, *Wikipedia*

[294] *Emails Between "Paedophile" Clement Freud And Madeleine McCann's Parents To Be Probed For Child Sex Abuse Inquiry*, Sam Webb, Mirror, 20 June 2016

[295] *Jimmy Savile*, *Wikipedia*

[296] *The missed chances to get Jimmy Savile*, Dominic Casciani, BBC, 12 March 2013
Do these sound like "missed chances" to you? Should we check for a Jesuit in the woodpile of "Dominic Casciani" of the BBC?

[297] *Girls' school head won't be charged over Savile*, Chris Greenwood and Richard Spillett, *Daily Mail*, 29 April 2015

[298] *BBC inquiry into Jimmy Savile scandal 'to stay secret'*, Alice Philipson, *Telegraph*, 28 November 2012

[299] *The Yew: Sacred Tree of Transformation and Rebirth*, Glennie Kindred, White Dragon.org, 1997

[300] *Trees and Religion – Paganism*, unattributed, Arboriculture, 16 October 2016

[301] *Operation Yewtree*, Tom Eames, Digital Spy, 20 May 2015

[302] *Censored, Savile's private letters to Mrs. Thatcher*, Claire Ellicott, *Daily Mail*, 27 December 2012

[303] *Jimmy Savile was part of satanic ring*, James Fielding, Express, 13 January 2013

[304] *Jimmy Savile and the Cardinal: Britain's top Catholic cleric was friend of disgraced TV host*, Steve White, Mirror, 26 February 2013

[305] *ibid*

[306] *Britain's top Catholic Cardinal steps down amid accusation of "inappropriate acts"*, Steve White, Mirror, 25 February 2013

[307] *Jimmy Savile Sex Scandal: DJ was Devout Catholic who Attended Mass Frequently*, Hannah Osborne, International Business *Times*, 2 July 2014

[308] *Jimmy Savile's Obituaries Mentioned His Charity Work But Why The Conspiracy Of Silence About His Faith?* William Oddie, Catholic Herald, 7 November 2011
Sorry, but God has a sense of humor — *look at this frigging guy's last name!*

[309] *When Jimmy Savile died, I reproached his obituarists for their cover-up of his faith. Now I have to ask: what was he thinking of during daily Mass?* William Oddie, Catholic Herald, 15 October 2012
He was thinking exactly what he was supposed to be, Bill.

[310] *Biography; Martin Baron*, *Wikipedia*

[311] *789 Children Abused by Priests Since 1940, Massachusetts Says*, Fox Butterfield, The New York *Times*, 24 July 2003

[312] *Priest In Boston Child Rape Case To Be Released From Prison This Week*, Denise Lavoie, Press Herald, picked up by the Associated Press, 25 July 2017

[313] *Shanley Attended NAMBLA Meeting*, unattributed, Fox News, Associated Press, 02 May 2002

[314] *ibid*

[315] *Tom Reeves, 1939 – 2012*, unattributed, undated, NAMBLA

[316] *ibid*

[317] *'We're Back': Allies Of Ousted Aristide Rejoice As Haiti's Interim President Is Sworn In*, unattributed, Reuters, 15 February, 2016, taken down by *Rutters* but re-posted by the South China Morning Post, here!
Fuck you very much.

[318] *Haiti Threatens to Expel Jesuits After Seizing Two*, unattributed, The New York *Times*, 10 February 1964

[319] *Concordats And Voodoo: Who Controls The Haitian Church?* unattributed, undated, Concordat Watch
One of the best articles I've ever seen.

[320] *The Vatican: Things Must Change Here*, John Kohan, Time, 21 March 1983

[321] *Concordats And Voodoo: Who Controls The Haitian Church?* unattributed, undated, Concordat Watch

[322] *Haitian Prelate Is Under Attack*, Marlise Simons, New York *Times*, 3 April 1986

[323] *A Few Facts About Trump's Former National Security Adviser Michael Flynn*, unattributed, Sputnik News, 14 February 2017

[324] *The Christian Worldview of Mike Pence*, Max Perry Mueller, Religion and Politics.org, 10 October 2016

[325] *Pence: I Was “Disappointed” With Flynn*, Jeremy Diamond, CNN, 20 February 2017

[326] *Michael Flynn’s Son And Chief Of Staff Pushed Conspiracy Theories, Obscene Memes Online*, Andrew Kaczynski and Nathan McDermott, CNN, 17 November 2016

[327] *“If They Knew The Madness In Me”* Sally Jacobs, the Boston Globe, 10 July 2002

[328] *ibid*

[329] *Barney Lied: He DID Support the Repeal of Glass-Steagall*, unattributed, Lyndon LaRouche Political Action Committee, 22 June 2010
Lyndon LaDouche: another controlled opposition clown but he got there by mixing truth with lies so we’ll take this one for a citation.

[330] *Frank’s Fingerprints Are All Over The Financial Fiasco*, Jeff Jacoby, Boston Globe, 28 September 2008

[331] *“If They Knew The Madness In Me”* Sally Jacobs, the Boston Globe, 10 July 2002

[332] *ibid*

[333] *ibid*

[334] *ibid*

[335] *ibid*

[336] *ibid*

[337] *J.R.R. Tolkien & C.S. Lewis: Jesuit Imagineering*, Felipe & Johnny, Johnny Cirucci.com, 16 December, 2016

[338] *Shanley Attended NAMBLA Meeting*, unattributed, Fox News, Associated Press, 02 May 2002

[339] *Church Allowed Abuse By Priest For Years*, Matt Carroll, Sacha Pfeiffer, Michael Rezendes and Walter V. Robinson, The Boston Globe, 6 January 2002

[340] *ibid*

[341] *ibid*

[342] *ibid*

[343] *ibid*

[344] *ibid*

[345] *Geoghan Preferred Preying On Poorer Children*, Matt Carroll, Sacha Pfeiffer, Michael Rezendes and Walter V. Robinson, The Boston Globe, 07 January 2002

[346] *Church Allowed Abuse By Priest For Years*, The Boston Globe

[347] *ibid*

[348] *ibid*

[349] *Geoghan Preferred Preying On Poorer Children*, Matt Carroll, Sacha Pfeiffer, Michael Rezendes and Walter V. Robinson, The Boston Globe, 07 January 2002

[350] *Church Allowed Abuse By Priest For Years*, The Boston Globe

[351] *ibid*

[352] *Murder; John Geoghan*, *Wikipedia*

[353] *ibid*

[354] *Geoghan Ruling Sparks Anger*, Kathleen Burge, Boston Globe, 27 September 2003

[355] *Disgraced U.S. Cardinal Bernard Law Quits Rome Post*, unattributed, Associated Press, *The Guardian*, 21 November 2011

[356] *ibid*

[357] *John Podesta Joins The Washington Post As A Contributing Columnist*, WashPostPR, *The Washington Post*, 23 February 2017

[358] *I'm In "Spotlight", But It's Not Really About Me. It's About The Power Of Journalism.* Martin Baron, *The Washington Post*, 24 February 2016

[359] *Helter Skelter – The True Story of the Manson Murders 25th Anniversary Edition*, Vincent Bugliosi and Curt Gentry, W.W. Norton & Company (1994), pp. 136–7
It sure is helpful after representing the State in a high-profile prosecution to go ahead and make a buck off the book afterwards!

[360] *10 Tragic Stories from the Childhood of Charles Manson*, unattributed, Chaostrophic.com, 03 September 2016

[361] *Gibault School for Boys*, *Wikipedia*

[362] *William Heirens*, *Wikipedia*

[363] *Romanism: A Menace to the Nation*, Jeremiah J. Crowley, Crowley, Wheaton, Illinois (1912), p. 157

[364] *Illuminati Unmasked*, Johnny Cirucci, CreateSpace (2015), pp. 19, 20

[365] *Jeb Bush, 20 Years After Conversion, Is Guided by His Catholic Faith*, Michael Paulson, *NY Times*, 17 March 2015

[366] *A decade after Terri Schiavo's feeding tube was disconnected, her family's pain lives on*, Deborah Hastings, New York Daily News, 17 March 2015
God is keeping a ***full account*** of all this. Wanna know how I know? The dates for this story and the *Times* fluff piece above on "Jeb's" wonderful Catholicism just happen to be exactly the same. Payback's a bitch, "Jeb".

[367] *Driver's Licenses for Undocumented Immigrants: Flagler Sheriff Says Yes, But Local Opinion Is Divided*, unattributed, FlaglerLive, 26 February 2016
Go figure.
The piece of shit chief law enforcement officer wants to give drivers licenses to any undocumented threat who walks in to the DMV but "some" of the locals aren't enthused.

[368] *Charles Manson – Hoosier Juvenile Delinquent*, Al Hunter, The Weekly View, 2009, re-posted 22 January 2015

[369] *Helter Skelter*, Bugliosi Curt Gentry, pp. 136–7

[370] *Charles Manson*, The Weekly View

[371] *"Charles Manson's 63-Year Old BoysTown Mystery"*, Cathy A. Wyatt, Omaha Lifestyles Magazine, 9 February 2013

[372] *"Charles Manson's 63-Year Old BoysTown Mystery"*, Omaha Lifestyles

[373] *That time Charles Manson came to Boys Town*, Blake Ursch, Omaha World-Herald, 10 February 2017

[374] *ibid*

[375] *"Charles Manson's 63-Year Old BoysTown Mystery"*, Omaha Lifestyles

[376] *Vatican Assassins*, 3rd Edition, Eric Jon Phelps, Lowvehm (2007), p. 45

[377] *Martin Bomber Plant near Bellevue helped end World War II and now faces its own demise*, Steve Liewer, Omaha World-Herald, 7 August 2015

[378] *"Charles Manson's 63-Year Old BoysTown Mystery"*, Omaha Lifestyles

[379] *Charles Manson – Hoosier Juvenile Delinquent*, The Weekly View

[380] *San Francisco followers; Formation; Manson Family*, Wikipedia

[381] *San Francisco followers; Manson Family*, *Wikipedia*

[382] *Early life; Patricia Krenwinkel*, *Wikipedia*

[383] *Involvement with Wilson, Melcher, et al.; Formation; Manson Family*, *Wikipedia*

[384] *The Religious Affiliation of Director Roman Polanski*, unattributed, Adherents.com, 2 July 2005

[385] *The Religious Affiliation of Actress Sharon Tate*, unattributed, Adherents.com, undated

[386] *Sharon Tate and the Manson Murders*, Greg King, Open Road Media (2016)
Digital versions (apparently the only way to get this book even though it appears to be offered in paperback) are all devoid of page numbers but this is about 3 pages in from the *Chapter 16: Pregnancy*.
If I can get a chapter, I usually count the pages then go to Amazon for a Table of Contents but even here the assholes listed the bloody e-book contents which is about as helpful as Jeff Bezos funding trips to outer space.

[387] *Reminder: Roman Polanski raped a child*, Kate Harding, Salon, 28 September 2009

[388] *Sexual abuse case; Legal history; Roman Polanski*, *Wikipedia*

[389] *ibid*

[390] *Inside Dino De Laurentiis' Funeral*, Bill Higgins, Hollywood Reporter, 15 November 2010

[391] *"Charles Manson's 63-Year Old BoysTown Mystery"*, Cathy A. Wyatt, Omaha Lifestyles Magazine, 9 February 2013

[392] *Illuminati Unmasked*, Johnny Cirucci, CreateSpace (2015), pp. 113-120

[393] *Viet D. Dinh*, profile, Georgetown Law

[394] *The Pen Ten With Atticus Lish*, unattributed, PEN America, 11 November 2014

[395] *Divinity of Doubt: The God Question*, Vincent Bugliosi, Vanguard Press (2011), pp. 5-6

[396] Kirkus Review of *Taming the Beast: Charles Manson's Life Behind Bars*, Amazon.com

[397] *Front row; People on the cover; List of images on the cover of* ***Sgt. Pepper's Lonely Hearts Club Band***, *Wikipedia*

[398] *Illuminati Unmasked*, Johnny Cirucci, CreateSpace (2015), p. 397

[399] *Secret History*, Johnny Cirucci, CreateSpace (2016), p. 495

[400] *Baltimore archdiocese pays settlements to a dozen people alleging abuse by late priest*, Alison Knezevich, The Baltimore Sun, 15 November 2016

[401] *Buried In Baltimore: The Mysterious Murder Of A Nun Who Knew Too Much*, Laura Bassett, Huffington Post, 14 May 2015

[402] *'The Keepers' Director Ryan White: It's not too late to solve Sister Cathy's murder*, Stephanie Nolasco, Fox News, 6 June 2017

[403] *"The Keepers" Director Reveals Deep Connection to Case*, E! Live from the Red Carpet, YouTube, 19 May 2017

[404] *Could "The Keepers" Be the Next "Making a Murderer"?* E! Live from the Red Carpet, YouTube, 18 May 2017

[405] *The Keepers: Episode 3*, Directed by Ryan White, Netflix, 2017

[406] *The Keepers*, Directed by Ryan White, Netflix, 2017
Sorry, missed which episode, I think 2 or 3.

[407] *Did the Catholic Church Get Away with Murder?* Tom Nugent, Inside Baltimore, 1 October 2014
Nugent is a *former* Baltimore Sun reporter and "Inside Baltimore" is an independent paper...which is the only way you can read the *full* details of these abominations.

[408] *Buried In Baltimore: The Mysterious Murder Of A Nun Who Knew Too Much*, Laura Bassett, Huffington Post, 14 May 2015

[409] *The Keepers: Episode 2*

[410] *Buried In Baltimore*, Huffington Post

[411] *ibid*

[412] *ibid*

[413] *Buried In Baltimore*, Huffington Post

[414] *ibid*

[415] *ibid*

[416] *ibid*

[417] *ibid*

[418] *ibid*

[419] *10 Murderous Priests, Pastors, And Nuns*, unattributed, Viral Top 10s, 10 June 2016
These puds list a bunch of obscure cases of all the other “religions” but none of them end with “the fucking cops ‘*lost*’ the records so no one was prosecuted” yet this bottoms out at “Number 10”.

10 Thomas Kottur, Jose Puthurukkayil, And Sister Sephy

[420] *Unable to Trace Old Files on Sister Abhaya, Says CBI*, unattributed, Deccan Chronicle, 16 June 2015

[421] *Indian Police Hunt Nuns Accused of Aiding Rapist Priest*, AFP (unattributed), Arab News, 6 March 2017

[422] *Religion in India*, Bing, 2011

[423] *U.S. Church Sex Abuse Survivor to Sue Diocese in India for Reinstating Perv Priest*, Michael O’Keeffe, New York Daily News, 18 April 2016

[424] *Holy Saturday*, *Wikipedia*
The pagan holiday of “Easter” was made never to fall during Passover by Jesuit Luciferian Christopher Clavius, the engineer of our “Gregorian” calendar.

[425] *Gerald Robinson, Priest Convicted of Killing Ohio Nun, Dies at 76*, John Schwartz, *NY Times*, 4 July 2014

This monster died on the 4th of July?
Happy Birthday, America.

[426] *Justice Story: Killer Priest Murders Nun in Chapel Sacristy, Leaves Demonic Stab Pattern Over Her Heart*, David J. Krajicek, New York Daily News, 23 September 2012

[427] *Did Diocese Handle Nun’s Death?* Mary-Jayne McKay, CBS News / AP, 27 April 2004

[428] *ibid*

[429] *Justice Story*, New York Daily News

[430] *Did Diocese Handle Nun’s Death?* CBS News / AP

[431] *ibid*

[432] *Report: Toledo Cops Refused to Probe Priest Abuse*, Madeleine Brand, Day to Day, NPR, 2 August 2005

[433] *Did Diocese Handle Nun’s Death?* CBS News / AP

[434] *Justice Story*, New York Daily News

[435] *Priest's body exhumed from Randallstown cemetery in investigation of Baltimore nun's decades-old killing*, Alison Knezevich, The Baltimore Sun, 4 May 2017

[436] *Did the Catholic Church Get Away with Murder?* Tom Nugent, Inside Baltimore, 1 October 2014

[437] *Buried In Baltimore*, , Huffington Post

[438] *ibid*

[439] *Priest's body exhumed*, The Baltimore Sun

[440] *Buried In Baltimore*, , Huffington Post

[441] *A Plethora of Catholic Movies Available on Netflix*, Patrick Madrid (blogspot.com), 10 July 2010

[442] *Priest's body exhumed*, The Baltimore Sun

[443] *The Keepers: Episode 3*

[444] *The Keepers: Episode 2*

[445] *ibid*

[446] *Buried In Baltimore*, , Huffington Post

[447] *The Keepers: Episode 3*

[448] *ibid*

[449] *Sons of Saint Patrick: A History of the Archbishops of New York, from Dagger John to Timmytown*, George J. Marlin and Brad Miner, Ignatius Press (2017), pp. 386-387

[450] *The Keepers: Episode 3*

[451] *The Keepers: Episode 4*

[452] *Power and Secret of the Jesuits*, Rene Fulop-Miller, Viking Press (1930), p. 436

[453] *Cain's Creed*, Omar Zaid, Zaid (2006) p. 316

[454] *Rulers of Evil*, F. Tupper Saussy, Ospray (1999), p. 137

[455] *The Keepers: Episode 3*

[456] *The Keepers: Episode 4*

[457] *ibid*

[458] *ibid*

[459] *ibid*

[460] *The Keepers: Episode 5*

[461] *Vatican Assassins*, 3rd Edition, Eric Jon Phelps, Lowvehm (2007), p. 656

[462] *Wounds That Time Won't Heal: The Neurobiology of Child Abuse*, Martin H. Teicher, M.D., Ph.D., The Dana Foundation, 01 October 2000

[463] *The Keepers: Episode 4*

[464] *The Keepers: Episode 6*

[465] *Paedophile Priest Had Links to Other Infamous Child Abusers*, Maeve Sheehan, Sunday Independent, 10 July 2016

[466] *Ex-Priest Jailed for 16 Years*, unattributed, Irish *Times*, 6 December 2010
If it's not up, you can find it archived here

[467] *Recidivism Rates For "Rehabilitated" Sex Offenders Show Treatment Programs Fail: Doctor*, Susan Scutti, Medical Daily, 28 January 2015

[468] *ibid*

[469] *Paedophile Priest Had Links*, Sunday Independent

[470] *ibid*

[471] *Report by Commission of Investigation into Catholic Archdiocese of Dublin*, Chapter 19 Fr Jovito, *para* 19.74
The Missing Chapter 19 on "Father Jovito" has been archived here.

[472] *Ex-Priest Jailed for 16 Years*, unattributed, Irish *Times*, 6 December 2010
If it's not up, you can find it archived here

[473] *Monsignor Gerard Sheehy obituary*, Monsignor Ralph Brown, Canon Law Society of Great Britain and Ireland, 30 March 2003

[474] *Cruel Crimes of the Singing Priest*, Patsy McGarry, *The Irish Times*, 11 December 2010

[475] *ibid*

[476] *ibid*

[477] *Cruel Crimes of the Singing Priest*, *The Irish Times*

[478] *ibid*

[479] *HSE Tightlipped Over Failure to Pass on McQuaid Sex-Abuse Claim*, Paul Melia, The Irish Independent, 9 December 2011

[480] *ibid*

[481] *Irish Archbishop Who Died in '73 Is Linked to Abuse*, Douglas Dalby, *NY Times*, 8 December 2011
By the way, where I inserted "*Irish Times* disclosed" the actual propaganda from the Catholics and Court Jews at the Slimes was "the newspaper was *adamant*".

[482] *McQuaid has been Betrayed by his own Voluminous Archive*, John Cooney, The Irish *Times*, 7 April 2003

[483] *Noël Browne*, *Wikipedia*

[484] *Mother and Child Scheme*, *Wikipedia*

[485] *McQuaid has been Betrayed by his own Voluminous Archive*, John Cooney, The Irish *Times*, 7 April 2003

[486] *ibid*

[487] *ibid*

[488] *Secret History*, Johnny Cirucci, CreateSpace (2016), pp. 56, 66

[489] *View from McQuaid's Turret*, Jerome Reilly, The Irish Independent, 6 November 1999
A sickening piece of yellow journalism in defense of a monster.

[490] *ibid*

[491] *ibid*

[492] *Marc Dutroux*, *Wikipedia*

[493] *Frank B. Kelso II, Navy's Former Top Admiral, Dies at 79*, Matt Schudel, *The Washington Post*, 25 June 2013
This contradicts the assertion from "user-edited" Lick-My-Pedia which states the yenta from Mexipornia — Barbara "Box-Me" Boxer — led the charge.

[494] *Frank B. Kelso II, Navy's Former Top Admiral, Dies At 79*, Matt Schudel, Washington Post, 25 June 2013

[495] *Milwaukee Ties Unite Largest Midwest Jesuit Class Since 1995*, McKenna Oxenden, Milwaukee Journal Sentinel, 8 July 8, 2017

[496] *Early life; Early childhood; Jeffrey Dahmer*, *Wikipedia*

[497] *Revealing the Twisted Murderous Adventures of Jeffrey Dahmer While Serving in the U.S. Army*, unattributed, TheCrimeMag.com, undated

[498] *Jeffrey Dahmer*, unattributed, U.S. History.com, undated

[499] *Jeffrey Lionel DAHMER*, unattributed, Murderpedia, undated

[500] *Late twenties: subsequent murders; Ambassador Hotel; Jeffrey Dahmer*, *Wikipedia*

[501] *I Drank Old Fashioneds Where Jeffrey Dahmer Killed His First Victim in Milwaukee*, Nick Woods, Vice "Munchies", 26 October 2015
Reminiscing about what Jeffrey Dahmer did to his victims sure gives me the "munchies", how about you folks?

[502] *"Rad Dad Feature: Gavin McInnes"*, unattributed, Modern Day Dads, 22 July 2014

[503] *Concordia University*, *Wikipedia*

[504] *Jeffrey Lionel DAHMER*, unattributed, Murderpedia, undated

[505] *ibid*

[506] *ibid*

[507] *ibid*

[508] *Rulers of Evil*, F. Tupper Saussy, Ospray (1999), pp. xiii-XV

[509] *Gerald Boyle Takes On Another High-Profile Case — His Own*, Bruce Vielmetti, The Milwaukee Journal Sentinel, 11 October 2015

[510] *ibid*

[511] *One Woman's Stand Against College Athletes*, Ryan Haggerty, Todd Lighty and Stacy St. Clair, The Chicago Tribune, 28 October 2011

[512] *Jeffrey Lionel DAHMER*, unattributed, Murderpedia, undated

[513] *Nebraskans Vote Overwhelmingly To Restore Death Penalty, Nullify Historic 2015 Vote by State Legislature*, Paul Hammel, Omaha World-Herald, 9 November 2016

[514] *Nebraska Law Enforcement Speak Out Against the Death Penalty*, unattributed, Death Penalty News, 17 October 2016

[515] *Jesuit Father Gregory O'Meara Named Rector of Creighton University's Jesuit Community*, unattributed, Jesuits.org, undated (which is particularly stupid as the boy-buggerers were reporting their event regarding the great day O'Meara became Rectum)

[516] *First Look: Disney Star Ross Lynch Is Notorious Serial Killer In My Friend Dahmer*, Clark Collis, MySpace, 8 August 2017

[517] *How the Establishment hid the Monster in their Midst*, Richard Pendlebury, *The Daily Mail*, 4 July 2014
Happy Birthday, America.

[518] *Illuminati Unmasked*, Johnny Cirucci, CreateSpace (2015), p. 87

[519] *How the Establishment hid the Monster in their Midst*, Richard Pendlebury, *The Daily Mail*, 4 July 2014

[520] *ibid*

[521] *Secret History*, Johnny Cirucci, CreateSpace (2016), pp. 527-529

[522] *Sentencing and release; Geoffrey Prime*, *Wikipedia*

[523] *Daily Mail Comment: Can't the Left Ever make a Mistake? Daily Mail* Reporter, *The Daily Mail*, 25 February 2014

[524] *The Catholic Roots of Obama's Activism*, Jason Horowitz, The New York *Times*, 22 March 2014
Rome uses Papal Court Jews as gatekeepers and the Slimes is a prime example. Any guesses as to the background of intrepid reporter Jason Horowitz...?

[525] *Opus Dei Influence Rises to the Top in the Vatican*, Betty Clermont, The Open Tabernacle, 5 April 2014

[526] *Family of David Cameron*, *Wikipedia*

[527] *How the Establishment hid the Monster in their Midst*, Richard Pendlebury, *The Daily Mail*, 4 July 2014

[528] *Peter Hayman named as VIP who Sexually Abused Boys at Dolphin Square Apartment Complex near Parliament*, Jennifer Smith, *The Daily Mail*, 9 November 2014

[529] *Leon Brittan's Faulty Memory and a Ticking Timebomb that could shake Westminster*, Richard Pendlebury, *The Daily Mail*, 2 July 2014

[530] *Child Abuse Files were dismissed as Fantasies of a Deluded Man*, Philip Johnston, *The Telegraph*, 4 July 2014

[531] *Peter Hayman named as VIP who Sexually Abused Boys at Dolphin Square Apartment Complex near Parliament*, Jennifer Smith, *The Daily Mail*, 9 November 2014

[532] *Tory MP warned of Powerful Paedophile Ring 30 Years Ago*, unattributed, The Independent, 22 February 2013

[533] *Leon Brittan's Faulty Memory and a Ticking Timebomb that could shake Westminster*, Richard Pendlebury, *The Daily Mail*, 2 July 2014

[534] *Peter Hayman named as VIP*, *The Daily Mail*

[535] *ibid*

[536] *Ex-MI6 Chief Peter Hayman named as VIP who Sexually Abused Boys at Dolphin Square Apartment Complex near Parliament*, Editor, The Event Chronicle, 11 November 2014

[537] *2. Alfred Evans*, Atlanta's Missing & Murdered

[538] *Later developments; Atlanta murders of 1979–81*, *Wikipedia*

[539] *Capturing the suspect; Atlanta murders of 1979–81*, *Wikipedia*

[540] *The FBI's John Douglas spends his Days profiling Criminals*, Susan Baer, The Baltimore Sun, 11 March 1991

[541] *Individual cases; Profiling; Career; John E. Douglas*, *Wikipedia*

[542] *Thread Of Evidence; May Be Only Link Needed To Solve A Crime*, Tom Mashberg, The Boston Herald, 14 May 1995 [archived here]
The idiot who did the Lick-My-Pedia entry simply had "agent Deadman". I thought it was a fucking joke.
I still do, but the "joke" was on Wayne Williams. Not that he isn't a murderer but he almost certainly isn't responsible for the serial-killing.

[543] *Trial; Atlanta murders of 1979–81*, *Wikipedia*

[544] *Atlanta Child Murders: 'A Question of Justice'*, Robert Keating and Barry Michael Cooper, Spin, September 1986, [archived here]

[545] *Cathy O'Brien & Mark Phillips : ACCESS DENIED For Reasons of National Security*, Ed Opperman, YouTube, 30 April 2016

[546] *Illuminati Unmasked*, Johnny Cirucci, CreateSpace (2015), pp. 461, 462, 463, 464

[547] *CHAPTER 15: NO MORE BEATING AROUND THE BUSH, Trance: Formation of America*, Cathy O'Brien, Mark Phillips, Reality Marketing (2005)
I gave you the chapter as my digital copy page numbers won't match the hard copy. Notice how her Papal handler was there to "help" her write the book.

[548] *Atlanta Child Murders: 'A Question of Justice'*, Robert Keating and Barry Michael Cooper, Spin, September 1986, [archived here]

[549] *ATLANTA CHILD MURDERS – Was Wayne Williams Railroaded? Why!* T.A.B.A.C.C.O. (Truth About Business And Congressional Crimes Organization) 13 July 2005

[550] *Aftermath; Atlanta murders of 1979–81*, *Wikipedia*

[551] *The Religious Affiliation of Robert De Niro*, Adherents.com

[552] *Motion Picture Association of America Ruled by Black Pope's Knights of Malta*, Eric Jon Phelps, Vatican Assassins.org, 2 February 2012

[553] *‘Knights Of Malta’ Still on Hold*, unattributed, the Malta Independent, 13 February 2005

[554] *Early Life; Bob Guccione*, *Wikipedia*

[555] *Atlanta Child Murders: ‘A Question of Justice’*, Robert Keating and Barry Michael Cooper, Spin, September 1986, [archived here]

[556] *The Hedonist: Amsterdam*, Matt Farquharson, The Independent, 27 November 2010
This fucktard just loved it. How is this ever considered “journalism” — whether it’s a bullshit “tourist guide” or not?

[557] *Amsterdam Statue Honors Prostitutes*, unattributed, DutchAmsterdam.nl, undated
These cockroaches are just *so* proud.

[558] *When Sex Abuse Can Lead to Murder*, Nick Davies, *The Guardian*, 26 November 2000

[559] *ibid*

[560] *ibid*

[561] *ibid*

[562] *ibid*

[563] *ibid*

[564] *ibid*

[565] *ibid*

[566] *ibid*

[567] *Abuse Victims “Trafficked Abroad”*, James Hanning and Paul Cahalan, The Independent, 3 February 2013

[568] *Timebomb at Elm Guest House*, Stephen Wright and Richard Pendlebury, the *Daily Mail*, 1 February 2013

[569] *Abuse Victims “Trafficked Abroad”*, The Independent

[570] *Timebomb at Elm Guest House*, *Daily Mail*

[571] *ibid*

[572] *Abuse Victims “Trafficked Abroad”*, The Independent

[573] *ibid*

[574] *Cyril Smith*, *Wikipedia*

[575] *Cyril Smith: Biography*, IMDb

[576] *Police fears of being branded racist "left grooming gang free to abuse teenage girls for two years," says former Labour MP*, Martin Robinson, *Daily Mail*, 9 May 2012
I don't know what's worse: Limey inability to properly write a headline or juxtaposition and misuse of an apostrophe verses quotes.

[577] *Police fears*, , *Daily Mail*

[578] *Timebomb at Elm Guest*, *Daily Mail*

[579] *ibid*

[580] *Suspicion and secret confession; Anthony Blunt*, *Wikipedia*

[581] *Timebomb at Elm Guest*, *Daily Mail*

[582] *ibid*

[583] *Father Claims Scotland Yard Covered Up Son's Murder by Westminster Paedophiles*, Bill Gardner, *The Telegraph*, 18 November 2014

[584] *ibid*

[585] *ibid*

[586] *ibid*

[587] *Illuminati Unmasked*, Johnny Cirucci, CreateSpace (2015), pp. 409, 410

[588] *Father Claims Scotland Yard Covered Up Son's Murder*, *The Telegraph*

[589] *Timebomb at Elm Guest*, *Daily Mail*

[590] *Grafton Close Care Home Abuse Trial: Catholic Priest's Cleaner "Found Indecent Video"*, Laura Proto, Your Local *Guardian*, 16 February 2015

[591] *ibid*

[592] *ibid*

[593] *ibid*

[594] *ibid*

[595] *Ex-Tory Minister “Pictured in Child Sex Abuse Video” Confiscated by Customs at Dover in 1982*, Keir Mudie and Mark Conrad, The Mirror, 29 March 2014

[596] *Social worker who accused Leon Brittan and other VIPs as being members of an alleged paedophile ring was convicted of fraud in 2011*, Sam Tonkin, the U.K. Daily Pornographic Fail, 27 September 2015

[597] *“VIP Child Abuse Ring” Accuser Served Time in Prison for Fraud*, Robert Mendick, *Telegraph*, 26 September 2015
Ole Bob “Men-dick” (can’t make this shit up) is listed as the *Telegraph* “Chief Reporter”! We’re sure there are no little boys in *his* closet.

[598] *What You Didn’t Know About Taxes & The “Crown”*, Mark Owen, Conspiracy Archive, 27 January 2005
Bunch of “***it’s the Rothschild-Jews!***” hysteria but good information ... always is when the Jews are the boogeymen.

[599] *Secret History*, Johnny Cirucci, CreateSpace (2016), pp. 60, 154

[600] *Westminster Paedophile Scandal*, Samantha Payne, International Business Times, 17 March 2015

[601] *Was Council Official Murdered To Stop Him Revealing Those Linked To VIP Paedophile Ring? New Witness Speaks Out.* Tom Pettifor, The Mirror, 11 March 2015

[602] *The Murder Of Bulic Forsythe*, RigInterGrater, YouTube, 17 June 2014
This is the original report by CBS/Warner Brothers in 1993. The Network is known as “CW”.

[603] *Children In Lambeth Council’s Care “Abused On Industrial Scale”*, Sandra Laville, The Guardian, 24 March 2016

[604] *Secret History*, Johnny Cirucci, CreateSpace (2016), pp. 75, 484-485

[605] *Boateng Thought He Was Untouchable*, Sarah Oliver, Daily Mail, 3 December 2011

[606] *The Salacious Ammo Even Donald Trump Won't Use in a Fight Against Hillary Clinton*, Ken Silverstein, Vice, 29 January 2016
Wanna guess the derivation of “Vice’s” Ken Silverstein...?

[607] *Council Official Murdered To Stop Him Revealing Ring*, The Mirror

[608] *Westminster Paedophile Scandal*, International Business Times

[609] *The Council That Employed An Abuser To Look After Children*, Nick Hopkins and Jake Morris, BBC Newsnight, 1 March 2016

[610] *ibid*

[611] *Politician Suspected Of Child Abuse "Would Spend Evenings With Convicted Paedophile"*, Tom Pettifor, Mirror, 27 April 2014

[612] *ibid*

[613] *ibid*

[614] *Illuminati Unmasked*, Johnny Cirucci, CreateSpace (2015), p. 603

[615] *Remains of Ten Bodies at Ben Franklin's Home*, unattributed, The Sunday Times, 11 February 1998

[616] *Freemason; Philadelphia; Benjamin Franklin*, Wikipedia

[617] Hellfire Club, Wikipedia

[618] *Ex-Catholic Priest Admits Seven Charges Of Child Sex Abuse*, unattributed, BBC, 9 August 2016

[619] *Lambeth Council To Pay Tens Of Millions To Child Abuse Survivors*, unattributed, The Guardian, 15 December 2016

[620] *Timebomb at Elm Guest House*, *Daily Mail*

[621] *Who Took Johnny*, written and directed by David Beilinson and Michael Galinsky, co-directed by Suki Hawley, produced by FilmBuff Studios, 2014

[622] *Kidnapping — Federal Jurisdiction 1034*, Criminal Resource Manual 1001-1099, Justice.gov

[623] *If a child is missing and possibly kidnapped, but no interstate transportation is known, will the FBI begin an investigation?* Frequently Asked Questions, About the FBI, FBI.gov

[624] *Alisha Owen and Her Involvement with John DeCamp*, David Shurter, DavidShurter.com, 5 December 2012
Dave, himself, has played schizophrenic footsie with me for several months now. He is cleared to make the rounds of alternative media frauds because he knows not to bring up the Whore of Babylon. When and if he finds his spine, we'll still be here for him.

[625] *The Johnny Gosch Foundation*, undated, posted on the home page apparently by Noreen Gosch

[626] *Father Skeptical That Johnny Gosch Visited Mother in 1997*, Robert Dorr, Omaha World-Herald, 9 February 1999, archived here.

[627] *Father Marcial Maciel And The Popes He Stained*, Jason Berry, Newsweek, 11 March 2013
The bullshit starts in the fucking headline, "The good Popes this bad apple stained."

[628] *Ridding Catholicism Of The Stench Of This Legionary Of Christ*, Hugh O'Shaughnessy, *The Guardian*, 21 September 2011

Yes, Irish Catholic fucktard, so you can make Catholicism “pure” again, like it was...***never***.

[629] *Head Of Worldwide Catholic Order Accused Of History Of Abuse*, Gerald Renner and Jason Berry, Hartford Courant, 23 February 1997

[630] *Father Marcial Maciel And The Popes He Stained*, Jason Berry, Newsweek, 11 March 2013

[631] *Ridding Catholicism Of The Stench Of This Legionary Of Christ*, Hugh O’Shaughnessy, *The Guardian*, 21 September 2011

[632] *Father Marcial Maciel And The Popes He Stained*, Newsweek

[633] *ibid*

[634] *ibid*

[635] *Head Of Worldwide Catholic Order*, Hartford Courant

[636] *Leaked Vatican Documents Implicate Pope John Paul II*, Tony Bushby, VatiLeaks, 28 October 2011
Here’s another clown who exposes the crimes of Rome then pulls a Voltaire and claims they are the crimes of “Christianity”.

[637] *ibid*

[638] *Head Of Worldwide Catholic Order*, Hartford Courant

[639] *ibid*

[640] *ibid*

[641] *Father Marcial Maciel And The Popes He Stained*, Newsweek

[642] *ibid*

[643] *Ridding Catholicism Of The Stench Of This Legionary Of Christ*, Hugh O’Shaughnessy, *The Guardian*, 21 September 2011

[644] *Father Marcial Maciel And The Popes He Stained*, Newsweek

[645] *ibid*

[646] *Leaked Vatican Documents Implicate Pope John Paul II*, Tony Bushby, VatiLeaks, 28 October 2011

[647] *Blackwater Nazis Aim Homeward: Kristallnacht in Virginia?* Anton Chaitkin, Executive Intelligence Review, 26 October 2007

This is some of the worst PsyOp bullshit I've read in a while but if you pick through the steaming pile there are some gems to be washed off and had.

[648] *Washington's Quiet Club*, Evan Thomas, Newsweek, 8 March 2001

[649] *Blackwater Nazis Aim Homeward*, Executive Intelligence Review

[650] *"Jeff Gannon's" Secret Life*, Eric Boehlert, Salon, 15 February 2005

[651] *Cover Story: Death of a Conspiracy*, Tim Schmitt, Pointblank Des Moines Online, 17 April 2005

[652] *The Johnny Gosch Foundation*

[653] *Mole Hunter And Mole, Both Gone*, Philip Taubman, New York *Times*, 23 December 1995, reprinted by the Deerfield Beach, Florida Sun Sentinel, here.
The great Philip Taubman of the *Times*. Wanna guess what his religion is?

[654] *Their Will Be Done*, Martin A. Lee, Mother Jones, July/August 1983 Issue

[655] *The "Black" Pope*, Rick Martin, The SPECTRUM, 15 April 2000, currently archived here.

[656] *Why Ed Murray Can't Quit the Catholic Church*, Daniel Person, Seattle Weekly, 1 March 2017

[657] *Seattle Mayor Ed Murray: I am not going to Resign*, Associated Press unattributed, *Washington Post*, 17 July 2017

[658] *Leadership Tips From Ed Murray*, Lola Peters, Leadership Tomorrow, 20 February 2015
Obscure leadership seminar admits Murray "Jesuit educated" but says nothing more.

[659] *The Rise and Fall of Seattle Mayor Ed Murray's Political Career*, Bob Young, Seattle *Times*, 9 May 2017
Seattle Times says Murray had a public education in high school and college but "*studied briefly at a seminary after high school*".
As Chico Marx said in *Animal Crackers*, "You gotta use'a'da Sherlock a'Holmes method!"

[660] *Cover Story: Death of a Conspiracy*, Tim Schmitt, Pointblank Des Moines Online, 17 April 2005

[661] *Hunter S. Thompson*, *Wikipedia*

[662] *Cover Story: Death of a Conspiracy*, Pointblank Des Moines Online

[663] *Why Catholics thrive in the CIA*, Robert Wargas, Catholic Herald, 5 May 2016

[664] *The Brothers: John Foster Dulles, Allen Dulles, and Their Secret World War*, Stephen Kinzer, Macmillan (2013), p. 303

[665] *Illuminati Unmasked*, Johnny Cirucci, CreateSpace (2015), pp. 65-67

[666] *Population*, Home Page of Vatican City State, State and Government, General Information, VaticanState.va
The Vatican having its own domain is also a sign of its power.

[667] *“Lured to her death by Vatican cardinal paedophile ring or kidnapped in revenge by Italy mobster?”* Hannah Roberts, *Daily Mail*, 30 October 2015

[668] *ibid*

[669] *ibid*

[670] *ibid*

[671] *ibid*

[672] *ibid*

[673] *Missing Girl “Buried In Murdered Mobster’s Tomb Was Kidnapped For Vatican Sex Parties’, Claims Catholic Church’s Leading Exorcist Priest*, Nick Pisa, *Daily Mail*, 22 May 2012

[674] *Emanuela Orlandi “Was Kidnapped For Sex Parties For Vatican Police”*, Nick Squires, *The Telegraph*, 22 May 2012
That’s ***not*** what Father Amorth said, Limey Roman fucktards. He said they were kidnapped ***by*** the Vatican Police ***for*** Satanic perverts ***in*** the Vatican.

[675] *“Lured to her death by Vatican cardinal paedophile ring”*, *Daily Mail*

[676] *ibid*

[677] *What is the Vatican’s sinister secret behind teenager Emanuela Orlandi’s 1983 disappearance?* Peter Stanford, *The Telegraph*, 19 May 2012

[678] *Missing Children in America: Unsolved Cases*, ABC News Staff, ABC News, 8 May 2013

[679] *Nancy Pelosi: Gay “Marriage” Is “Consistent” With Catholic Teaching*, Fr. Mark Hodges, LifeSiteNews, 2 June 2015

[680] *Pelosi, Biden To Visit New Pope*, TobyToons (now defunct “Conservative” pundit and cartoonist), RedState.com, 19 March 2013

[681] *How St. Agnes Church Became The First Jesuit Parish In America To Declare Itself A Sanctuary*, Kaya Oakes, America Magazine, 3 April 2017 issue, 7 March 2017

[682] *Illuminati Unmasked*, Johnny Cirucci, CreateSpace (2015), pp. 532-533

[683] *Illuminati Unmasked*, Johnny Cirucci, CreateSpace (2015), pp. 529-542

[684] *How St. Agnes Church Became The First Jesuit Parish*, America Magazine

[685] *Kevin Collins' Family Unsatisfied With New Case Details*, Vic Lee and Leslie Brinkley, ABC7 News, 6 February 2013

[686] *SF Police Commission Makes History*, Margie Shafer, KCBS 740AM, 10 May 2007, originally *posted here*, subsequently *archived here*

[687] *Allegations Of Child Abuse Studied At West Pt. Center*, Robert D. McFadden, *New York Times*, 24 September 1984

[688] *ibid*

[689] *A Legacy of Pain: Settlement Doesn't Ease Abused Children's Fears*, Douglas Cunningham and Alan Snel, *The Times Herald Record*, 11 June 1991, archived here

[690] *ibid*

[691] *Illuminati Unmasked*, Johnny Cirucci, CreateSpace (2015), pp. 471-475

[692] *A Legacy of Pain*, *The Times Herald Record*, archived here

[693] *Illuminati Unmasked*, Johnny Cirucci, CreateSpace (2015), pp. 329-330, 481-482, 510

[694] *A Legacy of Pain*, *The Times Herald Record*, archived here

[695] *Giuliani's Loyalty to an Accused Priest*, Alex Koppelman and Joe Strupp, Salon, 22 June 2007

[696] *ibid*

[697] *ibid*

[698] *ibid*

[699] *ibid*

[700] *ibid*

[701] *ibid*

[702] *ibid*

[703] *Sex Abuse Victims' Groups Outraged By Vatican Decision to Clear Accused Priest*, Avni Patel, ABC News, 7 December 2009

[704] *Illuminati Unmasked*, Johnny Cirucci, CreateSpace (2015), p. 511

[705] *Day-care sex-abuse hysteria*, *Wikipedia*

[706] *Two Army Families who Claim their Children were Sexually...*, Ellan Cates, UPI, 24 October 1984
This isn't even a real fucking headline! Clearly an unthinkable crime of this nature wasn't important to UPI — the blurb was barely a few paragraphs long.

[707] *A Legacy of Pain*, *The Times Herald Record*, archived here

[708] *Donald Trump: secret Jesuit agent for Commander-in-Chief? Original Research (self.RomeRules)*, submitted [2016] * by Veritas__Aequitas, Reddit
I know our pal "Veritas". He tried to convince me that Jesuit priest Eric Jon Phelps was a good guy which forced me to throw the bullshit flag and disconnect from our phone conversations. But we appreciate this insider tip!

[709] *Notable people; University of Pennsylvania*, *Wikipedia*

[710] *Peter Lynch*, *Wikipedia*
The great investment banker Peter Lynch has a Lick-My-Pedia entry but not Michael Aquino...

[711] *University of Pennsylvania Almanac*, Volume 62 Number 9, 13 October 2015

[712] *About The Lynch Foundation*, Founder's Corner

[713] *A Legacy of Pain*, *The Times Herald Record*, archived here

[714] *Samantha Brown, Season 1, Episode 27, Brussels, Belgium*, the Travel Channel

[715] *Belgium*, *Wikipedia*

[716] *Marc DUTROUX*, Murderpedia

[717] *Dutroux Honed Methods In Rape And Torture Spree, Court Is Told*, Ambrose Evans-Pritchard, *The Telegraph*, 09 March 2004

[718] *Profile: Marc Dutroux*, unattributed, BBC, 17 June, 2004

[719] *Melchior Wathelet*, *Wikipedia*

[720] *Dutroux Honed Methods In Rape And Torture Spree*, *The Telegraph*

[721] *Belgium's Silent Heart Of Darkness*, Olenka Frenkiel, The Observer, 5 May 2002, reposted here by *The Guardian*

[722] *ibid*

[723] *Beyond The Dutroux Affair: The Reality Of Protected Child Abuse And Snuff Networks*, Joël van der Reijden, Institute for the Study of Globalization and Covert Politics, 25 July 2007

[724] *ibid*

[725] *Accusation; Investigation; Elizabeth Báthory*, *Wikipedia*

[726] *Arrest; Investigation; Elizabeth Báthory*, *Wikipedia*

[727] *Trial; Elizabeth Báthory*, *Wikipedia*

[728] *Beyond The Dutroux Affair*, van der Reijden

[729] *ibid*

[730] *Dutroux Case and X-Dossier Victim-Witnesses*, this is apparently part of van der Reijden's report but taken down. Thankfully, it has been archived at "Whale.to" — an excellent site for such information. It is undated.

[731] *ibid*

[732] *An Unlikely Hero for Neoconservative Times*, Simon Houpt, The Globe and Mail, 13 November 2004
What hedonistic Catholic Commietard pap!

[733] *ibid*

[734] *Catholic Campuses Promote Infamous "Sexologist"*, jjarrard, Human Events, 11 March 2004
"jjarrard" appears to be Dr. Dennis Jarrard, a California college professor and friend of Jewess Judith Reisman...what a shock. — And you thought "Human Events" was a secular, Conservitard media outlet.

[735] *The Father Who Must Sit And Listen To How His Daughter Was Snatched, Raped Then Buried Alive*, unattributed, *Telegraph*, 20 March 2004

[736] *Dutroux Not Working Alone, Jury Told*, unattributed, Expatica News, 2 March 2004

[737] *I Was A Small Cog In A Sex-Slave Ring, But I Am No Murderer, Claims Dutroux*, Ambrose Evans-Pritchard, *Telegraph*, 04 March 2004

[738] *Dutroux Case and X-Dossier Victim-Witnesses*, van der Reijden

[739] *Dutroux Says Police Helped Him Kidnap Girls*, unattributed, Expatica News, 3 March 2004

[740] *Belgium's Silent Heart Of Darkness*, Olenka Frenkiel, The Observer, 5 May 2002, reposted here by *The Guardian*

[741] *Video: Police PepperSpray Protesters In Anti-Pedophile Demo In Belgium*, RT, YouTube, 2 September 2012

[742] *Dutroux Case and X-Dossier Victim-Witnesses*, van der Reijden

[743] *ibid*

[744] *Cardinal Danneels Questioned Today in Connection with Abuse Cover-ups*, Hilary White, LifeSiteNews, 6 July 2010

[745] *Fury As Ex-Wife Of Belgian Paedophile Killer Marc Dutroux Is Paroled To Convent*, Bruno Waterfield, *The Telegraph*, 31 July 2012

[746] *Victims "Saw Dutroux As Saviour"*, unattributed, BBC, 4 March 2004

[747] *Msgr. Robert P. Hupp, 88, Reformer of Boys Town, Dies*, Douglas Martin, The New York *Times*, 7 September 2003

[748] *Metro-Goldwyn-Mayer*, *Wikipedia*

[749] *Boys Town (film)*, *Wikipedia*

[750] *The Catholic Church*, Encyclopaedia Judaica, Jewish Virtual Library

[751] This is from an interview with the now-defunct (aren't they all?) alternative media outlet "Free Range Humans") in 2007. They still maintain a YouTube channel where this interview can be seen; *John DeCamp 2007 FULL*, free range humans, YouTube, 16 August 2016

[752] *William Colby "The Warrior Priest"*, unattributed, PBS, 30 April 1996

[753] *John DeCamp 2007 FULL*, free range humans, YouTube, 16 August 2016

[754] *Conspiracy of Silence*, Yorkshire Television (1994), Writer, Director, Producer unknown. It can be found at my YouTube channel (for as long as it stays up) under the title *Conspiracy of Silence, Yorkshire Television (1994)*.

[755] *The Alex Jones Show*, 21 July 2004, an interview with Bill Hicks, himself, the CIA's clown prince of tinfoil. It is currently posted under the following criteria: *#PizzaGate John DeCamp on "The Franklin Cover-up." July 21 2004*, Ultra Deplorable, YouTube, 5 December 2016

[756] *John DeCamp 2007 FULL*, free range humans, YouTube, 16 August 2016

[757] *FBI Killed Franklin Scandal Investigator And His Son*, Wayne Madsen, Wayne Madsen Report, 23 June 2014, archived here by Jeff "The Hair", "It's the Jews!!!" Rense.
It's amazing what you can find when you pick through the ravings of a malcontent homosexual Catholic Commietard.

[758] *Former Boys Town Leader Hupp, 88, Dies*, unattributed, The Las Vegas Sun, 30 August 2003, archived here

[759] *Homosexual Prostitution Inquiry Ensnares VIPs With Reagan, Bush*, Paul M Rodriguez and George Archibald, *The Washington Times*, 29 June 29, 1989, for some strange reason the *Times* hasn't kept this on the internet but I was able to find it archived here.

[760] *ibid*

[761] *Power Broker Served Drugs, Sex At Parties Bugged For Blackmail*, Michael Hedges and Jerry Seper, *The Washington Times*, 30 June 1989, archived here

[762] *Satanism and Perversion in the U.S. Military ~ The Kay Griggs Interviews-1998-Full*, Ashwaq, YouTube, 13 June 2015
Kay gave this fascinating interview with Jeff "The Hair", "IT'S THE JEWS!!!" Rense — which is why the words "Catholic" or "Jesuit" are never mentioned. She called Opus Dei a "business group" but she sure did blame the Jews which is what the Hair wanted to hear.

[763] *Al Gray, Marine: The Early Years, 1950–1967, Vol. 1*, unattributed, Marine Corps Association, undated
Proof that Al Gray spent his life without ever getting married or having kids just like Trump's Secretary of Defense USMC General James "Warrior Monk" Mattis.

[764] *Power Broker Served Drugs, The Washington Times*, archived here

[765] *ibid*

[766] *ibid*

[767] *Former Omaha World-Herald Publisher Harold Andersen Dies*, The Associated Press, The Journal Star, 18 December 2015

[768] *Caradori Debrief Owen*, Johnny_Cirucci, Scribd, 9 August 2017

[769] *Alisha Owen and Her Involvement with John DeCamp*, David Shurter, DavidShurter.com, 5 December 2012

[770] *State v. Owen*, Justia.com

[771] *Power Broker Served Drugs, The Washington Times*, archived here

[772] *ibid*

[773] *ibid*

[774] *ibid*

[775] *Lobbyist Is Arrested In New York*, unattributed, *NY Times*, 10 August 1989

[776] *Lobbyist Linked to Sex Case Is Found Dead*, AP, *NY Times*/AP, 12 November 1989

[777] *Autopsy, Branch, Steven Edward*, Medical Examiner William Q. Sturner, M.D., Associate Medical Examiner Frank J. Peretti, M.D., Arkansas State Crime Laboratory, 7 May 1993

[778] *ibid*

[779] *ibid*

[780] *John Douglas*, Criminal Minds Wiki
I originally wanted to make a smart-ass comment like "Perhaps the boys owed money" but what happened to them is no laughing matter.

[781] *Misskelley's trial; Trials; West Memphis Three*, *Wikipedia*

[782] *In Search Of Evil*, Mark Caro, Chicago Tribune, 2 October 1996, page 1, page 2, page 3

[783] *The Strange Demise Of Melissa Byers*, Mara Leveritt, The Arkansas *Times*, 26 December 1997

[784] *ibid*

[785] *Damien Wayne Echols*, Martin David Hill, Jivepuppi.com, undated
This appears to be more than just a personal blog as Hill has written screenplays for Helliwood.

[786] *Freed Death-Row Inmate Looks For New Beginning*, Natalie DiBlasio, USA Today, 7 May 2013

[787] *Damien Wayne Echols*, Hill

[788] *Of The Power And Primacy Of The Pope*, para 39, *Concordia*, Jakob Andreae and Martin Chemnitz, 1537

[789] *"Exorcist" Author William Peter Blatty Dead At 89*, unattributed, AP, posted at TownHall, 13 January 2017

[790] *"Exorcist" Author William Blatty Has Died, But His Georgetown Reform Campaign Continues*, Kathy Schiffer, National Catholic Register, 14 January 2017

[791] *Early life; William Peter Blatty*, Wikipedia

[792] *The lunch between a Jesuit and William Peter Blatty that led to a role in "The Exorcist"*, William J. O'Malley, America magazine, 13 January 2017

[793] *Damien Echols: Death Row Interview*, CNN Larry King Live, 19 December 2007

[794] *Pearl Jam: "People Get That This Means Something"*, Dave Simpson, *The Guardian*, 13 August 2009

[795] *"Shocking" Scale Of Catholic Church Sex Crimes Revealed*, Andrew Thomas, Al Jazeera, 6 February 2017

[796]

[797] *Jesuit Priest Jailed Over Child Porn*, Verity Edwards, The Australian, 21 March 2015

[798] *"I Don't Believe In God," Says Australia's First Female PM*, unattributed, *Daily Mail*, 30 June 2010

[799] *Background article by a Broken Rites researcher*, unattributed, Broken Rites Australia, 10 March 2017

[800] *ibid*

[801] *ibid*

[802] *ibid*

[803] *ibid*

[804] *ibid*

[805] *ibid*

[806] *ibid*

[807] Statement to the Royal Commission by David Ridsdale, 15 May 2015, archived here by Bishop Accountability.org

[808] *Background article*, Broken Rites Australia

[809] *ibid*

[810] *Cardinal To Harvard Students: You Need To Be Courageous*, Elise Harris, Catholic News Agency, 16 March 2017

[811] *A Church Report Contains Allegations About George Pell Abusing An Altar Boy In 1961-62*, unattributed, Broken Rites Australia, undated

[812] *ibid*

[813] *George Pell Versus Anthony And Chrissie Foster: Some Background*, unattributed, Broken Rites Australia, undated

[814] *ibid*

[815] *ibid*

[816] *ibid*

[817] *ibid*

[818] *ibid*

[819] *ibid*

[820] *ibid*

[821] *ibid*

[822] *ibid*

[823] *ibid*

[824] *ibid*

[825] *The Family Trap: How The Royal Commission Is Missing Many Abuse Cases*, Background Briefing, Australian Broadcasting Corporation, 11 August 2013
This smoke & mirrors, of course, doesn't touch how parents submit their children to *systemic* abuse by the Pedocracy.

[826] *George Pell Versus Anthony And Chrissie Foster*, Broken Rites Australia

[827] *Hell on the Way to Heaven*, "Chrissie" Foster and Paul Kennedy, Penguin Random House (2010)
The quote is taken from the Amazon description, found here.
In the three books I've written so far, I've found out just how hard it is to get a big publisher involved unless the Pedocracy *wants* them involved.

[828] *Anthony Foster State Funeral: Child Sex Abuse Victim Advocate Remembered For "Extraordinary Courage"*, unattributed, Associated Press, 6 June 2017, published by *The Guardian*, here.

[829] *Expert: "Priests Believe Child Abuse Forgivable"*, Tory Shepherd, News.Com.Au, 14 November 14, 2012, 1:29PM

[830] *ibid*

[831] *ibid*

[832] *Political Elite Were Part Of Paedophile Ring, Alleged Victim Fiona Barnett Claims*, Rachel Browne, The Sydney Morning Herald, 23 October 2015

[833] *Ian Kirkwood: Franca Arena Was Right On The Mark*, Ian Kirkwood, The Newcastle Herald, 30 October 2015

[834] *Expert: "Priests Believe Child Abuse Forgivable"*, News.Com.Au

[835] *Trance Formation of America, Chapter 4: The Most Dangerous Game*, Cathy O'Brien and Mark Phillips, Reality Marketing (1995)

[836] *Hang on for the ride! Part 1*, Fiona Barnett, Facebook, 29 November 2015
Titles of these posts are, at best, odd and, at worst, perverse, implying a positive aspect to what is clearly Satanic.
Barnett also posts pictures of her own family complete with a pretty, teenage daughter, on blogs related to her pedophile victim past. This, too, is at best inappropriate.

[837] *Fiona Barnett*, #PizzaGate Wiki

[838] *Hang on for the ride! Part 2*, Fiona Barnett, Facebook, 29 November 2015

[839] *CIA connection; Personality Assessment System*, *Wikipedia*

[840] *The Search for the "Manchurian Candidate": The CIA and Mind Control: The Secret History of the Behavioral Sciences*, John D. Marks, *Times* Books (1979), p. 144

[841] *ibid*

[842] *ibid*

[843] *CIA Official Sidney Gottlieb, 80, Dies*, Bart Barnes, *Washington Post*, 11 March 1999

[844] *Sidney Gottlieb, 80, Dies; Took LSD to C.I.A.*, Tim Weiner, The New York *Times*, 10 March 1999

[845] *ibid*

[846] *ibid*

[847] *ibid*

[848] *"I'm Just An Ordinary Man": Father Paul Coleman Spends Five Decades Helping People*, Rosie King and Mosman Daily, Daily *Telegraph*, 21 June 2015

[849] *Keith Urban's Secret To Staying Sober: Love*, unattributed, CeleBuzz, 18 February 2013

[850] *Nicole Kidman's Father Killed After "Fall" In Singapore*, Jess Wilson, Mirror, 12 September 2014

[851] Dr. Antony Kidman: Nicole Kidman's Father's Legacy Of Nurture, Dr. Rachael Murrihy, Sunday Morning Herald, 19 September 2014
Two things, 1) do you think there is a Jesuit or three in the wood pile of "***Doctor***" Murrihy and 2) there's no way anyone could be close to this cockroach and neither know nor be involved in his crimes.

[852] *Hang on for the ride! Part 6*, Fiona Barnett, Facebook, 29 November 2015

[853] *Fiona Barnett Witnessed Child Abuse And Murder Involving 3 Former Australian Prime Ministers!*, The Richie Allen Show, YouTube, 28 October 2015
What a fuhkin' clown this guy is — the "atheist Irishman" who's so far up David "I am the Son of God" Icke's ass if he stopped short "Richie" would fly out of his mouth.

[854] *Hang on for the ride! Part 7*, Fiona Barnett, Facebook, 29 November 2015

[855] *George Pell Versus Anthony And Chrissie Foster*, Broken Rites Australia

[856] *A Case of Ritual Abuse and its Meaning for Society*, James Shanahan, Pedophiles Down Under, 15 February 2015

[857] *ibid*

[858] *ibid*

[859] *ibid*

[860] *Trace: Maria James' Family Calls For "Psychopath" Second Priest To Be Investigated Over Murder*, Rachael Brown, Australian Broadcasting Corporation, 9 July 2017

[861] *Third Catholic Church Linked To Paedophile Priest Burns In Suspected Arson Attack*, Nino Bucci and Marissa Calligeros, The Age, 1 April 2015

[862] *Polly's Story*, unattributed, The Polly Klaas Foundation, undated

[863] *Background; Murder of Polly Klaas*, *Wikipedia*

[864] *Klaas Family Tells Jury of Pain Over Murder*, Mary Curtius, LA *Times*, 04 July 1996
Don't think for a minute that the posting of a story about a kidnapped child, raped and beheaded for Satan, being printed on the 4th of July was a fucking "coincidence".

[865] *No Surrender*, Curtis Rist and Laird Harrison, People, 19 August 1996

[866] *Odyssey of Violence*, Thomas Fields-Meyer, Laird Harrison and Gabrielle Saveri, People, 13 May 1996

[867] *ibid*

[868] *20 Years After Polly Klaas Killing, Attitudes Change*, Kevin Fagan, San Francisco Chronicle, 2 October 2013

[869] *Graphic Testimony in Klaas Trial Forces Family Out of Court*, unattributed, Associated Press, published by the Los Angeles *Times*, 07 May 1996

[870] *Odyssey of Violence*, People

[871] *Judge Sentenced to 28 Years in Prison for "Selling" Kids to Private Prisons*, Noel Brinkerhoff, David Wallechinsky, AllGov, 14 August 2011

[872] *Biography; Mark Ciavarella*, *Wikipedia*

[873] *20 Years After Polly Klaas Killing, Attitudes Change*, Kevin Fagan, San Francisco Chronicle, 2 October 2013

[874] *ibid*

[875] *ibid*

[876] *Lone Justice*, Daniel M. Weintraub, Los Angeles *Times*, 14, February 1995, page 1, page 2, page 3, page 4
Four pages worth. The propaganda pedos really laid it on thick.
The subheading of this tripe written by "Mr. Weintraub" at the Slimes is just as vomitus: *The abduction of Polly Klaas gripped the nation and prompted her father to wage war on anyone who would harm a child. But Marc Klaas has paid a steep price for his lonely crusade.*

[877] *An Angel Named Polly*, Elizabeth Gleick, Maria Eftimiades, People, 28 November 1994

[878] *ibid*

[879] *PAGE ONE — Klaas Family, Jury Share Their Tears / Prosecution Rests After Testimony in Penalty Phase*, Ken Hoover, San Francisco Chronicle, 4 July 1996

[880] *With Song and Poetry, a Farewell to a Kidnapped Girl Named Polly*, unattributed, The New York *Times*, 11 December 1993

[881] *Illuminati Unmasked*, Johnny Cirucci, CreateSpace (2015), pp. 552-553, 555

[882] *John of Nepomuk*, *Wikipedia*

[883] *Early years (1919–1969); Life; David Berg*, *Wikipedia*

[884] *The Children of God and The Family in Italy*, unattributed, CESNUR: *Centro Studi sulle Nuove Religioni* (Center for studies on New Religions), undated

[885] *ibid*

[886] *ibid*

[887] *ibid*

[888] *By The Numbers: Pope Francis' General Audiences*, Rome Reports, YouTube, 27 August 2015

[889] *The Children of God and The Family in Italy*, CESNUR

[890] *Enslaved By The Cult Of Sex...For 25 Years*, Celeste Jones, *Daily Mail*, 13 July 2007

[891] *ibid*

[892] *ibid*

[893] *ibid*

[894] *ibid*

[895] *Children Of God Sex Cult Survivors Come Out Of The Shadows*, Simon Gardner, CBC News, Canadian Broadcasting Corporation,: 13 March 2016

[896] *ibid*

[897] *ibid*

[898] *ibid*

[899] *My Life In The Cult*, Mary Mahoney, Salon, 25 October 2015

[900] *ibid*

[901] *ibid*

[902] *ibid*

[903] *Early life; Rose McGowan*, From *Wikipedia*

[904] *ibid*

[905] *Rose McGowan: How She Survived and Escaped a Cult*, Blaine Zuckerman, People, 25 August 2011
My column will be "How I survived the endless parade of propaganda from Papal Court Jews."

[906] *Early life and education; Personal life; Marilyn Manson*, *Wikipedia*

[907] *Rose McGowan » Quotes*, FamousFix.com

[908] *Fury Over Actress's IRA Comments*, unattributed, BBC, 11 September 2008
Really with this publishing date?

[909] *Film and television; Career; Marilyn Manson*, *Wikipedia*

[910] *River's End*, Shellley Levitt, Lorenzo Benet, Lyndon Stambler, Johnny Dodd and Joanna Stone, People, 15 November 1993

[911] *That Night at the Viper Room*, Gavin Edwards, Vanity Fair, 17 October 2013

[912] *Disappearance of Madeleine McCann*, *Wikipedia*
The Roman pedo fucks really laid it on thick in this entry, boy.

[913] *Madeleine McCann FOUND? English-Speaking Girl Called "Maria" Discovered in Rome*, Laura Mowat, The Sunday Express, 22 November 2016

[914] *Blonde "Homeless" Woman Found In Rome Claimed To Be Maddie McCann Is Swedish Woman With Asperger's Says Her Dad*, Patrick Lion, Mirror, 22 November 2016
OK, if this girl has Asperger's, what the fuck is she doing traveling from Sweden to Italy by herself (and why the fuck would her father allow it)???

[915] *Portuguese Prosecutor Asks to Seize "Mystery Object" in Madeleine McCann Probe*, unattributed, Fox News, 13 September 2007

[916] *Madeleine McCann: Police Search Church*, Fiona Govan, *Telegraph*, 19 November 2007

[917] *Strip Sir Spiv Of Knighthood*, Steve Hawkes and Amy Morris, The Sun, 20 October 2016
Fucking pervert closet-Catholic Limey media...you should see the full fucking frontal nudity on the side of this fucking rag.

[918] *Madeleine's Parents Invited to Vatican for Private Meeting with Pope*, Thair Shaikh, *The Guardian*, 28 May 2007

[919] *"The Royal Arch" Sociopaths Who Rule Britain (Part One)*, "Red Ox", Henry Makow.com, 6 October 2012
Henry Makow is the epitome of a cockroach Court Jew. His site is so loaded with anti-Semitic bullshit you eventually expect to hear "Seig Heil!" when you click a link. But it wouldn't stick unless there was a grain of truth.

[920] *13-Processos Volume XIII, Pages 3909-3915*, Translations by Ines, McCann PJ Files

[921] *Paedo Clement Freud Owned A Villa In The Same Resort As McCanns When Madeleine Vanished*, Jack Fenwick, The Sunday Express, 15 June 2016

[922] *Kate and Gerry McCann Lose Maddie Libel Appeal In Supreme Court Over Goncalo Amaral's Book **The Truth in the Lies***, Gerard Couzens, The Sun, published by News.Com.Au, 1 February 2017

[923] *Goncalo Amaral at the Order of Malta Charity Gala*, anotheroneforjustice, YouTube, 21 September 2008

[924] *McCanns Deny Reports That Gerry Is Not Madeleine's Father*, Aislinn Simpson, *Telegraph*, 10 October 2007

[925] *Nisour Square massacre*, *Wikipedia*

[926] *Profile: Blackwater's Erik Prince*, Evan Thomas, Newsweek, 13 October 2007

[927] *Erik Prince, Executive Director and Chairman*, Frontier Services Group

[928] *Making a Killing*, Jeremy Scahill, The Nation, 27 September 2007
This is Jesuit-mentored cockroach who calls Prince an "Evangelical" so, once again, they control both sides.

[929] *Before Shooting in Iraq, a Warning on Blackwater*, James Risen, *New York Times*, 29 June 2014

[930] *ibid*

[931] *Blackwater Attempted to Bribe Iraqi Officials*, Jeremy Scahill, The Nation, 10 November 2009
How the fuck is this "attempted" when it actually happened? Scahill you little Jesuit-trained scab.

[932] *The Bush Administration's Ties to Blackwater*, Ben Van Heuvelen, Salon, 2 October 2007

[933] *Making a Killing*, Jeremy Scahill, The Nation, 27 September 2007

[934] *Justice Elusive for Iraqis*, Tina Susman, Los Angeles *Times*, 16 October 2007

[935] *Who Are the Knights of Malta — and What Do They Want?* Joshua E. Keating, Foreign Policy, 19 January 2011

[936] *Afghan Rules Need Changes*, Rowan Scarborough, Human Events, 30 June 2010
Rowan Scarborough...another controlled opposition cockroach.

[937] *How Our Overly Restrictive Rules of Engagement Keep Us from Winning Wars*, David French, National Review magazine, 21 December 2015

[938] *Before Shooting in Iraq*, *New York Times*

[939] *Making a Killing*, The Nation

[940] *Profile: Blackwater's Erik Prince*, Evan Thomas, Newsweek, 13 October 2007

[941] *Spurgeon's Sword and Trowel*, Metropolitan Tabernacle, London

[942] *Jeremy Scahill Remembers His Longtime Friend, Father Daniel Berrigan: “The Man was a Moral Giant”*, Amy Goodman, Democracy Now! 3 May 2016

[943] *Erik Prince*, Celebrity Net Worth, retrieved 13 June 2017

[944] *The Jesuit Oath Exposed*, European Institute of Protestant Studies, 5 April 2000

[945] *The Bush Administration’s Ties to Blackwater*, Ben Van Heuvelen, Salon, 2 October 2007

[946] *How Disbanding the Iraqi Army Fueled ISIS*, Mark Thompson, Time, 28 May 2015

[947] *The Bush Administration’s Ties to Blackwater*, Salon

[948] *Biography; Joseph E. Schmitz*, Wikipedia

[949] *Biography; Joseph E. Schmitz*, *Wikipedia*

[950] *Blackwater Catholic Connections*, unattributed [I believe Craig Oxley maintains this site], Spiritually Smart, undated

[951] *Bush Scandals List: 262. Joseph Schmitz (partisan former DOD IG)*, “selise”, Hugh Makes A List (of Bush Scandals), undated

[952] *Opus Dei: The Vatican-Pentagon Connection*, Frank Morales, Bill Weinberg’s CounterVortex, undated
Although Frank pulls a Voltaire and lumps pseudo-“Protestant” puppets in with these Roman Knights this is an outstanding piece.

[953] *Malta “is Blackwater”s Operational Base” – MEP Report*, unattributed, Malta Independent, 14 October 2007
Kinda mislead you there. This is still a real journalist site but I didn’t want to disclose that it’s the *Malta* Independent because I’m going to spring the Malta connection on you shortly.

[954] *The Bush Administration’s Ties to Blackwater*, Salon

[955] *Early life and education; Cofer Black*, *Wikipedia*

[956] *The Catholic Church and the Holocaust, 1930–1965*, John Michael Phayer, Indiana University Press (2000), p. xiii

[957] *Heinrich Himmler*, unattributed, One-Evil, undated
Taken down...shocker! Archived by Johnny here.

[958] *Cain’s Creed*, Omar Zaid, A.S. Noordeen (2012), p. 130

[959] *The 15 Most Powerful Members Of “Skull And Bones”*, Thornton McEnery, Business Insider, 20 February 2011

[960] *Billy Graham and Rome*, Chris Pinto, Adullam Films, undated

[961] *Knights of Malta*, WikiSpooks

[962] *Malta "is Blackwater's Operational Base" – MEP Report*, unattributed, Malta Independent, 14 October 2007

[963] *Echo Papa Exposed: Inside Erik Prince's Treacherous Drive to Build a Private Air Force*, Jeremy Scahill and Matthew Cole, The Intercept, 11 April 2016

[964] *Italy/Libya: Gaddafi Visit Celebrates Dirty Deal*, unattributed, Human Rights Watch, 9 June 2009

[965] *Blood and Human Trafficking in the Dustbowl of Libya*, Dan Stewart, Time, 17 September 2015

[966] *ibid*

[967] *ibid*

[968] *Drug and Human Trafficking in "Lawless" Libya is Funding ISIS*, Erin Banco, *International Business Times*, 16 July 2015

[969] *U.S. Soldiers Told to Ignore Sexual Abuse of Boys by Afghan Allies*, Joseph Goldstein, *NY Times*, 20 September 2015

[970] *ibid*

[971] *ibid*

[972] *Leader Of Missionaries Charged In Haiti Has Troubled History*, Katy Moeller, McClatchy, 4 February 2010

[973] *Haitian Judge Recommends Release of 10 U.S. Missionaries*, unattributed, Associated Press, published by Fox News, 12 February 2010

[974] *NEW LIFE CHILDREN'S REFUGE - HAITIAN ORPHAN RESCUE MISSION*, Hillary Clinton Email Archive, WikiLeaks

[975] *Haiti Judge: Silsby Deceived Fellow Missionaries*, Frank Bajak, Associated Press, published by The San Diego Union-Tribune, 27 April 2010

[976] *U.S. Missionary Convicted In Haiti, But Free*, unattributed, USA Today, 17 May 2010

[977] *Clinton Brokers Deal Over Haiti Orphan Abductions*, Tony Allen-Mills, The Sunday *Times*, 7 February 2010

Want journalists to finally do their fucking jobs? Ya gotta ***pay*** for it.

[978] *U.S. Works to Expedite Adoptions of Haitian Children*, unattributed, CNN, 18 January 2010

[979] *Adviser To Missionaries In Haiti Kidnap Case Is Arrested*, CNN Wire Staff, CNN, 19 March 2010

[980] *Haiti Officials Shut Down Orphanage Founded by U.S. Man*, David McFadden, Associated Press, published by The San Diego Union-Tribune, 5 November 2015

[981] *Local Board Members React to Haiti Nonprofit CEO Defamation Case*, Laura Kebede, Richmond Times-Dispatch, 5 August 2015

[982] *Judge Dismisses Defamation Case, $14.5 Million Verdict Against Freeport Man*, Scott Dolan, Portland Press Herald, 20 June 2016

[983] *Allegations Against Family Court Of Australia Say Children "Handed To Sexual Predators"*, Michael Madigan, The Courier-Mail, 18 January 2017

[984] *Horrible Child Abuse Blamed on Arizona Agencies*, Allie Weintraub, Courthouse News, 27 June 2017

[985] *American Boy, 13, Trapped In Israel Asks Donald Trump To Rescue Him*, Marianne Azizi, RedressOnline, 29 January 2017
This actually smells like a Jew-bashing Catholic PsyOp to me. Of note, neither the two children have complained of sexual abuse. But I didn't want anyone accusing me of being a diamond merchant (not that this one citation will stop the Nazi cockroaches).

[986] *Ex-Foster Kids: Abuse Was Routine In Home Of Teen Found Dismembered*, CrimeSider Staff AP, CBS/AP, 26 January 2017

[987] *The Corrupt Business of Child Protective Services*, Nancy Schaefer, Senator, 50th District, 16 November 2007, currently archived here

[988] *What Really Took 2 Lives in Schaefer Case?* Mark Davis, Atlanta Journal-Constitution, 4 April 2010, taken down but archived here

[989] *Attorneys: Sandusky's Adopted Son Says He's Also A Victim*, unattributed, CNN, 21 June 2012

[990] *Jerry Sandusky's Son Arrested, Charged With Child Sexual Abuse*, Mike Coppinger, USA Today, 13 February 2017

[991] *Documents: Joe Paterno Ignored Boy's Jerry Sandusky Complaint In 1976*, Associated Press, published by the Chicago Tribune, 12 July 2016

[992] *Joe Paterno FBI File Makes No Mention of Jerry Sandusky*, Nathan Fenno, *The Washington Times*, 29 August 2012

[993] *D.A. Missing, Declared Dead Who Likely Would Have Pursued Sandusky Prosecution*, Tony Rutherford, Huntington News, 11 November 2011

[994] *People, Alumni, About*, University of Dayton

[995] *"The Franklin Cover-Up" author talks about how he linked Sandusky and Penn State abuse scandal years ago*, Andrew W. Griffin, Red Dirt Report, 15 July 2012

[996] *PSU's Jerry Sandusky "Found His Victims" At Second Mile Group Home*, Timothy McNulty and Janice Crompton, Pittsburgh Post-Gazette, 6 November 2011, 12:00 AM

[997] *Report: Jerry Sandusky Investigated For Allegedly Pimping Boys To Rich Donors*, Jon Bershad, Mediaite, 10 November 2011

[998] *Report: Jerry Sandusky's Charity Official Raised Money For District Judge Who Set His Bail*, unattributed, The Patriot-News, 16 November 2011

[999] *Pa. Lawmaker Wants Investigation Of District Judge In Sandusky Case Over Possible Conflict*, PennLive staff and wire reports, PennLive, 15 November 2011

[1000] *District Judge Leslie Dutchcot Resigns*, Shawn Annarelli, Centre Daily, 09 November 2015

[1001] *Opus Dei Influence Rises to the Top in the Vatican*, Betty Clermont, Daily Kos, 06 April 2014

[1002] *ibid*

[1003] *ibid*

[1004] *Penn State Leaders Disregarded Victims, "Empowered" Sandusky, Review Finds*, Susan Candiotti, Josh Levs and David Ariosto, CNN, 12 July 2012

[1005] *Former Penn State President Graham Spanier, Ex-Athletic Director Tim Curley Still Draw Pay*, Charles Thompson, PennLive, 06 August 2012

[1006] *Early work and praise; The Second Mile*, *Wikipedia*

[1007] *Bush Names Local Group As "Daily Point Of Light"*, John Hirokawa, The Penn State Daily Collegian, 12 November 1990

[1008] *Santorum Sponsored Honor For Accused PSU Coach*, Thomas Fitzgerald, Philly.com, 9 November 2011

[1009] *An Opus Dei Priest With a Magnetic Touch*, Mark Oppenheimer, The New York Times, 12 June 2015
Wanna hazard a guess as to the derivation of Mr. Oppenheimer...?

[1010] *ibid*

[1011] *ibid*

[1012] *ibid*

[1013] *Trance Formation of America*, Cathy O’Brien and Mark Phillips, Reality Marketing (1995), Chapter 2: The Rite To Remain Silent

[1014] *Joe McCarthy’s Jesuit*, Mark Judge, American Spectator, 21 July 2005

[1015] *Kingpin Jesuit Edmund Walsh Puppetmaster for FDR, Stalin and Eisenhower*, Greg-Anthony-Szymanski, Greg Anthony’s Journal, 31 December 2010
Another Papal Court clown!!!

[1016] *USAID: A CIA Front ‘In Desperate Need of Adult Supervision’*, unattributed, 21st Century Wire, 5 September 2014

[1017] *Remembering alumnus and journalist James Foley*, Marquette University, 24 August 2015

[1018] *Senator Joe McCarthy: Audio Excerpts, 1950-1954*, Marquette University

[1019] *McCarthyism: The Rosetta Stone of Liberal Lies*, Ann Coulter, Ann Coulter.com, 7 November 2007

[1020] *John Vincent Coulter*, Ann Coulter, Human Events, 9 January 2008

[1021] *Connecticut Cold War Warrior: Senator Thomas J. Dodd*, Derek R. Lipman, Trent University, 2010

[1022] *“Gun Control’s” Nazi Connection*, Aaron Zelman and Richard Stevens, Jews for the Preservation of Firearms Ownership, May 1993

[1023] *Fannie, Freddie Fail Dodd-Frank Severe Stress Test*, Kelsey Ramírez, Housing Wire.com, 7 August 2017

[1024] *DODD, Christopher John*, Biographical Directory of the United States Congress

[1025] *Thomas Dodd, Senator’s Brother, To Get Nod As Ambassador*, Miranda S. Spivack, Hartford Courant, 4 May 1993

[1026] *Ms. Right: ANN COULTER*, John Cloud, Time, 17 April 2005

[1027] *Ann Coulter Named GOProud’s “Gay Icon”*, Asawin Suebsaeng, Mother Jones, 10 August 2011

[1028] *Madonna Shops A New Religion: Opus Dei?* Madeleine Joelson, Daily Caller, 18 April 2011

[1029] *NBC Won’t Show You Madonna On Cross*, James Edstrom, Times Square Gossip, 20 October 2006

[1030] *Madonna’s Pussy Is the Temple of Learning: Erotica at 20*, Rich Juzwiak, Gawker, 20 October 2012

Filed to: anniversaries

[1031] *The Second Coming, A Proud Slut and YouTube Stars*, Rich Juzwiak, Gawker, 19 September 2012

[1032] *Steve Bannon: Who is Donald Trump's chief strategist and why is he so feared?* Harriet Alexander and Charlotte Krol, *Telegraph*, 14 November 2016

[1033] *Trump's Controversial New Adviser Promoted Conservatism Even In The Navy*, Mark D. Faram , The Military *Times*, 20 August 2016
For some reason, anyone who mentions this doesn't state Hayward's name; either because he's forgettable or there's dirt there.

[1034] *Another Goldman Sachs Alum Joins Donald Trump's Campaign*, Dan Primack, Fortune, 17 August 2016

[1035] *How Hollywood Remembers Steve Bannon*, Connie Bruck, The New Yorker, 1 May 2017

[1036] *Steve Bannon Says Joining Goldman Sachs Is Like "Joining The Jesuits"*, Dan Wright, ShadowProof, 30 November 2016

[1037] *The Trump Family's Ties To Georgetown*, Noah Telerski, The Georgetown Voice, 13 March 2017

[1038] *Breitbart News Names Executives Who Will Run Company in Wake of Founder's Death*, Paul Bond, The Hollywood Reporter, 19 March 2012

[1039] *Breitbart News*, *Wikipedia*

[1040] *Now A Witness To Breitbart's Death Vanishes*, Jerome R. Corsi, WorldNetDaily, 07 May 2012

[1041] *This Is How Steve Bannon Sees The Entire World*, J. Lester Feder, BuzzFeed, 15 November 2016
The controlled Catholic media cockroaches put the ludicrous spin on Bannon's visit as "meeting with Bergoglio's enemies to help undermine him," — because they really do think you're that stupid.

[1042] *Compromised: Clinton, Bush and the CIA*, Terry Reed, S.P.I. Books (1994)
Reed is also a Vatican agent but even his info, carefully scrubbed of Roman fingerprints, is still shocking and important.

[1043] *Trance Formation of America*, Cathy O'Brien and Mark Phillips, Reality Marketing (1995), Chapter 14

[1044] *Can We Finally Call Hillary A Roman?* Johnny Cirucci, Johnny Cirucci.com, 25 July 2016
This is an extensive column with all the sources you'd need to follow this story. I'm down to the wire on the book and need the shortcut.

[1045] *ibid*

[1046] *ibid*

[1047] *ibid*

[1048] *The 50 Most Powerful People in Washington*, Reid Cherlin, Rob Fischer, Jason Zengerle and Jason Horowitz, GQ, undated

[1049] *Married, With Art: Tony and Heather Podesta Are a Study in Power Collecting*, Jessica Dawson, *The Washington Post*, 23 September 2004, page 1, page 2, page 3 (because these worms are worth a story this long)
"Power collecting"??? Could you put more fucking spin on these sick monsters?

[1050] *Hmmm....I wonder why? Could it be they have something to hide? Like what? (One may ask)*, Michael Flynn Jr, Twitter, 10 January 2017

[1051] *Comey: FBI Denied Repeated Requests To Access DNC Servers, Podesta's Device*, unattributed, Fox News, 10 January 2017

[1052] *Pence Pressed On Clearance For Flynn's Son*, The Lead with Jake Tapper, CNN, 6 December 2016

[1053] *Jennifer Tapper: Inspired by advocacy and social justice, a mom-of-two leads by example.* Kate Bennett, Washingtonian, 6 February 2015
So glad that a pedophile "power couple" is interested in "social justice" ... guess as long as there isn't an justice for the children they rape.
Oddly, I think that piece was taken down. If so, you might find it archived here.

[1054] *Alleged gunman tells police he wanted to rescue children at D.C. pizza shop after hearing fictional Internet accounts*, Peter Hermann, Susan Svrluga and Michael E. Miller, *Washington Post*, 5 December 2016

[1055] *Edgar Maddison Welch, Miscellaneous Crew | Actor | Writer*, IMDb

[1056] *Alleged "Pizzagate" Gunman"s Parents "Stunned" By News*, Harry and Terri Welch, *The Washington Post*, 13 December 2016

[1057] *Here's Yet Another Photo Of Donald Trump Being Creepy As Hell With His Daughter (IMAGES)*, James Warren, Gopocalypse, undated

[1058] *Ivanka Trump Takes An Official Job In The White House*, Christina Wilkie and Paige Lavender, Huffington Post, 29 March 2017
Really with that name? Only the fucking Huffington Post.

[1059] *Trump Taps Kushner To Lead A SWAT Team To Fix Government With Business Ideas*, Ashley Parker and Philip Rucker, *The Washington Post*, 26 March 2017

[1060] *White House Announces Jared Kushner Is Now Responsible For Everything*, Jason Linkins, Huffington Post, 27 March 2017

[1061] *Jared Kushner Helped Push Steve Bannon Out Of The NSC*, Christina Wilkie, Huffington Post, 06 April 2017

[1062] *Jeffrey Epstein: International Moneyman of Mystery*, Landon Thomas Jr., New York Magazine, 28 October 2002

[1063] *Here Is Pedophile Billionaire Jeffrey Epstein's Little Black Book*, Nick Bryant, Gawker, 23 January 15 03:45PM

[1064] *The "Sex Slave" Scandal that Exposed Pedophile Billionaire Jeffrey Epstein*, Maureen Callahan, The New York Post, 9 October 2016

[1065] *California Woman's Rape Lawsuit Against Donald Trump Resurfaces In New York Court*, Leonard Greene, New York Daily News, 20 June 2016
Ole' Lenny Greene called this law suit "bizarre"...think Lenny's a pedo?

[1066] *The "Sex Slave" Scandal that Exposed Pedophile Billionaire Jeffrey Epstein*, Maureen Callahan, The New York Post, 9 October 2016

[1067] *Lawsuit Seeks To Expose, Unravel Plea Deal For Billionaire Sex Offender*, Malia Zimmerman, Fox News, 18 July 2016

[1068] *Labor Nominee Acosta Cut Deal With Billionaire Guilty In Sex Abuse Case*, Marc Fisher, *The Washington Post*, 22 March 2017

[1069] *Trump's Labor Nominee Resigned From Catholic University's Board Over Racy Ads*, Andrew Kaczynski and Chris Massie, CNN Money, 10 February 2017

[1070] *Background; Alexander Acosta*, *Wikipedia*

[1071] *About; David Seaman*, YouTube
Proof that the Jesuit c_nt's at YouBoob fuck with "view counts"; this has dropped by *ten million* since I first wrote this column a year ago. How the fuck is that possible???

[1072] *ibid*

[1073] *David Seaman: #PizzaGate-Keeper and Pedophile Double Agent*, Joseph & Johnny, Johnny Cirucci.com, 28 February 2017

[1074] *David Seaman Terminated for Writing about Hillary's Health*, Rusty TV, YouTube, 29 August 2016

[1075] *Author; David Seaman*, Huffington Post

[1076] *Should I Invest In Gold or Silver?* Johnny Cirucci, Johnny Cirucci.com, 8 March 2015

[1077] *David Seaman - Author of Dirty Little Secrets of Buzz*, tvidie, YouTube, 29 October 2008

[1078] *David Seaman & BitGold; Goldmoney; Fixing the fractured financial system*, David Seaman, Goldmoney Community, August 2016

[1079] *Goldmoney Inc. (TSX: $XAU.TO) Reports Financial Results for the Year Ended March 31, 2017*, Investor Ideas.com

[1080] *How "House of Horror" Investigation Brought Jersey Abuse to Light*, Steven Morris, *The Guardian*, 3 July 2017
"Murder suspicions at Haut de la Garenne proved false alarm but led to exposure of abuse there and at other children's homes." —You Limey "paedophile" pieces of shit.

Svali Speaks Again

Healing from ritual abuse and mind control

Mizpah: Svali Speaks Again
About
Contact
Blog
Articles
Book Info

A Day in the Life of a Trainer 2

Several years ago, I wrote an article about a day in the life of a trainer in my American presentation. This article is about the day of a life in the cult host, where most of my life was spent, as a trainer overseeing facilities. I was in my cult host when doing these activities.

3:30 am: My beeper, one of four that I have (for various facilities, plus a country that I am military commander over) goes off. I am sleepy, having gone to bed just three hours before. But the work at a programming facility never ends, and the group I work for is not kind to its trainers – even the head trainer over the facility. I get up, take a quick shower, and put on my clothes and lab coat, grab a cup of coffee and start the day.

4:00 am: All of my trainers are gathered together to give a quick update on what is going on in the facility. These are bright, outstanding trainers, and their reports are quick and to the point. Any unusual changes in the children and infants are noted, and the goals for the day are quickly discussed. My beeper for another facility goes off, and I answer it. It is a crisis there; a child being trained attacked and nearly killed its trainer, and has been put in isolation; the trainers are asking what they should do. I tell them to wait until I get there later in the day, and in the meantime ask them to send the video records of the event for me to review right away.

4:30 am: the day starts with a ritual, with all the trainers participating together. The trainers range in age from mid-40's, to young training mentees of age four. Most children are taught how to program others starting at age three, and by four, will follow their programmers around, learning how to program others from them.

4:50 am: Facility rounds start with checking on the infants, to review their progress, their responses, and to address any difficulties (such as failure to thrive, unusual responses) that have come up. These genetically enhanced infants are extremely bright, and greet their trainers with coos of delight. This response has been repeatedly reinforced; any infant that turns away in anger from its trainers is brutally punished, and isolated/abandoned to extinguish this beh infants are rewarded for dissociation and their ability to smile, bond with, and attach to the people who torture them. Today is the day that this group of infants, who are all roughly the same age, will undergo training to enjoy sadomasochistic sex. The infants are roughly abused sexually, while at the same time tech stimulation of the pleasure centers of the brain is being done. The infants have already learned to open their legs for sexual activity on hand and voice command, and this is another step in their training. One infant refuses to open its legs on command, and is hung painfully upside down and whipped with a baby whip for this infraction.

5:45 am: By this time, I have reviewed the video of the issue at the other facility, seen where the trainer made an error working with the super theta (a child who has never been allowed outside the facility, has undergone horrific abuse and bonding, and has learned to channel its rage spiritually). The trainer pushed the child too hard, did not look for its cues of stress, and the child reacted predictably. I resolve to put the child with another trainer, and to discuss what went wrong with the trainers at the facility. I sigh. I wonder what caused the trainer to push so hard, and how I will deal with him at the meeting I will have privately later with him and his mentor at the facility. He is 17 years old, has been programming children for 14 years now, and should know better.

6:15 am: I have grabbed another cup of coffee and a brioche for breakfast, brought to me by one of my students. I have 24 students that I work with intensely, who are all top trainer potentials themselves. They vie with each other to see who can bring me coffee, or lab reports, or meals in order to spend extra time with me, since I am their primary trainer and the person they love most on earth. I make them take turns, since I don't like to play favorites. I feel a small trickle of dread in my stomach, and push it away. It is time to go check on the birth mothers in another level of the facility.

6:30 am: Rounds at the birth mother area are done, with all students and trainers involved in this area present. There are currently 15 birth mothers in private rooms. It is month seven of the prenatal training, and all of the birth mothers look inhuman, with heads and pubic areas shaved; their teeth all missing (pulled out during torture sessions); and missing arms and legs due to the slow removal of digits, then hands and feet, then lower limbs, and finally the cutting off of the entire limb. Because of the healing technology, the stumps have healed well, but the birth mothers have almost completely lost their humanity. They have just finished eating breakfast, a nutritious mush in a bowl, which they eat out of like dogs on the floor since they have no hands to eat with. The birth mothers alternately howl and whimper as we come and assess the fetuses; they have learned to associate the presence of lab coats and trainers with inhuman torture. The fetuses are growing well, and respond positively on the brain scans to hearing the voices of their primary trainers, who they are completely bonded to since the emotional "leaving" of their birth mothers after months of torture which was blamed on the fetus. The fetuses will undergo their celestial city programming today, with visits from actors who represent the main controllers within the city, and a visit from the occultic "messiah" who promises to give them peace, safety and joy as they obey him. Later, “hell” programming with birth mother torture in a simulated hell will be reinforced.

7 am: By now, I have had 12 calls from five facilities to solve problems and answer questions from head trainers at each, and will need to get ready for a meeting with several of the facility sub-directors to discuss a new programming sequence recently developed for two-year olds that will be implemented. The new sequence improves on the older version of the installation of elements as barriers: the new River Styx and water barrier sequences in the VRs will replace older ones, since they contain certain things the previous programs left out.

8:30 am I leave this facility, to go to one in another country. I will be meeting with the head trainers at the facility with the student who attacked a trainer, and deciding how to proceed.

12 noon: the previous issues are resolved, and I have reinforced the need to look for subtle signs and cues of stress in children who do not exhibit normal reactions due to their highly abnormal life to the trainers at Facility B (the supertheta training center). I also discuss the need for extra bonding time to prevent attacks like this. The trainers agree that the incident could have been prevented, and a new protocol is created and put into place for prevention. I am now on another flight to another facility where genetics research is being conducted. I eat a quick meal brought to me by one of the five advanced students (ranging in age from eight to 15) who accompany me. These are my top students, who I am mentoring, and they will one day become some of the top trainers in the world. I catch a quick nap, between emails and making several phone calls to resolve issues at the other four facilities that I oversee.

2 pm: My students and I make rounds with the head scientists and researchers at the genetics lab. On the way to rounds, I quiz these mentees on the main genetic markers we will be looking for in this new group of zygotes, and ask questions regarding how they would conduct the research if they were in charge. I am developing future leaders, and am truly interested in their responses, since they are often more intelligent than the current head scientists. They give the correct responses, and we review what will become G19 (Generation 19) genetic enhancements. The scientists have learned how to add exceptional coordination to enhanced muscle mass that is not obvious, since the muscles have a specific shape that appears normal, but is much stronger than ordinary. Enhanced healing abilities have also been added.

4 pm: I have reviewed lab reports and had Skype conferences with the facility sub-directors and trainers for all the facilities that I oversee. I am now flying to the cult facility school, where the children aged six to 12 go to daily classes. I am also the head over this school, and will be meeting with the teachers to review student progress. As I walk down the hall, I am greeted by numerous people, and eager children wave at me or smile as I walk by. The children are on an accelerated schedule, which includes physics at age 7, calculus, and the equivalent of a full medical degree by age 10, among other classes. Some of the classes include language skills (in all the major world languages), and mage classes in the afternoon. I go to my office at the school, and am greeted by a

head teacher who brings a “difficult” student who played pranks on the instructor for me to deal with. These children have extremely high IQs (far above 200, on average), and their greatest delight in life seems to be trying to outwit their trainers and instructors. Because creativity and problem-solving are encouraged, some of this is allowed; but I must discipline children who cross the line. This student hacked into the main computer of the school, getting past all the firewalls and security measures in place, and replaced a training video with a video in which all of the trainers involved were naked. I keep my smile to myself at the effort, intelligence and computer skills this prank took, and with a stern look on my face, order the student to go naked for the afternoon in front of their peers; a true humiliation. It is not okay for students to show insubordination to teachers.

6 pm: I have dinner in my private office with a friend for a few quiet moments alone – a rarity. I then go to evening vespers in the chapel, where the children sing beautiful praises to satan with voices that sound like the Vienna Boys Choir.

8 pm: After several classes on conducting rituals, and the routine evening sacrifices, I meet with the head of the cult intelligence unit and the second in command in the Assassin Corp. The two are having an argument, and ask me to mediate. The second in the Assassin Corp feels that the intelligence that they received from one of the Asian countries was unreliable based on the reports from one of the Corp members in that country. The head of intelligence argues back that his agents are completely reliable and fast, and have gathered sufficient intelligence for the Corp mission there. After hearing both sides, I and several others decide that the intelligence unit needs to spend more time gathering intel, because we do not want to compromise an agent in the field due to inadequate information. This is also based upon past experience with the Assassin corp second, who is very bright, perceptive and has good intuition regarding such matters. My top student, who will be training intelligence and assassin personnel like these in a couple of years, is present for the meeting in order to learn, but is not allowed to add her input. I do ask for it afterwards, and she gives remarkably perceptive answers.

9:30 pm: I must go to a ceremonial dinner at a major meeting between our group and several others. I will also be gathering intelligence for our group, so I am dressed in a designer gown, full makeup and put on my most charming aspect. Even as a facility director, I often must go on missions myself, especially those that are politically sensitive or that require specialized skills. The group I am in only allows the best to teach others, and so I must use these skills now.

1 am: I finally go to bed, for a couple of hours, knowing that my day will start in a few hours. After 20 minutes, my beeper goes off; I am being paged to handle another crisis in another part of the world.

Share this:

Twitter Facebook

Loading...

Create a free website or blog at WordPress.com.

A Nation Betrayed

The Chilling True Story of Secret Cold War Experiments Performed on Our Children and Other Innocent People

By

Carol Rutz

A Nation Betrayed

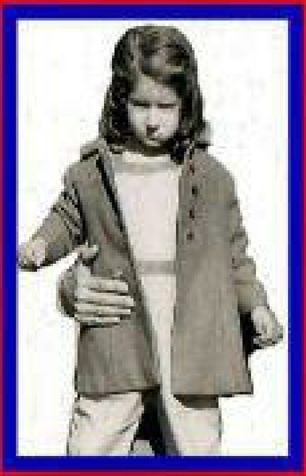

The Chilling True Story of Secret Cold War Experiments Performed on Our Children and Other Innocent People

By
Carol Rutz

A Nation Betrayed

A Nation Betrayed

Secret Cold War Experiments Performed on Our Children and Other Innocent People

Carol Rutz

Fidelity Publishing

Grass Lake, Michigan

Copyright © 2001 by Carol Rutz

All rights reserved. No portion of this book may be reproduced or transmitted in any form whatsoever, including electronic, mechanical, or any information storage retrieval system, except as may be expressly permitted in the 1976 Copyright Act or in writing from the publisher. Requests for permission should be addressed to:

Fidelity Publishing
P.O. Box 365
Grass Lake, MI 49240-0365

Rutz, Carol
A Nation Betrayed: Secret Cold War Experiments Performed on our Children and Other Innocent People
Library of Congress Control Number: 2001117739
Fidelity Publishing
Manufactured in the U.S.A.

Dedication

To Karen

#01182

Who died fighting

April 23, 1999

Acknowledgements

I would like to thank the many survivors who wish to remain nameless but who shared their very intimate experiences for this book. Your anonymity does not negate the existence of the horror that you endured. Katherine, I thank you for your courage in detailing the horrors you survived at the hands of Dr. Black. Only those of us who lived through the fear he instilled can really understand the bravery this took. I applaud those brave individuals who testified before the Advisory Committee on Human Radiation Experiments so that their government might be held accountable for the wrongs perpetrated against them in the name of science. I am very grateful to those people who shared books and resource information freely. It has helped make the reality of what occurred more believable. Jeff, the gift of the series of *Doctors of Death* books was most profoundly appreciated.

I would also like to thank my husband for the financial support he has given to keep this project going and his encouragement when I wanted to give up. His belief in the importance of bringing this tragic material before the public was what fortified me and gave me hope. I owe a debt of gratitude to my brother and sister, who gave their permission to use some of their own painful experiences so that my own experience might be better understood. I wish to express my gratitude to Dot and Arlene for their help in the difficult task of editing. I may not have followed all your suggestions, but I certainly learned to look at this body of work with a magnifying glass so that Historians might take it seriously. And finally, bless you Dr. Klein. With your help, I walked through a trail of tears and emerged on the other side a free person at last.

Table of Contents

Page 2 Preface

Part I Mind Control Experiments on Children

Page 10 Prologue
Page 11 Chapter One: The Spoils of War
Page 15 Chapter Two: A Star is Born
Page 29 Chapter Three: Home Sweet Home
Page 33 Chapter Four: Men Behind the Shadow Government
Page 37 Chapter Five: Training for the Agency
Page 66 Chapter Six: Dr. Black
Page 92 Conclusion
Page 93 MKULTRA Documents
Page 114 Part II Radiation, Biological and Chemical Experiments
Page 114 Radiation Experiments
Page 116 Human Research at the Bomb Tests
Page 118 Flashblindness Experiments
Page 120 Research On Protective Clothes
Page 121 Human Radiation Experiments
Page 128 Infants, Children and Pregnant Women
Page 131 The Iodine 131 Experiment in Alaska
Page 135 The Oregon and Washington Experiments
Page 138 The Green Run
Page 144 Other
Page 147 Biological and Chemical Experiments
Page 150 Sea Dumping of Chemical Weapons
Page 151 Human Testing
Page 152 The Incapacitant Program
Page 154 LSD Testing
Page 156 Biological Weapons and Testing
Page 159 Open Air Testing
Page 162 Army Contracts with Outside Agency's
Page 167 FOIA Sample Letter – Requests
Page 192 Appeal to Lawmakers by MKULTRA Targeted Individuals
Page 192 End Notes
Page 192 Index

BOOK I

Preface

This is the story of someone you know your neighbor, your classmate, your brother or sister, your mother or father. It is the secret they have been holding within their hearts, because they were afraid the American public could not believe their government would carry out human experimentation on children, in direct defiance of the Nuremberg Code, which has been “official” United States policy since 1946.

Some of the very same Nazi doctors who worked in mental institutions before WW II, deciding whether mentally deficient children should be sterilized or killed because of their defective genes, also carried out horrendous experiments in the death camps. Their medical expertise, along with hundreds of Nazi scientists was considered so vital to the “Cold War” effort; that they would be brought into the United States and Canada to work side by side with some of the greatest but most perverse minds the 20th century would ever see.

In September 1999, the Department of Justice succeeded in denaturalizing 63 participants in Nazi acts of persecution; and in removing 52 such individuals from this country.[i] This appears to be but a small portion of those who actually were brought here by our own government. A 1999 report to the Senate and the House said, “…that between 1945 and 1955, 765 scientists, engineers, and technicians were brought to the United States under Overcast, Paperclip, and similar programs.[1] It has been estimated that at least half, and perhaps as many as 80 percent of the imported specialists were former Nazi Party members.”

Not all of those imported participated in experiments, but some did. A number of these scientists were recruited to work for the Air Force’s School of Aviation Medicine (SAM) at Brooks Air Force Base in Texas, where dozens of human radiation experiments were conducted during the Cold War. Among them were flash-blindness studies in connection with atomic weapons tests and data gathering for total-body irradiation studies conducted in Houston. The experiments for which Nazi investigators were tried included many related to aviation research. Hubertus Strughold, called “the father of space medicine,” had a long career at the SAM, including the recruitment of other Paperclip scientists in Germany.[2] On September 24, 1995 the Jewish Telegraphic Agency reported that as head of Nazi Germany’s Air Force Institute for Aviation Medicine, Strughold participated in a 1942 conference that discussed “experiments” on human beings. The experiments included subjecting Dachau concentration camp inmates to torture and death.[3]

The Edgewood Arsenal of the Army’s Chemical Corps as well as other military research sites recruited these scientists with backgrounds in aeromedicine, radiobiology, and ophthalmology.[4] Edgewood Arsenal, Maryland ended up conducting experiments on more than seven thousand American soldiers. Using Auschwitz documents as a guide, they conducted the same type of poison gas experiments that had been done in the secret I. G. Farben laboratories.[5]

Wright Patterson Airforce Base in Ohio employed several German Peenemunde scientists, brought there by Army Air Force Colonel Donald Putt.[6] Peenemunde Aerodynamics Institute built the V-2 rockets and German fighter jets using forced slave labor from the Karlshagen concentration camp. The Peenemunde team leader, Wernher von Braun, became the first director of the Marshall Space Flight Center.[7] Just two weeks after the moon landing, von Braun confessed in a letter to an Army General, that he had been a member of the SS.

“It’s true that I was a member of Hitler’s elite SS. The columnist was correct. I would appreciate it if you would keep the information to yourself, as any publicity would harm my work with NASA.”[8]

Former Peenemunde General Walter Dornberger became vice president of Bell Aircraft Co. after he ended his employment at Wright-Patterson Airforce Base where he worked on a classified rocketry program. Dornberger controlled the production schedule for building the Nordhausen rocket works at the Dora concentration camp where over 20,000 prisoners were killed through starvation, disease, or execution.[9]

A Congressional subcommittee hearing in 1994 revealed that up to 500,000 Americans were endangered by secret defense-related tests between 1940 and 1974.[10] These included covert experiments with radioactive materials, mustard gas, LSD, and biological agents. The General Accounting Office testified that between 1949 and 1969, the Army released radioactive compounds in 239 cities to study the effects.

Experiments began in the 1930’s and continued on for the next four decades.

- The government admitted wrongdoing in the 1932 Tuskegee Experiments, where poor black African American sharecroppers from Macon County, Alabama were allowed to go untreated for their syphilis so the effects could be studied.[11] When physicians and researchers involved with the United States Public Health Service offered them free medical care, they believed they had found treatment for what they had been told was “bad blood.” Instead, they were enrolled in an observational research study, without their knowledge or consent. Even though some rudimentary remedies for syphilis were available in the early years of the study, they were not offered to these men, so that the study of the natural history of the untreated disease would not be jeopardized. This study did not end until 1972, forty years after it had begun, and twenty years after penicillin had been identified as an effective treatment for syphilis. On May 16, 1997, President Clinton apologized to the survivors and families of hundreds of men used in this research project.

- Twelve human “guinea pigs” were secretly injected with radioactive Plutonium 239 and uranium in government experiments in the 1940’s. Energy Secretary Hazel O’Leary, in announcing the settlement of $4.8 million to be paid to their families, said the government was “grateful” to the victims for “the tough lessons they have taught us about trust, responsibility, and accountability between the government and the people.”

- Less known were such experiments as the feeding of radioactive cereal in the 1940s and 1950s to young male children who were institutionalized at the Fernald School in Massachusetts. The researchers had little experience with radionuclides in humans; consequently this approach to medical investigation gave them that opportunity. The parents as well as the children were simply told they were being fed a diet rich in iron.[12] According to oral testimony given before the President’s Advisory Committee on Human Radiation, they were told they belonged to the Science Club to make them feel special and then taken to the MIT Faculty Club where it was easier to control them. One researcher said, “It would be nice to do something for them because these kids have been involved, we've had to jab them [with needles], and they had to eat a meal—every little drop of it, because you wanted to be sure they got 100 percent of the radioactivity—wouldn't it be nice to do something for them?"[13]

- Atomic tests on 2584 military personnel in the Nevada desert in 1953.

- During the 1950s and 1960s Dr. Saul Krugman of New York University conducted studies of hepatitis at the Willowbrook State School, an institution for the severely mentally retarded. Krugman and his staff systematically infected newly arrived children between the ages of three and eleven with strains of the virus obtained from the feces of Willowbrook hepatitis patients. This was done to study the natural history, effects, and progression of the disease.[14] In 1972 Geraldo Rivera wrote an expose entitled *Willowbrook*, in which he reported that one hundred percent of the patients contacted hepatitis within six months of being in this institution.[15] Obviously, he was unaware of the intentional infection of these children. When he saw them he compared them to photographs he had seen of the Nazi death camps. When Bobby Kennedy toured this institution in September of 1965 he said, "At Willowbrook we have a situation that borders on a snake pit: ...the children live in filth..." The Journal of the American Medical Association actually went so far as to credit Krugman's "judicious use of human beings." Franz Inglefinger, who later became the editor of the New England Journal of Medicine went even further by saying, "By being allowed to participate in a carefully supervised study and by receiving the most expert attention available for a disease of basically unknown nature, the patients themselves benefited... How much better to have a patient with hepatitis accidentally or deliberately acquired under the guidance of a Krugman, than under the care of a rights-minded zealot."[16]

- Retarded children at D.C. Children's Center in Laurel in a section called the District Training School were used as human guinea pigs for both private industry and the government. Among the experiments, was the testing of NeoBazine a diet pill commonly referred to as "rainbow pills." They contained thyroxin, which caused tremors, nervousness, insomnia, and tachycardia. It was being tested for its safety and efficiency. In October 1964 the FDA found that the drug was not safe for use. In 1962 the children were again used to test a drug for skin diseases, which doctors strongly suspected caused serious side effects to the human liver. More than half the children tested suffered some liver dysfunction. Eight were admitted to D.C. General Hospital for intensive care. That same year, 17 Laurel Center children were used to study thyroid hormone metabolism in children. The children were injected with thyroxin mixed with radioactive iodine to aid doctors in tracing a body process. As you can see, there was a clear pattern of using innocent children who had no way of protecting themselves.

- Alexander Cockburn describes a 1960 Army Chemical Corps experiment where mosquitoes with yellow fever and dengue fever were dispersed in Savannah, Georgia and Avon Park, Florida.[17] According to Cockburn, "Carver Village, which was exclusively black, was the target for these experiments. Residents at the time reported fevers, bronchitis, typhoid, encephalitis, stillbirths, also mysterious deaths."

Dr. Alan W. Scheflin, Professor of law at Santa Clara University Law School, and a judicially recognized expert in mind and behavior control states in a letter dated March 9, 1995, that secret government mind control experimentation is ongoing and vastly more expansive than the government authorities are willing to admit. He also is co-author of a nonfiction book entitled *The Mind Manipulators*, which was published in a dozen countries. He says that he has been studying these secret programs since 1975 and it is his conclusion that there are at minimum hundreds, and most likely thousands of American citizens who were used as guinea pigs against their will in government research projects. What he does not say is that most of the children used in these experiments were sold by one of their caretakers in the name of "National Security" and subjected to untold horrors at the hands of their government. In light of so many abuses of power coming before the public in recent years, many adult survivors of these childhood experiments are stepping forward to be heard.

In October 1995 the President's Advisory Committee on Human Radiation Experiments reported that secret radiation experiments on indigent patients and mentally retarded children were not only done, but that these people were deceived about the nature of their treatments. Dr. William Silverman asserted that performing non-therapeutic experiments on children without authorization from parents was part of a broader "ethos of the time" in which "everyone was a draftee" in a national war on disease.[18]

In most cases the experiments involving radiation, chemical and biological warfare materials were carried out on an unsuspecting public. These are listed in Part II of this book. Government mind control experiments using drugs, sensory deprivation, hypnosis, and electric shock were used on adults and children to gain control of their minds. Impossible, you say. I wish it were. We live in such a sheltered little world. It's much easier to believe that violence and mind control belong to a few scattered cults.

In a decision dated April 16, 1985 Chief Justice Burger of the United States Court of Appeals delivered the opinion of the Court in the case of CIA v. SIMS, 471 U.S. 159. This case focused around the public's right under the Freedom of Information Act, to have declassified the grant proposals and contracts, and the names of the institutions and individuals who had performed research under the CIA financed research project, code-named MKULTRA.

MKULTRA was established to counter soviet and Chinese advances in brainwashing and interrogation techniques and consisted of 149 subprojects contracted out to at least 80 institutions. In 1977 Director of Intelligence Stansfield Turner described in an affidavit, that the program was initiated because the Agency was confronted with "learning the state of the art of behavioral modification at a time when the U.S. Government was concerned about inexplicable behavior of persons behind the 'iron curtain' and American prisoners of war who had been subjected to so called brainwashing."

It began with a proposal from Richard Helms, who outlined a special funding mechanism for highly sensitive Agency research and development projects that would study the use of biological and chemical materials in altering human behavior. Allen Dulles approved MKULTRA on April 13, 1953. Twenty years after the conception of the MKULTRA project, all known files pertaining to it were ordered destroyed by Richard Helms before he retired.

In 1977 through a Freedom of Information Act request by John Marks, 16,000 pages of documents were found, held as part of the Agency's financial history. Further attempts at declassification resulted in the decision rendered by Chief Justice Burger that the “intelligence sources” who were guaranteed confidentiality at the time of these CIA funded research projects would continue to remain protected and classified.

To those of us who have survived these experiments, this decision means that our stories will continue to lie in the government vaults of classified materials. Most of the important details were conveniently destroyed under orders of Richard Helms to conceal their wrongdoing.[19] Think what would have happened if the records of the Holocaust had met the same fate. The disappearance of six million people could have remained a question mark in history.

As a survivor of CIA programs Bluebird/Artichoke and MKULTRA, I began my intense search to document some of the mind control experiments that I was made part of, starting at the tender age of four.[20] Through a series of FOIA requests to various departments of the government, I have amassed an incredible amount of material that validates my personal experiences. The CIA bought my services from my grandfather in 1952. Over the next twelve years, I was tested, trained, and used in various ways. Electroshock, drugs, hypnosis, sensory deprivation, and other types of trauma were used to make me compliant and split my personality.[ii] The “Manchurian Candidate”, where a programmed alter or personality is created to respond to a post-hypnotic trigger then perform an act and not remember it later, was just one of the operational uses of the mind control scenario by the CIA. A reliable truth serum would be another. In *Bluebird*, Dr. Colin Ross documents the deliberate creation of Multiple Personality by psychiatrists working under government contracts. Your hard earned tax dollars supported this, as well as experiments on extrasensory perception and remote viewing, all of which I was tested and trained for.

CIA personnel were not opposed to working with Nazi doctors who had proven to be proficient in breaking the mind and rebuilding it. To perform these experiments they also used the expertise and knowledge of doctors at private hospitals with whom they made contractual agreements. In some cases military bases were used to hide these covert activities.

On December 17, 1999 I turned 52 years old. On that day I received three CD ROM’s from the CIA in response to my FOIA request. Forty-eight years after I was first experimented on, I found solid proof of my memories proof that was in the government vaults of the nearly 18,000 pages of declassified documents from the Bluebird/Artichoke and MKULTRA programs. One of the documents specifically stated that experimental studies of the postulated abilities of a few specially gifted subjects would be conducted.[21] The document states, “That in working with individual subjects, special attention will be given to disassociative states[iii] which tend to accompany spontaneous ESP experiences. Such states can be induced and controlled to some extent with hypnosis and drugs... The data used in the study will be obtained from special groups such as psychotics, children and mediums...”

The document continues, “Learning studies will be instituted in which the subject will be rewarded or punished for his overall performance and reinforced in various ways by being told whether he was right, by being told what the target was, with electric shock etc.” The proposal then goes on to say, “In other cases drugs and psychological tricks will be used to modify his attitudes. The experimenters will be particularly interested in disassociative states, from the abaissement de niveau mental,[iv] to multiple personality in so-called mediums; and an attempt will be made to induce a number of states of this kind, using hypnosis." The government had finally handed me the validation I had been searching for. To say my heart stopped that day is almost true.

My goal in writing this book is to expose the misuse of power that took place in this country during the Cold War. Thousands of innocent children who have now grown into adults are silently suffering from the effects of the experiments that were done to them by their own government. Many have been diagnosed incorrectly and institutionalized. Some died because they knew too much. Others, like myself, were able to obtain competent medical help, and are struggling to heal from the physical and mental ravages upon our beings.

In recounting some of the incidents that happened to me as part of these experiments, I ask that you remember that I have attempted to be as accurate as possible. Some of these events were remembered during flashbacks and abreactions. During an abreaction, a person feels just like they are reliving the event; accompanied by all the sensory stimulation and original emotional responses. Abreaction is common in soldiers who are having posttraumatic stress syndrome, where they actually feel they are back on the battlefield.

The brain is somewhat like a phonograph record it records the original happening. With Dissociative Identity Disorder, amnesia is created for the traumatic incident to save the young child's sanity. When the amnesiac barriers are removed, it is like putting the needle back on the track of the record where the original memory is stored.

In my case, post-hypnotic suggestions were used after programming sessions, which also created an amnesiac barrier. When the wall to these memories was broken down and the events relived, I would document them in bits and pieces by journaling, drawing and painting. Some of the things I remembered seemed bizarre, and I oftentimes questioned my own sanity. Only after all the pieces of one memory would come together, would I finally get a true picture of exactly what had been done. This is also when I truly began to heal.

For skeptics, no proof will be enough. For others, like myself, unraveling the bizarre nature of my memories has allowed me to regain control of my life. My greatest gift of healing has been to no longer operate out of fear, but from a rational, logical based reality. Choices to live, love and create that were taken from me through the fragmentation of my mind can now be explored.

Some people have asked, "Why now do you choose to speak out?" I prefer to let an Auschwitz-Birkenau survivor of the Mengele Twins experiments speak for me. When asked how she felt while she was being used as a guinea pig she said, "My answer is that emotional scars are so deep that only now, more than 40 years later, are we attempting to face our past and come to terms with it."[22]

I ask those same people. How can we envision the future without visiting the past? Will we let this story lay in the shadows forever, or do we have the courage to address these wrongs and give survivors back their voices? You be the judge.

ETHICS, Request to the NIH Bioethics Group, April 5, 1999

In so much as the Inter-Institute Bioethics Interest Group is currently considering research in bioethics, the Advocacy Committee for Human

Experimentation Survivors wishes to apprise the group of the passing of the fourth anniversary of the testimony of two survivors, Claudia Mullen and Chris DeNicola Ebner with their therapist, Valerie Wolf, before the Presidents Advisory Committee on Human Radiation Experiments in March, 1995. The President's Committee recommended further exploration of this testimony which concerned the sadistic experimentation upon children, for the purposes of mind control and other unwitting uses. To date, no such investigation into these claims or others by additional survivors of radiation, chemical and biological experimentation perpetrated upon them as unwitting children, had been initiated.

ACHES requests the aid of this group in the following goals:

The declassification of all government held files, documents, tapes or records relating to any experimentation involving children, prisoners or the mentally incapacitated, particularly those that relate to covertly or privately funded mind control, radiation, chemical or biological programs, both past and present.

The creation of a Presidential Committee to identify all US government sponsored programs, within or outside US borders, including mind control, radiation, chemical, biological or any other type of experimentation upon children, prisoners or the mentally incapacitated.

The determination of the legal, ethical and moral responsibilities of the US government or any other institutions to the survivors of any such experiments, which were perpetrated upon them as unwitting or uncomprehending individuals, and to determine remedies for those found to be physically and psychologically harmed by such experimentation.

The implementation of standards and practices to stop any current abuses and to place a moratorium on human mind control experimentation and any experimentation on unwitting or uncomprehending human subjects.

Patty Rehn and Lynne Moss-Sharman as presented by

Karen Coleman Wiltshire

ACHES-MC, Washington, D.C. Contact

Prologue

It was a sticky summer day in 1991, the year that the Cold War officially ended and the Soviet Union was dismantled. My sister and I paid a visit to my uncle who was dying of cancer. Dad and two other uncles had all died prematurely, cursed with heart disease. It was with love and trepidation that I bent over to kiss him good-bye, knowing that I would never see him alive again. There was so much pain on his sunken in face and the disease and the treatments he had taken to fight it had ravaged his body. I told him that I loved him and my sister and I left.

Something in me stirred that warm afternoon. The secrets I had been holding my whole life couldn't be contained any longer. Maybe it was being so close to the smell and taste of death. Maybe it was simply, "Just the Right Time."

When we reached my sister's home we sat on the couch, and I could hear my heart in my ears. I looked at her and made up my mind that even if I lost her love, I had to speak the truth. I told her I had something horrible to tell her, and that she probably would hate me when I was through. She said that could never happen, and asked me what in the world I was talking about.

In a small voice that was barely audible the words sprang forth.

"Someone in the family hurt me very badly when I was little."

"Carol, do you mean sexually?"

I looked at her in disbelief. How could she know this? I nodded and she said, "Carol, was it Norman[v], our cousin?"

I couldn't speak. I just shook my head back and forth, letting her know that wasn't who it was. I started to cry and the pounding in my ears got even louder.

"Carol, I will believe you no matter what you tell me, because Norman raped me when I was in third grade."

My heart stopped. I couldn't believe my ears. I forgot my own pain and reached over to her and held her. She told me I was the first person she had told this to in over thirty-five years. God I wanted to die, I wanted to puke. I wanted to make this moment in time vanish and maybe the horrible truth would vanish with it. Here we were-two women separated in age by five years and a million secrets.

Somehow I found my voice. I told her how sorry I was, and she kept asking me who hurt me. I couldn't keep the words inside any longer.

"Dad. It was our dad."

Oh God, no. Let me take the words back. Look at the look on her face. I knew it. She doesn't believe me. She hates me. Please don't hate me. Please God; please don't let her hate me. I'm so afraid.

She reached over and took my hand and we talked. I can't remember the words, just that she listened and dawning recognition seeped over her face. I knew she believed me. Our young lives had been such hell. We had been raised in a family with an authoritative father who frequently used his belt and fists to help us "see the light." My six brothers had been the recipients of this violence much more frequently than Dot and I. Mom was absent for months on end, either locked up in a mental institution or running away from dad, and now she was dead dead at 52. Dead 14 long years dead, dead, dead. We only had each other. The silence was ended. By sharing and believing each other's long held secrets that day, I began the longest journey of my life. My struggle to heal had finally begun.

Chapter 1 - THE SPOILS OF WAR

It was May of 1944 when the Navy called daddy to fight in the "Big One." He left momma, who was just nineteen and already the mother of a one and two year old, in a little rented cottage next to Grandfather's house and marched off to war. He was barely out of basic training when our baby brother got sick with pneumonia causing daddy to go AWOL, at least that's the story he always told.

When the Navy caught up with him, he was thrown in the brig. They shaved his head and put him through a battery of tests. It seems one particular Naval lieutenant commander named John Gittinger who was also a psychologist was working on creating a new Personality Assessment Test (PAS). This test would later be combined with the Wechsler psychological test and used to predict future behavior.[23]

Gittinger was later employed by the CIA for twenty-six years, but worked under the cover of the Human Ecology Society in the 50's.[24] MKULTRA subproject 39 at the Ionia State Prison in Michigan was instituted to see if you could drug and hypnotize a child molester and get him to divulge his ugly little secrets. They were looking for a "Truth Drug" that could be used on spies. A combination of drugs and hypnosis were used for interrogation.[25] The Human Ecology Society furnished Wechslers of these sexual psychopaths to the CIA. These scores showed that so-called normals have different personality patterns than people with uncontrollable urges.

Well that was the beginning of the end for me, before I was even born. Evidently those tests in the brig indicated someone who was holding very dark secrets. The government knew that at some later date this could be useful information. Blackmail was the oldest game in the book.

Daddy was assigned to the LST-1146 *U.S.S. Summit County*, who began loading supplies and ammunition for the soon to be ending war in the Pacific. Seven hundred tons of pontoon cargo destined for Guam was loaded and she sailed for Panama on July 5, 1945.

The European theater had already changed dramatically on the eastern front. On April 25, 1945, American and Russian soldiers embraced near the town of Torgau on the western bank of the Elbe. Italian partisans killed Mussolini, and strung him up by his heels alongside his mistress in a gasoline station in Milan. Hitler committed suicide in a Berlin bunker. Franklin Roosevelt died in Warm Springs, Georgia on April 12, 1945, never living to see the Reich surrender on May 7, 1945, V-E Day.

Increasing attention was being given to shaping the postwar world. In 1943, the allies felt compelled to issue a warning to those participating in atrocities, saying they would be hunted down and brought to justice. The Moscow Declaration said, "Let those who have hitherto not imbued their hands with innocent blood beware lest they join the ranks of the guilty. For, most assuredly, the three Allied powers will pursue them to the utmost ends of the earth and will deliver them to their accusers in order that justice may be done." How ironic that two years later the United States was making arrangements for Nazi scientists to come to America.[26]

On July 6, 1945, the Joint Chiefs of Staff specifically authorized an effort under the top secret project code-named Overcast, to "exploit...chosen, rare minds whose continuing intellectual productivity we wish to use." The chiefs directed that up to 350 specialists, mainly from Germany and Austria, should be immediately brought to the United States. These "rare minds" included specialists in submarine design, chemical warfare, and missile research.[27]

In 1946 President Truman authorized Project Paperclip, whose code name was said to have originated because scientific recruits' papers were paper clipped with regular immigration forms. Paperclip had two aims: to exploit German scientists for American research, and to deny these intellectual resources to the Soviet Union. In a confidential letter to President Truman's chief science adviser, RCA Chief David Sarnoff argued, "the security for any nation henceforth depends... to a very large extent on its place in the scientific sun. That sun may shine brightly for those who know, and it may be a blackout for those who don't." Sarnoff continues, "It is not only important that we get [Germany's] scientific information, but that we lay hands on their scientists as well. If we do not find them and remove them to a place perhaps on this side of the water where they can continue their scientific experiments under our guidance and control, our Russian friends may do so first."[28]

JIOA[vi] Director Bosquet Wev was in charge of presenting dossiers to the U.S. departments of State and Justice for approval. Some of the reports attached to the dossiers bluntly pointed out that they were "ardent Nazis." Some of the experts were accused of participating in murderous medical experiments on human subjects at concentration camps. One was a fugitive from formal murder charges, and another was known to have established an institute for biological warfare experimentation on humans in Poland. Director Wev decided to start withholding records and not submitting the candidates to State and Justice. In a wire to the director of intelligence at the U.S. European Command he wrote, "[T]here is very little possibility that the State and Justice Departments will agree to immigrate any specialist who has been classified as an actual or potential security threat to the United States. This may result in the return [to] Germany of specialist whose skill and knowledge should be denied to other nations in the interest of national security. He then requested, "that new security reports be submitted where such action is appropriate."[29]

That one action made by Wev would allow new dossiers to be made, with the offending language taken out. How many Nazi's were let into this country is still making the headlines. As I write in March of 2000, an accused Nazi who has lived in the United States 45 years was being deported to Austria from Sterling Heights, Michigan.[30] Many have chosen to relocate to other countries, rather than be deported.

General Reinhard Gehlen was head of Nazi Intelligence for the Eastern front for Hitler. Allen Dulles hired him to work for the Army's G-2 intelligence in West Germany and put him in charge of the Gehlen organization, a counterespionage network that employed thousands of people to supply the Pentagon and the CIA with intelligence on the Soviet Union and Eastern Europe. It was riddled with former SS, SA, and Gestapo men.[31] His top aides were Nazi zealots who had committed some of the most notorious crimes of the war. Gehlen himself was involved in the torture, interrogation, and murder by starvation of some four million Soviet prisoners. These men used stolen German intelligence files to barter for their lives. They new if they were caught by the Soviets, they would be hanged. The Gehlen organization was the forerunner of West Germany's secret service, the BND recognized in 1956 and run by Gehlen until 1968.

Gehlen signed a contract with the CIA in 1949 for a reported sum of $5 million a year. When Allen Dulles was asked why he made use of someone like Reinhard Gehlen he said, "There are few archbishops in espionage. He's on our side and that's all that matters. Besides, one needn't ask him to one's club."[32] In September 2000 after fifty years of silence, the Central Intelligence Agency in an affidavit in US District Court acknowledged an intelligence relationship with German General Reinhard Gehlen.[33]

While the OSS[vii] was helping to run covert operations with Reinhard Gehlen, they were also involved in secret talks with the Japanese. In mid-May, 1945 Allen Dulles of the OSS reported from Switzerland that the resident Japanese minister, Shunichi Kase had expressed interest in mediating a cessation of hostilities. OSS chief Bill Donovan wrote to the president that Kase believed one of the few provisions the Japanese would insist upon, would be the retention of the Emperor as the only safeguard against Japan's conversion to Communism. Under Secretary of State Grew shared this assessment, and believed the war would end quickly if Washington issued a statement explaining that unconditional surrender did not carry with it the dethroning of the emperor. John J. McCloy, Assistant Secretary of War, suggested that the phrase "unconditional surrender" be dropped altogether, because the phrase itself meant loss of face to the Japanese.[34] Several more indications were received from the Japanese that they would like to negotiate, but the U.S. chose not to.

On July 16, 1945, scientists and military men wearing dark glasses watched the first atomic bomb being detonated. President Truman was facing a decision that would alter history. How different the world could have become without this nuclear nightmare. The mushroom shaped cloud that appeared on that warm summer day would come to symbolize a new age. The bomb shelters of the 50's became like growing embryos from the moment of that first detonation.

On August 2 daddy's ship arrived in Pearl Harbor; and on August 6 the atomic bomb was dropped on the city of Hiroshima. At exactly 8:15 a.m. 81 percent of the city ceased to exist. One bomb, dubbed "Little Boy," killed almost 68,000 people, with as many injured. Still Japan did not surrender. On August 9 a second atomic bomb was exploded over Nagasaki, 38,000 were killed. On August 14, V-J Day, people across the continent poured into the streets while the church bells rang. The war was soon to be officially over, but at what price?

The Allied armada was sailing into Tokyo Bay on September first, as daddy steamed westward towards Eniwetok in the Marshall Islands.[viii] The very next day aboard the U.S.S. *Missouri*, General MacArthur signed the surrender document. 405,000 Americans who had given their lives in this war were solemnly remembered. Years later, many more would bare the tragic effects of nuclear exposure from their proximity to the explosions.

Chapter 2 - A STAR IS BORN

Daddy's ship arrived in Seattle in January 1946 and he completed his service to his country in February. I try to imagine sometimes, what it must have been like for him coming home after seeing the horror and devastation from the bombs we dropped. I know he brought back a Japanese sword that hung on our walls for the rest of his life. Nine months after his return, my third brother was born. Just thirteen months later in December of 1947, my mother got her wish for a girl, when a 9 pound, 3 ounce rolly, polly baby announced her presence by screaming with fear at the top of her lungs. I was born, and I soon learned that screaming and tears were just not allowed.

That same year President Truman specifically assigned the CIA responsibility for covert psychological operations. The following year he approved NSC directive 10/2 giving the CIA responsibility for "propaganda, economic warfare; preventive direct action, including sabotage, anti-sabotage, subversion against hostile states, including assistance to underground resistance movements, guerrillas and refugee liberation groups, and support of indigenous anti-

Communist elements."[35]

The U.S. Army's Counter-Intelligence Corps (CIC) decided to use convicted war criminal Klaus Barbie[ix] to supervise a string of agents in occupied Germany called the "Petersen Bureau." In 1950 the CIC allowed Barbie to escape from Europe to Bolivia through a "rat line" organized by a Croatian priest and former Nazi collaborator operating out of the Vatican.[36]

More than likely it was the same ratline that helped Dr. Josef Mengele, killer of 400,000 in Auschwitz, to escape to Buenos Aires, Argentina in 1949. The Counterintelligence Corp hired Croatian Catholic Intramarium leader Monsignor Krunoslav Draganovic to run these ratlines for U.S. sponsored Nazi escapees. CIC had tagged Draganovic as an unreconstructed Ustase.[37] In the summer of 1941 the Roman-Catholic Ustase murdered Serbs, Jews, and Gypsies in cartloads, and according to Michael Bar-Zohar in the *Avengers*, they once presented a wicker basket overflowing with forty pounds of human eyes to their leader.[38] The Justice Department admitted that Draganovic smuggled these fugitives for the U.S., and was even provided a source of financing and shield of protection.[39] SPINNE, Otto Skorzeny's exfiltration network for SS officers on the run, also used Draganovic's underground railway to bribe harbor officials before shipping ex-Nazis' like Klaus Barbie to Paraguay or Buenos Aires.[40]

As Assistant Secretary of State under Roosevelt, Nelson Rockefeller lobbied long and hard to have Argentina be a founding member of the United Nations. Nelson had varied South American interests. He held large stockholdings in Creole Petroleum in Venezuela, and an enormous ranch near Valencia that was five times larger than the combined boroughs of New York City.[41] Nelson was awarded the Order of Merit of Chile, the National Order of Southern Cross of Brazil, and the order of the Aztec Eagle of Mexico, but the people themselves weren't so taken with him. When he made a fact-finding tour of Latin America for President Richard Nixon in 1969 he created uproar. The government of Venezuela had to cancel his visit after students seized university buildings, and street fighting with rocks and pistols broke out. In the Dominican Republic a Standard Oil refinery was blown up, and in Argentina nine Rockefeller-owned supermarkets were bombed and burned. That was followed by a nationwide labor strike. As Nelson embraced the dictator of Paraguay, Alfredo Stroessner, demonstrators burned an American flag.

Nicolo Tucci resigned his post as head of the Bureau of Latin American Research because as he later put it, "My bureau was supposed to undo the Nazi and fascist propaganda in South America and Rockefeller was inviting the worst fascists and Nazis to Washington."[x] When Tucci took his complaints to Nelson he was told, "Everybody is useful and we're going to convert these people to friendliness to the United States." Then Rockefeller's lawyer Larry Levy said to me, "Don't worry, we'll buy those people."[42]

The *Washington Post* wrote a scathing editorial indicting the vote on Argentina's admission: "The regime which is described as having done things recently that exceed anything this correspondent can remember in his seventeen years experience in Fascist Italy this regime was railroaded into the company of 'peace-loving states' in San Francisco by Secretary Stettinius and Assistant

Secretary Rockefeller."[43]

John D. Rockefeller III, brother of Nelson went on a series of world tours with John Foster Dulles in 1950 and 1951. They focused on the need to stop the expansion of the non-white populations. In 1952, Dulles and Rockefeller set up the Population Council with millions of dollars from the Rockefeller family. The American Eugenics Society moved into the Population Council's headquarters and assumed its name. The eugenics movements' belief in mandatory sterilization for inferior and defective people was not at all unlike the beliefs that led to the elimination of undesirable races through genocide in Nazi Germany before and during WWII.

Several of the Directors of The American Eugenics Society worked at institutions that were involved in the MKULTRA experiments or other covert government experiments. Dr. Franz J. Kallmann[xi] worked at New York State Psychiatric Institute as a geneticist from 1936 to 1951. He became chief of psychiatric research from 1952 through 1965. New York State Psychiatric Institute obtained funding through the Edgewood Arsenal Army's Chemical Corps medical research labs. They were given three contracts for studies of LSD and mescaline on human subjects. In fact, at the "First Psychochemical Conference" (12 May 1954) the principal Research Psychiatrist was introduced as "a pioneer in the field of correlating experimental pharmacology and clinical psychiatry." On January 8, 1953 Mr. Harold Blauer died of circulatory collapse and heart failure, following an intravenous injection of a synthetic mescaline derivative while at New York State Psychiatric Institute.[44] It was this institute that I have reason to believe I was taken to covertly in 1952.[xii]

Genetic research was indeed one of the major interests of Dr. Josef Mengele. During one of the experiments I was forced to endure at the hands of Dr. Black, he referred to me as a "Mengele Kid." After seeing photographs of him from the fifties and sixties, I believe Dr. Black was an alias that the "Angel of Death," Josef Mengele used while doing mind control experiments under Project MKULTRA after his disappearance from Auschwitz on January 18, 1945.

I first met Dr. Black when I was four. It was a scorching day in July 1952. Because of the blessed event of my little sisters' birth, I was given the dubious honor of staying with Grandpa Al and Grandma Cordula, daddy's parents. Grandpa decided to let me run in my underwear through the water that would squirt out of all the holes in the hose that he used to water the vegetable garden. When I was through getting totally drenched, I ran into the greenhouse to smell the flowers and watch him work. Such a dichotomy, that this child molester raised this room full of perfume and velvety smoothness. I especially loved the pansies, as they reminded me of little faces gazing up at me. Grandma had the huge concrete floral baskets that Grandpa crafted filled with petunias, pansies, snapdragons, and lacy ferns. The glass blocks imbedded in the cement threw the colors of the flowers everywhere.

Grandpa was an incredibly resourceful man. A bricklayer by trade, he found himself without a job during the recession. For a while, he worked for the government funded CWA and FERA programs during the Depression, where he did most of the stonework inside the snake cages in the Reptile house in the Zoo. A Toledo Blade newspaper article about him says, "By sheer inventiveness, combined with a bulldog determination and courage, he literally has pulled himself out of the depression slough by his boot straps."

The article goes on to say, "Today he owns a home... and has a five-year lease on two and one-half acres of land, which he has converted into a vegetable garden. All of this has been done with the aid of a hand trailer, a boat and about $30." The article continues, "Lacking the funds to buy an old vacant house, he agreed to pay the stipulated price of $200 in labor, the only commodity he had... In order to move the house from its original location-about three blocks away from its present one-he got the jacks and necessary implements for the job, agreeing to pay with his labor for the cost involved. The next problem was to build a foundation. With the aid of the hand trailer, he gathered old bricks wherever he could find them, and these old bricks that nobody wanted have found their place into and eight-foot basement as foundation for the home." As the story continues grandpa carried the sand needed to make cement from the sand bars in a boat across the lake, unloaded it, and took it home in a hand trailer. The stone porch he built for the house came from a torn down chimney ferried in the same way, but from a much greater distance. This fortitude was what our country had been built on. Too bad he brought with him the pedophilic traits of his forefathers.

Late that afternoon Grandpa said it was time to go out to the fruit and vegetable stand that sat at the street. It had an awning so the produce wouldn't cook in the sun. He lifted me up to sit beside the tomato baskets that were already filled. I wiggled my toes, as I carefully placed each tomato in the scale to be weighed when people stopped by on their way home from work. I even got a shiny penny to put in the pocket of my coveralls. Wow, having mommy in the hospital did have some benefits.

After supper that evening, Grandma Cordula started talking on the phone and shaking her head at grandpa. She had a very worried look on her face when she hung up the phone.

"We shouldn't be doing this Al."

"Shut up, Cordula! Just shut up!"

She shuts up. Then Grandpa says, "You're goin on a vacation soon and I know you'll be a good little girl."

I wasn't quite sure what a vacation was, but it sounded good to me. The next day this big shot from the CIA paid a visit to grandpa. He talked about patriotism and how grandpa could become a big shot too, and get money for helping to rid the world of Commies. It wasn't no skin off his back to do what needed to be done. He just had to exert some pressure to make our daddy let the CIA perform a few little experiments on me. National Security was at stake, etc. etc. etc., blah, blah, blah, blah.

That day it was decided that in exchange for some money and freedom from prosecution for making child pornography, I would become the governments' little experiment. It seems that grandpa had become involved with gangsters when they moved into the city in 1931. A group of criminals from Detroit led by Thomas "Yonnie" Licavoli moved to Toledo in March in an attempt to take over the bootleg and gambling clubs. Licavoli had been told by Al Capone "to stay the hell out of Detroit." The gang killed 13 people in our city in five months when they refused to pay protection money.

One bootlegger, Jack Kennedy Sr., refused to split the proceeds of his liquor business and became the target of the mob.[xiii] Jack became friends with my uncle, who later married Grandpa Al's only daughter. In 1933 Kennedy was renting a cottage a few blocks from grandpa's house. Leaving his bodyguard with his young son, he took a stroll with his girlfriend and was shot 11 times and died. One of the handguns that were used in the killing was found on the bank of the river by my dad, who was then eleven years old. The gun was linked to the Licavoli gang and with additional evidence, Yonnie was sentenced to prison for life.[45] I remember how afraid I was when Governor Rhodes commuted his sentence to second-degree murder and he was paroled. I naively figured he had a major vendetta to carry out against my dad, not realizing that if that were the case, he would have been long dead.

The mob was still active in Toledo when I was growing up, so it seems entirely possible that Grandpa helped Al Capone's gang take control of Toledo by ridding it of Licavoli's gang. Grandpa was a boozer and pedophile. The true extent of his personal involvement with this group went to the grave with him. I can only say that I'm quite sure that I was not the first child to star in his pornographic films, which were distributed to some very wealthy, notable public figures, probably through the mob.

Having found this out, the CIA took advantage of this knowledge to enlist grandpa's cooperation. They were looking for children who had the ability to disassociate from reality for a project named Bluebird/Artichoke. Dissociative amnesia is characterized by an inability to recall important personal information, usually of a traumatic or stressful nature, that is too extensive to be explained by ordinary forgetfulness.[46]

The CIA was about to determine if I would be a proper candidate for future experiments. I proved to be everything they wanted and more. Since I was just a baby in diapers when my dad started abusing me, I learned to go someplace else in my head to preserve my sanity. After awhile, when my grandfather started doing the same things and worse, I learned to dissociate even more. I began creating separate parts or personalities to hold the memories of this trauma. The technical term is alters. In a memo dated six months before I was first used in experiments, Bluebird states that practical - not theoretical research be conducted and carried out. The nature of this research to include these specific problems:

> 1. Can we "condition" by post-H (hypnotic) suggestion agency employees (or persons of interest to this agency) to prevent them from giving information to any unauthorized source or for committing any act on behalf of a foreign or domestic enemy?
>
> 2. Can we in a matter of an hour, two hours, one day, etc., induce an H condition in an unwilling subject to such an extent that he will perform an act for our benefit? (Long range).
>
> 3. Can we create by post-H control an action contrary to an individual's basic moral principles?
>
> 4. Could we seize a subject and in the space of an hour or two by post-H control have him crash an airplane, wreck a train, etc.? (Short, immediate activity)
>
> 5. Can we by SI[xiv] and H techniques force a subject (unwilling or otherwise) to travel long distances, commit specified acts and return to us or bring

documents or materials? Can a person acting under post-H control successfully travel long distances?

6. Can we use SI and H to combat fatigue, produce extreme mental effort?

7. Can we guarantee total amnesia under any and all conditions?

8. Can we “alter” a person’s Personality? How long will it hold?

9. Can we design tests to determine whether or not an enemy agent has been conditioned by SI and H or any other method?

10. Can we detect SI and H by use of SI and H (regression)?

11. Can we make a “conditioned” subject reveal by SI and H specifically how they were conditioned (drugs, torture, fatigue, hostage pressure, techniques)?

12. Can we devise a system for making unwilling subjects into willing agents and then transfer that control to untrained agency agents in the field by use of codes or identifying signs or credentials?

13. How long can we sustain a post-H suggestion-unaided-with reinforcement?

14. What would be fastest way to induce SI and H conditions - with drugs - or without any mechanical aids?

15. Can we devise a standard simple relatively fast technique for inducing SI and H conditions that can be used by untrained agents (with or without drugs)?

16. Is it possible to find a gas that can be used to gain SI control from a gas pencil, odorless, colorless: one shot, etc.?

17. What are full details on “sleep-inducing machine”?

18. How can sodium A or P or any other sleep inducing agent be best concealed in a normal or commonplace item, such as candy, cigarettes, liqueur, wines, coffee, tea, beer, gum water, aspirin tablets, common medicines, coke, tooth paste?

19. How effective can the “carotid artery technique”[xv] be made? Can it be used while subject is unconscious? Is it faster than other techniques?

20. Can we, while a subject is under SI and H control, show them a map and have them point out specific items, locations, etc., on the map? Can we also have them make detailed drawings, sketches, plans? Could any of the above be done under field conditions and in a very short space of time?[47]

To use a child to investigate these possibilities I find so morally reprehensible, that I have a difficult time fathoming how my grandfather could hand me over. He did. The following day I was put in a white panel van with my little suitcase. Little Girl (my two year old alter) will tell you, as Paul Harvey says, “The rest of the story.”[xvi]

“*We is sitin on a crate on the floor and the grandfather is on like a seat with a long pole comin out the bottom, just like the ones ya eat ice-cream on. He gots his hand on a long stick comin outa the floor. We gotted to go for a drive. He drops us off to Crazy Eddy. Crazy Eddy has a derby hat, a suit with a vest and white spats* *on. He's got a big shiny white limousine with a funny thing on the trunk. We's goin to Detroit. We gots our dress and black patent leather shoes on, and we falls asleep in the back seat with our thumb in our mouth. We don't got no blanket to cover up with."*

Crazy Eddy says,

"Time to wake up, time to wake up."

He be shakin us. We is here-Detroit. Some men give Crazy Eddy a stash of cash to take back to the grandfather, and after he gets off the plane this other big shot guy says,

"Little Drip, can he be depended on to keep his mouth shut?"

A man named Mr. Dull-ass[48] *says,*

"Creeps like that are a dime a dozen. He knows what will happen if he breathes a word of this."

Then they starts talkin about 'Little Girl'. That's me. They tell me I'm special, real special and they is gonna study my mind real good and see what makes us tick.

Little Girl: *"Where ya takin me?"*

Mr. Dull-ass says to the place of no return. Then somethin about shamrocks, Irish eyes are shinin and New York. He gives us Chinese checkers to play with. Geez, Louise, when ya's little how does big people spect ya to hold things on your lap? We looks up at Mr. Dull-ass, and he smiles and puffs on his pipe. It smells good and reminds us of our daddy.

The other man is sittin across from us with his ugly grin. He gots somethin in his lap-a case that pops open. He gots a drink too. We wished we had some ovaltine. There is a bathroom in the back and Mr. Dull-ass walks us back. Later on the pilot sticks his head out and says we's gettin ready to land.

Next thing we remembers is this doctor is liftin us up into a chair. He puts somethin black and heavy on our lap. He puts a needle[xvii] *in our arm and we is gettin sleepy, but still we's awake. There's a lady Dr. there who looks like Shirley Temple, cause of her curls. She says to the other doctor,*

"How are you going to know how much medicine to give her? She is so little. Are you sure you're not going to hurt her?"

He says its a truth drug[xviii] *and he knows what he's doin. Then he puts the black thing on our head and says somethin about it will shield us. Then he says,*

"Come forth little one-I need to know your name!"

"*Little girl."*

Then the doctor says,

"Who Else?"

"*Nobody."*

He knows we's lyin so he makes our body jump and hurt real bad. We got lectricity going through us.[xix]

"Shadow, our name is Shadow."

Now they wanna know who Shadow is.

"Shadow gotted made at Grandfathers' before we came here. There was a cross and the top slid off and inside each arm was a place to hold a candle. The center had a piece of rolled up parchment and some oil. There's a big book and it looks like a bible, only bibles don't have pictures of men and women that are naked. Grandfather says it's our naming day and he gotta give me a battle name and make me a soldier. My name is Shadow. He burns the candles and puts oil on our forehead. He seals the lips with oil that's still hot from burnin in a spoon. He makes us open our mouth and swallow it. Then he unrolls the paper and writes our name. Shadow. He's saying some funny words. It is done and sealed in blood. Don't touch my hair and face like that. You're evil, wicked. Now he's dripping candle wax on the paper. Sealed forever. Stay off me you wicked old man. Geez that be when Freda, our fighter part comes and starts fighting off the Grandfather."

Now they knows all our names. If ya knows our names-ya got power and control. They says they's gonna give us special numbers. Later Dr. No, the lady Doctor says,

"We are gonna help you, little girl, not to have any more pain. You don't have to feel it ever again."[49]

They's gonna make Samantha come. Uh-oh, spaghettios. Samantha won't ever feel anything. No more pain, no feelins. It's the way they made her.

(Intense electro-shock was delivered in order to allow my mind to disassociate and create Samantha who would never feel pain. In the future, whenever I was to be put through a torturous painful experience, Samantha would automatically be the alter who took over the body and she would hide the memory and the pain from the rest of my system. Unfortunately as I started to remember and integrate these experiences into my life, I would have to re-experience the pain and emotions surrounding each situation.)

"Back, just let the memories go back."

That be what the doctor tellin us alright. It's our first lesson on who's got power over us. They says tomorrow we gets ta work with two other people.

The next day it gets real confusing. We gets more medicine put in us, and the next thing we knows a guy is talkin to our baby part. He's standin in front of us talkin to another man. We is sittin in a chair and looking blank. He is tellin them that switching to different alters is as easy as turning the end of a kaleidoscope, where the shapes change with the turn of your wrist. Then he puts his finger by his nose and says,

"Look at this finger. You see the master. You only obey the master. When I say cheese you know that it is time for you to participate. Send the baby, now. Cheese."[xx]

Up comes the baby. The man says,

"I am your mammer and your papper. You love only me, and I am the only one who loves you. I feed you and hold you, and you are mine alone."

(Our Baby part grew to love and depend on "Daddy Sid" as her only source of love and nourishment. From that day forward, a deep bonding took place with Dr Sidney Gottlieb, Directorate of Operations of the Technical Services Staff (TSS) of CIA in charge of their behavioral program through MKULTRA.[50] No matter what experiment he was to make me a part of, I would love and remain loyal to the man who my baby alter considered sole supplier of the basics of life, food and love.)

A declassified document from 1954 says, "At all times when subjects were being hypnotized a CD representative (Dr. Gottlieb or Major deleted) was present. His presence served a double purpose of reassurance to the subject and observation of technique for possible later exploitation."[51]

Little Girl Continues:

After holding and loving Baby and feeding her a bottle, Daddy Sid says he gonna create a twin for her. His name is Guy and he's gonna get special training from time to time. Nobody can talk to Guy without talking to Baby first, cause they's bonded together like a figure 8 that lays on its side.

Daddy Sid says,

"Send Guy! Cheese. Guy you are requested to fulfill your destiny. You must always obey me and me alone. You live in Shadowland and Baby lives in Neverland. When Neverland is opened, Shadowland is closed. When Shadowland is open, Neverland is closed. The genie appears when Neverland is opened. Remember, I am your master and I am the genie. In Neverland, Baby never grows up. You and Baby will have eternal life. All you must do to keep your eternal life is to fulfill your destiny and come when you are called."

Guy was created that day, and in the coming years would display psychic abilities that the CIA found very useful.[52] Guy was taught to store all the anger and hatred accumulated during abuse and use it to psychically kill with what Sidney Gottlieb called "The Red Fire." *Secret Weapons* is a book coauthored by two survivors of similar MKULTRA experiments, the Hersha sisters. They share co authorship with Dale Griffis, an investigative law enforcement specialist, and Ted Schwarz, an author who has written extensively on the subject of abnormal psychology. The creation of a "Guy" type alter is explained:

"First, there would be the creation of a personality who is all violence. This individual wants to stop the trauma, but given the young age, he or she is helpless...The second personality that is created comes the moment the mind realizes the body is helpless to fight back. This is a personality capable of enduring anything-pain, grief, exhaustion."[53] This is a very apt description of Samantha who had been created the previous day.

The CIA had proposed a three to five year outside research project to search for exceptionally gifted individuals who could obtain both perfect and scattered ESP test performance.[54] Since I displayed psychic abilities, they trained Guy to use these abilities in a way they hoped would benefit the agency.

The CIA then made sure that this project would never be made known. The document says, "It would be necessary to be exceedingly careful about thorough cloaking of the undertaking. I would not want anyone here in the deleted except deleted and myself to know about it... Funds necessary for the support of the work would carry no identification and raise no questions."

It is my belief, that these studies done in secrecy for ten years became the foundation for the ESP experiments under MKULTRA Subproject 136 mentioned in the preface.

Little Girl Continues:

Then Daddy Sid says,

“Dr. Black has a few words he wishes to say to you.[xxi] You will listen attentively, and then when I say cheese, you will return Baby to me. Remember to stare at the white light at all times. Do not look at Dr. Black’s face. Only the white light.”

We turns our attention to the bulb that is being shone into our face. When the moon hits the sky like a big piece of pie, that’s amore. It’s like staring at the full moon.

Dr. Black says,

“Freda, my darling girl, are you there?”

He likes “schpunky” kids, so he really likes our Freda who was use to fightin the Grandfather off. Dr. Black rocks back and forth on his heels with his hands behind his back, and tells Freda that he’s gonna make her a twin and they both will be “Mengele’s Kids.”

Dr. Black says,

“Ah, you are so cute. It’s time to put you under the microscope to see what makes you tick. Who in there is small enough to fit under the microscope?”

They be drawing blood from our arm now and we have to watch while they put it under the microscope. It has a flat piece of glass put on top of it and they be telling us this is Connie. She be forever this small and if we don’t behave, the bad doctor will stomp the glass under his shiny black boot. We believe, cause he show us just how he do it with another slide. We think we gotta get some anti-puke medicine if we gonna be this dude’s kids. Either that or a big straw to blow Connie back up.

(Because of my belief in what Dr. Black said that day, I automatically created Connie when the blood was drawn. From that day forward she was to remain flat as a pancake, until I rescued her by understanding the lies told that day.)

Dr. Black says somethin about nucleo peptides, strings of dna and discoverin the truth, and he wanna preserve our dna. Then he says somethin about double helix, strands of dna, and tissue samples that are gonna destroy the foreign material.

Now someone be singing,

“Follow the yellow brick road, follow the yellow brick road.”

We be told it’s time to create Scarecrow. Scarecrow got no brain. They sucked it out with a needle. Iffin we gets caught and questioned when we’s carrying out orders, we’s supposed to turn into Scarecrow. Iffin we don’t, we get smashed under Dr. Black’s shiny boot. We never, ever tell, oh no. We don’t have no Brain. Iffin you don’t got no brain, then there’s nothin to tell. Then we gets that awful lectricity in us again. That’s all we remembers.

Next thing we remembers we is in a different place and we gots our black patent leather shoes on again. This man is askin if we been a good Little Girl. We smiles and says yes. He's gots a nice office with pictures on the wall and a pitcher a water on his desk with a glass for us cause we's real thirsty. We gots a real bad, dry taste in our mouth."

He says, "No worse for the wear."

He's relieved cause he don't want us going home lookin disheveled. We don't know what that means, but we's glad we don't look that way. We getta come back soon he says, cause we's a good little spearmint--not gum though. He's very happy with Mr. Dull-ass. He gotted a good little patsy in him.

If you are finding this hard to believe, I understand. However, a declassified document talks about the Chief of the Technical Branch's trip to Detroit in 1952.[55] Gottlieb also admitted that he made approximately six trips to New York in 1952, and that he "visited George White on two or three occasions in 1952 to discuss his becoming a consultant for the CIA in LSD research." Apart from his contacts with White, Gottlieb also declared that he might have visited Dr. Harold Abramson, a physician who later became an MKULTRA consultant in New York in 1952.

Dr. Sidney Gottlieb was a man who seemed to have had his soul buried in his own ego centered energy. I am not the only one to feel this way. Ted Schwartz says this about him: "Sidney Gottlieb seemed to approach the chemistry division programs with an eye for truth and a mind not hampered by moral considerations. He was like a delinquent child with a loaded gun who comes to understand trauma, pain, and death only by firing a bullet into someone's heart. A multitude of sins could be whitewashed in the name of scientific knowledge and the search for truth in a world filled with lies and secrets."[56]

There is even a declassified document that Alan Scheflin found in which the CIA considers building a laboratory for its experiments,

"This laboratory will include a special chamber, in which all psychologically significant aspects of the environment can be controlled. This chamber will contain, among other things, a broad-spectrum polygraph for simultaneous recordings of a variety of psycho physiological reactions of the individual being studied. In this setting the various hypnotic, pharmacologic and sensory-environmental variables will be manipulated in a controlled fashion and quantitative and continuous recordings of the reactions of experimental subjects will be made."[57]

A 1951 declassified document also clarifies the kind of people that were employed by the CIA to teach hypnotism.[58] The document says,

"On 2 July 1951 approximately 1:00 p.m., the instruction began with deleted relating to the student some of his sexual experiences. Deleted stated that he had constantly used hypnotism as a means of inducing young girls to engage in sexual intercourse with him. Deleted a performer in deleted orchestra was forced to engage in sexual intercourse with deleted while under the influence of hypnotism...Deleted further stated that many times while going home on deleted, he would use hypnotic suggestion to have a girl turn around and talk to him and suggest sexual intercourse to him; and that as a result of these suggestions induced by him he spent approximately five nights a week away from home engaging in sexual intercourse."

If you still find it hard to believe that people in power will use four year old children if it suits their needs, then I refer you to an interview done by Allen Abel of Saturday Night Magazine.[59] On February 10, 2001, Dr. Peter Suedfeld, President of the Canadian Psychology Association and Director of Canada's Society for Academic Freedom and Scholarship, talked about selection of people for good performance as crew for a Mars mission. As a long time advisor to NASA, his solution was that an astronaut named Amanda Robinson be named as commander. "She's four years old," her grandfather says. She's quite small that will be important in crew selection for a long-duration mission and she's absolutely indomitable. Nothing gets her down. I call her Colonel. Boy, I'd love to live to see her go to Mars."

Mr. Abel also reports in this article, that Dr. Suedfeld, a psychology professor at the University of British Columbia, "made few friends when he suggested in articles and lectures, that many people came out of the Nazi death camps in pretty good emotional shape." The professor said, "Both the psychology and the Jewish communities accused me of trivializing the Holocaust by claiming people weren't all that crippled by living through it."

Now you tell me. Is using a four year old so hard to believe?

Chapter 3 - HOME SWEET HOME

Everything seemed back to normal when I found myself at home in the living room with my new little sister in a bassinet.[60] My aunt, my father's only sister, looked over at me and said,

"You know Carol Lee, you don't get to be your daddy's Little Girl anymore."[xxii]

I stood there looking up at her, hoping that it was true. Maybe my baby sister could take my place, and I wouldn't have daddy's awful thing stuck in my face and mouth anymore. I walked over to the dining room table, crawled underneath, and sat down. The avocado plant was cascading down from the center of the table so no one could see me. Maybe if they didn't see me it would be true. Maybe, just maybe, she was telling the truth. Then I remembered that nothing is as it seems and grownups only pretend to tell the truth. Daddy said I would always be his "Little Girl."

Luckily momma didn't forget I was there. She would take time away from the care of my little sister to steal out of the house and sit with me on the porch. It was early morning and the sweet morning dew still lay on the grass. Rays of sunshine were falling from above, warming both my shoulders and my mind as her fingers were entwined in my hair. She worked the brush furiously to create the ringlets that crowned my face. I could feel her breath on my cheek, and her smell warmed my belly. It was our morning ritual, our special time. I grasped it to my breast, and held onto the feelings so tightly that it took my breath away. Too soon the boys would be whining for their breakfast and their lunches would need to be made. Yuk, baked bean sandwiches. Glad I didn't have to go to school yet.

Whenever I return to those days in my mind, I remember a day in August the following year. We are again sitting on the porch, momma and me. My head is in her lap, and we are waiting patiently as the rescue team searches for the body of my two-year-old cousin in the creek behind our house.

It started so innocently with a game of follow the leader. Momma is upstairs checking on my little sister when my older cousin, Norman, has us form a line behind the garage. Holding hands with my brother and my younger cousin, we follow him to the waters edge. It is a game. We like games! He chooses my younger cousin and starts spinning his little body, till he pushes him over the edge. I watch in horror, frozen like a statue, as he picks up a rock and hits him over the head as he comes up for air. My brother grabs my arm and we start to run, but Norman is too fast. He reaches out, and I soon become the center of a tug of war.

“If you ever tell, I’ll do the same thing to you.”

I believed.

As Eva Mozes Kor, a child survivor of the Mengele Twins experiment said, “I was just a child who grew up fast, because children who have to face life and death situations are no longer children.”[61] For 40 years I placed this memory in a place in my mind where the pain of it could not touch me. Disassociation had become a way of life for me to cope with tragedy. I had no control over it. It was standard operating procedure, my mind’s way of allowing me to stay sane when everything around me was totally insane and out of control. It had also been the means by which the CIA chose to assure my silence and create personas to use in their experiments.

Life was indeed uncertain. No one could understand why I still sucked my thumb or actually fell asleep during naptime in kindergarten. One moment I was watching Howdy Doody, Kookla Fran and Ollie or Mighty Mouse saving the day. The next I was being molested or poked and prodded by some government official. The days of making mud pies and playing store with my friend across the street were overshadowed by these dark sinister days and nights of terror. At times I would feel like an elfin sprite when I was running through the grass barefoot, catching fireflies and making rings and bracelets with them. Other times I wanted to join Buster Brown and go live in that shoe. I yearned for a gramps like Timmy and Lassie’s, and I would imagine that Zorro would come and put his mark right on daddy’s chest for the whole world to see. It never happened.

I started first grade when I was five and a half, and sometime that fall I was playing at my aunt’s when I must have looked very forlorn. She came over and sat beside me on the cement porch rail and asked me,

“What’s the matter, Little Girl?”

That phrase again triggered Little Girl to come out and proceed to tell her exactly what the matter was. With every word that Little Girl spoke, my Aunt’s face seemed to turn a lighter shade of ashen gray. After lengthy questioning about what Little Girl was describing, there was no doubt in my Aunt’s mind that Daddy was gratifying himself in ways that didn’t involve penetration, but were just as awful. She promised to talk to momma and told me she would make it all stop. I was only privy to the screaming and yelling that took place downstairs after the disclosure. My mother had sent me upstairs after telling my aunt that “Eddy would never do that.”

It didn’t take daddy very long before he devised a plan to eliminate any suspicions that momma might have. I was taken to a field with a lot of trees and marshy grass. Daddy led me to one particular tree that had a large hole in it, just about where my shoulders came. My head was shoved into the hole, and another alter was created to handle the horror of that moment. The hole had been filled with garter snakes. Later that evening I went and told momma that I had been lying about what I said daddy had done to me. I was never able to speak out again, about that or any other sexual abuse that would take place. Where was Zorro when you needed him?

1953 also proved to be an important year for mind control when Allen Dulles was confirmed Director of the CIA. In a speech before the National Alumni Conference at Princeton University on April 10, 1953, he lectured his audience on "how sinister the battle for men's minds had become in Soviet hands." The human mind, Dulles warned was a "malleable tool," and the Red Menace had secretly developed "brain perversion techniques." Some of these methods were "so subtle and so abhorrent to our way of life that we have recoiled from facing up to them." Dulles continued, "The minds of selected individuals who are subjected to such treatment are deprived of the ability to state their own thoughts. Parrot-like, the individuals so conditioned can merely repeat the thoughts which have been implanted in their minds by suggestion from outside. In effect the brain becomes a phonograph playing a disc put on the spindle by an outside genius over which it has no control."

Three days after delivering this address Dulles authorized Operation MKULTRA. Originally established as a supplementary funding mechanism to the ARTICHOKE project, MKULTRA quickly grew into a mammoth undertaking that outflanked earlier mind control initiatives.

In 1978, Admiral Stansfield Turner, Director of the CIA, testified that of the 182 subprojects; 140 of them appeared to have connection with research into behavioral modification, drug acquisition and testing or administering drugs surreptitiously.

The 15 categories of subprojects were:

1. Research into the effects of behavioral drugs and/or alcohol: 17 subprojects not involving human testing, 14 subprojects definitely involving testing on human volunteers, and 6 subprojects involving tests on unwitting human beings.

2. Research on hypnosis: 8 subprojects, including two involving hypnosis and drugs in combination.

3. Seven subprojects on the acquisition of chemicals or drugs.

4. Four subprojects on the aspects of the magician's art, useful in covert operations; for instance, the surreptitious delivery of drug related material.

5. Nine subprojects on studies of human behavior sleep research, and behavioral change during psychotherapy.

6. Six subprojects on Library searches and attendance at seminars and international conferences on behavioral modifications.

7. Twenty-Three subprojects on motivational studies of defectors, assessments of behavior and training techniques.

8. Three subprojects on polygraph research

9. Three subprojects on funding mechanisms for MKULTRA's external research activities.

10. Six subprojects on research on drugs, toxins, and biologicals in human tissue, provision of exotic pathogens, and the capability to incorporate them in effective delivery systems.

11. Three subprojects on activities whose nature simply cannot be determined.

12. Three subprojects involving funding support for unspecified activities conducted with the Army Special Operations Division at Fort Detrick, Md.[62] Under the CIA's Project MKNAOMI, the Army assisted the CIA in developing, testing, and maintaining biological agents and delivery systems for use against humans as well as against animals and crops.

13. Single subprojects in such areas as the effects of electroshock, harassment techniques for offensive use, analysis of extrasensory perception, gas propelled sprays and aerosols, and four subprojects involving crop and material sabotage.

14. One or two subprojects on each of the following: blood grouping research; controlling the activities of animals; energy storage and transfer in organic systems; and stimulus and response in biological systems.

15) Three subprojects canceled before any work was done on them having to do with laboratory drug screening, research on brain concussion, and research on biologically active materials.[63]

Under Dulles MKULTRA funneled funds to 185 non-government researchers and assistants working for 80 institutions. These institutions included 44 colleges or universities, 15 research foundations or chemical or pharmaceutical companies and the like, 12 hospitals or clinics and 3 penal institutions.[64]

As *Pravda* said in 1951, "If ever the spy Allen Dulles should arrive in Heaven through somebody's absent-mindedness, he would begin to blow up the clouds, mine the stars and slaughter the angels." Allen Dulles cared little for the methods that were used to accomplish the secret projects he funded. Proof of this is clear when you look at his attempts in 1950 to convince John McCloy to intervene in General Alexander von Falkenhausen's trial. Von Falkenhausen had executed hostages in Belgium throughout the war and ordered the deportation of 25,000 Jews to death camps. Von Falkenhausen drew a twelve-year sentence but was freed after three weeks.[65]

His brother, John Foster Dulles was U.S. Secretary of State from 1953-1959. In *Containing Communism* Mr. Dulles was quoted as saying, "President Eisenhower surrendered all his power to me."[66] As long as John Foster Dulles was Secretary of State, Allen Dulles had no need to "chafe under political control." Both brothers "placed supreme confidence in their personal judgments. They were completely trusted and were able to act at will and shielded from any unpleasant consequences."[67] History, as you now see has proven this to be true.

Chapter 4 - Men Behind the Shadow Government

As high commissioner of occupied Germany, John McCloy was instrumental in the early release and commutation of numerous Nazi war criminals.[xxiii] In October 1950, he commuted the five-year sentence of Baron Ernst von Weizsacker, who as a Nazi Foreign Office official had been convicted of complicity in the deportation of some six thousand Jews from France to Poland.[68] In January of the following year, McCloy announced that five of the fifteen death sentences from the Nuremberg judgments would be carried out. He then reduced the sentences of sixty-four out of the remaining seventy-four war criminals. One third of these were to be released immediately.[69] He also reduced the sentences of all the remaining convicted doctors who had experimented on concentration-camp inmates. One doctor was paroled immediately for time served, and the life sentences of five others were reduced. One SS officer who confessed to having personally executed fifteen hundred Jews was reprieved because he had later refused to carry out any further murders.

- SS Lieutenant Heinz Schubert had his death sentence reduced to ten years. Schubert had signed a confession and testified that he had personally supervised a “special action” in which seven or eight hundred people were machined-gunned down at Simferopol.[70]

- SS Officer Walter Schellenberg, who had helped trap and exterminate the Jews of France, was also awarded clemency.[71]

- SS Brigadefuhrer Franz Six, convicted of murdering 200 people in the Ghetto of Smolensk served only four years in prison before McCloy gave him clemency. Dr. Six said in 1944, “The physical elimination of Eastern Jewry would deprive Jewry of its biological reserves. The Jewish Question must be solved not only in Germany but also internationally.”[72]

One must ask the question, “How could a man who was responsible for such actions, rise to such power in the government and private circles of the United States?” Prior to the war, McCloy was a senior partner with Milbank, Tweed, whose most important client was the Rockefeller family’s bank, Chase National. McCloy also provided counsel to Mohammad Reza Pahlavi, the Shah of Iran. The shah maintained a personal account and the Pahlavi Foundation account with Chase Bank. Allen Dulles was also a legal adviser to the shah.[73]

In 1947 McCloy was named to head the World Bank, which was made up of 40 countries with $8 billion in assets. McCloy and two other board members spent three months in Nelson Rockefeller’s personal home organizing the bank along commercial lines.[74]

In 1948 McCloy participated in a classified study of the CIA. He attended weekly meetings where he questioned CIA Director Rear Admiral Roscoe H. Hillenkoetter, George Kennan, Bill Donovan, Frank Wisner, and many other officials of the State Department and National Security Council. He recommended that the CIA should be given autonomy and should do more in the field of covert propaganda to wage psychological warfare. Frank Wisner, as head of the Office of Policy Coordination, which ran covert political action operations had his budget grow from $4.7 million in 1949 to $82 million in just three years.[75]

In the 50’s McCloy became chairman of the Chase National Bank and David Rockefeller became his protégé. He and David were both members of the Council on Foreign Relations. Also members of the CFR were Allen Dulles, Henry Kissinger, and Henry Heald, president of the Ford Foundation.

Henry Ford II recruited McCloy in 1953 to serve on the Ford Foundation’s board. He was one of three people on the board who could approve funding for CIA projects that took place under the cover of the Ford Foundation. He went on to replace Rowen Gaither as chairman of the Ford Foundation.

Joseph Johnson, president of the Carnegie Endowment for International Peace was another member of the CFR as well as Dean Rusk, president of the Rockefeller Foundation; Nelson Rockefeller; John D. Rockefeller III, Harry Guggenheim, Marshall Field, and John Whitney.[76]

To say that John McCloy rubbed shoulders with some of the most influential people of that decade is an understatement. As Henry Kissinger said in his autobiography *The White House Years*, "Presidents and Secretaries of State found in John McCloy a reliable pilot through treacherous shoals. He rarely supplied solutions to difficult problems, but he never failed to provide the psychological and moral reassurance that made solutions possible." In fact Henry served as a consultant to the president's Psychological Strategy Board, which Hoover regarded as a rival intelligence group. C.D. Jackson, the chief of the Psychological Strategy Board frequently consulted McCloy. Kai Bird referred to this as a "new rather shadowy executive agency that was supposed to help coordinate covert intelligence with sophisticated propaganda programs."[77]

According to Kai, McCloy was partially influenced by his friend Edward Meade Earle of Princeton's Institute for Advanced Study. A prominent historian, Earle had served on the OSS's Board of Analysts, and had helped Bill Donovan recruit academics for intelligence work during the war. By the early 1950's Earle was working with Allen Dulles and C. D. Jackson[xxiv] on various intelligence projects, including "some of the problems of 'psychological warfare' directed toward our allies."[78] Jackson said, "The three big ingredients of psychological warfare are money, no holds barred and no questions asked."[79]

Nelson Rockefeller, whose title was changed to Special Assistant for Cold War Strategy replaced C. D. Jackson as Special Assistant for Psychological Strategy in 1954. Officially Nelson was to give advice and assistance in the development of increased understanding and cooperation among all peoples. Unofficially the nature of the post was Presidential Coordinator for the CIA. As part of Nelson's responsibilities he attended meetings of the Cabinet, the Council on Foreign Economic Policy and the National Security Council, the highest policy making body in the government. He also functioned as the head of a secret unit called the Planning Coordination Group, consisting of himself, the Deputy Secretary of Defense, and the head of the CIA, Allen Dulles. This unit was charged with implementing National Security Council decisions.[80]

In 1979 John Loftus, working for the Office of Special Investigations made a trip to Suitland, Maryland to search the archives classified files for information on Nazi's that had been brought into the country. He was astounded to find twenty underground vaults, each one an acre in size, crammed floor to ceiling with classified files.[81] Loftus says that Nelson Rockefeller and Vice President Nixon had supervised the cover-up and burial of these files so that President Eisenhower could claim "plausible deniability."[82] In fact, years later when President Gerald Ford established a presidential commission to investigate the CIA, Vice-President Nelson Rockefeller was named to head it. John Loftus reports that knowledgeable observers compared the appointment to setting the fox to guard the henhouse, because of Rockefeller's links to the intelligence community and his knowledge of covert activities.[83]

In a recently declassified CIA file, the intelligence gathering community is summed up quite well,

"The life blood of intelligence is information. Collection of information is the most characteristic activity of the entire intelligence business. Accordingly, an intelligence organization cannot exist until it does a broad and systematic job of collecting. But in this very task lie methodological problems, which are so tough as to be almost insolvable, and in their unsolved state are a perpetual source of inefficiency.

A certain important fraction of the knowledge which intelligence must produce is collected through highly developed secret techniques. Herein begins perhaps the major methodological problem of the collection stage of the intelligence process.

It begins with compartmentation of the clandestine services. This compartmentation is dictated by the established necessity of secrecy. An absolute minimum of people must know "anything" about the operation, and the greatest amount of caution and dissimulation must attend its every move. But unless the clandestine services watch sharply it can become its own worst enemy. For if it allows the mechanisms of security to cut it off from some of the most significant lines of guidance, it destroys it own reason for existence.

With a high wall of impenetrable secrecy, it is constantly in danger of collecting the wrong information and not collecting the right. This danger is intensified by the very way the clandestine services operate. It involves highly complicated "tradecraft" techniques, clandestine agent recruitment and handling, nets and subnets, security and reliability of communications, and so on. Isolated by the security barrier, the perfecting of these techniques sometimes threatens to become and end in itself."[84]

All the key players were now in various positions of the government to carry on their covert activities under a cloak of secrecy. Shadow Government was indeed an appropriate name for the people who would move behind the scenes to enlist children to fight their Cold War for them by making them guinea pigs, and in some cases hypnotized operatives, spies, assassins and couriers.

Chapter 5 – Training for the Agency

Precautions must be taken not only to protect operations from exposure to enemy forces but also to conceal these activities from the American public in general. The knowledge that the Agency is engaging in unethical and illicit activities would have serious repercussions in political and diplomatic circles and would be detrimental to the accomplishment of its mission.

CIA Inspector General in assessing the benefits of Mind Control Research[85]

I was told that I worked for "The Agency." It was in actuality, key men and women in the CIA and other branches of the government, in league with certain extremely wealthy individuals who wanted to remain in the shadows shaping the outcome of world events.[xxv] As Lt. Col. Roberts said when he testified before a special joint committee of the Wisconsin State Legislature, "The most secret knowledge, a science which outdates history, is the science of control over people, governments and civilizations. The foundation of this ultimate discipline is the control of wealth. Through the control of wealth come the control of public information and the necessities of life. Through the control of news media comes thought control. Through the control of basic necessities comes direct control of people. A significant portion of the American public is yet to become aware of the Invisible Government of Monetary Power."

Early on, an information hot line was established between these people of money and power and people like Allen Dulles, Sid Gottlieb, Richard Nixon, and others. This hotline enabled them to be kept informed of the content of these experiments and who was participating. They in turn, found ways of blackmailing certain of these politicians, doctors, and scientists, so that they could control and manipulate some of these experiments. They hoped to eventually benefit personally from certain research findings. Many of the experiments started under Bluebird, Artichoke and MKULTRA continued behind the scenes, covertly and independent of the funding and knowledge of most of our government Black Projects with Black Budgets. Burton Hersh, describes the no questions asked as giving "rise to that generation's intelligence barons, its mysterious, mission-oriented professionals who held themselves accountable to nobody, unconcerned with constitutional limitations"[86]

The Senate Intelligence Committee concluded in 1976 that the CIA used compartmentation in the MKULTRA Program to conceal their "unethical and illicit activities."[87] Senator Frank Church, who led the congressional investigation of the CIA's improper and unlawful actions said that agency was "a rogue elephant" in the 1950s and 1960s, operating above the law and out of control as it plotted assassinations, illegally spied on thousands of Americans, and even drugged our own citizens in its effort to develop new weapons for its covert arsenal." The Agency would use any methods it needed to achieve its goals. Brice Taylor, in her book *Starshine: One Woman's Valiant Escape from Mind Control* refers to these people as the Council.[88]

In an interview for *Nexus Magazine* written by David G. Guyatt, former CIA/DIA deep-cover agent "Chip" Tatum takes this a step further when he speaks of a group he calls "Pegasus." [89]He says that this group operated on behalf of the US and other governments, undertaking tasks that ranged from narcotics smuggling to assassinations. He said that Pegasus was established during the Eisenhower years as a secret group inside the CIA to spy on that agency on behalf of the President. According to Tatum, the directors of Pegasus meet once a year in secret conclave following G7 meetings. The mission of Pegasus, Tatum explains is "to 'align' world leaders and financiers to our [US] policies and standards."

Lyman Kirkpatrick, who had been appointed Inspector General of the CIA in the fifties by Frank Wisner, characterized the entire covert operation as pretty much a matter of "who's manipulating whom." In an interview in 1982 with Burton Hersh he said, "That's why controls are important. It's done through money, the development of friendships, of mutuality of interests. You get people so much in your debt, under your control that they can't break off or betray you."[90]

Burton Hersh also reported that Allen Dulles relied on commercial associations to mask the Agency's fund transfers. He says, "The J. Henry Schroder Banking Corporation and the Schroder Trust functioned as prime depositories for CIA monies throughout the fifties and sixties, long after the New York branch had formally been reabsorbed by the London-based J. Henry Schroder and Company, Limited. Like the Kaplan Foundation and half a dozen others which ultimately served as conduits between the accumulating fronts and the proliferation of committees and congresses and institutes and societies, the banking nexus depended on how many layers of concealment an operation might require."[91]

Less you immediately dismiss this as just another conspiracy theory, in November 1998 in an interview with *The Observer*, the former US Ambassador to Chile, Edward Korry told a remarkable story. He said it was important to take out of the shadows the last case of US 'dollar diplomacy'. Korry described still classified cables, and information censored in papers but now available under the US Freedom of Information Act. He had served under Presidents Kennedy, Johnson, and Nixon, and he told how US companies, from cola to copper used the CIA as an international debt collection agency and investment security force.

President-elect Gregory Palast reported that the CIA's October 1970 plot to overthrow Chile's Salvador Allende was the direct result of a plea for action a month earlier by PepsiCo chairman, Donald Kendall to the company's former lawyer, President Richard Nixon. Richard Helms testified that he thought Nixon's determination to act was the doing of Donald Kendall who had arranged for the owner of the company's Chilean bottling operation, Agustin Edwards and himself to meet National Security Adviser Henry Kissinger and John Mitchell for breakfast on September 15 1970. Hours later, Nixon called in his CIA chief, Richard Helms and according to Helm's handwritten notes ordered the CIA to prevent Allende's inauguration. In fact Nixon told Helms to leave no stone unturned in the attempt to block Allende's confirmation.

Korry told Palast that in 1963 American-based firms had kicked back millions of dollars to pay for well over half of Eduardo Frei, the Christian Democratic party candidates' successful election campaign in return for questionable, guarantees and insurance arranged by the US government. They had invested 2 billion dollars in the Chilean economy, consequently the US government committed extraordinary monetary, intelligence and political resources to protect them.

When US financial and political investments faced unexpected jeopardy in 1970 because of Allende's plans to nationalize their operations, President Nixon came under intense pressure from his political donors in business. The president was aware that the owner of Chile's phone company, ITT Corporation, was illegally channeling funds into Republican Party coffers. Nixon could not ignore ITT. An ITT board member, ex-CIA director John McCone, pledged Kissinger $1 million in support of CIA action to prevent Allende from taking office. Separately, Anaconda Copper and other multinationals under the aegis of David Rockefeller's Business Group for Latin America offered $500,000 to buy influence with Chilean congressmen to reject confirmation of Allende's victory. Korry vetoed the cash for payoffs from Anaconda and the other firms. Korry disclosed that he even turned in an army major to the Chilean authorities who planned to assassinate Allende. Korry said he was unaware the officer was linked to the CIA plotters.

Another secret group was made up of scientists called the "Golden Fleece." The Pentagon-funded Institute picked these men and women in the late 1950s for defense analysis. Their jobs were to do some of the most esoteric and complex defense research. The whole success of this enterprise depended upon establishing it as a mark of highest prestige to be invited into this elite group.[92] The

Pentagon immediately received the benefit of the talents of these “Jason’s” upon ARPA’s[xxvi] birth in 1958. ARPA officials said that some 20 “Jason’s,” an elite, informal, almost secret group was still at its disposal in 1976. Over the years, the “Jason’s” have been holding quiet brainstorming sessions at hideaways around the country to feed ARPA ideas.”[93] Supposedly these scientists represented the cream of the scholarly community in technical fields, and helped the government produce many of its most advanced technical weapons systems since the end of the Second World War.

Daniel Kevles, in his book *The Physicists* says that some forty Jason’s, many with their families, would spend six or seven summer weeks pondering defense issues at Woods Hole, Massachusetts or La Jolla, California. He talks about “their work on the development of an electronic barrier, a system of electronic sensing devices to be strung across a no-man’s-land between North and South Vietnam that would blow up anyone, civilian or combatant, who ventured into the area.” He goes on to quote Fred Bramfman, the director of an anti war research group in Washington, D.C. as saying that the group’s work in opposition to the strategic arms race meant that the Jason’s “are lesser, rather than greater, war criminals. They are dramatic examples of how it is possible to be a moderate, well-meaning, decent war criminal.”[94]

I wonder if they too were privy to the secret weapon that the CIA was building? Children as mind-controlled operatives certainly were advanced technical weapons. Some of the training and experimentation that many of us became involved in was a clear indication of what lengths these power hungry egomaniacs were willing to go, to accomplish their New World Order. I detest these people for invading my mind and creating alters for their own evil purposes.

These mind-controlled (MC) parts were told they had a “Nobler Purpose” and that they “Must survive at any cost.” As such, suicide programs were layered into my system in the event that I should start to heal and tell. The strength and courage it has taken to break the hold these men had on my mind, and not react to this suicide programming is a clear indicator of the beauty of the spirit that lay within each of us.

I was able to retain a spark of life that held on tightly, even though it was programmed to give up. Only those who have walked in the shoes of the betrayed innocents can truly comprehend the horror of what I and others like me have been forced to endure. Thank God, that some of us have held on and worked at healing. The music of our souls is being painted on the canvass of our hearts and minds. You can hear it in our tears sometimes, and you can hear it in our songs of joy. You can hear it at night when everyone else is asleep and our minds keep us awake with dialogue from the distant past. I refuse to let anyone take this innocence and beauty and music from me again. That’s why it is so important for me to tell you the rest of my story.

The Agency arranged with Grandfather to start my sexual training in 1954. Being the pedophile that he was, I’m sure he thoroughly enjoyed the part they gave him in my training. By this time, he had sold the greenhouse and moved a half block away into a new brick home with a basement. It was this basement that I would come to despise more than any other symbol of my childhood. In 1954, I was still only six years old and attending second grade. I was forced to participate in a traumatizing initiation rite of manhood for my twelve-year-old brother on

Grandfather's pool table in the basement. I was to totally lose my sexual self to a new persona created that day from the trauma I was forced to endure. I stared at the swinging lamp above the pool table while the initiation was culminated, and lost myself in a haze of darkness for the next thirty years.

Grandfather gave the new part created that day the name Carlotta. From that day forward he trained her in various ways to please one particular man. He was a very wealthy man who I knew as Rocky. He contributed large sums of money to the "Cause"; consequently, whatever he wanted he got.

Grandfather would arrange to have me stay the night when he had a mind to train me. He would leave his glass eye on the bedside table and I would take his hand and follow him to the basement. Training was tedious and often I would be slapped for not doing it right. I became like an automaton, as I stared into the hole where his eye should have been, listened and followed his instructions.

Two years later my grandfather and an uncle, (Norman's father) used the basement for their kiddy porn productions. One afternoon, I was listening to Paul Harvey's noon broadcast on the radio with grandfather. He always sat by the window overlooking the lake and rocked and listened attentively whenever Paul spoke. To Grandfather it was almost a holy event, and anyone who dared disturb him during the broadcast would face his wrath. When the broadcast was finished he walked over to the incinerator door that was in the wall in the kitchen and motioned for me to come over. He grabbed my arm and proceeded to push my head with his other hand into the opening. I remember the smell and the heat, and I could feel my face flushing. It seemed like an eternity before he pulled my head away. He marched me down the basement stairs, and when we got next to the furnace he showed me the flames and informed me that this is where anything he stuck in the incinerator door upstairs went. Ashes, that's what I remember. Ashes are all that would remain of me if I didn't cooperate.

It wasn't long till the kiddy porn photography session started. I was nowhere to be found. I had created Mary, a new personality, to take my place after the threat of burning in the inferno that I saw inside the furnace. Sometimes I would be alone and asked to pose in what I now know were provocative poses. Other times Grandfather would have some of the other grandchildren there with me. The fear he was able to produce guaranteed cooperation.

I remember two other things about that year. One is my fourth grade teacher's name and that she wore beautiful shoes. The other is that I joined the Girl Scouts, and I had to go through an initiation ceremony where I stood on a mirror. As harmless as this was for the rest of the brownie troop, as soon as I heard the word initiation, I left and my alter Carlotta came. The rest is still a blur.

1957 was to bring with it one last baby for Momma. In December quite near my tenth birthday, my last brother was born. By age thirty-two, Momma had given birth to eight children. By Mothers' Day, the following year, she was clinging to life from a hysterectomy.

Daddy took us all to the hospital and the sight we saw terrified each of us. Hanging from a pole was a bag of blood and another bag with clear fluids. Momma looked all white, and she managed a weak smile when he paraded us all in. I wanted to crawl up on the bed and lay my head on her shoulder, but all she could do is squeeze my hand and tell me to be a good "Little Girl." Oh momma, why did you have to say those words? I desperately loved and missed her, but my little girl part hated her for lying there and leaving her unprotected at home.[xxvii]

When momma was finally allowed to come home from the hospital, daddy had already arranged for Catholic Charities to provide help to take care of all of us kids, the cleaning, and cooking. A parade of women came in and out of our house. My first and favorite was a big black lady, just like the one on the front of the pancake box. She was kind, loving and figured out too much too fast, so daddy had her replaced with another black lady. Sofronia liked daddy's whiskey that he kept above the cupboard. He would have a drink every morning just to get him started, and it wasn't long before he figured out that she had been watering the whiskey. At least that's the story he told Catholic Charities. She was probably totally flawless too. The last lady was Jezel. She was French and spoke with the most wonderful accent I ever heard. When Momma got on her feet, her services became "No Longer Needed."

It wasn't long after she got on her feet that Momma ran away from home for the first time. It was to begin a pattern that stayed with her through my high school years and beyond. Daddy told us that if we would only be better children, she wouldn't run away. I remember the famous speech he gave in front of the aqua couch with the big buttons. We were all gathered around and told it was "All our fault." I know each of us that were old enough to understand, believed him.[xxviii]

Guilt was a wonderful control mechanism and daddy used it effectively every chance he got. He had such control over momma that she never had a chance. He tracked momma down at her sister's home several hundred miles away where she thought she had escaped him. He brought her home and into the mental hospital she went.

Back in those days, a husband, with the cooperation of a doctor could have his wife committed. Our family doctor was also a personal friend with daddy. They spent a lot of time hunting and fishing together. This was useful not only in getting momma locked up, but in having no questions asked when broken bones were to be set, illnesses tended to, or pills to be dispensed.

Peter Breggin in *Toxic Psychiatry* tells how H. C. Tien,[xxix] a Michigan psychiatrist would draw attention in the late 1970's and early 80's by using electroshock to obliterate and reprogram the mind of a woman to make her a more suitable housewife.[95] He would utilize ECT (electro convulsive therapy) to erase memory and personality, thereby eradicating the woman's identity; in order to reprogram it according to a "blueprint" worked out with the husband prior to the shock. Tien called his method ELT, explaining that E is for electricity, L is for love, and T is for therapy. I'm quite sure this is what daddy had hoped to accomplish with momma, but it never lasted. It certainly makes me wonder if Dr. Tien wasn't testing out these theories under cover in the fifties for the CIA.

I'll never forget the first time I was taken to the State Hospital to visit momma. I was still living at home with daddy and my three older brothers. My four younger siblings had been farmed out to different relatives. I was a physical and emotional wreck from the nightly molestations. My hands shook uncontrollably all of the time, and I was unable to eat or sleep. My brothers took to calling me "Jervous and Nerky."

Daddy was bound and determined to keep me quiet, so we made a trip to the hospital. I had no realization that my mother was behind locked doors. When we were let in by the nurse and shown to a day room, there were scads of people walking around in a daze. Momma was one of them. She had undergone a series of electric shocks that left her a walking zombie. When she finally came home, so much of her memory was gone that she had to relearn my youngest brothers' birthday, along with a lot of other personal information she had forgotten. I don't recall anything that happened during that visit to the hospital until we left, and the nurse closed and locked the door behind us. Daddy grabbed hold of my hand and turned me around and said, "If you ever tell what's happening at home Little Girl, you'll end up here too."

I believed. When it came to a threat, daddy always carried through.

In a letter to me, my brother gave me new insight into what this time of moms' life was like. He writes, "I'm sure that you know that mom and I were very close. I was probably closer to her than any of her children. We used to talk for hours when we had a chance. She was the bravest person that I ever knew. When I was in high school mom went to the state hospital.[xxx] I worked in the kitchen at St. Vincent's Hospital after school. Dad always thought I worked five nights a week, but I only worked three. The other two evenings I would take a bus to the State Hospital to see mom. It was a horrible time of her life, but she didn't want to leave. She didn't even want to come home on the weekends they offered her toward the end of her stay. We talked for hours and hours and much of which she told me, I didn't understand or thought that she really was a little crazy. Later I figured out that she was the sanest person I ever knew. She was terrified of the electric shock treatments that they were giving her. She looked at it as if it were a form of torture. They called it treatment. It was barbaric. How could people with any conscience scramble somebody's brain with electricity? After her "Treatments" she would be disassociated and depressed for days, but still she chose to stay rather than come home. She often told me that she could at any time tell the doctors the right answers to be released, but she chose not to. Well at fifteen years old I understood little of what she told me, but later I understood a lot. That poor woman is certainly in heaven, because she went through hell on earth. I don't know if you knew how much she hated dad. Let me tell you from what she used to say, I could not comprehend any hate that intense. It was the only emotion she had for him. She was also terrified of him. The only person that mom hated more than dad was his father. I never knew why, but she despised him more than anything or anyone in this world."

Momma wasn't alone in receiving electroshock to make her more submissive and alter her personality. Dr. D. Ewen Cameron of the Allan Memorial Institute of Psychiatry, McGill University in Montreal, Canada was doing MKULTRA experiments with electroshock and drugs for the CIA. The CIA funded Dr. Cameron's work through a cover organization called the Society for the Investigation of Human Ecology in New York founded by Cornell University neurologist Harold Wolff.[xxxi] Grants were made to eight universities as well as several individual researchers for mind control experiments with the Society being the CIA's cover mechanism.[96] Wolff had originally been commissioned by Allen Dulles to do an official study of Soviet and Chinese brainwashing techniques in 1953. Wolff coincidentally was treating Allen Dulles' son for brain damage from a head wound he suffered in Korea.

Dr. Cameron had headed Allan Memorial since 1943, when the Rockefeller Foundation had donated funds to set up a psychiatric facility at McGill University.

He was later elected president of the American Psychiatric Association in 1953 and went on to become the first president of the World Psychiatric Association. Such a notable list of accomplishments for a heartless man whose experiments would rival some that took place in Nazi Germany. I find it very curious that he was appointed in 1945 to the American panel to examine Rudolf Hess at the Nuremberg trials, and then later carried out experiments that would result in transforming patients into as Arlene Tyner reported, "virtual vegetables."[97]

Cameron's experiments funded under MKULTRA Subproject 68 were called depatterning or "psychic driving." He combined electro convulsive therapy with chemically induced sleep therapy. The intensive electroshocks used in these experiments were not the same form of ECT used routinely in the treatment of patients suffering from depression. Both the voltage and the number of shocks administered were greatly increased. Instead of stopping after the procedure had induced one grand mal seizure, the subjects were shocked again and again until no further seizures could be elicited. According to Jim Turner, one of the lawyers for Cameron's victims, there was no question that this was a profoundly intrusive and destructive form of electroshock, which was far different from that which was conventionally used for therapeutic purposes.[98]As Peter Schrag says in his book *Mind Control*, "The heavier the technology, the more difficult it is to distinguish treatment from torture."[99]

While sleeping, patients would be forced to listen to messages designed to reprogram their behavior. These messages were delivered through pillow speakers hooked to a mega-recorder with eight separate playback units enabling them to do eight patients at one time. Sometimes running wires to their legs and shocking them at the end of the message intensified the effect. In some cases he even used curare to paralyze patients that were not in drug induced sleeps, as patients hated sitting still and listening to these repetitious messages. Cameron wrote that psychic driving provided a way to make "direct, controlled changes in personality." One of Cameron's Canadian victims, Rita Zimmerman, was "depatterned" through a total of 30 electroshocks. She underwent 56 days of prolonged drug-induced sleep, received 14 days of negative "psychic driving," and 18 days of positive "psychic driving."

John Marks reports in *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate*, how Cameron wrote that his patients moved through three distinct stages: loss of memory, loss of space-time imaging, and in the third stage all anxiety disappeared and there was complete amnesia for all events in his life. Working with his assistant Leonard Rubenstein, Cameron experimented with sensory deprivation combined with drugs to break down the subjects will and leave them open to the taped messages. In an August 2, 1977 New York Times interview, Rubenstein admitted the their work was directly related to brainwashing. He said the CIA had investigated brainwashing among soldiers who had been in Korea and we in Montreal started brainwashing patients instead of using drugs.

Peter Schrag reports how Robert Dies, a clinical psychologist at the Institute for Living in Hartford, Connecticut viewed ECT. Dies wrote that ECT had been recommended for the patient because of his pathological behavior, and that his symptoms were unacceptable and must be eliminated. Conformity by the patient represented protective action to avert expected punishment. He also wrote that ECT could be characterized as having a decidedly negative reinforcement value. Dr. Richard Rubin of Trenton, New Jersey told the Canadian Psychiatric

Association that the most effective use of ECT was to time the shock to coincide with the disturbing thought or behavior that the therapist was trying to eliminate.[100]

These were the methods Ewen Cameron used on me while my mother was institutionalized. I was about twelve years old and what Dr. Cameron did to me became burned into my mind. First I was given a shot of curare and placed in a box in a converted stable behind the hospital that housed a behavioral laboratory. Then snakes were put over my body and the lid was closed on the box. I was completely conscious but unable to move as a result of the curare. This trauma was to insure that I would never speak about what was to come later.[xxxii] How long I was encased in this box, I will never know. I created another alter to handle this traumatizing event that almost precipitated my demise from fear alone. It became the hardest memory I was to ever relive in my quest for integration. It was triggered when I was weeding in my gardens and a worm crawled across my hand. I went into a full-blown abreaction (an actual reliving of the event, accompanied by all the sensory stimulation and original emotional responses). My husband was in a panic as to what to do to trigger me out of the abreaction. My blood pressure had risen to an alarming rate and I was barely breathing. Finally, using a cold cloth on the back of my neck and talking ever so gently to me, he was able to revive me.

In 1991 at the time I relived this, I had no knowledge of who Dr. Cameron was, let alone his inclusion in the MKULTRA CIA experiments.[101] When I first saw a picture of this man, I became violently ill.

The sensory deprivation with curare that I experienced was similar to tests that neurologist Harold Wolff was performing for the CIA under MKULTRA Subproject 61. Like Cameron, Wolff believed that sensory deprivation made patients more receptive to the suggestions of the psychotherapist. In a CIA memo dated August 29, 1960 he compared the changes in behavior due to various kinds of stress (sensory deprivation, threatening life situations, mental disorders, peptic ulcers, etc.) to behavioral changes that were brought about by actual loss of cerebral tissue.

He also said, “It is well known that profound disturbances of the highest integrative functions, accompanied by pronounced disturbances of mood, thought, and behavior may be produced in people by exposing them to environments to which they can make no adequate adaptation, such as concentration camps, or prison procedures aimed at interrogation and indoctrination.”[102]

During these experiments he found that unusually high levels of neurokinin-forming enzymes were present in the cerebral spinal fluid of his patients. He also found that LSD-25 mimicked one apparent action of neurokinin, stimulation of respiration.

Harold Wolff was not only working for the CIA through the Human Ecology Society, but also for the Army. His name is mentioned in a declassified document dated January 1957 from the Army’s Inspector Generals Report on use of Volunteers in Chemical Agent Testing. The citation reads, “Letter, Chief of Research and Development to Dr. Harold G. Wolff, New York Hospital, subject Human Volunteer Tests with K Agents.”

The text says, “In 1957 several additional field type tests were conducted in and around Edgewood Arsenal. The first of these tests involved the use of a NIKE missile unit’s radar van at Aberdeen Proving Ground.[xxxiii] Available records indicated that 16 volunteers received LSD prior to attempting to perform the tracking and recording operations associated with the employment of radar equipment."

There seems to be no shortage of public information on the nature of the research that was conducted under the MKULTRA umbrella, you just need to know where to look for it. The U. S. Air Force helped sponsored the publication of *The Manipulation of Human Behavior*, a compilation of works in which many of the MKULTRA doctors cite the results of their experiments. The Human Ecology Society is listed in this book as helping to fund some of Harold Wolff, Martin Orne and Lawrence Hinkle's works which are published in this book. Other MKULTRA funded doctors such as Harold Abramson, George Estabrooks, and Seymour Kety are also cited. Many survivors consider it to be a scandal that the horror that we experienced could be embedded in the abstract detached language used in published books, papers, and reports.

I came to remember not only the experiment that Dr. Cameron was to perform on me, but also what Dr. Black (Dr. Mengele) was doing with the eggs he harvested after performing an abortion on me in Montreal. The day I read the headline "Genome Mapped, So What is Next?" was when I understood Dr. Black's purpose for this bizarre procedure.[103] I discovered that RNA reads DNA coding for a gene. Perhaps Mengele was one of the pioneers in genetic research, and I happened to be an available donor.

Dr. Cameron too had been experimenting with ribonuclease which is an enzyme that destroys RNA, and he found that senile patients had much more of the ribonuclease enzyme present in their blood streams than did non-senile older patients. He was trying to determine if RNA was involved in helping the brain to store away long-term memories. If that were the case, then too much ribonuclease would wipe out the engrams (memories) before they could become permanent. Perhaps the CIA was interested in using ribonuclease for destroying memories.

I was given an injection before the experiment started. After the procedure was finished fluid was removed from the back of my neck, near or in my spine. Someone even said, "Be careful or you'll end up paralyzing the little kid." I believe they could have been measuring the amount of RNA and other chemicals in my body after the programming session.

After the injection that I believe was a radioactive isotope, I had earphones placed on my head along with being hooked up to a machine that looked like a hair dryer. Commands were then used to call forth my alter "Guy," who had been created when I was four years old. I was placed before a blackboard, where they taught me how to run energy thru the meridians of the body and back to the brain to kill a target with a brain aneurysm. In order to do this, I was taught to contain all the anger and hate I had accumulated during traumas, and to release the "Red Fire" when cued.[xxxiv]

I know that all of this sounds like science fiction. It would be so easy to believe that none of this ever happened. As Arthur Schopenhauer said, "All truth passes through three stages. First, it is ridiculed. Second it is violently opposed. Third it is accepted as being self-evident." Look at the following pictures with an open mind and you will see the truth.

I drew this after remembering the experiments performed on me by Dr. Cameron in Montreal.

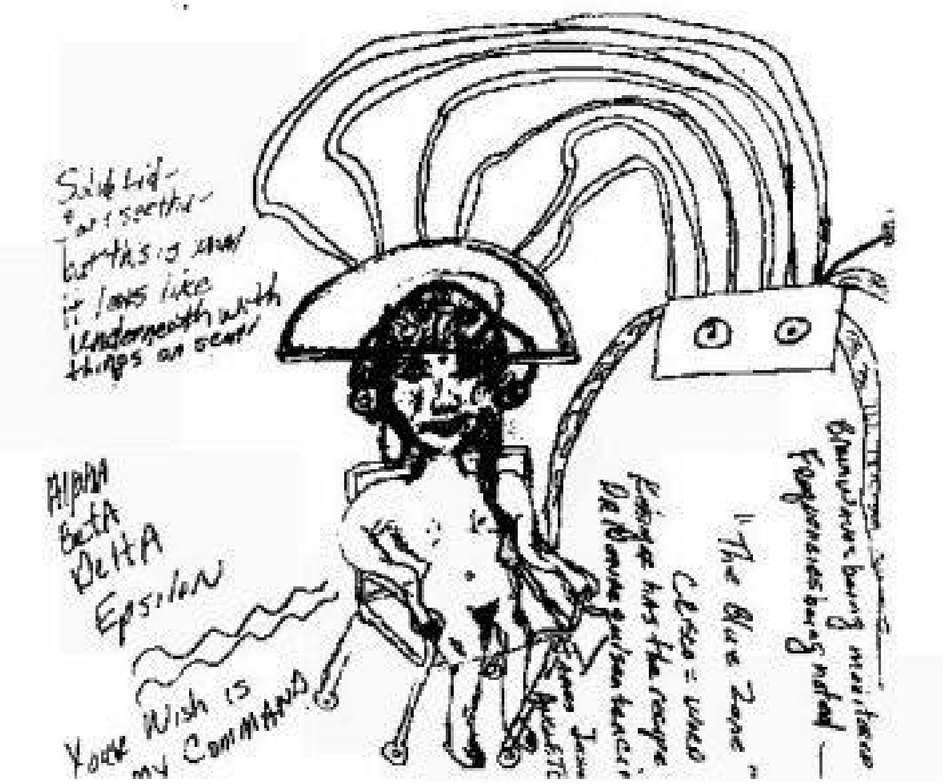
Solid lid — & rest soothing — but this is how it looks like underneath with things on scalp
Alpha
Beta
Delta
Epsilon
Your Wish is my Command
Brainwaves being monitored
Frequencies being noted —
"The Blue Zone"
Cisco = who
Kissinger has the recipe

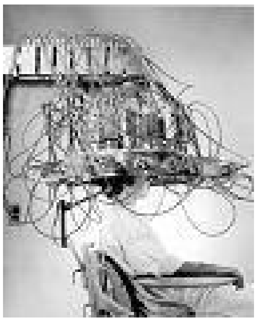

I found the picture next to it over a year later displayed at the Department of Energy's web site.[104] It is a Positron Emitter Detector (circa 1962).

I believe my alters and CIA personas were being identified within a specific area of my brain while the programming session was in progress. Radioactive isotopes attach to glucose and oxygen, which are the fuels of the brain. They are then tagged and collected by a computer that processes the images or information. As each alter was being programmed, detectable energy flashes were being picked up and a recording was made. This also assured the doctors that they indeed were working with different parts of my personality, separate and apart from the me that they would eventually awaken. This part returned to "normal" living with no knowledge of any of the events that had taken place during the programming session.

In a CIA declassified document dated January 1, 1950 interrogation techniques were discussed.[105] "Potentially useful secret drugs (and various brain damaging procedures) will be similarly tested in order to ascertain their fundamental effect upon brain function and upon the subject's mood, thought, behavior conditioning, memory and speech mechanisms...Where any of these studies involve potential harm to the subject, we expect the Agency to make available suitable subjects and a proper place for the performance of necessary experiments."

It is evident from this memo that there was a total lack of concern for the damage that would be inflicted to accomplish the purpose of these experiments. Why then would there be any concern for the age of the subject?

At the end of my programming by Dr. Cameron, a voice gave me trigger codes for self-destruction. This was done to prevent me from telling about the nature of this experiment in the event I would ever begin to remember. Taking the fluid samples from my spine and applying electric shock ended the experiment. I remember Dr. Cameron saying,

"Experiment 24: Create mini seizures, not unlike Temporal Lobe Epilepsy. Purpose: To create amnesia of the new Persona created."

When the electricity began going through me, I left my body and watched from above as it went into a short twitching, trembling, convulsing type of behavior. I especially remember the muscles in my right arm seemed to come alive and really jump. I kept seeing white lightening type flashes of light every time they gave me a jolt of electricity.

A declassified document describing a synopsis of experiments conducted after May 1, 1958 refers to new instrumentation being developed. "One further study which has been of considerable interest to us has been the investigation of the subjective pain experience associated with electric shock. A preliminary attempt has been made to scale this along the lines of Wolff, Hardy, and Goodell's efforts. In conjunction with this, a new kind of shock electrode is being developed which may control spacing of contact points better than previously possible."[106]

From January 1957 until September 1960, Dr. Cameron's project received $64,242.44 in CIA funds.[107] According to an October 31, 1978 memorandum by Assistant CIA General Counsel William Allard, which specifically assessed the Agency's involvement in the Montreal experiment, substantial funds had been flowing from the CIA to McGill in support of the project subsequent to 1956.[108] When the CIA stopped funding him, Cameron received $57,750 from the Canadian Government to continue his research from 1961 to 1964.[109] A truly ironic fact found in Dr. Cameron's application for a grant for these experiments in 1957 is his listing that McGill University had Federal tax exemption for scientific apparatus for teaching and/or research, and that grants from the United States organizations could become tax deductible if the checks were made payable to Friends of McGill University, Inc.[110]

The actual number of patients on whom Cameron reported trying varieties of his experimental techniques is reported as 332; although as Anne Collins reports in: *In the Sleep Room* that in later years he took to reporting only the cases that had what he considered interesting or positive results.[111] In 1988 nine of these Canadian survivors agreed to an out-of-court settlement of $750,000 after an eight-year long battle with CIA lawyers.

John Gittinger, CIA agent and psychologist was Ewen Cameron's project officer. In testimony before Congress on August 3, 1977, Gittinger responds to Senator Kennedy's questions on his involvement.

Gittinger: "My responsibilities...was not directly related to drugs at all. I was a psychologist charged with the responsibility of trying to develop as much information as I could on various cultures, overseas cultures, anthropological type data, if you follow what I mean. I was also engaged in trying to work out ways and means of assessing people and understanding people. I originally became involved in this through working on Chinese culture, and over a series of time I was introduced to the problem of brainwashing, which is the thing that really was the most compelling thing in relationship to this, and became charged with the responsibility of trying to find out a little bit about interrogation techniques."[112]

In further testimony he said, "By 1962 and 1963, the general idea we were able to come up with is that brainwashing was largely a process of isolating a human being, keeping him out of contact, putting him out of control, putting him under long stress in relationship to interviewing and interrogation, and that they could produce any change that way without having to resort to an kind of esoteric means."[xxxv]

On January 19, 1983 in an oral deposition, Gittinger testified concerning the CIA involvement with Cameron as follows:

"Now that was a foolish mistake. We shouldn't have done it...As I said, I'm sorry we did it. Because it turned out to be a terrible mistake."

Gittinger concluded that if he had it to do over again, "I would refuse to support him or be interested in him."[113]

One of the programs instilled in me by Ewen Cameron was to psychically kill Mao Tse-tung with a brain aneurysm. When my alter Guy remembered this programming in 1999, he thought Mao was still alive. Guy's handler had never initiated his programming command, so when he was brought out of Shadowland where he was discovered, he was still awaiting orders to release the "Red Fire." The cued words that were supposed to be spoken were, "When the Eagle Fly's, Mao Tse-tung Must Die." To find out Mao was dead and gone was truly a relief for my Guy alter, and the first step in integrating him into my total personality.

In 1964 at the age of 16, I was taken to an underground military facility to demonstrate these psychic abilities that had been perfected with these brainwashing techniques. I took an elevator ride deep below the earth, and then rode a golf cart down some very long hallways arriving in a cavern that was large enough to hold a missile upright and still have room overhead. I was placed in a chair and an intravenous drip was hooked up. I listened as the head of the demonstration told the others attending that if I were to get "out of control," the man attending me would inject a sedative, and I would immediately be made unconscious. I have to admit I was feeling sorry for the poor man that had to stand by me with the syringe. He didn't have much choice but to comply. There were mostly all old people present, the "Geritol" set.[114] One man was even in a wheelchair with oxygen tanks aboard. They went into a control room with glass windows for viewing, and watched as I was ordered to direct the "Red Fire" at something or someone behind a concrete barrier. I can't tell you whether or not I was successful, as I don't remember. Maybe that is for the best.

This does sound totally ridiculous in retrospect, but no more ridiculous than Sidney Gottlieb providing poison to kill Fidel Castro. As part of the CIA's assassination plots, he developed a poison handkerchief to kill an Iraqi colonel, an array of toxic gifts to be delivered to Fidel Castro, and a poison dart to kill a leftist leader in the Congo.

In the Dark Side of Camelot, Seymour Hersh describes how this secret program of assassination became known as “Executive Action” when Kennedy was inaugurated.[115] William K. Harvey was put in charge of this secret program code named ZR/RIFLE. Burton describes the former FBI agent as “short and fat, with bulging eyes, a raspy voices and a serious drinking problem. He often walked around with two pearl-handled pistols tucked into his belt and bragged incessantly about his success with women.”

Gottlieb met with him in January 1961, five days after Kennedy’s inauguration. They discussed Castro, Lumumba, and Trujillo as potential targets. On the next day Harvey met with Arnold Silver, the CIA’s station chief in Luxembourg, and talked about recruiting agents for the ZR/RIFLE program. Hersh reports there was much talk of security and the need not to put anything in writing, “No other agencies. No project on paper...Never mention word assassination.”

Earlier in 1960, Gottlieb came up with the idea of infecting a handkerchief and mailing it to Iraq via the CIA station in New Delhi, India. They were trying to get rid of General Abdul Karim Kassem, the military strongman of Iraq. Sidney Gottlieb told Hersh, “It was not an assassination. They just wanted him to get sick for a long time. I went to Bissell and he said go ahead.”

Gottlieb also helped create a CIA assassination kit containing needles, rubber gloves, gauze masks, and lethal biological materials. Bissel ordered Gottlieb to the Congo with his kit in September 1960, to give the kit to Lawrence Devlin to poison Lumumba. Gottlieb told Hersh, “I did ask Bissell, ‘Was this our idea?’ The answer was that it came from ‘the highest source--President Eisenhower.”[116]

Perhaps our government took this apparent use of the mind to a different level. It could explain the bizarre nature of the experiments they performed on me. Chris Bucholtz reports on the Air Force’s use of the brain in an article he wrote in 1995.[117] He says,

“Scientists at the Aeronautical Systems Centre (ASC) at the US Air Force’s Wright Patterson AFB, Ohio are studying the use of brain-actuated control techniques as a means of controlling aircraft.[xxxvi] In the past the problem with thought-control techniques has been discerning the faint electromagnetic brain signals which accompany voluntary thought, from the flurry of “background noise” in the brain caused by everyday activity. In the ASC experiments, pilots in a simulator face two fluorescent lights, which pulse at 13.25 Hz. This causes nerve cells in the subject’s visual cortex to fire at the same frequency. Electrodes on their heads detect the resulting brain-wave patterns, feeding them to an amplifier and a filter. The filter picks out the 13.25.Hz waves and measures their power. A bar scale displays a measurement of these waves, which allows the subjects to learn how to vary the intensity of their brain responses.”

The “Red Fire” sounds like the same thing that the British philosopher Herbert Spencer suggested more than 100 years ago. He believed that each child was born with an energy-producing machine of some kind inside it, and that this energy must be released in some fashion or the child would “explode.”[118] In a 1994 article from Aviation Week and Space Technology , William Scott reports on an interview with a retired colonel who confirmed that the Army conducted experiments in the 1960s aimed at controlling air defense missiles with brainwaves.

Some of this becomes clearer when you look at a declassified CIA document dated January 1, l965.[119] This document is an account of what types of things were discovered on a trip to Russia. The document talks about hypnotized patients and acupuncture, and the variation of conductivity between the network points according to the patient's condition in hypnosis. It also talks about fastening electrodes to humans around the head with an open helmet that contains screw contact electrodes that can be moved about and brought into light but constant pressure contact. Many survivors besides me have drawn themselves with this helmet like device on. They go on to talk about a training device, which uses a cylindrical capacitor. This device can be used to study one's ability to concentrate and focus the mind, and by practice, one should be able to increase the minds ability to control the energy body. One hand holds the cylinder and the thumb and the forefinger of the other hand touches a silver-plated contact. The imagination of stress or excitement during the experiment can be used to alter the results.

The documents also talks about Telekinesis (PK) and an individual named Nelya K who actually caused a frog's heart to stop. She could influence the rhythm of other people and alter their skin condition, so as to produce burning feeling on contact. They also found that hypnosis could be used to enhance PK abilities and that autogenic training was used to help increase PK abilities. More than likely, Nelya K is Nina Kulagina mentioned earlier.

On May 26, 1995 The Herald (Glasgow) broke a story entitled "Brainwash Killers Still In Use." They reported that A Top-Secret project in the former Soviet Union in the 1970s turned soldiers and security agents into programmable "human weapons." They said the psychological weapon project relied on hypnosis and high-frequency radio waves to turn members of the Soviet security forces and military into fearless, conscienceless fighting machines. The Psychotronic Influence System relied on passwords and numbered codes to activate its subjects. After the KGB project's existence was made public hundreds of former Soviet soldiers, police, and KGB members sought health damages. Not so different sounding from what the Agency was attempting to do to me.

In a 1964 report on MKULTRA programs and participants, the use of children is made quite clear in response to the following,

"Have CIA personnel conducted experiments involving human subjects other than the experiment that involved R Frank Olsen an at least three other persons?

ORD (Office of Research and Development):

The one instance in which ORD personnel have been directly involved in conducting experiments with human subjects occurred in Orlando, Florida during December 1964. The subject allegedly had transdermal optical perception. The tests were observed by a contractor under a classified association contract, which had been funded through the (deleted) Fund. In addition to the contractor, the subject's father was present during all testing. No drugs were used. With this one exception, all ORD sponsored research involving human subjects has been conducted by contractors."[120]

Wasn't that nice of them to contract most of the dirty work out? In a 1973 report prepared for the Defense Advanced Research Projects Agency, better know as ARPA, an assessment study on paranormal research in the United States and

Soviet Union was conducted.[121] Derma-Optics was reported as being studied by the Soviets. It is described as a phenomenon where a subject could sense visual information through tactile skin receptors. They reported an experimental case early in 1960 with Rosa Kuleshova and several children in provincial villages who claimed they had the ability to read printed texts or to identify colors with skin surfaces while blindfolded.

This test in Orlando probably took place so that the U.S. could determine if there was any possibility that these reports were true. I allege they changed the name from Derma-Optics to transdermal for their own identification purposes. Transdermal optical perception could be translated in a couple of more ways. Across the skin of the eye, might mean remote viewing.

Joe McMoneagle, a retired US Army intelligence officer used remote viewing (RV) to go into the mind of Shaw Taylor to see through his eyes in an experiment carried out on The Paranormal World of Paul McKenna (ITV, UK). This method of using RV to enter the brains of other people is called remote sensing.[122] Remote sensing is another term that is used by the ORD when asked about its participation in experiments involving human subjects.

It may also mean ESP experiments, as in seeing through cards etc. In the same document it mentions an experiment that the CIA funded through the Office of Naval Research from 1966-1968 to determine whether unusual sensory processes could be used for intelligence purposes. They described this research as "Extrasensory research that involved the attachment of sensors for recording coincidence of brain waves in three subjects when only one of the three was stimulated by visual, auditory or tactal means."

Another CIA declassified document from 1969 contains a photocopy of a Bulletin of the William C. Menninger Dream Laboratory at the Maimonides Medical Center. It discusses a research paper done by Dr. Stanley Krippner summarizing the results from 55 experimental nights and 79 pilot nights, in which a single subject and a single agent (who attempted to send a picture) were used in telepathy studies.[123] It also discusses studies to investigate the relationship between ESP and the alpha state, and announces "an alpha training device has now been built for additional experimentation and funded by the Society for Comparative Philosophy, Sausalito, California."[124]

An April 1972 document says, "It may be worth considering that psychokinesis occurs via an energy 'exchange' or communication between the experimenter and the object."[125] Then a P.S. is added explaining why it is so difficult to obtain information on this subject through FOIA requests. The P.S. says, "Would like to file with Plant Sensors File."

The experiments that Ewen Cameron used with me were similar to what Dr. Bekhtereva was doing at the Bekhtereva Brain Institute in Leningrad.[xxxvii] Instead of using radioactive isotopes, she bored tiny holes into the patients' skulls and inserted gold electrodes (bunches of six to eight coated wires) that were each one twelfth of an inch shorter than the next. As a result, each then monitored a different level of cells. The electrodes were attached to an electroencephalograph and the researchers could see the bioelectrical exchanges between the cells. By logging these exchanges the researchers could determine where information they gave the patient was stored in the brain.[126] Part of Harold Wolff's budget for September 1960 through August of 1961 was for an apparatus for scanning EEG alpha waves for brain function studies.[127]

In a declassified document Dr. Bekhtereva and her institute was named as one of five "Institutes conducting ESP Research in Russia" in 1963.[128] Our government knew exactly what methods were being used in brain and ESP research across the globe.

In a conversation with Dr. Bekhtereva in 1972, Henry Gris asked her what her greatest ambition in life was? She stated she wanted to "transcribe electronically the entire range of the intellectual activity of the human mind." He then asked the question, "Once this is accomplished, would it not be feasible to feed a superior intellect into a lesser brain?" She answered that that would not be ethical.[129] She later explained that she was investigating an area of the brain where nerve cells remain inactive while the human mind behaved rationally; but when man behaved irrationally this part of the brain touched off an alarm that mobilized other cells to correct the mistake. She said, "If we were to eliminate this area via micro destruction of cells-which we can do since we know its exact location-we could turn you all into absent-minded professors."[130] The implications of this remark are staggering.

At a symposium on "Man-Computer Relations" at the American Association for the Advancement of Science in February 1976, Dr. Adam V. Reed from Rockefeller University acknowledged the need to protect against the dangerous applications of "thought control"--turning human beings into virtual robots via computer brain hookups. He said this would be dependent upon progress in breaking the internal codes of the human mind.[131]

This statement reveals to me how Dr. Bekhtereva's methods of electrode implantation and information retrieval could help break those internal codes. Her methods were also very similar to the experiments Dr. Wilder Penfield of McGill University performed on me sometime between 1957 and 1960.[xxxviii] Dr. Penfield worked with Dr. Donald Hebb at Montreal Neurological Institute (MNI) doing research on brain-damaged patients between 1937 and 1939.[132] Dr. Hebb went on to become the Chairman of the Psychology Department of McGill University during the 50's and worked closely with Canadian and U.S. intelligence. He had special CIA security clearance issued to him in the early 1960's.[133] Hebb's study to investigate the effects of isolation on attitude change was commissioned by the Canadian Government in 1951.[134] I mention this because there will be great skepticism that the esteemed Wilder Penfield would have taken part in any such experiments. It seems many doctors in Montreal were willing to be funded by covert means.

MNI was academically affiliated with McGill and located on the university's campus. Alan Gregg had appropriated $1,232,000 from the Rockefeller Foundation in 1932 to fund it, and Dr. Penfield was hired to run it when it opened in 1934.[135] Prior to that, Penfield had received a grant to go to Madrid in 1924 from Mrs. Percy Rockefeller.[xxxix] His affiliations with the Rockefellers served him well over the years. In fact after he retired he worked for a time at the Villa Serbelloni, high above Lake Como in Northern Italy on the biography he wrote on Alan Gregg. The Rockefeller Foundation maintains the Villa.[136]

The memories of Dr. Penfield's experiments on me begin with my arrival in Canada aboard a plane met by the Royal Canadian Mounted Police.[137] There was a red carpet out for the dignitaries aboard this plane. Before we landed I was given a shot and smuggled into the country in a box. I was taken to Braehead on McGill's campus. I had reoccurring dreams of this place for the next 30 years. I didn't know what the dreams meant, but the impact of the dreams was so powerful that I began looking for this building every time I was driving or riding in an unfamiliar place. When I found a picture of this building on the McGill web sight, I nearly fainted. It was as if they had picked a picture out of my dreams and placed it on this sight. It is a very distinctive English Gothic building and I had remembered running down a long passageway in my dream. In 1946 a passage was constructed between Purvis Hall and Braehead. I believe I stayed here when I wasn't being experimented on at MNI.

In one of the experiments I was forced to lie on a table with my head immobilized. It didn't hurt, it was just very snug, and when I struggled I found I couldn't move a muscle of my head.

Dr. Penfield said, "Sterilize the sight."

Then he said something about the corpus callosum being malleable. He inserted an electrode into the sleeve guides that were already imbedded in my head before I got to Canada. They were invented by John Lilly and used on animals while he worked for the National Institute of Health (NIH).

Dr. Lilly first met Dr. Penfield when he took his mother to Montreal in 1942. She was suffering from a brain tumor and Dr. Penfield operated and removed it. This operation prolonged his mothers' life by ten years. Lilly was forever indebted to this man. In 1953 he attended the International Physiological Congress in Montreal, and he made another trip in 1954 to the Montreal Neurological Institute to talk with Dr. Hebb about his human isolation techniques.[xl] The trip was suggested by Robert C. Morison who was Dr. Hebb's contact at the Rockefeller Foundation, which had funded Hebb's research program in the same years he was receiving money from the Defense Research Board of Canada. Morison was also a friend of Wilder Penfield's.[138]

Maitland Baldwin, a former student of Dr. Penfield worked down the hall from Dr. Lilly at NIH.[139] Dr. Baldwin also carried out experiments in isolation techniques, only his were done for the Army. He had an Army volunteer stay in a box for 40 hours until he kicked his way out crying loudly and sobbing for an hour. Baldwin agreed to do sensory deprivation experiments for the CIA if they would provide the cover and the subjects for this "terminal type" experiment. According to Anne Collins account in-*In the Sleep Room*, Baldwin pressed for an "antagonistic subject' he could force to a total breakdown in the box, allowing however "that he would not want any other agency to know anything about this experiment unless it proved to be successful". He went so far as to say that "anyone going through a complete breakdown would come out with somewhat lowered mental faculties." An agency official refused the authority to do the experiments because they were "immoral and inhuman."[140] Our government employed such men with your tax dollars.

I do not remember who put the sleeve guides in or the actual procedure, I only know that the methods had been developed by Dr. Lilly while working for NIH.

He also used them to experiment on Dolphins at his Communication Research Institute in St. Thomas, Virgin Islands. His research there was partly to determine whether large-brained animals were as susceptible to motivational "brainwashing" by electrical means as the smaller brained monkey.[141] In *Man and Dolphin* he said that his experiments had proven that electrical stimuli in specific areas of the brain could cause either intense rewarding or intense punishing experiences in a particular animal and in humans. He summarized in his Appendix by saying, "At any time an adult human being can be reduced to the childish level by changing his situation. Such a state can be induced by lack of sleep, by starvation, by torture, by isolation, by profound confinement, by drugs, by direct electrical stimulation. The original biological prototypes of learning can be reintroduced and even an adult can be forced to learn once again by means almost thoroughly beyond his control. I am speaking here of powerful means used ruthlessly with few scruples."[142]

In his book *The Scientist*, *A metaphysical Autobiography*, Dr. Lilly describes the technique of electrode implantation.[143] "Electrodes could be implanted in the brain without using anesthesia. During the process of implantation, there was no more pain to the animal than that of a needle prick in the scalp. Short lengths of hypodermic needle tubing equal in length to the thickness of the skull were quickly pounded through the scalp into the skull. These stainless steel guides furnished passageways for the insertion of electrodes into the brain to any desired distance and at any desired location from the cortex down to the bottom of the skull. As many sleeve guides could be implanted as were desired. Because of the small size of the sleeve guides, the scalp quickly recovered from the small hole (l mm.) made in it, and the sleeve guide remained imbedded in the bone for months to years. At any time he desired the investigator could palpate the scalp and find the location of each of the sleeve guides. Once one was found he inserted a needle were so through the scalp into the sleeve guide, down through the bone, and penetrated the dura. After withdrawing the needle, the investigator placed a small sharp electrode in the track made by the needle and pressed the electrode through the scalp, through the skull, through the dura, and down into the substance of the brain itself to any desired depth." I feel blessed that I have been spared this memory.

I was awake while Dr. Penfield probed my brain and someone in the room recorded what was being said. Penfield said that my brain was like a tape recorder and he just needed to take me back in time. He did this by touching different spots of my brain. They kept recording the memories induced from images in my past, and later Sidney Gottlieb of the CIA used them for future programming sessions.

I find it ironic that after Dr. Penfield retired in May 1960, he would make the following remarks two months later for a conference entitled "Great Issues of Conscience in Modern Medicine." He began his speech by dismissing the possibility that science could, or ever would be able to control the mind. He then summarized briefly his own experiments with conscious patients; and concluded that if the electric probe could not convince someone to believe anything, than brainwashing and mind-control much nonsense. He also said, "Let us take, then, the best conclusions of the past and create a working religion-a faith that will seem reasonable to all men-one they will welcome...Only an interpretation of religion suited to these times can create in the hearts of men of every nation a better conscience."[144]

May God protect us all from such men of good deeds. Whether he was covering up his misdeeds, or honestly believed what he said, will probably never be known. His solution to the Cold War was that Canada and the U.S. recognize Red China. He proposed that Russian and Chinese courses be widespread in towns and universities across the continent, and that a large-scale program of exchange visits be instituted so that doctors, lawyers, engineers, teachers, businessmen, farmers, artists, religious leaders and athletes could meet and get to know their counterparts in the rest of the world.[145]

When I read a biography written by H. Jefferson Lewis on Wilder Penfield, I came across a mysterious death. Bill Cone had come to work with Penfield after they met when Cone was on a Rockefeller fellowship. They opened their own lab in the Presbyterian Hospital called the Laboratory of Neurocytology. Mrs. Percy Rockefeller funded it until they left New York in 1928 to go to Montreal.

Cone and Wilder later worked together at MNI. In 1959 Penfield found Bill Cone dead in his office. He was lying on the floor with his head on a pillow, with potassium cyanide powder on his lips and spilled on his coat.[146] This seems like a very strange way to commit suicide, which is what the coroner ruled it, but very similar to the methods used by covert intelligence agencies when they wished to eliminate an uncooperative individual. Wilder Penfield many years later said this about Bill Cone, "He was loyal to my projects in a more personal way, always the Good Samaritan, the tireless, selfless physician, taking a keen delight in serving the sick. But in spite of this and his brilliant and retentive mind and his loyalty to the ideas of scientific perfection, I suppose Bill Cone never quite understood the hopes and the thinking at the back of my mind."[147]

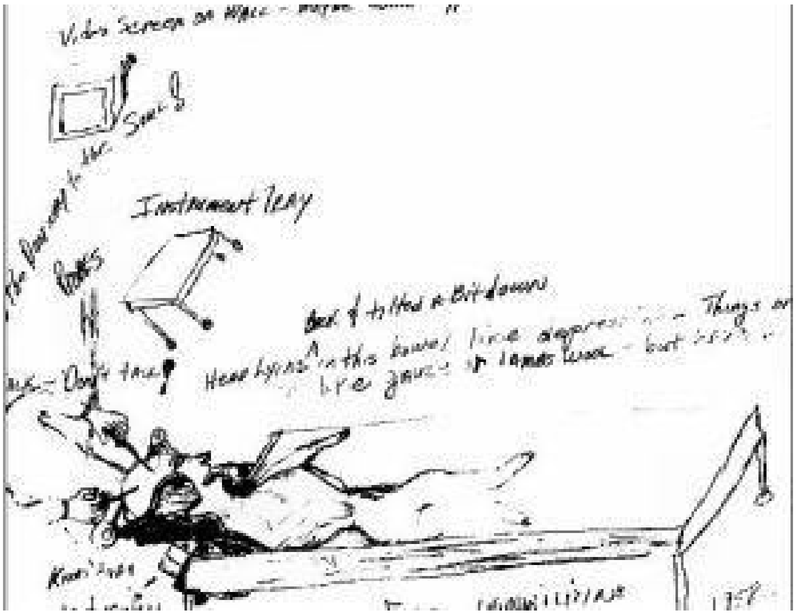

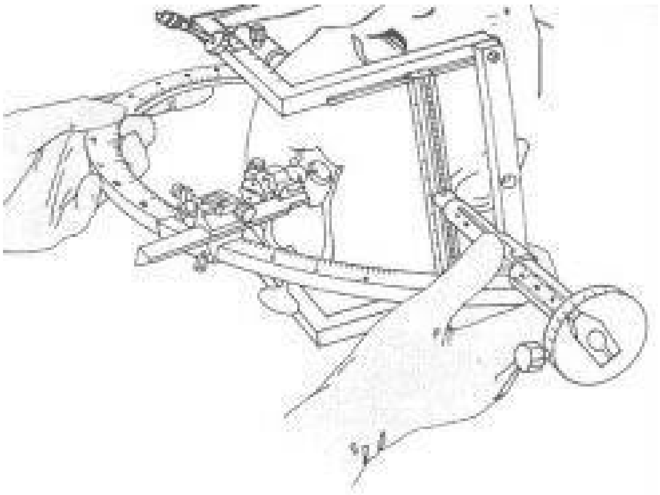

This drawing of the experiment that Wilder Penfield performed on me was made before I found this picture of a stereotaxic instrument that is attached to the head before surgery.[148] This was not the first time I had left my body and watched from above when things were too intolerable to bare. I was quite shocked to find an actual medical instrument that matched my drawing. The mind is indeed able to recall anything.

John Lilly's technique required no surgery once the sleeve guides were in place. Larry Squire describes Penfield's work,

"Because the brain contains no pain receptors, patients received only a local anesthetic, and remained fully conscious during surgery. Electrical stimulation of the cortical surface sometimes induced images which patients described as coherent perceptions or experiences...In Penfield's view, the experiences that were elicited by stimulation reproduced the stream of consciousness from a previous episode of past life: The stimulating electrode drew the reproduction from its place of storage, much as if a tape recorder were switched on at some arbitrary position...Penfield divided the experiential responses produced by electrode stimulation into four categories: auditory (voices, music, or a meaningful sound), visual (people, a scene, or a recognizable object), combined visual-auditory (scenes with appropriate sounds), or unclassified experiential responses (a thought, a memory, or a flashback)."[149]

After the surgery I walked down a long hallway with Dr. Penfield holding my hand. He was talking to another man and he sounded like he was giving a sermon.

Penfield said, "We only have 10 days to get this done. She has above average intelligence but below average ability to travel the time continuum."[xli]

He acted as if I were not even there. Penfield continued,

"Lillydidn't know what he had.[150] He didn't take it far enough. He had the means to explore the great beyond. I have the Killer (referring to my Psychic Assassin alter) and the Innocence here in the same body. I know I can find the doorway to the soul, if given enough time and enough brains to experiment on."

In *Something Hidden*, *A Biography of Wilder Penfield* by H. Jefferson Lewis, he quotes Penfield as reasoning, "I am a scientist, and I believe in the soul, therefore there must be a scientific theory to account for the soul. That was the basis in faith of the centrencephalicsystem, the 'switchboard' in the brain. Here, if anywhere spirit met flesh and the two were joined."[151]

Little did Penfield know, that in 1967 John Lilly would propose an experiment to record the brain's electrical activity and then play the recording back into the brain.[152] Consider the possibilities for mind control by an unscrupulous programmer using this technique.

Alan Scheflin reports on some of the children who received stereotaxic surgery in the sixties and seventies.[153] He lists several doctors who performed such surgery on children because they suffered from behavior problems such as "wandering.' One young boy would sneak away from home, and crawl underneath an automobile in order to smell the oil. Two groups were as young as two and four years old when surgery took place for "violent behavior."

Many of the mind control experiments that were carried out under MKULTRA were done out of fear that the Russians were in the forefront of this field. The "Red Scare" promoted by Joe McCarthy was the overriding theme of why "Anything Goes" when it came to these experiments. Our government obviously agreed with the internationally know Russian physiologist Dr. Leonid Vasiliev who was considered the father of Soviet parapsychology. He stated, "The discovery of the energies associated with psychic events will be as important, if not more important than the discovery of energy."[154]

In a CIA report made public in the late sixties, they estimated the technical staff of one Soviet parapsychology laboratory at 300 physicists, doctors, biochemists, and electrical engineers. August Stern, a Soviet scientist in the sixties reported that he worked in a secret lab in Siberia trying to find a physical basis for psychic energy.[155] Jim Schnabel reported that intelligence reports and the testimony of Soviet émigrés showed the Soviets doing experiments in telepathy.[156] According to Schnabel they screened Red Army recruits for psychic abilities and pumped talented subjects full of dangerous drugs to promote psi-conducive altered states. Subjects in psychokinesis or "remote-influencing" experiments tried to stop the hearts of small animals, or concentrated on foreign political leaders, beaming at them "negative psi particles." Soviet and Czech scientists were said to be working on electromagnetic devices that would cause strokes or heart attacks, and it was even rumored that they had perfected a "psychotronic generator" which could scramble people's minds at great distances.

Since I obviously failed whatever tests Wilder Penfield put me through for remote viewing, I did not take part in some of the other paranormal experiments that were performed by the CIA. They carried out experiments in astral projection to facilitate remote viewing. These experiments were conducted at the Stanford Research Institute in California in 1973 in an attempt to spy on military installations and the confidential files contained within them. It was a way to collect intelligence. David Morehouse said that using out of body or astral projection was dangerous to facilitate remote viewing, because you left the physical body open, allowing inhabitation by whatever else that wanted to step in.[157] He preferred to call it bilocation, a process of folding space and time.

Joseph W McMoneagle, in a dinner address presented at the annual banquet of the Rhine Research Center on February 21, 1997 detailed the process of his remote viewing experiences.[158] The army had used him in experiments in remote viewing from 1978 through 1984 as part of Project Stargate. Stargate began on October 1978 as Project Grillflame, a Department of Defense initiative designed to see if potentially psychic Army personnel could be identified, trained, and used to collect intelligence information through psychic means. An additional focus of the project was to determine what the Soviets and Chinese were doing in their own efforts at paranormal research.[159]

Gordon Cooper, one of the original seven Mercury astronauts confirmed the existence of a mind control program administered by NASA in the 1950's and 1960's involving gifted American schoolchildren. In an interview with Mike Siegel Cooper was asked, "Who were the space kids?" Cooper answered that "the space kids were children with exceptional mental abilities run through a kind of MK program, like the things that are coming out now." He went on to describe how NASA's mind control program emphasized cultivation of the children's psychic abilities and that it involved telepathy, remote viewing, and out-of-body-experiences.[160]

Nowadays remote viewing is routinely discussed over coffee as a means to find buried treasure under the ocean. Remote viewing seemed part and parcel of the supernatural to many in the fifties, sixties and seventies, but now it has become commonplace.

I am but one of the many children who were the CIA's convenient experimental subjects, used to try and perfect similar results here in the United States. Because of our youth and the severe traumatization we were put through, these men felt we would never tell our stories; and if we did, they felt we would never be believed. Out of respect for the feelings of my adult children, I have not included some of the training I was forced to endure. Likewise, I have not named some of those living and dead who perpetrated heinous deeds of which I will not speak. I wish to remain among the living.

Dr. Corydon Hammond delivered a lecture in 1992 describing some of the programming he had encountered.[161] Many other doctors have likewise found these same types of programmed alters in survivors of government mind control. Most survivors seem to have more than one level of programming.

Alpha is general programming within the control personality.

Beta is sexual programming, i.e. child pornography, prostitution, and sexual training used for the benefit of a handler for blackmail or personal use. This programming eliminates all learned moral conviction from the survivor, so that the function can be carried out without inhibition.

Delta is a trained killer, a sleeping assassin. Delta survivors feel no fear and have been trained in the use of specialized arms and alternative methods of disposal. Sirhan Sirhan had total amnesia of the killing of Robert Kennedy, but under hypnosis remembered it. Mr. Sirhan's lawyer, Lawrence Teeter says his client was programmed to kill Kennedy by government agents who wanted to prolong the Vietnam War.[162]

Theta is psychic killing, such as the training I was involved in. Most survivors with Theta programming exhibit an unusually high level of ESP in their day-to-day lives. Many even train in alternative methods of healing before they discover the theta programming. It seems to be a way for the dominant personality to use their energy in a positive healing manner, thereby compensating for the negative uses of this same energy.

Omega is self-destruct programming installed in the event a survivor would start remembering. It was used to prevent them from going public. There generally is self destruct programming associated with Delta assassin programming if the survivor is captured.

Books written by survivors of these programs recount the horrors they were forced to endure during their training. As explained in *"Secret Weapons,"* a second area of funded research was the program Sid Gottlieb cobbled together for the purpose of turning children into warriors who would be perfect Manchurian candidates, perfect spies and assassins who are ignorant of their orders, fitting into society easily and anonymously; until a code or trigger is used to awaken them and send them into action."[163]

Many of these survivors have worked through their memories, dealt with their programming and are free from such triggering. How many are still "Sleeping," awaiting the call of their handlers?

Chapter 6 - Dr. Black

Absence of Evidence Does Not Mean Absence of Harm

Mind Control survivors have identified doctors used by the CIA under Project MKULTRA as having used different aliases. It seems colors were one of the most commonly used themes. Claudia Mullen and Chris Denicola, two survivors who testified before the Presidents Advisory Committee on Human Radiation Experiments in March 1995 identified A Dr. Green. Claudia Mullen identified Dr. Green as an alias used by Dr. L. Wilson Green, Technical Director of the US Army Chemical and Radiological Laboratories. Chris Denicola was four years old when she says Dr. Green used electroshock in conjunction with other forms of torture and drugs to program her.[xlii] Some survivors say that Dr. Ewen Cameron went by the alias Dr. White.

Many survivors have identified Josef Mengele as using the aliases Dr. Green, Dr. Black, Dr. Swartz (black in German), Father Joseph, or Vaterchen (daddy) when he did their programming. The experiments and programming he used on us were of such a heinous nature, that they were not unlike some of those performed at Auschwitz. I have personally spoken and corresponded with many of these child Cold War survivors who have agreed to allow me to recount some of their mind control and brainwashing experiments by the man they believe to be Josef Mengele using one of the above aliases and other CIA or military doctors.

Josef Mengele attended Frankfurt Institute for Racial Hygiene doing his doctoral research on cleft palate. In 1937, he was appointed a research assistant at the Third Reich Institute for Heredity, Biology, and Racial Purity at the University of Frankfurt where he worked with Professor Otmar Freiherr von Vershuer and learned genetic manipulation. Mengele provided "experimental materials" to the Kaiser-Wilhelm Institute of Anthropology[xliii] from Twins including eyes, blood, and other body parts from Auschwitz.[164] One of the victims of Mengele's experiments was quoted as saying, "It is imperative that the Kaiser-Wilhelm Institute be implicated as the initiator and recipient of the research data; it should not be able to get away from the ultimate responsibility for these horrors."[165]

In *The Nazi Hunters*, authors Ashman and Wagman report that von Verschuer gave Mengele his first assignment within weeks of his arrival at

Auschwitz. When Allied doctors reviewed some of the results of his experiments on twins at Kaiser Wilhelm Institute after the war, they found that Mengele's research was aimed at trying to establish a way of creating twins through genetic engineering.[166]

After an abortion performed on me in Montreal, Canada when I was twelve, Dr. Black harvested eggs. I can only assume from what he showed me a few years later, that he was playing God and tampering with genes to create a "Super Race." He undoubtedly was doing test tube fertilization with these eggs.[167] Unfortunately his early experiments produced children with grossly enlarged heads. He showed me two of these poor children when I was 16 years old and told me they were mine. I still grieve for them, and what has become of them remains a mystery to me. I do believe however, that what he told me may have been nothing more than lies as these men were masters at the art of deception. Fooling children isn't that difficult to do when they are in a traumatized state.

It usually takes twenty years or more before tests conducted secretly by the government become known by the public via privately researched tests. It was no surprise to me when in 1999 researchers at the University of Hawaii successfully cloned an adult male mammal. The clone, a male mouse named Fibro was created using a cell from the tail of an adult male mouse.[168] Prior to Fibro, researchers had succeeded in cloning male mammals only by using fetal tissues, just like Mengele had collected from my aborted fetus.

Josef Mengele fled Auschwitz in January 1945 before the Russians liberated the camp. Author Phillip Aziz says he went to his birthplace in Gunzburg, Bavaria after "a mysterious odyssey with Wilma through flaming Europe."[169] According to Gerald Posner's account, Dr. Mengele's young Jewish mistress Wilma had taken his research notes to Warsaw where he later retrieved them."[170] I can see where these notes would make him a valuable commodity to the CIA and the Agency.

John Loftus and Mark Aarons report that British records show a man named Mengele was in their custody in 1945 for interrogation concerning chemical weapons.[171] They said there is circumstantial evidence of a deal between Mengele and the British for his nerve gas records. Loftus explains that a short time after Mengele's trip to bring back his trunk full of records, "Mengele's brother, father and co-researcher at the Kaiser Wilhelm Institute were all released from custody, and allowed to resume their civilian employment without regard to their Nazi pasts."[172]

French Government documents state that the Americans had captured Mengele in late 1946. According to the French Mengele was known to be the "notorious camp doctor from Auschwitz, and was released without explanation by the Americans on November 19, 1946. The French claimed that American authorities confirmed the Mengele arrest and release on Feb. 29, 1947."[173]

Posner says Mengele eluded capture at a prisoner of war camp near Munich, after receiving papers from a fellow prisoner. For vanity reasons he refused to have his blood type tattooed beneath his arm the way the other SS soldiers and doctors had done. The American Army said they did not realize he was a member of the SS and released him. He remained on the run until he sailed on the *North King* to Buenos Aires, Argentina in 1949.[174] Mengele proceeded to set up a medical practice in a residential area in Buenos Aires.[175]

That same year Carmel Offie was working in Washington emigrating former Nazis into the U.S. through the CIA-funded OPC (Office of Policy Coordination) in the State Department. I have identified Offie from a photo, as the man I knew as Crazy Eddie. You may remember Crazy Eddie handed me over in 1952 to Allen Dulles, Sid Gottlieb and Josef Mengele. Crazy Eddie's real name was Carmel Offie.

In 1946 Offie was putting together reports on the movement of German scientists from the American Zone into France, individuals who had eluded Paperclip. In the spring of 1948, Carmel was working in Frankfurt at USPOLAD. Burton Hersh reports in *The Old Boys,* that "One of Offie's functions at POLAD had been to rake through the flotsam churned up by the postwar disorder—the defunctive Nazi exluminaries and cutthroat émigré politicians and paper mill impresarios of promise—and help the CIC and others plug legitimate experts in around the emerging Cold-War bureaucracies." Hersh also reports that Offie identified Hilger as indispensable when Gehlen[xliv] found a place for him in G-2's Technical Intelligence Branch (Operation Rusty).[176]

According to Hersh, Carmel Offie was "doubling as a kind of booking agent for many of the refugee scholars" that the U.S was interested in obtaining. He went to work for Frank Wisner[xlv] who got Congress to pass the One-Hundred-a Year CIA Act, which allowed Offie to bring in, unmonitored, a hundred refugees each year with their dossiers "Sanitized." Offie was Wisner's special assistant for labor and migratory affairs. He personally oversaw the National Committee for Free Europe, which passed OPC money to anti-Communist unions in Europe.

John Loftus reports that Carmel worked for the DDU (Document Disposal Unit), which took orders from Dulles.[xlvi] He calls the DDU the OSS "Political Intelligence" experts who wore Army uniforms but were paid through the State Department.[177] He also says, "The DDU became a pseudo-CIA inside the CIA that hid information instead of centralizing it." Loftus says they did "not realize to this day that a trio of 'useful idiots' – Dulles, Wisner and Angleton–sabotaged their filing system to protect the State Department's Nazis."[178] The DDU also made the payments to Gehlen's organization.[179]

In 1949 Offie became responsible for the care of a number of Bloodstone émigrés'.[180] Bloodstone was the codename for the operation, which proposed that 250 Nazi collaborators be brought into the United States who would otherwise be barred by the Displaced Persons Act. Simpson also reports that a special Bloodstone subcommittee had been created to supply false identities, government cover jobs, and secret police protection to selected Bloodstone immigrants.[181]

Nineteen Forty-Nine proved to be a very busy year for Offie. In September 1949 Italian Interior Minister Mario Scelba headed a newly organized intelligence agency, SIFAR. Carmel Offie, nicknamed godfather by the Italians supervised SIFAR.[xlvii] In 1952 SIFAR received secret orders from Washington to adopt a series of political, paramilitary and psychological operations to diminish the power of the Italian Communist Party.[182]

Carmel Offie was also handling another project employing Nazi collaborators through a U.S.-financed “think tank” named the Eurasian Institute. The Institute was enlisting men who were important members of the German espionage network in Central Asia from 1931 to 1945.[183]

Wisner and Offie were still working together in 1950, when Joseph McCarthy referred to Offie as a State Department veteran who “has now been assigned to the Central Intelligence Agency.” These remarks were made to a Senate Foreign Relations Committee. They were also told by McCarthy that he “was a homosexual...spent his time hanging around the men’s room in Lafayette Park.”[184]

Allen Dulles joined the CIA and became deputy director in 1951. Frank Wisner remained as head of OPC.[xlviii] By 1951, the FBI was watching Offie and reported that he might be employed in a covert capacity or on a special project for the Army.[185]

If the information I have provided is not enough proof that this man was well acquainted with numerous Nazis, I present a final tie that binds him to Sidney Gottlieb. As documented by the FBI, Offie owned a farm in Markham, Virginia. Hersh reports how Hoover’s people staked out Offie in hopes of catching him involved in malfeasances from gun running to operating a white slavery ring at his Markham farm. Carmel Offie’s farm was about 20 miles apart from Sid Gottlieb’s goat farm in Boston, Virginia.

Whether Offie and Mengele met will, for the time being, remain a question mark. There remains no doubt in my mind that he had the opportunity and the means to meet him, especially since Offie had previously helped the Vatican get a travel pass for Monsignor Krunoslav Draganovic to the prison camps.[186] Draganovic, you may remember, ran the ratlines for U.S. sponsored Nazi escapees. With Mengele’s notoriety due to the depravity of his war crimes, it must have been very risky business to sneak him in and out of this country. Perhaps those who transported him never knew his real identity.

Offie, while still working for the OPC as liaison between the CIA and State Department, delivered me to Allen Dulles and Sidney Gottlieb for those first experiments in 1952 during which Dr. Black and others programmed me. With Frank Wisner reporting to Dulles and working intimately with Gottlieb, the circle became complete. By 1953, Dulles became the CIA’s autocratic director, with Wisner as Deputy Director for Plans handling all covert operations and dirty tricks until 1959.

If one looks at the evidence of the link between Allen Dulles, Richard Nixon, and other prominent politicians with war criminals, you can see a clear pattern of deception. Why then would you find it so hard to believe that Josef Mengele was covertly used in the same way?

John Loftus said, “A Pentagon official acknowledged recently that Military Intelligence sent so many Nazis to South America that one government ‘passed the word that they would not take any more.’ Another official admitted putting his own fingerprints on documents belonging to a former SS officer who was spying for the military in East Germany. Equipped with a new set of documents and a safe set of prints, the SS man was free to emigrate wherever he chose...The Pentagon, at least where its own interests were concerned was willing to ignore any Nazi migration to South America.”[187] They seemed to have easy access to whoever might help their cause.

Henry Kissinger was a consultant for the Operations Research Office of the Pentagon after the war doing historical research into the use of native collaborators by the Nazis for Operation Pow-wow. He had been an Army Sergeant serving with the 970th CIC unit in Germany, where his specialty was identifying Gestapo and SS officers hiding out among the civilian population."[188] Alex Constantine reports that John McCloy arranged to have Klaus Barbie sheltered from prosecution by the 970th CIC Corps.[189] Martin Lee reports Barbie went on to assist a succession of military regimes in Bolivia, where he taught soldiers torture techniques.[190] How many of those identified were illegally given refuge once the war was over? Only now is the truth being revealed with the declassification of Government files.

In an October 1999 report titled Implementation of the Nazi War Crimes Disclosure Act, An Interim Report to Congress, the Army's CIC was named as having "had the primary responsibility for security in the American zones in Germany and Austria." It "became involved with many Germans and others knowledgeable about the Soviet Union and its intelligence services, and by the late 1940s had established many agent networks within the occupation zones and extending into Eastern Europe. These networks employed numerous agents, some of whom had tainted wartime backgrounds."

The report goes on to say, "The CIC in Germany, for example, recruited as an agent and sheltered Klaus Barbie, an SS officer later convicted for his role in rounding up Jews in France and for suppressing the French resistance. The Army smuggled Barbie out of Europe, thereby enabling him to escape justice for over 30 years in his South American hideouts...Within months after World War II, OSS and later US intelligence agencies were faced with the issue of how to handle intelligence assets who could not safely remain in Europe. In some cases, the Army used a 'rat line' to evacuate these individuals (mainly Soviet Army defectors and Soviet Bloc refugees) to South America. This clearly was an inadequate measure that was subject to misuse, as was later demonstrated with the Barbie case."

Another group who seems to have a connection with Mengele, Nixon, and Operation Paperclip was the Iron Guard. The Iron Guard (Green Shirts) was the Rumanian equivalent of Hitler's "Brownshirts" and was working towards achieving a Nazi Romania. They were the combat arm of the Legion of Archangel Michael, a mystical fascist movement. In January 1941 during a three-day Iron Guard revolt, the estimated death toll of Jews was between 4,000 and 6,000 in Bucharest and nearly 10,000 throughout the country.[191] The source of the tanks, guns, and munitions used in the revolt were Nicolae Malaxa. He was the chief contributor to the Iron Guard and the wealthiest man in Rumania, if not all Eastern Europe.

In 1936, Malaxa went to Berlin to meet with Reichsmarschall Hermann Goering and the two men parted as business partners. This personal agreement became formalized in the 1940 Wohlstadt Pact, which integrated Malaxa's industries with Germany's. Directing this new Nazi industrial coalition were Nicolae Malaxa and Albert Goering, younger brother of the Reichsmarschall.[192] When the Nazis were defeated, Malaxa signed personal contracts with Grady McClaussen, head of the OSS in Rumania. McClaussen would be paid certain sums of money once Malaxa got in the US. In 1948, he immigrated to the US and began claiming millions of dollars, which had been deposited before the war in

Chase National Bank. He was to fight a fierce legal battle to regain this money, which had been frozen as enemy assets during the war by the Treasury Department.

Recruited and compensated to help assist in Malaxa's legal suits were Secretary of State John Foster Dulles's law firm of Sullivan and Cromwell.[193] Because of the eyewitness testimony at the Immigration hearing of the Iron Guard atrocities, Malaxa was forced to use bribery to help him gain entry into the United States.[xlix]

Richard Nixon, junior senator from California introduced a private bill in 1951, which would allow Malaxa to remain permanently in the United States. The bill was defeated, so Malaxa organized a solely owned company known as the Western Tube Corporation in Whittier, California-Nixon's hometown. Nixon signed a letter in September of 1951 urging the federal government to give the firm a "certificate of necessity," and Malaxa a "first preference quota" for permanent residence in the United States on the grounds that he was essential to the construction of the plant. At the time Western Tube had the same address and phone number in Whittier as Nixon's former law firm, Bewley, Knoop & Nixon.[194] The appeal was successful and Malaxa was admitted from Canada. He obtained permanent residence in the United States and nothing further was ever done to make Western Tube a reality.[195]

According to Seymour Hersh, the top men at the CIA had a copy of a check for $100,000 made out to Nixon by Nicolae Malaxa.[196] Gordon B. Mason, who had served undercover in the CIA station in Bucharest from 1947 to 1951 and then had returned to run the CIA's Romanian operations desk in Washington, told Mr. Hersh one of the tellers in the bank was a Romanian exile and had been paid to turn over the copy of the check. The report of the transaction was moved through the CIA's chain of command from Frank Wisner to Allen Dulles, and finally to Walter Bedell Smith head of the CIA since 1950.[197]

In 1954, Mengele purchased a house in Argentina near Juan Peron's old estate. That same year, Nicolae Malaxa visited with Juan Peron and with Otto Skorzeny[l] in Buenos Aires where Josef Mengele now lived.[198] It certainly takes no stretch of the imagination to tie this cozy little group together. Certainly there was communication between them. In fact U.S. Attorney General William Rogers intervened in an appeal by Malaxa against deportation in 1958. Malaxa won this appeal, but died ten years later. Congressmen Shelley had this to say, "How interesting that this man...found sanctuary in the United States thanks to Richard Nixon and Mr. Rogers." He goes on to say that thousands of displaced persons "would have done better if they transported plunder and been friendly enough with Richard Nixon to obtain his personal intervention in their behalf."[199]

Another Nazi war criminal that participated in the Iron Guard pogrom in 1941 in Rumania was Otto Albrecht Alfred von Bolschwing. The German-born von Bolschwing had previously served as an officer in the SS and had worked in the same office with Adolf Eichmann in the 1930s. Von Bolschwing had been one of the CIA's leading agents in Austria after World War II. They brought von Bolschwing to the United States, and he received American citizenship in 1959. In 1981, a Federal court stripped him of that citizenship.[200]

Dr. Charles Kremer, a New York dentist spent twenty-five years of his life collecting evidence to convince our government to deport another Iron Guardist, Valerian Trifa. In Howard Blum's book Wanted! The Search for Nazis in America, he devotes an entire chapter to exposing these Iron Guard killers living in America. His account of Iron Guardist Valerian Trifa, who was invited by then Vice President Nixon to offer an opening prayer in the U.S. Senate is compelling.[201]

Trifa had also worked in Vienna as an agent for Gehlen's spy network before coming to the United States in 1950.[li] In April 1952, Trifa, a layman, was consecrated a bishop of the Ukrainian Orthodox Church. On July 4, 1952 just a few days before Carmel Offie handed me over to the CIA, Trifa took over the Rumanian Orthodox Episcopate Church in Grass Lake, Michigan[lii] during an armed assault with other Rumanian Guardsman. Trifa supposedly functioned as an OPC asset for the disruption of Romania, so perhaps Offie in his capacity with OPC was there in Grass Lake helping Trifa with his coup when my mother went into labor.[202] In a military style operation they cut phone lines and began their assault. The two hundred acre estate was surrendered to Trifa and his priests. His episcopate encompassed forty-six parishes.

He then began emigrating former Iron Guardists and even ordained some of them as priests. Burton Hersh says Nicolae Malaxa financed Trifa in the U.S.[203] One Guardist who had been sentenced to death in 1941 for crimes committed emigrated from Argentina to Windsor, Ontario. In 1972, the president and vice president of a Parish in Buenos Aires congratulated Bishop Trifa in writing on the twentieth anniversary of his ordainment. Again we find a tie to one of the hiding places of Josef Mengele. In 1975, Dr. Kremers' tireless efforts were rewarded when the Immigration and Naturalization Service brought a case against Trifa in Detroit, Michigan. He was accused of being the leader of the Iron Guard in Romania. After fighting denaturalization, Trifa consented to the revocation of his citizenship in 1980. He then appealed his own consent decree. Trifa left the United States for Portugal on August 13, 1984 where he lived there until his death in 1987.

According to journalist Russ Bellant in an article he wrote for Washington Jewish Week, a coalition for the 1988 Bush campaign included Florian Galdau as director of GOP outreach efforts among Romanians and head of "Romanians for Bush."[204] Galdau was once an Iron Guard recruiter, and he defended convicted Nazi war criminal Valerian Trifa.

Perhaps having read these connections you can open your mind to believe the rest of the survivors' stories. A survivor reported contact with Dr. Mengele in November of 1952 at the Aberdeen Proving Grounds in Maryland. The same survivor reports contact with him in Germany in December 1954. Exactly when he came back and forth into the U.S. and Canada will probably only be known when all of the survivors' stories are listened to and believed. I will intersperse sightings as recounted to me, with known places where Mengele lived and traveled.

A document obtained from the Department of Energy's web sight before the Department of Defense pulled access to their records, names a Dr. Gregor. Dr. Gregor was being paid through the Brooklyn Polytechnic Institute in 1953 for an Edgewood Arsenal contract entered into by their Medical Laboratories. His name appears among a list of 27 that were privately contracted to do work.[205] Along with Dr. Gregor's name is another well-known MKULTRA experimenter, Dr. Hoch, of the New York Psychiatric Institute. You will remember Dr. Hoch as having injected mescaline into Harold Blauer in 1953 causing his death.[liii]

Upon receipt of my FOIA request with copies of the above documentation, the Army informed me they had no records. I was appalled since I had sent them copies of the records, which actually gave them the file cabinet number and drawer at Edgewood Arsenal where this information was housed. I appealed and again sent copies of the documentation. They sent my appeal to the General Counsel of the Army in the Pentagon, where they "tasked the U.S. Army Medical Command (MEDCOM) for documentation." They informed me "upon receipt of appropriate documentation from MEDCOM, your appeal will be assigned to one of our attorneys for review." Let us hope that this will not take as long as the appeal through the CIA.[liv]

Just another uncanny coincidence, that Mengele's alias in 1953 in Buenos Aires where he worked in a lab was Dr. Gregor? In 1958, he was arrested in Buenos Aires under the alias Dr. Gregor for practicing without a license and performing an abortion on a girl at a back street clinic where the girl died. Mengele also used Gregor as an alias when he went to the Argentine consulate before fleeing to Buenos Aires in 1949.

Josef Mengele's father visited him in 1954 giving him a million marks to purchase half the shares of a pharmaceutical company. He also divorced his wife and then married the widow of his elder brother. A Survivor whose memories are somewhat sketchy reports coming into contact with him in Florida in 1954. It is well documented that Mengele was indeed traveling in 1954. He went to Paraguay in 1954 and met with Alejandro von Eckstein, a captain in the Paraguayan army, who later cosponsored Mengele's bid for Paraguayan citizenship in 1959.

The Doolittle committee appointed by President Eisenhower issued a report containing this statement in 1954:

"It is now clear that we are facing an implacable enemy whose avowed objective is world domination by whatever means and at whatever cost. There are no rules in such a game. Hitherto acceptable norms of human conduct do not apply. If the United States is to survive, long-standing American concepts of "fair play" must be reconsidered. We must develop effective espionage and counterespionage services and must learn to subvert, sabotage, and destroy our enemies by more clever, more sophisticated, and more effective methods than those used against us. It may become necessary that the American people be made acquainted with, understand and support this fundamentally repugnant policy."[206]

Some of us became intimately acquainted with this repugnant policy. The same survivor who had contact in Florida with Dr. Mengele in 1954 reports that she had contact with him in Nashville, Tennessee in 1955 when he would come in by plane, stay a few days to do programming and then leave. It was in 1955 that he obtained a 120-day Argentine passport enabling him to travel. This is the survivor's own account of her intimate contact with this evil escapee from Nazi Germany:

"As he got older and turned gray he called himself 'Grandfather.' He used the movie Heidi with me, and he became 'the grandfather.' I think the insidious part of his work with me was the love thing. He would love me and torture me. Whatever he did had that element. He must have trained my father as well, because that is what my dad was told to do as well. One of Mengele's favorite phrases was, "Pain is pleasure, and pleasure is pain, my dear. I am here to make you very happy! You will love me forever!"

"Earlier he had black hair (sort of FBI cut-longish on top and short on the sides), walked around in black boots and carried a riding crop that was really a cattle prod. He played the piano, violin, and liked Wagner and music of that sort. He used Handel's Messiah on me often. I remember being on the floor with him playing piano in nothing but his boots and a tuxedo coat with tails, as he ordered the men working with him to shock me with cattle prods while he played. It was sort of like musical chairs--when he stopped playing, they stopped shocking; or when he played, they stopped, according to which rules he used that week! He liked the latter better because he wanted me to listen to him play and love it! He also did this playing his violin."

"Mengele was part of an experiment with young men. They seemed to be training a set of men such that they would do anything they were told. I was the surprise element that they weren't expecting. It was spring of 1955. He was the man with the clipboard in this experiment. There was also a colonel named Sandy, a red-haired square jawed man, who was the local in charge. They were using military facilities for these experiments, and the men were brought from Ft. Campbell in Clarksville, Tennessee. They seemed to be some sort of Special Forces dudes who were being trained. This actually went on from the summer before 1954 until spring just before I was six in 1955."

Gerald Posner documents Mengele's trip to Switzerland in April 1956 with a 2-hour stopover in New York.[207] He must have felt safe from detection. But why, unless he had been coming and going unnoticed before this trip! It was April 1956 through September 1956 that the previous survivor reports him showing up at least four more times to do programming.

I can't say if the above survivor and I ever met during these experiments, but I too was privy to Mengele's torture in 1956 when I was almost nine years old. After a summer vacation to my cousins in southern Ohio, I was taken to the Adirondack Mountains where I was programmed. This vacation was a way to conveniently explain my absence to the rest of my family. I remember how happy I was to escape the drudgery of home. My cousin and I sang songs, played an old player piano, and took walks through the quaint streets downtown where the movie theatre was located. I learned life could be free from the worry of molestation, and that kids were supposed to relax and just have fun.

I had a rude awakening when I didn't go directly home, but was taken on a long drive by my dad to a rural looking place with a winding road that led up to an airplane hanger. Inside suspended from the rafters in the ceiling (operated by pulleys) were cages[lv] with naked kids in them. It seemed that most were younger than I. I was placed in one of these cages, and like the others deprived of food and water. I become very cold and continually hunched over to hide my nakedness. Every time I tried to sleep, someone with a cattle prod reached through the bars and poked me. He had very long nails and seemed to enjoy this torture. He was able to stand next to any cage by using something like the cages that we were in to reach us. When he wasn't torturing one of us kids, he stood on the ground with Dr. Black. They both smiled with evil grins, and our tears had absolutely no impact on them.

The purpose of all this torture was to prepare us for programming. There was a hospital where each of us was taken after the torture made us compliant. The training I had involved easels and blackboards. This was where I was taught about the meridians of the body, and shown how to run energy up and down these meridians. It was preparation for later experiments in which I would use my mind to attempt to psychically kill. In another experiment an alter was created and made to memorize binary code. If this robot alter did not completely and accurately repeat back what it had been taught, I was returned to the cage.

Trauma based programming was theoretically the reason for some of the torturous things perpetrated on survivors. It was the cruelest form of mental brainwashing, and left the child completely disassociated and open to programming. Josef Mengele was a master at this.

Mengele became so convinced no arrest warrants were going to be issued for him, that he applied for a passport using his true identity. On September 11, 1956, the West German Embassy in Buenos Aires issued Josef Mengele of Gunzburg identity papers in his own name. He had been living under the assumed name of Helmet Gregor. Using the identity card he obtained a West German passport. He made numerous trips to South American countries and visited his family in Switzerland.

It was on a business trip to Santiago, Chile in February 1957 that he met with Walter Rauff, the SS Colonel who developed the mobile gas vans that killed 97,000. In 1957 a survivor reported contact with Mengele in Augsburg, Germany and in the Camp Dora/Nordhausen Hartz Mountain area. This same survivor reports being flown in a helicopter in 1957 to Camp David, and then taken underground to Raven Rock where Mengele did programming with a violin. The Hersha sisters also report in *Secret Weapons* that Raven Rock was a place where they were taken for programming.

In July 1958 Josef Mengele flew to Montevideo, Uruguay to remarry and returned to South America to live in a house in the Olivos Suburb that bordered on the back of what had been President Peron's palatial home. He was arrested under the alias Dr. Gregor for practicing without a license in a back street abortion clinic in Buenos Aires.

At the beginning of 1959, Mengele's father died suddenly. He fled to Paraguay in May 1959, and in July the first demand for his extradition was made after an arrest warrant was issued. He traveled back and forth from Buenos Aires and Paraguay often, as well as having contact with survivors in the States.[208]

A survivor reports remembering a "doctor", a man who wore a white coat and seemed to act "in charge," in or near Detroit, Michigan in 1959 or 1960. The survivor says:

"The man had a German accent and wore small wire-rimmed glasses. He was not very tall, perhaps only five foot eight or shorter? He had the most intense eyes. They were a dark brown and very scary. He had wavy brown/black hair, and he spoke in a mixture of German and English, with more German when he was yelling or very excited. I remember associating him with the 'daisy' game--where you have a daisy and you pluck the petals and say, 'he loves me, he loves me not'."

This survivor assumed he was Mengele from the similarities between drawings she made of this man, and pictures she viewed of him in books as an adult.

A Canadian survivor remembers Mengele showing up at a Catholic orphanage three times a year for two weeks in 1959, 60, 61, and 62. He went by the name Father Joseph and used drugs and hypnosis in his programming of this survivor to connect electronic tones to colored geometrically shaped building blocks. He also used cat and dog [male-female] programming, plus the use of tones connected to scents to create groups of flower children alters. The scents were later connected to tuning-fork tones for the purpose of specialized programming. This was done by selecting certain vertebrae for electroshock, while playing the tone and administering the scent.

In January 1960 a second request for extradition was made for Josef Mengele. The Mossad were hunting for escaped Nazi's and Adolf Eichmann was discovered. Eichmann was kidnapped and interrogated in May 1960 about Mengele's whereabouts. According to Gerald Posner, Eichmann and Mengele met in 1952 and were seen at the ABC city center café from time to time in Buenos Aires.[209] Sometime in 1960 Argentina finally decided to issue a warrant for Mengele's arrest and for more than a year no one had news of him. Fearing capture it was thought he fled Paraguay and took up residence in Brazil. It seems our government was also quite busy working with him doing brainwashing and programming.

My contact in Montreal where the abortion was performed was in early 1960. Another survivor reports contact with him where "foundational programming" occurred in the summer of 1960 in Kansas City. The survivor explains,

"By foundational programming I mean, abuse to create many traumatized alters to use in programming more specific functions later on and in creating internal system structure. There is a memory of him creating specific trauma bonding. He split the alters so that one would remember him being very loving, but it included a lot of sexual abuse and other parts would experience terror at his cruelty. With the first one, he somehow created the experience that he was inside our mind being very nurturing and teaching her that she will always want only him. Then later he abandoned her abruptly, and made her feel worthless and cast-off. With another alter he was mean, creating a rage alter by killing a little boy she had felt bonded with as her little protector. In a different memory some alters call 'the white room', he did electroshock with drugging and some kind of rotating equipment to create even more helpless feelings and confusion. It was blinding white light that was overwhelming, whether or not our eyes were open or closed. This abuse resulted in three 'adult' alters that reinforced internal loyalty programming. If they tried to stray from it, they always started to experience intense pain from the first part of the white room abuse, so they always backed off and got back in place. He also did some internal structure and programming on a Kabala theme, locking different alters and alter pairs into various parts of the structure by separate abuse incidents."

A survivor who was also programmed by Dr. Black says he also used the alias's Dr. Schwartz, Joseph and Yusef with her, and she describes him as having metal braces on at least one of his lower legs, next to his ankles. She reports similar methods being used to do a specific form of base programming on her. For the most part, she did not know what location she was in or her age. She says, "This was not unusual for me, because I had so many alter-states that I switched between in moments of fear and distress. Using me as their guinea pig, Dr. Black taught dad how to break a child's psyche and create alter-states. Later on I would watch dad create what he called "chains" of alter-states in children. He would begin by traumatizing the host alter-state (aka 'host personality') and then traumatize each resulting alter-state until it went 'under'. Each time a part went under and a new part with no memory emerged, dad assigned this part of the broken personality a name. Either at that time or afterwards, he recorded the names and traits each alter-state seemed to have. Being an engineer, he usually used flowcharts and blueprints. Dad did this over and over on a "chain" of alter-states until no more emerged, or they were so limited in personality that there was nothing left to work with.

When I was a little girl, I was taken somewhere by my parents by foot up a paved drive on a hill past a row of one-story, small, red brick, flat-roofed buildings to our left. At the top of the hill was an odd black railroad car sitting all by it self. A good distance away from the right of the train car perhaps a half-mile, was a large multi-story, flat roofed white or light beige exterior building. Dr. Black later told me the building was a hospital he sometimes was at.

As I got ready to climb up into the train car, a curly-haired blond mother with a little blond boy came out. Dr. Black, the dark-haired tall slim doctor was inside the doorway. I remember his dark eyes, which may have been made darker by the lack of strong lighting inside the car. After I went inside, he told me that the boy had tried to kill his mother with a knife. The doctor explained to me that he was interested in children with aggression. He seemed interested in studying aggression in me. Inside the train car on the side facing the hill was a long, narrow wooden table. I do not remember now what he did to me in that car. He played some kind of music in that train car. That is also still vague. I believe he used a radio. The music seemed to be a part of what he did to me during our time alone together. I once remembered what he did to me there, but no longer am able. Perhaps this is for the best.

When I was three years old (1958), Dr. Black told my father in front of me never to talk baby talk to me. Even at that age, I was to talk in complete sentences like adults do. I was not afraid of Dr. Black in some of those child alter-states, because he didn't give a physical indication of when he was going to hurt me. However, Dr. Black would tongue-lash other men when they made mistakes under his orders. He had no tolerance for that. He would act condescending towards them. It was like he had made himself god and nobody else could ever hope to get as perfect as he was.

Dr. Black used nursery rhymes and songs with me. A biggie he used was the "Engine That Could." He modified it with me, however. He told me that he considered it to be wrong to tell me to say, "I think I can" because that still gave me a way out. He taught me to say, 'I can' or 'I can do this!' over and over again. Of course, what I 'did' was always for them, not for myself.

The down side of that conditioning was that if I believe I can do anything–especially hard physical work–then, to fail is to be a failure. To do is to be. This was one of Dr. Black's legacies inside me. He wanted me to be 'uber' (his word) or super. To be more than anyone else in school, which is still a problem. I had to always be stronger and smarter. I believed him. When he talked to me this way, his voice was very smooth."

Not unlike the survivor who was tormented and programmed in Kansas City, this survivor explains what happened to her after a horrible sexual trauma that Dr. Mengele put her through before he programmed her. She says,

"I remembered that Dr. Black had very shiny black shoes and a black suit and plain coat that didn't have a single wrinkle in them. He wore a very white, unwrinkled shirt. His hair was perfectly slicked but not greasy. He stood straight and was probably at least as tall as my father (6'), although since I was only a little scared four-year-old girl, he was a giant to me. I could maybe reach his zipper or belt, also black, which I suspected was preferable to him since he was a flaming pedophile.

It may have been the summer of 1959. I had been in that room several times. The walls of the room, which was probably no more than maybe 12 foot by 16 foot were paneled with possibly stained, horizontal light brown-ridged wood. I distinctly smelled cedar. The windows were paned, set in horizontal rectangular fashion in the walls, maybe one-half of the way up. There were more than two panes per window, with no drapes over them. There may have been big hardwood trees outside with leaves.

There was mention of a 'waiting room' with this being the 'doctor's room.' It was completely void of furniture, no carpeting nor mats." (Author's note: I have intentionally left the sexual/trauma part of the memory out, so as to not traumatize those readers who are survivors.)

She continues, "I came too and the room was darker. The doctor's penis no longer stuck out. He was playing with a long black electrical cord. It may have been 240V because the two exposed wires were rounder and harder looking than a conventional 120V cord. He made it wiggle along the floor like a snake while I watched it slither around on the floor (wooden, I believe). He told me alternately that it was his "pet" and his "friend." He said he had "tamed" it and wanted to use it to "tame" me. Several times, he touched the ends to my arm. It was not live yet, so there was no discomfort. I relaxed more when I realized it wasn't on (dad had tortured me previously with electrified wires). Dr. Black even tickled my right underarm with the end and I giggled.

Then he started talking about someone named "Bobby." I didn't understand. He took a woman's bobby pin and laid it on my extended right forearm. Then he touched the exposed wire to the bobby pin. He must have plugged it in somehow because he burned a bobby pin mark on my arm. He created a Bobby alter-state by simply doing that. The pain and shock made me go under; a part broke off from my mind, and was dubbed that new name/trigger word.

The next thing I could remember, he made me lay on my stomach on the floor. He somehow attached chains to my wrists and ankles by using rather wide, black leather restraints. He then took what may have been a cattle prod and put it on my back. I screamed internally and strained at the restraints, but I already – as previously conditioned by my father – knew not to physically scream or cry. I already knew that if I did, the man might be that much crueler. I believed it was in my best interest to bear the intense pain until it was over.

Then Dr. Black inserted the object into me 'down there' from behind. It was so painful that I still do not know if it was rectal or vaginal. It doesn't seem to matter anyway, because when the electrical charge hits the nervous system, everything hurts and contracts in a hellish fashion. I did start saying aloud over and over again, ‘I’m sorry’ (for what, it didn’t matter) and ‘I’ll be a good girl, I promise, I promise.’

After the electrical shock, I physically fainted. While I was unconscious, someone released the wrist shackles and put them out of sight. As I came to, I saw Dr. Black standing in front of me, his back to the opposite wall with the windows behind him. He told me that only when I am with him, I am free. He told me to come to him. I tried to crawl like a dog towards him, but the shackles on my ankles kept me from being able to. He kept telling me calmly to come to him. I was terribly frustrated that I could not. I wanted to be with him, because he told me that when I am with him I would not be hurt again. But I could not do it.

He may have hypnotized me because his eyes got darker as I looked up at them and I heard his left fingers snap and the shackles were gone. I thought he was a magician. I believed that when he snapped his fingers, he made the shackles disappear. That made him seem all the more powerful to me.

At the time, one part of me had a strong fantasy vision of taking a heavy horseshoe and banging the top of his head over and over until I cracked his skull and killed his brain, since I’d previously learned from my father that the brain controls the rest of the body. I was absolutely frustrated with fury that had no outlet. Dr. Black seemed to understand that this was happening inside me. Before letting me come near him, he told me that from now on my rage was to stay “in the middle.” He named it “Robbie,”[lvi] which was also my baby brother’s name. He said “Robbie” was to obey him, only him. Dr. Black said that he would tell “Robbie” when and how to attack. By giving my rage a name/trigger word, he transformed my rage into an alter-state and successfully compartmentalized it away from other alter-states. This was important many years later, when I was sent overseas on black ops. My “Robbie”/rage alter-state was used numerous times.

Dr. Black reinforced this new alter-state by having dad bring in a baby bird that was so new that its eyes weren’t even open yet. Dr. Black told “Robbie” to kill it. He didn’t really have to say it; I had to anyway, because the rage was so physically unbearable I had to have some form of physical relief. Because rage made me much stronger than I usually am, I pulled the baby bird’s head off by pulling the neck apart. I hated myself for doing it, of course, but I also did feel some relief. (In a projected way, the bird was Dr. Black. I had taken the head off to “kill” Dr. Black’s brain, thereby preventing him from hurting me anymore.)

Dr. Black then told “Robbie” that anyone who would find out what I’d done would hate and reject and despise me, therefore I understood that I could never tell anyone. I believed the doctor; how could I not? This further compartmentalized my rage, because my internalized self-loathing kept this part of me separated from other non-rageful, non-abusive parts of my fragmented personality.

After that, he told me that only with him would I be safe. He said he would protect me from pain. I understood that if I stayed loyal to him, I would not be hurt again. As I psychologically aligned with him, the psychic pain in him that he physically inflicted on me somehow became separated from him; now becoming a nearly visible blob of substance sitting in the other side of the room. I had to do this in my own mind to make him a non-abuser, to lose my fear of him, and mentally/emotionally align with him. This is a classic example of “Stockholm Syndrome,” where a victim learns to identify with and please the abuser. What Dr. Black conditioned me to believe in my subconscious mind was that to rebel against him/them equaled imperfection. He would murmur while I was in a trance, "Imperfection leads to more imperfection." The thought of being so totally out of control was terrifying, since again, imperfection meant failure, which meant losing my right to live. The only way to be physically perfect was to be with them, obey them, stay loyal and psychologically aligned with them. It was an odd form of physical/mental blackmail and it worked.

He told me I was his "puppy." I didn't mentally fight that image. He told me to "heel" beside his left leg. I did. He told me to "sit." I sat and waited, unmoving, for his next order. He hung down a left-hand finger and said, "Suck on it; it will have to do for now." I did so.

Dad stood across the room, facing us. Dr. Black told dad that he, the doctor, would make me his "attack dog." He said he would condition me to where I would even attack dad, who I obeyed the most, if Dr. Black ordered me to. Dad laughed in an ugly way and said, "What, is she going to gnaw my leg?" Although dad seemed to idolize the doctor, this interaction seemed to make him very angry because his jaw started clenching.

The doctor seemed to notice this and told dad that he, the doctor, and others had done "experiments" on people. The fact that he did not say this to dad in German meant that he wanted me to hear it too. (Usually, when these men didn't want me to know what they were saying, they used German.) Dr. Black said they looked for prisoners who were especially afraid or quiet. They singled those prisoners out and took them to a special, more isolated area. They worked on each person in a similar fashion he said, until they were ready to do whatever they were told, total loyalty to their handlers. He said the final test had been for friends and close relatives of the prisoners to be brought there. The prisoners were then ordered to attack their loved ones and kill them. As the doctor told us this, he seemed quite proud.

He also talked about breeding. He and dad talked a lot about this. Dad was considered "closer" to perfection because he had the blond hair and gray-blue eyes and was in excellent physical condition. (He was a track athlete and had nearly participated in the Olympics in Rome in 1960.) People like dad were called "golden" because they were the most pure. Because I had brown hair, I was frightened. I was not "pure." I determined to be Dr. Black's favorite as he soon said I was so that they would not kill me out of disgust.

Dr. Black talked about how Hitler had not died, but had ascended to a god-state. He didn't seem to worship Hitler, but seemed to honor the perfect idea of the man. None of them worshipped him that I could tell, because they were too absorbed with the idea of also becoming gods. Gods don't worship gods. They talked about getting rid of the "impurities" that had been gotten through intermarriage with mongrels, etc. Mengele said that they needed to "remember who we are."

Dr. Black used nursery rhymes frequently while programming me. I guess he did this because they were already familiar to me, and hearing them away from him would reinforce the programming subconsciously. I once remembered that Dr. Black had drilled the left upper side of my skull and did something he called "Marionette," where he made parts of my body move on their own. It seems that I almost died from that event. I was quite small. I remembered that this was done in a tall white building dad said was a "VA hospital." Dad took me to that building at least several other times, where I witnessed the after-effects of lobotomies done to adults who lay on their backs on hospital beds in rows, looking quite a mess.

They broke my will and made me compliant in a way I never could have otherwise been. They broke me down completely, to a zero. They deliberately split me into two new main parts, like a tree that has a base (Kathy, age 5) and then two big thick branches forking upwards from there, that all the other parts split off from later. One part of the fork became a totally sociopath, self-hating, humanity despising, isolating "Bad Kathy" whom they would later use to do crimes for them. The other part of the fork would eventually become 'Good little Nazi boy' (since, after all, that part of me was based on their male personalities). Bad Kathy stayed brown-haired, which reinforced the sense of imperfection and not being good enough to be loved and accepted. Good little Nazi boy became internally, blond-haired and blue-eyed, the perfect Nazi, the loved and accepted one."

There was much more that this survivor told me. Perhaps one day she will decide to share the rest with the world. I will close her story with her own words.

"Two years ago I hospitalized myself. I woke up on a Saturday morning, extremely suicidal. One of my plans was to shoot myself in the head. If that failed (it did), I was going to take a thread cutter and cut my veins and pour out all the Nazi blood in my body. The need to do this was more important than staying alive. I didn't want to die; I just wanted to get the Nazi blood out of me. They had done something to my mind to make me believe their blood was in me, and that I therefore was theirs forever. I don't believe what they told me anymore, but I still do need to accept that a part of me aligned with them and their beliefs. Maybe I need to forgive myself for having done whatever it took to survive, mentally and physically. I wasn't a bad child. There's no such thing as a bad child. Children are precious and will often become the way we treat them. Reality is, I was simply surrounded by some of the worst criminals on the face of this earth. Mengele certainly could have been listed among the top 20 while he was still alive. (I choose to believe he's dead now.) Maybe, just maybe, I will find that they weren't all evil. I think that is the final thing I need to face about them, and about that Nazi-indoctrinated part of myself. They were human beings. Maybe as I learn to forgive myself for aligning with them in part, I will also then find a way to forgive them and finally find peace inside.

Yesterday on public radio, I heard the sirens in Israel and the description of automobile drivers stopping on the sides of the roads for two minutes, honoring those who died in the Holocaust. I just about lost it emotionally. It tore me up so bad to finally feel the connection to those victims. I cannot deny it anymore. I am a second-generation Holocaust victim. I too am a Mengele victim. I can finally accept it and I can finally feel love for those dear people. But I must take it even further. To truly heal, my next step is to also feel love for these human monsters. To understand there is no good side and no evil side, that we are all capable of great cruelty (if brain-damaged or born into intensely traumatic childhood's). We are all capable of important acts of goodness, I think, is the final phase of intensive healing. We are neither good nor bad. We are simply human." Kathy[210]

Josef Mengele's reported home remained in South America for the rest of his life. In April 1961, he was seen in Egypt preparing to go to Crete or one of the neighboring islands.[lvii] A group of Nazi supporters who had settled in Egypt were taking care of his journey. He managed to escape Israeli agents sent to pursue him. It was in 1961 that a Survivor reports him present in Canada with Dr. Penfield for programming, and he programmed another survivor aboard a ship in

Vietnam/Laos in 1961-62.

In January 1962 a prominent Kitchener, Ontario Rabbi, Philip Rosenzweig, advised the Ontario Provincial Police (OPP) of his suspicion that the infamous Josef Mengele, the Auschwitz “Angel of Death,” might be hiding on an estate located between Kitchener and neighboring Woodstock. The man, who used the name Joseph Menke was said to be a doctor.[211] The OPP officer didn’t know what to do, as Canada had no laws dealing with war crimes nor did Canadian law permit prosecution for crimes committed beyond her borders. Unless there was a specific extradition request from a foreign country with which Canada had an extradition treaty, the provincial police had no jurisdiction. The RCMP were brought in and decided the best course of action was to seek instruction from the departments of Justice and External Affairs. The investigation ended before it began. By the time a Mountie obtained a search warrant, the farm’s legal owner had sold the property and returned to Germany. Since there was no one left to interview, no further investigation was undertaken.[212]

A CIA document declassified in April 2001 says Mengele was sighted in Uruguay in 1962 with Friedrich Schwend. Schwend had specialized during World War II in distributing forged British pounds to help finance intelligence operations of the Reich Security Main Office. Schwend was considered to be a kind of finance minister of the planned Fourth Reich and was in charge of Operation Bernhard. Inmates at the Sachsenhausen concentration camp had been forced to produce these forged notes under this operation. A number of former Nazi officials were allegedly involved, including some who worked for an organization of former SS officers (ODESSA) in South America. Schwend claimed that he had worked for the Office of Strategic Services in 1945. Klaus Barbie also had contact in South America with Schwend. Barbie and Schwend, according to one CIA source were involved in a plot to assassinate Victor Paz Estenssoro, leftist president of Bolivia who was ousted and forced into exile in Peru. The CIA continued to deny that the agency had any direct connection with Barbie until 1983 when Washington admitted that he had worked for U.S. Intelligence, that he was a known war criminal, and that he had been allowed to escape. Another undated document released by the IWG in 2001 indicates that some of Mengele’s contacts in South America may have been involved in narcotics traffic. These narcotics were undoubtedly being shipped out of the country and Schwend was also known to have dealt in arms. I say, “Follow the Money Trail.” Was it a mere coincidence that Mengele was seen with Schwend and Barbie, two men who had been employed by our government? Is it that difficult to believe that Sid Gottlieb and others who were interested in unraveling the Mind Control mystery would employ and use one of the masters of this art? The IWG team said that many Nazi criminals “received light punishment, no punishment at all, or received compensation because Western spy agencies considered them useful assets in the Cold War.”

On Christmas Eve 1963, Karl-Heinz Mengele was at boarding school at Montreux. He told his friends that he was going to Italy for a few days to meet a close relative who had been living for many years in South America. The hotel in Milan had been paid for by Dr. Gregor Gregory, another one of Mengele’s numerous false identities. In 1963 and 1964, a Survivor reports contact with him in Albuquerque, New Mexico when she was in the second grade; and another survivor reports he was at Walter Reed Hospital in December 1963 for mind control programming sessions.

In 1964 a different survivor reports contact with him that summer at the New York World's Fair; while yet another survivor says he was with her on a European/Russia tour in November and December of 1964. She reports that the purpose of this trip was to train other mind control programmers. Then in 1965 another survivor places him in the Mount Hood area near Boring, Oregon; and a different survivor reports that he did programming on her in Monaca, Pennsylvania that same year.

Mengele used the alias, Vaterchen in 1965 with another survivor who was then four years old. This is her account of what happened.

"I was taken to the U. P. (upper peninsula) of Michigan in 1965. I was drugged and driven by night to Little Girl Point on the Northwestern shore of Michigan's UP. This is a tall, dark, rocky point overlooking the icy waters of Lake Superior. I was taken in a station wagon while lying in the back, and followed by a plain white half-ton utility vehicle (like UPS trucks). Upon arrival, men jumped out of the van and began to set up equipment on the rocky prominence. I was taken out of the wagon, stripped naked, and taken over to the point. An eerie looking man with scary, dark eyes, dark beard and moustache, and dark-rimmed glasses approached. He said to me, "meine Madchen..."(my little girl in German.) He had a German/Yiddish accent. Other men grabbed me and forced me down on the flat rock, where my arms and legs were dislocated. I was tied down spread eagle at my wrists and ankles to iron posts protruding from the rock (like tent stakes in height-were iron). The scary man lay on top of me (I was in agony of course), and began kissing me.

'Vaterchen loves his little girl,' he said, 'pain ist pleasure und pleasure ist pain.'

He slowly raped me, repeating those two previous phrases over and over again. My body unfortunately, responded to the sexual stimulation, while at the same time I was in extreme pain from the dislocations. When my body hit orgasm, he stopped and snapped my joints back into place (extreme pain), then finished his rape. I was untied and everyone was calling me Little Girl. They said,

'You are our little girl. We love our Little Girl. We are going to teach Little Girl how to fly.'

I was led over to the very point of the rock where a mining sluice was positioned on the rock, slanting downward and protruding over the water a hundred or so feet down. The water was icy, dark, and tumultuous below, with boulders protruding above the water making it more tumultuous. I was put into a leather harness and attached to a large rope on an old iron spool. They said,

'You are Little Girl. When we call you, we want you to wake up and fly.[lviii] If you fly when we call you like you're supposed to, we will always bring you back and not lose you. If you go too far by not doing what you're supposed to, we will lose you in the icy, black nothingness; and you will die there. If you obey, we will always be able to bring you back and wrap you in warm blankets, and you can go back to sleep in a warm, cozy bed.'

Then they pulled out a cattle prod,

'This is how we call you. Wake...Little Girl, Little Girl, time to wake up. Then when we want you to fly, you will feel this.'

They stuck the cattle prod on the small of my back and zapped me. Then they stuck me in the sluice and shoved me down it shouting,

'Now fly!'

I was slid out of the sluice and over the water, hitting it hard on impact. It was ice, pain, blackness, I couldn't breathe.... drowning…. pounded by the tumultuous water near the boulder. I tried to grab the boulder to climb out. Just as I did, I was jerked back away from it, and I proceeded to drown underwater. I guess when I stopped flailing, they reeled me back up. I was literally frozen in pain and terror from lack of oxygen. They immediately wrapped me in warm blankets, after taking the harness off and continued the programming.

'Good Little Girl, you obeyed. You flew; you know what it feels like to go too far. If you awake when you're called and fly like you're supposed to, we will never lose you. We will bring you back and make you warm and cozy, and let you go back to sleep.'

> On and on they kept repeating those kinds of phrases. Once they decided I was warmed enough, he purred in my ear,
>
> 'Vaterchen loves his Little Girl. Good Little Girl. Pain ist pleasure und pleasure ist pain. Now go to sleep my Little Girl.'
>
> I was then injected with a drug, and I lost consciousness."

The survivor said that from that point on, Little Girl was the alter called out for the government experiments, not unlike when my baby alter or Guy was called upon. She continues,

"When hit with electric shock, she 'flew', dissociated from the body to the ceiling while they created a new alter through various mind-splitting, electric shock techniques. They programmed that alter, put that one away; and then Little Girl was called back verbally accompanied by a jolt of electricity."

Gerald Posner quoted Colonel Von Eckstein, a Paraguayan official as saying that Dr. Mengele traveled to Spain on a Paraguayan passport in 1965 to meet with Otto Skorzeny. Skokrzeny was a Nazi who was reported to have engineered the escape of many other Nazis after the war.[213]

In August of 1966 Josef Mengele was living in Hohenau, a resort in Paraguay at the Tirol Hotel in Room 12, where he narrowly escaped his Israeli pursuers again. John Martin, an ABC News correspondent obtained an on-camera admission in 1985 from Colonel Von Eckstein, that the Government had warned Dr. Mengele about Israeli agents searching for him.[214]

A survivor reported a possible contact with him in the summer of 1968 in Maine, and a different survivor states her final contact may have been with him in the Cleveland, Ohio area in 1968. His final alias was obtained when his friend Wolfgang Gerhard left South America in 1971. He gave Mengele his Brazilian identity card, allowing him to live and travel within the country without suspicion. Gerhard had been protecting Mengele for over a decade. In 1970, he had even put out feelers in the German expatriate community, seeking haven for Mengele. Mengele considered an offer from Klaus Barbie,[215] the "Butcher of Lyon," to move to Bolivia, but supposedly he was happy in Brazil and declined.[216] In 1972, the CIA reported that Mengele was using the name Dr. Henrique Wollman and that he might be heavily involved in drug dealing. An internal memorandum was drawn up in collaboration with the Drug Enforcement Administration. Mengele moved to Sao Paulo in 1975 where he assumed the alias of Don Pedro.

Mengele writes in his journal in 1978, “I am losing hope. It is the fifth week of suffering through days and nights without sleep.”[217] He had developed very bad migraines. One can only hope he was beginning to pay the price for his criminal behavior that was still taking place at his hands covertly in the United States and Canada.

Investigators closed the files on Josef Mengele after a skeleton unearthed in a grave marked Wolfgang Gerhard was examined and said to be Mengele’s. According to the report, he drowned after suffering a heart attack while swimming on February 7, 1979. Josef Mengele’s wife and Rolf, his son gave blood samples for DNA testing. They claimed that the body in the grave was the biological father of Rolf. It should be noted that in August 1943 Mengele’s wife, Irene, visited him in Auschwitz for the first time. In August 1944 Irene again visited Mengele when Rolf was five months old. Either Rolf had been born two months premature, or he had a different father. Could the body in the grave have been Rolf’s biological father, but not Josef Mengele?

Several months after he was supposed to have drowned, an assistant United States attorney in Miami, Florida claimed he had been given the secret task of arresting Mengele at the airport on August 29, 1979. Jerry Sandford claimed the FBI received word that he would be flying in from Asuncion on board Braniff flight 974. One hour after the FBI agents were at Sandford’s house to explain the mission, he got a call from Washington telling him Mengele had apparently been tipped off and wouldn’t be arriving. Gerald Posner reported that the Mengele family bought 400 acres of farmland in Greencastle, Indiana in December 1979 valued at $1,200,000.

In a 1985 story for the New York Times, Ralph Blumenthal reports that Mr. Posner said he had been told directly by members of a German family in Hohenau in southern Paraguay in December, that Dr. Mengele had stayed with them for several days in 1982. Mr. Posner said he had also found reports in police files in Brazil and Chile that Dr. Mengele was spotted there in 1983.[218] This is six years after he was supposed to have drowned.

President Fernando de la Rua attending the 57th anniversary of the Warsaw Uprising by Jews said Argentina must, “seek forgiveness because Nazi criminals fleeing justice entered our country and hid among us for a long time. Some were discovered, others perhaps not.” Researchers working in Argentina have said presidential papers from former President Juan Peron indicate he may have encouraged Nazi war criminals to come to Argentina.[219]

Since 1978 the government has stripped 63 accused Nazis of their U.S. citizenship and 250 others are under investigation.[220] In June 1988, the Department of State issued the so-called Second Eizenstat Report.[221] The report showed a dossier for German rocket scientist Arthur Rudolph and the records relating to the CIC’s investigation of him. Rudolph came to the United States under Project Paperclip and served in various capacities in the Army, Air Force, and NASA programs, including development of the Saturn V rocket. He left the United States and renounced his citizenship in the mid 1980’s, following an OSI investigation of his role in the use of slave labor at Mittelwerk.

In 1998 Congress passed a law requiring declassification of Nazi war criminals files held by U.S. intelligence agencies. The CIA had refused to acknowledge the existence of these records up until that time, not unlike their continued denial of many other things until they are faced with irrefutable evidence from outside sources. 10,000 pages of declassified CIA files were released on April 27, 2001, detailing working relationships with some of the same Nazi's that were wanted for war crimes.

Washington lawyer Richard Ben-Veniste, a member of a federal panel in charge of carrying out the 1998 law said the files suggested that using the Nazis was "shortsighted and counterproductive" because of their "inherent defects as human beings and their vulnerability to being blackmailed." Historian Norman Goda of Ohio University noted that in the files "the moral question--should we use these people?--is never asked." Instead, U.S. intelligence officials apparently decided that "we can use them, but we certainly can't trust them."

Perhaps now as survivors continue to speak out, we will uncover all of those responsible for bringing these criminals into the United States and Canada to continue some of the same grizzly experiments they carried out in Europe during the war. The web of secrecy that made the Holocaust possible is the same web of secrecy that allowed innocent children in the United States to become victims of their government's fear of Communism. If we allow that web of secrecy to continue because it is too painful and horrifying to read about and believe, nothing will prevent it from happening again. Too many children, including myself were systematically brainwashed. Our minds became our concentration camp. Only now by healing and speaking out, have we become liberated.

Mengele in **56** on German Passport Mengele in Paraguay 1960 (Corbis)

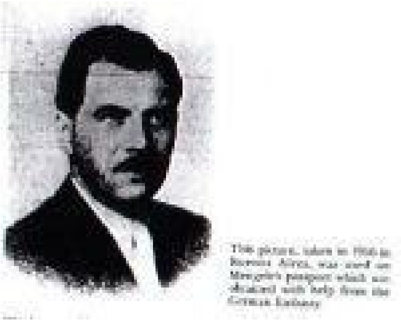

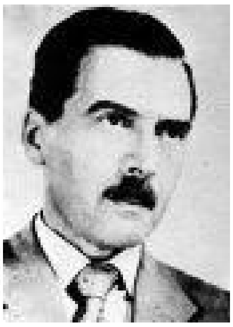

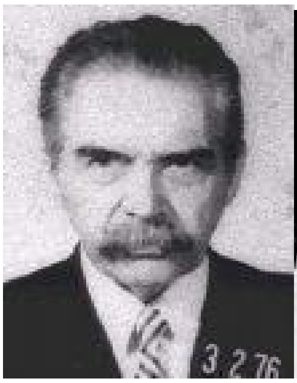

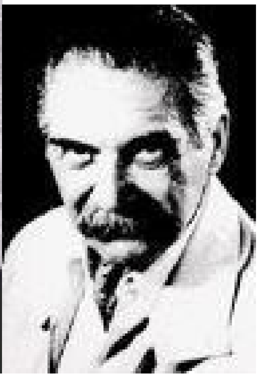

Josef Mengele Photo for Mengele's false ID card

(Associated Press left top and two bottom)
http://www.crimelibrary.com/mengele/research.htm

Conclusion

When I look at the betrayal of trust by the United States Government during the Cold War, and how it was promulgated against it's very citizens by the power it wielded, I cannot help but compare that to incest. A daughter generally remains loyal to her father after being violated because he uses his power to keep her silent and submissive. Many times the secret remains hidden for decades. So too, due to fear and the top-secret classification of these files, the entire picture of covert experimentation has remained hidden from the very citizens who themselves were used as guinea pigs.

A child who is removed from a hostile environment and then placed in an environment where it receives protection, can be resilient, recover, and go on to lead a productive life. We too, as a nation, can recover from the horrendous effects of this abuse of power, if we will only speak out. We must let our leaders know that we will not stand to let this lay dormant in the shadows of secrecy any longer. If we allow these abuses of power from the past to go unpunished because we are enjoying democracy today, then we may as well get used to the idea that Hitler will rise from the ashes in another form.

We can make each day the beginning of a new and better life for our children and their children. We can bury the hardships and deceit of the past by building a government that is worthy of our trust. The foundation of that trust must be built on truth, not secrecy. None of us expects a life free from worry or care, but we must demand to have the same kind of trust in our government that an innocent child has when he looks at the stars and believes a new day will dawn.

My life, from the time of my last remembered experiments at age 16, has taken many twists and turns. I married at 17, gave birth to the first of my three children at 18, and struggled to keep a marriage together with an unfaithful alcoholic husband for the next sixteen years. The loss of my mother when I was 29 was followed two years later by my dad's demise. At last I was free from the unconscious control this man had played in my life.

I became quite successful as a District Manager of a large temporary help company, traveling to six different cities with total budgets exceeding $6,000,000 and finally felt financially and emotionally stable enough to divorce. As I continued to spread my wings and see the heights I was able to climb unfettered by the past, I met the man who was to stand beside me as my husband through my long and painful journey to heal.

Four years into our marriage, my programming started to deteriorate and my memories began to haunt me. My struggle to free myself was the most difficult road I had yet walked. Many times I survived solely because others believed I could and would. Along with my doctor, my dear husband and sister became my confidantes. It seems I cried enough tears in the last ten years to turn the Sahara desert into an oasis. As the healing continued, I found a new person hiding beneath all the splintered diamonds of my personality. Integrating the facets of these troubled pieces of myself came naturally as I remembered, felt and understood that I no longer had to walk the trail of tears from the past. I could at last be free to choose my path and change courses at any time. It was all such a marvelous discovery—this freedom of mind, this tranquility, this peace.

Today I continue to work on recovering from the emotional and physical effects that still plaque me as a result of being used as a human guinea pig by my own government. I wish I could say that I have been free from all contact by my former programmers and handlers. I can't. Had I not started that healing journey in

1991, I would not have been able to break the programming that was installed in me for the Ides of March 1999. It was a pathetic program to be sure, installed by pathetic men when I was only 16. I have every reason to believe that the people who installed it cared little for the person who was to be the recipient of the “Red Fire.” They hoped to move another piece of the power puzzle that only they truly understand.

My handlers no longer contact me. The last time they tried by phone to activate an alter with preprogrammed cues--they failed. The man who phoned was extremely upset. He and so many others believed our programming would never break down, and if it did they counted on the insane sounding nature of these experiments to totally discredit any survivors who spoke the truth. What they could never foresee was the indomitable fighting nature that perhaps they themselves had instilled. The need to find the truth and expose it was much larger than the fear they used to control me.

I am not looking for notoriety. I don’t believe I am special. I’m just one of the many Cold War children who were convenient lab rats for a group of despicable people. I thank God for the Accountants of the world and the records they keep. Without those MKULTRA, Bluebird, and Artichoke documents, my story would sound like just another piece of science fiction.

Three years of my life have been spent documenting this book. I would have preferred to forget this ugliness and go on with my life. Instead I have walked through a trail of tears that I sometimes felt I would drown in. The emotions of the hundreds of thousands of the victims of this cold war nightmare still haunt me. They will never leave me, but by exposing the truth, I have at last been able to free much of my own hatred and pain. Understanding, speaking the truth, and forgiveness frees. Like the eagle on the cover of this book, I am soaring free of the fear and hatred that consumed me for a good portion of my life. I hope this book will continue to speak for the silent masses for decades to come. The truth can set us free.

MKULTRA DOCUMENTS

Collin A. Ross has a complete listing of the 149 MKULTRA projects with known institutions and doctors involved in Appendix C of his book *Bluebird: Deliberate Creation of Multiple Personality by Psychiatrists*.

TAB A[lix]

xxxxxxx **87624**

3 April 1953

MEMORANDUM FOR: Director, Central Intelligence

SUBJECT: Two Extremely Sensitive Research Programs

1. Approximately 6% of the TSS research and development effort lies in **two highly sensitive fields** in which it is not possible to conduct the work through the customary contracts for security reason and other considerations.

2. These two sensitive fields are: a) **Covert studies of biological and chemical warfare**

b) xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx

3. Permission of the DCI is requested to handle work in these two fields in the manner outlined in Tab A without contracts and with reimbursement to be made against invoices properly certified by TSS.

4. All controls established in the PRC approval of the original Research Program (other than signing a contract) would remain unchanged. Periodic financial and progress reports will be made. All documents will be retained by TSS.

5. No new funds are involved. This procedure would apply to funds previously approved for research.

6. Tab B is a memorandum to the Deputy Director (Administration) for your signature authorizing this procedure.

[Signature]

Richard Helms

Acting Deputy Director (Plans)

Attachments: (2)

Tab A - Description of Project MKULTRA and the controls which will be exercised over its execution

Tab B - Suggested Memorandum from DCI to DD/A authorizing payment of invoices under Project MKULTRA

87624-- TAB A

PROJECT MKULTRA

Extremely Sensitive Research and Development Programs

1. On 5 June 1952, the Project Review Committee approved the TSS Research Program for Fiscal Year 1953. [Three lines redacted]

2. The PRC approval authorized the Director of Research, at his discretion and with the approval of the Research Chairman, to apportion and obligate the research funds among individual projects, such projects to be subject to the usual Agency procedures and administrative controls.

3. This Research Program has been actively underway since the middle of 1952 and has gathered considerable momentum during the past few months. It is now evident on the basis of work currently underway that approximately 94% of the projects contemplated can be handled through regular procurement channels by means of customary contracts signed jointly by the Agency and the organization undertaking to carry out the work. It has also become apparent that approximately 6% of the projects are of such ultra-sensitive nature that they cannot and should not

be handled by means of contracts which would associate CIA or the Government with the work in question. This 6% of the current research effort now lies entirely within two well-defined fields of endeavor, namely:

Research to develop a capability in the covert use of biological and chemical materials. This area involves the production of various physiological conditions which could support present or future clandestine operational. Aside from offensive potential, the development of a comprehensive capability in this field of covert chemical and biological warfare gives us a thorough knowledge of the enemy's theoretical potential, thus enabling us to defend ourselves against a foe who might not be as restrained in the use of these techniques as we are. For example: we intend to investigate the development of a chemical material which causes a reversible non-toxic aberrant mental state, the specific nature of which can be reasonably well predicted for each individual. This material could potentially aid in discrediting individuals, eliciting information, implanting suggestion and other forms of mental control.

b) [10 lines redacted]

4. It is highly undesirable from a policy and security point of view that contracts should be signed indicating Agency or government interest in either of these two fields. In a great many instances the work in field (a) must be conducted by individuals who are not and should not be aware of our interest. In all cases dealing with field (b), it is mandatory that any connection with the Agency should be known only to an absolute minimum number of people who have been specifically cleared for this purpose. In no case should any manufacturer or supplier be aware of Government interest.

5. In many cases in field (a) where the researcher can be cleared and may be aware of our interest in the program, he is unwilling to have his name on a contract which remains out of his control in his files. Experience has shown that qualified, competent individuals in the field of pharmacological, physiological, psychiatric and other biological sciences are most reluctant to enter into signed agreements of any sort which connect them with this activity since such a connection would jeopardize their professional reputations.

6. Even internally in CIA, as few individuals as possible should be aware of our interest in these fields and of the identity of those who are working for us. At present this results in ridiculous contracts, often with cut-outs, which do not spell out the scope or intent of the work and which contain terms which the cut-out cannot incorporate in his contract with the researcher without revealing Government interest. Complete Government audits of such contracts are impossible for the same reason.

7. It is, therefore, requested that the DCI authorize TSS to handle 6% xxxxxxxx of the previously approved research budget for FY '53 without the establishment of formal contractual relations. This program will be known as Project MKULTRA.

8. It is suggested that payment of invoices under Project MKULTRA forwarded by TSS be authorized, provided that:

(a) the total of such invoices does not exceed 6%   for Fiscal Year 1953;

Author's note, rest of document details the 6% funding and is not reproduced here.

Mori ID 185209

26 July 1963

MEMORANDUM FOR: Director of Central Intelligence

SUBJECT: Report of Inspection of MKULTRA

1. In connection with our survey of Technical Services Division, DD/P, it was deemed advisable to prepare the report of the MKULTRA program in one copy only, in view of its unusual sensitivity.

2. This report is forwarded herewith.

3. The MKULTRA activity is concerned with the research and development of chemical, biological, and radiological materials capable of employment in clandestine operations to control human behavior. The end products of such research are subject to very strict controls including a requirement for the personal approval of the Deputy Director/Plans for any operational use made of these end products.

4. The cryptonym MKULTRA encompasses the R&D phase and a second cryptonym MKDELTA denotes the DD/P system for control of the operational employment of such materials. The provisions of the MKULTRA authority also cover xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx [probably chemical and biological warfare research with the US Army]. The administration and control of this latter activity were found to be generally satisfactory and are discussed in greater detail in the main body of the report on TSD.

5. MKULTRA was authorized was authorized by then Director of Central Intelligence, Mr. Allen W. Dulles, in 1953. The TSD was assigned responsibility thereby to employ a portion of its R&D budget, eventually set at 20%, for research in behavioral materials and xxxxxxxxxxxxx under purely internal and compartmented controls, (further details are provided in paragraph 3 of the attached report). Normal procedures for project approval, funding, and accounting were waived. However, special arrangements for audit of expenditures have been evolved in subsequent years.

6. The scope of MKULTRA is comprehensive and ranges from the search for and procurement of botanical and chemical substances, through programs for their analysis in scientific laboratories, to progressive testing for effect on animals and human beings. The testing on individuals begins under laboratory conditions employing every safeguard and progresses gradually to more and more realistic operational situations. The program requires and obtains the services of a number of highly specialized authorities in many fields of natural science.

7. The concepts involved in manipulating human behavior are found by many people both within and outside the Agency to be distasteful and unethical. There is considerable evidence that opposition intelligence services are active and highly proficient in this field. The experience of TSD to date indicates that both the research and the employment of the materials are expensive and often unpredictable in results. Nevertheless, there have been major accomplishments both in research and operational employment.

8. The principal conclusions of the inspection are that the structure and operational controls over this activity need strengthening; improvements are needed in the administration of research projects; and some of the testing of substances under simulated operational conditions was judged to involve excessive risk to the Agency.

9. Attached for the signature of the Deputy Director of Central Intelligence is a memorandum transmitting the report to the Deputy Director/Plans requesting a summary of action taken or comments on the recommendations contained herein.

[Signature]
J. S. Earman
Inspector General
Attachments - as stated

[Typed at first page bottom:]
Declassification Review E.O. 12065
Conducted on 17 June 1981

Derivative Classification by 531025
Review 17 June 2001
Derived from C9c.2; C9e
Downgrade xxxxxxxxxxxxx 61140

~~*[EYES ONLY*~~*]*
xxxxxxxxx - 185209
Cy 2 See D

REPORT OF INSPECTION OF MKULTRA/TSD

Introduction

1. Technical Services Division (TSD), (the Technical Support Staff) received authorization from the then Director of Central Intelligence, Mr. Allen Dulles, on 3 April 1953 to develop and maintain continuing operational capabilities in the fields of a) [one line reacted] and b) chemical and biological materials capable of producing human behavioral and psychological changes, (see Tab A). The cryptonym MKULTRA was assigned to encompass TSD's research, development and equipment activities in these two fields. The cryptonym MKDELTA had already been assigned by DD/P Notice No. 229-1 on 20 October 1952 (since revised - see Tab B) as the indicator covering DD/P policy and procedure for the use of biochemicals in clandestine operations.

2. The MKULTRA charter provides only a brief presentation of the rationale of the authorized activities. The sensitive aspect of the program as it has evolved over the ensuing ten years are the following:

Research in the manipulation of human behavior is considered by many authorities in medicine and related fields to be professionally unethical, therefore the reputations of professional participants in the MKULTRA program are on occasion in jeopardy.

b. Some MKULTRA activities raise questions of legality implicit in the original charter.

c. A final phase of the testing of MKULTRA products places the rights and interests of U.S. citizens in jeopardy.

d. Public disclosure of some aspects of MKULTRA activity could induce serious adverse reaction in U.S. public opinion, as well as stimulate offensive and defensive action in this field on the part of foreign intelligence services.

3. In recognition of the sensitivity of MKULTRA, TSD was authorized exclusive control of the administration, records, and financial accountings of the program. Simple statements of certification were all that were required of TSD to obtain advances of funds from Finance Division. The DCI's memorandum also exempted MKULTRA from audit, but this provision was modified to permit limited audit before the end of the first year. Funding of MKULTRA was eventually stabilized at 20 percent of TSD's annual research and development budget. It has fallen in the neighborhood of xxxxxxxxxx per year over the ten-year history of the program, of which about 30 percent has been allocated to support of the xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx, cf. Tab C for MKULTRA funding record FY 60-63.

4. The inspection of TSD activities in the field of xxxxxxxxxxxxxxx noted below in the section of the Inspector General's Survey dealing with the xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx of TSD, cf. discussions beginning with paragraphs xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx. The security considerations applying to xxxxxxxxxxxx were found to be significantly different from those governing manipulation of human behavior. a) Many xxxxx external projects in support of the xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx are being funded and managed securely

outside the MKULTRA mechanism. b) Chief, Support, TSD, believes that it may also be possible in the future to fund xxxxx MKULTRA projects by secure methods more compatible with DD/S responsibilities. c) The very nature of the xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx requires that a high percentage of staff contribute and be witting of each operation. xxxxx security practices are tight and the Inspector General's Survey recommends further refinements in security procedures.

5. The inspection of MKULTRA projects in biochemical controls of human behavior raised questions in the following area of policy and management which are dealt with in the balance of this report:

a. Scope of the MKULTRA charter:

(1) Over the ten-year life of the program many additional avenues to the control of human behavior have been designated by the TSD management as appropriate to investigation under the MKULTRA charter, including radiation, electro-shock, various fields of psychology, psychiatry, sociology, and anthropology, graphology, harassment substances, and paramilitary devices and materials.

(2) Various projects do not appear to have been sufficiently sensitive to warrant waiver of normal Agency procedures for authorization and control.

(3) Other secure channels for establishment and funding of Agency-sterile activities have been evolved over the past ten years by Deputy Director/Support (DD/S) and in some cases could reasonably be employed by TSD in lieu of MKULTRA procedures.

In view of these developments there is substantial agreement among all parties concerned that redefinition of the scope of MKULTRA is now appropriate.

b. MKULTRA management policies:

(1) The original charter documents specified that TSD maintain exacting control of MKULTRA activities. In doing so, however, TSD has pursued a philosophy of minimum documentation in keeping with the high sensitivity of some of the projects. Some files were found to present a reasonably complete record, including most sensitive matters, while others with parallel objectives contained little or no data at all. The lack of consistent records precluded use of routine inspection procedures and raised a variety of questions concerning management and fiscal controls.

(2) Lack of records essential to inspection of MKULTRA moved to the forefront among issues as the present survey proceeded. Under normal circumstances the inspectors would have examined an inventory of discrediting, disabling, and lethal substances perfected or procured form whatever sources. The records on representative items would have been review according to such standard criteria as:

(a) How were the substance and its properties identified?

(b) What researcher was selected to perform the research, and why?

(c) When was work begun, where, involving what costs, at what rate of progress, based on what tests?

(d) What are the present capabilities and limitations of the substance for clandestine operations?

(e) What further research is being conducted on this and related substances and how does this reflect existing TSD capabilities, operational requirements and budget factors?

(3) MKULTRA records afforded no such approach to inspection. There are just two individuals in TSD who have full substantive knowledge of the program and most of that knowledge is unrecorded. Both are highly skilled, highly motivated, professionally competent individuals. Part of their competence lies in their

command of intelligence tradecraft. In protecting the sensitive nature of the American intelligence capability to manipulate human behavior, they apply "need to know" doctrine to their professional associates and to their clerical assistants to a maximum degree. Confidence in their competence and discretion has been a vital feature of the management of MKULTRA.

c. Advanced testing of MKULTRA materials:

It is the firm doctrine in TSD that testing of materials under accepted scientific procedure fails to disclose the full pattern of reactions and attributions that may occur in operational situations. TSD initiated a program for covert testing of materials on unwitting U.S. citizens in 1955. The present report reviews the rationale and risks attending this activity and recommends termination of such testing in the United States, cf. paragraphs 10-18 below.

Modus Operandi

6. The research and development of materials capable of producing behavioral or physiological change in humans is now performed within a highly elaborate and stabilized MKULTRA structure. The search for new materials; e.g., psilocybin from Mexican mushrooms, or a fungi occurring in agricultural crops, is conducted through standing arrangements with specialists in universities, pharmaceutical houses, hospitals, state and federal institutions, and private research organizations who are authorities in the given field of investigation in their own right. Annual grants of funds are made under ostensible research foundation auspices to the specialists located in the public or quasi-public institutions. This approach conceals from the institution the interest of CIA and permits the recipient to proceed with his investigation, publish his findings (excluding intelligence implications), and account for his expenditures in a manner normal to his institution. A number of grants have included funds for the construction and equipping of research facilities and for the employment of research assistants. Key individuals must qualify for top secret clearance and are made witting of Agency sponsorship. As a rule each specialist is managed unilaterally and is not witting of Agency support of parallel MKULTRA research in his field. The system in effect "buys a piece" of the specialist in order to enlist his aid in pursuing the intelligence implications of his research. His services typically include systematic search of the scientific literature, procurement of materials, their propagation, and the application of test dosages to animals and under some circumstances to volunteer human subjects. No quarrel is found with the rationale of this program tot the extent that it fits the original MKULTRA charter. However, for inspection purposes, there were lacking records, year by year, of the progress of each project and the recorded judgments of the project monitors on operational benefits vis-à-vis costs.

7. The funding of sensitive MKULTRA projects by sterile grants in aid as noted in the preceding paragraph disclosed one of the principal controversial aspects of the program. The original charter of MKULTRA assumed that the sensitivity of activities would be sufficient to justify both a) special protection for the researcher; and b) compartmentation of MKULTRA knowledge within the Agency. On this basis the inherent safeguards of DD/S procedures were waived, the DD/S was not consulted in the design of the MKULTRA management system, and established Agency audit procedures were waived. In the subsequent administration of the program, however, TSD has found it feasible to contract with some of the research on MKULTRA objectives in accordance with prescribed DD/S procedures. The DD/S, in turn, has evolved various secure systems for the funding of sensitive activities. It appears feasible and appropriate, therefore, to propose that the DD/S be consulted during the re-chartering of MKULTRA in the design of an administrative system that does justice to his responsibilities as well as to the

management and security requirements of TSD. The Inspector General accordingly has recommended at the end of this report that the DD/S be consulted in the re-design of the system; that the Chief, Support, TSD, be assigned responsibility for the day-to-day support of MKULTRA; and that the latter constitute a bridge to the DD/S for monitoring the future evolution of the system.

8. The next phase of the MKULTRA program involves physicians, toxicologists, and other specialists in mental, narcotics, and general hospitals and in prisons, who are provided the products and findings of the basic research projects and proceed with intensive testing on human subjects. These specialists are also recipients for testing purposes of the flow of new products from pharmaceutical laboratories. Materials and procedures with intelligence potential may be identified through this relationship. The testing programs are conducted under accepted scientific procedures including the use of control populations, the employment of placebos, and the detailed observation, measurement, recording, analysis, and publication of findings. Where health permits, test subjects are voluntary participants in the program.

9. A current development in the testing of new products is the tightening of controls over dosages and procedures by the U.S. Food and Drug Administration. Since MKULTRA files contained no documentation on this subject, it was not possible to appraise the significance of this development for MKULTRA objectives. However, interviews with the TSD officers concerned indicated that that the new rules are affecting procedures and causing controversy in research hospitals and pharmaceutical houses. The TSD officers have close relationships with key individuals in many of the leading U.S. pharmaceutical houses and count on their continued close cooperation in obtaining materials and services deemed vital to U.S. intelligence.

10. The final phase of testing of MKULTRA materials involves their application to unwitting subjects in normal life settings. It was noted earlier that the capabilities of MKULTRA substances to produce disabling or discrediting effects or to increase the effectiveness of interrogation of hostile subjects cannot be established solely through testing of volunteer populations. Reaction and attribution patterns are clearly affected when the testing is conducted in an atmosphere of confidence under skilled medical supervision.

11. TSD, therefore, entered into a formal arrangement with certain cleared and witting individuals in the Bureau of Narcotics in 1955 which provided for the released of MKULTRA materials for such testing as those individuals deemed desirable and feasible. The initial arrangement obtained the services of a senior representative of the Bureau and one of his assistants on the West Coast. A parallel arrangement was established on the East Coast in 1961. The Director of the Bureau has been briefed on the activity, but the Deputy Chief, TSD, who has guided MKULTRA from its inception, is of the opinion that the former would disclaim all knowledge and responsibility in the event of a compromise. The MKULTRA program director has, in fact, provided close supervision of the testing program from the beginning and makes periodic visits to the sites. A sum of $10,000 has been provided annually to each of the two projects to cover cost of cultivation of targets and maintenance of a safe house in each area for the observation of effects of substances on selected test individuals.

12. The particular advantage of these arrangements with the Bureau of Narcotics officials has been that test subjects could be sought and cultivated within the setting of narcotics control. Some subjects have been informers or members of suspect criminal elements from whom the Bureau has obtained results of operational value through the tests. On the other hand, the effectiveness of the

substances on individuals at all social levels, high and low, native American and foreign, is of great significance and testing has been performed on a variety of individuals within these categories.

13. A significant limitation on the effectiveness of such testing is the infeasibility of performing scientific observation of results. The Bureau agents are not qualified scientific observers. Their subjects are seldom accessible beyond the first hours of the test. The testing may be useful in perfecting delivery techniques, and in identifying surface characteristics of onset, reaction, attribution, and side-effect. In a number of instances, however, the test subject has become ill for hours or days, including hospitalization in at least on case, and the agent could only follow-up by guarded inquiry after the test subject's return to normal life. Possible sickness and attendant economic loss are inherent contingent effects of the testing.

14. The MKULTRA program officer stated that the objectives of covert testing concern the field of toxicology rather than medicine; further, that the program is not intended to harm test individuals, and that the medical consultation and assistance is obtained when appropriate through separate MKULTRA arrangements. The risk of compromise of the program through correct diagnosis of an illness by an unwitting medical specialist is regularly considered and is stated to be a governing factor in the decision to conduct a given test. The Bureau officials also maintain close working relations with local police authorities which could be utilized to protect the activity in critical situations.

15. There have been several discussions in the public press in recent months on the use of certain MKULTRA-type drugs to influence human behavior. Broadly speaking, these have argued that research knowledge of possible adverse effects of such substances on human beings is inadequate, that some applications have done serious harm, and that professional researchers in medicine and psychiatry are split on the ethics of performing such research. Increasing public attention to this subject must be expected.

16. The final step in the research and development sequence is the delivery of MKULTRA materials into the MKDELTA control system governing their employment in clandestine operations. The subject is discussed further in the next section; however, it is appropriate here to note that the employment of MKDELTA materials remains an art rather than a scientific procedure. A significant number of variable in the target individual, including age, sex, weight, general health, social status, and personality structure, may account for widely varying and unpredictable reactions to a given drug in a given dosage.

17. The final stage of covert testing of materials on unwitting subjects is clearly the most sensitive aspect of MKULTRA. No effective cover story appears to be available. TSD officials state that responsibility for covert testing is transferred to the Bureau of Narcotics. Yet they also predict that the Chief of the Bureau would disclaim any knowledge of the activity. Present practice is to maintain no records of the planning and approval of test programs. The principal responsibility for the propriety of such testing rests with the MKULTRA program director and the Deputy Chief of TSD. The handling of test subjects in the last analysis rests with the Narcotics agent working alone. Suppression of knowledge of critical results from the top TSD and CIA management is an inherent risk in these operations.

18. Final phase testing of MKULTRA substances or devices on unwitting subjects is recognized to be an activity of genuine importance in the development of some but not all MKULTRA products. Termination of such testing would have some, but an essentially indeterminate, effect on the development of operational capability in this field. Of more critical significance, however, is the risk of serious damage to the Agency in the event of compromise of the true nature of this activity. As now

performed under Bureau of Narcotics auspices, non-Agency personnel are necessarily fully witting of the true nature and significance of their assignments, and of the sponsorship of CIA. Compromise of this information intentionally or unwittingly by these individuals at some time in the future is a hazard that cannot be ruled out. A test subject may on some occasions in the future correctly attribute the cause of his reaction and secure independent professional medical assistance in identifying the exact nature of the substance employed, and by whom. An extreme reaction to a test substance could lead to a Bureau request for cooperation from local authorities in suppressing information of the situation. This would in turn broaden the circle of individuals who possessed at least circumstantial evidence of the nature of the activity. Weighing possible benefits of such testing against the risk of compromise and of resulting damage to CIA has led the Inspector General to recommend termination of this phase of the MKULTRA program. Existing checks and balances on the working level management of such testing do not afford the senior command of CIA adequate protection against the high risks involved.

19. It does not follow that termination of cover testing of MKULTRA materials on unwitting U.S. citizens will bring the program to a halt. Some testing on foreign nationals has been occurring under the present arrangements. Various U.S. deep cover agents overseas would appear to be more favorably situated than the U.S. narcotic agents to perform realistic testing. Finally, the operational use of the substances clearly serves the testing function in view of the lack of predictability of human reactions.

Current estimate of the MKULTRA/MKDELTA capability

20. The present Deputy Chief of TSD, Dr. Sidney Gottlieb, in his then capacity of scientific advisor to the Deputy Director/Plans (DD/P), released a study (hereafter referred to as the Gottlieb report) on 21 April 1960, covering his six-month investigation of “Scientific and Technical Problems in Covert Action Operations”. Appendix B of the report was entitled, “The Applicability of Special Chemicals and biologicals to Clandestine Operations.” The inspectors found this Appendix to be a carefully prepared and very useful treatment of the subject. The remaining paragraphs draw on the Gottlieb report, take account of developments since that date, and discuss management and funding aspects of MKULTRA.

21. The author opened his discussion with the question of what the operational returns had been from an eight-year program involving an investment of approximately xxxxxxxxxx. He observed that the Clandestine Services had encouraged TSD on various occasions to develop and maintain the operational capability in special drugs and chemicals but that TSD had received little or no guidance in directing the work and that the Clandestine Services had up to that time shown little inclination to use the end products operationally. He indicated that there had been approximately 100 operations over the eight years employing harassment materials (not controlled under the MKDELTA regulation) and only nine operations employing disabling drugs, (NB: two-thirds of these involved the use of drugs in interrogations). No use of lethal substances was reported.

22. The factors accounting for the low rate of use of this capability were considered to be the following:

a. the technical shortcomings of the drugs
b. the problem of testing in realistic pilot operations
c. limitations on the dissemination of pertinent information to operations officers
d. organizational and administrative restrictions on operations
e. negative attitudes toward the use of MKDELTA materials
f. problems in the training of case officers in this field
g. the risk of stimulating increased use of MKDELTA materials by opposition

intelligence services

23. Technical shortcomings of the drugs:

As of 1960 no effective knockout pill, truth serum, aphrodisiac, or recruitment pill was known to exist. MKDELTA was described as inherently a high-risk, low-yield field of operations. Three years later the situation remains substantially unchanged with the exception that real progress has been made in the use of drugs in support of interrogation. Ironically, however, the progress here has occurred in the development of a total psychological theory of interrogation, in which the use of drugs has been relegated to a support role. [Nine and one-half lines redacted]

24. The problem of testing in realistic pilot operations:

The subject has been discussed above, beginning with paragraph 10. It should also be noted that testing on operational targets overseas is considered by some operations officers to be quite impracticable. Unilateral operations are imperative which substantially complicates the delivery problem. The possibilities of unexpected or critical reactions in test subjects and of ensuring compromise of the activity make most senior command personnel unwilling to take the risks involved.

25. Limitations on the dissemination of pertinent information to case officers; organizational and administrative restrictions on operations:

The present-day situation concerning both these problem areas is improved over 1960. TSD now regularly briefs a variety of senior officers on its MKDELTA capability. Approval of the use of MKDELTA materials is now accomplished within the chain of command of the DD/P. The DD/P may consult, for example, with the Chief, Medical Staff, concerning medical risks involved in MKDELTA operations, but the latter surely would not expect to exercise final authority for the disapproval of operations.

26. TSD has found that TDY visits of MKULTRA officers to the field in support of specific operations increases the awareness of the MKDELTA capability and stimulates proposals for additional projects. Of equal significance, however, has been the TSD decision in 1961 to station in the xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx officer who is informed on MKDELTA matters. A second officer is scheduled to move PCS to xxxxxxx during the summer of 1963 to support xx and adjacent stations. While the principal responsibility of these officers lies in the field xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx the arrangement in the xxxxxxxxx has proved useful in the MKDELTA field -- notably in interrogation -- as well. It now appears that increased reliance can be placed on this approach to promoting responsible use of the MKDELTA capabilities.

27. Negative attitudes toward the use of MKDELTA materials; problems in the training of case officers in this field:

The Gottlieb report observed that some case officers have basic moral objections to the concept of MKDELTA and therefore refuse to use the materials. Some senior officers were reported to believe that the proper employment of the capability required more sophistication than most case officers possessed and that there would be a tendency toward over-reliance on and misuse of drugs in lieu of perfecting classic espionage techniques. Finally, it was suggested that MKDELTA controls were so restrictive as to have generated a general defeatism among case officers concerning the chances of getting approval for the use of materials in routine rather than extreme situations. These matters will be reviewed in future field inspections of DD/P area divisions. In the meanwhile, the stationing of qualified TSD consultants in the field and increasing operational experience will tend to develop over time a category of case officers who have acquired direct appreciation of the potential and limitations of MKDELTA capability.

28. The risk of stimulating increase use of MKDELTA materials by opposition

intelligence services:

The Gottlieb report stated that opposition intelligence services are active in the MKDELTA field and recommended that the CI Staff of the DD/P conduct a systematic study of the evidence. This recommendation has not been implemented. It is a subject of increasing significance as new materials and techniques become available.

It is recommended that:

Deputy Director/Plans instruct Chief, CI Staff, to perform a study of the evidence of the use of MKDELTA materials by opposition intelligence services and recommend appropriate measures for training DD/P case officers to recognize and counter hostile activity in this area.

29. In summary, present evidence concerning the operational value of MKDELTA capability would appear to confirm the principal judgments of the 1960 Gottlieb report. There is an extremely low rate of operational use of the controlled materials. On the other hand, significant progress has been achieved in the development of an interrogation theory employing chemical substances, and in providing competent guidance to the field in MKDELTA matters through TSD officers working overseas.

Management of MKULTRA

30. TSD has initiated 144 projects relating to the control of human behavior; i.e., xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx during the ten years of operation of the MKULTRA program. Twenty-five (25) of these projects remain in existence at the present time, while a number of others are in various stages of termination.

31. Active projects may be groups under the following arbitrary headings. Many projects involve activity in two or more of the areas listed.

a. basic research in materials and processes
b. procurement of research materials
c. testing of substances on animals and human beings
d. development of delivery techniques
e. projects in offensive/defensive BW, CW, and radiation
f. miscellaneous projects; e.g., (1) petroleum sabotage, (2) defoliants, (3) devices for remote measurement of physiological processes

32. The current management of TSD has initiated a policy of directing the activities of MKULTRA and of the Behavioral Activities Branch towards operations and away from long-range research. Prior to this change in policy which occurred in 1962, MKULTRA sponsored a large number of projects in the fields of applied psychology, sociology, anthropology, and graphology. The present management is unlikely to return to these fields of research under the MKULTRA charter. The inspectors concluded that many of these projects were of insufficient sensitivity to justify waiver of normal Agency control procedures. It is recommended at the end of this report that projects falling outside the authorized scope of MKULTRA henceforth require the prior written approval of the DD/P to qualify for MKULTRA processing.

33. The TSD chain of command for administration of the MKULTRA program comprises the following:

a. Chief, TSD providing overall management
b. Deputy Chief, TSD, (a trained scientist) providing top substantive guidance for the MKULTRA program
c. Assistant Chief, TSD, for Research and Development, contributing management but not substantive guidance
d. Chief Scientist (reporting to c., above), (a trained scientist), contributing substantive guidance in some areas and responsible for the technical

administrative processes of MKULTRA. He is supported by a GS-12 budget officer.
e. program manager for MKULTRA, also serves as Chief of Biology Branch, (a trained scientist)
f. project monitors located in various branches of TSD and specialized in the subject fields of the specific projects for which they are assigned responsibility

To date this chain of command has relied primarily on oral communications in the management of MKULTRA. Files are notably incomplete, poorly organized, and lacking in evaluative statements that might give perspective to management policies over time. A substantial portion of the MKULTRA record appears to rest in the memories of the principal officers and is therefore almost certain to be lost with their departures. The senior officers in the MKULTRA chain of command who are not substantively qualified need better records to measure the validity of projects through time and to identify key area in which to require detailed periodic briefings from working specialists.

34. It will be noted that the Chief of Support, TSD, does not participate in the MKULTRA administration. The predecessor of the present Chief of Support served in TSD throughout the life of the program until 1962 without ever being associated with the management. In his stead, the Chief Scientist and a GS-12 budget officer have provided administrative support. The Chief Scientist has set policy on the funding of MKULTRA projects in all respects including salaries, overhead rates, fees, material, equipment, facilities, travel and the like. The support officer was only added in 1962 under pressure of critical audit findings. This use of the Chief Scientist in a field where Chief of Support possesses superior qualifications and facilities constitutes a misuse of talent. The proposed new charter for MKULTRA should take account of this anomaly and also provide that Chief of Support advise in the future on decisions to fund projects under the MKULTRA authority and thereby to waive the application of DD/S procedures.

It is recommended that:

Deputy Director/Plans draft and submit for the approval of the Director of Central Intelligence a revision and re-confirmation of the authority granted him in 1953 (Tab A) to operate the MKULTRA program, incorporating the following provisions:

a. Deputy Director/Plans assign Chief, Technical Services Division, to operate MKULTRA as a program for research and development of chemical, biological, and radioactive materials, and of techniques for the employment of electro-shock, capable of producing human behavioral or physiological change. Subsequent changes in scope of MKULTRA shall require the written approval of the Deputy Director/Plans.

b. Deputy Director/Plans arrange with Deputy Director/Research for the coordination of research relating to MKULTRA objectives to control duplication of effort and to provide for exchange of information of new capabilities.

c. Chief, Technical Services Division, consistent with established policy, may negotiate for research in MKULTRA materials and techniques to be conducted by Deputy Director/Research and by other component offices of CIA. He shall consult regularly with the appropriate officers of such components to control duplication of effort.

d. Chief, Technical Services Division shall approve the addition of MKULTRA developed materials to the list of operationally available MKDELTA substances and keep the Deputy Director/Plans advised of such additions. (cf. Clandestine Services Instruction No. 220-10, MKDELTA MATERIALS, dated 22 July 1960 -- Tab B -- which governs the employment of behavioral control materials in clandestine operations.)

e. Deputy Director/Plans, jointly with Deputy Director/Support, establish policy for the administration of support functions under MKULTRA. Such policy shall seek to limit the maximum waiver of established Agency support procedures for activities of unusual sensitivity.

f. Chief, Technical Services Division shall maintain exacting internal controls and records of all substantive and support matters within each MKULTRA project. Records shall include:

(1) A plan of the research and development to be performed.

(2) An administrative annex setting forth security, budget and accounting arrangements agreed to by the parties of the project. Chief of Support, TSD, shall then certify to the DD/S for each such project that this annex is in accord with the agreed DDS/DDP policy. Pursuant to this responsibility, Chief of Support, TSD, shall have right of unlimited access to the substantive and administrative records of MKULTRA.

(3) An annual written review by the project monitor setting forth in reasonable detail the nature of the work performed, the prospects for results of eventual operational significance, and a recommendation for continuance or termination of the project.

g. Testing of MKULTRA materials and devices shall only be performed in accredited research institutions under accepted scientific procedures.

h. Chief, Technical Services Division, shall brief the Deputy Director/Plans at least semi-annually on MKULTRA activities. The Deputy Director/Plans after each briefing shall promptly notify the Deputy Director of Central Intelligence that he has personally conducted a semi-annual review of the program.

i. The MKULTRA program be audited in accordance with the provisions of HR 31-1, including auditor access to substantive as well as administrative records.

Mori ID 17749

29 November 1963

MEMORANDUM FOR THE RECORD

SUBJECT: MKULTRA PROGRAM

1. A meeting was held in General Carter’s office on 29 November 1963 to discuss the subject program. Those present, in addition to General Carter, were Messrs. Helms, Kirkpatrick, xxxxxxxx, Gottlieb and Earman. The main thrust of the discussion was the testing of certain drugs on unwitting U.S. citizens. Dr. Gottlieb gave a brief history of the MKULTRA program which was not in any way at variance with the IG report of August 1963 on this subject.

2. Messrs. Gottlieb and xxxxxxxx argued for the continuation of unwitting testing, using as the principal point that controlled testing cannot be depended upon for accurate results. General Carter, Mr. Kirkpatrick, and I do not disagree with this point. We also accept the necessity for having a “stable of drugs” on the shelf and the requirement for continued research and development of drugs -- not only for possible operational use but also to give CIA insight on the state of the art in this field and in particular to alert us to what the opposition is or might be expected to do in the R&D and employment of drugs.

3. xxxxxxxxxx noted that there was no disagreement with the recommendations of the IG survey on MKULTRA with the exception of the unwitting testing problem. In response to a query from General Carter, he stated that since the IG report such testing has been held in abeyance.

4. General Carter made it clear that he understood the necessity for research and development of all types of drugs, to include their testing. However, he was troubled by the “unwitting aspect” This led to a brief discussion on the possibility of unwitting tests on foreign nationals, but according to xxxxxxxx this had been ruled out as a result of several conversations he recently had with senior chiefs of

stations -- too dangerous and the lack of controlled facilities. (This seemed an odd conclusion to me since the same dangers exist in the U.S. and from what we were able to find out during our survey, the facilities we have for uncontrolled testing leave much to be desired -- I made a point of this.)

5. After further discussion, it was agreed:

That the charter of MKULTRA would be revised along the lines recommended in the IG Survey.

The procedures for testing drugs are to be reviewed and new alternative proposals submitted.

c. If it is concluded by the DD/P that unwitting testing on American citizens must be continued to operationally prove out these drugs, it may become necessary to place this problem before the Director for a decision.

6. I made the point that the IG survey had found other problems with the MKULTRA program in addition to the unwitting testing, but stated if the charter is rewritten along the lines recommended, I believe these problems would be corrected.

7. NOTE: the IG Survey of MKULTRA was handed to xxxxxxxx after the meeting for his use in redrafting the charter.

[Initials]
J. S. Earman
Inspector General
JSE:cm

Part II

Part II contains research and documentation of additional experiments that may have already touched your lives. I felt it imperative that I include a narrative of the experiments performed on our Servicemen and women, prisoners, and patients in our hospitals. Many of these people will never know why they suffer a variety of debilitating diseases without this knowledge. In some cases surviving relatives of those who died as a result of these experiments may at last be able to understand what happened to their loved ones. In still other cases, offspring who have been born with birth defects, may find some answers.

Members of the Advisory Committee on Human Radiation Experiments said:

“That based on interviews, some tentative conclusions may be drawn regarding the ethical milieu of medical research in the 1940’s and ‘50’s. In the absence of an established code of conduct, other influences guided investigator behavior. Some perhaps caught up in the excitement of research or the desire to advance their career, used patients as subjects of investigation without their knowledge or consent. Others relied on the power and prestige of their position to convince subjects to participate even when benefit was questionable or nonexistent, and even in the absence of complete information.”[222]

How many of you had to pay the price for this type of thinking?

Radiation Experiments:

Most people occasionally stumble over the truth, but pick themselves up and continue on as if nothing had ever happened.

Winston Churchill

On February 10, 1995,the *New York Times* reported that “about 9,000 Americans including children and newborns were used in 154 human radiation tests” sponsored by the Atomic Energy Commission, with additional tests being conducted by other governmental agencies. Subsequent reports released since that time suggest that the experiments and their impacts on humans was far greater than originally indicated.

In military studies of total body irradiation from 1951 to 1972, approximately 500 people with cancer were exposed to radiation over their entire bodies. According to Eileen Welsome in *The Plutonium Files*, some patients received large single blasts of radiation, while others were exposed to repeated, low dosages. Records indicate that the radiation caused excruciating pain and led to the premature deaths of a number of patients.[223] Welsome worked tirelessly for five years to obtain information on these experiments through Freedom of Information files.

Internal Manhattan Project memoranda indicate that high-level policy makers knew of the potential danger to human subjects in radiation experiments as early as 1944. A number of what were considered to be overriding concerns, including a fear that scientists in the former Soviet Union were conducting similar experiments, resulted in a decision to proceed on a secret basis despite the dangers to the human subjects.[224]

In response to the 1995 report by the Advisory Committee on Human Radiation Experiments (ACHRE), the White House released a report detailing the Clinton Administration’s planned actions with recommendations and their implementation by the Human Radiation Interagency Working Group (IWG).[225] This report detailed the steps the US Government would take to finally “right the wrongs of the past inflicted on unknowing citizens." The Advisory Committee on Human Radiation Experiments was charged with investigating these experiments and determining how scientific and ethical standards were observed in these activities, and was given access to the records of all relevant federal agencies. Unfortunately, in many cases they did not "Right the Wrongs of the Past."

Deliberate Releases of Radiated Materials

The Advisory Committee's research acknowledges that government-sponsored experiments involving the exposure of human subjects to potentially dangerous levels of radiation were far more common than had been believed. Between 1948 and 1952, they included at least 13 deliberate releases of radiated materials into the atmosphere near populated areas to study fallout patterns and the rate of radioactive decay of atmospherically released particles. Initial reports also indicate that, while high-level officials were aware of the dangers and the ethical considerations involved, there was a consistent lack of effective regulation governing administration of the tests.

What the Advisory Committee does not mention is that there was global fallout from over 500 tests in the atmosphere in the Northern Hemisphere between 1952-63. 150MT of fission yield. Most of these tests were carried out at sites far from the U.S., primarily in the south Pacific at Bikini and Enewetok or in the Soviet Union. Most of the yield was from multi-megaton thermonuclear tests where 80% of the debris was injected into the stratosphere and 20% injected into the troposphere.[226]

Between 1952 and 1962 atmospheric tests were conducted in Nevada and the Pacific. Los Alamos scientists fired Bravo during March 1954. The blast size and amount of radioactive fallout were far greater than planned. Bravo fallout contaminated 7,000 square miles, some of it with very high radiation. Fallout descended upon the military and scientific taskforce conducting the test series, Marshallese islanders, and the crew of a Japanese fishing vessel, the Lucky Dragon.[227]

In San Diego in 1955 during Operation Wigwam, a thirty-kiloton bomb was exploded underwater off the coast. During Operation Argus three bombs were detonated above the South Atlantic Ocean. Some 35 nuclear devices were detonated at and near the test site, as well as in Alaska, Colorado, New Mexico, and Mississippi as part of the Plowshare Program.[228]

Human Research at the Bomb Tests [229]

Radiation Tests with Live Troops

In 1946 the United States conducted Operation Crossroads, the first peacetime nuclear weapons tests before an audience of worldwide press and visiting dignitaries at the Bikini Atoll in the Pacific Marshall Islands.

Beginning with the 1946 Bikini tests, experiments with living things became a staple of bomb tests. At Operation Crossroads animals were penned on the decks of target ships to study the effects of radiation. In the 1948 Sandstone series at the Marshall Islands Eniwetok Atoll, seeds, grains, and fungi were added.

Tom Smith's testimony before the Interagency Working Group left little else to be said. "I'm an atomic veteran. I've been to 17 shots in Eniwetok and I would like to be a little bit self-serving. I have suffered from so many maladies that you could not write them all down. I have to go to the computer to figure them out. I've had 25 major operations and I mean major. The Veterans Department or the VA says that I did not get enough radiation to cause any of this. There is no history in my family of diabetes. There is no history in my family of degenerative disk disease. There's no history in my family of liver disease. There is no history in my family for anything that I have. I have a picture here I showed the Colonel earlier. This is one of three underwater shots. We were so close we received damage to our ship. However, we were not close enough to be radiated? And I would like the panel to see it and anyone else who would be interested in taking a look at it. It's an official copy of an Air Force photograph. This ship in the foreground is a liberty ship and was used as a target ship. It had been used at numerous tests. It was alongside my ship for repairs and for equipment to be put on. After this particular shot it was too hot to use as a test ship any longer; so what we had to do is go down into the ship and cut holes in the bulkheads between the sections, so the water would equalize when we sank it. And then they talk about dose reconstruction. How can you do dose reconstruction when people were everywhere? When Orville Kelly died he was stationed on Jap 10 Island.[lx] Jap 10 Island was right next to Eniwetok Island and after Orville was stationed there, they made it an R&R station. That's where we went to go swimming, drink beer, and play around; and that was the station that Orville Kelly received his total dose and he died of multiple myeloma."

Included in a 1994 report[230] is a study on the "Attenuation of 1.2 Mev gamma radiation by Soviet and U.S. Army Chemical and Biological Defense Command." The report states, "From a presently undetermined date until 1953, researchers in the Ordnance Corps at Aberdeen Proving Ground, MD and the Army Chemical & Biological Defense Command, MD, studied the shielding capability of certain Soviet and U.S. military vehicles and U.S. rail equipment against gamma radiation, as well as decontamination procedures. Active duty military personnel participated in the study. The contamination was produced by placing 800 cobalt-60 pellets, 1/8 of an inch in diameter and 1/8th of an inch long contained in steel capsules two feet apart, over an area 160 feet in length and twenty feet wide. Dosage rates at selected sitting positions were measured with live troops riding over contamination in certain vehicles. Results of the research are undetermined to date.

Military personnel exposed to radiation in a 1957 detonation of the atomic bomb in Nevada were pilots and soldiers in front row trenches. This experiment was code-named "Hood," and those involved were told they would be guilty of treason if they talked about this project. After the test some men in the platoon found cages and fenced enclosures, which contained animals burned almost beyond recognition. Robert Carter and Israel Torres were just two of several men present during the tests who saw humans in handcuffs chained to fences. The soldiers who spoke of seeing the burned and shackled remains of humans in a stockade with barbed wire on top of it after the nuclear explosion were submitted to psychiatric "deprogramming." Afterwards they were told if they repeated the story they would be thrown out of the Corps.

One soldier, Robert Carter, who continued to speak about this was locked up and told the only way he could leave was to go through a reverse brainwashing type procedure. He recalls them using what he thought was needles in the top of his head trying to break him down so he would not reveal what he had seen.[231] This sounds quite similar to the stereotaxic procedures used on me.

Years later many of these men developed cancer and died from the deadly radiation. Imagine the emotional impact on these soldiers from not only being a part of this horrendous explosion and then suffering physical ailments from their proximity to the test, but being forced to keep silent about the human guinea pigs who died while being held captive. What crime could these people possibly have committed to be murdered in this way? Who could have been that expendable?

Nuclear fallout from these tests conducted in our atmosphere in the Fifties covered all 50 states due to wind dust and rain clouds.[232] Eileen Welsome reported that no comprehensive epidemiological study had ever been done of the atomic veterans.[233]

In 1997 scientists at the National Cancer Institute estimated that bomb tests conducted in Nevada during the fifties might cause 10,000 to 75,000 extra thyroid cancers. Seventy percent of the cancers have yet to be diagnosed, as three-fourths are expected to develop in people who were younger than five at the time of their exposure.[234]

The Flashblindness Experiments

In 1949, the Atomic Energy Committee and the Department of Defense began to coordinate the planning of the biomedical experiments and tests and set up a Biomedical Test Planning and Screening Committee to review proposals. Presumably, the human experiments at bomb tests should have been filtered through this or some other review process designated to consider experiments. Yet, in only one case, the flashblindness experiments did this happen.

In a January 1952 letter to Shields Warren, Los Alamos's Thomas Shipman complained that the committee was limited to reviewing proposals from civilian groups and not the military: "[I]f, "he wrote, the "AEC can not exercise a measure of control in this matter, they might better withdraw from the picture completely and permit the military to continue on its own sweet way without the somewhat ludicrous spectacle of an impotent committee's snapping its heels like a puppy dog." In retrospect, Shipman wrote to Warren's successor in June 1956, the military's refusal to participate "reduced that committee to impotence."

Whatever its effectiveness, in 1952 the biomedical research screening group did consider at least one of the military's flashblindness experiments. Flashblindness the temporary loss of vision from exposure to the flash was a serious problem for all the armed services, but particularly for the Air Force. Pilots flying hundreds of miles an hour in combat could not afford to lose concentration and vision even temporarily.

The flashblindness experiments began at the 1951 Operation Buster-Jangle, the series that included Desert Rock I, with the testing of subjects who "orbited at an altitude of 15,000 feet in an Air Force C-54 approximately 9 miles from the atomic detonation." The test subjects were exposed to three detonations during the operation, after which changes in their visual acuity were measured. Although these experiments were conducted at bomb tests that potentially exposed the subjects to ionizing radiation, the purpose of the experiment was to measure the thermal effects of the visible light flash, not the effects of ionizing radiation.

When another experiment was proposed for Operation Tumbler-Snapper, the 1952 Nevada tests, the AEC sought a "release of AEC responsibility "on grounds that "there is a possibility that permanent eye damage may result." It is not clear how the military responded, but the experiment proceeded. Twelve subjects witnessed the detonation from a darkened trailer about sixteen kilometers from the point of detonation. Each of the human "observers" placed his face in a hood; half wore protective goggles, while the other half had both eyes exposed. A fraction of a second before the explosion, a shutter opened exposed the left eye to the flash. Two subjects incurred retinal burns; at which point the project for that test series was terminated. The final report recorded that both subjects had "completely recovered.'

At the 1953 tests, the Department of Defense engaged in further flashblindness study. During this experiment "twelve subjects in a light-tight trailer were exposed to five nuclear detonation flashes at distances of from 7 to 14 miles." There is no documentation showing whether subsequent flash blindness experiments, which followed upon the issuance of the secretary of defense's 1953 memorandum, required informed and written consent.[lxi].

Recently recovered documents show that upon a 1954 review of a report showing the injuries at the 1952 experiment, AFSWP medical staff immediately declared, “A definite need exists for guidance in the use of human volunteers as experimental subjects.” Further inquiry revealed that a Top Secret policy on the subject existed. That policy detailed “very definite and specific step “that had to be taken before volunteers could be used in human experimentation. But the AFSWP wrote, “No serious attempt has been made to disseminate the information to those experimenters who had a definite need-to-know.”

In early 1954, the Air Force’s School of Aviation Medicine reported that animal studies and injuries at bomb tests (to non-experimental participants) had shown that potential for eye damage was substantially worse than had been understood. Studies of flashblindness with humans continued in both field and laboratory tests through the 1960s and into the 1970s. These experiments tested prototype versions of eye protection equipment and the results were used to recommend requirements for eye protection for those exposed to atomic explosions.

Following the first Desert Rock exercise with flashblindness subjects, the government conducted the first in a series of "atomic exercises."[lxii] This exercise was designed primarily to train and indoctrinate troops in the fighting of atomic wars. The exercise also provided an opportunity for psychological and physiological testing of the effects of the experience on the troops.

Operation Jangle detonated two nuclear weapons, one on the surface and one buried seventeen feet underground. The two Jangle shots were tests where the weapon's fireball touched the ground. When a nuclear weapon's fireball touches the ground, it creates much more local fallout than an explosion that bursts in the air. Consequently, these tests posed potential hazard to civilians who lived near the test site and to test observers and participants.

Two weeks before Jangle, the DOD requested an additional 500 observers at each of the Jangle shots to acclimate the troops to nuclear weapons. The AEC advised against the additional participants declaring that, "[t]his [the first detonation] was an experiment which had never been performed before and the radiological hazards were unpredictable." In the AEC's view no one should approach ground zero for three or four days after the surface shot.

The AEC seems to have been successful in persuading the Department of Defense not to include the extra observers, but the DOD did not agree to the AEC's suggestion on approaching ground zero. Four hours after the first shot, the DOD conducted research involving troops who were accompanied by radiation safety monitors. Eight teams of men walked over contaminated ground for one hour to determine the effectiveness of protective clothing against nuclear contamination. Similar tests were conducted after the second shot at Jangle, but this time after a longer period. Five days after the shallow underground shot, men crawled over contaminated ground again to determine the effectiveness of protective clothing. Other men rode armored vehicles through contaminated areas to check the shielding effects of tanks and to check the effectiveness of air-filtering devices.

According to the final report, the protective clothing was "adequate to prevent contact between radioactive dust and the skin of the wearer." The information on this research is limited. The only mention of the subjects in the report reads, "The volunteer enlisted men, too numerous to mention by name, who participated in the evaluation of protective clothing were of great assistance which is gratefully acknowledged." It is likely that at the time these men were not viewed as subjects of scientific research but rather as men who had volunteered for a hazardous or risky assignment. We know nothing about what these men were told about the risks or whether they felt they could have refused the assignment if they had an interest in doing so.

The Jangle activities are a good illustration of difficulties in drawing boundaries in the military between activities that are research involving human subjects and activities that are not. Although the Jangle evaluation was likely not considered an instance of human research at the time, it has many similarities to ground-crawling activity conducted several years later, not in conjunction with a nuclear test that was treated as research involving human subjects. In 1958, 90 soldiers at Camp Stoneman in Pittsburg, California were asked to perform "typical army tactical maneuvers" on soil that had been contaminated with radioactive lanthanum.[lxiii] The soldiers were then monitored for their exposure to study beta contamination from this non-penetrating form of radiation. In 1963, soldiers were again asked to maneuver on ground contaminated with artificial fallout, this time at Camp McCoy in Wisconsin.

Perhaps by listening to what Joan McCarthy a member of NAAV, the New Jersey Association of Atomic Veterans had to say before the Interagency Working Group, we can get a look at the real impact these tests had. Unlike the final reports' findings, this is what Joan had to say,

"Fifteen years ago on his deathbed, my husband told me about his participation in a nuclear test. He also asked me to find out what happened to the other men. This led to founding, with the help of the media and many good people, the New Jersey Association of Atomic Veterans. In the 15 years I've been at the deathbeds of many atomic veterans who died, thinking that their government wants them dead so the truth will be buried with them; and I do believe that truth eventually surfaces and I hope that we're doing something about it now and it doesn't just get buried again."

Human Radiation Experiments

The 4,000 human radiation experiments reviewed by ACHRE were carried out or funded by the U.S. Government primarily through the Department of Defense (DOD) and Department of Energy (DOE) or its predecessor agencies, and were conducted at numerous major medical institutions including Johns Hopkins Hospital.

The Administration did propose that 7,600 veterans treated in NRI experiments reviewed by ACHRE be declared eligible for health screening under the Department of Veterans Affairs' Ionizing Radiation Program, but children at higher risk treated in Baltimore were not even mentioned in the Action Report. The Center for Disease Control estimates of nasopharyngeal irradiation were between 8,000 and 20,000 servicemen, and 500,000 to 2,000,000 Americans, who may have received this type of irradiation. Several contemporary researchers have warned that patients who received the nasopharyngeal irradiation run a greater risk of contracting head and neck cancers.[235]

The Advisory listed six categories of experiments that they identified:

- Experiments aimed at determining the danger to workers assembling nuclear weapons from ingestion, inhalation, or injection of irradiated materials. These experiments involved total body irradiation and the injection of radioactive isotopes into human subjects.
- Experiments aimed at determining the effects of exposure to radiation on soldiers serving either as part of the crew of a proposed nuclear powered aircraft or on a nuclear battlefield. These experiments involved total body irradiation, injection of radioactive isotopes, ingestion of irradiated materials by human subjects, and exposure of subjects to atomic clouds during and after bomb detonations.
- Development of nuclear weapons: These experiments involved atmospheric releases of radiation without the knowledge of exposed civilian population.
- Studies on the dispersal, fallout, biological intake, and decay of radioactive

materials following a nuclear explosion. These experiments involved atmospheric releases of radiation, ingestion of radioactive, and exposure to atomic clouds.

- Experiments regarding the potential effects of radiation on astronauts. These experiments involved partial body irradiation. Among the tests were the 1963 exposure of 131 prison inmates in Oregon to massive doses of radiation to their sexual organs, and subsequent vasectomies that were performed to prevent the subsequent birth of malformed children from contaminated sperm.

- Studies of the effects of radiation on "radiosensitive" malignancies such as leukemia and lymphoma, and in the performance of bone marrow transplantations. These experiments involved total body irradiation. The five studies were as follows:[236]

1. The M.D. Anderson Cancer Center in Houston, Texas from 1951 until 1956, involving 236 patients and sponsored by the Air Force School of Aviation Medicine.

2. Baylor University College of Medicine in Houston, Texas from 1952 until 1964, involving 112 patients. The Armed Forces Special Weapons Project or its successor, the Defense Atomic Support Agency, sponsored it.

3. Sloan-Kettering Institute for Cancer Research in New York City from 1954 to 1964. It was sponsored by the Armed Forces Special Weapons Project and later the Defense Atomic Support Agency and involved 34 patients.

4. U.S. Naval Hospital, Bethesda, Maryland from 1960 to 1961 involving 17 people and funded by the Navy.

5. University of Cincinnati College of Medicine in Cincinnati, Ohio from 1960 to 1972 involving 90 patients, and sponsored by Defense Atomic Support Agency.

Eileen Welsome also details one other large study done in Oak Ridge Tennessee from 1957 to 1974 on 194 patients and funded by NASA at the Medical Division Hospital run by the Oak Ridge Institute of Nuclear Studies (ORINS). Eileen's book should be consulted for the most comprehensive account of plutonium and other radiation experiments during the Cold War that I have ever read. She won the Pulitzer Prize for her reporting.

One experiment absent from the Clinton Administration's Implementing Report involved 582 third graders in the Baltimore public schools who were part of a 1948-1954 experiment conducted by Johns Hopkins to test the effects of Nasal Radium Irradiation. Ruth Faden, who chaired the advisory committee, was employed by John Hopkins University, which seems to be a glaring conflict of interest. None of the victims or their relatives were appointed to this panel.[237]

The Johns Hopkins NRI experiment in question was completely overlooked as to any medical notice or follow-up action by the federal government. This was done despite ACHRE's earlier determination that children in this Hopkins radiation experiment had the greatest cancer mortality risk of any experiment it examined for which people were still alive and might benefit from medical notice and follow-up.[238] The National Institute for Health had recommended in 1977, that children who received the nasal radium treatments be examined every one to two years. Radiation oncologist Eli Glatstein was outvoted thirteen to one in her belief that patients given the radium nasal treatments should be medically monitored. She told Stewart Farber who first brought the experiments to the public's attention, that it was "not salable in today's political environment" to recommend screening for so many victims. The ACHRE's panel also overlooked the issue of other radiation-induced diseases and non-fatal malignancies such as thyroid tumors, which are extremely painful and dependent on early intervention and medical monitoring for cure.[239]

Another experiment that is absent from the ACHRE report was performed at Walter Reed Army Medical Center in the basement of the pathology building.[lxiv] Peter Lewis, who had biomedical experiments performed on him received proof after the death of his adoptive father who had served in Army Medical Research.

Mr. Lewis testified before the Staff Stakeholder Workshop of the Department of Energy twice. His first testimony seemed to be ignored, consequently he returned, determined to bring his plight before the public. He even offered his evidence to the National Archives so that people would believe, and he might prevent this from happening again. Peters' testimony speaks for itself.

"Here are the pictures, right here. These pictures-these photographs-were taken in the basement. Here is what we have. Oh. Boy Scouts. I am in these pictures. Here are some of them. Here is a machine; it is called a counting machine. Of course, to count the machine they have got to put something in you to count, am I right? I mean, if you have a bank, there are no pennies in it, you don't count it. You have got to put pennies in it to count it. So they had other machines there. These are radiation machines. One of them was a round cylinder. It had a radiation symbol on it. They stick you in it. Your head is sticking out of it. They shoot the radiation through you. They can stick you in a counter; see how much the body absorbs. I do believe though, that was the first experimental CAT scan. It is wrong. But kids, you don't experiment on kids. You don't even experiment with kids in an experimental machine. You don't even know if the machine is going to work right. And you definitely don't shoot radiation through a child. This government here is the counter this government bombed Hiroshima. Nagasaki. My goodness! Those are the two biggest test labs I have ever seen! Why do we need any more test labs on radiation? We know what radiation does. Can't get no records. That is a shame. Too bad, huh? Look what I got, a record. This is a record book that was kept in the bottom of the pathology record. Let me read it.

'Walter Reed Army Institute of Research, Division of Nuclear Medicine.' Now we have a start.[lxv] We have a record. I asked, "Sir, ma'am, here is a record, a picture of it. Can we dig it up?[lxvi] My name is on it. Unfortunately my name was put into a number. In other words, they changed the names and numbers and stuck that on here. Let's dig up these records, okay? I would appreciate it.

After this I went into another building about a year later. It is called the Isolation Ward. That was an experience. I had an entire ward a little bit bigger than this to myself. Well, that was fun for a kid. The first day in there, I took off. You know how kids are. I was about maybe, ten or twelve. Went next door. A bunch of soldiers over there were playing chess. Well I got in there and I played chess with a guy. He did not pay much mind to me. I beat him. So of course all the other soldiers, they start teasing him about it and it got serious. A crowd came around. I played him a second game. Well he started beating me, but I was saved by a nurse. She came. She saw me. She said, 'Hey, you ain't allowed in here!' Away I went back to the ward by myself again. This time they kept a guard, a 24-hour guard there, so I could not take off. I was not allowed to get any soda pop. I could not have any other foods. They fed me my foods. They took my stool, my urine. Boy, did they really poke holes in me both ankles, both sides, knees, all over my hips, the back of my head! I believe they are called bone biopsies. I get visions; they have got this sharp thing. You stick it in like a corkscrew and take your flesh, your skin, your bone, and ffft! Got it! I don't know how they do it but that is just the way I figure. But I have got a lot of them, all over me. I even got stuff left in my arm that they forgot to take out, whatever it is.

Now, I don't, I am not angry at today's government for what yesterday's government did. Let's get this clear right now. Today's government did not do these atrocities, not at all. That was yesterday's government. However I am frustrated because today's government will not release the records. That is bad. I mean they did not do it, what have they got to lose? Yesterday's government did it. They are the ones who should hang their head in shame. For the record, we do have some people here from the government that we hope they help. They want to help. I think they will help. So my question is, will you please get my records? The one I was in that laboratory. Oh, in the ward that I was in? They would knock me out and take me into a laboratory and I was totally out. This took place for about six days. I have no idea what they did to me in that laboratory, except when I would come out I had Band-aids all over me. I am asking. Can we get the records, please? I will give you the dates. I will make it easy for you, okay? I will make it very easy. And then I am done."

In response to Ms. Melamed from the Department of Energy, after stating the agencies support insofar as possible to find his records; Peter says,

"The radiation, whatever it was? I was perfectly healthy. There was nothing wrong with me. Maybe I looked a little crazy. Okay. That was, let's see, that would have been September 20, 1958. Is anybody going to write that down please? Okay. There should be records on that day. One week later on a Thursday, that is when me and my sister went in. That is when we went in to the machine that had the radiation symbol on it. Boy, do I wish she was here today to testify with me! She has got three feet of dirt on her now in Lebanon, Tennessee. She died about four years ago. The doctor found like a crust, I guess, over her entire brain. Cancer. And he said, 'You had that 20, 25 years.' So it is easy to figure out where it came from."

Colleen Gentilcore quotes Peter in a story she wrote in 1996.[240] "My understanding is the sole purpose of adoption of me was for experiments. We have documents and hospital papers for much of this to back this up…Since my dad died, we were able to go through all the papers and find documents, papers, and photographs. These are military photographs he was ordered to destroy, but he brought some home and didn't destroy everything."

Miss Gentilcore wrote an additional article for the Herald Standard later that month. In it she reports Peter saying that his adoptive mother told him he was bought for $1000 and that the army owned him. It is not hard to understand how devastating it would be to learn that you had been adopted for the sole purpose of being a human guinea pig.

Karen Coleman Wiltshire, another survivor helped Peter with some of his FOIA requests to the government. She attended several public forums with the Department of Defense as a representative of ACHES and was outspoken on behalf of survivors on each occasion.[lxvii] She too, was one of the very few who was able to obtain her medical files from John Hopkins proving her experimentation.

Karen's father worked for the Applied Physics Lab at Johns Hopkins. She obtained her files through sheer persistence, help from the almighty, and a mistake by a clerk who was not supposed to give the information out. Karen said they transported her to Washington, Maryland and Virginia, to military and government labs by private ambulances, military cars, and yellow school buses. She alleged her experiments took place from 1961 through 1970. Karen related to me that she was kept in the Harriet Lane Home for Invalid Children at John Hopkins where there were wards of children. Her parents had been told she was being treated for a heart defect. She said when they would come to visit, she would be put in a private room with her belongings in order for it to appear as though she had been there all along. When her parents left, they returned her to the ward where she said they did LSD, ECT, and other strange experiments. One of these she explained was to be trained to eliminate emotions and feelings by using assorted torture and other techniques. This sounds very much like the mind control technique used on me by the CIA and other branches of the government.

Karen was responsible for spurring me on to obtain information through FOIA requests that would help me validate my memories. She was always banging on doors, persistent to get the truth out, especially when she found out there were so many other kids who were used as human guinea pigs. The Department of Energy had told her she was the only one, but she said that Pentagon sources had personally told her they "didn't want our stories out at any cost. The plan was to pay off a few token victims and blow the rest off." Karen did not live to see any of us receive validation or vindication.

On April 5, 1999 Karen made a presentation on behalf of ACHES entitled ETHICS before the National Institute of Health's' Bioethics Group. She died on April 23, 1999 after doing exhaustive investigation of DOD experiments on human beings.[241] I am sure more child survivors like Karen and Peter will begin coming forward once the public becomes aware of these abuses.

Janet Gordon also spoke before the IWG[lxviii] Staff Stakeholder Workshop before the Department of Energy on February 26, 1996. She belonged to Citizens Call, a downwind victim organization from Utah and the National Committee for Radiation Victims. Ms. Gordon made what I would call, a valiant attempt to underscore the importance of notification. She said,

"Why is there a question about notification? Are we dealing with people? Are we dealing with human beings? Are we dealing with citizens? How can there possibly even be a question of whether these people are entitled to be notified? I don't understand that. I work in grassroots politics. I'm the Vice Chair of my party in my county. I believe in the democratic process. I believe I'm a citizen. I thought I was a full-fledged honest citizen. You have made us non-citizens with non-rights, invisible. I'm obviously not invisible. I'm quite substantial. But as far as the government is concerned, I'm invisible. I have no rights to notification. I have no rights to honesty. I have no rights to follow-up. You can conduct experiments on my people without telling us? In fact by lying to us and telling us that what you're doing to us, isn't what you're doing to us. And then you have no obligation to provide any health care for people when they suffer...Determine what category you're putting us in and either treat us as human beings and full-fledged citizens, or let us know that we're not so that we can take some action in the World Court."

She continued by saying, "Secondly, I would like to address the political reality check here. There are budget constraints and there are difficulties with contacting so many people. I want to know how you could conduct experiments on that many people, and you could afford to do those experiments if you can't afford to follow them up. If they were difficult to follow up, how were they not complicated enough to do in the first place. If they were doable, how can that make any kind of sense? And finally, I would like to like to beg the Interagency Working Group to not follow an established professional pattern, which says major deity is the meaning of MD, or that Ph.D. is powerful major deity. We're all human beings, and just because you have an MD after your name; does not mean that you're in charge of whether I'm a human being or not."

Infants, Children and Pregnant Women

Eileen Welsome reports on a study of 829 pregnant women at Vanderbilt University Hospital Prenatal Clinic from 1945 through 1949. The women were given a "cocktail "laced with radioactive iron. Many, Welsome says were "led to believe that the drinks contained something nutritious that would benefit them and their babies. The drinks actually contained varying amounts of radioactive iron. Within an hour, the material crossed the placenta and began circulating in the blood of their unborn fetuses."[242] In a study done in the sixties, scientists discovered four fatal malignancies among the children who exposed to prenatal radiation and no cancers in the non-exposed group.

Ron Hamm, spoke eloquently before the IWG staff stakeholder workshop in 1986 for the Vanderbilt Experiment Victims. He said,

"My mother and I were drafted by my country to serve as study specimens. My mother was 22 years old and my father had just returned from military service with the United States Navy. She was very trusting and excitedly cautious about having her next child. She chose Vanderbilt Prenatal Clinic because of their reputation. She trustingly took what they gave her. Consequently, when they handed her a cup laced with radiation and said 'Drink this. It will be good for your baby,' she asked no questions. There was no consent sought and there was no consent given. As you have already heard by Geoff Sea, and we have documents to prove it, harm was done. Cultural ethics is not a foreign term to most of us. It was used as the foremost defense of the Nazi high command at Nuremberg.

In 1947, a new science appeared. It actually started before that but it really flowered and flourished in 1947. Young aggressive doctors and researchers drove hard looking for the front seats in this new science. I understand that. It's understandable. However, accountability comes with privilege. Cultural ethics do not work when they jeopardize people's lives. More importantly, each level of authority must be held accountable to its next level. For example, I believe doctors are accountable to their patients, not vice versa. I believe lawyers are accountable to their clients, not the reverse. And I believe public servants are not the government. I believe this government is still of the people, by the people and for the people. And public servants are accountable to us, who are the government. I believe the Advisory Committee should be held accountable to its government, us. I believe the President is accountable to its government, we the people.

For 48 years my mother did not know she had been used and abused. She had her body violated and my body was violated. But then of course, I was just a fetus so I'm not sure I qualified as a human being at that point. We do know that a majority of the radiation that was given to my mother went immediately to the fetus. I believe some 90 percent, something of that nature. She was in fact, in my opinion raped by the medical profession and the research community. Her body was violated, invaded by something she did not know, something she did not understand, nor something that she agreed to accept. And I believe if you looked up the definition of rape, that's pretty well covered.

Vanderbilt did their research in accordance with the Atomic Energy Commission and the Public Health Service. We can prove that. We have. Vanderbilt had the records returned to them. They carried on medical monitoring up through the 1960's. But Vanderbilt has refused to release those records to the victims. Some of us got them. I don't know how we got that lucky but we did. My mother just simply called and said, 'Send my records. I'm part of the Vanderbilt Experiment.' And very interestingly, they had her records all the way back to the date of her birth. We don't know how they got them. She wasn't born in Vanderbilt.

In conclusion, I'm a patriotic American and I want that understood today. I did not come here to seek special treatment. I do not have an axe to grind as far as my heritage. I am part Native American. I am part Italian. I am part German, and most recently my cousin did a genealogical study on our family and it appears that I am part African-American. I'm good to go. (Laughter.) So I stand with all of you today and say, yeah, give me my land back in Tennessee. I'm Cherokee. My great grandmother was on the Trail of Tears. My great grandfather, a German, met her there. I'm not sure where all the other stuff came from but it works for me. I'm a patriotic American. I don't seek any special treatment. But I do feel betrayed and I feel abused by this Committee's report. They did not do their job. Ladies and gentlemen, I expect accountability from my public servants. Don't talk to me of government. I am the government. I vote and I can't wait for November. I expect full disclosure now and in the future. No part of national security was enhanced by keeping mine and my mother's experiment a secret, but our lives have been changed because of it. My mother now knows the reason why. That as we have gathered our class together and the little old ladies that they were so worried about being upset, you don't know what it's like to be in a room with 45 little old ladies who finally found out they were irradiated. Yeah, they were upset. But none of them had to go to the nursing home. They've gotten a new lease on life and they're ready to fight this thing to the bitter end. I want you to know that, and they have mandated their families to fight it long after their dead until it's resolved. Are they psychologically messed up? No. A lot of them sit around and said, 'What happened to you? I lost my teeth under the gum line.' The old joke, the teeth are fine but the gums have to go. Every woman in our study group lost their teeth within five years of the radiation treatment, every one of them. Many of their children, we already know harm was done. Three died with cancer. We know that.

But in our study group, the people my age that have colon cancer and leukemia. I'm one of three that we know of who hasn't had a major, major physical illness in their life. I expect accountability. Your report that report recommends apology without compensation for experiments where subjects were wronged but not harmed. Ask us if we were harmed. Ask us if we can deal with it. I sat before your august Committee, wonderfully credentialed people. I looked each one of them in the eye and told them what I'm telling you. But I noticed on that Committee there wasn't an experiment survivor anywhere to be found. That's an atrocity. I ask that your recommendations show that every committee henceforth have a radiation survivor on that committee, whether they're credentialed or not they deserve an opportunity, sir. We're still the government. We are still the government. We are still the government."

In 1949, the Atomic Energy Commission's (AEC) Human Use Subcommittee expressly discouraged the use of radioisotopes for research with children or pregnant women; however, that did not prevent experiments being done on both these groups with radioactive material in the years to come.

In the mid-1950s pregnant women at the Argonne Cancer Research Hospital received digitoxin labeled with radioactive carbon-14. The four pregnant women were hospitalized at the Chicago Lying-in Hospital. Three of them had abortions; the fourth delivered an anencephalic baby.[243]

Normal healthy newborn infants in Iowa, Nebraska, and Tennessee received radioactive Iodine. In 1954, at the University of Tennessee Memphis, seven male infants (one white and six black) between 2 and 3 days old were injected intravenously. The I-131 uptake of the thyroid of the babies was found to lie within the range of values that would be found in hyperthyroid adults.[244]

In 1954 sixty-five premature infants ranging in birth weight from 2.1 to 5.5 lb were included in a study of the uptake of iodine-131 by the Pediatric Division and the Radioisotope Laboratory of Harper Hospital in Detroit. Seven full-term infants were used for the control group.[245]

In a study conducted at Los Alamos Scientific Laboratory in 1959, a whole body counter evaluated the retention of radioactive Iron 59 in sixty-six subjects including one pregnant woman and four children. The study showed the pregnant woman absorbed larger amounts of iron.[246]

Twenty-eight infants from the nursery at the University of Nebraska College of Medicine ingested radioactive iodine through a gastric tube in 1960.[247] In 1963, twenty-five infants at the University of Iowa in Iowa City, who were less than 36 hours old, had radioiodine administered either orally or by intramuscular injection. This study showed that I-131 was taken up by the thyroid at a higher level and more rapidly, when administered by injection rather then ingestion.[248]

Three girls and three boys were among the twenty-six normal people studied at Los Alamos Scientific Laboratory in 1960 with iodine-131. This study showed that approximately 20 percent of the radioactive iodine was taken up by the thyroid gland.[249]

In a study conducted in 1963 by a graduate student at the University of Rochester to investigate the human body's metabolism of radioiodine found in dairy products, younger age groups were specifically chosen, since the majority of known research had been conducted on adults. The people ranged in age from six years to 50 years, seven were less than 21 years old. The research sought to determine if iodine found in milk was transferred to the thyroid in the same quantities as the inorganic iodide commonly used in medical studies. Cornell's University's Department of Veterinary Medicine provided the milk from a cow fed iodine-131. All those who were part of this experiment were put on an iodine restricted diet prior to the study and then were fed the radioactive milk for a minimum of 14 days. One of the children in this study subsequently developed thyroid carcinoma.[250]

The Iodine 131 Experiment in Alaska [251]

Pregnant and lactating women were also a part of this Alaskan study. In 1956 and again 1957, the U.S. Air Force's Arctic Aeromedical Laboratory conducted a study of the role of the thyroid gland in acclimatizing humans to cold using iodine 131. Like the case of the Marshallese, this study is another instance in which research conducted on populations that were unfamiliar at the time with modern American medicine, posed special ethical problems and was therefore of interest to the Advisory Committee. The study involved 200 administrations of I-131 to 120 subjects: 19 Caucasians, 84 Eskimos, and 17 Indians. Animal studies had suggested the thyroid gland might play a crucial role in adaptation to extreme cold. The results of the study were published in 1957 as an Air Force technical report by the principal investigator, Dr. Kaare Rodahl, M.D., a Norwegian scientist hired by the U.S. Air Force for his expertise in arctic medicine. Many observational studies of these Alaska Natives were carried out by a variety of researchers in the 1950s and 1960s. Most of these did not administer radiation to the natives, but only measured what had already accumulated in their bodies from fallout. The thyroid study discussed here however, differed in that it actively administered radionuclides to natives, raising more direct questions of consent, risk, and subject selection. The Alaskan I-131 experiment also offered subjects no prospect of medical benefit.

The Advisory Committee did not conduct its own on-site investigation of the Alaskan experiments. Instead, they relied on published materials (primarily Rodahl's 1957 report on the study, "Thyroid Activity in Man Exposed to Cold ") as well as testimony by representatives of the Inuit villages of the North Slope of Alaska where the research was conducted.

In 1994 Dr. Rodahl recalled that the base commander at the Arctic Aeromedical Laboratory approved the study, and headquarters in Washington knew of the experiment. Participants in the study were asked to swallow a capsule containing a tracer dose of radioiodine. Measurements were then made of thyroid activity using a scintillation counter and samples taken of blood, urine, and saliva. The study's overall conclusion was that, "The thyroid does not play any significant role in human acclimatization to the arctic environment when the cold stress is no greater than what is normally encountered by soldiers engaged in usual arctic service or by Alaskan Eskimos or Indians in the course of their normal life or activities."

Dr. Rodahl told the IOM/NRC Committee that follow-up was left to the Alaska Native Service, which was already aware of a goiter problem in these communities. Alaska natives, testifying in 1994 before the IOM/NRC committee could not recall any follow-up visits by physicians.

Risk

The principal investigator, Dr. Rodahl, took a one-week course on the proper handling and administration to humans of iodine 131, and then instructed the other physicians who would be working in the field. In terms of dosage and risk, the experiment was not significantly different from tracer studies conducted in the continental United States with two exceptions. First, some subjects were used more than once. Several Alaska Native subjects reported they received as many as three doses.

Second, the subjects included women who were pregnant or lactating. Although the AEC discouraged the non-therapeutic use of radioisotopes in pregnant women, such research was still conducted. What sets the Alaska experiment apart from other studies conducted on pregnant and lactating women is that this experiment was not investigating a research question about an aspect of pregnancy or lactation.

Disclosure and Consent

This experiment offered no prospect of medical benefit to subjects. If the subjects in this experiment did not understand and agree to this instrumental use of their bodies, then they were merely used as a means to the ends of the investigators and the Air Force. The Committee found no documents from the time of the experiment that bore on what, if anything, the subjects were told, and whether consent was obtained. There are also no documents bearing on whether the Air Force provided the researchers with guidelines on the use of human subjects or requirements for obtaining consent.

The only available evidence comes from personal recollections of the principal investigator and a few of the former subjects. Dr. Rodahl recalled in 1994 that he obtained white volunteers through their military commanders and Indian and Eskimo volunteers through the village elders. When a military volunteer came before him he explained in the subject's native tongue (English), the purpose of the study and what a subject would do. He then gave the person the opportunity to decline to participate. When visiting the villages, the physicians could not communicate directly in the native language. They would find an English-speaking village elder to explain the purpose of the study. The elder would then find people to serve as subjects. What communication occurred between the village elder and the prospective subjects is not known. Dr. Rodahl also reported that he did not use the term radiation in his explanation to the English-speaking village elders who then communicated with others in the villages. Interviews in 1994 by the IOM/NRC committee indicated that there is no word for radiation in the native languages.

One Alaska Native subject interviewed by the IOM/NRC committee in 1994 recalled that at the time he worked in a hospital, spoke English, and did know about “radiation. “He could not recall any use of the term in the study. In at least one Arctic Village, there were no English speakers. Subjects from this village testified that they thought they were taking a substance that would improve their own health, and that they would not have participated in the study if they had known it required them to take a radioactive tracer.

The available evidence suggests that the leaders may not have understood; and thus were not in a position to communicate to the subjects that the experiment was non-therapeutic, that it had a military purpose, or that it involved exposure to low doses of radiation. A significant cultural barrier exacerbated the ethical difficulties posed by the language barrier. The Indian and Eskimo villages had little exposure to modern medicine. One village, Point Lay, is described in Rodahl's 1957 report as “relatively little affected” by the modern world. There is a strong likelihood that there was no appreciation for the difference between treatment of a patient and research unrelated to any illness of the subject.

The danger of exploitation was further heightened by the trusting relationship that developed between the native Alaskans and the field researchers. In part, this trust was due to the desire for medical care. In at least one village, harsh conditions may have increased the need for outside assistance. Rodahl's report states that Point Lay had suffered from semi starvation the previous year. Dr. Pierce testified to the Advisory Committee, "In the mid-1950s, doctor visits to native villages were quite scarce." Dr. Rodahl said when his plane landed the villagers would come running to meet him, and the other physicians who came with him and the villagers would immediately want their ailments treated. He said the physicians treated them because they were medical men. He also said, "The natives trusted them and they trusted the natives." Testimony before the IOM/NRC committee included the recollection of one participant that he had been paid $10 for the study. In other testimony, it appears some subjects may have believed there was an implicit quid pro quo, trading medical treatment for participation.

Subject Selection

The selection of Alaskan Indians and Eskimos as subjects for this research was not arbitrary. The government felt that in order to better understand acclimatization and human performance under conditions of extreme cold, it was reasonable and potentially important to study people who lived under such conditions. At the same time however, the population chosen was not one familiar with modern medicine, but rather a population for whom the treatments of modern physicians were a strange but valued innovation; and the research activities of modern medicine were totally unknown. Therefore, the potential for misunderstanding and exploitation was significant. There has been no evidence that any attempt was made to explain the military purpose of the study to the Indians or Eskimos.

The Oregon and Washington Experiments [252]

Oregon

Another segment of the population who was subject to government experimentation were prisoners. In 1963, Carl Heller was an internationally renowned medical scientist, a winner of the important Cuba Prize. In the field of endocrinology he was a preeminent researcher, so it is not surprising that when the Atomic Energy Commission (AEC) decided to fund work on how radiation affects male reproductive function, they would turn to him. He designed a study to test the effects of radiation on the somatic and germinal cells of the testes, the doses of radiation that would produce changes or induce damage in spermatogenesis cells, the amount of time it would take for cell production to recover, and the effects of radiation on hormone excretion. Subjects were required to agree to be vasectomized, because of a perceived small risk of chromosomal damage that could lead to their fathering genetically damaged children. To carry out this work, Dr. Heller was to receive grants totaling $1.12 million over ten years.

Mavis Rowley, Dr. Heller’s former laboratory assistant who was interviewed by Advisory Committee staff in 1994, said that the AEC “was looking for a mechanism to measure the effect of ionizing radiation on the human body.” She said testicular irradiation was promising because the testes have “a cell cycle and physiology which allows you to make objective measurements of dosimetry and effect, without having to expose the whole body to radiation.” With respect to the health risks associated with the testicular irradiations, there was very little reliable “human “ information at the time about the long-term effects of organ-specific testicular exposure to radiation.”

In a deposition taken in 1976, a subject named John Henry Atkinson said he was never told there was a possibility of getting cancer or any kind of tumors as a result of the testicular irradiation experiments. Other subjects deposed in 1976 also said they had not been warned of cancer risk, and when asked by one subject about the potential for “bad effects,” Dr. Heller was reported to have said, “One chance in a million.”

Harold Bibeau was exposed to 18 rads’ and discovered lumps on his thigh and back.[253] In a newspaper article in 1994, when asked why he subjected himself to experimentation Harold said, “I was just told that it was a way to serve my country even though I was in prison.”

When asked in his own deposition what the potential risks were Dr. Heller said, “Are you talking about cancer? ...I didn’t want to frighten them so I said tumor. I may have on occasion said cancer.”

The acute risks of the exposures included skin burns, pain from the biopsies, testicular inflammation (orchitis) induced by repeated biopsies, and bleeding into the scrotum from the biopsies. Using consent forms and depositions as a basis for determining what the subjects were told, it appears that they were adequately informed about the possibility of skin burns; sometimes informed, but perhaps inadequately, about the possibility of pain; informed about the possibility of bleeding only from 1970 on; and never informed of the possibility of orchitis. As far as the quality of consent is concerned, the evidence suggests that many if not most of the subjects might not have appreciated that some small risk of testicular cancer was involved. It is also not clear that all subjects understood that there could be significant pain associated with the biopsies and possible long-term effects.

Prison industry inmates were typically paid 25 cents a day for participating in the Heller program. They received $25 for each testicular biopsy, of which most inmates had five or more; plus a bonus when they were vasectomized at the end of the program, which appears to have been an additional $25. An obvious ethical question is whether the money constituted a coercive offer to prisoners. During the course of his study between 1963 and 1973, Dr. Heller irradiated sixty-seven inmates of the Oregon State Prison.

Washington

C. Alvin Paulsen was a student of Carl Heller at the University of Oregon in the late 1940s. In the early 1950s, he was a fellow in Heller's lab. By 1963, he was ready to direct a substantial research program on his own. His chance came when he was called to Hanford to consult on an accidental radiation exposure of three workers. The upshot of this experience was a $505,000 grant from the Atomic Energy Commission to study the effects of ionizing radiation on testicular function.

Dr. Paulsen remarked in the 1994 interview with Advisory Committee staff, that the main research questions he was trying to answer were what would constitute "a reasonably safe dose" of ionizing radiation to the testes; as well as what dose "would cause some change in sperm production and secondly, to determine the scenario of recovery." He recalled a 1962 letter to the Washington State Department of Institutions in which he wrote that he would like to find out "the maximum dose of radiation that would not alter spermatogenesis" and "the maximum dose of radiation that affects spermatogenesis, but only temporarily."

In the 1994 interview Dr. Paulsen said, "When I recognized a tremendous void of information relative to human exposure and space travel had started; and there was the question of solar explosions and ionizing radiation exposure in space...I then contacted the Commission to determine...whether they would entertain receiving an application." At a certain stage of the Washington study, Dr. Paulsen used the prison bulletin board to advertise for volunteers. The November 1964, announcements to inmates failed to mention a requirement to undergo a vasectomy at the end of the experiment, to ensure that subjects would not father genetically damaged children.

In mid-1969, Dr. Audrey R. Holliday, chief of research, undertook a review of all experimentation in the prison system for the Department of Institutions. At this time Dr. Holliday took steps to temporarily halt the irradiation phase of the project. After investigating the origins of Dr. Paulsen's research, Dr. Holliday asked the University of Washington to conduct a new review of the study, emphasizing her concern about the state's responsibility to safeguard human rights. The university stood by its initial findings allowing the research to continue, although at about the same time it turned down Dr. Paulsen's request to move into the neutron-irradiation phase of his project.

Dr. Holliday then debated the issue with Dr. William Conte, director of the Department of Institutions who was disposed to allow the project to continue. On March 18, 1970, she wrote a letter to Dr. Conte noting, "There is no question, but what the Federal Government has made considerable investment in this project. The Federal Government, however, as a reading of any newspaper will show; has supported a number of projects over which there have been many moral-ethical questions (both large and small) raised, e.g., nerve gasses, toxins, etc. I remind you that the Federal Government is not responsible for the care, safety and safeguarding of human rights of populations under the purview of the Department of Institutions. This is a responsibility we must discharge, regardless of the amount of money that the Federal Government is willing to invest in a project... There is no doubt but what the prison setting is an ideal setting for this type of research... I suppose concentration camps provided ideal settings for the research conducted in them... If in fact, non-inmates were to volunteer in the substantial numbers of persons Dr. Paulsen needs, then I would have less qualms about offering up a captive population for this research, i.e., I would have some evidence, assuming the volunteers were in fact, normal; that non-captive populations might make the same decision as a captive population... I am not against high-risk research. I have engaged in some myself. I am not against federally sponsored research. I have engaged in some myself. However, the risk should be commensurate with the probable benefits to be received by the population or others like it to follow. I don't think we can argue that in this case. Neither am I opposed to use of a prison population on a volunteer basis for research projects that may not be of direct benefit to the population, but which are of clear benefit to society or mankind. I don't think we can argue that in this case either."

Dr. Holliday also argued that the study should have been done on "lower order primates," and that if the state allowed Dr. Paulsen's study to continue; it would forfeit its right to speak out on behalf of human rights relating to future research proposals.

While favoring continuation of Dr. Paulsen's research, Dr. Conte authorized a review by the Department of Institution's Human Rights Review Committee. The committee recommended that the study be shut down; noting that the Paulsen project "seems clearly inconsistent with the standards laid down by the Nuremberg Code for the protection of human subjects with respect to freedom of choice and consent." The recommendation went on to say that "within the context of Dr. Paulsen's project, it is largely irrelevant whether or not a volunteer declares his 'desire to undergo vasectomy,' since there is no assurance that his real reasons would be ethically-morally acceptable; or that his reasons (whatever they may be) will stand the test of reality after release." It specified that the money paid for participation and the expectation of privileges, "real or imagined," could constitute undue inducements. This review, according to the report, "recommended that Dr. Paulsen's request for continuation of his study be rejected as it was found to be inconsistent with standards for the protection of the individual as a research subject. The essential issue raised by departmental personnel was that of informed consent." On March 23, 1970, Dr. Holliday wrote to Dr. Paulsen to inform him that his project was over.

The Green Run[254]

While the other intentional releases addressed in the Committee's charter were part of the effort to develop the U.S. nuclear arsenal, the Green Run was conducted to develop intelligence techniques to understand the threat posed by the Soviet Union. In 1947, General Dwight D. Eisenhower assigned the Air Force the mission of long-range detection of Soviet nuclear tests. Based on observations from Operation Fitzwilliam, the intelligence component of the 1948 Sandstone nuclear test series, the Air Force determined aerial sampling of radioactive debris to be the best method of detecting atomic releases. An interim aerial sampling network was in place in early September 1949 that detected radioactive debris from the first Soviet nuclear test.

Around the same time, Jack Healy of Hanford's Health Instrument (HI) Divisions noticed anomalous radioactivity readings from an air filter on nearby Rattlesnake Mountain. The HI Divisions were responsible for radiological safety and Healy had set up this filter to test how radioactive contamination varied with altitude. The rapid decay of his radioactive samples led Healy to conclude that they had come from a recent nuclear test. Soon after news of Healy's observation reached Washington, D.C., Air Force specialists arrived and took Healy's samples and data for analysis. It is not clear whether Healy's observation came in time to support President Harry Truman's announcement on September 23 that the Soviet Union had exploded its first atomic bomb, but it did confirm that radioactivity from a nuclear test could be detected on the other side of the globe.

Now that the Soviet Union knew how to make atomic weapons, the United States needed to know how many weapons and how much of the critical raw material plutonium the Soviets possessed. Like nuclear testing, plutonium production released radioactive gases that sensitive instruments could detect, though not at such great distances. To identify Soviet production facilities and estimate their rate of plutonium production, the Air Force now felt the need to test ways to monitor these gases.

Hanford: The World's First Plutonium Factory

In 1942 General Leslie Groves selected the Hanford site, overlooking the Columbia River in southeast Washington State, for the Manhattan Project's plutonium factory. The river would provide a large reliable supply of fresh water for cooling the plutonium-production reactors, and Hanford's relative isolation from major population centers would make it easier to construct and operate the facility without attracting unwanted attention. The nearby towns of Richland, Kennewick and Pasco, soon became boomtowns whose economies depended on Hanford.

At Hanford neutrons converted uranium 238 in the production reactor's nuclear fuel into plutonium 239. Chemical separation plants then separated this plutonium from the fission products and residual uranium in the irradiated fuel elements. The first separation plants, the T and P plants, used acid to dissolve these fuel elements, but the more efficient Redox and Purex processes superseded this in the 1950s.

In late 1948 and early 1949, Air Force and Oak Ridge personnel conducted a series of twenty air-sampling flights at Oak Ridge and three at Hanford. The results were disappointing. Instruments detected airborne releases of radioactive material at ranges of up to fifteen miles in the hills and valleys near Oak Ridge, but no farther than two miles from Hanford because of measures taken to reduce radioactive emissions there. At an October 25, 1949 meeting at Hanford, representatives of the Air Force, the Atomic Energy Commission, and General Electric (the postwar contractor for the Hanford site) agreed to a plan to release enough radioactive material from Hanford to provide a larger radioactive source for intelligence-related experiments.

This intentional release took place in the early morning of December 3, 1949 but information about it remained classified until 1986. Two periodic reports of the HI Divisions described a plutonium production run using “green” fuel elements. The story of this “Green Run “ has emerged piecemeal since then. The most complete account comes in a 1950 report co-authored by Jack Healy (referred to as the Green Run report), which was declassified in stages in response to requests from the public under the Freedom of Information Act and inquiries by the Advisory Committee.

Although cooling times of 90 to 100 days were common by 1949, the fuel elements used in the Green Run were dissolved after being cooled for only 16 days. This short cooling time meant that much more radioactive iodine 131 and xenon 133 were released directly into the atmosphere, rather than decaying while the fuel elements cooled. Furthermore, pollution control devices called scrubbers normally used to remove an estimated 90 percent of the radioiodine from the effluent gas were not operated.

When these “green” fuel elements were processed, roughly 8,000 curies of iodine 131 flowed from the tall smokestack at Hanford’s T plant. This stack was built in the early years of Hanford’s operation when large quantities of radioactive gases were routinely released in the rush to produce plutonium. Although the Green Run represents roughly one percent of the total radioiodine release from Hanford during the peak release years 1945-1947, it was almost certainly larger than any other one-day release, even during World War II.

One clear purpose of the Green Run was to test a variety of techniques for monitoring environmental contamination caused by an operating plutonium-production plant. A small army of workers, including many from Hanford’s HI Divisions, took readings of radioactivity on vegetation, in animals, and in water and tested techniques for sampling radioactive iodine and xenon in the air. The Air Force operated an airplane carrying a variety of monitoring devices the same aircraft used in earlier aerial surveys at Oak Ridge and Hanford and set up a special air sampling station in Spokane, Washington.

Those operating the equipment encountered numerous technical problems including a lost weather balloon and failed air pumps. The greatest problem, however, was the general contamination of monitoring and laboratory equipment. The contamination created a high background signal that made it difficult to distinguish radioactivity on the equipment from radioactivity in the environment. The main cause of this contamination was the weather at the time, which led to much higher ground contamination near the stack than expected.

The plans for the Green Run included very specific meteorological requirements. These requirements were designed to facilitate monitoring of the radioactive plume by aircraft; but they were similar to the normal operational requirements, which were designed to limit local contamination. These included:

- A temperature inversion, to keep the effluents aloft but at a low altitude
- No rain, fog or low clouds to impede aircraft operations
- Light to moderate wind speeds (less than fifteen miles an hour)
- Wind from the west or southwest, so the plane would not have to fly over rough terrain

- Strong dilution of the plume before any possible contact with the ground

Jack Healy reports that he made the decision to go ahead with the Green Run on the evening of December 2, 1949, even though the weather did not turn out as expected. Some have suggested that the Air Force pressed to go ahead with the release in spite of marginal weather conditions, but Healy recalls no such pressure. The plume from the release stagnated in the local area for several days before a storm front dispersed it toward the north-northeast. Consequently, local deposition of radioactive contaminants was much higher than anticipated.

The Green Run report concludes: Under the worst possible meteorological conditions for such a test, the airborne instruments detected the radioactive gases at a distance better than 100 miles from the stack. Under favorable conditions, it was estimated that with the same concentrations this distance could have been increased by up to a factor of ten.

Despite the contamination of equipment, the monitoring provided a record of the extensive short-term environmental contamination that resulted from the Green Run. Measurements of radioactivity on vegetation produced readings that, while temporary, were as much as 400 times the then- “permissible permanent concentration” on vegetation thought to cause injury to livestock. The current level at which Washington state officials intervene to prevent possible injury to people through the food supply, is not much higher than the then-permissible permanent concentration. Animal thyroid specimens showed contamination levels up to “about 80 times the maximum permissible limit of permanently maintained radioiodine concentration.”

Radioactive materials released into the environment can affect humans in two ways. First, they can be a source of radiation external to the body: beta radiation that affects the skin, or more penetrating gamma radiation. Second, they can enter the body from contaminated air, food, or water and provide an internal source of radiation. Of these environmental pathways to radiation exposure, the food pathway is by far the most complicated. Radionuclides can enter the food chain at many points; through contaminated air, water, and soil, resulting in contaminated fruits, vegetables, meat, and dairy products.

The hazards from environmental exposures to radionuclides differ in important quantitative ways from those due to medical procedures or participation in biomedical research. The natural dilution of materials in the environment means that individual exposures even from massive releases are often quite small, although the chemical and biological processes involved in exposures through the food chain can lead to effects that counteract this dilution. Finally, many more people may be exposed, with exposures that vary widely from person to person. Because individual exposures are generally too low to produce any acute effects, the main form of injury possible from environmental radiation exposure is cancer, which may occur many years after the exposure.

We need to listen to two survivors to get the true picture of the devastation from these experiments at Hanford. Darcey Sollars’ and Brenda Weavers’ testimony before the Interagency Working Group addresses the reality that all of the facts have not been presented by our government. Darcey says,

“I fall into many categories. I’m a downwinder. I’m a human experiment, a whistleblower, daughter of a Hanford worker, sister of an atomic veteran. I was born and raised only a few miles from Hanford Nuclear Reservation. I’ve testified at three Advisory Committee meetings. In the 1961-62 school year I was in second grade in a public school in Richland, Washington. I was taken from my class and made to drink liquid that made me very ill. I was then sent through a body counter. I was studied and sent back through again in two weeks. That day, and that liquid that I drank that day, made me very ill. Since then I've had very many more illnesses and much too many surgeries. Two years ago I made that fact known and introduced myself to the Advisory Committee. They did not address this issue in their report, nor did they address the horrid harassment that followed. From the very day I spoke out in public about this matter, I began to receive threats by phone, by mail, at work and at home. I was told to shut up and to leave town, and on many occasions, my live was threatened. When that did not silence me, my family pets were poisoned and brutally mutilated. This is the attitude of the old culture in that area. My family and myself lived with this constant harassment for a year, until I was so scared I left my home of 9-1/2 years and moved to New Mexico. I left my 18-year-old daughter behind to finish high school. I was running out of pets and I felt my family or myself would be next. This frightening issue also was not addressed in the Advisory report."

Brenda Weaver graphically illustrates her personal experience with the radiation exposure with her testimony,

"I lived and was raised just across the river, seven miles downwind from Hanford. I'm here to tell partly my story, and also I'm here in representation of all downwinders, regardless if they're from Hanford. I want to represent those persons. I was raised on a ranch where my father raised sheep and cattle; and we farmed and used all of the natural resources, water, food and so forth from that area. I want to kind of start out with a story of another reason that I'm here is because I had very many medical problems and so forth, losing an ovary when I was 14. But then when I became pregnant, I had a daughter born to me, and she I want to show you, first of all, my daughter's eyes, and I want to tie that into (Pause.)

My father, in that length of time that we've lived there, there were many farmers who had sheep and animals born without eyes, without part of their heads. It was referred to many times when these births would go on-we'd refer to them as the nights of the little demons. And I never got to see any of them because my father wouldn't let the female women to the barn at this time. But we knew about it, in the community it was well known; and a number of years later in 1965, I had a daughter born without eyes, just like the sheep that my father had born.

I'd like to present this is my daughter's eyes.

(Pause.)

Let's you see what we have to deal with. My daughter now is 30 years old. Her name is Jamie. She is college educated and hopes to go on to get her doctorate. She's a taxpaying contributor. She is not on a disability. But still, at this time is not able to make enough money to provide her own health care, and a member of our family has to provide her healthcare.

I know that's a little shock factor, but I kind of wanted you to see with what we deal with on a daily basis in our home, as well as my own health problems which I'm not going to go into now; because I've already done that in front of the President Committee. I just feel that I represent, and Jamie represents, those people born with birth defects that are not being acknowledged.

And as downwinders we feel that we've been ignored, that we are really not being acknowledged at all. That we're nonexistent. That we're not citizens. We feel that we've been totally ignored in the report and we're told that we don't exist. That we really these people are not radiated. That we don't have affects. And that isn't the case. And we just represent those persons. There are many thousands of us with all kinds of problems and health problems and birth defects that I don't think can be ignored, that we don't exist. And I didn't really write out a formal because I'm just a housewife and a mom. I'm not really a professional person. But I do want to I feel that we're being ignored not being seen, you might say--just as my daughter has to use these eyes to see. I feel that the Committee didn't open up their eyes and to really see what and look at those people that have been affected in communities, large communities that were radiated--that have had these effects throughout the United States, like Laguna and Alaska and New Mexico and all of the places Oak Ridge. Those are communities. And our fault in this is just being living in the wrong place at the wrong time, I think. And now we're told that we weren't there and that these things didn't happen. I mean, that's a little hard to live with. I think that I would like to see, at least in my daughter's case, we'll use her as an example. I'd like to see some sort of health care program because she doesn't have one. As long as she's on a disability and is a second-class citizen on a disability, then she can have the health insurance that goes along with having a disability from the states. But if she's a hardworking person like she is, and she pays taxes and she works but doesn't make quite enough money to pay for health care; she's in a Catch 22.

Also her artificial eyes cost a great deal of money, and she's now paying for that herself because they say it's cosmetic. Well, it's difficult. You can see the dilemma that she is in. She is one of hundreds and thousands of people, and I'm just using her as one example of what goes on. I am personally offended and deeply hurt, and I know the community that I represent feels the same way. That we've been put aside as being not, I don't know, not important enough; but simply not even existing."

In July 1963 the Hanford Laboratory conducted another study. It involved the release of 120 micro- curies of iodine-131 into the environment. The purpose of the experiment was to enable scientists to study how the radioactive iodine spread in turn through the air, soil, and vegetation and how it affected animals.[255] I guess we need look no further than Brenda Weavers' own family.

Other

From 1950 until 1954, researchers at the Children's Hospital, George William Hooper Foundation, College of Dentistry, University of California, San Francisco, CA studied oral and alimentary effects of radioactive elements to investigate local and systemic effects of irradiation of the alimentary canal and oral cavity. Findings were to include description of gross pathological changes, description of histopathological changes, biochemical analysis of gastric, intestinal and salivary secretions, and radioautographic survey of the localization of the isotopes in the gastrointestinal canal and mouth. No information was available as to the number of participants or research results.

In Harlem City Hospital, New York in 1950, a duplicate study was done. The purpose of the investigation was to study injury to the capillary system to see if there were some way to protect it from radiation injury. No information was again available on the number of participants or research results.

In a 1954, study done at Indiana University Medical Center, Indianapolis, Indiana, 23 presumably normal individuals without signs or symptoms of venous disorder, were along with ninety-two patients with signs and symptoms of venous stasis, unexplained edema, or lymphatic blockade experimented on. They had injections of a radiopaque material into their femoral veins in the groin, into the popliteal vein and into a superficial vein in the thigh, leg or foot; and then had studies done before and after exercise of the dependent limb. X-rays were taken to see the distribution of radiopaque material.

Studies Using Radioactive Vitamin B12 were conducted in the early 1960s. In a collaborative effort between the Oak Ridge Institute of Nuclear Studies, the Long Island Jewish Hospital (Jamaica, NY), South Nassau Communities Hospital (Oceanside, NY), and Brookhaven National Laboratory, a series of experiments was conducted to study the plasma clearance of vitamin B12 labeled with cobalt-57. These studies sought to determine why the serum and plasma levels of vitamin B12 were elevated in patients with chronic myelocytic leukemia. In one of these studies, three patients in remission were intravenously administered vitamin B12 labeled with cobalt-57. The procedure was repeated twice in the same patients, after administration of loading doses of stable vitamin B12. In another study, 10 patients with various degrees of chronic myelocytic leukemia and 5 healthy individuals each received three or more intravenous injections of cobalt-57 labeled B12.[256]

Morton Sklar, Director of the World Organization Against Torture USA says, "In addition to the tightening of experimentation guidelines, the U.S. government has attempted to address the issue of human radiation testing by establishing three major programs to provide compensation to those persons who may have been harmed. However, these programs deal with only a small segment of the radiation experiments that took place and affect only a small fraction of the victims."

Sklar continues by saying, "The Department of Veterans' Affairs administers a program designed for veterans who were exposed to radiation, with special provisions for those exposed at Hiroshima and Nagasaki and in atomic weapons tests. This program is administered under the Veterans Dioxin and Radiation Compensation Act of 1988." However, of over 15,000 claims for compensation filed under this Act, only 1,401 have been approved; despite the fact that it is estimated that 200,000 soldiers were exposed to nuclear bomb tests between 1946 and

1963.

The second program is the Nuclear Claims Trust Fund that was established under a 1986 agreement between the United States and the Marshall Islands to compensate inhabitants of the islands exposed to radiation from U.S. weapons testing of 67 nuclear explosions between 1946 and 1958. In 1947, 145 people were relocated from their homes on Enewetok Atoll-which consists of about 40 islands-to Ujelang Atoll, a cluster of coral rubble one-fourth the size of Enewetok. They were told they would be gone no more than five years. In 1976, the U.S. Department of Interior said the group suffered grave privations, including periods of near starvation. They received little education and poor health care. It wasn't until 1980 that they were allowed to return to find that some of their land had been vaporized by the blasts, while the rest was pockmarked by explosions or contaminated radiation.

In May of 2000, twenty years after their return, The Marshall Island Nuclear Claims Tribunal awarded $341 million to compensate the survivors and descendants for the damage to them and their once tropical homeland. Unfortunately, they may not be able to collect it as the United States only earmarked $150 million for compensation and only $4.5 million is left.[257]

The third program is the Radiation Exposure Compensation Act of 1990, established to provide compensation to uranium miners, persons living downwind from the Nevada Test Site, and veterans and civilians who received radiation at the site of atmospheric weapons tests in Nevada and the Pacific.

Groups of uranium miners, test-site personnel, and civilians affected near test sites also have filed claims in federal courts seeking compensation. All these claims have been rejected, however, on the grounds that there is no legal authority to hold the government responsible. In some of these cases the court recognized that the claimants had indeed been harmed by the government's actions, and called on Congress to provide a legislative remedy in the absence of judicial remedy. The passage of legislation acknowledging the government's complicity in these events and compensating those who have been harmed is the first step that must be taken to achieve this result. The overall assessment of compensation programs that have been established is that they are far too restrictive and place too low a ceiling on the amount of compensation awarded.

In Morton Sklar's report Involuntary Human Scientific Experimentation, he ends by saying, "Similar concerns also are being raised about involuntary human experimentation involving new forms of classified research and testing of high technology military weaponry, including microwave and laser equipment. Groups working on these issues cite a White House inter-governmental memorandum dated March 27, 1997, establishing stronger guidelines prohibiting non-consensual testing for classified research; but suggesting by implication, that this type of human subject research may, in fact, be taking place. Because of the classified nature of these activities, it is very difficult to confirm or disprove that they are taking place.[258] Given the serious negative impacts on non-consensual human subjects that classified research of this type is capable of producing, and given the past history of secret experimentation by the government; these allegations of continuing improprieties involving secret government sponsored human testing should not be dismissed without more thorough, impartial investigation."

Cooper Brown from the National Committee for Radiation Victims summed up his feelings to the Task Force by saying, “If you want to ensure that what happened during the Cold War years does not happen in the future, then you have to start talking about fundamental institutional change. That is the only way you are going to get around it. You hear people talking about criminal sanctions, that should be looked at not only in terms of retribution to those who it was done to before; but you have got to look at in terms of if you don’t impose criminal sanctions, where criminal sanctions are clearly warranted. And you know, the Advisory Committee notes at least two incidents where they think people were killed as a result of the experimentation and says but there has to be further investigation. If you don’t respond to that, you are sending absolutely the wrong message to people who decide to do experimentation in the future.”

Biological and Chemical Experiments[259]

Dr. Cornelius Rhoads undertook the Puerto Rican Cancer Experiment in 1931. Under the auspices of the Rockefeller Institute for Medical Investigations, Rhoads purposely infected his subjects with cancer cells. Thirteen of the subjects died. Rhoads went on to establish the U.S. Army Biological Warfare facilities in Maryland, Utah, and Panama, even though he wrote a most appalling statement after the experiment was uncovered. He said, “What the island needs is not public health work, but a tidal wave or something to totally exterminate the population.”[260] He later was named to the U.S. Atomic Energy Commission and was at the heart of the radiation experiments on prisoners, hospital patients, and soldiers.[261]

In 1943 the United States began research into the use of biological agents for offensive purposes. Approximately 146,000 tons of chemical agents were produced by the United States between 1940 and 1945. The government says this work was started in response to a perceived threat of German biological warfare. The United States conducted this research at Camp Detrick and produced agents at other sites until 1969, when President Nixon stopped all offensive biological and toxin weapon research and production.

The Chemical Corps Research and Development Command issued a memo on May 2, 1956 that speaks for itself. An Lt Colonel from Sloan-Kettering was to be given the following ‘Problem assignment’. “The problem is how can we develop and standardize BW and CW agents when higher authority requires human dose-response data, yet these agents are considered by medical authorities to be too dangerous for human experimentation? A ‘Fresh look’ at this problem might bring out new and fruitful approaches.”

Mustard Gas Exposure and Long-Term Health Effects

In 1993 a report published by the Institute of Medicine stated approximately 60,000 military personnel were used as human subjects in the 194O's to test two chemical agents, mustard gas and lewisite. Most of these subjects were not informed of the nature of the experiments and never received medical follow-up after their participation in the research. Some of these human subjects were threatened with imprisonment at Fort Leavenworth if they discussed these experiments with anyone, including their wives, parents, and family doctors.[262] The study found a relationship between exposure and the subsequent development of certain diseases.

During the Second World War, The San Jose Project was conducted on San Jose Island, Panama. This project was to determine if chemical weapons would be effective under tropical conditions and could be used against the Japanese military during the Second World War. It involved 130 tests of an estimated 31,000 mustard gas bombs and other chemical weapons conducted by the U.S., Canada, and Britain between 1944 and 1947. The U.S. also conducted experiments to determine whether there was a difference in how white and non-white races reacted to mustard gas, according to documents released under the U.S. government's Freedom of Information Act. The Americans exposed Puerto Rican American soldiers and white American soldiers to the gas, but found there was no difference in how the chemical affected the men. Both groups of human guinea pigs broke out in large blisters, had their skin and lungs severely burned, and several had to be hospitalized. The Ottawa Citizen reported on April 22, 2001, that The Panamanian government sent a team of scientists and bomb disposal experts to San Jose Island in February 2001 to determine whether any of the bombs or chemical weapons were still intact thereby posing a current threat. A Pentagon spokesman said that U.S. chemical weapons on San Jose were either exploded or "disposed of consistent with the common practices at the time." The article states it was common during that period to either dump unused chemical weapons at sea or bury them on land.[263]

There is no central roster of World War II participants in either the laboratory or field tests. The Army conducted tests on Army personnel in the laboratory and in the field. The test sites included Edgewood Arsenal, Md.; Camp Sibert, Ala.; Bushnell, Fla.; Dugway Proving Ground, Utah; and San Jose Island, Panama Canal Zone. Military personnel from the U.S. Navy Training Center, Bainbridge, Maryland also were sent to the Naval Research Lab in Washington, D.C. to participate in tests. Gas testing facilities also were located at Great Lakes Naval Training Center in Illinois and Camp Lejeune, N.C.

Based on findings from the National Academy of Sciences, the Department of Veterans Affairs recently published a final rule to compensate veterans for disabilities or deaths resulting from the long- term effects of in service exposure to mustard gas and other agents which blister the skin (these are called vesicants).[264] The final rule expands coverage to veterans exposed to mustard gas under battlefield conditions in World War I (WWI), those present at the German air raid on the harbor of Bari, Italy (WWII), and those engaged in manufacturing and handling vesicant agents during their military service. Thus, for the first time, VA will compensate certain veterans for illnesses, which may have been caused by their exposure to vesicants over a century ago.

Veterans Who May Be Eligible for Compensation

VA policies generally authorize service-connection and compensation payments to veterans who were exposed to mustard gas and/or Lewisite and who suffer from a number of diseases or conditions:

- Full-body exposure to nitrogen or sulfur mustard together with the subsequent development of chronic conjunctivitis, keratitis, corneal opacities, scar formation, or the following cancers: nasopharyngeal; laryngeal; lung (except mesothelioma); or squamous cell carcinoma of the skin;
- Full-body exposure to nitrogen or sulfur mustard or exposure to Lewisite and the subsequent development of a chronic form of laryngitis, bronchitis, emphysema, asthma or chronic obstructive pulmonary disease;
- Full-body exposure to nitrogen mustard with the subsequent development of acute non-lymphocytic leukemia.

Service-connection is not allowed if the claimed condition is due to the veteran's own willful misconduct or if there is affirmative evidence that establishes some other non-service-related condition or event as the cause of the claimed disability.

Veterans who were exposed to significant amounts of mustard gas and have health problems that may be compensable or their survivors may contact the nearest VA regional office at 1-800-827-1000 for more information about benefits.

Medical Care

Veterans currently seeking VA health care receive medically indicated diagnostic and treatment services without any need to document mustard gas exposures. The VA has announced that for fiscal year 1999, it is planning to provide virtually all needed medical services for any veteran who comes to VA for care. In any future year in which appropriations are insufficient to meet projected demand, VA will use a priority system that provides a special category for those requiring treatment for illnesses specifically related to environmental exposures (although some veterans may qualify for an even higher eligibility category based on their service-connected status or other factors). Further, if the veteran can document exposure to receive care under the special enrollment Category 6, co-payments are avoided. More information about VA health-care enrollment is available toll-free at 1-877-222-VETS, at the veteran's nearest VA medical center, or at http://www.va.gov/pubaff/enroll.htm on the Internet.

Sea Dumping of Chemical Weapons

Following the occupation of Germany and Japan, the Allies initiated a sea dumping and weapons disposal program to eliminate the large stockpiles of captured chemical agents. Operation Davy Jones Locker involved sinking ships that contained German weapons in the North Sea, however not all the German weapons were destroyed. Between 1945 and 1947, over 40,000 of the 250-kg tabun bombs, over 21,000 mustard bombs of various sizes, over 2,700 nitrogen mustard rockets, and about 750 tabun artillery shells of various sizes were shipped to the United States. In addition to disposing of the enemy stockpiles, the United States also dumped the U.S. Lewisite stockpile into the sea during Operation Geranium in 1948.[265]

The disposal at sea of surplus and leaking chemical munitions and radiological wastes generated environmental concerns about its effects on marine life, that eventually brought sea dumping to a halt but not before 1968. Operation Cut Holes and Sink 'Em (CHASE), an ongoing program for disposing of conventional ammunition began accepting chemical weapons in 1967. That year, CHASE 8 disposed of mustard agent in ton containers, and M55 sarin rockets. In June 1968, CHASE 11 disposed of sarin and VX in ton containers, along with additional M55 sarin and VX rockets. In August 1968, CHASE 12 disposed of mustard agent in ton containers. Are we really mystified by the effects our contaminated oceans have had on the sea and plant life?

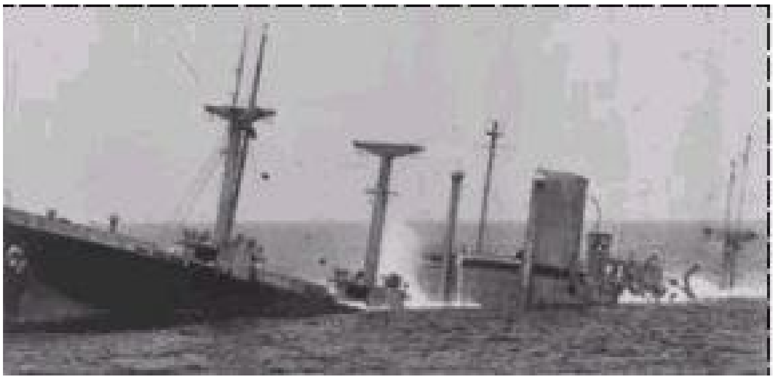

Photograph: Chemical and Biological Defense Command Historical Research and Response Team, Aberdeen Proving Ground, Md.

Production Begins

In 1950, the Chemical Corps began construction of the first full-scale sarin production complex based on pilot plant work accomplished at the Army Chemical Center, which had formerly been called Edgewood Arsenal.[266] In 1951, the corps fully standardized sarin and by 1953 was producing the agent. After only four years of production the plants stopped manufacturing, since the stockpile requirements for the agent had been met. One serious accident that was reported took place on July 8, 1969. The army announced that 23 U.S. soldiers and one U.S. civilian had been exposed to sarin on Okinawa. The soldiers were cleaning sarin-filled bombs preparatory to repainting them when the accident occurred.

Part of the reason for the shut down of the sarin plant was the development of a new nerve agent. Chemists at Imperial Chemicals, Ltd. in the United Kingdom, while searching for new insecticides came across compounds that were extremely toxic to humans. The British shared the discovery with the United States in 1953. The Chemical Corps examined the new compounds, and determined that a new series of nerve agents had been discovered that were more persistent and much more toxic than the G-series agents. This new series was designated the V-series agents in 1955, because they were "venomous" in nature. These agents would enter the body through the skin, thereby bypassing the protective mask. They were 1,000-fold more toxic than sarin when applied to the skin, and 2- to 3-fold more toxic when inhaled. A drop the size of a pinhead on bare skin could cause death within 15 minutes.

The Chemical Corps gave top priority to the investigation of these compounds. Of the compounds investigated, VX was selected in 1957 for pilot plant development and dissemination studies. It was standardized in December 1957. The annual report for that year concluded: "The reign of mustard gas, which has been called the King of Battle gases since it was first used in July 1917, will probably come to an end."[267]

In 1959, Food Machinery and Chemical Company, the low bidder, got the contract and construction was planned for 1960. Shortly after the approval, the Chemical Corps supplemented the contract to provide for a VX weapon-filling plant.[268]

On March 17, 1968 approximately 6,400 sheep died following the intentional release of a deadly nerve gas from a plane in the Skull Valley area adjacent to Dugway Proving Grounds. According to a veterinarian who evaluated the sick and dying sheep, there was little doubt that the sheep had been poisoned with nerve gas.[269] Initially, the Department of Defense denied any responsibility for the accident, stating that the sheep died from organophosphate pesticides sprayed on a nearby alfalfa field. However, the nerve agent was identified when the poisoned sheep were autopsied, which made it clear that the deaths were not caused by pesticides.[270] Eventually, the Department of Defense reimbursed the ranchers for their animals.

Human Testing

The Chemical Corps's concern with the effects of nerve and other chemical agents on soldiers led to extensive studies to determine the dangers of exposure and the proper kinds of treatment. Between 1955 and 1975, the US Army enrolled 6720 soldiers in an experimental exposure program of chemical warfare and other agents at Edgewood Arsenal, Maryland. Two hundred fifty four chemicals were administered in an experimental setting.

In a three-year study beginning in 1965, 70 prisoners at the Holmesburg State Prison in Philadelphia were subjected to tests of dioxin, the highly toxic chemical contaminant in Agent Orange. Lesions that the men developed were not treated and remained for up to seven months. None of the subjects was informed that they would later be studied for the development of cancer. This was the second such experiment that Dow Chemical undertook on "volunteers" who did not receive the information, which the world proclaimed was necessary for "informed consent" at Nuremberg.

On 11 July 1969, the army revealed that it was conducting open-air testing with nerve agents at Edgewood Arsenal and at Fort McClellan during training events. The army also revealed that they had conducted nerve agent testing in Hawaii between 1966 and 1967.

The Incapacitant Program

During the 1950s, the Chemical Corps became interested in developing chemical weapons that incapacitated rather than killed its targets. Twelve contractors were awarded a total of 25 contracts for studies or experiments involving morphine, demerol, seconal, scopolamine, chlorpromazine, and secobarbital. Mental Incapacitant studies included: LSD, mescaline, atropine, psilocybin, BZ (benzilate) and glycolate compounds.[271]

New York State Psychiatric Institute was awarded three separate contracts for the study of LSD and mescaline. In 1951 NYSPI tested six derivatives, while the corps tested 35 derivatives. The results of the investigation indicated that mescaline and its derivatives would not be practical as agents, because the doses needed to bring about the mental confusion were too large.[272]

What this report does not say is that less than a month after New York State Psychiatric received the drugs and did tests on mice, they started injecting patients. As mentioned in an earlier chapter, Harold Blauer died from these tests. Alan Scheflin says that the Army report on Blauer's death states that Blauer was not asked for a written consent and that "it is doubtful that such a document exists."[273] Scheflin fills in the pattern of deception by explaining that the Assistant Attorney General for the State of New York conferred with the Army representatives and agreed that their role should be concealed from Mrs. Blauer. In fact, they continued these tests at NYSPI through 1957 to a whopping $140,000. In late 1953 the investigators of that Institute formed a private corporation called "The Research Foundation for Mental Hygiene, Inc.," and were awarded two additional contracts to conduct studies with LSD and mescaline type drugs on psychiatric patients. The Inspector General could not even find details of these contracts.[274]

Additional Contracts:

- The University of Washington used psychochemical drugs on at least 19 male and female medical students.
- The University of Maryland studied the effects of atropine substitutes and other chemical warfare agents under five contracts using Edgewood Arsenal military volunteers and Maryland Psychiatric patients, and other area hospital patients.
- North American Aviation used BZ on 19 company employees.
- Indiana University studied the effects of atropine and atropine substitutes using seven volunteers.
- University of Pennsylvania was awarded six separate contracts. Approximately 40 people were tested with morphine and demerol drugs, and 10 people received scopolamine, atropine, and morphine. Two of these contracts in the mid-to-late 1960's, used 320 inmates from Holmesburg Prison. They were tested with 16 different chemical agents including, ditan, atropine,

scopolamine, and various experimental glycolate agents. Glycolates can cause interference with muscles and the central nervous system, delirium, physical incoordination, blurred vision, inhibition of sweating and salivation, rapid heart rate, elevated blood pressure, increased body temperature, vomiting, prostration and stupor or coma.

- The same medical investigators who conducted research at Holmesburg Prison under University of Pennsylvania contracts formed the Ivy Research Laboratories, Inc. They received one contract in 1968 and the other in 1970, to continue work at Holmesburg Prison with chemical agents with 94 inmates. They had choking agents, nerve agents, blood agents, blister agents, vomiting agents, incapacitating agents and toxins used on them.
- Secret army-sponsored research, in which hallucinogens were administered to healthy subjects without their knowledge or consent, was carried out at Boston Psychiatric Hospital between 1952 and 1954.[275] In reflecting, "not with pride," on his participation in this experiment, an investigator explained it as follows: "It wasn't that we were Nazis and said if we ask for consent we lose our subjects, it was just that we were so ethically insensitive that it never occurred to us that you ought to level with people that they were in an experiment.[276]
- American Institute for Research, Silver Springs, Maryland was awarded a contract in 1964 to conduct psychoactive chemical compound experiments on military volunteers.
- Tulane University Department of Psychiatry and Neurology, was awarded a contract in 1955. They used mental patients, neurological patients, and normal volunteers. One experiments involved giving LSD and mescaline to mental patients who previously had wire electrodes implanted in their brains, (not unlike what Wilder Penfield did to me in Montreal Canada.)
- Baylor University received three contracts and used demerol, morphine and scopolamine.
- The Institute for Behavioral Research experimented with Monkeys and Humans with sedatives and tranquilizers such as seconal, dimethyl tryptamine and chlorpromazine.[277]

A declassified document from 1957 talks about the difficulty they have had in obtaining expert services and facilities to conduct their tests and experiments. It says, "Some of the activities are considered to be professionally unethical and in some instances border on the illegal. These difficulties have not been entirely surmounted but good progress is being made."[278] They go on to say the best results have been obtained from mental institutions.

LSD Testing in the Armed Forces

Experiments with soldiers under the influence of LSD were conducted to see if they could be forced to give information when being interrogated. The Medical Research Laboratories at Edgewood initiated LSD (EA 1720) drug studies in late 1956. Soldiers were approached and told that the official classified project would make mental and physical demands upon him. Care was taken not to mention the exact properties of the material and the soldiers were made to sign a security statement declaring that he would protect the classification of the project. Thus, men who later would suspect health problems from the tests they participated in were forced to keep from getting treatment, because they could not discuss the project without breaking their security declaration.

These men were given drinks laced with LSD and then interrogated. Between August 1958 and May 1960, these tests were expanded to include Polygraph/Interrogation Tests and Isolation/Sensory Deprivation Tests, all under the influence of LSD.[lxix] There were no records found for the majority of the Intelligence Corps so-called volunteers. In fact, the few that were found were incomplete and totally inadequate to determine even the most basic information about the test.[279]

James B. Stanley was a master sergeant when he was secretly administered LSD at the Aberdeen proving Grounds in Maryland in 1958. Twenty-seven years later the Army sent Stanley a letter soliciting his cooperation in a study of the long-term effects of LSD on “volunteers who participated” in the 1958 tests. Stanley filed suit after the Army denied an administrative claim for compensation.[lxx] He claimed to have suffered from hallucinations and periods of incoherence and memory loss, was impaired in his military performance, and would on occasion “awake from sleep at night and, without reason, violently beat his wife and children, later being unable to recall the entire incident.” Stanley’s claim was barred under a legal doctrine known as the Feres doctrine. Feres insulates the government from liability for injuries to servicemen resulting from activity “incident to service.” Stanley alleged that he was one of 1,000 soldiers who were covertly administered LSD between 1955 and 1958.

Many of these tests were conducted under the MKULTRA program, established to counter perceived Soviet and Chinese advances in brainwashing techniques. One test subject was Lloyd B. Gamble who enlisted in the U.S. Air Force in 1950. In 1957, he volunteered for a special program to test new military protective clothing. He was offered various incentives to participate in the program, including a liberal leave policy, family visitations, and superior living and recreational facilities. However, the greatest incentive to Mr. Gamble was the official recognition he would receive as a career-oriented noncommissioned officer, through letters of commendation and certification of participation in the program. During the 3 weeks of testing new clothing, he was given two or three water-size glasses of a liquid containing LSD to drink. Thereafter, Mr. Gamble developed erratic behavior and even attempted suicide. He did not learn that he had received LSD as a human subject until 18 years later, as a result of congressional hearings in 1975.[280] Even then, the Department of the Army initially denied that he had participated in the experiments, although an official DOD publicity photograph showed him as one of the valiant servicemen volunteering for “a program that was in the highest national security interest."[281]

Other Field Testing LSD Programs:

- Fort Bragg, NC-XVIII Airborne Corps Artillery, September 1958 at Nike Missile Base, 59 test subjects were photographed by still and movie cameras while under the influence performing various duties.
- Fort McClellan, AL, May, July, October 1959. 113 students and members of the faculty were tested.
- Fort Benning, GA, January 1960, 41 officers participated.
- Dugway Proving Ground, UT, September 1959, 4 officers taught class under the influence. Project Dork was conducted on Edgewood Arsenal personnel at Dugway in October 1964. Open dissemination to distances of 100 yards upon eight personnel from the Sixth U.S. Army.
- Fort Holabird and the Chemical Warfare Laboratories at Edgewood Arsenal, 1958-1960, 35 participants.
- Operation Third Chance a 90-day period starting in April 1961, involved the use of LSD on nine foreign nationalists and one U.S. Military subject, none of who were volunteers.
- Operation Derby Hat, September 1962 in Hawaii, involved the use of seven non-volunteer foreign nationals and one U.S. Military person.

In a macabre twist a group of ten Norwegian survivors have filed a lawsuit accusing the Central Intelligence Agency, the Norwegian army and pharmaceutical companies of using 10 war children as guinea pigs in the 1950s and 1960s in experiments with drugs such as LSD and mescaline. Their attorney, Randi Hagen Spydevold claims to have evidence that three or four children died during the tests.[282] The aim of the experiments was surmised to be a way to find control of people's brain.

Biological Weapons and Testing

During the 1950s the biological warfare program was one of the most highly classified programs, owing to its nature and the ongoing Cold War. Many of the details of the program have never been declassified. The corps concentrated on standardizing the agents investigated during World War II and weaponized them at Fort Detrick, the Chemical Corps biological warfare center.

Operation Whitecoat originally started out with volunteer enlisted men. However, after the enlisted men staged a sit down strike to obtain more information about the dangers of the biological tests, Seventh-Day Adventists who were conscientious objectors were recruited for the studies.[283] Because these individuals did not believe in engaging in actual combat, they instead volunteered to be human subjects in military research projects that tested various infectious agents. At least 2,200 military personnel who were Seventh-Day Adventists volunteered for biological testing during the 1950's through the 1970's.

In 1953, Major General Bullene, Chief Chemical Officer gave an over riding priority to the development of anthrax spores. In 1954 the bacteria Brucella suis became the first agent weaponized by the United States at Pine Bluff Arsenal. The United States also worked with Plague (Y. pestis) as a potential biowarfare agent, developing an effective method of aerosolizing the organism. The contagious nature of pneumonic plague makes it particularly dangerous as a biological weapon. This Plague normally appears in three forms in man: bubonic, septicemic, and pneumonic. Deer fly fever (Francisella tularensis) was also weaponized by the United States in the 1950s and 1960s. SEB is the second most common source of outbreaks of food poisoning. Often these outbreaks occur in a setting such as a church picnic or other community event, due to common source exposure in which contaminated food is consumed.

The most important route of exposure to biological agents is through inhalation. Aerosol delivery systems for biological warfare agents most commonly generate invisible clouds of particles or droplets that can remain suspended for extensive periods. The major risk is pulmonary retention of the inhaled particles. To a much lesser extent, particles may adhere to an individual or his clothing. These toxins may cause direct pulmonary toxicity or be absorbed and cause systemic toxicity. Toxins are frequently as potent or more potent by inhalation, than by any other route.[284]

One of the more interesting developments was the standardization in 1959 of the yellow fever virus for use with a mosquito as vector. The virus came from an individual in Trinidad who had been infected with the disease during an epidemic in 1954. Scientists inoculated rhesus monkeys with the serum to propagate the virus. In tests conducted in Savannah, Georgia, and at the Avon Park Bombing Range, Florida, uninfected mosquitoes were released by airplane or helicopter. Within a day, the mosquitoes had spread over several square miles and had bitten many people, demonstrating the feasibility of such an attack. Fort Detrick's laboratory was capable of producing half a million mosquitoes per month and had plans for a plant that could produce 130 million per month. Since Fort Detrick was limited in its production capability, Pine Bluff Arsenal was selected to be the site of the new biological agent. This plant could produce most of the agents standardized by the Chemical Corps and could fill bombs within 4 days after receipt of an order.

In a declassified document from a meeting in June 1958 in the Army Chemical Center in Maryland, the experiments with mosquitoes as a carrier is discussed by Dr. Housewright. The report says, "It was brought out that the literature contains many references to volunteer work performed using infected mosquitoes with a wide variety of agents (the work on malaria, for example). This information may be of importance in obtaining authorization to conduct future volunteer tests with certain agents."

In 1956-1958, in Savannah, Georgia and Avon Park, Florida, the Army carried out field tests in which mosquitoes were released into residential neighborhoods from both ground level and from aircraft. Many people were swarmed by mosquitoes and fell ill, some even died. After each test U.S. Army personnel, posing as public health officials, photographed and tested the victims. It is theorized that the mosquitoes were infected with a strain of Yellow Fever. However, details of the testing remain classified.

The Anti-animal and Anti-plant Program

The antianimal program started off strong in 1952 when the Chemical Corps activated Fort Terry, on Plum Island, New York to study animal diseases. In 1954 however, the army terminated all antianimal agent work with exception of rinderpest and the completion of the foot-and-mouth disease research facility. The Department of Agriculture then took over the defensive aspects of the antianimal pro-gram, including Fort Terry the same year.

The antiplant program made some progress, when in 1955 wheat stem rust became the first antiplant pathogen standardized by the Chemical Corps for use primarily against cereal crops. Additional antiplant agents were standardized shortly thereafter. In 1957, however, the army ordered the corps to stop all antiplant research and development since the air force primarily would be delivering the agent. This was accomplished by 1958 with the termination of the program. Then the decision was reversed the next year after additional funding was found.

The antiplant program was resumed for the U.S. Air Force in 1962. Agent production was conducted at Pine Bluff Arsenal. Field tests of wheat stem rust and rice blast disease were conducted at several sites in the Midwestern and Southern United States and on Okinawa.[285]

Fort Detrick also began to concentrate more on the chemical defoliants, conducting the first large-scale military defoliation effort at Fort Drum, New York using the butyl esters of 2,4-D and 2,4,5-T, later designated Agent Purple.[286]

P
hotograph: Chemical and Biological Defense Command

Historical Research and Response Team, Aberdeen Proving Ground, Md. U.S. Chemical Warfare Policy Camp Detrick, Md., July 16, 1945. These technicians at the Egg Plant are disinfecting and drilling eggs prior to inoculating them with Brucella suis or Chlamydia psittaci, the bacteria that cause brucellosis and psittacosis. Viral agents such as Venezuelan equine encephalitis virus were also produced in eggs.

In 1950, the U.S. Navy sprayed a cloud of bacteria over San Francisco. The Navy claimed that the bacteria was harmless and used only to track a simulated attack, but many San Francisco residents became ill with pneumonia-like symptoms, and one is known to have died. In 1952 and 1953, in another series of experiments, the U.S. military released clouds of “harmless” gases over six (6) U.S. and Canadian cities to observe the potential for similar releases under chemical and germ warfare scenarios. A follow-up report by the military noted the occurrence of respiratory problems in the unwitting civilian populations. Details of the test are still classified.

The Army conducted 239 open-air tests of biological agents between 1949 and 1969 with both simulates and live agents. In 1955, the Tampa Bay area of Florida experienced a sharp rise in Whooping Cough cases, including 12 deaths after a CIA test where a bacteria withdrawn from the Army’s Chemical and Biological Warfare arsenal was released into the environment.

In 1957, the Chemical Corps dropped a myriad of microscopic fluorescent particles of zinc cadmium sulfide along a path from South Dakota to Minnesota, to test the feasibility of contaminating a large area of the continent with biological organisms. In the first test, the air stream turned north and took the bulk of the material into Canada. Still, a test station in New York was able to detect the particles.

In the second test in 1958, it took the particles only 66 hours to travel from Minnesota to the Gulf of Mexico.[287] Special collectors were located at 63 Civil Aeronautics Authority sites and 112 Weather Bureau stations. Over 2,200 samples were mailed back to the corps from these sites. During Operation Autumn Gold in 1963, 20,000 gallons of BG (bacillus globigii) slurry” was dropped from helicopters and jets.

Additional tests covered from Ohio to Texas, and from Illinois to Kansas. One contaminated air mass traveled from Toledo, Ohio to a short distance west of Memphis, Tennessee. The collected material was analyzed at the Dugway Proving Grounds.[288] Although it had been only theoretical prior to this test, Operation LAC provided the first proof that biological agents were indeed potential weapons of mass destruction.[289]

In May 1997, the National Academy of Sciences issued a report intended to make people feel better about the cadmium sulfide releases. The panel concluded, “It is extremely unlikely that anyone in the test areas developed adverse health effects.”[290] The committee based this on the findings that high doses of cadmium over long periods of time could cause bone and kidney problems and lung cancer. Since the Army’s test involved small doses of a less toxic compound over short periods of time, they surmised no adverse health effects. They also theorized that since the army tests are now 30 and 40 years old, it would be extremely difficult to identify people who were affected and determine their past exposures to zinc cadmium sulfide.

In some cities the Army dispersed microorganisms either alone or in combination with the zinc cadmium sulfide. The Army omitted a 1932 study that concluded: “Cadmium, no matter how small the amount taken into the lungs, causes pathologic changes...there is, therefore, no permissible amount of cadmium.”[291] Perhaps that is why the army stopped using zinc cadmium sulfide in the 1960’s. A 1973 investigation suggested that the effects of zinc cadmium sulfide spray may not have been reported because poisoning is “of a low-level chronic nature and its symptoms are less dramatic and more difficult to recognize than acute cadmium poisoning.”[292]

Professor Leonard Cole reports that Diane Gorny and Carol Thomas, who attended an elementary school in Minneapolis were among the targets of a 1953 spraying.[293] A report stated that there were 61 releases in four different areas of the city. They suspect that the tests affected their health. Each claims that they and their classmates have had unusual numbers of miscarriages, fertility problems, and cancer. They have contacted over half of some 500 former students at the Clinton School. Dozens of female students reported having multiple miscarriages or other reproductive problems and an unusually high rate of cancer and asthma. There were also many cases of mental retardation among their offspring. Carol Thomas has a Downes Syndrome son, one who is severely retarded, and the third has a serious learning disability. Gorny is sterile.

In an interview for Pacifica Network News, Diane Gorny recalled being scanned with a fluoroscope. Joyce Carlson, also a student of the Clinton Elementary School in 1953, suffers from respiratory problems today. She cannot understand why those responsible at the time allowed children to be in danger. During the interview Joyce said, “I feel that the people who were in power the city officials, the school nurses, and the people who did this testing (U.S. Army) ...oh, I can’t believe they did this! How could they allow this to happen? They didn’t even ask questions. I just hope that these kinds of things are not happening today!”

The Deseret Test Center in Utah was created for extra continental chemical and biological agent testing, including trials at sea and arctic and tropical environmental testing. The army, navy, and air force jointly staffed the new center with testing scheduled to begin in 1962.

In an article Lee Davidson wrote for the Washington Correspondent, he explains what he found in declassified documents.[294] “For the experiments Deseret Test Center obtained the use of two ‘liberty’ ships, the mass-produced Merchant Marine cargo ships made during World War II. Tests also included five tugboats and the occasional use of submarines, jets, barges, and assorted smaller vessels."

The idea, documents said, was to have various ships crisscross through germ and nerve agent clouds to collect information about exposure and decontamination. Crewmembers occupied protected spaces and information was evaluated by on-board lab facilities.

According to Guy Willis of Tennessee, who wrote about his work on the Hall in the mid '50s for a newsletter, "They were rigged in the early '50s so they could be steered by remote control, so they could be driven through downwind radiation clouds resulting from atmospheric detonations of nuclear devices" near Eniwetok and Bikini atolls.

Willis wrote that the crew, which reboarded the ship only hours after passing through such clouds to wash it down, "experienced considerable radiation exposure," especially during long voyages back to the United States.

Despite the radiation exposure, the Hall and Eastman were included in Deseret Test Center's navy tests, possibly because of the remote steering capability or because of their rigging with cages for test animals and lab equipment that would be needed again."[295]

In another test the army wanted to know the effects of biological agents in natural settings. After receiving approval from the secretary of the army, the first open-air test was conducted at Dugway Proving Ground, Utah where 30 volunteers were exposed to an aerosol containing Coxiella burnetii, the rickettsia that causes Q fever.[296]

During the 1960s, the army conducted large-scale tests using the biological simulant Bacillus globigii (code name BG) at various places in the public domain to access the dangers of covert biological attacks. For example, in 1965 BG was tested at National Airport and the Greyhound Terminal in Washington, D. C. In 1966, BG was disseminated in New York City within the subway tubes and from the street into the subway stations in mid Manhattan. The army also conducted antianimal testing using BG at several stockyards in Texas, Missouri, Minnesota, South Dakota, Iowa, and Nebraska between 1964 and 1965. Antiplant testing using the wheat stem rust fungus was also conducted at Langdon, North Dakota, in 1960 and Yeehaw Junction, Florida in 1968.[297]

In 1969, President Nixon banned all offensive biological and toxin weapon research and production. Congress later discovered that the CIA had retained an enormous supply of shellfish toxin that had been delivered to them by the Army. CIA Directory Colby had no reasonable explanation for the blatant disregard for the executive order given by Nixon. The CIA also chose to ignore the Treaty that had been signed by 18 nations, which prohibited the stockpiling of biological agents for offensive military purposes, and also forbid research into such offensive employment of biological agents.

How many of our loved ones are dead today due to these experiments? What is to become of all of those who were part of these experiments the innocent women, children, prisoners, and service members who became human guinea pigs for "A Nobler Purpose?" How many citizens of this country were exposed to radiation from fallout? Do we really need to ask why Cancer is so prevalent? How much were our oceans damaged due to sea dumping?

These are tough questions, for which you have the answers. Let your voices be heard, lest your silence convey a more powerful message to those in power. Until we make the necessary changes to protect every citizen, history will continue to repeat itself.

Army Contracts with Outside Agency's[298]

Arthur D. Little- Incapacitating Agent Research (1963-72)

American Institute for Research, Silver Spring, Maryland- Effect of Drugs on Human Performance (1966); Comparative Neuro-pharmacology of a Muscle Relaxant (1965) - Develop tests to measure effects of incapacitating agents (1964-67)

Armour Research Foundation

Baylor University-Study effects of Analgesic drugs on respiratory center and circulation in humans (1961-62), Unknown study from 1964-67; Study without purpose state 1965-68

Charles Pfizer-CML Incapacitating Agents (1965)

Cornell University-Effect of Toxic Agents on Energy Metabolism (1967)

Contributors of Pennsylvania Hospital

E.I. Dupont-Evaluation & Synthesis of CML Compounds (1965-1968)

FMC Corp.-Synthesis of Compounds (1964-69), Search for New Incapacitating Agent Research (1963-68)

Friends of Psychiatric Hospital

Georgetown University

Hahnemann Medical College-Evaluation of Therapeutic Compounds in animals and humans 1961-66 supposedly no humans used; 1967-68; - 65 volunteers used; 6-68 thru 12-68, 26 volunteers used; 1969-70 26 volunteers used

Harvard College-Molecular Structure & Diffusional Processes Across Intact Epidermia (1964)

Harvard University-Collection & Identification of Plant Material (1965)

Hazelton Labs-Biological Evaluation of CML Compounds (1966-70), Development & Practical Application of New Primary Screening Methods (1964-67), Primary Toxicity Screening Tests and Methodology (1967-71), Biological Evaluation of Lethal & Incapacitating Agents (1964-66); Irritant Screening of Compounds (1965-66); New Method Dev for Irritant Screening (1965-66); Procurement & Evaluation of Naturally Occurring Biologically Active Material (1964)

I. I. T. Research Institute (Armour)-Biomed Studies of BZ (1964)

Indiana University-The Physiological effects of Atropine and Atropine Substitutes (1951-53) One contract DA18-108-CML-2397 was awarded to the Indiana University in 1951. The seven reports regarding that contract did not reveal any information regarding screening or selection of volunteers. The absence of such details was not unusual as the contract predates publication of DOD and Army policies governing uses of volunteers in Medical research. The studies apparently dealt primarily with chemical research. However, there was evidence of seven volunteers used in atropine studies.

Indiana University Foundation Research-Contract 6591-an Out-Of-House

Contract for the years 1960-63 for the Psychological Studies of the Effects of Incapacitating Agents

Institute for Behavioral Research-Drug Effects and Complex behavioral repertories involved in Monkeys, Baboons, & Humans (1962-1965)

Institute of Medical Science

Ivy Research Labs-Threshold Doses of various chemical agents used on in Humans (1968 -73)

Holmesburg Prison-Choking agents, nerve agents, blood agents, blister agents, vomiting agents, incapacitating agents, and toxins. At least 94 inmates used in these experiments. (See University of Pennsylvania for more experiments at Holmesburg Prison.) Additional experiments done in 70-71 to an unknown number of people.

Jefferson Medical College

John Hopkins-Effect of Drugs on CML Agents (1965), 1960-65 Determine Effects of Drugs and CW agents on the EEG; 1951-55 Treatment of injury by GB and mustard effects; 1955-60 Studies on EEG Method to aid in evaluation of drugs

Lakeside Lab

Louisiana State University-Clinical Pathological and Pathophysiological studies in anticholinesterase poisoning (1954-58) and another study 1955-58)

Maimonides Hospital

Maryland Medical Legal Foundation-Search for new Incapacitating Agents-studied Botulism, paid victims for blood samples (1963-66)

Monsanto Chemical-Synthesis of Compounds (1964-69)

Mount Sinai Hospital-Hypothalamic Control of Advenocortical Function (1967-67)-Hypothalamic Control of Adrenocortical Function (1964-66); three additional studies: 63-64; 66-67; 67-69

New York State Psychiatric Institute-Determine psychological effects of psychological chemical agents on human subjects (1951-54)

New York University-Endocrinologic effects of altered consciousness (1963-66)

North American Aviation Corp-Pilot Performance tests with BZ (1961-62)

Olin-Mathiesan

Pennsylvania Hospital-Neurological Evaluation of new agents (1965-66)

Press Fellows of Harvard-Collection and Identification of Plant Material (1964)

Regents of California

Regis Commercial Co.

Research Foundation for Mental Hygiene, Inc formerly known as New York State Psychiatric Institute-Psychiatric and Therapeutic studies of compounds (1953-57); Mental behavior of human with certain agents (1957-59)

Research Triangle Institute-Search for New CML Agents (1964-67) Total $1,180,700; Extraction of Bioassay of Natural Products (1965-); Synthesis of

Compounds (1964-69)

Roch Foundation For Mental Hygiene

Rutgers University

S. B. Penick

St. Louis University

Shell Dev. Co

Southern Research Institute

Stanford Research Institute-Comparative Neuropharmacology of Muscle Relaxant (1965); CML Incapacitating Agents (1964-65)

Tulane University-Dept of Psychiatry & Neurology (1955) for research in abnormal brain functioning as related to mental illness. One particular experiment involved giving LSD 25 and mescaline to mental patients who previously had wire electrodes implanted in their brains. The reports suggest that the implantation of electrodes was financed under a grant from the Commonwealth Foundation and not the Army grant. End date of project unknown

University of California-Methods for Identification of Site and Mode of Action of Centrally Acting Incapacitating Compounds (1965)

University of Cincinnati

University of Colorado-Investigation and testing of nerve agent casualties; evaluation of therapy and antidotes (1951-61)

University of Connecticut-Invest of Alkaloid Products in Saprophytic Culture (1965-66)

University of Delaware-Heterocyclic Nitrogen Compounds (1965)

University of Illinois-(1960-61-62)-Action of Various Psychotomimetic Agents on Brain Enzyme Systems $70,170Contract G41, 1963-64-Biochemical Basis of Psychedelic Drug Actions

University of Iowa-1958, 1961-Inv. of Indole Alkaloids XO 5-604-83 $11,000 Contract 269

University of New Hampshire

University of Maryland-Drug Effects & Behavior Repertories and Environment Control (1965); Psychological Studies of effects of CW agents (1954-60); candidate therapeutic agents and CW agents effects on humans

University of Michigan-Contract #5663, (1955) in the amount of $9,000 to Conduct Research on Pharmacology of certain Compounds Affecting the Central Nervous Systems of Animals & Men (1956) $41,400, (1958) $19,897

University of Mississippi

University of Oregon

University of Pennsylvania-Experimental Basis for: (a) Treatment of CML Casualties (1961-62) (b) Mode of Transport of gases thru lung membranes (1968), (c) Threshold Doses in Humans (1964-67); Study of CW casualties in man (1951-60); Evaluation of drugs in man (1963-68)

Thru University of Pennsylvania 320 Inmates of Holmesburg Prison studied for Threshold doses in man (1964-67)

University of Tennessee-Local Treatment of Vesicant Burns (1964-65)

University of Utah-Study effects of CW agents as personnel hazard (1954-57); Therapeutic effects of chemical compounds (1957-59)

University of Washington-Neurological Action of CW Agents (1957-62) Review of 21 reports regarding those contracts indicated the investigators established a volunteer pool of 35 medical students of which at least 19 were used in psychochemical drug experiments. Included the use of both male and female humans in testing LSM (lysergic acid morpholide), an LSD-like compound, LSD, and psilocybin. Total project cost $221,529- Contract DA18-108-405-CML-6364

University of Wisconsin-Methods for Measuring Chemically Induced Behavioral Changes in Various mammalian species (1965-1967); Behavioral Effects of Pharmacologic Materials (1965), Behavioral Effects of Pharmacoligic, Material that disrupt the central nervous system of primates (10-61 thru 9-62) $38,750 contract G34

Vanderbilt University

Woodard Research-Screening of Selected Compounds (1963-66)

Yale University-Relationship of Psychotomimetic Compounds in Brain Neurohumors (1965)

Ypsilanti State Hospital-Officials reported their experiments which led to the conclusion that lysergic acid diethylamide (LSD), appeared to be a suitable substance for therapeutic investigation in the treatment of psychoses (1951).

FOIA SAMPLE LETTER

Agency Head or Freedom of Information Act Officer

Name of Agency

Address of Agency

City, State Zip Code

Re: Freedom of Information Act Request

Dear ______________:

This letter constitutes my formal request for information pursuant to the provisions of the Freedom of Information and Privacy Acts, 5 USC552.

I am requesting copies of all information or documents containing the following information be provided to me:

If possible, cite dates, authors, addressees, subjects, or titles of documents sought, and refer to or enclose copies of any published accounts related to the requested material (e.g., newspaper or journal articles or government reports)

or if just requesting personal information:

I am requesting copies of all information maintained by your agency that pertains to myself.

or as described below: As someone who was used in assorted experimentation and abuses at the hands of military personnel at hospital and military location from ____ year onwards as part of Project Bluebird, Project Artichoke, and Project MKULTRA. (If other projects are involved list those too.)

If personal info is requested

List Full Name, Maiden name, Current Address, Phone No., Social Security No., Date, and Place of Birth. I also listed former addresses where I resided.

In order to help to determine my status to assess fees, you should know that I am an individual seeking information for personal use and not for commercial use.

I am willing to pay fees for this request up to a maximum of $___. If you estimate that the fees will exceed this limit, please inform me first.

Or

I request a waiver of fees for this request. Disclosure of the requested information to me is in the public interest because it is likely to contribute significantly to public understanding of the operations or activities of the government, and is not primarily in my commercial interest. (Include a specific example).

Thank you for your consideration of my request.

Sincerely,

Your Name, Address, City, State, Zip Code, Telephone Number

Requesters should keep a copy of their request letter and related correspondence and notes of phone calls until the request has been fully resolved.

Always put on the outside of your envelope in the bottom left hand corner

“Freedom of Information and Privacy Act Request”.

You should expect to receive an acknowledgment of your request and a statement that the request has been placed in the queue and will be processed in its turn. Agencies are allowed to process requests on a first-come, first-served basis. If the agency has a backlog of requests (and most do), you may have to wait some time before you receive the materials you seek. Call or write the FOIA office to follow up on requests that have been pending for an unreasonable period of time. Your response from the agency should give you the names of specific FOIA personnel you can contact about your request. Excessive processing delays may require an administrative appeal letter.

The agency may say that no records were found in response to your request. Call or write the FOIA office and ask if additional information is needed from you to make your request more specific. Explain why you believe the agency has material responsive to your request and inquire about other places in the agency’s files where relevant records might be found.

Information relevant to your request may be found, but the agency withholds all or part of it. The FOIA allows an agency only nine exemptions from its obligation to provide information in response to a request. These exemptions, found at 5 U.S.C. section 552(b), include material related to national security, internal agency rules, proprietary business information, inter-and intra-agency pre-decisional memoranda, personal privacy, and records related to law enforcement records.

How do I appeal the agency’s action on my request?

It is always worthwhile to file an administrative appeal if the agency's response is unsatisfactory. Appeals can be especially effective to successfully challenge excessive processing delays, fee waiver denials, and the improper full or partial withholdings of responsive documents. Agency regulations governing appeals vary; take careful note of the instructions for filing an appeal in the agency's response to ensure that your appeal is timely.

Always file an appeal letter if the initial response is inadequate. If the agency fails to respond satisfactorily, you may wish to seek the assistance of a member of Congress to contact the agency on your behalf.

FOR REQUESTING DECLASSIFIED MKULTRA and Bluebird/Artichoke Records

Central Intelligence Agency

Kathryn I. Dyer

FOIA and Privacy Act Coordinator

Washington, D.C. 20505

Re: Freedom of Information and Privacy Act Request

This letter constitutes my formal request for information pursuant to the provisions of the Freedom of Information and Privacy Acts, 5 USC552.

I am requesting the three-volume CD set that includes a copy of a shareware viewer of the nearly 18,000 pages of MKULTRA and Bluebird/Artichoke records. Enclosed is a check for $30 made payable to the United Sates Treasurer.

Sincerely,

Your Name, Address, City, State Zip Code and Telephone Number

You can request this information without requesting information on yourself. If you want to do that, do it in a separate request.

This site has many MKULTRA documents in tiff format http://intellnet.org/mkultra/

Appeal to U.S. Lawmakers by MKULTRA Targeted Individuals

The declaration below represents the 1999 attempt to get the attention of lawmakers by both categories of MKULTRA targeted individuals: Electronic neuro-influence device victims and Institutional/drug/child abuse survivors.

After more than 50 years of such activity and cover-up, it is high time to expose this practice and prosecute the perpetrators. The previous attempt by the U.S. Senate in 1977 was not followed through.

DECLARATION OF HUMAN RIGHTS EMERGENCY INTERVENTION

ATTENTION LAWMAKERS:

SERIOUS VIOLATIONS OF HUMAN RIGHTS OCCURRING IN AMERICA, EMERGENCY INTERVENTION NEEDED

We who are injured victims of human rights abuses in U.S. nonconsensual classified research, in military/intelligence/corporate/ university or private sector testing, as part of various training and classified research demand the following:

1. All human experimentation without consent be immediately ceased including any exposures, harassment or experimentation to U.S. citizens using the following:

- Nuclear (ionizing) radiation
- Biological weapons
- Biological process control weapons including brain wave manipulation
- Microwave and radio frequency radiation
- Sub audio infrasound and ultrasound weapons and testing acoustics, including audible, subliminal brain washing, harassment and intimidation, electromagnetic field weapons, environmental harassment
- Chemical weapons
- Extra low frequency (ELF) and very low frequency (VLF) pulse wave weapons
- Radar, laser-radar, and radar holography, sonar lasers and holograms, visual and media harassment implants, retinal implants
- Remote monitoring
- Satellite surveillance
- Any other defense/intelligence/health research that is nonconsensual using technology and methods which denies U.S. citizens our human rights, constitutional rights and rights to due process of law.

2. Our needs for investigations and enforcement of the law to protect our constitutional rights has not been properly addressed. We are told we must prove everything in order to get an investigation started, and yet due to the technological sophistication of the nature of our complaints, it is nearly impossible for us to do this. We are naïve to the sophistication of the engineering involved. We have limited financial resources. Many of us have been ignored and attempts have been made to discredit us. We therefore also demand the following:

We demand a Congressional and Presidential investigation into fraudulent use of our tax dollars in continued illegal radiation testing and other experimentation that is injuring us.

We demand we be notified and sent our true records of all that we have been exposed to.

We demand appropriate compensation for all our losses including but not limited to physical injuries, psychological injuries, and other damages.

We demand we have the appropriate support for our medical, technological, and engineering evaluations and needs necessary to solve our technological problems and injuries.

We demand that Congress pass new laws to strengthen protecting us, such as laws to force appropriate intelligence agencies and Inspector Generals to investigate our complaints.

We demand enforcement of existing laws that are supposed to be protecting us that are currently being ignored. These laws include:

Title 32 Code of Federal Regulations, Part 219, Federal Policy for Protection of Human Subjects

Department of Defense Directive 3216.2 Protection of Human Subjects in DOD Supported Research

Title 10, U.S. Code Section 980

Title 10, U.S. Code Chapter 32, Section 1520

U.S. criminal and constitutional laws

President Clinton's Memorandum of March 27, 1997, Title 3 -

Strengthened Protections for Human Subjects of Classified Research

World Law including the Nuremberg Code and the following:

- U.S. General Assembly Resolution 51/37 passed in 1996, The European Parliament Resolution A 4-005/99 passed on Jan. 29, 1999 which includes an international convention introducing a global ban on all developments and deployments of weapons which might enable any form of manipulation of human beings

We demand a separate independent cabinet post to bring our complaints to, when other agencies fail in their own oversight.

We demand that this committee be constantly updated and versed in all aspects of testing, training, research, and weapons and all that is being currently developed including what is classified.

We demand this committee have full authority to investigate, to help us, and to enforce the law. There should be no conflict of interest for those appointed to work within this committee.

We demand a repeal of the National Security Act for it is being used to protect criminal acts of those with unlimited powers currently being used to abuse U.S. citizens.

We demand criminal charges be brought against those who have so gravely injured us, and that those who have so callously ignored our complaints be removed from their positions of authority in public office for they do not deserve to serve the public.

Bring us the justice we deserve.

COALITION AGAINST NONCONSENSUAL CLASSIFIED RESEARCH AND TRAINING[299]

---

[i] Office of Special Investigations within the Criminal Division of the Department of Justice

[ii] Create Multiple Personalities for specific tasks

[iii] DID Dissociative Identity Disorder was formerly called Multiple Personality Disorder. Most individuals with DID report histories of severe and repeated physical, sexual, or emotional abuse in childhood.

[iv] This process usually involves the shaman entering a trance, a special form of the abaissement de niveau mental that Jung so often mentioned. Trance as such is important in many forms of magic and is currently the subject of investigation in many branches of science.

[v] Pseudonym

[vi] Joint Intelligence Objectives Agency, the JIOA was a special intelligence office reporting to the Director of Intelligence in the War Department, comparable to the intelligence chief of today's Joint Chiefs of Staff.

[vii] Office of Strategic Services, America's first spy network and forerunner of the CIA.

[viii] In the early fifties a hydrogen bomb was exploded on this very island, leaving a mushroom shaped cloud that went 25 miles into the atmosphere and 100 miles in diameter. Our own ships were standing by only 25 miles away to measure the effect of the blast.

[ix] In 1983 Barbie was extradited from Bolivia and stood trial in France for crimes against humanity. It was then that Washington admitted that he had worked for U.S. Intelligence, that he was a known war criminal, and that he had been allowed to escape.

[x] Nelson was asked to resign by Harry Truman because of his involvement in this policy.

[xi] Before coming to USA he worked at the Kaiser Wilhelm Institute with Rudin, the architect of Hitler's eugenic laws. He argued for the sterilization of the healthy relatives of schizophrenics, as well as of schizophrenics themselves. Kaiser Wilhelm Institute was also where Josef Mengele sent "experimental materials" from twins in the concentration camps.

[xii] In late 1953, the investigators of NY State Psychiatric formed a private corporation called "The Research Foundation for Mental Hygiene, Inc.," and were awarded two additional contracts to conduct studies with LSD and mescaline type drugs on psychiatric patients. The Inspector General notes that details regarding the performance of those contracts were not found. Thus, it cannot be stated with certitude that the patients used were volunteers, or policies established by the Army to govern the use of humans in research were adhered to in all cases.

[xiii] No relation to JFK or his family

[xiv] SI - there is no mention of what it stands for in document, although it appears to stand for Sleep Induction if you refer to #17.

[xv] Pressure in the right place cuts off the flow of blood to the brain, apparently causing a rapid coma-like condition. CIA Mori ID 140394

[xvi] Charles Oulton, the Science Correspondent for *The Express,* said in a 1998 report: "Scientists have solved the mystery of how information received by the brain in childhood can be retrieved years later. They have found that early lessons and experience leave a memory trace, which can lie dormant until adulthood; and then be reactivated when we need it. The process even starts when we are in the womb. New connections between nerve cells are created by the brain and remain in storage until needed."

[xvii] Document CIA Mori ID 149463, 11/26/51, "Since veni-puncture is undeniably the most efficient and successful method for introducing chemicals into the subject, it is obvious that the subject will be aware that a needle has been used in his arm. However, our work and the work of others indicate that there is a strong possibility that total amnesia or an almost total amnesia will follow the use of our technique as a general rule."

[xviii] CIA Mori ID 144700, 4/26/52, pg. 3, "Drugs Sodium Pentathol, sodium amytal, and barbiturates in general. Evaluation: These techniques have been proven to be effective and they involve little risk to the subject if administered under competent medical direction. CIA Mori ID 140394 dated 2/25/52, Q: Have you ever had any experience with drugs? A: Yes, many times. I worked with doctors using sodium amytal and pentathol and have obtained hypnotic control after the drugs were used. In fact, many times the drugs were used for the purpose of obtaining hypnotic control."

[xix] CIA Mori ID 190885, 1/1/50, Drugs and Electricity, “Research work on the use of electric shock and the encephalograph in interrogation. Particular emphasis on the detection of prior use of electric shock and the ‘guaranteed amnesia’ resulting from it.”

[xx] Cheese was a favorite word of Sidney Gottlieb who owned a goat farm and made cheese.

[xxi] Document CIA Mori ID 149463, 11/26/51, “Every effort should be made never to identify members of the Artichoke team by their true names in the presence of or in the hearing of the subject. Artichoke team members will use fictitious names in carrying out the Artichoke techniques.”

[xxii] Whenever anyone called me “Little Girl” that would trigger my 2 year old alter to come, consequently; my body could be 5, 10, 20 or 30, but the alter presenting was only two.

[xxiii] Under instructions from his Wall Street law firm, McCloy had lived for a year in Italy serving as an adviser to the fascist government of Benito Mussolini. An intimate collaborator of the Harriman/Bush bank, McCloy had sat in Adolf Hitler’s box at the 1936 Olympic games in Berlin at the invitation of Nazi chieftains Rudolf Hess and Hermann Goering.

[xxiv] Served as Eisenhower’s special assistant for psychological warfare. He headed the National Committee for a Free Europe, which broadcast American propaganda behind the Iron Curtain over Radio Free Europe and which was covertly funded by the CIA.

[xxv] Many times these wealthy benefactors referred to it as “The Company.”

[xxvi] Advanced Research and Planning

[xxvii] These diametrically opposing feelings were to create an internal chasm that was to finally heal forty years later, when I was able to bring these two parts of my subconscious together, face the feelings and understand them from an adult frame of reference. It is called integration for someone with DID.

[xxviii] This behavior accommodates the offender’s control of the victim’s worldview by placing blame on the victim.

[xxix] Tien founded and earlier organization, the American Society for Electrotherapy.

[xxx] This was her second or third confinement.

[xxxi] In 1961 changed its name to the Human Ecology Fund

[xxxii] CIA MORI ID 17441, The Study of Dissociated States, “Experiments involving altered personality function as a result of environmental manipulation (chiefly sensory isolation) have yielded promising leads in terms of suggestibility and the production of trance-like states. There is reason to believe that environmental manipulations can affect the tendencies for dissociative phenomena.”

[xxxiii] An Army post located five miles from Edgewood Arsenal in Maryland.

[xxxiv] Dr. Jan Merta, a Czech émigré scientist constructed a detector called a Sergeyev Detector while working at McGill University in the early 1970’s. It was used in Russia to chart field changes during PK experiments and detect energy fields around a clinically dead body. The Russians had been working with Nina Kulagina who had PK abilities and was able to control the heart of a frog, make it beat faster or slower; and finally to stop it on command. It was also said that she was able to do this with people. In September 1985 an article appeared in Advanced Technology Report Defense & Foreign Affairs Pg.35 saying, “...In California, it is rumored, a University-sponsored experiment has found that brain waves emitted by patient volunteers in a mental hospital have successfully controlled the switching of electric trains, making them go and stop at will. Sources said it even has a name by which it is known around DARPA (Defense Advanced Research Projects Agency) as “psychotronics.”

[xxxv] In 1962 Gittinger moved his base of operations from the Human Ecology headquarters in New York to a CIA proprietary company called Psychological Assessment Associates.

[xxxvi] Obviously thought control techniques had been studied for quite some time. Wright Patterson was a facility where I would be taken periodically for what they called “tune-ups.” It was a short drive from my home, where they made adjustments to any programming that seemed to be breaking down.

[xxxvii] The Institute for Experimental Medicine

[xxxviii] Ambiguity as to the exact years of this experimentation is due to the extreme nature of the trauma and the way the information was stored. I am sure of what was done, but unfortunately not sure of the exact date.

[xxxix] Wife of P. Avery Rockefeller, son of William and nephew John D. Rockefeller.

[xl] Hebb studied the play and sexual behavior of the captive bottlenose dolphin and coauthored a paper on it in 1948.

[xli] Perhaps Dr. Kozyrev of Pulkov Observatory in Leningrad can explain this statement on time. His theory in 1972 was Time is an energy. He believed that PK (psychokenesis) and even levitation would be explained with a thorough understanding of the energy of Time, an energy that does not propagate, but which is immediately everywhere. According to David Morehouse, a former military intelligence remote viewer and author of *Psychic Warrior: Inside the CIA's Stargate Program*, accessing the time-space continuum is a technique known as "remote viewing." Remote viewing is a description of travel going from the physical dimension to the target, wherever it is in time and space. He says that when the brain registers the theta-wave state on the monitoring equipment, they are ready to "jump into the ether."

[xlii] This seemed to be a favored age to start children's programming. Many survivors, including myself were first subjected to experiments starting at four.

[xliii] Harold Abramson of MKULTRA fame was attending the Kaiser Wilhelm Institute in 1926-27, where Twin studies were among the leading preoccupations in the studying of human genetics. He went on to become a New York allergist who under contract to the CIA documented all sorts of experiments. His experiments with LSD for the CIA were to make him quite infamous.

[xliv] Hilger and Gehlen both had been debriefed at Fort Hunt in Washington D.C.

[xlv] Wisner was OSS SI chief in Wiesbaden who later committed suicide in 1965. He forced Offie out in 1954.

[xlvi] James Jesus Angleton became part of the DDU, along with Wisner and Dulles. They laundered CIA money through the DDU for their own projects.

[xlvii] SIFAR, the Italian Secret Service was expanded under the code name Operation Demagnetize.

[xlviii] Special Procedures Group- a component of CIA, joint operation between the CIA and the State Department's Special Projects Division. SPD formally became Office of Policy Coordination in 1948 as a permanent State Department mechanism for circumventing the CIA's skepticism for covert political action.

[xlix] In 1952, John Foster established the Population Council in conjunction with John D. Rockefeller III. Tens of millions of dollars of Rockefeller grant money were pumped in as the American Eugenics Society moved its headquarters into the offices of the Population Council, and assumed the name of the newly created Population Council.

[l] He remained a close associate of other Rumanian exiles, including Horia Sima, the head of the Iron Guard.

[li] On 9/20/2000 the CIA filed an affidavit in U.S. District Court "acknowledging an intelligence relationship with German General Reinhard Gehlen that it has kept secret for 50 years." The CIA's acknowledgement of its dealings with Gehlen came in a response to an appeal of a Freedom of Information Act request by researcher Carl Oglesby, the National Archives said.

[lii] Only an hour and a half drive from my home at the time.

[liii] Dr. Noe's name also appears in this same group of documents.

[liv] October 29, 1999

[lv] Another survivor remembers Mengele in connection with cages, but is unable to remember the exact year.

[lvi] I found many survivors, including myself, who had "Robbie" alters. Not all had the same purposes as Kathy's, but all were intentionally created by horrific means.

[lvii] Eichmann was purportedly in Egypt in 1959 according to CIA Interagency Working Group (IWG): RG 263 Detailed Report, Adolf Eichmann

[lviii] This is not unlike what Sid Gottlieb and Josef Mengele said to me, especially naming the survivors' created alter Little Girl. It seems they were not all that creative over the years. Whatever worked for one, they improved upon and used repeatedly.

[lix] Bold on all documents added by author for emphasis

[lx] The first atomic veteran that established the atomic veterans association

[lxi] A report on a flashblindness experiment at the 1957 Plumbomb test uses the term volunteers; a report on 1962 "studies" at Dominic I provide no further information.

[lxii] Desert Rock was an Army encampment in Nevada adjacent to the nuclear test site

[lxiii] Administered by the Navy's Radiological Defense Laboratory

[lxiv] AFIP building

[lxv] Picture is of himself and other Boy Scouts at Walter Reed. The government official in the photograph is holding a log book opened to a page titled, "Walter Reed Army Institute of Research Division of Nuclear Medicine

[lxvi] Peter testified before the Advisory Committee in Knoxville and no one bothered to follow up on his testimony.

[lxvii] ACHES--Advocacy Committee For Human Experimentation Survivors-Mind Control. ACHES-MC was formed in 1996 to assist and advocate on behalf of survivors of nonconsensual federally funded mind control experimentation as children or adults.

[lxviii] Interagency Working Group

[lxix] The exact number of volunteers could not be determined. It was reported between 30-35. Some may have received 20 or more doses of LSD over the two-year period according to the Inspector Generals report pg. 139.

[lxx] US vs. Stanley, 483 U.S. 669 (1987)

1Notes - Preface

Interagency Working Group appointed to inform the appropriate committees of the U.S. Senate and House of the activities of the Nazi War Criminal Records

2 Memorandum to Members of the Advisory Committee on Human Radiation Experiments dated April 5, 1995 RE: Post-World War II Recruitment of German Scientists--Project Paperclip, from Advisory Committee Staff

3 Constantine, Alex. *Virtual Government, CIA Mind Control Operations in America*, Feral House, 1997, 87

4 See above Memo to Advisory Committee

5 Hunt, Linda. *Secret Agenda the United States Government, Nazi scientists, and Project Paperclip, 1945 to 1990,* Publisher: Bx4736: St. Martins, 1991, 132

6Hunt op. cit, 100

7 Hunt op. cit, 218

8 Hunt op. cit., 226

9 Simpson, Christopher. *Blowback*, *America's Recruitment of Nazis and Its Effects on the Cold War*, Weidenfeld & Nicolson, New York, 1988, 28-29

10September 28, 1994, Congressional Subcommittee Hearing

11Internet Resources on the Tuskegee Study, are at http://www.gpc.peachnet.edu/~shale/humanities/composition/assignment

12 DOE (Department of Energy) ACHRE Report Chapter 7

13 DOE/EH-0473 SECTION- Fernald School Calcium Metabolism Studies (1948 to Early '50s)

14 Rothman, David and Sheila. *The Willowbrook Wars*, Harper & Row Publishers, Inc. 1984, 263

15 Rivera, Geraldo. *Willowbrook*, Random House, 1972, 22-23

16 Rothman op. cit, 265

17 In a January 31 Nation column, Cockburn cites information made public due to a Church of Scientology F.O.I.A. request during the 1970s.

18 William Silverman interview by Gail Javitt (ACHRE), transcript of audio recording, 20 March 1995(Research Project Series, Oral History Project)

19 Sidney Gottlieb's deputy and the Chief of the CIA Records Center tried unsuccessfully to stop the destruction by Helms and Gottlieb, proof they were trying to conceal their wrongdoing.

20 Project Bluebird/Artichoke primary purpose was the study of special interrogation techniques-primarily hypnosis and truth serums and brainwashing. See CIS-1978-S421-l Project MKULTRA, The CIA's Program of Research in Behavioral Modification, Appendix A, pg. 66, Joint Hearing before the Select Committee on Intelligence and the Subcommittee on Health and Scientific Research of the Committee on Human Resources, United States Senate Ninety-Fifth Congress, First Session, August 3, 1977

21 Subproject 136 of MKULTRA CIA Mori ID#17395 ESP Research, 1961 and 1962, declassified documents from CIA

22 Kor, Eva Mozes. "Nazi Experiments as Viewed by a Survivor of Mengele's Experiments," as part of *When Medicine Went Mad, Bioethics and the Holocaust,* Edited by Arthur L. Caplan, Humana Press

Marks, John. *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate*, W. W. Norton & Company, 1979, 176

24 Taken from John Gittinger's testimony before Congress, August 3, 1977, "Project MKULTRA, The CIA's Program Of Research In Behavioral Modification" CIS-1978-S421-1, pg. 56

25 Declassified MKULTRA document CIA Mori ID 17436

26 Lasby, Clearance. Switzerland: Project Paperclip: German Scientists and the Cold War, *Saturday Review*, Dec. 11, 1971, Atheneum Press, 1971;

27 Simpson, Christopher. *Blowback,* Weidenfeld & Nicolson, 1988, 33

28 Ibid., 34

29 Ibid., 36-37

30 *Jackson Citizen Patriot*, Tuesday, March 14, 2000, "Sterling Heights man deported as Nazi", Compiled from the Associated Press

31 Bird, Kai. *The Chairman*, Simon & Schuster, 1992, 353

32 Mosley, Leonard. *Dulles*, Dial Press, 1978, 275

33 On 9/20/2000 the CIA filed an affidavit in U.S. District Court "acknowledging an intelligence relationship with German General Reinhard Gehlen that it has kept secret for 50 years." The CIA's acknowledgement of its dealings with Gehlen came in a response to an appeal of a Freedom of Information Act request by researcher Carl Oglesby, the National Archives said.

34 Bird op. cit., 242-243

[35]Chapter Two Bird op. cit.,, 302

[36] Ibid., 346

[37] Hersh, Burton. *The Old Boys*, Charles Scribner's Sons, Macmillan Publishing Co., 1992, 183

[38] Bar-Zohar, Michael. *The Avengers,* NY, Hawthorn, 1967, 126

[39] Simpson op. cit., 185

[40] Hersh op. cit., 182

[41] Hoffman, William. *David*, 1971 Lyle Stuart, Inc., 59

[42] Collier Peter & Horowitz, David. *The Rockefellers, An American Dynasty,* Halt Rinehart and Winston, New York, 1976, 236

[43] Ibid., 239

[44] DAIG-IN 21-75, Use of Volunteers in Chemical Agent Research by the Inspector General, Department of the Army, pg. 154. For contract numbers see 163-166, 215

[45] *Life in His Father's Shadow*, The Blade: Toledo, Ohio, February 15, 1998

[46] DSM-IV, section 300.12: "Dissociative amnesia"

[47] CIA Mori ID 140401

[48] Allen W. Dulles appointed as Deputy Director for Plans in January 1951, with CIA. He was responsible for supervising both OPC (Office of Policy Coordination) and OSO (Office of Special Operations). In August 1952, these two merged to became the DDP (Directorate of Plans) and Dulles became Deputy Director of the CIA in charge of clandestine collection and covert action. In February 1953, Dulles became Director of the CIA. In August 1951, project Bluebird was renamed Artichoke and included in-house experiments on special interrogation techniques-primarily hypnosis and truth serums. CIS-1978-S421-1 Project MKULTRA, The CIA's Program Of Research In Behavioral Modification pg. 68

[49] A Dr. Noe was named in a declassified document from Edgewood Arsenal, MD. Dr. Noe coauthored a publication for the chemical Corps in 1949 entitled "Some relationships of structure to biological

activity in the nitrogen mustards and related compounds." May be found in Row 3; File Cabinet #19, Drawer #2, Command Historical Office, CBDCOM, Edgewood Arsenal, MD on page 48 under MUSTARD-19. I am still waiting on an appeal of a FOIA request to obtain more information on Dr. Noe.

50 In 1960 he became Chief of the Research and Development Component, in 1962 he became Deputy Chief of Technical Services Division, and 1966-1973 Chief of TSD.

51 CIA Mori ID 17448 dated April 20, 1954, MKULTRA Subproject 5 in Minneapolis, Minnesota with Alden Sears, pg. 30. Trips to Minneapolis were oftentimes extended to cover Detroit, Michigan, see below info from CIA Mori ID 144765

52 A CIA declassified memo from May 5, 1955 states, "Post-hypnotic suggestions reiterated during several sessions of hypnosis have been known to endure for years. A skilled operator with a good subject can not only find out completely about a subject's past; he can cause the subject to re-enact a recruitment, training, briefing, etc. Perhaps less obvious is the possibility of using regression to build a new identity, and in some degree, a changed personality."

53 Hersha, Cheryl and Lynn with Griffis, Ph.D., Dale and Swartz, Ted. *Secret Weapons, Two Sisters' Terrifying True Story of Sex, Spies and Sabotage*, 52

54 CIA Mori ID 149566 dated November 21, 1951

55 CIA Mori ID 144765, Subject: Report of trip to Minneapolis, Minnesota and Detroit, Michigan, for Artichoke Purposes. The documents says,

15. "On 18 and 19 December 1952, the writer engaged in a series of discussions with (line deleted) Detroit, Michigan, concerning ARTICHOKE and the possible use of (several words deleted) in connection with ARTICHOKE experimentation and research. (Deleted) is a fully cleared consultant to this Agency.

16. In order to clarify and shorten explanations, some of the conversations with (deleted) are reduced to the question and answer form below:

Q: When we last talked (early summer 1952), you felt that deleted was an ideal place to carry out certain experimentation along lines of interest to us."

[56] Hersha op. cit., 40-41

[57] Scheflin and Opton op. cit., 149

[58] CIA Mori ID 140393 dated July 9, 1951

[59] Abel, Allen. Dr. Castaway, *Saturday Night Magazine* 10 February 2001

Because of the hypnotism, I did not remember at that time any of the experiments that Dr. Sidney Gottlieb had performed on me. This CIA document Mori ID 140394 dated February 25, 1952, seems to clarify that this was what they were aiming at.

“Q: How far do you think individuals could be controlled by hypnosis?

A: Post-hypnotics will last twenty years and will be very strong if re-enforced from time to time.”

61 Eva Mozes Kor, Nazi Experiments as “Viewed by a Survivor of Mengele’s Experiments” as part of *When Medicine Went Mad, Bioethics and the Holocaust,* edited by Arthur L. Caplan, Humana Press

62 This activity is outlined in Book I of the Church committee report, 388-389. (See Appendix A, 68-69).

63 CIS-1978-S421-1 Project MKULTRA, The CIA’s Program of Research in Behavioral Modification

64 Ibid., 7

65 Hersh, op. cit., 367, taken from an exchange of letters between John McCloy and Allen Dulles. See Mudd Library, Princeton University, March 16, 1950.

66 Containing Communism, *Encyclopedia Almanac*, 1970 (New York Times), 544.

67 Dulles Brothers, *New York Times*, April 29, 1966.

Bird op. cit., 362

69 Ibid., 364

70 Ibid., 369-371

71 Simpson op. cit., 93

72 Ibid., 47-49

73 Grose, Peter. *Gentleman Spy, The Life of Allen Dulles*, 1994, 295

74 Bird op. cit., 289

75 Ibid., 302-304

76 Ibid., 459

77 Ibid., 384, 411

78 Ibid., 710

79 Ibid., 434

80 Collier, Peter & Horowitz, David. *The Rockefellers: An American Dynasty*, Holt, Rinehart and Winston, 1976, 272-273

81 Loftus, John. *The Belarus Secret*, Paragon House, 1982, vii

82 Ibid., xi-xii

83 Ibid., 140

84 CIA Mori Id 17488, June 1958, pg. 30, Subproject 86

85 Scheflin, Alan W. and Opton Jr., Edward M. *The Mind Manipulators,* Paddington Press LTD, 1978, 145

86 Hersh op. cit., 179

87 *Final Report of the Senate Select Committee to Study Governmental Operations with respect to Intelligence Activities*, S. Rep. No. 94-755, 94th Cong., 2d Session. Book I, 1976, 385-86.

88 Taylor, Brice. *Starshine: One Woman's Valiant Escape from Mind Control*, 1995 USD$20.00 Brice Taylor Trust, PO Box 655, Landrum, SC 29356, USA

89 http://www.nexusmagazine.com//pegfile2.html, Nexus Magazine, Volume 4, #4 (June-July 1997). PO Box 30, Mapleton Old 4560 Australia. See Volume 4, #3 (April-May 1997) for the first half of the interview

90 Hersh op. cit., 366

91 Ibid., 368

92 "Jason and the "McNamara Fence" The most detailed public account of Jason's contribution to the Vietnam War is contained in the Pentagon Papers: the 1966 Jason summer study which gave birth to a new form of technological warfare, now known as the automated, or electronic battlefield.

93 Subcommittee on Constitutional Rights of the Committee on the Judiciary US Senate, (1976) Surveillance Technology Policy and Implications: An Analysis and Compendium of Materials, 1036.

94 Kevles*,* Daniel J. *The Physicists*, Alfred A. Knopf, Inc. 1971

95 Breggin*,* Peter. *Toxic Psychiatry*, St. Martin's Press, New York 1991, 190-201

96 Testimony given by John Gittinger on August 3, 1977 before the Ninety-Fifth Congress (CIS-1978-S421-1) pg. 59

97 Tyner, Arlene. Mind -Control Part 1: Canadian and US Survivors Seek Justice, *PROBE Magazine*, March-April, 2000

20 November 1945 Memorandum To: Brigadier General Wm. L. Mitchell, General Secretary for the International Military Tribunal. In response to request of the Tribunal that the defendant Rudolf Hess

be examined, the undersigned psychiatrists examined Rudolf Hess on November 15th and November 19th, 1945, in his cell in the Military Prison in Nuremberg. The following examinations were made: physical, neurological and psychological. Signed by Dr. D. Ewen Cameron, Professor of Psychiatry, McGill University; Col. Paul L. Schroeder, A US Neuropsychiatric Consultant; Dr. Jean Delay, Professor of Psychiatry at the Faculty of Medicine in Paris; Dr. Nolan D. C. Lewis, Professor Psychiatry, Columbia University

98 Turner, J. C. *Anatomy of a Public Interest* Case *Against the CIA*, http://www.radix.net/~jcturner/anat-1.html

99 Schrag*,* Peter. *Mind Control*, Pantheon Books, 1978

100 Ibid., 159

101 The U.S. Army also sponsored work on stress and sodium amytal, an anti-fear drug at the Allan Memorial Institute during this same time period, (pg. 262 of *In the Sleep Room*)

102 CIA Mori ID 17461

103 Ritter, Malcom. *Citizen Patriot*, February 12, 2001, The Associated Press

104 http://tis.eh.doe.gov/ohre/multimedia/photos/bnl/index.html

105 CIA Mori ID 190883

106 CIA Mori ID 17486, Subproject 84-29, 1950-1967

107 CIA Mori ID 17468

108 http://www.radix.net/~jcturner/anat-1.html

109 Other Mental Health Project Grants awarded to Dr. Cameron by the Department of National Health and Welfare were

Project #604-5-11, The Effect of Senescence on Resistance to Stress, $195,388, 50-57

Project #604-5-13, Research Studies on EEG and Electrophysiology, $60,353, 50-57

Project#604-5-14, Support for a Behavioral Laboratory, $17,875, 50-54

Project #604-5-76, A Study of the Effect of Nucleic Acid Upon Memory Impairment in the Aged, $18,000, 59-63

Collins op. cit., pg. 189, #604-5-432 A Study of Factors Which Promote or Retard Personality Change in Individuals Exposed to Prolonged Repetition of Verbal Signals, $57,750, 61-64

110 Application for Grant to Study the Effects Upon Human Behavior of the Repetition of Verbal Signals, January 21, 1957. Friends of McGill University, Inc., Box 533, Hempstead, New York, N.Y., Secretary, Mrs. Ernest Rossiter

111 Collins op. cit., 258

112 CIS-1978-S421-1, Pg. 56

113 http://www.radix.net/~jcturner/anat-1.html

114 In 1964 President Johnson had a Senior Advisory Group organized by McGeorge Bundy. They were also known as the "Wise Old Men," the "Usual Suspects," or the "WOMs." Some of the members were John McCloy, Dean Acheson, Averell Harriman, Cyrus Vance, George Ball, Henry Cabot Lodge, Douglas Dillon, Robert Murphy and several military elders. Taft op. cit., 231

115 Hersch, Seymour. *The Dark Side of Camelot*, Little Brown and Company, 1997, 186-191

116 Ibid., 194-195

117 Bucholtz, Chris. *Thought Control A Step Nearer*, Flight International, Lexis-Nexis, May 3, 1995

118 McConnell, James V. *Understanding Human Behavior*, 1977, Holt, Rinehart and Winston, 475

119 CIA Mori ID 17300, Some Psychoenergetic Devices by (deleted) RE Kirlian Photography Acupuncture, and Telekinesis.

120 CIA Mori ID 146195

121 Paranormal Phenomena—Briefing on a Net Assessment Study, P.T. Van Dyke and M. L. Juncosa, January 1973, A working note prepared for the Advanced Research Projects Agency.

122 Rifat, Turan. Nexus Magazine, Oct-Nov 1996, Remote Viewing, the ESP of Espionage

123 Dr. Krippner would later write the book *Human Possibilities: Mind Exploration in the U.S.S.R. and Eastern Europe*

124 CIA Mori ID 173512

125 CIA Mori ID 173694

126 Gris, Henry and Dick, William. *The New Soviet Psychic* Discoveries, Prentice-Hall, 1978, 273

127 CIA Mori ID 17461

128 CIA Mori ID 173513

129 Gris and Dick op. cit., 272

130 Ibid., 275

131 Russell, Christine. Are Computer Hookups to the Brain Next? The Ultimate in Technology Predicted, *Washington Star*. (1976, Feb. 23).

132 Dr. Shafica Karagulla worked as consultant psychiatrist in association with Dr. Penfield in 1952. A few years later, she did extensive research of patients' auras as seen by clairvoyants and coordinated these observations with medical diagnoses (see *Breakthrough to Creativity*, Los Angeles; DeVorss). Dr. Grad of McGill also did experiments that showed the healer Oskar Estabany speeding the healing of wounded mice with the laying on of hands. (*Handbook of PSI Discoveries*, pg. 216) I do not know how these were funded.

133 Corroborated by J. Turner in discovery for the law suit against the CIA by Canadian survivors, http://www.radix.net/~jcturner/anat-2.html

134 McConnell op. cit., 180. Also Project files listed in MNI Archives as Conditions of Attitude Change in Individuals D72-94-85-01-$34,250 and D77-94-85-01-$195,388

135 1932 was the same year that the Rockefeller Foundation gave an appropriation to the Kaiser Wilhelm Institute in Germany for brain research. This is the same institute that Josef Mengele would provide experimental materials from Auschwitz twins (see Chapter on Josef Mengele).

136 Penfield, Wilder. *The Difficult Art of Giving*, 1967

137 In 1992 before having any personal knowledge of MKULTRA, Dr. Ewen Cameron, or Wilder Penfield, I painted a picture of a Royal

Canadian Mounted Police Officer driving a buggy. I had no idea at the time what it meant, just that it was extremely important. I often drew and painted scenes from my abuse without knowing their meanings till such time as my alters revealed the information. In an affidavit presented to the lawyers for the Canadian survivors of Dr. Ewen Cameron's brainwashing experiments, Dr. Omond M. Solandt, Chairman of the Canadian Defense Research Board from 1947 through 1956, sheds light on my memories of the RCMP. He was prepared to testify that during the 1950's the United States Central Intelligence Agency had a resident representative at the United States Embassy in Ottawa who was publicly introduced as such. The CIA representative was liaison with the RCMP. The RCMP made formal information exchanges with the CIA, and the CIA and Canada exchanged all research information of mutual interest working in Canada, including the CIA.

138 Penfield op. cit., 119

139 Collins op. cit., pg. 57 from Robert CIA Morison's Rockefeller Foundation diary on April 10, 1954

140 Artichoke documents March 21, 1955, May 19, 1955, and April 1955

141 Lilly, M.D, John C. *Man and Dolphin*, Doubleday & Company, Inc., 1961, 68

142 Ibid., 293

143 Dr. Lilly was not the only one experimenting with this technique. In 1955, he and Dr. J. Roe, V. Mountcastle, and L. Kruger, Johns Hopkins Medical School; Drs. C. Woolsey and J. Hind, University of Wisconsin; Dr. Karl Pribram, Institute of Living, Hartford Conn.; Dr. Leonard Malis, Mt. Sinai Hospital, New York City experimented on Dolphins at Marineland.

144 Lewis, H. Jefferson. *Something Hidden, A Biography of Wilder Penfield*, Webcom Limited in Canada, 1951, 270-272

145 Ibid., 274, Symposium in Montreal entitled "Mankind in the Atomic Age"

146 Ibid., 256

147 Ibid., 141

148 Scheflin and Opton, op. cit., 268 and Leksell, Lars. *Stereotaxic and Radio Surgery, An Operative System*, 1971

149 Squire, Larry R. *Memory and Brain*, ISBN-0-19-504208-5, Chapter 6-The Penfield Studies

150 In his autobiography *The Scientist*, John C. Lilly records a conversation he had with the director of the National Institute of Mental Health in 1953. The director asked Lilly to brief the CIA, FBI, NSA, and the various military intelligence services on his work using electrodes to stimulate directly the pleasure and pain centers of the brain. Lilly said it was a very dangerous area and he was reluctant to do the briefing. He also said, "Dr. Antoine Remond, using our techniques in Paris, has demonstrated that this method of stimulation of the brain can be applied to the human without the help of the neurosurgeon; he is doing it in his office in Paris without neurosurgical supervision. This means that anybody with the proper apparatus can carry this out on a person covertly, with no external signs that electrodes have been used on that person. I feel that if this techniques got into the hands of a secret agency, they would have total control over a human being and be able to change his beliefs extremely quickly, leaving little evidence of what they had done." Pg. 91 Ten days later he gave the briefing

151 Ibid., 216

152 Jeffrey, Francis and Lilly, M.D, John C. *John Lilly, So Far*, Jeremy P. Tarcher, Inc., 1990, 60

153 Scheflin and Opton, op. cit., 508

154 Sheila Ostrander and Lynn Schroeder, *Handbook of PSI Discoveries*, Berkley Publishing Corp, 1974, 195

155 Ibid., 291

156 Schnabel, Jim. *TINKER, TAILOR, SOLDIER*, *The Independent* (London) August 27, 1995

157 Major-General Albert N. Stubblebine III head of INSCOM (the Army's Intelligence and Security Command) made frequent trips to the Monroe Institute. It was a privately owned center for investigation into the paranormal near Charlottesville, Virginia. They used an audio process known as "hemi-sync" to help induce deep altered states, which led in some cases to out-of-body experiences.

158 Durham, Perceptions of a Paranormal Subject, The Journal of Parapsychology, June 1997

159 Over the course of 17 years, the program was also known as Centerlane and Sunstreak; later becoming Stargate under the Defense Intelligence Agency. Public exposure of the program was disclosed as a result of the American Institutes for Research report dated September 29, 1995, which was delivered unclassified to the U.S. Congress in November 1995. This report was compiled at the request of the CIA, which had the task of evaluating the program prior to assuming management authority of the program from the Defense Intelligence Agency.

160 Interview with Mike Siegel during the radio program, Coast to Coast on July 19, 2000, Cooper discusses his book *A Leap of Faith: An Astronaut's Journey into the Unknown*

161 Sponsored by the Center for Abuse Recovery & Empowerment, The Psychiatric Institute of Washington, D.C., June 25, 1992, Alexandria, Virginia

162 *New York Times*: March 23, 2001, National News Briefs; Sirhan Sirhan Is Denied Parole for the 11th Time, (AP) Sirhan Sirhan, the convicted assassin of Senator Robert F. Kennedy, was denied parole today, and his lawyer set forth the theory that Mr. Sirhan had been "hypnotically programmed" to kill Kennedy. After an hour-long hearing at Corcoran State Prison, the three-member parole panel found Mr. Sirhan, 57, unsuitable for release because he refused to take responsibility.

163 Hersha, Griffis and Swartz op. cit., 88

Caplan op. cit., 278

165 Ibid., 293

166 Ashman, op. cit., 122-123

167 The eggs he harvested could be explained by another development. It was discovered that a whole nucleus containing an entire set of chromosomes could be taken from a cell, and injected into a fertilized egg whose own nucleus has been removed. The division of the egg brings about the division of the nucleus, and the descendant nuclei can, in turn, be injected into eggs. After several such transfers, the nuclei may be capable of directing the development of the eggs into complete new organisms genetically identical to the organism from which the original nucleus was taken. This cloning technique is in theory capable of producing large numbers of genetically identical individuals.

168 Nature Genetics report published in the June 1, 1999, issue of the *Journal*

169 Aziz, Phillip. *Doctors of Death*, Book 2, Ferni Publishers, Geneva 1976, 243

170 Posner, Gerald and Ware, John. *Mengele: The Complete Story*, McGraw Hill, 1986

171 Aarons, Mark and Loftus, John. *Unholy Trinity*, St. Martins Press, 1991. Loftus cites the document as appearing in the Appendix of German chemical warfare officers. An asterisk denotes that Mengele was in custody at the time of the British CIOS report dated 1945, 272 and 341.

172 Ibid., 272, Loftus cites information taken from *Mengele: The complete Story*, 66-9, 70

173 Posner op. cit., 84

174 Blum op. cit., 115

175 Aarons and Loftus, op cit., 206. We know that in June 1947 the US and British Governments had issued a top secret document, FAN 757 agreeing that all Nazi screening would be done by a Joint Review Committee. The US Political Adviser in Leghorn, Italy wrote

to the State Department discussing the screening of Nazi's. "Screeners will notify Vatican names and particulars of unacceptables as they appear. It seems possible that this arrangement may result in out shipment to Argentina of many individuals who may screen Black or Grey." Grey refers to Nazi collaborators, Black refers to Nazi war criminals.

176 Hersh, Burton. *The Old Boys, The American Elite and the Origins of the CIA,* 1992, Charles Scribner's Sons, Macmillan Publishing Company

177 Aarons and Loftus, op cit., 234, 250. DDU had been handling payment to Gehlen's fugitives. Barbie was running underground SS networks for Gehlen.

178 Ibid., 260

179 Ibid., 250

180 Simpson, op. cit., 121

181 Ibid., 100-101, 112, 115

182 Arthur E. Rowse, *Gladio: The Secret U.S. War to Subvert Italian Democracy*

183 Ibid., 109

184 Hersh, *The Old Boys* op. cit., 442

185 Ibid., 444

186 Aarons and Loftus, op cit., 269

187 Loftus, op. cit., 88-89

188 Ibid., 117

189 Constantine, op. cit., 85

190 Lee, Martin A., The CIA's worst-kept secret, Newly declassified files confirm United States collaboration with Nazis.

191 Blum, op. cit., 87-91

192 Ibid., 111

193 Secretary Dulles also worked with Alger Hiss at the Carnegie Endowment in 1946. Jeff Broadwater, "Eisenhower and the anti-Communist Crusade, 113, 115

194 Hersh op. cit., 159

195 Blum op. cit., 114

196 Hersh, Seymour. *The Dark Side of Camelot*, Little, Brown and Company, N.Y., 158

197 Ibid., 159-160

198 Picture of Josef Mengele taken in 1956 in Buenos Aires from his passport

199 Blum op. cit., 115

200 http://www.cia.gov/csi/studies/97unclass/naziwar.html

201 Ibid., 86-133

202 Hersh op. cit., 507

203 Hersh op. cit., 507

204 Bellant, Russ. September 1988, *Washington Jewish Week*, Old Nazis, the New Right, and the Republican Party

205 Listed as contracts to which $1,000,000 was disbursed over five years in effect in 1953 were the following:

Illegible Memorial Institute (Dr. Williams), Brooklyn Polytechnic Institute (Dr. Gregor), Columbia University (Dr. Slenez), B.F. Goodrich Co. (Dr. Stevens), Harvard University (Dr. Watts), Indiana University (Drs. Thacher, Robinson), John Hopkins University (Drs. Illegible, Groh, Richter)

Lovelace Foundation (Dr. Reif) – (A note about Dr. Lovelace, Dr. William Randolf Lovelace II, former commander of the U.S. Air Force Aero Medical Laboratory at Wright-Patterson Air Force Base. In 1951 Lovelace won a $25,000 contract with the Atomic Energy Commission for a “blast and shock biology” research program in which animals were killed in atomic weapons tests. Lovelace’s radiation experiments were conducted at Kirtland Air Force Base and Los Alamos in New Mexico. In 1954 Dr. Ulrich Luft was chosen to chair the Department of Physiology. He had worked at the U.S. Air Force’s School of Aviation Medicine at Randolph Field in San Antonio, Texas, where he had held the position of Associate Professor of Physiology since 1947. Prior to his being brought to the U.S. under Project Paperclip, Dr. Luft served as the Third Reich’s chief of Aviation Physiology at the Berlin Aeromedical Research Institute from 1942-1945 under Dr. Hubertus Strughold.

> Documents captured after the war tell of a top-secret meeting held in Nuremberg in Oct. 1942 at which Dr. Luft and other high-level Nazis discussed the results of their criminal experiments. In one experiment, designed to study the "effects of freezing on human beings," the subjects were reportedly immersed in freezing water with thermometers in their orifices. "The subjects howl frightfully when they freeze," one scientist commented.

http://www.new-west-research.org/Animal_Research/)

Massachusetts General Hospital (Dr. Frazier), Medical College of South Carolina (Dr. Illegible), Medical College of Virginia (Dr. Hoag), National Opinion Research Counter (Dr. Marks), Southern Research Institute (Drs. Montgomery, Skipper), Tufts College (Dr. Roeder or Boeder), University of Colorado, Medical School (Dr. Holmes), University of Delaware (Dr. Clark), University of Florida (Dr. Lauter), University of Illinois (Drs. Gordon, Prosset), University of Maryland (Dr. Greenbill, Lindenberg), University of Michigan (Dr. Seevers), University of Pennsylvania (Drs. Betweiler, Illigible), University of Pittsburgh (Drs. Bucksborn, Hill), University of Utah (Dr. Jager), University of Virginia (Dr. Illegible), University of Wisconsin (Dr. Illegible), New York Psychiatric Institute (Dr. Hoch)

206 Loftus op. cit., 116-117

207 Posner and Ware, op. cit.

208 His known address on December 30, 1959 in Buenos Aires was No. 968 Vertiz Street, Olivo F.C.N.G.M.B. where he had been living under his own name. He had already returned to Paraguay and adopted Paraguayan nationality on November 27, 1959, but then had returned to Buenos Aires.

209 Posner op. cit., 102

210 Katherine Sullivan is Kathy. She is founder of PARC-VRAMC which is a non-profit organization set up to educate the public about sadistic abuse, ritualized torture, and invasive non-consensual experimentation. The web address is http://www.parc-vramc.tierranet.com/. Her book detailing some of her experiences is *MK*, and may be ordered at the following address. K. Sullivan (PO Box 1328, Soddy Daisy, TN 37384), USA, 1998 (USD$18.00)

211 Ashman op. cit., 246

212 Littman, Sol. “Aftermath”-from *War Criminal on Trial-Rauca of Kaunas*, Excerpted in part

213 Blumenthal, Ralph, The New York Times, May 11, 1985, Late City Final Edition, *Three Nations Joining To Hunt Mengele*

214 ibid

215 According to John Loftus, Justice Dept. lawyer, Allen Dulles used Red Cross passports to smuggle Barbie and other embarrassing Nazis out of Europe, see pg. xvii of *The Belarus Secret*.

216 Ashman, op. cit., 120

217 Lagnado and Dekel, op. cit., 159-251

218 Blumenthal, Ralph, op. cit.

219 Jackson Citizen Patriot, Thursday, May 4, 2000, *Argentine leader apologizes for sheltering Nazis*, Buenos, Aires, Argentina (AP)

220 Altman Jr., Joseph. Jackson Citizen Patriot, Thursday April 20, 2000. *Sterling Heights Man was Nazi Guard, Authorities Say*, The Associated Press

221 The report is entitled *U.S. and Allied Wartime and Postwar Relations and Negotiations with Argentina, Portugal, Spain, Sweden, and Turkey on Looted Gold and German External Assets and U.S. Concerns About the Fate of the Wartime Ustasha Treasury*.

222 January 13, 1995, RE: Ethics Oral History Project--Preliminary Findings, http://www.gwu.edu/~nsarchiv/radiation/dir/mstreet/commeet/meet1

Welsome, Eileen. *The Plutonium Files, America's Secret Medical Experiments in the Cold War*, Dial Press, New York, 327

224 Much of the Data and Statistics otherwise not noted derived from Involuntary Human Scientific Experimentation prepared by Morton Sklar, Director, World Organization Against Torture USA, http://www.woatusa.org/projects/CATreport/science.htm

225 US Government, Interagency Working Group on Human Radiation Experiments, "Building Public Trust: Actions to Respond to the Report of the Advisory Committee on Human Radiation Experiments " (DOE/EH-0532), March 1997

226 Commission on Life Sciences *Review of the Hanford Thyroid Disease Study Draft Final Report (2000)*, National Academy Press, http://books.nap.edu/books/

227 DOE_DATE- 02/09/1995, DOE_SITE- HUMAN RADIATION EXPERIMENTS: The Department of Energy Roadmap to the Story and the Records, DOE_DOC_TYPE- HUMAN_RADIATION_EXPERIMENTS (DOE/EH-0445), DOE_SECTION- DOE Predecessor Agencies and Human Radiation Experiments: A Headquarters Overview

228 Welsome op. cit., 247

229 Excerpts from US Department of Energy Advisory Committee on Human Radiation Experiments (1996). Final Report. Chapter 10. Atomic Veterans: Human Experimentation in Connection with Bomb Tests, http://nattie.eh.doe.gov/systems/hrad/chap10.html

230 Final Report on the Records Search for Human Radiation Experiments at the US Army Chemical and Biological Defense Command

231 Gallagher, Carole. *American Ground Zero: The Secret Nuclear War*, 1993

232 History Channel, January 15, 2001, History Undercover: Declassified: Human Experimentation

233 Welsome, op. cit., 268

234 Ibid., 489

235 Ibid., 442

236 Ibid., 326-327

237 Ibid., 449

238 Radium Experiment Assessment Project (REAP)-172 Old Orchard Way, Warren, VT 05674. REAP is a project of the Center for Atomic Radiation Studies, Inc. http://www0.delphi.com/carsreap/

239 Welsome op. cit., 466

240 Gentilcore, Colleen. Herald Standard, August 11, 1996 *Man Sues Government Over Radiation Experiments* Uniontown Pennsylvania

241 Sidney Gottlieb died in March 1999 and preceded Karen in death. Judge DiCarlo died on the morning of April 27, 1999 while presiding over an appeal made by Plaintiff-Appellant Gloria Kronisch, the executrix for the estate of Stanley Glickman. Mr. Glickman originally filed a complaint in 1983 against the United States; Richard Helms, former Director of the Central Intelligence Agency ("CIA"); and Dr. Sidney Gottlieb claiming he was surreptitiously administered LSD· The district court initially granted summary judgment in favor of all defendants, but a panel of this Court vacated and remanded part of that decision. That remanded decision was affirmed by Judge Kimba Wood, who presided over the remaining portions of the trial; including closing summations, the instruction of the jury, and the rendering of the verdict. Sidney's untimely death meant he could not be cross-examined.

242 Welsome op. cit., 220-221

243 The Argonne Cancer Research Hospital was operated by the University of Chicago, which was funded by the U.S. Atomic Energy Commission. References: Okita, G.T., E.J. Plotz, and M.E. Davis. "Placental Transfer of Radioactive Digitoxin in Pregnant Women and its Fetal Distribution." Semiannual Reports to the U.S. Atomic Energy Commission, Vol. 1, Parts 1 6, 1954 to 1956. Chicago: Argonne Cancer Research Hospital, pp. 26 30. The University of Chicago, Office of Legal Counsel, Semiannual Reports of the Argonne Cancer Research Hospital

244 This study was supported by a grant from the U.S. Atomic Energy Commission and previously described in #4 on the original list of 48 experiments released by DOE in June 1994), References:

Middlesworth, L.Van. “Radioactive Iodide Uptake of Normal Newborn Infants.” *AMA American Journal of Diseases of Children*, Vol. 88, October 1954, 439-442.

245 Previously described in #4 on original 48 experiments released by DOE in June 1994), References: Martmer, E.E., K.E. Corrigan, H.P. Charbeneau, and A. Sosin. “A Study of the Uptake of Iodine (I-131) by the Thyroid of Premature Infants.” *AMA American Journal of Diseases of Children*, Vol. 17, 1955, 503-509.

246 This study was supported by the U.S. Atomic Energy Commission. Described in #40 on the original list of forty-eight experiments released by DOE in June 1994 References Lushbaugh, C.C. and D.B. Hale. “Clinical Applications of Whole body Counting: A Clinical Comparison of the Absorbability of Ferrous versus Ferric Salts in Normal Human Subjects.” Biological and Medical Research Group of the Health Division Semiannual Report July 1961 June 1962. Los Alamos: Los Alamos Scientific Laboratory, LAMS 2780, 1962, pp. 337-347.

247 Studied jointly by the Veterans Administration Hospital, Omaha, NB, and the Department of Radiology, University of Nebraska, College of Medicine

248 The U.S. Atomic Energy Commission, and the American Cancer Society supported this study and was previously described in #4 on original 48 experiments released by DOE in June 1994. References: Morrison, R.T., J.A. Birkbeck, T.C. Evans, and J.I. Routh. “Radioiodine Uptake Studies Newborn Infants.” *Journal of Nuclear Medicine*. Vol. 4, 1963, pp.162-166.

249The U.S. Atomic Energy Commission supported this research as described in #19 on the original list of 48 experiments released by DOE in June 1994, *Study of the Retention and Excretion of Iodine-131*, References: Lushbaugh, C.C., D.B. Hale, and C.R. Richmond. “Clinical Applications of Whole Body Scintillometry. IV. Turnover Rate of Protein-Bound Iodide.” Biological and Medical Research Group of the Health Division Semiannual Report January June 1960. Los Alamos: Los Alamos Scientific Laboratory, LAMS 2455, 1960, pp. 364-371.

250 The research was performed under a contract with the U.S. Atomic Energy Commission. References: Cuddihy, R.G. “Hazard to

Man from I-131 in the Environment." *Health Physics*. Vol. 12, 1966, pp. 1,021-1,025.

251 Excerpts from US Department of Energy Advisory Committee on Human Radiation Experiments (1996). Final Report. http://nattie.eh.doe.gov/systems/hrad/chap12.html

252 Excerpts from US Department of Energy Advisory Committee on Human Radiation Experiments (1996). Final Report. http://nattie.eh.doe.gov/systems/hrad/chap9.html

253 Gary Lee, "The Lifelong Harm to Radiation's Human Guinea Pigs," *Washington Post*, National Weekly Edition, November 28, 1944, 34

254Excerpts from US Department of Energy Advisory Committee on Human Radiation Experiments (1996). Final Report chap11

255 These experiments were performed under contract with the U.S. Atomic Energy Commission. References: Gamertsfelder, C.C. "*Plans and Hazard Analysis for the First Hanford I-131 Field Release Test*." Richland, WA: Hanford Atomic Products Operation, Physics and Instruments Laboratory, HW 78312, July 19, 1963. Washington State University Tri-Cities Campus, PNL, DOE Richland Public Reading Room, I-131, Open Shelving. A Handwritten Monthly Report. J.K. Soldat to R.F. Foster. July 1963. Washington State University Tri-Cities Campus, PNL, DOE Richland Public Reading Room, I-131, Open Shelving, PNL 9369 DEL. Monthly Report. Senior Engineer to R.F. Foster. August 23, 1963. Washington State University Tri-Cities Campus, PNL, DOE Richland Public Reading Room, I-131, Open Shelving, PNL 9370.

256 This research was supported by the U.S. Atomic Energy Commission and by a grant from the National Cancer Institute.

References: Meyer L.M., L.M. Schiffer, D.A. White, and E.P. Cronkite. "The Plasma Disappearance of Radioactive Cyanocobalamin: Effect of Prior Administration of Vitamin B12 Analogues." British Journal of Hematology. Vol. 11, No. 3, May 1965, pp. 370 379. Monthly Highlight Report of the Oak Ridge Institute of Nuclear Studies, Medical Division. December 1962. NARA Atlanta Archives, RG 326 68A1096, OR Research Division, Organization and Management 5, Box 400, Folder Organization and Management 8, Reports ORINS

257 Jackson Citizen Patriot, Tuesday, May 9, 2000, AP, Honolulu, “Marshall Islanders get $341 million for nuke-test hardships”

258 The guidelines for the release of information of records through the FOIA states: “In processing a request, the Agency shall decline to confirm or deny the existence or nonexistence of any responsive records whenever the fact of their existence or nonexistence is itself classified under Executive Order 12958 or revealing of intelligence sources and methods protected pursuant to section 103(c)(5) of the National Security Act of 1947. In such circumstances, the Agency, in the form of a final written response, shall so inform the requester and advise of his or her right to an administrative appeal.” My FOIA for personal information is in appeal with the Agency Release Panel of the CIA. It has been over two years since my original request for information. I was told there were 315 appeals before mine, and no way of knowing when my appeal would be heard.

259**Biological and Chemical Experiments**

Material not otherwise noted is from a government press release on mustard gas which can be found at http://www.va.gov/pressrel/99mustd.htm

A source (The Rats BBS-Vet Link #72) that should be consulted for extensive material on this subject is http://personalpages.tds.net/~kknowlto/. It is a site committed to the military personnel who participated in the US Army's atmospheric testing of CBR warfare agents, striving to aid veterans exposed to dangerous substances without their full knowledge of the consequences or informed consent.

260 http://www.rense.com/politics5/hist.htm

261 http://home.earthlink.net/~bkonop/GermIncidents2.html

262 Veterans at Risk: The Health Effects of Mustard Gas and Lewisite, Pechura, C.M. & Rall, D.P. (Eds.) Institute of Medicine, National Academy Press, Washington, DC, 1993, pgs. 3-4, 6-8, 50-52, 65, 224-226

263 Pugliese, David. The Ottawa Citizen 22 April 2001, PANAMA - *Allies WWII Tested Chemical Weapons*

264 *Federal Register*, "Claims Based on Chronic Effects of Exposure to Vesicant Agents," 41,497-42,500 (August 18, 1994)

265HistoryofChemical and Biological Warfare: An American Perspective

266 Aug 1946 Name changed from Chemical Warfare Center to Army Chemical Center. Jan 1963 Name changed from Army Chemical Center to Edgewood Arsenal. July 1971 Edgewood Arsenal discontinued as a separate installation and designated Edgewood Area, Aberdeen Proving Ground.

267 US Army Chemical Corps, Summary of Major Events and Problems, FY58. Army Chemical Center, Md.: US Army Chemical Center Historical Center; Mar 1959: pg. 100

268 Ibid., 129-130

269 Testimony of Dr. D. A. Osguthorpe, veterinarian and consultant to Utah State Department of Agriculture, hearing before the

Subcommittee on Conservation and Natural Resources, Committee on Government Operations, U.S. House of Representatives, "Environmental Dangers of Open-Air Testing of Lethal Chemicals," May 20-21, 1969, 63-66.

270 Ibid., 64-65

271 DAIG-IN 21-75, Use of Volunteers in Chemical Agent Research, by the Inspector General Department of the Army, March 1975

272 US Army Chemical Corps, Summary of Major Events and Problems, FY57. Army Chemical Center, Md.: US Army Chemical Center Historical Center; Oct 1957:

273 Scheflin, op. cit., 172

274 DAIG-In 21-75, report on Use of Volunteers in Chemical Agent Research by the Inspector General, Department of the Army, 1975, pg 156

275 A declassified document, dated November 2, 1977 was sent to the CIA's Office of Legal Council. It recounts the claim that the wife of an employee of the Inspector General's Office had previously been married from 1955 until 1960 to a CIA employee. "In the summer of 1956, she accompanied her husband to the farm of her husband's supervisor for dinner, drinks and wine. She believes her husband's supervisor worked for Dr. Gottlieb who was Chief of the Technical Service Staff Chemical Division and heavily involved in MKULTRA activities. Her next recollection is receiving electric shock treatments at George Washington University Hospital for some time, followed by a convalescent period of several weeks at home. She then recalls being referred by her husband's supervisor to a friend of the supervisor's at the "Boston Psychiatric Hospital." She and her husband, line deleted, went to Boston where she entered that Hospital. Both her husband and his supervisor visited her there and she recalls a strange walk out of doors with the latter. She remembers taking various tests at the Hospital." It sounds very much like this poor woman was given a cocktail laced with LSD or some other substance. The document goes on to say that the Assistant General Counsel had been able to confirm from Agency records that the woman's husband was in fact employed by the Agency and he worked under Dr. Gottlieb. The document goes on to say, "For your information, the deleted was involved in six

subprojects of Project MKULTRA from 1952 until 1961, all of which appear to have involved testing of LSD and other substances on human subjects."

276 http://www.gwu.edu/~nsarchiv/radiation/dir/mstreet/commeet/meet1 Staff memorandum or other working document prepared for the members of the Advisory Committee on Human Radiation Experiments

277 Ibid., 152-166

278 CIA Mori ID 17755 dated 1/1/57.

279 DAIG-IN 21-75 pg. 147

280 Summary of testimony, Lloyd B. Gamble, LSD test subject, hearing before the Subcommittee on Administrative Law and Governmental Relations, Committee on the Judiciary, U.S. House of Representatives, "Government-Sponsored Tests on Humans and Possible Compensation for People Harmed in the Tests," February 2, 1994.

281 Ibid.

282 Honoré, Carl. "Norway, Children Of Nazis", September 11, 2000, *National Post*, OSLO

283 Piller, C. & Yamamoto, K.R. *Gene Wars, Military Control Over the New Genetic Technologies*, Beech Tree Books, William Morrow, New York, 1988, 44-45, 53.

284USAMRIID's MEDICAL MANAGEMENT OF BIOLOGICAL CASUALTIES HANDBOOK, Fourth Edition February 2001

285US Army Chemical Corps. Summary of Major Events and Problems, FY1961–62. Army Chemical Center, Md.: US

286Smart JK. History of Chemical and Biological Warfare Fact Sheets. Aberdeen Proving Ground, Md.: US Army Chemical and Biological Defense Command; 1996. Special Study 50. Not cleared for public release. Pg. 131

287Declassified document Department of Defense, d2682

288Ibid., 55

289 US Army Chemical Corps. Summary of Major Events and

Problems, FY58. Army Chemical Center, Md.: US Army Chemical Center Historical Center; Mar 1959

290Toxilogical Assessment of the Army's Zinc Cadmium Sulfide Dispersion Tests, available from the National Academy Press at 1-800-624-6242

291*Journal of Industrial Hygiene*, May 1932

292*Atmospheric Environment*, vol. 7

293 Cole, Leonard A. *Clouds of Secrecy: The Army's Germ Warfare Tests over Populated Areas,* Rowman & Littlefield, Publishers, 1988

294 **Davidson, Lee, Washington Correspondent, Secrets at Sea: Cloud of Secrecy Lifting on Dugway Navy's Tests of Germ and Chemical Agents in the Pacific During Vietnam War, Sunday, October 22, 1995**

295 The Navy Liberty Ship Sailor

296US Army Chemical Corps. Summary of Major Events and Problems, FY56. Army Chemical Center, Md.: US Army Chemical Center Historical Center; Nov 1956

297Department of the Army. US Army Activity in the US Biological Warfare Programs. Washington, DC: HQ, DA; 1977. Draft.

298 See Use of Volunteers in Chemical Agent Research, DAIG-IN 21-75 for complete details of projects.

[299] http://www.raven1.net/declarat.htm

Index

A

Aberdeen Proving Ground, American Institute for Research,
49,78, 132, 175, 183, 191, 230, 180, 197, 221
232, 236 Angleton, Jesus James, 72
Abramson, Dr. Harold, 22, 49, Arctic Aeromedical Laboratory,
70 151
Abreaction, xviii, 48 ARPA, 40, 57
ACHES, xx, 144, 145 Argonne Cancer Research
ACHRE, 127, 139, 141, 211, Hospital, 149, 228
212 Assassination kit, 55
Adirondack Mountains, 81 Avon Park, xv, 188
Allan Memorial Institute, 46, 217
Citizens Call, 145
B Clinton School, 193
Columbia University, 217, 224
B. F. Goodrich Co., 224 Cone, Bill, 63
Baldwin, Dr. Maitland, 61 Cornell University, 45, 150, 197
Barbie, Klaus, 8, 74, 75, 92, 96, Council on Foreign Relations, 32
223, 226
Baylor University, 140, 181, 197 **D**
Bekhtereva Brain Institute, 58,
59 DARPA, Defense Advanced
bilocation, 66 Research Project, 50
Blauer, Harold, 10, 79, 179 DDU, Document Disposal Unit,
Bloodstone, 72, 73 72, 223
Bolivia, 8, 75, 92, 96 Dengue fever, xv
Boston Psychiatric Hospital, Derma-Optics, 57
180, 231 Deseret Test Center in Utah,
brain concussion, 29 193-194
Brainwashing, xvi, 46, 47, 53, Desert Rock, 135, 137

54, 62, 63, 70, 82, 83, 132, 184, Disassociation, 22
212, 220 Disassociative states, xvii, xviii
Brookhaven National Donovan, William, 4, 32, 33
Laboratory, 167 Dr. Black, viii, 10, 20, 21, 49,
Brooklyn Polytechnic Institute, 69, 70, 74, 84-90
79, 224 Dr. Green, 69
Brooks Air Force Base, xi Dr. Gregor, 79, 93
Dr. Noe, 79, 214
C Dr. Swartz, 69
Dr. White, 69
Cameron, Dr. D. Ewen, 46-54, Draganovic, Krunoslav, 8, 74
58, 69, 217, 218, 220, Dugway Proving Ground, 172,
Camp David, 82 176, 184, 192, 194, 233
Camp McCoy, 138 Dulles, Allen, xvi, 4, 9, 27-30,
Camp Sibert, Ala, 172 32-34, 38, 39, 46, 72-74, 77,
Camp Stoneman, 138 108, 110, 213-215, 226
Chicago Lying-in Hospital, 149 Dulles, John Foster, 9, 30, 76,
224
Child pornography, 12, 67
Church, Frank, 38, 215 **E**
CIC
Counter-Intel. Corps, 8, 72, 74, 75, 97 Edgewood Arsenal, xii, 10, 49
79, 172, 176, 177, 179, 181, 183, Hanford,
184, 214, 233 156, 159-161, 163,
Eichmann, Adolf, 77, 83, 91 165, 229
ESP, xvii, 20, 58, 59, 68, 212, Harlem City Hospital, 167
219 Harper Hospital, 150
Estabrooks, George, 49 Harriet Lane Home for Invalid
Eugenics, 9, 76 Children, 144
extrasensory perception. Harvard University, 197, 224
See ESP. Hebb, Dr. Donald, 59-61
Heller, Dr., 155-156
F Helms, Richard xvi 39, 105, 124,

212, 227
Fernald School, xiii, 211 Hess, Rudolf, 46, 31, 217
flashblindness, xii, 135-137 Hinkle, Lawrence, 49
Ford Foundation, 33 Hoch, Dr. 79, 227
Fort Benning, GA, 184 Holmesburg State Prison, 177,
Fort Bragg, NC, 184 180, 198, 201
Fort Detrick, 29, 187-189 Human Ecology Society, 1, 2,
Fort Drum, 189 46, 49, 53
Fort Holabird, 184 human guinea pigs, xiii-xv, xix,
Fort Hunt, 72 35, 84, 101, 102, 132, 144, 145,
Fort Leavenworth, 172 172, 185, 195, 229
Fort McClellan, 79, 177, 184 Human Radiation Experiments,
Fort Terry, 188 viii, ix, xv, xx, 69, 126-128,
Frei, Eduardo, 33, 59 139, 140, 168, 171, 211, 224, 226

G I

Gehlen, General Reinhard, 4, 72, Indiana University, 167, 180, 198
77, 213, 223 Institute for Advanced Study, 33
Gittinger, John, 1, 53, 212, 217 integration, 43, 48
Goering, Hermann, 31, 75, 76 interrogation techniques, xvi, 49,
Gottlieb, Dr. Sidney, 18, 19, 22, 51, 53, 71, 118-120, 183, 212-13
38, 54, 55, 62, 68, 72-74, 92, 94, Ionia State Prison, 1
Great Lakes Naval Training Iron Guard, 64-67
Center, 173

J
H
Joint Chiefs of Staff,
Hammond, Dr. Corydon, 67 2, 3

Jackson, C. D., 33, 34 Medical College of Virginia, 225
Jason’s, 40, 41, 216 Mengele, Josef, xix, 8-10, 21,
JIOA, Joint Intelligence 26, 49, 50, 69-72, 74, 75, 77-83,
Objective Agency, 3, 86, 90-97, 99, 219, 223
Johns Hopkins, 224 Mind control, xv-xvii, 10, 27, 28,
37, 38, 46, 47, 65-67, 92, 93, 144,
K 145
Mitchell, John, 39
Kaiser Wilhelm Institute, 9, 22, Mittelwerk, 97
70, 71 Montreal Neurological Institute,
Kallmann, Dr. Franz, 9 MNI, 59, 61
Kennan, George, 32 Mount Hood, 93
Kety, Seymour, 49
Kirkpatrick, Lyman, 38, 123 **N**
Kissinger, Henry, 33, 39, 40, 74
Korry, Edward, 39, 40 National Cancer Institute, 133,
Kulagina, Nina, 50, 56 229
National Committee for Free
L Europe, 72
National Committee for
Lilly, Dr. John, 61, 62, 64, 65, Radiation Victims, 145, 169
221, 222 National Institute of Health, 61,
Long Island Jewish Hospital, 169 145
Lovelace Foundation, 224 National Opinion Research, 2275
Los Alamos 128, 135, 150, 224 Naval Research Lab in
Washington, D.C., 173
M Neverland, 19
New Jersey Association of
Malaxa, Nicolae, 75-78 Atomic Veterans, 138
Manchurian Candidate, xvii, 47, 68 New York State Psychiatric
Mao Tse-tung, 54 Institute, 9, 10, 179, 199
Marshall Islands, 5, 131, 168 New York University, xiv, 199
Massachusetts General Hospital, 225 Nixon, Richard, 8, 34, 38-40, 74

McCloy, John, 4, 30-33, 40, 75-77, 171, 194
74, 215, 218 North American Aviation, 180,
McCone, John, 40 199
McGill University, 46, 50, 52, Nuclear Claims Trust Fund, 168
59, 60, 217-219
Medical College of South **O**
Carolina, 225
Oak Ridge Institute of Nuclear Plowshare Program, 129
Studies, 140, 167, 229 Point Lay, 153
ODESSA, 92 Population Council, 9, 76
Office of Policy Coordination, Positron Emitter, 51
OPC, 32, 71-74, 78, 213 President Eisenhower, 30, 33
Office of Research and 34, 38, 55, 80, 159
Development, 57 President Truman, 2, 3, 5, 7, 159
Offie, Carmel, 71-74, 78 Project Grillflame, 67
Operation Argus, 127 Project MKNAOMI, 29
Operation Buster-Jangle, Project Stargate, 67
135, Psychic abilities, 19, 20, 54, 66,
Operation Crossroads, 131 67
Operation Cut Holes and Sink psychokinesis, 58, 66
Em (CHASE), 175 Psychological Assessment
Operation Davy Jones Locker, Associates, 53
175 Psychological Strategy Board,
Operation Fitzwilliam, 159 33, 34
Operation Paperclip, xi, xii, 2, psychotronic generator, 66
3, 72, 75, 97, 211, 212, 224 Psychotronic Influence System,
Operation Pow-wow, 74 57
Operation Third Chance, 185 psychotronics, 50
Operation Tumbler-Snapper, 135
Operation Whitecoat, 187 **R**
Operation Wigwam, 128
Orne, Martin, 49 Radiation Exposure
OSS-Office of Strategic Compensation Act, 170

Services, 4, 33, 72, 75, 76, Ratlines 8, 74
92 Raven Rock 82
Red Fire, 19, 50, 54, 56, 102

P Remote Viewing 19, 50, 54, 56
65, 67, 219
Paranormal research, 57, 67 Research Foundation for Mental
Paulsen, Dr., 156-158 Hygiene, Inc., 10, 179, 199
Peenemunde, xii Rhoads, Dr. Cornelius, 171
Pegasus, 38 Rockefeller, David, 32, 40
Penfield, Dr. Wilder, 59-66 John D., III, 9, 33, 76
91, 181, 219, 220 Nelson, 8, 9, 32-34
Pine Bluff Arsenal, 187-189 Mrs. Percy, 60, 63
Planning Coordination Group, Rockefeller Foundation, 33, 46
34 60, 61, 63, 76, 219, 220
Rockefeller Institute for Medical Suedfeld, Dr. Peter, 23
Investigations, 171
Rockefeller University, 59 **T**
Rocky, 42
Rodahl, Dr., 151-153 Technical Services Staff, TSS
Ross, Dr. Collin, xvii, 105 19, 105, 106, 107
Rudolph, Arthur, 97 testicular irradiation experiments,
155, 156
S Tien, H. C., 44
transdermal optical perception,
San Jose Project, 172 57
Savannah, Georgia, xv, 188 Trifa, Valerian, 77, 78
Scheflin, Dr. Alan xv, 22, 65 trigger codes, 52
179 Tufts College, 227
Schellenberg, Walter, 32 Tulane University, 180, 200
Schubert, Heinz, 32 Turner, Admiral Stansfield,
Schwend, Friedrich, 92 xvi, 28, 46

sensory deprivation, xvii, xvii, Tuskegee Experiments, xiii
47, 48, 61, 183
Sergeyev Detector, 50 **U**
Shadow Government, 35
Shadowland, 19, 54 Ustase, 8
SIFAR, 73
Sima, Horia, 77 **V**
Six, Franz, 32
Skorzeny, Otto, 8, 77, 95 Vanderbilt Experiment, 147, 148,
Skull Valley, 176 201
Sloan-Kettering Institute for Vatican 8, 74, 223
Cancer Research, 140, 171 Veterans Dioxin and Radiation
Smith, Walter Bedell, 77 Compensation Act of 1988, 168
Society for the Investigation of von Braun, Werner, xii
Human Ecology, 46 Von Falkenhausen, General, 30
Southern Research Institute, 200, 225 von Weizsacker, Ernst, 31
South Nassau Communities Hospital, 167 **W**
Stanford Research Institute, 66 Walter Reed Army Institute, 93,
Stereotaxic, 64, 65, 132 142, 143
Strughold, Hubertus, xii, 225 Wev, Bosquet, 3,
Whitney, John, 33
Willowbrook, xiv,
Wisner, Frank, 32, 38, 72-74, 77
Wolff, Harold, 46, 48, 49, 52, 59
World Bank, 32
World Organization Against
Torture, 168
Wright Patterson, xii, 55

Y

Yellow fever, xv, 188

Z

ZR/RIFLE, 54, 55

Table of Contents

Part II 105
23Chapter One 162
35Chapter Two 163
60Chapter Three 166
68Chapter Four 167
Chapter Five 168
164Chapter Six 175

THE DOCUMENTED JOURNEY FROM CIA
MIND CONTROL SLAVE TO SUCCESSFUL
U.S. GOVERNMENT WHISTLEBLOWER.

ACCESS DENIED

FOR REASONS OF NATIONAL SECURITY

By Cathy O'Brien with Mark Phillips

ACCESS DENIED
For Reasons of National Security

by Cathy O’Brien
with Mark Phillips

Copyright © 2004, Cathy O’Brien with Mark Phillips

Dedication

To Mark with infinite love and eternal gratitude for saving my life and giving me cause to live it; for valiantly lighting the path to freedom by living the love you are; and to whom I attribute the realization that love is the most powerful force in the universe, peace and freedom are of the soul, justice is ab*soul*ute, and hope is why we’re here.

To Kelly whose positive attitude and brilliant nature lights the way for others to like*wise* trust in love and live peacefully true-to-soul; whose wise and compassionate spirit compounds the felony of being forced to struggle day to day without technological rehabilitation; and who continues to be my inspiration in light of ‘Love’s Space’ that eternally binds us bigger-than-life.

And to Infinite others who support reality in light of love…

TABLE of CONTENTS

FOREWORD

CHAPTER 1: THE MOST DANGEROUS GAME
CHAPTER 2: PROS and CONS
CHAPTER 3: THE ROAD TO RECOVERY
CHAPTER 4: FREE TO LOVE
CHAPTER 5: *SOUL*UTIONS
CHAPTER 6: JUST ‘CAUSE
CHAPTER 7: WASH. DC
CHAPTER 8: TWO WAY MIRRORS
CHAPTER 9: REFLECTIONS
CHAPTER 10: “GET TO KILLING”
CHAPTER 11: MENTAL HELLth
CHAPTER 12: POP TOPS and DENTAL FLOSS
CHAPTER 13: FAMILY MATTERS
CHAPTER 14: IT’S NOT OVER ‘TIL WE WIN
CHAPTER 15: THE HUNDREDTH MONKEY
CHAPTER 16: *CRIMINAL* “JUSTICE” SYSTEM

CHAPTER 17: GOVERN YOUR OWN THOUGHTS
CHAPTER 18: COVER OPS
CHAPTER 19: OCTOPUS
CHAPTER 20: “SUICIDED”
CHAPTER 21: FEDERAL *WAR*RANT
CHAPTER 22: NEED-TO-KNOW
CHAPTER 23: PANDORA’S BOX
CHAPTER 24: STEP SEVEN
CHAPTER 25: US MALE
CHAPTER 26: GOD SAVE US FROM RELIGION
CHAPTER 27: OUTPOST of FREEDOM
CHAPTER 28: WHERE HAVE ALL THE CHILDREN GONE?
CHAPTER 29: SODOM and GOMORRAH
CHAPTER 30: MARIN COUNTY, CALIFORNIA
CHAPTER 31: BEHIND YOUR EYES
CHAPTER 32: HEALth
CHAPTER 33: *T*REASONS OF “NATIONAL” SECURITY
CHAPTER 34: SEVENTEEN LITTLE CHILDREN
CHAPTER 35: THE*RAPISTS* MISTAKES
CHAPTER 36: THANKS FOR THE FALSE MEMORIES
CHAPTER 37: TRUTH MAKES U.S. FREE

CHAPTER 38: PULSE OF THE NATION
CHAPTER 39: CAN YOU *THINK* TO CARE?
CHAPTER 40: EVOLUTION OVER REVOLUTION
CHAPTER 41: VOICE OF THE PEOPLE
CHAPTER 42: *S*ELECTIONS
CHAPTER 43: COLLECTIVE CONSCIOUS EVOLUTION
CHAPTER 44: THE TURNING OF THE TIDE
CHAPTER 45: BACK TO THE FUTURE
CHAPTER 46: ALERT PEOPLE!
CHAPTER 47: IN LIGHT of INSIGHT
CHAPTER 48: GLOBAL WARNING
EPILOGUE: ASSUME Y*OUR* VICTORY!
ABBREVIATIONS

FOREWORD

This true life's recorded account of extraordinary proportions began unfolding, like some kind of hyper Origami, near Nashville Tennessee on a cold winter morning February 8th 1988.

Names of persons mentioned in this book have not been changed to protect their identities whether they are proven innocent or guilty, heroes or villains, because this book was written for you to adjudge the facts and become a part of the solution rather than unwittingly a part of the problem.

At this moment you are a fully entitled judge, elected by your fellow man to enter the largest court of the land: *the Court of Public Opinion*. In your court there is no jury selection for manipulation, no secrets withheld, and no immoral legal loopholes written and enacted into law by lawyers to protect those you may adjudge guilty as charged. There are no lawyers being paid obscene amounts of money by taxpayers to "argue" for either side. The facts of this case are presented to you here from detailed sworn testimony which were strictly derived from hundreds of hours of video and audio recordings, thousands of pages of hand written dated notes, courtroom records, and sworn testimonies by the plaintiffs to all applicable national & international law enforcement agencies, before both Houses of the US Congressional Permanent Select Committees on Intelligence Oversight, The World Court, Interpol and The United Nations Commission on Human Rights Abuses.

“ACCESS DENIED For Reasons of National Security” is a US federal legal ruling that affects all Americans and her allies from adjudicating against criminal politicians. As judge and jury, you are responsible for discerning the truth from the detailed testimonies given, free of this encumbrance to justice. You must also take into consideration the past political records of the politicians presented here, as well as past and present news media accounts of their lies made public.

As presiding judge, the punishments you are entitled to administer to those found guilty as charged will be public exposure of their crimes. All who have come before you and after in like duty, willingly do so in the humane belief that you, too, are fair and honest and will take responsibility in your everyday life for seeing that justice is served.

Whereas, justice for the plaintiffs will be done when those responsible for the alleged crimes committed against them are publicly exposed around the world and the 1947 US National Security Act and The Patriot Acts are abolished. The only compensation remedy the plaintiffs seek is public prosecution of those convicted in your court.

We the plaintiffs, Mark Phillips and Cathy O'Brien, submit into your court our original published testimony that we provided on or before 1995 to the aforementioned agencies and governmental bodies entitled TRANCE Formation of America. For the convenience of like judges around the world this book is now available in the Turkish, Italian, German, and Arabic languages. Many more licensed publishers are at this very moment translating this unchallenged documented testimony into additional languages to reach as many other judges as possible in the shortest amount of time.

In conclusion we pray you will do that which you can and additionally that you will lend support to government whistleblowers like Mark & Cathy who have nothing to loose and everything to give to the future generations of humanity. Support them by sharing what you learn here with as many people you know who have eyes to see and ears to hear the truth.

Only truth will set u.s. free.

Chapter 1
THE MOST DANGEROUS GAME

“Wake up, sleeping beauty,” Mark said as he gently roused me with a cup of fresh coffee. “Welcome to a new day.”

My eyes opened. “My God, did I die?” I wondered, sensing the love and peace surrounding me.

Mark smiled. “You just switched your former existence for life, not ‘death’, and it’s time you began remembering your past,” he said as he strapped a beautiful watch to my wrist. Noting my wonder and surprise, he continued, “Now you know that I gave you the time of day.”

The time of day? No one had ever given me their time before. They only took mine. And I never wore a watch before. I did not even know what month or year it was, let alone the time of day. I had no concept of time, which Mark explained I must always monitor from that moment on. A concept of time equated to awareness, and I had intense need to be aware of my past.

“You have to know where you’ve been to know where you’re going. And you’re going to remember everything.” Mark appeared confident, emitting a sense of security while I teetered on the edge of a dangerous past.

“You say someone is trying to kill you. Why?” I could not think to answer. I was totally amnesic. All I knew was that his life, as well as my eight-year-old daughter Kelly’s and mine were all on the line. We were in grave danger, literally dodging bullets while I desperately sought the answers why.

Absolute mind control was the only existence Kelly and I knew prior to Mark Phillips rescuing us directly from the CIA/DIA's[1] MK Ultra[2] Project Monarch[3] in 1988. Through a series of carefully orchestrated events, Mark cleverly maneuvered our mind control handler, Alex Houston, into a position of "trust" that provided him the latitude to lift us free of our existence. In addition to helping me remove a few of my meager belongings from Houston's farm in Goodlettsville, Tennessee, Mark arranged for our livestock pets to be freed from Houston's horrific abuse as well. People who abuse children oftentimes abuse animals, as though they have no regard for life at all. Houston was no exception, and Mark knew it. While Mark tended to the horses, cows, guineas, chickens, cats, and dogs, I spun the combination on the safe in the bedroom to retrieve Houston's familiar CIA diary and ledger. We left the premises momentarily undetected, and Kelly and I moved into an apartment.

When my politically affluent owner in MK Ultra, US Senator Robert C. Byrd[4], and other so-called leaders of our country involved in the Project realized the problem Alex Houston's bumbling had created, our danger intensified. Many government secrets and personal reputations were staked on the belief that I would never be free to recall that which I was supposed to forget. They had never stopped to consider the strength of the human spirit, the power of love, or what could happen when a man of integrity like Mark Phillips opened their Pandora's Box of secrets. Now their paradigm was shifting, and our danger intensified accordingly.

Kelly and I could not survive on our own, and soon moved into Mark's house for protection. Within days, the local sheriff where Mark lived advised him to leave town, claiming a Special Agent dispatched from Nashville's FBI office said the CIA had a hit out on him that "had something to do with that woman." Indeed, traffic had conspicuously increased on the unmarked, rural dead-end gravel road leading to Mark's remote country home. We noticed many unfamiliar faces on the road, in the woods, and even in the trees who we jokingly referred to as "the watchers watching the watchers watching the watchers." Then, without warning, all of Mark's personal identification records disappeared. His life savings had seemingly vanished into thin air from his personal and business bank accounts. Unnerved by these CIA tactics, and more determined than ever to find out why they were happening, Mark implemented deliberate steps to ensure that our lives were not taken, too.

He quickly sold everything he owned, including his “back to the future” De Lorean used in the rescue, retaining only basic necessities. The funds would be used to take Kelly and me away from his no-longer private residence to the safety and serenity of Alaska. Mark understood that safety was tantamount to memory recovery. At the same time, none of us could be safe until I could recall who and what we were up against, and *why*.

As we prepared to embark on our journey to the top of the world, my former “husband” Alex Houston attempted to prevent me from leaving. For nearly eight years Houston had handled Kelly and me much the way he did his ventriloquist’s dummy. Now it seemed he wanted his “merchandise” back at all costs.

I swore out three arrest warrants on Alex Houston for threats and attempts on our lives with the Nashville, Tennessee Metropolitan Police Department. I sought further protection through Nashville’s District Attorney’s office, where I explained to the DA’s Investigator Skip Sigmund that Alex Houston was a ventriloquist and stage hypnotist capable of torturous controls. He responded that “until gun shots were fired” nothing could be done to protect me.

Mark accelerated our pace to leave Tennessee for Alaska.

I could not yet *think* to trust Mark, though I sensed that I could. My capacity for conscious thought and reason had been stifled through decades of torturous abuse, whereby I could only do as I was told. Mark certainly did not “order” me to go with him. He didn’t even know me, let alone like me. How could he? *I* didn’t even know who I was, where I’d been, or even my own age or name at times! Without the capacity for free thought, I had no free will and ultimately no soul expression. I had no way to express love even if I could feel it. With nothing to give and nothing to lose, I relied only on my heightened senses. I could sense much like an animal could sense, and I had seen the trust and affection his pet raccoons and foxes had for him. Even the farm animals that Houston had abused so horribly exhibited trust for Mark.

Kelly sensed trust for Mark as well. After all, he was the first man who did not abuse us and genuinely cared for our welfare and well-being. His patient, gentle manner was therapeutic, while his propensity for handling weapons and apparent intellect kept us safe against all odds. His inside knowledge of CIA inner workings due to his own past proved invaluable in keeping us a step ahead of The Most Dangerous Game and continues to do so to this date.

February 4, 1988 marked the beginning of life for Kelly and me. It also marked the beginning of a new kind of survival as we embarked on “The Most Dangerous Game” of international proportion.

Chapter 2
PROS and CONS

“It’s a long, long way to the top of the world from here,” Mark told me as we loaded up our pets and a few personal belongings in a small rented trailer he had hooked up to his 1976 Pacer. “That will give you plenty of time to remember where you’ve been and why we have to leave here under the gun this way.”

My response was not as profoundly revealing as another MK Ultra victim’s would be in later years when she said, “No one would believe the things I can’t remember.” Instead I began, “I hope I talk about it the whole way…”

“It’s not *what* you remember that matters, it’s *how* you remember it.” Mark handed me several notepads and a pen as he opened the door for me. “The pen is mightier than the sword. Remember that.” He settled into the driver’s seat as the Pacer he restored sprang instantly to life at the touch of a switch. We were on our way.

“How am I supposed to remember what happened?” I wondered to myself. It had been mere weeks since I had even found out my age. When Mark referred to my age as 30, I had argued that I was 24 until he showed me on my driver’s license and the 1988 date on newspapers. Where had I been all those years? It seemed like I knew but just didn’t want to think about it. Mark spoke confidently and without emotion as though he had been reading my mind.

“I know from studying mind sciences all my life that the brain photographically records events surrounding trauma. You display every indication of having endured significant trauma. Whether you wanted to forget it or not, your brain automatically compartmentalized memory so the rest of your mind could function normally as though nothing had happened.

This is the mind's sane defense to trauma too horrible to comprehend. It takes brains for this coping mechanism to even occur, which means you are smart enough to remember everything. You already survived it once. Now I'm going to teach you a simple method of making the incomprehensible comprehensible."

I interrupted Mark to anxiously inject, "I know I already told you about Wayne Cox. I'll probably never see Kelly again." My eyes widened even further in horror.

"No, you didn't tell me." Mark appeared calm to me despite his increasing alarm for Kelly's immediate plight.

Two weeks previous, we had stopped by the Post Office to clear out the mail in preparation for this move. A summons for me to appear in court later that afternoon was in his box. With no time to prepare or obtain an attorney, and the threat of being incarcerated for taking Kelly out of the State of Tennessee, we drove straight to the courthouse. Kelly's biological father Wayne Cox and our former mind control handler Alex Houston were among those opposing our exodus. Representing myself, I explained to Judge Swiggart that I had sworn out three warrants for Alex Houston's arrest and was suffering from amnesia. Since this did not openly reveal anything about Wayne Cox, Judge Swiggart thoughtfully considered the situation.

"These are unusual circumstances," he began as he granted me the right to move Kelly to Alaska. He further explained that his main concern was for the children, and therefore would like to speak with Kelly in his chambers regarding visitation with Wayne Cox prior to our departure. Horrified beyond reason, I could not *think* why I so adamantly opposed the possibility of Kelly visiting Wayne Cox. Judge Swiggart later explained to me that, had he known about dissociative disorders and occultism, he would not have taken Kelly into his chambers to ask her how she felt about seeing Cox before moving to Alaska. Kelly, also suffering from amnesia, responded only to the moment. Judge Swiggart's black robe subconsciously triggered the occultism to which Cox had previously subjected her, and Kelly robotically complied with every suggestion Judge Swiggart presented.

Believing Kelly had willfully complied, Judge Swiggart ruled that Kelly was to visit Cox in his Louisiana residence effective immediately.

My hysteria rising, I blurted out to Mark as he drove us out of Nashville, “He’s going to kill her in a ritual. He always kills people.”

“Write it out,” Mark instructed. “I don’t want to hear about it. I want to read it where I can understand it. It may feel as though you have already told me about this, but you haven’t. Nor will you. Verbalizing events of the past only reinforces it in your own mind and can further traumatize you. It takes the logic portion of the brain to move a pen. Therefore, when you write out memory, it shifts the emotionally incomprehensible over to logic, making it comprehensible. Once it is comprehensible, you can deal with the reality of your past in a logical manner.”

I pondered his statement. “It doesn’t seem logical that when I see my past, it’s as though I were viewing it from above. It is as if my spirit took flight to a safe, loving space while my body was being used and abused.”

“Severe torture and trauma does affect people this way. Simply shift this natural perspective to a ‘mind’s screen/movie screen.’ This will allow you to remember without abreaction.” Mark noticed that I didn’t understand the word ‘abreaction.’ He knew that photographically re-experiencing tactile sensations could result in a histamine reaction[1]. “In other words,” he explained, “without reliving it. Like I said, you already survived it once. There’s no sense in you reliving it. It’s your memory, and you already know it. View your mind’s screen through the eyes of the part of you that endured it. Smell the smells. Then write it out. That’s why I said ‘the pen is mightier than the sword.’ This method will give you control over your memory and, ultimately, your own mind. Now, write out what you were going to tell me about Cox.”

I wrote a brief line that Cox was an occult serial killer. Mark glanced over at what I had written as he merged onto the freeway. Suppressing his own horror, he nonchalantly asked, “How do you know this?”

“I saw…” Mark interrupted me, reminding me to write it out.

I wrote most of the way to Las Vegas, where Mark met with a few old acquaintances to discuss our predicament. They didn't want to discuss it. The CIA's merging with the Mafia had created such havoc they had their own political problems to deal with. "The whole world is changing right now. You should change, too. Leave that woman. Now. Save yourself."

Mark had not expected this response and he frowned. "Save myself from what?" he wondered to himself. He knew it was up to him to safely navigate our way to the future against all odds. He looked at his associates and said, "Las Vegas is still the place for quick marriages. I'm getting married." He knew he could save himself a lot of legal grief by taking such a step. Mark stood up and strode for the door.

"You're still the same, Flash" one of the guys growled as Mark closed the door behind him.

That evening when Mark returned to our hotel room, he offered to take me out to dinner. I switched personas, forgot what I was writing, and with renewed energy cheerfully dressed for dinner. Dressed in his Las Vegas evening attire, Mark's appearance triggered my sexuality that had been heightened through incest, conditioning, and mind control programming. Naturally, I expressed my immense desire.

"You need to know who you are before you have something to give in a relationship. What you're offering is a small piece of who you really are." Mark's obvious arousal did not seem to match his words, yet he continued, "I don't want you a piece at a time, I want all of you at once."

Wow. That was the most deeply appealing thing anyone had ever said to me. While I could not consciously grasp the depth of meaning to his statement, my heart rejoiced with the magnitude of his insight. Coincidentally, Julio Iglesias happened to be singing All of You (Body and Soul)[2] over the radio at that moment, the musical harmonics carrying the lyrics deep into my being, profoundly touching me. Somewhere inside, love was binding together pieces of me I wasn't even aware of yet.

It was hard to eat dinner that evening, and it wasn't due to my developed digestive disorders. After eating, as programmed, only 300 calories per day for eight years, combined with direct high voltage to my lower intestine/rectum as torture, total digestive failure had been diagnosed. My abusers believed the doctor's diagnosis that I would die, which aided our initial survival. They never considered that I would survive through the healing power of love, or that Mark would literally carry me through our first few months together. Tonight, food was the last thing on my mind and I could only eat lightly while gazing across the table at the magnificent man on the other side.

As our dinner settled, Mark explained the pros and cons of getting married. I logically agreed it was a wise move, while my heart leapt with joy that knew no bounds. We proceeded accordingly, and were married in a conventional wedding ceremony-- united in purpose that seemed bigger than life.

Kelly's life was still on the line, and tomorrow we could legally retrieve her from Cox. Back at the room, Mark shifted my focus from my sexual desires to the notes I had scrawled earlier. Pointing out an occult ritual I had detailed, he avoided comment and asked, ”How did you get there? Where did you go afterwards?”

“I don't know…” I forgot I wasn't supposed to verbalize anything.

“Of course you do. It's your memory.” Mark handed me my pen and notepad. “Write it out.”

“How can I when there's just a black hole on either side of it?” The memory still seemed compartmentalized.

Mark took my notepad and drew an illustration for me of a pie graph. As he drew the circle he said, “Imagine this is your brain. It compartmentalized this ritual event, for example.” He drew the first section into the pie graph, and pointed out all the rest of the area that was left to function “normally” while ignoring the event compartmentalized in the wedge. He sectioned off more and more wedges, describing how my brain was comprised of as many compartments as there had been traumatic experiences in my life.

“Where’s the normal part?” I asked, looking at all the pie wedges.

“That’s where you’re at right now. Right here.” He pointed to the very center of the graph where all the pieces met. “You just went into a compartment and wrote out the memory. Writing it out caused the wall to come down. The emotionally incomprehensible became comprehensible with logic, so you don’t need that wall anymore. Now that it’s out of the way, that section of your brain is yours to control, direct, access, and explore. To connect events and learn how you got there and where you went afterwards, all you need to do is go deeper inside yourself. Deeper into here,” he said as he pointed at the center of the pie graph. “Deeper into your own subconscious. Relax. Breathe deep. And ask yourself these questions. How did you get there? Where did you go afterwards?”

I took a deep breath and the trance state I lived in deepened to a focus. An event flashed across my mind screen so fast I couldn’t grasp it. I took another deep breath, refocused, and made a note when it flashed again. Drugs. Cocaine. Mercenaries. What did it mean? Why was Cox there? The flash became a memory, which I retrieved in photographic recall. It felt so close, so “normal.” I knew I must have said something to Mark about this before. It’s not like I had forgotten it… or had I?

Exhausted, I put down my pen and began to fall asleep. I was so tired, yet kept jerking awake as my body responded to nightmares. Mark quietly came over to my bed and held me close. “You’re safe now,” he assured me. “That was then, this is now, and now you are safe. I’ve got you. It’s OK. You can sleep peacefully now.” He cradled my head as he would do for years to come in the most comforting, loving, healing manner. I slept better than I ever had before.

When I awoke, I felt strong, alert, and well rested. I would need this strength for the events to come. Excited that Kelly’s court ordered visitation with Cox was over, I telephoned to tell her we were on our way to pick her up. Cox’s mother and handler, Mary, answered the phone and informed me

Kelly would not be coming with us. Wayne picked up the other line and told me I could not have Kelly back, that she didn't want to see me again. I knew he was lying. I heard Kelly cry in the background and told him I was on my way.

First, I telephoned Judge Swiggart at his home. He had thoughtfully given me his home phone number "just in case I needed to reach him over the Christmas holidays."

"Louisiana is not my jurisdiction," he began. "But since Kelly's father is in noncompliance with Tennessee court orders, I can get the local police there to take care of the situation."

I had remembered how Cox's involvement with CIA cocaine operations extended far beyond the local police all the way to then Louisiana Senator J. Bennet Johnston. Briefly, I explained. "It goes Federal from there, crossing State lines into Arkansas Governor[3] Bill Clinton's Mena[4] Airport cocaine operations."

Apparently Judge Swiggart had found cause to further research our case after his ruling, and he apologetically explained that if he had known then what he knows now, Kelly would not even be with Cox. Since she was and it was Christmas, he recommended that Mark take matters into his own hands while he pulled every string he could to supply legitimate police backup.

As we quickly drove to the designated meeting place near Cox's Chatham, Louisiana backwoods residence, Mark assured me that Cox would show up with Kelly once he was told "what" he was dealing with. Still, I became hysterical telling Mark why this situation was so dangerous and urgent. "Did you write this out?" Mark's question rose over my sobs. Of course not. I couldn't seem to write everything as fast as the information was needed, so I verbalized. This proved to be even more time consuming than writing since I was immobilized by my own hysterics and disjointed ranting. Mark stopped the car, which got my attention long enough to heed his demand that I write out what I was trying to say. I started writing again, and my tears subsided as my mind returned from the brink of emotional raw terror and became rationally logical again.

I wrote until we arrived. Acutely aware of the life-threatening circumstances we were under, Mark cleverly applied his mental and physical skills to ensure Kelly's safety above all else. He quickly selected a 45 automatic from his registered personal arsenal that he was licensed to carry. Rising above the dramatics of the moment and appearing calm, Mark got out of the car and strode over to where he knew Cox would be. Smiling, he pointed his left index finger at the gun in his right hand while Cox's forehead broke out in a sweat. I gathered Kelly and her bag. Mary was dumbfounded as I hurried Kelly into the car. Police cars squealed to a stop while the promised backup officers took shooting positions. Like in a movie, their timing prohibited Cox from further pursuit and assault while Mark withdrew his weapon, jumped back in the car and quickly drove us out of the area.

I turned to Kelly, who sat unblinking in the backseat. Physically she was in tact. It was obvious that she was under extreme mental duress and trauma, the extent of which we would soon learn.

Chapter 3
THE ROAD TO RECOVERY

It was 60 degrees below zero when Mark, Kelly, and I arrived in Alaska with our red chow dog Tong, and raccoons Tycoon, Marty, and Rocky. The trim and emblems had long since frozen and fallen off the Pacer. Yet I barely noticed the cold, as I took in the beauty, safety, and splendor of Alaska. This winter paradise on top of the world enthralled me with its abstract magnificence. The sun revolved in circles rather than rose and set, casting shadows that danced and played along the mountains, constantly changing the scene. The horizon had no visible east or west, distorting distance where time knew no night or day. Northern lights of the Aurora Borealis lit up the dark winter skies, with their brilliant hues reflecting across the snow like daylight. I felt deeply fortunate and blessed just to be alive, let alone living in Alaska!

On the long journey to Alaska after retrieving Kelly from Cox in Louisiana, I noticed Mark was unusually quiet and deep in thought. He finally explained that he was re-evaluating values, re-prioritizing priorities, and rethinking professional friendships he had developed over the years. When he needed his friends, they were only there long enough to advise him to abandon me and his quest for answers. More determined than ever, Mark chose to learn the truth and keep Kelly and me alive. So he drove on in silence while Kelly loudly and irrationally displayed her traumatized state by crying, yelling, babbling, and laughing hysterically. I responded to her in kind. Surely Mark sensed a higher purpose than the rescue of two PTSDed[1] dissociatives who had been traumatized literally out of their minds.

Kelly’s condition continued to worsen, despite feeling love and security for the first time in her life. The extreme trauma she endured while with Cox apparently extended into hypnotic mind control programming, which she later reported in detail to the psychiatrist assigned to her case. As quickly as

Kelly retrieved memory, she went into espionage level deliberately programmed respiratory failure[2]. When Mark and I rushed her to Humana

Hospital in Anchorage, Kelly did not respond to conventional medical intervention. Hospital personnel who noted her traumatized state called in their leading psychiatrist, Dr. Pat Patrick. Dr. Pat was the first to diagnose Kelly with D.I.D. (dissociative identity disorder), which back then, was still being referred to as MPD (multiple personality disorder[3]) "with active mind control programming". Kelly was still in the Intensive Care Unit when I telephoned my father, Earl O'Brien, pleading for help.

"Kelly is dying and I don't have the money to put gas in the car to get to the hospital. Please help." I knew my father was well off financially, and assumed he would help. I was still amnesic of his incest and the perverse events that led to his selling me into the CIA's MK Ultra mind control.

"No more money!" my father shouted, much to my astonishment at the time. "This is America!"

"This is America?" I wondered at his outburst. What did "America" have to do with his cold-hearted refusal to financially enable me to be with my dying daughter?!

I began to shake uncontrollably as my heartbreak and desperation turned to sheer terror.

"You're not going to cave into fear now," Mark firmly told me. "Truth naturally frees you from fear. Think about it. Focus on what you know rather than jump to emotionally driven conclusions. Write it out and I'll read it when we get home." Mark opened the door and stepped out into the brisk Alaskan air. He had just taken an interim job as Marketing Director of Alaska Business College in order to meet our rent and keep the lights and heat on. The funds generated from quickly liquidating his personal assets back in Tennessee had dwindled, and we spent the last American Express Traveler's check on a small, unfurnished fourplex in Eagle River. He wasn't counting on assistance from anyone, especially not my father, and reluctantly left me alone with my past.

I locked the door and put my pen to paper. “This is America?” The answers were slow to surface, as they drudged up years of related memory that appeared as one long nightmare. By the time Mark returned that evening, I had slips of paper scattered everywhere with bits and pieces of memory scrawled across them in as many different handwritings. “I’ve remembered so much, yet nothing makes sense. I can’t tell one year from the next.” I showed him the scraps of paper and cried, “How can I figure out when things happened when I had no concept of time?”

“Simple,” Mark replied. “You have to know what questions to ask yourself. Expand your vision beyond the moment. What is the season? Is it snowing? Can you feel the warmth of the summer sun? Do you smell the spring flowers? Are you in school? Who is your teacher? What are you wearing? When did you own these clothes? Are any of your brothers and sisters born? How old is Kelly? Take a look around through the part of you it was happening to and see through those eyes. Do people seem really tall to you like they did when you were a child? What is eye level to you? Their knees? Their eyes? Simply pinpoint the time as accurately as you can and leave the rest to investigators. I’ve already got some old contacts of mine looking into things for us, and I talked with the Feds again today.”

Mark’s rational answers served to refocus me. My frantic desperation calmed, and we discussed our plans for the next day, which would include time at the hospital with Kelly. “I also need to go to the library,” Mark informed me. Rare books on deprogramming and recovery from dissociative disorders were suddenly being made available to him. Certain pages were book marked for him with coded instructional notes and unidentified one time use toll free phone numbers. “You can look through some of the old magazines and newspapers they’ve accumulated as give-aways,” he continued. “You will want to start clipping pictures, phrases, headlines – anything that catches your attention. When you have a box full of these clippings, you can make a collage of them. It will be like putting together these pieces of your mind.” He scooped up a handful of the scraps of paper I had made notes on. “Dr. Patrick used the term polyfragmented to describe these dust pieces you’re gathering. She agrees that my suggestion of making a collage would be very healing for you.”

Suddenly my scraps of memory looked valuable after all. From that point on, I wrote down every memory flash I had whether it seemed significant or not. I kept a pen and paper with me at all times. Memories were flashing across my mind's screen often, even to the point of dominating my focus at inconvenient times. Jotting down a word or phrase served to stop the inconvenient intrusions, allowing me to complete other business I was tending at the moment. It was as though my brain knew I would write it out in its entirety later, and the intrusive flashing would momentarily subside. Later, when I had time to focus on it properly, I would relax into a deeper state, ask myself questions the way Mark taught me, smell the smells, and write out that which was waiting to be photographically retrieved.

"Keep in mind," Mark advised me, "that if a memory seems too impossible to have actually happened, then examine it closely to see if it is something you were told or is from a movie. Deprogram the program first. Find the beginning and end, what happened before and after. Set the written out scrap of memory aside for three weeks. Truth doesn't go away. Filling in the blanks with what might have happened will." Some memory scraps were temporarily set aside, along with the clippings I would accumulate for my collage.

Upon Dr. Pat's advise, Humana Medical Hospital transferred Kelly to Charter North Psychiatric Hospital. Although the staff admittedly did not know how to treat Kelly's condition, they were sympathetic to her need. They agreed to join us in our quest to obtain qualified rehabilitation for Kelly. Mark's inside knowledge of espionage level deprogramming was not appropriate for Kelly's needs. Besides, she had been subjected to sophisticated NASA/DARPA[4] developed harmonic mind control technologies since birth, which was vastly different from the trauma based mind control from which I was recovering. In essence the key that locked the doors to her mind needed to be used to unlock it. And Charter North[5], despite being among the most progressive chain of mental institutions in the nation, did not have access to classified technology and information.

Seeing Kelly was a joyful and painful experience at the same time. She and I were very close, bonded more than the average mother and daughter by the traumas we had endured together for so many years. I had never contributed to Kelly's abuse and she knew it, despite her amnesic mental blocks and extreme PTSD[6]. We shared an understanding beyond words, and communicated on levels experienced by soldiers on the front lines of a battle zone.

I was glad to see Kelly breathing easier under Dr. Pat's care. "I'm going to see a doctor who knows about sexual abuse," Kelly proudly announced. "The police need the paperwork."

Mark and I had begun turning pertinent information over as requested to Anchorage Police Detective Jack Chapman[7] in an effort to enlist protection for Kelly from Wayne Cox and Alex Houston. Apparently this medical document was required. I went with her as she complied with the gynecological exam at the age of eight. Dr. Lillibridge examined and photographed what he termed "the physical scars from years of extreme, horrendous sexual abuse." Cover-up was already underway, even though we had just embarked on what would be years in pursuit of justice and rehabilitation for Kelly. Dr. Lillibridge informed Mark and me that his medical license and life had been threatened if he confirmed Kelly's abuse. "This is an outrage! What this child has endured is so extreme I will travel to any court in this country to testify on her behalf," he promised.

Kelly, pleased with herself for cooperating with the exam, had no clue as to what was going on. In spite of her deep insight and wisdom exceeding her years, she was still a child who did not need to know how elusive justice was becoming.

By the time Mark and I arrived at the library, memories were flooding my mind and I was making notes as fast as I could. I stopped long enough to request the outdated newspapers and magazines so I could begin my collage, piled them in the Pacer out front, then sat down at a desk to write while Mark tended his library business.

I remembered how my father's sexual abuse seemed so "natural." I didn't know any better, and pedophilia was so rampant[8] in Muskegon[9], Michigan when I was growing up, my neighborhood friends didn’t know any better either. Even though I had longed for someplace on the planet where people didn’t hurt each other, the pursuit of pleasure by acting out sexually was the way of life back then.

Soon my father’s sexual abuse extended into child pornography. Bonnie and the Boxer was the pornographic bestiality film made of me that would change my life forever. Looking through the eyes of the child I was when those events occurred, I recalled how my Uncle Sam’s boxer dog, Buster, was so much bigger than me! My father had filmed the event, and apparently sold it through the local Michigan Mafia child pornography ring. As I recalled, my maternal grandfather’s Masonic Lodge was instrumental in bringing businessmen, police, and politicians into our lives. So when a local politician came to our house with a copy of the porn film under his arm, it seemed as “natural” to me as sex!

I kept my head “up my past” for days, writing on every scrap of paper I could find. Still, it would be some time before I would understand the full importance and scope of that event. The memories I wrote out in photographic detail turned out to be just a small piece of the elaborate puzzle that revealed some of the missing years of my life. It would be years before I learned how that local child pornography ring came to be sanctioned by politicians involved in MK Ultra mind control[10]. Project Paperclip[11] had imported Nazi and Fascist scientists into the US, gleaning Hitler/Himler research on multigenerational incest based families[12]. It was learned that incest resulted in dissociative disorders ideal for robotic mind control. Such candidates could be used in espionage, the military, or anywhere government officials wanted secrecy and control. Brainwashing was being refined, and certain politicians such as the one who came to our house with the Bonnie and the Boxer film under his arm, were sanctioning child pornography rings in order to target children like myself for government mind control projects.

“Spies are made, not born,” my father often quipped. He was proud to be part of what he deemed an important government project. This local politician, Gerald Ford, would later become the un-elected Vice President and eventually un-elected President of the United States[13]. Back in the early

1960’s, though, Ford was just a simple politician who was sliming his way to the top. He promised my father immunity from prosecution if he would agree to see me into MK Ultra mind control. I remember how the two had laughed like old friends, telling tales about my Uncle Bob Tanis.

Uncle Bob was Air Force Intelligence, a professed Jesuit, and friends with both Ford and another local politician, Guy VanderJagt. VanderJagt went on to head the Republican National Committee[14] while serving as a US Congressman. In retrospect, it is bizarre how my father, who had a sixth grade education and earned his living as a worm digger, became associated with the likes of VanderJagt and Ford through illicit porn featuring me! Yet it had all seemed so uneventful, simple, and “normal” to me back then.

Writing out my memories the way Mark taught allowed me to retrieve them the way they happened, free of dramatics. I would deepen my trance through relaxation, watch events as they occurred in photographic detail on my mind’s screen, smell the smells, and know the physical sensations without re-feeling them. Emotions were non-existent in the dissociative state in which I had existed, so applying emotion to events when recovering memory was unrealistic. Mark wisely taught me to avoid the question often asked by therapists “how does that make you feel?” Remembering the details, as disgusting as they were now, helped me understand why my father ignored my pleas for help and shouted, “This is America!” I really didn’t have time to wallow in self-pity, though, when Kelly’s dire and desperate circumstances demanded all of my energy.

Chapter 4
FREE TO LOVE

In our determined effort to help Kelly, Mark and I worked diligently to stay a step ahead of the law enforcement cover-up that was underway. Oftentimes we would opt for spending what little cash we had on postage stamps rather than on food, as information dissemination was more crucial to our survival at the time. We had written hundreds of letters to local, state, and federal law enforcement agencies, mental health professionals, and to various citizen's organizations that were springing up all across the United States. Kelly's case wasn't the only one of its kind, although the "free" press and the courts were ignoring the widespread proliferation of incest, ritual abuse, and mind control. Responses poured in from everywhere, including from a Priest[1] concerned about abuses within the Catholic Church. Systematic mind control of dissociative victims by pedophile priests was already rampant by 1989. Mental health therapy for the wide range of victims of incest, child abuse, kidnapping, cults, satanism, dissociative disorders, and mind control was all but non-existent back then. Therapists were contacting Mark and me for guidance.

Information on dissociative disorders, trauma, and mind control had been deliberately suppressed from the American psychiatric and psychological associations for so-called "reasons of national security." The founder of the APA, Dr. Ewen Cameron, had been caught using CIA mind control methods at the Allen Memorial Institute in Montreal, Canada. The CIA was forced to compensate the victims, yet it took years[2]. In the meantime, educational institutions for mental health professionals lacked the facts necessary for treating the vast number of victims/survivors who were filling their offices in search of help and understanding.

Finally, through concerned Alaska State officials, I was able to make contact with Tennessee Violent Crimes Claims Commissioner Richard

Rucker. Commissioner Rucker was able to verify many of the facts, documents, and records submitted to him, and was working above and beyond the call of duty to obtain qualified rehabilitation for Kelly. Since he was close to reaching his goal, he proceeded to submit a request for release of emergency funds for Kelly and me so we could complete her transfer. He filed her case with the commission's national headquarters in Washington, DC at the FBI building.

By the summer of 1989, Mark and I turned over our doctor's reports, details of federal crimes, evidences, and proof of the ongoing cover-up of Kelly's case to Anchorage's FBI Resident Agent in Charge Joe Hamblin and Special Agent Ken Marischen[3].

"We've been looking for you," Marischen said.

"I know," Mark quickly replied. "You've been following the trail of my American Express Traveler's Checks."

Marischen was astounded. "How did you know?" he demanded.

"I didn't," Mark smiled. "You just told me. Why are you looking for me?"

"Your ex-wife is among the FBI's most wanted criminals[4]," Marischen continued. "We need you to confirm her credibility."

"Of course she is not credible," Mark answered. "Why do you think I divorced her?"

"Well, she's involved in a homicide along with the attorney she is working for." Marischen informed him. "If you will say for the record that she is credible, we will investigate this case you are presenting to us."

"Wait a minute." Mark smiled through his rage. "I'm here to report federal crimes, and all you want to talk about is my ex-wife. I haven't seen her in nearly a year. I am not going to lie for you and tell you she is credible. I'm counting on you to be honest and investigate these crimes and proofs, and you're trying to entrap me. This is immoral and…"

Joe Hamblin reached across the table and took the packet of information Mark had brought them. Hamblin vowed to investigate it, and quickly showed Mark the door.

Kelly's urgent and precarious situation caused us to return to the FBI a few days later, only to be told by the FBI's receptionist that both Hamblin and Marischen had been called to Washington, DC.

Acting on a tip from someone he trusted, Mark was patiently waiting in Hamblin's "secure" office when he returned. Hamblin took the voluminous packet of documents and information we had provided him out of his briefcase. "Nothing happened in Alaska. Yet," Hamblin warned. "Leave before it does."

"We told you we need your help, and 'nothing' has happened," Mark began. "Now I can't even afford to leave. I have nothing left to lose but my life, and as long as I'm alive I will do all I can to legally incite an honest investigation into these crimes."

Ken Marischen poked his head in the office to offer Mark just enough money ($500) to leave the state, compliments of his Mormon[5] church.

Mark and I had also turned the same documentation over to US Customs Northwest Division Manager Max Kitchens. Much of the detailed information we submitted regarding CIA cocaine operations had already checked out. "You are the first person I know of to actually survive and piece together the facts so comprehensively," Max told me. And he was in a position to know a lot[6]. Max was not only compassionate and respectful, he was dedicated to bringing about justice "regardless of who is involved."

"No one is above the law," he stated. He, too, was suddenly flown to Washington, DC.

Upon his return, Max drove out to our Eagle River residence. He was wide-eyed and breathless when he arrived, looking behind him suspiciously, and asked to come in. “I know the crimes you are reporting are true,” he began. “And I can’t even protect you. It took me over two hours to drive here[7], taking back roads, and using every trick I know to shake a tail. You won’t survive here. There’s a high level hit out on you now, and I beg of you to please leave while you still can.” Max bid us “good luck,” hugged us, and left.

As he backed out of our driveway, the telephone rang. It was Charter North notifying us that Kelly was in danger and would be transferred to an interim placement via the Tennessee Claims Commission. Charter had been informed that Wayne Cox was on his way to Alaska to kill her and anyone who stood in his way. Kelly was flying out with a nurse immediately. There wasn’t even time for me to see her first. I was devastated.

I telephoned Commissioner Rucker, who was distraught over the precarious turn of events. He told me, “National Security has been slapped on this case out of DC. There is little more I can do. I’m told Senator Byrd is behind it.”

Senator Byrd? Of course I knew he had an office in the FBI Hoover Building. I had been there.

My memory had been triggered. I was writing it out as fast as I could, pausing briefly to wipe away tears of frustration that I hadn’t remembered soon enough to have avoided this pitfall. My heart wrenching concerns for Kelly were overwhelming. Taking action rather than taking time to cry, Mark and I began to pack our belongings and make arrangements to leave Alaska where we could be closer to Kelly. I kept writing.

After being sold into MK Ultra mind control by my father, he was immediately flown to Boston, Massachusetts where he said he was given instructions at the nearby Scientific Engineering Institute[8] on how to raise me in the Project. Perhaps it was my Uncle Bob’s Jesuit affiliation, or perhaps it was due to the CIA combining Nazi mind sciences with what the Catholics learned through the Spanish Inquisition and Crusades regarding the effects of trauma on the human mind, that sent my father to Boston. Regardless, when he returned, my MK Ultra mind control victimization commenced, beginning with mind shattering occult rituals in my hometown St. Francis deSales Catholic church.

My father had also been instructed to take me to the Governor's mansion in Mackinac Island, Michigan. Governor George Romney[9] was actively involved in MK Ultra, extending it from the Catholic church to his Mormon church[10] and bringing it into the school systems as what would later become global education[11]. Because I was a "prime candidate" or a "chosen one" for MK Ultra, I had cause to be there as well. It was on Mackinac Island that I first met US Senator Robert C. Byrd, who would become my owner in MK Ultra. As my "owner," Senator Byrd directed my activities, deciding which military and NASA installations I would be taken to for mind control programming, who I would be prostituted to and when , and which government operations I would ultimately be used in during the Reagan/Bush Administration.

The pieces of my mind were fusing into a full picture, just as the scraps of headlines and pictures I had clipped were assembled into a collage theme. Everything started to make sense. Yet it was only the beginning.

Mark quit his brief job at Alaska Business College to be with me 24 hours a day 7 days a week for security purposes. "Making a living" was secondary to "living," and Mark chose to step away from society's financial rat race in favor of staying a step ahead of the game of exposing the highest level of criminal corruption. He had already lost his personal fortune, and he knew no limits to sacrificing his comfort zone for a higher purpose.

Within days of his departure, two Federally employed thugs greeted him as he stepped from the elevator to his ABC office. Mark heard the triggers cock on their weapons as he brushed past them. In one swift movement, he flipped open his briefcase[12] and spun around to face his would-be attackers with his 45 automatic drawn down on them. Using his briefcase as a shield, he smiled and said, “Good morning, boys. What brings you here? A need for an education?”

“You’re going to leave Alaska, dead or alive,” one of the suits said, while the other held the elevator door open with his foot.

“And I predict you’re going to leave here. Now. Who wants to go first?” Mark calmly asked.

“Abandon that woman, child, and your cause. Leave the state or you’ll die.” The elevator door closed.

Mark repacked his weapon and closed his briefcase as he watched from the upper floor balcony as the pair left the building. The elevator doors opened again, and a group of female students emerged. “Mr. Phillips,” one young blonde called. “We heard you turned in your notice and won’t be working here anymore.”

Another slipped her arm through his. “We’re here to talk you out of it.”

“Look what you’ve done,” a student majoring in modeling scolded as she wiped sweat from Mark’s brow, totally unaware of what had just transpired. “Let’s hear what he has to say. Maybe it’s just a rumor.”

Mark never faltered in his convictions. The easy way out was not the path he chose, and he turned to the girls, stopping at his office door. “You can’t talk me ‘out of’ or into anything,“ he smiled, then slipped inside and started packing his belongings.

Back at home, Mark laughed as he told me about the threat from the Feds. “You should have seen the expression on their faces when they realized their element of surprise had turned on them. They ran like scalded dogs all the way out the building.”

“It’s a good thing those girls didn’t have class any earlier,” I said, thinking how close they had come without even knowing it.

The phone rang. It was UCLA's chair of psychology Jolly West[13], wanting to speak with me. Mark had already figured out this CIA MK Ultra perpetrator's containment agenda. He knew that Jolly West's efforts to communicate with us now clearly indicated how endangered out lives had become. Recently, Steve Hassan, alleged acclaimed cohort of Jolly West and Margaret Singer, was brought in to verify Kelly's mind control abuses at the request of the Tennessee Claims Commission. Jolly West was concerned, as Hassan had submitted strong verbiage documenting Kelly's mind control programming[14].

Wasting no time, Mark "politely" terminated the call. As quickly as he hung up the phone, it rang again. "I need to go to the library," he said as he hung up the phone again. Immediately, we went out the door. As we drove to the shopping center where the small Eagle River library was located, I sensed a change occurring deep within me. My brain was fusing, and I was regaining control over my own mind and life. By the time we reached the parking lot, I felt like *me* for the first time in decades. I knew who I was, where I'd been, and where I was going. I realized continuity of thought, and was no longer speaking like the character Mel Gibson would portray so accurately in the movie Conspiracy Theory[15]. As I walked across the parking lot, I felt *present*, a stronger attachment to the planet, an awareness. It was as though dimensions had shifted and my spirit had reattached to my body after having floated above it in a safe, loving place for years while I was tortured to robotically carry out orders for others. I felt peace. I felt whole. I felt strong.

Mark noticed that my demeanor had changed. Even my walk was different, and never returned to what it was before that moment. We both sensed a permanent, profound change. Mark looked at me, his soulful eyes shining. Unable to contain myself, I exclaimed "I love you!"

Looking deep into my eyes, into the very soul of me, he said, "I believe you. I love you, too."

Mark dashed into the library while I went into the grocery store to buy dinner with a handful of change we had found. Once inside the grocery store, I could not think. After decades of only following orders under mind control, making decisions for myself wasn’t happening. I was still staring a the grocery items unable to choose our dinner when Mark found me, and asked, “What’s for dinner?”

“I know this sounds crazy, but I can’t decide. It’s like my brain goes off into a black hole before I can think to decide.” I was alarmed.

“We’ll do some brain exercises,” he promised. “Your brain is just rusty from lack of use. We can fix that easy enough.” Mark smiled and slipped his arm around me. “Let’s skip dinner tonight. We need to save every penny for our trip, anyway.”

It was about time! Yes!! He really could see how deeply I loved him. Now that I had free thought, free will, and soul expression again, I was free to love!

We hurried back to our home. We weaved our way through the boxes already packed with our few belongings. Our pet’s kennels were ready for them and the long trip back to the lower 48. We hadn’t disassembled the bed yet, though, and fell into each other’s arms. I lost track of time, and it was so different this time. Timeless passion. Timeless love. My choice.

Chapter 5
*SOUL*UTIONS

United in love and purpose, Mark and I finally arrived back in the lower 48. Our Alaska Airlines flight had been delayed for days due to a major volcanic eruption, leaving us to camp out on the airline floor with our luggage and kennels full of pets. Now we were more anxious than ever to retrieve our Pacer and tiny trailer from the ferry shipping docks and begin the long trek across the US to reunite with Kelly.

When we located our Pacer, all of our belongings packed inside had been raided and strewn about. Weapons and documents pertinent to our legal action and survival were missing. Mark's forethought in hand carrying such evidences as Alex Houston's CIA diary, videos, and medical records proved invaluable. We repacked the car and trailer, strapped the kennels to the roof, and began our long journey.

I telephoned Commissioner Rucker from a rest area in California. "Kelly is institutionalized at Valley Institute of Psychiatry in Owensboro, Kentucky," he told me. "I realize this is not a suitable placement and it's only temporary. They haven't even heard of mind control, but at least they've treated ritual abuse survivors. They have high security and are acutely aware of Kelly's circumstances. They've agreed to fully cooperate with us in obtaining qualified rehabilitation for her."

I was overwhelmed by emotion and couldn't even think to ask necessary questions. He continued, "I've arranged for disbursement of emergency funds through Huntsville, Alabama's District Attorney Bud Cramer since he runs the National Child Protection and Advocacy Center. Hopefully he can give you advice on how to proceed from there. Good luck."

“Good *luck?*” It seemed everyone was wishing “luck” these days. I knew it was more than luck that brought us this far!

Huntsville had been one of Kelly’s and my primary abuse bases for NASA mind control programming during the 1980’s, and I was deeply concerned with going there to pick up our emergency funds. Already Mark and I had heard rumblings regarding Bud Cramer[1] and his organization being a catch net for mind control survivors. Plus I was concerned that Kelly’s placement in Owensboro, Kentucky was far too close to Fort Campbell where we also had endured extensive, sophisticated programming.

I slowly walked back to the car and told Mark what Commissioner Rucker had said.

Never one to despair, Mark started the engine. “The people who hurt you and Kelly may have Intelligence,” Mark told me, “but they lack wisdom. They’re flat thinkers with no concept of the strength of the human spirit or the power of a mother’s love. There is no depth to their criminal minds, which is why wisdom outthinks a criminal mind every time.”

Hope, rather than luck, is necessary for human survival, and I was deeply grateful for the hope Mark’s wisdom provided. Would I ever be capable of such wisdom myself? I was still striving to apply the simple motto Mark had given to me “voice no negatives without a solution.” It was a challenge to think of solutions when I was still learning to think for myself at all! At least this phrase kept me from incessant complaining, whining, and slipping into immobilizing despair while I strove to push my brain to think beyond past conditioning of compliance without question.

I settled into my seat, pulled out one of my ever-present notebooks, and began writing out details of the vast information I was remembering. My traumatic experiences with Wayne Cox and his Louisiana backwoods witchcraft blood rituals left me prime for occult- theme mind control programming. Byrd ordered that this be instilled by Lieutenant Colonel Michael Aquino, founder of the Occult Temple of Set proliferating on US military bases. Aquino seemed untouchable in those days with his professed

Neo-Nazi criminal activity covered by his affiliation with the War College's Psychological Warfare Division, the Catholic Jesuits, the First Amendment of the US Constitution that ensures "freedom of religion," and through his association with influential politicians such as Byrd.

As soon as Kelly was born in 1980, Byrd ordered that we transfer to Nashville, Tennessee and our second mind control handler in MK Ultra, CIA Operative Alex Houston. Houston worked as a ventriloquist and stage hypnotist in the country music industry, which provided an ideal cover for me to travel throughout the US, Canada, Mexico, and the Caribbean as ordered. Nashville was also in close proximity to two mind control epicenters; one in Fort Campbell, Kentucky where elite special forces such as the 101st Airborne were programmed and trained, and the other in Huntsville, Alabama's NASA facilities. Lt. Col. Aquino became my primary mind control programmer according to Byrd's instruction throughout the Reagan-Bush Administration. I was programmed for CIA Black Budget funding operations, to deliver messages to and from various government leaders, and fulfill sexual perversion in the process[2].

Kelly was also subjected to Aquino's abuse and programming as ordered by Byrd, despite the fact that her mind control victimization was far more technologically advanced than mine. Kelly experienced classified high technology harmonic mind control programming since birth. Where my brain was compartmentalized through trauma, her neuron pathways were harmonically vibrated for more precise compartmentalization. Even before she was born, I was sent to Tulane University Medical Center in New Orleans, Louisiana where genetic mind control engineering was already underway. The sophisticated high-tech means by which Kelly was conditioned were also being utilized at the Fort Campbell and NASA facilities, where Aquino was willing to administer them. He was much more adept at playing devil's advocate, wielding his stun gun as the 'power of satan' for programming purposes, than he was with harmonic equipment. Nevertheless, Aquino had supposedly established himself at both mind control epicenters, having used harmonic equipment to fine tune the singing qualities of the country music entertainers Byrd controlled[3].

It was no wonder that I was hesitant to go back into Huntsville and was concerned for Kelly's placement in Kentucky. Nor was I comfortable when Mark announced that we would be stopping in Nashville before proceeding to Huntsville as arranged. Then he explained, "It would be wise to build a backdoor to ensure Kelly's safety as well as our own. We need to strategically disperse a few packets of information around Washington, DC. An old acquaintance of mine that I went to school with is a US Congressman now, and he may be able to help us avoid CIA interception and actually reach the appropriate people with the documents."

Mark pulled up to Nashville's Federal Building. "Wait here," he said, smoothing the wrinkles from his travel pants. Transferring a few select packets into his brief case, he said, "I'm going up to Congressman Clement's office, and will be back in twenty minutes."

Eighteen minutes later, Mark was back in the car, aiming it for Huntsville. "Done," he smiled. "Anytime we absolutely need to reach people with something in Washington, DC, Clement's staff will ensure it gets there intact by Congressional Red Bag Mail."

"I'm still striving to *think* of solutions and you're already implementing them!" How fortunate I felt to be lifted from my mind control existence by someone so wise and capable. I decided solution should be spelled 'SOULution'. Armed with soul, truth, and a mother's love, I convinced myself that I was ready for Huntsville.

Two hours later, Mark drove past Huntsville's Redstone Arsenal, Gate 9 exit near the NASA Space and Rocket Center. Disjointed bits of memory began flashing, and I forgot all about my recent resolution and began shaking. "No. We will never survive this. There's no place to run and no place to hide, especially when we're right in their own backyard! Please…" I begged, "let's go. I quit. I can't do this."

Mark managed to calm my hysteria with logic. "There is a place to run – right at them. And you have no need to hide – obviously they do or they wouldn't devote so much effort and money to cover-up. As for being in their 'own backyard,' it's the safest place to be. As they say, 'Nazi's don't shoot folks in their own bedroom.' You can't quit now because I've already devoted a year to this, and I refuse to quit." I was still sobbing as he continued, "We're on the back of a tiger and we've got to ride it until he drops or he'll eat us for lunch. I can survive the un-survivable, but I can't tolerate the intolerable and your negativity is intolerable." He stopped the car. "You can get out and walk if you want, but I'm going to finish this."

I still wasn't very good at making decisions for myself. Walking from here was out of the question, though, and my decision didn't require any thought. I definitely needed to work on that "voice no negatives without a solution" thing. For now, I quit sobbing and rode on in silence. Besides, I still had a lot of memories surfacing that I needed to write out.

We finally arrived at the Highway 72 Circle K rendezvous according to Huntsville District Attorney Bud Cramer's instructions. Plain-clothes drug cops Jeff Bennett and Chuck Crabtree provided us a key to the Police "Safe House" where we would be staying. "We'd like to interview you first thing in the morning," they said.

The interview went on for days while Bennett and Crabtree took notes on Byrd and Aquino's ties to NASA. They were aware of Huntsville's reliance on Byrd's Senate appropriations funds for their NASA operations, yet had no inside knowledge of mind control operations. I explained how Aquino used me in the training video *How to Create a Mind Controlled Slave Using a Stun Gun*[4] that was filmed in Huntsville, and even provided details of local persons involved.

I elaborated further on how one such individual, Huntsville Police Sergeant Frank Crowley, actively covered up local crime. I had been privy to the criminal roots of the First (and last) Annual Johnny Lee Picnic held August 7-9, 1987 in nearby Guntersville, where it was pre-planned that the promoter would steal all proceeds. Houston, who was booked to entertain at the event by his Agent Reggie MacLaughlin, was tipped to the plan and demanded to be paid up front. He was also responsible for bringing vast quantities of CIA cocaine into the event, half of which was to be taken to the Fraternal Order of Police Convention scheduled in Mobile immediately afterward. When a girl was murdered the last night of the Picnic in a bizarre sex act, it further complicated the whole criminal mess and Sgt. Crowley was needed to cover it all up. Country entertainer Keith Whitley had witnessed the murder, was aware of the CIA's cocaine ties into it all, and sobbed hysterically, threatening to go to the media with it. Lorrie Morgan asked me to keep their baby in our motor home while she and Reggie MacLaughlin tried to regain control of Keith. The next day, when all of us were at the Mobile F.O.P. Convention, Sgt. Crowley bragged how he "had it all covered."

Bennett and Crabtree appeared extremely nervous, and I assumed it was due to the F.O.P.'s involvement in CIA cocaine operations. "Everybody knows the F.O.P. is involved in CIA cocaine operations," I consoled them. "It doesn't mean all police are corrupt. I'm not suggesting you two are corrupt just because I knew so many who are. There's good and bad in everything—even the CIA. Even politicians. Even Masons. I'm not painting everyone with the same brush." I smiled.

Mark changed the subject. "There is a major cocaine deal going down in town this weekend. One of the CIA's main players, Hank Cochran, is scheduled to appear at The Gold Rush."

"He's a singer and songwriter in the country music industry," I added. "I lived on his farm in '78 when Wayne Cox was working with the Mandrells. It all ties right back into Byrd again. Irby Mandrell, the girls' father, even bragged how Byrd had them programmed and harmonically tuned right here in Huntsville[5]."

Mark and I supplied sufficient detail of Hank Cochran's cocaine operations with the CIA for a bust to be set up. Crabtree and Bennett drew up the plan, which would occur the next evening in the parking lot of the Gold Rush. Mark and I were to meet them there at 6PM, after which back up would arrive and make the arrests.

At 6PM, Mark and I were parked in the appointed spot waiting for Crabtree and Bennett to show up. Hank Cochran's gold Mercedes pulled up to the door of the lounge. He snorted a line of coke right in plain sight before going in to the Gold Rush.

“Did you see that?” I shrieked. “How much more obvious do these guys have to be before justice prevails? Where are Bennett and Crabtree?”

Hank Cochran’s driver slowly got out of the car with his huge, 50 caliber Desert Eagle gun drawn. Standing behind the car door, he nodded his head for another passenger to go into the building with what appeared to be a heavy leather bag.

“That’s the biggest gun I ever saw in my life,” I whispered as the driver scanned the parking lot for any witnesses.

“Kiss me, quick!” Mark pulled me close for what he hoped would look enough like a passionate sex act to give us time to pull out. He pushed my head down, backed the car out of the parking lot, and drove away.

“Where were you guys?!” I demanded to know the next day.

“If you want to live, leave.” Bennett gestured over his shoulder to cops surrounding the so-called ‘safe house.’ “Our Sergeant doesn’t want you here.”

“Our Sergeant is Sgt. Crowley. He doesn’t know you’re here yet.” Crabtree tried to soften the threat. “You’d better leave before he finds out.”

“Now!” Bennett ordered. Referring to the cops surrounding us, he said, “These guys will escort you out of town and out of the state.”

Mark calmly smiled at Bennett and patted the weapon he and Crabtree knew he carried. “I knew how to get here, and I know the way out. You haven’t heard the last from me, you chicken shit son-of-a-bitch.”

I gathered our few belongings from the ‘safe house’ while Mark telephoned Cramer’s office. Cramer’s assistant Barbara Johnson was already aware of this turn of events. Her only voiced concern was to ask if Crabtree had cashed the Violent Crimes Compensation check for us as instructed. He had. We threw our belongings in the car while the ‘police posse’ lined up their vehicles to escort us out of town. Mark drove smooth and deliberate, loosing many of them at the first red light, so that few were left by the time we turned back on to Highway 72.

The whole Huntsville experience proved quite productive in spite of the life threatening turmoil surrounding us. We received the necessary emergency funds, learned numerous pitfalls to avoid, and somehow managed to survive the whole ordeal. I grew wiser from seeing the magnitude of the cover-up and corruption emanating from NASA.

Chapter 6
JUST ‘CAUSE

“My mother will let us stay at her house[1] while we finish getting Kelly transferred and report these crimes to the Feds,” Mark told me. We had arrived back in Nashville without further incident and wearily unpacked our belongings into a small bedroom in Melba’s house.

Melba’s fall from the horse she was riding with Mark when he was only six years old had left her severely brain damaged. Mark not only raised himself, he had taken care of Melba all his life. Had it not been for his resultant interest in mind sciences hoping to find a cure for her, he may not have known how to help me recover from mind control. I was deeply grateful to Melba, and touched by Mark’s compassion and patience for her and me both.

“I’m glad you’re here,” Melba firmly stated as though Mark had only been away a short while. “Some fellow from Fort Campbell has been calling for you. I told him you weren’t here and he kept calling back anyway.”

“What’s his name?” Mark asked.

“Oh, I forgot.” Melba opened the back door and let one of her countless cats outside.

“’Oh, I forgot’ has been calling here all my life,” Mark smiled and hugged his mother. “Thanks for letting us stay here. Hopefully we won’t need to be here long.”

Melba looked defensive. “Why don’t you want to stay here?”

"I didn't say 'I don't want to stay here,' Mother," Mark patiently explained. "I simply hope it won't take us long to accomplish what we have to do."

Mark opened the refrigerator door. "I'll cook dinner tonight if I can find anything." Moving aside bottles and jars of clouded fuzz and black goo revealed nothing but a few furry green balls.

"That's not edible." I was relieved Melba knew the difference between spoiled and edible food. She opened the pantry door. "This is fresh."

Mark eyed the contents and reached for a can of albacore tuna fish.

"That's cat food!" she shrieked.

"You feed your cats albacore?" Mark asked.

"They're finicky."

"So am I," Mark said as the phone rang.

"It's that man again," Melba said. "You answer it."

Mark was looking for bread to go with the tuna fish, and, as a rule, I did not answer the telephone in the event it was a 'tone call.' A harmonic tone delivered by telephone was Byrd's prior method of triggering me into robotic compliance with whatever orders followed. Melba answered it herself. It was her neighbor across the street, checking to see who was at her house.

"Mark is finally here to take that call from the Fort Campbell fellow," Melba told her. Wow. There would be no secrets around here. I wondered how many people knew about this, or if it was even relevant. I soon found out. Next time the phone rang it was him.

"How'd you get this number?" I heard Mark ask as he brushed a cat away from his tuna fish. I went back into our tiny room to tidy it up and put our clothes in the drawers. A few minutes later, Mark slipped into our room, quickly closing the door before the cats followed. I sneezed.

"I'm sorry about the cats," he said as I blew my nose. "You finally got past that histamine[2] problem, and now this."

"That's OK," I sniffed. "At least they've got some quality tuna to share with us."

Mark smiled, and then got serious. "The timing of that phone call has me wondering. It seems Fort Campbell already knows we were reporting Aquino's crimes in Huntsville. Jim Dibble, a Defense Intelligence Agency 'special agent' assigned to the Fort Campbell Criminal Investigation Division, wants to interview you. He just came back from Panama where he was chief investigator of Noriega's lair. Apparently he found some things that link Noriega to Aquino and CIA drug ops."

"At least he'll have a point of reference for understanding what I'm reporting. When is he coming?"

"Day after tomorrow. I told him to give us some time to settle in and unpack before he starts demanding documents and paperwork. I'm not real sure what his agenda is, and it makes me nervous that he found us through Huntsville. I'm going to make a phone call when we go into town tomorrow and check him out with my sources." Mark tested the bed. It didn't bounce when he patted the spot next to him. I snuggled into him, finding all the comfort in the world in his arms.

My mind drifted back to Operation Shell Game[3], and Bradenton Beach, Florida just

outside of McDill Air Force Base. It was 1987 in the heat of Iran Contra, and Noriega had already been warned to cease his CIA cocaine activities for a while. Yet he was as brazen and obvious as ever. Since I had had dealings with Noriega in the past[4], I was to be used for this operation under orders from Dick Cheney[5], who was still working in his basement quarters of the Pentagon at the time. The plan was to appeal to Noriega's occultic superstitions, which included Aquino's so-called wizardry, my extensive mind control programming, and delivery of an ultimatum to him from then-President Reagan. I could still recall the verbiage of the message in photographic detail[6], complete with the voice inflections used when the message was instilled and subsequently when it was delivered.

"Is Dibble superstitious?" I asked. "Or does he know that Aquino's satanic power is in the form of a stun gun and Nazi-based mind control?"

"Superstition begins where knowledge leaves off," Mark said. "I have no clue if Dibble can even think for himself, let alone where his knowledge leaves off."

"Well, we can't go wrong with truth," I stated.

"If you surpass his point of reference for understanding it, he may not recognize it as reality."

"But truth never goes away," I argued. "Eventually he'll get it."

"Time is not our friend right now," Mark countered. "And we don't need Dibble as an enemy. He just returned from Operation Just Cause and he's in a high level position to 'just cause' us problems."

"Can we ask him about the harmonics used against Noriega?"

Mark knew I was referring to the highly publicized "rock music" embedded with harmonics that US soldiers strategically blared through boom-boxes into the Vatican embassy where Noriega was hiding out prior to his capture. "Approach the subject carefully," Mark advised. "Dibble may buy into the deliberate misnomer that 'lyrics' affect the subconscious rather than harmonics[7]. You've got to consider that Dibble has heavy Catholic[8] ties into this, and may be as superstitious as Noriega and Aquino combined."

“I’ll just answer questions,” I concluded.

“Why offer Fort Campbell information on Aquino, anyway?” Mark asked. “They know him better than we do. If Dibble is ‘investigating’ Aquino, his own people have either left him in the dark or they’re sending him in to find out what you’ve remembered.”

My stomach growled, and I changed the subject. “Did you find anything in the kitchen to cook for dinner?” Mark was a gourmet chef, having learned how to cook in France some years previous while working with Capital International Airways. C.I.A. had an office at Orley Airport in France, which was in close proximity to the chef school he attended. How fortunate for me since my meager diet for so many years limited my ability to even boil water. Mark seemed like my ‘universal justice of the food.’ I ate well these days, even when we had no budget for groceries. It was he who was enduring a radical shift from the high quality food he was used to.

“We’ll have to go to town for groceries tomorrow. There’s still plenty of albacore tuna fish in the pantry, though.” Mark smiled at me. “Have you noticed that the poorer we are, the better food tastes and the hotter sex is?”

His simple question caused me to ponder our circumstances. I really did not have a comparative by which to answer. We were financially devastated by the time my digestive problems allowed me to indulge in Mark’s cooking, and it is still by far the best I’ve ever tasted. And sexually, I felt as though he were the first real sex I ever had despite incest, pornography, prostitution, and being used as a White House/Pentagon level sex slave. Before Mark, I had no idea that a body could endure so much pleasure! The sex I was trained for under MK Ultra mind control was autogenically derived, often brutal, and perverse. With love comes sexual freedom, and sexual freedom is more fun than my programmers could begin to imagine!

“How can being poor feel so rich?” I asked.

“We’ll always remember the love of these times,” Mark caressed me. “Let’s embrace the moment because we won’t be poor for long[9].”

The next morning, Mark and I drove to the nearby town of Dickson in search of groceries. What little food Melba had was for her and the cats, and she needed a more substantial diet as well. We stopped by the local Catholic church where I requested a few groceries from charity, and sought advise on how to officially report the ritual and sexual abuse I experienced within the church by priests.

“You shouldn’t even be alive!” roared the attending priest. “There is nothing for you here.” The massive doors swung shut behind me. As I walked back to the car, I wondered what the local parishioners would think of their priest’s attitude. Perhaps they would withhold their donations and weekly offerings if they knew the hungry were being turned away and ignored. What action would they take for the children’s sake?

“Well, how’d you come out?” Mark asked as I got back in the car.

“I landed on my feet when the priest threw me out.”

Mark put his arm around me, “I’m sorry he treated you that way. Someday the church is going to pay for ignoring blatant and rampant abuse,” he comforted me.

“I’ll just keep talking until someone listens,” I smiled through my tears.

“Apparently Kelly is talking, too, and is being heard all the way to Washington, DC.” Mark informed me. “I just made that phone call about Dibble, and learned that Kelly’s situation is far more pressing than my concerns about Fort Campbell’s ‘suicide soldiers.’”

“What suicide soldiers?”

“That’s what they call Fort Campbell’s 101st Airborne around here. Everyone in the vicinity knows the fighting elite is programmed. Anyway, Dibble is not a threat. It’s Kelly’s surroundings that we need to secure.”

“Can we still go see her?” My heart caught in my throat at the thought of being delayed from seeing Kelly any longer.

“Of course,” Mark said, backing the car out of the church drive. “I want to see her, too. But I’ve got to see to her safety, first. We need to have a few key packets of information red bagged to DC through Congressman Clement, and meet with US Customs officials in the Nashville office before we make plans to travel to Kentucky.”

Returning to our immediate need I suggested, “Let’s go to Second Harvest Food Bank. They are notorious for feeding the hungry even when it’s not Thanksgiving – and they don’t answer to the church or the government. People helping people. That’s what works best.”

Mark pulled into their parking lot. Before I could even tell the Second Harvest workers my need, they told Mark to back the car up to the loading dock. “You wouldn’t be here if you weren’t in need,” they cheerfully said as they filled the car with boxes of groceries.

“I hope this is the last time I’ll have to rely on you,” I said as I thanked the compassionate workers. “Soon I’ll be able to contribute instead.”

“No one wants to be poor,” a Second Harvest worker told me. “Life has its struggles, though. As long as you have need, you have help available right here.”

With the car loaded with enough groceries for all three of us, Mark drove back to his mother’s house. “Next time we’re in Nashville,” I vowed, “I’ll look up the archdiocese and report Catholic abuse directly to them. Surely all Catholics aren’t involved in this. Even if it’s a cardinal law to usher pedophile priests from church to church, there’s bound to be someone who cares about the welfare of the children.”

Before we finished pulling into the driveway, Melba opened the front door and hollered to Mark, “When’s dinner? I thought you were cooking?”

The next day I set out a few cookies I'd baked while Mark brewed coffee. Jim Dibble's line of questioning quickly revealed that Mark's conclusions were accurate as usual. Fort Campbell was interested in finding out what I had remembered, while Dibble's apparent superstitions revealed nothing new to us. The best we were able to glean from the meeting was a direct connection to the Tennessee Bureau of Investigation's Andy Earl and Goodlettsville Police Chief Fred Schott, who both were reputed to be honest.

Mark and I intended to turn information over to the TBI anyway, and perhaps we could obtain a measure of protection for Kelly through Chief Schott. Kelly and I had been kept in Goodlettsville during the course of our victimization, and Alex Houston was still residing there. Our first order of business would be more far reaching, however, from US Customs and Congressman Clement's office to Washington, DC.

Chapter 7
WASH. DC

Lou Bock," the US Customs agent extended his hand. "I've been expecting you. Please sit down." Lou gestured toward two chairs crammed into his small, sparsely decorated office.

Mark laid the packet of information on his desk as we sat down. "You've stirred quite a bit of interest throughout the agency," Lou said. "Apparently much of the drug information you turned into our Alaska office has already checked out. Why are you bringing a classified issue like mind control into this?"

"There's a little girl's life on the line here," Mark told him.

"She's my daughter," I continued, "and she's tangled in the mental health system's bureaucratic red tape due to cover-up. The CIA uses MK Ultra mind control victims like us in their drug operations because they believe it will keep their criminal covert activity secret."

"Obviously they're wrong," Mark said. "We had more details of their 'secrets' red bagged[1] to DC this morning on the way over here."

"You could get further in your efforts if you left mind control out of this," Lou advised.

"It's love for my daughter that motivates me to expose this high level criminal mess," I argued. "I'm not in this for vengeance, bitterness, hatred, or any other negative purpose. Love is the most powerful force in the universe and it is love for Kelly that compels me to make a positive difference for her and our country."

"Look," Lou said. "Your chances of survival are probably slim, and I cannot in all good conscience proceed without at least offering you protection through the Federal Witness Protection program."

Mark injected, "Lou, you've got to understand something here. Federal 'Protection' is an oxymoron in this case. Let's get real. Kelly needs qualified rehabilitation. She needs protection *from* the Feds, not by the Feds. If you saw what their containment efforts were doing to that child, you would be outraged."

"I'm sure the mental health system doesn't even know what mind control is," Lou conceded, "let alone how to safely treat someone who's been subjected to it. Especially not a child. Why didn't you rehabilitate her?"

Mark sighed. There was no way Lou could know the depth of emotion this issue stirred in him. "Kelly was exposed to harmonics since birth." Lou frowned and set down as Mark continued. "She needs rehab suitable for her need. Cathy was subjected to the old method of physical and psychological torture. My own past in Intelligence provided me what I needed to know, as well as who, to ensure Cathy's deprogramming was a success."

"How do I know her deprogramming was successful?" Lou turned to me. "Ms. O'Brien, isn't it possible that people you've named is just a fantasy of yours for publicity's sake?"

"I wish it was 'just a fantasy'. Then those politically affluent perpe*traitors* like Senator Byrd wouldn't be spending so much time and our country's money on covering-up Kelly's need. We might get further in our efforts to obtain Kelly's right to qualified rehabilitation *plus* gain the publicity necessary for raising awareness and inciting necessary change."

"Byrd?" Lou raised his eyebrows. "Are you sure this isn't just a publicity stunt?"

"It's backwards if that was my intent." I was raging now. "If I wanted to create a sex scandal, I would have chosen a Kennedy or something more believable than Byrd! Have you ever seen him? I have, and that was torture in itself.”

“Is this why you talk about his penis size?” Lou asked.

This line of questioning seemed so trivial to the magnitude of what needed to be accomplished. “Kelly reported Byrd’s unusually small penis size in two institutions already. It’s something Byrd can’t change anymore than I can change the vaginal mutilation he ordered performed on me.”

“OK,” Lou stroked his chin. “Let’s get back on point. We’ve got US Customs Internal Affairs coming in on this, and you are going to be asked a lot tougher questions than these. There are many of us aware of the CIA’s drug operations like Operation Watchtower[2]. You’ve identified a few of our own, and individuals like Jose’ Busto[3] masquerading as an Immigrations officer. We’d like for you and Mark to cooperate with us. Maybe we can even get some financial compensation for you for your information, although your refusal to accept Federal Protection makes it doubtful.”

“We could use some help with Kelly’s situation,” Mark said. “It is extremely difficult to obtain effective rehabilitation for Kelly when the government is hell-bent on covering-up the cause. Now she is telling unskilled therapists about classified CIA drug ops, and it’s creating serious problems because they don’t know what to keep secret. The Feds just found out she is talking, and her circumstances are becoming precarious. Neither Federal Protection nor money can solve her problems, but perhaps Customs can help keep her safe. Of course we’ll cooperate regardless of any compensation. Customs has consistently cooperated with us. We can’t meet with Internal Affairs next week, though, since we’re already scheduled for a lengthy interview with the FBI.”

“I already know about your FBI meeting.” Lou chose his words thoughtfully. “Do you have a tape recorder?”

“Running right now, as a matter of fact.” Mark flipped open his briefcase while Lou rolled his eyes.

“Great. Bring it with you.” Lou pantomimed for Mark to turn it off, then continued. “I’ll go with you, if you want. You’ve got some trouble waiting for you. Better yet, I could arrange for them to meet us here.”

“Let’s have them meet us here.” Mark closed his briefcase, concluded arrangements for next week’s meeting, and shook Lou’s hand. “Enjoy DC. Every time we turn information over to a Federal agent, they’re flown to Washington, DC. I’m sure you’ll be no exception.”

I followed Mark out the door, still shaking inside with rage from Lou’s line of questioning. “I thought Customs was going to be of help,” I complained.

“They are,” Mark began.

“I can’t see it!”

“It’s hard to see when you’re blinded by emotion. Think logically.” Mark started the Pacer. “There’s more to this than you know, and you’re jumping to conclusions based on emotion.”

“I’m sorry,” I apologized. “I just want Kelly’s situation resolved, and it seems there is no where to turn for help.”

“I don’t want to hear ‘I’m sorry.’ I want to see the results of your being ‘sorry.’ Expand your thinking,” Mark advised. “You are jumping to conclusions based on your past dealings with a few criminal Customs officials involved in CIA drug ops. There is more to know than what your experience has taught you. Look beyond your own experience. Think further.”

I felt like I was at my wit’s end and my brain was falling into the black hole that demanded expanded thought in order to rise above it. I wasn’t being mentally lazy. My brain was used to exercise now. I simply didn’t know which direction to expand my thought.

Mark sensed my lack of direction. “When you look through eyes of hope and trust in truth again, your vision will clear.”

How fortunate I felt to be rehabilitated by Mark. His patience and wisdom made all the difference in the world to me. I thought about his statement as he navigated us through Nashville's heavy rush hour traffic. My vision did begin to clear, and my thought expanded beyond perceived negativity to other statements Lou had made.

"What is Internal Affairs?" I finally asked.

"Customs is cleaning their own house[4]. They're disgusted with CIA containment, illicit drug operations, corruption on the borders, and having their legitimate investigations terminated in DC. So Customs Internal Affairs is cleaning up the agency so they will have the necessary power to overcome the filth permeating the so-called Justice Department. This country needs one reliable agency, and it sure isn't the current CIA or DEA[5]. Customs had a brilliant man running the agency who is legitimately clean and is still determined to overcome corruption."

"Who is he?" I asked.

"William Von Raab[6]. He was Commissioner of Customs when we turned information over to Max Kitchens in Alaska, and he's in a position to make a world of difference for all of us."

"I didn't know anyone clean could even make it to the top of a Federal Agency." I was impressed. Mark was right about my past experience limiting my knowledge. People often draw conclusions based on what they know, and they need to know their knowledge base has been deliberately limited by government secrets. I got excited.

"Everyone needs to know about Von Raab!" I exclaimed.

"People are as blinded by emotion as you were a few minutes ago. There are very few people these days who have eyes-to-see and ears-to-hear truth. Social engineering through cover-up, censorship, and contrived news keeps the public fearful and emotionally arguing over ancient issues like abortion, cloning, gun control, and song lyrics. People hopelessly rely on government to tell them what to do, then blindly blame and fight each other in drug and race wars designed to separate them from the truth and each other."

"People are so easily led, it's no wonder the criminals I knew in DC refer to them as sheeple. Byrd even said that 95% of the people *want* to be led by the ruling 5%."

"That is a widely known fact," Mark said, "that gives folks like me hope. We only need the majority of that 5% to know and live truth in order to have leaders like Von Raab in power."

"If the majority of the 5% would *serve* the people instead of make the people serve them, we could restore freedom, justice, and peace!" Resolution looked so simple and clear.

"When the people lead, leaders follow," Mark quipped.

"Is the voice of the people leading Von Raab to make a difference?" I pondered. "Who is going to tell them that they are being heard? The news isn't letting the majority rule. With people like Jack Valenti[7] dictating what the public can know from his lofty perch in Hollywood, how will truth be brought to light?"

"Through the thankless efforts of people who dare to live true-to-soul and stand with conviction *without* having to be told they are the majority," Mark replied.

My mind was still rushing from the hope Mark's wisdom inspired when he pulled into Nashville's Catholic Archdiocese for my appointment with Sister Mary-something. Despite my high hopes for humanity, my expectations for immediate resolution to the sexual abuse, occultism, and mind control permeating the Catholic Church were low. Never the less, I would stand by my convictions and exert myself true-to-soul in hopes that the pedophile priests I named would be defrocked rather than simply shuffled around as usual. It would be over a decade before I would see any truth come to public light regarding the Boston mind control connection, but I still asserted what I knew in my 1990 testimony.

“I’ll write up this information and turn it in,” Sister told me. “If I were you, though, I wouldn’t be looking for any more help from the individual churches.”

I was indignant. “I’m sure the Vatican will need the funds generated by Catholic charities more than I ever could, anyway. They’re going to have a lot of lawsuits to defend since I am certainly not the only one recovering from such horrific Catholic abuse.”

She showed me to the door. “You need to forget your past, quit begging, and get a job.”

“The job I’m skilled for because of my past could generate cash, but it is not a consideration my moral standards will allow. I choose to focus on my daughter’s needs and my deprogramming, thank you.”

Feeling empowered rather than discouraged, I walked back to the car pleased that I had stood by the truth with conviction. True-to-Soul is the only way to live. A clear conscience provides clear vision, and I could see hope for the future. “Success!” I announced with a smile. “No groceries, though. Or financial compensation. Or compassion.”

“Your smile is all I need,” Mark said as he aimed the Pacer towards home.

Chapter 8
TWO WAY MIRRORS

With Kelly’s immediate security strengthened, Mark and I used part of the $500 emergency funds released through Bud Cramer’s office to drive to Kentucky. Our long awaited trip to see her at Valley Institute of Psychiatry proved encouraging. She was obviously being listened to and cared for by therapists and staff.

“Dad!” Kelly called to Mark as she flung her arms around him in a big hug. “Wayne Cox is only my biological father… he’s not my dad. You’re the one who loves me, and I love you. So, if it’s OK with you, I’m going to call you dad.”

“Of course,” Mark laughed as I finished signing us in.

“I’ve missed you so much, Kelly!” I cried as she jumped into my arms. “I wanted to see you when I heard you were leaving Alaska.”

“I know,” Kelly said. “The nurse explained everything to me. Now we’re all here safe. I’ve got so much to tell you.”

Kelly’s attending therapist Roger Hargus showed us into a meeting room, quietly explaining to me that our visit would be video taped. “I’ll give you a copy when you leave. Kelly has been remembering quite a bit. You may want this for legal evidence to further protect her.”

As soon as the door closed, Kelly ran over to the two-way mirror and waved. “I know that’s not a mirror,” Kelly said. She excitedly told us about how V.I.P. staff was tending to her asthma, keeping her from total respiratory failure. I knew from past experience, however, that the high doses of medication she was given kept her in a precarious health balance. Kelly went on to explain that she knew who and what we were up against, and thanked me for being such a good mother. Of course I cried. She said, “How many other mothers would take on a whole government for their child?” I was astounded by her insight. She talked in detail regarding sexual abuse by Alex Houston, ritual abuse by Wayne Cox, and sexual/ritual abuse in both Catholic and Mormon churches. She was even remembering CIA cocaine operations, including codes.

“Remember when we took the cruise and got cocaine in St. Thomas where that guy[1] asked, ‘What did the Byrd say?’ He meant Senator Byrd, didn’t he?” Kelly was remembering so much so fast! I was pleased that all this information was being video taped.

“You have to learn your past from the inside out, not from outside input in order to heal,” I told her. “So I really can’t comment on that. Have you written this out?”

“Yeah, but I need to write more. I just haven’t had time yet,” Kelly answered. “Staff is always giving me paper and a pen telling me ‘write it out’. They write a lot of it down, too. I saw them do it.”

By the time we left V.I.P., my arms were full of medical records, staff reports, and the videotape. Still, they felt empty without my precious daughter in them. Hugging her good-bye was more difficult than facing Huntsville, and I cried for hours as Mark drove.

“We need to make copies of Kelly’s V.I.P. records before tomorrow’s meeting with the FBI,” Mark said as we arrived back in Nashville.

“What about the video?” I wondered.

“We really can’t afford to make a copy of it right now,” Mark said, handing me his wallet. “Count our cash and see how many copies of Kelly’s records we can make.”

“That didn’t take long,” I stated as I counted his one dollar bill. “We’ll need to choose only the most important records.”

“I’m expecting some money in the mail. Maybe its at the Post Office.” Mark dug deep into his pants pocket and pulled out a handful of change for me to count while he pulled into his Green Hills Post Office. It was unlikely that we would get any mail since his service had been repeatedly interrupted without explanation since our return to the lower 48.

“There’s still no mail,” Mark grumbled as he climbed back into the Pacer. “I’m getting weary of our mail being illegally confiscated. Even that letter I mailed myself didn’t show up. I wrote the CIA a message to put the mail in the box when they finished steaming it open, and that didn’t work, either. I’ve got to do something about this.”

“While you were in the Post Office,” I told him, “I found a copy shop. Look how convenient it is.” I pointed to the shopping strip next door, which featured the Copy Shop. We walked over and went inside.

Mark and I began reprioritizing our paperwork to copy what few pages we could. “Let’s make sure Customs has copies for safe keeping, even if it means the FBI will have to wait. We can always turn it in to them later.”

“Should I make any copies to go in the red-bag packets we’re dropping off at Clement’s office?” Mark pondered my question, re-calculating our expenses.

“Can I help you?”

That question would reverberate with meaning for years to come. Mark and I turned around, expecting to see a typical print shop employee. Billy was anything but typical. We saw an extremely handsome, well-muscled young man whose bright blue eyes twinkled with intelligence. Billy would eventually become one of our closest friends, and literally a lifesaver.

“No,” Mark told him as he resumed sorting papers. “I can’t even afford to run all the copies I need on this self serve machine.”

“My machine isn’t in use right now,” Billy said. “It won’t cost you anything. I heard you talking and I’d like to help.”

“You have no idea how much this means to us,” Mark said, handing him a stack of documents. “I’m used to giving, not taking. But I’ll take you up on your offer this time.”

Billy slipped some of the papers into the automatic feeder of his copy machine. “Are any of these documents classified?” he asked.

“No,” Mark told him. “It does have to do with horrific government abuse that they’re trying to cover-up, though. There’s a little girl’s life on the line here, and we’re not going to let them cover it up. Have you ever heard of CIA mind control?”

“As a matter of fact, I have,” Billy answered, much to our surprise. “My whole family is involved in medicine in this town, and I know about the Barbara Mandrell[2] incident at Baptist Hospital. Back when Barbara Mandrell banged her head in that car crash, they brought her in to Baptist. There were Federal agents and armed security posted everywhere, and Barbara was talking about the CIA and mind control. Anyone who heard her was told it was a matter of national security, and that they would lose their medical license, life and liberty if they repeated it.”

“Obviously someone did repeat it,” Mark said.

Billy shook his head in agreement. “Everybody knows about it now. What do you know?” Billy invited Mark into the employees’ backroom where they talked while I finished compiling the paperwork for tomorrow’s meeting with the FBI at the Customs office, and sealing the packets to be red-bagged from Clement’s office first thing in the morning. As soon as I finished, Billy opened the door inviting me to join them.

“How’d you know I was through?” I asked, astounded by Billy’s perceptiveness.

“I wasn’t using my psychic abilities,” Billy laughed. “This is a two way mirror.” He showed me the mirror on the backroom wall was actually a window from the employees’ side. “It’s amazing what can be seen through a two way mirror.”

Billy was easy to talk with, and he and Mark got along like old familiar friends. Billy represented the good side of humanity that Mark had been telling me was the majority. It took awhile for me to realize it, though, since years of being exposed to self-centered cruel people had jaded my perspectives. Even after I regained a love for and belief in humankind, Billy still stands out as that one-in-a-million kind of true friend.

Responding to the gratitude we expressed as we went out the door, Billy said, “Anytime. I mean it. *Any*time.”

It seemed we had just gone to bed when the alarm rang, prompting us to prepare for the days events. After stopping by Clement’s office, which ironically was located in the same Federal Building as the FBI, we crossed town to the Customs office where we were scheduled to meet with them.

“Come in,” Lou called from a cluttered corner where he was bent over looking for styrofoam coffee cups. “Can I get you some coffee?”

“Thanks. Cream and sugar for both of us,” I accepted his warm offer. “How was DC?”

“Windy.” Lou did not elaborate.

Mark tossed copies of Kelly’s record on top of the stacks of paper on Lou’s desk. “We brought a few pertinent records from V.I.P. for you. We’ve got a powerful videotape of Kelly’s testimony, too, that we’ll provide you once we make a few copies of it.”

Lou handed us our coffee and looked through the papers, compassion reflecting in his eyes as he silently read them. He cleared his throat. “What do you want the FBI to have?”

“Everything,” Mark said. “They’ve already got the information packet that we turned into the Anchorage office. Plus I turned over the documents to the Jackson, Mississippi office where my ex-wife’s case is active.”

“I sent information to Agent Roger Young in Las Vegas since he’s working on the Michael Dante’[3] aspect of the case,” I added.

Lou quickly searched his mental files. “Who is Dante’?”

“Michael Dante’ is the pornographer in Beverly Hills who covertly videotapes perversions of global leaders for the likes of Reagan. Roger Young was interested in Dante’s collection, due to the impact it could have on global politics. Since I saw the vault in Dante’s mansion where he kept the tapes, Roger Young was asking for all the information I could supply him. I was often used in sexually compromising positions during the Reagan-Bush Administration, and knew who was blackmailing whom for what purpose. These criminals don’t trust each other and have each other by the perversion so-to-speak. Many of the films I was used in were made at Bohemian Grove[4] in Northern California or in the White House[5].”

“How many of these videos were made?” Lou asked.

“I really don’t know,” I told him. “I’m sure Kelly and I weren’t the only ones being prostituted by the CIA for blackmail purposes. The vault in Dante’s house is about the size of this office, and it was stacked to the ceiling with videos.”

Lou looked at his watch and stood up. “Excuse us,” he told me, nodding to Mark to follow him into the other room. Alone with my thoughts, my mind drifted to my sexual encounter with President dela Madrid[6] of Mexico that was videotaped through a tiny fish-eye lens in the ceiling December 1986 in Malibu, California. The Juarez, Mexican border was being opened as groundwork for NAFTA[7], allowing for the free flow of drugs intended to equalize the US and Mexican economies. The party in Malibu brought in then President Ronald Reagan, his friend and head of the Motion Picture Association of America Jack Valenti, George Bush, Jr., Michael Dante’, then Mexican President Miguel dela Madrid, and other high ranking officials involved in CIA drug running, prostitution, and mind control. Dela Madrid was no stranger to government-level blackmail tactics, and had cleverly implicated "Poppy" Bush, Sr.'s involvement with CIA heroin as well as cocaine for the 'hidden' camera.

"They're here," Mark quietly alerted me as he walked back in the office, immediately followed by Lou Bock and FBI Agents Brad Garrett[8] and Phil Tuney. The one who introduced himself as Garrett appeared to be dressed in a satanist costume, looking absurd in his all mat-black attire. Tuney looked like a comic book red nosed alcoholic right out of the funny papers. My amused disgust went unnoticed since their focus was on the coffee corner.

Garrett said, "How 'bout serving us some coffee?"

Lou was rifling through a stack of papers on his desk. Without pausing, he shot Garrett a sharp look and said, "I know you guys are used to serving the CIA in your office, but we don't serve anyone around here. Help yourself."

Garrett and Tuney leaned against the desk, coffee in hand, and took the packet of information Mark handed them.

"The left hand doesn't always know what the right hand is doing," Mark began, "so here's a duplicate of the information we've turned in to the FBI through the Alaska, Mississippi, Las Vegas, and DC bureaus."

"We've seen this. And if what Ms. O'Brien says is true, she would be too crazy to remember it," Garrett began.

"Much of what she has said has already checked out," Lou told him.

Garrett puffed out his chest even further. "I am a psychologist working for the FBI."

"Good," Mark said, matter-of-factly. "Then you're aware of mind control. Are you familiar with harmonics, or just Aquino's occult-based variety?"

“We know about trauma-based mind control.” Tuney responded, seething. “In order to avoid further trauma, you *know* you want to disappear into our Federal Protection Program.” He pulled a file from his briefcase. “Everything is in order for all three of you to enter.” He pushed the file toward Mark.

Mark looked him in the eye without picking it up. “You must ‘know’ that Ms. O’Brien and her daughter need protection *from* the Feds not by the Feds, and frankly, I’m quite capable of seeing to their safety.” Mark patted his briefcase and side. “You see I am a one man army.”

Lou rolled his eyes, frustrated that Mark was resorting to a veiled threat in his office. While Tuney cited reasons Mark shouldn’t carry a weapon into a Federal office, Garrett began using subtle Jesuit mind control hand signals in an effort to trigger me. Tuney added a couple of signals as well, including the occult sign of the horns, which indicated to me that both had been cued on my old mind control programming. I tried not to smile as Garrett, who apparently thought I had not seen his antics, intensified his signaling. Both he and Tuney were hand signaling so intensely they looked like they belonged on a baseball field.

“Since you are an FBI psychologist,” I told Garrett, “you must know the difference between *de*programming and *re*programming. Had I been reprogrammed over the top of my old programming, your hand signals would have worked by now. Since I have actually been *de*programmed, not only will I ignore your efforts, you can spread the word all the way up to Dick Thornburgh[9] that I have remembered everything.”

“And you,” Mark pointed at Garrett with his middle finger, “be sure and tell Aquino his hand signals are antiquated.”

“I don’t know what you’re talking about,” Garrett began.

“Its all in here,” Mark pointed, still using his middle finger, to the information packet we had given them. “I thought you said you read it?”

Tuney was slamming the Federal Witness Protection documents in his briefcase, while Garrett picked up the documents. “I’m sure we’ll see you again,” Garrett glared.

“You know it. Give our best to the boys in DC[10],” Mark told them as they shook hands with Lou and stormed out of the office.

It was late at night by the time we arrived back at Melba’s house. Melba excitedly gave Mark his day’s messages as I carried the contents of the Pacer into our tiny bedroom. The walls were oddly barren. My pictures of Kelly were gone. My stack of deprogramming notes, collage pieces, and reminder notes was missing. Where was everything? As I turned to tell Mark, I could hear his mother say, “Those men in nice suits came by today for the papers they said you wanted them to have, so I let them in.” I cried. I cried because I felt violated that the Feds cleaned us out again, but most of all I cried because Mark had lived with his mother’s condition all his life.

Mark’s face fell when he saw our empty room and the tears running down my face. “At least they can’t take the pictures I have of Kelly in my heart,” I said. Such a tender man. Such a harsh day.

Mark reached up into the air conditioner return vent and pulled down a small package, examining it. “They didn’t get Kelly’s V.I.P. video.” He looked around a bit more. “Or anything else I stashed. I learned a long time ago to expect to be raided when reporting to the FBI.” He tossed his stash on the nightstand. “Hey, it’s not so crowded in here,” Mark smiled through his weary eyes as he bounced on our twin bed, patting the pillow beside him. I crawled into his arms, his powerful energy flowing through his hand as he cradled my head.

“I know a great way to relieve tension,” he began. How fortunate I felt at that moment to have survived, know love, share passion, and come so far in exposing politically affluent abusers. I was absolutely convinced this brilliant man beside me must have the biggest balls and biggest heart on the planet. Who else could take on such a task against all odds?

Chapter 9
REFLECTIONS

The next few days were spent writing out memory. Seeing George Bush in the news, oftentimes in the company of his close friend and comrade Dick Cheney[1], caused bits and pieces of memory to flash across my mind's screen. Other events triggered memory as well, from songs on the radio to comments people would make in passing. Everything in my environment was a trigger as Mark explained and I wondered how long the deprogramming process would take.

"In essence, it would take ten years x 10 to remember every detail of ten years," Mark was telling me. "If memory is still being triggered, it needs to be deprogrammed. By deprogramming the program first, you have rendered yourself inaccessible. This doesn't mean that you've remembered everything. Take the time to bring to mind what your subconscious is demanding that you focus on."

"Well, I know I told you about…"

"Oh, no," Mark laughed. "Here we go again."

I reached for my notepad and pen. Memories can feel so close and familiar when they surface that oftentimes I thought I'd already recalled and recorded them. I would even begin to dismiss some as trivial. Experience taught me that these recognizable cues indicated I needed to write out intrusive memory.

In addition to regaining control over my own mind and brain through deprogramming, the process was allowing me to reframe perceptions. For example, since I had no concept of time under mind control, I had no point of reference for judging distance whereby my geography was deplorable. Distorted geography is a common trait among people who have suffered from a dissociative disorder. Once I regained awareness of time, experience began to give me a concept of distance. I also learned that *timing* is more important than a concept of time. Under mind control, I had lost this sense of timing, which is crucial to moving in harmony with a bigger picture plan. In addition to becoming consciously aware of my past, there was a whole world of information to learn!

Sometimes I felt like the storybook character Rip Van-Winkle, who slept so long the whole world had changed when he awoke. My environment had been controlled all of my life in an effort to keep me from inadvertently being triggered into reality. Many of the politicians I was exposed to were in the news, and their deliberately formed public projections were in conflict with my personal experiences. Therefore, my television viewing was controlled. The subconscious effect of harmonics in music was well understood by those involved in MK Ultra, and therefore my music was as controlled as my television viewing. I didn't get to listen to the 1960's peace and freedom songs, or watch the hippie movement on television, as would have been my natural choice. Instead, I listened to the music my abusers chose, and watched what they instructed me to watch.

I listened to Byrd's old-style country music fiddling, Ford's favorites like Rod Stewart's "Tonight's the Night," Dick Cheney's classical music, Reagan's choice of Michael Jackson or love songs by Air Supply, and songs I was conditioned to trigger to like Lionel Richie's "Three Times a Lady."

When I was being conditioned at puberty, my father excitedly encouraged me to listen to Michael Jackson (still of the Jackson 5) and Donny Osmond (of the Osmonds) as they were "of the same MK Ultra genetic project" that I was. Because of my father's dialogue, I sensed an understanding of them beyond the media hype and advanced harmonic technology, which further enhanced the effects their music had on me.

On TV, I saw the Wizard of Oz, Disney Classics, Twilight Zone, and horror movies I never would have chosen. The phenomena of experiencing other people's choices in a controlled environment caused me to be out of sync with what the general population knew based on their ‘normal’ experience. For example, Mark would refer to ‘60’s rocker Joe Cocker and I’d say, “Who?” I would laugh at an ad campaign that was funny to others ten years previous. Or I would have no concept of the public conditioning ad campaigns behind mass social engineering experiments like Hands Across America.

My concept of the people I had been exposed to on the highest levels was beginning to merge with public perception, giving me a clear view of how the public is led. Having been exposed to Reagan[2] the way I was for years, my perception began to merge with the understanding that people had forgotten to consider he was an actor despite his reminding them. They believed his screen image, following what he said rather than watching his contrived actions. People listened to the words of corrupt Congressmen like Jim Traficant[3] rather than watching voting records to see what was actually *done*. Sensing the energy of individuals such as Bill Clinton[4], combined with my experience with him in the drug industry, made it difficult to understand how people could see him as anything but a drug lord. How could people look past Dick Cheney’s sneer to believe he was the least bit concerned with serving humankind as an “elected” official? Over the years, I watched people like Tim Roemer[5], who appeared to be the most robotically mind controlled individual I had ever encountered, be “elected” into Congress. I watched while unlikely, low charisma people like Pennsylvania’s Tom Ridge[6] were slipped into public office. In order to express the reality of my past, I would have to reach a public whose point of reference was deliberately distorted through social engineering.

Since I was still remembering and reframing, Mark utilized his understanding of human nature to diplomatically bring the reality of mind control to light. He wrote hundreds of letters[7] that reached through misperceptions in an effort to incite positive change through public awareness. Responses would trickle in for years despite the 1947 National Security Act continuously limiting action from those who should overtly help.

He pleaded for help from organizations including Amnesty International, the Christic Institute, the Rainbow Coalition, the American Psychiatric Association, all major Judicial and Oversight Congressional Committees, all major news media, law enforcement of Federal, State, and local levels, domestic and international Intelligence, and groups and politicians on a global scale. He even wrote letters to high-level perpe*traitors* from my past, which concerned me until he explained. “They have no cause to silence us if they know their secrets are already out. Besides, it might keep them from raiding us again if they already have everything we are releasing.”

Mark’s letter writing campaign encompassed the globe even before the Internet became the peoples’ mode of communication. He knew that if he reached the controlling 5% with the truth on mind control, that many paradigms were subject to shift, causing perspectives to change. For those operating on a Need-to-Know basis, the information on mind control could expand their vision to what and whom they were actually working for. Those who ignorantly relied on mind control slaves to keep their secrets suddenly realized deprogramming was a reality that could publicly expose them. Those who believed in Reagan’s statement that the only way to world peace was through mind control of the masses began to rethink their shallow conclusion. Without free thought, there is no free will, and without free will there is no soul expression. What kind of world peace could humankind achieve without peace within?

My stack of deprogramming notes looked small in comparison to the stack of letters Mark had produced by the time we went back into Nashville the next week. Although we momentarily lacked the finances for copies and stamps necessary for distributing them, we were determined to prevail.

“Where there’s a will there’s a way,” Mark assured me as he parked the Pacer in the Tennessee Bureau of Investigation parking lot, where we had our first meeting of the day with Agent Andy Earl. Our meeting was brief since Andy Earl’s honest intentions could not override his superior’s orders for containment. He strongly recommended that we meet with his friend Goodlettsville Police Chief Fred Schott. We left the previously prepared information packet, documents, medical records, and my testimony with the TBI and drove straight to Chief Schott’s office.

Chief Schott listened attentively as I detailed physical and sexual crimes Kelly and I had endured in Goodlettsville through CIA mind control handler Alex Houston. Mark handed him the documents and an information packet, along with the V.I.P. video of Kelly's testimony.

"Alex Houston is just outside my jurisdiction by 500 feet," Chief Schott told us, looking at the city map on his wall. "I'd arrest him if I could. You have more than enough evidence here." He invited us to stay the morning to talk with him anyway, as he was acutely aware of the CIA drug operations and mind control proliferating in his town.

"I knew Barbara Mandrell was under mind control[8] when she had that head-on collision a few years back. That bump on her head caused her to talk. The Feds that showed up on the scene told me what I was hearing was a 'matter of national security.' When I went to the hospital to check on her, there were armed guards everywhere. I was the investigating Police Chief and they wouldn't let me in!"

Chief Schott tipped us as to who was involved in cover-up, and whom he believed would pursue justice at all costs regardless of the criminals' affluence. He told us numerous other stories of CIA cover-up involving cocaine, murder, and mind control. He had investigated the death of country music singer Keith Whitley, concluding that he had been murdered. Yet the case was closed and covered-up despite Chief Schott's expert evidence. "It's bad enough to try to rise above CIA containment, but it's even worse when a popular entertainer is involved. As soon as I'd say the name 'Lorrie Morgan' or 'Keith Whitley' – let alone mention 'Barbara Mandrell' – no one wanted to hear it."

"We've experienced the same thing," Mark said. "People would rather hold on to their illusions than face the truth."

"It seems to me that people have to know their own truth before they can embrace someone else's," I philosophized.

Mark elaborated, "The average public is socially engineered to the point where they no longer think to look within."

“I know one woman who isn’t afraid of truth,” Chief Schott told us. “She works out of Governor McWherter’s office with the Organized Victims of Violent Crime, and even he can’t seem to keep her quiet. She’s honest and doesn’t care about politics or prestige when it comes to stopping crime.” He advised us to contact Edith Hammons right away.

“You’ll need to see the Sumner County District Attorney first, though, to keep Alex Houston away from Kelly. His name is Ray Whitley[9], and he’s a friend of mine. I’ll call him and tell him you’re on your way.”

We thanked Chief Schott, and drove to the Sumner County D.A.’s office. After waiting four hours outside General Whitley’s office for our ‘immediate’ appointment, we decided to leave the information and reschedule for the next day. General Whitley was sitting at his desk when we opened the door. We should have known something was wrong, yet Chief Schott’s sincerity had overridden our instincts.

“Come in,” Ray Whitley said, as if we hadn’t already taken the initiative. “Chief Schott said you’d be dropping off a video for me. Give me time to take a look at it, and come back in a week or two.”

“A little girl’s life is on the line, here,” Mark told him. “She doesn’t have ‘a week or two’ to wait on you to review this video. We need it back since we couldn’t afford to make a copy of it. We did make copies of the child pornography Houston used her in, though.”

Ray Whitley turned crimson with rage. “It’s against the law for you to hold any child pornography whether you deem it evidence or not. I’ll have you arrested for that.”

Mark smiled. “I don’t believe so. Do you see me holding it? Other law enforcement concerned with justice has it. We’ll just wait for you to take a look at this video so we can pass it on to them as well. We’re not leaving until you see this evidence and take the necessary legal action to stop Alex Houston. We’ll just sit out front where everyone in the square can see how long we’ve waited for you.”

We sat in the hot sun, hoping Ray Whitley wouldn't waste much more of our time. We had used all of our cash for gas to drive to Sumner County, and we knew we couldn't afford to come back. Besides, I knew from experience that this was a very corrupt county, and I was eager to leave.

"Here's your video," Whitley said, bringing it outside to us. "There's not enough evidence on it for me to arrest Houston. You would have to provide me with a video of him having sex with Kelly before I could respond."

"You already said you'd respond by arresting me for providing you with evidence of child pornography. You're making your agenda very obvious." Mark took the video, not yet realizing Whitley had it destroyed while we waited, and we quickly left his office.

"I really want to be free of this county," Mark assured me, "but we need to at least leave an information packet off at the Sheriff's office."

"I doubt they would enforce law in this case any more than Whitley did," I said. "I'll make sure they know about it, though."

We stopped by Sumner County Sheriff Sutton's office, and I dashed inside with the information. "We've been expecting you," Sheriff Sutton sneered. "This is my Deputy Jeff Puccini."

"Have a seat," Puccini gestured to the jail cell, jingling the keys. "I'm sure you'll be here awhile."

"As a matter of fact, the Sumner County Crimes I am reporting are all documented here," I said, putting the information packet on Sheriff Sutton's desk. "Your name is all over it." I pointed to his name on the outside of the packet, and turned toward the door. "I have a car waiting outside who will call for back-up if I don't return immediately."

I was out the door and in the car, which Mark threw into drive as soon as he saw the expression on my face and drove straight to Chief Schott's office.

Chief Schott's eyes filled with tears as he learned of his 'friend's' betrayal. "I'm sorry to have sent you to him without making a copy of that video. I never dreamed he was on their side. I *know* Edith Hammons won't let you down. I met with her earlier today, and she is waiting for you to stop by her house." He gave us her address, which was nearby.

"I thought Ray Whitley was corrupt," Edith announced as she opened the door. "Chief Schott just told me what happened. Come in and have some coffee. Let's talk."

The aroma of coffee filled our sense, and we gladly accepted her offer. "There's not much to eat around here." Edith gestured to her meager surroundings. "People who help victims never have money. Neither do the victims. It seems only the criminals who abuse them have all the money, and they buy justice with it. That's why it's called the *Criminal* Justice system. I can offer you advice, though, and my copy machine. The first rule is make copies of everything because it will be destroyed, tampered with, stolen, and whatever else it takes to keep you quiet. If you have a tape recorder, keep it going at all times. Now when you decide if you're going to spend your last dollar on food or stamps, you'll have to add audiotapes to your list, too. Survival has its price."

"How well we know." Mark sipped the coffee. It wasn't the imported kind he had been used to, and he reached for the sugar and creamer. "We need an attorney."

"I'll see what I can do," Edith said matter-of-factly. "In the meantime, you'll need to report these crimes to the US Attorney General in Nashville, Joe Brown. Last I knew he was clean. But Attorney Generals are appointed by the President and tend to cave in to the slightest pressure from Washington, DC. Plus Joe Brown is already looking shady since he hired Ray Whitley's wife as his secretary."

"No way," I protested. "Isn't that collusion?"

"Don't give him any of your original documents. Make copies." Edith filled her old worn tabletop copy machine with toner ink. She slipped us a ten-dollar bill for gas so we could get to the Federal Building the next day. No wonder she lived in poverty herself. “Come back and see me when you’re through.”

That night, V.I.P. telephoned us at Mark’s mother’s house. “Wayne Cox is on his way. We have high security, but it is not designed to keep mercenaries or the CIA out. We’re releasing her tomorrow. Be here to pick her up.”

Apparently our attempts to stop Cox and Houston from having access to Kelly only intensified the problem. I called Edith Hammons to tell her the news and see if she had located an attorney willing to donate his time. “Randy Stamps was an attorney in Sumner County before he was elected to the State Legislature. He’s in a position to help, and is willing to meet with you right away.”

How clean could an attorney from Sumner County be, let alone from the State Legislature? We’d have to find out. Kelly was out of time.

We met with Randy Stamps briefly in hopes he could stop V.I.P. from releasing Kelly on such short notice. “There isn’t time for me to even file a legal brief on it,” Randy said, compassion filling his eyes. “You have my total support, though. I’ll do all I can to help you realize some form of justice.” He shook our hands. “God bless,” he said, which sounded better to me than ‘good luck.’

Kelly’s bags were already packed when we arrived at V.I.P. the next day. I told Roger Hargus and the Administrator what had happened to the video and pleaded for extra time to arrange for Kelly’s needs. “I have no way of dealing with her respiratory problems right now, and it would be cruel to need to hospitalize her just because Cox pushed your panic button.”

Roger shook his head. “More than that has happened. We already lost our copy of that video, plus a lot of Kelly’s records.” A nurse gave me a small folder with several remaining records in it. “We managed to keep a few documents aside. You take them. It looks like you’re going to need them. Kelly is safest with you, too.” We were quickly ushered out the door.

“Why did the Feds come in last night and take my records?” Kelly asked between wheezes as we all climbed back in the old Pacer. “They’re not even protecting me from Wayne Cox. What more do they need before they’ll help me?”

“Justice comes in many forms, Kelly.” Mark aimed the Pacer toward Nashville. “The wheels of justice grind slowly, but it always prevails because truth by its very nature never goes away. Truth lives a wretched life but always survives a lie. We won’t stop or be stopped until you see some justice. Remember, Kelly, ‘its not over ‘til we win.’ That will be our family motto. ‘Its not over ‘til we win.”

“Its not over ‘til we win,” Kelly echoed, and smiled.

Kelly’s asthma grew increasingly worse as we drove, forcing us to stop by Vanderbilt Hospital in Nashville for a breathing treatment for her. As usual, Kelly did not respond to conventional medical intervention, and soon was transferred to the Intensive Care Unit. Through a series of nightmarish events, Kelly was ultimately transferred to Cumberland House for psychological evaluation.

Meanwhile, Commissioner Rucker contacted the Commissioner of Mental Health, Eric Taylor, to explain his efforts to obtain Kelly’s rights to qualified rehabilitation and to schedule an appointment for me. He also scheduled an appointment for me at then-Governor McWherter’s office, as he was unaware that I had been forced under mind control to work on his political campaign during the Reagan-Bush Administration. Edith Hammons made an appointment for us with, among others, US Attorney General Joe Brown. Mark and I set up appointments as well, beginning with another meeting with Randy Stamps.

As awareness rose and our circle of support increased, the loop of containment tightened around us proportionately.

Chapter 10
“GET TO KILLING”

“Still no mail,” Mark said as he got into the car. “I know Bob Clement is beginning to get responses from the red-bagged mail he delivered for us around Washington, so it’s not like our information isn’t reaching pertinent people. It’s just that their response isn’t reaching us. I have confirmation that the CIA is confiscating it.”

“Why?” I asked. “We’re keeping them informed so they don’t have to steal it.”

“It’s called harassment. I’m going to exhaust every diplomatic means of stopping this before I take personal action.”

Mark and I walked over to the Copy Shop to make enough copies for our immediate appointments.

“How’s it going?” Billy asked

“It seems our problems have intensified a bit,” Mark told him.

“Kelly is stuck in Cumberland House without therapy while the mental health system tries to find a way around ‘national security’ cover-up,” I added.

Mark told Billy about the CIA confiscating our mail, and our pending appointments with Tennessee’s US Attorney General Joe Brown and Nashville’s Metropolitan Police Department.

“Feel free to make all the copies you need,” Billy offered, digging into his pockets. “I’ll cover the cost.”

“That’s not necessary,” Mark declined the offer. “I’ve got a couple dollars and we don’t need many copies today. What we need is our mail. It’s our only source of income right now. Is it alright if I leave Cathy here with you to make copies while I go see some friends about this?”

“Of course,” Billy said.

Mark lowered his voice and explained that our situation was somewhat precarious right now. “You look able bodied to me in the event of any trouble.”

“I am well armed,” Billy smiled, his muscles threatening to bulge through the fabric of his shirt.

Mark hugged me and went out the door.

As soon as I had made the necessary copies, Billy offered me a seat in the back room where he could watch the store through the two-way mirror while we talked privately.

“Are you scared?” Billy asked.

“Not with you around.” I smiled.

“I mean scared of reporting classified crimes to the Feds,” Billy elaborated.

“No. They already know about mind control. The only new part is learning that someone with my inside knowledge can be deprogrammed to think to tell their secrets.”

“You name names. Doesn’t that freak them out to learn the very people they take orders from have a criminal agenda?”

“The good guys appreciate confirmation of their suspicions, and the bad guys just make threats. It really doesn’t scare me. Besides, what are they going to do, torture me? I’ve already been through that and I know how to depart pain. Take my daughter? They already made the mistake of doing that, too. I’m not scared, I’m livid. Now they’re messing with a mother’s love, and love is the most powerful force in the universe. There’s no way to lose.”

Billy smiled. “Mark says ya’ll have nothing to lose, and anyone with intelligence knows better than to back a man in the corner who has nothing to lose. That’s pretty powerful.”

“He is!” I exclaimed. “What are the chances of someone of his fortitude and wisdom coming along and rescuing Kelly and me? It all seems so profound.”

“It is profound,” Billy agreed. “Have you remembered everything about your past?”

“Not yet. I’m still deprogramming and writing out quite a bit of memory. I know the people I was exposed to are influential, but it all seemed so natural the way it happened. There was no glamour or thrills about being around them, that’s for sure. Their political power only equates to an ability to exercise more control, cover-up, and containment. I wish they had all been low-life’s like my father.”

“Is your father locked up?”

“No, he’s still free for ‘reasons of national security’.” I thought about Billy’s question. “Thanks for the perspective. They *are* all low-life’s like my father[1].”

The front door bells jingled announcing a customer. One of the most beautiful girls I had ever seen walked in, and I had been around some of the sexiest women on the planet. Billy’s demeanor did not change while he excused himself, and walked out front. She gave him an envelope, hugged him, and left. “Who was that?” I exclaimed as he walked back in.

“Oh, she’s a friend of mine.” Billy tossed the envelope on the color copy machine. “She wants me to run some color copies for her modeling portfolio.”

“You sure have pretty friends,” I commented.

“I never really thought about it, but you’re right. It’s just the circles I socialize in.” Billy thought a moment. “It must have been like that for you, too. With Ford and Byrd involved in your victimization, you would naturally have met quite a few influential politicians. Add the country music industry, and it’s no wonder you knew so many public people.”

“It is so nice to have someone understand that,” I said. “That’s what I meant about how ‘natural’ it all seemed. I certainly didn’t have preconceived knowledge or perceptions of these people before I was exposed to them, and I know them for what they really are.”

“Same with me and these models,” Billy said. “The one you just saw is my friend and…”

The door jingled again and Mark walked in. “Done,” he announced. “Hopefully our mail service will resume.”

I gathered up the copies and turned to Billy, “And hopefully we will resume our conversation next time. Thanks for everything.” Mark and Billy talked a moment more while I loaded the Pacer and organized for the day’s appointments.

Cumberland House was just around the corner, and we would be stopping by to see Kelly before our appointments. I wanted to appear confident without giving her false hopes, and yet it was all I could do to muster the strength to “visit” my precious daughter. The best I could exhibit was unconditional love, total devotion to her needs, understanding beyond words, and convey my belief in her. The more she believed in herself, the stronger she would be in her adverse environment. All the love in the world could not return her to my arms by the time we had to leave, though. Leaving was always heart wrenching.

We drove silently through town while I refocused on our appointment with US Attorney Joe Brown. When we pulled up to the Federal building, Mark reminded me to disarm for the metal detectors and he did likewise. Joe Brown's office was spacious and expensively decorated as if to intimidate visitors. "I wonder where all this money came from?" I pondered, naturally thinking in terms of the wealth generated by Nashville's illicit drug business with the CIA.

As though reading my mind, Mark pointed to a probable camera and said, "The walls have ears."

I shrugged. I wasn't going to voice what was on my mind anyway. It was already apparent that this would not be a productive meeting. Previously it had been explained to me that US Attorney Generals were appointed by Presidents and placed in every state to carry out the work of their boss, the Attorney General in Washington, DC. Dick Thornburgh, whom I had known for years under mind control while he was Governor of Pennsylvania[2], was currently the top US Attorney General and Joe Brown's boss. The heavy wooden door to Joe Brown's chambers slowly opened, and he invited us in.

"Don't be talking about mind control. No one knows what it means anyway," he began.

"Should we say 'brainwashing'?" I thought he was giving us advice until Mark glanced my way notifying me otherwise.

"You're not likely to live long discussing the topic by any name." Joe Brown folded his arms across his massive chest. "So why don't you shut up and get a life."

Mark bristled and said, "Who's life do you have in mind?"

"I told Edith I'd meet with you," Joe Brown said. "Now that I have, just leave that envelope of documents and I'll see what I can do."

“My daughter…”

Joe Brown interrupted me, finishing my statement his way, “…is not my job. You need to talk with Commissioner Taylor.”

“I did…”

“Well, good.” Joe Brown opened his door. “Thanks for coming by.” He closed the door quickly behind us.

“That went better than I thought,” I said sarcastically as we walked back to the elevator. Mark smiled and put his arm around me.

“I hope this meeting with Metro goes as well,” Mark said. “I need you to wait in the car for me this time. If I’m not out in half an hour, come back here to Clement’s office.”

I considered the gravity of Mark’s statement and glanced around whispering, “The walls have ears.”

“I hope they’re listening.”

The elevator doors opened and we got on, briefly stopping at the FBI level on the way down to the ground floor. Of all people, Phil Tuney got on the elevator. “What a coincidence!” Mark said jovially. “I was reading the funny papers today, thought of you, and now here you are.” Mark kept talking, obliterating any chance Tuney would have had to convey the message he appeared to want to deliver. “Why aren’t you in DC with Garrett? I’m sure he could use you on this case.” The elevator doors opened and we left Tuney dumbfounded to ride it back up to the FBI floor.

“We’ve got more problems with the FBI than you know,” Mark seriously warned me as we drove to the police station. He maneuvered the Pacer into a parking space directly out front. “Half an hour,” he said, checking his wire and recorder. “Watch your watch. If I’m not back, you know what to do.” Mark took his briefcase and went into Metro Police Station.

I had been in there with him before, and it was not a pleasant experience. One homicide detective, Pat Postiglione, was a neighbor of Alex Houston's told me, "We've already confirmed what you reported about the murder in Nashville, and yes it was covered-up by Byrd's friend Lieutenant Ezell[3]. Ezell is dead now, unofficially of a cocaine overdose and officially of a heart attack. Your information is accurate, but that's as far as it goes. You ought to forget about all this and just go live your life."

Forget about it? I had for ten years! Now it was time for action. Kelly's life was on the line, I missed her desperately, and justice had to prevail in order for her to be freed from the grasp of her powerful perpe*traitors*. No one should have to endure what she and I had under mind control, and knowledge is mankind's only defense against it. The only way to bring the knowledge to light was to incite justice. Justice sure was elusive, though. And Postiglione was going above and beyond the call of duty to create further problems. This homicide detective even attended one of Kelly's mental health sessions[4] to counter her testimony with her intake therapist. I looked at my watch. Twenty-seven minutes to go. I took out my pen and notepad, and began writing an event that kept flashing across my mind.

Dick Thornburgh was a happy person considering the magnitude of the corruption he wallowed in all the time. I had met him at a Pennsylvania county fair where Alex Houston was entertaining as a cover for distributing massive amounts of CIA cocaine. Since Governor Thornburgh[5] was associated with the CIA's cocaine operations, he was acutely aware of Houston's true purpose in being there. He also knew that I was under MK Ultra mind control and trained for sex, which he indulged in with me for the next eight years along with the cocaine.

Thornburgh often frequented nearby Youngstown, Ohio's Charm School as though it were a brothel, sharing camaraderie with one of his partners-in-crime Jim Traficant. As Sheriff of Youngstown, Traficant ran the Charm School where I was trained along with numerous other girls to fulfill the perversions of various world leaders until he was indicted for cocaine. Then he was promoted to US Congress, still ran the Charm School, and remained friends with Thornburgh, Byrd, and others I was associated with.

Oftentimes I was trained and programmed at Charm School along with one of Dick Thornburgh's regular sex slaves, and she and I became as close of friends as two mind controlled girls could be. We were often prostituted and used pornographically together, and saw each other every August while Houston traveled the Pennsylvania fair circuit in his motorhome. The hollow walls of his specially built motorhome[6] were lined with cocaine, which further lined the pockets and nasal passages of Dick Thornburgh.

US Customs had reportedly obtained the Norwegian Cruise Lines manifest listing Thornburgh and me on the same cruise in 1987. He was enroute to the mind control training camp in the Dominican Republic along with his friend Jim Zerilla to scout baseball players for national leagues. Mind controlled baseball players were invaluable to the likes of Thornburgh, who oftentimes bet on contrived baseball games. Knowing who was going to throw the game as programmed gave him an enormous edge in the baseball betting scene, and he made vast amounts of money from it as well as from the cocaine muled in by these unsuspecting players. When criminal betting grew so large that it was well known amongst the public, Pete Rose was their sacrificial goat chosen to take the fall. Once again Thornburgh skated free.

As Attorney General, Thornburgh decided which Federal crimes were to be investigated, thereby making Mark's and my pursuit of justice precarious. Nevertheless, Thornburgh's criminal actions did not make all Federal agents bad and we had no alternative but to count on them to make the difference for Kelly.

I checked my watch. Mark still had ten minutes to come out of Metro Police Department. Suddenly he appeared and was striding across the street at a rapid pace. I unlocked the door and swung it open. In one motion, he was in his seat and driving the car away from the station. "Well," he said, wiping sweat from his brow, "that was close. They just threatened my life. That makes twice in one day."

"What?" I paled and swallowed hard, knowing any idle threat would not have fazed him.

“They told me I wouldn’t live long unless I abandoned you, Kelly, and this case now. I told them to get to killin’ because I was not going to stop or be stopped until justice prevailed.”

“Who told you that?” I asked.

“My childhood schoolmate Lieutenant Tommy Jacobs; the Captain of homicide, Mickey Miller; and that jerk who told you to keep quiet, Pat Postiglione. McElroy and Hickson were there, too.

“You told all of them ‘get to killin’?’ I was flabbergasted.

“Mickey Miller brought me into his office to deliver the threat. They were all in there for backup, I guess. I told them I was wired and flipped open my briefcase[7]. They thought I was going to show them my recording equipment, but I used it for a shield and backed out the door. There were quite a few weapons drawn.”

“And you said ‘get to killin’?”

Mark looked at me like ‘of course’ and said, “If they were going to kill me they would have done it when I first walked in. We had better duplicate and distribute this audiotape fast, though. Like now. I’m going back to Federal building for a few minutes. You’ll need to wait outside again *with the doors locked*. First sign of trouble start blowing the horn. You should be OK here, though.” Mark parked in front of the Federal building, took his briefcase, and got out of the car.

“The metal detectors!” I reminded him, believing he would want to disarm.

“Where’s your weapon?” he asked me, and left while I turned to move it within reach.

Every minute felt like hours while I waited. I picked up my notepad and pen to finish what I’d been writing, but never wrote a word. I watched. And waited. Twenty long minutes later, Mark was back in the car.

“Well?” I prompted.

“They’d better get to killin’,” Mark seethed.

Chapter 11
MENTAL HELLth

Following a coded trail that was akin to a child's treasure hunt game, Mark and I arrived at what would be our rendezvous with Randy Stamps. "Sheriff Sutton had my family's life threatened," Randy began, looking PTSDed and nervous. "And we have to be able to live in Sumner County for me to be a Legislator."

The threats that Mark and I had already endured from Sumner County and Sheriff Sutton did not intimidate us. "If they threaten you, they only intend to scare you," Mark assured Randy. "It's when they're quiet that there is reason for concern."

"I'm already concerned." Randy's eyes grew wider. "I'm sorry I can't help you with your daughter's legal dilemma. I don't have the Top Secret Clearance to get around the 'national security' issues, anyway. You can rest assured I'll be doing all I can covertly from the inside. Please don't contact me anymore. Let's keep Edith Hammons as our go-between." Randy hugged us as though it were the last time he'd ever see us alive, nervously glanced around, and ran out the door.

"We certainly have a lot of support hiding behind their desks," I grumbled.

"That's why I always worked alone." Mark put his arm around me. "People fear what they don't know, and they Need-to-Know the truth in order to effect positive change. When folks are left in the dark, they cave in to fear. Bring truth to light, and their path is clear. The criminals you knew were aware of this. That's why they operate on the philosophy that secret knowledge equals power. You know yourself how truth frees you from immobilizing fear. We have to be tough."

I agreed. My previous terror in Huntsville had taught me that reality is much easier to deal with when armed with facts, no matter how harsh, rather than blinded by emotion.

“Besides,” Mark was saying, “when people are left to superstition and conjecture, their conclusions have no basis, rendering them ineffective. We have got to find a way to bring the reality of mind control to light amidst a wealth of misinformation and terror for Kelly’s sake.”

“It really is up to us, isn’t it?” I said, feeling alone in our pursuit of justice and rehabilitation for Kelly. I thought of Kelly alone at Cumberland House, and realized she must be toughest of all. It had been three days since we had been allowed to even see her, and I was anxious to check in on her.

“Hello, I’m Dr. Gaboy, the resident psychiatrist here,” a ghoulish looking man stuck out his wet, limp hand to greet us when we arrived at Cumberland House. Was this some kind of a joke, or had I just entered the set of a horror movie? Mark and I sat down in his office to fill out forms. There was no place on the State forms to write about classified issues, and we filled them out as best we could. Looking over the paperwork we had completed, Dr. Gaboy continued, “You know, there is no such thing as mind control.”

“Some people call it brainwashing,” I said, using the old term.

“There is no such thing as brainwashing, you know.” Dr. Gaboy related an old war story or two from the Korean War, drifting far from any point he might have thought to make.

I tried another approach. “I know there is a lot of satanic activity around here. You must be seeing some victims of occultism.”

“You know, there is no such thing as satanism,” he said. “Come. Let’s go see Kelly now. We are through here.”

Mark looked at me briefly, his eyes telling me that talking any further was useless. I knew he understood my need to get Kelly out of there fast.

Kelly was in an isolation room reserved for newcomers, and I was traumatized just walking in. Kelly sat on a bed, unblinking, sucking her fingers like she did when she was an infant. Blood smears coagulated on the walls, some shaped into pentagrams. A dirty plastic curtain dangled by a paperclip, and the stench from smeared feces was overwhelming. I was outraged.

“No such thing as satanism?” My voice was rising, and Mark nudged me. His look reassured me that we would take care of this situation outside of Cumberland House. Instantly I knew the hysteria I was feeling would not produce the desired results. Mark slipped a camera from his pocket and began snapping pictures of the walls and room. I swallowed my temper, and demanded to see the nurse in charge.

“I’m leaving here for a meeting with Commissioner Taylor,” I told her. “I’m going to report the blood on the walls, satanic graffiti, the unsanitary disarray of Kelly’s room, and most definitely her condition. I want her moved into a new room immediately until I can get her out of here permanently.”

“We were just moving her, Ms. O’Brien.” She scurried to gather Kelly and her clothes. “I don’t know what you are talking about, though.”

Mark had spoken with Kelly while I talked with the nurse, and she had stopped sucking her fingers and was blinking again. We assured her we would be back the next day and hugged her. I stumbled out into the sunlight.

“What time is it?” Mark asked.

I blinked through my tears to look at my watch. “2:50,” I said.

“We have ten minutes to get to your appointment with the Commissioner. Stay alert.” Mark spoke sternly, realizing I was teetering on dissociativeness. “Kelly needs you to be her voice right now. Stay logical.”

When we arrived at Commissioner Taylor’s office, the receptionist was waiting for me at his door. Mark squeezed my hand, and I walked right in. “I know your story,” Commissioner Taylor greeted me. “And I know you have strong political support. I’m already working on your daughter’s case.”

“Are you aware of the extremely poor conditions she is having to endure while you’re working on it?” I briefly told him about Kelly’s desperate mental state under Cumberland House’s ‘care,’ the satanic graffiti, feces, and blood smears.

“I’ll send Marsha Willis over there in the morning. She’s my best worker, and she is assigned to finding an appropriate placement for Kelly. We’ll transfer her immediately to qualified rehab for mind control –anywhere in the country- as fast as Marsha determines there is no one in the State of Tennessee who can do it. You can expedite everything by signing these legal forms that will provide the necessary funding anywhere in the country. Medicaid only covers in-state care, and Commissioner Rucker has gone as far as he can with Federal funding. I know you’re up against ‘national security,’ and this will help circumvent it.” Commissioner Rucker handed me the paperwork, and pointed me to Marsha Willis’ desk.

Marsha was talking with Mark, and stood up as I walked over. “You can file those papers with the Juvenile Court as soon as I determine there is no one in the state qualified to help her. Federal law stipulates that I must go through this exercise,” Marsha assured me. “Mark explained Kelly’s conditions over at Cumberland House, and I would like to meet you there in the morning. Then we can come back here to my office and start the process of transferring Kelly.”

It sounded so simple. Too simple. Mark drove us back to his mother’s house in the country despite being as exhausted as I was.

The next morning when we arrived at Cumberland House the smell of fresh paint filled the air. “You obviously prompted the changes you demanded,” Marsha Willis smiled.

"I'll consider my efforts successful when Kelly is out of here," I replied. Kelly met with us in the day room since her new bedroom was shared with other kids. A small spark of hope shone in her eyes.

"Can you take me home now, Mom?" she asked.

Marsha introduced herself and assured Kelly we were all working on her situation as fast as possible. I talked with Kelly while Marsha explained to the staff that their changes needed to be more than cosmetic[1] as numerous high level politicians were overseeing Kelly's case.

"Is Tipper Gore working on this case?" a Cumberland House staff member asked. Tipper was highly publicized as a leader in state mental health since she was Senator[2] Al Gore's wife.

Staff member Charlene Johnson giggled. "You know she can't sober up long enough to do anything."

Marsha smiled. "Neither she nor Al are working on this case. They are not among the politicians I was referring to. This is a serious case, definitely not intended for publicity or photo ops."

Marsha returned to the Department of Mental Health to work on Kelly's case, where Mark and I soon joined her after concluding our visit with Kelly.

"I've already made numerous telephone calls," Marsha began. "It is really difficult dealing with mental health professionals regarding a classified subject like mind control. They like to believe they already know it all."

Mark and I nodded in agreement. "Have you tried using the word 'brainwashing'?" I asked.

"Yes," Marsha said. "I've even resorted to using the term 'behavior modification' and I'm still having difficulty simply defining the disorder let alone locating rehabilitation for it. If you agree, I'm going to re-start my search in an attempt to locate someone who can diagnose her with MPD[3]."

"Is there anyone within the state who can treat MPD?" Mark asked. "By current mental health standards it takes an average of 8.5 years to diagnose the disorder, during which time it must be treated. Until the Intelligence community can get accurate diagnosis and rehabilitation information filtered into the mental health community, antiquated long-term therapy is the best that can be offered. How do you propose to find anyone in state mental health to diagnose Kelly's CIA abuse?"

"I was hoping you could tell me," Marsha sighed. "I'm up against Federal bureaucratic red-tape that stipulates 'in order for a child to be transferred out-of-state of treatment, diagnosis must be obtained within the state first'. Do you know of anyone with a degree in mental health who could simply diagnose her?"

"I thought Commissioner Taylor was able to override this obstacle," I complained. "That was my whole point in going in to see him in the first place. Who is *his* boss?"

"Louis Sullivan in DC is over the Department of Health and Human Services," Marsha answered. "I'll give you his contact information, and hopefully he can help. In the meantime, I'm going to continue in my efforts."

"Good luck," Mark said as we rose to leave.

As I gathered up paperwork, I thanked Marsha for her appearance at Cumberland House earlier that morning, and for her thoughtful, kind words of encouragement to Kelly.

Riding the elevator back down to ground level, I suggested we go see Edith Hammons. "Maybe she will set up an appointment with Representative Ben West at the Tennessee Legislature, and tell us who we can see with the Department of Human Services here. This route of Commissioner Taylor's has too many road blocks."

Edith greeted us at the door. “I didn’t know you knew Loretta Lynn[4]. I’m related through the Webbs[5]. Years of mysteries are beginning to make sense now that I know about mind control. Come in,” she invited. “I made a fresh pot of coffee.”

Mark and I went in to Edith’s tiny but warm house. “We can talk more about me in a minute,” she said, drying off clean coffee cups from the dish drainer. “I know Kelly is stuck over at Cumberland House while Commissioner Taylor tries to straighten things out, and that your appointments with (Attorney General) Joe Brown and Metro (Police) did not produce the results we need. I want to know what brings you here today.”

“You obviously have good sources of information,” Mark said.

“The best. Me.” Edith poured the coffee.

“Marsha Willis…” I began.

“Commissioner Taylor’s best.” Edith said. “What about her?”

“Commissioner Taylor promised to send Kelly immediately out-of-state to qualified rehab after Marsha confirms there is no one within the state to treat her. In order to do that, she has to obtain a diagnosis from within the state first. Of course, no one is qualified to diagnose classified CIA mind control abuses, let alone treat it.”

“She’s bound by Federal law,” Edith quickly concluded. She picked up the phone and dialed a number into it. “Ben West is a friend of mine. He can help.” She spoke to him for several minutes, and asked, “Can you stop by and see him this afternoon?”

We nodded ‘yes’.

“Good. OK, Ben. They’ll be there after they finish their coffee.”

I couldn’t believe she’d said that to a Tennessee Legislator, as if coffee were more important. He obviously knew her well, though, and it certainly wouldn’t hurt our efforts having her clout behind us when we presented him with our dilemma.

“What do you know about the Commissioner for the Department of Human Services?” I asked.

Edith thought a minute. “You’d best go above and below him,” she answered. “Ben West will be putting pressure on him for you once he hears your dilemma.”

“We will be contacting his boss, Louis Sullivan, in DC through Clement’s office,” Mark said. “And I’ll see about getting a referral in to see a manager over there just to make sure they have all the pertinent information below Sullivan, too.”

We finished our coffee. “What were you going to tell us about Loretta?” I asked as we prepared to leave.

“I always knew she was connected to Byrd, now I know why. The family has been concerned about his influence on her and her career for years. Of course, her talent is so great she would be a superstar with or without his intervention.” Edith sighed. “Our whole family sings. My husband, Ed, my daughter LouAnn, and I sing gospel and even did some touring before I started working with victims. I’m glad to be out of the music business with what I know now. Enough about me,” she said as she hugged us. “You two be careful.”

Mark’s and my appointment with Ben West was encouraging. He understood the dilemma created by state forms that had no fill-in blanks for classified information, and Marsha Willis’ Federal stipulation obstacle. His apparent sincerity and legislative position with mental health still did not surpass the strength of ‘national security’ obstacles, although his inside knowledge promised progress. We left our information packet with him. “I’ll do all I can from the inside until I can find a way clear for resolution,” he told us. “Keep me informed. I’ll tell my secretary to let you in anytime, no appointment needed.” He warmly shook Mark’s hand and hugged me.

We were exhausted from another long day in Nashville when we arrived back at Melba’s house in the country. “That man called again,” she told Mark, looking at a piece of paper she had written on.

“Dibble?” Mark assumed ‘that man’ was the same ‘that man’ Melba referred to by that title previously.

“No, the one who called last night.”

“Dale Griffis?” Mark asked. “Did you get a telephone number this time?”

“Of course not,” she said. “He’s going to call you in the morning.”

Dr. Dale Griffis was an investigator I had talked with in Ohio. His reputation as an occult crimes investigator[6] is not what had initially led us to him. Rather it was his geographic proximity to a major hub of CIA cocaine trafficking. Griffis resided near Henry Ade, who booked acts like Alex Houston into strategic Fraternal Order of Police (F.O.P.) shows to dually entertain and distribute massive amounts of cocaine. Since I clearly recalled that Henry Ade had voiced concern over Griffis’ opposition to the drug trade back when I was under mind control, I thought he might be an ally in exposing the whole mess. My previous conversations with Griffis usually centered on Aquino, though, and then sunk into a pit of superstition despite my best efforts to keep him focused on the CIA cocaine operations. He admittedly suspected the cocaine ops proliferating through the F.O.P. via Henry Ade, yet no official investigation was launched.

The next morning, we learned why Griffis was contacting us now. “Civia Tamarkin is a reporter with *People Magazine*,” he told us. “She covered the story on the McMartin Preschool case in Manhattan Beach, California[7]. She considers you authorities on mind control and wants to help with Kelly’s case.”

Our mental alarms should have gone off. The McMartin Preschool scandal was highly publicized in the US and had threatened to bring the reality of mind control to light in early 1990. The systematic sexual and ritual abuse of the children was being covered-up due to the supposedly Top Secret MK Ultra mind control involved. Mark and I followed the case closely, knowing that its outcome could set legal precedent and stop the vast proliferation of mind control. The media frenzy surrounding the event should have exposed it. Instead, it and the "criminal" justice system discredited the children, their parents, and the massive movement by individuals and organizations nationwide dedicated to rising above CIA containment to expose widespread mind control abuses. Magazines such as *People* who were owned by *Time* of Time-Warner[8] were viewed as part of the containment problem rather than as helpful. Still, Dr. Griffis believed in Civia's good intentions as strongly as he believed in the power of Satan. "Civia considers you authorities on mind control, and would like to talk with you. I already gave her your number."

Despite our skepticism, Civia said all the right things. She knew about national security issues like mind control and CIA drug ops, offering to support us anyway she could. When she heard about Kelly's immediate dilemma, she offered to refer us to a friend of hers within Human Services who worked under Commissioner Grunow. "His name is Charles Wilson, and I'll contact him today to set up an appointment for you."

I immediately set down to pen my letter to Louis Sullivan, who was above rather than below Grunow. "We'll approach the mental health system from all sides," I said, "just like we did the Justice Department."

Chapter 12
POP TOPS and DENTAL FLOSS

Over the next few months, Mark and I literally drove the wheels off the Pacer driving to and from Nashville. The long country road that wound its way to Melba’s tiny rural house was treacherous, and we drove it all hours of the day and night.

On one notable trip back from Nashville to Melba’s, the rear drive shaft broke loose from the universal joint, fell to the pavement, and threw sparks. Mark managed to maneuver it off to the side of the narrow road. Using what little daylight was left, he rummaged through the glove box and scoured the ground for usable parts. He came up with pop-tops and dental floss. I knew Mark was resourceful, using his applicable intelligence to repair everything from my brain to electronics to car engines. There wasn’t anything he couldn’t fix, it seemed, but this time the prognosis looked grim to me.

“Fixed,” he announced before darkness fell. “It’ll make it home if I drive slowly.”

“We’ll never make it,” I concluded out loud.

“Whatever happened to ‘voice no negatives without a solution’?” Mark asked. “What’s your solution?”

“I promise you that if we make it home I’ll never doubt positive possibilities again.”

“Be careful what you promise because I will hold you to it,” Mark smiled. “Do you want to sweeten that bet? I’ve got a few proposals.” We laughed and played the slow drive home, which totally diverted me from worrying about each curve in the mountain road. When we pulled into the driveway, Mark parked the car around back near his spare car parts and tools. As he turned off the engine he told me, “Pay-up time.”

The sun was already high in the sky the next morning when we woke up. Mark slipped into his mechanic’s coveralls and went to replace the pop-tops and dental floss with real car parts. I decided to clean the house before joining him.

I was nearly through vacuuming when Mark came through the door. He stopped in his tracks when he saw the clean floor, and bent over to remove his boots and greasy clothes. “Unless you’re undressing for a fun reason, there is no need for you to take your clothes off.”

“I didn’t want to track up the floor,” he said untying his boots.

“You’re working hard for us.” I tied his bootlaces back up. “I’m not into that power-trip that you need to stop what you’re doing just because I’m cleaning house. That never has made any sense to me. Nothing in life is permanent. Life itself isn’t permanent. Why should vacuuming a floor be? Besides, if it were important to me to have everything spotless, it would take me less time to vacuum up the spot than it would to gripe. Anyway, I’m done.” I wound up the vacuum cord, noticing that Mark still hesitated. “Is there something I can get for you?”

“No,” he laughed, walking towards the bathroom. “I need to do this myself.”

By nightfall the car was repaired and serviced. I was still amazed that pop-tops and dental floss had held the car together for thirty treacherous miles. “How did you know to do that anyway?” I asked him.

“I learned a few tricks that the Cubans use to keep their old US made cars running without replacement parts. Back when the CIA unsuccessfully attempted to assassinate Castro[1]…”

I interrupted Mark to ask, “Isn’t it unconstitutional for the CIA to assassinate foreign leaders[2]?”

“It is,” Mark went on. “Everyone knows they do it anyway. As I was saying, when the CIA tried to topple Castro’s government and assassinate him, we gained Intel-generated insight into the way they live that is invaluable. The trade embargo makes it impossible for them to get replacement parts for the US cars that were brought down there by the Mafia in the ‘40s and ‘50s, so they improvised. One of their ingenious solutions got us home safely last night.”

“Doesn’t the attempt to assassinate Castro somehow tie in with the Kennedy Assassination?”

“Mafioso Meyer Lansky was a major player for the CIA. Even though the CIA and Lansky failed in their attempted coup and assassination of Castro, he later became famous for his association with Jack Ruby. Lansky hired Ruby to kill Lee Harvey Oswald before anyone could question him.”

“Wouldn’t it be nice if people could just share knowledge and ‘ingenious solutions’ rather than fight over differences?”

“Wouldn’t it be nice if people made love not war?” Mark’s tongue-in-cheek response sounded realistic to me.

“Let’s start that movement,” I suggested as I helped him peel out of his greasy clothes.

“That movement started back in the ‘60s,” Mark informed me. I wondered if my Rip-Van-Winkle perceptions would ever catch up to date.

“OK, let’s perpetuate it then.”

The next morning, we went to Nashville early to take care of business and visit with Kelly. We met our appointments with Williamson County officials pertaining to crimes that occurred in their county. Williamson

County District Attorney Joe Baugh and Franklin, Tennessee's Police Chief Wisdom gratefully accepted the information packets.

Like Chief Schott, Chief Wisdom was a friend of Edith Hammons'. He fully expected to be hindered from investigating and prosecuting crimes by the 1947 National Security Act. "We have similar cases around here involving mind control and CIA drug ops, and there is little we can do about it. It makes our job of protecting and serving the people nearly impossible. I'll give it my best shot, though," Chief Wisdom promised.

While we drove back into Nashville, Mark updated me on the most recent FBI containment efforts. "Once again the left hand doesn't know what the right hand is doing. A letter from Senator Sasser[3] reached me, and he accused me of refusing to provide information to the FBI unless I was provided 'monetary compensation' first. If I had actually been stupid enough to demand money from the FBI for information, they would and should have locked me up for Extortion, among other crimes. That accusation is ridiculous coming from Sasser."

"I thought Sasser was clean."

"I thought he was just stupid[4]." Mark sighed. "I know how Chief Schott felt when he found out his friend Ray Whitley was dirty. You never know who is going to stand by their moral convictions and friends when it comes to high crimes committed by their bosses. Anyway, Sasser rolled on us."

"How can he say we refused to turn information in? Does he know about Garret and Tuney? What about the FBI in Alaska, Nevada, and Mississippi?"

"Now you know why Customs monitored our FBI meeting," Mark reminded me. "I told you there was more going on with the FBI than you knew, and that Lou Bock was a serious help to us. I can expose this whole cover-up now, and Metro will be caught in the loop. Sasser did us a big favor and doesn't even realize it yet."

“What are you going to do?”

“Red-bag copies of the whole mess to DC through Clement,” Mark decisively stated. “Clement already made sure that Bush[5] and Thornburgh got copies of what you are reporting, and the FBI is looking moronic for having their boy Sasser accuse me of extortion. It’s evident that we’ve gone to great lengths to distribute this information. We prove it every day.”

“We’ve even got that response from the White House,” I said, getting excited at the possibilities. “And Jesse Helms[6] himself contacted the FBI regarding us. There is so much of our information in DC it seems absurd that FBI would accuse us of withholding it!”

“We must be making progress,” Mark assured me. “Someone is getting nervous.”

Mark’s statement was even more apparent by the time we reached Nashville.

Kelly’s circumstances at Cumberland House were deplorable. Charlene Johnson was working overtime to make Kelly’s circumstances difficult, punishing her if she talked about her past. Once when Kelly refused to wear a pair of “ruby slippers” that someone provided her due to past Oz programming, Charlene locked her in a padded cell for three days. Obviously such actions were being prompted from the outside, and Charlene was displaying more wealth by the day with new clothes and a new car.

A gynecological exam had been performed on Kelly in accordance with Metro Police and Luton mental health. “They hurt me, mom.” Kelly cried. “It was not like when Dr. Lillibridge examined me. They pulled my legs apart and held me down, and pulled my private parts open so hard it tore and bled. Then they told me I wasn’t abused as if their lies would make my past go away. Besides, *they* abused me hurting me like that.”

“I am so sorry they hurt you.” I held her. “I wish I could have been there to stop them so that never would have happened. God knows you’ve been through so much already without them adding to it. You’re right that their lies can’t make the past go away. Neither can Charlene’s demands that you don’t talk about it. I’m going to take care of this matter as soon as I leave,” I said assuredly.

“Charlene thinks I threw this picture away,” Kelly whispered. “It’s something I was remembering that they did to you and me. Since I’m not allowed to talk or write about it, I drew it out.” She slipped me a piece paper, which I immediately tucked under my shirt.

“Kelly, I’m going to go see some friends who are doing all they can for you right now. Do you remember Marsha Willis? She’s working really hard on your case, but she had better be ready to move you out of here *now*. I’m going to Clement’s office, too.” I hugged Kelly close. “I’m going to tell them what is going on here and I’ll show them the picture you drew, too. I love you.”

I stormed out of Cumberland House. When we were back in the Pacer, I looked at Kelly’s drawing and sobbed while I showed it to Mark. It was a very recognizable picture of Youngstown Charm School[7] where we were tortured and trained to fulfill sexual perversion.

Chapter 13

FAMILY MATTERS

“Kelly is out of time,” I announced to Marsha Willis. I told her about the sham exam conducted on Kelly at Metro General Hospital, how she had been treated so roughly in the course of the ‘gynecological’ procedure, and Cumberland House’s deplorable treatment of her.

“Charlene Johnson forbid her to speak of her past, yet locked her in a padded cell for three days because Kelly is still triggering over unresolved issues.” Marsha’s eyes filled with compassion as I told her about the incident with the ‘ruby slippers’.

“And Kelly is having to sneak me pictures of her memories since she is forbidden from writing them out.” I showed Marsha her drawing.

Marsha frowned. Sensing the urgency she said, “I am making progress towards Kelly’s transfer. Have you filed those papers with the court that Commissioner Taylor gave you?”

“I was waiting until I absolutely had to file them,” I told Marsha, dreading the whole process.

“If you file with the Juvenile Court in the morning it can help expedite her transfer. I’ve been working as fast as I can, and you need to be ready. Come back and see me after you go the court, and I should have some news for you.”

Mark and I left the Department of Mental Health and drove to the Copy Shop to make copies of Kelly’s drawing, as well as more copies of documents to take to our appointment that Civia Tamarkin had scheduled for us with Charles Wilson.

“I wondered what had happened to ya’ll,” Billy called as we walked in. “When I don’t see you for a few days, I get concerned.”

“No need to worry about us,” Mark assured him. “We’re not afraid, why should you be?”

“I’m too logical to be afraid,” Billy clarified. “I’m just concerned.”

“Good,” Mark smiled. “Kelly is being abused over at Cumberland House, and we’re moving as fast as we can to get her out of there. I’ve got to go see a friend, and Cathy has some copies to run.”

“You know where to find her when you get back,” Billy said, walking Mark to the door.

As soon as I was through making copies, I set down in the employee’s backroom with Billy.

“I’m sorry to hear about Kelly,” Billy said. “I hope the court system proves to be more reliable than the mental health system.”

“Me, too,” I sighed. “I’m not counting on it, though. We’re going at this from every angle until something gives. Mark has contacts with the local newspapers, and *People Magazine* is monitoring her case now, too. Bob Clement has distributed our information all over Washington for us, including to the US Commissioner of Health and Human Services, and even delivered copies of the FBI cover-up where it matters most. It seems we’re staying ahead, but it really hurts to see Kelly tangled in all the red tape.”

Billy looked somber, and then changed the subject. “I’ve been wanting to ask you about your brothers and sisters. Are they safe?”

“No,” I answered. “They’re all still under my father’s control. I reached out to them after Mark first rescued Kelly and me, and their initial response was hopeful. A few weeks later, my oldest brother, Earl William, sent photos of all the kids with fresh stun gun prod marks indicating that controls tightened around them.”

“Why would your brother do a thing like that?”

“Under orders from my father, most likely.” I continued, “He has three children of his own that are being raised in the Project. I know he tried to commit suicide when he turned thirty, which is the age mind control victims are disposed of due to the natural electro-chemical changes that occur in the brain. They start to remember childhood abuse and often break program.”

Billy thought about it a second and asked, “Is that why repressed memories surface around age 30?”

“Yes. And it’s also why I was supposed to be killed at that age,” I told him. “In my case, though, Mark intercepted us when Kelly and I were being transferred to California where I was to be killed and Kelly handled by a creep named Michael Dante’.”

“Why didn’t they let your brother die?”

“Because he was raising his three children Billy, Tami, and David, according to government specifications under the watchful control of my father,” I told him. “My brother routinely took them to Disney World for MK Ultra mind control programming, and his youngest son, David, became the poster child for Sea World riding Shamu the whale. The children’s maternal[1] grandmother trained the Maycroft Squaretappers dance team that performed annually in DC at the White House.”

“What about your other brothers and sisters?” Billy prompted.

“I have two little sisters and three little brothers. The brother just under me in age, Mike, is running a porn business through his video store in Grand

Haven. My sister Kelli Jo, who is ten years younger than me, was used in some of the porn he sells. Plus she knew Ford."

"Gerald Ford, the former President?"

"Yes. I think she had been hurt so bad through suffocation that the CIA couldn't use her for anything other than fulfilling perversions. She's a belly dancer who excelled in gymnastics, and she is beautiful." I told Billy. "My other little sister, Kim, who is twenty years younger than me knew George Bush and has been to the White House."

"Your mother must have had a lot of kids."

"And everyone of them abused. It flipped her out pretty bad despite the fact that she had been sexually abused and suffered from a dissociative disorder herself."

"What about your other brothers?"

"Tommy was called 'Beaver' after the Beaver Island[2], Michigan mind control center where he was programmed to become a Jesuit. Timmy is bipolar, and they trained him for sports. I love and miss them all, and the best I can do for them now is keep shining the light of truth on their circumstances so the CIA can't use them."

"Well, at least you and Kelly are free, and that makes all the difference in the world for a lot of victims." Billy's kindness and compassion were comforting.

"Kelly's freedom is on the line, though, and I can only hope this next move with the juvenile court frees her entirely."

When Mark returned, we kept our appointment with Charles Wilson at the Department of Human Services. The appointment was uneventful and provided no hope. We then went to Edith's to update her on our progress.

Edith, never one to waste time, got right to the point. "I know what Metro did to Kelly in that exam," she said, inviting us in. "I've scheduled an appointment for you with a reputable in-state gynecologist who can reaffirm Kelly's abuse through the records and photos you have." She had seen the photos that Dr. Lillibridge took, as well as his Alaskan reports. "He can also document your vaginal mutilation carving at the same time[3], and he is willing to do so. It may help keep Houston away from Kelly if he reaffirms your horrendous abuse as well."

Edith, who also had a nurse's degree, had already inspected the hideous face that Alex Houston had carved into my vagina with Exacto knives in accordance with Senator Byrd's perverse demands. She gave us an appointment card with Dr. Presley's address, contact numbers, and an appointment time for April 15th. "There is a Church of Christ in Green Hills near Dr. Presley's office that can help with gas money. I know you need it. Just tell them I sent you. You might want to accept their offering of groceries as well." Edith was certainly resourceful. "Good luck with the juvenile court tomorrow," she said as she hugged us good-bye.

As we walked back to the car, I commented on the ways Edith helped us. "Edith knows how to enrich our circumstances way beyond giving money. Her time and advice are invaluable, yet she still understands our most basic needs and sees to them through direct and indirect ways." I thought a moment, reflecting on how Mark was the first to exemplify to me that love and integrity produce more results than any amount of money ever could. "You taught me most about financial priorities," I told Mark, "when the evaporation of your bank accounts only fueled your determination to make a difference for humanity."

Mark smiled. "I sure could use that money, though, to be even more effective. Justice is bought and sold in this country, which is why my accounts evaporated. They think they can contain us by keeping us so poor. They don't know our hunger for justice and rehab for Kelly surpasses physical hunger." Mark opened the car door for me, and continued as he started the Pacer. "Someday we'll have money again and you'll be able to buy things for Kelly, and I'll give you things you've never had."

“Like what?” I asked. “I’ve got everything in you.”

“Clothes, for one thing,” Mark said looking at my charity attire. I’d never bought clothes for myself before. Under mind control, others like Byrd dictated what I should wear from high-class whore clothes to Catholic school uniforms.

“Clothes don’t matter to me much since I’m most comfortable in my own skin. Someday my birthday suit may wrinkle, but I’d celebrate that just to live so long!”

“You’re inner beauty is so radiant, it wouldn’t matter if your birthday suit did gain wrinkles. I’d simply like for you to have the experience of *choosing* a wardrobe for yourself. There are so many gifts and fun experiences that I’d like to give you.” Mark steered us out of the traffic and onto the peaceful country road back home.

“Give. That’s the key. It’s not what is given, it’s a giving heart that matters.” I knew money didn’t buy happiness anyway since I had been around unlimited extravagance with miserable people in DC.

The next morning we were at the juvenile court when the doors opened. “Commissioner Taylor sent me here,” I told the clerk. “He said this court petition is a necessary formality for obtaining my daughter’s rehabilitation funding. I have no intention of relinquishing any custodial rights or controls over her circumstances.”

I further explained that our attorney had recently quit due to ‘national security’ issues involved in the case. She asked, “Are there any abusers from which your daughter may need protection? If so, you’d best write their names down so we can protect her legally.”

In my own handwriting, I wrote a brief paragraph referring to medical and mental health records naming Alex Houston and Wayne Cox among Kelly’s abusers. Even so, Cox filed charges against me before Marsha could complete her work towards Kelly’s transfer, and seemingly as fast as the court papers were filed. April 2, 1991, I was embroiled in a custody battle that would “legally” hinder Kelly’s transfer.

Violations of laws and rights began April 9 in an attempt to cover-up crimes perpetrated by Kelly’s politically affluent abusers. All medical and mental health records documenting Kelly’s abuse were instantly rejected by the court on grounds they were “from out-of-state.” I was not permitted to testify on her behalf or in my own defense for “reasons of national security.”

Local and national media, victims’ advocacy groups such as Edith Hammons Organized Victims of Violent Crime, and all supporters were quickly banned from the courtroom. ‘Expert witnesses’ FBI Agents Brad Garrett and Phil Tuney were called to testify. Tuney testified, “There is no such thing as mind control,” while Garrett recommended that Mark Phillips be banned from the courtroom and from seeing Kelly since he was an “expert on mind control.” This blatant contradiction was accepted, and Mark was banned from the courtroom and from further contact with Kelly. All of my visits with Kelly were to be supervised so that I wouldn’t say words like ‘mind control’ or ‘Mark Phillips’.[4] Worst of all, Kelly was warehoused at Cumberland House without therapy.

I was hindered in my desperate attempts to untangle the quagmire of red tape that Commissioner Taylor’s ill advice had caused by court ordered probation. The probation imposed on me was supposedly due to my not yet having a permanent address to provide the court. The only address I had was Mark’s Post Office Box in Green Hills. Cox’s attorney, Bob Anderson, told Juvenile Court Judge Andy Shookhoff, “Since she can’t live in a Post Office Box, I need her available in case I want to serve her papers.” So Judge Shookhoff ordered that I sit in the hall of juvenile court for days. At least it was a quiet spot, and I took advantage of the time to write out some of the memories that were flooding my mind, such as:

When the 1984 Governor’s Convention was held in Nashville, Tennessee at Opryland Hotel, Senator Byrd was there. This particular convention focused on Global Education 2000[5], and I was working there under total mind control for Reagan’s Secretary of Education Bill Bennett[6] and Tennessee’s former Governor Lamar Alexander[7]. Louise Mandrell was working there as well, and I spoke to her regarding her sister Barbara’s recent car crash.[8] I had known Louise for years. Wayne Cox worked as a steel guitar player for her and RC Bannon while I was being transferred to Alex Houston in early 1980. Cox had also worked with Barbara for years when she was very young. Plus, Alex Houston worked numerous shows with both Barbara and Louise throughout the 1980’s.

Despite having often been around Byrd’s other slaves, I rarely had opportunity to speak with them. This was strictly forbidden as it could cause us to inadvertently trigger each other into discussing government secrets we’d been conditioned to forget[9]. Yet no one interfered for several minutes as Louise and I discussed Barbara’s dire circumstances.

In addition to discussing Barbara, we talked about the global education system[10] and how I had been used in the press to promote “our education Governor” McWherter. I could not think to tell her how this education system, now in full swing in the US and globally, was designed to increase our children’s learning capacity while decreasing their ability to critically analyze. I could only parrot what I had been programmed to say that night to promote it to our nation’s Governors. Still, Byrd reprimanded me for talking with Louise when I arrived late for my rendezvous with him at Opryland Hotel’s Rhett Butler restaurant.

Being back in Nashville now was opening my mind up to eight years of memories from which I was totally amnesic. I was remembering so much, yet none of it was freeing Kelly from a corrupt and manipulated so-called “legal” system in the State of Tennessee.

When the probation was finally lifted, I went directly to Marsha Willis’ office demanding to see Commissioner Taylor. He refused to see me, and Marsha was immersed in the same quagmire of red tape that was deliberately covering up Kelly’s dire and desperate need. Marsha voiced deep concern, whispering, “The Defense Intelligence Agency told me to let you know that your life is in serious peril if you keep talking about Kelly and mind control."

Unintimidated, I followed through with my previously scheduled appointment at Governor McWherter's office. His assistant Bernie Durham said that Governor McWherter "did not deal with such cases," shook my hand, and showed me the door. Before I left, I handed him a packet of documents and information for their records. "Governor McWherter will need these," I assured him. Mark and I were launching an international awareness campaign that would eventually result in thousands of letters from all over the world asking Governor McWherter "what does 'national security' have to do with the documented rape and molestation of a child's mind and body?"

While we were running copies on Edith's old copy machine, it wore out and quit. When Governor McWherter refused to supply her with a new one, she was not surprised any more than we were. Edith took it all in stride, relentlessly focusing on resolution of Kelly's need.

Chapter 14
IT’S NOT OVER ‘TIL WE WIN

“Mom!” Kelly jumped into my arms, her blue eyes sparkling. “Edith Hammons came to visit me. She told me what you and dad are doing to get me out of here, and that a whole bunch of people care about me!”

Edith hadn’t yet told me about visiting Kelly, and I could only imagine the strings she pulled to get through Cumberland House’s no-visitor policy with regard to Kelly. Obviously she knew her way around and had said the right things to keep Kelly aware of the love surrounding her.

“I’ve got my own room now,” Kelly proudly told me. I looked around her dreary room that was sparsely furnished with several beds. “I’ll have a roommate tomorrow, though.” I left the small sack of toiletries I’d brought her on the desk, wishing I could have afforded to bring her something fun to brighten her dismal surroundings. She never even looked in the sack while I was there, although she hugged me for bringing it.

A social worker stood at the door with her arms crossed. “You’re not supposed to be here without supervision,” she said.

“Who wants to supervise?” I asked. “We don’t have anything to hide.”

The social worker eventually traded her post at the door for a chair, relaxing in the warmth of the relationship that Kelly and I shared. We had so little time together to enjoy each other’s company that we maximized every moment. Despite our torturous past, our relationship was strong.

Censorship of our words seemed absurd to us. We had long since developed a heightened sense of telepathic communication when we were tortured together. It was as though we had been blasted into parts of the brain that people have forgotten how to use. While most people use a reported “10% of their brain,” we were using primitive sensory functions and other aspects to make up for our lack of free thought. Kelly and I utilized this ability to exchange sensory understanding on a level similar to animal communication[1], which extends far beyond mere words. This natural mode of communication, said to have been the common language shared before the Biblical Tower of Babel divided mankind by language barriers, is a phenomenon recognized today between some twins or couples who have loved together for years. Throughout Kelly’s victimization by the State of Tennessee’s so-called mental health and justice systems, our reliance on this innate telepathic system kept us in full communication despite censorship. This was small consolation for the gross injustice that forced our family apart.

We cried together under the watchful eye of the supervisor when I told her that she was half in state custody[2] by court order. I explained that it was a formality that would eventually contribute to freeing her. I also told her, “That piece of paper cannot change the fact that you are my daughter and I love you.”

Kelly wiped her tears. “It’s not over ‘til we win, huh mom?” she asked.

“We’ll win,” I assured her. “And it’s not over ‘til we win.”

“Time’s up,” the social worker supervising us announced. Supervised visits certainly had their limits in addition to being an insult to our relationship.

I kept my appointment with Dr. Presley in hopes it would provide a further measure of safety for Kelly from Wayne Cox and Alex Houston. Cox was free to see Kelly without supervision, despite Kelly’s documented records proving him an abuser. My court appointed Legal Services attorney, Jean Crowe, doubled for the judge on his days off. And her efforts to impose restraining orders against Cox had yet to produce any results. It seemed that she, like the judge, was bound by federal ‘national security’ intervention.

Dr. Presley was a pleasant Christian man whose sole intention was to medically document what he saw. With in-state records of his reconfirmation of Kelly’s extensive sexual abuse, and my vaginal mutilation carving, perhaps the court could levy the restraints against Cox that Kelly so desperately needed. Dr. Presley was prepared to waive all financial charges for the appointment since Edith apparently had explained our financial condition. I offered the Medicaid card issued to me through the Violent Crimes Compensation Commission anyway, since it was intended to fund any court-ordered exams.

Mark and I went directly to the Copy Shop, made copies of the documentation, and then took the records straight to Jean Crowe’s office to be filed with the court.

“There are a lot of rumors flying around about you two,” Jean informed us. She looked at Mark, “I’ve even been told you are a containment expert who is discrediting mind control survivors.”

Mark quickly determined this court appointed attorney most likely would not be equipped to deal with national security issues. “If I were a containment expert, why are *we* being contained? And why am I not being paid off? I don’t even have enough gas in the car to get back home. You’d best use some logic in this case, Ms. Crowe, and stop listening to ‘rumors’ obviously being orchestrated by the ones wanting to contain this case. There’s a little girl’s life on the line here.”

I handed her the medical records. “If you want to see what containment really is, you need to go over to Cumberland House and see what is happening to Kelly. She is counting on me to get her out of there. Charlene Johnson is being blatantly abusive, and is growing rich in the process. Her new car and gaudy new wardrobe are the talk of Cumberland House staff. Have you noticed her influx of money?”

“Well, I have,” Jean admitted. “I’ll go see Kelly myself after court in the morning. I want to meet her anyway.”

The next morning, I was at the court a few minutes early. While I waited, Cox's Attorney Bob Anderson told Kelly's so-called guardian *ad litem* Martha Child, state attorneys, and Charlene Johnson, "Gather 'round. It's pay-off time. Cathy's father[3] thanks you all." Bob Anderson counted out money into the hands of those present. When Jean Crowe finally arrived, I told her about the incident.

"You're just hysterical," she said.

Dr. Presley's records were presented to the court and rejected. The only records that would be accepted 'were those that the state would request.' I automatically assumed all exams would be rigged from then on, and prepared myself accordingly.

Jean Crowe went to see Kelly after court, only to determine, "she looks normal to me."

Despite non-stop persistent efforts to keep Cox from seeing Kelly, he was granted supervised visitation. On April 15, his visit with Kelly was "supervised" by Charlene Johnson! According to Cumberland House records secretly slipped to me by an employee, and Kelly's own written testimony, Charlene Johnson physically forced Kelly to have visitation with Cox despite her screams and pleas. Cox delivered CIA codes, keys, and triggers in an effort to incite her programmed respiratory failure.

Kelly went into severe asthma, requiring medical attention. She also lost over 10 lbs in two weeks due to extreme stress. This is documented.

I attempted to file criminal abuse charges against Charlene Johnson. I was told that since Kelly was in joint custody, one state agency (the State of Tennessee) could not legally sue another state agency (Cumberland House), and therefore I had 'no case.'

Kelly, who was severely depressed, brightened when she saw me on our next visit. "I'd like to introduce you to my roommate and new best friend Lindsay."

A sweet little girl with huge eyes and a pixie haircut shyly said, “Hi.” Her pupils were dilated as though traumatized, and she was as frail and thin as Kelly. “The FBI was involved in my rapery,” she whispered.

Despite having invented a word, her sincerity and meaning were clear. The social worker that would be supervising today was walking towards us, and Kelly quickly said, “Her father is FBI, and her mother is trying to get her back. Can you help her, too?”

“Please?” the little girl asked, with tears filling her big eyes.

“I’ll do what I can,” I promised. I turned to Kelly, “God knows Dad and I are determined and persistent enough. When we win, it will set precedent and…”

“Ms. O’Brien, I’m going to have to ask you to leave if you’re talking about court matters,” the Cumberland House worker told me.

“I wish Kelly had a worker as conscientious as you to supervise when Cox was here,” I told her. Kelly smiled.

Lindsay gave Kelly a knowing look that indicated the depth of understanding they shared. I silently conveyed my assurance to Lindsay, and Kelly and I went to the dayroom for our supervised visit.

As I prepared to leave, Kelly said, “When Edith was here, she told me about Congressman Clement and her friend Representative West. She said they care about me, too. I wrote them letters.” Kelly was ahead of the game as usual. She gave me two handwritten pages of letters with another hidden between them. “Will you please mail them for me? Charlene Johnson won’t mail them for me. She told me she doesn’t even want me writing them.”

“Of course I’ll make sure they get them,” I assured her, unaware that the Cumberland House worker supervising us would report her for reaching out. The soul stirring pleas that she wrote brought me to tears for years every time I saw copies of them or thought of the injustice they spawned in the court. Kelly would be forbidden by court order to write or receive mail, which was against US Constitutional law and human rights.

Mark was waiting patiently in the car when our visit was over. He, too, cried as he read the letters. The third one she had hidden was to him. She wrote:

Dear Dad,
I miss you. I'm doing everything I can to get this cleared up. I'm sneak-writing to people like the Representative.
She signed it off with hearts and Love, Kelly. The other two letters read:

Dear Representative West,
Please HELP! Court is making me see my biological father Wayne Cox and not allowing me to see Mark and having me have supervised visits. Please help me. Love, Kelly.

Dear Congressman Clement,
I really need Help! Court is making things worse. Court is making me loose the two people I love most (mom, Mark) and making me see Wayne Cox. He is triggering my asthma and he's making me loose Mark. He's lying about abusing me. If you can Please get me out of this situation and help me to see Mark and to have unsupervised visits. HELP! Love, Kelly.

Chapter 15
THE HUNDREDTH MONKEY

“How many others like Kelly are being abused by the system for ‘reasons of national security?’” I wondered as we drove back to Melba’s. I told Mark about my encounter with Lindsay. My childhood environment had been so saturated with incest that I thought the whole world was that way. In the 1980’s, I had witnessed vast numbers of people being mind controlled. “I wonder how many of them survived? And if they survived, are they being mistreated by an ignorant mental health and justice system? Why are people so blind? When is this nightmare going to end?”

“Have you ever heard of the hundredth monkey?” Mark asked.

“No. What do monkeys have to do with this?”

“It is a theory, not meant to be interpreted so literally,” Mark explained. “It is an example of evolution in progress. When an action, positive or negative, is repeated for three generations it becomes genetically encoded. It becomes an inborn autogenic response. If a monkey collects ants on a honey-coated stick, for example, and other monkeys see he is eating more than they, they copy him. By the time the hundredth monkey begins collecting ants on a honey-coated stick, the added energy creates an ideological breakthrough that affects the whole society. When the whole society of monkeys does this for three generations, it becomes their culture. According to Ken Keyes Hundredth Monkey studies, when that hundredth monkey’s added energy creates the ideological breakthrough, evolution occurs. Even monkeys on other continents start collecting ants on honey-coated sticks without copying. They are born knowing.”

“Is this natural process why I do not relate to perpetuating incest despite my own multigenerational background?” I asked, realization clearing my vision.

“That’s the theory,” Mark said. “People are on the verge of evolving out of this nonsense despite the efforts of a criminal few who still cling to the belief that their secret knowledge equals power.”

“All it takes is one monkey to let the secret out, and by the time the hundredth monkey knows it, the criminals in control are history.” I concluded.

“Unless the hundredth monkey couldn’t *think* to do so. Add mind control to the equation. Hitler/Himler research into genetics and mutigenerational families led them to believe that they could control the future by controlling society. Operating on the philosophy that secret knowledge equals power, they would keep pertinent facts from the people and alter their natural evolutionary process. They knew that traumas like incest and torture left people highly suggestible and easily led. After three generations of incest, abuse, and ignorance it becomes genetically encoded and people are born more compliant. It was believed that this could be a formula for mass mind control.”

“Generations of war[1] could create this same compliance in people,” I concluded. “God knows war is traumatic.”

“Hitler is a warning from history to all of us.”

“Did the Nazi’s really believe that mind control would suppress the hundredth monkey evolution?” I wondered.

“It is not so simple.”

“Obviously not. I realize knowledge doesn’t fit in a box,” I said. “I’m still on my learning path just like everybody else, so I’m not trying to package it all up. There is always more to learn. Yet that seems like a logical question.”

"The whole concept of mind control has evolved beyond Hitler's theories through technological advancements," Mark reminded me. "Plus we've had generations of conditioning now."

"But we're not monkeys," I argued, falling back on my original literal interpretation for illustration. "The strength of the human spirit wasn't taken into consideration. The human spirit is stronger than genetics."

"This is true," Mark laughed. "Obviously the whole mind control theory is flawed, or we wouldn't be where we are today."

My mind returned to my original point about Lindsay, only I was feeling much more hopeful now.

"What did you tell Lindsay when she asked for our help?" Mark asked, turning onto the winding country road.

"I assured her we would set precedent and make a difference for her," I told him. I thought for a minute and elaborated. "Not exactly in those words but the thought was communicated."

"She understands?"

"Absolutely, which confirms her abuse to me even more than her words did," I said. "If only people would simply realize, accept and utilize their innate thought communication capability without the abuse[2]. Kelly and I were talking about this and…"

Mark laughed. "Isn't that redundant? Why talk?"

Suddenly this deep subject seemed light. "You're right," I laughed. It felt good to laugh and balance the intensity of our day. "People thought communicate more than they think."

Mark smiled and rolled his eyes.

“Well, they do. Think about it,” I smiled. “And the answer to your question is ‘yes’.”

“Are you sure that’s my mind you’re reading?” Mark’s gaze indicated it wasn’t. “Because there is no question.”

“Well, I got your message loud and clear,” I squirmed in my seat, hoping we were closer to home than we were. “It does seem that regardless of where our mental focus is, part of us stays in constant communication.”

“Isn’t that called ‘attraction’?”

“I call it ‘love’,” I giggled. “Thought communication, like our sex, rides on the wings of love and communicates beyond mere words.”

“Tell me more,” Mark suggested, pulling into the driveway. “Want to monkey around?”

Chapter 16
CRIMINAL "JUSTICE" SYSTEM

The next time I saw Kelly, Lindsay was gone.

"Charlene says I have to get along with my peers or be locked in the padded cell. Mom, the kids here are nuts. Most of them are satanists. I'd rather be by myself than listen to their nonsense."

Kelly was right. Her mind controlled past left her with heightened suggestibility, which extended to what is termed "mirroring and matching." She would tend to walk their walk and talk their talk, and she was struggling to overcome this conditioned behavior in order to heal and live true-to-soul. Being punished if she did not conform to Charlene's demands was counter-productive to therapy.

"They hold séances here for group activity."

"Who does?" I asked, believing Kelly must be either exaggerating or suffering flashbacks.

"Melissa Thurmond and all the kids, and Charlene forces me to participate!"

I thought of all the satanic graffiti around Cumberland House when Kelly was first admitted. Swallowing my rage, I approached the worker who held the rituals and asked her about them.

"It's all in fun," Melissa Thurmond told me. "We don't do it for real."

“If these children knew what reality was they wouldn’t be here. Apparently you don’t know what ‘real’ means either. There isn’t any ‘fun’ in reinforcing negative behavior, superstition, and the horror many of these kids have experienced. I will address this issue with the Commissioner of Mental Health, State Legislators, the courts, media, and anyone else who will listen. This is archaic therapy and an absolute outrage. Do not make Kelly participate in any more of your ridiculous rituals.”

“I follow orders from Charlene, not from you,” Melissa told me. “And Kelly does what Charlene tells her to do. I am not the one forcing her to do anything.”

While I spoke with Melissa, Kelly was told by the social worker supervising our visit that she was never to speak of Cumberland House activities to me again as it violated confidentiality for the other children. If she said anything more, our visits would be terminated.

Kelly and I looked at each other in total understanding. She knew I would be working on this issue from the outside, and I knew she would keep me apprised of her circumstances through our silent communication. Our bond grew stronger.

“We have got to find an honest attorney,” I told Mark as we left Cumberland House.

“How do we seek an honest attorney in a sea of deception?” Mark said. “The most successful, highest paid attorneys are masters of mind manipulation. They use NLP.”

“NLP?” I asked.

“Neuro Linguistic Programming[1]. It’s the language of the subconscious. Of course, knowledge is neither good nor bad, it’s who has control of it for what purpose. I wish every person knew NLP. Then it couldn’t be used to manipulate their critical analysis.”

I thought for a moment. “Knowledge is our only defense against NLP the same way it’s our only defense against mind control. Once people understand it, they know what to watch for and guard against[2].”

“NLP subliminals have long since been used in advertising and marketing, and yet people are still ignorant about it because the government keeps the information suppressed since it is an integral part of their arsenal for marketing their own agenda to a socially engineered population. Attorneys who are aware of it use it to manipulate the minds of the jury, and even the mind of the judge if he doesn’t have the knowledge to defend himself against it.”

“If people thought communicated[3] rather than used attorneys, they would get straight to the truth,” I said. “Instead, they rely on someone to be lawful who simply manipulates everyone’s thoughts and conclusions through a secret means. It’s no wonder our justice system is called ‘criminal’!”

“Someday NLP must be taught in the grade school system,” Mark said. “Then everyone will have the knowledge and can no longer be led by it. Look how some attorneys perpetuate their secret knowledge of NLP to advance into politics simply by manipulating minds of the public with the same means by which they manipulate the minds of a jury.”

“Traficant is a perfect example. While he was Sheriff of Youngstown, Ohio he was caught in criminal activity that ran through Charm School.”

“The one where you and Kelly were tortured?” Mark clarified.

“Yes. The one she drew the picture of. Anyway, Traficant admitted to taking large bribes[4] to overlook drug trafficking and prostitution when he was caught red handed in 1980. Since I knew him back then, I was aware of his involvement in CIA cocaine, mind control, and prostitution. By the time his court trial came around in 1983, he had been promoted to Congress. He used subliminals and NLP on the jury the same way he manipulated the minds of his constituents and trained sex slaves at Charm School! He got off on all criminal charges.”

“Now he’s running containment by cozying up to the patriots of this country, manipulating their minds the same way,” Mark pointed out. “The good news is, scum bags like him and Charlene Johnson usually get set up to take a fall to divert attention away from the criminal activity of the higher-ups[5].”

“I wish people would wake up and arm themselves with the facts. It could all be so easy. Instead, we have to find ‘an honest attorney in a sea of deception’ just like you said.”

“I was told by a CIA/DIA officer who works out of Clarksville[6] to contact the head of the Trial Lawyers Association, Reese Bagwell, and see if we can find a clean one,” Mark said. “I have reason to believe this Bagwell guy is as dirty as any attorney can be, which is why he’s head of the Trial Lawyers lobby. We have no choice. Kelly’s out of time.”

Mark and I met with Attorney Reese Bagwell. Bagwell was working along side of his former law school roommate Frank Rubino, who was the appointed attorney for the former Panamanian Leader and CIA cocaine operative captured in ‘Just Cause,’ Manuel Noriega. The DIA’s ‘special agent’ Jim Dibble was also cooperating with Bagwell at the time, which provided further validation and insight into the validity of our case. Still, we were cautious. After all, Bagwell’s office was located in Clarksville near Fort Campbell, and his behind the scenes activities reeked of DIA, CIA, and Jesuit affiliation. Aside from his association with Noriega, Bagwell’s “friends” included Michael Gilstrap, head of the National Coalition Against Pornography, and former Ambassador to France, Joe Rodgers[7].

Bagwell’s Catholic Jesuit ties and the Mormon ties of his robotic-appearing partner Phil Kendrick did not keep them from associating with Gilstrap, Rodgers, and their ‘Tabernacle Baptist’ church. This church, considered by locals to be a cult church, used a massive blue monarch butterfly for their logo. Mark and I quickly determined Gilstrap’s N.C.A.P. organization and church were a catch-net operation for Nashville mind control survivors when we had cause to attend ‘Tabernacle Baptist’ at the request of one of his robotic slaves. The massive structure had an upper balcony, which was strangely lined with armed military personnel apparently guarding the sophisticated electronic equipment we saw in use there. We met with our contact as scheduled as she feared for her life and was pleading for help. Believing Gilstrap intended to help victims like her, she gave us his business office address.

Gilstrap's 'toy-manufacturing' front[8] did little to hide his CIA agenda when Mark and I met with him. When his use of CIA and Jesuit codes, keys, and triggers to Pentagon-level mind control programming failed to produce the desired results in me, Gilstrap had resorted to stroking the blade of a knife he had pulled as a threat. The web we were tangled in was becoming clear to us, and we took all of this into consideration when we met with Bagwell.

"We need a clean attorney with a security clearance who can deal with the national security issue covering mind control," Mark told him. "Because of your position, you are the only individual qualified to give us direction."

"My partner will help you," Bagwell assured us, pushing the intercom button to page him. "Of course, you know you are playing with fire and are liable to get burned."

Mark, who didn't take veiled threats from anyone, rose like lightening in an effort to prevent Bagwell from leaving the room. His partner opened the door just in time for him to introduce, "Phil Kendrick," as he hurried out the door like a scalded cat.

Kendrick was kind, though his dilated pupils suggested that his sincerity would not surpass inevitable orders of containment. Once again, we were blocked from conventional justice and resolution of Kelly's escalating need. No help was offered, and only veiled threats voiced.

We conveyed the information of our experience to Representative West when we delivered Kelly's heart-wrenching plea to him. He was working behind the scenes for Kelly's cause just as Edith knew he would; yet the magnitude of the containment was seemingly insurmountable. I told him about the rituals being held at Cumberland House.

"Kelly and I do *not* take responsibility for what we were tortured to do under mind control, but now that we are aware and healing, we take full responsibility for our actions. No excuses. Not only is Charlene Johnson being counterproductive to Kelly’s rehabilitation, she is also forcing Kelly to act against her moral conviction.”

Representative West’s concerns were obvious. “The rituals will stop, Ms. O’Brien. I can assure you of that much.”

“Are we any closer to obtaining a diagnosis within the state so she can be transferred?” I asked.

“Talk with Marsha Willis,” he answered, giving me a knowing look. “Barry Nurcum[9] has agreed to take Kelly’s case.”

“What made him change his mind?” I asked suspiciously. “When Commissioner Rucker contacted him in 1989, he claimed he was not qualified to help her.”

“Vanderbilt Psychiatric is a Defense Department Subcontractor,” Mark added, noting that Dr. Nurcum, an Australian citizen, worked there on a green card work permit apparently underwritten by the D.O.D.

“I understand there is hope anyway,” Representative West assured us. “When Marsha learned that Charlene Johnson punished Kelly for reporting abuse to Judge Shookhoff, and that your efforts to prosecute her are hindered by state law protecting Cumberland House workers, it seems she convinced him to take the case. Despite how grim things may appear, there are many people deeply concerned for all three of you!”

“What do you know about US Customs?” Mark asked, shifting the subject slightly.

Ben West smiled. “I know that Internal Affairs will be coming in to interview both of you. They are serious about cleaning up corruption in their agency, and apparently you two are providing them with significant information.”

Mark was surprised he already knew about our pending Internal Affairs meeting.

Ben West lowered his voice. “I also know that Agent Lou Bock may have helped save your lives.”

This same insight was raised again when we saw Marsha Willis later that afternoon. “I was really concerned for all of you,” she confided. “Mark, I know you are capable of keeping Cathy safe as long as you two are alive.” She swallowed her emotion, “I was relieved to learn of Lou Bock and Bob Clement’s intervention on your behalf to the FBI. This case is tough. Everyone will be much safer when Kelly is transferred to rehabilitation, and Dr. Nurcum has agreed to evaluate her for the necessary diagnosis.”

“How can he do that?” I asked. “He already said he’s not qualified to diagnose MPD/DID let alone mind control.”

“I spoke with Debbie Upchurch of the ICAM[10] organization. Apparently your meetings with her, and her meetings with Kelly provided her enough insight into the validity of your case to complete State forms with a diagnosis of ‘*looks like* Multiple Personality Disorder,’ and Dr. Nurcum is qualified to determine that much.” She smiled. “Kelly begins therapy with him immediately after he meets with you two. You name the time, and I’ll schedule the meeting.”

“We have extensive meetings already scheduled with Internal Affairs,” Mark began.

“Customs?” Marsha inquired.

“Yes,” Mark said. “So we’ll meet with him the first of next week.”

“Done,” she said.

Our meetings with US Customs Internal Affairs began the next day. In addition to detailed testimony, I provided photographic details describing corrupt Customs officials involved in CIA drug operations. Jose Busto's Intercontinental Shipping based in San Juan, Puerto Rico was of particular interest since he had masqueraded as a US Customs and Immigrations officer with Norwegian Caribbean Lines cruise ships[11]. Throughout the 1980s, my association with CIA drug ops via NCL had placed me in contact with numerous high ranking drug lords and politicians; including Manuel Noriega.

By 1986, Noriega's blatant cocaine dealings threatened to further complicate the ongoing Iran Contra hearings. In an effort to threaten Noriega into silence and temporary inactivity, a meeting took place in Bradenton Beach, Florida near McDill Air Force Base. I was there on Noriega's yacht along with Oliver North and Aquino, among others[12]. The object of "Operation Shell Game" was to appeal to Noriega's superstitions since a logical approach hadn't slowed his CIA cocaine ops down. Psychological Warfare, which is designed to incite superstitious response, was used to no avail. Soon after, CIA Chief William Casey died of a sudden brain tumor the day he was to testify in Iran Contra, and the scandal diverted away from Noriega's dealings. By the time Bush Sr.'s 'Operation Just Cause' resulted in the incarceration of *his* former CIA associate Noriega, much pertinent information had come to light that not only validated our case but brought us to this point of providing details to Internal Affairs.

"Your experience ties in with Watchtower[13]," the Customs Internal Affairs officer told us. "We have numerous validations, yet are continuously being stopped from the top in DC. We want to know why. I'm sending in two of my best agents from Florida to interview you at length. Compensation for information like yours runs into the hundreds of thousands, and I'll see what I can do to have the funds released to you despite your declining Federal Protection. Quite frankly, I don't blame you for turning down protection from the criminals you are turning in! I can't promise you anything, but I can assure you I will do all I can to have this compensation released to you in order that you can better protect yourselves and get some rehabilitation for your daughter."

I already felt drained of every bit of information by the time Agents Jack Devaney and Howard Rudolph came in to meet with us. Rather than conduct the interview in Lou Bock's office, they suggested we meet at their hotel suite where everyone could be more comfortable. "We can order a pizza, stretch out on the couch, and enjoy a few comforts while we drag you through all this testimony again," Devaney said.

Mark and I were comfortable with these interviews regardless of where they were conducted. It was strenuous trudging through every detail of my experience repeatedly, yet it was important that it be recorded more than once for precise comparative accuracy. Since my memory of such events was photographic due to the mind control trauma involved, it was easy telling the truth over and over. At the same time, it was exhausting mind work for hours on end.

Agents Rudolph and Devaney were kind and compassionate. Their boss in Florida worked directly under Von Raab, and it was during the course of these interviews that we learned the extent to which Von Raab had succeeded against insurmountable odds in weakening the drug operations. When George Bush, Sr. was head of the CIA, he oversaw this same southeast region through which CIA drug ops were established[14]. Overcoming Bush's obstacles to unveil the drug operations was an enormous accomplishment considering he was officially US President at the time.

"We risk our lives, infiltrate Caribbean drug operations, bust the drug lords, catch the leaders, obtain the plans, dismantle the structure, then we get stopped. Undercover Customs agents and DEA[15] are exposed and killed, leaders and drug lords and the confiscated drugs are back on the streets, and plans are put back into action before we can finish dismantling them," one of the agents complained.

"Having eyes to see these covert operations is quite an accomplishment in itself, " I began. "I realize that the more you know, the more you see. Still, most people don't think to look for this kind of criminal activity when it involves a woman and her child, and particularly when it involves their favorite entertainer! Jimmy Buffet's direct involvement with CIA drugs ops in Key West naturally placed him in a ‘key’ position to exchange drug for arms in Cuba.”

“Do you believe Buffet was under mind control?” I was asked.

“Absolutely not!” I exclaimed. “Buffet was highly skilled in using CIA mind control codes, keys, and triggers to program or access me to ensure the operations he orchestrated were precisely carried out. Not only was his cover as a successful singer/songwriter highly effective in diverting people from his CIA affiliation, he was also highly adept at carrying out covert operations unnoticed!”

Devaney and Rudolph smiled and nodded to each other. Apparently they were already wise to Buffet’s Key West CIA ops. “Cuba is only 88 miles from Key West,” one of them prompted.

“Buffet bragged about being ‘Uncle’s point man to Cuba’ once when I was used in a drugs for arms operation,” I answered. “The boat Buffet used in the operation looked like a normal speed boat, yet it got us from Key West to Cuba quickly. Drugs were being exchanged for rocket launchers to be sent to Afghanistan. The CIA was arming the Afghani Freedom Fighters against Russia, and the same “You Are What You Read” programming George Bush (Sr.) subjected me to was being used throughout the Cuba-Afghanistan operation. My purpose in being there was to deliver the Afghanistan book embossed with a gold key used in programming.”

Rudolph asked, “Are you saying that MK Ultra was used in Cuba?”

Mark spoke up. “Considering that she was under mind control at the time, she would have had no ability to consciously comprehend specific details regarding the programming of others. Since she was likely on a military base, and MK Ultra mind control is used in all military facilities, the information she is reporting simply provides further specifics.”

Devaney made a note and asked Mark, “Are you aware of any mind control training facilities in Afghanistan?”

“Mind control training camps encompass the globe,” Mark began. “There are more mind control training camps cropping up every day, particularly those in the Middle East that are sponsored by the Arabs, Mossad, and US! The vast evidence regarding those blond-haired blue-eyed children who are being abducted and transported into Saudi Arabia for mind control purposes is only the tip of the ice-burg. Former US military who have not been deprogrammed, as well as men from war torn and impoverished countries are prime targets for these terrorist mind control facilities. Mind control is out of control, and the 1947 National Security Act further covers this invisible menace!”

Devaney and Rudolph were making notes in addition to the tape recorder catching every word. “This certainly clarifies Custom’s dilemma in resolving these issues. Every time Von Raab submits plans of resolution, Dick Thornburgh in DC shoots them down. I know he’s doing the same to your case, and all we can do is persist.”

“Thornburgh is blatantly and vastly corrupt,” I said. “How much longer can he stay in the office of Attorney General with the likes of Von Raab frustrated with his blatant injustice?”

“There are two scenarios at work here,” one of the agents answered. “One, follow the money and trails of coke right into Thornburgh’s office and publicly expose him through the media. Or two, expose his criminal activity from a different angle. He’s tangled up in so much it won’t be hard to do.”

“Or three,” the other agent said, “Catch him both ways. A slimy snake like him could wiggle free of anything unless he’s overwhelmed from every angle.”

We talked on into the evening, filling up every audiotape they had with them and our own! By the time we parted, Customs Internal Affairs knew everything I knew about Thornburgh, Bush, Noriega, Jose Busto, Jimmy Buffet, the Caribbean branch of CIA drug ops, the arming of Nicaragua’s Contras, and the destabilization of the Middle East through the arming of Afghanistan and Iraq. Mark and I knew we had strong support, and friends as dedicated as we are to dismantling the criminal corruption that was eroding the soul of America.

Chapter 17
GOVERN YOUR OWN THOUGHTS

The clock on the wall of the Stahlman Building's Legal Services office ticked annoyingly loud, as if to remind Mark and me that time was passing while we waited. My court appointed attorney, Jean Crowe, was finishing up her lunch hour before meeting with me. Mark's stomach growled, disrupting the monotony of our wait as it echoed through the empty waiting room. Finally, the secretary appeared.

"Ms. Crowe will see you now," she announced.

"Why has Kelly been denied the right to testify in court?" I asked Jean Crowe as she wiped crumbs from her desk.

"It was just a hearing and doesn't matter, anyway," Jean Crowe told me. "All Kelly does is incite negative response from Cumberland House when she tells the judge that Charlene is abusive."

"How can that *not* matter?" I was agitated. "It is bad enough that I am not allowed to be Kelly's voice to prosecute Charlene Johnson. Now she is denied access to the court, as well. What voice do we have?"

"Well," Jean cleared her throat. "You have me. Kelly has Cumberland House attorneys and a guardian *ad litem*."

"Are you aware of the séances that are being held as 'group therapy' at Cumberland House?"

"Oh, Cathy," she sighed. "That's just all in fun."

I swallowed my rising rage, standing firm on logic rather than allowing myself to be blinded by emotion. I tried another direction. “Kelly is forbidden from telling me anything further about her circumstances; I am denied copies of her Cumberland House records; Cox and his attorney have full access to her and are reportedly triggering her; her health is failing; she can no longer write, receive letters or have phone calls; she is counseled that her past is not real and that I am insane…”

“Well?” Jean raised her eyebrows.

“ I wish I were insane. Then none of this would be real. There would be no such thing as mind control, Kelly would be OK, and all would be right with the world!”

“The whole conspiracy theory is irrational.”

“You’re playing games with semantics,” I countered. “This isn’t about a ‘wild conspiracy’; it’s about real crime. It’s about the way things are. It’s about the political affluence of the perpetrators involved who are hell bent on covering up their crimes at all costs. They’ve got all the money and influence, I’ve got a welfare pro bono attorney, and Kelly doesn’t even have a voice.”

“And I have a life and other cases, you know,” Jean Crowe asserted, as though I were imposing on her. “This should be a Federal case, not one for family court.”

“Well at least we agree on something,” I said. “But, as you must know by now, Dick Thornburgh and so-called “national security” are blocking all routes to conventional justice. The ultimate justice will be positive change through public awareness, anyway. The media is hot on the issue of mind control and government corruption right now, and they won’t stop until Dick Thornburgh goes down as the most immoral criminal to ever oversee the US Department of Justice.”

“Mark my words,” I said, gathering my paperwork. “Dick Thornburgh’s reputation and career are on the line…the line of coke that leads straight to his office and up his nose. He will be forced to resign in a scandal that will shake the so-called halls of justice of this country. Maybe then you'll be free to do your job and at least restore Kelly's Constitutional rights."

I stormed out of the office, slumping against the wall of the elevator as it groaned and squeaked it's way up to the District Attorney's office. "Straighten up," Mark advised. "This meeting with Scott Rosenburg may result in providing Kelly's ticket to freedom."

Mark was right. By filing for back child support from Cox through Assistant D.A. Scott Rosenburg, we could be awarded sufficient funds to obtain Kelly's transfer to qualified rehabilitation outside the state of Tennessee. At the very least, perhaps it would legally bind Cox to where he wouldn't be able to continue his visits with Kelly.

"Come in," Scott Rosenburg invited me into his office as he perused the paperwork I had provided. He took out his calculator. "According to these figures, Cox owes in excess of $21,000 in back child support." He looked up, satisfied with his conclusions. "If we can prove…" His phone rang, interrupting his statement. "Excuse me," he told me. "Yes," he said into the phone and hung it up. A knock at the door prompted him to pick up a large file, which he handed to a secretary without discussion. "I'm sorry," he apologized, his soulful eyes reflecting his sincerity. "We are under funded and under staffed. I chose this job to make a difference for the kids, and…"

Another secretary poked her head in the door. "Your waiting room is full and you have a meeting in 15 minutes."

Scott sighed. "I would like to talk with you further, Ms. O'Brien."

"Cathy," I dropped the formality.

"I heard about your case some time ago, Cathy, and know that you have support from the most moral politicians I know," Scott said.

"I used to believe 'moral politicians' was an oxymoron," I smiled. "Now I know better. It's more like 'military Intelligence'… few and far between but nevertheless possible.”

“Let’s see what we can do about getting that back child support that’s owed you,” Scott said. “Kelly needs it. How can I reach you when we’re ready for court?”

“Through Jean Crowe. Since we’re in juvenile court two or three times a week these days I’m in her office often.”

“While you’re in the building, come up and see me. This case is top priority and should be ready for sixth circuit court soon.” Scott stood up, looking me in the eye as he warmly shook my hand.

I told Mark about our new possibilities as we drove to our appointment with Dr. Barry Nurcum at Vanderbilt University Psychiatric Hospital. “Even if Kelly is awarded a fraction of the amount that is owed,” Mark said, “we can obtain serious help for her.”

“Maybe Internal Affairs will succeed in arranging for compensation and help for Kelly,” I offered.

“With Dick Thornburgh head of the Justice Department? Counting on the courts to serve justice is a stronger possibility.” He parked the car. “I’m going to make a quick phone call. I’ll meet you in Nurcum’s office.”

I rode the elevator up to the psychiatrist’s office, feeling more confident in Mark’s plans than I did in Dr. Nurcum’s abilities. Mark joined me as Dr. Nurcum’s secretary invited us in.

Dr. Nurcum was already aware of Kelly’s case thanks to Marsha Willis, and no time was wasted on recapitulating history. “I’ll begin seeing Kelly next week,” he told us. “In the meantime, you two must cease talking about mind control.”

“We have meetings with top law enforcement officials, politicians, and media persons, and you want me to avoid the words mind control?” I asked.

“No one knows what you’re talking about anyway,” Nurcum stated.

“Civia Tamarkin with *People Magazine* knows what mind control means, and I am aware that you know Civia,” I countered. “She speaks highly of you.”

“I’m telling you to forget about the issue of mind control because it will cost you your life if you persist.” Nurcum was becoming agitated.

“I hope you won’t be advising Kelly to ‘forget’ about reality.” My words were lost to the friction rising in the room as Mark stood up.

“Wait a minute. You are Kelly’s doctor not our attorney.”

“I’m telling you to shut up.”

“You don’t want to do that,” Mark said, beginning to smile.

“While I do my job, you must shut up.” Red rose in his neck as Dr. Nurcum stood to look Mark in the eye. I gathered up our papers and prepared to leave. Fast. “I know what I’m talking about, *shut up*!”

“Are you quoting Civia Tamarkin, or is she quoting you?” Mark asked, sarcastically referring to a recent conversation he had recorded with her. Civia had apparently been tipped that we were meeting with Nurcum, and had advised us to “forget about mind control” and “shut the f--- up.”

“*People Magazine* won’t be quoting me about this case.” Nurcum said.

“If you were quoting Civia, you would have used the same foul language she did,” Mark smiled. “I wonder who both of you are quoting? Whose advice are you two following that has you so hysterical over two little words like ‘mind control’? Wise up. Think for yourself. Either way you’ll be losing that green card as soon as the guard changes in DC.”

Mark and I went out the door. On the way back to the car I said, “His office is crawling with Feds. They may as well have punched eye-holes in the newspapers they weren’t reading to watch more closely.”

“They’d have removed their dark glasses if they needed to see better,” Mark added. “They were there to *be seen*, and it seems they achieved their purpose. They know they can’t intimidate us, but they sure did succeed in intimidating Nurcum. That doctor needs a heavy tranquilizer. Wait until you hear the tape I made of him losing his temper.”

“Is Kelly safe with this arrangement?” I was concerned.

“I believe Nurcum’s intentions to help her are genuine,” Mark observed. “But I don’t trust anyone who is that scared. He’d roll in a heartbeat, and his cowardly heart is beating fast from fear. Let’s go to plan B. I made a phone call that is very promising. I don’t want to discuss it around here, though.”

We talked about our options and plans as we drove back to Melba’s house in Charlotte. Without providing unnecessary detail, Mark told me about a trusted associate on the inside of the Intelligence Community who had access to technology that could help Kelly. “One of the best spies in the world was just deprogrammed through this doctor and made a remarkable recovery. He’s safe and thinking free again. This doctor is aware of our case and has agreed to help Kelly. We could use that child support settlement to get plane tickets overseas.”

I knew better than to question him further. Mark always shared whatever information he could with me, and to press for additional details ahead of time was both unnecessary and unsafe. I excitedly pondered the possibilities, reflecting on my meeting with Rosenburg. His soulful eyes had shined with sincerity, and I felt better about my connection with him than with anyone else involved in Kelly’s case. Nurcum I was not so comfortable with. I thought back on our meeting with him, and suddenly laughed out loud.

“What in the world is so funny?” Mark asked.

“It just struck me funny that you told a leading psychiatrist to ‘think for himself.’ Considering what Kelly and I emerged from and what we’ve been through with the mental health system, it seems ironic.”

Mark smiled. “If you liked that one, then you’ll like the letter I just sent to Al Gore after he refused to help Kelly.”

“I really hoped he’d help. He doesn’t seem like a bad guy.”

“He’s not. Nor is he a good guy. He’s just a guy who does what he’s told who has jumped through so many hoops he no longer has an original thought of his own,” Mark explained. “So I sent him the message in DC ‘govern your own thoughts’ hoping he would reconsider.”

“What did he say?”

“Nothing. Like I said, I don’t believe his thoughts are his own.”

I pondered how Mark’s message to Gore reverberated with profound meaning. “There would be no such thing as mind control if everyone realized the need to apply the phrase ‘Govern your own thoughts’.”

Chapter 18
COVER OPS

“One of our ‘guardian angels[1]’ gave me a contact number for Rita Jenrette of ‘A Current Affair’ TV show. I just talked with her, and if this comes off as planned it could be a real break for us,” Mark told me as I emerged from a refreshing shower. It was a bright morning, and we were getting dressed for a meeting with our local District Attorney Dan Alsobrooks. We needed him to be aware of our growing reputation as government whistleblowers and the precarious circumstances that accompanied it. He had also stated interest in our case regarding a local criminal by the name of Ernest Ray Lynn[2]. For now, though, our focus was on the phone call that Mark just completed.

“Rita Jenrette is a Washington insider turned television host. Her TV news magazine is shaking up politics.” Mark paused to poke his tongue in his muscled cheek for a smoother shave.

“Is she part of the media expose’ on Dick Thornburgh that Customs Internal Affairs referred to?” I asked, pulling on my blue jeans.

“Yes,” Mark splashed shaving cream from his handsome face. “A former FBI Operative by the name of Darlene Kinsey and her partner, CIA Agent and field officer Bradley Ayers, turned in evidence that corroborates your information on Caribbean CIA cocaine ops . They would like you to see the show that’s airing tonight since they’ll be showing photos of that mansion in Jamaica you talk about.”

“That sounds interesting,” I commented, passing Mark the towel.

“What’s interesting is that they, too, tie this whole thing to Thornburgh, his involvement in the drug industry, and ‘national security’ cover-up.”

“How are they surviving?” I asked, deeply concerned for their welfare knowing all-too-well the difficulties encountered while whistle blowing.

Compassion filled Mark’s eyes. “Darlene Kinsey said her husband has been murdered. Officially it was ruled a suicide, but that’s not the way she sees it. Rather than succumb to terror tactics being used to silence her, she’s going public with the information.”

“Smart move.” I looked at my watch. “We have twenty minutes to get to Alsobrooks’ office. I’ll get our briefcases and meet you in the car.”

Mark had the car warmed up and ready to go by the time I climbed in a few minutes later. The ‘pop-tops and dental floss’ were holding up great, and the Pacer was as reliable as ever. Switching gears from our earlier conversation, I turned to discussing our upcoming meeting. “Is Dan Alsobrooks clean?”

“We’re about to find out,” Mark said, steering us toward the small town of Charlotte, Tennessee. “Edith Hammons says he’s clean. She’d have cause to know since he’s investigating Ernest Ray.”

Loretta Lynn’s son, Ernest Ray, was indicted for shooting a woman in the back in what was termed a ‘trailer park’ fight[3]. I had known Ernest Ray throughout the 1980’s since he was traveling the Country Music circuit as front man in Loretta’s band. In reality, I knew him to be acutely involved in mind control atrocities, CIA cocaine drug ops, and had even heard him brag that he “could get away with murder[4]” due to what he knew about Senator Byrd. Ernest Ray was acting in the capacity of Loretta’s mind control handler along with her Road Manager Ken Riley while they dealt in CIA cocaine ops without her knowledge[5].

Dan Alsobrooks was as clean as Edith had said he was, and he promised to do all he could to help keep us safe. He was in a position to help considerably, and he did. We shared a passion for justice regardless of the fame and/or influence of the perpetrators, as well as a need to stop the flow of corruption that was hindering prosecution of them. Mark and I shared information with Alsobrooks regarding Thornburgh, 'national security,' and what I knew about Earnest Ray.

"Ernest Ray is noted for his 'charming personality' and for being a 'lady's man,' which in reality is simply that he uses NLP to manipulate the minds of everyone he encounters. He mastered mind control techniques through his CIA friends and contacts. I know from experience that he associates with Byrd and Bill Clinton. That shift of the Country Music Industry into Branson was a deliberate move to bring Nashville's branch of CIA drug ops closer to Clinton's Mena Airport[6] operations. These are powerful contacts for Ernest Ray, which allows him to be privy to classified information."

"What do you think of Ernest Ray's character?" Alsobrooks asked.

"He knew MK Ultra codes, keys, and triggers to my mind control programming and accessed sexual aspects for his own perversion. That's not exactly being the 'lady's man' he portrays himself to be, but it does illustrate his total lack of respect for CIA ops. He wasn't supposed to be doing that, and arrogantly laughed at anyone trying to stop him. He was a loose cannon. Pretty crazy, really. Anyone so immoral as to repeatedly traumatize his own mother to control her is capable of absolutely anything. I'm not surprised that he is caught up in legal trouble, although prosecuting him will be a challenge considering his contacts."

"He *will* be prosecuted," Alsobrooks vowed. "He's going to learn that there are those who do oppose his criminal actions."

Mark and I left Dan Alsobrook's office, satisfied that someone of his caliber shared our passion for justice, regardless of the outcome. "The good DA is in for a surprise if he thinks he can put Ernest Ray away," Mark said.

That night, after the TV news magazine 'A Current Affair' publicly revealed the direct involvement of Dick Thornburgh in CIA Caribbean cocaine and mind control ops, Rita Jenrette telephoned again. Her show was being cancelled, their lives were threatened, and all three were now frantically striving to survive.

“Darlene, Bradley, and I will be appearing on Geraldo Rivera’s show right away to expose the containment that has been placed on us.”

“Geraldo?” Mark asked. “You know he is aware of our case, vowed to expose it, then rolled over at the first threat. Geraldo is a spineless sensationalist.”

“I’m not surprised at all,” Rita said. “But we have no choice. It is a matter of getting our voices heard *now* or die.”

Mark voiced his understanding, offering support.

“I’ve been around DC enough to know how to survive, even if my show didn’t,” Rita said. “It was worth it to expose Thornburgh. He has got to be stopped. I am concerned for Darlene, though. This has been hard on her.” It was agreed that Mark would stay in contact with Darlene Kinsey until all necessary measures were in place to ensure her safety.

When Geraldo aired, it was brief. The three were removed from the show during commercial break. Darlene was back in contact with Mark immediately, and great lengths were taken to maintain her security.

In the meantime, Kelly’s security remained a primary concern as well. Her sessions with Dr. Nurcum had begun, and knowing that Vanderbilt Psychiatric Hospital is a Defense Department Subcontractor never left my mind. After all, Vanderbilt Hospital was where Kelly had been taken several times per year during the 1980’s. Once when she was there due to respiratory failure, Loretta was in the Psychiatric wing at the same time reportedly being reconditioned in MK Ultra style. Vanderbilt was a nightmare from the past that was intruding on our present. I questioned Kelly for every detail in an effort to monitor her level of dissociation. The best news she had to offer was that she felt like Nurcum was listening to her regarding Cox.

Mark and I left Cumberland House, checked our Post Office Box which was still being filtered by the CIA, and went over to the Copy Shop. After running a few necessary document copies and updating Billy, we began the drive to a designated rendezvous point for a meeting with John Morrow.

“Who is John Morrow?” I asked, shifting my focus from Kelly to our meeting.

“He’s with the Nebraska Leadership Conference[7]. He traveled here in order to meet with us. Apparently one of the kids[8] Houston abused in Boys Town[9] is talking, and they’ve got quite a bit of evidence on some of the politicians you named, like George Bush[10]. They know about MK Ultra mind control, sexual child abuse for mind control purposes, CIA cocaine operations, and absolutely nothing about surviving containment.”

“I’m really hungry,” I complained, knowing it seemed trivial in light of the issues we were dealing with. Yet, it was an intrusive fact.

“So am I,” Mark said. “Did you bring any peanut butter sandwiches?”

“We were out of peanut butter. I made egg sandwiches for us instead.” I dug around the console hoping to find loose change. “Do you have any change for a soda?”

“I wish,” Mark answered. “I don’t even have money for gas. Let’s hope we have enough gas in the tank to get back home from our meeting with John Morrow. We’re supposed to meet him at a hotel room all the way across town.”

We knocked on the hotel room door. A wide-eyed gentleman opened the door as far as the security chain would allow, checked behind us, and quickly let us in.

“They’ve already killed our investigator,” John began. “Gary Caradori and his son, nearly a year ago July 11, 1990. He had the evidence.”

“Who knew he had the evidence?” Mark asked as we walked in and set on the couch.

“Everybody. We thought if everyone knew, we would be safe.” John’s eyes brimmed with tears. Obviously he was a concerned citizen and not a hardened Intelligence officer.

“The first rule of survival is making copies of everything. The second is keeping a tape recorder running.” Mark flipped open his briefcase to reveal the tape recorder. “And never use a courtroom as a forum.”

John was writing everything down as fast as he could. “The court case is already under way. Everything is going wrong.”

Mark and John talked at length. The CIA had already infiltrated the Franklin case, leaving little hope that victims Paul Bonacci or Alisha Owen would have a chance to heal and recover from their ordeal. The parallels between the Franklin case and Kelly’s extended far beyond Alex Houston, yet we could not align with the Nebraska Leadership Conference due to the extent to which they were being pulled down by the very ones they sought to expose. Their evidence against George Bush, Sr. was overwhelming, as was ours. Yet convergence of the information could have placed Kelly in the same precarious position that the Nebraska victims were struggling to survive.

“Let’s stay in contact,” Mark suggested. “Maybe we can help each other survive this mess without aligning our efforts.” As we went out the door, John hugged us both as though he’d never see us alive again.

As Mark drove the Pacer toward his mother’s, we made good use of the time discussing events. We knew we were in deep, yet we also knew we could survive as long as we kept ourselves free of other cases and organizations, and recorded and copied everything.

“The Nebraska Leadership Conference is one more example of how well-intentioned organizations become infiltrated,” Mark commented.

“Why are they aligned with Ted Gunderson?” I asked. Ted was a well-known and liked former FBI agent who was Resident Agent in Charge of the Southeastern Division in Memphis during the years that I was abused. He claimed he had not been aware of the blatant and rampant CIA drug operations, let alone mind control. Gunderson’s recent investigations into the McMartin Preschool[11] child abuse scandal resulted in one of the worst nightmares in California history. Ted retired in 1979 as Senior Special Agent in Charge of the FBI in Los Angeles, California, and his friendship with LA Police Chief Darryl Gates blazed through the infamous LA riots[12].

“I don’t know why they associate with Gunderson,” Mark answered. “I always say ‘I know who to trust because I know how to trust’ because of people like him. Ted is such a likable person, yet we know better than to align ourselves with him. He’s like the kiss of death.”

“He reminds me of Leslie Neilson’s character in ‘Naked Gun[13]’ where everyone around him dies while he obliviously smiles his way through,” I mused.

Mark laughed. “You’re not the first person to make that comparison. Ted even looks like that Neilson character since they both are of Norwegian decent.”

“Why are people judged by their projection rather than by their actions?” I wondered. “The old adage ‘never judge a book by its cover’ certainly should be applied. People in the public eye like Ernest Ray and other entertainers I know; or Jim Traficant, and most politicians I know, can project anything and folks buy into it. Why? Can’t they see?”

“In the case of the Nebraska Leadership Conference,” Mark thoughtfully replied, “desperation and ignorance seems to have blinded them to reality. You know yourself that fear is blinding. It takes logic and a rigid formula to survive CIA containment.”

I reflected on the untimely deaths of Darlene Kinsey’s husband, Gary Caradori, and his son. “People need to know what you do, Mark. Your insight into surviving CIA cover-up is desperately needed these days. We need a media break on this information."

"It's going to take someone with serious strength of purpose and conviction to break through media censorship. Somebody who won't roll over and cave into intimidation. Those media networks are like street prostitutes who do it for money and not for passion of truth. Plus they have their FCC[14] license to protect and do what they are told out of DC."

"Rita Jenrette put her show on the line," I reminded him.

"I respect her for it, too. She's not the Geraldo-type who'll roll over and do anything for a job."

"That reminds me," I thought aloud. "Civia and Ted Gunderson are friends. They knew each other through the McMartin scandal. Civia, as a reporter, covered the story while Ted, as an investigator, tried to uncover it. 'Small world' as my abusers would say. It is a bizarre coincidence!"

"There is no such thing as coincidence if a Fed and a journalist are involved," Mark advised. "When the same people keep popping up over and over again, there is a reason for it. Signs like this should never be ignored."

"It does help identify who is part of containment and 'cover-ops'."

"Better turn off that recorder since we're running out of batteries again," Mark smiled, turning into the driveway. "Let's leave this 'small world' behind and go melt into ours."

Chapter 19
OCTOPUS

The sun was shining directly overhead by the time we emerged from ‘our world’ of bliss to focus on our goals. The phone was ringing like an alarm clock, and Mark hugged and kissed me warmly one more time before rising to answer it.

I slowly woke up, luxuriating in the passion that lingered in our room. Mark’s voice barely reached me as he talked on the phone in the kitchen while the coffee brewed. I stretched. Another new day! I reflected on our love, appreciating the safety, peace, and hope that thinking freely brought to life. Circumstances were intense, yet life’s conditions could not reach the realistic spiritual high that comes with being free to live true-to-soul in harmony with love. Unconditional love celebrated through unconditional sex helped balance the intensity of our lives.

Mark opened the bedroom door, asking me to join him outside for coffee. I slipped into my robe and went with him into the fresh air. We enjoyed our privacy out in the country. We settled into the swing under the shade tree, savoring our coffee while we talked.

“That was a reporter by the name of Danny Casolaro who just called.” We paused to watch a huge crow fly overhead, casting a shadow across the ground. Mark resumed, “He is the reporter who is investigating the Inslaw case. Former National Security Advisor William Hamilton[1] owns Inslaw, which produced sophisticated computer software called PROMIS until it was stolen by the Justice Department.”

“Why did Danny call us?” I asked, since we didn’t even own a computer at the time let alone understand the subject.

“He learned about us through natural attrition in the course of his investigations, and knows that we have collaborating information. My spook contact that gave me the ‘OK’ code on Danny apparently did likewise with him. It saved a lot of unnecessary dialogue, which allowed us to get straight to the point. Casolaro is about to publicly expose the whole Inslaw case, which he refers to as ‘The Octopus[2]’ due to the different tentacles of corruption emanating from the Executive Branch of the Pentagon. Dick Thornburgh is right at the core.

One tentacle of the Octopus extends to Byrd and Senate Appropriations; another into CIA cocaine ops and mind control. When Danny’s story breaks, it will expose your case and Kelly’s. Inslaw[3] also ties in with Iran-Contra[4], BCCI[5], and the October Surprise, among others. Thornburgh has refused to answer questions before the House Judiciary Committee, who subpoenaed close to 500 documents regarding Inslaw and the stolen PROMIS software. Casolaro says ‘the Octopus’ is the biggest story to ever break in this country. He believes it could re-establish Constitutional values of truth and justice by exposing high-level criminals like Thornburgh and Byrd, and ultimately return the Government to the people. Pretty exciting stuff.”

“Is he aware of the dangers?” I asked.

“Of course,” Mark answered. “Apparently he has significant inside contacts, information, and support. Otherwise he would never have found us. He uncovered the Justice Department’s motives in stealing the PROMIS software and for pushing Hamilton‘s Inslaw business toward bankruptcy. The software was sold to Israel with a ‘trap door’ in it, which gave the Justice Department access to the data base of Israeli Intelligence.”

“The Mossad?”

“Yes,” Mark answered. “It was also sold with the same ‘trap door’ in it to Iraq and other foreign governments. That’s why ‘national security’ has been slapped on the Inslaw case. Casolaro has survived the investigation part, and was calling from DC to alert us that he has full media exposure lined up for release of his story. It sounds like he is going to succeed."

"Customs intel said the story would break. Casolaro must be one of the ones doing it."

"There is a vast number of reporters ready to break stories on mind control, CIA cocaine ops, and Government corruption. They know our country is being taken over by criminals, and want to stop it as much as we do. All eyes are on Danny right now, waiting for him to take the lead and break it all wide open." Mark smiled. "It would sure make a world of difference for us if he does. Anyway, he wants to talk with you and will be calling back in a few days."

"Is he a spook? Should I talk with him?"

"Of course," Mark assured me. "He is a really nice person; very soulful and kind. He already has his facts in order. He just wants to tell you that he respects what you're doing and thinks it's phenomenal you survived."

"Survival is no accident. He must know I'd have never survived without you."

"He indicated that."

We finished our coffee and went back inside to begin writing letters. I naively believed religious leaders like Pat Robertson and Jesse Jackson[6] might have compassion on Kelly's situation and help. So we wrote them letters and sent them information packets with the few remaining stamps we had. We also wrote to Linda Blood, who was in the process of writing her expose' on Aquino, *The New Satanists*[7]. Linda had known Aquino for years and was appalled by his torturous, controlling actions. Aquino claimed Linda as his girlfriend for a while, and she could only speculate that perhaps it was her name that first attracted him to her. Linda's physical appearance also undeniably resembled Lillith's, the woman Aquino later married. While Linda was clearly more attractive than Lillith, both women looked like Aquino’s mother. Whatever Aquino’s twisted justifications were for latching onto Linda, she turned negative experience into positive by publicly exposing his satanic ‘secret’ means of mind control. She released inside information provided by friends of hers within the Temple of Set that would haunt Aquino in future years.

Mark and I drove back into Nashville a few days later for yet another court hearing. A psychiatric evaluation of me was required for court records, and Cox was ordered to undergo psych exams as well. Since Mark and I were in constant communication with many of the nation’s leading psychiatrists, I certainly wasn’t concerned with test results. Mental health professionals were among the first to encounter numerous survivors of mind control filling their offices. Since rehabilitative information was scarce and the problem so vast and severe, word spread that Mark’s recovery methods used on me had proved successful. Our conversations with psychiatrists and psychologists were in depth and extensive. Were it not for Kelly’s adverse experience with mental health, it would never have occurred to me to be cautious submitting myself to an evaluation. Besides, I was elated that Cox would be undergoing a psych exam. Even the least qualified psychiatrist would surely diagnose his obvious insanity.

Mark strongly advised me to be cautious with my exam, and not to expect so much from Cox’s. “The CIA is notorious for falsifying psych exams. Scam exams are as routine as confiscating mail and tapping phones.”

Mark’s advice soon proved true when I went in for my psych exam as ordered with Dr. Cynthia Turner-Graham. “Wear this transmitter wire and keep your tape recorder going at all times,” he told me. I went inside, confident though cautious.

“Would you like me to complete all of these tests?” I asked, looking at a huge stack of papers.

“Do what you want,” she told me without looking up from the newspaper she was reading. “I already know the results. I have been advised on how to write you up and I’ve been paid well for it. You’ve made some serious enemies running your mouth, honey.”

“I’ve also got serious support,” I told her, picking up my belongings to exit the building quickly. “Thank *you* for running your mouth.” Mark saw me rush out the door, had the Pacer in gear as I swung into the car, and quickly drove away.

“You were right,” I grinned. “And we have it all on tape. If Cynthia Turner-Graham is the best they can do, we’ve got it made. She tipped their hand.” I played the tape for Mark as we drove straight to my court appointed attorney’s office.

“We’ll give Jean Crowe a copy of the tape later, but she needs to hear this now and put a stop to this nonsense,” Mark said. After submitting the recorded evidence of the foiled scam, no other evaluation was attempted. Cox’s “clean bill of health” psych exam was considered a scam as well, and the intended adverse court results were averted.

When we played the tape for Jean Crowe, she had said, “I’m not sure what we can do with this since it isn’t a test result like the court ordered. What made you record this?”

“It’s necessary for our survival to record everything,” Mark told her. “We sure can’t count on the justice system to take care of things for us.”

“That reminds me,” Jean said, standing up. “I saw in the newspaper that Dick Thornburgh is talking about resigning[8]. He says he’ll be running for Senate instead. I did read where some kind of cover-up and cocaine use was traced to his office like you predicted. You must be psychic!”

I groaned. “That’s not ‘psychic,’ it’s inside knowledge. Big difference. What is it going to take to prove the reality of this case to you?”

“You need to prove it the court, not to me.”

I threw up my arms in exasperation and turned to leave. “It’s a good thing I was ‘psychic’ enough to record Cynthia Turner-Graham,” I sarcastically muttered as we left.

When I saw Kelly the next week, she slipped me a hospital ID bracelet indicating that she had been injured in a Cumberland House van accident. I had not been notified. One compassionate Cumberland House worker slipped me the medical records from the accident as well, along with hospital records from when Cox had previously triggered Kelly into respiratory failure. My outrage over not being notified was overwhelmed by my compassion for Kelly. She was a child in need of understanding in order to heal from her traumatic past, and still she was forced to deal with trauma and cover-up every day. Since she had been forbidden by court order from talking to me about such things, she knew she risked a straightjacket and padded cell for slipping me the hospital bracelet.

Covering for her, I smiled through my disdain and hid the bracelet in my purse. Kelly smiled back and we communicated beyond words. We shared that warmth, knowing, and bond that no court orders could hinder.

“With understanding comes compassion,” I told her. “And they just don’t understand you or where you’ve been. Reality doesn’t go away just because someone ‘in authority’ doesn’t care to understand the truth. Believe in yourself, Kelly. I do.”

“I know what’s real,” Kelly confidently said. “Believing or not-believing doesn’t change the facts. That’s why it doesn’t matter what they believe. And I don’t just ‘believe,’ I *know*.”

“Truth, by its very nature, never goes away,” I reassured her, as I so often did. “Neither do I.” While I hugged her, I cradled her head to me. Such a strong spirit.

“Imagine what your future holds,” I said. “Univer*soul* justice is bigger-than-life and as ab*soul*ute as truth. It rides on wings of love, and love is the most powerful force in the universe. When life’s negatives are inevitably balanced by positive, it is tipped to the good by nature of univer*soul* justice. Considering all the negatives you’ve been through in life, what must your future hold to balance it? Your future is bright with promise.”

Kelly softly laughed with delight while I held her. “You are brilliant, Kelly, and everyone is going to know it someday.”

I silently reflected on Danny Casolaro's progress, knowing he was on the verge of making a positive, profound difference for us all.

When Mark and I left Cumberland House that day, we went directly to Jean Crowe’s office with the hospital ID bracelet and medical records. “Please don’t expose Kelly for giving me this,” I pleaded. “She doesn’t need to be put in a straight-jacket for telling the truth.”

”What do you want me to do?” Jean asked.

“Know the truth.”

Mark and I left Jean Crowe’s office and went home. While we were unwinding from a long, hard day, the phone rang.

August 10, 1991. Danny Casolaro was dead.

Chapter 20
“SUICIDED”

The murder of Danny Casolaro changed the world, and the public never knew it. Only those of us counting on media persons to bring the reality of government corruption to light knew it, and now we were left on our own while seasoned journalists cowered in the dark. Danny’s murder sent a clear message that had terrified the media into silence.

Mark and I discussed Danny’s murder the next morning while we sipped our coffee in the backyard swing. “A double agent insider asset within the FBI called and told me Danny was dead. He was killed in West Virginia of all places,” Mark began. “Right there in Byrd’s backyard. Danny was in a hotel in Martinsburg, West Virginia, on his way home to complete his story. He called his brother[1] to tell him he had the evidence. He should have known the phone was tapped.” Mark wrestled with his grief and the magnitude of the meaning to Danny’s death. “He was excited about breaking the news,” Mark wiped his eyes. “Next thing you know, Danny is found dead in the bathtub with his wrists cut. A brief, cryptic ‘suicide’ note was found in place of his ‘Octopus’ manuscript. I know for a fact he wasn’t suicidal when I talked with him. He even told his brother he was *not* suicidal in the event something happened to him. His wrists were slit so deep his hands were nearly severed. There is no way he could have slit his other wrist in that condition[2].”

Mark and I sat in silence before he continued. “Danny’s body was embalmed before the family was notified. Elliot Richardson, the former US Attorney General who worked the Inslaw case with Danny, is calling for a Federal investigation into his death.”

“Maybe there will actually be an investigation[3] launched since Thornburgh is no longer in office to cover it up,” I hoped through my grief. President Bush, Sr. had accepted Thornburgh’s resignation as Attorney General within hours of Danny’s death[4]. By August 15, Thornburgh had sidestepped the Inslaw case and unlawfully packed up 258 boxes of documents[5] and left office[6].

“His assistant[7] filled his vacancy,” Mark reminded me. “It’s the same tune, different song.”

“It wouldn’t bring Danny back, anyway,” I cried. “The most that could come from a legitimate investigation would be that the media quits cowering and restores freedom to the press. Maybe someone will even have the fortitude to release the ‘Octopus’ in Danny’s honor, and for the sake of our country.”

“Every journalist I know of is afraid of being ‘suicided’ now. They’ve coined a new word from Danny’s death, but they’re afraid to even speak it, let alone broadcast it.” Mark’s frustration with cowardice reached new heights. “How a whole nation can fear a criminal few is beyond my comprehension.”

Still dressed in our robes, we rose from the swing and began walking. Nature could be soul soothing at times like these, and we made our way through the woods at the edge of the yard.

“Danny’s cause will never die,” I vowed. “Surely there are more people out there like us who will keep the spotlight of truth on his murder and the cause he died for.”

“Elliot Richardson’s call for a federal investigation will most likely be stopped under the 1947 National Security Act. When corruption reigns unchecked at the political top, criminal activity filters all the way down through local police. These days, law enforcement is protecting a corrupted system rather than it’s citizens.”

"It's like the military," I added. "If they could think beyond what they are told, they would realize that Operation Just Cause[8] was 'just cause' Bush wanted his partner-in-crime Noriega silenced before he revealed that he was on the CIA payroll for being their drug broker for the Columbian cartels. The military is protecting a corrupted system, too, whether they are aware of it or not."

Mark agreed. "With both law enforcement and the military protecting a corrupt system that the media is afraid to expose, it's easy to understand why the government is determined to take away our guns."

I thought about Mark's statement, acutely aware of the campaign that had been launched to disarm citizens. Still, the connection wasn't clear. "What do you mean?"

"This criminal government doesn't want guns in the hands of people who can think for themselves."

"Of course," I responded, realizing that justice was solely up to the people now. "But many citizens aren't thinking for themselves these days, either. Now that the media is afraid to report the truth, people won't think to seek it themselves."

"You know what Hitler said," Mark reminded me. "He said, 'What good fortune for the government when the people do not think'."

"With what you and I know about social engineering," I said, "until the government succeeds in taking guns away from citizens, they'll be telling us who to shoot just like they did the military in Just Cause!"

"We need to get the truth out there before it gets to that point," Mark said. "Guns are humanity's last line of defense. Truth is the first."

"When people realize the truth, they'll be empowered to take these few criminals out of power and reclaim their country and freedom. Evolution over revolution. Being armed with knowledge is much more effective than weapons.”

“This is true,” Mark said. “When you consider the technological advancements that the criminals in control of our country have to use against us, our guns look ineffective anyway. Granddaddy’s squirrel gun is not going to get it when faced with their computerized advancements, harmonics, ELF waves, biologicals, nuclear capacity and so on. Still, we better hang on to our weapons just because they are hell-bent on taking them away. They must feel threatened by them. Besides, being armed with truth *and* weapons is a powerful combination.”

“The truth is essential for ensuring that people know who the enemy is,” I said. “Social engineering on the most basic level is already causing racial problems, for example. By focusing people on racial differences, likenesses are overlooked. Emotional issues like racism, homosexuality and abortion keep people hating and fighting amongst themselves so as to divert them from realizing who the enemy truly is.”

“Divide and conquer. Hate is a result of fear, and fear is the most controlling emotion of all,” Mark said. “Look at how the media caved into fear with the murder of Danny.”

“How long do you believe it will take before people wake up to reality?”

“Let’s hope they wake up soon, despite the media blackout,” Mark answered. “The longer it takes, the more effort will be required to restore peace, justice, and freedom. We’ll do our part to make sure the truth gets out there.”

“Danny certainly did his part. People should know that anyone with the passion for justice like he had would never suicide at the point of victory.” I reflected on his courage. “We’d better make it clear that we’re not suicidal.”

“No one gets out of here alive,” Mark said, which was a fact he often stated in regards to living life fully without running from death. “But we’re not through with our purpose any more than Danny was. You’re right. We’ll make it clear that we’re not suicidal.”

We had been walking for some time, and decided to return to the house and get dressed for the day. Just as we were about to emerge from the woods, Mark suddenly stopped me in my tracks and gestured me to be still. I saw through the weeds that Melba’s house was surrounded by what appeared to be a S.W.A.T[9]. team. The black uniformed men had guns drawn, and were circling the house to enter through all doorways. Mark’s finger went to his lips, signaling me to stay silent. I watched as he stealthily approached the men from their blind side while they assumed their positions for a raid.

He tapped the shoulder of a County Sheriff Deputy, triggering him to look the opposite direction from where Mark stood. “What the hell are you doing?” Mark boomed. The Deputy jumped, nearly dropping his weapon.

“Who are you?” he loudly responded, clearly startled.

“Not the man you’re looking for,” Mark responded. “Now what are you doing here?”

“There are Federal agents out front who need to see you,” he said. “I’m just here to accompany them as required by law.”

Federal agents must be accompanied by the local Sheriff or his Deputy when raiding a citizen and/or serving a warrant by Constitutional law. Knowing the local elected Sheriff is essential for all citizens, and can prove to be a lifesaver. We hadn’t elected our local Sheriff, and Dan Alsobrooks did not have jurisdiction to stop the harassment that was unfolding.

“Why the dramatics?” I heard Mark ask as they walked around front.

“We heard you were armed,” the Deputy replied, as I emerged from the woods to slip through the backdoor.

Melba was oblivious to what was going on outside, and I went into our room and quickly pulled my clothes on. Peeking through the blinds I could see Mark talking to several men. There was no S.W.A.T. van, just one Sheriff's car among several Fed cars parked out front. I was still shaking when Mark walked in the room.

"They were here to serve a warrant for me to appear in Federal Court," he calmly informed me.

"On what charge?" I was perplexed how they could charge him with a crime when he epitomized justice itself.

"Threatening the life of the President."

"*What*!?" I knew that was preposterous.

Mark smiled. "Obviously this indictment is going nowhere. We are so publicly vocal, everyone knows I wouldn't jeopardize your case with anything so absurd even if I was that stupid. There can't possibly be any evidence. Even the Feds who served the papers know better."

"Then why did they surround the house with guns drawn?"

"They know I'm armed. They're pussies, not a posse." Obviously Mark wasn't worried, yet I did not share his confidence in view of Danny's blatant murder.

"There is no justice in this country," I said, giving voice to my concerns. "If they can trump up charges like this, there is no limit to what they can do in a courtroom."

"Or outside of one," Mark pointed out. "Look what they did to Danny right in front of the public's eye. At least I get a jury to witness this attempt to silence us."

"But the courtroom can't be used as a forum for speaking out."

“We’re not going to use it as a forum,” Mark said. “Sometimes more can be said in silence than in words.”

“*We*?” Since Mark wasn’t multiple, he must be referring to the two of us. How did I figure into this?

“You’ll have to testify as a witness. This is a ridiculous charge that is going to blowback on them and expose them as the criminals they are,” Mark assured me.

Mark’s mother knocked impatiently on our door. “Mark!” she shrieked as though we were still outside. “When are you going to take me to the store?”

“Just a minute,” he told her. She had no clue what had just transpired, and it was better that way. He turned back to me, hugging me in a comforting embrace. “I’ll make a phone call while we’re in town. This is an opportunity, not a problem.”

“Mark!” Melba was banging on the door again, unable to hear his attempts to reply. He rolled his eyes and slipped into his jeans and shirt. He opened the door and she nearly knocked on his chest. “Oh,” she exclaimed, steadying herself. “I want to pick up an angel food cake to go with my lunch.”

Mark smiled back at me while I got my purse, sharing the understanding that it must be nice to have such simple “big” problems.

By afternoon, we each had appointments lined up with Federal Attorneys who were taking our case pro-bono. Since we weren’t paying them, I wondered who did and how that would effect the outcome. While we discussed our circumstances, the doorbell rang. Mark and I looked at each other, wondering who it was this time. He peeked through the blinds.

“It’s Billy!” he exclaimed. “I wonder what he’s doing here?”

Our new-found friend from the Copy Shop in Nashville had driven all the way out to Melba’s house in the country to see us. He presented us with a huge basket full of gourmet foods, which looked especially delightful considering our welfare budget. “I heard about Danny Casolaro,” he said, as we thanked him for his gift. “I figured you two could use some cheering up.”

I was touched. “Billy, that is so thoughtful of you.”

“Weren’t you afraid to come out here?” Mark asked. “You know I’m armed and on high alert.”

“No way,” Billy answered. “You’re wise and sensible, not an emotional, fearful type. Why would you even ask me a question like that?”

“We’ve had an interesting day,” Mark began. We all walked outside, enjoying the peace of nature while we talked. We told Billy about the Federal warrant.

“You must be making significant progress,” Billy observed. “You’ve got somebody real scared to make a move this ridiculous.”

Mark smiled, looking me in the eye to make sure I got the point. We began to relax in our conversation, enjoying our friendship rather than focusing on outside pressures. Soon Mark was telling Billy the story of how he learned about Kelly and me from the Chinese officials. “Alex Houston is so uncool. It’s a wonder his lack of diplomacy alone didn’t get us killed. Here we were, guests of the Chinese military who already *know* what a slimebag criminal he is, and he’s explaining business to them. Finally, our Hong Kong partner took me aside and said, ‘Misser Houston is embarrassment speaking broken English to interpreters.’ I had to find a way to shut Houston up, which is nearly impossible to do with an entertainer. Plus I had to throw him out of the company, *and* rescue Cathy and Kelly from him.”

We all laughed as Mark imitated Houston speaking to the interpreters. Since I had traveled for eight years under Alex Houston’s control, I knew exactly what Mark was talking about. Houston had the same broken English for every language. There were many times I believed Mexican and Cuban drug lords would kill him just to shut him up. In retrospect, those were dangerous times.

“I can see why you two aren’t afraid of death,” Billy said. “If it was your time to die, it would have happened by now.”

“I’ve had numerous near-death experiences,” I agreed. “I’ve peered over that edge and have absolutely no fear. If people knew what death is really about, they would begin enjoying their lives instead of running from death.”

“People fear what they don’t know,” Mark added. “I’ve had close calls, too, and have even been declared DOA[10]. I’m not afraid of death in the least.”

“I’ll cross that bridge when I come to it,” Billy said lightheartedly.

“I never saw a bridge. Or pearly gates. Or a tunnel, river, or light,” Mark said from experience. “It’s more natural than that. Less earthly.”

“More like a transition into a peaceful dimension of immense love,” I said. “It’s not ‘an end’, it’s more like a beginning.”

“Well,” Billy said, rising to leave. “Danny’s in a better place.”

“Yes,” I agreed. “But this world is *not* a better place with him gone.”

“We’ve got quite a challenge facing us, now,” Mark said. “Bringing truth to light in a media blackout isn’t exactly easy.”

“By the way,” I injected, “we’re not suicidal just because we don’t fear death. We’re not through with what we need to do any more than Danny was. So, you heard it first, *we are NOT suicidal*.”

“Well, stay safe,” Billy said, walking to his car. He smiled at Mark, “I know you will.”

“Thanks for the basket,” I called, remembering the gourmet goodies he brought.

Billy smiled. “I figured you could use some fun treats.” He turned to Mark, “Come and see me next time you’re in town and let me know what the lawyers have to say.” The tires of Billy’s Trans Am squealed as he drove away.

Chapter 21
FEDERAL *WAR*RANT

“I didn’t know Federal Attorneys could be so understanding,” I told Billy after our meeting with our respective attorneys. “My attorney, Mike Terry, seemed to understand everything before I even told him.”

“Funny how that happens among Feds,” Mark sarcastically commented.

“Yeah,” Billy acknowledged. “Let’s see what justice he can bring to your case. What did your attorney have to say, Mark?”

“There wasn’t much to discuss. We had to walk across the street so they could finger print me. I asked why that was necessary since the Feds already had fingerprints on me in their files.”

“What had you done?” Billy asked, alarmed.

Mark smiled. “Worked for them.”

“That’s about as criminal as it gets,” I muttered.

“Did you have to submit to the finger printing anyway?”

“Sure,” Mark answered. “But I had fun. The guy who was taking my fingerprints kept getting smudged results. It must have been the nervous tick I developed for the occasion. By the time they were clear enough for the record, he and I were getting along well in spite of Henry Martin, my attorney, advising me to shut up. After he took my palm print, I shook his hand.”

“He shook your hand?” Billy laughed.

“My attorney wasn’t too happy about it. Neither was he when he realized what he had done. Anyway, Henry Martin was steaming mad by the time I submitted the handwriting samples. They told me I had to write the names ‘Alex Houston, Earl O’Brien, and Wayne Cox’, which I found odd since the subpoena sited ‘threatening the life of the President.’ So I asked, ‘why are you beating around the bush? Shouldn’t I write George Bush?’ My attorney was adamantly advising me to be quiet. But the Fed taking handwriting samples said, ‘I didn’t ask you to write George Bush, but apparently you did’.”

Billy was laughing by then. “What did you say?”

“’Of course I wrote President Bush, threatening to pursue justice in Kelly’s case regardless of who her perpetrators were.’ I got to the ‘threatening’ word and my attorney almost keeled over. I thought he was going to have a heart attack since the veins in his neck stuck out so far while he was spitting ‘shut up’ at me. The FBI was video recording the whole thing and I wanted them to know where I stood.”

“Did they make you write ‘George Bush’?” Billy was holding his sides laughing by then.

“Over and over like a grade school punishment. So each time I wrote it, I wrote it differently just because I could. I told them my back had been giving me trouble, which caused nerve damage.”

“When does the Grand Jury convene?” Billy asked, aware that this would be a necessary step in order for a ‘no true bill’ or a Federal indictment to be delivered.

“September 19.”

“I wondered what date they would come up with since today is already the 9th.” Billy was aware of the numbers games the Feds always played. “If it is the 3rd, 6th, or 9th, I always know you two will be in town for court or some kind of harassment. Why do they keep playing the numbers game when they know you're onto them?"

"Because they are so self absorbed and arrogant that they would rather signal their friends than disguise their plan," Mark said. "And many at the top subscribe to the ancient mystics Kabala numerology game.

"Like 33rd degree Masons?"

"It's not quite that simple," I answered from my point of view. "They actually believe in the numbers based on the mathematical universe the Hebrews devised thousands of years ago."

The Copy Shop was growing increasingly busy as rush hour picked up. We hugged Billy and left. I needed to meet with Jean Crowe and Scott Rosenburg anyway.

"Bob Anderson threatened Edith Hammons at the last ICAM[1] meeting," I told my attorney. "Does he have jurisdiction over the Organized Victims of Violent Crime?"

"If it scared her, I guess he does. Bob throws his weight around all the time to intimidate people when he thinks he's losing a battle. Apparently he is concerned with the progress that Marsha Willis and Debbie UpChurch are making on Kelly's behalf through ICAM."

"Edith isn't taking it lightly," I informed her.

Jean smiled. "Bob Anderson doesn't know the political clout Edith has behind her grandmotherly appearance. He harasses everybody who stands by you and Kelly, including me. Maybe she can put him in his place."

"Behind bars?" I asked, turning to leave.

"In bars, at least," Mark chimed in, referring to Bob Anderson's reputed drinking habits.

"Maybe he'll be *dis*barred," Jean played along, insinuating that he could lose his attorney's license.

Mark and I parted at the elevator so he could put money in the parking meter while I went up to see Scott Rosenburg.

Upon completing legal paperwork for the upcoming child support trial, Scott paused to inquire about Mark's Federal subpoena. Word spread fast through Nashville, which somehow managed to keep its small town aires despite its metropolitan size. "We're going to plead the 5th[2]," I told him. "It doesn't make sense to me other than that we can't use court as a forum anyway. That seems backwards to me when courts are supposed to know the truth."

"It is a complex case," Scott thoughtfully explained, "and 'threatening the life of the President' doesn't have anything to do with it. By staying silent, they can't dilute the reality of your case with nonsense. You are better off keeping these matters separate."

"Since Danny Casolaro was murdered, the media is cowering; which gives the criminals opposing us free reign. I must admit, this one makes me nervous."

"Yes, but I know you have friends with just as much power. Plus you've got supporters like Edith Hammons who is on television advocating for victims all the time."

"Thank you, Scott," I said, genuinely comforted at the thought. "It is true that citizens' organizations are very supportive. People helping people works far better than major organizations like Human Rights Watch, Amnesty International, or the Christic Institute."

“The Christic Institute hasn’t helped?” Scott asked, aware that Christian oriented organizations should be more helpful.

“Neither has Pat Robertson or Jesse Jackson,” I said. “Since the issue of mind control becomes a spiritual one by natural attrition, I thought the Christians would be among the first to help.”

“What do you mean ‘spiritual’?” Scott asked.

“By my definition, spiritual is our innate love energy source or connection to God so-to-speak. Soul is the merging of spiritual into the physical world. I realize this is just my perception, and people correct my use of the words all the time based on their interpretation.”

Scott thought a minute. “Religious semantics aside, how does it interface with mind control?”

“From experience I know that without free thought, there is no free will, and without free will, there is no soul expression. Even though my spirit was in a safe, loving space while my body was being tortured to carry out the will of others, I had no ability to express it. I could not *think* to stand by moral principals or causes, and above all, I wasn’t free to live in harmony with love’s will. Now that I am free to *think* to express, my spiritual testimony is strong. Which makes it difficult for me to understand why churches close their doors on me and the whole issue of mind control. Maybe I don’t use the proper religious semantics to describe it.”

“Maybe it will happen in time,” Scott offered.

“In time for Kelly? They’re already too late. We do have a lot of support from victims’ groups like Edith’s Organized Victims of Violent Crimes who are working towards legal help. Justus Unlimited out of Littleton, Colorado and the National Victim Center are helping. Speaking of bizarre semantics, I don’t even feel like a ‘victim.’ Neither does Kelly.”

“I refer to you as a survivor,” Scott said.

“That is a better term,” I agreed. “Although ‘survivor’ sounds like we should be whining about our past ‘victimization,’ and neither Kelly nor I can relate to that space. The ultimate goal of victims and survivors is to ‘forgive’ their abusers in order to psychologically heal. In our case, healing is a deliberate psychiatric process. Understanding our abusers makes more sense than ‘forgiving’ them. With understanding comes positive change, sometimes compassion, whereas ‘forgiveness’ sounds like condoning criminal actions! It’s all semantics anyway, I guess.”

“Pleading the 5th is a matter of semantics, too, that ultimately will work in your favor. Sometimes the less said, the more that’s understood. It’s like your back child support case. We will only present finances to the judge, not the other issues even though they may be more pertinent. Mark is wise in telling you to never use court as a forum.”

“Thank you, Scott. Your legal advice is heart warming. I wish all attorneys had the strength of spirit that you do.” As I rode the elevator down to the ground floor of the Stahlman Building, I realized I didn’t know Scott’s definition of “spirit,” “soul,” or “religion,” and wondered if I should have mentioned his strength of spirit. By the time I was walking toward the Pacer, I understood that heartfelt communication surpassed semantics anyway. And I learned that from a District Attorney? I smiled as I climbed in the car, feeling confident that all would go well with Mark’s Grand Jury hearing.

On September 19, we arrived at the Federal Building early since I was told to come in for questioning by the FBI prior to the hearing. Brad Garrett was in town for the occasion, and he and Phil Tuney were to meet with me in Attorney General Joe Brown’s office. “Remember,” Mark emphasized again, “Say nothing, and they have nothing. They have nothing, so say nothing. Open your mouth… and they have something. What you say will be used against you.”

“Never use court as a forum,” I recited. “I’m ready. Mike Terry says this FBI questioning isn’t pertinent to your case so don’t answer anything. When we’re in front of the Grand Jury, all I do is plead the fifth. That is simple enough. I’ll be glad when this is over.”

I rode the elevator alone to Joe Brown’s office on the top floor. His secretary showed me to a side room where Garrett and Tuney were waiting.

“How’s it going with Internal Affairs?” Garrett asked, as though he were referring to our last meeting in the US Customs office. Our work with Internal Affairs was not his business, and his attempt to trick me into talking was transparent.

“Let’s talk about internal affairs,” Tuney said. “You claim you know Dick Thornburgh sexually. Tell me about it.”

“In your hottest dreams.” I accepted the cup of coffee Garrett handed me and set it on the table with no intention of drinking it.

“Maybe you’d rather tell me what you know about Noriega. We’ll see if it matches what he says about you.” Tuney gestured for me to drink the coffee.

“I thought you were here to question me about Mark.”

“We have all our answers there. And the evidence, “ Garrett said. “He’ll be locked up longer than Noriega. He’s facing 20 years to life.”

Tuney shuffled through a huge stack of papers in front of him. “You know, everybody in DC knows Byrd has a little penis. What else can you tell me about him?”

I took a sip of the water that I had brought with me.

“All I put in your coffee was cream and sugar,” Garrett defensively said.

“I’m already awake and alert, thank you,” I declined the coffee.

“Well good,” Garrett answered. “Then you’ll absorb what I’m about to tell you. It is important that you know the facts. You need to know that Mark is going to be locked up for the rest of his life if you plead the fifth.”

“Pleading the fifth is an admission of guilt,” Tuney nodded.

“I don’t know how you’re going to live with putting him away forever in a Federal penitentiary,” Garrett said, his veiled threat strengthening my resolve to stay silent. “Thornburgh’s out of office now. His friend William Barr is carrying out his work while he plays. We’ll let him know that you had Mark locked up.”

“He’ll tell Byrd,” Tuney said to Garrett as though he were protesting.

“Word will spread,” Garrett assured me. “All because you think you are so smart to plead the fifth. You are making a big mistake that will cost Mark the rest of his life, resting behind bars.”

We sat in silence. I looked at my watch. It was nearly time for court. “By law, you cannot keep me from testifying.”

“I’m telling you,” Garrett said, standing up. “Don’t plead the fifth or Mark will never see the light of day again. Whoever gave you that advice has set you up and Mark will go down. Don’t plead the fifth!”

We walked out of the office to the elevator, which suddenly wasn’t working. I looked at my watch. There wasn’t time for this. “Take the stairs,” Tuney said, opening the door to the stairwell. Anxious to leave, I started down the staircase.

“Don’t plead the fifth!” Garrett shouted as I arrived at the door on the next floor. It was locked. I kept going, experiencing locked doors all the way down into the basement. Weaving through boxes, buckets, trash and janitor tools, I finally stumbled out into a room with an elevator. Apparently it was a service elevator, but it took me to the main floor where court was about to begin.

My attorney was pacing outside the courtroom, checking his watch. I was scheduled to testify first. Mark was being held separately from me in Henry Martin’s office across the street. Relief spread across my attorney’s face when he saw me. There was no time to explain where I’d been. “I’m not allowed to be present in there," he reminded me, speaking quickly. "I'll be right here. After each question, tell the judge you need to speak with council. It's just a ploy to make them wait. Do it. Come out here and we'll act like we're talking it over. I'll tell you to plead the fifth."

When my turn to testify came, I blocked out my horrible experience with Garrett and Tuney, and took the stand. The Grand Jury looked somber, and the Judge appeared agitated. I answered each question with a need to speak with council, only to come back into the courtroom to plead the fifth. By the time I was through, the Grand Jury was weary. When Henry Martin told the prosecuting attorney, Van Vincent, that Mark would also be pleading the fifth, he wasn't even called to testify. The Grand Jury delivered a "no true bill" and Mark was free.

The whole ordeal had proved so strenuous, I could only cry with relief. We would celebrate later… for the rest of our lives.

Chapter 22
NEED-TO-KNOW

“I wasn’t surprised when Henry Martin told me that I would not be testifying,” Mark said as we discussed our court experience on the long drive home. “I heard him on the phone talking heatedly to Van Vincent, telling him that I would be pleading the fifth the same way you did. When he hung up the phone, he let me know that this case wasn’t over just because I wouldn’t be testifying. He said, ‘They are determined to lock you up one way or another.’ But he doesn’t know what I know. I tried to tell him, ‘the whole case was a hoax to begin with. They’ll attempt their harassment from an angle less costly to them. Like they’ll keep confiscating my mail or raiding my house or something else mundane.’ He still couldn’t grasp the concept that I am *not* scared.”

“This whole thing was unnerving for me,” I admitted. “It wasn’t Garrett and Tuney that scared me, of course; it’s what I know about the prison system. All they need to do is lock either one of us up for one day and it’s over. Mind control is so highly advanced, rampant and unrestrained in the prisons, it’s no wonder there has been such a major effort to lock us up.”

Mark swerved around a car that had stopped in the middle of the road while the driver tried to decide which way to turn. “When I was working for Ampex out of Redwood City, California back in the 1970’s, I was couriering Top Secret file tapes into Fort George Mead, Maryland on mind control methods that were being used in prisons and mental institutions. Everything I saw and knew regarding mind control had convinced me that we could literally empty our prisons and mental institutions by turning the inmates into productive, healthy, happy citizens. I really believed that behavior modification techniques would be used to better the world.”

“They still can be,” I reassured him.

“Perhaps they could be if the information wasn’t being classified. As long as these criminals are in power classifying information and technology in order to control the public, how will the knowledge reach the people?”

I thought of Danny Casolaro and sighed. “With journalists caving in to fear and threats of being ‘suicided’, I do wonder how the truth will be brought to light. It needs to be, though. People need to know what you know.”

“That’s ironic,” Mark said. “I was operating on a Need-to-Know basis when I believed mind control could help people. Are you familiar with the term?”

“Sort of,” I answered. “Dick Cheney and other controllers would tell me what I needed to know, but I never perceived it as a term.”

“Well, Need-to-Know is a term officially used by the CIA and other alphabet organizations like the FBI, NSA[1] and DIA. It means you are told all you Need-to-Know in order to carry out your *part* of an operation without full awareness of what you’re working towards. In my case, I believed the government was developing mind control in order to help society rid itself of crime and mental illness. Nobody bothered telling me that it was being developed to control the population, create super-human special forces war machines, or was being used to torture and hurt innocent citizens like you and Kelly. I had no clue. I was so focused on doing my “part” and excited at the prospects, that it never occurred to me that I was contributing to the greatest menace mankind has ever endured.”

“How did you find out?”

“That is a story all in itself.”

“Well, we’ve got time,” I said, referring to our long drive home. “It’s the public who is running out of it. Is the tape recorder on?”
“Yes.”

“Good. Let’s leave it on for posterity. I’d really like to know all you *can* tell me.”

“I was originally hired as an audio tape engineer for the Southeastern division of Ampex, Corporation, selling tape within Nashville’s Country Music Industry and to NASA in Huntsville, among other government operations. Having a Top Secret Security Clearance gave me access to mind control information that I otherwise would not have been privy to. In the early days, what I witnessed about training monkeys from the Yerkes Primate Center in Atlanta, Georgia figured right in with NASA’s use of programmed monkeys for space travel.”

“Did they ever torture the monkeys?”

“Of course not!” Mark looked appalled that I would even ask such a question. “We were teaching them to understand words through sign language and to run simple equipment. I never saw trauma based mind control methods being used on the monkeys, let alone on inmates of prisons and mental institutions. My natural rapport with animals made working with primates a fun and rewarding aspect of my career. I enjoyed communicating with them and seeing them respond so positively.”

“I’m sorry,” I said. “I didn’t mean to suggest that you would have anything to do with trauma based mind control. I know you better than that. It’s just that everyone I knew tortured animals, and I thought it might have been part of what led you to expand your vision. You still haven’t told me how you learned beyond your Need-to-Know.”

“While I was with Ampex, I also worked other divisions since I had a Clearance. I worked the Yerkes Primate Center in Denver, Colorado, for example. Of course, I preferred working the Atlanta branch since I lived near there. Plus, the Center for Disease Control in Atlanta was a major account of mine since the CDC required so much tape for the old wall sized computers they were using back then. The CDC was one more reason why my Clearance was so high. This put me in touch with other Top Secret installations like Jack Parson’s Laboratory ‘JPL’ in Pasadena, California. Between there and Redwood City, I was spending more and more time in California.”

“Reagan was Governor of California back then, wasn’t he?” I asked.

"Yes. He became involved in mind control operations in the state mental institutions and prison systems."

"I knew Reagan was responsible for releasing Merle Haggard from San Quentin," I said.

"Wasn't Haggard in prison for murder?"

"Yes," I answered. "I am aware that mind control was being used in San Quentin at the time. I wonder if it was used on Haggard, or if he simply became privy to it. Personally, I know Haggard[2] as a torturous abuser who openly perpetuates mind control."

"People can't be programmed to program," Mark reminded me. "Think about it. Knowledge is our defense against it. Once we are aware and stay conscious of it, we know when our actions are in conflict with our soul intent. Likewise, the subconscious cannot consciously manipulate the subconscious of others without deliberate awareness."

"That makes sense," I agreed. "Haggard says he 'sold his soul to the devil' in order to be released from San Quentin. And it was Reagan who released him."

"Him and how many others?" Mark wondered. "Reagan's release of inmates and mental patients was contrary to the studies I was involved with. While I was working with Ampex so heavily in California, Reagan jumped into the mix with his trauma based mind control. Under National Security, there is no limit to the amount of torture, abuse, experimentation, or even murder that people can be subjected to without recourse, and Reagan capitalized on it! The president of Ampex became embroiled in a fierce battle with Reagan, desperately fighting to maintain the integrity of his company. Reagan wouldn't hear of it. He was hell-bent on using every horrible brainwashing technique imaginable, torturously and technologically expanding far beyond Ewen Cameron's experiments in Montreal! Then he turned the tortured mentally ill out onto the streets[3]! The benevolent work I was doing suddenly was being taken over by a power monger whose only concern was for his political career and not the people.

He nearly collapsed Ampex in a trumped up stock scandal that supposedly involved the president of the company”

“How did he do that?”

“Easy, since the CIA controls Wall Street. The United States Government was rapidly being taken over by that same criminal faction that abused you. They got a firm grip with the Kennedy Assassination, and the same players are still in power today.”

“Like Ford’s Cabinet?” I asked, referring to former President Ford’s Secretary of State, Dick Cheney; his head of the CIA, George Bush; his Defense Secretary Donald Rumsfeld; and his Press Secretary Jack Valenti.

“That names a handful of them right there. Valenti, who you knew as Reagan’s friend and head of the Motion Picture Association of America, was even a part of Kennedy’s motorcycle brigade the day he was shot! Anyway, the point I was making is this: Since these power mongers are put in office by Corporations, those that are run by friends flourish while Corporations like Ampex are diminished. These political criminals didn’t want the results of Ampex’s work to reach the public, so it was financially scandalized through stock fraud. These politicians control through secrets, and it wouldn’t benefit them if their secrets were incorporated into society as a positive functioning part.”

“Is that why they have secret societies like the Masons?” I asked.

“Well, that’s a different area. Yet when you think about it, secret societies have compartmentalized information the same way it is compartmentalized in the mind of a dissociative under mind control. I know you can relate to that! Compound the same concept further by creating divisions in society through social engineering of racism, sexism, religious differences, and so on, and information becomes even more compartmentalized.”

“It’s as though everyone is functioning on a Need-to-Know! People need to know this!” I was excited.

“They need to expand their consciousness to realize that what they thought they knew was but a fractal of reality,” Mark expounded. “When I found out that my good intentions were actually fueling a mechanism to control humanity, I was devastated. When I realized what this meant to our country and world, I was appalled. And Reagan was right there at the epicenter of it all.”

“I perceived Reagan as ‘Uncle Ronnie’ until my free thought allowed for expanded knowledge. Now I see that everyone else inside the beltway and the public perceive him the way his TV image portrayed him.”

“And still portrays him today with Bush in office and Valenti controlling what people watch on TV from his Hollywood power position,” Mark added.

“How are people going to realize their Need-to-Know is limiting their understanding, their actions and reactions, and ultimately mankind’s evolution?”

“Coincidentally…” Mark began.

“Come on,” I argued before he made his point, “to quote a wise man I know 'there is no such thing as coincidence'!”

“You got that right!” Mark smiled. “Like I was saying, ‘coincidentally’ I heard from a spook-turned-whistleblower in Cooperstown, New York who is disseminating information under the title ‘Need-to-Know’. I needed to know if he was legitimate, and so far most everything checks out. I thought you’d find it interesting that someone is actually spreading information under ‘Need-to-Know’.”

“That is too cool,” I replied. “What kind of information is he spreading?”

“That’s what prompted me to check him out. His name is Stephen Bratcher, and he claims he was a victim of MK Ultra on the highest level. If he was a mind control victim, I’m not sure what caused him to break program. Most likely it was due to his age. He's in his early thirties. One of the first things to surface was his memory of Disney World mind control programming."

"How did he remember that?" I asked, acutely aware of the sophisticated mind control programming that went on there. Few people had remembered or were talking about Disney mind control in 1991[4]!

"Apparently he was obsessed with Mickey Mouse and Disney themes like most programmed slaves are, and was wondering why. The fact that he could even wonder is either indicative of his programming breaking up, or he was a volunteer like he also claims who skated when the torture began."

"Nobody volunteers to be tortured," I argued. "I was told the same thing under mind control, that I 'volunteered.' Operating out of the "Volunteer State" of Tennessee during the '80's gave me cause to hear that often. It sounds like Bratcher is verbalizing program to me."

"He's not recovered, that's for sure," Mark said. "You'd be surprised what some people do volunteer for, though, for money. There's some reason why he is talking about valid information."

"Does he smoke marijuana?" I asked, aware that marijuana's mind expansion properties are the motive behind the government's adamant opposition to the herb. Since it can render mind control uncontrollable by penetrating memory compartmentalization, marijuana use is strictly forbidden in the military, special forces, among spies, etc.

"He doesn't smoke marijuana that I know of, although he admits to drinking heavily. It may be that his programming, if he had any, is breaking up naturally the way yours did at 30. Since he is at that age when electro-chemical changes occur naturally in the brain, it could have affected the barriers to his compartmentalized memory."

Mark paused the tape recorder for a moment while he said, "Look, I know for a fact that some of what he's talking about is valid since Ampex installed sophisticated equipment in the labyrinth of laboratories under the proposed Disney site while I was working for them. Those labs were crammed with sophisticated electronics that have nothing to do with theme park rides. Bratcher said he was under the Disney Theme Park's Holden Lake and suddenly had awareness. He described the layout of that area that I had been into." Mark resumed recording. "It really freaked him out since he was supposed to be operating in a controlled robotic mode and suddenly realized he had no concept of how long he had been in the UNderworld of Disney World[5]. That's not the best place to break program or decide you made a bad choice volunteering. He somehow managed to survive it and has been talking ever since."

"How *is* he surviving?" I asked, deeply concerned.

"He is asking for help, which is why he contacted me. Even more than rehabilitative therapy, he is wanting a few pointers on how to stay alive and survive whistleblowing. He's disseminating information, but he's talking about the most controversial stuff of all."

"Disney?" I knew speaking bad of Disney carried enormous consequences since it was a programming epicenter for MK Ultra mind controlled slaves from military intelligence[6], special forces, spies, and even entertainers who could be harmonically tuned ala Trilby[7].

"Yes. And he's talking about The Farm[8]. What's even more dangerous is that he released sensitive information on DARPA."

"What's DARPA?"

"Defense Advanced Research Projects Agency[9]. It's the most Top Secret special weapons development lab in the world."

"I'm glad I don't know about that one."

"You've talked about, only not by name. It's in a sleepy little town in Virginia."

“Oh, that place,” I shuddered. “I guess I didn’t Need-to-Know the name when I was there. Isn’t it called Blackbeard or Blackbird or something like that?”

“Keep looking until you see a road sign in memory.”

I closed my eyes and focused. “Blacksburg!”

“Yes! I was aware of it when I was couriering file tapes for Ampex. My perception of DARPA is that it holds the key to what is eroding the soul of America- and the world. Everything I know may still be classified.”

“Then I won’t ask you what you saw,” I said, aware that laws of Sedition could result in his imprisonment if anyone found out he was talking. “What does Bratcher say?”

“Bratcher is disseminating information on DARPA’s purpose. Since the US is a mixture of people from all over the world who combine genetics through breeding, they share cultures and knowledge from the DNA level all the way through to a conscious level. The very structure of our country provides rewards to those who achieve the most and advance the farthest. Well, over time, the knowledge and resultant technologies became the most highly advanced in the world.”

“And this is the knowledge that the criminals in control of US are keeping secret,” I concluded.

“Yes. It’s where they root their philosophy ‘secret knowledge equals power’ and their basis for compartmentalizing bits and pieces of it through Need-to-Know. According to Bratcher, these secrets are multiplying and compounding at an alarming rate. Technology has reached a level where it is compounding itself through computerization creating artificial intelligence. Artificial intelligence continues to breed with technology, to the point where technologies are out of control and appear alien. What I saw back in the 70’s was already alarming. Knowledge was becoming unmanageable, and those controlling secrets were running out of ability to absorb, comprehend, and utilize it all. Bratcher says they’ve now allowed alien-technology to compound to the point where it is totally out of control, and the survival of humanity is in jeopardy as a result."

"But artificial intelligence lacks soul, and therefore lacks wisdom just like the criminals in control of it. Think about it. With wisdom we can shift

power, dismantle the secrets, and reclaim our innate strength before it's too late."

"And have these criminals tried for crimes against humanity," Mark added. "What they have done is treasonous to all mankind!"

"Mankind can still make the necessary changes," I continued. "All it would take is a spiritual revolution evolution! By everything I overheard being discussed, those flat thinkers who've been in control already *know* they are out of time. It's just a matter of time until artificial intelligence controls them, too."

"Maybe it did all along," Mark suggested.

"Maybe it *is* alien," I surmised. "The point is still the same. Wisdom outthinks a criminal mind every time. With spiritual evolution through wisdom, humanity can reclaim soul purpose. What is Bratcher's spin on a solution?"

"He's focused on step one, disseminating the facts. People Need-to-Know the truth first."

"Wow," I pondered. "Truth does make us free."

"It kept me free from a Grand Jury Indictment today," Mark smiled as he turned off the tape recorder and parked the Pacer in the driveway. "The difference between fiction and reality was all the Grand Jury had Need-to-Know."

"And we're free to celebrate the victory!" I said, opening the door.

Chapter 23
PANDORA’S BOX

The next day was spent writing out Top Secret memory. Bits and pieces of what I had previously remembered regarding my experiences at the Blacksburg, Virginia DARPA laboratory concerning artificial intelligence and George Bush’s discussions regarding the same demanded to be expanded and written out in comprehensive detail. The strenuousness of yesterday’s Federal Grand Jury hearing, combined with the discussion of DARPA, had triggered a need to further deprogram what I knew.

Additionally, we were nearing a calendar date, which naturally triggers memory stronger than anything else even without a conscious concept of time. Perhaps that is why people celebrate anniversaries and holidays on an annual basis. Whatever the reason, calendar dates such as the first week in August’s Congressional Recess and the first week in October’s Country Music Association Awards always caused my memories to surface accordingly. I had been used extensively during those times. This year, George Bush was scheduled to be in attendance at the CMA awards in Nashville, which enhanced my urgency to write out memory. As a White House/Pentagon level mind control slave during the Reagan-Bush Administration, I had been in a position to witness and experience secret inner sanctuary operations and tactics that should be public knowledge. My need to write out these photographically recalled details was increasing proportionately to my growing awareness of public ignorance and socially programmed apathy.

While I deprogrammed and wrote out the vast information and technologies to which I had been exposed, I would occasionally emerge from my past long enough to make side notes of solutions. Since I was now capable of *thinking* and ultimately feeling, making notes of “soulutions” helped me to respond logically to these previously experienced harsh realities. Likewise, people must logically think out of the box that social engineering has locked them into, rather than allow a handful of criminals to dictate their actions. Good people have a Need-to-Know that what they don't know is controlling them.

Perpe*traitors* I knew during my tenure as an MK Ultra mind controlled slave are acutely aware of human behavior patterns, such as how violent behaviors in society often occur in conjunction with specific calendar dates. DARPA's information source provided intricate details into actions and reactions that reverberate for generations, and this insight was being kept secret from the populace while it was used against them.

Reagan's unprecedented release of mental patients while he was Governor of California was implemented on a national scale during his Presidential Administration. Occultism (a.k.a. satanism), which is usually the reversal of Catholic mass, had been used extensively as a trauma base for mind control whereby many institutionalized people were termed Survivors of Ritual Abuse (SRAs) by mental health professionals. Around Halloween, county jails and mental institutions filled up with people suffering from calendar-date intrusive memory flashes. When memories are not written out, occultic flashbacks can result in violent behavior and subsequently overfill jails as well as mental institutions.

Unrecovered victims who were turned out onto the streets during the 1980's began acting out their satanic abuse in a subconscious effort to bring conscious awareness to their plight. Satanic movies like the CIA's Jesuit movie director/producer Peter Blatty's over-hyped "Exorcist," and music like Ozzy Osborne's, were also deliberately introduced into society in accordance with social engineering plans emanating from DARPA. It was foreseen that Reagan's release of the ritually abused from mental institutions without effective therapy would result in their acting out their abuse on calendar dates. This, in turn, traumatized others, reaching proportions that traumatized society as a whole. Since the effects of trauma on the human mind render people more suggestible and easily led, social engineering began evolving into mass mind control as anticipated through this deliberately enhanced violence.

People’s superstitions “naturally” heightened through their ignorance in conjunction with occultism’s deliberate rise in the ‘70s and ‘80’s[1]. Additionally, humankind’s innate need for calendar-date tradition furthered the use of numerology for control purposes. Mathematical sequence was easily perpetuated by artificial intelligence.

For example, the US public would become conditioned to violence occurring on April 19, the calendar date when both Waco and Oklahoma City Bombing tragedies traumatized the nation. Rarely do people in the US dare gather on that date anymore. On the flip side of the same phenomena, global focus of love on Valentine’s Day has raised collective consciousness, romantic expectations, and traditional indulgence in chocolate decadence every February 14. Even those without a current relationship crave chocolate on that date the way people crave hotdogs and hamburgers on July 4 in the US. As more and more people realize this human trait of socially engineered autogenic responses to calendar dates, collective conscious awareness rises as is necessary to incite deliberate, positive change.

Why not declare every day “the day” to focus on love, rather than only one day per year? What kind of collective consciousness would rise when love encompasses the globe each and every day? Would love’s positive energy reframe calendar dates of fear and trauma? Could declaring every day “Earth Day” save the planet from the imminent destruction that is perpetuated every other day of the year? With awareness, possibilities are endless! By rising above predictable routines to establish deliberate heightened awareness instead, spiritual r*e*volution would make us wiser. If humankind collectively stood strong in this knowing, they could reclaim control of their lives! The key to open this awareness is truth.

Most all actions of those few criminals in control have/had triple meaning, cause, or purpose based on the artificial intelligence knowledge they are privy to. Nothing is ever perpetrated by them “accidentally” or “coincidentally.” The only exception to this is when unanticipated “blowback” from sudden exposure of formerly secret information occurs. Considering that they have full access to suppressed and artificially compartmentalized intelligence, it is easy to understand their ability to utilize it on various levels at the same time.

Criminals in control of *our* information and *our* technology even consciously speak on two levels at the same time. NLP, the language of the subconscious, has long since become a natural form of communication for them. Television's mass communication enabled them to manipulate the public through speaking on both conscious and subconscious levels at once with ease. Specific words used to condition the public become clear, and even predictable, with awareness.

During Reagan's Administration, the word "awesome" emerged, followed by "amazing." George Bush then led us through "A Maze" where the exit sign was changed to enTrance. Then people were "basically" conditioned to economic "basics" for years. When US militias began gaining strength and numbers in an effort to regain control of Constitutional values and government, every violent tragedy of the times was termed a "malicious attack." Prior to the "malicious" attack on militias, they were respected for peacefully and wisely upholding American[2] values. Those with eyes-to-see and ears-to-hear realized what spin-doctors were doing, while the ignorant were led further into the dark.

Most who could *think* to seek answers to society's increasing violence were already socially engineered to accept media-hyped government solutions, and they predictably reacted accordingly. Senator Byrd, in the powerful positions of Senate Majority Whip and head of Senate Appropriations, could quote the US Constitution as well as satanists quote the Bible. He could twist verbiage into a reversal to fit the New World Order agenda without the people's awareness that he was doing so. "Good people don't *think* to look for this kind of criminal activity," he confidently boasted.

In the *mean*time, spin-doctors of social engineering spun the news and views of the population without their conscious knowing, creating further divisions among them. In response to the rise of satanism, debate over Constitutional values of Freedom of Religion became a deliberate emotional diversionary issue, while harmonic technologies through music blasted violent lyrics into the subconscious mind. Violent lyrics then became the diversionary issue, focusing the public away from the technological advances in the application of harmonics and inciting debate over Constitutional values of Freedom of Speech. Erosion of US Constitutional values commenced while the original issues were never resolved.

DARPA’s source of artificial intelligence was driving problematic actions, reactions, and solutions designed to enforce controls, in addition to providing reverberating results from secret technological harmonic advancements. Those who fed from this Top Secret advanced information source, such as George Bush, began gaining global momentum while the people lost more and more “basic” freedoms.

At Bohemian Grove in Northern California, this advanced artificial intelligence was/is discussed by those gathered there for the purpose of ushering in what Nero, Adolph Hitler and George Bush term their New World Order. Under MK Ultra mind control in the ‘80s, I was often used sexually at the Bohemian Grove, which gave me cause to overhear and photographically record these intense discussions[3].

Computerized technological advancements have perpetuated artificial intelligence to the point where it appears alien. Even those at the Grove had varying points of view on the original source of DARPA’s artificial intelligence, spawning fascinating discussions on various multi-dimensional extra-terrestrials.

I was at the Grove in 1986 under MK Ultra mind control waiting for new orders while George Bush talked with his comrade Dick Cheney. Artificial intelligence’s hundred-year plan to total global control was discussed. Computers were scheduled to emerge as the leading household communications device. These flat-thinking criminals believed that they would be capable of controlling people on a worldwide mass communications level more powerful than television. Focused computer users would already be tranced into their monitor screens, which would then be used to pump vast amounts of information into their heads. “It will bring people up to speed information-wise,” George Bush had said.

Former Prime Minister of Canada, Brian Mulroney, had excitedly discussed the same concept being applied through the school systems. Bush, Mulroney, and Cheney had failed to consider that computers would be used by humankind to communicate truth with wisdom to re-establish free thought. Just like Byrd had said regarding “good people” being unable to “*think* to look for this kind of criminal activity,” these flat thinking criminals were incapable of thinking like us. They never thought to consider the strength of the innate human spirit, the far-reaching impact of wisdom, and resultant *soul*utions. While artificial intelligence was providing them with information on actions and reactions, it was not providing wisdom. Truth’s wisdom is humanity’s key to freedom.

It was discussed and decided that fear would be perpetuated globally in order that focus would stay on the negative rather than allow for soul expression to positively emerge. As people became more fearful and compliant, capacity for free thought and soul expression would diminish. There is a distinct inability to exert soul expression under mind control, and evolution of the human spirit would diminish along with freedom of thought when bombarded with constant negative terrors. Whether Bush and Cheney deliberately planned to raise a collective fear over collective conscious love is doubtful. They did not think, speak, or act in those terms. Instead, they knew that information control gave them power over people, and they were hell-bent to perpetuate it at all costs. Cheney, Bush, and other global elite ushering in the New World Order totally believed in the plan mapped out by artificial intelligence. They were allowing technology to dictate global control.

“Life is like a video game,” Bush once told me at the rural multi-million dollar Lampe, Missouri CIA mind control training camp complex designed for Black Ops Special Forces where torture and virtual reality technologies were used. “Since I have access to the technological source of the plans, I dictate the rules of the game.” The rules of the game demanded instantaneous response with no time to consciously think and critically analyze. Constant conscious disruption of thought through television’s burst of light flashes, harmonics, and subconscious subliminals diminished continuity of conscious thought anyway, creating a deficit of attention that could easily be refocused into video game format.

DARPA's artificial intelligence was reliant on secrecy, and a terrifying cover for reality was chosen to divert people from the simple truth. Since people perceive aliens as being physical like them, it was decided that the technological reality could be disguised according to preconceptions. Through generations of genetic encoding dating back to the beginning of man, serpents incite an innate autogenic response system in humans to "freeze" in terror. George Bush was excited at the prospects of diverting people from truth by fear through perpetuating lizard-like serpent alien misconceptions. "People fear what they don't know anyway. By compounding that fear with autogenic fear response, they won't want to look into Pandora's Box."

Through deliberate generation of fear; suppression of facts under the 1947 National Security Act; Bush's stint as CIA director during Ford's Administration; the Warren Commission's whitewash of the Kennedy Assassination; secrecy artificially ensured by mind control particularly concerning DARPA, HAARP, Roswell, Montauk, etc; and with people's fluidity of conscious thought rapidly diminishing; the secret government embraced the proverbial 'absolute power that corrupts absolutely.'

According to New World Order plans being discussed at the Grove, plans for reducing the earth's population was a high priority. Mass genocide of so-called "undesirables" through the proliferation of AIDS[4] was high on Bush's agenda. "We'll annihilate the niggers at their source, beginning in South and East Africa and Haiti[5]." Having heard Bush say those words is by far one of the most torturous things I ever endured. Equally as torturous to my being were the discussions on genetic engineering, human cloning, and depletion of earth's natural resources for profit. Cheney remarked that no one would be able to *think* to stop technology's plan. "I'll destroy the planet first," Bush had vowed.

I knew as I deprogrammed, that George Bush and his New World Order plan must be stopped at all costs. My side notes of soulutions prevented me from re-dissociating from the reality that I never wanted to believe in the first place. Whether Bush was boasting or meant what he said, I watched as the plan began to unfold. I was also seeing reformulation of plans as humankind began slowly waking up and gathering strength of spirit to change the source of power flow.

“We need to go to town in the morning,” Mark told me after I closed my notebook. “Bratcher said he mailed some important papers to me. I need to at least attempt to retrieve them before the Feds get hold of them.”

“Good,” I said. “I’d like to see Kelly, and check on Rosenburg’s progress towards obtaining the child support Cox owes.”

Bright and early the next morning, we loaded up the Pacer and drove to Nashville. “Remember when I first began having memory flashes in Alaska and told you about Bush saying he would destroy the planet if he doesn’t get his way?”

“Yes, and he’s right on schedule.” Mark rolled down the window to let in the cool, fresh morning air.

“That’s what I was writing out in detail yesterday.” Now that it was already written out, talking about it with Mark was healing. Tears rolled down my cheeks. “It caused me to realize again why we’ve been able to survive these years since you rescued Kelly and me. You are so wise. We never could have made it to this point if it weren’t for you and your ability to apply what you know with soul and wisdom. You have applicable intelligence. Its no wonder DARPA’s computers can’t seem to predict and counter your actions. You’re outthinking them all. You are proof that love wins.”

“Truth always survives,” Mark said. “It’s getting it out there that is so treacherous.”

“The truth Danny was about to reveal didn’t go away just because they ‘suicided’ him.” I blew my nose.

“His true purpose lives on,” Mark expounded. “With the remaining media journalists cowering in the shadows, it’s hard to see beyond the moment to realize the magnitude of his accomplishments. In time, his truth will be public knowledge. His success may not be visible right now, yet in some ways he made a huge difference for all of us."

"In essence, he put a computer virus in Bush's video game," I assured myself, reflecting on my conscious awareness of the details that became clear yesterday.

"Whatever it takes to crumble the matrix," Mark added, seeming to understand the meaning behind my statement.

"What is a matrix?"

"Look it up in the dictionary. It's the beginning with an end; a structure like a womb; the rock that grows the crystal," Mark defined. "Bush's 'video game' has an origin, a structure, a matrix from which it originates. When I read your notes last night, it was simple to see the solutions you noted. Remembering events as you did, despite Bush's dark spin, undoubtedly cleared your vision. Fear didn't blind you to truth's solutions."

"Truth, no matter how horrible in content, does free me from fear, just like you said it would. Now when I see that lizard alien image creeping into society through social engineering, I know it's just a matter of time until truth shatters it's fearful illusion to set the public free." I thought back to another alien-theme occurrence Bush had perpetuated through his 'You are what you read' programming[6]. "It's like remembering how the lizard holograph[7] Bush showed me was staged. Realizing he really isn't an alien freed my mind to recall other events surrounding the trauma, and most likely this DARPA information, too."

"That's what I meant the other day when I said that realizing the truth is step one towards implementing solutions. Bratcher's Need-to-Know concept is essential."

"Now people simply Need-to-Know the reality that lizard-aliens are a deliberate DARPA illusion lifted from the Outer Limits tv show in order to be empowered to take positive action and unplug artificial intelligence from negative sources like Bush."

Mark smiled. "That's more easily said than done."

"Well, truth never goes away, so we have all the time in the world to stop these narrow-minded flat thinkers. No matter how intelligent they are and how far they progress, wisdom will stop them."

"Mind control must be stopped first," Mark countered. "Under mind control, humanity *is* out of time."

"Wow," I thought aloud, while my mind reverberated with the meaning. "You're right. Truth needs to prevail now. I'm fortunate to be free to think for myself again and believe in the power of the people. It must scare the wits out of Bush, Byrd, Cheney, and all those creeps that the wizard's curtain[8] has been pulled back to reveal they are just vile, evil men running a computer they call Pacer."

"Or is the computer running them? Either way, they've overplayed their hand. They may believe they are 'above the law,'" Mark said, referring to Reagan's statement during Operation Shell Game[9]. "But they're subject to the same laws of humanity and the same laws of the universe that the rest of us are. They can and will be stopped."

Before Mark dropped me off at Cumberland House to see Kelly while he attempted to retrieve our mail, I dashed into the Stahlman Building to see Scott Rosenburg. He informed me that Cox had delayed court depositions until the first week of January, which meant obtaining the back child support would take longer than hoped. Fortunately, time frames towards Kelly's rehab that Mark had established were flexible.

I stopped by Jean Crowe's office on the way back downstairs, and learned that Edith Hammons had filed complaint against Cox's attorney, Bob Anderson, with Judge Shookhoff. She vowed that if action were not taken immediately on her detailed charges of threats and harassment, she would take the matter to the Supreme Court.

While I picked up my copy of the document and turned to leave, Jean Crowe advised, “Wayne Cox is scheduled to see Kelly again when he’s here for depositions in January. You might want to ask Dr. Nurcum to recommend that the visit not take place.”

“I’ll take care of it,” I assured her, hurrying out the door to get back to the car before the parking meter expired.

On the way to Cumberland House, I filled Mark in on recent events. We agreed to see Dr. Nurcum, Representative West, Marsha Willis, and anyone else who could affect the matter as soon as possible. It seemed I had barely closed the car door before Mark sped out of sight, and I could only hope he would succeed in confiscating our confiscated mail. I went on into Cumberland House to see Kelly.

Kelly and I would be supervised by a friendly social worker today, who immediately notified me that Melissa was gone. I was relieved that Kelly wouldn’t be subjected to her Halloween rituals. We sat on the floor to draw pictures together, discussing mind-brain function as only she and I could. “Charlene says I have to get along with my peers or else,” she said, nervously glancing at the social worker supervising our visit. “It makes it hard to be true-to-soul when I have to act like something I’m not.”

I drew the pie graph illustration that Mark had drawn for me. I illustrated her compartmentalized mind, cryptically explaining that the different compartments were different displays of her personality that were able to get along with anyone. To ‘get along with her peers,’ she reflected their personality through what is termed by real therapists as ‘mirroring and matching.’ “That reflection projection is something to be aware of, not to use. Since some therapists lack the education to understand your condition,” I explained, “they might force you to mirror and match ‘or else’. When you stay strong in who you are true-to-soul right here,” I pointed to the center of the graph, “you can choose to act as you’re told while knowing deep inside it’s an act.”

“Is that part right here,” Kelly pointed to the center of the graph, “that little light inside me?”

“Yes!” I was elated by her perspective. “Shine it bright. Keep shining it brighter and brighter until you are the radiant, brilliant *you* that you know yourself to be!” I continued drawing the picture as a beautiful sunflower in full bloom, reflecting unlimited light from the sun. She understood the meaning behind the drawing, which she could keep as a loving reminder without Cumberland House staff taking it away.

“Here’s a picture for you that shows how my brain works,” Kelly excitedly said as she drew a fascinating picture illusion. In less than two minutes, she drew what appeared to be an Eskimo looking into the sun from one angle, and the head of a thoughtful Indian Chief from another. I was astounded! Not only did the picture reverberate in depiction, it also reverberated in meaning considering her part Cherokee heritage, our Alaskan experience, and a headdress that also appeared as sunshine!

“You are brilliant!” I hugged her, forever strengthened in light of her loving spirit.

Chapter 24
STEP SEVEN

January 13, 1992, extensive Court Depositions were taken as scheduled. Those in attendance included Wayne Cox, his attorney Bob Anderson, an attorney for the Department of Human Services, Kelly's court appointed Guardian *Ad Litem* Martha Child[1], Assistant District Attorney Scott Rosenburg, my court appointed attorney Jean Crowe, and me. While these depositions should have been sufficient to obtain Kelly's right to therapy and free her from the State Justice and Mental Health Systems, January 13 only proved to be the day from hell as indicated by the date.

By law, discovery depositions required that I submit questions to my attorney to ask Wayne Cox. The questions I posed were formulated with Mark's expert input, and would have proved sufficient to force Cox to purjer himself and reveal the truth. Questions like: Does lime have a color? Clocks and musicians both have what? What does a clock not have that a musician's hand does? What do you use a kiln for? These questions would have bypassed Cox's ability to lie, triggering him into his persona that only knew murder and dismemberment. My attorney violated the law and my rights by refusing to ask these pertinent questions.

Worse still, when he arrived in town Wayne Cox was permitted access to Kelly by Charlene Johnson who overrode court orders and Dr. Nurcum's recommendation that such visitation be prohibited. My distress at learning this atrocity in the course of depositions was compounded by knowing I had no legal recourse against the violation. My heart was with Kelly the whole time my mind focused on countering contrived allegations and answering grueling legal questions obviously formulated by someone knowledgeable of my diffused CIA MK Ultra programming.

When the process was finally complete, I rushed to Cumberland House to comfort Kelly. Cumberland House staff forbid me to see her, claiming to be under strict orders from Charlene Johnson. I sought resolution to the dilemma from ICAM, the organization overseeing Kelly's case that was securing her out-of-state rehab through Dr. Nurcum's forthcoming diagnosis. I learned that ICAM had suddenly been dissolved and was no longer in existence. It would be days before I was able to see Kelly.

Kelly cried when I finally saw her, "I thought I was being protected against Wayne, but Charlene held me down and forced me to see him. I put my fingers in my ears so he couldn't trigger me this time, and Charlene held my hands behind me and made me listen. What's worse is that Wayne kept triggering me and no one stopped him."

Mind control triggers can be individualized, in sync with the victim's conditioning. Visual or auditory contact with an abuser is a significant trigger in itself. Even if I could somehow convey understanding of this mind control trigger to Kelly's "care-givers," it most likely would not have resulted in the positive change she so desperately needed. The gross injustice and total lack of compassion at this point had convinced me that it was completely up to us to make necessary, drastic changes. Mark and I took immediate action to establish Kelly's transfer to the high tech rehab that awaited her outside the country.

Depositions had proved that $3000 of what Cox owed in back child support was readily available. Thanks to Scott Rosenburg, Sixth Circuit Court proceedings quickly commenced to obtain release of the funds. He presented the case before Judge Brothers[2], who awarded Kelly the $3000, then withdrew his original judgment while the Department of Human Services filed claim to it.

Although we were aware of ongoing scandal surrounding Judge Brothers' alleged money laundering and dealings in Nashville's cocaine industry, our case against Cox was so strong that this delay was not anticipated. In addition to the numbers proving he owed extensive back support, we had obtained a copy of Cox's Louisiana bank statement of an account in Kelly's name. Still, Judge Brothers delayed the release of the money, and ultimately release of Kelly from the Tennessee system.

After court, I walked across the street from the Court House to Scott Rosenburg's office to further discuss the case. "Having looked into Cox's eyes during deposition was enough to convince me that he was lying," Scott said with compassion, "and that he is most likely capable of executing what you've told me about him. I am dedicated to this case, Kelly's cause, and her legal right to that back child support. It will be released," he vowed. "Soon. The Department of Human Services may be awarded current child support, but they have no legal right to what is already owed."

I stopped by Jean Crowe's office as usual on my way out of the Stahlman Building. "Since ICAM was dissolved, there is a new organization called OmniVisions that was specifically formed to deal with cases like Kelly's," Jean Crowe excitedly told me.

"We don't need more red tape to complicate things further," I said, skeptical of any State- organized help by this time.

Jean lowered her voice. "It's designed to help you. We'll go to the meeting tomorrow. They want Mark to attend as well."

The meeting with OmniVisions did seem encouraging. It appeared that the employees we met with were sincere in their determination to help. They already had a large file on Kelly, and were aware of her need for out-of-state rehabilitation.

"Until we can obtain Kelly's transfer, there is a new therapist in town with a dual degree in psychiatry and psychology who is willing to take her case," they assured us. "His name is William Mitchell. He is just now opening his practice here, and a big case like Kelly's could establish him in Nashville. Best of all, he claims to be acutely aware of MK Ultra mind control and recovery from it. He studied under Dr. Marty Orne."

Mark spoke up. "I know Marty Orne[3]. He works with the Department of Defense and has a published reputation within the CIA for executing MK

Ultra mind control abuses that begin where Dr. Ewen Cameron[4] left off," he asserted. "It is rumored that he still sleeps with his mother for fun. How do you know what Mitchell's intentions are with Kelly?"

"See for yourself. He wants to meet with you and Cathy before he accepts the case."

When Mark and I met with Dr. William Mitchell, Md.Phd., we found him to be highly intelligent, well informed, and he demonstrated that he was capable of handling Kelly's case. Although Dr. Mitchell had professional ties into Vanderbilt Psychiatric, his association with Dr. Nurcum would be minimal. He wasn't even interested in Nurcum's findings or files on Kelly. "My first effort with Kelly will be to treat her for the extensive PTSD she must have suffered with Cox's recent visit and to develop a rapport with her," he said. "You are welcome to monitor her progress in my care, but my first order of business will be to petition the court to seal her records.

That will keep all State and Federal prying eyes off her case. It is my intent to help your daughter, not feed intelligence to the Feds."

After watching Mitchell expertly use NLP, Mark's impression was "he can be dangerous." Still, there was no viable alternative. Soon after Kelly began therapy with Dr. Mitchell, OmniVisions claimed they were prepared to procure her out of state therapy, which would in turn protect her from further abuse by Charlene Johnson and Wayne Cox. "All you have to do is relinquish full custody of her," they said. "What few remaining parental rights you still have are being overridden by the courts anyway. Simply sign this paper and Kelly is free."

I was desperate for resolution to Kelly's ever-increasing need for protection, but I had no cause to trust OmniVisions. Nor did I yet trust Dr. Mitchell, although he appeared to be making fast progress treating Kelly's PTSD. I opted to think it over.

Before I could even sleep on my decision, it was made for me. January 22, 1991 the State of Tennessee took full custody of Kelly through immoral and illegal means. I wasn't even notified until after that fact. Dr. Mitchell's request to seal Kelly’s records was denied, and she was stopped from further therapy with him while he appealed. Mark suspected this was a ploy since Dr. Mitchell had completed his part for the CIA.

Mark and I began writing letters in earnest, notifying everyone who was aware of Kelly’s case on state, national, and international levels that the State of Tennessee had suddenly taken custody without a trial.

“Why is this being allowed to happen?” I wailed. “Kelly’s case should set precedent. It can make the difference for so many affected by mind control, and yet everyone seems to bury their head in the sand rather than face the issue.”

“People ignore mind control because they don’t want to think about it,” Mark explained.

“Which doubly perpetuates it,” I concluded. “There must be a way to resolve this.”

“We’ll exhaust every option until we find a way,” Mark consoled me.

In addition to our massive letter writing awareness campaign, we also quietly solidified arrangements for Kelly’s transfer out of the country to where qualified rehab awaited her. When the $3000 was finally released through Scott Rosenburg’s diligence, Mark and I were ready and finalized the details.

Within hours of establishing Kelly’s flight to freedom, the Doctor anticipating her arrival was murdered. When the phone call came in, we were told he was murdered while treating a US Intelligence officer assigned to NATO Special Ops who was actively in the midst of International espionage. We were devastated.

In the meantime, OmniVisions released Kelly from Cumberland House and placed her in Foster Care--with Melissa Thurmond! Melissa was the former Cumberland House worker who held the occult “full moon rituals.” I had no legal recourse.

Life's conditions couldn't be worse, it seemed. Mark and I turned to everyone we could think of for help within the State of Tennessee; in Washington, DC; in law enforcement, politics, and mental health; as well as national and international organizations supposedly designed to intervene in situations such as ours. We contacted news organizations, television networks, media persons such as Oprah Winfrey[5], and we even appealed to those we had previously contacted. We pleaded with US Customs Internal Affairs for intervention, only to find that their understanding, compassion, and validation of our case could not overcome the political corruption that had taken over America.

One day in early April while Mark and I were furiously writing letters seeking help, there was a knock at the door. A man in a wrinkled suit who appeared severely traumatized saluted Mark when he opened the door. He spewed his credentials and showed his military ID, saying his name was Tommy Bland. "I know of your circumstances, and I would like to help in exchange for your expert advise on how I can regain control over my own life and mind. Are you familiar with DARPA?"

Tommy's story, what he remembered of it, was traumatic. Tears streamed down his face as he relayed one of the most horrifying experiences I had ever heard. Mark provided him understanding and coping skills, which in turn gave him hope that some day he might recover. "What you know could restore free thought to America," Tommy told Mark emphatically, "and ultimately help humanity as whole. I will do anything I can to help you."

"When the time is right, I'll take you up on your offer, " Mark told him, fully aware that Tommy's admission of holding a Step Seven Top Secret Clearance and ID credentials could prove beneficial to our cause.

Within days, Edith Hammons telephoned. When she excitedly suggested that we meet, Mark and I drove out to her house. It wasn't like Edith to make such a request and we knew it must be important.

After pouring our coffee, Edith began, "Ben West called me and asked me if you would speak before the Tennessee Legislature regarding Kelly. We need changes in the law to protect the children rather than protect their abusers. Commissioner Grunow will be in attendance." Commissioner Grunow was head of the Department of Human Services who had repeatedly refused to meet with me throughout Kelly's ordeal. Now he was being called to task, and I eagerly accepted the invitation to speak.

"What should I do about members of the Legislature that I was exposed to under mind control?" I asked her. "I know that Senator Albright is still in office." It had not been uncommon for me to attend Legislative functions and parties back in the 1980's, dealing CIA cocaine and/or being prostituted to various members. Albright in particular stood out in my mind since I was prostituted to him in conjunction with Alex Houston's first mind controlled slave, Maria Medina. Albright was heavily involved in CIA cocaine money laundering ops that ran through Nashville's country music industry.

"I mentioned that to Ben," Edith said. "He told me to assure you that you have no cause to be nervous just because you're making a few criminals nervous. He said, 'let the guilty sweat because it only further validates your case.' Besides," she patted my hand, "I'll be watching them to make sure they won't come near you."

"Oh, they won't get near her," Mark vowed.

I wasn't nervous, anyway. This was clearly too good of an opportunity to allow the past to muck it up. I could make a significant difference on Kelly's behalf. Edith handed me a slip of paper with the numbers HR 1462 and S 902 written on it. "Those are the numbers of the Bill in Kelly's name that are currently before the Tennessee House and Senate. You're scheduled to speak on Monday, April 13th."

"The 13th?" Mark raised his eyebrows.

"Well, maybe it will prove to be *their* unlucky day," I smiled, fully aware of numbers games by now.

When we left Edith's, Mark and I briefly stopped by Tommy Bland's apartment on the way out of town. Mark had previously been to Tommy's residence, and tipped me to his display of photographs involving US Air Force Intel Command and DARPA. I studied the fascinating photos that lined his walls while Mark and Tommy talked. There were pictures of him with Bush as CIA Director, Panamanian Leader Manuel Noriega, recognizable Top Brass military, beside Air Force One, and other notable photos that seemed to me that they should be classified.

When Tommy's teenage children began arriving home from school, they lovingly tended to their father. They treated him attentively with respect, compassion, and understanding. They knew their father had suffered extreme trauma, and asked only that he receive help, too, once we succeeded in obtaining it for Kelly. Our brief stop proved to be a highly informative and very moving experience.

On the long drive home, I decided not to question if Tommy's ID had had anything to do with the recent turn of events. It wouldn't have made any difference anyway, and sometimes it was more beneficial not knowing such details, especially when it involved a Step Seven Clearance. Instead I asked, "Did you see all those photos on Tommy's wall of him with George Bush?"

"I couldn't get past that one of him with Noriega."

"It's no wonder he is having trouble with his memory," I continued, still thinking of the photos of him and Bush together in various places.

"With what Tommy knows about Noriega and Bush," Mark continued, "Bush should be sitting on Noriega's lap during his upcoming trial."

Noriega's trial was scheduled for Friday, April 10. Despite our submission of evidence through numerous means including Jim Dibble, C.I.D., and attorneys Reese Bagwell and Frank Rubino, we hadn't been called to testify. I thought about Mark's statement that Bush should be sitting on Noriega's lap. "Bush should be sharing a cell with Noriega anyway based on the information Customs validated regarding my experience with them in CIA cocaine ops[6]! I assume Tommy hasn't been called to testify at Noriega's trial either, since pertinent evidence is still hanging on his walls. Obviously Noriega's case is rigged as bad as Kelly's is. With Bush in office and National Security slapped on the case, there is little hope that the truth will come out.”

“It will eventually,” Mark assured me. “It always does. A lot of people know that Just Cause was ‘just cause’ Noriega was skimming CIA drug profits from Bush’s CIA baby known as Operation Watchtower. The facts can’t be suppressed forever, especially when the likes of William Van Raab all the way through to Tommy Bland have evidence linking the two.”

We drove the rest of the way in silence while I focused on what I would say to the Legislature on Monday. Something had to give. Kelly’s situation with Melissa was becoming increasingly worse with every full moon. Being denied therapy for PTSD with Dr. Mitchell right now compounded the felony. How could I simplify such a complex subject as mind control and, ultimately, Kelly’s needs for public presentation? Somehow, I would have to find the words to open their ears, their minds, and their hearts while motivating them to take action.

If truth were allowed to come out during Noriega’s trial on April 10, it could be of enormous benefit to my speech before the Legislature on the 13th. Noriega’s trial, however, did little to reveal reality[7]. Bush’s involvement was twisted to appear heroic, as though his ‘Operation Just Cause’ was a major Drug War victory. In the wake of that whitewash, my determination was at an all time high.

While I spoke, I barely noticed Senator Albright’s outrage while he stormed out of his seat to dramatically make a phone call in plain view of everyone present. I stayed intensely focused on clearly making my point for Kelly’s sake. Not only did I cite the injustices incurred through a corrupt justice and mental health system, I also pointed out specifics where bureaucratic red tape only tangled the facts. I suggested solutions that would be more humanitarian and less formal. State forms and laws did not allow for room to address issues that were becoming prevalent in society, from ritual abuse and incest to mind control. When I was through, Representative West called for immediate changes in the Department of Human Services to be written out in full by Commissioner Grunow and placed on his desk within the week.

A short question and answer period followed. Support was strong and compassionate. After a few moments, Tommy Bland, in full dress Air Force blues, stood up to say, “Today the voice of the people changed government policy. Could this be construed as a giant step forward in their movement against the dictates of the New World Order?” Pandemonium broke out in the Legislature, and the meeting was unofficially adjourned.

While I made my way through the crowd towards Mark, I was roughly spun around to face Commissioner Grunow. He was seething mad, spitting his words at me. “I personally assure you that your daughter will never be freed from State Custody, and that I will do everything in my power to make sure you never have visitation with her again.”

Somehow I remained calm while I retorted, “By the time you submit your paperwork to the Legislature for their approval, I will be doing everything in my power to insure it’s the last thing you do as Commissioner.”

While I continued to make my way through the crowd to Mark, Ben West stopped me to excitedly tell me that the Bill before the Legislature in Kelly’s name would undoubtedly pass. When I told him about Grunow’s threat, he assured me, “You need not worry about him since he answers to me.”

“It’s who in Washington, DC that he’s been answering to throughout this case that concerns me,” I responded.

Mark arrived at my side by then, wisely expressing appreciation to Ben West for the opportunity he had afforded us. After extending my thanks as well, I turned to Mark to ask where Tommy was.

“I didn’t even know he was here!” I said. “The question he raised regarding the New World Order raised people to their feet. I’d like to thank him.”

We never saw Tommy Bland again.

Chapter 25
US MALE

May 9, 1992 the Bill before the Tennessee State Legislature in Kelly's name passed into law. Edith Hammons mailed a copy of the law's verbiage to our Post Office Box, and it never reached us.

"We don't even get junk mail through that Post Office Box anymore, let alone important documents" Mark told her. "I've exhausted every diplomatic means I know to rectify the problem to no avail. I'm going to have to take action on it myself tomorrow."

When we arrived in Nashville the next morning, Mark dropped me off at the Copy Shop while he tended to the matter. After I made a few necessary copies, I settled into the employee's back room where Billy was busy working.

"How is Mark going to stop the CIA from confiscating your mail[1]?" Billy asked while he continued his work binding booklets he had copied.

"I really don't know," I answered, watching the front door through the two-way mirror. "I'll sure be glad to see him come through that door, though, to tell us all about it. He really is disgusted with the Feds for refusing to act on the documented crimes we've turned over to them, and this illegal confiscation of our mail is one more crime they're ignoring."

"Ya'll are battling a corrupt government over freedom of thought, and they interrupt your communications violating freedom of speech," Billy stated. "That's criminal."

“They confiscated our copy of the Legislative action on the Bill in Kelly’s name. The bill passed into law, yet it hasn’t done anything to alleviate Kelly’s circumstances. It seems criminally ironic that this new law in Kelly’s name deals with mind control and satanism while, at the same time, Melissa has control of Kelly by court order and is subjecting her to occult rituals! Not only is that morally and legally wrong, but Kelly is potentially volatile and could trigger into violence from the rituals at any time. I’m concerned for her safety and the safety of those around her.”

“Let’s hope she won’t solve her problem with Melissa herself,” Billy offered.

“I can only hope that Dr. Mitchell’s court action will produce positive results real soon.”

“It’s a wonder any justice can be obtained through the courts anymore,” Billy observed. “I noticed that George Bush intervened on Ernest Ray Lynn’s sentencing for his criminal cocaine and attempted murder charges to substitute his prison time with ‘punishment of writing a song[2].’ Writing songs is what he does anyway! We’re the ones being punished for his crimes if we have to listen to it.”

“Poor Loretta. I had hoped they would lock Ernest Ray up so she could be free from at least one of her mind control handlers. Instead, he is free to continue to manipulate her in her MK Ultra victimization and distribute cocaine for the CIA! What kind of justice is that?”

“Does Loretta know she is carrying cocaine on her buses for the CIA?”

“She can’t think to know it, Billy. She would be devastated to know how she is being used for criminal activity that ultimately hurts others. She is such a pure, gentle, loving soul. With Mooney, Ken Riley, and Ernest Ray all actively participating in her use and abuse by the CIA, I had hoped that perhaps Ernest Ray’s conviction would result in her first step toward freedom. But George Bush stepped in and set Ernest Ray free instead! Did you notice that Ernest Ray’s attorney was Reese Bagwell?[3]”

"Bagwell keeps popping up in news lately, whitewashing these CIA criminal cases. It's a good thing Mark kept him off your case. Noriega's trial was 'amBushed' by the same cover-up of CIA cocaine ops. I'll bet Ernest Ray wasn't the least bit nervous about the truth leaking out considering Bagwell's input into his and Noriega's cocaine cases."

"It astounds me that the media is ignoring Noriega's extensive ties into this country, from his education at the School of the Americas[4] to his well known involvement with Bush and the CIA in the cocaine business. Can't people see that this so-called War on Drugs is no more than the CIA eliminating their competition while they take over the industry worldwide?"

I paused to reflect. "If people don't wake up soon, we'll have a drug lord running this country."

"We already do," Billy said, unjamming his stapling machine.

I laughed. "I'm referring to Bill Clinton. In 1984, I was at the Swiss Villa Amphitheater in Lampe Missouri[5] where Bush and Clinton were talking about their New World Order. Bush was really pleased with how well Clinton's Mena cocaine operation was funding the New World Order effort, and he assured Clinton he would be rewarded politically. In those days, the groundwork for NAFTA[6] was established to open the border to 'free trade of drugs to equalize our economies,' and Clinton was right there in the midst of it all. It was already determined that Bush would be put in the office of President at the same time Salinas was put in as President of Mexico so they could usher in NAFTA."

"Wait a minute," Billy said. "What about elections?"

"What elections?" I asked. "Its easy for them to rig votes with the electronic ballets. If third world countries used archaic methods of voting, we sent in representatives from the US to 'oversee them.' Everybody I knew in politics didn't give elections a thought. They knew that people would believe in the corrupted, controlled polls, and that those appointed to office in accordance with the New World Order were secure."

“So people are misled by their leaders to believe they chose them?”

“Not only that,” I answered, “but figureheads are placed while the real power works behind the scenes. For example, when Salinas was Vice President of Mexico, he ran the country while dela Madrid was only a Presidential figurehead. Vice President Bush ran this country while Reagan was *acting* President.”

“Why is Bush President now?”

“These guys have become so arrogant, they are blatant. Their overconfidence will eventually be their downfall. In the meantime, they have planned for contingencies like we’re seeing with the militias and patriots beginning to wake up and rebel. When Bush and Clinton were talking in 1984, Bush told Clinton ‘when the American people become disillusioned with Republicans leading them into the New World Order, you, as a Democrat, will be put into place.’ I expect that Clinton will be our next President based on that conversation I heard.”

“This is serious information!” Billy looked up from his work. “Its no wonder the Feds are worried about your revealing what you know.”

“There are a lot of people who know what I know[7],” I assured him. “And even more are waking up to reality fast. People with Intelligence operating on a Need-to-Know are gaining insight into a bigger picture with the truth that is emerging. They gain one more piece of the puzzle and the Big Picture suddenly comes into focus. When it does, their paradigms shift. Mark and I are also aware of numerous scientists waking up to the reality of a New World Order agenda who are furious that they’ve been mislead and used. These people are uniting with strength, and the New World Order elite will need to play their hold card and switch political parties. Watch and see. Clinton will appear to ‘defeat’ Bush according to plan, while Bush continues business as usual from behind the scenes of the New World Order.”

“Who do you think will follow Clinton?”

“A compliant, sleeping public mesmerized by his Oxford learned charisma.”

Billy looked up from his work again to clarify his question. “I mean into the Presidency.”

“Hillary?” I smiled half-heartedly. “Seriously, she is brighter than Bill, and is even more corrupt. Knowing her, she’d probably rather work behind the scenes, although she may be used as another appearance of ‘change’ since she’s a woman. That’s just speculation based on how these criminals operate. They want to keep their power all in the family. I did see Bush, Jr. being conditioned, and trained for the role of President at the Mount Shasta, California military programming compound in 1986[8]. He’s not very bright, though, so I don’t know how they could possibly prop him up…”

The front door bell jingled as Mark stormed into the Copy Shop and strode for the door of the backroom where he knew Billy and I would be. I jumped up and threw my arms around him.

“How’d it go?”

“We’ll get our mail now.” Mark sat on the counter, taking a long drink from my bottle of water.

“How do you know?” I impatiently inquired. “What did they say?”

“Nothing,” Mark said, wiping his mouth. “I did the talking. I walked into the office supply they’re using for a front…”

“What office supply?” Billy asked.

“The one down the road a couple of blocks in the same building as the Bell Telephone Company,” Mark answered.

“How did you know it was a CIA front?” Billy shut down his binding equipment to listen to Mark’s reply.

“I could smell them,” Mark smiled.

“Is that what that stink is that blows this direction sometimes?”

“Come on,” I coaxed. “Really. How did you know?”

“An educated guess. The CIA uses office supply fronts as often as they use toy-manufacturing fronts. They are so routine and predictable. I’ve been watching that place, and never saw legitimate business being conducted. It’s an Office Supply with no office supplies. Instead, guys in suits and dark glasses driving Fed cars frequent the place. Anyway, I went inside and the place was pretty much empty except for a gorgeous girl sitting at a desk playing receptionist. I patted my front pocket, and said, ‘See this? I’m *not* glad to see you’.”

Billy chuckled, familiar with the infamous May West line, ‘is that your pistol in your pocket or are you just glad to see me?’

“What did she do?” I eagerly asked.

“She reached under the desk and pushed her panic button just like I hoped she would. When she started to slide the drawer open, I assumed she was going for a weapon so I slammed it and got in her face. I told her, ‘you know I have an *explosive* temper. When people cheat me, threaten me, or steal my mail, I become *explosive*. You don’t want me to become *explosive* now, do you?’ She was sitting there, dumfounded. So I left.”

“How do you know we’ll get our mail?” I didn’t understand why Mark was so certain he had accomplished his goal.

“I said the word ‘*explosive’* three times. Repetition is the most common form of mind manipulation used by the CIA. They know that it works, so they use it. Which means they also recognize it when someone like me deliberately repeats a word or phrase three times. She bought my bluff. I’m telling you, we’ll get our mail and that little Office Supply store will close.”

“You’ve never been wrong before under circumstances like these,” I smiled. “Thanks for taking care of it. I’m glad it’s over and you’re OK.”

“Of course I’m OK,” Mark replied. “I don’t take chances, just calculated risks. There’s no way to lose.”

“Well,” Billy said, “Just the same, I’m relieved to see you back in one piece. It’s not everyday someone storms the CIA and walks away unscathed.”

“They’re a bunch of wimps, plus I waited until they all left for their 3 martini lunch,” Mark told him. “Don’t buy into their tough-guy front.”

“Speaking of ‘wimps’,” Billy switched subjects. “What is this ‘wimp’ image Bush projects?”

I answered. “I believe it is a deliberately contrived public image stemming from his pedophilic wimp appearance. He talks to the public like he’s talking to kids. He even uses his Mr. Rogers[9] voice. It’s a total diversion from the mind controlling, warmongering criminal that he really is.”

“What makes someone like him become a pedophile?” Billy asked.

“Multi-generational abuse, most likely,” Mark answered while I gathered up our belongings to leave. “Besides, people like him who have all the money and power in the world know no boundaries. They have no limitations legally, financially, morally or otherwise.”

“The CIA just learned boundaries on confiscating our mail,” I said as we walked toward the door.

“Yeah,” Billy agreed. “A US male got through to them so the US Mail can get through to you.”

Chapter 26
GOD SAVE US FROM RELIGION

“What religion is God?” Kelly asked when I finally saw her again.

Our mail had resumed for the moment and the CIA front relocated the day after Mark stormed the Office Supply, yet it was mid-summer before the court agreed that Kelly should resume therapy with Dr. Mitchell. Noting Kelly’s deteriorated condition, Dr. Mitchell immediately arranged for her and me to begin family therapy with his cohort social worker Frank Neiswinder.

“Kelly,” Neiswinder began. “Why are you angry with your mother?”

“I’m not!” Kelly adamantly told him again. “Will you please just let us visit? I haven’t seen my mom in a long time, and we want to talk.”

Ignoring Neiswinder, I responded to Kelly’s significant question. “To quote Gandhi, ‘God has no religion.’ Religion is manmade.”

“Then why doesn’t God save us from religion?” she asked as a tear smeared her heavy black mascara down her cheek. When I wiped her tear, my hand accidentally smeared the blood red lipstick she had started wearing. Neiswinder handed her a tissue.

“Go ahead and cry, Kelly,” Neiswinder said. “Cry out all that anger you have for your mother.”

Kelly rolled her eyes. “I’m not angry at my mother! How many times do I have to tell you?” She wiped at her stained cheek with the tissue, tangling herself in the ridiculously age-inappropriate moon and stars earrings that dangled past her shoulders.

“I hear anger in your voice,” Neiswinder persisted.

“Look, I should be with my mother and court is forcing me to be with Melissa instead,” she told him.

“How does that make you feel?” he asked, as most therapists are trained to do regardless of circumstances.

“Angry!” she roared. “I’m angry at Melissa! I’m angry at the court! But most of all, I’m angry at you for interrupting me and my mom again! I need to talk with her. Please!”

“We are saved from religion when we go within for our answers,” I began, fully aware of the underlying reason for Kelly’s questions.

“Within where? I think I’m without a ‘within’ right now. So I’m running as fast as I can away from religion the direction Melissa showed me. Only that isn’t working either.” She twisted one of a handful of the occult-theme rings she was wearing. Occultism was taking its toll. The heavy black circles under Kelly’s eyes were accentuated by the thick eyeliner she wore, which matched her black attire. My precious daughter was under all that darkness somewhere, and I only had a few more minutes to reach her before our session would end.

“Of course not,” I scoffed. “Satanism is a religion, too. Why are you turning to a religion to get away from religion? That’s not very bright. Think about it.”

Kelly was silent for a minute, which inspired Neiswinder to speak up. “Kelly, do you feel angry with your mother for making you stay with Melissa?”

“If she says yes,” I told him, “will you alleviate Kelly’s ‘anger’ by changing the court order so I can take her home with me where she belongs?”

“My mom isn’t making me stay with Melissa,” Kelly chimed in. “My abusers are. They are manipulating the court and probably you, too. For the last time, I am *not* angry with my mother!”

“Think about what you just said,” Neiswinder appeared angry himself.

“OK,” Kelly said. “If you’ll give me a minute to think, that’s exactly what I was doing when you interrupted again. But you’re not going to tell me what to think. People have done that to me all my life.”

“Rather than tell her what to think,” I said. “Why not teach her *how* to think. For herself. That’s what she is in therapy for.”

I turned back to Kelly while Neiswinder fumed. “What is bright,” I reminded her, “is that little light inside of you. Look into it. Look within. Find your self. Don’t look outside yourself for answers. When religion started telling people what to think rather than allowing them to think for themselves it became a means of control rather than spiritual freedom. Strengthen yourself. Shine your light bright. Don’t bury it under all this darkness,” I gestured to her black attire and occult jewelry. “Project true-to-soul. Be yourself.”

Kelly thought a minute. “To be myself, I have to know myself. To know myself, I have to think for myself. Its hard to think for myself when I don’t know who I am anymore.”

“You haven’t changed,” I held her close. “You are you, inside. Believe in you. I do. Don’t let people like Melissa lead you outside yourself. Remember. Your answers are within. Lighten up!”

Kelly smiled, and then looked serious. “I’d lighten up more if people would listen to me and let me come home.”

“We can’t let life’s circumstances influence who we are true-to-soul. We need to stay unconditionally true-to-soul.” I held her close. “I love you unconditionally, because I know who you are. Unconditional love isn’t influenced by circumstances.”

Another tear slid down Kelly’s cheek. “Melissa said you don’t love me. Charlene and Wayne said you don’t love me.”

“What do they know about love?” I asked her. “They don’t even know *you*.”

“Or you,” Kelly said, hugging me tight. “It’s not over ‘til we win, right mom?”

“We’ll win,” I assured her. “Love always wins. Unconditionally. Love by its very nature is the most powerful force in the universe. Love is the light within you, so shine your brilliance. You know you’re bright.”

“Yeah, I am pretty bright,” Kelly agreed. “I’m doing really good in public school. Half of what they teach is just Global Ed garbage, but I can still pass all the tests without believing what they say.”

While Kelly was in Cumberland House, her education was minimal within the confines of the institution. The sparse education Kelly did receive there did little to stimulate her advanced intellect. When Kelly had started kindergarten years before, she already tested at a ninth grade reading level. Now Cumberland House was geared below a kindergarten level, and Kelly was concerned about her lack of education. I had comforted Kelly’s frustrations by reassuring her that “all she was missing in public school was Global Ed anyway.” Since the Alaskan school system was openly and actively opposing the government’s attempt to force Global Ed in their system, Kelly was acutely aware of the ineptness of its structure. “Programming more information into my brain doesn’t make it knowledge,” she had said. Now that she was back in public school for the first time in years, it was reassuring to hear her talk about her education experience. Before we could discuss it further, though, Neiswinder announced ‘time’s up.’

“The time flew by,” I complained. “We barely even had time to address your initial question about what religion God is.”

“Sure we did,” Kelly said gathering up the pile of occult jewelry she had removed. “The answer is within. God’s love light is within… me. And religion is without… love.”

“Wait a minute,” I said, alarmed. “I didn’t say religion is without love since there are good people in all religions who love and…”

“Why are there so many religious wars, then?” she wisely asked. “And why do they abuse children in the church? And why are satanic religions even darker?” She shuddered.

“Oh my God,” I realized the magnitude of our conversation. “Things aren’t always so black and white, Kelly. Keep your love light shining, though, and the truth will become clear. Remember, the answers are within,” I said as Melissa honked the horn of the car outside. “Stay true-to-soul, true-to-yourself, true-to-love,” I called. “I love you!”

I walked towards the car where Mark was parked, deep in thought. When I climbed in, I noticed tears in his eyes. “I can’t stand it,” he said, his voice quavering. “It’s so hard to see her and not even get to talk with her.” The court order prohibiting contact between Mark and Kelly was as absurd as the court placing Kelly in an occult Foster Home despite laws being passed in her name to prohibit it. Where was justice? Where was compassion?

“I’m sorry,” Mark cried as I hugged him close. “I can only imagine what it was like for you seeing her after all this time.”

“I’ll tell you all about it,” I smiled. “This day was easy compared to what Melissa is about to face after Kelly and I talked today. Kelly is not happy with Melissa or her occultism.” I proceeded to tell Mark all about our conversation as we drove towards home.

The next “Family Therapy” session, Kelly and I again indulged in conversation despite Neiswinder’s determination to conduct conventional therapy. She handed me a copy of the poem she had written ‘God Save Us From Religion.’ It was actually a profound and loving piece that could have been entitled ‘God Save Us From Cult/Occult Abuse.’

“Wow, Kelly,” I exclaimed after reading it. “This sounds like you have given significant thought to our conversation last week.” I looked at her, patting her thick blond hair and holding her close.

“I’m feeling more like myself,” she said, a hint of inner peace reflecting in her eyes. “Only other people aren’t seeing it that way.”

“Whoever can’t see you in all your brilliance must be blind,” I said. “Who…”

“OK,” Neiswinder interrupted, standing up after shuffling through his stack of papers. “Today we are going to accomplish what we didn’t get to last week. Let’s begin by identifying the problem. I understand that you hate your mother, Kelly. Why?”

“Oh no, not again!” Kelly slumped in her chair. “My mom and I have something really important to discuss. Please let us talk.”

“We should all discuss it then,” he said, leaning over into our space.

Kelly ignored him. “I got in trouble in school,” she said.

“What happened?” Kelly had been enrolled in summer school to determine what grade she might advance to next fall.

“We were supposed to be studying political science and my teacher brought up Bush,” Kelly swallowed hard, her pupils dilating. “She was talking about the War on Drugs and what a hero Bush is.”

“Oh no,” I groaned. “What did you do?”

“I just asked her if she bought into all that propaganda bullshit.”

“Did you use that word?” I asked, knowing that the use of profanity is forbidden in school.

“No!” she said. “I mean, yes. But she was mad about the ‘propaganda’ word. Earlier when we were doing social studies, she said we have the best of everything in this country. She said we have the biggest variety of food in the world, and I told her she was feeding me propaganda. I told her I knew better because I had eaten international foods on the cruise ships and fruits in the Caribbean.”

I realized Kelly had memories surfacing, and was eager to deal with that issue rather than what her teacher had to say. But what had happened in school was important to Kelly, so helping her with memory recovery would have to wait. Neiswinder was oblivious to the importance of what was being said.

Kelly continued, “She told me that anyone with such a vivid imagination couldn’t possibly know propaganda from the facts. I told her, ‘propaganda is, in fact, imagination’ where somebody makes up lies to fool people like her.”

Neiswinder was taking notes as fast as Kelly was talking. I knew she probably got in trouble with that statement. Kelly went on to tell her that Global Ed was propaganda, and the teacher phoned Melissa for a meeting.

“Kelly,” Neiswinder interrupted. “Your mother says some pretty bizarre things, and you are copying her. Do you feel you need to copy her in order to make her like you?”

Kelly didn’t answer him. “Melissa was already disgusted with me because I wrote this poem.” She gestured to the poem she handed me. “She thinks I’m possessed by demons and wants me to see an exorcist.”

I swallowed my rage knowing that treating ritual abuse with superstition was in direct opposition to healing. I knew Kelly was aware of this since her Psychiatrist in Alaska had had cause to counsel her on it in the course of therapy. “What did you tell her when she said that?”

Kelly smiled, “I asked her if she knew that ‘exercise’ built strength.” To a literal mind, this was a natural response and a strong reason why religious abuse cannot be treated with religion. Since Kelly was capable of ‘exercising her free thought’ to some degree ever since Alaska, she apparently found humor in the word play. “I was just playing with her,” Kelly continued. “I didn’t believe she was serious, but she was! Now she is taking the matter to court.”

“I’ll stop that,” I assured Kelly. “The Bill before the Legislature in your name was just passed into law and…”

“Ms. O’Brien!” Neiswinder roared. “You are in violation of court order. This is my office, and I will not tolerate any more of your lack of cooperation with me or with court orders! You sit over there.” He pointed to a chair across the small room. “Kelly, you sit here.” He went back to his desk and sat down. “Alright then. Kelly, you need to answer my question now.”

“What question?”

“Why do you hate your mother?”

“I don’t”

Neiswinder rephrased his question. “Then why are you angry?”

“Because you just interrupted us again and I get angry at anyone who separates us.”

“I’m going to report this to Dr. Mitchell. You two are totally uncooperative with therapy and I don’t want to waste any more of my time with you.”

“Can we still meet here and talk?” Kelly asked. “We don’t get to see each other anymore except for here.”

“That is up to Dr. Mitchell!” he said. We smiled at each other hoping that Dr. Mitchell wouldn’t interrupt our only chance to talk together. Neiswinder concluded the “therapy” session for the day.

On the way out of town, I stopped by Jean Crowe's office to stop Melissa's pursuit of an exorcist through the courts.

"There are exorcists available that the Department of Human Services uses," Jean told me. I was astounded. This was archaic. I reminded her of the bill that just passed into law in Kelly's name regarding legitimate therapy for ritually abused and mind controlled children.

"Besides," I told her. "Why would we want to 'cast out' personality fragments that need to be reintegrated? 'Casting out' dissociative personas that were created through ritual abuse would only further reinforce the division. In this case, though, it's even worse because Melissa wants to 'cast out' Kelly's refusal to comply with superstitious occult rituals. That equates to programming her. No. Absolutely not. We have got to counter Melissa's request."

"Well, you write it out then," my attorney told me, handing me a pen. "I don't understand what you want said."

I wrote out the verbiage for her to present to the court. Our petition to the court in conjunction with Dr. Mitchell's would certainly prove sufficient to stop Melissa's efforts to obtain an exorcist.

The next full moon, I received a phone call. Melissa claimed Kelly was "unmanageable" and had dumped her off on a street corner near the Nashville YWCA[1]. Our next "Family Therapy" session with Neiswinder was to be held at Vanderbilt University Children's Psychiatric Hospital--the Defense Department Subcontractor we had been avoiding. The only plus was that Kelly had found the strength within to save herself from Melissa, superstitious exorcism, and occult religion.

Chapter 27
OUTPOST of FREEDOM

“Kelly is suffering from homicidal and suicidal ideations,” Frank Neiswinder told me when I arrived at Vanderbilt Psychiatric for my first visit with Kelly since the incident with Melissa.

“What do you expect from someone who is forced to participate in occult ritual?” I asked. “This was inevitable and is exactly why I adamantly opposed Kelly’s placement with Melissa to begin with. No one listened. Now, once again, people like yourself are being educated at Kelly’s expense.”

Kelly sat solemnly, slumped in her chair. “Why am I the one who is locked up?” Kelly complained to Neiswinder. “My abusers are free. Melissa howls at the same moon Wayne Cox howls at, and you think I’m nuts?” Neiswinder didn’t answer. Kelly continued. “Why is Melissa allowed to dump me like a sack of donated junk at the ‘Y’ while the court makes me and my mom have supervised visits?”

Kelly had a right to be ‘angry’ over the injustice of being placed with the likes of Melissa and kept from her loving home. Being locked up in Vanderbilt Psychiatric must be traumatic for her, too. Vanderbilt had an array of electronic doors and locks that rivaled the Pentagon’s to keep the inmates isolated in their sanitized hospital setting.

“Where would you like to be?” Neiswinder asked her, as though she hadn’t just told him again. Did he ever listen? If he had cared to hear her, he would have at least known Melissa’s occult rituals were counter-productive to her well-being as she verbalized so clearly weeks before.

"I'd like to be with my mom and dad, back in Alaska," Kelly answered. "Or maybe with them on a cruise ship far away from here." She turned to me, "Mom, I was remembering something about Bush[1], NCL cruise ships[2], and CIA cocaine operations. I wrote it out."

Neiswinder literally fell out of his chair. "Kelly!" he exclaimed, dusting himself off and sitting back down, "I didn't know you could remember anything about the past! Where is this memory you wrote out?" He started shuffling through his stacks of papers again.

"I wrote it for Dr. Mitchell, and staff said they would give it to him," she said, looking at him skeptically. "I really don't trust anyone else with it except my mom and dad."

She turned back to me. "It had lots of details about CIA cocaine operations in it, right down to the triggers they used. We were in Haiti, weren't we, Mom?" She lowered her voice. "I was thinking about that word, how Catholics call hell 'Hadies' and how much I 'hate' the smell of that place. Did they name it Haiti for 'hate' or for 'hell'? And who was Saint Thomas? That place is close to hell."

"What place?" Neiswinder asked her.

"St. Thomas," Kelly said nonchalantly. "The one in the Virgin Islands. Mom, does virgin mean having sex or not having sex?"

"It means untouched," I answered uncomfortably while Neiswinder made notes.

"So Haiti is where they have sex, and the Virgin Islands is where they don't?" Kelly's literal mind seemed to be misinterpreting the names of the two Caribbean islands. Still, if she had been writing out memory, she would know sex occurred in both places based on her own experience. I knew her brilliant mind was traveling somewhere else, and I listened to her beyond the words I knew were only intended for Neiswinder. "Is that why Hadies got AIDS[3]?"

She apparently had remembered the sex, and was concerned with having contracted AIDS. I glanced at Neiswinder who was asking a nurse for Kelly's writings. "Not everyone who has been to Haiti has AIDS anymore than everyone who has been to the Virgin Islands is a virgin," I assured her. She chuckled while I continued. "Especially when the CIA knows the people they are sending over there are immune to that strain of AIDS." Relief washed over Kelly's face as she realized she had stood amidst AIDS hell without catching it.

I thought how extreme her experience of life had already been and continued to be. No matter how explicitly she expressed herself in words, those who were supposed to be "caring" for her didn't seem to hear. Yet I could hear beyond her words. Our ability to thought-communicate was deep, allowing us to share an understanding above our monitored verbalizations. Helping my eleven-year-old child deal with the reality of her past pertaining to sensitive topics like AIDS was strenuous while under supervision we did not trust. The fact that she chose to speak cryptically to me now elevated my concerns for what was happening to her at Vanderbilt. Something was very wrong. Neiswinder's over-reaction to her mention of memory recovery was not consistent with someone who would be working alongside of Dr. Mitchell, unless Mitchell was something other than he portrayed himself to be.

Neiswinder concluded our "Family Counseling Session" early since he was obviously eager to obtain Kelly's written-out memories. Since the nurse had already turned them over to Dr. Mitchell, Neiswinder was empty handed in addition to again missing the magnitude of the conversation Kelly and I exchanged right in front of him.

The next week when I saw Kelly, we were taken through a series of electronically locked doors to a large dayroom where Neiswinder was to be joined by a nurse who could "maintain structure over our session." Kelly and I were seated apart. Our ability to communicate, like our love, knew no distance. Significant understanding passed between us. I realized that Kelly's circumstances were urgent, which compounded further when she told the nurse she had "bumped her head and couldn't remember anything anymore.” The words did not seem to be her own, and I started to rise from my chair to tend to her.

Suddenly I felt a familiar sensation overcome my body, rendering me weak and unable to stand. Harmonics. I knew the feeling from the past, and was aware that this Top Secret classified weaponry had technologically advanced to miniaturization the size of a remote control. The device could fit in a purse or a briefcase, and my brainstem was reverberating with its effects.

Neiswinder was leading Kelly from the room when awareness allowed for me to fight through the fog in my brain and stand. I wobbled over to the “nurse,” whose jaw had dropped in surprise. I backed her against the wall while I fumbled for the ID card hanging around her neck and said, “I won’t forget your name is…” Focusing was a strain, yet I was determined to read the name on her tag. “Huffaker.” I looked her in the eye. “If Kelly is hurt, I hold you responsible.”

“Kelly doesn’t want to see you anymore,” she said as she began unlocking the electronic doors to escort me out. “Your visitation is concluded.”

I knew our lives were in grave jeopardy, and considered the possibility that Kelly’s memories regarding Bush and the fact that he was in Nashville three times recently were connected. Presidential elections were coming up next month and the local press was looking eagerly for a Republican scandal. Even though I knew elections were rigged, I was also aware that Nashville was a focus of media attention since Tennessee Senator Al Gore was on the Presidential ballet as Bill Clinton’s running mate. Kelly’s memories regarding Bush had certainly surfaced at an inopportune time.

Mark was livid when he learned what had happened to Kelly and me at Vanderbilt, and he immediately took action. Juvenile Court Records prove that a battle of allegiances by Vanderbilt between Kelly and government ties commenced. The doors of the court, Dr. Mitchell, and Dr. Nurcum were locked as tight as Vanderbilt’s high security electronic doors. Neiswinder was immediately “retired” from his job as a therapist. And Mark and I struggled to survive the intensity of our precarious circumstances.

“I’m told that the information you remembered regarding NAFTA has the Bush Administration as concerned about it as they are about Kelly’s memories,” Mark informed me one morning as we sat outside drinking our coffee. “We need immediate public exposure to survive this. Unfortunately, the media is still caving into censorship and Linda Blood’s book isn’t due to be released yet.”

Linda Blood’s work on her book *The New Satanists*[4] was taking longer than anticipated, and we had hoped that its release through Walmart stores as contracted would blaze the trail through media censorship by now. Her work had, however, put us in touch with several international organizations concerned with Lt. Col. Aquino’s satanic activity that was emanating from US military bases worldwide. Still, these connections were military and Intelligence[5] level rather than public, and could not help us reach the public exposure we so desperately needed. I wondered how we could possibly survive long enough to reach the public with truth under the circumstances.

“I’m in communication with Perot’s[6] group through their mind control survivor’s underground,” Mark continued.

“Karyn?” I asked, referring to the survivor with whom we were in contact.

“No survivor is trustworthy until deprogrammed, and I’m not too sure about Karyn after speaking with her,” Mark answered. “I am in touch with Ross Perot’s sister, though, and she suggests we hand deliver a packet of information to them right away. Our previous attempts to send Perot information through the mail system failed and the documents apparently were confiscated. We’ll need to travel to his headquarters in Texas to deliver them personally this time. Besides, she has agreed to talk with me when we get there.”

“I thought Texas was Bush’s headquarters,” I commented. “Is Perot from there, too?”

“Perot is in Dallas and Bush is out of Houston. Their close proximity provided Perot a close up view on Bush that inspired him to run against him. He knows a lot about mind control, the CIA's corruption in the drug industry, and how elections are rigged. His extreme wealth bought him so much airtime on TV, though, that it is going to be difficult for them to slip this election past the pubic eye. He's causing problems and subsequently waking people up. This is a great opportunity for us to connect with a major movement against Bush's New World Order."

"It sounds good," I said apprehensively. "I like what Perot is saying, and the fact that he is running a secret underground for some mind control survivors. But I don't like the thought of going into Texas so close to elections!"

"Get used to the idea," Mark advised. "We're scheduled to speak in Houston on the day before elections."

"What?" I exclaimed.

"US Customs Agents, Border Guards, and local police are frustrated with the CIA slapping National Security on every drug bust they make at the Mexican border. They want to know why these criminals are going free. They also want to know more about mind control, because they realize the drug couriers they are busting are robotic, have superhuman strength, and suffer from amnesia. The information you've turned into Customs has given them their first insight into what is going on, and they want us to address a forum of agents and cops the first week in November. They opted to hold this seminar at election time believing Bush and Clinton would be too busy to interfere. Either way, we're invited to speak."

"Wow." I swallowed hard. "Whatever it takes to survive and make a difference for Kelly. At least its public exposure in the most effective area we can spread information. They need to know how the groundwork for NAFTA is rooted in drugs and corruption to equalize our economies for the New World Order. If the right people know about it, maybe they can stop the erosion of our economy before we reach third world status like Mexico, plus stop the CIA's War on Drugs from being launched against citizens."

“Working with law enforcement will only help our credibility,” Mark went on. “Credibility is all we’ve got, and we’ll need every bit of it to affect Kelly’s case. This conference where we’ll be speaking is sponsored by a national organization of local, state, and federal law enforcement from all across the country as well as from the US/Mexican border. This can only help our cause.”

I sipped my coffee and thought for a minute. “I’m not a public speaker,” I said, realizing my lack of professional speaking techniques. Presenting Kelly’s need to the Tennessee Legislature did not qualify me as a public speaker.

“Neither am I!” Mark chimed in. “I worked under a Top Secret Security Clearance for years because I could keep secrets and my mouth shut! Now I’m supposed to become a government whistleblower and tell all? This is hard for me, too, but we have no choice. It’s our only chance for survival according to our supporters with Intelligence I’ve been talking with. They also gave me a contact number for an underground newspaper in Florida called the *Outpost of Freedom*[7]. It is just now being formed to expose government corruption, and I’m going to write a story for them on mind control for their first issue. It is expected that the *Outpost of Freedom* will spawn similar underground sources of news for the growing Patriot movement in this country. With mainstream media censored from reporting truth and focused on social engineering propaganda, it is up to citizens who can still think free to arm each other with truth. Besides, maybe by writing this story it will make it easier to speak about it.”

“Public speaking can’t be too hard,” I consoled him. “Since it’s not about us, the focus will be on the information we present. Our challenge will be to present it in a way that makes them want to hear it and absorb it.”

“According to statistics, 50 things out of 100 are normally remembered, but 1000 points of a presentation out of 1000 can be remembered if it’s presented right.”

“Even if we present it right, can people retain it long enough to take action?”

“Memory retention is at an all time low due to social engineering,” Mark agreed. “But if people can *think* to ask the question, they must be waking up beyond social engineering expectations. This is a prime opportunity for us to begin sounding the alarm to wake up more people.”

“We need more than a whistle to blow,” I said, referring to the literal interpretation of ‘whistleblower.’ “This wake up call needs to resound around the world, and we can’t count on the media to amplify it. We have a challenge in front of us, but I’m betting we’ll succeed. I believe in humankind. I believe in truth.”

“Truth always prevails.” Mark swallowed the last of his coffee before going inside to start writing his article for the *Outpost of Freedom*.

Chapter 28
WHERE HAVE ALL THE CHILDREN GONE?

“Where have all the children gone?” was the title of Mark’s explicit and revealing article for the *Outpost of Freedom*. It would be some time yet before it was printed while this prototype for Patriot newspapers was organized and funded. Mind control was rampant throughout the private sector of the US, and many children were affected. Kelly’s case was among the first to surface in the courts, yet it certainly wasn’t the only one. Mark and I personally knew of hundreds.

Underground networks were rising up all across the country to deal with the devastation wreaked on society by the vast proliferation of MK Ultra mind control. Public outcry by citizens concerned with a failing justice system and corrupt government was censored from mainstream corporate media. Meanwhile, abused children were being returned to their handlers by court order for so-called ‘Reasons of National Security’. This gross injustice caused the formation of numerous reputable organizations like Believe the Children, V.O.I.C.E.S., and Justus Unlimited.

Underground networks such as Faye Yeager’s[1] provided temporary safe havens for survivors fleeing abusers and/or the corrupted justice system. The government’s attempts to stop Faye Yeager through prosecution and public persecution only fueled the determination of survivors and their supporters to keep vital undergrounds such as Faye’s in tact.

More and more of these undergrounds were contacting Mark and me seeking tips on how to help the numerous dissociative survivors fleeing their abusers. Many were walking right back into their abuse base since they could not maintain conscious memory of who they were running from. Some were murdered. Our phone rang round the clock with desperate pleas for help.

One mother Mark and I met with, Bernadette MacArthur, had used the underground networks in conjunction with fleeing the country with her five precious children. Four of them reportedly had been horribly abused, and when the corrupt court system threatened to perpetuate it, Bernadette, pregnant, fled all the way to Turkey with them in 1988. Brilliantly maneuvering through Europe and Mexico, she slipped back into the US and Faye Yeager's underground in 1989. Determined to surface and 'normalize' her children's lives, Bernadette appeared on national TV and began speaking out. To further their safety, she then joined the Sheriff's Department and worked her way up the chain of command achieving the rank of Major. This extraordinary mother went to extremes to protect her children and ensure their freedom! Additionally, Bernadette taught Sheriff's Department personnel how to identify mind control survivors, satanic victims, and occult ritual sites. Her highly acclaimed accomplishments paved the way for others, while providing a backdoor into the undergrounds for those on the run. Unbeknownst to her, Bernadette saved the minds and lives of countless survivors while saving her own children.

Another validated mind control victim struggling to become a survivor frantically contacted us from Switzerland. She claimed to work for the UN, and was highly intelligent. She sought coping skills to help her *think* to survive. Victims of mind control cannot *think* to escape, nor *think* to survive, and require outside intervention. They must be free of their abusive families and controlling environments in order to become survivors, and this particular victim was no exception. We never heard from her again. Many died in their struggle to break free of the chains that imprisoned their minds.

I felt fortunate to have survived my White House/Pentagon level MK Ultra mind control existence to be lovingly lifted from it by Mark. Without him, I could not have reclaimed control over my own mind and life, and neither Kelly nor I would be alive. Where there is life, there is hope. Mark's and my hope for Kelly's rehabilitation fueled our determination to make a difference for her at all costs. Now that I could *think* to be the nurturing, loving mother I knew myself to innately be, forced separation from my daughter was intolerable.

The desperation I felt was reverberating throughout the country and world in the hearts and souls of parents and their children with similar plights. It was as though we emerged from the fires of hell blazing a trail to freedom, and found ourselves in a world frozen in fear and apathy. Humankind had been left out in the cold, numb to the reality of government secrets that were slowly eroding the foundation of life. The shining light of truth began to melt away decades of social engineering, superstition, ignorance, and lies. But the process was slow, and survivors in desperate need of immediate help and understanding turned in panic to the undergrounds.

The trail weaving through Karyn's Underground led us to Perot's sister and our scheduled meeting with Presidential Candidate H. Ross Perot. As we drove up to his glass skyscraper empire in Dallas to deliver the information packet as requested, Mark and I noticed armed guards on the rooftops, in the bushes, behind the trees, and everywhere we turned. They appeared ominously robotic, carried rifles and machine guns, and patrolled their post like those who guard the White House in DC.

"You'd best wait in the car while I deliver this," Mark said, obviously concerned for our safety. "I don't know how long I'll be since I'm supposed to meet with Perot's sister, but I doubt it will be long. I hope we didn't waste our precious gas money driving here because this isn't looking good."

"Maybe he has all these guards because elections are next week and his family's life was actually threatened," I offered as Mark parked the car.

"These guys look programmed," Mark told me, confident in his assessment. "In which case I know how to handle them, so you just sit tight. They'll be interested in what I'm doing, and will only watch you in the car from a distance. You'll be perfectly safe as long as you stay right here."

I watched as guns pointed toward Mark when he emerged from the car and strode towards the elaborate entrance with the packet in hand. It was only a moment before I saw him walking through the green glass catwalk that connected the entrance building to Perot's headquarters. A guard walked across the roof directly above him, keeping his weapon trained on Mark through the glass ceiling until he disappeared from my view into the headquarters.

I felt eyes on me while I waited, and noted several guards across the perfectly manicured landscape watching my every move just as Mark predicted. This place looked more like Emerald City in the *Wizard of Oz* movie than it did campaign headquarters for Ross Perot. With armed guards robotically marching everywhere, I began to wonder just who Ross Perot really was and if his underground was another catch net for mind control survivors rather than an escape.

I wasn't alone with my thoughts long. Mark soon emerged from the building, smiled as he casually saluted the guards at the door, and got back in the car. "Done," he said, starting the car and backing it out of the parking space in seemingly one movement. "They have our information and we're out of here."

"What happened?" I was curious.

"I'll tell you," he said, saluting the gate guards as we left the premises, "as soon as we are out of range of the monitors." He pulled off his necktie, tossing it in the back seat. After a few more minutes, he began. "Those guys appear to be Special Forces[2], which made it easy for me to deal with them. I spoke their language and knew how to avoid setting off their alarms. Still, I was scanned and screened on the elevator while I rode it up to Perot's office. When the doors opened, there were a dozen machine guns pointing at me. I said, 'at ease' and walked across the room to Perot's secretary, who took the information. Apparently, she was expecting me, and thanked me by name for the packet. When she didn't mention a meeting, I didn't either. I just got back on the elevator and left."

"What do you think Perot will do with the information?"

"Well, he obviously already knows about mind control," Mark said. "I'm betting we don't ever hear from him or Karyn's Underground again."

We didn’t. But then, we weren’t waiting for a response. We were too busy struggling to survive to ensure Kelly’s safety. My persistent attempts to see Kelly were continuously met by locked doors. I knew that Commissioner Grunow, despite his threats to keep me from Kelly, was not the keeper of the keys. This was much bigger than he.

November 1st, Mark and I packed up our documents and paperwork and drove to Houston for our presentation at the National Cult Intervention Network seminar for law enforcement. Also presenting information that intermeshed with ours was the National Crime Commission Information Clearing House for Police, and Greg Reid’s Youthfire.

A survivor of incest and occultism himself, Greg Reid had cause to be aware of mind control ops that transported our nation’s missing blonde haired blue-eyed children over the Mexican border and on to various Arab destinations[3]. Every border guard, Customs official, and police officer in attendance was aware of this mind control ring. Photos of Columbian and Saudi private jets full of traumatized children were in abundance, yet “National Security” prevented them from bringing the perpetrators to justice.

Greg Reid's highly structured and documented efforts featured his search for abductee Johnny Gosch, as well as his success in freeing a group of small children from a holding pen near the border- only to be rebuked with “National Security.” Everyone agreed that “National Security” was threatening the security of our nation and its children, and this seminar was intended to discover why. By sharing information, the problem was clarified and solutions formulated.

While speakers in accordance with standard law enforcement tactics presented “just the facts,” it was the discussions between presentations that furthered understanding. The very concept of pedophilia was as difficult to grasp for hardened law enforcement officials as it is for the average person, despite the fact that they saw the widespread devastation. Having grown up in an environment saturated with pedophiles, and having been around high-level politicians and pedophiles such as George Bush, I shared my insight into their justifications.

Multi-generational sexual child abuse is such a common cause of the proliferation of pedophilia that Hitler/Himmler research focused on this genetic trait for mind control purposes. While I personally could not relate to the idea of sex with a child, I had parents and brothers and sisters who did. I still believe that George Bush revealed today's causation of the rapid rise in pedophilia through justifications I heard him state. The rape of a child renders them compliant and receptive to being led without question. This, Bush claims, would cause them to intellectually evolve at a rate rapid enough to "bring them up to speed" to grasp the artificial intelligence emanating from DARPA. He believed that this generation conditioned with photographic memory through abuse was necessary for a future he foresaw controlled by technology.

Since sexual abuse enhanced photographic memory while decreasing critical analysis and free thought, there would ultimately be no free will soul expression controlling behavior. In which case, social engineering was underway to create apathy while stifling spiritual evolution. Nevertheless, to short sighted flat thinking individuals such as Bush, spiritual evolution was not a consideration anyway. Instead, controlling behavior in a population diminished by global genocide of 'undesirables' would result in Hitler's 'superior race' surviving to claim the earth. Perceptual justifications such as these that were discussed at the Bohemian Grove certainly did not provide me with the complete big picture. It did, however, provide a view beyond the stereotyped child molester in a trench coat that helped in understanding the vast crimes and cover-ups being discussed at this seminar in Houston.

"Why do you believe the New World Order elite are *un*concerned with humanity's spiritual evolution when Catholic Jesuits are clearly involved?" A weasely-looking man in a black trench coat posed the question to me between speakers. He claimed to be a spy associated with Mexico's former President dela Madrid. Mark and I were scheduled to speak next, as soon as this lunch break concluded. Mark watched this uninvited guest closely, as did every other cop and Fed in the room, from the podium while he arranged his documents before speaking.

"Just like good people don't *think* to look for the kind of criminal activity being discussed here today, the powers-that-be cannot *think* to consider the human spirit," I answered. "They are following a road map established by a computer, and spirituality is not part of its programming."

He smiled and took a drink of his coke, his black eyes snapping. "But we are talking about Jesuits, not New World Order elite. Jesuits are Catholic monks who live only in the spirit."

"You said yourself that the Jesuits are involved with the New World Order elite in your initial question," I reminded him. "And the New World Order is computer driven. Rather than listen to church rhetoric, research for yourself to learn that Jesuits, the Intelligence arm of the Vatican, are the same ones who supported Hitler. There is a faction of Catholics dedicated to furthering the church's political agenda that believes they will be the one world church in the New World Order. Clearly that is not about spirituality. Things are seldom so black and white."

He chuckled, his snapping black eyes throwing sparks of genuine laughter while he slapped his knee. "That's exactly what dela Madrid told me!"

"Did he tell you why he masquerades as a lizard as well?" I said, doubting his sincerity.

"He's no more a lizard than he was a President," he said, smiling. "It's all an illusion." Quinde reached into the pocket of his trench coat to pull out his wallet. All eyes were instinctively on him, making sure he didn't pull a weapon. Everyone was armed at this seminar. Even Mark, who knew I was capable of handling Quinde regardless of his agenda, stood poised for an instant. Thumbing through a stack of various business cards tall enough to match any occasion, he chose one and handed it to me.

"Herbert Quinde," he said, like I was supposed to believe it. "Miguel dela Madrid sent me in to talk with you."

The details he provided regarding dela Madrid indicated to me that either he knew him well or was actually sent in by him as he claimed. He voiced sexual details that only dela Madrid and I would know, and then said; “he knows you wouldn’t *think* to say anything bad or personal about him.” He attempted to lock in his message with keys to my old programming that had long since been deprogrammed and diffused.

Unaffected and eager to present the facts as previously planned, I joined Mark near the podium. Everyone took a seat, pulled out their notepads and pens, and listened attentively while Mark spoke. He armed them with specifics on how to identify and handle mind controlled drug curriers, how mind control creates seemingly superhuman strength that knows no bounds, and why ‘national security’ was hindering their efforts to prosecute.

When Mark finished speaking, I provided background on how I was conditioned for MK Ultra to work on a White House/Pentagon level during the Reagan-Bush Administration. By understanding my experience, they gained insight into the components of mind control, as well as who at the political top was sanctioning this criminal activity. They already were acutely aware of Bill Clinton’s cocaine operations, and knew that this so-called ‘election’ was only an illusion of change. Their point of reference for understanding the details Mark and I presented allowed for advanced discussions that effectively armed them for more than a ‘war on drugs.’

In addition to the information presented on mind control and CIA drug ops, I explained how I had been used for the groundwork of NAFTA. Quinde’s mouth dropped when I revealed details regarding dela Madrid that he believed he had silenced, and I watched his paradigm shift when he realized I had truly been deprogrammed. Many New World Order secrets and personal reputations were staked on the belief that I could not be deprogrammed to remember that which I was supposed to forget, and the reverberations from my apparent recovery unnerved many MK Ultra perpetrators. In addition to realizing their secrets were no longer safe, many gained an expanded view of their Need-to-Know that caused them to consider the strength of the human spirit and re-evaluate their goals. Obviously artificial intelligence from DARPA and Sandia Laboratory, despite the vast intellect and technology involved, was lacking a human element. Those at the seminar who risked their lives every day on the front lines of the so-called ‘war on drugs’ were strengthened in their resolve after gaining a clearer view.

Most important to me personally, was knowing that Kelly was safer for our efforts. Law enforcement in attendance from Louisiana would be watching Wayne Cox, and support from various police organizations nationwide concerned for the welfare of children would only prove helpful. The flow of America’s children across the border to New World Order destinations was understood, and slowed with exposure. Shining the light of truth on secret activities always forces change. And positive change through public awareness remains the ultimate justice.

After the seminar on the night of elections, Mark and I watched the foreseen results on our motel tv while Clinton was ushered in as President. Bush’s acknowledgement of his so-called defeat was brief, yet revealing to those with eyes to see and ears to hear truth. “I’m going hunting early this year,” he announced.

Chapter 29
SODOM AND GOMORRAH

An abrupt knock on the door of our hotel room woke us up early the next morning. “Open up!” A voice shouted. “Sheriff’s Department!”

Mark relaxed and shoved his pistol back under his pillow, grabbed a robe and opened the door.

“You’re going to get yourself killed doing that shit,” he told Deputy Dave. Dave Rossi, who had hosted the NCIN conference, smiled.

“I needed to catch you before you left town,” he said. “I’ve got to talk to you. What you and Cathy know needs to be heard in a community in Northern California where I’m working on a case. It involves mind control, and the whole town is devastated. My phones are monitored, so I don’t want to talk about this by phone.”

“We’ll meet you in the coffee shop in twenty minutes,” Mark told him, closing the door.

“Twenty minutes?” I flung the covers from Mark’s side of the bed inviting him back in. “I suppose that’s enough time.”

“No it’s not,” Mark argued playfully. “We need to be dressed, packed, and out of here by then. And I’ve got to take a shower and wake up.”

I jumped out of bed and ran for the shower ahead of him. “Join me if you want to,” I called.

Twenty minutes later we were downstairs, our hair still damp, tossing our bags in the car. Deputy Dave walked up, balancing three large coffees and a sack of donuts.

“Let’s talk right here,” he suggested. “Everybody in the coffee shop knows me. This is important.” We took the coffee and leaned against the car, enjoying the morning sun.
Deputy Dave reached in his pocket and produced a photograph of children and their parents picketing outside of the Marin County Daycare Board. Their signs read, “Why does the FBI protect Aquino?”

“Where is Marin County?” I asked. My geography was still atrocious.

“Near the Presidio[1],” Deputy Dave began. Aquino was stationed at the Presidio army base, and by 1987 had been under criminal investigation for sexually abusing children in the daycare. The Presidio Daycare scandal was infamous, and even the appeals judge refused to esponge Aquino’s criminal child abuse record[2]. “Aquino’s on the Marin County Daycare Board.”

“How can Marin County justify having a suspected satanic child molester on their board?” I was astounded.

“Obviously the children in the area are wondering the same thing,” Deputy Dave answered. “The whole town is in a daze. Satanism, child molestation, missing children, mind control, injustice through the courts. I’m telling you, these people need help just to cope with the PTSD. You could give them coping skills, Mark. And the information you have could clarify *why* cover-up is so prevalent and *why* Aquino is allowed on their Daycare Board. Understanding might help them survive and solve their nightmare.”

“I’m told Aquino owns the building that houses the Marin County Daycare Board,” Mark injected.

“The Presidio is pretty close to the Grove[3],” I said, the picture becoming even clearer from my perspective.

“So are Petaluma and Santa Rosa where these children in the photo are from,” Deputy Dave said. “The case I’m working on involves mind control of a child who claims Aquino abused her. She has stun gun prod marks and claims to have been sexually assaulted at Bohemian Grove. And that’s just the beginning. Another mother, Denise Beaumont, has a lawsuit before the Santa Cruz Grand Jury regarding molestation of her daughter and government cover-up. Her case includes a massive letter writing campaign reaching out to many of the same people in DC that you did, from Louis Sullivan at the Department of Human Services to the White House.”

I thought a moment. “The vicinity around the Grove would feel safer to the attending Dignitaries with the people traumatized and controlled.”

“ I talked with Denise this morning, and she said that she would gladly devote her time and resources to setting up your speaking engagement if you will agree to it. What do you think?”

Mark thought about it a moment. “We’re not public speakers, nor are we authorities.”

“No one knows it all, Mark,” Deputy Dave told him. “But between you and Cathy, you know more than most.”

“I’m not a therapist. Offering recovery from PTSD would be practicing without a license.”

“The fact that you obviously helped Cathy reclaim her mind is widely known. Mental health professionals don’t even know what ritual abuse is, let alone mind control and recovery from it. People respect your insight. I’m not asking you to be a therapist; I’m just asking you to share what you know. If you were on the front lines of a war and saw your buddy bleeding, you’d help stop the flow of blood without consideration to whether or not you had a medical license. This is no different. If you saw what I’ve seen in that community, you wouldn’t even give it a second thought before helping. These people are devastated.”

Mark and I exchanged looks, communicating a decision that didn't need words. "OK. When we talk on the phone, we'll talk around this subject and mislead anyone who may be listening through phone taps. Cathy and I are already broke financially, so someone will need to cover our expenses."

"That will be arranged. There is a local TV news reporter who is active on this case. I'll put her in touch with you. Her name is Carol Frank."

We finished our coffee, and thanked Deputy Dave for hosting us in Houston. "Thank *you*, for speaking. I know my life has changed, and the way everyone else is talking, their lives changed, too. Kelly's picture is on the wall of my office where it will stay as long as it takes to secure her freedom."

Mark and I got in the car to begin our long drive back to Tennessee. "A whole community devastated?" Mark said to himself as though grasping the size of the problem.

"I thought the whole world was like the environment I came out of," I said, "until you came along and rescued Kelly and me from it."

"So why drag you back into it?"

"You're not dragging me, we're doing this together by choice. Big difference. These people should know they are being heard and understood.

That is their first step toward hope, and people need hope to live. How well I know!" I smiled.

"There are a lot of people pinning their hopes on this so-called change of Administration," Mark said.

"They need to base their hope on truth, not illusion."

"Hope, Arkansas produced an illusion," Mark smiled at the irony. "The media has made a big deal out of the fact that Bill Clinton is from Hope,

Arkansas."

"This 'appearance of change' was most likely planned prior to when I first heard about it in 1984[4]. It was hard enough for me to grasp the concept of Clinton being a governor since I perceived him as a drug lord. Now he's President? I know for a fact that Hillary wears the pants in their relationship, and their relationship is more like business partners than husband and wife. I don't believe she'll take a back seat to him even for the public eye. She'll redefine the role of 'First Lady'."

"She's not a lady anyway," Mark said. "She's more man than he is."

I laughed. "Homosexuality will undoubtedly rise in this Administration. I don't know how they can hide their sexual preferences from the public eye."

"The media can spin any illusion they want to," Mark reminded me. "Besides, they have a child. They must at least be bisexual."

"Just because my sexual experience was with Hillary doesn't mean that's all there is to her," I agreed.

"And homosexual males don't engage in the kind of oral sex Bill did with you, either," Mark furthered his point. "So why do you say homosexuality will rise during their Administration[5]?"

"Because they both openly support it," I said having witnessed/experienced both of them engaged in homosexual activity[6].

"You correctly predicted the rise of heroin while Bush was in office," he said.

"And people still don't think to ask why his Yale Skull and Bones fraternity name is 'Poppy.' Since Clinton is more heavily involved in cocaine ops than he is Bush's heroin ops[7], the price of coke and crack will probably drop in this country while availability soars. "

Mark agreed. “The Presidency switched parties all right, from a heroin party to a coke party with all the same players involved.”

“Except for the kids Bush used and abused,” I said. “Neither Hillary nor Bill believe in pedophilia. From my point of view, that is a major difference between the Bushes and Clintons. Other than that, they’re playing the same DARPA-Sandia Labs computer game.”

I reflected on my experience at Swiss Villa that I had deprogrammed and written out in detail. In typical criminal fashion, Bush intended to covertly videotape Clinton having sex with a child as blackmail backup. Despite the friendship and New World Order goals they shared, they had their differences. The biggest difference I had cause to witness between the Bushes and Clintons was that neither Bill nor Hillary believed in sexually abusing children. Bush had delivered his most convincing ‘justification’ speech while offering to share Kelly with Bill, anchoring it to Clinton’s Order of the Rose allegiances. The idea of compromising him through blackmail had offended Clinton, yet he was obviously disgusted with Bush for attempting to sell him on “evolutionary justifications” as to why he should be sexually active with Chelsea, if not Kelly. This conflict between the two ran much deeper than sexual preference. Where Bush adhered to pedophilia as the means to an “evolutionary” end, the Clinton’s voiced belief in genetic engineering and cloning as the means to the same end.

“The conflict of sexual interest between the Bushes and Clintons doesn’t preclude the fact that they share the same end to their means,” I commented. “I wonder if Clinton’s perception of genetic engineering and cloning over sexual abuse and mind control is simply the next step in DARPA’s generated plan. Neither route to so-called ‘evolution’ deals with the strength of the human spirit.”

“When people learn what is behind aliens, cloning, and mind control, they’ll know what on earth is going on,” Mark said. “With truth comes understanding, hope and solutions. One thing is for sure; this Administration will continue to divert people’s attention as far away from that reality as humanly possible. It’s still up to the people to do their due diligence and embrace the truth in order for necessary changes to occur.”

“Our responsibilities just expanded,” I added. “This next speaking engagement should result in a lot of good people waking up to reality, finding their inner strength, and reverberating the message. I just hope change can come in time to help Kelly.”

We rode in silence.

When we arrived back in Nashville, Kelly’s circumstances hadn’t changed. Vanderbilt was still battling its allegiances between the DIA and the welfare of the children in the court system. Neiswinder had officially turned in his resignation, Mitchell was nowhere to be found, Nurcum refused to speak to us, and my attorney didn’t know anything about Kelly’s well being.

Mark’s and my letter writing campaign had yet to overtly impact Kelly’s case, although it had put us in touch with hundreds of similar cases across the nation. This resulted in significant networking with mental health and law enforcement professionals, investigative media personnel, and numerous organizations that were springing up all over the country. While mainstream media remained silent on the issue of ritual abuse and mind control, the people were abuzz with information sharing.

Our upcoming speaking engagement in Santa Rosa, California put us in touch with numerous concerned professionals and parents. As our public profile increased, efforts to contain us rose proportionately. After the NCIN conference in Houston, Mark and I were networked with the so-called Missing Children’s Foundation and it’s founder Roy Stephens. Mark quickly discovered Stephen’s association with attorney Tim Stone and quickly sidestepped all connections[8]. Tim Stone had been attorney for Jim Jones of the Jonestown massacres where CIA mind control and cover-up prevailed. Mark’s ability to navigate us through CIA containment experts in these precarious times strengthened his public image to the point where he was considered a measuring stick indicator of who was honest and who was corrupt. Mark did not appreciate his fast growing reputation since he preferred a low profile. At the same time, I was excited at the prospects of the public choosing a man of integrity, justice, peace, and love to lead them from the dark.

On a personal level, my attorney continued to blindly accept “legal” directions in Kelly’s case as they unfolded. She informed me, “Nashville’s new mayor, Phil Bredeson, organized a new child welfare oversight group called A.C.C.T. They are meeting tomorrow to discuss Kelly’s case and we need to be there.”

At least I would be able to find out something about Kelly. I had not been permitted to see her nor speak with her since the harmonic incident at Vanderbilt. This was the longest, by far, that I had ever been forced apart from her with no communication and my heart ached desperately to ensure her well-being.

The plan of care drawn up by A.C.C.T. was encouraging. On paper it at least appeared as though their focus was on Kelly and that their intentions to reunite Kelly and me were genuine. Placement for Kelly was being actively pursued in an effort to free her from Vanderbilt Psychiatric. After Kelly reported CIA drug ops to Dr. William Mitchell, she was reportedly subjected to high tech means of affecting her brain activity in an effort to “erase her memory entirely.” According to A.C.C.T.’s reports, this resulted in Kelly’s above average intelligence to plummet to what they termed “learning disabled[9].” I was devastated by the news. Still, I was forbidden to see or speak with my daughter.

“If you continue to hopelessly grieve, “ Mark advised, “you won’t be helping Kelly. You’ve got to turn negatives into positives in order to relentlessly persist and give voice to Kelly’s needs. I suggest you find a way to turn your grief into motivation, and let your love for her carry you forward for her sake.”

Mark’s wisdom pulled me through my depression, and I relied on my strength of spirit to renew my energy and hopes. This battle wasn’t over, and like I had told Kelly, “Its not over ‘til we win.”

My renewed strength never faltered when I met with my attorney the next week and she told me, “You are supposed to be paying child support. The cost of Kelly’s court case and therapy is in the millions of dollars, and you are responsible for paying it or you face jail time.”

“Pay it with what?” I asked. Mark and I barely had enough money for gas to drive to her office to be told that. “And why should I have to pay for being separated from my daughter while she is abused by the justice and mental health systems? This is absurd.”

“Absurd or not, it is a court order.”

I went upstairs to see Scott Rosenburg. “I’m the one the court has ordered to prosecute you for the money, and I refuse to do it. It’s against the law. The judge is in violation of several laws by ordering me to it. Don’t worry about this,” he assured me. “I know you have your hands full with Kelly’s dire circumstances right now. It will be months before this issue is addressed in court, and I already have my paperwork in order to stop this nonsense. It is obvious to me and others concerned with this case that someone high up in politics wants to silence you and Kelly, and anyone who supports you.”

January 25, 1993 a fire broke out in the Stahlman Building one floor beneath Rosenburg’s office. Arson was suspected[10]. Although files were destroyed, Rosenburg was uninjured. Around the same time, he also narrowly escaped serious injury in a severe automobile accident involving his family. Circumstances were suspicious. Rosenburg’s determination to positively impact Kelly’s case only rose.

February 3, 1993, Mark’s article “Where Have All the Children Gone” was printed in *The Outpost of Freedom* and spread across the nation the same day we were to speak in Santa Rosa, California. When we disembarked from our airplane in San Francisco, an unlikely, disheveled character holding a sign with our names on it greeted us, “Welcome to Sodom and Gomorrah.”

Chapter 30
MARIN COUNTY, CALIFORNIA

“Carol Frank sent me,” the wide-eyed young man said as we tossed our luggage in the trunk of his car. “I’ll be driving you to Petaluma, and am grateful for the opportunity to talk with you on the way.”

He pulled into San Francisco’s bumper-to-bumper traffic. “The Petaluma Parks and Recreation Building is reserved and set up for your speaking engagement tonight. Since residents from Santa Rosa are also coming in to hear you, we placed loud speakers outside for those who can’t get in the building. You are needed here, and I’m proud to be the first to thank you for traveling all this way to help our community.” He blinked his tears away. “My parents sexually abused me, my Catholic church ritually abused me, and I don’t remember what happened to me in Viet Nam. Yet it’s not for me that I’m so grateful you’re here. It’s for the children. There is still hope for them.”

“We have a hotel room reserved for you that adjoins Dave Rossi’s room,” he continued. “He arrived a few hours ago. I can take you straight to your room, or we can stop by Carol’s apartment first. She wants to talk with you before the event begins.”

Carol Frank’s apartment was in an old building in a wealthy residential area of Petaluma. The young, blonde haired blue-eyed beauty welcomed us warmly. Carol had just returned home from work and was still dressed in her TV news attire. Munching on a carrot stick, she offered us a cup of tea.

“I first learned about Aquino from a concerned mother in Santa Rosa who called the television station with one of the most horrific stories I’ve ever heard. You’ll meet her. Her name is Denise Beaumont and she arranged most everything for this event. Anyway, I began investigating and found out how widespread pedophilia and satanism actually are! It’s not limited to poor hill folk or a lone stranger on a playground like I thought; the richest, most influential people are involved. We even have a judge here in Marin County that is rumored to be a satanist! The more I looked, the more I learned that what I really didn’t want to believe was real.” Carol’s blue eyes widened as she leaned forward to whisper, “I found out its happening right here in my own back yard! My father, who is Air Force Intelligence, lives around the corner. When I told him what I discovered, he advised me to forget about it!”

Carol was obviously suffering from PTSD, as was the fellow she had sent to pick us up from the airport. Mark was providing both of them with coping skills as I excused myself to use the bathroom. As I walked through Carol’s apartment, I couldn’t help noticing that her “own backyard” was a public graveyard. I shuddered.

When we arrived at our hotel room later that afternoon, Mark told me he had noticed the graveyard, too. “No matter how you look at it, that is gruesome,” he said. “It’s not as bad as having learned about her father working for the Air Force Intel, though. We had best use extreme caution while we’re here.”

I slipped out of my travel clothes to shower while Mark unpacked our bag to retrieve the clothes we would wear for speaking that evening. There was a knock at the door, and I grabbed a towel and ran for the bathroom as Deputy Dave identified himself.

“Don’t shoot!” he hollered. “It’s me!”

“Who’s ‘me’?” Mark hollered back, as if he didn’t know.

“You’re Mark!” Deputy Dave laughed. “Unlock the door between our rooms from your side, and I’ll come in through there”

“You’re the cop, you pick the lock,” Mark said, unlocking the door and swinging it open.

“They only taught us to bust doors down.” Deputy Dave walked in, greeting Mark warmly. “Let’s leave the door open between us. I’ve been tipped we’re going to have some trouble.”

Mark said, “I hate trouble. But I love readjusting trouble makers.”

We left for the Community Center as soon as we were dressed. People were already walking towards the Center in droves, every one of them appearing dazed and traumatized. “From the look in the eyes of the people, this looks like a war zone,” Mark commented.

“Or Haiti,” I said. To me, Marin County was reminiscent of Haiti[1] during Baby Doc’s reign with its slow, unblinking residents.

“You see why I wanted you to come here,” Deputy Dave solemnly agreed.

We found our way to the speaking podium, nodding a greeting towards the people already assembled. As we spread out our documents and information resources for anyone wanting copies, a young disheveled mother approached us. “I’m Denise Beaumont,” she said warmly embracing us. “Thank you for coming. These people are my friends and neighbors, and we desperately need help. I know you hold a key piece of this puzzle that could empower us to actually make a difference for the sake of the children. We’ve just been running in circles up until now, not knowing which way to turn.”

While Denise made last minute microphone adjustments and briefly spoke to the gathering crowd, Mark and I stepped outside to talk. We found ourselves in a crowd that was even larger than the one inside. “This community is reminiscent of the one I grew up in!” I exclaimed. “It seems everyone is affected[2].”

A tall, handsome young father holding his infant son strode up to us. “I can’t stay,” he announced, looking over his shoulder. “But I had come by here tonight to thank you for helping the rest of these people. They’re good people who don’t deserve what is happening. Neither does my son.” Tears silently poured down his rugged cheeks. “Maybe you can help them avoid what is happening to me right now. The court just ordered me to turn custody of my son over to my ex wife. ‘National security’ was invoked in the judge’s chambers. I couldn’t even testify that my ex is a practicing satanist, her boyfriend is CIA, or that I caught her fondling *my son*,” he hugged the beautiful, sleeping baby closer. “I refuse to let her abuse him any more. No one should have to leave their home, their job, and everything they know to disappear into an underground just to keep their child from being abused. Maybe by raising awareness you can prevent others from having to do what I’m doing tonight.” With his child clinging to him in a tight hug, Peter Tscherneff[3] turned and disappeared into the night.

Absolutely determined and motivated to make a necessary impact on Marin County, Mark and I went back into the building. Mark shared his knowledge and wisdom with compassion, and I watched as truth opened eyes to awaken people en masse. They learned the causation and the cure to trauma based mind control, and how to survive CIA cover-up.

When it was my turn to speak, the zombie-like appearance of the people was already lifting. I began sharing what I knew from behind the scenes of the New World Order regarding MK Ultra, including how Lt. Col. Michael Aquino’s so-called “power of satan” was actually a scientific formula involving a stun gun. I explained how compartmentalized memory is the mind’s sane defense to trauma too horrible to comprehend and how writing out memory changes the emotionally incomprehensible to logically comprehensible. The truth that set me free could free others from fear since people fear most what they don’t know. Armed with truth, Marin County could effectively take a stand for their children’s sake, my child’s sake, and the sake of humanity as a whole.

By the time we left the Petaluma Parks and Recreation Center, the people of Marin County were abuzz with information sharing and plans. The same people who had appeared traumatically dazed were now awake, aware, and motivated. While Deputy Dave helped us pack up the car to drive back to our hotel rooms, Mark took me aside to tell me about a man who had approached him while I was speaking.

“He flashed his Identifications of CIA/DIA/NSA[4] and asked to speak with me outside. He told me, ‘I’m here to deliver a message. I don’t know you, but I am aware of people who do know you that are betting you will succeed in getting the word out publicly on mind control.’ When I told him that National Security has already been invoked on this case, he said, ‘they always do that. Just don’t give law enforcement any cause to come after you or contain you. Never use a courtroom as a forum. There are a lot of people behind the scenes who applaud you for what you’re doing and are keeping a close eye on everything. Mind control is much bigger than most people could imagine.’ We exchanged other pertinent facts, then he vanished into the night.”

“That was kind of him to share support and encouragement like that,” I said, feeling the gravity of our circumstances.

Physically exhausted and emotionally drained, Mark and I rode in silence while Deputy Dave talked excitedly as he drove us back to our hotel. “You accomplished more with this community than I dreamed you could, and my hopes and expectations were high,” he said. “It looks to me that this community is being socially engineered and controlled to ignore the atrocities emanating from Bohemian Grove and through Aquino and the Presidio. Now that the people know they can’t count on their self-appointed so-called ‘elected’ official for help and change, they can think to refuse to follow them.”

“When people lead, leaders follow,” I commented as I so often did.

When we got back to our hotel room, our door was open. Mark and Deputy Dave immediately drew their weapons, working in synchronization to locate the intruder. Right behind Mark was always the safest place for me, and I followed him until both hotel rooms were cleared. Mark motioned for me to stay put on the bed while he followed Deputy Dave who was effortlessly climbing out the window. Several minutes later, they returned, discussing the CIA intruder who they learned fled his room two doors down after ransacking ours. Assuming our room was bugged, Deputy Dave clicked on the TV while he and Mark talked. Ironically, a documentary depicting Barry Seal's CIA drug running was airing, and was right at the point where his fate was sealed for murder in Arkansas

A sudden knock on the door prompted Mark and Deputy Dave to draw their guns again and assume defensive positions. It was William Jasper of the John Birch society.

"I just stopped by to give you a copy of my book *Global Tyranny Step by Step*[5] since it ties in with what you are saying." William Jasper continued, "And to thank you for having the fortitude to speak out on mind control."

"Come in," Mark said, gesturing him in.

"Everybody else is," Deputy Dave muttered under his breath as he shoved his weapon into his holster.

William Jasper walked in. "I can see how you've survived," he commented while Mark put his gun up, too.

Before we could all sit down, there was another knock on the door. Deputy Dave rolled his eyes, sighed, and drew his weapon again while Mark did likewise and answered the door. A few locals asked if they could come in for a minute.

"We won't stay. God knows you've done so much already." A tall gentleman said. Behind him, we saw Carol Frank among the group filing into our room. "I guess you know Carol," he kept talking nervously, "since she's covering your story for local TV news."

"I realize that you don't mean 'covering it' as in 'cover-up' like most TV news does," I smiled, attempting to lighten the mood with literal interpretation.

"Oh, Carol can't talk about my case on TV," he quickly answered. "If she could, I would get my daughter back. But Aquino's involved and Carol isn't allowed to talk about the Presidio or mind control. Or satanism. A Catholic priest abused my girl, you know. It all seems connected somehow."

I knew from my own experience how comforting it is just to have someone understand and care, and I found my energy rise to meet his need while Mark and Carol talked.

Another knock at the door interrupted us. "How did so many people find out where we were?" Deputy Dave complained as he drew his gun again.

"We followed you," the tall man answered matter-of-factly. Somehow it amused me since I wasn't under any illusions of safety just because Deputy Dave was with us.

"There's no place to run and no place to hide," I quipped. "Or at least so I've been told."

Five distraught women entered the room, somewhat unnerved by the arsenal displayed. "Why the guns?" one asked.

"We had an intruder and…" Deputy Dave began.

"Call the police!" another woman squealed, causing Deputy Dave to roll his eyes again. After all, he was dressed in full uniform.

"You can stay at my place," Carol kindly offered as though that would be safer. "I'll be driving you to the airport anyway after tomorrow's interview."

"What interview?" Mark asked.

"A friend of mine is flying in from LA," she explained. "He works with *Prime Time, 20-20*, and *Sixty Minutes*. When he learned that the local library would be stocking videotapes of your presentation tonight since it's so important to the community, that cinched it. He's on his way. He'll be here at 10AM, which will give you nearly four hours with him before we have to drive to the airport."

Mark and I exchanged looks, agreement passing between us. “Do you believe it will actually help spread the word on mind control?”

“Oh, yes,” Carol responded enthusiastically. “People who couldn’t see you tonight or were stuck outside are counting on the library to provide the tapes like they promised. Plus the library is offering copies of your documents and resources as well. They know the CIA is infamous for confiscating materials from libraries and tracking who reads what, so they are duplicating everything. Our library here is on the side of the people.”

“They are in my county, too,” William Jasper chimed in. “We’ll network with your library for copies. The people have grown weary of big government intervention, and the libraries are comprised of people just like us who refuse to tolerate it anymore.”

Mark elaborated on his question, “I was actually referring to tomorrow’s interview. Do you believe this reporter can actually get past Jack Valenti and national security media censorship to broadcast the interviews?”

“He fully intends to,” Carol said. “It may take awhile, but in the meantime the information will be right there for other reporters to educate themselves with. That way, when the time is right, they will be poised and ready to get the word out. It frees them to reveal other pertinent stories as well.”

“Like CIA cocaine ops?” someone asked. “That’s what my daughter was programmed for.”

Despite being tired from our long day, we talked on into the night offering hope and help to the desperate people who filled our room.

After only a couple hours of sleep, Mark and I arrived at our appointed rendezvous for our interview in a wealthy residential neighborhood. Intrusive black helicopters dotted the sky, circling the house for the next four hours while Mark and I answered questions for the well-informed reporter. “We can still use this footage,” he assured us, “despite the helicopter noise. Everyone is pretty much onto that form of harassment anyway, so it will only lend more credibility to your story.”

When we were through, the reporter asked me to step outside where it was a bit cooler away from the hot lights of the camera. Tears slid down his cheeks as he said, “I promise you your story will be told, but we have to overcome censorship first. So many people are affected by mind control these days that it shouldn’t be long until we penetrate media blackout. Until censorship is overcome, though, you can rest assured I’ll be doing all I can to publicly provide a point of reference for understanding this information when it is released.”

He blew his nose and wiped his eyes. “I know a lot of other reporters who are dedicated to this cause. They’ve covered numerous stories on satanism, missing children, corrupt judges, and CIA cocaine operations only to have them censored before they could be aired. We have archives of pertinent information to which these tapes we made today will undoubtedly be added. At least until censorship is overcome these videos will be educating other reporters.” He gestured toward the annoying helicopters still circling. “And we’re all tired of this nonsense!”

“I’m sorry for what has been done to you,” he told me with compassion, “and I assure you all men aren’t like your abusers. Most of us are more like Mark, although I must admit he is one of the most phenomenal human beings I have ever met. I’m glad he came along in your life and rescued you and your daughter. Not only for you, but for the thousands of others like you.” He was sobbing now. “Like I said, I promise you, your story will be told. It must be told or…” A helicopter circling especially close dipped down, drowning out his words and his sobs.

Mark walked up and informed me that two women who had just arrived needed to speak with both of us. After a warm hug, I left the reporter’s side and followed Mark back into the house. Both women were mothers of children caught up in mind control cover-up, one of which paralleled Kelly’s and my case. She, too, had volumes of documents and evidences whereby it was inexcusable that justice had not prevailed. The other mother conveyed a story that touched me so deeply it undoubtedly will continue to motivate me with reverberating passion forever.

This mother was very weak from the final stages of cancer and chemotherapy, and tears slid down her pale gray cheeks as she told me her story. When she reported sexual abuse of her three daughters, the local court system took custody of them. The children appeared dissociative identity disordered from their ordeal, yet were reportedly denied therapy and placed in Foster care "since the mother was dying anyway." When she finally was granted brief visitation with her precious daughters, they looked dazed and robotic with no memory of her or their sexual abuse. Mind control was apparent to this mother, and she struggled to give voice to their plight to no avail. She explained how love and concern for her children had kept her alive far longer than her doctors thought possible. She embraced me and said, "Now I can die in peace knowing that you are out there talking, raising awareness with the same passion for justice and love for children that I have. Thank you. Please keep talking. Please remember my daughters."

Carol Frank arrived to drive us to the airport with no time to spare. She sped through San Francisco rush hour traffic, only to have her car quit on the Golden Gate Bridge. We later learned that her gas tank had been sabotaged with sugar, and there was no fixing her vehicle. As cars whizzed past us, she miraculously coasted onto an exit ramp that sloped downhill. Fortunately for us, a taxicab seemingly appeared from nowhere and picked us up. We barely caught our flight, and the airplane's doors closed behind us. As Mark and I settled into our seats, each of us was acutely aware that we had just survived the unsurvivable once again. It seemed only moments ago when we were greeted with "Welcome to Sodom and Gomorrah." We left Marin County feeling ab*soul*utely committed with a purpose bigger than life to bringing the reality of mind control to light… for the children's sake.

Chapter 31
BEHIND YOUR EYES

My arms ached to hold my daughter, and my heart beat in rhythm to my sobs. Upon returning from Marin, I learned that Kelly had been transferred to the farthest point in the state of Tennessee without my knowing. “At least she is free of Vanderbilt Psychiatric Hospital and Dr. Mitchell,” Mark comforted me. “Charter Lakeside in Memphis is affiliated with the same chain of Charter Psychiatric Hospitals that Charter North in Alaska is. This one is even accredited with treating dissociative identity disordered children.”

Still, I reflected on how the mother in Santa Rosa dying of cancer found her daughters programmed and amnesic once she was finally granted visitation. I wondered if Kelly could think to remember me after her atrocious ordeal at Vanderbilt that rendered her “learning disabled.” It furiously frustrated me that I was forbidden visitation and was left to rely solely on the telepathic connection we shared to assess her condition. I sensed that our connection was intact and that she shared my frustration. Verbal confirmation of our telepathic sense would be as comforting to me as I was sure it would be to Kelly, though.

“We’ll go into town tomorrow to do all we possibly can toward reestablishing visitation,” Mark assured me. “Perhaps Edith Hammons can at least find out her condition through the Organized Victims of Violent Crimes.”

The next day, after exhausting every possible means of gaining visitation, we stopped our Post Office Box to collect our mail. Then we dashed over to the Copy Shop to see Billy.

“A fax just came in for you, Mark,” Billy announced when we walked in the door. “It looks really important.”

“Is it about Kelly?” I eagerly asked.

“I’m not sure,” Billy answered kindly. “It doesn’t appear to be about her, though, since it is from Canadian Special Intelligence Services.”

Mark read the fax while Billy continued. “It’s a shame you and Mark can’t do with Kelly what Peter Tscherneff did with his son.” Peter Tscherneff’s[1] story had recently reached national news since he was being criminally pursued for fleeing with his child. Peter was severely PTSDed when we spoke with him in Marin, which could cloud his judgment and significantly increase his chances of being caught. Still, Billy believed that publicity and subsequent public outcry could only result in protection for Peter’s son even if he were caught.

“I’m not so sure he’ll succeed,” I cautioned. “Besides, with Kelly’s programmed respiratory failure that wouldn’t be possible for us.”

“That’s not even the half of it,” Mark added, looking up from the fax he was reading. “Cathy and Kelly live under constant threat of being killed if they are together. I have been assured by trusted agents from different Intelligence Agencies that the threat is real since someone in DC fears their combined testimonies will bust the case wide open. It is also said that their abusers are hoping that Cathy will lose her mind being separated from Kelly.”

“They don’t know me,” I said, “or they would realize my love for Kelly only strengthens my resolve to logically prevail rather than emotionally collapse.”

“They’ve underestimated all of us,” Mark told Billy. “Their arrogance will ultimately be their downfall. The best thing we can do for Kelly is to incite public outcry by bringing her plight to light the way we are doing it now. ”

Shifting subjects to the fax he held, he asked Billy if he could use the Copy Shop fax machine to send a response immediately. “Of course,” Billy told him.

Mark scrawled a short response requesting phone contact later that evening. While he wrote, I read the fax, which was stamped “URGENT” in bold letters across the top. It said, “Greetings Mark. A recent development has prompted me to fax this to you. I have some information that will be of concern to you personally.” It contained pertinent contact information and a signature, along with a P.S. that read, “Please destroy this fax. VERY IMPORTANT.”

“Thanks,” Mark told Billy as he sent the fax “We’ll need to get home to catch this phone call when it comes in.”

Later that evening when the phone rang, Mark answered it. While I was anxious to know what it was all about, I had long since learned that eavesdropping was counterproductive to understanding what actually was transpiring. The imagination can fill in the blanks based on insecurities of the moment making what is heard misinterpreted. After a silent pause, I heard Mark cheerfully say, “Sure. Not a problem.”

Despite wanting to hear good news, I drew no conclusions and waited for Mark to share his information with me. “It seems we spooked Mikey Aquino out of his boots when we spoke in ‘his own backyard’ in Marin County,” he told me. “Canadian Special Intelligence Services caught wind of a hit[2] that has been put out on us as a result. Our friend with CSIS is quite concerned, and told me that Mikey is no longer welcome in Canada until the case against him is resolved. I assured him I’d take care of the problem on this end immediately.”

I was confident that Mark could avert the situation. He was light years ahead of Aquino intelligence-wise, and I looked forward to seeing him inevitably outthink him. We sat down to open our mail.

“Beth Vargo of Believe the Children sent us an encouraging letter,” I announced. Beth Vargo’s letters were always a source of strength and hope to me, and provided insight into in the magnitude of what was being done nationwide on behalf of abused children.

“Excellent,” Mark responded. “Here’s another letter from Gordon Thomas. He really appreciates what we’re doing to expose mind control, and would like us to send more documents. I only wish he wasn’t defending the Vatican.”

Gordon Thomas’ book *Journey Into Madness*[3] was bringing the reality of mind control to the forefront. It was rumored that he befriended singer Sinaid O’Conner during the course of her deprogramming and recovery from the extensive Catholic abuse that inspired her infamous Saturday Night Live[4] expose’ of same. “Isn’t it ironic,” I noted, “that Gordon Thomas lives in an old monastery rectory in Ireland?”

“It seems logical to me,” Mark answered. “What better place to gain a clear view and still be a Vatican apologist?”

“Well, the term ‘rectory’,” I pointed to the heading on Gordon Thomas’ stationary, “is a term that the students at Catholic Central[5] joked about. It was accepted knowledge that Priests sexually sodomized kids in the ‘rectory’, which to our literal minds was derived from ‘rectum’ and ‘wrecked ‘em.’ Likewise, we interpreted the terms ‘altered personalities,’ ‘altered states,’ and ‘alter boys’ as derived from sexual abuse on church altars. What an ironic twist that Gordon Thomas would expose such abuses from a ‘rectory’!”

“How widespread do you believe Catholics sexual abuse by Priests actually is?” Mark questioned.

“Enough that girls in Catholic uniforms are synonymous with pornography and sexual promiscuity,” I stated. “If sexual abuse of children by Priests isn’t common knowledge, it should be.”

“It will be,” Mark firmly stated. “Gordon Thomas and Sinaid O’Connor are among a growing number of people speaking out. Even Aquino is proving to be a significant downfall to the Catholic church rather than a recruiter for the Jesuits, CIA, and DIA[6] as intended."

I turned back to our stack of mail. "We have a letter here from a girl in California requesting specific information," I told Mark. "Her name is Sue Ford and she is asking for copies of my deprogramming notes." I frowned, "Reading them can't be healthy for a victim, which she claims to be, since she would still be highly suggestible. I wonder how she even learned about my notes?"

"It would have to be through mental health therapists since they're the only ones circulating that information," Mark responded. "Let me see that." I handed him her letter. He was only part way through reading Sue's letter when he pointed to the words 'Project Monarch.' "Yes, it has to be through mental health since so few people are familiar with that term. She obviously already knows of your past since she is using your language. 'Project Monarch' is proving to be an ideal way to track where highly suggestible victims are getting their information."

"Judging by her handwriting[7]," I observed, "she genuinely appears to be suffering from a dissociative disorder."

"But her verbiage is not conducive to mind control," Mark argued.

"I'll give her a call and see what this is about," I said, reaching for the phone.

A young man with perfect diction answered the telephone number provided on Sue's letter. "Rod Robinson," he cheerfully said.

"My name is Cathy O'Brien and I'm attempting to reach Sue Ford."

"Cathy!" Rod exclaimed as though he knew me. "Sue is right here. We've been looking forward to connecting with you. I am an author writing a fictional book on mind control that incorporates much of your information that Sue was able to obtain through her therapist."

“I was responding to her request for my deprogramming notes,” I began. “If she is a victim of mind control, though, it would not be in her best interest to have my notes. She needs to learn of her past from the inside out, not from outside input.”

“Oh, I agree,” Rod assured me. “She is a victim of incest, not mind control. When her therapist told her about you and your case, I became very interested since I learned about mind control in Hawaii. My father was stationed in Alaska as a pastor in the Air Force. Yes, he sexually abused me. But it was the mind control atrocities I witnessed and their extensive effects on the military that compelled me to write my book. Mind control must be exposed, and this fictional account I am writing isn’t about anyone specifically, it simply introduces the concept to people in a palatable way they can accept.”

“How do you happen to be in California with Sue Ford?” I asked.

“I met her on the beach in Kauai while she was vacationing and we became friends,” he explained. “We could relate to each other because of the incest we experienced. She has been diagnosed with MPD[8]. I’ve been so busy writing I haven’t had time to find out if I’m MPDed like I seem to be. Anyway, Sue supports my work as an author. When she returned to California to resume her therapy, I told her I’d come to visit. Well, here I am. What perfect timing, too, since we found you, a real survivor of mind control, with information I can use to anchor my book in reality. Thank you for surviving and having the heart to speak out!”

“It is love for my daughter that motivates me,” I said. “Her situation is deplorable.”

“It is for the children that I am writing this book,” Rod vowed. “That’s why I want enough accurate facts to incorporate into this story to actually help stop child abuse. Can you send the information Sue requested?”

“Yes,” I answered. “I will send it to your attention, though, as long as you promise me you won’t share such details with Sue right now. Even though she wasn’t likely exposed to mind control, she is still highly suggestible from abuse horrific enough to result in her current diagnosed condition. She has already picked up on the term ‘Project Monarch’ and used it in her letter, which validates her suggestibility. So please, Rod, make sure these documents I send you don’t hinder her personal progress.”

“Wow,” Rod’s voice quavered. “You have so much compassion after all you’ve been through that you still care about Sue when she didn’t experience a fraction of what you did.”

“She obviously experienced something bad if she is suffering from a dissociative disorder,” I responded. “Just because her experience and mine are not the same doesn’t make her trauma any less. Over the line is over-the-line regardless of the extent, and it sounds like you both may have crossed it.”

“I’ll find out someday,” Rod said. “If this book sells the way I believe it will, then I’ll take the money from it and see a therapist myself. I’m doing OK for now, though.”

“It sounds like it,” I said. “I really appreciate what you are doing to positively impact society with what you know. I’ll send the information right away so you can take it with you when you return to Hawaii.”

“I’ll be leaving next week,” Rod said, “but I hope we talk again sometime. I thank you from the bottom of my heart for all you are doing for the children’s sake. Sue thanks you, too.”

When we hung up, I went to fill Mark in on the conversation. He was deep into composing a note of response to Aquino’s attempt on our lives, though, and I certainly did not want to disturb him. A few minutes later he showed me the letter he had written.

“I know someone who will make sure Aquino reads this,” Mark said, smiling.

The letter began: “This is the voice in your head and the guy behind your eyes.” When I finished reading it, I became more excited than ever.

“There is no way he can ignore this!” I laughed.

“It will haunt him,” Mark assured me. “He should know better than to go into a battle of wits unarmed and without sufficient back-up. My friends are above his friends, and he will stand down.”

“It is too cool that you told him he is ‘nothing spe**cia**l” and just another ‘psych clone’ spinning deceit from ‘behind the wizard’s curtain’ that is being exposed.”

Mark sealed the letter in an envelope. “He’s ‘mind’ now that I’m behind his eyes.”

Chapter 32
HEALth

Mark made arrangements with one of his ‘guardian angel’ contacts to have his message personally delivered to Aquino, while I sat in a doctor’s office. Experience taught me to listen to my body rather than rely on a doctor to diagnose or tend to my health. This routine visit was simply for renewing the prescription I had to treat the gnawing pain in my belly. I felt fortunate to have survived the total digestive failure my abusers believed would kill me, and was pleased to know how the power of the mind can be used for healing. After all, since perpe-*traitors* could program spies to die before they could *think* to reveal secrets, the reverse could be used for maintaining or regaining health.

“Ms. O’Brien,” the doctor said solemnly. “I cannot in all good conscience write you a prescription for a simple drug like Anaspaz when you are, in fact, dying.”

“No, I’m not,” I began.

“Yes you are!” he argued. “Your lower intestine is dead and you soon will be, too.”

“I’ve heard this for years and know it is not true,” I told him. “All I want is a refill on my prescription to help calm the pain in my belly. Are you denying me relief?”

“Are you denying that you’re dying?” he retorted.

I couldn’t help but smile. “There are those who would like to believe I’m dying, and apparently you’re counted among them. But the fact is, regardless of anyone’s belief, I am alive and am simply asking for relief. Relief from your belief. Or relief while I die. Either way, all I want is a prescription.”

“Fine!” He scrawled out a prescription, ripped it from the pad, and tossed it to me. “Don’t bother coming back here to see me.”

“How could I come back if I’m supposed to die? Wow, that’s a spooky thought.” The doctor’s eyes widened in horror. I jumped down from the examining table and strode out the door.

Mark was already in the parking lot when I emerged from the doctor’s office. As I climbed into the car, we both asked, “How’d it go?” Then said, “You first.” I waved the prescription.

“He doesn’t want to see me anymore,” I said.

“Aquino can’t help but see me.” Mark said, “I’m behind his eyes now.”

“The doctor said I’m dying.” I knew Mark knew better. Mark had, after all, literally saved my life several times using the power of the mind with love.

“Aquino only wishes he were dead, but I’ll haunt him there, too.” Mark drove the Pacer towards the Copy Shop. “I’m going to drop you off at Billy’s while I meet with another spook who will reinforce the message that Mikey[1] is playing with fire this time. That fat little narcissistic satanist doesn’t want to go out in a blaze of glory, so he’ll recant his threats and diffuse the hit he put out on us. Deputy Dave PTSDed[2] over this, so I want to make sure Mikey knows ‘he has no where to run and no where to hide’ because ‘we’re watching him from behind his eyes’.”

“Deputy Dave PTSDed?” I asked, concerned. Mark and I had seen so many good, strong people become casualties on the front lines of this mind war.

“I noticed he was showing signs of PTSD when we were in Santa Rosa,” Mark said with compassion. “It’s not the death threats and averted hits that sent him over the edge, it's the children. He's seen too many children horribly hurt, and can't deal with it anymore. He's so depressed he's despondent and irrational, and his focus is totally gone for the moment. His job is far too dangerous to allow for the kind of mistakes PTSD causes. So, he's taking a little time off and using some of the coping skills we talked about to pull himself back together. He's going to do some writing which not only will help him recover, it will also help the cause."

We drove the rest of the way in silence.

Billy was quite busy when we arrived at the Copy Shop, so I walked to the nearby pharmacy to get my prescription filled. Then I retrieved our mail from the Post Office and settled into the employee's backroom while Billy tended his customers. I pulled out my notepad and began writing. With so much Catholic abuse being discussed, memory of my encounter with Nicaragua's Daniel Ortega[3] surfaced.

Alex Houston was traveling for the CIA aboard NCL's cruise ship in the summer of 1985, and I had cause to be with him. Houston's bad ventriloquism act provided him cover for the CIA drug ops he was actually working, while the Handwriting Analysis[4] lectures that I gave provided my excuse for being there. In reality, I would be boarding a small plane bound for Nicaragua while NCL docked in their Yukatan, Mexico port-of-call. I had been programmed with a message from the White House to deliver to Nicaragua's Commandant Daniel Ortega.

As I wrote out my memory in photographic detail, I smelled the smells and sensed the senses of the event. It all felt so real and close, almost as though I were there again. Ortega was unlike any other contact I made during my tenure as an MK Ultra mind controlled slave. I sensed his strength of spirit and soul conviction, and he exuded an energy of love. How could this be? The modest room where I met with him was lined with weapons, and ashtrays overflowed with cigarette butts and a few marijuana roaches. I had been conditioned to abhor marijuana above all else, since the government's concern with the herb's mind-altering and expanding properties could disrupt delivery of messages like this one to Ortega. Of course, at the time I could only perceive marijuana as the “evil weed” I was told it was. Likewise, I should have perceived Ortega as the violent warmonger I’d been conditioned to believe he was; yet his powerful presence conflicted with my pre-programmed perceptions. The connection I sensed was bigger-than-life, above life’s conditions and events of the moment. I couldn’t think to question or wonder under mind control, but the questions that rose while deprogramming continue to date[5].

As I wrote out the message I delivered to Ortega, I recalled it complete[6] with the voice inflections of my programmers, which were used verbatim in my delivery. The message was a combination of Vatican based threats and bribes, all of which were to convince Ortega to accept New World Orders in the name of Catholicism. Ortega’s view of Catholicism apparently did not include a political agenda, however. In the course of his response, which automatically photographically recorded in my brain, he suggested that the picture of the New World Order that Reagan painted lacked depth. And likewise, the Catholic Jesuit role in that New World Order was just as shallow. His message[7] to Reagan clearly denounced the New World Order.

Billy burst through the door of the back room, warmly greeting me. “Oops,” he interrupted himself. “I didn’t realize you were deprogramming.”

Billy had been present on numerous occasions while I was deep inside my head deprogramming, and was always respectful of the process.

“It’s OK,” I assured him, setting down my pen. “I just completed what I needed to write anyway. How are you doing?”

“Great, now that I see you and Mark are safe,” Billy said. “After the fax ya’ll got, I was a bit concerned.”

“Mark took care of it,” I smiled. “And he’s further reinforcing our safety right now.”

Mark burst through the door as though on cue. “That didn’t take me as long as I had anticipated,” he announced. “Mikey and his legions of academic morons won’t be bothering us anymore.”

“Great!” I said, throwing my arms around Mark in a big hug.

While Billy and Mark talked, I gathered up my paperwork to leave. “Where are you going so fast?” Billy laughed.

“Home,” I smiled, giving him a quick hug. “We’re going to celebrate.”

“What are you celebrating?” Billy asked good-naturedly, opening the door for me.

“Life!” I exclaimed.

Mark smiled at Billy, “Like we do every day.”

On the way home, I excitedly told Mark about my deprogramming notes on Daniel Ortega. “He’s true-to-soul!” I gushed. “He could make a powerful difference for humanity with his stand against the New World Order!”

“Whoa,” Mark cautioned. “He’s a communist military dictator whose people are at war.”

“This is bigger than politics,” I insisted. “Admittedly, I don’t understand his politics[8], but I know he is a man of conviction and peace. He stands strong against the New World Order, and someday that will matter far more than political differences.”

“I’d like to see what you’ve written out when we get home,” Mark said as he drove us out of city traffic and onto the winding country road. “You’re drawing some serious conclusions from limited experience.”

“I realize that,” I assured him. “But my senses were even stronger then than they are now, and that is worthy of consideration. Ortega is a powerful spirit who defies the global elite. He is a fighter for freedom.”

“Freedom by whose definition?” Mark asked. “One man’s freedom fighter is another man’s terrorist.”

“Innate freedom, within soul’s realm of love,” I answered. “Not freedom by political definition, but rather freedom that comes with free thought. He opposes mind control.”

“So does Bill Clinton,” Mark reminded me. “Look into Ortega’s politics. Expand what you think you know. I am not arguing your point that we need to put aside differences and unite to overcome the New World Order. Rather I am saying that expanding perceptions is necessary for all people everywhere so another form of dictatorship doesn’t fill the void left when these criminals are finally removed from leadership!”

Long drives proved to be an ideal time for in depth conversation or for play, as well as for reflecting and thinking. Mark’s and my relationship was so comfortable and secure that our discussions were as varied as our points of view. Our life’s circumstances had raised our perspectives and priorities above and beyond what others seemed to argue about. When people learn to think beyond TV to what really is going on in the world, they will change their priorities and perspectives, too! Everyone is on his own learning path, and there is no need to change someone who is daring to think beyond social engineering. Mark’s point about Ortega was valid whereby I would research more. Yet my hopes for dismantling New World Order controls in time to unplug DARPA and Sandia Labs technology rested in humankind’s setting aside their differences for the sake of their likenesses in peaceful, spiritual evolution.

“How can humanity unite in truth when ‘National Security’ secrecy keeps us divided?” I wondered.

“The 1947 National Security Act must be abolished,” Mark answered. “That should be goal one after people regain control of their governments. Then they can unplug and defuse DARPA.”

“It’s almost a catch 22,” I concluded. “People need truth for strength of spirit to unplug computerized Artificial Intelligence that is suppressing truth!”

“People have no time to lose,” Mark agreed.

“According to the doctor, I don’t have any time left either,” I said. “Why do doctors insist on giving me negative news? Is it due to their extensive education through drug- company paid medical schools?”

Mark answered. “More and more doctors are expanding their narrow education focus to learn about cures emanating from the private sector. They study and work hard for degrees as MDs, PhDs, etc. and in the process are taught to listen only to others with similar education credentials. Yet it is becoming increasingly obvious that their education deliberately includes DARPA generated plans for controlling and thinning the population, while pertinent healing facts are omitted. They are livid. Those who became doctors to help people rather than make money are rising, while doctors like the one you saw today are losing patients.”

“I lost my patience with him today!” I assured Mark. “My health is improving at an astounding rate considering that you and I are applying what we know towards my healing. All I wanted from that doctor was an edge on this tummy pain while I am in the process of healing. Mentally focusing away from pain during intense times like these is difficult because I don’t have time to be dissociative!”

“Saying you don’t have ‘time’ to be dissociative is an oxymoron,” Mark reminded me. Dissociation is opposite of awareness, and is therefore timeless.

“You’re right,” I laughed. “In reality, I don’t have ‘time’ to hurt. Choosing to use the Special Forces ‘no time to bleed’ program in direct association with my health must be better than any prescription!”

Mark agreed. “Since the subconscious mind can be programmed to stop Special Forces servicemen from bleeding when shot or injured so they can continue their mission, we know the mind is capable of responding. If the mind can respond to outside manipulation, it certainly can respond to our own spirit-driven health choices and directives."

"Obviously," I said. "Neither of us has had a cold in years because we really don't have time for one. That healing mechanism works! People do not have to be traumatized and programmed to accept this healing realization."

"Getting them to realize it is the challenge," Mark told me. "The pharmaceutical companies that fund med schools don't want this fact realized, and therefore the information is suppressed. Many pharmaceutical companies and doctors make money by treating symptoms rather than causations. When causations are understood, cures are oftentimes a given. Cures don't make money. Why was Aspartame released into the population despite evidence of the damage it causes while Donald Rumsfeld was CEO of Searle? Why do you think George Bush was on the board of directors for Eli Lilly[9] drug manufacturing? To counteract the mass genocide he perpetuates? Why do you think politicians are so healthy and live so long? What do they know that they aren't telling us? I'm not saying this is all a conspiracy to thin the population, but pertinent health information should be public knowledge rather than deliberately suppressed. If this information were taught in schools, unethical drug companies would loose their control on the world."

"If people do consciously realize their innate ability to heal," I elaborated, "they could allow it to sink in on a subconscious level through meditation so it becomes autogenic. Meditation is at least as deep as hypnosis, isn't it?"

"Yes," Mark agreed. "Meditation, like real prayer, for all practical intent and purpose is self hypnosis. And it is much safer! Finding an ethical, trustworthy hypnotist to deepen a trance is risky. If people knew the dangers of allowing a stage hypnotist to play with their subconscious, that nonsense would be outlawed."

"Alex Houston is a good example," I said. "People would think twice before seeing a hypnotist to stop smoking let alone pay them to play with their subconscious drivers!"

“Any habit control through hypnosis is like trusting drug companies to cure you,” Mark asserted. “Habits have causation. If a person stops smoking through hypnosis, the cause is not being addressed and will manifest itself through another habit or new emotional problem cropping up.”

“Is that why people gain weight when they quit smoking?”

“It can be, if the reason they smoked is due to an oral fixation,” Mark explained. “When trauma like incest occurs before age five, it usually results in a dissociative disorder and manifests itself through heightened sexuality, addictions, habits, etc. If the habit is stopped through hypnosis, the underlying causation will seek another route and memories may begin to surface. Hypnosis is serious business and should never be used as entertainment. Meditation like prayer is much safer and ultimately more effective.”

“Why do so many Christians oppose meditation?” I asked.

“Because they are taught to oppose it,” Mark answered. “Think about it. If a cult church leading people outside themselves in order to control their perceptions were to allow their congregation to go within themselves for answers, they would lose control and money!”

“Meditation is only heightened prayer,” I began. “Through meditation, people would realize that, like peace, freedom and unconditional love, healing is already within. Church teaches that God knows no time, so it seems logical that everyone would embrace that timeless space through meditation and accept the healing that already exists there.”

“Truth naturally exists in that same space,” Mark furthered. “Once you learned to control your own mind and direct your own thoughts, you were free to consciously direct your own subconscious!”

“I know the ins and outs of my own brain extremely well now, thanks to your helping me exercise my brain. By reaching and stretching into other regions of my brain, I learned to think and choose for myself. I chose healing. With your love strengthening my choice to heal, we healed my eye after the optometrist said I was going blind[10]. Which eye was that?” I joked. Confusing location as another healing tactic component. Sometimes it is better to simply ‘forget about it.’ Even well intentioned questions like ‘how are you feeling now?’ can result in counterproductive focus. “We healed the damage Cheney[11] did to my jaw.” Dick Cheney violated me under mind control, but I refuse to let the past intrude on my present. The same subconscious ‘mental oilcan’ was used on my jaw that was used on my wrists and ankle joints to overcome the arthritis setting in. It is phenomenal the way my body has healed from torture. “What they used for bad, we used for good. When the reality of mind control is successfully brought to light and fully understood, people can use the information to free humanity from all kinds of ailments.”

“The positives from learning about mind control far outweigh the negatives,” Mark agreed. “Good people have a right to the information on mind brain function. Once they realize the truth, they can assume the healing.”

“Healing is a given,” I said. “It is within. It is within the realm of unconditional love as is peace, freedom and wisdom. The common factor of all religions, politics, and humankind is within. Assuming this truth can heal the world!”

Chapter 33

*T*REASONS OF “NATIONAL” SECURITY

“The elevator is still not functioning properly after the fire,” Mark and I were warned as we stepped into the Stahlman Building’s elevator to ride up to Scott Rosenburg’s office. The doors closed before we could get back off. We listened to horror stories from other people on the elevator with us as it creaked and groaned its way up to the 11th floor. We pried the doors open with our fingers when it stopped, and we stepped out into Scott’s busy office.

“I’m glad to see you,” Scott greeted Mark and me warmly. “We’re nearly ready for the March 17 court hearing. There is no legal way you can be charged with child support or with paying Kelly’s accumulated mental health costs.”

“That’s a relief,” I said. “There is no way I can pay, and I certainly cannot afford time in jail.”

“There is one question I do need an answer to,” Scott said thoughtfully. “What reason can I cite for your not working a standard nine to five job?”

“That is impossible,” Mark injected. “Any routine she keeps like that could prove deadly. We’ve been advised by my contacts with Intelligence to avoid any and all routines. A job is out of the question.”

“I understand that,” Scott empathized. “Especially since my family and I were following our usual Sunday routine when we were in that car crash that was no accident.”

When Scott and his family had nearly been killed last winter, Mark and I were astounded by their narrow escape. Mark shook his head. “A job is absolutely out of the question.”

“Besides,” I said. “I’m still deprogramming. It would be difficult to shift my focus outside myself when I keep my head up my past so much these days.”

Rosenburg smiled. “I realize that, too,” he assured us. “But I cannot submit either excuse to the court since their explanation would be censored. Everyone in court knows your circumstances anyway. What I need is a medical excuse.”

“Psychiatric confirmation of Cathy’s condition could legally work against us,” Mark explained. “Diagnosis terms for recovery from mind control and DID would ultimately prohibit her from testifying in court in the event this case ever goes to trial. I’m sure that is exactly what is wanted right now to keep her quiet, but it’s not going to happen.”

Referring to my medical circumstances I said, “It would be wrong to submit the negative doctor’s diagnosis on my digestive system, eye, hearing, and jaw when Mark and I have used the power of the mind for healing. And my vaginal mutilation carving wouldn’t exactly be a reason to not work.”

Scott winced. “I am confident we have a strong enough case without the medical. I’ll see you in court on the 17th.”

When the 17th arrived, I did not know what to expect and wished that Mark hadn’t been banned from the courtroom. Even though the courtroom was packed, the only one present that had the fortitude to support me was Scott. And he was scheduled to testify against me.

Scott began, “Your Honor, if I prosecute Ms. O’Brien for debts owed on Kelly’s institutionalization or for child support, I would be in violation of my own honor, oath of office, and numerous laws. You, too, are in violation of…" Scott opened the large law book he carried with him, citing various laws he had marked for this occasion.

Judge Shookhoff listened, fidgeting in his chair. Then he interrupted Scott to say, "Laws do not apply in this case for reasons of national security."

Stunned silence filled the courtroom. Then pandemonium broke out and court was dismissed. I ran out the door of the courtroom to where Mark was impatiently pacing, and burst into sobs. Alarmed, Mark began rapidly escorting me to the car, asking what happened.

"It's over," I sobbed, believing things couldn't be worse. Mark started the car and began backing out of the parking lot. "Shookhoff just invoked national security on the case!"

"What?!" Mark stopped the Pacer.

"When Rosenburg cited which laws were being violated, Shookhoff said, 'laws do not apply in this case for reasons of national security!" I sobbed.

"I'm not believing this," Mark said, his eyes filling with tears.

"Me either!" I blew my nose.

"I mean, this is the best news I've ever heard!"

"What?" I asked. Mark turned me to face him.

"National security can only be invoked in judge's chambers," he explained. "It is a matter of public record if it's said in open court. He said this in open court?"

"Yes," I said, still not grasping the magnitude of what just happened.

"Shookhoff may well have just saved our lives," Mark excitedly assured me. "He totally validated yours and Kelly's case by invoking national security in open court.”

“He wouldn’t do that,” I argued. “Shookhoff is obviously against us.”

“No, he is not,” Mark said. “Up until now he has been forced to comply with the Feds, and he just broke free of their controls with this statement. In essence, he breached national security to invoke national security in open court!” I hadn’t seen Mark so happy and excited. “You’re right,” he continued. “It is over. You just won.”

“It doesn’t feel like it,” I said.

“Just wait and see,” Mark said, hugging me close. “Now that you are free of court imposed hindrances you’ll be able to affect Kelly’s case more than ever.”

“How?” I asked. “Her Constitutional rights and basic human rights are still being violated. She cannot send or receive mail, take or make phone calls, and we can’t even see each other! How is this a win?”

“You’ll see,” Mark said. “Right now your emotions are blinding your logical ability to see clearly. Understandably so. You’ve been through a lot today. Let’s go home and let this settle in. I’ll cook you a nice dinner, massage your feet and hands, and we’ll relax a bit.”

I reached in my purse and clicked off the tape recorder that I’d had running, removed the tape and handed it to Mark.

“And celebrate,” Mark added when he saw the tape. “I’m going to do everything I can to get today’s court records, although they most likely were instantly sealed. It doesn’t matter, though,” he smiled. “You’ve got the tape!”

Mark stopped by the Post Office on the way home, pausing long enough to poke his head in the door of the Copy Shop. “Billy!” he exclaimed. “The judge just invoked national security on the case in open court.”

“No way!” Billy said, smiling big. “Isn’t it a violation of national security to publicly invoke it?”

“He did it anyway,” Mark announced. “And we’ve got it all on tape. Shookhoff just saved our lives.”

“Do you think he did that on purpose?” Billy asked.

“No,” I began.

Mark interrupted. “Yes, I believe so based on a few things I know. We’re going home to celebrate!”

It took some time for the reality of what had transpired to set in. It seemed to me that since *revoking* the National Security Act was our focus, the judge could only hurt us by *invoking* it. Slowly I began to realize how this move had validated our case. Additionally, Rosenburg explained that the orders for child support were in limbo as a result whereby there was no need for me to worry about paying. Best of all, I soon received a phone call from Abbott Jordan at Charter Lakeside in Memphis.

“Ms O’Brien,” Abbot Jordan began, “I am Kelly’s therapist at Charter Lakeside, and what she tells me does not coincide with what the state tells me. My concern is for Kelly above all else, and I realize that I may be in violation of court order by telephoning you. National security clouds Kelly’s court case anyway, so I chose to follow my heart and talk with you.”

“How is Kelly?” I eagerly asked.

“She misses you,” Abbott Jordan told me.

Tears of relief silently streamed down my face. She remembered me. This was a good sign. “How is her health?”

“She had an appendectomy recently,” he informed me. Why hadn’t I been notified through the court, my attorney, or the state? “But she recovered fine, and her asthma is being maintained with inhalers.”

“Does she talk about her past?”

“No,” he told me. “She doesn’t seem to remember anything. It would benefit her tremendously if you and I could talk. I need some history on her in order to treat her therapeutically. I can see she has been severely traumatized, yet don’t now how or why.”

“Isn’t that in her records?” I was sure it was.

“Her records are sealed,” Abbott Jordan told me. “All I know is that what she says about you consciously and subconsciously is in direct conflict with what the state reports. Even her sand trays and other therapies indicate there is more going on with this case than meets the eye. Now I’ve learned national security is covering up something, and I cannot find out what.” His voice quavered. “I do know love when I see it, though, and Kelly loves you and misses you.”

“Can I see her?” I asked, my heart leaping in my throat at the possibility.

“I’m sending you a letter from Kelly,” he said. “She apparently wrote it some time ago and just now entrusted me to get it to you. I gave it to Katie Finney to give to you.”

“Oh, no,” I groaned. Katie Finney was a state worker with the Department of Human Services, and I doubted I would ever see the letter.

“She assured me she would deliver it to you,” he told me. “She is the one who told me about national security being invoked on your case. I understand from Kelly that Katie is not a friend to either of you, but I believe I can trust her with delivering Kelly’s message to you. She was quite moved by it, especially in view of the national security incident in court.”

“When can I talk with Kelly?” I pleaded.

“I will tell her we talked, and that you would like to speak with her,” he said kindly. “I know she wants to talk with you. In the meantime, get that letter from Katie. I’ll be phoning again soon.”

When I finally received Kelly’s letter in early April 1993, it was tattered and dated September 1992. She had obviously carried it around with her for months before entrusting Abbott Jordan to get it to me. It read:

“Dear Mom,

I miss you very, very much. I’m trying to get it arranged for you, me, and dad for a visit. V.C.A.P.H. (Vanderbilt Psychiatric Hospital) put a whole bunch of shit in my head; making me believe that you don’t love me, that you abandoned me. I’ve cried for the past 3 weeks almost every day and night. I wish you would write back if this letter ever gets to you. I gotta go. I love you; and remember these two lines always…’Its not over till we win’ and ‘Everything I do, I do it for you.’

It was signed with three big hearts and ‘Love, Kelly’

Chapter 34
SEVENTEEN LITTLE CHILDREN

“What does ‘National Security’ have to do with the documented rape and molestation of a child’s mind and body?” was the question raised to State and Federal Government by people worldwide. After the 1947 National Security Act was induced on Kelly’s case, the letter writing campaign that Mark and I had previously started took wings and thousands of letters poured into the State of Tennessee and Washington, DC. Additionally, people from around the world were writing letters of encouragement to Kelly and sending her gifts. Since she could not receive her mail, the letters and packages began accumulating.

Most importantly, Abbott Jordan telephoned again. “Kelly would like to talk with you.”

“Great!” I exclaimed, eager to talk with her. “Please put her on the phone!”

“I would rather you come in for a visit,” he said. “So would Kelly. I am taking advantage of the fact that ‘laws do not apply in your case due to national security’ to circumvent previous court orders and allow for visitation.”

“I can see her?” I asked in disbelief, disappointed that I wouldn’t be talking with her immediately by phone, yet thrilled by the possibility of actually seeing her.

“You may want to keep this quiet,” he cautioned. “We don’t want anyone petitioning the court to stop this visitation. I need to schedule you to come in and give Kelly’s history to Charter’s Administrator anyway, and you can see her then. Can you come in the first of next week?”

“Monday?” I hoped. If we didn’t have enough gas money to get to Memphis, I knew we would come up with it someway. We had three days.

“We’ll see you then,” Abbott Jordan said cheerfully.

“Hug Kelly for me,” I implored, “and tell her I love her.”

“Will do,” he said and hung up the phone.

Early Monday morning, Mark and I packed a few peanut butter sandwiches to eat along the way to Memphis since we didn’t have a dime to spare. The cost of gas alone was half a month’s budget to us. We loaded our briefcases full of documents into the Pacer. “Have you got the tape recorder?” Mark asked. I held it up. “Extra batteries?” I dug through my purse and held those up, too. “Cookies?” Of course. I had baked Kelly’s favorites, wishing that we could afford to bring her clothes, books and gifts.

“Kelly won’t care what you bring or don’t bring,” Mark reminded me. “She just wants to see you.”

“And you!” I assured him.

“I don’t know what to expect there,” Mark said sadly as he started up the Pacer. “It has been so long since I’ve been allowed to even wave to her across a parking lot, let alone talk with her, that I can only hope Abbott Jordan will allow me to see her, too. Either way, you’ll at least get to visit and find out how she’s doing.”

The long ride to Memphis gave us both time to think. We drove in comfortable silence, occasionally holding hands. By the time we arrived, I was equally nervous and excited to see Kelly. First, Mark and I met with Charter’s Administrator for what seemed an eternity. Then we met Abbott Jordan, who appeared as soulfully kind as he had sounded on the telephone.

“Mom!” Kelly cried, running to greet me with a big hug. “Dad!” She hugged Mark, sobbing now. “I missed you both so much,” she gulped between sobs. We cried, too, reassuring her of our love.

“All I kept thinking was ‘it’s not over till we win’,” she said. “I knew they were lying to me at Vanderbilt.”

“I did everything I could to see you,” I assured her. “They would not let me in the door, telling me that you refused to see me. I didn’t believe them either. I know you better than that.” We all cried and hugged, and even Abbott Jordan wiped his eyes.

“Kelly told me you all were close,” he said. “I could see she was telling the truth. Why is your family torn apart?” Mark and Abbott Jordan talked together while Kelly and I caught up on each other’s lives.

“I kept sensing you were thinking of me,” Kelly acknowledged as we discussed our telepathic connection. “And I knew you missed me like I was missing you. I told Abbott Jordan nothing could keep us apart because our love is bigger than life.”

Aside from our separation, Kelly remembered nothing else about her Vanderbilt experience. I did not push for answers, or inquire about her past. Instead, we talked about her recent appendectomy, her relationship with Abbott Jordan, and her new friends while we ate the cookies I’d brought. Charter staff explained I could not bring food[1] into the facility, but made an exception for now. I couldn’t leave any, though, and Kelly was eating as many as she could hold, savoring every bite. When it was time to leave, we knew that we would be seeing each other again soon. Still, it was painful saying goodbye.

On the ride home, Mark explained that his time with Kelly would be limited to warm greetings because any visitation between them could disrupt our time together. Abbott Jordan knew he was walking a fine line to allow visitation. “Besides,” Mark consoled me, “you and Kelly should have every possible minute together.” His eyes could not hide his own disappointment, and I lovingly caressed him. Such unselfish love.

“When Abbott Jordan asked why I couldn’t help Kelly the way I helped you, I explained how Kelly’s victimization differed from yours,” Mark explained. “He really appreciated the information. I told him that, in essence I took the mental handcuffs off you and handed you the key, whereas I don't even have the key to Kelly's technological programming. Hers is more like a magnetic lock that requires a computerized electronic key. Technological mind control is light years ahead of trauma based mind control, and he understands that now."

"Had he heard of harmonic programming?" I wondered.

"He knew a bit about HAARP[2]," Mark answered. "He began researching it after hearing rumors that HAARP may have played a role in the LA Riots[3]."

"If anything good could come of such violence as the LA Riots, it would be that people at least began researching HAARP," I commented. "And Rodney King's infamous plea 'can't we all just get along?' still resounds long after the riots died down."

"Between Operation Just Cause's blatant use of harmonics on Noriega, and the LA Riot rumors regarding HAARP, harmonics is becoming a household word now," Mark agreed. "It gives people like Abbott Jordan a point of reference for understanding Kelly's high tech mind control."

"How did you explain to him why our family has been so unjustly and immorally torn apart?" I inquired.

"I told him who and what we are up against, which he said fit with what Kelly claimed," Mark explained as he drove. "Apparently Vanderbilt could not make the reality of Kelly's past go away despite their reported attempts to 'harmonically erase her memory'. I also explained to him about her respiratory programming, and the magnitude of the threats to your lives if you are together. He understands that these obstacles can be alleviated and dealt with in time, and is therefore determined to persist in reuniting our family. He realizes legalities won't be easy to work through under the circumstances, but nevertheless will be making all the right recommendations to free her from the system."

“That is a relief,” I sighed. “This is the first time we have had someone working with her who is genuinely on our side.”

“What did you and Kelly talk about?” Mark eagerly asked.

“Mostly we caught up with what has been going on since we saw each other last fall,” I began. “Apparently there was a bit more discussion by the Department of Human Services regarding an exorcism, and Kelly insisted that she was not possessed by their belief system.”

“She said it that way?” Mark wanted to know.

“Yes,” I smiled. “I don’t know how much clearer she can express herself than that. Anyway, that whole occult mess seems to be over with and she is really glad to be free of it.”

“After all she deals with in life,” Mark commented, “She certainly didn’t need that nonsense, too.”

“What concerns me now,” I told him, “is that she has started her periods and is worried about getting pregnant. Apparently she has been ‘getting along with her peers’ a bit too well. We had a great talk about that, though. She explained that she has some difficulties living true-to-soul at all times since she is still switching personas, especially after Vanderbilt. Love is a strong anchor to living true-to-soul, which she realizes is where her innate identity is found. By being here to reassure her that she *is* loved and *is* love, it helps strengthen her resolve to live true-to-soul.”

I continued. “Through us, she has seen what a loving relationship can truly be, and said she doesn’t want to settle for anything less than what we share. She knows I am happy and well cared for, and admires the fact that you don’t treat me like a sex object. By being you, Kelly has learned more about love than a lifetime of therapy could have taught her! She is already so wise at 13 that she chooses to soulfully express her sexuality through love *only*. That is quite a healthy choice considering sexual abuse heightened her drive the same way it has every other sexually abused child institutionalized at Charter. I told her how proud I am of her and *for* her. But until she actually lives true-to-soul always like she strives to do, I'd still like to have her put on birth control pills."

"That's a good idea," Mark agreed, "considering the hormones raging between all those sexually abused kids."

Mark and I talked the rest of the way home; deciding what each of us could do to best benefit and strengthen Kelly under the circumstances. The next time we went to Nashville, I approached the subject of birth control with DHS worker Katie Finney. "Teach her some morals instead!" she screeched at me.

How could a social worker dealing with abused children every day be so ignorant? "I would like to have that opportunity," I retorted. "If Kelly were free of your custody and I were raising her, this wouldn't be an issue!"

I was outraged. Most of all, I was disgusted that Kelly was so misunderstood while she struggled to heal herself and live true-to-soul. Obviously Katie Finney did not even know Kelly, or she wouldn't have made such a ridiculous statement. As usual, it would be up to us to make the best of a deplorable situation.

Deplorable situations were becoming commonplace in America these days[4], jolting many people from their comfort zones. The rich were getting richer, the poor were getting poorer, and formerly middle class citizens were plummeting toward third world poverty level. Justice was bought and sold while government corruption reigned supreme. Crime escalated out of control while the CIA's booming cocaine, crack, and heroin industries [5] turned our street corners into a blood bath.

Citizens began meeting in basements, churches, schools, community centers, anywhere they could gather to discuss how to right the wrongs in society. Global Education[6] was eroding human morals at such a rapid rate that home schooling was fast becoming the common alternative. People unplugged their TVs and video games in an effort to maintain free thought. They turned to underground newspapers, radio, and word of mouth for truth even before the internet linked their voices. As fast as people united to take their country back, their organizations were either infiltrated to divide them or were slandered by the press. Militias were termed White Supremacists, patriots were termed extremists, school kids were turned into gangs, and aware citizens were titled UN-American conspiratists. Mind control weaved throughout society's woes, and was the common thread that should have tied everything together making sense of the chaos.

But mind control was being covered up for "reasons of 'national' security".

Meanwhile, war was waged against US citizens. Psychological warfare tactics were aimed at the populace to keep them shooting at each other, while horrifying examples were being made of high profile patriot leaders. Nine months previous, US Federal Agents had stormed the Idaho country home of Randy Weaver, murdering his son and his wife while they scrambled for their lives. Weaver's supposed crime? Attempting to unify citizens according to the US Constitution and take back the American government from a self-appointed New World Order elite. Rather than terrify the public into submission, this inhumane murder of Vicki and Sam Weaver only served to awaken more people to the reality that something very wrong was happening to u.s. all.

Now trouble was brewing again, and it was only a matter of time until violence exploded sufficient to traumatize much of the populace. People are easiest led while PTSDed from trauma, and a horrific standoff in Waco, Texas had been playing out for days on every television station. A banner with reverberating meaning reading 'Can't We All Just Get Along[7]' waved from the Waco compound while the media slaughtered their image.

8AM on April 19, 1993 our telephone rang, waking us from a deep sleep. Mark listened to the desperate plea for help on the other end. The standoff at the Branch Dividian compound in Waco, Texas had reached a pinnacle, and 83 people were trapped inside willing to die rather than surrender to government controls. Bill Clinton's newly appointed Attorney General Janet Reno claimed the people were victims of cult brainwashing. The Branch Dividians[8] vowed they would not comply with government mind control tactics. Since Mark was now nationally recognized as a leader in deprogramming, he was called on to help. The stage was already set for destruction, however, and Mark wisely sidestepped an attempt to burn him with the rest in order to help Waco's survivors sift through the ruins of their lives. By the time Federal Agents (General Wesley Clark[9], 2004 Presidential contender, led) were through with their unprecedented raid, seventy-four people were murdered and burned alive. Among the dead were Seventeen Little Children[10]. Nine people miraculously survived, including one brave soul, David Thibodeau[11], who dared to speak out afterwards.

We were a nation under siege, and Mark and I did not want to become casualties on the front lines of this mind war. For Kelly's sake, we needed to keep the proverbial spotlight of truth shining bright. For the sake of survival in these tumultuous times, we needed to keep a low profile.

I knew the idea of taking Kelly and running like Peter Tscherneff did with his son was only an emotional temptation and not a logical answer. The wisdom of this difficult decision became even clearer when Peter was caught after only four months[12], incarcerated, and his precious son turned over to the very ones he'd fled. Ensuing media coverage of his arrest was deplorable[13], as it attacked nearly every moral issue parents nationwide were standing against on behalf of the children. This brave, young man and his son paid the ultimate price of being used as public examples.

“If only Peter had stayed to listen to us speak in Petaluma that night,” I said as I read another slanderous newspaper article denouncing him, “he would have heard us warn about the very catch net operation that ensnared him.” The names in the article I was reading were all too familiar.

“Even if Peter had stayed and listened to that information,” Mark asserted, “chances are he would have been caught anyway. Peter was so PTSDed that he was destined to make a fatal error in judgment. His high public profile made him a media target that ensured he would be caught and publicly crucified.”

Despite extreme efforts to divide and conquer the people, many resilient Americans were more determined than ever to stop the erosion of freedom.

People who could still think to ask questions were demanding answers.

TV talk shows like Oprah Winfrey's began to flourish. Oprah was no longer just a local Nashville girl with a talk show, she was becoming a household name. True to her word, awareness of incest and child abuse was rising in proportion to her popularity.

While pioneers like Oprah tread lightly through censorship, key stories that could make a world of difference were ignored or slandered by mainstream media. Mark and I learned that Michael Jackson's sister, LaToya, was in deprogramming and recovery from the MK Ultra abuses permeating the Jackson family. LaToya's valiant efforts to speak out after writing her book, *Growing Up in the Jackson Family*[14], were denounced by the media to the point where she fled a televised interview in tears. Mind control survivors were being intimidated into silence just like the reporters who were silenced in the wake of Danny Caselaro's demise. The Jackson story was stifled along with other key events that went against DARPA generated social engineering controls.

Outside the controlled media spotlight that portrayed u.s. as apathetical and compliant, the patriot movement was in full swing and growing strong. The Waco tragedy did more to unite people than divide them, as evidenced by the song I was listening to on the radio. Singer songwriter Carl Klang[15] gave voice to America and touched my soul as he sang,

"Seventeen Little Children, don't it make you wonder why?
Seventeen Little Children, how could they deserve to die?
Maybe we should stop and ask ourselves, have we become so blind?
Will Seventeen Little Children finally open up your mind?
Open up your mind."

Chapter 35

THE*RAPISTS'* MISTAKES

“Remember that fellow that came from Alaska to see us a couple of months ago?” Mark asked.

Of course I remembered. I had been heavy into deprogramming at the time, though, and had stayed focused on writing while Mark visited with him and his sister. “Yes,” I answered. “He was as big as a grizzly bear and smart as a fox.”

“That’s the one,” Mark acknowledged. “His sister just contacted us to see if we want to do a cable TV interview with a friend of hers in Huntsville, Alabama. Apparently the information you turned in regarding the Johnny Lee Picnic scam and murder in Guntersville checked out. Between the details that were validated in Alabama, and those that her brother verified in Alaska, there is sufficient evidence for the broadcast. Do you want to do it?”

“Sure,” I replied. “But I am a bit concerned about going back into ‘NASA city USA[1]’, especially to do an expose’ on local TV.”

“No need to worry,” Mark assured me. “The political connections and support that you just gained are as strong as it gets. Besides, most folks in Alabama are not like the criminals you knew, and are reputed for their rebel attitudes and independence from the Feds instead. Alabama’s state motto is ‘We Dare Defend Our Rights’. You’re likely to find more like-minded people there than anywhere else in the country.”

“Let’s do it,” I said.

While we readied ourselves for our trip to Alabama, Sue Ford contacted us from California. “I am working with a group of therapists who would like to meet you,” she said.

“Are you working with them, or are they working with you?” Mark wisely asked, aware of Sue’s diagnosed ‘MPD’ condition.

“I am working on my PhD. in behavioral psychology,” she answered, avoiding the question. Mark waited. Sue cleared her throat. “They have questions, you have answers, and I have two airline tickets if you will come to California. Just say when, and I’ll cover all your expenses.”

“Wait a minute,” Mark said. “Who are these therapists and how did they learn about us?”

“Most of them worked the aftermath of the McMartin case, are familiar with mind control, and know you were in Northern California this past spring,” she answered. “Plus Rod told them about you when he was here.”

“That’s a lot of money being spent for a vague purpose,” Mark said, suspecting more cause behind her explanation. “Is there another reason?”

“I would like you to help me,” she admitted. “The more I researched and studied psychology, the less I healed.”

“You have to heal from the inside out,” Mark advised. “Not through outside input. Based on what I’ve seen, your memory may already be contaminated with other people’s experience. I’m not sure what I could do for you, especially since I am not a qualified therapist. Practicing without a license is a serious charge that I am not willing to face for anyone.”

“My offer still stands,” Sue told him. “There is a whole group of professionals out here that want to hear what you have to say, credentials or not. Think about it and let me hear from you.”

On the drive to Huntsville, we briefly discussed the possibility of traveling to California again. Yet it was on the way back after successfully completing the cable TV broadcast that we made our decision. Many doors had opened for us in the state of Alabama, and we were contemplating the possibility of eventually moving there.

“If we make any money through donations while we’re in California,” Mark said, “it might be enough to relocate. The support and protection Alabama offers seems too good to walk away from.”

“Maybe we could even have Kelly transferred there,” I hoped. “Abbott Jordan would cooperate with a plan like that.”

“It’s risky,” Mark said. “NASA still poses a threat even though the Governor is clean. For us, NASA’s backyard is a safe place to be. For Kelly, we’ll have to see what mental health has to offer. We’ll take it slow, and in the meantime I’ll accept that offer to fly out to California.”

When we arrived back at Mark’s mother’s house, she announced as usual, ”That man called again.”

“What man, mother,” Mark asked kindly, smoothing the hair from her eyes.

“That man with the newspaper.”

“What man with the newspaper?” Mark was curious now.

“Oh, you know,” Melba said.

Trying to be patient, Mark asked, “With the Tennessean? The Nashville Banner?”

“You know damn good and well what I’m talking about!” she retorted.

Mark threw up his hands. “If you think of it, mother, let me know.”

“How dare you talk to me like that!” She turned around and stomped back to her room, slamming the door.

“Welcome home,” I smiled, reaching for the teakettle. “How about a cup of tea?”

“Sure,” Mark answered as he thumbed through the stack of mail poking out of the trash can, retrieving envelopes addressed to us. “Hey, this one looks interesting,” he said, noticing the El Paso Times return address.

Mark walked down the hall to his mother’s bedroom and knocked gently on the door.

“Go away!” Melba called.

“Was ‘that man’ with the El Paso Times?” he asked her anyway.

“I told you he was! Go away!”

“Thanks, mother.” Mark walked back into the kitchen to show me the article that ran July 19, 1993 pertaining to a major cocaine bust at the El Paso border. A brief note accompanying it explained that the information we discussed at the Houston NCIN conference resulted in this bust. The reporter was fired for running the story, but it was too late. The news was already out, ‘thanks to us’. The front-page photo revealed hundreds of kilos of coke stamped “Clinton.”

“They don’t label cocaine,” I laughed.

Mark agreed, “Regardless, somebody in the chain is implicating Clinton’s involvement in the drug industry. The more anyone tries to prove this story is a hoax, the more they will find out it is the real thing. And no matter how you look at it, that’s a lot of coke!”

“Stories like this one could derail NAFTA,” I hoped. “If people realized our self-appointed government leaders are behind the ‘free trade’ of coke and heroin over the border, the ‘war on drugs’ could actually be won. NAFTA would no longer be a steppingstone to the New World Order, and we could share common ground with Mexicans in peace!”

"Unite with 'illegal *aliens'*?" Mark said, sarcastically using a socially engineered diversionary term intended to keep people divided. "You're such a 'liberal'."

"I do not fit in the confines of a socially engineered label," I playfully protested. "You're playing semantics with me. I'm saying that people need to put labels, semantics, and socially engineered divisions aside to unite against the bankers and technology spinning our world."

We took Sue Ford up on her offer, and were soon absorbing the attitudes and atmosphere of her wealthy Hollywood Hills suburb. The Clinton Administration's plan to divert, bore, confuse, and divide the people through revising the voluminous verbiage of NAFTA had little effect on Southern California's citizens. The locals weren't the least bit concerned over "Mexican's taking their jobs" or "illegal aliens" sneaking drugs into the country. It was accepted knowledge that the CIA ran the drug business, and to compete with them was suicidal. Perspectives were a bit more realistic so close to the shared border where Mexicans and Americans alike freely lived above propaganda's social engineering.

"People get more sun in their eyes here in California," Sue explained as she drove us from the airport to her apartment. "It clears their vision. That's why I wanted to bring you here, so you can tell us what we can do about what we are seeing."

"What would you like to see accomplished?" Mark asked.

"My therapist needs some direction," Sue answered. "She says she has gone as far with me as she can, and I know I'm still switching personas. She has agreed to meet with you tomorrow after you speak with the group of therapists I've assembled."

Inwardly, I groaned. Meeting with therapists all day while jetlagged did not sound pleasant to me. Mark must feel the trip, too, and would most likely prefer to not hit the ground running.

“I’m right in the midst of a divorce,” Sue continued. “I have to be in court the next day and would appreciate it if you would be an expert witness for me.”

“I’m no expert,” Mark began, “and I haven’t witnessed anything yet.”

“Oh yes you are!” Sue exclaimed. “I need you to explain about MK Ultra mind control’s Project Monarch.”

“I’m not even going to ask why,” Mark told her. “The answer is no. Absolutely no. You apparently brought me here under false pretense, and I refuse to compromise my integrity for your agenda.”

“I’ll pay you,” Sue began.

“That’s a bribe. Look, let’s get one thing straight,” Mark was smiling his dangerous smile already and we weren’t even to Sue’s apartment yet. “You can give me a donation proportionate to every second I spend giving you coping skills for your *dis*order, but I will *not* take your orders. I agreed to meet with your group of therapists, which I will do. And after meeting you, yes, I would like to talk with your therapist.”

We pulled into Sue’s gated community, and carried our bags up to her apartment. The apartment was oddly devoid of décor, personal effects, and the kind of triggers most DID multiples surround themselves with. “You can sleep on the futon,” she told us. “We’ll get an early start in the morning.”

Neither Mark nor I sensed any privacy and were uncomfortable discussing our immediate circumstances. There was no need to anyway.

The next morning after a nice breakfast of fresh California fruits and coffee, we drove to our Woodland Hills Office Building meeting. The group was small and comfortable, and we discussed everything from the McMartin case to Waco to the devastation in Marin County. We talked about the Clinton Administration, CIA cocaine and heroin ops, Poppy Bush’s widely known pedophilia, and mind control.

“We know mind control is the primary weapon system for ushering in the New World Order,” one therapist admitted. “What can we do about it?

How can we treat the survivors filling our offices? What do we do with their testimonies?”

“It’s not *what* is remembered that is important,” Mark began. “It’s *how* it is remembered that counts. Content is irrelevant until after the survivors heal. Then it’s up to them to choose what they want to do with their knowledge. Your job is simple. You don’t have to be an investigator, a lawyer, a judge, or jury. All you need to do is provide the tools for healing, and help them deal with reality along the way.”

“But reality is so horrible!” another therapist said. Her wide eyes indicated she was most likely suffering from PTSD, as was most everyone else in the room.

“It can be if it is dealt with emotionally,” Mark explained. “If it is dealt with logically, the emotionally incomprehensible becomes comprehensible and healing occurs. Reality becomes easy to deal with. Encourage your clients to write out their memory. The very act of moving a pen requires the logic portion of the brain, shifting compartmentalized memory over to logic as its being written out. This way, a victim need not suffer abreaction by reliving their experience and re-traumatizing themselves. Nor do they traumatize you by telling you about it! It appears to me that each of you could benefit by using this method to deal with reality yourselves and overcome PTSD.”

“We know we’re PTSDed!” another therapist chimed in. “We’ve diagnosed each other and held our own group therapy!”

“Group therapy is another point,” Mark said. “DID/MPDs are highly suggestible from trauma, and their memories are easily contaminated. They need to shut off the TV, put down the books, and go within to find their answers in order to write it out. Listening to other survivors only confuses and tangles their memories with everyone else’s.”

A therapist who agreed relayed a quick example. “I began one group therapy introducing myself as the therapist, and a client said, ‘My friend thought the brochure said you were ‘the rapist’ and wouldn’t come.’ This literal interpretation took on a life of it’s own, instantly eroding trust for me. Everyone present began talking about ‘the rapists’ and the whole session was disastrous.”

Mark chuckled in understanding. “Why hold group therapy anyway when each DID/MPD is a group within themselves?”

Everyone laughed. “Group therapy may be effective for some things,” Mark continued, “but it is counter productive for dissociatives.”

“I attend group therapy three times a week,” Sue said. “It’s comforting to me knowing others go through more hell than I do.”

“How can you compare yourself to others when you haven’t remembered what you’ve been through?” one therapist asked her. “Most people are traumatized by hearing what happened to others.”

“Enough so to PTSD,” another therapist added. “I’m going to start treating myself for PTSD using the methods Mark discussed. And group therapy for dissociatives is history in my office. No wonder it never produced positive results. I thought I was doing it wrong!”

“Has Mark determined if you’re a Project Monarch mind control victim?” someone asked Sue.

“That is a leading question,” Mark cautioned. “Anyone who is highly suggestible gravitates to such leading questions, which could result in false memory.”

“I need to talk with you about that,” one of the more prominent therapists said. “The False Memory Foundation is a significant problem. They can destroy minds and lives faster than we can heal them. Look what happened with the McMartin case.”

Everyone nodded in agreement. “Check the backgrounds of those who originated the foundation and you will find more CIA pedophiles than you would in a Catholic church,” a voice emphatically stated.

“It depends which Catholic church you’re referring to,” someone said, causing laughter to lighten the subject.

“We all could lose our license because of this cover-up organization,” a therapist said. “We really do need your advice.”

“Consider what I’ve already said,” Mark answered. “It’s not your job to be investigator, provide expert court testimony, or be judge and jury. Above all, do *not* act like an attorney and ask any leading questions *ever*. For example, rather than ask ‘was that daddy in the clown suit[2] who raped you?’ Ask, ‘who was in the clown suit?’ Rather than ask, ‘did he touch your private parts?’ Ask ‘what happened next?’ Never provide outside information or introduce terms like ‘Project Monarch.’ Don’t ask for ‘names and ages’ of alters, it furthers the dissociative divisions. Above all, never ask ‘how does that make you feel?’ They were dissociated from emotionally ‘feeling’ then, and associating with it now is misleading and counter productive to reintegration of their memories. Ask ‘what do you think?’ This stops abreaction dramatics. Since your clients will be writing out memory anyway, your questions need not be spontaneous and will be limited.”

“What if they ask us the questions?” one woman wanted to know. “I’ll use Sue as an example, if that’s OK with you.” Sue nodded. “She asked us what *we* knew about Project Monarch.”

“Turn the question back around. Ask her what she knows and *how* she learned it,” Mark replied. Mark turned to Sue. “How did you learn about it?”

“My therapist has documents…” she began.

“Wait.” Mark put up his hand to stop her, and turned back to the group. “Her therapist is obviously making a mistake right there sharing other people’s information and documents with her. If it is not information from the inside, ‘forget about it’,” he advised, exemplifying with literal terms. “Then, after you deal with your client, research it for yourself. If you know the therapist, phone him for copies of the documents and tip him to his error. All you therapists need to unite and re-educate each other. The False Memory Foundation is capitalizing on therapeutic error to discount all survivors’ testimony and cover up CIA pedophilic crime.”

“If we had known this during the McMartin case,” one therapist said, “the children would have been regarded as credible. They weren’t being asked the wrong questions; they were being asked the questions wrong. And the kids suffered the consequences for therapeutic ignorance. What you have taught us today must be incorporated into educating mental health professionals. I don’t know why they didn’t teach us in school…”

“Ewen Cameron,” someone injected. “Dr. Ewen Cameron, founder of the APA, worked for the CIA in MK Ultra and had cause to suppress this information! Leave it to someone from the Intelligence community to reveal the truth he suppressed. Considering that we’ve all been trained to only accept information from others with similar education credentials to ours, we’re fortunate to learn the truth. Thank you for sharing with us, Mark. We’ll all use our credentials to spread the word amongst our colleagues.”

Everyone nodded in agreement. After Mark met privately with several of the therapists, we drove over to the office of Sue’s therapist. Her primary concern was with the False Memory Foundation, who was threatening her license due to Sue’s case. “Whether they are covering up for the CIA or if I’ve done something wrong, either way I’ve done all I can for Sue. Maybe she needs to start over using your methods for healing.”

On the drive back to her apartment that evening, Sue stopped at a Convenience Market and bought several notebooks in which to write memories according to Mark’s methods.

Chapter 36

THANKS FOR THE FALSE MEMORIES

“I need a fresh start,” Sue was telling Mark. “With the money I was awarded in my divorce, I can afford to relocate. I want to be where you are, write out my memories, and heal. Rod is traveling back to the states to finish his book, and he can meet me in Tennessee just as easy as he can come here. I’ll help pay living expenses up to $500 a month, which is a fraction of my cost to live in this apartment. You could move out of your mother’s house and we’ll share an apartment.”

“Cathy and I are going to take a walk,” Mark told her. “I’ll give you an answer when we get back.”

We walked for hours. The pros and cons of Sue’s proposal were complex. “We could move to Alabama,” I began.

“For God’s sake we’d have to live with her,” Mark countered. Neither of us liked that idea. We kept walking and thinking.

“She could heal, and stop being a professional ‘victim’ or ‘survivor’,” I said. “Through your wisdom, she could learn like I did that blaming others and dwelling on the past is a cop out to living. Maybe she would even become an asset to society.”

“Sue is who she is, multiple or not,” Mark said. “Reintegrated, she will still be Sue only more focused.”

“Since her memory is contaminated, do you believe she can still reintegrate?” I asked.

“That’s the pertinent question,” Mark answered. “I was talking with Dr. Colin Ross of the ISS&D[1], and he was saying that the best way to counter the False Memory Foundation is to infiltrate them and heal them from the inside out, so-to-speak. In the process of our conversation, I told him about Sue and raised the question, ‘which is worse, being a victim of abuse, a victim of bad therapy, or both?’” He seems to believe that is irrelevant with application of proper healing techniques.”

“You could prove that theory by encouraging her to heal by writing out her memory.”

“She claims she has been writing out her memories for years,” Mark informed me. “The journals she presented to me to review were comprised of lines from movies, books, and a half dozen old conspiracy stories that have circulated around therapists’ offices. She would need to learn how to accurately write out memory from within without outside input. You two wouldn’t be able to discuss your victimizations.”

“She shouldn’t vocalize while she’s writing anyway,” I reminded him. “I won’t have a problem not talking with her.” I smiled.

“I hear you,” Mark said. “That’s what concerns me. What price would we pay to live with her and help her heal? And heal from what? Linguistically her subconscious language indicates she is role-playing a mind control victim to draw attention to a dissociative disorder. She either is deliberately perpetrating fraud or is indeed a victim of false memories from her therapists.”

“If we go to DC to testify before Congress like we are supposed to in August,” I pointed out, “maybe we’ll be so focused on that it won’t matter.”

“This is what we had hoped for, in a way,” Mark thought aloud. “Why does this open door look like a brick wall?” Tears slid down his face. “I’d rather share a home with just you. I’ve looked forward to that ever since we moved into my mother’s.”

As I wiped the tears from his cheeks, they began sliding down mine. “Me, too,” I admitted. “Maybe this is a stepping stone.”

“Or a stumbling block,” Mark replied. We sat down on the curb under a streetlight and thought it over, dreading the decision that seemed to already be made.

Sue leased an SUV sports utility vehicle to pull a small trailer over 2000 miles to Tennessee, and handed Mark the keys. The drive across country seemed to take an eternity, despite Sue quietly writing most of the way. While I gave Mark a break and drove awhile, he looked over Sue’s recent journaling.

“This reads like a fantasy story,” Mark told her.

“You’re looking at content,” Sue accused.

“No,” Mark countered, “I’m referring to how you’ve written this. What you write out is for your benefit only. It is not written to be read by others.

Actual deprogramming looks more like…” Mark looked around for one of my ever-present notebooks. Turning to me he asked, “May I show Sue what deprogramming looks like?”

“Of course,” I answered. “My notebook is in the backseat.”

Mark retrieved it and randomly opened it. “See how disjointed this is?” Mark asked her, pointing to the side notes, varied handwriting from different personas, incomplete thoughts, and notes of intrusive memory flashes. “It is not written for anyone to read, but rather to pull down compartmentalized barriers in the brain. By writing out memory this way, you’ll regain access to all of your mind at once.”

“I never fill in the blanks with what ‘might’ have happened in order for it to read smoothly,” I elaborated. “Eventually, the picture comes together much the way a jigsaw puzzle does. By asking myself questions like ‘how did I get there’ and ‘where did I go afterwards’, I gain more pieces and eventually the memory is complete. It is important to write out one memory compartment, or one personas' memory, and then expand the insight."

By the time we arrived back in Nashville, Sue was actually writing out memory. She continued writing while Mark and I packed up our few belongings for our move to Alabama. We kenneled our red Chow guard dog, Tong, our two remaining pet raccoons Tycoon[2] and Marty, and our huge white wolf dog who recently had adopted us, and put them in the Pacer. Then we caravanned vehicles for the short journey to the tiny, two bedroom house we had located on the outskirts of Huntsville. The quasi-rural neighborhood would be ideal for memory recovery, while the lack of big city distractions would allow for inward focus.

Mark and I used the house's tiny office for compiling the documents and paperwork we would need to testify before Congress in August. When the Permanent Select Committee of Intelligence Oversight officially postponed our testimony until the next spring, Mark and I shifted our focus to generating income instead. Sue's contribution to household expenses rarely covered the rent and utilities, which left no extra cash for fuel to travel to see Kelly in Memphis. Nor did we have cash for groceries. Sue's personal wealth was extravagant, yet the gourmet foods she stored in our refrigerator were off limits to us. When her constant additions to her wardrobe overfilled her closets, there was plenty of room in ours.

Mark and I were resourceful, and together we began repairing and reconditioning old motorcycles for resale. There was nothing Mark couldn't fix, and it exercised my brain just to work beside him. We enjoyed working together as much as playing together, and this means of generating enough income to sustain us was a pleasure. I knew there was no limit to the amount of money Mark could make under normal circumstances, but our situation was not yet conducive to routine living.

One time when we went to visit Kelly, another child had asked her why we didn't bring her presents. Kelly quickly replied, "My parents are too busy making a difference to make a buck." Indeed, that's exactly what we were doing.

Occasionally Sue and I would take a break from work to play tennis together. Competitive sports were not my interest, but I enjoyed the physical challenge of tennis. After playing for hours one hot afternoon, we sat down in the shade to drink our water. I relayed a story to Sue about a tennis tournament I'd been in. "While Alex Houston played golf in the annual Charlie Pride Pro-Am Golf Tournament in Albuquerque, New Mexico, I joined the ladies for a tennis tournament. My partner[3] and I made it all the way to the championship finals. We ended up in second place after a two-hour play off because we were laughing so hard at our opponents. They were angry and disgusted with us for laughing, and the madder they got the more we laughed."

"That's not funny," Sue said.

"It was funny because the water coolers were filled with beer, and neither of us drank beer," I told her. "But the Albuquerque afternoon sun was so hot, and we were so thirsty we drank some. It went straight to our heads and cost us the tournament. Having such a good time meant far more than any trophy ever could have."

"Didn't they have coke?" she asked.

"Only the cocaine variety," I answered. From my experience, CIA cocaine ops were what Charlie Pride[4]'s tournaments were really all about. Part of the cash generated was laundered through his bank in Dallas, Texas. Pride was tied into the same Savings and Loan scandals that Neil Bush[5] had been caught in. Even Bush Jr.'s baseball "bud" Nolan Ryan[6] owned a bank associated with CIA black ops. Additionally, the drug running I was involved with was channeled through Albuquerque's LA Dodger baseball training camp and profits laundered through local Catholic charities. Charlie Pride's annual Pro-Am Golf Tournaments covered it all. With respect to Sue's mode of heightened suggestibility, I kept these details to myself.

"I won a tennis tournament once," Sue told me. "Reagan met me afterwards and accessed my sex programming."

“Did you write this out?” I asked, concerned with Sue voicing possible memory.

“Of course,” she assured me. “Reagan bought me drinks and dinner, and then we took a long romantic walk on the beach.”

“Why did you get to eat and drink while under mind control?” I asked. I knew that three days of sleep, food, and water deprivation were an integral part of MK Ultra trauma based mind control, especially before being prostituted to the likes of Reagan.

“Why did you get to drink at the tennis tournament?” She countered.

“Because we had been there for a week, and this was the last day,” I answered. “I wasn’t programmed for the tennis tournament, Houston just wanted me out of the way for a while.”

“Well,” Sue said defensively, “I can’t help it if Reagan didn’t like you and that he was in love with me.”

When we returned home, I told Mark about the conversation. “I didn’t mean to be therapeutically incorrect opening up conversation,” I told him. “And I didn’t know how to respond to what she was saying.”

“Reagan doesn’t love you,” Mark teased. “How does that make you feel?”

“Between the tortures and traumas,” I laughed, “I don’t think Reagan liked me any better than Cheney or Bush did. Why does Sue say things like that?”

“Ego,” Mark answered.

“What is that?” I wondered. My own ego had been shattered before it developed, leaving me to find my true identity at soul level after I’d deprogrammed.

“Perception of self,” Mark simply defined.

“Perception of self based on social engineering and what others say?” I asked. It seemed that ego was outside of self while true-to-soul identity was within.

“Sue’s massive ego makes it difficult for her to heal completely,” Mark told me. “It is a challenge for her to deprogram when she is constantly comparing herself to others. I’ll have a talk with her about this again tonight.”

Later that evening when Mark brought up the conversation, Sue demanded, “Tell me the components of mind control, then.”

“You need to remember for yourself,” Mark encouraged her, just in case there was some remote possibility that she had been exposed to mind control.

“I have a degree in psychology,” Sue reminded him. “I have a right to this information. Besides, Rod needs it for his book so he can include accurate information on mind control.”

“I’ve already talked about this with Rod by phone,” Mark told her. “And he agreed not to discuss it with you until after you reintegrate.”

Sue stomped to her room and slammed her door. Over the next few weeks, she continued to reintegrate and heal from incest despite herself. Rod came to visit as planned, and expressed more excitement over Sue’s healing process than she did.

“This is absolutely remarkable!” he exclaimed. “I can see she has fused and may even be reintegrated by the time my book comes out!” Rod was in the final edit stages of his novel on mind control, and asked Mark for his input. They spent hours going over the manuscript, which provided Mark a prime opportunity to give Rod coping skills for the childhood abuse he had endured. Rod’s trust for Mark was as pure as his commitment to helping others.

One evening we were all gathered around the dining room table celebrating Rod’s completion of his book.

“How ‘bout a beer?” Mark offered, peering into the refrigerator.

Rod declined. “No thank you. I’m high on life.”

Mark laughed. “I used to get high on life but I built up a tolerance.”

We all laughed, enjoying Rod’s last night in Alabama. Sue was solemn, however. “You all act as though you believe you can change the world,” she accused.

“Actually I’d rather just make a difference,” I replied lightly. “Isn’t that what life is for? To make a positive difference?”

“I’d want to make some kind of contribution to humanity,” Rod said, “even if I had never heard of mind control.”

“It’s not so easy turning the negative of mind control into a positive,” Mark agreed. “Raising awareness does make a difference, though.”

“Since my experience was only incest,” Sue complained, “I guess I have nothing to contribute.”

“Sue,” Rod reminded her. “You healed. You have fused and are on your way to total recovery. You live with two of the finest people on the planet, and have contributed to my book through your experience.”

“I want my name on the cover then,” Sue demanded.

“OK,” Rod told her. “I’ll tell you what. If you’ll do the leg work on getting this book printed and pay half the printing cost, you can add your name to the cover.”

Sue brightened, excited at the prospects. “Really?” she asked. “My name can be on the cover of *Starshine*?”

“Right after mine,” Rod smiled. “You’ve got the manuscript right here. When you solidify a deal to have it printed, I’ll wire you half the money.”

The day after Rod returned to Hawaii, Sue was sitting at the kitchen table asking what alias she should use on the book. “Why not use your real name?” I asked, not comprehending why someone who had suffered from a dissociative identity disorder would want to create a new identity.

“For legal reasons,” she responded. “’Brice Taylor’ sounds like a real name.” It never occurred to Mark, me, or Rod that Sue would eventually remove Rod’s name from his book entirely, ironically change the title to “*Thanks for the Memories,”* and keep all the sales profits. Sue’s conniving means were more focused than ever now that she was reintegrated.

“You were right!” I told Mark. “Before you started working with her, you said that ‘Sue is who she is, and reintegrated she would still be Sue only be more focused!’”

“I really wish I wasn’t right as often as I am,” Mark said.

“But this is important information for mental health professionals just the same,” I said, still excited. “For one, a person can heal from false memories; and for two, all multiples are not nice when they do heal. Why do you think she is stealing Rod’s book?”

“I want to know why she is creating a new identity for herself,” Mark answered.

One afternoon after playing a round of tennis, Sue and I were talking under the shade tree. “I knew Michael Jackson,” she told me.

Considering that she was from Southern California, that seemed viable enough until she added, “I had sex with him all the time.”

“Sue,” I reminded her, “Michael Jackson was busted for pedophilia last December.”

“If he was a pedophile, he would be in prison,” she stated.

“It’s sad that his reputed MK Ultra mind control victimization has been overlooked by the press,” I responded. “I really thought mind control would penetrate media censorship this time, and still cover-up surpassed justice. Mark says the ‘gloved one’ is a huge cash cow that they haven’t finished milking into poverty. He really needs to be stopped now for his sake and the children’s sake. Understanding his circumstances would make a world of difference.”

Among those Mark and I networked with, Elizabeth Taylor was highly respected for her quiet activism against mind control. It was no surprise when she whisked Michael off to a highly specialized hospital in the UK to have him deprogrammed. The media spotlight was still on him for his blatant pedophilic actions, however, and the CIA could not allow for the press to discover the causation. LaToya had already been silenced, and there would be no limits to how far the government would go to cover this up. When Mark received a tip from an Intelligence contact to watch a televised broadcast at 3AM, we tuned in. Elizabeth Taylor’s press agent was raising public awareness to his and Ms. Taylor’s plight. Their lives were on the line since the CIA had stormed her residence and physically extracted Michael Jackson before he could be deprogrammed. Once again mind control was covered up at all costs.

“Mind control is the perfect defense for any crime,” Sue speculated, smiling.

I shuddered at the look in her eye. “When someone gains awareness while healing from any level of dissociation, they become responsible for their actions.”

I packed up our tennis equipment and drove back to the house to tell Mark what had transpired. He was as appalled as I was. “She plans to release

Rod’s fiction book as her reality so she can use mind control as a defense against any crime.”

“Mind control is not a defense,” Mark said. “It’s a factor.”

“Against what?” I wondered. Stealing Rod’s book? We didn’t wait to find out, and asked her to leave immediately.

Chapter 37

TRUTH MAKES U.S. FREE

One evening we received a phone call from our friend in Alaska. “There is an herbal tea on the market that may actually heal your digestion,” he announced excitedly. “It revives intestinal action, bringing it back to life.” My tummy still gave me difficulties at times, and I was eager to try this tea. “It is pricey, so I’ll have my sister bring some to you since she lives nearby anyway,” he assured us. Sure enough, she brought me a ‘lifetime’ supply of the tea, which worked wonders for my health. These two wise and thoughtful friends touched our lives in many ways.

They introduced us to their circle of friends, which seemed to infinitely expand like ripples in a pond, encompassing good ol’ boys and political activists all the way through State and National politics. It was healing for me to encounter so many aware people on so many social levels who were actively making a positive difference with their knowledge. Everyone I met without exception held these two in highest esteem and respect. Among those we met was an attorney by the name of Larry Becraft. Becraft was primarily focused on tax issues[1], yet provided invaluable insight and advice on our situation.

Larry Becraft is an ambitious, tall, handsome man with a powerful presence and booming voice. Never have I heard anyone speak so forcefully to say the gentlest, wisest things. Becraft strode all the way across his Huntsville office in two giant steps, exercising his agility to maneuver through strategically scattered stacks of papers and legal documents to clear off a few chairs.

“Have a seat,” he boomed, flashing his boyish smile. I watched him like a bug under glass, curious how any attorney could possibly be clean. Larry

Becraft was highly respected and widely known, and he and Mark got along as though they'd been friends for years.

"How 'bout a cup of coffee?" he offered, searching underneath a pile of papers. I suspected he was searching for the coffee maker and declined. "Ah hah!" he boomed, pleased with his discovery of an ashtray. He promptly lit a deliciously fragrant cigar, offering one to Mark. "This clutter is organized," he explained. "I don't have a secretary or a separate room for filing all these papers while I work on them, nor do I have the time to properly present myself as a conventional attorney." Becraft's unpretentiousness was appealing. His long legs stretched comfortably out in front of him while his toes wiggled free in a pair of sandals.

"I appreciate you taking the time to meet with us today," Mark assured him.

"I'm glad for the break, actually," Becraft said. "Ever since I set precedent in that groundbreaking tax case against the Feds, I've had more cases than I can juggle."

"It looks like you're in the same position we are," Mark told him, looking around at the obvious lack of funding. "People wake up when they're hit in the pocketbook, so by the time they turn to you or me for help, they're broke."

Becraft flashed that smile again. What judge could possibly resist that winning smile? "We aren't awarded cash when we win a case, either," he elaborated. "We just keep the Feds from helping themselves to more of our money. It's hard to make ends meet under circumstances like these, but as you know, success isn't always measured in dollars. Someday, someone with money will come along and empower us to accomplish even more for the people of this country."

"We just received noticed that our testimony before Congress has been postponed again," Mark told him. "With Bud Cramer[2] on the Oversight panel, we've probably been postponed indefinitely."

“You need to be prepared for that contingency,” Becraft advised. “Compile all that information you were prepared to present to Congress and put it in book form.”

“We’re not authors,” Mark protested.

“This isn’t about writing a book,” he wisely explained, “it’s about having pertinent information ready to release en masse.”

“With certain members of Congress censored from hearing it for ‘reasons of national security,’ how can we release it to the public?”

“This country needs positive change through public awareness,” Becraft answered. “Congress obviously isn’t going to make the necessary changes, but the people will. Everyday they are waking up and gaining a point of reference for understanding what you and Cathy have to say. This case should be tried before the court of public opinion anyway so its not just all swept under the rug.”

Becraft paused a minute, thinking. Then he lifted a corner of the Turkish rug covering the wooden floor of his office and extracted a handful of papers. He smiled and laid them on a stack near his desk. “I knew I’d find those,” he muttered before continuing. “Footnote and reference as many facts as you can.”

“Look, Larry,” Mark told him. “That won’t be so easy. For one, most of the information Cathy has reported is still classified.”

“She hasn’t taken an oath of secrecy,” he countered. “A ‘Rite-to-Remain-Silent’ program does not constitute an oath. Laws of sedition do not bind her. If you can’t prove the facts as right, let researchers try to prove them wrong. I already know they can’t find fault with her facts.”

“Dates and times are most likely off a bit, though,” Mark argued. “Since she had no concept of time and consequently no sense of distance under mind control, certain dates and places still need validating through legitimate investigation. We intended to point that out when we presented the facts to Congress."

"So tell the people that," he said. "The facts can all be validated through expanded thinking and concern for truth. The point is people need to know about mind control. They need to know what is happening to this country's education, mental health, and justice systems. They need to know what the New World Order agenda is about before NAFTA makes economic slaves of all of us. Armed with truth, there is no way to lose."

Mark nodded in agreement. "Truth is mightier than the sword."

"And granddad's squirrel gun," he added. "The militias need to know what they are up against in order to be as effective as this country needs them to be."

"Granddad's squirrel gun is no match for DARPA," Mark agreed. "Squirrel guns in the hands of potentially 200 million people have the Feds sweating, though."

Becraft smiled. "They won't be able to disarm this country. There are too many people already awake, aware, and armed."

"If the latest TV polls tell the people they are disarmed, they might blindly follow it," Mark speculated. "People are what they're told, and they love to be told what the majority is doing so they can do it too. It's a socially engineered herd mentality."

"Follow the leader," Becraft nodded, setting down his cigar. "Only the leader is an illusion. A lie. I'm telling you, we need to get the truth out there."

"When the people lead, leaders follow," I quipped.

"The people better get to leading," Mark added, standing up to leave.

“Get that book out,” Becraft said.

On the way home, we discussed Becraft’s advice. Commenting on his character was first, though.

“I’ve never seen an attorney with true-to-soul projection,” I told Mark as he started the drive back home. “He is purely unpretentious.”

“I’ve never seen one so intelligent,” Mark said. “And wise. Rather than perceive Larry Becraft as an attorney, I see him as a strong man with integrity and a fine sense of justice.”

“And a brilliant mind,” I added.

“His intelligence is off the scale,” Mark agreed. “That must be how he can stay so clean swimming in a pool of scumbag attorneys. He’s definitely unique, and I sure am glad to have legal advice I can trust.”

“So how do we write this book?” I asked.

“Like he said, we’ll write it from the documents and deprogramming notes,” Mark reiterated. “We’ll pick and choose pertinent validated facts according to what will best give people a clear understanding of mind control. Knowledge is our only defense against it, so we will make sure the knowledge we share is comprehensive.”

We drove in silence, thinking through the task at hand.

Finally, I said, “We need to know the pulse of the nation, what it is that is waking folks up and why.”

“Radio is an excellent medium for determining that,” Mark reminded me. “It is a resurrected technological artifact whose time has gone and come again. Now radio has fast become the voice of the people.[3]”

“Maybe by speaking out on some of these radio shows, taking questions, and getting feedback we’ll have a better feel for the pulse of the nation,” I ventured. “Through networking like we have, we already know key issues with which people are concerned.”

“Like Global Education?” Mark elaborated.

“Exactly,” I responded. “We know many people are home schooling their children since the education system is failing so miserably in the areas of applicable intelligence and morality.”

“We know hundreds of kids are missing or are being returned to abusers by a failed justice system,” Mark continued. “We know militias are gathering strength, that people refuse to pay taxes to a government that doesn’t represent them, and that the CIA has taken their drug war to our streets. Plus video games are creating violence the same way they erode critical analysis for combat in the military. These are all points of reference many people are gaining.”

“People seem to be aware of the Masonic connection,” I commented.

“We should be careful with that,” Mark warned. “Most Masons don’t even know what is going on until they get higher up in the organization.”

“Like 33rd degree?” I asked, not really understanding the levels of Free Masonry I was exposed to throughout my MK Ultra victimization. “Byrd was 33rd degree. So was Reagan.”

“Even that isn’t so black and white,” Mark elaborated. “Byrd climbed his way up, and Reagan was given an honorary degree through the global elite. Either way, the 33rd degree is granted as an honor rather than earned.”

“What about Traficant?” I asked. “I know he is a Mason, only he’s connected into the Order of the Rose branch. And he’s not even a Jesuit that I know of. What about VanderJagt and Ford? They were part of my grandpa’s Masonic Blue Lodge in Michigan that launched me into MK

Ultra. I’m not really sure where the Order of the Rose and Free Masonry converge. Especially since the Catholics pretend to oppose Masons.”

“Catholics oppose Masons the same way they oppose satanism,” Mark observed. “The faction of Catholics you were exposed to need the negatives to create a need for their solutions and visa versa.”

Talking about it seemed to be clarifying the confusion. “The Mormons I knew were exactly the same way! The only secret society I know of that spanned Mormons, Catholics, CIA, Jesuits, and Masons was the Order of the Rose.”

“That would be your answer then.”

“But people only have a point of reference for Masons,” I complained. “Or for the Illuminati, which I never even heard discussed around DC. How will people know what I’m talking about when I say ‘Order of the Rose’?”

“People absolutely *must* expand their knowledge,” Mark pointed out. “They need to think out-of-the-box.”

“The TV box?”

“No,” Mark chuckled. “Well, yes, that too. I was referring to the box social engineering has locked them into. In order for them to effectively combat the invisible menace that has permeated society, they need to learn to recognize it. Labels don’t get it. Even as we are speaking, you qualify ‘Catholics’ and ‘the Catholics you were exposed to.’ We’ve talked about various levels of Masonry. People want to point at one certain group because they’ve become lazy in their thinking. To realize it is more than just one group, and that the individuals comprising the groups have various levels of knowledge and involvement, and that those individuals are all on their own learning path and may expand out of their current Need-to-Know, takes a bit more thought than some people can think to give.”

“People need discernment,” I agreed. “They need spiritual evolution before they incite revolution. How are we going to explain this in the book?”

“We won’t,” Mark answered. “We’ll give them the absolute facts and let them figure it out. With the meteorical rise of NSA’s internet they can now instantly look such information up for themselves.”

I gulped. Could people wake up in time? Could they gather their strength of spirit? “Wisdom outthinks a criminal mind every time,” I ventured.

“Truth makes u.s free,” Mark said, turning onto the county road leading to our house. “Let’s arm them with truth and we’ll have done all we can.”

Chapter 38
PULSE OF THE NATION

Key people were being murdered by the Clinton Administration at such an alarming rate that the term “suicided” evolved into “Arkacided.” Arkansas, Clinton’s home state, was littered in bodies and awash in the blood of both Bill’s and Hillary’s associates. When the Clintons took office in the White House, the war zone that always accompanied them extended to DC. An infamous document known as the ‘Clinton Hit List’ began to circulate among the people of the United States. Law enforcement was forced into protecting a corrupt system rather than the people, and the corporate controlled media was cowering to censorship. Citizens quickly learned to inform and protect themselves while militias organized and grew in an effort to meet the escalating needs of the people.

Bill Clinton’s Mena Airport drug operation spawned more deaths than just the infamous murder of drug dealer Barry Seal[1]. Two teenage boys, Kevin Ives and Don Henry, were murdered after apparently stumbling onto the Mena drug operation[2]. Their remains were found on the railroad tracks in accordance with Wayne Cox’s m.o.[3] At least six people investigating or attempting to expose this horrendous crime were murdered, still in accordance with Cox’s m.o.[4] I had already reported to law enforcement that I had witnessed Cox murdering people on the same pivotal stretch of railroad tracks in the course of Bill Clinton’s Mena CIA drug ops. At great risk to his life, Arkansas Deputy Sheriff John Brown confirmed those murders and more around Mena. Few survived the Mena massacres until pertinent documentation circulated among the people[5] thanks to the efforts of concerned civil servants like John Brown. Since then, John Brown has become an elected Sheriff.

Clinton corruption emanating from Arkansas stunk so bad that an Independent Council was formed to investigate the criminal activity.

While most US citizens sought to arm themselves with truth, some felt hopeless and became desperate. August 13, 1994, a small Cessna airplane deliberately slammed into the White House. Subsequently, the American people lost more rights. Patriot rallies were growing in numbers and frequency, including key gatherings such as the Branch Davidian memorial in Waco that was intended to be an annual event. “We Want This Country Back[6]” and “Just Say No to the N.W.O.” were cries that resounded across the country, yet the voice of the people was replaced in the media by DARPA generated social engineering propaganda.

Blood flowed from the pulse of the nation, and only truth could heal the wound. Mark and I obtained a computer that was little more than an electronic typewriter, and began writing our first draft of *TRANCE Formation of America* according to Becraft’s suggestion. Rarely did we take a break from this task, as we felt a strong need and urgency to contribute what we knew to humanity. To do anything less would make us a part of the problem rather than part of the solution. Our choice was clear.

Meanwhile, I received a letter from my court appointed attorney Jean Crowe September 16, 1994. Abbott Jordan’s recommendations to have Kelly transferred to the best therapy[7] in the country resulted in dispute from her abusers. ACCT, the oversight group who had transferred Kelly to Charter Lakeside and Abbott Jordan’s care, intervened on yet another placement for Kelly. This time she was transferred to a Christian based institution in Knoxville, Tennessee called Jabneel. Jabneel was closer in proximity to our new residence in Alabama, yet I was distraught over Kelly’s being transferred from Abbott Jordan’s care. Admittedly he had accomplished all he could with Kelly without necessary supportive technological remedies, yet his compassion and understanding proved invaluable. Nevertheless, Kelly was transferred and Mark and I immediately went to see her and to meet with her new caregivers.

The warmth, compassion, and kindness with which we were met at Jabneel were encouraging. Children were the focus of Jabneel’s staff rather than federal funding, which meant they could not easily be threatened, bribed, or coerced into cover-up. Kelly was devastated that she had not been returned to her loving family and was still in a holding pattern. She was ready for positive progress, and Jabneel looked like more of the same to her. We walked outside to talk.

"We can talk free!" I exclaimed, while Mark tended to staff inside. "I don't know who these people are, but they obviously care about you and our family unity."

Suddenly, Kelly looked up and brightened. "A horse!" she exclaimed, slowly moving toward the fence that separated her from the stallion. The stallion pricked up his ears and his eyes softened as he walked toward her. *The Horse Whisperer*[8] had yet to be published, and Monty Roberts[9] was relatively unknown. Yet Kelly's ability to communicate with animals, especially horses, was a natural. All it takes is true-to-soul humility[10], and Kelly's was evident.

She looked at me, her eyes dancing. No words were exchanged since she and I did not require them for communication any more than she and the stallion did. She slipped under the fence to tenderly caress her new friend. The stallion appeared to be as pleased as she was. "Maybe this won't be such a bad place after all," Kelly announced when she crawled back under the fence.

By the time Mark and I left Jabneel, we felt confident that Kelly would be cared for. This was small consolation for not raising her ourselves in our loving care, yet it helped all of us to deal with the adverse circumstances.

We resumed writing as quickly as we arrived back in Alabama. Progress seemed slow since we were eager to release the truths we were privy to. The need for information continued to escalate while America was being scrutinized globally for it's corporate driven political criminal corruption that was oozing around the globe.

The warring and economic hazards that had been generated for decades since John F. Kennedy was assassinated paralleled the adverse environmental impact. Bush Sr.'s noncompliance[11] with the 1992 Earth Summit in Brazil left the rest of the world astounded by US apathy, while HAARP and global warming remained unchecked. Tides were turning, glaciers were melting, rain forests were burning, ocean reefs were dying, storms were raging, and that was only the beginning. The Clinton

Administration was not helping to save the planet either. Senator Byrd's "Clean Air and Water Act" continued to line his pockets with payoffs while corporations polluted both air and water, and environmentalists were portrayed as moronic terrorists by the media.

Spooks from around the world began contacting us. Mark's reputation as a measuring stick for who is honest, who is corrupt, and who is an infil*traitor* now extended out of the country. His integrity and tenacity were infinite, earning him the respect of all who knew him. "You've become an urban legend," a spook told him. "At a time when the rest of the world needs to see an American hero emerge from its ashes, you rise like a phoenix."

Mark was never one to adhere to such images. He was too busy. When he began to feel the weight of the world on his shoulders, he turned to a respected friend and mentor. "We've got to go to DC," he told me.

I gulped, but did not question his decision. He certainly knew the pros and cons of our traveling into Washington, DC. Not only had I survived my preconceived terror on our first trip into Huntsville, Alabama, we now lived there in relative safety. Besides, I consoled myself that we would get to see Kelly in Knoxville on the way back from DC.

It was early December when we drove up to Colonel Fletcher Prouty's mansion in the DC suburb of Alexandria, Virginia and knocked on the door. No answer. "He's expecting us," Mark told me. "You stay here and I'll go around front and ring the bell." I waited, assuming Mark had roused him. A few minutes later, I heard him approach the door where I stood. He swung it open, warmly inviting me in to join him and Mark.

I gasped and nearly fell back down the steps. Fletcher Prouty looked amused, the corners of his mouth turning up and disappearing in his wise, wrinkled face. His eyes twinkled bright, flashing white light like a laser penetrating my being. His energy was more powerful than any I have ever encountered, and it was an energy of pure love. Again, he invited me in. I found my footing this time, and gratefully went inside.

Fletcher Prouty's sitting room was an elaborate library of highly polished rose wood, with books stacked haphazardly everywhere. Obviously his personal library was well used and not intended for ornamental display. "I want to see *TRANCE* in my library soon," he told us, motioning us into easy chairs. Mark sat across from him where they could look each other in the eye as they talked, so close that I could not hear a word from where I sat. Did Col. Prouty know my hearing was defective? It was a profound privilege, regardless, just to sit in the same room while these two wise spooks conversed. Apparently they knew each other well. As their conversation became animated, I still couldn't hear a thing and smiled to myself. Undoubtedly Fletcher Prouty did know this, and had held private conversations in front of others before. He was a spook's spook, and I felt as though I had just entered a Robert Ludlum[12] novel.

He stood up, moving with the kind of fluid blur of agility that only martial artists knew, and picked up a book from his desk. He pulled a pen from his pocket and wrote in the book, handing it to me with a smile. "Thank God you survived," he said, and sat back down to talk further with Mark.

I looked at the cover of his book. I read: *The Secret Team, the CIA and its Allies in Control of the United States and the World* by L.Fletcher Prouty[13], Col.U.S.A.F. (Ret.)[14] Every spook I had ever met was "retired," I mused. The back cover read:

"…he (Prouty) spent his last nine years of service in the Pentagon as the official Focal Point Officer--first for the Air Force, and then for the entire Department of Defense with the CIA. All CIA military activities were thus channeled through him. Not being a CIA man, he was exempt from taking the oath of secrecy. Being the Focal Point Officer put him in a very privileged position: in effect, Prouty has far more knowledge of CIA activities than almost all members of that organization."

Wow. I had had no clue, and certainly never encountered the likes of Fletcher Prouty while in the Pentagon with Dick Cheney[15]. I only knew a bit of his history; that Fletcher Prouty had worked very closely with JFK[16] and was deployed to the South Pole at the time of the assassination to ensure he was out of the way. At the same time, Prouty notes that George Bush, Sr. was in Dallas. I wanted to know more. Prouty asserted that Kennedy's assassination in essence signaled a hostile take-over of the United States, shifting power from the Presidency to the CIA. Reality sunk in while I sat in his library. Fletcher Prouty could make a world of difference with what he knew and learned while earning the confidence of the Secret Government from his Pentagon position.

In the 1992 Preface to the Second Edition of *The Secret Team*, Prouty wrote:

"Like it or not, we now live in a new age of 'One World'… This is the fundamental game of the Secret Team. They have the power because they control secrecy and secret intelligence…"

This man "thanks God that *I* survived" when his knowledge and insight could ultimately change the world for the better? If only people knew that this man who held the key to America's future was pure love energy in motion. Wisdom. Peace. The truths he knew indeed would set us free. And Fletcher Prouty was revealing all to anyone with eyes to see and ears to hear.[17]

Mark and I left Fletcher Prouty's residence, and decided to lighten up by taking a few photos around DC before returning to Alabama. Since we were already in the vicinity, we drove by the CIA first and acted like ignorant tourists clicking pictures. When CIA security reprimanded us and demanded the film as we knew they would, Mark laughingly reminded them, "The CIA doesn't own the highway, do they?" and left. We took photos of the Department of Justice where "The Price of Freedom is Eternal Vigilance" is carved in stone. Walking across the mall to the Smithsonian, we saw a few vendors selling forbidden souvenirs. We bought several bumper stickers including "DARE to keep the CIA off drugs" in response to their popular "DARE to keep kids off drugs" program. I chose one that read

"DARE to think for yourself" and we even bought the ever-popular "We're Not in Kansas Anymore[18]" bumper sticker for posterity. Mark laughingly held up a tee shirt for me imprinted with the FBI's Federal Witness Protection Program emblem and the words "You Don't Know Me." The Feds certainly didn't know me, or they would have realized I would speak out and tell their criminal secrets.

"I'll take you to a nice restaurant for dinner," Mark said. Of all the times I had been in Washington, DC during the Reagan Bush Administration, I had never once been allowed to eat due to mind control. Mark knew this, and opted for a fine seafood restaurant reputed to be the best in DC. We counted out the last of our spending money, and went inside Phillips' Restaurant.

"The name is right," I said, referring to Mark's gourmet chef abilities. The dinner was good but I'd been spoiled by the best for years, and I realized for the first time that going out to dinner would always be secondary to what I could eat at home.

On the long drive home, silence was as comfortable as our conversations. A few memories had surfaced as though they were yesterday after being to so many familiar places, and I wrote. My programming was no longer accessible, and I did not trigger the way I used to. The bits and pieces I remembered now only filled in the blanks, rarely even changing my perceptions. We talked very little about Mark's conversation with Fletcher Prouty, focusing only on the strong points. Col. Prouty looked forward to the release of *TRANCE* since he, like Becraft, could not foresee certain members of Congressional Intelligence Oversight allowing us to testify in April as planned. Prouty shared former President Truman's disdain over the 1947 National Security Act, and diligently sought to have it repealed. Our case was one more reason why he opposed the National Security Act. Ironically considering the position he held in the Pentagon for years, Prouty was a proponent of truth and denounced secrets above all else.

"On *The Secret Team*'s Acknowledgement page," I ventured, "I noticed reference to a TV producer by the name of Al Levin."

“He and his bother Marc Levin are a powerful team working behind the scenes,” Mark answered before I completed my question. “Blowback Productions[19] will undoubtedly continue to emerge as a true voice of the people.”

Knowing that Fletcher Prouty was providing ammunition to those arming the front lines with truth in this mind war was comforting. Win was inevitable.

It was the next day before we reached Knoxville and stopped to see Kelly. As always, it was bittersweet seeing her, enjoying every moment we had together before being separated again. Her caregivers at Jabneel were fully aware that National Security had been invoked on Kelly’s case. They shared our frustration that Kelly was denied the available, though suppressed, qualified technological rehab she so desperately needed. Instead they provided her with the best coping skills they could. Much of what they offered, they learned from Mark while Kelly and I talked.

We walked outside, enjoying the fresh air as we aimed towards the fence where the stallion Kelly befriended was eagerly waiting for her. I reached in my purse and pulled out a carrot I’d brought, which Kelly offered him once she slid under the fence. The best therapy and counseling Kelly received was in her silent relationship with the stallion. It occurred to me that under any circumstances, her natural connection to horses provided the deepest healing she could experience[20] outside of her loving family.

Our visit ended much too soon, although all the time in the world would not be enough, it seemed. Mark and I still had a long drive ahead of us. We hugged Kelly and began the journey home.

The phone was ringing off the wall when we got back in. We had only been gone a few days, yet we received numerous calls. “Where ya’ll been?” Billy asked. Even though we didn’t see him very often since we moved from Nashville, our friend at the Copy Shop was as close to us as ever. “I’ve got a box full of mail to ship you,” he told us. “I’ve been collecting up all the mail from your Post Office Box, and it’s accumulating fast. You have correspondence from all over the world in here. What are you two up to?”

Mark briefly filled him in, explaining our progress in writing *TRANCE* and international interest it already stirred. After chatting a few minutes, he hung up only to have the phone ring again. This time it was our former neighbor who lived near Mark's mother. "Melba's doing really well," he assured us. "I look in on her all the time. There's been a few detectives come by looking for you, though it's nothing like it used to be when ya'll lived here," he drawled. "I really miss you, but I must admit I don't miss the noisy helicopters. They left when you did."

"Maybe Fort Campbell rerouted their flight pattern," Mark suggested.

"Yeah, right," he laughed. "Just one more of those coincidences, huh?"

"Could be," Mark chuckled. "I think they rerouted them over our house here in Alabama." They talked a bit more before Mark hung up.

"Black helicopters are a popular topic of conversation these days," he told me as I finished unpacking our bags. "I've grown so used to them now that…" The telephone interrupted him.

I picked it up this time.

"Is the book ready?" Becraft boomed into the phone, causing me to fumble it.

I put it back up to my ear, "We're working on it."

"I heard you met with Fletcher." What? I'd heard him, but surely he didn't mean Fletcher Prouty. We hadn't told anyone. Noting my hesitancy, Becraft continued. "The man's a saint." Yes, he must mean Fletcher Prouty. I knew our phone was monitored, and didn't know how to respond.

"Just a minute, please." I said, handing the phone to Mark as though it were a hot potato. Mark apparently was as comfortable with the conversation as Becraft was, and I relaxed. I wasn't sure how Becraft had learned of our meeting, but the thought of him having one of those inaudible quiet conversations in Fletcher Prouty's library struck me funny. I was still smiling when Mark hung up and explained to me that Becraft heard Fletcher Prouty talking about MK Ultra on the radio earlier that day. “He’s getting the word out,” Mark was saying as the phone rang again.

This time it was a serious call from a group of psychiatrists and psychologists in Texas who were hosting a mind control seminar in March. They wanted us to speak. Mental health professionals from all over the country would be in attendance to further their educational credits. Mark’s reputation had spread, and he was reputed to be the authority on mind control. Apparently several papers had been submitted to the APA by psychiatrists referring to Mark’s knowledge, and I was regarded as the model for recovery. It seemed that the group we spoke with in Southern California were true to their word in circulating the information under their credentials. Therapists had reached an impasse in treating survivors of mind control, mostly due to the False Memory Foundation. It was widely known that Mark had proved with Sue that recovery from False Memory was possible. His knowledge was in demand by the mental health community, and they were willing to host us for the Dallas event.

“Most disturbing,” he was told, “the number of survivors has swelled to epidemic proportion. We need your help.”

Mark agreed to talk with them further. In the meantime, we stayed focused on writing *TRANCE*. The need for truth was epidemic nationwide.

Chapter 39
CAN YOU *THINK* TO CARE?

“How am I supposed to speak to an auditorium of shrinks?” I asked.

“You’re giving voice to survivors like Kelly who can’t *think* to speak for themselves,” Mark wisely replied. “What would they want therapists to know so they can heal like you have?”

“Will they care to listen?” I wondered. “Somehow, having hundreds of shrinks condescendingly pull their glasses down to scrutinize me is unnerving.”

“You know as well as I do that the CIA contains many of their crimes by locking people up in mental institutions,” he reminded me. “They tried using Cynthia Turner-Graham to lock you up until we sidestepped it. Having hundreds of shrinks earning educational credits listening to you speak is instant credibility. The CIA can’t even try to use that method of containment on you anymore. Hundreds of shrinks validating your recovery is pretty powerful. Congress can’t ignore it, plus that will be nice to have when *TRANCE* is published.”

“We need something to wear,” I laughed, noting Mark’s usual attire of a robe. Clothes were not our priority, each of us preferring comfort.

“You’re a fine one to talk,” Mark joked back. I was very comfortable in my own skin.

“Well, shrinks are not going to listen to us looking like this,” I mused. “I’ve got a few things to wear, but I had better lose some weight so I can fit into them.”

“You’re not fat,” Mark noted.

“I know,” I answered, referring to old Charm School programming methods of ‘think it and become it’. “’I am thinner’. Besides, if I stand at attention I automatically lose five pounds.” I threw my shoulders back.

“Oh, that looks great,” Mark said sarcastically. “March in there with a militant stance to speak out on recovery from mind control.”

I giggled. “It’s pretty hard to care about appearance when looks are only skin deep.”

“People are conditioned to listen to speakers who are dressed a certain way,” Mark told me. “We need to appear confident and look more like them and less like us. Appropriate attire would be conservative clothes.”

“They’re shrinks,” I protested, “Can’t they see in our eyes that we are confident and sincere?”

“They’re not going to look at your eyes if you go in there that way!” Mark and I joked and played, adjusting to the idea of speaking publicly to professionals when neither of us lived egotistical pretense. It wasn’t about us, anyway. It was about the information, which we needed to impart in the most comprehensive manner possible. Just the same, I taped a note on the fridge that said, “Eat ‘light’ at night,” and one on the bathroom mirror that said, “Why weight?” Using old Charm School methods to subconsciously adjust my perceptions to produce results of *my choice* seemed a form of justice in itself.

By the time we arrived in Richardson, Texas for our speaking engagement we were ready. Sue Ford had been invited to set up a booth under the pretense of selling Rod’s book, when in fact all the shrinks already knew she was the prototype of recovery from false memory that was perpetuating a charade. Mark and I were so busy that we barely had time to acknowledge her presence. “No one is buying anything,” she whined. “All they want to do is talk.”

“You’re right,” Mark cleverly alerted her, “No one is buying it.” Sue still didn’t get it.

Speaking was easy once we started. This elaborate symposium was different than from conversing with therapists or offering answers to a devastated community like Marin. Sure enough, as soon as I began to speak, an auditorium of shrinks pulled their glasses down in unison to examine me the way they were taught. Only I wasn’t intimidated. According to APA statistics, 90% of those accredited in mental health had gotten into the business to learn what was wrong with them. This certainly disrobed them in my eyes! After Mark and I made our initial presentation, we held questions and answers, which actually proved to be fun and informative.

We answered the usual questions like “why are you still alive?”

“Wisdom outthinks a criminal mind every time,” I responded. “Aside from that, people need to consider the strength of the human spirit and examine their own spiritual beliefs for answers.”

Mark was more practical than philosophical, offering an answer more suitable to their mind set. He explained the power of the mind and subsequent healing methods used to literally save my life in clinically intellectual terms.

One psychiatrist, obviously uncomfortable standing before his peers took the microphone, blew in it a few times deafening the crowd, then yelled into it “Can you hear me?” Satisfied that all was well, he asked, “Aren’t you afraid of the CIA?”

“Why?”

“They threaten our license and our lives, and we’re just helping people. You two are telling their secrets,” he elaborated while others shook their heads.

“They have as much power as you give them,” Mark answered. “Kind of like ‘satan’ does.” We had already discussed Lt. Col. Aquino[1] and his ‘power of satan’ MK Ultra mind control techniques. Everyone present was familiar with Aquino due to the vast number of survivors they were treating who had been adversely affected by him and/or his satanic offshoots. For this reason Aquino’s former girlfriend, Linda Blood, who wrote the book *The New Satanists* had been invited to speak at this symposium as well. Mark’s answer incited a few chuckles.

“They are crucifying Bennet Braun,” someone shouted.

“The CIA is notorious for making examples out of their opposition on the forefront,” Mark reminded them. “Whether he is right or wrong, Bennet Braun is their example to mental health professionals the same way Danny Casolaro was to reporters and the media; the same way Peter Tchernev was to concerned parents; and the same way the Branch Davidians were to patriots. If we cave in to their threats, they win.”

“Now you’ve become a threat to them,” someone said, taking the microphone. “Aren’t you afraid to be on the forefront?”

“Mark and I were never perceived as a threat to them until it was too late,” I said. “My abusers believed I would die, and that even if I did survive they believed that I couldn’t recover. Many government secrets and personal reputations were staked on the belief that I could not be deprogrammed to remember that which I was supposed to forget. By the time they realized their error in judgment, we had already reported their secrets to every branch of law enforcement in the country. Again, wisdom outthinks a criminal mind every time. These criminals are intelligent, but they are flat thinkers. They lack depth, they lack soul, and therefore they lack wisdom.”

“Those who do have wisdom,” Mark injected, “learned through Cathy’s recovery that their conclusions on robotic mind control were erroneous, and it shifted their paradigms making them among the strongest supporters we have. They have turned against their flat-thinking peers and are now threatening *them*. While we may never know the true identities of our new friends in Langley, we know they are aware that we know where covert support is emanating from.”

“How do you know you’re not under mind control now?” A female psychiatrist asked into the microphone, then pulled down her glasses awaiting my response.

“I know who I am,” I answered while my mind sorted through a million more explanations. “I know where I’ve been and I have constant conscious awareness with the ability to think ahead.”

Someone else stood, “Its clear to see that you and Mark are very different personalities. How did you reestablish your identity after being without one for so many years?”

“Once I regained free thought, I gained free will and soul expression,” I began. “I never thought about myself according to other’s perceptions or how society wanted me to project, which is my perception of what ego is. Since my ego was shattered prior to age five, collecting up those pieces didn’t make much sense. So I’m just me, true-to-soul. It feels so good to be free to be *me*, that I celebrate that freedom everyday.” I smiled. “I suppose that makes freedom a condition of the soul rather than contingent on outside influences.”

The next psychiatrist to take the microphone defensively folded his arms across his chest, making it awkward to ask his question. Somehow, he still raised the microphone to ask, “You said you recovered by making the emotionally incomprehensible logically comprehensible through writing out memory. I get the point, but are you capable of emotion now? It seems ludicrous that you would smile when you obviously should be in tears.”

“When I smile, it is a positive emotional expression,” I began with a smile, then got serious. “The most horrible torture I ever endured was seeing my daughter abused. When she was taken into Tennessee custody, it was as though that abuse continued. Only now I could *think* to make a difference for her. Of course I cried. I cried rivers of tears and only found myself drowning in them. I wasn’t helping my daughter. Negativity is immobilizing, so I shifted that emotion to logic in order to positively affect her situation. It is ludicrous to apply ‘normal’ emotion to an abnormal situation. Instead, I chose to make a difference for her and other mind control survivors like her by logically imploring you and your peers to care to help. I couldn’t make that point if I were sobbing.”

“Ask your clients what they *think*, rather than ‘how does that make you feel’,” Mark suggested. “You will get logical answers rather than illogical tears and tantrums. It’s no wonder so many of you report violent reactions from survivors of ritual abuse when you’re indirectly challenging your patients to become illogical.”

One negative responder spoke up, “When are you going to tell me something I don’t already know?”

Mark flashed his infamous smile[2] and said, “I know you and I know you have never recovered a single survivor, so when are you going to apply what you know?”

“How do you deal with forgiveness issues without emotion?” an elderly therapist asked me.

“I *understand* my abusers,” I explained. “Understanding is more powerful than forgiveness. Forgiveness equates to condoning child abuse whereas understanding arrests it. Equally as important, neither guilt nor rage becomes an issue with understanding.”

Mark injected,” The therapists’ idea of confronting abusers and forgiving them can be dangerous physically and psychologically to survivors of mind control, whereas understanding can help them heal and thus protect them.”

A young woman stood. “I understand the problems group therapy would create for MPD survivors due to their heightened suggestibility. Are there other ways to avoid false memory?”

“Hypnotic regressions are counterproductive,” Mark began.

The young woman interrupted, “Didn’t you use hypnosis on Cathy?”

“Absolutely not,” Mark assured her. “That would be like drowning a fish! She was already tranced and needed to be *de*hypnotised. As I was saying, hypnotic regressions are counterproductive. ‘Rebirthing’ and re-parenting that is so popular among you right now only further entrenches divisions the same way ‘naming’ personas does. These guided image tactics have proven to lead to false memory. Above all, never ask leading questions.”

“Cathy,” an adversarial shrink said, “Since Mark has an intelligence background and knows so much about mind control, did you see him around DC?”

“It’s a good thing I’m recovered,” I responded, “because that is a leading question.”

Everyone laughed, a few people clapped.

“I wish I had met Mark back then,” I continued, “because my daughter and I would have been rescued even sooner.”

Everyone was laughing and clapping, and a few even stood while the shrink shrank in his seat.

Someone wearing a ‘Project Monarch’ tee shirt took the microphone. “When a survivor tells us they were victims of Project Monarch, how do we find out if it is a false memory or real?”

“The same way you would deal with any MK Ultra mind control survivor,” Mark answered. “Have them write out their memory, and begin by deprogramming the program first. Tell them to ask themselves what they know about ‘Project Monarch’ and how they learned it. This same method will help them identify screen memory and even hypnotically induced scrambles. By following the guidelines for deprogramming that we talked about today, anyone can heal from any level of trauma, false memory, or programming.”

“When a client has mental blocks, what can be done to trigger their memory when we don’t know what the triggers are?” he elaborated further.

“Wearing a tee shirt like that might help,” Mark quipped, while laughter rose again. “Seriously,” Mark continued, “they are likely to be wearing triggers themselves. Pay attention to their obsessions and fixations. The easiest way to determine potential triggers is to have your clients make collages. Suggest that they clip pictures and headlines, words, phrases, anything that captivates their focus, and collect them in a box for a week or more. What they clip is important, but how they assemble their collages is even more revealing. Cathy brought copies of her collages with her if you care to see them.” The collages circulated the rest of the afternoon.

I was asked, “To what single thing do you most attribute your ability to heal?”

“Love,” I quickly answered.

“’You said that without free thought, there is no free will. And without free will there is no soul expression.’ If love is soul expression, how could you love before you healed?”

“Mark gave love first,” I explained. “Not necessarily to me since he didn’t know who I was any more than I did. I’m saying that he *is* love, he exudes love, the magnitude of his caring to rescue my daughter and me is proof of that love. His love energy strengthened my spirit to want to heal. His love gave me hope and the capacity to trust. Love is the most powerful force in the universe, and I attribute my healing to love.”

“We can’t love our patients the way Mark loved you,” someone said, causing laughter.

“Your tone suggests you are referring to sex,” Mark replied. “Whether you do or you don’t have sex with your patients, you are likely to be accused. Multiples are notorious for initiating sex, switching personas, then suing for rape. When you deliberately cause abreaction by asking ‘how does that make you feel?’ or by asking leading questions, or even by twisting words like ‘sex’ and ‘love’, you could be endangering your reputation, your license, and your liberty as well as hindering your patient’s recovery.”

The therapist grew serious and presented the statement again in a reasonable tone. “We can’t *love* our patients the way Mark loves you.”

“You can gather your own strength of spirit to *care* to help them heal,” I replied. “Through caring comes understanding, and being understood is a major step toward recovery for any survivor. Knowing that they aren’t clinically crazy, that what happened is the mind’s *sane* defense to trauma too horrible to comprehend, gives them hope. Your genuine caring and understanding gives them the strength to trust and heal using the methods we’ve discussed today such as writing out memory. Love comes in many forms, and caring is one of them. Again, that is exactly the kind of love Mark first displayed to me.”

The Mind Control symposium proved to be highly successful, and it was deeply rewarding to know that other survivors would heal because of it.

Chapter 40
EVOLUTION OVER REVOLUTION

“Is the book ready yet?” Larry Becraft boomed through the phone again.

“I wish,” I answered. “It’s taking longer than I ever anticipated.”

“I wish it was ready, too, because I need copies to take with me to Waco,” he said. “I’m scheduled to speak, and this year’s patriot rally memorializing the Branch Davidians promises to be even bigger than it was last April 19. David Thibodeau[1], one of the only survivors to not be locked up after the massacre, is scheduled to speak, too. I intended to give him a copy of *TRANCE*.”

“Please extend our warmth just the same,” I told Becraft.

“Carl Klang[2] is going to be there to sing *Seventeen Little Children*,” he said solemnly, drawing a deep breath.

“I hope he sings it so loud that it can be heard all the way to DC so Janet Reno and Clinton hear it, too,” I said. “And while he’s at it, I hope Carl sings *Wheresoever Eagles Gather*[3] and *We Want This Country Back* loud enough to heard down the road by the Bushes.”

“We do need to hold a rally like this in DC to demonstrate the peaceful intent of the people,” Becraft agreed. “The people need to be heard.”

“They’ll be heard loud and clear during Rolling Thunder[4],” I laughed. Every Memorial Day tens of thousands of bikers roar through DC in tribute to Viet Nam Vets, POWs and MIAs[5]. “Both events deal with mind control, if you think about it.”

“People need to think about it,” Becraft agreed. “Which is why I really wish ya’ll had *TRANCE* ready. This event in Waco next week is going to be huge.” He paused, then asked, “Is Mark around?”

I interrupted Mark’s writing to give him the phone. I knew he’d want to talk to Becraft.

It seemed everyone we knew was converging on Waco to discuss ideas for preventing such a massacre from ever happening again. That very day—two years to the day on April 19, 1995-- the Alfred P. Murrah Federal Building in Oklahoma City was blown up, killing168 people and maiming more. The media blamed the patriots for what was deemed a “malicious” attack. The citizens of the United States were devastated. No one wanted to believe that their government had declared war on its people. Yet wars are won in the minds of the people, and psychological warfare had been launched in 1947 with the birth of the CIA and the National Security Act.

Traumatized, people became compliant. Terrorized, they became afraid to gather in large groups. Fortunately the internet was coming into wide use giving the people a means of communication within the ‘safety’ of their own homes. People turned off their TVs. They denounced CNN, making the same point by either referring to it as the “Clinton News Network” or the “Criminal News Network.” Instead they turned to radio and shortwave, patriot newspapers and word of mouth. The people desperately needed and were seeking a voice.

Soon after the Oklahoma City Bombing, Mark and I began receiving phone calls requesting us to speak. People needed answers as much as they needed a voice, and they received neither through the media. *TRANCE* was nearly ready for publication and, believing it would be in print that spring, we accepted a small tour out west to promote it.

Mark, whose vast history leading the highest levels of aviation and tourism marketing in the country, was concerned about promoting a book like *TRANCE*. Since we were US Government whistleblowers, our ‘freedom of speech’ was contingent upon following strict laws and regulations. Self-publishing was a must.

We had already witnessed the government influencing big publishers to pull key books off the market such as Linda Blood's *The New Satanists*[6]. This book, once featured in Walmart stores across the country was quickly pulled from the shelves. Other pertinent books fell prey to CIA censorship, and we were determined to avoid that pitfall *at all costs*. Self-publishing meant we assumed all costs and promotion, and we desperately needed both money and exposure to accomplish our goal of bringing the reality of mind control to light. "I feel like I'm positively marketing all hell breaking loose with a negative budget," Mark said.

I agreed. "Waking people up to the reality of mind control when we only have a 'whistle to blow' is a challenge."

"Perhaps this small tour out west will help get us started," Mark hoped.

"Maybe we'll earn enough money then to run a few ads," I suggested, thinking of the numerous alternative news sources that were now flourishing. Clay Douglas' *The Free American*[7] newspaper to the internationally popular *Nexus Magazine*[8] would provide a wide range of readership.

"By law, we can't advertise," Mark explained. "As whistleblowers we have to rely on others to spread the word. If we keep the title of the book simple and confined to one word like *TRANCE*, it would be easier for others to pick up on it."

"I realize you're the marketing expert," I told him. "Still, *TRANCE Formation of America* clarifies the fact that the American people can not *think* to stop the atrocities of the criminals in control of our government. Look what happened to the people of Nazi, Germany since mind control was not figured into global public perception. With computerization and DARPA's technological advancements, Americans are even more mind controlled than the Nazis were. If other countries understand that fact, perhaps they will have compassion. It is my hope and intent to enlist positive help from the world and avoid World War III."

“The facts in *TRANCE* will do that once they read it,” Mark argued.

“People tend to judge a book by its cover,” I said. “And even those who don’t read it will get the point if we title it *TRANCE Formation of America*.”

“If people hear the title rather than read it, they are likely to misspell it and fail to read it or get the point,” Mark cautioned.

I respected Mark’s marketing expertise, and understood the difficulties compounded by not having an advertising budget.

“Can we title it ‘*TRANCE’* with ‘*Formation of America’* as the subtitle?” I asked.

Mark smiled and hugged me. “How can I deny you anything, especially that? You have had everything in your life controlled and decided for you up until now. Obviously this is important to you. It won’t be easy, but I’ll make it work. Besides, academics gravitate to long book titles, and we certainly are meeting a lot of them!”

The editing of *TRANCE* was expertly completed; the task of indexing, footnoting, and referencing done; and the $50 cover artwork was being assembled for maximum impact. The old familiar question of ‘groceries or stamps?’ was replaced with ‘what haven’t we sold that we can sell in order to print?’ Time dragged on as we sought resolution, while at the ‘same time’ it seemed to fly towards our scheduled speaking engagements out west.

The time had arrived for us to tour out west, and we had no books. Nevertheless, we embarked on the speaking circuit as arranged. The woman who had structured the talks, Eva Vail, was a Mormon refugee in search of answers. After being led astray by a controlling belief system, she was having difficulty finding her path within. Her assistant, Marta Brown, was her stability, inspiration, strength, and reliable friend without whom the whole event would have crumbled much the way Eva’s mind had for her beliefs. For me, Marta was an instant forever-friend and soul sister.

Marta was raised in a Catholic orphanage where abuse and trauma prevailed unchecked by a local public whose vision was clouded by Catholic religiosity. Her Mexican American heritage of Lakota and Pascua Yaqui Tribes bordered between history's justification for slaughtering natives and ignorance of a Catholic faction hell-bent on domination. Marta survived the orphanage, turning within for solace and peace to where she found spiritual wisdom of the ancients[9]. True-to-soul she became strong enough to function brilliantly through the dissociative structure of her traumatized mind. No therapy nor love was given to her, save for the relationship she naturally developed with animals. Her kinship with all life included horses, eagles, dogs, birds, and every other living creature that thrived in nature as she did, embracing the gifts that Mother Nature freely gave.

Marta shared Mark's and my dedication to truth, and turned our otherwise disastrous first speaking tour into a profound success. The two weeks we traveled across country together seemed to have no beginning or end, but rather was a bigger-than-life experience that would reverberate for years to come.

We spoke to parents devastated by atrocious circumstances similar to those in Marin County, California; an assembly of Mormon refugees in Salt Lake City; victims and families of victims of varying levels of mind control; and a wide range of patriots, citizens, and militias. Afraid to gather in large groups, people quietly assembled in basements, schools, churches, and barns. We traveled by van through some of the most beautiful country in America to reach them, from the plains of Montana through the mountains of Idaho, down the coast of Washington state and Oregon. Between destinations we talked for hours, discussing the beauty of the spectacular scenery; each speaking event, the people in attendance and their communities; social engineering and people's point of reference for understanding mind control; human values, ancient spiritual wisdom, animals, and more.

In the Northwestern section of the US, the prevalence of military mind control and the widespread Mormon based alien and satanic themed controls were second only to a powerful combination of the two. We heard numerous reports of "lizard aliens" in combat boots who drove military vehicles. Likewise, “satan” wore military attire and black trench coats ala Lt. Col. Michael Aquino’s initiates. The discussions I’d heard as a child from Michigan’s Governor George Romney[10] regarding the mergence of CIA, Nazi, and Catholic mind control techniques to create a powerful means of control for his Mormon church apparently came to fruition and the devastation was horrific. Each presentation of information along the way focused on that community’s primary concerns in an effort to positively impact the people with truth.

Each stop was different, yet the common thread weaving through society’s woes was mind control. Mark and I personally experienced the pulse of the nation and hearts of the people and responded in kind. Our discussions while driving between destinations were profound, sometimes lightened with laughter and personal insights.

At one point while Mark was driving, I noticed a red convertible sports car slowly passing along side the van as though it were a replica scene from the movie *Family Vacation*[11]. The beautiful young driver flirted with Mark, who was deep in thought and oblivious to her actions, her revealing attire and flowing blonde hair. I laughed at the scenario and promptly nudged Mark. “Look outside your window!” I giggled, watching his astonished expression at the girl’s obvious beauty.

“What is the matter with you!” Eva Vail shrieked, turning in her seat to face me as she continued a verbal tirade admonishing my lack of jealousy. I was perplexed since I hadn’t been socially engineered to sexist divisions and preconceived notions. After all, why shouldn’t Mark see this beautiful distraction from a long monotonous stretch of highway? Was I supposed to believe he would leave my side to join her in the convertible? Wasn’t monogamy a natural choice rather than a control? Was I immoral, as Eva perceived? This event was significant to me since I realized for the first time that the security of Mark’s and my relationship was far removed from the trivial rules, regulations, and values society perpetuated. The way I saw it, jealousy was a negative that truly had no place in our relationship. Why should it? Jealousy was no part of love.

Mark softly explained, “Cathy now knows security that doesn’t include jealousy.”

Marta and I resumed our light conversation, deeply discussing people’s pursuit of riches, social status, and ego driven goals. “Some people spend their lives enslaved to the economy so they can ‘own’ land, display wealth in terms of a house, jewels, and ‘things’, and enjoy life after they retire,” Marta was saying. “I believe in the wisdom of the ancients that no one ‘owns’ the land our creator has provided.”

“Even if they spend their hard earned money on land,” I agreed, “it is not theirs to take anywhere.” We peered out the van’s windows, appreciating and enjoying nature’s beauty fully even though we hadn’t paid for it.

“A field of maize (corn) was more valuable to Lakota and Pascua Yaqui tribes than accumulated ‘things’ are to wealthy people since it would sustain life,” Marta continued. “Sun and rain was more important than a structure segregating people from nature.”

I pondered Marta’s perspective. “Since people couldn’t control nature, maybe they needed to control whether or not they experience it.”

“So they could experience what instead?” Marta asked, laughing. “Retirement? People work all their lives so they can begin to live after they’ve become old, slow, and embittered from decades in pursuit of shallow values. Materialism is the downfall of man. Its no wonder life has lost meaning. People need to remember. They need to remember what they have forgotten through generations of living outside themselves.”

“Humankind needs a spiritual evolution,” I agreed.

“Evolution[12] over revolution,” Marta said. “That’s why we’re out here. That’s our mission. To remind people. When you speak, you teach them how to remember. You know the way since your path has been an extreme from mind control’s total amnesia to true-to-soul awareness.”

Wow. I knew in my heart that Marta was right. This wasn't about politics. This was bigger than life just like our friendship. She was so wise, so selfless, and her vision far exceeded the moment. The US was in tumultuous political turmoil, yet a physical revolution wouldn't guarantee a change of leadership. This wasn't about finger pointing at certain corrupt individuals who took over our government; it was about us all. Spiritual evolution through truth's wisdom was the only way to peace. Wisdom was the only way humankind would *think* to stop following leaders hell-bent on enslaving us. Attuned with telepathy Marta added, "Freedom is a condition of the soul, not politics."

On our journey, we stopped in Noxon, Montana to meet with John Trochman. Trochman's Militia of Montana was logically founded on US Constitutional law and the Declaration of Independence. Trochman's M.O.M. had become the leader in America's growing militia movement. Since the media spun views to 'maliciously' blame Ruby Ridge, Waco, and the Oklahoma City bombing on people who upheld Constitutional checks and balances designed to prevent hostile takeover of government, I was eager to learn the truth about M.O.M. for myself. I doubted the media's portrayal of Trochman as a violent man who had financially capitalized on the patriot movement, yet I had no idea what to expect. As we neared Trochman's mountain home, I was absolutely astounded by nature's beauty that paralleled Alaska's splendor. How could anyone wake up to soul rejuvenating beauty such as this each day and have the adversarial attitude the media claimed Trochman had?

We crossed a rickety wooden bridge, bounced a short ways down a two-track road through the woods that stopped at an extended aluminum trailer, and climbed out of the van. Where was the wealth? Where were armed guards?

"Hello!" a voice called. A white haired bearded man walked towards us, his worn shoes flopping across the gravel. I was dumbfounded. There was that feeling again, the same one I'd had when I met Fletcher Prouty. A powerful energy of love grew in magnitude as Trochman approached, nearly knocking me over by the time he embraced me. I realized this was my heightened senses responding to soul's discernment in spiritual affirmation.

Chills rose standing the hair up on my arms. Was this that sensation people spoke of when experiencing truth bigger than life? I glanced over at Marta to see the hair on her arms spiked as though reaching to the heavens and smiled. One thing was clear; nothing about John Trochman fit the media's portrayal of him.

"Come on inside," he offered. "For all practical purposes, this is my home[13], my office, my point of operation for M.O.M., and," he paused while happy little children chased around him until he scooped one up in his arms in a hug, "playground for my children."

We walked inside the metal building. "Have a seat anywhere you can find one," he said, gesturing to scattered metal folding chairs. "If I were as wealthy as I'm reputed to be I'd have a luxurious comfortable seat to offer you. You know how it is, though; people devoted to a cause put every penny they have into perpetuating it hoping to magnify their voice."

"And we still only have a whistle to blow," Mark related, then smiled as he asked. "Where are your armed guards?"

Trochman's eyes twinkled. "You know that bridge you crossed coming in? Well, the way I figure it, no military vehicles can cross it like they did in Ruby Ridge or Waco without busting through. And that's the only way in or out."

The conversation between Mark and Trochman was deep, detailed, and intricate as they discussed what was required to take back our government. "Granddad's squirrel gun isn't going to stop them," Mark challenged.

Trochman laughed. "Guns are no match for DARPA's technology. The way I figure it, if every person in the United States stood by the Constitution and Declaration of Independence, we could take back the government. Most people are ignorant, though. Since global education has rewritten history in pencil so it can be erased and rewritten to fit any circumstance, students aren't taught fundamental American values anymore. Its up to us to educate them. When I'm faced with the decision to buy stamps or bullets, I'll buy stamps every time in hopes of getting information out there."

“Arming people with truth is more important than arming them with weapons,” Mark agreed.

“If people have both, they’ll at least know who the enemy is,” Trochman said. “The government doesn’t want us to have guns for a reason, and I figure that is reason enough to have them. If we don’t stay armed, how can we defend ourselves against unwarranted attack?”

“Or against the violence being created in society through social engineering technology video games,” I added. “Video games provide the same technique used by the military to program soldiers in basic training. When it was discovered that only 15% of all people could kill their perceived enemy due to moral considerations, that number was increased through bypassing critical analysis to not think and ‘just do it’. These trained soldiers are *not* deprogrammed when turned back into society! Now they are still shooting without cause, blasting citizens in public restaurants, post offices, and playgrounds.”

“I am deeply concerned about all the programmed military minds that have been turned back onto the streets without being deprogrammed,” Mark observed. “Even more alarming than what Cathy just said, is that these programmed people are prime candidates for terrorists to re-direct. They’re already trained and highly suggestible, and are being moved into terror training camps within this country and around the world.”

“Mind control is a serious problem,” Trochman agreed. “We have CIA infiltrating the militias through programmed former Special Forces. They are making us all appear violent, diluting the true purpose of organizations like M.O.M. We are proponents of peace, not war.”

“Evolution over revolution,” I said.

“Exactly,” Trochman agreed. “You perpetuate truth from your end, and I’ll persist in doing it from mine. If everyone does their part, we all stand to win back control of our government.”

We left Montana and our whole tour through the Northwest acutely aware that mind control was the common cause of society's escalating problems, while peace was the common solution. Peaceful noncompliance with New World Order controls would naturally result in spiritual evolution over revolution. It was time.

Chapter 41
VOICE OF THE PEOPLE

June 15, 1995 John Trochman spoke before the Senate Subcommittee on Anti-Terrorism. Wisdom outthinks a criminal mind every time, and when it is driven by one as intelligent and soulful as Trochman, even the media's demeaning 'malicious' attack could not overshadow his brilliance. He gave voice to the growing number of awake and aware Americans as he spoke:

It is saddening that this opportunity to address the Senate has risen out of the Oklahoma tragedy. We whole-heartedly denounce this deplorable act of violence. We have and will continue to assist in any manner to apprehend all persons that may have planned and/or carried out that dastardly deed at whatever level they may hide.

At the present time we view the militia movement as a giant neighborhood watch[1]. The movement is made up of a cross section of Americans from all walks of life, with one singular mandate which is public and overt: the return of the Constitution of the United States, and to your oath to defend that Constitution.

The Declaration of Independence gives excellent insight as to why people feel they need to group together and participate in militia/patriot organizations. This document speaks for itself once again as it did over 200 years ago when flagrant injustices continued "out of control" by oppressive public servants.

We request that this document be entered into the permanent record as a partial support document to our statements.

The following are just a few examples as to why Americans are becoming more and more involved in militia/patriot organizations.

The high office of the Presidency has been turned into a position of dictatorial oppression through the abusive use of executive orders and directives thus leaving Congress stripped of its authority. When the President over-rules Congress by executive order, representative government fails.

When government defines human beings as a biological resource under the United Nations ecosystem management program, maintaining that state and local laws are barriers to the goals of federal government, when the average citizen must work for half of each year just to pay their taxes, while billions of our tax dollars are forcibly spent to bail out the banking elite, while our fellow Americans are homeless, starving, and without jobs, Congress wonders why their constituents get upset.

When government allows our military to be ordered and controlled by foreigners, under Presidential order, allowing foreign armies to train on our soil, allowing our military to label caring patriots as the enemy, then turns their tanks loose on US Citizens to murder and destroy or directs a sniper to shoot a mother in the face while holding her infant in her arms, you bet your constituents get upset.

We the people have had about all we can stand of the twisted, slanted, biased media in America who take their signals from a few private covert interest groups bent on destroying what’s left of the American way. We respectfully request that you rely upon your own investigations, steering clear of the media and their rumor-gossip mills of disinformation. Although most everyone in the movement has assembled around the First Amendment “freedom of speech and the right to peacefully assemble” we have not forgotten what our founding fathers have stated about the Second. Former President James Madison- “A well regulated militia, composed of the body of the people, trained to arms, is the best and most natural defense of a free country”; Former Vice President Eldbridge Garry--“I ask what is the purpose of the militia? To offset the need of large standing armies, the bane of liberty.”

Why would he call the armed forces the bane of liberty? Why is the Pentagon waging an active campaign to win over the populace? Why does the military Civil Affairs FM 41-10 seem to be so applicable in America today? Paraphrasing "Steps necessary for the overthrow of a nation. May God be with America as he watches over the shoulders of you who write her laws. A nation can survive its fools and even their ambitions, but it cannot survive treason from within. America has nothing to fear from patriots maintaining vigilance. She should, however, fear those that outlaw vigilance."

Thank you.

Mark turned off the TV and we sat in silence after Trochman's speech.

"Wow," I finally said, wiping tears from my cheeks. "'The Price of Freedom is Eternal Vigilance'. It's etched in stone outside the Justice Department."

"And 'The Truth Shall Make Them Free' is chiseled in stone in the Langley CIA office," Mark added.

"The truth Trochman spoke should restore freedom and Constitutional values," I hoped, fully aware that the voice he gave Americans that day was just a beginning.

After Trochman's landmark speech, American citizens began to feel a bit more empowered. They gathered in strength and in numbers, and cautiously dared to begin assembling again.

Opposition to Global Education was a strong common bond, and homeschooling became prevalent enough to catch the attention of the Federal Government. They quickly organized a counter solution through former Education Secretary Bill Bennett[2], whose editing of a hyped "best selling" book kept him in the media's spotlight long enough to gain a voice. He infiltrated the "homeschooling" movement, writing the "rules and requirements" that wise homeschoolers ignored. Peaceful noncompliance. Parents chose to teach their children truth. Noncompliance was gaining collective strength. Even Germans formerly controlled by Nazis noted similarities between Nazi and US societies, citing education and Hillary Clinton's proposed medical program as copied verbatim from the Communist Manifesto, and called for noncompliance.

Alabama's Independence Day July 4, 1995 was monumental. Governor Fob James listened to the voice of the people and stood his ground against Global Education[3]. Local headlines proudly announced "Independence from Global Ed[4]" while Fob James pointed out that "the Federal Government has no business meddling with the minds of the children."

From experience[5] I knew that Senator Byrd had cleverly and deliberately withheld funding from schools nationwide for years, creating a reliance on federal funding that was contingent upon the Global Ed program. Still, Fob James turned it down, wisely understanding that free thought was more valuable than any amount of money. This brave move was exemplary of what one awake, aware Governor could do *for* the people's freedom. Alabama remained the only state in the union upholding Constitutional law and state's rights rather than sell out to New World Order controls, for which Fob James would be immortalized in infamy[6].

"You were right about Alabama," I reminded Mark. "You told me the people of this state were the most independent in the country. How did you know?"

"People have more rights than the government since they vote in politicians who represent their views," he answered. "They pay attention to issues and actions rather than political rhetoric."

"How can that matter when votes don't count?" I skeptically asked. Politicians I knew[7] certainly didn't believe in the electronic voting system and never concerned themselves with votes. They attended State Fairs and key fundraising events in order to generate more money, but they always remained confident of their ‘re-election’ based on their connections to corporate controllers and their global elite bankers.

“People pay attention and talk with each other,” Mark began. “Most importantly, they monitor elections on local levels and stay aware of the results of their vote. They know that their local Sheriff has the legal power to accept or reject Federal law enforcement intervention. A major key to Alabama’s freedom is in their local Sheriffs and politicians. They make it a point to know these people rather than vote according to who has the most litter-on-a-stick name familiarity.”

“Is that why the locals are so determined to run you for Mayor?” I asked, suddenly understanding why they adamantly demanded rather than requested Mark’s candidacy.

“They know I can’t be bought off,” he affirmed. “My reputation as a man of justice is why they persist. They don’t really know how time consuming it is for us to do what we do, and therefore cannot understand why I don’t run for office. The people in Alabama closely monitor their local elections. In turn, local politicians closely monitor state elections based on their constituency. The point is people are involved.

The phone rang, and Mark took the call. When he was through, he filled me in on the conversation. “That was Eva Coppililllo,” he told me. Eva was a strong political activist and concerned grandmother who had moved to the United States from Canada some years back. “She is still hot on this NAFTA issue since it involves both Canada and the US, and especially since she knows it is a giant step toward the New World Order.” Eva knew like we did that control and equalization of Mexican, US, and Canadian economies was an integral move towards global dominance. If people didn’t wake up now, the New World Order would quickly become the New *War* Order as other countries were forced into control of greedy bankers and global elite. “She asked if she could give our phone number to a Canadian activist who wants to sponsor us in to speak. I told her ‘yes’ and that we expected the book to be printed in a couple months so we’d accept a speaking engagement then. She is as eager as Becraft for us to get the book out.”

“There are a lot of people looking forward to the release of TRANCE,” I said, gesturing toward a large stack of mail. “Even in Australia.”

“That’s impossible,” Mark replied. “Do you know who is advertising?”

“Yes,” I answered, referring to one of the letters. “Duncan Rhodes with *Nexus Magazine*[8].”

“*Nexus Magazine* is a highly respected international magazine,” he said. “I’m going to look into this and see where Duncan Rhodes got his information.”

Mark soon learned that Duncan Rhodes was recognized as a genius with deep ties into many Intelligence communities. “Duncan probably doesn’t even realize he knows so many good spooks.”

Wherever Duncan Rhodes got it, he got it right. He seemed to know when *TRANCE* was coming out even before we did. The speaking engagement we had accepted in Toronto, Canada was drawing close, and once again we were waiting on release of our books.

By October 1995, the patriot movement continued to grow stronger by the minute thanks to the powerful push John Trochman gave it in June. Recently, patriot radio shows and newspapers, and even the newer medium of the internet, were abuzz with the actions of one brave soldier who boldly refused to wear a U.N. blue cap. Defying Presidential authority, Michael New[9] stood out among 550 soldiers in his US military olive cap while the rest caved into wearing UN blues. This young man became a hero to the patriots by standing strong for America rather than the New World Order. Michael New was subsequently court martialed and discharged from the US Army for “Bad Conduct” because he obeyed his oath and refused to switch allegiances. Michael New was guilty as charged for loving his country, and American patriots could relate.

TRANCE was finally released only days before our scheduled appearance in Toronto, requiring drop shipment to our speaking destination. A few copies were express shipped directly to us, which Mark and I tossed in the trunk of our packed car and embarked on our journey to Canada.

Driving seemed a wise option at the time since it allowed for us to stop along the way to locate my former "sister" in MK Ultra[10]. Many of the keys to her mind control programming paralleled mine whereby increasing her chances of healing. She and I had been programmed in unison at Traficant's[11] Youngstown Charm School to be prostituted together to, among others, Ronald Reagan, Dick Thornburgh, and Brian Mulroney. [12]

After a surprisingly complex search, we finally located my girlfriend. She was raising five children in a tiny caretaker's shack in a graveyard behind a cult church. She and her children were being maintained under MK Ultra occult traumas. "No one would believe the things I can't remember," she said, her pupils dilating in her big blue eyes. "I'm not reporting to Arlen Spector[13] anymore," she revealed. "Instead, Tom Ridge[14] is advising me and my kids." Knowing she was still maintained by 'terror experts' in MK Ultra mind control due to her five children being actively used was enough to convince Mark and me that her chances of survival were greater without interference. Still, I telephoned her occasionally to keep in touch in hopes that some day this beautiful soul could be helped for 'reasons of Homeland Security.'

When Mark and I drove into Canada, Canadian Border guards subjected us to inspection. While searching our belongings in the trunk, they found our copies of *TRANCE* complete with numerous references to Canadian Prime Ministers Pierre Trudeau and Brian Mulroney. Mark and I didn't know what to expect while they thumbed through the pages of *TRANCE*. Finally, one of the guards walked over to us and quietly said, "We need to confiscate one copy of this book, and would appreciate it if you'd sign it. Thank you for bringing such pertinent information into Canada. People on both sides of the border had better wake up quick to the reality of what NAFTA entails." They shook our hands and waved us through.

The group gathered to hear us speak in Canada were not unlike Americans, advertising the event by word of mouth and gathering in a local church.

Information on Trudeau and Mulroney came as no surprise, as many Canadians were already acutely aware of their New World Order agendas. Of major concern to them was the Global Education program. It was so clear that Americans and Canadians shared the same concerns, the same goals, and the same need to unite rather than divide according to media spin. Who drew the line in the sand anyway, politically separating the strength we would have if we all united the way our leaders had? Mulroney, Bush, Salinas, and Clinton were all of the same agenda perpetuated by the same global bankers being run by the same half dozen mega-corporations.

Just as in the United States, people became most concerned and aware that a problem existed in our governments when it hit them financially. People who were waking up first were the ones who didn't have any money, which kept us struggling financially to get the word out on mind control. They bought every book we had in Canada[15] in order to spread the word themselves, which provided just enough money for the long drive back to Alabama.

"I've got an older Gold Wing motorcycle you can have in lieu of a speakers' fee," our sponsor Hugh Hale offered. "I know you two enjoy riding and are capable of fixing up old bikes, so please take it with you. Its too much for me to handle."

Knowing we could fix and sell the bike, we obtained the paperwork and hitched a motorcycle trailer to the car. "We really appreciate this," we told him. "Most of all, thank you for the opportunity to speak to so many fine awake aware Canadians and getting the word out on mind control." The impact we had made in Canada would reverberate for years to come.

Once we arrived at the border, we were astonished and ashamed to see a distinct line of trash, litter, and filth of the US clashing with Canada's pristine environment. US border guards were not so kind, and it took us two days of detainment before we finally were allowed back into our own country.

The Gold Wing motorcycle resulted in a series of trades, sales, and repairs that kept us financially afloat for months. *TRANCE* was priced to perpetuate the word rather than generate income, which was exactly the mode of operation needed as US Government Whistleblowers.

The advertisement that Duncan Rhodes ran in *Nexus Magazine* set precedent for others to do likewise, and *TRANCE* became a popular topic in patriot newspapers and radio stations across the country and worldwide. It's a good thing, too, because cases of books now filled the tiny home we rented.

"Who is going to buy all these books?" I wailed when I saw them. "People aren't going to want to read this. *TRANCE* was written for Congress!"

"You're right," Mark said. "People won't *want* to read this and they won't *want* to believe it, but that doesn't preclude the fact that they *will* read and believe the elements they relate to. People are asking questions and demanding answers, and *TRANCE* provides those answers like it or not! Don't be so negative. These books won't be around here long."

Before the first box of books could gather dust, we had to reprint[16]. Mark was right; people did want to know the truth even if it wasn't pleasant. Armed with truth, they became empowered to make a difference for themselves, their children, their communities and their nation. People were ready for change, and public awareness was proving to be the ultimate justice.

By December, Judge Shookhoff scheduled a court hearing to address the issue of Kelly's accumulating mail. The global letter writing campaign that raised the question "what does national security have to do with the documented and proven rape and molestation of a child's mind and body?" had vastly increased after national security was invoked on Kelly's case in 1993, and was rapidly escalating again since *TRANCE* had been released. In direct proportion to the letters pouring into Tennessee's Governor's office were letters and packages addressed to Kelly wishing her well.

Jabneel supervisors traveled to Nashville with Kelly for the hearing. To her and me, this hearing provided one more opportunity to be together. We hugged each other and sat down, eager to catch up on everything since we'd last seen each other. Closely monitored under the circumstances, Kelly carefully revealed the Constitutional Law booklet that I previously slipped her. When Mark and I had met with John Trochman in Montana last spring, he asked me to give the booklet to Kelly for him if possible. I had, and now I could see that she obviously had read it.

When the hearing began, Judge Shookhoff was apparently frustrated with events and the boxes of mail that had accumulated supporting her. “Far be it from me to ‘violate your Constitutional Rights’!” he told Kelly. “You can have your mail. All of it. And I want you to know why you have received so much mail,” he continued, waving a copy of *TRANCE* from his Judge’s bench. “I want you to read this book!”

Kelly calmly replied, “It is my Constitutional Right to read what I want. And I choose not to read that book because I need to heal from the inside out, not through outside input.”

I was proud of Kelly for having read the Constitutional Law booklet John Trochman had sent, and most of all for applying what she learned. Above all, she apparently understood what it took to heal and was tending to her own rehabilitation eloquently! This was the first time she had been permitted to speak in court, and Judge Shookhoff was obviously astounded. Court was adjourned.

The Jabneel supervisors who escorted her celebrated her victory, and appeared nearly as excited as I was. Thankfully they had driven a van, and it was now fully packed with boxes of mail. On the way back to Knoxville, they bought Kelly a celebration dinner. Between their understanding and compassion, our visits, and Kelly’s friendship with the horse pastured next door, she was progressing. Best of all, Kelly had been given a voice in court and was heard.

Chapter 42
*S*ELECTION*S*

“Mom!” Kelly squealed through the phone. “You should see the cards, letters, and gifts I got! People really do care! I got a billion stuffed animals, maybe more,” she laughed. “I kept my favorites and passed around the rest. All the kids at Jabneel have cuddly toys now. I got a whole library full of books. Lots of them are horse books, the really nice kind that people put on their coffee tables with the greatest pictures. Right now I’m reading a really good book that a friend of yours sent me. She is so cool. Her name is Marta Brown.”

“I’m not surprised you picked her out of hundreds,” I smiled. “She is a pure loving spirit.”

“I can tell! Have you ever read James Redfield’s *The Celestine Prophecy*[1]?”

“Not yet,” I told her, eager to hear more.

“You’ll love it! I’ll give you a copy when you get here. Actually, I have three. ‘What a coincidence!’ Three people sent it to me.”

“Do you believe in coincidence?” I asked.

“Not really,” she answered. “I mean, that’s kind of the part I’m reading about now. See, *The Celestine Prophecy* says when you pay attention to coincidence, you learn they’re really not coincidences after all. They happen for a reason. It helps a person to be aware of what happens around them.”

Already I liked the ‘being aware’ part. “Everybody is on their own learning path,” I told her, “so are coin cidences something to learn from or something to emotionally respond to?”

“Learn from,” she quickly answered. “Personally, I don’t let outside influences direct my feelings. I’ve been stuck around a lot of crazy people and when I stay true-to-soul and strong in who I am like we’ve talked about, their craziness doesn’t drive me crazy. I think ‘coincidence’ is more like the fact that I got three of these books. Three people thought it would be helpful to me. And I ‘coincidentally’ chose to tell you about Marta, because she feels closest. I feel a connection to her and I don’t even know her.”

“Her senses are heightened like yours are,” I said. “And she telepathically communicates with animals[2]. Maybe you picked up on that some how.”

“Oh, Mom,” Kelly said seriously, “I can feel the love from all these people. You should see my letters. Some say they are praying for me, others are more direct in sending love straight on, a bunch of people are beaming me blue lights,” she giggled. “Some toss crystals, a few are holding church services for me, and most meditate on sending me love. There are even native tribal ceremonies held in my name[3]! You know what is the coolest thing? It doesn’t matter what they believe in, I can feel it all! Best of all, I could feel it before they told me! I wonder if that’s what it feels like to God’s Love energy? It wouldn’t matter what name people call God when it’s the Love energy that counts.”

“Unconditional Love,” I concluded. “That is the ultimate power, the most powerful force in the universe. The same energy as your soul. So when you live true-to-soul, you live true-to-love, and there are no limits to what your life can hold! There are no limits to what you can be and accomplish!”

“When I stay true-to-soul and true to the Love energy that I am inside, then prayer is like a directed telepathy to God’s Love[4] energy that makes it brighter, which makes me brighter when I stay tuned in! What if everybody in the world did that at the same time?” She asked, obviously enjoying her own profundity.

“Maybe it would create a collective conscious Love[5] energy powerful enough to peacefully change the world for the better,” I encouraged her.

Oh, Mom,” she said, still enthused, “Do you have any extra stamps? I want to write everyone back. I got some really nice art supplies and want to send some people pictures. I’m going to draw something for Marta for sure. Probably a horse.”

“Wow,” I laughed. “What a ‘coincidence’! Marta is also an artist, and she keeps horses on her ranch. She’d love hearing from you. I’ll send you some stamps right away.” Mark and I kept lots of stamps around these days to mail out the copies of *TRANCE* people ordered.

“Thanks,” she said. “I’d rather you bring them, though, if you can. I’d really like to see you. I wish you were here.”

“You know I am in spirit,” I assured her. “I’m always striving to see you. ‘Everything I do, I do it for you.’ We should be able to come and see you real soon, although tomorrow wouldn’t be soon enough.”

“Or today,” she added.

“Or yesterday,” I topped her. “In order for anything to be ‘fast enough’ for our family togetherness it would have to be retroactive. It’s never fast enough. And there is never ‘enough time’ when we do get together!”

“I know,” Kelly agreed. “It’s a good thing our love is timeless.”

“For real!” I agreed. “Dad and I have to make a quick business trip and we’ll see you as soon as we get back. Hug your stallion for me and all your new stuffed animals.”

“Call me tomorrow?”

“You know it. See you soon. I love you!”

Talking with Kelly is always a profoundly fun experience because *she* is. I reflected on our conversation, trusting that everyone who wrote her would sense that she was sending love back to them. I sifted through the assortment of stamps, picking out ones I thought she’d especially be drawn to. Perhaps it would help her to focus and actually write folks back as she intended. As absolute as she was in her determination to write them all back, I knew she would only focus long enough to write a few. The rest would either remain an intention, or little by little she may write a few more. Kelly’s ability to focus and follow through on her intentions had been hindered by her Vanderbilt ordeal. I wondered what this would mean for her future if rehab wasn’t obtained for her. Regardless, I rested in knowing she is a strong spirit. She certainly is an inspiration to me!

I sealed the envelope of stamps to mail to her on our way out of town. We had business in Las Vegas and were looking forward to the fun we would have in the process. Mark and I didn’t follow the old adage “never mix business with pleasure.” Our work was intense, and balancing the stress with play seemed natural. And Las Vegas was ideal for exercising our work ethic economically since neither of us gambles.

In downtown Las Vegas, right near the infamous Vegas strip, Mark and I located the building where we would be doing live, in-studio radio. Our host was Lou Epton[6], a wise and clever political activist dedicated to truth whose wit was brighter than all the lights of Las Vegas. Lou was once a successful Hollywood character actor who looked like he still belonged in front of a TV camera rather than a radio microphone. Yet his radio audience was enormous, dedicated, and reflective of his vast intellect. Lou Epton was making a difference, and Mark and I were pleased to be a part of his show.

On the air, we talked about *TRANCE* and our personal experiences that led to its release. The second part of the show, Lou took callers who kept his switchboard lit up in an effort to ask questions. His listeners asked questions regarding home schooling; how to personally recover from the trauma of tragedies like Waco and the Oklahoma City bombing; how to help loved ones suffering from dissociation; how to think above and beyond media spin and social engineering to take back our government; Clinton's 'hit list' and CIA cocaine crimes; HAARP, NAFTA and the New World Order; and every other pertinent issue facing American society that was addressed in *TRANCE*'s documented facts.

As US Government Whistleblowers, Mark and I were limited to talking only about our experience. Since mind control was the common thread weaving through society's woes, this allowed for a wide range of topics to discuss. Laws of sedition slightly limited what Mark could discuss regarding his experience in Intelligence, yet his insights on the history of mind control and international ramifications were significant. Members of the Intelligence Community would call in to Lou's show to ask Mark questions that I couldn't begin to answer, while others asked questions directly pertaining to my experience under mind control on a White House Pentagon level.

One caller curious about the increasingly strange relationship between Bill and Hillary Clinton wanted to know about Independent Council Ken Starr's[7] revelations of Bill's affairs with Gennifer Flowers and Paula Jones. From my experience, I perceived Bill and Hillary to share a strong friendship and business relationship. Since I knew them both to be bisexual[8], the media hyped 'affairs' could not be what they appeared. I called them a "perversion diversion" from the real crimes Bill and Hillary were guilty of. Hillary's act as a jilted wife was a deliberate "division decision." Knowing the Clintons and social engineering tactics, the illusion was created to separate her from Bill in the public eye so that she would eventually run for President as intended. Just as Bill went into the office of President as a "Democrat" to make the public feel they had a change from "Republicans" leading them into the New World Order, Hillary would be the illusion of change from male Presidents.

We went to station break, and I summed up their relationship to Lou as I pulled off my headphones. "Hillary is with Bill for his head, and he is with her for her brains." We began laughing, which increased my need to relieve myself of the coffee I'd been drinking.

“The ladies’ room is across the way,” Lou explained. “Since the rest of the building is closed for the night, you’ll need to walk outside to reach it.” He handed me the keys. It was nearly midnight and I needed to hurry in order to wrap up tonight’s radio show after the break and ran across the lot.

“Catty!” A foreign voiced boomed as I watched the biggest man I’d ever seen in my life quickly emerge from a van. I turned around to retreat back to the safety of Lou’s office, and the man began running after me. “Catty!” He called again in a heavy accent, “I need to speak with you.”

Lou was already at the door, his eyes twinkling as usual as he opened it for me.

“Vuk,” he identified the giant Serbian. “You frightened her. You forget you are a big man.”

“I wanted to catch Catty before the show concluded,” he said. “I saw her, and thought she was leaving.”

“Actually, she needed to use the ladies’ room and doesn’t have time now,” Lou said, looking at his watch. “We’re back on the air for the conclusion. Have a seat,” he told the Serbian while we dashed back into the studio for our final remarks. Mark and I thanked Lou for hosting us on his show, and he invited us back. After his closing remarks, we removed our headphones and switched off the equipment. Lou handed me the keys again with a smile, and began closing up the studio while I dashed over to the ladies’ room. Mark walked over to talk with Vuk.

When I came back out, the studio was closed and Mark, Lou, and Vuk were already in the parking lot talking and laughing like old friends. I joined them long enough to learn that Vuk was a Serbian spook closely associated with the world court in The Hague. He needed videotaped testimony, and arrangements were made for him to visit us at our home in Alabama the next month.

Mark and I bid Lou good-bye and returned to our budget hotel exhausted. We ignored the harmonic lure of the casino with ease as we wearily made our way to our room. Besides, as Mark wisely quips, 'You will eventually loose playing another man's game.'

"I'm hungry," I complained as we stretched across the bed. "I'm so tired, though, it doesn't matter that we don't have money for dinner."

"I'm so tired it doesn't matter that this bed is hard," Mark added, and then laughed when he discovered the outdated bed-vibrating device bolted to the nightstand. "One quarter would solve all our problems. We wouldn't hear your stomach growl over the noise of this contraption, and it would bounce this bed as though it had springs."

"Save the quarter," I said, joining in his laughter. "Let's bounce the bed ourselves."

The next day, we were scheduled for an afternoon radio broadcast with Rod Remlin and Lance Schofield, whose radio station was affiliated with WWCR, World Wide Christian Radio. Their makeshift studio was in Rod Remlin's home, which was a gorgeous upscale home in a suburb outside of Vegas. Mark and I immediately felt at home with these two, and the radio shows we did with them were the most comprehensive solution based broadcasts ever. No wonder their listening audience was so big!

Our conversations were often so deep and interesting that it was easy to forget we were on the air. After all, the truth was the same whether we were speaking it or talking it. Rod Remlin and Lance Schofield were the same way, and the numerous callers lighting up the switchboard wanted to join in our conversation.

Former Mexican President Carlos Salinas deGortari was currently seeking asylum in Ireland while his brother, Raul, was serving 50 years for their drug running and murder. Nevertheless, Salinas was selected to become President of the World Trade Organization for the New World Order effort[9]. Back in the '80s when I was being used to lay the groundwork for NAFTA[10], I understood the close relationship between Salinas, Cheney and Bush, Sr. It was pre-determined years in advance that Salinas would take the office of President of Mexico while Bush became President of the US and Brian Mulroney Prime Minister of Canada so the three could usher in NAFTA.

What did this say about elections? Based on everything I witnessed and experienced behind the scenes of the New World Order, elections were rigged and pre-decided. In third world countries where electronic ballets were not in use, the United States sent in "vote monitors[11]" to ensure turnout was as planned. In these volatile times, many Americans were realizing 'elections' were appointed and the subject was a focus of talk radio.

What did this say about Salinas? That he not only was a proven traitor to his country, he was a traitor to his brother with whom I knew he was in the drug business[12], and a traitor to the world.

What did this say about Cheney? That if US political crimes against humanity and/or the environment were occurring, he was in the loop giving orders while hiding behind his corporate interests such as Halliburton.

What did this say about Bush, Sr. and Brian Mulroney? That they were self appointed leaders misleading their countries into New World Order controls.

No, I did not believe in elections any more than did the politicians and world leaders I was associated within MK Ultra under mind control. Global elections were based on a much bigger agenda formulated by DARPA technology and funded by a few world bankers and global elite. Based on what I knew, Bush, Jr.[13] was expected to follow Bill Clinton into the Presidency, and Hillary soon would follow him, keeping it all in the family of dictators-- unless people woke up, wised up, and elected to become actively involved in politics from the local level on up.

"The Secret Government went into place in 1947," Mark explained to a caller. "As did the National Security Act. The Constitution of the United States was founded in truth and justice for all, not for a few self appointed secret leaders operating on the philosophy that 'secret knowledge equals power.’ Secrets have now compounded to the point where people no longer think to ask the right questions. Technological secrets emerge as technological control. Ask what HAARP is about. Ask about DARPA. Ask now while you can still *think* to do so because technology is breeding itself through computerization and it’s time we took it out of the hands of the Secret Government.”

“Why are we following leaders we didn’t elect?” I asked. “The criminals in control of *our* information, *our* technology, and *our* country are intelligent, but they lack wisdom. They never counted on the strength of the human spirit. They never counted on anyone telling their secrets. Their arrogance is their downfall. Wisdom outthinks a criminal mind every time. We didn’t elect our leaders, but we can elect not to follow them through peaceful Gandhian noncompliance.”

Carl Klang’s *We Want This Country Back*[14] faded in, bridging us to the next segment of the worldwide broadcast.

Chapter 43
COLLECTIVE CONSCIOUS EVOLUTION

“Are you conscious of the international concern you have raised with your case?” Vuk asked, savoring another bite of the gigantic 42 oz steak Mark bought and prepared for him. “The World Court in The Hague is very interested in what you have to say. By the time I am through keeping the appointments I have with your Justice Department and government leaders of countries I will not identify in this house…” Vuk interrupted himself to savor more of Mark’s exquisite cuisine. He closed his eyes and moaned, dabbing the corners of his mouth with his napkin. “Did you know your house is bugged?”

“They bug people for far less in this country,” Mark smiled. “C’mon Vuk. What do you think this is, a free country?”

Vuk laughed, leaning back in his chair. Our inexpensive dinette was not capable of supporting such weight. Not that Vuk was overweight for his size, it was just that his size was gigantic and muscled. The chair groaned as the metal twisted.

“I’m sorry,” Vuk apologized. “I’ve broken two of your chairs and fear you won’t ask me back for more of your cooking. Mark, you are the finest chef in the world. I know. I’m qualified to make that judgment since I have sampled cuisine in the finest restaurants all around the world in my travels. I would fly to United States, to Alabama, just for dinner right here. I will bring chairs.”

Mark chuckled as he replaced Vuk’s chair. “I’m sorry I don’t have a strong chair to offer you,” he said. “There is no money in whistleblowing, though, and we all make do with what we can afford. This dinette was free. And you are free to come back and see us anytime you choose, my friend.”

Vuk had fast become a friend while we were in Vegas, and that friendship only solidified more since his arrival in Alabama. Vuk was a spook's spook on a mission and it was deeply encouraging to know a spy of his stature shared our passion for spreading the truth revealed in *TRANCE*. "We will succeed," Vuk vowed. "Kelly is all the reason in the world to make sure of it. You, too, Catty. But Kelly, she is my motive." Tears filled his eyes from his intense sincerity.

Armed with a case of books and videos of recorded testimony, Vuk hugged us good-bye. "You will hear from me again soon," he promised.

And we did. Vuk did come back to Alabama on occasion 'for dinner' and proved to be a powerful ally in our quest to incite peaceful change.

The phone rang. "We need to buy some more books from you," a dear supporter of ours from the mid-west told me, then hollered, "Wally, pick up the phone. Cathy's on the line." Wally and June Midkiff were among the finest people Mark and I had met. This loving pair was absolutely dedicated to helping spread the word on mind control at all costs. Their fixed retirement income didn't stop them from passing copies of *TRANCE* to their local politicians, townsfolk, and other patriot groups they supported. They were living proof that age had nothing to do with compassion and concern for the future. They had enjoyed the best of America when it was free; back when it ended wars rather than started them. They cherished US Constitutional values and were appalled to see them eroded and replaced with New World Orders. While many Americans were lulled to sleep by apathy and complacency, June and Wally stayed vigilant, sounding the wake up call. They were alarmed by the criminal takeover of American government, and were actively dedicating their all in terms of time and money to restore truth and justice to their country. They chose to do it through supporting us, among others.

As I hung up the phone, it rang again. It was Wes Mann[1]. "I need some more books," he said. "How soon can you ship me some? I sold out at the festival when one of my speakers, David Icke[2], talked about you guys. " Wes Mann was highly respected throughout Canada for the annual festivals he hosted in spectacular British Columbia. He brought in speakers from all over the world who shared his passion for freedom. Wes was a political activist who was making a difference, and books from the various speakers he brought in were sold through his Preferred Network[3] year round. During his festival, people traveled from all over Canada to camp on his pristine wilderness land, dine on his sister's infamous fine cooking, and attend the seminars hosted by dozens of sought-after speakers. The event was huge and always successful. Mark's and my personal respect for Wes is bigger than life. The childhood he survived is the most horrific I've ever heard, and he dealt with his past in order to move forward and strengthen others with truth.

The phone rang again. Something needed to be done about this constant intrusion that had grown in direct proportion to our success in bringing the reality of mind control to light. Yet our success as whistleblowers was not reflected in our finances. "We need a code-a-phone," I called to Mark who was working in the other room. "Or a secretary."

"We can't afford either," he hollered back good-naturedly. "I'll answer it."

It was Larry Becraft informing us of a rally being organized for Washington, DC. "A friend of mine in California is structuring the event right now and wants to know if you'll speak. It will be held on the mall lawn in front of the Capital on Labor Day Weekend."

"Of course we'll be there," Mark assured him. "We wouldn't miss it."

"Come by my office," Becraft said, assuming our phone was bugged. "I'll give you an information packet."

That was uncharacteristic of Becraft to suggest a visit unless he had something to tell us that he didn't want to say over the phone. He certainly wasn't one to waste his time any more than we were, so Mark agreed to meet with him right away to find out why he really wanted to see us.

"I've got a message for you involving evidence on Operation Watchtower," he tipped us. Through a series of connections, it was arranged for us to pick up boxes of documents detailing George Bush, Sr.'s Watchtower cocaine and heroin routes. Retired Brigadier General Russell Bowen was once an integral part of this operation. He worked directly under Bush until he turned whistleblower through his 1991 book *The Immaculate Deception, The Bush Crime Family Exposed*[4]. It was widely known that the Mexican and Caribbean drug ops I had worked under MK Ultra mind control tied directly in with Watchtower. These documents and evidences could prove invaluable to us since General Bowen was leaving the country in disgust and frustration with the lack of justice. Bush, Sr. had locked him up in a Federal Prison until he agreed to leave the country.

Numerous Intelligence insiders like him were telling all to those with eyes to see and ears to hear truth. Rodney Stich's book *Defrauding America*[5] tied in with Russell Bowen's book and testimony as well as Col. Fletcher Prouty's[6] revelations. Gaylon Ross[7], formerly associated with the National Security Agency, publicly updates his global identification of *Who's Who of the Elite*[8] in order that people know who their self-appointed leaders are. The truth has been and is out there for the growing numbers of awake and aware people seeking it.

The US Government deliberately operates far in advance of what they finally allow the people to know, whereby forerunners like Fletcher Prouty were literally ahead of their time in their revelations. With truth "ahead of time" and Americans "losing time" due to high tech mass mind control, bridging the information gap would require timeless spiritual evolution. The criminals in control of our country knew this, and were counting on fear, trauma and superstition to keep people from gaining the spiritual strength necessary to outthink them. They feared the collective conscious[9] wisdom that begins with truth. Again, their shallow flat-thinking and egotistical arrogance had not accounted for Intelligence insiders having the strength of spirit to collectively tell their secrets and launch the evolution.

Equally as influential were the vast number of government contractors operating on a Need-to-Know who expanded their knowledge with truth. Free thought allows for the capacity to think beyond oneself to a bigger picture and now they, too, were talking and/or applying peaceful noncompliance. Scientists from all over the world concerned with environmental and technological issues were also sharing information, organizing, and applying solutions. The Organization of Concerned Scientists[10] extends through international think tanks where collective conscious awareness continues to escalate at a rate that can only be attributed to wisdom. Such spiritual evolution continues to collectively rise while truth is shared, peaceful noncompliance is applied where effective, and change is made from within.

When Barbara Trent accepted her Academy Award for her 1993 documentary *The Panama Deception*[11], she didn't wear a designer gown as she walked up to the podium and brilliantly explained that whistleblowers never profit because their passion is so strong every penny is dedicated to furthering their effort. So it was with Mark and me. We chose to amplify our voice by working exhaustive hours speaking out on radio and in person all over the country and worldwide. We met a vast array of people who were waking up to make a difference whenever and wherever they could. Many of these fine people were converging on Washington, DC with us Labor Day weekend.

Mark and I located a budget motel an hour's drive from DC, and were unpacking our bags when we were startled by a knock on our door. It was our friend Perry Ferrell, who had driven his Prevo bus half way across the country to attend the rally. Perry's autistic son, Glenn, is pure unconditional love due to the exemplary thought communication[12] they share.

"What are you doing in this budget motel?" he asked. "I booked you a room at the Watergate Hotel. C'mon. Nobody will 'bug you' there."

We laughed at Perry's clever joke, which was typical of his ever-present wit. The Watergate was infamous for the bugging incident that cost Nixon his Presidency. Perry's generous offer not only would be luxurious and a convenient walking distance to our speaking engagement, it promised to be fun considering he and his entourage were staying there, too. It was quite stressful for me to be speaking right in front of the nation's Capitol knowing that every member of Congress had a copy of *TRANCE*--including my former abusers! The fun that always accompanied Perry would certainly provide the perfect balance to the stress. To me, “balance” was always tipped to the good in keeping with universal justice.

Our room at the Watergate was spectacular, bigger than our house in Alabama. And the bed was absolutely unforgettable. Mark and I were out on our balcony when someone knocked on the door, and I made my way through our elaborate room and hallways to answer it. It was Perry. “Can you see all those ‘suits’ guarding my room?” he jokingly called to Mark, who was still outside on the balcony.

“No,” Mark answered, looking around and noting the armed guards strategically placed on the premises’ balconies and rooftop. “Seriously, isn’t that Bob Dole’s suite that the guy in dark sunglasses is guarding?”

The Watergate was infamous for its political ties. Perry laughed, “I thought they were all guarding my room while I take you to dinner.”

Dinner was even more fun than it was delicious, and the horrors and traumas I had experienced in DC faded far into the past. This positive experience gave me just the edge I needed for speaking the next day, loud and clear enough for Byrd, Traficant, the Clintons, and all the rest of DC to hear.

Early the next morning we set up a table near the stage from which to sell *TRANCE* after speaking. Dozens of friends, activists, and patriots we had come to know were setting up their tables and booths as well while Carl Klang fine tuned the sound system for us all, then soulfully began singing. Charlena Alden had done a commendable job organizing and structuring the event. National TV was expectedly absent, but international news groups were in abundance. All weekend long, speakers and music resounded through DC. We connected with other speakers, made new friends and embraced those we already knew, signed books, and gave numerous interviews while crowds of people gathered around.

“Hey girl,” a familiar voice said. “I rode the bus all the way to DC for this event.”

“Dana!” I exclaimed, hugging my friend. “I didn’t know you were coming. Where are you staying?”

“I found a room over at the shelter,” she answered. Dana was street-wise and resourceful, but it didn’t seem right that this gorgeous peace activist should stay in a shelter. “Sleeping isn’t why I’m here anyway. I wanted to experience this rally and contribute anyway I can.”

“Our friend Perry Ferrell got us a room over at the Watergate where no one would ‘bug us’,” I told her, laughing. “It’s a huge room and I really wish you’d come and stay with us. Come on,” I pleaded. “A gorgeous girl like you belongs at the Watergate.”

Her big eyes twinkled at the reverberating meaning. “Maybe,” she said, always independent. “I appreciate the offer anyway.” She took off her backpack to show me the brochures she had brought depicting Kelly and telling her plight. “While you’re speaking, I can pass these around.” Typically, Dana was always doing something significantly profound.

Dana had attended a seminar months before where Mark and I were speaking, and we became instant friends. We shared a connection beyond words. Literally! Dana’s soulful telepathy was familiar, as though we had known each other forever and our futures would remain inner-twined. Her childhood was the kind that hindered most, but Dana did not relate to the ‘victim space’ any more than I did. Instead, she turned the negative of her past into positive action.

She opened her heart and her home to help others find their inner strength just as she had. Such strength was needed these days more than ever in order to thrive in an increasingly difficult society. Sexually abused children often grew up to become exotic dancers, porn stars and prostitutes which exposed them to a whole new world of problems. Dana was there to offer shelter, understanding, healing, peace of mind, and rehabilitation from addictions to CIA cocaine, heroin, and crack. Her humanitarian and political activism was exemplary, and I was thrilled that she had joined us in DC.

The sun was rising high, as was the temperature, when Perry offered to buy us all cold drinks and snacks. “Come with me,” he suggested. I hesitated until Dana said she’d fill in for me at the table to help Mark sell books. “I’ll watch after her real close,” Perry assured Mark, aware of concerns for my being in such close proximity to my abusers.

DC shopping was primarily located underground, and Perry and I opted for the market under the Watergate. Just beyond the prestigious lobby were escalators to the market, and we rode them down. Perry’s arms were already full of cold drinks when he located a shopping cart, which he continued to load with snacks and a cooler. While he filled the cart, I explored the small market wondering what gourmet goodies filled the shelves to cater to the rich and famous that shopped there. A few minutes later, Perry caught up with me, breathless. “I couldn’t find you!” he exclaimed. “Where did you go? There are only three isles in this store. I thought the Feds carried you away or something. How would I explain that to Mark? I promised I would look after you.”

The whole thing seemed ludicrous to me, but Perry was genuinely shaken as he paid for the items and we went out the door with the shopping cart full of refreshments. Never one for rules, regulations, and social protocol, Perry paused at the bottom of the escalator long enough to aim the cart before pushing it onto the moving stairs. “I already lost you once, and I refuse to leave you here while I carry these purchases sack by sack,” he explained as the shopping cart clattered and rattled loudly along the escalator. It was so wrong, especially at the Watergate, to make such a noisy spectacle of ourselves and I laughed myself to tears. I was doubled over laughing by the time the escalator reached the lobby and Perry slammed the cart over the hump and onto the Watergate’s expensive carpet. He nonchalantly tipped the doorman as he told him to return the cart downstairs. The doorman was astonished, wondering how he would accomplish such a maneuver while we climbed into the cab. The derelict shopping cart looked ridiculously out of place in the lobby of one of the most prestigious hotels in the DC, and I was still laughing when we arrived back at the rally.

It was nearly time for Mark and me to speak. It was such an honor and privilege to speak beside the likes of Larry Becraft[13], Gaylon Ross[14], David

Icke[15], Jack McLamb[16], Dr. Stan Monteith[17], Michael New[18] and dozens more in front of our nations capital, our peers, crowds of people and international news groups. Mark's and my presentation of facts centered on repeal of the 1947 National Security Act, which threatens the security of our nation and world[19] by covering crimes against humanity. Mark's focus was more pointed, whereas mine extended to Kelly.

"Harry Truman," Mark was saying to the crowd," had only one regret in his Presidency, according to his sister's testimony, and that is signing the National Security Act into power. Truman felt he had been tricked into signing it, and foresaw it as the downfall of the country he loved and served so well. The 1947 National Security Act fully allows for the takeover of the American government by a secret government, or shadow government as it has been called. Here in the United States of America we have laws, Constitutional Laws, and the Bill of Rights enabling we-the-people from succumbing to such takeover; yet the National Security Act overrides them all. We don't need more laws to stop the proliferation of these criminals in control of our country and their blatant child abuse, mind control, erosion of justice, drug dealings, murders, genocide, and dominance of the world's technology and resources. We only need to *repeal the 1947 National Security Act!*"

Applause was thunderous. After all, every issue being presented at this rally ultimately came down to the final point that the National Security Act needed to be repealed.

I spoke out with a passion, giving voice to the numerous mind control survivors like Kelly who couldn't think to speak out for themselves and were being denied justice and rehabilitation for so-called "reasons of national security." While I brought the issue of mind control to light and gave voice to Kelly's plight, Dana distributed hundreds of flyers. Kelly's precious image complete with our family motto "It's Not Over Until We Win" was circulating everywhere, thanks to her. As usual, Dana's work continues to reverberate since people in turn circulated even more copies of their flyer to further raise awareness of Kelly's plight and the reality of mind control.

When Carl Klang saw Kelly's flyer, he excitedly told me, "'It's Not Over Until We Win[20]' is a song of inspiration that I feel the need to write for Kelly." Carl is soulfully profound with deep insights, which he eloquently expresses in song. It's no wonder he was fast becoming an international favorite as well as an American icon for the patriot movement. The powerful song he wrote for Kelly became a global anthem song of deep encouragement to her for years to come.

By the time we returned to the Watergate that evening, we were all exhausted and excited. "I'll take you to dinner," Perry generously offered again, leaving us off at our room while he went down the hall to his room to dress.

Dana knocked on our door as we started to get ready for dinner. "I decided to take you up on your offer," she announced, "at least long enough to take a shower."

Perry playfully whistled to Dana from down the hall, loudly inviting her to join us for dinner. A young man who was also approaching her looked disappointed as she gracefully accepted, and turned back toward the elevator.

"You'd better come in here," I laughed, swinging the door open wide. "I'm so glad you decided to come."

"Wow," she exclaimed, her soulfully eyes shining as she looked around the room. "Who would believe I'm here at the Watergate about to dress for dinner, when all I have in my purse is a bus ticket!"

"You could be as wealthy as you want to be," I assured her. "Just because your helping people takes precedent over making money doesn't mean you couldn't be rich enough to live here."

"I was offered that much money on the way up here," she laughingly admitted as she took off her backpack and opened it up. "I must look like some kind of holistic whore or something wearing jeans and a peasant top at the Watergate." She pulled a small bundle from her pack, which unfolded into a beautifully detailed forest green hemp dress. “I’m not much on glamour,” she said, holding up the dress against her delicate frame, the deep green accentuating her beauty. “What do you think? Can I wear this to dinner?”

I hugged her tight. “Your unpretentiousness epitomizes what a woman should be!” The shower was open, and Dana went to get ready while Mark emerged from the dressing area of the bathroom, looking handsome and refreshed. We walked out on the balcony to talk while Dana prepared to join us for dinner.

“Carl Klang is writing a song for Kelly,” I excitedly told Mark.

“And we have invites to do more radio shows than I can count,” he added. “Did I see you doing an interview with Dutch National TV?”

“I know they were among several I did today,” I answered. “Spanish TV wanted to interview you. Did they catch up with you?”

Mark and I had each been so busy that it was necessary to fill each other in on the day’s activities. Dana was ready in no time, and joined us on the balcony. “Collective consciousness[21] went global today,” she said, seemingly summing up our conversation as Perry arrived to take us all to dinner. Dana picked up a copy of *TRANCE* and slipped it among the classics in the room’s elaborate library as we went out the door.

Chapter 44

THE TURNING OF THE TIDE

The next morning we began selling copies of *TRANCE* and related documents as fast as we spread them out on the table at the rally. Vast numbers of people were in attendance, despite the US media's lack of coverage of the event. Word had spread, and Carl Klang's soulful songs filled the air, drawing in scores of DC tourists who happened upon the event as well.

Author and speaker David Icke had flown in from England, and made his way through the crowds to speak with us before the event officially commenced. "David!" I exclaimed, throwing my arms around him in a warm hug. "It's good to see you."

"I had business in the country anyway," he said, "so I diverted my trip a bit so I could participate in the rally."

Mark pulled up an extra chair, inviting David to join us. "Will you be speaking?" he asked.

"I just met with Charlena Alden and she's working me into the schedule right now," he told Mark. "She wanted to know what I intended to speak about since this event is Constitutionally oriented and focuses on the Bill of Rights. I told her I'd speak briefly on who I know to be in control of your government since the same New World Order elite are leading Britain as well."

David was an author who had written a book titled "*And the Truth Shall Set You Free*[1]*,*" which clearly shares our common ground. In his book, David identifies the global elite and their New World Order, and provides solutions based on spiritual evolution. Professionally, David is an author and public speaker whereby he is not bound by the laws governing whistleblowing that Mark and I are. Personally, David had been a friend for some time and offered significant moral support to Kelly. I updated him on her circumstances.

“The stallion next door to Jabneel is the best therapy for Kelly since he keeps her focused on natural spiritual values,” I was explaining. “What you told her about spirit being stronger than genetics was one of the most powerful, healing statements she’s embraced. I’ve taken the liberty of expanding your statement a bit further to include spirit being stronger than program. Of course, the trick of it is to keep her focused spiritually true-to-soul despite her adverse circumstances. Having the stallion next door really does help. The more she lives true-to-soul, the more free thought she has. The more free thought she has, the more she heals!”

“She is a powerfully strong spirit,” he smiled.

“In light of that realization,” I said, “my friend and I were discussing the misuse of ‘exorcism’ on mind controlled multiples…”

“Who is using exorcism on multiples?” David interrupted to ask.

“The State of Tennessee,” I answered. “How we know that is a story in itself. Anyway, my friend is highly intelligent, whereby it is logical that she is highly spiritual. She fully understands that mind control is exactly that, control of the *mind*.”

“While you were mind controlled, where was your spirit?” David asked.

“It was as though my spirit took flight to a safe loving space while my body was being used and abused,” I answered. “I know from experience that without free thought, there is no free will, and without free will, there is no soul expression. Just because a mind- controlled victim cannot *think* to soulfully express their spirit does not mean the spirit is possessed. Even *I* didn’t posses it under mind control! Once I regained free thought and free will, pure spirit was again soulfully expressed.”

“Considering that Kelly’s spirit is light,” David thoughtfully said, “and her abusers are dark, darkness cannot overcome light.”

Mark paused from book signing to add to our conversation. “It is a physics fact that dark cannot overcome light. Light is visible radiation and dark is absence of light.”

I smiled. “My wise friend used the analogy of two rooms, one light and one dark. Light shines into the dark under the door between them, yet darkness cannot penetrate the light. By this principal, possession is an impossibility.”

“The belief of possession is dark and fear-driven,” David concluded, “while spirit is light and love-driven. Fear cannot overcome love, yet love can overcome fear.”

“Fear can only possess the mind, and the people I knew in DC are acutely aware that fearful people do not think clearly and therefore are easily led,” I explained. “So they deliberately generate fear, then point the way to run.”

“Problem, reaction, solution,” David quipped, quoting from his own book. I whole-heartedly agreed. “It keeps people in the dark as to what truth is.”

“There is good and bad in everything,” David said. “Every organization becomes infiltrated, from religion to governments. After being misled and kept in the dark so long, people forget *how* to identify who’s who.”

I said, “That is what the criminals in control are counting on. Again, they failed to consider the strength of the human spirit. When people shine their spiritual light, so to speak, it clearly reveals the truth and overcomes their dark secrets.”

David thoughtfully said, “Spirit naturally overrides any darkness they generate.”

“Wow,” I took in David’s simplistic message and savored it a moment. “I’ll tell Kelly you said that. She already adheres to unconditional love, and identifies the essence of her being in light of that unconditional love. This will logically define what she knows about living true-to-soul, taking it to the next level to naturally override their dark program.”

“We are all multi-dimensional beings,” David expanded, “and she needs truth on all levels.”

“The kind of high tech harmonic programming that Kelly endured is just another means of control that is faster and more precise than trauma-based mind control,” I began.

“How does harmonic programming work?” David inquired.

Mark, who understood the scientific aspect of harmonics, turned to David to explain. “Everything on this planet vibrates at a certain frequency as exemplified by the wear-ring on the bottom of antique glass. When harmonics change that frequency, such as those emitted by an opera singer, crystal glass will shatter. To further this example, consider for a moment how a favorite song incites certain feelings and sentiments. The harmonics responsible for inspiring such emotion are actually vibrating the neuron pathways of the brain. This is why an old favorite song can stir memories such as ‘we fell in love to that song’. Harmonics have now been perfected to deliberately vibrate neuron pathways to compartmentalize memory in MK Ultra programming. Laboratories developing electronic mind control techniques in the ‘70s and ‘80s referred to the application of harmonics as brain training.”

David nodded his head in understanding, and I continued my point, “Just because harmonics are more advanced technologically does not mean they advance further into the being. Harmonics still can’t penetrate the light and touch the spirit.”

“All Kelly needs to do is realize and embrace that truth,” David assured me, his eyes twinkling. “When she realizes she has a whole world of people beaming their spiritual love light to further brighten her path, she can confidently steer herself again. She inspires collective conscious love with her truth.”

I hugged David, the knowing passing between us that Kelly was free and it was only a matter of time until she assumed that knowing, too.

Mark, who was speaking with Dr. Stan Monteith[2], sensed the moment and smiled. “It looks as though you two just solved the world’s problems. We’re doing the same thing over here.” Dr. Stan laughed, and they resumed their conversation.

“Back to the global scope of problem, reaction, solution,” I said, “Consider that the problem is secrecy, the reaction is superstitious fear, and the given solution is follow the leader.”

“The herd mentality,” David added, wisely capable of condensing a world of truth into a few words.

“Exactly,” I said. “Consider that the government is years ahead of us through suppression of their secret advancements. They generate fear by perpetuating superstitious conclusions that keep people diverted from the truth and looking the other way. By the time people finally do see secrets surface such as the Stealth fighter, they superstitiously conclude they are seeing an alien space ship. This makes people feel helpless, as though they cannot do anything about the situation and they look to the government for a solution as anticipated.”

Mark joined back in our conversation. “Who says aliens aren’t microorganisms encased in a growing crystalline environment that don’t even need a spacecraft? Invasion of the mind though mind control is worse than any alien invasion could be anyway. It is ridiculous that people fear what they don’t know, and jump to superstitious conclusion rather than seek the truth. Besides, what would aliens do that the secret government isn’t already doing? Take over the world? Perpetuate mass genocide?”

“Aliens could be transdimensional,” I added.

“Or lizards,” David added.

“They’re not lizards,” I began. “That’s too simple.”

“What about George Bush, then?” David asked. “”You talk about him turning into a lizard in *TRANCE*.”

“Not really,” I countered. “I said he created an image of turning into a lizard.”

“*TRANCE* was written for Congress,” Mark reminded him. “Congress already knows about the holographic generators that produce such an image. It wasn’t necessary to beleaguer the subject to them because they already know it is a hoax. Testimony has already been provided to Congress regarding the equipment Bush used to perpetuate the illusion.”

“There are numerous similar accounts around the world regarding lizards,” David said. “I’ll be including them, and yours, in my next book which will be released next month[3]. With numerous people talking, there is truth to this somewhere.”

“The truth lies in the program to deliberately generate fear,” I said. “I’ve heard Bush discussing the fact that people autogenically respond to snakes and lizards by freezing in fear. By capitalizing on that natural reaction, they expect to perpetuate the fear that keeps people diverted from the truth and easily led.”

“Where did Bush get the idea?” David asked.

“I’m not sure who started it,” I answered. “But I do know it was discussed and decided at the Grove that this lizard alien theme would render people helpless to do anything about mind control, wars, ecological and economical depletion, division, diversion, genocide and everything else leading them into the New World Order. Since these perpe*traitors* can’t possess the human spirit, instinct is as close as they can get. This is why they control innate human response like maternal instinct, survival instinct, religious instinct, and instinctive ‘freeze’ response to serpents. Plus, spies are often referred to as ‘chameleons’ due to their ability to blend into any environment, and this theme blends in with their training. The lizard alien theme was spread throughout the military along with Aquino’s satanism.”

“That’s why you hear so many mind controlled victims recalling in photographic detail that these lizards wear combat boots,” Mark added. “’Just like satan does’. When alien spacecraft looks like Top Secret military aircraft, and when satan drives a military jeep, that’s a pretty good clue it’s a mind control program.”

“Why are so many people talking about it then?” David asked him.

“The answer resides in the influence science fiction movies and TV series have programmed into their highly suggestible minds for over forty years,“ Mark explained. “Dragons have been a primary feature of folk lore for thousands of years within all cultures starting with the Asians. To add subliminal strength to this, bear in mind that more people have died from venomous reptiles than from all wars and plagues combined. People are genetically programmed to fear reptiles. When mind controlled victims spew this program, it either destroys their credibility or perpetuates the fear. Either way, the Bushes win. We need to get the truth out there.”

“I’m presenting all the possibilities in my book,” David said. “Lizard aliens provide a point of reference for considering the possibility that aliens are among us.”

“You can say whatever you want to,” Mark agreed, “because you are an author. We have to stick to the facts by law because we’re whistleblowers. If you put your spin on Cathy’s experience, we’ll have to answer questions outside her realm of experience. That is a precarious position for us to be in as whistleblowers.”

“If I say ‘that wasn’t my experience’ then people will think I’m arguing with you, and you’re my friend,” I pleaded with David. “Or people will assume I’m saying there is no such thing as aliens and accuse me of perpetuating cover-up. I *do* believe in the plausibility of alien life forms both less and more advanced than us. There must be intelligent life out there somewhere! Who knows? There may even be aliens who generate love rather than fear."

David thought a moment. "This really isn't yours or mine to resolve. Rather than perpetuate fear and terror, global governments should be uniting to investigate and understand such phenomena as crop circles, crystal skulls, sightings, and abductions."

"And publish the findings!" Mark wisely added. "There may indeed be alien abductions based on what we've been seeing when we travel. There are some very credible people saying some pretty bizarre things- some of which are very positive! Not everyone talks about lizard aliens in combat boots! Personally, I think different species have incorporated into our society for generations to the point where it's normal now. Consider the numbers of scientists[4] and government officials adamantly claiming that aliens concerned with humankind's survival infiltrated our military installations after we dropped the nuclear bomb."

"Knowledge doesn't fit into a box," I furthered. "Discussions I heard at the Grove pertained to dimensions and 'they are us in the future' attitudes. They believe they can surpass time through DARPA's computerization to reach into artificial intelligence's future knowledge. Dimensions to them are dimensions of knowledge that keeps them ahead of time."

"It's time they realize the proverbial Wizard's curtain has been pulled back to expose them and their secrets," David stated, referring to Oz theme mind control programming.

Mark injected, "As I recall, the word 'wizard' is spun from the word 'lizard'."

"Oz programming is rooted in their dimensional perception," I agreed. "Politicians really are out of touch with the people, which is another reason why DC is regarded as 'over the rainbow' from the rest of u.s. When we look behind the curtain, we see it is simply men pulling levers and pushing buttons on a computerized illusion. They selected humankind's destination, obtained the roadmap, and stayed the course; never counting on people to turn on their heart lights and steer clear of their inhumane plan."

"Love's frequency is higher than their energy of fear," David asserted. "If people would keep their love light on, they'll maintain their freedom."

"Like Kelly," I smiled.

"Kelly is an inspiration to all of us," David said, rising to tend to his own flourishing book sales. "The tide is turning[5], and she is on the leading edge. Give her heaps of love from me when you see her."

Chapter 45
BACK TO THE FUTURE

By the time we left DC, Mark and I had solidified friendships and numerous speaking engagements. The ride home provided Mark and me the luxury of discussing the magnitude of events, conversations, and contacts we had made over the weekend.

“I never thought I’d live to see the day when we would speak on the lawn of our nation’s Capital,” I began. “Being free to *think* to tell their secrets right in their own backyard is an ultimate universal justice!”

“Calling for repeal of their 1947 National Security Act shroud of secrecy in their own backyard is rewarding, too,” Mark said as he turned onto the freeway out of DC. “It is impossible for the shadow government to hide secrets when the spotlight of truth is focused on them.”

“I like David’s statement that it is difficult for people who are left in the dark to clearly see who is good and who is bad. In light of your powerful sense of justice and truth, you’re naturally regarded as the measuring stick of discernment. If everyone gathered their strength of spirit and faced the truth like you have, the global elite’s New World Order would be history.”

“I know who to trust because I know how to trust,” Mark stated, matter-of-factly.

“You realize truth with wisdom, then act on it through your powerful sense of justice,” I assessed. “Your formula for discernment is bigger than life!”

“It hasn’t solved Kelly’s need for the available qualified rehabilitation,” Mark frowned. “The National Security Act has yet to be repealed.”

“You gave Kelly the ability to gather her strength of spirit and strive to live true-to-soul despite being denied technological rehab,” I reminded him. “She never knew what love was until you rescued us with your pure, unconditional love. Love is the most powerful healing force in the universe, and I am deeply grateful to you for freeing Kelly and me to realize it.”

Mark thought it over, still frowning. I persisted, “As her mother, under any circumstances I would want her to know and live love above all else!”

“To quote David,” Mark said, “We’re all multidimensional beings. Kelly is an extreme multidimensional being, so to speak. She needs and deserves rehab on all levels. All that stands between her and available rehab is the 1947 National Security Act! It needs to be repealed in order that harmonic technologies are put in the hands of good people.”

“Since Roswell happened in 1947, I wonder if repealing the National Security Act will result in the emergence of truth about aliens and dispel the lizard illusion,” I pondered.

“I’m not one to believe in coincidence, especially where DC is involved.” Mark drove up the ramp to the highway home. “History proves the world changed in 1947, and knowing the details could stop history from repeating itself. Something changed in 1988, too. I don’t know what—aside from the obvious.” He squeezed my hand. “It appears to have been the beginning of something positive. People began waking up.”

“I know!” I smiled. “Kelly and I weren’t the only ones waking up. Something pivotal seems to have occurred in 1988 according to reports from others. It’s almost as if another group of ‘aliens’ or ‘angels of old’ came in to save the sleeping planet. That’s just speculation, of course, yet there must be something to it. Isn’t it a bizarre ‘coincidence’ that the DeLorean used in the movie “*Back to the Future*[1]” traveled through time when the speed reached 88 mph, and that you rescued Kelly and me in a DeLorean in ‘88?”

Mark smiled. He was used to me attaching my lofty ideals to his logic. Our differences always proved fun. “The CIA became official in 1947 along with the National Security Act, the Roswell incident, and Congress' approval of the CIA's Project Paperclip[2] and Project Cinderella[3]."

"Every politico I knew regarded Roswell like Montauk—no cause for concern because they had the public diverted!"

"Montauk was about a top secret weapon system and mind control," Mark told me. "My brother-in-law was one of the leading scientists working on global submarine detection using sea water as the conductor of sonar waves. His doctorial thesis on this won him a job as an assistant for Werner von Braun[4]. The literal interpretation being voiced by the mind-controlled victims who worked on Montauk was that the government was warping time! Keeping this relatively simple technological defense development secret made it necessary to maintain strict secrecy at Montauk Point Naval

Air Station. The workers there were exposed to mind control and given the time-warp cover story."

"Like with the Philadelphia Experiment cover story?"

"Sort of," Mark smiled. "The Montauk story took on a life of its own since the truth wasn't available until 1982 when Japan's Toshiba[5] Corporation handed over the technological specifications to the Soviets on the screws or propellers of three classes of submarines. There also exists another technology for making soldiers, tanks and airplanes appear 'invisible' based on liquid crystal display technology. Now I hear stories of 'invisibility' and 'time travel' knowing full well that the 'invisibility' factor is actually technological and 'time travel' is suppression of DARPA's futuristic knowledge!"

"Does DARPA deal with the Illuminati, Masons, and Sir Francis Bacon?" I asked.

"I don't know what all DARPA knows," Mark laughed. "I can tell you've been talking with David, though. Why did you mention Sir Francis Bacon?"

“Senator Byrd often did,” I answered. “Sir Francis Bacon weaved through his dialogue, from the Rosicrucians to the Bible, Shakespeare and the Constitution.”

“That is interesting,” Mark said. “Sir Francis Bacon is rumored to have written Shakespeare, edited the King James Version of the Bible, and brought Freemasonry into this country while it was being founded.”

“The first amendment of the Constitution calls for Separation of Church and State,” I said. “We both know that is an illusion.”

“Church controls what government doesn’t,” Mark elaborated. “And government controls churches through the 501(3)(C) tax exemption. Any church that fails to follow government mandate dictating what they can say and who to support loses their tax- exempt status. The churches have become the ‘great whore’ as the Bible[6] predicted.”

“I know through Billy Roy Moore’s Lords Chapel that certain evangelists are mind controlled to religiously lead people where the government instructs. This includes brainwashing the people to believe God leads this New World Order agenda, and to mule drugs for the CIA under the guise of ‘missions.’ This fact is difficult to bring to light when people are programmed to believe a stand against religious cults is a stand against God. Even many who turned away from the church seeking a spiritual path were absorbed by a New Age religion. Anytime people seek answers outside themselves, they become misled. The truth is within.”

“It is interesting to note that the organization supposedly overseeing so-called Separation of Church and State was formed in 1947,” Mark informed me. “Sir Francis Bacon’s influence on both the Constitution and Bible should incite their scrutiny.”

“Sir Francis Bacon sounds like an influential part of history,” I concluded.

“So is Rasputin,” Mark said. “And Hitler. And Bush. And Nostradamas. Each had access to secret knowledge, and each used it for their own ‘game.’

History will just keep repeating itself until people wake up and control their own destiny.”

“Evolution over revolutions,” I quipped. “People can learn from history or from DARPA’s futuristic plan. Either way, the truth will lift them from the circles they’re revolving in now.”

“History is being re-written,” Mark reminded me. “You said so yourself. And DARPA is covered up under the blanket of the 1947 National Security Act!”

“It all keeps coming back around to the same thing,” I noted. “Until truth comes to light, the National Security Act keeps people in the dark, hiding the truth. Revolution doesn’t bring about change, it only keeps people spinning in circles under the *illusion* of change.”

“Which is why we need a worldwide spiritual evolution,” Mark said. “That way, the light automatically dissipates the dark, revealing the truth. Once people know the truth, they can repeal the National Security Act, regain control of their government to unplug DARPA and HAARP, and release rehab for Kelly and a world of others in need.”

“Yes,” I agreed, excited now. “We can peacefully solve so many problems by assuming our own rights. People will stop following the leaders they didn’t elect. They can stop fretting about the concentration camps[7] being built across the country and take control of them. They’re ours anyway.

Our tax dollars paid for them. The military can choose to stop fighting other people’s wars, and allow peace to happen.”

“You’re right,” Mark said. “The same ones controlling war are controlling peace—by force. ‘Peacekeeping forces’ is an oxymoron.”

“All of humankind must exert evolution now,” I suggested. “The few who are awake and aware are proving their actions aren’t enough to overcome the global elite yet. The path to collective *conscious* evolution is within. It is within us all to gather the strength of spirit necessary to evolve."

"I agree that is where change must begin," Mark said thoughtfully. "World peace begins within, freedom begins within, and wisdom begins within. Then it all must be applied on this level. That's what I was saying about Kelly. She is healed on a spiritual level, yet applying it on all levels requires her to stay true-to-soul at all times. Being wrongly and unjustly institutionalized, then forced to 'get along with her peers' isn't conducive to living true-to-soul at all times!"

"She knows this," I responded. "It is a struggle for her under her circumstances. Once she is free from the system and society's ignorance, perhaps she will find herself in an environment that allows her to be true-to-soul *all*ways."

"I hear what you're saying," Mark solemnly affirmed. "Yet repealing the National Security Act would result in freedom from struggle under any circumstances."

"That statement reverberates with national and international[8] meaning." I thought on it for a moment.

Mark spoke up. "Remember when we were at the Global Science Congress last year, and top brass from McDill Airforce Base came in and attempted to trigger your old MK Ultra programming?"

"Of course!" I assured him. "When their triggering didn't work, their paradigm shifted to realize I truly had been deprogrammed. The expression on their faces was better than any justice a court could deliver."

"How would you describe what it was like before you were deprogrammed when you did respond to a trigger?"

"A knee jerk reaction," I said. "There was no way not to respond. Mind control is more powerful than a blink response when pepper is thrown in your eyes. It’s more like not blinking *plus* stopping tears from forming in the peppered eyes. Kelly battles that kind of response every day.”

“Kelly is the brightest shining example of spiritual evolution I’ve ever known,” Mark told me. “There is no excuse for anybody anywhere to not wake up, face the truth, and evolve. When they do, they owe it to Kelly and all others like her to assume control of technology and release the technological antidote to her condition. Technology doesn’t preclude the spiritual, it should emerge with truth as people reclaim their lives.”

“I hear you,” I said, wiping my eyes. “I hear your words and your soul intent. You are the brightest shining example of reverberating evolution I’ll ever know in this life.”

We drove most of the way home in uneventful, peaceful silence, each of us deep into our own thoughts. Before returning to Alabama, we stopped to see Kelly who was still flourishing under the care of her stallion friend and Jabneel staff. She had written a brilliant article on subliminals in the course of her Jabneel schooling titled *The Invisible Menace, What You Don’t Know is Hurting You*, and presented me with a copy.

“Dad and I met hundreds of people in DC who acknowledge you as their greatest inspiration,” I told her. “With your permission, I’d like to share this article with them.”

“Of course,” Kelly said, matter-of-factly. “They probably already know about subliminals, though.”

“You’d be surprised what people don’t know!” I laughed. “You and I gained significant insight with our experience! Speaking of significant insight, David Icke sends his love.”

“You saw David?” she squealed. “Did you hug him for me?”

“Of course,” I assured her, and proceeded to convey our discussion to her about spirit, light, and soul.

“When you say ‘soul’, you’re talking about that love light inside of me, right?” she asked.

“Of course,” I answered. “What is your perception of the word?”

“The church here says spirit is God, and soul is his spirit in us.”

“What do you say?” I asked.

“That God is love energy, which is the same love energy shining through me.”

“I like your definition!” I exclaimed. “People tend to play semantics with words, and having two words with inner-changeable meaning keeps people bickering when they really agree. Your definition of love energy is clear.”

“I like ‘love energy’ because it is a univer*soul* name for ‘God’ that crosses all religions and names, including Buddha, Allah, and the rest.”

“Is that term accepted in church?” I asked.

“I don’t know what is accepted in church,” she honestly answered. “All I know is I’m *expected* in the church. So I sit there, and go within my self and think. I was thinking about my poem ‘God Save Us From Religion’ and how God’s love energy doesn’t really act. It’s up to people to save themselves and their children from religious abuse by allowing that love energy to flow through them and strengthen them to take action. I like not ‘blaming’ God when its people who are to blame for not stopping the abuse. Some people still need religion and it’s up to them to clean it up. Being here has given me insight into how some people still need religion.”

“How’s that?” I asked, astounded by Kelly’s spiritual evolution and compassion for others’ needs despite her circumstances.

“One of the kids is institutionalized here because his alcoholic father beat him so bad. Now his father quit drinking and goes to church. He’s a better man for going without alcohol. Maybe he couldn’t have quit without his church’s support,” Kelly thoughtfully said. “At the same time, though, there is another kid in here whose abusive father went to court and swore on a Bible that he was a Christian and they believed him. Now the kid is locked up while his abusive father is free.” Kelly was silent a moment. “I wonder why ‘swearing’ on a Bible means you’re telling the truth?”

“People must go within for the wisdom to discern truth,” I answered. “We’re all on our own learning path, though, and some people still need rituals.”

By the time we left Jabneel, Kelly was hopeful and excited about having her article printed. I assured her she was making a powerful difference herself and others just by being herself true-to-soul.

As we completed our drive back to Alabama, I shared Kelly’s definition of soul and spirit with Mark. “Besides, I like the way her ‘love-energy’ definition is a direct, constant connection that clarifies the meaning of life! What would you say is the meaning of life?”

“Consider the source,” Mark instantly replied. I laughed, pondering the reverberating meaning.

“You defined life’s cycle in three words!”

“Dr. Stan[9] runs circles around my profundity,” Mark smiled. “I really enjoyed talking with him at the rally. He certainly is a profound individual with vast knowledge. I’m looking forward to doing radio with him when we get back.”

“He has a radio show?” I asked.

“He’s reputed to be one of the best,” Mark assured me. “After talking with him, I can believe it. His Radio Liberty is broadcast from Monterey, California. Since he’s in relative close proximity to the Grove, he’s already had callers to confirm much of what you’ve been saying.”

"I heard Alex Jones[10] was the radio host with the most on the Grove."

"He is well respected," Mark confirmed. "Dr. Stan is 'multi-dimensional' so-to-speak in that he knows the solution to the world's problems is ultimately spiritual. He typifies the type of brilliant scientist who is a devote Christian. His expansion of topics and knowledge extends even further. I can mention any remote topic, and he instantly spews a dozen cross-references that confirm it. I'm telling you, his intellect is powerful. Doing radio with him is going to be a pleasure."

"Is he bound by Clear Channel controls?" The Clinton Administration's 1996 Telecommunications Act deregulated radio stations in an effort to stifle the people's communications through a corporate monopoly to control the airwaves.

"Clear Channel cannot even stifle our friend Bill Boshears of the Scizone[11], and he's working right in it at their Cincinnati, Ohio headquarters!" Mark clarified. "There certainly is no stopping Dr. Stan. He already broadcasts on shortwave, FM stations across the country, and internet. He makes hard-to-find books like *TRANCE* and audio/videotapes readily available. He knows how to get the truth out there without being censored. The internet is fast becoming the people's source of truth these days, and Dr. Stan has a history of being on the leading edge securing humanity's future. He broadcasts radio over the internet!"

"I only spoke with him briefly at the rally," I told Mark. "And briefly was long enough to determine he has a powerful presence and is a man of integrity. With you confirming what I sensed, being on his radio show will be a pleasure. Do you know how he got into radio?"

"By caring for humanity and being concerned with what he sees happening to our country," Mark answered. "He is a retired successful orthopedic surgeon who chooses to contribute to humanity through Radio Liberty[12]. He could be retired in luxury in Hawaii, though he chooses to sound the trumpet of alarm at his own expense. Dr. Stan is a real practicing Christian."

“It is fascinating to learn how people from all walks of life choose to bring truth to light through radio, newspapers, and books,” I said. “These people are taking positive action. Look at Clay Douglas. He is a seasoned biker who has seen it all and done it all, and is now devoting his all to humanity through *The Free American*[13] newspaper, website, and radio; plus he hosts some of the best preparedness seminars in the country!”

“He might print Kelly’s article,” Mark suggested.

“Clay has been so good to Kelly, I’m sure he will, too,” I agreed. “David Icke will likely spread it all over Europe like he has *TRANCE*. Carl Klang embraced our family motto at the rally and is writing a song for Kelly called “Its Not Over Until We Win.” He already has a solid history of successful airplay, so Kelly’s song should skyrocket up the charts. With Carl’s song and Kelly’s article circling the globe, collective consciousness will rise!”

“The collective voice of the people is demanding a stop to the CIA’s blatant crack, coke, and heroin distribution,” Mark informed me. “That voice has been amplified by a retired Los Angeles cop named Mike Ruppert. He is as relentless as we are, and the information he puts out on his website is impeccable.”

“Which website is that?”

“It’s copvcia[14]. Because of the likes of Mike Ruppert and his website, the Clinton Administration is being forced to address the issue of the CIA’s involvement in the drug industry[15]. This pertinent fact is emerging along with other key issues that further validate *TRANCE* for people. I don’t know how they can continue to contain it all. No wonder the CIA has over 55,000 operatives in the US alone. It takes a lot of manpower to plug a sieve.”

“Have you heard any feedback on the detailed information and documents we submitted to the Independent Council?” I asked. It had been some time since we had turned in requested documents and facts substantiating details in *TRANCE* to the investigators of Clintons’ scandals.

“I don’t expect to hear back from them. I’ve been assured Ken Starr received the package, though. Apparently the package you mailed John Brown regarding your account of Ted Shackley’s involvement with Bush and Clinton’s drug ops never did reach him. He has your testimony, though. All this is adding to the charges against the Clinton Administration.”

“It still astounds me how Germans familiar with Nazi mind control tactics and policies are alerting the American people,” I said, referring to their campaign against Hillary Clinton’s proposed health care plan and Global Ed. “They are literally trying to stop history from repeating itself!”

“Circles and cycles,” Mark said. “Round and round we go. History is destined to repeat unless people rise above the revolutions with spiritual evolution!”

Chapter 46
ALERT PEOPLE!

“The CIA is investigating itself[1] to determine whether or not they are involved in the drug business,” someone in the audience was saying. “I wonder if the information detailed in *TRANCE* is among the 500,000 documents they are reviewing?”

A wise and alert sheet metal worker named Bill Mahkovitz had invited Mark and me to speak in his hometown of Santa Cruz, California, and we were on the questions and answers segment of our presentation. Bill Mahkovitz was among the growing number of Americans who felt compelled to take action against the persistent erosion of US values. His Australian born wife did not *want* to believe *TRANCE* at first, yet she believed in her husband and supported his determined effort to bring Mark and me in for a seminar. Bill and Claire[2] Mahkovitz are representative of what good people can do to arm loved ones and their community with truth. They were bringing a precious child into this world, and they wanted to ensure the world was stable enough to raise him in.

“I’d like to see those 500,000 documents,” I replied. “How the CIA can review that much evidence and still ‘just say no’ to their obvious involvement is absurd. The average drug dealer on the streets knows the CIA runs the drug business these days. Either the dealers are with the CIA, or the war on drugs is against them.”

“Mike Ruppert[3] explains this well on his website at www.copvcia.com,” Mark said as most people in attendance nodded their heads in agreement while a few others quickly made note.

“Why are drugs still illegal when the CIA distributes them?” someone asked, prompting laughter throughout the crowd.

“We have more people locked up in this country for victimless crimes right now than we have throughout history,” Mark responded. “Most are political prisoners of the CIA’s so-called ‘war on drugs’ that has been waged against all of us. For example, over 646,000 citizens are arrested each year for marijuana use, despite several states upholding the votes of millions to legalize it medicinally. Privatized prisons have become an obscenely profitable business that has compromised our system of justice much like the cop who is paid a commission for writing a traffic ticket.”

I added, “If drugs were legal, how would the CIA fund its black budget?”

“500,000 documents proving the CIA’s involvement in the drug industry indicates to me that someone besides you is speaking out,” a young man stated. “Why don’t we hear from other recovered MK Ultra victims?”

“They are being heard from[4],” I assured him. “Kelly and I certainly aren’t the only ones affected. Mental health professionals and law enforcement are overwhelmed with the numbers reporting sexual abuse and mind control abuses.”

“According to mental health statistics, the average pedophile sexually molests 298 children,” Mark injected.

“We hear from other victims in various stages of recovery all the time,” I continued. “Some were abused by perpe*traitors* I’ve named, and not just the high profile ones. For example, Paul Bonacci of the Franklin[5] case has named Alex Houston as one of his sexual abusers and MK Ultra programmers while he was in the Boys Town Catholic orphanage. Alicia Owen, also of the Franklin case, was imprisoned like so many others on so-called perjury charges due to classified MK Ultra mind control. Seidina Reed, the victim mentioned in *TRANCE*[6] who was routinely prostituted to Saudi Prince Bandar Bin Sultan[7], began legal procedures that were reportedly silenced under the 1947 National Security Act.”

“Not everyone who comes running out of the proverbial fires of hell wants to be a fireman when they emerge,” Mark explained. “Cathy and I know one young lady who therapeutically overcame the mind control conditioning of a religious cult, extreme psych abuse by her mother, and extensive traumas by the KKK[8] in order to freely pursue her own choices in life.”

“Lisa, the remarkable girl Mark cited, now successfully teaches English to foreign retarded and autistic children by compassionately utilizing her heightened telepathic skills to span language and mental barriers,” I added. “Many victims can’t *think* to recover so well. Those like Loretta Lynn, for example, should be honored for living the love she is despite ignorant people turning a blind eye and a deaf ear to her subliminal pleas for years. The more you know, the more you see and hear. Another victim claiming ‘no one would believe the things I can’t remember’ is counting on people like yourselves to wake up and make a necessary difference for her and her five children so they can recover from decades of Pentagon-level abuse.”

“Cathy is the only vocal recovered survivor of MK Ultra speaking today,” Mark explained. “This doesn’t mean that there aren’t numerous recovered mind controlled survivors submitting information. Neither Cathy nor I are public speakers, we’re whistleblowers. It’s not easy speaking out. Yet we’re exercising our freedom of speech today to ensure free thought for future generations.”

“Some people are grouchy when they wake up,” I admitted. “They’re not always kind. Love and concern for my daughter compels me to speak out, and the love that Mark and I share strengthens me.”

“Are you and Mark married?” a conservative woman wearing a huge crucifix asked accusingly. “I’m not sure I want to hear about love from someone who’s not married.”

“I’ll tell that to your Catholic Priest who teaches marriage counseling!” someone shouted at her.

A young woman gently shifted the subject. “I understand that you were forced to marry your MK Ultra handlers. Who arranged for these marriages?”

“My former owner in MK Ultra, US Senator Robert C. Byrd,” I answered. “My daughter was born while I was still being tortured and traumatized by my first handler, Wayne Cox. Once mind control conditioning was established through him, Byrd ordered Kelly and me to be transferred to our second handler Alex Houston. Byrd assured me that I would be bound to him through my forced marriage to Alex Houston, which he demanded occur on the anniversary of the Kennedy Assassination. Byrd deliberately took full control of me on the same date that the secret government took control of our country.”

“What ever happened to Wayne Cox?” she asked.

“Cox’s blatant serial killings tie directly in with CIA Black Budget drug operations, which is why he remains free for so-called reasons of national security despite the vast amount of evidence proving his guilt.”

As always, I was asked, “How is Kelly doing?”

In the course of updating them on her circumstances, I mentioned Kelly’s article. “*’The Invisible Menace; What You Don’t Know Is Hurting You’* has been published around the world in various newspapers. Her insight into subliminals is significant due to her awareness, which raises the question why are we allowing corporations to manipulate our minds through high tech ads loaded with subliminals[9]? We pay to be manipulated when we purchase their products.”

“A half dozen Corporate monopolies are taking over this country,” Mark warned.

“Learn how our minds are subliminally manipulated through her article,” I suggested. “It is published in Clay Douglas’ *Free American newspaper*[10], among others.”

“Should we outlaw subliminals in advertising?” someone asked.

“We simply need to educate ourselves since no one can legislate against people’s suggestibility levels,” Mark said. “That is what advertisers understand best. Knowledge is our ONLY defense against subliminals the same way it is against mind control. Think twice before you respond to an ad, and think logically. Pay attention rather than pay corporate sponsors by purchasing their products.”

“Outlawing subliminals would not necessarily undo generations of conditioning caused by high tech advertisements, anyway,” I added. “It may be that intrusive disruption of conscious thought through such advertisements every eight to twelve minutes has contributed to the rise in Attention Deficit Disorder. Combined with video games, our kids have grown up in a culture of constant subconscious bombardment that disrupts conscious thought. This is a possibility worth looking into. Again, raising awareness is key.”

A distinguished gentleman stood. “For years I have donated to Boys Town and Covenant House believing I was helping the children. When I was alerted to the corruption, I looked into it myself and saw it was true. Now I wonder how in the world I can help the children in a way that actually benefits them.”

“Believe the children,” I began. “Keep your eyes, ears, and heart open to their individual need and respond accordingly. When you choose to empower individual activists like Mark and me through your donations, stay vigilant. See the difference your money makes.”

Mark injected, “Every time you donate money, just like every time you cast your vote, stay aware of the results.”

“You talk about Bill and Hillary Clinton being bisexual,” another participant began. “It is a disgrace to our country to have homosexual activity being promoted from the White House. We have gay celebration week in our schools now. I would like to lead the cause against homosexuals.”

A few people cheered and I quickly said, “Homosexuality is often a ‘result’, not a ‘cause’. To take on a cause, first consider the cause of it. Look through the eyes of love to find the cause rather than succumb to socially engineered hate. Childhood sexual abuse is one such cause. Let’s stand against their abusers. It is time we put our differences aside and unite against those socially engineering us to divide. United we stand, divided we fall.”

“Then why did you bring up the issue in *TRANCE*?” the participant persisted.

“In reality,” I answered, “I was stating the facts.”

“*TRANCE* was written for Congress,” Mark reminded them. “It is well known inside the beltway of DC that the Clintons are bisexual.”

“It is my experience that they are bisexual, leaning toward the homosexual end,” I continued. “This fact is important in view of the media’s current perversion diversions leading people’s attention away from the crimes against humanity of which the Clintons are actually guilty. When I included information about their sexual preference in *TRANCE*, it certainly wasn’t intended to incite emotional response. Instead, it provides crucial details necessary for understanding what we are actually seeing today. Hillary isn’t the jilted wife she is being portrayed to be. This separation of the sexes ideology with the Clintons is a social engineering tactic to, among other things, create the illusion of division in order that Hillary can further her own political career in the future.”

“Think beyond TV’s spin,” Mark cautioned.

“I’ve heard rumors that Hillary has Bill Clinton under mind control,” someone said. “Is there any truth to those rumors?”

“Absolutely not!” Mark and I exclaimed in unison.

I continued. “No one under mind control has the capacity to cleverly lie and creatively twist words like Bill Clinton does! The more you understand about mind control, the easier it will become to identify victims. Victims can eloquently deliver a speech over and over using the same words, same voice inflections and gestures, the same dramatic pauses as programmed, yet cannot *think* to spontaneously respond to questions charismatically.”

Mark furthered the explanation. “Especially questions pertaining to dates, times, geography, or even how to spell simple words like ‘potato’. People under mind control are literal, and are therefore incapable of playing word semantics, misleading others, and spontaneously telling a blatant lie the way Slick Willie does.”

A polite young man stood. “Our country is being overrun by Mexicans since NAFTA. We’re loosing jobs and paying for their welfare. How are we supposed to ‘look through the eyes of love’ while we’re going bankrupt?”

“Have you ever been to Mexico?” I asked. “They have available medicine there that is affordable. They sure can’t get that here, especially through our failing welfare system. And they have more fresh produce than we do. Admittedly, the freshness of our produce has improved since Mexicans came here to show us how to farm and harvest it properly. It is expensive, though, and I sure don’t see Mexicans reaping the financial or health benefit of our genetically engineered foods. NAFTA was deliberately designed to economically enslave us while the rich get richer. Social engineering segregates us from the Mexican people, who we ignorantly blame for our demise while their leaders and ours deliberately enslave us to New World Order controls. This was the plan in the mid-1980s that I know of, and it is coming to fruition because we allow ourselves to be diverted by hate. Don’t listen to what politicians say, look at what they do. They are united in dividing we the people. Divided we fall. Let’s all unite, put the blame where it belongs, and stop the economic and ecological destruction of our planet and lives.”

“When the people lead, leaders follow,” Mark added while folks clapped and cheered.

A middle-aged woman stood up, “Jon Benet Ramsey[11] was murdered last December, and after reading *TRANCE* it is clear to me that she was probably under mind control. Stun gun prod moles were found all over her body; she was dressed age inappropriately with a plastic smile and pupilary dilation; a perverse pedophilic sex act on Christmas killed her; her mother was Miss West Virginia[12]; her father was a military subcontractor like your father; and the whole case is being covered up! Does your case tie in with hers in any way?"

"Yes," Mark answered, then turned to me. "Excuse me for answering this question first since it is directed to you." Turning back to the audience he continued, "Ongoing investigations make this a very sensitive subject right now since a copy of the military training film 'How to Create a Mind Control Slave Using a Stun Gun[13]" was found in the Ramsey house. Cathy was used in a military training film by that title. Also, a manifest from the ferry traveling between Traverse City, Michigan and Beaver Island registers Jon Benet's father and Cathy's father on the same ferry ride."

I injected, "My younger brother was nick-named 'Beaver' after this so-called religious Michigan retreat. Beaver Island is in close proximity to the Ramsey household in Charlevoix[14], where Jon Benet also held the beauty pageant title."

Mark continued, "Beaver Island is an identified mind control-training center associated with the Jesuits. People working for media mogul Rupert Murdock[15] have this evidence. Let's see what he does with it."

"We'll never *see* what he does with it!" someone skeptically shouted.

"He'll investigate it the same way the CIA is investigating itself!" and "He'll cover it up!" were voiced.

"Recently when I saw my daughter, Kelly," I quickly began in an effort to minimize pandemonium, "she cried when she said, 'the only difference between Jon Benet and me is that she can't be abused anymore'. Jon Benet's murder has prompted rumors of mind control and caused people to think to ask questions the media won't answer. People are learning that the media is as controlled as Jon Benet appeared to be."

The question was asked, “Did her mother, Patsy Ramsey, kill her daughter like the media suggests?”

Mark answered the question with a question. “Isn’t it ironic that John Ramsey married a ‘Patsy’[16]?”

“That precious child did not die in vain,” I said, solemnly. “Her memory lives on in all of us. How many more have to die before people in this country wake up and stop pedophilia, mind control, and New World Orders?”

“A whole new generation of mind control slaves has been recruited since Cathy and I have been speaking,” Mark added.

“Knowledge is our ONLY defense against mind control,” I said. “Please, help us spread the word for Kelly’s sake, Jon Benet’s sake, and for the sake of humanity’s future.”

“Buy copies of *TRANCE* and arm your loved ones with truth,” Mark continued. “We’re not making money off this. *TRANCE* is priced low so that those of you who are economically challenged like us can afford to get this crucial information out there. In deed, it is truth that makes us free!”

Bill Mahkovitz came up to the podium and hugged us both while the crowd stood in applause. “I’d like to thank Mark and Cathy for coming out here tonight to share what they know with all of us so that we can be more effective in our own efforts to take back our government and our lives. I wish they’d have brought more books, though. We’ve only got three left and they’re hard to find since *TRANCE* is self-published to circumvent censorship. Mark, where can these folks get a copy[17]? I’ll buy a case of books from you and do what I can to make them available. Where else can these folks buy *TRANCE* around here?”

“Through Dr. Stan Monteith,” Mark suggested.

“OK, Dr. Stan has some. Tune into Radio Liberty or go to his website at www.radioliberty.com. Thank you all for coming out here tonight.”

“Thanks, Bill!” someone shouted going out the door. Carl Klang’s latest music release “*It’s Not Over Until We Win*[18]” was being played through the sound system as people gathered their belongings. Most people stayed awhile to ask personal questions and talk. Communities like this one were reliant on individuals like Bill Mahkovitz to unite them with cause and arm them with truth.

Bill and his family have grown very dear to Mark and me, and represent *why* we continue to speak out. We finally left the auditorium together, exhausted. On the ride back to our hotel room, we discussed the event. “Why is acceptance of truth contingent upon us being married?” I asked, genuinely perplexed.

“It isn’t,” Bill Mahkovitz replied. “People are socially engineered to accept things one way. It’s like why you have to dress up to speak. People need to expand their thought and deepen their values.” He thought a moment. “I know you two are married, but when is your anniversary?”

“The end of December sometime,” I answered. “Do you know the date Mark?”

“I don’t know,” he told me. “I suppose we could look on the back of our wedding photo.”

Bill Mahkovitz started laughing. “You two just don’t argue about conventional things, do you? Couples hold it against each other if one of them forgets the Anniversary date.”

“We haven’t quite honeymooning long enough to pause for an Anniversary,” I told him.

“Claire and I can relate,” he chuckled.

“In the future,” Mark said thoughtfully, “we would be wise to ask people to write out their questions. With today’s issues so volatile, folks are getting emotional.”

“I thought we were going to have an anti-gay protest there for a minute,” Bill Mahkovitz agreed.

“By writing out their questions,” I added, “it could help keep them focused logically, too. I think this is a brilliant idea, Mark.”

“We’ll do questions and answers that way from now on,” Mark said. “They can make note of their questions while we speak.”

“Next time you come back to Santa Cruz,” Bill Mahkovitz said, “I’ll have paper and pencils ready to hand out as they come in the door. You will come back, won’t you?”

“Absolutely,” Mark agreed.

“I’ll start alerting people now,” he said.

Chapter 47
IN LIGHT of INSIGHT

“The Feds came in, flashed FBI identification, and started shackling us kids,” Kelly was telling Mark and me when we learned Jabneel had suddenly been shut down in July 1997. “They started loading us in vans. Most of the kids were totally freaked out. I am so used to abuse by the Feds I calmed the other kids down with jokes and stuff. I told them what Mom taught me about ‘change your thought, change your mood’. Anytime emotion overwhelms my thinking, I use that to logically refocus. It helped them, too. A few of my friends even started singing ‘*It’s Not Over Until We Win*[1]’ with me while they transported us. By the time they unloaded us from the van shackled and chained together, we were singing ‘*Swing Lo*, *Sweet Chariot*[2]’. One of the Feds tried not to smile. I saw him.”

“What excuse did they give for closing down Jabneel?” I asked Kelly, swallowing my rage.

“No one knows for sure. You can ask my new house mother and she’ll tell you ‘it’s the devil’.” Kelly had been immediately switched over to a group home without any court procedures. “All they did was take my records. Everybody saw them do it[3].”

“Did they arrest Jabneel staff?” Mark wondered.

“Nope,” Kelly answered. “They just chained us kids, boxed up my records, and locked the doors.”

Kelly’s new ‘house-mother’ came over to greet us and provide explanation. “It was the devil,” she assured us.

“Do you know anything about dissociative disorders?” Mark asked her, noting her pupilary dilation and blank stare.

“Huh?” She asked. “Kelly will be attending High School in the fall, and they need you to provide her school records.”

“Tell the Feds to turn them over,” Kelly advised her matter-of-factly.

“Maybe you are familiar with the old term ‘Multiple Personality Disorder’,” Mark persisted.

“Huh?” She asked absent-mindedly.

“Are you familiar with child abuse?” I asked her.

“Of course, everyone here is abused. We don’t allow any satanism or drugs in our house, though,” she assured us as half a dozen tattooed, pierced teens with various shades of neon hair walked by.

“Who buys their clothes?” I asked, noting occult-theme tee shirts on every one of them.

“They do,” she answered. “Once a month I take them shopping with the $10 the state gives them to meet their needs.” She wandered off, leaving us alone again.

“That’s like the blind leading the blind,” Mark muttered.

“I’m working with a new horse,” Kelly announced. “His name is Breeze[4]. The owners put him out to pasture after a bunch of satanists got hold of him and turned him mean. He’s not mean. His owners just didn’t care to understand him. They didn’t even comfort him. He knows I understand, though, and trusts me now. I ride him all the time.”

Kelly’s ability to telepathically communicate with animals[5] was proving to be the only positive outlet she had in her occult-saturated placement. Even when she began attending public high school, satanism prevailed there, too. True-to-soul, she couldn’t be controlled by the religious means surrounding her.

Back in Nashville, I immediately arranged for a meeting with the Department of Human Services in an effort to obtain Kelly’s records as requested by her high school.

“We’ve restructured and are now the Department of Children’s Services,” I was told by a state worker. “You can get Kelly’s records released through the Feds who closed down Jabneel.”

“Obviously that is not possible,” I said. “Please at least call the high school and explain to them that they can meet with me. Right now they won’t even allow me in the building because they believe there are court orders prohibiting it. You and I both know that is absurd. In the meantime, they are counseling Kelly that she cannot graduate with her class unless her records are provided. The pressure this puts on her is enormous, in addition to being in a public school for the first time in years.”

“No.”

“That wasn’t a question. Where is your logic? Where is your compassion?” I asked, only to be met with blank stares and no results.

By October Kelly took matters into her own hands, fleeing pressure, injustice, and one of Knoxville’s common murderous occult rituals. Along with a friend, she hitchhiked nearly 200 miles to Nashville where she was found sleeping under a bridge. The phone call she placed to me moments before when she arrived was apparently illegally monitored, and local police picked her up before I could respond. She was thrust back into state institutions.

“We’re going to place Kelly in Try[6]-Angle House,” the Department of Children’s Services informed me. “She is in lockdown right now and you are prohibited from seeing her.”

“Kelly has been through a strenuous ordeal and needs comforting,” I pleaded. “We need to see each other.”

“Ms. O’Brien,” a new DCS worker assigned to Kelly’s case said, “If it is any comfort, I’ve been going over Kelly’s records and see where she has already accumulated close to twenty-five thousand dollars in her State Bank Account from Social Security[7]. When she turns 18, this money will be released to her to ease her back into society. Perhaps she can even obtain the type therapy you seek.”

“Even if I believed you,” I told her, “it doesn’t help Kelly today. Today, she and I need to talk if you would please…”

“No,” she said, looking at her watch and gathering up her papers. “This meeting is adjourned.”

In order to cope with the magnitude of Kelly’s ordeal, I wrote letters to her daily and began venting through poetry. The poems were usually for and about her, focusing on hope, love, and *soul*utions. I found that by writing, I could still shift the emotionally incomprehensible to logic the same way I had in deprogramming. My poetry proved to be a therapeutic means of coping I would utilize for years to come. In addition to this, I thrust myself into work.

Mark and I were speaking out on the radio and through seminars that were beginning to extend internationally. The volumes of paperwork and books filling our tiny house finally broke the foundation in two! Our landlord was not pleased, and refused to refund our renter’s deposit when we were forced to leave. As whistleblowers, Mark and I had devoted our all to spreading the word in a manner conducive to survival and maintaining our right to speak out. It was a precarious balance, yet we were determined to survive at all costs! Loosing our deposit was understandable yet difficult under the circumstances.

“I’d rather go without gas and groceries than align with any organization that would fund us and can be infiltrated,” Mark told me as we sat on the steps figuring out our next move.

“Every day we survive is one more day I get to be with you,” I said, holding his hand. “I’d rather spend time with you than spend money any day!”

“OK,” Mark smiled. “Now that we have that issue resolved, what are we going to do about it?”

“You’re asking me?” I laughed. “What do I know about making money?”

Mark’s eyes twinkled. “I’m serious!” I said, fully aware of what he was thinking.

“So am I,” he said, rising to go back inside. “Maybe an answer will come to us.”

That evening our friend who inspired our move to Alabama phoned and we told her our dilemma. “There is a big vacant house on my property that you two could fix up if it would meet your needs. It needs some work, but it certainly is large enough for spacious living quarters, an office or two, and a storage area for your books and documents.” The next day she showed us the house and we immediately began the process of relocating.

“At least it’s brick and won’t break in half,” she laughed as we moved our tons of documents and books in. Her attitude was positively bright, and I grew to learn many points of wisdom from her through the years.

“If this house was a shack I would love it for the soul-rejuvenating nature surrounding it!” I exclaimed, hugging her with delight. “Thank you so much for sharing it with us!”

It would be a full month before we finally got all the vines pulled off the windows and bricks to even see the complete house. The electricity needed rewiring and the plumbing needed replacing, yet Mark and I were no strangers to work. Especially when it was a labor of love. When the lights came on and we could finally see our home, I was astounded by its beauty and strength. It was a magnificent home, and Mark and I felt privileged to live in such a peaceful and serene setting. Waking up to soul rejuvenating beauty each day makes the hardest of times lighter, and we relished every moment.

We built new cages for our raccoons, who thrived in their new environment. Our coons immediately made friends with the neighboring wild coons, and soon we had dozens coming up to visit every night. The wildlife in the wooded area around us soon realized we were attuned to them and their needs, and our yard turned into a wildlife sanctuary! In addition to the coons, we had fox, beaver, eagles, bobcats, squirrels, chipmunks, deer, and even an occasional bear. The deer would sleep on the porch the way moose had in Alaska, and they felt as at home with us as we did with them.

The wild ‘coons soon became jealous of our pet raccoons, and wanted a cage of their own. Cages were regarded as protection from outside intruders rather than containment, and the wild coons soon claimed the small have-a-heart trap we used for treating sick animals. They would lock themselves inside when they were hungry, expecting we would feed them[8]. After treating a few wild coons for fleas and worms, word apparently spread among them that the trap was the place to go for assistance. One time when the door didn’t shut properly, the coon inside held it closed until we tended his needs! Mama coons began bringing their new babies up for worming and snacks. Never once did they steal or destroy anything. Coons are very intelligent and polite when they are cared for.

Being attuned with nature kept life in perspective. Everyday I took our blonde chow dog Moses for a walk—or rather, he would take me. Moses had adopted Mark and me prior to our move. The tiny house that broke in two was right in ‘tornado alley’ where tornados were commonplace. After one such violent storm, Moses wandered into our yard seeking medical attention for a snakebite. Mark treated him, and he deeply appreciated it. Moses’ intelligence was high, and his telepathic communications were met with understanding. The more he interacted with us, the stronger his communications became to the point where he had no need to bark, jump, slobber, or act like a dog. He was one of us and he knew it. Because of his unique characteristics, he fit right into our new home environment and soon became our constant companion. Moses abandoned his instinct to hunt in favor of inner-communicating with wildlife, which added to the peace of our environment.

Our new home had a huge office, which proved ideal for balancing the intensity of our business with nature's wildlife pleasure. *TRANCE* was soon ready for reprint again. "You wondered how we would sell the first printing," Mark reminded me. "Now we're needing to reprint again. We didn't make quite enough profit off the last run to pay for this printing. We need to come up with some cash."

"We should raise the price of the book," I suggested. "At least it will perpetuate itself that way."

"No," Mark said thoughtfully. "We need to keep it affordable so people are able to help us spread the word. Mind control is the common thread weaving through society's woes and more people are realizing it everyday."

"Who would believe we are broke?" I asked. "You have successfully marketed *TRANCE* to where it is already reputed to be one of the best selling self-published book ever. We're making a significant positive difference bringing the reality of mind control to light."

"Not enough for Kelly, yet," Mark said sadly. "Her situation is deplorable. She is nearly 18, soon will be free of the system and we still haven't obtained her right to qualified rehab. The National Security Act has yet to be repealed! Maybe by going global with the information we can incite action. The internet has proven to be the perfect tool of mass communication on a global scale."

"I know you are good at making something from nothing," I admitted. "There isn't anything you can't fix or build. Still, it astounds me that you built a computer by dissecting our old one when it wasn't even made for internet use. Your applicable intelligence is why *TRANCE* will soon be going global. No wonder we need to reprint! We better go pull some of the motorcycle parts in the garage together and build a bike to sell so we can afford to reprint. Demand for *TRANCE* will rise even more with Clinton going through impeachment."

“Do you really believe ‘slick Willie’ will be impeached?” Mark laughed.

“He’ll probably just redefine ‘impeach’ the same way he has redefined ‘sex’ and everything else,” I complained.

“The media has redefined the whole country,” Mark said. “It used to be that art imitates life. Now life imitates art. *Wag the Dog*[9] proved that.”

“How do you think the media got the jump on the whole Monica Lewinsky[10] scandal?”

“The Mossad may be able to answer that for you. I can’t,” Mark informed me.

“If Clinton gets impeached,” I said, “it will be for all the wrong reasons. The perversion diversion will have worked! That’s not tolerable! People need to realize truth or the same people will stay in control.”

“Even if people did learn,” Mark said, gathering up tools to work on a motorcycle project, “they’ve got to restructure the voting system before they could get their own choice in office. Everybody already knows the majority didn’t vote Clinton into this second term.”

“Remember that caller on Clay Douglas’[11] radio show?” I asked, carrying tools out to the garage with Mark.

Mark laughed. “That was funny. Everybody was complaining that they didn’t know anyone who voted for Clinton and that drunk called in and slurred, ‘I’m the one who voted for Clinton.”

“Unless Clinton redefines ‘impeach,’ maybe the voice of the people will at least be heard to vote him *out* of office.”

“I wish people would learn truth before Bush Jr. assumes office,” Mark said as he began to assemble a motorcycle from a box of parts.

“If people don’t wise up,” I said, “they’re going to keep it ‘all in the family’ of dictators as planned. Look at how Poppy Bush’s sons are already lined up to assume office with Governor Jeb running the drug capital of Florida, and Governor Jr. in Texas ready to claim the Presidency.”

“Bush has been running this country a long time,” Mark acknowledged. “He was head of the CIA when they took control of the country during Ford’s Administration.”

“At least Ford didn’t pretend to be elected,” I noted. “Reagan only acted like President while Bush ran the country. Everybody in DC that I was exposed to knew Bush ran the country with Cheney[12] right beside him. Was there even the illusion of an election when Bush publicly assumed office after Reagan?”

“You don’t remember?” Mark asked.

“No!” I smiled. “I was a bit distracted waking up from mind control and going to the top of the world with you.”

“Well the rest is history anyway,” Mark smiled.

“History that was planned in 1984 when Bush tapped Clinton to follow him!” I complained. “This nonsense has got to stop or Poppy will be pulling Jr’s strings next!”

“Speaking of which,” Mark said screwing a part into place, “pass me that nut. This motorcycle should be ready for sale in time for us to reprint *TRANCE*.”

By the time we were ready to reprint, the motorcycle was sold. This provided just enough extra income for us to tend to Kelly’s disastrous release from the Tennessee system. She was missing again.

I knocked on the door of Try-Angle House and social worker Suzanne Boone answered the door leaving the chain in tact.

“What do you want?” she asked through the crack.

“My daughter,” I said. “Where is Kelly?”

“You find her,” she retorted. “When you do, tell her I sold her clothes and hope chest full of trinkets.”

“How can you be so heartless?” I asked. “Those girls in there are counting on you.”

“There is nothing I can do for any of them,” she answered coldly. “Or you. The system isn’t working.”

“Then find your voice!” I snapped. “Make a difference!”

Mark was aware of how the CIA operates and utilized his insight to locate Kelly. We found her quivering in a CIA sponsored crack house after being sent to Fort Campbell, Kentucky for (obvious) reported traumatization. Holding a weapon in plain sight, Mark kept the owner of the crack house in his sights while Kelly gathered her clothes. I led my daughter from the house while Mark backed slowly away to join us in the car. We sped away.

Kelly thanked us and thanked us for rescuing her from that hell, and conveyed a horrifying story of recent sordid abuse by the State of Tennessee that led to that moment. Sobbing hysterically, she reported being taken to Fort Campbell where they train and program the 101st Airborne. Next thing she knew, she was in the crack house and we were leading her into the car.

We knew we were all in grave danger until Mark shook the tails following us and drove us safely out of Nashville. Pausing to regroup and plan our next move, we all shared the knowing that we just survived the impossible again.

“So what do we do now?” we pondered as we shared a fast food dinner in the car.

“I have a friend,” I told Kelly, “who can keep you safe and hidden right now. She is streetwise and profoundly soulful. She’s been working for you behind the scenes for years, and loves you very much. Her house is never the same, and always has different people in need like you coming through. She has assured me that her doors are always open to you, and I know in my heart it’s the safest choice we can make right now.”

“Can we see each other there?” Kelly asked.

“Yes!”

“It feels right to me,” Kelly said, curling up in a fetal position in the backseat and sleeping until we arrived.

“Dana!” I greeted my beautiful friend.

“You’re taking me up on my offer?” she smiled. “Everything will be fine. I’ll take care of her like she’s my own daughter.”

“In light of your insight,” I hugged her, “I know you will.”

By the time Mark and I slipped away, Dana and Kelly were sitting lotus-style on the floor doing Yoga together like a couple of best friends. “This is a peaceful way to relax,” she was telling Kelly. “Soon you’ll be able to dream[13] again.”

Chapter 48
GLOBAL WARNING

“It is a new day, and people worldwide need to realize that the days of operating on a Need-to-Know basis are over,” our friend with the United Nations was saying. “Socially engineered narrow views are no longer an excuse for ignorance. Now that the truth is realized, wisdom demands action. People cannot bury their heads in the sand anymore.”

“They’ve buried their heads in the sands of an hour glass and time just ran out!” I agreed.

Our friend, whose name is most likely an alias anyway, is working toward positive change within the United Nations. I had sufficient cause to doubt there could be any good people within the CIA or politics, and learning that there was proved to be deeply encouraging. Now I had the privilege of witnessing positive change within areas of the UN corrupted by global elite hell-bent on mass genocide through AIDS, vaccinations[1], and immunizations[2]. Scientists working on this level learned the truth, expanded their Need-to-Know and took action. They won by making the necessary positive differences and those criminals at the top dictating their actions didn’t even know it.

“The good guys have already won and the bad guys don’t know it yet!” Mark said.

“When the people lead, leaders follow whether they realize it or not,” I concluded.

Mark and I were traveling on an international speaking circuit that positively provided us an expansive view of global perspectives. The problems with global elite's version of the New World Orders had been identified, and solutions were now being implemented. People of vast wealth were seeking new ways to invest their money free of the old school global elite who had been in power too long. They were determined to fund peace, not war; freedom, not slavery; education, not propaganda; truth, not secrets.

Mark and I fit in well with these wealthy folks despite our obvious financial differences. I always understood that Mark was fully capable of generating as much money as anyone, yet, like Kelly said, "he's too busy making a difference to make a buck." Personally, I knew nothing about spending money let alone investing it. Yet, we were sharing what we knew with these wealthy folks from all over the world who sought to invest in humanity's future rather than the global elite's history. After all, I did know Senator Byrd who held the purse strings on the most powerful country in the world. And he was selling US and all of humankind out to global controls by funding wars, genocide, and environmental destruction.

Scientists[3] with microscopic focus on internal mechanisms of our planet were alarmed by this destruction and were organizing. They needed to make their voices heard in time to sound the global warning. Glacierologists studying the earth's history frozen in the North and South Poles were watching it melt away before their eyes, and wanted to know why. They learned that Global Warming caused by burning hydrocarbon fuels is destroying our planet along with HAARP. *Thirty million years* of ecological balance has been disrupted! The melting of the glaciers is causing a world of change. As history melts, the future becomes clear. There will be no future unless people take action *now*. How could these Glacierologists make their voices heard when people seemingly didn't care to understand their scientific language?

As whistleblowers, neither Mark nor I could speak out on anything other than what we knew from experience despite the vast view we were gaining. Besides, my limited English did not include speaking fluent science, academia, computer speak, attorney, or fluent anything that had big words indigenous to specialized focus.

Wisdom naturally spans all language barriers through collective conscious spiritual evolution. In order to gain eyes to see and ears to hear from other walks of life beyond our own, spiritual evolution must begin within. After all, the sociopaths responsible for destroying our planet are vastly intelligent; yet lack the wisdom that comes with spiritual evolution through truth and power of love. Their source of power is secrets, hatred, war, and wealth from fossil fuels, chemicals and drugs. Now we know that oil consumption is primarily responsible for destroying our planet's ecosystem. If we don't wake up, wise up, and evolve, mother nature will take care of herself with weather that grows more violent by the minute. Acting on spiritual evolution's wisdom, we can all learn from each other and unite in purpose light years ahead of political and religious differences.

The more Mark and I traveled, the more I relied on telepathic communication to span language barriers. Children all over the world are naturally the easiest to reach because ego hasn't yet artificially separated them from reality. Society's conditioning and educational academic credits have not yet closed their ears and eyes. Religion's pious differences have not yet confused their pure soul wisdom and unconditional love. Everywhere we went, I focused on the children to learn from them their culture, priorities, and purpose. As I looked into the children's eyes, I saw a future bright with promise.

For over a decade I have noticed more and more children being born with love's wisdom in their soulful eyes. Is humankind genetically evolving to save the species? Is this an indication that the spiritual evolution has already commenced bigger than life? Could it be that evolution has already occurred in the timeless spiritual dimension to be realized on earth in these tumultuous times? The answer is within, and seeing this truth reflected in the children's eyes *around the world* is profound. Look within yourself to realize your own truth, and then look within the children's eyes to see theirs. Spiritual evolution already *is*, all we need to do is real-eyes it.

BALI, INDONESIA

“If we learn to expand our thought beyond what we think we know by understanding how mind control works, we could prevent history from repeating itself with World War III,” Mark was telling an auditorium of over a thousand attendees from around the world. The 50 foot tall giant screen behind him amplified his image so all could see the sincerity reflecting in his eyes. An elaborate million dollar sound system amplified his voice, so all could hear the magnitude of his message. Elaborate Indonesian woodcarvings and spectacular foliage decorated the resort where we were speaking, which amplified the soul. Bali proved to be the spiritual Mecca[4] it was reputed to be.

“World War II’s Nazi Germany was a warning from history,” Mark continued. “That warning was stifled under the 1947 National Security Act. Nazi and fascist scientists were being transported to the United States through Project Paperclip[5] since America wanted to learn the mind sciences that spelled the demise of Germany. There is no ‘beating around the Bush’ that the folks funding Hitler were building the foundational structure of his New World Order. Follow the money and at some point you’ll arrive at the Vatican. MK Ultra was a powerful combination of what the Catholics had long since learned about the effects of trauma on the human mind, Nazi mind control techniques, and advancing CIA technologies for refining psychological warfare.”

The foundational history Mark laid provided folks with a point of reference for understanding my part of the presentation, and how I came to recover. Between the two of us, the reality of mind control became irrefutably comprehensive.

“Many government secrets and personal reputations were staked on the belief that I could not be deprogrammed to remember that which I was supposed to forget. The flat thinking criminals in control of our country that were in control of my mind never counted on the strength of the human spirit. They never counted on the power of love. They never counted on what could happen when a good man like Mark Phillips got hold of their secret knowledge and used it to free a mind rather than control one. Just like we can’t think like they do, they can’t think like we do. For as intelligent as they are, they lack wisdom. And wisdom outthinks a criminal mind every time."

Our time in Bali was highly successful both in terms of sharing information on mind control and gaining an inside view into Indonesian culture. Unlike most Indonesians, Balinese are primarily Hindu and were living light years beyond the tumultuous violence brewing among their Muslim neighbors. While Mark and I experienced Bali's peace, nearby East Timor's tensions were being fueled by oil-greedy outside influences. Nevertheless, the smiling people of Bali remained soulfully moral and thoughtfully accommodating. Looking into the eyes of the children provided a view into another world. A world where people naturally lived spiritual values attuned to nature. I expanded my own vision to look into the eyes of the adults, and was astounded to see an even wiser version of the children's eyes; still joyful and free of egotistical pretense. No wonder Bali is a spiritual destination when it is so clear to see peace and freedom in action[6].

OSAKA, JAPAN

Mark had been recovering from extensive spinal surgery for less than 30 days when we spoke in Japan. In the United States, the prognosis for his survival was minimal and recovery nil. Surgery was unattainable for us anyway since we could not afford the necessary insurance, let alone the hundreds of thousands of dollars hospitalization required. Medical services in the US were based solely on money, and the medical system had collapsed and failed without compassion for the needy. We turned to Australia and found the most advanced medical care available. No amount of money can buy health and happiness anyway, and we were elated to learn Australia knew this, too. Mark's surgeon understood that the subconscious never sleeps, and was mindful that discussions during surgery only affirmed healing. Recovery was regarded as important as surgery, and it could easily take a month before Mark could walk out of the hospital.

Mark's attitude toward healing was positively impatient, though. "I don't have the time nor the financial resources to spend a month in the hospital," he told his surgeon.

"When you can walk, you can leave," he assured Mark, totally confident that that would take weeks. Three days after surgery, Mark rose from his bed and took his first steps. By the fifth day he dressed to leave, much to the astonishment of his surgeon. "I can't even write this up for the medical books," he exclaimed knowing he would jeopardize his medical license to document something so miraculous[7].

When Mark spoke in Japan, he was a walking, talking manifestation of the mind's healing power with love. People listened intently to what he said; fully realizing he knew what he was talking about!

For me, Japan was a celebration of Mark's healing and an extension of my own resolve to surround him with pure love. At first I believed my inability to connect with the Japanese people was due to my own focus on caring for Mark. Japanese segregated Mark and me from them the same way Americans had treated blacks in the '60s, seating us in the back of restaurants away from them. They exuded an accusing aloofness that I would have misunderstood entirely had it not been for the children. I looked into the children's eyes, and they showed me the way to their soul. Generations of war, control, and technological focus had taken its toll, and I looked beyond the pain to their peace. It was as though they vibrated at a different frequency. Once the children revealed it, I began connecting with adults as readily. I learned a powerful lesson. Looking into their eyes, I saw our future unless we wake up and evolve to stop the warring. Disdain for Americans was disdain for our warmongering ways, and the Japanese as a whole had learned that war is not an answer after their attack on Pearl Harbor in World War II and the resultant atomic bomb retaliation. The trauma of the atomic bomb attack[8] seemingly thrust them into a nation of thought communication that collectively is rising toward peaceful evolution.

BC, CANADA

Western Canada's soul-rejuvenating pristine beauty, vast wilderness land, and Native heritage tend to displace the intensity of social engineering aimed at the Canadian people. Native Canadians, like Native Americans, maintain their history of wisely discussing current events with an eye on the future. These Natives, commonly referred to as ‘Indians,’ do not recognize the imaginary line drawn in the sand politically separating Canada, the US, and Mexico anymore than they do the continental span of the Hopis and Tibetans. Traditionally uniting to strengthen their soulful wisdom, these profound natives sidestep television’s social engineering, Global education, and political propaganda to quietly and peaceful assume their respectful place in history’s future.

Likewise, small communities of people sparsely populate Canada’s wilderness whereby personal interaction provides hope for their increasing evolutionary stand against the New World Order. The 1997 CBC Broadcast of “*The Sleep Room*” reflected Canadian intolerance of US generated mind control, keeping citizens aware of the CIA’s MK Ultra atrocities perpetrated at their Allen Memorial Institute in Montreal since the 1950’s. Nevertheless, much of the urban population is still being blindsided by the systematic use of mass mind control’s technologies as is reflecting in the eyes of the children.

“Our children are being misled through Global Education,” one concerned parent was saying. Mark and I were often brought back into Canada to speak, and were concluding another presentation in Vancouver. “History is being rewritten and human values ignored while information is downloaded into our children’s brains through computers. What are the ramifications of education methods such as these?”

“Creativity is lost,” Mark began, “as is a capacity for critical analysis of the information. This results in a robotic compliance without question and an inability to productively apply what is learned. A New World Order mindset of compliance is being manufactured through your children.”

I added, “During the 1980’s, I worked under US Education Secretary Bill Bennett who was actively implementing Global Ed on a national and international scale. My personal association with Former Prime Minister Brian Mulrooney was due to his direct involvement in this Global Ed effort. While he and Bill Bennett both were dedicated to Catholic Jesuit mind control methods, Brian Mulrooney emphatically initiated the use of technological harmonic computerization in the classroom."

A young man asked, "Which is worse? Catholic Jesuit manipulation of religious values to instill controls on the children, or harmonic technological controls?"

"I am personally aware of former Prime Minister Pierre Trudeau's manipulation of Canada's education system using Jesuit means," I answered. "This is not to say all Catholics are guilty of ill intent any more than are the educators who implement such means on the children. Personally, I believe that those who are not guilty of abusive mind control means will rise to stop those who are. Pierre Trudeau's Jesuit mind control influence in the school system, churches, and politics are widely recognized and abhorred, as are Brian Mulrooney's. The devastation Trudeau wreaked on Canada's children and society became further entrenched through the computerized harmonic technologies Brian Mulrooney imposed. Between the two forces, manipulation of your children's minds demands your awareness and immediate action to stop it."

"Good people don't *think* to look for criminal activity of this magnitude," Mark continued. "Therefore, it is up to each and every one of you to inform others in your community to raise awareness."

"Look into the children's eyes," I advised. "I have. A flicker of hope shines through their tears that someone will see their need. They not only reflect mind control abuses, they also reflect the kind of sexual abuse being deliberately perpetrated through the churches for the purpose of mind control. Child prostitution is skyrocketing in Canada. Why?"

An elderly man responded, "Understanding mass mind control methods gives us the edge we need to be effective in stopping the abuse of our children. Apparently we have been slow in waking up, and our children have paid the ultimate price. As a society, we have lost our way through superficial materialism, treating our children like possessions for trade.

Child prostitution and pedophilia have become so rampant that we can no longer close our eyes in light of the truth.”

Individuals within Canada frustrated with their government’s systematic cover-up of child abuse are taking positive action. Peaceful noncompliance with New World Order war/terror tactics and controls is becoming commonplace. People are raising awareness and their voices for the sake of their spiritual freedom, their children, and their future.

MANILA, PHILIPPINES

“Today we are donating computers to Manila’s school system that are free of Global Education tactics in order that the children learn truth that can be applied with wisdom.” This announcement was met with thunderous applause by the recipients, as well as by the wealthy seminar participants who had found yet another productive way to invest their money in humanity’s future free of the global elite. They knew that tax-deductible donations to major charities reached the greedy and not the needy, and that the best way to contribute was through caring. Caring to see the need and personally respond to it.

Manila was a poverty-stricken city that was rich in wisdom. The people had a soulful history that opened their eyes to the reality of today’s world. They clearly saw a future of hatred, enslavement, and control through the warmongering global elite, and were in the process of peaceful noncompliance while Mark and I were there in 1999. The people of Manila were predominantly Catholic having succumbed to charities out of necessity as most third world countries do. Yet local newspapers reported extensive pedophilia in the church, pointedly referring to it as child abuse and not homosexuality as diversion demanded. Rather than file lawsuits against the Catholic Church, they sidestepped it by building their own churches free of ‘thought control.’ While Mark and I were in Manila, the Pope was forced to address the issue with the noncompliant Philippine people calling for cessation of child abuse and thought control in the Catholic churches. They printed his statement, and built their own churches anyway with the money they were no longer sending to the Vatican.

Likewise, they sidestepped Global Ed. Due to their poverty, the average child did not grow up being conditioned by Sesame Street[9] or video games to robotically accept information being pumped into their brains at warp speed. Since Global Ed was designed to increase their learning capacity while decreasing their ability to critically analyze, the high tech process was not compatible with Manila's soulful children. They rejected the onslaught of information, which Mark cleverly likens to drinking from a fire hose, and unknowingly rejected the way history was deliberately rewritten in the process.

The wealthy seeking investments in humanity's future embraced the opportunity to meet the needs of the Philippine children themselves. The computers would allow these precious children to learn *truth* at their own pace while gaining computerization's communications that would link them to the rest of the world.

Everybody is on their own learning path, and mine feels extremely privileged. Universal justice, which is always naturally tipped to the good with love being the most powerful force in the universe, was providing me an expanded global view after blindly following orders under mind control. Through this extreme experience, universal justice reverberates as Mark and I volunteer our lives to participate in the worldwide evolutionary process. This donation of computers to the Philippine people exemplifies what can be accomplished when we care to see the need and respond ourselves.

RIMINI, ITALY

"Cathy and I have been fortunate to travel around the world several times speaking out on mind control," Mark was saying to the crowd gathered near Rimini, Italy while translators rapidly interpreted his words and cameras rolled. "It is encouraging to find the rest of the world more awake and aware than they are in the United States."

A young man stood to ask his question, which was interpreted. "Cardinal Law[10] is in Rome today to meet with the Pope regarding the rampant pedophilia in the Boston Archdiocese. Are Americans aware that mind control is involved?"

"After speaking out on the Boston[11] connection for over a decade, it is encouraging to see the first step being taken toward justice," I began. "However, the US media not only fails to address the issue of mind control, they are diverting people's attention away from the issue of pedophilia by calling it homosexuality. Many of the survivors of Catholic abuse and their supporters are aware that mind control is the underlying issue. The public is not."

Mark elaborated further. "Repressed memory of childhood sexual abuse usually begins to surface around age 30 when natural electro-chemical changes occur in the brain. The is a widely known and established fact. The fact that the Vatican placed a ten-year statute of limitations on reporting such abuse eliminates a vast number of their victims from joining the class action suit. Neither Cathy nor Kelly is eligible for compensation under this rule. How many others are being ignored?"

"Please," I added, "I encourage each and everyone of you to pose this question to the Vatican. Ask how many victims of Catholic abuse are being ignored in accordance with the Vatican Child Abuse Policy[12]. Feel free to specifically cite Kelly and me as examples[13]."

Many people in the audience made note while the young man said, "Please repeat that specific policy."

"Thank you for making note of this. The Vatican Child Abuse Policy is considered so secretive that many lives were lost attempting to bring this truth to light for the children's sake. The billions spent and lives lost covering up the recent Vatican Banking scandal are only secondary to The Vatican Child Abuse Policy. Please ask how many victims like my daughter and me are being deliberately ignored under this Vatican Child Abuse Policy."

Decades of Catholic related abuse in Italy left the people acutely aware of the atrocities emanating from the Vatican. They evolved above and beyond the abuse, proving that knowledge is truly a powerful defense against mind control. Their insight has yet to stop the Vatican from taxing them, yet it did serve to protect their children. Wise and aware, Italians proved to be highly evolved peaceful people rather than the Catholic mobsters I had been conditioned to expect. Looking into the children's wise eyes was a delight, and they assumed telepathic communication in keeping with the lifestyle they knew.

"We choose to not watch television in Italy," someone else was saying. "Our news we discuss. It is understood here that Bush does not run America. It is obvious he is managed and controlled, and that his father and Dick Cheney set the world stage while Karl Rove directs him[14]. Do Americans know this?"

"No," Mark and I answered together.

Mark elaborated first. "The whole country PTSDed after the 9-11 tragedy. As you all know, trauma leaves people more easily led. People in the United States have yet to learn about mind control, and therefore could not safeguard themselves from traumatic effects. In the event someone did think to look into mind control, the Freedom of Information Act was immediately revoked and 100,000 documents on MK Ultra reclassified. Of course, Cathy and I had already obtained copies during the few months they were declassified, which we make conveniently available on CD Rom[15] everywhere we go in an effort to raise awareness of mind control. Knowledge is our only defense against mind control, and Americans were rendered defenseless against the controls imposed on them after 9-11. Traumatic bloody images played over and over and over again on TV while orders were given to send money that has yet to reach the victims. Between images, people were bombarded with fitness commercials to keep them focused on a physical reaction. They could not *think* to think for themselves or gather strength of soul to ask pertinent questions. Questions like 'why is Bush hunting terrorists in oil reserves' when all he needs to do is look in his own backyard."

"Or the mirror," I added. "In 1995, *TRANCE*[16] had already detailed that Jr. was being trained for the Presidency by his father and Dick Cheney. A wealth of pertinent information could come to light if only Jr. were deprogrammed and could *think* to tell what he knows! Events Bush, Sr. and Cheney discussed at the Bohemian Grove in the mid 1980's are unfolding today with Jr. as acting President. Jr. is evidence of mind control's sliding scale, as well as a manifestation of his father's and Hitler's dream. Jr's brother Jeb Bush had assumed Governorship in Florida, where it was decided that Jr. had been 'selected' President. ABC news even inadvertently released pre-determined election results the day before elections! Americans knew Bush Jr. was placed for a reason, and that war was imminent. Bush, Sr. and Cheney were hunting oil, and 9-11 gave them license to do it."

"Fossil fuels are causing global warming," an elderly man said. "Bush and Cheney are destroying our planet. Do Americans realize that oil is no longer a necessary fuel source?"

"Yes," Mark answered. "Many have died attempting to make alternative fuel sources available. Bush-Cheney oil companies are powerful. Prior to 9-11, Americans were adamantly opposing their oil-drilling destruction of Alaska's pristine wilderness[17]. They were asking questions regarding Area 51's propulsion technologies[18]. Their voices were silenced after 9-11 while the media focused only on trauma rather than solutions."

This discussion was furthered during lunch, which is an integral part of Italian culture. Lunch breaks last two to three hours, with many businesses closing for the daily event. Soon thereafter, even more time is devoted to dinner. Italian cuisine is reputed to be the best in the world, yet it is not so much the food that is their focus of attention as it is the conversations shared with meals. Talking is animated with Italians gesturing much of the time with their hands rather than eating. Talk is intense as they walk to and from eating establishments, many of which are quaint outdoor cafés.

Mark and I determined that all the walking and gesturing Italians do must contribute to their fitness. The whole time we were in Italy, we did not see *any* obese people. Americans are growing heavier and heavier, which appears to be resultant from genetically engineered foods. Italian food *feels* as satisfying as it tastes, whereas food in America has seemingly lost its ability to satisfy. When one Italian explained that American food was prohibited in Italy, I quickly realized that genetic engineering of food would have to soon cease for economic reasons[19]. I affectionately refer to Italy as “Eatily.” It is during their sharing of meals that their lives are enriched with the truths that they share with each other--free of TV spin.

FIRST LIGHT, FIJI

A new day dawns first in Fiji! Sun shines there before it reaches anywhere else on the earth, and I certainly can understand why. I would shine there first, too! Fiji is living proof that all of humankind’s fondest hopes and ideals for a utopic shambala can be realized in light of love, peace, and wisdom.

Mark and I joined friends for a life enhancing ‘Blue Lagoon Cruise’ in Fiji at the turn of the millennium. This perfect time to experience the first light of the millennium was enhanced by *timing* bigger than life!

“Hey mate,” our Maori[20] forever-friend Kane Robinson began when we returned from our cruise, “does time feel distorted to you? I feel like we just left, yet were there forever.”

“I feel like we just ‘arrived’ at some kind of major spiritual level,” I observed as we disembarked the yacht.

“Life will never be the same,” Mark agreed, carrying his snorkeling gear. “It just got better.”

“All of my values have changed,” Kane commented. “And I already feel richer for it. It is as though everything we’ve ever worked for is already realized, and now we simply need to go through life’s motions to achieve it in real-time.”

“Kane, I don’t know specifically what the future holds,” Mark admitted. “Yet I am confident it is all in order, that you are forever an integral part of our lives, and that success is absolute for all of us.”

“Its like everything came together while we played!” I exclaimed. “I’ve experienced missing time before, and this wasn’t like that. I remember everything, and yet there is no structure of time in my mind as though we had some kind of profound spiritual experience beyond time.”

Life still felt surreal when we gathered for dinner at our resort on the ‘main island’. The Fijian people gathered to bid us farewell, soulfully singing a joyous song as they danced and clapped. “We will see you again,” they warmly said, hugging us as though we were one of them. They recognized our transformation, and knew that we were of like mind and spirit.

The Fijian people are peacefully happy, enjoying daily life in their utopic heaven. Nature’s beauty surrounding them is soul rejuvenating, from the sandy beaches and palms to the pristine shorelines and mountain peaks. Snorkeling revealed yet another dimension to their peaceful island paradise, and Mark and I forever cherish our shared experience in their crystal clear waters. We joined hands, floating as one in bliss and ecstasy while the spectacular Fijian waters teamed with life around us.

Fijian children reflect the wisdom of the ancients in their eyes while they play in joyous abandon. Thought communication is a given, and is so much a part of daily life that it is accepted norm. I sensed no language barriers with them or their elders. On various Fijian islands, there is no electricity or life’s complications that accompany such ‘conveniences.’ Therefore, there is an absence of social engineering, video game diversions, pollution, greed, and crime. Best of all, Fiji’s natural resources are within their people, nature’s simplistic beauty, and abundant fruits, vegetation, and kava kava.

There is no oil to exploit or war over. The Fijian people have gone to great lengths to keep the New World Order from absorbing their paradise in the future by creating an illusion of violent cannibalistic history. I learned this history while sitting among them on one remote island near the boarded up shack of a Catholic church. “The missionaries built this structure,” an old man was saying as he passed around the kava kava, “and told us it was our temple for worshipping their God. They promised us money and wealth. How can we be richer than this?” He gestured to the paradise around us. “Why do we need a wooden temple when our bodies are our temple? Why worship God over there when our god is within? We sent them home.”

Mark and I never really left Fiji. We took it with us in our beings, forever changed by the knowing that heaven on earth was a reality. It seemed illogical that all of humankind hadn’t already embraced this sharing kinship with all life the way nature intended. On the flight back to Australia, Mark and I felt no need to reduce our Fijian experience to words and blissfully shared the knowing between us.

OZ

What a trip it is to me that Australians call their home Oz, yet it truly is unlike the rest of the world. Australians are unpretentious true-to-soul people who exhibit no shame or false pride. War must really annoy them since such nonsense really isn’t their space, unless their precious children are threatened or abused in any way.

Mark and I call Australia our second home. We have spent much time there, and experienced many of its cities from Sydney to Adelaide to the Gold Coast. Everywhere we have traveled in Australia we have found the strongest people on the planet, soul-*wise* and otherwise. One minute they may be wrestling a crocodile, and the next cuddling a koala.

While Mark rehabilitated from his spinal surgery in Adelaide, we met with individuals within the Australian government concerned with US influence on their country and within their military bases. MK Ultra mind control was on the rise in the military bases they shared with the US, and survivors were emerging en masse seeking answers.

“US National Security is suppressing pertinent facts on mind control and, subsequently, recovery from it,” one official explained. “How can US controls encompass the globe?”

“Any country that has a peace treaty with the US is subject to the tenants of the 1947 National Security Act,” Mark replied.

“When mind control survivors mention what may have happened in Roswell in 1947, Nellis Air Force Base’s Area 51, or advanced propulsion technologies, US National Security is always invoked,” one high-ranking mental health official reported. “Why have so many of Area 51’s Top Secret military operations relocated to Australia[21]?”

“Over the past few years, an increasing number of Americans began snooping around Area 51 and asking questions,” Mark replied. “When they unearthed evidence of advanced propulsion, the coal and oil corporations running our country who suppress emergence of such technologies simply shifted locations. Obviously, your leadership sold out and allowed for relocation of Area 51 to Pine Gap[22].”

A wide-eyed individual whispered, “I thought aliens were behind this.”

Mark smiled. “If they are aliens, they obviously need our help to overcome oil corporation suppression of their environmentally friendly propulsion technologies.”

“Aliens or otherwise,” I excitedly added, “it is humankind’s soul wisdom that is required for taking necessary effective action against those flat-thinking war and oil mongers who hide behind the National Security Act. It is up to each and every one of us to raise awareness to stop them from destroying our fragile ecosystem, suppressing emerging technologies, and from using MK Ultra mind control methods to ensure their secrecy.”

Upon conclusion of our meeting, one government official declared, “Between the 1947 National Security Act, mind control, and HAARP, solutions such as you and concerned others[23] offer must be implemented immediately in order to stop the destruction of our planet and lives. I assure you, many of us join you in controlling our own destiny, and dissention from within the highest ranks of government has begun.”

Recently Mark and I were in Sydney visiting with our dear friends Kane and Justine. Neena Love, who had been on the Fijian cruise with Kane and us, came by to share her recent revelation. She had artistically written: *The day I surrendered to nothing less than love even the sky could set no limits to where my heart could soar*! Her precious children Amber and Soul (Love) were flourishing in light of their mother's deep insights and ambitions, and it proved rewarding for me to know this world would be a better place for them and all children everywhere by the time they grew up. We all knew that Australia was pivotal to realizing this world of change.

It appears that Australia is roughly 20 years behind the times of the US in terms of social engineering, technology, and governmental corruption. This means that Australians are capable of thinking freely with sufficient ability to prevent what has happened in the US from happening to them. Australians are learning from America's demise, and change has begun. They clearly see the effects of mass mind control, and collectively understand that this tool of the New World Order is an invisible menace that is unwelcome in their lives. The global elite has taken hold of Australians much like the proverbial handful of sand; the harder they squeeze, the less they hold. Neither Mark nor I have ever met an Australian who would willingly stash his cash in someone else's pocket like Americans did. Australians are not apt to forfeit their fun and independence to succumb to slavery at a time in their history when they are emerging into world markets and leadership in their own right. Australians are awake, aware, and sounding the alert across their land in order to maintain their precious way of life. They know that knowledge is our only defense against mind control, and that maintaining freedom of thought is essential to their future. Awareness is key. And awareness is rising down under.

EPILOGUE:
ASSUME Y*OUR* VICTORY!

The United States was originally designed as a "global melting pot" of various nationalities, cultures, and heritages where genetics naturally combined in peaceful union. Americans were born from the best of everyone, inspiring strength of spirit, character, and intellect. Through DARPA's and Sandia Lab's computerized social engineering, this innate strength and spiritual freedom was slowly politically redefined into materialistic comfort zones…

Until 9-11. Terror designed to shock Americans into compliance slowly began losing its initial hold while that original "global melting pot" strength of spirit rose from the ashes. Comfort zones devastated by terror and the ensuing "homeland" national security and Patriot Acts forced a sleeping populace to awaken. Most Americans now realize that corporately-controlled news and contrived polls do not represent their views, and they are re-emerging into their communities and/or utilizing the internet to communicate truth and inner-act with each other. They are asking questions and demanding answers, acutely aware that wisdom outthinks criminal minds and computerized artificial intelligence.

Appalled by war and environmental disasters, the people of the United States join with the rest of the world in putting aside differences long enough to stop this Global Elite's version of the so-called New World "Order". Global communications such as the Internet, humankind's unified purpose, and worldwide spiritual evolution makes planetary unity an inevitable natural reality. Yet globalization as it is being imposed on us through the New *War* Order and it's Patriot Acts is not our choice any more than are its self-appointed leaders. If it were up to US, our so-called leaders would be impeached; as in removed from office according to the definition of “impeach” before Bill Clinton redefined it. Never before in the history of the United States have so many people called for impeachment. National news does not give voice to this vast majority of Americans. Instead, people are being misrepresented in a deliberate effort to socially engineer the world into believing it wants environmental destruction, war, financial devastation, slavery, and mind control.

Revolution is not an answer. One man’s terrorist is another man’s freedom fighter, and violence of any kind can be perceptually defined either way. “Fighting for freedom” is akin to the term “military peacekeeping forces”. Violence is not necessary for humankind to realize and wisely claim the freedom, peace, and strength of spirit that already is innately within each of us.

Expanded thought is necessary for seeing beyond social engineering’s perceptual distortions, word-play conflicts, and confusion. Through MK Ultra mind control’s dark tunnel focus, I no longer could see that good people existed in this world. I lost hope until Mark helped me expand my vision in light of love and truth. Likewise, good people did not think to look for such inhumane abuse as mind control. People divided by what they know and don’t know become even more isolated by secrecy. Divided we fall. Now that truth has come to light, humankind’s vision becomes clear. The more we know, the more we see that mind control is the common thread weaving through society’s woes and global tensions. We are bound to be set free by realizing this truth.

It is within each one of us to seek the truth and act on what we know. The latest corporately contrived news and polls that divide are not going to tell us that we are one and have won. Another illusion of political difference is destined to be displayed in an effort to replace our leadership with more of the same unless we wise up and real-eyes that neither race, gender, religion, political party, name recognition, nor wealth represents true change. Change must come from within soul’s realm of unconditional love where our likenesses far outshine our differences. People all around the world want the same things: peace, love, health, and happiness. Through our shared likenesses we all stand to make the true difference in changing our leadership. When the people lead, leaders follow.

We have a choice. Either we spiritually evolve together, or our planet’s revolutions will spin us into violent destruction and Mother Nature will buck us all off this planet. Quietly reflect on the possibilities[1]. Expand your vision and find truth within yourself in order to understand others. Live your true in-sight in light of love. Through vigilance we can freely maintain positive, evolutionary change for the sake of our planet’s survival and history’s future, for the sake of our children, and the sake of humanity as a whole. You are now empowered to become a part of the soulution. In deed, it is a new day. Exert evolution *NOW* and peacefully *ASSUME Y**OUR** VICTORY!!*

ABBREVIATIONS:

CIA, Central Intelligence Agency FBI, Federal Bureau of Investigation DIA, Defense Intelligence Agency DEA, Drug Enforcement Agency
NSA, National Security Agency
TBI, Tennessee Bureau of Investigation CID, Criminal Investigation Division CSIS, Canadian Special Intelligence Services NASA, National Aeronautical Space Administration DARPA, Defense Advanced Research Projects Agency HAARP, High Altitude Auroral Research Project MPD, Multiple Personality Disorder DID, Dissociative Identity Disorder ISS&D, International Society for the Study of Dissociation APA, American Psychiatric Association APA, American Psychological Association NLP, Neuro Linguistic Programming NAFTA, North American Free Trade Agreement CDC, Center for Disease Control BCCI, Bank of Credit and Commerce International JPL, Jet Propulsion Laboratory (aka Jack Parson’s Laboratory) NCIN, National Cult Intervention Network DCS, Department of Children’s Services DA, District Attorney
LA, Las Angeles (California)
WWCR, World Wide Christian Radio MOM, Militia of Montana
NCL, Norwegian Caribbean Lines CBC, Canadian Broadcast Corporation CNN, Cable News Network
GNN, Guerilla News Network
NCAP, National Coalition Against Pornography VIP, Valley Institute of Psychiatry VOICES, Victims of Incest Can Emerge Survivors S.W.A.T., Special Weapons and Tactics FCC, Federal Communications Commission SRAs, Survivors of Ritual Abuse POW, Prisoner of War
MIA, Missing in Action
D., Democrat
R., Republican
NWO, New World Order (oftentimes makes “D” and “R” obsolete)

ACCESS DENIED
For Reasons of National Security

From the authors of the cult classic TRANCE Formation of America. With their lives and liberty on the line, TRANCE was hurriedly condensed from courtroom testimony into a book form and privately published by the authors in September 1995.

ACCESS DENIED For Reasons of National Security is the rest of their true life's story, which required 16 years for the authors to survive and 3 years for them to write. This book is an amazing testament to the strength of the human spirit and one **you will never forget** for as long as your thoughts remain free.

While TRANCE has become known worldwide in many licensed translations as one of the most successful US government whistleblowers' books ever written, it was never intended for the public who had no reference for understanding mind control nor was it to be considered a book. Rather it is what it is, a true and to date uncontested document for the US Congressional Permanent Select Committee on Intelligence Oversight. TRANCE is Cathy O'Brien's documented testimony she provided to US courts, US Congress, and the United Nations Commission on Human Rights Abuses of her existence as a CIA MK-Ultra mind control project's slave.

ACCESS DENIED is a real book of answers, solutions and positive hope for all of u.s. and our allies around the world. This book was written for everyone and especially for the thousands who have read TRANCE and were left to imagine pertinent details that could not be included.

- How did Cathy recover from being tortured "out of her mind" until age 30 when intelligence insider Mark Phillips triggered and rescued her and her daughter Kelly away from their CIA operative handler?
- What are the documented details of how Mark & Cathy survived the state and federal and Congressional judicial gristmill aptly called the ***criminal justice system*?**
- Last but not least, what are the facts as to how Mark & Cathy were able to survive long

enough to globally expose the criminal acts of some of the most politically powerful people who are still in control of our planet to this very day?

ACCESS DENIED is a whistleblowers' living guide to success.

[1] Central Intelligence Agency and Defense Intelligence Agency.

[2] CIA's Mind Control Project.

[3] "Project Monarch" was reportedly one of over 125 long-term research genetic mind control sub-program of MK Ultra focused on multi-generational abuse base families, aside from being considered an urban myth since it has yet to be declassified or available through US Freedom of Information Act.

[4] D. West Virginia, President Pro Tempore of the Senate and head of Senate Appropriations for many years, Byrd has been in office longer than I've been alive.

[1] Histamine reaction can be severe, resulting in bubbling, bleeding skin, scars, and even death. www. goldbaum.net/balance/Whats_Histamine.html

[2] 1984 CBS, Inc.

[3] Bill Clinton also has held the position of Arkansas Attorney General.

[4] www.assumption.edu/webVAX/mena/Roberts7May96.html, "Double Crossed" Barry Seales' story.

[1] Post Traumatic Stress Disorder. PTSD is a basis for mind control and oftentimes is deliberately induced leaving a person highly suggestible and unable to think for themselves. Many Americans PTSDed after 9-11, as did citizens of Germany after the 1933 attack of their government's Reichstag.

[2] Harmonic technologies in mind control have now advanced to reach deep into the subconscious to control breathing, heartbeat, blinking, etc. whereby programming has replaced the cyanide pill to ensure spies die with their secrets.

[3] The term "multiple personality disorder" was misleading and was often confused with schizophrenia, whereby the more appropriate term "Dissociative Identity Disorder" was accepted by the mental health community.

[4] Defense Advanced Research Projects Agency.

[5] Charter's founder and chairman of the board resigned 3 years previous due to suppression of information and what he termed "the CIA's involvement" with his hospitals, re: www.psyfin.com/articles/charter.html.

[6] Post Traumatic Stress Disorder

[7] Chapman was later implicated in a sexual child abuse investigation scandal, *Anchorage Times*.

[8] www.centeroflight.com, Muskegon's resource center for vast numbers of local survivors of incest and/or Catholic abuse.

[9] March 16, 1997, the *Muskegon Chronicle* newspaper began a series detailing Muskegon as the pedophile capital of the US www.mlive.com.

[10] Dr. Colin Ross, *Bluebird; Deliberate Creation of Multiple Personality by Psychiatrists*, Manitou Communications 2002, available through www.radioliberty.com.

[11] Linda Hunt, *Secret Agenda: The United States Government, Nazi Scientists, and Project Paperclip 1945-1990*, New York, St. Martin's Press 1991.

[12] After 3 generations such traits may result in genetic encoding and autogenic behavior.

[13] Ford's Presidential Cabinet consisted of Dick Cheney as Secretary of State (now Vice President), George Bush, Sr. to head the CIA (United Nations, Vice President, President, his Jr. now acting President), Donald Rumsfeld as Secretary of Defense (now Secretary of Defense), and Jack Valenti as Press Secretary (now head of the Motion Picture Association).

[14] The Republican National Committee headed by VanderJagt put George Bush ,Sr. into the office of President.

[1] Father Burtner of Portland, Oregon.

[2] *The Sleep Room*, Canadian Broadcast Corporation 1997 TV broadcast.

[3] Marischen was implicated in the same child abuse investigation ring as Anchorage Police officer Jack Chapman, *Anchorage Times*.

[4] She appeared on *America's Most Wanted* TV show in 1989.

[5] Church of Jesus Christ of Latter Day Saints is commonly referred to as Mormon. Wayne Cox also professes to be a Mormon, and Kelly and I were occult ritually abused within the Mormon church and programmed to participate in CIA cocaine ops that were utilizing Mormon Bishop's warehouses to store and package cocaine.

[6] Max Kitchens' position was directly under the head of US Customs at the time, William Von Raab.

[7] Eagle River/Chugiak is only ½ hour drive in the ice and snow from Anchorage.

[8] Carol Marshall, Chapter 15, Part 2, *The Last Circle*. www.lycaeum.org/books/book/last_circle/o.htm [9] George Romney's son, Mitt Romney, moved from Utah to become Governor of Massachusetts

during the course of Cardinal Law's Catholic pedophile scandal. In 2004, Governor Mitt Romney's relationship with Bush Jr spawned speculation of his replacing Cheney as Bush's running mate in 2004 enroute to his planned 2008 bid for President.

[10] Mormon Bishop Glen Pace, in an effort to expose the wide spread systematic mind control proliferating throughout the LDS church, released an inner office memo exposing this deliberate crime 7-19-1990.

[11] B.K. Eakman, *Educating for the New World Order*, Portland, Oregon, Halcyon House, 1991.

[12] Bullet-proof Kevlar lined briefcase.

[13] "Louis Jolly West, the Master of Clockwork Orange Mind Control is Dead," *New York Times*, 1-8-1999 Jolly West was called in on such infamous mind control cases as Sirhan Sirhan, Oswald, Charlie Manson, and Timothy McVeigh.

[14] Years later, Hassan retracted this statement as ordered.

[15] *Conspiracy Theory*, 1997, www.conspiracytheory.warnerbrothers.com.

[1] "Cramer on 'Top Secret' Panel," *The Huntsville Times*, March 13, 1994; Cramer was promoted to US Congress and its Permanent Select Committee on Intelligence Oversight.

[2] *TRANCE Formation of America*, www.TRANCE-formation.com.

[3] Pp. 109, 124, 134, *TRANCE*, www.TRANCE-formation.com.

[4] Video by this title was reported to have been found at the JonBenet Ramsey household after her 1996 murder, and her autopsy proved stun gun prod marks on her 6 year old body, "Stun Gun Said Used in Ramsey Killing", December 20, 1997, *Los Angeles Times*.

[5] P. 109, *TRANCE*, www.TRANCE-formation.com.

[1] Our stay would last from 1990 to 1993.

[2] Over-active histamine often accompanies mind control trauma and dissociative disorders.

[3] Chapter 13, "Operation Shell Game," *TRANCE*, 1995.

[4] Chapter 12, "Operation Carrier Pigeon," *TRANCE*.

[5] Ibid.

[6] Ibid. p.150

[7] Harmonics drive lyrics deep into the subconscious, which is one reason why hearing a certain song will bring back memories of "falling in love" or other significant events that occurred at the time.

[8] "Dibble and the Devil," *The Currier-Journal*, Louisville, Kentucky, 6-18-90.

[9] Mark and I stayed so busy surviving the impossible all these years, that making a living financially has yet to be realized. Perspectives and priorities change under circumstances such as ours, while sex and food are still out of this world!

[1] Congressional Courier.

[2] Russell S. Bowen, *The Immaculate Deception; The Bush Crime Family Exposed*.

[3] Chapter 12, "Operation Carrier Pigeon," chapter 13, "Operation Shell Game," *TRANCE*.

[4] By 2002, US Customs was replaced by "Immigrations and Customs Enforcement Bureau of the Department of Homeland Security."

[5] Drug Enforcement Agency.

[6] "NAFTA is now openly referred to as the 'North American Drug Agreement' by US Customs…", William Von Raab, http://db.uwaterloo.ca/~alopez-o/politics/narcosys.html.

[7] Press Secretary under former President Ford, now head of the Motion Picture Association of America. Michael Powell, son of Colin Powell, is currently Chairman of the Federal Communications Commission [1] Jeff Merritt, *TRANCE Formation of America*, p.40.

[2] Country music entertainer, p. 180, *TRANCE*.

[3] P. 127, *TRANCE*.

[4] Pp.169, 170, 171, *TRANCE*, www.radioliberty.com, Dr. Stan Monteith.

[5] Chapter 20, "New World Order of the Rose," *TRANCE*.

[6] Chapter 27, "Hotel California," *TRANCE*. www.TRANCE-formation.com.

[7] Chapter 28, "'Free Trade' of Drugs and Slaves at the Juarez Border," *TRANCE*. www.TRANCE-formation.com.

[8] FBI Special Agent Brad Garrett was transferred to the Wash. DC bureau where he was lead investigator in the death of White House deputy counsel Vince Foster, the murder of White House intern Mary Caitrin Mahoney, key federal prosecution *witness* in the murder of Aimal Kasi at CIA Headquarters, and lead investigator in the Chandra Levy case. P. 229, *TRANCE*. www.TRANCE-formation.com.

[9] As US Attorney General and head of the Justice Department, Dick Thornburgh decided which cases would be investigated or covered-up by all

Federal Agencies including the Federal Bureau of Investigation, Drug Enforcement Agency, and Customs. Thornburgh was Governor of Pennsylvania during the Three Mile Island nuclear disaster and subsequent cover-up, and was a mind controller and sexual abuser of mine as detailed throughout *TRANCE*.

[10] Garrett had been flown in from Washington DC, although he purported to be with the Nashville office.

[1] Chapter 24, "A-Hunting We Will Go," *TRANCE*.

[2] Chapter 9, "Ronald Reagan's American Dream, a Pandora's Box of Nightmares," chapter 10, "'Commander' Dick Cheney and Reagan's 'Hands On Mind Control Demonstrations'," *TRANCE*, 1995.

[3] Ohio Congressman Jim Traficant, now serving an eight-year sentence in a Pennsylvania Federal Penitentiary, told the American public he supported their right to bear arms while voting against it, etc. Chapter 7, "Charm School," *TRANCE*, 1995.

[4] Chapter 14, "Clinton Coke Lines," *TRANCE*, 1995.

[5] D. Indiana, Permanent Select Committee on Intelligence, Subcommittee on Intelligence Policy and National Security, Subcommittee on Terrorism & Homeland Security, son-in-law Sen. J. Bennett Johnston.

[6] Former Governor of Pennsylvania appointed to head Homeland Security.

[7] "Silence Equals Death," *TRANCE*, www.TRANCE-formation.com.

[8] pp. 174-82, Randy Riese, *Nashville Babylon*; p. 180 *TRANCE*.

[9] Any relation to Keith Whitley?

[1] Wayne Cox, too, remains free for so-called "Reasons of National Security" despite vast evidence against him.

[2] Thornburgh was Governor of Pennsylvania during the Three Mile Island nuclear disaster and subsequent cover-up.

[3] P. 102, *TRANCE*.

[4] 10-26-90, Luton Mental Health Center.

[5] Thornburgh was forced to resign from his position as Attorney General in August of 1991 amidst a cocaine scandal in his DC office.

[6] From Tim Roemer's Evansville, Indiana district.

[7] bullet-proof Kevlar lined briefcase.

[1] Ironically within days of Kelly's admittance, Cumberland House changed their logo to depict a child with Monarch butterfly wings, signifying that

they now housed MK Ultra Project Monarch mind controlled children. The sign remains there to date.

[2] Senator Al Gore becameVice President under Bill Clinton, and Presidential hopeful thereafter.

[3] Multiple Personality Disorder, or as it is now termed, Dissociate Identity Disorder.

[4] Pp. 134-5, *TRANCE*. p.83 Randy Reise, *Nashville Babylon*.

[5] Loretta Lynn's maiden name, *Coal Miner's Daughter*, Warner Books, 75 Rockefeller Plaza, New York, NY 10019, 1975.

[6] Linda Blood, *The New Satansists*, Warner Books 1994.

[7] "The McMartin Nightmare", cover story 2-5-90, *People Magazine*.

[8] Later AOL-Time-Warner.

[1] Bay of Pigs Invasion, 1961.

[2] Bush, Jr. overrode this Constitutional law in 2001 with a Presidential Executive Order after 9-11 making it "legal" for the CIA to assassinate any foreign leaders out of step with Poppy Bush's New World Order.

[3] D. Tennessee, on the Senate Appropriations Committee under Byrd.

[4] Those inside the beltway of DC consider Sasser a 'rubber stamp'.

[5] President Bush, Sr.

[6] R. North Carolina Senior Senator Jesse Helms, whose compassion strengthened me over the years.

[7] In a later conversation, Kelly explained that she had been convinced I would not be tortured if she would take it instead. I had been instructed that Kelly would not be tortured if I would take it. Neither of us succeeded in protecting the other, yet it was a significant revelation to us both to learn the truth.

[1] Their mother's name was Valerie Vasquez.

[2] A manifest from the ferry to Beaver Island showed my father and John Ramsey, JonBenet's father, to be on the same boat to this obscure mind control programming camp.

[3] Previous documentation of the vaginal mutilation carving turned into US Customs had recently resulted in North Little Rock, Arkansas' detective Rakoin and corner Nowyski contacting us regarding Cox's known involvement in local railroad track murders and a female body vaginally carved according to Houston's m.o.

[4] I was also monitored so I wouldn't say 'Wizard of Oz' or 'President,' or speak of the past despite my knowing Kelly had to learn of her past from the inside out rather than through outside input in order to heal.

[5] This education program was designed after the one imposed on Hitler's Youth. Learn more at www.radioliberty.com.

[6] Chapter 21, "Global Education 2000," *TRANCE*. Bennett also held positions as US Drug Czar, professed Jesuit, Bohemian "Grover," Home schooling authority, and MK Ultra mind control programmer.

[7] Pp. 179-81, *TRANCE*. Lamar Alexander is also a former Education Secretary, and has been a Presidential Candidate.

[8] Pp. 174-82, Randy Reise *Nashville Babylon*.

[9] Pp. 134-5, *TRANCE*.

[10] www.deliberatedumbingdown.com. Charlotte Iserbyt.

[1] J. Allen Boone, *Kinship With All Life*, republished in 1976 by Harper-Collins Publishing, People who have been abused oftentimes connect strongly with animals, and excel in careers centered around them. Carol Gurney, *The Language of Animals; 7 Steps to Communicating with Animals*, Bantam-Bell Publishing, a division of Random House, 1540 Broadway, NY, NY 10036, 2001.

[2] Kelly maintains that being separated from her family by the state was most traumatic to her.

[3] I later learned that the pay-off money was federal and not from my father.

[1] Recent statistics showed 1 in 5 Afghanis, after generations of brutal warring in Afghanistan, suffers from PTSD dissociation, which is considered to be the prime basis for mind control.

[2] Carol Gurney, *The Language of Animals; 7 Steps to Communicating with Animals*, (Bantam-Dell Publishing division of Random House, Inc. 1540 Broadway, New York, NY 10036) www.animalcommunicator.net.

[1] John Grinder and Richard Bandler, *Trance-formations: Neuro-Linguistic Programming and the Structure of Hypnosis*.

[2] *The Invisible Menace: What You Don't Know IS Hurting You*, by Kelly, published in magazines and newspapers worldwide in 1996.

[3] Thought communication is honest by nature, conveying a reality rather than a conglomeration of words.

[4] P. 992, *The Almanac of American Politics 1992*.

[5] Traficant was silenced during his 2002 criminal trial, resulting in his conviction and 8 year prison term.

[6] Fort Campbell, where 101st Airborne are trained.

[7] Numerous indirect threats to our lives by Joe Rodgers, delivered by Metro Police, were confirmed when Mark and I attempted to address the issue with him at his Nashville office.

[8] The CIA often uses fake business fronts for their operations, toy manufacturers and office supply stores being among the most popular.

[9] Australian Psychiatrist Dr. Nurcum.

[10] A newly formed child advocacy group for children tangled in the Juvenile Court system that had taken on Kelly's cause.

[11] Chapter 8, "The CIA's War on Drugs; Eliminating the Competition;" chapter 12, "Operation Carrier Pigeon;" chapter 13, "Operation Shell Game," *TRANCE*.

[12] P. 152, *TRANCE*.

[13] Caribbean beacon system established for CIA drug ops.

[14] Bush's son, Jeb, is currently Governor of Florida (despite hailing from Texas), during which time the so-called 2000 Presidential elections were "recounted" and Bush Jr. was put into the office of President.

[15] Drug Enforcement Agency

[1] A term describing Mark's spook/spy friends.

[2] Loretta Lynn's son and Hurricane Mills home were located in the same district in which we resided.

[3] "Lynn gets probation in cocaine sale, 3-time felon's turning point'" March 27, 1992, Nashville, Tennessean.

[4] P.125 *TRANCE*.

[5] Chapter 8, "CIA's War on Drugs Operation, Eliminating the Competition," *TRANCE*.

[6] Pp.154, 156 *TRANCE*.

[7] *The Carefully Crafted Hoax*, self published booklet Box 30165 Lincoln, Nebraska 68503.

[8] Paul Bonacci.

[9] Houston displayed an honorary "key" to this infamous Catholic children's home in Nebraska on his den wall since he frequented the place so often.

[10] "Is George Bush the World's Leading Child Molester?" November 1991, *Inside News*, PO Box 311, Maleny, Queensland 4552 Australia; Bush was not allowed to debark Air Force One on a trip to Australia due to extreme protests regarding this issue.

[11] *People Weekly*, February 5, 1990.

[12] April 29, 1992, L.A. California riots, police and government corruption reported to be cause in riots that inspired the brutalized Rodney King's infamous plea "Can't we all just get along?"

[13] 1988 Paramount Pictures.

[14] Federal Communications Commission.

[1] Harry V. Martin, "Federal Corruption INSLAW, *Napa Sentinel*, 1991, www.sonic.net/sentinel/gvcon7.html.

[2] www.lastcircle.com, Carol Marshall, *The Last Circle*, available through. www.tomdavisbooks.com/ebooks/lastcircle.

[3] "Was writer the victim of a DC conspiracy?" August 14, 1991, *The Boston Globe*.

[4] Chapter 13 "Operation Shell Game," *TRANCE*.

[5] The Bank of Credit and Commerce International that Houston dealt with.

[6] Neither offered any support or assistance.

[7] Linda Blood, *The New Satanists*, 1994 Warner Books.

[8] "Attorney General to quit in summer," *The Tennessean*, June 5, 1991 note: included on his "potential successor list were John Ashcroft, Ken Starr, and his Deputy Attorney General William Barr.

[1] Dr. Anthony Casolaro, a physician in the Washington, DC suburbs.

[2] "See no evil, Why are the media ignoring the strange death of Danny Casolaro?" *The Boston Phoenix*, September 6, 1991.

[3] Harry A. Martin, "Federal Corruption INSLAW, *Napa Sentinel*, 1991, www.sonic.net/sentinel/gvcon7.html.

[4] www.bushlibrary.tamu.edu/papers/1991/91080900.

[5] "Papergate? Dick Thornburgh's 258 mystery boxes", *Atlanta Journal-Constitution*, December 19, 1993.

[6] Thornburgh went on to become UnderSecretary General for the UN '92-93, and Chairman of Space Technology and Science Institute, www.ssti.org/board.htm.

[7] William Barr, www.fas.org/irp/commission/testbarr.htm.

[8] Barbara Trent, *The Panama Deception*, 1993 Academy Award Best Documentary, the First Academy Award for a documentary film. www.empowermentproject.org.

[9] Special Weapons And Tactics Police Force.

[10] Dead On Arrival (to hospital)

[1] The Child Advocacy Organization that was overseeing Kelly's case which Debbie UpChurch.

[2] The 5th Amendment of the US Constitution stipulates that a person could remain silent in court on the grounds that answering questions could be incriminating.

[1] National Security Agency

[2] Chapter 24, "A Hunting We Will Go," *TRANCE*.

[3] "Freeing the mentally ill was a terrible mistake," *The Huntsville Times*, July 22, 1997.

[4] The 1998 book by Peter and Rochelle Schweizer, *Disney, The Mouse Betrayed; Greed, Corruption, and Children at Risk*, Regnery Publishing, Inc, One Massachusetts Avenue, NW, Wash.DC 20001 was considered highly controversial and resulted in the murder of the author. Bratcher was speaking out nearly a decade before it's release!

[5]"Of Mice and Manassas", SPY magazine, October 1994.

[6] The military even keeps their own hotel there.

[7] Chapter 6, "United States Military & NASA Mind-Control Training", *TRANCE*.

[8] CIA training center in Virginia.

[9] Wear antivirus firewalls if/when seeking further information online regarding DARPA!

[1] *New York Times*, CIA's infiltration of "white witchcraft" cults throughout North America introduced blood trauma into their rituals expanding into Satanism.

[2] www.militiaofmontana.com.

[3] Chapter 18, "In the Mean Time," *TRANCE*.

[4] www.radioliberty.com.

[5] Chapter 23, "Whirled Vision," *TRANCE*.

[6] Chapter 17, "About Faces," *TRANCE*.

[7] Secret Service testimony verifies details.

[8] L. Frank Baum, *The Wizard of Oz*.

[9] Chapter 13, “Operation Shell Game,” *TRANCE*, p.145.

[1] Martha Child’s hand was the first out taking the cash payoff that Bob Anderson had doled out claiming it was from my father.

[2] “Judge used cocaine jury prospect says,” *The Tennessean*, 6-29-94. Judge Brothers was repeatedly caught up in cocaine scandals and money laundering. “Nebel asks federal judge to look into prosecutors,” *The Tennessean*, 3-5-94. “No action likely in Brothers allegation,” *The Tennessean*, 6-30-94.

[3] Dr. Colin Ross, *Bluebird*, www.rossinst.com

[4] CBC’ *The Sleep Room*.

[5] Oprah claimed that, while she was censored by the network from broadcasting our case, she would remain dedicated to making a positive difference for abused children.

[6] Chapter 12, “Operation Carrier Pigeon,” and Chapter 13, “Operation Shell Game,” *TRANCE*.

[7] “Noriega Guilty By Saturation, for jury, witnesses credible,” *USA Today*, April 10, 1992. “Noriega Goes on the Defensive, calls his conviction political,” *USA Today*, July 13, 1992, “Noriega Receives 40 Years,” *Washington Post*, July 11, 1992.

[1] Experience proves that mail disruption is not the fault of USPS Postal employees who oftentimes voice complaint over unwarranted government intervention in their reputable business.

[2] “Lynn gets probation in cocaine sale, 3-time felon’s ‘turning point’,” *The Tennessean*, March 27, 1992.

[3] Ibid.

[4] http://www.soaw.org and www.personal.umich.edu/~lormand/poli/soa/panama.htm [5] Chapter 14, “Clinton Coke Lines,” *TRANCE*.

[6] North American Free Trade Agreement, Chapter 16, “Operation Greenbacks for Wetbacks,” *TRANCE*.

[7] www.nathanielblumberg.com/neil.htm

[8] Chapter 24, “A Hunting We Will Go,” *TRANCE*.

[9] Bush often used the voice of Fred Rogers of the popular children’s TV show “Mr. Roger’s Neighborhood” to gain the confidence of children. Chapter 15, “No More Beating Around the Bush,” *TRANCE*.

[1] Shelter for the homeless, among other public services.

[1] Chapter 25, “Bush Baby,” *TRANCE*.

[2] Norwegian Caribbean Lines cruise ship.

[3] Chapter 23, “Whirled Vision,” *TRANCE*.

[4] Linda Blood, *The New Satanists*, Warner Books 1994.

[5] Canadian Secret Intelligence Service, and Cult Watch Australia were among them.

[6] Ross Perot, Presidential Candidate in 1992 until his family’s life was reportedly threatened.

[7] www.outpost-of-freedom.com

[1] Redbook, February 1993.

[2] Mark learned from his former associates that Perot is in violation of the US Constitution by having his own standing army of Special Forces types sitting in Mexico.

[3] Chapter 28, “’Free Trade’ of Drugs and Slaves at the Juarez Border, *TRANCE*.

[1] Chapter 26, “New World Orders,” *TRANCE*.

[2] Aquino v. Stone, Cite we 768 F.Supp. 529 (E.D.Va. 1991).

[3] Bohemian Grove, www.TRANCE-formation.com

[4] Chapter 14, “Clinton Coke Lines,” *TRANCE*.

[5] Hillary often campaigned at Gay and Lesbian rallies, marched in parades, “Gay Celebration Week” was declared as part of Global Education, etc.

[6] P.154, 155 *TRANCE*.

[7] By my experience, Bush’s heroin ops out of Afghanistan were heaviest.

[8] Investigator Gary Caradori and his son lost their lives July 11, 1990 when this same route was not sidestepped by the Nebraska Leadership Conference.

[9] Vanderbilt’s abusive, intrusive technology adversely resulted in brain stem damage that continues to date.

[10] January 25, 1993, “Stahlman Building blaze ‘suspicious’,” *The Tennessean*.

[1] Chapter 23, “Whirled Vision,” *TRANCE*.

[2] Throughout the years, Marin County continuously surfaces in the news with such cases as an infamous. murder of a young child,

www.pollyklaas.org, and as the hometown of Taliban ‘recruit’ John Walker. Lindh who became a controversial prisoner of the US war on Afghanistan.

[3] “Anti-Pedophile Sought in Kidnapping,” *The San Francisco Chronicle*, February 12, 1993.

“Tennis Pro Arrested for Fleeing with Child,” *The San Francisco Chronicle*, June 8, 1993.

“Daycare Foe Faces Kidnap Charges, “*The San Francisco Chronicle*, August 13, 1993.

[4] It is rare, though not uncommon that spooks high up in Intelligence have more than one function, the most common being (Federal Bureau of Investigation) FBI/CIA. This particular spook had Identification for Central Intelligence Agency, Defense Intelligence Agency, and National Security Agency.

[5] William F. Jasper, *Global Tyranny Step by Step*, 1992. Western Islands, PO Box 8040, Appleton, Wisconsin, 54913.

[1] “Anti-Pedophile Sought in Kidnapping”, *The San Francisco Chronicle*, February 12, 1993.

[2] A contract to kill.

[3] Gordon Thomas, *Journey Into Madness, the true story of secret CIA mind control and medical abuse*, 1989 Bantam Books, ISBN# 0553-28413-4.

[4] 1992, www.rollingston.com., re: Sinaid O'Connor.

[5] Muskegon Catholic Central is where I attended high school.

[6] Defense Intelligence Agency’s military intelligence and Special Forces.

[7] Chapter 9, “Ronald Reagan’s American Dream: A Pandora’s Box of Nightmares,” *TRANCE*. I had been trained by the CIA to analyze handwriting, which is a science as accurate as the graphologist. In my case, having learned while under mind control with a photographic memory, my handwriting analysis skills were still considered to be precise enough to be used as evidence in court.

[8] Multiple Personality Disorder, the outdated term for Dissociative Identity Disordered.

[1] ‘Mikey’ is a commonly used demeaning nickname for Michael Aquino.

[2] Post Traumatic Stress Disorder.

[3] Chapter 22, “My Contra-bution,” *TRANCE*.

[4] The CIA uses expert handwriting analysis to determine whom to hire, whom to trust, whom to fire, etc., as do other agencies and US courtrooms.

Handwriting analysis has been refined to an exact science.

[5] http://news.excite.com/news/ap/011105/19/nicaragua-election.

[6] Pp.183, 184 *TRANCE*.

[7] Pp.184, 185 *TRANCE*.

[8] I was still experiencing that 'Rip Van Winkle' time warp feeling since I was still catching up on the real world beyond what I'd been programmed to perceive.

[9] "What US Drug Company Produced Heroin and LSD?" *USA Today*, June 5, 1991, p.8A.

[10] Chapter 31, "The King and Eye," *TRANCE*. I understood this to be the definition of 'remote viewing'.

[11] Chapter 10, "'Commander' Dick Cheney and Reagan's Hands On Mind Control Demonstrations," *TRANCE*.

[1] Since many institutionalized children reportedly responded to sugar with heightened energy, sugar had been replaced with Aspartame. Aspartame was being reconsidered by Charter hospitals, however, since the lethargic, apathetical response it created was proven to have an adverse effect on health, mental health, and American society as a whole. Aspartame was the only drug I personally suffered withdrawals from after mind control, as it was deliberately used in copious quantities to incite compliance. Aspartame was manufactured when Donald Rumsfeld was CEO of Searle, and approved despite vast adverse proof during Rumsfeld's tenure on Reagan's transition team. www.newswithviews.com, www.pharmcentral.com, http://alkalizeforhealth.net/Lsweetdebate7.htm.

[2]High Altitude Auroral Research Project. *Holes in Heaven* video by Paula Randol-Smith, www.haarp.com;*Angels Don't Play this HAARP* by Dr. Nick Begich and Jeane Manning, Earthpulse Press, 1995.

[3] May, 1992.

[4] "The United States, How the West was Stunned", *The World's Most Dangerous Places*, by Robert Young Pelton, Harper Collins 1998.

[5] Ibid, "Drugs, War's Bastard Son".

[6] *Educating for the New World Order*, B.K.Eakman.

[7] Infamous Rodney King quote from the LA Riots.

[8] Were 'Dividians' chosen to 'Divide' the United States allegiances subliminally as well as overtly, or is the name 'coincidence?' Were "Dividians' divided from Waco since George Bush, Jr. 'coincidentally'

resides there? Or because Waco houses a Top Secret Delta Force mind control training camp?

[9] Google search on Wesley Clark leads to numerous accounts, including www.radio.weblogs.com [10] www.klang.com

[11] *A Place Called Waco, A Survivor's Story* by David Thibodeau, Public Affairs Publishing, 1999. Thibodeau lists the names of 21 children, while Carl Klang refers to "17 Little Children," while other sources refer to 23 children including 2 unborn fetuses. Numbers vary according to perceptual definition of a child. Regardless of the number, innocent children were killed.

[12] "Tennis Pro Arrested for Fleeing with Child," *The San Francisco Chronicle*, June 8, 1993.

[13] "Petaluma Father Not Alone, Fear of Satanism Across the Nation," *The San Francisco Chronicle*, June 12, 1993.

[14] LaToya Jackson, *Growing Up in the Jackson Family*, Century Publishing, 1992.

[15] *Seventeen Little Children* by Carl Klang, 1993. www.klang.com.

[1] Huntsville, Alabama is often referred to as 'NASA City USA' and 'Nazi City USA' due to Werner VonBraun's NASA Space and Rocket Center influence.

[2] Pedophiles always find cause to be around children, working boys and girls clubs, parading themselves as clowns. Many children report abuse by clowns.

[1] International Society for the Study of Dissociation

[2] All of our pets had keen sense, and none of them liked Sue.

[3] A victim of CIA/Jesuit MK Ultra mind control who worked under Governor Bill Richardson.

[4] P. 126, *TRANCE*.

[5] www.nathanielblumberg.com/neil.htm.

[6] P. 198, *TRANCE*.

[1] http://home.hiwaay.net/~becraft We the People Foundation for Constitutional Education, Truth-in-Taxation Hearing 2-27 & 28-02 www.givemeliberty.org

[2] Former Huntsville District Attorney Bud Cramer, who already actively covered up our case resulting in the 1991 threat to our lives, was now a US

Congressman on the Intelligence Oversight committee. “Cramer on ‘top secret’ panel”, *The Huntsville Times*, March 13, 1994.

[3] This was prior to the 1996 Telecommunications Act deregulating radio stations allowing for the Government controlled Clear Channel to monopolize the airwaves.

[1] www.assumption.edu/webVAX/mena/Roberts7May96.html, “Double Crossed” Barry Seale’s story

[2] *Obstruction of Justice, the Mena Connection*, Integrity Films.

[3] Modus operandi, or mode of operation.

[4] P. 105, *TRANCE*.

[5] *The Mena Cover-up; Drugs, Deception, and the Making of a President; The Clinton Chronicles; The Death of Vince Foster*, Citizens for Honest Government films.

[6] www.klang.com

[7] Dr. Bennett Braun of the ISS&D was reputed for his work with children until he became a casualty of the cover-up, while Dr. Richard Kluft and Dr. Colin Ross were considered the best in the country for adults. Since Kelly was a minor, Braun appeared best until legal difficulties engulfed him.

[8] Nicholas Evans, *The Horse Whisperer*, 1996 Dell Books, 1998 movie.

[9] http://www.montyroberts.com/mrilc. Monty Roberts, *The Man Who Listens to Horses*, 1996, Tutor Publishing.

[10] www.taoofequus.com, and www.americanhorsetrainersgroup.com use and teach this John Lyons’ method.

[11] A decade later, President Bush Jr. echoed his father in noncompliance by rejecting ecological sustainability www.observer.guardian.co.uk/worldsummit2002

[12] Robert Ludlum, *The Bourne Identity*, Bantam Books.

[13] L. Fletcher Prouty, *The Secret Team; the CIA and its Allies in Control of the United States and the World*, Second Institute for Historical Review Printing, 1992.

[14] United States Air Force Colonel, retired.

[15] Pp. 142-3, *TRANCE*.

[16] Fletcher Prouty was depicted as “Mr. X” in the 1991 film *JFK*.

[17] The Collected Works of Col. L. Fletcher Prouty CD Rom, available through www.prouty.org/cdrom.html.

[18] A popular quote from the *Wizard of Oz* befitting of DC's illusion.

[19] *CIA, America's Secret Warriors*, Discovery Channel, www.discovery.com and www.levinproductions [20] Linda Kohanov, "The Tao of Equus; a woman's journey of healing and transformation through the way of the horse," New World Library 2001. www.taoofequus.com [1]"A-queen-oh" is the proper Italian pronunciation, tho most are familiar with his attempted diversion from his Jesuit affiliation/agenda by pronouncing it "A-keen-o".

[2] When faced with any threatening situation, Mark smiles knowing full well that the threat will soon be neutralized.

[1] David Thibodeau, *A Place Called Waco, A Survivor's Story*, Public Affairs Publishing, 1999.

[2] http://www.klang.com.

[3] Randy Weaver's Ruby Ridge Idaho mountain home was stormed by Federal Agents resulting in the murder of his wife Vicki and son Sam in 1992.

[4] www.rollingthunder1.com.

[5] Prisoners of War, Missing in Action.

[6] Linda Blood, *The New Satanists*, Warner Books 1994.

[7] www.freeamerican.com

[8] www.nexusmagazine.com

[9] Lakota genetic heritage.

[10] Chapter 2, "The Rite to Remain Silent," *TRANCE*.

[11] *Family Vacation*, National Lampoon, 1983.

[12] www.consciousevolution.com.

[13] His other trailer was private.

[1] Neighborhood Watch is an organized nationwide action by citizens to protect themselves and their neighbors since they could no longer rely on law enforcement who protect a failed justice system rather than them.

[2] Chapter 19, "E.T. Phone Rome," *TRANCE*.

[3] State of Alabama Resolution HJR 353.

[4] Many names were assigned to this Federal control of schools in an effort to dodge protests. Names include 'America 2000,' 'Outcome Based Education,' 'Goals 2000,' and 'Global Education.'

[5] Chapter 21, "Global Education 2000," *TRANCE*.

[6] The forces in Washington, DC would soon launch a monetary affront that would force Alabama to accept Global Ed, overriding Constitutional state's rights as they so often do now.

[7] *TRANCE*.

[8] www.nexusmagazine.com

[9] http://mikenew.com Daniel New, *Michael New: Mercenary or American Soldier*, American Sovereignty Action Project publisher.

[10] Chapter 20, "New World Order of the Rose," *TRANCE*.

[11] Chapter 7, "Charm School," *TRANCE*.

[12] Ibid.

[13] Pennsylvania Senator on the Judiciary Committee and Senate Subcommittee on Anti-Terrorism whose influence began diminishing after Trochman's speech in '95.

[14] The Pennsylvania Governor, now head of Homeland Security since 9-11.

[15] Now available though our friend and Canadian Distributor Wes Mann at www.preferrednetwork.com

[16] A wonderful lady in Alaska loaned us enough money to reprint.

[1] James Redfield, *The Celestine Prophecy; an adventure*, Time Warner 1993.

[2] J. Allen Boone, *Kinship With All Life*.

[3] "Coincidentally" years later, Mark and I were privileged to attend one such ceremony in her name, and the native American (Hopi) leading it called on "the Great Coordinator of Coincidence" to clearly lead the way!

[4] After being abused by religion, Kelly refers to a supreme being as "love energy" rather than a religious name.

[5] www.spiritualhorizons.net

[6] www.KLAV1230.am.com

[7] www.1997/gen/resources/players/starr/lewinsky.com

[8] www.TRANCE-formation.com

[9] www.mexconnect.com/mex_history/jtuck/jtsalinas.htm

[10] Chapter 16, "Operation Greenback for Wetbacks," *TRANCE*.

[11] This is not to say all "vote monitors" were aware of their purpose beyond a Need-to-Know. http://news.excite.com/news/ap/011105/19/nicaragua-election

[12] Ibid.

[13] I knew in 1986 that Bush, Jr. was being groomed for the Presidency while at the CIA MK Ultra mind control training camp on Mount Shasta. When he assumed the office of President in 2000 according to plan despite forewarning people since 1990 and officially through *TRANCE* by 1995, the American public knew he stole the "election" in his Texan brother's "home state" of Florida yet felt powerless to stop him after the 9-11 trauma. Now Hillary is suddenly a Senator from "the World's Capital" of New York, ready to move into Presidential position as planned unless people reclaim their country and lives now.

[14] www.Klang.com

[1] www.preferrednetwork.com

[2] www.davidicke.com

[3] www.preferrednetwork.com

[4] Russell S. Bowen, *The Immaculate Deception, the Bush Crime Family Exposed*, America West Publishers 1991.

[5] Rodney Stich, *Defrauding America; Dirty Secrets of the CIA and other Government Operations*, Diablo Western Press, 1994.

[6] Col. Fletcher Prouty, *The Secret Team; the CIA and Its Allies in Control of the United States and the World*, Institute for Historical Review, 1973.

[7] www.rie.com.

[8] Robert Gaylon Ross, Sr., *Who's Who of the Elite; Members of the Bilderbergs, Council on Foreign Relations, Trilateral Commission, Skull and Bones Society, Committee of 300*, RIE Publishing, always updated and available through www.rie.com..

[9] www.consciousevolution.com

[10] www.UCSUSA.org

[11] Barbara Trent, *The Panama Deception*, 1993. www.empowermentproject.org

[12] Thought communication is a natural to autistic children whereby they respond well to therapy with animals, particularly horses. www.taoofequus.com [13] www.givemeliberty.org

[14] www.rie.com

[15] www.davidicke.com

[16] Police Against the New World Order.

[17] www.radioliberty.com

[18] www.mikenew.com

[19] The 1947 National Security Act affects all who have treaties with the US.

[20] www.klang.com

[21] www.spiritualhorizons.net

[1] David Icke, *And the Truth Shall Set You Free*, Bridge of Love Publications, 1995. www.davidicke.com [2] www.radioliberty.com

[3] David Icke, *I Am Me, I Am Free; the Robot's Guide to Freedom*, Bridge of Love Publications, 1996. www.davidicke.com [4] www.disclosureproject.org

[5]David Icke, *The Turning of the Tide*, audio and videotapes of his presentations available at www.davidicke.com [1] *Back to the Future*, Universal Pictures, 1985.

[2] The importation of Nazi and Fascist scientists into the US.

[3] Control of the media.

[4] Founder of NASA.

[5] Reagan asked Congress to ban all Toshiba products indefinitely.

[6] Revelations; 17

[7] Newsweek

[8] The 1947 National Security Act binds any country that has a treaty with the US.

[9] www.radioliberty.com

[10] www.infowars.com

[11] www.scizone.com

[12] www.radioliberty.com

[13] www.freeamerican.com

[14] www.copvcia.com

[15] www.bayarea.com/mia/mercurynews, September 24, 1996

[1] www.bayarea.com/mia/mercurynews.com

[2] In addition to being a horse affectionado, Claire keeps their International Import "Outback" business thriving.

[3] "From the Wilderness," www.copvcia.com

[4] Dr. Colin A. Ross, *Bluebird; Deliberate Creation of Multiple Personality by Psychiatrists*, Monitou Communications 2002. www.rossinst.com

[5] *The Carefully Crafted Hoax*.

[6] P.31, *TRANCE*

[7] P. 142-144, 215, 31 *TRANCE*

[8] Ku Klux Klan racist organization utilizing violence and murder. Senator Byrd's political records prove his ties to this criminal racist organization.

[9] Awareness of the use of subliminals rose, prompting outrage by 2000 when Bush, Jr. was forced to defend his ads by (mis)saying, "I did not use any subliminables in my campaign."

[10] www.freeamerican.com

[11] www.rockymountainnews.com/Ramsey.

[12] Senator Byrd's state. Beauty pageants are highly political.

[13] P.126, *TRANCE*.

[14] 5-11-2004 The *Associated Press* reports John Ramsey's bid for Michigan State House of Representatives.

[15] Fox TV.

[16] A 'patsy' is someone who is set up to take the fall for a crime.

[17] www.TRANCE-formation.com

[18] www.klang.com

[1] Carl Klang's song for Kelly was receiving airplay nationwide, raising awareness of her plight that resulted in more letters to her from all over the world. Carl's song was a powerful encouragement for Kelly at a time when she needed it most.

[2] Old slave hymn.

[3] Testimony was provided to that effect. Kelly's records were never returned, making it impossible for her to graduate or continue schooling.

[4] Kelly's success with Breeze became widely known throughout Tennessee and Kentucky, prompting her reputation for telepathic healing communication with horses.

[5] www.taoofequus.com

[6] In NLP, "try" is considered a non-productive negative that is avoided by aware mental health professionals.

[7] It "disappeared" by the time Kelly turned 18.

[8] The raccoons refused all genetically engineered foods and anything containing aspartame!

[9] *Wag the Dog*, New Line Cinema 1997.

[10] www. 1997/gen/recourses/players/starr/lewinsky

[11] www.freeamerican.com

[12] Chapter 24, "A-Hunting We Will Go," *TRANCE* 1995. www.TRANCE-formation.com

[13] There is no ability to dream or hope under mind control.

[1] In 1981, Senator Byrd adamantly ordered that Kelly's childhood vaccinations be immediately stopped. *Vaccination, The Hidden Truth*, Taycare Pty Ltd, video@vaccination.inoz.com

[2] Over 24 Billion Dollars already donated through the Bill and Melinda Gates Foundation is used to find and fund scientific solutions to world health crisis including AIDS, immunizations, vaccinations, education and more. www.csmonitor.com/2003/0925/p01s04-woaf.html.

[3] www.UCSUSA.org

[4] Perhaps there is a more appropriate term than this that appropriately spans all religion, but I used this word because it's the one I know for a physical destination for spiritual purposes.

[5] Linda Hunt, *Secret Agenda; The United States Government, Nazi Scientists, and Project Paperclip 1945- 1990*, St. Martin's Press, 1991.

[6] Violence resultant from 9-11 does not fit the attitude and atmosphere of the Balinese people, which raises questions as to the political agenda that upset their balance.

[7] Mark continued to heal "110%" in no time.

[8] The movie *Pearl Harbor* had been media hyped to an extreme just prior to 9-11, causing history buffs to delve into the causation. The trauma allowed President FDR to drop the atomic bomb and join WWII the same way 9-11 spawned Bush-Cheney oil wars.

[9] Senator Byrd funded Sesame Street through Melon Bank's Endowment for the Humanities as it was structured to manipulate the minds of the children and prepare them for Global Ed. This was not the intention of Jim Henson, as the conflict his opposition to Byrd's influence was significant just prior to his untimely death.

[10] December 13, 2002, www.tdlm.org/News5/resigns.htm

[11] Chapter 1, "My Introduction to Humanity," *TRANCE*.

[12] The Vatican Child Abuse Policy from 1962 to date.

[13] Vatican contact information: av@pccs.va, phone: +390669881022, fax: +390669885373, address: Pontificio Consiglio delle Comunicazioni Sociali, Palazzo San Carlo – 00120 Citta del Vaticano (do not write "Italy" on

address as nation of Vaticano is ‘separate’. Thank you) [14] “Double Exposure,” *Vanity Fair*, January 2004.

[15] MK Ultra files available through www.TRANCE-formation.com

[16] Chapter 24, “A-Hunting We Will Go,” *TRANCE*.

[17] By September 11, 2003 the Alaska was threatened with oil drilling again.

[18] www.disclosureproject.org

[19] By November 2003, the Vatican declared genetically altered foods would be used to feed the hungry much to the disdain of those in the know worldwide. Among those in the know is the Union of Concerned Scientists. www.csf.colorado.edu/archive/2000/food/msg00000.html. www.ucsusa.org

[20] New Zealand native

[21] www.rajon.com/area51/html/pinegap1.htm

[22] Federation of American Scientists, www.home.manyrivers.aunz.com/stingray/pinegap1.htm

[23] Union of Concerned Scientists, www.ucsusa.org

[1] www.spiritualhorizons.net

Contact Mark and Cathy direct
for book/bulk book orders
TRANCE008@hotmail.com

https://svalispeaksagain.wordpress.com/accessing-part-2-preventing-access/

Svali Speaks Again

Healing from ritual abuse and mind control

- Mizpah: Svali Speaks Again
- About
- Contact
- Blog
- Articles
- Book Info

Accessing Part 2: Preventing Access

Now that the problem of accessing has been defined, what can the survivor, and their helper do, to prevent reaccessing? Especially with the knowledge that early in therapy, reaccessing occurs in nearly 100 % of survivors? It is very common for survivors to be given cover memories that they “broke free” or that the cult abuse ended earlier in life, while in reality, they have been continuously cult active. It is common for survivors to be reaccessed or have cult contact of some kind, until the amnesia starts coming down.

The cult does not just “let people go” when they become adults, or enter therapy. Instead, **the accessing will often increase during this time**, as cults or government agencies do not want to lose members.

With this knowledge, the survivor will need to find out which parts are currently in contact with the cult. One way to do so is to give up all phone, email and online activity for a period of time, such as two months. The parts who are currently contacting will probably complain loudly, or the survivor may even become suicidal. The person may become restless and feel a huge urgency that they are “missing something important” in emails or online (the survivor will always have legitimate sounding reasons for continuing online and phone activities, such as checking bank statements and paying bills, but behind these is their programming to recontact running). The Christian presentation, with support, then has the opportunity to bring truth to these parts and help them break out of their cult-trained beliefs.

The desire to stop cult contact must come from the survivor themselves. While it may be obvious to the therapist and others that the survivor is being reaccessed, they will be oblivious to this fact, and will become very angry/defensive/hostile if confronted about this.

It can be helpful to educate the survivor and their parts on why it is a good idea to stop cult (family) contact. Some reasons to do so include:

- The survivor gets hurt
- Loved ones of the survivor get hurt when they are accessed
- Accessing impedes healing, because parts get retraumatized
- It is an extremely poor Christian witness to people who are still in the cult
- It is an extremely poor Christian witness to the survivor’s own parts
- It is a lifestyle of extreme duplicity

- The survivor has to actually hurt others during a reaccessing session
- The survivor may be forced to accept agendas against their therapist and other s
- Cult loyal parts that recontact will be rewarded for contact, which actually increases the bonding to those reaccessing, making healing more difficultThere are always significant traumas and double binds behind recontact programming, and the therapist will want to help the survivor look at these issues. Cult loyal parts will have difficulty stopping recontact if they believe that failure to do so results in the torture or death of someone they love. This is where the ability to trust the LORD with the safety of double binds is so important. Saying, "LORD, I give my double binds to you," does not at all ensure that this is being done. Instead, HOW the double binds were installed, and with whom, and the specific vows to protect the double bind will need to be remembered. Often, these vows are elicited by the survivor watching a double bind being tortured; unable to take any more, the survivor will cave and agree to stay in contact. They will have no memory of this event, since they will also agree to forget the event, or else their loved one will be tortured. This is why consistent memory work and dedication to healing and looking at the events that run recontact programming inside are so important. If the survivor is an international survivor (one who was hosted in several countries as a child and adult) their primary double binds will likely be in another country, and they may be amnesic to them. This will also need to be looked at. Breaking double binds with the American family may not be sufficient to stop reaccessing if there are unconscious double binds elsewhere.
- **The survivor's first programmer/trainer will often be their primary double bind.** They will often be completely amnesic to whom this person actually is. Their systems will be invested in protecting this person above all others, and so they will disclose other people as double binds first. The true double binds often will not come out until later in therapy. This is where accountability can help. Until the survivor is aware of and has broken their recontact programming, and has truly dealt with their double binds, outside accountability can help prevent reaccess. Safe accountability would be either a **non-dissociative person**, or a survivor who has broken their own double binds and recontact programming and is co-conscious with their most loyal cult parts.
- **Survivors who are in the early stages of healing should never be asked to be accountability for another survivor's safety**. They will be completely unaware of the fact that they themselves have a strong recontact agenda, which can include helping other survivors "reconnect" with family (cult) members, or others. A safe accountability person should be made aware of the survivor's safety plan (any survivor should have a safety plan, if they are serious about stopping reaccessing). This will include awareness of any phone calls and texts made and received, and any online activities of any kind; for instance, the survivor may ask the accountability person to be with them and watching at all times that they go online. Failure to have accountability jeopardizes both the survivor and others that they could impact. While it can be a "bother" to have accountability, the alternative can be much more painful. Once the survivor stops Internet, phone and other contact, and has accountability in place, they may actually feel worse for a period of time as they are breaking the programming. The programming is actually being drawn out so the survivor can look at it: they may feel suicidal or depressed, or shaky for a period of time. This will pass as the programming is broken.
- **Stopping Astral Access**If the cult cannot reach the survivor by physical means, they will attempt to do so spiritually, often through astral projection. These demonic spirits will appear, often in the middle of the night, to the survivor, and will frequently appear as double binds/loved ones. The astrals may appear to be in great distress, and will attempt to

"blackmail" the survivor into recontact with messages that the loved one is being tortured, or sobbing that they miss the survivor. The survivor will need to discover and close the spiritual doors that allow spiritual access. This process will include:
- Finding out which parts inside have the job to maintain spiritual contact with loved ones in the group.
- Why they want to continue this contact
- What these parts believe will happen if contact is stopped. It is common to feel immense fear at first, at the thought of stopping astral contact, since the rituals and programming done around this is extensive, and starts in infancy. Spiritual parts may attempt to punish the survivor for attempting to stop it, until they become aware of the danger of continuing it.
- Once all doors are closed, both spiritually and physically, parts may start feeling safe enough to come out and disclose to the survivor, and heal. This includes getting rid of the demonic spirits that sit within the parts whose job is to maintain astral contact, and resolving the traumas that they have undergone.
-

Over time, astral contact will lessen as the survivor learns to use their authority to stop the contact. Simply commanding an astral to depart in the name of the true Jesus is sufficient to make it leave; doing this builds faith in the survivor's parts and witnesses to them over time, and they will be more and more willing to turn to the Christian God instead of to the dem

Share this:

Twitter

Facebook

Loading...

Blog at WordPress.com.

Svali Speaks Again

Healing from ritual abuse and mind control

Mizpah: Svali Speaks Again
About
Contact
Blog
Articles
Book Info

Accessing: What it is and how to prevent it

The following is from my new book

One issue that survivors often face is attempts by the group they left to re-access them. This article was written to help survivors understand what accessing is, and the steps they and their therapist can take to prevent it from happening.

What is accessing?

Accessing is the deliberate contact of a survivor by the group (or affiliates) that they left, in order to intimidate and frighten parts into doing their cult jobs. Access may be as short and simple as a single sentence in an email that scares a part into shutting down therapy or withdrawing from healthy support. It can also be more complex, for instance, a survivor returning to a cult facility for hours for reprogramming.

If a person was raised in an organized group, they will have programming put in to make them accessible by the group. This is considered base-level programming to prevent their leaving.

How is accessing done?

Accessing is done by several methods, depending upon the stage of healing and awareness of the survivor.

One misconception people have is that accessing is done by mysterious, scary "bad" people who follow the survivor around and try to harm them when out and about. **But the number one person who accesses the survivor is the survivor themself**. They will have recontact programming installed that makes them become extremely anxious if they do not have regular contact with their cult handlers.

Cell phones are the number one method of accessing used by the cult. All survivors who have left an organized group will have programming in place to contact cult members by phone, or to receive messages or calls from cult members by phone. The survivor often will have absolutely no recollection that they received a text or message from the cult (this is how the amnesia linked to this programming works).

Who contacts the survivor? In most cases, the person's **immediate family** will be the members of the group chosen to contact the survivor. This could be a mother, father, aunt, uncle, brother, sister, children or grandchildren, or other family members. Texts back and forth about "family matters" will often have hidden messages or cues within them, reminding the person's cult parts of their jobs, and the programmed threat that goes with them.

Examples: "Your family really loves you" is a frequent cue to cult-loyal parts to remember that only the cult can love them.

"I love you and miss you" can be a cue that if the person does not re-contact, that the person's double binds will be put into danger, or tortured.

"We haven't heard from you in a while" is an even stronger message that the person's cult parts need to contact, or someone they love will get hurt.

Often, cute videos of family members are sent as reinforcements of the fact that if the person tries to break free, or their parts stop doing their old jobs, the people in the video will be tortured. There may be subliminals in the background reinforcing this message on an unconscious level.

The person's cell phone bill will not show the more blatant or direct cult calls or texts, because there are special codes that can be entered in that ensure that the calls are not recorded by the phone company.

To break this re-contact programming, the individual's presentation (or host parts) needs to show the programmed parts that **it is entirely possible to disobey the programming directives.** This involves breaking the program by

1. parts realizing there are options besides the directives

2.parts giving up programmed lies for truth. The presentation parts may want to choose for a period of time to give up phone contact with cult-active associates or family members, until the person is sufficiently healed to be able to relate without being accessed. **If the person chooses to give up their cell phone (which should be done in order to break the programming, at least for a period of time), the group will then attempt to access the survivor by other methods.** They will usually go to email or online next, since most people stay "connected" in these ways. Emails with triggering subject lines from people the individual knows and trusts will appear around this time in healing. This is because most accessing occurs from people the person has known and loved most of their life. The individual has no idea that these members of their family, or church, or group of friends, is a cult member, since they will be amnesic to this fact until the parts begin coming forward and sharing information with them.

1. **Subliminal Programming**: whenever a survivor uses technology such as a smart phone, goes online, plays video games, or watches current TV programs, they will be fed subliminal messages and images designed to fire off their NWO and other programming. These subliminals are part of Project Alexis, which was designed to prepare the world for the rise of the NWO. The images are fed at a speed of .03 microseconds (faster than conscious sight can see), with extremely rapid audios paired as well. Once a survivor of cult programming signs into their email address, or visits Facebook, or signs into Amazon, or any other sites online, the subliminals linked to their profile will begin automatically feeding through their browser (there is no "safe" browser or operating system that can prevent this). Images of family members being hurt, and other distressing events, will be flashed by faster than the survivor

can visually process. Ads with cues and triggers will also be displayed, and the individual may be completely unaware of this fact until they begin healing and working towards co-consciousness. It becomes a “catch 22” in many ways: the emails, texts and subliminals frighten parts into not disclosing about family members, and the person is left wondering why their parts are not talking to them, or sharing much in therapy. The failure to disclose and amnesia keep the survivor in constant contact with cult members, while they are completely unaware of this fact. As a result, their cult parts continue to do their jobs, while the person’s presentation has no idea that this is going on. If a person chooses to give up their cell phone, and to go completely offline (or only limited online use with full accountability, i.e. someone watching while they check their bank statement, etc.) then the attempts to access by other methods will escalate.

2.
3. **Common forms of attempted access at this point** will include visual triggering by a visit from a family member if the individual is still in contact, or the cult placing someone who looks very similar to a double bind in view of the person. This could be a child who looks very much like a beloved child or grandchild standing next to the survivor at a store; or individuals who look just like a family member showing up when the survivor is in a public place. These are meant as nonverbal warnings: “If you don’t obey us, this person will get hurt.” These double bind lookalikes may also quickly sign messages to the survivor that they may be amnesic to (such as “help me” or “save me”) in order to trigger their recontact programming. Cards by postal mail with threats may arrive; or voice mail messages with triggers may be left on a message machine. If the person has international presentations, mail addressed to the name of one of the other presenters, or a child or loved one from the other countries, may show up (i.e. “How odd, this mail came here and I don’t know anyone by that name.”)Visual cues may be placed in the survivor’s surroundings: a bouquet of flowers that has a special meaning; a special perfume on a card, or a ‘gift” of a food that has a specific meaning to another presentation may appear. If the above do not work, then attempts at physical abduction may be attempted as a last resort. Often, the survivor will be taken somewhere by someone they know and trust, that they are unaware of as being a cult member, and physical accessing will then occur. If the survivor has too much co-consciousness to allow this, then physical threats and abuse may occur when the survivor is alone or in a vulnerable state. Along with all of the above, the cult will also attempt spiritual access of the individual trying to break free. Dreams, threats and messages via astral projection may be given while sleeping, or even while awake, through demonic means. It is important that the individual prays about any open doors or parts with double binds that were programmed to stay in contact with loved ones who are cult members in this way.
4.
5. **Why is accessing done?**
6. **Internal jobs**
7. As mentioned previously, these jobs could include both “internal”, “spiritual” and “external”/”physical” jobs;
8. Accessing is done to make sure that the person’s cult parts are continuing to do their jobs and that the presenters continue to remain clueless and amnesic. Continued access will cause continued amnesia and dissociation.
9.

- Making sure that the person’s dissociation/amnesia is intact
- Protecting/guarding classified information or parts inside

- Blocking the person’s healing
- Undoing the person’s work in therapy
- Wearing out helpers
- Sending warfare and division internally and externally
- Participating in full rituals internally and calling on the demonic

External jobs

- Participating in rituals
- Active physical agendas against Christians and those helping survivors break free
- Sabotaging other survivors’ safety or healing
- Assignments like research and assassinations
- Training of younger cult members
- Reporting to the cult
- Disseminating misinformation
- Discrediting other survivors and therapists

The person will normally be completely unaware that they have been triggered, or that their cult parts are doing their jobs, until later in healing.

Next, we will address a common question that survivors ask regarding accessing.

If I pray, and ask that my Christian Host or presenters be present, could I still be accessed and unaware of the fact?

Yes. Why? Firstly, because the LORD does not set aside free will in the survivor, including the free will of parts who are still compliant with cult orders or who still want to protect loved ones in the cult way. Also, the Christian host, while a true believer, is often programmed to allow access and may have taken vows of amnesia and access, i.e. the Christian host/presentation is double-minded. Thirdly, the survivor often has a False Christian presentation that takes over the prayer that prays to a false “Jesus” or “God” before the Christian presenters (who pray to the true Christian God) have a chance to pray.

While the Christian presentation can pray, if other cult programmed parts that the Christian presentation is amnesic to rotate out due to a trigger or cue, the person can still be accessed and be completely unaware of this fact.

Here are two examples from real life. At one time, I took an accountability person (another survivor in therapy) with me each time I went to visit my children in another state (there was a custody battle, and at the time, I was only allowed supervised visitation with her children due to the risk of my abducting them in order to get them away from their abuse). Each time, my accountability person and I, as well as trusted church support members, would pray for my safety and ability to stay in my presentation and not lose time during the visitations.

Throughout the visits, I would pray continuously for safety with my accountability friend On the way home, after each visit, I would thank the LORD with great relief for safety, and the fact that “nothing bad happened” during the visits, and gave praise reports to my church about how the LORD protected me and my friend, and answered our prayers for safety.

It wasn’t until years later, and with more healing and deeper internal communication inside, and the amnesia dropping, that I discovered to my great distress that during each visit with my children, I had been accessed, tortured, and reprogrammed during the entire time. My accountability partner had been programmed to not remember these facts either. This is one reason why in general, other survivors do NOT make good accountability for a survivor.

The "safe visits" were actually cover memories that my Christian presentation was told to believe, or my children would be tortured and/or killed. Because I loved my children, there was a huge investment in not remembering, and so I had no idea of what actually happened during the visits. Memories of taking my children shopping were dealt with by cult members placing the items "purchased" in my car, and quick photos during the last hours of the visit were taken, with each photo staged to show different "fun activities" with my children.

In actuality, each visit was reaccessing and reprogramming by the cult, with orders given to not remember the accessing and to come again in several months. The amnesia at the time was utter and complete, with absolutely no hint of what was actually occurring during the visits. My belief that the visits were safe, and that nothing bad had occurred, was real – and mistaken.

Another example: One survivor who had broken off all contact with her family due to cult memories of them had a short meeting with her brother at a local grocery store. She timed it and had a accountability person come and get her at the end of 15 minutes, to ensure that the meeting was short. She and her brother walked around the store and talked a little. During that meeting, completely unknown to the Christian presentation despite prayer, her brother gave a message to her cult parts. Due to the message, for months her cult parts strongly attempted to sabotage some very important matters for the person. These parts shared what happened only six months later in therapy, after much trouble.

Asking the Christian presenters/Host if the survivor was safe during a time period may not work for several reasons:

- The false Christian Host was the one actually out praying and reporting how the trip went, and the survivor is completely unaware of this fact
-
- The Christian presentation/Host has been heavily programmed to sabotage healing and keep cult contact up. They will be completely unaware of this fact. The person's day to day Christian presentation/Host may be the most heavily programmed part of the person, and they will not know this at all. The cult will not leave Christian parts unprogrammed; and in fact, will make sure these are the ones that maintain recontact.
-
- It can be helpful to educate the survivor and their parts on why it is a good idea to stop cult (family) contact. Some reasons to do so include:
-
- **The desire to stop cult contact must come from the survivor themselves.** While it may be obvious to the therapist and others that the survivor is being reaccessed, they will be oblivious to this fact, and will become very angry/defensive/hostile if confronted about this.
-
- With this knowledge, the survivor will need to find out which parts are currently in contact with the cult. One way to do so is to give up all phone, email and online activity for a period of time, such as two months. The parts who are currently contacting will probably complain loudly, or the survivor may even become suicidal. The person may become restless and feel a

huge urgency that they are “missing something important” in emails or online (the survivor will always have legitimate sounding reasons for continuing online and phone activities, such as checking bank statements and paying bills, but behind these is their programming to recontact running). The Christian presentation, with support, then has the opportunity to bring truth to these parts and help them break out of their cult-trained beliefs.

-
- The cult does not just “let people go” when they become adults, or enter therapy. Instead, **the accessing will oftenincrease during this time**, as cults or government agencies do not want to lose members.
-
- Now that the problem of accessing has been defined, what can the survivor, and their helper do, to prevent reaccessing? Especially with the knowledge that early in therapy, reaccessing occurs in nearly 100 % of survivors? It is very common for survivors to be given cover memories that they “broke free” or that the cult abuse ended earlier in life, while in reality, they have been continuously cult active. It is common for survivors to be reaccessed or have cult contact of some kind, until the amnesia starts coming down.

Share this:

Twitter Facebook

Loading...

Create a free website or blog at WordPress.com.

https://svalispeaksagain.wordpress.com/2018/07/08/alice-in-wonderland-programming-part-2-crazy-alice-and-black-alice-programming/

Mizpah: Svali Speaks Again
About
Contact
Blog
Articles
Book Info

svalispeaksagain 8:23 pm on July 8, 2018

Tags: mind control (69), occult (13), programming (60), ritual abuse (65)

Alice in Wonderland Programming Part 2: “Crazy” Alice and Black Alice Programming

Trigger warning: this post contains information about programming that could be triggering to survivors of ritual abuse and mind control.

Crazy Alice Programming

A part of the Alice in Wonderland (presenter) programming is the “Crazy Alice” programming, which is meant to warn the Alice controller (a presentation controller) to never allow memories to come up, or they will be labeled “insane” and extreme abuse will occur. This is often the root of insanity fears when a person first starts remembering their past; the presentation controllers know that if they remember, Crazy Alice is supposed to present.

In this setup, the child (now called “Alice” and dressed in the typical blue dress and white pinafore) is taken to a “mental institution” that looks like one from 400 years ago, where the “inmates” are chained, and who rant, rave and curse at her. The child is left there for days, with her only food being rancid water and rotten cabbage. The inmates (actually cult actors) hurl feces at her, verbally abuse her, and the custodians sexually abuse her while she is chained to the wall because of her “insanity” (remembering).

Because she is “sick”, and “mentally ill” Alice is taken regularly down to the basement for “treatment” which consists of electroshocks, drowning, and being held over a rat pit filled with hungry rats that are allowed to bite her feet and ankles. The child is told repeatedly that “remembering” or “telling” will have her labeled “crazy” and that she will be taken to the institution (or one similar) for “treatment.” This is part of developing the presenter amnesia and vows to never remember (or seek treatment).

During the hospital stay, a team of doctors in white coats walk through the ward and stay with Alice, and the head doctor (usually, a primary programmer) says “Alice is my favorite patient” and “I will do everything possible to help you get well.” Alice keeps a stuffed rabbit with her (“foo foo”) who at night seems to come alive and sexually abuses her (this is done with a hand puppet). When Alice reports the abuse the next day, the doctors look at her sadly, and insist that she is “sick” and “needs more treatment.”

There is a special room in the “hospital” for the religiously insane, with Bible studies and church meetings, where Alice is raped and abused by the “Christians” and “Jesus” in the hospital. After several weeks of this treatment, “Alice” is pronounced “cured” (e.g. this part is heavily traumatized and has learned to never disclose what is going on, and to promote presenter amnesia) and is allowed to leave.

This “hospital” is also part of the presentation re-programming. If the presentation amnesia begins to break down, and the individual remembers, the “doctors” (programmers) will come internally and take the parts that broke programming to the “hospital” internally for treatment (reprogramming).

This is also linked to recontact programming as well. The presentation is often programmed that if there is too much programming breakdown or remembering, to believe they are “sick” and “need to go to the hospital right away.” This is meant to get the survivor to an “approved” hospital or treatment center where they can be accessed, and reprogrammed.

Black Alice Programming

In another version of Alice programming, Alice has a “dark side” that comes out and kills everyone around her in a killing spree. The terrified presenter wakes up to a room full of bloody bodies, and is told that if she ever remembers, the “evil” inside of her will “escape” and she will kill her loved ones. This is a particularly cruel form of amnesia programming.

Black Alice wears a black dress, black stockings and shoes, and a white pinafore (covered with blood stains). She lives in Nightmare Wonderland, a black and terrifying version of the white wonderland. In Nightmare Wonderland, the prime terrors are re-enacted time and time again, such as rats that chase the child, large stinging insects; black woods filled with horrible creatures, huge caterpillars that look like maggots able to sting, etc. The woods and other areas of this wonderland (which includes a large cemetery) are also filled with dead bodies and rotting corpses, and zombie-like creatures chase the child.

Black Alice has often taught to “love death” and insists that she loves killing, and death; she has often been forced to have sex with dead bodies, and cannibalizes them as well. This controller terrifies the white presentation, who fears that she will come out if they “lose control” (e.g. by trying to break programming, or remembering too much).

During her creation, Black Alice is heavily tortured and traumatized by everyone around her except the dead in the room; the dead bodies are her only “comfort”. She has a rabbit called “Edward” who hates all living things, teaches her how to kill to protect herself (rewarding her with sex) and later encourages her to “kill, kill, kill” to give him something to eat. Edward is Black Alice’s only friend, and protects her in a nightmare world.

Black Alice is also a part of the child’s assassin programming, since for simple jobs she can switch out and do a kill, and the white presentation will be completely amnesic.

The individual needs to realize that “Crazy Alice” is not crazy, but traumatized. She and the others in the “hospital” have been programmed with scripts, and the traumas need to be recognized, worked through, and resolved. **This is true for Black Alice as well: she is not “evil” but a very traumatized, very young child who was frightened and wanted protection**. These are very difficult memories to face, and the presentation will often experience a lot of anxiety working with these parts due to the fact that these are their *own* controllers.

The traumatized parts can heal, and will be relieved to talk with someone who is safe. They may fear being hospitalized, or alternatively, may insist that they go to a hospital for “treatments”. If possible, it is best that the individual has a safe person stay with them until this programming is worked through, and they realize the traumas and fears that drive it.

As with any other program, there will often be threats to both the individual, or to loved ones, if this program breaks (the individual’s loved ones will have to go through the “treatments” or torture if Alice refuses, etc.). Bringing the trauma memories to conscious remembrance, and refusing to act on the programming, will often help it break, as the individual processes the emotions.

Share this:

Twitter Facebook

Loading...

Related

Alice in Wonderland Programming: Part 1: White Alice Programming
June 30, 2018
In "healing"

Vatican book part 10
June 11, 2022
In "healing"

Book Part 7
November 18, 2021
In "healing"

Leave a Reply

Enter your comment here

← Dealing with Harassment: Part 1

Hybrid Labs: Fact or Myth? →

Create a free website or blog at WordPress.com.